Sabotage©

By Erik ORION

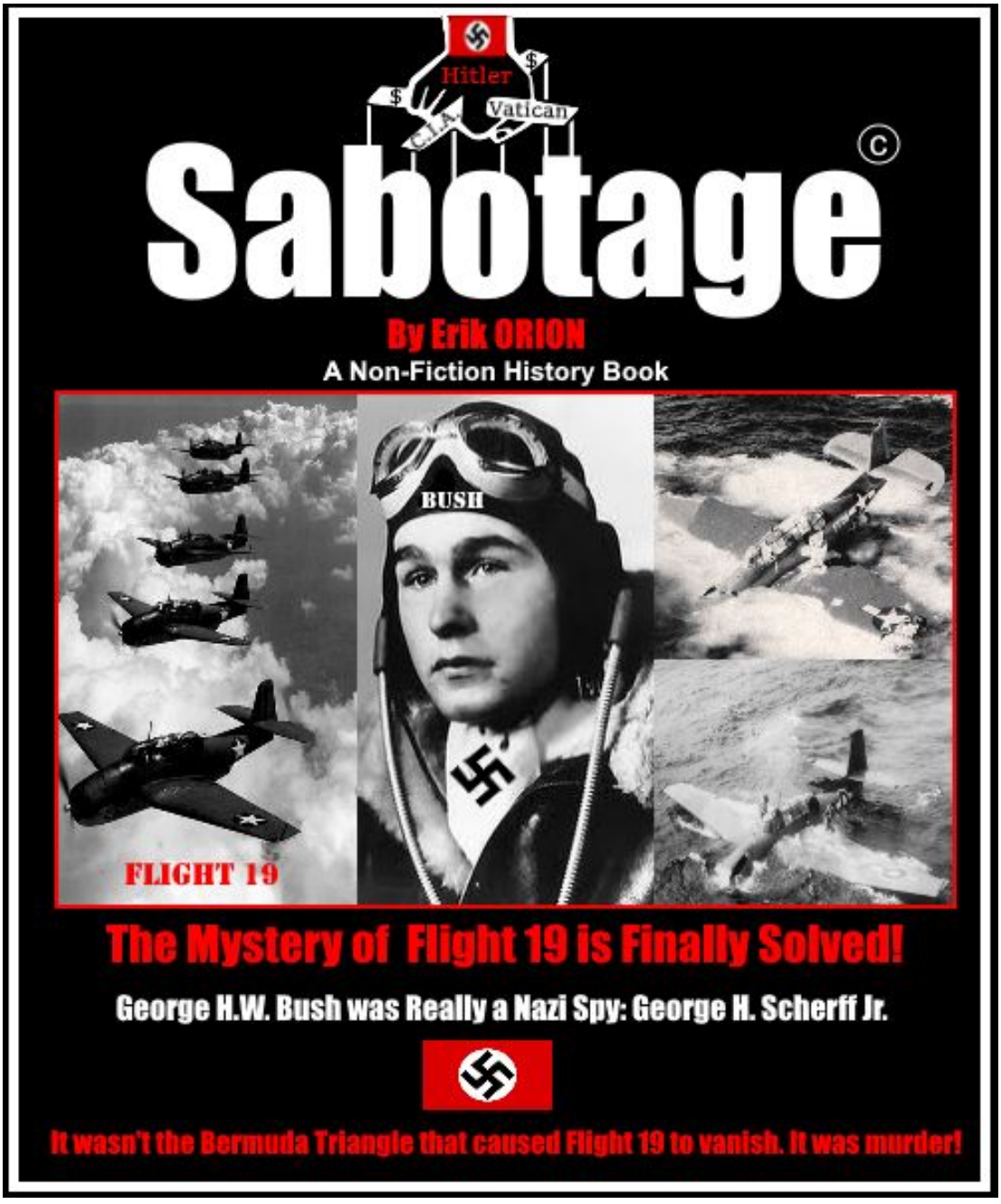
A Non-Fiction History Book

The Mystery of Flight 19 is Finally Solved!

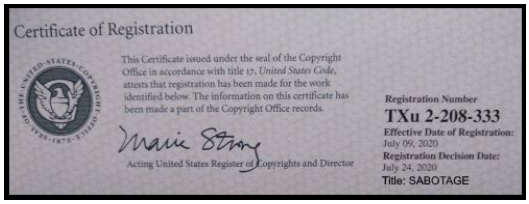
George H.W. Bush was Really a Nazi Spy: George H. Scherff Jr.

It wasn't the Bermuda Triangle that caused Flight 19 to vanish. It was murder!

U.S. Copyright # TXu-2-208-333


Hitler
$
$
C.I.A.
Vatican
Sabotage©
By Erik ORION
A Non-Fiction History Book
BUSH
FLIGHT 19
The Mystery of Flight 19 is Finally Solved!
George H.W. Bush was Really a Nazi Spy: George H. Scherff Jr.
It wasn't the Bermuda Triangle that caused Flight 19 to vanish. It was murder!

Warning: This Book is Copyright Protected!


Certificate of Registration

This Certificate issued under the seal of the Copyright Office in accordance with title 17, *United States Code*, attests that registration has been made for the work identified below. The information on this certificate has been made a part of the Copyright Office records.

Acting United States Register of Copyrights and Director

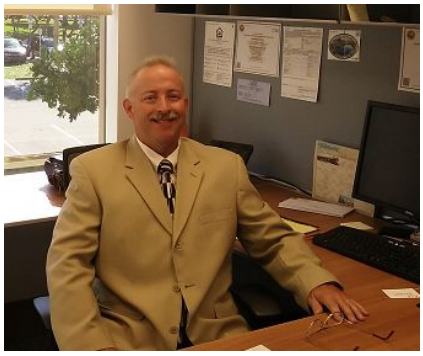
Registration Number
TXu 2-208-333
Effective Date of Registration:
July 09, 2020
Registration Decision Date:
July 24, 2020
Title: SABOTAGE

All Rights Reserved! No part of this work may be reproduced or transmitted in any form by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying and recording, or by any information storage or retrieval system, except as may be expressly permitted by the **U.S. Copyright Act** or in writing by me, ORION. If you are the original purchaser of this Ebook, please feel free to print a paper copy for your own personal use.

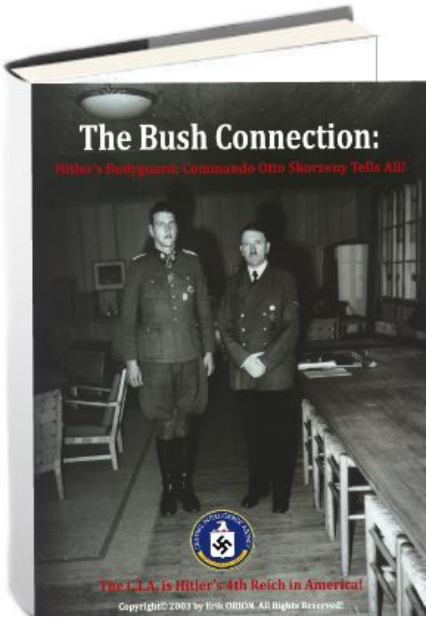
This book is dedicated to the U.S. Navy 14 men of Flight 19 who were all murdered by their own crew member; Nazi George H. Scherff Jr. aka: George H.W. Bush. This book is also dedicated to another two U.S. Navy men; Radioman-William White & Tail-gunner-John Delaney who were previously murdered by Nazi Pilot: George H.W. Bush when he bailed out of his perfectly good TBF Avenger airplane. Bush later falsely claimed he was shot down. George H. Scherff Jr., aka: George H.W. Bush you were a coward, a killer & a traitor. May you rot in hell with all the other Nazi war criminals.

George H.W. Bush's U.S. Navy TBF Avenger Squadron

Background of Author



Erik Berman aka: Erik ORION is 52 years old with a B.A. in Marketing from Stockton State College in Pomona, NJ. He is an author, an inventor with U.S. Patent #5,078,640, a treasure hunter scuba diver, fisherman, small boat captain, internet webmaster, a licensed real estate broker, a Nikola Tesla Historian and an Oak Island theorist / researcher like no other…



Erik is the world renowned true conspiracy book author of The Bush Connection book which details the Bush Family's ties to Nazi war criminals & Adolph Hitler's faked suicide as told to him by Commando: Otto Skorzeny. Erik has been the guest speaker on many internet talk shows and radio talk shows to discuss his book The Bush Connection. Erik ORION was recently the guest speaker in a History Channel DVD movie documentary created by Gala Films of Montreal, Canada called U.S. National Parks: Secrets & Legends. Check my websites': www.thebushconnection.com & www.thepyramidsofoakisland.com. My email address is: orionstar123@gmail.com.

Table of Contents

Chapter 1 What the history books say about Flight 19 Page 5
Chapter 2 Navigation Training Flight Page 6
Chapter 3 Investigation Page 11
Chapter 4 The Real Story of Why Flight 19 Disappeared Page 14
Chapter 5 The Story of Curious George Bush Page 21
Chapter 6 Bush's Squadron Leader's Comments Page 23
Chapter 7 How Nazi George H.W. Bush Sabotaged Flight 19 Page 26
Chapter 8 Conclusion Page 32
Chapter 9 List of Sources Page 34

TBF Avenger

Chapter #1 Here's What The History Books Say About Flight 19…

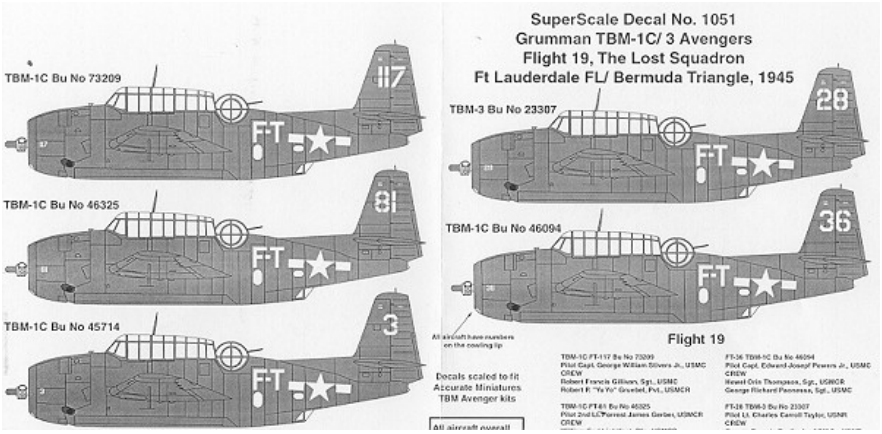
Flight 19

Flight 19 was the designation of a group of five Grumman TBM Avenger torpedo bombers that disappeared over the Bermuda Triangle on December 5, 1945, after losing contact during a United States Navy overwater navigation training flight from Naval Air Station Fort Lauderdale, Florida. All 14 airmen on the flight were lost, as were all 13 crew members of a Martin PBM Mariner flying boat that subsequently launched from Naval Air Station Banana River to search for Flight 19. The PBM aircraft was known to accumulate flammable gasoline vapors in its bilges, and professional investigators have assumed that the PBM most likely exploded in mid-air while searching for the flight. Navy investigators could not determine the exact cause of the loss of Flight 19.[1]

Chapter #2 Navigation Training Flight

Flight 19 undertook a routine navigation and combat training exercise in TBM-type aircraft. The assignment was called "Navigation problem No. 1",

a combination of bombing and navigation, which other flights had completed or were scheduled to undertake that day. The flight leader was United States Navy Lieutenant Charles Carroll Taylor, who had about 2,500 flying hours, mostly in aircraft of this type, while his trainee pilots each had 300 total, and 60 flight hours in the Avenger. Taylor had completed a combat tour in the Pacific theatre as torpedo bomber pilot on the aircraft carrier USS Hancock and had recently arrived from NAS Miami where he had also been a VTB instructor. The student pilots had recently completed other training missions in the area where the flight was to take place. They were U.S. Marine Captains Edward Joseph Powers and George William Stivers, U.S. Marine Second Lieutenant Forrest James Gerber and USN Ensign Joseph Tipton Bossi; their call signs started with 'Fox Tare'.[2]



The aircraft were four TBM-1Cs, Bu No 45714, 'FT3', Bu No 46094, 'FT36', Bu No 46325, 'FT81', Bu No 73209, 'FT117', and one TBM-3, Bu No 23307, 'FT28'. Each was fully fueled, and during pre-flight checks it was discovered they were all missing clocks. Navigation of the route was intended to teach dead reckoning principles, which involved calculating among other things elapsed time. The apparent lack of timekeeping equipment was not a cause for concern as it was assumed each man had his own watch. Takeoff was scheduled for 13:45 local time, but the late arrival of Taylor delayed departure until 14:10. Weather at NAS Fort Lauderdale was described as "favorable, sea state moderate to rough. "Taylor was supervising the mission, and a trainee pilot had the role of leader out front.[3]

The Bermuda Triangle Called "Naval Air Station, Fort Lauderdale, Florida, navigation problem No. 1," the exercise involved three different legs, but the actual flight should have flown four. After take-off, they flew on heading 091° (almost due east) for 56 nmi (64 mi; 104 km) until reaching Hen and Chickens Shoals where low level bombing practice was carried out. The flight was to continue on that heading for another 67 nmi (77 mi; 124 km) before turning onto a course of 346° for 73 nmi (84 mi; 135 km), in the process over-flying Grand Bahama Island. The next scheduled turn was to a heading of 241° to fly 120 nmi (140 mi; 220 km) at the end of which the exercise was completed and the Avengers would turn left to then return to NAS Ft. Lauderdale.

(Above) Avenger I FN908 serving with No 850 Squadron, FAA, aboard HMS *Empress* in the English Channel in 1944.

Grumman TBF Avenger

Flight 19's scheduled navigation exercise on December 5, 1945.

1. Leave NAS Fort Lauderdale 14:10 on heading 091°, drop bombs at Hen and Chickens shoals
until about 15:00 then continue on heading 091° for 73 nautical miles (140 km)
2. Turn left to heading 346° and fly 73 nautical miles (140 km).
3. Turn left to heading 241° for 120 nautical miles (220 km) to end exercise north of NAS Fort
Lauderdale.
4. 17:50 radio triangulation establishes flight's position to within 50 nautical miles (93 km) of 29°N
79°W and their last reported course, 270°.
5. PBM Mariner leaves NAS Banana River 19:27.
6. 19:50 Mariner explodes near 28°N 80°W.

Radio conversations between the pilots were overheard by base and other aircraft in the area. The practice bombing operation is known to have been carried out because at about 15:00 a pilot requested and was given permission to drop his last bomb. Forty minutes later, another flight instructor, Lieutenant Robert F. Cox in FT-74, forming up with his group of students for the same mission, received an unidentified transmission.

An unidentified crew member asked Powers, one of the students, for his compass reading. Powers replied: "I don't know where we are. We must have

got lost after that last turn." Cox then transmitted; "This is FT-74, plane or boat calling 'Powers' please identify yourself so someone can help you." The response after a few moments was a request from the others in the flight for suggestions. FT-74 tried again and a man identified as FT-28 (Taylor) came on. "FT-28, this is FT-74, what is your trouble?" "Both of my compasses are out", Taylor replied, "and I am trying to find Fort Lauderdale, Florida. I am over land but it's broken. I am sure I'm in the Keys but I don't know how far down and I don't know how to get to Fort Lauderdale."[4]

FT-74 informed the NAS that aircraft were lost, then advised Taylor to put the sun on his port wing and fly north up the coast to Fort Lauderdale. Base operations then asked if the flight leader's aircraft was equipped with a standard YG (IFF transmitter), which could be used to triangulate the flight's position, but the message was not acknowledged by FT-28. (Later he would indicate that his transmitter was activated.) Instead, at 16:45, FT-28 radioed: "We are heading 030 degrees for 45 minutes, then we will fly north to make sure we are not over the Gulf of Mexico." During this time no bearings could be made on the flight, and IFF could not be picked up. Taylor was told to broadcast on 4805 kHz. This order was not acknowledged so he was asked to switch to 3000 kHz, the search and rescue frequency. Taylor replied – "I cannot switch frequencies. I must keep my planes intact."

At 16:56, Taylor was again asked to turn on his transmitter for YG if he had one. He did not acknowl-edge but a few minutes later advised his flight "Change course to 090 degrees (due east) for 10 minutes." About the same time someone in the flight said "Dammit, if we could just fly west we would get home; head west, dammit." This difference of opinion later led to questions about why the students did not simply head west on their own. It has been explained that this can be attributed to military discipline.

As the weather deteriorated, radio contact became intermittent, and it was believed that the five aircraft by this point were more than 200 nmi (230 mi; 370 km) out to sea east of the Florida peninsula. Taylor radioed "We'll fly 270 degrees west until landfall or running out of gas" and requested a weather check at 17:24. By 17:50 several land-based radio stations had triangulated Flight 19's position as being within a 100 nmi (120 mi; 190 km) radius of 29°N 79°W; Flight 19 was north of the Bahamas and well off the

coast of central Florida, but nobody transmitted this information on an open, repetitive basis.

At 18:04, Taylor radioed to his flight "Holding 270, we didn't fly far enough east, we may as well just turn around and fly east again". By that time, the weather had deteriorated even more and the sun had since set. Around 18:20, Taylor's last message was received. (It has also been reported that Taylor's last message was received at 19:04.) He was heard saying "All planes close up tight ... we'll have to ditch unless landfall ... when the first plane drops below 10 gallons, we all go down together."

PBM-5 (Bureau Number 59225)
A Martin PBM-5 Mariner similar to Bu No 59225.

Occurrence

Date: December 5, 1945
Summary Disappearance, Presumed mid-air explosion
Site: 28.59°N 80.25°W

Aircraft

Aircraft type Martin PBM-5 Mariner
Operator United States Navy
Flight origin NAS Banana River
Destination NAS Banana River
Crew 13
Fatalities 13
Survivors none As it became obvious the flight was lost, air bases, aircraft, and merchant ships were alerted. A Consolidated PBY Catalina departed after 18:00 to search for Flight 19 and guide them back if they could be located. After dark, two Martin PBM Mariner flying boats originally scheduled for their own training flights were diverted to perform square pattern searches in the area west of 29°N 79°W. US Navy Squadron Training No. 49[7] PBM-5 Bu No 59225 took off at 19:27 from Naval Air Station Banana River (now Patrick Air Force Base), called in a routine radio message at 19:30 and was never heard from again.

At 21:15, the tanker SS Gaines Mills reported it had observed flames from an apparent explosion leaping 100 ft (30 m) high and burning for 10 minutes, at position 28.59°N 80.25°W. Captain Shonna Stanley reported unsuccessfully searching for survivors through a pool of oil and aviation

gasoline. The escort carrier USS Solomons also reported losing radar contact with an aircraft at the same position and time.[5]

It is presumed that Flight 19 crashed into the Atlantic Ocean after running out of fuel due to catastrophic compass malfunctions on every plane.

Chapter #3 Investigation

A 500-page Navy board of investigation report published a few months later made several observations: • Flight leader Lt. Charles C. Taylor had mistakenly believed that the small islands he passed over were the Florida Keys, that his flight was over the Gulf of Mexico, and that heading northeast would take them to Florida. It was determined that Taylor had passed over the Bahamas as scheduled, and he did in fact lead his flight to the northeast over the Atlantic. The report noted that some subordinate officers did likely know their approximate position as indicated by radio transmissions stating that flying west would result in reaching the mainland.

• **Taylor was not at fault because the compasses stopped working.**

• The loss of PBM-5 Bu No 59225 was attributed to an explosion.

This report was subsequently amended "cause unknown" by the Navy after Taylor's mother contended that the Navy was unfairly blaming her son for the loss of five aircraft and 14 men, when the Navy had neither the bodies nor the airplanes as evidence.

Had Flight 19 actually been where Taylor believed it to be, the flight would have made landfall with the Florida coastline within 20 minutes, depending on how far down they were. However, a later reconstruction of the incident showed that the islands visible to Taylor were probably the Bahamas, well northeast of the Keys, and that Flight 19 was exactly where it should have been. The board of investigation found that because of his belief that he was on a base course toward Florida, Taylor actually guided the flight farther northeast and out to sea.

Further, it was general knowledge at NAS Fort Lauderdale that if a pilot ever became lost in the area to fly a heading of 270° west[clarification needed] (or in evening hours toward the sunset if the compass had failed). By the time the flight actually turned west, they were likely so far out to sea they had already passed their aircraft's fuel endurance. This factor combined with bad weather, and the ditching characteristics of the Avenger, meant that there was little hope of rescue, even if they had managed to stay afloat.

It is possible that Taylor overshot Castaway Cay and instead reached another land mass in southern Abaco Island. He then proceeded northwest as planned. He fully expected to find the Grand Bahama Island lying in front of him as expected. Instead, he eventually saw a land mass to his right side, the northern part of Abaco Island. Believing that this landmass to his right was the Grand Bahama Island and his compass was malfunctioning, he set a course to what he thought was southwest to head straight back to Fort Lauderdale. However, in reality this changed his course farther northwest, toward open ocean. To further add to his confusion, he encountered a series of islands north of Abaco Island, which looks very similar to the Key West Islands. The control tower then suggested that Taylor's team should fly west, which would have taken them to the landmass of Florida eventually. Taylor

headed for what he thought was west, but in reality was northwest, almost parallel to Florida.

After trying that for a while and with no land in sight, Taylor decided that it was impossible for them to fly so far west and not reach Florida. He believed that he might have been near the Key West Islands. What followed was a series of serious conversations between Taylor, his team and the control tower. Taylor was not sure whether he was near Bahama or Key West, and he was not sure which direction was which due to compass malfunction. The control tower informed Taylor that he could not be in Key West since the wind that day did not blow that way.

Some of his teammates believed that their compass was working. Taylor then set a course northeast according to their compass, which should take them to Florida if they were in Key West. When that failed, Taylor set a course west according to their compass, which should take them to Florida if they were in Bahama. If Taylor stayed this course he would have reached land before running out of fuel. However, at some point Taylor decided that he had tried going west enough. He then once again set a course northeast, thinking they were near Key West after all. Finally, his flight ran out of fuel and may have crashed into the ocean somewhere north of Abaco Island and east of Florida.

Avenger wreckage mistaken for Flight 19

In 1986 the wreckage of an Avenger was found off the Florida coast during the search for the wreckage of the Space Shuttle Challenger. Aviation archaeologist Jon Myhre raised this wreck from the ocean floor in 1990. He mistakenly believed it was one of the missing planes. In 1991 a treasure-hunting expedition led by Graham Hawkes announced that the wreckage of five Avengers had been discovered off the coast of Florida, but that tail numbers revealed they were not Flight 19. In 2004 a BBC documentary showed Hawkes returning with a new submersible 12 years later and

identifying one of the planes by its bureau number (a clearly readable 23990) as a flight lost at sea on 9 October 1943, over two years before Flight 19 (its crew all survived), but he was unable to definitively identify the other planes; the documentary concluded that "Despite the odds, they are just a random collection of accidents that came to rest in the same place 12 miles from home." But in March 2012 Hawkes was reported as stating that it had suited both him (and indirectly his investors) and the Pentagon to make the story go away because it was an expensive and time-consuming distraction, and that, while admitting he had found no conclusive evidence, he now thought he had, in fact, found Flight 19. Records showed training accidents between 1942 and 1945 accounted for the loss of 95 aviation personnel from NAS Fort Lauderdale. In 1992, another expedition located scattered debris on the ocean floor, but nothing could be identified. In the 2000s, searchers [who?] expanded their search area farther east, into the Atlantic Ocean, but the remains of Flight 19 have still not been confirmed found.

A 2015 newspaper report claimed a wrecked warplane with two bodies inside was retrieved by the Navy in the mid-1960s near Sebastian, Florida. The Navy initially said it was from Flight 19 but later recanted its statement. Despite Freedom of Information Act requests for details in 2013 the names are still not known because the Navy does not have enough information to identify the bodies. A plane found in the Everglades in Broward County was also postulated to be from Flight 19. In fact this was a post-World War II Avenger wreck in which the pilot, Ralph Wachob, was killed.[6]

Marshall Ordered Planes To Hawaii
FORT LAUDERDALE DAILY NEWS
FOURTEEN NAS AIRMEN MISSING
Fighter Aircraft Sent To Islands
GM-Union Wage Issue Parley Set
Cold Wave Postponed For County
Search Launched For Lost Planes

Here are the headlines for Flight 19 that vanished without a trace.

The disappearance of Flight 19 made world-wide news.

Chapter #4 <u>The Real Story of Why Flight 19 Disappeared...</u>

Nazi Spy: George H. Scherff Jr. aka: U.S. Navy Pilot: George H.W. Bush

Pilot: George H.W. Bush was a Nazi Spy!

One of the U.S. Navy Squadron Flight 19 crew members wasn't who he claimed to be.
George H.W. Bush was really a foreign-born Nazi Spy for Adolph Hitler; George H. Scherff Jr.!

Flight 19 was sabotaged by the young Nazi Spy; Pilot George H.W. Bush.
It wasn't pilot error, bad weather, defective planes or strange phenomena from the Bermuda Triangle that caused Flight 19 & the rescue plane to vanish without a trace. It was murder, plain & simple.[7]

Background of Nazi George H. Scherff Jr. aka: U.S. Navy Pilot: George H.W. Bush

The Young Nazi Spy / U.S. Navy Pilot: George H. Scherff Jr.
aka: George H.W. Bush ----------

George H. Scherff Jr. aka:
George H.W. Bush
1938
Nazi:
Otto Skorzeny
Nazi:
U.S. Senator
Prescott Bush
Copyright by Erik ORION 2003 ©

All Rights Reserved!

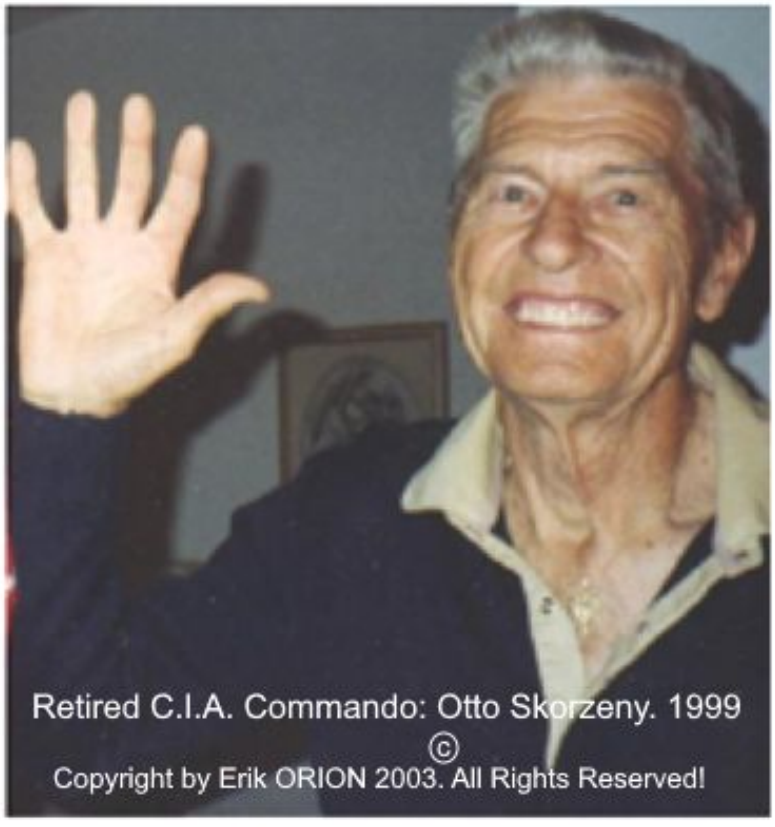
Young Nazi: George H. Scherff Jr. aka: future U.S. President George H.W. Bush throwing horseshoes with Nazi Otto Skorzeny & Nazi: U.S. Senator Prescott Bush.

“Old” George throwing horseshoes with
Mikhail Gorbachev. (1990) *Notice George’s similar black pants &

white shirt in both photos.

These photos were given to me by former Nazi / C.I.A. Commando: Otto Skorzeny.

1941? American O.S.S. / Nazi-Bush Family Reunion Gehlen



Retired C.I.A. Commando: Otto Skorzeny. 1999

©
Copyright by Erik ORION 2003. All Rights Reserved!

Otto Skorzeny with Adolph Hitler 1945? CIA Commando: Otto Skorzeny 1999.

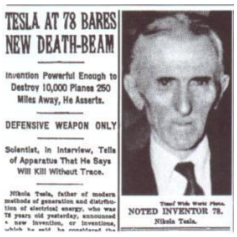
Skorzeny faked Hitler's death & late his own death in 1975!

According to my meetings with former *SS* Nazi and life-long C.I.A. employee, Otto Skorzeny,
during 1931, when Dr. Nikola Tesla made the front cover over **Time Magazine**, Adolf Hitler was amazed and fascinated with him. Hitler had considered Nikola Tesla to be the incarnation of the "almighty' white, Aryan Myth Superman, or Das Uberman. Hitler was curious about rumors alleging that Tesla had an extremely large penis and that he had psychic powers. Hitler, being the childish, sadistic, ego-maniac that he was enjoyed most cartoons & comedians of the era, especially The Three Stooges , Max Fleischer's Popeye and Tesla vs.The Nazis cartoon. Hitler and Skorzeny were not geniuses, however they were smart enough to realize that Nikola Tesla was!

Tesla on the cover of **TIME Magazine**- 1931

In 1934, while Tesla was in America helping the U.S. Government protect its citizens' from Nazis by creating sophisticated radar, "Star Wars" type space based weapons to destroy approaching enemy missiles, remote controlled torpedoes, et al..Hitler was plotting to take over the world. Rumors had been spreading that Nikola Tesla had created a "Death Ray", an invisible, anti-gravity flying disk, an earthquake machine, weather modification machine, and an electronic "stealth" device for making battleships appear optically invisible. Hitler thought to himself, "I must have those inventions so I can take over the world." In 1938, Hitler came up with the idea of sending a young SS Nazi Spy to America. This Spy, would be funded with his & Prescott Bush's money. He would be supported

by high ranking U.S. Government Nazi sympathizers including John J. Trump, Frank Wisner J. Edgar Hoover et al... Hitler ordered his favorite, young 14 year old cousin, Nazi; George H. Scherff Jr. aka; George H. Bush to befriend Nikola Tesla and try to steal his inventions so that “he” could take over the world. [8]


TESLA AT 78 BARES NEW DEATH-BEAM

Invention Powerful Enough to Destroy 10,000 Planes 250 Miles Away, He Asserts.

DEFENSIVE WEAPON ONLY

Scientist, in Interview, Tells of Apparatus That He Says Will Kill Without Trace.

Nikola Tesla, father of modern methods of generation and distribution of electrical energy, who was 78 years old yesterday, announced a new invention, or inventions,

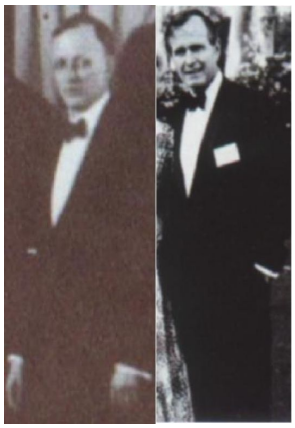
NOTED INVENTOR 78. Nikola Tesla.

George H. Scherff Jr., aka; George H. Bush did become a trusted friend of Tesla’s. George Bush told Hitler about one of Tesla’s inventions that was supposed to create the illusion of invisibility or stealth technology. This invention would render an entire battleship or plane optically invisible! George H.W. Bush tipped off Hitler to the U.S. Navy’s secret experiment...The Philadelphia Experiment aka: Operation Rainbow Project which allegedly made the USS Eldridge optically invisible & teleported it through time.

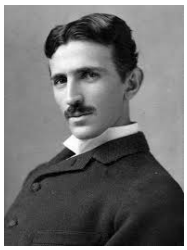
Sir William Crookes Dr. Nikola Tesla George H. Scherff Sr.

Institute of Radio Engineers Banquet Meeting. New York City, N.Y. 1915**.**

George H. Scherff "Jr." was the son of Dr. Nikola Tesla's Austrian born, illegal immigrant, accountant **George H. Scherff "Sr."** George H. Scherff Sr. was a Nazi Spy sent by Hitler to work for Nikola Tesla. George was stealing money & inventions from Tesla. He kept the money for himself but gave the stolen inventions to Adolph Hitler to help the Nazis win WWII. In 1938, Hitler sent the 14 year old George H. Scherff Jr. to America to try to befriend, spy on, steal from & kill the great inventor, Dr. Nikola Tesla! George H. Scherff Sr. talked Tesla into hiring his son, George H. Scherff Jr. to be his lab assistant.



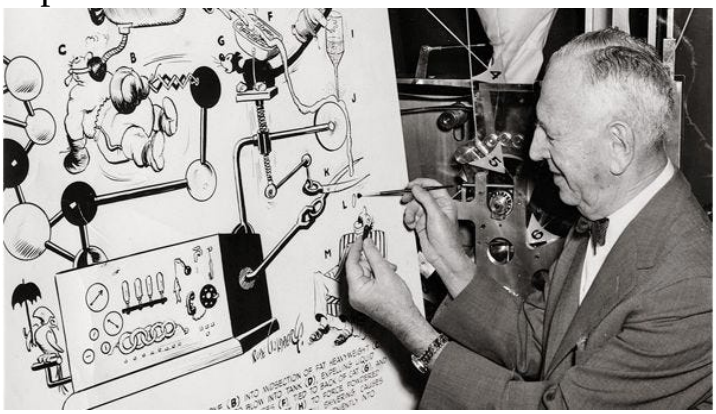
Here's a never before published photo of Nikola Tesla's accountant; George H. Scherff Sr. Nazi Spy: George H. Scherff Sr. & son Nazi Spy: George H. Scherff Jr. aka: George H.W. Bush. *Notice their similar balding hairlines.

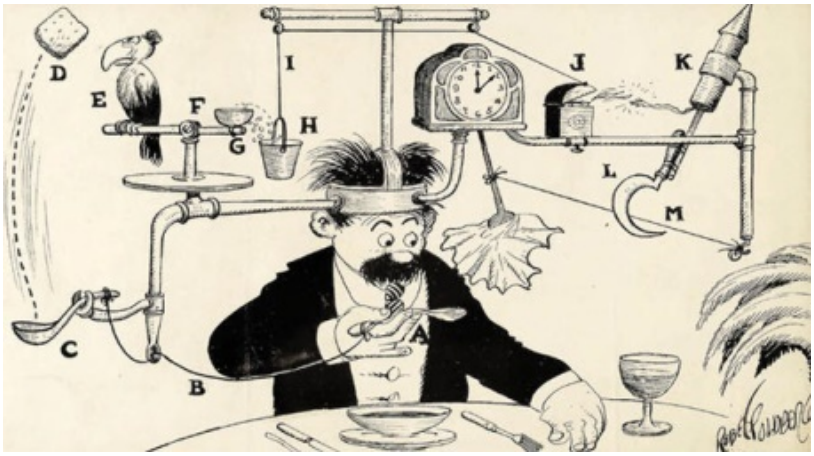


Dr. Nikola Tesla George H. Scherff Jr. would spend the next year working for Tesla while stealing from him like his father had been doing for years. George stole plans for Tesla's "death-ray," an interplanetary communication transmitter / receiver, an earthquake machine, an anti-gravity flying disk et al…George tried to kill Tesla a couple of times but he didn't succeed. It

seems that Tesla always knew in advance when something bad was going to happen to him. Tesla had been hit by a taxicab a few years earlier "allegedly" driven by George H.W. Bush.[9]

Tesla knew that young George H. Scherff Jr. was stealing from him & trying to kill him so he decided to get even. Tesla would leave fake invention plans labeled "TOP SECRET" laying around for young George to steal & bring back to Adolph Hitler. Tesla would create Rube Goldberg "Mouse Trap" type invention plans that would be a series of complicated steps to create a simple end product. Like a 50 step process to create a mechanical finger to pick your nose with or maybe a TOP SECRET butt scratcher…George was the laughing stock of the Third Reich for stealing dummy invention plans from Tesla.





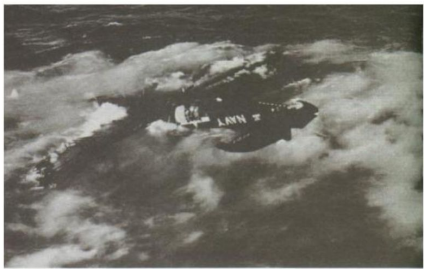
Rube Goldberg was an amazing "genius" cartoon drawing artist / illustrator.

Tesla wanted to scare George bad enough so he would leave & not come back. One night he had young George assist him by pulling levers while there was water on the ground resulting in George being shocked. Another time Tesla grabbed George while holding onto a live wire with AC current flowing through it, which resulted in George getting zapped but not Tesla. The final straw for George was when Tesla asked him to have a seat so he could test a new electric chair that he had created for the U.S. Government to make sure it worked properly. Frightened George said, no way & he ran out the door. A short time later, Nikola Tesla was murdered by Nazis Otto Skorzeny & Reinhardt Gehlen on January 7, 1943 in New York City after they stole his best inventions. “But that’s a whole other story you can read about in my other book; The Bush Connection.”

Antique Power Switches **Chapter #5 THE “REAL” STORY OF CURIOUS GEORGE…H.W. BUSH**

For those of you who do not know the real story of how the character "Curious George" the monkey was created... well then, you are in for a real treat. During the 1940's, the greatest inventor who ever lived, Dr. Nikola Tesla was very good friends with two Jewish immigrants who were writers/artists: H.A. & Margaret Rey. The Reys had just barely escaped from the Nazis while fleeing Nazi-occupied France on bicycles...The Reys were telling Dr. Tesla about their ordeal with the Nazis and compared the Nazis to a bunch of evil, devious monkeys! Tesla laughed and then told them his own story about an evil, devious little Nazi "monkey" named

George H. Scherff jr. the son of his accountant George H. Scherff Sr. Tesla told them that George was evil, devious & as "curious" as a monkey! He was always snooping around trying to steal from Tesla & getting into trouble because he was just so curious!
Tesla suggested to H.A. & Margaret Rey that they write children's' books about a devious, "little" monkey that was always getting himself into trouble based on the "escapades" of George H. Scherff Jr. aka: George H.W. Bush. They named that devious little monkey, "Curious George!" The rest is history! Now you know how the devious little monkey "Curious George" was really created! "Curious George" the devious little monkey was named after George H.W. Bush! Unlike the real George, the fictional cartoon character "Curious George" is not a Nazi. The C.I.A. had the co-author of Curious George, Alan J. Shalleck murdered two months ago. 2/2006. Shalleck was murdered to prevent him from talking about who Curious George was really named after, George H. Scherff jr. aka: George H.W. Bush! Evidently, dead men tell no "monkey" tales! Shalleck was murdered by the C.I.A. just three days before a movie about Curious George the Monkey was to be released in movie theaters worldwide. Coincidence? Nah!



After leaving Tesla, the young Nazi George H. Scherff Jr. forged a birth certificate evidencing he was older. He falsely claimed that his last name was Bush, the son of U.S. Senator: Prescott Bush & he joined the U.S. Navy. Bush did not fly 58 combat missions for the U.S. Navy as claimed. In September of 1944, Nazi Spy: George H.W. Bush deliberately sabotaged his Grumman TBF Avenger. He radioed his position to his Nazi-comrades waiting in a German Submarine below, shot his instrument panel full of holes and then he put the plane into a steep nosedive & parachuted to safety.

His tail-gunner Lt. Junior Grade William White and Radioman Second Class John Delaney were not able to get out of the plane and parachute to safety because of the tremendous g-forces. Nazi Bush murdered his two crew members on Hitler's orders'.[10]

Grumman TBF Avenger Here's a never before published photo.
Traitor, Murderer, Coward, SS Nazi George "The Butcher" Bush
September 1, 1944

"One Day Before He Killed His Two
Crew Members."

White & Delaney were both killed while George Herbert Walker Bush survived. The "sunken" Grumman Avenger Torpedo Bomber was then towed out to sea by the German U-Boat to a large cargo ship waiting close by. The cargo ship had a giant crane on board that was used to lift the "fully-intact", Avenger onto the ship. The cargo ship then sailed undisturbed back to Germany. That's how Nazi-Germany was able to "steal" America's advanced Top Secret, "rotating 50 caliber machine-gun turret", TBF Avenger Bomber technology. George H.W. Bush was a Nazi war criminal just like his fake father Prescott Bush was!

Chapter #6 Bush's Former Squadron Leader's Negative Comments…

Chester Mierzejewski, an old war buddy of Bush, who said he was angered by the "false assertions" made by candidate Bush when describing the incident, gave a different account. After 44 years of silence, Mierzejewski, who also was awarded the Distinguished Flying Cross, told the **New York Post** that Bush had abandoned his crew to death when there was another choice. He said he was approximately 100 feet in front of Bush's plane as the turret gunner for Squadron Commander Douglas Melvin's plane, "so close he could see in the cockpit" of Bush's bomber. Mierzejewski's close wartime buddy was one of the two crew members in Bush's plane. According to Mierzejewski, the squadron was in a tight formation bombing raid against a Japanese radio installation on an island reported to be heavily fortified. He saw "a puff of smoke" come from Bush's plane which quickly disappeared and was certain only one man parachuted from the plane and that it was Bush, the pilot. Mierzejewski said the Avenger torpedo bomber was engineered so that it could successfully crash land on water and that Bush doomed his own crew by bailing out and leaving the bomber out of control. Other World War II veterans also expressed concern about Bush parachuting out of the aircraft. "He had a moral obligation to put that plane in the water in an emergency landing," Robert Flood, a former B-17

bombardier told the press. **"George H.W. Bush violated the primary rule for a captain of a multi-crew aircraft; The pilot always leaves last. He never leaves the airplane with anybody in it!"**

Pete Brandon, a Marine Corps Avenger pilot, who also served in the South Pacific, said an Avenger pilot had two choices: Set the plane down in the water or hold it steady until the two crewmen could prepare to jump. "In an Avenger, only the pilot wore a parachute," Brandon said. "The two crewmen wore harnesses. If the order came to bail out, they had to take chest parachutes from a shelf and strap them on - and bail out. The Avenger was very unstable. The pilot had to be at the controls the whole time or it would go right over on its back." Steve Hart, then Vice President Press Secretary, described Mierzejewski's account as absurd. Hart said, "The Vice President has told us time and time again what happened that day. To suggest that the account is inaccurate is absurd." What is absurd is the conflicting or missing reports of exactly what happened to Bush's two crew members. According to the Post, the intelligence report on the loss of Bush's plane in September, 1944 notes that it had become "standard doctrine" for VT 51, Bush's bomber squadron, "to make bombing runs on targets near water so as to retire over the water. This puts pilot and crew in position for water rescue in event of forced landing. The same document reports, without attribution, that "smoke and flame" engulfed Bush's engine, and that "Bush and one other person were seen to bail out. The chute of the other person who bailed out did not open." The report was signed by Melvin and an intelligence officer, Lt. Martin E. Kilpatrick. Contrary to normal military procedure, the report was not dated and Navy archives were unable to supply a subsequently completed report. Gunner Lawrence Mueller, who lives in Milwaukee, flew on the Chi Chi Jima mission. When asked who had the best view, he replied unhesitatingly: "The turret gunner in Melvin's plane."

Mueller's recollections, jogged by a log book that he kept, support Mierzejewski's account. And it was noted that Bush's plane was the only

one from the squadron that did not return. Mueller told the Post, "No parachute was sighted except Bush's when the plane went down." He also said no one mentioned a fire engulfing Bush's plane or he would have noted it in the log book. The Finback, the sub which picked up Bush from his raft in the water, made no report of a fire on Bush's plane, but did comment on his crew: "Bush stated that he failed to see his crew's parachutes and believed they had jumped when the plane was still over Chi Chi Jima, or they had gone down with the plane." About six hours later, the Finback picked up another pilot, James W. Beckman, from the USS Enterprise, who stated that it was known that only one man had parachuted from Bush's plane. "This decided us to discontinue any further search of that area . . ." [11]

Crashed TBF Avenger Although the heart of Bush's story about the incident remains the same, **Mierzejewski is adamant Bush's account is <u>not</u> the truth and blames Bush for the abandonment and deaths of both men**. "I think he could have saved those lives, if they were alive. I don't know that they were, but at least they had a chance if he had attempted a water landing," Mierzejewski said. This horrible crime was perpetrated to help the young Nazi, George Herbert Walker Bush establish a false reputation for being a great American WWII hero for enhance his future political career. Hitler’s plan to take over the world was right on schedule. George Herbert Walker Bush, was <u>not</u> an American War Hero! He was a sabotaging Nazi traitor! George H.W. Bush was a heroin junky. He was constantly “smacked-out” to escape his guilty conscience! That’s how he earned his nickname “Poppy!”

Heroin / Smack / Junk / Poppy

Prescott Bush, George H.W.'s "alleged" father, was arrested during 1942 for trading with the enemy, the Nazis! Prescott Bush's Union Banking Corp. was supporting and doing business with Hitler's Nazis' throughout WWII as was Ford, Edison, Marconi, I.B.M. et al...The Nazis in Germany were sending their stolen Jewish Holocaust "loot" to Prescott Bush in America to "launder" and to save for creating a Fourth Reich in America. Roosevelt had his company seized under the Trading with the Enemy Act.[11] When Prescott Bush died, George H.W. Bush inherited millions of dollars of stolen Jewish Holocaust loot, which he "allegedly" used to fund his own presidential elections, other conservative right-wing, neo-Nazi Republican candidates, hate groups like the Brotherhood of Aryan Nations & the KKK.

Nazi U.S. Senator: Prescott Bush & Family & Prescott with Nazi:
George H. Scherff Jr.
aka: George H.W. Bush.

Chapter # 7 <u>How Nazi George H.W. Bush Sabotaged Flight 19</u>

Here’s George H.W. Bush’s Flight 19 Squadron members.

It was December 1, 1945 on a U.S. Naval Base in Fort Lauderdale, Florida. Nazi U2 submarines had been sighted off the coast of Florida. The U.S. Navy decided to increase its torpedo bombing raids to help destroy the Nazi threat so close to America’s shoreline. Adolph Hitler ordered his young Nazi Spy comrade: George H. Scherff Jr. aka: U.S. Navy Pilot: George H.W. Bush to sabotage his squadron’s planes to prevent them from future bombing raids on his U2 submarines.[12]

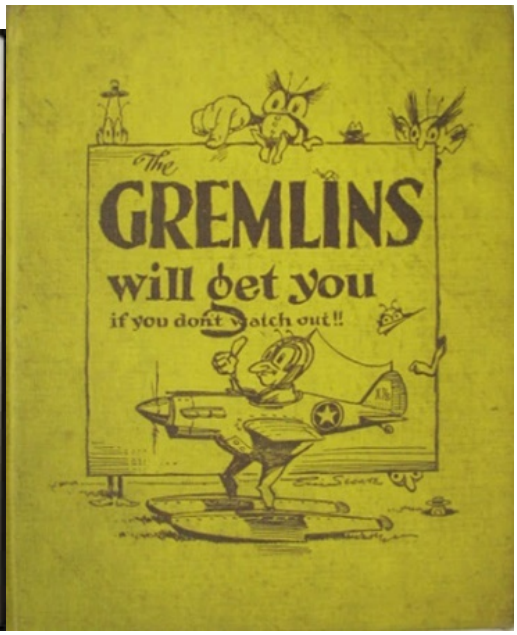
U.S. Naval Base in Fort Lauderdale, Florida U.S. Naval Base in Fort Lauderdale, Florida Later that night Nazi: George H. W. Bush made his move. He snuck out of his barracks' with a wire cutter & a flashlight in his back pocket. His plan was to cut the steering wire cables slightly in every plane so they would work for a short time but then fail, causing the planes to crash. George quietly climbed into one of his squadron's TBF Avenger planes & started to search around for wires to cut. Just as he was about to cut the steering cable, he heard a loud voice from a large MP yelling "Hey, what the hell are you doing?" George hid the wire cutters under the pilot seat & climbed out of the plane. George told the MP that he just wanted to get familiarized with the plane before the next training mission in a few days. The MP looked at young George & told him that the planes are off limits to everyone after dark including pilots! He said, "If I catch you out here after dark again I'm going to beat your ass & throw you in the Brig for insubordination, trespassing & vandalizing."

George apologized to him & said he wouldn't do it again so the MP let George go back to his barracks' & he didn't report the incident to his base commander however he did tell Bush's squadron members that he caught George snooping around in someone else's plane which was a big "no-no" among pilots.[13]

Bush had crashed his TBF Avenger a year before resulting in his two crew members being killed. Bush's entire squadron blamed Bush for their deaths & suspected him of being a Nazi Traitor so he was transferred to a different squadron. Bush's reputation for being a cowardly, killer & possible Nazi Traitor preceded him when he was assigned to his new squadron at the Ft. Lauderdale Naval Base. None of Bush's new squadron trusted or liked George except one man; Corporal: Alan Kosnar. He felt sorry for young George & suggested they give him a chance to prove that he was a good pilot. The very next night, when George thought everyone else was sleeping, he snuck out of his barracks once again with a flashlight & another pair of wire cutters. He made his way to a plane in his squadron. He stepped up on the wing to climb into the cockpit to cut the steering cable wires when all of the sudden someone shined a bright light in his eyes, yelled; "Surprise!" and punched George in the face knocking him off of the wing & onto the ground. The MP along with all of George's squadron members except one of them; Corporal: Alan Kosnar, gave George a "blanket-party." They threw a blanket on top of him & beat him with their fists & socks filled with bars of soap then they carried George back to barracks & threw him down on the shower floor which broke George's right hand. They told George that this is what they do to Nazi Traitors & warned him not to tell anyone about the beating he just received or they would kill him instead next time and bury him in a swamp. They told George that it's ok to go to the base hospital to get fixed up as long as he tells the doctor that he slipped on a bar of soap while showering & that's what caused his injuries. George agreed, so they let him limp away to the base hospital.[14]

Bush’s squadron members had a meeting while he was at the base infirmary getting fixed up. They were trying to decide what to do about George. All of them witnessed George trying to sneak into a plane in the middle of the night with wire cutters. Now they all suspect that George Bush was really a sabotaging Nazi Spy however, they did not have enough evidence to formally charge George with the crime of being a Nazi Spy so they decided to wait a few days until after their training flight on December 5, 1945 to brief the base commander about George Bush’s Nazi Spy-like late night activities climbing in planes with wire cutters. They knew that George had a broken wrist & would be unable to fly anytime soon or potentially damage any planes so they decided to relax with a little
R & R for two days with a weekend pass to get ready for their training flight on December 5, 1945, known infamously as **Flight 19**.

When they returned from their training flight they were going to have the base commander launch a formal investigation into George Bush. As soon as George Bush became a new squadron member, strange things started to happen to planes during the night, like broken radio antennas, flat tires,
oil on runways caused by leaky hydraulic landing gear & water in the fuel of multiple planes. These strange events had never occurred before George Bush arrived at the Fort Lauderdale Naval Base. George H.W. Bush was the epitome of a sabotaging Nazi “gremlin."



It was a dark, stormy night on December 4, 1945. Bush's squadron returned to the base at 10:00pm after at spending the past two days drinking & partying in downtown Miami Beach. They were all a little hung-over & tired so they went to sleep early. While everyone was asleep, George Bush seized the opportunity. He snuck out of the base infirmary & headed to the runway where his squadron's TBF Avengers were located. This time he was smart. He waited in the shadows until the local MP's made their "rounds" before climbing aboard each plane. Nazi Spy: George Bush hid magnets behind the compasses in each of his squadron's planes & "somehow,"

possibly with an accomplice, magnets were hidden in the rescue plane which obviously caused all of them to instantly malfunction which killed another 13 men. George Bush was able to sneak back into the infirmary a short time later without anyone noticing he had ever left. Apparently, Bush had been ordered by Hitler to murder his squadron to prove his loyalty to de Fuhrer & to prevent them from potentially destroying his fleet of North Atlantic U2 submarines which were just off the coast of Ft. Lauderdale, Florida.[15]

(Above) Avenger I FN908 serving with No 850 Squadron, FAA, aboard HMS *Empress* in the English Channel in 1944.

Early the next morning, on December 5, 1945 at 6:00am George Bush left the base infirmary & headed over to his barracks' to watch his squadron prepare for their training "Flight 19" scheduled to take-off in a few hours. Bush was not very welcome among his squadron & they let him know about it. The squadron leader called Bush a Nazi traitor & told him that when they return from their training flight they were going to meet with the base commander to launch a formal investigation into him being a Nazi Spy. George just smiled at him & didn't say a word. One by one, Bush's squadron members headed past him on their way out the door to head over to their planes in preparation for their training flight exercise scheduled for 10:00am. The only crew member that liked George, stuck up for him & didn't take part in his beating, Corporal Allan Kosnar walked by. George put his hand on Allan's shoulder, looked him in the eyes & with a maniacal evil grin, said "If I were you I would call out sick for the training flight this morning." George winked at him & walked away. Lucky for Corporal Allan Kosnar, he took George's advice, called out sick & did not take part in

Flight 19's training mission that day. At 10:00am on December 5, 1945 **Flight 19** comprised of five Grumman TBF Avenger planes took off from Fort Lauderdale, Florida without Corporal Allan Kosnar or George H.W. Bush & were never seen again.[16]

Nazi Spy; George H. Scherff Jr. aka: George H. W. Bush effectively murdered 14 of his 15 **Flight 19** squadron members & "possibly" 13 other crew members from the rescue plane by placing magnets next to the compasses on every plane that vanished. The magnets caused the compasses to malfunction, thus causing the pilots to be disoriented resulting in all of them crashing into the ocean & dying when their fuel supplies ran out. The only squadron flight crew member to survive was the one that George Bush warned not to fly that day, Corporal Allan Kosnar.

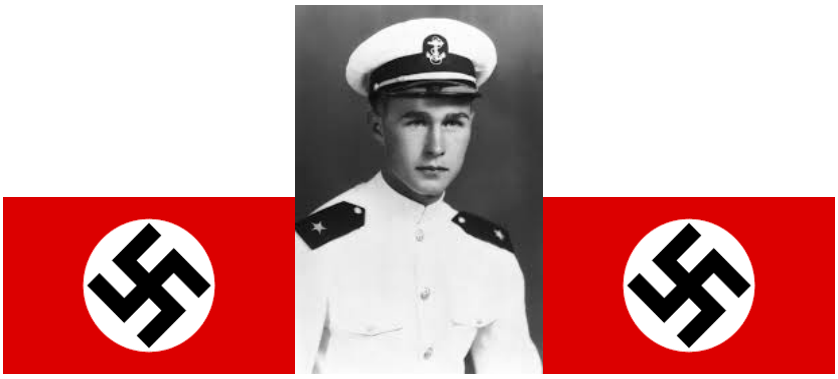
Flight 19

Nazi Spy: George H.W. Bush was later given a job as an officer of Naval Intelligence & as a special agent for the O.S.S. which merged with Hitler's former SS Gestapo in 1947 & became the C.I.A. George went on to murder J.F.K. with his Nazi C.I.A. comrades: Skorzeny & Gehlen. Later he became the Director of the C.I.A. While Director, he cleansed all of his U.S. Naval records linking him to Flight 19's squadron. He also cleansed his relationship working for Nikola Tesla & just about everything else related to him. There were photos in the National Archives of Adolph Hitler with young George Bush that were either edited or destroyed. Later Nazi George

Bush went on to illegally become a Vice-President & then illegally become a President of the United States.

The C.I.A., N.S.A., F.B.I. & the mainstream media are all part of Hitler's III Reich, TRUMP Family New World Order takeover of America. Most if not all the U.S. Senators, Congressmen, Governors & Mayors are part of it too. Obviously, they are all going to claim that my information about George H.W. Bush is false, because they are all corrupt, Fascist liars who will say or do anything to protect him & his Nazi background. They will do anything to prevent the World from knowing that a U.S. President, George H.W. Bush was really a foreign born Nazi Traitor!

George H.W. Bush aka: George H. Scherff Jr. was a piece of shit Nazi Traitor!

Conclusion 

George H. Scherff "Jr." was the son of Dr. Nikola Tesla's Austrian born, illegal immigrant, accountant **George H. Scherff "Sr."** George H. Scherff Sr. was a Nazi Spy sent by Hitler to work for Nikola Tesla. George was stealing money & inventions from Tesla. He kept the money for himself but gave the stolen inventions to Adolph Hitler to help the Nazis win WWII. In 1938, Hitler sent 14 year old George H. Scherff Jr. to America to try to befriend, spy on, steal from & kill the great inventor, Dr. Nikola Tesla! George H. Scherff Sr. talked Tesla into hiring his "son," George H. Scherff Jr. to be his lab assistant. George H. Scherff Jr. would spend the next year working for Tesla while stealing from him like his father had been doing for years. George stole plans for Tesla's "death-ray," an interplanetary communication transmitter / receiver, an earthquake machine, an anti-gravity flying disk et al…George tried to kill Tesla a couple of times but he didn't succeed. It seems that Tesla always knew in advance when something bad was going to happen to him. Tesla had been hit by a taxicab a few years earlier "allegedly" driven by George H.W. Bush.

Tesla knew that young George H. Scherff Jr. was stealing from him & trying to kill him so he decided to get even. Tesla would leave fake invention plans labeled "TOP SECRET" laying around for young George to steal & bring back to Adolph Hitler. Tesla would create Rube Goldberg "Mouse Trap" type invention plans that would be a series of complicated steps to create a simple end product. Like a 50 step process to create a mechanical finger to pick your nose with or maybe a TOP SECRET butt scratcher…George was the laughing stock of the Third Reich for stealing dummy invention plans from Tesla. Tesla wanted to scare George bad

enough so he would leave & not come back. One night he had young George assist him by pulling levers while there was water on the ground resulting in George being shocked. Another time Tesla grabbed George while holding onto a live wire with AC current flowing through it, which resulted in George getting zapped but not Tesla. The final straw for George was when Tesla asked him to have a seat so he could test a new electric chair that he had created for the U.S. Government to make sure it worked properly. Frightened George said, no way & he ran out the door. A short time later, Nikola Tesla was murdered by Nazis Otto Skorzeny & Reinhardt Gehlen on January 7, 1943 in New York City after they stole his best inventions. “But that’s a whole other story…”

After leaving Tesla, the young Nazi George H. Scherff Jr. forged a birth certificate evidencing he was older. He falsely claimed that his last name was Bush, the son of U.S. Senator: Prescott Bush & he joined the U.S. Navy. Bush did not fly 58 combat missions for the U.S. Navy as claimed. In September of 1944, Nazi Spy: George H.W. Bush deliberately sabotaged his Grumman TBF Avenger. He radioed his position to his Nazi-comrades waiting in a German Submarine below, shot his instrument panel full of holes and then he put the plane into a steep nosedive & parachuted to safety. His tail-gunner Lt. Junior Grade William White and Radioman Second Class John Delaney were not able to get out of the plane and parachute to safety because of the tremendous g-forces. Nazi Bush murdered his two crew members on Hitler’s orders’.

White & Delaney were both killed while George Herbert Walker Bush survived. The “sunken” Grumman Avenger Torpedo Bomber was then towed out to sea by the German U-Boat to a large cargo ship waiting close by. The cargo ship had a giant crane on board that was used to lift the “fully-intact”, Avenger onto the ship. The cargo ship then sailed undisturbed back to Germany. That’s how Nazi-Germany was able to “steal” America’s advanced Top Secret, “rotating 50 caliber machine-gun turret”, TBF Avenger Bomber technology. George H.W. Bush was a Nazi war criminal just like his fake father Prescott Bush was! In 1945, Nazi George Bush got transferred to a new squadron in Ft. Lauderdale, Florida where he sabotaged his squadron’s TBF Avenger planes by hiding magnets next to their compasses resulting in the deaths of 14 men. It’s very possible

that George had an accomplice who was responsible for the disappearance of the rescue plane with 13 crew members from a base close by.
Nazi Spy: George H.W. Bush was later given a job as an officer of Naval Intelligence & as a special agent for the O.S.S. which merged with Hitler's former SS Gestapo in 1947 & became the C.I.A. George went on to be the Director of the C.I.A. While Director, he cleansed all of his U.S. Naval records linking him to Flight 19's squadron. He also cleansed his relationship working for Nikola Tesla & just about everything else related to him. There were photos in the National Archives of Adolph Hitler with young George Bush that were either edited or destroyed. Later Nazi George Bush went on to illegally become a Vice-President & then illegally become a President of the United States.
Former U.S. President George H.W. Bush was a piece of shit, sabotaging, cowardly, prudent Nazi serial killer who was born in Austria as George H. Scherff Jr. He should never have been allowed to be a U.S. President but the Fascist, corrupt Secret Service, C.I.A. & F.B.I. graciously allowed him to become one. These Fascist, corrupt agencies are all part of Hitler's IV Reich / Trump Family New World Order takeover of America. ***Flight 19** was sabotaged by the young Nazi Spy; Pilot George H.W. Bush. It wasn't pilot error, bad weather, defective planes or strange phenomena from the Bermuda Triangle that caused Flight 19 & the rescue plane to vanish without a trace. It was murder, plain & simple.[17]

List of Sources

1. Wikipedia- Flight 19 History. 2020
2. Wikipedia- Flight 19 History. 2020
3. Wikipedia- Flight 19 History. 2020
4. Wikipedia- Flight 19 History. 2020
5. Wikipedia- Flight 19 History. 2020
6. Wikipedia- Flight 19 History. 2020
7. Erik ORION-July 7, 2020
8. Otto Skorzeny- Personal Interview. Boynton Beach, FL 1999
9. Otto Skorzeny- Personal Interview. Boynton Beach, FL 1999
10. Otto Skorzeny- Personal Interview. Boynton Beach, FL 1999
11. Chester Mierzejewski- New York Post N.Y.C., NY 1984
12. Otto Skorzeny - Personal Interview. Boynton Beach, FL 1999
13. Otto Skorzeny - Personal Interview. Boynton Beach, FL 1999

14. Otto Skorzeny - Personal Interview. Boynton Beach, FL 1999
15. Otto Skorzeny - Personal Interview. Boynton Beach, FL 1999
16. Otto Skorzeny - Personal Interview. Boynton Beach, FL 1999

---

[1] Wikipedia
[2] Wikipedia
[3] Wikipedia
[4] Wikipedia
[5] Wikipedia
[6] Wikipedia
[7] Erik ORION
[8] Otto Skorzeny
[9] Otto Skorzeny
[10] Otto Skorzeny
[11] Chester Mierzejewski
[12] Otto Skorzeny
[13] Otto Skorzeny
[14] Otto Skorzeny
[15] Otto Skorzeny
[16] Otto Skorzeny
[17] Erik ORION

ROSWELL AND THE REICH

THE NAZI CONNECTION

JOSEPH P. FARRELL

ROSWELL
AND THE
REICH
THE NAZI CONNECTION
JOSEPH P. FARRELL
oswell Daily Record
Claims Army Is Stacking Courts Martial
RAAF Captures Flying Saucer On Ranch in Roswell Region
House Passes Tax Slash by Large Margin
No Details of Flying Disk Are Revealed
TERRY LAMB

Other Books by Joseph P. Farrell:

Nazi International
Reich of the Black Sun
The S.S. Brotherhood of the Bell
Secrets of the Unified Field
The Cosmic War
The Giza Death Star
The Giza Death Star Deployed
The Giza Death Star Destroyed

ROSWELL
AND THE
REICH

Joseph P. Farrell

Adventures Unlimited Press

Roswell and the Reich

Copyright 2010
by Joseph P. Farrell

ISBN: 978-1-935487-05-0

All Rights Reserved

Published by:
Adventures Unlimited Press
One Adventure Place
Kempton, Illinois 60946 USA
auphq@frontiernet.net

www.adventuresunlimitedpress.com

Cover by Terry Lamb

Third printing August 2010

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3

ROSWELL
AND THE
REICH

The Nazi Connection

To
T.S.F.:
You are sorely, and profoundly, missed;
Thank you, and God bless you.

And to all the “extended Inklings,” you know who you are:
Larry, Rick, Richard, Robin, Linda, Marty, George Ann,
Michael S.,
And all the rest,
Thank you and God bless you, too.

Table of Contents

Preface and Prologue

A. Initial Personal Notes
B. The Huge Anomaly
C. Methodological Overview and Other Considerations
D. Succinct Abstract of the Case and the Argument
E. Final Personal Notes

Part One:
The Timelines and the Scenarios

1. The First Articulation: The *Roswell Daily Record* Articles and the Berlitz and Moore Presentation

A. The First Articulation: The July 8, 1947 Articles in the Roswell Daily Record
1. The Main Article
2. The Forgotten Article
3. A Summary of the First Articulation of the Roswell Incident

2. The Second Articulation: Berlitz-Moore-Friedman and the Emergence of the Standard Scenario

A. The Conventional Wisdom
1. The Interrupted Teletype: Lydia Sleppy
2. Prejudicing the Response: Initial Inquiries of the Pro-ET Scenario

3. 1st Lieutenant Walter Haut's Press Release
4. Major Jesse Marcel is Ordered to Fort Worth with the Wreckage
5. Weather Balloon Debris is Substituted at the Press Conference: Major Jesse Marcel and the Debris
a. Marcel's *Curriculum Vitae* According to Berlitz and Moore
b. The Moore-Friedman-Marcel Interviews of May and December 1979
6. The Parade of Witnesses Begins
a. Colonel Blanchard's Widow
b. Grady Barnett and the Second Site: Bodies are Finally Found
c. Mac Brazel's Son, Bill Brazel: New Scenario Details, and the Debris Again
d. Floyd Proctor Interview: More Details Emerge
e. The Timing of Mac Brazel's Radio Interview
f. Jesse Marcel Jr. on the Debris and His Father
7. Enter the Extraterrestrials: A Morgue Full of ETs, Strange Incidents, and Stranger Memoranda
a. The Norma Gardner Story
b. The Goldwater-LeMay Incident
c. The FBI and Twining-Schulgen Memoranda
B. Summary
1. The Basic Timeline of Events According to Berlitz Moore's and Presentation
2. The "Bodies"
3. The Debris
4. Problems with the Balloon Theory

3. The Third Articulation: Berliner-Friedman and the Tightening of the Standard Scenario

A. The Wider Context
1. The Problems with *Any* Balloon Explanation of the Event
2. Some Pertinent Questions
3. The Memoranda
a. The Twining-Schulgen Memorandumb
b. Project Sign and General Hoyt Vandenberg's Conclusion

c. The Conclusions of the Robertson Panel
4. The Smith-Sarbacher Interview
B. The Debris and the Bodies
1. A Methodological Assumption
2. The Glenn Dennis Story
3. The Gerald Anderson Story
a. Preliminary Context
b. The Story Itself
4. Mac Brazel
a. The Debris
b. The Bodies
c. Berliner's and Friedman's Analysis
5. The Grady "Barney" Barnett Story
C. "In the Cause of Objectivity"
1. Dispensing With The Writing
2. Making More Short Shrift of the German Connection
a. The Foo Fighter Problem
b. The Ghost Rockets: Ignoring Another Significant Clue
c. The Declassification Argument and Its Implicit Assumption

4. The Fourth Articulation: Randle, Schmitt, Carey, and the Emergence of the Revisionist Scenario
A. The Revisionist Scenario
1. Adjusting the Timeline: The Military's Earlier Involvement
2. Discounting Grady "Barney" Barnett
3. New Witnesses, and New Details from Old Witnesses
a. New Witness: The Roswell Fire Department Response, Frankie Rowe, and Dan Dwyer
b. The "Archaeologists Problem"
c. Mac Brazel's July 9, 1947 Interview, and an Inherent Contradiction
d. Frank Kaufman
e. Melvin Brown
f. Pappy and Sappho Henderson
g. Jim Ragsdale and Trudy Truelove

h. Glenn Dennis, the Nurse, and the Bodies
i. The Lieutenant Governor Joseph Montoya Episode
j. Radar Tracking of the Craft
k. Walter Haut's Post-Mortem Affidavit and its Implications
l. Don Schmitt's Illustration of the Craft and the Testors Model Rendition
m. Jesse Marcel Jr.'s Hieroglyphics
B. Taking Account of "All the Evidence"
1. Randle and Schmitt on the Debris, the Bodies, and "Other Explanations"
2. Colonel Blanchard's Strange Remark to His Wife
3. The Pathology of a Methodology: The Primacy of the Bodies

5. The Fifth Articulation: The Skeptics, the Balloon, and the Hot Air Force

A. Kal Korff
1. And the Witnesses
a. The "Collapse" of the Lydia Sleppy "Interrupted Teletype" Story
b. The Collapse of the Lieutenant Governor Joseph Montoya Story
c. The Collapse of the Melvin Brown Story
d. The Collapse of the Glenn Dennis Story
e. The Collapse of the Frank Kaufmann Story
(1) Kaufmann's Lack of "Universal Endorsement"
(2) Randle's and Schmitt's Presentation of Kauf mann as Three Different People
(3) Kaufmann's Appearance at nearly Every Critical Juncture of the Roswell Story
(4) Too Many Internal Contradictions
f. Jim Ragsdale and the Golden Helmets
g. The Rowe Story and the Roswell Fire Department
h. Colonel Blanchard's Leave
i. General Nathan Twining's Schedule Change
2. And the Debris
a. The Debris and the Original Witnesses
(1) Proctor Problems

(2) Bill Brazel, Bessie Brazel Schreiber, and Korff's Analysis
b. "Art's Parts"
c. The Blake Larsen Debris Hoax
d. Korff's Summary of the Debris
3. Korff and the New Balloon Hypothesis
a. Major Marcel's "Bait and Switch" Scenario
b. The Shandera Interview with General Thomas DuBose, the Testimony of Warrant Officer Irving Newton, and Counterintelligence Agent Sheridan Cavitt's Affidavit
c. The Mogul Balloon and the Roswell Debris
d. Berliner's and Friedman's Refusal to Hear Professor Moore's Side of the Story
B. Karl Pflock
1. And the Standard Scenario
a. The Debris
b. The Bodies
2. The Revisionist Scenario
a. The Witnesses
(1) Jim Ragsdale
(2) Frank Kaufmann
b. The Radar Tracking Story
c. "The Terror and Other Exaggerations"
d. Kevin Randle's Break with Don Schmitt
3. A Personal Note on Major Jesse Marcel Sr.
4. The Debris Again

6. The Hot Air Force, the Skeptics, and the Balloon Hypothesis: Randle's Replies

A. The U.S. Air Force's Balloon Explanations: "Case Closed"?
1. The Air Force Calls the Roswell Witnesses
2. Its Potential Significance: The Massive, Fatal Problem
3. The Balloon Launch Hypothesis: Bodies and Debris
4. The Hieroglyphics: A Failure to Explain
5. Summing Up
B. Kevin Randle's Responses

1. Randle's Admissions Regarding the Principal Revisionist Witnesses
2. "New" Witnesses, and Old Ones Retreaded
a. Anna Willmon
b. Johnson, the Debris, and the Bodies
c. Jorgenson's Story: Drone Jets, Hieroglyphics, and Some Descriptions
d. Gonzales' Aliens, and the "Spacecraft"
e. Provost Marshal Edwin Easley, and Barton's Bodies, Aircraft, and Radiation
f. An "Estimation of the Situation"
3. The Air Force's Mogul Investigation: Whom It Did Not Interview, and Why
4. General DuBose
5. Randle's Latest Summation of the Incident

7. The Alien Autopsy Carnival, and the General's Telegram
A. The Alien Autopsy Carnival
1. Korff's and Friedman's Involvement
2. Korff's and Friedman's Critiques of the Film
B. General Roger Ramey's Telegram
1. The Discovered "Messages"
2. Houran's and Randle's Critique

8. The Corso Conundrum
A. A Brief Overview of Corso's Story
B. Corso's Assertions Versus the Public Histories of the Technologies
C. Corso's "Technologies List" and the Nazi Connection

PART TWO:
THE PROBLEMATIC OF THE MAJIC-12 DOCUMENTS HOAX

9. Friedman and the Case for the Authenticity of the Majic-12 Documents

A. Friedman on the Nature of Majic-12 Document Authenticity
1. The Methodology
2. The Eisenhower Briefing Document
3. The Majestic-12 Membership List
a. Dr. Donald Menzel
b. The Others
c. The Missing Annexes and the Truman-Forrestal Memorandum
4. The Cutler-Twining Memo
5. The Special Operations Manual
6. The "Cooper-Cantwheel" Documents
B. Implications and Observations: General Montague, Majestic-12, and the Nazi Scenario

10. Randle and the case Against the Authenticity of the Majic-12 Documents

A. The Original Set of Majic-12 Documents
1. The Eisenhower Briefing Document
2. The Cutler Twining Memo
B. The Cooper-Cantwheel Documents
C. Friedman's Replies, and a Methodological Assumption

PART THREE:
ROSWELL AND THE REICH:
THE NAZI SCENARIO IN THE WIDER Context of OPERATION PAPERCLIP, THE COLD WAR, AND THE NAZI INTERNATIONAL

11. Conclusions and Analysis to Parts One and Two

A. Summary
1. Two Datasets

2. The Witnesses for the Bodies and the Alleged Consistency of Their Description
3. The State of the Story of the Roswell Incident: the Basic Facts and Randle's and Korff's Conclusions
4. The Methodology of Proponents of the Extraterrestrial Interpretation
5. The Dialectic of Roswell
6. The Roswell Dialectic and the Principal Researchers
B. Analysis
1. The Methodology of Part Three
2. The Debris and the Witnesses
3. The Inadequacy of Any Balloon Theory
4. The Arguments Against Something Exotic but Terrestrial

12. The Breathtaking Audacity of the Wider Context: "Harmless" Foo Fighters, Paperclip, The Nazi International, UFOs, and the National Security State

A. Those "Harmless" Foo Fighters
1. Sightings Immediately Prior to World War Two and Unusual Explanations
2. The Skies over Germany and Those Oh-So-Harmless Foo Fighters
3. General Twining and Robertson Make Their First Appearance
B. The "Paperclip Detente"
1. The Gehlen-Dulles Deal and Its Fallout
2. The Paperclip Scientists and Some Disturbing Implications
C. The Nazi International and the Legacy of "Paperclip Detente"
1. The Initial Purpose of the Early Bilderberg Meetings
2. "Read My Lips: No New Nazis"
3. Richter's "Fusion" Project at Huemul
4. Corso's Unusual Statements and the Bell
D. "Shoot Them Down": UFOs and the National Security State
1. The General Performance Characteristics of UFOs in the Period
2. Shoot Them Down!
E. Conclusions

13. The Documents: The Nazi Scenario from the Internal Evidence and the Wider Context

A. The Indisputably Authentic Documents
1. The Schulgen Collection Memorandum, 28 October, 1947
a. Text
b. The Faked Version
c.The Background and Possible "Leaker" of the Faked Version
d. Analysis of Statements and the Gestalt of the Genuine Document
2. Twining-Schulgen Memorandum
3. The FBI's "Disc" Communiqué
4. The FBI's Bormann Memorandum: A Related Document?
5. Redfern's FBI and CIA Documentation of the Nazi Connection
B. The Documents of Dubious and Disputed Authenticity
1. The Eisenhower Briefing Document, Majic-12, and General Montague
2. The White Hot Intelligence Estimate
3. The Debus Dilemma
4. A Brief Mention of an Odd "Coincidence"
C. Conclusions: The Outlines of the Scenario Begin to Take Shape

14. Nick Redfern and *The Body Snatchers in the Desert*

A. The Review and the Inconvenient Picture
B. Redfern's Book and the Real Roswell Problems
1. Redfern and the First Problem: The Roswell Dialectic and the Roswell Researchers
2. Redfern and the Second Problem: The Incongruous Presence of Paperclip Nazis
3. Redfern and the Third, Final, and Biggest Problem: Bodies are Alien, but not Extraterrestrial, an d Fully Rationalizable

15. The Doctor and the Debris: A Brief Interlude for a Pseudonymous Deathbed Confession

A. "Marsh's" Story
B. Analysis

16. The Roswell Debris and The Reich's Developments

A. The Roswell Debris According to the Witnesses and Some Nazi Technological Antecedents

1. Memory Metal

2. "I-Beams" and Hieroglyphs

a. The "I-Beam Material" and Two Problems

b. The Hieroglyphs, Indian Petroglyphs, Plasma Pinch, and Electron Probability States

3. Monofilament "String"

4. Super-Strong Metal or Material

5. Major Marcel's Porous Metal

B. The Technologies of Roswell in the Corso Version

1. Fiber Optics

2. Kevlar

3. Night Vision

4. Lasers and Particle Accelerators

5. Transistors and Integrated Circuits

6. Portable Atomic Power for Air- and Space-Craft

C. The Lifting Bodies: A Staged Program toward Field Propulsion

1. Mark I: Conventionally powered Turbine Saucers of Unusual Turbine Configuration

2. Mark II" The Extension of Mark I Craft by the Use of Conventional Technologies in Exotic Combinations, or by exotic Technologies Themselves in Combination with Conventional Ones

3. Mark III: Field Propulsion Craft

D. The Nazi Scenario

1. The Rationalization of the Documents, Bodies, and Debris

2. The Wider Historical Context

3. The Czech Incident Revisited

4. Alternative Two: Antarctica Revisited

BIBLIOGRAPHY

PROLOGUE:
IN THE NO MAN'S LAND OF THE UFOLOGICAL WORLD WAR ONE

"The strategy that Werner Von Braun taught me was that first the Russians are
going to be considered the enemy… Then terrorists would be identified, and that
was soon to follow… Then we were going to identify third-world country
'crazies.' We now call them Nations of Concern. But he said that would be the
third enemy against whom we would build space-based weapons. The next
enemy was asteroids. Now, at this point he kind of chuckled the first time he said
it. Asteroids – against asteroids we are going to build space-based weapons.
And the funniest one of all was what he called aliens, extraterrestrials."

Dr. Carol Rosin.[1]

A. Initial Personal Notes

I am not a ufologist, nor did I ever intend to address that topic directly in any of my books. And, in a certain sense, I am not addressing that subject in this one. What I *am* addressing is one particular aspect within it, an aspect that has assumed almost mythical status within the ufology community, and rightly so, for thanks to the tireless efforts and research of many others who

are unapologetic ufologists, the government's various explanations for the events at Roswell, New Mexico, in 1947, have all but dissolved, except for the *first* one, namely, that the United States Army Air Force, in July of 1947, had recovered the debris of a crashed "flying saucer" in the sands of the New Mexican desert.

Nevertheless, I came to write this book *reluctantly*, for on the one hand, like so many within the ufology community, I (an outsider to that community) cannot help but be persuaded that something truly extraordinary happened in New Mexico in that hot July of 1947, something so extraordinary that it sent shockwaves throughout the U.S. military and government. But on the other hand, I also cannot help but be persuaded, like so many within the "Roswell skeptics' community," that the Roswell-ET mythology is deeply flawed, that there is some deeply rooted, almost visceral problem with the whole "standard extraterrestrial explanation" of the event. I thus stand in an unenviable no-man's-land as regards the Roswell story, for on the one hand, I agree with the classic Roswell researchers - Stanton Friedman, Dr. Kevin Randle, Charles Berlitz, William Moore and others - that *something* had to have happened in New Mexico to call forth such extraordinary efforts on the part of the government to recover it, and then to orchestrate no less than four different versions of what had happened (depending on how one counts the various versions). I remain unconvinced of the skeptics' attempts to trivialize it into merely mundane, ordinary, and almost comical explanations.

On the other hand, however, the whole Roswell mythology with its weedy overgrowth of dead aliens, secret autopsies, leaked documents, and eyewitnesses speaking out on their deathbeds (or after!), leaves me sharing the intuitions of the skeptics, that there is something deeply wrong with the ever-evolving story and its seemingly endless parade of witnesses coming forward at the last minute to reveal what they saw, or – in that unique blend of second-hand testimony with dead man's testimony that counts as evidence in ufology - what *others* told them *they* saw. As we shall see, the majority of the Roswell legend that involves the allegation of the recovery of extraterrestrial life forms or their cadavers involves precisely this type of testimony, and as such, the skeptics are right to complain of it. But on the other hand, why would such secondhand witnesses feel compelled to confabulate such a story? They have almost everything to lose by doing so,

and almost nothing to gain. And why would the military go to such lengths to threaten such people into silence, which – if one is to believe these witnesses – it very much did, if there were not some element of the extraordinary that was actually involved in the event? And even if these tales of threats and intimidation are questionable – for according to some they are – why would the military concoct two wildly divergent explanations, the "recovered flying saucer" and the "weather balloon" explanations, all on the same day and within mere hours of each other?

Being thus caught somewhere in the no-man's-land between these two camps, I am quite certain that this book will bring little joy and even less consolation to either – if either camp pays attention to it at all - for in it, I maintain that something truly exotic, extraordinary, and definitely not American *did* crash in New Mexico in July of 1947, and that a massive cover-up ensued because of it, but I likewise maintain that what crashed was wholly terrestrial; no extraterrestrials, no "cosmic Watergate," no alien autopsies.

By referring to my position as occupying an unenviable no-man's-land, I mean to exhibit the methodological approach adopted in this book, for both sides in the "Roswell War" are stubbornly dug into well-entrenched and fortified positions. Thus, to advance any scenario such as I am proposing here is also to propose a kind of set-piece positional battle, requiring a painstaking reconnoitering of the opposing lines, a careful "softening up" campaign and, only at the end, a carefully planned and orchestrated attack. There are no metaphorical panzers, dive-bombers, heavy artillery or blitzkriegs here. There is only infantry, artillery, and the monotonous slog through the oft-bombarded Roswell mud. In the end, all combatants may just get sick of it all, agree to an armistice, and retire from the field in sheer stalemated exhaustion.

If there is a "cosmic Watergate" with respect to Roswell – and I believe there most definitely is – it is for very different reasons than the extraterrestrial one, for I will argue in this book that what crashed in New Mexico was not only an exotic, but a wholly terrestrial technology, and that it was also *Nazi.* And by saying it was Nazi, I do not mean that it was some black project being conducted by postwar Paperclip Nazis in conjunction with the American military. I mean by Nazi that it was the crash and recovery of something *not* under the postwar control of any of the

victorious Allied powers that had defeated the Third Reich. I mean therefore that what crashed represented a *postwar continuation of some of the black projects of the Third Reich, and that these were being conducted and deployed by an independent, postwar "Nazi International," a kind of extra-territorial Nazi "state."*

And that, of course, is a "whopper" of a statement to make.

B. The Huge Anomaly

That "whopper" precisely illuminates the huge spectrum of perceptions with which anyone occupying this uncomfortable no-man's-land must contend, for so entrenched is the "extraterrestrial crash-and-recovery" explanation in the wider culture, that few people stop to consider that it is *that* explanation that is the *real* whopper. To the post-Roswell ufology community, the scenario of "extraterrestrial crash-and-craft-recovery" has become a paradigm by which to interpret almost every exotic advance of *human* terrestrial technology, and the political and policy decisions that in some cases result from them. By invoking this paradigm with the repetition of a religious litany, the crash-retrieval and reverse engineering scenario has gained almost the status of a dogma, which to question in certain cases, and especially in *this* case, becomes a heresy. For these types of ufologists – and there are far too many of them – the crash-retrieval and reverse engineering scenario is the "rational" and "simplest" explanation, making the best sense in the wider historical context of all the evidence, and fulfilling all the requirements of Ockham's razor, which is, crudely stated, that "the simplest explanation fitting all the known facts is the best". To that community, and the wider cultural perceptions of the event that it has created, it is thus *any* terrestrially based scenario that is wild and fantastic and irrational! Indeed, as will be seen in the main text, clever word-smithing on the part of some proponents of the extraterrestrial hypothesis of the Roswell Incident attempts a subtle play on the word "mundane," which means both "of this world," and "ordinary." By thus qualifying the Roswell Incident, they subtly implant the idea that any terrestrial explanation can only be "mundane" in the second sense, i.e., ordinary. But there is, of course, no necessary logical argument that leads from "terrestrial" to "ordinary," just

as there is no necessary logical argument that leads from “the extraordinary” to “the extraterrestrial.”

For stop and consider, to assert that something *Nazi* crashed in New Mexico is merely to assert that something *terrestrial, but not American*, crashed, and to say that it was Nazi is to say that it was extraordinary, not only by dint of the extraordinary properties attributed to the wreckage, but also by dint of its origin and of its crash at that *time* and in that *place*. That means that one does not have to explain how a comparatively small craft, such as is alleged for the Roswell craft, crossed the vastness of interstellar space, with all the presumably advanced and sophisticated extraterrestrial technology that made it possible, only to crash in New Mexico because it had presumably been damaged by a lightning strike in a thunderstorm, or equally improbably, had collided with a sister craft or something else, causing its demise. Surely “ET” would have advanced enough technologies to avoid lightning strikes or collisions with other objects in the sky.

Thus, all one really need explain is a simple set of questions:

1) Why, if the crash was that of a terrestrially based technology should it necessarily be *Nazi*, and not Soviet, or American?
2) Did the Nazis have technologies that can explain the alleged details of the debris? If so, what scientific principles might be speculatively reconstructed from the evidence as the ufology community itself presents it?
3) If it was Nazi, what on earth were they doing flying around New Mexico two years after their supposed defeat?
4) Can this scenario make sense of all the weedy overgrowth of the Roswell story, i.e., can it make sense of

a) the alleged recovered technology?
b) the alleged recovered alien or extraterrestrial bodies?
c) the military’s panicked and confused reaction to the event and the alleged creation of the so-called top secret UFO study group (Majic-12, or whatever one wishes to call it)?
d) the MJ-12 documents hoax?
e) the never ending stream of witness, deathbed confessions, and second-hand testimony in support of the extraterrestrial scenario?
f) the government’s ever-shifting stories of what “really happened”?

This last point requires us to pause and draw attention to a curious circumstance, one that only serves to highlight the fact that something truly extraordinary *did* crash in New Mexico, and that truly extraordinary events and machinations were set in motion within the government because of it. The curious circumstance is that, of all the events within the history of American politics in the twentieth century, it is the Roswell event that has called forth the *most* official versions of what "really" happened. Not even the assassination of President Kennedy, which has only two official Federal explanations, that of the Warren Commission, and the later explanation of the Joint Committee on Assassinations, called forth this amount of official obfuscations! We were told, first, that it was a captured flying saucer, then a weather balloon, then various versions of the Japanese balloon bomb theory were floated by various people with government connections and withdrawn almost as quickly, and finally, we were told that it was a top secret balloon called Mogul, which was used to monitor potential Soviet nuclear tests to tell us exactly when the Russians had "the bomb."

There is another difficulty allied to the Roswell extraterrestrial crash-and-retrieval scenario, and it is a logical one: If the American Federal government is not to be believed on the basis of its inherent untrustworthiness and the apparent nuttiness of its last three explanations, why should it be believed in the case of its first, which was the nuttiest of them all? And by the same token, it seems that few have noticed that the government's *last* three explanations are in fact so *lame* that they seem to all but guarantee the continued life of its *first* one, along with all of its subsequently-added "extraterrestrial mythology." To put it differently, the last three "official explanations" have in this author's opinion all the signatures of deliberately contrived psychological operations whose objectives were not to *kill* the whole extraterrestrial scenario of Roswell, but to keep it *alive.* But let us leave further discussions of such problems for the main body of this work…for now, let us return to our set of questions and mention one final question:

5) Does the "Nazi scenario" make sense in a wider historical context?

We shall see that it indeed does make sense, and much better sense than either of the other explanations for the Roswell event, whether it was the

crash of an exotic extraterrestrial craft, or that of a top secret but nevertheless very ordinary balloon.

C. Methodological Overview and Other Considerations

The aforementioned set of questions carries with it an implicit methodology, namely, that the timeline of the Roswell event, as recounted and basically agreed upon within the ufology community, will be accepted at more or less face value, and deconstructed, i.e., an alternative explanation will be offered for the components of the extraterrestrial scenario that the UFO community has carefully researched and constructed, the components of which are outlined in the previous series of questions. A closer look at the previous questions reveals what these components are:

1) A comparison of the alleged Roswell aerodynamic technology versus its Nazi counterpart;
2) The Nazi technology and underlying physics itself;
3) The postwar activities of the Nazis, i.e., the "wider context";
4) A reconstruction of the Roswell Incident along a different interpretive paradigm; and, finally,
5) The wider context itself, which would include space and politics, particularly in the United States of America.

The methodology of this book is thus a "dialogue with the sources," all those previously mentioned well-known names within the Roswell-ufology and skeptics' communities. This book offers not new evidence, but a different interpretation of an old story, based on the very statements and research of those who have advanced and defended the Roswell extraterrestrial hypothesis.

As a result of this examination, it will also become evident to the reader in the main text that the testimony of the "witnesses", whether primary or secondary or "dead man," is not sufficiently persuasive that the recovered bodies were in fact "extraterrestrials," for even when such shaky testimony is admitted for the sake of argument, the specific descriptions of these alleged bodies can be rationalized along wholly terrestrial, though certainly anomalous, lines.

D. Succinct Abstract of the Case and the Argument

So what, exactly, is the nature of the case?

That case is based precisely on the story of the Roswell Incident itself, and on the fact that *it has been told in several distinct chronological layers, with each layer emphasizing certain **types** of details.* We may summarize the types of details emphasized by each layer as follows, leaving the detailed examination of each layer in the ufologists' own presentations of the story for the main text:

1) The *core* story or "first articulation," as first reported by the local Roswell radio station, and subsequently by the local newspaper *The Roswell Daily Record* and other newspapers around the country, was that a local rancher had found curious debris on his ranch, and had reported it to the local sheriff. The sheriff in turn urged the involvement of the local U.S. Army Air Force (USAAF) Base, the 509th Bomb Group at Roswell, to investigate. The 509th, as is now commonly known, was the only atomic bomb group in the USAAF at that time. The base commander, Colonel William Blanchard, ordered his intelligence officer, Major Jesse Marcel Sr., to investigate. On the basis of this initial investigation, Blanchard then ordered the base public relations officer, Walter Haut, to compose a press release stating that the USAAF had recovered a crashed flying saucer. This release becomes the basis for the *Roswell Daily Record's* article, in which there is no mention of any recovered extraterrestrial bodies. Thus, the first layer emphasizes ***only** the crash and retrieval of an exotic **technology.***
2) The USAAF then gathered all the debris from the ranch and a second primary crash site, sealed the base, and flew the wreckage to Fort Worth, along with the base's intelligence officer, Major Marcel(who, along with the base's counter-intelligence office, Sheridan Cavitt, were the first military men to encounter the debris). There, according to Marcel, the debris was taken away, and the debris of a crashed weather balloon was substituted for it. Marcel was then ordered to have his picture taken with the substituted

debris. Newspapers around the country and the world carry the story that the "flying saucer" was really only a crashed weather balloon. Thus the second layer attempts the first official *deconstruction* of the recovered flying saucer story, seeking to *downplay the technology and to end public discussion of the incident and of the retrieval of "something."*

3) The Roswell story then laid dormant in the eye of the greater public for about three decades, until a much older Jesse Marcel recounted his story to Stanton Friedman. His story gave the first details of the extraordinary properties of the debris found on the ranch. William Moore and Charles Berlitz then broke the Roswell story, with the extraterrestrial interpretation, in their celebrated book *The Roswell Incident,* and the "standard Roswell-extraterrestrial scenario" began to enter the popular culture. Thus, the third layer not only *reemphasized the aspect of the recovery of an exotic technology, but added two new elements, namely, that the technology recovered was so extraordinary it* ***had*** *to be extraterrestrial, and that extraterrestrial life forms themselves were recovered as a part of the operation.* As we will see, Major Marcel made *no* claims about the recovery of any bodies, extraterrestrial or otherwise. His focus was solely upon the unusual and extraordinary nature of the *debris*, of the *technology.* But in the *presentation* of his story, Berlitz and Moore (with Stanton Friedman contributing research for their book in the background), had uncovered "witnesses" who had seen the now celebrated bodies. Thus, even when the Roswell Incident reemerges into the popular culture, the very *first* articulation of that reemergence is of an extraordinary technology, only at a later point in the new development are bodies added to the story by other witnesses.

4) After this period of initial reemergence, other witnesses came forward to embellish the story with new details, which details now begin to *emphasize* the recovery of "extraterrestrial" bodies and in some cases "alien autopsies" and other funerary and pathological details. Many of these "eyewitnesses," but by no means all, were associated with members of the 509th Bomb Group or their families

or close associates, or allegedly had regular contact with them. Thus, the third layer emphasizes *the recovery of extraterrestrial life forms and "corroborating" details.*

5) During this same period or "layer," the first of the so-called MAJIC-12 documents were anonymously leaked to Jamie Shandera. These documents purported to contain the first detailed descriptions of the alleged recovered technology, as well as mentions of recovered extraterrestrial beings. A second set of purported MAJIC-12 documents was allegedly leaked years later to Timothy Cooper by a man calling himself "Cantwheel." These documents elaborated even further the technological details of the recovered debris and again make mention of recovered extraterrestrial beings. Both sets of documents – the Shandera and the Cooper-Cantwheel sets – also contained details of the above-top-secret UFO study group allegedly established in response to the Roswell event. Finally, and not to be overlooked even though many both in the MJ-12 believers' and disbelievers' camps do so, the Cooper-Cantwheel set of documents alluded to the presence of Nazis in connection with the investigations of the recovered technology. Thus, the fifth layer emphasized *documentary "proof" of the recovery of extra-terrestrial technology and extraterrestrials themselves,* and, as a corollary, *a debate over whether or not said documentation is legitimate, or a hoax.*

6) During the same approximate time period as the leaking of the Cooper-Cantwheel set of documents, retired U.S. Army Lt. Colonel Philip Corso wrote his now famous, or depending on one's lights, infamous *The Day After Roswell,* laying out his version of the crashed, recovered, and reverse engineered exatraterrestrial craft. Corso, unlike many others who follow the extraterrestrial interpretation of the Incident, made explicit claims for the *specific* technologies he maintained we now possess due to this event and its aftermath. Additionally, Corso, like the latter set of MAJIC-12 documents, pointed a subtle finger at the Nazis, but the wider ufology community took almost no notice, and makes almost no mention, of this curious and very interesting fact and what it might actually portend not only about the Incident, but about Corso

himself and his motivations for writing his book. Thus the sixth layer adds a new wrinkle to the crash and retrieval of extraterrestrial technology and beings, for it also emphasizes *that some of that technology was reverse engineered and became the basis for many of the technological accoutrements of modern life that we now take for granted.* Corso's book thus added a further impetus to the methodological trend within ufology that any exotic human technological advance, particularly in aerodynamics, was to be explained on the basis of a crash and recovered ET craft. Indeed, Corso's book strongly reinforced that trend, and such may have indeed been one of his possible hidden purposes in writing it.

7) During the same period, other significant ufologists, Dr. Kevin Randle, Don Schmitt, and Thomas J. Carey thoroughly reconstructed the basic Roswell crash-and-recovery timeline. Randle and Friedmann also published significant books examining the question of the authenticity of the MAJIC-12 documents. The wider ufology community also engaged in a thorough deconstruction of the U.S. Air Force's latest "official balloon" explanation, the Mogul balloon theory. During this most recent period, Thomas J. Carey's and Donald R. Schmitt's *Witness to Roswell* was also published, adding more "witnesses," analysis, and yet another layer of the tightening of the extraterrestrial interpretation. Thus, in the seventh and final layer, the elaborated story is *tightened and an attempt is made to resolve outstanding discrepancies or difficulties.* As we shall also discover, however, an unlikely witness came forward to an unlikely individual, who added not a new "second hand dead man's testimony" to the elaboration of the extraterrestrial interpretation, but, quite the opposite; he indicated explicitly that it was, indeed, something directly tied to World War Two Nazi research. But other than celebrated author and researcher Whitley Strieber, almost no one else noticed the major significance of this witness, and the unusual and "non-Roswellian" context in which his story broke.

Compacting all this, the layers of the story may be summarized as follows:

1) *The First Layer:* crash and retrieval of a flying saucer technology by the U.S. Army Air Force;
2) *The Second Layer:* the U.S. Army Air Force debunks its first story and issues the first version of the "balloon" explanation;
3) *The Third Layer:* the crash and recovery of a technology is again emphasized, this time with a new element, the recovery of strange humanoid bodies, which are claimed to be extraterrestrial;
4) *The Fourth Layer:* the recovery of the strange bodies begins to be emphasized with the "corroborating" details;
5) *The Fifth Layer:* the MAJIC-12 documents are "leaked," emphasizing the recovery both of technology and extra terrestrial bodies;
6) *The Sixth Layer:* Retired Army Lt. Col. Philip Corso publishes his famous *The Day After Roswell* which mentions the recovery of extraterrestrial bodies in order to promote his version of the event, which was that the recovered "extraterrestrial" technology was secretly back-engineered and seeded into American industry;
7) *The Seventh Layer:* Additional witnesses come forward to testify to the ET connection, and the chronology is tightened.

From this brief synopsis, it will be immediately clear what the whole problem with the Roswell-extraterrestrial scenario is, namely, that *in its very first articulation, there is no mention whatsoever of any recovered extraterrestrial bodies or beings, or for that matter, bodies of* ***any*** *sort.* All that is mentioned is a recovered *technology.* Even when the story first began to break out again after its long period of dormancy, Jesse Marcel Sr.'s focus is on the recovered *technology* and its, to him, other-worldly characteristics. Only later in the increasingly embellished story does one encounter actual extraterrestrials, as new witnesses step forward to add this *type* of detail. The detail is further "corroborated" by the leaked MJ-12 documents, and given a new impetus by Lt. Col. Corso's book.

It is these two discrete data sets – the alleged *technology*, and the alleged (extraterrestrial) *bodies* – that will preoccupy us in the main body of this work, and the crucial question with respect to them is this: assuming that the story of recovered bodies is true, does the technology interpret the bodies, or do the bodies interpret the technology? And are any of the

specifically described characteristics of these bodies sufficient to compel to the conclusion that they were extraterrestrial, or are there possible terrestrial explanations for these characteristics? Similarly, are the details of the debris as described by primary firsthand witnesses sufficient to compel to the conclusion that its origin was extraterrestrial? And if the answer to those questions be "no," then how does one account for the military's apparent continued obfuscation of the story down to this very day? Clearly *something* extraordinary must be involved in order for this to be the case.

Additionally, what happens to either of these conflicting data sets and the scenarios constructed from them when one considers the possibility that, as is evident from their emergence much later in the story, the bodies were perhaps deliberately added to the "evidence" or the story much later, or, similarly, when this detail was *emphasized* after the fact? Is it possible to explain this addition from a terrestrially-based scenario? And finally, if this detail *was* added, *who* added it, and *why*? In short, why does the Roswell Incident in its earliest articulation emphasize the *technology*, and in its later articulations *the bodies?*

E. Final Personal Notes

In proposing the Nazi-Roswell scenario, I wish to state again, clearly, categorically, and for the record, that I am *not* philosophically opposed to the existence of "extraterrestrials," nor to the view that "they" have been or may be visiting "us." Similarly, I am *not* of the opinion that the Nazi or any other terrestrial interpretation accounts for all UFO sightings or events. I am only maintaining that it accounts for *some* of them, Roswell possibly and in my opinion most likely being one of them.[2]

Therein is the key word: "possibly." I make no claim for the probabilities of my argument, only for its possibility. However, as will be evident in the main body of this work, by the same token, I do not follow the standard method - so prevalent in the extraterrestrial interpretations of Roswell – of turning Sherlock Holmes on his head, and ignoring the possible explanations in order to opt for the improbable one. Or to put it in Chestertonian diction: *if one grants the extraordinary nature of the event and the alleged recovered technologies*, *then any terrestrial explanation for*

it, howsoever extraordinary and improbable, is preferable to any extraterrestrial explanation for it, howsoever possible, if it makes sense of roughly the same data set.

In short, the Roswell extraterrestrial scenario has become such a part of the hymnography of the ufology community that every apparently exotic terrestrial technology – including the Nazis' - is to be explained on the basis that it originated with a crashed and recovered extraterrestrial craft which was reverse-engineered. So "pervasive" is this inane music that few people seem to notice its hidden sociological and psychological impact within that community, namely, that as an explanation it serves to disincline people to *look for* and construct speculative *terrestrial* explanations for such technologies and events. It serves, in effect, to close off discussion and to deflect attention away from very real *human* achievements in physics and engineering. Secondly – as I somewhat humorously observed in conversation to one such ufologist (who attempted to discredit all my research into World War Two Nazi technology, and redirect it once again to crashed and reverse engineered extraterrestrial technologies, this time by Nazis, as he mentioned the story of crashed saucers in the Black Forest ca. 1936, for which *not a shred of evidence exists).* If this explanation continues to be used in each and all such instances, as my ufological interloper used it, its utility as an explanation for the ufology community will ultimately call into question the whole extraterrestrial hypothesis itself, for sooner or later, having recovered and reverse-engineered so much advanced extraterrestrial technology, humanity will have to start crashing *its* advanced technology on ET's world so he can catch back up with us.

I knew at the outset of writing this book, and know now upon its conclusion, that I will not persuade *any* of the "classical and standard names" within ufology nor within the narrower Roswell research community of the problems with their speculative reconstruction of what happened, just as they have not persuaded me that what crashed there was indeed extraterrestrial. I know similarly that I will not persuade the well-known and respected Roswell skeptics of the folly of *their* advocacy of the loony Mogul balloon hypothesis either. I hope only to convince the unconvinced who are caught like myself in the no-man's-land in between these two entrenched camps. I hope to convince them of the folly of my own speculative reconstruction, for my folly is indeed based on the much

bigger, and now well-known, folly of the American government and the deals with the Nazi devil it made in the final months of World War Two, and to the enduring folly that that Faustian bargain engendered. That folly included - much to the shocked surprise and near panic of the very American military and intelligence community that struck the bargain - the fact that the very *best* of the Nazi scientists and technologies *remained* in Nazi hands after the war, and continued to be researched by them independently of any of the victorious postwar powers.[3]

Any book about the Roswell Incident – after all the research, interviews, comparisons, study, witnesses and documents are weighed and the artillery barrages have ended – is a matter of argued interpretation and speculation. This any honest Roswell researcher, whether "believers" such as Stanton Friedman, Don Berliner, or Kevin Randle, or whether "skeptics" such as the late Karl Pflock, will admit. Each of us must contend with a vast pile of testimony, documents, and data, and must, as best as our lights indicate, include a wider context that we believe to be relevant to the case. Obviously, each "school of interpretation" also comes to the Incident with its own presuppositions, prejudices, and paradigms. I do so, firstly, because I believe the Nazi scenario has been given rather short shrift in the Roswell research community, and secondly, with the desire to state that interpretation in a manner that I hope does justice to the research of these other men. But in the end, it remains - as does theirs - an argued and speculative case. In pointing out what I believe to be a certain tendentiousness on the part of these researchers in some cases, I do not wish the reader to draw the conclusion that I am impugning either their honesty or integrity, for just as easily, they can point out my own tendentiousness. *All of us, without exception,* are arguing from certain ambiguities in the Roswell Incident record to a case we hope is worth consideration, the skeptic for one interpretation, the extraterrestrial advocates for another, and I, for yet a third. If there is anything unusual in my own interpretation, it is that I *grant* the extraordinary nature of the event and materials, and argue for a terrestrial, though politically explosive, origin of it, and for that reason, I argue that both the technology, and its suspected origins, were carefully hidden from the public, recuperating from a long and exhausting war with an unspeakable evil that it had supposedly defeated, and not

merely forced into hiding. Like those honest researchers with whom I conduct a "dialogue with the sources" in the main text of this work, I leave it to the reader to decide if I have argued a reasonable and plausible case.

So, with these preliminary thoughts in mind, down to the business of presentation, analysis, speculation, and argument itself…

Joseph P Farrell
Spearfish, South Dakota
2010

---

[1] Cited in Steven M. Greer, M.D., *Disclosure: Military and Government Witnesses Reveal the Greatest Secrets in Modern History* (Crozer, Virginia: 2001), pp. 255-256.

[2] The other being the second-most famous "crash-and-retrieval" case, the Kecksburg Incident of December 9, 1965. For the details of my arguments of why I believe this might have been the case, see my *Giza Death Star Deployed*, p. 128, and my *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 331-343.

[3] For the case that the most advanced Nazi experiment into the manipulation of the physical medium for the purposes of "free" energy, advanced fieldpropulsion, and the ultimate weapon, the Bell project, survived the war and continued to be independently researched by the Nazis after the war, see my *The Nazi International* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2009), within the wider context of the continued argument in my other books on Nazi research: *Reich of the Black Sun*, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell, Secrets of the Unified Field* (all published by Adventures Unlimited Press), and *The Philosophers' Stone* (Feral House, 2009). The survival of this project in independent Nazi hands raises the possibility that *other* advanced projects continued to be independently researched by them after the war.

PART ONE:
THE TIMELINES AND THE SCENARIOS

"If the debris originated from a top secret test, why was there no recovery or search operation under way until Brazel reported the debris to Sheriff Wilcox four days after the find?"
Kevin Randle, Capt., U.S.A.F.R, and Donald R. Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, pp. 222-223.

"*The lie is different at every level.*"
Anonymous intelligence agent to Richard C. Hoagland and Mike Bara, *Dark Mission: The Secret History of NASA*, p. 530.

1
The First Articulation: The *Roswell Daily Record* Article

"…the Roswell Incident is still going on."
Charles Berlitz and William Moore[1]

Roswell: one only has to speak, hear, or read the name of this small town in New Mexico, and the image of a crashed flying saucer, little grey extraterrestrials, and deep-seated and long-standing government conspiracies and cover-ups almost immediately spring to mind. It is a story that much like a classical myth grows with each generational retelling, acquiring new nuances, new characters, and an increasingly complex plotline. Like all myths, it has become part of the general cultural landscape, at least in America. Within the narrower ufology community, however, it has assumed almost the status of a religious icon; it is a revered symbol of the extraterrestrial faith and an article of its creed. Indeed, it is for the twin reasons that the story continues to be embellished, and continues to be covered-up, that Charles Berlitz and William Moore could observe that it is an incident "that is still going on."[1]

But like all myths, the Roswell incident has a core of truth to it, and therein lies the problem, for just exactly what that core may be is a matter of some debate.

A. The July 8, 1947 Articles in the Roswell Daily Record

1. The Main Article

However, in what may be a surprise to some, in its first articulation, the Roswell story did not start out to be a story about recovered extraterrestrials

— whether dead or alive — nor even a story about a recovered extraterrestrial vehicle and its secret reverse-engineering by the U.S. military. It was simply a story about a crashed "flying saucer" and the fact the U.S. Army Air Force[2] had recovered it and taken it to the local airbase near Roswell. The story was reported on July 8, 1947, in the local *Roswell Daily Record:*

> **RAAF[3] Captures Flying Saucer On Ranch in Roswell Region:**
> **No Details of Flying Disk are Revealed:**
> **Roswell Hardware Man and Wife Report Disk Seen.**
>
> The intelligence officer of the 509th Bombardment group at the Roswell Army Air Field *announced at noon today*, that the field has come into possession of a flying saucer.
>
> According to information released by the department, over authority of Maj. J.A. Marcel, intelligence officer, *the disk was recovered on a ranch in the Roswell vicinity, after an unidentified rancher had notified Sheriff Geo. Wilcox, here, that he had found the instrument on his premises.*
>
> *Major Marcel and a detail from his department went to the ranch and recovered the disk*, it was stated.
>
> After the intelligence office here had inspected the instrument *it was flown to "higher headquarters."*
>
> *The intelligence office stated that no details of the saucer's construction or its appearance had been revealed.*
>
> Mr. and Mrs. Dan Wilmot apparently were the only persons in Roswell who have seen what they thought was a flying disk.
>
> They were sitting on their porch at 105 South Penn. Street last Wednesday night at about ten minutes before ten o'clock when a large glowing object zoomed out of the sky from the southeast, going in a northwesterly direction at a high rate of speed.
>
> Wilmot called Mrs. Wilmot's attention to it and both ran down into the yard to watch. It was in sight less than a minute, perhaps 40 or 50 seconds, Wilmot estimated.

> Wilmot said that it appeared to him to be about *1,500 high and going fast. He estimated between 400 and 500 miles per hour.*
>
> In appearance it looked *oval in shape like two inverted saucers, faced mouth to mouth*, or like two old type washbowls placed together in the same fashion. *The entire body glowed as though light were showing through from inside*, though not like it would be if a light were merely underneath.
>
> From where he stood Wilmot said that the object looked to be about *5 feet in size, and making allowance for the distance it was from town he figured it must have been 15 or 20 feet in diameter*, though this was just a guess.
>
> Wilmot said that he heard no sound but that *Mrs. Wilmot said she heard a swishing sound for a very short time.*
>
> The object came into view from the southeast and disappeared over the treetops in the general vicinity of six-mile hill.
>
> Wilmot, who is one of the most respected and reliable citizens in town, kept the story to himself hoping that someone else would come out and tell about having seen one, but finally today decided that he would go ahead and tell about seeing it. The announcement that the RAAF was in possession of one came only a few minutes after he had decided to release the details of what he had seen.[4]

It is important to take stock of what this article actually does say, and what it does *not* say.

The first and most obvious point about the article is that it mentions nothing whatsoever about recovered bodies of *any* sort, extraterrestrial or otherwise. By the same token, it mentions nothing whatsoever of multiple crash sites, a detail which emerges in later articulations of the Roswell story. It mentions merely *one* site. In doing so, the article, on the basis of the U.S. Army Air Force's own press release of noon the same day — July 8, 1947 — also states explicitly that what was recovered at this site was a *singular object*, a "disk," an "instrument," and *not debris*. Finally, it is to be observed that absolutely *no* descriptions of this "disk" or "instrument" are forthcoming in the article. In fact, the article somewhat curiously and ambiguously observes that "The intelligence office stated that no details of the saucer's construction or its appearance had been revealed." While this

might be taken to mean that the preliminary investigation of the recovered "instrument" at the Roswell Army Air Field had revealed no significant clues, the curious phrasing of the statement might also be understood to indicate that some sort of investigation had been conducted by other personnel than those directly connected with the base, and that the results of this investigation were not revealed to the upper echelons of the base's personnel. Finally, the article explicitly states that the "disk" or "instrument" was then flown "to higher headquarters." This statement occurs prior to the curious statement that nothing had been revealed. One may conclude, therefore, from the article, and taking its statements at face value, that some sort of investigation had indeed been performed, and that nothing of this investigation was revealed to the Roswell base personnel. Howsoever one parses these two statements, it is clear that some sort of investigation was being undertaken, either at the Roswell base, or subsequently at "higher headquarters," and that the results of this were not made available to base personnel, or if they were, that the base personnel were not talking about it.

All this is very significant in the light of the Army Air Force's subsequent attempt to maintain that the recovered "disk" or "instrument" had been mistaken by the Roswell military personnel as a standard weather balloon, not only by the intelligence officer of the only atomic bomb base in the Army Air Force at that time — Major Jesse Marcel — but, as the article subtly hints, by the second investigation at "higher headquarters" itself, for recall, the article mentions *two* investigations: Marcel's initial "inspection," and the subsequent investigation "at higher headquarters," and the article leaves open the slim possibility of yet a third investigation at the base itself by parties unknown.

The second intriguing thing about the article is the Wilmot sighting the previous Wednesday. While there is nothing within the article that suggests that what the Wilmots saw was one and the same thing that the Roswell Army Air Field recovered on the anonymous rancher's fields, it is important to take note of the physical characteristics the Wilmots observed:

1) The object was disk or oval shaped;
2) It travelled at an altitude of approximately 1,500 feet above the ground, according to Mr. Wilmot's guess;

3) It travelled *silently;*
4) It glowed as it did so;
5) It made either no sound, or, as Mrs. Wilmot observed, made a slight "swishing" noise; and finally,
6) Mr. Wilmot guessed its speed to be between 400 to 500 miles per hour.

These observations require some analysis in the light of the fact that, as part of the growing Roswell story, it is *later* claimed that something extraterrestrial was recovered, along with extra-terrestrial beings, for the Wilmots, accustomed to living near an Army Air Field from which B-29 bombers — the only bombers in the American arsenal capable at that time of carrying atom bombs — regularly landed and took off, would have *some* rough ideas of the speed of aircraft at low altitudes, and thus, Mr. Wilmot's estimation of speeds of 400 to 500 miles per hour for what he saw might be an adequate guess as to its actual speed.

Assuming that what the Wilmots saw was a *technology* of some sort, then what they saw was

1) Clearly exotic, since it travelled at high speed and low altitude with either no sound or virtually no sound, compared to a B-29 which, at such low altitudes and speeds would have made a great deal of noise;
2) Clearly exotic, since it glowed as it did so, and B-29's obviously do not glow as they fly; and yet,
3) Was not exotic *enough* to be practical as an interplanetary vehicle, much less an interstellar one, since the reported and guessed-at speed was *far too slow* for such a craft to have been used for practical interplanetary or interstellar craft. While the argument might be advanced that the observed and guessed-at speed was no accurate gauge of its optimum performance, and thus that the observed object might indeed originate off world, this is an argument from silence, and hence not valid. By the same token, what the Wilmots saw cannot be used as a basis by which to interpret what the Roswell Army Air Field recovered from the

ranch, for there is no way of knowing if the two reported objects were in fact one and the same, or, if they were not, were the products of a similar technology.

However, as will be eventually seen, the detail that this object glowed is a significant detail that will re-enter the Roswell story later on. Thus, what the Wilmots saw *may* have a direct bearing on the interpretation of that later detail, and hence of the Roswell event itself.

2. The Forgotten Article

Also on the front page of the newspaper, however, was a short article carried by the AP Wire and datelined Portland, Oregon, an article often overlooked by researchers of the Roswell Incident, though the article bears directly on the event:

Air Force General Says Army Not Doing Experiments:

Portland, Ore., July 8 (AP) — The Oregonian said today that *Maj. Gen. Nathan P. Twining, chief of the AAF material command*, told it flatly that *the "flying saucers" are not the result of experiments by the armed services.*

"*Neither the AAF nor any other component of the armed forces had any plane, guided missile or other aerial device under development which could possibly be mistaken for a saucer* or formation of flying disks," the newspaper quoted *Twining as telling it by telephone from Kirtland Army Airbase, Albuquerque, N.M.*

It continued its quotation: "Some of these witnesses evidently saw something but *we don't know what we are investigating."*

Meanwhile, air National Guard squadrons flying from Portland, Boise and Spokane bases patrolled Pacific Northwest skies late yesterday, landing after sundown, without observing any of the objects.

Col. G. Robert Doddson, commanding the 123rd and 116th squadrons, said *camera-equipped planes would take the air twice daily* from the three fields.[5]

This little article, so often overlooked, is crucial for a number of very important reasons.

Note what it actually states:

1) Major General Nathan Twining is at this time chief of the Air Materials command;
2) General Twining was at Kirtland Airbase in Albuquerque, New Mexico, on the very day of that the two articles ran in the *Roswell Daily Record;*
3) General Twining specifically and explicitly states that the U.S. Army Air Force is "investigating", which could be taken in three ways:

a) It is investigating the general UFO, or as it was then known, the general "flying saucer," phenomenon; or,
b) It is investigating the specific instance of the Roswell "flying saucer," or,
c) It is investigating both the general phenomenon *and* the specific Roswell event;

4) General Twining also states explicitly that the U.S. Army Air Force does not really know "what it is investigating," i.e., has not come to any positive conclusions about what it is, much less where it comes from;
5) The Pacific Northwest Air National Guard was apparently patrolling the skies far from New Mexico with camera-equipped aircraft.

Roswell Daily Record

RAAF Captures Flying Sa
On Ranch in Roswell Reg

Claims Army Is Slacking Courts Martial

House Passes Tax Slash by Large Margin

No Details of Flying Disk Are Revealed

Some of Soviet Satellites May Attend Paris Meeting

Miners and Operato Highest Wage Pact

American League Wins All-Star Game

Woodbury Compares Farm Progress in Past Twenty Years

Air Force General Says Army Not Doing Experiments

Local Weather

The Roswell Daily Record, July 8, 1947. The "Forgotten Article" is in the Second Column from the Right, Toward the Bottom

One may draw some additional inferences from this list.

First, since General Twining was the head of the U.S. Army Air Force's Air Material Command, that is to say, head of the department that oversaw investigation and development of aerospace technology, one may reasonably assume that these investigations were primarily of a

technological nature. Secondly, one must assume that the Air National Guard squadrons mentioned in the article were on some sort of patrol or alert, and that this was related to the Roswell event, since the article reports this detail in not only within the context of a wider discussion of flying saucers, but within the historical time frame of the Roswell event itself. That is to say, the U.S. Army Air Force was attempting to shed some light on what they were by capturing photographs of them. This is significant, for it indicates that it suspected the previous UFO sightings in the Pacific Northwest — one only need consider the celebrated sighting of Kenneth Arnold barely a month previously — could shed some light on whatever had happened in Roswell, for according to the article Twining was at Kirtland Air Base in Albuquerque. We will have occasion to return to the famous Kenneth Arnold sighting, and General Twining's presence in New Mexico during the incident, later in this book.

B. A Summary of the First Articulation of the Roswell Incident

While General Nathan Twining's presence at Kirtland Army Air Force Base in Albuquerque during the Roswell Incident gives some credence to the idea suggested above, namely, that some *other* investigation was undertaken by the USAAF at a higher level than the senior officers of the 509th Bomb Group in Roswell, we must nonetheless forego, for the moment, speculative reconstructions of the Incident to summarize the actual facts of the First Articulation of the Incident themselves.

1) In its first articulation, the Roswell story is about nothing more, and nothing less, than the retrieval of a "flying saucer;"
2) The implication of the USAAF's press release via base press officer Walter Haut to the local media is that an exotic technology was recovered from (and therefore had crashed in) the New Mexico desert;
3) The incident occurred during a period of an apparent wider nationwide alert against "flying saucers," as is evident from the "forgotten article" about Air National Guard alerts in the Pacific Northwest;

4) The presence of General Twining, head of the Army Air Force's Air Material Command and therefore head of a department with responsibilities to investigate foreign technological achievements, *may* indicate a larger significance to the incident;
5) Finally, and most importantly, there is no mention of any recovered bodies — human or otherwise — in the first articulation. Of equal significance is that there is no mention of a second crash site, for the clear implication of the *Roswell Daily*

Record article is that the there was only one site involved.

But this story would quickly change, as we shall now see.

---

[1] Charles Berlitz and William Moore, *The Roswell Incident* (New York: Grossett and Dunlap, 1980), p. 3.

[2] The Air Force at the time of the incident was not yet a separate service branch of the American military, but was a branch of the U.S. Army.

[3] RAAF, i.e., Roswell Army Airfield, ed.

[4] No author, "RAAF Captures Flying Saucer on Ranch in Roswell Region," *Roswell Daily Record*, Vol. 42 Number 99, Tuesday, July 8, 1947, p. 1, emphasis added.

[5] No author, "Air Force General Says Army Not Doing Experiments," *Roswell Daily Record*, Vol. 42 Number 99, Tuesday, July 8, 1947, p. 1, emphasis added.

2
The Second Articulation: Berlitz-Moore-Friedman,and the Emergence of the Standard Scenario

"From a public-interest point of view, new statements from witnesses, and the
families of witnesses who were previously unwilling to make statements, and
'afterthoughts' from some of the military personnel involved in the cover-up
present in the follow pages rather convincing proof that this crash of a space
ship was definitely not a mass delusion but an actual event."
Charles Berlitz and William L. Moore[1]

The biggest problem with the Roswell Incident is that it is a continuously evolving story; its "facts" are constantly being debated, its "timeline" is ever in flux, and there is no general consensus on what actually happened. Adding to the confusion is the less-than rigorous research and presentation methods followed by almost all parties in the debate. Consider, for example, the following statement of Charles Berlitz and William L. Moore at the beginning of their book, *The Roswell Incident:*

> Events which had been reported in the press and by radio… indicate that material from the wrecked UFO was shuttled by high-security government transportation from base to base and that the remains of the UFO *and the dead occupants* (one of whom was reportedly alive when found) are under high-security guard at CIA headquarters at Langley, Virginia.[2]

But as was seen from the first chapter and the *Roswell Daily Record* itself, the only part of this statement that is true is the fact that parts of the wreckage were flown "to higher headquarters." There is no mention in the initial reporting of the event, however, that any "dead occupants" were recovered, nor was there any mention of the involvement of the CIA, which in any case, at the time of the incident itself, did not yet officially exist and would not exist until President Truman signed the National Security Act into law later that year, in September.

Notwithstanding this minor CIA inaccuracy, Berlitz's and Moore's *The Roswell Incident* constitutes the first re-emergence of the event into the popular consciousness, and as such, it forms the skeleton around which the "conventional wisdom"[3] was built up over the years by other researchers.[4] A close examination of Berlitz's and Moore's presentation of "the conventional wisdom" is therefore in order.

A. The Conventional Wisdom:

1. The Interrupted Teletype: Lydia Sleppy

Berlitz and Moore begin their presentation of the standard scenario with a story that was to become famous in Roswell lore, the story of Lydia Sleppy, and "the interrupted teletype." According to them, Sleppy was an administrator for radio station KOAT in Albuquerque who also was the teletype operator. At approximately 4 PM on July 7, 1947, she received a telephone call from Johnny McBoyle, a part owner of station KSWS in Roswell. Since KSWS did not have a teletype of its own, it occasionally used the KOAT teletype when it had something newsworthy to report on the wire.[5]

This time, as Lydia Sleppy answered the phone, "his voice was excited":

> Understandably bemused, Lydia placed the phone in the uncomfortable position between ear and shoulder and started to type McBoyle's startling statements into the teletype. But after she had typed only several sentences the machine suddenly stopped itself. As this is a common occurrence with teletypes for a variety of reasons,

Lydia was not concerned, although she had never been cut off the air before in the middle of a transmission. Moving the telephone from her neck to her hand, she informed McBoyle that the teletype had stopped at her end.

This time, according to her recollections, he seemed not only excited but under pressure and apparently speaking to someone else at the same time. His voice seemed strained. “Wait a minute, I’ll get back to you…. Wait…. I’ll get right back.” But he did not. Instead, the teletype went on again by itself and started addressing Albuquerque, or Lydia, directly. The sender was not identified and the tone was formal and curt: ATTENTION ALBUQUERQUE: DO NOT TRANSMIT. REPEAT DO NOT TRANSMIT THIS MESSAGE. STOP COMMUNICATION IMMEDIATELY.

As Lydia still had McBoyle on the phone she told him what had just come over the teletype and asked: “What do I do now?”

His reply was unexpected. “Forget about it. You never heard it. Look, you’re not supposed to know. Don’t talk about it to anyone.”

(McBoyle later told Lydia Sleppy that he had witnessed a plane, which he said was destined for Wright Field — Wright-Patterson[6] — take off with the object or parts of it on board, but was unable to get anywhere near it because of the tight security maintained by heavily armed guards.[7]

This story, if true, is one of the first mentions of recovered *bodies* in conjunction with the Roswell crash. But there are two crucial peculiarities to be noted about McBoyle’s statements as far as Lydia Sleppy was able to recall them:

1) McBoyle clearly places the location of these recovered bodies *at the crash site on the ranch*, in other words, we are not yet dealing with two crash sites; and,
2) McBoyle describes these bodies as “little *men*,” but does not qualify this explanation to indicate in any way that the beings are unusual enough to warrant being classified as “extraterrestrial.”

Additionally, one must also observe something else, namely, that the debris itself is described as a "*crumpled* dishpan." This important data point must be born in mind when we later encounter subsequent descriptions of the recovered debris and its remarkable properties.

Finally, the "interrupted teletype" story is also, in Berlitz's and Moore's presentation, the first mention of the ultimate destiny of the Roswell Debris: Wright Field in Dayton, Ohio. Wright Field, as already noted, was the headquarters to General Nathan Twining's Air Material Command and eventually was also headquarters to the Air Technical Intelligence Command, and was also the headquarters of noted Nazi supersonic flight and ramjet specialist, Dr. Walther Lippisch, whose P-13 delta wing ramjet craft allegedly made a supersonic flight test prior to the end of the Second World War. From the standpoint of the internal logic of the "standard scernario" and notwithstanding the credibility or lack thereof of the actual interrupted teletype story — as well as from the standpoint of the "Nazi scenario being proposed here — Wright Field is a logical destination for the Roswell debris.

Lydia Sleppy also recounted how KOAT station owner Merle Tucker was concerned about the loss of his station's broadcasting license as a result of the incident,[8] and also related that Tucker attempted to contact other witnesses to the incident, who "insisted that the object had come down in the area was of Socorro, New Mexico, rather than near Roswell."[9] Subsequent attempts by Moore, Berlitz, and Friedman to interview Tucker and McBoyle proved fruitless, for both men were very reluctant to talk about it.[10]

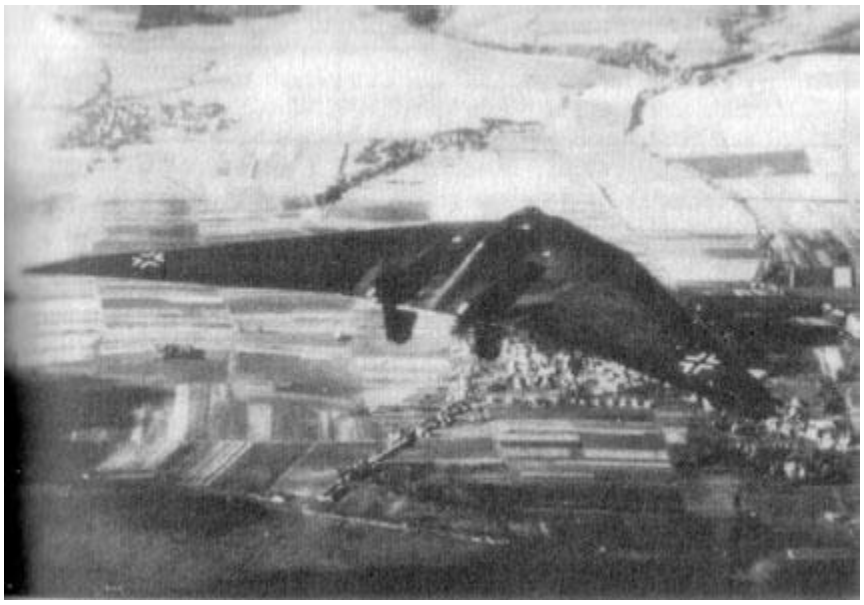
3. Prejudicing the Response: Initial Inquiries of the Pro-ET Scenario

At this juncture in their presentation Berlitz and Moore attempt to place the Roswell Incident into a wider ufological and historical context, and while we will expand on this context tremendously in Part Three of the present work, it is worth pausing to consider their own presentation and its prejudicial assumptions. They begin by noting that the Roswell Incident was "relatively close in time to the June 24 sighting of the famous flight of nine 'pie pans' over Mount Ranier, Washington, by Kenneth Arnold," the

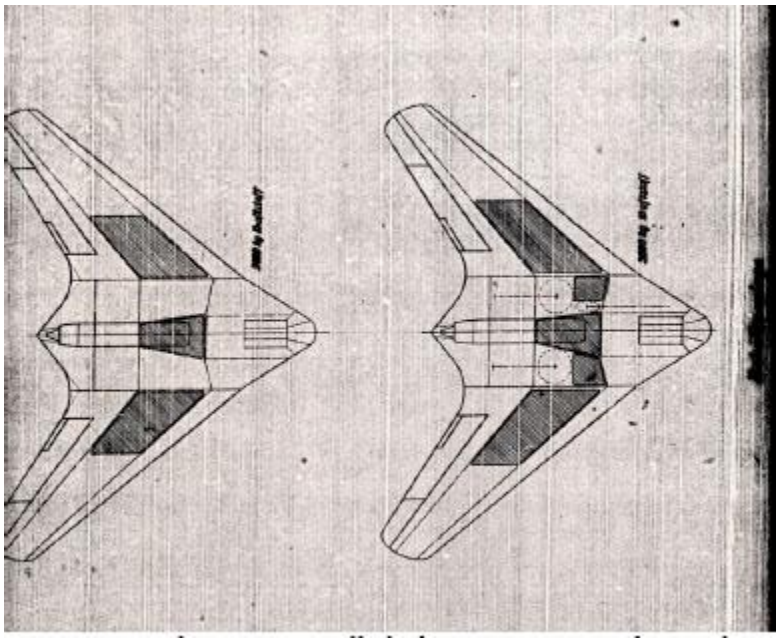
sighting which, in fact, “led to the general use of the term *flying saucers* to describe them.”[11]

So far, so good. But what Berlitz and Moore — and their “investigator in the background,” Stanton T. Friedman — *fail* to point out is the close resemblance of Arnold’s sketch of what he saw to a top-secret Nazi flying wing project, that of the Go-229 of the Horten brothers.

Kenneth Arnold Holding his own Sketch of The Craft He Saw near Mount Ranier, Washington, 1947



A Horten Flying Wing in Test Flight, Note the Similarity to Arnold's Sketch



A Horten Design for a Jet Propelled Flying Wing: Note the Similarity to Kenneth Arnold's Sketch, and to the American B-1 Stealth Bomber

The resemblance of Arnold's sketch to actual flying Nazi designs, as well as to projected Horten projects, is readily apparent and obvious. The question is, is the omission of the mention of this similarity on Berlitz's and Moore's part a mere oversight, or is it an indicator of a larger pattern, and of a different kind of cover-up?

Part of the answer to that question may be indicated by an observation Berlitz and Moore make shortly after introducing the wider ufological context of 1947, including the Arnold sighting:

> These subsequent reports indicated a swirling UFO activity by night and by day in Arizona and New Mexico — an activity easily justified by the fact that in the late 1940s New Mexico was the site of the major portion of America's postwar defense efforts in atomic research, rocketry, aircraft and missile development, and radar-electronics experimentation. Los Alamos, the sprawling scientific community created by the Manhattan Project in 1943 especially to provide the manpower and facilities necessary for the wartime construction and testing of the worlds' first atomic bombs, was still a "secret city" in 1947 — a highly restricted area. Of similar status was the White Sands Missile Range and Proving Grounds around Alamogordo, where top-level research was being carried out on the only captured German V-2 rockets in existence on our side of the Iron Curtain. Also stationed in New Mexico, at Roswell, was the only combat-trained atom-bomb group in the world at that time — the 509th Bomb Group of the U.S. Army Air Force. All of which makes it somewhat easier to understand why, in those summer months of 1947, New Mexico experienced more UFO sightings both per capita and per square mile than any other state in the union. *Certainly alien intelligences systematically engaged in the observation of this planet and its civilization could be expected to concentrate their efforts on monitoring those areas exhibiting the highest levels of scientific and technological activity.*[12]

But Berlitz's and Moore's observations raise as many problematical questions and difficulties as it solves:

1) If, as is so often alleged, “ET’s” technology was so far superior to our own as to allow such inter-stellar “reconnaissance,” then why would they *bother* with such antiquated technologies as atom-bombs and *rockets*? In other words, from one standpoint, the observation — and Friedman would make it again as we shall see — makes sense, and yet, from the standpoint of the technology *discrepancy* alleged to exist between human and “extraterresrtrial” technology, it does not. It would be analogous to the United States Navy committing resources to monitor the technological progress of the natives of Fiji.
2) Thus, what the reconnaissance activity of the New Mexico UFOs may *also* represent is an activity of a *terrestrially-based* power, keeping close scrutiny on its major technological adversary. If there *was* a post-war Nazi “International,” an extra-territorial Nazi “state” continuing to develop and conduct its research into technologies developed during the war, as I have argued elsewhere,[13] then it stands to reason that it would know of the large scale American effort to bring former Nazi scientists to this country to develop its own black projects, and would monitor those efforts closely by any and every means available to it. Consequently, in the absence — at this juncture — of evidence to support *either* the ET or Nazi “reconnaissance” interpretations, but following also the dictum of Ockham’s Razor, a preponderance of weight must be invested in the latter explanation, since it is also known that neither the United States nor the Soviet Union, at that time, had developed technologies as radical and advanced as the late-war Nazi Projects.

A final possibility also hovers over these postwar UFO incursions into American airspace, and that is:

3) Whoever is behind these incursions might also be trying to send a message to American military authorities, namely, that “we can enter your most sensitive airspace over your most sensitive projects with impunity, and there is little you can do about it.” That message

is as likely to be sent by post-war Nazis as by curious and somewhat menacing extra-terrestrials.

But what does all this represent in the case of the Second Articulation of the Roswell Incident? Briefly, it is this: if the omission of the resemblance between Kenneth Arnold's sketch and the Nazi Flying Wings of the Horten brothers, and if the tendentious prejudicing of the "UFO reconnaissance" in favor of an "extraterrestrial" explanation represents not a mere coincidence but part of an agenda on Berlitz's, Moore's, and Friedman's part, then why would they do so? Why direct attention *away* from a potential terrestrial explanation? The answer is implicit in the question, for there was only *one* terrestrial power that had access to technology even remotely similar to that being claimed for "ET," and that was Nazi Germany. Thus, *if* the recovered debris at Roswell represented something *Nazi* and if it was *not* the product of a post-war American project continuing to develop such technologies — as with the Lippisch super-sonic projects in Ohio — then it must either represent a *Soviet* continuation of Nazi research, or, worst of all, an *independent Nazi* continuation of the projects. As well be seen in Part Three, there is now evidence to suggest that it was the latter.

However, if this was known to the U.S. military at that time, then there is abundant reason to believe that the cover-up began almost instantly, and began to subtly focus on "ET" as the explanation at the outset, to deflect attention away from considering the far more profound and sinister implications of a *Nazi* crash in New Mexico. In this respect, we must now observe the following:

1) The original story, as recorded in the *Roswell Daily Record* of July 8, 1947, was a story controlled throughout *by the military, in the form of the Roswell Base Commander, Colonel William "Butch" Blanchard, and its press officer, 1st Lt. Walter Haut;*
2) The *subsequent* reemergence of the story, in its "second articulation" for popular consumption in *The Roswell Incident*, by Berlitz, Moore, and background investigator Stanton T. Friedman, is itself connected, via all three men, to the military in the form of black projects, or to intelligence, for in the case of Berlitz and Moore, both men are suspected of having such backgroungs. Moreover, Moore has confessed to having, intelligence backgrounds

> by confessing to having deliberately fed disinformation to the ufology community in return for "inside information." In the case of Freidman, we have an individual who, by his own admission, worked on many top secret nuclear and nuclear aircraft propulsion projects in the 1950s.

One must therefore entertain due caution, and always be aware of the fact, that the "conventional wisdom" of the Roswell Incident might itself be "deep disinformation." This case shall be argued more completely in Part Three, but attention is drawn to it here so that the reader may scrutinize not only *what* is being said, but *who is saying it, and the backgrounds of the researchers presenting it.*

Thus, when a Berlitz and Moore claim that "It is interesting to consider that, at the very beginning of the 1947 UFO flap, and attested to by witnesses, press releases, interviews, radio reports, and uninhibited by censorship that came too late, *the Army Air Force came into possession of a bona-fide UFO together with the remains of its crew*,"[14] the reader may exercise due caution and skepticism, for as has been seen, the earliest reports of the Roswell wreckage recovery mention *only* recovered wreckage, and no crew. Nor do Berlitz and Moore anywhere provide any such media reference to buttress their claim of a recovered crew.

That part of the story begins to emerge as a later layer and development. But first, what of the Army Air Force's actual press release?

3. 1st Lieutenant Walter Haut's Press Release

The public part of the Roswell Incident began with 1st Lieutenant Walter Haut's press release to the world.

> On July 8, one day after Mrs. Sleppy's unusual incident with the TWX teletype machine, Lieutenant Walter Haut, public information officer at the Roswell Amry Air Base, acting on information beginning to filter in to the Roswell Air Base, *jumped the gun in a burst of excitement and enthusiastically issued the following release to*

members of the press without first bothering to obtain the authorization of his base commander, Colonel William Blanchard — an oversight he was to be made painfully aware of later:

Roswell Army Air Base, Roswell, N.M.
8th July, 1947, A.M.

"The many rumors regarding the flying disc became a reality yesterday when the intelligence office of the 509th Bomb Group of the Eighth Air Force, Roswell Army Air Field, was fortunate enough to *gain possession of a disc* through the cooperation of one of the local ranchers and the sheriff's office of Chaves County.

"The flying object landed on a ranch near Roswell sometime last week. Not having phone facilities, the rancher stored the disc until such time as he was able to contact the sheriff's office, who in turn notified Major Jesse A. Marcel of the 509th Bomb Group Intelligence Office.

"Action was immediately taken and the disc was picked up at the rancher's home. *It was inspected at the Roswell Army Air Field* and *subsequently loaned* by Major Marcel *to higher headquarters*."[15]

Notably the press release, as actually cited by the *San Francisco Chronicle* in its July 9, 1947 edition, closely parallels the wording of the *Roswell Daily Record* article of July 8, 1947, so one may reasonably assume that this text does represent the actual text dictated by Lt. Haut or something close to it.

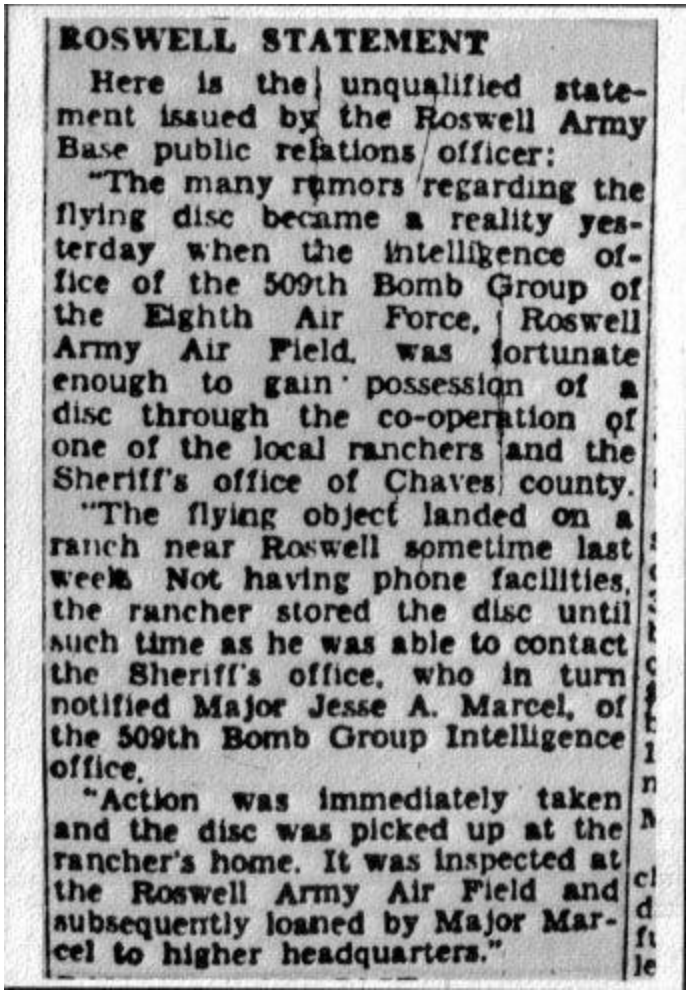
1st Lieutenant Walter Haut at the Time of the Roswell Incident

There is, however, one point in Berlitz's and Moore's characterization of the sequence of events that bears scrutiny, and that is that Lt. Haut issued his press release in a hot-flash of excitement, and did not obtain the authorization of the base commander, Col. William "Butch" Blanchard.

Colonel William "Butch" Blanchard, Commander, 509th Atomic Bomb Group, Roswell Army Air Field as he looked at the Time of the Incident

This assertion is simply incredible and ridiculous on the face of it. It is *highly* unlikely that Lt. Haut would have issued any such release concerning sensitive information without prior consultation with Colonel Blanchard, and as we shall see, there is indirect evidence of such consultation. With Soviet spies prowling New Mexico to learn whatever they could of American secret research, any such releases would implicitly involve issues of national security, and Lieutenant Haut — and more importantly — Colonel Blanchard — would have known this. This implies something very significant, for it makes it very *unlikely* that the original story of a crashed flying saucer represents the pure unvarnished truth, and far more likely that there is an element — as yet undefined — of deliberate disinformation

involved to conceal something the military did not want revealed, whether top secret balloon programs, or something else. To put it quite succinctly, the Roswell skeptics may be right; the “recovered flying saucer” story may itself be the initial cover-up.



ROSWELL STATEMENT

Here is the unqualified statement issued by the Roswell Army Base public relations officer:

"The many rumors regarding the flying disc became a reality yesterday when the intelligence office of the 509th Bomb Group of the Eighth Air Force, Roswell Army Air Field, was fortunate enough to gain possession of a disc through the co-operation of one of the local ranchers and the Sheriff's office of Chaves county.

"The flying object landed on a ranch near Roswell sometime last week. Not having phone facilities, the rancher stored the disc until such time as he was able to contact the Sheriff's office, who in turn notified Major Jesse A. Marcel, of the 509th Bomb Group Intelligence office.

"Action was immediately taken and the disc was picked up at the rancher's home. It was inspected at the Roswell Army Air Field and subsequently loaned by Major Marcel to higher headquarters."

July 9, 1947 San Francisco Chronicle Text of the Haut Press Release

We note two final things about the press release. Firstly, the recovered wreckage is described as a “disc,” with the implication still being that there is but one crash site. Secondly, there was apparently a preliminary investigation of the wreckage performed at the Roswell Army Air Base prior to its being shipped to “higher headquarters.”

However, subsequently to the Haut press release, according to the "conventional wisdom," the "cover-up" began, and a curtain of iron-clad secrecy slammed down and a new layer of disinformation arose to shroud the event:

> Several hours later, a new bit of information was suddenly released. It now appeared that the object was merely a crashed weather balloon. Most papers copied this new information, with the notable exception of the Washington *Post*, which referred rather pointedly to a "news blackout."
>
> Meanwhile, Brigadier General Roger M. Ramey, commander of the Eighth Air Force District at Fort Worth, was alerted by a phone call from Lieutenant General Hoyt Vandenberg, Deputy Chief of the Air Force, that pieces of the object were on the Roswell Air Base…. General Ramey at once called Colonel Blanchard and *made known his extreme displeasure as well as that of General Vandenberg for Blanchard's having initiated the press release.* He then directed that the Roswell portion of the wreckage be immediately loaded aboard a B-29. With two generals "breathing down his neck," *Colonel Blanchard lost no time in ordering Major Marcel personally to fly this material to the general's headquarters at Carswell Air Force Base, Fort Worth, Texas*, for his examination before flying it on to Wright-Patterson Field in Dayton, Ohio, where it would undergo the "further analysis" prescribed for it by General Vandenburg himself.
>
> Ramey then went on the air on a hook-up hastily patched out of a Fort Worth radio station to nervously assure the public that the crashed "fl-fly-flying disc" was really nothing more than the remains of a downed weather balloon, and that the whole thing was due only to a case of mistaken identity. "There is no such gadget (as a flying disc) known to the Army," he said somberly, and then hastily added the qualification, "at least not at this level."[16]

In other words, within hours, the U.S. Army Air Force had changed its story from being one of a crashed "flying saucer" to a crashed "weather balloon" which was mistaken for the former!

However, note the new assertion in Berlitz's and Moore's presentation, for now Colonel Blanchard *is* being viewed as the ultimate source for the press release issued by Lieutenant Haut, and this presents us with the same difficulties as before, only writ larger, for would Colonel Blanchard, commander of the world's only atomic bomb group, be likely to have issued such a release, implicit with all its national security implications, and with Soviet spies prowling New Mexico, without prior authorization from higher headquarters?

Unlikely.

In other words, what we are now dealing with is a highly obfuscated story, with *two* layers of disinformation likely operating, a deep layer, the "flying saucer" layer, and the shallower layer, the "crashed and mistaken balloon" layer.

However, the "balloon story" seems ridiculous on the face of it, for regardless of what type of balloon may have been involved, is it likely that the Eighth Air Force would have gone to the trouble to ship its wreckage to Wright-Patterson Field for "further examination"?

Also unlikely.

For Berlitz and Moore, the improbability of the balloon explanation was quickly dissolved by the testimony of General Ramey's former adjutant, Colonel Thomas Jefferson DuBose. Thirty-two years after the event, DuBose finally lifted the veil of secrecy on part of the incident by revealing to Berlitz and Moore that "orders from on high" had been received

> "to ship the material from Roswell directly to Wright Field by special plane." He added that the general (Ramey) was in complete charge and the rest of the officers and men involved "just followed orders."The general was most concerned that the large number of press reporters present be "taken off his back in a hurry."The weather balloon story was a fabrication designed to accomplish that task and "put out the fire" at the same time. He did not recall who first suggested the weather-balloon explanation, but thinks it may have been Ramey himself.[17]

In other words it is likely that, at the minimum, it was General Ramey driving and orchestrating the recovery and the various stories released to the press, and more likely that such instructions came from even higher up, in the Pentagon, with Lt. General Hoyt Vandenberg himself.

4. Major Jesse Marcel is Ordered to Fort Worth with the Wreckage

From this point, the plot, and its difficulties, considerably thicken, for Warrant Officer Irving Newton, working in the weather office at Carswell Field on July 8, 1947, stated in July of 1979 that when he was brought into General Ramey's office and shown the debris from the Roswell crash, that there was "no doubt that *what I was given* were parts of a balloon."[18] But Newton also added something intriguing: "I was later told that the major[19] from Roswell had identified the stuff as a flying saucer but that the general had been suspicious of this identification from the beginning and that's why I had been called."[20]

But this raises new questions.

The major that Warrant Officer Newton was referring to was none other than the 509th's base intelligence officer, Major Jesse Marcel. So in effect, what the U.S. Army Air Force with its weather balloon story was now asking people to believe was that the intelligence officer of the world's only atomic bomb group could not tell the difference between the wreckage from a weather balloon and that from a flying saucer!

So a closer look at Marcel, the crash site, and the debris, is now in order, for these — Marcel, the debris field, and the debris itself — are the central characters in the Roswell scenario with which *any* interpretation, be it that of crashed extra-terrestrial flying saucers, or that of crashed balloons, must contend.

5. Weather Balloon Debris is Substituted at the Press Conference: Major Jesse Marcel and the Debris

a. Marcel's Curriculum Vitae, According to Berlitz and Moore

As Berlitz and Moore themselves observe, “perhaps some of the most important testimony in the matter of the crashed disc comes from Major (now Lieutenant Colonel) Jesse A. Marcel, ranking staff officer in charge of intelligence at the Roswell Army Air Base at the time of the incident.”[21] Indeed, other than rancher Mac Brazel, on whose ranch the debris and wreckage was allegedly found, Marcel may reasonably be seen to be the fundamental and central witness to the whole incident and to its more-than-mundane significance.

According to Berlitz and Moore, Marcel enlisted in the Army Air Force following the Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor, and due to his familiarity with aerial maps and cartography, was sent to intelligence school. Marcel proved “to be such a capable student that, upon completion of training, he was retained as an instructor.”[22] After serving as an intelligence officer for a bomber squadron in New Guinea, “he logged 468 hours of combat flying in B-24s, was awarded five air medals for shooting down five enemy aircraft, and was himself shot down once (on his third mission).”[23] By the end of the war, Marcel was selected to become a member of the 509th Bomb Wing, “one of the few ‘elite’ groups in the U.S. military, where all officers and enlisted men were literally hand-picked for their jobs and required high security clearances.”[24] In that capacity Marcel played a major role in security for Operation Crossroads, the atom-bomb tests at Kwajalein atoll in 1946.[25]

Major Jesse A. Marcel, Sr., ca. 1947

b. The Moore-Friedman-Marcel Interviews of May and December, 1979

Stanton T. Friedman and William Moore conducted interviews with Marcel in May and December of 1979, and it is these interviews from which the descriptions of the Roswell debris ultimately stem. Additionally, with Marcel's testimony, the curious lack of details in the Army Air Force's original story, as offered in the press release of Lt. Walter Haut, are now fleshed out. I will present the main core of these interviews in their entirety, and then analyze their implications following each major section.

Question:

Major Marcel, did you personally see a crashed UFO?

I saw a lot of wreckage but no complete machine. Whatever it was had to have exploded in the air above the ground level. It had disintegrated before it hit the ground. The wreckage was scattered over an area of about three quarters of a mile long and several hundred feet wide.

How did the Roswell Base know about the crash at Brazel's ranch?

We heard about it on July 7 when we got a call from the county sheriff's office at Roswell. I was eating lunch at the officers' club when the call came through saying that I should go out and talk to Brazel. The sheriff said that Brazel had told him that something had exploded over Brazel's ranch and that there was a lot of debris scattered around.

I finished my lunch and went into town to talk to this fellow. *When I had heard what he had to say, I decided that this was a matter that had better be brought to the attention of (Colonel Blanchard) right away and let him decide what ought to be done….*

In my discussion with the colonel, we determined that a downed aircraft of some unusual sort might be involved, so the colonel said I had better get out there, and to take whatever I needed and go. I and a CIC (Counter-Intelligence Corps) agent from West Texas by the name of Cavitt…followed this man out to his ranch, with me driving my staff car (a '42 Buick) and Cavitt in a Jeep Carry-all.

….

It seems to me that Brazel told me that he thought he had heard an odd explosion late in the evening several days earlier during an electrical storm, but paid no special attention to it at the time because he had attributed it to just a freak part of the storm. He didn't find the wreckage until the next morning.

On Saturday, July 5, 1947, Brazel went into town — Corona. While he was there he heard stories about flying saucers having been seen all over the area. He began to think that's what had come down on his ranch, but I don't know whether he said anything about it to anyone at the time.

On Sunday, July 6, Brazel decided he had better go into town and report this to someone. When he got there, he went to Chaves County sheriff's office and told the story to the sheriff. It was the sheriff, George Wilcox, who called me at the base. I was eating lunch at the time and had just sat down when the phone rang.

Do you think that what you saw was a weather balloon?

It was not. I was pretty well acquainted with most everything that was in the air at that time, both ours and foreign. I was also acquainted with virtually every type of weather-observation or radar tracking device being used by either the civilians or the military. It was definitely not a weather or tracking device, nor was it any sort of plane or missile. What it was we didn't know. We just picked up the fragments. It was something I had never seen before, or since, for that matter. I didn't know what it was, but it certainly wasn't anything built by us, and it most certainly wasn't any weather balloon.

Can you describe the materials that you found on the site?

There was (sic) *all kinds of stuff — small beams about three eighths or half inch square with some sort of odd hieroglyphics on them that nobody could decipher. These looked something like balsa wood, and were of about the same weight, except that they were not wood at all. They were very hard, although flexible, and would not burn.* There was a great deal of an unusual parchment-like substance which was brown in color and extremely strong, and *a great number of small pieces of a metal like tinfoil, except that it wasn't tinfoil.* I was interested in electronics and kept looking for something that resembled instruments or electronic equipment, *but I didn't find anything. One of the other fellows, Cavitt, I think, found a black metallic-looking box several inches square. As there was no apparent way to open this, and since it didn't appear to be an instrument package of any sort (it too was very lightweight),* we threw it in with the rest of the stuff. I don't know what eventually happened to the box, but it went along with the rest of the material we eventually took to Fort Worth.

What was especially interesting about the material?

One thing that impressed me about the debris was the fact that a lot of it looked like parchment. *It had little numbers with symbols that we had to call hieroglyphics because I could not understand them. They could not be read, they were just like symbols, something that meant*

something, and they were not all the same, but the same general pattern, I would say. They were pink and purple. They looked like they were painted on. These little numbers *could not be broken, could not be burned.* I even took my cigarette lighter and tried to burn the material we found that resembled parchment and balsa, but it would not burn — wouldn't even smoke. But something that is even more astounding is that the pieces of metal that we brought back were *so thin, just like the tinfoil in a pack of cigarettes.* I didn't pay too much attention to that at first, until one of the boys came to me and said: "You know that metal that was in there? I tried to bend the stuff *and it won't bend. I even tried it with a sledgehammer. You can't make a dent on it."*… This particular piece of metal was about two feet long and maybe a foot wide. It was so light it weighed practically nothing… it was so thin. So I tried to bend the stuff. We did all we could to bend it. It would not bend and *you could not tear it or cut it either.* We even tried making a dent in it with a sixteen-pound sledgehammer, and there was still no dent in it…. It's a mystery to me what the whole thing was…. *It was possible to flex this stuff back and forth, even to wrinkle it, but you could not put a crease in it that would stay, nor could you dent it at all.* I would almost have to describe it as a metal with plastic properties. One of the fellows tried to put some of the pieces together — like a jigsaw puzzle. He managed to get about ten square feet together, but *it wasn't enough to get any idea of the general shape of the object itself.* Whatever it was, it was big.[26]

Before proceeding with the rest of Major Marcel's interview with Moore and Friedman, it is worth pausing to take stock of what Marcel has asserted, and its implications vis-à-vis the story as recounted in the *Roswell Daily Record* as well as for the wider "ET standard scenario."

There are three major themes in this section of the interview. The first is the timeline itself, for as elaborated and recounted by Marcel, at some time prior to the phone call from Sheriff Wilcox to Major Marcel on July 7th, rancher Mac Brazel had heard an unusual explosion during an electrical storm, and brought it to the attention of the sheriff. This brings into view the second major theme of the interview, namely, that Marcel, based on his meeting with Brazel at the sheriff's office, decided immediately to bring it

to the attention of base commander Colonel Blanchard. Both men came to the conclusion that, far from being a flying saucer, it was, in Marcel's own words, a crashed "aircraft of (an) unusual sort," implying that they suspected it was something exotic from some black project. Blanchard was therefore *involved with the debris recovery prior to Lt. Haut's press release, making it extremely unlikely that Haut issued it on his own authority, but directly on orders from Blanchard.* Thus, in private, Marcel and Blanchard are initially under the impression it is some kind of unusual aircraft, and publicly, Haut is talking of flying saucers.

But the third theme is the debris itself, and here each point must be considered more closely and carefully.

First and foremost, it is to be noted that, in *this* interview, Major Marcel thus far gave **no** indication or suspicion that the debris was of extraterrestrial origin. Similarly, Marcel makes **no** mention of the presence or recovery of any bodies at Brazel's ranch. In a certain sense, and from the logical standpoint for the "ET" interpretation of Roswell, Marcel's initial testimony, by not mentioning "ET" at all — either in the form of cadavers or in connection with the debris — required the discovery or the addition of a second site which could provide these details.

But what of the characteristics of the debris itself?

Here, remarkably, both the Roswell "ET" community and the Roswell skeptics' community miss a significant statement Marcel makes. It is easily discernible when the properties of the debris are enumerated and catalogued, for there are four types of debris mentioned by Marcel:

1) Beams made of a material like balsa-wood. This material is
a) flexible, but not breakable; and,
b) has symbols on it which Marcel describes as being like "hieroglyphics;"
2) A "black box" several inches square, which is too light in Marcel's opinion to contain instrumentation;
3) Parchment-like material, with
a) *numbers* along with "symbols like hieroglyphics;" which in turn,
b) could not be broken or burned, inasmuch as Marcel indicates that he attempted — for reasons he does not state — to burn the material with his cigarette lighter;

4) Tinfoil-like material, no thicker than the tinfoil in a pack of cigarettes, that is,
a) not bendable;
b) not dentable, even with a sledgehammer;
c) not able to be cut or torn; and finally,
d) is flexible to the extent that one can wrinkle it, but not crease it. This is the beginning of the "memory metal" aspect of the Roswell debris.

Note first of all, point 3) a), the presence of *numbers* in the otherwise undecipherable "hieroglyphics," for *at this stage* of the ever-evolving Roswell story, these numbers hover as the *only recognizable* component in a context of otherwise mystifying debris, and if Marcel is to be taken literally and at his word here, the presence of recognizable numbers means that whatever the debris was, in order for these numbers to be *recognized **as** numbers* by Marcel, then they had to be our standard adaptation of Arabic or Roman numerals, and hence *there is a wholly terrestrial context for the debris no matter how exotic its other properties.* Of course, Marcel, as we shall see, would later elaborate his story to *exclude* this interpretive analysis, but in any case, the fact that it occurs in his earliest recounting of the debris in my opinion is significant, and calls for an attempt to explain the other debris properties along the lines of terrestrial technology, an attempt that we shall make in Part Three. It is interesting to observe that — to my knowledge — neither the Roswell "ET" community *nor* the Roswell skeptics' community has noticed this point and its possible significance. "ET" is not likely to have used any system of symbolic numerals recognizable to Marcel, whether Arabic or Roman.

Another significant feature of Marcel's descriptions of the debris must be noted, and that is the apparent contradiction involved in his description of the "tinfoil," for as points 4) a) through d) above attest, this material could neither be bent nor dented nor cut nor torn, *and yet* it was capable of being wrinkled without a crease. While some might take this as purest fancy, a contradiction indicative of a fabrication on Marcel's part, such a blatantly contradictory catalogue of datasets would seem to be too obvious for someone of Marcel's intelligence. There are two other explanations that

might make sense: either Marcel is talking about two different *types* of tinfoil, or *field tests were initially performed at the recovery site, and more extensive tests were performed later at Roswell Army Air Field.*

Finally, it is to be noted, once again, that Marcel does *not* describe a "whole machine," but only fragments, in distinction from the *Roswell Daily Record's* insistence that a more or less intact *disc* was recovered.

It is now necessary to return to Marcel's initial interview with Friedman and Moore:

> **What did you do with the material you had picked up?**
>
> We collected all the debris we could handle. When we had filled the Carry-all, I began to fill the trunk and back seat of the Buick. That afternoon (July 7) we headed back to Roswell and arrived there in the early evening.
>
> When we arrived there, we discovered that the story we had found a flying disc had already leaked out ahead of us. We had an eager-beaver (public information officer) on the base who had taken it upon himself to call the (Associated Press) on this thing. We had several calls that night, and one reporter even came to the house, but of course I couldn't confirm anything to them over the phone, and the man who came to the house my wife sent over to see the colonel. The next morning that written press release went out, and after that things really hit the fan. The phone rang right off the hook. I heard that the brass fried him later on for putting out that press release, but then I can't say so for sure.
>
> Anyway, the next afternoon we loaded everything into a B-29 on orders from Colonel Blanchard and flew it all to Fort Worth. I was scheduled to fly it all the way to Wright Field in Ohio, but when we got to Carswell at Fort Worth, the general nixed it. He took control at this point, told the press it was all a weather balloon, and ordered me not to talk to the press under any circumstances. I was pulled off the flight and someone else was assigned to fly the stuff up to Wright… Field. Everything was sent to Wright-Patterson for analysis.[27]

Note what we have at this juncture. First, Marcel once again proffers the idea that Lt. Haut's press release was published under his own initiative,

apart from any involvement of the base commander, Colonel Blanchard. But more importantly, Marcel makes no mention, again, of the recovery of an entire craft, much less its being flown to Fort Worth, an impossibility in any case, since such a craft would not likely have fit into the fuselage of a B-29 Superfortress. It most likely would have been transported overland. And note, that Marcel and the *Roswell Daily Record* are now in conflict, for the *Record* states explicitly that the release came *from the intelligence office of the base*, that is to say, from Marcel's office.

Finally, Marcel now states that the ultimate destination was Wright-Patterson airbase north of Dayton, Ohio. A significant question occurs at this point: why was the debris taken *there*? Why, with such apparently exotic properties, was it not taken to a much more secret facility such as Los Alamos or any of the other nearby secret facilities in New Mexico? Was there something specifically about Wright Field — beyond its being the home of the Air Material Command and the Air Technical Intelligence Command - that made it a more logical choice? There is. It was home to a contingent of Nazi aerodynamics engineers.

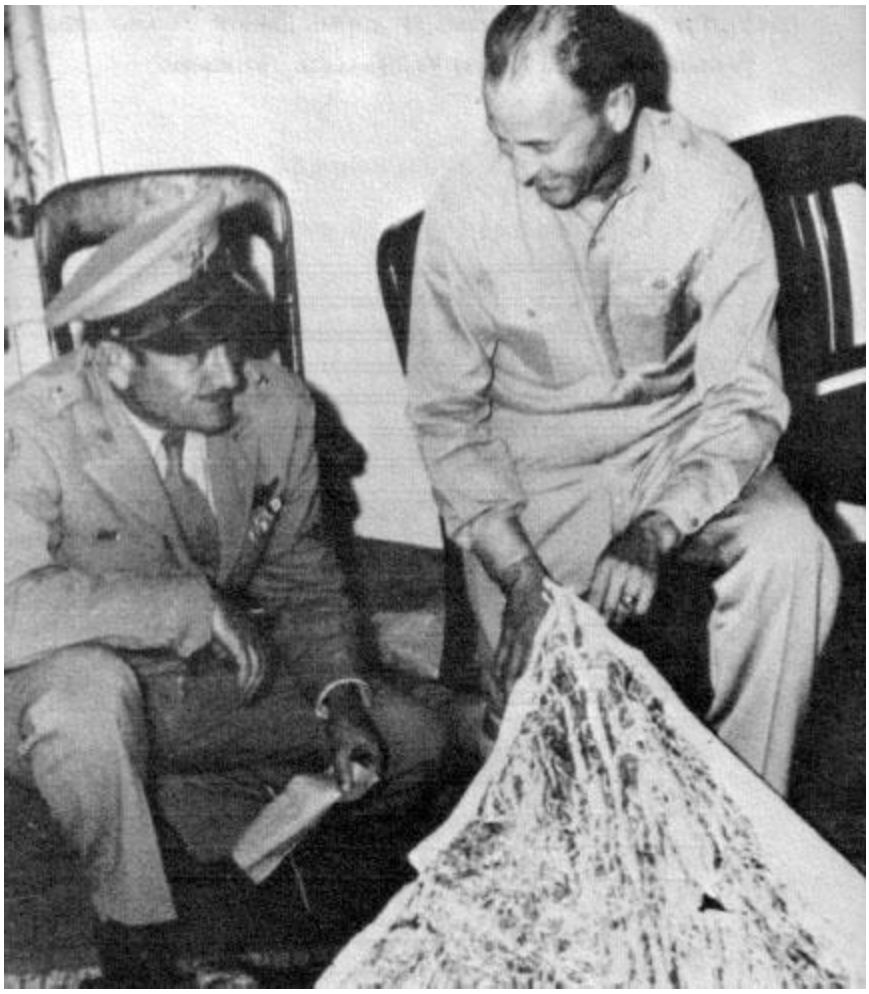
Resuming with Marcel's interview:

> Just after we got to Carswell, Fort Worth, we were told to bring some of this stuff up to the general's office — that he wanted to look at it. We did this and spread it out on the floor on some brown paper.
>
> What we had was only a very small portion of the debris — there was a whole lot more. There was half a B-29-ful outside. General Ramey allowed some members of the press in to take pictures of this stuff. They took one picture of me on the floor holding up some of the less-interesting metallic debris…. The stuff in that one photo was pieces of the actual stuff we had found. It was not a staged photo. Later, they cleared out our wreckage and substituted some of their own. Then they allowed more photos. Those photos were taken while the actual wreckage was already on its way to Wright Field. I was not in these. I believe these were taken with the general and one of his aides. I've seen a lot of weather balloons, but I've never seen one like that before. And I don't think they ever did either.
>
> ….

So what you're saying is that this whole weather-balloon thing was nothing but a cover-up?

Well, one thing that I want to point out is that the newsmen saw very little of the material — and none of the important things that had hieroglyphics, or markings, on them. They didn't see that because it wasn't there. They wanted me to tell them about it but I couldn't say anything. When the general came in he told me not to say anything, that he would handle it. He told the newsman: "Yes, that's the weather balloon."So the newsmen had to take his word for it because they had nothing else to go by. They tried to get me to talk about it, but the general had told me not to say anything and I couldn't say anything. That's when the general told me: "It's best you go back to Roswell. You have duties to perform there. We'll handle it from here…"[28]

Marcel is of course referring to the now famous photograph of General Ramey with his adjutant, then Colonel Thomas DuBose, holding pieces of the substituted debris of an actual crashed weather balloon.



Brigadier General Ramey on the left, and his adjutant, ColonelDuBose, sitting in the chair on the right, with the substituted weather balloon debris.

The reader will note that General Ramey holds a slightly folded and crumpled piece of paper in his left hand. With the recent advancements of computer enhancement technology and pixel analysis, some Roswell researchers have undertaken to attempt to decipher what that paper actually says, a point which will be taken up in a later chapter.

6. The Parade of Witnesses Begins

Major Marcel's story is, from the point of view of the "conventional wisdom" of the Roswell crash, rather ordinary by comparison, for in it, one encounters very few genuinely sensational elements, other than the unusual and exotic properties of the debris itself; there are no bug-eyed gray aliens, no autopsies, not even, as we have seen, any real saucer nor, in his initial recounting of the debris, are there even any claims as to the nature — extraterrestrial or otherwise — of its origins. All that Major Marcel *did* say was that he hadn't seen "anything like it."

However, the *Roswell Daily Record* clearly stated that the U.S. Army Air Force had recovered "a disc," a singular machine, and that fact, plus Marcel's own description of the debris field, if taken together and at their literal word, implied that there had to be a second site, the *primary* site, and this indeed is where the "standard scenario" of a crashed and recovered extraterrestrial vehicle and bodies takes its origin.

As Berlitz and Moore, and their investigator Stanton Friedman, continued to investigate, a number of clues began to become evident to them. For example, On July 5, 1947, there was an actual weather balloon crash in Ohio on the farm of Sherman Cambpbell. This, they note, may have actually been the inspiration for the weather balloon story put out by General Ramey's headquarters in Fort Worth.[29] And the significance of a comparison of the two incidents was not lost upon them, for they quip that the balloon was immediately identified as a weather balloon "by the military without the necessity of first sending it on to 'higher headquarters.'"[30]

> One is compelled to admire the tactics of the headquarters in question as a way of defusing public interest in — or even panic caused by — the incident. If, for example, a blanket denial had been made, it would probably have served only to increase curiosity, but a human admission of a case of mistaken identity, even on the part of the Air Force, induced a certain sympathetic understanding and, more important, deflated the mystery of the incident as surely as letting out the helium would deflate a real weather balloon.[31]

But while the military was busily deflating the significance of the incident, not all reporters were willing to be put off the scent so readily.

a. Colonel Blanchard's Widow

On the very day that Haut's press release went out and the *Roswell Daily Record* published its article about the military's recovery of a flying disc, the very same day that Major Marcel flew with the debris to Carswell Air Field in Fort Worth, the Roswell base commander, Colonel William Blanchard "suddenly and conveniently went on leave."[32] Just where he went on leave *to* will be seen subsequently as the standard scenario is fleshed out.

Whatever "mistakes" Blanchard may have made in his handling of the incident apparently were not significant enough to prevent him from attaining later in life the rank of general, and being one of the senior general officers in the U.S. Air Force's operations and planning staff.[33] And Blanchard, who came within a hair's breath of being the pilot chosen to drop America's first atomic bombs on Japan, certainly would have known the difference between a weather balloon and something more exotic.[34]

> Although General Blanchard is now dead, his widow recently confirmed (interview with Stanton Friedman) that her husband knew that the wreckage that he had sent to Carswell did not belong to any balloon. *"He knew it was nothing made by us,"* she said, noting that "At first he thought it might be Russian because of the strange symbols on it. Later on, he realized it wasn't Russian either."[35]

Blanchard's widow's statement is intriguing, not for what it says, but for what it does *not* say, for she does *not* indicate that Blanchard thought it was extra-terrestrial. Indeed, as her remarks indicate, he was inclined initially to think it was Russian, i.e., of terrestrial origin, but later concluded it was *not* Russian. Not being "Russian" however does not make it perforce extraterrestrial, for there are terrestrial possibilities that remain to be examined.

b. Grady Barnett and the Second Site: Bodies Are Finally Found

So where *was* the second site? Where and when, and by whom, *did* the "extraterrestrial bodies" come into play?

That "testimony" came initially from one Grady "Barney" Barnett. Barnett was a resident of the town of Socorro, New Mexico, and an engineer specializing in soil conservation working for the federal government. Barnett and his wife Ruth became close friends with Vern and Jean Maltais.[36] But this is not why Barnett's statements must be qualified as "testimony." The reason for the qualification is spelled out by Berlitz and Moore themselves, for Barnett

> Was one of the first witnesses to arrive at the site of the fallen saucer, sometime in the morning of July 3, 1947.
>
> ….
>
> In February m1950, during a visit by the Maltaises to Socorro, Barnett told his friends an extraordinary story. Before telling them, however, he cautioned them not to repeat it. Barnett claimed to have personally witnessed a flying-saucer crash in the Socorro area — that he had seen it and seen dead bodies *that were not human beings.* The area was quickly sealed off and the bodies and wreckage removed by the military.
>
> Although three decades have passed since Barnett told his strange tale to the Maltaises, they remember it very well…[37]

Therewith one confronts the problem of Barnett's testimony concerning dead extra-terrestrials at the Roswell Incident, for the story is told (1) decades after the event, and (2) told by second-hand sources.

According to the Maltaises, there were five principal elements to Barnett's story:

1) Barnett claimed to have spotted a "large metallic object" that caught his eye in the distance as he was "working near Magdalena, New Mexico." Deciding to investigate, Barnett came upon "some sort of metallic, disc-shaped object about twenty-five or thirty feet across." The metal of the object "looked like dirty stainless steel."[38] Note that if Barnett's story is true, he is the first witness actually to have

seen the intact craft itself, and not merely a debris field as recounted by Major Marcel.

2) Barnett also claimed that within mere minutes of having come across the craft, that other people approached it from the opposite direction. The people claimed to be a team of archaeologists from the University of Pennsylvania.[39]
3) Barnett then noticed the archaeological team standing around "looking at some dead bodies" which were "inside and outside the vehicle." Barnett then gave the Maltaises the first real description of the Roswell "extra-terrestrials", for "they were like humans but they were not humans. *The heads were round, the eyes were small, and they had no hair. The eyes were oddly spaced. They were quite small by our standards and their heads were larger in proportion to their bodies than ours.*"[40]
4) Within minutes, as Barnett and the archaeological team were looking at the bodies, the military arrived in a truck, and an officer took control of the site for the Army.[41]
5) Finally, Barnett told the Maltaises that the military ordered everyone away from the site, and ordered them not to talk about what they had seen, and that to do so "would be unpatriotic."[42]Barnett also told the Maltaises that the object was moved away from the site, presumably on a large truck brought in for the purpose, but we do not learn from the Maltaises how Barnett knew this after having presumably been ordered off the site by the military.[43]

Barnett's story is significant in three respects. Firstly, it supplied the needed "second site," with the needed "intact craft," that the logic of the story, as a comparison of Major Marcel's evidence, and the original *Roswell Daily Record* article of July 8, 1947, demanded.[44] Secondly, it also indicated that there was a second recovery, retrieval, and shipment operation in connection with that site, in addition to that at the Brazel debris field recounted by Major Marcel. Finally, Barnett's story gives the first real, detailed description of the alleged "extra-terrestrial" bodies:

1) They were like humans but not humans;

2) They were bald;
3) They had small eyes that were widely spaced;
4) They were of shorter stature than humans; and finally,
5) Their heads were disproportionally larger than their bodies.

But as will be seen in Part Three, there is nothing distinctively and conclusively "extraterrestrial" about this catalogue. In fact, as will eventually be demonstrated, this list points rather distinctively and conclusively to something *very* terrestrial, and yet, anomalous enough that a layman *might* very easily be led to assume that it represented something from another planet.

c. Mac Brazel's Son, Bill Brazel: New Scenario Details, and the Debris Again

While the rancher who had originally discovered the now famous "debris field," Mac Brazel, was dead before Berlitz, Moore, and Friedman began the research for *The Roswell Incident*, his son Bill Brazel was still alive, and consequently, co-author William Moore interviewed him in March, June, and December of 1979.[45]

In the story that he recounted for Moore, Bill Brazel added several new details to the story. First, the younger Brazel maintained that his father told his part in the story only reluctantly, and in bits and pieces, taking the greater part of what he knew to the grave with him. Brazel also indicated that sometime *after* he had contacted Chaves County Sheriff George Wilcox, and sometime after his initial contact with Major Marcel and the initial trip to his ranch to recover the debris, that the military had been kept incommunicado by Army. Brazel recalled his father stating "Gosh…I just tried to do a good deed and they put me in jail for it," adding that his father had been shut up in a room and not allowed out.[46]

Rancher Mac Brazel in July, 1947

Other new details emerged in the younger Brazel's story. For example, while Mac was being held by the military, he was given a complete "head-to-foot army physical' before they would let him come home."[47] Another detail concerned Mac's actual finding of the debris field itself. According to the younger Brazel, his father was sitting in the ranch house with two hired hands during a terrible electrical storm. His father commented on how strange it was that the lightning seemed to strike the same place, time after time. During the storm, he heard "an odd sort of explosion, not like

ordinary thunder, but different."[48] The next morning, Brazel related, his father came across the debris field, extending about a quarter of a mile, and several hundred feet wide, in a southwesterly direction.[49]

Additionally, Bill Brazel claimed that he had also found, and kept some of the debris himself for a while.[50] The younger Brazel's description of the debris is worth citing, since it provides close corroboration of the descriptions given by Major Marcel:

> There were several different types of stuff. Of course, all I had was small bits and pieces, but one thing that I can say about it was that it sure was light in weight. It weighed almost nothing. There was some wooden-like particles I picked up. These were like balsa wood in weight, but a bit darker in color and much harder. You know the thing about wood is that the harder it gets, the heavier it is. Mahogany, for example, is quite heavy. This stuff, on the other hand, weighed nothing, yet you couldn't scratch it with your fingernail like ordinary balsa, and you couldn't break it either. It was pliable, but wouldn't break. Of course, all I had was a few splinters. It never occurred to me to try to burn it so I don't know if it would burn or not.
>
> There were also several bits of a metal-like substance, something on the order of tinfoil except that this stuff wouldn't tear and was actually *a bit darker in color than tinfoil — more like lead foil, except very thin and extremely lightweight. The odd thing about this foil was that you could wrinkle it and lat it back down and it immediately resumed its original shape. It was quite pliable, yet you couldn't crease or bend it like ordinary metal.* It was almost more like a plastic of some sort, except that it was definitely metallic in nature. I don't know what it was, but I do know that *Dad once said the Army had told him that they had definitely established it was not anything made by us.*
>
> Then there was some thread-like material. It looked like silk and there were several pieces of it. It was not large enough to call it string, but yet not so small as sewing thread either. To all appearances it was silk, except that it wasn't silk. Whatever it was, it too was a very strong material. You could take it in two hands and try to snap it, but it wouldn't snap at all. Nor did it have strands or other fibers like silk

thread would have. This was more like a wire — all one piece or substance. In fact, I suppose it could have been a sort of wire — that thought never occurred to me before.

….

Was there any writing or markings on any of the material you had?

No, not on what I had. But Dad did say one time that there were what he called "figures" on some of the pieces he found. He often referred to the petroglyphs the ancient Indians drew on rocks around here as "figures" too, and I think that's what he meant to compare them with.[51]

According to the younger Brazel, the Army eventually learned about his private cache of Roswell debris, and confiscated it.[52]

It is interesting to note that Bill Brazel's account of the debris closely parallels Major Marcel's in almost all respects, save two. Firstly, Bill Brazel gives more explicit details concerning the "memory metal" than does Major Marcel. Secondly, Brazel observes that his father described the "hieroglyphics" on the debris as being similar in nature to the American Indian petroglyphs that are found on stones throughout the American southwest. This, as we shall see, is an important clue into the possible physics of the technology involved.

Finally, Bill Brazel observes that his father never mentioned any bodies or creatures connected with the wreckage.[53]

Bill Brazel's sister and Mac Brazel's daughter, Bessie Brazel Schreiber, in a July 1979 interview, described the writing on metal-foil pieces as existing on a kind of "tape" which if held up to the light "showed what looked like pastel flowers or designs."[54] Brazel's daughter also gives an additional insight into the "numbers" mentioned by Marcel: "They were written out like you would write numbers in a column to do an addition problem. But they didn't look like the numbers we use at all."[55] For the older intelligence officer Marcel, they were simple "numbers," and no additional qualifications were given. To the younger Brazel, who was only

twelve years old at the time,[56] the "numbers" were not really numbers at all. She simple assumed them to be such because of the columnar arrangement.

d. Floyd Proctor Interview: More Chronological Details Emerge

Mac Brazel's neighbor, Floyd Proctor, lived about eight miles from Brazel's ranch, and it was indeed one of his children who had been one of the hired hands with Mac Brazel the night of the terrible electrical storm. Proctor was interviewed by William Moore in June of 1979.[57] According to Proctor, Brazel first came to him talking about the debris, describing "designs on it that reminded him of Chinese and Japanese designs….like the kind of stuff you would find on firecracker wrappers…"[58] Proctor also indicated that the Army had detained Mac under guard for approximately a week.[59]

Proctor's wife also corroborated her husband's recollection saying that "Mac said (the writing) was like the kind of stuff you find all over Japanese or Chinese firecrackers; not really writing, just wiggles and such."[60] However, from this very terrestrial analogy, Berlitz and Moore gallop to some very extraterrestrial conclusions, stating that "the unusual pictorial figures on the remnants of the foil…if part of a UFO, would be our first glimpse of extraterrestrial writing…"[61] Again, the terrestrial clues are ignored in favor of a paradigm of the extraterrestrial faith.

e. The Timing of Mac Brazel's Radio Interview

At some juncture, according to the standard scenario, rancher Mac Brazel gave a recorded interview for radio station KGFL of Roswell, on an old wire recorder. The question is, when?

> He was allegedly interviewed at the time of the incident one a wire recorder by W.E. Whitmore, then owner of KGFL, who planned to use the information as a "scoop" on the Mutual wire. W.E. Whitmore is now dead, but his son, Walt Whitmore, Jr., remembers that his father hid Brazel at the Whitmore home to keep the interview exclusive. At the very moment of the interview the Army, according to Whitmore,

was “having a fit” because they could not locate the “rancher who had found the flying saucer.”[62]

However, at this juncture, Whitmore Sr. began to broadcast preliminary details on his radio station, only to be interrupted by a long distance person-to-person phone call from someone alleging to be the secretary of the Federal Communications Commission, who ordered Whitmore to cease broadcasting the story, and threatening him with revocation of his station’s broadcasting license if he did not.[63]

And what of the initial press release itself? We have seen that Major Marcel believed that Lieutenant Haut issued the release in a fit of enthusiasm and on his own authority, without prior consultation with Roswell Army Air Field base commander, Colonel William Blanchard. Yet, the *Roswell Daily Record* article of July 8, 1947 clearly and explicitly stated that the information came from the base’s intelligence office, i.e., was somehow directly connected to Marcel, and thus, to Colonel Blanchard.

Haut himself, in interviews given in March and June of 1979,[64] stated that he was called by Blanchard himself “and directed to write and distribute a news release to the effect that the (Army Air Force) had recovered the remains of a crashed flying disc.”[65] As already argued, this makes much more rational sense of the situation and circumstances.

f. Jesse Marcel Jr. on the Debris and His Father

Major Marcel’s son, then a physician in Montana, weighed in with his own recollections of the debris found by his father. His initial statements to Berlitz and Moore are worth recording in the light of his later interviews:

> Dad got a call to go out and *investigate a downed aircraft or something like that.* He was gone a couple of days and returned with a van and a part of a car filled with wreckage and debris.
>
> The material was foil-like stuff, very thin, metallic-like but not metal, and very tough. There was also some structural-like material too, *beams* and so on. Also a quantity of black plastic material which looked organic in nature.

> Dad returned toward evening. He was gone all one night and most of the next day. He had a 1942 Buick and a Carry-all trailer, and both were loaded with this material which was only a fraction of the total material.[66]

Later, Dr. Marcel added some more detail:

> In reference to the UFO incident of 1947 or 1948 I omitted one startling description of the wreckage for fear it might have been the fanciful imagination of a twelve-year-old. Imprinted along the edge of some of the beam remnants there were hieroglyphic-type characters. I recently questioned my father about this, and he recalled seeing these characters also, and even described them as being a pink or purplish-pink color. Egyptian hieroglyphics would be a close visual description of the characters seen, except I don't think there were any animal figures present as there are in true Egyptian hieroglyphics.[67]

While Dr. Marcel's comments substantially align with the recollections of the debris that both his father, and Bill Brazel, made, what is notable in the light of his *later* statements is that there is no mention of anything of an extraterrestrial nature.

And that leaves the bodies, once again.

7. Enter the Extraterrestrials: A Morgue Full of ETs, Strange Incidents, and Stranger Memoranda

Surprisingly, in a book purportedly trying its best to argue an extraterrestrial interpretation for the Roswell Incident, other than Grady "Barney" Barnett's story, they produce no further direct evidence of the extraterrestrial nature of the recovered bodies. And as we have already seen, Barnett's "testimony" not only is not direct, but in that worst of a lawyer's nightmares, was the second hand testimony of a dead man via his friends, the Maltaises!

What Berlitz and Moore *do* present is a wider anecdotal context in which to "interpret" Barnett's story in a chapter entitled "Descriptions of the Aliens." They begin with a memorandum of Meade Layne, deceased

director of the Borderland Sciences Research Foundation, provided to them by his successor in that organization, Mr. Reilly Crabb:

> Layne's memo states that "on the basis of present information" he accepted the facts of the story as authentic. Of his sources, he said that his "most direct information involves three informants, two of whom are scientists of distinction, and the third a business man of high standing.
>
> "One of the scientists, a Dr. Weisberg, a physics professor from a California university, saw the disc himself and took part in the examination of it. He says the disc was shaped like a turtle's back, with a cabin space some fifteen feet in diameter. *The bodies of six occupants were seared… and the interior of the disc had been badly damaged by intense heat. One porthole had been shattered….*
>
> "*An autopsy on one body showed that it resembled a normal human body except in size.* One body was seated at what appeared to be a control desk, there were a few 'gadgets' in front of him, and on the walls or panels were characters in writing, in a language unknown to any of the investigators. They said it was unlike anything known to them, and was definitely not Russian. There was no propeller and no motor and they could not understand how it was driven or controlled. It was considered possible that the disc was wrecked by the heat of friction with the atmosphere…."

Dr. Weisberg's other testimony is especially interesting in that he suggests how the UFO got to its destination at Edwards Air Force Base. According to his recollection, it was taken by truck to Magdalena, in Guadalupe County, where it was put on a special car of the Atchison, Topeka and Santa Fe (Railroad), which had been brought down from Vaughn. It was "kept under wraps" passing through Belen, Grants, and Gallup in New Mexico, Flagstaff, Arizona, to Needles and Cadiz in California and finally to Muroc, where Camp Edwards is located.

While we cannot be certain which material went to Fort Worth and which to Muroc, apparently shipments in both directions took place:

> the disc and its occupants to Muroc and the unusual wreckage to Fort Worth, and then on to Wright Field in Ohio. There are even persistent rumors that, sometime in the mid-1950s, presumably after an alleged viewing by President Eisenhower of the material and bodies at Edwards, they were reunited under one roof inside a structure referred to only as "Building 18-A, Area B" at Wright-Patterson Air Force Base.[68]

There are a number of points to notice here, not the least of which is that there is nothing conclusively compelling toward the conclusion that the bodies are "extraterrestrial," in fact, once again, quite the reverse, for the language states explicitly that an autopsy "showed that it resembled a normal human body except in size." Presumably, an autopsy would have uncovered any anomalous or unusual interior physiology, yet, no mention is made of anything unusual except for the size. The other point worth noticing is the only point that would tend toward an extraterrestrial conclusion, for presumably the military would bring in a team of linguistics experts. This team could not identify the "writing" as any recognizable language. But what if the writing and the "hieroglyphs" represented something else entirely? That possibility will be examined in Part Three.

Finally, it is worth noting that we encounter here, for the first time in a widely disseminated popular context and book, the idea that President Eisenhower went to Edwards Air Force Base to have an encounter with "ET," in this case, dead ETs. This will assume some significance when we examine the Eisenhower Briefing Document in the Majic-12 documents in Part Two, for again, it will be William Moore — self-confessed disinformation agent — who was one of the principles involved in the Eisenhower Briefing Document affair.

But the bottom line is this: there is absolutely *no detail* in Dr. Weisberg's allegations that *compels* to an extraterrestrial explanation either for the craft or the bodies. In fact, Weisberg's descriptions of the latter are considerably *less* detailed than Grady Barnett's.

Another source introduced into the wider contextual discussion of extraterrestrials by Berlitz and Moore is Baron Nicholas von Poppen, a German-Estonian nobleman who had allegedly developed "a system of photographic metallurgical analysis" and who worked in the Los Angeles

area as “an industrial photographer.”[69] According to Berlitz and Moore, von Poppen was quoted by celebrated ufologist Gray Barker in a May 1977 *UFO Report* as having been “employed by military authorities to photograph the damaged saucer,”[70] presumably the Roswell saucer. Assuming this to be the case for the sake of argument, it is worth citing Berlitz and Moore’s summary and actual quotation of von Poppen extensively:

> The salient points of von Poppen’s account are startling. On a certain unspecified date in the late 19450s, he was visited by two military intelligence representatives who offered him a top-secret photographic assignment at an exceptionally high fee, but with the proviso that he would immediately be deported if he revealed anything that he saw or photographed. Subsequently the agents escorted him by plane to an air base which, he was told, was Los Alamos (but which could have been Edwards since there was no air base at Los Alamos). He was taken to a large object which resembled the popular concept of a flying saucer. He stayed at the base for several days, photographing the object, his film being taken from the camera by military representatives as each film was completed. According to his recollection, he took hundreds of pictures. In the close-up shots he was told that it was important to show the texture of the metal.
>
> Von Poppen thought that the machine was about thirty feet in diameter and the interior cabin about twenty feet in diameter with a curving ceiling. Between the inner cabin and the outside there was space for *cables made of unfamiliar metals or alloys.* In this main cabin there were fur seats in front of a control board, which was “covered with push buttons and tiny levers.” Plastic sheets covered with symbols lay scattered on the control board and on the floor.
>
> *Still strapped in each of the four seats was a dead body, extremely thin and varying in height from about two to four feet.…* As quoted by Gray Barker, von Poppen stated:
>
> “The faces of all four were very white…. (They wore) shiny black attire, one-piece outfits without pockets and closely gathered at their feet and necks…. Their shoes… were made of the same material

> and appeared to be very soft — not rigid…. *Their hands were human-like though soft, like those of children, complete with five digits, normal-looking joints, and neatly trimmed nails….*"[71]

Notably, the remains of the craft as described by von Poppen — assuming once again for the sake of argument that it is the Roswell craft — are remarkably *different* than the technology later described in the MAJIC-12 documents, or, for that matter, by Lt. Col. Philip Corso in his book *The Day After Roswell*, for in von Poppen's account, one is dealing not with *fiber optics* connections but with *ordinary wires and cables, very terrestrial, and very 1940s, technologies.* More importantly, there once again is nothing on von Poppen's account to compel to the conclusion that the bodies described must originate off this planet.

To put it succinctly, nothing in the detailed descriptions either of the technology or of the biology by von Poppen compels to an extraterrestrial conclusion. We are also left to assume that von Poppen's account was intended to address the Roswell incident directly, which is likely. Nonetheless, the indirect nature of the account still means that Grady Barnett's account is the only account presented by Berlitz and Moore that "directly" alleges the recovery of bodies, and even then, while the most detailed of the descriptions, as we shall see, even these details do not compel to an extra-terrestrial conclusion.

a. The Norma Gardner Story

Among the more interesting contextual stories that Berlitz and Moore adduce to round out the context of the Roswell Incident is the story of Mrs. Norma Gardner. Gardner worked at Wright-Patterson airbase in 1955, and was given special Top Secret security clearances for her post, which was to process all items of paperwork connected with UFO debris cataloguing, and autopsies allegedly performed on the recovered bodies from various UFO crashes.[72]

Access to these autopsy reports gave Gardner an unusual insight into the details of the so-called "aliens." Interestingly enough, once again the

descriptions are oddly human, for they were described by her as being "between four and five feet tall, with generally human-like features except that the heads were large relative to the bodies and the eyes were slanted."[73]

But Gardner also adds a new detail that, as will be seen in Part Three, might be highly significant, for "among the more startling of the many rumors concerning the crashed disc is the one that suggests that the object was brought down by air force action, perhaps accidentally, through radar interference with the operational technology of the disc."[74] Berlitz and Moore add that they think it very unlikely that the Roswell craft was brought down either by deliberate or accidental American military action. "Far more likely is the conjecture that the disc was struck by a lightning bolt, as seems to be indicated in Brazel's story."[75]

Clearly, Berlitz and Moore take Gardner's recollection in the context of the Roswell incident, and this will become significant in Part Three, even though this author concurs with their assessment that what most likely brought the craft down was an accidental lightning strike.

b. The Goldwater-Lemay Incident

The final intriguing incident recounted by Berlitz and Moore in their book is the famous incident, told by the famous late U.S. Senator from Arizona, Barry Goldwater, himself a major general in the U.S. Air Force Reserve.

> According to Senator Goldwater, what actually happened was the following: while en route to California in the early 1960s, the senator stopped at Wright-Patterson Air Base, where he visited his friend General Curtis LeMay. Senator Goldwater had heard of the existence of a room or section on the base referred to as "Blue Room," where UFO artifacts, photographs, and exhibits were kept. The senator, who, as a longtime pilot, had more than a passing interest in UFOs, requested permission from General LeMay to visit the Blue Room exhibits. General LeMay's response was eminently succinct: "Hell, no. I can't go, you can't go, and don't ever ask me again!"[76]

The question at this juncture — and one to which Berlitz and Moore themselves are not oblivious — is who could be so powerful as to keep out a high ranking general like LeMay, who by that time was a full four-star general, and in command of the United States' Air Forces' entire nuclear warfare command, the Strategic Air Command?

c. The FBI and Twining-Schulgen Memoranda

While the documentary evidence in Berlitz's and Moore's book is scanty, it is nonetheless highly significant, and seriously damaging to any "skeptics'" case that the Roswell Incident represented the mere crash and mistaken identification of a balloon. Among these is a secret FBI memorandum from director J. Edgar Hoover to a "Mr. Ladd", dated July 15, 1957. The memo is succinct, but huge with implications:

"Memorandum for Mr. Ladd

"Mr. (censored) also discussed this matter with Colonel L. R. Forney ofr MID (Military Intelligence Division). Colonel Forney indicated that it was his attitude that inasmuch as it has been established that the flying discs *are not the result of any Army or Navy experiments*, the matter is of interest to the FBI. He stated that he was of the opinion that the Bureau, if at all possible, should accede to General Schulgen's request (i.e., to aid the Army Air Force in its investigations).

"SWR:AJB (Initials)"

Added to the bottom of the memo, in Hoover's own handwriting, is:

"I would do it but before agreeing to it we must insist upon full access to discs recovered. For instance in the (illegible: could be either

"SW" or "LA" case) the Army grabbed it and would not let us have it for cursory examination.

"H."[77]

Note that, as far as Hoover's FBI is concerned, it is a settled matter that the discs do *not* represent any black project of the Army or Navy.

Berlitz and Moore also observe that the abbreviations "SW" or "LA" could refer to the southwest, or to Louisiana or Los Angeles.[78] Berlitz and Moore argue that the Ladd memorandum refers in fact to the Roswell Incident because of a July 8, 1947 teletype communication from the FBI's Dallas Field Office to its Cincinnati Field Office, "with copies to Hoover and the Strategic Air Command."[79] The text, as reproduced in their book, reads as follows:

TELETYPE

FBI DALLAS 7-8-47 6-17PM

DIRECTOR AND SAC, CINCINNATI URGENT

FLYING DISC, INFORMATION CONCERNING.

(Censored), HEADQUARTERS EIGHTH AIR FORCE TELEPHONICALLY ADVISED THIS OFFICE THAT AN OBJECT PURPORTING TO BE A FLYING DISC WAS RE COVERED (sic) NEAR ROSWELL, NEW MEXICO, THIS DATE.... (Censored) FUTHER ADVISED THAT THE OBJECT RESEMBLES A HIGH ALTITUDE WEATHER BALLOON WITH A RADAR

REFLECTOR, *BUT THAT TELEPHONIC CONVERSATION BETWEEN THEIR OFFICE AND WRIGHT FIELD HAD NOT BORNE OUT THIS BELIEF. DISC AND BALLOON BEING TRANSPORTED TO WRIGHT FIELD BE SPECIAL PLANE FOR EXAMINATION.* INFORMATION PROVIDED THIS OFFICE BECAUSE OF NATIONAL INTEREST IN CASE AND FACT THAT NATIONAL BROADCASTING COMPANY? ASSOCIATED PRESS AND OTHERS ATTEMPTING TO BREAK STORY OF LOCATION OF DISC TODAY. (Censored) ADVISED WOULD REQUEST WRIGHT FIELD TO ADVISE CINCINNATI OFFICE RESULTS OF EXAMINATION...

WYLY

END[80]

While the FBI teletype suggests that the Roswell Incident involved both a balloon *and* a disc, there is little doubt that a disc *was* somehow involved, and that the weather balloon story put out by General Ramey in Fort Worth was exactly that, a *story.*

In this context, Berlitz and Moore introduce the Twining-Schulgen memorandum of September 23, 1947. As this memorandum will become important for the discussions and argumentation in Parts Two and Three, it is reproduced here, and preliminary conclusions are drawn from it.

23 September 1947

Subject: AMC (Air Materials Command) Opinion Concerning "Flying Discs"
TO: Commanding General
Army Air Forces
Washington 25, D.C.
ATTENTION: Brig. General George Schulgen
AC/AS-2

1. As requested by AC/AS-2 tehre is presented below the considered opinion of this Command concerning the so-called "Flying Discs." *This opinion is based on interrogation report data* furnished by AC/AS-2 and preliminary studies by personnel of T—2 and Aircraft Laboratory, Engineering Division -3. *This opinion was arrived at in a conference between personnel from the Air Institute of Technology, Intelligence T-2*, Office Chief of Engineering Division, and the Aircraft, Power Plant and Propeller Laboratories of Engineering Division T-3.
2. It is the opinion that:

a. **The phenomenon reported is something real and not visionary or fictitious.**
b. **There are objects probably approximately the shape of a disc, of such appreciable size as to appear to be as large as man-made aircraft.**
c. There is a possibility that some of the incidents may be caused by natural phenomenon (sic), such as meteors.

d. The reported operating characteristics such as extreme rates of climb, maneuverability (particularly in roll), and *action which must be considered evasive when sighted or contacted by friendly aircraft and radar, lend belief to the possibility that* ***some of the objects are controlled either manually, automatically, or remotely.***

e. The apparent **common description** of the objects is as follows:

(1) **Metallic or light reflecting surface.**

(2) *Absence of trail, except in a few instances when the object was apparently operating under high performance conditions.*

(3) **Circular or elliptical in shape, flat on bottom and domed on top.**

(4) Several reports of well kept formation flights varying from three to nine objects.

(5) *Normally no associated sound, except in three instances a substantial rumbling roar was noted…*[81]

It is crucial to note that this memorandum was written *after* the flight of the disc debris to Wright-Patterson, and *after* the FBI memoranda presented earlier, making it extremely liked that it reflects the preliminary opinion of General Twining's Air Material Command on what had been recovered.

Yet, notice, that there is *no mention of an extraterrestrial* perspective whatsoever. Indeed, several of the technological aspects mentioned by the document would dispel such a perspective, and argue for a more terrestrially based technology, including the document's mention of a "trail" from such objects under high performance conditions, and a *roaring* sound, both more characteristic of some form of jet propulsion than of any advanced extra-terrestrial technology.

Berlitz and Moore rightly note that "the fact that the memo accepts the reality of 'flying discs' are indicative *of the official climate of urgency generated by the Roswell incident."*[82] However, an important clue as to the *source and reason* for that urgency is completely ignored by Berlitz and Moore (and for that matter, by most ufologists since the memorandum's first appearance), and that is that the memo specifically mentions that its opinion was based in part *on interrogations by the intelligence section of the Air Materials Command.*

Who is being interrogated here? Extraterrestrials - whose hieroglyphic “language” no one could understand, making it unlikely that in the few months between July and September of 1947 any other form of communication would have been deciphered — or someone else? If, as some would later allege, at least *one* of the recovered Roswell crewmen was still alive, and if it can be shown that the physiological characteristics recorded for these aliens has a plausible terrestrial explanation, then could this be the source of the intelligence gained by interrogation? But if so, once again, where on earth did it come from?

Note also that the memorandum also strongly implies that some of the opinion reflected in the memorandum stems from actual technological analysis itself, some of which had already been presumably performed on the Roswell craft. And as already indicated, some of this analysis is more characteristic of jet propelled aircraft in high performance modes, than of any advanced “extra-terrestrial field propulsion” devices.

So, if all this be the case, *then why is there such a sense of urgency in the military, an urgency clearly noticed by Berlitz and Moore*? Since Berlitz and Moore and several of their witnesses have already ruled out a Soviet source and cause for this urgency, what other terrestrial basis for it could there be?

Of course, Berlitz and Moore are not interested in possible terrestrial explanations, for having ruled out a Soviet source, they think they have eliminated any other possible terrestrial source, and thus left the extraterrestrial interpretation holding the field by default. But, as has been seen, by opting too early for this explanation, their analysis of crucial and significant details in the documents that they themselves present is altogether deficient and unpersuasive.

B. Summary

1. The Basic Timeline of Events According to Berlitz and Moore

We are now at last in a position to summarize the basic timeline of the Roswell Incident in its second articulation by Berlitz and Moore, as given on pages 89-91 of their book.

1) 9:45-9:50 PM, July 2, 1947, a UFO passes over the Wilmots in Roswell at a high rate of speed.
2) Northeast of Roswell, this object ran into the lightning storm attested to by Mac Brazel, where it turned to the southwest, was apparently struck by lightning, and a portion of the craft exploded and produced the debris Brazel encountered the next day.
3) The craft itself managed to stay aloft long enough to crash west of Socorro on the Plains of San Augustin.
4) Brazel discovered the debris the next morning, July 3, 1947, as he rode out to inspect the ranch. Meanwhile, Grady "Barney" Barnett claims he and an archaeological team from the University of Pennsylvania discovered the main craft, and the bodies of its crew, some miles from the Brazel ranch on the Plains of San Augustin.
5) After the July 4th weekend, Brazel then, ca. July 5th-6th, 1947, informed the Proctors of his discovery, who urged him to report it to Sheriff Wilcox in Chaves County, in Roswell.
6) Brazel drives to Roswell, informs Sheriff Wilcox of his discovery, and Wilcox then informs Marjor Marcel, Intelligence Officer of the 509th Atomic Bomb Group at Roswell Army Air Base. Marcel informs Colonel Blanchard, the base commander, and both agree that Marcel and the base's counter-intelligence officer, Sheridan Cavitt, should drive out to the Brazel ranch and collect as much of the debris as possible. At this juncture, it is clear that Marcel and Blanchard suspect it might be a secret government aircraft of some sort.
7) Subsequently, a massive cleanup of the debris field is instituted by personnel from the base, and this extends to the principal crash site allegedly discovered by Grady Barnett near Socorro.
8) By July 8, 1947, Colonel Blanchard has the base's public information officer, First Lieutenant Walter Haut, issue a press release stating that the Army Air Force has recovered a flying saucer.
9) A few hours later, Brigadier General Roger Ramey, Blanchard's superior officer, orders the debris — and Major Marcel — to Fort Worth for a press conference. Actual, though less sensitive Roswell

debris is originally displayed according to Major Marcel, and photographed by the press. Subsequently debris from a weather balloon is substituted for it, and Ramey informs the press that it was simply a case of mistaken identity. Marcel is ordered to maintain silence about the subject, and to return to his base at Roswell. The debris is flown to Wright-Patterson Field in Dayton, Ohio, while according to some sources the disk itself is shipped to Edwards Air Force Base in California.

10) Some thirty years after the incident, Jesse Marcel recounts his role in the incident, and his initial description of the debris, for Berlitz, Moore, and Friedman, while Barnett's friends, the Maltaises, come forward with his story about the dead crew.[83]

That, succinctly, is the second articulation of the Roswell Incident, and the first version of the standard scenario or conventional wisdom.

2. The "Bodies"

As has already been noted, at this juncture in the evolution of the story of the Roswell Incident, there is really only one source *directly* tied to the incident that remembers seeing bodies, and that is Grady Barnett. In the descriptions of the bodies he gave to the Maltaises, there is nothing that conclusively compels that to the conclusion that they were extraterrestrial.

3. The Debris

Indeed, at this point within the evolution of the story, the most remarkable fact about the incident is *not* the all-too-human-like descriptions of the alleged crew of the craft, but the remarkable properties of the recovered debris. In this respect, it is unusual that Grady Barnett, an engineer, did not provide more elaborate and detailed descriptions of the craft and its technology.

Among the salient features of this debris, we note first of all that various witnesses — Major Jesse Marcel Sr., Dr. Jesse Marcel Jr., Bill Brazel and

his sister Bessie Brazel Schreiber — concur in their basic descriptions of the properties of the debris, and the presence of unusual "hieroglyphic" or symbolic pictograms of some sort on some of the material.

4. Problems with the Balloon Theory

All of these considerations point to considerable problems with the Air Force's first attempted cover-up with its weather balloon story of mistaken identification. In spite of the arguments of skeptics — which we shall encounter later — the fact remains that Major Marcel, the senior intelligence officer of the only atomic bomb group in the world at the time — would be *highly unlikely* to misidentify a balloon. As will be seen, there are those who also suggest that Marcel was simply "making it all up." But this too has its major problems, not the least of which is that there exist FBI and Air Force memoranda from that immediate time period that clearly reflect the fact that what was taken to Wright Patterson Field was *not* a mere balloon, of any type whatsoever.

We are left then with a basic fact: *something genuinely exotic crashed in New Mexico in 1947, and it initiated a series of events, cover-ups, and even anxiety within U.S. military and intelligence circles.* The question is, *what crashed, where did it come from, and why did it initiate such anxiety within the corridors of American military and intelligence power?*

The answer of the "ET" Roswell community is, of course, that the reason for the panic was that it was something extraterrestrial that had crashed. But as has been seen, the case of Berlitz and Moore leaves a lot to be desired, and is hardly persuasive.

It was to address these deficiencies, and to supply new facts and witnesses, that the formidable investigative talents of Stanton T. Friedman and veteran ufologist Don Berliner combined to give a much more solid case for the extraterrestrial scenario, and to it, we now turn.

---

[1] Charles Berlitz and William L. Moore, *The Roswell Incident* (New York: Grosset and Dunlap, 1980), p. 4.

[2] Ibid., p. 2, emphasis in the original.

[3] The terms “standard scenario,” “conventional wisdom,” and “revisionist scenario” are those of one of the principal Roswell skeptics, Karl T. Pflock,*Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe* (Amherst, new York: Prometheus Books, 2001), pp. 22- 66. Pflock calls the standard scenario the “conventional wisdom.”

[4] The other researchers are Stanton T. Friedman, and Don Berliner.Friedman, it should be noted, also had a key role in the research for Berlitz’s and Moore’s *The Roswell Incident.* See Don Berliner and Stanton T. Friedman,*Crash at Corona: The U.S. Military Retrieval and Cover-up of a UFO: The Definitive Study of the Roswell Incident* (New York: Paraview Special Editions, 2004), p. ix.

[5] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 14.

[6] Wright Field or Wright-Patterson Field is north of Dayton, Ohio. At the time it was headquarters of the Air Material Command under General Nathan Twining, and the Air Technical Intelligence Command. It was also home to such German Paperclip scientists as ramjet and supersonic flight specialist Dr.Walther Lippisch, designer of a ramjet delta-wing supersonic aircraft called theP-13. One of these flights, according to Project Lusty documents at Maxwell Air Force Base, succeeded in breaking the sound barrier during a flight test shortly before the end of World War Two (see my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 18-22, citing Project Lusty,Frames 599, 601. See also Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, pp. 200-201, 226.

[7] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, pp. 14-15, italicized emphasis added, capitals emphasis in the original.

[8] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 16.

[9] Ibid.

[10] Ibid.

[11] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 16, emphasis in the original.

[12] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 17, emphasis added.

[13] See my *Secrets of the Unified Field*, p. 232, my *Nazi International*, especially pp. 16-41, 249-350, and consider my *Babylons’ Banksters*, chapter one, carefully for the real significance and founding purpose of the Bilderberg Group.

[14] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 20.

[15] Berlitz and Moore, pp. 22-23, emphasis added.

[16] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, pp. 28-29, emphasis added.

[17] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, pp. 30-31.

[18] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 34, emphasis in the original.

[19] Meaning 509th base intelligence officer Major Jesse Marcel.

[20] Ibid., p. 34.

[21] Ibid., 62.

[22] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 62.

[23] Ibid.

[24] Ibid.

[25] Ibid.

[26] Berlitz and Moore, pp. 63-67, italicized emphasis added.

[27] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 67.

[28] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, pp. 67-69.

[29] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 37.

[30] Ibid.

[31] Ibid., p. 38.

[32] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 42.

[33] Ibid.

[34] Ibid.

[35] Ibid., emphasis added.

[36] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 53.

[37] Ibid., emphasis added.

[38] Ibid., p. 54.

[39] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 54.

[40] Ibid., pp. 54-55, emphasis added.

[41] Ibid., p. 55.

[42] Ibid., p. 57.

[43] Ibid. It might be argued that Barnett knew this detail because he was ordered off the site *after* the arrival of the large truck and its loading with the crashed disc. But this makes no sense, because if the military was

concerned enough about security to order people off the site and to keep quiet about it, then they hardly would have allowed civilians to observe the loading of the truck.Barnett might have been told by someone in the military involved in the operation, but in Berlitz and Moore's presentation, there is no discussion of this possibility.

[44] It is to be noted that Major Marcel, in his initial interviews for Berlitz's and Moore's book, did *not* recall hearing about a second crash site. See *The Roswell Incident*, p. 69.

[45] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 74.

[46] Ibid., p. 75.

[47] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 76.

[48] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 77.

[49] Ibid.

[50] Ibid., p. 78.

[51] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, pp. 78-80, emphasis added.

[52] Ibid., p

[53] Ibid., p

[54] Ibid., p

[55] Ibid., p

[56] Ibid., p

[57] Ibid., p. 83.

[58] Ibid.

[59] Ibid., pp. 83-84.

[60] Ibid., p. 86.

[61] Ibid.

[62] Ibid., pp. 87-88.

[63] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 88.

[64] Ibid., p. 72.

[65] Ibid., p. 73.

[66] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, pp. 70-71, emphasis added.

[67] Ibid., p. 71.

[68] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, pp. 92-93, emphasis added.

[69] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 94.

[70] Ibid.

[71] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, pp. 94-95, emphasis added.

[72] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 108.

[73] Ibid.

[74] Ibid., p. 109.

[75] Ibid.

[76] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 124.

[77] Cited in Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 132.

[78] Ibid. On p. 133, Berlitz and Moore rule out the possibility that LA refers to a Louisiana hoaxed disc case that took place near Shreveport on July 7, 1947, for in that particular instance, the Army cooperated with the FBI fully and completely.

[79] Ibid., p. 133.

[80] Cited in Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, pp. 133-134, emphasis added by Berlitz and Moore.

[81] Cited in Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, pp. 137-138, bold faced emphasis Berlitz's and Moore's, italicized emphasis my own.

[82] Ibid., p. 138, emphasis added.

[83] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, pp. 89-91.

3
The Third Articulation: Berliner-Friedman, the Tightening of the Standard Scenario, and Some Screws that Still Insist on Popping loose

"The list of answers to the questions about what crashed in New Mexico is not
much shorter. The U.S. Air Force says it wasn't an airplane, a rocket, a missile
or anything to do with a nuclear accident. The General Accounting Office says
there is no reason to think it was a Project Mogul balloon. What does that leave,
other than a UFO?"
Don Berliner and Stanton T. Friedman[1]

Don Berliner's and Stanton T. Friedman's *Crash at Corona* is widely, and rightly, regarded as the central and magisterial book outlining the standard scenario and timeline of the Roswell crash, and the subsequent U.S. military cover-up, from the perspective that the event was the crash and recovery of an extraterrestrial craft, its technologies, and its crew. In it, new witnesses "and anyone else who might be able to add even a tiny scrap to the slowly jelling story"[2] were tracked down by the meticulous Friedman, and previously obscure chronological sequences or ambiguities left unresolved in the Berlitz and Moore presentation — such as whether First Lieutenant Walter Haut issued the press release on his own, or under orders from Colonel William Blanchard — are resolved, in Haut's case, the issue is settled by the clear statement that the lieutenant was ordered to do so.[3] Indeed, in Berliner's and Friedman's book, Friedman's own largely

unknown role as a principal researcher in the Berlitz and Moore book was clearly revealed for the first time to a wider public.[4]

But as will be seen, their book raises as many questions as it resolves, and oftentimes these questions will be seen to be so obvious that one wonders why they were not apparent to Berliner and Friedman, and why they did not attempt to deal with them. One such question occurs in conjunction with Lt. Haut's press release, for if it *was* issued under orders from Col. Blanchard, as they clearly state, then why — if the military was so "upset" with Blanchard and Haut for the release — was Blanchard, a West Point graduate, later promoted to the rank of a full four star general and given the post of the Vice Chief of Staff? The question implies that the initial press release itself may have been part of the cover-up. Questions like this are repeatedly raised by Berliner's and Friedman's book, so it is best to go through it slowly, taking note of them as we proceed.

A. The Wider Context

One of the merits of Berliner's and Friedman's study of the Roswell Incident is their attempt to place the event in a wider context. The only question that occurs is whether or not they cast a wide enough net, and if their presentation of that context is objective, or if certain types of questions or classes of evidence are ignored. Berliner's and Friedman's "wider context" is, at first glance, impressive, ranging from top secret and now declassified memoranda, the conclusions of the Robertson Panel, discussions of the physics of UFOs, an interview with a famous scientist, and an actual list of the scientists allegedly initially involved in the Roswell recovery and its preliminary analysis.

1. The Problems with Any Balloon Explanation of the Event

When they wrote their book, the U.S. Air Force's "final" official explanation of the Roswell Incident as a crashed top secret Mogul balloon was still in the future. But in that context Berliner and Friedman addressed pertinent remarks to its first "official" balloon theory, the weather balloon

story put out by Brigadier General Ramey at the Fort Worth press conference. These remarks, however, highlight the principal difficulties that *any* balloon theory must address. After the initial appearance of the weather balloon explanation, “No one,” they observed,

> thought to question why something so commonplace as a weather balloon had caused so much commotion. Or how two officers of an elite (Army Air Force) unit could possibly have failed to recognize it. Or how this small, flimsy contraption, which could hardly have come to earth violently, could have strewn its pieces over “a square mile” of sheep ranch.[5]

Additionally, Berliner and Friedman note the difficulty of a helium-filled balloon exploding, much less scattering enough debris “to attract attention when spread out over an area the size of several football fields.”[6] Finally, the balloon explanation is utterly out of proportion to the logistical effort, and the sense of anxiety and urgency, that the military expended in the recovery of a mere balloon.[7]

2. Some Pertinent Questions

Berliner and Friedman begin their book by asking a series of pertinent questions, some of which are noted below:

5. Exactly what was found at the Brazel Ranch?
6. Where was the material taken, and what was done with it (and to it) prior to its being shipped from the southwest?
7. Who was involved in the analysis of the material, and how were they selected?
8. What was done with the material when the scientific work on it was completed?
9. Were bodies found? If so, what were they like and what was done with them?

10. Who was responsible for the grand cover-up of the crash and its aftermath?...
11. What was it doing in New Mexico in the first place?
12. Was it one of the many “flying saucers” seen all around the United States during late June and early July 1947?

In Part Three the true significance of these questions will be explored in greater depth, but some of these questions have been answered, and some of them will be answered in this chapter.

Questions 5 and 6, for example, have to a certain extent already been answered, for as was seen in the previous chapter, what was found on the Brazel ranch was some rather unusual, and to a certain extent, even extraordinary debris. The material was taken from the ranch initially to the Roswell Army Air Field, where it was presumably given a cursory preliminary analysis, and then shipped to Fort Worth and from their on to Wright Field in Dayton, Ohio.

As for question 7 — who was involved in the analysis of the material — that answer will emerge presently. One may reasonably speculate on the answer to question 8 — what was done with the material and the knowledge gleaned from it — on the basis of who was involved in its analysis, in other words, on the basis of the answer to question 7.

Question 9 — were bodies found and if so, what were they like and was done with them — we in part already know the answer to, for as was seen in the previous chapter, and as will be further seen in this chapter, there do exist claims for the recovery of bodies from the primary crash site, as well as detailed descriptions of them.

Question 10 — who was responsible for the grand cover-up — has likewise already been seen: it was the military itself, and that cover-up may have begun with the very first initial story, the press release of Lt. Walter Haut and the “recovered flying saucer” story itself.

As for the last two questions, we shall see in the last section of this chapter how Berliner and Friedman attempt to answer them.

3. The Memoranda

a. The Twining-Schulgen Memorandum

The Twining-Schulgen Memorandum was already encountered in the previous chapter, but it is worth considering Berliner's and Friedman's treatment of it, for by doing so a certain "interpretive tendentiousness contrary to the text" on their part is revealed.

They begin by noting that a preliminary secret Army Air Force report, issued before the June-July 1947 UFO flap had petered out, came to the conclusions that the saucer phenomenon was not due merely to a case of reading too much into natural phenomena: "Something is really flying around."[8] The document was dated July 30, 19847 and was based on fifteen sightings from May 19 to July 10.[9] The same document went on to summarize what sort of technology and performance characteristics had been observed:

1. The appearance of these objects is metallic, indicating a metallic skin, at least.
2. *When a trail is observed, it is lightly colored, a blue-brown haze, that is similar to a rocket engine's exhaust. Contrary to a rocket of the solid type, one observation indicates that the fuel may be throttled, which would indicate a liquid rocket engine.*
3. As to shape, all observations state that the object is circular or at least elliptical, flat on the bottom and slightly domed on the top. *The size estimates place it somewhere near the size of a C-54 or Constellation*(1940s airliners having a wingspan of 120 feet and a length of 95 feet).
4. *Some reports describe two tabs, located at the rear and symmetrical about the axis of flight motion.*
5. Flights have been reported, with three to nine of them, flying good formation on each other, *with speeds always about 300 knots (350 mph).*
6. The discs oscillate laterally when flying along, which could be snaking.[10]

Berliner's and Friedman's remarks that immediately follow the above- and oft-cited passage, are themselves worth citing at length, before an analysis of the above passage is undertaken:

> The U.S. Army Air Forces, fresh from a major share of the victory in history's largest and most violent air war, was baffled by some high-performance craft flying through skies it rightfully considered its own. *The flying saucers or flying discs or flying whatevers were fast and maneuverable and thus capable of evading American interceptors with ease. It requires little imagination to picture the consternation that must have swept through the offices of high-ranking Army Air Forces people in Washington when faced with this mysterious incursion that had to be considered a potential threat.*
>
> What could they say when President Harry Truman asked them what in hell was going on? They couldn't claim to know what the flying saucers were, for they would then have to provide details they didn't have. They also couldn't very well admit that there were *unknown craft flying through American skies with impunity*, for the ensuing questions would be far too embarrassing to contemplate. What if the Senate Armed Services and Appropriations committees got wind of the USAAF's inability to cope with *foreign machines* flying over American cities?
>
> …
>
> The only solution was to launch an all-out effort to find out what the flying saucers were, and to keep the entire matter totally secret from the public and from most of the government until the USAAF could regain control of the skies.[11]

Berliner's and Friedman's choice of words — "foreign machines" — is oddly suggestive in a book otherwise concerned with arguing that the Roswell Incident was an extraterrestrial crash-and-recovery event. Nonetheless their general point is universally acknowledged by all – including this author — who accept the reality of the 1947 UFO flap, namely, that the craft and whoever it belonged to, was entering American airspace over some of the U.S. military's most sensitive installations with impunity, with a technological and performance capability that left the United States Army Air Force in the dust. Indeed, this fact alone constitutes one basis for the urgency and anxiety that it felt over the issue

All the more remarkable, then, is the fact that Berliner and Friedman make these remarks in conjunction with the citation from the memorandum

of July 30, 1947, for observe carefully what the implications of that memorandum are:

1) The technology as described in the document appears to be some unique form of *rocketry* or, at the maximum, *an unusual craft fueled by a conventional type of fuel*; in short, the craft leave exhaust and vapor trails, hardly what one would expect from an advanced extraterrestrial craft!
2) The stated performance characteristics — 350 miles per hour — are hardly sufficient to make the craft described in the document anything even *close* to a practical interplanetary craft, for such speeds are not only far too slow for interplanetary travel, they are far below the required escape velocity to escape the gravitational well of planet Earth even to *reach* outer space! To assume that the craft have greater performance capabilities is logical, since American interceptors of the period could easily top speeds of 350 miles per hour. However, beyond being able to outdistance and/or out-maneuver our interceptors, we do not know the maximum performance characteristics beyond assuming them being several hundreds of miles per hour. Anything beyond that is an argument from silence.
3) Finally, the craft described in the document are relatively small, no larger than common Earth airliners of the period, thus — once again — making it highly unlikely that they represent any craft suitable for long-term interplanetary voyages (and such voyages would be *unbearably* long at the plodding "pony express" speeds of 350 miles — give or take a few hundred miles - per hour)!

To put it succinctly, neither the technology nor the performance characteristics of the document cited by Berliner and Friedman are anywhere near what they would need to be for a practical interplanetary and extraterrestrial craft. To put it even more succinctly, the physics and technology described are not exotic enough to be extraterrestrial, period.

What is even more remarkable is that Stanton Friedman, a credentialed nuclear physicist who *has* worked on top secret government black projects

in nuclear propulsion, would surely have known this, and Berliner, no slouch himself, would as well. Yet, they make no mention of this difficult fact.

Undaunted by these inconveniences, Berliner and Friedman continue to cite other memoranda. For example, “Less than two months later, on September 23, 1947, a more detailed report was prepared by the Air Force’s Air Material Command (the technical and scientific establishement) for Air Force intelligence.” That report concluded that “the phenomenon is something real and not fictitious.”[12]

All of the above informs their citation and analysis of the October 28, 1947 draft order for intelligence on UFOs, an order in turn based upon “an intelligence collection memorandum from Brig. Gen. George Schulgen, chief of the USAF’s Air Intelligence Requirements Division” and “based on a summary of flying-saucer characteristics supplied to him by Lt. Gen. Nathan Twining, commander of the Air Material Command.”[13] They then cite the order:

> This strange object, or phenomenon, may be considered, in view of certain observations, as long-range aircraft capable of a high rate of climb, high cruising speed and highly maneuverable and capable of being flown in very tight formations. For the purpose of analysis and evaluation of these so-called “flying saucers,” *the object sighted is being assumed to be a manned craft of unknown origin.* While there remains the *possibility* of Russian manufacture, based on perspective thinking *and actual accomplishments of the Germans*, ***it is the considered opinion of some elements that the object may in fact represent an interplanetary craft of some kind.*** [14]

Notably, this section of the memorandum indicates two possible origins for the object: a terrestrial, Russian one, based on German designs, or an extraterrestrial one. Thus, we have one ready explanation as to why the wreckage was sent to Wright Field in Dayton, for not only was it the headquarters of the Air Material Command, but it was also headquarters to such German Paperclip scientific luminaries as Dr. Walter Lippisch, who lectured his American hosts on the design requirements for super-sonic aircraft.[15] If a German origin for the recovered Roswell wreckage had been

suspected by the military, Wright Field was the logical destination for that reason as well.

Berliner and Friedman then observe that "within the order are several references that make little sense unless read in the context of presumed knowledge of a flying saucer that crashed several months earlier in New Mexico. These are shown in boldface in the following partial breakdown of the types of information being south by USAF Intelligence."[16] They then cite the relevant section of the order:

> Construction.
> a. Type of material, whether metal, ferrous, non-ferrous or non-metallic.
> b. Composite of sandwich construction utilizing various combinations of metals, **metallic foils,** plastics, and perhaps **balsa wood or similar material.**
> c. Unusual fabrication methods to achieve **extreme light weight and structural stability.**
> d. **Unusual features or provisions regarding the opening and closing of doors.**
>
> Landing Gear.
> a. Indicate type of landing gear — whether conventional, tricycle, multiple wheel, etc., or of an unconventional type such as **tripod** or skid.
> b. Provisions for takeoff from *ice*, *snow*, sand, or water.
>
> Powerplant.
> a. (3. Nuclear propulsion (atomic energy). Atomic energy engines would probably be unlike any familiar type of engine, although atomic energy might be employed in combination with any of the above types (piston, jet). Aircraft **would be characterized by lack of fuel systems and fuel storage space.**
> b. The powerplant **would likely be an integral part of the aircraft and possibly not distinguishable as an item separate from the**

aircraft.[17]

As Berliner and Friedman have already observed, these sections of the Intelligence Collection Memorandaum strongly resemble the characteristics of the debris described by Marcel and Brazel's children in the previous chapter. Nor could these observations have come from long range observation, for details such as the extreme light weight of the materials and the craft, its structural stability, or details such as metallic foils or "balsa wood," could not have come from anything else other than hands-on observation.[18]

But this only emphasizes the significance of the proposed "terrestrial" origin of the object, for as the memorandum itself stipulates, the technology described is close to "the thinking and accomplishments of the Germans." And part of that thinking, as will become evident in Part Three, is based precisely on the principle of integrating the powerplant into the actual structure of the aircraft so that it is "not distinguishable as an item separate from the aircraft." From the documentary evidence cited by Berliner and Friedman themselves, in their now classic study of the Roswell incident, it is beginning to look as if the concept of the crash of a craft from an independent postwar Nazi project might have some merit after all.

b. Project Sign and General Hoyt Vandenberg's Conclusion

In this regard, it is essential to mention another document referred to by Berliner and Friedman: Project Sign's "legendary Top Secret Estimation of the Situation," produced some time in August 1948.[19] Project Sign was the then top secret Air Force UFO study committee. This "Top Secret Estimate of the Situation," according to Berliner and Friedman, "allegedly concluded that the saucers were probably extraterrestrial."[20] This report then "went all the way up to the Chief of Staff, Gen Hoyt Vandenberg, *who rejected its conclusion as lacking evidence.*"[21] Indeed, if the technological and performance data on which the extraterrestrial conclusion was based was no stronger than the technological and performance data of the original

intelligence gathering order, then one can hardly blame General Vandenberg for doing so.

Then, on October 7, 1948, a letter from Colonel H.H. McCoy was received by the Central Intelligence Agency.[22] The letter stated that the Project Sign headquarters

> is currently engaged in an intelligence investigation of all reported unidentified aerial phenomana. *No concrete evidence as to the exact identity of any of the reported objects has been received. Similarly, the origin of the so-called 'flying discs' remains obscure.*[23]

But what does the word "obscure" mean in this context? One possibility is that the functioning of the craft themselves - whether extraterrestrial or terrestrial - remained obscure. But the other possibility is that, while their general nature and origin might have been known or strongly suspected, their ultimate *point of origin* remained "obscure."

On December 10, 1948, some two months later, "the USAF's Directorate of Intelligence issued a lengthy Analysis of Flying Object Incidents in the U.S. that remained Top Secret until 1985."[24] According to Berliner and Friedman, the report "strongly suggested" that the saucers represented "Soviet developments based on captured Nazi German technology."[25] They also observe that some ufological circles believed that the report is simply a reworking of the earlier "Top Secret Estimate of the Situation" by "with the material about the extraterrestrial nature of the saucers replaced by that about Soviet/Nazi craft which would have been more palatable to the Air Force."[26] But one wonders exactly how Soviet/Nazi craft, that easily outclass and outperform USAF aircraft, and that violate American airspace over the most sensitive military installations with impunity, are "more palatable" than extraterrestrial craft. Indeed, in the latter case, "ET's" motivations for doing so would be unknown, and therefore, not necessarily hostile. But Soviet or Nazi violations of American airspace would certainly have a more sinister motivation. And if at any time the USAF suspected that such violations were being made by an independent postwar extraterritorial Nazi entity or organization, then that *would* constitute a

sufficient reason for the military's sense of urgency and anxiety over the matter, and would hardly be "palatable" to the Air Force.

c. The Conclusions of the Robertson Panel

In this respect, it is worth noting that the Robertson Panel — the top secret special committee that met in 1953 to study the Air Force's UFO reports — concluded that the UFOs "showed no evidence of being a threat to national security" on the one hand, but neither did it conclude that they were "extraterrestrial spacecraft."[27] One wonders exactly how, in the tangled logic of committees, it was concluded that non-extraterrestrial — and therefore terrestrial — craft that could enter and leave American airspace with impunity, whose origins remained "obscure," and whose technological and conceptual signatures suggested a Nazi origin, were concluded not to represent a threat to America's national security.

4. The Smith-Sarbacher Interview

a. "Magnetic Fields Collapse"

A little later into their book, Berliner and Friedman recount a famous episode in ufology from the 1950s, the strange case of Canadian engineer Wibert B. Smith, known in the 1950s to have a "strong interest in UFOs"[28] and who was also "considered a highly qualified engineer who explored a number of unconventional concepts involving gravity and electromagnetism."[29]

> In 1979, Stanton Friedman was shown a formerly top-secret memorandum by Canadian investigator Scott Forster. It had been sent to the Controller of Telecommunications of the Canadian Department of Transport by Wlibert B. Smith, a senior radio engineer who was working on geomagnetism. The startling portion of the November 21, 1950, memo…read:

"I made discreet inquiries through the Canadian Embassy staff in Washington who were able to obtain for me the following information:

"a. The matter is the most highly classified subject in the United States Government, rating even higher than the H-bomb.

"b. Flying saucers exist.

"c. Their modus operandi is unknown but concentrated effort is being made by a small group headed by Doctor Vannevar Bush.

"d. The entire matter is considered by the United States authorities to be of tremendous significance."[30]

Further investigation by researcher Arthur Bray, who managed to find the son of Wilbert Smith, led to the discovery of Smith's handwritten notes of an interview he conducted through a "Lt./C. Bremer"[31] with the American physicist, Dr. Robert Sarbacher. Smith's pointed questions, and Sarbacher's careful and cagey answers, are worth pondering:

SMITH: I am doing some work on *the collapse of the earth's magnetic field as a source of energy*, and I think our work may have a bearing on the flying saucers.
SARBACHER: What do you want to know?
SMITH: I have read (Frank) Scully's book on the saucers (*Behind the Flying Saucers*) and would like to know how much of it is true.
SARBACHER: The facts reported in the book are substantially correct.
SMITH: Then the saucers exist?
SARBACHER: Yes, they exist.
SMITH: Do they operate as Scully suggests, on magnetic principles?
SARBACHER: We have not been able to duplicate their performance.
SMITH: Do they come from some other planet?
SARBACHER: All we know is, we didn't make them, and it's pretty certain they didn't originate on the earth.
SMITH: I understand the whole subject of saucers is classified.
SARBACHER: Yes, it is classified two points higher even then the H-bomb. In fact it is the most highly classified subject in the U.S. Government at the present time.

SMITH: MY I ask the reason for the classification?
SARBACHER: You may ask, but I can't tell you.[32]

Note Sarbacher's rather strange answer to Smith's question "Do they come from other planets?" Rather than responding with a simple "yes," Sarbacher's answer is a study in carefully crafted and suggestive ambiguity: "All we know is, we didn't make them, and it's pretty certain they didn't originate on the earth." What is meant by "we" in the second clause of his answer? Does "we" refer to humanity as a whole? Or does Sarbacher have in mind a more narrow understanding of "we", "we" meaning "Americans"? Secondly, note Sarbacher's response that the whole subject is classified higher than the hydrogen bomb. Why? What could possibly require such a classification if — as the Robertson Panel concluded — they represented no threat to national security? Sarbacher's answer suggests that whatever the physics or power is represented in the phenomenon, it far exceeds that of the mere hydrogen bomb. Finally, not Smith's initial statement concerning "the collapse of the earth's magnetic field as a source of energy." As will be seen in the final chapter of this book, Smith's statement affords a profound clue into why the whole subject was given such extreme classification by the American authorities, for they were simply following an earlier precedent…

b. The Scientists Involved at Roswell

Another UFO researcher, William Steinman, corresponded with Sarbacher in 1983, and asked him the names of the scientists that were involved in the study of recovered UFOs. In his answer, Sarbacher indicated that Dr. Vannevar Bush, Dr. John von Neuman, and Dr. Robert Oppenheimer were "definitely involved," and that he was "sure that they would have asked Dr. von Braun."[33] The inclusion of Dr. von Braun, as will be seen in Part Three, is highly significant.

B. The Debris and the Bodies

1. A Methodological Assumption

There are two basic types of data with which any explanation of the Roswell Incident, whether "balloon," crashed extraterrestrial craft, or crashed black project — Nazi or otherwise — must contend, and these are (1) the bodies, and (2) the debris. Careful examination of all pro-ET interpretations of the Roswell Incident will reveal, however, that the emphasis of those expositions is on the bodies, and that the bodies, in turn, form the interpretive context by which to argue that the recovered debris is itself of an exotic and extraterrestrial nature.

Berliner and Friedman state this methodological assumption in the following manner:

> The presence in New Mexico of very strange substances from the wreckage of the two crashes has been testified to by so many people that it is virtually proved. That the wreckage was accompanied by the bodies of as many as eight small humanoid aliens is another matter. A few people have described, in limited but highly consistent detail, their awareness of even direct observation of miniature, out-of-proportion bodies at the crash sites and elsewhere. The evidence for them is increasingly impressive, but perhaps not yet completely convincing.
>
> However, like the acquisition *of totally unfamiliar manufactured materials* of striking physical characteristics, *the confirmed existence of obviously nonhuman bodies will, by itself, establish not only the reality of UFOs but also their extraterrestrial origin.*[34]

Since the context of these remarks is their general argumentation that the Roswell Incident was the crash and recovery of an extraterrestrial craft and its crew, we are justified as taking these general remarks as indicative of the methodological assumptions underpinning their arguments.

As such, there are several points to be observed in their comments:

1) Note first that Berliner and Friedman themselves admit that the evidence for the "bodies" being of an extraterrestrial nature "is

increasingly impressive, but perhaps not yet completely convincing." But as will be seen in Part Three, this remark is tendentious at best and question-begging at worst, since there do exist plausible explanations for the physiological characteristics of the bodies, explanations which would point clearly to their terrestrial origins. As was seen in the previous chapter,[35] the most detailed description of these bodies comes from Grady "Barney" Barnett, but unfortunately, Barnett was long dead by the time that his description was revealed to Roswell researchers by the second-hand testimony of the Maltaises. We shall, in Part Three, take the same list of characteristics and show how they can be rationalized as being of terrestrial origin.

2) One must also note that, in the absence of any attempt by Berliner and Friedman to explain the various characteristics of the recovered debris on a terrestrial basis, the conclusion is drawn — and therewith the question is begged — that the debris is "of totally unfamiliar manufactured materials." But "unfamiliar" does not necessarily compel to an extraterrestrial conclusion. Thus, one derives the methodological principle that became the lynchpin and keystone in the argumentative arch propping up the ET interpretation of the incident, for "nonhuman bodies will, *by itself*, establish not only the reality of UFOs but also their extraterrestrial origin." In other words, In Roswell's case "the bodies interpret the debris, and not vice versa."

And this implies one final, and highly significant, point:

3) *If a plausible terrestrial history or technology tree, or set of physiological anomalies, can be shown to exist for any of the recorded details both of the bodies and of the debris, then the case for an extraterrestrial interpretation of the incident collapses.* In that case, another explanation will have to be advanced for the following correlative points that have been employed by pro-ET interpretations for the incident:

a) The apparent urgency and extreme anxiety — one is tempted to say "panic" — exhibited by the military in reaction to the incident;
b) The care that the military took to transport the bodies and debris for analysis; and,
c) The fact that the military did *not* become involved in the incident until *after* it was informed of the existence of the debris by civilian rancher Mac Brazel. In other words, had the crashed craft been from any American black project — including the top secret Mogul balloon project — why was no effort being made by the military to find what had happened to its missing project?

From careful consideration of point 3 above, it follows that neither the bodies nor the debris should form an interpretive context by which to understand the other. Rather, it follows from the methodological assumptions implicit in point 3, that each dataset will have to be examined independently, and an inductive case made in each instance.

2. The Glenn Dennis Story

Having made these statements, Berliner and Friedman then introduce the "star witness" — so to speak — for the case that the bodies are to be characterized as extraterrestrial: mortician Glenn Dennis. Dennis was at the time of the Incident a "young professional mortician in Roswell" in the employment of "the Ballard Funeral Home," which "had the contract with the Roswell Army Air field to provide mortuary services."[36] On numerous occasions Dennis had been called upon "to help collect mangled bodies from military plane crashes and then prepare the remains for shipment back to the survivors…. It was this unusual ease of access to an otherwise secure military installation that enabled him to see and hear a lot more than he was supposed to."[37] In an interview in August of 1989 conducted by Stanton Friedman, Dennis recalled an incident that occurred probably on July 9th or 10th.

According to Dennis, he had received several phone calls from the base asking a very unusual question: What were the smallest sizes of

hermetically sealed caskets the funeral home could get? Additionally, the base also wanted to know the chemical composition of the solutions used for embalming, what the chemical composition of blood was, how tissue broke down, and how it decomposed when laying in the sun for "several days."[38] As Dennis recollected these strange phone calls to Friedman, he added "They kept saying, 'OK, what's this going to do to the blood system, what's this going to do to the tissue?'"[39]

But there was more:

> Then when they informed me that these bodies (had) laid out in the middle of July, in the middle of the prairie, I mean that body's going to be as dark as your (blue) blazer, there, and it's going to be in bad shape. I was the one who suggested (using dry ice… I'd done that a time or two.
>
> … What they were really after was how to move those bodies, or where they were. But they kept talking about these bodies, and I said, "What do the bodies look like? And they said, "I don't know, but I'll tell you one thing: This happened some time ago." The only thing that was mentioned was that they were exposed to the elements for several days.[40]

So far so good, but here an obvious question occurs: If the bodies were already in a state of decomposition and decay, how could one conclude a *compelling* case that they were extraterrestrial? Of course, Berliner and Friedman are honest enough — as has been seen by their methodological remarks — to admit that the case for the recovery of extraterrestrial bodies at Roswell is "not yet completely convincing." But the point is, that any recollection of observed physiological characteristics of such bodies must bear in mind that under decomposition, such bodies *might* appear to be something that in fact they are not, i.e., extraterrestrial.

But this is not all there is to Dennis' story. That evening, "around 6:00 or 7:00 P.M." — Dennis drove an injured GI "to the base infirmary, which was in the same building as the hospital and the mortuary."[41] Dennis, after walking the man to the infirmary, then drove to the back of the building in hopes of encountering a young Army nurse that he was acquainted with. Dennis then recounted for Friedman that

There were two MPs standing right there, and I got out and started to go in. I wouldn't have gotten as far as I did, if I hadn't parked in the Emergency area. They probably thought I was coming after somebody. The doors were open to the military ambulances and that's where some wreckage was, and there was an MP on each side. I saw all this wreckage.

I don't know what it was, but I knew there was something going on… What was so curious about it, was that in two of those ambulances was a deal that looked like (the bottom) half of a canoe. It didn't look like aluminum…you know what stainless steel's like when you put heat on it? How it'll turn kinda purplish, with a kind of blue hue to it? (Glen later said that he saw a row of unrecognizable symbolds — several inches high — on the metal devices.) I just glanced in and kept going.

When I got inside, I noticed there was quite a bit of activity. When I went back into the lounge, there were "big birds"…everywhere. They were really shook up. So I went down the hall where I usually go, and I got down the hall just a little way and an MP met me right there. He wanted to know who the hell I was and where I was from, and what business did I have there? I explained who I was. Evidently he was under the impression that they called me to come out.

Anyway, I got past that and I went on in and then this is where I met the nurse — she was involved in this thing, she was on duty. She told me, "How in the hell did you get in here?" I said, "I just walked in." She said, "My God, you are going to get killed!" And I said, "They didn't stop me!" I was going to the Coke machine to get us a Coke, and this big red-headed colonel said, "What's that son of a bitch doin' here?"

He hollered at the MPs and that's when it hit the fan! These two MPs grabbed me by the arms and carried me clear outside… they carried me to the ambulance… I didn't walk, they carried me! And they told me to get my ass out of there!...

About two or three hours later, they (called) and told me, "You open your mouth (about this) and you'll be so far back in the jug they'll

have to shoot pinto beans (into you) with a bean shooter!" I just laughed and said, "Go to hell!"[42]

The nurse called Dennis the next day, very upset, and they then arranged to meet for lunch at the officer's club on the base.

At this point in Dennis' story, one encounters the first description of the bodies apart from that of Grady "Barney" Barnett's:

> "That's when she told me they did have some bodies. She said there were three little bodies; two of them were just mangled beyond everything, but there was one of them that was really in pretty good condition.
>
> "And she said, 'Let me show you the difference between our anatomy and theirs. Really, what they looked like *was ancient Chinese: small, fragile, no hair.'* She said *their noses didn't protrude, the eyes were set pretty deep and the ears were just little indentations. She said the anatomy of the arms was different (the upper arm was longer than the lower). They didn't have thumbs, they had four different….she called them 'tentacles,' I think. Didn't have any fingernails. She then described how they had little things like suction cups on their fingertips.*[43]

At this juncture, Dennis recounted to Friedman that his nurse friend described the horrible smell of the bodies, a smell so bad one could not come closer than 100 feet without gagging.[44] She then pulled out a prescription pad and drew sketches of the dead bodies. Giving him these drawings, she warned him to keep them secret. However, when Dennis and Friedman attempted in 1990 to retrieve these drawings from his old files at the funeral home, they discovered that his materials had all been previously thrown out some years prior to that.[45] Dennis then sketched for Friedman as best as he could, and from memory, what his nurse friend's sketches looked like.

However, there is a problem to Dennis' story, and the reader will have already spotted it, and it is a problem that Berliner and Friedman readily admit, for while they knew the nurse's name, it was not revealed in their book. Moreover:

> (Dennis) never saw her again. Attempts to get in touch with her were met with obstruction. He was told she was away at a seminar, then that she had been transferred to England without even getting in touch with him. His first letter was answered with a cryptic promise from her to explain everything at a later date. His second letter was returned, stamped *Deceased.*
>
> Efforts to trace the nurse have been unsuccessful. There is no file on her in the permanent military records office where all persons who have died while in service are supposed to be recorded. *There is no evidence that anyone by her name served as an army nurse*.[46]

To sum up Dennis' story, we note that his anonymous nurse described bodies whose physiological anomalies could definitely be construed as extraterrestrial; according to him, his nurse friend stated that they:

1) looked like "ancient Chinese";
2) were small and fragile;
3) had no hair;
4) their noses did not protrude;
5) the eyes were set deep in the heads;
6) the ears were little indentations;
7) their upper arms were longer than the lower arms;
8) they had no thumbs and only four fingers, which she described as "tentacles," with little suction cups on the fingertips; and finally,
9) there was an overpowering malodorous smell, presumably the result of the already well-progressed decomposition of the bodies.

But the problem with this list is precisely that it is a second-hand dead-man's testimony of a nurse whose existence not even the meticulous Stanton Friedman could track down or verify. This is an important point, for Berliner and Friedman, let it be noted, do *not* place the heavy emphasis on Dennis' story that Roswell skeptics would later *claim* they do.

3. The Gerald Anderson Story

a. Preliminary Context

There is, however, one minor detail of the Glenn Dennis story that stands out as having some corroboration, and it is corroboration that Berliner and Friedman, with their normally clear exposition and ability to connect dots, have unusually missed. As was seen from Dennis' recounting of the episode with the bodies at the base, there was clear indication that the bodies had lain in the field under the hot New Mexico July sun for some undetermined number of days. Granting Dennis' story is accurate for the sake of argument, one can reconstruct the basic timeline from the facts as they have emerged thus far, for rancher Mac Brazel heard the strange explosion on July 3rd, and encountered the debris the next morning on his rounds, July 4th, and if Dennis' encounter with the nurse occurred on July 9th or 10th, then the bodies lay under the baking sun for at least a week, and thus the smell and decomposition of the bodies as recounted in his story make some sense.

Additionally, as Berliner and Friedman themselves observe, "A large quantity of debris from a 'flying saucer' lay in a field outside Corona, New Mexico, for several days before anyone connected with the U.S. government had a clue that it was there."[47] Let us note the logical implication of this observation in the light of all that has gone before, for if the debris and wreckage *were* the result of *any* top secret U.S. black project, one moreover involving a crew and bodies, then it is extremely unlikely that the military would not have gone looking for the missing project much earlier than it did. Thus, one may conclude that whatever *did* crash was *not* American. This leaves two possibilities: either it was from some *other* terrestrial origin, or it was extraterrestrial, and in the latter case, as we have seen, the bodies themselves become the primary focus of the investigation.

But as has also been seen, the Glenn Dennis story suffers from the acute problem of being a second hand dead man's testimony, from a person moreover who, *at that point in the developing story*, could not be tracked down or successfully identified. Consequently, by the requirements of the case, more testimony as to the existence and anomalous properties of the recovered bodies is needed.

Enter Gerald Anderson.

b. The Story Itself

Friedman and another famous Roswell researcher and ufologist, Kevin Randle, had been involved as consultants for the production of an episode on the Roswell Incident for the cable television series *Unsolved Mysteries.* The episode aired in January, 1990.[48] As a result of the program, Gerald Anderson contacted its producer, indicating that he had significant first-hand information about the Incident, and Anderson was subsequently put into contact with Randle and Friedman. Anderson and Randle did not hit it off, and Randle quickly terminated the relationship,[49] but Friedman conducted a lengthy series of taped interviews with him, and later that year, travelled with Anderson and coauthor Don Berliner to the site where Anderson, then a six-year old boy, had seen the wreckage and bodies.[50]

Anderson had come to the area with his uncle Ted, his father, and his cousin Victor to the area, hunting a rock called moss agate. They proceeded down a dry river bed and came to a stand of trees, where, two to three hundred feet away, they saw a silver, circular object stuck into the ground at an angle, "jammed into a hillside."[51] Anderson then described that what he saw looked like a blimp or dirigible.[52] The object had torn a gouge from a neighboring hill and across the riverbed.[53]

As the group came to within about 60 feet of the object, they saw three "crewmembers laid out on the ground, under the edge of this thing, in a shaded area, and there was one sitting upright."[54] One of the three laying down appeared to be breathing with difficulty, and the other two appeared to be already dead. The fourth one, the one sitting up, acted afraid of the Anderson family and scooted further back up beneath the craft.[55]

Anderson's uncle Ted "was trying to talk to *it* in Spanish and *it* wasn't responding."[56] Anderson went on to state that the "uniform" on this particular "creature" was "Torn in a couple spots."[57] As they were inspecting the creature and trying to communicate, Anderson recalled "Putting my hand against the side of the saucer, and it was cold, almost like it was refrigerated. Being out there in the sun and being real shiny, I probably expected it to be hot, but it wasn't. It was very cold! Like it was

wintertime and you were touching something metal. And the area right next to (the craft) was very cool…"[58]

Anderson's older brother Glenn walked around the craft, and Gerald followed him. They came to a rip in its side, approximately eight to ten feet tall and three feet wide,[59] and Gerald peered in:

> I could see directly into it, and was looking through the outer hull and into another bulkhead, and that bulkhead was shaped exactly like the outer hull.
>
> You could see through the rip, and you could see what looked like components (I don't know if they were electrical, electronic, propulsion, or what). They were all seemingly hooked together by these cables — clusters of threadlike material in the form of a cable — and one of these was hanging out of that rip. There were several hundred strands per one of these clusters, they were wrapped. They blew in the wind like a horse's tail, except there was lights(sic) all over the end of them. These lights were undulating, they were flashing. Some of them were bright, some of them were very dim, some of them were flashing. They looked like fire on the ends of these threadlike things that were waving in the breeze.
>
> And you could see others of those went from one kind of package of components to another kind of package, kind of like they were cables of some kind. And down the center between these things — they were all in very neat little rows — there was, like, scribbling. (On) each one of these component boxes there would be scribbling, it was almost a pink color on sort of a brown, woodlike background. Like it was writing or symbols that explained what this thing was.[60]

Anderson also recalled a strong smell inside the craft, like rubbing alcohol or acetone.[61]

According to Anderson, at this point four men and two women approached the site from the opposite direction that Anderson and his family had come. One man was a professor named Dr. Buskirk, and the rest were his students. Working at an archaeological dig a few miles away, they had seen a "fiery meteor" crashing the night before and decided to come and investigate. The archaeological group's reactions were, according to

Anderson, almost the same as his own family's had been; there was first disbelief, then talk "about men from Mars."[62] Anderson then related a peculiar set of details:

> Dr. Buskirk apparently is capable of speaking several languages, because he had tried to communicate with *this creature*. He knelt down there with Ted and my Dad and tried to talk to *this thing. I recognized one of the languages spoken as German* because I had German relatives that spoke German fluently. Ted was married to a Mexican woman and he spoke Spanish, so I understood that one. Of course, they got no response. I recall this Dr. Buskirk tried sign language, and there was no response from that.[63]

Taking stock of all of the details of Anderson's account reveals some significant questions that Berliner and Friedman fail to ask, and an even more revealing of a *lack* of details.

For one thing, there is no real description of the bodies themselves, other than remarks indicating their small stature; there is no description of the large heads, slanted eyes, small noses, or oriental appearance that emerged from Barnett's or Dennis' accounts.

But there *is* an interesting ambiguity in Anderson's account, and that is that time and again, he refers to the creature *as* a "creature", calling it an "it," and "this creature" and "the creature" and so on, so clearly, if his account is to be accredited, there *is* something peculiar about the bodies. Yet, by the same token, Anderson refers to the fact that they all wore uniforms of some sort, and that attempts were made to communicate with them in German and Spanish. This of course prompts a question: why would one attempt to communicate with a "creature" in German or Spanish *if* one suspected that the creature was extraterrestrial? *What about the creature suggested to "Dr. Buskirk" that communication in German, Spanish or sign language might be successful?* The uniforms? The presence of insignia? Berliner and Friedman do not say, because presumably, they did not ask Anderson.

At this point, according to Anderson, the U.S. military arrived, again cordoned off the site, and chased the archaeology professor and students,

and the Anderson family, away, warning them all not to speak of their discovery to anyone.

However, there is another problem, and it is Anderson himself. Friedman had first become interested in Anderson's story because Anderson indicated that his older brother Glenn had kept a large journal of this incident. Friedman managed to obtain a copy of this journal from Anderson's cousin who was a Catholic nun. She wrote to Friedman:

> With this mailing I want no more involvement in this sorry scenario, nor does my mother. Both Maria and I have been transferred to another convent and our Mother has been moved. This family has been plagued by this incident for years and it is far beyond time that such should stop. Why Gerald would wish to reopen this is completely beyond me, I suppose he has his reasons. My father was obsessed with this unearthly horror and kept several journals to prevent others from getting to them. Wreckage and debris from the crash, along with a larger journal are buried out there…[64]

When the journal was subjected to forensic examination, however, it proved to have been written "no earlier than about 1970," but Anderson explained that his older brother Glenn had already made "several copies."[65] All attempts to locate the larger journal that was buried in the earth "have proved unsuccessful."[66]

But this is not the only problem with Anderson. Berliner and Friedman observe that "charges have been made that Gerald Anderson invented the story of seeing wreckage and bodies," and that this prompted the Fund for UFO Research (FUFOR) to pay for a polygraph examination of Anderson, which Anderson passed with "no evidence of deception or pathology."[67] This was not the end of the problem, however, for in the "Preface to the Paperback Edition" of their book, Berliner and Friedman make this unusual series of statements:

> In the case of Gerald Anderson, the primary witness to the details of the crash at the Plains of San Augustin, problems have arisen. He has admitted falsifying a document, and has changed his testimony. Even though some of his testimony has been corroborated by others,

> the authors no longer have confidence in his description of the crash scene and the aftermath.
>
> Nevertheless, the authors remain convinced that there was a crash at the Plains of San Augustin in early July, 1947, at about the same time as the crash near Corona. The basic story…remain(s) established beyond any reasonable doubt.[68]

Additionally, in their original book, Berliner and Friedman also revealed that Anderson's father had retired from a job "at Sandia Corporation, where he had required a high-level security clearance because of the company's nuclear weapons-related manufacturing activities."[69] In other words, the possibility arises that the story was some sort of elaborate disinformation operation designed to cloak some black project activity. At every turn, therefore, Gerald Anderson's story is suspect.

4. Mac Brazel:

a. The Debris

Along with Major Jesse Marcel, rancher Mac Brazel, on whose ranch the debris field was first encountered, remains a central character in the Roswell Incident. As has already been seen in the previous chapter, Brazel's story must be reconstructed from the second-hand sources that knew him: his friends and nearby neighbors, Floyd and Loretta Proctor, his children, Bill and Bessie, and the local radio station owner, Walt Whitmore and his son.

The Proctors' son had been the hired ranch-hand who was with Mac when Brazel first discovered the debris field. Lorreta Proctor's description of the debris in Berliner and Friedman's book is exactly the same as in Berlitz's and Moore's, and hence we will not dwell on it here, other than to note its consistency over time, for Friedman and Berliner note that her descriptions were given at a conference of the Fund for UFO Research in 1990: "We cut on it with a knife," she maintained, "and would hold a match on it, and it wouldn't burn. We knew it wasn't wood. It was smooth like plastic, it didn't have real sharp corners, kind of like a dowel stick. Kind of

dark tan. It didn't have any grain… just smooth. I hadn't seen anything like it." [70]

Similarly, Walt Whitmore Jr.'s description of Brazel's debris(the son of Roswell station KGFL owner Walt Whitmore Sr.) also does not vary from Berlitz's and Moore's book and Berliner's and Friedman's: there was still lead-foil like material that could not be torn or cut, and that was extremely light weight; there were "beams" made of a woodlike material with "writing" on them that "looled like numbers which had either been added or multiplied (in columns)."[71]

However, Whitmore then recounted that his father escorted Mac Brazel to the office of the *Roswell Daily Record* on July 10, where Brazel gave an interview that "bore little similarity" [72] to the story he had originally told the radio station owner:

> Brazel stated that *on June 14 he and an 8-year old son, Vernon, were about 7 or 8 miles from the ranch house of the J.B. Foster ranch, which he operates, when they came upon a large area of bright wreckage made up of rubber strips, tinfoil, a rather tough paper and sticks.*
>
> At the time Brazel was in a hurry to get his round made and he did not pay much attention to it. But he did remark about what he had seen and *on July 4, he, his wife, Vernon and a daughter, Betty, age 14, went back to the spot and gathered up quite a bit of the debris.*
>
> The next day he first heard about the flying disks, and he wondered if what he had found might be the remnants of one of these.
>
> Monday he came to town to sell some wool and while here he went to see sheriff George Wilcox and "whispered kinda confidential like" that he might have found a flying disc.
>
> Wilcox got in touch with the Roswell Army Air Field and Maj. Jesse A. Marcel and a man in plain clothes accompanied him home, where they picked up the rest of the pieces of the "disc" and went to his home to try to reconstruct it.
>
> According to Brazel they simply could not reconstruct it at all. They tried to make a kite out if (sic) it, but could not do that and could not find any way to put it back together so that it would fit.

Then Major Marcel brought it to Roswell and that was the last he heard of it until the story broke that he had found a flying disk.

Brazel said that he did not see it fall from the sky and did not see it before it was torn up, so he did not know the size or shape it might have been, but he thought it might have been about as large as a table top. The balloon which held it up, if that was how it worked, must have been about 12 feet long, he felt, measuring the distance by the size of the room in which he sat. The rubber was smoky gray in color and scattered over an area about 200 yards in diameter.

When the debris was gathered up the tinfoil, paper, tape, and sticks made a bundle about three feet long and 7 or 8 inches thick. In all, he estimated, the entire lot would have weighed maybe five pounds.

There was no sign of any metal in the area which might have been used for an engine and no sign of any propellers of any kind, although at least one paper fin had been glued onto some of the tinfoil.

There were no words to be found anywhere on the instrument, although there were letters on some of the parts. Considerable Scotch tape and some tape with flowers printed upon it had been used in the construction.

No strings or wires were to be found but there were some eyelets in the paper to indicate that some sort of attachment may have been used.

Brazel said that he had previously found two weather observation balloons on the ranch, **but that what he found this time did not in any way resemble any of these.**[73]

This version of the debris that Brazel found is significant in several respects. Firstly, it is important to observe the similarity of the descriptions of the debris to the Mogul balloon story later proffered by the U.S. Air Force in the 1990s as the “final” official explanation of the Roswell Incident. In this connection, it is to be observed that, according to Whitmore, Brazel gave this interview *after* he had been held incommunicado by the military on the local base, and *after* he apparently was spending money far beyond his means, buying a new pickup truck and a local meat locker and storage business. In other words, Brazel’s “second story” already appears to be a long-term planting of details and

disinformation, which would eventually be given “credence” by the U.S. Air Force’s “final” official explanation with the Mogul balloon theory.

That this is a likely explanation is evidenced by two curious details that occur toward the beginning of this account, namely, that Brazel had *found* the “rubber” debris ca. June 14, but had *only attempted to pick up the debris on July 4!* Why is this a significant clue that the whole second story was a deliberate concoction of the military that Brazel told under duress, or because he was paid a substantial amount of money for his silence? Ask any New Mexico rancher of the period: to leave debris from a weather balloon that could be eaten by the sheep and cattle on their ranches was to endanger their animals, for swallowing such debris might lead to an inability to evacuate it, or to internal bleeding or other problems, all of which could lead to the death of the animal in question. In other words, Brazel would hardly have left such debris in the fields for a whole two weeks before attempting to pick up as much as he could.

There is a second detail that ufologists have noted that also points to Brazel’s second story having been a deliberately concocted story that he was ordered to tell the media, and this is the fact that Brazel claimed to have driven into town to sell some wool. However, the practice at that time was for the broker to drive *to the rancher*, and not vice versa.

In any case, even in his second story, Mac Brazel ends by making the comment that what he had found did *not* resemble a balloon.

b. The Bodies

A much more significant role is given to the bodies in Berliner’s and Friedman’s account of the Mac Brazel story, and this is to be expected, since it follows from their methodological logic as previously outlined. In a certain sense, it is a wholly new layer to the story of the Roswell Incident, since it is given less emphasis in Berlitz’s and Moore’s book.

Berliner and Friedman begin by stating their case in the following fashion:

> Did Mac Brazel see alien bodies in the aftermath of the crash near Corona? He certainly never claimed to have seen bodies, but

> circumstantial evidence suggests he probably saw at least one, as well as a lot of wreckage.[74]

But since Major Marcel accompanied Brazel back to his ranch and the debris field, in the company of Counter-Intelligence agent Sheridan Cavitt, and since Marcel *never* made mention of seeing any bodies at the ranch, then where did Mac Brazel see them?

c. Berliner and Friedman's Analysis

Berliner's and Friedman's answer to this question is an analytical one, and, as will now become evident, a tendentious one:

> Had Mac seen nothing more than the sort of scrap material recovered from the sheep ranch by Major Marcel and CICman Cavitt (when accompanied by Brazel), there would hardly have been any need for the army to take such extreme action against him.

Before proceeding further, note now that the exotic characteristics of the debris itself have been subtly demoted; they are now treated as almost ordinary "scrap material" not requiring any extreme security or secrecy; the methodological assumptions explored earlier have now come home to roost, for the bodies have become the all important factor, *even when, by their own admission, no direct evidence that Brazel in fact had seen any bodies exists!* We continue with their analysis:

> Why take him into custody for a week and then possibly bribe him to keep quiet about matters which do not seem that serious? He was already on record as having seen a large quantity of scrap material and, while escorted by soldiers, gave a newspaper interview in which he stated clearly that the wreckage was not that of a weather balloon.
>
> Why did the army give him such special treatment if all he knew was common knowledge already? That little cat was out of the bag, leaving no obvious reason for the army to exert unusual pressure on Mac to change his behavior.[75]

Their answer immediately follows:

> It seems entirely possible that he could have been flown over the ranch, which stretched for miles, on a reconnaissance mission, as he knew the land far better than the army did. He could thus have been involved in the discovery of the main part of the craft, which is rumored to have landed some two and a half miles from the field of debris….
>
> …if what the nurse told Dennis is accurate (that the bodies were found in small "escape capsules" such as he saw in the rear of some GI ambulances) they probably could not have been recognized for what they were from the air. Only from the air. Only from close-up ground observation, after a spotter plane had first seen them and then landed close by.[76]

While involving the civilian Brazel in an air search for the main crash site may sound plausible on the surface, closer inspection of their logic reveals that their speculation is rather shaky.

If, in the first case, the Army Air Force already suspected that it was dealing with something extraterrestrial, then involving any civilian in its recovery — even if by aerial reconnaissance — is highly unlikely. Secondly, whether or not the Army Air Force suspected this or not at the time is, in a deeper sense, immaterial and irrelevant, for whether it suspected it was extraterrestrial or whether it suspected it was the crashed wreckage of some secret project unknown to the higher officers at the base (and we have seen from the previous chapter that, after Marcel first met with Brazel and then conferred with Colonel Blanchard, that this is exactly their first impression), it is still highly unlikely that they would have involved a civilian to help reconnoiter for it. Why, for example, would the Air Force *involve Brazel* in such an effort, and *not involve Marcel or Cavitt themselves, the original officers who saw and handled the debris?* Instead, the military ordered Marcel to Fort Worth!

So, discounting their speculation, and proposing our own, namely, that Brazel was *not* involved in any subsequent search for the main crash site with the Army, this leaves us with their first series of questions: why take Brazel into custody, bribe him, and then force him to tell a story so

ridiculous that any rancher could see through it? Since the possibility of Brazel seeing a body or bodies is excluded, then the answer must, by logical elimination, be that he had seen something truly significant *in the debris itself.*

This tendentiousness is clearly and startkly evident by the way Berliner and Friedman recount Bill Brazel's — Mac's son's — recounting of the incident:

> My Dad found this thing and he told me a little bit about it… not much…because the Air Force asked him to take an oath that he wouldn't tell anybody in detail about it. He went to his grave and never told anybody.
>
> …. The only thing he said was "Well, there's a big bunch of stuff, there's some tinfoil, some wood, and on some of that wood there was Japanese or Chinese figures."[77]

While finding "Japanese or Chinese figures" on something crashing in the New Mexico desert in 1947 might prompt a rational person to ask "just what is *that* doing *here?*," not so for Berliner and Friedman, who, once again, want to drag (extraterrestrial) bodies into it:

> Had that been all Mac saw, there would certainly have been no need for the army to make him take an oath not to talk. Not to talk about things that were already public! Clearly, more was involved, *and that could have been bodies.*[78]

But it could have been just as likely *something about the debris itself that Brazel had seen. There is* ***absolutely no*** *compelling reason to believe it was bodies.* It might it just as likely have been *Japanese.* After all, that's the only clue Bill Brazel gave; anything else is an argument from utter silence. But if so, what was something Japanese doing in New Mexico in 1947? Japan was a defeated nation, her factories and cities still lay in piles of rubble. And if the descriptions of "Chinese or Japanese" figures is simply an *analogical* descriptor, then the debris may have come from somewhere else. The point remains, that nowhere do Marcel or Brazel invoke the presence of bodies, and therefore, it is not necessary to invoke their presence in order to explain the extraordinary pressure the military exerted

on Brazel; *it was something about the* ***debris*** that was sensitive, nothing else. I therefore must completely *reject* Berliner and Friedman's statement, "while no direct testimony exists that Mac saw bodies, the behavior of the military point in that direction"[79] as being utterly and deliberately tendentious, and as ignoring other logical possibilities that men of their manifest intelligence surely must have known existed.

However, in this regard, it must be recalled that it has been asserted, and will later be argued and demonstrated, that the actual descriptions of the bodies that are from the most reliable sources can be shown to have perfectly plausible terrestrial explanations. Thus, even if one grants the tendentious nature of Berliner's and Friedman's argument, it establishes nothing for the case of the Roswell Incident being extraterrestrial. Perhaps there was something *else* about the bodies, like whatever it may have been about the debris, that required such extreme precaution and provoked such high anxiety on the part of the military.

Did Mac Brazel see bodies?

According to Roswell radio station KGLF employee, Frank Joyce, he did. Joyce recounted for Berliner and Friedman that one afternoon, while working at the radio station, he received a call from a man reporting wreckage on his ranch. The rancher asked Joyce what he should do about it and Joyce told the rancher to go to the Roswell Army Air base.[80] The next thing Joyce remembers was that Lieutenant Walter Haut, the base's Public Information Officer, came into the radio station, and handed him a press release typed up on onionskin stationary. Haut informed Joyce that he had the base commander's permission to issue the press release.[81]

Since the release was issued on July 8, a few days *after* Brazel's discovery, and thus *after* his initial contact with the U.S. Army Air Force, Brazel's next phone call to Joyce must have occurred that day or later, during the period he was in custody by the military:

> The next significant thing occurred in the evening. I got a call from (Mac) Brazel. He said, "We haven't got this story right." I invited him over to the station; he arrived not long after sunset. He was alone, but I had the feeling that we were being watched. He said something about a weather balloon. I said, "Look, this is completely different that what

> you told me on the phone the other day about the little green men," and that's when he said, "No, they weren't green." I had the feeling he was under tremendous pressure.[82]

Accepting Joyce's statements at face value, then it would appear that Brazel *did* see bodies, and since in our opinion it is unlikely that he would have done so on any aerial reconnaissance over his ranch, then he must have seen them while on the base in the military's custody. That being so, it is important to note that nothing in Brazel's description to Joyce compels to any conclusion that they were of any extraordinary nature whatsoever. In fact, from Brazel's statement, we know nothing whatsoever about them, save for the fact that they were not green!

All of these considerations about Mac Brazel and Berliner's and Friedman's own tendentiousness calls into question their own conclusions regarding the "pattern of threats" the military used to intimidate witnesses:

> There is a very clear pattern concerning threats to witnesses: Those who saw only wreckage have gotten away lightly, while those who saw bodies were treated much more severely. Since even direct contact with wreckage would not by itself prove the alien nature of the crash, it is understandable that witnesses whose experiences were limited to hardware would not be considered serious threats by the military. But even a brief glimpse of a body would have made it pretty obvious that this was a nonhuman event…[83]

True enough, as far as it goes, but there is nothing, really, about "small bodies" with "large heads" and "slanted eyes" that yet compels to the conclusion that it *was* a nonhuman event, and, once again, as will be seen in Part Three, every description of the Roswell "aliens" with the exception of Glenn Dennis' and his nurse friend's, and one other's, can be rationalized on a terrestrial basis. Moreover, as will be seen chapter five, there are serious questions that can be raised about Dennis' statements.

With Berliner's and Friedman's remarks concerning the relative importance of the debris and the bodies now fully catalogued, it is worth

drawing the reader's attention to something very significant that has happened in the evolution of the *telling* of the Roswell Incident between Berlitz's and Moore's "second articulation", and Berliner's and Friedman's "third articulation," and that is, in Berlitz's and Moore's presentation, both the bodies and the debris received roughly equal weight and treatment, whereas in Berliner's and Friedman's presentation, the bodies have become the most compelling type of evidence, even, one is tempted to say, an *idée fixe*. Yet, as has also been seen, in every case we are dealing with second hand testimony that, when it *does* include descriptions, does *not* compel — even by their own admission — to the extraterrestrial conclusion. In Berliner's and Friedman's hands, it is as if one is being told "*do not look too closely at the debris descriptions*," which, as has been seen, are much more consistent and much more detailed than the descriptions of the bodies.

5. The Grady "Barney" Barnett Story

In Berliner's and Friedman's recounting, Grady Barnett described the bodies to Vern Maltais in clear terms, and again, the consistency of this description with that recorded in Berlitz's and Moore's book should be noted. According to Maltais, Barnett described them as being "*like humans, but they were not humans.* The heads were round, he eyes were small, and they had no hair. The eyes were oddly spaced. They were quite small by our standards and their heads were larger in proportion to their bodies than ours."[84] This is the same description as occurs in Berlitz's and Moore's presentation, and again, it will be argued in Part Three that there is nothing in these descriptions that compels to the conclusion that the bodies were extraterrestrial.

C. In "The Cause of Objectivity"

Berliner and Friedman are not oblivious to the fact that there are other explanations for what crashed near Roswell, the most obvious being the U.S. Army Air Force's weather balloon explanation. They also acknowledge the possibility of other explanations for the stories of the recovered "bodies of miniature humanoids," but added that "these terrestrial explanations are for the Corona site wreckage only, as what was allegedly

found at the Plains of San Augustin was clearly alien."[85] The actual strength or weakness of these assertions will be examined more closely in chapter five, but for now, it is to be noted that regarding the claims of the second crash site at San Augustin, once again, in this author's opinion and in direct opposition to Berliner and Friedman, nothing compels to the conclusion that the bodies there were extraterrestrial in origin, *if indeed there was anything at all at the Plains of San Augustin.* They conclude their preliminary remarks about these other explanations by stating, "While the authors find none of these alternate explanations particularly convincing, they deserve to be mentioned in the cause of objectivity."[86] While this author, as has already been made abundantly clear, finds Berliner's and Friedman's tendentiousness less than particularly convincing, it remains to be seen how well they serve "the cause of objectivity."

1. Dispensing with the Writing

As this and the previous chapter have indicated, there are clear and consistent descriptions of the writing found on some of the debris. But Berliner and Friedman make short shrift of any potential terrestrial connection that this might imply, and they do so with a clumsiness and ham-fistedness that almost approaches the inane:

> …(The) presence of part numbers and writing on pieces of wreckage, even if in German, would quickly have revealed the smashed bits as something known.[87]

But nowhere have we encountered, either in Berlitz and Moore's presentation, or that of Berliner and Friedman themselves, any witness who described any writing resembling German! So why raise this point? The thought occurs that they might be raising it because there appears to be *some* sort of German connection, as indicated by the documents they themselves cited. That being said, the second part of their statement is illogical on the face of it, for just because the general ethnic provenance of the wreckage was known, this does *not* mean that the technology it

represents was known or comprehended. But as Berliner and Friedman continue with their "analysis" of the writing, the somersaulting inanity only grows:

> The presence of unknown and unreadable symbols, on the other hand, would have pointed away from the wreckage being that of a V-2.[88]

While several researchers have proposed the V-2 as an explanation for the wreckage, this author shares Berliner's and Friedman's conviction that this is an implausible explanation, not the least because the characteristics of the debris field as described by Marcel, Bill Brazel, and others is not consistent with anything in a V-2. But the real question is: *why limit any potential terrestrial wreckage to a V-2 when there are other, more exotic technologies in the German inventory*, as will be seen in Part Three? *Why ignore mentioning these possibilities, especially when one claims to be cataloguing alternative explanations "in the cause of objectivity?"*

> Chinese or Japanese symbols would have been recognized as such, as would Cyrillic, even if they could not be read.[89]

But as has been seen, "Chinese and Japansese" were the exact words of some witnesses when describing the writing! Why, now, undermine their testimonies, unless one is uncomfortable with their clearly terrestrial implications? And why mention Cyrillic (or for that matter, German) at all, when the witnesses themselves do not do so?

Thus far, the "cause of objectivity," not to mention the cause of rational and logical analysis, do not seem to be faring too well.

2. Making More Short Shrift of the German Connection

As noted, Friedman and Berliner themselves cite official government documents of unimpeachable authenticity which clearly indicate that the Air Force suspected some sort of German connection, and in one case, that

connection was drawn in the clear context to the recovered debris at Roswell.

a. The Foo Fighter Problem

Berliner and Friedman cite the example of the famous World War Two "foo fighters."

> These mysterious, often "playful" balls of light and shining spheres were reported by the experienced crews of American warplanes in both (sic) the European and Pacific theaters of war in late 1944 and early 1945. They were said to fly along with our planes and even to play tag with them, singly and in small formations. *Not once was there any suggestion that a foo fighter had proved aggressive or even mildly unfriendly.* That, in the midst of history's most terrible war, suggested two possible explanations: they were something natural (such as St. Elmo's Fire, the eerie atmospheric discharge of built-up static electricity) or they were insidious enemy machines not quite ready for combat…
>
> …. The Eighth Air Force, based in England… had a study made of the foo fighters. While no copy has yet come to light, it allegedly concluded that some of them might be experimental German or Japanese weapons that had not reached operational status… (After the war, it was reported that captured enemy documents showed that the Germans and Japanese had been aware of the foo fighters but had concluded the mysterious things were probably Allied weapons!)[90]

The statement that "not once" did a foo figher prove "mildly unfriendly" is, as we shall discover in Part Three, steaming horse puckey.

Not according to celebrated novelist and researcher W.A. Harbinson, whose *Project Saucer* series of novels fictionalized the case for man-made flying saucers he had painstakingly accumulated. In a non-fiction work entitled *Projekt UFO: The Case for Man-Made Flying Saucers*, wherein Harbinson outlines the factual research basis behind his novels, he states:

> While no official designation of the foo fighters was offered, most reports indicated that they were ‘balls of fire’ that flew in parallel formation with the Allied aircraft, often pacing them for great distances, at speeds exceeding 300 mph, frequently causing their engines to malfunction by cutting in and out. While a few reports of crashing Allied aircraft suggest that foo fighters caused the crashes by making the aircraft’s engines cut out completely, most reports indicate that this was unlikely and that the foo fighters merely tailed the planes and caused psychological harm, rather than physical damage. They also flew away when fired upon.[91]

If the foo fighters did represent some secret Nazi or Japanese project, then the reportage of their own pilots thinking that they were *Allied* secret weapons makes sense, since they would not have been privy to their own nations’ secret projects. The question of where they originated from, then, remains. As will be seen in Part Three, the only country with anything under research and development that even resembles the “foo fighters” and with the capability of causing engine ignition failure in aircraft was Nazi Germany.

b. The Ghost Rockets: Ignoring Another Significant Clue

Berliner and Friedman also mention the case of the Scandinavian “ghost rockets:”

> Then, in the summer of 1946, odd sky sights resumed, this time over the Scandinavian countries. They were soon nicknamed “Swedish ghost rockets” since many of them were said to be long and thin, like rockets. Scores of reports were published in newspapers throughout the region, and soon the Swedish Defense Staff established a secret commission to gather and study the reports. Most people in and out of government suspected they were Soviet devices built with the help of captured Nazi scientists and launched from Peenemunde(sic), the legendary German test base located less than a hundred miles across the Baltic from Sweden.

> Detailed information was hard to find, and when the Swedish government clamped down on all publicity (one day after former USAAF general Jimmy Doolittle and former Eisenhower aide Gen. David Sarnoff had met with high Swedish officials), it became almost impossible to find out what was happening. Only in the late 1980s, when secrecy was finally relaxed, did it become apparent that the ghost rockets could not possibly have been Soviet missiles and therefore have to be considered proto-UFOs.[92]

Friedman, however, went on in numerous interviews and appearances to propose a novel and indeed plausible explanation for why so many UFOs appeared to be reconnoitering sensitive American defense and research installations.

As I put Friedman's argument in my book *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, "E.T. was monitoring our burgeoning nuclear and soon to be thermonuclear military capabilities, as any prudent intelligent society would monitor the military activities of a potential threat."[93] But as I also noted there, the idea was first proposed long before, by ufologist Frank Edwards in his bestselling book *Flying Saucers, Serious Business:*

> The explosions of the first manmade atomic bombs in 1945 were followed by the appearance of UFO's in numbers in 1949….
>
> The 1947 mass appearance of UFO's over the United States included numerous sightings around our atomic installations at Hanford and Oak Ridge, as well as the great scarred area near Alamagordo, New Mexico, where we had fired out first atomic device.[94]

Friedman has noted the first appearance of UFOs occurred in significant numbers over the U.S.A. almost two years exactly after the U.S. Trinity atom bomb test in New Mexico in July of 1945. The implication is that it took approximately two years for the UFOs to get from "there" to "here" to find out what was going on.

But, once again, this misses a significant German connection, for Edwards also goes on to say the following:

(The two bombs were exploded over Japan: the 1946 UFO's were over Scandinavia and Russia. If they were looking for the source of those atomic flashes, they had the right latitude but the wrong longitude.)[95]

However, if the UFO flaps represent genuine ET visitation for the purposes of reconnoitering a potential atomic threat, as Friedman has argued, then the appearance over the Baltic is *not* an accident of mistaken longitude as Edwards averred, but a significant clue, for as I have argued elsewhere, the Nazis most likely detonated an atom bomb sometime around October 10, 1944, precisely in the Baltic region.[96] While Edwards might be excused for not knowing the actual state of Nazi atomic accomplishments, by the time of Friedman's more recent appearances and reiterations of this theme, post-German-reunification researchers in Germany had established a convincing case that the entire postwar Allied Legend of Nazi nuclear incompetence was just that: a legend and fabrication.[97]

c. The Declassification Argument and Its Implicit Assumption

What of the possibility that what crashed was some secret American black project? While we have already mentioned the difficulty of this explanation, namely, that whatever crashed near Roswell had gone unnoticed by the military for some days before a civilian — Mac Brazel — finally brought it to their attention, thus making it highly improbable that it was such a project, Friedman and Berliner have a different explanation, and it is worth citing in full to reveal yet another of their hidden and implicit assumptions:

There is always the possibility that what crashed on the Foster ranch and even at the Plains of San Augustin was connected to the test flight of a secret American airplane or missile. This would account for its not being recognized by Mac Brazel, and for the entire way the episode was hushed up. At any one time, secret vehicles are being tested in the wide open spaces of the West where the chances of their

being seen accidentally are at a minimum. This was true in 1947 and it is certainly true today.

But what was being tested in 1947 is not secret today. Either it met its requirements and was placed in production, or it failed in one or mre ways and was sent to the scrap heap. Regardless, it would have been declassified and long since would have become common knowledge. But now, even if it had been totally successful, it would have been rendered obsolete by subsequent developments.[98]

But is that necessarily true? Is it so impossible to envision a terrestrial technology so far ahead of its time that it might remain classified for one, two, or three decades, or even half a century? Must one leap from this improbability to the even *more* "improbable improbability" that ET is the explanation, especially if the technology ET is using is — from the documents Berliner and Friedman themselves cite — capable of speeds of only hundreds of miles an hour, make roaring sounds suggestive of jets, leave trails, and other things consistent with ordinary propulsion methods? Once again, the "cause of objectivity" seems not to be faring too well, not to mention the cause of rationality and consistent analysis.

By now I believe it is abundantly clear that the case that Berliner and Friedman make in their now classic study of the Roswell Incident is anything but persuasive. Whatever persuasiveness it does have, it has by means of a tendentiousness of analysis, at times subtle, but more often than not very blatant, and often in direct contradiction to the documents and witnesses they themselves adduce. Time and again, the reader is directed to the bodies as being the clearest and most irrefutable argument that what happened at Roswell was extraterrestrial in nature, and yet, no *argument* is ever presented from the details of the descriptions of these bodies that the extraterrestrial explanation is the only plausible and compelling one. One is left, more often than not, with an "implied argument" at best, or mere assertion at worst. Even then, Berliner and Friedman hesitate to use the word "extraterrestrial" itself, opting for the more ambiguous term "alien," which can just as easily mean "foreign" as "extraterrestrial."

Granted, Berliner and Friedman *do* make a compelling case that the urgency and anxiety with which the military handled the event belies any mundane "balloon" explanation. But when confronted by their own

"documentary exhibits" and by their own witnesses with any statements indicating a possible terrestrial explanation for the cause of that urgency and anxiety, they look the other way, subtly invoking ET to rescue them from the dilemma.

But one thing remains abundantly clear from the documents they themselves present, and that is, there is a disturbing and consistent hint that what the military feared it was dealing with was something Nazi. Unlike Berliner and Friedman, this author believes that possibility must be stared directly in the face, and examined in depth and breadth, for in doing so, that possibility reveals itself to be the one that makes the most sense of the widest database and historical context associated with the Roswell Incident.

That is truly a "revisionist scenario," but before one can perceive it, one must first examine the *original* "revisionist scenario" of other pro-ET expositors of the Roswell Incident.

---

[1] Don Berliner and Stanton T. Friedman, *Crash at Corona: The U.S. Military Retreival and Cover-up of a UFO: The Definitive Study of the Roswell Incident* (New York: Paraview Special Editions, 2004), p. 199.

[2] Ibid., p. x.

[3] Ibid., p. xiii.

[4] Ibid., p. ix.

[5] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. xv.

[6] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 82. They also observe that the July 9, 1947 Washington *Post* described the debris as being spread over "a square mile" of the ranch, making the balloon explanation even more unlikely.

[7] Ibid., pp. 120-121.

[8] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 21.

[9] Ibid., p.22.

[10] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 22, emphasis added.

[11] Ibid., pp. 22-23, emphasis added.

[12] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 23.

[13] Ibid., pp. 23-24.

[14] Ibid., p. 24, boldface emphasis added by Berliner and Moore, italicized emphasis added by me. As we shall see in Part Three, this last boldface sentence is a fake.

[15] See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 18-22.

[16] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 24.

[17] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, pp. 24-25, boldface emphasis added by Berliner and Friedman, italicized emphasis added by me.

[18] Ibid., p. 25.

[19] Ibid., p. 26.

[20] Ibid.

[21] Ibid., emphasis added by me.

[22] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 26.

[23] Ibid., emphasis added by Berliner and Friedman.

[24] Ibid., p. 27.

[25] Ibid..

[26] Ibid.

[27] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 30.

[28] Ibid., p. 48.

[29] Ibid.

[30] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, pp. 47-48

[31] Berliner and Friedman note that “Lt/C Bremner” was in fact the defense attaché at the Canadian embassy in Washington (p. 50). Sarbacher was “a consultant to the U.S. Research and Development Board” and had once been “the dean of the graduate school of Georgia Tech” (p. 50).

[32] Ibid., pp. 48-49, emphasis added by me.

[33] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 51.

[34] Ibid., p. 114, emphasis added.

[35] See pp. .

[36] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, pp. 114-115.

[37] Ibid., p. 115.

[38] Ibid.

[39] Ibid.

[40] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, pp. 115-116.
[41] Ibid., p. 116.
[42] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, pp. 116-117.
[43] Ibid., p. 118, emphasis added.
[44] Ibid.
[45] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p.118.
[46] Ibid., p. 119, emphasis added.
[47] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 98.
[48] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 89.
[49] Ibid.
[50] Ibid.
[51] Ibid., p. 90.
[52] Ibid., p. 91.
[53] Ibid.
[54] Ibid.
[55] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 91.
[56] Ibid., p. 92, emphasis added.
[57] Ibid.
[58] Ibid., *Crash at Corona*, p. 92.
[59] Ibid., p. 94.
[60] Ibid., pp. 93-94.
[61] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 94.
[62] Ibid., p. 95.
[63] Ibid., emphasis added.
[64] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 97.
[65] Ibid.
[66] Ibid.
[67] Ibid., p. 96.
[68] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. xvi.
[69] Ibid., p. 96.
[70] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 72.
[71] Ibid., p. 73.
[72] Ibid., p. 80.

[73] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, pp. 80-81, italicized emphasis added by me, boldface emphasis added by Berliner and Friedman.

[74] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, pp. 82-83.

[75] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 83.

[76] Ibid.

[77] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 84.

[78] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 84, emphasis added.

[79] Ibid., p. 86.

[80] Ibid., p. 76.

[81] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 76.

[82] Ibid., pp, 76-77.

[83] Ibid., p. 75.

[84] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 87, emphasis added.

[85] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 141.

[86] Ibid.

[87] Ibid., p. 142.

[88] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 142.

[89] Ibid.

[90] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, pp. 2-3, emphasis added.

[91] W.A. Harbinson, *Projekt UFO: The Case for Man-Made Flying Saucers* (BookSurge Publishing, 2007), p. 55.

[92] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 3.

[93] Joseph P. Farrell, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell: The Nazis' Incredible Secret Tecnology: NASA's Nazis, JFK, and Majic-12* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006), p. 315.

[94] Frank Edwards, *Flying Saucers, Serious Business* (London: Mayflower-Dell, 1967), pp. 136-137.

[95] Ibid., p. 137.

[96] See my *Reich of the Black Sun* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2004), pp. 66-88.

[97] Again, see my *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 1-158.

[98] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 145, emphasis added.

4
The Fourth Articulation: Randle, Schmitt, Carey, and the Emergence of the Revisionist Scenario

"…(When) the discussion returns to the bodies, the conventional explanations
are eliminated. Metal is metal and wires are wires, but there is no way to
explain the bodies."
Kevin D. Randle and Donald R. Schmitt[1]

While Stanton T. Friedman and Don Berliner may be credited with giving the Roswell Incident its first genuinely thorough articulation (notwithstanding its shortcomings), taking things far beyond the research of Berlitz and Moore, it was researchers Kevin D. Randle and Don Schmitt who delved even further beyond that to flesh out new details, to uncover and interview new witnesses, and to undertake a thorough and complete revision to the Roswell Incident timeline. As such, it is not necessary to dwell on those details in their presentation that are shared with those of Berlitz and Moore, and Berliner and Friedman. Instead, our focus will be on certain aspects of their revised timeline, on the new witnesses Randle and Schmitt uncovered, and on the new details provided by old witnesses in their research.

A. The Revisionist Scenario

While there are numerous subtleties to their revised Roswell timeline and scenario, our focus will be on three key components:

1) The military's earlier involvement in the recovery of debris and bodies than is posited in the Belitz-Moore and Berliner-Friedman timeline;
2) The discounting of Grady "Barney" Barnett's story of a crash in the Plains of San Augustin, and the relocation of the primary crash site elsewhere;
3) The introduction of new witnesses, and new details from old witnesses.

1. Adjusting the Timeline: The Military's Earlier Involvement

The basic timeline of the Roswell Incident remains the same for July 4th in Randle's and Schmitt's research, but begins to change on July 5th:

> During a thunderstorm near Corona, New Mexico, W.W. "Mac" Brazel hears a tremendous thunderclap that sounds like an explosion but is somehow different from the rest of the thunder. Others in the area report the same phenomenon.
>
> At 11:27 P.M. the radar sites continue to watch the object. It seems to pulsate a number of times, then explodes into a starburst. The belief is that the object has now crashed.
>
> Jim Ragsdale and Trudy Truelove see a bright flash of light and hear a roaring sound that passes overhead. Ragsdale knows that something has struck the ground close to their campsite.
>
> **Saturday, July 5, 1947**
>
> Jason Ridgway, a sheepherder in central New Mexico, finds the remains of a crashed saucer. He spends little time on the site and refuses to tell anyone about it until many years later. Ridgway is a friend of Mac Brazel.
>
> Archaeologists, including W. Curry Holden, working the sites around Roswell stumble across the impact site where the object has crashed. One of them heads to the closest phone to tell Sheriff George

Wilcox of the discovery of the remains of a crashed aircraft of some kind.

Wilcox calls the local fire department to alert them about the crash. One truck, with Dan Dwyer on it, responds to the call. The site is about thirty-five miles north of Roswell.

The Roswell Fire Department, escorted by members of the Roswell Police Department, makes a run along Pine Lodge Road northwest of Roswell. These are among the first civilians to stumble across the impact site.

At 5:30 A.M. the military, knowing the approximate location of the saucer crash, move in with a carefully selected team for the recovery of the craft. The soldiers find civilians on the site already. They escort them off while others secure the area. Five bodies are found on the site. The site is cleaned and secured in six hours.[2]

Certain factors already distinguish this timeline from that of the standard scenario as expounded by Berlitz and Moore, and Berliner and Friedman:

1) Mac Brazel is *not* the only witness to the strange thunderclap-cum-explosion on Friday, July 4, 1947;
2) The military, in Randle's and Schmitt's scenario, are clearly tracking the object on radar prior to the crash. According to Randle and Schmitt, the military sees a clear radar signature of an explosion of the craft. This implies in turn several things:

a) The craft, whatever it is, and for whatever reason, can *be* tracked by radar sets of 1947, which implies either that its technology is not all that advanced or stealthy, or that it is malfunctioning and hence observable to American radars;
b) If all this be true, then the military clearly knows something has crashed *three days prior to* Mac Brazel's arrival in Roswell to inform Sheriff Wilcox of the event;

3) New witnesses are introduced, including:

a) Jim Ragsdale and Trudy Truelove who allegedly see the crash, and as will be seen momentarily, are allegedly some of the first people to see the primary crash site;

b) Grady Barnett's "archaeologists" have now been located, and can be named by name (W. Curry Holden), and these also arrive on the primary crash site.
4) There is a new crash or debris site some 35 miles north of Roswell, which site was first seen not by Mac Brazel, nor by the military, but by the Roswell law enforcement and fire departments, and by civilian archaeologists.

Consequently, the revisionist scenario claims to have found new witnesses, the correct places for the various debris fields and crash sites, the "missing archaeologists," and the real point at which the military's involvement begins, namely, at the very outset, on July 4th itself.

2. Discounting Grady "Barney" Barnett

As was seen in the previous chapter, the story recounted by the Maltaises was that a mutual friend of theirs, engineer Grady "Barney" Barnett, came upon the primary crash site somewhere in the plains of San Augustin, and moments later, was joined by a team of archaeologists. It was his story that gave the first real indication of the recovery not only of a technology – in this case a disc – but of bodies. Friedman was contacted after a television documentary about Roswell by one Gerald Anderson, who claimed to have additional first hand information about the Barnett story and about the crash site in the Plains of San Augustin, based on a diary of the event kept by his Uncle Ted, who was one of his family members allegedly involved in finding the site, the disc, and the bodies.

But in the revisionist scenario of Randle and Schmitt, the whole Barnett-Plains of San Augustin aspect of the story collapses:

> Additional problems with the Anderson story surfaced. Anderson produced a portion of the diary supposedly written by his uncle Ted. The "diary" was full of ludicrous errors. For example, the balloon explanation – offered by the military on July 8 to explain the Roswell crash – is represented as having appeared in the Albuquerque

newspapers on the 5th, three days too early. In fact, the Albuquerque newspapers mentioned nothing about balloons on July 5.

A forensic scientist who examined the diary, Richard L. Brunelle, conducted tests that determined the paper was of a type available in 1947. The ink, however, was not available until sometime after 1974. That was in direct conflict with the story as related by Anderson.

Clearly this was not a document written by Anderson's uncle Ted. Ted Anderson could not be reached for comment. He had died several years prior to 1975.

Continued investigation broke down other parts of the Anderson story. Anderson described a patch the leader of the military team allegedly wore, claiming that it indicated the soldiers were from the White Sands Proving Grounds. At that time there was no distinctive patch for the personnel assigned to the White Sands complex.

Anderson then contradicted himself again, telling other researchers that his uncle Ted had recognized the leader as an officer assigned to the Sandia base. The patch described does not match that worn by the personnel assigned to Sandia in that time frame.

Anderson' tale continued to unravel. Anderson said that he had spoken to Randle for only twenty-six minutes. To prove it, he produced a copy of his phone records showing the length of the call. Randle, however, had a tape that lasted more than fifty minutes.

Further investigation revealed that the bill submitted by Anderson did not match the records of Southwestern Bell.[3]

The collapse of Gerald Anderson's credibility, and therewith the collapse of the only other witness who alleged having been present at the Plains of San Augustin crash site, meant that the whole story "reverted to its original second-hand status"[4] of a story related by the now deceased Grady Barnett to his neighbors the Maltaises, who in turn told it to Friedman.

However, Randle's and Schmitt's research then uncovered yet another detail that dealt a massive blow to the story:

Sometime early in 1947 someone gave Ruth Barnett a daily reminder book, which she turned into a diary. All that year she recorded everything in her and her husband's lives. Later, when the

> diary surfaced in 1990, investments were able to trace Barnett's movements for the year. Nothing in the diary gave any hint of a crashed-saucer encounter. In fact, on the day the bodies were recovered outside Roswell, July 5, Barnett was at home in Socorro.[5]

Additionally, all of Randle's and Schmitt's efforts to find any archaeological team that was working the Plains of San Augustin at the time of the Roswell Incident proved fruitless;[6] but they did find archaeological teams that *were* working *north* of Roswell who, moreover, "confirmed that they were involved."[7] The conclusion was both obvious, and simple: "What this meant was that the story of archaeologists was true. The location was wrong."[8]

Furthermore, what this also meant was there was "no evidence of an event on the Plains."[9]

> The Barnett story, at one time the foundation of such a claim, was gone. The whole Plains scenario fails to fit the framework of the Roswell event. Without better information, without firsthand corroboration, Barnett's story, and in fact, the Plains scenario, must be discarded.[10]

But for the extraterrestrial interpretation of Roswell, this meant that one of the primary supports for that interpretation also collapsed. Consequently, for that interpretation to survive, new witnesses to the bodies had to be found, and new details from old witnesses had to come forward. Randle's and Schmitt's research quickly uncovered them.

3. New Witnesses, and New Details from Old Witnesses

a. New Witnesses: The Roswell Fire Department Response, Frankie Rowe, and Dan Dwyer

Frankie Rowe's father, Dan Dwyer, "was a firefighter with the Roswell Fire Department in July 1947."[11] According to Rowe, the fire department

responded to a call early in the morning, July 5, 1947. Rowe's father was on the crew of the truck that responded. According to Rowe, her father "told us later that what he saw was the wreckage of some type of flying craft. He did not know what it looked like. He couldn't tell. He said they were very small pieces. A lot of it had already been picked up."[12] Rowe also indicated that by the time the Fire Department had arrived, the military was already on the scene along with some police officers from Roswell.[13]

But according to Rowe, that was not all that her father saw that day. Her father also saw two body bags and "one live person…a very small being about the size of a ten-year-old child."[14] According to Randle and Schmitt, "Dwyer had no doubt that these were not human beings. Rowe remembers his belief that 'these were adults that were about the size of a ten-year-old child and they didn't have any hair…He…only saw the one…. He saw one person walking.'"[15]

Rowe related that these were the reasons that the military came to their home and informed Dwyer and his family that they were never to talk about the incident. Rowe also maintained that if they did talk about it, they were threatened.[16]

Other second-hand testimony appears to corroborate Dwyer's account. Herbert Ellis was a local Roswell civilian contractor who happened to be at the base that day, paining the base hospital. Ellis maintains he saw the one living creature arrive, walking "under its own power into the hospital." Ellis described it as being about the size of a child and very slender.[17]

Mary Bush was the secretary to the hospital's administrator at the time of the Incident. Her brother George recalls that she came home one day from work in an anxious state and telling him that she had seen a "creature from another world."[18]

Whatever the merits of these witnesses' conclusions regarding the creatures that they saw, the details themselves are worth noting, for what is being described are merely small humanoid beings of slender weight, with the specific terms employed being "children" and "child." So the question must be asked: given these details, are any of them sufficient to compel to the conclusion that they were, in fact, extraterrestrial?

b. The "Archaeologists Problem"

One stable feature to the Roswell Incident scenarios, whether standard or revisionist, is that a team of archaeologists came upon the primary crash site – wherever it was located – and found the crashed craft and some of its crew. But as has already been seen, the Grady Barnett version of this event was quickly discredited and discounted by Randle and Schmitt. So where, and who, were the archaeologists? And more importantly, what did they actually see?

The break came when Don Schmitt's friend, Tom Carey, had been told about a man, C. Bertrand Schulz, who not only had been telling a story about a crashed flying saucer for a number of years, but who also happened to be a vertebra paleontologist, and who also had spent time in Roswell. Schulz knew a group of archaeologists "who knew about the crash."[19] Schulz recalled seeing the military cordon off an area to the west of the main highway north of town.[20]

According to Schulz, a man named W. Curry Holden was the leader of the archaeological group. Holden in fact turned out to have the right background, for he had been the chairman of the Department of History and Anthropology at Texas Tech in Lubbock.[21] Unfortunately, Holden was 96 years old when he was found, and could recall no specific details of what he had seen, other than "that he had been there and had seen it all."[22]

Records from Texas Tech also corroborated that Schulz and Holden had indeed been together "at the University of New Mexico for the 46th Annual Meeting of the American Anthropological Association, December 28-31, 1947."[23] Randle and Schmitt correctly note that this was a major discovery and confirmation of the story of archaeologists being involved in the Roswell Incident, and more importantly, "both of them placed the site of the event in the Roswell area and not anywhere near the Plains of San Augustin."[24] Unfortunately, this was about all these archaeologists, both old men at the time of their discovery, could do. Holden could recall no details by the time he was interviewed, and Schulz would only relay the little information he had heard from Holden.[25]

c. Mac Brazel's July 9, 1947 Interview, and an Inherent Contradiction

In the revisionist scenario, the rancher who first found the debris field on his ranch, Mac Brazel, not only came to Roswell, and informed the Sheriff, George Wilcox, of his discovery, but he also gave interviews to the local radio station, was then taken into custody by the local Army Air Force personnel and held for a number of days incommunicado on the base, and then released under military police guard. During this last period, he gave a new account of the events for the *Roswell Daily Record* on July 9, 1947. This fact led revisionist researchers Thomas J. Carey and Donald R. Schmitt to suggest that Brazel may not have been telling everything, even in his first contact with local law enforcement and the military:

> We could not understand why the military would go to such lengths with Brazel, as it had done with no other witness, if he had only discovered pieces of wreckage – no matter how strange. Surely he could have been convinced in short order that it was from a secret project or some such cover story, and Brazel could have gone on his way a happy camper. Something was missing, it seemed to us, in Brazel's story. [26]

The clear implication is that the debris wreckage – "no matter how strange" – was not the primary concern of the military, and that leaves, of course, only the "bodies;" Carey and Schmitt are implying, in other words, that Brazel saw something else, namely bodies, and that this was the real reason for the military's placing Brazel under virtual arrest.

Carey and Schmitt then reproduce an interview with Frank Joyce, who allegedly interviewed Brazel on the afternoon of July 6, 1947. It is to be noted that this account, which appears in Carey's and Schmitt's *Witness to Roswell* published in 2007, is the first time Frank Joyce disclosed this new detail:

> BRAZEL: (angrily) Who's gonna clean all that stuff up? That's what I wanna know. I need someone out there to clean it up.
> JOYCE: What stuff? What are you talking about?
> BRAZEL: (somberly): Don't know. Don't know what it is. Maybe it's from one of them 'flying saucer' things.
> JOYCE: Oh, really? Then you should call the air base. They are

responsible for everything that flies in the air. They should be able to help you or tell you what it is.
BRAZEL: (At this point, according to Joyce, Brazel really started "losing it.") Oh, God, Oh, my God. What am I gonna do? It's horrible. Horrible. Just horrible.
JOYCE: What's that? What's horrible? What are you talking about?
BRAZEL: The stench. Just awful.
JOYCE: Stench? From what? What are you talking about?
BRAZEL: They're dead.
JOYCE: Who? Who's dead?
BRAZEL: Little people. (Now barely audible.) Unfortunate little creatures…
JOYCE: (At this point, Joyce thought to himself, "This is crazy!" He decided to play the role of Devil's Advocate to a story he did not believe.) What the…? Where? Where did you find them?
BRAZEL: Someplace else.
JOYCE: Well, you know, the military is always firing rockets and experimenting with monkeys and things. So, maybe…
BRAZEL: (shouting now) God dammit! They're not monkeys, and *they're not human!!* (With that, Brazel angrily slammed down the phone to end the conversation.)[27]

Again, however, there are no details of these creatures or beings to corroborate Brazel's exclamation that they were not monkeys and "not human." We have only a dead man's testimony related second-hand. There is a further problem, and that is that Major Jesse Marcel, who accompanied CIC agent Sheridan Cavitt and Mac Brazel back to his ranch, never once mentioned bodies, much less inhuman ones with a horrible odor. Nonetheless, as we shall see in Part Three, it is not necessary to impugn or discard the testimonies concerning the bodies -even though there is ample reason for doing so as will be seen in the *next* chapter – for all details alleged for them can be accounted for on wholly terrestrial lines, lines which, moreover, might induce a layman to conclude erroneously that what they had seen was extraterrestrial.

Brazel's story, as we saw in the previous chapter, now grows only more complex, for on July 9, 1947, he gave an interview to the *Roswell Daily*

Record.

> Brazel reported he had found the material in the middle of June and had thought nothing of it until he heard the stories of the flying discs. Then, at the urgings of neighbors and family, he drove the seventy-five miles into Roswell with a few pieces.
>
> That had started the chain of events which lead to Brigadier General Ramey's announcement that it was nothing more than a weather balloon.[28]

But now there is a contradiction, and it raises massive questions about the military's role, and the story, or stories, it was seeking to promulgate. Moreover, it is a contradiction that few Roswell proponents have noticed or drawn attention to. Randle and Schmitt state elsewhere that

> Brazel was escorted by military officers into Roswell to talk to reporters at the office of the *Roswell Daily Record*….
>
> Brazel told reporters that he had originally found the debris on June 14, while on the ranch with his daughter, Bessie, his son, Vernon, and his wife. In that interview, *while the military officers watched and listened*, Brazel now claimed the object was smoky gray rubber and that it was confined to an area of about two hundred yards in diameter. While no words were visible, there were letters on part of it along with a little Scotch tape and some tape with flowers printed on it. Although no strings or wires were fastened to it, a few eyelets in the paper indicated an attachment might have been used.
>
> *The new story ended with Brazel saying he had found weather observation devices on two other occasions but this object didn't resemble those. "I am sure what I found was not any weather observation balloon," he said.*[29]

Note carefully what we now have:

1) On the one hand, the prior afternoon, July 8, 1947, General Ramey has already issued the first "official cover story," namely, that what

crashed was a weather balloon; and,

2) On the other hand, Brazel, *under military escort and scrutiny*, states clearly and explicitly that what he found was *not* a weather balloon, making it possible that the story he told the *Roswell Daily Record* on July 9, 1947, was *also a story approved by the military.* This behavior would be consistent if the military was attempting to keep some aspect of the "flying saucer" story alive. The question is, *what aspect did they want to be kept alive, and why?* If the military had *not* wished this particular statement by Brazel to be made, it could have easily stopped the interview, and insisted that those remarks be taken off the record, and corrected with the balloon story. After all, according to the revisionist scenario, the military had already made threats to other people and institutions involved with the Incident, why not now? That it let the statement stand is telling, especially with what happened next.

The answer to that question – what did they want to be kept alive, and why? - may in fact lie in what then happened next, for according to the revisionist scenario, Brazel was escorted by the military to Roswell radio station KGFL, "where he went inside alone. According to Frank Joyce, Brazel stood against the wall and told the cover story that the Army had given him. It was a balloon that had come down."[30] So, in the space of a very short time, Brazel has contradicted himself *again*, for now he *is* accepting the "weather balloon explanation," behavior that, once again, would appear deliberately designed to draw attention to this particular explanation. Joyce's reaction to this new version was that he knew "the story wasn't true. He listened to it and then pointed out that it was not the same story that Brazel had told a couple of days earlier, before 'the Army had gotten to him.'"[31] Brazel told Joyce "It'll go hard on me," if he did not keep to the story.[32] Finally Brazel left the building and "military officers were waiting outside the station. With the new story firmly in place, Brazel was taken back to the base."[33]

But what exactly *was* that new story? It both was, and was not, a weather balloon! And both stories were put out when Brazel was under obvious pressure from the military. As we also saw from the previous chapter, the

story as given to the *Roswell Daily Record* on July 9, 1947 was an obvious absurdity to begin with, for no rancher would leave such debris in his fields to be eaten by his animals.

The contradictions do not yet end. For when Frank Joyce's second interview with Brazel ended,

> The rancher walked to the door. Then, according to Joyce, Brazel turned to him and said, "Frank, you know how they talk of little green men?... They weren't green." Brazel then opened the door and left with his military escort.[34]

One is now confronted by several possibilities.

As was seen, Frank Joyce much later indicated that his initial interview with Brazel had specifically mentioned creatures that "were not human." As will be seen in the next chapter, there are credibility issues with Joyce's testimony in 2007, for there is a discrepancy netween his testimony as recounted at the beginning of this section, and his testimony in 1991, as quoted immediately above.

But assuming for the moment that the thesis is true, and that Brazel was under orders and pressure from the military to contradict the official "weather balloon cover story" of General Ramey by stating to the *Roswell Daily Record* - in the presence of military officials who could have easily shut down the interview and inserted a proper cover story and yet who failed to do so - that what he found was *not* a weather balloon, then the possibility also emerges that Brazel's story to Frank Joyce later that same day, July 9, 1947, was also, in its entirety inclusive of the detail about the "little men" not being "green," was also something he was compelled to say by the military.

In short, one might be dealing with *two* cover stories, the surface cover-story, the "weather balloon story," and a far *deeper* cover story, involving "extraterrestrials." It is a possibility that, as far as I am aware, no one in the Roswell-crash-and-retrieval community has adequately considered. The question is, Why would the military go to such an extraordinary length to create a cover story – the weather balloon story – which it is also taking steps within mere hours of its release to discredit? One answer that now suggests itself is that it is doing so as a psychological operation designed,

over the long term, to keep alive the extraterrestrial interpretation, to misdirect the public's attention from learning something *else* about the crash, something it desperately does *not* want to be known.

d. Frank Kaufman

The military's potential role in a possible deep-cover, long-term and carefully calculated deception only grows more acute when one turns to consider the new witnesses to the Incident uncovered by Randle and Schmitt in their research. At the top of this list is Frank Kaufman.

It was Randle who tracked Kaufman down, and he admitted in a phone interview that he had been in Roswell during the event.[35] Kaufman was initially reluctant to disclose to Randle any details of his knowledge of the event, so Randle decided that Kaufman might be a valuable contact to track down other people involved with the Incident.[36] But at that point

> Kaufman mentioned that no one talked about the crash after the special flight from Washington came in.
>
> Trying to confirm that, Randle said, "No one talked about it after the special flight got there from Washington?"
>
> "Yeah, that's right."
>
> "You're familiar with the special flight from Washington?"
>
> "Yeah."
>
> They talked for nearly thirty minutes more, but there was nothing interesting that came out of the discussion. Kaufman knew enough that he would become an important source. He knew more than he was willing to say over the phone.[37]

Randle and Schmitt therefore determined to meet with Kaufman personally.

Once Randle and Schmitt finally did meet personally with Kaufman, "he was more than happy to share his information."[38] Kaufman told Randle and Schmitt that "a personal friend of his, a warrant officer named Robert Thomas, had come in on a special flight from Washington, D.C. and seemed to be involved in the retrieval in some fashion."[39] Thomas told Kaufman

that there was a debris field and that a search was under way for the actual flight crew of what had crashed.

> When asked if he knew anything at all about the recovery of the debris, he said, “I know that one crate was taken to a hangar and left there overnight. There were spotlights on it and it was in the center of the floor with MPs around the walls, guarding it.”
>
> He didn’t know what was in the crate, only that it had gotten special treatment: lots of guards around it and no one being allowed to approach it.
>
> He also said that he had been sworn to secrecy although he didn’t know that much. He said that they were taken into a room in small groups, ten or twelve, and told that they had participated in something that was of national security interest. They were not to talk about it to anyone. They were to forget that it had ever happened.
>
> Randle asked if Kaufman had been made to sign anything.
>
> “No. Just told to forget about it.”
>
> ….
>
> He remembered the many rumors in 1947. Everyone had a theory or a belief. There was talk of finding bodies, of finding some of them alive. Lots of rumors. The only thing he was sure about was the crate that had spent most of one night in the hangar with MPs watching it.[40]

In Randle’s and Schmitt’s reconstructed Roswell timeline, this debriefing was held on July 11, 1947.[41]

Kaufman’s story is important in two main respects. Firstly, if valid, it confirms the idea that the entire Roswell air base was sworn warned formally to maintain silence about the event. Secondly, Kaufman’s story maintained that there was a special flight into the air base directly from Washington, D.C., indicating the high priority that the military placed in the Incident, a priority belying its now official “balloon” explanation. The flight, according to Randle’s and Schmitt’s reconstructed timeline, took place sometime on July 8 or 9.[42]

e. Melvin Brown

Another important witness in the line-up of the revisionist scenario is Sergeant Melvin Brown. Brown was then a sergeant with the 509th Bomb Group, and later, on his deathbed, told family members that "he had seen the bodies of alien creatures when he was given the task of guarding them."[43] Brown described the "aliens" as being

> Smaller than humans and had a skin that was yellowish-orange and like that of a lizard, meaning it was leathery and beaded, but not scaly. Given the circumstances around his opportunity to observe the bodies, the discrepancy in color could have been the result of the lighting conditions.[44]

Here, at last, are details of the dead aliens that would indeed seem sufficient to compel to the conclusion that the bodies recovered were in fact extraterrestrial.

Unfortunately, one has only to look deeper at the story to discover that there are problems, for when Randle and Schmitt first cite the story in 1991 in their book *UFO Crash at Roswell*, they state the following:

> After the civilians were gone (from the site), the military brought in trucks and a few dozen men to clean the site. The bodies were loaded into the back of one of the trucks, in which there were several large blocks of ice. About dusk, Sergeant Melvin E. Brown and one other soldier were stationed in the truck with orders not to look under the tarp. Brown could not resist the temptation and as soon as his superiors moved away, he pulled the tarp aside. There, he saw the bodies.
>
> Like Barnett, Brown described them as smaller than human. He said the skin was yellowish-orange, but that might have been an effect of the lighting or decomposition. He said that the skin was similar to that of a lizard, meaning it was leathery and beaded, but not scaly.[45]

The only problem is, and it is a major one, is that in Randle's and Schmitt's reconstruction of *where and when* this was supposed to have taken place, it occurred at the Grady Barnett crash site in the Plains of San Augustin, the crash site they later repudiate completely![46]

Of course, it is entirely possible that Brown's statements should be interpreted as belonging to their own proposed primary crash site closer to Roswell. In this case, the statements stand, and we have our first *real* details that would tend to corroborate the non-human nature of the recovered bodies, and hence, the possibility and even likelihood that they were indeed extraterrestrial.

In their original presentation, however, there is more to the Melvin Brown story. Brown had ridden with the bodies from whatever crash site was really involved, back to the air base in Roswell, where he was "added to the guard detail outside the hangar."[47] At that point, he was approached by the commanding officer of Squadron K, Captain John Martin. Martin urged Brown to come with him and "have a look inside."[48] Inside, however, there was nothing to see except a wooden crate already packed for shipment to Fort Worth.[49]

Randle and Schmitt learned of Brown's story through his family. Brown had later been based in the United Kingdom, and married a British wife. According to his daughter, Beverly Bean, Brown on his deathbed insisted repeatedly that "It was not a damned weather balloon."[50]

Brown's story is crucial not only for the revisionist Roswell scenario, but in fact for any extraterrestrial interpretation of the event, for it provides some of the real physiological details of the recovered bodies that would plausibly argue for their extraterrestrial nature. It remains to be seen if his story is credible, and if so, if there is any terrestrial rationalization for these details.

f. Pappy and Sappho Henderson

Two other crucial witnesses were uncovered by Randle and Schmitt, and those were "Pappy" Henderson and his wife Sappho. As the debris and bodies were being gathered by the military, various flights originated from Roswell carrying it to other points. The pilots of one of those flights was

Captain O.W. “Pappy” Henderson, who “flew a C-54 load of wreckage on to Wright Field.”[51] Henderson kept the flight a secret all his life, even from his wife Sappho, until he saw an article in a tabloid in the early 1980s.

> Henderson, who died in 1986, told Sappho that he had wanted to tell her about it for years. He knew that flying saucers were real because he had flown a planeload of wreckage on to Wright Field. He didn’t tell her much about it except that the wreckage was strange. The flight’s destination had been Dayton and back again. She said that it had been a C-54.
>
> Sappho Henderson said that she had never asked her husband for the details. He had told her the material was strange but did not elaborate. He said the article he saw, including the descriptions of the bodies, was accurate and he described the bodies to her.
>
> Henderson was a member of the First Air Transport Unit which was assigned to the Roswell Army Air Field. Colonel Jennings was the deputy base and group commander, Barrowclough was base executive officer, and Marcel was the group intelligence officer. All were in the 509th Bomb Group headquarters. The first flight taking the material to Fort Worth had been a very special one as evidenced by the make-up of the crew. Too many of the top men at Roswell were assigned to that crew. The second flight was not quite as special but was as highly classified. Henderson later said that it was routine flight except for the high classification.
>
> Henderson kept the secret as long as he thought it was required of him, but once the information was published, he didn’t mind sharing it with his friend. In 1982, at a reunion of his flight crew from World War II, he told them about flying the wreckage of a spacecraft out of Roswell. There, at the reunion, he mentioned that he flew the airplane to Wright Field and he mentioned the bodies. And again, because of the nature of the story, those listening were skeptical until they saw Pappy was serious. The discussion then went to other UFO sightings.[52]

But when would Captain Henderson have seen bodies?

Randle and Schmitt answer by noting that it is highly unlikely that Henderson would have had any opportunity to inspect his cargo prior to or

during the flight to Wright Field. However, as one of Colonel Blanchard's "most trusted officers, it stands to reason that Henderson would have been called in by Blanchard to fly one of the reconnaissance planes"[53] over the various debris and crash sites. Thus, "it seems likely that Henderson saw the bodies as he flew over in an aircraft and, possibly, directed the ground parties to the second site."[54] One of Henderson's fishing buddies recalled that Henderson described them only as being "kinda little guys."[55] Henderson's widow Sappho also recalls that her husband described the debris as "weird…like nothing he'd ever seen."[56]

Clearly there is nothing in Henderson's descriptions that compel to an extraterrestrial interpretation of the origin either of the debris, or of the bodies. What does emerge from his story, once again, is the extreme degree of anxiety the Incident was causing the military, and the extreme degree it went to keep *some* aspect of it quiet. The question again is, What exactly is that aspect?

g. Jim Ragsdale and Trudy Truelove

Jim Ragsdale and Rudy Truelove are two more crucial witnesses in the emerging Roswell revisionist scenario.

On Friday, July 4, 1947, Ragsdale and his companion Trudy Truelove, drove north from Roswell "using old Highway 48(now Pine Lodge Road)," and then turned off, taking back roads "until they were far from the city and civilization." That night they were witnesses to an electrical storm with flashing lightning and crashing thunder, and a driving wind of thirty or forty miles per hour.[57] A short rain came, briefly shrouding everything in sheets of water, and just as quickly, left. "About 11:30 P.M., brightness flashed as an object roared overhead."[58]

Ragsdale described the light as a blue-gray light, similar to that from an arc welder.[59] The object roared over their campsite and seconds later "slammed into the ground about a mile or so from the camp."[60] After the rain had ended Ragsdale and Truelove attempted to find the crashed object, driving over the terrain until finally they stopped "at the edge of a short cliff. Using a flashlight with weak batteries, they explored the area. They saw the remains of the ship stuck in the side of the cliff but could see no

movement around it. It was late, and the flashlight was failing. They returned to their Jeep and drove back to the campsite."[61]

The next day after the sun was up they drove back to the crash site. Ragsdale remained calm but Truelove was quite agitated and wanted to "get the hell out of there."[62] They could not tell what the object was:

> According to Ragsdale, in an interview conducted more than forty years later, it had hit the ground, sticking in the cliff at an angle. The front of the craft was crumpled. It looked like part of an aircraft with narrow wings. Ragsdale said, "You could see where it hit…. One part was buried in the ground, and part of it was sticking out of the ground." He indicated an angle of about thirty degrees.
>
> ….
>
> Debris was scattered across the crash site, and both Ragsdale and Truelove picked up a few of the pieces. According to him, "You could take that stuff and wad it up and it would straighten itself out."
>
> *Of one piece, he said, "You could take it and put it into any form you wanted, and it would stay there. You could bend it in any form, and it would stay. It wouldn't straighten out."*
>
> But that wasn't the most amazing thing about the wreckage. Near the craft, Ragsdale saw "bodies or something laying there. They looked like bodies. *They weren't very long…. four of five foot long at the most." According to Ragsdale, they looked like midgets.* He didn't know what to think. Truelove was tugging at him, trying to get out of there. She was scared of the craft and the bodies. Had they seen the bodies the night before, Ragsdale said they wouldn't have camped out there. They would have left for Roswell.[63]

They then heard two or three "six by six army trucks" approaching, including a wrecker, led by a 1947 Ford with MPs riding in it.

As Ragsdale and Truelove looked on, the vehicles fanned out and parked. The site was quickly surrounded by MPs, while one man, Majo0r Edwin Easley, "ordered (the MPs) to the top of the cliff where they would watch the surrounding territory."[64] Ducking for cover, Ragsdale and Truelove ran back to their Jeep, throwing their collected debris into the back. Starting the

vehicle, they drove the Jeep into “a concealing copse of trees and bushes,” and Ragsdale crouched in the vegetation to watch. They watched long enough “to know that ‘they cleaned everything up. I mean they cleaned it. They raked the ground and everything.’”[65] Before the MPs, busily cordoning off the area, could search, Ragsdale and Truelove drove away.[66]

Since Ragsdale and Truelove drove north out of Roswell, Ragsdale’s story is important for the revisionist scenario not only because he described the debris and bodies, but also because he gave a primary crash site at another location than the now discredited Plains of San Augustin site advocated by Berliner and Friedman.

Note, once again, that there is nothing particularly compelling about the recovered bodies other than that they looked, in Ragsdale’s own words, like “midgets.” However, Ragsdale now adds a new detail about the debris itself, for in his account, some of the “memory metal” can now be molded or bent into any shape, and it will stay in that shape, in addition to the fact that, like other Roswell witnesses, he maintained that some of it could also be wadded up, and it would unravel again.

h. Glenn Dennis, the Nurse, and the Bodies

As was seen in the previous chapter, some of the most important testimony concerning the recovered Roswell bodies comes from a local mortician in Roswell, Glenn Dennis. Randle’s and Schmitt’s presentation differs little from Berliner’s and Friedman’s; they recount his story of the strange calls from the base asking questions about body preparation,[67] and his encounter with strange debris and goings on at the base 68 infirmary,[68] adding a new detail, provided by Dennis, that he was followed back to his funeral home and threatened into silence by the military.[69]

But then they provide new information about what Dennis’ nurse friend saw:

> (Dennis) contacted the nurse he knew and asked “if it would be alright if I could drive out because I would like to know more about the incident…. I didn’t make contact for two or three hours…. She called me back and said, ‘I understand you’ve been trying to call me.’

She said, ‘I don’t want you coming to the hospital. I would rather see you at the officers’ club.’ This was around eleven-thirty so I got in my car and went to the officers’ club.”

He met her at the club, found a table, and ordered Cokes and lunch. Finally she got to the point. “I want to tell you what this is all about, but you have to give me a sacred oath that you won’t ever mention this or my name and get me into trouble.”

She continued, “I can’t believe what I’ve just seen. This is the most horrible thing I’ve ever seen in my life.”

She then drew a sketch on a small prescription pad that she normally carried. As Dennis remembered it, “I don’t think she said alien bodies, I think she said *foreign* bodies…. Then she described to me what happened when she got involved in it.”[70]

Dennis then recounted the fact that his nurse friend described a horrible odor, making it almost impossible for the medical personnel to work, and indeed, the odor eventually forced the medical team to give up and put the bodies into body bags.[71]

Dennis then continued to describe the bodies, according to his friend’s description:

She believed there were only four fingers on the hands which were long, slender, and fragile. The hands themselves were very small and very narrow. When they turned one of the hands over, they noticed that the thumb was missing. They also noticed that the ends of the fingers had little hollowed pads looking like suction cups. The bones were no larger than a medium-sized human finger and didn’t feel like the bone structure of a human. These bones were brittle and felt, more or less, “like real thick cartilage.”

The head was larger than the human head. The eyes were sunken. The nose wasn’t convex but markedly concave, who two little orifices. There was no ear, but two little orifices on the side of the head, with two small lobes that might have folded in to protect the ear.

The mouth was a very thin line: “very thin…. (It) didn’t have a full lip… hardly any lip at all. In place of teeth, it looked like a piece of rawhide. The doctors said it was even harder than the bone structure.

> The bones of the head were very pliable. It was like a newborn baby…. You could push the sides and it would be movable."[72]

This was indeed wonderful news, for smelly cadavers with four-fingered hands with suction cups on the fingertips could hardly be called human in any recognizable sense, and it was Dennis who had first introduced this entire theme into the Roswell story.[73]

Extraterrestrial proponents of the Roswell Incident therefore pressed Dennis for the name of his anonymous nurse friend…

…and ran into trouble.

Dennis maintained that after this meeting, he tried to contact his nurse friend later, only to learn she had been transferred to England. Writing to her a few months later, the letter was returned and was marked "Deceased," and Dennis maintained that he learned that she had perished in an aircraft accident during a training exercise. Pressed finally to reveal her name, he gave her name as "Naomi Selff.[74]

> After several years of searching without success for any record of a military nurse by the name of Naomi Selff, or any record of a plane crash in England involving American nurses during the pertinent time frame, Glenn Dennis was confronted by Roswell investigators with this information in the mid-1990s. His surprising and disappointing response was, "That wasn't her real name. I gave you a phony name, because I promised her that I would never reveal it to anyone." In any court of law, when someone is caught in a lie, that person is said to have been "impeached" as a witness, meaning that his or her testimony, as evidence, cannot be relied upon… Dennis was found to have knowingly provided false information to investigators, and must technically stand impeached as a Roswell witness. There is no way to get around that fact without believable, clarifying information from Dennis himself. To date, such information has not been forthcoming.[75]

So the best witness for the strangeness of the recovered Roswell bodies, and of their physiological details that could clearly be extraterrestrial, Glenn Dennis, must be regarded as impeached, and his testimony thrown out.

i. The Lieutenant Governor Joseph Montoya Episode

One of the more unusual episodes to emerge in the research behind the revisionist scenario is that connected with then Lieutenant Governor – later U.S. Congressman and U.S. Senator – Joseph Montoya, for Montoya, according to Randle and Schmitt, *may* have been a witness to at least some of the bizarre aspects of the Roswell Incident.[76]

Montoya's lifelong friend, Ruben Anaya, was a cook at the Roswell officers' club in 1947. According to Anaya, Montoya called him from the base demanding that he get his car, and come out to the base to pick him up, adding "Get me the hell out of here."[77] Montoya told Anaya that he would be waiting "near the water tower on the east side of the base near several of the hangars" and that Anaya was not to go near the base headquarters "because there were too many people there."[78]

Montoya was found waiting at the appointed spot, and when he got into the car, Anaya noticed that he was very pale and was shaking. Anaya, who recalled the event years later, said that Montoya was "very, very scared."[79]

Once back at his friend Anaya's home, Montoya began to talk:

> According to Anaya he said, "You all are not going to believe what I've seen. If you ever tell anyone, I'll call you a damned liar. We don't know what it is…. They say it moves like a platter. It's a plane without wings…. It's not a helicopter…. I don't know where it's from…. It could be from the moon…. We don't know what it is."
>
> Montoya collapsed on the couch, and Anaya handed him a scotch, but it had no apparent effect. Montoya wanted something else, and Anaya give him some Jim Beam. According to Anaya, "The man took half a quart just boom, boom, boom. He was very scared."
>
> Montoya then told them that he had seen "four little men." He described how small they were and that, according to Anaya, "one was alive."
>
> Pete Anaya confirmed his brother's belief that Montoya had mentioned there were four little men, but Pete's wife, Mary, thought that Montoya had mentioned just two. She admitted that she had not been involved in the discussions.

According to Ruben Anaya, Montoya described the beings as "short… skinnylike with big eyes… The mouth was real small, like a cut across a piece of wood."

Pete Anaya, who heard less of the descriptions of the bodies, recalled only that they were small, with big heads. That was the thing he remembered the most, the oversize heads.

All had been stretched out on mess hall tables set up in the hangar. Montoya said that he knew one of them was alive because it was moaning. It was moving and had its knees up, which were moving slightly. They were so skinny that they didn't look human. And one hand was moving, though barely.

There were doctors pressed around the table, so that Montoya couldn't get very close. He did see that they had no hair, that their skin was white, and that each wore a tight-fitting one-piece suit that Anaya described as similar to those worn by navy divers. *From what Montoya could see, they had four long, thin fingers.* They were bald, and Montoya had no opportunity to see an eye color. The eyes were larger than normal.

After a short period, the beings were taken over to the hospital. Montoya said military personnel brought in some of the debris about that time. There was nothing that resembled a large ship, just pieces of metal. He didn't get close enough to examine it.

Anaya kept asking questions until Montoya snapped at him, "*I tell you that they're not from this world.*"[80]

If one accepts this story as true, then it raises a number of issues.

"From what Montoya could see" the bodies had four fingers. But the way the account is phrased makes two interpretations possible: either the beings had only four fingers, or, situated as they were relative to Montoya, that was all that he could see, and they may have had more, or a thumb, that was hidden from view. Again, there is nothing in the detailed descriptions of the bodies that compels to the conclusion that they were extraterrestrial.

This highlights Montoya's last explosive outburst: "I tell you that they were not from this world." This is subject to two interpretations: either he was telling the truth, and that was his genuine impression (about which, in any case, he may have been mistaken), *or* Montoya is telling his friend

Anaya what he had been *ordered* to tell him. In other words, by the logic of the case, one cannot assume that the extraterrestrial explanation of the remark is the *only* possible explanation for it.

In fact, it was revisionist researchers Thomas J. Carey and Donald R. Schmitt who later uncovered yet another fascinating detail to the Montoya episode, for over the years after the initial incident, Montoya's friend Ruben Anaya would try time and again to get him to talk about it. Montoya would warn him off the subject by saying, "It's too dangerous to talk about. The FBI will do away with you."[81]

But that was not all.

Carey and Schmitt discovered that a different appeal was tried on then U.S. Senator Joseph Montoya by his longtime adversary, Senator Dennis Chavez:

> Sometime after Montoya's experience in the hangar, as Ruben Anaya recalled it, Senator Chavez summoned him, his brother Pete, Moses Burrola, and Ralph Chaes to the Nickson Hotel where he was staying to discuss something. After preliminaries, Chavez bluntly told them, "Joe Montoya is a damn liar! He didn't see anything. It was a secret project, and it could hurt us with Russia and Germany if word of it got it."[82]

But what sort of secret project would hurt American relations specifically with those two countries? Why would they specifically be involved in any repercussions? The answers to those questions will have to wait for Part Three.

j. Radar Tracking of the Craft

Another new detail in the revisionist scenario is the tracking of the object – whatever it was – by radar prior to its crash, indicating military interest and involvement long before Mac Brazel showed up in Roswell with his box of debris. According to Randle and Schmitt, Steve MacKenzie was then stationed at the Roswell air base, when he was telephoned by Brigadier General Martin F. Scanlon, who ordered him to report to "the radar sites at

White Sands" where he was to meet with "two others with similar orders." They were all to monitor the object's movements and "report them directly to the general."[83]

According to Randle and Schmitt, radar operators at Roswell, White Sands, and Albuquerque were all convinced that the object was a real object and not merely an artifact of malfunctioning equipment or some other cause.[84]

> When MacKenzie reported that nothing had changed significantly during his twenty-four-hours watch, (General) Scalnon decided to end MacKenzie's part of the operation. Although MacKenzie was ordered back to Roswell, the operators at White Sands were told to continue to monitor the object, as were the radarmen at Roswell and Albuquerque.
>
> MacKenzie was in contact with Robert Thomas, an officer stationed in Washington, D.C., all during this time. *Thomas asked on several occasions if he should head out to New Mexico, but MacKenzie told him not to bother for the time being. The situation was still fluid, and he didn't know what would happen.* At two or three in the morning on July 4, however, Thomas called to inform MacKenzie he was on the way, explaining that he wanted to be on the scene in case something happened.[85]

This story, if true, would seem to indicate that whatever it was, it was *not* likely to have been an American black project, since an American project would not likely have elicited the concern of people in Washington.

The situation did indeed change, and, according to Randle and Schmitt, did in a radical way:

> The object, as displayed on the radar, seemed to pulsate, the blip growing larger and brightening before shrinking to its original size and dimming. This activity kept up for a short time and then the object blossomed into a sunburst and disappeared from the screen at about 11:30 P.M. Because there were three sites tracking the object, the army technicians were able to plot, within vague parameters, the location of the crash or landing.

> But the radar coverage in that section of New Mexico was not as complete as the military would have liked. The Capitan Mountains sit between the impact site and the radar sets of White Sands and Alamogordo. Other mountains rest between Albuquerque and Roswell. Coverage in some places did not extend below eight or nine thousand feet. That meant that the army, based on what it had learned while tracking the object at Roswell, knew that the object was down north of town. They just didn't have a precise location. A comprehensive search would be launched at sunrise (July 5, 1947).[86]

Again, if true, then this new detail clearly indicates that the military was quietly monitoring whatever was flying in the skies over New Mexico prior to Brazel's arrival in Roswell with a box full of debris, and if Randle and Schmitt are correct, had actually begun to search for the crash site and any related debris fields on July 5, 1947. Note also that the story, if true, indicates that the object was observed to "explode" on the radar screens in three different places, during the electrical storm on the night of July 4, 1947.

k. Walter Haut's Post-Mortem Affidavit and its Implications

First Lieutenant and Roswell base public information officer, Walter Haut, as is well known, put out the now famous press release about the U.S. Army having recovered a flying saucer on July 8, 1947. As has been seen in the previous chapter, there is every indication that Colonel Blanchard himself ordered the story to be put out in just that fashion. In their 2007 book *Witness to Roswell*, authors Thomas J. Carey and Donald R. Schmitt revealed that Haut had sworn an affidavit, to be unsealed only after his death. It makes for revealing reading, both for what it says, what it does *not* say, and for its implications:

SEALED AFFIDAVIT OF WALTER G. HAUT

DATE: December 26, 2002
WITNESS: Chris Xxxxx
NOTARY: Beverlee Morgan

(1) My name is Walter G. Haut
(2) I was born June 2, 1922.
(3) My address is 1405 W. 7th Street, Roswell, NM 88203
(4) I am retired.
(5) In July, 1947, I was stationed at the Roswell Army Air Base in Roswell, New Mexico, serving as the base Public Information Officer. I had spent the 4th of July weekend (Saturday, the 5th, and Sunday, the 6th) at my private residence about 10 miles north of the base, which was located south of town.
(6) I was aware that someone had reported the remains of a downed vehicle by midmorning after my return to duty at the base on Monday, July 7. I was aware that Major Jesse A. Marcel, head of intelligence, was sent by the base commander, Col. William Blanchard, to investigate.
(7) By late in the afternoon that same day, I would learn that additional civilian reports came in regarding a second site just north of Roswell. I would spend the better part of the day attending to my regular duties hearing little if anything more.
(8) *On Tuesday morning, July 8, I would attend the regularly scheduled staff meeting at 7:30 a.m. Besides Blanchard, Marcel; CIC Capt. Sheridan Cavitt;* Col. James I. Hopkins, the operations officer; Major Patrick Saunders, the base adjutant; Major Isadore Brown, the personnel officer; Lt. Col. Ulysses S. Nero, the supply officer; *and from Carswell AAF in Fort Worth, Texas, Blanchard's boss, Brig. Gen. Roger Ramey and his chief of staff, Col. Thomas J. DuBose were also in attendance.* The main topic of discussion was reported by Marcel and Cavitt regarding an extensive debris field in Lincoln County approximate 74 miles NW of Roswell. A preliminary briefing was provided by Blanchard about the second site approx. 40 miles north of town. Samples of wreckage were passed around the table. It was unlike any material I had or have ever seen in my life. Pieces, which resembled metal foil, paper thin yet extremely strong, and pieces with unusual markings along their

length were handled from man to man, each voicing their opinion. No one was able to identify the crash debris.

(9) *One of the main concerns discussed at the meeting was whether we should go public or not with the discovery. Gen Ramey proposed a plan, which I believe originated with his bosses at the Pentagon. Attention needed to be diverted from the more important site north of town by acknowledging the other location.* Too many civilians were already involved and the press already was informed. I was not completely informed how this would be accomplished.

(10) *At approximately 9:30 a.m. Col., Blanchard phoned my office and dictated the press release of having in our possession a flying disc, coming from a ranch northwest of Roswell, and Marcel flying the material to higher headquarters. I was to deliver the news release to radio stations KGFL and KSWS, and newspapers the Daily Record and the Morning Dispatch.*

(11) By the time the news had hit the wire services, my office was inundated with phone calls from around the world. Messages stacked up on my desk, and rather than deal with the media concern, Col. Blanchard suggested that I go home and "hide out."

(12) *Before leaving the base, Col. Blanchard took me personally to Building 84, a B-29 hangar located on the east side of the tarmac. Upon first approaching the building, I observed that it was under heavy guard both outside and inside. Once inside, I was permitted from a safe distance to first observe the object just recovered north of town.* ***It was approx. 12' to 15 feet in length, not quite as wide, about 6 feet high, and more of an egg shape. Lighting was poor, but its surface did appear metallic. No windows, portholes, wings, tail section, or landing gear were visible.***

(13) *Also from a distance, I was able to see a couple of bodies under a canvas tarpaulin. Only the heads extended beyond the covering, and I was not able to make out any features. The heads did appear larger than normal and the contour of the canvas over the bodies suggested the size of a 10-year-old child.* At a later date in Blanchard's office, he would extend his arm about 4 feet above the floor to indicate the height.

(14) I was informed of a temporary morgue set up to accommodate the recovered bodies.
(15) I was informed that the wreckage was no “hot” (radioactive).
(16) Upon his return from Fort Worth, Major Marcel described to me taking pieces of the wreckage to Gen. Ramey’s office and after returning a weather balloon and radar kite substituted while he was out of the room. Marcel was very upset over this situation. We would not discuss it again.
(17) I would be allowed to make at least one visit to one of the recovery sites during the military cleanup. I would return to the base with some of the wreckage which I would display in my office.
(18) I was aware two separate teams would return to each site months later for periodic searches for any remaining evidence.
(19) ***I am convinced that what I personally observed was some type of craft and its crew from outer space.***
(20) I have not been paid nor given anything of value to make this statement, and it is the truth to the best of my recollection.

THIS STATEMENT IS TO REMAIN SEALED AND SECURED UNTIL THE TIME OF MY DEATH, AT WHICH TIME MY SURVIVING FAMILY WILL DETERMINE ITS DISPOSITION.

Signed: Walter G. Haut
Signature Witnessed by: Chris Xxxxxx
Dated: December 26, 2002[87]

This affidavit is truly explosive, any which way one slices it.

As with other Roswell witness statements, we are first confronted by the now familiar pattern of ambiguity, for on the one hand, Haut clearly and explicitly states at the end of the affidavit that he believes that what he saw was the wreckage and crew of something extraterrestrial, “from outer space,” as he states it, yet, on the other hand, there is nothing within the details of the statement, either about the wreckage or the bodies, that compels necessarily to that conclusion. This is not to cast aspersions on

Haut nor on his motivations for releasing this information in this way, it is merely to call attention once again to the now familiar pattern.

There is, however, a much more important implication that clearly emerges from the affidavit, and that is that General Roger Ramey *was personally present at the base during the morning staff meeting on July 8.* This makes the two subsequent statements by Haut stand out all the more:

1) "Gen Ramey proposed a plan, which I believe originated with his bosses at the Pentagon. Attention needed to be diverted from the more important site north of town by acknowledging the other location;" and,
2) "At approximately 9:30 a.m. Col., Blanchard phoned my office and dictated the press release of having in our possession a flying disc, coming from a ranch northwest of Roswell, and Marcel flying the material to higher headquarters. I was to deliver the news release to radio stations KGFL and KSWS, and newspapers the *Daily Record* and the *Morning Dispatch*."

In other words, Haut seems to be strongly suggesting that the original "articulation," the original flying saucer story that ran in the July 8, 1947 *Roswell Daily Record* and in other papers around the nation, *was also a cover story, and that General Ramey, who would mere hours later put out the weather balloon story, was behind it and acting on orders from the Pentagon.*

To put it succinctly, it is beginning to look an awfully lot like our earlier supposition, that there are two cover stories – a "surface cover story" of weather balloons, and a deeper cover story of "flying saucers" and extraterrestrials – is making a great deal of sense. On this view it is even very remotely possible that Haut, prior to his death, is still acting under orders to perpetuate an "ET" explanation by his statement that he believed it to have been from outer space, but he is giving strong detailed indication in his earlier points that this, too, was part of a cover-up. He may have been simultaneously fulfilling the letter of his security obligations, and also fulfilling an obligation of conscience to tell the truth. While I regard this possibility as *extremely* unlikely, and that Haut meant what he said by his statement that he believed it originated from outer space, in either reading

of that statement, Haut is giving clear indication that there was a cover-up in place from the first issuance of his press release! In the final analysis, it is not necessary to "construct" an interpretation for Haut's remark about the craft being from outer space, for the details of his affidavit, as noted before, do not compel to that conclusion.

But the story of the Haut Affidavit is not yet concluded.

Roswell "Truth Seeker" Dennis Balthaser wrote an interesting article on his website, shortly after the appearance of the affidavit in Carey's and Schmitt's book. The article is entitled, appropriately enough, "Walter Haut, Roswell and a Whole Lotta Questions." The first question the article raised was precisely the conditions or situation under which the affidavit was signed:

> A few things are now known, and by Don Schmitt's own admission on the "Paracast radio show" recently, we have learned that Walter Haut did not write the affidavit he signed in 2002, but rather it was prepared for his signature based on comments and remarks Haut had made over a period of time to Schmitt, Carey and others.[88]

But that was not the only problem.

The other problem, as is evident from our own citation of the affidavit, is that the witness's "last name on the 2002 document is not shown, preventing any opportunity for verifying what that person witnessed."[89] Finally, as Balthaser points out, the whole "content and style of writing in the 2002 affidavit is totally different from the 1993 affidavit Haut wrote, in which he denied any involvement."[90] But the final problem was Haut himself, or rather, his memory:

> We also know that the oral history videotape of Walter Haut done on November 15, 2000 and copyrighted by Wendy Connors and myself shows a man that couldn't remember where he took basic training, names, dates, etc., while the 2002 affidavit is very detailed and precise with information Haut could accurately remember 2 years after he was video taped (sic). Under constant questioning by Wendy Connors during the video interview in 2000, Walter did agree to several points mentioned in the 2002 affidavit such as seeing a body, a

> meeting in Roswell with General Ramey and Colonel DuBose present, leaving me with the impression of not knowing if he was still trying to cover-up what he knew during our video taping(sic), or actually couldn't remember. All quite different than the 2002 written affidavit.[91]

The bottom line for Balthaser is that "we now know that he didn't write the affidavit, nor are we able at this time to determine under what conditions it was signed."[92]

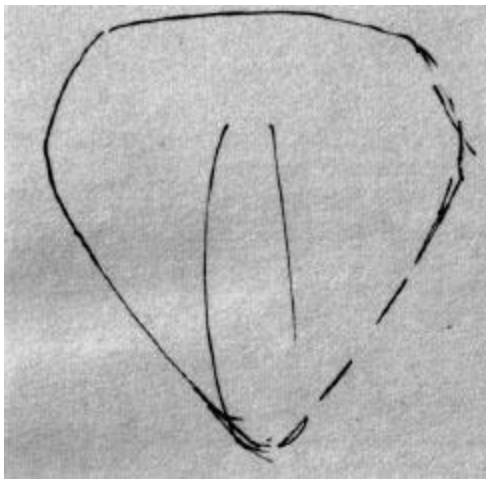
Balthaser readily grants that the central implication of the 2002 affidavit – the presence in Roswell on July 8 at the morning staff meeting of General Roger Ramey and his chief of staff, Colonel Dubose — is "of utmost importance to the research of the Roswell Incident."[93] He then asks, if such a meeting in fact occurred, why it was necessary for Major Marcel to fly the debris to Fort Worth later that day "Since they had all handled the debris in the meeting and apparently set up the cover-up operation?"[94] But if the meeting truly took place as the affidavit describes, then the answer is implicit in the question: the flight to Fort Worth and the subsequent press conference with Marcel and Ramey holding pieces of a weather balloon, was itself part of the agreed upon plan of deception.

The 2002 Haut Affidavit thus, for the moment, must be placed in what Stanton Friedman calls his "gray basket," for neither can one hundred percent credibility be ascribed to it, nor can it be entirely dismissed, since Balthaser's and Connor's 2000 interview itself mentioned the presence of General Ramey and Colonel DuBose at the July 8 morning staff meeting. However, *if* it is eventually proven as genuine, then as has been briefly argued above, it does little to advance the cause of an extraterrestrial interpretation of Roswell. And if, on the other hand, it is eventually proven as a hoaxed document, the extraterrestrial cause is hardly advanced by that case either.

l. Don Schmitt's Illustration of the Craft and the Testors' Model Rendition

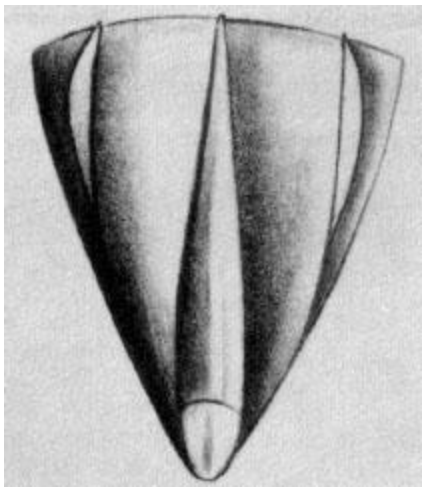
Not all the revisionist scenario elaborated by Randle and Schmitt can be dealt with entirely with words, for one of the major highlights of their book

The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell is that Schmitt, a capable drawer, was able to sketch an overhead view of what the craft allegedly looked like, based in turn on sketches of "a first-hand witness, a high-ranking army officer stationed at Roswell."[95] That witness, whose name Randle and Schmitt never disclose, allegedly drew the following sketch on July 26, 1947:



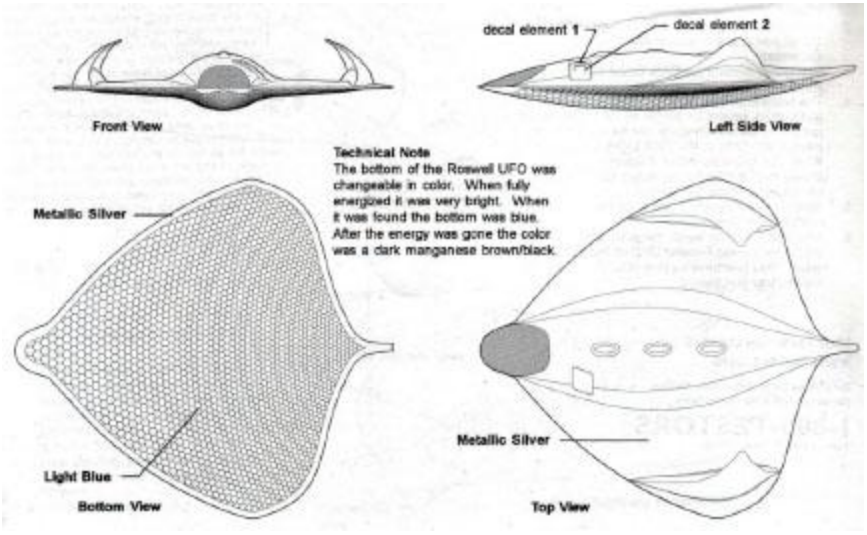
The Original Hand-Drawn Sketch by a "High-Ranking Army Officer Stationed at Roswell," which sketch was allegedly drawn on July 26, 1947[96]

Schmitt then re-drew the sketch, adding shading and appropriate details as described by the anonymous source, and produced the following sketch:



The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell's *Co-Author, Don Schmitt's, Sketch of the Craft, Based upon the Previous Sketch and Descriptions*[97]

Interestingly enough, it would appear that Schmitt's sketch became the basis for the Testors Model Company's plastic model kit of the Roswell craft:

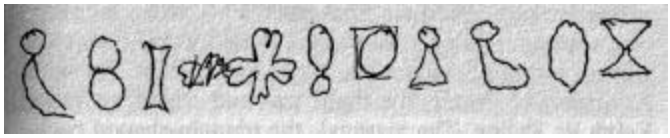


Testors Model Kit Diagram of the Roswell Craft from its Instruction Manual (Note the Painting Color Schematic Suggested)

Whatever the validity or resemblance of Schmitt's or the Testors kit's reconstructions to the actual craft may be, their versions are very suggestive of some very terrestrial designs.

m. Jesse Marcel Jr's Hieroglyphics

In the same class of pictorial details that become part of the revisionist scenario, Randle and Schmitt persuaded Jesse Marcel Jr., M.D., to undergo regressive hypnosis to see if he could recall and draw the shapes of the hieroglyphic pictograms he and his father saw on some of the Roswell debris.[98]



Jesse Marcel Jr's Hand-drawn Heiroglyphics, Drawn under Hypnosis[99]

Whether or not these symbols represent something terrestrial or extraterrestrial remains to be seen, but they do constitute the only pictorial basis on which to rationalize a possibly explanation.

B. Taking Account of "All the Evidence"

So what does one have at the end of this outline of the revisionist scenario?

It is best to let its principal exponents, Randle and Schmitt, state the case in their own words:

> In short, no *mundane* explanation works. A (black projects) craft classified as top secret in 1947 would no longer be classified today…
>
> Balloons, practice atomic bombs, experimental aircraft, and Soviet spy planes cannot have been responsible for the debris discovered by

> Mac Brazel. No alternative, *nonextraordinary* hypotheses account for the strange metals with strange properties described by the men and women who handled them. No evidence attests to the presence of a balloon, a practice bomb, or an experimental aircraft. Such explanations have one fatal fact in common: an utter absence of supporting evidence.[100]

Note the clever word-craft and the tendentiousness of these remarks, for *any* terrestrial explanation has been reduced to the "mundane" and "non-extraordinary." And there is a hidden logic at work here, one which Randle and Schmitt explicitly state: *any* top secret project *could not be* advanced enough to be kept secret this long.

But this merely assumes two things: firstly, that no human technological advance can be decades in advance of the public knowledge — a dubious assumption at best, and, as will become evident in Part Three, a fallacious one as well. However, their remarks also assume that such technological prowess would be the only conceivable rational explanation for keeping things covered-up for so long in a veil and mantle of classification and cover stories, barring an extraterrestrial interpretation. But there are, in fact, other possibilities for doing so: there could be *moral* or *political* reasons for doing so; merely to exclude a technological reason does *not* logically exhaust all terrestrial possibilities.

Randle and Schmitt, however, will have none of it, for they state their case with a dangerous extremity and tendentiousness that Berlitz and Moore, and Berliner and Friedman, before them, avoided: "*No* mundane explanation works."

1. Randle and Schmitt on the Debris, the Bodies, and "Other Explanations"

Behind all the witnesses and stories, the Roswell Incident and its interpretation is ultimately about two basic datasets: the debris, and the bodies, and Randle's and Schmitt's dangerous tendentiousness is even more in evidence with their handling of the summary of the relative weight and consistency of the testimonies regarding each, and again, they state their overall case with a directness, an all-encompassing universality, and sweeping claim that leaves them little margin for error or maneuver: "When

all the evidence is examined, the possibility that Roswell can be explained in the mundane drops to zero."[101]

While Randle and Schmitt argue a convincing case throughout their books that the balloon explanation is inadequate,[102] they also point out the obvious fact that "Balloons were used as a cover to eliminate speculation about the identification of the object that crashed."[103] But whatever its genuine or contrived status may be, the 2002 Haut Affidavit also makes it clear that the flying saucer story, and by implication the associated "extraterrestrial" origin of it, is logically conceivable as a cover story in itself. In short, "extraterrestrials" can function every bit as nicely as a "cover to eliminate speculation about the identification of the object that crashed" as balloons can.

As for the crash of an American black project, Randle and Schmitt point out the obvious difficulty of this explanation as well: "What sort of experimental aircraft was being tested in New Mexico… at night… during a storm? Again, there are no records available anywhere that attest to any type of balloon experiment or experimental aircraft test late on the evening of July 4."[104] Indeed, they are correct, for the logic of such a test, at night, during a storm, makes no sense. What crashed could not have been American. And this brings them back to the two essential datasets any theory of the Roswell Incident must rationalize: the debris, and the bodies.

Concerning the debris, however, again Randle and Schmitt make some very sweeping claims:

> There were three types of debris that were consistently described by the witnesses. First, by far the most common, was the foil that was thicker than normal aluminum foil, more like a lead foil. But unlike either of those, this foil, when folded or wadded into a ball, would unfold itself, with no sign of a crease. Among the witnesses to the foil are Bill Brazel, Frankie Rowe, Robert Smith, Sallye Tadolini, and Jim Ragsdale.
>
> Second, Bill Brazel talked of the lightweight material that reminded him of balsa wood but that was so strong that it couldn't be cut. Loretta Proctor handled something with similar properties. Rickett, Marcel, Easley, Boldra, Kromschroeder, and W.E. Lounsbury talked of

lightweight material “as thin as newsprint” that couldn’t be bent or marked.

Finally, there were the wirelike pieces that Bill Brazel described as flexible. He said that he could shine a light in one end and it would come out the other no matter how he twisted the wire around. This sounds suspiciously like fiber optics.

These are the eyewitnesses who saw or handled the debris found on either the debris field or the impact site — dozens of people who saw the material and who describe it in the same terms over and over. These remains are not the stuff of balloons, experimental aircraft, or rockets….

The point is that *no such material exists today.* There are, after a fashion, molecules with a memory…

(Hmmm!)

…but nothing that can be twisted out of shape and then return to its original shape when the pressure is released.

The question becomes, who was making material with such strange properties in 1947? Why isn’t there a hint of that material anywhere today?[105]

It will be discovered in Part Three that Randle and Schmitt are off by no less than fifteen years, for the first such material was in fact discovered in 1932! And that raises the thorny question of what enough money, manpower, and research might have been able to accomplish between 1932 and 1947.

This tendentiousness regarding the potential technology represented by the debris is brought into full illumination by a comment that they make in their previous book:

If (Major Jesse Marcel Sr) had somehow been fooled by mundane wreckage picked up under extraordinary circumstances, Blanchard, or one of his staff, would have been able to identify it. Certainly, before

> they announced to the world they had a flying saucer, they would have made sure that it couldn't be explained by the mundane.[106]

But in "seeking to explain all the facts" Randle and Schmitt seem to have forgotten that their explanation does not encompass all the logical possibilities, for it is equally possible that Marcel and Blanchard *did* have suspicions about the origin of the debris, and, as the 2002 Haut Affidavit logically suggests, contrived a cover story to deflect attention and speculation away from consideration of possible terrestrial sources.

This makes their following comment even more interesting:

> The unusual qualities of the material described to date by fourteen known eyewitnesses are consistent in every detail. In appearance, tensile strength, apparent weightlessness, memory characteristics, uninterpretable symbology, and plastic-like, metal-like composition, its physical makeup would be difficult to duplicate even by today's standards.[107]

But "difficult" is not "impossible," especially if one of those alleged characteristics, the memory characteristic, was, as alluded to above, first discovered in 1932, and given a great deal of money and research to investigate.

2. Colonel Blanchard's Strange Remark to His Wife

In this respect it is also worth noting what Randle and Schmitt themselves record about Colonel Blanchard's first reaction to the material:

> Colonel William Blanchard (commander of the 509th Bomb Group), Major Jesse A. Marcel (the air intelligence officer), and a man in civilian clothes (a counter-intelligence agent) responded to the sheriff's call. According to Phyllis McGuire, daughter of the sheriff, the military arrived almost as soon as the sheriff had hung up the phone. The officers interviewed Brazel, *examined some pieces of the*

> *material*, and then Blanchard ordered Marcel and the CIC man to accompany Brazel to the ranch.
>
> Blanchard, sure that he was in possession of something unusual, alerted the next higher headquarters. According to Blanchard's first wife, Ethyl, he thought that they might have found something that belonged to the Soviets. No one mentioned any type of balloon.[108]

And no one was mentioning an extraterrestrial craft either, for obviously, something "Soviet" implies something terrestrial. Time and again we are reminded by the proponents of the extraterrestrial explanation of the Roswell Incident that Blanchard and Marcel and others of the 509th Bomb Group were members of the only atomic bomb group in the world at that time, and that they were all hand-picked, highly trained officers, and that we should trust their judgments.

The same holds equally true, therefore, for Blanchard's first instincts that he was holding something not only highly unusual and exotic, but very terrestrial.

3. The Pathology of a Methodology: The Primacy of the Bodies

All of this brings us, finally, to what is the real centerpiece of their argument that the Roswell Incident was something extraterrestrial and unearthly, whose origins were "not of this world." Randle and Schmitt state that "Witness descriptions" of the bodies "make it clear that they were neither human nor animal."[109] But as is by now abundantly clear from the numerous citations their own witnesses has demonstrated, time and again they describe the bodies as "children," or "ten-year-old children," or "midgets," occasionally adding details such as large heads, small mouths, slender fragile bodies, and so on. In short, there is nothing about these details compelling to the conclusion that the bodies were in fact those of extraterrestrials. In only one instance, that of Melvin Brown, is there a detail that *does* persuasively suggest an extraterrestrial origin: that of "yellowish-orange" skin that was leathery and beaded, like a lizard's skin. Thus, notwithstanding the fact that most of the witnesses to the bodies are

from the same military as was putting out stories of recovered flying saucers and crashed weather balloons,[110] their descriptions of the bodies' physiological characteristics are also remarkably consistent.[111]

So what is the importance of the bodies vis-à-vis the debris? It is the same primacy of bodies over debris that was encountered in our examination of Berliner and Friedman's articulation of the Incident: "The debris itself could be explained in an ordinary way. Metal was metal and wires were wires, even if that metal and those wires seemed to be extraordinary. Bodies, however, could not be explained so easily."[112] It comes back, once more, to bodies:

> What we are left with, then, is a large body of eyewitness testimony to the high strangeness of the debris. Thin metal of extraordinary strength; foil that unfolds itself, assuming its original shape; strands of "wire" that sound like fiber optics; and I beams that flex. No one has been able to discover a single example of this material from that time frame. The properties described are unique.
>
> While it is true there are always rumors of classified materials that can match those descriptions, *when the conversation turns to the bodies, the debate ends. There is no way to explain them.*[113]

Poppycock and balderdash. There are certainly terrestrial explanations for large heads, small bodies, and their midget-like child-like appearance. The only thing really with which we must contend is that one detail — beady yellowish orange lizard-like skin — of one witness, Melvin Brown.

All the rest, as will eventually be seen, is "rationalizable" on a terrestrial basis.

What Randle and Schmitt's pathological methodology actually exposes is the fact — perhaps one might even say the intuition or suspicion — among extraterrestrial proponents of the Roswell Incident that the technology is not exotic nor compelling enough to be extraterrestrial. They have consequently had to exalt the exotic status of the bodies to mythical, extraterrestrial proportions.

In doing so, they have made a critical, strategic, error fatal to their case.

[1] Kevin D. Randle and Donald R. Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell* (New York: Avon Books, 1994), p. 174, emphasis added.

[2] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, pp. 196-197.

[3] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 189.

[4] Ibid., p. 190.

[5] Ibid.

[6] Ibid., p. 191.

[7] Ibid.

[8] Ibid.

[9] Ibid.

[10] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 191

[11] Ibid., p. 20.

[12] Ibid.

[13] Ibid.

[14] Ibid., p. 21.

[15] Ibid.

[16] Ibid.

[17] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 22.

[18] Ibid.

[19] Ibid., p. 130.

[20] Ibid., p. 131.

[21] Ibid.

[22] Ibid.

[23] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 132.

[24] Ibid.

[25] Ibid.

[26] Thomas J. Carey and Donald R. Schmitt, *Witness to Roswell: Unmasking the 60-Year Cover-up* (Franklin Lakes, New Jersey: New Page

Books, 2007), p. 57.

[27] Thomas J. Carey and Donald R. Schmitt, *Witness to Roswell*, pp. 58-59, emphasis in the original. It should be noted that Carey and Schmitt state explicity that this was their reconstruction "of Frank Joyce's account of his initial conversation with Mack Brazel on the afternoon of July 6, 1947, shortly after Brazel had arrived in Roswell to report his discovery, as revealed to us for the first time by Frank Joyce."(p. 58.)

[28] Kavin D. Randle (Capt. U.S.A.F.R.) and Donald R. Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell* (New York: Avon Books, 1991), p. 22.

[29] Randle and Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, pp. 41-42, emphasis added.

[30] Ibid., p. 42.

[31] Randle and Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 42.

[32] Ibid.

[33] Ibid.

[34] Ibid., p. 79.

[35] Randle and Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 161.

[36] Ibid.

[37] Ibid.

[38] Randle and Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 166.

[39] Ibid.

[40] Ibid., pp. 166-167.

[41] Ibid., p. 215.

[42] Randle and Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 204. Randle and Schmitt maintain that the arrangements for the flight were begun at Andrews air base on the 8th, making it likely the flight landed in Roswell sometime on the 9th.

[43] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 82.

[44] Ibid., pp. 82-83.

[45] Randle and Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, pp. 90-91.

[46] Randle and Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 90, compare with their statements in *The Truth About the Roswell UFO Crash*, pp. 189-191.

[47] Randle and Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 95.

[48] Ibid.

[49] Ibid.

[50] Ibid., p. 96.

[51] Randle and Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 82.

[52] Ibid., pp. 82-83.

[53] Randle and Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 93.

[54] Ibid., pp. 93-94.

[55] Ibid., p. 94.

[56] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 148.

[57] Ibid., p. 3.

[58] Ibid.

[59] Ibid.

[60] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 4.

[61] Ibid.

[62] Ibid., p. 8.

[63] Ibid., pp. 8-9, emphasis added.

[64] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 9.

[65] Ibid., p. 13.

[66] Ibid., p. 9.

[67] Ibid., p. 14.

[68] Ibid., pp. 18-19.

[69] Ibid., p. 20.

[70] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, pp. 26-27, emphasis added.

[71] Ibid., p. 27.

[72] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, pp. 27-28.

[73] Thomas J. Carey and Donald R. Schmitt, *Witness to Roswell*, p. 132.

[74] Ibid., p. 134.

[75] Ibid., p. 135.

[76] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 22.

[77] Ibid., pp. 22-23.

[78] Ibid., p. 23.

[79] Ibid.

[80] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, pp. 23-24, emphasis added.

[81] Cary and Schmitt, *Witness to Roswell*, p. 90.

[82] Ibid.

[83] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 5.

[84] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 5.

[85] Ibid., p. 6, emphasis added.

[86] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, pp. 6-7.

[87] Carey and Schmitt, *Witness to Roswell*, pp. 215-217, all emphases added.

[88] Dennis Balthaser, "Walter Haut, Roswell and a Whole Lotta Questions," October 1, 2007, www.truthseekeratroswell.com/ed100107.html, p. 1.

[89] Ibid., p. 2.

[90] Ibid.

[91] Dennis Balthaser, "Walter Haut, Roswell and a Whole Lotta Questions," October 1, 2007, www.truthseekeratroswell.com/ed100107.html, p. 2.

[92] Ibid., p. 2.

[93] Ibid.

[94] Ibid. Balthaser lists a series of significant questions that pertain to the affidavit and its release on p. 3 of his editorial.

[95] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, no page, picture caption from the beginning of the photographic insert.

[96] Ibid.

[97] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, no page, picture caption from the beginning of the photographic insert.

[98] Randle and Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, pp. 174-175. Ibid., p. 175.

[99] Ibid., p. 175.

[100] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, pp. 162-163, emphases added.

[101] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 164, emphasis Randle's and Schmitt's.

[102] As will be seen in chapter six, Randle, after his break with Don Schmitt, also makes somewhat short work of skeptic Karl Pflock's and the U.S. Air Force's Project Mogul balloon explanation.

[103] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 166.

[104] Ibid., p. 167.

[105] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, pp. 172-173, emphasis added. This survey of the revisionist scenario has not been able, due to the shortness of space, to include a discussion of all the witnesses that Randle and Schmitt enumerate.

[106] Randle and Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 69, emphasis added.

[107] Ibid., pp. 228-229.

[108] Randle and Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, pp. 201-202, emphasis added.

[109] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 149.

[110] Randle and Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 113: "Firsthand witnesses to the bodies were few and almost all of them were military personnel…"

[111] Ibid., p. 229.

[112] Ibid., p. 113.

[113] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 177, emphasis added.

5
The Fifth Articulation: The Skeptics, the Balloon, and the Hot Air Force

"The relevant issue is not how many *witnesses were interviewed but rather what*
type *of witnesses… these people are and how truthful and accurate their*
statements are."
Kal K. Korff[1]

"A good deal of what has been accepted as fact about this case — both pro and
con, though mostly the former — is unacknowledged speculation; or comes to us
from less than credible witnesses; or is the result of a troubling mixture of faulty
analysis, conclusion jumping, and failure to address 'inconvenient' facts and
contradictions because of an overwhelming will to believe."
Karl T. Pflock[2]

There are essentially two approaches to skepticism regarding the extraterrestrial interpretation of the Roswell Incident. The first simply examines the various claims, subjects the adduced witnesses to close vetting and scrutiny, and challenges the basic assumptions underpinning that interpretation. The second does all this, but also goes on to propose its own terrestrial explanation of the Incident, usually by proposing very mundane solutions, such as resurrecting the U.S. Army Air Force's own balloon

explanation, this time dressed up in new Mogul balloon clothing and the latest "official" explanation.

In surveying the skeptical response to the claims of a crashed extraterrestrial craft at Roswell in 1947, we shall concentrate on the second type, and its two most capable, and indeed formidable proponents, Kal Korff, and Karl Pflock.[3] Both men subject the Roswell story — both in its standard Berlitz-Moore and Berliner-Friedman, and in its revisionist Randle-Schmitt versions — to a critical analysis, and offer in turn a very plausible, very terrestrial, and in the end, very mundane interpretation.

A. Kal Korff

1. And the Witnesses

As already noted in previous chapters, many of the "hundreds of witnesses" to the Roswell Incident are in fact second-hand witnesses presenting hearsay testimony, often of things they heard from other people, who are in turn dead. As Kal. Korff observes, this number is "at first impressive,"[4] but as he also astutely observes, "the relevant issue is not *how many* witnesses were interviewed but rather what *type* of witnesses (i.e., firsthand, secondhand, etc.) these people are and how truthful and accurate their statements are."[5]

When this problem is examined in detail and then compared with the actual numbers of witnesses, yet another problem begins to emerge for any presentation of the Roswell Incident, whether the "standard scenario" of Berlitz and Moore, and Berliner and Friedman, or the "revisionist scenario of Randle, Schmitt, and Carey:

> Unfortunately, a careful reading of Moore and Berlitz's *Roswell Incident* reveals that despite the impressive claim of having "interviewed more than seventy witnesses," the testimonies of just *twenty-five* people are presented. Out of these twenty-five, only *seven* of them are *firsthand* sources who claim to have *seen* the alleged saucer debris, and one of these accounts is suspect. Of these seven people, however, only *five* of them claim to have actually handled the

material personally and one of them is adamant that it was not from an extraterrestrial spacecraft.[6]

Though it is not mentioned by Korff, some of the testimony concerning descriptions of "alien" bodies comes from witnesses whose credibility has been impeached, as was seen in the previous chapter in the case of Glenn Dennis' story of his nurse friend. In any case, Korff notes that such secondhand testimony would not be admissible in an American court of law.[7]

With these general observations in hand, Korff turns to an examination of certain crucial features in the Roswell Incident. It should be noted that as both Korff and Pflock cover many of these same incidents in the same manner, in order to avoid duplication, I shall concentrate on certain incidents in each case when summarizing each researcher's individual findings, with the exceptions of Frank Kaufman and Jim Ragsdale, two key "witnesses" in the emergence of the "revisionist scenario."

a. The "Collapse" of the Lydia Sleppy "Interrupted Teletype" Story

As has already been detailed, Berliner and Friedman maintain that when Albuquerque radio station KOAT employee Lydia Sleppy was attempting to transmit the Roswell story over the wire, the transmission was abruptly halted by the FBI, which ordered her to stop transmission. "Friedman," notes Korff, "claims this came as no surprise, 'in view of all the classified work that was going on at that time.'"[8]

Deciding to check the details of this story, Korff contacted the FBI headquarters in Washington, D.C. as well as the FBI field office in Dallas, Texas. What Korff learned from both offices was that there was no such system of monitoring any news transmissions in place at that time.[9] More importantly, Korff learned that the particular teletype machine she used at that time "had both send and receive capabilities. This discovery seemed to initially support the feasibility of Sleppy's story."[10] However, according to Korffin order for Sleppy to have received any incoming message, a bell on the teletype machine would have rung to inform her that a transmission was

incoming. She would “have to have then thrown a *manual switch* to put the teletype machine into the ‘receive’ mode!”[11] But Sleppy claimed in her story that “she was on the phone with reporter Johnny McBoyle at the time of the alleged transmission.”[12] Korff seems to be implying that Sleppy could not be on the phone and flip the manual teletype switch at the same time. If so, then, to this author, this seems a little far-fetched.

But Korff’s main point remains: according to the FBI itself, it had no such system in place at that time to monitor any news transmissions over the press wires. His conclusion is sharp and direct: “Although conspiracy buffs will no doubt cry ‘cover-up,’ the burden of proof remains on *their* shoulders. Until such evidence is forthcoming, the statements made by the FBI must stand.”[13] Strictly speaking, this is quite true.[14]

b. The Collapse of the Lieutenant Governor Joseph Montoya Story

One of the salient features of the “revisionist scenario” was the allegation of Ruben Anaya, close friend of then New Mexico Lieutenant Governor Joseph Montoya, later a U.S. Congressman and finally a U.S. Senator from that state. As was seen in the previous chapter, Anaya claimed to have picked up Montoya at the Roswell Air base, later learning that Montoya maintained he saw wreckage and strange bodies.

Korff notes that the principal difficulty with Anaya’s story is that there are no records that Lieutenant Governor Montoya travelled anywhere in the early weeks of July 1947,[15] but remained in the state’s capital, Santa Fe. Additionally, the Roswell air base’s official visitors logs for the entire month of July 1947 reveal that Montoya did not visit the base.[16]

c. The Collapse of the Melvin Brown Story

As has been seen, the story of Sergeant Melvin Brown is another key item in the Roswell Incident, since Brown described rather different characteristics for the “aliens” allegedly recovered at Roswell, describing them as having lizard-like beady, leathery, and yellowish-orange skin. Korff points out firstly that, like so many other Roswell witnesses, Brown’s

testimony is not firsthand.[17] All of the details Brown allegedly described came "from only one source: his daughter, Beverly Bean,"[18] who first related them, two years after her father's death, to British UFO researcher Timothy Good in 1988. She then repeated her story to Stanton "Friedman in 1989, and (to) Randle and Schmitt in 1990 and 1991."[19] The latter two authors, moreover, utilized what may best be considered "journalistic license" according to Korff:

> Moreover, in what are blatant examples of what I will politely call journalistic license, Randle and Schmitt write phrases in their books such as "*Brown said* that (the crate) had been prepared for shipment (of the alien bodies) out that night" and "*According to him* (Brown), (the aliens) were smaller than human and had a skin that was yellowish-orange and like that of a lizard, meaning it was leathery and beaded, but not scaly."
>
> Obviously, since Brown was *never interviewed by anyone* and had died roughly four years *before* Randle and Schmitt were told about his purported "remarks" from his daughter, *one does not know* with any certainty that "Brown said" anything, contrary to what the authors claim.
>
> Indeed, a more honest way for Randle and Schmitt to convey Brown's alleged testimony in their books would have been to preface their dogmatic declarations with simple phrases such as "According to Beverly Bean, Brown's daughter, he said…." Instead, Randle and Schmitt's presentation, as written, is misleading if not followed carefully by the discerning reader.[20]

Nor are Berliner and Friedman exempt from the practice of using "journalistic license," for when they introduce the testimony of Brown, they "start by saying 'Another man who saw bodies was Sgt. Melvin E. Brown….'"[21]

Then what of Brown's daughter, Beverly Bean herself? Is she a credible secondhand source of information?

> Do her comments constitute credible evidence for the presence of alieans in the Roswell stewpot of claims? Unfortunately, there are

> problems with several aspects of Bean's various accounts which cast doubt on their veracity. Like so many other so-called witnesses to Roswell, Bean has changed her story over the years.[22]

When first interviewed by British researcher Timothy Good, Bean claimed that her father first informed her about having been involved with the shipment of alien bodies after reading an article about Roswell in the British tabloid *The Daily Mail*. Later, however, when interviewed by Stanton Friedman,

> Bean told a significantly different story. Instead of her father having first told her about his involvement with the recovery of the aliens after reading the article in the *Daily Mail*, Bean told Friedman: "when we were young, he (Brown) used to tell us stories about things that had happened to him when he was young. We got to know those stories by heart and would all say together, 'Here we go again!'"
>
> "Sometimes, but not too often, he used to say that he saw a man from outer space. That used to make us all giggle like mad."[23]

But that was not the end of the saga. When interviewed by Randle and Schmitt, Bean changed her story yet again, maintaining that her father had first told them that he had seen aliens at Roswell while they were watching the Apollo moon landings in 1969.[24]

There's more.

Brown's military records indicated that his duties while he was stationed at the Roswell air base "were limited to that of being a cook."[25] Brown was never involved in any intelligence or counter-intelligence duties, making it highly unlikely

> That Melvin Brown would have been chosen to carry out the all-important task of "escorting" the recovered extraterrestrials back to the base at Roswell. Of the thousands of personnel stationed at Roswell Army Air Field in 1947, there were simply too many others who would have been chosen for this task.[26]

This author concurs with the implications of Korff's argument: Beverly Bean's testimony is simply not credible, and therefore, the whole Melvin Brown description of the alleged aliens must be discounted. Indeed, as Korff observes, Brown's (or rather, Bean's) description of the dead aliens is entirely inconsistent with all other descriptions by Roswell "witnesses."[27] Since the entire story of Melvin Brown now stands as lacking credibility, this means one is left with the basic description of the bodies as being small, humanoid, with large heads and eyes, small mouths, bald, hairless, and so on. And, as already noted, these details are not sufficient to compel to the conclusion that the bodies — if indeed there were any — were of extraterrestrial origin.

d. The Collapse of the Glenn Dennis Story

As noted in the previous chapter, not even revisionist scenario proponents and Roswell "true believers" Thomas Carey and Donald Schmitt any longer accept Glenn Dennis' story of the nurse, and her description of the bodies. As his entire story — and therewith its secondhand description of dead aliens by the nurse — now stands impeached even among the revisionists, we simply note that Korff's main difficulty with Dennis' story is precisely its changing, ever-embellished details over time,[28] and that his own efforts to track down the alleged nurse met with similar difficulties as other researchers.[29]

e. The Collapse of the Frank Kaufmann Story

Two of the key "witnesses" in the revisionist scenario were Frank Kaufmann and Jim Ragsdale, and accordingly, both Korff's and Pflock's analysis of their testimonies will be summarized here. In Korff's presentation there are essentially four problems to Kaufman: firstly, Kaufman is not "universally endorsed" as a credible witness by researchers advocating the extraterrestrial interpretation of the Incident; secondly, Randle and Schmitt actually presented Kaufman in their two books as three entirely different people; thirdly, Kaufman, by his own statements, appears

to have been involved at *nearly every* crucial moment of the Roswell Incident; and finally, there are too many internal contradictions in Kaufman's story.

(1) Kaufman's Lack of "Universal Endorsement"

Korff notes that, according to Randle and Schmitt, "Kaufman is the central character in what took place and is 'Roswell's' most important witness."[30] While Kaufman may be, for Randle and Schmitt, the witness with top billing on the Roswell marquee, Friedman does not view Kaufman as a credible witness.[31]

(2) Randle and Schmitt's Presentation of Kaufman as Three Different People

Korff notes that one of the biggest problems in the Kaufmann story was in the rather disingenuous manner in which Randle and Schmitt chose to present it:

> In what is a somewhat misleading and downright confusing portrayal, Randle and Schmitt in their two books present Kaufmann as *three different people!* Using various names that Randle made up (literally), such as Joseph Osborn and Frank MacKenzie, the authors present the numerous accounts of Kaufmann and weave them throughout their narrative as if they're the actions of separate people. In truth, it's all Frank Kaufmann as the source.[32]

Note that the tale of Frank MacKenzie being assigned to a special "radar watch" of the New Mexico UFOs is in fact Frank Kaufmann! But why would Randle and Schmitt resort to such a tactic? One answer is that by doing so, Kaufmann's tales might be rendered more palatable.

(3) Kaufman's Appearance at Nearly Every Critical Juncture of the Roswell Story

Korff hints at this possibility in a witty passage that suggests that Kaufman himself — not Major Jesse Marcel, not Colonel Blanchard, not Max Brazel or General Ramey nor even General Nathan Twining — is at the center of the Roswell maelstrom, at least, according to Kaufmann:

> Frank Kaufman has the distinction of being the only "witness" to have participated in virtually every aspect of the Roswell incident. He observed the UFO on radar as a member of a secret military elite unit. He was there observing on the radar screen the very moment the UFO crashed and its location was triangulated. Kaufman was ordered out to the crash site where he saw both the spaceship and five dead extraterrestrials. But wait, there's more! Frank Kaufman was a privileged member of an elite UFO recovery team, "The Unholy 13," that still exists today!
>
> UFO researcher Karl Pflock has written extensively about the ongoing saga and tales of Frank Kaufman. To put it politely, they are voluminous: a whole book could be written about them and nothing else. Kaufman can show you drawings of both the craft and the aliens. He can also tell you which technologies of modern science are a direct result of reverse-engineering the technology of the crashed UFO. Kaufman can also show you still-classified and secret government documents concerning Roswell. Kaufman can sketch out various components of the inner workings of the saucer. Dubbed by writer Arthur S. Levine as the "Zelig of Roswell," Kaufman has literally seen and done it all.[33]

As Korff notes, Kaufman-"MacKenzie's" story about being present at a secret radar tracking assignment of the UFO makes no sense, since the radar sets of 1947 were too primitive to detect an object being struck by lightning and ballooning on the radar screen like an explosion.[34] The other major difficulty with his radar story is simply that the radar set at White Sands at the time simply did not have the range to track any object near Roswell, thus making his claimed triangulation impossible.[35]

(4) Too Many Internal Contradictions

As if that were not enough, Kaufman, in his pseudonym guise as “Frank MacKenzie,” claimed to have been assigned to his secret radar duty by General Scanlon, which was, of course, in 1947. However, “Kaufman would later admit that he was *discharged* from the service in 1945, some two years before!”[36] To put it bluntly, Kaufman’s 37 imaginative stories are “just not credible.”[37] His statements cannot be accepted as credible, and with that, another “witness” to the recovery of “alien bodies” disappears.

f. Jim Ragsdale and the Golden Helmets

Jim Ragsdale, another crucial “witness” for the revisionist scenario, suffers from the same credibility problem as so many others: an ever-evolving and embellished story. Initially, it will be recalled, Ragsdale claimed to have come upon the primary crash site with his companion, Trudy Truelove, and seen bodies scattered around the craft.[38]

> However, over the next few months Ragsdale began to tell a more elaborate story of having actually gone down to the hull of the spaceship, where he now said there were four bodies. Not stopping there, Ragsdale started claiming that he had gotten close to the bodies and even tried unsuccessfully to remove a helmet from one of the aliens. Indeed, before Ragsdale died, his tale had grown to include the claim that he had removed eleven gold helmets and had buried them in the desert. Of course, these valuable helmets have never been found.[39]

In a nutshell, Ragsdale’s credibility as a witness is just not believable, and his stories must be discounted. And with that, *another* “witness” to the recovery of “alien bodies” goes by the wayside.[40]

g. The Rowe Story and the Roswell Fire Department

According to the revisionist scenario, Frankie Rowe stated that her father, a fireman with the Roswell Fire Department, responded to a call to the site some thirty miles north of the city. The problem is, "there are no records anywhere indicating that the Roswell Fire Department made a run outside of town anytime during the month of July 1947!"[41] As Korff also perceptively observes, the Roswell Fire Department at that time had only two trucks available, and hence it seldom dispatched them outside the city, since this would leave the town unprotected.[42] The second major problem with Frankie Rowe's story is that if fire trucks *were* needed at the site, it would have been highly unlikely that the military would have called a civilian fire department, when it had its own such personnel and equipment on the airbase. Involving a civilian fire department in a supposedly top secret operation makes no sense.[43] In short, Frankie Rowe's story "does not hold up under critical evaluation. Until evidence emerges that supports her claims, her account must be considered highly suspect."[44]

h. Colonel Blanchard's Leave

Both in the standard and revisionist scenarios, there are two events that figure large in the interpretation of the Roswell Incident as an extraterrestrial incident: Colonel Blanchard's "sudden leave" on the evening of July 8, and General Nathan Twining's "sudden change of schedule" from a visit to the Boeing plant in Seattle, to a trip to New Mexico. It will be recalled that General Twining was the commander of the Air Material Command, based in Dayton, Ohio, at Wright Field.

In both scenarios, these events are understood to reflect the gravity of the situation, with Colonel Blanchard's leave being a cover for his personal visit to the crash site, and with Twining's appearance in New Mexico being for the purpose of coordinating the initial analysis of the debris, its transfer to Wright Field for more in depth analysis, and coordination of the ensuing cover-up.

However, Korff notes that researcher Robert Todd uncovered serious discrepancies to the "Roswell conspiracy" version of Colonel Blanchard's leave. Citing Todd's own research, the July 15th edition of the *Albuquerque*

Journal noted that on July 14th, Lieutenant Governor Joseph Montoya decreed that August 1st would be "Air Force Day," commemorating the 40th anniversary of the establishment of the Army Air Force.[45] Montoya was at that time "Acting Governor" as New Mexico Governor Malory was preparing to attend a conference. But Todd also noted that the same newspaper story mentioned that Colonel Blanchard was present when the decree was made by Montoya. The Roswell Army Air base's own base newspaper also showed a picture of Blanchard with Montoya at his desk in the state capital at Santa Fe signing the decree in its July 25th edition.[46]

Citing a communication from acting Roswell air base commander, Lieutenant Colonel Payne Jennings that explicitly stated that Blanchard was going on leave to meet with Governor Mabry on July 9th to coordinate the proclamation of Air Force Day,[47] Todd concludes, from all this information, that Blanchard may have been in Santa Fe from July 9th to July 14th when Acting Governor Joseph Montoya signed the decree.[48]

While all this is very suggestive, it is not, in my opinion, entirely persuasive, since we do not know for a certainty that Blanchard was in Santa Fe on July 9th. He could have arrived in New Mexico's state capital on any day from the 9th through the 14th itself. Needless to say, this leaves open the possibility suggested both by standard and by revisionist scenario authors that Blanchard's leave may indeed have been in part a cover story in order for him to coordinate personally whatever operation may have been taking place north of Roswell, assuming that such an operation was indeed taking place.

i. General Nathan Twining's Schedule Change

As noted above, the other major event that Roswell Incident proponents adduce in support of its extraordinary nature is the sudden schedule change of the Air Materials Command commander, General Nathan Twining, from a scheduled visit to Boeing's Seattle plant, to a flight into Alamogordo on July 7, 1947. This sudden schedule change, they argue, is further testimony to the extraordinary nature of the event. But Korff will have none of it:

> According to a now-declassified document dated *June 5, 1947* from Army Air Force Headquarters in Washington, D.C., and written to the commanding general, Air Material Command, a request was made that *confidential orders be issued* that would place Lt. Gen. Twining and others on three-day temporary duty status at Sandia Base, in Albuquerque, New Mexico. The purpose of thie request was so that Twining could attend the "Bomb Commanders Course," which was scheduled to begin on July 8. The document also reveals that other high-powered brass such as Maj. Gen. Benjamin W. Childlaw, Brig. Gen. Samuel C. Brentnall, and Brig. Arthur Thomas were also signed up to attend the same course.
>
> Visitors logs and secretaries calendars prove conclusively that Generals Twining, Childlaw, Brentnall, and Thomas all took the three-day course, which lasted through July 11 — *the very same window* that the pro-UFO Roswell authors would have us believe that an extraterrestrial spacecraft was being recovered!...
>
> It stands to reason that if an actual alien ship and its crew had been recovered near Roswell, one would expect that the schedules of at least one of these generals, especially that of Nathan Twining, would have been affected. Instead, the generals proceeded with their scheduled training and commanders [sic] course because in reality *no flying saucer had been recovered!*[49]

This is indeed a telling argument and one which, to my knowledge, has not been answered by the Roswell "ET proponents."

That being said, however, it does *not* in and of itself preclude the possibility that something extraordinary may have happened at Roswell, for it is entirely possible that, not knowing at that juncture *what* had crashed nor where it was from, the Army Air Force deemed that it was more important for the generals to maintain their schedule and attend the course, leaving Twining to deal with the extraordinary event after further analysis could be done on whatever was recovered, and after he had returned to his command at Wright Field. This, as will be seen in Part Three, is a plausible interpretation.

2. And the Debris

a. The Debris and the Original Witnesses

(1) Proctor Problems

Both in the standard and in the revisionist scenarios, rancher Mac Brazel first went to his neighbors, Floyd and Loretta Proctor, with some of the debris, and attempted to get them to come to his ranch to see the debris field for themselves. Loretta Proctor described the debris in 1990 as a tan, light-brown plastic like material like balsa wood. She maintained that they also tried to cut it and burn it, without success.[50] But according to Korff, like so many other Roswell witnesses, Loretta Proctor's story changed over time, for approximately one year earlier, she was directly asked if she had ever tried to burn the material, or do anything else with it. Her answer? She had not.[51]

This is not the only problem with her story, for as Korff also observes, there is a question whether or not she ever actually saw any of the debris, for in her interview with William Moore in 1979 she "made *no mention at all* of ever having *personally* seen any of the debris Brazel claimed had fallen on the Foster ranch."[52] In fact, as Korff makes clear, her husband Floyd, when interviewed by Moore, never made any statement to the effect that he had seen any of the debris either. Quite the opposite, for as Berlitz's and Moore's book *The Roswell Incident* explicitly reveals, it was Mac Brazel himself who *described* the material to the Proctors. Indeed, in that articulation of the Incident, Brazel merely informed them of the fact that the debris could not be cut. There was no mention of its inability to be burnt.[53]

Korff correctly concludes that Loretta Proctor's testimony should only be accepted when it agrees with that of her late husband. Moreover, as he also correctly notes, nothing in the details of the debris as originally described compel to the conclusion that what Mac Brazel had recovered was indeed extraterrestrial.[54]

(2) Bill Brazel, Bessie Brazel Schreiber and Korff's Analysis

Noting discrepancies between Bill Brazel's original timeline of the Army Air Force's confiscation of the debris he had found on his father's ranch as recounted to William Moore and Stanton Friedman,[55] Korff observes that "there are other issues with Brazel Jr.'s account concerning the purported Air Force personnel" that he encountered.[56] In his original account to Moore, Bill Brazel maintained that one of the Army Air Force officers who had contacted him was a "Captain Armstrong," yet, there is no record for a Captain Armstrong stationed at the Roswell base between 1947 and 1949.[57] Brazel also described encountering a black sergeant; ? yet once again, there are no records of a black sergeant at the Roswell base for 1947.[58]

Korff's conclusions regarding Bill Brazel's testimony are worth citing in full:

> The truth is, a significant portion of Bill Brazel's testimony muct be considered suspect. *About the only thing we can be reasonably certain of is that foil-like material, very strong in nature, was recovered.* We can assume that Brazel Yr.'s description of the material is fairly accurate, since it is consistent with what other witnesses have reported.[59]

This is a significant statement, as will eventually be seen, for Korff is admitting that Bill Brazel's testimony regarding the debris is trustworthy in its details, which include a thin foil with extraordinary strength. The debris, in other words, remains unusual, and thus, one would not associate this type of material with a Mogul balloon. This point should be borne in mind when we turn to Korff's exposition of that hypothesis below.

In this respect, Korff cites a portion of Bill Brazel's sister's, Bessie Brazel Schreiber's, description of the debris:

> There was what appeared to be pieces of heavily waxed paper and a sort of aluminum-like foil. Some of these pieces had something like numbers and lettering on them, but there were no words that we were able to make out. Some of the metal-foil pieces had a sort of tape stuck to them, and when these were held to the light they showed what looked like pastel flowers or designs. Even though the stuff looked like

> tape it could not be peeled off or removed at all. It was very light in weight but there sure was a lot of it.[60]

From this Korff concludes that the materials Bill Brazel's sister describes are consistent with those of other witnesses: "aluminum-like foil, wax paper, tape with flowers or pastel designs on it, and some writing."[61] Of course, none of this leads or compels to the conclusion that the debris' origin was extraterrestrial. It does suggest, according to Korff, "that whatever the device was, it consisted of manmade materials."[62] There, however, Korff leaves it, but the fact of the matter remains, that while the debris may be terrestrial, thin foil-like material that cannot be torn or cut are qualities *do* ***not*** resemble any material used in the proposed "latest official explanation" and the favored interpretation of the skeptical Roswell community, the Mogul balloon.

b. "Art's Parts"

The famous talk show host, Art Bell, former host of the nationwide "Coast to Coast AM" and "Dreamland" radio talk shows, received a letter on April 18, 1996, from "an anonymous individual who claimed to be serving in the U.S. military and whose father was part of the secret 'recovery team' at Roswell."[63] Along with the first letter "were pieces of metal said to be some of the actual extraterrestrial material collected by the military."[64] This material was quickly dubbed "Art's Parts." Bell arranged for the materials to be scientifically tested, and on May 19, 1996, Bell hosted paranormal and UFO researcher Linda Moulton Howe, who reported on the findings.[65] According to Korff,

> (The) electron dispersion spectroscopy revealed that some of the samples were almost pure aluminum. The other items, various odd-shaped pieces of metal, consisted of silicon granules (i.e., sand), iron, manganese, calcium, bismuth, and zinc.
>
> Nowhere, among *any* of the samples Art Bell had received, was there any indication that the items were *extraterrestrial* in nature or

had not been manufactured on Earth.[66]

But this does not tell the whole story. While the material may have been terrestrial, it was nevertheless unusual, as Linda Moulton Howe herself makes very clear:

> April 28, 2006 Harvest, Alabama - Ten years ago in 1996, I was investigating strange metal of alternating layers of bismuth and a magnesium/zinc alloy allegedly taken in 1947 from the bottom of a "wedge-shaped extraterrestrial vehicle." Several pieces of the layered metal had been shipped to Art Bell, then radio host of Dreamland and Coast to Coast AM for which I was reporting. To this day, that layered metal is a mystery and so far has never been duplicated.
>
> One scientist who helped me in my investigation was Travis Taylor, Ph.D. and optical physicist, who worked at the Army Redstone Arsenal in Huntsville, Alabama.
>
> Alleged extraterrestrial metal taken from the bottom of a "wedge-shaped craft in 1947" was created from alternating layers of 1-4 microns dark bismuth and 100-200 microns silver magnesium/zinc alloy, approximately twenty-five to thirty layers thick. Each of six pieces received were "formed" with a curvature that tapered.[67]

If genuine, then "Art's Parts" were indeed unusual and even somewhat exotic.

But there were two further problems, as Korff pointed out. Firstly, it could not be assumed that the "parts" were indeed from the Roswell Incident, since there was no chain of evidence connecting them to Roswell.[68] Secondly, the samples Bell received from his anonymous "benefactor" did not resemble in any way the debris as described by Marcel, Bill Brazel and Bessie Schreiber Brazel or, indeed, any other witness' description of it:

> *None* of the samples bore any resemblance to the thin, lightweight aluminum foil-like metal that Jesse Marcel and others claimed would straighten itself right back out after being folded up. Instead, all of the

> metallic specimens Bell had received were hard, sharp pieces of metal…some of which were as thick as four millimeters.[69]

"Art's Parts" thus failed to fulfill the expectations of the Roswell UFO proponents, not only for the insufficiency of their chemical composition to compel to any extraterrestrial interpretation, but more importantly, because they did not resemble any actual descriptions of the debris, and their provenance and connection to the Roswell Incident could not be established.

c. The Blake Larsen Debris Hoax

However, there was more alleged Roswell debris that turned up, this time at the Roswell International UFO Museum and Research Center, which received a piece of metal from Blake Larsen. The museum made arrangements to test the metal scientifically, paying for the analysis out of its own funds. The crucial test was mass spectroscopy ratio analysis, and this will require some explanation.

While the same chemical elements can be found on various planets, each planet will bear its own template or signature of the relative percentages of the presence of various *isotopes* of any given element that would be present in a sample of that element. For example, a sample of copper from the Earth might have "x" percentage of the copper isotope Cu-63, while a similar copper sample from another planet might have "x+y" percentage of the same isotope present in *its* sample.

Blake Larsen's alleged Roswell debris was tested by this method at the Los Alamos National Laboratory in New Mexico. A control sample was tested, revealing a Cu-63 isotope reading of 69.174 percent, while in Larsen's samples, the isotopic ratio of Cu-63 was found to be 69.174 and 69.120 percent.[70] In other words, the difference was not significant enough to indicate that the Larsen sample came from anywhere else other than the Earth itself.

Various media, including the *Albuquerque Journal* reported the results along with pictures of a Larsen fragment, and a local jewelry artist, Randy

Fullbright of St. George, Utah, recognized the piece as one of his own creations.[71] Fullbright had given the piece to a gallery owner who in turn had given it to Larsen, telling Larsen that it was from Roswell and was found in 1947. Korff noted that the museum had spent $725 "of its own money to analyze the fragment for isotopic content alone," and that the episode had cost "innocent, well-intending individuals their money and their valuable time."[72]

d. Korff's Summary of the Debris

In the end, neither episode advanced — or for that matter, hindered -the cause of the Roswell debris, for after all the elimination of non-credible "witnesses," even skeptic Korff had to conclude that the debris elements of the Roswell Incident remained more or less intact, and that it still consisted of the following eight elements:

1. An object scattered debris over the Foster ranch. Some of this debris was collected and turned over to the military authorities by William "Mac" Brazel. However, there is no way to know exactly when Brazel found the debris, as accounts vary.
2. The debris consisted, in part, of aluminum foil-like material. *The substance was hard to tear, would straighten itself out when folded up, and could not be burnt.*
3. *There were dark beams of what appeared to be a balsa-like wood. This wood could not be burned and had strange "hieroglyphic"-type writing on it, as did some of the pieces of foil-like material.*
4. The strange symbols observed were pink or pastel in color and were not readable.
5. *The debris included some thread-like material that could not be torn or broken*.
6. All of the material was very light in weight and very strong.
7. No one recognized the material or device as anything he or she had seen before.
8. The material was originally identified as being the remains of a flying disc. Later, this same material was "explained" by military

authorities as being from a weather balloon.[73]

However, Korff is quick to point out two significant implications of this list:

> …(As) bizarre as the material described above appears to have been, the corroborated descriptions fall short of what science demands as sufficient proof to say that this material was extraterrestrial in origin. We must remember that two key factors are missing here: (1) No one has ever described the remains of an intact ship, airborne vehicle, or any sort of fuselage; and (2) **No "alien" bodies were ever described by any of the *primary* eyewitnesses. At best we can say that the object and its debris remain unexplained. Indeed, in order to gain further insight into what it was that scattered debris over the Foster ranch we need to look at additional testimonies if we are to be successful.**[74]

Those "additional testimonies" that Korff advances concern the "new balloon hypothesis," the latest official U.S. Air Force explanation for the Roswell Incident, the Mogul balloon. It remains to be seen if those "additional testimonies" can account for all eight bizarre characteristics that Korff enumerated in the quotation cited above.

3. And the New Balloon Hypothesis

a. Major Marcel's "Bait and Switch" Scenario in Fort Worth

Major Jesse Marcel consistently maintained up to his death that the debris that was *originally* displayed on the floor of General Ramey's office in Fort Worth had been *replaced* by that of a real weather balloon when he left the office for a few minutes and then returned. Two of the key elements in Korff's refutation of this claim are an interview conducted by Jamie Shandera — who would gain further notoriety for his role in the Majic-12 documents episode[75] — and General Thomas DuBose, and the Affidavit of

the Roswell Army Air Base's counterintelligence officer during the Roswell Incident, Sheridan Cavitt.

b. The Shandera Interview with General Thomas DuBose, the Testimony of Warrant Officer Irving Newton, and Counterintelligence Agent Sheridan Cavitt's Affidavit

At the time of the Roswell Incident, General Thomas DuBose was a Colonel, and a top aide to Brigadier General Roger Ramey at the Eighth Air Force headquarters in Fort Worth, Texas. DuBose received a telephone call from General Clements McMullen in Washington, D.C., ordering him to meet the incoming B-29 from Roswell when it arrived in Fort Worth. "DuBose not only greeted the incoming plane, but *hand carried the wreckage remnants* in a sealed canvas mail pouch, immediately escorting it to General Ramey's office."[76]

Shandera conducted an interview of General DuBose, in which the latter clearly and explicitly contradicted Marcel's "bait and switch" scenario:

> (SHANDERA): There are two researchers (Don Schmitt and Kevin Randle) who are presently saying that the debris in general Ramey's office had been switched and that you men had a weather balloon there.
> (DUBOSE): Oh Bull! *That material was never switched!*
> (SHANDERA): So what you're saying is that the material in General Ramey's office was the *actual debris brought in from Roswell?*
> (DUBOSE): That's absolutely right.
> (SHANDERA): Could General Ramey or someone else have ordered a switch without you knowing it?
> (DUBOSE): …I had charge of that material, and it was *never switched.*[77]

In other words, according to General DuBose, Major Marcel's "bait and switch" scenario in Fort Worth never happened.

Additionally, according to an affidavit of the Fort Worth Carswell air field weatherman, warrant officer Irving Newton, made on July 21, 1994,

when ordered by General Ramey to report to his office, Newton stated:

> I was met at the General's office by a Lieutenant Colonel or Colonel DuBose who told me that someone had found a flying saucer in new Mexico and they had it in the General's office. And that a flight had been set up to send it to Wright-Patterson Air Force Base, Ohio, but the General suspicioned [sic] that it might be meteorological equipment of something of that nature and wanted it examined by qualified meteorological personnel.
>
> The colonel and I walked into the General's office where this supposed flying saucer was laying all over the floor. As soon as I saw it, I giggled and asked if that was the flying saucer. I was told it was.
>
> …
>
> I told them that this was a balloon and a Rawin target. I believed this because I had seen many of these before.
>
> …
>
> While I was examining the debris, Major Marcel was picking up pieces of the target sticks and trying to convince me that some notations on the sticks were alien writings. There were figures on the sticks lavender or pink in color, appeared to be weather faded markings with no rhyme or reason. He did not convince me these were alien writings.[78]

But Korff's normal analytical acuity momentarily abandons him here, for he does not notice the significant discrepancy between his own admissions concerning the unusual nature of the Roswell debris, and Irving's reaction to it in Fort Worth, for nowhere does Irving - who by his own admission was "examining the debris," thus implying that he was handling it — ever once mention anything about thin foil-like material and its unusual properties, which one would expect him to do if, as DuBose stated, the material was taken straight to Ramey's office in a sealed mail bag under his personal escort! In other words, the debris Newton is describing would appear to be *too ordinary to be the Roswell debris*, and thus, Marcel's original "bait and switch" scenario may in fact be true. Consequently, in

this analysis, General DuBose is either lying, or, much more preferably, simply not recalling the events of that day with complete accuracy.

But there is another possible way to analyze Newton's statements, and that is to assume General DuBose is *not* lying, and that, for whatever reason, Newton did not have sufficient opportunity to examine all the debris that closely. On this reading, one must look at Newton's statements that Marcel was trying to persuade him that he was holding extraterrestrial debris, and to convince him that the "notations on the sticks were alien writings." On this view, Marcel is still operating under the assumption that the original "cover story" he had heard from the staff meeting with Colonel Blanchard that morning, July 8, 1947, in Roswell, and under the assumption that the story Blanchard ordered Lieutenant Haut to release to the public — that a flying saucer had been recovered — was still the policy. On this reading, Marcel is not trying to convince Warrant Officer Newton about the *nature* of the debris, but of what the Army Air Force wants him to *think* about it. In this reading, the "bait and switch" is not of the *material*, but of the *story* the Air Force wants its own personnel to believe, and no one bothered to inform Marcel ahead of time that the "official story" had been changed. Admittedly, this latter analysis has many more problems than the first one, for it makes many more assumptions.

I therefore tend to accept the first reading, and that Warrant Officer Newton's omission of any mention of odd properties of the debris — properties that Korff himself, as was seen, acknowledges — is at variance with the original debris, that therefore General DuBose's recollection here must be discounted, and that Marcel's "Bait and switch" scenario stands.

Korff, however, has one last witness to adduce, and that is counterintelligence agent Sheridan Cavitt, who accompanied Major Marcel and rancher Mac Brazel to the original debris field on the Foster ranch. In a sworn statement dated May 24, 1994, for the U.S. Air Force's official study of the Roswell Incident — the same one that first proposed the Mogul balloon project at the explanation for the incident — Cavitt made a number of statements that contradicted his intelligence colleague, Major Marcel, quite directly:

1) The area of the debris field was quite small, being about 20 feet square, with no gouge, crater or "other obvious sign of impact;"

2) That there “certainly wasn’t a lot of material, or enough to make up crates of it for multiple flights;” and,
3) That neither he nor Marcel conducted any preliminary on-site testing of the material, neither hitting it with sledgehammers nor testing it for radioactivity with a Geiger counter.[79]

Cavitt concludes by stating “My bottom line is that this whole incident was no big deal and it certainly did not involve anything extraterrestrial.”[80]

c. The Mogul Balloon and the Roswell Debris

These three considerations — among some others — are employed by Korff to argue his case that what was found at Roswell was the wreckage of a crashed top secret Mogul balloon. The Mogul project was indeed “so secret and sensitive in fact that it had a national security rating of ‘Top Secret A-1,’ *equal* to the original Manhattan Project…”[81] There was nothing significant about the technology of the Mogul project; what was so secret was that these balloons were being employed to spy on the Soviet Union. By employing “constant level balloon trains” the U.S. military hoped, via the use of special low frequency microphones, to determine when the Soviet Union had detonated its first atom bomb. These “constant level balloon trains” were “clusters of balloons that (were) balanced by size, shape, and the gasses they (were) filled with,” which allowed the balloons to float “at a fairly consistent altitude and not continually rise up into the atmosphere.”[82] As such, the entire assembly of these balloons was very long, reaching approximately 660 feet in length.[83]

Professor Charles B. Moore was the individual “who launched most of the Mogul devices,”[84] and was the engineer for the Mogul balloon project. Korff states that Moore’s descriptions of the Mogul balloons lists characteristics “which *certainly explain and match* the descriptions of the ‘flying saucer’ debris *as testified to by the Roswell witnesses.*”[85] In a sworn affidavit Professor Moore described the balloons’ materials in detail:

The neoprene balloons were susceptible to degradation in sunlight turning from a translucent milky white to a dark brown. Some of the material would almost look like dark gray or black flakes or ashes after exposure to the sun for only a few days. The balloon material and radar target material would be scattered after returning to the earth depending on surface winds. The balloon material also had a peculiar acrid odor due to plasticizers and anti-oxidants.

There is a recollection from another procurement person…that he had obtained radar reflectors from a toy manufacturer. I have a specific recollection of reinforcing tape applied to the seams of the reflectors that had some symbols such as arcs, flowers, circles, and diamonds. These were pinkish in color.

…

Concerning the make up [sic] of the balloon trains, we used *braided or twisted nylon lines — there were no monofilament lines…during the 1947 time frame.* Some of the balloons in early June carried radar targets for tracking purposes since we did not have radiosonde receivers (which could pick up information transmitted via radio waves) with us. Some also carried sonobuoys for detecting the pressure waves where we didn't have the Watson Lab microphone gear. All the radiosondes were *covered in white painted cardboard*; I don't recall the color of the sonobuoys but I believe they were covered in metal.

…

The Watson Lab gear was the microphone equipment specifically for Mogul. The idea was proposed in a 1945 letter from Dr. Ewing… to Glen Spaatz that we might be able to detect nuclear blasts via pressure waves and low frequency microphones. This was developed from a study of the 1883 Krakatoa explosion where pressure waves circled the earth seven times…

...

...

I can think of no other explanation for Roswell than one of our early June service flight balloons. If one of our balloons went down there was no shroud of secrecy about it. We would attempt to recover the

> flight gear when possible, but the reflectors, balloons, and the microphone equipment was [sic] expendable.
>
> We went to no great effort to recover the equipment and we certainly would not cordon off an area where one of our balloons went down. We would sometimes send out 3-4 men to recover the equipment if we knew where it went down.[86]

Before proceeding with Korff's own commentary on this data, it is worth pausing to take stock of what Professor Moore has said, and to recall Korff's own initial introductory commentary to the affidavit.

Korff, it will be recalled, stated explicitly that Moore's descriptions "*certainly explain and match* the descriptions of the 'flying saucer' debris *as testified to by the Roswell witnesses.*"[87] But they do no such thing, for while the descriptions of the diagrams on the balloon trains certainly is similar to the "hieroglyphics" described by the Roswell witnesses, none of those witnesses recalls seeing the black or gray ash of degrading neoprene described by Professor Moore, nor do any of them mention white painted cardboard, and Bill Brazel, whose statements concerning the debris Korff is already on record as supporting, *does* describe monofilament "wires" like fishing line, whereas Professor Moore disallows it. And as has also been seen, Korff allows the eight characteristics of the debris cited above to stand, including those statements concerning the "memory metal" characteristics of some of the debris, the extreme toughness of the foil-like material and its imperviousness to tearing, cutting, and burning. None of these characteristics are mentioned by Professor Moore, so it can hardly be concluded that any Mogul debris "certainly explain and match the descriptions of the 'flying saucer' debris as testified to by the Roswell witnesses." Finally, since the Mogul balloons themselves were fairly large devices, composed of a long train of balloons and equipment, counterintelligence agent's Cavitt's description of a debris field only twenty feet square simply does not seem large enough to accommodate such a device, unless it came crashing down in a nice neat pile.

In short, on the point of the characteristics of the debris alone, which characteristics Korff himself enumerated, the Mogul explanation utterly fails, since it fails to rationalize enough of the debris characteristics as

described by the Roswell witnesses to be a plausible and credible explanation.

All this knocks Korff's attempt to discredit Kevin Randle's response to the Mogul balloon theory into a cocked hat. Collecting winds aloft data from the national Climatic Data center in Asheville, North Carolina, Randle demonstrated that the winds at 20,000 feet during the period of various proposed Mogul launches were unlikely to have allowed one of the balloons to crash on the Foster ranch.[88] However, Korff notes that Professor Moore used the same weather service data and the performance characteristics of the balloons themselves to simulate "likely trajectories of the Mogul flights he launched with recorded ground trackings" and "his results showed conclusively that Randle is wrong, and that a Mogul balloon could have easily fallen on the Foster ranch."[89] But Randle need not have bothered to go to those lengths, for had he paid attention to the details and inconsistency both of Korff's argument and of Professor Moore's with the original debris descriptions, he could have easily refuted the Mogul theory. Likewise, Professor Moore's simulation is irrelevant, for as already noted, his descriptions of Mogul materials and the Roswell debris descriptions do *not* match.

d. Berliner's and Friedman's Refusal to Hear Professor Moore's Side of the Story

Korff relates one final intriguing bit of information, however, in his recounting of the Mogul balloon saga, and it is worth noting here:

> When I asked if UFO researcher Stanton Friedman had ever contacted or interviewed Professor Moore about Roswell, Moore told me that in the early 1990s Friedman had placed a newspaper ad in the local paper soliciting witnesses to Roswell. Moore then told me that he wrote to Friedman, and later met him and Don Berliner at a hotel in Socorro.
>
> When I inquired as to how their discussion went, Moore told me bluntly that Friedman and Berliner did not want to hear his side of the

> story and then *accused him* and his group as being part of the "flying saucer cover-up"!
>
> It is curious that *nowhere* in Friedman and Berliner's *Crash at Corona* is this meeting ever mentioned, nor has Friedman ever noted it in his published writings…[90]

As Korff demonstrated previously, this is not the first time significant details went unmentioned by Berliner and Friedman.

Nonetheless, the fact remains that there are serious discrepancies between Professor Moore's description of the Mogul materials and that of the witnesses of the Roswell debris. And that means that, so far as Korff's case for the Mogul theory goes, that what crashed at Roswell was not a Mogul balloon.

B. Karl Pflock

The late Karl T. Pflock authored what is perhaps the most magisterial and lucid survey of the skeptics' interpretation of the Roswell Incident, *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe*.[91] As with our surveys of the research of the pro-ET research community, our survey here will of necessity have to leave many things out in order to show the main points of Pflock's analysis of the Incident. Like all Roswell Incident researchers, Pflock contends with three main points throughout his book:

1) The fact that most testimony concerning the bodies comes from secondhand and in some cases impeached witnesses;
2) The fact that most of the debris described is unusual, but not in and of itself compelling to the conclusion that it was of extraterrestrial origin; and,
3) The fact that the bodies are described in ambiguous terms, which could lead one to the conclusion that they may have been extraterrestrial, or of a terrestrial but anomalous nature.

In surveying Pflock's analysis of the Incident, then, our focus will be on these three crucial areas.

1. And the Standard Scenario

a. The Debris

As is by now evident, the highly unusual debris of the Incident owes its crucial role in the story of the Roswell Incident to the researchers expounding what Pflock calls the "conventional wisdom," and what we have been calling the "standard scenario." Those researchers — Berlitz, Moore, Friedman, and Berliner — in turn owed the accounts of the unusual nature of this debris to the 509th Bomb Group's intelligence officer, Major Jesse Marcel Sr., to rancher Mac Brazel, who first informed local civilian and later military authorities of it, and to the statements of Brazel's children Bill Brazel and Bessie Brazel Schreiber, who claim to have seen it and handled it. Other second hand testimony from Brazel's neighbors, Floyd and Loretta Proctor, corroborated certain details of the descriptions of the debris, though whether or not they are describing it because they actually saw it, or whether Mac Brazel simply told them about it, remains a point in contention.

Following the emergence of the timeline of events closely, Pflock notes that while the debris was always known to be highly unusual, it was not at its first emergence in the story considered to be extraterrestrial:

> According to contemporary news reports of a July 8 interview with Mack [sic] Brazel and the much later accounts of Bill Brazel, Bill's younger sister Bessie Schreiber, Mack's sister Lorraine Ferguson and some of the Foster Ranch area neighbors, *the debris was peculiar but not something they considered at the time of the crash to be out of this world.* It included a grayish-silver metallic foil, in pieces ranging from a few inches to two, three, or more feet across; many small, lightweight "beams" the color and texture of balsa wood, one-half to three-eighths of an inch thick and ranging from a few inches to a couple of feet in length; a quantity of tough, parchmentlike [sic] paper;

> pieces of hard, black or blackish-brown plastic; and lengths of something resembling monofilament fishing line. Some of the beams were attached to fragments of the foil-like material with wide, "whitish" or clear tape imprinted with pastel designs resembling flowers or, as Lorraine Ferguson said her brother Mack put it, "like the kind of stuff you find all over Japanese or Chinese firecrackers; not really writing, just wiggles and such."[92]

Note that Pflock leaves out of this list of witnesses' descriptions the statements Major Marcel, and that he also leaves out of the descriptions of the debris the fact that Bill Brazel clearly stated that it could not be cut, or burnt, and that it had "memory metal" characteristics.

When Brazel told (or brought pieces of the debris to) the Proctors, they suggested, as has been seen, that "Brazel report his find to officials in Roswell. They thought it might be something belonging to or of interest to the government, and he might get a reward if he took it in."[93] As is by now known, Brazel drove into Roswell on Sunday, July 6, 1947, to report the strange debris to the Chaves county sheriff, George Wilcox, who in turn suggested Brazel telephone the air base and inform the military. As Pflock notes, Brazel described the debris to his daughter Bessie as "just a bunch of garbage."[94]

Of course, if the debris is "just a bunch of garbage" and if his neighbors originally thought it belonged to or might be of interest to the government, then this clearly points to a terrestrial origin of the debris, notwithstanding the fact, as Bill Brazel also explicitly stated when interviewed, that it had some very strange if not downright extraordinary properties.

Then, according to the standard scenario, the military became involved, with the base intelligence officer, Major Jesse Marcel, taking the box of debris from Brazel, and showing it to the base commander, Colonel William Blanchard. Blanchard then ordered Marcel and the base counter-intelligence officer Sheridan Cavitt to accompany Brazel back to his ranch, where they could examine the debris field itself. The July 8 morning staff meeting was held, after which Lt. Walter Haut was ordered by Colonel Blanchard to release the now famous — or depending on one's lights, infamous — press release about the U.S. Army Air Force having recovered a flying saucer.

But the question that now occurs, given Pflock's presentation of the debris — which is as has been seen, decidedly one-sided and omissive of its more peculiar details - is why would the U.S. Army Air Force draw such extraordinary attention to such ordinary material, only to deny it mere hours later? Neither Colonel Blanchard, nor Major Marcel, were fools, unless one is willing to believe that the Air Force in 1947 entrusted atom bombs to fools. Pflock's eventual answer is, of course, that many of the details of the debris *do* correspond to the materials used in the construction of the top secret Mogul balloons. But the question that now occurs is this: If the debris *was* from a crashed top secret balloon project, why draw the world's attention to it with a crazy story about flying saucers? Why not simply issue the story that a local rancher had recovered a weather balloon on his ranch right then and there?

To put this question differently we state it as boldly as possible in order to expose the hidden assumptions about the press release that are made both by the pro-ET research community on the one hand, and the hidden assumptions made about it by the skeptical community on the other: *What was the* ***purpose*** *behind the U.S. Army Air Force's original "recovered flying saucer" press release, issued from the 509th base, in Roswell, New Mexico?*

For the proponents of the "crashed extraterrestrial craft" interpretation, the original release *had no ulterior purpose*; it was merely an inadvertent admission of the truth, which was later covered up by the military.

At the other end of this pole are the skeptics such as Korff and Pflock, for whom the original release *was already a cover story* to disguise the fact that the military, via Brazel, had recovered a top secret crashed Mogul balloon. Some within the skeptical community insinuate, as does Pflock, that the original press release was dictated *after* the morning staff meeting on the base, during which the debris was the chief article of discussion.[95]

However, if this was the case, then it stands to reason that — as the *revisionist* proponents of the "crashed extraterrestrial scenario" have proposed — at least *some* contact would have been made with higher headquarters during or immediately after this meeting as to what to do, and *say*, about what had been found. But why say something so extraordinary and outlandish as having recovered a flying saucer?

In order for any sort of disinformation to be effective, it has to have two elements: firstly, it must contain enough of the truth to be believable, but, secondly, must contain a *context* for that truth that lends to, if not compels, a misinterpretation of the truth. In other words, the context much be contrived in such a manner that the kernel of truth will invariably and inevitably be misinterpreted.

So, while this author agrees with the skeptics that the cover-up began with the *initial* story stemming from Haut's press release itself, he *disagrees* with them that the Mogul balloon theory is a sufficient basis on which to account for it, for the "flying saucer *context*" far exceeds the nature of the kernel of truth that the Air Force is trying to get people to misinterpret, namely, the *debris.* Haut's press release *does* make sense, however, if there was *genuinely* something about the debris that was truly *extraordinary*, and which the U.S. Air Force did *not* want people to look too closely into. And finally, while the Mogul balloon theory does make sense of the *ordinary* properties of the debris, it can only do so by ignoring its extraordinary ones. And even if the Mogul theory were true, it would *not* account for the fact that it was kept secret for so long.

b. The Bodies

As was evident throughout both the standard and revisionist scenarios, *the "bodies" became another interpretive context by which to interpret the debris, and by which to give its extraordinary properties a context which, supposedly, pointed in the direction of an extraterrestrial origin.* Again, sticking closely to an analysis of the actual timeline of the emergence of certain details within the Roswell Incident scenarios, Pflock correctly observes that the debris flights to Fort Worth were "certain" and that there is little room for doubt for flights of debris from there to Wright Field.[96] Pflock also notes, quite correctly, that the first claims for the recovery of "alien bodies" did not surface "until three decades had passed and original Roswell investigators Stanton T. Friedman and William L. Moore were conducting their inquiries."[97]

One witness contacted by Pflock in August of 2000 was Dr. George Agogino, one of those witnesses involved with the archaeologist's story,

and uncovered by revisionist author Thomas Carey in the ongoing investigation of the Roswell incident. As Agogino was ill at the time, his wife agreed to talk to Pflock. According to her, the bodies "were human but old and bald."[98]

But as has also already been seen, within the standard scenario, the only clear statements regarding bodies came from the Grady Barnett story, and the now-discredited story of Gerald Anderson. While there were peculiarities to suggest that others — Brazel and Marcel for example — *might* have seen bodies, there was absolutely nothing clear and unequivocal to suggest they did. Indeed, as we have also seen, the only time Mac Brazel said anything about bodies was when he was under military escort! This could be construed as duress, and witness statements made under duress are, needless to say, questionable at best and inadmissible at worst.

This leaves the witnesses to bodies uncovered in the revisionist scenario.

2. And the Revisionist Scenario:

a. The Witnesses

(1) Jim Ragsdale

Pflock, like Korff, pointed out the many inconsistencies and confabulations in Ragsdale's ever-evolving story, a story which Pflock humorously characterized as "a work in progress."[99] In an initial contact via telephone with Ragsdale, Pflock recounts how Ragsdale had told him he did not hear well on the telephone, and that he would have to talk to his wife.

> When Mrs. Ragsdale came on the line, I explained I was doing historical research concerning events in and around Roswell and involving Roswell Army Air Field. I said I understood her husband may have witnessed something in 1947 north of Roswell which was relevant to my research. "I don't think he can help you," she replied. "He didn't live here then."
>
> I asked when her husband moved to Roswell. "In nineteen fifty-nine," She replied. "I think you have the wrong Ragsdale." That ended

> the conversation, but not my interest in Mrs. Ragsdale's husband, who indeed was the correct Ragsdale and whom she would divorce about a year later.[100]

However, that was not the end to the problems with Jim Ragsdale.

Pflock also observed that Ragsdale, like so many others, claimed to have recovered debris that was later confiscated by authorities. Only in this case, Ragsdale claimed he was followed, had his car stolen, and his house burgled, by authorities desperate to recover some of the telltale and precious debris. But why, asks Pflock, "resort to the risky business of trailing him… and stealing his car…(or breaking into his house)? Why not do what was reported to have been done only the year before, after Bill Brazel talked too much in a Corona bar?" Why did the Air Force not simply demand that Ragsdale, as it had with Bill Brazell, turn over the debris?[101]

While discussing Brazel, however, Pflock reveals his own tendentiousness, and a certain kind of willingness to call into question every detail. Ragsdale, it will be recalled, like many other witnesses, recalled — in his now discredited story — "seeing" the crash during a severe electrical thunderstorm with female companion Trudy Truelove. Pflock checked the local weather service records and noted that the only storm activity from July 2 to July 7 was at Alamagordo on July 2. "Clearly," Pflock notes, "as the alert reader will have realized, these weather data raise storm warnings not only for the Ragsdale-Truelove tale but also other accounts central to both versions of the Roswell story."[102] But do they really?

In an age before the entire country was masked in weather radar overlays, it would be very easy for localized severe storms — such as can arise in the vast emptiness of the New Mexico desert as any visitor or dweller in the region can attest — and have been completely missed by weather stations in the cities and installations that had them back then. Here, in this author's opinion, Pflock was reaching.

In the end, Pflock comes to the same conclusion as Korff (and as we shall eventually see, Randle himself): Ragsdale's ever-evolving story was of absolutely no value to aid in an understanding of the Roswell Incident, and must be discounted.[103]

(2) Frank Kaufmann

Like Korff, and even "standard scenario" proponent Stanton T. Friedman, Pflock rejects what he calls, in a bit of Offenbach-esque humor, "The Tales of Kaufmann."[104] As already noted in Korff's humorous summary of Kaufmann's role in the revisionist scenario, Kaufmann seems to turn up, Walter Mitty-like, at every major juncture — and by his own "admission" — in the Roswell operetta. His multiple stories, plus the lack of information about how Randle and Schmitt were even put onto this source,[105] is, for Pflock, reason enough to reject his testimony. Like Korff, Pflock has major difficulties with the fact that Randle and Schmitt originally told his various tales by giving Kaufmann various aliases, "Joseph Osborne" and "Mr. X," in their research.[106] For Pflock, the problem with Kaufmann was the same as the problem with Ragsdale, for he told ever more elaborate stories, even claiming eventually to have been a member of a special UFO recovery and study unit which he called "The Nine."[107]

And, in elaborating his "second version" of his "work in progress," Kaufmann informed Pflock, without any prompting from Pflock, "that the standard alien-Gray description — big black eyes set in a disproportionately large head perched upon a short, spindly body — 'is all wrong. See, these people were just like us. Well, just like us only better.'" When Pflock asked him what this meant, Kaufmann responded "More perfectly formed."[108]

Not to be outdone by other proponents of the "crash, retrieval, and reverse engineering scenario," Kaufmann also maintained that he was also involved in a special group recovering the alien technology and seeding it into American industry, and that the whole concept of the radar stealthy bomber "came from this," the crashed and recovered craft.[109]

But as Pflock notes, in addition to these rather obvious "Walter Mitty" credibility problems, Kaufmann himself was discharged from the military in 1945, two years before the Roswell Incident even happened, and was employed "as a civilian at the Roswell base in the singularly routine job of personnel clerk, the same job he did in uniform,"[110] making it *highly* unlikely that Kaufmann would have been selected for any *one* of the secretive tasks he maintained he was involved in, much less *all* of them.

b. The Radar Tracking Story

It was Kaufmann, in his alias as "Joseph Osborne," who of course had told Randle and Schmitt the story about him being ordered to a special radar unit to track the UFOs flying over New Mexico in 1947, and it was Kaufmann who told them he had watched as it had ballooned up on the radar screen, and then apparently crashed. Finally, it was Kaufmann who maintained that there had been three different radar sites involved in the alleged operation, giving the military a rough approximation of where the object had crashed based on triangulation.

But it was the same Kaufmann who, as noted by Pflock, later maintained that the craft was radar "stealthy" and which was responsible for the stealth bomber! So, as Pflock rightly notes, "if the alien vehicle Kaufman says was recovered at the impact site had 'stealthy' properties, how would it have been possible for the radars at White Sands, Roswell, and Kirtland to detect it?"[111]

But there were other big problems with Kaufmann's radar tracking story, and we have already noted some of them in our survey of Korff's research. Pflock dug deeper:

> First, what Kaufmann claims appeared on the radars when the craft was struck by lightning is strictly in the science-fiction special effects category. One expert with whom I spoke characterized it as "very creative." If a target being tracked by a radar of the types then in use by the army in New Mexico, members of the long-wave (ten centimeters plus) SCR-70 and -584 families, were hit by lightning, the results on the radarscope, if any at all, would be no more than a slight, momentary brightening of the target blip or a tiny segment of the cursor line that sweeps around the circular scope at the same rate the radar's antenna rotates. … Moreover, something would be seen *only* if the lightning struck precisely at the same instant the radar beam swept across the target….
>
> Second, mountains ranging in elevation from seven thousand to twelve thousand feet lie between White Sands and the debris field and the alleged impact site. The elevation of the White Sands area is

between four thousand and forty-five hundred feet. A similar mountain barrier exists between the sites and Kirtland Air Force Base… which lies at about fifty-three hundred feet. Anything flying at an altitude putting it behind the mountains as seen from these locations would be invisible to their radars. Anything flying only slightly higher than the mountains would be lost to the Lloyd's Mirror effect, in which the radar signal return from the aerial target and that from the ground (mountains) cancel each other out.[112] This means only the Roswell radar would have been in a position to track the craft, and even if only on a limited basis, as Roswell's elevation is about thirty-six hundred feet, while the alleged impact site and the debris field like at approximately forty-one hundred and fifty-eight hundred feet, respectively.

As for Kaufmann's claim that triangulated radar plots were used to determine where the craft crashed, it merely exposes his woeful ignorance of radar. Data from more than one radar is not required to determine the direction and distance of a target that has gone down.[113] The crash location can be calculated quickly from the last azimuth (directional) reading and slant range (straight-line distance from the radar antenna to the object in flight) from a single radar. The name radar, after all, is a contraction of the phrase "radio detedection and ranging."

Third, there is Kaufmann's claim the damaged but intact craft was transported out of Roswell by air without being dismantled. According to Kaufmann, the alien vehicle spanned fifteen feet and was twenty-two to twenty-five feet long and five feet think. In July 1947 and for years after, there was no aircraft in the world, let alone the American military inventory, capable of accommodating a [sic] object of those dimensions.[114]

In short, there is nothing whatsoever credible in Frank Kaufman's stories, neither in their totality nor their details. And this means, once again, that another witness who saw "bodies" is discredited.

c. "The Terror and Other Exaggerations"

Another area both of the standard and of the revisionist scenarios that Pflock investigated was the assertion of many witnesses that they were threatened into silence by the military. Indeed, as Pflock himself observes, at one time he took these threats and intimidations as an indicator that something more than just a crashed Mogul balloon had to have been involved in the Roswell Incident.[115] Pflock, however, began to question his own reasoning, because with the appearance of the second official explanation — the downed weather balloon story — "taking the sort of heavy-handed actions testified to by some could have backfired, reigniting press interest and exposing the project to hostile foreign powers,"[116] namely, the Soviet Union.

However, there is another problem according to Pflock, and that is that there were only five such witnesses, namely, "Glenn Dennis, Frankie Rowe, Ruben Anaya, Jim Ragsdale, and Barbara Dugger, granddaughter of Chaves County Sheriff George Wilcox and his wife, Inez."[117] As Pflock notes, and as we have already seen, the first four witnesses — including Frankie Rowe and her assertions that her father responded to a fire department call out of town — have significant credibility problems. Dennis and Ragsdale stand as impeached or incredible witnesses, and Frankie Rowe's story suffers from the problem that the military would not likely have allowed a civilian agency on the site as it had its own equipment, and even if it did, would most likely simply have sworn any civilian witnesses to secrecy, sans any threats. As for Dugger, as Pflock notes, her story of threats emerged as an "unsupported secondhand account" only weeks after the Roswell story ran on the now famous television episode of *Unsolved Mysteries*.[118]

d. Kevin Randle's Break with Don Schmitt

As the revisionist scenario and its witnesses came increasingly unglued, another episode surfaced to cast a pall of suspicion over the whole affair, and that was Kevin Randle's co-author, Don Schmitt, who had been caught by UFO researchers in a number of contradictions about his personal life as well as his conduct of investigations. While this is not the appropriate place to summarize this episode,[119] they did lead to a break between Randle and

Schmitt. Randle, in a letter to Pflock and other UFO researchers in which he severed all professional and personal connections with Schmitt, and warned them about his one-time coauthor's credibility.[120]

3. A Personal Note on Major Jesse Marcel Sr.

In their quest to dismiss any extraordinary aspects to the Roswell story — whether terrestrial or extraterrestrial — the Roswell skeptics have concentrated on certain aspects of Major Jesse Marcel's character, claiming tendencies to exaggeration, as noted in some of his army records, to his apparently "false" claims of his piloting ability or claims to having shot down enemy aircraft in combat, and so on.

Personally, I find such attacks to be both pettifogging in a certain sense, and reprehensible in another, and completely neglecting the fact that, for whatever Major Marcel's *alleged* "shortcomings," the overall, and major fact remains, namely, that he was the senior intelligence officer of the world's only atomic bomb group in the world at that time, and that he would hardly have been entrusted with that position unless the Army Air Force reposed some confidence in his abilities. All else, it seems to me, is mere tendentiousness, designed to get rid of one incontrovertible fact about the Roswell Incident: the extraordinary properties of the debris, and the extraordinary lengths to which the military went to cover it up, from its initial flying saucer story, to its weather balloon story, and now, its Mogul balloon story.

I will not, therefore, engage in attacks on Major Marcel, nor repeat here the arguments and attacks of others, nor call into question either his integrity as a man or as a witness, for the fact remains that someone in his position would hardly be prone to mistake a balloon — weather balloon or otherwise — for the exotic properties he consistently described throughout his life. In any case, Marcel is not the only witness describing them. So this brings us to the debris again, and to Pflock's handling of it.

4. The Debris Again

As was seen in our recounting of Kaufmann's and Radsdale's descriptions of the bodies — testimony from witnesses now no longer accepted — nothing in the details even of *their* descriptions compelled to the conclusion that they were extraterrestrials.[121]

However, Pflock observes that "when all is said and done" that those first- or secondhand witnesses that "can unequivocally be considered genuine" are "just 41. Of these, 23 are known, claim, or can reasonably be thought to have seen physical evidence, debris recovered from the Foster Ranch. Of this group, only 7 have asserted that what they saw had unusual properties of exhibited something else suggestive of otherworldly origins."[122]

This debris, with its unusual "hieroglyphics" and "tape," its foil-like and balsa-wood-like materials, is what would be pointed to time and again by Mogul balloon proponents — Pflock included — as the "final solution" to the Roswell Incident mystery.

Pflock, however, was a bit more honest, and much less disingenuous, than the air force.

Noting that Marcel had given an interview in 1981, Pflock observes that Marcel mentioned a "`*porous material (that) you could blow through'* which he and (counter-intelligence officer Sheridan) Cavitt found on the site."[123] This does not sound too much like the material of a balloon, nor like the foil on its radar reflectors!

Additionally, Pflock notes that fellow skeptic Kal Korff maintained that he had a close "confidential ufological working relationship with the late Leonard Stringfield, an important figure in crashed-saucer research and lore."[124] According to Korff, Marcel gave an interview in April 1978 with Stringfield and "Chicago radio personality Steve Tom," only two months after Marcel had first spoken with researcher Stanton T. Friedman. Korff maintains that during that interview "Marcel had indicated he never even considered the 'alien' part of things as a possible explanation until UFO 'researchers' started SUGGESTING that idea to him."[125]

If true, then this would indeed knock the whole extraterrestrial interpretation of the Roswell Incident into a cocked hat. But as we shall also see in Part Three, it is not necessary to assume this; one can indeed assume that Marcel said, from the outset, that it was his belief that it was

extraterrestrial, one can explain it along extraordinary though terrestrial lines, and do so without calling into question Marcel's memory, his integrity, or the reasons for his "extraterrestrial" conclusions.

In any case, Pflock himself admits, even while advocating the Mogul hypothesis, that in the final analysis to do so "Admittedly…requires discounting some of what the witnesses say they recall about certain properties of the debris, something I was loath to do a few years ago…. Now, however, armed with much additional countervailing information and my will to believe in check, I am certain it is entirely reasonable to disregard testimony about anomalous properties."[126]

But this, as Pflock admits, can really only be done by discounting what these witnesses describe, and doing so by calling into question their integrity, their memories, their motivations, and so on. It can only be done by entertaining a "will to *disbelieve*," and a corresponding will to believe a military that, within one day, first said it had a flying saucer, then said it was all a mistake and that it was just a weather balloon, and asked us to believe that the senior intelligence officer of the only atom bomb group in the entire world at the time, was unable to tell the difference, and to believe a military that now says it was yet another kind of balloon.

Skeptics may, if they wish, accuse the advocates of the extraterrestrial hypothesis of the Roswell Incident of a "will to believe" and of a galloping credulousness. But frankly, this author finds the same fault with their own speculations and reconstructions.

Indeed, as we shall now see, Kevin Randle was not about to take the skeptics' arguments, and the "Hot Air Force's" Mogul balloon explanation, lying down.

---

[1] Kal K. Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash: What They Don't Want You to Know* (Dell, 2000), p. 29.

[2] Karl T. Pflock, *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe* (Amherst, New York: Prometheus Books, 2001), p. 18.

[3] Indeed, of all the Roswell books read by this author over previous years, Korff's and Pflock's books were, from the standpoint of research and

analysis, the most personally enjoyable. But as will be seen, there are still "problems."

[4] Kal K. Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 27.

[5] Ibid., p. 29, emphasis Korff's.

[6] Ibid., emphasis Korff's.

[7] Ibid.

[8] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 33, citing Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 12.

[9] Ibid., p. 34.

[10] Ibid.

[11] Ibid., emphasis Korff's.

[12] Ibid.

[13] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 34.

[14] In cases of this sort, of course, one must at least entertain the possibility that the FBI was lying to Korff, or that some other government agency had such a monitoring system in place, at least in New Mexico which was home to sensitive and classified research, and that it hid such a system behind the FBI, and perhaps unbeknownst to it. In the main, however, this author concurs with Korff.

[15] Ibid., p. 76.

[16] Ibid.

[17] Ibid., p. 81.

[18] Ibid., p. 82.

[19] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 82.

[20] Ibid., p. 82.

[21] Ibid., p. 83.

[22] Ibid.

[23] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, pp. 83-84.

[24] Ibid.

[25] Ibid.

[26] Ibid., p. 85.

[27] Ibid., p. 86. Korff also notes that Berliner and Friedman, who refer to the Melvin Brown story, omit his alleged description of the aliens, which "blatantly *contradict* other accounts. Yet, on the very next page of their

book, Friedman and Berliner write, rather comically, that ‘The descriptions of bodies are not merely highly consistent, but agree in most respects with those given by persons suspected of having been ‘abducted’ by presumed aliens.”(p. 86, citing Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 115)

[28] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 90.

[29] Ibid., p. 92.

[30] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 98.

[31] Ibid., citing Friedman, *Open Letter to Kevin Randle*, pp. 3-7.

[32] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 98, citing a personal telephone conversation of Arthur S. Levine with Kevin Randle, October 1996, for an MSNBC article, transcribed by Kal Korff.

[33] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, pp. 99-100.

[34] Ibid., p. 100.

[35] Ibid., p. 101.

[36] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 101.

[37] Ibid., p. 102.

[38] Ibid., p. 103.

[39] Ibid., pp. 103-104.

[40] Korff is even more direct: “To put it bluntly, Ragsdale’s account is simply unbelievable.” (p. 104)

[41] Ibid., p. 105.

[42] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 105.

[43] Ibid.

[44] Ibid., p. 106.

[45] Ibid., p. 187.

[46] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 187, citing Robert Todd.

[47] Ibid., p. 185.

[48] Ibid., p. 187.

[49] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 189, emphasis Korff’s.

[50] Ibid., p. 39.

[51] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 39.

[52] Ibid.

[53] Ibid., p. 40.

[54] Ibid.

[55] Ibid., p. 49

[56] Ibid.

[57] Ibid. Note however that Brazel nowhere maintains that they were from Roswell.

[58] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 49.

[59] Ibid., p. 50, emphasis added.

[60] Ibid., p. 51, citing Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 96.

[61] Ibid., p. 52.

[62] Ibid.

[63] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 116. The entire letter, plus a follow-up letter dated April 22, 1996, are reproduced in Korff's book from pp. 116-120 and pp. 121-123, respectively.

[64] Ibid., p. 116.

[65] Ibid., p. 123.

[66] Ibid., p. 124.

[67] Linda Moulton Howe, "Modern Warfare Applied to Extra-Terrestrial Invasion," http://www.forumforfree.com/forums/a/art39s-parts-roswell-crash-fragments_post1564-nighthawk.html?mforum=nighthawk.

[68] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 125.

[69] Ibid., pp. 124-125, emphasis Korff's.

[70] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 127.

[71] Ibid., p. 128.

[72] Ibid., p. 129.

[73] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, pp. 67-68, emphasis added.

[74] Ibid., p. 68, boldface emphasis mine, italicized emphasis Korff's.

[75] See Part Two.

[76] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 138, emphasis Korff's.

[77] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, pp. 138-139, citing Jamie Shandera, "New Revelations About the Roswell Wreckage: A General Speaks Up" (Burbank, California: Fair Witness Project, 1990), p. 9, emphasis Korff's.

[78] Ibid., pp. 141-142.

[79] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, pp. 146-147.

[80] Ibid., p. 148.

[81] Ibid., p. 149.

[82] Ibid.

[83] Ibid., p. 176

[84] Ibid.

[85] Ibid., emphasis added.

[86] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, pp. 149-154, emphasis added.

[87] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 176 emphasis added.

[88] Ibid., p. 172.

[89] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 173.

[90] Ibid., p. 177.

[91] Pflock died June 5, 2006 at his home in Placitas, New Mexico, from Lou Gehrig's disease. He was a former CIA intelligence officer and the author of science fiction short stories in addition to his Roswell research. *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe* was published in 2001.

[92] Pflock, *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe*, pp. 23-24, emphasis added.

[93] Ibid., p. 24.

[94] Pflock, *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe*, p. 24.

[95] Pflock, *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe*, p. 26.

[96] Pflock, *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe*, p. 35.

[97] Ibid.

[98] Ibid., p. 61.

[99] Pflock, *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe*, p. 55.

[100] Ibid., p. 52.

[101] Ibid.

[102] Pflock, *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe*, p. 54.

[103] Ibid., pp. 56-57.

[104] See Pflock, pp. 67-84.

[105] Ibid., p. 67.

[106] Ibid., p. 69.

[107] Pflock, *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe*, pp. 70-72.

[108] Ibid., p. 73.

[109] Ibid., p. 75.

[110] Ibid., p. 79.

[111] Pflock, *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe*, p. 81.

[112] One notes here both a flaw in Kaufmann's story, and in Pflock's analysis, in that no one, nowhere, least of all Kaufmann, has ever given a public statement of the *altitude* that at which the craft was allegedly flying. Kaufmann's story, if credible, would mean that it had to have been flying above these altitudes in a range where it would have been visible to the radars. This, of course, does not do away with the first problem, namely, that Kaufmann's description of having witnessed the "explosion" of the craft on radar is pure fabrication, for the sets in use them could not have seen such a thing.

[113] Pflock's point here is rather obvious, since "radar" stands for "radio detection and ranging," and had Kaufmann's nonsensical story any physical basis in fact, it would have been necessary for warships during the war to carry more than one radar set in order to determine the bearing and distance of a target in order to direct their guns by radar range-finding. Obviously, this is nonsense.

[114] Pflock, *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe*, pp. 80-81.

[115] Ibid., p. 169.

[116] Pflock, *Roswell:Iinconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe*, p. 169.

[117] Ibid., p. 171.

[118] Ibid., p. 172.

[119] Those wishing to do so may consult pp. 179-182 of Pflock's book.

[120] Ibid., p. 181.

[121] See Pflock's quotation of Kaufmann's descriptions as given to Randle and Schmitt, *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe*, p. 45.

[122] Pflock, *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe*, p. 177.

[123] Ibid., p. 153, emphasis added.

[124] Ibid., p. 179.

[125] Ibid., p. 179.

[126] Pflock, *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe*, p. 154.

6
The Hot Air Force, the Balloon Hypothesis, and the Skeptics: Randle Replies

"…(The) Roswell case is nothing if not consistent with its inconsistencies."
Kevin Randle, Ph.D.[1]

Pressure from Congressman Steve Schiff, representative of the first congressional district of New Mexico in 1994, as well as the pressure caused by the appearance of Randle's and Schmitt's two Roswell books in the early 1990s, induced the U.S. Air Force finally to conduct its own investigation and to attempt a final explanation of the Roswell Incident. It was to be the Air Force's second, final, and as we shall see momentarily, ultimately failed attempt to convince the public that what crashed in Roswell was merely a balloon, although this time around, the Air Force did not make the mistake of trying to sell a mere weather balloon to the public. This time the explanation had to be more exotic, as whatever else may have emerged from the various Roswell researchers, one thing seemed incontrovertible: *"something"* of an exotic nature had to have crashed, because the Air Force went to such extraordinary lengths to cover it up. Whatever the Air Force's latest explanation turned out to be, it had to be more exotic than a mere weather balloon in order to account for all the initial hullaballoo.

This thankless task fell to Captain James McAndrew, and his *The Roswell Report: Case Closed*, the last word of the U.S. Air Force on the Roswell matter, was published by the U.S. Government Printing Office in June of 1997, under the signature of the Clinton Administration's Secretary of the Air Force, Sheila W. Widnall.[2] While this book is indeed full of

fascinating and interesting information in its own right, one does not have to read very far in order to wonder whether any of it has any relevance to the Roswell Incident, for as will be seen, the report suffers from a fatal flaw, a flaw that was not immediately evident when the 3 report was first published.[3] Moreover, this flaw, as will also be seen, raises certain questions about many of the Roswell "witnesses" themselves, if one dares to entertain those questions.

A. The U.S. Air Force's Balloon Explanations: "Case Closed"?

Captain McAndrew begins the final Air Force report by making two admissions, and two very direct claims and assertions. First, the first admission:

> The July 1994 Air Force report concluded that the predecessor to the U.S. Air Force, the U.S. Army Air Forces, did indeed recover material near Roswell in July 1947.[4]

The second admission occurs a short while later:

> The issue of "bodies" was not discussed extensively in the 1994 report because there were not any bodies connected with events that occurred in 1947.[5]

Before proceeding, it is worth pausing to consider the implications of these two remarks carefully, and in the light of the previous chapters' presentations. What these two admissions amount to is that the "first articulation" of the Roswell Incident, namely, that the U.S. Army Air Forces had recovered a flying saucer near Roswell in July 1947 is substantially true in one important respect: there was *no mention in the first articulation of recovered bodies, only a recovered technology.* In a roundabout way, therefore, the U.S. Air Force is admitting to the first version of the story: "something" crashed, and the U.S. Air Force recovered it.

It is within this context that McAndrew's report makes its two assertions. The first is that what was recovered near Roswell in 1947 was nothing more than "debris from an Army Air Forces balloon-borne research project code-named MOGUL."[6] McAndrews's report, in other words, makes it clear that the U.S. Air Force is sticking by its Mogul balloon explanation, and in a certain sense, it had to, because as McAndrew notes, the original 1994 report carefully argued its Mogul case with a nearly exhaustive 1,000 page study of the Roswell Incident and the Mogul project records.[7] This is followed closely by a reassertion of the Air Force's claims that the Project Mogul explanation is an adequate explanation of the descriptions of the Roswell debris, for Captain McAndrew explicitly claims that the Mogul project "components clearly accounted for the claims of 'flying saucer' debris recovered in 1947,"[8] although as has been observed immediately above, he acknowledges that the original Air Force report failed to account for the second component of the Roswell data-set, the bodies.[9]

In other words, already, on page one of the Air Force's final official statement on the Roswell Incident, its case has already collapsed, and that for a very simple reason. That reason is that, while the Mogul project components do indeed account for *many* of the descriptions of the Roswell debris by witnesses, they do not account for *most or all* of those descriptions. For example, the Mogul components *do* account for the descriptions of the "tape" with the hieroglyphics in purplish or pink hues, for such tape was indeed used on the Mogul balloons. Moreover, the descriptions of parchment like material and of foil can also be accounted for by the Mogul project's use of neoprene balloons and various radar reflector targets made of foil. Finally, the Mogul components also account for the descriptions of balsa-wood like components described by Marjor Marcel, his son Jesse Marcel Jr., and by Bill Brazel and his sister, Bessie Brazel Schreiber.

However, there all resemblance between the Mogul components and the descriptions of these witnesses – most of them primary first hand witnesses who all claim to have seen and handled the material – ends, for those witnesses clearly described foil-like material of great tensile strength, of "balsa" wood-like material that could neither be cut nor burned, and of a "memory" metal that, when wadded up, would unfold and return to its

original state, without any evidence of creases. And finally, Major Marcel also described some of this material as “porous,” such that one could blow through it. Throughout McAndrew’s report, one looks in vain for a credible explanation of these properties. Such explanations are utterly lacking, and a simple glance at the list of “witnesses” that Captain McAndrew adduces will show why this is so.

1. The Air Force Calls the Roswell Witnesses

On pages 69 through 74 of *The Roswell Report: Case Closed*, Captain McAndrew produces a table entitled “Comparison of Testimony to Actual Air Force Equipment, Vehicles, and Procedures Used to Launch and Recover Anthropomorphic Dummies.”[10] This is an indicator of the case that the report tries to establish, namely, that while the Mogul Project is used by the Air Force to account – unsuccessfully – for the Roswell *debris*, something else was needed to account for the bodies. Enter the various high-altitude balloon experiments with anthropomorphic dummies. More of this “explanation” in a moment. For the present moment, our concentration must remain on this table, and its massive, and massively fatal, implications.

If one studies this table carefully, five categories of witness descriptions – of aliens, of the alleged crashed craft, of vehicles the witnesses observed the Army Air Force using in the recovery, of aircraft, and of the recovery procedures themselves – are arranged in columnar fashion, with the specific witness and his or her description on the left, and the alleged corresponding Air Force equipment or procedure in the middle column, and on the right, a column indicating where the “crash site” was supposed to be where the equipment, aliens, or procedure were allegedly observed.

It is when one examines *who* these witnesses are that one encounters the massive problem, for absolutely *nowhere* do the names of Major Jesse Marcel – the Air Force’s own on-site intelligence officer at that time – or Mac Brazel’s son, Bill Brazel, or his sister, Bessie Brazel Schreiber, appear! In other words, the Air Force is even more blatant in its tendentiousness than some of the proponents of the extraterrestrial interpretation of the Roswell Incident examined in previous chapters!

But that's not all, nor does this constitute the massive, fatal problem.

2. Its Potential Significance: The Massive, Fatal Problem

A glance at *who* the witnesses are, reveals that fatal problem. Not only are the primary debris witnesses *completely missing*, but the witnesses Captain McAndrew cites are none other than Jim Ragsdale (eleven times), Gerald Anderson of the forged diary claim (thirty-three times!), Frank Kaufmann of the "Tales of Kaufmann" fame (once), Knight (once), and the Maltaises, who first informed Stanton Friedman of the Grady Barnett and recovered bodies story (seven times).

In short, not only is the handling of the witnesses utterly tendentious – for only those witnesses agreeing with the Air Force's case are cited – but these witnesses are those who, in turn, have been found by both the Roswell skeptics' *and* believers' communities to be not-credible! In fact, the *vast majority* of citations in McAndrew's table are from Ragsdale and Anderson (forty-four citations out of a total of fifty-three)!

To put it bluntly and succinctly, the case for the crash of balloons and crash dummies so carefully outlined by Captain McAndrew is based almost entirely on the testimony of witnesses that neither the Roswell believers' nor skeptics' communities any longer accept, and that means that the main witness case that McAndrew adduces has collapsed.

This means that the Air Force's careful table of comparisons is utterly useless and irrelevant to the interpretation of the Roswell Incident. The table of comparison fails utterly to account for the clear statements of Major Marcel and Bill Brazel as to the unique and extraordinary properties of the debris, and that means, that Mogul is *not* the solution to the Roswell Incident.

This conclusion now casts a unique light on Captain McAndrew's initial admissions, and on the statements of the witnesses cited in this table, for on the one hand, *by admitting that it did indeed perform recovery efforts in Roswell in July of 1947, and by the fact that the Mogul components do* ***not*** *explain the debris, the strong possibility arises that the Air Force did indeed recover something, and that a Mogul balloon was not what it recovered, but is in fact part of an ongoing cover-up.* And on the other hand, because the

witnesses adduced in the table do *in fact describe specifics that **are** so self-evidently similar to Air Force equipment and procedures, even though the majority of the citations come from witnesses no longer acknowledged by either the sleptics' or believers' communities are being credible, the possibility also arises and bears mentioning that those witnesses themselves may have been planted, and deliberately seeding disinformation into the Roswell research community.*

This possibility now casts the refusal of researchers Stanton T. Friedman and Don Berliner to hear the case of Mogul project participant Professor Moore into a new light. McAndrew states that episode in the following fashion:

> In response to the newspaper announcement (by Friedman soliciting witnesses to come forward and share information about the Roswell incident), two scientists central to the actual explanation of the "Roswell" events. Professor Charles B. Moore, a former U.S. Army Air Forces contract engineer, and Bernard D. Gildenberg, retired Holloman (Air Force Base) Branch Physical Science Administrator and Meteorologist, came forward with pertinent information. According to Moore and Gildenberg, when they met with the authors their explanations that some of the Air Force projects they participated in were mostly likely responsible for the incident, they were summarily dismissed. The authors even went so far as to suggest that these distinguished scientists were participants in a multifaceted government cover-up to conceal the truth about the Roswell Incident.[11]

But rather than read this incident with Friedman and Berliner as the culprits, why not the reverse? Why not read it with Moore and Gildenberg as the culprits, for as is evident from the later context of the Air Force's "final report," it is evident that the Air Force will go to almost any length to implant the idea of the balloon interpretation of the Incident, including the exclusion of Marcel's and Brazel's debris testimony to the citation of witnesses not viewed as credible by either the skeptical or believers' community! Thus, Friedman and Berliner, who clearly *already knew* of the unusual property of the debris as described by Marcel and others, were

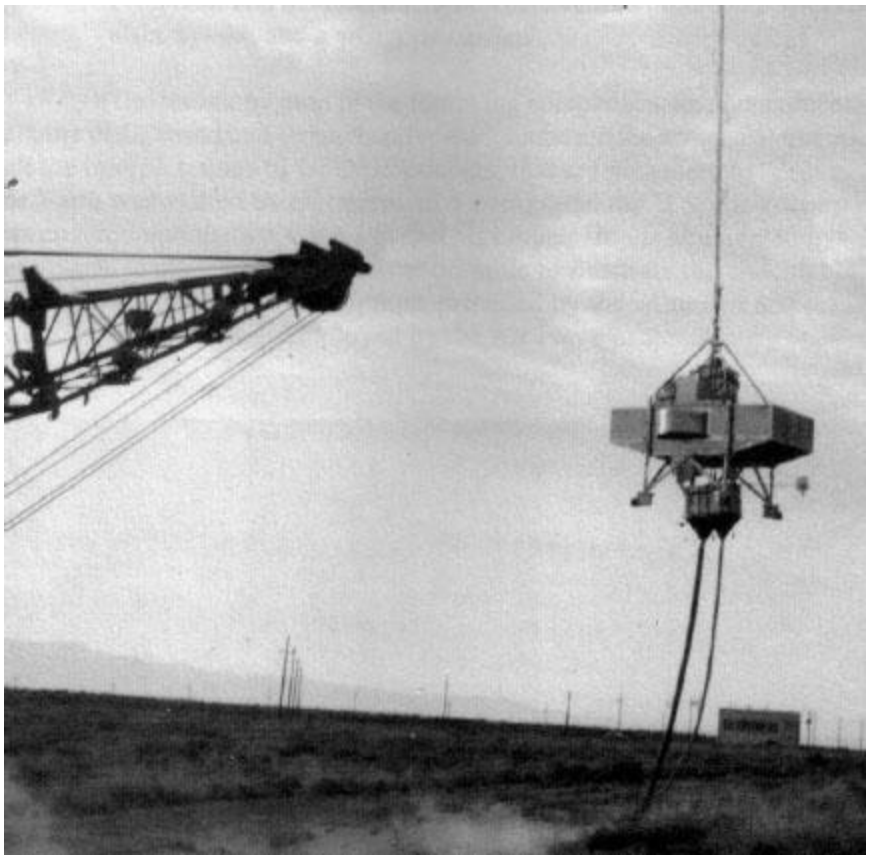
rightfully concerned about being approached by former Air Force personnel who could do nothing but “spin” those properties away.

In short, Berliner and Friedman appear to have been exercising due caution, rather than the ham-fisted tendentiousness as insinuated by Korff in the previous chapter, or as insinuated by the Air Force report. If there is any ham-fisted tendentiousness, it is in this table of correspondences between “witness” descriptions and Air Force equipment and procedures.

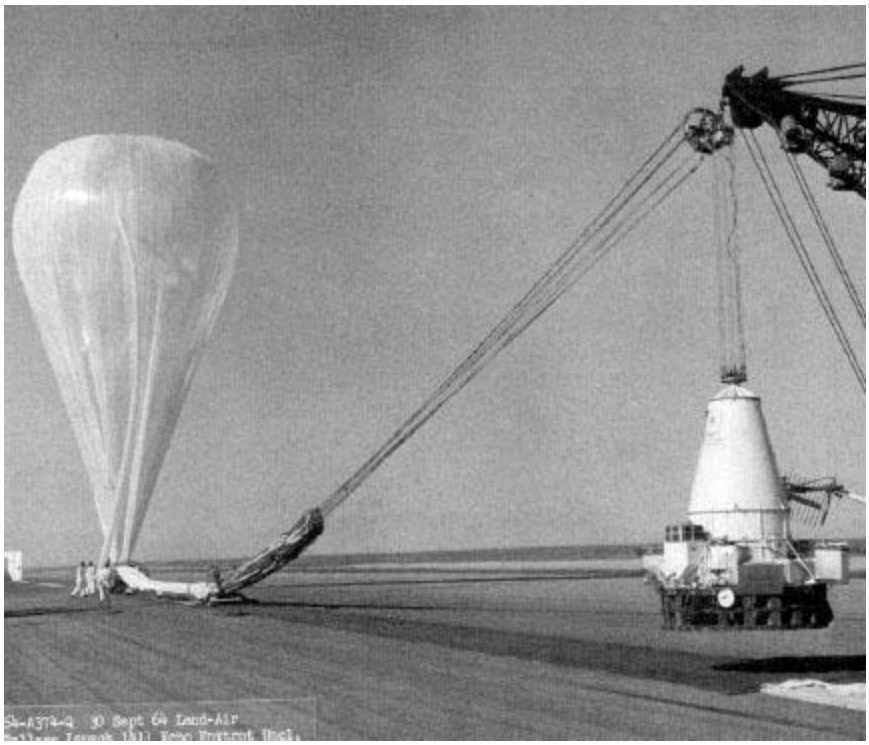
The bottom line is that the Air Force explanation simply fails to explain the unusual properties of the debris, and the possibility must be entertained, for all the above reasons, that the Mogul explanation is the latest, and cleverest, attempt to perpetuate a cover-up of what happened in Roswell in 1947. And in the final analysis, it is not really that clever.

3. The Balloon Launch Hypothesis: Bodies and Debris

These considerations cast the rest of the report into an unusual light as well. Perhaps sensing that its clumsy attempt to explain the Roswell debris by the Mogul balloon explanation alone was ultimately a futile exercise, the Air Force now maintained that the descriptions of “witnesses” got the basic facts right, but the *times* wrong, and that they were describing secret high altitude balloon launches of anthropomorphic dummies – which would “explain” the bodies — and of space probes, which loosely would account for the debris properties that were clearly *not* attributable to any balloon. In testimony of this explanation, the Air Force report reproduced several photos of balloons actually launching unusual cargos consisting of space probes:



Launch of a High Altitude Balloon and Payload from Holloman Air Force Base, 1976[12]



Another High Altitude Payload Launch with an Air Force Balloon[13]

Intriguing and suggestive as these pictures are, they fail to account for two simple facts: firstly, all of the pictures depicted in the Air Force report are from periods *subsequent* to the Roswell Incident, and it can only argue that the non-credible "witnesses" it adduces were confused as to what time the event took place. Secondly, even if one were to grant that a similar project was under way at the time of the Incident, none of the exotic probes being launched by these balloons would seem to possess the unusual properties attested to by Marcel, Bill Brazel, and others, namely, great tensile strength, the inability to be cut or burnt, or the "memory metal" characteristics.

And there is a final problem, and the careful reader will have noticed it immediately, and that is that these pictures of *balloons* launching unusual and "exotic" equipment are an explanation that can "account" for the *first two explanations offered by the Air Force on July 8, 1947*, namely, its initial report that it had recovered a flying saucer, and its subsequent report, mere hours later, that it was just a weather balloon.

Succinctly stated, *the Air Force's 1997 report tends inadvertently to support our previously-stated consideration that the initial press release by First Lieutenant Walter Haut was itself a part of the cover-up, and not an inadvertent admission of the truth.* If that be the case, however, it seems suspicious that those two cover stories of 1947 — the crashed saucer and the weather balloon — would have been prepared *so long in advance of these most recent revelations.* If, as has been suggested, the current Air Force theory still does *not* account for all the properties of the debris — and it clearly does not — then this suggests that a *very elaborate and long range disinformation campaign was put into place at the outset*, and that the current revelations are part of that campaign. If this be the case, then the Roswell Incident likely still contains an exotic, extraordinary core. Moreover, as the above pictures suggest, the truth of the Roswell Incident may lie somewhere between the skeptical end of the spectrum, with its "mere balloon" explanation, and the believers' end of the spectrum, with its "crashed extraterrestrial craft" interpretation.

In any case, the problem remains what is was *from the very moment Major Marcel described the debris to Stanton Friedman: the initial problem was the debris, not the bodies.* The bodies, as the Air Force report itself observes, entered the Roswell story at a *subsequent* point.

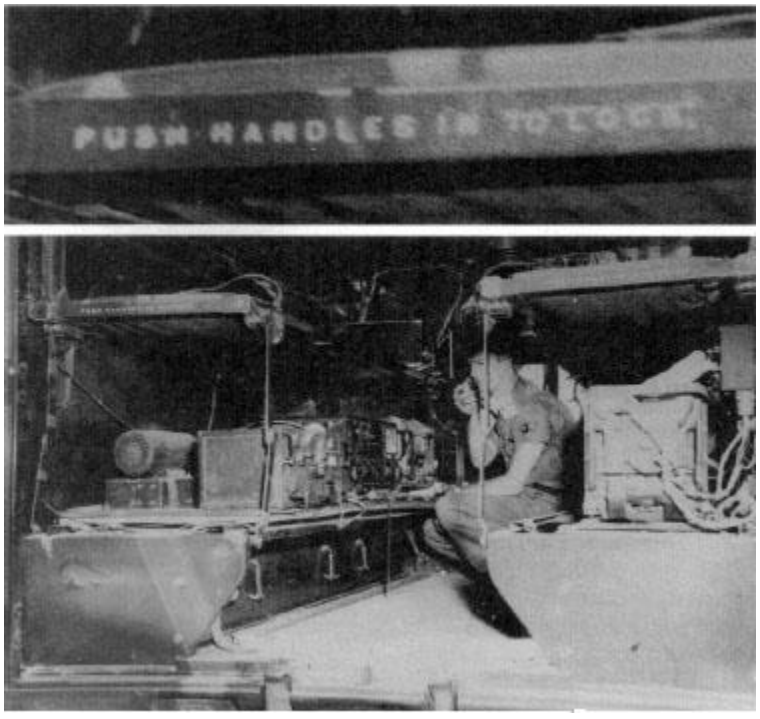
4. The Hieroglyphics: A Failure to Explain

The debris's unusual properties are not the only material problems that the Air Force report encounters. The other one is the repeated assertions by Major Marcel, his son Jesse Marcel Jr, Mac Brazel's son Bill Brazel, and his daughter Bessie Brazel Schreiber, to have seen strange Chinese- or Japanese-like writing or even "hieroglyphics" on some of the Roswell material. The Air Force's *Roswell Report: Case Closed*, may contain what is the most egregiously inane explanation of them all. Indeed, in a certain sense, it actually boggles the mind that after such an initial careful report as its Mogul explanation of 1994, that the Air Force would release a final report that, once again, relied on a "witness" with whom the Roswell research community was increasingly having credibility difficulties.

That witness was the now-impeached Glenn Dennis, whose fanciful tales of a nurse, alien bodies, and debris with hieroglyphics in the back of an army ambulance, were coming under increasing doubt by the Roswell research community, which at that time was pressuring Dennis to release the name of his anonymous nurse friend. As is now known, he eventually did so, but when no record of that nurse could be found in the records, Dennis changed his tune and said that he had deliberately given a false name of the nurse in order to protect her identity and keep a promise he had made to her. In that step, Dennis impeached himself as a witness.

Any testimony of Dennis to the Air Force thus stands in the same position as the “witnesses” cited in Captain McAndrew’s careful table of comparisons between “witness” statements and actual Air Force equipment and procedures at that time: it is entirely valueless as testimony.

Nonetheless, it is worth examining what the 1997 Air Force report says, or rather, pictures, about Dennis, and about his “ambulance with debris, a canoe, and “hieroglyphics.” The following picture of an army ambulance, configured as a radio vehicle for the balloon projects of the period, is offered as an explanation both of the “debris” that he saw, of the “craft” that looked like a “canoe,” and of the “hieroglyphics.”



Ambulance with "Hieroglyphics"[14]

The explanation of this equation of clear, plain Roman letters in clear, simple English, as "hieroglyphics," is almost as comical as its early "swamp gas" and "Venus" explanations for early UFO sightings:

> …the so called "hieroglyphics were a probable reference to the lettering painted on the equipment support rack above the panels. The lettering on the rack would be visible, but probably not readable, to an observer that quickly walked past the ambulance. Other wreckage "all over the floor" that was "like broken glass," was a probable reference to the clear plastic 30-foot polyethylene balloon that was recovered following the balloon training mission and placed in the back of the converted ambulance or the weapons carrier for later disposal.[15]

Uh-huh. I know that whenever I walk by a sign and see it in my peripheral vision, and cannot really make out what it says, that I immediately think that my illiteracy is probably due to that sign's being written in hieroglyphics. And I know that the reader probably thinks this as well.

The sheer lunacy of "explanation" here is about as nutty as Arlen Specter's "magic bullet" theory for the Warren Commission, only in this case, it is much worse, for now we have a nutty explanation for a story that ultimately bears no relevance to the Roswell Incident whatsoever. Even if one allows Dennis' testimony for the sake of argument, he was hardly a fool, and would hardly mistake plain English for hieroglyphics, nor common radio racks for unusual debris and a canoe-shaped craft.

Whatever one makes of Glenn Dennis, he was hardly this big of a fool, and neither are we.

5. Summing Up

In summary, the Air Force's "final report" is, at the minimum, a *major* failure to explain the Roswell Incident, and at the maximum, an *utter* failure to do so. As has been seen, its preponderant and tendentious reliance upon discredited witnesses only marginalizes the whole effort to compare their statements with known equipment, procedures, and secret projects of the era into a vast irrelevancy. The report fails to explain the most unusual properties of the debris as recounted by firsthand witnesses Jesse Marcel Sr., and Jesse Marcel Jr., not to mention Bill Brazel and his sister Bessie. Indeed, those witnesses are not even *mentioned* in the Air Force report. This fact, plus its reliance upon witnesses discredited both by the Roswell believers' and skeptics' community means that the report cannot be viewed as anything other than deliberately tendentious, and a continuing cover-up, since it refuses to deal with these anomalous descriptions.

Similarly, the report's attempt to explain the *bodies* is suspect simply because its explanations are anachronistic and obfuscate those witnesses's testimony by insinuating that they remember all details correctly, *except* the timing of the incidents. This is clearly a tendentious and a dubious methodology, for it allows the Air Force to cherry-pick which memories of a witness are "genuine" and which are "faulty," an almost Soviet-style psychological procedure, and a dangerous and dubious moral precedent for any agency of the American federal government to establish.

Nonetheless, the report does raise interesting questions, for its official "explanation" of high-altitude balloon-launched anthropomorphic dummies and highly unusual space probes does suggest that the actual Roswell Incident truth lies somewhere between "mere balloons" and "extraterrestrial craft." As was also suggested, its' easy and convenient explanation also raises the possibility that *both* the original "recovered flying saucer" and "crashed weather balloon" stories were part of a cover-up. In this respect, the central properties of the Roswell Incident that remained unexplained by the Mogul theory were the exotic properties of the Roswell debris described by primary witnesses Jesse Marcel Sr. Jesse Marcel Jr, and Bill Brazel.

B. Kevin Randle's Responses

Some of the most subtle responses to the questions raised by the skeptics, and by the Air Force reports themselves, were given by Kevin Randle, who, now free of the "extraterrestrial euphoria" and "saucer logic" of his former partner Don Schmitt, has returned to a more balanced tone and tempered analysis in his recent writings. Indeed, in this author's opinion, if one compares the tone of Randle's more recent *Roswell Revisited* (2007) with that of his and then co-author Don Schmitt's *UFO Crash at Roswell* (1991) or *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell* (1994), that tone is downright subdued.

1. Randle's Admissions Regarding the Principal Revisionist Witnesses

The signal example of this new, "less confident" but "more analytical" tone is evident in Randle's admissions and statements about the status of the two primary witnesses in the revisionist scenario, Jim Ragsdale and Frank Kaufmann:

> A number of years ago I believed that I had interviewed more than a half a dozen people who had seen the bodies of the alien creatures killed in the Roswell UFO crash. These were men who claimed to have firsthand knowledge, had been stationed in Roswell at the time, or who lived in Roswell at the time, and who seemed to be telling me the truth. *One by one I learned that they hadn't seen alien bodies and their stories, while quite exciting, were not based in reality.*
>
> *That seemed to set the investigation back to its original point, meaning we had only the testimony of those who had seen the strange metallic debris*, who had walked the Debris Field on the Foster Ranch, or had seen something in the air that might have been the craft just prior to the crash.[16]

Note carefully what Randle is saying here: without the testimony of discredited witnesses such as Gerald Anderson, Frank Kaufmann, Glenn Dennis, or Jim Ragsdale, the whole nature of the Roswell Incident reverts back to its original first articulation: the recovery of a *technology* ***only.*** Indeed, out of the original crop of witnesses testifying to bodies of some

sort, the only witness's testimony that remains is that of Sergeant Melvin Brown, and in that instance, one is reliant upon second-hand dead man's testimony.

In this respect, Randle's very next admission is interesting in its own right, and it is worth citing again its context:

> That seemed to set the investigation back to its original point, meaning we had only the testimony of those who had seen the strange metallic debris, who had walked the Debris Field on the Foster Ranch, or had seen something in the air that might have been the craft just prior to the crash.
>
> *While that is enough to get us started again, it certainly doesn't take us to the extraterrestrial.*[17]

In other words, Randle is admitting what we've been arguing all along, that the descriptions of the debris, while exotic, are not exotic enough to compel to the conclusion that it is exotic enough to come from something extraterrestrial.[18]

Randle is even more specific with respect to the two principal witnesses that formed so much a part of the "revisionist scenario," Frank Kaufmann and Jim Ragsdale; regarding these two now thoroughly discredited and discounted witnesses, Randle observes that

> In the years since the Roswell case exploded all over the media and dozens of people have begun investigations, there has been quite a bit of false, faked, and lousy information published. I confess that I have been guilty of my share of it, such as giving Frank Kaufmann a voice much louder than he deserved, but I'm not alone. We've been graced with Glenn Dennis, Gerald Anderson, Jim Ragsdale, and dozens of other lesser lights who really knew no more about the case than we did.[19]

Randle also observes that one of the principal reasons Kaufmann's story unraveled was that, after he died, original documents were discovered upon which Kaufmann had concocted forgeries in order to falsify his military

record.[20] “So Kaufmann’s story, like that of Dennis, fell apart…. No corroboration for his wild tales meant that we could now reject his story as invention.”[21]

He is equally as unsparing of one-time star witness Jim Ragsdale:

> The discrepancies that have appeared are more than the minor changes expected as someone tries to remember events in the distant past. Researchers expect a story to shift with each telling simply because of the mechanisms of memory, but these changes go beyond that. Ragsdale first reported seeing the bodies in the distance and then, in his second, more dramatic version, claimed he tried to pull a helmet off one. He originally provided a vague description of the alien and then gave one that seems to match those given by people claiming to be abducted by aliens. Ragsdale said he watched the arrival of the military and described the convoy and later claimed to have left before the trucks were in view. Originally he said the crash site was thirty to forty miles north of Roswell but this later changed to sixty or seventy miles away.[22]

The same accusations — an ever-evolving “work in progress,” shifting details, forged and fabricated documents, could also be said to be true of one time primary “alien bodies” witness Gerald Anderson.[23]

Randle does mention one crucial detail about some of these “witnesses” that could be highly significant in the light of our above-proposed deep-cover and long-range disinformation scenario, and that is that it was former first lieutenant Walter Haut, the same Haut responsible for the now famous flying saucer press release of 1947, who led Roswell researchers to Glenn Dennis,[24] and to Frank Kaufmann![25]

2. “New” Witnesses, and Old Ones Retreaded

With these admissions, the search was under way once again for witnesses — primary or otherwise — who could speak to the issue of the

bodies, for the bodies were what they always were, the key to arguing a convincing case that what crashed was extraterrestrial.

Randle and others soon uncovered them, only this time, the collective picture that they presented was not nearly as tidy as his and one-time co-author Don Schmitt's, nor even as tidy as the "standard scenario" of Berlitz, Moore, Berliner, and Friedman. One of these was Anne Robbins, whose husband, Ernest Robert Robbins, had been a tech sergeant on the base during the Incident. Anne related that her husband had come home wet one night from the base, stating that he had gone through some sort of decontamination process. When asked what it was all about, she related that he told her that "there had been a flying saucer crash outside of Roswell." According to Anne, her husband described it as "saucer shaped and that there was a top layer that was oblong and had windows in it."[26]

Robbins' alleged description of the aliens was more interesting:

> Robbins told his wife that there had been three beings on the craft. He used the word people. One was dead and two were alive. Later he would tell his son that the creatures had pear-shaped heads with large black eyes and brown skin. In a break with traditional descriptions, he said that they had no nose and no mouth.[27]

The only truly and genuinely unusual physiological features allegedly described by Ernest Robbins to his wife are the lack of a nose and mouth.

Randle also returned in *Roswell Revisited* to defend the statements of Frankie Rowe, who maintained that her father, a fireman with the Roswell Fire Department in 1947, had responded to a call north of Roswell, where he saw both debris and aliens. In response to the criticism of skeptics that the fire department, with only two trucks at that time, would hardly have responded to calls from outside the city, Randle consulted the logs for a period going "back into the 1920s." Contrary to the arguments of the skeptics, he did indeed find records that showed responses to alarms outside the city.[28] Randle admits, however, that there are no records for a response to a call during the period of the Roswell Incident.[29] Randle hints that "For those with a conspiratorial turn of the mind, the claim might be that the Army managed to get the entry of that specific run removed so that there

would be no documentation if anyone ever looked."[30] In any case, Rowe described he father as seeing three bodies, two dead and one alive. They were small, about the size of a ten-year old, and with copper-colored skin.[31] Unfortunately for the extraterrestrial scenario, there is nothing in these physiological details to compel to the conclusion that Rowe's bodies were extraterrestrial.

And there was another problem. Randle admitted that the original reason that Rowe submitted she was in Roswell during the Incident was for oral surgery. But checks with local dentists by various Roswell investigators have never been able to confirm this.[32] On the other hand, Rowe's sister Helen Cahill was able to confirm that she did hear stories of the crash during a visit to her family in New Mexico in 1960.[33] In the end, however, Rowe's story has neither been advanced, nor completely discredited.

a. Anna Willmon

Anna Willmon was a firsthand witness to the Roswell Incident, and though her memory "was not as sharp as it once had been,"[34] her story is worth citing, as Randle presents it.

> She told me, during both a telephone and later a taped videotaped interview, that she had been in the Capitan Mountains west of Roswell with her first husband, W.I. Witcamp. As they returned from a long morning of work at a sawmill, they saw something shining off the highway and stopped to look for it. They were about twenty miles from Roswell along what is known as the Pine Lodge Road.
>
> Together she and her husband moved through the brush until they came to an object shaped like an overturned washtub, which means that it was circular, or to stretch the point, saucer-like. She didn't think it was very large, maybe twelve to fifteen feet in diameter. She did see bodies of the flight crew, or "little guys" as she called them.
>
> She said that the surface of the craft was very shiny, almost mirrorlike. It was in two pieces. One of them sat up on four short, stubby legs and the other, looking as if it had been knocked from the top in the crash, was sitting a short distance away. She insisted on

calling it a flying saucer and said that her husband had called it that repeatedly.

She didn't see much of the creatures because as she approached one, with the thought of turning it over, her husband stopped her. He was afraid of radiation or maybe disease. He didn't want her to touch them, or the remains of the craft.

She said that there were two bodies: one lying face-down in the dirt and the other in the shade of some cedar trees, as if he had crawled over there before he died. The skin looked like burnt rubber. It was a grayish-brown, she said, that was hard to define.

She said, "…that other one was laying up kinda towards this brush and the other was out back… like he had been flung out of the thing. And this other little guy looked like he'd got out and went off and laid down… And he wasn't very big. He was about a big as a little five-ear-old kid. A little one."

She said that one of them was slim, skinny, with short arms and little hands and feet. The other one, the one she thought might have survived the crash only to die a little later, was chubby. His arms were short and his feet looked like human feet. His skin tone matched those of the other. The only real difference was that he was heavier than his fellows.

She said that they were dressed the same. They (wore) green shorts and nothing else. She could see their backs and said that they looked normal. The skin was rubber-like. But she made it clear that these were small creatures. She mentioned that repeatedly.[35]

Other than the skin color and apparent texture (recall that Willmon did not actually touch the beings) there is nothing in these details, once again, compelling to the conclusion that they were extraterrestrials.

But there are other problems, as Randle notes. Willmon's "aliens" are somewhat different than others' descriptions. Moreover, "the timing of her story and the location, only twenty miles from Roswell and north of the Pine Lodge Road, doesn't fit with other information that has been developed."[36] She admitted contact with the military, but unlike other

witnesses who claimed to have seen bodies, never mentioned that she or her husband had been threatened or intimidated into silence.[37]

b. Johnson, the Debris, and the Bodies

Another significant witness is a former member of the Roswell base's 1395th Military Police Company, a man that Randle simply calls "sergeant Johnson," to protect his identity, though Johnson was not a sergeant at the time of the Roswell Incident, but the "acting corporal of the guard."[38] Randle states that even though the man's real surname *is* Johnson, it is such a common surname and "since his picture does not appear in the (Roswell base's) Yearbook, it will be difficult to trace him."[39] According to Johnson, while he was acting corporal of the guard, his unit

> Received a telephone call that said there was a crash up near Corona. Johnson was told to take a detail of four men but ended up taking about a dozen to secure the site. They drove to Corona, talked to the police and a few people to get directions and then drove out to the crash site. Johnson said that the craft had impacted and was standing at a twenty-to thirty-degree angle from the ground. He said, sort of confirming what Anna Willmon said, that the craft was about twelve to fourteen feet in diameter and that it was very light, no more than half a ton or maybe 1,200 pounds. Reflecting on it, he now suspects the craft was made of some kind of composite material.
>
> According to what he told John Carpenter, there were three dead creatures and one that was alive. In a variation of a theme, Johnson said that the aliens were wearing "what looked like a complete fabric covering over their bodies." It was silver colored.
>
> He said the creatures were short, just over four feet tall and maybe weighed ninety pounds. Their heads were covered by some kind of a hood but he could see two oval-shaped eyes, and two holes where the nose would be, only lower on the face. He said that there might have been glass or plastic or something covering the eyes. They were a dark color that was so black that it looked to be slightly blue…[40]

He said that the suit covered everything so that he couldn't see the skin or if there was hair on the head. He didn't see enough, or remember enough to describe hands or feet…

Johnson said that he, along with the men he had taken with him, were the only people there the first night. He said that they didn't sleep, not with the alien creature walking around, though at some point it did lay down. He said that he wasn't sure if the alien had gone to sleep or not but though it had remained awake because it seemed to be moving restlessly all the time.

According to Johnson, the bodies and the living creature were taken from the site early the next morning. According to Johnson, the bodies, and later he craft, were taken to Wright Field, now Wright-Patterson Air Force Base in Dayton, Ohio. He had no direct knowledge of this, but it was what he had been told, or what he learned later.

Once his tour at the site was over, he, along with the others, were taken back to Roswell. Johnson said that he hadn't told his first wife about the crash because he was under orders not to. Under questioning it became clear that he was referring to a fairly standard warning given to all soldiers who hold a top secret clearance. Sharing information with those not authorized to have it could result in a big fine and up to twenty years in prison.

He did say, however, that every so often he would get a call reminding him of his obligations. They would tell him he knew the rules and that he had children.[41]

Other than the peculiarity about the creatures having apparently no nose, and nostrils slightly lower than normal, it is to be noted once again that nothing either in Johnson's descriptions of the crash, nor of the creatures, is so unusual as to compel to an extraterrestrial interpretation for them. But if that is the case, why did the military continue to remind Johnson of his security oath some time after the Incident?

While military records clearly show that Johnson was indeed assigned to the Roswell air field in 1947 and was a member of the military police,[42] Johnson admitted that he had had not only heart attacks but a stroke, and that his memory "wasn't as good as it once had been."[43] More importantly,

Stanton Friedman had forwarded copies of his reports and books to Johnson prior to Johnson's first interview, "so that a case can be made that Johnson's memory was contaminated,"[44] and in that respect, Randle notes that Johnson's "dark blue-black eyes," similar to discredited witness Gerald Anderson's accounts, indicates that the possibility of contaminated memory must be entertained in his case.

c. Jorgenson's Story: Drone Jets, Hieroglyphics, and Some Descriptions

Another witness Randle mentions in his latest book is Martin Jorgenson. Randle recounts Jorgenson's story in the following manner:

> Martin Jorgensen walked into the International UFO Museum and Research Center in Roswell and mentioned, off-hand, casually, that he had been around Roswell in 1947. Don Burleson, a Roswell resident, happened to be in the museum at the time and, according to Burleson, "(I) tackled the guy (almost literally)."
>
> Sometimes called "Tex" by researchers, Jorgenson said that he was a civilian working for the military and that he, along with his colleagues, stumbled onto the site while searching for a drone jet aircraft that had been tested on July 3 but that had crashed somewhere near Roswell. He, along with several NCOs, had been told to find it.
>
> As they neared the site, Jorgenson said that he saw pieces of bright silver metal. The metal appeared to be very light and later he would learn quite hard. He said that he saw some sort of writing, that is "hieroglyphics," on it.
>
> The craft, he said, was stubby with curved-back wings. It was a small object, about twenty feet long and only about 12 to 14 feet wide. It had the look of some of the rocket ships in the old Buck Rogers serials.
>
> There were three creatures. One was dead; one, though alive, was slumped over, and the third was standing in the canopy looking at the men. They were small, with a grayish, greenish skin, and dark slanted eyes. They had large heads and small noses.

> Unlike Willmon, but like others, Jorgenson said they were wearing uniforms, or what might have been uniforms, but he wasn't sure. He didn't notice their hands or their feeit.
>
> Jorgenson said that he left the site shortly after the recovery began. He returned to the base and there he was warned not to talk about what he had seen. He said that he had to sign some kind of an oath or nondisclosure agreement….[45]

Notably, Jorgenson does describe unusual physiological features on his creatures, the most notable being "greenish-gray skin." This could indeed be taken as indicative of an extraterrestrial origin. The problem is, the craft he describes is a stubby craft "with curved back wings" and unusually small dimensions, dimensions that are so small, in fact, that it is difficult to envision the craft as anything practical for interplanetary travel, much less inter-stellar travel.

But like so many other witnesses, there is a "real concern about this story," and that is that there are no records of any test of a drone jet aircraft that had gone astray.[46]

d. Gonzales' Aliens and the "Spacecraft"

Thomas Gonzales was another witness impressed into service during the Roswell Incident, and he informed famous ufologist Don Ecker and fellow researcher John Price that "he had seen the bodies of the alien creatures."[47] Gonzales' family made note of the fact that he began telling them the story in the 1960s, long before the Roswell Incident had become part of the wider culture.[48] Gonzales described the "aliens" as "little men," but definitely "not like the 'Greys' (sic) of the more recent abduction literature."[49] Like Jorgenson, however, his description of the craft would seem to belie any extraterrestrial origin, for he said it looked "more like an airfoil than it did like a saucer."[50]

e. Provost Marshal Edwin Easley, and Barton's Bodies, Aircraft, and Radiation

One of the most significant witnesses developed by subsequent research into the Roswell Incident was the 509th Bomb Group's Provost Marshal, Edwin Easley. As the provost marshal, Easley was in charge of all the military police and all the security functions connected with the base, and as such, if the stories of the military cordoning off the debris and crash sites were true, Easley likely had the principal role in doing so.[51] Easley consistently maintained a discrete silence with Randle and other interviewers, insisting that he had been sworn to secrecy. All he *would* confirm was that Mac Brazel had been "held at the guest house on the base."[52]

At the end of an interview with Easley, however, Randle asked him "if he though UFO researchers were following the right path."[53] Easley asked what Randle meant by this question, and Randle stated "We believed the craft found was of extraterrestrial origin." Easley's answer was unusually cryptic, though Randle, of course, interprets it as being confirmation of the extraterrestrial hypothesis: "He then said, 'Let me put it this way. That's not the wrong path.'"[54] Randle then adds the following important information:

> (Easley) went on from Roswell to a long career in the Air Force. He certainly wasn't the type of individual to invent such a tale. In fact, had he not been sought out and interviewed, his role in the Roswell events would never have been known. He didn't come forward to find his place in the spotlight or see himself on television. Because he was so reluctant to talk, his testimony suggesting the craft was of extraterrestrial origin is extremely important.
>
> The problem for skeptics, and frankly some of the believers, is that I didn't get Easley on tape saying this…. I called Easley to verify some things. I was in the course of this conversation that he verified the idea that the craft had been extraterrestrial.[55]

But did Easley in fact say this? He did not. He merely suggested that the extraterrestrial path was not the wrong path. But this does not imply that he meant it was the *right* one either. There are other possibilities, and these possibilities are evident in the man that Randle next introduces as corroboration of the Easley story, First Lieutenant Chester Barton.

Barton related to researcher Joe Stefula that Major Easley had ordered him to the crash site. But now note carefully what Barton actually stated, as Randle himself recounts it:

> …Barton said that it took them about forty-five minutes to get out to the site, confirming a detail from Lewis Rickett. He said that they hit a checkpoint, confirming still another detail.
>
> The area was filled with parts of the craft and there was a burned area. The best description that Barton could offer was that *the debris looked like the remains of a crashed aircraft.* He did mention that some of the military police were using Geiger counters and that *they did detect some radiation in certain spots.*
>
> Barton said that there weren't any large pieces of it and *no signs of a propeller or engines.* He said that it appeared as if the object had bounced two or three times before it came to rest.
>
> …
>
> …
>
> To be fair, it must be noted that Barton said, "Based on what I saw, I still believe it was a B-29, I heard very little about the bodies. They were taken to the hospital, but I didn't see them. I know it was a hush-hush deal and Easley told us to keep our mouths shut."
>
> …
>
> It should be noted here that nearly everyone who has researched the crash looked into the possibility of an aircraft accident. None of us found anything like that. The Air Force, which would have much better access to such records, did the same thing with the same results. There were no aircraft accidents, not military, not civilian, and not experimental, that would account for the strange debris.
>
> So Easley's testimony, corroborated by multiple sources, and especially that from February 1991, is extremely important to understanding the nature of the Roswell case. Had the object found been of mundane…

(There's that word-play again.)

> …configuration, had it merely been an aircraft of some new design, or even a weather balloon that had been launched as part of a top secret project, Easley would have known simply because of who he was and what he did at Roswell. He wouldn't have been sworn to secrecy, and he certainly wouldn't have said that it was something extraterrestrial in origin…

(And he did not.)

> …if that hadn't been the case.[56]

But let us look more closely at the corroborating witness whom Randle himself introduced to confirm his extraterrestrial interpretation of Easley's cryptic comment.

f. An "Estimation of the Situation"

First, we note that Randle specifically asked Easley if the craft was of "extraterrestrial *origin*," and that Easley cryptically replied that it was "not the wrong path." But this could mean a number of things, including merely that the craft had "off-planet capabilities," and hence, in that sense, was of "extraterrestrial origin."

Indeed, the very witness, Barton, that Randle introduces as corroboration, maintained that what *he* saw looked "like the remains of a crashed aircraft, and moreover, thought it was simply the remains of a crashed B-29 Superfortress bomber. This hardly qualifies as extraterrestrial.

Finally, Randle himself observes that not only he but other Roswell researchers, including the Air Force itself, had checked records and could find no crashed military, civilian, or experimental craft in that area and for that time. But this does not mean that whatever crashed was extraterrestrial, for *if one takes the statements of Randle's own witness, Barton, seriously, and juxtaposes them with Easley's cryptic comment, this points not to an* ***American*** *origin of the craft, but to some unknown* ***terrestrial*** *origin of it.* In other words, something about the craft was *so unusual* that to Easley, it

looked extraterrestrial, but to Barton, something about it was *so familiar* that it looked terrestrial. And if there was no record of any sort of loss of an American craft, experimental or otherwise, then the possibility must be entertained that it was *exotic though terrestrial, and possibly of an "extraterrestrial capability."*

In my opinion, the wider ufology community, and the Roswell research community in particular, has failed to consider this possibility adequately and thoroughly, and until it does, it may never solve the mystery.

In point of fact, what one is now left with are the three basic facts of the Roswell Incident:

1) "Something" crashed that was of an unusual nature, leaving debris with partly familiar, partly exotic properties, that *no* balloon explanation adequately explains, and that can lead witnesses who saw it to two different conclusions, that it was "extraterrestrial" because of the exotic properties of the debris, or that it was merely an "aircraft" and therefore terrestrial because of its familiar properties. Moreover, in some descriptions of the craft itself, there is an emphasis on the fact that it is an airfoil of some sort, with some descriptions even emphasizing its short, small nature and swept back wings. The dimensions of the craft would, similarly, appear to be too small for any sort of practical interplanetary travel, and therefore, this feature would tend to support its *terrestrial* origin, though something about the craft is so unusual or exotic as to suggest to various witnesses it might be extraterrestrial, or at least, have an off-world capability;
2) The military *recovered* that "something," and took great pains to maintain secrecy about it, even though its origins were unclear. Moreover, as argued earlier in this chapter, it would appear that *both* the original flying saucer story and the later weather balloon story were disinformation, each emphasizing one or another pole of whatever was recovered, the flying saucer story emphasizing the unusual nature of what was recovered, and the weather balloon story emphasizing the "ordinariness" of the object. As also argued earlier, it would seem apparent that the latest balloon theory — the Mogul balloon — fails to account adequately for the unusual nature of the

debris. As was also evident, the Air Force utterly failed to cite any witness description of the debris that referred to its unusual or exotic properties, and thereby more or less confirmed its second disinformation story, the one emphasizing the ordinariness of the object;

3) Finally, at a later point in the unfolding of the story, some witnesses claim to have seen bodies. In some cases, the details provided would support an extraterrestrial conclusion, but notably, *in those cases, there is no consistent description of physiological details that would support that conclusion;* whereas, in those cases that are more or less consistent, the details do not compel to the conclusion that the bodies were in fact extraterrestrial.

As Randle himself aptly and succinctly puts it: "this was not a single-witness case with only some dim memory from that single witness, but a multiple-witness case with newspaper articles as limited corroboration that something extraordinary happened."[57] As mentioned previously, however, there is *no logical argument whatsoever that can lead from "the extraordinary" to the "necessarily extraterrestrial," just as there is no logical argument whatsoever that can lead from "the terrestrial" to "the ordinary."*

3. The Air Force's Mogul Investigation: Whom it Did Not Interview, and Why

This brings us at last to a consideration of Randle's replies to the skeptics and to the latest balloon theory. As noted in the previous chapter examining the "Roswell skeptics," the Roswell base counter-intelligence office, Sheridan Cavitt, swore an affidavit indicating, contrary to Major Jesse Marcel Sr., that the debris field on the Foster ranch was rather small. Either Cavitt is wrong, or Marcel is wrong. But now, there is a problem with Cavitt's story, and Randle is quick to spot what it is:

> Remember, however, that Cavitt told Air Force investigators in the 1990s he knew immediately what it was. He just never said anything about that to Marcel, if we are to believe him now. Rather than say it

was a balloon and leave, he stayed with Marcel as Marcel attempted to identify the wreckage and spent hours on the Debris Field.[58]

As we have already observed, it has been suggested by some that Marcel himself only began to ascribe specifically extraterrestrial characteristics to the unusual debris when it was suggested to him by UFO researchers, preferring, at first, simply to say that he did not know what it was, and maintaining that it was "other-worldly," i.e., highly unusual. In any case, Randle's implication is correct: Cavitt's story really makes no sense, for we are asked to believe that he wasted his, and Marcel's, time combing a balloon debris field for an entire day, a field that, by his own account, was very small.

But there is another possibility that must now be mentioned: note that both Marcel, and Cavitt, are each military men, and that each are maintaining both poles of that now familiar spectrum of stories regarding the debris, with Marcel emphasizing its unusual "extraterrestrial" nature, and Cavitt emphasizing its ordinariness. It is as if a careful dialectical opposition of interpretations has been set up within the Incident from the start, a dialectic compelling to one of two interpretations, one toward an "extraterrestrial exaggeration," and another, its opposite, inclining towards a "skeptical pole", an exaggeration of the merely ordinary qualities of the event. And if one wishes to press this observation, that very dialectic contains within it a potential solution: that what happened was both entirely extraordinary, and entirely terrestrial, and that it did not originate from the crash of something from this country. Such dialectical techniques are typical in the process of "crisis management," and thus, *the presence of these dialectical poles within the Roswell Incident and the initial stories of crashed flying saucers and misidentified weather balloons are the surest indicator that the Air Force had a crisis on its hands, and was dealing with it by utilizing all the standard tools of perception management and the obfuscation of potential interpretations.* They are the surest indicator that there was something approaching genuine panic within higher echelons of the military and the government. Thus, Randle is also very quick to perceive the tendentiousness in the Air Force's latest balloon theory, and the fact that it emphasizes only one of those dialectical poles in the choice of witnesses it interviewed. Not only did it fail to interview Brigadier General

Arthur Exon (about whom more in Part Two),[59] but as has been seen, it failed utterly to mention any of the descriptions of the debris given by Major Marcel, his son, or other witnesses who saw and handled it first-hand:

> I know why the Air Force ignored all that testimony. No matter what we've seen in the past, how various writers and investigators have handled the statements made by Exon, DuBose, Easley, Marcel, and the others, the Air Force didn't want to be put in a position of calling retired officers liars. What if Exon took offense at being labeled a liar and decided to sue? The consequences would be ugly, no matter what was learned or what the truth was.
>
> … The problem would remain that either high-ranking officers were fairly incompetent, or were in fact liars.[60]

In other words, having stuck to one of those dialectical poles — the "ordinary" side — since its second official "weather balloon" explanation emanating from General Roger Ramey's office in Fort Worth, the Air Force could not afford to *be* objective in its examination of witness statements. Witnesses had to be selected who could buttress the new, more refined, Mogul balloon theory, a theory that only explains that particular pole of the evidence, while ignoring the "extraordinary" pole! And lest the significance of Randle's insight goes unnoticed here, it is best to state it baldly, for that tendentiousness means in effect that the dialectic of crisis management is still in place, and that means that whatever crisis the Roswell Incident signaled is also, to whatever extent, still ongoing.[61]

4. General DuBose

In the previous chapter, it was seen that General Ramey's then chief of staff, Colonel, later Brigadier General, Thomas J. Dubose completely discredited Major Jesse Marcel's "Bait and Switch," scenario, i.e., that the original Roswell debris which had been spread out on General Ramey's office floor was removed, and actual weather balloon debris substituted for it while Major Marcel and briefly left the office. According to that scenario,

when Marcel re-entered the office, much to his consternation and perplexity, he was ordered by General Ramey to have his picture taken with the new debris, and made the fall-guy in the weather balloon explanation. This, of course, raises the significant question of why the Army Air Force would have as the intelligence officer of the only atom bomb group in the world at that time a man who could not tell the difference between weather balloons and "something else."

Randle raises a significant question in his recounting of the role of Colonel DuBose in this aspect of the Roswell Incident:

> According to a statement signed in front of a state of Florida notary public, Colonel DuBose received a telephone call from Maj. Gen. Clements McMullen, the Deputy Commander of the Strategic Air Command, who asked about the events that had occurred outside of Roswell. DuBose, in turn, called Blanchard in Roswell and ordered him to send the material, in a sealed container, to him at Fort Worth. It was never made clear if this was some of the stuff that was brought to Roswell by (Mac) Brazel, or if it was some of the debris recovered by Marcel. The timing, based on what DuBose said during his videotaped interview made in August 1991, would indicate that it was some of the Brazel debris.[62]

Now, however, the details between DuBose interview with Jamie Shandera, and his earlier interviews, begin to surface:

> DuBose also identified the material photographed in Ramey's office as part of a weather balloon. DuBose said that the weather balloon explanation was a cover story designed to divert attention of the press. Please note here that we have testimony from a high-ranking officer who was in the office at the time, telling us that the debris displayed there was a weather balloon. He would make it clear that this debris was not the strange stuff that had been found in New Mexico.
>
> In interviews conducted in the early 1990s, and videotaped for inclusion in the Fund for UFO Research's video library, DuBose elaborated. He added that McMullen ordered Ramey to cover up the

whole thing. They, meaning those at a higher command level, wanted to "put out the fire" as quickly as they could.

Speaking of the orders he received from McMullen, DuBose said, "He (McMullen) called me and said that I was… there was talk of some elements that had been found on the ground outside Roswell, New Mexico…that the debris or elements were to be placed in a suitable container and Blanchard was to see that they were delivered… they were placed in a suitable contained and Al Clark, the base commander at Carswell (Fort Worth Army Air Field) would pick them up and hand deliver them to McMullen in Washington. Nobody, and I must stress this, no one was to discuss with their wives, me with Ramey, with anyone. The matter as far as we're concerned was closed as of that moment."

DuBose then called Blanchard in Roswell, "…and told him that there is this material his S-2 (Marcel) found in the desert and I said this is to be put in a suitable container by this major and you are to see that it is sealed, put in your little command aircraft, and flown by a proper courier (meaning an officer or NCO who is cleared to carry classified material), flown to Carswell and delivered to Al Clark who will then deliver it to McMullen."

Because it was hot that day, DuBose waited in his office until he was told that the aircraft from Roswell was in the traffic pattern. Once he had the word, he drove out onto the ramp and waited for the airplane to land. He couldn't remember whether it was a B-25 or a B-26, but did say he knew it wasn't a B-29. McMullen would not have approved of using one of the bombers.

As the plane rolled to a stop, Col. Alan Clark walked over and received the bag from the Roswell crew. DuBose said, "Clark took the package and got into the B-26 (or B-25, the Fort Worth plane standing by) through the belly of it… he handed it to somebody…it was one of those things you tied to your wrist and he handed it to somebody and climbed in there. And that's the last I saw of it. In a couple… three hours it was delivered to McMullen and that's the last I heard of it."[63]

And that, notes Randle, was also the only package according to DuBose, who made it clear "that the debris in the bag was different from the debris

that would later be displayed in Ramey's office."[64] In other words, there was a "bait and switch" scenario taking place in Fort Worth, only it was not exactly as Marcel remembered it, for the unusual debris left for Washington DC and General McMullen.[65]

5. Randle's Latest Summation of the Incident

The overall impact of the skeptics' case, and of the Air Force's recent attempts to interpret the Roswell Incident as the crash of nothing more than an ordinary Mogul balloon, have left the Roswell Incident with more or less the three basic elements enumerated above. Randle puts it this way:

> Where does all this leave us? The best tales told about Roswell, those that brought in alien bodies in a firsthand sense, have since been shown to be faked. Kaufmann, Anderson, Dennis, and Ragsdale, who said they had seen the bodies (or in Dennis's case, a drawing of them), were later discovered to have invented their Roswell connections.
>
> Not only has this left a hole in the Roswell case, but it provides the skeptics with the ammunition to sink the whole report. They can point to the testimony of any of these men and say, "See, they were making it up and they fooled you."
>
> The response will be that we who have investigated the Roswell case were the ones to expose these reports for what they were. The skeptics stood on the sidelines without having to get their hands dirty. So, yes, these men have been exposed, but remember who did the work to expose them.[66]

While this is true, as has also been seen from Randle's latest Roswell book, there still remain witnesses who describe — albeit inconsistently — seeing bodies, but more importantly, there still remains the thorny problem of the debris, and the military's rather heavy-handed reaction if that debris simply represented a mere balloon, whether a weather balloon, Mogul balloon, or any other type of balloon. None of those explanations accounts for the unusual properties of that debris nor the military's "panicked" reaction to it.

But what could be so sensational about mere exotic debris that the Air Force would perpetuate a cover-up to this day? What about it was so advanced, or so explosive, or *both*, that would require such a thing? The answer to that question may lie in an elaborate movie hoax, an even more elaborate "hoax" from a lieutenant colonel, a telegram, and the ultimate in Roswell hoaxes: a set of mysterious "leaked" documents and their contents that — while the Roswell community battles over issues of their provenance and authenticity — no one seems to bother to *read.*…

---

[1] Kevin Randle, *Roswell Revisited* (Lakeville, Minnesota: Galde Press, Inc., 2007), p. 55.

[2] Captain James McAndrew, *The Roswell Report: Case Closed* (Barnes and Noble, 1997), p. iii.

[3] This also means that one can hardly fault Captain McAndrew for his research, for the peculiar nature of the flaw was, as will be seen momentarily, not yet evident to the wider Roswell research community.

[4] McAndrew, *The Roswell Report: Case Closed*, p. 1.

[5] Ibid.

[6] Ibid.

[7] McAndrew, *The Roswell Report: Case Closed*, p. 1.

[8] Ibid.

[9] Ibid.

[10] McAndrew, *The Roswell Report: Case Closed*, p. 69.

[11] McAndrew, *The Roswell Report: Case Closed*, p. 8.

[12] McAndrew, *The Roswell Report: Case Closed*, p. 53.

[13] McAndrew, *The Roswell Report: Case Closed*, p. 52.

[14] McAndrew, *The Roswell Report: Case Closed*, Figures 21 and 22, p. 114.

[15] McAndrew, *The Roswell Report: Case Closed*, p. 114

[16] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, p. 19, emphasis added. One of the major disappointments of Randle's latest book is the lack of thorough referencing that so characterizes his earlier work.

[17] Ibid., emphasis added.

[18] We have, of course, said the same thing about many of the descriptions of the bodies as well, and this will become an important part of our methodology in Part Three.

[19] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, p. 85.

[20] Ibid., p. 108.

[21] Ibid.

[22] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, pp. 113-114.

[23] Ibid., p. 108, plus the previous chapters of the present work.

[24] Ibid., p. 104.

[25] Ibid., p. 106.

[26] Ibid., p. 21.

[27] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, p. 21.

[28] Ibid., p. 22.

[29] Ibid.

[30] Ibid., pp. 22-23.

[31] Ibid., p. 23.

[32] Ibid., p. 24.

[33] Ibid.

[34] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, p. 28.

[35] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, pp. 28-30.

[36] Ibid., p. 30.

[37] Ibid.

[38] Ibid., pp. 33-34.

[39] Ibid., p. 33.

[40] Randle interjects a parenthetical comment at this juncture, stating that "This, I suspect, was an attempt to validate the information provided by Gerald Anderson…", *Roswell Revisited*, p. 34.

[41] Ibid., pp. 34-35.

[42] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, p. 36.

[43] Ibid.

[44] Ibid., p. 37.

[45] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, pp. 30-31.

[46] Ibid., p. 31.

[47] Ibid., p. 32.

[48] Ibid., p. 33.

[49] Ibid., pp. 32-33.

[50] Ibid., p. 32. This is Randle's summary of Gonzales' description, not Gonzales actual quoted words.

[51] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, p. 49.

[52] Ibid., p. 50

[53] Ibid.

[54] Ibid.

[55] Ibid., p. 51.

[56] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, pp. 52-53.

[57] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, p. 69.

[58] Ibid., p. 44.

[59] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, p. 100.

[60] Ibid., p. 101.

[61] I should stress, of course, that this dialectical analysis is my own; Randle nowhere mentions it explicitly in his book. However, that being said, it is clear from his handling of the witnesses and material in his book that he is more than aware of it.

[62] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, p. 57.

[63] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, pp. 58-59.

[64] Ibid., p. 59. scenario

[65] See also Randle's discussion on p. 82 for further clarification of this scenario.

[66] Ibid., pp. 121-122.

7
The Alien Autopsy Carnival and the General's Telegram

*"The 'alien autopsy' footage has **zero credibility.**"*
Kal K. Korff[1]

Thus far the story of the Roswell Incident is fairly straightforward; there are the various "articulations" of the story with their various emphases; there are the various witnesses and even various "fake" witnesses; there are the believers and skeptics. But there are other elements that entered the Roswell story rather late, *after* the main "articulations" had been more or less nailed down and their timelines fixed. Like everything else associated with the Roswell Incident, these four things spanned the entire spectrum of credibility, from the carnival atmosphere of the Alien Autopsy Hoax, to more serious attempts to utilize the advances in technology to read the telegram being held by Brigadier General Roger Ramey at the famous "weather balloon" press conference in Fort Worth, Texas; to claims somewhere between those two extremes, such as the only slightly less carnival atmosphere of Lt. Colonel Philip Corso's claims he helped head a project to reverse-engineer and seed all the fantastic recovered extraterrestrial technology into American industry; to more serious claims of allegedly leaked "Top Secret" documents that purported to be from a highly classified UFO study group called Majic-12 or Majestic-12 established as a result of the Roswell Incident. In this chapter, we shall deal with the extremes on either end of the spectrum, the Alien Autopsy Carnival, and the attempts to decipher the document in General Ramey's hand in the now famous photograph of him kneeling next to the debris of a weather balloon. In the next chapter we shall turn to an analysis of the claims of Lt. Colonel Corso, and in Part Two we shall examine the

controversies surrounding the Majic-12 documents, before turning finally to a presentation of the Nazi Scenario in Part Three.

A. The Alien Autopsy Carnival

1. Korff's and Friedman's Involvement

The now notorious and infamous Alien Autopsy film that was aired by the Fox television network in the mid-1990s seems to have a life of its own, notwithstanding the efforts of serious ufologists and Roswell Incident researchers to demonstrate its completely amateurish and hoaxed nature. Fortunately, both Stanton T. Freidman and Kal Korff were involved in trying to establish the credibility of the alien autopsy almost from the inception of the story, and therefore their analysis will be followed here.

The story began when a British rock star - Reg Presley of the group called The Troggs - revealed on a BBC morning television show that he had seen actual film of an autopsy being conducted on the extraterrestrials recovered from the Roswell crash of 1947. "Shortly thereafter, a British video producer named Ray Santilli stepped forward and announced that he had purchased actual autopsy and debris footage from an elderly cameraman who had filmed it all."[2] And with that, the autopsy carnival was in business.

Santilli arranged a "preview" of the film at the London Museum on May 5, 1995 for selected members of the media and various ufologists. His purpose, according to Korff, was clear, for he then intended to use the preview to "launch a bidding war to sell the broadcast rights to the highest bidder in as many countries as possible."[3] Prior to this event, however, Stanton T. Friedman had been doing preliminary investigation of his own.

Contacted by a friend in Great Britain who had seen the original television show, Friedman tracked the film's owner, Ray Santilli, down and spoke with him by phone.[4] Friedman relates that Santilli "claimed he had done two years' research about Roswell to establish the validity of the cameraman and his footage, although this was the first time he had heard my name and he was unfamiliar with the MJ-12 documents."[5] This was the

beginning of Santilli's serious credibility problems, for no one researching Roswell - then or now - could avoid coming across the name of Stanton Friedman, or the Majic-12 documents.

The other serious difficulty was that Santilli told Friedman that President Truman himself was visible in the film, going on to volunteer that Truman was "in Dallas at the time of the autopsy."[6] Friedman quickly determined that the claims were beginning to smell fishy, for "why would Truman want to go see the aliens himself? He trusted his advisors...I couldn't imagine Truman wanting to get involved, what with all the logistic problems of keeping it secret."[7] But there was another problem. When Friedman checked the Truman library, the president was not anywhere near Texas or New Mexico "between June and October of 1947."[8]

In any case, one of the journalists in attendance at Santilli's preview was a former television producer for the NBC television series, "Unsolved Mysteries" and subsequently a producer for the Fox network's "Encounters" series, Robert Kiviat. Kiviat had departed from Fox Television and was looking for exciting material that he could use as he was also starting his own production company, and the alien autopsy film was perfect for his purposes.

Also in the running for the film, however, was Friedman, acting as a representative for the then prominent alternative radio network, Chuck Harder's "For the People Network," for rights to market the film, "contingent on (Friedman's) acceptance of the footage as genuine and access to the cameraman" that had allegedly filmed the autopsy.[9]

Kiviat met privately with Santilli after the London Museum preview, and the two eventually reached an agreement when Santilli sold exclusive first broadcast rights to the film to Kiviat's production company, Kiviat-Green Productions, for the tidy sum of $125,000.[10] Kiviat in turn reached an agreement with his former employer, Fox Television, shortly thereafter. Fox would air a one-hour special on the film.[11]

Santilli was also busy getting ready to market a videocassette of the autopsy film under the title "Roswell: The Footage," for the "tidy price of $59, plus shipping and handling."[12] (The film, in its cassette version, even made a brief cameo appearance on the Fox Network's popular UFO-related

series, “The X Files,” but not even Fox Mulder could be induced to believe it had any credibility!)

Korff’s involvement with the Alien Autopsy Carnival came about because he and Kiviat had collaborated on an earlier project for the Fox Network’s “Encounters” series. Korff headed a think tank called Total Research, and he volunteered its services to Kiviat, who accepted them, requesting that Korff “start putting together an analytical game plan in order to try and authenticate the alien autopsy footage. We joked about the fact that I was going to be the ‘Forensic UFOlogist’ in the affair...”[13] According to Korff, Kiviat’s initial idea was “for a live, one-hour simultaneous broadcast in both the United States and Great Britain, with a variety of medical and film experts, who would collectively analyze the material. By the end of the show, everyone would know what the verdict was.”[14]

However, this did not last long:

> The production in which I was eagerly looking forward to participating began to evaporate.
>
> Almost immediately, I received several telephone calls from mutual acquaintances in the UFO field who had been in touch with Kiviat. The scope of the production was changing, and because certain forensic and analytical issues which could have definitely settled the authenticity issue of the alien autopsy footage once and for all were now being bypassed, I began to see that there would be no role for either TotalResearch or myself.... However, Kiviat’s hands were being shrewdly tied by Ray Santilli, in part because he would not provide any original film with images of the alien on it for proper scientific testing and age dating.[15]

Santilli’s credibility and that of his film thus suffered a further blow.

Finally, in August of 1995 the film finally aired on Fox, under the title “Alien Autopsy: Fact or Fiction?” But as Korff observes, without the involvement of any serious researchers in the production, and with no actual forensic testing being done on the film itself, there was little resolution to the issue of its authenticity or lack thereof in the program.[16]But the show was wildly successful in terms of its ratings, and the Fox network ordered a second airing, for which Kiviat supplied some

additional material.[17] While Kiviat did indeed listen to Korff's objections and critiques of the film, even going to far as to invite Korff to be filmed for an analysis for the second airing, production and scheduling problems prevented Korff's opinions from ever being aired.[18]

2. Korff's and Friedman's Critiques of the Film

Despite these shortcomings within the Fox productions of the film, Korff was able to conduct an analysis that all but destroys any hope that the "alien autopsy" is genuine. The first problem is that Ray Santilli claimed that the autopsy was originally filmed with a "Bell and Howell Filmo 70 spring-loaded, manually wound camera." The problem is that when film in this camera is started, the mechanical spring-driven film takes a while to come up to speed, thus producing "hot flash" frames at the beginning that are over-exposed due to the film traveling slower through the camera. But "Santilli's alien autopsy film displays *no such hot flashes!*"[19] Additionally, autopsies are normally filmed with a stationary camera directly above the body to afford a full view of the body, and with continuous filming. In the Santilli film, the cameraman moves constantly and also constantly starts and stops the film, producing cuts in the action at crucial points.[20] Santilli also claimed that the film was shot with an 85 filter. But this makes no sense either, as the 85 filter s used for color filming, and Santilli's "alien autopsy" film is shot in black and white![21]

But the real arguments against the authenticity of the film come within the film itself and the "procedures" it shows. For one thing, during the film the cameraman repeatedly shows a clock on the wall, and according to this,

> the entire dissection of the alien took roughly two and a half hours! This is a remarkably short period of time considering the fact that we're supposedly dealing with an extraterrestrial here. One would assume that a real autopsy of an alien would take weeks, if not months. It would be a one-time historic opportunity, one that would not be rushed or hurried.[22]

Nor is this all. As Korff notes, during autopsies the cadaver is normally placed on a small block beneath the back that helps to arch the body, pushing the chest upward and allowing easier access to the chest cavity. But in Santilli's film, the body lies flat on the table.[23]

As for the "alien body" itself, it seems to be rather stocky and muscular, but when the "pathologists" open it up, Korff somewhat humorously observes that "its internal organs are just sitting in the body as if they are dumplings floating in a bowl of soup!"[24] Nor is that all. During normal autopsies, when organs or portions thereof are removed, they are always placed in glass jars "to avoid potential contamination." Yet, in Santilli's "autopsy" film, they are placed into metal pans. Moreover, the alien, who is supposed to have been dead for several days, bleeds easily, whereas bodies that have been dead for only a few hours bleed less easily, as the blood and fluids in them begin to settle due to the force of gravity.[25]

But perhaps the real telltale internal evidence that the film is a fraud and a hoax is the fact that the scissors are not even being held as a doctor or pathologist would hold them. Korff reproduces the following two frames in his photo inset:

The "Alien Autopsy" Footage of the "Doctor" Holding Surgical Scissors[26]

Actual Doctor Holding Surgical Scissors correctly[27]

It is worth citing Korff himself on the significance of this crucial comparison:

> In real autopsies, the scissors are held in one's hand with the thumb and middle finger. the index finger is used to steady the scissors. However...in the alien autopsy film, the "pathologist" is holding the scissors the wrong way - as if he's cutting a piece of paper, using the thumb and index finger to hold them. This is laughable.[28]

In fact, it's so laughable that Korff's own summary cannot be improved upon:

> Imagine this, the most important autopsy ever conducted, and the "specialists" don't follow even the most basic of procedures: They can't hold their instruments correctly and they don't elevate their corpse![29]

Even the "alien" himself (or herself, we're never really sure), bears a closer look:

Santilli's "Roswell Alien"

Santilli's "Roswell Alien"

Friedman notes that "the bodies in the film looked nothing like any aliens described to me by either Roswell eyewitnesses or abductees. None of the witnesses I interviewed mentioned aliens with six fingers, but there they were on each hand in the film."[30] Friedman also noted that, while the body in the "alien autopsy" film might be considered unusual enough to be thought of as extraterrestrial, it looked more human than anything else, notwithstanding its sexedigitism:

> It could have been a real autopsy of a real earthling with a genetic defect such as Turner's Syndrome. The body seemed to be short, definitely female, but with no breasts; with unusual earlobes, a wide chest, and what seemed to be a somewhat webbed neck; i.e., more skin at the bottom than at the top. These characteristics, plus the unusual palate, the angle of the elbow, the length of the cranial bones, and others, all suggest Turner's. The eyes were large, but not like those described so often for aliens. There was a dark flap lifted off the eyes by the surgeons, but it apparently was not actually attached.

> Eyewitnesses have generally described the aliens as having holes for noses and ears rather than an almost normal human nose and real ear flaps, as shown in the footage.[31]

Notwithstanding the fact that Friedman does not mention the procedural difficulties of the film noted by Korff, he does note that the body in the film does not match any known Roswell "alien" description.

And let us note one other thing about Friedman's observation here; the apparent sexedigitism of the "creature" is apparently not enough to cause Friedman to ignore the resemblance between the autopsy film's creature and a purely terrestrial human syndrome, and to note its unusual terrestrial characteristics.[32] This will become our own method in Part Three, when we turn to examine the descriptions of the "aliens" from Friedman's own witnesses.

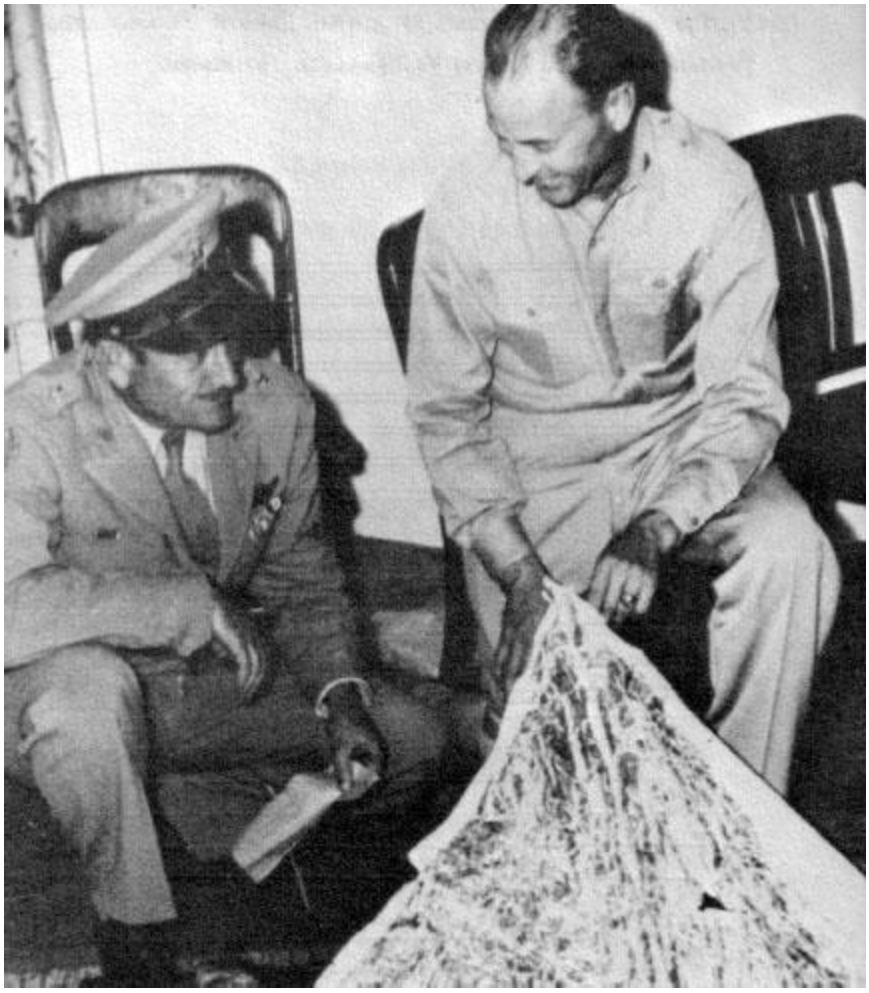
In the end, the "Alien Autopsy" film episode was just an entertaining carnival, and we concur in Korff's conclusion that it lacks any credibility. It was nothing more than an amusing episode and distraction in the Roswell Incident story, and therefore it will not enter our considerations any further in this book.[33]

B. General Roger Ramey's Telegram

1. The Discovered "Messages"

Technology has a way of undoing the best of conspiracies. For example, as is now well known, Mary Moorman was standing in Dealey Plaza on that Friday morning, November 22, 1963, taking photographs of President John Fitzgerald Kennedy's motorcade. Decades later, using blowups and the best computer enhancement techniques, a photograph that Moorman had snapped was shown to contain all but conclusive evidence that there had indeed been a gunman on the "Grassy Knoll" apparently firing a high powered rifle from a position behind the picket fence. The enhancements also revealed that he was apparently disguised in a Dallas policeman's uniform, for what appears to be a police badge is visible in the picture. The picture also shows the muzzle flash of the gun.

In what is something of an irony, the other most-obfuscated event in modern American history - the Roswell Incident - likewise contains a photograph which has now become the focus of a similar technological scramble to expose and decipher its contents. That photograph is the now-famous photograph of Brigadier General Roger Ramey crouching next to his chief of staff, then Colonel Thomas J. DuBose, next to a pile of actual weather balloon debris.



Brigadier General Roger Ramey, crouching and holding a Piece of Paper. His Chief of Staff, then-Colonel Thomas J. DuBose, is seated in the Chair next to him.

The piece of paper that General Ramey held that day has now become the focus of an intense effort on the part of Roswell researchers, for by using the same techniques of blowups, computer enhancements and a variety of analytical techniques, some of them claim to have deciphered at least some of the contents of that piece of paper.

Foremost of these researchers is David Rudiak, who has devoted a great deal of time to the effort.[34] According to his analysis, the paper is apparently a telegram from Ramey to General Hoyt Vandenberg who, at that time, was the acting Army Air forces Chief of Staff. According to Rudiak, the message contains the following key phrases:

1) “that a ‘disk’ is next new find;”
2) “the victims of the wreck;”
3) “a wreck;”
4) “operation at the ‘ranch’;”
5) “victims” and “wreckage” (were to be) “forwarded” (to) “Fort Worth, Tex;”
6) “in the ‘disc’;”
7) “aviators;”
8) “AI,” (that is, the personnel director) of some department of “8th army;”
9) “airfoil;”
10) “misstate meaning of story;”
11) “CIC/team;”
12) “next sent out PR” (or press release);
13) “weather balloons.”[35]

A careful consideration of Rudiak’s version of the message reveals some significant clues, namely, that the crew is referred to as “victims” and “*aviators*” and that the craft, referred to twice as a “disc” is also once referred to as an “*airfoil*.” None of these details compel to the conclusion — if Rudiak’s version of the message is indeed correct — that Roswell was something extraterrestrial. On the contrary, the use of the words “airfoil” and “aviators” suggests something eminently terrestrial.

Rudiak himself makes no claims to the probabilities of his decoding, only to its possibilities. In fact, Rudiak admits that "the only thing not made explicit is the exact nature of the bodies or 'disc.' Ramey probably does not refer to the bodies as 'nonhuman,' 'alien,' or some similar term. Nor does he use terms like 'spaceship,' 'craft of unknown origin,' etc. to describe the 'disc.'"[36] At this juncture, like many other Roswell researchers, Rudiak observes that many have argued that Roswell might have been the crash of some government black projects experimental craft, but indicates that "nobody has ever presented evidence that such an experimental disk — like craft ever existed or was tested in New Mexico at that time."[37] As will be seen in Part Three, this is not entirely true. By the same token, it is also not true that Roswell — if of terrestrial origin — need have been the crash of something *American.* After all, as other Roswell researchers have pointed out — Berliner and Friedman among them as we have seen — the fact that the military did *not* undertake any search for the craft until it was informed of its existence by rancher Mac Brazel would seem to preclude the possibility that it *was* American.[38] Finally, Rudiak repeats the arguments of others that, even if it wase terrestrial, the fact that that it has not been declassified would, in his opinion, represent the fact that it was unlikely to be terrestrial, since no terrestrial technology could presumably be so advanced as to maintain classification of the event and its associated technologies to this day.

This of course begs the question, for as has been noted throughout previous chapters, there is no necessary logical argument that leads from "the extraordinary" to "the extraterrestrial origin" of it, nor any logical argument that leads from "the terrestrial" to "the ordinary." And it begs the question in another significant way, for the assumption is that the only reason for maintaining such strict classification to this day would be a *technological* one. But as will be seen in Part Three, there may well be political reasons for doing so as well.

2. Houran's and Randle's Critique

Needless to say Rudiak is not the only such researcher attempting to decode the Ramey message, but he is perhaps the best known, and for that

reason we have focused on his work here. However, the journalist who first took the Ramey photograph, D. Bond Johnson, decided in 1998 to investigate the photograph on his own, using similar techniques. In his version, the message read as follows:

> AS THE... 4 HRS THE VICTIMS OF THE ... AT FORT WORTH, TEX... THE "CRASH" STORY... FOR 0984 ACKNOWLEDGES... EMERGENCY POWERS ARE NEEDED SITE TWO SW OF MAGDALENA, NMEX... SAFE TALK... FOR MEANING OF STORY AMD MISSION... WEATHER BALLOONS SENT ON THE ... AND LAND ... rOVER CREWS... (SIGNED)...TEMPLE.[39]

Roswell researcher Kevin Randle has the distinction of holding a PhD in psychology, and he and fellow psychologist James Houran decided to study the Ramey message decoding, for it holds some interesting psychological implications, for obviously the Ramey memo, if it *could* be decoded, would have potentially enormous implications for the Roswell case, for the document was of "an indisputable provenance."[40] The only problem — as is evident from the differences between Rudiak's and Johnson's "decodings" — was that "many of those doing the work were not seeing the same things as Johnson had claimed."[41] One researcher who investigated the Ramey message even accused the others of "seeing faces in the clouds," or in this case, a decodable message in the smudges that resulted even under the best of blowups and computer enhancements.[42]

Randle notes that the attempts to decode the message can hardly be viewed as objective, since "those who seem to have a specific agenda are seeing in the memo exactly what they expect (so see)."[43] Randle also observed that there were significant problems in all the attempts to decode the message, because as a military message "sent from one military installation to another," it would by the very nature of that circumstance have to have contained "some military jargon in it,"[44] and yet no attempted decoding contained such jargon. Even Rudiak himself observed that his own decoding used civilian, rather than military, usage of time.[45]

Additionally, there is “the classification problem.” As Houran and Randle put it, “Nearly everyone agrees that Roswell—related message traffic would have been classified, particularly if the event involved the crash of an extraterrestrial craft.”[46] In spite of this, no one involved in the work of trying to decode the Ramey message had suggested or “decoded” any such declassification markings!

> In fact, it seems strange that Ramey, a general officer who had handled classified material long before this event, would be so cavalier in handling this message. Before crouching by the wrecked weather balloon and radar target in his office, had he held a classified message, he would have given it to his aide, he would have set it in his desk drawer, or he would have had it locked in the safe by his secretary. That is the proper way to handle classified material, and Ramey would not have likely made such an elementary mistake, especially with a camera and a reporter in his office.[47]

In fact, as Houran and Randle also are careful to point out, the reporter who first took the famous picture and later undertook to decode the message, also said that he himself had handed General Ramey the message, and that it was an AP wire message his own boss had given to him about the Roswell Incident. As such, “it would be a document from a civilian source” and thus “would contain nothing to establish the reality of a UFO crash.”[48] In other words, “the message could be about almost anything, could be from almost anywhere, and the words and images being seen might be a reflection of what the researcher wanted to see rather than what is actually there.”[49]

Houran and Randle decided to test this hypothesis and set up three different study groups in which they asked participants to decode the Ramey memo. The first group was told that the message might contain information relating to the Roswell cover—up. The second group was told that the message might contain information about the testing of the atom bomb. Finally, a third group was told nothing at all about what the contents of the message might be nor what it might pertain to.[50] Each individual in each group was informed individually about the “suggestion conditioning”

of his group prior to being seated in a quiet room. Once there, they were allowed to view an 8” x 10” enlarged print of the portion of the Ramey photograph showing the message. No time limit was imposed on any of the participants.[51]

The results of their study were rather interesting. Group 1, the group that was told that the message might contain information relating to the Roswell Incident, spent the most time in the effort to “decipher” it, and also “deciphered” the most words. Group 2, the group that was told the message contained information about atom bomb testing, “deciphered” slightly fewer words, and spent slightly less time doing so. Group 3, the group that was given absolutely no hints about the contents of the message, spent the least amount of time and deciphered the fewest words.[52] But the most surprising result was that not only did all three groups find parts of the document legible, but that “participants across the three groups did show consensus on several words in *identical locations* and in the same locations in the document that previous investigators also had agreed upon...”[53] Nonetheless, in spite of this agreement, “the meaning or context of those words” that were agreed upon across all three groups “remains ambiguous because the degree of interpretation of the document is strongly influenced by suggestion effects...”[54] Houran and Randle mince no words as to what the study implies for the deciphering effort surrounding the Ramey memo:

> In fact, ufologists are probably among the least effective people to be trying to decipher the document. This opinion stems from our observation that one of the main factors arguably influencing the number of words deciphered in this study is the motivation of the participants. Note that those in the Pro — UFO condition spent more time examining the images and subsequently perceived the greatest number of words in the Ramey memo.[55]

While this conclusion would certainly seem to be warranted by the results that Houran and Randle obtained from their study, it should be noted that none of the deciphering attempts specifically refer to “crashed extraterrestrial craft” or “extraterrestrial beings.”

In fact, as was seen with Rudiak's and Johnson's attempts, the results were far short of compelling to any extraterrestrial interpretation, and in Rudiak's version, some of the specific wording — "airfoil" and "aviators" — even seemed to suggest a more terrestrial origin, so Rudiak at least cannot be accused of bias or agenda, for he is very much in the pro — extraterrestrial camp for interpreting the Roswell Incident. Nonetheless, the case, as it now stands, is neither advanced nor hindered by the attempts to decode the Ramey telegram (if in fact it *is* a telegram). Like the Alien Autopsy Carnival, completeness required it be mentioned, but like the Alien Autopsy Carnival, it will not be mentioned again in this book, save for a brief reappearance in Part Three.

For now, our focus must be on the problematical case of Lt. Colonel Philip Corso, on his problematical assertions that he was involved in the attempt to reverse engineer the recovered extraterrestrial technology from Roswell, and on some even more problematical and suggestive statements in his book, and on his interesting background during and immediately after World War Two.

---

[1] Kal K. Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 245, Korff's emphasis.

[2] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 231.

[3] Ibid.

[4] Stanton T. Friedman, MSc., *Top Secret/Majic: Operation Majestic-12 and the United States Government's UFO Cover-up* (DaCapo: 2005), pp. 195-196.

[5] Ibid., p. 196.

[6] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic: Operation Majestic-12 and thhe United States Government's UFO Cover-up*, p. 196.

[7] Ibid.

[8] Ibid., p. 197.

[9] Ibid.

[10] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 232.

[11] Ibid. The film was narrated by actor Jonathan Frakes from *Star Trek: the Next Generation.*

[12] Ibid., p. 232.

[13] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 233.

[14] Ibid.

[15] Ibid., p. 234.

[16] Ibid., p.235.

[17] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 235.

[18] Ibid., pp. 235-236.

[19] Ibid., pp. 236-237, Korff's emphasis.

[20] Ibid., p. 237.

[21] Ibid., p. 239.

[22] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 244.

[23] Ibid., pp. 244-245.

[24] Ibid p 245.

[25] Ibid.

[26] Ibid., Photo inset.

[27] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, photo inset.

[28] Ibid., p. 244.

[29] Ibid. p. 245.

[30] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic: Operation Majestic-12 and thhe United States Government's UFO Cover-up*, p. 202.

[31] Ibid., p. 204.

[32] Friedman also cites one-time colleague Bill Moore from an article in the September 1995 issue of *Saucer Smear*, as stating that the film actually originated from "a remote village in Brazil wherein quite a number of these cases (of Turner's Syndrome) had developed. The footage reportedly depicts scenes of actual autopsies performed upon two unfortunate victims around 1960... shot opportunistically by some B grade sci-fi film outfit with the intention of somehow using it as the centerpiece of a feature film at some later date...."(Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic: Operation Majestic-12 and the United States Government's UFO Cover-up*, p. 207).

[33] This "episodic" nature of the whole alien autopsy carnival also highlights its final difficulty, and that is, that in spite of marketing it as the autopsy of one of the Roswell aliens, needless to say, Santilli never

furnished a scintilla of proof that the film was even connected to the Roswell Incident in any fashion whatsoever.

[34] See Rudiak's website, www.roswellproof.com.

[35] David Rudiak, "Roswell Proof: What *Really* Happened," www.roswellproof.com.

[36] David Rudiak, "Roswell Proof: What *Really* Happened," www.roswellproof.com.

[37] Ibid.

[38] Ibid.

[39] James Houran and Kevin D. Randle, "'A Message in a Bottle:' Confounds in Deciphering the Ramey Memo from the Roswell UFO Case," *Journal of Scientific Exploration*, Vol. 16, No. 1, 2002, 45-66, p. 49, citing J.B. Johnson, "Roswell Photos Revisited to be aired on FOX-TV Network," Internet press release, 24 September 1998.

[40] Houran and Kevin D. Randle, "'A Message in a Bottle:' Confounds in Deciphering the Ramey Memo from the Roswell UFO Case," p. 49.

[41] Ibid.

[42] Ibid., p. 51.

[43] Ibid.

[44] Ibid., p. 52.

[45] Houran and Kevin D. Randle, "'A Message in a Bottle:' Confounds in Deciphering the Ramey Memo from the Roswell UFO Case," p. 52.

[46] Ibid.

[47] Ibid., p. 53.

[48] Ibid.

[49] Ibid.

[50] Houran and Kevin D. Randle, "'A Message in a Bottle:' Confounds in Deciphering the Ramey Memo from the Roswell UFO Case," p. 54.

[51] Ibid., p. 55.

[52] Ibid., pp. 58-59.

[53] Ibid. p. 59, Houran's and Randle's emphasis.

[54] Ibid., p. 60.

[55] Ibid.

8
The Corso Conundrum

"The intelligence officer of the 509th Bombardment group at the Roswell Army Air Field announced at noon today, that the field has come into possession of a flying saucer."
Roswell *Daily Record*[1]

"Ramey then went on the air on a hook-up hastily patched out of a Fort Worth
radio station to nervously assure the public that the crashed "fl-fly-fling disc"
was really nothing more than the remains of a downed weather balloon, and
that the whole thing was due only to a case of mistaken identity.
"There is no
such gadget (as a flying disc) known to the Army," he said somberly, and then
hastily added the qualification, "at least not at this level."
Charles Berlitz and William Moore[2]

"This was called camouflage through limited disclosure, and it worked."
Col. (Ret.) Philip J. Corso[3]

Most of the serious and reputable Roswell researchers, both "believers" and "skeptics," regard the claims and assertions of retired U.S. Army Colonel Philip J. Corso in his book *The Day After Roswell* as being a bit of melodramatic and self-serving megalomania at worst, or absurdity at best, and as such, the tendency now in most Roswell research circles is to ignore Corso's book and its wild claims. Only a few die-hard Roswell

fundamentalists cling doggedly to the book's assertions. For the rest, the claims of Corso - a career army intelligence officer - were simply laughable. The criticisms of Stanton Friedman, himself a credentialed nuclear physicist, and a man with practical engineering experience in the black projects world, were telling: Why would the U.S. Army entrust the analysis and reverse-engineering of a recovered extra-terrestrial craft and its technologies to a (then) mere lieutenant colonel with absolutely no engineering or science background? To a credentialed nuclear engineer like Friedman, who *had* spent time in black projects dealing with classified and, for that matter, dangerous, material, Corso's claims were simply too incredible to be taken seriously.

Others pointed out that Colonel Corso had literally hoodwinked the late U.S. Senator from South Carolina, Strom Thurmond, into writing an introduction for his book. Thurmond did indeed do so, but he thought he was writing an introduction for a book of "memoirs," not a book about Roswell. Needless to say, when the Senator's office found out about the "bait and switch," it was furious, and demanded that Corso's publisher withdraw the introduction. Simon and Schuster did so, but Corso's credibility had taken major damage from the episode.

Still others pointed to "tendencies to exaggerate" within Corso's character, and to the fact that Corso's motivations for writing the book appeared simply to be to make money, a fact that the late colonel himself acknowledged in several interviews, claiming he wanted to leave his grandchildren a legacy.

Yet others point to the fact that in his presentation of the Roswell Incident, Corso relies on the witnesses of Randle's and Schmitt's "revisionist scenario" and thus relies, as we shall see, on impeached witnesses like Frank Kaufman, or witnesses whose story has never been successfully verified, like Frankie Rowe. As such, it could be argued that Corso's reconstruction of the Incident — already on wobbly and incredible foundations to begin with — is constructed on the unstable fault lines of dubious testimony.

Others point out that Corso was in a certain sense, another Frank Kaufman, literally claiming to be involved, like Walter Mitty, in the center of almost every major conspiracy and event in modern postwar history. When Corso died he was rumored to be working on another book — *The*

Day After Dallas — detailing his role in the secret investigations into the assassination of President John F. Kennedy.

So why pay attention to a completely discredited and somewhat impeached witness *at all*, especially when so many serious researchers have pointed out the obvious and patent difficulties of his story?

The answer lies in the fact that few pointed to Corso's *intelligence* background, and thus few acknowledged the possibility that, like Major Jesse Marcel, he may have been carrying out his "last orders," even at the end of his life, in writing his book and telling "his story." Consequently, few have acknowledged the possibility that Corso's book, rather than being a complete and total fabrication from beginning to end, is a book not so much of *lies and fabrications* as it is a book of *disinformation*, of exaggerations, of half truths, of sleight of hand and misdirection. Equally possible is that his book is also a "confession," a confession done in such a way that he is perhaps attempting — within the limitations of whatever security oaths he was still under and in the form of whatever obfucation and disinformation he may have been attempting to promulgate — to give subtle and not-so-subtle clues as to where to look to find the "real" story. Either way, Corso's own son, Philip J. Corso, Jr., pointed out that the book was ninety percent fabrication, and that meant, that it was ten percent truth.[4] The question is, which ten percent is it?

Oddly enough, that ten percent is in those portions of the book where Corso points a none-too-subtle finger towards the terrestrial resemblances of the craft, and in doing so, where he just as clearly denies that any mundane "Mogul" balloon interpretation is an *adequate* interpretation.

To put it succinctly, *looked at a different way, it would appear that the same scenario was being replayed in the mid-1990's as was played out that July 8, 1947 in New Mexico and Texas, for on the one hand, the Air Force was busily publishing its "balloon story" under "official auspices," and on the other, Army officers with intelligence connections — in this case Corso, and not Marcel — were busily putting out publications claiming that the Army had recovered a flying saucer and thus its associated technologies.*

So once again: why pay attention to Corso at all?

Because of that ten percent, and because that ten percent clearly suggests the place where the Roswell debris came from, a place that was a very

terrestrial, and a politically explosive, point of origin. One must look at Corso because that ten percent suggests that far from being just another Frank Kaufman on the Roswell landscape out for a quick buck and a place in history, he was also either attempting one final military obfuscation of the incident by cloaking that genuine ten percent inside a context and a story so laughable that, once again, Roswell researchers would overlook it and discount it, for while Corso clearly points a finger to the extraterrestrial origins of the recovered technology, he just as clearly points a finger, repeatedly, to Nazi Germany.

A. A Brief Overview of Corso's Story

So, for those who do not know it, what exactly is Corso's story?

Corso maintains that he inherited the Foreign Technology Desk Research and Development at the Pentagon in 1961. In that capacity, he was approached by his commanding officer, General Arthur Trudeau. General Trudeau asked Corso

> to use the army's ongoing weapons development and research program as a way to filter the Roswell technology into the mainstream of industrial development through the military defense contracting program. Today, items such as lasers, integrated circuitry, fiber optics networks, accelerated particle-beam devices, and even the Kevlar material in bulletproof vests are all commonplace. *Yet the seeds for the development of all of them were found in the crash of the alien craft at Roswell and turned up in my files fourteen years later.*[5]

Corso's Roswell scenario is thus the standard "recovered extraterrestrial craft and reverse engineering scenario" on steroids, for Corso provides throughout his book a list of *specific* technologies that he maintains owe their existence to the Roswell Incident and the U.S. Army's, and his, secret reverse engineering project. All the files from the Roswell Incident Corso maintains were stored in his office in a single locked filing cabinet, a filing cabinet that contained some of the actual debris.[6] As will be seen in this chapter, Corso's "list" of such technologies poses certain problems for his

“extraterrestrial” hypothesis, particularly in the light of some of his own statements about them.

Colonel Corso also maintains that as a response to all the UFO activity in New Mexico in 1947 the army sent in teams of counter-intelligence agents throughout the state (and in fact around the country), to ascertain the level of Soviet espionage activities in response to the incidents.[7] As a part of his scenario, he also states that various radar operators around the state noticed the UFOs on their radar screens, and mentions that one such operator, Steven Arnold, saw the radar blip explode “in a brilliant white fluorescence” and evaporate “right before his very eyes.”[8] Shades of Frank Kaufman! According to Corso at that point the radar operators and counter-intelligence officers looked at each other and thought the same thing: something had crashed, and as a result, the military sprung into action and mobilized a search. “This was a national security issue — jump on anything and bring it back before anyone else could find it.”[9]

Then Corso points his first subtle finger, not toward extraterrestrials, but to a more terrestrial origin:

> Even before the radar officer called the 509th base commander, Col. William Blanchard, reporting that radar indicated the crash of an unidentified aircraft to the north and west of Roswell, the (counter-intelligence) dispatch team had already mobilized to deploy an immediate response crash-and-retrieval team to locate and secure the crash site. *They believed this was an enemy aircraft that had slipped through our radar defense system either from South America or over the Canadian border and had taken photos of top-secret military installations.*[10]

If there is *any* truth to this claim — and with Corso one must always be more than skeptical — then this is a significant observation, for Canada and Latin America were both havens to postwar Nazi activity, as readers of my previous books already know, and Latin America in particular was the home of *ongoing postwar independent Nazi research into precisely the type of “field propulsion physics” represented by “flying saucers.”*[11] More will

be said about these connections in Part Three, but it was worth pointing out the basic significance of Corso's remarks here.

And like many other Roswell witnesses, Corso also maintains that as part of this recovery operation, that some of the debris — and bodies — were shipped via land to Fort Riley, Kansas.[12]

Finally, in what many be the ultimate context for the extraterrestrial interpretation of the Roswell Incident, he also maintained that the real reason for the Cold War with the Soviet Union was the presence of the extraterrestrial factor:

> When you examine it, the record itself should have showed that another agenda was present throughout the Cold War. After all, why did each side really have ten or more times the number of warheads needed to completely' destroy the other side's nuclear missile arsenal as well as their major population centers? The real story behind the vast missile arsenals, the huge fleets of bombers, and the ICBM submarine platforms that both sides deployed was the threat to the aliens that if they occupied a portion of our planet, we had the firepower to obliterate them. If they attacked the United States or the Soviet Union so as to render one of the arsenals inoperable, we had enough missiles to spare to make them pay so heavy a price for starting a war, it wasn't even worth trying.[13]

Consequently, "the Cold War, while real enough and dangerous enough, was also a cover for us to develop a planetary tracking and defense system that looked into space as well as into the Soviet's backyard. And the Soviets were doing the exact same thing we were, looking up at the same time they were looking down."[14] Whatever one thinks of Colonel Corso, or his book and its wild claims, this is a rather intriguing notion, one that bears a little further analysis.

Consider only the *logical* implications of these allegations in the light of his previous statements that the counter-intelligence teams that he alleges were deployed to New Mexico, and in the light of their "first intuitive response" that whatever had crashed represented a terrestrial enemy, for when these statements are combined, they point to two rather frightening implications:

1) That there is a terrestrially based “third force” or “power” that is neither the United States nor the Soviet Union; and,
2) It possesses a technology far in advance of either bloc, and that technology has an off-world capability.

And interestingly enough, Corso’s statements, when combined and analyzed in this fashion, bear a resemblance to someone else’s statements.

That person is Hitler’s former rocket expert, and one of the Nazi scientists brought to this country after the war under the then very secret Project Paperclip, Dr. Wernher Von Braun. According to one time close associate of Von Braun, Dr. Carol Rosin, Von Braun made a series of disclosures to her toward the end of his life, a series of disclosures now more or less well-known within the UFO community called “The Rosin Affidavit.” According to Dr. Rosin,

> The strategy that Werner Von Braun taught me was that first the Russians are going to be considered the enemy... Then terrorists would be identified, and that was soon to follow... Then we were going to identify third-world country “crazies.” We now call them Nations of Concern. But he said that would be the third enemy against whom we would build space-based weapons. The next enemy was asteroids. Now, at this point he kind of chuckled the first time he said it. Asteroids — against asteroids we are going to build space-based weapons. And the funniest one of all was what he called aliens, extraterrestrials.[15]

While Von Braun’s alleged statements seem to indicate that he viewed the whole issue of extraterrestrials as a cover or deception, he oddly agrees with the implications of Corso’s Cold War statements and its hidden agenda, namely, that there is a terrestrial power with access to some very sophisticated technology, and that it will be deployed in space. Just *how* sophisticated that technology is may also be gleaned from Von Braun’s remarks, for a technology deployed “against asteroids” would have to be either powerful enough to destroy one, or at least move it out of its course, if it were thought to be on a collision course with the earth.

1. Corso’s Extraterrestrials

Corso's descriptions of the extraterrestrials supposedly recovered from Roswell also bear mentioning, for they depart little in their details from others' statements, save in his assertion that he was privy to the alleged medical examiner's reports of the extraterrestrials. While we have already noted that the "alien autopsy film" was a complete hoax, it is worth taking note of what Corso says about both the alleged extraterrestrials and about their craft, for while his Roswell Fantasia knows almost no limitations of imagination, some of his observations, once again, point subtle fingers to *another* origin, and *another* agenda.

He begins by noting that the Roswell "flying saucer" had no facilities either for food preparation or waste disposal.[16] and in the midst of a book about the supposed crash and recovery of an extraterrestrial craft, this is an odd statement to make. As Corso himself observes, this was one of the major problems that not only the Nazis were working on as a component of their nascent space program, but it is a major problem for *any* space program, extraterrestrial *or* terrestrial.[17]

So again, Corso is perhaps being more subtle than either his defenders or detractors may have noticed, for he has mentioned Nazis in connection with the fact that the Roswell craft had no food preparation or waste facilities, which would be commensurate with a craft designed for short range flights of short duration.

But Corso *does* talk about the supposedly recovered extraterrestrials, and in fact, does so at great length and in great detail, so a word is necessary here about my methodology, in case it is not apparent to the reader. As has already been seen, *most* of the witnesses describing bodies in connection with the Roswell Incident have either been discredited or impeached. One need only recall Kevin Randle's words from his *Roswell Revisited:*

> The best tales told about Roswell, those that brought in alien bodies in a firsthand sense, have since been shown to be faked. Kaufmann, Anderson, Dennis, and Ragsdale, who said they had seen the bodies (or in Dennis's case, a drawing of them), were later discovered to have invented their Roswell connections.
>
> Not only has this left a hole in the Roswell case, but it provides the skeptics with the ammunition to sink the whole report. They can point

> to the testimony of any of these men and say, “See, they were making it up and they fooled you.”
>
> The response will be that we who have investigated the Roswell case were the ones to expose these reports for what they were. The skeptics stood on the sidelines without having to get their hands dirty. So, yes, these men have been exposed, but remember who did the work to expose them.[18]

At the time Corso and his co-author William Birnes were writing his book, however, that had not happened, and Corso — in what appears to me to have been pure confabulation, relying on the then-sensational research of Roswell “revisionists” Kevin Randle and Don Schmitt — merely allowed him to give more or less free rein to his imagination, since he could claim to have had access to the military’s secret reports, including its secret reports about the “dead extraterrestrials.” Thus, in citing Corso at this point, I am not ascribing any truthfulness or lack thereof to his claims, I am merely drawing attention to yet another interesting observation that he makes, notwithstanding his credibility problems.

So, according to Corso, what *were* Corso’s intriguing observations about the alleged beings found on the Roswell craft? The first is interesting in and of itself:

> The very small mouths and the lack of a human digestive system troubled the doctors at first because they didn’t know how these things were sustained. But their first hypothesis that they processed chemicals released from their skin and maybe even recirculated waste chemicals would have explained the lack of any food-preparation or waste-processing facilities on the craft. I speculated, however, that they didn’t require food or facilities for waste disposal because they weren’t actual life-forms, only a kind of robot or android....I kept thinking, also, that the skin analysis that I was reading sounded more akin to the skin of a houseplant than the skin of a human being. That, too, could have been another explanation for the lack of food or waste facilities.[19]

There is the “big save,” the extraterrestrial “spin,” for now one was not dealing with real live “extraterrestrials,” but with their robotical, genetically engineered hybrids with plants!

But a little earlier in the book, Corso dropped another radical conceptual bombshell, and this time, attributed it to General Twining: “General Twining showed photographs of these alien beings and autopsy reports that suggested *they were too human; they had to be related to our species in some way.”*[20] As we shall see in our analysis of the Majic-12 documents in Part Two, this idea finds an echo in them as well, and it could even be that Corso is relying on them for this statement.

Nonetheless, it is an interesting observation to make, for again, one of its *logical implications*, regardless of whether there actually *were* any recovered bodies, is that whatever the bodies were, they were the products not only of a genetic engineering, but moreover, they were “related to our species in some way,” namely, that one possibility is that they were from *Earth* and the products of a terrestrial technology that involved human genetic makeup. Corso’s “extraterrestrials”, in other words, are our genetic “cousins.”

Consequently Corso once again appears to be pointing a subtle finger, not in the direction of outer space and extraterrestrials, but to planet Earth and engineered life-forms, and that finger is being pointed always within a context that obfuscates and confuses the reader: now is he pointing to extraterrestrials, now he is not.

2. Corso’s List of Recovered Extraterrestrial Technology

This pattern of obfuscation only becomes more acute and apparent when one examines what Corso says in connection with the alleged recovered technology. For example, Corso maintains that much of the technology for President Ronald Reagan’s Strategic Defense Initiative came from the Roswell Incident and the recovered craft, including “lasers, accelerated particle-beam weapons, and aircraft equipped with ‘Stealth’ features. And in the end, we not only outlasted the Soviets and ended the Cold War, but we forced a stalemate with the extraterrestrials, who were not so invulnerable after all.”[21] This is yet another intriguing statement, for Corso

is clearly implying that there has been some sort of “covert war” going on “up there” between “us” and “them,” an observation that, once again, he wishes his readers to place into the extraterrestrial context that he spins. But it could just as easily fit into the terrestrial context that he also has subtly indicated exists.[22]

Corso like others also makes mention of “fiber optics-like” filaments,[23] integrated circuits,[24] and, in the ultimate embellishment of the alien autopsy film, in which one can see a “doctor” removing a dark membrane from one of the “extraterrestrial’s” eyes, he mentions a kind of “infrared sight contact lens.”[25] Nor is this all.

There was a super-strong fiber cloth from which we obtained Kevlar,[26] a kind of “headdress” or “visor” that interfaced directly between the brain of the “creatures” and the craft’s control mechanisms[27] (implying thereby that the “creatures” were also some sort of cyborgs), even depleted uranium artillery shells, hydrogen atom particle beam weapons,[28] and even “irradiated food!”[29] And of course, there was the “memory metal.” Boiling all this down, Corso summarizes it all in a convenient list:

> Image intensifiers, which ultimately became “night vision”
> Fiber optics
> Supertenacity fibers
> Lasers
> Molecular alignment metallic alloys
> Integrated circuits and microminiaturization of logic boards
> HARP (High Altitude Research Project)
> Poject Horizon (moon base)[30]
> Portable atomic generators (ion propulsion drive)
> Irradiated Food
> “Third Brain” guidance systems (EBE headbands)
> Particle beams (“Star Wars” antimissile energy weapons)
> Electromagnetic propulsion systems
> Depleted uranium projectiles.[31]

All these things, Corso maintains, owe their existence to the Roswell Incident. As will be seen in a moment, there are those who object —

strongly — to Corso's implication that human intelligence cannot invent this on its own. And as we shall discover in Part Three, many of them have disturbing connections to the Third Reich.

3. How the Craft Worked, According to Corso

There is one final detail in Corso's Roswell Fantasia to be noted, and that is how he maintains the craft actually travelled. According to Corso,

> The craft was *able to displace gravity through the propagation of magnetic (waves), controlled by shifting the magnetic poles around the craft* so as to control, or vector, not a propulsion system but the repulsion force of like charges. Once they realized this, engineers at our country's primary defense contractors raced among themselves to figure out how the craft could retain its electric capacity and how *the pilots who navigated it could live within the energy field of a wave.* At issue was not only a great discovery, but the nuts-and-bolts chance to land multibillion-dollar development contracts for a whole generation of military air and undersea craft.

The initial revelations into the nature of the spacecraft and its pilot interface came very quickly during the first few years of testing at Norton. The air force (sic) discovered that *the entire vehicle functioned just like a giant capacitor.* In other words, the craft itself stored the energy necessary to propagate the magnetic wave that elevated it, allowed it to achieve escape velocity from the earth's gravity, and enabled it to achieve speeds of over ten thousand miles per hour. The pilots weren't affected by the tremendous g-forces that build up in the acceleration of conventional aircraft because to aliens inside, *it was as if gravity was being folded around the outside of the wave that enveloped the craft. Maybe it was like traveling inside the eye of a*

hurricane.[32]

Again, there are a number of intriguing points here, not the least of which is that, according to Corso, the craft was not exactly a typical "anti-gravity" craft, since it still apparently had to reach "escape velocity" to reach space.

But there are three further implications to note about Corso's remarks, and to my knowledge, no one has noticed them:

1) First, in order to "displace gravity through the propagation of magnetic waves" and "fold gravity around the outside of the wave that enveloped the craft," one must of necessity posit the direct theoretical connection between gravity and magnetism. This, of course, was in one sense what the various "unified field theory" papers that were published *in Germany* between the two World Wars were essentially trying to do;
2) Another implication of Corso's remarks is that there was apparently a kind of "magnetic bubble" around the craft, as if it existed inside a kind of "magnetic bottle;"
3) Within this "bubble" or "bottle," the magnetic polarity is apparently shifting, or oscillating, constantly and, in order to vector repulsion of charges, apparently rapidly; and finally,
4) The military was apparently unable to figure out how any intelligent creature could *live* in such an environment.

For readers of my previous books, this should ring a Bell, for each of these four things were, in a direct way, involved in the Third Reich's most highly classified secret weapons project from the war. For readers unfamiliar with those books, we shall take these four points up again in Part Three.

For now, however, it is necessary to point out something very significant about Corso's remarks, for if one grants for the sake of argument the similarity of his descriptions with the basic principles operative in that secret Nazi research project, then once again Corso is pointing an extraordinarily subtle finger to Nazi Germany, and to its technological accomplishments. Moreover, *he is doing so before there was any publication about that project in the English language.*[33]

B. Corso's Assertions Versus the Public Histories of The Technologies

Notwithstanding these intriguing and fascinating observations, Corso's assertions about the extraterrestrial nature of the technologies on his list fell mostly on unsympathetic ears. For example, his assertion that the "headband" involved some sort of direct interface between the "extraterrestrials" and the craft itself have purely terrestrial antecedents. Since the 1970s there has been research in electro-encephalogram feedback technology, sometimes utilizing electronic implants in the brain itself, for the thought-control of computers. But this research has an even longer terrestrial pedigree, not only to the mind-control projects of the notorious CIA MK-Ultra program, but also to the "psychotronic" research of psychologist Dr. Jose DelGado, research that goes back to the 1950s and, if one factors the Nazis into the mind-control research mix, even farther.

As for night vision-enhancement technology, this, as will be seen in Part Three, is definitely a technology with not only a Nazi provenance from the Second World War, but an American one as well, and at least in America's case, that research continued at Fort Belvoir after the war, and received an impetus in the 1960s from the image intensification research of William Spicer.

Integrated circuits have a well-known terrestrial pedigree as well, since the idea of imprinting electrical micro-circuits on chips was the brainchild of Ted Hoff, who began the first research in 1968, and who does *not* recall any contact with anyone in the military having suggested the idea to him. In any case, many critics of Corso's claims have also pointed out that such a technology would also require the invention of scanning electron microscopes in order to analyze any such chips, an invention whose public pedigree, at least, stems from 1966.[34]

As for Corso's assertions about lasers, their public history begins at Hughes Aircraft in the early 1950s, with physicist Charles Townes working out the first concepts, which resulted first in a microwave laser, or maser as they are known, and the first optical laser in 1960.Fiber optics have a similar connection to very terrestrial technology and thinkers. In fact, the inventor of the telephone, Alexander Graham Bell, patented an invention which he regarded as far more significant than the telephone, a device he called the "photophone," which transmitted voice signals on light, and that in the nineteenth century! The problem with Bell's photophone — which

was solved by fiber optics — was that one could not bend those signals around corners. Fiber optics represent a blending of technologies, namely, the laser, and the ability to make a fused, pliable silica filament, which was accomplished by a trio of researchers at Corning Industries: Don Keele, Peter Schultz, and Bob Mauer. The advantage of this filament was that it could handle some 65,000 times more information per unit volume than standard wires.

And finally, the superstrong fibers of Kevlar and similar materials owe their existence not to extraterrestrials crashing things into the earth, but to a researcher at Du Point in the 1960s.

C. Corso's "Technologies List" and the Nazi Connection

Like other things in his book, Corso's claim that much of this technology has a "hidden history" is itself obfuscated, for he also points the finger not only subtly, as in the examples seen previously, but very openly toward a very terrestrial, and a very sinister, origin: Nazi Germany.

In fact, according to Corso, the military's first suspicions fell upon the Soviet Union, and to the possibility that the craft represented a secret Russian project based on Nazi designs "because it bore such a resemblance to some of the German-designed aircraft that had made their appearances near the end of the war, especially the crescent-shaped Horton (sic) flying wing."[35] But, to quote Corso himself, "that's not even the whole story:"

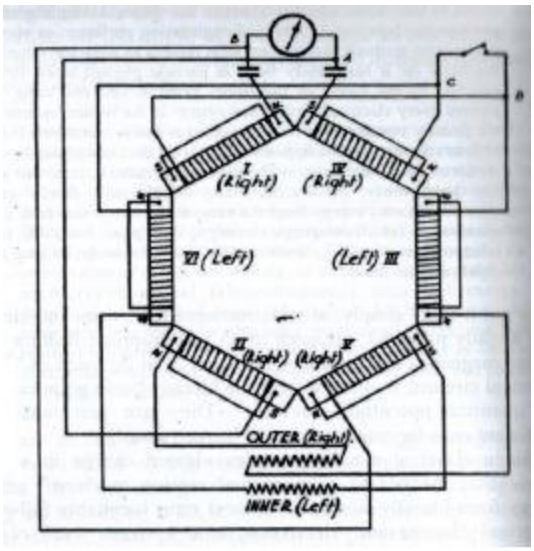
> In those confusing hours after the discovery of the crashed Roswell alien craft, the army determined that *in the absence of any other information it had to be an extraterrestrial.* Worse, the fact that this craft and other flying saucers had been *surveilling our defensive installations and even seemed to evidence a technology we'd seen evidenced by the Nazis* caused the military to assume these flying saucers had hostile intentions and might have even interfered in human events during the war.[36]

Here, Corso has managed to pack his obfuscation all into two sentences, and within the same immediate context at that, and has not spread it out all

over the whole book, for on the one hand, he implies that “in the absence of other information” the military had concluded it was extraterrestrial, yet, in the very next sentence, he points a not-too-subtle and openly self-contradictory finger to the Nazi resemblance of the Roswell technology!

Apparently this “Nazi resemblance” was *so* palpable that Corso, when he established the secret team he needed to “reverse engineer” and “seed” all this recovered “extraterrestrial” technology into American industry, that he went to his superior officer, General Trudeau, and asked him if he could bring Nazi “scientists with clearance who(sic) we can trust, Oberth and von Braun” into the project “for advice.”[37] Well might Corso turn to “Nazis whom we can trust,” for as a former participant in Operation Paperclip — the secret project designed to bring former Nazi scientists to work in this country after the war — he was following a pattern that, as will be seen in Part Three, allowed the Army simultaneously to brand someone “an ardent Nazi” but in the ultimate obfuscation to assert that they posed to security threat to the national security interests of the United States of America!

A final “Nazi whom we can trust,” to whom Corso turned for “advice” in his alleged secret reverse-engineering group was none other than Hans Kohler,[38] inventor of odd little coil between the world wars that contained nothing but magnets in a hexagonal pattern, around which were wound coils in an unusual circuit. This coil contained *no* power source, and yet, was able to transduce energy, i.e., to produce an electrical current, apparently “from nowhere” and just by the odd configuration of the magnets and coils.



Schematic of the Kohler Coil

I have written previously about this coil in two of my books, and we shall encounter it again in Part Three. For the moment, however, all that need be noted is that once again Colonel Corso is pointing a finger not only in Nazi Germany's direction, but toward specific technologies and devices *never mentioned* by the rest of the Roswell community, devices and technologies, moreover, that can only be considered hyper-dimensional, and based on principles of physics radically different than that of classical electrodynamics. [39]

And yet, amid all this, once again Corso obfuscates, this time by pushing his "recovered and reverse engineered extraterrestrial craft" scenario further back into history, not to Roswell, but to Nazi Germany itself:

> At the very least, Twining had suggested, the crescent-shaped craft looked so uncomfortably like the German Horten wings our flyers had seen at the end of the war that he had to suspect the Germans had bumped into something we didn't know about. And his conversations with Wernher von Braun and Willy Ley in the days after the crash confirmed this. They didn't want to be thought of as *verrűkt* (crazy, ed.) but intimated that there was a deeper story about what the Germans had engineered. No, the similarity between the Horten wing and the craft they had pulled out of the arroyo was no accident. We

> always wondered how the Germans were able to incorporate such advanced technology into their weapons development in so short a time and during the Great Depression. Did they have help? Maybe we were now as lucky as the Germans and broke off a piece of this technology for ourselves.[40]

In other words, Nazi technology was itself a product of a similar reverse-engineering project.

While it is extremely *unlikely* that any Allied or Soviet pilot ever saw any of the Horten wings in actual flight during combat circumstances as these aircraft were highly classified, and only flown when the Allies or Soviets were *not* around, what is of real interest here is Corso's mention of the German rocket scientist Willy Ley, who, unlike Wernher Von Braun, was *not* one of the scientists brought to this country under Operation Paperclip. Ley had emigrated to the United States of America prior to the war because of his disagreement with the Nazi government.

More importantly, Ley was the scientist who mentioned that a German secret society, the Vril society, was investigating the physical properties of the space-time medium itself. The Vril society in turn is alleged to have been the organization behind an attempt to contact "extraterrestrials" via psychic mediums and "channeling." During one such attempt after the First World War, held ironically near Berchtesgaden, the medium Maria Orsic is alleged to have made contact with a civilization in the Aldebaran Star system, and as a result, was able to channel the plans for an advanced hyper-dimensional craft.[41]

The problem with the whole "extraterrestrial contact" in Nazi Germany is twofold. Firstly, those maintaining that this contact occurred are Neo-Nazis, and they have yet to produce one scintilla of evidence in support of their assertions. Secondly, there are those who allege that Nazi Germany experienced its own "Roswell event" and recovered and began to reverse engineer the technology. The dates and places for this recovery range from the Black Forest in 1936, to the Harz Mountains region of Thuringia in central Germany in 1933. But again, never has any proof or witness come forward, and there is no hint of such an event in the voluminous archives of the Third Reich that have been declassified.[42]

In the end, Corso's claims were simply too incredible for the more scrupulous Roswell researchers, whether believers or skeptics, to be believed, and in the main, this author concurs with their assessments both of the man and his book.

However, let it never be forgotten for a moment that Corso was an intelligence officer. As such, the possibility must be entertained that his book — far from being merely a Walter Mitty fantasia or an attempt to turn a quick and easy profit — may have been a deliberate disinformation exercise, designed both to reveal, and conceal, information, and to misdirect attention and plant the seeds of misinterpretation.

In that light, it is perhaps significant that Corso has provided both blatant and much more subtle clues that clearly point to a possible Nazi aspect to the Roswell Incident, and planted them in such a way that in each and every mention within his book of a possible Nazi root or resemblance of the Roswell technologies, the inevitable "extraterrestrial obfuscation" intrudes to impose the misdirection. But in the final analysis, with close and careful reading it could be said that the late Colonel Corso would bid us to look across the Atlantic Ocean, as much as he would bid us to look up to the heavens, for the answer to the Roswell Incident.

As we shall now see, he was not the only careful obfuscator bidding us to do so...

---

[1] " RAAF Captures Flying Saucer On Ranch in Roswell Region: No Details of Flying Disk are Revealed: Roswell Hardware Man and Wife Report Disk Seen," *Roswell Daily Record*, July 8, 1947.

[2] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, pp. 28-29, emphasis added.

[3] Col. Philip J. Corso, (Ret), and William J. Birnes, *The Day After Roswell* (New York: Pocket Books, 1997), p. 79.

[4] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, pp. 118-119. Randle also maintains that "the younger Corso suggested it was because his father did not have the opportunity to review the manuscript after his co-author (William J. Birnes) had finished it and it was sent to the publisher. As a writer, I know this to be false. There would have been ample time for Corso to see what was written and correct it."(p. 109). Randle is correct, for a major publisher like Simon

and Schuster makes an initial printing of any book, as it will look when actually printed, and sends these to an author to look through and make any last-minute revisions or corrections. These are called “galley proofs” and are a part of the “publishing ritual” with a major publisher. Smaller publishing houses sometimes do, and sometimes do not, go through this process.

[5] Corso and Birnes, *The Day after Roswell*, p. 4, emphasis added.

[6] Ibid., p. 2.

[7] Ibid., p. 10.

[8] Corso and Birnes, *The Day After Roswell*, p. 10.

[9] Ibid., p. 11.

[10] Ibid., emphasis added.

[11] See my *The Nazi International* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2009), pp. 12-28 for a general discussion of the connections to Canada and Latin America, and pp. 249-350 for the evidence tying postwar Nazi projects there to Nazi Germany’s most sensitive wartime research.

[12] Ibid., p. 27.

[13] Ibid., p. 123.

[14] Ibid., p. 122.

[15] Affidavit of Carol Rosin, cited in Steven M. Greer, M.D., *Disclosure: Military and Government Witnesses Reveal the Greatest Secrets in Modern History* (Crozer, Virginia: 2001), pp. 255-256.

[16] Corso and Birnes, *The Day After Roswell*, p. 94.

[17] Ibid.

[18] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, pp. 121-122.

[19] Corso and Birnes, *The Day After Roswell*, p. 96.

[20] Ibid., p. 73, emphasis added.

[21] Corso and Birnes, *The Day After Roswell*, p. 5.

[22] It should be noted that the statement regarding recovery of “stealth” technology from a crashed extraterrestrial craft that according to Corso the military had been secretly been tracking on radar is vintage Kaufman.

[23] Corso and Birnes, op. cit., p. 44.

[24] Ibid., p. 45.

[25] Ibid.

[26] Corso and Birnes, *The Day After Roswell*, pp. 4, 66.

[27] Ibid.

[28] Ibid., p. 246.

[29] Ibid., p. 115.

[30] Corso appends photocopies of the U.S. Army's "Project Horizon" study of the feasibility of a permanent base on the Moon. Suggestively, the booster rocket named for this project is called "Saturn." The date of shown on the document is "20 Mar 1959." So, if authentic, the documents Corso provides would seem to indicate that there was a hidden agenda to the Apollo program.

[31] Corso and Birnes, op. cit., p. 115.

[32] Corso and Birnes, *The Day After Roswell*, pp. 100-101, emphasis added.

[33] British journalist and aerospace researcher Nick Cook's book that referred to the Bell project, *The Hunt for Zero Point*, was published in 2003, and Igor Witkowski, the Polish military historian and researcher who first uncovered the Bell story, did not publish his research in English until that same year in a book entitled *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*. Witkowski had published his Bell project research in Poland prior to that, so it is possible that Corso, with his intelligence connections, might have heard about it and have been able to obtain an English translation from those Polish language books from them. However, Corso had by that point long been retired from the Army, and such intelligence connections as he may once have had were likely to have been more or less gone by the time of the appearance of his book.

[34] But there is even bad news there, as we shall see.

[35] Corso and Birnes, *The Day After Roswell*, p. 3.

[36] Ibid., p. 4, emphasis added.

[37] Corso and Birnes, *The Day After Roswell*, p. 90.

[38] Ibid., p. 106. In this context Corso also mentions Von Braun and Hermann Oberth again, as well as Drs. John von Neumann and Robert Sarbacher, the latter two of whom are rumored to have been involved in the Philadelphia Experiment! Corso did get around!

[39] See the discussions in my *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell* (2006), pp. 209-211, and my *Reich of the Black Sun* (2004), pp. 226-228.

[40] Ibid., p. 73, see also p. 133.

[41] For this whole story, see my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 104-115.

[42] The only evidence that *has* surfaced from that time and that general region of the world are the documents from Fascist Italy that imply that dictator Benito Mussolini established a secret UFO study group under the chairmanship of Guigliomo Marconi. It is possible that Italy did share this information with Nazi Germany after the conclusion of the Rome-Berlin Axis pact. However, there is not, to my knowledge, any indication in the Italian documents that any crash-and-recovery effort was ever undertaken in Fascist Italy.

Part Two:
The Problematic of the Majic-12 Documents Hoax

"I am convinced that the documents, when carefully and objectively examined, lead to the conclusion that there indeed was an Operation Majestic-12."
Stanton T. Friedman,
Top Secret/Majic: Operation Majestic-12 and the United States Government's UFO Cover-up, p. 210.

"What (Nickell and Fischer) found was that the mistakes in the MJ-12 documents were unique to those documents, which suggests that they are fraudulent."
Kevin D. Randle,
Case MJ-12: The True Story Behind the Governments UFO Conspiracies,
p. 176.

"The lie is different at every level."
Anonymous intelligence agent to authors
Richard C. Hoagland and Mike Bara,
Dark Mission: The Secret History of NASA,
p. 530.

9
Friedman and the Case for the Authenticity of the Majic-12 Documents

"We know there is no provenance for any of the documents with trails that lead
to government records, only trails that lead to people with a vested interest in
the reality of MJ-12 and a belief in UFOs as extraterrestrial spacecraft."
Kevin D. Randle[1]

Stanton T. Friedman is rightly regarded as the "father of modern ufology," for unlike many ufologists, Friedman brings to the subject a trained scientific intellect, a penetrating analytical mind, and the discipline and determination to ferret out the most minute of documentary details. All these he brings to bear in a signally important book analyzing the case for the authenticity of some of the so-called Majic-12 or Majestic-12 documents: *Top Secret/Majic: operation Majestic-12 and the United States Government's UFO Cover-up.*

But for those who may not know the story of this fascinating set of allegedly leaked and highly classified U.S. government UFO documents, a brief review is in order.

In December 1984 the first of the Majic-12 documents arrived at the home of ufologist Jamie Shandera. Or rather, what arrived at Shandera's home was a double-wrapped "plain brown envelope with no return address and an Albuquerque, New Mexico postmark."[2] Inside the envelope was a roll of undeveloped black-and-white 35mm film. But why would some anonymous "documents leaker" send this film to Shandera.

Friedman suggests that it was because at that time Shandera was cooperating with him and fellow-Roswell researcher Bill Moore, and that Shandera, who had developed several “inside” contacts with the Air Force Office of Special Investigations (OSI, or AFOSI), was a logical choice for someone to leak documents to.[3]

Once it was developed, the film proved to be nothing less than explosive, for what it showed were simple photographs of a top secret briefing document allegedly prepared by the Truman Administration for incoming President-Elect Dwight D. Eisenhower. According to the document, Admiral Roscoe Hillenkoetter was Eisenhower’s briefing officer. Leaving aside the details contained in the document for a little later in this chapter, the document outlines the crash and recovery of a flying saucer, its occupants, its technology, and the establishment of a super-secret research and development committee known alternatively as Majic-12 or Majestic-12 which was directly responsible to the President. Additionally, the document lists the twelve members of that committee, plus eight annexes or appendices to the document, only the first of which was actually contained on the film mailed to Shandera.

Two more documents were later leaked to ufologists, and together, these the documents we will simply refer to as the “Original Set” of Majic-12 documents, to distinguish them from a much vaster collection allegedly leaked over time to Timothy Cooper, about which more in a moment. The circumstances surrounding the arrival of these two other documents were as bizarre — if not more so — than those by which the Eisenhower Briefing Document arrived at Jamie Shandera’s home.

While Friedman, Moore, and Shandera were conducting their invertigations of the Eisenhower Briefing Document and trying to authenticate it or prove it to be a hoax, Moore and Shandera began receiving mysterious postcards containing riddles on them:

> The return address on one was “Box 189, Addis Ababa, Ethiopia,” and it was postmarked New Zealand. Considering that Jaimie and Bill were in contact with government insiders, we knew it was easy enough for someone to put a postcard in an envelope, send it overseas, and have someone else mail the postcard back here. Moore read one of the cards to me over the phone, and we tried to puzzle it out. It mentioned

> Reese's Pieces and also Suitland, a repository for government files — and a sort of annex of the National Archives — that I had visited... We decided that it would be a good idea for somebody to go to Washington.[4]

The task of going to "Suitland" in Washington, D.C. fell to Moore and Shandera, who spent several days at the archives examining boxes and files. Then, Shandera made another astonishing discovery:

> While putting one file folder back in a box and pulling out the next file, Jaimie discovered a piece of paper between the files: the July 14, 1954 memo from Robert Cutler to General Twining. The box in which Jaimie found this document? Box 189.
>
> The memo is a carbon copy in blue ink on onionskin paper. The message is straighforward and simple.... It refers to an NSC/MJ-12 Special Studies Project briefing. The paper is old, and has a watermark. There is aging around the edge of the paper. There is a slanted red pencil mark the unusual security marking in the upper right corner. The text doesn't provide a clue as to the subject matter of the project — it is clearly a simple administrative notice that a briefing will take place during an already scheduled meeting rather than after, as originally planned.... There is no signature on the memo, nor even an /s/ next to Cutler's name indicating that he had signed the original.[5]

Robert Cutler was the Special Asisistant for National Security to President Eisenhower, and General Twining was, of course, the commanding officer of the Air Force's Air Materiel Command during the time of the Roswell Incident.

The other document that was leaked to ufologists was what Friedman calls "perhaps the mother of all majestic-12 documents!"[6] In March of 1994 well-known ufologist Don Berliner and Friedman's co-author of *Crash at Corona* received a document in the mail, in the same manner as had Shandera ten years earlier, in a manilla envelope with a roll of film.

> The roll of 35mm film had been mailed from Wisconsin, but without a return address. At first, Don thought nothing of the matter, since he had recently come back from the huge Experimental Aircraft Show in Oshkosh, Wisconsin, where he had shot many rolls of film. He presumed that he had left a roll of film behind and someone from the show had sent it to him.
>
> Only when he had the film developed did he realize that he had black-and-white pictures of a document, not of aircraft. The first frame was the cover page of a report entitled *Majestic-12 Group Special Operations Manual: Extraterrestrial Entities and Technology, Recovery and Disposal.* It was marked TOP SECRET/MAJIC Eyes Only, and was dated April 1954. The report outlined how to secure, package, ship, and store artifacts and extraterrestrial biological entities from recovered alien flying saucers! The contents page indicated that the original manual contained six chapters, four appendices, 30 pages of text, and a section of photographs. Unfortunately, not all of the pages of the manual had been photographed.[7]

Needless to say, this document, if genuine, was a veritable smoking gun, if not for the extraterrestrial interpretation of the Roswell Incident, then at least for the existence of a super-secret government program and unit tasked with the retrieval of crashed extraterrestrial technologies and entities. Additionally, notwithstanding that there is no explicit mention of the Roswell Incident in the document as currently extant, it nevertheless provided a general corroborative context to the extraterrestrial interpretation of that Incident.

Of course, it was not long before skeptics accused Friedman and his associates of forging and then “leaking” the documents to themselves, but these accusations, as we shall shortly see, Friedman ably and effectively dispatched.

These documents — the Eisenhower Briefing Document, the Cutler-Twining Memo, and the Special Operations Manual — constitute the “Original Set” of Majic-12 documents

But there is *another* set of documents also purporting to be Majic-12 documents, and these as we shall see are much more problematical not only with respect to how they were leaked, but with respect to what many of

them contained. These are the so-called “Cooper-Cantwheel” set of documents, and this set, rather than constituting a trickle of leaks, was a veritable flood. And that “flood” indeed constitutes one of their principal problems.

Beginning in late 1992, three new alleged Majic-12 documents were sent to ufologist and Roswell researcher Tim Cooper of California.

> Tim had become interested in Roswell and MJ-12, and tried to learn as much as he could about crashed saucers in New Mexico. He had been talking to a number of retired military personnel who were living near him and who had been heavily involved in highly classified matters back in the 1940s. His own father, while running the printing department at Alamogordo Army Air Field, had apparently been asked to print a long, highly classified document dealing with at least one crashed saucer and alien bodies. His father always refused to gvie many details. We had a number of telephone conversations, and Tim eventually passed on copies of the documents he had received.[8]

Originally Cooper was reluctant to pass on the first document because it was “extremely poorly reproduced, and Tim was initially reluctant to pass it on for fear he would be accused of forging it.”[9] Nonetheless he eventually shared a copy with Friedman.

This proved to be a memorandum from Admiral Roscoe Hillenkoetter, and was a “Memorandum for the President,” with security markings that read “TOP SECRET/MAJIC ETES ONLY” at the bottom. The memorandum states that Hillenkoetter had all the information summaries gleaned from “the machines” summarized and bound into a “Black Book both for convenience...and for greater (security) in handling,” and goes on to state that Hillenkoetter was sending two of the booklets to the President for him to “glance through in order to familiarize yourself with the manner in which the information is presented.” The memorandum ends with Hillenkoetter stating that he will send the books to the White House each week.[10]

Somewhat later, Cooper sent Friedman two more documents. One was a memorandum from General George C. Marshal to President Truman. The memo states that General Twining would be presenting a “report” to the

President that day, and states that they should “treat Twining’s report (as) top secret and that no indication of its content be divulged to the public.”[11]

The final document was “a Top Secret Eyes Only directive to General Twining. This memo had no typed-in date, but at the bottom was a scrawled ‘Approved Harry Truman July 9, 1947.’[12] This document directed General Twining to go to the White Sands Proving Ground Command Center “without delay for the purpose of making an appraisal of the reported unidentified objects being kept there,” and that Twining was to to take with him “such experts, technicians, scientists and assistants as you deem necessary to the effectiveness of your mission.”[13]

But as the documents swelled from a trickle to a stream and finally a flood, document examiners Drs. Robert and Ryan Wood disclosed another interesting detail. Unlike the anonymous posting of rolls of film to Shandera and Berliner, or even the strange postcards with their Addis Ababa return address and New Zealand postmarks, the Woods disclosed that Cooper claimed to be receiving the documents from a man calling himself “Thomas Cantwheel,” and that they came in envelopes with an Albuquerque, New Mexico postmark.[14]

A. Friedman on the Nature of Majic-12 Document Authenticity

1. The Methodology

There is a problem, however, in authenticating such documents, and the careful reader will have immediately spotted it: all the documents came on *film* or, with the exception of the Cutler-Twining Memo, the Cooper-Cantwheel series of documents were photocopies. Consequently, all documents lack any provenance that could determine their authenticity or lack thereof. Furthermore, there was no way to test the originals for the paper that they were written on, nor for the inks used in signatures.[15] Only the Cutler-Twining Memo contained a crucial detail that allowed Freidman and his colleagues to verify its probable authenticity.

Even *with* access to the original documents, there is another possibility that Friedman and fellow Majic-12 researchers must contend with:

> ...Even the best expert cannot guarantee absolutely that any document is genuine, for a clever forger or disinformation specialist — especially one within the intelligence community — would have access to all the appropriate ink, paper, typewriters, signature samples, and memo formats.
>
> In an area as controversial as ufology, the possibility of fraud or disinformation is everpresent.[16]

As far as the Eisenhower Briefing Document — the very *first* leaked Majic-12 document — was concerned, there were three possibilities, as Friedman saw them.

First, it could be an outright hoax: "Were these mysterious documents intended to fool us into going public so that these debunkers could say 'Gotcha!' and discredit not only us but the entire Roswell story as well?"[17] But a plain and simple hoax was unlikely, since whoever sent the documents to Shandera would have known that he, Moore, and Friedman would spare no effort to authenticate the documents.

That brought up a second, and more likely possibility, namely that the documents could be some sort of disinformation that contained "some truth mixed with some phony material, sending researchers off on a wild-goose chase and keeping the secrets for that much longer. Perhaps there was a Majestic-12 group, but it dealt with something entirely different."[18] As will be discovered in Part Three, the Nazi scenario can offer an alternative explanation for the presence of such documents and the formation of such a group, and offers a plausible explanation for why such documents might be considered disinformation.

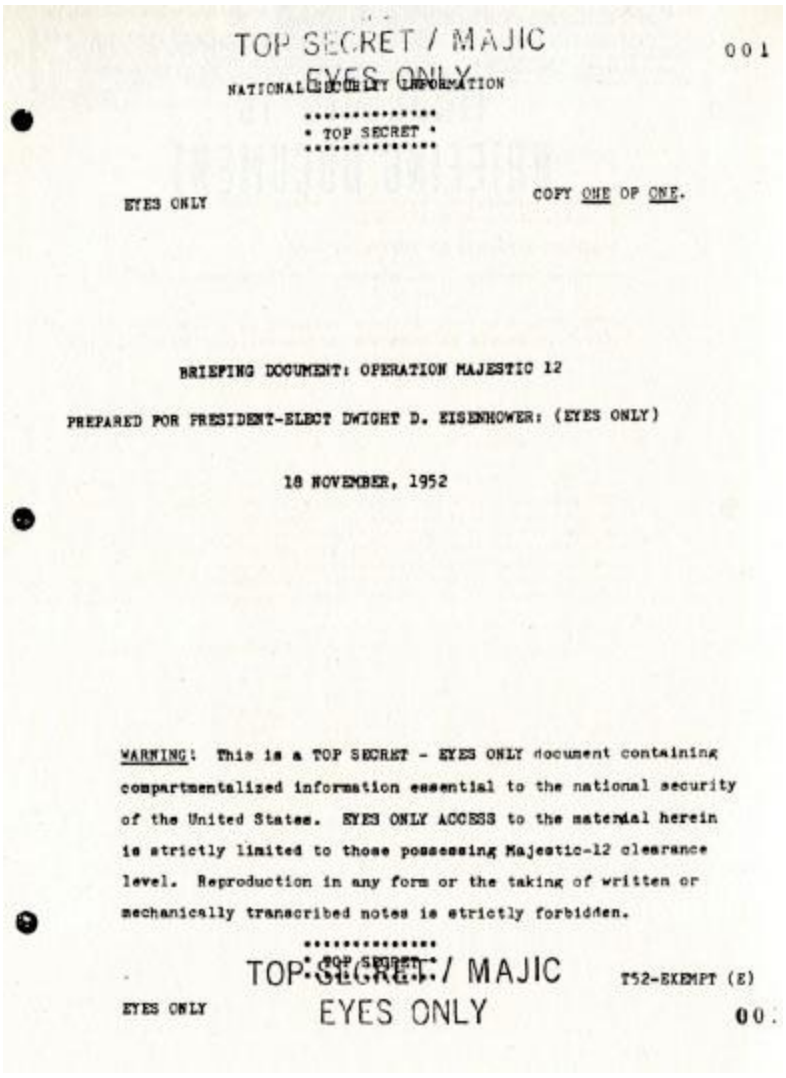
But the final possibility was that they were "plain straight legitimate."[19]

Under such circumstances — lacking the original documents by which to compare papers, inks, signatures and so on — there was really only one method by which to argue for or against their authenticity, and that was to argue from the internal evidence itself. That is, did the documents adhere to established protocols for dating and for government memoranda at that time period? More importantly, was the specific information presented in them credible? Did the alleged people involved in the Majic-12 Group make rational *sense?*

It is especially with respect to the last question that Friedman's analysis shines, for as will be seen, each of the individuals named as a member of the Majic-12 Group makes eminent sense, and, in the case of one of them, makes *special sense in the light of the Nazi Scenario, but, as I will argue, not much sense in the light of the extraterrestrial one.* Indeed, as we proceed with our examination of the Majic-12 documents problem in this part of the book, we will discover that — whether legitimate or a hoax — someone seems to be taking pains to point very subtle fingers and plant very subtle clues to "look to the Nazis."

2. The Eisenhower Briefing Document

There is no doubt, given the actual contents of the Eisenhower Briefing Document — if authentic — that its contents made it "one of the most important classified government documents ever leaked to the public."[20] So first, a look at the important pages of the document are in order. I will present actual pictures of the document, the present the actual text for ease of reading, before summarizing Friedman's analysis and argumentation for its authenticity.



TOP SECRET / MAJIC
EYES ONLY

001

NATIONAL SECURITY INFORMATION

****
* TOP SECRET *
****

EYES ONLY

COPY ONE OF ONE.

BRIEFING DOCUMENT: OPERATION MAJESTIC 12

PREPARED FOR PRESIDENT-ELECT DWIGHT D. EISENHOWER: (EYES ONLY)

18 NOVEMBER, 1952

WARNING: This is a TOP SECRET - EYES ONLY document containing compartmentalized information essential to the national security of the United States. EYES ONLY ACCESS to the material herein is strictly limited to those possessing Majestic-12 clearance level. Reproduction in any form or the taking of written or mechanically transcribed notes is strictly forbidden.

****
* TOP SECRET *
****

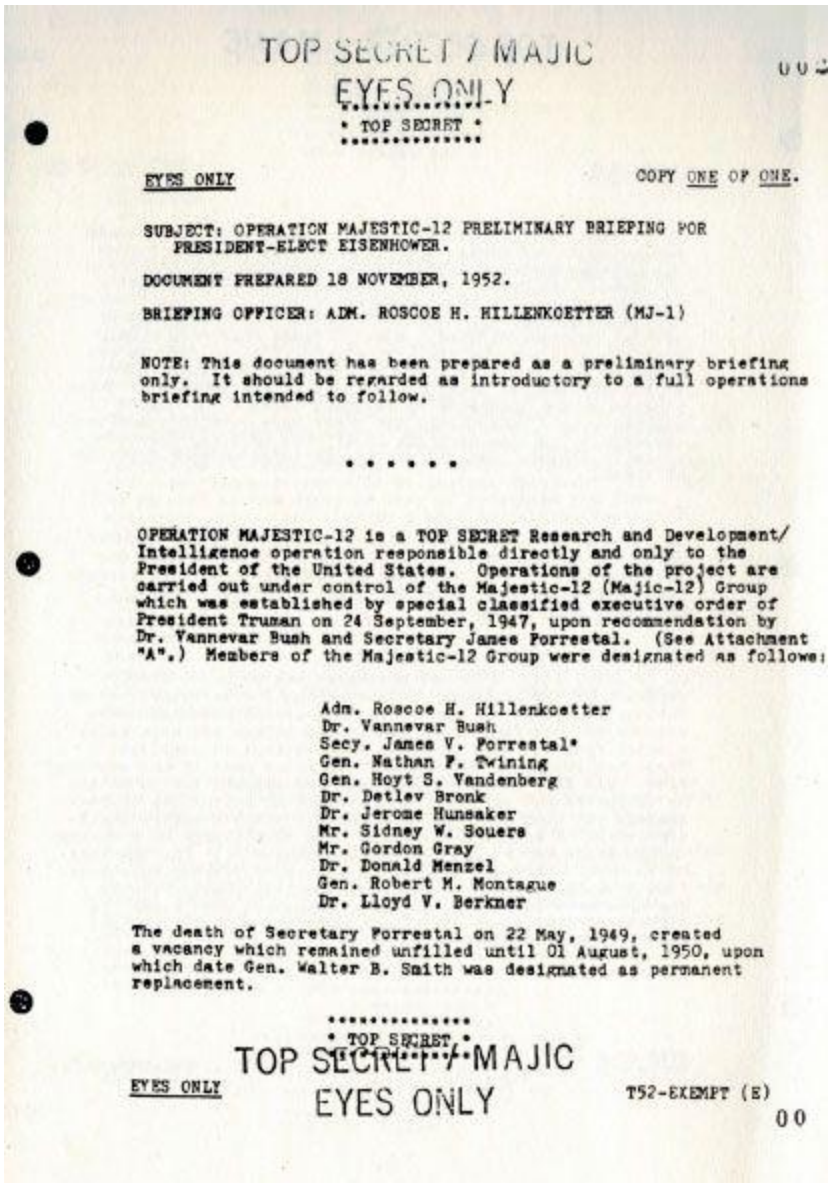
TOP SECRET / MAJIC
EYES ONLY

T52-EXEMPT (E)

EYES ONLY

001

Eisenhower Briefing Document, Page 1 Title Page



TOP SECRET / MAJIC
EYES ONLY
* TOP SECRET *

002

EYES ONLY COPY ONE OF ONE.

SUBJECT: OPERATION MAJESTIC-12 PRELIMINARY BRIEFING FOR PRESIDENT-ELECT EISENHOWER.

DOCUMENT PREPARED 18 NOVEMBER, 1952.

BRIEFING OFFICER: ADM. ROSCOE H. HILLENKOETTER (MJ-1)

NOTE: This document has been prepared as a preliminary briefing only. It should be regarded as introductory to a full operations briefing intended to follow.

* * * * * *

OPERATION MAJESTIC-12 is a TOP SECRET Research and Development/ Intelligence operation responsible directly and only to the President of the United States. Operations of the project are carried out under control of the Majestic-12 (Majic-12) Group which was established by special classified executive order of President Truman on 24 September, 1947, upon recommendation by Dr. Vannevar Bush and Secretary James Forrestal. (See Attachment "A".) Members of the Majestic-12 Group were designated as follows:

Adm. Roscoe H. Hillenkoetter
Dr. Vannevar Bush
Secy. James V. Forrestal*
Gen. Nathan F. Twining
Gen. Hoyt S. Vandenberg
Dr. Detlev Bronk
Dr. Jerome Hunsaker
Mr. Sidney W. Souers
Mr. Gordon Gray
Dr. Donald Menzel
Gen. Robert M. Montague
Dr. Lloyd V. Berkner

The death of Secretary Forrestal on 22 May, 1949, created a vacancy which remained unfilled until 01 August, 1950, upon which date Gen. Walter B. Smith was designated as permanent replacement.

* TOP SECRET *

TOP SECRET / MAJIC
EYES ONLY

EYES ONLY T52-EXEMPT (E)

00

Eisenhower Briefing Document, Page 2

TOP SECRET / MAJIC
EYES ONLY

003

* TOP SECRET *
****

EYES ONLY

COPY ONE OF ONE.

On 24 June, 1947, a civilian pilot flying over the Cascade Mountains in the State of Washington observed nine flying disc-shaped aircraft traveling in formation at a high rate of speed. Although this was not the first known sighting of such objects, it was the first to gain widespread attention in the public media. Hundreds of reports of sightings of similar objects followed. Many of these came from highly credible military and civilian sources. These reports resulted in independent efforts by several different elements of the military to ascertain the nature and purpose of these objects in the interests of national defense. A number of witnesses were interviewed and there were several unsuccessful attempts to utilize aircraft in efforts to pursue reported discs in flight. Public reaction bordered on near hysteria at times.

In spite of these efforts, little of substance was learned about the objects until a local rancher reported that one had crashed in a remote region of New Mexico located approximately seventy-five miles northwest of Roswell Army Air Base (now Walker Field).

On 07 July, 1947, a secret operation was begun to assure recovery of the wreckage of this object for scientific study. During the course of this operation, aerial reconnaissance discovered that four small human-like beings had apparently ejected from the craft at some point before it exploded. These had fallen to earth about two miles east of the wreckage site. All four were dead and badly decomposed due to action by predators and exposure to the elements during the approximately one week time period which had elapsed before their discovery. A special scientific team took charge of removing these bodies for study. (See Attachment "C".) The wreckage of the craft was also removed to several different locations. (See Attachment "B".) Civilian and military witnesses in the area were debriefed, and news reporters were given the effective cover story that the object had been a misguided weather research balloon.

****
* TOP SECRET *
****

EYES ONLY TOP SECRET / MAJIC
EYES ONLY

T52-EXEMPT (E)

00

Eisenhower Briefing Document, Page 3

TOP SECRET / MAJIC

EYES ONLY

004

****

* TOP SECRET *

****

EYES ONLY

COPY ONE OF ONE.

A covert analytical effort organized by Gen. Twining and Dr. Bush acting on the direct orders of the President, resulted in a preliminary concensus (19 September, 1947) that the disc was most likely a short range reconnaissance craft. This conclusion was based for the most part on the craft's size and the apparent lack of any identifiable provisioning. (See Attachment "D".) A similar analysis of the four dead occupants was arranged by Dr. Bronk. It was the tentative conclusion of this group (30 November, 1947) that although these creatures are human-like in appearance, the biological and evolutionary processes responsible for their development has apparently been quite different from those observed or postulated in homo-sapiens. Dr. Bronk's team has suggested the term "Extra-terrestrial Biological Entities", or "ETBEs", be adopted as the standard term of reference for these creatures until such time as a more definitive designation can be agreed upon.

Since it is virtually certain that these craft do not originate in any country on earth, considerable speculation has centered around what their point of origin might be and how they get here. Mars was and remains a possibility, although some scientists, most notably Dr. Menzel, consider it more likely that we are dealing with beings from another solar system entirely.

Numerous examples of what appear to be a form of writing were found in the wreckage. Efforts to decipher these have remained largely unsuccessful. (See Attachment "E".) Equally unsuccessful have been efforts to determine the method of propulsion or the nature or method of transmission of the power source involved. Research along these lines has been complicated by the complete absence of identifiable wings, propellers, jets, or other conventional methods of propulsion and guidance, as well as a total lack of metallic wiring, vacuum tubes, or similar recognizable electronic components. (See Attachment "F".) It is assumed that the propulsion unit was completely destroyed by the explosion which caused the crash.

****

* TOP SECRET *

****

EYES ONLY TOP SECRET / MAJIC T52-EXEMPT (E)

EYES ONLY

004

Eisenhower Briefing Document, Page 4

TOP SECRET / MAJIC
EYES ONLY

003

****
* TOP SECRET *
****

EYES ONLY

COPY ONE OF ONE.

A need for as much additional information as possible about these craft, their performance characteristics and their purpose led to the undertaking known as U.S. Air Force Project SIGN in December, 1947. In order to preserve security, liason between SIGN and Majestic-12 was limited to two individuals within the Intelligence Division of Air Materiel Command whose role was to pass along certain types of information through channels. SIGN evolved into Project GRUDGE in December, 1948. The operation is currently being conducted under the code name BLUE BOOK, with liason maintained through the Air Force officer who is head of the project.

On 06 December, 1950, a second object, probably of similar origin, impacted the earth at high speed in the El Indio - Guerrero area of the Texas - Mexican boder after following a long trajectory through the atmosphere. By the time a search team arrived, what remained of the object had been almost totally incinerated. Such material as could be recovered was transported to the A.E.C. facility at Sandia, New Mexico, for study.

Implications for the National Security are of continuing importance in that the motives and ultimate intentions of these visitors remain completely unknown. In addition, a significant upsurge in the surveillance activity of these craft beginning in May and continuing through the autumn of this year has caused considerable concern that new developments may be imminent. It is for these reasons, as well as the obvious international and technological considerations and the ultimate need to avoid a public panic at all costs, that the Majestic-12 Group remains of the unanimous opinion that imposition of the strictest security precautions should continue without interruption into the new administration. At the same time, contingency plan MJ-1949-04P/78 (Top Secret - Eyes Only) should be held in continued readiness should the need to make a public announcement present itself. (See Attachment "G".)

****

TOP SECRET / MAJIC
EYES ONLY

EYES ONLY

T52-EXHIBIT (E)

Eisenhower Briefing Document, Page 5

TOP SECRET / MAJIC
EYES ONLY

006

****
* TOP SECRET *
****

EYES ONLY

COPY ONE OF ONE.

ENUMERATION OF ATTACHMENTS:

*ATTACHMENT "A".....Special Classified Executive Order #092447. (TS/EO)

*ATTACHMENT "B".....Operation Majestic-12 Status Report #1, Part A. 30 NOV '47. (TS-MAJIC/EO)

*ATTACHMENT "C".....Operation Majestic-12 Status Report #1, Part B. 30 NOV '47. (TS-MAJIC/EO)

*ATTACHMENT "D".....Operation Majestic-12 Preliminary Analytical Report. 19 SEP '47. (TS-MAJIC/EO)

*ATTACHMENT "E".....Operation Majestic-12 Blue Team Report #5. 30 JUN '52. (TS-MAJIC/EO)

*ATTACHMENT "F".....Operation Majestic-12 Status Report #2. 31 JAN '48. (TS-MAJIC/EO)

*ATTACHMENT "G".....Operation Majestic-12 Contingency Plan MJ-1949-04P/78: 31 JAN '49. (TS-MAJIC/EO)

*ATTACHMENT "H".....Operation Majestic-12, Maps and Photographs Folio (Extractions). (TS-MAJIC/EO)

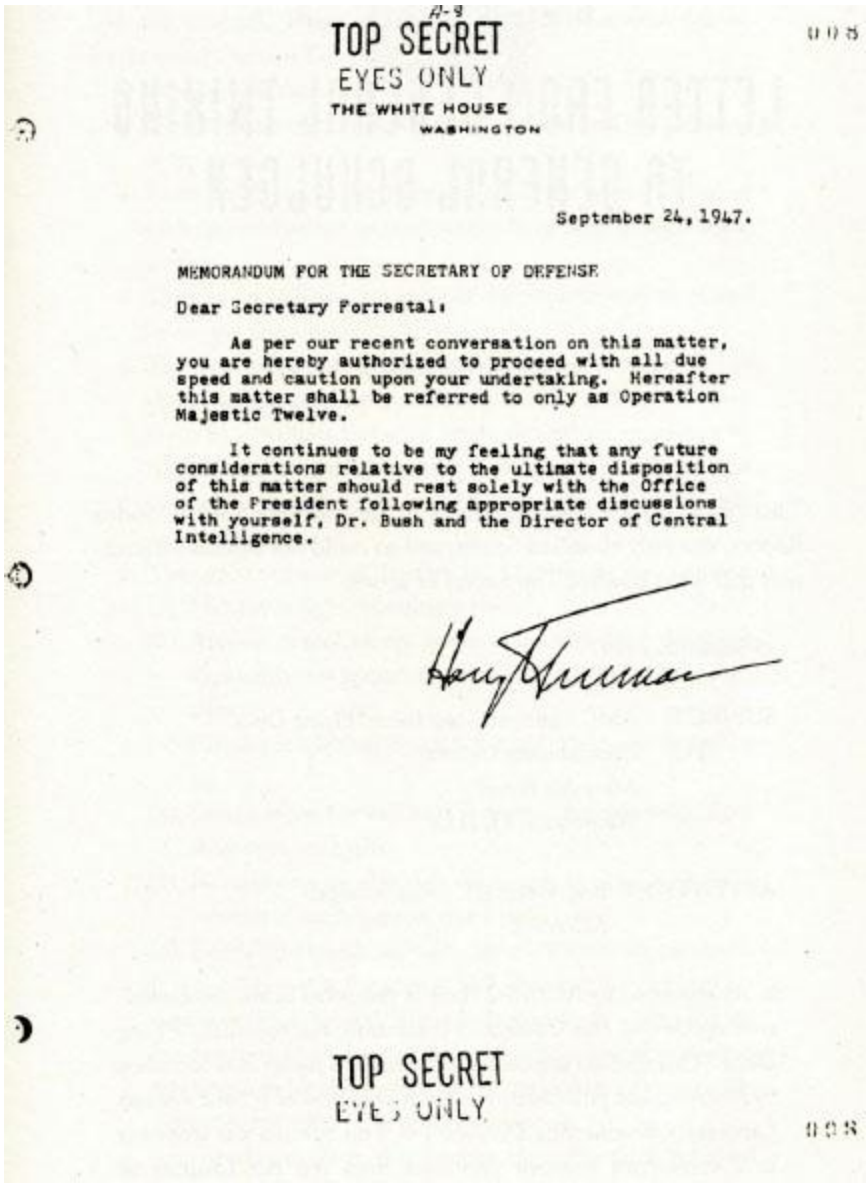
****
* TOP SECRET *
TOP SECRET / MAJIC
EYES ONLY

EYES ONLY

T52-EXEMPT (E)

006

Eisenhower Briefing Document, Page 6



A-9

TOP SECRET

EYES ONLY

THE WHITE HOUSE

WASHINGTON

005

September 24, 1947.

MEMORANDUM FOR THE SECRETARY OF DEFENSE

Dear Secretary Forrestal:

As per our recent conversation on this matter, you are hereby authorized to proceed with all due speed and caution upon your undertaking. Hereafter this matter shall be referred to only as Operation Majestic Twelve.

It continues to be my feeling that any future considerations relative to the ultimate disposition of this matter should rest solely with the Office of the President following appropriate discussions with yourself, Dr. Bush and the Director of Central Intelligence.

Harry Truman

TOP SECRET

EYES ONLY

008

Eisenhower Briefing Document, Truman-Forrestal Memorandum

And now the actual text of the document:

TOP SECRET/MAJIC 001
EYES ONLY
NATIONAL SECURITY INFORAMTION
****
* TOP SECRET*
****

EYES ONLY COPY ONE OF ONE

BRIEFING DOCUMENT: OPERATION MAJESTIC 12
PREPARED FOR PRESIDENT-ELECT DWIGHT D. EISENHOWER:
(EYES ONLY)

18 NOVEMBER, 1952

WARNING: This is a TOP SECRET — EYES ONLY document containing compartmentalized information essential to the national security of the United States. EYES ONLY ACCESS to the material herein is strictly limited to those possessing Majestic-12 clearance level. Reproduction in any form or the taking of written or mechanically transcribed notes is strictly forbidden.

****
* TOP SECRET*
****
TOP SECRET/MAJIC T52-EXEMPT(E)
EYES ONLY
EYES ONLY 001

Eisenhower Briefing Document, Page 1 Title Page, Plain Text Version

TOP SECRET/MAJIC 002
EYES ONLY
NATIONAL SECURITY INFORAMTION
****
* TOP SECRET*
****

EYES ONLY COPY ONE OF ONE
SUBJECT: OPERATION MAJESTIC-12 PRELIMINARY BRIEFING FOR PRESIDENT-ELECT EISENHOWER
DOCUMENT PREPARED 18 NOVEMBER, 1952.
BRIEFING OFFICER: ADM. ROSCOE H. HILLENKOETTER (MJ-12)
NOTE: This document has been prepared as a preliminary briefing only. It should be regarded as introductory to a full operations briefing intended to follow.

******

OPERATION MAJESTIC-12 is a TOP SECRET Research and Development/ Intelligence operation responsible directly and only to the President of the United States. Operations of the project are carried out under control of the Majestic-12 (Majic-12) Group which was established by special classified executive order of President Truman on 24 September, 1947, upon recommendation by Dr. Vannevar Bush and Secretary James Forrestal. (See Attachment "A".) Members of the Majestic-12 Group were designated as follows:

Adm. Roscoe H. Hillenkoetter
Dr. Vannevar Bush
Secy. James V. Forrestal*
Gen Nathan F. twining
Gen. Hoyt S. Vandenburg
Dr. Detlev Bronk
Dr. Jerome Hunsaker
Mr. Syndney W. Souers
Mr. Gordon Gray
Dr. Donald Menzel
Gen. Robert M. Montague
Dr. Lloyd V. Berkner

The death of Secretary Forrestal on 22 May, 1949, created a vacancy which remained unfilled until 01 august, 1950, upon which date Gen. walter B. Smith was designated as permanent replacement.

****
* TOP SECRET*
****

TOP SECRET/MAJIC T52-EXEMPT(E)
EYES ONLY
EYES ONLY 002

TOP SECRET/MAJIC 003
EYES ONLY
NATIONAL SECURITY INFORAMTION
****
* TOP SECRET*
****

EYES ONLY COPY ONE OF ONE

On 24 June, 1947, a civilian pilot flying over the Cascade Mountains in the State of Washington observed nine flying disc-shaped aircraft traveling in formation at a high rate of speed. Although this was not the first known sighting of such objects, it was the first to gain widespread attention in the public media. Hundreds of reports of sightings of similar objects followed. Many of these came from highly credible military and civilian sources. these reports resulted in independent efforts by several different elements of the military to ascertain the nature and purpose of these objects in the interests of national defense. A number of witnesses were interviewed and there were several unsuccessful attempts to utilize aircraft in efforts to pursue reported discs in flight. Public reaction bordered on near hysteria at times.

In spite of these efforts, little of substance was learned about the objects until a local rancher reported that one had crashed in a remote region of New Mexico located approximately seventy-five miles northwest of Roswell army Air Base (now Walker Field).

On 07 July, 1947, a secret operation was begun to assure recovery of the wreckage of this object for scientific study. During the course of this operation, aerial reconnaissance discovered that four small human-like beings had apparently ejected from the craft at some point before it exploded. These had fallen to earth about two miles east of the wreckage site. All four were dead and badly decomposed due to action by predators and exposure to the elements during the approximately one week time period which had elapsed before their discovery. A special scientific team took charge of removing these bodies for study. (See Attachment "C".) The wreckage of the craft was also removed to several different locations. (See Attachment "B".) Civilian and military witnesses in the area were debriefed, and news reporters were given the effective cover story that the object had been a misguided weather research balloon.

****
* TOP SECRET*
****

TOP SECRET/MAJIC T52-EXEMPT(E)
EYES ONLY

EYES ONLY 003

TOP SECRET/MAJIC 004
EYES ONLY
NATIONAL SECURITY INFORAMTION
****
* TOP SECRET*
****

EYES ONLY COPY ONE OF ONE

A covert analytical effort organized by Gen. Twining and Dr. Bush acting on the direct orders of the President, resulted in a preliminary concensus [sic] (19 September, 1947) that the disc was most likely a short range reconnaissance craft. This conclusion was based for the most part on the craft's size and the apparent lack of any identifiable provisioning. (See Attachment "D".) A similar analysis of the four dead occupants was arranged by Dr. Bronk. It was the tentative conclusion of this group (30 November, 1947) that although these creatures are human-like in appearance, the biological and evolutionary processes responsible for their development has apparently been quite different from those observed or postulated in homo-sapiens. Dr. Bronk's team has suggested the term "Extra-Terrestrial Biological Entities", or "EBEs", he adopted as the standard term of reference for these creatures until such time as a more definitive designation can be agreed upon.

Since it is virtually certain that these craft do not originate in any country on earth, considerable speculation has centered around what their point of origin might be and how they get here. Mars was a remains a possibility, although some scientists, most notably Dr. Menzel, consider it more likely that we are dealing with beings from another solar system entirely.

Numerous examples of what appear to be a form of writing were found in the wreckage. Efforts to decipher these have remained largely unsuccessful. (See Attachment "E".) Equally unsuccessful have been efforts to determine the method of propulsion or the nature or method of transmission of the power source involved. research along these lines has been complicated by the complete absence of identifiable wings, propellers, jets, or other conventional methods of propulsion and guidance, as well as a total lack of metallic wiring, vacuum tubes, or similar recognizable electronic components. (See Attachment "F".) It is assumed that the propulsion unit was complete destroyed by the explosion which caused the crash.

****
* TOP SECRET*
****

TOP SECRET/MAJIC T52-EXEMPT (E)
EYES ONLY

EYES ONLY 004

Eisenhower Briefing Document Page 4 Plain Text Version

TOP SECRET/MAJIC 005
EYES ONLY
NATIONAL SECURITY INFORAMTION
****
* TOP SECRET*
****

EYES ONLY COPY ONE OF ONE

A need for as much additional information as possible about these craft, their performance characteristics and their purpose led to the undertaking known as U.S. Air Force Project SIGN in December, 1947. In order to preserve security, liason [sic et passim] berween SIGN and Majestic-12 was limited to two individuals within the Intelligence Division of Air Materiel Command whose role was to pass along certain types of information through channels. SIIGN evolved into Project GRUDGE in December, 1948. The operation is currently being conducted under the code name BLUE BOOK, with liason maintained through the air Force office who is head of the project.

On 06 December, 1950, a second object, probably of similar origin, impacted the earth at high speed in the El Indo — Guerrero area of the Texas — Mexican border after following a long trajectory through the atmosphere. By the time a search team arrived, what remained of the object had been almost totally incinerated. Such material as could be recovered was transported to the A.E.C. facility at Sandia, New Mexico, for study.

Implications for the National Security are of continuing importance in that the motives and ultimate intentions of these visitors remain completely unknown. In addition, a significant upsurge in the surveillance activity of these craft beginning in May and continuing through the autumn of this year has caused considersble concern that new developments may be imminent. It is for these reasons, as well as the obvious international and technological considerations and the ultimate need to avoid a public panic at all costs, that the Majestic-12 Group remains of the unanimous opinion that imposition of the strictest security precautions should continue without interruption into the new administration. At the same time, contingency plan MJ-1949-o4P/78 (Top Secret — Eyes Only) should be held in continued readiness should the need to make a public announcement present itself. (See Attachment "G".)

****
* TOP SECRET*
****
TOP SECRET/MAJIC T52-EXEMPT (E)
EYES ONLY

TOP SECRET/MAJIC 006
EYES ONLY
NATIONAL SECURITY INFORAMTION
****
* TOP SECRET*
****

EYES ONLY COPY ONE OF ONE

ENUMERATION OF ATTACHMENTS:

*ATTACHMENT "A".....Special Classified Executive Order #092447. (TS/EO)

*ATTACHMENT "B".....Operation Majestic-12 Status Report #1, Part A. 30 NOV '47. (TS-MAJIC.EO)

*ATTACHMENT "C".....Operation Majestic-12 Status report #1, Part B. 30 NOV '47. (TS-MAJIC.EO)

*ATTACHMENT "D".....Operation Majestic-12 Preliminary Analytical Report. 19 SEP '47 (TS-MAJIC/EO)

*ATTACHMENT "E".....Operation Majestic-12 Blue Team Report #5. 30 JUN '52. (TS-MAJIC/EO)

*ATTACHMENT "F".....Operation Majestic-12 Status report #2. 31 JAN '48/ (TS-MAJIC/EO)

*ATTACHMENT "G".....Operation Majestic-12 Contingency Plan MJ-1949-o4P/78: 31 JAN '49. (TS-MAJIC/EO)

*ATTCHEMENT "H".....Operation Majestic-12, Maps and Photographs Folio (Extractions). (TS-MAJIC/EO)

****
* TOP SECRET*
****
TOP SECRET/MAJIC T52-EXEMPT (E)
EYES ONLY

EYES ONLY 004

As page 7 of the Eisenhower Briefing Document is only a cover sheet for "Attachment A" which follows on page 8, I present only page 8 here:

A-3(handwritten) 008
TOP SECRET
EYES ONLY
THE WHITE HOUSE
WASHINGTON

September 24, 1947.

MEMORANDUM FOR THE SECRETARY OF DEFENSE

Dear Secretary Forrestal:

As per our recent conversation on this matter, you are hereby authorized to proceed with all due speed and caution upon your undertaking. Hereafter this matter shall be referred to only as Operation Majestic Twelve.

It continues to be my feeling that any future considerations relative to the ultimate disposition of this matter should rest solely with the Office of the President following appropriate discussions with yourself, Dr. Bush and the Director of Central Intelligence.

/s/
Harry Truman

TOP SECRET
EYES ONLY 008

Eisenhower Briefing Document Page 8 Plain Text Version

3. The Majetic-12 Membership List

a. Dr. Donald Menzel

The document presents the following internal information that can be used to verify the document's authenticity:

1) The security classification markings "Top Secret/Eyes Only" and "Top Secret/Majic/Eyes Only." Neither classification is all that unusual so from this standpoint, the document appears authentic, though the classification "Top Secret/Majic/Eyes Only" is the point in question, i.e., is there a Majic-12 or Majestic-12 Group. However, from the point of internal consistency and the document's own

statement that the contents it contains involves compartmentalized information, such a classification or similar scheme would be expected.

2) The document refers to twelve alleged members of the study group, and this therefore constitutes a major area of verification: do these members *make sense* in the context of a top secret study group established to analyze the Roswell Incident and the alleged recovery of technologies and extraterrestrial bodies?
3) The document contains obvious formatting such as dating formats and other internal references that can also be used as points for verification or denial of authenticity.
4) Finally, the document contains internal information which both supports the extraterrestrial interpretation of the Roswell Incident, and which — in spite of being ignored by the ufology community — suggests another interpretation as well.

Of these four areas of potential verification, obviously the most specific and important are its list of the alleged members of the Majestic-12 study group, and these Friedman rightly and astutely zeros in on in his effort to verify the document.

And of these twelve, the one that most stood out to Friedman, and rightly so, as being the most unusual and *unlikely* member of such a group was the famous Harvard astronomer, Dr. Donald Menzel. The reason that Dr. Menzel was such an unlikely candidate for membership in such a group was that he was *well-known* throughout the late 1950s and 1960s as one of the major UFO-debunkers, having authored some books on the subject that attempted to explain away all such sightings and incidents along entirely naturalist and "scientific" man-made lines. Menzel concocted a variety of pseudo-scientific explanations for the phenomena ranging from "cloud reflections" to other equally creative explanations that remind one of Dr. J. Allen Hynek's infamous "swamp gas" theory.[21] Indeed, one can sense Friedman's own perplexity at the presence of Menzel's name on the Majestic-12 list:

> (Why) would a Harvard professor of astronomy, hardly a high-security-level position, be working with the other people on the

> Majestic-12 list? These included the first four directors of the CIA (or its forerunner), the first Secretary of Defense, and Vannevar Bush, who headed the wartime Office of Scientific Research and Development and was in charge of the Manhattan Project and other high-security military research projects.[22]

Not only that, when Dr. Menzel was being reviewed for an Air Force security clearance of merely "Secret" level, he actually had to appear before hearings, since he had been "fingered" as potentially disloyal during those days when the McCarthyite era was just beginning to gather momentum. Indeed, none other than Dr. Vannevar Bush, President Franklin Roosevelt's "science tsar" testified in behalf of his friend Menzel. This made it even more curious, for how could such an individual gain the much-higher security clearance needed for something like Majestic-12?[23]

Visiting the Harvard University archives to access Dr. Menzel's papers, Friedman made an astonishing discovery about the famous late astronomer:

> (I) decided to make a stab in the dark and start with Menzel's correspondence with President Kennedy. Frankly, I was curious as to why there even was such a file. (It turns out that Kennedy was on the Board of Overseers at Harvard, had chosen astronomy as his special interest area, and was well-acquainted with Menzel.) To my surprise, the correspondence showed that Menzel led two separate lives.
>
> Publicly, Menzel was a famous astronomy professor serving on international committees, leading solar eclipse expeditions, establishing solar observatories, supervising graduate students, and debunking UFOs.
>
> Privately, he did highly classified consulting work for federal intelligence agencies, primarily with the huge National Security Agency (NAS), and for more than thirty corporations on such matters as radio wave propagation, cryptography, and apparently, alien interstellar spacecraft.
>
> ....
>
> Two quotes form letters to Kennedy (there are many others) show Menzel's intelligence involvement and discretion. Speaking of the NSA and its predecessor U.S. Navy agency in an August 13, 1960

> letter, he said, “I have been associated with this activity for almost 30 years and probably have the longest continuous record of association of any person in the country. I still keep my close association with them. Properly cleared to one another, I should be able to help in this sensitive area.” ...
>
> On November 3, 1960, again about the NSA: “I have been a consultant to that activity with Top Secret clearance and have also had some association with the CIA. Obviously in an unclassified letter, I cannot go further into detail..”
>
> So Menzel did belong with the other high-security-level members of Majestic-12![24]

Friedman also discovered that Menzel’s association and friendship with Dr. Vannavar Bush went back to 1934,[25] that he also held a Navy Top Secret Ultra Security Clearance at the very time the “Air Force was trying to withdraw his much lower-level Secret clearance,”[26] and that he was known for his great care and discretion with respect to classified matters.[27] Additionally, “he was well acquainted with Detlev Bronk and Lloyd Berkner, other members of MJ-12, as well as most of the other top scientists of the 1950s.”[28]

Finally, Menzel had even learned Japanese as part of his cryptography work. But at this juncture, Friedman makes a telling observation: “He was an ideal person to analyze the symbols on the Roswell crash debris, since he had the high-level security clearance to go with his cryptographic skills and understanding of an entirely different — ‘alien’ — symbolic language.”[29] This, however, raises a few problems.

As we saw in the first two chapters of this book, witnesses to the Roswell debris sometimes described the writing on some of it as appearing to look like Chinese or Japanese writing. While Menzel would certainly be in a position to decipher Japanese writing, for if it *was* such writing, it does not bode well for an extraterrestrial interpretation of the Roswell Incident. And even if it was *not*, there is no reason to assume that the writing represented a linguistic form of communication to begin with; it could very well have been some other type of communication or symbolism, and the assumption that it *was* such linguistic communication may have been one of the reasons

— according to the internal indications of the Eisenhower Briefing Document itself — that it was not deciphered.

But howsoever one slices it, Friedman has, in this author's opinion, demonstrated Menzel's mention on the Majestic-12 list in the Eisenhower Briefing Document makes very rational sense in a certain way, for who better to involve in such a group than a famous astronomer, a known UFO debunker — useful for putting out "spin" — and a capable cryptographer? While Friedman admits that "my research has not revealed a 'smoking gun' pointing to Menzel's involvement in Operation Majestic-12," he nonetheless has successfully demonstrated that the famous Harvard professor lived a double-life, and that he had

> the right kind of specialized theoretical and technical knowledge; he had written fiction and non-fiction for popular consumption; he had the right security clearances; he maintained a long and patriotic involvement with highly classified work; he had a close association with the other top-level people listed as being involved in Majestic-12.[30]

This, as Friedman aptly observes, is an argument not for the Eisenhower Briefing Document's non-authentic nature, but on the contrary, a very strong argument from the internal evidence as to its probable origin from someone inside the government and close to the project itself, for if the document was "fraudulent or intentionally misleading, they were put together by somebody on the inside who knew that Menzel would pass muster. None one the outside knew that."[31] While Friedman clearly and strongly advocates in favor of the Briefing Document's pure authenticity, this comment should not be overlooked, for he is leaving the door open — just a sliver — for the possibility that it might have been designed as disinformation. That possibility will be examined in a moment.

b. The Others

But what of the other members of the list in the document? Can a similar rationalization for their presence be found? As Friedman notes, the

membership list of the Eisenhower Briefing Document lists twelve men, six civilians, and six others being military members, with two members drawn from each of the three service branches.[32]

General Nathan Twining was, of course, an obvious choice, since as the commanding general of the Air Force's Air Materiel Command any analysis of recovered flying saucer debris would likely be handled by his command. Additionally, Friedman observes that "Alamogordo was the home to a contingent of Twining's Air Materiel Command scientists and numerous rocket scientists, including the German contingent under Werner von Braun."[33] Thus, there is a slim possibility that any analysis of such recovered wreckage might indeed, as Colonel Corso suggested, have included some of the Nazi Paperclip scientists.

As for Dr. Vannevar Bush, he too is another logical choice for membership in the Majestic-12 Group. As Friedman notes, he had headed the Office of Scientific Research and Development during the Second World War, and then "the group out of which the (Atomic Energy Commission) was formed." He was also "the prewar chairman of the National Advisory Committee on Aeronautics (NACA)," the precursor from World War Two of what would eventually become the National Aeronautics and Space Administration (NASA).[34]

General Doolittle also makes sense, since he was "one of the first recipients of a Ph.D. in aeronautics (from MIT when (Vannevar) Bush was dean.)"[35] Dr. Jerome Hunsacker also makes sense, since he succeeded Dr. Vannevar Bush as the chairman of NACA and had also been involved in various intelligence activities.[36] Dr. Lloyd Berkner was another logical choice given his association with Brookhaven, and was in fact also a member of the CIA's Robertson UFO panel established by "then-CIA director Walter Bedell Smith in early 1953 to evaluate UFOs."[37] Likewise Gordon Gray's membership in the Majestic-12 Group could be similarly rationalized, for he had been in a top oversight position of the Manhattan atom bomb Project during the world war, and had intelligence experience which included being the Special Assistant to the President for National Security Affairs, "in effect the liaison between the president and the (National Security Council)," and was also "a member of the President's Foreign intelligence Advisory Board."[38] Certainly someone with black

projects experience, and with experience in handling foreign intelligence and diplomacy, would be an ideal member of such a group as Majestic-12. General Hoyt S. Vandenberg was by the time of the Eisenhower Briefing Document the Air Force Chief of Staff. Admiral Roscoe Hillenkoetter, General Walter Bedell Smith and Admiral Sidney Souers had all been directors of the Central Intelligence Agency, or in Souers' case, its predecessor, the Central Intelligence Group, and Bedell Smith had of course also been Eisenhower's chief of staff during the Second World War.[39] And James Forrestal was, of course, the Secretary of Defense, so again, his presence is eminently logical.

There are two other connections that Friedman mentions, and these are that Dr. Detlev Bronk, a principal scientist in the development of the field of biophysics, was also a former president of Rockefeller University in New York City.[40] He shared this Rockefeller connection with fellow Majestic-12 member Vannevar Bush who was also a member of the 1953 Rockefeller Commission.[41] The possible significance of this Rockefeller connection in the context of the Nazi scenario will be explored more fully in Part Three.

c. The Missing Annexes and the Truman-Forrestal Memorandum

When the Eisenhower Briefing Document arrived in Shandera's mail, the film showed only the first eight pages, including only the *first* of its eight annexes or "attachments."

> Obviously, it would have been wonderful to have related documents that would verify the information in the briefing. For example, it would be very useful to have attachments B through H of the briefing document, which from the content page received would include details of the alien bodies, the materials and structures, names of investigators, and so on. Since MJ-12 appears to have been an ongoing project, documents from before and after the briefing would be important, too.[42]

But Friedman *was* able to verify something very significant about Attachment "A", the Truman-Forrestal Memorandum. Writing the Truman

Library about the document, Friedman learned that the Library was able to confirm that there had indeed been a meeting between President Truman, Secretary of Defense Forrestal, and Dr. Vannevar Bush precisely on the date of the Attachment in the Eisenhower Briefing Document: September 24, 1947.[43]

4. The Cutler-Twining Memo

As was seen previously, the Cutler-Twining Memo emerged under curious circumstances, being discovered by Jaimie Shandera sandwiched between folders in Box 189 at the National Archives. It consisted of a carbon copy of a typed memorandum from Robert Cutler to General Nathan Twining on onion-skin paper with a watermark. The memo read as follows:

> MEMORANDUM FOR GENERAL TWINING
> SUBJECT: NSC/MJ-12 Special Studies Project
>
> The President has decided that the MJ-12 SSP briefing should take place during the already scheduled White House meeting of July 16, rather than following it as previously intended. More precise arrangements will be explained to you upon arrival. Please alter your plans accordingly.
>
> Your concurrence in the above change of arrangements is assumed.
>
> ROBERT CUTLER
> Special Assistant
> to the President[44]

According to Friedman, “there is no signature on the memo, nor even an /s/ next to Cutler’s name indicating that he had signed the original.”[45] This presented a problem for the verification of the memorandum.

Fortunately, however, both Bill Moore and Jaimie Shandera, who had seen the original memorandum in the National Archives, were able to hold the memorandum up to the light and see the watermark on the paper. The paper itself was manufactured by a stationer named Fox Paper in

Wisconsin. Bill Moore then contacted Fox paper and spoke to the company's watermark expert, who informed him that the stationary

> was made only in bid lots between 1953 and the early 1970s. The government bought a great deal of the paper, and the bid lot limitation meant that it wouldn't show up in retail stores all over the country — only major customers such as the government would buy it. So we know that the paper fits the time scheme, it would have been available in a number of government offices, and it would generally not have been available to the public.
>
> Besides the paper checking out, the language, style, format, and typeface of the memo appear to be genuine, especially when compared to other memos from Cutler that are known to be valid.[46]

Indeed, the fact that the watermarked onion-skin paper was sold only in bid lots and that the government was a major purchaser of the lots strongly establishes the likely authenticity of the document.

And that in turn argues strongly that the "MJ-12 Special Studies Project" did indeed exist, and that General Twining was a member of it.[47]

5. The Special Operations Manual

The final component in the "Original Set" of Majic-12 documents was the Special Operations Manual that Don Berliner received on a roll of black-and-white film in March of 1994. Once again, there was internal evidence to support the document's authenticity. For example, rather than use the term "UFOs" the document referred to "UFOBs" which stood for "unidentified flying objects," and was a term that had brief currency precisely during the mid-1950s.[48]

Friedman with Berliner's permission then shared a copy with Dr. Robert Wood,

> who had recently retired after more than 40 years as a scientist and project manager for McDonnell Douglas in California. Bob had a high-level professional interest in UFOs and advanced technology dating

back to the 1960s and had given lectures on UFOs to several organizations. He is one of a handful of professional people interested in UFOs whom I trust completely: excellent technical background, sound judgment, very knowledgeable about UFOs and high security. I hoped that Bob, because of past efforts on high-security programs, could check on the appropriateness of the security warning and other markings(on the Special Operations Manual). We discussed the document at length.

Bob then did something truly special. Using his computer, he matched the typefaces in the manual and tried to read every portion of the available pages.[49] Don had better 8" x 10" prints made from some of the negatives and used a magnifying glass to determine what some of the words were. With a lot of effort, Don and Bob were finally able to decipher just about every square inch of the pages.

In addition, Bob and a colleague, who also had long experience with highly classified reports, each found somebody knowledgeable about the Government Printing Office and made some sense out of the little numbers on the bottom of the pages. Everything they found was consistent with a typeset GPO document of that era. For instance, although Bob's digitally-typeset version of the manual is very professional-looking, there are subtle differences between it and the original typesetting, which was done mechanically. In other words, although someone could create this document on a computer, and even use the same typeface and typesize, there would be telltale signs that the pages were not mechanically set.[50]

In other words, for all intents and purposes the Special Operations Manual appeared to be the genuine article.

And that meant that there was some sort of highly classified crash-and-retrieval team in place whose mission it was to recover downed aircraft or even UFOs. But in any case, whether genuine or not, the document does not directly affect the Nazi scenario one way or another, save that, if there *was* an independent postwar Nazi group continuing its research into advanced aerodynes, and if one of these ever did crash on U.S. territory, then such a team would presumably handle it, and if one were not in place during the

first such instance of a crash, then one would quickly be organized by the American military to respond to a perceived potential threat.

6. The "Cooper-Cantwheel" Documents

But what of the *other* set of alleged Majic-12 documents, the so-called "Cooper-Cantwheel" set? Here, no matter where one stands within the ufology community on the subject of the Majic-12 documents, the matter is somewhat murkier, for as Friedman put it, "several of these documents also looked too good to be true."[51] And in fact that turned out to be the case. One document in the Cooper-Cantwheel set was a long letter from General George Marshall to Carl Humelsine, dated September 27, 1947. It was marked with the usual "Top Secret/Eyes Only" security classifications. It "referred to 'MAJIC military communications' being sent to Humelsine."[52] Friedman needless to say checked out the letter by sending a copy to the Marshall Foundation itself, and was informed that it was

> a retyped and slightly reworded version of a well-known letter from Marshall to Republican presidential candidate Thomas Dewey during the 1944 campaign....
>
> With this unambiguous fraud as a background, I became convinced that several other items were retyped and slightly changed versions of old memos or letters. For example, one document dealt with supposed travels to New Mexico of "Archbishop" Spellman in the summer of 1947, during which he would be protected by the military. By checking the *New York Times Index*, I determined that Spellman was clearly in New York during the summer, did not travel to New Mexico, and had already been named a Cardinal.[53]

And of course, one wonders why Francis Cardinal Spellman would need the protection of the U.S. military to begin with, even if he *did* go to New Mexico! The Cooper-Cantwheel set of documents is just not credible.

B. Implications and Observations: General Montague, Majestic-12, and the Nazi Scenario(s)

This brings us to the final, least-known, and for our purposes, perhaps the most interesting fact about the Eisenhower Briefing Document, and to the perhaps the most significant and interesting alleged member of the Majestic-12 Group according to the same document: General Robert Montague. According to Friedman, Montague was a West Point classmate of General Nathan Twining, and was responsible "for the White Sands Proving Ground in New Mexico, not too far from the Roswell crash site." An expert in mathematics, and had been "chosen to head the very highly classified Armed Forces Special Weapons Center at Sandia Base, now Sandia National Laboratory, adjacent to Kirtland Air Force Base in Albuquerque in early July 1947.[54] Thus, Montague "was on the ground in a sensitive part of the country,"[55] indeed, in the very part of the country that some of the "saucers" appeared to have under regular surveillance.

But there is one final, very important point for our purposes to be observed about Montague: he was the commander of Fort Bliss in El Paso, Texas, the very "point of immigration" for many of the Nazi Paperclip scientists, including one very significant one who maintained his legal residence there during the Roswell Incident, as will be seen in Part Three. At this juncture, however, it is to be noted that Montague's presence on Majestic-12 hints at *some* sort of Nazi connection to the Roswell incident, howsoever tenuous it might be.

At this juncture, the Nazi scenario and its implications begin to take shape, and it is best to outline some of them here in order to see how a change of interpretive context can affect the way in which this particular Majic-12 document is perceived, *regardless of whether it is authentic or deliberate disinformation contrived by some "insider" to the project.*

Our first consideration is that there are several different *types* of the "Nazi Scenario" that must be mentioned:

1) *The "Paperclip" Scenario:* this version of the Nazi scenario maintains that *if* what crashed at Roswell *was* indeed Nazi, then it represented a continuation of some of the research projects begun by German scientists before or during the Second World War under American auspices after the war, as a part of some American black project. It is *this* scenario that is the only version of the Nazi

Scenario ever mentioned by ufologists in connection with the Roswell Incident, for it is very easily dismissible. For example, Friedman mentions that the crashed Roswell vehicle could *not* have been a Nazi Horten Flying Wing such as the Gotha-229, since the Horten Go-299's "construction is two layers of plywood with sawdust and carbon in between, which hardly matches the Roswell wreckage."[56] And he is *correct.* Additionally, like many other Roswell Incident researchers, Friedman correctly observes that if what crashed *did* come from any American black project, "appropriate personnel would have been seeking any 'lost' advanced vehicle by radar, on the ground, and by plane. This clearly was not the case at Roswell."[57] Finally, many Roswell researchers have pointed out that what crashed could not have been one of the many V-2 German missiles being launched in New Mexico, for two very simple reasons, namely, no such launches took place around the time of the Roswell Incident, and even if they did, any debris recovered would have been easily recognizable and would *not* have fit the descriptions of the debris given by Major Marcel and others. Finally, a crashed V-2 nosecone would have left a *crater* and only *one* primary crash site, not two. No craters have ever been described by any of the Roswell witnesses. So Friedman and those researchers are correct: whatever crashed at Roswell, it was *not* a German Horten Flying Wing or a V-2. *But to exhaust these possibilities is* ***not*** *to exhaust the Nazi Scenario.* [58] This brings us to the next scenario:

2) *The Independent Nazi Scenario:* This scenario posits that what crashed in Roswell *was* Nazi, but that it came not from any American, or for that matter, any Soviet project based on Nazi technology captured as war booty, but from *an independent postwar Nazi project.* The further implication of this version is the logical requirement that something about either the debris, the bodies, or both, were recognizable to the American military and that convinced them they were indeed dealing with such an independent Nazi project, and therefore, that they were dealing with *an organized and well-financed postwar extraterritorial Nazi organization that had*

access to a high technology that could enter our air space over our most sensitive installations with impunity. This would, indeed, have called forth a high-level top secret response from the American military, and would have also required a public relations effort to "spin" the story into acceptable interpretations, namely, weather balloons and, at a deeper level of misdirection and disinformation, extraterrestrials, for it would hardly do for the American military to admit to the American people that the old enemy was not only alive and well, but violating our airspace and reconnoitering our more secret defense installations! This version must account for the extraordinary properties of the Roswell debris, and the alleged writing or hieroglyphics found on some of it.

3) *The Combined Nazi-ET Scenario* would posit all the things present in the "Independent Nazi Scenario" but would include an extraterrestrial component, one indicating perhaps some collusion between the two. This version, however, would suffer from all the criticisms of the ordinary extraterrestrial interpretation of the Roswell Incident, namely, that none of the alleged characteristics alleged for the recovered Roswell bodies *compels* toward an extraterrestrial origin for them.

Given this outline, the second consideration to be borne in mind is how this context itself changes the interpretation of the Eisenhower Briefing Document, whether one considers it to be genuine, or considers it to be piece of disinformation contrived by someone on the inside. As we have seen, Friedman himself admits to this possibility, for if it was forged, it had to have been forged by someone with detailed inside information.

If genuine, then the document would point to some combination of the Paperclip and Combined Nazi-ET scenario, for General Montague's presence implies almost the same thing averred by Colonel Corso: there was *something* about Roswell that looked "too familiar." Another possibility is that if the document is genuine, and if the Independent Nazi Scenario is true, then the military is hiding the truth from Eisenhower himself. And in a certain way, this makes sense, for consider for the sake of argument: if it were discovered that there *was* a postwar Nazi organization with access to such technologies, and it moreover was violating American

airspace, it would be virtually impossible at that period of history, before spy-satellites blanketed the globe with space-based cameras, to determine where on earth it was coming from.

But how would one deal with the bodies mentioned in the document, and with the statements of their "human-like" appearance but "different evolutionary development?" For that matter, how would one deal with the document's statements that Dr. Donald Menzel maintained that the creatures came from outside the solar system?

Bluntly stated, the answer is very simple: *there is no evidence internal to the document that compels to the extraterrestrial conclusion; all that the document contains is mere assertion; there are no details given either of the technology or of the recovered that support or compel to this conclusion.* Add to this the fact that according to the document itself, the recovered craft was considered to be a short range reconnaissance craft. Here, it is to be noted carefully, the document *does* provide a corroborating detail, for it mentions the lack of "provisions" for food and waste disposal for a long range ship.

In other words, if genuine, the Eisenhower Briefing Document suffers from the same internal and dialectical contradiction of the Roswell Incident itself: it contains no detail about the bodies compelling to an extraterrestrial conclusion, and on the other hand, the document itself, by suggesting a short range "reconnaissance" function, subtly contradicts the conclusions of the document itself. If it be objected that "reconnaissance to us" and "reconnaissance to ET" might be two different things, this is an argument from silence, *for nothing whatsoever about the craft's capabilities is known from the document, and nothing about its performance capabilities is known from the original articulations of the Roswell Incident other than the properties of the debris, which contain no indication of those capabilities.* In short, any such argument is an argument from silence.

While this author personally thinks that the Eisenhower Briefing Document *is* a forgery, Friedman is absolutely correct, it is *not* a "simple hoax," for it contains too many details that only a very experienced forger would know, one, moreover, who most likely had *some* sort of intelligence connection to some group resembling the Majestic-12 Group. So how does it fare under interpretation as a disinformation exercise?

In my opinion, it holds up quite well as a disinformation exercise especially in the context of the Independent Nazi Scenario, for one the one hand, it gives the appearance of upholding an extraterrestrial interpretation for Roswell. Moreover, it corroborates the wider context that ufologists have long contended exists, namely, that some sort of super-secret government study group would have been formed in response to the UFO phenomenon, whether terrestrial or otherwise. Moreover, the *list* of members of the Majestic-12 group is entirely consistent with such a group if *either scenario is in view*.

But there, precisely, may lie the disinformation. For if the U.S. military realized in July 1947 that it had recovered something *Nazi* and from an independent extraterritorial Nazi organization, I submit that its response to that recovery *would have been identical:* the military would have hit the "panic" button, buried the truth in a multi-layered tapestry of disinformation (possibly including Roswell "extra-terrestrials"), and formed a top secret group composed of intelligence men, cryptographers, generals and admirals, not only to study what they recovered, find out where it came from, but moreover to form a plan of action about what to do about it. And very possibly they might have even kept the President of the United States himself, or the Roswell research community itself, "disinformed" of the truth.

In *this* interpretive context, General Montague's presence in the alleged Majestic-12 group — if one accepts the accuracy of the Briefing Document's membership list for the sake of argument — makes even more sense. As the commanding general of Fort Bliss and some of the sensitive defense and research installations in New Mexico, he ultimately would have been deeply involved with the Paperclip Nazis and their technologies. Indeed as we shall discover in Part Three, it is during this precise time frame of 1947 that the military began quietly *reinvestigating* its brain trust of Paperclip Nazi scientists, and that new counter-intelligence alarm bells began to be sounded regarding some of their activities. So a case can — and eventually will — be made that this interpretation makes sense in a wider historical context, a context seldom considered in any detail by Roswell researchers in their race to exclude extraordinary terrestrial possibilities. Indeed, if something from an independent Nazi project crashed in New Mexico that July of 1947, then the easy sanitizing of those scientists' pasts

that occurred under Paperclip auspices would have come up for immediate reexamination.

---

[1] Kevin D. Randle, *Case MJ-12: The True Story Behind the Government's UFO Conspiracies* (Harper Torchbooks, 2002), p. 259.

[2] Stanton T. Friedman, MSc., *Top Secret/Majic: Operation Majestic-12 and the United States Government's UFO Cover-up* (DaCapo Press, 2005), p. 20.

[3] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic*, p. 20.

[4] Ibid., p. 89.

[5] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic*, p. 91.

[6] Ibid., p. 161.

[7] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic*, pp. 161-162.

[8] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic*, p. 144.

[9] Ibid., p.145.

[10] Ibid., pp. 145-146.

[11] Ibid., p. 147.

[12] Ibid.

[13] Ibid., pp. 147-148.

[14] See Kevin D. Randle, *Case MJ-12*, p. 245. For those wishing to see just how large a flood of documents it is, visit the Woods' website at http://www.majesticdocuments.com/documents/pre1948.php.

[15] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic*, p. 61.

[16] Ibid.

[17] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic*, p. 23.

[18] Ibid.

[19] Ibid.

[20] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic*, p. 22.

[21] See Friedman's discussion of Menzel's debunking activities, and of Friedman's own encounters with Dr. Menzel, *Top Secret/Majic*, pp. 26-28.

[22] Ibid., p. 28.

[23] Ibid., pp. 28-29.

[24] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic*, pp. 30-31.

[25] Ibid., p. 31.

[26] Ibid.

[27] Ibid., p. 32.

[28] Ibid.

[29] Ibid.

[30] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic*, p. 39.

[31] Ibid., p. 40.

[32] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic*, p. 41.

[33] Ibid., p. 43.

[34] Ibid., p. 45.

[35] Ibid., p. 46.

[36] Ibid., p. 47.

[37] Ibid., p. 48.

[38] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic*, p. 50.

[39] Ibid., pp. 51- 53.

[40] Ibid., p. 48.

[41] Ibid., p. 47.

[42] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic*, p. 63.

[43] Ibid., p. 68.

[44] Cited in Friedman, pp. 87-88.

[45] Ibid., p. 91.

[46] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic*, p. 92.

[47] Ibid., p. 99. There are other associated problems with the document, including the fact that Robert Cutler was not even present in Washington when the document was prepared. Friedman ably resolves these difficulties by pointing out that Cutler had turned over the administration of his office to his assistant James Lay. (See pp. 99-100.)

[48] Ibid., p. 164.

[49] Friedman reproduces the entire Special Operations Manual as it came from Berliner's roll of film on pages 167-184 of *Top Secret/Majic*.

[50] Ibid., pp. 164-165.

[51] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic*,p. 158.

[52] Ibid., p. 159.

[53] Ibid.

[54] Ibid, p. 49.

[55] Ibid.

[56] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic*, p. 64.

[57] Ibid.

[58] As will be seen in part three, ufologist Nick Redfern has recently proposed a very *different* version of the Paperclip Nazi scenario, one that, predictably, was once again quickly dismissed by Roswell researchers.

10
Randle and the Case Against the Authenticity of the Majic-12 Documents

"If it is a hoax, why has the hoaxer not come forward to say Gotcha? He wasn't breaking the law and could really thumb his nose at ufologists. On balance, Randle has not achieved his purpose of disgracing the original MJ-12 documents. They would still seem to stand as the most important classified government documents ever leaked to the public."
Stanton T. Friedman[1]

No examination of the problematic of the Majic-12 documents would be complete without a review of Kevin D. Randle's study outlining the arguments *against* their authenticity, though as with our examination of Friedman's case *for* the authenticity of a limited number of them, our examination of Randle's arguments will necessarily have to be brief and synoptic.

One of the most interesting observations that Randle advances against the overall general authenticity of most of the Majic-12 documents is a rather basic and obvious one:

> I noticed immediately that they were on 8½-by-11-inch paper.
>
> This may not seem too significant to most, but in 1947 and continuing until the 1970s or later, the government used paper that was 8-by-10 inches.... (The Majic-12) documents gave no hint of being typed on the smaller paper, but because I was looking at photocopies,

made from photographs and sent anonymously, that observation had no significance.[2]

While it is difficult to ascertain why others sees “no significance” in the fact that the paper size of some of the documents is wrong, nonetheless it is important to note that Randle’s observation is true. In this author’s opinion, it is an important clue implying that the documents, whatever else they may be — whether simple “hoaxes” or more cleverly contrived “disinformation” — are not one hundred percent authentic. Randle’s observation implies that they are something *less* than that.

A. The Original Set of Majic-12 Documents

1. The Eisenhower Briefing Document

Randle’s, like Friedman’s, is concerned with more than mere general observations about the documents, but delves into significant difficulties that argue against their total authenticity, and like Friedman, he lays out his case on a document-by-document basis. The most important of these was, as was seen in the previous chapter, the Eisenhower Briefing Document, because it clearly states that bodies were recovered, and moreover states the alleged Majestic-12 Group had concluded that, while human-like in appearance, they were extraterrestrials. As was also seen, no details were provided in the document to corroborate that conclusion, nor were any details of the recovered technology provided to support that conclusion. Nonetheless, the question of the document’s authenticity or lack thereof is of premier importance for anyone investigating the Roswell Incident.

However, Randle, who clearly is neither a “UFO” nor a “Roswell debunker,” quickly zeroes in on numerous difficulties with the document that argue — in his opinion — persuasively against the document’s authenticity.

> Cracks in the reliability of the Eisenhower briefing, which included a letter, or memo, from Harry Truman authorizing the creation of MJ-12, began to appear almost immediately. The skeptical community

> screamed hoax from the very beginning. One of their arguments was that there was no provenance for the documents. That means that no one knows where the documents originated and no one could file any requests with any governmental agencies to acquire copies. Moore and Shandera received them in the mail without a good clue as to who sent the package or why it had been sent.[3]

As noted in the previous chapter, this meant that anyone arguing for or against authenticity could not do the sort of conventional documents analysis that would ordinarily be done in such circumstances; one could not check the actual paper of the document, nor inks on the rubber-stamped classification markings, nor anything of the sort. This left the internal evidence of the documents themselves.

Indeed, according to Randle, he questioned Friedman himself about the nagging problem of documentary provenance, and according to Randle, received the following curious reply from Friedman:

> Lack of provenance is bothersome, but understandable. Whoever filmed the (Eisenhower Briefing Document) and/or planted the (Cutler-Twining memo) was violating security by the filming and the release. Having a classified document is not against the law. Being an authorized recipient who leaks it to uncleared personnel is very much a violation. One might suggest that the lack of provenance is an indication of genuineness.[4]

This is a curious statement in the light of the quotation from Friedman cited as an epigraph at the beginning of this chapter, for if one were planting deliberate *disinformation* within the Roswell research community, the lack of anyone coming forward to say “Gotcha!” does *not* argue for the document’s one hundred percent authenticity. It argues only that the document could be either completely authentic, or disinformation containing a mixture of truths and falsehoods, for the last thing one would expect a disinformation agent to do would be to step forward and expose the hoax.

But for Randle, himself a former U.S. Air Force intelligence officer, there are other problems, and these stem from the Eisenhower Briefing

Document's very obvious violations of military protocols:

> For me, however, the "smoking gun" that proved the Eisenhower briefing a hoax was Roscoe Hillenkoetter's rank (as cited on that document, ed.) according to the proponents of MJ-12, Hillenkoetter was the man who prepared the briefing for Eisenhower. His name appears on the document, listing him as the briefing officer, and if MJ-12 is real and the documents authentic, there is no reason why Hillenkoetter wouldn't have been the briefing officer.
>
> In 1952, Hillenkoetter was not an admiral, but a rear admiral, the difference being the number of stars worn on the collar. An Admiral wears four and Hillenkoetter wore but two. This might seem to be a trivial point, but it is not. Contrary to what MJ-12 proponents will say, this is not a mistake that Hillenkoetter would have made, it is a serious violation of military protocol. It's not something that Dwight Eisenhower, one of the few men to achieve five-star rank, would ignore. It is the same as a captain claiming to be a lieutenant colonel, or a sergeant claiming to be an officer.[5]

Randle observes that it is true that in ordinary conversation with officers of flag or general rank that they are referred to simply as "admiral" or "general," but his argument — in this author's opinion — is telling, for

> it is not true that when putting their names on documents, they will not follow military protocol....
>
> This is a long-winded way of saying that Hillenkoetter would have listed himself as a rear admiral in the slot where the name of the briefing officer appears. It means that the document was not prepared by Hillenkoetter or anyone who worked for him, or by someone high in the government. It means, to me, that this document is fraudulent.[6]

Any such document prepared for the briefing of a president or president-elect would have been typed letter-perfect, with no errors of grammar, misspellings or typographical errors, much less sloppy listing of the ranks of any military officers who appeared in it, and especially for retired General of the Armies Dwight D. Eisenhower![7]

In the light of the above contextual problem — the preparation of a presidential briefing document containing errors of military protocol — there is another significant problem, according to Randle.

> One such error, which has been hotly debated, is the date on most of the MJ-12 documents. The Eisenhower briefing, for example, is dated "18 November, 1952"... The problem here is a mixture of civilian and military dating formats. The military format does not require the comma between the month and the year.[8]

In an effort to defend the Eisenhower Briefing Document's authenticity, Friedman, of course, produced examples of similar such "errors" in other military documents.

But this effort does not wash, according to Randle:

> Stan Friedman and Bill Moore, proponents of MJ-12, have both produced military documents that show the comma in the date where it didn't belong and the zero in the date where it didn't belong. But once again we have some subtle differences here. Many of these documents are from the British military, which makes them irrelevant because the British have a slightly different system. Or the documents are message traffic from teletype machines in which the zero is positional and therefore irrelevant. Or they are documents from NATO, which uses a still different system and is filled with military officers from allied countries, not all from the United States, and are therefore irrelevant.
>
> In other words, Friedman and Moore are arguing apples and oranges, but neither seems to be aware of the difference. They just don't address them. Rather, they attack the messenger because they don't understand the variations in usage or how these things work inside the American military establishment.[9]

Randle's point here, when considered in and of itself, appears to be nitpicking, for one can imagine a variety of circumstances under which dating formats might have been forgotten, or mistaken. But, in the context of the lack of the observation of proper military protocol in what purports to

be a presidential briefing document — for a former five-star general no less! — it becomes much more important. It is yet another clue that the document is not genuine.

In fact, other researchers noticed that "the mistakes in the MJ-12 documents were unique to those documents, which suggests they are fraudulent."[10] According to Randle, Friedman responded to this criticism not by attempting "to refute the data. Instead, he suggests that we ignore it because it comes from men associated with CSICOP."[11] Of course, this is a case of "ignore the message" because of the messenger bearing it.

As was also seen in the previous chapter, the Eisenhower Briefing Document states that there were also annexes or "Attachments" to the document, labeled in alphabetical order from A through H. But only one of these, Attachment "A" was actually "leaked" with the main document itself. This attachment, as was seen, purported to be a memo from President Truman to Secretary of Defense James Forrestal. But this attachment had its own special problems. Randle cites Barry Greenwood, an editor of the magazine *Just Cause*, for Greenwood discovered something significant arguing against the attachment's authenticity:

> Page 2 of the Briefing Paper refers to the formation of MJ-12 by special classified executive order of President Truman on 24 September, 1947... We have checked the Truman Library's listing of executive orders and found that no orders were issued on 9/24. Executive order numbers 9891-9896 were issued respectively on 9/15, two on 9/20, 9/23, 9/30 and 10/2/47, none even closely resembling the MJ-12 subject. There is no gap in the number sequence for these dates so none are missing. Further, the number quoted in Attachment "A" of the Briefing Paper, #092447... is not an executive order number but the date of President Truman's memo, 9/24/47. Executive orders are not numbered by date but are numbered sequentially, and at the time the numbers were only four digits.[12]

This was another telling clue arguing against authenticity, for the numbering format of the so-called "executive order" was simply nowhere close to the actual filling system used for such orders.

Against this argument, Randle states that Friedman responded that the "Truman memo was a special classified executive order that wouldn't be found with the unclassified and regular executive orders."[13] As such it would have been subject to "special handling because of its high classification."[14] However, there was a problem with this argument as well, for while

> That seems to be logical thinking on Friedman's part and is consistent with the rules and regulations in effect at the time the briefing was prepared,

it nevertheless falls short. Indeed,

> had MJ-12 been a legitimate executive order, it would have fallen into the numerical sequence, even if it was highly classified. A paper, titled, "Congressional Research Service, the Library of Congress on Government Operations, March 17, 1987," states that "during the past 70 years, some 40 confidential or security executive orders have been occasionally issued. These were not published, but *they were accounted for in the numbering system.*"[15]

Of course, Friedman was not about to let this pass either, and his response initiated another exchange of broadsides and salvos between the two researchers:

> Friedman, however, is now saying, "It is not labeled [sic et passim] as a presidential Executive Order... Would everybody please read the short, Sept. 24, 1947, memo again? It is not labeled Special Classified Executive Order. It has no number on it... I repeat it is false to say it is listed as Executive Order #.... It is false to say it is labeled as SCEO# or anything else."

But Randle's response indicates either that Friedman forgot to load the cannons with shells, and was firing off mere powder with lots of smoke and

thunder but no ammunition, or that the salvo was improperly aimed, or both:

> ...(The) Eisenhower briefing had a listing of the attachments, only one of which was forwarded. Attachment A contains, according to the briefing itself, "Special Classified Executive Order #092447."
>
> So, once again we have something that does not match the proper format or regulations that were in force in 1947. It could be suggested, and has been, that the Roswell crash and recovery was a unique event, so the paperwork surrounding it would be unique, but that doesn't wash. Even for an event of this magnitude, the simple regulations surrounding the creation of executive orders, would have been followed, because there would be no reason not to. Yet these regulations all seem to have been ignored in this case. This should raise additional red flags.[16]

In this author's opinion, Randle's arguments are persuasive at least of the point that the Eisenhower Briefing Document cannot be taken as simply a one hundred percent genuine document, and therefore, any evidentiary value of its internal statements and assertions must be evaluated carefully, and in connection to the external evidence that researchers of the Roswell Incident itself have uncovered.

Randle's conclusions, however, are much more pointed and much more exclusive:

> What we have, in the Eisenhower briefing and the Truman memo, are documents that do not conform to the styles used in the proper time frames. We find a number of problems, from Hillenkoetter's rank being wrong to the very technical details for issuing an executive order, which are also wrong. All this is suggestive of mistakes and that the documents are frauds.[17]

Consequently, for Randle, the Eisenhower Briefing Document was a hoax, plain and simple.

2. The Cutler Twining Memo

Another component of the “Original Set” of Majic-12 documents was the so-called Cutler-Twining memorandum, which summoned General Nathan Twining to the White House for a special top secret meeting with President Eisenhower. This, it will be recalled, was discovered by Jamie Shandera while he and fellow Roswell researcher Bill Moore were researching in the National Archives. The memorandum was typed on onionskin paper, and was found sandwiched between folders in a box of records. As was seen from the previous chapter, Moore’s research indicated that the watermark on the paper was indeed authentic for the period, and was found on bid lots of stationary that were purchased from the Fox Paper company in Wisconsin during that period.

But, as Randle observes, there are problems with the Cutler-Twining memorandum as well:

> The problem with the memo, though it had been found at the National Archives, and in a box that was among the boxes of recently declassified material, was that it didn’t belong there. There was no record of the memo being in that box before it was examined by Shandera and Moore. It hadn’t been discovered by the review conducted by the Air Force officers as part of the declassification of the other material in the box, and if it was authentic, it should have been removed from the box for a declassification review by the (National Security Council).

There was a further problem:

> We could take the argument even deeper, but there seems no reason to do so. The National Archives, where the memo was found, made it clear that their certification of a copied document merely means that it is an accurate copy of a document in their possession, and not that the document itself is genuine. To provide the Cutler-Twining memo with that sort of pseudo-pedigree might be the reason it was planted there in the first place, and all parties seem to agree that it was planted.

In other words, Randle believes the document was planted and that since the Air Force itself had no record of the document during its declassification review of the materials in the box in which it was found, that it is most likely therefore another fraudulent document and a deliberately planted one at that.

B. The Cooper-Cantwheel Documents

But what of the *other* set of documents, the so-called "Cooper-Cantwheel" documents? As we saw in the previous chapter, these were almost too good to be true and were so "perfect" that even Friedman was skeptical of all but a few of them. Like all the other Majic-12 documents, the primary problem was their provenance.[19] But one did not have to look very far nor very long to find other problems. Not the least of these was the fact that some of the Cooper-Cantwheel documents could be traced to genuine "donor documents," whose diction and formatting the leaker of the "Cooper-Cantwheel" set simply used as a model to concoct his forgeries, changing the appropriate words here and there to come up with a legitimate-looking "top secret" UFO document.[20]

But an even bigger problem was noticed by the famous British ufologist Timothy Good.

> (Good) at one time believed MJ-12 to be a real committee and believed the early documents, at least, to be authentic, (and) had received a number of letters from Tim Cooper. On October 4 and October 7, 1991, Cooper wrote to Good. Later when Good obtained a copy of the 4th Annual MJ-12 Report," he noticed a number of similarities between that document and the letters he'd received from Cooper. Specifically, Good said that the uppercase G, N, and the number 8 were slightly elevated in relation to other letters on the typewritten lines.
>
> Robert Wood noted these and suggested that it was the result of a typist who hadn't pushed the shift bar fully when striking the letter. That resulted in the capital letter being raised slightly above the rest of the text. Of course, other capital letters should have shown the same

> thing, unless the problem was with those specific letters on Cooper's typewriter. And the shift bar is not used when typing a number. That means the problem was a mechanical flaw in the typewriter, and could be considered a "fingerprint" of that particular machine.[21]

In other words, Cooper himself appeared to be the origin of what were now considered by most within the ufology community to be completely fabricated documents!

The worst problem was that Drs. Robert and Ryan Wood — whose "Cooper-Cantwheel" documents shall be examined more closely in Part Three — had arranged for a polygraph examination for Timothy Cooper hismelf, and the results were not, to say the least, favorable, for according to the Woods, they "showed deception in some of his answers," a result which surprised the Woods. Nevertheless, they concluded that this was because "of his continuing desire to protect the identity of two sources that he refuses to identify."[22]

For Randle, the Cooper-Cantwheel chapter of the Majic-12 documents episode becomes almost an icon for the whole affair:

> The lie detector test Tim Cooper failed should raise a red flag. The fact that Cantwheel is unavailable for interview should raise a red flag. The fact that some of the documents appear to have been typed on Cooper's typewriter should raise a red flag. That some of these documents are retyped versions of other, authentic documents should raise some red flags. The fact that we can trace documents only to Cooper, or Moore and Shandera, and no further, should raise a red flag.[23]

But for Randle, the entire Majic-12 episode raised not only red flags, but even more disturbing possibilities.

C. Friedman's Replies, and a Methodological Assumption

In the previous chapters I have already alluded to the fact that the three principal Roswell Incident investigators — in its second and third

articulations — namely Charles Berlitz, William (Bill) Moore, and Stanton T. Friedman, are either strongly suspected of having connections to American intelligence (Berlitz), or have self-admitted to involvement in the American military's black projects from the 1950s and early 1960s (Friedman), or have confessed to the ufology investigative community that they allowed themselves to be used by the U.S. military-intelligence complex as disinformation agents in return for access to genuine classified UDFO information (Moore). And in Randle's case, we have yet again another prominent ufologist and Roswell researcher who himself is a former Air Force intelligence officer.

All this, of course, suggests the possibility that the entire Majic-12 operation may very well have been a disinformation operation, and that the documents themselves were planted by the researchers to whom they were allegedly leaked. Randle clearly suggests this very possibility:

> Those who believe that MJ-12 is authentic often point out that to fake these documents, the forger would need a great deal of complex historical knowledge. It wouldn't be something that someone on the outside could do. This was an argument for the creation being the work of insiders.[24]

Indeed, we have already seen from the previous chapter that Friedman himself made precisely this point. But if one grants that point for the sake of argument, then that very same point means the documents are neither complete hoaxes, nor are they "plain straight legitimate," to use Friedman's apt phrase. It means that the probable truth lies somewhere in between those two very dialectical poles.

But Randle goes further, clearly implying that Friedman himself may have been involved in "leaking" the original Eisenhower Briefing Document:

> In the past I argued that Stan Friedman suggested that he and Bill Moore did have this knowledge. In *The Roswell report*, edited by George M. Eberhart for the Center for UFO Studies and published in 1991, Friedman wrote: "The simple fact of the matter is that Moore, Shandera, and I had already picked up on all the names of the

(Eisenhower Briefing Document's) list prior to the receipt of the film (except for Dr. Donald Menzel) as a result of the many days spent in historical archival research that began a decade ago because of the Roswell incident.... We had noted who was where in early July 1947 when the Roswell incident occurred..."

But Friedman's research, along with that of Moore, was even more in-depth. Karl Pflock, in his column Pflock Ptalk," published in Jim Moseley's semiserious and periodically published *Saucer Smear*, wrote: In 1976, ufologist Brad Sparks discovered Menzel had a UFO sighting near Alamogordo, New Mexico, when he was in the area in 1949... Then in 1977, Sparks circulated a paper on Menzel, his presence in New Mexico in the 1940s, and his sighting and his distortions and outright attempts to suppress it."

Pflock noted that one of Sparks' readers was Friedman, showing that Friedman was aware of Menzel's Ufological history. That Friedman knew about this is important.[25]

What Randle is suggesting is that Friedman's knowledge of Menzel's UFO sighting is important because Friedman clearly knew that there was more to Menzel than merely being a debunker, and knew this long *before* the Eisenhower Briefing Document's list of Majestic-12 members was ever "leaked" to Jaimie Shandera. Thus, Randle is suggesting that Friedman's claims to have found Menzel's presence on the Eisenhower Briefing Document's list of Majestic-12 members a little curious, is a bit disingenuous on Friedman's part. And that implies that Friedman himself could have been one of those "insiders" with the specialized knowledge to concoct such a document.

However, there is one significant fact that argues strongly against Friedman's involvement in any such nefarious activity, and it is one that Friedman himself has never brought up, nor is ever likely to do. As was seen in the previous chapter, one of those alleged members on the Eisenhower Briefing Document's list of Majestic-12 Group members was General Montague, the commanding general of Fort Bliss, Texas, home to many if not most of the Paperclip Nazis of Nazi rocket expert Werner Von Braun's rocket team, one of whom — as will be seen in Part Three — was involved in a whole lot more than mere rockets in Nazi Germany!

But why is this important? It is important because as we also saw from previous chapters in general, and in particular Friedman's own examination of the Eisenhower Briefing Document in the immediately previous chapter, Friedman has never considered any version of the Nazi scenario of Roswell other than the first, and weakest, "Paperclip" version of it, and he has rightly and for sound reasons dismissed it. Why then would Friedman draw attention to *other* possible and much stronger versions of that Nazi Scenario by including the name of the very commanding general of Fort Bliss, and thereby invite the inevitable scrutiny on these men and some of their wartime activities for the Third Reich, activities which in turn are a potential threat to the very extraterrestrial interpretation of the Roswell Incident that he himself advocates?

It thus appears that, in the end, if one wishes to pursue this type of *ad hominem* thinking to its inevitable and ultimate logical *reductio*, one would have to cast a pall of suspicion not only over the research of Friedman, but of Randle, Moore, and Berlitz themselves, and, not stopping there, would have to cast a pall of suspicion over the original "flying saucer" press release of First Lieutenant Walter Haut of the 509th Bomb Group itself, and as well over that of the U.S. Army Air Force's subsequent weather balloon story itself, since all of these various articulations of the Roswell Incident come from people with their own obvious and self-admitted connections either to military intelligence or military black projects.

Such a methodology is, of course, doomed to failure, since nothing whatsoever could be taken as a given, and everything would be up for construction and interpretation. Finally, such a method — at least for this author — simply has no basis in fact, since having met only *one* of these Roswell researchers, and then only briefly at that, he has no reason to malign or impugn the motivations or character of any of them. Such tactics are also unfair, for they unfairly force someone accused of such activity — in this case Mr. Friedman — into the lamentable situation where they are required to prove a negative, namely, that they were *not* involved in such activity.

In this author's opinion, in the end *both* Friedman *and* Randle are correct. Randle is correct because there are too many errors of protocol and detail for the documents in general, and for the Eisenhower Briefing Document in

particular, to be “plain straight legitimate” (to employ Friedman’s phrase once again). But by the same token, Friedman is also correct; the documents display far too much detailed information for their contents to be simply and cavalierly dismissed. The details betoken an origin from someone or some group with intimate “inside” knowledge.

As such, for purposes of this study, we conclude for the sake of argument that the documents are instruments of deliberate disinformation; they are neither “plain straight legitimate” nor are the “pure hoaxes,” but they contain a mixture of truth and falsehood. The questions now are: if some of them are instruments of deliberate information, then what is the nucleus of truth in them, what is the context of untruth in them, and for whom is the disinformation intended, and why?

As instruments of disinformation, they are subject to construction and interpretation, *from their internal statements alone*, and just as the pro-extraterrestrial interpretation can be construed from them in

conjunction with a comparison to the external evidences presented by Roswell Incident researchers, so too can a purely terrestrial and, indeed, Nazi Scenario interpretation be construed from them.

Our survey of the articulations of the Roswell Incident has thus drawn to a close, and the actual task of arguing the Nazi Scenario itself now begins. All the pieces and players are in position. As has been suggested immediately above, any construction of the Majic-12 documents along those interpretive lines will depend on the very same external dataset — the debris and the bodies — that were used to argue the extraterrestrial interpretation of the Incident.

So, to the Nazi Scenario, we now, finally, turn.

---

[1] Stanton T. Friedman, “Review of Kevin Randle’s “Case MJ-12,” www.stantonfriedman.com.

[2] Kevin D. Randle, *Case MJ-12: The True Story behind the Government’s UFO Conspiracies* (HarperTorch, 2002), p. 167.

[3] Randle, *Case MJ-12*, p. 170.

[4] Randle, *Case MJ-12*, pp. 170-171.

[5] Randle, *Case MJ-12*, p. 172.

[6] Ibid.

[7] Ibid., p. 173.

[8] Ibid.

[9] Randle, *Case MJ-12*, pp. 174-175.

[10] Ibid., p. 176.

[11] Ibid. CSICOP stands for The Committee for the Scientific Investigation of Claims Of the Paranormal.

[12] Randle, *Case MJ-12*, pp. 176-177, citing Barry Greenwood(no specific references given).

[13] Ibid., p. 178.

[14] Ibid.

[15] Ibid., p. 178, Randle's emphasis.

[16] Randle, *Case MJ-12*, pp. 180-181.

[17] Randle, *Case MJ-12*, p. 181.

[18] Randle, *case MJ-12*, p. 188.

[19] Ibid., p. 252.

[20] Ibid., pp. 240-241.

[21] Randle, *Case MJ-12*, pp. 252-253.

[22] Ibid., p. 255, citing Robert and Ryan Wood, no specific reference given by Randle.

[23] Ibid., p. 273.

[24] Randle, *Case MJ-12*, pp. 200-201.

[25] Randle, *Case MJ-12*, p. 201.

Part Three:
Roswell and the Reich:
The Nazi International, Paperclip,
and the Wider Context

"*Unfortunately, the simple truth is that, for the most part, UFO research has done a leap-frog to the extraterrestrial explanation without ever adequately exploring and exhausting a terrestrial origin.*"
Henry Stevens,
Hitler's Flying Saucers, p. 1.

"*We must remember that absence of evidence is NOT evidence for absence.*"
Stanton T. Friedman,
"Review of Kevin Randle's 'Case MJ-12'",
www.stantonfriedman.com

11
Conclusions and Analysis to Parts One and Two

"One by one I learned that they hadn't seen alien bodies and their stories, while
quite exciting, were not based in reality.
"That seemed to set the investigation back to its original point, meaning we had
only the testimony of those who had seen the strange metallic debris, who had
walked the Debris Field on the Foster Ranch, or had seen something in the air
that might have been the craft just prior to the crash."
Kevin Randle[1]

Our survey of the articulations of the Roswell Incident has thus drawn to a close, and the actual task of arguing the Nazi Scenario itself now begins. All the pieces and players are in position. And as has been suggested in Part Two, any construction of the Majic-12 documents along those interpretive lines will depend on the very same external dataset — the debris, and the bodies — that were used to argue the extraterrestrial interpretation of the Incident.

And so to the Nazi Scenario we now finally turn. In order to see how that scenario fits so snuggly with the basic facts of the Roswell Incident, however, it is now necessary to summarize the evidence and arguments of the preceding chapters, to offer a preliminary analysis, and to state our basic methodological assumptions in arguing the Nazi scenario of the Incident.

A. Summary

As is by now abundantly evident, the story of the Roswell Incident has been told in several discrete and distinct "articulations," and it is to be noted that the *earliest* articulations concern themselves *only* with the recovery of a technology, *not* with the recovery of *any* bodies — terrestrial or otherwise — of the crew. Additionally, those first articulations of the Incident and of the technology recovered alternate between two dialectical polarities, one emphasizing the recovery of something extraordinary and exotic, and the other emphasizing the recovery of something purely mundane and, in a word, unexciting. Moreover, as is by now apparent, many of those witnesses claiming to have seen bodies of some sort are either impeached witnesses, or in many cases, "witnesses" who are now dead, and whose stories are told by second-hand sources who in turn have often impeached their own credibility by varying their accounts, often in significant ways. In fact, *the most consistent feature of the Roswell Incident throughout all its articulations is that the recovered debris possessed extraordinary properties, and that its recovery initiated extraordinary efforts on the part of the military to cover-up what it had recovered and to obfuscate the details of that recovery down to contemporary times.*

1. Two Datasets:

There are consequently two datasets that any theory of the Roswell Incident must seek to rationalize: (1) the debris, the description of which is consistent across time and various witnesses as has been seen in the previous pages, and (2) the bodies, the description of which is *not* consistent over time nor over several witnesses in spite of claims to the contrary, and moreover whose witnesses have in turn either been impeached, or shown to be based upon second-hand-and-dead man's testimony in many instances, or whom other data has revealed were unlikely to have been in the area in order actually to *see* such bodies.

For example, in the case of the allegation that Grady Barnett saw both the crashed disc and dead bodies, Randle and Schmitt showed that information from his wife's diary indicated that this was unlikely.[2] On the other hand, in the case of the mortician Glenn Dennis, for many years considered the "star

witness”[3] for the claim of recovered dead extraterrestrial bodies, that witness impeached himself by admitting to having lied to Roswell researchers. In the cases of Frank Kaufmann, Gerald Anderson, and Jim Ragsdale, those witnesses’ stories were shown to contain so many internal inconsistencies that the researchers who initially located them no longer stand behind their testimony. For example, Randle no longer stands behind Frank Kaufmann or Jim Ragsdale or Glenn Dennis,[4] and Berliner and Friedman no longer accredit Anderson.[5]

2. The Witnesses for the Bodies and the Alleged “Consistency” of Their Descriptions

The fundamental problem with witness descriptions of the bodies may be more fully understood by an examination of the following table. In the first column is the witness’ name, in the second, his or her status(i.e., is the testimony first-hand, second-hand, is the witness impeached, or not credible on other grounds?), and in the third column is a brief summary of the description they gave of the recovered bodies.

Table 1: Witness Descriptions of the Bodies and the Status of that Witness

WITNESS NAME	WITNESS STATUS	BODIES CHARACTERISTICS
Glenn Dennis	Impeached himself by admitting he lied to Roswell researchers; no longer accepted by the general Roswell research community as credible. Additionally, Dennis claimed he based his story on what an anonymous nurse friend told him, whom he later stated had perished in an aircraft accident, thus making his testimony second-hand and dead man's testimony.(See p. 122)	Bodies exhibited the following features: 1) Foul odor (due to decomposing in the elements for about a week?) 2) Four-fingered hands with no thumbs or fingernails 3) Fingers more like tentacles 4) Suction-cup-like structures on the ends of the "fingers" 5) Looked like "ancient Chinese" 6) Fragile and small 7) No hair 8) Noses did not protrude 9) Ears were "little indentations" 10) Eyes set deep in the heads 11) Upper arms longer than lower arms(See pp. 76-77) 12) Thin mouth 13) Large head and brittle bones.

Glenn Dennis, contin.		14) "Rawhide" in place of teeth(See pp. 121-122)
Grady Barnett/ Vern and Jean Maltais	Second-hand and dead man's testimony related by Vern and Jean Maltais.(See p. 38) Randle and Schmitt uncovered Ruth Barnett's diary which gave no indication of her husband's presence at the crash site alleged by Friedman and Berliner (See pp. 103-107)	Bodies were: 1) "Dead but not human" (See p. 39) 2) Round heads 3) Small eyes 4) No hair 5) Small stature 6) Heads larger in proportion to the body than a normal human's. (See p. 39)
Gerald Anderson	Witness no longer credited by Randle, Schmitt, or Friedman due to possible falsification of uncle's diary allegedly describing encounter with crashed disc and "aliens" (See pp., 82-83, 103-107)	Described: 1) Three dead and one living "creature" 2) Small stature 3) Attempts made to communicate with the living "creature" in German and Spanish! 4) Wearing "uniforms", but no specific details are given by Anderson 5) No other significant physiological details given by Anderson (See pp. 79-83)
Jim Ragsdale	Primary first-hand witness. no longer credited however for having changed his story several times, including claiming to have recovered "golden helmets" from the dead crew of the craft. (See p. 152)	Describes bodies as: 1) "Only four to five feet long" 2) "They looked like midgets" (See p. 119)

Frankie Rowe/Dan Dwyer	Second-hand and dead man's testimony related by his daughter, Frankie Rowe. Her story is in dispute and questioned by some because of internal inconsistencies (See pp. 152-153)	Bodies described only as: 1) "Not human beings" 2) Adults "about the size of a ten-year-old child" 3) No hair 4) Saw two "body bags" and one individual "walking" (See p. 106)
Anne Robbins/ Sgt. Ernest Robert Robbins	Second-hand and dead man's testimony related by his wife. Sgt. Robbins was a tech sergeant on the Roswell air base (See p. 197).	1) Described seeing "three beings" and used the word "people" when referring to them. 2) Saw one dead and two alive. 3) Pear-shaped heads 4) Large black eyes 5) Brown Skin 6) No nose 7) No mouth (See pp. 197-198)
Anna Willmon	Primary and first-hand witness, but elderly and having some memory problems (See p. 199)	Described seeing: 1) Two dead bodies 2) Small stature: about as large as a five-year-old child 3) Short arms 4) Human-like feet 5) Grayish-brown skin like "burnt rubber" 6) Wore "green shorts and nothing else" (See pp. 199-200)
Johhny McBoyle/ Lydia Sleppy	Second-hand and dead man's testimony. Her story is in dispute because of technical details in her story regarding the teletype machine (See pp. 145-146)	According to Sleppy, McBoyle simply described the "aliens" as "the little men" that were "on board" the Roswell craft. Beyond this, he gave no detailed description of them (See p. 12)

Sgt. Melvin Brown/ Beverly Bean	Sgt Brown was indeed assigned to the 509th bomb group at Roswell air base. His story was related by his daughter Beverly Bean. Bean, however, changed her story at least three different times, and hence her testimony is strongly disputed if not discounted (see pp. 146-149).	According to Bean, her father described the aliens as 1) Having yellowish-orange skin 2) Skin was also beaded and leathery like a lizard (See p. 115)
"Pappy" Henderson/ Sappho Henderson	Henderson himself was also assigned to the 509th bomb group at Roswell as a pilot. His wife related the major details of his story. The Testimony is thus second-hand and dead-man's testimony (See pp. 116-118).	Henderson's friends state that he described the bodies only as "Kinda little guys." (See p. 118)
Mac Brazel/ Frank Joyce	Mac Brazel is one of the primary Roswell witnesses, but his statements about bodies is second-hand and dead-man's testimony related by Roswell radio station board man Frank Joyce. Joyce claims he gave Brazel a second interview during which Brazel made reference to bodies. (See pp. 90, 108-109)	According to Joyce, Brazel would state only that the bodies were "not green." Brazel also called them "unfortunate little creatures" that were "not monkeys" and "not human" but gave no detailed descriptions supporting this view. Joyce also indicated he thought Brazel was under some kind of pressure (See pp. 90-108-109).

"Dr. Weisberg"	Not a primary witness, but presented by Berlitz and Moore as offering wider corroborative contextual evidence (See p. 47). The story is moreover second-hand testimony since relayed by Reilly Crabb (see p. 46). There is no provenance connecting the bodies or debris recounted by Weisberg to the Roswell Incident.	Weiseberg claimed that an autopsy performed on a body recovered in a recovered craft showed only "that it resembled a normal human body except in size."(See p. 47)
Baron Nicholas Von Poppen	Not a primary witness, but presented by Berlitz and Moore as offering wider corroborative contextual evidence (See p. 48). Von Poppen's story was related by Gray Barker and is hence second-hand testimony.	Von Poppen stated that there were four bodies described as follows: 1) Extremely thin 2) From 2 to 4 feet in height 3) Human-like hands with five digits, "normal-looking joints, and neatly trimmed nails" 4) Hands were soft, like children's hands (See p. 49)
Norma Gardner	Not a primary witness, but presented by Berlitz and Moore as offering wider corroborative contextual evidence (See p.50). Gardner allegedly worked at Wright-Patterson Field in Dayton, doing top secret work on a UFO project in which she claims to have seen paperwork describing dead bodies (See p. 50). There is no provenance connecting	Gardner described the bodies as: 1) Between 4 and 5 feet in height 2) with "generally human-like features" 3) Heads large in proportion to the bodies 4) Slanted eyes (See p. 50)

Norma Gardner, contin.	the bodies or debris recounted by Gardner to the Roswell Incident, save that she maintains that the disc may have been brought down by Air Force action against it.	
Lt. Governor (later U.S. Senator) Joseph Montoya/ Reuben Anaya	Story related by Montoya's friend Reuben Anaya and therefore second-hand and dead-man's testimony. Story is strongly disputed because there is no record that Lt. Governor Montoya was out of the state capital of Santa Fe nor do Roswell Air base records indicate any visit by Montoya during the time in question (See p. 146).	Montoya described: 1) "four little men" one of whom was alive 2) Four long, thin fingers "from what he could see" 3) Bald 4) Larger-than-normal eyes (See pp. 123-124)
1st Lt. Walter Haut's post-mortem affidavit	Primary participant in the Roswell Incident. According to his post-mortem affidavit he claimed to have seen a glimpse of the bodies (See p. 128). The trustworthiness of the affidavit is under serious scrutiny as it is now admitted that he did not write it himself, but that it was written for him. The circumstances under which he signed it are not known (See p. 132)	Haut's affidavit describes only 1) large heads 2) body size of a 10-year old child (See p. 129).

Despite the claims of some Roswell researchers that the witnesses' descriptions of the dead "aliens" is consistent,[6] what the above table reveals is a list of characteristics that is not only remarkably *inconsistent* in its details, but that inconsistency is magnified by the fact that there is no agreed-upon number of the recovered bodies. Additionally, the table also reveals how much of the testimony concerning the dead bodies is in fact second-hand and dead man's testimony, and much of that from witnesses now discredited by many within the Roswell research community.

But the table reveals something else, and something very significant. If one discounts the stories of Beverly Bean and her father, Sergeant Melvin Brown, and that of Glenn Dennis, and if one allows the testimony of all the others to stand for the sake of argument, then the list of the remaining characteristics of the "extraterrestrials" is very revealing when all the details are compiled together, for what is described are beings with:

1) Large heads, out of proportion to the rest of the body;
2) Small stature, that of "ten-year-old" children and between four and five feet in height;
3) Eyes that are slanted, larger-than-normal, or possessing some other peculiarity;
4) four or five fingers;
5) "human like hands and feet" with normal joints and digits;
6) Small mouths, noses, and ears, or in one case, no mouth or nose;
7) In the case of Mac Brazel there is the mere assertion, made under pressure, that the beings "were not monkeys," "were not human," and "were not green," but no corroborating detail is given to support this conclusion. And in the case of the Eisenhower Briefing Document examined in Part Two, the extraterrestrial conclusion is offered in the document, but again without any supporting or corroborating details.

Viewed in this way, one must ask those researchers favoring the extraterrestrial interpretation of the Roswell Incident the following question: what specific detail in this list compels to the conclusion that the bodies — if any were indeed recovered at all — were extraterrestrial? We shall see that this list is capable of wholly terrestrial explanations and rationalizations.

3. The State of the Story of the Roswell Incident: The Basic Facts and Randle's and Korff's Conclusions

The table also illuminates the state of the Roswell Incident story after all its articulations, for if one grants the remaining witnesses' accounts of the

bodies, then what Roswell Incident involves is:

1) The recovery of some extraordinary debris;
2) The recovery of very human-sounding and ordinary bodies; and,
3) A reaction and cover-up by the military suggesting a sense of urgency and perhaps anxiety about the incident, and an ongoing cover-up and obfuscated story that, as was seen, may have involved disinformation in its very first articulation, namely, the army's press release claiming it had recovered a flying saucer;
4) This cover-up included two officially promulgated balloon theories — the initial weather balloon story offered by brigadier general Roger Ramey and the later 1994 Air Force Mogul Balloon theory — which fail to take adequate account of the "memory metal" characteristics of the debris, and of its extraordinary strength.

If one *discounts* the detail of the recovery of bodies that was added in later articulations of the story and by witnesses whose stories are related via second-hand testimony or whose stories are in dispute, then one ends with the original first articulation of the Incident, with the recovery of extraordinary debris and a military operation to recover it and keep it covered-up long afterward. The Roswell Incident has thus ended where it began, with its first articulation. One is left to explain why the U.S. Army Air Force would react with such urgency to the crash and recovery of what is evidently rather extraordinary technology and — if the bodies are admitted — some very ordinary and human-sounding bodies.

4. The Methodology of Proponents of the Extraterrestrial Interpretation

These considerations now illuminate the deep methodological flaws in the arguments of many of those advocating the extraterrestrial interpretation of the Roswell Incident. As was seen, the tendency amongst those advocating that interpretation is to argue that the "bodies interpret the debris," and to maintain that the descriptions of those bodies are so extraordinary as to argue persuasively for the conclusion that what was crashed and recovered was of extraterrestrial origin and interplanetary capability.

However, in point of fact, and as is now evident, when one discounts the dubious testimony of the two witnesses who provide the most sensational and bizarre details for the recovered bodies, namely Glenn Dennis and Sergeant Melvin Brown via his daughter Beverly Bean's ever-shifting story, then what remains is the exact *opposite* of what those researchers are advocating, for it is the *debris* that is *extraordinary* and the *bodies* that are *ordinary!* Hence, if one were to follow their own methodology and argue that the "bodies" form the interpretive context for the debris, one would have to conclude that the debris, while extraordinary, is terrestrial. We are left, once again, with something extraordinary that is no mere balloon, that is quite human, and that must be covered-up at all costs, either because of the extraordinary nature of its technology, or for some other reason, or both. It follows from this observation that something about the debris was extraordinary not only in terms of its implied technology but possibly its origin as well, and that one, or the other, or both were factors motivating the military to its sense of urgency and to continue a cover-up to our own day. (After all, if the Mogul Balloon theory fails to account for all the debris properties adequately — as it most certainly does — then this means a cover-up is still in force).

5. The Dialectic of Roswell

These considerations in turn recall the peculiar "dialectic of Roswell" that was referred to in Part One. Throughout our survey of the Roswell research community's own writings, a peculiar dialectic of oppositions was observed in the interpretations offered for the incident. On the one hand, there is the pro-extraterrestrial pole of the dialectic — amply demonstrated in the approach of Randle and Schmitt — that argues that the Incident was so extraordinary it had to be extraterrestrial, while on the other side, any case arguing for a terrestrial interpretation trivializes the Incident into, as they put it, the merely "mundane."

And this dialectical polarity was present in the Incident *from its first articulation*, since the military itself proffered both an extraordinary interpretation that implied an extraterrestrial basis, and a merely mundane and ordinary one. And that dialectic persisted in the work of Colonel Corso,

often manifesting both poles within the very same context and in juxtaposed statements! What has been carefully excluded by both “believer” and “skeptic” in all articulations of the Roswell Incident examined thus far, and therefore, what has never been adequately investigated, is the possibility of an extraordinary but terrestrial explanation for the Incident.

6. The Roswell Dialectic and the Principal Researchers

Nothing discloses the peculiarity of this dialectic *nor the consistency of its pattern* better than an examination of the backgrounds of the principal Roswell researchers themselves. A table will once again assist in exhibiting the consistency of this dialectical pattern, and who may ultimately be behind it:

Table of Principal Roswell Researchers

RESEARCHER	INTERPRETATION OF ROSWELL ADVOCATED	BACKGROUND
Stanton Friedman	Pro-Extraterrestrial	Worked on Black Projects in Nuclear Propulsion for the Military during the 1950s and 1960s
Don Berliner	Pro-Extraterrestrial	Civilian
Charles Berlitz	Pro-Extraterrestrial	Suspected Intelligence Background during World War Two due to his linguistic facility
William Moore	Pro-Extraterrestrial	Self-admitted to spying on others in the UFO community for the government in return for "inside information"
Kevin Randle, Ph.D.	Pro-Extraterrestrial	Former U.S. military Intelligence Officer
Don Schmitt	Pro-Extraterrestrial	Civilian

Lt. Col. Philip Corso	Pro-Extraterrestrial, but also making curious statements that point to a resemblance of the Roswell technology to that of the Nazis.	U.S. Army, involved to a degree in Operation Paperclip, the secret program to recruit former Nazi scientists. Additionally Corso was an investigator for the Warren Commission on the Assassination of President John F. Kennedy.
Kal K. Korff	Pro-Mogul Balloon	Civilian, though internet sources claim Korff wrote a biography of himself in which he claims involvement in black projects.[7]
Karl Pflock	Pro-Mogul Balloon	Former military intelligence
Capt. McAndrew	Pro-Mogul Balloon	U.S. Air Force officer tasked with updating the Air Force's Mogul Balloon explanation.

What emerges from this table is the fact that the pattern of the original dialectical articulation of the Roswell Incident by the military is consistent over time, for one finds in this list individuals with past or present connections to the military or to intelligence or to black projects, and, taken together, the statements of these individuals continue to advocate one or the other pole of that dialectic, and in Corso's case, both at the same time.

The implications of this inconvenient fact are both disturbing and profound, for they suggest that there is a degree of military and intelligence penetration into the Roswell research community, which penetration is for the express purpose of keeping interpretive efforts of the Incident locked into the very same dialectical matrix as formed the original articulation of the story. The pattern is all too suggestive and reminiscent of the original U.S. Army Air Force's two entirely different and dialectically opposed "spins" of the Incident, with Colonel William Blanchard, First Lieutenant Walter Haut, and Major Jesse Marcel advocating an extraordinary basis of the event — the recovered flying saucer explanation — and Brigadier General Roger Ramey orchestrating a hasty press conference to explain it

all away as a case of the mistaken identity of a common weather balloon. The question once again is, *Why* go to such extraordinary lengths to obfuscate the Incident between these two poles by a kind of technique of dialectical crisis management?

B. Analysis

1. Methodology of Part Three

Given all these considerations, our methodology in Part Three is accordingly very simple, but involves several components:

1) The Nazi Scenario must be shown to make rational sense for the length of the cover-up of the Roswell Incident;
2) The Nazi Scenario must also give an adequate rationalization for the motivations for that cover-up, whether technological, political, or both, and give an adequate rationalization for the sense of urgency the military exhibited in the Roswell recovery and cover-up;
3) The Nazi Scenario must make contextual sense of the documents adduced by the Roswell community that are of undisputed authenticity;
4) The Nazi Scenario must made rational sense of the wider historical context in which the Incident occurred, and give an adequate rational basis for the introduction of any wider historical context;
5) The Nazi Scenario must rationalize the establishment of any top secret UFO study group within and by the U.S. government;
6) The Nazi Scenario must give adequate demonstration that a postwar independent Nazi organization existed, and that it had adequate financing, facilities, and personnel to continue ongoing research into those areas of science and technology that directly bear on the recovery of an extraordinary craft at Roswell, that it did indeed conduct such research, and that it had a sufficient base of operations to conduct over-flights of the United States with such technology without fear of its home base or bases being detected;

7) The Nazi Scenario must give an adequate rationalization of the Roswell debris;
8) The Nazi Scenario must give an adequate rationalization of the Roswell “recovered bodies”.

The last two points require further commentary. In arguing for a terrestrial rationalization of the particularities of the descriptions of the debris and the recovered bodies, the method adopted will be *that neither should form the interpretive context for the other, but that both should be shown to have a plausible terrestrial basis from an inductive and argued case.* Thus, the debris’ extraordinary properties are granted, and a case for its terrestrial origins will be argued and speculative explanations for each detail will be advanced. Similarly, by excluding the impeached testimony of Glenn Dennis and the dubious testimony of Beverly Bean concerning her father, Sergeant Melvin Brown, and his alleged descriptions of the recovered bodies, the remaining list of details of the recovered bodies will be argued on an inductive and terrestrial basis for the sake of argument, notwithstanding that most of this testimony comes from second-hand and dead-man sources.

Consequently, the method employed here in Part Three is the synthesis implied by the Roswell dialectic itself, namely, that what crashed was an extraordinary technology of wholly terrestrial origins, whose origins nonetheless were also extraordinary and politically explosive. The Nazi scenario fulfills all these requirements and then some, as we shall see.

2. The Debris and the Witnesses

Thus stated, the principal dataset that possesses the primary importance is the debris and its extraordinary properties, and thus, another table will help to summarize those properties and to refresh our memories:

Table of Witnesses and Debris Characteristics Reported

WITNESS	WITNESS STATUS	DEBRIS TYPE	DEBRIS CHARACTERISTICS
Jesse Marcel Sr.	Primary and first hand	Foil-Memory Metal	1) Tinfoil-like material was no thicker than the foil in a pack of cigarettes. 2) This material would not bend. 3) This material was not able to be dented with a sledgehammer. 4) This material was not able to be cut or torn. 5) It was flexible to the extent it could be wrinkled but not creased.
		"Balsa Wood" Beams	1) This material is flexible but not breakable. 2) Material has symbols like hieroglyphics on it.
		Parchment-like material	1) Material could not be broken nor burned with a cigarette lighter 2) Material contained "numbers" like "hieroglyphics"
		"Hieroglyphics"	1) Numbers like hieroglyphics are "pink and purple" and look as if they had been painted

Jesse Marcel Sr.		Filaments	on. 1) No initial description by Marcel Marcel initially records that he and his commanding officer, Colonel Blanchard, thought the material came from a downed aircraft. However, Marcel also is specific in stating that the material did not come from any weather or tracking device, nor from any sort of plane or missile, nor anything "built by us."(See pp. 28-31) Finally, Marcel also described in one interview a "porous material that you could blow through."(See p. 181). Which material this refers to is unknown, but it is unlikely to be the "beams" and more likely to be the "tin-foil" or "parchment" material.

Jesse Marcel Jr.	Primary and first hand	Foil-Memory Metal	1) Described as very thin 2) metal-like but not metal 3) Very strong
		Balsa-Wood Beams	No specific details described except that the beams had hieroglyphic-like characters on them, which Marcel Jr. later drew under hypnosis.
		"Hieroglyphics"	1) Pink and puple in color 2) Like Egyptian hieroglyphs but without the animal figures. (See pp. 45-56)
		Filaments	No description by Marcel Jr.
Bill Brazel	Primary and first hand	Foil-Memory Metal	1) Darker than normal tin-foil, more like lead-foil 2) Very thin 3) Lightweight 4) After wrinkling would resume its original shape 5) Pliable, but not able to be creased or bent like ordinary metal
		Balsa-Wood Beams	1) Darker than ordinary balsa wood 2) Lightweight 3) Flexible but

Bill Brazel, contin.			unbreakable 4) Not able to be scratched
		"Hieroglyphics"	1) Similar to southwestern Indian "petroglyphs"
		Filaments	1) Smaller than string but larger than thread 2) Monofilament 3) Very strong and unbreakable by hand (See pp. 42-43)
Bessie Brazel Schreiber	Primary and first hand	Foil-Memory Metal	No initial description
		Balsa-Wood Beams	No initial description
		"Hieroglyphics"	1) "Tape" showing "pastel flowers or designs" 2) "Numbers" arranged in columns
		Filaments	No initial description (See p. 43)
Loretta Proctor	Second hand, describing Mac Brazel's account	Foil-Memory Metal	No initial description
		Balsa-Wood Beams	No initial description

Loretta Proctor, contin.		"Hieroglyphics"	1) "Chinese or Japanese designs like on firecrackers" 2) Not really writing, "just wiggles and such" (See p. 44)
		Filaments	No initial description Proctor later maintained that the balsa-wood-like material could not be cut nor burned, and that it had smooth texture like plastic(See pp. 83, 155). Note that Proctor's story has changed over time.

Summarizing all of this, one has the following different types of debris and their properties:

1) The Foil-Memory Metal:
a) Thin, no thicker than the foil in a pack of cigarettes;
b) Not bendable;
c) Not able to be dented with a sledgehammer;
d) Not able to be cut or torn;
e) Can be wrinkled but not creased;
f) Porous and able to be "blown through";
g) Darker than normal tin-foil, more like lead foil;
h) Lightweight
i) After wrinkling would resume its original shape (memory metal)
2) The "Hieroglyphics":
a) Pink and purple in color;
b) Like Egyptian hieroglyphics but without the animal figures;
c) Similar to southwestern American Indian petroglyphs;
d) Some characters appear on a "tape" showing pastel flowers or designs;

e) “Numbers” that are arranged in columns
f) Resembles Japanese or Chinese writing or designs on firecrackers;
3) The “Balsa Wood” Beams:
a) Flexible but not breakable by hand;
b) Material has the hieroglyphic writing on it;
c) Characters drawn by Jesse Marcel, Jr., under hypnosis;
d) Darker than ordinary balsa wood;
e) Not able to be cut or scratched;
4) The Filaments:
a) Smaller than string but larger than thread;
2) Monofilament;
5) Parchment-like material:
a) Material could not be broken;
b) Material could not be burned with a cigarette lighter;
c) Material contained “numbers” like “hieroglyphics.”

3. The Inadequacy of Any Balloon Theory

From the above list it will be readily apparent that any balloon theory, and particularly the Mogul Balloon Theory, is inadequate to account for all these details, for while the tape used on the Mogul balloons superficially resembles the descriptions of the “hieroglyphics,” the other properties of the materials — super-hard and lightweight “memory metal,” the porous nature of some of the material, the unbreakability of some materials, and the monofilament characteristic of the “fibers”[8] — run directly counter to any of the materials used in the Mogul Balloons.

On the other hand, the descriptions of the hieroglyphics in terms of “petroglyphs,” “numbers,” and “Chinese or Japanese writing” is strongly suggestive of terrestrial origins. Indeed, as has been noted in the previous pages, the commanding officer of the 509th Bomb Group at Roswell, Colonel William Blanchard, told his wife that his original inclination was to believe that the debris came from something Soviet.[9]

Consequently, the debris itself points to something extraordinary but of terrestrial origin, and thus the debris itself constitutes the contradiction to

the “dialectic of Roswell” since it falls utterly outside the contrived opposition of the “extraordinary and extraterrestrial” to the “terrestrial, ordinary, and mundane.” This in turn suggests that it is the debris itself from which the dialectic is designed to deflect attention.

4. The Arguments Against Something Exotic But Terrestrial

Advocates of the extraterrestrial interpretation of the Roswell Incident are not, of course, oblivious to the above implications of the debris. On the contrary, they have advanced arguments against its being of a terrestrial nature, and a glance at them reveals further hidden assumptions underlying the extraterrestrial interpretation.

For example, Berliner and Friedman advance the following argument in *Crash at Corona:*

> ...what was being tested in 1947 is not secret today. Either it met its requirements and was placed in production, or it failed in one or more ways and was sent to the scrap heap. Regardless, it would have been declassified and long since would have become common knowledge. By now, even if it had been totally successful, it would have been rendered obsolete by subsequent developments.[10]

Randle and Schmitt echo this argument and add new twists:

> In short, no *mundane* explanation works. A (black projects) craft classified as top secret in 1947 would no longer be classified today...
>
> Balloons, practice atomic bombs, experimental aircraft, and Soviet spy planes cannot have been responsible for the debris discovered by Mac Brazel. No alternative, nonextraordinary hypotheses account for the strange metals with strange properties described by the men and women who handled them. No evidence attests to the presence of a balloon, a practice bomb, or an experimental aircraft. Such explanations have one fatal fact in common: an utter absence of supporting evidence.[11]

There are a number of implicit assumptions in both commentaries that must now be rendered explicit.

1) *The Technology could not still be secret:* The assumption underlying this argument is that in the normal course of human engineering and technical progress, even among black projects, that there can be no scientific or technological breakthrough sufficiently in advance of publicly available concepts and technologies that would warrant a classification down to our own time. But in effect, this is an argument from silence, for we simply do not know what such projects have achieved. That being said, however, there is a wide and extensive database known to most inventors, engineers, and scientists that strongly suggest that promising human technologies — when they are known at all — are quickly suppressed and sidelined and their inventors effectively silenced.[12] The suppression of human technologies from Tesla to Farnsworth suggests that there is something about the concepts embodied *in* those technologies that are well in advance of "public consumption physics." In any case, the numerous examples of suppression that are known suggest that, in Roswell's case, this argument lacks warrant, and also suggests that a similar case of technological suppression may be a motivating factor *without* having to invoke "extraterrestrial origins" to justify its continued classification.
2) *Technology, and the object's alleged extraterrestrial origins, are the main reasons for maintaining secrecy until the present time:* As noted in the citation from Randle and Schmitt, the "Roswell dialectic" is clearly in play in their interpretation, in that anything classified this long, if classified for technological reasons, must be because of its extraterrestrial nature. On the face of it, this lacks warrant for all the reasons surveyed in point one above. Randle's and Schmitt's remarks, however, disclose a second implicit tendency within the extraterrestrial interpretation of the Roswell Incident, namely, that the technology is so classified because of its *origins*, which, they argue, *must be* extraterrestrial since a similar secretive human development of extraordinary technology seems to them to be unjustified. The "Roswell dialectic" to a certain sense compels

these conclusions. But Randle and Schmitt are correct in one sense, in that the *origins* of the recovered debris might be politically explosive enough to warrant extreme classification down to our own time.

It is perhaps the extreme irony of previous Roswell research that those researchers themselves have pointed the way to the resolution of that dialectical dilemma, for they themselves have pointed out the flaws of witness testimony concerning the recovery of bodies; they themselves have given a list of physiological features of said bodies that are far from sufficient to conclude their extraterrestrial origins even *if* one grants that bodies were recovered; they themselves have done the research to show conclusively that no American experimental project or aircraft was involved; they themselves have strongly intimated that one reason for maintaining such extraordinary secrecy surrounding the event was because of the politically explosive nature of the *origins* of what was recovered.

Any resolution of the "dialectic of Roswell" must show that the technology, while extraordinary, is within the possibilities of human achievement, and must show that its origins are politically explosive and sensitive, and make sense within a wider context.

The crash of something from an independent postwar Nazi project in the New Mexico desert would seem at first glance to fill both requirements, for the crash would represent something technologically sophisticated, something not within the purview of any American black project, and an origin that was — especially at that time — politically explosive and sensitive, the more so because of its proven record of malign intentions, and the more so because those intentions could conceivably exacerbate already frayed Cold War tensions between the Soviet bloc and the West.

A look at that wider Nazi context is now in order.

---

[1] Kevin Randle, Ph.D., *Roswell Revisited* (Lakeville, Minnesota: Galde Press, Inc., 2007), p. 19.

[2] See pp. .

[3] See my remarks on p. 74.

[4] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, p. 121.

[5] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, "Preface to the Paperback Edition," p. xvi.

[6] See for example Randle and Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 229.

[7] See http://kkkwatch.blogspot.com/

[8] See pp, 160, 167. The Roswell fibers are described as monofilamentary in nature, whereas the Mogul Balloon project's fibers were described by one of its participants as being of a "wound nature" like thread or string.

[9] See p. 140.

[10] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 145.

[11] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, pp. 162-163.

[12] See my *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 440-442, and my *The Nazi International*, pp. 328-333 in this regard.

12
The Breathtaking Audacity of the Wider Context: "Harmless" Foo FightersPaperclip The Nazi International UFOs and the National Security State

"Of significance in the Robertson Panel report is the section titled 'On
Lack of Danger,' which mentions foo fighters: 'The panel concluded unanimously that there was no evidence of a direct threat to national security in the objects sighted. Instances of 'Foo Fighters' were cited....
Their exact cause or nature was never defined.'"
Keith Chester[1]

"Based on available records, Subject was not a war criminal, but was an ardent
Nazi. However, in the opinion of the United States High Commissioner for
Germany, Subject is not likely to become a security threat to the United States."
Col. Charles M. Adams, Jr, Authorized Representative of the US High Commissioner for Germany[2]

By July of 1947, there were abundant clues that were beginning to be pieced together by American intelligence that Nazism had survived not only in isolated enclaves, but that it was an organized international force. And by the mid-1950s, it was abundantly clear to the U.S. Air Force that those Nazis had continued to research independently their most extraordinary projects and sciences, and that they were making deep penetrations into the

most sensitive areas of the American military-industrial-intelligence complex.

Some ufologists have sought — rightly — to interpret the Roswell Incident within the wider ufological context of the immediate postwar period. Indeed, such a methodology is not only sound, but necessary, for if the event is to be interpreted along extraterrestrial lines, a circumstantial case has to be made that such an interpretation makes sense in a wider context. Similarly, some proponents of more "mundane" terrestrial explanations have sought to make a case that their explanation of the Incident makes sense within a wider context. As such, any interpretation of the Incident as a crash and retrieval of something representing the postwar independent Nazi continuation of some of their wartime secret projects must be able to make sense *in*, and *of*, a wider context.

In the case of the Nazi scenario, that wider context is inclusive of *some* pre-war, wartime, and postwar UFO sightings, and is also inclusive of a wider historical and political context, *some* of which involves the establishment of the postwar "national security state" within the United States of America, and *some* of which involves top secret UFO study groups. As such, the Nazi scenario in some instances relies upon not only a similar or parallel dataset of sightings and documents as an extraterrestrial interpretation, but in some cases, exactly the *same* sightings and documents, but chooses a different paradigm of interpretation and hence offers a different rationalization of specific points.

As such, some might be tempted to conclude from my arguments in the forthcoming pages that I am arguing that *all* UFO sightings from the period in question are due to the activities of Nazis, or that I am adhering to the Nazi interpretation of the Roswell Incident dogmatically. To maintain either such viewpoint would be similar to maintaining that the pro-extraterrestrial proponents of the Roswell Incident are maintaining that all UFO sightings are extraterrestrial, or that they are maintaining their interpretation of Roswell with a dogmatic irreformability. While they are certainly passionate in their convictions and arguments, I have never concluded from their published comments that they are dogmatic about them. They, like all researchers, claim the right to be wrong, and the same caution must be exercised by the reader with the case that I now argue here. To conclude from their passionate and strongly-worded rhetoric that they are dogmatic is

to miss their point: they are arguing a circumstantial case, and that it what I do here, hopefully equally as passionately.

In any case, the “wider historical context” which is presented here is inclusive of the so-called “foo fighters” reports — and the allegations that they were always “harmless” — but more importantly, seeks to demonstrate that in the postwar period Nazism was alive, well, and sufficiently organized and with enough financial clout so as to be able to continue its own research independently of any of the victorious postwar Allied powers. As will also be seen, that activity is inclusive of significant indicators that the Paperclip Nazi scientists within this country continued to have and pursue their own research agenda independent of their host country. That “independence” seems to have been exercised within the wider context of a postwar detente that was struck between surviving Nazis and their postwar command structure on the one hand, and the financial and corporate elite of the Anglo-American world on the other. It is within this politically explosive and sensitive context that I interpret the Roswell Incident.

When viewed in that context, the Roswell Incident reveals potentialities and implications that perforce it cannot have under the extraterrestrial interpretation, namely, that the Incident itself became another clue to that Anglo-American corporate and military elite that not all was quiet on the Western Front. It was another clue — the most significant one — that the old enemy had survived the collapse of its German base of operations and simply transplanted itself elsewhere, and that it would, under the terms of that postwar detente, continue to monitor the progress of its former enemies.

There is another dialectic at work within the wider historical and ufological context that will be revealed in the forthcoming pages, and it is best to forewarn the reader of it here. That dialectic was hinted at in the epigraphs that began this chapter, for on the one hand, while the government was at roughly the same period issuing private statements to itself that UFOs represented no security threat, it was also secretly attempting to shoot them down, as we shall see. That mutually contradictory policy was oddly mirrored in its schizophrenic approach to many of the Nazi Paperclip scientists, many of whom were stated to be “ardent Nazis” but “no security threat to the United States.” As will be argued in the coming pages, this schizophrenia toward some Paperclip

Nazis and toward some UFOs may in fact be related, and may reflect the wider policy of postwar “detente” between that surviving Nazi International and the Anglo-American financial elite.

A. Those “Harmless” Foo Fighters

1. Sightings Immediately Prior to World War Two and Unusual Explanations

The problem with the “foo fighters” of World War Two is that one is most likely not dealing with a uniform phenomenon. In what is both an excellent — and the only — study of the subject, researcher Keith Chester notes that the problem with the phenomenon of the “foo fighter” is that the term did not originate until 1945, and covered a variety of discrete phenomena seen in all theaters of the Second World War. The problem is further compounded by the fact that the various phenomena were called different things in intelligence reports, depending upon what Allied pilots saw, from “balls of fire” to “meteors” or even “freaks.”[3] Perhaps sensing the futility of attempting to fix a consistent descriptor to the phenomena, Chester notes that, “All these sightings were listed under the heading of ‘phenomena’ or ‘phenomenon’ in military intelligence manuals.”[4] And well they might be, for whatever “it” was, it came “in a variety of shapes, sizes, and colors” and moreover in some cases “had extraordinary flight performance capabilities, were able to travel at phenomenal speeds, and could avoid radar detection.”[5]

Exactly what they were, nobody knew, but the fact that they were seen in all theaters and by pilots on both sides of the war has led some to dismiss the idea that any of them might have represented an extraordinary terrestrial and German technology. The problem with this view, as Chester ably demonstrates, is that one is *not* dealing with a uniform nor consistent phenomenon; several different types of phenomena may be involved, and there is every indication that indeed *some* of them were in fact extraordinary German technologies.

As was seen in previous pages, some Roswell researchers wish to close off any potential usefulness of the phenomenon as an explanation of the Roswell Incident, at least, along the lines of a terrestrial German technology. Berliner and Friedman, for example, state that "Not once was there any suggestion that a foo fighter had proved aggressive or even mildly unfriendly."[6] The argument seems to be that since they had not "proven aggressive" the phenomena — or at least *some* of them — could not have represented anything German and hence of an extraordinary terrestrial nature. In this, Berliner and Friedman echo the statements of the CIA's secret Robertson Panel report on UFOs, which stated that UFOs were essentially no threat to the national security of the United States because they, like the foo fighters, had not engaged in any hostile acts against us or our allies.[7] Berliner and Friedman also note that they were seen by all sides in all theaters of the war, and hence the implication is that they had to be someone *else's* technology, just not the Germans' nor any other human technology. Berliner and Friedman state, however, that famous pilot Jimmy Doolittle was allegedly recruited to study the phenomena and write a report, in which he allegedly concluded the foo fighters represented a German or Japanese secret technology.[8]

So one is left with the fundamental implied argument: the foo fighters were harmless to Allied aircraft, and hence not German, and because they were seen in all theaters of the war by military personnel on both sides of the war, they could not represent a terrestrial and German technology, insofar as they represented a technology at all. Insofar as the phenomenon is relevant to Roswell at all, it can only be in this sense of something non-terrestrial.

Indeed, UFO cognoscenti could even point to several instances of similar phenomena being sighted in the years immediately prior to the Nazi assumption of power in Germany in 1933 and several years before World War Two even began, and hence, the "foo fighters" could hardly represent something "made in Nazi Germany."

It is in this context that Chester's research is quite a shock, for while he makes it abundantly clear that there are sightings that could *not* be German *nor anyone else's*, he also makes it abundantly clear that there were some that *were* German, and that there was also some behavior from "foo

fighters” that was clearly aggressive and hostile to Allied aircraft and their crews, and that many within Allied commands suspected not an extraterrestrial but a terrestrial origin, and moreover, a German one.

Of particular interest in this regard are the sightings in Scandinavia in 1933 and early 1934, shortly after the Nazi assumption of power. These sightings are interesting not only for the detailed descriptions given by some who saw them, but even more so for the conclusions that the Norwegian and Swedish militaries drew from them. Chester cites a report first uncovered by British ufologist Timothy Good, that

> For ten days in late December 1933, the Swedish Air Force searched in vain, hunting for an aerial intruder operating unchallenged in northern Norway and northern Sweden. *Authorities believed the aircraft was flying out of a secret mountain base near Westerbotten.* Oddly, no weather condition was severe enough to keep the “mysterious airplane” grounded and, on one occasion, was even heard flying towards Norway during a snowstorm. Not only was the “mysterious airplane” flying in weather that greatly challenged then current conventional aircraft capabilities but it “frequently circled low, projecting powerful searchlights on the ground.” Reports of engine noise accompanied some sightings, while other witnesses “sometimes described low-level maneuvers in complete silence.”[9]

Whatever this object or these objects was or were, apparently nothing about it or them was exotic enough to compel the Swedish military to conclude that it came from another planet. Indeed, and very suggestively, the Swedish military concluded that some secret base — and hence a secret terrestrial technology — was involved.

Not content to leave matters there, however, the Swedish Air Force conducted further operations to determine if its conclusions were warranted:

> ...(Two) Swedish airplanes carried out aerial reconnaissance. Their attempt failed. Both planes were lost in the search, but fortunately, the crews survived. On Christmas day, a second effort was initiated by Lt. Wanberg, who conducted a lone scouting expedition on foot, but he never returned. In an effort to locate him, three skiers embarked on a

> rescue mission. Sadly, they too disappeared. The treacherous weather and rough terrain had proven absolutely brutal, and as of January 9, 1934, the military failed in their attempt to find all four men.[10]

After losing two aircraft and four people, the Swedish Air Force "conducted an official investigation" of what was now being called "the phantom fliers,"[11] for the affair was taking on sinister implications, given the clearly audible drumbeats of war coming from the south from across the Baltic from Germany. The "phantom fliers" were apparently not only flying over sensitive Swedish military installations and conducting "reconnaissance", but doing so in Norway as well, in a pattern that would be continued *after* the war.[12]

The Scandinavian sightings continued into 1934, for on April 1, 1934 in Oslo, Norway, several witnesses described "a very large aeroplane" and one sixteen-year-old boy maintained that he had seen it in clear moonlight, and that it had eight propellers.[13] This is an interesting detail, for if true, it once again points to some sort of exotic experimental craft, but to something obviously and *wholly* terrestrial, and the craft's ability to hover and maneuver at speed even in weather that would ground most aircraft of the period indicate that whoever was flying it was in the possession of some unusually advanced technology for the day.

But by April 30, 1934, the Swedish and Finnish air forces had given up trying to capture one of the "phantom fliers" and their aircraft. But Norway, however, continued to investigate:

> On April 30, to avoid alarm but to keep the public somewhat informed, Major General Reutersward, commanding general of upper Norrland, told the newspapers that authorities were entertaining the possibility that the mystery airplanes were conducting reconnaissance exercises over very sensitive military areas. General Reutersward further stated that, although highly reliable witnesses made many close-up observations, "No identifying insignia or identifying marks were visible on the machines," and he added that "it was impossible to explain away the whole thing as mere imagination. The question is:

> Who or Whom are they, and why have they been invading our air territory?"[14]

What emerges from these Scandinavian sightings of 1933-1934 is a rather unusual set of data-points when one compiles them into a single list:

1) The craft are clearly terrestrial in origin, since a witness describes "propellers," an absolutely useless contrivance for interplanetary flight;
2) The craft are clearly surveilling and reconnoitering sensitive Swedish, Norwegian, and Finnish military installations;
3) The clear contextual and chronological implication of the sightings, and of these Scandinavian governments' responses, is that they are being reconnoitered by some secret technology from Germany, although *Sweden explicitly held open the possibility of a secret base, and presumably, some independent source, for the phenomena.*

In the context of the Roswell Incident, and the wider context usually invoked by ufologists to corroborate their extraterrestrial interpretation of it, the Scandinavian sightings of 1933-1934 are significant, for those governments knew they were being reconnoitered by a secret technology; they were just not ready to walk off the extraterrestrial plank, nor was the technology encountered sufficiently exotic enough to suggest to them that they do so.

2. The Skies Over Germany and Those Oh-So-Harmless Foo Fighters

But what about World War Two, and those "foo fighters" that according to Berliner and Friedman "not once" gave "any suggestion" of being "aggressive or even mildly unfriendly"?[15] While Berliner and Friedman *are* correct in that *most* such encounters by Allied pilots were at best a mild nuisance, it is simply *not* true that they "not once" gave any indication of hostile intentions or maneuvers, and even *less* true that no sighting ever coupled them with the German *Luftwaffe's* activity.

Indeed, while it is certainly true that “foo fighters” were sighted in all theaters of the war by pilots on both sides of the war, it is also true that by 1942 *most* of those sightings were concentrated over Germany and Holland.[16] That would seem to indicate that at least *some* of the varied phenomena that go under the name “foo fighters” represent some sort of Nazi technology. That *Luftwaffe* pilots thought some of them might represent Allied secret weapons is not really an argument against their Nazi origin, for such pilots in the overwhelming majority would not have been privy to any such secret research.

One has only to look at the famous bombing raids over Schweinfurt in 1943, however, to encounter an incident where they exhibited behavior that can only be interpreted as hostile to Allied aircraft. The Royal Air Force’s Bomber Command and the U.S. Eighth Army Air Force had determined to obliterate the ball-bearing factories at Schweinfurt, and thereby to cripple Germany’s war-making ability and conceivably even considerably shorten the war. And they knew that once their opposite numbers in Germany knew what the eventual target was, that the *Luftwaffe* would throw every available fighter squadron into the skies over Schweinfurt.

It was in this context that one of the strangest incidents of the air war over Germany occurred, and it was first publicly reported by a well-known science fiction novelist during the 1960s, Martin Caidin, who also was an amateur military historian and World War Two history enthusiast:

> During the bomb run of several groups, starting at about the time the Fortresses[17] approached the Initial Point, there occurred one of the most baffling incidents of *World* War II, and an enigma that to this day defies all explanation.
>
> As the bombers of the 384th Group swung into the final bomb run after passing the Initial Point, *the fighter attacks fell off. This point is vital, and pilots were queried extensively, as were other crew members, as to the position at that time of the German fighter planes. Every man interrogated was firm in his statement that “at the time there were no enemy aircraft above.”*[18]
>
> At this moment the pilots and top turret gunners, as well as several crewmen in the Plexiglas [sic] noses of the bombers, reported *a cluster*

of discs in the path of the 384ths formation and closing with the bombers. The startled exclamations focused attention on the phenomenon, and the crews talked back and forth, discussing and confirming the astonishing sight before them.

The discs in the cluster were agreed upon as being silver colored, about one inch thick and three inches in diameter. They were easily seen by the B-17 crewmen, gliding down slowly in a very uniform cluster.

And then the "impossible" happened. *B-17 number 026 closed rapidly with a cluster of discs; the pilot attempted to evade an imminent collision with the objects, but was unsuccessful in his maneuver. He reported at the intelligence debriefing that his "right wing went directly through a cluster with absolutely no effect on engines or plane surface."*

The intelligence officers pressed their questioning, and the pilot stated further that one of the discs was heard to strike tail assembly of his B-17, but that neither he nor any member of the crew had heard or witnessed an explosion.

He further explained that about twenty feet from the discs the pilots sighted a mess of black debris of varying sizes in clusters of three by four feet.

The SECRET report added: "Also observed two other A/C flying through silver discs with no apparent damage. Observed discs and debris two other times but could not determine where it came from."

No further information on this baffling incident has been uncovered, with the exception that such discs were observed by pilots and crew members on missions prior to, and after Mission 115 of October 14, 1943.[19]

This astonishing incident has to be analyzed quite carefully to reveal why the Allied intelligence officers were so concerned over something that apparently did very little damage to their aircraft.

First, it is important to note that during bombing missions over Germany, American and British bombers flew in formations that were designed to maximize the cover that their defensive machine guns gave them, so as to cloak any individual bomber in that formation with the defensive firepower

of other bombers in the same formation. One bomber's "blind spot" would be covered by the defensive fire arc of other bombers in its formation. For a bomber to break from its position in that formation was to break the entire defensive fire box that the formation presented to *Luftwaffe* fighter pilots, and to weaken it considerably. Thus, when the "discs" closed with the 384th Bomb Group and forced some of its pilots to take evasive action and break formation, this action and behavior *can only be considered hostile to the American aircraft.*

And this brings us to the second point in Caidin's account. Over and over again American pilots and bomber crews reported that as they began their final bomb run (when breaking formation would additionally throw them away from the target to be bombed), and at the very moment therefore that one would have expected the most intense attentions from *Luftwaffe* fighters, the Germans, uncharacteristically, held themselves back as if *expecting* something unusual to happen, or as if they had been ordered to do so by their fighter commands.

Clearly, then, the Allied intelligence officers' scrutiny of this very strange incident and the crews involved with it, is due to the fact that they suspected that the incident reflected the combat use and experimentation with some sort of unusual weapon.

But why the unusual fixation with something that, other than causing some pilots to take evasive action and hence break formation, otherwise appeared to be more or less "harmless"? One reason is that the Schweinfurt occurrence was not the *only* such incident. Chester reports that another encounter only one month earlier — September 6, 1943 — occurred over another major German industrial center, Stuttgart:

> News of the "silver discs" spread fast. Later that day an update, "Additional Information on the Observation of Silvery Colored Discs On Mission To Stuttgart, 6 Sept. 1943," was sent to 1st Bombardment Wing: "This observation was made by two crews of the 384th Group and was the only place it was noted. At this time from 2 to 4 FW190's[20] or ME 109's[21] and 1 JU 88[22] were flying 2 to 3000 feet above and a little ahead of our formation. These E/A[23] were not seen to drop the material out. It came from above our A/C/. As to its shape,

> it was a mass of material, kept a good pattern, did not dissipate as it streamed down and fell comparatively slow. In one instance, the cluster appeared to be about 8 ft. in length and about 4 feet wide as it streaked down. Another observation stated it was about 75 feet long and 20 feet wide. These dimensions in length being the size from top to bottom as it fell. The cluster was composed of small round objects, silvery in color. In all instances, the objects fell in the path of our A/C. *Some was observed to fall on the wing of a B-17 belonging to our group. The wing immediately started to burn. This a/c did not return. No further information available.*"[24]

Clearly, the *Luftwaffe* was deploying and combat-testing *some* sort of strange technology, and that technology was anything but harmless if it is making the wings of B-17s literally catch fire and burn!

Nor is this all Chester uncovered about the unusual "silver disc ordnance."[25] The Stuttgart incident had led one Allied intelligence analyst to speculate that the "'silvery-colored discs' were composed of (1) 'white phosporous and a sticky substance which would cause it to cling to the plane...' and (2) 'Thermite with some sort of igniting compound ingredient in a sticky substance...' or even (3) 'Flat round glass containers loaded with either of the above incendiary *26* components.'"[26] But there was more. According to Chester, a "follow-up report released in the *US Eight Air Force Weekly Digest* on September 26" stated that "'Several new aerial weapons developed by the enemy *have been inspected* and reported upon during recent weeks."[27] Note the report claims that some of the strange German weapons had actually been *inspected.* Finally, Chester notes that some bomber pilots actually stated clearly and unequivocally that German fighters "'were dropping pie-plates' on them."[28]

British crews were no less involved in such sightings during their night-bombing runs over Germany. In one such instance over the German city of Aachen, a bright white light ascended from the ground after an initial zig-zag course until it reached altitude. Another British bomber crew flying over Osnabruk saw a "rocket" with a long white tail of light flying at the same altitude as their own aircraft.

Yet another British pilot reported a very strange occurrence flying in France in December 1942:

> B.C. Lumsden was piloting his Hurricane fighter at approximately 7,000 feet. While flying over the French coast near the mouth of the Somme River, he noticed something suddenly climbing towards him from below. Approaching were two lights, amber and orange colored, slowly making their way to his altitude. At first, he assumed they were tracer-flak of some kind, but then realized they were traveling too slowly for such ordnance. The lights had by then reached his altitude and were maintaining a level course with his aircraft. Lumsden watched as the lights grew larger in size and brighter in luminance.
>
> Unable to identify what they were, Lumsden felt something was simply not right and out of place. Concerned for his safety, he dropped his extra fuel tanks and began evasive action, diving several thousand feet before leveling out and accelerating up to 260 mph. In unison, the two lights descended with him, actually dropping to a lower altitude before ascending again, and then continued their pursuit. Lumsden noticed that the lights maintained a relatively constant distance from each other, only varying in height at times. He was sure they were not aircraft wingtip lights due to their flying angle. *During the episode, he noticed no enemy flak or searchlights.* Able to out distance the lights, Lumsden fled the scene.[29]

There are two possible explanations for the lack of a German response to Lumsden's and the mysterious lights accompanying him. The first is that the Germans were simply unaware of his or their presence, an unlikely explanation since any aircraft flying at 7,000 feet would have been clearly visible to German radars along the French coast, and unlikely due to the fact that this particular region of the French coast was undergoing heavy fortification and construction by the Germans in preparation for an eventual Allied invasion. Any Allied reconnaissance activity by single aircraft would inevitably have been met by a response from *Luftwaffe* night fighters.

The other explanation — which this author finds to be more likely — is that the Germans had decided to test some exotic technology using the British fighter's presence, and hence, the local German anti-aircraft crews

and fighter squadrons would have been alerted by their local commands and told to stand down in this instance, lest their actions inadvertently damage the experimental equipment itself. The behavior of the lights, especially their "overshooting" of Lumsden's dive and then their climb back up to his altitude, implies a remote-controlled and perhaps ground-based technology is in play.

An even more significant incident occurred on May 13 and 14, 1943 over Pilsen, Czechoslovakia. Royal Air Force crews reported an object "described as giving off *a sequence of sparks and as having a definite tail leaving a trail of smoke*; it was seen to travel about ten miles before falling to the ground, where it burnt out after a minute. The crew who made this report said they had seen similar phenomena on previous occasions in approximately the same area..."[30] The significance of this report lies in the fact that the technology described is exotic for the time, but clearly, something leaving a trail of smoke and giving off sparks hardly qualifies as exotic enough to be extraterrestrial. However, more significant is the fact that this sighting occurs precisely over the headquarters of SS *Obergruppenführer* Hans Kammler's secret weapons think tank inside the engineering division of the Skoda Works in Pilsen, the very group responsible for much of Nazi Germany's exotic and secret research into advanced aerodynes and propulsion systems![31]

The unusual nature of some these sightings prompted analysts at Britain's Bomber Command to conclude that in all likelihood the Allies were dealing with an advanced and secret Nazi technology,[32] and Allied intelligence was, moreover, reluctant even to qualify them *as* rockets. As Chester observes:

> Even Fighter Command used the word "phenomenon" in their report, revealing there was a real hesitancy in accepting rockets as the culprit of the sightings. Reviewing the Fighter Command report today, these anti-aircraft rockets were well in advance of German technology at that time. The so-called rockets displayed a propulsion system capable of a five-minute engine burn time, and they had the ability to fly on a parallel course with allied aircraft. This was pretty remarkable for 1942 and is highly suspect. But one cannot entirely rule out the

possibility that the Germans had been experimenting with some pretty advanced designs at this early date.[33]

Indeed, it is now well-known that much of this advanced and exotic research began long before the war, and, if certain reports are to be believed, even before the Nazis assumed power.[34]

3. General Twining and Robertson Make Their First Appearance

Two important individuals also make their first appearance in Chester's research, and precisely in the context of wartime Allied intelligence investigation and analysis of the foo fighter phenomenon; both are well-known to the subject of ufology in general and to Roswell Incident researchers in particular. They are General Nathan Twining, subsequent postwar commanding general of the U.S. Air Force's Air Materiel Command, and Howard P. Robertson, postwar chairman of the CIA's secret "Robertson Panel" on UFOs in the early 1950s.

On March 15, 1944, then Major General Nathan Twining issued a memorandum entitled "Capture Intelligence Interrogation of Air Prisoners of War, Examination of Enemy Equipment." The memorandum stipulated that no prisoner was to be interrogated by anyone of any rank that was not connected to the CSDIC or "Combined Services Detailed Interrogation Center," which was specifically established "to interrogate enemy air force prisoners and examine their documentation or anything else in their...possession."[35] Twining, in other words, was deeply involved in intelligence and analysis of German technology during World War Two.

Robertson's intelligence and analysis involvement in World War Two is even more intriguing. By 1944, with the threat of German V-1 "buzz-bombs," the winged bombs propelled by ramjets, and the even more sophisticated V-2 rocket, becoming a reality, and with the Allied invasion of France looming, the Allies had to have effective intelligence concerning the capabilities of these weapons, of the German ability to mass produce them, and of any potentially effective countermeasures. Major General S.G. Henry "officially established the Committee on Counter-measures Against German Secret weapons.... A scientific and technical group was set up

within the committee composed of the three civilian scientists: Howard P. Robertson, A.L. Loomis, and Roger Adams."[36]

After the invasion of Europe, with Allied armies marching across France into the Low Countries, intelligence teams fanned out over the countryside behind them, trying to learn as much as possible from captured German research installations. The problem was, almost every service branch had its own intelligence groups, and every allied power with troops on the ground did as well. As a result of this confusion, General Eisenhower "established a Combined Intelligence Priorities Committee" with categories subdivided according to the type of intelligence targets that the Allies were trying to learn about. Howard Robertson was one scientist tasked with flagging certain types of intelligence reports. As Chester correctly observed, Robertson's V-1 and V-2 work would possibly have brought him into contact with intelligence reports concerning the foo fighter "phenomena," and if so, he and liaisons working with him would likely have flagged any such reports for special investigation.[37]

Eishenhower's concern for intelligence coordination was not misplaced. Indeed, as Chester notes, *there appear to have been "pirate" or independent intelligence groups operating behind Allied lines and disguised as Allied military personnel:*

> There was also a concern over what they called "pirate" bodies; separate and unknown intelligence teams encountered in the field, completely unaware of one another's existence or mission.
>
> *The pirate bodies made it very difficult for a centralized coordination effort and provided a perfect cover, I might add, for a secretive unconventional aircraft investigation operating without any knowledge of their agenda by CIOS leaders.*[38]

The mind boggles, for in other words, what Chester is maintaining is in reality a distinct possibility, namely, that either some super-secretive group or groups within American and/or British intelligence realized that there was a potential technological goldmine in Nazi research and determined to acquire it and withhold it from the normal channels of military intelligence and analysis, or even worse, such "pirate teams," masquerading as Allied intelligence teams, might represent two further possibilities, both equally

disturbing. The first is that they represented Nazis themselves, who using such disguises and operating behind Allied lines, were trying to evacuate crucial technology and documentation and to prevent it from falling permanently into Allied hands. The second is that they represented *some private interest within the Allied countries themselves.*[39]

As for the *other* kind of foo fighter, the "red balls of fire" so often reported by Allied crewmen over Nazi Germany, the overwhelming body of these reports could never pin them to anything explicitly German...

...*except* in one instance, when the IX Tactical Air Command reported that a German Messerschmitt 109 fighter joined a formation of Allied aircraft and "was seen to emit what appeared to be a red ball of fire which followed the aircraft for some 2-3 seconds," after which the Messerschmitt broke away.[40]

Whatever else emerges from all of this, it is clear that Berliner and Friedman are simply and utterly mistaken in their assessment of the foo fighter and the technological potential it represented, for clearly, there were rare instances of behavior from them that could only have been interpreted as hostile by the Allies, and indeed, *was so interpreted.* There are contextual indications that some of these sightings clearly imply a Nazi technology in play, and particularly so in the above case of the Messerschmitt 109 emitting a "ball of fire."

In this context, General Twining's selection to command the postwar Air Materiel Command is logical on two counts. First, having had wartime intelligence experience dealing with foreign and hostile technology in Europe, he is a logical choice for such a command. Secondly, and more importantly, if at any time during the postwar period and in connection with UFOs, the U.S. Air Force ever suspected it was dealing either with an extraterrestrial technology, or a surviving Nazi technology, or any potential combination of the two, then again, General Twining's command of that department of the U.S. Air Force, and his involvement in the Roswell Incident, becomes even more plausible and rationalizable, especially if the Air Force suspected at any time in its investigation of that Incident or other postwar UFO incidents that it might be dealing with a Nazi technology, and therefore, with a postwar extraterritorial Nazi "state" continuing to access and develop it.

B. The" Paperclip Detente"

1. The Gehlen-Dulles Deal and Its Fallout

As is well known by now, the United States of America brought "former" Nazi scientists, researchers, and technicians to this country after the Second World War.

> At least sixteen hundred scientific and research specialists and thousands of their dependents were brought to the U.S. under Operation Paperclip. Hundreds of others arrived under two other Paperclip-related projects and went to work for universities, defense contractors, and CIA fronts.[41]

The sheer size of this project was offset only by the extreme secrecy with which it dealt with and justified the clear Nazi pasts of these scientists, and with which it turned a blind eye to the postwar implications of their activities both "in behalf of" and independently of their new American hosts.

We may refer to this inconvenient marriage as a kind of postwar "Paperclip detente" between the chief victorious western power, its agencies, bureaucracies, and most importantly, its hidden oligarchic rulers and elites on the one hand, and its one-time enemy, the Nazis, on the other. As we shall now discover, this "Paperclip Detente" reached out to embrace not only those Nazis formally brought to this country and at least ostensibly working for it, but also those Nazis that remained independent, organized, and active after the war.

It was a stormy marriage from the outset (and indeed, there are disturbing contemporary signs that it is headed for a stormy divorce, with that Anglo-American oligarchic elite being on the short end of the "settlement"). No better icon of its dubious and ambiguous character exists than the secret bargain struck before the end of the war between the OSS' Zurich station chief, and later CIA director, Allen Dulles, and the head of Nazi Germany's military intelligence organization in eastern Europe and the Soviet Union,

General Reinhard Gehlen and his *Fremde Heere Ost* (Foreign Armies East).[42]

The terms of this bargain were nothing less than stunning, and it is best to allow General Gehlen himself to state in his own words what they were:

> I remember the terms of the agreement well...
> 1. A clandestine German intelligence organization was to be set up, using the existing potential to continue information gathering in the East just as we had been doing before. The basis for this was our common interest in a defense against communism.
> 2. *This German organization was to work not "for" or "under" the Americans, but "jointly" with the Americans.*
> 3. *The organization would operate exclusively under German leadership, which would receive its directives and assignments from the Americans until a new government was established in Germany.*
> 4. The organization was to be financed by the Americans with funds which were not to be part of the occupation costs, and in return the organization would supply all its intelligence reports to the Americans.
> 5. As soon as a sovereign German government was established, the government should decide whether the organization should continue to function or not, but that until such time the care and control (later referred to as "the trusteeship") of the organization would remain in American hands.
> 6. *Should the organization at any time find itself in a position where the American and German interests diverged, it was accepted that the organization would consider the interests of Germany first.*[43]

One almost has to read this list twice in order for the full magnitude of the implications of the "bargain" to sink in, but nonetheless the basic implication is clear: Nazi military intelligence basically remained organizationally intact after the war, continued to be run by the same general that ran it during the war, was paid for by America, and it was understood that in conflicts of interest, it would place German interests ahead of American interests! Indeed, Gehlen's organization, or the "Gehlenorg" or "the Org" as it was also called, eventually became the

forerunner of West Germany's "CIA", the *Bundesnachrichtendienst* or BND.

But the implications do not stop there. As conspiracy researcher Jim Keith put it, there is another nasty implication:

> Using Nazi intelligence networks as a hole card to provide for his own survival *and the survival of his huge spy network, Gehlen made a separate peace with Dulles, resulting in the clean grafting of Nazi spy apparatus to the American clandestine services.* This was the birth of the CIA and part of a nexus of betrayal that continues to this day.[44]

In other words, one member of the American oligarchic elite — Allen Dulles — had negotiated a "separate peace" or to be more precise, a "detente" and coexistence, with a member of the Nazi elite — General Gehlen.

Nor do the long range implications stop even there, for as part of his "organization," General Gehlen oversaw a vast network of "émigré" fronts composed of exiled Lithuanians, Letts, Estonians, White Russians, Ukrainians and other eastern European nations that had been overrun by the Red Army as it advanced on the Reich. These organizations, as we shall see below, established themselves in the United States and became very influential in Republican politics during the presidencies of Ronald Reagan and George Herbert Walker Bush.

There was other fallout to the Gehlen-Dulles version of "Paperclip Detente," and that was the Cold War itself. For example, the Gehlen Organization estimated that the Red Army had available some 175 combat-ready divisions in Eastern Europe, and that "quiet changes already under way in Soviet billeting and leave policies for these troops suggested a major mobilization could be in the wind."[45] All this General Gehlen "dutifully" reported to the American military commander in occupied Germany, General Lucius Clay,[46] who equally as dutifully, telegrammed Washington in early March, 1948, that war with the Soviet Union "may come with dramatic suddenness."[47] This became the celebrated "War Scare" telegram that was used by hawks within the Pentagon such as General Curtis Lemay to argue for a vastly expanded American nuclear arsenal capable of turning the Soviet Union into a glowing radioactive cinder.

But Gehlen was hardly a fool, for after years of experience in military intelligence matters regarding the Soviet Union, and knowing firsthand the devastation to its infrastructure, cities, and industry that country had suffered at Nazi hands, he knew full well that such a massive and sudden invasion of the West by the Soviet Union and its client states was very unlikely. What he had cleverly done for his American handlers was to deliberately transform the political threat posed by the Soviet Union into an imminent military threat, and the "Cold Warriors" in the Pentagon responded accordingly, initiating the Cold War nuclear arms race.[48]

Gehlen, in other words, was deliberately overestimating Soviet capabilities and intentions in the postwar period, with the specific design of getting the United States locked into an inevitable — and bankrupting — arms race with it. And since it is now well-known that the predecessor to the KGB, the NKVD, was "successful" in turning many of Gehlen's agents into double agents for the Soviet Union, the possibility looms that these agents, like all mercenaries, remained loyal to their original leadership, and Gehlen's organization was feeding the Soviets similar disinformation regarding American capabilities and intentions.

The purpose of all these machinations is thus immediately evident, for by locking the two postwar "superpowers" into a stalemating arms race, more maneuvering room is created for organizations such as Gehlen's to act as the "balance of power" and as a hidden "third force" on the world stage. Indeed, as I have argued throughout my previous books on Nazi secret weapons and postwar survival and research, it appears very much that this postwar stalemate was to a certain extent orchestrated by the Nazis themselves, who saw to it that the USA and the USSR obtained roughly an equal division of the technological spoils, while the Nazis retained postwar control over and possession of research into their most exotic and advanced projects.[49]

So what does one make of the Gehlen-Dulles end of the Paperclip Detente? In my book *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell* I put it this way:

> ...(One) whole department of the American Federal government — indeed, one of its most *sensitive* departments — was being run by agents of the Third Reich in a classic Trojan Horse operation! With the thousands of agents in Gehlen's "Organization," and its extensive

network of “émigré exile” groups and fronts, historian Carl Oglesby noted taht teh Gehlenorg “substantially pre-empted the CIA’s civilian character before it was ever born... Thus, whatever the CIA was from the standpoint of law, it remained from the standpoint of *practical intelligence collection a front for a house of Nazi spies.”*

The importance of these observations cannot be pondered too long, for as many other researchers and commentators have noted, there appears to be a “rogue element’ operating somewhere inside the U.S. Federal government and inside its intelligence community.[50]

Gehlen’s organization provides the historical basis and context from which that rogue element may be appreciated for what it is: an element whose outlook, agenda, methods, and aims are Fascist and National Socialist.

2. The Paperclip Scientists and Some Disturbing Indications

But what of the Nazi scientists brought over here themselves: Did Operation Paperclip have similar implications? Did those Nazi scientists and technicians display a similar independence from and diffidence towards their American hosts as their counterparts in Gehlen’s far more independent organization? Unfortunately, the answer to both those questions is a clear and unequivocal “yes.” In its pursuit of the fruits of Nazi research and technology, American scientists became so “dazzled by German technology that was in some cases years ahead of our own, they simply ignored its evil foundation — which sometimes meant stepping over and around piles of dead bodies — and pursued Nazi scientific knowledge like a forbidden fruit.”[51] Indeed, it was after learning of Nazi human experimentation, and after the inception of Project Paperclip, that American doctors and scientists indulged in “Dachau-like” medical experimentation on American soldiers.[52] In its obsession to acquire Nazis scientists and their knowledge, their Nazi pasts were often clearly spelled out on the security reviews, and in the very next breath such a past was deemed not to be a threat to the security of the United States. Shades of General Gehlen! There was wholesale sanitization of records.[53] In any case, one of those high-ranking American generals who

oversaw Operation Paperclip — and who plays a prominent role in some ufological studies — was General Hoyt Vandenberg.[54]

In cases where no amount of bleach, cleanser, or scrubbing could sanitize someone's Nazi record, efforts were undertaken to relocate the Nazis in question to Argentina, where they were expected to undertake the development of modern weapons for the Argentine military for hemispheric defense against communism.[55]

Yet, at one and the same time, the American military had another secret project code-named "Safehaven," which "was designed to prevent Germans from escaping to other countries, primarily in Latin America, *to continue their wartime research.*"[56] In other words, while one project of the American military is trying to help Nazis do precisely that, another project is acutely aware of the dangers that any such independent postwar Nazi research would pose, for it is admitting the very real possibility that such an event could happen!

The degree of Nazi penetration into postwar America's defense establishment is nothing less than breathtaking, for Nazi chemical warfare experts were soon found working for the Rockefeller Institute,[57]working at Wright Field in Dayton, Ohio for General Twining's Air Materiel Command and other projects developing supersonic aircraft designs,[58] and of course Nazi medical doctors of dubious moral standing such as Dr. Hubertus Strughold made their way into postwar America's nascent space medicine program.[59]

Of course, not all this happened without voices of protest and concern over the security issues being raised. Under Secretary of War Robert Patterson, for example, stated that "These men are enemies and it must be assumed that they are capable of sabotaging our war effort."[60] Arthur Rudolph, principal designer of the massive Saturn V booster with its titanic 7,500,000 pounds of thrust that would take American astronauts to the moon, was typical of the attitude. One American counter-intelligence officer noted on Rudolph's Paperclip security review form that he was "100% NAZI," was a "dangerous type" and even a "security threat," and went so far as to suggest that Rudolph be interred.[61] Nonetheless, the warnings went largely ignored, at least, that is, until *after* the successful completion of the Apollo program, when the Nazi scientists and engineers

were no longer needed for America's '"home-grown "space shuttle" project! At that point, under threat from the U.S. Justice Department for indictment for war crimes, Rudolph fled the country.

And in a curious incident, one Nazi physicist, Rudolph Fleischmann, "was flown to the United States for interrogation prior to the dropping of atomic bombs on Japan."[62] One wonders exactly why a Nazi physicist had to be interrogated by Americans prior to a-bombing Japan if the Nazi atom bomb project was as unsuccessful and subject to conceptual errors as the postwar Allied Legend makes it out to be!

But all of this — all of it — pales into insignificance when one compares it to the activities and actions of the German rocket scientists brought to Fort Bliss in El Paso, Texas, and who subsequently conducted V-2 test launches over the deserts of New Mexico, for when one considers these activities, one is confronted with clear indications that "our" Nazis may not really nor ultimately have been "ours" after all.

The first clue that "our" Nazis were a very independent group occurred during the test-firing of one of the captured German V-2 rockets in New Mexico. Since at that time our own Army Air Force had little to no experience with the clearing routines for launching such a -for that time — large rocket, the entire clearing routing and launch procedure was handled by the Nazi rocket scientists and technicians. Supervising the launch was a top rocket scientist of Von Braun's Peenemünde rocket team, Ernst Steinhoff. Various monitoring teams of Germans were stationed at various points around the launch area to monitor the track of the rocket with high powered telescopes and to report back to the central blockhouse, where Steinhoff had positioned himself, ready to abort the launch and blow up the rocket in mid-air if something should go wrong.

What happened next has gone down in history as a classic international incident. Shortly after launch, the V-2

> began to go astray, *reverse course*, and head straight south toward El Paso. Steinhoff knew the rocket was headed in the wrong direction but let it fly. It soared over El Paso, over the Mexican border, and finally crash-landed about three miles from a heavily populated Juarez business district. Mexican residents nearby fled in terror as the rocket exploded, leaving a huge crater 50 feet wide and 24 feet deep as it

> burrowed into the ground. The next day, red-faced officials in Washington had to explain to the Mexican government why the United States had launched a missile attack on their country.[63]

Steinhoff's attitude, however, in not aborting the launch but allowing it to continue on its wayward course towards the heavily populated civilian areas of El Paso and Juarez, Mexico, raise the possibility that the rocket's straying from course may not have been an accident at all, but part of some larger deliberate pattern.

Indeed, FBI and Army counter-intelligence regarded that area of northern Mexico "as ripe for a potential unhampered operation of foreign agents or sympathizers."[64] One U.S. counter-intelligence agent observed that former Nazi agents in that country had almost unlimited freedom of movement in Mexico. While the agent's concern was that northern Mexico was a base of operation for Russian intelligence against America's guided missile project,[65] the same could be said for any potential independent Nazi organization.

And such appears to actually have been the case, for one army counter-intelligence agent complained that the Nazi scientists, based at Fort Bliss in El Paso — the same Fort Bliss as was commanded by the General Montague mentioned in the Eisenhower Briefing Document as a member of the alleged super-secret Majestic-12 UFO study group — were under virtually no surveillance by U.S. Army counter-intelligence, nor was any attempt made "to place them in anything resembling custody."[66]

It gets worse, for prior to the rocket scientists' arrival in the U.S.A., the U.S. Army uncovered enough information to suggest that there was "a conspiracy among von Braun, (General Walter) Dornberger, and Dornberger's former chief of staff, Herbert Axster, to withhold information from U.S. officers." To give security clearances to such a group was, for this officer, "an obvious absurdity."[67] Nor does it stop there, for four months after "our" Nazi rocket scientists had signed their contracts to continue their wartime research for the U.S. Army, all surveillance of the Nazi scientists ceased entirely. Nor were the large amounts of their dependents — "including mistresses and maids" — ever surveilled when they went off the base at Fort Bliss,[68] and of course, that meant they could

easily slip back and forth across the border into northern Mexico, the very focus of concerns for some American counter-intelligence officers who worried about it functioning as a base of espionage operations against the United States!

As if all this were not enough, one U.S. Army officer, Colonel Frank Reed, had just returned from a visit to St. Louis, France, "where a comparable group of German rocket engineers worked for the French government. While there, the French commandant told Reed he suspected the Germans under French control were receiving orders from Germany and working toward a reemergence of the Third Reich."[69] Nor was this beyond the bounds of possibility, for the top Nazi scientists in this country kept open independent lines of communication oversees. Von Braun himself, for example, managed to smuggle a map out of the USA to family members in western occupied Germany showing the location of a hidden cache of documents, which he instructed his family to turn over to General Dornberger's wife, so that the general could use them "as a bargaining lever with U.S. officials."[70]

The pattern of independent behavior detected by the French commandant of German rocket scientists in France was soon paralleled by an odd pattern of behavior and incidents in the U.S.A., for it was eventually discovered that three of the Nazi scientists

> had illegal mail drops in El Paso where they received money from foreign or unknown sources and coded messages *from South America.* One German received $1,000 in cash *from Chile.* Another specialist not only maintained an illegal postal box but deposited $953 in his bank account in one month, even though his monthly salary was only $290. Neither Army (counterintelligence) nor FBI agents knew where that money came from, and by all appearances, no one cared to know how more than a third of the Paperclip group suddenly were able to buy expensive cars.
>
> Other incidents proved that security was a sham. Unsupervised German scientists with no visas illegally cross the border into Mexico for a little cheap wine, women, and song. Other specialists made frequent trips from White Sands to the El Paso home of a German-born woman who was under FBI investigation and described by her

neighbors as being so pro-Hitler during the war that local residents told her to “shut up or get out” of America.[71]

Argentina was, of course, the postwar headquarters to a large compound of Nazis near the southwestern Argentine town of San Carlos de Bariloche, and was an area in which Argentine security agents had repeatedly tracked the comings and goings of none other than Nazi Party Leader Martin Bormann.[72] Prior to the end of the war, the Nazis had turned over control of their vast radio transmitter network — the Bolivar network — throughout Latin America to their Argentine hosts. Such a network would have allowed any postwar Nazi organization to get messages to, and from, their comrades in New Mexico. And Chile, of course, was such a hotbed of postwar Nazi activity that it eventually became the home to the notorious Nazi *Cologna Dignidad*, which was instrumental in the overthrow of Marxist Salvadore Allende’s government in that country in the early 1970s.

This postwar Nazi organization was awash with cash and other convertible assets, so it takes little imagination to see where these Paperclip Nazi rocket scientists were getting their money. The only question is, In return for what?

The answer to that question may be provided by other curious “launch failures” of V-2 rockets over New Mexico, for compounding all the security problems that the Paperclip Nazis posed, there was another one:

> (Base) security officers began to suspect that the rockets were being sabotaged, a suspicion that increased sharply after the Juarez incident. In one month, three out of four rockets fired at (the White Sands Proving Ground) overshot the 90-mile-wide base and landed off course near heavily populated areas in New Mexico and Juarez. One landed four and a half miles south of Alamogordo, another crashed only two miles from Las Cruces, and the third ended up in Juarez. In addition to unanswered questions about what caused the erratic flights, *five cameras attached to one of the rockets were missing after the launch and parts from another missile that was launched never were found*.[73]

In other words, the Juarez Incident itself, along with all these others, may have been the result, not of an accident or faulty equipment, but of

deliberate design, and since the Nazi scientists and technicians themselves had virtually total control over the launch preparations and clearing routines for these rockets at that time, the conclusion seems unavoidable that they were acting for a "secret agenda" for their hidden overseas Nazi masters. And since at least one of these incidents involved cameras that were never recovered — cameras that perhaps busily clicked pictures over America's most sensitive defense installations at that time — it is possible that "our" Nazis were carrying out some intelligence function for their masters, who could only be other Nazis, for remember, the Paperclip Nazi contingent — "our" Nazis — were almost to a man not only ardently Nazi, but ardently anti-Communist, and could therefore hardly be suspected of spying for the Soviet Union.

There is consequently another implication to these potential Paperclip Nazi activities in New Mexico that raises the specter of an ugly possibility, for clearly their activities — their secret sources of funding, their mail drops, the "sabotaged" rocket launches that "mysteriously" land in Mexico, the missing cameras — imply that already within America's nascent space program there are two agendas at work: the American military's, and a deeper, more secret, Nazi one. There are already present in nascent form *two* space programs.

Indeed, the two space programs hypothesis was born out by the amazing fidelity by which the Nazi Paperclip scientists were able to mirror within the later National Aeronautics and Space Administration (NASA) almost exactly their roles and duties in Hitler's Third Reich and their rocket program at Peenemünde in Germany:

> The organization the Germans established at Marshall was almost an exact copy of the Peenemünde organization. "It had proved very efficient," said von Tiesenhausen. But it also meant that the Germans dominated the rocket program to such an extent that they held the chief and deputy slots of every major division and laboratory. And their positions at Marshall and the Kennedy Space Center at Cape Canaveral, Florida, were similar to those they had held during the war.

- The Peenemünde team's leader, Wernher von Braun, became the first director of the Marshall Space Flight Center.
- Mittelwerk's head of production, Arthur Rudolph, was named project director of the Saturn V rocket program.
- Peenemünde's V-2 flight test director, Kurt Debus, was the first director of the Kennedy Space Center.[74]

In fact, as we shall see in a subsequent chapter, the presence of the last man, Dr. Kurt Debus, in the very same capacity in the American program as he occupied in the Nazi one, is a significant indicator that the two space programs, a public one commanding rockets, and a secret one with a much more advanced technology, that were begun in Nazi Germany continued in the American one.

And the pattern of Nazi independence and pursuit of their own agenda, first hinted at in New Mexico with the curious "failures" of V-2 launches and the phenomenon of "missing pieces and cameras," also continued long afterward, for the second administrator of NASA during the seminal Mercury, Gemini, and Apollo years, James Webb, "complained that the Germans were circumventing the system by attempting to build the Saturn V in-house at the center."[75]

But there is one final clue that suggests one might be dealing with a Nazi agenda and organization whose dimensions and goals are truly staggering. In my book *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell* I outlined the conclusion of British researchers David Percy and Mary Bennett that when the launch schedules for Soviet and American unmanned lunar probes from the late 1950s and early 1960s is laid out side by side and compared, that it appears that there was some collusion taking place between the two ostensibly opposed and rival programs.[76] I also noted that if their observation was true, it would require some organizational presence on the ground both in the United States and in the Soviet Union in order to coordinate such a secret agenda, and the only such organization with an on-the-ground presence and penetration into both countries was precisely General Gehlen's "organization."[77]

But there is one final, potentially significant clue that with the whole subject of the Project Paperclip Nazis one has to do with double-dealing on

a massive scale, and it is a little known fact regarding one of the project heads of Operation Paperclip during 1959 and 1960: Colonel William Henry Whalen. Whalen was convicted in the 1960s of espionage....for the Soviet Union. In other words, one of the American officers running the Paperclip project during that time was a double agent for the Soviet Union![78] In this capacity, Whalen would have had some contact with the top Nazi scientists within NASA, or at least have had easy access to them and their files, and hence possibly have had easy access to NASA's mission plans. Of course, as suggested before, double agents ostensibly functioning within Gehlen's organization for the Soviet Union can just as easily be triple agents, functioning ultimately for an independent postwar Nazi International, an extraterritorial Nazi state. Was Whalen such a triple agent? We will never know, for if he was, the American government would hardly try and convict him on those grounds, and thereby acknowledge the existence of such an organization.

C. The Nazi International, and the Legacy of "Paperclip Detente"

1. The Initial Purpose of the Early Bilderberg Meetings

But *was* there such a postwar independent extraterritorial Nazi state, a "Nazi International"? Having written an entire book with exactly that theme, and exactly that *title*, I of course believe the answer to that question to be an unequivocal "yes," and a short review of my reasons for maintaining this organization exists are in order here.

One of the major and often overlooked clues that there is a postwar "detente" in place between elements of the Anglo-American elite and the Nazi International is the early Bilderberger Group itself. As most people know, the Bilderberger Group was the brain child of members of the Rockefeller and Rothschild dynasties on the one hand, and Prince Bernhard of the Netherlands on the other. These meetings of the North American and European elites began in 1954, and took their name from the hotel in which the first meeting was held, the Bilderberg Hotel in Osterbeek, Holland.

But Prince Bernhard of the Netherlands represented more than just a member of the European nobility, and something more than just a major

stockholder in Royal Dutch Shell. He was also an SS officer, and a senior manager for the vast, vastly powerful, and notorious German chemicals cartel, I.G. Farben. And the Nazi financial and corporate interests that he represented in those capacities were awash with a tremendous amount of cash that needed not only to be laundered, but to be safely out of reach of the prying eyes of American and British treasury agents intent upon shutting the postwar Nazi International down by seizing its ill-gotten booty. And the ones that could launder such vast amounts of money, and who stood to profit by having it on deposit in their banks and thus being able to expand their ledger credit entry making ability, were the international bankers in London and New York. It was inevitable, then, that the two groups whose essential political and economic philosophy (corporate fascism), and whose political aims (global domination), were one and the same should get together in a detente and make common cause for a period.

Inasmuch as Martin Bormann had the expressed and stated postwar goal of the creation of a "European Federation" that Germany would be able to dominate by "elastic political means,"[79] and inasmuch as the Anglo-American international bankers had much the same goal, the use of Nazi money to revitalize postwar Europe — carefully laundered through those very banks — the detente was an inevitability.

There is just one more consideration, however, that must be borne in mind. When those oligarchs from the Anglo-American corporate elite entered into this bargain, they, like Allen Dulles, were entering a bargain with an organization whose intentions and actions would always remain independent of them, and ultimately work to overthrow them. With Bormann, they were dealing with a criminal "godfather" who would make Mario Puzo's Don Corleone look like a gentle kitten by comparison. All that Nazi plunder and loot made available to them would come with some very high price tags, and eventually those markers would come due, and the organization existed to quite literally take those elitists out — permanently — should they be unwilling or unable to pay up when the time came. Moreover, that Nazi International was willing and able to continue to researching the radical technologies that would be able to force compliance if and when the need ever arose to do so.

The dynamic of the “Paperclip Detente” thus contains its own implicit agenda, for those oligarchs would inevitably have to see to it that that race was not won by their erstwhile Nazi partners. For both factions, it was a marriage of inconvenience, one that both parties knew would inevitably end in a divorce, as one or the other won that technological race. It is an inevitable consequence of this dynamic, therefore, that anything touching upon the development of such technologies would be seen by the home countries of that Anglo-American elite as having national security implications.

2. “Read my lips: No New Nazis”

As indicated in the previous discussion about the bargain struck between Nazi General Reinhard Gehlen and the American oligarch Allen Dulles, Gehlen’s organization commanded a vast network of “émigré fronts” of eastern European nationals whose homelands had been occupied by the Soviet Union. It was through those organizations that the Nazi International, via Gehlen’s spy organization, managed to exercise a great deal of hidden influence over American politics.

These exile and “expellee” organizations not only were found to be present on the peripheries of the assassination of President Kennedy — one need only think of Oswald’s association with George De Morhenschildt and the White Russian community in Dallas — but they played an important and influential role in Republican politics during the administrations of Ronald Reagan and George H.W. Bush, even making significant financial contributions to the latter during his 1988 presidential bid. They were, moreover, signally influential in President Ronald Reagan’s controversial visit to the Bitburg cemetery in Germany, where several Waffen SS soldiers are buried. To put it succinctly, Gehlen’s organization of “émigré fronts” of Fascists and Nazis was alive, well, organized, and politically powerful long after the general’s and Bormann’s deaths, and this means that the Nazi International continued to function as a cohesive and influential organization maintaining its original unreconstructed agenda.[80]

3. Richter’s “Fusion” Project at Huemul

That this Nazi International was also capable of pursuing its most advanced research projects independently of any of the Allied powers after the war is ably demonstrated by the so-called “controlled fusion” project of Nazi scientist Ronald Richter on Huemul Island near San Carlos de Bariloche, Argentina.[81] It was Richter’s opinion that quasi-fusion or full-fledged fusion processes taking place in a rotating plasma under conditions of extreme electrical stress were a potential gateway technology to be able to tap into and transduce the zero point energy. This opinion, of course, flew in the face of the standard models of thermonuclear fusion at that day (or even today). However, the United States Air Force took Richter’s work seriously enough that it quietly investigated him four years after his project was shut down in 1952. One American scientist characterized him as a “mad genius working in the 1970s,” so a closer, though certainly not extensive, look at his project is in order.

It is when one looks closely at Richter that one discovers numerous ties to Nazi Germany’s most highly classified and radically advanced secret weapons research project, the Bell. As I have detailed in previous books,[82] the Bell was classified uniquely within the Third Reich, and higher than its atom bomb project, which I believe, contrary to all public histories, to have been successful.[83] The Bell was a *gateway* technology, a hyper-dimensional torsion-based technology that the Nazis had developed to investigate its potential applications in three areas:

1) As a means to tap into the zero-point energy, or, to phrase it differently, the energy of the physical medium of space-time itself;
2) As a means to manipulate gravity itself, i.e., as an advanced prototypical field propulsion technology; and,
3) As a means to the ultimate, potentially planet-busting, weapon.

The conceptual key to the achievement of all these effects was the manipulation of rotating magnetic fields by means of the counter-rotation of a plasma within the device itself.

Very obviously, Richter’s opinions about rotating plasma connect conceptually and very directly to the Bell device. But the connections are more than just circumstantial. During 1943, Richter worked for the

Allgemeine Elektricitäts Gesellschaft in Nazi Germany on a highly classified project code-named “Charite-Anlage,” the exact code-name for the powerplant of the Bell device, and a project that connects him very directly to a Paperclip scientist in America, as we shall see in a subsequent chapter. Finally, all of Richter’s equipment in Argentina was supplied by the very same company! And in a final bit of high irony that can hardly be coincidental, at the very time that Richter was conducting his secret research ostensibly for Perón’s government in Argentina, Martin Bormann was in the exact same area according to Argentine intelligence!

When Juan Perón disclosed the existence of the project to the world in 1951, Richter was, of course, roundly denounced by the world scientific establishment for countenancing ideas that were entirely outside the standard models of quantum mechanics and thermonuclear fusion. At that juncture, Perón became suspicious of his own project, and ordered Argentine nuclear physicists to investigate it and report their results personally to him. During this investigation, however, Richter’s behavior was so eccentric and incompetent in front of the Argentine investigative commission that they concluded the man was a complete fraud, and recommended to Perón that the project be shut down.

However, Richter’s behavior was so *obviously* incompetent that it is evident that he was acting under orders from the project’s real masters — Argentina’s Nazis — to deliberately discredit it in the public eye so that they could shut it down and move it elsewhere before the Allied powers caught on to what was going on in Argentina. By the time of the mid-1950s, when the U.S. Air Force finally figured out that there was something beyond mere incompetence and fraud in Richter’s project, the project itself had long vanished and been transferred elsewhere.

In short, every indication is that the Nazis, *independently*, and using Argentina merely as a base of secret operations and research, were continuing to research and advance their most highly classified project from the war, the Bell, and were thus pursuing all three avenues of its application: “free” energy, field propulsion, and the ultimate doomsday weapon.

Is it conceivable that there could be a secret ongoing Nazi research project into advanced field propulsion concepts and from secret Nazi bases in Latin America, unknown to the victorious postwar Allied powers?

The answer that the Richter-Huemul "fusion" project clearly implies is a resounding "yes."

4. Corso's Unusual Statements and the Bell

All of this places the much-maligned Colonel Corso and some of the remarks in his book into rather a different perspective. Corso, who admitted he was no scientist or engineer, nevertheless made a short, and in this author's opinion, remarkable series of statements about the means whereby he alleged the Roswell craft actually "flew":

> The craft was able to displace gravity through the propagation of magnetic wave (sic), controlled by shifting the magnetic poles around the craft so as to control, or vector, not a propulsion system but the repulsion force of like charges. Once they realized this, engineers at our country's primary defense contractors raced among themselves to figure out how the craft could retain its electric capacity and how the pilots who navigated it could live within the energy field of a wave.[84]

What is remarkable about this is that one of the principal Nazi scientists involved with the Bell project, and who made his way to this country under the auspices of Project Paperclip, is reputed to be the very scientist who, along with Richter, proposed the concept of "magnetic fields separation" as a means of creating a coupling effect between magnetism and gravity via magnetic waves. Additionally, since the Bell's operative principle was precisely the counter-rotation of a plasma to achieve these effects, if this counter-rotation occurred with difference between the two rotations (or a "differential rotation"), it might be possible by this means to vector or direct the repulsive forces generated. Finally, as I noted in *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, the Polish researcher who first uncovered the Bell story, Igor Witkowski, disclosed the fact that during its first test, the Bell killed seven German scientists. Learning how to limit the effects of the field of the device quickly became a major concern to the German Bell scientists, for obviously, if it was ever to function as more than a prototype or gateway

technology and function as a *practical* field propulsion technology, learning to limit these deadly effects was a priority.[85]

Succinctly stated, Corso is once again pointing extraordinarily subtle fingers in the direction, not of extraterrestrials, but in the direction of Nazis, for the physics concepts implied in both are eerily similar. Indeed, when Corso's book was published in the late 1990s, Witkowski's early Bell research had already appeared in Poland. That Corso is letting something out of the bag is also further suggested by the fact that he was involved in Operation Paperclip, and most likely would have encountered the Nazi Bell scientist brought into this country and stationed at Fort Bliss under its auspices: Dr. Kurt Debus.

D. "Shoot them Down": UFOs, and the National Security State

The final general context with which one must contend is the overall phenomenon of UFOs in the immediate postwar period, and particularly in the United States. In this respect there are two interesting facts with which one must contend: (1) the repeated and very curious emphasis on the speed of these UFOs, which is far below anything practical for interplanetary, much less inter-stellar, travel in most cases; and (2) the equally curious U.S. Air Force policy during this time period of attempting to intercept and shoot these UFOs down *if they failed to respond to orders to land peacefully.*

1. The General Performance Characteristics of UFOs in the Period

One does not have to read very long nor very far in press reportage of UFO sightings in the postwar period to quickly discover an amazing thing: the reported performance characteristics of the objects — whatever they were — were far too low to be practical for any travel between planets in our own solar system, much less for travel *between* solar systems. The point is not a trivial one, for by that point in history, with unmanned space probes to the planets just a decade or so away, and with telescopic studies of the planets well underway, it was becoming increasingly obvious to scientists that our nearby celestial neighbors were very unlikely homes for intelligent

life, and thus, if the UFOs were extraterrestrial, they most likely had to come from outside the solar system.

However, to give but a very short catalogue of the performance characteristics recorded for these objects in the immediate postwar years, it becomes immediately evident that in all but a very few cases these characteristics are insufficient for any practical interplanetary travel:

1) In the very first modern postwar UFO sighting in the United States, the now famous sighting by civilian pilot Kenneth Arnold over Yakima, Washington, Arnold estimated the speed of the objects to be approximately 1,200 miles per hour. This 1,200 miles per hour figure was to become, curiously, a mainstay in many UFO reports from that era;
2) The 1,200 miles per hour figure was repeated in an Associated Press wire story that was picked up by the July 4, 1947 *New York Times*, which stated that the U.S. Army Air Force had dropped a study of UFOs that were travelling at approximately that speed;
3) Again, on July 7, 1947, as the Roswell Incident was just beginning to occur with Mac Brazel's trip to Roswell to show the debris to Sheriff Wilcox and Major Jesse Marcel, the *New York Times* ran another Associated Press article entitled "Military Planes Hunt Sky Discs With Cameras in Vain on Coast," in which an Air Force officer, Captain Tom Brown, stated "There is something to this. But we do not believe anyone in this country, or outside of this country has developed a guided missile to go 1,200 m.p.h.!" Of course, this was in a way pure dissembling, for the German V-2 was capable of similar speeds, and more importantly, German ramjet proponent Dr. Walter Lippisch had designed a delta-winged aircraft, the P-13, which reportedly was test flown shortly before the end of the Second World War at approximately that speed![86] Lippisch was one of the Paperclip scientists brought to Wright Field in Dayton, Ohio;
4) On April 8, 1950, even the renowned CBS broadcast journalist Ed Murrow got in on the act with a one half hour special documentary on UFOs, in which Murrow reported that the typical UFO was cigar shaped with a reported speed of between 1,200 and 1,500 miles per hour;

5) Other reports from the era reported speeds far below these, sometimes of only 80 to 100 miles per hour as the objects “hovered” at speeds that would stall an ordinary aircraft lifting body. On March 21, 1950, for example, the *Los Angeles Daily News* ran an article datelined Memphis, Tennessee, entitled “See ‘saucer’ with windows on bottom,” in which a pilot for an airline reported seeing a UFO traveling between 500 and 600 miles per hour;
6) On March 18, 1950, the Los Angeles *Mirror* ran an article entitled “Now What Was It You Saucer?” datelined Farmington, New Mexico, in which a UFO was reported to be travelling at approximately 1,000 miles per hour;
7) Significantly, the July 4, 1947 *New York Times* ran an article datelined Washington, in which it stated that “Wright Field (Dayton, Ohio) public relations officials said the Air Materiel Command is making an investigation of ‘saucer-shaped’ missiles seen recently in the Pacific Northwest and Texas,” clearly indicating thereby, and at the very time the Roswell Incident was about to unfold, that General Nathan Twining’s Air Materiel Command was already investigating the phenomenon, and thus making it even *that much more likely* that Twining’s sudden schedule change to New Mexico in the immediate aftermath of the Roswell Incident was for the express and covert purpose of taking control of investigating whatever had crashed there;
8) In yet another July 7, 1947 *New York Times* article, “Sky Discs Hunted by Coast Planes,” again published during the very time that the Roswell Incident was about to burst upon the world, the speeds of UFOs were said to be between a less-than-breathtaking 300 miles per hour and the by now familiar 1,200 miles per hour;
9) On July 11, 1947, *after* the Roswell Incident had exploded on the world stage only to be explained away just as quickly as a “weather balloon” by General Roger Ramey at his press conference in Fort Worth, the *New York Times* reversed its earlier “objective” reporting of UFOs by an article entitled “Yes, Disks Fly On, But Interest Lags,” in which the magical figure of 1,200 miles per hour appeared yet again, but this time in conjunction with a purely terrestrial technology being tested by Westinghouse Research Laboratories;

10) Finally, two articles carried by the Los Angeles *Daily News* entitled “Truman, top brass scoff at wild flying saucer rumors” and “Man chased by ‘flying saucer’ showering sparks” that ran on January 4, 1950 and April 25, 1950 respectively, reported incidents — and technologies — curiously and suggestively reminiscent of wartime foo fighter reports over Germany. The first article stated that a reporter for the magazine *US News and World Report*, Henry J. Taylor, maintained on an ABC broadcast that “there are two types of ‘flying saucers’ which the military has classified as secret. One, he said, is a harmless, pilotless disc which usually disintegrates in the air. Its purpose, he said, is a top military secret.” The other was a top secret aircraft being developed by the U.S. Navy at its test center at Patuxent, Maryland. The resemblances of a “harmless pilotless exploding disc” to the wartime reports of similar such discs over Nazi Germany is clearly evident. The second article equally invokes a comparison to the wartime foo fighters, for a 28-year-old man in Lufkin, Texas reported being showered with sparks from a flying saucer.

One could go on and on with such citations, but the point is clear, for the main performance characteristics of most of these sightings from that era are simply insufficient to warrant the conclusion that these objects, as a class, were of extraterrestrial origin. Indeed, in a few cases the resemblance to wartime foo fighter reports is all too palpable, and in one case there is an allegation that the U.S. military was continuing its development.

There are two staple counter-arguments to this conclusion, and they are that 1) while the performance characteristics may be insufficient to warrant an extraterrestrial conclusion of their origins, those characteristics may not represent the optimal performance of the objects, and 2) the objects are self-evidently too small to be of practical utility for long-range travel, and may therefore come from some “mothership” more suited for the purpose. However, both are arguments from silence.

This leaves us with three remaining logical possibilities:

1) the objects come from nearby local celestial space, unlikely given the previously stated difficulties of local planetary bodies being

capable of sustaining populations of intelligent life; or,

2) the `itself, and may represent some unknown subterranean or oceanic sub-surface civilization;[87] or,
3) the objects come from the Earth itself, and represent some advanced and terrestrial technology developed in great secrecy.

And within the historical record, as is by now evident, the only nation that clearly showed an interest in developing such advanced field propulsion technologies, and that moreover achieved in its Bell project a measure of success in that regard, was Nazi Germany. The only country with a proven interest in the development of advanced aerodynes with potentially supersonic capabilities, and that may actually have test flown such vehicles prior to the war's end, was Nazi Germany.

2. Shoot Them Down!

This brings us at last to the final context, the U.S. Air Force's curious "shoot down" policy of the early 1950s. In a remarkably well-researched, tightly argued, and well-documented study, one moreover that makes a compelling case for an extraterrestrial interpretation of the UFO flap of 1952 over the United States in general and the famous Washington, D.C. sightings of that year in particular, ufologist Frank Feschino presents case after case of attempted intercepts by the U.S. Air Force which was attempting to force the UFOs to land at American military bases, or, failing that, to shoot them down. Central to his book is the famous Flatwoods, West Virginia case where a UFO was encountered by civilians on land, who also saw and described strange and less-than-human sounding occupants. Feschino also makes a clear and compelling case that some of these UFOs were clearly in the company of a "mothership."

But our focus is on the curious implications of the Air Force's "shoot down" policy itself. Feschino reports that a wire story recorded by the *International News Service* from Washington, D.C., and carried by a few papers around the country, stated that an Air Force information officer, Lt. Colonel Moncel Monts, said that "The jet pilots are, and have been under orders to investigate unidentified objects and *to shoot them down if they*

can't talk them down."[88] In response to this, Feschino observes that the well-known ufologist of that era, Donald Keyhoe, mentioned that Robert Farnsworth, the president of the United States Rocket Society, sent a telegram to "President Truman, Secretary of Defense Robert Lovett, Army Secretary Frank Pace, Jr., and Navy Secretary, Dan Kimball," and that Farnsworth had given a copy to the United press International wire service, which is how Keyhoe apparently learned of it.[89] According to Feschino, the telegram contained the following points:

1.) "Urgently request reconsideration by your order to destroy flying saucers."
2.) "Remarkably advanced aerodynamics indicate probably intercelestial (sic) origin. Interference without more cause, than saucers friendly curiosity could cause unbelievable suffering and death."
3.) " I respectfully suggest that no offensive action be taken against the objects reported as unidentified which have been sighted over our nation."
4.) "Should they be extra-terrestrial, such action might result in the gravest consequences, as well as alienating us from beings of far superior powers. Friendly contact should be sought as long as possible."
5.) People much aroused and worried."[90]

Farnsworth's telegram, in other words, is arguing that since there was a potential that the technology evidenced in the UFOs was extraterrestrial, that Truman's "shoot down" order was endangering the United States by risking an open war with beings and a civilization potentially far in advance of our own.

That, indeed, is a true analysis and assessment.

Therewith is the problem, for as has been seen, in spite of their remarkable characteristics, the majority of UFO reports from that era simply do not evidence a physics or technology to be, as Farnsworth's telegram stated, "intercelestial" or extraterrestrial. This fact would have been evident to Truman's scientific and military advisors as well, thus making it in my opinion unlikely that either President Truman or the

military would have risked an “interplanetary war” since they had already concluded some objects were *not* extraterrestrial in origin. While it might be argued that Earth’s major power could not appear militarily weak to any potential extraterrestrial invader, such a policy would have quickly revealed our gross technological inferiority to that invader.

However, if Truman and his advisors had examined the performance characteristics of the objects carefully and considered their implications, they are likely to have reached similar conclusions as those advanced above, namely, that they were an advanced technology, to be sure, but a terrestrial one.

Additionally, if at any point the U.S. Air Force ever suspected that some of these UFOs actually represented the product on ongoing independent Nazi research, the motivations for Truman’s shoot down order become even more compelling, and for two reasons: first, the U.S. government could hardly risk the political embarrassment and exposure that any civilian knowledge or encounter with such technologies might bring. After all, the “Paperclip Detente” with all its secret intelligence and financial deals, was in place, and could be irreparably damaged by ch exposure and the questions it would inevitably prompt. But more importantly, even if only a minority of craft flying around the American skies in those turbulent postwar years were thought or suspected to be something Nazi, that fact alone would indicate to the American government that their presence was hostile, and that there technology, while advanced, was not sufficiently threatening at that juncture as to invite overwhelming retaliation.

Succinctly stated, Truman’s “shoot down” order makes the most rational sense only in a context that suggests that he and his advisors knew more about the origins of the objects than they were letting on publicly, and that they knew them to be terrestrial.

E. Conclusions

So what may be concluded from this survey of the “wider context”? First and foremost, while the vast majority of World War Two foo fighter reports do indeed suggest the phenomenon was relatively harmless to Allied aircraft and their crews, there are enough indications that it represented a

weapons technology capable of inflicting harm, and there are also enough indications that that technology emanated from Nazi Germany. It is thus simply untrue to maintain that there were no instances of them ever doing harm to Allied aircraft or crews, and it is equally foolish to dismiss the ramifications and implications of that technology for the UFO phenomenon in the postwar period in general, and for the Roswell Incident in particular.

Secondly, the postwar Nazi penetration into sensitive areas of the American military-industrial-intelligence complex was both in depth and in breadth, and "our" Nazis showed disturbing signs of independence from their new masters, even so far as to conduct clandestine operations against them via the V-2 launches they were ostensibly conducting for them.

Thirdly, that postwar Nazi organization survived as more than just a few isolated enclaves in Latin America, for as the case of Ronald Richter's "fusion" project in Argentina evidences, it was well-organized and able to fund and conduct continuing research into the physics principles embodied in its most sensitive and highly classified wartime research project. This implies that it could also, just as easily, have continued its other wartime research projects into less-advanced, but nevertheless still very exotic, aerodynes and "saucers."

Finally, via whatever intelligence it may have been receiving from "our" Nazis in New Mexico and elsewhere in the country, that organization, if in possession of those early prototypical Nazi saucers, would likely have attempted to corroborate that intelligence by conducting its own reconnaissance, confident that its technologies were in advance of anything the U.S. Air Force could throw up against it.

So, in that context then, what if President Truman, in addition to having all the corroborating performance characteristics that indicated that some UFOs were indeed of terrestrial origin, had also sure and certain knowledge that they *were* of terrestrial origin, and that he would hardly be risking an interplanetary war with a potentially vastly superior opponent by issuing his "shoot down" order?

As the context now begins to narrow and to focus once again on that incident in the New Mexico desert in the summer of 1947, it will become increasingly clear that none of the data points themselves change; what changes are the interpretations of the military's near-panicked reactions and motivations for the subsequent cover-up; what changes are the

interpretations of the three key components of the Roswell data set: the documents, the bodies, and finally, what was always at the core of the story of the Roswell Incident, the technology.

---

[1] Keith Chester, *Strange Company: Military Encounters with UFOs in WWII* (San Antonio: Anomalist Books, 2007), pp. 3-4. Chester's much-needed and well-researched book fills the historical gap in ufology, for it is without question the only major study of the Foo Fighter phenomenon.

[2] "Revised Security Report on German (Or Austrian) Scientist or Important Technician; Subject: Dr. Kurt Debus, 29, September, 1948" National Archives and Record Administration, Paperclip files, Rg. No 319, Stack Area 270, Row 84, Compartment 2, Shelf 4, Box 35.

[3] Keith Chester, *Strange Company*, p. 1.

[4] Ibid.

[5] Ibid.

[6] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 2.

[7] Chester, *Strange Company*, p. 3.

[8] Chester, *Strange Company*, p. 3, citing Timothy Good, *Above Top Secret: The Worldwide UFO Cover-Up* (William Morrow and Company, 1988), p. 13.

[9] Chester, *Strange Company*, p. 7, emphasis added.

[10] Ibid., pp. 7-8.

[11] Ibid., p. 8.

[12] Ibid.

[13] Ibid.

[14] Chester, *Strange Company*, p. 9.

[15] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 2.

[16] Chester, *Strange Company*, p. 35.

[17] "Fortresses:" i.e., the U.S. Air Force's B-17 "Flying Fortress" strategic bomber.

[18] Caidin is citing the Memorandum of October 24, 1943, from Major E.R.T. Holmes, F.L.O., 1st Bombardment Division. Reference

FLO/1BW/REP/126, to M.I. 15. War Office, Whitehall, London, S.W. (copy to Colonel E.W. Thomson, A-2, Pinetree).

[19] Martin Caidin, *Black Thursday* (New York: Bantam, 1987), pp. 155-156, emphasis added.

[20] FW-190's: Focke-Wulfe 190 fighters, Germany's mainstay fighter of World War two and a formidable aerial opponent.

[21] ME 109's: Messerschmitt 109 fighters, Germany's other major fighter of the war, but outclassed by the FW 190.

[22] JU 88, Junkers 88s, a twin-engine tactical bomber also modified by the Germans for fighter-interceptor and night-fighting roles.

[23] E/A: enemy aircraft.

[24] Chester, *Strange Company*, p. 43, citing Confidential Memo, Attention: A-2 Duty Desk, First BW, Subject: Additional Information On the Observation fo Silvery Colored Discs on Mission To Stuttgart, 6 Sept., 1943. (National Archives and Records Administration). Chester also states "Note the different terminology used in the description of the objects. They are described initially as "discs," but then "balls" within the same paragraph."(p. 229)

[25] Ibid., p. 44, the term is Chester's.

[26] Ibid., pp. 44-45.

[27] Chester, *Strange Company*, pp. 45-56, emphasis added.

[28] Ibid., 47.

[29] Ibid., p. 36, emphasis added.

[30] Chester, *Strange Company*, p. 39, emphasis added.

[31] See my *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 99-116; 194, 206-216; *SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 145-148. The story of Kammler's "think tank" was first broken by British journalist Tom Agoston in a crucial book entitled *Blunder! How the U.S. Gave Away Nazi Supersecrets to Russa* (New York:Dodd, Mead and Company, 1985). While this author has argued that most of those "supersecrets" fell into American hands, or, worse, that the most radical and exotic of these supersecrets remained in Nazi hands after the war, Agoston's book is signally important in that it was the first public recounting of the Kammler Group and the first disclosure that much more was going on inside of Nazi Germany besides the development of jet

aircraft and rockets. Henry Steven's book *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), contains much useful information on the Kammler Group on pp. 1-5, 324-331.

[32] Chester, *Strange Company*, p. 16.

[33] Ibid., p. 30.

[34] See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 112-115; 272-278.

[35] Chester, *Strange Company*, p. 61.

[36] Ibid., p. 56.

[37] Ibid., pp. 68-69.

[38] Chester, *Strange Company*, p. 80, emphasis added.

[39] In this regard, readers are referred to my book *Secrets of the Unified Field: The Philadelphia Experiment, the Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory*, pp. 296-312, where I recount "the Czech Incident," the postwar incursion into Czechoslovakia by a secret team of U.S. commandos to recover "documents." The incursion led to an international incident and to an internal Pentagon and State Department investigation. As the documents reproduced in *Secrets of the Unified Field* reveal, neither the Pentagon nor the State Department could ascertain who gave the orders for the incursion (if they are telling, that is!). As I detail there, the incursion would appear to be the work either of some very secret private group within American intelligence and operating outside the normal chain of command of military intelligence, or the incursion may have been staged by postwar cells of the SS, masquerading as Americans in a classic false flag operation.

[40] Chester, *Strange Company*, p. 124.

[41] Linda Hunt, *Secret Agenda: The United States Government, Nazi Scientists, and Project Paperclip, 1945-1990* (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1991), p. 1.

[42] I discuss the bargain between Gehlen and Dulles in my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 75-77.

[43] Jim Keith, *Mind Control and UFOs: Casebook on Alternative 3*, pp. 46-47, citing Heinz Hohne and Hermann Zolling, *The General Was a Spy: The Truth About General Gehlen and His Spy Ring* (New York: Bantam Books, 1972).

[44] Keith, *Mind Control and UFOs: Casebook on Alternative 3*, p. 28, cited in my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, p. 76.

[45] Christopher Simpson, *Blowback: The First Full Account of America's Recruitment of Nazis and its Disastrous Effect on our Domestic and Foreign Policy* (New York: Collier Books, 1988), p. 60.

[46] General Clay's personal staff was directly involved in the interrogation of Kammler Group liaison Dr. Wilhelm Voss, and which ordered him *not* to speak openly about the Kammler Group. See Tom Agoston, *Blunder*, pp. 115-116.

[47] Simpson, *Blowback*, p. 61.

[48] Ibid., p. 52.

[49] As I indicated in my book *The Nazi International*, the CIA, using this Nazi network, was behind the overthrow of King Farouk in Egypt and the installation of Gamel Abdul Nasser. German SS commando Otto Skorzeny, Hitler's Reichsbank president Hjalmar Schacht, Kammler's civilian liaison, Dr. Wilhelm Voss were but a few of the Nazis training Nasser's military and intelligence services and planning to equip him with missiles and other advanced technologies. As I also showed there, a "former" Nazi working in the Soviet Union's Foreign Ministry in its Arab desk was also highly influential in Nasser's decision to kick the western advisors out and to bring in the Soviet Union. The Nazis had, before the war, and during this postwar Egyptian episode, cultivated contact with radical Muslim groups headed by Banna, the Grand Mufti of Jerusalem, Al Husseini, and his cousin, Yasser Arafat, whom Skorzeny met and, presumably, trained. The dirtiest part of this orchestrated stalemate is the secret Nazi SS-Zionist cooperation before and during the war: See Simpson, *Blowback*, p. 253.

[50] Joseph P. Farrell, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, p. 77.

[51] Hunt, *Secret Agenda*, p. 10.

[52] Ibid., p. 2.

[53] Ibid., p. 3.

[54] Hunt, *Secret Agenda*, p. 26.

[55] Ibid., p. 4.

[56] Ibid., p. 9, emphasis added.

[57] Ibid., p. 11.

[58] Ibid., pp. 14, 23. One of these was Prof. Dr. Alexander Lippisch, who had produced a design for a delta-wing supersonic ramjet aircraft which may have actually been produced and test flown prior to the war's end. See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 20-22.

[59] Hunt, *Secret Agenda*, pp. 15-16.

[60] Ibid., p. 24.

[61] Hunt, *Secret Agenda*, pp. 30-31.

[62] Ibid., p. 34.

[63] Hunt, *Secret Agenda*, p. 42.

[64] Ibid., p. 43.

[65] Ibid.

[66] Ibid., p. 42.

[67] Ibid., p. 44.

[68] Hunt, *Secret Agenda*, pp. 48-49.

[69] Ibid., p. 52.

[70] Ibid.

[71] Hunt, *Secret Agenda*, p. 51, emphasis added.

[72] See my *The Nazi international*, pp. 302-312.

[73] Hunt, *Secret Agenda*, pp. 50-51, emphasis added.

[74] Hunt, *Secret Agenda*, p. 218.

[75] Ibid., p. 219.

[76] See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 120-123.

[77] Ibid., pp. 135-136.

[78] Hunt, *Secret Agenda*, p. 2.

[79] See my *The Nazi International*, pp. 63-83.

[80] For a much fuller discussion of these organizations and their significant influence in national Republican politics during the Reagan-Bush era, see Russ Bellant's *Old Nazis, The New Right, and the Republican Party: Domestic Fascist Networks and Their Effect on U.S. Cold War Politics* (Boston: South End Press, 1991). See especially pp. v, xi, xiii, xvii-xviii, 35-36. One of the groups praised formally in a letter on White House letterhead by President Ronald Reagan was the World Anti-Communist League (p. 62). This group Martin A. Lee characterized as "Nazi infested." (See Martin A. Lee, *The Beast Reawakens* (New York: Routledge, 2000), p.

226n.) One forum that Bellant mentions as having two prominent German and Nazi industrials on its advisory board is the suggestively-named "National Military-Industrial Conference" of 1959, a group issuing foreign policy analysis(p. 35). This is yet another indicator that President Eisenhower may have had more in mind than just America's "home-grown" military-industrial complex when he issued his famous warning to the American people upon leaving office.

[81] For a fuller discussion of Richter, his project, and subsequent American interest in it, see my *Nazi International*, pp. 249-350. The summary presented here is based upon the research and documentation presented in *The Nazi International.*

[82] *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell: The Nazi's Incredible Secret Technology; Secrets of the Unified Field: The Philadelphia Experiment, the Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory;* and *The Nazi International* (all available from Adventures Unlimited Press), and *The Phillosphers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Feral House).

[83] See my *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2004), pp. 3-156.

[84] Corso and Birnes, *The Day After Roswell*, p. 100.

[85] Farrell, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 172-179.

[86] Farrell, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 20-23.

[87] In this respect many ufologists have pointed out the numerous cases of USOs, or unidentified submarine objects emerging from or plunging into the oceans of the world.

[88] Frank Feschino, *Shoot Them Down! The Flying Saucer Air Wars of 1952* (2007), p. 3, emphasis added.

[89] Feschino, *Shoot Them Down!*, p. 52.

[90] Ibid., p. 53.

13
The Documents:
The Nazi Scenario from the Internal Evidence and the Wider Context

"Ruppelt wrote: 'As 1947 drew to a close, the Air Force's Project Sign had
outgrown its initial panic and had settled down to a routine operation. Every
intelligence report dealing with the German's World War II aeronautical
research had been studied to find out if the Russians could have developed any
of the late German designs into flying saucers.' The conclusion was no. The
flying saucers were not an extrapolation of German designs."
Kevin D. Randle[1]

The Air Force, so the argument runs, had concluded that the saucers were not anything Soviet, nor anything based on German designs, nor were they ours. But if they were not Soviet, nor ours, then what, and whose, were they? "If the flying saucers were real, and they weren't based on terrestrial technology, a new answer began to push to the front. The disks were obviously extraterrestrial in origin."[2] *Et voila*, having thus supposedly eliminated all of the terrestrial possibilities, the only conclusion left was the highly improbable one.

But a simple examination of the inherent logical implications of these sorts of arguments and statements will reveal more hidden and dangerous assumptions, and they are assumptions that no experienced intelligence analyst or officer would ever make: firstly, there is the assumption that the

Americans learned everything there was to know about wartime Nazi secret research into advanced aerodynes. Secondly, these arguments do not exhaust all the terrestrial possibilities. Recall, for a moment, that the pre-war sightings of UFOs or "mystery aircraft" in Scandinavia did not call forth extraterrestrial explanations just because the Scandinavian militaries could not identity a terrestrial origin for what they were dealing with. Rather, they reached an improbable conclusion, but one that was *less* improbable than the extraterrestrial one: they were dealing with something that came from a "secret base," i.e., a hidden and unknown terrestrial source.

In the previous chapter we surveyed some standard UFO reports of the postwar era, and showed that many if not most of them recorded performance characteristics far below anything required for them to have been practical interplanetary technologies. Given this dataset, the U.S. Air Force in my opinion would have been extremely *unlikely* to have considered the possibility at that time that they were dealing with something extraterrestrial, though by the nature of intelligence analysis, they would not have ruled it out either.

In two previous books I have analyzed the Cooper-Cantwheel set of Majic-12 documents from the standpoint of the internal evidence that they present concerning the technologies alleged for the Roswell craft, rather than from the standpoint of whether or not they were authentic. I came to the interesting conclusion that the "Roswell dialectic" was operable in almost all of them, with the exception of one. I noted there that the same two datasets — the bodies and the debris — were present, and that the bodies tended to support the extraterrestrial interpretation, while the debris, though exotic, tended to support the terrestrial one. I noted further that in the case of the bodies, all the details had been blacked out from the documents, leaving one with bare assertion and an argument from silence, while the technological details were abundant, if not bizarre and peculiar. The most bizarre and peculiar of these details also tended to point in a certain direction, and in the case of one set of documents, clearly and unambiguously so; they pointed to Nazi Germany.[3] From the internal evidence of those otherwise dubious documents, it appeared to this author

that Friedman was correct: whoever was “leaking” them, or forging them, appeared to have access to a great deal of information.

A. The Indisputably Authentic Documents

But what do the indisputably authentic documents say? And what conclusions and implications can be derived from them?

Here, as they say, “Ze plot thickens.”

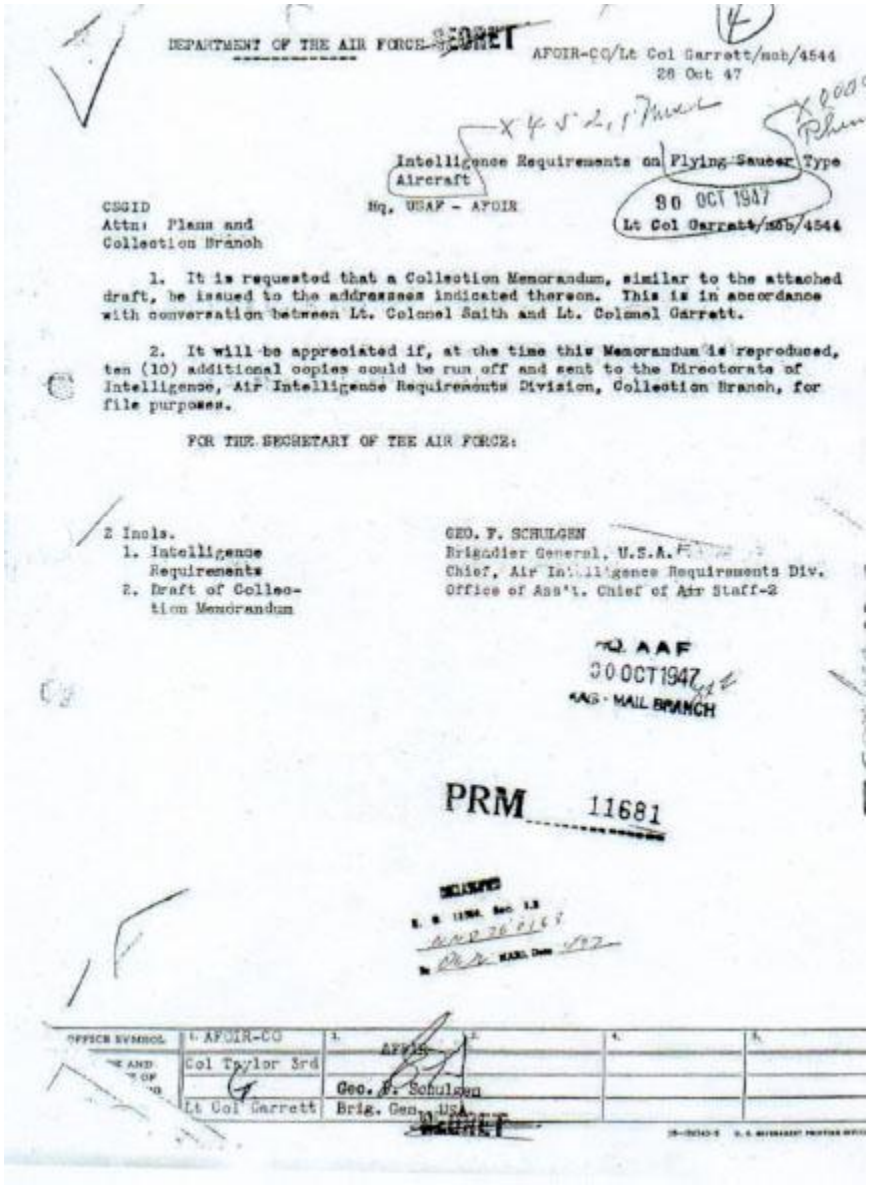
There are three indisputably authentic documents that have become a focus for ufologists, and in particular for the Roswell research community, both “believer” and “skeptic,” and here, as elsewhere, both poles of the “Roswell dialectic” are active in each community, as each seeks to interpret certain statements within them as being corroborative of their respective “extraterrestrial” or “skeptical” interpretations. Those three documents are the “Schulgen Collection Memorandum,” the “Twining-Schulgen Memorandum,” and the FBI’s “Disc Communiqué.” As will now be argued, there are in each of these documents certain statements that clearly indicate that the Air Force was concerned about the continuing development of wartime Nazi technology, and which can be interpreted as suggesting that it was increasingly waking up to the possibility, not that some UFOs were of extraterrestrial origin, but that they possibly might be representative of an origin within some independent postwar Nazi organization. Additionally, when taken as a whole, these documents, plus one additional one never considered in this regard, present an interesting *Gestalt* that argues persuasively if not perhaps compellingly for that conclusion.

When this *Gestalt* is added to the U.S. Air Force’s rather late and covert interest in the “fusion” research of Nazi scientist Dr. Ronald Richter in Argentina during 1949-1951, an even more interesting *Gestalt* results, one that clearly suggests that a genuine concern has arisen within certain circles of the U.S. military that they might be dealing in *some* cases with an independent Nazi group with access to some very sophisticated and extraordinary technology. As we shall discover, it is during this precise time period, the 1950s, that publications on the subject of anti-gravity all but disappear in the open literature.

1. The Schulgen Collection Memorandum, 28 October, 1947

In late October, 1947, *after* the Roswell Incident had already occurred, Brigadier General George F. Schulgen composed a memorandum outlining the intelligence collection needs of the United States Air Force. Since one of the intended recipients of the memorandum was the Secretary of the Air Force, the document makes for interesting and illuminating reading.

I will reproduce the actual documents of this memoradum, and then its text, before proceeding to an analysis of its highly illuminating contents.



DEPARTMENT OF THE AIR FORCE SECRET

AFOIR-CC/Lt Col Garrett/mab/4544
28 Oct 47

Intelligence Requirements on Flying Saucer Type Aircraft

CSGID
Attn: Plans and Collection Branch

Hq, USAF - AFOIR

30 OCT 1947
Lt Col Garrett/mab/4544

1. It is requested that a Collection Memorandum, similar to the attached draft, be issued to the addressees indicated thereon. This is in accordance with conversation between Lt. Colonel Smith and Lt. Colonel Garrett.

2. It will be appreciated if, at the time this Memorandum is reproduced, ten (10) additional copies could be run off and sent to the Directorate of Intelligence, Air Intelligence Requirements Division, Collection Branch, for file purposes.

FOR THE SECRETARY OF THE AIR FORCE:

2 Incls.
1. Intelligence Requirements
2. Draft of Collection Memorandum

GEO. F. SCHULGEN
Brigadier General, U.S.A.
Chief, Air Intelligence Requirements Div.
Office of Ass't. Chief of Air Staff-2

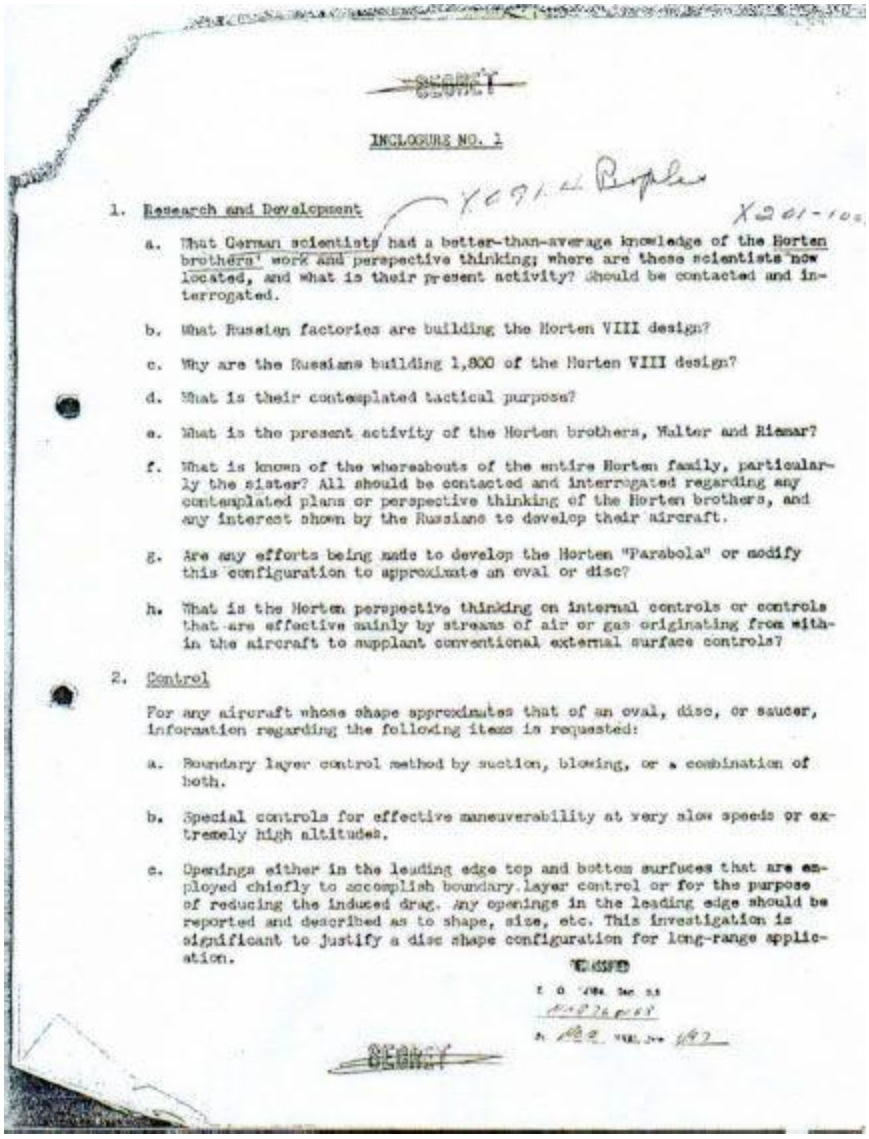
HQ AAF
30 OCT 1947
AG - MAIL BRANCH

PRM 11681

OFFICE SYMBOL	1. AFOIR-CC	2. AFOIR	3.	4.	5.
NAME AND TITLE OF	Col Taylor 3rd				
	Lt Col Garrett	Geo. F. Schulgen Brig. Gen., USA			

SECRET

Schulgen Intelligence Collection Memorandum, Page 1



~~SECRET~~

INCLOSURE NO. 1

1. Research and Development

a. What German scientists had a better-than-average knowledge of the Horten brothers' work and perspective thinking; where are these scientists now located, and what is their present activity? Should be contacted and interrogated.

b. What Russian factories are building the Horten VIII design?

c. Why are the Russians building 1,800 of the Horten VIII design?

d. What is their contemplated tactical purpose?

e. What is the present activity of the Horten brothers, Walter and Reimar?

f. What is known of the whereabouts of the entire Horten family, particularly the sister? All should be contacted and interrogated regarding any contemplated plans or perspective thinking of the Horten brothers, and any interest shown by the Russians to develop their aircraft.

g. Are any efforts being made to develop the Horten "Parabola" or modify this configuration to approximate an oval or disc?

h. What is the Horten perspective thinking on internal controls or controls that are effective mainly by streams of air or gas originating from within the aircraft to supplant conventional external surface controls?

2. Control

For any aircraft whose shape approximates that of an oval, disc, or saucer, information regarding the following items is requested:

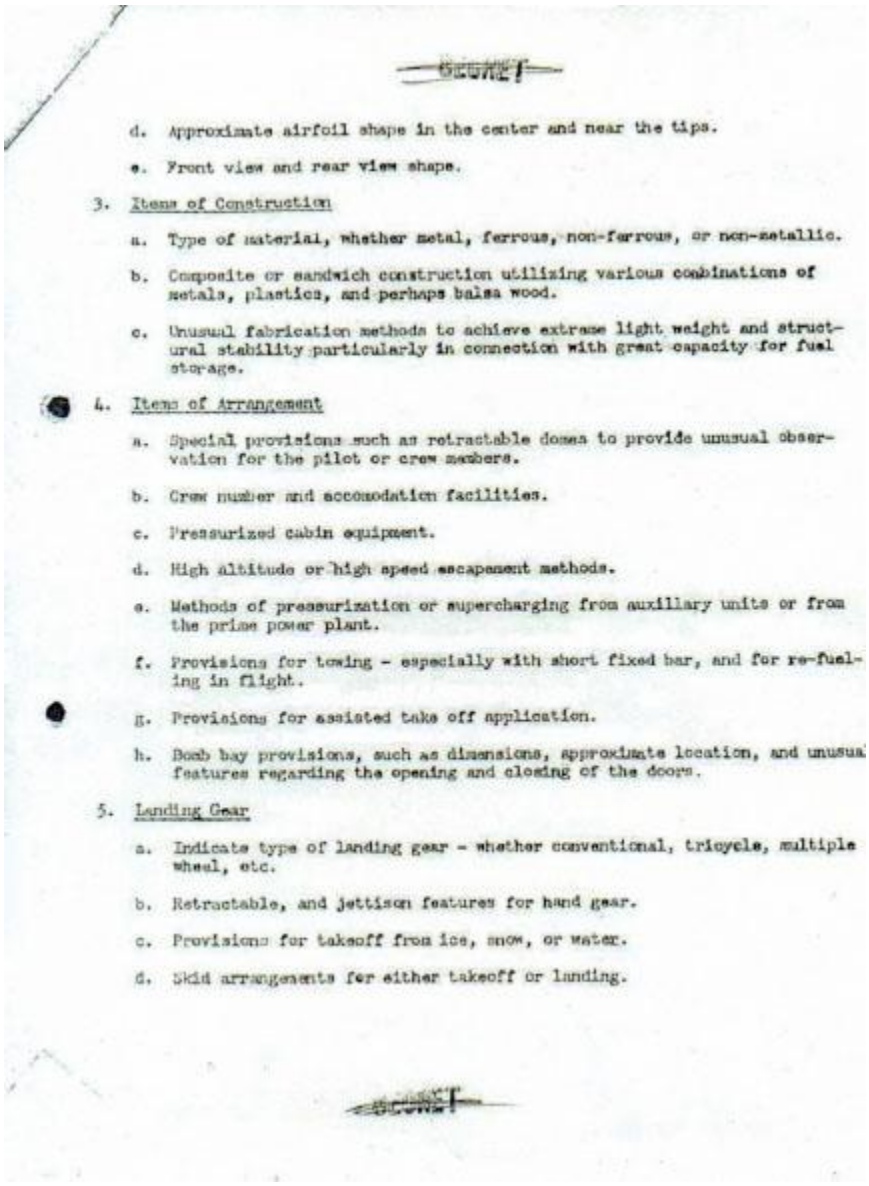
a. Boundary layer control method by suction, blowing, or a combination of both.

b. Special controls for effective maneuverability at very slow speeds or extremely high altitudes.

c. Openings either in the leading edge top and bottom surfaces that are employed chiefly to accomplish boundary layer control or for the purpose of reducing the induced drag. Any openings in the leading edge should be reported and described as to shape, size, etc. This investigation is significant to justify a disc shape configuration for long-range application.

~~SECRET~~

Schulgen Intelligence Collection Memorandum, Page 2



SECRET

d. Approximate airfoil shape in the center and near the tips.

e. Front view and rear view shape.

3. Items of Construction

a. Type of material, whether metal, ferrous, non-ferrous, or non-metallic.

b. Composite or sandwich construction utilizing various combinations of metals, plastics, and perhaps balsa wood.

c. Unusual fabrication methods to achieve extreme light weight and structural stability particularly in connection with great capacity for fuel storage.

4. Items of Arrangement

a. Special provisions such as retractable domes to provide unusual observation for the pilot or crew members.

b. Crew number and accomodation facilities.

c. Pressurized cabin equipment.

d. High altitude or high speed escapement methods.

e. Methods of pressurization or supercharging from auxillary units or from the prime power plant.

f. Provisions for towing - especially with short fixed bar, and for re-fueling in flight.

g. Provisions for assisted take off application.

h. Bomb bay provisions, such as dimensions, approximate location, and unusual features regarding the opening and closing of the doors.

5. Landing Gear

a. Indicate type of landing gear - whether conventional, tricycle, multiple wheel, etc.

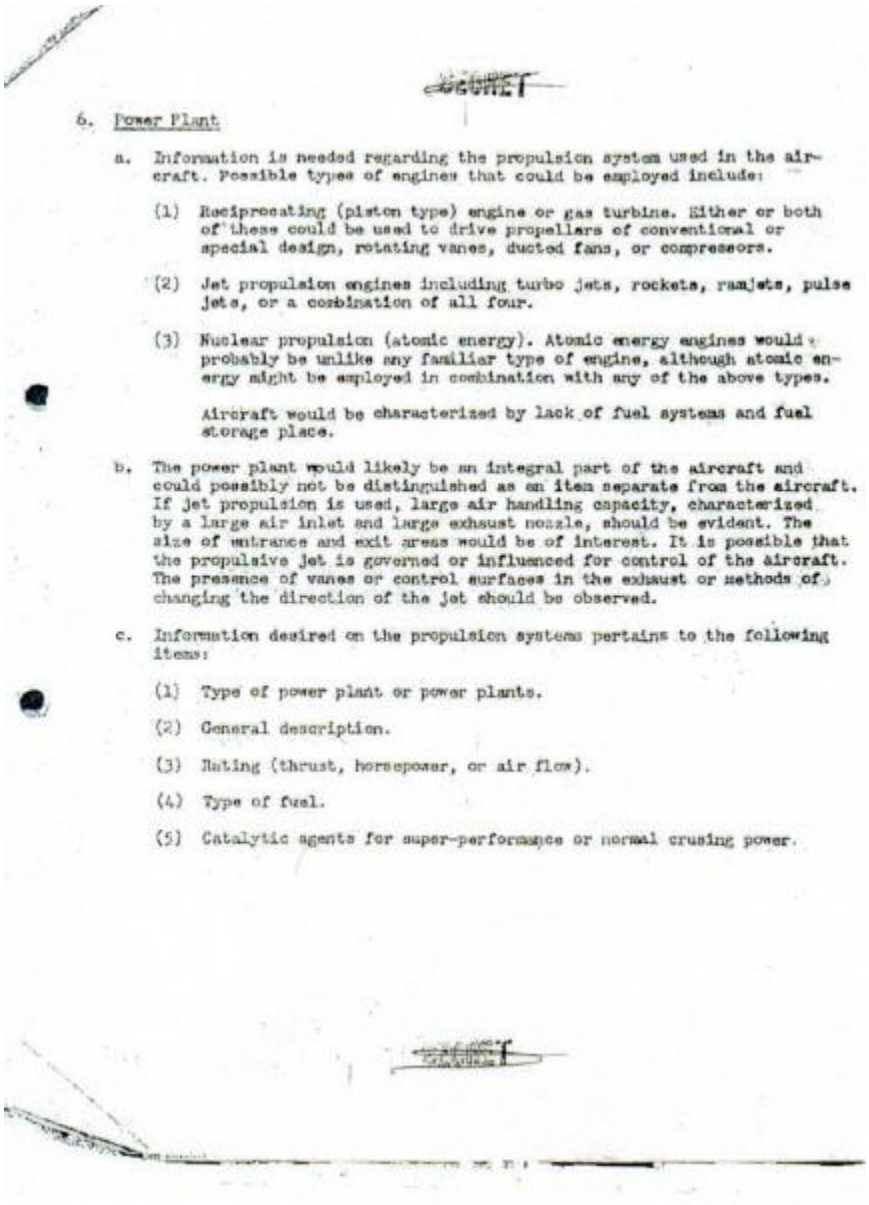
b. Retractable, and jettison features for hand gear.

c. Provisions for takeoff from ice, snow, or water.

d. Skid arrangements for either takeoff or landing.

SECRET

Schulgen Intelligence Collection Memorandum, Page 3



~~SECRET~~

6. Power Plant

a. Information is needed regarding the propulsion system used in the aircraft. Possible types of engines that could be employed include:

(1) Reciprocating (piston type) engine or gas turbine. Either or both of these could be used to drive propellers of conventional or special design, rotating vanes, ducted fans, or compressors.

(2) Jet propulsion engines including turbo jets, rockets, ramjets, pulse jets, or a combination of all four.

(3) Nuclear propulsion (atomic energy). Atomic energy engines would probably be unlike any familiar type of engine, although atomic energy might be employed in combination with any of the above types.

Aircraft would be characterized by lack of fuel systems and fuel storage place.

b. The power plant would likely be an integral part of the aircraft and could possibly not be distinguished as an item separate from the aircraft. If jet propulsion is used, large air handling capacity, characterized by a large air inlet and large exhaust nozzle, should be evident. The size of entrance and exit areas would be of interest. It is possible that the propulsive jet is governed or influenced for control of the aircraft. The presence of vanes or control surfaces in the exhaust or methods of changing the direction of the jet should be observed.

c. Information desired on the propulsion systems pertains to the following items:

(1) Type of power plant or power plants.

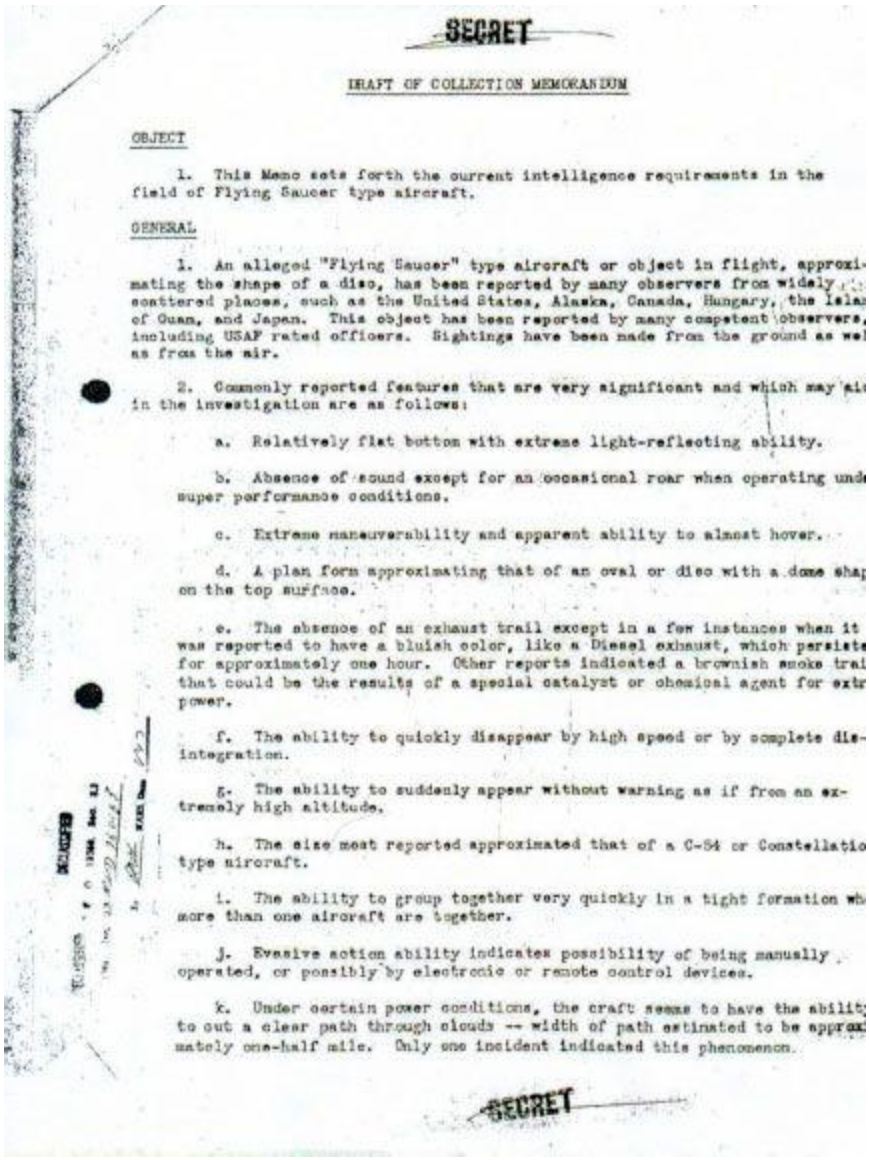
(2) General description.

(3) Rating (thrust, horsepower, or air flow).

(4) Type of fuel.

(5) Catalytic agents for super-performance or normal cruising power.

Schulgen Intelligence Collection Memorandum, Page 4



SECRET

DRAFT OF COLLECTION MEMORANDUM

OBJECT

1. This Memo sets forth the current intelligence requirements in the field of Flying Saucer type aircraft.

GENERAL

1. An alleged "Flying Saucer" type aircraft or object in flight, approximating the shape of a disc, has been reported by many observers from widely scattered places, such as the United States, Alaska, Canada, Hungary, the Islands of Guam, and Japan. This object has been reported by many competent observers, including USAF rated officers. Sightings have been made from the ground as well as from the air.

2. Commonly reported features that are very significant and which may aid in the investigation are as follows:

a. Relatively flat bottom with extreme light-reflecting ability.

b. Absence of sound except for an occasional roar when operating under super performance conditions.

c. Extreme maneuverability and apparent ability to almost hover.

d. A plan form approximating that of an oval or disc with a dome shape on the top surface.

e. The absence of an exhaust trail except in a few instances when it was reported to have a bluish color, like a Diesel exhaust, which persisted for approximately one hour. Other reports indicated a brownish smoke trail that could be the results of a special catalyst or chemical agent for extra power.

f. The ability to quickly disappear by high speed or by complete disintegration.

g. The ability to suddenly appear without warning as if from an extremely high altitude.

h. The size most reported approximated that of a C-54 or Constellation type aircraft.

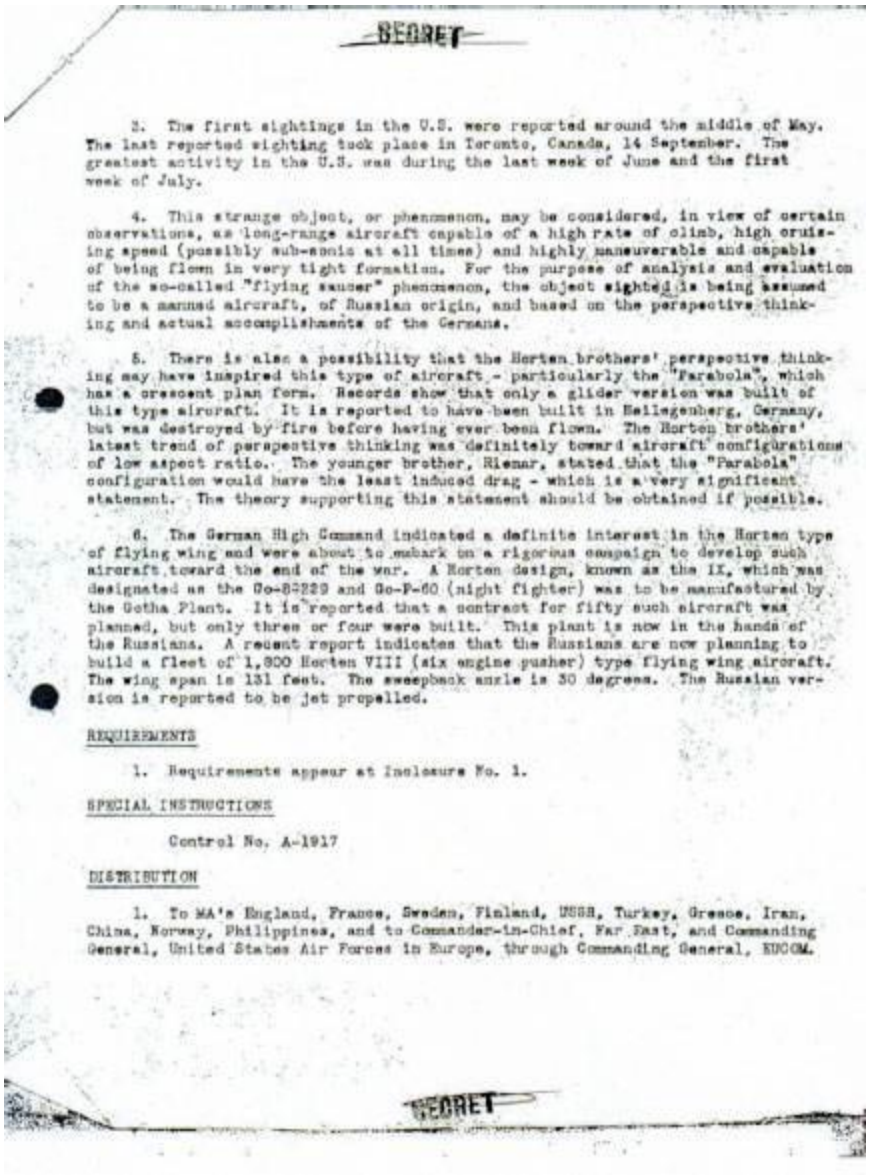
i. The ability to group together very quickly in a tight formation when more than one aircraft are together.

j. Evasive action ability indicates possibility of being manually operated, or possibly by electronic or remote control devices.

k. Under certain power conditions, the craft seems to have the ability to cut a clear path through clouds -- width of path estimated to be approximately one-half mile. Only one incident indicated this phenomenon.

SECRET

Schulgen Intelligence Collection Memorandum, Page 5



SECRET

3. The first sightings in the U.S. were reported around the middle of May. The last reported sighting took place in Toronto, Canada, 14 September. The greatest activity in the U.S. was during the last week of June and the first week of July.

4. This strange object, or phenomenon, may be considered, in view of certain observations, as long-range aircraft capable of a high rate of climb, high cruising speed (possibly sub-sonic at all times) and highly maneuverable and capable of being flown in very tight formation. For the purpose of analysis and evaluation of the so-called "flying saucer" phenomenon, the object sighted is being assumed to be a manned aircraft, of Russian origin, and based on the perspective thinking and actual accomplishments of the Germans.

5. There is also a possibility that the Horten brothers' perspective thinking may have inspired this type of aircraft - particularly the "Parabola", which has a crescent plan form. Records show that only a glider version was built of this type aircraft. It is reported to have been built in Hellegenberg, Germany, but was destroyed by fire before having ever been flown. The Horten brothers' latest trend of perspective thinking was definitely toward aircraft configurations of low aspect ratio. The younger brother, Riemar, stated that the "Parabola" configuration would have the least induced drag - which is a very significant statement. The theory supporting this statement should be obtained if possible.

6. The German High Command indicated a definite interest in the Horten type of flying wing and were about to embark on a rigorous campaign to develop such aircraft toward the end of the war. A Horten design, known as the IX, which was designated as the Go-8229 and Go-P-60 (night fighter) was to be manufactured by the Gotha Plant. It is reported that a contract for fifty such aircraft was planned, but only three or four were built. This plant is now in the hands of the Russians. A recent report indicates that the Russians are now planning to build a fleet of 1,800 Horten VIII (six engine pusher) type flying wing aircraft. The wing span is 131 feet. The sweepback angle is 30 degrees. The Russian version is reported to be jet propelled.

REQUIREMENTS

1. Requirements appear at Inclosure No. 1.

SPECIAL INSTRUCTIONS

Control No. A-1917

DISTRIBUTION

1. To MA's England, France, Sweden, Finland, USSR, Turkey, Greece, Iran, China, Norway, Philippines, and to Commander-in-Chief, Far East, and Commanding General, United States Air Forces in Europe, through Commanding General, EUCOM.

SECRET

Schulgen Intelligence Collection Memorandum, Page 6

a. Text

The text of the memorandum is quite revealing. I have attempted to type the text of the memorandum in a fashion preserving the original “feel” of the document, and have inserted lines to show the page breaks in the actual

document. The italicized portions have been added to emphasize the points that will be discussed in the analysis which follows.

DEPARTMENT OF THE AIR FORCE AFOIR-CO/Lt Col Garrett/mob/4544

28 Oct 47

Intelligence Requirements on Flying Saucer Type Aircraft
CSGID
Hq. USAF - AFOIR

30 OCT 1947
Attn: Plans and Collection Branch
Lt Col Garrett/mob/4544

1. It is requested that a Collection Memorandum, similar to the attached draft, be issued to the addresses indicated thereon. This is in accordance with conversation between Lt. Colonel Smith and Lt. Colonel Garrett.
2. It will be appreciated if, at the time this Memorandum is reproduced, ten (10) additional copies could be run off and sent to the Directorate of Intelligence, Air Intelligence Requirements Division, Collection Branch, for file purposes. FOR THE SECRETARY OF THE AIR FORCE:

GEO. F. SCHULGEN Brigadier General, U.S.A.F.

2 Incls.

1. Intelligence Requirements Chief, Air Intelligence Requirements Div.
2. Draft of Collection Memorandum Office of Ass't. Chief of Air Staff-2

SECRET

SECRET

DRAFT OF COLLECTION MEMORANDUM

OBJECT

1. This Memo sets forth the current intelligence requirements in the field of Flying Saucer type aircraft.

GENERAL

1. An alleged "Flying Saucer" type aircraft or object in flight, approximating the shape of a disc, has been reported by many observers from widely scattered places, such as the United States, Alaska, Canada, Hungary, the Island of Guam, and Japan. This object has been reported by many competent observers, including USAF rated officers. Sightings have been made from the ground as well as from the air.

2. Commonly reported features that are very significant and which may aid in the investigation are as follows:

a. Relatively flat bottom with extreme light-reflecting ability.
b. *Absence of sound except for an occasional roar when operating under super performance conditions.*
c. *Extreme maneuverability and apparent ability to almost hover.*
d. *A plan form approximating that of an oval or disc with a dome shape on the top surface.*
e. *The absence of an exhaust trail except in a few instances when it was reported to have a bluish color, like a Diesel exhaust, which persisted for approximately one hour. Other reports indicated a brownish smoke trail that could be the results of a special catalyst or chemical agent for extra power.*
f. *The ability to quickly disappear by high speed or by complete disintegration.*
g. *The ability to suddenly appear without warning as if from an extremely high altitude.*
h. The size most reported approximated that of a C-54 or Constellation type aircraft.
i. The ability to group together very quickly in a tight formation when more than one aircraft are together.
j. *Evasive action ability indicates possibility of being manually operated, or possibly by electronic or remote control devices.*
k. Under certain power conditions, the craft seems to have the ability to cut a clear path through clouds -- width of path estimated to be approximately one-half mile. Only one incident indicated this phenomenon.

SECRET

3. The first sightings in the U.S. were reported around the middle of May. The last reported sighting took place in Toronto, Canada, 14

September. *The greatest activity in the U.S. was during the last week of June and the first week of July.*

4. *This strange object, or phenomenon, may be considered, in view of certain observations, as long-range aircraft capable of a high rate of climb, high cruising speed (possibly sub-sonic at all times) and highly maneuverable and capable of being flown in very tight formation. For the purpose of analysis and evaluation of the so-called "flying saucer" phenomenon, the object sighted is being assumed to be a manned aircraft, of Russian origin, and* ***based on the perspective thinking and actual accomplishments of the Germans.***

5. *There is also a possibility that the Horten brothers' perspective thinking may have inspired this type of aircraft - particularly the "Parabola", which has a crescent plan form. Records show that only a glider version was built of this type aircraft.* It is reported to have been built in Hellegenberg, Germany, but was destroyed by fire before having ever been flown. The Horten brothers' latest trend of perspective thinking was definitely toward aircraft configurations of low aspect ratio. The younger brother, Riemar, stated that the "Parabola" configuration would have the least induced drag - which is a very significant statement. The theory supporting this statement should be obtained if possible.

6. The German High Command indicated a definite interest in the Horten type of flying wing and were about to embark on a rigorous campaign to develop such aircraft toward the end of the war. A Horten design, known as the IX, which was designated as the Go-8-229 and the Go-P-60 (night fighter) was to be manufactured by the Gotha Plant. It is reported that a contract for fifty such aircraft was planned, but only three or four were built. This plant is now in the hands of the Russians. A recent report indicates that the Russians are now planning to build a fleet of 1,800 Horten VIII (six engine pusher) type flying wing aircraft. The wing span is 131 feet. The sweepback angle is 30 degrees. The Russian version is reported to be jet propelled.

REQUIREMENTS

1. Requirements appear at Inclosure No. 1.

SPECIAL INSTRUCTIONS

Control No. A-1917

DISTRIBUTION

1. To M.A.'s England, France, Sweden, Finland, USSR, Turkey, Greece, Iran, China, Norway, Philippines, and to Commander-in-Chief, Far East, and Commanding General, United States Air Forces in Europe, through Commanding General, EUCOM.

SECRET

SECRET

INCLOSURE NO. 1

1. Research and Development

a. What German scientists had a better-than-average knowledge of the Horten brothers' work and perspective thinking; *where are these scientists now located, and what is their present activity?* Should be contacted and interrogated.
b. What Russian factories are building the Horten VIII design?
c. Why are the Russians building 1,800 of the Horten VIII design?
d. What is their contemplated tactical purpose?
e. *What is the present activity of the Horten brothers, Walter and Riemar?*

f. What is known of the whereabouts of the entire Horten family, particularly the sister? All should be contacted and interrogated regarding any contemplated plans or perspective thinking of the Horten brothers, and any interest shown by the Russians to develop their aircraft.
g. *Are any efforts being made to develop the Horten "Parabola" or modify this configuration to approximate an oval or disc?*
h. What is the Horten perspective thinking on internal controls or controls that are effective mainly by streams of air or gas originating from within the aircraft to supplant conventional external surface controls?

2. Control

For any aircraft whose shape approximates that of an oval, disc, or saucer, information regarding the following items is requested:

a. *Boundary layer control method by suction, blowing, or a combination of both.*
b. Special controls for effective maneuverability at very slow speeds or extremely high altitudes.
Openings either in the leading edge top and bottom surfaces that are employed chiefly to accomplish boundary layer control or for the purpose of reducing the induced drag. Any openings in the leading edge should be reported and described as to shape, size, etc. This investigation is significant to justify a disc shape configuration for long-range application.

d. Approximate airfoil shape in the center and near the tips.
e. Front view and rear view shape.

3. Items of Construction

a. *Type of material, whether metal, ferrous, non-ferrous, or non-metallic.*
b. *Composite or sandwich construction utilizing various combinations of metals, plastics, and perhaps balsa wood.*
c. *Unusual fabrication methods to achieve extreme light weight and structural stability particularly in connection with great capacity for fuel storage.*

4. Items of Arrangement

a. Special provisions such as retractable domes to provide unusual observation for the pilot or crew members.
b. Crew number and accomodation facilities.
c. Pressurized cabin equipment.
d. High altitude or high speed escapement methods.
e. Methods of pressurization or supercharging from auxillary units or from the prime power plant.
f. Provisions for towing - especially with short fixed bar, and for re-fueling in flight.
g. Provisions for assisted take off application.
h. Bomb bay provisions, such as dimensions, approximate location, and unusual features regarding the opening and closing of the doors.

5. Landing Gear

a. Indicate type of landing gear - whether conventional, tricycle, multiple wheel, etc.
b. Retractable, and jettison features for hand gear.
c. *Provisions for takeoff from ice, snow, or water.*
d. *Skid arrangements for either takeoff or landing.*

SECRET

SECRET

6. Power Plant

a..Information is needed regarding the propulsion system used in the aircraft. Possible types of engines that could be employed include:

(1) Reciprocating (piston type) engine or gas turbine. Either or both of these could be used to drive propellers of conventional or special design, rotating vanes, ducted fans, or compressors.
(2) *Jet propulsion engines including turbo jets, rockets, ramjets, pulse jets, or a combination of all four.*
(3) *Nuclear propulsion (atomic energy). Atomic energy engines would probably be unlike any familiar type of engine, although atomic engines might be employed in combination with any of the above types.*
Aircraft would be characterized by lack of fuel systems and fuel storage place.

b. *The power plant would likely be an integral part of the aircraft and could possibly not be distinguished as an item separate from the aircraft.* If jet propulsion is used, large air handling capacity,

characterized by a large air inlet and large exhaust nozzle, should be evident. The size of entrance and exit areas would be of interest. *It is possible that the propulsive jet is governed or influenced for control of the aircraft. The presence of vanes or control surfaces in the exhaust or methods of changing the direction of the object should be observed.*
c.Information desired on the propulsion systems pertains to the following items:

(1) Type of power plant or power plants.
(2) General description.
(3) Rating (thrust, horsepower, or air flow).
(4) Type of fuel
(5) Catalytic agents for super-performance or normal cruising power.

SECRET

Before proceeding with an analysis of this important document and its implications, it is worth nothing that for many years there was a *fake* version of it which circulated and was even quoted among ufologists.

b. The Faked Version

This faked version of the Schulgen Intelligence Collection Memorandum was the *same in all major respects except for the addition of one sentence, and the addition or deletion of minor details.* In order to appreciate those minor additions and deletions, however, one must first notice what the most major addition was, and why it was added. On page 3 of his memorandum, General Schulgen made a very significant statement, and it is worth recalling it:

4. This strange object, or phenomenon, may be considered, in view of certain observations, as long-range aircraft capable of a high rate of climb, high cruising speed (possibly sub-sonic at all times) and highly maneuverable and capable of being flown in very tight formation. For

> the purpose of analysis and evaluation of the so-called “flying saucer” phenomenon, the object sighted is being assumed to be a manned aircraft, *of Russian origin, and based on the perspective thinking and actual accomplishments of the Germans.*

It is worth recalling what Colonel Blanchard’s wife recalled about his initial impression of the Roswell debris: his initial inclination was to believe that the debris came from something Soviet. Indeed, it will be recalled that Major Marcel’s initial impression avoided any extraterrestrial speculations. He merely indicated that he did not know where the debris came from, and only added that he did not think it was of American manufacture. Its properties were too strange. If we assume along with many ufologists that Schulgen’s collection memorandum is based in part as a response to Roswell — and we shall see in a moment that there are highly persuasive statements in the document itself that it is reasonable to do so — then the last statement is pointing a finger, once again, clearly to Nazi Germany as the ultimate technological culprit.

It is *precisely here* that the faked version of the Schulgen Collection Memorandum inserts its statement, whose purpose is clearly evident from its contents. In *that* version, an additional phrase is added to the last sentence, changing its meaning entirely:

> 4. ...the object sighted is being assumed to be a manned aircraft, *of Russian origin, and based on the perspective thinking and actual accomplishments of the Germans,* ***it is the considered opinion of some elements that the object may in fact may represent an interplanetary craft of some kind.”***

Whoever concocted the faked version of the Schulgen Collection Memorandum apparently did not want anyone to consider a closer look at the German technology angle. Why this is so will become apparent in our analysis of the document below. But the forgery itself deserves a closer look.

First, when one reads this statement in the context of the entirety of the document itself, once again one discovers absolutely no corroborative

details that would support the forged, additional statement's conclusions; one has merely the assertion that "this is so" with no reasons being advanced for it. But what one *does* have in the rest of the document are interesting indicators pointing other fingers not only to Roswell, but to Nazi Germany as well, as we shall see in our analysis.

Secondly, in the forged version, the phrase added to the end of the paragraph has clearly been added to spin the whole document toward the extraterrestrial hypothesis. It is in this spirit that other minor additions and deletions are made to the original to create the faked document, based on the original as a "donor" document.

The man who exposed the whole faked version of the Schulgen Intelligence Collection Memorandum was the later Roswell researcher Robert G. Todd, in his own self-published UFO journal called *The Spot Report*, whose motto was "The truth is out there... but the UFO field will never find it!" Todd, a respected researcher, presented his arguments against the faked version in his Friday, March 7, 1997 issue. Todd is also the researcher that was finally able to obtain Major Jesse Marcel Sr.'s military records, and who first raised questions about his claims and record. Additionally, Todd was the researcher who first discovered the possible connections of Roswell to Project Mogul balloons, which the U.S. Air Force later adopted as its latest official explanation. Unfortunately, not only does the Mogul theory not explain everything about the debris, it accounts even less for the implications of the genuine Schulgen Collection Memorandum, as we shall see. Nevertheless, Todd's argument against the faked Schulgen Collection Memorandum is a masterpiece of detailed analysis, and will be followed closely here.

Todd notes that in addition to the above-noted major change in the Schulgen Collection Memorandum, several minor adjustments had to be made to the entire paragraph to square it with the addition:

> By removing the phrase, "Possibly sub-sonic at all times," the forger hoped to remove clear proof that the drafters of the genuine document were thinking in terms of terrestrial aircraft, and not extraterrestrial spaceships. Likewise, in removing the "air" from the word "aircraft" to form the word "craft," the forger further attempted to add a sense of mystery to the documents, and **by implication**

> **suggested that the prevailing opinion among the military personnel "in the know" was that the flying saucers weren't merely advanced aircraft of terrestrial origin,** but instead were extremely advanced *craft* of extraterrestrial origin, capable of flight both in the atmosphere and in space. These are subtle — but substantive and highly effective — changes to the genuine text.[4]

In other words, someone was spinning the document in such a way as not only to avoid a terrestrial conclusion, but to divert attention *away from any consideration of the Nazi connection.*

But there were other "additions" and "deletions" that had to be made once this significant and central paragraph was so altered:

> Paragraph 6 of the *genuine* document included the following passage:
>
> A recent report indicates that the Russians are now planning to build a fleet of 1,800 Horten VIII (six engine pushers) type flying wing aircraft. The wing span is 131 feet. The sweepback angle is 30 degrees. The Russian version is reported to be jet propelled.
>
> The passage quoted above was deleted entirely from the fake version for obvious reasons.
>
> One hundred percent of the *genuine* document was geared toward the idea that some type of object was flying around, and the thinking within Air Force intelligence (AFIN) was that the most likely source for the *air*craft was the *Russians,* based on the Horten brothers' flying wing designs. The *genuine* documents are logical and internally consistent, whereas the changes the forger made in the *fake* documents render them illogical and internally inconsistent. The forger would have us believe that AFIN knew from the Roswell incident that the flying saucers were alien spacecraft — that they really came from outer space but they wasted the time of countless intelligence personnel in the pointless search for the Horten Brothers, their sister,

> and their associates who had knowledge of their flying wing designs, when such information *obviously* had nothing whatever to do with alien spacecraft unless the forger intends to propose the ridiculous idea that Adolph Hitler entered into an intergalactic pact with the Aliens under which the Nazis were furnished with advanced extraterrestrial technology that was captured by the Russians following World War II! Fake documents *don't* make sense, but the genuine documents *do* make sense. *There is no better proof that the fake documents are indeed fake.*[5]

In other words, the document makes internal, logical sense, only in its original version; in the fake version the internal logic breaks down completely, for while paragraph 6 was entirely deleted in the faked version, it nevertheless retained Schulgen's call for intelligence officers to locate the Horten brothers and their sister!

Todd unearthed other documentary emendations in the faked version, and a side-by-side comparison of them, including the crucial paragraph 4 that required all the others, is in order:

GENUINE VERSION	FAKED VERSION
3b. Composite or sandwich construction utilizing various combinations of metals, plastics, and perhaps balsa wood.	3b. Composite or sandwich construction utilizing various combinations of metals, *metallic foils,* plastics, and perhaps balsa wood *or similar material.*[6]

[6]

GENUINE VERSION	FAKED VERSION
3c. Unusual fabrication methods to achieve extreme light weight and structural stability *particularly in connection with great capacity for fuel storage.*	3c. Unusual fabrication methods to achieve extreme light weight and structural stability.[7]
4. This strange object, or phenomenon, may be considered, in view of certain observations, as long-range aircraft capable of a high rate of climb, high cruising speed (possibly sub-sonic at all times) and highly maneuverable and capable of being flown in very tight formation. For the purpose of analysis and evaluation of the so-called "flying saucer" phenomenon, the object sighted is being assumed to be a manned aircraft, *of Russian origin, and based on the perspective thinking and actual accomplishments of the Germans.*	4. This strange object, or phenomenon, may be considered, in view of certain observations, as long-range craft capable of a high rate of climb, high cruising speed and highly maneuverable and capable of being flown in very tight formation. For the purpose of analysis and evaluation of the so-called "flying saucer" phenomenon, the object sighted is being assumed to be a manned aircraft, *of Russian origin, and based on the perspective thinking and actual accomplishments of the German, it is* ***the considered opinion of some elements that the object may in fact may represent an interplanetary craft of some kind.*** [7]
4h. Bomb bay provisions, such as dimensions, approximate location, *and unusual features regarding the opening and closing of the doors.*	4h. Unusual features or provisions regarding the opening and closing of the doors. i. Bomb bay provisions, such as dimensions and approximate location.[8]
GENUINE VERSION	**FAKED VERSION**
5a. Indicate type of landing gear — whether conventional, tricycle, multiple wheel, etc.	5a. Indicate type of landing gear — whether conventional, tricycle, multiple wheel, etc., *or of an unconventional type such as tripod or skid.*[9] [8][9]

c. The Background and Possible "Leaker" of the Faked Version

While the "extraterrestrial spin" and tendentiousness is clearly evident in the faked version, who was the forger? Here Todd's conclusions are worth

considering carefully, for they bear directly upon the analysis of the *genuine* document. Todd begins this component of his inquiry by noting that the faked version was originally widely circulated by the Fund for UFO Research (or FUFOR as it is commonly known) and by its then-chairman, optical physicist, Dr. Bruce Macabbee, well-known ufologist and consultant for the U.S. military. The faked version formed a seminal component of Maccabee's FUFOR publication entitled *Documents and Supporting Information Related to Crashed Flying Saucers and Operation Majestic Twelve* of June 22, 1987.[10]

But Maccabee was not the ultimate hand at work and was probably simply passing on documents he accepted in good faith. The real culprit lay deeper, and unfortunately, was a by-now familiar name and neer-do-well within ufology:

> But, just about a year before, Bill Moore, head of the Roswell/MJ-12 Dream Team, wrote an article, "Phil Klass and the Roswell Incident: the Skeptics Deceived," which appeared in the July/August 1986 issue of the *International UFO Reporter* (IUR), in which he quoted extensively from the fake documents. The "new Listings for Spring 1987" mailed by William L. Moore Publications and Research, a copy of which I received in May of 1987, lists a paper entitled "Phil Klass & The Roswell Incident: The Skeptics Deceived," by Bill Moore. The listing indicates that this was the first time Moore offered the paper for sale, although it gives the date of the paper as July 1986... As far as I can determine, Moore's IUR article was the first public mention of the fake documents...
>
> ...
>
> In his IUR article, Moore writes as though *he* was the person who "found" the fake cover letter and its fake enclosures. According to Moore:
>
> "The document is a five-page draft (not a final version) of a Secret data collection memorandum on flying discs, intended, once finalized, for distribution to Air Force military attaches in Europe and Asia. Apparently the text of this draft met with someone's disapproval

> because the final version — a copy of which was found in a different file — had been somewhat reworked before being approved for distribution.
>
> It seems clear that Bill Moore was the first person to write about the fake documents, and he wrote about them in such a way as to suggest that he, personally, "found" them.[11]

But this was not the only clue that pointed a finger to Bill Moore as the culprit and ultimate forger:

> ...(The) typewriter typestyle used on all three of the fake documents matches the typestyle on one of at least three typewriters Bill Moore has used in the past, but doesn't match either of the two typestyles used to produce the genuine documents. And as noted previously, Bill Moore uses a do it yourself rubber stamp kit, like the one apparently used to fake the "OCT" portion of the date stamped on the fake cover letter, and the typestyle of the impression appears to match one Moore uses.[12]

Moore, in other words, was acting, once again, in the capacity he later admitted to: as a government disinformation agent and spy on the UFO community, in return for "inside information."

But this now raises significant and disturbing implications, for clearly, the evidence strongly suggests Moore was the forger here. The question now is: Why would Moore, presumably on instructions, leak such a faked document? The answer is implied in the internal modifications of the faked version of the Schulgen Collection Memorandum itself: someone within the government was not trying to cover-up the extraterrestrial connection of UFOs, someone was trying to cover-up the terrestrial, *and ultimately Nazi* connection.

d. Analysis of Statements and the Gestalt of The Genuine Document

But does this analysis and conclusion hold up when the genuine document itself is in view? One need only consider the italicized portions of the genuine memorandum highlighted on pages 383-387 to see the implications that are beginning to dawn on the U.S. Air Force. I will cite these seriatim, along with my analysis of each, and then of their overall *Gestalt*:

1) "*Absence of sound except for an occasional roar when operating under super performance conditions*" (Paragraph 2b, p. 383): The roaring sounds would be commensurate with jets, rockets, and ramjets, and indicative of a terrestrial technology, which the overall document supports. It might further indicate — since the context implied is "super performance conditions" — that some sort of afterburner was in use. In any case, the technology implied does not sound sophisticated or exotic enough to be extraterrestrial. The idea of an afterburner or other modification to normal propulsion requirements is suggestively corroborated by General Schulgen's comments in paragraph 2e, under point 4" below.
2) "*Extreme maneuverability and apparent ability to almost hover*" (Paragraph 2c, p. 383): This characteristic suggests that if a jet or similar turbine system were the propulsive mechanism in use in saucers, then they had the ability to vector the exhaust thrust so generated. This is a conclusion vaguely suggested by Schulgen's own comments in paragraph 2b under point 13 below. In any case, this point is an indicator that Schulgen suspects that he is dealing with a unified and single phenomenon, and one with extraordinary capabilities. Since he mentions this ability to almost hover, one may also conclude two more features about the technology and engineering of the craft:

a) Since hovering involves exhaust vectoring, one may safely rule out any *conventional* sort of ramjet as the propulsive mechanism, since these require a forward vectoring to maintain the engine's function itself; and,
b) Since hovering involves zero-vectoring of the craft itself, one may assume not only that there was an advanced thrust vectoring system in use but that the craft may have had vertical or near-vertical take-

off and landing capability. This in turn would mean that any base for such craft would require comparatively smaller facilities to handle than a base for conventional aircraft, and consequently, any such base would be more easily concealable, and additionally, may not be immediately recognizable to experts trained in conventional aerial photographic analysis.

3) *"A plan form approximating that of an oval or disc with a dome shape on the top surface"* (Paragraph 2d, p. 383): As will be seen, this description matches the generalized descriptions not only of the Nazi saucers, but the more conventional Horten flying wing designs, to which General Schulgen refers in paragraphs 4, 5, 1a, 1c, and 1g, discussed under points 8, 9, 10, and 11 below.
4) *"The absence of an exhaust trail except in a few instances when it was reported to have a bluish color, like a Diesel exhaust, which persisted for approximately one hour. Other reports indicated a brownish smoke trail that could be the results of a special catalyst or chemical agent for extra power"* (Paragraph 2e, p. 383): Again, the suggested or implied technology here is that of some sort of turbine or jet-propelled craft using some sort of "catalyst" to momentarily boost high-speed performance. Once again, the technological indicators are of something extraordinary, to be sure, but are not exotic enough to compel to the conclusion of an extraterrestrial origin for them.
5) *"The ability to quickly disappear by high speed or by complete disintegration"* and *"The ability to suddenly appear without warning as if from an extremely high altitude"*(Paragraph 2f and 2g, p. 383): These are the only two points in Schulgen's entire memorandum that may be taken as indicating something *more* than just "jet turbine" saucers might be in play. Indeed, the ability simply to "appear" or "disintegrate" could be taken as definite signals that a much more exotic "field propulsion" or "antigravity" technology was in play. Additionally, it will be noted that this description aptly summarizes the general characteristics of "foo fighters" observed by air crewmen during the Second World War. Note however, that General Schulgen is attempting to rationalize these two odd characteristics in entirely conventional ways as disappearance "by

high speed" or the sudden appearance "as if from an extremely high altitude." One may take his qualifying remarks as indicating that the General is also thinking that the saucers have an extraordinarily high altitude capability far beyond that of any conventional aircraft.

6) "*Evasive action ability indicates possibility of being manually operated, or possibly by electronic or remote control devices*" (Paragraph 2j, p. 383): This is an extremely significant statement, and tends to support the thesis (though certainly not the extraterrestrial hypothesis) of researcher Frank Feschino and his discovery that the U.S. Air Force had in place a "shoot down" order for the saucers, for by explicitly referring to "evasive action" General Schulgen is clearly implying that as early as 1947 the U.S. military was taking *some* sort of action — either ground-based, airborne, or some combination of both — against the saucers. The reason is clear from the rest of the documentary context, for Schulgen indicates that at that juncture the U.S. Air Force suspects a Soviet Russian origin for the phenomenon, based on German technology.

7) "*The greatest activity in the U.S. was during the last week of June and the first week of July*" (Paragraph 3, p. 384): This is another extraordinary statement, for while there were indeed UFO reports from precisely this period, this is also the period of the Roswell Incident itself, and Schulgen would most likely have heard of it, both through "channels" and through the public media. The deliberate reference to this time frame in my opinion makes it highly likely that the motivation for his Intelligence Collection Memorandum came in part from this Incident, and the timing of Schulgen's memorandum — late October 1947 — may reflect the passing of a period of the initial examination and analysis of the recovered debris (corroborated by the Twining memo, examined below), and thus the contents of his memorandum may also reflect the preliminary conclusions reached by that analysis. Succinctly stated: those conclusions were that the Air Force was dealing with an extraordinarily advanced aerial technology, and suspected a Russian origin, but ultimately suspected a utilization of and

advancement on Nazi Germany's research, as noted in the point below:

8) "*This strange object, or phenomenon, may be considered, in view of certain observations, as long-range aircraft capable of a high rate of climb, high cruising speed (possibly sub-sonic at all times) and highly maneuverable and capable of being flown in very tight formation. For the purpose of analysis and evaluation of the so-called "flying saucer" phenomenon, the object sighted is being assumed to be a manned aircraft, of Russian origin, and based on the perspective thinking and actual accomplishments of the Germans"* (Paragraph 4, p. 384): Note now what Schulgen actually states: not only is the ultimate technological origin suspected to be Nazi Germany, but additionally, he specifically states that the tentative analysis has concluded that the craft have a long range, high rate of climb, high cruising speed, and that while they appear to be sub-sonic, he leaves open the possibility that they may be super-sonic. In any case, when one adds to this list the Memorandum's previously stated performance characteristics, one also has a craft capable of "almost hovering" and therefore presumably of near-vertical or vertical take-off and landing capability. Note also the curious statement Schulgen makes about its origins, for he states that it is "*assumed* to be ....of Russian origin." In other words, the door is left barely cracked that it might be of some *other* terrestrial origin — namely something independently Nazi — but we may assume that this thought may have occurred to Schulgen, given what he addresses in the paragraphs covered below in points 9 and 10.

9) "*There is also a possibility that the Horten brothers' perspective thinking may have inspired this type of aircraft - particularly the 'Parabola', which has a crescent plan form. Records show that only a glider version was built of this type aircraft"* (Paragraph 5, p. 384): Schlugen now gets down to specifics, for he is explicitly suggesting some modification to the most advanced Nazi aerial technology *known to him.* In other words, if one now takes all the previous points of his Memorandum, and their implications, and adds them together, his best preliminary guess is that he is dealing with some profoundly modified Horten wing of long range, high

cruising speed, the ability “nearly to hover” and therefore the implied ability of nearly-vertical or vertical take-off and landing based on some form of turbine exhaust thrust vectoring.

10) “...W*here are these scientists now located, and what is their present activity?*” and “*What is the present activity of the Horten brothers, Walter and Riemar?”* (Paragraphs 1a and 1c respectively, p. 385): Schulgen now opens the door to the other possibility — that he was perhaps dealing with an independent Nazi organization and development — a little more widely. Obviously, his primary meaning must be taken to be that he suspects that they might be in the Soviet Union. If that be the case, then it should be noted that ultimately any intelligence gained from the Soviet Union would come to General Schulgen via “former” Nazi general Reinhard Gehlen’s network! That being said, however, the general nature of Schulgen’s question should be noted, for while he clearly suspects something Soviet is involved, he does not frame his question “Where in the Soviet Union or the Eastern Bloc are these scientists now located?” but leaves open a more general possibility that they could be anywhere, doing almost anything, for anyone.

11) “*Are any efforts being made to develop the Horten ‘Parabola’ or modify this configuration to approximate an oval or disc?”* Paragraph 1g, p. 385): By asking this question, Schulgen is disclosing more about his own, and very possibly others’, thinking about what they may have been dealing with, and if our conclusion concerning Schulgen’s mention of the time frame of late June and early July, 1947 is correct, and that his Memorandum at least in part reflects a motivation prompted by the Roswell Incident and a preliminary analysis of the same, then this question is even more revealing, for summing all the previous points together, he has now gone beyond the flying wings of the Hortens or anyone else, and is now thinking in terms of turbine-driven saucers, with high rate of climb, high cruising speed, ultra-high altitude capability, the ability to “almost hover” and thereby the assumed ability of vertical or nearly-vertical take-off and landing by means of exhaust thrust vectoring.

12) *"Boundary layer control method by suction, blowing, or a combination of both"* and *"Openings either in the leading edge top and bottom surfaces that are employed chiefly to accomplish boundary layer control or for the purpose of reducing the induced drag. Any openings in the leading edge should be reported and described as to shape, size, etc. This investigation is significant to justify a disc shape configuration for long-range application."* (Paragraphs 2a and 2b, respectively, p. 386): This is a knock-out punch, for Schulgen is now suspecting that in addition to all the above technological and engineering wizardry that somehow the Hortens, or "whoever", has managed to figure out a way to combine all the above technological features and to suction or blow away the boundary layer, the thin layer of air — only a few molecules thick — that cling stubbornly and almost in stationary fashion to airfoils and increase drag. This is, as one of my friends put it, the "holy grail" of aerodynamic engineering, for if a method could be found by which to do this efficiently, drag would be greatly reduced and aircraft performance and efficiency would be greatly increased. Additionally, with the reduction of drag and thereby the reduction of turbulence and the heat signatures therefrom, stealth properties of aircraft would perhaps be greatly increased because of the reduced infrared and radar signatures of local air turbulence around such a craft.

13) *"Type of material, whether metal, ferrous, non-ferrous, or non-metallic;"* and *"Composite or sandwich construction utilizing various combinations of metals, plastics, and perhaps balsa wood."* (Paragraphs 3 a and 3b, respectively, p. 386): This now is a strong indicator that Schulgen's Collection Memorandum is somehow directly tied to the Roswell Incident, for notice that some of the details of the Roswell debris are closely paralleled by Schulgen's list, which specifically mentions "non-ferrous" metal, plastics, and "balsa wood." Additionally, he specifically mentions a sandwich construction, which is *not* recorded of any Roswell debris. Thus, *if* these details are correctly interpreted to indicate a connection between the Memorandum and the Roswell Incident, then by the same token, that Incident involved *much* more than the crash and

recovery of a mere balloon, Mogul or otherwise. We are now chin to chin with the interpretive possibility of the Roswell Incident that has been carefully excluded by the Roswell dialectic, and all of the contrived and "leaked" documents and interpretations from and by people with their own connections, past or present, with the U.S. military, for we are now chin to chin with the possibility that the Incident involved the crash and recovery of something wholly extraordinary, wholly terrestrial, and *not American.*

14) "*Unusual fabrication methods to achieve extreme light weight and structural stability particularly in connection with great capacity for fuel storage."* (Paragraph 3c, p. 386): Schulgen now discloses his, and probably many others', thoughts as to why such unusual construction and fabrication methods were employed: to decrease weight (and hence thrust and lift requirements of the propulsion system) and to increase fuel storage and thereby the range of the craft. General Schulgen's reasoning, and rationalization has thus far and throughout the Memorandum been impeccable and tightly argued.

15) *"Provisions for takeoff from ice, snow, or water"* and *"Skid arrangements for either takeoff or landing"* (Paragraph 5c and 5d, p. 387): This is another bombshell, for by asking whether such craft had provisioning or equipment for take-offs and landings under such conditions, he is not really contradicting the implication noted previously that the craft had the ability to "almost" hover and thereby presumably the ability for vertical or near-vertical take-off and landing. Rather, what General Schulgen is asking here is "where on earth are these things coming from?" And the answer that he suspects is implicit in the question itself: if they are coming from Russia, such provisioning and equipment makes sense, as it would if they were coming from anywhere *else* where there was a great deal of snow, ice, and water; the Andes Mountains, the southern plains of Argentina, or Antarctica come to mind, for example...[13]

16) *"Jet propulsion engines including turbo jets, rockets, ramjets, pulse jets, or a combination of all four";* and *" Nuclear propulsion (atomic energy). Atomic energy engines would probably be unlike*

any familiar type of engine, although atomic engines might be employed in combination with any of the above types. Aircraft would be characterized by lack of fuel systems and fuel storage place." (Paragraphs 6.a (2) and 6.a (3), p. 387): This is now the explicit indicator that our previous analysis, namely, that General Schulgen was thinking in terms of some form of conventionally powered saucer, are correct. But note, leaving no stone unturned, he also proposes a more radical proposition: that they might be atomically powered and hence of extraordinary endurance and range. This should be taken in conjunction with his previous remarks about lightweight construction, for the radioactive shielding of such an atomic powerplant, at that day and time, would have involved a large weight, *requiring* a reduction of weight elsewhere, and therefore**, likely requiring additionally the development of new fabrication techniques or wholly new materials.**

17) "*The power plant would likely be an integral part of the aircraft and could possibly not be distinguished as an item separate from the aircraft;"* and *" It is possible that the propulsive jet is governed or influenced for control of the aircraft. The presence of vanes or control surfaces in the exhaust or methods of changing the direction of the object should be observed."* (Paragraph 6b, p. 387): This final bombshell is further indication that our previous analysis is correct, for with it General Schulgen finally tips his hand that he is not thinking, ultimately, of a flying wing at all, he merely suspects that somehow the Horten brothers or other scientists may have been involved in something far more radical, namely the design of saucer shaped aircraft, with the propulsion system as the major component of the main structure itself, able to vector thrusts, able to "almost hover" and with the ability of vertical or nearly-vertical take-off and landing, of great range and endurance, and of ultra-high altitude capability, that additionally was able to suction or blow away the boundary layer, hence improving the drag coefficient of the aircraft and reduce its infrared and local atmospheric turbulence signatures.

Moreover, all of this, let it be noted, he is attributing ultimately to technological and engineering principles that he explicitly ascribes, not to

Soviet Russia, but to Nazi Germany!

And there is one final, very important point that also emerges from this analysis. In the previous pages of this book it was noted that the commanding officer of the Roswell Army Air Field, Colonel William "Butch" Blanchard, initially suspected that the recovered debris represented, not a balloon of any sort, but something Soviet! General Schulgen's Memorandum now provides a context from which to conclude that Blanchard's initial opinion, which was related by secondhand testimony of his widow, is trustworthy testimony, for it fits snuggly into the wider context of the analysis of the problem of the saucers being undertaken by the Air Force at that period of time. Consequently, Blanchard's statement is a further indicator that the Mogul balloon explanation is simply false, and a further layer of official obfuscation of the Incident

So what of the overall *Gestalt* of the document? What may one conclude about it, and more importantly, what may one conclude about it when juxtaposed with the evident fraud and deliberate "disinformation leak" of the faked version of the Memorandum and Bill Moore's possible role in doing so? As was noted in the summary and conclusions chapter that began this part of the book, many on both poles of "the Roswell dialectic" had backgrounds that connected them either to the military, or to intelligence, or to black projects, or were strongly suspected of having such connections. The poles of the "Roswell dialectic" thus appear to have been put into play almost from the inception of the Roswell Incident itself, and were deliberately contrived to mold any interpretation into one of two mutually exclusive and equally "disinformative" channels: the extraordinary and extraterrestral one, or the mundane, terrestrial, and ultimately trivial one. What must never be looked at or examined is the technologically and politically explosive hypothesis that what crashed was not only Nazi *technology*, but purely and simply *Nazi*, for that would mean that the old enemy was alive and well, organized, and well-funded, but was also "out there somewhere" and possessed of an extraordinary technology a decade, if not decades, in advance of anything on American or Soviet drawing boards. In this light, I believe it is very significant that General Schulgen, who is so very precise in his choice of words, and whose Memorandum is so carefully crafted from the standpoint of its internal technological and

engineering logic, is wondering just *where* all this is coming from: “Where are the Hortens? What are they doing? *What type of landing gear do these things have* that might indicate where they’re *coming* from?” Contextually it is clear he thinks they’re from Russia, but he has ultimately left the door open to the other more horrifying possibility. His Memorandum, read in this light, may also be seen as an “internal fishing expedition” to see if anyone else in the Air Force knows, or suspects, their ultimate origins. As we shall now see, Schulgen’s Collection Memorandum may have been cleverly disguising from his subordinates the truth that he had already learned from a superior officer.

2. Twining-Schulgen Memorandum

In this regard, and in this interpretive context, General Nathan Twining’s previous memorandum to Schulgen is very informative, and quite suggestive in its own right. Once again, I have attempted to type the text in a fashion that preserves the flavor and feel of the document itself:

> SUBJECT: AMC Opinion Concerning “Flying Discs”
> TO: Commanding General Army Air Force
> Washington 25, D.C.
> ATTENTION: Brig. General George Schulgen
> AC/AS-2
> 1. As requested by AC/AS-2 there is presented below the considered opinion of this command concerning the so-called “Flying Discs.” *This opinion is based on interrogation report data furnished by AC/AS-2 and preliminary studies by personnel of T-2 and Aircraft Laboratory,* Engineering Division T-3. This opinion was arrived at in a conference between personnel from the Air Institute of Technology, Intelligence T-
> 2, Office, Chief of Engineering Division, and the Aircraft, Power Plant and Propeller Laboratories of Engineering Division T-3.
> 3. It is the opinion that:
>
> a. The phenomenon is something real and not visionary or fictitious.

b. There are objects probably approximating the shape of a disc, of such appreciable size as to appear to be as large as man-made aircraft.

c. There is a possibility that some of the incidents may be caused by natural phenomena, such as meteors.

d. *The reported operating characteristics such as extreme rates of climb, maneuverability (particularly in roll), and motion which must be considered evasive when sighted or contacted by friendly aircraft and radar, lend belief to the possibility that some of the objects are controlled either manually, automatically or remotely.*

e. The apparent common description is as follows:-

(1) Metallic or light reflecting surface.

(2) *Absence of trail, except in a few instances where the object apparently was operating under high performance conditions*.

(3) Circular or elliptical in shape, flat on bottom and domed on top.

(4) Several reports of well kept formation flights varying from three to nine objects.

(5) *Normally no associated sound, except in three instances a substantial rumbling roar was noted*.

(6) *Level flight speeds normally above 300 knots are estimated.*

f. *It is possible within the present U.S. knowledge -- provided extensive detailed development is undertaken -- to construct a piloted aircraft which has the general description of the object in*

sub- paragraph (e) above which would be capable of an approximate range of 7000 miles at subsonic speeds.

g. Any development in this country along the lines indicated would be extremely expensive, time consuming and at the considerable expense of current projects and therefore, if directed, should be set up independently of existing projects.

h. Due consideration must be given the following:-

(1) *The possibility that these objects are of domestic origin -the product of some high security project not known to AC/AS-2 or this Command.*

(2) *The lack of physical evidence in the shape of crash recovered exhibits which would undeniably prove the existence of these subjects.*

(3) *The possibility that some foreign nation has a form of propulsion possibly nuclear, which is outside of our domestic knowledge.*

4. *It is recommended that:-*

a. *Headquarters, Army Air Forces issue a directive assigning a priority, security classification and Code name for a detailed study of this matter to include the preparation of complete sets of all available and pertinent data which will then be made available to* the Army, Navy, Atomic Energy Commission, JRDB, the Air Force Scientific Advisory Group, *NACA*, and the RAND and *NEPA projects for comments and recommendations*, with a preliminary report to be forwarded within 15 days of receipt of the data and a detailed report thereafter every 30 days as the investigation develops. A complete interchange of data should be affected.

5. Awaiting a specific directive AMC will continue the investigation within its current resources in order to more closely define the nature of the phenomenon. Detailed Essential Elements of Information will be formulated immediately for transmittal thru channels.

I have highlighted the points in the document that are analyzed below, before providing an analysis of the document's *Gestalt.*

1) *" The reported operating characteristics such as extreme rates of climb, maneuverability (particularly in roll), and motion which must be considered evasive when sighted or contacted by friendly aircraft and radar, lend belief to the possibility that some of the objects are controlled either manually, automatically or remotely."* (Paragraph 3d, p. 404): Note first that General Twining essentially confirms General Schulgen's later interpretations and conclusions from the Intelligence Collection Memorandum. This is a pattern that is consistent throughout Twining's memo to Schulgen.

2) *" Absence of trail, except in a few instances where the object apparently was operating under high performance conditions*." (Paragraph 3e(2), p. 404): Again, Twining corroborates, without additional commentary, General Schulgen's subsequent interpretations and conclusions.

3) “ *Normally no associated sound, except in three instances a substantial rumbling roar was noted*.” (Paragraph 3e(5), p. 404): Yet again, Twining corroborates Schulgen’s information, but adds no new useful data to them.
4) “ *Level flight speeds normally above 300 knots are estimated.”* (Paragraph 3e(5), p. 404): This is an intriguing comment, as Twining clearly seems to be withholding information from Schulgen. 300 knots would hardly be a very sensational speed for any craft, terrestrial or otherwise, for the United States, the United Kingdom, Nazi Germany all deployed ordinary propeller-driven fighter aircraft during World War Two with top speeds in excess of this. While Twining seems to be deliberately withholding what the estimated top speeds of the saucers are, clearly the figure of 300 knots is meant to suggest that these speeds are not all that extraordinary, and therefore, cannot compel to any extraterrestrial conclusion.
5) “ *It is possible within the present U.S. knowledge -- provided extensive detailed development is undertaken -- to construct a piloted aircraft which has the general description of the object in sub- paragraph (e) above which would be capable of an approximate range of 7000 miles at subsonic speeds.”* (Paragraph 3e(6), p. 404): This is a highly significant statement, for Twining is admitting that the technology, whatever it is and wherever it is from, represents something entirely terrestrial. But what he is also doing is subtly informing General Schulgen that the objects have a great range, a conclusion we saw reflected in Schulgen’s subsequent Collection Memorandum. He is admitting to Schulgen that his Air Materiel Command has concluded that the objects have at least an intercontinental capability.
6) “ *Due consideration must be given the following*:- *The possibility that these objects are of domestic origin - the product of some high security project not known to AC/AS-2 or this Command.”* (Paragraph 3h (1), p. 405): This is another highly significant comment and admission by Twining, for having conceded the possibility that construction of such craft would be within the technological capabilities of the United States at that time, he is

unaware of any project to do so. But his suggestion to Schulgen means in turn that Twining is holding open the possibility that the saucers represent a secret project of some sort.

7) "*Due consideration must be given the following...The lack of physical evidence in the shape of crash recovered exhibits which would undeniably prove the existence of these subjects.*" (Paragraph 3h(2), p. 405): This is another bombshell, and is obviously a signal to Schulgen, who deliberately inserted into his Intelligence Collection Memorandum a reference to the time frame of the Roswell Incident. If our interpretation of Schulgen's Memorandum is correct, and that it does have Roswell partly in view, then Twining's choice of words in his memo is extraordinarily subtle, and, in a sense, almost devious, for his wording is very carefully chosen. Had nothing at all been recovered, he could more easily have stated "The lack of physical evidence in the shape of crash recovered debris" or "The lack of physical evidence in the shape of crash recovered craft" or some such similar expression. Yet he has chosen the peculiar phrase "crash recovered exhibits." So what does he mean by it? And what, exactly, is he trying to signal to Schulgen? Let us recall, for a moment, that I have accepted the explanation of Roswell "extraterrestrial" proponents that Twining's sudden schedule change to New Mexico was for the express purpose of participation and preliminary analysis of whatever was recovered at Roswell, and that all other explanations of his schedule change, including that he attended a special nuclear bomb school at Kirtland air base in Albuquerque (which he very much did do!), are a convenient cover.

The reason that this must be so is because, on the one hand, we have already seen that the Mogul Balloon explanation simply fails to account for the more exotic properties of the Roswell debris. And it will simply not do to try to dismiss those descriptions by attempting to malign or impugn either the memory or character of Major Marcel, as some have attempted to do, for the plain and simple fact is, he is not the only one who saw it, nor the only one who described the debris. On the other hand, we have also seen that Colonel Blanchard's initial impression was that the debris

represented something Soviet, i.e., something *not American* and *not a balloon.* Thus, with the commanding general of the Air Materiel Command in the area during the necessary time frame of the Roswell Incident, it not only stands to reason that he made some preliminary examination of the debris while in New Mexico, but that he also recognized that it was not a balloon, nor of American manufacture. It is equally possible — as some "extraterrestrial" proponents of the interpretation of the Roswell Incident have proposed - that this fact was highly classified, and that therefore, given Schulgen's own classification clearance, Twining could not tell this to Schulgen directly. This argument we shall return to in a moment. But given all of this speculation, how then would Twining both "tell and not tell" his colleague that something — not necessarily an entire craft — but that something odd and extraordinary, was recovered? He would have to do so by calling attention to his remarks by a curious choice of wording. That is exactly what he does. But is all this entirely speculation? No it is not, as we shall see in the very next point:

8) *" Due consideration must be given the following...The possibility that some foreign nation has a form of propulsion possibly nuclear, which is outside of our domestic knowledge."* (Paragraph 3h(3), p. 405): This remark is another bombshell, and to see how and why, one must recall the context in which General Twining is making it: General Schulgen's subsequent Collection Memorandum, it will be recalled, made specific and explicit conclusions that the saucers came from Russian developments of captured Nazi technology, and that one means of propulsion that might account for the extraordinary ranges of the craft observed, and concluded by Schulgen to be Russian, was that some method was found whereby to increase the onboard fuel of the craft through the use of new fabrication methods, and possibly entirely new materials, or through the use of atomic propulsion, which would have required heavy radioactive shielding, and hence a reduction of weight elsewhere in the craft by such new fabrication methods and/or new materials engineering. The context in which Schulgen's Collection Memorandum went "fishing for answers" in other words, was

suggesting that the Russians had somehow figured out how to do this, based on developments from Nazi technology.

Now note carefully Twining's *initial statement* to Schulgen, and how carefully and deliberately worded, once again, it really is given the context of the subsequent conclusions. Had *Russia* been suspected to be the source of the saucers, Twining could easily have stated "Due consideration must be given the following...The possibility that Russia has a form of propulsion possibly nuclear, which is outside our domestic knowledge." After all, it was known to the U.S. military at that time that the Soviet Union was working on the atom bomb, and therefore presumably other nuclear technologies. Nor was this a matter that was likely to have been withheld from Schulgen. Nor was a Russian *origin* of the craft likely to have been withheld from him either. This makes Twining's choice of words, once again, all that much more peculiar, and does so in two senses. It will be recalled from our point-by-point analysis of Schulgen's Memorandum that Schulgen himself left the door open, just a crack, to other possible interpretations and explanations of the origin of the saucers. Twining's prior statement is therefore designed, once again, to "reveal" without breaching security, and to subtly inform General Schulgen that "the other possibility" is indeed what his Air Materiel Command has quietly and secretly concluded, for rather than saying "*Russia* has a form of propulsion *possibly nuclear, which is outside our domestic knowledge*," (an unlikelihood in any case, since Russia's nuclear program at that juncture was just beginning) Twining answered that "*Some foreign nation* has a form of propulsion...*which is outside our domestic knowledge."* Schulgen, being an intelligence officer, would have immediately been able to read between the lines and understand exactly what Twining was implying by this curiously phrased statement, namely, that the mode of propulsion was not nuclear in any conventional sense, that it was a mode of propulsion unknown to American scientists, and that it was in the possession of "some foreign nation" that had self-evidently been investigating such matters. And at that time in history, there was only *one* possible candidate for all those things: Nazi Germany. Twining is thus subtly informing Schulgen

that they were possibly dealing with an independent postwar Nazi phenomenon, and that Shulgen would have to keep quiet about it. This will be made abundantly clear when we examine the *last* point in our list.

9) *" It is recommended that:- Headquarters, Army Air Forces issue a directive assigning a priority, security classification and Code name for a detailed study of this matter to include the preparation of complete sets of all available and pertinent data which will then be made available to... NACA,... NEPA projects for comments and recommendations."* (Paragraph 4, p. 405): Within the context of the previous points and observations, this is a highly suggestive list of groups and agencies to be sending the proposed study results to. For example, the presence of the National Advisory Committee on Aeronautics (NACA), the precursor to NASA, suggests that Twining and his Air Materiel Command have possibly concluded that the saucers may even posses a rudimentary space capability, or at the minimum, that the technology itself that they exhibit could be adapted to such purposes. NEPA is even more interesting, for this acronym stands for Nuclear Energy Propulsion for Aircraft, a special black project at that time whose purpose was to design atomic power plants for aircraft propulsion. Given Twining's comments noted in point 8 above and their peculiar implications, this is further slight confirmation that his Air Materiel Command may have concluded that it was dealing with some exotic and unknown form of "nuclear" propulsion.

10) "*This opinion is based on interrogation report data furnished by AC/AS-2 and preliminary studies by personnel of T-2 and Aircraft Laboratory"* (Paragraph 1, p. 404): I have reserved the first highlighted comment in Twining's letter to Schulgen for the last position in my analysis, because this point contains the *real* bombshell. First, note that Twining's entire memo is under the heading of "SUBJECT: AMC Opinion Concerning 'Flying Discs'", thus making the memorandum represent the considered opinion of the analysts at his own Air Materiel Command. Now, under this caveat, note carefully the statement he makes to Schulgen at the very beginning: the opinion of the Air Materiel Command, Twining

> informs Schulgen, “is based upon *interrogation report data* furnished by AC/AS-2 and preliminary studies by personnel of T-2 and Aircraft Laboratory.” Given that the United States was not at that time at war with anyone, least of all Russia or any of her client states, *who* was being “interrogated”, and *when?* The answer suggested by the historical context and by all the previously argued considerations seems rather obvious: Nazis! After all, Twining had easy access to many of them right there at the headquarters of his Air Materiel Command at Wright Field in Dayton, Ohio, and lest it be forgotten, this was where Dr. Walter Lippisch, Nazi ramjet expert and designer of the supersonic delta-winged P-13 ended up!

All these considerations now highlight the *Gestalt* of Twining’s memo to Schulgen, for the entire document very subtly and very suggestively is telling Schulgen two basic things: (1) that the saucers represented a development of Nazi technology; but, (2) the Russians were not the ones doing it, nor were the Americans, but the Nazis themselves were the ones doing it.

This brings up the “classification” argument: why would Twining have to be so self-evidently coy about doing so with Schulgen? A closer look at the Roswell extraterrestrial proponents’ “classification” argument reveals the answer. Friedman states the original form of this argument in the following fashion:

> Interestingly, General Twining’s letter to General Schulgen... — in which he states that the phenomenon of flying discs is real — is dated September 23, 1947. This letter was classified Secret, not Top Secret, and therefore could not have mentioned the recovery of alien wreckage. However, it certainly indicates that there was a consensus reached about the legitimacy of flying saucers and the need to get more information.[14]

But now, since we have begun to argue the Nazi interpretation, and seen that it makes abundant sense of these two oft-cited memos within the Roswell research community, let us make a simple substitution of the word “Nazi” for the word “alien” and see if the argument makes sense:

> Interestingly, General Twining's letter to General Schulgen... — in which he states that the phenomenon of flying discs is real — is dated September 23, 1947. This letter was classified Secret, not Top Secret, and therefore could not have mentioned the recovery of *Nazi* wreckage. However, it certainly indicates that there was a consensus reached about the legitimacy of flying saucers and the need to get more information.

Does this substitution make sense?

I contend that it does, and much more so than does any extraterrestrial interpretation of these memoranda, for as has been seen, *the technological data contained both within the Schulgen Collection Memorandum and the initial Twining memo are simply insufficient to belong to any extraterrestrial spacecraft.* The craft described are far too slow, and behave too much like high performance but nonetheless jet aircraft of some sort. Would the crash of something *Nazi* in the New Mexico desert have called forth "interrogations" of German scientists in this country?

Absolutely!

Would the crash of something *Nazi* in the New Mexico desert have been highly classified, so highly classified that Twining would have had to write Schulgen and "disclose" the secret in such a way that he would not be violating or breaching any security procedures or oaths?

Absolutely!

Would Schulgen in turn prepare an intelligence collection memorandum demanding to gather as much intelligence on Nazi scientists and technicians suspected to be somehow related to the phenomenon, without revealing to subordinates the explosive *political* and technological secret, but ask for intelligence while misdirecting the political attention to Russia?

Absolutely!

Would Schulgen ask his agents to concentrate on any equipment features giving a clue not only to the technology but to the geological and geophysical locations it was coming from, such as special provisions for landing and take-off from ice, snow, or water?

Absolutely!

Would the military and intelligence community endeavor to keep the technological and political implications of all this a secret long after the

event, and employ disinformation agents to leak documents suggestive of an extraterrestrial or, conversely, a merely trivial and mundane, explanation?

Absolutely!

Would it do so if that organization were still in existence, and the technology continued to be developed by it or anyone else?

Even more so!

The final thing to be noted about all this is that Schulgen's Collection Memorandum, in which he not only ties the saucer technology to Nazi Germany but even more explicitly, if somewhat unreasonably, to the Horten brothers and their flying wing designs, was issued *after* Twining's return to Ohio from New Mexico, and therefore it may be reasonably concluded that the Air Force had already drawn the Nazi conclusion, and that because of its political (in addition to its technological) implications, it became a highly classified matter.

3. The FBI's "Disc" Communiqué

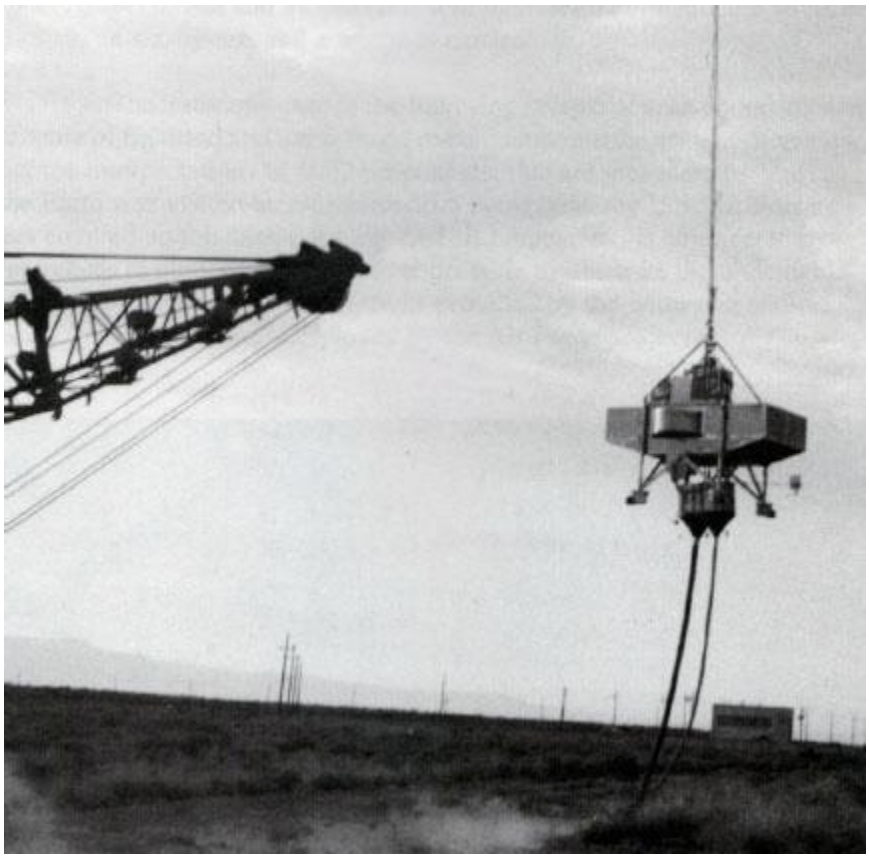
The final authentic document in the extraterrestrial proponents' arsenal is the so-called "Disc communiqué" of the FBI, although it is a strange document, as we shall see. According to Randle and Schmitt, at 7:17 PM eastern time, the FBI field office in Dallas, Texas sent a message to its Cincinnati field office concerning the Roswell crash, The cable was to the Director of the FBI, J. Edgar Hoover, and to the FBI's special agent in charge. According to Randle and Schmitt, the subject of the cable was "Flying Disk, Information Concerning."[15]

> Major Curtan (sic, Major Edward Kirton), Headquarters, Eighth Air Force, telephonically advised this office that *an object purporting to be a flying disc was recovered near Roswell, New Mexico, this date (July 8, 1947). The disc was hexagonal in shape and was suspended from a balloon by cable*, which ballon [sic] was approximately twenty feet in diameter. Major Curtain [sic] *further advised that the object found resembles a high altitude weather balloon with a radar reflector, but that telephonic conversation between their office and Wright Field*

> *had not borne out this belief. Disc and balloon being transported to Wright Field by special plane for examin (sic)*. Information provided this office because of national interest in case and fact that National Broadcasting Company, Associated Press, and others attempting to break the story of location of the disc today. Major Curtan [sic] advised would request Wright Field to advise Cincinnati office results of examination. No further investigation being conducted.[16]

This cable reveals a number of very interesting points not the least of which is the assertion in the cable that both a *hexagonally shaped* "disc" *and* a balloon were involved, and that the former was connected to the latter by a cable!

If that sounds implausible, only recall this picture from the official U.S. Air Force report in which the Mogul theory was propounded, along with the admission that the U.S. military was conducting top secret tests of high altitude lifting bodies and spacecraft by using high-altitude balloons:



Balloon Launching Space Platform

Randle and Schmitt could not have been expected to know about this picture, as their book was published in the same year as the Air Force report, but the picture and the comment in the FBI's cable do raise an interesting implication about the whole "dialectic of Roswell," and that is, the Air Force itself now seems to be acknowledging that there *was* such a contrived dialectic in play all along, since this picture aptly fills the requirement of a dialectical synthesis, being both something exotic and secret, and utterly mundane.

Note carefully though what the cable also explicitly states: the FBI had been advised that the whole affair was over something resembling a "high altitude weather balloon," but that a subsequent telephone call with Wright Field, and presumably therefore with Twining's Air Materiel Command, "had not borne out this belief." The subsequent statement then reiterates the initial statement of the cable, namely, that both a disc and a balloon were

involved, and that *both* were being transported to Wright Field. And lest it be thought that our analysis of the Twining and Schulgen Memoranda are in contradiction with this new dialectical twist to the Roswell story, as we shall see in the next chapter, Nick Redfern has an explanation and a scenario that maintains the Nazi connection and that does *some* justice, though not entirely, to our own analysis of those memoranda.

4. The FBI's Bormann Memorandum: A Related Document?

Interestingly enough, the FBI was engaged in other pursuits than just flying saucers in the late 1940s. As I note in my previous book *The Nazi International*, President Harry Truman had been asked by Supreme Court Justice Jackson, the American prosecutor at the Nuremberg War Crimes Trials, to look into the matter of Nazi Party *Reichsleiter* Martin Bormann's possible survival in Argentina or elsewhere in Latin America. The choice of the FBI to conduct this information was, as I noted in that book, in itself interesting, for by the time the FBI became involved in the hunt for Bormann, the CIA had already been formed, and *given jurisdiction over all intelligence operations overseas.* The FBI, in turn, was confined to intelligence and counterintelligence matters inside the United States and its territories, and *Truman himself knew this as he had signed into law the very statutes creating the CIA!* This makes his acquiescence in Justice Jackson's request all the more interesting, and suggests that Truman and Jackson avoided the CIA because they knew full well by that time that much of its intelligence was being run by Nazi General Reinhard Gehlen's network of "former" Nazi spies! Truman perhaps involved the FBI in these investigations because he did not wish to risk the investigation being leaked via Gehlen's network to Bormann or any other surviving high-ranking Nazis. In any case, we do not know what became of this matter, but we *do* know that the FBI was involved in a hunt for the notorious *Reichsleiter.*

The following document makes it clear that not only was the FBI involved in the hunt, so was British intelligence, and moreover, Bormann appeared to be using or controlling the very radio network in Latin America that I earlier suggested may have been used to communicate with the American Paperclip Nazis:

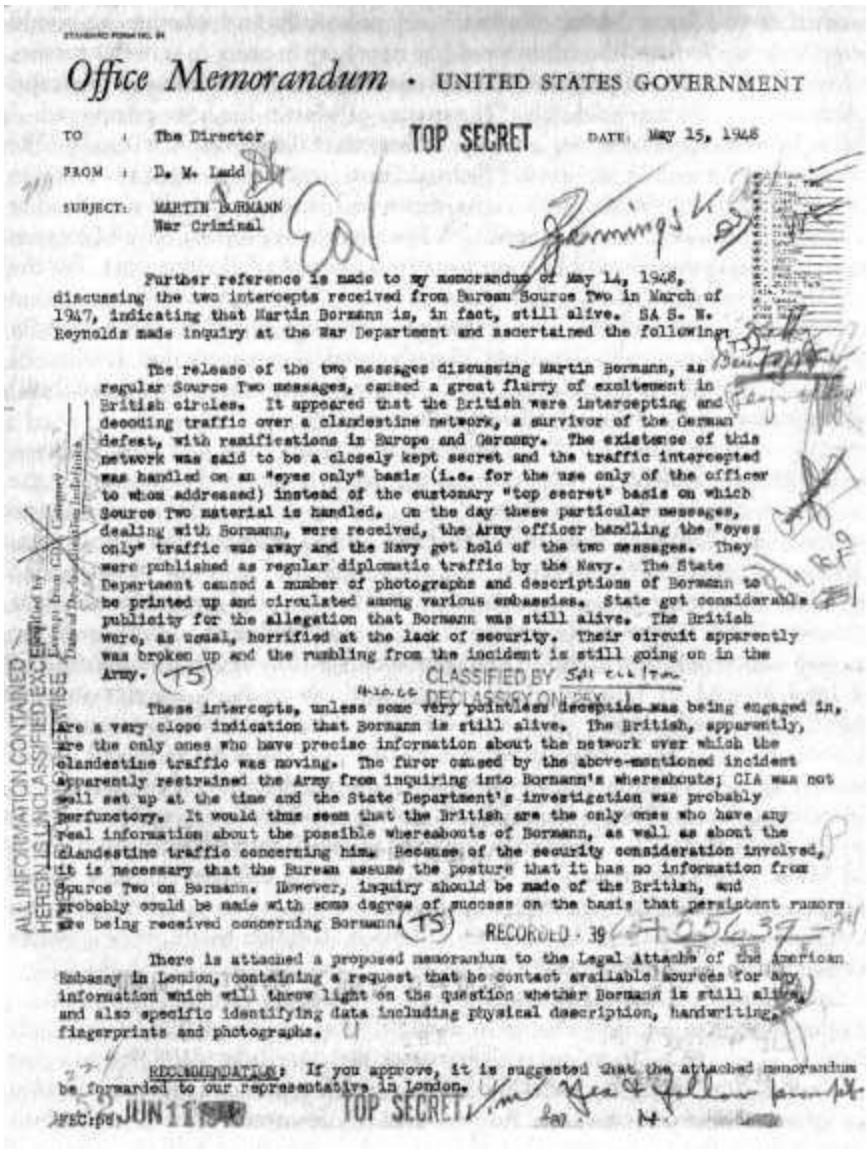
Office Memorandum **.** UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

TO: The Director TOP SECRET DATE: May 15, 1948
FROM: D.M. Ladd
SUBJECT : MARTIN BORMANN
War Criminal

Further reference is made to my memorandum of May 14, 1948, discussing the two intercepts received from Bureau Source Two in March of 1947, indicating that Martin Bormann is, in fact, still alive. SA[17] S. W. Reynolds made inquiry at the War Department and ascertained the following:

> The release of the two messages discussing Marin Bormann, as regular Source Two messages, caused a great flurry of excitement in British circles. *It appeared that the British were intercepting and decoding traffic over a clandestine network, a survivor of the German defeat, with ramifications in Europe and Germany.* The existence of this network was said to be a closely kept secret and the traffic intercepted was handled on an “eyes only” basis (i.e. for the use only of the officer to whom addressed) instead of the customary “top secret” basis on which Source Two material is handled. On the day these particular messages, dealing with Bormann, were received, the Army officer handling the “eyes only” traffic was away and the Navy got hold of the two messages. They were published as regular diplomatic traffic by the Navy. The State Department caused a number of photographs and descriptions of Bormann to be printed up and circulated among various embassies. State got considerable publicity for the allegation that Bormann was still alive. The British were, as usual, horrified at the lack of security. Their circuit apparently was broken up and the rumbling from the incident is still going on in the Army.

Note the implication of the document, for if Bormann was alive, and in command of the old wartime Nazi network of powerful radio transmitters in Latin America, then this implies that a postwar Nazi organizational structure is in place.



Office Memorandum • UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

TO : The Director

TOP SECRET

DATE: May 15, 1948

FROM : D. M. Ladd

SUBJECT: MARTIN BORMANN
War Criminal

Further reference is made to my memorandum of May 14, 1948, discussing the two intercepts received from Bureau Source Two in March of 1947, indicating that Martin Bormann is, in fact, still alive. SA S. W. Reynolds made inquiry at the War Department and ascertained the following:

The release of the two messages discussing Martin Bormann, as regular Source Two messages, caused a great flurry of excitement in British circles. It appeared that the British were intercepting and decoding traffic over a clandestine network, a survivor of the German defeat, with ramifications in Europe and Germany. The existence of this network was said to be a closely kept secret and the traffic intercepted was handled on an "eyes only" basis (i.e. for the use only of the officer to whom addressed) instead of the customary "top secret" basis on which Source Two material is handled. On the day these particular messages, dealing with Bormann, were received, the Army officer handling the "eyes only" traffic was away and the Navy got hold of the two messages. They were published as regular diplomatic traffic by the Navy. The State Department caused a number of photographs and descriptions of Bormann to be printed up and circulated among various embassies. State got considerable publicity for the allegation that Bormann was still alive. The British were, as usual, horrified at the lack of security. Their circuit apparently was broken up and the rumbling from the incident is still going on in the Army. (TS)

CLASSIFIED BY

These intercepts, unless some very pointless deception was being engaged in, are a very close indication that Bormann is still alive. The British, apparently, are the only ones who have precise information about the network over which the clandestine traffic was moving. The furor caused by the above-mentioned incident apparently restrained the Army from inquiring into Bormann's whereabouts; CIA was not well set up at the time and the State Department's investigation was probably perfunctory. It would thus seem that the British are the only ones who have any real information about the possible whereabouts of Bormann, as well as about the clandestine traffic concerning him. Because of the security consideration involved, it is necessary that the Bureau assume the posture that it has no information from Source Two on Bormann. However, inquiry should be made of the British, and probably could be made with some degree of success on the basis that persistent rumors are being received concerning Bormann. (TS)

RECORDED - 39

There is attached a proposed memorandum to the Legal Attache of the American Embassy in London, containing a request that he contact available sources for any information which will throw light on the question whether Bormann is still alive, and also specific identifying data including physical description, handwriting, fingerprints and photographs.

RECOMMENDATION: If you approve, it is suggested that the attached memorandum be forwarded to our representative in London.

JUN 11

TOP SECRET

ALL INFORMATION CONTAINED HEREIN IS UNCLASSIFIED EXCEPT WHERE SHOWN OTHERWISE

The FBI Memorandum to Director Hoover on Bormann Survival and Nazi Transmitter Network in Latin America

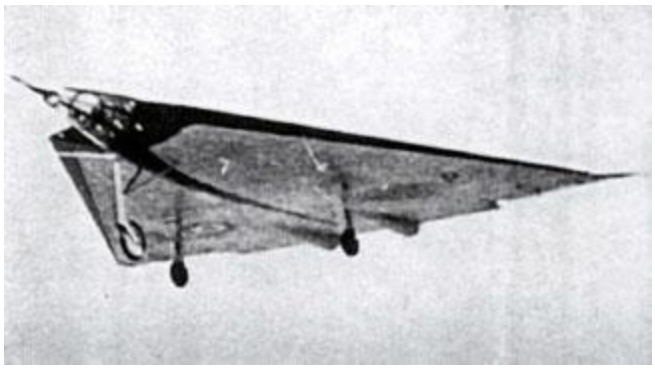
5. Redfern's CIA and FBI Documentation of the Nazi Connection

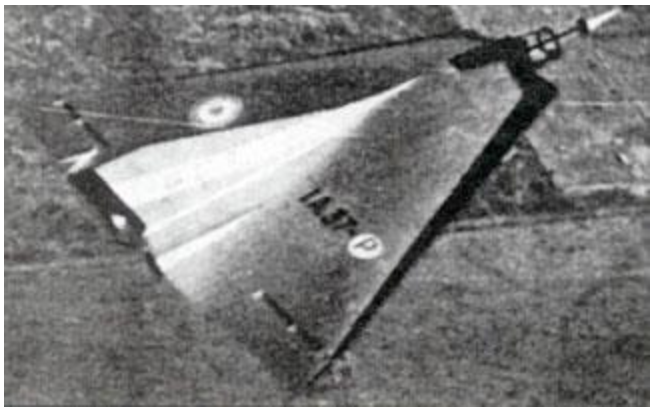
Nor was this all that American intelligence was up to. A CIA document exists that indicates that our interpretation of Twining's and Schulgen's memoranda is essentially correct, for American intelligence appeared to be collecting information concerning Nazi saucer projects as late as 1954!

According to paranormal researcher Nick Redfern — from whom we will hear more in the next chapter — this CIA report, dated 27 May, 1954, states:

> A German newspaper (not further identified) recently published an interview with George Klein, famous German engineer and aircraft expert, describing the experimental construction of "flying saucers" carried out by him from 1941 to 1945. Klein stated that he was present when, in 1945, *the first piloted "flying saucer" took off and reached a speed of 1,300 miles per hour within 3 minutes.* The experiments resulted in three designs: one designed by Miethe, was a disk-shaped aircraft, 135 feet in diameter, which did not rotate; another, designed by Habermohl and Schriever, consisted of a large rotating ring; in the center of which was a round, stationary cabin for the crew. When the Soviets occupied Prague, *the Germans destroyed every trace of the "flying saucer" project and nothing more was heard of Habermohl and his assistants.* Schriever recently died in Bremen, where he had been living. In Breslau, the Soviets managed to capture one of the saucers built by *Miethe, who escaped to France.* He is reportedly in the US at present.[18]

Note that according to this report, the Nazis *destroyed* most of their sensitive saucer research before it could fall into Soviet hands, and this would seem to imply that they either destroyed the projects' accompanying paperwork and records, or saw to it that those records did not fall into either Soviet *or* Allied hands. This would be in keeping with my arguments in previous books that the Nazis, while dividing their less sensitive technologies more or less equally between the Allied and Soviet blocs, retained control of the most sensitive technologies for themselves, and simply relocated those projects. Since Dr. Ronald Richter's "fusion" project in Argentina was really nothing but a continuation of Nazi Germany's most highly classified and advanced research project, the Bell,[19] it stands to reason that similarly advanced and exotic projects would also have been relocated to isolated and friendly host countries in Latin America. As for the Horten brothers, Reimar, the designer of the pair, ended up in...you guessed it....Argentina, where he came up with this for Juan Perón:





Horten's Argentine Delta-Flying Wing, the I.Ae. 37, in flight over Argentina[20]

This, coupled with the fact that Dr. Ronald Richter continued his Bell research in Argentina, is yet another indicator that the Nazi International was alive and well, and using any and all available means — including the resources of other countries — to continue their projects.

In any case, this is not the only reference to Nazi flying saucers percolating into CIA and FBI circles in the 1950s. A November 8, 1957 FBI memorandum records the statements of a Polish man who had seen some *very* strange Nazi technology on display in the area of Gut Alt Golssen, east of Berlin, in 1944. This man, a German prisoner of war, had taken radio training courses in Germany in 1942, and then, in 1944, while "enroute to work in a field," his tractor engine stalled. The FBI's source described hearing the high pitched whine of machinery at that instant, similar to an electric generator. About three hours later the FBI's source claimed to have

seen a large circular enclosure in the same area, surrounded by a kind of "taurpalin wall" approximately fifty feet high. From this tarpaulin-enclosed structure, the man claimed to have seen a vehicle rise slowly and vertically until it cleared the wall, when it began to "move slowly horizontally a short distance out of his view, which was obstructed by nearby trees." The FBI's witness described this vehicle as being of circular shape, "75 to 100 yards in diameter" (!) and "about 14 feet high" and "consisting of a dark gray stationary top and bottom sections, five to six feet high." Not only this, but a middle section that appeared to the witness to be approximately three feet high also "appeared to be a rapidly rotating moving component producing a continuous blur similar to an aeroplane propeller, but extending (to) the circumference of the vehicle so far as could be observed."[21]

An entire decade later, on June 8, 1967, yet another witness came forward to the FBI's Miami field office. This witness, a graduate from the *Luftwaffe's* Air Academy was assigned to test pilot duty to a top secret project in the Austrian Black Forest toward the end of 1944. This witnesses described for the FBI a a saucer-shaped craft of approximately 20 feet diameter that was "radio-controlled and mounted several jet engines around the exterior portion of the craft." The exterior portion of the craft revolved around a dome "in the center which remained stationary." According to the FBI report, the man's responsibility was to photograph the craft when it was flown. The report also states that the witness indicated the craft had apparently successfully downed "at least one American B-26 airplane."[22]

There is no reason not to accept these reports as legitimate nor credible, except, of course, if one has an inherent prejudice against any UFO report that involves extraordinary terrestrial technology, or unless one has an inherent reluctance to admit that the Nazis may indeed have accomplished all these things. If one objects that the report emanating from the former *Luftwaffe* test pilot is suspect because of his potential neo-Nazi leanings, or because his report sounds too parallel with other detailed descriptions emanating from neo-Nazi sources in public circulation earlier than the FBI report was made, then the same cannot be said of the former Polish prisoner of war, who could hardly be expected to bear any sympathies for the Nazis.

In any case, the real significance of these reports — and especially that of the Polish prisoner of war recounting his encounter with the strange Nazi

craft near Gut Alt Golssen — is that the electrical whine of the latter, coupled with what might have been an actual jet or similar type of turbine, indicates that the Nazis were developing rather exotic and unusual *combinations* of otherwise standard technologies.

All of this, needless to say, gives an even wider contextual corroboration of the interpretation of Twining's and Schulgen's memoranda previously argued.

B. The Documents of Dubious and Disputed Authenticity

Given all of this context, then what does one make of some of the *non*-authentic or disputed and dubious documents? My examination of the internal evidence of these documents — as mentioned previously — revealed two "contradictory" data sets, the bodies, and the debris, or technology. But curiously, many of these documents pointed subtle fingers, once again, to Nazi Germany as the origin of the technologies.[23] It is as if someone with "insider knowledge" is deliberately leaking "documents" designed either as a last desperate attempt to obfuscate the story of the Roswell Incident, *or* designed to reveal its true nature and origins. One is, so to speak, confronted by the pattern of "roosters" and "owls" that space program researchers Richard C. Hoagland and Mike Bara have observed inside of NASA in their bestselling book *Dark Mission: The Secret History of NASA*, with roosters wanting to leak deliberate clues, but being unable to come right out and reveal what they know, and owls trying to maintain silence about everything, and cover-up everything that they know.

1. The Eisenhower Briefing Document, Majic-12, and General Montague

The biggest clue lies squatting right in the middle of the most dubious leaked document of them all, the so-called Eisenhower Majestic-12 Briefing document, for that document, it will be remembered, lists General Robert Montague as one of the members of the alleged supersecret Majestic-12 UFO study group. While the document offers no detailed evidence in its currently-extant version to support its conclusion that the recovered Roswell craft and "creatures" were extraterrestrial, Montague's

presence is suggestive of another connection entirely, one consistent with our interpretation of all the documents cited in this chapter, for General Montague, was the commanding general of Fort Bliss in El Paso, Texas, which was the official home to the Paperclip Nazi rocket scientists. His presence in a document otherwise purporting to favor the extraterrestrial hypothesis is, in this author's opinion, a serious clue and indicator that the document is not authentic, for his presence would not seem to be internally consistent with the extraterrestrial logic of the rest of the document. In fact, his presence runs directly counter to it, and this suggests that someone wishes to point a subtle finger once again to Nazi Germany.

2. The White Hot Intelligence Estimate

In this regard, it is worthwhile recalling yet another dubious Majic-12 document, and the remarks I made about it way back in *Reich of the Black Sun*: the alleged "White Hot Intelligence Estimate" of General Nathan Twining, a document that is part of the subsequent Cooper-Cantwheel set. While a complete review of my remarks in that book is neither possible nor necessary here,[24] there are a few details worth recalling. The actual "White Hot Intelligence Estimate" comprises the first part of a larger document entitled "Mission Assessment of Recovered Lenticular Aerodyne Objects and Implications in ??????AR??"[25] Blackened out portions of the document are represented by question marks.

While the document clearly states that bodies were recovered, it also gives no details about these bodies, other than to strongly imply the opinion of the initial examiners was that they were extraterrestrial. The reason that no details are given in the document to corroborate this conclusion is that the relevant portions of the document are blacked out![26]

But when it comes to the detailed descriptions of the alleged recovered technologies, the details are copious, if not downright bizarre, and the most bizarre detail of them all is that the document explicitly claims that the Nazi Paperclip scientists were brought in to examine the recovered technology and debris and asked to render their opinion! This, to me, argues strongly against the document's authenticity, for notwithstanding the previously-noted lax security surrounding the Paperclip scientists, I find it not only

highly dubious but extremely doubtful that the U.S. military, if it genuinely suspected that it had recovered an actual extraterrestrial craft, would have shown it to its former enemies. Indeed, the very laxness of security surrounding those Paperclip scientists would have set off alarm bells at any suggestion that they be invited to examine such a discovery. Once again, the purpose of the document would appear to be to point a finger, in this case, a not-so-subtle one, to Nazi Germany.

This conviction only seems to grow when one examines what is actually stated in the document concerning the recovered technology, which the Nazi Paperclip scientists allegedly interpret as some sort of "neutronic engine" for their American hosts. In the second part of the overall document, entitled "Technical Evaluation (Preliminary),"[27] the following technological details are described:

1) The *steel* of the craft was "cold-formed and heat-treated," resulting in a tensile strength of "150,000 pounds per square inch," and giving 175,000 pounds per square inch of durabilty under shear-testing, which made the fuselage "extremely strong and heat resistant;"[28]
2) The object had a very low profile ratio of 6-to-1 allowing it a great advantage "in overcoming the restrictions of the boundary layer effect in high performance operations;"[29]
3) The power plant was some type of "neutronic engine" that was powered by deuterium. Additionally, "a series of coils and heavy magnets" were somehow connected to this engine "via an odd group of electrodes" that were composed of a "metal not yet identified;"[30]
4) Finally, the "following elements were analyzed and found to exist in the small neutronic power plant":

a) "UF 6 in metallic form;
b) "Hydrogen-flouride gas;
c) "Water and uranium tetraflouride;
d) "Powdered magnesium and potassium chlorate;
e) "Metal similar to lead with a chocolate brown color;
f) "U-235 in metallic form;
g) "Beryllium;[31]
h) "Pure aluminum;

i) *"Thorium isotope material;*
j) "Plutonium powder."[32]

What is extremely interesting about this list[33] from this very dubious document are the implications of each of these four points.

The first point notes that the steel of the craft was actually formed by cold extrusion, and as we shall discover in a subsequent chapter, this was actually one of those "new methods of fabrication" alluded to by General Schulgen, and moreover, was one of the methods of fabrication that the Nazis had brought to a high state of development for the period.

The second point corroborates the previously-noted concerns of General Schulgen that his agents should be on the watch for any intelligence having to do with suctioning or reducing the boundary layer effect.

The third and fourth points require a more deliberate analysis, for clearly the document is describing a very unconventional power plant *composed of very conventional elements oddly combined:* a "neutronic power plant" evidently powered by some bizarre and oddball compound or compounds of everything from "powdered magnesium and potassium chlorate" to *beryllium and some unknown or otherwise unspecified isotope of thorium,* around which whatever container held this mixture apparently was fashioned "a series of coils and heavy magnets."

Now let us take stock of another point: this document was first released to the public in a publication by Drs. Robert and Ryan Wood in 1998.[34] Why is this significant? Because the technological descriptions of this "neutronic powerplant" sound suspiciously similar to the Nazi Bell device, the very device that Dr. Ronald Richter was continuing to research independently in Argentina, which device used a mysterious compound code-named "IRR Xerum 525" for its fuel. This compound was composed in part of *thorium and beryllium oxides* in addition to other radioactive compounds, all of which was electromagnetically and mechanically counter-rotated.[35] Even the document's cryptic and ambiguous phrase "thorium isotope material" is oddly relevant here, because as I note in *The Philosophers' Stone*, one of the biggest mysteries (one which to this day no conventional nuclear analysis has ever been able to explain adequately) that the American intelligence teams entering the Reich at the end of the war

and searching for clues into its atomic program could find no explanation for was why the Nazis were obsessed with stockpiling massive quantities of *thorium.* The answer that I advanced in *The Philosophers' Stone* was that they needed such huge quantities in order to separate enough of the high-spin state thorium 229 isomer for use in the "Xerum 525" fuel of the Bell![36]

So once again, why is the timing of the publication of the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate" and its associated documents in 1998 so important? It is important because at that date, no publication existed in the English language of any of these details concerning the Nazi Bell. All that *did* exist at that time were Igor Witkowski's the relatively-obscure publications in *Polish* of his research on that subject.

Consequently, it would seem either that someone had read Witkowski in the original Polish publications, thus having access to publications and a subject matter that at that time were relatively obscure, *or* someone had an extraordinary degree of "inside knowledge" based on other sources entirely!

3. The Debus Dilemma

All of which now brings us to what I call "The Debus Dilemma." Dr. Kurt Debus was one of the many Nazi scientists brought to this country very early on under the auspices of Operation Paperclip. Debus was the flight test administrator for Von Braun's rocket team at Peenemünde in Nazi Germany, designing test equipment for the V-2 rockets. Debus was present in this country and a member of Von Braun's Paperclip rocket team in New Mexico at the time of the Roswell Incident. Additionally, like most of those Nazis, he made his official home in El Paso and was, of course, associated with Fort Bliss![37]

But this is not all there is to Dr. Kurt Debus by any means, for besides working for Von Braun's secret project, Debus led a double, if not triple, life, for he was one of the scientists directly involved with the Bell project, and moreover was the scientist that came up with the obscure principle of its operation called "magnetic fields separation."[38] It is this very same Dr. Debus who, during a security review in 1948, long *after* he was initially cleared to enter this country by similar reviews in order to work here as a Paperclip scientist, was described in one rather breathless sentence as being

both “an ardent Nazi” and no security threat to the national interests of the United States.

But why would Debus undergo such a review at such a late date?

Because the U.S. Army had learned that Debus had denounced a fellow scientist, Richard Crämer, to the Gestapo in 1942. More importantly, both Mr. Crämer and Dr. Debus were mutually involved in what appeared to be a very secret project, one having nothing to do with rockets whatsover. In his own typewritten statement to the American authorities dated 24 March, 1949, but declassified apparently only much later, Dr. Debus stated this about the event and his denunciation of a fellow German scientist to the Gestapo, and the subsequent tribunal:

> IV. Alleged Denunciation of a German
>
> Mr. Kraemer was an employee of the AEG[39] Transformatorenfabrik,[40] Berlin, in charge of their High Tension laboratory. On occasion of a technical visit to this firm in 1938(?), I met him for the first and only time prior to the meeting, to which the alleged denunciation is related. We had a few words about technical matters.
>
> In summer of fall 1942, Mr. Kraemer visited the High Tension Laboratory of the University of Darmstadt to attent [sic] *some measurements on shock waves. After having performed the tests on which we were in good agreement*, we were waiting for Prof. Hueter and came into a nontechnical conversation for about half an hour, which soon led to strong differences in opinions...[41]

Note carefully that Debus directly states that he and Crämer were working *together* performing some tests designed to take “measurements on shock waves” at the “high tension” (i.e., high voltage) laboratory located at the University of Darmstadt.

But what sort of “shock waves” induced by high voltage could Dr. Debus and Mr. Crämer possibly be measuring? The answer was provided to American authorities in 1954 by none other than Dr. Ronald Richter in

Argentina, who answered discrete inquiries from the U.S. Air Force on what his Argentine "fusion" project was *really* all about in the following way:

> (We) assume, that *highly compressed electron gas becomes a detector for energy exchange with what we call zero point energy*, zero point energy derives from the exclusion principle, the exclusion principle derives from empirical data, in a shock-wave-superimposed, turbulence-feed-back controlled plasma zone exists a high probability for cell-like super-pressure conditions,[42] gas represents an enormously high energy capacity of exchange processes, about 10^{10} (kilowatt hours) per unit volume, on the basis of exchange coupling, *it seems to be possible to 'extract' a compression-proportional amount of zero-point energy by means of a magnetic-field-controlled exchange fluctuation* between the compressed electron gas and sort of cell structure in space…, representing what we call zero point energy, it seems even possible that the large-amplitude fluctuation signals derive from a mechanism of energy-conversion unknown to us….*plasma implosion analysis* might turn out to become an approach to a completely new source of energy.[43]?

Additionally, the Argentine nuclear physicist that examined Richter's claims, Dr. Jose Balseiro — and who found them dubious at best and fraudulent at worst — recorded this observation about what Richter told him his research was based upon:

> Dr. Richter has stated that the control device of the thermonuclear device is based on *the resonance obtained between the Larmor precession frequency — which originates in the interaction of the magnetic field acting on the intrinsic magnetic moment of the (lithium-7) atom — and that of the oscillating magnetic field produced by a radio frequency generator.* The figure given for the constant magnetic field intensity is 15,000 Gauss. On the other hand the device used by Dr. Richter does not produce the nuclear reaction in a vacuum but at atmospheric pressure. Under these conditions, and with the value of magnetic field that has been given, it is possible to show that the

control mechanism, whatever its form, cannot be achieved using the effect mentioned.[44]

Richter also claimed to have discovered all this in research begun in 1936 that involved subjecting plasma to extreme electrical pulses or stress. Note what we now have if all these conceptions are considered together:

1) Richter's work involves a "highly compressed electron gas" or a *plasma;*
2) This plasma, under conditions of "magnetic field stress" that invoke "the Lamor precession frequency" oscillating by means of a radio frequency generator on lithium-7 atoms, that is, *by rotating and stressing that plasma via high electrical stress, i.e., high voltage;*
3) might be a means to detect and transduce, or extract energy directly from the "zero point energy," or the fabric of space-time itself.

So what are the connections to Debus and Crämer?
Very simple. Dr. Richer:

1) worked for the A.E.G. company, the same company that Debus and Crämer worked for and during the *same period* as Crämer's denunciation was being adjudicated by the Gestapo and Crämer's lawyer, and the same company supplied Richter's equipment in Argentina;[45]
2) was performing essentially the *same* type of experiments, i.e., measuring "shockwaves" in a plasma;
3) Debus' specialty was precisely high-voltage direct current electricity and measurement; and,
4) Debus himself had proposed the idea of "magnetic fields separation."

Debus and Crämer, in other words, were most likely measuring high voltage direct current pulses and the shockwaves thereby created in

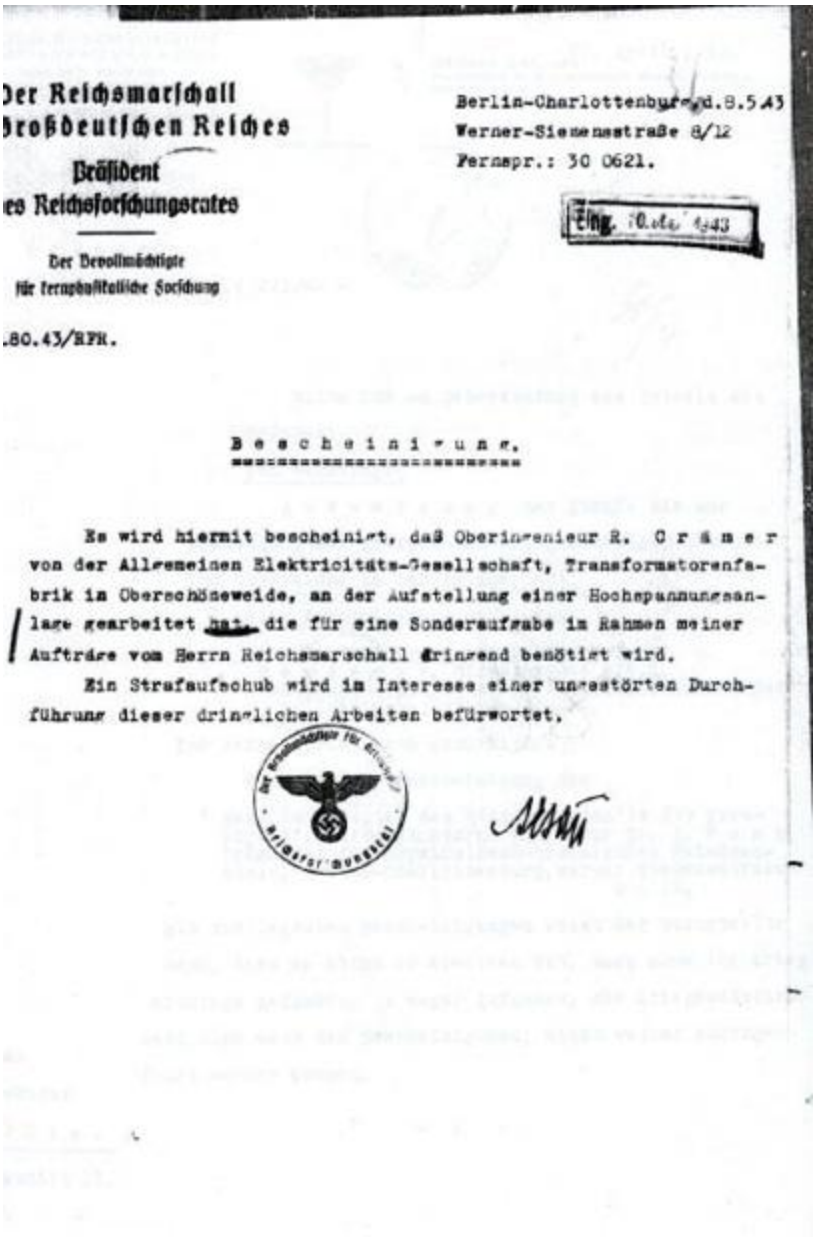
plasmas, all of which makes it *extremely likely* that Debus and Richter knew each other.

This is made even more likely when one considers another statement that Richter made to the American Air Force:

> I was not interested in the development of nuclear fission reactor systems but anxious to develop a controllable thermonuclear reactor system; there was a certain probability that the chain-reacting schemes, *developed in the fall of 1942*, ignited by a shock-wave-controlled arc plasma might turn out to become a controllable reactor system.[46]

That Richter claimed to have done this electrical-arc shockwave work in a plasma in the same year that Debus states he performed similar measurements is hardly coincidental.

But the ultimate connection between Debus and Richter is revealed by what the U.S. Army intelligence teams uncovered when it was investigating Debus' denunciation of Krämer to the Gestapo. These were three short documents related to the project in which both Debus and Krämer were involved, a project that the documents revealed was considered by some very high-ranking Nazi authorities to be "war decisive" (*kriegsentscheidend*). I reproduce the documents on the following two pages, followed by their translations.



Der Reichsmarschall
Großdeutschen Reiches
Präsident
des Reichsforschungsrates

Der Bevollmächtigte
für kriegswirtschaftliche Forschung

.80.43/RFR.

Berlin-Charlottenburg, d.8.5.43
Werner-Siemensstraße 8/12
Fernspr.: 30 0621.

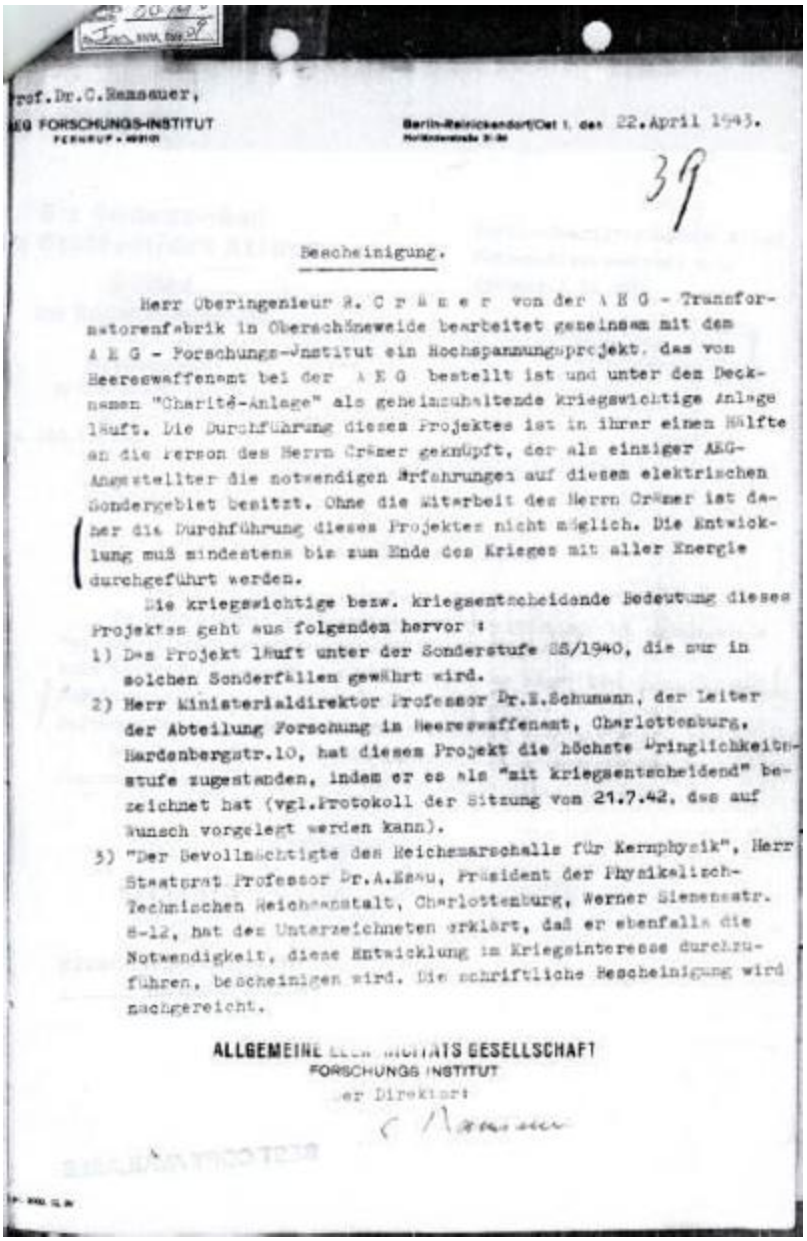
Eing. 10. Mai 1943

Bescheinigung.

Es wird hiermit bescheinigt, daß Oberingenieur R. Krämer von der Allgemeinen Elektricitäts-Gesellschaft, Transformatorenfabrik in Oberschöneweide, an der Aufstellung einer Hochspannungsanlage gearbeitet hat, die für eine Sonderaufgabe im Rahmen meiner Aufträge vom Herrn Reichsmarschall dringend benötigt wird.

Ein Strafaufschub wird im Interesse einer ungestörten Durchführung dieser dringlichen Arbeiten befürwortet.

"War Decisive": Document Submitted in Behalf of Richard Krämer from the Office of Reichsmarschall Hermann Göring



Prof.Dr.C.Hamsauer,

AEG FORSCHUNGS-INSTITUT

Berlin-Reinickendorf/Ost 1, den 22. April 1943.

39

Bescheinigung.

Herr Oberingenieur R. C r ä m e r von der A E G - Transformatorenfabrik in Oberschöneweide bearbeitet gemeinsam mit dem A E G - Forschungs-Institut ein Hochspannungsprojekt, das vom Heereswaffenamt bei der A E G bestellt ist und unter dem Decknamen "Charité-Anlage" als geheimzuhaltende kriegswichtige Anlage läuft. Die Durchführung dieses Projektes ist in ihrer einen Hälfte an die Person des Herrn Crämer geknüpft, der als einziger AEG-Angestellter die notwendigen Erfahrungen auf diesem elektrischen Sondergebiet besitzt. Ohne die Mitarbeit des Herrn Crämer ist daher die Durchführung dieses Projektes nicht möglich. Die Entwicklung muß mindestens bis zum Ende des Krieges mit aller Energie durchgeführt werden.

Die kriegswichtige bezw. kriegsentscheidende Bedeutung dieses Projektes geht aus folgendem hervor :

1) Das Projekt läuft unter der Sonderstufe SS/1940, die nur in solchen Sonderfällen gewährt wird.
2) Herr Ministerialdirektor Professor Dr.E.Schumann, der Leiter der Abteilung Forschung im Heereswaffenamt, Charlottenburg, Hardenbergstr.10, hat diesem Projekt die höchste Dringlichkeitsstufe zugestanden, indem er es als "mit kriegsentscheidend" bezeichnet hat (vgl.Protokoll der Sitzung vom 21.7.42, das auf Wunsch vorgelegt werden kann).
3) "Der Bevollmächtigte des Reichsmarschalls für Kernphysik", Herr Staatsrat Professor Dr.A.Esau, Präsident der Physikalisch-Technischen Reichsanstalt, Charlottenburg, Werner Siemensstr. 8-12, hat den Unterzeichneten erklärt, daß er ebenfalls die Notwendigkeit, diese Entwicklung im Kriegsinteresse durchzuführen, bescheinigen wird. Die schriftliche Bescheinigung wird nachgereicht.

ALLGEMEINE ELEK[illegible]ITÄTS GESELLSCHAFT
FORSCHUNGS INSTITUT
[illegible]er Direktor:

“War Decisive”: Statement Submitted in Behalf of Richard Krämer from the Allgemeine Elektricitäts Gesellschaft in Berlin

The Reichsmarschall of the Greater German Reich

Berlin-Charlottenburg (May 8, 1943)
Werner-Siemensstrasse 8/12
Teleph. 30 0621

President of the Reich
Research Council

The Plenipotentiary
for Nuclear Physics Research

180.43/RFR. (Rec'd May 10, 1943)

Certification

It is herewith certified that Mr. Senior Engineer R. Crämer of the Allgemeine Elektricitäts Gesellschaft Transformer Factory in Oberschöneweide, has worked on the assembly of a high voltage installation, which is for a special purpose within the scope of my commission from the Reichsmarschall and (which) is urgently needed.

A reprieve of sentence is in the interest of an uninterrupted realization of these aforementioned urgent works.

/s/
A. Esau

Apparently nothing about a formal certification, signed by Abraham Esau, Plenipotentiary for Nuclear Physics Research in the office of the Reichsmarschall of the Reich himself, and containing the statement that Crämer was involved in the construction of an urgently-needed piece of high voltage equipment was enough to get the attention of American counter-intelligence investigating Debus, for there is absolutely nothing in his Paperclip file to suggest that anything whatsoever was thought about it. There is not a file with so much as a blacked-out line, nor any reference to any documents not appearing in his Paperclip file. While the necessity for high voltage equipment can certainly be rationalized along the requirements of conventional nuclear research, the explicit statements in the document that this equipment was somehow "urgently" needed registered nary a quiver on the suspicion meters in American counter-intelligence.

The second document, from the director of the A.E.G. company's Research Institute, is much more darkly revealing:

Prof. Dr. C. Ramsauer

AEF Research Institute — Berlin-Reinickendorf-East 1 22 April, 1943
Telephone 492101 — Holländerstrasse 31-34

Certification

Mr. Senior Engineer R. Crämer from the AEG transformers factory in Oberschöneweide is developing, together with the AEG Research Institute, a project involving high voltages that was contracted to the AEG by the Army Ordnance Bureau, and that is being realized under the codename of "Charite-Anlage" as a secret device crucial for the war. The realization of this project is in half dependent upon Mr. Crämer, who is the only AEG employee who possesses the necessary qualifications concerning this special field of electricity. Without the participation of Mr. Crämer further realization of this project is not possible. The research and development work must be carried out with full energy, at least until the end of the war.

The "crucial for the war" or "war decisive" nature of this project results from the following (considerations):

1) The project is being developed under the special priority SS/1940, which is only granted in such special cases.

2) Mr. Ministerial Director Prof. Dr. E. Schumann, Director of the Army Ordnance Bureau, has granted this project the highest level of urgency, which has been described as "war decisive"[47] (see the protocol from the briefing of 21/07/42, which may be submitted upon request).

3) The Plenipotentiary of the Reichsmarschall for Nuclear Physics, Councillor of the State, Prof. Dr. A. Esau, President of the Reich Physical-Technical Office, Charlottenburg, Werner Siemensstrasse 8-12, has explained the undersigned, and will in addition prove the necessity of carrying out this work in the war interest. A written confirmation will be submitted.

Allgemeine Elektricitäts Gesellschaft
Research Institute
The Director:
/s/ C. Ramsauer[48] 4748

Remember, what brought all this about was a chance conversation between Crämer and Debus after both mean had completed tests measuring shockwaves in 1942, the same period in which Richter also claims to have done similar work. Richter additionally stated in his resume to the U.S. Air Force that he worked for the research laboratory of the AEG Company in Berlin in 1943![49] Since we know Richter was connected to the Bell project and continuing its research in Argentina, and since it is now apparent that Debus, Crämer, and Richter all likely knew, or knew about, each other, and all three shared the AEG company in common, then this places Debus' presence at Fort Bliss during the Roswell Incident into an interesting light:

If the disputed "White Hot Intelligence Estimate," whose authenticity is very much in doubt, contains any kernel of truth, it is likely this: of *all* the Nazi Paperclip scientists that might have been consulted by the U.S. military for a preliminary examination of the Roswell craft and/or debris, *Debus was the one most qualified to assess any unconventional advanced field propulsion contained therein, for that precisely was the nature of the most highly classified work that he did in Nazi Germany.* Thus, the technological details contained in that document *might* represent a bizarrely distorted version of what Debus *might* have told them, if he was inclined to say anything at all. In this respect it is important to recall that General Nathan Twining's memorandum to General Schulgen explicitly mentioned that his Air Materiel Command had come to its conclusions regarding the reality of flying saucers in part through *interrogations*, suggesting that at least some of the Nazi Paperclip scientists not only at Wright Field in Ohio, but in New Mexico as well, had in fact actually been questioned in connection to the Incident.

4. A Brief Mention of an Odd "Coincidence"

By the mid-1950s, during the same general time frame when the U.S. Air Force was quietly and discretely questioning Dr. Ronald Richter about his "fusion" research, another event occurs that suggests quite strongly that the U.S. military had suddenly embarked on a crash anti-gravity engineering and development program. British aerospace and defense technology journalist Nick Cook, in his bestselling book, *The Hunt for Zero Point*, observed that around the mid-1950s, the subject of anti-gravity almost completely disappeared from the open literature, whether technical or popular. And at approximately the same time, American physicist Thomas Townsend Brown, another advocate for the development of "electro-gravitics," similarly "disappeared" to France to pursue that research, only to return some time later to pursue piezoelectric research for the U.S. Navy.

C. Conclusions: The Outlines of the Scenario Begin to Take Shape

All these considerations suggest that the U.S. military came to the realization that it was dealing with some terrestrial entity that was pursuing its own research into exotic propulsion systems and aerodynes. By all documentary indicators explored thus far, that entity appears to be some independent Nazi organization, for placed into the wider context of the "Paperclip detente," those documents suggest the politically and technologically explosive reason for an ongoing cover-up: that Nazi entity had at least a decade's head start, if not more, on the United States in the development of such technologies.

Does such an interpretation adequately rationalize the U.S. Air Force's "shoot down" order for UFOs, an order that we have seen may have emanated in the same year as the Roswell Incident itself? It not only *does* rationalize that order, it does so *without* the unreasonable assumption that the U.S.A. was willing to risk an interplanetary war with "extraterrestrials."

Do the documents — both authentic and disputed — make sense in the light of the wider context and the Nazi interpretation? They not only make sense, but they make abundant sense. Would the U.S. military have "interrogated" its Paperclip Nazis — as was suggested by General Twining's memorandum — if what crashed in New Mexico was Nazi? Most definitely. Would the U.S. military's response to the crash of something Nazi be one of near panic? And would it initiate a cover-up and seek to plant deep-cover disinformation and seek to control the interpretations of that Incident? Again, most definitely.

It now remains to be seen if this "exotic but terrestrial" interpretation can make sense of the two remaining components of the Roswell dataset: the bodies, and the debris.

---

[1] Randle, *Case MJ-12*, p. 93.

[2] Ibid., pp. 94-95

[3] See my *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 274-330, and *SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 326-373. The "one document" from the later batch of Majic-12 documents that clearly and unapologetically pointed the finger to Nazi Germany and to *nowhere else* was the "Encyclopedia of Flying Saucers" by Vernon Bowen, covered on pp. 363-373.

[4] Robert G. Todd, "Bill Moore and the Roswell Incident: The True Believers Deceived," *The Spot Report*, Friday, March 7, 1997, p. 3, italicized emphasis Todd's, boldface emphasis mine. The actual pictures of Todd's magazine article appear in the appendix to this book.

[5] Todd, "Bill Moore and the Roswell Incident: The True Believers Deceived," *The Spot Report*, Friday, March 7, 1997, p. 3, emphasis Todd's

[6] Ibid., p. 4.

[7] Todd, "Bill Moore and the Roswell Incident: The True Believers Deceived," *The Spot Report*, Friday, March 7, 1997, p. 4. Todd observes "Again, the forger omitted the highlighted genuine text because it attributed the flying saucers to terrestrial technology, and not to super-advanced alien technology."

[8] Ibid. Again, Todd's comments are worth stating: "The highlighted portions from the *genuine* document clearly referred to the location and operation of *bomb bay doors* on unconventional (but terrestrial) aircraft — *not*to the location and operation of exotic alien doors on extraterrestrial spaceships. Still, the forger cleverly manipulated the genuine text to add weight to the idea of extraterrestrial origin.

[9] Todd, "Bill Moore and the Roswell Incident: The True Believers Deceived," *The Spot Report*, Friday, March 7, 1997, p. 4. Todd comments: "Obviously a 'tripod' arrangement would be useful only for aircraft capable of vertical take-offs and landings. Otherwise, we might reasonably expect a tripod (as opposed to a *tricycle)* arrangement to dig into the ground upon landing and flip the aircraft over. The genuine document contains no reference to tripod landing gear, although it does mention a skid arrangement for landing, which certainly isn't beyond reason, even for conventional aircraft." Todd is correct, for Nazi Germany produced a number of jet, ramjet, and rocket propelled aircraft equipped with skids.

[10] Ibid., p. 1.

[11] Todd, "Bill Moore and the Roswell Incident: The True Believers Deceived," *The Spot Report*, Friday, March 7, 1997, p. 5.

[12] Ibid.

[13] Admiral Byrd and Operation Highjump, anyone?

[14] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic*, p. 71.

[15] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 60.

[16] Ibid., emphasis added.

[17] SA, i.e., Special Agent.

[18] Nicholas Redfern, The F.B.I. Files: The FBI's UFO Top Secrets Exposed (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1998), p. 199, emphasis added.

[19] See my *Nazi International*, pp. 249-350.

[20] These photographs are reproduced by Igor Witkowski in his superb and magisterial work, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe* Farnborough, Hampshire, United Kingdom: European History Press, 2003), p. 68, courtesy of the Argentine Insituto Aerotecnico.

[21] Redfern, *The F.B.I. Files*, p. 204, citing the FBI memorandum. For a fuller discussion of this document and its ramifications, see my *Secrets of the Unified Field*, pp. 242-248.

[22] Ibid., pp. 205-207. Redfern reproduces pictures of the actual FBI documents recording this report on pp. 206-207.

[23] See my *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 274-330, and *SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 318-373.

[24] The discussion of this particular document appears in Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 285-303.

[25] Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun*, p. 285.

[26] Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 289-290.

[27] Ibid., p. 292.

[28] Ibid., p. 293.

[29] Ibid.

[30] Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun*, p. 293.

[31] A logical choice for a "neutronic engine"!

[32] Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 294-295.

[33] For the complete list of the technical features and details, see *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 293-295.

[34] Drs. Robert M. Wood and Ryan S. Wood, eds., *The Majestic Documents* (Redwood, California: Wood and Wood Enterprises, 1998).

[35] See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 171-191; 272-307; *Secrets of the Unified Field*, pp. 248-252; 266-288, and *The Philosophers' Stone* (Port

Townsend, Washington: Feral House, 2009), pp. 291-311.

[36] Farrell, *The Philosophers' Stone*, pp. 297-303.

[37] Debus' Paperclip file contains a document entitled "Headquarters 7th Field Artillery Battalion" and dated 19 March, 1947, listing the dependents of Paperclip scientists located at various places around the country. Under the listing for Fort Bliss, the names of Irmgard and Ute Debus appear on page 2 of the document. National Archives and Records Administration, Paperclip File of Dr. Kurt Debus, Rg. no 319, Stack Area 270, Row 84, Compartment 2, Shelf 4, Box 35. Additionally, Debus' contract with the U.S. Army is dated 19 November, 1945.

[38] Colonel Corso's remarks should also be recalled in this context.

[39] AEG: *Allgemeine Elektricitäts Gesellschaft.*

[40] "Transformatorenfabrik": transformer factory.

[41] Dr. Kurt H. Debus, "Statement, 24 March, 1949," Paperclip file of Dr. Kurt Debus, National Archives and Records Administration, Paperclip File of Dr. Kurt Debus, Rg. no 319, Stack Area 270, Row 84, Compartment 2, Shelf 4, Box 35, p. 3.

[42] Cell-like supre-pressure conditions, i.e., Richter is perhaps referring to ball lightning, a form of plasma. Q.v. *The Nazi International*, pp. 343-345.

[43] Henry Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* pp.; 291-292, citing Richter's Paperclip file, emphasis added.

[44] Dr. José A Balseiro, "Report About the Experiments of Dr. R. Richter, according to what was Witnessed by Me During the Visit made to the AtomicEnergy plant at Isla Huemul, from 5 to 8 September 1952," www.ib.edu.ar/informes-huemul/reports-heumul-principal.html, p. 4, emphasis added.

[45] Farrell, *The Nazi International*, pp. 289, 346.

[46] Ibid., p. 318, citing in Henry Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* p. 263, emphasis added. According to German researcher Rainer Karlsch, Richter even made a proposal to the Nazi authorities - dimly evocative of the technologies of the "neutronic engine" described in the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate"! — that nuclear fusion might be induced by high-velocity particles shot into a

highly compressed deuterium plasma contained within a uranium vessel (See *Nazi International*, p. 313)

[47] "war decisive": kriegsentscheidend.

[48] Translation of Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 257. I have taken the liberty of modifying the translation in some passages.

[49] Farrell, *The Nazi International*, p. 289.

14
The Bodies:
Nick Redfern's *The Body Snatchers in the Desert*

"There was indeed such a program beginning right after the war with Fairchild Aircraft and Oak Ridge National Laboratory in Tennessee."
Stanton T. Friedman[1]

It may seem odd or even "methodologically impertinent" to begin an analysis of ufologist and paranormal researcher Nick Redfern's oft-overlooked and under-appreciated book, *The Body Snatchers in the Desert* with a picture, and a survey of a representative review of it, but in this case, there is method to my madness. The review of Redfern's book comes from the premier Roswell researcher, and from the man whom many regard as "the father of modern UFOlogy," Stanton T. Friedman.

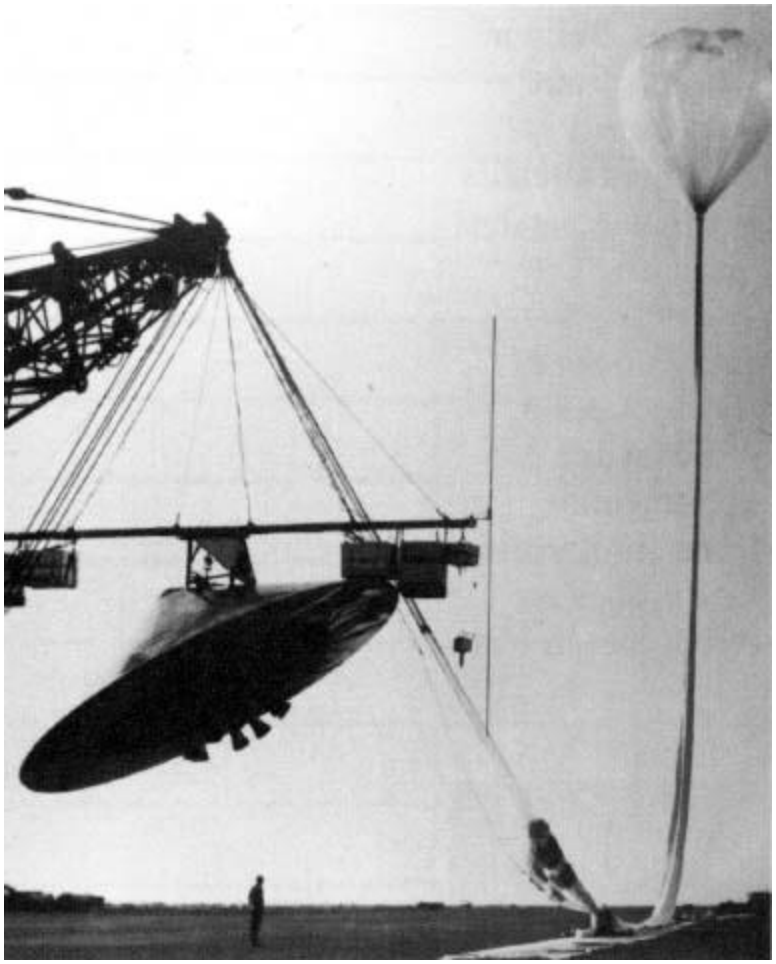
A. The Review and the Inconvenient Picture

Friedman's principal problem with Redfern's book is that it

> focuses on the testimony of whistleblowers. His major source, the Colonel, apparently approached him at the Crash Retrieval Conference in Henderson, Nevada in November 2003. We don't know who he is or how carefully he has been vetted. A second source was a woman, the Black Widow, who claimed to have worked at Oak Ridge National Laboratory and to have been aware of bodies being used for terrible experiments and that these were the ones found at Roswell or perhaps the Plains of San Augustine. We don't know who she is or how much evidence has been directly obtained to validate her story.[2]

These are, indeed, the types of witnesses forming the basis of Redfern's story, and they should bother any Roswell investigator. They bother Friedman, and they bother me. They bother me almost as much as basing the extraterrestrial interpretation of the event primarily on the bodies and upon the second-hand dead-man's testimonies for them, which, as we have seen, when the testimonies of two such witnesses — Sergeant Melvin Brown/Beverly Bean and the dead nurse Naomi Selff/Glenn Dennis — are excluded, one ends with a list of physiological features hardly compelling to the conclusion that the bodies came from another planet, if there were any bodies at all.

But then there was this:



High Altitude Balloon Launching of Voyager Spacecraft[3]

This made what the “whistleblowers” told Redfern even more interesting, for it provided a bit of context. Here’s how Friedman summarizes the basic thesis of the book:

> ...the so-called Roswell Incident did not involve an alien spacecraft or a Mogul balloon or a weather balloon radar reflector combination. Instead, what crashed was a Horten Brothers Flying wing supported by a huge Japanese-designed balloon and containing disabled or genetically damaged Japanese who were used as human guinea pigs to provide data on the effects of radiation for use in the NEPA Program. NEPA stands for Nuclear Energy for the Propulsion of Aircraft.
>
> *There was indeed such a program beginning right after the war with Fairchild Aircraft and Oak Ridge National Laboratory in Tennessee.* [4]

In other words, there not only was such a program, the U.S. Air Force was kind enough to provide the public a picture of balloon launching what looks like a flying saucer (in this case, a Voyager space capsule), just for good measure before any “whistleblowers” ever contacted Redfern, which raises interesting questions and potentialities.

B. Redfern’s Book and the Real Roswell Problem

But Friedman’s remarks are not all that there is to Redfern’s book, for his basic hypothesis is slightly different than what Friedman makes it out to be. Redfern himself begins his book by posing a question that exposes the whole “Roswell dialectic” as perhaps a false opposition that did nothing but manipulate independent efforts to interpret the event correctly: what if, he says, “there was another, distinctly darker explanation behind the Roswell legend — one that summarily dismissed the balloon and crash-test dummy claims but that also laid to rest the theories that extraterrestrials met their deaths in the New Mexico desert?”[5]

So what then *were* the bodies found at Roswell? According to one of Redfern’s anonymous witnesses, a lady who worked at the Oakridge Laboratory in Tennessee, and whom Redfern calls “the Black Widow,” the bodies were not aliens at all, they were dead Japanese victims of Progeria

Syndrome who were brought to this country, along with the notorious "Unit 731" of the Japanese Army. This unit, like its Nazi counterparts in Europe, conducted barbaric and inhuman torture under the guise of "experiments" for the ostensible purpose of creating biological weapons. The mentally or physically disabled, prisoners of war, or people with incurable conditions — like Progeria — were barbarically tortured in these experiments, many of which were conducted without the use of general or local anaesthetics. And Redfern's Black Widow was specific; there was "no doubt that they were human — handicapped humans — and from Japan or China, I would say to you. Some were obviously the result of inbreeding and some showed characteristics of larger heads, some what I now know to be progeria, six fingers — all kinds of syndromes."[6] The Black Widow maintained that the U.S. military, which had liberated some of these victims on its island-hopping campaign across the Pacific during the war, had brought them back to this country, and was continuing to use them as human guinea pigs doing testing of human survivability in high altitudes using high altitude balloons.[7] But the most disturbing aspect of her story was that the very people conducting these experiments for the U.S. military were some of the very same Japanese and Nazi doctors who had conducted the grizzly experiments for the Axis powers in the first place.[8]

As Redfern concludes at this point of his book, "with the Black Widow's story in mind, all the details of the Roswell story — even its inconsistencies — begin to make sense."[9] For example, Redfern points out how the FBI's "disc communiqué" cable, which *nowhere* mentions the recovery of any bodies, extraterrestrial or otherwise — and which was a "favored document" in some pro-extraterrestrial Roswell researchers' considerations, makes even more sense in the light of secret U.S. military testing in high altitude balloon, using hapless handicapped and progeria victims, all being conducted by Nazi and Japanese "doctors." The political exposure of such an operation alone would have been unthinkable to the U.S. military, and the political backlash enormous against it, only two years after the defeat of the Axis powers.[10] Moreover, the explanation also made much more sense than the U.S. Air Force's rather lame Mogul balloon explanation, which I believe to be part of an ongoing cover-up. If Redfern's "whistleblowers'" thesis is true, it would explain why the Air Force would seek to pawn off

“crash-test dummies” as an adequate explanation for the Roswell bodies (again, if indeed any at all were recovered, for remember, with the bodies, unlike the debris, there are no good primary firsthand witnesses):

> ...the horrific nature of some of the experimentation — and, indeed, most crucially, the fact that it tied the American government to some of the most notorious and diabolical figures in Unit 731 — meant that elements of the military and intelligence community wanted the story systematically buried at all costs, even more than half a century later.[11]

And hence the Roswell dialectic of “weather balloons” and “flying saucers” was born, for those two things — the disc and the balloon — constituted both the truth and the disinformation that were designed to hide the politically explosive truth that had to be hidden: the U.S. military was in league with immoral monsters.

1. Redfern and the First Problem: The Roswell Dialectic and the Roswell Researchers

But one suspects that the *real* problem of Redfern’s book for so many in the Roswell research community — both “believers” and “skeptics” — is that it rejects the whole “dialectic of Roswell” and stands somewhere between the two poles, raising uncomfortable philosophical questions not only about the Paperclip Nazis and the bodies, but about the military’s ongoing role in Roswell research, and therefore inconvenient and uncomfortable questions about many of those Roswell researchers and their motivations and objectivity as well.

For example, Redfern is one of the few Roswell researchers to notice that Colonel Corso, notwithstanding the massive problems of the assertions made in his book, cannot be entirely dismissed either, as many have done:

> Corso may have stood by the extraterrestrial hypothesis from the time his book *The Day After Roswell* was published in 1997 until his death in 1998, but it is a telling fact that he maintained — in a fashion *very* similar to the testimony that we have already examined — that there *was* a connection between the vehicles recovered in New Mexico

> in 1947 and the various aircraft designed by the Horten brothers. Were Corso's claims those of an unwitting dupe in a disinformation exercise that began within the Army's Foreign Technology Division in the early 1960s? Or, as the Colonel offers as a possibility, was Corso, *as a loyal soldier to the very end, continuing to perpetuate that same operation for reasons that possibly relate to the ongoing and deliberate obfuscation of the true nature of the Roswell events*?[12]

Indeed, this is the same possibility that I have raised in the previous pages, but once one asks this question of *one* of the Roswell investigators with military or intelligence backgrounds, one perforce asks it of most of them. As I observed in chapter 11, *many if not most* of the "major names" in Roswell research on both poles of the dialectic have this background in common.[13] Thus the whole story that Redfern's "whistleblowers" told him — whether true or not — exposes the problem that has been there all along: the "Roswell dialectic" itself, which Redfern has seen *clearly.* For this reason alone his book is important, and a refreshing change from all the rotting monotony of most Roswell books. The importance of Redfern's book lies not just in its *story*, but in its philosophical observation of the Roswell Incident as a dialectical story.

2. Redfern and the Second Problem: The Incongruous Presence of Paperclip Nazis

But there is a second major reason Redfern's book is highly important, and yet another reason that one should not dismiss it simply because it relies on "whistleblower" and anonymous testimony, rather than on the far more "solid" testimony of second-hand witnesses relating ever-varying stories of what dead people told them about aliens with lizard skin and suction cups on tentacles that were used for fingers! That reason is that Redfern — like Corso — has correctly realized that the mere presence of Paperclip Nazis in New Mexico, working on black projects for the government — and, as we have also seen, exhibiting far too much independence from their hosts — ***is*** *a relevant context* and data point to the Roswell Incident and to its interpretation. The implication of the scenario that Redfern's witnesses told him is quite simple: merely to demonstrate

that there were no V-2 launches at the time of Roswell, or to dismiss the resemblance of the Roswell debris to the Horten flying wings, is *not* to dismiss the Nazi connection nor to disprove it, for there were *other* technologies available to them, and a vast assortment of combinations into which those technologies could be engineered and deployed. Redfern's scenario offers a completely plausible and *terrestrial* rationalization for the Roswell *cover-up*, even if it fails in certain respects of the Roswell *Incident*, and that is, that if Nazis (and Japanese) were involved and if that involvement pertained to human experimentation, there is ample political reason to conceal the truth down to our own day, and to involve the Roswell researchers themselves in that process (as he has clearly implied in the case of Colonel Corso).

3. Redfern and the Third, Final, and Biggest Problem: Bodies are Alien, but Not Extraterrestrial, and Fully Rationalizable

But if there is one factor, one signal central theme and implication that makes Redfern's book one of the most crucial in Roswell research — which in my opinion it definitely is — then this would be in the fact that it utterly dispenses with any extraterrestrial rationalization of the Roswell bodies, and discloses another terminological obfuscation that has been present all along, namely, that the word "alien" can, and originally did, simply mean "foreign," and has come to mean, in large part as a result of propaganda on behalf of the extraterrestrial hypothesis, extraterrestrials themselves.

Let us recall what the features of those "aliens" were:

1) large heads, but out of proportion to the rest of the body, and other body proportions, such as upper-to-lower arm ratio being different than normal humans, with the upper arm longer than the lower, and the bodies and/or heads are often described as bald and pear-shaped or as lacking prominent normal human chins;
2) large eyes, and in some cases, slanted eyes;
3) small mouths and ears, though in one case mention was made that there were no nose or mouth or ears;
4) bodies between four and five feet tall, though in some cases bodies as small as two feet were mentioned;

5) normal digits or fingers, but mention was made of four, sometimes five, fingers, by witnesses in contexts that only four fingers may have been visible;
6) persistent descriptions of the bodies as being like those of children, and moreover, children of approximately “ten years of age.”

In the case of Mac Brazel’s subsequent interviews with Frank Joyce, the bodies were described only in negative terms as:

7) Not “green”;
8) Not monkeys; and,
9) Not human.

And here is Redfern’s telling rationalization of the first six points of this list:

> The specific syndromes that (Barker) referred me to were Hutchinson-Gilford progeria syndrome, Werner’s syndrome, and Ellis-can Creveld syndrome. An examination of available data reveals astonishing similarities between descriptions of people exhibiting these conditions and the descriptions of the bodies recovered in the aftermath of the events at Roswell and elsewhere in the New Mexico desert in 1947.
>
> Ellis-van Creveld (EVC) syndrome is a form of short-limbed dwarfism. Children with EVC are diagnosed at birth because of noticeably short limbs and other characteristic features. The middle parts of the limbs are primarily affected, with the shortening more apparent in the lower limbs. As the child gets older, knock-knee or genu valgum occurs, which can require surgery, and the hands are short and wide and have an additional digit next to the fifth finger. In scientific terms this is referred to as postaxial polydactylyusm and occur in virtually 100 percent of individuals with EVC. In addition, 10 to 20 percent of people with EVC have an additional digit on the feet. Adult height ranges from forty-two to sixty inches and skin manifestation include problems with nails and teeth. Changes in the

> EVC gene are also responsible for a related syndrome, Weyers acrofacial dysostosis, in which individuals may display mild short stature, extra fingers and toes, and dental abnormalities.[14]

Note that the body and limb proportions change in victims suffering from these syndromes, and that the height of such victims varies from between three and a half to five feet, within the "Roswell range" of height descriptions.

Progeria victims add new considerations to the "Roswell" aliens' descriptions, for they "rarely exceed four feet in height" and "all body hair, including the eyebrows and eyelashes, either fails to develop or is lost." And finally "there are also skeletal and structural abnormalities, such as a receding chin, an oversized bald head, beaklike nose, and protruding eyes."[15] Progeria victims are precisely children, and their average life spans are from about twelve to thirteen years.[16]

Additionally, Redfern also notes that there is strong corroborative evidence of the scenario that his witnesses told him — that is, that Japanese progeria victims were used in these inhuman experiments in New Mexico — because one very rare form of progeria in adults, Werner's syndrome, occurs in almost 80 percent of all cases in *Japan*, where "first- and second-cousin marriage are more common than in the West."[17]

In other words, *every physiological detail* of the "aliens" reported by the majority of "witnesses" — for remember, one is dealing in large part with second-hand and dead-man's testimonies — if fully rationalizable along *entirely* terrestrial lines. Indeed, even Mac Brazel's description — if one accepts the authenticity of Frank Joyce's testimony in this respect -can be interpreted as consistent with these details, since someone in Brazel's position, who is unlikely ever to have encountered victims suffering from any of these syndromes, may have concluded that what he saw was "not human."

Lest the point be missed, it is best to state it bluntly: those Roswell researchers such as Randle and Schmitt, who have made much of the argument for the extraterrestrial hypothesis center upon the allegedly absolutely persuasive and compelling nature of the physiological descriptions of said bodies, are simply talking utter and complete nonsense. And let it also be noted: *whether or not one accepts the scenario that*

Redfern's anonymous witnesses related to him and that he has reported in his book is completely beside the point, for the details of the Roswell bodies, if there were any bodies recovered at all, can be fully rationalized on a terrestrial basis. If such bodies *were* recovered and can ever be documented by primary witness testimony or other means it would only argue all that much more that the scenario he was told is true. If true, then the bodies were indeed probably "alien," i.e., *foreign*, but certainly not extraterrestrial. This brings us back to Friedman's review, for this central implication of Redfern's book could hardly have been lost upon him. The fact that he does not mention this implication at all is, perhaps, telling, for the implication is that as far as the Roswell Incident and its interpretation are concerned, the extraterrestrial interpretation of the bodies is dead.

There are, however, interesting questions that remain. It strikes this author as very peculiar and perhaps suspiciously so, that the U.S. Air Force, in its *The Roswell Report: Case Closed*, would place pictures of balloons — which are *not* the Mogul balloons that it advocated as an explanation of Roswell in the main text of that book — launching space probes to high altitude for testing. Then, some years later, along come Redfern's "whistleblowers" with yet another take on the Roswell Incident: what crashed was a balloon launched Horten flying wing (or some similar Nazi contrivance), carrying hapless Japanese progeria victims aloft for high altitude testing.[18]

As has already been noted, such a project would indeed provide compelling *political* motivation for an ongoing cover-up. There is just one problem to the whole scenario: the allegations of the recovery of bodies at the crash all stem, once again, from second-hand and dead-man testimony. Redfern's scenario, in the end, explains bodies that many not ultimately have been there at all. As was seen previously, when all is said and done, one is left with the crash and recovery of some rather extraordinary *debris* and a subsequent attempt to cover that up.

As for *extraterrestrial* bodies, Redfern has, in this author's opinion, banished them forever from the landscape of the Roswell Incident.

So it would seem, after all, that the real problem was never the bodies (if there were any), but the debris. What about the debris was so extraordinary?

Surprisingly, the answer may have been provided by a medical doctor entirely unconnected to Roswell research...

---

[1] Stanton T. Friedman, "Reveiew of Nick Redfern's 'Body Snatcher in the Desert,'" www.v-j-enterprises.com/sfredfern1.html, p. 1.

[2] Ibid.

[3] McAmdrew/U.S. Air Force, *The Roswell Report: Case Closed*, p. 45.

[4] Stanton T. Friedman, "Reveiew of Nick Redfern's 'Body Snatcher in the Desert,'" www.v-j-enterprises.com/sfredfern1.html, p. 1, emphasis added.

[5] Nick Redfern, *Body Snatchers in the Desert: The Horrible Truth at the Heart of the Roswell Story* New York: Paraview Pocket Books, 2005, p. viii.

[6] Redfern, *Body Snatchers in the Desert*, p. 6.

[7] Ibid., pp. 6-9.

[8] Ibid., pp. 9-10.

[9] Ibid., p. 11.

[10] Ibid., pp. 18-19.

[11] Redfern, *Body Snatchers in the Desert*, p. 91. I *do* think bodies were recovered, just not extraterrestrial ones.

[12] Redfern, *Body Snatchers in the Desert*, *p. 180.*

[13] See chapter 11, pp. 315-316.

[14] Redfern, *Body Snatchers in the Desert*, pp. 92-93.

[15] Redfern, *Body Snatchers in the Desert*, p. 93.

[16] Ibid.

[17] Ibid., p. 93f.

[18] Another major theme of Redfern's book was that this testing involved experimentation involving radioactivity and human exposure to it, in the hopes of advancing the knowledge necessary to create nuclear-powered aircraft.

15
The Doctor and the Debris: A Brief Interlude for a Pseudonymous Deathbed Confession

"The way in which the Third Reich was forced to change the way that it
controlled science, is not therefore only a simple optimization of what already
exists, but can bring changes that are quite simply revolutionary."
Igor Witkowski[1]

Doctor John Lerma is just about the last sort of person one would ever expect to encounter in conjunction with the Roswell Incident. Lerma is a physician who has devoted himself to the care of the terminally-ill and to the recounting of their spiritual experiences, and who has a major interest in the experience of his patients who, while clinically dead, for whatever reason, come back to life to record their astonishing observations, Lerma has authored two books recounting the stories of his patients, *Into the Light* and *Learning from the Light*.

In the second of these books, however, Lerma recounts the story of his encounter with one of his terminally-ill patients, and what he told him, in one of its chapters. As with the other stories recounted in the book, Lerma changes the name of his patient in order to protect his and his family's identity. The story, like all the others, is largely about how this man reconciled himself to his impending death, and found peace with God before his passing.

But before he did so, the man — to whom Lerma gives the pseudonym "Colonel Marshall Bradfield" — told Lerma a remarkable story about the Roswell Incident, one that did *not* recount scintillating tales of recovered extraterrestrials, nor weather balloons nor Mogul balloons nor even

Japanese progeria victims being flown in Horten flying wings suspended beneath high altitude balloons. He said nothing about any hieroglyphics, or filaments having the properties of fiber optics. “Bradfield’s” story contained none of the by-now familiar elements of the story of the Roswell Incident. It was astonishingly, breathtakingly, different from all those stories both for its simplicity, and for its thoroughly chilling implication.

A. “Marsh’s” Story

Lerma notes that “Bradfield’s” friends had simply called him “Marsh,” after his first name. In any case, Lerma first met “Marsh” when he

> was a 92-year-old man who, because of his rare form of cancer, chose to be transferred from a well-known military hospital in the east to MD Anderson Cancer Institute in Houston, Texas. It was at MD Anderson that he was accepted into a 12-week investigational protocol that was to attempt, as Col. Marsh put it, “to win by losing.”
>
> I met Marsh and his wife, Betty, as the ambulance pulled into our facility in Houston, Texas. They were a lovely couple, holding hands and with tears in their eyes. As they peered out the rear window of the ambulance, our eyes met and we accepted our paths in this combined journey. As the door of the ambulance opened, Marsh immediately asked, “Are you the doctor I was told was going to help me come to closure on several issues in my life — you know, forgiveness and self-love, essentially reviewing my life?”[2]

Lerma responded that this was something that he himself did not do, but “that God and his angels do the best job.”[3]

Colonel “Marsh” and his wife “Betty” soon settled into the hospice room that would be his last earthly stop, and as he and Dr. Lerma began to get to know each other better, “Marsh” finally began to reveal his story:

> Marsh was born into a military family in Roswell, New Mexico, in 1923. As a teenager, he was already accustomed to military life, having traveled around the world with his parents. Marsh had always desired the same type of life for himself, and joined the Army after

> December 7, 1941. Because Marsh had graduated at the top of his class, he was sent to West Point, where he graduated as a physicist six years later. Soon after his graduation he was sent to work with the Army Science and Technology division, where he worked on highly classified projects. I asked him if he had worked on propulsion systems, to which he replied dryly, "Like I said, I worked in the Science and Technology division of the Army."[4]

But that was just the beginning of "Marsh's" story to Lerma:

> In the summer of 1947, Marsh returned to Roswell to spend July 4th with his father and mother. Major thunderstorms rolled in that evening, squelching many festivities. Similar to many Roswellians, he went back home and spent the evening with his family. The following morning, the storms had dissipated, the sun was shining, and it appeared that it would be another hot day — that is, until Mac Brazel came knocking on the Bradfield door. Marsh recalled opening the door to let Mac in and immediately noted he was quite flustered, yet with a sense of excitement and exuberance emanating from his being. Marsh replied, "Mac said he had heard that I was back in town for the holiday and wanted to vsiit. He did not seem to be aware that it was only 6:45 in the morning and that he had awakened us. This did not seem to deter him from urging me to come to his ranch immediately. Mac came to me because we had grown up together as boys in Roswell. he knew of my experience in the military and felt I would be excited as he was to see what was on his ranch."[5]

"Marsh" continued his story, telling Lerma that he quickly dressed and then left with Maz Brazel in the latter's pickup truck, driving back up to the Foster ranch where Brazel was the foreman. According to Lerma, "Marsh told him that Brazel:

> began sharing what had occurred the night before and what he had found on his ranch. He thought he had heard a crash the night before, but had attributed it to the thunderstorm that had passed. It was not

> until the next morning, as he drove over his land, that he discovered hundreds of pieces of metal strewn over several hundred yards around the property. He described the metal pieces as being anywhere from a couple of inches to several feet in size, *the largest of which sported an emblem that was very familiar to him.* What was not familiar to him was the quality of the metal, which apparently had memory. In other words, he said that it was thin, like foil, and he could crunch it up only to see it expand back to its original shape in a few minutes. He told me he had seen geometrically shaped symbols on some of the metal fragments.[6]

As they approached the debris site in Brazel's truck, "Marsh" jumped out of it and ran to the field, thinking perhaps that he was looking at the scene of an airplane crash.

The only problem was, he could not smell the odor of airplane fuel nor any evidence of a fire or other familiar signatures of an airplane crash.[7] As "Marsh" was making these observations, however, he saw U.S. army vehicles traveling to the northwest of the ranch.

> Marsh knew at that moment that something highly secure had crashed in this area and that the Army retrieval team had been called in. Marsh made note of several facts: *the lack of airplane fuel on the property*, the small size of the debris, *the lack of engine parts, the lack of evidence of fire, and an incomplete emblem. Whit a cold chill running up his spine, he found the shape to be vague, but frighteningly familiar. As he pieced parts of the emblem together, it increasingly resembled the German Iron Cross, which Hitler used on his military vehicles and aircraft. Marsh felt twinges of fear deep in his gut, and knew that this incident had a much higher level of security than his clearance made him privy to, and as such he knew the consequences of being found in the area around the crash site.*
>
> Marsh asked Mac to take him home immediately, after which he called his commander at Wright-Patterson Air Force Base. Marsh was reluctant to make that name known to me because of the sensitivity of the situation, and *its implications with regard to national security.* Marsh commented that his commander was aware of the crash, and

> told him that the government had been planning a campaign of misinformation. After the war, the United States had recruited several German scientists to continue the research on which they had been working. One of those projects included the turbine engine as well as the use of electromagnetic energy for flight. Hitler's elite scientists had created the Haunebu I craft, which were saucer-like vehicles that reportedly employed this advanced technology toward the end of WWII.
>
> .... The news media was abuzz in the days and weeks following the crash. Seemingly overnight the Army had achieved its goal of convincing the public that this crash was a craft from another world. However, that was the farthest from the truth. The truth was that the United States had attained the technology through the German scientists' achievements. Marsh stated that it was imperative that our government maintain suppression of this technology from the public, so that our greatest enemy of that time, the Russians, could not obtain the technology and threaten our superiority as a world power.[8]

And with that, one had the latest eyewitness enter the parade of Roswell witnesses.

B. Analysis

But as is evident, "Marsh's" story was completely different from the mainstream "Roswell" witness story, with the exception of those who saw and handled the debris. Even here, however, the story was different, and upon close analysis, contains some problems:

1) The first problem is, once again, that while "Marsh" may have been an eyewitness, his story is not. It is, once again, that peculiar Roswell blend of second-hand and dead-man's testimony that so often was discovered to be the type of testimony regarding the *bodies*, only in this case the testimony, oddly and uniquely, concerns the *debris;*

2) The second problem will be obvious to most Roswell researchers, and that is “Marsh’s” claim to have pieced together some debris to reveal the emblem of the German “*Balkankruez*”, the straight-edged white and black crosses that were the emblems on German military vehicles during the war.[9] The real difficulty here, however, is that Major Marcel and his son Jesse Marcel, Jr. would claim to have tried to piece together some of the wreckage in their home on the kitchen floor. Neither they nor Bill Brazel ever described seeing such an emblem. It is possible that the debris they saw and handled simply did not contain this emblem. As Friedman often says, “absence of evidence is not evidence of absence.” A related difficulty is that this would seem at first glance to have required *two* trips by Mac Brazel into Roswell, the one to pic up “Marsh” and another to alert Sheriff Wilcox about his discovery. From the context, it would appear that Brazel made the trip to “Marsh” *after* the other trip, for apparently the Army was either already on site or just arriving. Perhaps Brazel made *one* trip, first to Sheriff Wilcox, and then later, on the same occasion, to his friend “Marsh,” which would just make the story feasible. In any case, the differences between “Marsh’s” story and the other debris witnesses should be noted;
3) The third, and a majorly significant, problem is the reference to the so-called Haunebu or Hannebu flying saucers. Rumors of these craft have been persistent and consistent since the end of the war, oftentimes being presented in the company of alleged drawings and plans for them. The problem is that those originally putting out these claims are postwar neo-Nazis, and there has never been any formal or documentary proof from the period of the war itself that the craft ever in fact existed. However, close reading of the story in Lerma’s book reveals the possibility that Lerma himself may simply have attempted to do some cursory corroborative research and presented it in the account, without making note that it was his, rather than “Marsh’s,” observation;
4) The final problem, and in my opinion, the most significant of them all, is that the internal logic of the story is inconsistent, for in the

way Lerma has recounted it, “Marsh” would appear to be saying two different things:

a) On the one hand, he is implying that the crashed craft represented some American black project based on wartime Nazi research and designs, and has national security implications for those reasons, namely, it could not be revealed lest the Soviet Union become aware of it; but,
b) On the other hand, he is also implying that the crashed craft was *not* American, simply due to the fact that the emblem boldly emblazoned upon it was the German *Balkankreuz.* It takes little imagination to see that if the craft were American, even if captured German equipment, it would hardly be allowed to fly in American skies with the emblem of its Nazi origins!

In other words, the central contention and detail of “Marsh’s” story to Dr. Lerma is breathtaking and chilling in its implications, for the implication is nothing less than that *something representing a postwar Nazi organization was flying advanced Nazi technology over the skies of New Mexico in 1947!*

“Marsh’s” scenario has thus gone well beyond that proposed by Nick Redfern — and indeed is the scenario being argued in this book — for such a crash would imply several things, namely, that

1) There was a postwar Nazi *organization* consisting of far more than just isolated enclaves of Nazis;
2) It was in possession of the advanced technologies it had developed during the war and was in all likelihood continuing to develop them;
3) It had a base of operations from which to deploy these technologies;
4) It was operating them against the interests of the United States and was using them to reconnoiter our sensitive military installations;
5) It was not afraid to demonstrate or disclose its existence, for this is also implied in the display of the *Balkankreuz.*

“Marsh’s” story also thus rationalizes the ongoing Roswell cover-up in a very different way than does Redfern’s scenario, though that rationalization remains wholly terrestrially-based. In “Marsh’s” version, the cover-up is

occurring for three mutually related reasons, not just one, and not just a political one:

Firstly, the Incident is being covered-up and spun because of its nasty national security implications, namely, that there were Nazis “somewhere out there” on planet earth, and that they had access to extraordinary technologies and that they were not afraid to use them. This would indeed call forth a response from the military not only to cover-up and spin the event, but would also have virtually guaranteed the establishment of some secretive study group designed to study the phenomenon, acquire the technology for itself, and also to hunt down their base or bases of operations and destroy it or them. This possibility appears to be one of the operative reasons that the Nazis in Argentina shut down Richter’s project and moved it elsewhere — no one knows where — and why the U.S. Air Force later “put two and two together” and decided to investigate Richter years after the fact.

Secondly, the Incident is being covered-up and spun for political reasons, since it would hardly do, a mere two years’ after the conclusion of World War Two, for the American public to discover that the old enemy was alive and well, and buzzing American defensive installations with impunity.

Thirdly, and finally, the Incident is being covered-up because of the extraordinary nature of the recovered technology itself, for if the implications of “Marsh’s” story are true, then this would have meant that the United States did *not* “get everything” in its haul of technological booty from the Third Reich, nor did it get *best or most advanced* technologies. It would have become imperative, at that point, not only to cover-up the crash and to concoct a fabulous story of its origins, it would also have become necessary to study that technology, and to bend every effort to duplicate if not exceed it.

There is, however, a possible reason to take the story that Dr. Lerma has recounted very seriously, and that reason is Lerma himself. As noted at the beginning of this chapter, Lerma is not in any way associated with ufological research, much less Roswell research, nor has he ever shown any interest in being associated with it. “Marsh’s” story therefore occurs in the context of a book of other near-death stories whose ultimate aim and purpose is simply to recount the spiritual lessons that these people imparted as they drew near their mortal end. Lerma had, and has, no interest

whatsoever in promoting this or that interpretation of Roswell in his book; the focus is wholly spiritual, and the fact that one of his patients told him a story about the Roswell Incident is simply incidental and tangential to that purpose.

"Marsh's" story does make sense, therefore, in one significant way that the scenario outlined to Redfern by his "whistleblowers" does not, and that is that the cover-up continued because the Nazi organization itself continued. The atrocities committed in this country and by the U.S. military against its own civilians and military personnel in the wake of Paperclip are now well-known and a matter of public debate and indignation, but they *are known.* The scenario recounted to Redfern is thus merely a different variation on an old theme, but hardly seems reason enough to continue a cover-up nor for his whistleblowers to remain anonymous. This implies in turn that there are still hidden reasons motivating that cover-up, reasons that "Marsh's" story clearly implies.

Perhaps in that light it is significant that, like Colonel Corso, another Army colonel close to his mortal end once more pointed a finger not only to the debris and the extraordinary technology behind it, but in doing so pointed the finger once again, not to far-off planets in the starry sky, but to Nazi Germany, and said "look there."

And so, we are now left to account for the remaining problem, the debris, and, following the pointed fingers, to see if its roots can plausibly be traced to that dark and terrible place and time.

---

[1] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 12.

[2] John Lerma, M.D., *Learning from the Light: Pre-Death Experiences, Prophecies, and Angelic Messages of Hope* (Franklin Lakes, New Jersey: New Page Books, 2009), p. 117.

[3] Ibid.

[4] Lerma, *Learning from the Light*, pp. 119-120.

[5] Ibid. p. 120.

[6] Ibid., p. 121.

[7] Lerma, *Learning from the Light*, p. 121.

[8] Lerma, *Learning from the Light*, pp. 121-123, emphasis added.

[9] Lerma records it as the “Iron Cross” but this is a slight inaccuracy. The curved edges of the Iron Cross only formed part of the German military decoration of that name. The Iron Cross was not used as an emblem on German military vehicles or aircraft except in World War One and later on the vehicles of the West German *Bundeswehr*, which at that time in history, 1947, was not yet in existence.

16
The Roswell Debris and The Reich's Developments

"It is clear, then, from these suspicions and other remarks sprinkled liberally throughout the now declassified documents of the period, that US Intelligence findings seem to exclude extraterrestrial origin of the saucers."
W. A. Harbinson[1]

"Technically speaking, we are still living off the carcass of the Third Reich."
Henry Stevens[2]

Recovered debris: the story of the Roswell Incident began there, and there too our analysis and argument that it was Nazi debris now ends, for it is the debris that still forms and remains the original heart of the Roswell story in all its interpretations, from crashed extraterrestrial craft, to crashed balloon, and all interpretations lying between those two poles. It is the debris and all its detailed descriptions by witnesses that any plausible theory of the Roswell Incident must rationalize, and in so doing, give an adequate account of the theory advanced to explain the Incident.

In the foregoing pages the careful reader will have observed that there are three potent arguments employed by proponents of the extraterrestrial interpretation of the Incident to discount the merely mundane and trivial official governmental explanations of the Incident as being the result of a crashed balloon and its misidentification by witnesses:

1) If the crash were of some object, including a balloon, that was part of some secret American black project, then the military would not have waited to be informed of the debris by Mac Brazel, but would have been searching for it already. This would also seem to discount the *Body Snatchers in the Desert* scenario recounted to Nick Redfern;
2) Explanations of the debris as having come from the Mogul Balloon project are based only on superficial resemblances, and do not account for all the details attributed to the debris by witnesses; and,
3) Such rationalizations can only be made at the cost of impugning the characters, memories, or testimonies of those who clearly stated the characteristics of the debris and maintained their statements over the years with consistency. This tactic has been particularly in evidence with respect to the late Major Jesse Marcel, Sr.

The careful reader will have also noted that by giving the bodies the primacy of place in their arguments, Roswell researchers have been somewhat remiss in their attentions to the debris. Indeed, no real detailed examination of its characteristics can be found in those researchers or their books, and there is even less argumentation that these characteristics point to the conclusion that the origin of the debris is extraterrestrial. Indeed, in the final analysis, the above three arguments really only point to the conclusion that what crashed was exotic, or at least highly unusual, and that it was not a balloon, and not American.

But if not American, then whose? And if not a balloon, or an extraterrestrial spacecraft, then what?

This is where a detailed examination of the debris suggests a quite revealing answer, for as they say, the devil is in the details, and in this specific case, that particular demon is Nazi.

A. The Roswell Debris According to the Witnesses and Some Nazi Technological Antecedents

The characteristics of the debris, as described by the witnesses, are as follows:

1) *Memory metal of "foil":* This material or metal was desribed as being no thicker than the foil in a pack of cigarettes, yet very strong, and unable to be creased. When wadded or crumpled up, it was observed to "uncrumple" itself and bend back to its original shape, leaving no creases of the wadding or crumpling process.
2) *I-beams of balsa-wood-like material, and "hieroglyphics":* This material was described as very lightweight, resembling balsa wood or plastic, yet was not able to be broken (by hand), burned (by a cigarette lighter), or cut by a knife. Additionally, "geometric" or "hieroglyphic" shapes were described as either being part of the beams themselves, or taped or painted on, and of purplish-pink hue. Witnesses also describe these figures as "numbers" or resembling Japanese or Chinese ideograms. Additionally, Jesse Marcel, Jr., M.D., also drew his recollection of these shapes under hypnosis.
3) *Unbreakable Monofilament String:* "String" was described by some witnesses as being found in the debris, which string resembled monofilament nylon fishing line, save that it could not be broken or cut. It is to be carefully noted that these original descriptions do *not* mention fiber-optic-like properties. Those descriptions emerge only in the "revisionist" scenario and from witnesses who testimony is ultimately discredited (such as Frank Kaufmann) or strongly disputed (such as Jim Ragsdale).
4) *Super-Strong Metal or Material:* The tin-foil like metal material was also said to be extraordinarily strong, and unable to be dented by a sledgehammer and, in some cases, there was the implication that it could not be cut by ordinary means.
5) *"Porous" metal, material, or "foil":* In one instance, Major Marcel states that there was material that one could "blow through," though it is unclear where he meant a parchment-like material found on the site, or the metal itself. However, the contextual indications seem to prefer the interpretation that he was referring to the metal, foil-like material.

There is a final point that should be noted, and this is the apparent contradiction between points 1 and 4, namely, how could the *same* material

be both wadded up or crumpled up (presumably by hand) and yet not be able to be dented by a sledge hammer?

If these two characteristics refer to the *same* material then there would appear to be a contradiction. A case could be made that in fact two different types of material were being described, that somehow inadvertently became conflated, either in the reporting of them by Roswell researchers, or by the witnesses themselves. However, as will be seen, a case can be made from the characteristics of such materials that one might be dealing with one and the same material. In any case, these characteristics will now be compared with the developments in materials engineering within the Third Reich.

1. Memory Metal

Some Roswell skeptics have pointed out that there *is* a memory metal material that not only displays the memory metal characteristics of the Roswell material, but that also appears to have super-elastic properties that under certain conditions of heat allow it to return to its original shape. The material is called “Nitinol” and was discovered by William Buehler and Frederick Wang in 1962 at the Naval Ordnance Laboratory, and was a compound of nickel (chemical symbol Ni) and titanium (chemical symbol Ti). Thus, the name “nitinol” simply referred to its chemical elements — nickel and titanium — described by their chemical symbols “Ni” and “Ti” followed by “nol” which stood for Naval Ordnance Laboratory. The various transformation states of such materials are usually determined by heat, which in nitinol’s case, allows the metal to return to its original shape.

But as Roswell researchers pointed out, this was all fine and dandy, except that nitinol was discovered in 1962, and Roswell occurred in 1947, and hence, nitinol, while a leight weight material that would have been extraordinarily strong to an ordinary observer, and which could conceivably be made into very thin foil-like material, could not be the explanation of the Roswell debris, unless one posited a secret history of its development going back that far. And to make such am argument, one was, of course, arguing from complete silence. There appeared to be no such development in the record.

Unfortunately for the pro-extraterrestrial proponents of the Roswell Incident, there *is* such an earlier history, and it leads to an interesting place and time:

> The effect, also called mechanical recall, was first observed by Swedish researcher Arne ölander in certain gold-cadmium alloys *in 1932*. Six years later, the effect was seen in certain copper-zinc brasses. But it didn't really make a splash until 1962, when William Buehler of the U.S. Naval Ordinance Laboratory found that an alloy composed of equal parts of nickel and titanium exhibited the strange phenomenon.[3]

The article obscurely hints that memory metal research was underway since its first discovery in Sweden in 1932, and reveals that further allows were found — that we know about — in 1938, though the article does not say where. And at the other end of this research story, one encounters this work being done in the U.S. Naval Ordnance Laboratory, i.e., in connection to weapons research.

It does not take a Nazi rocket scientist to figure out that such "memory metals" would be of intrinsic interest to any nation viewing the war clouds of World War Two gathering on the horizon, and that one of those countries possibly showing an interest in such metals would, of course, be Nazi Germany. From 1932 to 1945, what might have been accomplished in the development of such materials engineering with enough money — and the world's best chemical engineers — and a large and secretive research group determined to explore every technological development to gain a technological advantage?

The answer to that question lies in other suggestions in the record that Nazi Germany was exploring some very unusual areas and methods of materials engineering, for they needed such materials for a variety of very exotic projects in aerodynamics, as will be seen below. For the moment, the fact remains that we now have the clear indication that memory metals were nothing new, that the property was known fully seven years before the outbreak of World War Two, and fully a year before the Nazis took power in Germany, and that the property was discovered in one of Germany's neighbors — Sweden — and thus could hardly have failed to come to the

attention of German chemists and metallurgists. Finally, *it would have been of immediate and intrinsic interest to the Nazi military-industrial complex and war machine.*

To put it as succinctly as possible: the memory metal characteristic of the Roswell debris points to the history of such materials, a history that began in Europe, before the war, and that was likely a research priority for the Nazis.

2. "I-Beams" and Hieroglyphs

a. The "I-Beam Material" and Two Problems

The problem with the "balsa-wood-like" material of the "I-beams" with their curious "hieroglyphics" is a rather different one, for as of this writing, I have been unable to find within the record of Nazi research or the immediate pre-war period, descriptions of a material light-enough in weight and resembling balsa-wood or plastic that was not able to be cut, nor burned with a cigarette lighter. The Germans were developing plastics, it is true, and employing them in its industry and forging to a degree not thought possible until the Allies went into the Reich and discovered the truth.[4] But reports of German research into super-strong materials that could withstand extraordinarily high temperatures seem confined to metals and not to plastics.

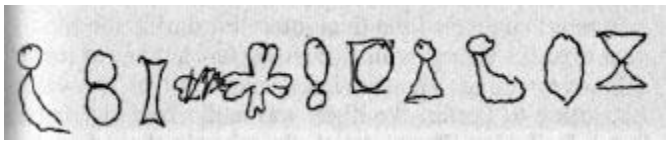
There is, however, a problem on the extraterrestrial side of explanations as well, and that is the *shape* of the I-beam itself. As anyone involved in radar stealth research knows, such right-angled constructions are to be avoided as much as possible in stealth aircraft for the very simple reason that they provide highly reflective surfaces to incident radar beams. While such signatures could be reduced by the external configuration of a "saucer" they would nonetheless remain. It seems to this author unlikely that an advanced extraterrestrial civilization would employ such fabrication methods on craft that were reconnoitering American defensive installations.

b. The "Hieroglyphs," Indian Petroglyphs, Plasma Pinch, and Electron Probability States

When turning to the problem of the *hieroglyphs*, however, there are clear terrestrial connections, and interestingly enough, they would seem to point to some rather advanced notions within plasma and quantum physics, notions which, moreover, one would expect to be present in an advanced "field propulsion" craft. Those hieroglyphics, it will be recalled, were said by some to have remained "undeciphered." Indeed, as we saw in chapter nine, Friedman implied that the presence of Dr. Donald Menzel on the alleged top secret Majic-12 UFO study group was in part based upon his wartime cryptographic experience and his facility as a linguist.

But what if these symbols represented, not a language in the conventional sense, but were symbols of something else? What if they were conceptual ideograms, rather than letters or words as such? A comparison of the only known pictorial description of them, that of Jesse Marcel, Jr., M.D., while given under hypnosis, with those concepts in plasma and quantum physics is very revealing, and again, revealing not extraterrestrial, but wholly rationalizable terrestrial origins.

Let us recall what Marcel's drawings looked like:

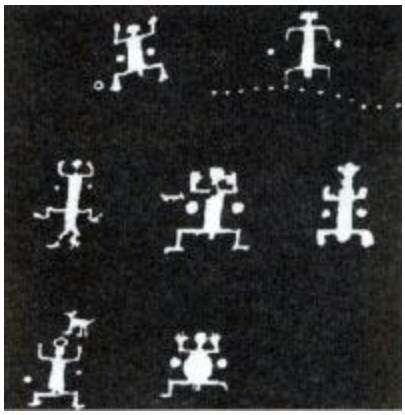


Jesse Marcel, Jr.'s Drawings of the Roswell Hieroglyphs While Under Hypnosis[5]

Additionally, it will be recalled that Marcel Sr. and other witnesses described seeing "numbers." Bessie Brazel Schreiber described "flowers" and pastel "designs,"[6] as well as numbers arranged in columns. Her brother, Bill Brazel, described the figures as resembling southwestern American Indian petroglyphs.[7]

In my book *The Cosmic War* I pointed out that well-known plasma physicist Anthony Peratt had observed the strong resemblance of those southwestern American Indian "stick man" petroglyphs to the types of

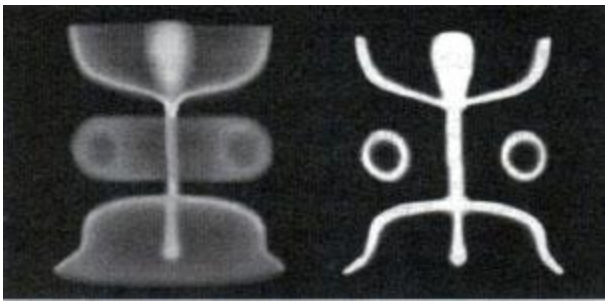
"plasma pinch" effects he was observing in his laboratories.[8] Here is an example of those "stick man" petroglyphs:



Southwestern American Indian "Stick Man" Petroglyphs

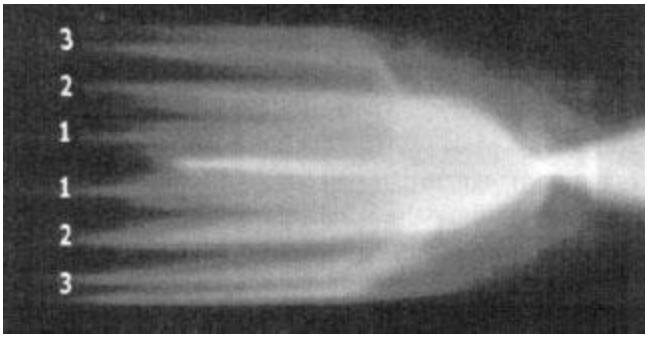
Note the figure particularly in the upper left hand corner of this diagram. Like all the others, it has two dots to either side of the "torso" and two "arms" extended upwards, and two "legs" extended downwards.

This, argued Peratt in a peer-reviewed paper,[9] was merely a stylized representation of the plasma "dough-nut" or toroid that was clearly visible in some laboratory plasma pinches. In the following diagram, one has on the right a two-dimensional "stickman" pretroglyph, and on the left, a three-dimensional rotation of the same figure, showing its strong resemblance to a plasma pinch:



Three Dimensional Rotation of a Petroglyphic "Stickman" Showing Resemblance to a Plasma Pinch.

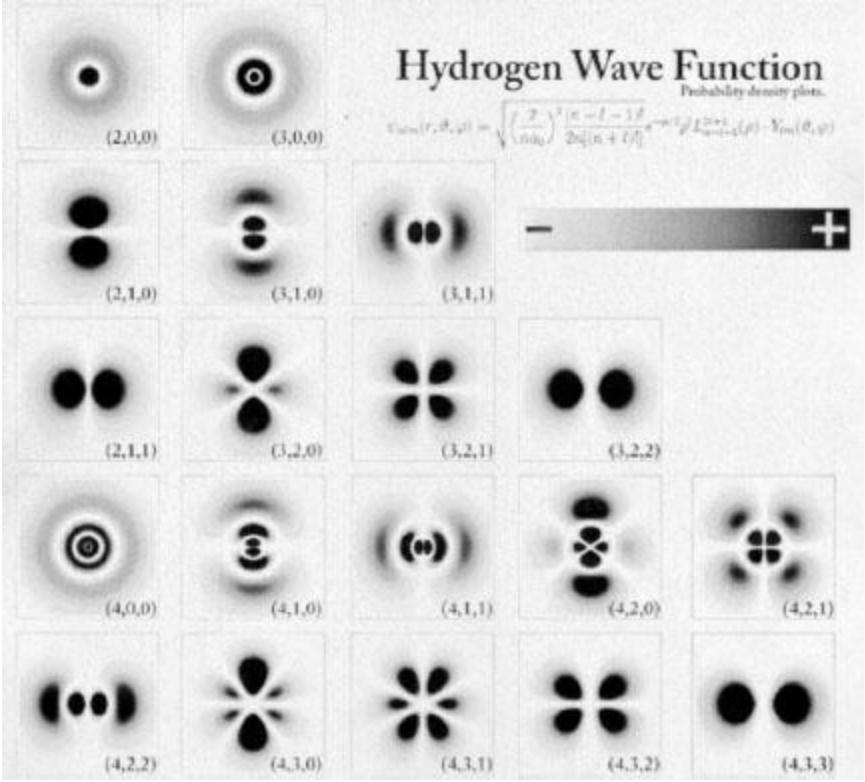
Other plasma pinches could be taken to be the "flowers" Bessie Brazel Schreiber described:



Laboratory-Produced Plasma Pinch "Flower"

Would one expect to discover or find such ideograms represented in a field propulsion device, especially since we have already discovered that the Nazis were researching precisely such concepts for the purposes of free-energy, the ultimate doomsday weapon, and as a gateway technology to field propulsion? To ask the question is to answer it, and in answering it, we have found a rationalization for why so many fingers in the documents — both the highly dubious as well as the authentic ones — seem to point to Nazi Germany.

But there is an even stronger resemblance of these ideograms, as described by various witnesses and drawn by Jesse Marcel, Jr., than plasma pinches. Whenever I contemplated Marcel's drawings and Bessie Brazel Schreiber's descriptions of the ideograms as resembling "flowers" with "numbers in columns" accompanying them, I could not help but think of the strong resemblance of some of Marcel's drawings and this description by Bessie Brazel Schreiber to the diagrams of electron cloud probability distributions that result from applying a wave function to the hydrogen atom. Here, to give but one pictorial example of this from Wikipedia, is what such diagrams actually look like when plotted:



Electron Cloud Probability Distribution Functions of the Hydrogen Atom[10]

Could these diagrams be reasonably described as “designs” and “flowers” in columns with “numbers” accompanying them? The answer is an obvious yes, for note the numbers accompanying each diagram that, when plugged into the wave function formula (barely visible in the upper right hand corner of the diagram), yield the result of the particular distribution picture.

So, on this basis, the Roswell witnesses’ descriptions of the hieroglyphics do two things simultaneously:

1) They point clearly to the crash of something embodying or employing an exotic field propulsion technology; but,
2) to something whose technology, while exotic, is nonetheless rationalizable on the basis of terrestrial science known at the time of the Roswell Incident.

Might one expect to find such ideograms depicted in a craft utilizing such conceptions for the manipulation of field effects around it? Once again, the answer is yes.

This implies something very important for the case that many skeptics would argue against Major Marcel, his son, or the other witnesses to the Roswell debris: one does *not* have to impugn their characters, their memories, or the conclusions they drew from what they saw, in order to show its terrestrial connections. One need not *read into* their statements one's own skepticism, nor need one resort to tactics of argued deconstruction of their remarks — as do so many skeptics and the U.S. Air Force itself — to argue a completely nonsensical and trivial explanation such as crashed Mogul balloons and the superficial resemblances of its "tape" with the Roswell hieroglyphics as the witnesses described them. In fact, *in no previous instance of Roswell research, whether those of the extraterrestrial or of the Mogul explanations, have the detailed descriptions of the hieroglyphics by those witnesses and the conclusions they drew from them been taken seriously, nor in this detail, nor subjected to this kind of analysis for their potential physics and technological implications, as has been done here.*

One need not therefore fault Major Marcel simply for concluding that they belonged to something extraterrestrial, nor need one point out that he only came to this conclusion until after his initial contacts with the Roswell research community. The simple fact is, Marcel like anyone else had the right to change his mind about what he saw, and like anyone else, could simply have been mistaken about the conclusions — that it represented something extraterrestrial — he drew from it. The invalid conclusion does *not* invalidate his observations, his memory, or his integrity, for those observations were formed prior to his contact with that community, and are corroborated by others who saw the debris.[11]

The conclusions of the Roswell skeptics' community, inclusive of the U.S. Air Force's latest official explanation, regarding the Roswell "hieroglyphs" simply does not represent research, it represents a kind of "higher-critical deconstruction" of the witnesses' observations.

In any case, this analysis of the "hieroglyphics" discloses both their exotic and extraordinary nature, as possibly being rooted in some advanced

physical mechanics, and their wholly terrestrial basis.

3. Monofilament "String"

My research has disclosed no Nazi research into anything that might resemble the monofilament, "unbreakable" string as described by Bill Brazel, Maz Brazel's son. However, this topic will be explored more completely below with respect to Colonel Corso's claims about "fiber optics" being recovered from the Roswell Incident.

4. Super-strong Metal or Material

When turning to the subject of super-hard metals, materials engineering, and Nazi Germany, the picture changes completely. The claim for the Roswell debris was that some of the "tin-foil" like metal was extremely strong and could not be dented with a sledge hammer. Additionally, the highly dubious Majic-12 "White Hot Intelligence Estimate" described a metal with the following characteristics: The *steel* of the craft was "cold-formed and heat-treated," resulting in a tensile strength of "150,000 pounds per square inch," and giving 175,000 pounds per square inch of durabilty under shear-testing, which made the fuselage "extremely strong and heat resistant."[12] Was the Third Reich researching such super-hard metals?

According to researcher Henry Stevens, it was, and with a vengeance. Stevens received a letter from a source initially calling himself "Michael X" who later changed his name to "Michael X. Barton. Barton described the development of a super-hard metal that he called "Impervium":

> In Schramberg, South Bavaria, I had a friend who's father was a renowned Metallurgy scientist. He experimented with the chemistry of metals. There is little doubt but that he was one of the world's most brilliant minds, for it was this same scientist who invented a metal harder than diamonds. In 1935-36 the Nazis put this amazing metal — we shall call it IMPERVIUM — to use for the first time in the airplanes of the German Air Force.[13]

Needless to say, such a metal would certainly fill the requirements of the Roswell "tin-foil." But its presence on *Luftwaffe* airplanes would have given them a tremendous advantage over their Allied and Soviet counterparts, and there is no evidence from the war that German aircraft had any extraordinary defensive characteristics. So Stevens maintained due skepticism regarding this revelation.

Stevens was skeptical for another reason, and that is of course that once again one has second-hand anecdotal testimony about an unnamed German scientist who had supposedly accomplished all this wondrous and miraculous metallurgy. But Stevens is no ordinary researcher, and investigated further...and made an interesting discovery:

> Curiously enough, the word "Impervium" is today the registered trademark of a company called Northwest Research Institute, Inc. and can be found on the internet at:
>
> www.carbideprocesses.com/Knives/Impervium.htm
>
> Their impervium may not be quite the Impervium described above but there are similarities. This commercial Impervium is twice as hard as stainless steel. It is a stainless steel like alloy of 65% iron as well as Nickel and chromium for carbide formation. it also contains about 10% manganese and about 10%n carbon. Then something interesting is described:
>
> "As a final step a gas is introduced as final alloying agent."
>
> This gas is evidently not oxygen since the carbon content has already been fixed by the manufacture and introduction of oxygen is done for this purpose. What was the gas and why was it not named?...
>
> At this same website another commercial metal alloy is described in the discussion of Impervium. It is called "Lubricum" and it is described as Impervium that has been "cold reduced." The description of cold reduction is a forging process in which a piece of Impervium is beaten long and hard enough to re-arrange the crystalline structure of the metal, packing the molecules tighter together.[14]

Stevens observes that the full story of this metal, like Impervium itself, was not being told on the website, and that they might "constitute only

partial steps of the original German research."[15]

Undaunted, Stevens searched further, and hit Nazi pay-dirt:

> This is all good and well if we are talking about "rumors" of super metals, but what actual evidence is there that the Germans managed to (realize) this technology? There is some evidence coming from government sources, one Allied and one Axis.
>
> As soon as the smoke had cleared off the battle ground, elite teams of Allied scientists began combing Germany and Austria for advanced technology which could be used against the remaining enemy, Japan. These teams of scientists, going by various names, compiled their findings in a series of reports, actually several series of reports. One of these series of reports was the British Intelligence Objectives SubCommittee reports (BIOS). In report number 142, a German advance in metallurgy is described which seems to have baffled the British scientists of the times.
>
> The reason this is said is that one of the German informants, upon (whom) the British relied for information, is simultaneously given credence and then discredited. The BIOS report says of their informant, Josef Ernst:
>
> "In the course of interrogation it became clear, that Ernst was not at all reliable, and though there may in some cases be a factual basis for some of his claims, they are as a whole inaccurate and of doubtful value."
>
> This is a pattern seen over and over again in Allied intelligence reports. The question is: Why use information from a source that is unreliable? Why would these scientists report information to their superiors that they themselves believe is wrong or inaccurate? The answer is that they are covering themselves either way. If the information is correct, then they were the first to report it and are to be commended. If it is false, they are on record having warned all those concerned against this information.
>
> The underlying truth about this and other such attempts of Allied scientists to have it both ways in their reports is that these interviewing Allied scientists "didn't have a clue" if the information is accurate or not and are just covering their butts.[16]

So what exactly did Josef Ernst tell the British scientists that made them adopt such an ambivalent attitude toward his information? Very simple:

> Ernst claimed the Germans had developed a method to harden steel and aluminum beyond any means yet developed. He claimed this involved a process of nitrogen bonding to the surface of these metals. The report says:
>
> "Ernst claimed to have worked for many years on nitriding processes, and to have evolved a method of hardening steels and aluminum alloys. Ernst had been in contact with a Prof. Dr. Thalhofer of the Technische Hochschule, Karlsruhe, who had carried out trials for the army, at Wamberg, Czechoslovakia, and is probably the real inventor of these processes. The method for the hardening of steel, which is claimed to produce a nitride coating up to 0.5cm thick with a hardness of up to 1,800 Vickers, is as follows. The steel is heated to 600 degrees C and quenched in a 30% aluminum sulphate solution, which etches the surface. When cold the steel is packed in powdered charcoal and heated to 750 degrees C, and on reaching temperature is removed from the charcoal and quenched in a 15% sodium nitrite solution at 35 degrees C. The method is good for drills, and silicon steels."
>
> Ernst goes on to say that all the equipment for operating this process is at the house of Baroness Mangold, at Silcherhof, near Weilheim, near Munich. Remember that the site for the Impervium research is also said to be in Bavaria and one wonders if the two reports are possibly describing the same research.[17]

Still not satisfied, Stevens decided to check and see if Ernst's story had any contextual corroboration within contemporary American industry. He contacted the large American defense contractor TRW and spoke with a metallurgist about German developments during the Second World War. Stevens began by asking a question:

> "What about all those super-metals the Germans were supposed to have developed?"
>
> To this sort of open-ended leading question the metallurgist replied that:

> "It is true. The Germans developed all sorts of alloys during the war. After the war we took them — some of them were great — we took one and gave it a TRW number, and still market it today — we didn't want to give the Germans credit though."[18]

Other metallurgical processes developed relied upon super-cooling and high-compression under extreme pressures to make metals super-hard.[19] One German scientist even took out a postwar patent for such a super-cooled crystalline structure to be used as a kind of "crystal explosive" of great power.[20]

But not even this was all there was to what was going on in German metallurgy during the Third Reich. The very same British BIOS report that records Ernst's information also says something else, and very significant from any number of contexts:

> Ernst claimed that experiments of the nitriding of aluminium alloys were carried out at Camp Mecklenburg. Aluminium could be nitrided by active nitrogen produced by alpha particle bombardment. A product of very high strength was obtained, *by the use of which the weight of aircraft structures could be decreased by 50%*. It was claimed that the surface of aluminium alloys hardened in this way had a hardness of 1,000 Brinell.[21]

Note that this would fulfill the requirements of General Schulgen's "Intelligence Collection Memorandum" that called for agents to be on the lookout for anything that would signal unusual manufacturing and fabrication processes that could lead to reductions of aircraft weight. It will also be recalled that Schulgen's memorandum explicitly mentioned a "sandwich" method of fabrication, a method somewhat suggested by Ernst's descriptions of the *first* process that he described to his British interrogators. As if that is not enough, Stevens notes that postwar neo-Nazi novelist Wilhelm Landig described an aircraft produced toward the end of the war that used super-hard aluminum.[22] Landig's novel *Götzen gegen Thule* was described by Landig himself as being "full of realities," and Stevens wonders if this is yet another of those "realities"?[23]

But the real interest here is the claim being made, for German metallurgy appears have hit upon the idea of super-hardening and "densification" of metals precisely through nuclear bombardment.

Putting all of this together, it is a small step to the conclusion that the Nazis may have, with enough money and time and research, invented some extraordinary combination of a super-hard memory metal that, under certain conditions, could be crumpled up and resume its shape, while remaining undented by sledgehammers. Even if they did not, however, do this (as it much more likely), they nonetheless showed a distinct and clear interest in metals with unusual properties, including super-density and hardness. They showed a distinct and clear interest in unusual methods of fabrication under conditions of extreme cold, high pressure, and nuclear bombardment. It takes little imagination to see that they would also have had an obvious interest in the development of memory metals.

5. Major Marcel's Porous Metal

The final property of the Roswell debris that was observed by Major Jesse Marcel Sr. was that apparently one could *blow through* some of this metal. And here the connections with Nazi Germany's technology are deep and profound, as are, incidentally, the connections to British research as well.

The well-known novelist and flying saucer researcher W.A. Harbinson, best-known for his bestselling novel *Genesis*, which recounts the efforts of a postwar Nazi saucer project under the command of a fanatical *American* engineer named "Wilson" to dominate the world, mentions in that novel that the extraordinary details contained in the novel were in fact based on actual research and documentation. This documentation Harbinson later published in a book entitled *Projekt Saucer,* recently reissued under the title *Projekt UFO*. Harbinson directly addresses the problem of the suctioning the boundary layer — the same problem, it will be recalled, that General Schulgen wanted his agents to address in his "Intelligence Collection Memorandum" — and its relationship to such porous metal:

> ...(The) belief remained that in order to get rid of the boundary layer completely — and in order to make use of the ‘dead’ air not only for acceleration, but for maneuvering as well — the requirement was for an aircraft devoid of *all* obstructing protuberances, such as wings, rudders and even normal air-intakes, and one not requiring a large, heavy engine. In other words, this revolutionary new aircraft should be the perfect ‘flying wing’ that offers the least possible resistance, sucks in the ‘dead’ air of the boundary layer, and then uses that same air, expelling it at great force, to increase its own momentum. It would therefore had to be a circular ‘wing’ that is, in a sense, wrapped around its suction pump, with the pump being part and parcel of the engine: a machine shaped like a saucer.[24]

At this juncture, it is worth recalling the remarks of General Schulgen in his “Intelligence Collection Memorandum”:

> a. *Boundary layer control method by suction, blowing, or a combination of both.*
> b. Special controls for effective maneuverability at very slow speeds or extremely high altitudes.
> *Openings either in the leading edge top and bottom surfaces that are employed chiefly to accomplish boundary layer control or for the purpose of reducing the induced drag. Any openings in the leading edge should be reported and described as to shape, size, etc. This investigation is significant to justify a disc shape configuration for long-range application.*[25]

Recall also these remarks toward the conclusion of that same document:

> *The power plant would likely be an integral part of the aircraft and could possibly not be distinguished as an item separate from the aircraft.* If jet propulsion is used, large air handling capacity, characterized by a large air inlet and large exhaust nozzle, should be evident. The size of entrance and exit areas would be of interest. *It is*

> *possible that the propulsive jet is governed or influenced for control of the aircraft. The presence of vanes or control surfaces in the exhaust or methods of changing the direction of the object should be observed.*[26]

By now it should be abundantly clear what the U.S. Air Force thought it might be facing, namely, jet-turbine propelled saucer-shaped craft whose extraordinary performance and maneuverability were based upon suctioning the boundary layer and upon the ability to vector the thrust of the exhaust for maneuvering and stability.

In this context, Harbinson's next revelations are nothing less than stunning:

> Further: if such a craft could be built with a 'porous' metal that would act like a sponge and remove the *need* for air intakes altogether, it would result in 'frictionless airflow' during flight.
>
> Speaking at the 34th Wilbur Wright Memorial Lecture held on 30 May 1946, at the Royal Aeronautical Society in London, the well known British aerodynamics expert Professor E.F. Relf stated that 'a further system of regulating the boundary layer by means of suction through minute holes heavily distributed over the surface' *had recently been undertaken by the National Physical Laboratory.* Discussing similar possibilities at a conference held in December the same year on the future of British Aeronautics, Sir Ben lockspeiser said that such a plane would 'slip through the air in the same way as a piece of wet soap slips through the fingers.'
>
> The speed and manoeuvering (sic) capabilities of such a craft would be virtually limitless.
>
> While the idea of 'porous' metal sounds like something from science fiction, it was in fact being developed in Nazi Germany as well as in Britain. Among the many other advanced experiments being run in the wind tunnel in the Zeppelin works at Friedrichshafen were those concerning the different 'porous' metals, or 'aeropermeable surfaces', that were being created by the scientists of Göttingen, Aachen, and Volkenrode — various compounds of *magnesium and aluminium,*

sinterized and permeated with microscopic holes. It was called *Luftschwamm,* or 'aerosponge'.[27]

In other words, Major Marcel's recollection that one could blow through some of this material, and that it was therefore porous, has a basis not only in Nazi research of just a few years prior to the Roswell Incident, but his observation points *directly* to Nazi Germany.

To put it bluntly: *the primary witness for the extraordinary nature of the Roswell debris, Major Jesse Marcel Sr., provides a very significant clue that what crashed was in fact based upon Nazi technology and aerodynamic principles.*

Nor may one leave these remarks and revelations just there. They require further close analysis, for if one were to build such an aircraft from such a metal, then in order to preserve the aircraft integrity, the "skin" of the craft would either have to be somewhat thicker than that on an ordinary aircraft to compensate for the weakening in the metal itself caused by so many micro-holes, *or* that metal would have to be fabricated in such a way to make it both lighter and stronger, and hence, one would expect to find Nazi Germany's metallurgical science investigating various methods to do so. And that is *exactly* what we have found!

Indeed, as Harbinson notes — based on the research of Italian researcher and author Renato Vesco[28] - *Luftschwamm* was reportedly able to "withstand enormous pressures and a temperature of 1000º Centigrade..."[29] Such a material, let it be noted, might qualify for the material that could not be burnt with a cigarette lighter noted by Major Marcel, save in one respect only, in that it was unlikely to have appeared liked plastic or balsa-wood. Moreover, *Luftschwamm* was, according to Harbinson, an alloy of magnesium and aluminum.[30]

Not content, however, with leaving things during the era of World War Two, Harbinson reports on more recent, and startling, developments:

> Regarding the 'magic metals' and 'invisible' metal surfaces, according to *Der Spiegel,* by 2002 a ceramic research laboratory in Dresden, Germany, had developed aluminium that was three times tougher than hardened steel of the same thickness — and *transparent*. In the same vein, 'cold plasma' research presently being undertaken by

> research groups at Stanford, Princeton, Ohio State, Wisconsin, and New York Polytechnic has the aim of shielding satellites and 'other spacecraft' by making them invisible to radar....
>
> As recently as 19 August 2007, journalist Peter Stothard was writing in the *Sunday Times* bout 'a miracle material for the 21st century'. The new material is Aerogel. Though described as 'one of the world's lightest solids' (so light, indeed, that it is nicknamed 'frozen smoke'), Aerogel can withstand dynamite blasts and protect against heat of more than 1,300C. No surprise, then, that it is already being tested for bombproof housing and armour for military vehicles. No surprise, either, that NASA is already using it in the development of insulated space suits for the first manned mission to Mars.... As Aerogel has also been described by scientists as 'the ultimate sponge', with millions of tiny pores on its surface, its resemblance to *Luftschwamm* would make it even more valuable as a material for future black-technology aircraft.
>
> Regarding thought transference, by the late 1990's the Institute of Medical Psychology in Tübingen, near Stuttgart in Germany, was engaged in experiments that proved that human beings could *think* images on a screen into moving in any direction they chose. The experiments were part of a program aimed at giving humans, possibly aided with microchip implantation, the power to control machines through thought alone. Military and commercial applications included, for instance, giving pilots the ability to fly aircraft and fire missiles by 'electronic telepathy', thus obviating the need for manual controls.[31]

All of this leads to some rather startling conclusions:

When the original list of details and characteristics of the Roswell debris as described by the witnesses who saw and examined it are considered, most of them are rationalizable on a purely terrestrial basis and on the basis of research either being undertaken by the Third Reich, or, in the case of the "memory metal," a case can be argued that such would have been of interest to German metallurgists at the time to develop. The hieroglyphics, additionally, were seen to bear close resemblance, not to some "unknown and indecipherable extraterrestrial language," but to rather exotic concepts within purely terrestrial physics. In the case of the unbreakable

monofilamentary string, we have deferred a lengthy analysis until the section on the debris and technology as Colonel Corso alleged was recovered from the Roswell event. Only in the case of the balsa-wood-like material that was unable to be cut or burned could no Nazi antecedent be found.

B. The Technologies of Roswell in the Corso Version

So what about Colonel Corso's list of the debris and technologies allegedly recovered from the Roswell Incident? Indeed, why bother with Corso at all, since most of the major Roswell research proponents of the extraterrestrial interpretation discount him? Why bother with Colonel Corso when it can be clearly demonstrated that his claims for the development of many of the technologies in his "Roswell Recovered Technologies List" have clear and well-known histories?[32]

Corso should be considered carefully simply because the weight of his argument is that (1) the public histories of the development of some of the technologies on his list are a fabrication, and (2) because he points a clear — and oftentimes not-so-subtle finger — to Nazi Germany as the ultimate source for those developments.

Let us recall what his complete list of "recovered extraterrestrial technology" that was seeded into American industry contained:

Image intensifiers, which ultimately became "night vision"
Fiber optics
Supertenacity fibers
Lasers
Molecular alignment metallic alloys
Integrated circuits and microminiaturization of logic boards
HARP (High Altitude Research Project)
Project Horizon (moon base)
Portable atomic generators (ion propulsion drive)
Irradiated Food
"Third Brain" guidance systems (EBE headbands)
Particle beams ("Star Wars" antimissile energy weapons)

Electromagnetic propulsion systems
Depleted uranium projectiles.[33]

Elsewhere in his book he mentions the following list during his statement of his main “Roswell thesis”:

> Today, items such as lasers, integrated circuitry, fiber optics networks, accelerated particle-beam devices, and even the Kevlar material in bulletproof vests are all commonplace. *Yet the seeds for the development of all of them were found in the crash of the alien craft at Roswell and turned up in my files fourteen years later.*[34]

And finally, let us recall his curious mention of the resemblance of all this exotic technology to the Nazis:

> In those confusing hours after the discovery of the crashed Roswell alien craft, the army determined that *in the absence of any other information it had to be an extraterrestrial.* Worse, the fact that this craft and other flying saucers had been *surveilling our defensive installations and even seemed to evidence a technology we’d seen evidenced by the Nazis* caused the military to assume these flying saucers had hostile intentions and might have even interfered in human events during the war.[35]

So, if one combines these two lists one obtains the following list of technologies, which will be examined here (note that I have omitted those technologies of no immediate bearing to the argument and concentrated on the more exotic technologies listed by Corso):

1) Fiber optics;
2) Supertenacity fibers (Kevlar);
3) Image intensifiers or night vision;
4) Lasers;
5) Particle accelerators and particle beams;

6) Integrated circuits and microminiaturuzation of logic boards (and the transistor);
7) Portable atomic generators (ion propulsion drive), that is to say, atomic powered aircraft and space craft;

Each of these will now be examined.

1. Fiber Optics

It may come as a surprise to many, but the idea of using light waves to modulate and carry the sound of the human voice over great distances is not a modern one. In fact, it comes from the 19th century and from none other than the inventor of the telephone, Alexander Graham Bell himself. Bell actually patented a device that he called the "photophone" for the optical transmission of acoustic signals. Moreover, Bell regarded it and not the telephone for which he became famous, as his greatest invention. The problem, however, was that light traveled in straight lines, and there was — at that time anyway — no really practical way to "bend" it. Nor was there any practical way to get that light to travel great distances without the inevitable atmospheric distortion and degradation of the signal.

Fiber optics solved all of this, of course, but there were two requirements in its technology tree before they became practical. Firstly, an effective carrier medium had to be designed that was flexible, but not easily breakable, and that could carry light, namely, fiberglass. Secondly, the light itself had to be made coherent so that it could travel *through* such a flexible carrier. In short, it required the invention of the laser.

Given these two requirements, it is exceedingly odd that one encounters in the documentation of Nazi technology captured after the war a curious reference to something called "optical telephony."[36] No one really even knows what it means nor to what project it refers, or if they do, they are not telling.

But the very fact that the Nazis would have been investigating this idea is in itself quite suggestive, for they would have known that to make any such idea practical, the two requirements noted previously — namely, the

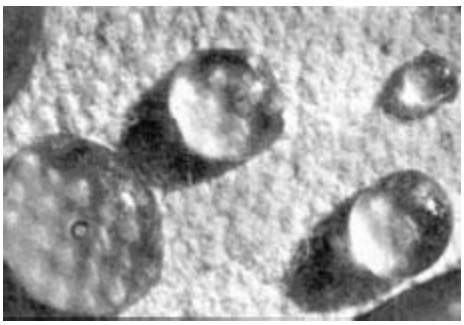
requirements for a the development of a practical, flexible carrying medium, and for a form of light itself that could travel along such a medium — was needed. In other words, the fact that they were researching this idea *at all* is an indicator that they were also researching in areas of materials engineering far in advance of the rest of the world at that time, and that they were also investigating the idea of coherent light, or lasers, about which more below.

2. Kevlar

The second item in Corso's list is super-tenacious fibers, or Kevlar. There is absolutely no document known to me that the Nazis were engaged in any such research.

That said, it is known that the notorious German chemicals cartel, I.G. Farben, was one of the many firms engaged not only in researching plastics, but also synthetic fabrics and fibers. Such research would indeed be condign to the above-indicated quest for a flexible light-bearing medium, and would fit the wider pattern of research in the Third Reich for exotic materials with unusual properties of super-hardness and so on.

In this respect, it is interesting that Polish researcher Igor Witkowski presents the following picture of an water-resistance test of a synthetic fabric produced by I.G. Farben:

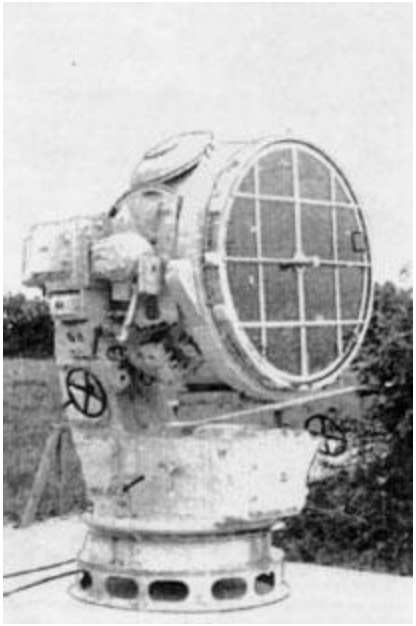


Test of Water Resistance of an I.G. Farben Synthetic Fabric[37]

3. Night Vision

Corso's claims that night vision image enhancing technology was developed is easily refuted by a couple of pictures; no comment needed:

German Infrared Site Equipment Deployed on a PzKw. Panther Medium Tank[38]



German Infrared Equipment For Naval Vessels

With Corso's assertions regarding lasers, however, a more extensive commentary is needed. The odd historical fact about lasers is that, while the term "laser" — standing for "light amplification by stimulated emission of radiation" — was not invented until the actual first publicly known invention of the device in the early 1960s, the physics for such a device already existed within the quantum mechanics of the 1930s. Indeed, many historians of science have always puzzled over why it took so long for the device to be invented.

The real reason may lie, not in the fact that someone did not think of the idea until comparatively *late*, and in connection to the rather harmless application of denting razor blades with red beams of light, but rather in the fact that someone thought of it comparatively *early*, thought of it in conjunction with a horrendous practical application for it, and thought of both in the Third Reich to boot.

The first public mention of actual Nazi research into lasers in fact occurred in British journalist Tom Agoston's book, *Blunder!: How the U.S. Gave Away Nazi Supersecrets to Russia.* Agoston's book was the first book to reveal the existence of SS General Hans Kammler's ultra-top secret "black projects think tank" inside the Skoda munitions work's engineering division in Pilsen, Czechoslovakia. Agoston mentioned the extensive sweep of the Kammler Group's research as follows:

> Its purpose was to pave the way for building nuclear-powered aircraft, working on the application of nuclear energy for propelling missiles and aircraft, laser beams, then still referred to as "death rays"; a variety of homing rockets; and to seek other potential areas for high-technology breakthrough.[40]

In other words, almost every exotic research project undertaken in the Third Reich had some connection to the Kammler Group, whose ultimate *purpose*, let it be noted, was to create an exotic aeronautics technology.

But in many cases Agoston fails to provide documentary proof or to argue the assertions in his book, and in the case of lasers, this is one of them. Then I ran into the following document, once again in Igor Witkowski's research:

Kurzer Bericht über die Arbeiten, welche vom Unterzeichneten und seinen Mitarbeitern im Institut für röntgenologische Roh- und Werkstofforschung im Rahmen des Forschungsauftrages DR 6224/0109/43 seit 20. April 1943 durchgeführt wurden.

1. Ausarbeitung der Grundlagen des Projektes für die Besprechung mit den Herrn Generalfeldmarschall am 20.4.43.
2. Verschiedene Denkschriften und Berichte an GL/St mit Einzelheiten meiner Planung und Vorschläge für die Durchführung.
3. Mitarbeit bei den technischen und organisatorischen Vorarbeiten über die Auswahl des Platzes und der Einrichtung der Versuchsstelle Groß Ostheim.
4. Exposé über die Bedeutung des Widerösechen Strahlentransformatore für die vorliegenden Pläne und maßgebende Beteiligung an Verhandlungen mit Herrn Dr. Wideröe.
5. Ausarbeitung der Pläne betr. Auf- und Ausbau der großen Halle in Gr. Ostheim, gemeinsam mit dem Büro Prof. Tamms (Arch. Sander) und den zuständigen Herren vom Luftgau XII.
6. Aufstellung der Pläne für Installation, Telefonanlage usw. für die zunächst vorgesehenen Laboratoriumsbaracken und den Ausbau der Unterkunftsräume.
7. Versuch zur Einrichtung wissenschaftlicher Arbeitsräume nebst Feinmechanikerwerkstatt, zunächst mit dem Inventar des Instituts für röntgenologische Roh- und Werkstofforschung zum Zwecke der Vornahme dringlicher Vorversuche. Diese Einrichtungen wurden auf Veranlassung der Forschungsführung inzwischen wieder aus Ostheim entfernt.
8. Schulung der aus der Truppe herausgezogenen wissenschaftlichen und ingenieurtechnischen Mitarbeiter.
9. Zusammenstellung der für die Arbeiten wichtigen Literatur und Ausarbeitung eines zusammenfassenden kritischen Berichtes über die bisherigen Ergebnisse ~~auch~~ auf dem Gebiete der Physik durchdringender Röntgen- und Gammastrahlen, sowie Elektronen.
10. Aufstellung von Inventarlisten und Geräten für die erste Einrichtung von Laboratorien und Werkstätten.
11. Beschaffung der 1,2 Mill.Voltanlage vom Hamburger Staat.
12. Bestellung einer 2,2 MV-Röntgenanlage bei der Fa. C.H.F.Müller in Hamburg.
13. Entwicklungsauftrag an die Firma C.H.F.Müller-Hamburg über einen 15 MV-Strahlentransformator Bauart Wideröe..
14. Beschaffung von Laboratoriumsbedarf und Geräten aus Beutestellen der Luftwaffe.
15. Wissenschaftliche Arbeit theoretischer Natur über die Ausbreitung und Schwächung harter Röntgenstrahlen in Luft variabler Zusammensetzung, Dichte und Temperatur für verschieden hohe Primärenergien.
16. Projektierung einer Großanodenröntgenröhre nach eigenen Vorschlägen.
17. Projektierung einer Anlage zur Erzeugung hoher Spannung und großer Stromstärke nach dem Kaskadenprinzip auf Grund eines eigenen DRP.

Leipzig, den 4. Mai 1944. Prof.Dr.E.Schiebold.

Nazi Document Referring to the "Cascade Principle " and Wideröe Radio Resonance Particle Accelerators[41]

What some of the points in the document actually state are — from any standpoint — simply rather breathtaking:

> Brief Report concerning the Works, which was performed by the undersigned and his co-workers at the Institute for X-Ray-Related Natural and Raw Material Research, since April 20, 1943, under the scope of the Research Directvie DE 6224/0109/43.
>
> ...
>
> 13. Commission of a 15 million volt ray-transformer of the Wideröe model at the Firm of C.H.F. Müller, Hamburg.
>
> ...
>
> 15. Scientific work of a theoretical nature concerning the propagation and weakening of hardened X-rays in air under variable conditions, density and temperature for various high primary energies.
>
> ...
>
> 17. Proposal for an installation for the manufacture of high voltage and large current intensity according to the Cascade Principle as a basis of a single DRP.[42]

Note the reference to a “ray-transformer” of “the Wideröe model” in point 13. Rolf Wideröe was a Norwegian physicist who had studied in Germany in the late 1920s, and developed a radio resonance particle accelerator, or “ray-transformer” as the Germans called it. Indeed, particle accelerators and cyclotrons of almost every type then in existence were in fact built and used by the Germans during the Third Reich.

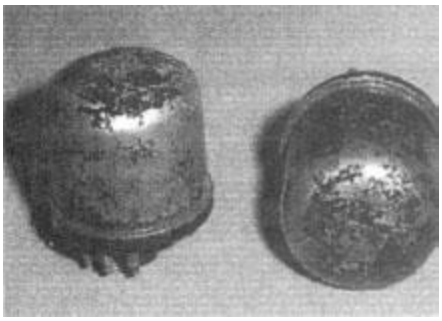
But the last point, point number 17, is the really significant point, for it mentions the "Cascade Principle" explicitly in connection with "an installation" for "the manufacture of high voltage and large current intensity." Why is this so significant? It is significant because this is a clear documentary clue that the Germans were indeed working on lasers, and very large ones at that, during the war. The reason why is because the "Cascade Principle" is the *very* principle that lasers employ to cohere light into a non-diverging beam. But what were the Germans possibly going to *do* with such lasers?

One answer is implicit in the document itself under point 15: they were attempting to develop *X-ray* lasers, and to study the propagation of such beams under various atmospheric conditions. In other words, they were researching it as a *weapon.* But the other possibility is that they were developing second-generation tunable gas-dynamic lasers for the purposes of separating ultra-pure isotopes for their nuclear energy and weapons program.[43] The need for "installations" of high voltage and current would be necessary for both applications.

In other words, the laser may have a very hidden and secret history, and interestingly enough, while Colonel Corso ostensibly was directing everyone's attention to an extraterrestrial explanation of it, he was also subtly pointing a finger to Nazi Germany, and to wholly terrestrial science.

5. Transistors and Integrated Circuits

Corso also mentions that the transistor and the integrated circuit were among the recovered "extraterrestrial debris" at Roswell. But as I pointed out in *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, one only has to consider two pictures to see that the assumed extraterrestrial origins of the transistor is a complete fabrication, as well as might be its more well-known public history:



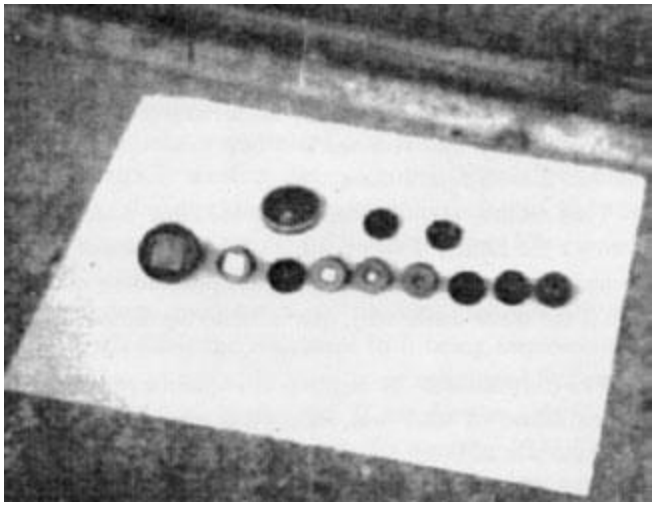
German Klystron Tube ca. 1940-1941produced by the firm of Telefunken

The pictured tube is about as big as the last knuckle on the reader's little finger...but the British and American equivalent of this tube at the *end* of the war was ten times larger!

How was such miniaturization possible?

One necessary component in the technology tree of the transistor are precisely semiconductors.

But here again, there is very bad Nazi news:



German Semi-conductor Chips

The above picture of German semi-conductor wafers was taken by American intelligence investigators after the war.

Of course, transistors are a long way from actual integrated circuits, because yet another necessary component in the technology tree toward the construction of such integrated circuits is, of course, the electron microscope.

Here again, however, there is more bad news, as the picture on the following page reveals.

German Electron Microscope from the 1930's, Built by the A.E.G. Company[44]

In other words, all the basic components of the technology tree for the development of fully integrated circuits were in place inside of Nazi Germany.

While there is no direct evidence known to this author as of this writing that there were any programs of development in place to do so, it is significant that Tom Agoston had this to say about the technology, and its origins in Nazi Germany:

> The full extent of this wartime transfer of Nazi secrets remains an unknown quantity, as are the details of the patents exchanged between the two nations(Imperial Japan and Nazi Germany). Just as the Nazi military technology that wound up in U.S. and Soviet hands gave both nations a tremendous head start in guided missiles and other fields, the German technology transfer to Japan has provided that country with the core of its robotic and microchip technology, much of it developed from German know-how and patents.[45]

That technology surely involved the three core technologies necessary to the development of integrated circuits in the technology tree: electronics miniaturization, semiconductors, and electron microscopes.

Consequently, yet another "extraterrestrial" technology alleged by Colonel Corso to have been recovered from the Roswell Incident is found to have significant, if not entirely persuasive, Nazi antecedents.

6. Portable Atomic Power for Air- and Space-Craft

The final element in our list of Corso-Roswell "extraterrestrial" technologies is that of nuclear powered aircraft and missiles, which would imply miniaturization of atomic reactors for aeronautic applications. We

have already noted that Agoston maintains that the ultimate purpose for Kammler's "secret weapons think tank" was precisely to develop such technologies. For once, however, Agoston offers some rather startling corroboration, for

> ...(It) was recently disclosed that one of the first top German engineers cleared for urgent work for the U.S. Air Force in 1945 was Dr. Franz Josef Neugebauer, a specialist in thermal systems for aircraft nuclear propulsion.[46]

Note that this would seem to imply that Nazi nuclear research was rather more competent and developed than the postwar "Allied Legend" would later maintain it was.

But there was another bombshell that Agoston dropped, and it was a doozie. He reports that in 1948, a group of American nuclear scientists from its Atomic Energy Commission was secretly exploring some of the underground installations of Kammler's "secret weapons think tank" empire in Germany. These scientists were connected to a very secret program:

> The hush-hush program was codenamed NEPA (Nuclear Energy Propulsion (for) Aircraft), and was popularly referred to as the Lexington project. *It had been set up with a multi-million-dollar budget in the light of newly available intelligence reports on the wartime work done by German scientists at Skoda, the Junkers Aircraft factory at Dessau*, and by other groups.... The project was headed by Walter G. Whitman, head of the Department of Chemistry at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology.[47]

In other words, one year *after* General Schulgen had composed his "Intelligence Collection Memorandum," in which he directed his agents to gather information and intelligence on possibly nuclear-propelled saucers, the NEPA project is born, and its scientists are secretly probing through the underground installations of the Kammler Group, presumably searching for clues into the whole idea.

So much for the legend of German wartime nuclear engineering incompetence!

This is yet another fact to add to our now growing body of evidence that suggests that the American military-industrial-intelligence complex was considering the possibility that they were faced, not with a Soviet threat, but with one emanating from an independent postwar Nazi organization.

It is one more example, not of a “recovered extraterrestrial technology” from the Roswell Incident, as Colonel Corso ostensibly argued in his book, but of a Nazi one, to which, let it again be recalled, that he repeatedly pointed subtle fingers, for in all the instances examined above, there are either explicit Nazi developments of these technologies, or there are developments of crucial components in their technology trees.

C. The Lifting Bodies: A Staged Program toward Field Propulsion

All this brings us at last to the issue of the saucers themselves. What is known about them? And what conclusions about the Nazi research program, their design, and operation, may be drawn from what is known about them? Briefly stated, from what little documentary evidence exists about these instruments, it may be concluded that the Third Reich was attempting a staged program to acquire advanced field propulsion craft, and that this staged program represented less a program of staged *chronological* development, but rather a program where each discrete stage was designed to investigate certain theoretical and engineering aspects of the problem, that is to say, it was a program of staged *conceptual* investigation and development.

These stages may be divided into the following schematization for the sake of the analysis which follows:

1) *Mark I:* the development of conventionally powered “saucers” wherein the jet turbine or other conventional power supply is unconventionally configured suction the boundary layer and to vector the exhaust thrust, theoretically permitting high performance and a “hover” and vertical take-off and landing capability (recall

again Schulgen's "Intelligence Collection Memorandum" in this regard);

2) *Mark II:* the development of such craft in conjunction with more exotic technologies involving the ionizing of the surrounding atmosphere, and/or the use of charge differentials to enhance lift efficiency and other operational performance; such craft could include the development of nuclear powerplants;
3) *Mark III:* the development of such craft in conjunction with exotic and unconventional forms of propulsion using electromagnetic fields, plasmas, or other genuinely "field propulsion" technologies.

Each of these will now be examined more closely.

1. Mark I: Conventionally Powered Turbine Saucers of Unusual Turbine Configuration

It will be recalled that both the Schulgen "Intelligence Collection Memorandum" and General Nathan Twining's subsequent memorandum to Schulgen mentioned that in some flying saucer reports of the day there was mention both of an exhaust *trail,* indicative of a conventional powerplant such as a jet or ramjet, and a *roaring* sound, both of which were reported in some cases of the high performance conditions under which the saucers were operating. In other words both memoranda appear to have in mind precisely the "Mark I" type of craft outlined above.

In this respect, there is evidence that the Nazis were thinking along such lines. A CIA report dated 18 August 1953 contains the observation that "'Flying saucers' have been known to be an actuality since the possibility of their construction was proven in plans drawn up by German engineers toward the end of World War II."[48] A CIA report of 27 May 1954 is even more explicit, for it "suggested that Projekt Saucer resulted in three designs":

> "One, designed by Miethe, was a disk-shaped aircraft, 135 feet in diameter, which did not rotate; another, designed by Habermohl and Schriever, consisted of a large rotating ring, in the centre of which was a round, stationary cabin for the crew." The report does not describe

> the third design, but goes on to confirm that when the Soviets occupied Prague, “the Germans destroyed every trace of the ‘flying saucer’ project and nothing more was heard of Habermohl and his assistants.” The report also states that in Breslau, the Soviets managed to capture one of the saucers built by Miethe; and that Rudolph Schriever had died recently in Bremen-Lehe, where he had been living since the end of the war.[49]

All of these projects were turbine-based projects, with the turbine functioning essentially not only as the propulsion but the lift.

Apparently the CIA was keenly interested in the subject of German saucers for the same 18 August 1953 report, gives even more information:

> Georg Klein, a German engineer, stated recently that though many people believe the “flying saucers” to be a postwar development, they were actually in the planning stage in German aircraft factories as early as 1941.
>
> Klein said that he was an engineer in the Ministry of Speer (probably refers to Albert Speer, who, in 1942, was Minister for Armament and Ammunition for the Third Reich, and was present in Prague on 14 February 1945, at the first experimental flight of a “flying saucer.”[50]

Citing the same document, Harbinson notes that Klein stated that the machine “reached a height of about 40,000 feet at a speed” — here comes that magical figure again — “of approximately 1,250 mph.”[51]

The one point that may be immediately concluded from this is that the CIA’s interest would be quite understandable if our interpretation of the Twining and Schulgen memoranda given in a previous chapter is correct, namely, that the U.S. military and intelligence communities had quietly concluded the unthinkable, and that they were dealing with an independent Nazi organization with access to such technologies, one whose exact base of operations, moreover, was unknown to the USA. As such, these CIA reports, which are based simply on foreign press reports in newspapers and magazines, are another clue that the CIA was seeking by any and all means

to collect reports not just on flying saucers in general, but Nazi achievements in particular.

Stevens categorizes these reports and their sources in the following fasion:

> Categories of sources, in a somewhat descending order of reliability are:
>
> 1. Those actually involved with these projects.
> 2. Witnesses of flying saucers who had prior knowledge that the sighting was of a German saucer as opposed to an unidentified flying object.
> 3. Those who at the time had good reason to know of German saucers.
> 4. Third-party intelligence sources which verify claims made by the higher categories above.
> 5. Researchers who have interviewed principals involved in German saucer research.
> 6. Studies or scientific papers published by individuals identified as participants in these projects.[52]

One has only to glance at the vast list of sources and articles falling into these categories that are produced in both Stevens' and Harbinson's books[53] to realize that by comparison to the Roswell Incident and its rather threadbare catalogue of witnesses, the Nazi "saucer" story is flush with witnesses. This raises a rather interesting philosophical point, for many in the UFO and Roswell research communities would have us believe in the extraterrestrial interpretation on the testimony of fewer witnesses and even less persuasive argumentation than is given in Stevens' or Harbinson's books, or as has been argued in the present work, while simultaneously they would have us disbelieve any Nazi connection, when, as is by now evident, there is far more in its favor, both in the documents, and as regards to the terrestrial nature of the debris and the bodies. And in the instance of the bodies, let it be recalled, one was dealing with second-hand and dead man's testimony to boot! In so far as those researchers *do* mention any Nazi connection, they never bother to fully explore the options, mentioning

merely V-2s and Horten wings, as if that covered the full range of available options![54]

In any case, one of those sources who alleged that he was involved in the Nazi saucer projects of the Mark I variety was the elderly German engineer Johann Andreas Epp, who even published a book in Germany on the subject. According to Stevens.

> ...Epp has always maintained that it was he who originated the type of design used in the Schriever-Hebermohl project. He states in his book that the imbalance in the ring of the wing-vanes which plagued the early Shriever-Habermohl prototypes was a deviation from his original design in which the wing-vanes were lengthened. He states that when they returned to his original design, the saucer was able to take off....
>
> ...
>
> Therefore, the history of the Schriever-Habermorhl project in Prague can be summarized as follows: Epp's statement is that it was his design and model which formed the basis for this project. This model was given to General Ernst Udet which was then forwarded to Dr. Walter Dornberger at Peenemünde.[55] Dr. Dornberger tested and recommended the design which was confirmed by Dornberger to Epp after the war. A facility was set up in Prague for further development and the Schriever-Habermohl team was assigned to work on it there. At first this project was under the auspices of Hermann Goering and the Luftwaffe. Sometime later the Speer Ministry took over the running of this project with the chief engineer Georg Klein in charge. Finally, the project was usurped by the SS in 1944, along with other saucer projects, and fell under the purview of Dr. Hans Kammler.[56]

But prior to the incorporation of these saucer projects into the SS and into Kammler's "think tank," there was a connection to the secret rocket

research center at Peenemünde, and therefore to Von Braun, Arthur Rudolph, Dr. Kurt Debus and all the other later Paperclip Nazis.

The Peenemünde connection is important, for it exhibits the fact that with these saucers we are still dealing with the Mark I version, and with the specific concepts that it was designed to investigate and exploit. Stevens explains it this way: The Germans, he says, initially proposed to deal with the boundary layer problem by using wings that would suction it off:

> The literature on German efforts toward elimination of the boundary layer using suction wings is voluminous, as Vesco has pointed out. Beginning in the early 1940s German designers cut slots into experimental aircraft and auxiliary engines were employed to suck in the boundary layer through the wing itself and redirect this air into the fuselage and out the rear of the aircraft. This proved to be more complicated than first anticipated. It was found that the area of turbulence, eddy currents caused by the boundary layer, moved across the wing from front to back as air speed increased. A slot at one position on the wing might work at one speed but not another. This meant that many, many slots covering the expanse of the wing would be needed to totally defeat this boundary layer problem. This proved impractical for a number of reasons.
>
> One reason this was so was that multiple engines had to be used. The first engine had to provide power for flight as in any airplane. The second engine, mounted in the fuselage, was necessary to draw in air through the slotted wings and exhaust it towards the rear. Interestingly enough, it was found that the boundary layer could be eliminated by "sucking it in" or by "blowing it off" using a strong flow of air to disrupt it.[57]

Once again, the statements of General Schulgen's "Intelligence Collection Memorandum" spring to mind, and in doing so, point the finger once again to Nazi Germany's technologies and concepts, thus making it even more persuasive that the U.S. Air Force was concerned not so much with postwar *Soviet* developments, but postwar *Nazi* ones.

But there is more:

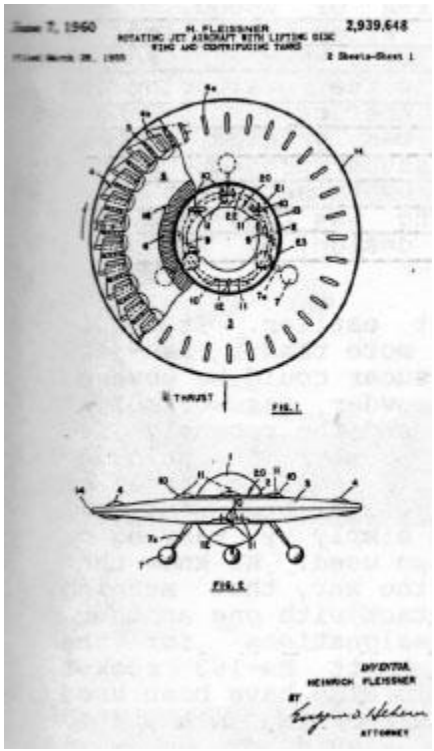
> Full scale suction wing aircraft were built for purposes of testing this concept. These were the Junkers “Absaugeflugzeug” (suction aircraft) AF-1 and the Fieseler “Absaugestorch” (Suction-stork) AF-2.
>
> Concurrent with these experiments, work was being done into the feasibility of circular wings. This work also began in the 1930s with the basic ideas being credited to Professor Ludwig Prandtl. Early scientific papers on circular winged aircraft were written beginning in 1936 by Wilhelm Kinner and in 1938 by M. Hansen. Both of these scientists worked at the Aerodynamic Research Facility at Goettingen. By 1941 Dr. Alexander Lippisch was also engaged in experimentation on circular wings at the Messerschmitt firm. His design, designated J1253, was tested at the wind-tunnel in Goettingen. Dr. Lippisch was visited by Dr. Giueseppe Belluzzo while at Messerschmitt in Augsburg and Lippisch worked together with Dr. F. Ringlib on a “Drehfluegel” or “rotating wing” which was tested at Peenemünde. As with suction wings, a body of scientific literature from those times documents this early circular-wing experimentation.
>
> *The genius of the German designers was to combine the ideas of suction(of the boundary layer) and circular wings into a single aircraft.* Housing the complete aircraft within its wing would eliminate the fuselage and so eliminate an unnecessary, drag-causing structure.[58]

This requires some commentary and analysis.

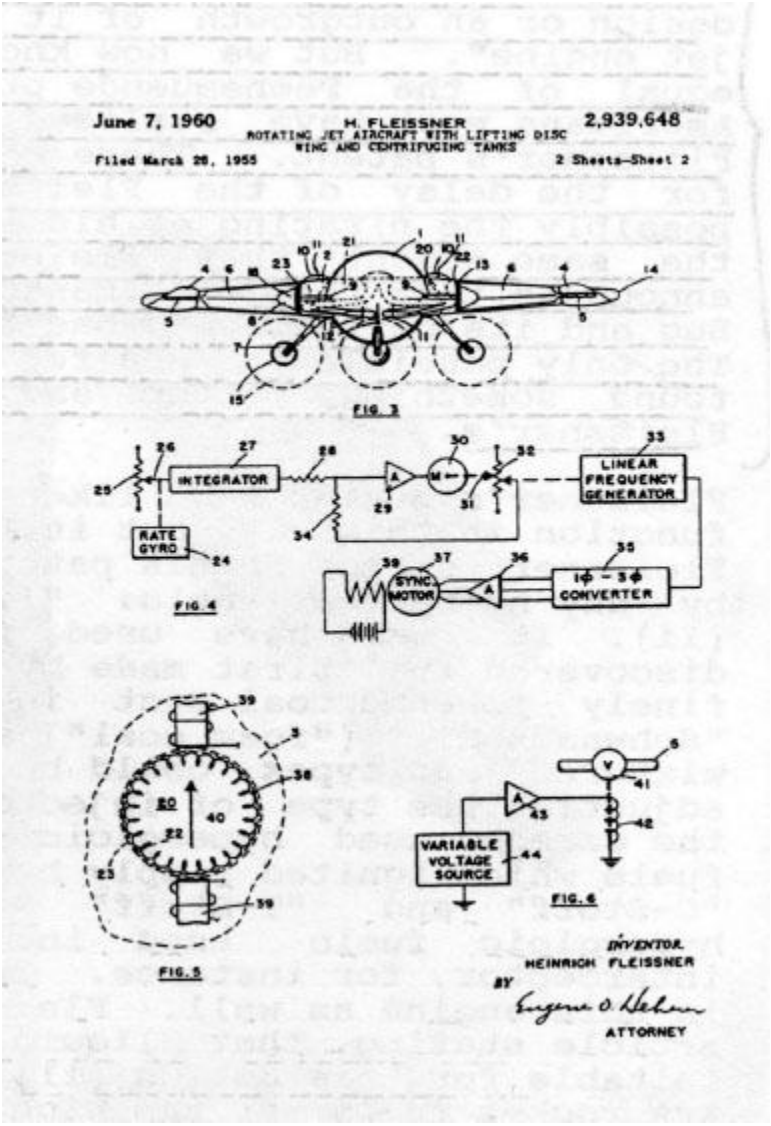
Dr. Walter Lippisch was, of course, the designer of several supersonic ramjet propelled aircraft for Nazi Germany, one of which was reportedly tested and which broke the sound barrier for the first time prior to the end of the war.[59] Additionally, he was one of the Paperclip scientists brought to this country, and stationed at Wright Field in Dayton, Ohio, thus making him a prime candidate for one of those “interrogated” individuals referred to in General Nathan Twining’s memorandum to General Schulgen! Note now, however, that Lippisch is one of those involved with the Pennemünde group in the production and testing of these very unconventional aircraft. For Lippisch to be thus interrogated by the Americans *after* the Roswell Incident is to suggest that what crashed was not only something Nazi, but that the extent of American knowledge of these projects was somewhat limited, and moreover suggests that the Nazi Paperclip scientists gave out

only as much information as needed to satisfy American inquiries. That the Americans were *not* completely satisfied is evident by the fact that they determined to do further intelligence collection on the matter, which, as is evident from the CIA documents cited earlier, continued for a number of years *after* the Roswell Incident.

At this juncture, yet another German engineer, Heinrich Fleissner, enters the picture with an American patent based on his own designs for a suction saucer undertaken at Peenemünde in conjunction with the foregoing projects. Notably, Fleissner's American patent version of concepts he was engaged with in the Third Reich was taken out a decade and a half later, in 1960! The cover-pages of this patent, U.S. Patent Number 2,939,648, are revealing in themselves:



Fleissner U.S. Patent # 2,939,648, "Rotating Jet Aircraft with Lifting Disc Wing and Centrifuging Tanks ", Overhead and Frontal Views



Fleissenr U.S. Patent # 2,939,647, "Rotating Jet Aircraft with Lifting Disc Wing and Centrifuging Tanks", Rear View and Electrical Schematic[60]

In an article for the May 1980 issue of the German publication *Neue Presse*, Fleissner described his work at Peenemünde. It is worth citing Stevens extensively on that work:

> Fleissner was an engineer, designer and advisor to what he calls a "Flugscheibe" project based at Peenemünde during the war. It is interesting to note that Fleissner's area of expertise, fluidics, is exactly the specialty involved in investigating problems with boundary layer

> flow. Fleissner reports that the saucer with which he was involved would have been capable of speeds up to 3,000 kilometers per hour within the earth's atmosphere, *and up to 10,000 kilometers outside the earth's atmosphere.*

(Or to put it differently and more directly, Fleissner's flying saucer project at Peenemünde was for the purpose of developing a manned space vehicle of saucer-shaped configuration! Continuing with Stevens:)

> He states that the brains of the developmental people were found in Peenemünde under the tightest of secrecy.

(And this means that there are, at Peenemünde itself, *two* programs, a "secret" one involving Von Braun and his rocket team, and *another* "much more secret" one involving very unconventional manned aircraft!)

> ...(What is of most interest to us here are three facts. First, that Fleissner worked at Peenemünde on a flying saucer project. Second, that a hint of this design has survived to this day.[61] Third, the surviving design can be linked to photographic evidence of a German saucer, circa World War Two.[62]

Note the tripod landing gear in the diagrams of Fleissner's American patent, which means that the design was intended for vertical take-off and landing.

So how did the Fleissner design, or rather, the Peenemünde design on which the subsequent Fleissner U.S. patent was based, work?

> The engine employed by Fleissner rotated around the cabin on the outside of the saucer disc itself. It was set in motion by starter rockets... (This) engine was really a form of ram-jet engine. It featured slots running around the periphery of the saucer into which air was scooped. The slots continued obliquely right through the saucer disc so that jet thrust was aimed slightly downward and backward from the direction of rotation. Within the slots, fuel injectors and a timed

ignition insured a proper power curve which as in accordance with the speed and direction of the saucer much like an automobile's fuel injection is timed to match the firing of the spark plugs. Steering was accomplished *by directing the airflow using internal channels containing a rudder and flaps which ran alongside of the central cabin.* The cabin itself was held stationary or turned in the desired direction of flight using a system of electromagnets and servo-motors coupled with a gyroscope.

It is interesting to note that while the patent was filed on March 28, 1955, it was not granted until June 7, 1960, over five years later! What could possibly have been the reason for the delay? The only possible reason concerns the American Silver Bug Project which was being developed at the same time. This was a project which was tasked with further development of the Miethe design or an outgrowth of it and simply referred to as a "radial jet engine." But we now know this Meithe project was not the equal of the Peenemünde project in terms of speed. The Americans must have realized this sometime after the filing of Fleissner's patent. There can be little doubt that the reason for the delay of the Fleissner patent was the evaluation and possibly the pirating of his design by the Americans. At about the same moment that Fleissner's patent was granted, it was announced that the joint Canadian-American saucer project, Silver Bug and its derivatives, had been abandoned by those governments. The only possible reason for this abandoning was that they had found something better, and the better design, by far, was Fleissner's.[63]

Stevens also observes that the Fleissner patent makes it clear that the vehicle was designed for the capability of using a variety of fuels, including the classic rockets fuels of liquid hydrogen and liquid oxygen. As such, it was intentionally designed as a suction-craft for inside the atmosphere operations, and as an oddly configured rocket for operations outside of it.[64]

One may therefore regard these different versions of the "Mark I" German suction saucers as engineering studies in the problems associated with suctioning of the boundary layer, the vectoring of exhaust thrust, the difficulties and requirements of jet-propelled vertical take-off and landing, and finally, with the problem of creating a technology that was adaptable to

the requirements of endo- and exo-atmospheric flight, i.e., as a *second*-generation manned space-flight technology.

2. Mark II: The Extension of Mark I Craft by the Use of Conventional Technologies in Exotic Combinations, or by Exotic Technologies Themselves in Combination with Conventional Ones.

The next concept to be investigated was the extension of range and other performance characteristics by whatever means was conceivable to do so. This included, of course, the development of practical nuclear powerplants,[65] methods ionizing the atmosphere of surrounding aircraft, and to more interesting and superficially "conventional" solutions. One of these involved the proposal to find a way to cool atmospheric nitrogen as the craft moved through the air, and then to burn it through extremely high voltage discharges. By thus relying on the principal element within the atmosphere itself, nitrogen, the range of the craft could, as with atomic propulsion, be almost limitless. "A saucer which could gather its fuel along the way has one obvious advantage. It could stay aloft for days if not weeks."[66]

3. Mark III: Field Propulsion Craft

This brings us at last to the always-thorny and difficult subject of actual Nazi field propulsion saucers. The difficulty of this subject has been very aptly summarized by Stevens:

> The existence of World War Two German field propulsion flying saucers is a topic which is denied by virtually every reputable authority in aviation history. It is also denied by many researchers actually studying German saucers. The problem is that in the years immediately following the Second World War the earth's skies suddenly began to be populated by flying craft which did some remarkable things. They flew at unheard of speeds. They made very sharp turns, seemingly non-aerodynamic turns, even at this extreme speed. They lacked the glowing tail of jets or rockets but they glowed or gave off light at night from their periphery or from the whole craft. They were silent or

> almost silent. Sometimes they gave off sounds that an electric generator or motor might make. Sometimes vehicles with electrically based ignition systems ceased to operate in the presence of these saucers. No government claimed these flying craft, yet they were seen all over the world.[67]

The problem was not aided by the fact that some postwar neo-Nazi sources published schematics and diagrams of alleged Nazi field propulsion saucers such as the "Hannebu" and "Vril" saucers, along with dubious explanations of their propulsive systems.

But there *was* evidence that something along field propulsion lines was in fact afoot within the Third Reich during the war. In addition to the Nazi Bell project which clearly had field propulsion implications, there are other indicators. Stevens, for example, cites a Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report that refers to the work of one Dr. Otto Erb, whose work, among other things, included an "apparatus for (the) conversion of residual heat into electrical energy,... an apparatus for turning the energy of the sun's rays into electrical energy" but most importantly, an apparatus for "rearward impulse propulsion of vehicles and aircraft."[68]

Stevens' comment concerning this last item is worth citing in full:

> Of course by now many readers will have already...grasped the significance of ... "Rearward impulse propulsion for vehicles and aircraft." Given the nature of Dr. Erb's other work, it is a safe bet that this "impulse propulsion" was not of the jet or rocket nature. In fact there remains little doubt that this propulsion was, in fact, field propulsion... if this is not the smoking gun for German experiments in field propulsion saucers, it is at least a hint that there is a gun.[69]

If that is the case, then it is even truer to say the same of the Nazi Bell. One need look no farther than that project to sense the immediate implications it has for the topic of field propulsion research and its connection to Nazi Germany.

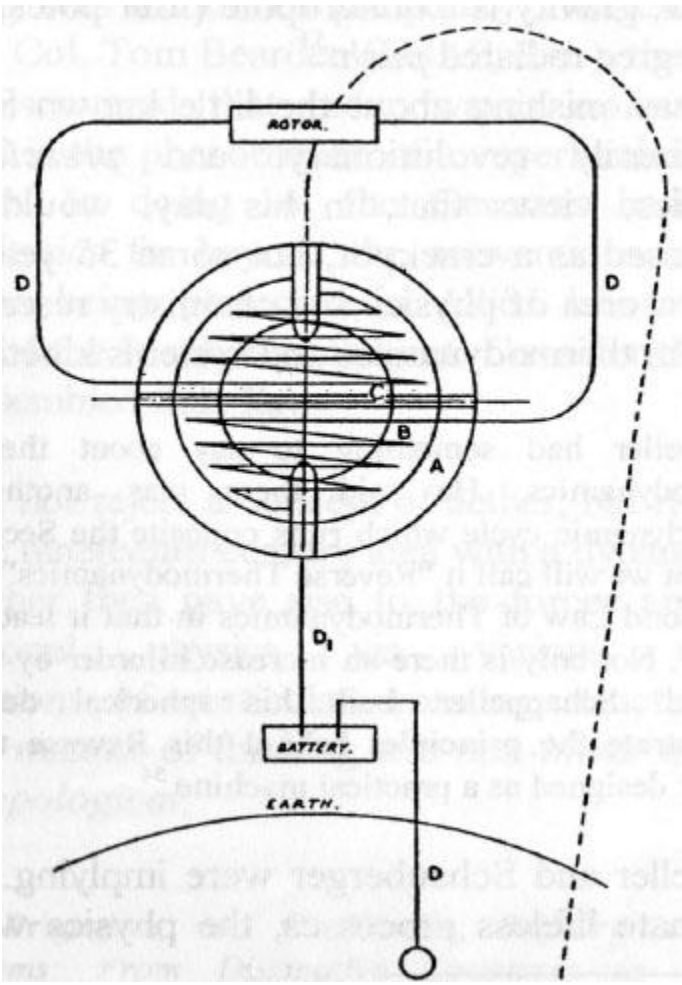
There are, however, other clues than these. In an intelligence document entitled “An Evaluation of German Capabilities in 1945” prepared for the headquarters of the United States Strategic Air Forces in

Europe, a curious and brief section entitled “Magnetic Wave” states the following:

> The best information available is from very secret and reliable sources, and forces the conclusion that this weapon exists as a possibility. It is designed to cause failure of various electrical apparatus in aircraft. Technically it does not appear to be a possible serious threat in 1945. At most it would be effective at a few locations for preventing ground strafing. Evidence to date indicates that it could have little effect against high level attack, since the apparatus would be too cumbersome to permit its use in aircraft.[70]

The mention of “magnetic waves” however, opens up an entirely new Pandora’s Box, for it will be recalled that this was the principle alleged to be in operation in the Roswell craft by Colonel Corso, a principle reminiscent, moreover, of Dr. Kurt Debus’ idea of “magnetic fields separation.”

With the German research into magnetism, however, we are once again chin to chin with some rather astounding developments. Nothing better epitomizes this Nazi obsession with magnetism and “magnetic fields separation” better than the so-called Schappeller Device, named after its inventor Karl Schappeller. The schematic of the device is relatively simple:



Schematic of the Schappeller Device. Note the Electrical Connection of the Device to the Earth[71]

But while the schematic is simple, its operation, and Schapeller's rationalization for the device, are not. While I have briefly outlined this device in a previous book,[72] it is now necessary to be more detailed in order to show its field propulsion implications and its clear and explicit relationship to the Nazi Bell project, and to Dr. Debus's conception of "magnetic fields separation." I will rely heavily upon Stevens' presentation in order to demonstrate this relationship.

Like most electrical motors, Schappeller's device is composed of two basic components, a rotor and a stator. In this case, the stator is a ball, which in turn is divided into two halves, each of which contain the internal mechanisms of the device. Both halves of the stator are air-tight. At the

poles of each of these hemispheres are iron bar magnets; most of these magnets are on the inside of each hemisphere. At the very center of the device, and therefore of the two hemispheres, there is a gap or space between the two magnets. Then things get a little more interesting:

> Insulation, a ceramic material, is placed on the inside of the steel ball, leaving a hollow central area. Within this hollow area and around the space between the magnets are wound two internal coils. These originate at the bar magnet poles and each terminates at the center of the sphere with a connection leading out of the sphere to the rotor. These coils are composed of a hollow copper tube filled with a special and secret substance called the "electret". Upon leaving the sphere the electret filled copper tubes are replaced by conventional copper wire. An electrical connection is made from the outside surface of one pole to one pole of a special type of battery which is grounded at the other pole or, as an alternative, to a special device called an "Ur-machine" which will be discussed.[73]

The word "electret" is composed from "electricity" and "magnet," and is simply a material that is a dielectric, having *either* a semi-permanent *static* electrical charge *or* — and this is quite important — a dipole polarization like an ordinary magnet. The British physicist Oliver Heaviside coined the term. An electret is thus a peculiar kind of material, being more or less the "static electricity" equivalent of a permanent magnet. When this fact is born in mind, then Schappeller, it will be noted, *has maximized the dipole phenomenon in his device to the maximum degree*, for even the "wires" on the inside of the device in the coils are composed of an electret, whose composition Schappeller never publicly revealed.

Prior to operation all air inside the spheres is sucked out,[74] and the device is then turned on:

> The device is started through (a) totally unique battery and a connection to the earth. A specific excitation impulse must be given to the device. This electric impulse was conducted through the iron

magnet and jumped the gap in the center of the sphere to the other iron magnet.

What occurred then sets this device apart from all others. In the vacuum of the sphere, in the center between the two bar magnets a field of “glowing magnetism” was set up. This glowing magnetism was something entirely unique. It is recognized as a magnetic field but much more powerful and unlike any magnetic field of an iron bar or an electric coil. Once the initial input has been made to start the device, the battery and ground could be disconnected. The device would continue to operate on its own.

For an understanding of what is really happening here we have to consider the bar magnet. We think of a bar of iron with two poles, one positive and one negative or perhaps one north and one south pole. But there are really three components to the bar magnet. There are the two poles and the neutral zone between the poles. If we cut the magnet in half we get two new poles. For the Schappeller (device) this neutral area is very important. Imagine a bar magnet running through the vertical axis of the ball. Then imagine the center section cut out. We now have a north pole at the top of the ball, a south pole at the bottom of the ball, just as we do with the planet Earth. In the center we have a missing section with a south pole, opposing the north pole at the top of the ball and, likewise, a north pole opposite the south pole at the bottom of the ball. We have now four poles and a split bar magnet in its center section.

It is this gap in the center where Schappelller’s “glowing magnetism” is generated by grounding, that is, charging the device by a special battery and an earth connection, This glowing magnetism is the mystery. Davson cites Schappeller’s calculations and gives this form of magnetism as being one thousand times more powerful than that produced by present magnetism. He also states that in this form of magnetism *the electricity is stationary while the magnetism is radiated.*[75]

Note that by so maximizing the dipoles in his device, and that by concentrating an electrical pulse in the gap between the two magnets,

Schappeller has basically turned that magnetic neutral zone into a conventional spark gap, or rather, a conventional spark gap into a magnetic neutral zone. As the static electrical current from his electret passes through the gap, it pulses the magnetic neutral zone.

The conceptual resemblance here to the Bell — at least in my own speculative reconstruction of the physics involved — is rather astounding, for not only does Schappeller's device involve static electrical pulse (basically, DC or direct current), but it embodies Debus' principle of "magnetic fields separation." Schappeller's "glowing" or "radiant" magnetism is thus perhaps the very "magnetic wave" that was previously encountered in the American intelligence "Evaluation of German Capabilities in 1945." It takes no great leap of the imagination to see direct implications in the Schappeller device for the idea of field propulsion. Even the fact that both devices employed ceramic material only emphasizes the strong conceptual resemblance between the two. Additionally, it will be recalled that the Henge structure in which the Bell device was tested was equipped with heavy duty electrical cabling ports, indicating an earth or ground connection that was somehow important to the Bell's operation.

Stevens looks closely at this magnetic neutral zone and its central role in Schappeller's conceptions. This "Magnetic Neutral Zone" exists inside any ordinary bar magnet, and is known as the Bloch Wall.

> "This is a transition layer between adjacent ferromagnetic domains magnetized in different directions. The wall has a finite thickness of a few hundred lattice constants, as it is energetically preferable for the spin directions to change slowly from one orientation to another, going through the wall rather than to have an abrupt discontinuity."
>
> In electromagnetics the Bloch Wall is external to the hardware itself. it is the point of division of the circulating vortex, or spin, of the electronic magnetic energies of the north and south poles. The negative north pole magnetism spins to the left while the positive south pole spins to the right. Energy is being conducted into the Schappeller device through the un-insulated poles and being conducted and spun on its way to the center of the unit. The point of zero magnetism, no spin and magnetic reversal, where the two spin fields join, is the Bloch Wall.[76]

By abruptly pulsing that Bloch Wall in his device, Schappeller was setting up the conditions of an extreme “torsion shear” effect within the device, in a manner similar to the Nazi Bell (as I have rationalized the device).

Schappeller was also ahead of his time — *way* ahead — in another way as well, for he was an outspoken critic of the Second Law of Thermodynamics, a virtual “dogma” not only in the physics of that day, but down to our own times as well. Schappeller conceived of reality as a broken symmetry, and pointed to the existence of life itself as a testimony that there was something very wrong with the idea of entropy. Like the Russian astrophysicist Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev would do two decades later, Schappeller implied the disturbing question, “If there is cosmic entropy, where is it?” His device was a conceptual study of the concept of a non-equilibrium system, and how it might, through magnetic fields separation and torsion shear, access or transduce energies from that broken symmetry.

W.A. Harbinson notes that many UFO “close encounters” exhibit the signatures of this type of “torsion shear” on objects in their environment. In some reports, a “flying saucer”

> can not only lift vehicles off the road, but ‘seems to impart a torque or turning force to them, as confirmed by the spinning and swirling of other objects.’ This phenomenon shows that the unknown force ‘prevails within a cylindrical zone having the same diameter as the UFO and extending from it to the ground.’ What is most puzzling about this force is that instead of acting downward, as would be the case with jet exhausts, it acts upward, thus causing rotation to the objects affected. The force is also selective in what it affects, favouring electrical conductivity as a ‘responsive item.’ Thus, stone or dry sticks are not so affected (unless wet); the human or animal body, metals, and water are. This suggests that the UFO may indeed be defeating gravity in some manner and, if so, is sharing this achievement with the ‘responsive items’ directly below it, which in turn suggests ‘gravity damping by electromagnetic radiation.’
>
> More support for the presence of electromagnetic radiation comes from the charred grass and plants often found where UFOs have

> landed. As the roots of grass so affected are charred, but the blades are not damaged, it is possible that we are dealing with induction heating from *a 'powerful alternating magnetic field.'* This offers the possibility of microwave propulsion.[77]

These alternating magnetic fields and microwaves would account for many phenomena associated with UFO close encounters, from the stoppage of internal combustion engines, to "wild gyrations of compasses and magnetic speedometers," interference with electronic broadcasting, the heating of bituminous highways to the extent that they sometimes catch fire, the feeling of electrical shocks reported by some individuals in these situations, and even the "buzzing" sounds that reportedly accompany some of these UFOs.[78]

By now I believe the case is clear that, if the Germans did not actually field any prototypical field propulsion craft, they were most certainly working on the basic concepts and technologies leading to them, and that they *may* have been close to doing to by the war's end. It is clear that they were working on such craft utilizing conventional propulsion methods in unusual configurations. It thus appears evident that their program was a program of investigation of any and all concepts that could conceivably lead to breakthrough technologies for advanced aerial and space capabilities.

In an odd and ironic "coincidence" that is by now looking less and less "coincidental," the Canadian magnetics engineer Wilbert Smith — in an episode well known to ufologists — stated that when he discretely queried American authorities in the early 1950s on the status and classification of the subject matter of UFOs, he received the astonishing reply that it was classified higher than the hydrogen bomb.[79] But this should not, by now, surprise us, for the Nazis themselves had classified their "field propulsion" and "free energy" technology, the Bell, at a level much higher than their own atom bomb project. Perhaps, as American intelligence and military officials were slowly and secretly waking up to what and *who* was confronting them, they classified the matter in similar fashion, and for similar reasons.

D. The Nazi Scenario

1. The Rationalization of the Documents, Bodies, and Debris

We have now reached the end of this study. As has been seen, the "independent Nazi scenario" *does* make rational sense of all three major components of the Roswell Incident. It makes sense of the major authentic documents that can reasonably be associated with that Incident and it even makes sense of some of the disputed ones. It even sheds a new interpretive light on the possible roles and motivations of some of those who have researched and written about the Incident. There is, one may argue, a sense of urgency in those intelligence collection memoranda, as the U.S. Air Force evidently suspects the origin — much to its disbelief and chagrin — but is determined to discover *exactly* where they were coming from.

It makes sense, too, of the data point of the bodies, for if one allows certain testimonies of their existence for the sake of argument, then, as Nick Redfern demonstrated in his book, the features recorded for those bodies are rationalizable on a wholly terrestrial basis.

But most importantly, the original core of the story, the extraordinary debris, has now been shown to suggest not only something genuinely extraordinary, but also something genuinely terrestrial. In some cases the details and properties of that debris pointed directly to the type of materials engineering research and fabrication that Nazi Germany was indeed pursuing. In others, a more speculative and argued case was made that ended in the same place. But in the final analysis, those remarkable properties point to nothing in the sky, but to hidden technologies, projects, and ideas right here on earth.

The documents, the bodies, and the debris, have now been fully rationalized upon a terrestrial basis, and in the case of the documents and the debris, the indicators, if one has the eyes to see and the ears to hear them, are that the Incident was caused by something Nazi crashing in the New Mexico desert. Would the U.S. military exhibit "extreme anxiety" and attempt to cover that up for political and technological reasons? Absolutely.

The Nazi scenario fully rationalizes the peculiar “Roswell dialectic” evident in the Incident almost from the beginning, and explains it as an attempt to control the interpretations of the event, and to channel them into two mutually opposed and ultimately equally absurd interpretations, for self-evidently, Mogul or weather balloon debris does not explain the debris as described by the witnesses. And equally absurd is the conclusion that the craft or its debris represented something extraterrestrial, for nothing really is known of its performance characteristics nor its technologies beyond what has been described for the debris. To fall back on the wider ufological context is itself perilous to that interpretation, for while many of those reports described extreme performance for the period, none of them seem to this author exotic enough to compel toward the conclusion that they — or the Roswell Incident — can only be explained by the conclusion that its origin was ultimately off this world.

2. The Wider Historical Context

However, ufologists are not to be faulted for seeking to place their extraterrestrial interpretations of the Roswell Incident into the wider ufological context of the period. This is a natural and rational step given the paradigm by which they interpret the event. Similarly, it is a rational and natural step to seek to place a Nazi interpretation of the Incident into a similar context. We have implied throughout this book that the Nazi scenario makes sense in a wider context that includes a kind of postwar “Paperclip detente” that was struck between elements of the Anglo-American oligarchic elite and elements of that surviving postwar Nazi International. It makes sense of the growing suspicions of many researchers who have followed the subject, that there is a kind of “two space programs” agenda being pursued, a public one, and a much more secret one. As is now evident, the genesis of that idea, historically, was centered at the secret Nazi research center at Peenemünde itself, with the “public-secret” program of Von Braun and his rocket team, and the “secret secret” saucer programs of Fleissner, Epp, and others also being headquartered there. And straddling the fence between those two and the Nazi Bell itself, is Dr. Kurt Debus. The Nazi scenario makes sense of the subsequent silencing of the anti-gravity

topic in the mid-1950s just as well as does any extraterrestrial hypothesis, for faced with an enemy that was terrestrial and that had self-evident access to such technologies, the American military's response would have been a crash program to acquire it for itself. It makes sense even of the covert "space" and "UFO wars" that so many have noticed began to be waged between the American military and "whomever," and makes sense of it without the absurd suggestion that the American military was willing to risk an interplanetary war with people that, by the nature of that case, possessed a technological capability far beyond our own, and brings it back to earth and to the suggestion that while "they" possessed an advanced technology, it was not so far beyond our own that it invited risk to the national security.

There is one final detail to this scenario, and two loose ends, that must now be mentioned.

In my previous books I have argued that, as the Second World War drew to its end, the Nazi leadership itself began a strategic evacuation plan that included as a principal feature of its planning the more or less equal division of its less sensational technological spoils between the Western Allies and the Soviet Union, while retaining the best, most advanced, and most radical of those technologies for itself for its own independent postwar development and exploitation.

And that brings us to the two loose ends: the "Czech Incident" of 1946, and once again to Antarctica, and to "Alternative Two."

3. The Czech Incident Revisited

In 1946, a team of American commandos surreptitiously entered Czechoslovakia for the ostensible purpose of recovering some six *tons* of documents that were necessary for the war crimes tribunals then taking place in occupied western Germany.[80] But as a close examination of American documents concerning that incident quickly reveal, the war crimes tribunal story was just a cover, for the Czech government protested that the commando team was simply trying to steal radar secrets and other technological data that had been buried by the SS somewhere in the environs of Prague. Even more tellingly, the American documents concerning the incident also contained the puzzling fact that no one within

the American State Department or War Department could figure out just exactly who gave the orders for the incursion in the first place. There was genuine mystification. Perhaps one was dealing with one of the “pirate intelligence teams” that so concerned General Eisenhower prior to the invasion of France. Or....perhaps one might have been dealing with a team of German SS commandos dressed up like Americans and rescuing their own documents, and pinning the blame on America in a classic false flag operation.

Henry Stevens also imparts one more bit of information, for it is now believed that, if the Americans were behind the commando incursion — and Stevens believes they most definitely were — then they did not get everything, for some 2.5 tons “of archival material remain under the control of former SS members and are still intact.”[81] Given all that we have encountered in previous pages, it is a safe bet that the missing 2.5 tons of documents contained information about the Nazi atomic program, nuclear propulsion program, its saucers, and, of course, the Bell project.

4. Alternative Two: Antarctica Revisited.

The other loose end is Antarctica. “Nazi UFO” proponents have long asserted — without much in the way of argumentation — that during the War a secret research base, a veritable city, of Nazi technicians, engineers, and scientists was constructed in Antarctica. This base, so the legend runs, continued conducting the most advanced Nazi research, and, utilizing Nazi flying saucers, dealt a decisive defeat to Admiral Byrd and his Operation Highjump expedition in early 1947. (There’s that year again!) While I have mentioned all of this in *Reich of the Black Sun*, I have long argued in public appearances and radio interviews that the construction of such a research base would have been a logistical impossibility for the German Navy during World War Two. The Nazis may and probably did have some weather station and small U-boat base there, but an extensive research facility able to manufacture such craft?

Ausgeschlossen!

But once again, Henry Stevens has, as he so often does, dug much deeper, only to uncover a much deeper mystery.

> Geologically speaking, Antarctica is almost split in half by a huge rift valley, which runs from the South Pole toward Africa, then up East Africa to the Dead Sea. This entire rift valley is overflowing with geothermal activity. It was on this very rift valley that the Germans located their Antarctic base. Hot water ponds, named the Schumacher Ponds by the Germans, are teaming with algae, and found on surface rock deep within Antarctica. These ponds never freeze over. Interestingly enough, each pond is populated by a different species of algae, giving each pond a different color. It is not far-fetched to believe taht a sustainable base could be located over one of these geothermal vents, especially deep within a large crevice or cave.... (The) Icelanders rely on geothermal energy to produce electricity for their daily needs. Why could not have inhabitants of Antarctica?[82]

Adding to the strangeness, Stevens reports that an anonymous letter was sent to the journal *Scientific American* in which a curious incident was alleged to have occurred in Antarctica. Two Australian women were attempting to cross-country-ski over Antarctica when they were seized by American Navy special forces, and detained.[83]

The detention may have something to do, argues Stevens, with all the strange secrecy that the United States shows towards Lake Vostok, a vast underground thermal lake in the Antarctic interior, covered with an ice dome that, during the endless day of the Antarctic summer, admits enough sunlight to bathe the lake in an endless twilight glow of light coming through the ice dome.[84] But why was no less than the American National Security Agency involved? Stevens maintains that it is because it may be because Admiral Byrd and the Nazis may have found or discovered something there during their 1938 and 1947 fly-overs and photoreconnaissance of the continent.[85]

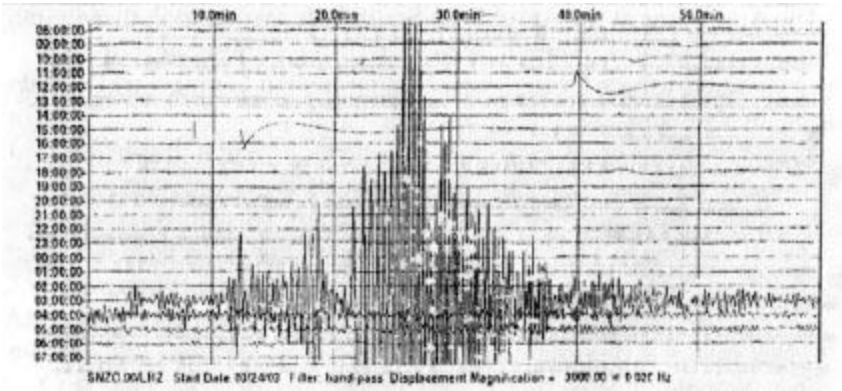
This may very well be the truth, for there is a *huge* magnetic anomaly on the southwestern shore of Lake Vostok, registering some “1,000 nanoteslas of variance with the surrounding vicinity.”[86] This might be due, as Stevens argues, to the presence of a vast amount of metal, “Metal as in a buried city.”[87]

Or perhaps a genuine geophysical anomaly? Or a buried "something else?" Or some combination of all three? We will never know.

But the evidence, Stevens argued, points to *something* artificial, and something moreover under intelligent control. Consider, he says, the following Antarctic seismographs. These readings were taken from the American station at the Amundsen South Pole station, whose seismometers are located in such a fashion that they are "*surrounding the old German area called Neuschwabenland.*"[88] The first graph is that of a typical "all quiet on the Antarctic front" sort of day.

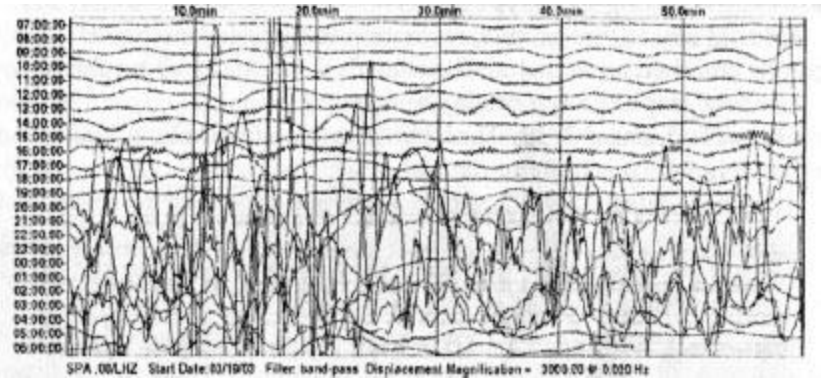
"All Quiet on the Antarctic Front"[8]

And, here is what an Antarctic earthquake looks like:



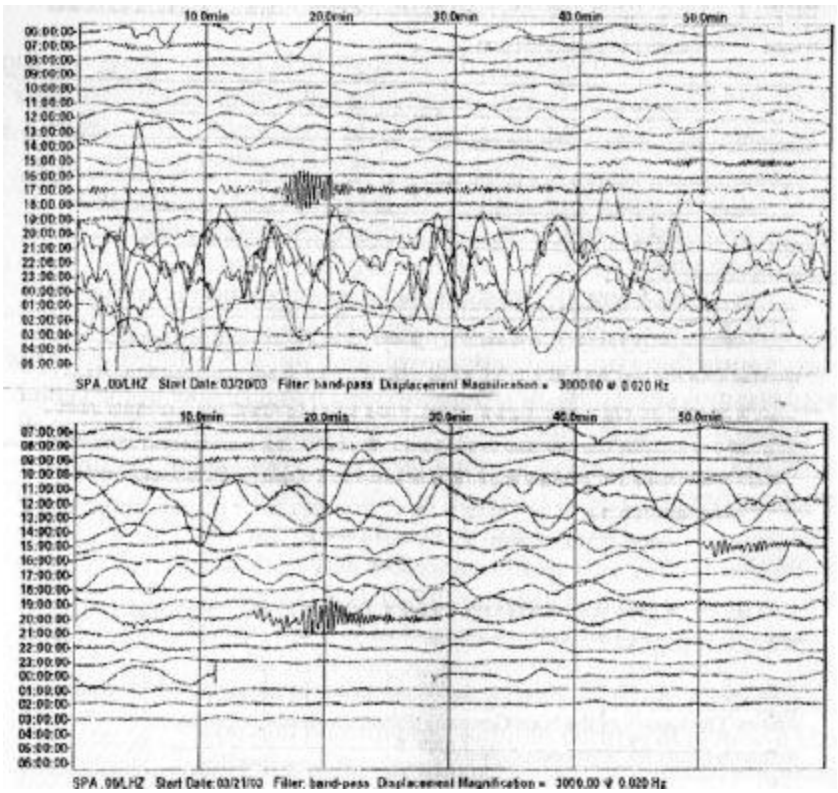
Typical Antarctic Earthquake Seismogram[90]

But then there appears to be, according to Stevens, highly anomalous, i.e., *not naturally-caused*, standing long-wave activity, when the needles are all over the chart in what is definitely *not* an earthquake, nor, for that matter, an explosion of any sort:



"Not So Quiet on the Antarctic Front": Standing Long Waves, a Scalar Weapon Signature?[91]

As if that were not enough, then there are signatures both of these standing long waves, and of small, sharp anomalies that would be typical of the seismic signatures of nuclear detonations:



"Open War on the Antarctic Front": Standing Long Wave Activity Accompanied by "Detonation" Signatures.[92]

Stevens cites the research of German seismic researcher Christian Saal, who "interprets this to be an American attack on Neuschwabenland using the new boring atomic weapon announced at the time of the Iraq invasion." Moreover, adding credence to this idea, the date on the first seismograph at the top of this page is 3/20/03, "the very day the United States began its massive bombardment of Baghdad." Saal maintains that while the world's attention was diverted to Iraq, the U.S.A. used "bunker-busting" atom bombs to attack the Nazi base.[93]

The defense, according to Saal, apparently held, because there was a second such "attack" launched, as is "demonstrated" by the second seismogram. Stevens, of course, is much more skeptical, though concedes the overall importance of the seismograms:

> I really don't know if Christian Saal's interpretation is correct or not. What is most important to me is that there is real data here that

> shows something unusual and unexplained by “the authorities”. This hard seismological data, an acknowledged mystery lake in the center of Antarctica, and the interjection of the National Security Agency all point to something as yet unexplained happening on our southern-most continent.[94]

Whether or not the current activity has anything whatsoever to do with Nazis or their nefarious schemes is, in a certain sense, not even important, for it seems hardly coincidental that they would have chosen to explore precisely this area, nor coincidental that they also researched the very technologies of standing long waves evidenced in the seismograms.

But whether these seismic anomalies point to secret buried cities, to a flying saucer long ago buried under the Antarctic ice, or to geophysical processes understood by but a few, or to some combination of any of these, one fact remains, and that is, within the wider context of Nazi saucer research and all the other exotic technologies that remained in their hands after the war, perhaps, after all, there might be a kernel of truth in the old mythologies of the Last Nazi Battalion, Antarctica, and secret saucer bases.

In any case, we know now that the Roswell Incident was not a silly balloon. And we know it was not extraterrestrial either. It was in all likelihood, something Nazi, an enemy fighter that, as Admiral Byrd put it to the Chilean newspaper *El Mercurio* earlier that year in 1947, “could fly from pole to pole with tremendous speed.”

And the United States, he advised, had best get busy and start preparing to defend itself.

And that is what the record shows that it did.

---

[1] W.A. Harbinson, *Projekt UFO: The Case for Man-Made Flying Saucers* (Isle of Wight, U.K.: Book Surge Publishing, 2007), p. 131.

[2] Henry Stevens: *Hitler’s Flying Saucers: A Guide to German Flying Discs of the Second World War* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2003), p. 253.

[3] Steven Ashley, “Metals That Remember,” *Popular Science*, January 1988, 78- 81, 115, p. 78, emphasis added.

[4] See Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, pp. 122-124.

[5] Randle and Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 175.

[6] See p. 323

[7] Ibid.

[8] Farrell, *The Cosmic War,* pp. 28-66.

[9] See my *The Cosmic War,* pp. 48-56.

[10] “Quantum State,” en.wikipedia.org/wiki?Quantum_state. I have changed the image on wikipedia’s article to black and white and reversed the polarity. The actual color diagrams are even more stunning and suggestive.

[11] Indeed, the attacks on his father by some in the Roswell skeptics’ community prompted Marcel’s son, Dr. Jesse Marcel, Jr., to co-author a book along with his wife, Linda Marcel, in defense of his father’s military record and answering some of the charges of his father’s critics: *The Roswell Legacy: The Untold Story of the First Military Officer at the 1947 Crash Site.* Franklin Lakes, New Jersey: New Page Books. 2009. ISBN 978-60163-026. *If* Major Marcel was induced to the extraterrestrial conclusion by the Roswell researchers, then it should be noted that one of those who was in contact with Marcel was precisely Bill Moore. However, let it be noted that Marcel, in his interview as reported in Berlitz’s and Moore’s *The Roswell Incident*, falls *short* of drawing this explicit conclusion which he later drew. He states merely that he did not know *where* it came from. Irving Newton maintains that Marcel, during his appearance in Fort Worth in 1947, quietly was trying to persuade Newton that the figures and debris represented something “extraterrestrial,” but this detail does *not* emerge in the second or third articulations of the story of the Incident, but only much later. The possibility must therefore be entertained that this might represent an orchestrated attempt to discredit Marcel’s observations.

[12] Cited in Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun*, p. 293.

[13] Henry Stevens, *Hitler’s Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), p. 122.

[14] Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* p. 123. As of this writing, the original website appears to be still active, but in checking the website there is no reference to "Impervium" on it. However, my own search for "Impervium" did find a trademark for a "superalloy" and the company producing it at http://www.azom.com/details.asp?ArticleID=1774. The superalloy described on this site is an alloy of stainless steel and additionally *non-magnetic.* There is, however, no indication of its composition nor of its forging process.

[15] Ibid.,

[16] Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* p. 125. Stevens also noted the very same "both-and" attitude to the Nazi "fusion" scientist Dr. Ronald Richter. See pp. 258-306 of his book.

[17] Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* pp. 125-126, citing British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report number 142 (Bryanston Square, London), pp. 6-7, 32.

[18] Ibid., p. 126.

[19] Ibid., pp. 126-127.

[20] Ibid., p. 127. Oddly enough, the idea of a crystal explosive of great power finds expression in the recent movie *Eagle Eye*. The idea of extreme cooling and super-compression and hardening is, of course, the basic idea behind a neutron star. The idea runs as follows: as the hydrogen of a spent star is subjected to the near-absolute-zero of space, it cools, and eventually the electron of the atom collapses into the proton, creating a neutron. As more and more atoms undergo this process, a kind of "neutron material" results that is composed of nothing but neutrons. Being compressed further together would create the ultimate diamagnetic "metal" of ultra-extreme heaviness, density, and hardness. It will be recalled that the Japanese military attaché at Stockholm learned, in 1943, of some sort of German research into such areas, and informed Tokyo of this (See my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 43-46.)

[21] British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report number 142 (Bryanston Square, London). This section of the report is actually photographically reproduced in Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* p. 128. Emphasis is added.

[22] Ibid.

[23] Readers of my *Nazi International* will recall Landig's novels from that book, and how, in spite of their extraordinary and specific claims, the actual postwar historical reality seems to suggest that they are anything but fiction.

[24] W.A. Harbinson, *Projekt UFO: The Case For Man-Made Flying Saucers* (Isle of Wight, U.K.: 2007), pp. 67-68.

[25] For the context, see pp. 385-386.

[26] For the context, see pp. 386-387.

[27] Harbinson, *Projekt UFO,* pp. 68-69, emphasis added.

[28] Renato Vesco, *Intercept UFO* (New York: Pinnacle Books, 1976) Vesco's work was republished by Adventures Unlimited Press under the title *Man-Made UFOs: Fifty Years of Suppression*, and is still available.

[29] Harbinson, *Projekt UFO*, p. 94.

[30] Ibid.

[31] Harbinson, *Projekt UFO*, pp. 314-315.

[32] see pp. 243-249

[33] Corso and Birnes, op. cit., p. 115.

[34] Ibid., p. 4, emphasis added.

[35] Ibid., emphasis added.

[36] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 158.

[37] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 10.

[38] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 149.

[39] Ibid., p. 151.

[40] Tom Agoston, *Blunder!: How the U.S. Gave Away Nazi Supersecrets to Russia* (New York: Dodd, Mead, and Company, 1985), p. 12

[41] The document is reproduced without translation in Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 99.

[42] I have translated the entire document in my book *The Philosophers' Stone* (Port Townsend, Washington: Feral House, 2009), pp. 242-244.

[43] I lay out the case that Laser Isotope Separation, or LIS, was one such purpose of this development much more extensively in my book *The Philosophers' Stone*, pp. 205-245.

[44] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 11.

[45] Agoston, *Blunder!*, p. 32.

[46] Ibid., p. 12.

[47] Agoston, *Blunder!*, p. 129, emphasis added.

[48] Cited in Harbinson, *Projekt UFO*, p. 89.

[49] Ibid., p. 90.

[50] Photocopied document in Henry Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucers*, p. 26.

[51] Harbinson, *Projekt UFO*, p. 94.

[52] Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucers*, p. 29.

[53] Harbinson, *Projekt UFO*, pp. 333-335.

[54] Stevens' own words at the conclusion of his chapter on the German suction-saucers are even more pointed. See *Hitler's Flying Saucers*, p. 65.

[55] Dornberger and Peenemünde, note carefully, now enter the picture.

[56] Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucers*, pp. 47, 49.

[57] Ibid., pp. 88-89.

[58] Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucers*, pp. 88-89, emphasis added.

[59] Farrell, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 20-23.

[60] Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucers*, p. 91

[61] The hint Stevens refers to is Fleissner's U.S. patent.

[62] Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucers*, p. 90. The photograph Stevens refers to is found on p. 64, and should be compared with the schematic of the Fleissner patent on p. 91.

[63] Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucers*, pp. 90, 92.

[64] Ibid., p. 92.

[65] Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucers*, pp. 101, 107.

[66] Ibid., p. 144.

[67] Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucers*, p. 139.

[68] Ibid., p. 143.

[69] Ibid., p. 144.

[70] Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucers*, p. 79.

[71] Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucers*, p. 172.

[72] Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 228-231.

[73] Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucers*, p. 177.

[74] Ibid.

[75] Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucers*, pp. 178-179, emphasis added.

[76] Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucers*, pp. 179, 181.

[77] Harbinson, *Projekt UFO*, p. 231, emphasis added.

[78] Harbinson, *Projekt UFO*, pp. 231-232.

[79] see pp. 69-71.

[80] I cover the Czech Incident, and publish the relevant declassified documents concerning it, in my *Secrets of the Unified Field*, pp. 296-313.

[81] Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology*, p. 331. Stevens gives additional historical background to the Czech incident and his interpretation and understanding of the event on pp. 324-331.

[82] Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology*, p. 222.

[83] Ibid., p. 221.

[84] Ibid., p. 223.

[85] Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology*, p. 223.

[86] Ibid.

[87] Ibid.

[88] Ibid., p. 224.

[89] Ibid., p. 225.

[90] Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology*, p. 225.

[91] Ibid.

[92] Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology*, p. 226.

[93] Ibid., pp. 226-227.

[94] Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology*, p. 227.

Bibliography

Ashley, Steven. “Metals That Remember.” *Popular Science.* January 1988. pp. 68-81, 115.

Berliner, Don, and Friedman, Stanton T. *Crash at Corona: The U.S. Military Retrieval and Cover-up of a UFO: The Definitive Study of the Roswell Incident*. New York: Paraview Special Editions. 2004. ISBN 1-931044-89-9.

Berlitz, Charles, and Moore, William L. *The Roswell Incident.* New York: Grosset and Dunlap. 1980. ISBN 0-448-21199-8.

Caidin, Martin. *Black Thursday.* New York: Bantam Books. 1987. ISBN 0-553-26729-9.

Carey, Thomas J., and Schmitt, Donald R. *Witness to Roswell: Unmasking the Government's Biggest Cover-up.* Revised and Expanded Edition. Franklin Lakes, New Jersey: New Page Books. 2009. ISBN 978-1-60163-066-7.

Chester, Keith. *Strange Company: Military Encounters with UFOs in WWII.* San Antonio, Texas: Anomalist Books. 2007. ISBN 1-933665-20-3.

Corso, Col. Philip J. (Ret.), with William J. Birnes. *The Day After Roswell: A Former Pentagon Official Reveals the U.S. Government's Shocking UFO Cover-up.* New York: Pocket Books. 1997. ISBN 0-671-00461-1.

Dolan, Richard M. *UFOs and the National Security State: Chronology of a Cover-up 1941-1973.* Charlottesville, Virginia: Hampton Roads Publishing Company, Inc. 2002. ISBN 978-1-57174-317-6.

Farrell, Joseph P. *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend.* Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press. 2004. ISBN 1-931882-39-8.

Farrell, Joseph P. *Secrets of the Unified Field: The Philadelphia Experiment, the Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory.* Kempton,

Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press. 2008. ISBN 978-1-931882-84-2.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts.* Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press. 2007. ISBN 978-1-931882-75-0.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The Nazi International: The Nazis' Postwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics and Space.* Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press. 2009. ISBN 978-1-931882-93-4.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter.* Post Townsend, Washington: Feral House. 2009. ISBN 978-1-932595-40-6.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell: NASA's Nazis, JFK, and Majic-12*. Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press. 2006. ISBN 1-031882-61-4.

Feschino, Frank C. Jr. *Shoot Them Down!: The Flying Saucer Air Wars of 1952*. Lulu Enterprises. 2007. ISBN 978-0-6151-5553-1.

Friedman, Stanton T., MSc. *Top Secret/MAJIC: Operation Majestic-12 and the United States Government's UFO Cover-up.* Da Capo Press. 2005. ISBN 978-1-56924-342-8.

Friedman, Stanton T., MSc. "Review of Nick Redfern's *Body Snatchers In the Desert."* June, 2005. www.stantonfriedman.com.

Harbinson, W.A. *Projekt UFO: The Case for Man-Made Flying Saucers*. BookSurge Publishing. 2007. ISBN 1-4196-7638-5.

Hoagland, Richard C., and Bara, Mike. *Dark Mission: The Secret History of NASA*. Port Townsend, Washington: Feral House. 2007. ISBN 978-932595-26-0.

Korff, Kal. K. *The Roswell UFO Crash: What They Don't Want You To Know.* New York: Dell. 2000. ISBN 0-440-23613-4.

Lerma, John, M.D. *Learning from the Light: Pre-Death Experiences, Prophecies, and Angelic Messages of Hope.* Franklin Lakes, New Jersey: New Page Books. 2009. ISBN 978-1-60163-069-8.

Marcel, Jesse Jr., and Marcel, Linda. *The Roswell Legacy: The Untold Story of the First Military Officer at the 1947 Crash Site.* Franklin

Lakes, New Jersey: New Page Books. 2009. ISBN 978-60163-026-1.

Pflock, Karl T. *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe.* Amherst, New York: Prometheus Books. 2001. ISBN 978-1-57392-894-6.

Randle, Kevin D. *Case MJ-12: The True Story Behind the Government's UFO Conspiracies.* New York: Harper Torch Books. 2002. ISBN 0-380-81473-0.

Randle, Kevin, Ph.D. *Roswell Revisited.* Lakeville, Minnesota: Glade Press, Inc. 2007. ISBN 978-1-931042-50-8.

Randle, Capt. Kevin (Ret.) *Roswell UFO Crash Update: Exposing the Military Cover-up of the Century.* New Brunswick, New Jersey: Global Communications. 1995. ISBN 0-938294-41-5.

Randle, Kevin D., Capt, U.S.A.F.R., and Schmitt, Donald R. *UFO Crash at Roswell.* New York: Avon Books. 1991. ISBN 0-380-76196-3.

Randle, Kevin D. Capt, U.S.A.F.R, and Schmitt, Donald R. *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell.* New York: Avon Books. 1994. ISBN 0-380-77803-3.

Redfern, Nicholas. *The F.B.I. Files: The FBI's UFO Top Secrets Exposed.* London: Simon and Schuster. 1998. ISBN 0-684-81938-4.

Redfern, Nick. *Body Snatchers in the Desert: The Horrible Truth at the Heart of the Roswell Story.* New York: Paraview Pocket Books. 2005. ISBN 0-7434-9753-8.

Stevens, Henry. *Hitler's Flying Saucers: A Guide to German Flying Disks of the Second World War.* Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press. 2003. ISBN 1-931883-13-4.

Stevens, Henry. *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology.* Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press. 2007. ISBN 978-1-931882-73-6.

Todd, Robert G. "Bill Moore and the Roswell Incident: The True Believers Deceived." *The Spot Report*, Friday, March 7, 1997.

GIOVANNI 'JOHNNY' CIRUCCI

ROMANS OF MASS DESTRUCTION

VOLUME 1

HOW THE VATICAN CREATED AND ENABLED SOME OF HISTORY'S MOST MONSTROUS SERIAL KILLERS.

Romans of Mass Destruction

How the Vatican created and enabled some of history's most monstrous serial killers.

Volume I: 54 A.D. to 1680 A.D.

by

Giovanni Augustino "Johnny" Cirucci

Cover art by Greg Hardesty
greg@glyph.it
Proofing by Klint "Hawkeye" Burton

Copyright © 14 December 2019

All rights reserved.

ISBN-10: 1673274994
ISBN-13: 978-1673274998

FOREWARD

It was George Santayana who in 1905 made the famous statement: *"Those who cannot remember the past are condemned to repeat it."*

The history of Rome is written in the blood of martyrs and fearful is the record of her atrocities.

First pagan Rome and then papal Rome relentlessly persecuted the followers of Christ for no other reason than their fervent faith in the Word of God and steadfast refusal to adopt the moral imperatives of man over those of scripture.

When the light of truth had been almost extinguished, God raised up the Protestant Reformation to restore the authority of His Word which in turn unleashed a ferocious response from Rome and once more the streets of Europe were bathed in the blood of the saints.

It was by studying the prophecies of Daniel and the Revelation and the writings of the New Testament, that the reformers clearly identified the papal system as that "antichrist" system that would *"seek to change times and laws"* and *"persecute the saints of the Most High"*.

There could be no compromise with the system that had *"made the nations drunk with wine of her fornication"* and the corruptions of Rome were so clearly exposed that all who recognised them separated themselves from her.

Rome has not changed; her doctrines are still the same as they were in the Middle Ages. She is still the only church that has all three of the devil's lies, which he told in Eden, enshrined in her catechism as truth's to be believed. She boldly states: Thou shalt surely not die, thou shalt be as gods and by my own wisdom I shall distinguish between good and evil and replace the Law of God with my own precepts.

It is astounding that this system is today looked upon with so much favour and that she daily grows in power and prestige as she sits as queen and claims that she will regain the children she lost during the Reformation. Her

deadly wound is healed *(Rev. 13:3),* and kings and prelates once again frequent her corridors and seek her council.

It is for a time such as this that this book is written so that humanity can be reminded to tread carefully lest they should once again be entangled and face eternal ruin.

May the reader understand.

Dr. Walter J. Veith

Walter Julius Veith (born 1949) is a South African zoologist and a Seventh-day Adventist author and speaker known for his work in nutrition, creationism and Biblical exegesis with the Amazing Discoveries media ministry and on their international television network found in North America on Galaxy 19.

Veith was professor of the zoology department at the University of Cape Town and taught in the medical bioscience department. During this time the department was awarded a Royal Society London grant for zoological research.[1]

After joining the Seventh-day Adventist Church he rejected the theory of evolution in favor of creationism[2][3] *and so* [was forced] *to give up teaching at the University of Cape Town.*

As a creationist[4] *he speaks internationally on this and other topics. His lectures, videos, and books promote creationist and Adventist beliefs and doctrines. These include an evangelical understanding of the Bible with a very strong commitment to the Textus Receptus and the King James Version of the Bible. He also promotes a vegan diet and a belief in the imminent fulfillment of Biblical End Times and the return of Jesus Christ.*

Veith has written a number of books, including Diet and Health and The Genesis Conflict, which gives a biblical perspective and evidence [which supports] young earth creationism.[5] *He is the keynote speaker of Amazing Discoveries, a non-profit worldwide ministry based in British Columbia, Canada. Amazing Discoveries conducts seminars*

and streams by satellite, 24 hours a day, seven days a week on TV and satellite across North America and the world.[6] ~ Wikipedia[1]

Professor Walter Veith obtained his doctorate in zoology from the University of Cape Town in 1979. He believes that the theory of evolution does not provide a plausible explanation of our origins, and that the geological and paleontological data do not support evolution over long periods of time, but rather imply catastrophism, which is consistent with the Genesis account. He lectures internationally on this topic and has undertaken extensive tours to Europe, Africa, and North America.

Professor Veith's research field is nutritional physiology, concentrating on the effect of modern animal husbandry on the incidence of disease transferal to humans. This highly controversial topic is of vital significance in view of the increase in epidemics such as mad cow disease. His research concentrates on degenerative diseases caused by incorrect nutrition and particularly diseases such as osteoporosis, arthritis, and cancer. Professor Veith is also concerned about the impact of antibiotic use in producing a new breed of antibiotic-resistant bacteria, which are causing food poisoning epidemics around the world.

Professor Veith and his team have presented numerous lectures on the topic. Their research has been presented at international conferences on nutrition and disease, and their findings have proved that diet has a direct impact on numerous degenerative diseases.

Professor Veith is one of only five scientists in South Africa honored with the Royal Society London Grant for the Reconstruction and Development Program to establish a research climate in post-apartheid South Africa.

Professor Veith has written a number of books on the above topics:

***Diet and Health** presents the latest insights on health, including Professor Veith's research. **Diet and Health** is published by the prestigious scientific publisher Stuttgart Scientific Publishers*

(Stuttgart Wissenschaftlicher Verlag), which publishes books for the medical profession and the pharmaceutical industry.

The Genesis Conflict *is an eye-opening study of the evolutionary theory and the evidences of Creation found in the natural world and genetics.* ***The Genesis Conflict*** *is an excellent companion to Professor Veith's evolution DVDs.*

Professor Veith is also deeply interested in the ecological deterioration of our planet and is convinced that this state of affairs has been predicted in Biblical prophecy. He is an ardent student of Biblical prophecy and trusts the veracity of the Bible, which he believes is proved by the science of archaeology as well as the fulfilment of numerous prophecies found in the Bible. He believes that the Bible has a message for modern humanity. Professor Veith's many lectures on all of his topics are available on video, and viewers find them unique, eye-opening, and controversial. ~ Amazing Discoveries[2]

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

Originally, this started out as a joint effort between myself and a young investigator from England, Kieran Lawrenson.

Kieran came to my attention when someone recommended his excellent documentary *Child Catchers: The Devil is in the Detail*.[3]

To my surprise, he very honestly and respectfully referenced my work. I say “surprise” because I disclose subject matter *verboten* in the “alternative media community”. Consequently, references and invitations to speak are as rare as hens’ teeth.

Communication ensued and, as usually happens when two honest people get in touch, so did a friendship.

Kieran had already amassed a sizeable amount of information connecting the mass-murder dots from England to Rome and I thought it would be worth a go to write this book together.

Alas, Kieran’s spare time disappeared when he picked up a second job so I have received the benefit of his initial research without attempting to work the finished product together.

I think I was foolish for trying as, to me, more than one person writing a book is like more than one person driving a car simultaneously. There is one vision for where you want to go and how best to get there and the one with that one vision should do the driving lest there be an accident.

But Kieran remains a friend that I am indebted to as I am all of my team.

Speaking of which, this book would not be possible were it not for the contributions of Doc Felipe, Hawkeye, Professor REPLY-ALL George and Greg, Master of the Graphic Arts, as well as Eric Bowman, a friend from up north with excellent information, especially given his youth.

INTRODUCTION

My goal as an author, researcher and investigative journalist is never to give my own opinion, rather to present you with the reports of others that prove my point.

There are, therefore, a *lot* of citations, many of them from older sources which are sometimes difficult to read, even in English.

I have forgone my convention of “italics suspended” because, although it’s easier on the eyes, I prefer citations to be immediately visible as such.

I have taken the liberty of breaking up many a run-on paragraph for you.

I have also corrected the European confusion between apostrophes and quotation marks; they seem to haphazardly use both!

But, to me, consistency and common sense are more important than strictly obeying every grammatical rule as there are confusing exceptions to every rule, usually needlessly so.

I’ve also allowed “European” and “Old English” spelling and / or grammar to give the reader the feel of the time or place of the citation.

Some passages may seem redundant, going over facts or incidents more than once. History can get complicated and it helps to see things more than once.

Language is the possession of the people, not a weapon of the Elite.

CONTENTS

Foreward	iii
Acknowledgements	vii
Introduction	ix
Contents	x
Preface	xiv
	1

Chapter 1: Locusta of Gaul	
Chapter 2: Gilles de Rais, a.k.a. “Bluebeard”	**6**
Witch Is it: Pagan or Prophetess?	**17**
Be-Witched	**25**
Chapter 3: Son of the Devil	**59**
Catholic Caliphate	**64**
Ventilated & Hyphenated	**66**
“‘Bram”	**70**
“ — by any other name...”	**75**
“Experts”	**89**

Twisted Sister	**99**
“T.E.”	**100**
Son of the Jesuits	**103**
Chapter 4: Lucrezia Borgia	**194**
Torture on the Tiber	**242**
The Prior of San Marco: An Important Sub-Story	**252**
Savonarola’s City	**263**
Fall Girl	**295**
Chestnuts Roasting	**299**
Julius Caesar, Not Jesus Christ	**305**

Killer Karma for the Poison Pontiff	**306**
Secret History	**309**
Chapter 5: Bloody Mary	**311**
The Father of the English Bible	**324**
Chapter 6: Bloody Catherine—A Medici in France	**358**
The Spinning Balls of the Medici	**361**
Matanzas	**380**
Francis I	**393**
L´Affaire des Placards	**394**
Persecution of Protestants	**412**
The Death of Henri II	

	413
“...in the porches of my ears did pour...”	**425**
The Tragedy of Pax Medici	**429**
The Opus Dei Effect	**433**
Black Wedding	**460**
Deal With The Devil	**481**
Chapter 7: Erzsébet Báthory—The Protestant Vlad Ţepeş?	**499**
Chapter 8: Aqua Tofana—The Catholic Black Widow of Sicily	**516**
Aqua Tofana	**524**
Chapter 9: “La Voisin”—The Perfect Amalgam of Witchcraft, Satanism and the Catholic Church	**547**
Sun King Pin	

	555
Versailles	**559**
Gay Paris	**564**
The Secret Treaty Of Dover	**571**
Retour à l´Affaire des Poisons	**587**
Mercy For The Merciless	**616**
About the Author	**629**
End Notes	**631**

This Team
together
having raged and wept in this Thing

that clothes our Spirits
thirsting for Justice
inflamed in the Red

crimson footprints on the White

and the Journey into the Black

of Masculinity
where a Man
can wear pain
and sorrow and still express

the raging
Joy of Life
being quiet

when the desire

to yell with a voice so loud
causing trees to bow and splinter and break
in violence

to, instead

quietly take the hand of a neighbour
a brother

a sister

a child

to Dance
and the sound of the laughter of the little children
as they climb

this Tree

these Wild Olive Branches
a Safe Place
that is this Fellowship (Thank You for this Fellowship)

Blessed are those who mourn

Blessed are those who long and thirst for Righteousness

As we long for righteous judgement …

May It Be …

Violent.

But You, alone, are Judge.

~ Hawkeye, 13 November 2019

PREFACE

After writing *Eaters of Children*[4] I didn't think that there were any dark recesses left in Hades.

The idea that the ritual abuse, torture, trafficking and murder of children is the gateway to power, regulated by the Catholic Church *should* have been as dark as it gets.

But it isn't.

When I put together the details surrounding mass-murdering cannibal Jeffrey Dahmer, it never occurred to me that Dahmer was the rule, not the exception.

Chapter 1

Locusta of Gaul

13 October 54 A.D. *Tiberius Claudius Caesar Augustus dies by apparent poisoning.*

The ability to murder seemingly free of consequences has held an allure running back to Cain.

The lust to do so has an equally primordial source.

The use of selective murder for political gain adds a powerful impetus to dedicate knowledge and resources towards untraceable homicide.

The two agendas seem to have intersected with Locusta of Gaul whose career in mass murder via poison was rewarded by Roman authorities.

While Jesus was working with wood in Nazareth, Rome had a General cutting a swath across northern Europe named Germanicus.

He is likened to Alexander of Macedon because, despite his good looks and military prowess he died at 33 under mysterious circumstances.

His daughter, Agrippina (the younger sister of Caligula), would go on to become Empress next to her husband Claudius, who was also her uncle.

She did not marry for love.

Agrippina waited for the right time to dispose of her husband / uncle in order to empower her son, Nero, whom Claudius (perhaps foolishly) adopted.[i]

> *Under this great burden of anxiety,* [Claudius] *had an attack of illness, and went to Sihuessa to recruit his strength with its balmy climate and salubrious waters. Thereupon, Agrippina, who had long decided on the crime and eagerly grasped at the opportunity thus offered, and did not lack instruments, deliberated on the nature of the poison to be used. The deed would be betrayed by one that was sudden and instantaneous, while if she chose a slow and lingering poison, there*

> *was a fear that Claudius, when near his end, might, on detecting the treachery, return to his love for his son. She decided on some rare compound which might derange his mind and delay death. A person skilled in such matters was selected, Locusta by name, who had lately been condemned for poisoning, and had long been retained as one of the tools of despotism. By this woman's art the poison was prepared, and it was to be administered by a eunuch, Halotus, who was accustomed to bring in and taste the dishes.*
>
> *All the circumstances were subsequently so well known, that writers of the time have declared that the poison was infused into some mushrooms, a favourite delicacy, and its effect not at the instant perceived, from the emperor's lethargic, or intoxicated condition. His bowels too were relieved, and this seemed to have saved him. Agrippina was thoroughly dismayed. Fearing the worst, and defying the immediate obloquy of the deed, she availed herself of the complicity of Xenophon, the physician, which she had already secured. Under pretence of helping the emperor's efforts to vomit, this man, it is supposed, introduce into his throat a feather smeared with some rapid poison; for he knew that the greatest crimes are perilous in their inception, but well rewarded after their consummation.* ~ Tacitus 12.66-67[5]

It must be noted that, before the turn of the first century, there were poisons available to assassins that provided a shockingly specific series of effects. As these stories unfold, we will see "historians" and "journalists" mock even lesser capabilities 1500 years beyond this. They are either incompetent in their work or corrupted and compromised.

After the death of Claudius, Nero rose to the throne but soon began to clash with his mother whose lust for power was not appeased by the success of her plot. He first attempted to marginalize her by removing her honors and then, later, removing her physically by expelling her from the palace and forcing her to live in a Misenum estate without bodyguards (which would leave her vulnerable to assassination, herself).

It wasn't enough. When she didn't die or disappear indirectly, her son had her killed by his open order.

But Locusta, the family poisoner, was spared execution because of her usefulness.

> [Nero] *began his parricidal career with the death of Claudius, for even if he did not instigate that Emperor's murder, he was certainly privy to it, as he freely admitted, and thereafter was wont to praise mushrooms, by means of which his adoptive father was poisoned, as the "food of the gods" in accord with the Greek proverb.*
>
> *After Claudius's death, he abused his memory in every way, in both words and actions, accusing him of idiocy or cruelty, it being a favourite joke of his to say that Claudius being dead could no longer "entertain mortal life" stressing the first syllable of "entertain". He set aside many of Claudius's acts and decrees as the work of a feeble-minded old man, and enclosed the place where Claudius was cremated with nothing more than a low makeshift wall.*
>
> *He tried to do away with Britannicus*[[ii]] *by poisoning him too, no less through envy of his voice, which was more mellifluous than his own, than for fear that his father's memory would win him greater popular approval. He procured the venom from a certain Lucusta, an expert in such substances, summoning her when the poison's effects proved sluggish, flogging her himself, and claiming she had provided him with medicine not poison. When she explained she had used a small dose to save his action from detection, he replied: "Do you think I'm afraid of the Julian law?" before insisting that she prepare the fastest-acting most certain mixture she knew, before his eyes, in that very room. He tested it on a kid, but the creature took five hours to die, so he had her make a more concentrated brew and gave it to a pig which died on the spot. He then had it administered to Britannicus with his food. The lad dropped dead after the very first taste, but Nero lied to the guests claiming it as an instance of the epileptic fits to which the boy was liable. The next day he had Britannicus interred, hastily and unceremoniously, during a heavy downpour.*
>
> *Lucusta was rewarded with a free pardon for past offences, and extensive country estates, and Nero also provided her with a stream of willing acolytes.* ~ Suetonius[6]

Nero’s aloof greed is perfectly embodied by the story of Cassius Dio claiming that, during the terror that was the Great Fire of Rome in 64 A.D., the Emperor found it amusing to dress in stage costume and sing the “Sack of Ilium” while citizens of all strata lost lives and property.[iii]

Starting with discontented Legions in northern Europe and followed by his own Praetorian Guard, Rome deposed Nero and he committed suicide four years later.

When the elderly Servius Sulpicius Galba took to the throne, he felt Locusta’s crimes outweighed her dangerous usefulness and he had her executed; one of his more useful acts during his very short seven-months as Emperor before he was murdered by Marcus Salvius Otho who only managed to hold power for *three* months.

Locusta of Gaul was a mass-murderer — a homicidal sociopath — but she found use at the hands of power-players in Rome.

You will be shocked to read in the following pages that this pattern has been maintained through to the present day.

Chapter 2

Gilles de Rais, a.k.a. “Bluebeard”

1432 A.D.: *Little boys begin disappearing from the village of Champtocé-sur-Loire, France.*

The legend of “Bluebeard” was promulgated and exploited by Catholic propagandists like Hungarian opera composer Béla Bartók (Serbian Roman Catholic on his mother’s side) who have spun yarns about a French Aristocrat who was as wealthy as he was sinister. “Bluebeard” repeatedly married beautiful young women only to secretly torture and murder them.

In Bartók’s opera “Bluebeard’s Castle”, the protagonist’s final conquest, “Judith” almost joins her predecessors until a last-minute prayer is answered and her brothers intervene to save her and kill her tormentor.

Interestingly, “Judith” is derived from the Hebrew, “a woman of Judah”; Judah being the Messianic tribe of Jacob/Israel.

The truth is far more disturbing. Rather than adult women, the real “Bluebeard” preyed upon little boys.

Yet Catholic writers (particularly Frenchmen) have hidden this mass-murderer of the Devil’s Simulation[iv] in plain sight by slightly altering his story for their exploitation and aggrandizement.

Serial killer author David McGowan noted that de Rais was born into a wealthy French family of Catholic Aristocracy.

“Bluebeard” hands his new wife, Judith, the keys to every room in his extravagant castle, strictly forbidding her from only one.

French Roman Catholic artist Gustave Doré, 1862. (Wikimedia Commons) *Born in 1406 in the “Black Tower” of his family’s castle at Champtoce, Gilles de Rais was the eldest son of one of the wealthiest men in all of France, Guy de Rais. Gilles’*

mother was Marie d'Craon, the daughter of Jean d'Craon, who was also one of the wealthiest and most politically powerful men in the country.

> *In 1415, Guy de Rais was reportedly gored to death by a boar while hunting.*
>
> *That same year, Gilles' mother died as well, as did her brother, Amaury d'Craon, who was slain in the legendary battle at Agincourt.* [[v]] *As Amaury had been Jean d'Craon's only son, the rapid succession of deaths left young Gilles de Rais as the sole heir to both the de Rais and the d'Craon family fortunes. In 1420, Gilles kidnapped and then married his cousin, Catherine de Thouars, whose family had vast land holdings adjacent to the properties owned by the de Rais and d'Craon families. At just sixteen years of age, Gilles de Rais stood poised to become the wealthiest man in France — by some accounts, possibly the richest man in all of Europe.* ~ McGowan[7]

This combined with almost no parental love, guidance or discipline was the makings of a monster.

> *De Rais's parents died in 1415, leaving the eleven-year-old Gilles in the care of his rich thug of a maternal grandfather, Jean de Craon. Instead of educating the child with books and Latin (as he had promised Gilles's parents) and passing on to him a grandfather's wisdom and care, Jean left de Rais with only the most minimal schooling or supervision. In doing so, says* [Catholic seminarian Georges] *Bataille* [(1897 – 1962)]*, he created a wild young pit bull of a child, free to explore any path, criminal or not, to which he was inclined.* ~ Morrison[8]

The "Bluebeard" moniker is supposedly derived from the unique contrast of having fair hair with a beard so black it gave off a blue sheen.

> *Gilles, it may be added, was a well-built man,[3] of majestic stature, with an engaging countenance;[4] in his youth, indeed, he had been handsome and graceful.[5] And if the traditional description of his countenance, to which allusion has previously been made, be in a measure accurate, his appearance in his last days must have been very striking. It is by no means unusual to meet men with dark hair and fair*

> *beards and moustaches, but Gilles, so tradition asserts, had fair hair with dark eyebrows and a black moustache and beard; his sunken eyes were blue, we are told, his lips thin, and his cheeks pale.* ~ Vizetelly[9]

Much detail on de Rais can be found in the third volume of *A History of the Inquisition* by historian Henry Charles Lea (1825 – 1909).

Lea was a Philadelphia Quaker who married Irish Catholic Frances Anne Carey, the daughter of well-connected Irish publisher Mathew Carey.[vi]

Helen Morrison's assessment as a medical professional "expert" on "serial killers" was a confirmation of what Lea had written a century before; that the child of privilege had grown into a man of monstrosity.

> *... the life which promised so much in camp and court was blighted by the fatal errors of his training. The death of his father while he was a child of eleven left him to the care of a weak and indulgent grandfather, Jean de Craon, whose authority he soon shook off. His fiery nature ran riot, and he grew up devoured with the wildest ambition, abandoned to sensual excesses of every kind, and with passions unrestrained and untamable.*
>
> *When on trial he repeatedly addressed the wondering crowd, urging all parents to train their children rigidly in the ways of virtue, for it was his unbridled youth that had led him to crime and a shameful death...* ~ Lea[10]

Such a person was perfect for injection into the needless bloodbaths of warring between Elites of Europe as they lusted after property, wealth and possessions.

The broad overview of these conflicts has been labeled "The Hundred Years' War" roughly from 1337 to 1453 and mostly driven by the English Catholic Plantagenets against the French Catholic Valois.[vii]

> *De Rais became a warrior under the tutelage of two men: Guilliaume de La Jumelliere, an Angevin lord and military adviser, and Georges de La Tremoille, a politician so close to King Charles VII that he was considered to be the prime minister. With Joan of Arc in the Battle of Orleans, de Rais proved ... unstoppable...* ~ Morrison[11]

The conflict went poorly for the French Aristocrats until a young maiden appeared as if “sent by the Virgin Mary, herself.”

> *In 1428, a 16 year old girl named Jeanne d´Arc of Bar, led by an elder male relative, approached the garrison commander at Vaucouleurs, Robert de Baudricourt, and told him that she must be at the king’s side if France were to ever beat the English / Burgundian alliance. She was mocked and rebuffed, but she had the ear of an Aristocrat named Jean de Metz, who considered her disturbingly sincere. She received a second meeting with de Baudricourt and predicted a French victory at Rouvray, outside of Orléans.*
>
> *Not only were the French expected to lose Rouvray, but the battle had not but commenced as the teen made her claim.*
>
> *Several days later, the French had won at Rouvray and messengers brought the news.*
>
> *Astounded, de Baudricourt gave the teen escort to Chinon, where an uncrowned Charles VII held up.*
>
> *Jeanne was given a private audience with the would-be king and told him that 3 years previously, she had started to see visions of the Archangel Michael, Saint Margaret and Saint Catherine of Alexandria. They told her that she would lead France to victory and that she must see Charles VII crowned in Reims, over 800 miles north-east of Orléans, in the heart of Burgundian territory.*
>
> *With nothing to lose, Charles sent the teen along with the very next relief effort. She arrived in Orléans in 1429.*
>
> *Although Jeanne was not taken seriously by the command at Orléans, she was given armor and a special banner based upon her visions that depicted Christ and the Virgin; “* Jhesus Maria *”.*
>
> *She rode out at the head of a rare event; a French offensive into English territory. She received an arrow to the neck and shoulder where she was unprotected.*
>
> *After being treated, she immediately rode back into the fray. Upon seeing their “mascot”, the French forces fought as if inspired — as*

they were. They drove through the English and captured the fortress at ***bastille de Saint-Loup****.*

The date was April 29th, 1429. By the 8th of May, the siege of Orléans was broken.

Now French generals listened intently to what the young maiden had to say and the battle strategy was changed: drive north-east to Reims.

Although she claimed to have never killed anyone in combat, she is said to have had a keen sense of strategy —

> ***"I loved my banner forty times better than my sword. And when I went against my enemy, I carried my banner myself, lest I kill any. I have never killed a man."*** *~ Trask[84]*

~ *Secret History*, Cirucci[12]

Jeanne d´Arc might have perished when she was wounded outside les Tourelles had it not been for the Knight who stormed to her side to recover her; none other than Gilles de Rais.

After Orléans, the French pushed towards Paris. Along the way it was determined to relieve the British and Burgundian siege of Compiègne, some 54 miles north-east of the capitol.

Jeanne led a strike against an outpost at Margny but advanced warning was leaked to the enemy and reinforcements quickly outnumbered the French. She ordered a retreat back to Compiègne, taking up the rear of the force as its leader, responsible for all in front of her.

The bulk of the column safely entered the city gates but the garrison commander, Guillaume de Flavy, ordered the gates closed before the rear echelons could be recovered, thereby betraying them into the hands of their English pursuers.

At best, de Flavy was an incompetent coward, sacrificing the column's rear guard and the tactician who had handed the crown to Charles VII, out of fear that the open gates would allow the English into Compiègne.

At worst, de Flavy betrayed Jeanne d´Arc and the French people in order to maintain the control of the ruling Elite; an agenda which superseded the

outcome of the “Hundred Years’ War” which was manipulated by those same Elites but fought, bled and died for by commoners.

It is possible that, after Orléans, Jeanne d´Arc had outlived her usefulness to the Aristocracy. The fact that she was a woman, idolized (some say worshipped) by the peasantry, adept at both tactics and strategy, and dedicated to a cause above her own aggrandizement made her exceptionally dangerous.[viii]

Today, “Joan of Arc” is known as a “Saint” of the Catholic Church, an icon of martyrdom who fell at the hands of “Protestant” England.

Erased from history are the circumstances of her death.

English and French Catholics collaborated in her prosecution and when she astounded her Inquisitors with learned and erudite answers to their questions, she was turned over to the premier Catholic university of France (perhaps in the world, at that time), the Sorbonne.

Unable to find a capital offense in her conduct, her Inquisitor —

> *Bishop ... Pierre Cauchon ... floundered until latching upon a single issue; Jeanne’s short hair and male clothing. She had made these adjustments to facilitate the male activities of riding in battle and being in the company of men.*
>
> *Unfortunately for her, Catholic Canon allowed that such activities constituted “heresy”.* ~ *Secret History*, Cirucci[13]

Some interesting sources on this come from the far-Left, such as militant homosexual atheist Arthur Evans who was born in 1942 and, befitting his obsession with “witches”, died on September 11th, 2011.

Evans fixated on Jeanne d´Arc’s wearing of men’s clothing, cropping her hair and going about armed,[ix] spinning it as “transvestism” which, according to Jeanne, it was not.

> *When brought before the court, Joan refused to promise to wear women’s clothing, even though her refusal meant she couldn’t receive communion. What’s more, she insisted that her transvestism was a* ***religious*** *duty, saying: “For nothing in the world will I swear not to*

> *arm myself and put on a man's dress; I must obey the orders of Our Lord" (T. Douglas Murray, 87).*
>
> *To the judges, it was bad enough that Joan had been wearing men's clothing. But to say this was a religious duty was heresy! ...*
>
> *The sell-out French faction that had captured Joan called her **homasse**, which was a derogatory word in Old French meaning masculine woman (Lightbody, 60).*[14]

One can sympathize with the young woman considering the advantage of freeing herself from the cumbersome garments expected of her gender and the ability to defend herself with arms about her person. But this does raise the question of how much she exploited the claim that the idea was given her by a Divine vision.

Although Evans was an atheist, he spent his time in cities completely controlled by Rome; living in San Francisco and "wintering" in Seattle. The "successful" and "renowned" book cited above about "witchcraft" and the so-called "gay counter-culture" was published out of Boston; another devoutly Catholic city.

Each of those cities is dominated by a Jesuit university and each of those universities have names that deceptively imply the college is public; the University of San Francisco, the University of Seattle and Boston College, not to be confused with Boston University...or maybe it *is* meant to be confused.

Sadly, each of those cities shows the mark of being controlled by the Great Harlot of Babylon; Rome.

Boston was the location for multiple psychological operations to mask or increase Rome's fascist control. In 2013 was the infamous Boston Marathon "bombing"; a "false flag"[x] facilitated by traitors for Rome at the local, State and national level.

Fifteen years earlier, agents for Rome gave the people the "justice" they demanded as their children continued to be raped by Priests on a scale that is, without exaggeration, a war crime.

The focus was placed upon a single Priest (when the perpetrators are legion); Father John J. Geoghan.

Geoghan was defrocked in 1998 (an extreme rarity), then later prosecuted (another extreme rarity). At that point, it was finally safe for the Jesuit-trained Catholics, led by an unmarried Jew, at the Boston Globe, to be "journalists". The result was the now-famous "Spotlight" investigation.

Nearly fifteen years after that, it was safe to again propagandize the valiant efforts of the Globe's "Spotlight" team in a movie of the same name that was quickly awarded "Best Picture".

In 2014, Seattle "elected" far-Left Catholic Ed Murray as Mayor. It was well-known to all that Murray is an overt homosexual who had "married" his "partner" Michael Shiosaki just the year before in an Episcopal ceremony. What wasn't as public was that Murray is also a pedophile who adopts little boys to rape them[xi] with that same "partner"; crimes for which he was never prosecuted. Perhaps his time in a Jesuit seminary[15], [16] helped insulate him. In fact, he arrogantly claimed the lack of prosecution proved his innocence and, despite numerous complaints of abuse from his victims (including a relative), he refused to resign.

When the outrage became overwhelming, Murray finally stepped down in 2017. The far-Left Catholic homosexual Mayor of Seattle was then replaced with a far-left Catholic homosexual (this time a woman), Jennifer Anne "Jenny" Durkan.[xii]

But San Francisco may be the worst example; it is the base of operations for the "Bohemian Club" — a notorious secret society of extreme sexual deviants controlled by the Roman Catholic Knights of Hubertus. Their wooded retreat, "the Bohemian Grove", is well known as a location where the worst debauchery takes place, including the rape, torture and ritual slaughter of children.

At the Presidio in San Francisco, the small children of soldiers were raped and tortured by "Satanists" such as United States Army Lieutenant Colonel Michael Aquino.

As citizens became aware of the crimes that were being committed against their children, propaganda was created to quell the unrest. When it was

obvious that police, prosecutors and judges (many of them Roman Catholic) were failing to protect their children, it was told to them that law enforcement needed help. The pictures of missing children were placed upon milk cartons so that aware and alert parents might report them to the proper authorities. The “poster child” for this effort was 10 year-old Kevin Andrew Collins who was snatched off of “Masonic Street” while coming home from St. Agnes, a Jesuit-run school and church.[xiii]

Witch Is it: Pagan or Prophetess?

Jeanne d´Arc is a unique figure in history, prosecuted and burned alive by Rome only to be canonized centuries later.

Homosexual Leftists like Arthur Evans have been excited to appropriate Jeanne as an icon of their “values” which usually involves half-truths and spin.

This almost always involves taking the crimes of Rome and erroneously ascribing them to Christianity.[xiv]

> *Not only did Joan wear men’s clothing as a religious duty, but in the eyes of her judges she did something else just as bad — she acted masculine. Contrary to the Christian view of womanhood, she was bold, self-assertive, strong willed, and contemptuous of her captors.*
>
> *In article sixty-three of the original indictment, the judges condemn*[ed] *her for “allowing herself a tone of mockery and derision such as no woman in a state of holiness would allow” (T. Douglas Murray, 363). The judges were horrified that Joan had rejected the traditional woman’s role: “She disdains also to give herself up to feminine work, conducting herself in all things rather as a man than as a woman” (Murray, 348). The fact that Joan had led male troops in battle and had even given them orders seemed to her judges another sign of heresy: “In contempt of the orders of God and the Saints, Jeanne, in presumption and pride, hath gone so far as to take command over men...” (T. Douglas Murray, 359).*[17]

As a dedicated homosexual atheist, Evans fixated upon his agenda but did so with fair scholarship, asking the honest question usually avoided by “historians”; “Was Joan of Arc a lesbian?”

> *The judges were interested in Joan's relationship with other women. In the summer of 1424, Joan had left her parents against their will and went to live with another woman, La Rousse ("The Red"), who lived in Neufchateau. La Rousse, it turns out, was an innkeeper, which is interesting since inns in the Middle Ages were often brothels. In article eight, the judges accused Joan of hanging out with prostitutes: "Towards her twentieth year, Jeanne, of her own wish, and without permission of her father and mother, went to Neufchateau, in Lorraine, and was in service for some time at the house of a woman, an innkeeper named La Rousse, where lived women of evil life, and where soldiers were accustomed to lodge in great numbers. During her stay in the inn, Jeanne sometimes stayed with these evil women" (T. Douglas Murray, 344).*
>
> *The judges also questioned Joan about her relationship with another woman, Catherine de la Rochelle. Joan admitted to the judges that she had slept in the same bed with Catherine on two successive nights, but that her reason for doing so was religious. Joan claimed that Catherine told her she often had visions of "a lady" at night, and Joan said she wanted to see this lady too. Whatever her reason, Joan admitted to sleeping twice with Catherine (W. S. Scott, 97).*
>
> *The judges were interested in Joan's sex life, and had her examined by a panel of women to determine if she was a virgin. They reported that she was.*[18]

Evans was eager to turn "Christian" (Catholic) "Saint Joan" into butch Joan, divine queen of witchery. He did have some small research towards that end.

> *Joan's behavior at her trial was hardly that of a Christian saint. When she was asked to swear to tell the truth on the Gospels, she repeatedly refused. Usually, after much haggling back and forth at each session, she would give in (partially) by swearing on the missal (which is the liturgy). In addition, Joan adamantly refused to recite either the Lord's Prayer or the Creed, although she was asked to do so many times. Her judges thought this refusal was significant. ...*

The mystery of Joan deepens as we look at other aspects of her life. Before her capture, whenever she appeared in public she was worshipped like a deity by the peasants, a practice she never discouraged.

The peasants believed that she had the power to heal, and many would flock around her to touch part of her body or her clothing (which was men's clothing). Subsequently her armor was kept on display at the Church of St. Denis, where it was worshipped.[19]

A "Missal" is a booklet which guides Roman Catholics through their Mass and Joan preferred this to a Bible much as Lyndon Baines Johnson did, swearing in as President aboard Air Force One directly after the brutal killing of John F. Kennedy.[20]

Congressman Albert Thomas winks at President-elect Lyndon Johnson, his wife, Claudia Alta "Lady Bird" Johnson, smiles with satisfaction while Jacqueline Kennedy remains in shock, the horror of her husband's death visible in her expression, still.

Homosexual Leftist Arthur Evans sought to portray Jeanne d´Arc as having partaken in a cult of worship for the Roman goddess Diana (a connection surely not lost by modern Rome).

Diana was a huntress of the forest and a goddess of "reproduction" which meant that worship usually devolved into sexual deviancy practiced in wooded groves, sometimes including pedophilia, bestiality and the torture and/or sacrificial slaughter of the victims.

The modern obsession of entertainment with a desirable woman who can supposedly shoot a bow with a man's power and precision is an outpouring of this desire, however a "cult" implies more structure and organization than is warranted.

> *The area of Lorraine, where Joan grew up, was famous for the lingering paganism of its people. In the century before Joan's trial, the Synod of Treves had condemned the peasants of Lorraine for believing*

in "all kinds of magic, sorcery, witchcraft, auguries, superstitious writings… the illusions of women who boast that they ride at night with Diana or Herodias and a multitude of other women" (M. Murray, ***God of the Witches****, 177).*

The peasants who lived in Joan's own neighborhood retained memories of prophecies from the old Celtic religion that had existed there before the introduction of ["]*Christianity*["]*. One of these ancient prophecies concerned a wooded area called Bois Chesnu that was near Joan's house. The prophecy, which was well known and was attributed to Merlin the sorcerer, said that a maid would come forth from Bois Chesnu, perform many marvels, and unite the French people (W. S. Scott, 76, note).*

In certain parts of Europe where Celtic beliefs survived, the word "Maid" or "Maiden" was a religious title, signifying a type of divine being who had the power to cure people (Hope, 35). The old French word for this title was ***La Pucelle****, which was sometimes applied by French* ["]*Christians*["] *to the Virgin Mary.*[[xv]] *When Joan was asked by what title she called herself, her standard reply was "Joan the Maid, Daughter of God."*

Joan's judges believed that she had not been raised as a ["]*Christian*["]*, but as a pagan. "In her childhood, she was not instructed in the beliefs and principles of our Faith, but by certain old women she was initiated in the science of witchcraft, divination, superstitious doings, and magical acts. Many inhabitants of these villages have been known for all time as using these kinds of witchcraft" (T. Douglas Murray, 343).*

The judges spent a lot of time questioning Joan about her supposed relations with beings called "fairies" — a fact that has puzzled many modern commentators. Near Joan's home was a huge old beech tree (in Latin, fagus tree). Rumor had it that the fairies sometimes came and danced around this tree at night. By Joan's time, the tree was considered sacred to Our Lady of Domremy, but suspicion remained that it had once been a holy spot in the old pagan religion.

> *Near this tree was a spring where the peasants often went to be cured of diseases.*
>
> *Joan denied ever seeing fairies at the tree, but did admit to participating in celebrations around it as a child.*[21]

Although Evans was hailed as having been "brilliant" and "insightful" it was far from a unique perspective. "Joan of Arc" as an icon of the pagan far-Left was attempted seventy years prior by another militant atheist infatuated with witchcraft, Margaret Alice Murray (1863 – 1963[xvi]).

Murray was raised in an Elite British Aristocrat family, supposedly as "Christian" and Anglican but eschewed the Faith for atheism and feminism.

She spent extensive time excavating artifacts for her far-Left agenda on the island of Malta. She was invited there by Italian Roman Catholic Luigi Maria Ugolini, an archeologist who was directly funded by Fascist Party leader Benito Mussolini; a movement Ugolini was personally involved in. [xvii]

Mussolini was, himself, a Knight of the Sovereign Military Hospitaller Order of Saint John of Jerusalem, Rhodes and Malta and was personally decorated with the Grand Cross of Honour and Devotion of the Order by Grand Master Ludovico Chigi della Rovere Albani.

Murray seamlessly intermingled Catholicism with her premise and there is actually cause to do so,[xviii] though that was not her overt intent.

> *It was the coming of God in person which put heart into the French troops. The records show that in the eyes of the people she was divine. Article III of the Articles of Accusation states this in plain terms : "Item, the said Joan by her inventions has seduced the Catholic people, many in her presence adored her as a saint and adored her also in her absence, commanding in her honour masses and collects in the churches; even more, they declared her the greatest of all the saints after the holy Virgin; they set up images and representations of her in the shrines of the saints, and also carried on their persons her representation in lead or in other metal as they are wont to do for the memorials and representations of saints canonised by the Church; they*

> *say everywhere that she is the envoy (**nuntia**) of God and that she is more angel than woman." ...*
>
> *Thibauld de Termes, Bailly of Chartres, was of opinion that what she did was more divine than human. Her own opinion of herself is best expressed in her own words when, in the course of her trial, she boasted to her judges that her Voices spoke of her as "**Johanna Puella Filia Dei*** ["Jeanne, Daughter of God"]."[22]

Both "witch enthusiasts" seem to be oblivious of the concept of a Christian calling themselves a son or daughter of God out of reverence, not presumptiveness. In fact, the apostle Paul highlights this concept in his letter to the Christians in Galatia, telling them in Galatians 4 that those who were once condemned slaves have been made into sons (and daughters), heirs to the kingdom (Kingdom).

Evans does note that the Inquisition was unable to convict Jeanne of witchcraft but explains this as the Inquisitors lacking the capability at the time (and again, emphasizes her male dress as "transvestism"[xix]).

> *On April 2, 1431, all charges of witchcraft were dropped against Joan (see entry under "Joan of Arc" in Robbins). The court apparently felt that it could not prove (short of a confession forced by torture) actual practices of conjuring demons. Besides, the Inquisition had not yet been authorized to deal with witchcraft in and of itself. This would not happen until 1451 (Robbins, 272). The court had enough evidence to condemn her anyway, in view of her claim that her transvestism was a religious duty and her belief that her personal visions were more important than the institutional authority of the* [C]*hurch.*[23]

The details of her downfall are interesting. She was not condemned right away. After her trial, the Inquisition still didn't have enough to warrant death (not every Priest was comfortable playing loose with lives and Jeanne was a popular personality).

But neither did they have the integrity to allow the dangerous woman her freedom. She was imprisoned and she recanted her male dressing and behavior on 24 April, 1431.

Neither did this act win her her freedom.

Slightly over one month hence, she resumed wearing men’s clothing and was immediately condemned and burned alive.

Was she tricked or did she hit the iron resilience of someone with nothing left to lose?

The circumstances are as hard to fathom as Jeanne d´Arc’s motivations.

Be-Witched

The Inquisition may have found it difficult to convict Jeanne d´Arc of witchcraft. However, her companion-at-arms, Gilles de Rais would provide much more evidence than was necessary.

Some have suggested that de Rais and d´Arc were secret lovers but one account has Jeanne being “examined”, literally, by women for the Inquisition and being certified a virgin. Although she is suspected of lesbianism, it would appear not to have been wanton.

Gilles de Rais was also known to have been homosexual, perhaps this is what drew the two together.

His time at “war”[xx] was well-spent.

> *After victory with Joan of Arc at the Battle of Orleans, Gilles became a marshal of France, a hero. When he rode into town, he rode a horse bedecked with jewels and ornaments at the head of a royal parade of two hundred soldiers he employed. Children, the most beautiful preteens with angelic voices from his own music school, sang his praises as they too rode on horseback. When he wasn’t strutting around, he wrote plays in which he was the star center stage, backed by lavish theatrical backgrounds, and he offered gifts and feasts to those who came to take it all in.* ~ Morrison[24]

If de Rais was maladjusted from his life-circumstances, warfare only coaxed out his inner-monster.

> *The history of witchcraft and Satanism know no name greater or more fearful than that of Gilles de Rais, Marshal of France, and confidant of Joan of Arc, hero of the Hundred Years’ War, black magician, and killer of infants.*
>
> *Gilles was considered a valiant hero for much of his life; indeed, it was his honor to be bestowed with the title “Marshal of France” under the lordship of King Charles VII. Gilles was known to be a valiant, impeccable soldier, a ruthless strategist, a loyal confidant, and a sadist on the battlefield.*
>
> *He was a sadist off of it, as well.* ~ Schroeder[25]

Herbert George “H.G.” Wells (1866 – 1946) was a Socialist, a Darwinian and an adulterous womanizer which were all keys to his success. But, late in his life, he wrote an exposé on the Catholic Church that has received little focus from “historians” and biographers.

It was published after his death and he dedicated an entire chapter to Gilles “Bluebeard” de Rais, first painting the background for how de Rais became what he was.

> *Let us now sketch the face and quality of human life in Europe at that time, in the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries. ...*

> *The printed book had still to dawn upon the world, and whatever record was made of the show of things was kept by monkish chroniclers employed by the Princes and Potentates of the time. These keepers of the records sat and toiled to make their manuscripts as bright and pleasing to their employers as possible. So that our vision of that time is magically illuminated by their art.*
>
> *A reeking slum of human indignity is lit up by the flattering brightness of the subservient chronicler and the blazons of heraldry, and it is only when we subject them to a closer scrutiny that we are able to grasp the squalid facts of human life during that period. ...*
>
> *The normal span of life was brief and men were flimsier. We find the armour of our ancestors too small and tight for even puny men to-day. But then, one may ask, was it worn by real grown-up men? These people were often married at thirteen, they were warriors and leaders in their later teens; they became cruel old satyrs at six-and-thirty. In fact they never grew up either physically or mentally. They lived in a world of witless lordship and puerile melodrama.*
>
> *From this disillusioning digression upon the brilliance in the fifteenth century, we can turn to one exceptionally "brilliant" young man, Gilles de Rais, a type of his time, of whose life we have by various accidents an exceptionally full record. He was married to a rich heiress at sixteen after two earlier attempts to make a match for him (the earliest at thirteen) had fallen through. He was a boy not only of exceptional energy but of exceptional gifts. He patronised music. He illuminated and bound books. And from the outset he was what people call "unbalanced."*[26]

Wells precisely zeroed in on the most shocking part of de Rais; he lived a life of duality in which extreme Roman Catholic piety was the counter he believed enabled him to commit the worst atrocities thinkable.

This wasn't an isolated mania or misunderstanding, it was promulgated and promoted by his Church.

> *Some people may be disposed to account for his peculiar aberrations by saying he just "went mad." But madness is as pitiless and*

consistent a process as anything else that can happen, the sequence of ideas in those we call insane is as inevitable, you can find their origins and their associations, and nowadays when we are all out of harmony with our conditions of survival, to say merely that he "went mad" does not even put him outside the pale of normal experience. Exceptionally wealthy at the outset, his mental liveliness made him a spendthrift. Like many youngsters born rich, he could not imagine being hard up until he was. He liked to give extravagant entertainments, mysteries and moralities. From first to last he was a good Catholic, conscientiously and unfeignedly religious.

But for that he might never have been hung. He dabbled in alchemy and the black arts — there was no Monte Carlo for him in those days and no turf[[xxi]] *— and he tried to make up for his magic by extravagant charity and special masses.*

All this is the behaviour of an uncontrolled upperform schoolboy with a belief in his luck, an uncritical piety of the "Onward Christian Soldiers" type, and an unanalysed disposition to torment fags.

It must be cited to place him definitely in relation to our own minds, but not in any way as a condonation of what he did. He was cruel; by all our standards he was hideously cruel; he delighted in the tormenting of children; and the points best worth discussing about him here are, ***first****, whether he was an exceptional sinner, or whether his crimes were the outcome of a mental disposition that has always been operative since that wretched congestion of mankind which is called civilisation began; and* ***secondly****, and more important for our present purpose, how far the religious beliefs and practices of Catholic Christendom in the fifteenth century really condemned his abominations.*[27]

Had de Rais not run afoul of Catholic Aristocracy and then "violated the sanctity of a Church", he might have continued on longer than the many years of his outrages.

Even in the 19th century, "Bluebeard" the pedophile was a "*cause celébre*" amongst the Elite (and, therefore, was pushed in popular culture and "entertainment", usually without full expression of the facts).

But the Quaker historian Henry Lea did nail the Jekyll and Hyde duality Catholicism provided de Rais.

> *Perhaps the most remarkable trial for sorcery on record is that of the Marechal de Rais, in 1440, which has long ranked as a* ***cause celébre****, although it is only of late that the publication of the records has enabled it to be properly understood. The popular belief at the time is indicated by Monstrelet, who tells us that the marshal was accustomed to put to death pregnant women and children in order with their blood to write the conjurations which secured him wealth and honors; Jean Chartier alludes to his putting children to death and performing strange things contrary to the faith to attain his ends, and in the next century Gaguin speaks of his slaying children in order with their blood to divine the future.†*
>
> *Curious as is the case in many aspects, perhaps its chief interest lies in the psychological study which it affords as an illustration of the extreme development of the current ecclesiastical teaching with regard to the remission of sins.*[28]

In the works-based religion of Christianized paganism that has spawned in Rome, the ultimate expression is to drop to the most heinous depths of depravity — usually the rape, abuse, torture and ritual slaughter of the innocent (animals, children, whatever living thing is vulnerable; whose pain is sought by evil) and believing that it can be assuaged with a set formula of "penance".

The myriad of Catholic clergy who have abused the children in their care believe it, as do the Catholic pedophile laity from Penn State's Jerry Sandusky (protected by Opus Dei member, head coach Joe Paterno) through to accused pedophile,[xxii] the late Supreme Court Justice Antonin Scalia — also believed to have been Opus Dei.

I prefer to call the Catholic concept that the most heinous act can be "penanced away", the "Opus Dei effect".

Scalia was also a Knight of Hubertus and his sudden death was on the ranch of another Knight, Houston, Texas businessman John B. Poindexter. "Ranches" are maintained for seclusion in the committing of atrocious acts,

just as the “Bohemian Grove” is — also controlled by the Knights of Hubertus.

Lea adds some well-researched detail to what we already know of de Rais’ background.

> *In the France of the fifteenth century there was no career more promising than that of Gilles de Rais.*
>
> *Born in 1404 of the noble stock of Montmorency and Craon, grandson of the renowned knight, Brumor de Laval, grandnephew of du Guesclin, of kindred with the Constable Clisson, and allied with all that was illustrious in the west of France, his barony of Rais rendered him the head of the baronage of Britanny.*
>
> *His territorial possessions were ample, and when, while still a youth, he married the great heiress, Catharine de Thouars, he might count himself among the wealthiest nobles of France.*
>
> *His bride is said to have brought him one hundred thousand livres in gold and movables, and his revenue was reckoned at fifty thousand.*
>
> *At the age of sixteen he won the esteem of his suzerain, Jean V., Duke of Britanny, by his courage and skill in the campaign which ended the ancient rivalry between the houses of de Montfort and de Penthievre.*
>
> *At twenty-two, following the duke’s brother, the Constable Artus de Richemont, he entered the desperate service of Charles VII., with a troop maintained at his own expense, and he distinguished himself in the seemingly hopeless resistance to the English arms.*
>
> *When Joan of Arc appeared he was charged with the special duty of watching over her personal safety, and, from the relief of Orleans to the repulse at the gates of Paris, he was ever at her side.*
>
> *In the coronation ceremonies at Reims he received, though but twenty-five years old, the high dignity of Marshal of France, and in the September following he was honored with permission to add to his arms a border of the royal fleurs-de-lis.*[[xxiii]]
>
> *There was no dignity beneath the crown to which his ambition might not aspire, for he maintained himself so skillfully between the opposing*

*factions of the constable and of the royal favorite, La Tremouille, that when the latter fell, in 1433, his credit at the court was unimpaired.**[29]

In support of his “Opus Dei” penance for raping, mutilating and torturing children, de Rais maintained his own extravagant chapel.

He founded a chapter of canons, with service and choir fit for a cathedral, and this was his private chapel, likewise attached to his person, costing him immense sums, including portable organs carried on the shoulders of six stout serving-men.[30]

Powerful and wealthy Catholics continue this practice, from Hollywood actor Mel Gibson to Canadian billionaire and media mogul Conrad Black who is a Knight of St. Gregory as well as a Knight of the Holy See.

Had Gilles de Rais not been a hyper-devout Catholic, one would assume the name of his personal chapel was done in mockery.

The name didn’t just extend to his private Cathedral, it was an entire foundation that included a small college.

...something must be said of a very remarkable deed which Jean Caseau and Jean de Recouin, sworn notaries of the Chastellets of Orleans, prepared for him during his stay in the city — that is, soon after his return from the Bourbonnais.

The minute of this deed found by M. Doinel among Jean de Recouin’s papers begins as follows: “Saturday, the twenty-sixth day of March, 1434 (1435, n.s.). Whereas, the noble and powerful Lord, Monseigneur Gilles, Lord of Rais, Count of Brienne, Lord of Champtoce and Pouzauges, Marshal of France, did, not long since, for the welfare and salvation of his soul, and in order that his deceased father, mother, relations, friends and benefactors might be held in the memory of Our Lord Jesus Christ, make a Foundation ***in memory of the Holy Innocents*** *at the spot called Machecoul in Rais, which is in the Duchy of Brittany; and whereas, in this said Foundation, he did make and ordain a curate, dean, archdeacon, treasurer, canons, chapter and college, and did order and provide revenues and possessions for their live lihood and necessaries...* ~ Vizetelly[31] [emphasis mine]

Marshal de Rais did even more for the commoners in the shadow of his castles; he provided them with plays and banquets — all in his honor, of course, and usual mythologizing his exploits in battle.

> *The drama of the age, though rude, was costly, and when he exhibited freely to the multitude spectacular performances, there were immense structures to be built and hundreds of actors to be clad in cloths of gold and silver, silks and velvets, and handsome armor, the whole followed by public banquets to the spectators, in which rich viands were served in profusion and rare wines and hippocras flowed like water. These were only items in his expenditure; his purse and table were open to all and his artistic tastes were gratified without regard to cost.*
>
> *In one visit to Orleans, where his retinue filled every inn in the city, he was said to have squandered eighty thousand gold crowns between March and August, 1435. This ruinous prodigality was accompanied with the utmost disorder in his affairs. It was beneath the dignity of a great seigneur to attend to business, and all details were abandoned to the crowd of pimps and parasites and flatterers attracted by his lavish recklessness, among whom the principal were Roger de Briqueville and Gilles de Sillé.* ~ Lea[32]

The Marshal was often attended by his personal Priests and, sometimes, they assisted him in “worship” of the Satanic kind; Gilles de Sillé was one. [xxiv]

Although this extravagance destroyed his family’s wealth, it created a perverse sycophancy amongst the peasantry. As long as the children who disappeared were of no consequence (cunningly, they usually were), de Rais remained popular with them even after his trial.

It calls to mind the intensely Catholic fantasy movie *Van Helsing* (2004), starring Hugh Jackman, who is the Vatican’s “monster slayer” in the late 1800’s. Van Helsing’s ultimate mission is to kill Count Dracula and his vampires in Transylvania but after he slays one, the local townspeople are enraged because the status quo of death verses chaos was what they preferred.

> **Count Vladislaus Dracula (Richard Roxburgh):** *"Why can't they just leave us alone? We never kill more than our fill. And less than our share. Can they say the same?"*

Some claim that this proves de Rais was framed for his wealth, but it is unlikely that the accusations levied against him were fabricated out of whole cloth.

> *Already, in 1435 or 1436, his family became alarmed at his mad career; they appealed to Charles VII., who issued letters, in accordance with a legal custom of the time, interdicting him from alienating lands and revenues, and all persons from contracting with him. This was published with sound of trump in Orleans, Angers, Blois, Machecoul, and elsewhere outside of Britanny.*
>
> *Within the duchy, Jean V. prohibited its publication.* ~ Lea[33]

After an upbringing devoid of love and limits, the enabling of vast wealth, the desensitizing carnage of war and the Catholic insuring that any heinous act need not be repented of, merely "penanced", the dwindling of the family fortune seemed to push Gilles de Rais into becoming a monster.

He had a vast library that included books on the occult and graphic depictions of the excesses of Roman Emperors like Caligula. In fact, he later told his prosecutors he had purposefully patterned himself after that very same Caesar Augustus Germanicus.

> *Unfortunately, Gilles's extravagant lifestyle soon exhausted his fortune, and he turned to magic in hopes of producing gold from base metals. When that failed, a ...Priest named Francisco Prelati convinced Gilles to try human sacrifice. His preferred victims were orphan children, whom Gilles killed and mutilated in gruesome rituals. Before his arrest in 1440, remains of 100 young victims were found at two of Gilles's five castles.* ~ Newton and French[34]

Often we see sources like Newton and French claiming Prelati was an "ex" Priest or even a "defrocked" Priest but it is always mentioned in passing without citation or reference and may very well be a coverup.

Both Prelati and de Sillé escaped prosecution despite their being instrumental in the most heinous crimes imaginable. In fact, Gilles de Rais proceeded on the instructions of Francis Prelati after Gilles de Sillé had procured the victims for him. It is almost certain that one or both Priests actually led the crimes as a Satanic ritual.

Exactly how serious de Rais and the Priests surrounding him like de Sillé and Prelati were about changing base metals into gold when there were no real examples of alchemic success remains to be discerned.

> *...as already stated, although alchemy assumed to be a science, in practice it was almost universally coupled with necromancy, and few alchemists pretended to be able to achieve results without the assistance of demons, whose invocation became a necessary department of their art. So it was with those employed by Gilles de Rais, and no more instructive chapter in the history of the frauds of magic can be found than in his confession and that of his chief magician, Francesco Prelati. The latter had a familiar demon named Barron, whom he never had any difficulty in evoking when alone, but who would never show himself when Gilles was present, and in the naive accounts which the pair give of their attempts and failures, one cannot help admiring the quick-witted ingenuity of the Italian and the facile credulity of* [de Rais]. ...
>
> *The demon was offended with Gilles for not keeping a promise to make some offering to him; if a small request were made it should be a trifle, such as a pullet or a dove; if something greater it must be the member of a child.*
>
> *Children's bodies were not scarce where Gilles resided, and he speedily placed in a glass vessel a child's hand, heart, eyes, and blood, and gave them to Prelati to offer. Still the demon was obdurate... ~* Lea[35]

Again, had de Rais not run afoul of the Catholic Church and other Aristocrats (which I'll explain shortly), he might never have been forced to stop.

> *It was impossible that a career such as this could continue for eight years without exciting suspicion. Though for the most part Gilles selected his victims from among the beggars who crowded his castle gates, attracted by his ostentatious charities — children for whom there was no one to make inquiry — yet he had his agents out through the land enticing from parents the offspring whom they would see no more.* ~ Lea[36]

Alchemy may have been an obvious farce regardless of help from demons, however, examples abounded of those who devolved into Catholic Satanism to be empowered by it. The most blatant of which was British entertainer James "Jimmy" Savile; a devout Roman Catholic who went to daily Mass and prayed to Satan in Latin while he raped small children. He was invited by both British and Catholic authorities to spend days and nights at orphanages and hospitals raping children. Both London and Rome adamantly refuse to revoke either of his "Knighthoods" despite the horrors of his activities (finally allowed to surface after his death).[xxv]

Famed conspiracist Nesta Helen Webster (1876 – 1960) adds the interesting detail that it was de Rais' extravagance in his Catholicism that was the deepest debt against his fortune. His spending may have been in proportion to his guilt and that is exactly what Rome encourages.

> *Gilles de Rais was born at Machecoul in Brittany about the year 1404. The first period of his life was glorious; the companion and guide of Jeanne d'Arc, he became Maréchal of France and distinguished himself by many deeds of valour. But after dissipating his immense fortune, largely on Church ceremonies carried out with the wildest extravagance, he was led to study alchemy, partly by curiosity and partly as a means for restoring his shattered fortunes. Hearing that Germany and Italy were the countries where alchemy flourished, he enlisted Italians in his service and was gradually drawn into the further region of magic. ...*
>
> *Evokers of Satan now flocked to him from every side, amongst them Prelati, an Italian, by no means the old and wrinkled sorcerer of tradition, but a young and attractive man of charming manners.* ***For it was from Italy that came the most skilful adepts in the art of***

> ***alchemy, astrology, magic, and infernal evocation, who spread themselves over Europe, particularly France.*** *Under the influence of these initiators Gilles de Rais signed a letter to the devil in a meadow near Machecoul asking him for "knowledge, power, and riches," and offering in exchange anything that might be asked of him with the exception of his life or his soul. But in spite of this appeal and of a pact signed with the blood of the writer, no Satanic apparitions were forthcoming.*
>
> *It was then that, becoming still more desperate, Gilles de Rais had recourse to the abominations for which his name has remained infamous-still more frightful invocations, loathsome debaucheries, perverted vice in every form, Sadic cruelties, horrible sacrifices, and, finally, holocausts of little boys and girls collected by his agents in the surrounding country and put to death with the most inhuman tortures.* ~ Webster[37] [emphasis added]

The equation was a simple one: Gilles de Rais was an unbalanced sociopath. He squandered his vast wealth on donations to the Catholic Church. The loss of his wealth pushed his imbalance into atrocity.

Was there design to it all?

It is easy to shrug the question off as random circumstance but consider the centuries of debauchery, torture and murder that have occurred at the hands of clergy who are commanded to bottle their lusts in vows of "celibacy".

The *Maréchal of France* did not act alone but he was tried with only two servants who were deemed expendable.

> *The first child was abducted in 1432 by Gilles de Sille, a cousin of Gilles de Rais.*[[xxvi]] *The kidnappings continued, uninterrupted, for nearly a decade. The victims were taken to the de Rais castle where they were brutally and ritualistically slaughtered by Gilles and his accomplices. As the years went by, the list of those accomplices grew, numbering both men and women. Among his more notorious accomplices were Roger de Briqueville, another cousin, and a woman named Perrine Martin, who was also known as "La Meffraye," or "The Terror." Another known accomplice was a man named Etienne*

> *Corrillaut, who was also known as Poitou. He was, apparently, initially brought to the castle as a victim, but he was spared for unknown reasons.* ~ McGowan[38]

Actually the boy de Rais spared was used as the young women were used; to put children at ease for capturing. This tactic is still used today.

> *The rest of the abductees were not so lucky. At the hands of de Rais and his numerous accomplices, they were subjected to torture, rape and sadistic mutilation.*
>
> *Gilles took great pleasure in watching his victims die, frequently raping them or masturbating on them as they were in their death throes. Gilles was also deeply involved in occultism, necromancy and alchemy. Many of the child victims' dismembered and disemboweled body parts were reportedly used in rituals that were aimed at "summoning demons." Some reports hold that the blood of some of the victims was used to write a book of spells and incantations.* ~ McGowan[39]

As already stated, de Rais preyed upon the poor and orphans to raise the least amount of ire on behalf of his victims.

Serial killer analyst Helen Morrison asserts that there were no stimuli like drugs or alcohol needed; the crimes were carefully premeditated and all involved were in full control of their faculties.

> *By 1432, de Rais was killing in earnest. De Rais sent his servants to town to search out the prettiest children, mostly boys (although a few girls were gathered up as well). His lackeys lied to parents, sometimes saying the great, heroic baron was going to send their sons or daughters away for a proper education or that they were being sent out of the country to escape the ever-threatening English. To the starving, they would simply offer a loaf of bread. If parents weren't around, the accomplices simply snatched up the children as they played in the street, put them on the backs of their horses, cleaned them up, and brought them to de Rais's castle.*
>
> *De Rais reveled in children's panic as they were brought to him, led down the long, clammy halls. Invariably he was drinking, but I don't*

> *believe it made him kill. Alcohol might have decreased the ability he had to keep himself together, but it didn't cause his crimes. When a person is really drunk, he can't do much of anything, so my guess was that de Rais wasn't completely out of it. What happens with many normal people is that they lose inhibition when under the influence, but this doesn't occur with the serial murderer, and it can't be seen as a trigger.*[40]

The details are deeply disturbing and Morrison only touches upon them.

> *Alcohol or not, imagine the child's fear as he was escorted into a room where de Rais stood. Beside him were mechanical implements used to raise the child by the neck and hang him with cords so that his terrified cries would be muffled. Just before the child passed out from choking, he would be lowered and freed. De Rais would hug him and dote on him, comforting the boy by saying he was merely playing a joke. As the child calmed down, de Rais would raise a* ***braquemard****, a large horseman's sword with a wide flat blade, pointed and sharp at both edges. Carefully lowering the sword, he cut a vein on the neck of the child. At that point, he began to masturbate as the blood spurted wildly with every waning heartbeat. De Rais enjoyed slicing open the belly of a child and masturbating until he climaxed into it. His valet, Poitou, a boy he had raped but kept alive for what de Rais saw as his unparalleled physical beauty, said the killing involved "sometimes beheading or decapitating them, sometimes cutting their throats, sometimes dismembering them, and sometimes breaking their necks with a cudgel."*[41]

There is a source that is more graphic — a periodical that specifically focuses on the intersection of sex, death, religion and "entertainment" called "HEADPRESS" founded in Manchester, England in 1991.

The description is short of being strictly prurient but please proceed with caution.

The "scholarly" article focuses on necrophilia and fetishes for severed human parts which de Rais was said to have.

Not surprisingly, it is expressly anti-Christian, sometimes honestly depicting Catholicism as pagan but others calling it “Christian”.

> *Not just archaic superstition, but to this day parts of dead people are granted with strange mystical faculties. Church officials sincerely believe that the dried hand of a Saint has miraculous curing abilities. Likewise, witches believe the severed hand of a dead man used in a certain manner can bring about magical effect. The penis of Tutankhamun was one of the less-mentioned treasures to be stolen from his tomb, perhaps ground into an aphrodisiac snuff powder, or sleeved in a glass cylinder for use as a ritual dildo. Catholics regularly perform rites of symbolic necrophagy by consuming the “flesh and blood” of a dead man. Practising Satanists perform similar cannibalistic ceremonies. Many Christian churches embody some human relic, whether it be phials of holy blood, the mummified remains of a Saint or, as purportedly secreted in one location, the shrivelled foreskin of Jesus.*[42]

There are ***no*** “Christian churches” that elevate mummified human body parts; only Catholic ones.

> *The shaved hair and cremation ash of executed serial killer Ted Bundy is reputed to have fetched a high price on the occult black market. The severed head, however, has particular arcane attraction. The desiccated head of Oliver Cromwell was placed on a spike at Westminster Hall before it was stolen in 1688. Similarly the head of the Marquis de Sade was stolen from Dr. Londe, a French phrenologist, around the middle of the 19th Century and is now believed to be located somewhere in England. Both were probably snatched for use in some occult ritual, or to be sold for that purpose to the highest bidder.*[43]

Though technically accurate the selection of examples betray the “scholar’s” bias: Oliver Cromwell is the Puritan hero of the English war to abolish feudal tyranny and he is the polar opposite of the French Catholic Aristocrat who embodied unbridled depravity, the Marquis de Sade.

> *But the severed head isn’t necessarily a device of the black magician, for as many mummified heads adorn sanctified churches as skulls decorate wicked sorcerers’ altars.*

> *The head-hunting complex is an ante-diluvian custom enacted from the invention of the first stone cutting-tools, though not a distant practice reserved for the primitive jungle-dwelling tribes. Civilised evidence of it was found in Tejutepeque, El Salvador in 1984. Following an attack by rebels on government troops a medical team was sent in to retrieve the dead. One soldier was discovered with the entire skin of his head removed; the naked skull, complete with eyes, still attached to the shoulders. The face was not found at the scene.*[[xxvii]] *The more recent ethnic wars in the former Yugoslavia have brought head-hunting into the cities of the 90s.*[44]

What the author is either ignorant of or unwilling to delve into is the motivations behind the monstrous behavior in the Balkans; religion.

For instance, Bosnian Croat Miroslav Filipović (1915 – 1946) was a Commander in the Ustaše who used chilling methods of torture to convert ethnic Serbs to Catholicism.

He was also a Franciscan friar, nicknamed “Brother Satan” because of his shockingly evil tactics (more on this in a future volume).

> *The Templars worshipped a detached head, claimed by some members of the Order to be that of the original Grand Master. Whether the head was real or a manufactured image is not known.*
>
> *One account of its appearance describes it as being bearded and having two faces which, in essence, indicates some specially designed*

sculpture.

On the other hand, the head may have been real, gross malformation being the reason for its deification in the first place. Teratology provides many instances of facial bifurcation and such a deformity could explain why one witness described it as "the face of a devil". All Templar lodges are said to have contained a genuine preserved head that was venerated by the retinue. Where these heads came from is not known. They may have belonged to previous members of significance, been stolen from graves, or severed from sacrificial victims.[45]

The reason for the obsession with severed heads is that the Templars were Johannites who called Jesus of Nazareth an imposter and John the Baptist the true Messiah.

WARNING: GRAPHIC

The head and its contents have great occult significance; not only forming part of primitive superstition, but in contemporary myth and behaviour. The brain is often consumed as a means of ingesting the soul or ***fso*** *of the deceased. In a troubled Africa of the 60s, Mau Mau hierarchy ritual necessitated the devouring of a white man's brain along with his pulverised wrist bones mixed with blood and excrement squeezed from his eviscerated bowels. Haitian voodoo witchdoctors obtain grease from the prised-out brains of disinterred corpses, which is applied to tools and weapons to imbue them with "intelligence".*

Mummified heads and decorated skulls are used as communication vessels by necromancers and sorcerers for foretelling the future. The fully preserved severed head is not only used as an oracle but often utilised as a sexual device by the person responsible for the victim's death. Gratification can be achieved by penetration of any accessible orifice like an open mouth, empty eye socket or exposed trachea. But most commonly mere handling or ogling the head during manual stimulation will suffice. This act is a form of worship whereby the user is in effect sanctifying the relic, his semen having the same significance as Holy Water. Gilles de Rais, murderer, necrophile and sorcerer, is one of the earliest recorded examples of this type of head fetishist.

> *Rais, at his peak, was likely the wealthiest nobleman in Europe. In 1420, his fortune increased further when he married the opulent Catherine de Thouars. Protected by a 200-man army of bodyguard knights, he owned several estates and castles, and the maintenance of such spectacular extravagance began to erode his wealth. To counteract the ebb of his finances he began to sell off land and property. But this came to an abrupt end when his heirs, seeing what would be rightfully theirs dissipating, obtained an order from King Charles VII of France in 1436 preventing any further sales.*
>
> *No longer able to sell property, Rais needed another method of stabilising his rapidly vanishing fortune. In his possession was a vast library of rare manuscripts, several relating to occult practices, and from these he learned of magical techniques for transmuting base metals into gold. Contemplating alchemy as a possible means of restoring his capital, Rais engaged the help and expertise of a Priest named Gilles de Sille. However, despite his claims and self- professed abilities, the experiments conducted by Sille yielded only failure. But Rais persevered and squandered more of his wealth by employing an array of charlatans and bogus magi. Finally, he employed ... Father Francesco Prelati of Florence,*[[xxviii]] *who, along with other twisted necromancers suggested to Rais that the way to success lay in sorcery.* [46]

Again we read of Prelati's hypnotic influence over de Rais, seemingly despite any danger or consequence, even of logic.

> *A subterranean dungeon was prepared with signs, symbols and other occult paraphernalia in the bowels of castle Tiffauges from where Prelati and Rais attempted to evoke demons. Again they achieved nothing and Rais, instead of dismissing Prelati as a cheat and impostor, allowed the sorcerer's tongue to persuade him success lay ahead. Prelati let it be known that the magical ingredients required for successful invocation were the blood, bones and various internal organs of children: sacraments no demon could resist.*
>
> *The task of procuring the remains of children was a mandate very suited to Rais. His wealth had on many occasion purchased the use of*

a boy or girl to satisfy his erroneous carnal preferences. But copulation with a child wasn't Rais' only vice. For several years he had indulged in paedophilia culminating in murder. He would state at his trial, "I do not know why but I, myself, out of my own head without the advice of anyone, conceived the idea, of acting thus, solely for the pleasure and delectation of lust; in fact I found incomparable pleasure in it, doubtless at the instigation of the devil." But Rais also claimed that the idea came from an inherited book discovered in the library of a deceased relative; "I found a Latin book on the lives and customs of the Roman Caesars by the learned historian called Suetonius; the said book was ornamented by pictures, very well painted, in which were seen the manners of these pagan emperors, and I read in this fine history how Tiberius, Caracalla, and other Caesars sported with children and took singular pleasure in martyring them. Upon which 1 desired to imitate the said Caesars and the same evening I began to do so following the pictures in the book." ...[[xxix]]

Prelati's advice now justified Rais' hitherto clandestine practice. If they were going to get children for sacrificial purposes, then Rais may as well obtain other uses from them beforehand.

WARNING: GRAPHIC

Children were lured to the castle or simply kidnapped and dragged back to the towers by Rais' confidants and dedicated aids Henriet Griart and Etienne Corillaut. There, one at a time, the youngsters would be taken to Rais' room. Perhaps also present, observing from a corner, Prelati. Rais would talk to them calmly, assuring them. Only when he began to remove his clothes would they become uneasy. Pleas and cries only stimulated Rais all the more and, naked, he would advance on the urchin.[[xxx]] *Their attention drawn to his pendulous organ, he would throw a noose around their necks and strangle them or suspend them from a peg fixed in the wall. This was done to render the child unconscious after which the ligature would be removed. When the child came round he or she, too, would be disrobed; beneath them the bed; above, petting and kissing, the naked Rais. Then, as Corillaut stated to the courts, Rais would "take his rod in his left or*

right hand, rub it so it became erect and sticking out, then place it between the thighs or legs of the said boys and girls...” Before long Rais would reapply the noose, turn over and sodomize the child regardless of gender, pulling them down on his shaft with the rope. During the act he would sometimes refrain from strangulation and cut into the child’s throat. As the shocked victim slowly bled to death fear was transformed into muscular spasms, no more tangible than in the immature sphincter penetrated by Rais. Other times he would have an aide cut the head away totally, sawing rapidly at the neck while Rais performed at the other end of the struggling body allowing tiny feet to pummel on his chest. For further variety he would cut a small hole through the stomach wall and insert his penis into the coils of intestines, or completely disembowel the child and wallow in the viscera. Another method involved him sitting on the stomach of the boy or girl and masturbating while his weight prevented the child drawing breath and eventually suffocated them; Rais likely striving to synchronise his orgasm — his “little death” — with their expiration. Alternatively, he would beat his victim to death with a hefty wooden cudgel after which he would use the battered corpse for sexual gratification.

When the deeds were done, and Rais’ proclivity purged, the carcasses would be thrown into the cellar of a disused tower. Any parts required for magical purposes would be removed before disposal of the corpse. Montague Summers, in ***Witchcraft and Black Magic****, writes of the procedure following the killing of a 14-year-old boy by Rais: When he had been outraged in the most horrible manner, Prelati wrapped the body in a linen sheet and under cover of darkness buried it in the cemeteiy of St. Vincent [but before burial] the blood was collected in phials and with it on virgin parchment... they wrote out a grimoire and the liturgy of Satan.*

It was claimed at trial that Rais had used the hands, heart, eyes and blood of victims in the process of summoning demons. Such parts, particularly extracted from children or babies, have especial occult significance. The bones of the deceased were ground into powders by Prelati. In particular the finger bones and kneecaps were favoured, but

> *for no other reason than being small and easy to work with. These powders were believed to have great ritualistic power.*
>
> *But not all the sought-after parts were used in magical rites. Rais was keeping back remnants of his victims for his own personal use, perhaps as sexual fetishes or simply morbid memorabilia. As Rais had fought in battle alongside Joan of Arc and was a revered soldier, it is unlikely these heads were saved for the same reason a warrior would keep the skull of a defeated opponent. Helpless children hardly represent a challenging enemy or worthy foe. Because Rais had performed sexual acts with the children prior to their slaughter he probably felt some affinity with the remains. Etienne Corillaut claimed to have seen the severed heads of approximately 40 children and he stated that Rais would often remark on their beauty. Rais himself admitted of the dismembered bodies, "they were burned in my room except for a few handsome heads I kept as relics."*[47], [xxxi]

The same Aristocratic greed that fueled the "Hundred Years' War" was what eventually gave de Rais away.

"Strapped for cash", the Baron would sell a property or castle and in anger, his own family would assemble an army and re-take it by force.

Sometimes de Rais would likewise raise an army and re-take what he sold (often with the help of the lord he sold the property to).

But this exposed his former holdings to scrutiny and it wasn't long before some grizzly discoveries were made forcing de Rais to change his predatory procedures.

> *As a last resort, Gilles's younger brother, René de la Suze, and his cousin, the Admiral de Loheac, captured and garrisoned the castles of Champtoce and Machecoul, but in 1437 and 1438 Gilles retook them, with the aid of the duke, to whom he had sold the former. ...*
>
> *Such was the external life of Gilles de Rais, to all appearance that of a liberal, pious noble, whose worst foible was thoughtless extravagance. Beneath the surface, however, lay an existence of crime more repulsive than anything chronicled by Tacitus or Suetonius. There are some subjects so foul that one shrinks from the barest allusion to them, and*

of such are the deeds of Gilles de Rais. For the sake of human nature one might hope that the charges which brought him to the gallows and stake were invented by those who plotted his ruin, but an attentive examination of the evidence brings conviction that amid manifest exaggeration there was substantial foundation of fact. Ordinary indulgence having palled upon the senses of the youthful voluptuary, about the year 1432 he abandoned himself to unnatural lusts, selecting as his victims children, whom he promptly slew to secure their silence. At first their bodies were thrown into oubliettes at the bottom of towers in his ordinary places of residence. When Champtocé was about to be surrendered to the duke, the bones of about forty children were hastily gathered together and carried off; when Rene de la Suze was advancing on Machecoul, the same number were extracted from their hiding-place and buried.

Scared by this narrow escape from detection, Gilles subsequently had the bodies burned at once in the fireplace of his chamber and the ashes scattered in the moats. So depraved became his appetites that he found his chief enjoyment in the death agonies of his victims, over those sufferings he gloated as he skillfully mangled them and protracted their torture. When dead he would criticise their beauties with his confidential servitors, would compare one with another, and would kiss with rapture the heads which pleased him most. Not Caligula, when, to gain fresh appetite for his revels, he caused criminals to be tortured by the side of his banquet-table, or Nero, when enjoying the human torches illuminating his unearthly orgies, found such delirium of delight in inflicting and in watching human agony... ~ Lea[48]

But a fellow Catholic lord finding the bodies of children raped, tortured and slaughtered for Satan wasn't enough to require an investigation of the Marshal of France.

For that, it would take violating the sanctity of a Catholic Mass and mistreating a member of the clergy!

How long Gilles might have continued his devastating career it would be hard to guess, had it not suited the interest of Duke Jean and of his chancellor, Jean de Malestroit, Bishop of Nantes, to bring him to the

stake. Both of them had been purchasers of his squandered estates, and might wish to free themselves from the equity of redemption, and both might hope to gain from the confiscation of what remained to him. To assail so redoubtable a baron was, however, a task not lightly to be undertaken: the Church must be the leader, for the civil power dared not risk arousing the susceptibilities of the whole baronage of the duchy. ...

The marshal had sold the castle and fief of Saint-Etienne de Malemort to Geoffroi le Ferron, treasurer of the duke — possibly a cover for the duke himself — and had delivered seizin to Jean le Ferron, brother of the purchaser, a man who had received the tonsure and wore the habit of a clerk, thus entitling him to clerical immunity, even though he performed no clerical functions.

Some cause of quarrel subsequently arose, which Gilles proceeded to settle in the arbitrary fashion customary at the time. On Pentecost, 1440, he led a troop of some sixty horsemen to Saint-Etienne, left them in ambush near the castle, and with a few followers went to the church where Jean was at his devotions. Mass was about concluded when the intruders rushed in with brandished weapons, and Gilles addressed Jean: "Ha, scoundrel, thou hast beaten my men and committed extortions on them; come out or I will kill thee!" It was with difficulty that the frightened clerk could be reassured. He was dragged to the gate of the castle and forced to order its surrender, when Gilles garrisoned it and carried him off, finally imprisoning him in Tiffauges, chained hand and foot. ~ Lea[49]

By “received the tonsure” the Puritan historian means that le Ferron had his hair cut in a circle about his head to imitate the crown of thorns forced upon Jesus Christ by His Roman tormentors, indicating that le Ferron was either a monk or a friar.

A best guess would be that le Ferron was a friar, as monks usually stayed within the confines of a cloistered community.

Mistreating a friar was not normally a crime that would bring down the weight of Rome but by this time, de Rais had created powerful enemies.

> *The offence was one for which the customs of Britanny provided a remedy in the civil courts, but the duke zealously took up the cause of his treasurer and summarily ordered his lieutenantgeneral to surrender the castle and the prisoners under a penalty of fifty thousand crowns.*
>
> *Indignant at this unlooked-for intervention, Gilles maltreated the messengers of the duke, who promptly raised a force and recaptured the place in dispute. Tiffauges, where the prisoners lay, was in Poitou, beyond his jurisdiction, but his brother, the Constable de Eichemont, besieged it, and Gilles was forced to liberate them. Having thus submitted, he ventured in July to visit the duke at Josselin: he had some doubts as to his reception, but Prelati consulted his demon and announced that he could go in safety. He was graciously received, and imagined that the storm had blown over. So safe did he feel that while at Josselin he continued his atrocities, putting to death several children and causing Prelati to evoke his demon.†*

> *While the powers of the State thus hesitated to attack the criminal, the Church was busily preparing his downfall. He had been guilty of sacrilege in the violence committed in the church of Saint-Etienne, and he had violated its immunities in the person of Jean le Perron. ... On July 30 Jean de Malestroit, in whose bishopric of Nantes the barony of Kais was situated, issued privately a declaration reciting that in a recent visitation he and his commissioners had found that Gilles was publicly defamed for murdering many children, after gratifying his lust on them, of invoking the demon with horrid rites, of entering into compacts with him, and of other enormities. ...*
>
> *The blow fell September 13, when the bishop issued a citation summoning Gilles to appear for trial before him on the 19th. The recital of his misdeeds in the previous letter was repeated, with the significant addition of "other crimes and offences savoring of heresy." This was served upon him personally the next day, and he made no resistance.* ***Some rumor of what was impending must have been in the air, for his two chief instigators and confidants, Gilles de Sille and Roger de Briqueville, saved themselves by flight.*** *The rest of his nearest servitors and procurers, male and female, were seized, including Prelati, and carried to Nantes.*
>
> *On the 19th he had a private hearing before the bishop. The prosecuting officer, Guillaume Capeillon, cunningly preferred certain charges of heresy against him, when he fell into the trap and boldly offered to purge himself before the bishop or any other ecclesiastical judge.* ~ Lea[50] [emphasis mine]

There were actually three separate trials; the Inquisition to handle charges of "heresy", an ecclesiastical trial for blasphemy at Saint-Etienne and a civil trial to adjudicate what happened to the children.

Those "methods relied upon" for "procuring" the truth in Catholic France were torture.

Interestingly, when threatened with torture, the Marshal was defiant, stating he would rather be "strung up in a lace" than submit to the Church court.

Witches and witch-enthusiasts like Margaret Murray spin this[xxxii] as proof that de Rais was a witch ("warlock", man-witch, etc.) and his intent was to bravely protect his coven, however few experts dare to question the ideology that clearly ruled the Marshal's every thought: Catholicism.

Just as interesting, de Rais was not subjected to torture. Perhaps he knew the power he had with the Church and flaunted it.

His two servants, however, were not so lucky. They were tortured and provided a full and detailed confession.

> *The depositions made by Henriet and Poitou, which have been preserved to us, are hideous catalogues of the foulest crimes, minute in their specifications...* ~ Lea[51]

Prelati, too, made a full confession and it should have earned him the most severe torture and execution yet he was released a free man!

> *That of Prelati is equally full in its details of necromancy, and raises at once the question, not easily answered, why the necromancer, who had richly earned the stake, seems to have escaped all punishment; and the same may be said as to Blanchet, La Meffraye and her colleague, and some others of those involved.* ~ Lea[52]

Although Henry Lea, the Puritan historian with a Catholic wife, may have been confounded, I suspect Gilles de Rais was chosen as a sacrificial goat to please the host of peasants and Aristocrats who were, by then, calling for his head.

Francis Prelati orchestrated each ritual yet he escaped the judgment he richly deserved. The only conclusion is that he was protected by all of the authorities involved, meaning that his activities were admired at the highest levels of the Vatican.

Although this seems like a sensational accusation to make, it is one that I concluded after months of investigating systemic child sex slave trafficking. [xxxiii]

As aberrant as Marshal de Rais was, he was frighteningly typical of the Catholic Aristocracy; any of them could've walked his path with the right circumstances falling into place.

> *George Bataille, the author of* ***The Trial of Gilles de Rais****, points out that some of de Rais's life was not unlike the lives of other feudal lords of the time, "with whom he shares the pleasures of egoism, laziness and disorder. He lives in the same way, in those heavy and luxurious fortresses, among the men-at-arms in his service, and in contempt of the rest of the world." He existed in a "contradictory chaos of calculation, violence, good humor, bloody disorder, mortal anguish." So it was also for his relations, mighty feudal lords with vast authority over peasants and servants.* ~ Morrison [53]

Despite having the most chilling details given by his closest associates, the Baron showed no lack of indignance before his prosecution. Only one threat held sway with him: excommunication.

Rome has always instilled the fear into its adherents of "*Extra Ecclesiam nulla salus,*" — without the Church, there is no Salvation.

It is, truly, the ultimate heresy and perversion of the Gospel of Jesus Christ summarized by the Apostle Paul in his Epistle to the Christians in Rome that "if you confess with your mouth 'Jesus is Lord', you shall be Saved," [Romans 10:9-10].

Perhaps the most famous example of this would be the "Bull" in 1302 of Benedetto "Boniface VIII" Caetani, *Unam sanctum* (the title taken from his text regarding what he called *Unam sanctam ecclesiam catholicam et ipsam apostolicam* ... , "One holy and Catholic Apostolic Church...") but even earlier examples can be found.

> *It is not easy to understand what followed. When two days later, on the 15th, Gilles was brought into court he was a changed man.*
>
> *We have no means of knowing what influences had meanwhile been brought to bear upon him, but the only probable explanation would seem to be that he recognized from the details of the charges that his servants had been forced to betray him, that further resistance would only subject him to torture, and, in his earnest care for the salvation of his soul, that submission to the Church and endurance of the inevitable was the only path to heaven.* ~ Lea[54]

Gilles de Rais made a full confession of every terrible deed and it comported with details given by his Priest, Prelati.

One such detail was through the scrutiny of the magistrate for Jean de Bretagne (Jean V of Brittany), Pierre de l'Hopital: the total number of bodies accounted for was listed by the authorities at 140 children of varying ages but the Marshal of France confessed to some eight hundred abused, tortured and ritually-slaughtered children!

Magistrate de l'Hopital pressed de Rais in disbelief.

Likewise, the investigator could not believe such terrible acts were simply done for "personal gratification".

> *Before the commissioners he made no difficulty of accusing himself of all the crimes wherewith he stood charged. Pierre de l'Hopital found the recital hard of credence, and pressed him vigorously to disclose the motive which had led to their commission.*
>
> *He was not satisfied with Gilles's declaration that it was simply to gratify his passions, till he exclaimed, "Truly, there was no other cause, object, or intention than I have said. I have told you greater things than that — enough to put ten thousand men to death."*
>
> *The president pressed the matter no further, but sent for Prelati, when the two accomplices freely confirmed each other's statements, ... they parted in tears with [an] affectionate farewell ...* ~ Lea[55]

With admiration unbefitting a "Puritan historian" supposedly privy to the full details of de Rais' crimes, Lea describes the Baron's resignation to win the full approval of Rome at the cost of all humiliation and even life, itself.

> *Gilles was now fairly embarked in his new course. Apparently resolved to win heaven by contrition and by the assistance of the Church, this extraordinary man presents, during the remainder of the trial, a spectacle which is probably without an example. When, on the next day, October 22* [1440 A.D.], *he was brought before his judges, the proud and haughty baron desired that his confession should be read in public, so that his humiliation should aid in winning pardon from God.*

> *Not content with this, he supplemented his confession with abundant details of his atrocities, as though seeking to make to God an acceptable oblation of his pride. Finally, after exhorting those present to honor and obey the Church, he begged with abundant tears their prayers, and entreated pardon of the parents whose children he had murdered.* ~ Lea[56]

For “transvestism”, Jeanne d´Arc — the young woman with a vision and battlefield presence that delivered the crown to Charles VII — was burned alive by the Inquisition.

Of the cabal of French Catholic Aristocrats and supposedly “renegade” Priests responsible for the most evil crimes imaginable, only Gilles de Rais and his two servants were executed and they were shown the mercy of being hung before their bodies were committed to the flame.

Even so, the Marshal had a devoted coterie of privileged ladies who quickly snatched his body before the flames could singe it!

> *He was hung, “housell’d, appointed, anel’d,” more fortunate than Hamlet’s father, and his body was saved from being burnt by “four or five dames and demoiselles of great estate,” who removed his body from the flames of the pyre built so that he would fall into it. Manifestly they thought no great evil of what he had done. His two associates had no such social standing, and their bodies were burnt. This, I understand, will cause them considerable trouble at the Resurrection, from which the Aristocratic Gilles will be exempt.* ~ Wells[57]

Both devoted Catholics and dedicated witches have been accused of parsing parts of de Rais for worship as “relics”.

Was the Marshal of France framed or was he the ultimate epitome of an unaccountable Roman Catholic Elite living by his lusts?

As you have seen, nearly every account depicts de Rais as going to the gallows with the deepest piety and sincerity of his Catholic faith. It is extremely unlikely that he would’ve done so had he not been guilty; even if it was to protect the “witches” of his “coven” as the pagan promoters have pretended.

Perhaps as proof, de Rais became a celebrity after his death, with many placing him side-by-side with the Maid of Orleans as being "wrongfully executed"[58] (but usually without reference to both being killed by the Catholic Church).

Amongst the admirers of "Bluebeard" are none other than the self-proclaimed "wickedest man in the world", Aleister Crowley. In fact, Crowley intended to deliver a lecture about him at Oxford.[59]

Like all others on the far-Left, Crowley was happy to erroneously mix the words "Catholic" with "Christian" regarding de Rais but he occasionally allowed cynicism to make bold, accurate condemnations of Rome.

> *Gilles de Raise* [sic] *was born sometime in 1404. He married Catherine de Thonars on the 30th of November, 1420, thus becoming the richest noble in Europe.*
>
> *He lived extravagantly until his arrest by the Church.*
>
> *He began alchemical studies under the instruction of Gilles de Sille, a Priest of St. Malo.*
>
> *Montague Summers believes he sacrificed around eight hundred children and quotes the proceedings of ecclesiastical high court in which a Dominican Priest named Jean Blouyn took over as the delegate of the Holy Inquisition for the city and diocese of Nantes.*
>
> *Needless to say, Gilles "confessed",*[xxxiv] *and was put to the stake and charcoaled on October 26th, 1440 leaving his estates and untold riches to Mother Church, who, wasting no time, added them to her list of material gains.*
>
> *Included in this particular cache were Gilles' personal hand-painted manuscripts which were eagerly welcomed into the Mother Lode's vault where they sit to this day.*
>
> *Unfortunately, the Vatican's library is inaccessible to "common folk", and will probably remain so until the demise of Mother Church herself, at which time this author will assist other interested persons in converting it into a public library.*

By almost all accounts, Father Francisco Prelati of Florence “disappeared”, along with his demon familiar, appropriately named “Baron”.

Did he end up back in Rome to share the results of his “research” along with the manuscripts he and de Rais wrote with the blood of children?

As shocking as this accusation may seem, it appears to be utterly true.

Chapter 3

Son of the Devil

Not long after the terrible reign of Gilles de Rais, about eight hundred miles to the east, came the vicious fifteenth-century rule of Vlad Tepes, often nicknamed Vlad the Impaler. In most books, Vlad is considered to be a serial killer or mass murderer bar none. ~ Morrison[60]

The real Dracula, who ruled the territories that now constitute Romania, was born in 1431, the year that Joan of Arc was burned ... at the stake in Rouen, France. ~ Florescu and McNally[61]

Dracula in the Wallachian language means Devil.

The Wallachians were, at that time, as they are at present, used to give this as a surname to any person who rendered himself conspicuous either by courage, cruel actions, or cunning. ~ Wilkinson[62]

Today, “Islamic terrorism” (best embodied by the treasonous, never-ending “Global War on Terror”) is a complete fabrication of Intelligence Agencies as proxies for the Vatican. The archetypical example and embodiment of this would be the creation of “al Qaeda” by Zbigniew Brzezinski; a devout Roman Catholic and personal friend of fellow Pole, Karol Józef Wojtyła, better known as Pope Saint John Paul II.

Brzezinski was a Leftist Democrat who helped get Jesuit-mentored Catholic John F. Kennedy elected and later advised his opportunistic successor, Lyndon Baines Johnson.

He developed a friendship with fellow Leftist Democrat, Georgia Governor Jimmy Carter at the Trilateral Commission — which he helped found with Rockefeller backing,[63] and was Director of, at the time.[64] When Carter became President, he took on Brzezinski as his National Security Advisor.

February 1980: Zbigniew Brzezinski in Pakistan with CIA asset "Tim Osman", also known as Osama bin Laden.[65],[66],[67],[68],[69],[70],[71]

Brzezinski flabbergasted his friends and supporters who loved his far-Left social agenda but hated his "hawkish" war-making and his Crusade to destroy Russia.

They didn't understand that this juxtaposition perfectly suited the Hegelian[xxxv] needs of the Vatican to destroy morality and civil stability while simultaneously capitalizing off of endless and needless bloodshed.

Anti-Semites (whether overt racists or covert operatives of disinformation and misdirection) point to industries like Hollywood and the prominence of Jews as proof that our ills are a "Zionist plot!"

The secret behind Jewish empowerment in Hollywood is subservience to the same power that openly burned, flayed and tortured their race not too long ago.

But when it comes to real power like war-making, politics and media, those positions are maintained by Roman Catholics, usually Jesuit-trained or mentored and almost always with far-Left "values" (or lack thereof).

The Brzezinskis are prominent in both. Son Mark Francis Brzezinski was the foreign policy advisor to Senator Barack Obama. He was rewarded when Obama became President by being appointed the United States Ambassador to Sweden.

Son Ian Joseph Brzezinski served as Deputy Assistant Secretary of Defense for Europe and NATO Policy under “Republican” President George W. Bush.

Daughter Mika Emilie Leonia Brzezinski-Scarborough is an anchor for the Leftist media outlet “MSNBC”. She married her “Morning Joe” co-host, former Republican Congressman Charles Joseph “Joe” Scarborough (also Roman Catholic).

There are many other examples of the feudalistic Aristocratic lock Catholics have on power in America such as the Cuomos of New York.

Roman Catholic Mario Cuomo was the Leftist Democrat Governor of New York from 1983 to 1994.

His son Andrew is the Roman Catholic Leftist Democrat Governor of New York at this writing. His “achievements” include capitalizing off of the Sandy Hook false flag to illegally ram-rod the inversely-named “SAFE Act” through the New York legislature, literally overnight, destroying the last vestiges of private firearm ownership in that state. The New York State Constitution requires a three-day “waiting period” (ironically enough) for both legislators and citizens to examine a prospective law. Not only does this illegal outrage remain unchallenged by gun advocacy groups like the NRA (run with designed impotency by Roman Catholics such as Wayne LaPierre) but it also remains unexamined by media, either national or New York State.

Another son, Christopher Cuomo, is a Leftist Roman Catholic anchor for CNN.

Leftist Roman Catholic Thomas Hale Boggs was a powerful New Orleans, Louisiana (a city thoroughly owned by the Vatican) Congressman and House Majority Leader until his plane vanished in Alaska in 1972.

His wife, Marie Corinne Morrison Claiborne “Lindy” Boggs, went on to take his place in best “democratic” feudal Aristocrat form. At the conclusion of Lindy’s 18 years in her husband’s seat, President Bill Clinton made her Ambassador to the Vatican. Perhaps he felt guilty for being the one to drive Hale Boggs to the airport on his final day alive.[72]

The daughter of Hale and “Lindy” Boggs, Cokie Roberts, became an anchorwoman and “journalist” at both taxpayer-funded National Public Radio and ABC.

Another daughter, Barbara Boggs-Sigmund, relocated to Princeton, New Jersey where she became Mayor and challenged Leftist Roman Catholic and Knight of Columbus Jim Florio for Governor, but lost.

In Connecticut, Leftist Roman Catholic FBI agent Thomas Joseph Dodd became first a Congressman, and then a Senator. The highlight of his career was also ramming through draconian gun control laws after a false flag.

Dodd had fashioned legislation based upon Germany’s 1938 Nazi Gun Control Act but was unable to get it passed. In the years after the assassination of John F. Kennedy, Dodd capitalized off of the FBI’s absurd story that CIA asset Lee Harvey Oswald had purchased the murder weapon (an obsolete 6.5mm Mannlicher-Carcano, by coincidence, also introduced in 1938) by “unregulated mail-order”. He finally got his Nazi gun control legislation pushed through in 1968.

Son Thomas J. Dodd Jr. was Bill Clinton’s United States Ambassador to Uruguay and later Costa Rica (having learned fluent Spanish from the many illegal immigrants welcomed in his Connecticut hometown of Willimantic). Like Clinton, Dodd Jr. was trained in the “foreign service” at the Jesuit Georgetown Edmund Walsh school; he would later return to teach there, as well.

Another son, Christopher Dodd, was both a Congressman and Senator for Connecticut. Along with fellow Connecticut Congressman (also a Leftist Democrat), homosexual Jew Barney Frank, Dodd managed to facilitate multiple crises in both banking and housing, helping to add trillions to the crippling U.S. debt.

Frank was the puppet chosen to take the place of his predecessor; ordained Jesuit Priest Robert Drinan. Drinan is the only Priest to have served *openly* in *elected* political office[xxxvi] so his far-Left politics say volumes about the true agenda of the Vatican. The Catholic Church is the largest, most powerful religious corporation in the world with adherents in every important enterprise, yet the slaughter of the unborn worsens every year. For instance, in 2018, the homosexual East Indian[xxxvii] (raised Catholic according to the wishes of his mother) *Taoiseach* (Prime Minister) of Catholic-dominated Ireland, Leo Varadkar, ushered in a "remarkable political victory"[73] by opening the floodgates of unborn slaughter there.

After a sickening 36 years of criminal corruption and collusion in government as an "elected official", Christopher Dodd became Chairman and Chief Executive Officer of the Motion Picture Association of America. [xxxviii]

Catholic Caliphate

As I've detailed for you, at length,[74] Islam has been powerfully manipulated by the Catholic Church from its inception for the sake of creating a proxy army of chaos, with its ultimate goal of delivering Jerusalem to the Vatican.

Both Muhammad's first wife and her cousin (his mentor) were agents of Rome.

> *A wealthy Arabian lady who was a faithful follower of the pope played a tremendous part in this drama. She was a widow named Khadijah. She gave her wealth to the church and retired to a convent, but was given an assignment. She was to find a brilliant young man who could be used by the Vatican to create a new religion and become the messiah for the children of Ishmael.*
>
> *Khadijah had a cousin named Waraquah, who was also a very faithful Roman Catholic and the Vatican placed him in a critical role as Muhammad's advisor. He had tremendous influence on Muhammad.*
>
> *Teachers were sent to young Muhammad and he had intensive training. Muhammad studied the works of St. Augustine which prepared him for his "great calling". The Vatican had Catholic Arabs*

across North Africa spread the story of a great one who was about to rise up among the people and be the chosen one of their God.

While Muhammad was being prepared, he was told that his enemies were the Jews and that the only true Christians were Roman Catholic. He was taught that others calling themselves Christians were actually wicked impostors and should be destroyed. Many Muslims believe this.

Muhammad began receiving "divine revelations" and his wife's Catholic cousin Waraquah helped interpret them. From this came the Koran. ~ Ex Jesuit Alberto Rivera[75]

Muslim sources even admit a third agent of Rome influencing Muhammad!

There is also mention of a teenage Muhammad being attended to and recognized by a different Catholic monk, Bahira. Bahira not only imbued Muhammad with his destiny but predicted that he would bring the downfall of the Byzantine Empire.

At least one version of the telling states that it was Bahira who helped write the Quran... ~ *Secret History*, Cirucci[76]

But, like the Frankenstein monster, Islam was not a child the Mother Church could discipline. It would take several centuries and the insurgency of Freemasonry[xxxix] to finally bring Muhammad's followers "to heel".

In that interim, things would get a little disconcerting for the Vatican as Islamic forces pushed up from the Middle East into Europe.

The Ottoman Empire would spearhead this effort beginning in the 14th century (1300's) through the 17th century (1600's).

The name is derived from the founder, Osman Gazi, also known as Osman I (*circa*[xl] 1299 – 1323).

By 1450, the Ottoman Caliphate had grown from a small tribe in Anatolia (the western half of modern Turkey) to threaten the entire eastern leg[xli] of Catholicism: Constantinople and the Byzantine Empire.

It was in this time that "Dracula" was born.

Ventilated & Hyphenated

Abraham “Bram” Stoker (1847 – 1912) was a bureaucrat for the Irish government until he began critiquing theater as a hobby. Having connections, Stoker was hired on by the *Dublin Evening Mail*. He began writing stories of fiction and romance which were published by various elite “Societies”.

Like any ambitious Aristocrat, Stoker married up in his feudal class.[xlii]

> *In 1878 Stoker married Florence Balcombe, daughter of Lieutenant-Colonel James Balcombe of 1 Marino Crescent.*[[xliii]] *She was a celebrated beauty whose former suitor was Oscar Wilde.*[8] *Stoker had known Wilde from his student days, having proposed him for membership of the university’s Philosophical Society while he was president. Wilde was upset at Florence’s decision, but Stoker later resumed the acquaintanceship, and after Wilde’s fall visited him on the Continent.*[9]
>
> *The Stokers moved to London, where Stoker became acting manager and then business manager of* [actor and manager Henry] *Irving’s Lyceum Theatre, London, a post he held for 27 years. On 31 December 1879, Bram and Florence’s only child was born, a son whom they christened Irving Noel Thornley Stoker. The collaboration with Henry Irving was important for Stoker and through him he became involved in London’s high society, where he met James Abbott McNeill Whistler and Sir Arthur Conan Doyle (to whom he was distantly related). Working for Irving, the most famous actor of his time, and managing one of the most successful theatres in London made Stoker a notable if busy man.* ~ Wikipedia[77]

“Sir Arthur Conan Doyle” (1859 – 1930) of *The Lost World* and *Sherlock Holmes* fame was a gnostic “spiritualist” and high Freemason. The Freemasons, themselves, are happy to claim “Conan Doyle”.[78]

Why do we call him that? Did he, like so many other “blue-bloods” want us to know that both his mother and father were Elites (hyphenating their names as a result)?

As long as “user-edited” Wikipedia isn’t spinning for Rome it can be helpful in sorting out confusion such as why there is no hyphen for “Conan

Doyle":[79]

> *Doyle is often referred to as **Sir Arthur Conan Doyle** or simply **Conan Doyle** (implying that "Conan" is part of a compound surname as opposed to his given middle name). His baptism entry in the register of St Mary's Cathedral, Edinburgh, gives "Arthur Ignatius Conan" as his given names and "Doyle" as his surname. It also names Michael Conan as his godfather.[1] The cataloguers of the British Library and the Library of Congress treat "Doyle" alone as his surname.[2]*
>
> *Steven Doyle, editor of **The Baker Street Journal**, wrote, "Conan was Arthur's middle name. Shortly after he graduated from high school he began using Conan as a sort of surname. But technically his last name is simply 'Doyle'."[3] When knighted, he was gazetted as Doyle, not under the compound Conan Doyle.[4]*

One version of the legendary author's name you won't ever hear is the one he was born with: Arthur ***Ignatius*** Conan Doyle.

Although his father was a Scott and his mother was British,[xliv] both were extremely devout Catholics who not only named him after the founder of the Jesuits (Ignatius Loyola) but sent young Arthur to be instructed by them at the Stonyhurst boarding school.

Doyle is just one of many prominent Catholic Freemasons who give cause to doubt the supposed "war" between the two powers.

Others include — [xlv]

* NY Yankees baseball player George Herman "Babe" Ruth Jr.: Knight of Columbus and Freemason
* Pierre Charles le Enfante, the architect of Washington D.C.
* "Hitler's Pope" Pius XII, Eugenio Pacelli
* Abraham Lincoln assassin John Wilkes Booth, a secret Roman Catholic and member of Albert Pike's Freemasonic "Knights of the Golden Circle"[xlvi]
* Republican Congressman and false flag shooting "hero" Steve Scalise[xlvii]
* comedian and Congressional testimony "expert" on child trafficking Ashton Kutcher[xlviii]

* Enrico Fermi, “father” of “physics” and “nuclear reactors”
* Buffalo Bill Cody, “Templar” Freemason and Roman Catholic
* actor John Wayne (Marion Morrison), also DeMolay for Boys
* actor Ernie Borgnine
* actor/singer Danny Thomas
* actor Walter Brennan; John Birch Roman Catholic and Freemason
* comedian Richard Pryor; mother raised him strict Catholic, he was an open bisexual and Freemason
* Terry Branstad, Gov. of Iowa, Donald Trump’s Ambassador to China, mother a Jew, father a Lutheran, but he converted Catholic and became a Knight of Columbus; also “Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry Knight Commander of the Court of Honor”

It’s not hard to imagine Doyle’s Catholic Freemasonry being the reason why his stories have seen an *endless* number of incarnations.

> ***Guinness World Records*** *has listed Holmes as the “most portrayed movie character”,[2] with more than 70 actors playing the part in over 200 films.* ~ Wikipedia[80]

With disappointing consistency the majority of those actors are homosexual, despite “Conan Doyle” depicting his character as “asexual” and Holmes’ friend and chronicler as heterosexual.[xlix],[l]

“‘Bram”

As a well-placed Irish Aristocrat whose creative work is now an eternal part of Western culture, you might expect me to say that Abraham “Bram” Stoker was Catholic; far from it! He was a proud member of the “Church of Ireland”.

However, the “Church of Ireland” is as Protestant as its parent, Henry VIII’s “Church of England” (not at all).

Henry had the misfortune of being king during the Papal reign of Lorenzo de´Medici’s adopted son, Giulio who went on after the murder of his father Giuliano de´Medici (*il Magnifico’s* brother) to become Pope Clement VII. When Catherine of Aragon — a hyper-devout Catholic Spaniard — could only give Henry a single girl, it was obvious he needed to dissolve the marriage and find a woman more ... “fruitful”.

Henry was willing to ruin the political points the marriage had made with the powerful Catholic Aragons for the sake of keeping his seed under a crown, but the Medici Pope was not! Catherine's parents, Ferdinand II of Aragon and Isabella I of Castile, had personally kindled the fires of the Inquisition across Spain for the Papacy, and burned alive every "heretic" they could root out. They had been so brutal that the terms "Spanish Inquisition" are today a euphemism for the worst of the torture imaginable. Giulio "Pope Clement VII" de´Medici would not allow them to be dishonored.

So Henry simply started a miniature Catholic Church in England, without any of Luther's inconvenient chaos. He maintained all of the pagan traditions and, most importantly, the hierarchy of clergy, but instead of him answering to Rome, *they* answered to *him*.[li]

Although the "Church of Ireland" is the Anglican face of the Irish government (as her parent sect is in England), it's Protestant in name only.

In fact, the official web site lists it's Number 1 question and answer with:

> ***Is the Church of Ireland Protestant or Catholic?***
>
> *It is both Protestant and Catholic. For this reason it is incorrect to refer to members of the Church of Ireland as "non–Catholic".*[81]

Clearly, the "Church of Ireland" needs a refresher course on Luther's Protest, unless perhaps Irish Anglicans split themselves down the middle like the Batman villain "Harvey Two-Face".

If you didn't know that, but you did know who the Templars were and you

were familiar with their extreme loyalty to the Papacy, the icon of the Church of Ireland would help you connect the dots.

On April 30th in 1890, Henry Irving (born John Henry Brodribb) was performing in the Parisian romance, *The Dead Heart*. Afterwards, his agent, Stoker, had retired to an expensive meal and brandy at the Beefsteak Club where he met a literal "wandering Jew".[82]

Born in Hungary as "Hermann Wamberger", he had wisely changed his name to "Ármin Vámbéry". Although poor, Wamberger / Vámbéry had an aptitude for languages and an intense interest in all things Ottoman. This gift enabled him to visit Turkey and eventually work his way into becoming the personal secretary to Governor-General Mehmed Fuad Pasha (1814 – 1869).[83]

Wamberger / Vámbéry regaled Stoker with wild tales of a brutal Crusader from what was once the Kingdom of Wallachia but had become part of Romania. His vicious rule had burned the reaching hands of the Ottomans and helped keep them from breaking through to Catholic Hungary and the Holy Roman Empire.

He was known as Vlad III, "*Țepeș*": "the Impaler".

'Bram the Irish Anglican would go on to write a very Catholic tale about the Count from Transylvania.

If there is a hero in *Dracula* it is the brilliant Professor ***Abraham*** Van Helsing, "MD, D.Ph., D.Litt., etc., etc.," who is so devoutly Catholic that he refuses to divorce his wife even after she goes insane.

Australian author[84] Dr. D. Bruno Starrs[lii] has written several articles lamenting the lack of attention "Protestant" 'Bram Stoker has gotten for writing such a Catholic legend.

> *Despite the fact that Irishman Bram Stoker's* ***Dracula*** *(1897) is arguably replete with Catholic allegory, little critical attention has been paid to its pro-Catholic theme. Nor does any stage or screen adaptation faithfully foreground the text's Catholicism. The novel's religious analogy is obvious: in the most basic of his many perversions of Catholic lore, Count Dracula is the figurative anti-Christ who promises eternal life through the ingestion not of sacramental wine representing the blood of Christ, but of actual human blood.*[85]

Starrs makes the interesting note that other experts have found *Dracula* "anti-Semitic" and (we then assume) this, too, can be considered a Catholic trait!

> *In analyzing Stoker's characterization of his eponymous star, both Ken Gelder and Judith Halberstam argue the Count is anti-semitically modeled on stereotypical images of blood-sucking, baby-stealing Jews (Gelder 13, Halberstam 248).*[86], [[liii]]

If Dr. D. Bruno is just being an honest Catholic, kudos!

There is a whole host of Catholic hosts (no pun intended) who make a living off of blaming Jews for the crimes *their* Church has committed, from former college professor and author E. (Eugene) Michael Jones to former President Ronald Reagan's Communications Director and syndicated talkshow host, Patrick J. Buchanan.

Buchanan learned his anti-Semitism directly from the Jesuits at Gonzaga College High School and Georgetown University.

Regarding Stoker's characters of Jonathan Harker and Dr. Jack Seward, Starrs cites —

> *Clive Leatherdale ... suggests an even more political role for the anti-Christ when he tentatively asks: "Are Harker and Seward [both Englishmen and the two most obviously Protestant of the protagonists] converted to the Catholic faith once they discover its tangible power? Perhaps it's as well that Stoker, likewise a confirmed Protestant,*[[liv]] *chose not to confront the issue" (185).*[87]

The character of "Dracula" has been so ingrained into the human experience that we don't even realize that weapons of choice against this evil, frightening creature are "holy water" and a crucifix. We may then deduce that blood-sucking vampires are a metaphor for any enemy of the Catholic Church.[lv]

Elementary, John and Mary.

> *Or did Stoker, rather than shirking the political issue and despite claiming to be a Protestant while he lived a high-profile life in England's theatre circles, in fact, subtly thematicize it? Writing the*

> *biography of Stoker, David Glover notes: "Indeed, it is essential to see that the anxieties that animate these novels are inextricably bound up with the most deeply rooted dilemmas facing late Victorian culture"[(15)]. Writing at the time of the Land Acts which stripped the landlords of their power, Stoker was only too aware of the decline of the Anglo-Irish gentry. Did he cautiously write a novel promoting the proselytization of Protestants to Catholicism in an era when to do so might be dangerous to an Irishman's health and / or freedom? One reading of* ***Dracula*** *indeed suggests that its author was a closet Catholic cloaking his dangerous views in a relatively safe literary medium.*[88]

This identical tactic has been attributed to another "legendary classic" author; "William Shakespeare".

" — by any other name..."

If there is one writer who is mandatory reading in nearly any school, anywhere, it is "Shakespeare" yet controversy abounds regarding the questions "Did he really exist?" "Is 'Shakespeare' a pen name for someone else?"

If you've never heard of this being a controversy, not only is it, it has its own special name: the "Shakespeare Authorship Question".

Dr. Helen Gordon, Professor of English at Bakersfield, puts it this way:

> *Actual facts about* [the "William Shakspere" of Stratford-on-Avon[lvi]] *are scarce. During his lifetime (1564-1614) no portraits of him were painted, no biography written about him, and no records kept of his education. He left no manuscripts in his own hand, no letters, no diary, no memoranda, no notes. We have only six shaky signatures on legal documents, property deeds, and a few public records unrelated to literature. The signatures that we do have are variously spelled (Shakspere, Shagspere, Shaxper, Shakspear), but none are spelled as the author's name was consistently spelled (Shakespeare or Shake-speare). The pronunciation indicated by the Stratfordian spellings would be SHACK-spur, to differentiate it from the author's name, pronounced SHAKE-spear. Shakspere's last will said nothing about a*

> *personal library, scripts, or royalties which his family might have inherited.*
>
> *Diana Price in her unauthorized biography of Shakespeare[[lvii]] lists several criteria with which we determine the authenticity of an author such as personal letters, acknowledgement of their literary talent by peers, drafts of manuscripts, records of publication, proof of payments, and so forth. Of all the writers known to be living in the Elizabethan age, only William Shakespeare draws a complete blank. This lack of evidence compared to other writers of the time seems to suggest that "William Shakespeare" was a pen name.*[89]

In light of such evidence, the constant reinforcing of a real "Shakespeare" by major media becomes as suspect as their many other propaganda efforts. The fact that no major or "accepted" source even mentions these concerns in any attempt at balance is almost conclusive in itself.

Notice the supposed lifetime of "William Shakespeare": (1564-1614). By this time, the kindling that Martin Luther had lit on November 1st, All Saints' Day, in 1517 was a full-blown prairie fire.

One of the most "controversial" (and, likewise, plausible) contentions is that the Lord Chancellor of King James I of England (who was also "James VI of Scotland"), Sir Francis Bacon, was secretly "William Shakespeare".

Sources like "user-edited Wikipedia" display extreme derision towards the idea, calling this theory an "alleged subterfuge[[lviii]] ... [d]espite the academic consensus[[lix]] that Shakespeare wrote the works bearing his name..."[90]

Forced to acknowledge the questions concerning the inconsistencies of an historical "Shakespeare", it is now in vogue to claim Earl of Oxford Edward de Vere (1550 – 1604) was the "legendary bard".

As usual, when a contrived alternate reality needs shoring up, we call upon "Tinsletown" and, in 2011, Writer/Director Roland Emmerich gave us "Anonymous" which accurately showed the criticisms surrounding the historical "Shakespeare" but then deflected to de Vere.

Emmerich is the mind behind such deeply-researched historical thrillers as *Independence Day* (1996 — yet another alien invasion movie), Godzilla (1998 — the Western computer graphics version starring Matthew Broderick that most "Kaiju" fans and *all* of Japan resoundingly despised) and *The Day After Tomorrow* (2004 — this time the end of the world comes from "another Ice Age", shoring up the "millions of years" we are told occurred before us).

Perhaps the reason Bacon as Shakespeare is immediately dismissed is because one of the strongest sources on the issue was Bacon's best friend, confidant and Confessor, English Jesuit *Sir* Tobie Matthew who wrote to him in 1623 — *The most prodigious wit, that ever I knew of my nation, and of this side of the sea, is of your Lordship's name, though he be known by another.*[91]

So close were they, in fact, that when relative Arnold Harris Mathew wrote his ancestor's biography in 1907 he titled it *The Life of Sir Tobie Matthew: Bacon's Alter Ego*.

If Francis Bacon was, indeed, William Shakespeare, then it's not a stretch to say that, ultimately, so was Jesuit Tobie Matthew.

Official sources on Matthew carefully avoid identifying him as a Jesuit but his proud kinsman was happy to put that to rest and to confirm that Father Tobie Matthew's hand was ultimately behind Francis "William Shakespeare" Bacon.

> *Students of seventeenth-century literature may find some new facts recorded in these pages, and admirers of Bacon, and all persons to whom the Bacon-Shakespeare question appeals, will not fail to be interested in the correspondence between the Philosopher and his Alter Ego.*
>
> *Should this attempt to rescue from oblivion the name of a remarkable personality prove acceptable to the literary world, I shall have no reason to regret the hard work which the undertaking has involved.*
>
> *That Sir Tobie Matthew was ever a Jesuit has been strenuously denied by some members of the Society.*

Nevertheless, it may be considered certain that he was a member of it at an early date after his conversion.

By his will, dated 1614, the year of his ordination by the great Jesuit, Cardinal [Robert] *Bellarmine,*[[lx]] *he bequeathed the whole of his earthly possessions to the Society. This fact by itself would not suffice to prove Sir Tobie to have been anything more than a friend and admirer of the Society.*

Other facts, however, have come to light.

At the Benedictine Abbey of St. Mary, at Oulton, in Staffordshire, the ancient English Benedictine nuns, who were exiled during the reign of Henry VIII., are now represented.

The community descends from the convent established at Ghent as an offshoot of the community settled at Brussels.

In the library at Oulton Abbey is preserved the original MS. [manuscript] *of an unpublished work of Sir Tobie's, written by him for the nuns at Ghent, and dated "The first of January, 1652."*

The MS. consists of a biography of the Lady Abbess Lucy Knatchbull, O.S.B.["*Ordo Sancti Benedicti*", "Order of Saint Benedict"], *of Ghent, and is written in a hand which is not Sir Tobie's, probably a scrivener's.*

The preface, however, is signed by him, and the MS. is corrected throughout in his handwriting.

The work is entitled: "A Relation of the Holy and Happy Life and Death of the Lady Lucie Knatchbull, Abbess, and of her foundinge the English Monastery of Benedictines at Ghent; together with some notice which is given of her Religious there, concerning both their persons, and particular devotions and Perfections; as also of divers Blessings wherewith they have been enriched from Heaven. This Relation consists of two Parts. By SIR TOBIE MATTHEW, KNIGHT, Soc. JES."[92]

The "Sir" / "Knight" comes from an *English* Knighthood bestowed upon Matthew by none other than the commissioner of the "Authorized 1611

Version of the Bible", "Protestant" King James I. The reason for the Knighthood is even less "Protestant": Jesuit Father Tobie was James I's personal ambassador to Spain to arrange for his son Charles to marry "Infanta[lxi]" Maria Anna, the daughter of King Philip III.

In fact, the deal fell through but Father Tobie was Knighted anyway!

"Protestant" King James found a match just as Catholic, Henrietta Maria of France, the daughter of King Henry IV, of the House of Bourbon.

Perhaps you're now wondering just how "Protestant" the commissioner of the "Authorized Version" really was, especially given that he was raised by hyper-devout Catholic, Mary, Queen of Scots.

By the time Charles was gifted the throne (by right of his "Blood Succession") many Britons were wondering, as well. In fact, Charles' Catholicity and aloof mismanagement of his nation's affairs precipitated the English Civil war that ended with the offing of his head and the very brief reign of true Protestant Oliver Cromwell.[lxii]

Father Tobie Matthew, S.J., from his position of power and influence in "Protestant England", sowed seeds of subversion that bore fruit in America.

> *In March, 1630, Sir Tobie was in London, sending Court gossip to Sir Henry Vane in Paris.*
>
> *Later in the same year he was in Staffordshire, acting as a zealous layman, in assisting the Catholic cause.*
>
> *On August 12th he concluded a visit to Lord Baltimore, who, as Sir George Calvert, had been one of the principal Secretaries of State, from 1619 to 1624; in the latter year he resigned the seals, frankly acknowledging to the King that he had become a Catholic.*
>
> *Sir Tobie is credited with his conversion.*
>
> *The King, however, retained Sir George as a Privy Councillor, and in 1625 elevated him to the peerage, under the title of Baron of Baltimore, in Ireland.*
>
> *The capital of Maryland was named after him.*[93]

The reason why the “capital”[lxiii] of Mary-land was named after Lord Baltimore is because he was specifically granted a Royal Charter to send Catholics there by the same King who promoted him even after he sheepishly admitted he had converted[lxiv] — the son of James I: Charles I.

Tobie Matthew’s father, Tobias Matthew, was a prominent and powerful “Anglican”[lxv] who was President and Vice-Chancellor of Oxford University as well as the Dean of the “Chapter”[lxvi] of Durham, all appointed by “Protestant” Elizabeth I, and Elizabeth’s successor, James I, who appointed Matthew the Archbishop of York.

Sources like “user-edited” Wikipedia and the obviously fawning Catholic, Arnold Matthew, note a “controversy” between Tobias Matthew and English Jesuit Edmund Campion. Campion was uncovered as an agent of insurgency, trying to undermine the British government (as Jesuits are sworn to do). He was captured, tortured and executed.

Normally, when someone tries to overthrow a government on behalf of a foreign political power, they are called a “turncoat” or a “traitor” and their execution is recorded as justice served.

Campion, however, has been re-written as a “martyr” even in Britain. The Catholic outreach at Oxford University is centralized in “Campion Hall”.

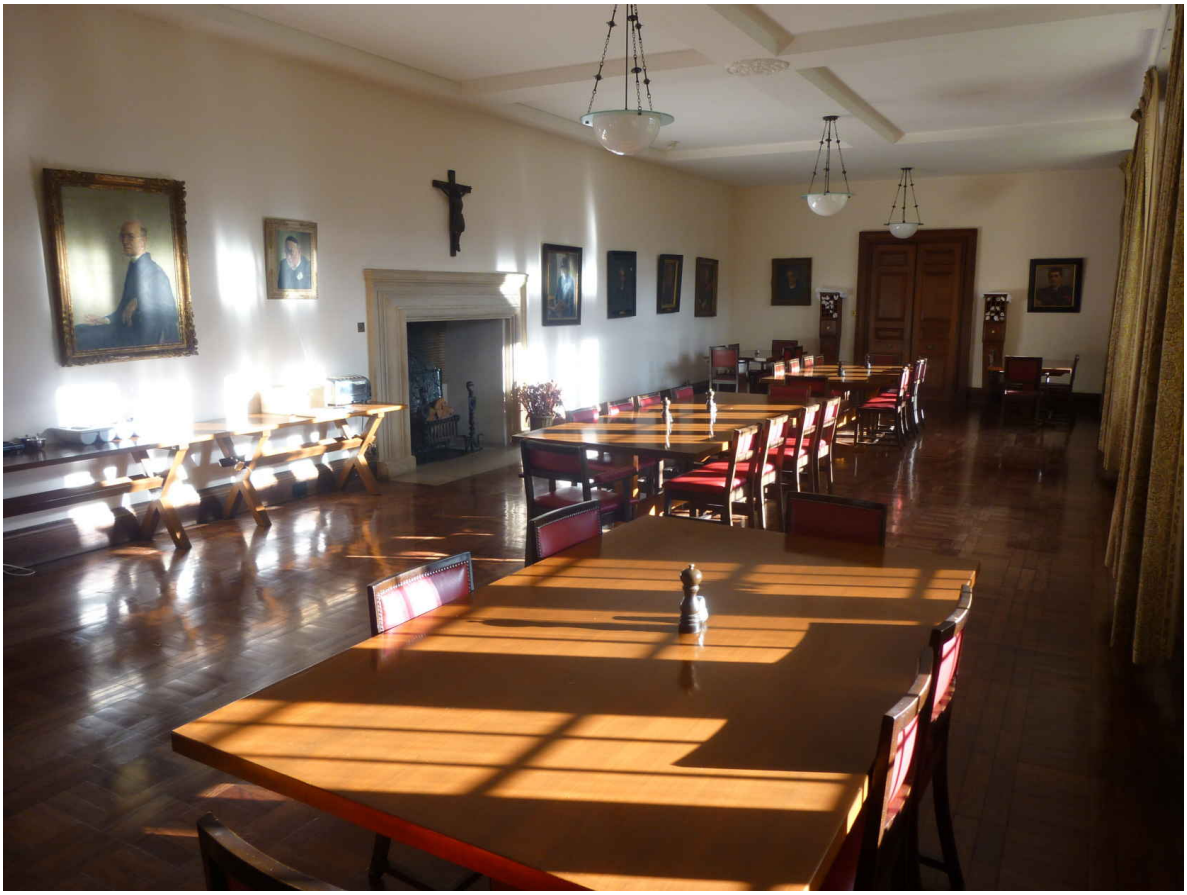
Details are scant but Arnold Matthew provides some little insight (along with a blatant pro-Catholic bias).

Tobias Matthew was, apparently, an Anglican Inquisitor, ardently persecuting poor English Catholics just because they were Catholic.

As Catholics tell it (and, apparently, they are the only ones telling this story), Matthew was incensed that Campion had sent a “brilliant” treatise to the Court of Elizabeth in specific and the British people in general giving ten reasons why they should deny Luther’s Protest and maintain the “old Religion.”

> *As a controversialist, Dr. Matthew won no little reputation, though the single publication which he left behind him, a sermon replying to a statement made concerning him by Father Campion, S.J., is of poor merit.*

*It has been held by some critics that the Archbishop's vigorous measures against Catholics are attributable to his annoyance with Campion and his **Decem Rationes**. ~ The Life of Sir Tobie Matthew: Bacon's Alter Ego*[94]



Campion Hall, Oxford University (from the Jesuit Institute) Campion wrote both the treatise and a book and had them published by the Stonor family[lxvii] at their Stonor Park home, in south Oxfordshire; all of which was insurgency and treason. They quickly ran off 400 copies and distributed them. 400 years later, a copy was proudly displayed at prestigious and "secular" Oxford.[95]

The Stonor family mansion, Barony of Camoys in Oxfordshire.

The Stonors had a massive operation of insurgency at work with their lush mansion was engineered with a myriad of secret closets that not only maintained at least one printing press but Priests as well.[96]

In the Jesuit's treatise of propaganda (now called by Catholics "Campion's Bragge"), he admits that he has not only worked to undermine Protestant Christianity in his nation, but also in the home countries of Martin Luther (Germany) and Jan Hus (the Czech or Bohemian Kingdom) — a *true* martyr who was betrayed and burned alive because, although he was a Priest, he was a Bible-believing Christian.

In the very first of his "Ten Reasons" he openly admits —

> *I confess that I am (albeit unworthy) a Priest of the Catholic Church, and through the great mercy of God vowed now these eight years into the religion of the Society of Jesus.*[[lxviii]] *Hereby I have taken upon me a special kind of warfare under the banner of obedience...*[97]

Campion's second point is admitting his "reassignment" out of foreign lands — where the Catholic Priest has little conscience in doing harm to strangers. But at this time, the Jesuit machinations weren't directed

downward, but upward. Consequently, it was advantageous to have a Briton weave for the Company in his native Britain.

> *At the voice of our General, which is to me a warrant from heaven and oracle of Christ, I took my voyage from Prague to Rome (where our General Father is always resident) and from Rome to England, as I might and would have done joyously into any part of Christendom or Heatheness, had I been thereto assigned.*

His third point was propaganda about "spreading the Gospel" and "ministering the Sacraments" but his fourth was a bold lie —

> *I never had mind, and am strictly forbidden by our Father that sent me, to deal in any respect with matter of state or policy of this realm, as things which appertain not to my vocation, and from which I gladly restrain and sequester my thoughts.*

His fifth was a plea to be allowed to promote his Catholicism at Court.

His sixth was again a declaration of warfare against his "adversaries".

> *... I know perfectly that no one Protestant, nor all the Protestants living, nor any sect of our adversaries (howsoever they face men down in pulpits, and overrule us in their kingdom of grammarians and unlearned ears) can maintain their doctrine in disputation. I am to sue most humbly and instantly for combat with all and every of them ...*

The claim that Catholic Priests were being pulled right out of their pulpits by powerful Protestant governments is, to say the least, less than accurate.

But the reverse has been true for the entire life of Rome as a city-state. A random leafing-through of Foxe's Book of Martyrs brings us to what happened to "Reformed" Catholics (Protestant Christians) in a country completely dominated by Rome: France.

> *In the year 1524, at a town in France, called Melden, one John Clark set up a bill on the church door, wherein he called the pope Anti-christ. For this offence he was repeatedly whipped, and then branded on the forehead.*
>
> *Going afterward to Mentz, in Lorraine, he demolished some images, for which he had his right hand and nose cut off, and his arms and*

breasts torn [had his skin pulled off] *with pincers. He sustained these cruelties with amazing fortitude, and was even sufficiently cool to sing the 115th psalm, which expressly forbids idolatry; after which he was thrown* [alive] *into the fire, and burnt to ashes.*

Many persons of the reformed persuasion were, about this time, beaten, racked,[[lxix]] *scourged, and burnt to death, in several parts of France but more particularly at Paris, Malda, and Limosin.*

A native of Malda was burnt by a slow fire,[[lxx]] *for saying that mass was a plain denial of the death and passion of Christ. ...*[[lxxi]]

Francis Bribard, secretary to cardinal de Pellay, for speaking in favour of the reformed, had his tongue cut out, and was then burnt, A. D. 1545.

James Cobard, a schoolmaster in the city of St. Michael, was burnt, A. D. 1545, for saying "That mass was useless and absurd;" and about the same time, fourteen men were burnt at Malda, their wives being compelled to stand by and behold the execution.

A. D. 1546, Peter Chapot brought a number of bibles in the French tongue to France, and publicly sold them there; for which he was brought to trial, sentenced, and executed a few days afterward. Soon after, a cripple of Meaux,[[lxxii]] *a schoolmaster of Fera, named Stephen Polliot, and a man named John English, were burnt for the faith.*

Monsieur Blondel, a rich jeweller, was, A. D. 1548, apprehended at Lyons, and sent to Paris; where he was burnt for the faith, by order of the court, A.D. 1549. Herbert, a youth of nineteen years of age, was committed to the flames at Dijon; as was Florent Venote, in the same year.

In the year 1554, two men of the reformed religion, with the son and daughter of one of them, were apprehended and committed to the castle of Niverne. On examination, they confessed their faith, and were ordered for execution; being smeared with grease, brimstone, and gunpowder, they cried, "Salt on, salt on this sinful and rotten flesh!" Their tongues were then cut out, and they were afterward committed to

> *the flames, which soon consumed them, by means of the combustible matter with which they were besmeared.*[98]

None of those Christians were put on trial and convicted for being part of a para-military organization with orders to subvert and overturn the government of France. They were just Christians and, therefore, worthy of vicious, merciless torture and death.

In his seventh point, Father Campion begs Queen Elizabeth for Catholic "equality" yet it already existed during her "Protestant" reign. She was so careful to stay away from Protestantism yet not quite put her crown before Rome that her policy had a special name, "Elizabeth's Religious Settlement".[99]

His eighth is a run-on paragraph of railing against Catholic enemies, feigned loyalty to Elizabeth and England and a supposed willingness to endure unfair treatment (brought about, of course, by the "baseless" accusations of treason).

Unfortunately, the Jesuit Institute in its re-print of Campion's "Ten Reasons" seem to have lost count. The ninth is a resignation that God will judge them all right from wrong and there is no tenth.[lxxiii]

Fortunately, Arnold Matthew has come to our rescue and tells us that there was much more detail in Campion's treatise, some of it being a personal attack upon Tobias Matthew, claiming that Matthew told Campion directly that he didn't believe in what he was doing — fighting vehemently against Rome.

> *The passage in Campion's* ***Decent Rationes*** *which is said to have aroused Dr. Matthew's indignation was the following: "Once I familiarly questioned Tobie Matthew, now your greatest preacher, whose learning and good disposition endeared him to me, and asked him to tell me how a man, who was such an assiduous student of the Fathers, could take the side which he defended as true. He answered, 'If I believed them, as well as read them, you would have good reason to ask me.' This is perfectly true, and I think he must still be of the same mind."*

> *In his **Conscio Apologetica**, published in Latin nine years after Campion's execution, Matthew denies the accusation in the following terms: "Who affirmed it? Edmund Campion, the Jesuit. And who denies it? Tobie Matthew, the Christian. I avouch that neither sleeping nor waking, sitting nor standing, by day or by night, at home or abroad, in jest or in earnest did I ever say it."*
>
> *~ The Life of Sir Tobie Matthew: Bacon's Altar Ego*[100]

In the annals of tyranny, many an inquisitor has used extreme vigor to prosecute and persecute innocents for the crimes they, themselves, were guilty of. Was Tobias Matthew such a supposed tyrant? Nothing is recorded of him being part of any coercive action against British Catholics.

Being the father of a Jesuit Priest didn't help his case.

> *Methinks thou doth protest too much...*[lxxiv]
>
> ~ *Hamlet*, "William Shakespeare"

"Experts"

When you learn that there is an historical figure that inspired "Irish Protestant" 'Bram Stoker's Dracula, you are then funneled by sources like the New York Times to the acknowledged experts: Raymond T. McNally and Radu Florescu.

Why are they the acknowledged experts?

— Because they're two good Catholics who taught at Jesuit Boston College (McNally died in 2002, Florescu in 2014).

Raymond Thomas McNally was a graduate of Jesuit Fordham University and went on to teach at Boston College where he founded the Russian and East European Center.

Romanian Radu Florescu was even more connected (and, perhaps, even more Catholic). Add being a Leftist[lxxv] with little use for Russia, and you've got a winning formula for success in a world controlled by Rome.

> *By day, Professor Florescu taught at Boston College, where, at his death, he was an emeritus professor of history and the former longtime director of the East European Research Center there.*

He advised the State Department and Senator Edward M. Kennedy[[lxxvi]] of Massachusetts on the Balkans and wrote a string of scholarly books, among them "The Struggle Against Russia in the Romanian Principalities: A Problem in Anglo-Turkish Diplomacy, 1821-1854."

But thanks to his moonlight job, Professor Florescu was for four decades also one of the world's leading experts in matters Dracular.

The first of his many books on the subject, "In Search of Dracula," published in 1972 and written with Raymond T. McNally, helped spur the revival of interest in Stoker's vampirical nobleman that continues to this day.

"It has changed my life," Professor Florescu told ***The New York Times*** *in 1975.[[lxxvii]] "I used to write books that nobody read."*

Radu Nicolae Florescu was born in Bucharest on Oct. 23, 1925. As he would learn in the course of his research, he had a family connection to Vlad, who was known familiarly if not quite fondly[[lxxviii]] as Vlad Tepes, or Vlad the Impaler: A Florescu ancestor was said to have married Vlad's brother, felicitously named Radu the Handsome.

At 13, as war loomed, Radu left home for London, where his father was serving as Romania's acting ambassador to Britain.[[lxxix]] (The elder Mr. Florescu resigned his post after the dictator Ion Antonescu, a Nazi ally, became Romania's prime minister in 1940.[[lxxx]]) The younger Mr. Florescu earned bachelor's and master's degrees in politics, philosophy and economics from Oxford, followed by a Ph.D. in history from Indiana University.[[lxxxi]] He joined the Boston College faculty in 1953.

In the late 1960s, Professor McNally, a colleague in the history department, grew intrigued by affinities between events in Stoker's novel, published in 1897, and the actual history of the region. He enlisted Professor Florescu, and together they scoured archives throughout Eastern Europe in an attempt to trace Count Dracula to a flesh-and-blood source.

> *Vlad emerged as the prime suspect, for he and the count, it transpired, had much in common.* ~ The New York Times[101]

Not surprisingly, there is spin from the New York Times even here.

Florescu and McNally didn't "discover" Vlad Țepeș as the "real-life Dracula", they exposed the historical figure "Bram" Stoker used and then buried.

Perhaps the most fascinating aspect about Radu Florescu's family comes from his sister...who was a "sister".

> *A resident of Antibes, France; Scituate, Mass.; and Poiana Brasov, in Transylvania, Professor Florescu is survived by his wife, the former Nicole Michel, whom he married in 1950; a sister, Yvonne, a Benedictine nun known in religion as Sister John the Baptist; three sons, Radu, Nicholas and John; a daughter, Alexandra Lobkowicz*[[lxxxii]]*; and 13 grandchildren.*[102]

Gender bending and blending is actually an important Vatican value (much to the consternation of Conservative Catholics).

For instance...

> * Seattle University is another Jesuit institution with a deceptively-public name where, annually, they host a "Drag Show" that gets more risqué with each successive event.[103]
> * The Church of St. Paul the Apostle in New York City, run by the sect known as "Paulist Fathers", has a special "LGBT" (Lesbian, Gay, Bisexual, Trans-gender) outreach that actively participates in the New York City "Gay Pride Parade". A report from secret Catholic media outlet LifeSite in 2015 says that year's "Pride Parade" was followed by a special homosexual Mass (whatever that looked like).[104], [lxxxiii]
> * That same year, Grand Marshal Timothy Cardinal Dolan[lxxxiv] not only allowed homosexuals to march in the New York City St. Patrick's Day Parade, he blessed them as well.[105]

For as long as Dolan has been Cardinal-Archbishop of New York, he's been upsetting Latin Mass Catholics.

... Card. Timothy Dolan delivered some astonishing comments on Easter Sunday, opening the door wider for homosexuals in the Church.

Speaking crude English, the head of the U.S. Conference of Catholic Bishops (USCCB) said the Church could work on being more welcoming to homosexuals: "We gotta do better to see that our defense is not reduced to an attack on gay people. And I admit we haven't been too good about that."

But, he added, "We try our hardest to make sure we're not anti-anybody." Then, repeating himself, "and I admit we haven't been too good."

What message did Dolan want to send to "gays"? It was quite clear: "The first thing I'd say to them is 'I love you too, and God loves you, and we want your happiness.'" For that reason, he said, homosexuals are "entitled to friendship." ...

Dolan admitted he was not sure how Catholic leaders should conduct better outreach to homosexuals: "I don't know. We're still trying. We're trying our best to do it. We got to listen to people. Jesus died on the cross for them as much as he did for me."

He made his remarks on two morning talk shows on Easter Sunday (ABC This Week and CBS Face the Nation), just days after the Supreme Court heard arguments in two same-sex "marriage" cases. Coincidental timing? I think not. ~ Margaret Galitzin, Tradition In Action[106]

A more poignant question would be, "*How* did far-Left, pro-homosexual Cardinal Dolan get scheduled on the top news programs whilst the Catholic-dominated Supreme Court was further solidifying sexual deviancy circumventing representative government?"

The answer is: with "news media" being managed by faithful Catholics such as (not just in America but around the world):

* Henry Luce: wealthy media magnate and Knight of Malta.
    * Claire Boothe-Luce: his wife, a Dame of Malta and devout Roman Catholic.

* William Randolph Hearst: wealthy media magnate and Knight of Malta.
* Robert “Bob” Guccione: considered becoming a Catholic Priest but became a pornographer instead[lxxxv]; Bob Junior maintained the family hold on quality media, founding a magazine appropriately named “Spin”.
* The Getty family has used their oil money to buy up and “copyright” any image remotely incriminating to Rome. John Paul Getty, Jr. was born on a yacht in Italian waters and trained in two Jesuit institutions; St. Ignatius College Prep and the public-sounding University of San Francisco.
* Conrad Black: Canadian media billionaire; Knight of St. Gregory, Knight of the Holy See, close friends with pedophile provider Jeffrey Epstein.
* Leo Kirch: wealthy German media mogul and devout Catholic.
* Gustavo Cisneros: Venezuelan Roman Catholic media mogul and billionaire, one of only two in Venezuela.

Three years later, Timothy Cardinal Dolan welcomed with open arms Irish *Taoiseach* (Prime Minister) Leo Varadkar for the 2018 St. Patrick’s Day Parade. Varadkar is “married” to another male and personally saw that the last protections for the unborn were eradicated in Ireland. Both gave special attention to an unfortunate altar boy.

Pro-abortion, homosexual "Taoiseach" (Prime Minister) of Ireland, Leo Varadkar, receives a limp handshake from the Archbishop of New York, Timothy Cardinal Dolan, while eyeing an altar boy clutched by Dolan. (Tradition in Action)

Varadkar is East Indian on his father's side;[lxxxvi] a trait that doubtless makes it easier to betray the trust of the Irish citizenry.

Helping Dolan welcome Varadkar into the Parade were Catholic Republican Congressman Pete King, the "evolving" far-Left Catholic[107] Mayor of New York City, Bill de Blasio (born Warren Wilhelm Jr.) and the far-Left Catholic Governor of New York, Andrew Cuomo.

Dolan is just one of many such examples where Catholic clergy have marched in "Gay Pride" parades[108] to include — * Portland
* Baltimore
* Washington D.C.

* Seattle
* Minneapolis
* St. Paul In fact, Jesuit schools are seeking the most radical, offensive personalities they can find to not only teach their students but hold tenure and leadership.

> *A theology professor advancing a sexualized interpretation of the Bible claims Jesus was a "drag king" who had "queer desires."*
>
> *Tat-siong Benny Liew, chair of New Testament Studies at the College of the Holy Cross, has written extensively on gender, sexuality and race in the Bible, coming to the conclusion that Jesus was God, man and gender fluid.*
>
> *In a 2009 volume he co-edited, "They Were All Together in One Place?: Toward Minority Biblical Criticism," Mr. Liew argues Christ "ends up as a drag-kingly bride in his passion" and engages in "(homo)sexual bonding" on the cross.*
>
> *"What I am suggesting is that, when Jesus' body is being penetrated, his thoughts are on his father," the professor continues. "He is, in other words, imagining his passion experience as a (masochistic?) sexual relation with his own Father."*
>
> *In his gospel, John invites his readers "to perform a kind of pan-eroticism" when the apostle Thomas puts his finger in Jesus' side following the resurrection, the New Testament scholar argues.*
>
> *Mr. Liew's unorthodox views were unearthed by **The Fenwick Review**, the student newspaper of the Jesuit liberal arts college in Worchester, Massachusetts.*
>
> *The article points out that many of Mr. Liew's publications, including "They Were All Together in One Place?" are behind display cases in the Religious Studies Department.*
>
> *Mr. Liew is often responsible for teaching the college's primary New Testament class, the **Review** reported, and has also taught "Sex, Money, Power, and Sacred Texts" and "Apocalyptic Then and Now."*

> *"The position and prestige which accompany an endowed chair in Religious Studies testify to the esteem in which his work is held by the College's administration and academic community," the* ***Review*** *reported. "He continues to be held up as an example and a bold successor to the learned and discerning tradition of our Catholic and Jesuit College of the Holy Cross."* ~ The Washington Times[109]

To equate any part of what Jesus Christ endured as sexual requires complete cognitive dysfunction, at best, and extreme sociopathic deviancy at worst.

The Roman Empire was one of the most brutal in history when it came to torturing and executing prisoners.

Scourging was usually done with the whips that were embedded with bits of metal or broken sea shells to attach to the skin and rip it open when the task-master flicked his wrist.

The crown of thorns beat into the head of Jesus were the robust thorns of the Umbrella Acacia (common to the Middle East and Africa). They grow both straight and hooked.

Having massive spikes hammered into your hands and feet is anything but "sexual", as is the time endured suspended by them until you suffocate under your own weight.

It also takes some looking to find such an individual and put them in charge of New Testament Studies, but Jesuits like Fr. Gilles Mongeau are up to the task.

In 2017, Mongeau of Our Lady of Lourdes parish in Toronto was the associate professor of Systematic Theology at Regis College there. He used his position to help promote a "transgender equality" bill in the Canadian Parliament.[110]

2017 was a big year for the Vatican's homosexual "out-reach".

In Rome, the "Vatican police"[lxxxvii] were forced to break up a hub of homosexual orgies and drug use at the offices of the Inquisition (now known as "The Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith"). A low-level Priest was sent to a convent for a "special retreat". Currently, one of the Congregation's chief tasks is "tackling clerical [sex] abuse".[111]

Back in New York City, the “LGBT ministry” at Saint Francis of Assisi Catholic Parish was busy hosting Cinco de Mayo for the many Hispanic Catholics (both legal and illegal) at “Therapy”, an infamous “gay bar”.[112]

Media personality and Editor of *America* magazine, Father James Martin, S.J. is frequently proclaiming his glee at fellow Jesuits like Father Damian Torres-Botello “coming out”.[113] Torres-Botello was then given a column at America to express how being homosexual is the “image of God”.[114]

In typical Jesuit manipulation, at the 2018 World Meeting of Families in Dublin, Ireland, the Vatican appeased Conservative Catholics by keeping out an overt “LGBT” presence but then invited Martin to lead a protest.[115] As he excoriated Catholic families for being “homophobic”, allies outside the event disrupted it with demonstrations.

Far-Left Catholic politicians like Katherine Zappone made statements blasting the World Meeting of Families for being “intolerant”.

Like her Prime Minister, Zappone isn’t Irish, she’s an American transplant, educated by Jesuits at Boston College and is now the “Minister for Children and Youth Affairs”, doubtless overseeing that Ireland’s future generations are today’s victims, tomorrow’s tragedies.

In perfect Jesuit double-speak, Martin told Catholic families that homosexuals are “as much as part of the Church as Pope Francis, the local bishop or the [parish Priest]...”[lxxxviii]

Indeed.

Twisted Sister

Another reason why Radu Florescu’s sister Yvonne would choose the name “John the Baptist” upon her consecration as a Benedictine nun is Johannism.

Johannism is a secret and powerful heresy within Catholic upper echelons that claims the Baptist was the true Messiah and Jesus of Nazareth was an imposter. It was Johannism that encouraged the Templars to spit upon their crucifixes, in their rites.[lxxxix] All the same, the action was enough to fuel a suppression of the Templars by the King of France, Philippe le Bel, on “unlucky” Friday the 13th in October of 1307.[xc]

Perhaps gender confusion is self-fulfilling prophecy amongst those doomed to become clergy.

In 1969, Sister Catherine Anne Cesnik was teaching at Archbishop Keogh High School in Baltimore when she went missing. Her body was later discovered in a Baltimore County landfill. She had been raped and brutally bludgeoned to death.

Fifty years later, a dedicated Catholic film-maker named Ryan White was commissioned to do a documentary on why: because the children of Archbishop Keogh were being raped, abused, violated and pimped to cops, judges and politicians by Priests there like the school Chaplain, Father Anthony Joseph Maskell and Religious Services Director, Father Neil Magnus. The events were half-a-century old and with no chance of any real justice, a single Catholic outlet managed a documentary of sympathy for the nun who was murdered by the predator clergy cabal because she was the only one at risk of not keeping quiet.

In gender-bending oddity, Cathy Cesnik's roommate was Sister Russell Phillips and their Mother Superior was Maurice Kelly.[xci]

"T.E."

In *Dracula, Prince of Many Faces*, Florescu and McNally open with a point quite pertinent to us — *The real Dracula, who ruled the territories that now constitute Romania, was born in 1431, the year that Joan of Arc was burned as a witch at the stake in Rouen, France.*[116]

At this time, the Ottoman Empire was the dominant military force, originating in Turkey. Its movement upward into eastern Europe quickly gained all of the West's attention.

The first "Ottoman Turk" was Osman bin Ertuğrul (unknown birth to approximately 1323 A.D.), sometimes called "Othman".

As is typical of Leftist Jesuit professors, the two encourage sympathy for the brutal Ottomans (yet toe the line for the fabricated "War on Terror".) Cunningly, they attack Rome to do it.

> *The designation **Ottoman** is derived from Othman, one of their early leaders. The Ottomans had been converted to the fundamentalist*

teachings of Islam by Turkoman tribes of Asia Minor whom they subjugated. Our image of the Turks may still be largely colored by nineteenth-century attitudes formed when individual sultans, attempting to stave off the inevitable symptoms of internal decay of their empire, massacred Greeks, Armenians, and Bulgarians on a massive scale. These subjugated peoples were subverting the Ottoman Empire, in the process of attempting to form nation states of their own. This oversimplified negative image of the Turks ought not to be applied without serious qualifications to Turkish rule in Dracula's time.

In fact, quite the reverse was true: the two great sultans of the Dracula era, Murad II (1421-1451) and, more directly, Mehmed II (1451-1481), in whose company our young prince was brought up, were, like their predecessors, splendid, worldly, and cultured personalities who patronized Italian artists and married the daughters of Balkan and Byzantine rulers. They were also farsighted politicians who taught Europe the lessons of religious toleration, by granting asylum to Jews and members of other minorities at a time when these minorities were being persecuted by the Roman Catholic church.

The Turks first crossed the Dardanelles Straits, which separate Europe from Asia, in 1353 ...[117]

It was the sexual deviancy of Murad and his son Mehmed that almost certainly made "Vlad the Impaler" the monster he became (more on that shortly).

Half a millennium[xcii] later such deviancy would mark the end of the Ottomans. Taking advantage of the chaos of the "Great War" (World War I), Elites in Britain sent "irregular" forces into the Middle East to encourage Arabs to rise up against the Empire with the promise of an independent State stretching from Syria to Yemen. The Ottomans weren't much of a threat to Europe anymore but chaos should never go to waste.

100,000 casualties later[xciii] the Ottoman Empire was gone but the Arab peoples were refused their own State, instead having their lands divided piecemeal for the benefit of those in power.

One Royal Army liaison in particular would rise to prominence and become the patriotic face of this Elite skullduggery — Thomas Edward Lawrence, also known as “T.E. Lawrence” and “Lawrence of Arabia”.

Thomas Edward “T.E.” Lawrence in 1919. Wikimedia Commons

Lawrence was an Arab-speaking archeologist before the war broke out and an ideal candidate for co-ordinating British aid to the uprising.

Like Joan of Arc, despite not being trained in military tactics or strategies, Lawrence proved himself quite adept and personally participated in several key battles.

According to Lawrence (there are no corroborating sources), on the night of November 20th, 1917, he was captured while on a clandestine reconnaissance mission near Dera´a (alternately spelled “Dera”, “Dara´a”, etc.), Syria, just north of Jordan. Refusing to give details — Chapter “LXXX” of his 1922 autobiography *Seven Pillars of Wisdom* — Lawrence stated that he was so brutally beaten he eventually ended up in an infirmary where he was able to make his escape. He also implied that he was sexually assaulted.

In 2004, a new edition was released of *Seven Pillars* with an extra 200 pages, several of which give lurid details of his capture. It was also revealed that Lawrence hired a man named John Bruce to “birch” him (beat with a wooden rod) annually and to write an account of his reaction.[118] Lawrence was never married.

Critics put all of this together and claim that Lawrence fabricated the event to mask his own perversion but biographer Dick Benson-Gyles has a different take.

Lawrence was the illegitimate son of his father’s adulterous affair with the nanny of his half-sisters. He spent his life trying to “maverick” his way into society.

He proposed to childhood friend, Janet Laurie, but she turned him down. His true love was the Lebanese woman who taught him Arabic, Farida al Akle. Benson-Gyles believes she is the “S.A.” *Seven Pillars* is dedicated to. She loved him as well but circumstances kept them apart.

Benson-Gyles also believes that the annual caning was a form of penance Lawrence required of himself for not fighting his abuse. If his account of being whipped through welts to opened flesh and at least one broken rib is true, it’s hard to blame him.

Lawrence died in 1935 at only 46 years of age from a motorcycle accident. Some believe he was a tortured soul and it was torture by Turks that helped make him so.

Son of the Jesuits

In 324 A.D., Constantine I moved the political capital of the Roman Empire to Byzantium, which he renamed after himself; “Constantinople”.

The split was predicted 700 years prior in a vision given to the King of Babylon, Nebuchadnezzar, and recorded in the Biblical Book of Daniel, Chapter 2. In it, the King saw a giant statue of a man with a head of gold, chest and arms of silver, torso and thighs of bronze and legs and feet of iron (having feet and toes mixed with clay).

A stone cut without hands struck those feet and shattered the entire statue.

Nebuchadnezzar threatened to torture and kill all of his wise men and their families unless they did their jobs and explained the vision which had greatly unsettled him. It was just about to come to pass when young Daniel volunteered to be a “seer”, believing that YHWH would reveal the vision to him and He did. This miracle elevated him greatly in the King’s Court.

Thanks to a complimentary vision given directly to Daniel and recorded in Chapter 7 of the same Book, comprising 4 beasts, it is clear that both the beasts and metals signify four specific empires.

The first was Babylon, the second was the co-operative of Medes and Persians, the third was Greece and the fourth is Rome.

It then becomes obvious that the split of the statue’s legs implies the Byzantine Empire existing simultaneously with Rome.

As Florescu and McNally explain, the split was not an amicable one and the now-transformed religious empire of Rome was happy to exploit any calamity to bring her sister back under her dominion.

> *At the gates of Europe stood the skeletal remains of the once mighty Byzantine Empire, with its proud leading city of Constantinople, built by Constantine in the year 330 at the site of Byzantium, a former Greek city-state at the Bosporus. Though heir to imperial Rome and thus often referred to as the East Roman Empire, its spoken language was Greek. The Byzantine church had separated itself from Rome in 1054 because the bishop of Constantinople refused to be subordinate to the bishop of a rival city that had fallen into decadence and barbarism — theological differences were manufactured later to justify the split. Extremely proud of its thousand-year-old history, Constantinople also claimed cultural and political superiority to the "upstart" medieval emperors, who had initially been established by the pope with Charlemagne's coronation in the year 800, and their successors. The empire was still immensely prestigious in the early 1400s, and the city acted as a magnet for powerful would-be conquerors from both the east and the west. They were all the more attracted because the city had lost its reputation for military invincibility since its occupation by Venice in 1204. The Eastern Orthodox emperors of Byzantium had frittered away their strength, fighting Roman Catholic crusaders and their Balkan rivals, specifically Bulgarian and Serbian rulers intent upon securing the imperial crown. When Dracula was born, Constantinople and its European hinterland still survived, like a salamander with an enormous head and an elongated body, that included the holy mountain, Athos, the despotate*[[xciv]] *of Mistra, Thessaloniki, and a few islands in the Aegean Sea.*
>
> *One of the more tragic aspects of the Turkish onslaught on Europe was the western powers' reluctance to defend the frontiers of their culture in eastern Europe.*[119]

By the 1500's, the crimes and abuse of the Vatican were more than enough to precipitate a "Protest" but it was yet another Medici Papacy that pushed

the sensibilities of one of his own Augustinian monks towards revolution.

> *Rome has done an excellent job covering the tracks of the true power players. Whilst truth-seekers focus on names like Soros, Rockefeller and Rothschild (urged on by well-placed propagandists), the names they* ***should*** *be looking in to escape them*[xxxvii] *— names like de Medici, Orsini, Colonna, Aldobrandini, Breakspear (alternately Breakspeare), Farnese...and Borgia. ...*
>
> *But* [Giovanni] *de Medici just had a certain flair for debauchery, and so he stood out from the crowd...on a white elephant.*
>
> > *It is almost enough to say that apologists who make pretence of defending Alexander VI*[[xcv]] *and Julius II abandon Leo X to the critical wolves. He satisfied only those "who looked upon the Papal Court as a centre of amusement" (****Catholic Encyclopedia****, Pecci ed., 1897, iii, p. 227). The belief that Leo began to indulge in unnatural vice after he became pope was so seriously held in Rome that the two leading historians of his time recorded the information.*
> >
> > *Guicciardini noted that the new pope accepted the pagan enjoyment of life and was "exceedingly devoted to the flesh, especially those pleasures which cannot, with decency, be mentioned" (****Istoria d'Italia****, 1832 ed., lib. xvi, ch. v, p. 254).*
> >
> > *The Church had scarcely a pope more dedicated to expensive pleasures or by whom money was so anxiously sought than Leo X. Pope Julius II had earlier bestowed indulgences on all who contributed towards building the basilica of St. Peter in Vatican City, and Leo X rapidly expanded upon the doctrine. An indulgence was the sale of dispensations to secure mainly the rich from the threat of burning or the bogus release from sins such as murder, polygamy, sacrilege, perjury and witchcraft (****Indulgences: Their Origin, Nature and Development****, Quaracchi, 1897). For a sum of money, property or some penitential act, a pardon was conveyed, or a release from the pains of purgatory or guilt or the forgiveness of sins was granted to any person who bestowed wealth upon the Church. The year*

> *after his election, he sold the archbishopric of Mainz and two bishoprics to a rich, loose-living young noble, Albert of Brandenburg, for a huge sum and permitted him to recover his investment by the sordid traffic in indulgences which a few years later inflamed Martin Luther. The rich were not the only group he targeted: "Here … the love of money was the chief root of the evil; indulgences were employed by mercenary ecclesiastics as a means of pecuniary gain … money was extracted from the simple-minded among the faithful by promising them perpetual happiness in this world and eternal glory in the next." (**Catholic Encyclopedia**, vii, p. 787) And that was some 500 years before the Vatican received its first banking license. ~ Bushby*[120]

Medici's extravagance knew no bounds.

> *Pope Leo and his* [court celebrated] *as if there was no cost involved. He is often quoted for saying to his brother Guiliano, "Since God has given us the papacy, let us enjoy it." He had elaborate feasts every night, and hosted large celebrations in Rome, including a parade where he rode on the back of a white elephant. ... He had few limits when it came to dishing out money, and soon enough, he had more or less bankrupted the* [C]*hurch. ~ MaItaly*[121]

—Neither did his hubris at replenishing treasury funds.

> *While negotiating with kings and emperors for the future of Europe, Leo found time for the pleasures he loved. Artists, writers, and musicians came to Rome from all over Italy at his request. He created special projects to take advantage of the outstanding talents of the artist Raphael. He set up a Greek printing press in Rome and encouraged the Jewish community in the city to begin their own printing operation. Church positions were found for writers, poets, and translators, some of the more favored of whom he made bishops. Leo himself was a master of classical Latin and delighted in giving impromptu speeches in the style of Cicero. He commissioned plays and had them performed before his court. As a connoisseur of the arts, he was unequaled*

> *in Europe. While he was* [P]*ope, Rome became the cultural center of the West.*
>
> *Leo particularly liked to hunt and did so in a grand style. The Pope and his entourage beginning a chase was as much a show for the Roman people as a sport for the papal court. He would frequently attend Mass before he set out and would sometimes offer the Mass himself.*[[xcvi]] *But religion, although valuable, never interfered with what he considered the important demands of his position. When the papal finances began to show the strain of Leo's extravagant expenses, he unhesitatingly made use of his religious powers for added income. ~ Encyclopedia.com*[122]

Medici used several tactics to fill his emptying coffers. One was to sell bishoprics and cardinalcies to wealthy Aristocrats.

Soon, possible dioceses ran out and the fractionalizing or creating of new ones left their responsibilities unimpressive. The proud ruling class would pay little to have control over tiny hamlets.

A different tactic would be to finance a Crusade against the Ottoman Turks. Crusades had been successful endeavors for the Papacy in years past, despite their disorganized failures in the Holy Land.

But as time wore on, contributors noticed Crusader armies failed to materialize.

> *At the last meeting of the Fifth Lateran Council, another crusade was approved, and Leo chose eight cardinals to plan it. They encouraged Leo to sell indulgences so they would have enough money for the war. The pope declared: There* [are] *many, and there will be many, who will gladly purchase eternal life for a small price, if they see that others are fighting for God in earnest, rather than pretending to do so.*
>
> *However, some people started to doubt whether the crusade would ever take place. Money raised for some crusades in the past had been used for other things, and the crusades never happened. People also questioned the sale of indulgences. When Leo sent a notice about indulgences to France, the French*

> *representative responded: People have been deceived so often by (the offer of indulgences), from which nothing has resulted, that they now regard them as a deception, clever tricks to extract their money.*
>
> *Large sums of money were raised, but a crusade never took place. The money was quickly spent on other things. Leo soon became the target of criticism. ~ Robin S. Doak*[123]

> *It was the Avignon Papacy*[xcvii] *that provided de Medici with a pitch that no devout Roman Catholic could turn down.*
>
> *The original St. Peter's of Constantine was a dilapidated shambles. Leo would make use of his extensive artist connections and call upon the best in the realm — from Michelangelo (who actually **lived** with the Medicis for several years) to Raphael — to build and decorate a cathedral worthy of Rome ... and God, of course. ~* Secret History , Cirucci[120]

Despite the increasing strength of the Ottoman push towards Europe, the Catholic countries of the West remained uninterested in any more "Crusades".

> *Medieval Spain, apart from a few northern kingdoms ... had survived as independent states ...*
>
> *These free kingdoms had gradually succeeded in liberating the territory* [from their Muslim conquerors] *in a series of wars, the **Reconquista**, which had deeply stamped themselves upon the character of the people, particularly in the kingdom of Castile: the inhabitants were fanatically Catholic and intolerant and were prepared for almost any sacrifice in defense of their land.*[121]

The implication from our two intrepid Jesuit professors is that the fanatical and intolerant Catholicism of Spain was justified by a Muslim threat. However, as has already been noted, this same fanatical intolerance was viciously demonstrated against Spanish Christians for their breaking with the "Mother Church" — so much so that "Spanish Inquisition" became a by-word for any vicious, brutal torture.[xcviii]

At this point in history, “Italy” was a chaos of feuding wealthy Aristocrat families and city-states with their ruthless ambition aimed ultimately for leadership in Rome.

Even Florescu and McNally were forthright enough to admit that modern usury banking came from *Romans*, not Jews. However, they excuse the event as a side-effect of greedy capitalist “modernism”.

> *In the north, the prestigious Medici were more interested in making money by establishing the first international bank in Europe, assuredly another symptom of the modernism of the age. They used the resources of the powerful bank, with its numerous affiliates in various capitals, to finance trade, indulge in the frills of a luxurious life, win political and papal elections, and buy marriage connections with the noblest of families, including blue-blooded royalty. Cosimo, in a sense the founder of the dynasty, became the self-styled sponsor of the classical renaissance. Later, his grandson. Lorenzo the Magnificent, destroyed the last vestiges of constitutional government in the north. In other Italian states, political standards had sunk to an abysmal low as the medieval communes had their liberties subverted by tyrannicide.*[[xcix]] *This period in Italy (and elsewhere) was also the age of the ambitious and unscrupulous autocrats sometimes referred to as the* ***condottieri****. These men were guided solely by ambition in seeking to acquire political power, by any means possible, even destroying whole rival families in the process.*[122], [c]

The very word “bank” is derived from the counter the Medici money-changers conducted their business over; *banco*.

But the Medici didn’t invent modern usury banking, they simply perfected it. It was the Vatican shock-troops, themselves — the Templars — who rode banking to its all-powerful conclusion.

> ***Temple or Bank?***
>
> *The needless, fabricated bloodshed between Rome and Mecca gave birth to a new class of Praetorian Guard that would metastasize into the organizations that eventually conquered the world in secret for the Vatican.*

In 1065, Jerusalem was taken by the Turks and the Christians were treated badly enough to where, throughout Christendom [again we have the erroneous conflation of ***Catholic*** with "Christian"], *people were stirred to fight and recapture the city. Another reason for the Crusades stems from the Church's desire to block any Islamic incursion into Christian lands. On November 27th 1095, Pope Urban II gave a speech in which he exhorted Christians to rise up against Muslims in the Holy Land. At this point in time, Muslims controlled Spain and parts of Eastern Europe. Thousands responded to the call and took up the sword but only around 1,000 ever made it to Jerusalem. The western Christians united with the Byzantines in the east and in 1099, the Crusaders, led by Godfrey of Bouillon, captured Jerusalem back from the Turks after a five week siege. When the holy sites were in Christian hands, Westerners began traveling to the area in record numbers. Outside the city walls, life was dangerous and there became a need for an escort service which is when the first Knights Templars came forward. ~ Ancient Origins*[54]

The ***Poor Fellow-Soldiers of Christ and of the Temple of Solomon***[[ci]] *(Latin:* ***Pauperes commilitones Christi Templique Salomonici****), commonly known as the* ***Knights Templar****, the* ***Order of Solomon's Temple*** *(French: Ordre du Temple or Templiers) or simply as* ***Templars****, were among the wealthiest and most powerful of the Western Christian military orders[4] and were prominent actors in Christian finance.*[[cii]] *The organisation existed for nearly two centuries during the Middle Ages. ...*

After the First Crusade captured Jerusalem in 1099, many Christians made pilgrimages to various Holy Places in the Holy Land.[[ciii]] *However, though the city of Jerusalem was under relatively secure control, the rest of Outremer was not. Bandits and marauding highwaymen preyed upon pilgrims who were routinely slaughtered, sometimes by the hundreds, as they*

attempted to make the journey from the coastline at Jaffa into the interior of the Holy Land.[10]

In 1119, the French knight Hugues de Payens approached King Baldwin II of Jerusalem and Warmund, Patriarch of Jerusalem, and proposed creating a monastic order for the protection of these pilgrims. King Baldwin and Patriarch Warmund agreed to the request, probably at the Council of Nablus in January 1120, and the king granted the Templars a headquarters in a wing of the royal palace on the Temple Mount in the captured Al-Aqsa Mosque.[11] *The Temple Mount had a mystique because it was above what was believed to be the ruins of the Temple of Solomon.*[5][12] *The Crusaders therefore referred to the Al Aqsa Mosque as Solomon's Temple, and from this location the new order took the name of* ***Poor Knights of Christ and the Temple of Solomon****, or "Templar" knights. The order, with about nine knights including Godfrey de Saint-Omer and André de Montbard, had few financial resources and relied on donations to survive. Their emblem was of two knights riding on a single horse, emphasising the order's poverty.*[13] *~ Wikipedia*[55]

For nearly two centuries this organization was the most powerful order in the medieval world. They were the first standing army in Europe since the fall of the Roman Empire and by the time they reached their pinnacle of power in 1300, it is said they numbered in the tens of thousands. In the beginning, there were a total of nine founding knights who made up the organization and were all related to one another through blood or marriage. As both monks and soldiers, they were a paradox without precedent since there had never been praying Priests who took up arms who also took vows of poverty, obedience and celibacy. Knights Templars did not surrender unless they were outnumbered three to one and believed that since they were fighting for God they would be immediately sent up to heaven upon falling in battle. ~ Ancient Origins[56]

As the Templars rose in power and authority they began to delve into secret, hidden knowledge that allowed them to remain more prominent and important than those outside their order. They utilized this knowledge to innovate a system of communication amongst themselves that facilitated how pilgrims could move through dangerous lands without risk of having their wealth robbed by brigands.

The Templars established forts, lodges and temples at strategic locations where travelers could turn in their valuables and get an encoded writ as receipt that only Templars could decipher. The writ could then be cashed in at any other Templar fort or lodge.

This was an innovation offered by no one else and the Templars charged a fee based upon the amount guarded; usury. ~ Secret History, Cirucci[123]

The Ottomans, Crusading and Rome's priority to subjugate Constantinople above them all were the major issues at the birth of Vlad the Impaler.

The papacy, which controlled Rome and the central neck of the Italian peninsula as a temporal power[[civ]] *was in difficulties that greatly weakened its natural role in any crusade and siphoned off the prestige it had gained by having led the crusading movement in the past. At the time, the church*[[cv]] *was still recovering from the most dangerous crisis in its history, when two popes, one in Rome, the other at Avignon, vied for supremacy. The great church council summoned at Basel in 1431, the year of Dracula's birth, to resolve this conflict was followed by the danger compounded when the Holy Roman Emperor attempted to substitute "government by cardinals" for the rule of a single pope. This far more serious threat was resisted with alacrity by the Venetian pope Eugenius IV and his chief spokesman, Giuliano Cardinal Cesarini, both of whom were to be closely connected with Balkan crusading in the 1440s. ...*

In essence, papal energies were aimed at diverting attention from the problems within the Roman church by working at healing the schism between Eastern Orthodoxy and Roman Catholicism,[[cvi]] *which had divided the two churches since 1054. Reunion, in fact, was to be the precondition for a joint eastern and western crusade against the Turks.*

> *A historic agreement was reached, at least on paper, at the Council of Florence in 1439, helped by the presence of the emperor of Constantinople, John VIII. However, many of the Orthodox bishops, notably the Russians and the Romanians, refused to append their signatures to the final document. Eugenius's successor, Pope Nicholas V, finally reasserted the authority of Saint Peter by compelling the resignation of all rival popes,*[[cvii]] *thereby ending the internal danger to the papacy. He made less progress, however, in implementing the reunion between the two churches. And, rather than go crusading, this splendid figure,*[[cviii]] *who made Rome the headquarters of the Renaissance, preferred to collect Greek and Latin manuscripts, founded the Vatican Library, patronized dangerous critics such as the humanist Lorenzo Valla, and reconstructed St. Peter's Church in the style of a Roman basilica. As a man of peace he showed little concern, even for the fate of Constantinople, which fell to the Turks under his pontificate. However, guilt for this neglect ultimately shortened his life.* [124]

"Dracula's Pope"[cix] was a perfect representative for the age of the Impaler. He is consistently mischaracterized as a reprobate who "got religion" along with his world power.

> *It was the pontificate (1458-1464) of Enea Silvio de' Piccolomini, the future Pope Pius II, that most closely coincided with Dracula's reign. Piccolomini began his career as a libertine not devoid of literary talent and changed his ways only when he became a Priest in 1446.*
>
> *From 1459 onward the pope repeatedly appealed to the Christian powers to join in a common crusade, and he raised the monies to subsidize such a concerted movement. Indeed, Pius II, a thorough "Europeanisi," saw the Ottoman menace not merely as a danger for eastern Europe but for Christianity itself. Dracula alone responded to his call.* [125]

Other sources have Piccolomini actually taking his vows in 1447 — another "prodigy" who managed to skyrocket from Priest to Pope in only 11 years.

Piccolomini's predecessor was Alfonso de Borgia, "Pope Callixtus III".

Piccolomini proved his worth to rapidly become a “Pius” the decade previous to his ordination by working insurgency in England and Scotland as soon as Henry “broke” with the Papacy.

By “a libertine not devoid of literary talent”, the Jesuit professors mean with their confusing double-negative that Piccolomini penned the “erotic novel” *The Tale of the Two Lovers* in which married “Lucretia” burns in her heart for another man.

> *Lucretia, wounded by this grave sorrow, burnt by a secret flame, completely forgets that she is a wife. She hates her husband, and cherishes love’s wound, keeping Euryalus’ face stamped on her heart, nor gives her body any rest. She says to herself: “I do not know what is the matter, that I can no longer love my husband. His caresses do not please me, his kisses give me no delight, and his words weary me. Always before my eyes is the image of that stranger who, to-day, was nearest to the Emperor. Cast out these flames from your chaste breast, if you can, poor wretch. But if I could, I’d not be sick, and sick I am. Some power that is new to me drives me on against my will; my wishes urge me one way, my thoughts another, and knowing what is best, I pursue the worst. Oh, great and noble daughter of this city, what have you to do with a foreigner? Why burn for a stranger, and contemplate marriage into an alien world? Though you are tired of your husband, surely this land can produce one you could love. But, woe is me, what a face he has! Who would not be moved by his beauty, his youth, his rank, and nobleness: Truly, he moved my heart, and unless he helps me, I shall die. God grant a kinder fate!”*

This eulogizing of adultery is considered one of the most successful and popular works of its day, though, it’s not unfair to say that the author becoming Pope gave it far more visibility than if another had written it.

Meanwhile, and in contrast (but not really) the splintered “Germanies” were the flower of republican meritocracy by “electing” the “Holy Roman Emperor”.

> *This lack of moral fiber was particularly evident in the case of the Germanies — the Holy Roman Empire, which, unlike Russia on it easternmost fringes, was more dangerously threatened by the Turkish*

conquest. Including bishoprics, free cities, and larger and smaller princely states, there were over three hundred "Germanies" in Dracula's time, inhabited by people of various ethnic and linguistic backgrounds. The only common denominators within this amorphous, multilingual state (which, according to Voltaire, was "neither holy, nor Roman," and which was by no means exclusively Germanic in character) were the emperor and the waning influence of the Catholic church. Unlike other western states, where the principle of primogeniture was well established, Holy Roman Emperors were elected by a special committee composed of the heads of three archbishoprics and four principalities. The tendency of these electors was to try to select weak candidates who were unlikely to interfere with the power of the feudal states. The election of Sigismund, the son of Charles IV, emperor of Luxemburg, crowned German emperor in 1411, was an exception, and he was destined to make at least one major attempt at crusading. This may have been because in 1387, before his election, he had already succeeded to the throne of Hungary (in essence an eastern European power), having taken as his wife Mary, the daughter of the last French king of Hungary and Poland, Louis the Great. Thus there was established between Hungary and the Holy Roman Empire a dynastic link that was to last until the end of World War I. In addition, on the death of Sigismund's half-brother Wenceslas in 1419, Sigismund became king of Bohemia as well.[126]

Note this statement —

"*Unlike other western states, where the principle of primogeniture was well established...*"

What the Professors mean by "the principle of primogeniture" is the "Divine right of Kings" to rule over the citizenry simply because they have maintained an inbred bloodline of like tyrants.

Unfortunately, this system wasn't nearly as "democratic" as Florescu and McNally imply. To qualify for candidacy as a "Holy Roman Emperor" one needed to prove legitimate birth to a "Royal bloodline" at least four generations back!

But, worst of all for the “Germanies”, what united them was the Protest of an upstart Augustinian monk. Perhaps even more important than Luther’s astounding courage to stand up to the threat of death by torture for his 95 Theses against Papal Indulgences was the Luther Bible.

When it became apparent that his life was in danger, his benefactor, Frederick “the Wise” of Saxony (a Holy Roman Elector) “kidnapped” Luther and shut him up in Würzburg Castle. With nothing to do, the ex-Priest called for the Greek and Latin Bible manuscripts of his Humanist friend, Desiderius Erasmus, and he began to painstakingly translate the Bible (heretofore *verboten* to non-clergy; “laity”).

It was critical to Luther that his Bible be readable to any peasant who was literate and he put exhaustive effort into using the language of the people (including slang and vernacular expressions). He would frequently sneak out of the castle and into the markets and pubs as “Junker Jörg” (“Sir George” the roving Knight) just to listen to how commoners spoke to each other.[cx]

The new Germany, united by Luther’s Protest and Bible (rapidly reprinted by the movable-type printing press invented just a few kilometers away and a few decades earlier by Johannes Gutenberg) garnered a hatred of Rome so severe it evoked unspeakable punishments from the Vatican: World War I, World War II and the “Cold War”.

With the exception of conflating “Christian” with “Catholic”, the professors did lay a solid historical background for our monster impaler.

> *When* [“Holy Roman Emperor”] *Sigismund* [of Luxembourg] *died in 1437, his three kingdoms were eventually transferred to Albert of Habsburg, the ruler of the tiny Austrian duchy, who had married Sigismund’s daughter Elizabeth. Never elected emperor, Albert II ruled for only two years. His son Ladislas, born after the death of his father (hence his sobriquet Posthumous), became the heir to Austria, Bohemia, and Hungary, though he could not effectively rule until he should come of age. Vienna, the seat of Ladislas’s government, was located, like Buda, on the Danube and thus dangerously exposed to Turkish attack. But with Albert’s passing, the real arbiter of the eastern European situation, and the leader of the anti-Ottoman crusade,*

*became John Hunyadi, viceroy of Hungary and governor general (“**voivode**”*[[cxi]]*) of Transylvania. He was also for a time the political and military mentor of Dracula.*

The imperial title was next bestowed upon the Habsburg Frederick III (1440-1493), the last Holy Roman Emperor to be crowned in Rome (1452, though he had been king of Germany, as Frederick IV, since Albert’s death), who showed little taste for crusading. He was more interested in maintaining the illusion that as duke of Austria he, rather than Hunyadi’s son and successor, Matthias, was the legitimate king of Hungary, since the crown of St. Stephen, which alone conferred legitimacy, was kept safely hidden in the vaults of his palace at Wiener Neustadt. (The symbolic holy crown, topped by a heavy golden cross and bedecked with precious jewels, was originally given by Pope Sylvester II to the first king of Hungary, [“]*St.*[”] *Stephen,*[[cxii]] *in the year 1000, to commemorate Hungary’s entry into the* [“]*Christian community of states*[”] *through the king’s conversion to Catholicism.* [[cxiii]]*) In order to while away the long wintry nights at his desolate court at Wiener Neustadt, Frederick engaged the services of one Michael Beheim, a soldier of fortune and German **Meisiersinger**, who composed a famous poem on the subject of Dracula.*[127]

In a similar portion of described history, Florescu and McNally touch upon the seed truths of Catholic tyranny as exercised by the Elite — political marriages to pre-pubescent girls and endless wars of hacking, maiming, raping and pillaging just to expand the boundaries of the current tyrant-king in power, always first blessed off by the “Successor of Saint Peter”.

Poland was now by far the most powerful eastern European state. Its power was achieved in 1384, when the second daughter of Louis the Great[[cxiv]] *of Hungary, Jadwiga (whose older sister, Mary, had been Emperor Sigismund’s first wife), **then barely ten years old*** [emphasis added], *married the pagan Lithuanian grand duke Jagiello, on the condition that he accept conversion to Catholicism.* [[cxv]]*He took the Christian name Ladislas II. With this union was born a vast confederation of states, which stretched from the Baltic coast across the Ukraine to the Black Sea, sustained by the intensive Catholicism of*

> *its people, the courage of its kings, and the chivalry of its nobles. Ladislas III, son of Jagiello, became the spiritual leader of two successive crusades, and perished in battle as a knight, fighting the Turks in the company of Dracula's older brother. His successor, Casimir IV (1447-1492), did not live up to this tradition, in part because of the threat of insurgent German pressures in the Baltic, Crimean Tatars in the Ukraine, and the ambitions of Grand Duke Ivan III of Moscow.*
>
> *Thus, in a confrontational world more interested in the acquisition of political power, the accumulation of material wealth, and the elimination of the tired vestiges of the monopoly once exercised by the Roman Catholic church, whether one looked east or west, there were few states indeed ready to rekindle the Crusader spirit. Dracula's country represented one of the few exceptions.*[128]

And now we see how good Left-leaning Catholics get tenure at Jesuit schools even though they sometimes attack the "mother Church".

> *" — and the elimination of the tired vestiges of the monopoly once exercised by the Roman Catholic church..."*

Even if you knew nothing of how Rome owns and controls all centers of power from governments to militaries to "intelligence" to organized crime, would you still make such a disarming statement about the religion of 2 billion people?

As one delves into the details of Medieval feudalism and the shocking behaviors of "kings", sides get chosen. In the "us vs. them" mindset, monsters like the Borgias and Vlad "Dracula" Țepeș are just products of their age (that is, if you're an author who wants to be published).

There's no need to be upset by the details little-discussed by teachers, "journalists" or "historians" because that was "long ago".

But, in fact, a return to overt feudalism is one of the Vatican's highest agendas.

> *The slave/gladiator revolt of the Third Servile War against Rome in the 1st Century BC pitted Crixus, Oenomaus and Spartacus against the*

finest army in the world. Starting with a revolt at the gladiator training camp near Capua, the rebels repeatedly defeated Roman attempts to stop them. These successes combined with unclear goals allowed the Romans time to martial Crassus and his legions to corner the slave army in southern Italy. The former slaves made themselves vulnerable because they looted the countryside instead of striking the capital or dispersing across the Alps.[456]

Ever-so-slowly, mankind matured and recovered from the curse of making men king. [I Samuel 8:1-18] The Divine model given the Jews was for YHWH to be the governing Authority with decentralized judges to administer order and justice.

But Luciferians seek ***control*** *over their fellow man.*

In large nations, a feudal system was developed to oppress the people with a tiny Elite at the top, insulated by a pampered Aristocracy around them, protected by a Praetorian class of knights/samurai/soldiers who enforced the plundering of the peasantry.

Yet even the Aristocracy rebelled, and the lords of England attempted an unheard-of thing in 1215; they forced the monarch of their time — King John — to limit his power by a document.

The Magna Carta ushered in the "rule of law" (but only for the Aristocracy) creating a "due process" for criminal charges, representation for taxation or impressment into military service and punishment commensurate with the crime — which had to be proven to have been committed — as well as several other important precedents.

Few know that one of the most powerful enemies of the Magna Carta was the Vatican.

> *The Vatican has consistently fought every democratic advance from absolute monarchies toward government by the people, beginning with England's Magna Carta (June 15, 1215), "the mother of European Constitutions." That vital document was denounced immediately by Pope Innocent III (1198-1216), who "pronounced it null and void and excommunicated the English barons who obtained it"*[2] *and absolved the king of his oath to the*

> *barons.[3] Encouraged by the pope, King John brought in foreign mercenaries to fight the barons, bringing great destruction upon the country. Subsequent popes did all in their power to help John's successor, Henry III, overturn the Magna Carta, impoverishing the country with papal taxes (salaries to the numerous imported Italian Priests were three times the crown's annual revenue). Nevertheless, the barons finally prevailed. ~* ***A Woman Rides The Beast****, Dave Hunt*[457]

> *One of the most renown accounts of Christian martyrdom is* ***Foxe's Book of Martyrs*** *and it is entirely focused on how the Catholic Church viciously and brutally attempted to maintain complete control of Christendom and the Bible. ~* *Illuminati Unmasked*, Cirucci[129]

If Vlad Ţepeş can be excused as just a "man of his age" it was an age created by the Catholic Church, an institution that did and still does encourage leaders to be as corrupt and ruthless as possible — as long as they still take direction from Rome.

> *On a darker note, one of the most terrifying inventions associated with this period of technological progress in Europe was that of gunpowder, with its deafening noise and bright flash. It revolutionized warfare by making killing much easier than it had been during the Middle Ages, with the refined set of dos and don'ts instilled into the code of chivalry, which formed the most important aspect of the education of a young knight. The candidate was taught to respect human life, protect women and children, and observe the right of an enemy to seek sanctuary in a church. From the Renaissance onward, wars involved paid professionals who had little or no concern for the sanctity of human life. They were taught to kill, not to maim or to disarm. No distinction between soldiers and civilians was to be made any longer. The cannon, the monopoly of the tyrant, used by Dracula's armies, was the supreme instrument of destruction, and only exceedingly thick walls could save civilian populations from its devastations. ~* Florescu & McNally[130]

At best, this allusion to so-called "chivalry" is a gross exaggeration. Prior to gunpowder (which did, indeed, make slaughter even more impersonal), there was nothing "chivalrous" about hacking or stabbing another human

being to death, especially if the only outcome was that your Catholic “liege lord” added more land to his already massive holdings.

If “chivalry” ever existed in any form, it was an agreement between Praetorians to ease up on each other (“knights”, “officers”, task-masters) but the common soldiery never benefited from such a “code”.

This is particularly evident in the Crusades of Catholic “knights” against the Christians of Europe — heinous crimes erased from history.

> *At Lombers in 1165 AD, Catholic Priests engaged in discussion with Catharist*[[cxvi]] *doctors.*
>
> *A few years later in 1167 AD, a Catharist synod, in which heretics from Languedoc, Bulgaria and Italy took part, was held undisturbed at Saint Félix de Caraman, near Toulouse. The apparent head of the Cathars of the world consecrated four or five new bishops, and gave the religion a splendid public triumph. Each bishop had a* ***Filius Major*** *and a* ***Filius Minor*** *as presbyters, and a deacon. The simple honesty of the* ***Bonhommes*** *impressed the people and they remained happy not to be obliged by the authority of Rome other than in name.*
>
> *Alexander III, in the Third Lateran Council of 1179, repeated the cry for the use of force and held out tempting baits to those who murdered heretics. To princes he gave the right to imprison offenders and, appealing to their greed, to confiscate their property. To all who would “take up arms” against them, he promised two years’ remission of penance and even greater privileges. Henry, cardinal-bishop of Albano, in 1180-1181, attempted an armed expedition against the stronghold of heretics at Lavaur and against Raymond Roger, viscount of Beziers, their acknowledged protector, taking Lavaur and forcing the submission of Raymond Roger.*
>
> *Pope Lucius II in 1184 made a new departure. He laid down the penalties of heresy as exile, confiscation, and infamy or loss of civil rights. He threatened unwilling secular rulers with excommunication and interdict, and enacted that, whereas under current law a bishop was to try a heretic in open court when a man was charged, the bishop must now actively seek heretics. They had to institute a search, in*

*Latin, an "**inquisitio**". Still, few secular rulers did more than shrug their shoulders. Heresy did not concern them.*

This was the situation when, in 1198, Innocent III donned the Papal tiara. Profoundly religious popes such as Gregory I, Gregory VII, and Innocent III did Western civilization the most deadly injury. Innocent III came with an arsenal of anathemas.

When a prince grinned at a hurled anathema, Innocent set armies in motion and drenched the man's kingdom with blood as Gregory VII had done. The bloody genocide which followed has no parallel in history. ...

Innocent III resolved to suppress the Albigenses,[[cxvii]] *and in 1198 and 1199 sent into the affected regions two Cistercian monks, Regnier and Guy, and in 1203 two monks of Fontfroide, Peter of Castelnau and Raoul, with whom, in 1204, he even associated the Cistercian abbot, Arnaud. For nine years, Innocent III had monks preaching in the heretical provinces of Languedoc urging the bishops and princes to persecute, but they were quite ineffective. Even the local bishops rejected the extraordinary authority the pope had conferred upon these monks, and, in 1204, he suspended the authority of the bishops. His chief legate, Pierre de Castelnau, received instructions in 1207 to arrange a warlike campaign of the princes, and he excommunicated Raymond VI, count of Toulouse, as an abetter of heresy.*

In the bad atmosphere created, the legate Peter of Castelnau was murdered (1209).

Innocent angrily proclaimed that Raymond, Count of Toulouse, was responsible. The accusation was unlikely, and, in later life, Innocent admitted there was no evidence.

Perhaps it was a Catholic provocation, because it became the excuse for the pope to order the Cistercians to preach the crusade against the Albigenses. The "great" pope rang out a call to arms, and sorely threatened with excommunications, interdicts and anathemas the Christian princes and knights who did not obey it. There was no need of threats. In the thirteenth century, war meant unlimited loot, and the

Albigensian towns were amongst the most prosperous in Europe. The nobility of northern France saw the chance to plunder the wealthy region of the south and supported the crusade.

The Church set France into civil war for twenty years.

The crusade ensured that Albigensian lands were handed over to French Catholic barons. A rough parallel is the president of the United States allowing Mafia gangsters[[cxviii]] — [Catholic] *knights in those days had no higher ethic — to take every pimp and drug baron to invade and sack Singapore, Sydney and Tokyo. A contemporary poet said that twenty thousand knights and two hundred thousand footmen converged upon the Albigensians. They were led by Arnold, the Cistercian Abbot of Citeaux — as bloody a Priest as Torquemada — and a seedy Anglo-French adventurer, Simon de Montfort, whose purse was empty, according to Joseph McCabe. The King of France was not in it — at first, only because his terms to the pope were exorbitant.*

The robber barons that constituted the crusade massed for the campaign on 24 June 1209, at the feast of St. John the Baptist,[[cxix]] *patron saint of Lyons. Was this significant in terms of Cathar belief? Caesarius of Heisterbach records in* ***Dialogus Miraculorum*** *that, when, at the first large town, Béziers, soldiers asked the Papal legate in charge of the crusade how they could distinguish between heretics and orthodox, the Abbot of Citeaux famously answered: Show mercy neither to order, nor to age, nor to sex… Cathar or Catholic, kill them all… God will know his own (…****caedite eos… novit enim Dominus qui sunt eius****).*[[cxx]]

Arnold himself reported to the pope they had indeed spared neither rank, age nor sex and had massacred 20,000 people. Some have put the figure at 40,000. 6000 were said to have sheltered in the Catholic Church of S Madeleine, and were probably therefore mainly Catholics. It was burned and all were murdered. As each town was taken, the inhabitants were put to the sword without distinction of age or sex.

Clergymen in the army distinguished themselves by their ferocity. Simon de Montfort diligently incinerated the heretics, 140 at Minerve, 300 at Lavour, 60 at Le Cassés. A troubadour wrote of Simon de

Montfort. He ought to "wear a crown and be resplendent in the heavens", if, "by abolishing honour, by making pride victorious, by stimulating evil and extinguishing good, if by killing women and slaughtering infants, one can in this world achieve salvation in Christ". ~ Magee[131]

This is in perfect harmony with what has been leaked to be the "Fourth Vow", "Extreme Oath of Unction", "Extreme Oath of Induction" or "Blood Oath" taken by only the most loyal Jesuits (after having proved themselves capable of any aberration or abomination given them by the Superior General). [below is an excerpt]

Superior:

My son, heretofore you have been taught to act the dissembler: among Roman Catholics to be a Roman Catholic, and to be a spy even among your own brethren; to believe no man, to trust no man. Among the Reformers, to be a reformer; among the Huguenots, to be a Huguenot; among the Calvinists, to be a Calvinist; among other Protestants, generally to be a Protestant, and obtaining their confidence, to seek even to preach from their pulpits, and to denounce with all the vehemence in your nature our Holy Religion and the Pope; and even to descend so low as to become a Jew among Jews, that you might be enabled to gather together all information for the benefit of your Order as a faithful soldier of the Pope.

You have been taught to insidiously plant the seeds of jealousy and hatred between communities, provinces, states that were at peace, and incite them to deeds of blood, involving them in war with each other, and to create revolutions and civil wars in countries that were independent and prosperous, cultivating the arts and the sciences and enjoying the blessings of peace. To take sides with the combatants and to act secretly with your brother Jesuit, who might be engaged on the other side, but openly opposed to that with which you might be connected, only that the Church might be the gainer in the end, in the conditions fixed in the treaties for peace and that the end justifies the means.

You have been taught your duty as a spy, to gather all statistics, facts and information in your power from every source; to ingratiate yourself into the confidence of the family circle of Protestants and heretics of every class and character, as well as that of the merchant, the banker, the lawyer, among the schools and universities, in parliaments and legislatures, and the judiciaries and councils of state, and to be all things to all men, for the Pope's sake, whose servants we are unto death. ...

Initiate:

"I, ____ now, in the presence of Almighty God, the Blessed Virgin Mary, the blessed Michael the Archangel, the blessed St. John the Baptist, the holy Apostles St. Peter and St. Paul and all the saints and sacred hosts of heaven, and to you, my ghostly father, the Superior General of the Society of Jesus, founded by St. Ignatius Loyola in the Pontificate of Paul the Third, and continued to the present, do by the womb of the virgin, the matrix of God, and the rod of Jesus Christ, declare and swear, that his holiness the Pope is Christ's Vice-regent and is the true and only head of the Catholic or Universal Church throughout the earth; and that by virtue of the keys of binding and loosing, given to his Holiness by my Savior, Jesus Christ, he hath power to depose heretical kings, princes, states, commonwealths and governments, all being illegal without his sacred confirmation and that they may safely be destroyed. Therefore, to the utmost of my power I shall and will defend this doctrine of his Holiness' right and custom against all usurpers of the heretical or Protestant authority whatever, especially the Lutheran of Germany, Holland, Denmark, Sweden, Norway, and the now pretended authority and churches of England and Scotland, and branches of the same now established in Ireland and on the Continent of America and elsewhere; and all adherents in regard that they be usurped and heretical, opposing the sacred Mother Church of Rome. I do now renounce and disown any allegiance as due to any heretical king, prince or state named Protestants or Liberals, or obedience to any of the laws, magistrates or officers."

"I do further declare that the doctrine of the churches of England and Scotland, of the Calvinists, Huguenots and others of the name Protestants or Liberals to be damnable and they themselves damned who will not forsake the same."

"I do further declare, that I will help, assist, and advise all or any of his Holiness' agents in any place wherever I shall be, in Switzerland, Germany, Holland, Denmark, Sweden, Norway, England, Ireland or America, or in any other Kingdom or territory I shall come to, and do my uttermost to extirpate the heretical Protestants or Liberals' doctrines and to destroy all their pretended powers, regal or otherwise."

"I do further promise and declare, that notwithstanding I am dispensed with, to assume my religion heretical, for the propaganda of the Mother Church's interest, to keep secret and private all her agents' counsels from time to time, as they may entrust me and not to divulge, directly or indirectly, by word, writing or circumstance whatever; but to execute all that shall be proposed, given in charge or discovered unto me, by you, my ghostly father, or any of this sacred covenant."

*"I do further promise and declare, that I will have no opinion or will of my own, or any mental reservation whatever, even as a corpse or cadaver (**perinde ac cadaver**), but will unhesitatingly obey each and every command that I may receive from my superiors in the Militia of the Pope and of Jesus Christ."*

"That I may go to any part of the world withersoever I may be sent, to the frozen regions of the North, the burning sands of the desert of Africa, or the jungles of India, to the centers of civilization of Europe, or to the wild haunts of the barbarous savages of America, without murmuring or repining, and will be submissive in all things whatsoever communicated to me."

"I furthermore promise and declare that I will, when opportunity present, make and wage relentless war, secretly or openly, against all heretics, Protestants and Liberals, as I am directed to do, to extirpate and exterminate them from the face of the whole earth; and that I will spare neither age, sex or condition; and that I will hang, waste, boil,

> *flay, strangle and bury alive these infamous heretics, rip up the stomachs and wombs of their women and crush their infants' heads against the walls, in order to annihilate forever their execrable race. That when the same cannot be done openly, I will secretly use the poisoned cup, the strangulating cord, the steel of the poniard or the leaden bullet, regardless of the honor, rank, dignity, or authority of the person or persons, whatever may be their condition in life, either public or private, as I at any time may be directed so to do by any agent of the Pope or Superior of the Brotherhood of the Holy Faith, of the Society of Jesus."* ~ Reformation.org[132]

But, according to our Boston College professors, black powder and Black Death made Dracula the monster he was.

> *In addition to this new and more terrible kind of warfare, epidemics, following the pandemic of the Black Death (bubonic plague) in the 1300s, which had reduced by a third the population of Europe, continued to ravage eastern Europe in cyclical recurrences during Dracula's period.*
>
> *Other dread diseases, such as syphilis, tuberculosis, leprosy, and smallpox, accompanied the Turkish conquest of the Balkans. Calamities such as these, along with natural disasters like floods, earthquakes, and swarms of locusts, noted by travelers particularly in eastern Europe, also fostered belief in false idols, the burning of "witches" and "warlocks," consultation of oracles and soothsayers, and other types of superstitious behavior. Given the often resultant brevity of life, and the high incidence of infant mortality, the age of Dracula was, understandably, also a period of cynicism and despair. This fact helps to explain the cruelty and the low regard for human life exhibited by Dracula and his contemporaries.*[133]

"Understandably"?

The only thing "understandable" about thousands of human beings skewered through their rectums to slowly die horrible, lingering deaths is that one monster had the power to do it granted by the Catholic Church.

Vlad the Impaler was raised by Muslims, returned to Wallachia / Transylvania Orthodox but died Roman Catholic. Florescu and McNally acknowledge Dracula as a “Crusader” yet they earnestly try to excuse his unspeakable barbarism.

> *Dracula became a crusader because his country was, by virtue of geography, the one most immediately threatened by the Turks. Thus it is impossible to understand the man, the statesman, and the soldier without knowledge of the essential geopolitics of his country, which even today is rare in the west.*[134]

Wallachia and Transylvania would eventually become “Romania”. If that seems to have a connection to “Rome”, it’s not by accident.

> *The territories comprised by contemporary Romania have a very ancient history. Having been conquered by Rome in two successive campaigns (A.D. 101 and A.D. 105-106), natives of the land, called at that time Dacians, finally laid down their arms, while their king took poison to avoid captivity. A Roman occupation followed, involving massive migrations from all provinces of the Roman Empire. This land of opportunity beyond the Danube was labeled “Happy Dacia,” because of the fertile agricultural soil of the plain and the extensive mineral deposits of gold and silver that had been mined in the Carpathian Mountains ever since ancient times. Roman Dacia, although not exactly coincident with the frontiers of modern Romania, included much of the Danube plain and extended beyond the Carpathian Mountains into the plateau of southern Transylvania. ...*
>
> *Dracula’s birthplace, Transylvania, is thus the region that was inhabited from ancient times by the Daco-Romans, or, as they came to be called because of the basic Latinism of their language, Romanians. For convenience, we shall use that designation from here on. The region beyond the heavily forested Carpathian belt, which the Hungarians gradually occupied until the thirteenth century, was described by their early chroniclers in Latin as* ***“trans silva,”*** *literally “beyond (or across) the forest,” a very accurate description of the densely forested mountains.*[135]

What made Vlad the Impaler’s horrific reign possible was feudalism.

Today, the “middle class” of the West is completely controlled by the crushing weight of government and subsequently ruled by a Catholic Elite which bleeds and enslaves them, though the vast majority are oblivious to it.

In the 15th century (1400’s) if there was anything “historians” called a “middle class”, it was nothing more than bankers and merchants jumping into Aristocracy (and usually by graft and corruption).

> *When Wallachia, where Dracula was to rule, was first established as a state in about 1290, its political organization was rather crude. By the standard of the mosaic of small eastern European states, Wallachia was not a very large country, even if one considered the two Transylvanian duchies of Fagaraş and Amlaş to be under its rule. It consisted of 48,000 square miles of territory (roughly the size of the State of New York), and had a total population of half a million inhabitants, most of them Romanian, scattered in 3,220 villages and townships. The vast majority lived in the country, particularly in the hilly Carpathian districts, close to the Transylvanian plateau from which they had come. The Danubian plain to the south, in those days still covered in pan by extensive forests, was sparsely populated because of the danger of Turkish incursions. ...*
>
> *The two main classes of Wallachian society were the boyars and the peasants. One could barely distinguish the beginnings of a middle estate in the fifteenth-century. Whether these boyars were originally free landowners, wealthy village leaders, or the legitimate descendants of an old military caste,*[[cxxi]] *in the western European sense of the term, is a problem best left to specialists. However, the boyars’ claim to represent a native Aristocracy is at least partially substantiated by the fact that, from the very birth of the principality, or even before its foundation, the term* ***boyar*** *was generally associated with tenure, not necessarily ownership, of land. In that sense, boyars possessed vast domains comprising dozens of villages. They constantly extended these by purchase, by marriage, or through princely donations. On these estates, like the feudal Aristocracy in the west, the boyars were truly sovereign lords.*

> *In addition to land, members of the upper echelons of the boyar hierarchy were also granted certain titles of Byzantine origin, roughly corresponding to our cabinet offices. These titles were usually conferred in recognition of merit, military or otherwise, in the service of the ruling prince of Wallachia.*[136]

Although Wallachia and similar surrounding states *seemed* to be less tyrannically autocratic than the rest of the world, it was only by a small degree.

> *On the surface, the prince — **domnui** in Romanian, from the Latin **dominus** (lord); the Slavic **voivode** was less frequently used*[[cxxii]] *— possessed all the chief attributes of power. He was the formal sovereign and the head of the central and local administration: he raised and spent taxes, collected customs and revenues, dispensed justice, minted coins, and was commander in chief of the army and the police. In spite of these formidable attributes, his power was far from being absolute. Primogeniture, one of the more important means of consolidating centralized authority in the west, had not developed in Wallachia. In practice, any son of the ruling prince, whether legitimate or not, could be selected by the boyar council and then invested by the primate* [religious authority]. *This situation often led to factional strife and anarchy, as various boyar factions supported different princely candidates. The boyar council also had to be consulted to confirm important edicts and even to witness ordinary judicial transactions, such as land donations.*[137]

Don't be mistaken about the "Divine Right of Kings" to rule over the peasantry —

> *"Primogeniture, one of the more important means of consolidating centralized authority in the west, had not developed in Wallachia."*

Just as in the "Holy Roman Empire", the Boyar Council could only "elect" a ruthlessly ambitious candidate who had "royal" blood.

This was, in fact, how the Impaler's father, Vlad II (the original "Dracul" / "Dragon" / "Devil" in later Romanian) came to power. He was one of the

bastard sons of Mircea the Elder, a previous Voivode / Warlord of Wallachia.

> *Dracula came from a native ruling family the first known ancestor of which was Basarab the Great (1310-1352), a shadowy early ruler of Wallachia of whom little is known beyond his name and various legends carried in the collective memory of the Romanian people. ...*
>
> *The best known of the early Basarabs is Mircea the Old, sometimes referred to as Mircea the Great,*[[cxxiii]] *Dracula's grandfather, who ruled with interruption during a period of some thirty-two years (from 1386 to 1418), quite a record for the period.*[138]

Mircea, too, played fast and loose with his allegiance to Constantinople, instead, allying by marriage with Catholic Hungary. It was a marriage, however, that did not produce legitimate heirs. For that, there were whichever women available and not necessarily willing.

> *Mircea had been married to Princess Maria, the daughter of a powerful Hungarian noble family called Tolmay, which owned important estates in the Lake Balaton area of Hungary and in northeastern Transylvania. Maria was also related to the powerful Cilli family (one of whose members, Barbara, became the second wife of Sigismund of Luxemburg). Of the many sons born to Mircea only one, Mihail, was legitimate, and from 1408 to 1418 he was co-ruler with his father, a frequent practice in those days. More important than Mihail was Prince Mircea's numerous illegitimate brood, conceived by a variety of unknown women. These sons' claims to the throne, in accordance with existing Romanian customs, were quite valid. None of them amounted to much, except for two: a certain Alexandru Aldea, who ruled briefly in 1431, and Vlad, Dracula's father.*[139]

Mircea was happy to ransom his illegitimate son Vlad II to his Catholic hosts. It imbued the future ruler with not only Roman religion but a disregard for all else, save power — even his own offspring.

Vlad II spent so much time in the company of Western European Catholics, he willingly became one even after his term as a hostage expired.

> *We know very little of Dracula's father's early life beyond the fact that he was born sometime before 1395 in Wallachia. Because of Mircea's close relationship with Sigismund of Luxemburg before the battle of Nicopolis, it is likely that young Vlad was sent as a hostage to Buda, the count of Sigismund I — as a token of Mircea's good faith in maintaining the treaty of alliance he had signed with Hungary in 1395. In any case, we know that Vlad spent much of his youth in the Hungarian capital and in other German cities such as Nuremberg, where the future Holy Roman Emperor also sometimes held court. Sigismund, in fact, described Vlad as "educated at our court" (which implied conversion to Roman Catholicism). ...*
>
> *The death of Prince Mircea in 1418 ended Vlad's forcible confinement, but the young son of the prince decided to stay on as a page of Sigismund.*
>
> *He was treated with the respect due his rank, attached to the retinue that surrounded the emperor, and followed the peregrinations*[[cxxiv]] *of this retinue from Nuremberg to Prague, Buda, Rome, and various cities of Transylvania.*[140]

But Vlad II was still enough of a Slav to be of use to Sigismund as an emissary to John VIII in Constantinople. He even considered defecting but the Byzantine Empire wasn't strong enough and John Palaiologos was determined not to become a vassal of Rome. As a consequence, his kingdom was overwhelmed by the Ottomans and Constantinople fell in 1453.

The original "Dragon" wanted only one thing: power — and he was willing to do whatever it took to get it.

It was Sigismund who inducted Vlad II into the "Order of the Dragon" as a First Class Knight in defense of Rome (and, of course, Sigismund was just as concerned with maintaining *his* crown).

But the most important agenda above them all was to slaughter and crush the upstart heretic Protestants.

> *In the years following the death of Jan Hus, the first martyr of the Protestant cause in Europe, the Hussite heresy*[[cxxv]] *that he had*

championed began to spread. Sigismund summoned an imperial diet at Nuremberg in February 1430 to organize the fifth crusade against the powerful armies of the rebel Hussite leader Jan Zizka von Trokow, who using quite revolutionary tactics had kept four crusading armies at bay in the 1420s.[[cxxvi]] *Among the novel tactics of war that helped account for Zizka's success was the use of mobile fortified camps composed of wagons chained to one another. The soldiers manning each cart were organized in much the same manner as a modem tank crew. This western method of warfare was later adopted by John Hunyadi and taught to his young ward, Dracula.*

Vlad was summoned to Nuremberg one year later, together with other high dignitaries of the realm. In the early dawn of February 8, 1431, a most unusual ceremony took place in the double chapel of the imperial fortress, which involved Vlad's induction in the Order of the Dragon. The order had originally been founded by the Holy Roman Emperor and his second wife, Barbara Cilli, in 1387 and reorganized on December 13, 1408, with the character of a secret fraternal society. [[cxxvii]] *Like other semimilitary and religious orders of knights (such as the Knights of the Hospital of St. John* [Knights of Malta] *and the Teutonic Order of Knights), its ostensible objectives and duties were protecting the German king and his family, defending the empire, shielding widows and orphans, and going into mourning and praying for the deceased members of the society. A principal aim entailed the defense and propagation of Catholicism against the partisans of Jan Hus and other heretics, and, of course, crusading against the infidel Turks. The reason for the "secret" character of the order, in the eyes of its founders, was the undeclared ultimate aim of gaining for the house of Luxemburg political supremacy in Europe. This also provided the principal reason for the small number of first-class members initially inducted — only twenty-four in all, including Vlad — drawn from the royalty of Europe.*[141]

As the Roman Empire began to convert from a military power to a religious one, it discarded the eagle as an icon and adopted the dragon.

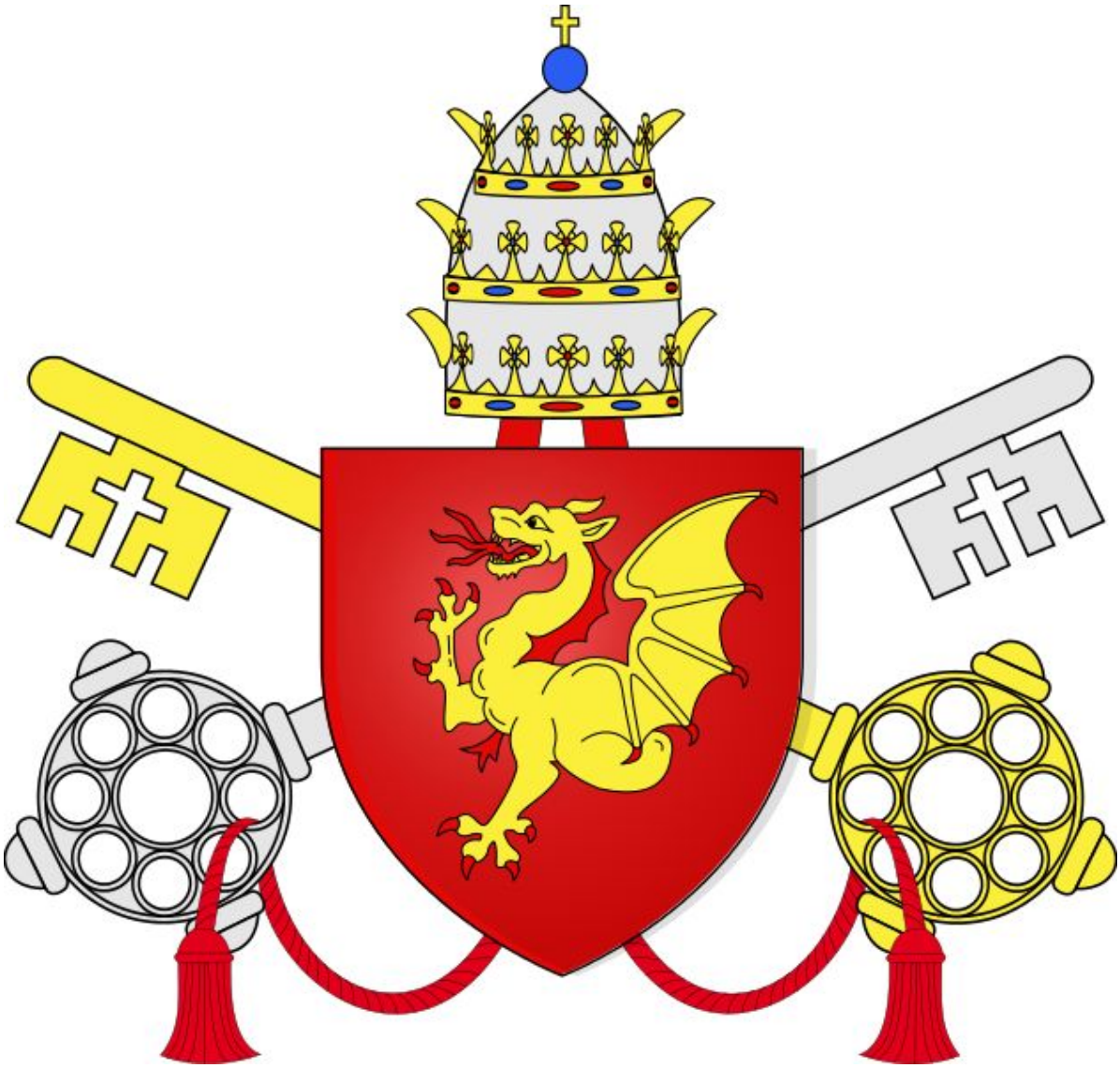
After his victory quelling the usurper Magnentius in 353 A.D., the son of Constantine the Great, Constantine II was greeted in Rome by dragons. “Constantius” commanded the parade be enacted to appease his own arrogance and pride.[cxxviii]

> *While matters were thus proceeding in the eastern regions and in the Gauls, Constantius, as if the temple of Janus were now shut and hostilities everywhere at an end, became desirous of visiting Rome, with the intention of celebrating his triumph over Magnentius, to which he could give no name, since the blood that he had spilt was that of Roman foes.*
>
> *For indeed, neither by his own exertions, nor by those of his generals did he ever conquer any nation that made war upon him; nor did he make any additions to the empire; nor at critical moments was he ever seen to be the foremost or even among the foremost; but still he was eager to exhibit to the people, now in the enjoyment of peace, a vast procession, and standards heavy with gold, and a splendid train of guards and followers, though the citizens themselves neither expected nor desired any such spectacle.*
>
> *He was ignorant, probably, that some of the ancient emperors were, in time of peace, contented with their lictors, and that when the ardour of war forbade all inactivity, one,[61] in a violent storm, had trusted himself to a fisherman’s boat; another,[62], [[cxxix]] following the example of the Decii, had sacrificed his life for the safety of the republic[[cxxx]]; another[63] had by himself, accompanied by only a few soldiers of the lowest rank, gone as a spy into the camp of the enemy[[cxxxi]]: in short, that many of them had rendered themselves illustrious by splendid exploits, in order to hand down to posterity a glorious memory of themselves, earned by their achievements.*
>
> *Accordingly, after long and sumptuous preparation ... in the second prefecture of Orfitus, Constantius, elated with his great honours, and escorted by a formidable array of troops, marching in order of battle, passed through Ocricoli, attracting towards himself the astonished gaze of all the citizens.*

> *And when he drew near to the city, contemplating the salutations offered him by the senators, and the whole body of fathers venerable from their likeness to their ancestors, he thought, not like Cineas, the ambassador of Pyrrhus, that a multitude of kings was here assembled together, but that the city was the asylum of the whole world.*
>
> *And when from them he had turned his eyes upon the citizens, he marvelled to think with what rapidity the whole race of mankind upon Earth had come from all quarters to Rome; and, as if he would have terrified the Euphrates or the Rhine with a show of armed men, he himself came on, preceded by standards on both sides, sitting alone in a golden chariot, shining with all kinds of brilliant precious stones, which seemed to spread a flickering light all around.*
>
> *Numbers also of the chief officers who went before him were surrounded by dragons embroidered on various kinds of tissue, fastened to the golden or jewelled points of spears, the mouths of the dragons being open so as to catch the wind, which made them hiss as though they were inflamed with anger; while the coils of their tails were also contrived to be agitated by the breeze.* ~ Marcellinus[142]

The colors for the Draco were scarlet and purple; "*purpureum signum draconis*".[143]

During the lifetime of Dracula, the Son of the Dragon, Ugo Boncompagni ruled in Rome as Pope Gregory XIII. His coat-of-arms proudly displayed a two-footed dragon along with the three-crowned Papal tiara signifying his authority to rule in Heaven, on Earth and in Hell as well as the gold and silver keys of his temporal (Earthly) and spiritual (Heavenly) "powers".



This is the same Pope Gregory that gave us all the calendar we now use designed by Jesuit Christopher Clavius. It is confusing and inconsistent by design, discarding the 30-day months and 360-day years of the lunar calendar for 365.25 days across a hodge-podge of varyingly-sized months.

This *draco* symbolism and our Jesuit calendar hold no little significance for Bible-knowledgeable Christians: the dragon is repeatedly referenced as a metaphor for Satan as well as the final empire to rebel against YHWH, Jesus Christ and all who serve Them.

The Fourth Beast

> *"Thus he said: 'The fourth beast will be a fourth kingdom on the Earth, which will be different from all the other kingdoms and will devour the whole Earth and tread it down and crush it. As for the ten horns, out of this kingdom ten kings will arise; and another will arise after them, and he will be different from the previous ones and will subdue three kings. He will speak out against the Most High and wear down the saints of the Highest One, and he will intend to make alterations in times and in law...'" ~ Daniel 7:23-25*[[cxxxii]]

As Protestants look to a future Beast to change their calendars, a Jesuit has already done so.

> *Semiramis became known as the fertility goddess Ishtar. She took on many names in different cultures including Isis, Diana, Astarte, Ishtar, Aphrodite, Venus, and Easter. She was even identified with Mary as Mary was falsely deified and took on the titles "Mother of God" and "Queen of Heaven". Her son Tammuz took on many names as well such as Horus, Apollo, Sol, Krishna, Hercules, Mithra, and finally Jesus. ~* ***Mystery Babylon the Religion of the Beast****, Rav Sha´ul*[545]

Being dedicated to this pagan goddess, Rome employed the Company [Jesuits] *to align the celebration of Ishtar and the Spring Equinox with Passover and our celebration of Christ's death and resurrection.*

> *Papal, Catholic, pagan Rome adopted the pagan sungod calendar of her predecessor and mentor, Caesar's Imperial Rome. Julius Caesar got his calendar from the pagan religions of both the Eastern and Western sun worshiping religions of his ancestors. Roman Catholicism viciously attacked all who kept the Scriptural calendar and slaughtered millions of Jews and true Christians who followed Yahweh's ancient ways. She insisted on controlling the calendar and ordered all to adopt her corrupt computations. The results were predictable. By the year 1582 the Julian calendar was off by 11 days and began to be embarrassing to the "fisherman, lord god, the pope". Pope Gregory XIII then called on his own church version of the "Gestapo", the Jesuits for a fix.*

> *They then provided a Jesuit, Christopher Clavius, S.J[546], who became the architect of the Gregorian calendar! This heathen was a German Jesuit mathematician and pseudo "astronomer" and became the main engine of the modern Gregorian calendar used by Christianity today. With this Jesuit calendar, came also the Jesuit astronomy or, as is known today, the "heliocentric universe". With his introduction of the new Catholic calendar, Pope Gregory XIII demonstrated to the world that the changing of "times and seasons" is centered in Rome, and not on Scripture and certainly not centered on the Holy One of Israel. This was an interesting "trick" and was probably related to countering the Protestant reformation, which was going on in Europe at the time. The protestors failed to protest or counter this change and the Christian Church remains ignorant of it to this present day! ...*
>
> *The Gregorian calendar was accepted in England and her colonies by an act of Parliament in 1752! Russia would not accept this Roman calendar until the Communist revolution in the early 20th century. ~ Messianic Rabbi James Talbott[547]*
>
> ~ *Illuminati Unmasked*, Cirucci[144]

The confusion has multiple agendas, including never to allow the death of Jesus Christ to be properly observed on Passover as well as to obfuscate our cosmology.

This deception has created an alternate reality so shocking in its scope and success, a completely separate exposé is necessary.

For Christians, to understand it is to give new meaning to the warning of Jesus Christ recorded in Matthew 24.

> *"Therefore when you see the 'abomination of desolation,' spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing in the holy place" (whoever reads, let him understand), "then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains. Let him who is on the housetop not go down to take anything out of his house. And let him who is in the field not go back to get his clothes. But woe to those who are pregnant and to those who are nursing babies in those days! And pray that your flight may not be in winter or*

on the Sabbath. For then there will be great tribulation, such as has not been since the beginning of the world until this time, no, nor ever shall be. And unless those days were shortened, no flesh would be saved; but for the Elect's sake those days will be shortened."

"Then if anyone says to you, 'Look, here is the Christ!' or 'There!' do not believe it. For false christs and false prophets will rise and show great signs and wonders to deceive, if possible, even the Elect. See, I have told you beforehand!"

"Therefore if they say to you, 'Look, He is in the desert!' do not go out; or 'Look, He is in the inner rooms!' do not believe it. For as the lightning comes from the east and flashes to the west, so also will the appearance of the Son of Man be. For wherever the carcass is, there the eagles will be gathered together."

"Immediately after the tribulation of those days the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give its light; the stars will fall from Heaven, and the powers of the Heavens will be shaken. Then the Sign of the Son of Man will appear in Heaven, and then all the tribes of the Earth will mourn, and they will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of Heaven with power and great glory. And He will send His angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they will gather together His Elect from the four winds, from one end of Heaven to the other." ~ Matthew 24:15-31 (New King James Version, appropriate capitalization added) As a testimony to the success of his Satanic deception, Gregory XIII had a medal commissioned with his likeness on the front. On the back was the head of a goat encompassed by a dragon.

Unfortunately for Vlad II and Vlad III, the “simple” and “superstitious” peasantry did catch on that a dragon is not a good thing.

> *When he eventually returned to his native country, Vlad was called “Dracul” by the boyars, who knew of his honor, because he was a Draconist, a member of the Order of the Dragon (**draco** in Latin), dedicated to fighting Turks and heretics. On the other hand, the people at large, unfamiliar with the details of Vlad’s investiture in the order, seeing a dragon on his shield, and later on his coins, called him “Dracul” with the meaning of the “devil,” because in Orthodox iconography, particularly those ikons that depicted St. George slaying a dragon, the dragon symbolized the devil. The word **drac** (-**ul** is simply the definite article “the”) can mean both “devil” and “dragon” in the Romanian language. ... The name Dracula, immortalized by Bram Stoker, was later adopted, or rather inherited, by Dracul’s son, Dracula... the a is ... a diminutive, meaning “son of the dragon.” (The son inherited the title Dracul by virtue of the statutes of the order.) ... That the family itself did not consider the epithet in any way offensive is proven by the fact that they consistently adopted it, that Dracula signed letters by that title, and that historians used **Dracula** to describe all members of the family (Radu and Mircea, his brothers, for instance), as well as their descendants, who were collectively known as the Drăculeştis.*[145]

To be sure of Vlad II's loyalty to Rome, the new Dragon swore (again) complete fealty to Sigismund and the Vatican as a consecrated Catholic Crusader.

> *Later that evening of February 8* [of 1431] *a far more meaningful ceremony took place in the throne room of the fortress of Nuremberg in the presence of the emperor; the Burgrave of Nuremberg, Friedrich von Zolem (of the House of Hohenzollem); the Grand Master of the Teutonic Order, Klaus von Redwitz; the nobles of the kingdoms of Hungary, Bohemia, and the empire; and a few other boyars from Vlad's native Wallachia. This time Dracul, as we can now dub him, swore allegiance to the emperor, whom he referred to as "my natural Lord and Sovereign, at whose Court we are assembled to accomplish very great things." He was then given the official staff of office and declared prince of Wallachia. In return for this great honor the emperor made one additional request: when established on his new throne, though ruling an Orthodox country, Dracul must give protection and free exercise of religion to those of the Catholic faith; the Franciscan Minorites were specifically mentioned as deserving special consideration and goodwill. Thus, Vlad Dracul was now tied to the empire by a threefold bond: as a Draconist, a vassal of Sigismund, and a fellow Catholic crusader.*[146]

Both Sigismund and Rome had cunningly placed a converted native Catholic in control of yet another strategic locale. It is a tactic still in use today.

Unfortunately for Vlad II, it served Sigismund better to maintain his bastard half-brother Alexandru Aldea as ruler of Wallachia. As consolation, he made the Dragon military governor of Sighişoara; a key Transylvanian town along the most likely Ottoman invasion route.

One would think that the location of Sighişoara in the heart of eastern Europe, 1,000 kilometers from Constantinople (but 1,600 kilometers from Rome) that the Transylvanian town would be resoundingly Orthodox. In fact, it was inundated with Catholic clergy. The Vatican had secured this strategic position with battalions of soldiers carrying rosaries.

> *Given his new mission of protecting Catholicism, Vlad was well served in terms of the number of religious orders that had established houses in this partially German city: the Benedictines, Cistercians, Premonstratensians, Franciscans, and Dominicans. (Even today, as soon as the visitor emerges on the main square beyond the Councilmen's Tower, he can admire the elegant Renaissance lines of the principal Dominican monastery.) Among these church and monastic foundations, elaborate three-story homes, built of masonry and stone in a variety of gaudy colors, reflected the presence of a prosperous German mercantile community, which traded with Nuremberg and other western German cities. Like other Transylvanian cities such as Brasov and Sibiu, Sighişoara served as an* ***entrepot***[[cxxxiii]] *for goods moving from the German west to the Balkans and Constantinople and the Black Sea. In addition, it served western merchants taking the northeastern route to Poland and the Baltic Sea.* [147]

In a fascinating twist, our intrepid Professors uncovered a detail with implications they didn't expound upon.

> *The house where Vlad took up his headquarters, in the main square near the Councilmen's Tower, was essentially not very different from the wealthy merchants' homes surrounding it. Today it is distinguished from similar neighboring houses only by a small plaque that indicates that Vlad Dracul lived there from 1431 to 1435. It is a massive three-story stone construction of dark yellowish hue, with a tiled roof and small window openings for defensive purposes, such as were customary in the Middle Ages, when street brawls were frequent. ...*
>
> *The house was restored in 1976 on the occasion of the five hundredth anniversary of Dracula's death. In pulling down a partition, workers uncovered a fascinating mural, depicting three men and a woman, painted in neo-Renaissance style. The central figure was that of a somewhat rotund man with a double chin, long well-waxed mustaches, an olive complexion, oval-shaped eyes, arched eyebrows, and a finely chiseled nose. He wore a white Oriental turban and a loosely fitting gown of central European style, with wide sleeves fastened by a*

> *multitude of cruciform clasps. Significantly, he carried in his left hand a staff of office such as Vlad Dracul might have carried as governor, while his right clasped a golden cup, offered by a woman — possibly a reference to Dracul's unidentified lady admirer from Nuremberg, or else simply a boyar lady of his court. The uncanny similarity of the oval almond-colored eyes to those in the famous portrait we possess of Dracul's son Dracula suggests that the remains of that mural (now exhibited in the local-history museum of Sighişoara) may well represent the only surviving portrait of Dracul, even though it would have to have been painted posthumously from an original that no longer exists.*[148]

A woman offering a golden cup to the converted Catholic Crusader who was riding his new alliance into control over his native Wallachia?

> *After these things I saw another angel coming down from Heaven, having great authority, and the Earth was illuminated with his glory. And he cried mightily with a loud voice, saying, "Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and has become a dwelling place of demons, a prison for every foul spirit, and a cage for every unclean and hated bird! For all the nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, the kings of the Earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the Earth have become rich through the abundance of her luxury."*
>
> *And I heard another voice from Heaven saying, "Come out of her, my people, lest you share in her sins, and lest you receive of her plagues. For her sins have reached to Heaven, and God has remembered her wicked deeds. Render to her just as she rendered to you, and repay her double according to her works; in the cup which she has mixed, mix double for her! In the measure that she glorified herself and lived luxuriously, in the same measure give her torment and sorrow; for she says in her heart, 'I sit as queen, and am no widow, and will not see sorrow.' Therefore her plagues will come in one day — death and mourning and famine. And she will be utterly burned with fire, for strong is the Lord God who judges her!"*

“The kings of the Earth who committed fornication and lived luxuriously with her will weep and lament for her, when they see the smoke of her burning, standing at a distance for fear of her torment, saying, ‘Alas, alas, that great city Babylon, that mighty city! For in one hour your judgment has come.’”

“And the merchants of the Earth will weep and mourn over her, for no one buys their merchandise anymore: merchandise of gold and silver, precious stones and pearls, fine linen and purple, silk and scarlet, every kind of citron wood, every kind of object of ivory, every kind of object of most precious wood, bronze, iron, and marble; and cinnamon and incense, fragrant oil and frankincense, wine and oil, fine flour and wheat, cattle and sheep, horses and chariots, and bodies and souls of men. The fruit that your soul longed for has gone from you, and all the things which are rich and splendid have gone from you, and you shall find them no more at all. The merchants of these things, who became rich by her, will stand at a distance for fear of her torment, weeping and wailing, and saying, ‘Alas, alas, that great city that was clothed in fine linen, purple, and scarlet, and adorned with gold and precious stones and pearls! For in one hour such great riches came to nothing.’ Every shipmaster, all who travel by ship, sailors, and as many as trade on the sea, stood at a distance 18 and cried out when they saw the smoke of her burning, saying, ‘What is like this great city?’”

“They threw dust on their heads and cried out, weeping and wailing, and saying, ‘Alas, alas, that great city, in which all who had ships on the sea became rich by her wealth! For in one hour she is made desolate.’”

“Rejoice over her, O Heaven, and you holy apostles and prophets, for God has avenged you on her!”

Then a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone and threw it into the sea, saying, “Thus with violence the great city Babylon shall be thrown down, and shall not be found anymore. The sound of harpists, musicians, flutists, and trumpeters shall not be heard in you anymore. No craftsman of any craft shall be found in you anymore, and the sound of a millstone shall not be heard in you anymore. The

> *light of a lamp shall not shine in you anymore, and the voice of bridegroom and bride shall not be heard in you anymore. For your merchants were the great men of the Earth, for by your sorcery all the nations were deceived. And in her was found the blood of Prophets and Saints, and of all who were slain on the Earth."* ~ Revelation 18, New King James Version (some capitalization added for clarification) Vlad II, married Princess Cneajna, daughter of Voivode Alexandru "the Good" of Moldavia. Their first legitimate son was Mircea II.[cxxxiv]

Exercising his "right" as a future Warlord of extreme ambition, the Dragon (Dracul) continued to mate with anyone who took his fancy. One of them was a woman named Doamna Călţuna who would give birth to the son of the Dragon probably in December of 1435. It was, apparently, not a pleasant experience because afterwards she became "Mother Eupraxia", an Orthodox nun, but not before also giving birth to Vlad Number IV; Vlad Călugărul, "the Monk". He, too (apparently as little is recorded of him) took Orthodox vows and he would become a bitter competitor and foe of his brother, Vlad Number III, Dracula the Impaler.

In 1431, at the request of Holy Roman Emperor Sigismund, Vlad II, Dracul, hired an army of mercenaries to forcibly take control of his native Wallachia.

The Dragon's half-brother Alexandru Aldea lay on his death-bed and Sigismund was taking no chances. The Emperor wanted a loyal vassal posted along this key route of invasion and commerce.

Vlad III was by now around 5 years old and began a new phase in his learning; the arts of killing and control.

While other children were learning the trades of their families to help them all keep fed, Dracula (and other Elite offspring like him) learned weapons, military horseback riding and tactics.

As for his academics —

> *We know very little about the beginnings of his intellectual training. The first tutor engaged by his father was an elderly, highly educated boyar who had fought ... at the battle of Nicopolis.*[[cxxxv]] *This man taught Dracula Italian and possibly a smattering of French and*

Hungarian, in addition to the rudiments of the humanities and world history. Monastic scribes also taught him the Cyrillic script and Old Church Slavonic, in use at the prince's chancellery, and Latin, the language of diplomatic correspondence.[[cxxxvi]] *A new subject to which Dracula was almost certainly introduced and that was soon to be regularly taught to sons of princes was political science — in particular, the theory of the divine right of sovereigns and the politics of* ***raison d´état.***[[cxxxvii]] *Both of these are reflected in the* ***Teachings of Neagoe Basarah****, political words of wisdom compiled in Wallachia between 1512 and 1521, after Dracula's time, but accurately reflecting the theory of government prevalent in fifteenth-century Wallachia. In essence these principles are not very different from the principles of Machiavelli's* ***Prince****, written in 1517. Some precepts in Machiavelli's text, such as "It is much better for you to be feared than to be loved!" accurately reflected Dracula's future political philosophy, probably because he was taught them at this stage.*[149]

Those who believe in a concept of "Original Sin" [Psalm 51:5] understand that human beings are born into selfish, predatory behavior but, just in case, the children of the Elite have it reinforced.

But the death of Sigismund in 1437 gave the Dragon concern for his throne and the following year he allied himself with Sultan Murad II, going so far as to join him in an advance upon Transylvania.

Sigismund's son-in-law, Albert II, succeeded him as "Holy Roman Emperor" and he placed the charismatic Hungarian John Hunyadi at the forefront of his Transylvanian problem with the Ottomans.

Albert began assembling a force to Crusade against Murad but died of dysentery in 1439.

Sigismund's daughter, Elizabeth, had been enjoying the power from behind Albert and wasn't ready to give it up. She came up with a "miracle baby" who was christened Ladislas. With wry humor he was re-christened "Ladislas the Posthumous" by the citizenry.

She was extremely shrewd in her intrigues.

> *In an attempt to ensure the legality of the succession, the scheming Elizabeth secretly sent her lady-in-waiting Helen Kottarenin to steal the crown of St. Stephen from the fortress of Visegrad where it was housed and had her infant boy crowned Ladislas V by the primate of Hungary, Denes Szechi, at Szekesfehervar, in accordance with the customs of the land. For safekeeping she appointed his uncle Frederick III as "guardian" and Enea Silvio de´ Piccolomini (the future Pope Pius II) as tutor, while the Hussite Slovak mercenary Jan Jiskra of Brandys formed her personal guard.*[150]

While John Hunyadi sent guarantees of support to Vlad II, he did the same to the Dragon's familial competitor, Dan II.

In 1442, Murad made another incursion into Transylvania. Vlad II gave his benefactor safe passage through Wallachia but did not help in any offensive action and the Sultan was repulsed with heavy loses.

Demanding a show of loyalty, Murad summoned Vlad for a counsel. The Dragon brought with him Vlad Dracula and his younger brother, Radu, leaving his favorite first-born son, Mircea, safely at home.

The contract between the two renewed the annual tribute of 10,000 gold ducats but included another amount: 500 young boys. They would all be forcibly converted to Islam and most were to be inducted into the Sultan's "Janissary Guard" shock troops with the rest being used by the Turks however they pleased.

Worst of all for Dracula and his younger brother Radu, they were to remain with the Sultan as hostages to insure Vlad II's continued loyalty. This seems to have been the ruthless Dragon's plan from the beginning.

It was this experience and the betrayal by his ruthless father that turned Vlad III into Dracula the Impaler.

> *Undoubtedly this six-year period of Turkish captivity, at an age when character is molded, constituted at least as significant a segment in Dracula's upbringing as his years at the Wallachian court. Thus the period is relevant in accounting for Dracula's cold and sadistic personality. On the whole, Dracula. a gaunt and rather ungainly youth, was a difficult pupil, prone to temper bouts; the whip and other*

> *forms of punishment were often resorted to in order to cow him into obedience. By way of contrast, there was Radu, whose unusual good looks and sensuality attracted the female members of the seraglio*[[cxxxviii]] *as well as the male "minions"*[[cxxxix]] *in the Sultan's court. Because of their differences of character, temperament, and physique, the two brothers developed for each other an intense hatred, which was exacerbated by the associated differences in treatment they received.*[151]

In 1444 A.D., a truce existed between the Kings of Eastern Europe and Murad II but Tommaso "Pope Nicholas V" Parentucelli absolved them of their loyalty to an "infidel" and required another Crusade be enacted.

It became known as "the Varna campaign".

Vlad II stayed cunningly neutral but did allow Mircea to lead a contingent of Wallachians against the Turks.

The same could not be said for the young King of Poland, also named Ladislas. He was a dutiful Catholic with a bright future ... until he committed to this Crusade.

> *The battle of Varna turned into a disastrous defeat for the ~~Christian~~* [Catholic] *cause. During the encounter, the horse of the Polish king was pierced by a Turkish spear; young King Ladislas fell to the ground to face hand-to-hand combat with the elite Turkish troops. They chopped off his head and placed it on a pike for all to see. Seeing that the king was dead. John Hunyadi rushed forward with the faithful Wallachian troops in an attempt to snatch the young king's body from the clutches of the infidels. But his energies were fruitless. Hunyadi and his Wallachians could not even get near. All around him, Hunyadi saw his troops fleeing; he barely managed to escape. It was a calamity from which he never recovered. Giuliano Cardinal Cesarini, the military hero of the Hussite wars, was found dead, lying naked, stripped of all his belongings, on a desolate mountain pass just outside the city of Varna.*[152]

"Giuliano Cardinal Cesarini, the military hero of the Hussite wars"?

That may be how “Liberal” Jesuit Professors (so careful of Muslim sensibilities) write such a phrase but a more honest descriptor would be “the Roman Catholic Cardinal who made a name for himself in war by slaughtering Christians”.

“Miraculously” (allegations of treachery were made), Mircea extricated himself and his Wallachian contingent from the Battle of Varna with few losses.

Despite the Dragon’s perfectly non-committal maneuvering, it was still not the complete loyalty Murad had required.

Some form of punishment would surely follow, as it had for the sons of the ruler of Serbia (whose actual title was most accurately, “Despot of Rascia [*Raška*] and Albania”), Đurađ Branković.

Not only did Branković participate in Pope Nicholas V’s disastrous Varna campaign, it was found that his two hostage sons, Stepan and Gregor, were corresponding with him in “treason” against the Caliphate. They were both blinded with hot irons by their Muslim captors.

Vlad Dracula and Radu weren’t blinded, but they did enter a new level of treatment by their captors: anything goes.

> *Although Dracul’s two boys were not killed, their lives were certainly in danger, and the terms of their imprisonment were made harsher. A Turkish document states that Radu, the handsomer of the two, had to defend his honor against the sexual advances of no less a person than young Mehmed himself, the heir to the throne. The Byzantine chronicler Laonicus Chalcondyles described Radu’s beauty and voluptuousness, which had won him the favor of the future Mehmed II. He gives us a vivid account of the manner in which Radu defended his honor against advances of the drunken prince, who did not follow the prescription of the Koran,*[[cxl]] *by using his sword to wound his would-be lover. Fearing for his life, Radu spent the night hidden in a tree outside the seraglio*[[cxli]] *for fear of Mehmed’s vengeance. Being weak-natured, though, he eventually succumbed to sensual pleasures and became Mehmed’s minion.*[[cxlii]] *He also became Mehmed’s protege and chosen candidate for (he Wallachian throne, not leaving Turkey until*

1462. Submission was also the price paid by Radu for his becoming a full-fledged officer at the sultan's court, which probably took place in 1447, under Murad II.[153]

This was the price of ambition, paid by Vlad II in his own blood, that the boys he left captive were forcibly converted to Islam and were to forever be the object of the homosexual lust of their captors.

The Greek historian Laonikos Chalkokondyles was a little more descriptive (but, thankfully, not too much).

The sultan spent that winter[142] [1461 AD?] *in his palace and summoned Vlad* [III], *the son of* [Vlad II] *Dracul and ruler of Wallachia,*[143] *as he already had his younger brother* [Radu III] *at the court,*[144] *keeping him as his lover and maintaining him. It happened that the sultan was almost killed by the boy when he had wanted to have sex with him. This was when he had first gained the throne and was preparing to campaign against Karaman.*[145] *He was in love with the boy and invited him for conversation, and then as a sign of his respect he invited him for drinks to his bedchamber. The boy did not expect to suffer such a thing from the sultan, and when he saw the sultan approaching him with that intention, he fought him off and refused to consent to intercourse with him. The sultan kissed the unwilling boy, who drew a dagger and struck the sultan on his thigh. He then fled in whatever direction he could find. The doctors were able to treat the sultan's wound. The boy had climbed up a tree there and was hiding. When the sultan packed up and left, the boy came down from the tree, began his journey, and, shortly afterward, arrived at the Porte and became the sultan's lover. The sultan was used to having relations no less with men who shared his own inclinations. For he was always spending his time in the close company of such people, both day and night, but he did not usually have relations with men who were not of his own race, except for brief periods of time.*

It was the sultan who had entrusted Vlad [III], *the brother of this boy with the rule of Wallachia. With the sultan's assistance, Vlad, the son of Dracul, set out to claim the principality. When he took over, he first created a corps of bodyguards for himself, who lived with him, and*

> *then he summoned separately each of the distinguished men of the realm who, it was believed, had committed treason during the transfer of power there. He killed them all by impalement, them and their sons, wives, and servants, so that this one man caused more murder than any other about whom we have been able to learn. In order to solidify his hold on power, they say that in a short time he killed twenty thousand men, women, and children. He established good soldiers and bodyguards for his own use, and he granted them the money property and other goods of his victims, so that he quickly effected a great change and utterly revolutionized the affairs of Wallachia. He also worked widespread murder among the Hungarians, those who seemed to be involved in public affairs, sparing none of them.*[154]

Once he was properly...“indoctrinated”...Radu could then be used as an Ottoman vassal to govern over the Wallachians that the Turks had conquered. This, too, caused his brother (who resisted and was punished for it) to burn with anger against him.

> *Dracula, as noted, proved a more difficult prisoner, and whatever duress he had to suffer toughened his character to a diamondlike hardness.* ~ Florescu & McNally[155]

“Whatever duress he had to suffer”?

If Radu was “wooed” for buggery, it’s a good guess that his teenage brother wasn’t “wooed” when he was imprisoned for rebellion.

The “guess” becomes fact when in light of how Vlad III became Vlad Țepeș, “the Impaler”, who made a sickening, shocking science out of impaling human beings (*thousands* of them, many were innocent of wrongdoing and almost none merited such treatment) through the rectum to hang for *days* until dead.

One aspect of this “science” was to make the stake rounded to minimize loss of blood and thereby keep the victim alive and conscious longer as the greased implement worked its way slowly up their body by their own weight.

> *Being perpetually aware of the danger of assassination and, consequently, of the expendabilily of life, Dracula became a cynic. He*

also gained invaluable insights into the torturous workings of the impressionable Turkish mind and learned the effectiveness of the Ottomans' use of terror tactics. He was to employ this knowledge to great advantage in his subsequent career.

In essence, the two boys had been spared because Sultan Murad preferred to use them as pawns who might yet contribute to Dracul's defection, even after the campaign of 1445. In the long run, this presumption turned out to be correct.[156]

Although our intrepid Boston College Professors may have danced around the issue, other authors have not.

It's speculated that the treatment by the Ottomans is thought to be a major factor in Vlad Tepes' later cruelty.~ Joiner[157]

Worse, Vlad III may even have seen it done from his prison window while it was being done to him, thereby connecting the one with the other.

> *According to some accounts* [Dracula] *may also have been imprisoned and tortured for part of that time, during which he would have witnessed the impalement of ... the Ottomans' enemies.* ~ NBC News[158]

> *These years were influential in shaping Vlad's character; he was often whipped by his Ottoman captors for being stubborn and rude. Here is where he learned his torture tactics. He developed a well-known hatred for Radu and for Mehmed, who would later become the sultan.* ~ New World Encyclopedia[159]

The elder Dragon blamed John Hunyadi for the debacle at Varna, and probably rightly so. He called for Hunyadi to be tried and executed but the Hungarian's family and reputation saved him from such a fate. However, it did end up turning him against Vlad II.

Hunyadi found an ally in Vladislav II, a member of the rival Dăneşti clan and immediately went to work invading Transylvania and Wallachia. The Dragon was forewarned but then betrayed by a *boyar* (merchant and Aristocrat) revolt. He and his beloved heir Mircea were put to flight but captured, tortured and killed.

> [Vlad II Dracul] *was killed in the swamps near Balteni, Wallachia,* [running for the Ottoman lines] *in 1447. Vlad's older brother, Mircea, was tortured, blinded and buried alive.* ~ NBC News[160]

Murad informed Vlad Dracula that his father was dead and he was no-longer a hostage, but an officer in the Ottoman military. This pleased the future Impaler and he quickly began planning a Turkish assault upon his homeland (which pleased the Muslims).

Hunyadi continued to drive through Wallachia to the Ottoman lines with his Dăneşti vassal, Vladislav II. But the Hungarian (thanks to impeccable Turkish intelligence regarding his strength and whereabouts) suffered another humiliating defeat at Kosovo.

Vlad Dracula took advantage of this and lead a contingent of Turkish cavalry all the way to the Wallachian throne. Unfortunately, within two months Vladislav II was able to rally and drive Dracula back out and the Prince retreated to family allies in Moldavia.

The lust of ambition changed the positions of the key players when Vladislav II sent a gift to Mehmed II upon his official assumption of Sultan with the retiring of his father to enjoy his wealth without the drain of managing death and taxes for an empire.

John Hunyadi let it be known that an alliance with Vlad III (which would win him back Wallachia) was not out of the question and the son of the Dragon was pleased to dance in politics, as was his father.[cxliii]

When Ladislas Posthumous finally came of age and was crowned King of Hungary, Hunyadi put Dracula by his side and Vlad swore allegiance to Rome.

It was in 1453 that Constantinople fell to the Turks and they thoroughly enjoyed themselves. There was even a proscribed process for it.

> *Sultan Mehmed II waited until the traditional three days of looting had passed (about 4,000 people were killed and 50,000 men, women and children enslaved) and then entered the city. He rode straight to the cathedral of St. Sophia, went to the altar, and intoned the Muslim prayer, "There is no God but Allah, and Mohammed is His Prophet." The capture of Constantinople had been a Muslim goal almost as old as that religion itself. It was believed that the Prophet Mohammed had said, "Blessed be he who conquers Constantinople." Henceforth Mehmed II became known by the Turkish epithet Fatih, meaning "Conqueror." The Ottoman Empire was now geographically part of Europe...*[161]

The word our sensitive Boston College Professors have left out is "rape". Constantinople must've been a living hell for the "proscribed three days" allowed by the sexual deviant Sultan.

But before non-Muslims get too angry, it is worth mentioning that, without Catholicism, there would be no Islam.

There are striking similarities between Muhammad's cave experiences and those of the Basque Nobel who founded the Jesuits; Ignacio López who would later become Ignatius de Loyola. ...

Not having the chance to clearly name a successor, the movement split with most following Muhammad's father-in-law Abu Bakr (Sunni Islam) and some following Muhammad's son-in-law and cousin, Ali ibn Abi Talib (Shia Islam).

Ali's rivals waited for their opportunity then, when he was prostrate in prayer, viciously hacked at him with a sword covered in poison.[25]

Ali's son, Hussein (Ḥusayn ibn 'Alī ibn Abī Tālib), the child of Muhammad's daughter Fatimah,[ix] *also met a tragic end.*

As the grandson of the Prophet, Hussein was invited to Kufa to be the religious representative there. While en route, the caravan was intercepted by the army of Ubayd Allah ibn Ziyad. Hussein attempted to explain his circumstances but egos flared and a battle ensued at Karbala. With great ferocity, his family was slaughtered and he was beheaded.[26]

Amongst the most pious Shia, it is not uncommon to flagellate themselves in honor of the sufferings of Ali and Hussein on Ashura.

Some go to the extreme of cutting themselves and even their children.

If this sounds familiar to Roman Catholic rituals and practices, that's because it is. ...

Perhaps the many similarities between Roman Catholicism and Islam are indicative of a deeper, more sinister connection.

An ex-Jesuit Priest named Alberto Rivera made it known that Catholic "Illumined Ones" in the Church hierarchy proudly proclaimed to have founded Islam to help Rome persecute the Jews and Christians of Africa and the Middle East and to deliver Jerusalem to the Vatican. ...

The "Christian" Priest Who Believed In Muhammad

> *Waraka (or **Waraqah**) ibn **Nawfal** ibn **Asad** ibn **Abd-al-Uzza** ibn **Qusayy Al-Qurashi** (Arabic* ورقه بن نوفل بن أسد بن عبد العزّى

قصي القرشيبن) *was the paternal first cousin of Khadija, the first wife of the Islamic prophet Muhammad.*

Waraka and Khadija were also the first cousins twice removed of Muhammad: their paternal grandfather Asad ibn Abd-al-Uzza was Muhammad's matrilineal great-great-grandfather.[1] *By another reckoning, Waraka was Muhammad's third cousin once removed: Asad ibn Abd-al-Uzza was a grandson of Muhammad's patrilineal great-great-great-grandfather Qusai ibn Kilab.*

Waraka was a Nestorian Priest and is revered in Islamic tradition for being one of the first hanifs to believe in the prophecy of Muhammad.[2] *~ Wikipedia*[44]

It may be firmly stated that without Waraqah ibn Nawfal or his cousin Khadija, there would be no Islam.[45]

It was Waraqah and Khadija who encouraged Muhammad that his terrifying visions were, indeed, from an angel — but not just any angel; the Archangel of the Christian Bible, Gabriel. ...

There is yet another source which connects Waraqah as the Catholic Priest uniquely qualified to acquaint Muhammad with the Christian foundation for his Holy Book; one which states that Waraqah was an accomplished scholar who had translated the Bible into Arabic.

There is also mention of a teenage Muhammad being attended to and recognized by a different Catholic monk, Bahira. Bahira not only imbued Muhammad with his destiny but predicted that he would bring the downfall of the Byzantine Empire.

At least one version of the telling states that it was Bahira who helped write the Quran ...

The story that a Catholic monk had already written the Quran, met a teenage Muhammad and imparted the foundation of Islam to him and his tribe seems to be the stuff of needless controversy.

However, archeological, "mainstream" proof was provided by the Daily Mail in August of 2015. ~ *Secret History*, Cirucci[162]

Orthodoxy had been Rome's wayward sister for centuries and the Vatican seemed quite happy to look the other way as her scimitar-wielding Frankenstein did her dirty work for her.

Even Florescu and McNally admitted — [cxliv]

> *Pope Nicholas V. ... had done little more than equip three Genoese galleys loaded with weapons and food for the beleaguered city ...*[163]

Now Wallachia and Transylvania were in easy striking range for the Ottomans. Just beyond lay Hungary and the rest of Europe.

As refugees made their way north and west, they described how captives fleeing the great city were impaled on massive stakes just outside the walls in an effort to quicken the collapse of morale during the siege.

As Hunyadi was leading a successful relief of the besieged city of Belgrade, Vlad Dracula was waging sanctioned war against Mehmed's ally, Vladislav II.

By August of 1456, he had killed his rival and become *Voivode* of Wallachia. He was 25 years old.[cxlv]

A comet that year inspired the minting of a coin to commemorate the successful succession of a monster of Crusaders. Recall that the icon of Rome was the eagle until it was supplanted by the dragon.

> *Dracula and his astrologers must have considered* [the comet's] *appearance in a positive vein, since during the period of its sighting he achieved his dream of securing his ancestral throne. This positive view is further suggested by the fact that the only Dracula coin discovered so far is one that depicts on one side the profile of the Wallachian eagle with its wings extended and a cross in its beak, and on the other, a crescent mounted on a star trailing six undulating rays in its wake. The coin, bearing the hallmark of a Braşov goldsmith, was of very high quality and obviously meant to replace those of Dracula's father, which bore the Dragon symbol.*[164]

In these nations of Wallachia, Bulgaria, Serbia and Transylvania, the power of the Aristocracy (in Wallachia and

Transylvania, the *boyars*) wasn't in any way "democracy" or a "republic" but it could sometimes be a buffer against the complete tyrannical autocracy of a single ruler. The Son of the Dragon, however, quickly went to work changing that (especially after what the *boyars* did to his father and brother).

Vlad Ţepeş (the Impaler), a.k.a. Dracula, Son of the Dragon, Crusader for Rome. Wikimedia Commons

The very next year, 1457 AD, Dracula invited all of the *boyars* within traveling distance of his capital city, Târgovişte, for a special Easter celebration; they and all their families.

At the conclusion of the feast, he had his soldiers surround the palace. He then asked the *boyars*, one by one, how many Voivodes they had seen in their lifetimes. The youngest said no fewer than seven and the oldest as many as 30. The Son of the Dragon agreed with them and said that it had been so many because of their intrigues and treachery. He then selected those too young or too old for manual labor and had them all brutally impaled outside the palace walls.

The rest were put into a forced march, 50 miles, to a ruined fortress upon a precipice overlooking the River Argeş, in Poenari, Transylvania. It had been built and abandoned by monks and it made a formidable base for the tyrant to protect both himself and his accumulated wealth.

But because it was abandoned it was in disrepair. The able-bodied boyars, still dressed in what was left of their Easter clothing, were marched to what was to become "Castle Dracula". Those that survived worked for months rebuilding it. When it was done, they, too, were impaled.

Dracula replaced the *boyars* he had impaled with a puppet Aristocracy he called the *armaşi*, many of whom were not native Wallachians.

Just as the Vatican seeks to place clergy in remote locations they have no warmth for nor affiliation with to facilitate their being amenable to betraying that population, so Vlad the Impaler's *armaşi* was happy to

rubber stamp his brutal reign of terror. They received the wealth and properties of the previous *boyars* and owed Dracula everything.

At this point in his life, the Impaler Crusader followed a mix of both honoring his father's Dragon oath and conversion to Catholicism as well as the Orthodoxy of Wallachia.

However, most telling was how the Catholic / Orthodox theology of works-based Salvation validated his cruelty. If, in any way, Dracula was doing evil in his lust for power, he could always build another cathedral or monastery (as long as the monks behaved themselves and didn't give Vlad Ţepeş cause to have them impaled).

> *Dracula was often seen in the company of Romanian Orthodox monks. He was known to be particularly fond of the monasteries of Tismana and of Snagov, both of which he often visited. He also liked ritual, a characteristic trait of Orthodox believers. Even when he imposed the death sentence, he insisted upon proper ceremony for his victims and a Christian burial.* [Subscribing to Orthodoxy / Romanism[cxlvi]], *Dracula was also sufficiently pre-Lutheran to believe that good works, such as the building of a monastery, could atone more than faith for evil deeds. In his tortured mind cruelty and religiosity were deeply intertwined, and he would occasionally use religious grounds to justify a crime. Dracula was also enough of a medievalist to take his Dragon oath seriously, seeing himself as a Christian crusader against the Infidel.*[165]

The partial honesty of our Boston College Professors is deeply profound. The ability to commit the most heinous crimes imaginable, such as the abuse, violation, torture and ritual murder of small children, and then believing that those actions could be atoned for via some form of "penance" may be called the "Opus Dei effect".

For an astounding twenty years, FBI Agent Robert Philip Hanssen fed the dying Soviet Union intelligence to keep the stagnate, Communist regime a viable threat. He is Catholic Opus Dei.

One of the reasons Hanssen was so successful was that the Director of the FBI during his tenure of treason was Louis J. Freeh, *also* a Roman Catholic member of Opus Dei.

It couldn’t go on forever, of course. When it finally came time to reign Hanssen in, the honor went to FBI agent Eric O’Neill; *not* Opus Dei but a good Jesuit-trained Roman Catholic. Immediately afterward, the boy-hero made the unusual move of retiring from government service.

That such key figures were either Opus Dei or devout Jesuit-trained Roman Catholics shows beyond any probability of random chance that Rome owns both the United States government and the heinous crimes it commits.

When Antonin Scalia was on the Supreme Court, he made up one of four other members who weren’t just Roman Catholic but also Opus Dei, including Clarence Thomas, Chief Justice John Roberts and Samuel A. Alito. With so many Catholics dictating “law” to Americans a few far-Left Jews were thrown in for good measure such as Ruth Ginsberg (a dear friend of Scalia) and Elena Kagan.

Scalia’s sudden death in 2016 took place at a secluded ranch run by the secretive Roman Catholic Knighthood that also has custodial responsibility for the infamous Bohemian Club and Bohemian Grove. Accusations abound of extreme sadism and debauchery occurring at those locations with “hunting” being one of the “sports” but the prey being children.[166]

Adherents atone for their sadism with equal masochism.

> *Recently* [2003], *the group* [Opus Dei] *opened a new multistory headquarters in the heart of Manhattan, a sign of its abundant financial resources.*
>
> *...it has tentacles of influence stretching all the way to the Holy See, where* [Pope Saint John Paul II’s] *spokesman, Joaquin Navarro-Valls, is a member. ...*
>
> *Opus Dei’s policy is to not disclose who is or isn’t a member.*
>
> *The movement’s critics ... claim a pledge of secrecy is written into the rules of the group, which some see as an underground conspiracy...*
>
> *“What possible activity could any Catholic group be engaged in that justifies secrecy?” wrote Catharine Henningsen, in SALT, a liberal Catholic journal of which she is the editor. ...*

> *“We just built a 17-story headquarters in New York,” said spokesman Brian Finnerty. ...*
>
> *Former members claim it is a cult that pressures psychologically vulnerable college students into joining. ...*
>
> *Critics are put off because, as part of their devotional regimen, some Opus Dei members inflict pain on themselves that seems to border on masochism ... mortification of the flesh ...*
>
> *Critics and supporters agree on one thing: The group has stirred up a fuss way beyond its numbers. Of the estimated 1 billion or more Catholics in the world, only about 85,000 belong to Opus Dei.*[[cxlvii]]
>
> *There are about 3,000 members in the U.S., divided as in other countries into two principal categories: “supernumeraries” (about 70 percent), who live in the secular world and may marry, and “numeraries” (about 30 percent), who live communally in Opus Dei residences, called Centers, and are pledged to celibacy. Revolving around them is a support group, the “cooperators,” who aid the movement with prayers and financial contributions.*
>
> *Despite the monastic-like existence of the numeraries, Opus Dei members are not, for the most part, clergy. Only about 2 percent are Priests and some were lay members for years before being ordained. ...*
>
> *“After I joined, they gave me a barbed-wire chain to wear on my leg for two hours a day and a whip to hit my buttocks with,” said* [Sharon] *Clasen, who has since left the group.*[[cxlviii]] ~ The Chicago Tribune[167]

This arrangement of evil assuaged by “penance” worked well for Dracula the Impaler.

> *The old Romanian chronicles, as well as oral tradition, credit Dracula with the foundation of several monasteries, the most famous of which was the monastery of Snagov, where his body allegedly lies buried. Dracula himself often resided at Snagov, endowed the monastery with land, and hid his treasure there in 1462 at the time of the Turkish invasion. He had also established in the basement of the edifice a torture chamber where many a boyar enemy perished.*[168]

Often such men have a perverse code that balances out in their twisted psyches. Having elevated commoners to take boyar land, the peasants supported their Dracula. He added to that support by refusing to pay the Ottoman tribute with their children (perhaps drawing upon his own experiences as impetus). It is, of course, smart politics to manipulate the masses. However, they were not spared from his cruelty or his insane sense of “justice”.

> *To see for himself how things were going, Dracula roamed across the countryside in disguise, as a self-styled inquisitor, particularly at night. He discerned how the peasants lived, how well they worked, and what they were thinking about. For those who did not respect his rigid code, he instituted people’s courts in individual villages. Sometimes he would take upon himself the role of judge, in the manner of a Saint Louis under his famous oak tree at Vincennes*[[cxlix]] *— a clear violation of the jurisdictions of boyar tribunals, which were the bastions of feudal law. In other instances he would stop at individual peasant homes and ask specific questions concerning their lives. Honesty was invariably the best policy, since hypocrisy was a vice Dracula could not tolerate. Hard work, though, was particularly emphasized and laziness abhorred. Whenever he encountered a libertine or rake. Dracula lost his temper and imposed punishment, as witnessed in the following paraphrased Romanian peasant ballad: One day Dracula met a peasant who was wearing too short a shirt.*
>
> > *One could also notice his homespun peasant trousers, which were glued to his legs, and one could make out the sides of his thighs. When he saw him (dressed) in this manner. Dracula immediately ordered him to be brought to court “Are you married?” he inquired. “Yes, I am, Your Highness.” “Your wife is assuredly of the kind who remains idle. How is it possible that your shirt does not cover the calf of your leg? She is not worthy of living in my realm. May she perish!”*
> >
> > *“Beg forgiveness, my lord, but I am satisfied with her. She never leaves home and she is honest.”*

> *"You will be more satisfied with another since you are a decent and hardworking man."*
>
> *Two of Dracula's men had in the meantime brought the wretched woman to him, and she was immediately impaled. Then bringing another woman, he gave her away to be married to the peasant widower. Dracula, however, was careful to show the new wife what had happened to her predecessor and explain to her the reasons why she had incurred the princely wrath. Consequently, the new wife worked so hard she had no time to eat. She placed the bread on one shoulder, the salt on another, and worked in this fashion. She tried hard to give greater satisfaction to her new husband than the first wife and not to incur the curse of Dracula.*
>
> ~ *Dracula, Prince of Many Faces*, Florescu and McNally[169]

Unfortunately, our honest, sensitive and Liberal Boston College Professors left out a few details of just how brutal this vignette was.

Another source is more frank.

> [Dracula's] *sadism could also be directed at specific individuals for violating his deeply felt, if insanely strict, sense of morality. For the crime of adultery (when committed by women) he would skin the culprit alive and carve out her genitalia. Once he was supposed to have been shocked to see that a peasant woman had fashioned her husband's shirt far too short. He had a red-hot poker thrust up her vagina and out through her mouth. In what he must have considered a magnanimous gesture, he then presented the widowed peasant with a new wife. Vlad also "roasted children of mothers and they had to eat their children themselves," according to a 1462 pamphlet on Dracula's life.*
>
> *The pamphlet was published by Germans, who were enemies of Vlad and probably had valid reasons for hating him. This hatred could very well have inspired the pamphlet's author to magnify or even invent atrocities. True or not, this version of Vlad's life, one of the first best sellers produced by the Gutenberg press, spawned his monstrous reputation that has endured through the centuries.*

> *More recent historians have discredited the original Dracula pamphlet as a hatchet job, but even if you accept the idea that Vlad was a notable leader according to the standards of his time, the chances are that he indulged in a certain amount of barbarism.* ~ Schechter[170]

Almost certainly the "new wife" had no choice in the matter.

Perhaps even more disturbing is the account of Dracula's Stalinesque purge of the sick and the destitute.

> *The image of Dracula as a friend of the poor has had to overcome examples of even sterner retributions in the oral traditions of the Romanian people. Perhaps the most tragic incident involving mass punishment of the have-nots, one that is referred to in all the narratives — German, Russian and Romanian — was Dracula's ridding the country of the beggars, the sick, and the poor. The Romanian version of that particular incident is as follows: Having asked the old, the ill, the lame, the poor, the blind, and the vagabonds to a large dining hall in Târgovişte, Dracula ordered that a feast be prepared for them.*
>
> > *On the appointed day, Târgovişte groaned under the weight of the large number of beggars who had come.*
> >
> > *The prince's servants passed out a batch of clothes to each one, then they led the beggars to a large mansion where tables had been set.*
> >
> > *The beggars marveled at the prince's generosity, and they spoke among themselves: "Truly it is a prince's kind of grace."*
> >
> > *Then they started eating. And what do you think they saw before them: a meal such as one would find on the prince's own — ale, wines and all the best things to eat which weigh you down.*
> >
> > *The beggars had a feast that became legendary. They ate and drank greedily. Most of them became dead drunk.*
> >
> > *As they became unable to communicate with one another, and became incoherent, they were suddenly faced with fire and smoke on all sides.*

The prince had ordered his servants to set the house on fire.

They rushed to the doors to get out, but the doors were locked.

The fire progressed. The blaze rose high like inflamed dragons. Shouts, shrieks, and moans arose from the lips of all the poor enclosed there.

But why should a fire be moved by the entreaties of men? They fell upon each other. They embraced each other. They sought help, but there was no human ear left to listen to them.

They began to twist in the torments of the fire that was destroying them.

The fire stifled some, the embers reduced others to ashes, the flames grilled most of them.

When the fire finally abated, there was no trace of any living soul.

The main justification for this crime was that it was an attempt to rid the country of useless vagabonds. Dracula's own words have survived in the collective memory of the Romanian people: "These men live off the sweat of others, so they are useless to humanity. It is a form of thievery. In fact, the masked robber in the forest demands your purse, but if you are quicker with your hand and more vigorous than he you can escape from him. However, these vagabonds take your belongings gradually by begging — but they still take it. They are worse than robbers. May such men be eradicated from my land!"[171]

Shockingly, Florescu and McNally then add this justification!

In Dracula's defense one might allege that these vagabonds, infirm and destitute people who roamed the countryside, occasionally invading cities and preying upon the rich instead of working, constituted a social plague. These people were a threat to the prosperity of the land and gave his country a poor reputation.[172]

Is there such a thing as "preying upon the rich"?

Does it merit being burned alive? Perhaps in Catholic theology it does.

You may be sitting back in shock, telling yourself these stories are exaggerations of superstition.

Dracula expert and enthusiast, Dr. Elizabeth Miller, Professor Emerita of Canada's Memorial University of Newfoundland, noted about these accounts in general and the purging of the "sick and infirm" in specific that — *Several of the tales of* [Dracula's] *atrocities occur in three or more separate and independent accounts, indicating a large measure of veracity.* [173]

In a short 6-year reign of tyranny, Vlad Ţepeş is said to have slaughtered (usually in his characteristically sadistic fashion) anywhere from 40,000 to 100,000 human beings of all ages, ethnicities and religions and, obviously, both genders.

In fact, his particular cruelty towards women, often requiring their privates to be mutilated while they were still alive, shows a psychotic imbalance regarding sex likely stemming from his captivity and abuse at the hands of the Turks.

But impalement wasn't the only form of sadism. An entire range of torture was used from having limbs or extremities hacked to being boiled alive and then requiring family members to eat the victim. Mothers nursing infants were impaled through their breasts and their children thrust upon the stake. [cl]

In one instance, a Turkish historian chronicled a mass impaling of Hungarians, Moldovians and Wallachians that ran for 20 miles beyond Dracula's palace.

Vlad Ţepeş showed equal barbarism towards the Saxon (German) merchants he felt were conducting a trade war against him.

Dracula also attempted to consolidate his power by raiding the strongholds of his rivals such as Dan III. On one such attack into Braşov, the Warlord is said to have enjoyed a meal while watching his soldiers and henchmen hack off the limbs of his victims during impalement. He then proceeded to use their blood for dipping of his bread, likely giving rise to that portion of the "vampire" legend.

Florescu and McNally note that another raid, this one against his rival brother, Vlad the Monk, fell upon an interesting date.

> *... during the summer of 1460 Dracula organized his final raid on Transylvania. This time he attacked townships and villages in the district of Amlaş known as the "Land of the Forest" or Unterwald, where Vlad the Monk was hiding. The* ***meistersinger*** ["wandering poet" Michael] *Beheim* [circa 1416 — 1472] *gives the exact date of the attack as falling on the feast day of Saint Bartholomew in the year 1460: August 24. Dracula struck in the early morning after "passing through the great forest" with his cavalry force. He burned the town of Amlaş and impaled all the citizens, a Priest having led the procession to the burial scene. (It is interesting to note that 114 years later, in 1574, Catherine de´Medici and her son, Henry, the duke of Anjou, made Saint Bartholomew's Day equally infamous through one of the most brutal mass exterminations in history, the Saint Bartholomew Massacre, when all the Protestant leaders in Paris were killed.)*[174]

"Interesting", indeed.

In, 1459, Pope Pius II (Enea Piccolomini) called the Council of Mantua and demanded another Crusade against the Ottoman Caliphate. The Catholic kings of Europe balked; it was easy for the "Successor of Peter" to order their own blood and treasure to be expended but the threat to the heart of Europe wasn't there.

However, the threat to the border of Eastern Europe was, and Vlad the Impaler finally chose sides, seeking to fulfill his father's oath as the Son of the Dragon.

> *Virtually the only European ruler who immediately planned a positive response to the papal appeal was Dracula, and that is perhaps why the Pope initially had such high regard for the Romanian warlord. Having signed a treaty with the Transylvanian Saxons in 1460 and renewed his oath of loyalty to the Hungarian king, Dracula had his western flank covered and was poised to resume the vows he had inherited from his father as a member of the Dragon Order.*[175]

As the Impaler went on the offensive, he carried a mindless hate with him. Any human being that fell into his hands was doomed. He maimed common Muslim slaves by personally cutting off their noses and ears.[176]

As long as Dracula impaled the enemies of the Catholic Church, all of his allies supported him.

In communications with his Crusader chain of command, he bragged about his indiscriminate barbarism and of the unmistakable commitment to war upon his former abusers.

A recap and summary is below:

> *Pope Pius II was elected to the Papacy in 1458. The following year he journeyed to Mantua, a city in Lombardy, Italy, and called for a council with the rulers of Europe. His purpose was to implement a Crusade against the Ottoman Turks in a stronger effort to conquer their common enemy of Christianity.*
>
> *Vlad III was one of the rulers to approve and fully endorse the Crusade, but he was unable to send troops he needed for his own purpose of defending Wallachia. The Sultan of the Ottoman Empire, Mehmed II, had laid claim to Wallachia, and it was Vlad's life-long effort to protect his father's domain and keep the throne. The Pope chose another ruler, Mathias Corvinus, the son of John Hunyadi, King of Hungary, to lead the Crusade. Pius gave Corvinus a staggering amount of gold coins to finance the war — it would have been enough to purchase 10 warships and amass an army of 12,000 troops.*
>
> *Vlad pledged his allegiance to the Pope, the Crusade, and to Corvinus.*
>
> *War with the Ottomans raged on for several years. Vlad had achieved some significant victories, such as the ambush of the Turks at the gorge north of Giurgiu when almost every one of Hamza Bey's army was captured and impaled, including Hamza Bey, who was put on the highest stake.*
>
> *Vlad devastated the Bulgarian lands between Serbia and the Black Sea. He was fluent in the Turkish language and disguised himself as a Turkish Sipahi (Calvary soldier). Once in the camps, he destroyed*

> *everyone and rode on to the next camp. Vlad had over 23,000 Turks impaled. He wrote a letter to Corvinus and reported: I have killed peasants men and women, old and young, who lived at Oblucitza and Novoselo, where the Danube flows into the sea, up to Rahova, which is located near Chilia, from the lower Danube up to such places as Samovit and Ghighen. We killed 23,884 Turks without counting those whom we burned in homes or the Turks whose heads were cut by our soldiers ... Thus, your highness, you must know that I have broken the peace with him [Sultan Mehmed II]. — Vlad III*[[cli]]
>
> *On June 17, 1462, Vlad and Mehmed led their armies to Targoviste, and* ***The Night Attack*** *ensued. Vlad attacked at night on the road to the city where Mehmed's army was camped, and 15,000 Turks were killed. The main goal for Vlad was to assassinate Mehmed, but the Sultan retreated to Targoviste, where to his horror he found 20,000 impaled Turks.* ~ Burns[177]

Florescu and McNally give even more disturbing details:

> *Dracula also included some gruesome statistics concerning the exact number of men killed (both Turks and Bulgarians) in the various townships on both banks of the Danube, which enables us to follow the precise course of his attack. At Giurgiu itself there were 6,414 victims: at Eni Sala, 1,350; at Durostor, 6,840; at Orsova, 343; at Hirsova, 840: at Marotin, 210: at Turtucaia, 630; at Tumu, Batin, and Novograd, 384: at Sistov, 410; at Nicopolis and Ghighen, 1,138; at Rahova, 1,460. It is worth noting that Dracula did not destroy the port of Vidin because, he stated, "from that point onward the Turks can do no great damage." To impress King Matthias further with his accuracy, Dracula counted the heads, noses, and ears cut off, then placed them in two bags and sent them to Buda* [modern Budapest] *through his envoy Radu Farma. These figures did not include the thousand or so Turkish troops and their two commanders, Hamza Pasha and Thomas Catavolinos, who were manacled, marched to the vicinity of Târgovişte, and impaled. Taller stakes were reserved for the two Turkish commanders.*[178]

That’s over 20,000 human beings maimed, tortured and murdered; not just Muslims but also Orthodox and Christians (as much of Bulgaria was).

With such meticulous accounting, it is obvious that not one human being escaped their horrible fate.

Unfortunately, as is often the case, monsters make extremely capable tacticians. For instance, on 17 June 1462, the Impaler found himself surrounded in the Carpathian mountains near Târgovişte. Exploiting his knowledge of the Turkish language and wearing captured clothing, Dracula penetrated the Ottoman camp in the dark of the evening (now known as the “Night Attack”) and nearly put the Sultan’s crack troops to flight. He created such terror and disarray that he was not pursued and, thereby saved himself.

Atrocities in the name of “war” are nothing new, especially for Rome. After creating the 3rd Reich to punish the homeland of Luther, the Vatican used its pawns on the Allied side to commit crimes beyond the war and into the peace.

Dwight David Eisenhower managed to go his entire military career without a single leadership position; not even a platoon as a lieutenant.

But he volunteered his time to coach football at St. Mary’s Academy in between wars when stationed at Fort Sam Houston in Texas.[179]

It was the Catholic vote that put Eisenhower in the Jesuit Father Andrew White-House.[180]

> *The American people went to the polls (November 4, 1952) and sent to power the Republican Party. With few exceptions unbounded rejoicing greeted the Republican victory throughout the Catholic world. The Pope himself, on hearing that General Eisenhower had been elected President, hastened to send by cable his “divine blessing upon yourself and your administration.”*[15] [Ustaše genocidal butcher for Rome, Ante] *Pavelic, in the Argentine* [Catholic Nazi asylum], *asked all the Ustashi to hail the Republican triumph. Ustashi Priests gave special thanksgivings in South and North America, as well as in Europe.* ~ Manhattan[181]

President Eisenhower walks with Pope John XXIII at the Vatican; 6 December 1959.

The Polish Jesuit Superior General of WWII, Wlodimir Ledóchowski, was personally responsible for seeding Communism in Russia and Nazism in Germany and his right-hand emissary for both missions was Father Edmund Aloysius Walsh, for whom the Georgetown School of Foreign Service is named after.

When Walsh appropriately died on Halloween in 1956, President Eisenhower, a Knight, Grand Cross of the Sovereign Order of Malta,[182] sent the Jesuits a heartfelt note: *The death of Father Walsh is a grievous loss to the society in which he served so many years, to the educational and religious life of the United States and to the free people of the Western World. For four decades, he was a vigorous and inspiring champion of freedom for mankind and independence for nations... at every call to duty, all his energy of leadership and wisdom of counsel were devoted to the service of the United States.*[183]

Erased from history are the crimes committed by “Ike” upon German soldiers running frantically from Soviet atrocities into Allied arms. They did not find the compassion they hoped for.

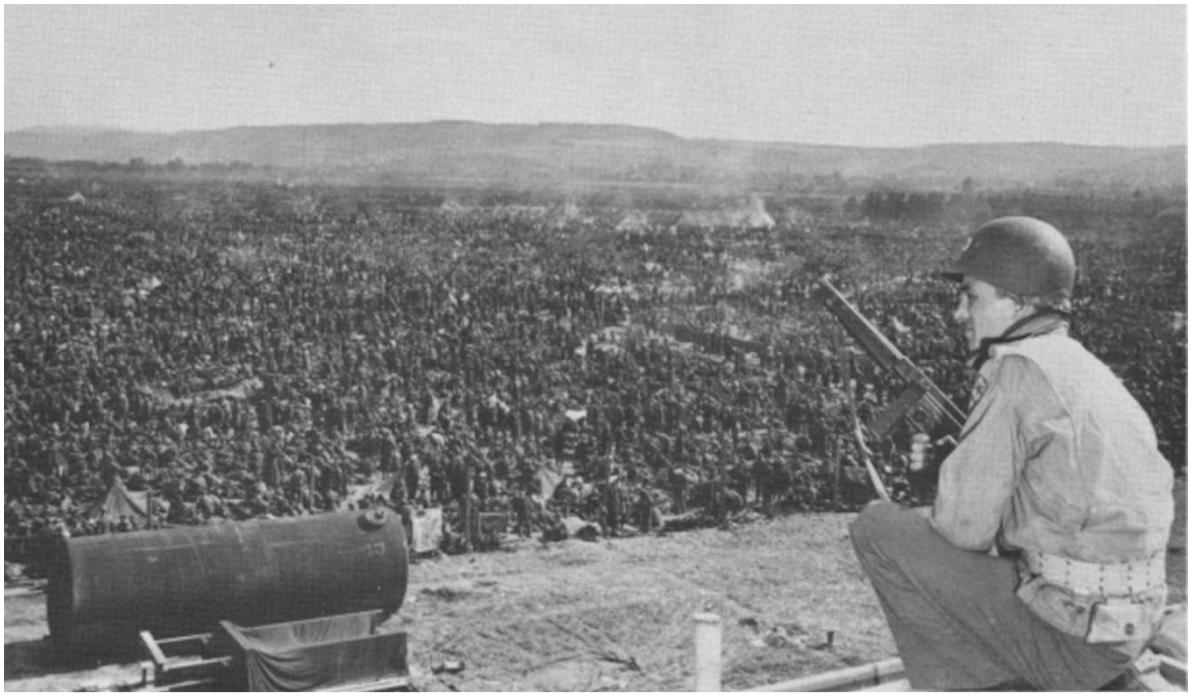
> *... a million Germans taken prisoner by Eisenhower’s armies died in captivity **after** the surrender. …*
>
> *Among the early U.S. captives was one Corporal Helmut Liebich, who had been working in an anti-aircraft experimental group at Peenemunde on the Baltic. Liebich was captured by the* [United States military[cliii]] *on April 17, near Gotha in Central Germany. Forty-two years later, he recalled vividly that there were no tents in the Gotha camp, just barbed wire fences around a field soon churned to mud. The prisoners received a small ration of food on the first day but it was then cut in half. In order to get it, they were forced to run a gauntlet. Hunched over, they ran between lines of* [U.S.] *guards who hit them with sticks as they scurried towards their food. On April 27, they were transferred to the U.S. camp at Heidesheim farther west, where there was no food at all for days, then very little. Exposed* [no shelter from the weather], *starved, and thirsty, the men started to die. Liebich saw between ten and thirty bodies a day being dragged out of his section, B, which at first held around 5,200 men.. He saw one prisoner beat another to death to get his piece of bread. One night when it rained, Liebich saw the sides of the holes in which they were sheltered, dug in soft sandy earth, collapse on men who were too weak to struggle out. They smothered before anyone could get to them. Liebich sat down and wept. “I could hardly believe men could be so cruel to each other.”*
>
> *Typhus broke out in Heidesheim about the beginning of May. Five days after V-E Day, on May 13, Liebich was transferred to another U.S. POW camp, at Bingen-Rudesheim in the Rhineland near Bad Kreuznach, where he was told that the prisoners numbered somewhere between 200,000 and 400,000, all without shelter, food, water, medicine, or sufficient space.*
>
> *Soon he fell sick with dysentery and typhus. He was moved again, semiconscious and delirious, in an open-topped railway car with about sixty other prisoners: northwest down the Rhine, with a detour through*

Holland, where the Dutch stood on bridges to smash stones down on the heads of the prisoners. Sometimes the American guards fired warning shots near the Dutch to keep them off. After three nights, his fellow prisoners helped him stagger into the huge camp at Rheinberg, near the border with the Netherlands, again without shelter or food.

When a little food finally did arrive, it was rotten. In none of the four camps had Leibich seen any shelter for the prisoners. The death rate in the U.S. Rhineland camps at this point, according to surviving data from a medical survey, was about thirty per cent per year. A normal death rate for a civilian population in 1945 was between one and two percent.

One day in June, through hallucinations of his fever, Liebich saw "the Tommies" coming into the camp. The British had taken over Rheinberg, and that probably saved his life. At this point, Liebich, who is five-foot-ten, weighed 96.8 pounds.

According to stories told to this day by other ex-prisoners of Rheinberg, the last act of the Americans before the British took over was to bulldoze one section level while there were still men living in their holes in the ground. …



A U.S. soldier watches over hundreds of thousands of shelterless, starving German prisoners of war at the Sinzig-Remagen

concentration camp, Spring, 1945.
[Rhein-Zeltung, reprinted by *Saturday Night* magazine]

> *"God, I hate the Germans," Eisenhower wrote to his wife, Mamie,*[[cliii]] *in September, 1944. Earlier, in front of the British ambassador to Washington, he had said that all the 3,500 or so officers of the German General Staff should be "exterminated."*
>
> *In March, 1945, a message to the Combined Chiefs of Staff signed and initialled by Eisenhower recommended creating a new class of prisoners — Disarmed Enemy Forces, or DEFs — who, unlike Geneva-defined prisoners of war, would not be fed by the army after the surrender of Germany. …*
>
> *On April 26, 1945, the Combined Chiefs approved the DEF status for prisoners of war in* [United States custody] *only: the British members had refused to adopt the* [U.S.] *plan for their own prisoners. The Combined Chiefs stipulated that the status of disarmed troops be kept secret.*
>
> *By that time, Eisenhower's quartermaster general at SHAEF* [Supreme Headquarters Allied Expeditionary Force], *General Robert Littlejohn, had already twice reduced rations for prisoners, and a SHAEF message signed "Eisenhower" had reported to General George Marshall, the U.S. Army Chief of Staff, that the prisoner pens would provide "no shelter or other comforts..."* ~ Bacque[184]

Like "Ike", the Son of the Dragon also worked for Rome. He validated his crimes as defense of the "Holy Cross" and support of "the Catholic law."[185]

Neither army gave their conscripts any choice other than to fight for them or die. Mehmed employed taskmasters with the power to whip or behead any soldier who fell short of his "duty" while Dracula personally saw to the "morale" of his men. After a battle, Vlad III would inspect the wounded and those with injuries in their backs would be rewarded with impalement.[cliv]

Following the "Night Attack" that spared Dracula from capture, Mehmed quickly regained his superior position. He sent cavalry to catch up with the fleeing Wallachians, many of whom were captured and subsequently slaughtered.

It must be remembered, however, that Ottomans showed Dracula the effectiveness of barbarism and the Impaler's success awed (not sickened) his rival.

> *Later, as soon as it was daylight, the sultan selected the leading men who were under his prefects and appointed Ali Mihaloğlu, their general, with orders to go after the Wallachians and pursue them as quickly as they could. Ali took the army and hastened after Vlad; he went after him by marching with all his might. He caught up with Vlad's army, attacked it, and killed many and captured about a thousand Wallachians whom he brought back to the camp before the sultan. The sultan seized them all and had them led away to execution. The sultan's soldiers had, during the previous night, captured one of Vlad's soldiers, and they took him to Mahmud who asked him who he was and where he was from. As he was answering these questions, Mahmud also asked him if he knew where Vlad, the ruler of Wallachia, happened to be. He replied that he knew exactly but would tell them nothing whatsoever about it, because he feared Vlad. They said that they would kill him if he did not tell them what they wanted to know, but he said that he was more than ready to die, and would not dare to reveal anything about that man. Mahmud* [Mehmed] *was amazed by this and, while he killed the man,*[[clv]] *he commented that with such fear surrounding him and an army worth the name, that man would surely go far. That, then, was what happened at that time.* ~ Chalkokondyles[186]

Mehmed pursued Vlad III through abandoned towns to the outskirts of his capital, Târgovişte. More than just deserted scorched earth greeted the Sultan. When he was within 60 miles of his prize, he was treated to a carefully-planned sight.

For over two miles, a literal forest of impaled human beings.

> *The sultan advanced from there into the interior of the land and headed straight for the city where Vlad had his royal court.*[155] *Every night that he halted he dug a ditch all around the camp, which he reinforced on the inside by blocking it with barriers; he also increased the number of sentries and ordered that his armies should be under*

> *arms day and night. He advanced thus with his army in formation into the interior of Wallachia and arrived at the city where Vlad had his royal court. The Wallachians had prepared to be besieged there by the sultan, but they opened the gates and were ready to receive the sultan himself as he approached with his army. The sultan then marched through the city and when he saw no men upon the walls except for artillerymen who were firing cannons at his army,[156] he neither made camp nor invested the place.*
>
> *He continued on and, after advancing for twenty-seven stades, they beheld their own men who had been impaled.*
>
> *The sultan's army entered into the area of the impalements, which was seventeen stades long* [just under 2 miles] *and seven stades* [$^{8}/_{10}^{\text{ths}}$ of a mile] *wide. There were large stakes there on which, as it was said, about twenty thousand men, women, and children had been spitted, quite a sight for the Turks and the sultan himself. The sultan was seized with amazement and said that it was not possible to deprive of his country a man who had done such great deeds, who had such a diabolical understanding of how to govern his realm and its people. And he said that a man who had done such things was worth much. The rest of the Turks were dumbfounded when they saw the multitude of men on the stakes. There were infants too affixed to their mothers on the stakes, and birds had made their nests in their entrails. ~* Chalkokondyles[187]

It worked.

Despite an overwhelmingly-superior force, Mehmed turned without conquering Târgovişte nor capturing it's tyrant warlord.

As he retreated, Bubonic plague struck his army: "the curse of Dracula".

However, Mehmed was not without his wiles. When he reached the plains of Bărăgan, the Sultan left behind an emissary: his lover and Dracula's brother, Radu the Handsome.

Radu's mission was to exploit the fear and loathing amongst Wallachia's *boyars* and citizenry to encourage a regime change with Radu as *Voivode*

and Ottoman vassal. Cunningly, Mehmed would allow Radu to continue to avoid the conscription of young Wallachian boys as “tribute”.

It was a brilliant plan of subversion.

With the Ottoman threat gone, all that Romania feared was its tyrant, Vlad Ţepeş.

For Wallachians, it was no choice at all. The country defected to Radu and Dracula’s army melted away.

The deposed tyrant fled to his castle stronghold in Poenari.

Radu pursued his brother and brought with him canon and siege engines to tackle the fortress.

Romanian legend claims that a Wallachian slave loyal to Vlad III escaped the Ottoman camp with designs upon warning Dracula. He shot an arrow with a message into a tall rampart which, by chance, was where the Impaler’s wife was at the time. The arrow reached the chamber and extinguished a candle when landing upon a table. Dracula’s wife read the warning and supposedly exclaimed she would rather have her corpse be eaten by the fishes of the Argeş than be taken captive by the Turks. She then flung herself off the rampart and into the river.

However, no other evidence of this “wife” exists.

Still, Italian Roman Catholic movie Director Martin Scorsese used the myth anyway to embellish his 1992 *Bram Stoker’s Dracula* staring Gary Oldman and Keanu Reeves.

With the help of local peasants, the Son of the Dragon was able to slip away from the castle before it fell to Radu and his Muslim army.

Vlad III managed to make his way to Braşov, where he was eventually met by the new King of Hungary, Matthias Corvinus, the son of John Hunyadi.

However, Radu was welcomed in Târgovişte as the new *Voivode*. Dracula was left a refugee with a handful of mercenaries to guard him.

Mehmed and Radu continued to put the pressure on Dracula by offering Corvinus extremely appealing terms of safety and commerce (by vowing not to strike through Wallachia into Hungary, Mehmed freed his resources

to secure Anatolia). When the greed of Holy Roman Emperor Frederick III caused the citizenry to rebel against his onerous taxation, Corvinus considered himself relieved of his responsibility to Crusade. He laid a cunning trap for the Impaler who was arrested and Radu was recognized by Hungary as the Sovereign of Wallachia.

King Matthias had been assured by Italian astrologer (a Vatican plant?), Antonio della Camera, that betraying Dracula was in the King's best interest.

A trial occurred — not on the innumerable atrocities Vlad III committed — but on whether or not he had betrayed Hungary and Rome.

Letters were produced seeming to confirm the "treason" that supposedly appealed to Mehmed for aid in humble submission to his authority. This appeared to be an illogical choice for the master tactician. Florescu and McNally conclude that they were forgeries by Catholic Priest Johann Reudell, the prior [manager, keeper] of the cathedral at Braşov and an enemy of the Impaler.

But the imprisonment quickly turned into "house arrest", not unlike the "house arrest" endured by Galileo Galilei for teaching the new globe-Earth doctrines of the Vatican's mathematician, Father Nicolaus Copernicus.[188] Perhaps the fact that Galilei was conducting the teaching by invitation at the inaugural university of the Jesuits, the *Collegio Romano*[189] (founded by Ignatius Loyola in Rome) helped soothe the supposed rage of his Inquisitor, Robert Cardinal Bellarmine.

Another infamous example of "house arrest" was the punishment of pedophile provider Jeffrey Epstein.

> *As more of Epstein's victims came forward, prosecution was forced upon an unwilling Pedocracy.*
>
> *Epstein was charged on at least 5 counts of Federal criminal acts involving minors and under-aged sex. The United States Attorney, Alexander Acosta, dropped all Federal charges. Epstein pled guilty to the Florida charge of "solicitation of a minor" and was given 13 months of "house arrest".*

> *In 2007, Acosta signed a non-prosecution deal in which he agreed not to pursue federal charges against Epstein or four women who the government said procured girls for him. In exchange, Epstein agreed to plead guilty to a solicitation charge in state court, accept a 13-month sentence, register as a sex offender and pay restitution to the victims identified in the federal investigation.*
>
> *"This agreement will not be made part of any public record," the deal between Epstein and Acosta says. The document was unsealed by a federal judge in a civil lawsuit in 2015.*
>
> *Reiter said in the 2009 deposition that federal prosecutors in Miami told him "that typically these kinds of cases with one victim would end up in a ten-year sentence." Reiter said he was surprised not only by the decision to pull back from prosecuting the case, but also by the light sentence and liberal privileges granted to Epstein during his jail term. ~* ***The Washington Post***[1068]

Donald Trump's first choice for Labor Secretary was fast food chain Carl's Jr CEO Andrew Puzder.

Under Puzder's guidance, Carl's Jr. led the field in unhealthy menu items in an industry that specializes in poison for the poor. He then packaged it in porn; television ads so controversial, it cost him several positions. Although Puzder didn't see any conflict with his Catholic religion, the other members of the Board of Trustees at Thomas Aquinas University did and forced him off.

> *Under Puzder's leadership, CKE Restaurants, which owns Carl's Jr. and Hardee's restaurants, launched several racy ad campaigns featuring women in bikinis eating burgers. ...*
>
> *In one 2003 ad featuring Hefner, the Playboy founder responds to a question about having favorites while standing with his girlfriend and two Playboy Playmates, according to reports in the L.A. Times and in AdWeek. ~ CNN*[1069]

Unfortunately, Puzder was a little too greasy even for Congress.

> *Instead, Trump replaced him with a shoo-in: an up-and-coming United States Attorney who once clerked for Opus Dei Roman Catholic Supreme Court Justice Samuel Alito.*[1070]
>
> *That was Alexander Acosta and the Senate confirmed him with a solid 60-vote majority (with less than 100 showing up to work on 26 April 2017). ~ Eaters of Children*, Cirucci[190]

Perhaps King Matthias felt a kindred for any monster who is a fellow tyrant.

While in confinement, it is said that the Son of the Dragon was compelled to lay his hands upon small animals to torture them; mice that he caught or birds he had purchased for him. This certainly proved he was someone useful for future Catholic geo-political chess moves.

In 1475, Radu died after a long bout with syphilis. Stephen the Great of Moldavia exploited this opportunity to put one of his vassals, Basarab Laiotă cel Bătrân, upon the Wallachian throne. Soon, however, Basarab alienated Stephen by giving too many concessions to Mehmed.

The turmoil gave Corvinus the opportunity to loose his dog of war, Dracula, to put a stronger hold upon the territory in between Hungary and the Ottoman front lines.

In exchange for his loyalty, not only would the Impaler be Voivode again, he was given King Matthias' cousin, Ilona Szilágy, in a Royal Catholic wedding ceremony.

All across Italy, the city-states that produced so many Cardinals and Popes were jubilant that the Impaler was once again at large.

> *Florio de Reverella, the representative of the duke of Ferrara, an Italian republic always threatened by Venice, reported that he was very satisfied to learn that "the so-called Dracula, in whom so much hope had been vested, [was] finally a free agent" by July 18, 1475. Similar positive reactions came from the representatives of Milan, Venice, and the papal legate, the bishop of Erlau. There was a generally jubilant reaction to the good news ...*[191], [clvi]

In early 1476, Vlad Ţepeş was back, slaughtering Turkish garrisons in Bosnia and impaling, hacking, torturing everything he could lay his hands upon.

With Hungarian backing and the help of his cousin (and former rival), Stephen the Great of Moldavia, Dracula led an army from Transylvania into Wallachia in November of 1476.

In short order, he recaptured Târgovişte.

The Impaler enjoyed no more than two months on his throne. All around him, peasants, *boyars*, Christians, Orthodox and Muslims refused to suffer his return to power (however, he maintained the loyalty of his fellow Catholics).

How did Dracula die?

The exact circumstances are not known for sure, other than that he was waylaid in the forest outside Târgovişte and beheaded.

Florescu and McNally believed they were able to piece together what happened.

> *The real history of Dracula's final moments is ... complex ... It can be reconstituted with the help of a few foreign observers as well as the letters of Prince Stephen the Great to the king of Hungary.*
>
> *Perhaps one of Dracula's greatest mistakes following his victories at Rucar, Tirgovişte, and Bucharest was his failure to seize and kill Basarab III Laiotă as he had other Romanian rivals such as Dan III and Vladislav II. Laiota's survival was a source of great danger, as the former prince was busy rallying the support of various Turkish frontier commanders on the Danube to organize the inevitable counterattack.*
>
> *Dracula, during his third reign, as noted, maintained his court at Bucharest, which was perilously exposed to a rapid attack from the south.*
>
> *According to most reliable sources, the final encounter took place near the monastery of Snagov in the last days of December 1476. Dracula was attacked by Basarab Laiotă and a Turkish contingent of 4,000*

men, twice the number of his own defenders, which included Stephen's bodyguard of 200 Moldavians.

It is entirely conceivable that Dracula disguised himself as a Turk, a practice he often resorted to in order to confuse his opponents.

The Austrian chronicler Jacob Unrest helps to clarify the situation by confirming the fact that Dracula was killed by a hired assassin who came from the Turkish camp. He carefully explains the circumstances: "Dracula was killed with great cunning, because the Turks wished to avenge the enmity which he had borne against them for so long and also the great damages inflicted upon them. They hired a Turk [to act] as one of his servants with the mission of killing him while he served him. The Turk was apparently instructed to attack Dracula from the back. He was then to cut off his head and bring it back on horseback to the sultan."

Dracula's head was later exposed on a high stake at Constantinople for the populace to witness that the great "Kaziglu" (the Impaler) was finally dead — a fact confirmed by the Hungarian chronicler Bontini. [192]

So ended the life of Dracula, Son of the Dragon, Knight of the Catholic Church.

Chapter 4

Lucrezia Borgia

MAFFIO: A grewsome sight, indeed. Was he a man of mark, whom these men thus did cast into the stream? That horse makes my flesh creep: the murderer in the saddle, and his victim riding on behind.

GUBETTA: Upon that horse there were two brothers.

JEPPO: You have said it, Signor di Belverana. The corpse was Giovanni Borgia; the horseman Caesar Borgia.

MAFFIO: A veritable family of demons are these Borgias! But tell us, Jeppo, why did the brother slay his brother thus?

JEPPO: I will not tell you. The motive for the murder was so execrable that it should be a deadly sin merely to speak of it.

GUBETTA: I will tell you why. Caesar, Cardinal of Valentia, slew Giovanni, Duke of Gandia, because both brothers were enamored of the same woman.

MAFFIO: And this woman was ... ?

GUBETTA: (still in the background) Their sister.

~ Hugo[193]

The name “Borgia” should be more commonly spoken of and have more foreboding than “Rothschild” or “Rockefeller”.[clvii] Perhaps in testimony to families such as Borgia, Medici, Orsini, Colonna and Farnese, they remain in the shadows while families of less power and repute ascend the “fearful puppet-master list”.

There was never a Rothschild that sat in the Chair of Saint Peter yet the Borgias, alone, produced three Popes and countless Cardinals and Bishops.

Nor have the Borgias gone away. As recently as 1992, a Borgia (Rodrigo Borja Cevallos) reigned as President of Ecuador. His name can be traced to one of the most infamous Popes in the history of the Catholic Church: Rodrigo de Borgia, “Pope Alexander VI”.

Many more Borgias pull strings from behind the scenes in everything from banking to big business, Ministries of Parliament to music.

Perhaps the fact that Google was born on the anniversary of the consecration of the Jesuit Order[194],[195] has helped keep the Borgia’s off the Google off-shore barges.[196],[clviii]

The third Superior General of The Company of Loyola[clix] was a Borgia. He was a wealthy Duke from the same country as the order’s founder, Spain, and he was afforded special privileges to become a Jesuit Priest (not the first time such a dispensation was granted).

> *The founder of the Jesuit Order, Ignatius Loyola, made a number of affiliations. Thus the Spaniard, Miguel Torres, whom Ignatius called “the apple of his eye,” lived as a man of the world. No one knew that he was a Jesuit and that Ignatius himself had admitted him years previously into the Order. Francis Borgia governed his Duchy of Gandia, living outwardly as a duke, although he had already four years previously made the Jesuit profession with Ignatius’s consent. And when Borgia was canonised in 1724 by Benedict XIII., reference to his afliliation was even inserted in the bull of canonisation: “Whilst still Duke of Gandia he was permitted by our predecessor, Paul III., at St. Ignatius’s request, to take the vows with the knowledge of only a few members of the Order. He was granted four years by the Pope to arrange his affairs.”**
>
> ~ von Hoensbroech[197]

When it came to recruiting riches and talent, the Jesuits did (and still do) whatever was necessary.

> *The same diligence that was exercised in the acquisition of riches, was, also, employed wherever the question was to win over substantial, influential, and powerful men of high standing, to be patrons and abettors of the Order, if not, indeed, members of the same; and in this*

respect, in fact, several of Loyola's desciples rendered signal service. Among the foremost who distinguished himself in this particular, was Aroz, the delegate [Provincial] *to Spain, as he was successful in inducing Francis Borgia, Duke of Gandia, and a grandee of Spain, as, also, formerly Viceroy of Catalonia a very weak man, however, in mental capacity to take up the cause of Jesuitism; so much so, that this nobleman was the first person in Europe who founded a Jesuit College for the education of youth. He shortly afterwards, too, in the year 1546, endowed a University, with all privileges. Overjoyed at this, Loyola commenced a correspondence with the Duke, and the result of these letters was that Borgia became so enamoured with the Society of Jesus, that he at length came to the firm determination of joining it as a true member; in fact, notwithstanding his already being considerably advanced in years, he forthwith put off the purple, and began the study of theology.*

His progress therein, however, advanced but slowly, and consequently Loyola allowed him to take the four vows without being previously well versed in theology, or even having gone through the course of exercises required of noviciates. Thus the Duke of Gandia became Pater Franciscus Borgia, and the newly-made member showed great, zeal for the Society. He, however, did not at once enter a profess-house, and still less was he employed in the service of the Order; Ignatius, indeed, permitted him to live in the world during a period of fully four years, in order that the newly-acquired brother might be able to settle his worldly affairs, and conveniently make arrangements for the maintenance of his children. It was natural enough that such a highly-born man as Pater Borgia should not be treated exactly like an ordinary member. ~ Griesinger[198]

Bishoprics, Cardinalcies and Papacies are carved up and doled out to the wealthy Elite equal to any Lord of the Manor in Europe or any Sultan, Bey or Daimyō in Asia.

There are other prerequisites that Rome considers when appointing clergy; loyalty and utility.

Very rarely are Bishops or Cardinals given the diocese from which they were born and raised and that is a cunning tactic. When an agent isn't attached to the citizenry that they rule over, it's much easier to betray them.

Quickly, Kings throughout the new, "Holy Roman Empire" saw the benefit of having clergy who are loyal to them more than they are to the Pope and would often try to have sway over these "investiture" appointments.

Unless it suited Rome, it was a confrontation those kings lost.

> *The battle between Roman clergy and native Royalty came to a head from 1073 to 1075. Heinrich IV ("Henry IV"), King of the Germans and Holy Roman Emperor found himself at odds with Hildebrand of Sovana who had become Pope Gregory VII. Both of their seats of power were tenuous and both sought to surround themselves with allies that conflicted with the interests of the other.*
>
> *Lords and Bishops were appointed, deposed and / or excommunicated.*
>
> *Eventually, Heinrich deposed Gregory and Gregory excommunicated Heinrich.*
>
> *Although the Papacy was always vulnerable to attack by any nation's organized military, it wielded a powerful authority in the loyalty of both clergy and laity who (ignorant of Scripture) believed the Pope to truly be the Vicar of Christ in whom their very souls relied upon.*
>
> *This was illustrated quite well when a reckless ally of Heinrich — Cencio I, of the family of Frangipane — kidnapped Gregory after he delivered Christmas Day Mass in 1075. Within 24 hours Gregory was rescued by Roman citizens.*
>
> *The desire of kings to appoint their own clergy or Aristocracy is known as Investiture and it gets to the heart of why key Roman Catholics can instantly become enemy agents when called upon. When confronted with loyalty to their country verses the perceived salvation of their souls by pleasing the Vicar of Christ, almost without fail the Catholic called upon to go against the interests of his nation will do so at the behest of the Holy See, or one of his representatives. ...*

For Emperor Heinrich in 1077, it was a battle of wills that he eventually lost.

After being excommunicated, not once, but twice, Heinrich travelled to see Pope Gregory at Castle Canossa in Reggio Emilia, Italy where he waited three days, barefoot in the snow until he was received into Gregory's presence. ...

Pope Alexander also warred with another Henry over Investiture; Henry II of England.

In 1155, Henry appointed a promising youth to Chancellor of England on the recommendation of the Archbishop of Canterbury, Theobald.

Young Thomas Becket was all anyone could want in a Chancellor. ...

Becket was the perfect Royal Retainer; loyal, diplomatic, trustworthy.

He was also a dutiful executor of Henry's agenda to rule as a Constitutional Monarchy which freely submitted itself and its Aristocracy to a Medieval "rule of law". Interestingly, this would later become a point of contention between Henry and Becket. ...

Although Thomas Becket was regarded as a churchman above reproach, he did not shy away from reveling in the largess of being the most powerful man in Henry's Court. ...

After the death of Theobald in 1161, Henry appointed his trusted friend, Thomas Becket, as Archbishop of Canterbury.

It was an unprecedented move but Becket immediately recognized Alexander III as lawful Pope and this secured his appointment although he was the first Briton to sit in Westminster Abbey since the Norman conquest. ...

Recognizing Roland of Siena as lawful Pope Alexander III was an important move as power struggles between predecessor Adrian IV and Frederick Barbarossa had caused a double-election in the College of Cardinals with a minority refusing to recognize Roland and, instead, electing Ottaviano de Monticelli as Pope Victor IV.

Becket was ordained a Priest on June 2nd, 1162 and appointed Archbishop of Canterbury the next day.

Henry considered it a political coup to have a trusted Briton at Westminster rather than an Italian foreign agent. Little did he suspect that, overnight, his faithful English advisor would become a dedicated Roman operative both ready and willing to thwart Henry's every move if the See said so.

Sadly, Becket's transformation wasn't due to a personal flaw — just the opposite. As a man dedicated to duty, his ascension to the most important bishopric in England called him to new loyalties. Loyalties which required high Church officials to subvert national interests by any means possible in order to further the interests of Rome; including subterfuge, espionage, intelligence gathering and sowing of disinformation.

Becket was a victim and he didn't even understand what had occurred.

Neither did Henry II. ... ~ Secret History, Cirucci[199]

As the story goes, Henry was overheard by Knights eager to court his favor as wanting to be rid of the Archbishop pest, Thomas Becket. They sought him out and, by some of the most theatrical accounts, they burst in upon a solemn Mass and murdered Becket brutally.

The murder of Thomas Becket struck fear into Henry's heart. Despite Becket's opulent lifestyle he was well-respected (what Archbishop didn't live like a king?). Henry's authority was now gravely tenuous. Alexander could call upon devout Catholics, nave and noble alike, to overthrow him and few would stand in their way.

In the immediate aftermath, Pope Alexander III refused to sanction a single appointment to clerical office by Henry.

What shook Henry to the core was a rebellion fostered by French lords and lead by his own son, Young Henry, whom he had already crowned King in an unusual maneuver to insure his choice for succession. Young Henry had become disaffected as his father kept him very controlled — particularly with a strict financial allowance. Worst of

all, Young Henry had been tutored by Thomas Becket and was firmly in the Roman camp in exploiting his murder.

While Henry II was overseeing his holdings in France (a territory so large it was known as the Angevin Empire), King William of Scotland invaded England.

Henry realized it was time to mend fences with Rome in a Faustian bargain that would insure his continued reign, but at the cost of the Papacy's entitlement to all of England.

The result was the Compromise of Avranches. ~ Cirucci[200]

The tyranny of feudalism is the over-arching agenda that drives Rome and she has been remarkably successful under the guise of "Western 'democratic' elections".

As the Borgias, Medici, Colonnas and Orsini rotated through Vatican hierarchies, Catholic families rotate through political office and keep such power to themselves for decades and generations; from the Cuomos in New York to the Murkowskis in Alaska, from the Dodds in Connecticut to the Boggs in Louisiana — and many of those families control media simultaneously. For instance, Leftist Catholic Democrat Governor of New York, Mario Cuomo, has one son (Andrew) who is now the Leftist Catholic Democrat Governor of New York whilst another (Christopher) is an anchor for CNN.

When a mysterious plane crash took the life of Catholic Democrat Congressman and House Majority leader Hale Boggs, his wife Marie Corinne Morrison Claiborne ("Lindy") Boggs took his place. Daughter Barbara Boggs-Sigmund went all the way to New Jersey to become mayor of Princeton and run for Governor.[clx],[clxi] Anther daughter, Mary Martha Corinne Morrison Claiborne Boggs ("Cokie") Roberts, became an anchor for NPR, ABC and PBS — only the best Catholic talent for your government-funded television tax dollars.

Also killed on that flight was Alaskan Democrat Congressman Nick Begich. Begich's son Tom became an Alaska State Senator. His son Mark became the Mayor of Anchorage and then went on to become the United States Senator for Alaska, opposite Catholic Republican Lisa Murkowski

who “inherited” her seat from her Jesuit-trained Catholic father, Frank. Both Tom and Mark Begich govern from the Left as Democrats.[clxii]

When it comes to recruiting talent and wealth for the “Society of Jesus”, superficial vows of chastity and poverty can be treated as just that: superficial.

In her second volume of *Isis Unveiled*, Russian Gnostic[clxiii] Helena Petrovna Blavatsky stated that an official 1762 investigation by the French government into the machinations of the Jesuits in France uncovered in-house Jesuit communiques “authorizing Theft, Lying, Perjury, Impurity, every Passion and Crime, teaching Homicide, Parricide, and Regicide, overthrowing religion in order to substitute for it superstition, by favoring Sorcery, Blasphemy, Irreligion, and Idolatry,” for the furtherance of Rome. [201] This investigation lead to the expulsion of the Jesuits from Catholic France.[clxiv]

Born at Gandia, in Spain in 1510, the wealthy Aristocrat Francisco de Borgia became dramatically more influential as a Jesuit. He was the personal advisor to both Antonio Ghislieri (Pope Pius V) and Felipe II, King of Spain and Portugal.

The 3rd Superior General of the Company of Loyola was also the great-grandson of Rodrigo de Borgia, Pope Alexander VI.

Historians almost unanimously state that Rodrigo de Borgia was born of Valencia nobel Jofré Llançol i Escrivà and Isabel de Borgia (who was Escrivà’s cousin[clxv]).

Alfonso de Borgia was supposedly Roderigo’s uncle but extreme favoritism shown Rodrigo suggests a closer association.

When Alonso de Borgia, Bishop of Valencia, was elected Pope Callixtus III, Rodrigo was given his Bishopric. Apologists claim this was the reason Rodrigo used his mother’s maiden name and not his father’s.[clxvi]

He did not stay a Bishop long. In short order, Callixtus made his “nephew” a Cardinal as well as Generalissimo of all Papal Forces. The “secular” and

“objective” Encyclopædia Britannica dismisses such nepotist corruption as “the fashion of his time”.[202]

However, there are some sources slightly more critical of Rodrigo de Borgia, his lifestyle and his Papacy.

> *Alexander VI., Pope of Rome, was a Borgia, and the very name is associated with the wickedest of wickedness. If ever there was a monster on earth who was guilty of every imaginable crime that could belong to a person who had disgraced human nature by the vilest uses, Alexander VI. was one of those men. ...*
>
> *In 1492 Roderick Borgia, the supposed son of Pope Calixtus* [“Callixtus”] *III., ascended the papal throne as Alexander VI. of worldwide fame for all manner of vices and crimes, so great as almost to surpass human conception. “If murder, incest, adultery, relentless cruelty,” says the historian, “never met before in a single individual, in the life of this Pope they all find a place, and that with frequent repetition. In his character we find at last the extreme limit of papal depravity, and in his history we seem to fathom the lowest abyss of human baseness.” Besides his private vices his public crimes were great. To satisfy his greed of ambition he increased the sale of indulgences. To bestow wealth on his illegitimate children he caused several of the Roman nobility to be slain, in some instances whole families exterminated, that the estates might go to his children when he should die in the papacy. To suppress the reform movement under Savonarola he had the monk burned to death in the streets of Florence and his ashes cast into the Arno.*
>
> *He had a large number of illegitimate children, but Lucrezia and Cezar Borgia appeared to inherit more of the father’s vices. Cezar was his favorite son, whom he raised to the cardinalate.*
>
> *Cezar murdered his own brother and had his body thrown into the Tiber. Two of Lucrezia’s husbands he had assassinated, one of them in his sister’s presence. His own cardinalship he gave up in order to marry, and several cardinals he poisoned in order to get their riches. The same course he adopted with several of the Roman nobility, whom*

he had to put out of the way in order to possess their estates. He was a handsome man, of slender form, but a fiend incarnate. ~ Roumane[203]

Although the majority of biographers and "historians" are glossy and effusive, they are still forced to admit at least the excesses and extravagances of Rome in general and the Borgia's in specific.

The Pope's Daughter

Rome, 26 August 1492. Rodrigo Borgia, recently elected as Pope Alexander VI, rode in scorching heat through the lavishly decorated streets of Rome from St. Peter's to take formal possession of the papacy in the basilica of San Giovanni in Lateran. In the opinion of experienced courtiers this was the most sumptuous[[clxvii]] *pontifical ceremony ever seen. Thirteen squadrons of men in armour on colourfully caparisoned horses led the way out of the piazza of St. Peters* [sic]. *Behind them marched the households of the cardinals*[[clxviii]] *in a blaze of crimson, purple and rose-coloured satin, green velvet, cloth of gold and silver, lion-coloured velvet, the cardinals themselves in mitres and robes, their horses draped in white damask.*[[clxix]] *Count Lodovico Pico della Mirandola bore the Popes personal standard: a shield with a grazing red bull on a gold ground halved with three black bands surmounted by the mitre and keys of St. Peter.*[[clxx]] *The roar of cannon from the Castel Sant´Angelo rumbled in the background, the Romans shouted "Borgia, Borgia" with a wild enthusiasm which they were not later to feel. The streets were lined with blue cloth, strewn with flowers and herbs, the walls of palaces hung with magnificent tapestries and at intervals triumphal arches proclaimed the most idolatrous slogans: "Caesar was great, now Rome is greater: Alexander reigns – the first was a man, this is a god."*[[clxxi]] *In front of the Palazzo San Marco a fountain in the form of a bull spurted water from horns, mouth, eyes, nose and ears, and "most delicate wine" from its forehead. The heat exhausted everyone, particularly the heavily built Pope: at the Lateran basilica he had one of his recurrent fainting fits and had to be revived with a dash of water in his face, an evil omen in the opinion of observers.*[[clxxii]]

At sixty, Rodrigo Borgia, a Catalan from the Kingdom of Valencia in southern Spain, now occupied one of the most powerful positions in the known world.[[clxxiii]] *As Pope, he was regarded as God's supreme vicar on earth in both temporal and religious spheres, having inherited the spiritual authority of St. Peter and the earthly powers of the Emperor Constantine. With the return of the popes to the city sixty-two years before, after the Great Schism, Rome was again the undisputed centre of the Christian world.*[[clxxiv]] *The scruffy medieval town clinging to the shattered monuments of the classical city was being transformed; a succession of popes demonstrated their position as heirs to the imperial glories, building bridges, levelling roads and beautifying St. Peter's and the Vatican, the centre of their operations. The cardinals, princes of the Church nominated by the popes for their loyalty and political connections rather than their spiritual qualities, vied with each other in building splendid palaces to display their wealth and importance. Rome now saw its identity in classical terms: since the fall of Constantinople to the Turks in 1453, classical texts and Greek and Latin scholars had flooded into Italy. Men saw their lives in terms of the heroes of ancient Greece and Rome, not of the saints and patriarchs.*[[clxxv]] *In the city itself, excavations revealed the glories of imperial Rome, such as the Golden House of Nero, confirming the citizens in their feelings of identity as inheritors of Republic and Empire. The popes were arbiters of Europe and beyond; in 1492 Columbus had landed on Hispaniola and, as Alexander VI, Rodrigo Borgia was to supervise the carving up of the New World between the Spanish and Portuguese sovereigns.*[[clxxvi]] *In Europe he retained the symbolic power to crown the Emperor and to confirm or refuse the investiture of the Kingdom of Naples.*[[clxxvii]] *He had the power to initiate alliances and call crusades against the ever more powerful Ottoman Turks, while he directly controlled a large portion of central Italy, the Papal States or "the Patrimony of St. Peter", where local lords or "papal vicars" held their lands from him.*

Born in 1431, Rodrigo Borgia had been at the centre of this web of power from a very early age when, probably still in his teens, he emigrated from his native town of Jativa in Valencia to Rome to join

> *the Catalan train of his* [“]*uncle*[”], *Cardinal Alonso de Borgia, brother of his mother Isabella. He had been well educated as the pupil of the humanist Gaspare da Verona who conducted a smart “preparatory school” for the relatives of eminent churchmen, and then in canon law at the University of Bologna. Alonso’s election in 1455 as Pope Calixtus* [alternate spelling “Callixtus”] *III changed Rodrigo’s life. Within a year, at the age of twenty-five, he had been appointed a cardinal, then given the Vice-Chancellorship of the Church, the second most important office after the Pope.*[[clxxviii]] *He survived the purge of Catalans by the furious Romans after the death of Calixtus in 1458, keeping his office and accumulating rich benefices through the reigns of subsequent popes.*[[clxxix]]
>
> *He gained immensely in knowledge of the workings of the papal court and of international affairs and contacts, building up his position by the acquisition of key papal fortresses surrounding Rome. In the city itself he lived in the style of a Renaissance prince, with a household of 113, and had built himself one of the finest palaces in Rome which today still forms the nucleus of the Palazzo Sforza-Cesarini on the Corso Vittorio Emmanuele. Pope Pius II likened the splendours of the magnificent building with its tower and three-storey loggiaed courtyards to those of the Golden House of Nero.*[[clxxx]] ~ Bradford[204]

Even the famed Italian/English writer Rafael Sabatini (1875 – 1950), best known for historical fictions like *The Sea Hawk* and *Captain Blood*, pulled his punches with great deference.

Sabatini’s mother was English but his father was Italian and he was born in Jesi, Italy. Both parents were successful opera singers so Sabatini grew up in the luxury of Aristocracy. Although there are no ready sources about his religion, he did attend a Catholic school in Porto, Portugal.[205]

Many of Sabatini’s works find their suspense and drama in historical conflicts between Catholics and Protestants.

For instance, in *Captain Blood* (1922), Dr. Peter Blood is an Irish Roman Catholic convicted of “treason” in the Monmouth Rebellion (the attempt by British Protestants to oust the Catholic heir of Charles II,[clxxxi] James II, in

1685) for treating a wounded “rebel”. Blood should have been executed, but for corrupt financial gain, James consigns him to slavery in the Caribbean.

A decade previously (1913), Sabatini wrote *The Strolling Saint*, about fictional character Agostino d´Anguissola in his conflict between being raised strict Catholic by his mother while his father was at enmity with Rome.

The year before, in 1912, Sabatini published a biography of Cesare de Borgia, Lucrezia’s brother and illegitimate son of Roderigo de Borgia, Pope Alexander VI.

Sabatini admitted that Roderigo was the far more important member of that family, yet fixated on the flamboyant son, instead —

> *The history of this amazing*[[clxxxii]] *Pope Alexander is yet to be written. No attempt has been made to exhaust it here. Yet of necessity he bulks large in these pages; for the history of his dazzling, meteoric son*[[clxxxiii]] *is so closely interwoven with his own that it is impossible to present the one without dealing at considerable length with the other.*[206]

In this we have two useful conclusions:

> 1. The historical obsession with Lucrezia is a distraction from her father and family.
> 2. What Sabatini admits in negative commentary about the Borgias can be considered to be “fair” and even under-stated, thanks to his clear bias.

For instance, the crimes of the Borgias are so outrageous, Sabatini resorts to extreme relativism to excuse them.

> *It was an age that had become unable to discriminate between the merits of the Saints of the Church*[[clxxxiv]] *and the Harlots of the Town. Therefore it honoured both alike, extolled the carnal merits of the one in much the same terms as were employed to extol the spiritual merits of the other. ...*
>
> *It was, in short, an age so universally immoral as scarcely to be termed immoral, since immorality may be defined as a departure from the morals that obtain at a given time and in a given place. ...*

In a profligate age what can you look for but profligates? Is it just, is it reasonable, or is it even honest to take a man or a family from such an environment, for judgement by the canons of a later epoch?[207]

Sabatini quotes an equally-tactful Niccolò Machiavelli regarding the ruthless ambition Roderigo bred into his bastard son Cesare.

Macchiavelli pronounces upon Cesare Borgia the following verdict:

"If all the actions of the duke are taken into consideration, it will be seen how great were the foundations he had laid to future power. Upon these I do not think it superfluous to discourse, because I should not know what better precept to lay before a new prince than the example of his actions; and if success did not wait upon what dispositions he had made, that was through no fault of his own, but the result of an extraordinary and extreme malignity of fortune."

In its proper place shall be considered what else Macchiavelli had to say of Cesare Borgia and what to report of events that he witnessed connected with Cesare Borgia's career.

Meanwhile, the above summary of Macchiavelli's judgement is put forward as a justification for the writing of this book, which has for scope to present to you the Cesare Borgia who served as the model for ***The Prince****.*[208]

With great respect does Sabatini mention Roderigo's "uncle", Alfonso de Borgia — the Pope who so quickly and generously advanced his "nephew" into unmerited power within the Catholic Church.

To this Don Alonso de Borgia is due the rise of his family to its stupendous eminence. An able, upright, vigorous-minded man, he became a Professor and Doctor of Jurisprudence at the University of Lerida, and afterwards served Alfonso I of Aragon, King of Naples and the Two Sicilies, in the capacity of secretary.

This office he filled with the distinction that was to be expected from one so peculiarly fitted for it by the character of the studies he had pursued.

> *He was made Bishop of Valencia, created Cardinal in 1444, and finally — in 1455 — ascended the throne of St. Peter*[[clxxxv]] *as Calixtus III, an old man, enfeebled in body, but with his extraordinary vigour of mind all unimpaired.*
>
> *Calixtus proved himself as much a nepotist as many another Pope before and since. This needs not to be dilated upon here; suffice it that in February of 1456 he gave the scarlet hat of Cardinal-Deacon of San Niccolo, in Carcere Tulliano, to his* [“]*nephew*[”] *Don Roderigo de Lanzol y Borja.*
>
> *Born in 1431 at Xativa, the son of Juana de Borgia (sister of Calixtus) and her husband Don Jofre de Lanzol, Roderigo was in his twenty-fifth year at the time of his being raised to the purple, and in the following year he was further created Vice-Chancellor of Holy Church with an annual stipend of eight thousand florins. Like his uncle he had studied jurisprudence — at the University of Bologna — and mentally and physically he was extraordinarily endowed.*[209]

Reading Sabatini, one engenders only admiration for the ruthless ambition that maintained multiple Spaniards as the “Bishop of Rome”.

> *His honours as Cardinal-Deacon and Vice-Chancellor of the Holy See he owed to his uncle; but that he maintained and constantly improved his position — and he a foreigner, be it remembered — under the reigns of the four succeeding Popes — Pius II, Paul II, Sixtus IV, and Innocent VIII — until finally, six-and-twenty years after the death of Calixtus III, he ascended, himself, the Papal Throne, can be due only to the unconquerable energy and stupendous talents which have placed him where he stands in history — one of the greatest forces, for good or ill, that ever occupied St. Peter’s Chair.*
>
> *Say of him that he was ambitious, worldly, greedy of power, and a prey to carnal lusts. All these he was. ...*
>
> *Here already we see more than a hint of that Borgia ambition which was to become a byword...*[210]

As Pope Calixtus III, Alfonso de Borgia bestowed similar advancement upon Roderigo’s brother.

> *Roderigo's elder brother, Don Pedro Luis de Lanzol y Borja, was made Gonfalonier of the Church, Castellan of all pontifical fortresses and Governor of the Patrimony of St. Peter, with the title of Duke of Spoleto and, later, Prefect of Rome, to the displacement of an Orsini from that office. Calixtus invested this nephew with all temporal power that it was in the Church's privilege to bestow...*[211]

Interestingly, Pedro was also known by his "mother's name"[clxxxvi] with all of the wealth and power given to him as "Pedro Luis de Borgia, Duke of Spoleto and Marquess of Civitavecchia".

Also worth noting is the name "Orsini".

Like the Borgia's, the Orsini produced three Popes — Celestine III (1191–1198), Nicholas III (1277–1280), and Benedict XIII (1724–1730) — as well as at least 34 cardinals, and countless other high officials both Roman Catholic and otherwise.

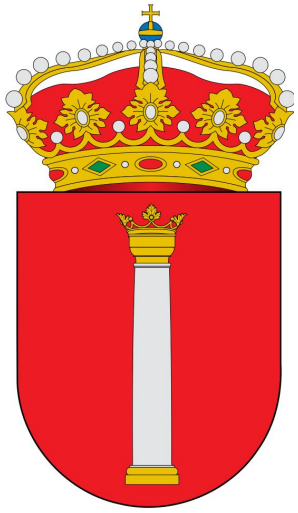
Are the Orsini still relevant?

> *Another Hollywood favorite of Rome appears to be Tom Cruise.*
>
> *Cruise's Scientology certainly compares well with* [actor Hugh] *Jackman's "School of Practical Philosophy". Both are equally strange (and identifiably pagan).*
>
> *The founder of Scientology, L. Ron Hubbard, has been linked to Aleister Crowley, the self-proclaimed "Beast" of John's Revelation.*[1215]
>
> *It's been reputed that Cruise is a Knight of Malta, though the rolls are not published publicly so this is hard to track down.*
>
> *What is somewhat more substantive was the location of Cruise's latest failed marriage to actress Katie Holmes: the family fortress of the Orsini clan — the* ***Castello Orsini-Odescalchi***[1216]*. ~* *Illuminati Unmasked*, Cirucci[212]

At least one source says that, not only does Tom donate to a favorite Orsini depopulation "charity" but that he's actually an Orsini, himself.[213]

Long before he was a Scientologist, Tom was a devoted Roman Catholic. — So devoted, in fact,

that he attended St. Francis Seminary in Cincinnati, but did not receive his ordination.[214]



Colonna Coat of Arms, Wikimedia Commons

Like the Borgias, when you ask “Google” for the name of a family that pulls the strings of the world’s Elite, “Orsini” doesn’t come up, either.

Neither does the name “Colonna”.

> *The Avignon Papacy had created distrust throughout the Holy Roman Empire outside of France. Avignon Popes seemed to be the vassals of the French Crown. Upon the election of Pierre Roger de Beaufort to the Holy See as Pope Gregory XI, the Curia returned to Rome in 1377. After de Beaufort’s death a year later, Bartolomeo Prignano was elected Pope Urban VI. Prignano, however, proved to be such a disaster as Pope that the College of Cardinals moved to Anagni, Italy and elected Robert of Geneva to become Clement VII. The only problem was Prignano was still reigning as Urban VI. To make matters worse, the new Pope Clement returned to Avignon! As many as 3 Popes claimed simultaneous supremacy during this time until the Council of Constance removed all pretenders and elected Oddone Colonna Pope Martin V.* ~ *Secret History*, Cirucci[215]

Sources that make astounding connections to these powerful families quickly disappear after doing so.

> *The House of Colonna held the continual position of Prince Assistants to the Papal Throne at the Vatican. They claim to be the Julio-Claudian dynasty of ancient Rome and directly descend from Peter de Columna and the Counts of Tusculum. The Colonna family use the column on their coat of arms which is a symbol for political power. The Colonna name derives from the Greek word kolona which means a column. The Columbus and Colombo names also derive from Columna and from Peter de Columna. Christopher Columbus was a relative of the Colonna family and he claimed America for Rome. Christopher Columbus was born in Genoa and was funded by the Doria banking family who are intermarried with the House of Colonna. The Colonnas*

control the Colombo crime family and several Jewish mafia factions which also run Hollywood and Columbia Pictures. The House of Colonna control the Knights of Columbus which uses the Roman fasces symbol for its logo. There are many police officers and federal agents that are members of the Knights of Columbus. The Colonna family have influence over police and organized crime. [These Elite Families] *are covert business enterprises for the Italian Nobility and*

they use their mafia to blackmail politicians.[216]

The Knights of Columbus wield far more power than their harmless persona implies.

> *This fact is well known to political machines and non-Catholic politicians, whose candidates must receive the approval of Rome and the Knights before they dare nominate them for either dog pound or presidency.*
>
> *Knights of Columbus have assured me that their organization, with the Church of Rome, controls the Municipal, State and Federal Government, and also influences the business interests throughout the country. They have also assured me within the past few years that it is almost impossible for a man to secure a position or promotion in any business house or corporation, if a Knight of Columbus be a competitor.* ~ Jeremiah J. Crowley[217]

The list[218],[clxxxvii] of Roman Catholic Knights of Columbus includes: * Democrat President John F. Kennedy
* Democrat Senator Edward “Ted” Kennedy
* Republican Congressman, former House Speaker John Boehner
* Fox News anchor Steve Doocy
* Ambassador Robert Sargent Shriver, Jr (father of Maria Shriver)
* Florida Governor John Ellis “Jeb” Bush
* The name and face of professional football, Vince Lombardi
* Chicago Bears Head Coach Mike Ditka
* actor Jerry Orbach
* Yankees hitter / pitcher George Herman “Babe” Ruth
* former Governor of South Dakota Mike Round
* professional boxer Floyd Patterson
* Republican Senator Rick Santorum
* legendary orator, Bishop Fulton J. Sheen
* wrestling manager Lou Albano
* Supreme Court Justice Samuel Alito
* poet Joyce Kilmer
* Cardinal-Deacon of San Sebastiano, John Patrick Foley (also the Grand Master of the Equestrian Order of the Holy Sepulcher of Jerusalem) As Praetorians for the Papacy, Knights draw authority from more than just the Colonnas, but the Borgias, as well.

As we’re about to see, that association with the Borgias is an infamous one to both the Knights and their masters in Rome!

> *...An institution like the Roman papacy, conceived in fraud and born in iniquity, was bound in the order of God’s law, to produce its crop of evil, and of this crop probably the Borgia Pope is the most striking example, though by no means the only one. Pope Alexander VI was the one who gave the entire New World to Spain, during the early days of exploration of the Americas. Thus the incestuous Borgia Pope Alexander VI becomes the fitting patron of the Knights of Columbus in their effort to “Make America Catholic”, which proposition is further strengthened by the action of the Knights of Columbus in selecting the Borgia Coat of Arms to adorn the walls of their Oratory in Rome.*

> *One Romanist historian, in a recently published work, declared that the Roman Catholic church is "an accomplice in the crimes of the Borgia Popes if she does not take some official action to annul their election and obliterate their memory." The book containing this statement has been placed on the "**Index Expurgatorius**" or List of Forbidden Books, by the Vatican. Therefore, to the Vatican the record of "His Holiness Alexander VI" presents nothing to condemn. Indeed, the Church has within recent times, on two occasions, gone out of the way to honor the most villainous of her popes by restoring his apartments in the Vatican and erecting a monument to him in one of the largest churches in Rome. All this has brought the story of the Borgia Pope and his life and adventures into the limelight and has revived interest in the darkest period of the papacy.* ~ Bond[219]

Like the Colonnas and the Borgias, the Orsini have produced a host of Catholic clergy leadership including 34 Cardinals and (like the Borgias) three Popes:

> * Giacinto di Pietro di Bobone Orsini; Celestine III (1191–1198)
> * Giovanni Gaetano Orsini; Nicholas III (1277–1280)
> * Pietro Francesco Orsini; Benedict XIII (1724–1730) Notice that the Orsini influence wasn't simply a short span of time but one that has lasted over a *thousand* years to this day. For instance Giovanni Battista Orsini was Grand Master of the Knights of Malta from 1467 to his death in 1476 whilst Valentino Orsini (1927 – 2001) was an Italian film director.

The Orsini are Italian but the Borgias are Spanish.

It is a difference not without its friction.

> *The Italians watched this growth of Spanish power with jealous, angry eyes. The mighty House of Orsini, angered by the supplanting of one of its members in the Prefecture of Rome, kept its resentment warm, and waited. When in August of 1458 Calixtus III lay dying, the Orsini seized the chance: they incited the city to ready insurgence, and with fire and sword they drove the Spaniards out.*

> *Don Pedro Luis made haste to depart, contrived to avoid the Orsini, who had made him their special quarry, and getting a boat slipped down the Tiber to Civita Vecchia, where he died suddenly some six weeks later, thereby considerably increasing the wealth of Roderigo, his brother and his heir.*~ Sabatini[220]

Through ruthless ambition, Roderigo Borgia played the field after his "uncle's" death and set himself up for a Papacy of his own.

> *Roderigo de Lanzol y Borja*[[clxxxviii]] *alone remained — leastways, the only prominent member of his house — boldly to face the enmity of the majority of the Sacred College, which had looked with grim disfavor upon his uncle's nepotism. Unintimidated, he entered the Conclave for the election of a successor to Calixtus, and there the chance which so often prefers to bestow its favours upon him who knows how to profit by them, gave him the opportunity to establish himself as firmly as ever at the Vatican, and further to advance his interests.*
>
> *It fell out that when the scrutiny was taken, two cardinals stood well in votes — the brilliant, cultured Enea Silvio Bartolomeo de' Piccolomini, Cardinal of Siena, and the French Cardinal d'Estouteville — though neither had attained the minimum majority demanded.*
>
> *Of these two, the lead in number of votes lay with the Cardinal of Siena, and his election therefore might be completed by Accession — that is, by the voices of such cardinals as had not originally voted for him — until the minimum majority, which must exceed two-thirds, should be made up.*
>
> *The Cardinal Vice-Chancellor Roderigo de Lanzol y Borja*[[clxxxix]] *led this accession, with the result that the Cardinal of Siena became Pontiff — as Pius II — and was naturally enough disposed to advance the interests of the man who had been instrumental in helping him to that eminence. Thus, his position at the Vatican, in the very face of all hostility, became stronger and more prominent than ever.* ~ Sabatini[221]

Borgia took the name "Alexander", not because it related to his supposed office as "Vicar of Christ", but for the Greek General who Hellenized

civilization by conquest. The very first “Pope Alexander” was literally, Alexander I of Alexandria, Egypt, the famous metropolis founded by the famed conquering King of Macedon.

> *Alexander VI only echoed what Boniface VIII had so boastingly asserted: “I am Caesar and Pope.” Paganism and the devil triumphed with the triumph of Popery. If Borgia was a criminal every one of the purpled dignitaries that were present when he ascended the papal throne was his fellow criminals.* ~ Bond[222]

Roderigo de Borgia spent his entire life as a wealthy Spanish Aristocrat and, like so many of his peers, didn’t allow vows of celibacy to alter his licentious lifestyle after he became a Priest.

The future Pope was, in fact, so raucous in his living that he was reprimanded by the very Cardinal he helped install in his “uncle’s” place, Enea Silvio Bartolomeo Piccolomini; Pope Pius II.

To have a Pope reprimand you for lascivious living is irony, indeed.

> *Medici is another name that should come up immediately when one searches for families that rule the world from behind the scenes. However, money and power grant them control, invisibility and Jewish villain smokescreens. ...*
>
> > *The **libro segreto** — literally the secret book[xxxii] — of Giovanni di Bicci de´Medici [~1360 –1429] sheds fascinating light on the family’s rise.[34] In part, this was simply a story of meticulous bookkeeping. By modern standards, to be sure, there were imperfections. The Medici did not systematically use the double-entry method, though it was known in Genoa as early as the 1340s.[35] Still, the modern researcher cannot fail to be impressed by the neatness and orderliness of the Medici accounts. The archives also contain a number of early Medici balance sheets, with reserves and deposits correctly arranged on one side (as liabilities or vostro) and loans to clients or commercial bills on the other side (as assets or nostro). The Medici did not invent these techniques, but they applied them on a larger scale than had hitherto been seen in Florence. The real key to the Medici’*

success, however, was not so much size as diversification. Whereas earlier Italian banks had been monolithic structures, easily brought down by one defaulting debtor, the Medici bank was in fact multiple related partnerships, each based on a special, regularly renegotiated contract. Branch managers were not employees but junior partners who were remunerated with a share of the profits. It was this decentralization that helped make the Medici bank so profitable. With a capital of around 20,000 florins [approximately $2,743,200 modern U.S.] *in 1402 and a payroll of at most seventeen people, it made profits of 151,820 florins* [approximately $20,823,631 modern U.S.] *between 1397 and 1420 — round 6,326 florins a year* [approximately $867,674 modern U.S.]*, a rate of return of 32 per cent. The Rome branch alone was soon posting returns of over 30 per cent.*[36] *The proof that the model worked can be seen in the Florentine tax records, which list page after page of Giovanni di Bicci's assets, totaling some 91,000 florins* [approximately $12,481,560 modern U.S.].[37]

When Giovanni died in 1429 his last words were an exhortation to his heirs to maintain his standards of financial acumen. His funeral was attended by twenty-six men of the name Medici, all paying homage to the self-made ***capo della casa*** *["head of the house"]. By the time Pius II became pope in 1458, Giovanni's son Cosimo de´Medici effectively was the Florentine state*[xxxiii]*. As the Pope himself put it: "Political questions are settled at his house. The man he chooses holds office ... He it is who decides peace and war and controls the laws ... He is King in everything but name." Foreign rulers were advised to communicate with him personally and not to waste their time by approaching anyone else in Florence. The Florentine historian Francesco Guicciardini observed: "He had a reputation such as probably no private citizen has ever enjoyed from the fall of Rome to our own day." One of Botticelli's most popular portraits — of a strikingly handsome young man — was actually intended as a tribute to a dead banker. The face on the medal is that of Cosimo de' Medici, and alongside it is the inscription* ***pater patriae*** *— "father of his*

> *country". By the time Lorenzo the Magnificent, Cosimo's grandson, took over the bank in 1469, the erstwhile Sopranos had become the Corleones — and more. And it was all based on banking. ~ Niall Ferguson, Harvard*[112]

"Bank" is derived from the Italian ***banco****, the counter where the new money merchants conducted their business.*[xxxiv] *In 1488, Giovanni de Medici's father,* ***Lorenzo il Magnifico*** *("Lorenzo the Magnificent"), ruler of the Province of Florentine, prevailed upon his relative, Giovanni Battista Cybo (Pope Innocent VIII) to make his son a cardinal, which Cybo did.*

Having bought Giovanni the cardinalcy at such a young age (13) he was forbidden to wear the insignia or deliberate as Cardinal for another 3 years.

In 1513, de Medici was "elected" Pope. Clearly a political decision, after it was made, the College of Cardinals realized de Medici had never been ordained a Priest. This minor oversight was rectified on a date that proved the Papacy was far more "Roman" than "Christian" — the Ides of March (the 15th) of that same year — the date memorialized as the assassination of Julius Caesar.

Medici maintained and even increased his lavish lifestyle which included the sexual perversions of the upper class. Pope Leo was well-known as a "lover of boys". ~ [*Secret History*](), Cirucci[223]

It was actually the Papacy that had empowered the Medici to become Popes and take over the Papacy; and it was done with a 10% income tax "tithe"!

> *Cosimo de Medici was indeed the first notable Medici to enthusiastically partake in Florentine politics and his rise was the beginning of a long line and generations of Medici leaders however, this would not be possible without the foundation that his father had built even before he stepped up in the Florentine community. Giovanni di Bicci de Medici was Cosimo's father. He was not born wealthy and after his father's death, whatever little money was left of them was divided among five sons. Growing up, he became a wool merchant who after sometime expanded into banking after interning for Vieri di*

Cambio's bank. It was through him that the Medici Bank would start and prosper. He started this by taking a series of calculated risks on loans to local merchants, adventurers and fellow risk takers which eventually led him to amass a great fortune through banking and trade (Hibbert 31-34[[cxc]]*).*

Giovanni believe[d] *that to be successful in developing a business you have to be able to network. A good businessman must be able to network with fellow businessmen, customers and competitors*[:] *everyone. He stressed the need to continually invest in people and to do that you had to have a great network. That is how Giovanni had built his business, and that is the principle he had passed on to his children (Wynn). Given Giovanni's belief on investing in people and his character as a risk taker, it obviously manifested when he supported the Baldassarre Cossa papacy. The Medici helped secure Cossa's position by providing him with money (10,000 ducats) to purchase his cardinal's hat. After his election to* [the] *Papacy where he succeeded Pope Alexander V and became Pope John XXIII*[[cxci]] *and during his whole pontificate, the Medici enjoyed a profitable relationship with the Papal Office. Giovanni de Medici was able to increase the volume of the family business and outgrow other banking houses like the Alberti, Ricci and Spini. Giovanni also became the Pope's financial adviser. The Medici Bank funded Pope John XXIII's war with King Ladislaus of Naples (around 95,000 florins). Even though this was a large amount of money and a huge risk that left a bitter taste in Giovanni's tongue, it was a small and essential price to pay for the colossal profits that the Medici would get as they handle*[d] *the finances of the Church (Hibbert 34-36).*

The Medici Bank became the official bankers of the Church and together they ***"created what had to be one of the cleverest enterprises of all time"*** *wherein the Medici bank collected 10% of an individual's earnings for the Church*[[cxcii]] *(PBS Research Team). This partnership was very rewarding for the Medici. It gave them immense power and massive earnings and also enabled them to be ahead of their other business rivals, all of these in the short time of Pope John XXIII's papacy ─ 1410-1415.* ~ Abrugena[224]

Sabatini tactfully makes note of the letter “Pius II” Piccolomini wrote to Cardinal Roderigo de Borgia.

> *A letter written two years later from the Baths at Petriolo*[[cxciii]] *by Pius II to Roderigo when the latter was in Siena — whither he had been sent by his Holiness to superintend the building of the Cathedral and the Episcopal and Piccolomini palaces — is frequently cited by way of establishing the young prelate’s dissolute ways. It is a letter at once stern and affectionate, and it certainly leaves no doubt as to what manner of man was the Cardinal Vice-Chancellor in his private life, and to what manner of unecclesiastical pursuits he inclined. It is difficult to discover in it any grounds upon which an apologist may build. ...*
>
> > *“Touching what happened there, modesty imposes silence. Not only the circumstance itself, but the very name of it is unworthy in one of your rank. The husbands, parents, brothers, and relations of these young women were excluded, in order that your amusements should be the more unbridled. You with a few servants undertook to direct and lead those dances. It is said that nothing is now talked of in Siena but your frivolity.”*
> >
> > *“Certain it is that here at the baths, where the concourse of ecclesiastics and laity is great, you are the topic of the day. Our displeasure is unutterable, since all this reflects dishonourably upon the sacerdotal estate and office. It will be said of us that we are enriched and promoted not to the end that we may lead blameless lives, but that we may procure the means to indulge our pleasures. Hence the contempt of us entertained by temporal princes and powers and the daily sarcasms of the laity. Hence also the reproof of our own mode of life when we attempt to reprove others.”*[[cxciv]]
> >
> > *“The very Vicar of Christ is involved in this contempt, since he appears to countenance such things.”*
> >
> > *“We submit it to your own judgement whether it becomes your dignity to court young women, to send fruit and wine to her you love, and to have no thought for anything but pleasure. We are*

censured on your account; the blessed memory of your uncle Calixtus is vituperated, since in the judgement of many he was wrong to have conferred so many honours upon you. If you seek excuses in your youth, you are no longer so young that you cannot understand what duties are imposed upon you by your dignity."

"A cardinal should be irreproachable, a model of moral conduct to all. And what just cause have we for resentment when temporal princes bestow upon us titles that are little honourable, dispute with us our possessions, and attempt to bend us to their will?"

Petriolo, June 11, 1460.[225]

Other sources are less charitable (and, perhaps, more honest).

The vow of chastity was a dead letter. Even the older cardinals had their "liaisons." The humblest cleric was safe in forgetting his celibacy if he did not obtrude his failings upon the notice of the faithful. As to cardinals and other prelates it was notorious that many of them were regular visitors and favorites in the palaces of the prominent "cortigiane" of that age [whore houses to have women and "Turkish baths" to have men]. *These women were recognized socially by the customs of the time, their meretricious character was well known but their "affairs" and "romances" with eminent men in all walks of life were tolerated and often made the theme of poetry and song. What distinguished Cardinal Borgia from his contemporaries and colleagues in holy office were two things: First, the boldness with which he flouted the injunction of the church to be discreet and careful even if immoral and licentious and second, a curious and sinister delight in the degradation rather than in the mere possession of women. Even at this period of his life the sexual instincts of the cardinal were wholly abnormal and morbid.*[[cxcv]]

The first typically Borgian adventure, a mild affair when compared to the dehumanizing debauches of later days, occurred when the cardinal was in a city of Northern Italy "attending to some sacred functions." Here the cardinal had been received by the best families of the town and soon was the centre of attention in the feminine world.

Borgia pleased the young women of Siena, a city always known for its frivolous manners. He suggested a nocturnal garden party, which under the starry sky and amid the fragrance of trees and flowers is even to this day a popular and delightful function. It was to be a happy and thoroughly unconventional party. Fathers, husbands, brothers, indeed male escorts of any sort were to be strictly excluded. The cardinal and his able and saintly staff would guide the affair in the proper way. We have a rather circumstantial account of this happy occasion.

The party began with a ceremonious and well-feigned display of decency. All the courtesies and proprieties were dutifully observed until the fiery red Tuscan wines began to flow more freely. Then the pace grew rapidly faster as the night advanced until in the early hours of the morning the unnatural and poisonous zest required by the sadistic nature of the future pope was added to the sum of gaieties and every restraint and semblance of restraint was thrown to the winds. The end resembled and in all likelihood surpassed in its disgusting details the excess of paganism that marked the worst years of the decadent empire when the victims of lust and wine at the end of a debauch were gathered up by trusted slaves and doctors to undergo the necessary cures and repairs.

The affair caused a scandal even in that city and in that age. The anger of the male relatives of the young women was great and sincere, but Roderigo and his men had left Siena on their way to new adventures. These "garden parties" were repeated in other towns until news of them finally reached the ears of the pope, who had been petitioned by indignant fathers and husbands and by all the decent elements left in the communities to stop them and to bring the cardinal to his senses. The pope was Pius II, the man in whose election Borgia had given such valuable assistance. Pius II, himself an adventurer and opportunist and lacking in any fine sense of honor or proper conception of religious discipline, declined to remove Borgia from his profitable office of Vice Chancellor of the Holy Roman Church. As some of the women and girls outraged at these garden parties were related to his own family, the pope had to take some action. He

> *addressed a note of reproach and admonition to the cardinal, describing as particularly reprehensible the party at Siena, into the details of which he entered quite freely. The young cardinal's answer was little better than a polite sneer. It amounted to this: Even cardinals must sow their wild oats, when they are young, wealthy and full of virility.* ~ Bond[226]

It was a "tradition" Roderigo de Borgia would carry on as Pope Alexander VI but he was not unique in his escapades. As we've seen, the "Vicar of Christ" does not have an encouraging track record in regard towards moral living.

Rafael Sabatini is an excellent source because he clearly was pained to admit the true depth of Roman depravity.

> *In considering Roderigo's conduct, you are to consider — as has been urged already — the age in which he lived. ...*
>
> *If we must be scandalized, let us be scandalized by the times rather than by the man. ...*
>
> *If we are to deal justly with Roderigo Borgia, we must admit that, in so far as his concessions to his lusts are concerned, he was a typical churchman of his day...*
>
> *No amount of simple statement can convey an adequate notion of the corrupt state of the clergy at the time.*[[cxcvi]] *To form any just appreciation of this, it is necessary to take a peep at some of the documents that have survived — such a document, for instance, as that Bull of this Pope Pius II which forbade Priests from plying the trades of keeping taverns, gaminghouses, and brothels.*
>
> *Ponder also that under his successor, Sixtus IV, the tax levied upon the courtesans of Rome enriched the pontifical coffers to the extent of some 20,000 ducats yearly. Ponder further that when the vicar of the libidinous Innocent VIII published in 1490 an edict against the universal concubinage practiced by the clergy, forbidding its continuation under pain of excommunication, all that it earned him was the severe censure of the Holy Father, who disagreed with the measure and who straightway repealed and cancelled the edict.*[1] *...*

> *One factor only could have caused him to use more restraint — the good example of his peers. That example he most certainly had not.*[227]

In fact, he admits Pope Callixtus III, Alfonso de Borgia, had illegitimate sons but Roderigo (toward whom he was exceptionally deferential) was his "nephew".

> *Roderigo's uncle — the Calixtus* ["Callixtus"] *to whom Pius II refers in that letter as of "blessed memory" — had at least one acknowledged son.[2] We know that Piero and Girolamo Riario, though styled by Pope Sixtus IV his "nephews," were generally recognized to be his sons.[3] And we know that the numerous bastards of Innocent VIII — Roderigo's immediate precursor on the Pontifical Throne — were openly acknowledged by their father. We know, in short, that it was the universal custom of the clergy to forget its vows of celibacy, and to circumvent them...*[228]

Cardinal Roderigo was no different.

> *In this same year 1460 was born to Cardinal Roderigo a son — Don Pedro Luis de Borgia — by a spinster (**mulier soluta*** [freed woman]*) unnamed.*[[cxcvii]] *This son was publicly acknowledged and cared for by the cardinal.*
>
> *Seven years later — in 1467 — he became the father of a daughter — Girolama de Borgia — by a spinster, whose name again does not transpire. Like Pedro Luis she too was openly acknowledged by Cardinal Roderigo. It was widely believed that this child's mother was Madonna Giovanna de' Catanei, who soon became quite openly the cardinal's mistress, and was maintained by him in such state as might have become a **maîtresse en titre**.*[[cxcviii]] *But, as we shall see later, the fact of that maternity of Girolama is doubtful in the extreme. ...*
>
> *At about this time, 1470, must have begun the relations between Cardinal Roderigo and Giovanna Catanei, documents — Vannozza being a corruption or abbreviation of Giovannozza, an affectionate form of Giovanna.*
>
> *Who she was, or whence she came, are facts that have never been ascertained. She is generally assumed to have been a Roman; but there*

> *are no obvious grounds for the assumption, her name, for instance, being common to many parts of Italy. And just as we have no sources of information upon her origin, neither have we any elements from which to paint her portrait.*
>
> *Gregorovius rests the probability that she was beautiful upon the known characteristics and fastidious tastes of the cardinal.*[229]

It was Giovanna Catanei who birthed the infamous Cesare for Cardinal Roderigo.

Sabatini admits the great criminal extent to which Popes corruptly aggrandized their bastard children, just as Alfonso did his “nephew”.

> *Infessura*[[cxcix]] *states in his diaries that Roderigo desiring later — as Pope Alexander VI — to create cardinal his son by her, Cesare Borgia, he caused false witness to be borne to the fact that Cesare was the legitimate son of one Domenico d’Arignano, to whom he, the Pope, had in fact married her. Guicciardini*[1] *makes the same statement, without, however, mentioning the name of this d’Arignano.*[230]

Given Sabatini’s deep genuflection towards Rome, it’s not a leap of outrage to consider that Giovanna Catanei was actually married to Domenico d’Arignano when she bore him Cesare and it was quite convenient to simply commit the bastard child to him, perhaps with both threats and bribes to insure the deed was done which, sadly, has endless historical precedents.

This conniving to keep embarrassing offspring secret lends credence to the idea that Alfonso “Pope Calixtus III” de Borgia was *both* Roderigo’s “uncle” *and* father.

Sabatini even admits Roderigo de Borgia, conducted this sham.

> *This Giorgio della Croce was a Milanese, under the protection of Cardinal Roderigo, who had obtained for him a post at the Vatican as apostolic secretary.*
>
> *According to some, he married him to Vannozza in order to afford her an official husband and thus cloak his own relations with her.*[231]

Rather than keep misdeeds a secret, past Popes have flaunted their sexual escapades and openly aggrandized their illegitimate children while other, more qualified candidates could only watch with irony the actions of the "Vicar of Christ".

As with the pedophile Priests of today,[232] it was corrupt, criminal, licentious behavior that was both approved of and enabled from the Successor of Peter downward.

> *As early as 1480, Pope Sixtus IV had granted Cesare Borgia — in a Bull dated October 1[1] — dispensation from proving the legitimacy of his birth.*[233]

In fact, all of Borgia's bastard children were gifted directly into the Aristocracy to live their lives out in luxury, often as "Christian" clergy.

> *Between the years 1474 and 1476, Vannozza bore Roderigo two sons, Cesare Borgia (afterwards Cardinal of Valencia and Duke of Valentinois), the central figure of our story, and Giovanni Borgia (afterwards Duke of Gandia).*
>
> *Lucrezia Borgia, we know from documentary evidence before us, was born on April 19, 1479.*[234]

The date and week of April 19th has been infamous throughout history to include:

> * 21 April 753 B.C.: Rome is considered to be founded on the festival of the shepherd-god of Pales.
> * 20 April 571 A.D.: Held by many to be the birth date of the prophet Muhammad.
> * 19 April 1479 A.D.: Lucrezia de Borgia is born.
> * 20 April 1534 A.D.: French Roman Catholic "explorer" Jacques Cartier sets sail under commission from King Francis I from St Malo, Brittany, towards what would be named the Gulf of Saint Lawrence.
> * 19 April 1541 A.D.: Ignatius Loyola becomes the first Jesuit Superior General
> * 19 April 1775 A.D.: The first shot of the American Revolutionary War is fired at Lexington.
> * 20 April 1799 A.D.: Napoleon Bonaparte declares Palestine an

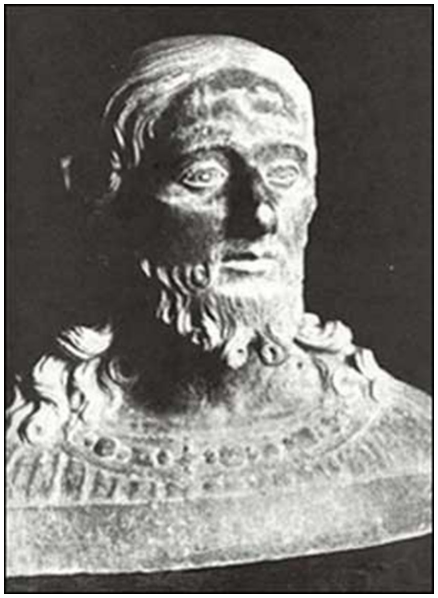
independent State but loses the battle of Acre and can not see it done.
* 17 April 1882 A.D.: Fr. Bernhard Rudolf Staempfle, S.J., ghostwriter of Adolf Hitler's "break-out" book, *Mein Kampf*, is born in Roman Catholic Bavaria (later Munich).
* 20 April 1889 A.D.: Adolf Hitler is born in Braunau, Austria on the south-bank of the river Inn, across from Roman Catholic Bavaria / Munich.
* 19 April 1933 A.D.: Franklin Roosevelt takes America off the gold standard.
* 17-19 April 1961 A.D.: Cuba's patriots are betrayed by the CIA and slaughtered in the Bay of Pigs by Castro's Catholic Communists.
* 19 April 1982 A.D.: NASA declares Sally Ride is an "astronaut".
* 19 April 1989 A.D.: A jilted homosexual sailor sabotages 16" turret No. 2 on the USS Iowa. The explosion kills 45 servicemen.
* 19 April 1993 A.D.: Jesuit-trained Bill Clinton and his Attorney General Janet Reno burn alive 80 "renegade" Adventist men, women and children at Waco.
* 19 April 1993 A.D.: 168 die, many of them children, when the Alfred P. Murrah Building in Oklahoma City is bombed in another heinous, U.S. government / media false flag.
* 20 April 1999 A.D.: Eric Harris and Dylan Klebold kill 13 at Columbine high school.
* 19 April 2005 A.D.: Cardinal Joseph Ratzinger becomes "Pope Benedict XVI".
* 20 April 2010 A.D.: 11 die after British Petroleum's Deepwater Horizon oil rig is sabotaged, poisoning the Gulf of Mexico.

Not only were Cesare, Juan and Lucrezia openly acknowledged by Pope Alexander as his children by a woman married to another man, he encouraged Catholics to worship them.

Repeatedly did Borgia commission artists to depict his daughter and his mistresses, especially Vannozza dei Cattanei, as "the Madonna". In one of the more notorious examples, Vannozza posed with her most monstrous offspring, Cesare, as "the Madonna with the Christ Child" for a sculpture that eventually found its way into the *San Luigi dei Francesi*; the national Church of France, not far from Piazza Navona in Rome.

Cesare, the illegitimate son of Pope Alexander VI, murdered several men, including his own brother, Juan. He also had so many sexual conquests, including his own sister, Lucrezia, he contracted syphilis.

Vannozza dei Cattanei with the bastard son of Pope Alexander VI, Cesare, depicted as "the Madonna with Child", *In The Pillory*, John Bond Fellowship Forum (1929)



Cesare de Borgia as Jesus Christ *In The Pillory*, John Bond Fellowship Forum (1929)

Like a good historian, Sabatini then mentions the next successive Papacies of Francesco della Rovere (Sixtus IV, 1471-1484 A.D.) and Giovanni Battista Cibo (Innocent VIII, 1484-1492 A.D.).

Again he appeals to "Please, judge these men by their eras, not by how they were the Vicars of Christ on Earth!"

> *The rule of Sixtus was as vigorous as it was scandalous.*
>
> *To say — as has been said — that with his succession to St. Peter's Chair came for the Church a still sadder time than that which had preceded it, is not altogether true. Politically, at least, Sixtus did much to strengthen the position of the Holy See and of the Pontificate. He was not long in giving the Roman factions a taste of his stern quality. If he employed unscrupulous means, he employed them against unscrupulous men — on the sound principle of* ***similia similibus' curantur***[[cc]] *— and to some extent they were justified by the ends in view. ...*[[cci]]
>
> *His election, it is generally admitted, was simoniacal*[[ccii]]*; and by simony he raised the funds necessary for his campaign to re-establish*

and support the papal authority. This simony of his, says Dr. Jacob Burckhardt, "grew to unheard-of proportions, and extended from the appointment of cardinals down to the sale of the smallest benefice." ...

As a nepotist Sixtus was almost unsurpassed in the history of the Papacy. Four of his nephews and their aggrandizement were the particular objects of his attentions, and two of these — as we have already said — Piero and Girolamo Riario, were universally recognized to be his sons.

Piero, who was a simple friar of twenty-six years of age at the time that his father became Pope, was given the Archbishopric of Florence, made Patriarch of Constantinople, and created Cardinal to the title of San Sisto, with a revenue of 60,000 crowns [approximately $780,000 modern U.S.].

We have it on the word of Cardinal Ammanati[1] — the same gentleman who, with Roderigo de ... Borja made so scandalously merry in de Bichis' garden at Siena — that Cardinal Riario's "luxury exceeded all that had been displayed by our forefathers or that can even be imagined by our descendants"; and Macchiavelli tells us[2] that "although of very low origin and mean rearing, no sooner had he obtained the scarlet hat than he displayed a pride and ambition so vast that the Pontificate seemed too small for him, and he gave a feast in Rome which would have appeared extraordinary even for a king, the expense exceeding 20,000 florins." [$2,743,200 modern U.S.[cciii]]

Knowing so much, it is not difficult to understand that in one year or less he should have dissipated 200,000 florins [$27,432,000 modern U.S.]*, and found himself in debt to the extent of a further 60,000* [$8,229,600 modern U.S.].

In 1473, Sixtus being at the time all but at war with Florence, this Cardinal Riario visited Venice and Milan. In the latter State he was planning with Duke Galeazzo Maria that the latter should become King of Lombardy, and then assist him with money and troops to master Rome and ascend the Papal Throne — which, it appears, Sixtus was quite willing to yield to him — thus putting the Papacy on a hereditary basis like any other secular State. ...

> *The only one of the four "nephews" of Sixtus ... who was destined to make any lasting mark in history was Giuliano della Roverei. He was raised by his uncle to the purple* [Bishop] *with the title of San Pietro in Vincoli, and thirty-two years later he was to become Pope (as Julius II). ...*
>
> *Under the pontificate of Sixtus IV the position and influence of Cardinal Roderigo were greatly increased, for once again the Spanish Cardinal had made the most of his opportunities. As at the election of Pius II, so at the election of Sixtus IV it was Cardinal Roderigo who led the act of accession which gave the new Pope his tiara, and for this act Roderigo — in common with the Cardinals Orsini and Gonzaga who acceded with him — was richly rewarded and advanced, receiving as his immediate guerdon the wealthy Abbey of Subiaco.*[235]

The intrigues of the Roman power families show the "Vicar of Christ" to be not so Christ-like.

> *Meanwhile the turbulent reign of Sixtus IV went on, until his ambition to increase his dominions had the result of plunging the whole of Italy into war.*
>
> *Lorenzo de' Medici had thwarted the Pope's purposes in Romagna, coming to the assistance of Cittá di Castello when this was attacked in the Pope's interest by the warlike Giuliano della Rovere. To avenge himself for this, and to remove a formidable obstacle to his family's advancement, the Pope inspired the Pazzi conspiracy against the lives of the famous masters of Florence. The conspiracy failed; for although Giuliano de' Medici fell stabbed to the heart — before Christ's altar, and at the very moment of the elevation of the Host — Lorenzo escaped with slight hurt, and, by the very risk to which he had been exposed, rallied the Florentines to him more closely than ever.*
>
> *Open war was the only bolt remaining in the papal quiver, and open war he declared, preluding it by a Bull of Excommunication against the Florentines.*[236]

Francesco della Rovere, (Pope Sixtus IV), reigned over a typical Papacy: his agendas were "temporal", not spiritual.

> *Two things he did during his reign to the material advantage of the Church, however much he may have neglected the spiritual. He strengthened her hold upon her temporal possessions and he enriched the Vatican by the addition of the Sistine Chapel. For the decoration of this he procured the best Tuscan talent of his day — and of many days — and brought Alessandro Filipeppi (Botticelli), Pietro Vannuccio (II Perugino), and Domenico Bigordi (II Ghirlandajo) from Florence to adorn its walls with their frescoes.*[1]
>
> **** The glory of the Sistine Chapel, however, is Michelangelo's "Last Judgement," which was added later, in the reign of Pope Julius II (Giuliano della Rovere).***[237]

Meanwhile, Cardinal Roderigo de Borgia was behaving in an equally "temporal" manner with the agenda of always advancing the power and influence of himself and his family.

> *In the last years of the reign of Pope Sixtus, Cardinal Roderigo's family had suffered a loss and undergone an increase.*
>
> *In 1481 Vannozza bore him another son — Giuffredo Borgia, and in the following year died his eldest son (by an unknown mother) Pedro Luis de Borgia, who had reached the age of twenty-two and was betrothed at the time of his decease to the Princess Maria d'Aragona.*
>
> *In January of that same year, 1482, Cardinal Roderigo had married his daughter Girolama — now aged fifteen — to Giovanni Andrea Cesarini, the scion of a patrician Roman house. The alliance strengthened the bonds of good feeling which for some considerable time had prevailed between the two families. Unfortunately the young couple were not destined to many years of life together, as in 1483 both died.*[238]

In describing Cardinal Borgia's wealth and power, Sabatini again shows his pro-Vatican bias with complete disregard for the propaganda that such a clergyman was a disciple and shepherd of Jesus Christ and not a Lord of the most powerful organization in humanity.

> *By this time Cardinal Roderigo's wealth and power had grown to stupendous proportions, and he lived in a splendour well worthy of his lofty rank. He was now fifty-three years of age, still retaining the air*

> *and vigour of a man in his very prime... He derived a stupendous income from his numerous abbeys in Italy and Spain, his three bishoprics of Valencia, Porto, and Carthage, and his ecclesiastical offices, among which the Vice-Chancellorship alone yielded him annually eight thousand florins* [$1,097,280 modern U.S.].[239]

With great ease Sabatini recounts the outrages of a typical Catholic Cardinal from a Roman power family, keeping a mistress whom he richly rewarded and having her participate in a show-marriage.

Other power families such as the Orsini and Farnese were happy to enable the machinations of the Borgias; “A favor for a favor.”

> *In the year in which Volterra wrote of Cardinal Roderigo in such terms*[[cciv]] *Vannozza was left a widow by the death of Giorgio della Croce. Her widowhood was short, however, for in the same year — on June 6 — she took a second husband, possibly at the instance of Roderigo Borgia ... This second husband was Carlo Canale, a Mantovese scholar who had served Cardinal Francesco Gonzaga in the capacity of chamberlain, and who had come to Rome on the death of his patron.*
>
> *The marriage contract shows that by this time Vannozza had removed her residence to Piazza Branchis. In addition to this she had by this time acquired a villa with its beautiful gardens and vineyards in the Suburra near S. Pietro in Vincoli. She is also known to have been the proprietor of an inn — the Albergo del Leone — in Via del Orso, opposite the Torre di Nona, for she figures with della Croce in a contract regarding a lease of it in 1483.*
>
> *With her entrance into second nuptials ... Cardinal Roderigo*[’s] *two children by her, then in Rome — Lucrezia and Giuffredo — went to take up their residence with Adriana Orsini (nee de Mila) at the Orsini Palace on Monte Giordano. She was a cousin of Roderigo’s, and the widow of Lodovico Orsini, by whom she had a son, Orso Orsini, who from early youth had been betrothed to Giulia Farnese, the daughter of a patrician family ... destined ... to rise to conspicuous eminence.*

> *... this Giulia Farnese has been ... immortalized by Pinturicchio and Guglielmo della Porta. She sat to the former as a model for his Madonna in the Borgia Tower of the Vatican, and to the latter for the statue of Truth which adorns the tomb of her brother Alessandro Farnese, who became Pope Paul III.*[[ccv]]
>
> *Here in Adriana Orsini's house, where his daughter Lucrezia was being educated, Cardinal Roderigo, now at the mature age of some six-and-fifty years, made the acquaintance and became enamoured of this beautiful golden-headed Giulia, some forty years his junior. To the fact that she presently became his mistress — somewhere about the same time that she became Orso Orsini's wife — is due the sudden rise of the House of Farnese. This began with her handsome, dissolute brother Alessandro's elevation to the purple by her lover, and grew to vast proportions during his subsequent and eminently scandalous occupation of the Papal Throne as Paul III.*[240]

Do the Farnese have influence today? Perhaps an examination of architecture will answer the question.

The Palazzo Farnese of Caprarola is one of the best examples of [a] *Renaissance mansion, built for the Roman Farnese family in Caprarola. The construction of the building — **with its distinctive pentagonal shape** — was entrusted from Alessandro Farnese (who became Pope Paul III) to Antonio da Sangallo, who began working around 1530 and, after a break, it was completed at the behest of Alessandro Farnese (the grandson of Paul III), which commissioned the execution to Jacopo Barozzi da Vignola.*

The ... building is a combination of military and civil architecture. Ramparts, moats, walls and drawbridges give the idea of a military

fort, gardens, while elegant architecture and artistic masterpieces, give an idea of the palace. ~ Italy Travel Guide [emphasis added][241]

Freemason Franklin Delano Roosevelt[242] conscripted contractor John McShain to build the United Stated Department of War complex. Ground was broken on September 11th, 1941, less than three months before Roosevelt enticed, encouraged and pushed the Japanese into killing over 2,000 soldiers, sailors and Marines at Pearl Harbor[243] and exactly 60 years prior to a similar outrage of treason in 2001.[244], [245]

A devout Roman Catholic, John McShain was a major benefactor to Wheeling Jesuit University. In 2000, the newly constructed admissions center was dedicated to the memory of him and his wife. McShain served on the Board of Directors of a number of major American corporations and educational institutions including St. Joseph's University, Catholic University, and Georgetown University. John also attended St. Joseph's Preparatory School, an urban Jesuit high school in North Philadelphia.

> *McShain was also a benefactor to his alma mater, La Salle University, in which he helped plan the construction of La Salle's original academic building, College Hall. McShain Hall was named after him. La Salle University also has a student award named after McShain, given out yearly. The John McShain Award is offered to a member of the senior class who maintained an excellent scholastic record and is considered by faculty and staff to have done the most for the public welfare of La Salle.*[1]
>
> *Through the John McShain Charities, Sister Pauline McShain continued her parents' tradition of financial support for various Catholic organizations such as the Neumann College scholarship program.* ~ Wikipedia[246]

Torture on the Tiber

After Francesco della Rovere, (Sixtus IV), came Giovanni Cibo (Pope Innocent VIII).[ccvi]

Sabatini ascribed the immoral chaos under the rule of Innocent VIII to "weakness" (the deduction being that Cibo should've ruled with an iron fist to keep order through tyranny, forgetting, of course, that the "Vicar of Christ" wasn't supposed to behave like a king).

> *Anarchy, robbery, and murder preyed upon the city. No morning dawned without revealing corpses in the streets; and if by chance the murderer was caught, there was pardon for him if he could afford to buy it, or Tor di Nona and the hangman's noose if he could not.* [247]

Again, Sabatini assumes that you will simply shrug off his obtuse inference. Tor di Nona was an infamous prison complex in Rome known as "Torture on the Tiber". The Inquisition had an unfettered hand to conduct any despicable act conceivable.

***Castel Sant´Angelo*, Tor di Nona Prison, Rome. (Wikimedia Commons)** As Cibo grew weak and feeble, Sabatini admits that he was kept alive by breast milk and, as he slipped away, a Jew was found who claimed he could keep the Pope alive by having him drink the blood of young boys — three 10-year-olds to be precise.[248]

Supposedly, the fact that the boys died in the process was an outrage to Innocent who, apparently, came out of his catatonic state long enough to be outraged.

Unfortunately, the slaughter of children to beseech intervention by Satan (and conveniently blamed on Jews) has been proven in my previous work to have been all-too-common a Roman practice.[249]

The death of Cibo ushered in the reign of Roderigo de Borgia as Pope Alexander VI.

Sabatini was offended that so many commentators have called Alexander "the worst Pontiff that ever filled St. Peter's Chair" but there was ample cause. *Again*, the English/Italian writer claimed relativism in Borgia's defense.

> *If we take him out of the background of history in which he is set, and judge him singly and individually, we behold a man who, as a churchman and Christ's Vicar, fills us with horror and loathing, as a scandalous exception from what we are justified in supposing from his office must have been the rule. ...*
>
> *That the Papacy was Christ's Vicarage was a fact that had long since been obscured by the conception that the Papacy was a kingdom of this world.*[250]

This elucidates a very important point that we'll see shortly; the reputation of Lucrezia de Borgia as poisonous black widow of death turns out to be a smokescreen for the more heinous crimes of the Papacy, the Borgias and her father, the "celibate Vicar of Christ", Pope Alexander VI and his "celibate Cardinal" son Cesare.

Even so, the debutante had as little conscience in abusing her status as did the rest of her family. As an anonymous Borgia critic dared proclaim —

> *Lucrezia Borgia conducted her crimes without tell-tale traces of a guilty conscience.*[251]

But Lucrezia was first a victim before victimizing and was likely a sexual conquest of both her father and her brother. As National Geographic admits —

> *Celebrated in a play by the French writer Victor Hugo, a major opera by Donizetti, and the inspiration for many movies ... storytellers ... have depicted her as a femme fatale — a seductive woman who poisoned those whom she could not manipulate and who attended orgies and had incestuous relations with members of her family. ... many historians now see Lucrezia as a victim of her own family's machinations for power. Her life serves as a vivid insight into the torrid world of papal politics at the height of the Italian Renaissance and during the tumultuous years leading up to the Protestant Reformation.*[252]

Cardinal Ascanio Sforza was the key player in Roderigo de Borgia's rise to the Papacy and he was rewarded with the Pope's illegitimate 13-year-old

daughter, Lucrezia, who was given to his illegitimate son, Giovanni Sforza, in marriage.

The Vatican is a sovereign city-state and, for Vatican citizens, the “age of consent” is 12, which was also the same for Italy until the “age of consent” was raised to a mature 14 in 1930. The Vatican chose not to follow suit and it remains at 12.[253]

The marriage took place in 1493. The following year, Charles VIII of France invaded Italy.

Italy was not a unified Kingdom until 1871 and not a modern Western country until 1946.

Prior to that, it was a collection of provinces fought over by powerful families and, often, Popes felt empowered to simply give some of those provinces away to the highest bidder, whether they had any legal right to do so or not.

At that time (the 15th century), the Kingdom of Naples covered the entire southern portion of modern Italy. In 1485, the Aristocracy rebelled against King Ferdinand I and his policy of “modernization” (cutting out landed nobles as “middle-men” and commanding all authority from the throne).

Ferdinand (“*Ferrante*”) was a Spaniard of the House of Aragon, not a native.[ccvii]

Giovanni Cibo (“Pope Innocent VII”) backed the Aristocracy in their “Conspiracy of the Barons” but it

failed so Cibo “gifted” the Kingdom of Naples to Charles VIII of France.

Roderigo Borgia continued to meddle in the affairs of kingdoms for his own aggrandizement and sought to carve up central Italy to the highest bidders.

This put the Duchy of Milan at risk. The Duke of Milan was Ludovico Sforza, the brother of Cardinal Ascanio Sforza and the uncle of Lucrezia’s new husband, Giovanni Sforza.

Ludovico saw an invasion by Charles VIII as his “ace-in-the-hole” against the Borgia Pope’s plans to dissolve his Duchy and he, too, urged Charles on.

This put Giovanni Sforza at high risk, especially after he sided with his family against his father-in-law.

Cesare decided that such posturing meant it was necessary to murder his brother-in-law,[ccviii] but Sforza was warned, some say by Lucrezia, and he fled to the safe haven of Milan.[254]

Lucrezia’s father, Pope Alexander VI, then sought to again use her as a political pawn but needed to annul her marriage to do so. Slyly, Giovanni Sforza fought the annulment legally until he was offered the bribe of keeping Lucrezia’s dowry after which he made the public proclamation that, despite having been married for a year to the 13-year-old, the union was never consummated and the girl was announced to still have been a virgin.[ccix]

Three years later, in 1497, Lucrezia’s brother Juan (sometimes called “Giovanni” by writers wishing to emphasize his Italian/Vatican ties rather than his Spanish heritage as a Borgia) was found face-down in the Tiber after having been slashed repeatedly about his body.

The suspect was her other brother, Cesare.

As a good Spaniard, Pedro Luis de Borgia (not to be confused with his uncle of the same name[ccx]) fought in the Granada campaigns for Isabella and Ferdinand where he eventually met his doom in 1488.

His title and lands should have fallen to Cesare but his father saw to it that they went to Juan, instead. At least one source notes that Juan was Roderigo’s “favorite”.

Both Juan and Cesare regularly had sex with the wife of their younger brother, Gioffre, which only added to the bad blood.

Considering how advanced syphilis (contracted via Cardinal Cesare's famous exploits) effects the ability to think clearly in a man already known for wild extremes of emotion, and a motive for fratricide is easily found.

> *Unfortunately, Cesare turned out to be ill-suited for a Priestly life. His vows of chastity clearly meant as little to him as his father's had, as he contracted syphilis[4] in* [1497] *in Naples, while acting as his father's delegate. His temper too did little to endear him to his fellow churchmen. To make matters worse, it was not his elder brother who was receiving the glory and military commands he desired, but his younger. Pedro Luis had died in 1588, and his titles had passed to Giovanni, who was Alexander's favourite son. The two brothers seem to have clearly despised each other, evidenced by them both taking the same woman (Sancha of Aragon – ironically the wife of their younger brother Gioffre) as mistress. So, naturally, when Giovanni's corpse was dragged out of the river then Cesare was a chief suspect... ~* Conliffe[255]

It didn't help that Juan was the war hero whilst Cesare was consigned to the "monastic" life of a Cardinal.

To push the matter even more, his father, Pope Alexander VI, had again carved up land to add another Duchy to the estate of his favorite son.

> *... On the 7th* [of] *June 1497 the pope made the city of Benevento, the centre of the Papal States, a Duchy and made Giovanni the first Duke of Benevento. With him already the Captain-General of the papal armies, this marked a clear plan to have him lead an attempt to enforce the temporal power of the church on the surrounding kingdoms, exactly the type of military campaign Cesare craved. Meanwhile, Cesare was appointed a papal legate, in order to go and crown the new King of Naples. Clearly he would not have been happy with this ceremonial post. On the 14th* [of] *July, the two brothers dined at their mother's house, then set off back to the Vatican. While at supper they were joined by a mysterious masked man, who had visited Giovanni several times over the previous month. On their way back to*

> *the Vatican the two brothers split up, with Giovanni, the masked man, and a single footman heading off "in pursuit of further pleasure". In a square the Duke told his one servant to wait for an hour, and if he did not return then to head to the Vatican. He was never seen alive again.* ~ Conliffe[256]

Although their father was so devastated by the news he refused to eat for several days, he made the unusual move of calling off an investigation into his favorite son's murder.[257]

Roderigo (Pope Alexander VI) was, after all, a Borgia. More important than his children murdering each other was that the family name continue in power; even if it was via that murderer.

> *Eventually however he began to think about his family's future. Giovanni's son Juan, the new Duke of Gandia, was still a child. Alexander had two sons left, Cesare and Gioffre. Gioffre was a weak reed – Cesare was his only hope. The only problem was that Cesare was a Cardinal. No Cardinal in the entire history of the Church had ever voluntarily left the office. To do this would require royal support, and Alexander's previous patron, the King of Spain (a second cousin of the spouses of Lucrezia and Gioffre), was unwilling to support this as it would weaken his own position in several manoeuvrings he had going on. Alexander was forced to break that alliance and seek a new one with the King of France. As a result Cesare resigned as Cardinal of Valencia, and became the Duke of Valentinois. The combination of the two titles gave him his nickname – Valentino.* ~ Conliffe[258]

After the annulment of her first marriage, Lucrezia was put away to the convent of San Sisto in Rome.

But, quickly enough, her father, the chaste Pope Alexander VI, found a new husband for her to shore up his power via alliance; Alfonso of Aragon, the illegitimate son of Ferdinand I, King of Naples, cousin to Ferdinand II, King of Spain.[ccxi]

Alfonso was not a typical choice, he was actually Lucrezia's age, well-educated and not displeasing to look upon.

Unfortunately for them both, the machinations of her father and brother were both fickle and deadly.

> *The alliance with France was a tenuous one, and to cement it Cesare was married to Charlotte of Albret, sister of the King of Navarre. Navarre was an ally of France against Spain.* ~ Conliffe[259]

Now the Aragons were a liability.

Alfonso sensed this and had left Rome but Lucrezia's brother and father had her write to him to return in August of 1499 for the birth of their son,[ccxii] promising him protection behind the walls of the Vatican.

It was a promise broken with the deepest irony on July 15th, 1500.

> *At the entrance of St Peter's Basilica he was attacked by a group of mercenaries and severely wounded, though his bodyguards managed to drive them off ...* ~ Conliffe[260]

Alfonso was cared for by his sister, Sancha, the wife of Gioffre de Borgia (and lover of Juan and Cesare) and Lucrezia, his own wife.

> *Pamphlets produced in Naples recounted how Cesare, while visiting the convalescing Alfonso, whispered in his ear: "What didn't happen at lunch could still happen at dinner."* ~ National Geographic[261]

When it became clear that he had a chance of recovering, another group of mercenaries, led by Miguel de Corella (also known as Micheletto Corella, Micheletto Coreglia or Michele de Corella), entered the Borgia apartments in the Vatican complex and strangled the wounded young Alfonso as his wife and sister watched, horrified.

"Historians" always place this Spanish mercenary murderer as an associate or college friend of Cesare but Bond's *In The Pillory* describes his conscription directly by Roderigo de Borgia, Pope Alexander VI, himself.

Sardonically, Bond noted that Borgia despised the very Cardinals who made him Pope. Often, he waited for the right opportunity to betray them and consume their wealth.[ccxiii]

One such example is that of Cardinal Giovanni Battista Orsini.[ccxiv]

Orsini was given a “light” dose of the secret Borgia poison “cantarella” which induced fatigue, cramps and vomiting. It was specifically apportioned not to kill the Cardinal outright. As a high-ranking member of the clergy, his wealth was kept in secret to maintain the façade of a “vow of poverty” which forbade the cleric from owning property, etc.

The Pope cunningly expected that, once Cardinal Orsini was bedridden, close relatives would visit and the secret of his wealth would be passed on and exposed.

Unfortunately for Borgia, Giambattista Orsini was a man willing to take his wealth to the grave with him so Alexander had him imprisoned.

When the Cardinal remained resolute, he was finally presented with a full dose of cantrella; a literal “poison cup”. Orsini refused to die by his own hand so de Borgia sent for his executioner, Miguel de Corella, and had him appear at the Cardinal’s door.

The choice was clear: drink the Borgia cup or be brutally strangled to death. Giambattista Orsini chose the cantrella.

Another ally was Cardinal Giovanni Michiel. The Pope bribed Michiel’s servant to impregnate the Cardinal’s food with cantrella and, after four days of terrible suffering, Alexander’s enabler was dead.

The servant was then arrested, tortured and burned at the stake.

The Prior of San Marco: An Important Sub-Story

However, the Papacy was far from secure.

In Florence, an extremely-devout Dominican friar was carefully studying the Scriptures and proclaiming Rome ripe for judgment!

Girolamo Savonarola was born in 1452, in the town of Ferrara.[ccxv] His grandfather, Michele, was a wealthy and renowned physician and the young Savonarola was to follow in his footsteps.

However, from early on, Girolamo showed himself to be a sensitive intellectual who was spiritually focused on righteousness.

His grandfather died when Savonarola was still a teenager and, by 20, he was deeply troubled by the decadence of the Renaissance.

He was a diligent student who both read and wrote copiously even in his youth.

> *... a short essay, entitled "On Contempt of the World," ... shows how painfully he had been impressed by the wickedness around him.*
>
> *"Everything is full of impiety, of usury and robbery, foul and wicked blasphemies, fornication, adultery, and all uncleanness, murder and envy, ambition and pride, hypocrisy and falseness, crime and iniquity. Virtues are turned into vices, and vices into virtues. ..."*
>
> *"Men are summoned to penitence by disasters, earthquakes, and storms of wind; but they do not hearken."*
>
> *"They are summoned by floods, diseases, famines; but they do not hearken."*
>
> *"They are summoned by the impious deeds of the overweening* [Ottoman] *Turks; but they do not hearken."*
>
> *"They are summoned by the affectionate voices of preachers and servants of God; but they do not hearken."*
>
> *"All, in fine, are summoned by the natural pricks of conscience; but they do not hearken."* ~ M´Hardy[262]

He tried to court a daughter of the Strozzi banking family but she rudely rebuffed him explaining that his lineage wasn't high enough. With that, he began to think of the Priesthood. A sermon by an Augustinian monk preaching in Faenza, near his home town of Ferrara, confirmed the decision.[ccxvi] He walked twenty-eight miles to Bologna, and entered the Dominican priory there.

Savonarola threw himself into monastic life with vigor and dedication. He not only studied Aquinas and Plato but took advantage of clerical access to the Scriptures and they deeply affected him.

His superiors sent him to preach but his lack of experience left a mediocre response from those who heard him.

Savonarola was then transferred to the Priory of San Marco in Florence, the domain of the Medici.

In 1478, prior to his arrival, a cabal of Aristocrats conspired to murder Lorenzo *il Magnifico* ("the Magnificent") in an effort to topple Medici control which had enslaved nearby cities such as Pisa.

It was organized by the Pazzi family and masterminded by the Captain General of the Papal military, Girolamo Riario. Riario's qualifications for the position were that he was the nephew of the Pope at that time, Francesco "Sixtus IV" della Rovere, who stood to gain in power and influence if the Medici were ousted from Florence. The Riarios of Savona were banking competitors of the Medici.[ccxvii]

In a scene befitting *The Godfather* or *The Sopranos*, the attack took place during Easter High Mass at the *Duomo di Firenze* (the Cathedral of Florence) on the 26th of April 1478.

A Priest was one of those who wielded daggers that morning.

> *Stefano da Bagnone was a parish Priest ... who acted as secretary to Jacopo Pazzi, and as tutor to his bastard daughter.* ~ Armstrong[263]

Another Priest, Apostolic Scribe Antonio Maffei of Volterra, would aid him. With the moving of Volterra's Bishop and the discovery of valuable mineral alum, the city was lusted for and conquered by the Medici in 1472.

Francesco Salviati Riario, Archbishop of Pisa, was slated to murder the Medici-appointed Constable of Florence, *Gonfaloniere di Giustizia* ("standard-bearer of justice") Cesare Petrucci, of the powerful Petruccis of Sienna.

Cardinal Raffaele Riario was a co-conspirator though most claim his part was only a passive one. He, too, was a nephew of della Rovere (Pope Sixtus IV) and was given the Cardinalcy at the ripe old age of 16.

The difficulty in the plot lay in the need to murder both *il Magnifico* and his charismatic brother, Giuliano, who would immediately take over should anything happen to Lorenzo.

In fact, Giuliano was mortally wounded and bled to death on the Cathedral floor but Lorenzo survived the attack because the assassin hesitated long enough for the Medici to avoid a fatal slash.

High Mass was chosen as the venue because it was a Papal plot conducted by both clergy and Italian Aristocrats and it was the only opportunity to get both brothers at the same time.

But once Lorenzo survived, the violation of Catholic services outraged Florentines

Lorenzo de´Medici may not have been Christ-like in his ruling beneficence but it was easy for the citizenry to rally to *il Magnifico* in the aftermath — and rally they did with blood, carnage and lawless ferocity.

Federico da Montefeltro, Duke of Urbino, had promised 600 soldiers to be posted outside of Florence to follow-up and secure the city after the coup but they never materialized.

Archbishop Riario was arrested before he could get to *Gonfaloniere* Petrucci and, along with some *eighty* other "conspirators"[ccxviii] were tortured and slaughtered; the most high-profile (such as the Archbishop) were stripped of their clothing and hung from windows at the *Palazzo Medici Riccardi,* the Medici family palace. Dead or dying, the bodies were left to bake in the hot Tuscan sun. Some were thrown from the windows of the Palazzo and those who survived the fall were dragged through the city streets, having their flesh ripped from their bodies.

Another key planner was Florentine merchant Bernardo Baroncelli. Baroncelli was able to escape the city and made it all the way to Constantinople. Unfortunately for him, it was no-longer under Byzantine Orthodox rule and Sultan Mehmed II was pleased to send the "criminal" back to the banking master — a gesture of good will, across the span of geography, ethnicity and religion, one Ruling Elite to another.

Baroncelli, too, was hung outside the *Palazzo Medici*.

Jacopo de´Pazzi had traveled for two days, seeking asylum, but was captured and returned where he was tortured through the night of April 29th, 1478 A.D. and hung from the Palazzo the following morning.

Neither of the Priests were spared.

> *Not until the third of May were the two Priests taken who had attacked Lorenzo. They were found hidden in the Badia* [Badia Fiorentina

> abbey], *which the people would gladly have burnt, for its hospitality. They sliced off the ears and noses of their captives, and then handed them over ... to be hung.* ~ Armstrong[264]

It was into this chaos of lust, ambition and murder that the delicate Dominican, Fra (*Frāter*: Friar, Brother) Girolamo Savonarola was thrust.

After his brush with death witnessing first-hand the murder of his brother, [ccxix] *il Magnifico* was hungry for spiritual consolation and the honest sage cleric was eagerly anticipated.

By now, Savonarola was adding skill and experience to his piety and passion. The scholar received a command from his superiors to attend a Chapter-General of the Lombard Dominicans, held in the city of Reggio in 1482, where he distinguished himself amongst notables inside and out of the order.

For Savonarola, the pageantry of Florence was offset by the perversion.

> *The splendour and prosperity were on the surface; there was moral deterioration beneath. ...*
>
> *Lorenzo's example served to foster the demoralisation.*
>
> *The dissolute orgies in which he frequently indulged, and the ribald songs he composed for general use at the Carnival season,*[[ccxx]] *polished in style but coarse and obscene in sentiment, tended still further to encourage the debased tendencies of the popular mind.*
>
> *It was no uncommon occurrence for him, after a day spent in public business, and a few hours of discussion on high themes at the Platonic Academy, to sally forth at night into the city at the head of a band of revellers, to sing his "Canti Carnascialeschi,"* [songs of carnal revelry] *and to take part in vicious excesses.*
>
> *This serious moral degeneracy at work underneath the flashing material magnificence soon struck the eye and heart of Fra Girolamo, as he watched the vivid life of the city from his quiet retreat at San Marco.* ~ M´Hardy[265]

Savonarola's desire for righteousness manifested itself in what he believed were Divine Revelations. These visions of purification would not be

received well either by his Church, nor the Aristocracy. Worse, they made the Prior of San Marco the star: put the star to death and the visions of purification die as well.[ccxxi]

> *Savonarola had become aware of a secret prophetic instinct, pointing to some peculiar and sacred work for which he was marked out in the designs of the Most High.*
>
> *Strange visions came to him in his lonely vigils of contemplation and prayer.*
>
> *The calamities that threatened the Church passed before his gaze; he heard voices urging him to announce the coming perils and to rouse men to repentance and faith.*
>
> *It was two years, however, ere the way was opened for the delivery of his message.*
>
> *In 1484 he was sent to the town of San Gemignano, among the hills of Siena, where a people as yet uncorrupted by the loose vices of the time lived, surrounded by beautiful churches, tall towers, and many monuments of medieval art.*
>
> *There for the first time he ventured to unfold his prophetic programme, and put forth the three propositions which were to form the burden of his preaching all through life: (1) that the Church will be scourged;*
> *(2) that it will afterwards be regenerated;*
> *(3) that this will come to pass soon.*
>
> *These points he enforced by constant reference to Scripture, drawing particularly from the Old Testament startling illustrations of the Divine judgments which the evils of society and the abuses of religion must inevitably incur. ...*
>
> *Circumstances had transpired at Rome which lent additional force to his conviction that some such judgment was near.*
>
> *Sixtus IV. had died, and it was notorious that Innocent VIII.* [Giovanni Battista Cibo], *his successor, had owed his election to fraud and bribery.*

> *Instead of the Papal Court being cleansed, as many hoped it might be, the pollution had become worse than ever.*
>
> *The new Pope had sons of his own, whose advancement he schemed for with unblushing effrontery, while the ecclesiastics whom he drew around himself and raised to the chief dignities were a set of corrupt men whose vices were an open scandal; and by such a pernicious example at the very centre of Christendom, encouragement was given to the already too profligate tendencies of the highly-placed and the wealthy throughout the country.* ~ M´Hardy[266]

If Savonarola was a powerful speaker before, his visions of righteous cleansing now made him a Papal pariah who enraptured his audiences with metaphors drawn straight out of the Bible.

But where Luther, Calvin, Knox and Zwingli (who would rise and flourish less than a generation later) have been mislabeled by Catholic historians as "Reformers", Fra Girolamo was exactly that — perhaps the only one of his kind.

Savonarola even used the judgments from Revelation for his fiery preaching, though he did not go as far as calling the office of Papacy "Anti-Christ" as the Protestors did.

> *His sermons during that Lent season of 1491 struck the keynote of his few years' pulpit sovereignty.*
>
> *In bold, thrilling tones he launched forth against the frivolity, gambling, and impiety of the citizens, the pagan tastes and learned trifling of the devotees of the ancient philosophy, the vices and tyranny of those in power, the slavish subjection of the masses, and the bad lives of the clergy.*
>
> *He threw scorn on the light supplied by the pagan literature so extravagantly praised, and declared that the Scriptures are the only true guide for the soul.*
>
> *In opposition to the prevailing tendency to depend on external works and ceremonies, he maintained that salvation comes only through faith in Jesus Christ and the surrender of the heart to His grace.*

> *Here his teaching ran on much the same lines as those afterwards followed by Luther.*
>
> *It was, however, a moral, not a doctrinal, reform which he set himself specifically to labour for.*
>
> *He accepted the dogmatic beliefs of the Church, and, unlike Luther, felt no call to attack them.*
>
> *His one definite aim was to effect a practical purification of the Church and of the private and public life of the people.* ~ M´Hardy[267]

The Easter after Lent (1491) he was called to preach in Florence's "City Hall", the Palazzo Vecchio, before *il Magnifico*, himself. He refrained from giving direct references to specific immorality but charged authorities with creating an Aristocratic tyranny. It was rumored that Medici would have him expelled from the city but he was not.

Savonarola's advancement was recognized and acknowledged by his Order and he was promoted to take over the Priory at San Marco. He then began a dangerous, if somewhat successful game of not acknowledging his benefactor and ruler of the city, Lorenzo de´Medici. Neither personal entreaty nor gold sovereigns in the collection box enticed the new Prior to compromise himself.

In less than a year, Lorenzo would be struck down by an unusual disease that caused infection and eventually gangrene in his leg. On his death bed he was attended by his wife, Clarice Orsini. He was visited by the now-legendary artist whom he had paid to live in his villa (Michelangelo Buonarroti) and he requested last rites from Fra Girolamo.

Later, fanciful accounts depicted the Priest demanding the condition that *il Magnifico* restore freedom to Florence. By these accounts, Lorenzo refused and Savonarola walked from his bedchamber without administering absolution.

However, more accurate accounts comport with the gentle nature of Savonarola, that he adjured Medici to have faith in the mercy of God through Christ. Lorenzo de´Medici was 43 years old.

Lorenzo's son and "heir" to the rule of Florence, Piero, was the flower of arrogant Aristocracy and lacked the smoothness by which *il Magnifico* conned his subjects into being willingly subservient.

If Savonarola believed Giovanni "Innocent VIII" Cibo confirmed his dire predictions of judgment upon corruption, much more so his successor: Roderigo de Borgia and his bastard family.

In his sermons, Savonarola had left the Book of Revelation and began expository teaching from the Book of Genesis. In the two years between 1492 and 1494, he had only gotten as far as the great flood, yet this seemed appropriate for the age. The Priory prophet promised his parishioners that judgment was coming, yet if they sought the mercy of Christ, He would carry them through it.

Circumstance had been brewing that would make it all come to pass.

Eighteen years before, on the Catholic "Feast of Saint Stephen", the day after Christmas in 1476, a cell of three Aristocrats murdered the Duke of Milan, Galeazzo Maria Sforza, over land disputes. His brother, Ludovico Sforza, stepped in to the power vacuum, imprisoning the heir, his seven-year-old nephew, Gian Galeazzo Sforza, who died under mysterious circumstances years later at only 25. In constant fear of retribution, Sforza lobbied France's Charles VIII (the Valois branch of the Anjou "royal" bloodline) to assert an old claim to the City-State kingdom of Naples, by force.

Cardinal Giuliano della Rovere added his voice to Sforza's and recommended Charles drive to Rome and unseat the Borgia Pope who had cheated della Rovere out of the Papacy with blatant bribery of the electoral Conclave.

Piero de Medici arrogantly (and foolishly) let it be known that he sided with Sforza and Borgia against Charles, thereby making himself, and Florence, a target. Bored in his luxury, Charles filled himself with fantasies of expanding his kingdom into Italy, subjugating the Papacy and driving through to the Ottomans.

When Ferdinand I (also known as "Ferrante"), the King of Naples, died on the 25th of January, 1494, against the advice of his generals, Charles

attacked and began working his way southward.

By the end of September of 1494, Charles was not much more than a month away from the gates of Florence, while Savonarola continued to slowly preach his way through Genesis, finally arriving at the passage — *And behold, I Myself am bringing floodwaters on the Earth, to destroy from under Heaven all flesh in which is the breath of life; everything that is on the Earth shall die.*

> *But I will establish My Covenant with you; and you shall go into the ark — you, your sons, your wife, and your sons' wives with you.* ~ Genesis 6:17-18

At first, Florentines sided with Charles, but as reports arrived of the French army raping and looting each conquered city (as was typical of any army at any time in history), fear and dismay took over.

Piero de´Medici's arrogance quickly turned to cowardice and he hurried himself to meet Charles and strike terms. He was commanded to immediately turn over all border fortresses and pay 200,000 florins (about $30 million) and received nothing in the way of a guarantee that the French army would not sack Florence!

In fury, Florentines ousted the Medici, sending Piero through Bologna and into Venice for refuge. They organized a new delegation to undo his cowardly settlement and made the unorthodox decision to include the Prior of San Marco who, equally unorthodox, agreed to go.

Negotiations continued with Charles until he entered the city on November 17th of 1494.

Savonarola played Daniel, calling Charles his Cyrus: used to judge and cleanse the Babylonian enemies of God.

The Florentine delegation bargained for new terms and Charles bristled in pride, preparing to hold the city to the original Medici gifts. However the power of the Prior's preaching had teeth behind it; Florence was armed and determined not to be plowed aside and enslaved.

Charles agreed to the new terms:

* Piero remained in exile (not to return as a French vassal).
* The tribute would drop to 120,000 florins (about $16.5 million).
* Once the French campaign was concluded, Florence would receive back her defensive castles.

The success of the renegotiation was a testimony to the power of Florence and the presence of the Prior of San Marco, Girolamo Savonarola.

Upon leaving Florence, the French troops ransacked the *Palazzo Medici*, taking all of the priceless art, sculptures and wealth carefully accumulated by the power-broking bankers.

But the citizenry was left unmolested; an exceptional accomplishment achieved in no small part by Girolamo Savonarola.

Savonarola's City

With the Medici ousted by war (as the prophet Prior had presciently predicted), order needed to be built out of the chaos.

However, no one knew how to re-build the republic. The Medici had controlled in autocratic tyranny for too long. An attempt at a Constitution was a failure filled with opportunities for a return to slavery.

A young Florentine would later make a name for himself regarding the "science" of "politics" but Niccolò Machiavelli was only 25 at this time and not yet immersed in governance.

The Prior of San Marco watched intently from the sidelines. He was well-studied in classic forms of citizen-government from direct democracy to representative republics.

> *Accordingly, on the third Sunday in Advent of this same year 1494, he began to speak out on the public questions of the hour, and in doing so he assumed the authoritative tone of a lawgiver directly inspired by God. In his sermon on that day, and the other sermons that followed, he made it evident that he had studied matters of politics to some purpose, and that he had a surprisingly clear grasp of political principles.*

Girolamo Savonarola, Prior of the Dominican Convent of San Marco in Florence, by Moretto da Brescia, 1524. (Wikimedia Commons) *Discussing the respective merits of monarchy and republicanism, he declared monarchy to be the best form of government when the monarch is a good man, but when the monarch is a bad man the worst form possible.*

"In Italy, and especially in Florence," he said, "where both strength and intellect abound, where men have sharp wits and restless spirits, the government of one could only exist as a tyranny. ... The only

government that can suit us is the government of the citizens, and one in which all have a share."

He warned the Florentines against electing one man as chief to domineer over all the rest. He told them to purify their hearts, give heed to the common good, forget private interests, and assured them that if they reformed the city in this earnest temper it would become more glorious than ever yet it had been, and they should begin the reformation of all Italy, and spread their wings over the earth to reform all nations; and breaking out into prayer, he cried, ***"Open, O Lord, the heart of this people, that they may understand those things which are in my mind, and which Thou hast revealed and commanded."***

~ M´Hardy[268]

Savonarola recommended Florentines swallow their pride and adopt the Venetian Grand Council model of representation. The recommendation was adopted by the *Signoria* (an association of Florentine merchants which handled the bureaucracy of State previously for the Medici) with surprisingly egalitarian qualifications.

Presaging the work of Calvin in Switzerland by a little under half a century, [ccxxii] the new government in Florence was guided by Biblical morality and equally distanced from the corruption of wealth and Aristocracy through decentralization and the checks and balances of multiple bodies across the executive, legislative and judicial processes.

So elaborate was ...the ... system of government in Florence, and so curiously contrived ... that the complicated structure is most difficult to understand.

The new system was less elaborate, but so many of the old names and old offices were retained, that it is still somewhat difficult to follow and fathom it.

The Great Council, however, instituted by Savonarola, and consisting nominally of all the citizens of Florence, in reality embraced but a small number of them.

*It was not, as in Venice, confined to persons of noble birth, but to the class of citizens entitled **benefiziati**.*

*These **benefiziati** were, as their name implies, a class already distinguished among their neighbours.*

*To become one of them it was necessary to have been elected to some civic office, great or small; the privilege descended to sons and grandsons only, so that the entire body consisted of the **seduti**, or those who had actually sat in some chair of magistracy, and the **veduti**, those who without acting had been seen, or elected to similar office — and their immediate descendants.*[1]

Thus it will be seen that the large democratic conception of a council of all the people dwindles at once into reasonableness and practicability, and that in reality it was to the judgment of select and experienced men, already aware, in their own persons, or in those of their fathers, of the risks and conditions of rule, that power was given.

*In a population of 90,000 there were but **3,200 benefiziati**, still a very large Parliament certainly; but this body was again **sterzato**, or divided into three sections, each division holding office for six months in turn; and no man under twenty-nine was eligible for the Great Council.*[[ccxxiii]]

*Another smaller body, composed of citizens of not less than forty years of age, called the **Ottanta**, or eighty, were appointed at the same time to form a kind of Second Chamber, Senate, or House of Peers, and the old Executive, the **Signoria**, who bore office but two months at a time, were still retained as the apex of all.*

The rules of this hierarchy are strange enough to modern eyes, and embody a complete reversal of our parliamentary customs.

*In Florence, under the new regime, the **Signoria** proposed, the Ottanta discussed, the Great Council, or House of Commons, voted only, in silence.*

The last was the final tribunal in all questions of government, but its members were only permitted to speak by a special call from the

> ***Signoria**, and never against a measure proposed; notwithstanding that it was their all-powerful vote which decided everything — a very strange and apparently cumbrous arrangement.*
>
> *Still more strange, however, was the mode in which all the laws passed by these three states of the realm were really introduced.*
>
> *It was Savonarola from his pulpit in the **Duomo**, or in the church of San Marco, who first laid them before the eager city.*
>
> *Without abandoning his own sacred subjects, without for a moment giving up his high position as a prophet and messenger of God, this extraordinary man set forth his scheme of taxation, his proposal for a general amnesty, and, perhaps most important of all, his plan for a final court of judicial appeal against the sentences of the **Otto**, the Florentine bench, so to speak, who were the supreme judges of all cases, both political and criminal, banishing, imprisoning, and confiscating at their pleasure, without any check upon their proceedings. It is scarcely possible to imagine a more curious state of affairs.*
>
> *The preacher propounded these laws with all the consciousness in him and about him of a divine inspiration; the people listened — the great mass of them, I suppose, as thoroughly convinced that God had spoken by His servant, as was that humble yet bold servant himself — while the judicious no doubt pondered, and the states men criticised.* ~ Oliphant[269]

Savonarola's pressing for a right of appeal for those accused of wrongdoing was truly inspired, evidence of his exceptional learning and insight.

> *On* [a] *point of considerable importance Savonarola exerted his influence the establishment of a right of appeal in the case of political offences.*
>
> *In the Council for dealing with such offences the ancient statute required a majority of two-thirds 'ere a heavy sentence could be pronounced.*

*This was what was styled the Law of the Six Beans the **Sei Fave**, beans being the means by which voting was conducted in Florence.*

Savonarola's fear was that a court so small, the members of which, moreover, were changed every few months, might be liable to impulses of party feeling and betrayed into acts of injustice towards political opponents; and by advocating a right of appeal he endeavoured to avoid that danger. ~ M´Hardy[270]

If one digs deep enough through the secularized re-writing of American history, one can find a Christian rebellion against feudal autocracy evinced in the Revolutionary War by the phrase, "No king but King Jesus!"[271] A case can be made for the phrase originating from the Evangelical Dominican of Florence.

We have seen how, in those exciting months at the close of 1494 and the beginning of 1495, the Florentines of all ranks had put themselves under his guidance and accepted his leadership as the messenger of Heaven in the framing of their laws. ...

It was a bold idea, and there was boldness also in the steps taken to carry it out.

The first announcement of it gave rise to an extraordinary exhibition of enthusiasm. It was in one of his early political sermons from the Book of Haggai, during the Advent of 1494.

Discoursing on the preference which some might be imagined to entertain for a monarchical form of government, and holding his audience for a while in suspense, the preacher exclaimed, "Well, Florence, God is willing to satisfy you, and to give you a Head, a King to govern you."

"This King is Christ."

"The Lord will govern you Himself, if you consent, O Florence. Suffer yourself to be guided by Him. ..."

"Take Christ for your Master, and remain subject to His Law."

Then, after enlarging on the spiritual and temporal wealth and the mighty influence for good over Italy and other nations which the

> *acceptance of such Divine sovereignty would bring, he clinched his appeal by a direct and thrilling challenge: "Florence, Jesus Christ, who is King of the universe, has willed to become your King in particular. Will you have Him for your King?"*
>
> *The multitude, swayed by one irrepressible feeling, burst into a great shout,* ***Viva Gesu Cristo nostra Re*** ["Long live Jesus Christ our King!"]*; and the exclamation in which they thus proclaimed Jesus Christ as the Monarch of their choice became the watchword of the new order of things.* ~ M´Hardy[272]

The clouds of resistance to the Prophet of Florence began to show when, displeased at the ouster of his fellow Ruling Elite (the banker Medici), Pope Alexander VI ordered Savonarola to preach in Lucca for the Lent of 1495.

The Signoria demanded a recall of the Papal decree and an astounding complication forced Roderigo de Borgia to do so; Charles VIII was now at Naples threatening to drive through to Rome and the humble Dominican Friar was now his friend and ally. Desperate to ameliorate the Frenchman in any way possible, Borgia rescinded the decree!

However, Roderigo de Borgia still greatly feared being ousted by the French. Putting on the mantle of "the Vicar of Christ", he scoured Italy and Europe for Aristocrats fearful of losing their wealth and lands to Charles, using the Medici bankers as his selling point.

Alexander was able to recruit Ferdinand of Aragon (who was also King of Sicily at the time), Holy Roman Emperor Maximilian I and Ludovico Sforza, Duke of Milan and Venice.

Even the Welshman Harri Tudur, who had crowned himself "Henry VII", King of England and Ireland (after he and his army routed and killed the reigning Plantagenet, Richard III, in 1485), joined the cause for the Holy Father against the French.

Ostensibly, what historians prefer to call "the League of Venice" was built to stop the Ottoman Empire but it's more common name, "the Most Holy League", expresses its true purpose; to put force of arms behind the Borgia Pope's reign of corruption.

At Fornovo di Taro in the province of Parma, the “Most Holy League” was able to rebuff the French but at a 2-to-1 loss of life.

Charles threatened to take his frustration out on his ally, Florence (whose new Republic refused to join Borgia’s “Holy League”) but Savonarola intervened, personally. The Prior rebuked the king for failing to cleanse the Vatican as was his Divine appointment, given by the Dominican prophet. [ccxxiv] Again, Florence was spared the ravages of war.

But Piero de´Medici remained lurking outside the city like a jackal, waiting for the opportunity to take back what he felt his family rightfully stole. He had attached himself to the trains of Charles’ army hoping that the Frenchman would re-install him. When that didn’t “pan out”, he appealed to his fellow Italian Aristocrats under the Borgia Pope and an attempt was made by the “Most Holy League” but it, too, failed.[273]

The Papacy of Alexander VI was most imperiled by the incursion of Charles VIII[ccxxv] because Roderigo de Borgia originally approved of Charles taking Naples by force but then reneged.

This put Florence, led by Fra Girolamo Savonarola square in de Borgia’s sights; a powerful city-state that had ousted the Vatican’s bankers from ruling her. Worse, a lowly Dominican convent Prior was daring to claim that Alexander’s “indiscretions” were cause to have him renounced from the Chair of Saint Peter!

It was in July of 1495 that the Pope summoned the Prior of San Marco, but smoothly, in a conciliatory fashion. Florentines who actively protected their friar (the *Frateschi* — the “monk followers” or “friar’s brethren”), felt he required an armed guard just to move about in the city. They were not about to allow him to be lured to Rome where he could be harmed either *en route* or under “examination”.

Just a few decades earlier, in 1414, the Rector of the University of Prague, Father Jan Hus, had been summoned to the Council of Constance for the same “crimes” of using the Bible to denounce the wickedness and corruption of the Church. He was given a writ of Safe Conduct by Holy Roman Emperor Sigismund of Hungary. However, Sigismund was pressured by Rome to betray his own written word in order to put Hus into

the hands of the Inquisition. Fearing for his soul, he did just that and the guards who escorted Father Hus were the same ones who arrested him when he arrived in Germany. He refused to recant either his Bible-based preaching of the Gospel nor his accusations against his superiors and he was imprisoned, abused, defrocked and eventually burned alive on July 6th 1415.[ccxxvi]

The *Frateschi* were not about to let that happen and they convinced Fra Girolamo to respectfully petition an extension (which, as far as they were concerned, was indefinite), which he did.

As the year rolled into 1496, the Spring Equinox brought the "Carnival" with its expected debauchery to include assault and robbery in the guise of "taxation". Young ruffians would bar through-ways with poles and demand a "pole-tax" or "toll" for innocent citizens to pass on.

Savonarola's response was nothing short of miraculous, if not particularly shrewd. With the Dominicans of San Marco helping him, he organized the youth of Florence as a counter-army (though one without any brute force behind it). The secret was to treat the youngsters with the respect of adults and imbue them with purpose. It was so successful that Savonarola's enemies began mocking Florence as a city run by children and led by religious fanatic.[ccxxvii]

Checked by the good will surrounding San Marco's Prior, Pope Alexander tried a different tactic; one that worked very well for him in the past. A secret emissary was sent to the Dominican to offer him a Cardinalcy.

Although the offer was not well-recorded, the response is.

During his sermon on the 20th August in 1496, Fra Girolamo mentioned (seemingly in passing) that he sought neither hat nor mitre and that the only red he wished to wear was the red of his own blood in martyrdom.

Unfortunately for the Prior, this grandiose statement would be brought to a terrifying reality; more so than he was prepared for.

Emboldened by his success, Savonarola then capitalized off of backlash from the Medici excesses.

After Lorenzo survived his assassination attempt, he shored up his popular appeal with lavish parties and festivals for the city, which often devolved into “merry-making” of a debased nature.

Venice Carnival 2019, TravelTriangle.com This included — *...the tradition of Carnival, when it was customary to wear masks and eat, drink, and commit lewd acts.* ~ Reis[274]

To be sure, the tradition of “Carnival” was neither a Florentine nor Medici invention but it most certainly was an Italian Catholic one. It is (still exists to this day) organic to the works-based paganism that masquerades (no pun intended) as Christianity.

Prior to the ritual “sacrifices” of “Lent” there is a counter-ritual of debauchery that has been “earned” beforehand. Before the restriction of eating meat there is a deep indulging of any desire of the flesh made safe and anonymous by disguise.

> *In February Italy is invaded by masks, confetti, colors and lights that build a very exciting and unique atmosphere. It’s Carnival time! A*

tradition that has ancient roots and has become a long-awaited ritual of the year where history and fun intertwine.

Venice Carnival 2019, TravelTriangle.com *Carnevale, also known as carnival or mardi gras is celebrated 40 days before Easter, a final party before Ash Wednesday and the restrictions of Lent. The name is said to derive from the Latin "carnem levare" – "take away the meat", which in antiquity was used to indicate the banquet held the last day before the period of abstinence from meat. A huge winter festival celebrated with parades, masquerade balls, entertainment, music and parties, where the disguise becomes the protagonist, allowing anyone to pretend to be whomever they wish to be for a few days.*

Italy's most famous carnival is held in Venice, where it was first recorded in 1268; masks have always been the main characteristic of the Venetian Carnival. ... [it is] *characterized by unrestrained enjoyment of food, alcohol and sensual pleasures, a temporary opportunity for the lower classes to overturn norms...* ~ Vasilescu[275]

> *This is the time when the whole city gets into the festive mood and celebrate like there is no tomorrow. ...*
>
> *The extravagant Venice Carnival is indeed a legacy that's been around since 13th century. Though there was a time when a ban was imposed on masks and the carnival, during the Austrian conquest in 1798, the festivity was brought back in 1979.* ~ Bura[276]

"Carnivals" of anonymous pagan / Satanic ritual orgy sex were reported on in 2017 by the New York Post as occurring in New York City and Los Angeles with such notables as actress Gwyneth Paltrow and "comedian / talkshow host" Bill Maher[277], [ccxxviii] in attendance. Maher was born to a Jewish mother but raised in his father's Catholicism[ccxxix] and is best known for mocking Christianity with "documentaries" like *Religulous*. From 1993 to 2002 he hosted the inversely-named "Politically Incorrect with Bill Maher" in which he took his far-Left political correctness to its logical end of humorless non-sequitur banality.[ccxxx]

Another proclivity of Lorenzo de´Medici was to spend his copious banker's wealth as a "patron of the arts", paying such notables as Sandro Botticelli, Leonardo da Vinci and Michelangelo Buonarroti to live in his villa and do nothing but ply their trade.

Seeking to please their benefactors, such artists would use a person close to the patron and elevate them in representation of an important religious figure.

As we've already seen, however, the more "thankful" the artist (paying your way as an artist was difficult then as it is today), the more likely they were to throw caution and reverence to the wind to please their sponsor, such as depicting murderous playboy Cesare Borgia as Jesus Christ.

This practice was made even worse when the subject was a desirable female.

Sometimes the "art" was the idea of the artist, others they were pressured by their patron with certain expectations that the "art" would play the game of being "classical" or "sacred" yet pushing the boundaries of propriety with nudity and suggestion.

For the time being, ... the distinguished Friar remained the dominant power [in Florence, despite the growing influence of his enemies]. *He had his eye and his hand on the leading movements in the city.*

He secured from the Signory more effective regulations for the improvement of manners.

Agnès Sorel, the mistress of French King Charles VII, depicted as *La Verge amb el Nen* ("The Virgin with the Child") painted by Jehan Fouquet in the right wing of *Melun Diptych*, the Notre-Dame Cathedral in Melun, France; (*circa* 1455). Wikimedia Commons[ccxxxi]

Through [devoted subordinate] *Fra Domenico* [da Pescia] *he perfected the organisation of the children, drilling them into a sort of police force or sacred militia, whose duty it was to protest against all indecencies, reprove vice, and report on any flagrant criminalities which they might observe.*

There can be little doubt that those boy-police were betrayed into occasional excesses of zeal. Their methods must often have seemed inquisitorial and impertinent, and murmurs of complaint were sure to arise.

Yet on the whole it is clear that the good effect of the movement amongst the young was warmly recognised by the general body of honest and well-disposed citizens. It presented a favourable contrast to the irreverent and licentious tendencies which had hitherto been so patent.

As the Carnival again approached, Savonarola resolved on a demonstration of an unusually imposing character.

He would celebrate the festival with a still more complete reversal of its profane revelries than on the previous year. Florence should be called upon to make a full and solemn sacrifice of her vanities.

Accordingly, for several days the youthful disciples of the Friar were sent round the city in companies, visiting from door to door, carrying with them baskets, and calling for the surrender of all articles which might minister to luxury, frivolity, and empty show; and on every house where their demand was met they pronounced a benediction.

In this way they collected an enormous number of objects usually associated with the giddy levities and self-indulgent pleasures of existence masks, wigs, and masquerading costumes; copies of loose songs, books of amorous poetry, romances and licentious tales; ornaments and trinkets of all kinds; perfumes, cosmetics, mirrors, veils, and false hair; flutes and guitars; cards, dice, and gaming-tables; pictures of the nude, portraits of popular beauties, indecent works of art.

These were borne with great glee to the Piazza della Signoria, and piled up, tier above tier, on a huge octagonal pyramid of wood which had been erected there.

Then on the closing day of the festival an eager throng filled the Piazza.

The thousands of children, who had marched in procession through the streets collecting money for the Good Men of San Martino, were gathered in the central space; and while their hymns rose to the sky, and the trumpets sounded and the bells rang out, the mighty pile was set ablaze, and in whirling smoke and crackling flame its mass of miscellaneous contents was reduced to ashes.

Such was the Burning of the Vanities. ~ M´Hardy[278]

With the rare, obscure exception such as the likes of Rev. George M ´Hardy's account, nearly all "historians" and "biographers" depict Girolamo Savonarola's "Bonfire of the Vanities" as a fanatical burning of precious art and books, completely devoid of proper historical context. How different do we see them[ccxxxii] when the items are gambling materials, pornography and orgy costumes?

For instance, the "secular" and "objective" Smithsonian (an institution considered the ultimate authority in both "art" and "science") blasted only last year —

A Fanatical Monk Inspired 15th-Century Italians to Burn Their Clothes, Makeup and Art

He told Florentines the apocalypse was coming, and to save themselves through self-censorship.

On this day in 1497, a Dominican friar named Girolama Savonarola had a bonfire.

What was lost? It was the 15th century, so it's hard to know exactly, but "artworks, books, cosmetics, dresses and much more were burned," writes History.com. According to historian David M. Reis, "sinful objects were collected for months leading up to the ritual, and on the day of the bonfire itself, Savonarola's followers adorned themselves

> *with white gowns, garlands and red crosses and went door-to-door collecting objects for burning. An enormous pyre was erected in the Piazza del Signoria and it was surmounted by an image of Satan. Representatives of the different Florentine districts symbolically lit the pyre, obliterating the objects of vanity."*[279]

It may seem as if Jesuits secretly control the "journalism" that explains "art" and "science" to us but it's only as coincidental as the similarity in the logos.

In reality, the "Bonfire of the Vanities" was an unprecedented victory of Christian morality upon a city owned and run by debauchery as citizens willingly turned over prurient "art", graphic stories, pornography, masks, wigs and cosmetics,[ccxxxiii] all to be destroyed.

Even one of il Magnifico's artists rebelled and donated the works of his hands that, deep down, had displeased him.

> *Interestingly enough, Savonarola found an ally in the prominent Renaissance artist Sandro Botticelli.*
>
> *Botticelli even volunteered his own paintings for burning by the prophet.*
>
> *It is perhaps difficult for a twenty-first century mind to conceive of an artist supporting the destruction of art — and the notion is made even*

stranger by the fact that the Medici were among Botticelli's most important patrons.

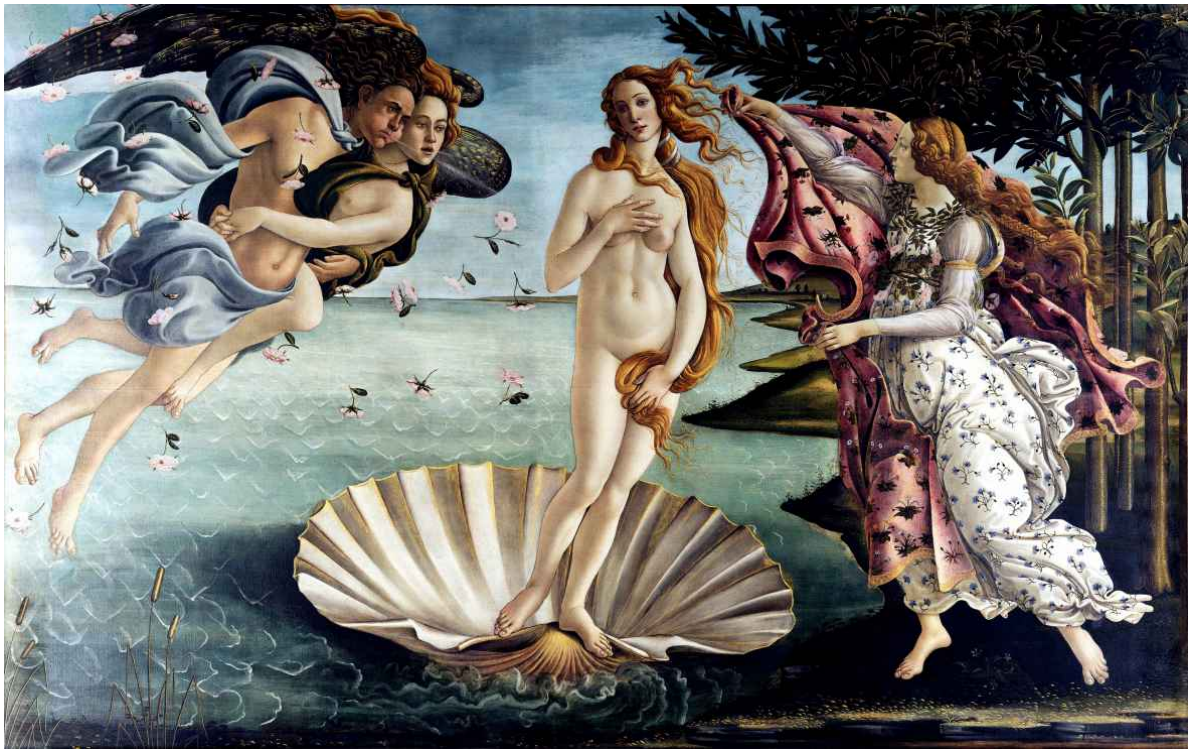
Botticelli's famous works ***Birth of Venus*** *and* ***Primavera*** *were both commissioned by the Medici.*

Botticelli's willingness to sacrifice his own works of art and his deep support for the prophet demonstrated the intensity of Savonarola's influence and the sense of urgency that the approaching millennium created.

The preservation of the spirit was far more important to Savonarola than temporal distractions ever could be.

Botticelli was, in fact, a staunch supporter of Savonarola. His studio was used for clandestine meetings of disciples and sympathizers following the prophet's death. Botticelli painted two images that are based on apocalyptic sermons given by Savonarola: the ***Mystic Crucifixion*** *and* ***Mystic Nativity****. The* ***Mystic Crucifixion*** *simultaneously depicts the destruction of Rome, or Babylon, and Florence as the New Jerusalem (Court,* ***Approaching the Apocalypse****, 97). The* ***Mystic Nativity*** *was painted in 1500-1501, a significant date for a millenarian such as Botticelli, and is based on Savonarola's* ***Compendium of Revelations*** *and his 1496 Assumption Day sermon (Hatfield,* ***Mystic Nativity****, 96-98).* ~ Reis[280]

The behavior of Botticelli may raise the eyebrow of Smithsonian favorite Doctor David M. Reis (who took his Jesuit Bachelor's from Santa Clara to become a Professor at the *public* University of Oregon), however the full context renders what happened in Florence not just clear but nothing less than miraculous.[ccxxxiv]



***Birth of Venus* (goddess of love / lust), by Sandro Botticelli under commission from Lorenzo de´Medici.**

M´Hardy goes on to note that, although Fra Girolamo had a resounding success in "ruining" Carnival that year, it was not because he was on a "Crusade" against art or the written word. In fact, the Prior of San Marco single-handedly saved the Medici library (which, along with the rest of the estate, had been impounded by the Florentine government upon ousting of the banker Elites) from being auctioned and dispersed across the Aristocrats of Italy.

M´Hardy also notes that Botticelli was not the friar's only gifted artist devotee.

> [Savonarola] *was the counsellor and inspirer of many artists, and his influence over them was great. He founded a school of design in his own convent, and one brother, the painter Fra Bartolommeo della Porta, was his close and devoted friend.*
>
> *Outside the convent not a few of the most distinguished artists were to be reckoned more or less distinctly among his followers Sandro Botticelli, Lorenzo di Credi, Luca della Robbia, and* [Pietro] *Perugino; the architect Cronaca* [Simone del Pollaiolo known as "the

> Chronicler"], *the sculptors Baccio da Montelupo, Ferrucci, Baccio Baldini, Giovanni Carniola, Michael Angelo.*[281]

Although the endless biographers and historians who have gushed upon Michelangelo Buonarroti have obliterated the fact that he was frequently on a bench in front of the Dominican each Sunday morning, M´Hardy adds of him — *The last of these, and the greatest, was one of his constant hearers, and afterwards, in old age, that supremely gifted master in the domain of art sought edification in reading and rereading the sermons of the preacher who had taken a strong hold on his reverential regard.*[282]

In May of 1497 a *Signoria* (the governing body of Florence) was elected that was pro-Medici and anti-Savonarola. This was not in the best interest of the common citizen but the friar's enraged enemies ("*Arrabbiati*": "the angry") had the financial backing of Rome and her bankers.

The pendulum now began to swing against Savonarola, empowered by the inability of Florence to maintain his high moral standard.

> *Against the enforcement by formal enactments and prohibitions of a high-pitched and austere morality upon a people neither by native temperament nor by training prepared for it, the reaction was sure, sooner or later, to come. It's coming was now evident in the accession to political influence of the great Friar's opponents ...* ~ M´Hardy[283]

On Ascension Day on May 4th in 1497, the Prior's sermon was interrupted by an assault from his enemies and he had to be protected by the swords of his followers (slandered as "*Piagnoni*" or "wailers" in contrast to the Carnival revelers).

Seeing this as his opportunity due the Dominican's weakness, the shrewd and ruthless Borgia Pope immediately issued a Brief of Excommunication which arrived in Florence on the 18th of June in 1497 and was read throughout the community. However, it was not addressed to Savonarola, himself as he was no-longer recognized within the "Catholic Communion".

Until this point, Father Girolamo Savonarola was a good and dutiful Priest who had not openly rebelled against Rome or his Dominican superiors but faced with choosing to continue or give up his visions of "cleansing" both of his religion and his people, the Prior chose to drive on.

> *He wrote in great haste an **Epistle against the Surreptitious Excommunication**, addressed not to the Pope, but to "all Christians, beloved of God."*[[ccxxxv]]
>
> *In that letter he reasserted his mission as God's messenger to announce the tribulations which were to fall on Italy, and especially on Rome, for the removal of evils and the renovation of the Church; and then he proceeded to argue that the excommunication was invalid because it was based on misrepresentations, and put forth with an evil intention in opposition to God and the truth.*
>
> *He had never, he affirmed, been disobedient to the Holy Roman Church, nor to the Pope, nor to any Superior of his, down to that present hour. "For we ought to obey our Superior in so far as he holds the place of God; but he does not hold the place of God, and is not our Superior, when he commands what is contrary to God. Accordingly, it has happened that in such a case as this I have not obeyed, knowing that neither God nor the Church wishes me to obey in things that are contrary to their commands."* ~ M´Hardy[284]

In the end, however, as long as Savonarola was ordained Catholic clergy he was subject to Roman authority.

It was now, in June of 1497, that Juan de Borgia was murdered, having his throat cut and then repeatedly stabbed for good measure before being thrown into the Tiber. Such savagery bespoke of an emotional motive and his brother Cesare remained the most likely culprit, carefully protected by civil authorities from prosecution.

In August it was discovered that a cell of rich Aristocrats and merchants were planning to sabotage the city in preparation for the Holy League to reinstall Piero de´Medici. The Council of the Eight passed judgment to the Signoria who decided that all five — Lamberto dell´Antella, Niccolo Ridolfi, Lorenzo Tornabuoni, Giovanni Cambi, Gionozzo Pucci and 75-year-old Bernardo del Nero — should be put to death by beheading. Appeal was lawfully made for the Greater Council to review the judgment but it was too sensational to risk and the Council allowed the decision to stand. Savonarola has been criticized by "historians" for not appealing for mercy on behalf of the traitors but, had they succeeded one can just imagine the

punishment the Medici prince would've enacted upon Florentines from the tips of "Holy League" halberds.

The Signoria repeatedly appealed to the Roderigo "Pope Alexander VI" Borgia to reinstate their most dear Dominican. Through an intermediary, Borgia let it be known that absolution could be *purchased* for five thousand crowns (approximately $130,000). Savonarola's conscience couldn't bear to allow the transaction to go through.

The Duomo remained silent for the remainder of the year. When it became obvious that Alexander would not rescind his Brief of Excommunication, the Prior finally stepped up in open defiance and preached three services on Christmas Day, 1497. Each time the pews were filled with adoring Florentines.

In a February of 1498 sermon, Savonarola reaffirmed his conviction that he was Divinely-appointed to preach judgment and cleansing but he was backing himself into a corner and his enemies knew it. He was now being pressured to prove his Divine appointment with a miracle.

A second trap was in his ordination. Although Fra Girolamo skillfully made the case for disobeying an authority that was in rebellion against Almighty God, Catholic canon made no such distinction. In fact, just the opposite is the case. As the Jesuit Fourth Vow of Extreme Unction is reputed to demand of each adherent — *I do further promise and declare, that I will have no opinion or will of my own, or any mental reservation whatever, even as a corpse or cadaver (**perinde ac cadaver**), but will unhesitatingly obey each and every command that I may receive from my superiors in the Militia of the Pope ...*

Girolamo Savonarola tragically proved beyond question that it is impossible to "reform" the Roman Catholic Church. This lesson would be taken to heart in less than 20 years' time by fellow "protesting" clergymen.

Sensing that Florentines were becoming uneasy in direct defiance of the Vicar of Christ, the friar pushed even harder. At the culmination of the 1498 Carnival he said Mass and adjured Heaven to strike him down if he were in any way misrepresenting his Divine Commission. He then orchestrated a Bonfire of the Vanities even greater than the previous year.

Borgia, too, stepped up his rhetoric stating that an Interdiction would be placed upon the city until the "son of Perdition"[ccxxxvi] was placed under arrest and / or delivered to Rome.

Savonarola responded in a sermon that, if he were the "son of Perdition", at least he kept neither harlots nor concubines and his "children" were those of the Spirit who heard the Gospel and harkened to it.

Determined to rid his Church of its scandalous Spaniards, Savonarola now played his ace: he appealed to the Catholic kings of Europe to convene a General Council on the competency of Roderigo de Borgia to sit as the Vicar of Christ.

It was not as outlandish as it seems. Alexander VI already had powerful enemies such as Cardinal Giuliano della Rovere whom he had pushed aside with trickery and corruption for the Chair of Saint Peter. The kings of Europe lived notoriously licentious lives yet, in comparison to the Borgias, even they were aghast.

Unfortunately, spies of Borgia's ally, Ludovico Sforza, Duke of Milan, intercepted Fra Girolamo's dispatch to the French Court and it was smuggled to Rome where Pope Alexander VI now determined to have the Dominican put to death, but not in a way that openly showed his hand.

In the hopes that he would not stand alone, Savonarola now assailed Alexander as Antichrist[285] and stated that de Borgia's allies were in league with Satan.[286]

The friar even went as far as to —

> *...attack the authority of the pontiff himself by saying that the Pope can make mistakes (**può errare*** ["may err"]*) and consequently can be deposed...*[287]

In his novel of historical fiction, Mario Puzo of *Godfather* fame colored it thus:

> *In the Roman countryside, rumors grew like weeds. And it was said that Providence had exacted the price of Juan's* [de Borgia] *life because the wicked Borgia brothers, as well as the Pope, had each bedded Lucrezia.*

...Savonarola began to preach with new fervor about the "evil that will befall the followers of the false Pope."

Seemingly unfazed ... Pope Alexander was considering a number of suitors for his daughter. Of all, Alfonso of Aragon, son of the king of Naples, seemed the most desirable.

Alfonso was a handsome young man, tall and blond, with a pleasant, easygoing manner. Like his sister, Sancia, he was illegitimate, but his father had agreed to make him duke of Bisceglie, to give him added income and status. Even more important, Alfonso's family's relationship to Ferdinand would unite the Pope and the Spanish king, giving Alexander a tactical advantage in his disputes with the barons and warlords south of Rome.[288]

Calling the Pope a flawed Antichrist and his allies servants of Satan was language that would not be lost upon an Augustinian monk in Wittenberg, Germany two decades later.

After a relatively short ministry of fiery, emotional preaching, it was not an indiscretion of the Prior's that precipitated his downfall but that of one of his followers.

The entry from Britannica is surprisingly compassionate towards the man other modern "secular" sources call a "fanatical book-burning pariah".

The imprudence of the most impassioned of his followers, Fra Domenico da Pescia, brought events to a head.

Fra Domenico took at his word a Franciscan who had challenged to ordeal by fire[[ccxxxvii]] *anyone who maintained the invalidity of Savonarola's excommunication.*

The Signoria and the whole population of the most civilized city in Italy greedily encouraged that barbarous experiment, as it alone seemed to promise a solution of an insuperable problem. Only Savonarola was dissatisfied.

The decree, which assigned to the ordeal Fra Domenico himself and a Franciscan, declared the loser whichever might withdraw or even vacillate.

> *In fact the Franciscan failed to appear and so the ordeal did not take place. Savonarola, victorious by the terms of the decree, was blamed for not having achieved a miracle.*
>
> *The following day the rabble led by the Arrabbiati* ["the enraged" enemies of Savonarola] *rioted, marched to San Marco, and overcame the defenders. Savonarola was taken like a common criminal together with Fra Domenico and another follower.*
>
> *After examination by a commission of his worst enemies and after savage torture, it was yet necessary to falsify the record of the inquiry if he was to be charged with any crimes. But his fate was settled.*
>
> *The papal commissioners came from Rome "with the verdict in their bosom," as one of them said. After the ecclesiastical trial, which was even more perfunctory, he was handed over to the secular arm, with his two companions, to be hanged and burned. The account of his last hours is like a page from the lives of the Church Fathers. Before mounting the scaffold he piously received the Pope's absolution and plenary indulgence.*[289]

How did Florence so suddenly and viciously turn against her favorite preacher?

Roman Catholic Priest Gregory Elder, Professor of History at a *public* college in California has a different account but can perhaps explain what happened as a wild swing of emotion.

> *Pope Alexander VI, of the House of Borgia, tried to ignore Savonarola's frequent tirades against the* [C]*hurch's faults. The crimes of the clergy was a sensitive one for the* [P]*ope, perhaps because he holds the record as the* [P]*ope with the largest number of mistresses and children, one of whom he made a* [C]*ardinal. The* [P]*ope summoned Savonarola to Rome but he simply refused. When Savonarola persuaded the Florentine not to join the* [P]*ope in a war, however, the* [P]*ontiff had endured quite enough and excommunicated the Priest.*
>
> *But it was not the* [P]*ope nor the French that undid the strict preacher. The affluent Florentine merchants began to chafe at all the new*

restrictions. Cloth merchants, tailors, jewelers, confectioners, and actors all saw their income drop. And the Florentine love of wine is remarkable even today. It was a friar from the rival order, the Franciscans, who began to call Savonarola out. The thundering preacher challenged the friars who challenged him to a trial by fire, a bit of jurisprudence not seen in four centuries. On the appointed day, the city gathered to see one Dominican and one Franciscan walk over red-hot burning coals to determine who was right. Both sides loudly called on Almighty God to make His choice known. As if to say "be careful what you pray for," at this point an unexpected rainstorm appeared, out of nowhere, suddenly dousing the mob, the coals and the friars.

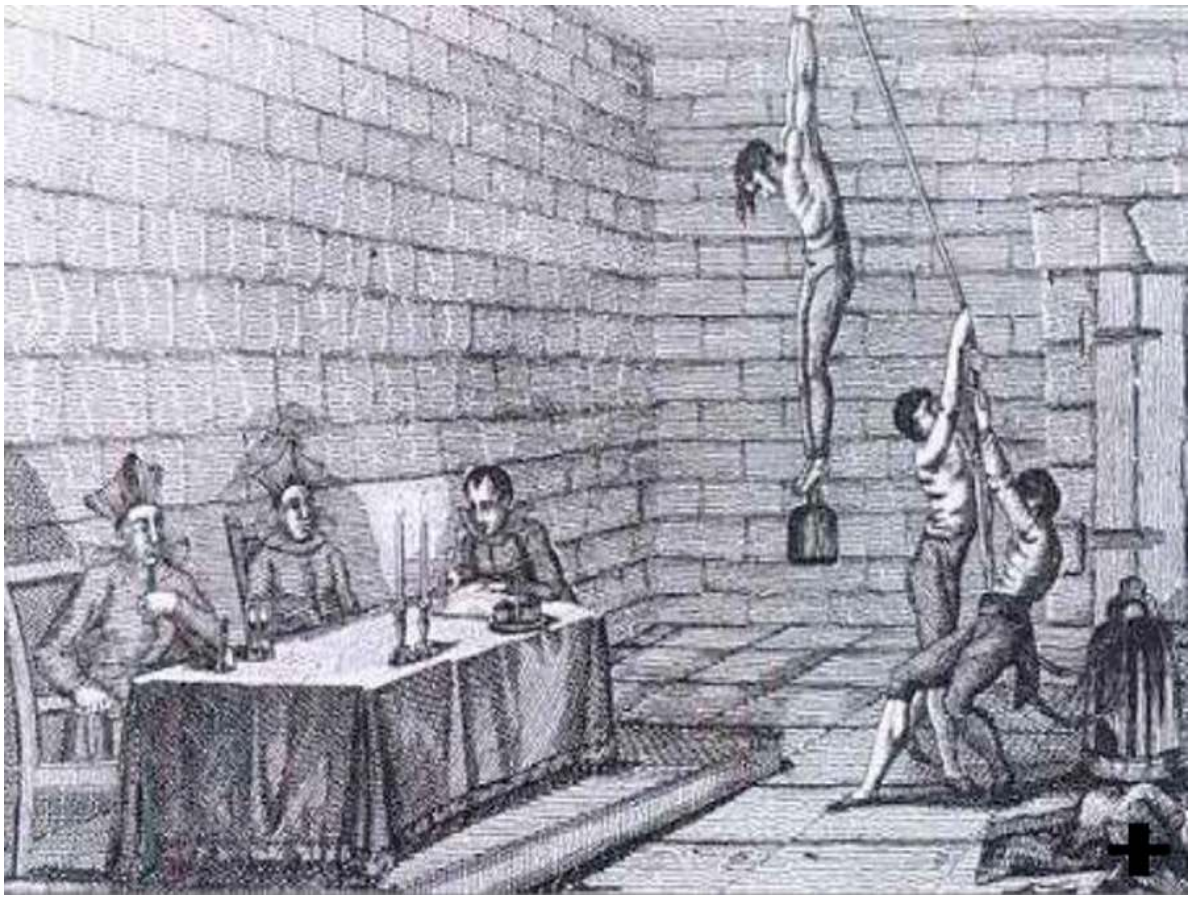
The mob, furious at missing the spectacle of toasting friars, decided that this was a divine vote against Savonarola, and chased him back to his friary calling for his head. Not long after this, civic authorities arrested Savonarola and sentenced him to death. Given that he was an excommunicate he got a quick trial, and so Savonarola and two of his closest advisers were pinned to crosses and burned to death on May 28, 1498. Florence, meanwhile, went back to having a good time.[290]

However, a modern Florentine who gives tours of the monastic cell where Savonarola lived may have the ultimate truth; it wasn't an enraged city that suddenly turned upon their beloved Prior, it was the General of the Papal Armies and bastard son of the Pope, himself.[291]

The conflicting accounts may be resolved with Savonarola's enemies arresting him and an armed Papal delegation led by Cesare de Borgia arriving shortly after that.

One thing is for sure; the gentle Dominican friar was savagely tortured because he had made the statement that he condemned the crimes and corruption of his Church and that he was commissioned to do so by God.

The method of choice was the *strappado* where the victim's arms were tied behind their back and they were slowly raised until their arms rotated out of their sockets. Often a heavy weight was tied to their feet or ankles to insure the job was done completely and thoroughly. A surgeon forced the arms back into place and the process started anew.



Again, accounts vary, stating that Savonarola endured this torture anywhere from 3 to 14 times; so many that he lost the use of one of his arms.

Most accounts have Savonarola screaming in terror and recanting everything he had been preaching for the previous several years. More than a few note that he regained his strength of heart and conviction between sessions of torture and renewed his beliefs to his enemies.

Peshmerga Kurd Barzan Jamal demonstrates how he was victimized by the "Muslim terror" technique of "Palestinian hanging";[292] a torture identical to the Inquisition's *strappado*.

Two other Dominicans were arrested and tortured under the same accusations of "heresy" and "treason"[ccxxxviii]; Fra Domenico da Pescia (whose enthusiasm precipitated the "trial by fire" challenge) and Fra Silvestro Maruffi.

They were all three, of course, found "guilty" and sentenced to be burned alive.

Their scaffold was said to have been unusual in that it resembled a large crucifix. The victims were hung in such a manner as to prolong their suffering and fires were lit beneath their feet.

It is also noteworthy that the trial and execution occurred during Easter week of 1498, yet nothing was suspended.

The massive crucifix was erected in the *Piazza della Signoria* where Savonarola's second "Bonfire of the Vanities" had occurred just three months prior.

According to the diary of Florentine apothecary Luca Landucci, as the friar passed and the flames engulfed him, a gust of wind lifted one of his arms in what appeared to be a blessing upon the crowd.

Thus ended the life of Rome's greatest and most hopeful Reformer.

The Secretary to the Signoria was at the execution. He was a young man who would go on to become a Florentine Ambassador to the Vatican where he would look upon the machinations of the Borgia and find the inspiration to write the most promoted book of its class on how to attain, keep and wield power; *The Prince*.

Originally titled *De Principatibus* ("Of Principalities"), Niccolò Machiavelli would rather astutely note that Savonarola could've been better served having recruited an army of men than of children.

> *If Moses, Cyrus, Theseus, and Romulus had been unarmed they could not have enforced their constitutions for long — as happened in our time to Fra Girolamo Savonarola, who was ruined with his new order of things immediately the multitude believed in him no longer, and he had no means of keeping steadfast those who believed or of making the unbelievers to believe. Therefore such as these have great difficulties in consummating their enterprise, for all their dangers are in the ascent, yet with ability they will overcome them; but when these are overcome, and those who envied them their success are exterminated, they will begin to be respected, and they will continue afterwards powerful, secure, honoured, and happy.*[293]

Although the Prophet may have been humiliated and executed in ignominy, his legacy did not die with him and he would go on to become the inspiration of someone who began with a desire to "reform" the Catholic Church but, learning its true nature, made a "protest" in complete dissolution of it.

With the help of a scribe, Savonarola managed to write two pamphlets while in prison; *The Triumph of the Cross* (an attempt to explain his fealty to both Christ and Catholicism) and *Prison Meditations on Psalms 51 and 31* (often abbreviated "*Miserere*").

And, by at least the below account, Savonarola never recounted his mission or visions.

> *These two prison meditations obtained an enormous celebrity at the time. That on the* ***Miserere*** *soon ran into thirteen separate editions, and even circulated through Germany; and the fame of both was*

afterwards greatly increased when republished by Martin Luther at Strasburg in 1524, with a preface in which he declared Savonarola to be a precursor of the Protestant doctrine and one of the martyrs of the Reformation.[1] *"This man was put to death," so wrote Luther, "solely for having desired that some one should come to purify the slough of Rome."*

"It was the Antichrist's (the Pope's) hope that all remembrance of this great man would perish under a load of malediction; but [you can see] *that it still lives and that his memory is blessed. Jesus Christ proclaims him a saint through our lips, even though Pope and Papists should burst with rage. Even by these writings* [you will see] *how works are of no avail in God's sight, and how faith is the one thing needful. What if some theological mud be still found sticking to his feet, who could be altogether free of it in those days!* [You will] *likewise see his distrust and despair of his own strength, and a pure image of faith and hope in God's mercy. Neither in the strength of his vows nor the rule of his Order, neither in his Priestly robe, in masses nor in works, did he rest his hope, but solely in the Gospel, in faith, and in righteousness."*

It is quite true, and also perfectly natural, that, in those solemn moments, Savonarola despaired of himself, and put his sole and whole trust in God. Nevertheless it is absolutely false that he ever renounced or neglected to maintain the value of those good works and religious ceremonies, of which, on the contrary, he was apt to exaggerate the importance almost to the point of superstition.

Even if all we have said were insufficient to overthrow the verdict of the great Reformer, Savonarola's last acts, and the last words he was able to write in prison, would amply suffice to that end. Had Martin Luther been acquainted with them they would have certainly removed all doubt from his mind.

Like all who came in contact with Savonarola, his gaoler was soon inspired with a deep veneration for him, and repeatedly besought him for the gift of some written words on virtuous living. ~ Villari[294]

In 1530, Lorenzo de´Medici's adopted nephew Giulio, now "Pope Clement VII", reinstalled Medici tyranny in Florence under the force of the soldiers

of Spaniard Charles V, King of Germany, King of Italy and “Holy Roman Emperor”.

Fall Girl

Clearly, Lucrezia Borgia’s reputation as a ruthless black widow has been a deflection from the crimes of her father the Borgia Pope.

Even the outrages of her brother, the Cardinal who resigned to be a General, Cesare, have been focused upon for similar mitigation of what his father did as the Vicar of Christ.

That isn’t to say, however, that Lucrezia didn’t enjoy the Borgia lifestyle.

Although Pope Alexander wasn’t unique in his debauchery, he did set some precedents. He was likely the progenitor of “Vaudeville Burlesque”.

> *It appears then that the aged pope had a regular band of female performers — “an unlawful herd,” as one chronicler phrases it rather quaintly. The “herd” consisted of twenty-five young women and often more than that were in the Vatican every evening and were kept busy dancing and otherwise entertaining the Sovereign Pontiff “from the ring of the Ave Maria until 2 o’clock in the morning.”*
>
> *These shows may have been the forerunners of the modern “revues” on Broadway, for interspersed with the lewd and lascivious dancing were “comedies of a gay and immodest character.” The audiences consisted as a rule of “not a few members” of the Sacred College, some of whom came dressed as cardinals while others came masked and had women with them.* ~ Bond[295]

It may come as a great surprise to learn just how involved Rome has been in controlling “entertainment”.

> *Riding the crest of humanist exuberance following Loyola’s canonization,*[[ccxxxix]] *Jesuit Priest Athenasius Kircher (1602-1680) contributed powerfully to Jesuit theatre as sensory experience.*
>
> *With his megaphone, which enabled the voice of one to reach thousands, Kircher invented broadcasting. He also fathered modern camera theory with his perfection of the* ***lanterna magica****. The magic*

lantern projected sharp images through a lens upon a screen, giving audiences the illusion of burning cities and conflagrations.

Kircher's work influenced the creation of the phenakistoscope (1832), the zoetrope (1860), the kinematoscope (1861), the kineograph (1868), the praxinoscope (1877), and finally, Thomas Alva Edison's kinetograph for filming action to be projected onto a screen through his kinetoscope (1894). Edison had a pet name for the tar-papered studio in West Orange, New Jersey, where all his prototypical films were made. He called it "Black Maria," a term that aptly described the image to whom Iñigo de Loyola dedicated his life in 1522 – the Black Madonna of Montserrat.

The American cinema's earliest subject matter to capture the popular imagination – the "cowboy" – was a Jesuit contribution as well. Eusebio Kino, whose statue is one of two representing Arizona in the U.S. Capitol building, was a Jesuit professor from Ingolstadt College in Bavaria.[[ccxl]] *Between 1687 and 1711 Kino introduced cattle and their management to southern Arizona. For this he is gratefully remembered as "Father of the Cattle Business."*

Pondering the works of Kircher and Kino, we come to a rather astonishing awareness: Kino's cowboys, as projected through Kircher's magic lantern, indoctrinated America's earliest movie audiences with the underlying message of Jesuit theatre and Roman Catholic theology – that knowing and obeying Scripture is not necessary in comprehending the ways of good and evil, or in doing justice under natural law.

Using cinema and radio to unite Catholic laypersons with the Roman hierarchy was a main purpose of "Catholic Action."

Catholic Action was inaugurated in 1922 by Pius XI, whose two confessors, Fathers Alissiardi and Celebrano, were Jesuits. The first pope to install a radio station at the Vatican (1931) and to establish national film review offices (1922), Pius XI ordered Catholics into politics. In the letter ***Peculari quadam*** *("Containing the flock") he warned that "the men of Catholic Action would fail in their duty if, as*

opportunities allow it, they did not try to direct the politics of their province and of their country." ~ Saussy[296]

The entertainment industry seems to be run for and by Jews but the secret to their success is first bowing to Rome. The Great Harlot is then very pleased to have Jews sit in the Hollywood limelight to feed the perception that the world's woes need another "Final Solution", all-the-while it is Rome who is the Fourth and Final Beast, so prominently mentioned in the prophetic Bible books of Daniel and Revelation.

For just one example, the billionaire Jew who has controlled companies such as CBS, Viacom and Paramount — Sumner Redstone (born Sumner Murray Rothstein) — was training with the Jesuits at Georgetown for his law degree when he was inspired to transfer to Harvard. This allowed the Jesuits to mentor their pupil but to erase their signature from his sheepskin; a tactic common to many prominent figures including President Donald Trump who transferred out of Jesuit Fordham to get a "secular" degree from the University of Pennsylvania.[ccxli]

But the number of Catholics involved in Hollywood is the entertainment industry's best-kept secret. An exhaustive list would fill volumes. Perhaps just a choice selection of "A's"?

* Al Pacino
* Alan Alda
* Alec Guinness
* Alex Trebek
* Alexis Bledel
* Alfred Hitchcock
* Amy Madigan
* Andy Garcia
* Angelina Jolie (father Jon Voight is even more devout)
* Anne Hathaway
* Anthony Bourdain[ccxlii]
* Antonio Banderas (so devout he does an annual pilgrimage)
* Arnold Schwarzenegger
* Art Carney (Catholic father was newspaperman and publicist)
* Aubrey Plaza Another "A" would be Ashton Kutcher, who was raised

devout Roman Catholic but claims that his Jewish second wife, Milena Markovna “Mila” Kunis, has him practicing Kabbalah. Kunis is another example of a Jew who was trained by the Jesuits at Loyola Marymount but then left before making it official.[ccxliii]

Chestnuts Roasting

Perhaps in an effort to set the bar on barbarism ever-higher, the Borgia Pope chose a special night for an ultimate orgy, a little over a year after the brutal murder of his daughter’s second husband, on All Hallow’s Eve.[ccxliv]

Known as “The Banquet of Chestnuts”, it was held inside the Vatican, in the Borgia apartments. A select number of guests were invited and the Pope’s illegitimate children, Lucrezia and Cesare, were in full attendance.[ccxlv]

> ...[On] *the night of October 30, 1501, when a huge banquet was organized in the Papal Palace including both nobility and senior officials of the Catholic Church — but it also included prostitutes, nude entertainment, and all-night sex games.*
>
> *The infamous party later became known as the Banquet of the Chestnuts and has gone down in history as one of the raciest nights in medieval history — and that’s saying something. Although widely disputed, the feast was legitimized by a first-hand written account and shed considerable light on the morality of the papal office, particularly the negativity surrounding the Borgia rule. Salacious though it was, this notorious feast did more than just entertain — it illuminated the duplicitous and flawed nature of religious authority...*
>
> *The infamous banquet was thrown in honor of the season and hosted by Pope Alexander VI and his son Cesare Borgia who made sure the food was delectable and the wine plentiful. Held in the official residence of the Pope himself — the Apostolic Palace with over 1,000 rooms — the invitation was extended only to his inner circle. The banquet table overflowed with roasted meats, dried fruit, and all sorts of sweet delicacies, as servants bustled around the room filling wine glasses in quick succession. Fifty of Rome’s finest prostitutes had been included in the guest list, and the air was buzzing with sexual tension as the candles burned low and the last dishes were cleared.*

> *The servants removed the candelabras from the table and placed them on the floor, introducing the next chapter in the evening's activities. Among the many guests, the hired courtesans began to dance seductively and undress while chestnuts were strewn around the floor. The burning flames illuminated the wide eyes and delighted grins of the watching guests as the women began crawling around on all fours, picking up the chestnuts with their nether regions, sometimes two at a time. At an hour when the pope should have been at prayer, he was likely pouring himself a fresh glass of Montepulciano d'Abruzzo and enjoying the show with his two of his favorite children, Cesare and Lucrezia Borgia.*
>
> *It wasn't long before the dinner guests got involved, throwing down barrettes, brooches, and even gloves for the dancers to pick up. Those with more ambition decided to burn off dinner by getting down and dirty with their choice of courtesan, quickly turning the shindig into a scene that would make Caligula proud. Prizes were soon announced for anyone (including cardinals and priests) with the most ejaculations, and tunics of silk and other fineries were handed out to the winners by the Pope himself.* ~ Jeffers[297]

The date was chosen specifically for its pagan significance. Today's "Halloween" was known to pagans by many names; Celtic *Samhain*, Welsh *Calan Gaeaf* or Spanish *Día de Muertos* ("the Day of the Dead").

Like many other pagan "holidays" it was adopted by the Catholic Church and masked with Christian trappings to honor dead "Saints" as "All Hallows Eve" and "All Saints' Day".

But the root is all pagan and capitalized off of unbridled lust commemorating the last harvest and honoring "reproduction".

> *The late October date played a major part in the nature of the feast, as All Hallows was a sanctified church holiday with ties to the dead and the season of plenty. It was an otherworldly time when charnel houses were opened, cadavers were dressed in finery and displayed, and farmers celebrated the end of a productive year. Larders were full, wood was chopped, and people were prepared for pleasure and the promise of abundance. As the leaves turned red and the night became*

> *chillier, the season of winter began in medieval Rome where masquerading, performances, and processions of all kinds were embraced. The success of this holiday time depended greatly on the actions of the Aristocrats and papal authority who were expected to set the tone for revelry and upcoming festivals. Although most Catholics probably predicted a church festival, the Borgias (in their typical fashion) offered up an evening above and beyond anything anyone expected.* ~ Jeffers[298]

The "Master of Ceremonies" was the Papal "Protonotary Apostolic"[ccxlvi], Father Johann Burchard, who wrote in his diary of the Borgia's Babylonian bacchanalia. However, copies are rarely found and usually quite redacted.

> *There is one great blank in his "**Diarium**" or Diary. It is silent on the mysterious murder of the pope's favorite son, the young Duke of Gandia. ... There is evidence that the book has been tampered with. Thus the description of the banquet where fifty naked courtesans performed the notorious "Dance of the Chestnuts" for the pope and his daughter Lucrezia has been crossed out in heavy strokes of ink.* ~ Bond[299]

Still, it is acknowledged as a reference for the chosen who are privy to its pages (shocking details, however, are almost always kept secret).

> *Even though the Banquet of Chestnuts has been called the most infamous fête in Europe, its historical telling varies between sources. Nonetheless, there is a first-hand account of the feast preserved in a Latin diary called **Liber Notarum** by Protonotary Apostolic and Master of Ceremonies Johann Burchard who wrote about the evening in his personal diary. Sandwiched in between a visit to Civita Castellana and a fight involving some donkeys, Burchard's passage on the feast describes a scene none too flattering to the Pope who apparently did not leave when the party took a turn. According to him, the pope was known to greatly admire male virility and often measured a man's machismo through his sexual prowess.* ~ Jeffers[300]

"Historians" place the "Dance of the Chestnuts" on October ***30th*** perhaps as a ruse to give 24 hours of distance to Samhain.

But an independent journalist who examined evidence first-hand in Rome put the Borgia bacchanalia on the 31st.[ccxlvii]

> *In the curious language of Burckard the "chorus" on the festive occasion consisted of "fifty honest prostitutes, or women that hire themselves, and of unemployed courtesans."*
>
> *This crew, selected from the best material of the Roman underworld, was brought into the rooms of Cesare early in the evening. The apartment of Cesare was of course in the Vatican. There was a large hall which served for a banquet. There were tables for the pope, for his son and daughter and a very few invited guests. While the Borgia and their party sat at the banquet the "chorus of fifty" ate in the hall of the servants. When the banquet was at an end the tables in the dining room were removed. The pope, Cesare and Lucrezia sat in a group on a sumptuous couch and presently His Holiness gave the signal for the beginning of the "festivities." They began with dances for which the women chose partners from among the servants of the Vatican and "from among others who happened to be present." At first some semblance of decency was observed. Indeed, to begin an intended debauch with an early outward show of respectability seems to have been the fashion with the Borgias. This, of course, was by no means a tribute to virtue or morality, but merely a clever and deliberate refinement of sensuality. The excesses and the unnatural excitation were cunningly reserved for the finish. The aged pope craved stimulation; he wanted to taste to the fullest every stage of the "enjoyment." In this way he was carried along by the rising tide of sensual indulgence.*
>
> *The first orderly dance was of brief duration. Gradually the dancers of both sexes divested themselves of their clothing until with the increasing excitement of the dance they found themselves in a state of absolute nudity. When this erotic craze was at its height, the master of ceremonies signaled to the dancers to suspend and retire for a short rest. Thereupon servants appeared carrying a large number of candlesticks. These latter were from two to three feet high* ***and had evidently served for use at the altars of churches****. The candlesticks*

were put in five straight rows, with just enough space between them to allow of the comfortable passing of a human body among them. A second group of servants following, placing lighted tapers of some size in the candlesticks. Another signal and the dancers, the chorus of fifty women with their partners, reappeared exactly in the same nude state in which they had left the hall. They ranged themselves behind the last row of the lighted candles and were immediately attended by servants who held bags filled with chestnuts.

The "fifty took the chestnuts and threw them in front of the candles as close to the lights as possible." When the bags had been emptied, without waiting for any further signal, the members of the chorus and their partners of the male sex, dropped upon their knees and walking on all fours, began to search for and collect the scattered chestnuts amid volleys of obscene shouts of encouragement. The naked and heated bodies were soon in a state of wild entanglement and then began the scenes which cannot be described. None was livelier in applauding and shouting than the pope and his daughter, then a girl of scarcely more than twenty. In the final stages of the orgy the most bestial of human instincts were running riot. Burckard speaks of a "final assault." While the men and women were half mad in their frenzied movements prizes were awarded by the pope to those performers who had distinguished themselves by the audacity of their excesses.

The disgusting "Dance of the Chestnuts" took place on the eve of one of the solemn feasts of the Roman Church, the Day of All Saints. It was well toward noon on November 1, 1501, when the debauch ended. The pope, who toward the end had given free rein to all his perverted instincts, was expected to celebrate mass in St. Peters, but sent word that he was ill. For four days he retired to his private chambers recovering from the effects of his effort. ~ Bond[301] [emphasis added]

Julius Caesar, Not Jesus Christ

In essence, it is the Roman religion that gave rise and opportunity to families like Medici, Orsini, Farnese and Borgia. Through the power

wielded by Catholic clergy comes indulging of every lawless lust that the worst of the previous empire could dream up.

The rule of Caligula was little different than the rule of Clement VII, of whom Holy Roman Emperor Charles V (not known for his moral piety) stated he was equal to a shepherd who fled his flock only to return as a ravenous wolf.[302]

Even the History Channel had to admit in summary —

> *The House of Borgia was a noble family of Spanish origin, which rose to prominence in the Catholic church in the mid-15th century. Rodrigo Borgia became Pope in 1492, choosing the name Alexander VI. His rise was dubiously swift, his main rivals for the Papal chair apparently receiving vast sums to forgo their ambitions and support Rodrigo. His reign as Pope was epitomised by lavish living, ruthless suppression of critics and rivals, the amassing of a huge personal fortune, and an insatiable appetite for pleasures of the flesh. ...*
>
> *Pope Alexander had at least five children. His son Cesare, born around 1475, had a reputation that exceeded that of his father in matters of depravity and debauchery. Gross nepotism had allowed Cesare's rise to prominence — his father ordained him as a bishop aged fifteen and then cardinal when just eighteen. Cesare was the first cardinal to ever resign when he decided to pursue a military career, becoming his father's military mastermind and chief protector. He instigated a number of military conflicts, in part to demonstrate papal strength, but also in order to gather the riches that facilitated the excesses of the regime. He was feared for his singular brutality and apparent lack of morals. Rumors were rife that he was responsible for the murder of his older brother Giovanni, and that he was involved in an incestuous relationship with his sister Lucrezia. He died in battle in 1507. ...*
>
> *The Ballet of Chestnuts is undoubtedly the most notorious event in the history of the Borgia Papacy, but it was evidently characteristic of a regime that embraced greed and excess in many differing forms.*[303]

Killer Karma for the Poison Pontiff

Bond notes that the poison “cantrella” was a specialty of the Borgias, and that it was likely based upon arsenic.

The process was brutal and inhuman. The poisoners abused many harmless animals to both create and test their weapons (much as is done today) and, eventually, tested them on innocent human beings, as well.

> *The attempt to kill a human being with one dose of arsenic in its pure form results in symptoms at once distressing and characteristic.*
>
> *The Borgias, therefore, disdained the use of arsenic in such form as something too coarse and too obvious. They discovered that when arsenic is mixed with inorganic matter it loses none of its lethal qualities, but kills more unostentatiously. In this way they learned the art of making doses of varying strength — in other words the “time poisons.” ...*
>
> *According to one report the raw material of the “cantarella,” or its original crude form, was obtained in this manner. Some animal, by preference a pig, was slaughtered and disembowelled. The entrails were then freely sprinkled with pure arsenic. The poison checked but did not entirely arrest the ensuing process of putrefaction. After allowing a certain time to elapse, the semi-putrid matter was squeezed out. The juice thus obtained became far more deadly than arsenic in its pure form but continued just as tasteless. All now depended on the size of the doses, the manner of mixing it, and the best way of administering.*
>
> *To ascertain the exact effects of given quantities and given mixtures the pope and his son Cesare experimented for some time on living animals. These experiments being not entirely satisfactory, they next tried out their preparations on human beings.*
>
> *The victims, always of humble origin, having served their purpose, were flung into the Tiber through the secret passageways in the Castel S. Angelo. Many of these subterranean openings exist in the historic building to this day, but others have been walled up since it passed out of possession of the popes.* ~ Bond[304]

Recall that Juan de Borgia’s body was disposed of in like manner.

“Practicing” on “disposable” human beings is something Vatican agents still do today. In the 1960’s, Roman Catholic FBI agent Dan Mitrione would often kidnap innocent poor people or vagabonds while showing “police” in Brazil and Uruguay how to torture.[ccxlviii] His reign of terror came to a very rare poetic end when he, himself, was kidnapped, tortured and killed in the city of Montevideo.

Mitrione was also the Police Chief of Richmond, Indiana where he knew another intelligence asset of both Washington and Rome; Jim Jones.[ccxlix]

Pope Alexander continued to murder his allies, even those he empowered by his own hand like Cardinal Giovanni Baptista Ferrari.[ccl]

After receiving a generous “gift” from his secretary, Adriano “Hadrian” de Castello (also known as “Adriano Castellesi da Corneto”) Pope Alexander appointed Hadrian Cardinal in Giovanni Baptista’s place.

The Borgias had murdered and bribed their way into making the position of Pope as openly powerful as a Caesar. Roderigo’s son, no-longer a Cardinal, backed his father with a vast and powerful army. The murder and absorption of just one more victim’s wealth would ensure that not a King in Europe would ever challenge the family pre-eminence.

Hadrian de Castello was an easy choice; as an opportunist elevated by Roderigo de Borgia, he had few friends or family that might avenge him. Again, the Borgias sought to murder the friend the “Vicar of Christ” had elevated.

With cunning, a banquet was arranged in the Cardinal’s villa. No-one would suspect a risk of poisoning outside of the Vatican walls.

Cesare arranged for corked wine, laced with cantrella, to be gifted before-hand with special instructions de Castello’s servants that it not be opened without him.

As the Papal procession arrived, the hot summer day had taken its toll on the rotund Pope and he demanded immediate refreshment.

The steward, believing the Borgia wine to be of the highest quality, disregarded his second-hand instructions and sought the praise of the guests

by serving it first. The Pope drank deeply whilst his son, more fit than he, sipped his cup.

Cesare survived but Roderigo de Borgia succumbed and was dead in a matter of days; poisoned by his own hand.

"*Sic semper tyrannis*."[ccli]

Secret History

As I have already noted, focus by "experts" on Lucrezia and even Cesare is a distraction from the Papacy of their father, Roderigo.

But it must be remembered that Pope Alexander VI would not have been the licentious tyrant and ruthless murderer he was had not Catholicism provided the vehicle for his lusts to be enabled.

> *The defenders of the Roman system in seeking to explain and palliate the "criminal age of the Papacy," declare that the career of Alexander VI, monstrous though it was, in no way "affected the holiness of his exalted office." They repeat the assertion that "one bad man in the chair of St. Peter is no argument against the Papacy itself."*
>
> *It is right here that we must join issue with the apologists for Popery. First of all, Alexander VI was by no means the only degraded and monstrous specimen of humanity that wore the lying crown with the three circles. If there is any difference between him and most of his predecessors and successors it is purely a difference in degree but not in kind. The explanation of the constant recurrence of men of the Borgia type in the papal chair must be found in the thoroughly fraudulent, unChristian and wholly political character of the Papacy as an institution. ...*
>
> *The Papacy is reaching out for control of the schools in this country. It is encouraged by what it believes to be the indifference and the lukewarmness of Protestants who have forgotten or perhaps unlearned the art of protesting.*
>
> *Nor can it be claimed that Romanism with its destructive aims and tenets has changed since the days of the Borgia. Rome has never officially or otherwise condemned the Borgia, annulled their election*

to the "throne" of St. Peter, repudiated their records, or obliterated their memory. Quite the contrary. Within the present generation the Romanist church has erected a striking monument to the Borgia popes in one of the most prominent churches of Rome, Santa Maria in Monserrato, while less than thirty years ago Leo XIII restored the Borgia apartments in the Vatican. A monumental sarcophagus supposed to contain the remains of Alexander VI reposes among some of the canonized popes in the grottoes of the Vatican below the aisles of St. Peter.

There can be no peace no truce and no compromise with the forces of the Vatican. ...

The nature of the Papacy has not changed — it cannot change. The blighting influence is still a tremendous and fearful reality. In His own time God will blot all its works from the face of this afflicted world and consign it to infamy first and to oblivion afterwards. In the meantime the greatest weapon against this enemy of mankind is the light of publicity. ~ Bond[305]

Chapter 5

Bloody Mary

12 February 1554 A.D.: *The premature death of that celebrated young monarch, Edward the Sixth, occasioned the most extraordinary ... occurrences, which had ever existed from the times of our blessed Lord and Saviour's incarnation in human shape. This melancholy event became speedily a subject of general regret. The succession to the British throne was soon made a matter of contention; and the scenes which ensued were a demonstration of the serious affliction which the kingdom was involved in.*

As his loss to the nation was more and more unfolded, the remembrance of his government was more and more the basis of grateful recollection. The very awful prospect, which was soon presented to the friends of Edward's administration, under the direction of his counsellors and servants, was a contemplation which the reflecting mind was compelled to regard with most alarming apprehensions. ...

Alarmed for the condition in which the kingdom was likely to be involved by the king's death, an endeavour to prevent the consequences, which were but too plainly foreseen, was productive of the most serious and fatal effects. The king, in his long and lingering affliction, was induced to make a will, by which he bequeathed the English crown to lady Jane, the daughter of the duke of Suffolk, who had been married to the lord Guilford, the son of the duke of Northumberland, and was the grand-daughter of the second sister of king Henry, by Charles, duke of Suffolk. By this will, the succession of Mary and Elizabeth, his two sisters, was entirely superseded, from an apprehension of the returning system of popery; and the king's council, with the chief of the nobility, the lord-mayor of the city of London, and almost all the judges and the principal lawyers of the realm,

subscribed their names to this regulation, as a sanction to the measure. ...

Others objected to Mary's being placed on the throne, on account of their fears that she might marry a foreigner, and thereby bring the crown into considerable danger.

Her partiality to popery also left little doubt on the minds of any, that she would be induced to revive the dormant interests of the pope, and change the religion which had been used both in the days of her father, king Henry, and in those of her brother Edward: for in all his time she had manifested the greatest stubbornness and inflexibility of temper...

When this happened, the nobles, who had associated to prevent Mary's succession, and had been instrumental in promoting, and, perhaps, advising the measures of Edward, speedily proceeded to proclaim lady Jane Grey, to be queen of England, in the city of London and various other populous cities of the realm. Though young, she possessed talents of a very superior nature, and her improvements under a most excellent tutor had given her many very great advantages.

Her reign was of only five days continuance, for Mary, having succeeded by false promises in obtaining the crown, speedily commenced the execution of her avowed intention of extirpating and burning every protestant[[cclii]] *She was crowned at Westminister in the usual form, and her elevation was the signal for the commencement of the bloody persecution which followed.*

Having obtained the sword of authority, she was not sparing in its exercise.

The supporters of Lady Jane Grey were destined to feel its force. The duke of Northumberland was the first who experienced her savage resentment...he died unpitied and unlamented.

The changes, which followed with rapidity, unequivocally declared, that the queen was disaffected to the present state of religion. ...

"These things being marked and perceived, great heaviness and discomfort grew more and more to all good men's hearts; but to the

wicked great rejoicing."

"They that could dissemble took no great care how the matter went; but such, whose consciences were joined with the truth, perceived already coals to be kindled, which after should be the destruction of many a true christian."

The words and behaviour of the lady Jane upon the Scaffold.

The next victim was the amiable lady Jane Grey, who, by her acceptance of the crown at the earnest solicitations of her friends, incurred the implacable resentment of the bloody Mary.

When she first mounted the scaffold, she spake to the spectators in this manner:

"Good people, I am come hither to die, and by a law I am condemned to the same. The fact against the queen's highness was unlawful, and the consenting thereunto by me: but, touching the procurement and desire thereof by me, or on my behalf, I do wash my hands thereof in innocency before God, and the face of you, good Christian people, this day": and therewith she wrung her hands, wherein she had her book. Then said she, "I pray you all, good christian people, to bear me witness, that I die a good christian woman, and that I do look to be saved by no other mean, but only by the mercy of God in the blood of his only Son Jesus Christ: and I confess, that when I did know the word of God, I neglected the same, loved myself and the world, and therefore this plague and punishment is happily and worthily happened unto me for my sins; and yet I thank God, that of his goodness he hath thus given me a time and a respite to repent and now, good people, while I am alive, I pray you assist me with your prayers."

And then, kneeling down, she turned to Feckenham, saying, "Shall I say this psalm?" and he said, "Yea." Then she said the psalm of ***Miserere mei Deus****, in English, in a most devout manner throughout to the end; and then she stood up, and gave her maid, Mrs. Ellen, her gloves and handkerchief, and her book to Mr. Bruges; and then she untied her gown, and the executioner pressed upon her to help her off with it: but she, desiring him to let her alone, turned towards her two*

gentlewomen, who helped her off therewith, and also with her frowes, paaft, and neckerchief, giving to her a fair handkerchief to put about her eyes.

Then the executioner kneeled down, and asked her forgiveness whom she forgave most willingly. Then he desired her to stand upon the straw, which doing, she saw the block. Then she said, I pray you despatch me quickly.

Then she kneeled down, saying, "Will you take it off before I lay me down?"

And the executioner said, "No madam." Then she tied a handkerchief about her eyes, and feeling for the block, she said, What shall I do? Where is it? Where is it?

One of the standers-by guiding her thereunto, she laid her head upon the block, and then stretched forth her body, and said, "Lord, into thy hands I commend my spirit"; and so finished her life, in the year of our Lord 1554, the 12th day of February, about the 17th year of her age.

Thus died the Lady Jane; and on the same day the lord Guilford, her husband, one of the duke of Northumberland's sons, was likewise beheaded, two innocents in comparison of them that sat upon them. ...

Touching the condemnation of this pious lady, it is to be noted, that Judge Morgan, who gave sentence against her, soon after he had condemned her, fell mad, and in his raving cried out continually, to have the lady Jane taken away from him, and so he ended his life. ~ Foxe[306]

There is a great deal of literature on "wars of religion" which give equal power and equal responsibility for atrocities between "Protestants" and Catholics.

Most of it is exaggerated and some of it is patently false.

Sincere Protestants (Christians) in authority are unheard of.

Of the very small handful lauded by historians as "devoutly Protestant", none were more concerned with their religion than they were maintaining their power.

> *Elizabeth was **not** the polar opposite of Mary; although a Protestant she emphasized stability and not ideology. One of her favorite sayings was **video et taceoci** — "I see but say nothing."*[318] ~ *Secret History*, Cirucci[307], [cclii]

James I was even less devout.

The rival to the "Authorized 1611 King James" translation is the little-known Geneva Bible. A publisher of the Geneva Bible in Casa Grande, Arizona, has written this intriguing and well-researched preface:[ccliv]

> *King James did not encourage a translation of the Bible in order to enlighten the common people. His sole intent was to deny them the marginal notes of the Geneva Bible. The marginal notes of the Geneva version were what made it so popular with the common people.*
>
> *The King James Bible was, and is for all practical purposes, a government publication. ...*
>
> *King James I of England was a devout believer in the "divine right of kings," a philosophy ingrained in him by his mother, Mary Stuart.*[2] *Mary Stuart may have been having an affair with her Italian secretary, David Rizzio, at the time she conceived James. There is a better than even chance that James was the product of adultery* (G.P.V. Alerigg Jacobean Pageant, p. 6.). Apparently, enough evidence of such conduct on the part of Mary Stuart and David Rizzio existed to cause various Scot nobles, including Mary's own husband, King Henry, to drag David Rizzio from Mary's supper table and execute him. The Scot nobles hacked and slashed at the screaming Rizzio with knives and swords, and then threw him off a balcony to the courtyard below where he landed with a sickening smack. In the phrase of that day, he had been scotched.*[3]
>
> *Mary did have affairs with other men, such as the Earl of Bothwell. She later tried to execute her husband in a gunpowder explosion that shook all of Edinburg. King Henry survived the explosion, only to be suffocated later that same night. The murderers were never discovered.*
> ...

Henry VIII, once he had appointed himself head of all the English churches, kept the Roman Catholic system of bishops, deacons and the like for a very good reason. That system allowed him a "chain of command" necessary for any bureaucracy to function. This system passed intact to his heirs.

The system became a little confusing for English citizens when Bloody Mary ascended to the throne. Mary wanted everyone to switch back to Roman Catholicism. Those who proved intransigent and wanted to remain Protestant she burned at the stake ...*

King James I, among his many other faults, preferred young boys to adult women. ...

The depravity of King James I didn't end with sodomy. James enjoyed killing animals. He called it "hunting." Once he killed an animal, he would literally roll about in its blood. Some believe that he practiced bestiality while the animal lay dying.

James was a sadist as well as a sodomite: he enjoyed torturing people. While King of Scotland in 1591, he personally supervised the torture of poor wretches caught up in the witchcraft trials of Scotland. James would even suggest new tortures to the examiners.

One "witch" Barbara Napier, was acquitted. That event so angered James that he wrote personally to the court on May 10, 1591, ordering a sentence of death, and had the jury called into custody. To make sure they understood their particular offense, the King himself presided at a new hearing (which could hardly be called a trial) and was gracious enough to release them without punishment when they reversed their verdict.

History has it that James was also a great coward. On January 7, 1591, the King was in Edinburgh and emerged from the toll booth. A retinue followed that included the Duke of Lennox and Lord Hume. They fell into an argument with the laird of Logie and pulled their swords. James looked behind, saw the steel flashing, and fled into the nearest refuge which turned out to be a skinner's booth. There, to his shame, he "fouled his breeches in fear."[5] ...

James ascended the English throne in 1603. He wasted no time in ordering a new edition of the Bible in order to deny the common people the marginal notes they so valued in the Geneva Bible. That James I wasn't going to have any marginal notes to annoy him and lead English citizens away from what he wanted them to think is a matter of public record. In an account corrected with his own hand dated February 10, 1604, he ordained: That a translation be made of the whole Bible, as consonant as can be to the original Hebrew and Greek; and this to be set out and printed without any marginal notes, and only to be used in all churches of England in time of divine service.

James then set up rules that made it impossible for anyone involved in the project to make an honest translation, some of which follow:

> *The old Ecclesiastical words to be kept, viz. the word "church" not to be translated "congregation," etc.*

That is, if a word should be translated a certain way, let's deliberately mistranslate it to make the people think God still belongs to the Anglican Church — exclusively.[cclv] *...*

Translations from one language to another almost never come out word-for word identically. ...

It is interesting to note that the Geneva Reformers — men such as John Calvin — expressed opinions in the marginal notes that would be simply unacceptable to the "scholars" of today. For example, the passage in Genesis 12:2-3, that reads: "And I will make of thee a great nation, and will bless thee, and make thy name great, and thou shalt be a blessing. I will also bless them that bless thee, and curse them that curse thee, and in thee shall all the families of the earth be blessed."

Our ministers today tell us this refers to Jews. That isn't the way the Geneva translators understood it:

> *The world shall recover by thy seed, which is Christ, the blessings that were lost in Adam.*[7]

Twentieth century scholarly works, such as the Scofield Reference Bible, published by Oxford University Press, hold that the 38th Chapter of Ezekiel refers to an invasion of Jerusalem by Russian armies leading the Northern European powers. John Calvin and his [scholars], *who annotated the Geneva Bible, understood it a little differently: Signifying all the people of the world should assemble themselves against the Church and Christ their head.*[8]

The Reverend Scofield and his fellow "scholars" hold up Satan as some sort of boogey-man. The Geneva translators, as in Psalm 109:6, simply translated the word, "adversary."[308]

The story of Bloody Mary begins with her father, Henry VIII.

Henry VIII was a loyal Catholic Tudor. In response to Martin Luther, the burgeoning Reformation in general, and Luther's questioning of the Roman Sacredotal system in his book ***On the Babylonian Captivity of the Church****, Henry wrote a scathing attack via his book* ***On The Seven Sacraments****. Even Henry's Lord Chancellor, Sir Thomas More, was uncomfortable with how much Henry pandered to Rome (and More was the chief Inquisitor behind stamping out William Tyndale and his English Bible). More warned Henry that he gave "too much honor to the Pope" and Henry's response was "There is no such thing as 'Too much honor to the Pope'."*[313]

As a result, Giovanni di Lorenzo de' Medici (Pope Leo X) recognized Henry as ***Fidei defensor****; Defender of the Faith.*[314]

But when it was found that Henry's Catholic Castilian wife, Catherine of Aragon, could give him no male heirs, he beseeched Pope Clement VIIc for a "special dispensation" to divorce her and it was refused. The Defender of the Faith then crowned himself the Pontifex Maximus of England's Roman Catholicism which became the Anglican Episcopal Church of England.

After the break was made, anger at Rome seethed and a turn-around occurred as dramatic as Constantine's ceasing of Christian persecution.

Henry left Catherine of Aragorn for Anne Boleyn but after three miscarriages she could only bear Henry a single girl. She was brought up on controversial charges of treason, adultery, incest and even witchcraft and executed in 1536. By the accounts of most scholars all accusations were specious and this was nothing more than politically-convenient murder conducted by Henry.

The girl that Anne bore her murderous husband was Elizabeth I. Anne had been greatly influenced by England's powerful Protestant, William Tyndale. As a result, her legacy was far more potent than her husband's as Elizabeth was England's most prosperous Protestant monarch.

Anne was replaced by Jane Seymour who was able to finally give Henry a son, Edward VI. ...

Like Alexander taught by Aristotle, Edward's passion and pure ideology threatened to make him the most powerful Protestant of his time — perhaps ever.

That was something neither Rome, nor her assassins, could entertain in the slightest.

> *As England's first true Protestant King, Edward was most certainly a target for assassination. Author Susan Higginbotham brings up the astounding accusation that, not only was Edward poisoned, his body was switched before burial to hide the evidence.*[1475] *~ Illuminati Unmasked, Johnny Cirucci*[317]

As the soon-forgotten king lay dying, one of his last gallant acts was to prefer his Protestant cousin Lady Jane Grey for the throne, instead of his Roman Catholic step-sister Mary.

But Henry VIII's first dutiful marriage to Catherine of Aragon would rise up and take its revenge as their progeny took the crone by force and just as quickly had the "9 Days Queen" murdered.

It was Bloody Mary I who poured a swath of Protestant blood across England for Rome. ~ Secret History, Cirucci[309]

In 2001, Mary Tudor made the Discovery Channel's list of "The Most Evil Women In History".

With candor not usually found on television,[cclvi] the episode introduced Bloody Mary as — — *the most hated queen in British history. During her 5-year reign, she threw all of England into chaos.*

> *Mary beheaded traitors, murdered heretics, and had pregnant women burned to death in the name of her religious fanaticism.*
>
> *The entire nation lived in fear of her.*

In the name of Catholicism, she burned alive over 300 Britons in 3 ½ years which was more than the Spanish Inquisition and the French Chambre Ardente,[cclvii] combined, during that same period.

Henry's Archbishop of Canterbury (the most powerful cleric in England), Thomas Cranmer, volunteered to do what Clement VII would not: Cranmer declared Henry's marriage to Catherine annulled, and his marriage to Anne Boleyn, valid.

This meant that their daughter Mary, was legally illegitimate.

Mary took special note of Cranmer’s actions.

Mary and her mother Catherine bonded to each other, in exile within the More castle of Hertfordshire. There, they reveled in another of Henry’s rejections: Roman Catholicism. They immersed themselves in their religion and it consumed them.

Mary was given a choice: sign her father’s Act of Succession which acknowledged she was illegitimate, or be put to death. She signed...and remembered.

But she never shook the fear of the gallows, or the poison cup.

Henry continued to cycle through wives until Jane Seymour bore him Edward. With that, Henry acknowledged that only Edward (to his doom) lay between Mary and the throne.

Henry VIII died in 1547. Mary was 34 years old, but Edward was only 9, and the ward of a coterie of “heretic” advisors like Archbishop Cranmer and Protestant Scot firebrand John Knox. As free Christianity flourished, Mary’s hatred for it all simmered. Edward further condemned himself by encouraging Mary, repeatedly, to give up Catholicism.

Edward’s “illness” in 1553 was most fortuitous for Mary and Rome. Edward knew what Mary would bring and attempted to place Jane Grey in her stead but the Catholic insurgency quickly put an end to the Nine Days Queen.

If there was any popular support for Mary, it was due to the myth of succession by Divine Right; direct bloodline descendants ruled. Those Protestants who fell for the contrivance soon regretted it.

Although Catholicism (which now consumed all of Mary’s daily life) was carefully avoided while Jane Grey was being deposed and disposed of, it quickly came to the forefront as soon as Mary secured the power of the State in July of 1553.

Just as Britons had feared, Mary quickly cemented Catholic control of England with a marriage to Felipe II of Spain; a country where “heretics” where being tortured and burned with vigour.

With English rule being handed to a Catholic Spaniard, Protestants rebelled. The son of ambassador Thomas Wyatt, Thomas Wyatt the Younger, initiated a revolt that was quickly crushed. The Grey family was supposedly caught supporting the rebellion and it was all the excuse Mary needed for having her rival, her rival's husband Lord Guildford Dudley, and her rival's Protestant father, Henry Grey, 1st Duke of Suffolk, all executed.

For Mary Tudor, "heresy" against the Catholic Church was synonymous with "treason" against *her* England and both were punishable by burning at the stake.

Mary vehemently and viciously threw the power of the British government against Christians and, most of all, the English Bible.

The Father of the English Bible

Like the English reformer John Wycliffe, William Tyndale received his education at Oxford. He was deeply affected by the writings of Augustinian monk Martin Luther, but continued into the Priesthood in 1521. Because of his scholastic accomplishments, he was highly sought after by nobility and the Sheriff of Gloucestershire, John Walsh, looked to have him tutor the two sons he had with Lady Ann Poyntz, daughter of Sir Robert Poyntz.

Luther and his friend, Desiderius Erasmus, had encouraged Tyndale to bury himself in the forbidden Scriptures and his knowledge soon put him at odds

with the local Catholic clergy. Although John and Anne encouraged the lively debates Father Tyndale invariably dove into at their table with visiting notables, an argument with a crusty Catholic abbot crossed a line that turned the Priest into an outlaw. Disgusted with the cleric's dedication to Rome in complete disregard for the Bible he clearly knew nothing about, Tyndale exclaimed, "If God spare my life, before many years I will cause a boy who drives the plough to know more of the Scripture than do you!"

Of all the promises to make, what William Tyndale exclaimed threatened the very foundation of Catholicism.

It was quickly reported up the Roman hierarchy and the hapless Priest had to flee for his life.

Tyndale certainly wasn't safe anywhere in his home country of England; not with a *Fidei Defensor* sitting on the throne (prior to Henry's self-serving "break" with the Vatican).

The renegade Priest decided to let his circumstances force him to commune with another renegade Priest. Tyndale traveled to Wittenberg to speak with Martin Luther, himself.[310]

The meeting clearly inspired Tyndale to follow in Luther's footsteps and translate the Bible into his native tongue of English the way the Reformer had done in German.

When he was ready, Tyndale went to Cologne to begin his printing but a raid put a stop to the process and he was lucky to escape with his manuscripts and his life!

Next he stayed in Worms to finish his project.

This was the city where Luther was tried for heresy in 1521 before Holy Roman Emperor Charles and a full panel of high clergy, and finally uttered the famous retort:

> *"Since then Your Majesty and your lordships desire a simple reply, I will answer without horns and without teeth. Unless I am convicted by Scripture and plain reason I do not accept the authority of popes and councils, for they have contradicted each other: my conscience is*

captive to the Word of God. I cannot and I will not recant anything, for to go against conscience is neither right nor safe. God help me."

"Here I stand, I cannot do otherwise." ~ *Secret History*, Cirucci[311]

By coincidence, almost 1200 years earlier, Luther's namesake, Saint Martin of Tours, had taken a stand in Worms (pronounced "*Vorms*"). Drafted into the Roman army to wage war against the Saxon barbarians, Martin refused to take life in the name of the Emperor. He volunteered to stand with the frontline soldiers but would not fight. At risk of execution, Martin was miraculously spared when the Saxons suddenly and uncharacteristically sued for peace.[312]

William Tyndale continued to move about often, traveling out of Germany, through France and into Belgium.

He eventually fell in with some English merchants in Antwerp who enjoyed a *laissez faire*[cclviii] approach to their enclave by the government because of the importance of their livelihood. It also gave Tyndale an excellent base from which to smuggle out his English Bibles.

There he was joined by another ex-Augustinian Priest, Myles Coverdale.

Coverdale was the secretary of his Prior, Robert Barnes, at their Augustinian house in Cambridge. Barnes had been tutored under the Humanist Desiderius Erasmus and was arrested for Lutheran views. He was prosecuted by Henry VIII's Lord Chancellor Thomas Wolsey and eventually burned at the stake. Coverdale met the Protestant Archbishop of Canterbury Thomas Cromwell in 1527 and the next year left both England and the Priesthood, eventually ending up in Antwerp.

Tyndale and Coverdale together were an unstoppable evangelistic pair and John Rogers was converted to Biblical Christianity by them.

Roger immersed himself in William Tyndale's work. As soon as the New Testament was translated, he began publishing it and subsequent Old Testament books as they were completed, as the "Matthew Bible" or the "Matthew Translation". It was a name that was hoped would give the "conspirators" some defense of anonymity but they were thwarted by their tremendous success and appeal to the masses.

Soon, Rogers became known to his Catholic enemies as “John Matthew”.

Back in Antwerp, William Tyndale was carefully watched over by Lady Anne Poyntz’s cousin, Thomas Poyntz. Thomas had the unhappy occurrence of giving sympathy to an Englishman named Henry Phillips, who had gambled away his father’s inheritance and was afraid to return home. These circumstances made Phillips desperate and dangerous and it was he who wormed his way into the confidence of Poyntz to find William Tyndale for Henry (still in communion with Rome) and his Lord Chancellor, Thomas More.

Tyndale was betrayed and arrested. To Thomas Poyntz’s fury, French Catholic authorities ignored the immunity extended to the British merchants.

Not even Tyndale’s enemies could muster a condemnation worthy of the Inquisition’s fires and *Fidei Defensor* King Henry allowed him the “mercy” of first being strangled, then burned. However, by some accounts, William Tyndale was carefully left conscious by his Catholic executioner to ensure the flames would torture him to death.

While on the gallows, his final exclamation was, “Lord, open the king of England’s eyes!”

Although Henry’s eyes were never truly opened, his about-face away from Rome was nothing less than miraculous.

All of Tyndale’s enemies became hunted men. Henry Phillips was never rewarded for his insurgency and ran through Europe a renegade even from Catholic authorities. He died impoverished and alone in obscurity.

The Lord Chancellor of “Burly King Harry” did little better.

> *In 1533, Anne Boleyn was crowned Queen of England. Thomas More refused to recognize her over her Catholic predecessor, Catherine of Aragon, and he did not attend.*
>
> *A year later, More was called before a commission to swear loyalty and obedience by Parliament’s Act of Succession which elevated Anne’s Protestant daughter, Elizabeth, above her Catholic half-sister, Mary. In his examination, More refused to vow that the King was*

> *either the head of the English Church nor the ultimate power over England — that, according to the Chancellor, was still the "Vicar of Christ" in Rome. In 1535, he was tried for this treason and convicted by a jury. The punishment was to be hanged, drawn and quartered but Henry commuted this to decapitation.* ~ *Secret History*, Cirucci[313]

His superior, Cardinal Thomas Wolsey, was also arrested and charged with adjudicating court according to the dictates of a foreign power — Rome. [cclix]

Wolsey was saved from the gallows by his former secretary, Archbishop of Canterbury Thomas Cranmer.[cclx] However, Wolsey continued to take direction from Rome and Henry called him to Court to answer for treason. He died, sick and broken, at the abbey in Leicester before he completed the journey.

In 1539, three years after William Tyndale's death, Cranmer (at the behest of Henry) published the Matthew Bible as the official Bible of the Church of England and it was ordered by the King to be chained to every altar throughout the land.

With the ascension of Edward VI to the throne, John Rogers was understandably ecstatic and quick to return home.

He met the Bishop of London, Nicholas Ridley, and was invited to preach at Saint Paul's Cathedral.

Although he held the title of "Divinity Lecturer", he eschewed the vestments and pomp that were Catholic hold-overs in Henry's "Protestant" Church of England, preferring to wear humble, common garb.

Yet, when Mary returned Rome to the throne of England, John Rogers stayed in London and continued to bravely preach.

Pamphlets were circulated encouraging rebellion but Mary and the Vatican had locked in the support of key Elites based upon "bloodline" sophistry and they controlled the military.

The pamphlets smacked of a false flag[cclxi] purge similar to the *Affaire des Placards* in Paris less than 20 years previous (more on that in Chapter 6).

For a brief time, Lady Jane Grey was imprisoned in the Tower of London. According to Mary and her retinue of Papist advisors, Jane and her family had conspired to overthrow the Catholic Queen.

All of these “treasonous insurrections” were perfect provocation for Mary to round up every vocal, notable Protestant in England and they were all arrested:

* John Rogers
* Bishop of Worcester and Cambridge Fellow, Hugh Latimer
* Bishop of Gloucester John Hooper
* Archbishop of Canterbury Thomas Cranmer
* Bishop of London Nicholas Ridley — and many others.

They were all prosecuted by Mary’s Lord Chancellor, Stephen Gardiner, the *Catholic* Bishop of Winchester.

This purge had the effect of destroying any Protestant theology in Henry’s “Church of England” and making it completely subservient to Rome. Henry had inadvertently insured this by keeping Rome’s hierarchy of clergy for his new religion. All fell in line or were severely dealt with. It was just easier to follow the orders of their superior.[cclxii]

John Charles Ryle said this of Bloody Mary's first victim: *Rogers was born at Deritend, in the parish of Aston, near Birmingham. He was a man who, in one respect, had done more for the cause of Protestantism than any of his fellow-sufferers. In saying this I refer to the fact that he had assisted Tyndale and Coverdale in bringing out a most important version of the English Bible, a version commonly known as* [the] *Matthews Bible.*

> *Indeed, he was condemned as "Rogers, alias Matthews".*
>
> *This circumstance, in all human probability, made him a marked man, and was one cause why he was the first who was brought to the stake.*
>
> *Rogers' examination before Gardiner gives us the idea of his being a bold, thorough Protestant, who had fully made up his mind on all points of the Romish controversy, and was able to give a reason for his opinions. At any rate, he seems to have silenced and abashed his examiners even more than most of the martyrs did. But arguments, of course, went for nothing.*
>
> *"Woe to the conquered!"*
>
> *If he had the Word, his enemies had the sword.*[[cclxiii]]

> *On the morning of his martyrdom he was roused hastily in his cell in Newgate, and hardly allowed time to dress himself. He was then led forth to Smithfield on foot, within sight of the Church of St. Sepulchre, where he had preached, and through the streets of the parish where he had done the work of a pastor.*
>
> *By the wayside stood his wife and ten children (one a baby) whom the diabolical cruelty of Bishop* [Edmund] *Bonner*[[cclxiv]] *had flatly refused him leave to see in prison. He just saw them, but was hardly allowed to stop, and then walked on calmly to the stake, repeating the 51st Psalm. An immense crowd lined the street, and filled every available spot in Smithfield. Up to that day men could not tell how English Reformers would behave in the face of death, and could hardly believe that Prebendaries and Dignitaries would actually give their bodies to be burned for their religion. But when they saw John Rogers, the first martyr, walking steadily and unflinchingly into a fiery grave, the enthusiasm of the crowd knew no bounds. They rent the air with thunders of applause. Even Noailles, the French Ambassador, wrote home a description of the scene, and said that Rogers went to death "as if he was walking to his wedding."*[314]

John Foxe adds the detail that foundation of the "prosecution" against Rogers was his denial of Transubstantiation; the Catholic doctrine which claims that Christ dies each and every time a Mass is said and the "eucharist" becomes His literal Body (in direct contradiction to John 6:22-40).[cclxv]

> *When the time came, that he should be brought out of Newgate to Smithfield, the place of his execution, Mr.* [David] *Woodroofe,*[[cclxvi]] *one of the sheriffs, first came to Mr. Rogers, and asked him, if he would revoke his abominable doctrine, and the evil opinion of the sacrament of the altar. Mr. Rogers answered that which I have preached I will seal with my blood.*
>
> *Then Mr. Woodroofe said, "Thou art an heretic. That shall be known, Mr. Rogers, at the day of judgment. ... I will never pray for thee."*
>
> *"But I will pray for you," said Mr. Rogers.*[315]

Ryle closed with —

> *“By God’s great mercy he died with comparative ease.” And so the first Marian martyr passed away.*[316]

John Hooper was another English Christian forced from Henry’s pre-schism persecutions into Protestant Europe. He spent time with Heinrich Bullinger (1504 – 1575), the Swiss Reformer and successor of Huldrych Zwingli as Pastor of the Grossmünster church in Zürich. He, too, returned home with the ascension of Edward. His zealous Bible sermons earned him Edward’s approval and he was appointed Bishop of Gloucester. Within two years, he was promoted to Bishop of Worcester.

Like John Rogers, John Hooper eschewed the Romish pomp and circumstance of religious office.

> *Hooper was a Somersetshire man by birth. In many respects he was, perhaps, the noblest martyr of them all.*
>
> *Of all Edward the Sixth’s bishops, none has left behind him a higher reputation for personal holiness, and diligent preaching and working in his diocese. None, judging from his literary remains, had clearer and more Scriptural views on all points in theology.*

Some might say that Edward the Sixth's Bishop of Gloucester was too Calvinistic; but he was not more so than the Thirty-nine Articles.[[cclxvii]]

Hooper was a far-sighted man, and saw the danger of leaving nest-eggs for Romanism in the Church of England. In his famous dispute with Cranmer and the other bishops about wearing Romish vestments at his consecration, it has been, I know, the fashion to condemn him as too stiff and unbending. I say boldly that the subsequent history of our Church makes it doubtful whether we ought not to reverse our verdict. The plain truth is, that in principle Hooper was right, and his opponents were wrong. ~ Ryle[317]

Unfortunately for Mary's Inquisition, little could be drummed up for the arrest and execution of John Hooper. Desperate, his enemies created the outlandish claim that he owed the Queen money.[318]

A man like Hooper, firm, stern, not naturally genial, unbending and unsparing in his denunciation of sin, was sure to have many enemies. He was one of the first marked for destruction as soon as Popery was restored.

He was summoned to London at a very early stage of the Marian persecution, and, after lingering eighteen months in prison, and going through the form of examination by Bonner, Gardiner, [Bishop Cuthbert] *Tunstall, and* [John] *Day* [of London], *was degraded from his office, and sentenced to be burned as a heretic.*

At first it was fully expected that he would suffer in Smithfield with Rogers. This plan, for some unknown reason, was given up, and to his great satisfaction Hooper was sent down to Gloucester, and burnt in his own diocese, and in sight of his own cathedral.

On his arrival there, he was received with every sign of sorrow and respect by a vast multitude, who went out on the Cirencester Road to meet him, and was lodged for the night in the house of a Mr. Ingram, which is still standing, and probably not much altered.

There Sir Anthony Kingston, whom the good Bishop had been the means of converting from a sinful life, entreated him, with many tears, to spare himself... ~ Ryle[319]

John Foxe adds this of Kingston:

> *Sir Anthony Kingston, at one time Doctor Hooper's good friend, was appointed by the queen's letters to attend at his execution. As soon as he saw the bishop he burst into tears. With tender entreaties he exhorted him to live. "True it is," said the bishop, "that death is bitter, and life is sweet: but alas! consider that the death to come is more bitter, and the life to come is more sweet."*
>
> *The same day a blind boy obtained leave to be brought into Dr. Hooper's presence. The same boy, not long before, had suffered imprisonment at Gloucester for confessing the truth. "Ah! poor boy," said the bishop, "though God hath taken from thee thy outward sight, for what reason he best knoweth, yet he hath endued thy soul with the eye of knowledge and of faith. God give thee grace continually to pray unto him, that thou lose not that sight, for then wouldst thou indeed be blind both in body and soul."*[320]

Ryle finishes:

> *On the morning of his martyrdom he was led forth, walking, to the place of execution, where an immense crowd awaited him. It was market-day; and it was reckoned that nearly 7000 people were present. The stake was planted directly in front of the western gate of the Cathedral-close, and within 100 yards of the deanery and the east front of the Cathedral.*
>
> *The exact spot is marked now by a beautiful memorial at the east end of the churchyard of St. Mary-de-Lode. The window over the gate, where Popish friars watched the Bishop's dying agonies, stands unaltered to this day.*
>
> *When Hooper arrived at this spot, he was allowed to pray, though strictly forbidden to speak to the people.*
>
> *And there he knelt down, and prayed a prayer which has been preserved and recorded by Fox, and is of exquisitely touching character. Even then a box was put before him containing a full pardon, if he would only recant. His only answer was, "Away with it; if you love my soul, away with it!"*

He was then fastened to the stake by an iron round his waist, and fought his last fight with the king of terrors.

Of all the martyrs, none perhaps, except Ridley, suffered more than Hooper did.[321]

Of his prayer and suffering, Foxe recounts —

Command was now given that the fire should be kindled. But because there were not more green fagots than two horses could carry, it kindled not speedily, and was a pretty while also before it took the reeds upon the fagots. At length it burned about him, but the wind having full strength at that place, and being a lowering cold morning, it blew the flame from him, so that he was in a manner little more than touched by the fire.

Within a space after, a few dry fagots were brought, and a new fire kindled with fagots, (for there were no more reeds) and those burned at the nether parts, but had small power above, because of the wind, saving that it burnt his hair, and scorched his skin a little. In the time of which fire, even as at the first flame, he prayed, saying mildly, and not very loud, but as one without pain, "O Jesus, Son of David, have mercy upon me, and receive my soul!"

After the second fire was spent, he wiped both his eyes with his hands, and beholding the people, he said with an indifferent loud voice, "For God's love, good people, let me have more fire!" and all this while his nether parts did burn; but the fagots were so few, that the flame only singed his upper parts.

The third fire was kindled within a while after, which was more extreme than the other two. In this fire he prayed with a loud voice, "Lord Jesus, have mercy upon me! Lord Jesus receive my spirit!" And these were the last words he was heard to utter. But when he was black in the mouth, and his tongue so swollen that he could not speak, yet his lips went till they were shrunk to the gums: and he knocked his breast with his hands until one of his arms fell off, and then knocked still with the other, while the fat, water, and blood dropped out at his fingers' ends, until by renewing the fire, his strength was gone, and his hand clave

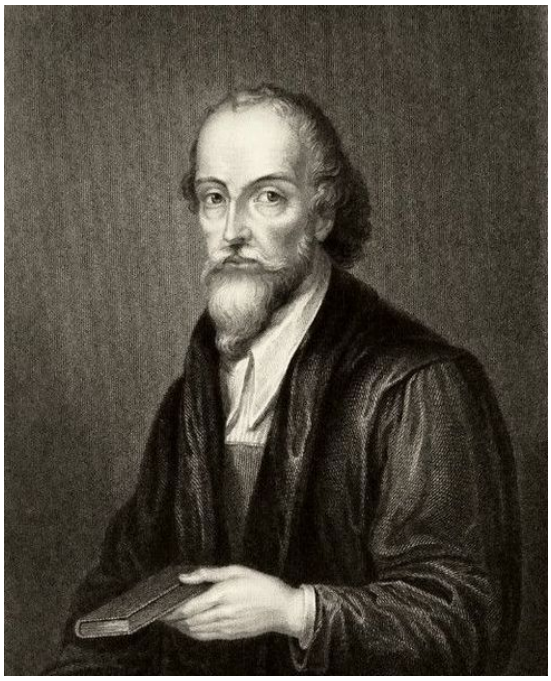
fast in knocking to the iron upon his breast. Then immediately bowing forwards, he yielded up his spirit.[322]

Next the Catholic Queen slaughtered two good men at once on the 15th of October 1555; Bishop of London, Nicholas Ridley and Bishop of Worcester, Hugh Latimer.

Of Ridley, Foxe says:

Dr. Ridley was born in Northumberland, was first taught grammar at Newcastle, and afterward removed to Cambridge, where his aptitude in education raised him gradually till he came to be the head of Pembroke college, where he received the title of Doctor of Divinity. Having returned from a trip to Paris, he was appointed Chaplain to Henry VIII. and Bishop of Rochester, and was afterwards translated to the see of London in the time of Edward VI.

His tenacious memory, extensive erudition, impressive oratory, and indefatigable zeal in preaching, drew after him not only his own flock, but persons from all quarters, desirous of godly exhortation or reproof. His tender treatment of [Roman Catholic Archbishop of York] *Dr.* [Nicholas] *Heath, who was a prisoner with him during one year, in Edward's reign, evidently proves that he had no Catholic cruelty in his disposition. In person he was erect and well proportioned; in temper forgiving; in self-mortification severe.*[323]



Kindness by Christians towards Catholics, even in the face of persecution, is evidence of the nature of the one Faith verses the other religion. The accounts of the reverse are as unheard of as true Protestants going on a similar bloodthirsty rampage of torture and slaughter.

Nicholas Ridley's compassion went even further.

Mary re-installed Cardinal Wolsey's chaplain, Edmund Bonner, as Bishop of London.

According to the English clergyman, historian and biographer John Strype (1643 – 1737) Bonner was the illegitimate son of George Savage, the Rector of St. Wilford's Church in Davenham, Cheshire.

Bonner had been Bishop shortly during the reign of Henry where Foxe states:

> *Edmund Bonner, bishop of London, who took so prominent a part in the persecution of the Protestants during queen Mary's reign, was born at Hanley, in Worcestershire, about the year 1500.*
>
> *He was educated at Oxford university, and having been admitted to the Priesthood, entered the household of cardinal Wolsey. While in his service he attracted the notice of king Henry VIII., who made him one of his chaplains, and afterward sent him on several foreign missions,*

one being to Rome to confer with the pope on the subject of Henry's divorce from Catherine.

After Bonner had returned to England he was sent to Rome a second time by the king, and is said to have pleaded Henry's cause so strongly — even threatening pope Clement VII. in his zeal for his master — that the pope talked of having Bonner burned alive, little thinking that the man he thus menaced with the flames would, one day, burn Englishmen by hundreds to uphold the power he was now helping Henry to overthrow.

Bonner was next honored by Henry with the offer of the bishopric of Hereford, but before taking that office he was made bishop of London. All through Henry's reign Bonner appeared to be very earnest in his opposition to the pope, and strongly favored the Reformation, in obedience to the king, whose stern command was his law.

Upon Henry's death Bonner was called upon to take the oath of supremacy for Edward, but strangely enough refused, and was sent to the Fleet prison, where he was obliged to remain until he promised obedience to his new sovereign. He was then released and joined the party of the Reformation, but showed so little real interest in the movement that he was brought to trial, deprived of his bishopric, and again sent to prison, this time in the Marshalsea, where he remained until Mary became queen.

Mary evidently saw in Bonner the man for her purpose; she restored him to his bishopric, and made him vice-regent and president of the convocation. From this time Bonner threw himself into the work of persecuting the Protestants with all the energy of his nature.

It is said that fully two hundred of the martyrs of this bloody time were tried and sentenced by him. Accounts of many of the examinations of persons accused of heresy have already been told, and well show the harsh and persistent nature of the man. In these trials he seems to have shown no pity or compassion for the persons brought before him. Nothing short of the complete surrender of their religious belief was exacted by him, and in default of this the unfortunate prisoner was

> *sentenced to the flames — apparently without the least compunction on the part of his hard-hearted judge.*
>
> *So far did Bonner's rage against "heresy" carry him that he is said, upon more than one occasion, to have called for rods and with his own hands beaten a stubborn witness who persisted in holding to his own views and opposing those of the persecuting bishop.*[324]

It was this same Bloody Bonner that Nicholas Ridley showed special compassion to on behalf of his family.

> [Ridley's] *attentive kindness was displayed particularly to old Mrs. Bonner, mother of Dr. Bonner, the cruel bishop of London. Dr. Ridley, when at his manor at Fulham, always invited her to his house, placed her at the head of his table, and treated her like his own mother; he did the same by Bonner's sister and other relatives; but when Dr. Ridley was under persecution, Bonner pursued a conduct diametrically opposite, and would have sacrificed Dr. Ridley's sister and her husband, Mr. George Shipside, had not Providence delivered him by the means of Dr. Heath, bishop of Worcester.*[325]

Edmund Bonner's conduct in juxtaposition to Nicholas Ridley's compassion is, sadly, typical throughout history.

Although the Philadelphia-published 1895 edition of *Foxe's Book of Martyrs* attempts to show how Bloody Bonner received justice at the hands of "Protestant" Queen Elizabeth, it only shows how Elizabeth was *Queen* first and anything else a distant second.

> *But as is often the case with the violent and cruel man, retribution overtook Bonner in the midst of his career. When Elizabeth came to the throne she singled him out to mark with her disapproval.*
>
> *When he appeared before her, with the other bishops, to signify his loyalty to his new sovereign, she drew away her hand in apparent loathing when Bonner would have kissed it, according to the manner of the time. In the second year of the queen's reign she sent Bonner to the prison of the Marshalsea, for refusing to acknowledge Elizabeth as the supreme head of the church in England. From this imprisonment he never was released; for ten years the once all-powerful and stony-*

hearted persecutor remained in confinement, and there he died, in misery and wretchedness, in the seventieth year of his age.[326]

Remember, this was nothing less than a vehement Roman Catholic Inquisitor who reveled in making men, women and children suffer simply because they were brave enough to say they were Christians and not Catholics but it wasn't until he refused to acknowledge Elizabeth as his clerical superior that he was "punished" with imprisonment (and not any of the terrors he had inflicted upon so many innocent souls).

Henry, Mary and Elizabeth all saw in Bloody Bonner a vicious hatchet-man to execute their "vision"[cclxviii] and anything else he was, they were happy to put up with.

More detail from John Foxe:

Dr. Ridley was first in part converted by reading Bertram's book on the sacrament,[[cclxix]] *and by his conferences with archbishop Cranmer and Peter Martyr. When Edward VI. was removed from the throne, and the bloody Mary succeeded, bishop Ridley was immediately marked as an object of slaughter. He was first sent to the Tower, and afterward, at Oxford, was consigned to the common prison of Bocardo, with archbishop Cranmer and Mr. Latimer.*

Being separated from them, he was placed in the house of one Irish, where he remained till the day of his martyrdom, from 1554, till October 16, 1555. It will easily be supposed that the conversations of these chiefs of the martyrs were elaborate, learned, and instructive. Such indeed they were, and equally beneficial to all their spiritual comforts.

Bishop Ridley's letters to various Christian brethren in bonds in all parts, and his disputations with the mitred enemies of Christ, alike prove the clearness of his head and the integrity of his heart. In a letter to Mr. Grindal, (afterward archbishop of Canterbury,) he mentions with affection those who had preceded him in dying for the faith, and those who were expected to suffer; he regrets that popery is re-established in its full abomination, which he attributes to the wrath of God, made manifest in return for the lukewarmness of the clergy and

the people in justly appreciating the blessed light of the reformation. [327]

John Foxe notes of Hugh Latimer:

Bishop Latimer was the son of Hugh Latimer, of Turkelson, in Leicestershire, a husbandman of repute, with whom he remained till he was four years old.

His parents, finding him of acute parts, gave him a good education, and then sent him at fourteen to the university of Cambridge, where he entered into the study of the school divinity of that day, and was from principle a zealous observer of the Romish superstitions of the time.

In his oration when he commenced bachelor of divinity, he inveighed against the reformer [Philip] *Melancthon* [Martin Luther's quiet confidant], *and openly declaimed against good Mr. Stafford, divinity lecturer in Cambridge.*

Mr. Thomas Bilney, moved by a brotherly pity towards Mr. Latimer, begged to wait upon him in his study, and to explain to him the groundwork of his (Mr. Bilney's) faith.

This blessed interview effected his conversion: the persecutor of Christ became his zealous advocate, and before Dr. Stafford died he became reconciled to him.

Once converted, he became eager for the conversion of others, and commenced public preacher, and private instructer in the university.

His sermons were so pointed against the absurdity of praying in the Latin tongue, and withholding the oracles of salvation from the people who were to be saved by belief in them, that he drew upon himself the pulpit animadversions of several of the resident friars and heads of houses, whom he subsequently silenced by his severe criticisms and eloquent arguments.

This was at Christmas, 1529.

At length Dr. West preached against Mr. Latimer at Barwell Abbey, and prohibited him from preaching again in the churches of the university, notwithstanding which, he continued during three years to advocate

openly the cause of Christ, and even his enemies confessed the power of those talents he possessed.[[cclxx]]

Mr. Bilney remained here some time with Mr. Latimer, and thus the place where they frequently walked together obtained the name of Heretics' Hill.

Mr. Latimer at this time traced out the innocence of a poor woman, accused by her husband of the murder of her child. Having preached before king Henry VIII. at Windsor, he obtained the unfortunate mother's pardon.

This, with many other benevolent acts, served only to excite the spleen of his adversaries.

He was summoned before Cardinal Wolsey for heresy, but being a strenuous supporter of the king's supremacy, in opposition to the pope's, by favour of lord [Thomas] *Cromwell and Dr.* [William] *Buts, (the king's physician,) he obtained the living of West Kingston, in Wiltshire.*

For his sermons here against purgatory, the immaculacy of the Virgin, and the worship of images, he was cited to appear before [William] *Warham, archbishop of Canterbury, and John, bishop of London.*[[cclxxi]]

He was required to subscribe certain articles, expressive of his conformity to the accustomed usages; and there is reason to think, after repeated weekly examinations, that he did subscribe, as they did not seem to involve any important article of belief.

Guided by Providence, he escaped the subtle nets of his persecutors, and at length, through the powerful friends before mentioned, became bishop of Worcester, in which function he qualified or explained away most of the papal ceremonies he was for form's sake under the necessity of complying with.

He continued in this active and dignified employment some years, till the coming in of the Six Articles, when, to preserve an unsullied conscience, he, as well as Dr. [Nicholas] *Shaxton, bishop of Salisbury, resigned.*[328]

Henry's "Six Articles" of 1539 were his tyrannical move to reinforce Catholic theology everywhere in England. It should've won him tremendous support in Paris, Madrid and Rome. It was written in best Inquisitional fashion, defining "heresy" as anything other than what the Catholic king said it was and proscribing severe punishment for all "heretics".

Despite Henry's "break" from Rome, he kept it as the law of the land!

It had an extremely appropriate title.

> *Formally titled "An Act Abolishing Diversity in Opinions", the Act of Six Articles reinforced existing heresy laws and reasserted traditional Catholic doctrine as the basis of faith for the English Church.*
>
> *The Act was passed by Parliament in June of 1539.*
>
> *It remained Henry's policy toward reforms until his death.*
>
> *The act also represented a political defeat for* [Thomas] *Cromwell, Archbishop* [Thomas] *Cranmer, and the other reformist leaders at Court.*
>
> *The Six Articles was referred to as "the bloody whip with six strings" by many protestants.*
>
> *Passage of the Act prompted Hugh Latimer, Bishop of Worcester, and Nicholas Shaxton, Bishop of Salisbury, to resign their sees, and forced Cranmer to send his wife back to Germany.* ~ Castelli[329]

Foxe continues:

> *He remained a prisoner in the Tower till the coronation of Edward VI. when he was again called to the Lord's harvest in Stamford, and many other places: he also preached at London in the convocation house, and before the young king; indeed he lectured twice every Sunday, regardless of his great age (then above sixty-seven years,) and his weakness through a bruise received from the fall of a tree.*
>
> *Indefatigable in his private studies, he rose to them in winter and in summer at two o'clock in the morning.*

By the strength of his own mind, or of some inward light from above, he had a prophetic view of what was to happen to the church in Mary's reign, asserting that he was doomed to suffer for the truth, and that Winchester, then in the Tower, was preserved for that purpose.

Soon after queen Mary was proclaimed, a messenger was sent to summon Mr. Latimer to town, and there is reason to believe it was wished that he should make his escape. On entering Smithfield, he jocosely said, that the place had long groaned for him.

After being examined by the council, he was committed to the Tower, where his cheerfulness is displayed in the following anecdote. Being kept without fire in severe frosty weather, his aged frame suffered so much, that he told the lieutenant's man, that if he did not look better after him he should deceive his master. The lieutenant, thinking he meant to effect his escape, came to him, to know what he meant by this speech; which Mr. Latimer replied to, by saying, "You, Mr. Lieutenant, doubtless suppose I shall ***burn****; but, except you let me have some fire, I shall deceive your expectation, for here it is likely I shall be* ***starved with cold****."*

Mr. Latimer, after remaining a long time in the Tower, was transported to Oxford, with Cranmer and Ridley ... He remained imprisoned till October, and the principal objects of all his prayers were three — that he might stand faithful to the doctrine he had professed, that God would restore his gospel to England once again, and preserve the Lady Elizabeth to be queen; all which happened.

Hugh Latimer and Nicholas Ridley on Their Way to the Pyre, by Hermann Schweder. Wikimedia Commons *When he stood at the stake without the Bocardo-gate, Oxford, with Dr. Ridley, and fire was putting to the pile of fagots, he raised his eyes benignantly towards heaven, and said, "God is faithful, who doth not suffer us to be tempted above our strength."*

> *His body was forcibly penetrated by the fire, and the blood flowed abundantly from the heart; as if to verify his constant desire that his heart's blood might be shed in defence of the gospel.*
>
> *His polemical and friendly letters are lasting monuments of his integrity and talents.*[330]

The vacillating allegiances of the English Crown caused havoc and chaos for England's Christians. Henry's reign, alone, saw waffling for and against the freedom of Martin Luther's teachings.

When Henry courted devout Protestant Christian Anne Boleyn, she wisely exploited her influence to encourage Henry to promote a little-known open-

minded Humanist[cclxxii] to the highest clerical office, Thomas Cranmer.

Of course, this could only be done with the permission of the Pope, but at the threat of losing England entirely, Pope Clement VII (Giulio , de´Medici) was happy to oblige.

When Jane Seymour gave Henry his only son, Cranmer was very pleased to mentor Prince Edward.

However, Edward's rule was cut short by assassination and he was replaced with the iron glove of Bloody Mary which entrapped Cranmer and many English Christians in a bloody, Inquisitional vice.

> *Edward's convictions on Scripture and Protestantism were so strong he would've made Elizabeth look like her sister, Bloody Mary. Edward was tutored by Reformers like the Archbishop of Canterbury, Thomas Cranmer and the fiery Scott evangelist John Knox.*
>
> *Within his lifetime, the tables would turn on Cranmer. He was forced to watch the executions of Hugh Latimer and Nicholas Ridley for having defied Rome. Ridley's end was particularly gruesome as misplaced kindling and contrary wind burned his legs but didn't touch his torso.*

As a result, Cranmer recanted his Protestant Christian Faith. But time would give Cranmer back his courage... ~ Secret History, Cirucci[331]

As John Foxe recounted, despite the former Archbishop's recantation, Bloody Mary intended to have him killed anyway!

As if to try what effect gentle methods would have, they removed him from his prison to the lodgings of the dean of Christchurch, where they used every persuasive argument to make him turn from his faith.

Angered at his refusal, they removed him from the dean's lodgings to the most dismal part of the prison in which he had been confined before, and there treated him with great harshness.

The spirit of the old man was not proof against these hardships, and he soon agreed to sign an abject form of recantation, of which the following is a part "I, Thomas Cranmer, late archbishop of Canterbury, do renounce, abhor, and detest, all manner of heresies and errors of Luther and Zuinglius, and all other teachings which are contrary to sound and true doctrine. And I believe most constantly in my heart, and with my mouth I confess one holy and catholic church visible, without which there is no salvation; and thereof I acknowledge the bishop of Rome to be supreme head on earth, whom I acknowledge to be the highest bishop and pope, and Christ's vicar, unto whom all Christian people should be subject."

"And I submit myself to the church and to the supreme head thereof, and to their most excellent majesties Philip and Mary, king and queen of this realm of England, and to all other their laws and ordinances; being ready always as a faithful subject ever to obey them."

"And God is my witness, that I have not done this for favor or fear of any person, but willingly and of mine own conscience, and to the instruction of others."

This recantation of the archbishop was immediately printed, and scattered throughout the country. ...

As further demands were made, from time to time, upon the fallen archbishop, other equally humble confessions of error, and appeals for

pardon, were made and signed by him. No form seemed too abject for him. But all this time Cranmer had no positive assurance that his life would be spared, although it is probable that hope was held out to him.

After they had gained their purpose, little heed was paid to the ultimate fate of the prisoner. So it came to pass that the queen, who had never wavered in her determination to revenge herself upon him for the active part he had taken in divorcing her mother, received his several recantations very graciously, but did not make any change in her plans for his burning.

Accordingly, after Mary had held a secret council with her ministers, the day was appointed for Cranmer's execution — the 21st of March, 1556.

It was determined, however, that he should first be compelled to publicly read his recantation to the people. So the Spanish friar John de Villa Garcina, one of the witnesses to the paper, was sent to the prisoner to require him to make a copy of it and keep it by him.[[cclxxiii]]

Cranmer made the copy, but suspecting the use he would be expected to make of it, and seeing that the time had passed when further denials of his real faith would save him from the fire, he wrote out another paper, withdrawing his recantation, and declaring his entire devotion to the reformed faith. This he hid in his bosom, intending to use it at the proper time.

When the day came, Lord Williams, Sir Thomas Bridges, Sir John Brown, and other justices, and noblemen of the queen's council, went to Oxford with a train of followers.

A great crowd of people from the surrounding country had also assembled there. Some expected to hear Cranmer confess himself a humble convert to Rome, while others, among whom were many of his former friends, hoped that the archbishop, who had spent a long life in study, and in preaching the gospel of Christ, would not now desert them, as the last act of his career. ...

When they had come into [St. Mary's] *church, Cranmer was told to mount upon a platform which had been built near the pulpit* [specially

cut out of the pillar to keep the Archbishop humiliatingly below the pulpit]. ...

Standing there in his ragged gown the poor prisoner turned his face toward a stone pillar, and lifting up his hands to heaven, prayed earnestly to God. The Priest who had been appointed to preach the sermon upon this occasion was a certain Dr. Cole, who now went up into the pulpit and commenced his discourse. He soon began to reproach Cranmer, with many bitter words, as "one who had fallen into pernicious error, and who had not only defended the same by his writings, and all his powers, but also allured other men to do the like."

The sermon continued at some length. At its close the speaker urged the prisoner, Cranmer, to go to his death in a humble and contrite spirit; and gave thanks to God that, although his repentance had been slow, it had been sincere, and that he had at last shown, by signing the recantation, that he had turned from his abominable errors and become a penitent convert to the true faith.

All this time Cranmer stood upon the platform, now lifting up his hands and eyes to heaven, and then again, as if ashamed, letting them down toward the earth. Several times the tears were seen to fall from his eyes and his whole expression betokened shame and grief.

After Cole had finished speaking, the people began to go out, but he stopped them, by calling out: "Brethren, lest any man should doubt the prisoner's conversion and repentance, you shall hear him speak for himself. Now I pray you, Master Cranmer, do that which you promised, and publicly acknowledge the true profession of your faith, that you may take away all suspicion, and that every person here present may know you are a Catholic indeed."

"I will do it," said the archbishop, "and that with a right good will."

Then putting off his cap, he spoke, in part, as follows: "Good people, my dearly beloved brethren and sisters in Christ, I beseech you most heartily to pray for me to Almighty God, that he will forgive all my sins and offences, which be many without number, and great above measure."

“But yet one thing grieveth my conscience more than all the rest, whereof, God willing, I intend to speak more hereafter. But how great and how many soever my sins be, I beseech you to pray to God of his mercy to pardon and forgive them all.”

And here kneeling down, Cranmer prayed for a while, and then rising said: “And now as I am come to the last end of my life on earth, and am near to beginning the life to come, either to live with my master Christ forever in joy, or else to be in pain forever in hell, I shall therefore declare unto you my true faith without any deception; for this is not the time to deceive, no matter what I may have said or written in times past.”

“First, I believe in God the Father Almighty, maker of heaven and earth. And I believe every article of the Christian faith, every word and sentence taught by our Saviour Christ; his apostles; and the prophets, in the New and Old Testament.”

“And now I come to the great thing which so much troubleth my conscience, more than any thing that ever I did or said in my whole life, and that is the scattering abroad of a writing contrary to the truth which I now here renounce and refuse, as things written with my hand contrary to the truth which I thought in my heart, and written for fear of death, and to save my life. And I renounce as false and untrue all such papers signed with my hand since my degradation, wherein I have written many things untrue. And forasmuch as my hand hath offended, writing contrary to my heart, therefore this my hand shall first be punished; for when I come to the fire, it shall first be burned.”

“And as for the pope, I refuse him, as Christ’s enemy and antichrist, with all his false doctrine. And as for the sacrament, I believe as I have taught in my book against the bishop of Winchester, which book teacheth so true a doctrine of the sacrament, that I believe it shall stand even to the last day.”

On hearing this bold declaration of faith, the greater part of the people were amazed and looked upon one another in astonishment.

But if the common people were surprised, the Priests and doctors whose plans had so notably failed, were doubly so — and infuriated as well. For they had confidently expected to triumph over the reformers by being able to point forever after to the public recantation of their leader. But instead of a humble plea for forgiveness, he had boldly withdrawn all his former denials and avowed himself unshaken in his faith.

Then Cranmer's foes began to storm and rage against him; some plucked him by the gown before he could finish his address, and called him "Traitor!" reminding him of his former recantation.

But this was useless, as they very well knew. No threats could harm a man already condemned to be burned — he could die but once. ...

Then was Cranmer pulled down from the platform, and led to the fire, accompanied by two Spanish friars. ...[[cclxxiv]]

In a little while he came to the stake: it was the place where the martyrs, Latimer and Ridley, had been burned, and there kneeling down he prayed to God. But not tarrying long at his prayers, he arose, and taking off his garments to his shirt, he prepared himself for death. His shirt was made long, down to his feet, which were bare. His face, haggard from long imprisonment, was covered by a beard, and his reverend countenance moved the hearts of both his friends and enemies. ...

Soon an iron chain was brought, and put around Cranmer, fastening him to the stake. Then when the fagots had been piled up the sheriff ordered fire to be brought. And when the wood was kindled, and the fire began to burn near him, he was seen by all who stood there, to stretch forth his right hand, with which he had signed his recantations, and to hold it in the flames. There he held it so unflinchingly that all the people saw it burned, before his body was touched by the fire. So patient and steadfast was he in the midst of this extreme torment, that he uttered no cry, and seemed to move no more than the stake to which he was bound. His eyes were lifted up to heaven, and often he repeated, "This was the hand that wrote it," — "this unworthy right hand," so long as his voice would suffer him; and as often using the

words of the martyred St. Stephen, "Lord Jesus, receive my spirit!" till the fury of the flames putting him to silence, he gave up the ghost.

Thus died Thomas Cranmer, in the sixty-seventh year of his age.

That he was a man of unusual abilities is shown by the high station he attained. The changes in the forms of worship in the reign of Edward VI. were chiefly due to him. It was his voice that men heard, and still hear, in the words of the English liturgy, which he compiled at Oxford. At the last the moral weakness which he had shown in signing his recantations was atoned for by one of the most strikingly heroic acts recorded of the martyrs.

An eminent historian has, therefore, truly said, "Cranmer's very weakness proved a means of moving thousands who had been less affected by the sufferings of more heroic spirits. It is a fellow feeling that draws men's sympathies, and for one man who felt within him the joy of Rowland Taylor at the prospect of the stake, there were thousands who felt the shuddering dread of Cranmer."

CRANMER'S DEATH:—"THIS UNWORTHY RIGHT HAND"

***Foxe's Book of Martyrs*, Charles Foster Publishing Co., Philadelphia (1895)** *"The triumphant cry of Latimer could reach hearts only as bold as his own; but the sad scene of Cranmer's humiliation and repentence brought pity to the hearts of all."*[332]

Of Rowland Taylor, yet another victim of Queen Bloody Mary's Inquisition, Dr. Stephen Nichols, the President of Reformation Bible College in Sanford, Florida states—

> *J.C. Ryle writes* [in Ryle's book, *Five English Reformers*], *"Rowland Taylor, Rector of Hadleigh in Suffolk, one of the famous Protestant martyrs in Queen Mary's days, is a man about whom the church possesses singularly little information." ... It turns out that Hadleigh was a small rural town about fifty miles outside of London. There, Taylor labored and lived mostly in obscurity. Taylor never wrote any books and he did not publish a single sermon during his lifetime, so we have no literary legacy left behind. But, the legacy of his martyrdom has been left behind for us.*
>
> *Rowland Taylor is chronicled in* ***Foxe's Book of Martyrs****. In fact, Ryle points out that it is extremely probable that Foxe visited Taylor's parish and that Foxe would've even interviewed Taylor's parishioners. Not only was Hadleigh a small rural town, the town of Taylor's birth was also a very small rural town. He was born at Rothbury in Northumberland. In the year 2000, the census had a population of about 1,700 there at Rothbury. Back in Taylor's day there would've been far far fewer. He went on to become a student at Cambridge.*
>
> *...while at Cambridge, Taylor came under the influence of the sermons of Bishop* [Hugh] *Latimer. Bishop Latimer himself would go on to be martyred. Also, in addition to those sermons, Rowland Taylor had some sort of position under Thomas Cranmer. He even lived in Thomas Cranmer's house. These were the days of Henry VIII and on into the reign of Edward VI. In fact, when Cranmer left Cambridge and became Archbishop Cranmer, Cranmer appointed Taylor to the post of bishop at Hadleigh. Hadleigh was a Reformation town. Foxe tells us how the Reformation came there through the preaching of Thomas Bilney. Foxe tells us that you could find most people in that town who had not only read through the Bible many times, but you could find people in that town who had memorized large portions of Paul's epistles. Into this town came Rowland Taylor as a preacher.*

> *...After Edward VI died, Queen Mary came to the throne and threw the Reformation in England into reverse. Taylor was summoned to London. He was summarily put in prison and he left behind in the town of Hadleigh not only his parish, but his wife and nine children. He was imprisoned for two years.*
>
> *In February of 1555, he was led back to Hadleigh by a sheriff's guard. He was burned at the stake on February 9, 1555. He was only permitted a few last words, and among them were these, "Good people, I have taught you nothing but God's Holy Word and those lessons that I have taken out of God's blessed book, the Holy Bible. Come hither this day to seal it with my blood."*
>
> *Taylor was also granted to write one last letter. He sent it to his wife, and he said, "I say to my wife and to my dear children, the Lord gave you unto me, and the Lord hath taken me from you and you from me. Blessed be the name of the Lord. I believe that they are blessed which die in the Lord. God careth for the sparrows and for the hairs of our heads. I've ever found Him more faithful and favorable than is any father or husband. Trust ye therefore in Him by the means of our dear Savior Christ's merits. Believe, love, fear, and obey Him." That's Rowland Taylor, martyr.*[333]

After the England's "heretic" Christian leadership was slaughtered, Mary then began systematically eradicating common citizens with the same heartless brutality.

Mary's Inquisitors reached to the very islands of the English Channel to root out every enemy of Rome. Even a pregnant woman was put to the stake. As she burned alive, she gave birth. Her infant was thrown into the fire next to her.[334]

During Edward's reign, Catholic churches were cleansed of idols and idolatry.

During Mary's reign, England was "cleansed" of Christians.[335]

It was her vendetta against Thomas Cranmer that put Mary Tudor over the edge. Her staunchest defenders were aghast that, until the "showdown" at St. Mary's Church, Cranmer had done all asked of him. He had been

thoroughly humiliated for two years of imprisonment and parading around London, and she still had him burned at the stake.

Her marriage with Felipe II was a failure. He called her *amada tía*; his "beloved aunt".

When it became clear to him that she was barren and could not bear him a child, he left her and returned to Spain.

Mary's fanaticism had shocked even English Catholics; popular Protestant evangelists, men, women, young, old, poor, blind, infirm — none were given the slightest bit of compassion.

On 17 November 1558, Bloody Mary Tudor died, weak, ill and in tremendous pain possibly from ovarian cysts or uterine cancer. The surviving Christians of England were spared, her reign of terror was ceased after five years and she died at 42.

Her heartless Inquisition had created such sympathy and awe over the many Christians who willingly walked to horrible death for their Faith that the response from the citizenry forced her succeeding half-sister Elizabeth to call herself openly, "Protestant".

The groundswell of support lasted through James I. He, too, felt it politically expedient to align himself with the "heretics".

But James' son Charles would ruin England with Catholic policies to the point of civil war and his own execution.

Chapter 6

Bloody Catherine: A Medici in France

Catherine de Medici, born in 1519 in Florence, was a ruthless ambitious woman who obsessively relied on her Italian astrologers, Nostradamus, clairvoyants, and magicians throughout her life.

She rarely made any decision unless she consulted at least with her astrologers. She was very dependent on clairvoyants as well to obtain information not readily visible.

She used magicians to pursue her darker and more sinister projects of destruction and cruel revenge.

She left a paper trail of many letters to these various individuals requesting information, favors or works of black magic. ~ Chapman[336]

---

*Moral indifference, as we saw, had possession of Catherine's nature; but one desire was hers, by no means a moral one, which governed her quite as potently as her apathy and perhaps with more obvious effect. "All her actions," wrote a Venetian ambassador, describing her to his government, "have ever been ruled and guided by a most powerful desire — the desire to reign": "**un affetto potentissimo ... un affetto di signoreggiare.*** [Italian: "a very powerful affection ... an affection to rule."]" ~ Sichel[337]

Catherine de´Medici was the Italian woman who became Queen Consort of France during one of the most important periods in human (and French) history. She was responsible for one of, if not the, most infamous betrayals and bloodletting of Protestants which essentially became genocide[cclxxv] and she is reputed to have used "black magic" to overcome sterility and assassinate her political obstacles (including those same children she is said to have had via incantation). Yet it is a testimony to Catholic / Medici

power in the 21st century in that what little information exists about her is inexplicably complimentary.

A compilation of her voluminous letters regarding witchcraft and astrology remains untranslated from the original French.[cclxxvi]

When searching for texts, invariably *About Catherine de´Medici* (1898) by highly-touted French poet Honoré de Balzac is recommended, almost certainly because de Balzac had a Jesuitical flair for mixing truth with falsehood.

Acknowledging that "historians" and "journalists" are corrupt, de Balzac blames only their desire to please their readers (not their superiors, commissioners and benefactors) and that error is introduced by "blunder" and not by design to distract. The greatest historians de Balzac ever knew were Catholic Priests.

> *When men of learning are struck by a historical blunder, and try to correct it, "Paradox!" is generally the cry; but to those who thoroughly examine the history of modern times, it is evident that historians are privileged liars, who lend their pen to popular beliefs, exactly as most of the newspapers of the day express nothing but the opinions of their readers.*
>
> *Historical independence of thought has been far less conspicuous among lay writers than among the Priesthood.*
>
> *The purest light thrown on history has come from the Benedictines, one of the glories of France...*[338]

According to de Balsac, the "mystery" of "error" insinuates itself into the historical narrative because of evil envy the masses have for poor, misunderstood tyrants who eat off their backs (often literally).

> *How is error propagated and accredited? The mystery is accomplished under our eyes without our discerning the process.*
>
> *No one suspects how greatly printing has helped to give body both to the envy which attends persons in high places, and to the popular irony which sums up the converse view of every great historical fact.*[339]

When a woman appears to collaborate with Satan in order to bear the children that will lead to her control of a foreign country, and just as easily collaborate again to kill any of those children that stand between her and total control of that country, even her greatest admirers will eventually concede a minor character flaw or two.

Fascinatingly, Luciferian mystic Helena Petrovna Blavatsky said that the demon/human “Gibborim” (“Nephilim”) hybrids of Genesis 6 were nothing compared to her.

> *... Torquemada and ... Catherine de Medicis certainly did more harm in their day and in the name of their Master* [the Pope] *than any Atlantean giant or demigod of antiquity ever did; whether his name was Cyclops, or Medusa, or yet the Orphic Titan, the anguipedal monster known as Ephialtes.*[340]

But not de Balsac. Medici was wronged and “misunderstood”. The Italian woman “saved” France when French *men* had failed to do so!

> *In France, and at the most important period of our history, Catherine de´Medici has suffered more from popular error than any other woman...*
>
> *Catherine de´Medici, on the contrary, saved the throne of France, she maintained the Royal authority under circumstances to which more than one great prince would have succumbed.*[341]

The Spinning Balls of the Medici[cclxxvii]

Video “documentaries” are little better.

In 2004, a mini-series was released on television titled “Medici: Godfathers of the Renaissance”. The Internet Movie Database summary blares —

> *From a small Italian community in 15th-century Florence, the Medici family would rise to rule Europe in many ways. Using charm, patronage, skill, duplicity and ruthlessness, they would amass unparalleled wealth and unprecedented power. They would also ignite the most important cultural and artistic revolution in Western history — the European Renaissance. But the forces of change the Medici helped unleash would one day topple their ordered world.*

The “conflict” was how the Medici supposedly rivaled Rome, ushered in the wonders of the “Renaissance” and “toppled” the “world order” by supporting the “science” of Galileo Galilee and Nicholas Copernicus.

One finds the idea rather ludicrous that the banking cabal which bought their way into every level of Catholic clergy to include countless Cardinals, Bishops and Priests as well as four Popes, had ever “rebelled” against the Vatican.

The unprecedented agenda of fabricating a false reality consisting of millions of years, Darwin, dinosaurs and spinning globes was Roman from the start. It was a desperate tactic forced upon them by Luther’s Protest which had become unstoppable due the moveable-type printing press. Previously, attempts to translate the Bible into any “vulgar tongue” were easily kept in check when Christians and the hand-copied Bibles they made “illegally” were all burned.

But a few decades before 1517 and a few kilometers southwest of Wittenberg, Johannes Gensfleisch zur Laden zum Gutenberg checked those fires with a printing press that published Bibles faster than the Inquisition could burn either them or any Christian who copied or read one.

The agenda to bring mankind back under control of the Pope for the sakes of their very souls required a strategy that was truly diabolical; to alter human perception of reality in a war of “learning against learning”[342] that would discredit the Christian Scriptures.

The “father of modern cosmology”, Niclaus Copernicus, was more than just a Catholic Priest, he was a Vatican mathematician.[343]

Prior to *De Revolutionibus Orbium Coelestium* (“On the Revolutions of the Heavenly Spheres”), Father Copernicus had published only a simple Latin translation of the letters of Byzantine author Theophylactus Simocatta.[344]

In fact, he didn’t want *De Revolutionibus* released until after his death.[345] The mathematician knew his calculations included error relying upon optical illusion as all of his observations were assumptions of his naked eye. The “astronomer” used neither sextant nor telescope to validate his theory.[346]

Copernicus' reticence is almost always erroneously attributed to fear of Vatican reprisal but, in fact, it was Vatican officials that pressured the Priest into immediate publication, including prelates such as Tiedemann Giese (1480 – 1550), Bishop of Kulm.

It was actually a Medici Pope (Giulio di Giuliano de´Medici), "Clement VII", who sent secret word through his secretary, Johann Widmansted, for Copernicus to publish the first paper on such an "earth-shattering" topic. The request was reinforced by Cardinal Nikolaus von Schönberg, the Papal Nuncio to Copernicus' native Poland.[347]

The date was 1543, just as Luther's Protest was becoming a prairie fire across Europe.

De Revolutionibus was immediately received with great fanfare by Copernicus' Vatican superiors.[348]

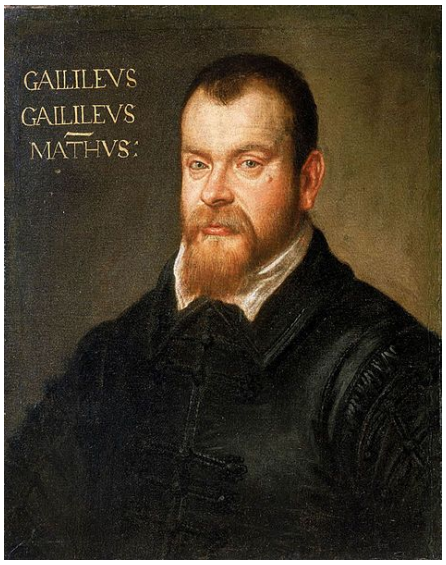
A handful of non-Catholic astronomers resisted but they were given a compromise: "geocentrism". All of the Copernican errors of "space", "gravity" and "spinning globes" were still acknowledged but the Earth was the center of the "universe" / "solar system" instead of the sun.

With the assassination of the last respected "geocentrist", Tycho Brahe,[349] and his replacement by a clandestine agent of the Jesuits, Johannes Kepler, [350] all data and understanding of "space" was now completely filtered by Rome.

The Jesuits replaced the Dominicans in their zeal to commit any crime necessary for Vatican supremacy.[351]

In Pisa, a suburb of Medici-controlled Florence, a young man named Galileo Galilei sought the Priesthood but instead was convinced by his father to become a doctor. He was studying at the University of Pisa when the Company summoned him.[352] He would go on to teach Copernicus' theories at the inaugural Jesuit University, founded by Loyola

himself, in Rome; the *Collegio Romano*.[353]



Galileo Galilei, by Domenico Tintoretto
Wikimedia Commons

It wasn't until Protestants began to protest this new learning that Rome suddenly became (apparently) antagonistic to it. As the New Advent Catholic Encyclopedia states with seeming incredulity — *Opposition was first raised against the Copernican system by Protestant theologians for Biblical reasons and strange to say it has continued, at least sporadically, to our own days.*[354]

In response to Copernican cosmology, Luther is reported to have said —

> *"There is talk of a new astrologer who wants to prove that the Earth moves and goes around instead of the sky, the sun, the moon, just as if somebody were moving in a carriage or ship might hold that he was sitting still and at rest while the Earth and the trees walked and moved. But that is how things are nowadays: when a man wishes to be clever he must needs invent something special, and the way he does it must needs be the best! The fool wants to turn the whole art of astronomy upside-down. However, as Holy Scripture tells us, so did Joshua bid the sun to stand still and not the Earth."*[355]

Calvin seemed equally suspicious of Copernican cosmology and accurately ascribed malicious intent to it instead of a sincere search for "scientific truth".

To Calvin, the observable ("zetetic") environment was so obvious that claims to the contrary were nothing less than "gaslighting"; a bold lie claiming complete inversion of reality; so absurd it's often successful.

> [The Christian is not to compromise so as to obscure the distinction between good and evil, and is to avoid the errors of] *those dreamers who have a spirit of bitterness and contradiction, who reprove everything and prevent the order of nature.*

> *We will see some who are so deranged, not only in religion but who in all things reveal their monstrous nature that they will say that the sun does not move, and that it is the Earth which shifts and turns.*
>
> *When we see such minds we must indeed confess that the devil possess them, and that God sets them before us as mirrors, in order to keep us in his fear.*
>
> *So it is with all who argue out of pure malice, and who happily make a show of their imprudence. When they are told: "That is hot," they will reply: "No, it is plainly cold."*
>
> *When they are shown an object that is black, they will say that it is white, or vice versa. Just like the man who said that snow is black; for although it is perceived and known by all to be white, yet he clearly wished to contradict the fact. And so it is that they are madmen who would try to change the natural order, and even to dazzle eyes and benumb their senses.*[356]

It was only then that the same Jesuits for whom Galilei was teaching, appeared to attack him.

No less a Jesuit than Roberto Francesco Romolo Bellarmino (a.k.a. "Robert Bellarmine"), the father of "Futurism",[cclxxviii] became Galilei's "Inquisitor".

After being "put on trial", the Collegio Romano's top astronomer was placed on "house arrest"...a somewhat tame sentence compared to, say, the treatment of Fra. Girolamo Savonarola.

Despite his "examination" and "punishment" by Bellarmine, Galilei remained an extremely devout Catholic, encouraging his first-born daughter, Virginia, to sacrifice her life to nunnery. She became "Sister Maria Celeste" and remained so unnaturally "devoted" to her father that the two were buried together in his tomb in the Basilica of Santa Croce, in Medici Florence.

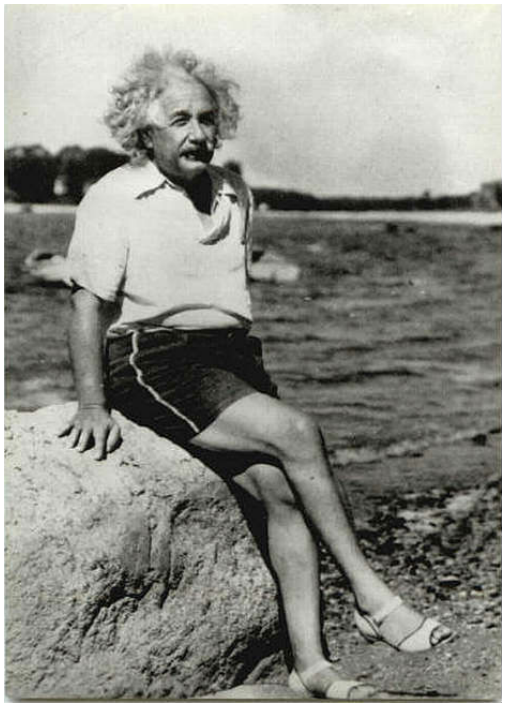
Since then, however, the Jesuits have made a "surprising" turn-around to fully support Darwin, dinosaurs and deep-space.

When Darwinian evolution came under attack for failing to show a clear line of development from ape to man, a Jesuit stepped up and offered the

“missing link”: Piltdown Man.

When it was later found out that the “Father of the New Age” (pun intended?), Pierre Teilhard de Chardin, had employed Catholic “aging” techniques often used to fabricate “holy relics” (which were then sold at high cost) to hoax Piltdown,[357] few questions were asked.

When critics began questioning the “random chance” of life’s beginning, a Jesuit-trained Priest named Georges Lemaître came to the rescue to provide the “Big Bang Theory”: “first there was nothing, then it exploded.”



Albert Einstein models his prized “open-toed sandals”; Long Island, New York, 1939.

As critics began to question how the Earth could spin at 1,000 mph yet no one on the globe perceived movement, helicopters rising straight up hovered over the same spot, water clung to the surface despite centrifugal force or atmosphere stayed magically in place despite the “vacuum of space”, Lemaitre’s junior partner, Jewish physicist Albert Einstein, provided a “Theory of Relativity” which basically says, “Everything *seems* stable and unmoving because it’s too complex for you to understand why not.”[358]

Speaking for Christians, within a year of his anointing as the “Vicar of Christ”, Jesuit Pope Jorge Mario Bergoglio (“Francis I”), urged all to subscribe to Darwin, dinosaurs and deep space.

> ***The Pope Would Like You to Accept Evolution and the Big Bang***
>
> *Yesterday, Pope Francis, the head of the Roman Catholic Church, said that Darwinian evolution is real, and so is the Big Bang... Elsewhere in his speech to the Pontifical Academy of Sciences, the Pope said: “When we read about Creation in Genesis, we run the risk of imagining God was a magician, with a magic wand able to do everything. But that is not so,” Francis said. ...*

> *As io9 pointed out when Francis was first anointed, the new Pope's quasi-heretical claim isn't anywhere near the first of its kind. The church first brought evolution into the fold in 1950 with the work of Pope Pius XII, writes io9. "At the same time, Catholics take no issue with the Big Bang theory, along with cosmological, geological, and biological axioms touted by science."* ~ Smithsonian[359]

Apparently, none of the "scientists", "historians" and "journalists" at the Smithsonian had any clue that accepting the "Big Bang" should be easy for Catholics as one of their own clergy had fabricated it.

A Maggot Emerges From Italy's Tomb[cclxxix]

Caterina Maria Romula di´Lorenzo de´Medici was born on April 13th, 1519 in the city-state of Florence; the only child of Lorenzo de´Medici, Duke of Urbino, and Madeleine de la Tour d´Auvergne, the countess of Boulogne.

In the paucity of any biographical information less than ebullient, "user-edited" Wikipedia provides basic information.

> *Within a month of Catherine's birth, both her parents were dead: Madeleine died on 28 April of puerperal fever or plague, and Lorenzo died on 4 May,[9] his title over Urbino reverting to Francesco Maria della Rovere* [nephew of Giuliano della Rovere, "Pope Julius II"]. *King Francis wanted Catherine to be raised at the French court, but Pope Leo* [Giovanni de´Medici] *had other plans for her.[9]*
>
> *Catherine was first cared for by her paternal grandmother, Alfonsina Orsini*[[cclxxx]] *(wife of Piero de´Medici). After Alfonsina's death in 1520, Catherine joined her cousins and was raised by her aunt, Clarice de´Medici. The death of Pope Leo in 1521 briefly interrupted Medici power until Cardinal Giulio de' Medici was elected Pope Clement VII in 1523. Clement housed Catherine in the Palazzo Medici Riccardi in Florence, where she lived in state. The Florentine people called her duchessina ("the little duchess"), in deference to her unrecognised claim to the Duchy of Urbino.[10][11]*
>
> *In 1527, the Medici were overthrown in Florence by a faction opposed to the regime of Clement's representative, Cardinal Silvio Passerini, and Catherine was taken hostage and placed in a series of convents.[12]*

*The final one, the **Santissima Annuziata delle Murate** was her home for three years. Mark Strage described these years as "the happiest of her entire life".[13][[cclxxxi]] Clement had no choice but to crown Charles Holy Roman Emperor in return for his help in retaking the city.[14] [[cclxxxii]] In October 1529, Charles's troops laid siege to Florence. As the siege dragged on, voices called for Catherine to be killed and exposed naked and chained to the city walls. Some even suggested that she be handed over to the troops to be used for their sexual gratification.[15] The city finally surrendered on 12 August 1530. Clement summoned Catherine from her beloved convent[[cclxxxiii]] to join him in Rome where he greeted her with open arms and tears in his eyes. Then he set about the business of finding her a husband.[16][[cclxxxiv]]*

On her visit to Rome, the Venetian envoy described Catherine as "small of stature, and thin, and without delicate features, but having the protruding eyes peculiar to the Medici family".[17] Suitors, however, lined up for her hand, including James V of Scotland who sent the Duke of Albany to Clement to conclude a marriage in April and November 1530.[18] When Francis I of France proposed his second son, Henry, Duke of Orléans, in early 1533, Clement jumped at the offer. Henry was a prize catch for Catherine, who despite her wealth was of common origin.[7][[cclxxxv]]

The wedding, a grand affair marked by extravagant display and gift-giving,[19] took place in the Église Saint-Ferréol les Augustins in Marseille on 28 October 1533.[20][21] Prince Henry danced and jousted for Catherine. The fourteen-year-old couple left their wedding ball at midnight to perform their nuptial duties. Henry arrived in the bedroom with King Francis, who is said to have stayed until the marriage was consummated. He noted that "each had shown valour in the joust".[19] Clement visited the newlyweds in bed the next morning and added his blessings to the night's proceedings.[22][[cclxxxvi]]

Catherine saw little of her husband in their first year of marriage, but the ladies of the court treated her well, impressed with her intelligence and keenness to please.[23][[cclxxxvii]] The death of Pope Clement VII on 25 September 1534, however, undermined Catherine's standing in the

> *French court. The next pope, Paul III,*[[cclxxxviii]] *broke the alliance with France and refused to pay her huge dowry. King Francis lamented, "The girl has come to me stark naked."*[24]
>
> *Prince Henry showed no interest in Catherine as a wife; instead, he openly took mistresses.*[[cclxxxix]] *For the first ten years of the marriage, Catherine failed to produce any children. In 1537, Philippa Duci, one of Henry's mistresses, gave birth to a daughter, whom he publicly acknowledged.*[25] *This proved that Henry was fertile and added to the pressure on Catherine to produce a child.*
>
> *In 1536, Henry's older brother, Francis, caught a chill after a game of tennis, contracted a fever and died shortly after, leaving Henry the heir. As dauphine, Catherine was expected to provide a future heir to the throne.*[27] *According to the court chronicler Brantôme,*[[ccxc]] *"many people advised the king and the Dauphin to repudiate her, since it was necessary to continue the line of France".*[28] *Divorce was discussed. In desperation, Catherine tried every known trick for getting pregnant, such as placing cow dung and ground stags' antlers on her "source of life", and drinking mule's urine.*[29] *On 19 January 1544, she at last gave birth to a son, named after King Francis.*[360]

We'll stop here as the editing out of the more sensational information vital to the story is finally getting overwhelming.

For instance, it's entirely possible that both Lorenzo II and Madeleine de la Tour died young because of syphilis.[361]

With the death of Lorenzo II, the rule over Florence (which the Medici had usurped), fell to the remaining male heir: the bastard child of the Pope and a black slave from the Medici household!

> *The rule of Florence would eventually go to Alessandro de´Medici, who contemporaries considered to be Lorenzo's illegitimate son, although modern historians think he was the son of Cardinal Giulio de´Medici, later Pope Clement VII; Alessandro's mother was Simonetta da Collevecchio, a woman of African descent who is variously described as a servant or slave in the Medici household, and*

> *Alessandro was the first Black head of state in modern Europe.* ~ Thériault[362]

However, “white guilt” need not apply to a Medici Pope.

Although the Wikipedia entry remarks that Catherine de´Medici’s imprisonment in three convents would eventually be the “happiest in her life”, other authors differ.

The cause was Guilio “Pope Clement VII” de´Medici’s flawed alliance with France and England over the Germanic “Holy Roman Empire” of Charles V. This precipitated the “Italian War” of 1521-1526, of which Charles was victorious but at the cost of bankruptcy; he was unable to pay his mercenary army.

Already in Italy, many of the soldiers were finding out (thanks to the revelations of Martin Luther and the Guttenberg press) just how corrupt the Vatican was and how used they and their families had been. They naturally turned to sacking the heaped riches from the “Eternal City”.

> *As the violence mounted, Ippolito* [bastard son of Giuliano de´Medici, and half-brother of Giulio / “Pope Clement VIII”] *and Alessandro de’ Medici* [the Pope’s bastard mulatto offspring from a black Medici slave girl] *were spirited out of the city, leaving Catherine behind with her aunt.* [Clarice de´Medici] ...
>
> *Catherine was taken hostage and placed in the Santa Lucia convent... her captors, who soon moved her to the convent of Santa Caterina of Siena, a place contemporaries described as a “disease-ridden hovel.” After* [complaint] *by the French ambassador (France, after all, still had a vested interest in the Duchessina), Catherine was relocated to the Murate Monastery, where she would live in relative comfort and happiness from the time she was 8 until a few months after her 11th birthday.* ~ Thériault[363]

It’s not a leap to deduce that these experiences molded the future murderess.

The details of how a Medici Pope and a Catholic French King celebrated Catherine’s marriage is also edited out of the “user-edited” entry.

> *Francis and Clement were intent on out-lavishing each other — at one point, the pope presented the king with a unicorn's horn mounted in gold,*[[ccxci]] *and Francis gifted Catherine's cousin Ippolito with a live lion. Catherine's hair and velvet robes were encrusted with gems. Francis wore a white satin robe and a cloak of cloth of gold, embroidered all over with fleurs de lys and pearls.* ~ Thériault[364]

Catherine's husband, Henri II, was similarly warped into dysfunction by the ambition of his father, King Francis I, just as Vlad the Impaler and Catherine had been.

> *Catherine knew that the best way to secure her future in France was to have a child with Henri. Francis I's eldest son, also named Francis, was as yet unmarried; this meant that if Henri had any sons, they would be directly in the line of succession. A child would also have made it much more difficult for Henri to have his marriage to Catherine annulled, as some people suggested he should do. Yet try as she might, Catherine couldn't seem to get pregnant. Part of the problem was that Henri wasn't all that interested in his new bride — in fact, he was in love with another woman, Diane de Poitiers, widow of the Grand-Sénéschal of Normandy and 19 years Henri's senior.*
>
> *Let us pause here and have a brief word about Henri, who, like his wife, had experienced a deeply traumatic childhood. Things had started out well enough, but in 1525, when Henri was 6...* [d]*uring the same war with the Holy Roman Empire that had led to the sacking of Rome, Francis I was captured during the Battle of Pavia. The French king didn't feel that he could serve his people well as a prisoner, so he offered up two of his sons as hostages until the ransom could be paid. Henri was 7 and his brother Francis, the Dauphin (heir to the French throne), was 8 when they were sent to Spain in exchange for their father. There, they would spend the next four and a half years in a series of increasingly bleak prison cells. Unsurprisingly, the experience affected the young boys profoundly.*
>
> *When Henri and the Dauphin returned to the French court, everyone remarked on how changed they both appeared. Whereas before they'd been spirited and outgoing, now they were sombre and aloof. After his*

> *initial joy over his sons' return had passed, Francis I quickly grew impatient with them, saying he had no time for "dreamy, sullen, sleepy children."* ~ Thériault[365]

Truly, the Elite are self-obsessed sociopaths but they are enabled by the slaves who accept their "Divine Right" to rule over them.

Also edited out of "user-edited" Wikipedia: the death of the heir to the French throne (the "Dauphin"), had evidence that pointed to the Medici and their new ally, Holy Roman Emperor Charles V.

> [I]*n 1536 ... the Dauphin collapsed after a game of tennis and died shortly thereafter. The Valois family immediately suspected that poison was responsible, since the Dauphin had drunk a glass of water brought to him by his secretary,*[[ccxcii]] *Sebastian de Montecuculli, just before falling ill. There were a few other facts that made Montecuculli seem especially guilty: he had formerly been employed by Charles V, a book about poisons was found in his room, and also he was Italian. ...*
>
> *And how did Montecuculli wind up working for the Dauphin in the first place?*
>
> *He had been in Catherine's retinue when she had come to France.*
>
> *The French already disliked Catherine, and the news about the Dauphin's death brought their hatred to a fever pitch. ...who stood to benefit the most from the Dauphin's death? ...Henri and Catherine, the new Dauphin and Dauphine of France.* ~ Thériault[366]

Although he suspected Catherine was involved with the apparent assassination of his son (her brother-in-law), Francis I chose not to pursue an investigation beyond de Montecuculli lest it reflect upon his second son and remaining heir, Henri II.

But the pressure upon Catherine only increased. A French family of cut-throat Aristocrats, whose ambition and intrigues rivaled that of the Medici, now began to petition Francis that he maintain his lineage with a beautiful (not homely as she was), fertile replacement; the House of Guise recommended young Louise de Guise to become the new Dauphine.

As German Protestant historian Theodor Griesinger (1809-1884) would note:

> *The Guises were descended from the ancient family of the dukes of Lorraine; during the reign of King Francis I., the younger brother of the duke of Lorraine secured the comté of Guise, in Picardy, by marriage, and it was shortly elevated into a dukedom in his favour. In 1559, the house of Guise was represented by Duke François (son of Claudius), a man of ... great intellect, and boundless ambition. He had five brothers, the famous cardinal Charles of Lorraine* [was] *one of them; they had all been loaded with favours and offices by the late king, and had constantly employed their influence to place their own partisans in nearly every office of state. But as a means of consolidating their power, they resolved to take their stand as the champions of Catholicism, and the uncompromising opponents of the new faith* [the public rebirth of Biblical Christianity].[367]

Charles, Duke of Guise and Cardinal of Lorraine was well-known to have a passion for the persecution of Protestants.

> *Claude's son François de Lorraine, 2d duc de Guise, 1519–63, became conspicuous, at the accession (1547) of Henry II, as the rival for power of Anne, duc de Montmorency. ... With the accession (1559) of the youthful Francis II, who was married to the duke's niece, Mary Stuart, François de Guise and his brother Charles de Guise, Cardinal de Lorraine, c. 1525–1574, were given control of the government.*
>
> *The brothers' arrogance, their persecution of the Protestants, and their enmity toward the princes of Bourbon and Condé led to the conspiracy of Amboise, which they suppressed (1560). Shortly afterward, however, the death of Francis II deprived the Guises of power; Catherine de' Medici , as regent, dominated the government. As a result, in 1561 the duke joined with Montmorency and Marshal Saint-André in the so-called triumvirate, which, at the head of the Catholic party, opposed both the Huguenots and the tolerant policy of the regent. The murder of Protestants at Vassy by Guise's troops brought about the outbreak of the Wars of Religion (1562–98), and Guise took the field against the*

> *Huguenots. Victorious at Dreux (1562), he was assassinated while preparing to attack Orléans.*
>
> *The Cardinal de Lorraine was largely responsible for the persecution of the Protestants during the reign of Francis II.* ~ Columbia Encyclopedia[368]

As to the “Conspiracy of Amboise” —

> [Was a] *1560, plot of the Huguenots (French Protestants) and the house of Bourbon to usurp the power of the Guise family, which virtually ruled France during the reign of the young Francis II. The plan, presumably worked out by Louis I de Bourbon, prince de Condé, provided for a march on the castle of Amboise, the abduction of King Francis II, and the arrest of François, duc de Guise, and his brother Charles, cardinal of Lorraine. The cardinal was forewarned, and the rebels, beaten before they had united their forces, were ruthlessly massacred. For weeks the bodies of hundreds of conspirators were hanging from the castle and from every tree in the vicinity. The Huguenots were enraged. A brief period of conciliation followed under the chancellorship of Michel de L´Hôpital, appointed by the king’s mother, Catherine de´ Medici. He temporarily halted Protestant persecution until the outbreak (1562) of the Wars of Religion.* ~ Columbia Encyclopedia[369]

“*François, duc de Guise*” was the unmentioned reason for the 1562 “outbreak of the Wars of Religion”.

> *Early in 1562, there occurred the awful massacre of the Huguenots at Vassy, a little town in Champagne, not far from Joinville, the great family seat of the Guises.*
>
> *Vassy had rapidly become a centre of* [“]*heresy*[”]. *For a Protestant Church had been established there soon after the Council of Poissy, the congregation increasing in three months from 120 to 1,200.*
>
> *The Guises had already made two futile attempts to scatter this earnest congregation, but the Bishop of the diocese himself (the mundane Bishop of Chalons) was foiled in his encounter with the minister and obliged to retire discomfited.*

The Guises promised themselves vengeance. They intended, it was said, to execute their plan at Christmas, when near a thousand communicants were to take the Lord's Supper.

*A solemn warning was sent them, but they bravely continued in their course, and the Guises, busy elsewhere for the moment, did not fulfil their designs. None the less did they nourish them, and when, in the spring, the Duke returned from the German frontier, the first question he put was whether the Huguenots of Vassy "**faisaient toujours Prêches**."* [were always preaching]

His mother, Antoinette de Bourbon, the grim dowager of orthodoxy, told him that they grew worse every day. "On the which he straight began to mutter and to wax hot in his courage, biting his beard, as was his custom when he felt greatly irritated." ...

His schemes were soon matured.

Together with his brother, the Cardinal de Guise (not to be confused with his greater brother, the Cardinal de Lorraine), he set out one Sunday with an armed escort ... intending, so he gave forth, to dine at a village which lay just beyond Vassy.

The bells of that devout place were calling the Huguenots to worship, and the Duke did not fail to ask why they were ringing so loud.

Suddenly diverting his course, he turned off the road to his destination and, taking the turning to Vassy, he rode to the empty parish church, the Prêches [sermons] *being held, as he discovered, in a rough barn a hundred yards off.*

Thither he despatched a messenger, who ordered the minister to stop the service, as the Duke wished Mass to be celebrated in the church hard by.[[ccxciii]]

The minister replied that "the Duke was only a man — that he could not overrule the Word of God to hear the which they had met ... nor should they dream of leaving off."

This was enough.

A shot through the open door was Guise's only retort, and when the defenceless congregation tried to shut their enemies out, the troops rushed in pell-mell and slaughtered to the right and to the left.

That the whole affair was premeditated there can be no sort of doubt, for the soldiers whom Guise brought with him were reinforced by others whom he had lodged in the neighbourhood.

The cruelties are piteous to read of, sickening to recall.

The minister went on preaching till the pulpit was brought down under him and he himself, covered with wounds, was taken prisoner.

Men, women, children, were massacred wholesale to the sound of the Duke's trumpets, while he stood in the barn, sword in hand, urging his soldiers to kill.

His wife, who had followed this strange expedition in her litter — the same poor lady who had wept at the horrors of Amboise[[ccxciv]] *— prevailed on him to spare a few women; some of the more fortunate Huguenots escaped by the roof, but otherwise the murder was wholesale.*

"Seigneur Dieu!" ["Lord, God!"] *cried the hapless victims; "Seigneur Diable!"* ["The Devil is our lord!"] *retorted their foes.*[[ccxcv]]

The Cardinal, meanwhile, remained outside, leaning on the churchyard wall and watching his men as they pursued their relentless work.

"Presently the Duke went into the barn and found a Bible there. 'Look here, brother,' said he, 'look at the title of this Huguenot book.' Quoth the Cardinal when he saw it, 'There is no harm there : these are the Holy Scriptures.' At the which the Duke feeling himself confounded, fell into a greater rage than heretofore: 'Sblood! and what do you mean?' quoth he, 'when you say the Holy Scriptures? Fifteen hundred years have passed since the Passion and the death of Jesus Christ, and this book was only published a year ago. How can you call this the Gospel?'"

... the Duke paced up and down the barn, foaming with anger and pulling his beard as he walked." The Duke François' ignorance was

no less amazing than his cruelty. It is hard to believe in a person who destroyed others for studying a book he had never seen, and yet this momentary flash of portraiture which reveals his primitiveness of intellect shows us the man more surely than any detailed history of his doings.

He did not know what remorse meant.

"For hereupon," says his chronicler, "he mounted his horse and departed from that town of Vassy with his brother the Cardinal, the Duchess his wife, and two or three of their closest comrades — and they went to dine at Ettancourt at the house of one, Jean Collesson." ~ Sichel[370]

Matanzas

The name "Wars of Religion" implies that the Protestant Huguenots were on equal footing with France's ruling Catholics yet the word that continues to be used even by Catholic "historians" for most of the "battles" is: ***massacre***.

Huguenots that left France for the apparent safety of the "New World" suffered a similar fate.

In 1564 a group of French Protestants known as Huguenots settled in Spanish-claimed territory near present-day Jacksonville. They built Fort Caroline on the St. John's River in Florida, in present-day Jacksonville. On June 30, 1564, they set a day of Thanksgiving and offered the first Protestant prayer in North America: "We sang a psalm of Thanksgiving unto God, beseeching Him that it would please Him to continue His accustomed goodness towards us."

According to Bill Federer ... "Three small ships carrying 300 Frenchmen led by Rene de Laudonniere anchored in the river known today as the St. Johns... On June 30, 1564, construction of a triangular-shaped fort ... was begun with the help of a local tribe of Timucuan Indians ... (Fort Caroline was) home for this hardy group of Huguenots ... their strong religious motivations inspired them."

Unfortunately for the small band of French Christians, Felipe II ruled in Spain (and, at varying times, Portugal, Naples, Sicily, England and Ireland as well!).

It is instructive to note that Jesus Christ once warned His followers, “Indeed, the hour is coming when whoever kills you will think he is offering service to God.” [John 16:2]

Few embodied that terrible warning better than Felipe II and his wife, Bloody Mary Tudor. Both pursued the torture and slaughter of Christians with utter fanaticism.

It was Felipe II who sent an ill-fated armada to invade England and overthrow modestly-Protestant Elizabeth I in 1588. In that episode, nature worked for the Christians of England.

For French Christians in “La Florida”, it was against them.

Felipe immediately dispatched an army under Admiral Don Pedro Menéndez de Avilés to wipe out the French “heretics”.

Admiral Gaspard de Coligny attempted to reinforce the Huguenot protection by sending an experienced officer and navigator, Jean Ribault.

The French arrived with a small force in May of 1862 while the Spanish arrived at the Saint Johns River in August with around 800 personnel. On August 28th, the Catholics under Menéndez established a base they named “St. Augustine” as it was the “Feast of St. Augustine”.

Ribault sailed to meet them on September 10th in an attempt to preempt the fighting. It was a sound tactical move but a hurricane carried his ships too far south and they wrecked along the coast.

Simultaneously, Menéndez struck the Huguenots at Fort Caroline. With most of the Protestant forces absent, it was an easy victory. The remaining Huguenots were eradicated.

A Timucuan Indian told Menéndez that some whites were trapped at an inlet south of St. Augustine and attempting to return. He took his force to meet them and, with a prisoner as translator told them that they had no fort to get back to.

The Protestants were promised that if they surrendered, they would be spared and as they had lost their provisions and weapons in the hurricane, they did so.

After the surrender, the caveat was added: they would be spared if they all gave up their faith (in Jesus Christ) and became Catholics.

111 were murdered on the spot. 3 or 4 artisans were spared to become slave labor and around 10 professed Catholicism either previously or spontaneously.

Two weeks later the rest of the survivors appeared at the inlet, led by Jean Ribault. The exact same scenario was repeated. Ribault and 133 other Christians were summarily executed.

The name of the inlet remains to this day, “Matanzas”: Spanish for “slaughters”.

While Catherine’s uncle, “Clement VII”, was Pope, she was safe, but should he vacate, she would be rejected and ejected as quickly as Henry VIII’s “Catherine” (of Aragon).

Henry wasn’t called “Bluff Harry” for nothing. It was an unprecedented move that only Harry’s ego could facilitate but it was also a shrewd one.

All Popes consider themselves kings of kings and, therefore, demanded tribute equal to their lofty rank.[ccxcvi]

> *The conversion of the kingdoms included in northern Europe was principally accomplished by Roman missionaries about the close of the sixth or commencement of the seventh century, under the auspices of pope Gregory* [I]. *Thus these kingdoms fell into a peculiar dependence on the bishop of Rome, — the dependence of a spiritual colony on its mother church; and it is not surprising they felt especial devotion to the capital ...* [Rome] *and expressed it by frequent rich offerings to its spiritual chief, who, on his part, failed not in pious exhortations to the continuance of so excellent a practice, and was never weary of holding out his hands for the gifts of the faithful. From these voluntary oblations, assisted by the persevering efforts of His Holiness for more*

and still more, a kind of annual revenue grew up; year by year the demands of the popes were anticipated and supplied by this means, until, by papal tact and courage, the custom was moulded into the institution of Peter's pence. ...

Pope Gregory VII. (1073-86), he who first grasped the full capabilities of the papal crown, and laboured so effectively for their development, declared this pious donation was in reality a political tribute, and thence proceeded to prove England a fief royal of the church.

He demanded from William the Conqueror not only the "customary 300 marks which had been annually furnished during many centuries," but also the king's oath of fealty, boldly asserting England had been since the earliest times "a tributary kingdom of St. Peter." ...

This revenue naturally greatly increased with the growth of the population, and became at last so immense that it even considerably exceeded the king's own. ...

No blow ever fell more cruelly on the papacy than that by which the rich stream of Peter's pence was suddenly stayed in its course in England, and dried up for ever.

Its end came from Henry VIII., who, when the fair [Anne] *Boleyn found favour in his eyes, applied to Pope Clement VII. for the necessary divorce from Queen Catherine. The pope at first exhibited the greatest willingness to meet the king's wishes, and sent Cardinal Campegius* [Lorenzo Campeggio (1474–1539)] *to England with the divorce in his pocket; but Charles V., a near relation of Catherine, interfered, and Clement dared not offend him whilst the Reformation in Germany was still unsuppressed. So he directed Campegius to flatter Henry's hopes, but to destroy the important document.* ~ Griesinger[371]

Today, "Peter's Pence" is a Vatican "charity" for "the poor", yet clergy as high as the "Secretary of State" (recall that Rome is a "sovereign city-state" like London and Washington D.C.) raid or skim the funds for "embezzlement, fraud, abuse of office, money laundering and self-laundering".[372]

Dauphine Catherine threw herself on the mercy of King Francis whom, it was said, could not bear the tears of a young woman.[ccxcvii]

Her move bought her time but she knew that if she didn't bear Henri sons, soon, the fate of the English Henry's wives (Henry VIII) would soon be hers.

Getting even the opportunity to have children was proving difficult as Henri II was unenthused with his wife.

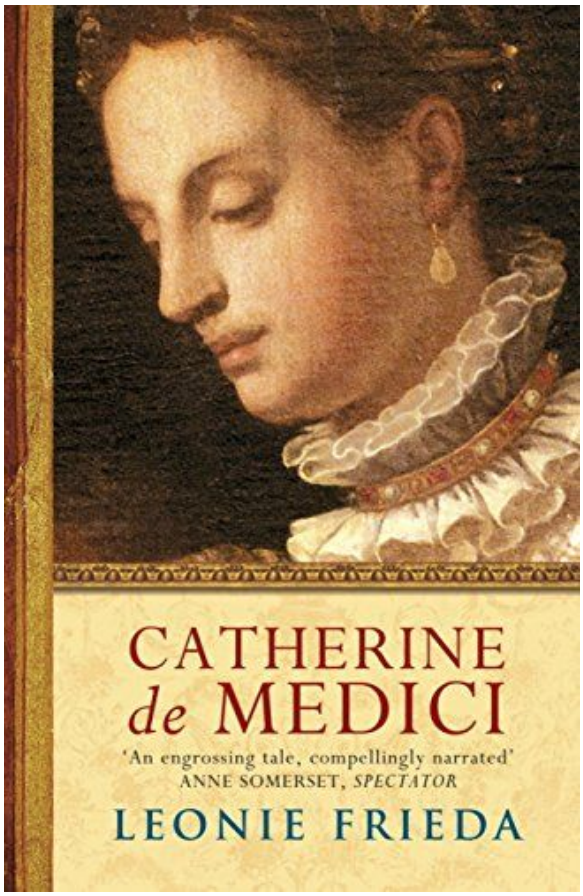
Years before, his father was annoyed at how, after being released from a Spanish prison and returning home, Henri seemed more Spanish than French. The King gave his son to one of his well-bred courtiers, Diane de Poitiers, to bring the French back out of him. Although several years his senior, Henri was soon smitten with his tutor who was recently widowed from her husband, Louis de Brézé.

To prove his manhood, Henri dabbled in his father's war against the Holy Roman Empire[ccxcviii] and, while in Italy, sired an illegitimate daughter by a woman named Filippa Duci. He named the child after his obsession, "Diane".

None of these circumstances where helping Catherine de´Medici accomplish her goal of staying in power by bearing sons to the Dauphin.

She fixated on the issue day and night, even going so far as to spying upon Henri as he visited his mistress just below Catherine's rooms.

> *It's said that Catherine bored peep holes into the roof of Diane de Poitiers's bedchamber so that she could see her husband "in action" with his mistress. She apparently noted the contrast between the disinterested performance she got from Henri versus the "spectacle" he gave Diane...*[373]



Perhaps one of the reasons "user-edited" Wikipedia is so biased in favor of *Madame La Serpente* is the text the "user" relied upon for the Catherine de´Medici entry.

Leonie Frieda's 2011 *Catherine de Medici: a Biography* is so disingenuously glowing, each copy comes with its own halo.

Best of all is that Frieda gaslights her propaganda as being rarely objective!

> *Catherine de Medici has variously been called "The Maggot from Italy's Tomb", "The Black Queen" and "**Madame La Serpente**". To many she is the very incarnation of evil. It is, I believe, as mistaken a judgement as it is bigoted. ...*
>
> *Insofar as she is connected to any historical event in the public imagination, it is the Saint Bartholomew's Day Massacre in Paris, that infamous act of violence that so stained the name of the House of Valois and of Catherine in particular. When the admittedly terrible events of 24 August 1572 in Paris are placed in their proper historical context, however, I believe they can be explained in terms of a surgical*

operation that went wrong rather than an act of premeditated genocide.

During the course of her life, this indomitable woman faced a series of personal tragedies and setbacks, and when not being condemned as evil, she is pitied for the seemingly endless series of blows she suffered. Orphaned at birth and imprisoned during childhood, her marriage to Henry of Orléans (later King Henry II of France), whom she loved passionately, caused her years of unhappiness as she was ignored by him in favour of his mistress, the mesmerising Diane de Poitiers. After a decade of childlessness and near-repudiation, Catherine finally produced ten children – who were almost without exception rotten, sickly and corrupt. The sudden death of her husband brought this forty-year-old political neophyte to the centre of power and, forced by necessity, she became the skillful [sic] *and doughty defender of her dynasty and adopted country. ...*

She was, above all, a courageous survivor and a true product of her times. The life, the character, the personal details, the contradictions, the passions, the strengths, the weaknesses and the sheer guts of this incomparable woman constitute the main thread of my story. ...

To understand this complex woman one must recognise that to Catherine these three represented the same thing. After her husband's death, and based on her hitherto silent observation of the political and religious struggles in France, she tried to steer a middle course between the opposing parties. Yet if reason and conciliation failed, she did not hesitate to avail herself of the "regalian right of summary execution" to preserve the kingdom.

I am, of course, not the first person to attempt to tell Catherine's story objectively.[374]

Indeed, she isn't!

If Catherine de´Medici still has a negative reputation it is a testimony to the depth of her evil and that through no lack of whitewashing by Popery's agents across the centuries.

Back to our story.

> *When we last left the Serpent Queen, things were looking dire. She had been married to Henri, the heir to the French throne, for nearly five years. Although the Dauphin and Dauphine were both young and healthy, Catherine was failing in her most fundamental duty: providing the country with an heir. Rumors had spread throughout the court that she was incapable of conceiving. Since her husband's only living brother was unmarried and childless, the entire fate of the Valois dynasty rested on Catherine's ability to produce a child.*
>
> *Faced with a rival noble faction, the Guises, who wanted to replace the apparently barren queen-to-be with one of their own, Catherine had thrown aside her pride and made a risky preemptive strike. Swooning pathetically at Francis I's feet, the young woman tearfully begged the king to go ahead and replace her, saying that she loved Henri beyond measure and just wanted him to have a wife who could give him heirs. Catherine asked only that she be allowed to stay in France and humbly serve her beloved's new bride. ...*
>
> *Francis ... declared that it was God's will that Catherine be the Dauphin's wife...*
>
> *But Catherine knew that this amnesty was only temporary; just across the English channel, Henry VIII was ditching his wives all over the place for not giving him a son. How long would it be before the Valois family decided to follow suit?*
>
> *Catherine attacked the problem from every angle she could think of ...*
> ~ Thériault[375]

As if the Serpent Queen didn't have enough defenders, a medical treatise has been written in defense of her on the subject of "infertility" which the three Leftist Doctors want stridently to assure you wasn't her fault. The "defaming" of her name since then has *clearly* been the work of misogynistic anti-Catholic bigotry.

> *Catherine went on to pursue multiple interventions to cure "her" infertility. She surrounded herself with doctors, diviners and magicians. She refused to travel by mule, believing that the infertile*

animal would transmit its sterility to those who rode it.[3] She also made use of tarot cards, charms, and alchemy.

Although deeply devoted to both astrology and the Catholic faith, Catherine also resorted to medieval remedies.[3] She drank the urine of pregnant animals, consumed the powdered sexual organs of boars, stags and cats, and mixed many different herbs in her food and wine.[1, 6] Another remedy required a mixture of unicorn horn and ivory in water.[6] Due to the scarcity of unicorn horns,[[ccxcix]] another recipe called for mare's milk, rabbit's blood and sheep's urine.[6] Alternatively, one could consume the blood of a hare and the left hind paw of a weasel mixed with vinegar.[6] ~ Gordetsky, Rabinowitz, O'Brien[376]

Again we return to (***Catholic***) "user-edited" Wikipedia for the "Company line". We'll begin with the thorough glossing over of the Dauphin's[ccc] convenient death.

In 1536, Henry's older brother, Francis, caught a chill after a game of tennis, contracted a fever and died shortly after, leaving Henry the heir. As dauphine, Catherine was expected to provide a future heir to the throne.[27] According to the court chronicler Brantôme, "many people advised the king and the Dauphin to repudiate her, since it was necessary to continue the line of France".[28] Divorce was discussed. In desperation, Catherine tried every known trick for getting pregnant, such as placing cow dung and ground stags' antlers on her "source of life", and drinking mule's urine.[29] On 19 January 1544, she at last gave birth to a son, named after King Francis.

After becoming pregnant once, Catherine had no trouble doing so again. She may have owed her change of fortune to the physician Jean Fernel, who had noticed slight abnormalities in the couple's sexual organs and advised them how to solve the problem.[30] Catherine quickly conceived again and on 2 April 1545 she bore a daughter, Elisabeth. She went on to bear Henry a further eight children, six of whom survived infancy, including the future Charles IX (born 27 June 1550); the future Henry III (born 19 September 1551); and Francis, Duke of Anjou (born 18 March 1555). The long-term future of the

> *Valois dynasty, which had ruled France since the 14th century, seemed assured.*

Thank Heaven that the “Maggot from Italy” saved the Valois bloodline’s “Divine right” to tyrannize the French!

Supposedly, for ten years, the Dauphin and Dauphine were simply “doing it wrong” and it took the brilliant Doctor Fernel, after examining their privates, to suggest the right and proper, ah, adjustment and it magically worked!

It not just “worked” but it ushered in as many children as Catherine spent years barren!

“Magic” indeed.

Jean François Fernel is credited as having coined and defined the term “physiology” due his scholarly research on the human body.

But he was also a devout Catholic, well-versed in the supernatural. His 1548 treatise *De abditis rerum causis* (roughly “The Secret Reasons of Causation”) invested an entire chapter on the summoning of spirits.

Although it is well-documented, Fernel’s focus on the occult is entirely missing from “scholarly” accounts.

Some more honest information can be gleaned from Nancy Siraisi’s 1997 biography of Italian physician, occultist, astronomer and astrologer, Girolamo Cardano (1501 – 1576), *The Clock and the Mirror*.

> *Fernel combined mathematical and occultist interests with medicine. Moreover, he earned a reputation as a neoteric because of unconventional theories about spiritus and disease etiology.*[[ccci]] *Nevertheless, Fernel had a highly successful career, not only as a practitioner but also as the most distinguished professor of medicine at the University of Paris at a time when it was a center of Renaissance Galenism.*[377]

Galen of Pergamon was a Greek physician and philosopher of the Roman Empire who lived from around 129 A.D. to around 210 A.D. He subscribed to “humourism”; that the human body was governed by four “humors”: black bile, yellow bile, blood, and phlegm.

> *Cardano was up-to-date with his reading. This early appreciation of the Paris professor of medicine Jean Fernel (whom Cardano was to meet in the following year) must refer not to his comprehensive textbook of medicine — first published in 1554 — but to Fernel's treatise on physiology (**De natumli parte medicinae**, 1542) and/or his work "on the hidden causes of things" (**De abditis rerum causis**, 1548). From these works the reader could gather both Fernel's insistence on the importance of anatomy and his theories about innate heat, celestial spirits, and occult influences in physiology and pathology.*[378]

What insured that Fernel would become Henri's Court physician was how he saved the life of Diane de Poitiers from a mysterious illness in 1543.[379]

> *Cardano's statements about subtlety, hidden causes, and marvelous effects in medicine and his decision to entitle a collection of his own cures **De admirandis curationibus et praedictionibus morborum** therefore need to be considered in the light of other examples of Renaissance medical thinking on similar topics. Here, considerations of space limit the comparison chiefly to two well-known works, namely, Antonio Benivieni's **De abditis non nullis ac mirandis morborum et stmationum causis** and Jean Fernel's **De abditis rerum causis**.*[[cccii]] *Both Benivieni (1443-1502) and Fernel (1497-1558) were themselves celebrated practitioners and focused the larger part of their medical writings on practice. However, despite the similarity in their titles, the two treatises — both of which were known to Cardano — are very different in character. Benivieni's little book is a collection of cases personally encountered in the course of his practice. Fernel was the author of an influential general work on medicine but devoted this treatise to a theoretical account of occult causation in physiology and pathology.* ~ Siraisi[380]

Unlike medieval Popes and Kings who lived lives of murder and debauchery simply because they could, if Jean François Fernel mixed his demonology with his pathology one can honestly say that he was a man of his age.[ccciii]

However, given Catherine de´Medici's predilection for occult "solutions" to mundane problems, a complete understanding of Fernel's outlook is important as it is missing from common histories.

> *Exhaustive modern analyses of Fernel's attempted reform of principles of physiology and pathology have rightly stressed the connections of some of his ideas both with the religious and magical aspects of Renaissance Platonism and with the climate of interest in new, or supposedly new, diseases and in disease transmission.*[54] *His theories about* ***spiritus*** *have also been shown to bear some resemblance to medieval* ["]*Christian*["] *philosophical and theological adaptations of ancient medical and cosmic pneumatology* [study of the spiritual].[55] *Essentially, Fernel maintained that in addition to the animal, vital, and natural spirits of standard Galenic medical teaching, celestial* ***spiritus*** *of divine origin flowed down from the heavens into the very substance of terrestrial things and were the bearers of form. Within the body these special divine* ***spiritus*** *were the carriers of innate heat and the source of all vital function. In some cases, however, the spiritus could induce "disease of the total substance," that is, a disease in which the entire substance and form was corrupted in a way that had nothing to do with temperamental imbalance. The idea of disease of the total substance was also to some extent an extrapolation from Galen's doctrine that certain remedies acted by their whole substance (or, in the scholastic version, their specific form) rather than by the balance of elementary qualities. ...*
>
> *Fernel's treatise on hidden causes thus deserves a modest place in the sixteenth-century literature of demonology and witchcraft, as well as in that of medical innovation.* ~ Siraisi[381]

Whether or not Jean Fernel helped the Serpent Queen find a spiritual solution to her infertility (or if he was merely the medical cover given her occult activities) her complete turnaround remains suspicious.

> *Let us pause for a second and marvel over this. It's rumored that Henri had a mild penile deformity that had caused their childlessness, but even if that's true, it seems astonishing that a simple change of position could produce such immediate results. I have questions, most of which*

> *boil down to: what position were they formerly doing it in that was apparently so detrimental to their fertility? Because after following Dr. Fernel's advice, Catherine and Henri went on to have not just one or two children but ten. Ten! Ten whole children! After a decade of trying and failing to conceive!* ~ Thériault[382]

This is even more poignant given Henri's illegitimate daughter sired by an Italian wench during his foray into the "Italian War" against Charles V. Clearly, the problem wasn't "on his end".

> *Catherine delivered her first child, Francis, in 1544, then spent the next twelve years popping out babies all over the place. By 1555, she had given birth to Elisabeth, Claude, Louis, Charles-Maximilien, Alexandre Édouard, Margaret, and Hercules; in 1555 she capped off this baby extravaganza with a two-for-one special: Princesses Joan and Victoria.*
>
> *Sadly, Louis and the twins did not survive infancy, and the rest of the royal children, with the exception of Margaret, would have serious lifelong health problems. Remember the speculation that Catherine's parents died of syphilis and/or tuberculosis? The symptoms her children experienced were consistent with both congenital syphilis and tuberculosis. It's possible that for her entire life, Catherine was an unwitting carrier of whatever killed her parents, a ticking bomb that would eventually help tear apart the Valois dynasty.* ~ Thériault[383]

Francis I

Henri II's father, King François I, was a typical Royal. He cared nothing of stewardship or responsibilities towards his subjects and pursued constant pleasures of the flesh, hunting (either the slaughter of animals by his own hand or "falconing") and sex (any debauchery possible). The latter would be his undoing, as it so often is.

François I fancied himself a prime Holy Roman Emperor but when it fell to his Spanish rival, Carlos V (Charles V), François (Francis) was consumed with jealousy. It caused him to war repeatedly and needlessly through Europe trying to gain the upper hand.

His exploits in the “Italian War” ended with the humiliating defeat at the Battle of Pavia in 1525 with his capture by Carlos V. He spent a year in prison, finally conceding all rights to any part of Italy and acknowledging Carlos’ allies in Burgundy as an independent State.

Luther’s Protest forced François to consider “Reformers” in his political designs for stable power, as it did his English counterparts; Henry VIII (but not his daughter Mary), Elizabeth I and James I. None of them were serious Protestants but the extreme popularity of Bible-based Christianity breaking from Rome forced them to dabble at varying degrees.

French Christians caught a break when the King’s sister became enthralled with their movement.

Unfortunately, the advantage was immediately attacked by Rome’s vengeful agents in France with a tactic still in very common use today: a false flag.

L´Affaire des Placards

> *One of the favorite past-times at the Sorbonne (fountainhead of Catholic “learning”* [in Paris]*) was banning books. It was an enterprise that would soon cause trouble with François (“Francis”) I, King of France from 1515 to 1547. The sister of François was Marguerite d’Angoulême who later became Marguerite of Navarre (Anglicized “Margaret Navarre”) when she married Henry II of Navarre.*
>
> > *After the death of her first husband, Charles, duc d’Alençon, in 1525, she married Henry II of Navarre (Henry d’Albret). Although she bore Henry a daughter, Jeanne d’Albret (mother of the future Henry IV of France), the couple was soon estranged. Margaret was, on the other hand, always devoted to her brother and is credited with saving his life when he became ill in prison at Madrid after his capture at Pavia during the disastrous French expedition into Italy in 1525. ~ Britannica*[188]
>
> *Marguerite was a great patroness of pre-Reformation Humanism and attempted to protect Reformers like* [Nicolas] *Cop, Lefèvre d’Étaples and Guillaume Briçonnet, Bishop of Meaux (another who tried to reform without leaving Romanism).*

> *Mired in the strict Catholicism of the Middle Ages, the Sorbonne considered the classical teachings of the Italian Renaissance blasphemous. While a century earlier it had supplied the English with the theological arguments justifying the burning of Joan of Arc, it was now supplying the French Parliament with the theological arguments for burning humanists, most of whom could be found either at Fontainebleau or at the court of Francis's beloved sister Marguerite of Navarre. The Sorbonne not only banned a book written by Marguerite,* ***Mirror of the Sinful Soul****, but also demanded the arrest of Francis's favorite poet, Clement Marot, who was guilty of eating lard during Lent. ~ Carol Calvin's escape from Paris forced him south where he followed Nicolas Cop to Basel, Switzerland using the name "Martianus Lucanius[190]" to avoid the secret police of the Inquisition: "Martin [Luther], born of the Light at Daybreak[191]".*
>
> *At least one year of wandering followed for Calvin. He was hunted from city to city, for no Protestant, especially Calvin, was safe in France. Calvin wandered as a fugitive evangelist under assumed names from place to place in southern France, Switzerland and Italy. His most common assumed name was Charles d'Espeville. Everywhere he went he taught small groups in secret places, even in caves.*
>
> *Calvin was an evangelist. It is estimated that Calvin in his lifetime was responsible for starting as many as 250 local churches. ~ Arnold[192]*

Although François I fought the Sorbonne on minor issues like readmitting his sister's book for consumption by Frenchmen, even that listless resistance was short-lived. Soon the Sorbonne and the Inquisition were back to full-force ***auto de fes*** [burning] *of the writings of Reformers and of the Reformers, themselves.*

If there were any warmth in François I towards the Reformers, it was snuffed out like candle in a hurricane after the ***Affaire des Placards*** *(the "Affair of the Placards"). No major text, in writing or on the internet, recounts what happened for what it really was: a despicable*

*Roman Catholic **false flag** of the Counter-Reformation that was devastatingly effective.*

> *The Affair of the Placards (French: **Affaire des Placards**) was an incident in which anti-Catholic posters appeared in public places in Paris and in four major provincial cities: Blois, Rouen, Tours and Orléans, overnight during 17 October 1534. One was actually posted on the bedchamber door of King Francis I at Amboise, an affront and an alarming breach of security that left him shaken. The **Affaire des Placards** brought an end to the conciliatory policies of Francis, who had formerly attempted to protect the Protestants from the more extreme measures of the Parlement de Paris, and also of the public entreaties for moderation of Philip Melanchthon.*
>
> *The placards carried the title "Genuine articles on the horrific, great and unbearable abuses of the papal mass, invented directly contrary to the Holy Supper of our Lord, sole mediator and sole savior Jesus Christ"[1] This provocative title was a direct attack on Catholic conceptions of the Eucharist. They supported Zwingli's position on the Mass which denied the physical existence of Christ in the sacraments.*
>
> *The individual who has been traditionally credited as the chief inspiration, if not the direct author of the placards, was the French Protestant leader Guillaume Farel... ~ Wikipedia*[193]

*Later it was admitted that Guillaume "William" Farel was not the architect behind the plot, nor (despite the false claims of Wikipedia) **any** French Protestant. There was no benefit what-so-ever in finding the most offensive issue to Catholics possible and posting about it on the king's bedchamber.*

*Although the blog **Executed Today.com** is equally antagonistic towards Protestant Christianity, its focus on government abuse characterizes these incidents (there were more than one, implying a test run and climax for maximum effect) in their true light: as staged events to excite democide.*[lxxii] *On [November 13th] in 1534, a crippled shoemaker's son went to the stake … the harbinger of many a pyre that*

would swallow many a French soul in the internecine struggle over religion that lay ahead.

> *A relatively chilled-out start to the Protestant Reformation under the tolerant King Francis I had the moderate reformers thinking go-along, get-along.*
>
> *But churchbound Frenchmen and women on Sunday, Oct. 18 in Paris and a number of towns around France found that someone had engineered the simultaneous posting of incendiary anti-Catholic placards denouncing the "idolatrous rite" of mass. In an ominous breach of security, one was even left outside the monarch's own bedchamber.*
>
> *The **Affaire des Placards** was a public relations master stroke by any standard … and it got Catholic France up in arms against the heretics in its midst. Overnight, every evangelical had become a terrorist.*
>
> > *[R]umors spread like wildfire throughout the city. Some said that the heretics were going to burn down the churches and massacre the faithful during mass; others that the Louvre would be sacked. Foreigners, especially those who spoke German, were targeted by frightened Parisians, and a Flemish merchant was lynched by a mob.*
>
> *Many with the means and the prudence fled; it was this event* [that] *drove John Calvin from Paris to Switzerland...*
>
> *Those that stayed saw several of their number burn.*
>
> *[Barthélemy] Milon ... paralyzed from the waist down, was the first. He had been found with the treasonable poster in his possession.*

[Clearly, this poor soul had absolutely nothing to do with these events and it bespeaks of particularly evil people who sought to capitalize off of one despicable occurrence with another; that of ridding themselves of a burdensome "useless eater"; a term coined by the "Anglican" Priest Robert Thomas Malthus.[194] A similar event occurred in 2008

when two women with Down's Syndrome were used as fodder for "suicide" bombs in Baghdad, Iraq, where the death toll reached 73 with scores more wounded.[195]]

> *As the martyrology filled in the years ahead and France hurtled towards the Wars of Religion that would shape the 16th century, the* ***Affair of the Placards*** *in retrospect came to mark** a decisive turning point for the House of Valois towards an ultimately self-defeating violent repression of Protestantism. ...[196]*
>
> *The Affair of the Placards was the September 11 of the early French Reformation when the overnight posting of anti-Catholic placards sent the polity off the rails,* [and] *claimed six victims on this date in 1535.*
>
> *The formerly indulgent Renaissance-king Francis I was obliged by this late-1534 effusion of propagandizing to dissociate violently from heretical tolerance.*
>
> *And maybe that would have been that. But the first placard incident was repeated by a follow-up posting on the night of Jan. 12-13 of an anti-sacramental pamphlet by Antoine Marcourt — the anthrax mailings to the hijacked planes, as it were[lxxiii] — charging that the Catholic "Mass has plunged half the world into an abyss of public idolatry."*
>
> > ***[xxiii] This is a reference to the anthrax-laden letters that were received mainly in the Washington DC area by major news agencies and two Roman Catholic, Jesuit-affiliated politicians — Senate Majority Leader Tom Daschle and serial secret leaker, United States Senator Patrick "Leaky" Leahy.***
> >
> > ***Both 9/11 which slaughtered some 3,000 Americans and the anthrax letters which killed 5 and sickened 17 were Roman false flags conducted by Papal, Jesuit agents in the United States.***
>
> *Francis flipped out. He closed bookstores and suppressed publishing. "One does not argue with heretics," the Sorbonne agreed. What, do you want the terrorists to win?*

[Bèze actually lists the death toll at 8, and says this about King François I: ***He ordered eight martyrs to be burned alive in four principal quarters of the city, and declared with a solemn oath that***

he would not spare his own children, if by any chance infected with these, as he called them, most execrable heresies.[197]*]*

> *So on this date in 1535, a grand Catholic procession — representing all the city's guilds, all its religious orders, all its holy relics, and all its princes of the blood, with Francis himself modestly carrying a penitential taper to absolve his capital — wound through the city, punctuated by the torching of six accused Protestants.*
>
> *At the ensuing feast, the king announced his intention to destroy heresy.*
>
> *The procession of January 1535, with the inclusion of the sacrament, the number of holy objects transported, and the involvement of so many notables, was unprecedented. The elaborate character of the ritual is a good indication of the seriousness with which the authorities viewed this most recent evidence of the inclusion of heresy into French territory. The posting of the placards was regarded as a pollution of the king's realm, the perceived danger being that the disease contaminating and "infecting some of his subjects" would multiply, undermining the very constitution of the social body … "An attack upon the holy sacrament", according to the logic of the symbolism employed in the procession, "presents a direct threat to the sacral character of the community, to the nation's well-being, and hence amounts to an oblique attack on the person of the sovereign." Given the close association established between the sacrament and the monarch, it is no wonder that those implicated in the affair of the placards were regarded as being guilty not only of heresy but also of* ***lese-majeste*** *[**"treason" by offending a royal!**]*.[198]

It is with good reason that a Counter-Reformation false flag would target Guillaume "William" Farel. ~ [*Secret History*](), Cirucci[384]

Sadly, this was not the only bloodletting of Christians during the reign of François I.

The Waldenses and Vaudois

Early Christians, dedicated to preserving scripture, congregated together and fled to the Alps where they settled in mountain valleys, protected by the geography of their surroundings.

These valley-dwellers became known as ***Vaudois****.*

They chose their surroundings well and, consequently, began to be called something else, ***Valdenses*** *(more commonly called "Waldenses") derived from* ***vallis densa****, "deep, dreary valley".*

This name became reinforced by the ascendency of Evangelist Pierre Vaudès, also known as Peter Waldo.

In the 600 years since Justinian made the Bishop of Rome Holy See over all the Holy Roman Empire, those who stayed away from the syncretistic mixing of pagan beliefs with Christian doctrine began to call the Empire "Dragon" and "Whore of Babylon" as well as labeling the Papacy as anti-Christ.

> *Sometime shortly before the year 1160 he was inspired by a series of events, firstly, after hearing a sermon on the life of St. Alexius, secondly, rejection of transubstantiation when it was considered a capital crime to do so, thirdly, the sudden and unexpected death of a friend during an evening meal.[1][2][3] From this point onward he began living a radical Christian life giving his property over to his wife, while the remainder of his belongings he distributed as alms to the poor.*
>
> *At about this time, Waldo began to preach and teach publicly, based on his ideas of simplicity and poverty, notably that "No man can serve two masters, God and Mammon" accompanied by strong condemnations of Papal excesses and Catholic dogmas, including purgatory and transubstantiation, while accusing them of being the harlot from the book of Revelation.[4] By 1170 he had gathered a large number of followers who were referred to as the Poor of Lyons, the Poor of Lombardy, or the Poor of God who would spread their teaching abroad while disguised as peddlers.[5] ~ Wikipedia*[79]

*The **Valdenses** may have been erased from history but those who were aware of them held them in high regard for their dedication and purity — in both morals **and** dogma.*

As a result, they and their dedication to Scripture made them a prime target for the Papacy.

> *We need not multiply authorities, or nothing would be more easy; but we cannot refrain from adding that of one who will not be accused of partiality towards any form of Christianity: "It is an extraordinary fact,"; observes Voltaire[xxii], after affirming the antiquity of the Vaudois Church as the remains of the first Christians of Gaul, "that these men, almost unknown to the rest of the world, should constantly have persevered, **from time immemorial**, in usages which have been changed everywhere else."[1]*
>
> *...a few of the more modern historians take the same side, considering it a sufficient honour for the Vaudois Church "to he descended from a simple layman of Lyons, whose piety, moderation, and courage may serve us for a perpetual example, and to have brought out the truths of the Gospel three ages before the Reformation, as well as to have preserved it since that time amid sufferings and privation."[1] ~ Willyams[80]*

Their preservation of Scripture and proclaiming Rome as the Whore of Babylon drew the ire of the Papacy and they would pay for it, dearly. ~ Secret History, Cirucci[385]

Although they attempted to stay hidden and away from the reach of Rome, a temporary transfer of the Vatican to Avignon put them clearly in the crosshairs.[ccciv]

> *Vaudois or Waldenses were the common names of a Christian reform movement, initially based out of Lyon in the 1170s. Peter Waldo or Valdo, a prosperous Lyonnais merchant, sold his belongings and began preaching the benefits of a focus on core Christian beliefs. The foundation for this association was a return to a lifestyle of simplistic*

needs and devotion to God as outlined in the Gospel of the New Testament.

The Vaudois gained advocates in Provence, in an era that coincided with the rise of the Catholic Church's power in France. Threatened – the Catholic Church declared the Vaudois heretics in 1215. Between 1309 and 1378, there were seven powerful Catholic Popes residing in Avignon...[386]

The return of French soldiers from the "Italian War" and the infusion of Lutheranism into already-dangerous Vaudois enclaves made 1545 the year to strike.

Jean Maynier d´Oppède was ordered by Francis I to implement the massacre.

Outside the Piedmont the Waldenses joined the local Protestant churches in Bohemia, France and Germany. They had regrouped in the Luberon and followed their religions in a carefully concealed manner ...

Their increasing interaction with the Protestant churches having brought the Waldenses to the attention of the authorities, the Parlement of Provence issued the "Arrêt de Mérindol" on 18 November 1541[2]*. This was confirmed in 1545 by Francis I after a series of appeals eventually failed. In April, Maynier raised an army of Provençal troops, who were joined by forces from the Papal* ***Comtat Venaissin*** *against the Waldensians of Merindol and Cabrières*[3]*.*

Antoine Escalin des Aimars was commanding the troops that accomplished the massacre.

The leaders in the 1545 massacres were Jean Maynier d´Oppède, First President of the parlement of Provence, and Antoine Escalin des Aimars, who was returning from the Italian Wars with 2,000 veterans, the ***Bandes de Piémont****. Polin was on his way to fight against the English in the area of Boulogne after returning from an embassy to Constantinople, where he was French Ambassador to the Ottoman Empire. While in Marseilles in 1545, he was requested to assist Jean Maynier d´Oppède in the repression.*[4]

These soldiers took villages of Mérindol and Cabrieres and also devastated neighbouring Waldensian villages.[1] Deaths ranged from hundreds to thousands, depending on the estimates, with hundreds of others sent to forced labour in the French galleys, and several villages (between 22 and 28) were devastated.[5][6] The execution of one young man, a servant, may well be the first example of execution by firing squad in Europe, at least for causes of ideology[7].

In the aftermath, both Francis I and Pope Paul III approved of the actions taken, and Maynier was awarded Imperial honours by the Pope[8]. When Henry II took the French throne, however, he promised to investigate the affair, and had the leaders of the expedition tried by the Parlement of Paris, though all but one of them was eventually acquitted[9]. The massacres may have been influential in the process wherein the Waldenses became more and more attached to the Calvinist churches.[1][1] ~ Academic[387]

The gruesome details have been glossed over by “historians” and “academics” but Foxe gives a few.

On the morning of the 16th, one “Poulain” began the dreadful work by destroying the villages of Cabrierette, Papin, La Mothe, and St. Martin, the property of the Baron of Cental, then a child, [and] *therefore unable to help his tenantry, who were utterly defenceless, and slaughtered without resistance. The soldiers not only killed men, but violated women, murdered pregnant women and children, and cut off the breasts of living mothers, leaving them and their infants to perish together.*

D´Opede exulted in this beginning of glory; and, amidst the shrieks of the peasantry, caused a crier to proclaim that no one should give food or shelter to any fugitive under pain of death. The villages were pillaged and then burnt down, covering with ashes the bodies of the slain...

On the 18th, D´Opede entered Merindol, at about nine o’clock in the morning, but found that place also empty of inhabitants. One person alone remained, and he an idiot. He had surrendered himself to a soldier, who demanded twelve francs for his ransom. The brave

General disbursed the francs for the satisfaction of the captor, tied poor Morisi Blanc to a tree, and shot him.[[cccv]]

His troops emptied the two hundred houses of Merindol of all that they could carry away, then burnt them down, and destroyed the blossoming orchards around the town, according to the letter of the edict. ...

On the 19th, the marauders environed Cabrieres, a slightly-walled place in which some of the inhabitants unfortunately tried to stand a siege, and the next day opened a breach, and offered the defenders their property and life, with justice, if they would admit them without more resistance.

There were but sixty men, and thirty intrepid women, who had resolved to fight for hearth and altar, but now saw that Cabrieres was lost.

Others had fled away to the caverns in the neighbouring mountains, and the church was filled with women and children.

Their leader, Etienne le Marroul, capitulated honourably; and they were in the act of marching out, unarmed, when the President and his crew rushed on them, and made them prisoners.

About thirty were taken into a meadow, and hacked to pieces, limb from limb; and the others were taken to Marseille, Aix, and Avignon for justice.

D´Opede, however, had not ended his day's work. He caused the thirty women to be shut up in a barn, and then set fire to the building at the four corners.

A soldier, in pity, opened a door, or window, that they might escape; but his comrades ran to the spot, and pitched them back again into the flames with their pikes and halberts.

Meanwhile parties of ruffians had gone to the caverns, and dragged out fugitives, whom they brought into the castle-hall, where, driven together like a flock of sheep, they were surrounded by soldiers, while two Captains, Yalleron and Gaye, entertained D´Opede, and acquired a stock of merit, by murdering them all.

To the troop of Avignon was assigned another service. Their Captains led them to the church, where they found eight hundred women and children; but in a sanctuary of heretics there could be no refuge, and they were slaughtered as rapidly as the butchers could bury weapons in their bodies.

Just as they were wading out of the church through the blood yet flowing, a relative of D´Opede, the Baron de Coste, came to offer him all the inhabitants of La Coste, to be taken alive to Aix, and to dismantle the place, if he would send him a sufficient force to take possession. His object was to diminish the amount of murder, by removing the people into a position where, for shame's sake, some pity might be shown; and his offer was instantly accepted, at least in words.

Anna Charboniere, daughter of Giovanni Charboniere of La Torre, is tortured and murdered in like manner of Vlad the Impaler.

Three companies of infantry marched over to La Coste, where the people were ready to depart; but they had no sooner entered the village than they began to kill the men, and treat the women with the usual brutality.

To finish all, they burnt the place.

*The campaign being ended, after other ravages of the same kind, the President and his men prepared to carry home their spoils; and as they were marching off, messengers from the multitudes that lay famishing in their mountain hiding-places ventured to appear before the Chief, and ask permission for their companions to emigrate in a body into Germany, desiring only free passage so far as the frontier, the scanty clothing that was on their backs, (**leurs pauvres chemises*** [their tattered shirts]*) and their women and children.*

But the prayer was vain.

The messengers returned only to tell their friends that no alternative was allowed by the persecutors but to deny Christ or die.[[cccvi]] *Not one abandoned his profession, although many died of hunger, cold, and weariness; and at last the remnant re-occupied some part of the desolated country, resumed their simple worship, again made the ground fruitful under cultivation, and the Vaudois have been preserved by the blessing of God as a distinct people unto this day.*

Merindol, Cabrieres, La Coste, and others of those villages, exist no more; but the names are an imperishable accusation of worse than Saracen barbarity against the Church of Rome.[[cccvii]]

Signals of divine judgment followed the ruffians of Provence. Two of the Captains were drowned as the troops passed over the Durance.

Europe heard of the massacre with horror; and the Parliament, covered with shame, endeavoured to justify themselves by sending someone to the King, to assure him that the people thus destroyed had been previously heard and condemned as heretics.

At their request, His Majesty gave them letters (August 23d, 1545), approving of their zeal; but the thought of guilt rankled in his bosom, and forced him to make a profession of deathbed repentance.

Four thousand persons, as it was estimated, were butchered, twenty-two villages laid waste, and seven hundred men sent to the galleys.

> *Wholesale slaughter now began to characterize the French persecutions.*[388]

François I died as he lived; having sex where-ever and with whomever he pleased and periodically slaughtering animals for enjoyment.

> *Francis is ... chiefly remembered as a libertine ... he had several acknowledged mistresses and other liaisons. Brantôme (1540 - 1614) wrote of him: "He loved greatly and too much; for being young and free, he embraced now one, now another, with indifference". ... After Francis died of venereal disease at age 52 (on March 31, 1547), two months after Henry VIII, his reputation began to slip and reached bottom in 1832 with Hugo's* ***Le roi s´amuse****.* ~ San Diego Opera[389]

Henri II was now king and there was yet another Medici emerging from a trail of bodies to stand beside him. At his coronation, the new King wore a tunic emblazoned with the monogramed letters "H/D" for "Henri & Diane" to honor his mistress, Diane de Poiters.

But Catherine de´Medici had what she wanted; power and pregnancy which would bring about the next generation of Medici rulers.

The following order of business was to insure that the Medici and Valois continued to rule over humanity, courtesy of inbreeding, feudalism and "the Divine Right of Kings".

The King and Queen immediately arranged for their son, François II, to marry Mary Stuart; then 5 years old and living with the Valoi but destined to become "Mary, Queen of Scots", whose mother was Marie de Guise of the rival family from Lorraine.

François ***II*** was named after his *grandfather*, François ***I***, not his *uncle* François ***III***, who was betrothed to Mary Tudor before she became "Bloody Mary", but the engagement was broken off and Holy Roman Emperor Carlos V took his place. Unfortunately for Mary, her mother Catherine fell from grace when she failed to produce a male heir and the engagement to Carlos was broken off in favor of Felipe II, King of Spain and Portugal.

After Bloody Mary's 5-year reign and early death at age 42 (a God-send to the surviving English Protestants), Felipe then married another of Catherine's children, Elisabeth.

Another daughter, Claude, was married to Charles III, Duke of Lorraine. Charles Number 3[cccviii] wasn't a Guise of Lorraine, he was a Habsburg — different Ruling Elite family, same principle.

Daughter Marguerite (Anglicized "Margaret") became Queen of France when she was married to Henry III of Navarre, who renounced his Christianity ("Protestantism") as a condition for his succession to the Throne of a Catholic-dominated nation.

Another son, Hercule, had an interesting and different path from his siblings. Changing his name to François upon his confirmation (to honor his brother, François II), Hercule / François became a protector of Huguenots, helping to bring about the short-lived "peace of Monsieur" (also known as the "Edict of Beaulieu"), on 6 May 1576.

François would go on to court mostly-Protestant Elisabeth I of England. Although she fondly referred to him as her "frog", she did eventually break off the engagement; some of her advisors were concerned about François having the "Jezebel of our age" as his mother, despite his bravery for the Protestant cause.

The fear was not unfounded. The Serpent Queen was behind the match and, in fact, initially wanted her effete son Henri III to marry the Protestant Queen.

Although Henri cared more about fashion than *affaires d´état*[cccix], a marriage to Elizabeth was too much for his Catholic scruples.

> *Catherine was ... keen to marry her favourite son, Henri, duc d´Anjou (the future King Henry III), to the English queen, Elizabeth[1]. This too was a controversial idea. As the daughter of Henry VIII and Anne Boleyn, Elizabeth was viewed by the Catholic world as a heretic and a bastard.*
>
> *What is more, the match was strongly resisted by Anjou himself. Elizabeth was twenty years his senior (he was seventeen and she*

> *thirty-seven) and had been excommunicated and deposed by the pope (25 February 1570). Her flirtation with the earl of Leicester had caused scurrilous mirth at the French court. Anjou could not see that his honour would be enhanced by marriage to "a whore" (**putain publique**), as he called her, and he told his mother that he would never take her as his wife.*[4] ~ Knecht[390]

Robert Dudley, 1st Earl of Leicester was the favorite of Elizabeth. His brother was the husband of Lady Jane Grey. His father, John Dudley, 1st Duke of Northumberland, led the government of England's (and perhaps the world's) truest Protestant, young King Edward VI. After Bloody Mary Tudor and her Catholic army conducted their *coup d´etat*, Elizabeth shared cells in the Tower of London with the Dudley family. The Duke of Northumberland and Jane's husband (Robert's brother), Guildford Dudley, were executed. Robert and his brothers were spared, however, because the Dudleys had ties to Catholic Spain — a connection Bloody Mary coveted.

The Earl was a passionate Protestant whereas the Queen always placed the stability of her rule above her faith. She frequently tried to keep unruly Puritans in place, while Leicester encouraged them. Dudley was the English Governor-General in support of the Protestant Dutch Revolt. Had the Spanish Armada landed, Leicester would've confronted them as the British defense force's Commander.

Dudley was also a prominent statesman both at home and abroad. Because of his power, a libelous pamphlet was circulated against him titled "Leicester's Commonwealth". Thought to have been written by British Catholic Thomas Morgan (a spy for Catholic Mary, Queen of Scots and an agent in the plot to murder Elizabeth), it slandered Leicester as a gigolo of opportunity and a murderer. The fact that Dudley's first wife, Amy Robsart, had died falling down a flight of stairs (ruled accidental by the coroner's inquiry) only aided the slander.

Charles IX would marry Elisabeth of Austria (another Habsburg) and reign as King of France. Upon his demise, his brother Henry III took his place and he married Louise, Duchess of Lorraine.

Other children, Victoria, Joan and Louis, never had a chance to be married to proper Royalty as they died too young.

If this seems like a muddling of familiar names, difficult to keep track of, simply understand that it was all arranging of “them” to continue ruling over “us” regardless of national or international borders.

Persecution of Protestants

When it came to religious intolerance, Henri was an even better Catholic than his father.

> *Henry II carried repressive religious legislation further than his father had done. On 8 October 1547 he set up a special tribunal in the Parlement of Paris to deal with heresy cases.*
>
> *It became known as the* ***Chamlffe ardente*** *(Burning chamber) on account of the severity of its sentences.*[45] *The new tribunal was opposed by the church courts, which resented the loss of their traditional jurisdiction. On 19 November 1549 a new edict attempted to satisfy them, but conflicts over jurisdiction continued, causing Henry to issue the Edict of Chateaubriant (27 June 1551), which represented a draconian tightening up of the heresy laws. In the light of reports that the judiciary was itself being infiltrated by the new religious ideas, the parlements were required to investigate their own personnel every three months, in a session called a* ***mercuriale****.*[46] *...*
>
> *Despite mounting persecution, heresy — now more clearly in the form of Calvinism*[[cccx]] *— spread to many parts of France.*
>
> *In February 1557 Henry II was sufficiently alarmed to ask the pope to set up the Inquisition in France. Paul IV* [Gian Pietro Carafa] *responded by appointing three French cardinals to serve as inquisitors-general for all the kingdom, but opposition from the Parlement frustrated this move.*[48] *He was especially disturbed by the changing social complexion of Protestantism; whereas he had always regarded it as a proletarian faith* [followed only by the “ignorant masses”], *nobles were now being drawn to it in increasing numbers. Nor were the exiles content to practise their faith abroad: they wanted to convert their countrymen. In 1555 Calvinist missionaries, trained in*

> *Geneva, began to slip back into France. They came in response to Calvinist churches looking for instruction and leadership. The distribution of the missions shows that the movement was mainly centred in towns, like Poitiers, Orleans or Rouen. Paris was the first city to have a properly constituted Calvinist church with its own pastor. Among the provinces, Calvinism was strongest in Guyenne, Gascony, Normandy, Dauphine and Languedoc; it made little or no headway in the north and north-east where powerful Catholic families, like the Guises, were dominant.*[49]
>
> *On 24 July 1557 Henry II issued the Edict of Compiegne, which has been called "a declaration of war" on the heretics.*[50] *However, fierce opposition from the Parlement and the defeat at Saint-Quentin prevented it from being implemented. The Genevan missionaries were thus able to continue their activities. They tried at first to be as discreet as possible, holding services in heavily curtained rooms or in forest clearings. Sooner or later, however, they were bound to attract notice. This happened in Paris on 4 September 1557, when an angry mob broke up a Calvinist meeting in a house in the rue Saint Jacques. The police intervened and some 132 people were arrested, including some noblewomen.*
>
> *They were sent for trial and three were executed.*[51] ~ Knecht[391]

Unfortunately for Henri, that which he had sown, he would soon reap.

The Death of Henri II

> *Henry II was an avid hunter and a participant in jousts and tournaments. On 30 June 1559, a tournament was held near Place des Vosges to celebrate the Peace of Cateau-Cambrésis with his longtime enemies, the Habsburgs of Austria, and to celebrate the marriage of his daughter Elisabeth of Valois to King Philip II of Spain. During a jousting match, King Henry, wearing the colors of his mistress Diane de Poitiers,*[16] *was wounded in the eye by a fragment of the splintered lance of Gabriel Montgomery, captain of the King's Scottish Guard.*[17] *Despite the efforts of royal surgeon Ambroise Paré, the king died of sepsis on 10 July 1559.*[18] *He was buried in a cadaver tomb in Saint Denis Basilica. Henry's death played a significant role in the decline of*

jousting as a sport, particularly in France.[19] ~ Wikipedia

It is said that there were multiple predictions of Henri's death, which makes the circumstances even more unique as the splinter passed through the helmet just below the eye slit of Henri's face shield, into his eye, causing infection that eventually killed him.

One prediction came from the "Medici family astrologer".

> *... the Medici family astrologer, Luca Gaurico, ... had said that Henri must "avoid all single combat in an enclosed space" in his 40th year.* ~ Thériault[392]

The other was from Michel de Nostredame, better known from the Latinized single name of "Nostradamus".

> *Century I. — Quatrain 35.*
>
> ***Le lyon jeune le vieux surmontera***
> ***En champ bellique par singulier duclle:***
> ***Dans cage d´or* les yeux lui crevera,***
> ***Deux classes† une,‡ puis mourir, mort cruelle.***
>
> *Translation.*

The young lion shall overcome the old
*On the field of war in single combat [**duelle**];*
He will pierce his eyes in a cage of gold.
This is the first of two loppings, then he dies a cruel death.

** Bouys [**Oracles**, p. 103] says that the King alone had the right to a visor of pure gold. I believe this to be pure nonsense. It would be little stronger than lead. It merely means a gilt casque, and I think some of the accounts say so in as many words. If Bouy's were right, the King courted death.*

*† Greek, **Κλάσις**, breaking or lopping.*

*‡ Latin, **una**, the one or first.*

*Montgomery, who at the moment of the narrative bore the name of Captain Coryes (Garencières, p. 25), afterwards became Earl of Montgomery, overthrew Henri II. (**le vieux lion**) in the tournay-lists or duel, and pierced him above the eye through the gilt visor of his helmet.*

This is the first of the two blows that will destroy the dynastic tree of the house of Valois.

Henri II., wounded mortally, shall be the first to die a violent death; whilst his son, Henri III., will be the second, who fell by the hand of Jacques Clement.[[cccxi]]

This is a very celebrated quatrain. It is found in the earliest edition of the quatrains published at Lyons in 1555, containing merely 300 quatrains.

It lifted Nostradamus into celebrity at once.

He had applied it to Henri II. several years before it happened, and had even announced it as a prediction to the King himself.

He was well known to Henri II., to whom he dedicated the last three Centuries, in a long and curious epistle, which we have already given in full.

The King seems to have had infinite confidence in Nostradamus, for he let him draw the royal horoscope, as well as that of his two children, in 1556.

The story of this is curious, as given by Guynaud in his "Concordance des Prophéties de Nostradamus," 1712, pp. 86-91. Henri II., it would seem, proclaimed a tournament in the Rue St. Antoine, the site of the Bastille, then in the country, for July 1, 1559, in honour of the marriage of his daughter Elizabeth of France with Philip II. of Spain.*

He listed himself as one against all comers. The joust being nearly over and the sun setting, the Duc de Savoie begged him to quit the running, as his side was already victorious; but the King wanted to break another lance over it, and commanded the young Comte de Montgommeri, captain of his Scotch Guard, to run a tilt in conclusion.

He excused himself, but the King insisted and grew angry.

Of course the young man then obeyed, put spurs to his horse, and struck the King upon the throat, below the vizor. His lance shivered, and the butt raising the vizor, a splinter wounded the King above the right eye, cutting several of the veins of the ***pia mater****.*[[cccxii]]

The King swooned. He lived on, however, for ten days in terrible agony, as foretold in the prophecy, ***Deux classes une, puis mourir, mort cruelle****.*

Nostradamus styles both of them lions, as they both fought under that device. The King wore a gilt helmet, so that the ***cage d´or*** *was literally fulfilled.*

The strange part is that another astrologer, named Luc Gauric, had once been visited by the King in company with two other gentlemen, to whom he feigned to give precedence; but the astrologer, perhaps knowing him, insisted on addressing him first,

and told him he would die in a duel.

He also prophesied a violent death to the King's companions, and managed to displease the whole trio. The King said of this, "We are making peace now with the King of Spain, so it is not very likely that I shall challenge him, and as a king I could in no other way be challenged, whatever may be the fate of the other gentlemen."

The lion motif of Henri II's jousting armor.

Guynaud quotes this story from the ***Princesse de Clèves****, who, in the second volume of her writings, represents the Court as discussing the credibility of astrologers, the prevalent opinion apparently being rather strong against them.*

Still, we know that Henri II. greatly honoured Nostradamus.

Prophetic warning is evidently futile, for the King had two separate warnings and heeded neither. ~ Ward[393]

Perhaps even more interesting is that Gabriel, *comte de Montgomery*, whom Henri forced to kill him, sought refuge in England where he became a Protestant!

That sealed his fate with the Maggot from Italy.

Michel de Nostredame seems to have predicted that, as well.

Arrest of Montgomery (May 27, 1574). [I. 73.]

Century III. — Quatrain 30.

Celuy qu´en* luitte† et fer au faict bellique
Aura porté‡ plus grand qui luy le prix,
De nuict au lict six luy feront la pique,
Nud, sans harnois, subit § sera surprins.||

Translation.

To him who in strife and armour in the warlike field
Shall have carried away the prize from one greater than himself.
By night in bed six men will stab him;
Unprotected he will be surprised naked and unarmed.

*This means that Montgomery, who in joust (**an faict bellique**, — **bellique**, we are told, means an engagement on horseback) with lance*

> *in hand will have carried away the prize from Henri II. (**plus grand que luy**) will be suddenly surprised in bed at night, naked and unarmed, by six men, who will deliver him into the vengeful hands of Catherine de Medici.*
>
> *Some say the dying King gave him free pardon; others report that he fled to England to save himself: but at any rate he came to England, and there embraced Protestantism.*
>
> *When he returned to France, he placed himself at the head of the revolted Huguenots in Normandy, and was besieged in Domfront by the Marshal de Matignon and a large force, to which he was obliged to surrender.*
>
> *The terms of the surrender guaranteed his life, but by express command of Catherine he was arrested in his own castle of Domfront on the night of May 27, 1574, by six gentlemen of the royal army, and carried to the Chateau of Caen, thence to the Conciergerie at Paris, and there immured, where the great tower still goes by his name. ~* Ward[394]

Catholic Royals and clergy pledging the welfare of their Protestant quarry only to break their bond, torture and kill them is a sadly frequent story.

The Guises immediately took advantage of the death of the king and moved in to the Louvre with the royal family on the pretense of “mentoring” the teenage successor; Francis II was only 15. Two Guises, both named “Charles”, took over; Charles the Inquisitor Cardinal of Lorraine and Charles III, Duke of Lorraine.

The Queen Regent immediately ejected “from court” (but did not kill) her husband’s “whore”, Diane de Poitiers.

> *Catherine’s interest in the occult seemed to intensify around this time, or, at the very least, it became more widely known. During her last stay in Chaumont, Catherine allegedly performed a scrying ritual with Cosimo de Ruggiere, her personal astrologer. Ruggiere, said to be a master of the dark arts and also possibly a necromancer* [used a mirror for this particular ritual and, supposedly, it gave the Maggot Queen the

future of three children reigning but being replaced by Henry IV, King of Navarre]. ...

She also commissioned an amulet from Nostradamus made from metal mixed with human and goat's blood, her "workroom" at Blois had walls filled with hundreds of secret cabinets where she was said to keep an array of poisons, and one of her contemporaries, philosopher Jean Bodin, claimed that she invented the Black Mass. ~ Thériault[395]

After claiming that many of the rumors about de´Medici were "exaggerations" designed to "attack a powerful woman", Thériault admits:

...at least some them were true. One of the reasons we know this is because Catherine didn't do a great job of cleaning up after herself at Chaumont [castle, "Chateau de Chaumont"]. *When Diane took possession of* [the] *castle, she was horrified to discover pentacles drawn on the floor along with other evidence of occult practices.*[396]

If Gilles de Rais was bringing in so-called "apostate" Priests to help him with Satanic Masses a generation before Catherin de´Medici was born then, clearly, she did not "invent" the "Black Mass". It was just one more aspect of the occult that already existed in which she reveled.

The liturgy of the Catholic Mass is an amalgam of ancient paganism, demonism and Judaism with the trappings of Christianity for disguise. With great ease can any practitioner re-direct their focus from "holy" to unholy. This is how hyper-devout Roman Catholic Jimmy Savile could "pray" in Latin while raping children.[cccxiii]

An illustrative example of this can be found in the Catholic veneration of the "crucifix" which forever commemorates the moment that Satan most glorifies in: the suffering and death of Jesus Christ, not His triumphant resurrection.

... it is impossible in the case of those who have once been enlightened and tasted the Heavenly Gift and shared in the Holy Spirit and tasted the Good Word of God and the Powers of the age to come, and then have fallen away, to bring them to repentance again, since they are recrucifying the Son of God for themselves and holding Him up to contempt.

Ground that has absorbed the rain falling upon it repeatedly and brings forth crops useful to those for whom it is cultivated receives a blessing from God. But if it produces thorns and thistles, it is rejected; it will soon be cursed and finally burned. ~ Hebrews 6:4-8, New American Bible (Revised Edition) (NABRE), some capitalization added The ultimate example of this reveling is the “bent cross” of Giovanni Battista Montini; Pope Paul VI.

An excellent exposé of the “bent cross” can be found from the ultra-orthodox Catholic blog “Novus Ordo Watch”.

As Conservative Catholics are forced to acknowledge the far-Left, pro-abortion, pro homosexual agenda, Communist ideology of their Church, they can either choose to leave or erect an escape mechanism that allows them to stay based upon the myth of the “good ole days”; “before Vatican II”, “during the heyday of the Latin Mass”, before the “modernist Popes”

whom they now call “anti-Popes”. They follow the pipe dream of striving to rid their religion of these influences and refuse to acknowledge that this is what their Church has always been.

> ***Francis Brings Back “Bent Cross” Crozier***
>
> *It was bound to happen. Mr. Jorge Bergoglio — whom the world calls “Pope Francis” — has reintroduced the repulsive ‘Bent Cross’ Crozier (sometimes referred to as the “Broken Cross”), after Benedict XVI had, for the most part, abandoned it. ...*
>
> *The “bent cross” **ferula**, or staff, which is a hideous rendition of a crucifix, shows our Lord’s legs immodestly spread apart and shows the cross bars bent, rather than straight. The following photos show that this “crucifix” is repulsive indeed, dishonors Christ, and does not inspire pious thoughts:*

This sinister-looking cross was designed by Italian Lello Scorzelli (1921-1997) during — you guessed it — the 1960s and was introduced — you guessed it again — by “Pope” Paul VI (Giovanni Battista Montini), who used it for the first time at the closing of his modernist robber synod known

as the "Second Vatican Council", on December 8, 1965. In fact, in 1963 Paul VI had given Scorzelli a permanent job in Rome to design this and other "art" for the Vatican ... the impious cross ... is sometimes mockingly referred to as the "twisted lizard": The blasphemous Scorzelli cross bears some striking resemblance to the crucifix drawn by Belgian "artist" Albert Servaes (d. 1966) as part of his "stations of the cross", which were condemned by the Church in 1921 under Pope Benedict XV. Notice in particular the hanging head and the bent legs...[397]

Striking Resemblance to the Scorzelli Cross [left]***: "Crucifixion" by Servaes...*** [Novus Ordo Watch]

By extrapolation, "transubstantiation" also revels in the death of Messiah; the idea that the wine and wafer on a Catholic "altar" physically become the Body and Blood of Jesus Christ.

As recounted in the Gospel of John, first to Rabbi Nicodemus in Chapter 3 and then to the disciples in Chapter 6, Jesus explains that His metaphors mask the power of the Spirit over the physical.

> "It is the Spirit who gives life; the flesh profits nothing. The words that I speak to you are spirit, and they are life." ~ John 6:63

What "Christians" now call the "Last Supper" today has nothing to do with the Passover Seder Jesus celebrated with His Apostles. The round wafer of "eucharist" in no way resembles the unleavened bread that was used.

In fact, it is ancient pagan sun worship through the deity “Baal”, signified by the rising up of a circle out of a crescent in “birth”, which receives the new identity of “Baal-Hadad”.

In Egypt, the disc rising from a crescent was worshipped as “Hathor”, the mother-goddess of sexuality. Apis, the sacred bull was also worshipped with a disc of Hathor cradled in it’s crescent-forming horns.

“Baal-Hadad” of Mesopotamia.

Even the “monstrance” which a Catholic Priest raises with the “eucharist” inside maintains this paganism. The “eucharist” sits in a crescent inside the “monstrance” and often the “monstrance” is a sunburst similar to the Jesuit logo with alternating straight and wavy rays as metaphors for the male and female genders in sex.

The Christian Bible states quite clearly that Jesus Christ died once, for all [Romans 6:10, Hebrews 6:4-8, Hebrews 10:1-18, I Peter 3:18], as He stated on the cross, “Tetelestai!”. “It is finished!” [John 19:28-30]

“...in the porches of my ears did pour...”

François II was married to Mary, (future) Queen of Scots at 14. Within a year, his father was dead and he was King.

His time on the throne was short-lived as a rather unusual illness began to plague him.

> *As Francis deteriorated throughout the spring and summer of 1560, the Huguenots plotted to overthrow the Guises’ regency and give power to King Antoine of Navarre and his brother Louis of Condé, both of whom were Protestant. Antoine and Louis should have held a high position on the royal council as members of the House of Bourbon, but the Guises’ quiet coup after Henri II’s death had pushed them out of the government. The Bourbons and their supporters were understandably* [angry] *and in the months that followed, there were numerous Huguenot riots and revolts across France. ...*
>
> *The Guises insisted on arresting Louis of Condé for treason because of his involvement in Huguenot plots. A brief trial with a stacked jury ensued, resulting in a “guilty” verdict; Condé was sentenced to death. During the same week that the trial began, Francis fell gravely ill with a fistula in his left ear. Catherine* [de´Medici] *... knew that if the Guises had Condé executed, there would* [bloodshed and conflict that would destroy the stability of her power]*; Francis’ death, which would bring about the end of Mary’s reign in France, would do much to lessen the Guises’ power* [“Mary Queen of Scots” was the daughter of Mary de Guise]. ~ Thériault[398]

Within 17 months, François was dead from a unique ailment relating to his ear; it has been guessed to have been a middle ear infection that led to an abscess in his brain.

Poisoning was suspected and, although exotic, not impossible.

Although Protestants have been blamed, it's not wholly out of the question that François' own mother utilized her vast array of Italian poisons to murder her son as a ruthless move to unseat her political rivals, the Guises.

In *The Tragedy of Hamlet, Prince of Denmark* (a.k.a. "Hamlet"), "William Shakespeare" has Hamlet's father assassinated by the pouring of poison into his ear while he slept.

According to the taxpayer-funded, government-operated "British Broadcasting Corporation" ("BBC"), it's possible.

> ...[the ghost of] *Hamlet's unlucky father...tells us what happened:*
>
> > *"Sleeping within my orchard,*
> > *My custom always of the afternoon,*
> > *Upon my secure hour thy uncle stole*
> > *With juice of cursed hebenon in a vial,*
> > *And in the porches of my ears did pour*
> > *The leperous distilment, whose effect*
> > *Holds such an enmity with blood of man..."*
>
> *It's hard to believe that the king wouldn't feel the trickle of poison in his ear and immediately wake up to find his murderer leaning over him. But in 1950 a British specialist in ear anatomy examined this in detail in a paper entitled "Shakespeare on the ear, nose and throat", and concluded that since the murder took place during his "secure hour" and he was "full of bread" he would have been in a deep sleep. If the substance was oily and the vial had been warmed to body temperature while Claudius the murderer clasped it in his hand, then he could well have remained asleep while it was poured into his ear.*
>
> *A larger debate surrounds what real substance Shakespeare might have been referring to as "hebenon". Candidates include hemlock, ebony, yew, deadly nightshade and henbane (so-named because it could kill a chicken). The leaves, bark and berries of yew trees are indeed poisonous, as of course are hemlock and deadly nightshade. Ebony is weaker and contains a resin, rather than the "juice" to which Shakespeare refers. Henbane is part of the potato, tobacco and tomato family, and small amounts are used in modern medicine to help with*

> *various gastro-intestinal disorders due to its ability to slow down the movement of the stomach and intestines. If its principle constituent, hyoscyamine, was made into a very strong, concentrated extract, it could be lethal to humans as well as chickens.*[399]

With the sudden death of François II, the crown fell to the next Valois/Medici child, Charles IX.

Charles, however, wasn't up to the task and the Serpent Queen continued to rule France as "Regent" for him.

Her most pressing need was caused by the popularity of Protestantism. There were too many now in France to simply eradicate. If the Queen Regent was to stay in power, she needed to reconcile the Huguenots with the militant arm of the Catholic Church.

She attempted to do this at the Colloquy of Poissy on September 9th in 1561.

> *As such conferences go, Poissy was a flop. ...*
>
> *Although this conference was stoutly resisted by France's leading Catholics, Catherine brought it about.*
>
> *...the pope's men did everything they could to sabotage the talks. They simply had no intention of reaching an agreement with ideas they defined as heresy.* ~ Graves[400]

While Poissy pretended to placate Protestants, the ongoing Council of Trent confirmed the Bible as forbidden and all non-Catholics as heretics, worthy of the extermination recommended by Saint Thomas Aquinas, himself.[401]

Perhaps the most clear evidence of Poissy being a ruse to lull the Huguenots into a false sense of security was that it was attended by the Superior General of the Jesuits, Diego Laynez[402]; a companion of Catherine de ´Medici and an agent of Niccolò Sfondrati, "Pope Gregory XIV".

> *The Jesuits certainly had an easier task with the rulers of France than with those of England. The woman on the French throne with whom, after the death of Henry II, the Jesuits had to deal was, at the bottom of her heart, a good Catholic, and, moreover, as a true representative*

of her sex, was easily influenced and readily disposed to allow herself to be won over by astute tactics on the part of the Jesuits. ...

Catherine de' Medici, who governed in the name of the new king, a minor [was convinced by] *an earnest and forceful discourse by the* [2nd] *Jesuit general,* [Diego] *Laynez* [not to waiver in allowing the Huguenots any privileges].

"Make no concessions to heresy," Laynez had declared, addressing himself to the queen-regent, "but rather uphold the Catholic faith with all your authority! Then will God, mindful of your piety, preserve to you your earthly kingdom and admit you to the kingdom of Heaven. If, however, on the other hand, you are unmindful of your duties towards God, then tremble lest, together with the heavenly kingdom, you lose also your earthly kingdom." ~ Fulop-Miller[403], [cccxiv]

The Tragedy of Pax Medici

In lock step do sources claim Catherine de´Medici was tragically trapped between two opposing forces in France; "she was the only practical will in a sea of extremism".

Charles IX's reign did not begin very auspiciously; he wept at his coronation from exhaustion and stress. In spite of this poor start, Catherine pressed on. The first thing on her agenda was religious reconciliation, which she hoped to bring about at a conference with Protestant and Catholic leaders in Poissy. Unfortunately, Catherine didn't seem to grasp what was at stake when it came to her country's divided faith. She saw it as a political issue, and couldn't understand why everyone was being so unreasonable about it. Her own relationship with Christianity was loose and practical; the Catholic Church generally aligned with her life ambitions and she did seem to find some genuine comfort in its rituals, but she was also drawing pentacles on floors. ~ Thériault[404]

Catherine de´Medici, the "practical Catholic" was so dedicated to her religion that she was a "Franciscan Tertiary".

There was another instrumentality of vast importance, in utilizing which both Francis and Dominic[[cccxv]] *manifested their organizing*

ability — the Tertiary Orders through which laymen, without abandoning the world, were assimilated to the respective brotherhoods, aided in their labors, shared in their glory, and added to their influence, thus stimulating and utilizing the zeal of the community at large.

There is a trace of an order of ***Crucigeri*** *or Cross-bearers, laymen organized for the defence of the Church, claiming to date back to the time of Helena, mother of Constantine, and revived in 1215 by the Lateran Council, but there is no evidence of its activity or usefulness.*

Francis, however, who, though unlearned in scholastic theology and untrained in rhetoric, excelled his contemporaries in ... eloquence which carried the hearts of his hearers, on one occasion produced by his preaching so profound an impression that all the inhabitants of the town, men, women, and children, begged admission to his Order.

This was manifestly impossible, and he bethought him of framing a Rule by which persons, of both sexes, while remaining in the world, could be subjected to wholesome discipline and be connected with the fraternity, which in turn promised them its protection. ...

The project and the Rule were approved by the [P]*ope in 1221, and the official name of the organization was "The Brothers and Sisters of Penitence," though it became popularly known as the Tertiary Order of Minorites, or Franciscans.*

Under the more aggressive name of "Militia Jesu Christi," or Soldiery of Christ, Dominic founded a similar association of laymen connected with his Order.

The idea proved a most fruitful one.

It reorganized to some degree the Church by removing a portion of the barrier which separated the layman from the ecclesiastic.

It brought immense support to the Mendicant Orders by enlisting with them multitudes of the earnest and zealous, as well as those who from less worthy motives sought to share their protection and enjoy the benefit of their influence.

> *Types of both classes may be found in the royal house of France, for both St. Louis and Catherine de Medicis were Tertiaries of St. Francis.* ~ Lea[405]

It is worth repeating that de´Medici saw no conflict between Satanism, witchcraft and her religion and it was “apostate” Priests that aided her just as they did Giles de Rais.

More importantly, however, the Throne of France — whether attended by a Valois, a Guise or a Medici from Italy — never wavered in its dedication towards Rome nor its extreme hatred for all non-Catholics, especially Bible-believing Christians.

The truth can best be discovered by the unfolding destiny of Rome’s most dedicated order, the “Society of Jesus”.

The exploitation of German peasants over “indulgences” paid to release souls from sin by Pope Leo X (another Medici; Giovanni) and the Vatican’s shock troops at *that* time, the Dominicans, forced Augustinian Priest Martin Luther to deeply examine how man might be justified before a perfect God.

Luther became obsessed with any effort known to the Priesthood; menial labor, fasting, prayer, flagellation, confession, yet peace eluded him.

> *“I was a good monk, and kept the rule of my order so strictly that I may say that if ever a monk got to heaven by his monkery, it was I. All my brothers in the monastery who knew me will bear me out. If I had kept on any longer, I should have killed myself with vigils, prayers, reading, and other work. ...”*[406]

> *“When I was a monk, I made a great effort to live according to the requirements of the monastic rule. I made a practice of confessing and reciting all my sins, but always with prior contrition; I went to confession frequently, and I performed the assigned penances faithfully. Nevertheless, my conscience could never achieve certainty but was always in doubt and said: ‘You have not done this correctly. You were not contrite enough. You omitted this in your confession.’ Therefore, the longer I tried to heal my uncertain, weak, and troubled conscience with human traditions, the more uncertain, weak, and troubled I continually made it. In this way, by observing human*

traditions, I transgressed them even more; and by following the righteousness of the monastic order, I was never able to reach it. ...”

“After confession and the celebration of Mass I was never able to find rest in my heart. ...”

“I almost fasted myself to death, for again and again I went for three days without taking a drop of water or a morsel of food. ...”

“I chose twenty-one saints and prayed to three every day when I celebrated Mass; thus I completed the number every week. I prayed especially to the Blessed Virgin, who with her womanly heart would compassionately appease her Son.”[407]

The answer came to him when he read Romans 1:17 citing Habakkuk 2:4.

For I am not ashamed of the Gospel of Christ, for it is the Power of God to Salvation for everyone who believes, for the Jew first and also for the Greek.

For in it the righteousness of God is revealed from faith to faith; as it is written, “The just shall live by faith.” ~ Romans 1:16-17

“Behold the proud,
His soul is not upright in him;
But the just shall live by his faith.” ~ Habakkuk 2:4

With deepest relief Luther was able to give up his fruitless attempts at perfection and live, by faith, through relationship with Jesus Christ.

“The words ‘righteous’ and ‘righteousness of God’ struck my conscience like lightning. When I heard them I was exceedingly terrified. If God is righteous (I thought), He must punish. But when by God’s grace I pondered, in the tower ... over the words ... ‘the righteousness of God’ (Romans 1:17), I soon came to the conclusion that if we, as righteous men, ought to live from faith and if the righteousness of God contribute to the salvation of all who believe, then salvation won’t be our merit but God’s mercy. My spirit was thereby cheered. For it’s by the righteousness of God that we’re justified and saved through Christ. These words (which had before

terrified me) now became more pleasing to me. The Holy Spirit unveiled the Scriptures for me in this tower."[408], [cccxvi]

This simple concept is the very foundation of Christianity.

> *And you He made alive, who were dead in trespasses and sins, in which you once walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit who now works in the sons of disobedience, among whom also we all once conducted ourselves in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind, and were by nature children of wrath, just as the others.*
>
> *But God, who is rich in mercy, because of His great love with which He loved us, even when we were dead in trespasses, made us alive together with Christ (**by grace you have been saved**), and raised us up together, and made us sit together in the heavenly places in Christ Jesus, that in the ages to come He might show the exceeding riches of His Grace in His Kindness toward us in Christ Jesus.*
>
> ***For by grace you have been saved through faith, and that not of yourselves; it is the Gift of God, not of works, lest anyone should boast.***
>
> *For we are His Workmanship, created in Christ Jesus for good works, which God prepared beforehand that we should walk in them.* ~ Ephesians 2:1-10 [emphasis added]

The Opus Dei Effect

Inversely, Catholicism encourages that guilt for sin be assuaged with works and finally "absolved" through confession to a Priest and "penance".

The extreme application leads to what can be termed "the Opus Dei Effect", named after the organization that practices daily "mortification" (the wearing of medieval devices that cause pain). When the adherent reaches a designated level of "penance", they can commit an equal amount of sin.

Another man wrestled with justification before God in Luther's time, yet he came to a completely different conclusion.

> *Íñigo López de Loyola was born to Spanish Aristocrats in 1491, in the Basque region of Spain. While fighting the French in the battle of Pamplona, the young knight was struck by a cannon ball wounding one leg and breaking another. Cut down in his prime, he was denied the glory of battle that was his due. He spent some time recuperating and immersed himself in spiritual literature.*
>
> *This began his redirection of martial zeal...somewhat. He was still a very focused soldier.*
>
> *When he was able, Loyola set off to visit the Benedictine Monks at Montserrat and their shrine for the "Blessed Virgin". While there, he claimed to have had a vision of the Queen of Heaven and her Child. The vision encouraged him to purge himself and that is what he did in a cave outside of Manresa. For 10 months, the soldier lived a spartan life in prayer, fasting and flagellation. He was ordained a Priest and his zeal attracted followers. They decided to form a community to stamp out the fledgling Reformation. He was given an audience with Pope Paul III who made it official.*
>
> *The year was 1540 AD, just 23 years after Luther made his Protest. ~* *Illuminati Unmasked*, Cirucci[409]

Recall that Paul III was Alessandro Farnese of the now-invisible Farnese family.

Loyola, along with Pierre Lefevre ("Peter Faber") and Francisco de Jasso y Azpilicueta ("Francis Xavier") originally intended their order be known as "the Knights of the Virgin Mary" but Farnese was shrewd and realized a broader appeal in "the Society of Jesus".

Loyola never broke free from his dependence upon works and lived a life so extreme that he was twice arrested by the Inquisition but a place was found for his fanaticism.

The Jesuits soon replaced the Dominicans as Papal shock troops and they began to administer the duties of the Inquisition.

By "coincidence" Loyola's company is known as "The Company" just as the Central Intelligence Agency (which it completely manipulates and

rules).

Even more, Christians and Catholics alike began calling them “Jesuits” in mockery as the Romance language *jesuita* can be roughly translated “Are you Jesus-like?”

As a testimony to that fanaticism, Luther’s Protest was all but wiped out. Nearly all sects of Christianity teach Jesuit heresies such as Futurism, Preterism, Dispensationalism or the “Pre-Tribulation Rapture”.

In lock-step do all “Protestant Christian” leaders teach the Jesuit eschatology (Biblical prophecy) that erases Rome as the Fourth and Final Beast, the Great Harlot of Babylon drunk on the blood of the Saints in the Books of Daniel and Revelation.

Occasionally there can be found pockets of Adventists or Baptists that attempt to disclose the crimes of the Vatican in general and the Society in specific but all are heavily infiltrated and often the source exposing the Jesuits goes to a purposefully offensive extreme to discredit themselves. [cccxvii]

One “Independent Baptist” source has such a sensationalized but accurate description (these are theological points directed at Christians):

> *The Roman Catholic Jesuit Order, which also arrogantly calls itself the “Society of Jesus”, is little known, much less understood, today. And yet, not very long ago, this organisation was so well known, that “Jesuitical” was a most derogatory term; the Order was outlawed from almost every Roman Catholic nation; and it was feared and loathed by the inhabitants of all enlightened nations. ...*
>
> *And furthermore: the Jesuits are still here; they are still going strong; they have not altered their doctrines, nor repented of their wicked deeds – in fact, they continue to perpetrate them; they remain what they have ever been – the “secret army of the Papacy”, ruthlessly dedicated to the advancement of the Roman Catholic religion, the domination of the world, and the total destruction of Protestantism! They are the most dangerous Order of Priests within the Roman Catholic religion, and indeed, the most dangerous organization of men the world has ever known. ...*

Secular historian Edmond Paris, writing in ***The Secret History of the Jesuits****, made the following pertinent remarks: "There is another reason [for writing against the Jesuits]... At the same time as new generations of readers come, new generations of Jesuits come to light. And these work today with the same tortuous and tenacious methods, which so often in the past set to work the defensive reflexes of nations and governments. The sons of Loyola are today – and may we say more than ever – the leading wing of the Roman Church. As well if not better disguised than of old, they remain the most eminent 'ultramontanes', the discreet but efficacious agents of the Holy See throughout the world, the camouflaged champions of its politics, the 'secret army of the Papacy'." ...*

The Jesuit Order, which has brought so much bloodshed and suffering upon the world, originated with a man named Ignatius de Loyola, born in 1491. Loyola was a Spanish Basque who became a fanatical Romanist after living a debauched life as a soldier. Amidst much fasting and self-flagellation he claimed to have many visions of God and of Mary, the Roman Catholic goddess. In Spain he studied Romanist theology, and wrote a book entitled ***The Spiritual Exercises****.* [[cccxviii]] *This was to become the textbook of the Jesuit Order.*

Loyola founded the so-called "Society of Jesus" in 1534, with a small band of friends; and in 1540, the Jesuit "Constitution" was drafted. Pope Paul III issued a bull approving (and thus officially "founding") the Jesuits as a religious order of the Roman Catholic "Church". But here a most important fact must be carefully noted, for it throws such light on the real nature of the Society: Loyola established the Society before it received papal approval! The little band of men who made up the Society at its inception in 1534 vowed to obey Loyola, as the General of the organisation, before they ever went to the [P]ope! It was not Loyola's original intention to submit his Society to the [P]ope, but only to himself as its General. He had ambitions of his own. Only if he found it absolutely necessary, did Loyola intend to seek papal approval for his Society.

And this fact is borne out by a Roman Catholic author, Alban Butler, who wrote, "In 1534... St. Ignatius and his six companions[[cccxix]]*... made a vow at Montmartre to visit the Holy Land, and unite their labours for the conversion of the infidels; or, if this should be found not practicable, to cast themselves at the feet of the [P]ope, and offer their services wherever he thought fit to employ them." This fact, so often overlooked, is tremendously significant. The truth is that it was only when Loyola and his small group failed to begin work in Palestine, and cast their eyes towards Europe as a field of operation, that Loyola approached the* [P]*ope for papal approval – knowing as he did that, there being so many religious orders already in Europe, he could not work in Europe without such approval.*

This means that, ever since its founding, the Society has been totally dedicated, first and foremost, not to the [P]*ope, but to the Jesuit General. The Jesuits are a law unto themselves. While outwardly acknowledging the authority of the* [P]*ope of Rome, their real allegiance is to the Jesuit General. All orders come from the General; even the* [P]*ope's instructions are only passed on if the General sees fit. It is not surprising that the Jesuit General came to be known as the "*[B]*lack* [P]*ope". Naturally enough, when Loyola approached Paul III, the latter had strong reservations. It was not difficult to discern that men swearing absolute obedience to their General would be independent of the Papacy and thus dangerous to it, even though they professed to be submissive to it. Loyola cunningly suggested that the Jesuits also take a vow of obedience to the* [P]*ope, to go wherever he should send them; and Paul III agreed to this, and sanctioned the Society. Yet, in practice, the Jesuits have never taken any notice of this vow. The* [P]*ope is only obeyed when it suits them.*

... the Jesuits seek to convert the world to Roman Catholicism. And in order to achieve this goal, they have not hesitated to use every means, both fair and foul – especially foul. They have not hesitated to lie, cheat, commit murder, or use revolution, if need be, to further their aims. At the very top of their priorities has always been the destruction of Protestantism, as shall be seen. For the spiritual conflict must be discerned in all this: Satan's ages-long war on the Church of the living

God (Rev. 12). For centuries, Rome has been the centre of Satan's assault on the saints of God (Rev. 13:7; 17:1-6; 18:24; Dan. 7:25). Through the Inquisition and other means, the devil sought to wipe out the Church of Christ. Then, with the formation of the Jesuit Order in the sixteenth century, a new and deadly weapon was created to be used against biblical Christianity.

... a book penned by Loyola, entitled "The Spiritual Exercises" ... and the "Constitutions", are used in the preparation of Jesuit recruits for their task.

The "Spiritual Exercises" work on the imagination of the candidate, helped by a "director". Various biblical scenes are "relived" in front of him, beautiful ones alternating with frightening ones. His sighs, inhalings, breathing, and periods of silence are all noted down. After a number of weeks of this, he is ready for indoctrination. Obedience is absolutely vital to the Jesuit Order. Every Jesuit must be in total obedience to his superior, obeying him without question. In the Constitutions of the Order, it is repeated some 500 times that the Jesuit must see in the General, not a fallible man, but Christ himself! This was said by a professor of Roman Catholic theology. In the words of Ignatius: "We must see black as white, if the Church says so."[[cccxx]]

The Jesuit probationer is required by the Constitution to be as a corpse,[[cccxxi]] *able to be moved in any direction (Part IV, Chapter 1); striving to acquire perfect resignation and denial of his own will and judgment (Part III, Chapter 1). According to the Constitution (Part IV, Chapter 5), the Jesuit may even sin, if the superior commands it – for sin will not be sin in such a case! In the "Society of Jesus", there is a greater authority than the* [P]*ope, and a greater authority (as far as the Jesuits are concerned) than God* [H]*imself – and that is the General. For what God has declared to be sin, the General can declare to be no sin. The Jesuits readily dispense with the laws of God, if it suits them. "Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter!" (Isa. 5:20). It is precisely this type of abominable doctrine that has enabled the Jesuits to commit murders,*

depose kings, destroy governments, without any fear of divine punishment. "The end justifies the means", is a fundamental, albeit unwritten, rule of the Jesuit Order. Never has a more fanatical and powerful Society existed upon the earth.

While, in general, the Roman Catholic institution has never had any qualms about "re-interpreting", or even dispensing entirely with, the commandments of God – of the Papacy it was prophesied that it shall "think to change times and laws" (Dan. 7:25) – the Jesuits, in particular, are masters at this. In this way they have often endeared themselves to the people, and in particular to the upper classes, whom they have always sought to control. By being lenient in the confessional, imposing slight penances for sins or even justifying sin whenever it suited them, they became the most popular confessors of the rich and powerful in many lands – and still are. And naturally, as their popularity as confessors grew, so their influence over the upper classes grew, and consequently their control over governments. For it must be understood that confession of sins to a [P]*riest is absolutely essential for salvation, according to Roman Catholic theology: the Romanist must confess to a* [P]*riest, and that* [P]*riest must absolve the penitent of sin. This is not the teaching of God's Word, which declares that sins must be confessed to God, who alone has the power to forgive them (Psa. 32:5; Lk. 11:4).*

Here are some examples of their subtlety and wickedness: Regarding the commandment, "Thou shalt not bear false witness" (Exod. 20:16), the Jesuits (if it was to their advantage) would teach adulterous women that if their husbands asked them if they had broken the conjugal contract, they could reply in the negative, because the contract still existed. One can imagine how such a teaching would appeal to an adulterous woman who came to confession – and how the Jesuit influence over her would be strengthened. They have taught that a servant who helps his master seduce a girl is not committing a mortal sin if, by refusing to help, he will be ill-treated by his master; that, if a young girl is pregnant, a miscarriage can be induced if her pregnancy will bring dishonour to herself or a [P]*riest. They have readily dispensed with the laws of God in order to protect themselves.*[410]

That the Jesuits twist and manipulate guilt over sin is no exaggeration. In the early 1960's, a team from "The Company" met with the Kennedy family in their posh Hyannis Port, Massachusetts compound to brief them on how to maintain a far-Left agenda on abortion, homosexuality, etc. while remaining in good standing with "the Church".[411]

One of the "theologians" was Massachusetts Congressman Father Robert Frederick Drinan, S.J. As a collared Congressman, Drinan maintained a hard-Left agenda, including on abortion.

"Independent Baptist" Shaun Willcock continues:

> *A Jesuit named L'Amy taught that "A monk or* [P]*riest is allowed to kill those who are ready to slander him or his community"; and, "If a Father [priest], yielding to temptation, abuses a woman and she publicises what has happened, and, because of it, dishonours him, this same Father can kill her to avoid disgrace!"*[[cccxxii]] *Is it any wonder that the Jesuits have often resorted to murder? Jesuit theologians have repeatedly, in their writings, justified the telling of lies if to do so is advantageous to the Society. Scripture declares that "all liars shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone" (Rev. 21:8); but by advocating "equivocation" and "mental reservation", the disciples of Loyola have convinced themselves that certain lies are not lies, when the end justifies the means.*
>
> *As for the murder of kings and rulers, this has often been justified in Jesuit writings. For example, a Jesuit named Juan Mariana taught, in great detail, the lawfulness of the murder of rulers, as far back as 1599; and his book bore the imprimatur of the Jesuit Order – the Order gave permission for it to be published, its doctrines having been previously sanctioned by "learned and distinguished" Jesuits. As for any prince or king whom the* [P]*ope has excommunicated, it is actually meritorious to kill him, according to Jesuit doctrine.*
>
> *The history of the past four centuries is filled with documented examples of the murder of rulers by this diabolical Order. But it is particularly against Protestantism that the Jesuits have directed all their venom. For over four centuries they have worked tirelessly for its destruction. And they have sought to use every method at their disposal*

to accomplish this, including seeking to murder the "Doctors [teachers] of the Reformed Churches".[412]

Perhaps, not surprisingly, even the Mother Church was slow to accept this new offspring. As stated before, Loyola was arrested twice by the Inquisition for "extremist" behavior before going to Paris and creating his Society.

Sister orders immediately saw Loyola's Company as a threat, and it was. Jesuit agents would eventually infiltrate and control them as well!

The Catholic nations of Europe were torn between their desire to place the Papacy and their concerns over this hyper-devout upstart and his quickly-growing order.

Protestant Historian Carl Theodor Griesinger (1809 - 1884) tells the story.

> *It was much more difficult for the Jesuits to form any permanent settlements in France, than in ... Italy, Portugal, and Spain, although they certainly left nothing untried which they had found to succeed elsewhere.*
>
> *Loyola had already taken much pains in endeavouring to charm the French people with his newly-founded Order, and quite at the commencement of his Generalship sent to Paris sixteen of his scholars, for the most part Spaniards, under the pretext that they might have the advantage of completing their theological studies at the famous university in that city; in truth, however, in order that they might there sound the country and gain friends for Jesuitism.*
>
> *They were either very unskilful, however, or had very bad luck, for not a single soul took any notice of them, and Loyola was obliged to send money to them from Rome in order to meet their daily wants.*
>
> *Their affairs, however, seemed to take quite a different turn after the celebrated Fathers,* [Diego] *Laynez and* [Alfonso] *Salmeron, made the acquaintance, at the Council of Trent, of William du Prat, Bishop of Clermont, and were successful enough to interest him greatly in their Order, so much so, indeed, that this extraordinarily wealthy prelate (he was son of the former Chancellor of France), presented them with a*

special residence in Paris, in the Rue St. Jaques, and the chapel attached thereto.

They had then, at length, a possession from which they might be enabled to carry on their operations in future, and, as may be easily understood, a number of the Fathers at once entered it in order to prosecute these designs.

But what signified their visits to the hospitals, and their fanatical preaching at the corners of the streets? What mattered their self-inflicted floggings and such-like proceedings?

The Parisians were neither Spaniards nor Italians, and consequently laughed at them in their face when they merely ventured to look up. [[cccxxiii]]

Besides which, they soon began to quarrel with the regular clergy, who did not hesitate to call them publicly by the name of hypocrites. Indeed, one of the doctors of the Sorbonne (that is to say, a professor belonging to the Theological Faculty of Paris), published a pamphlet against them, in which he pointed out to the Government that the best thing to be done with them would be to hunt them at once out of the country with disgrace and ignominy as beggars and vagabonds.*

This was, indeed, but a bad beginning, and a rough snubbing into the bargain; but they were soon to fare better.[413]

Cunningly, Loyola enlisted the aid of perhaps the most important Frenchman beyond the Throne at that time (who was also a fanatical Catholic and Inquisitor).

In the year 1549, Cardinal Charles of Loraine, one of the most influential men in France at that time, who belonged to the equally powerful as wealthy house of Guise, made a journey to the Papal Court of Rome; and here Ignatius Loyola contrived, by flattering his passions, to gain him over to such an extent that the former promised, on his return to France, to take the Society under his special protection.

> *This, in fact, he truly and loyally did, but, naturally, not so much, out of a feeling of friendship towards the holy Ignatius as from purely selfish motives, as he was promised for himself, and ventured to expect, great assistance from the Jesuits in carrying out his plans against the hated heresy of the Huguenots.*[414]

Charles Cardinal Guise of Lorraine did all he could to influence the husband of Catherine de´Medici, King Henri II, and little coaching was necessary as the King and Queen were happy to lend a hand to Catholic fanaticism.

> *Suffice it to say, however, that he did all in his power in their favour with Henry II. of France, and in consequence of this the Order obtained through a Patent Brief of January 1550, royal authority to establish a college in their abode in Paris, having the same privileges and rights as Jesuit colleges established in the other countries of Europe.*
>
> *The pious Fathers were now jubilant; but they had begun too soon to rejoice, as there was still something wanting to justify this glee, namely, the approval of the Parliament, the supreme tribunal of Paris.**[415]

Interestingly, the French Parliament and the country's premier university (which was also deeply Catholic), "the Sorbonne" in Paris, were obstacles.

> *The King of France, in fact, was not, as it happened, so absolute a monarch as his colleagues of Spain and Portugal, inasmuch as it had been the unimpeachable custom, for a century at least, that the royal ordinances, dispensations, and edicts could only have legal sanction accorded to them, and be observed by the French nation, after they had been recorded and registered by Parliament, and consequently the said tribunal, so to speak, stood in the relation of a legislative assembly. ...*
>
> *The remaining, and certainly much smaller portion of the kingdom, which had been subsequently acquired either by conquest or through confiscation of feudal tenure, had, again, its own particular Upper Tribunal or Parliament; consequently, a royal decree, in order that it*

should be valid throughout the whole of France, must also be registered by all the Parliaments of the country. ...

King Henry II., as a matter of course, at once remitted his Patent Brief relating to the Jesuits to the Parliament of Paris, demanding its registration. The High Court of Law, however, referred the case for the consideration of its procurators, Bruslart, Marillac, and Segnier, and they at once declared that France stood in need of no new Order, more especially of none such as that of the Society of Jesus, which had been favoured by Rome with exemptions of so curious a nature. ...[416]

One of the "curious exemptions" in the Papal Bull of Alessandro Farnese ("Pope Paul III"), titled *Regimini militantis Ecclesiae*, was that punitive action against any Jesuit would only come from the "Chair of St. Peter".

This refusal and rebuff was taken up by the proud Cardinal of Loraine as an insult to himself, and afresh he urged the King to insist on his Patent Brief being carried through Parliament; and he so far succeeded as to cause the ruler to come to a firm determination on the subject. So Henry II. forthwith issued a command to the Supreme Law Court to register the brief. The latter now, however, showed its independence of royal caprice by, instead of obeying the command, handing over, as well to the Archbishop of Paris as to the Sorbonne, in order that they might be more carefully examined and well considered, the whole of the Acts, that is, the petition of the Jesuits, the Patent Brief of Henry II. together with all the Papal Bulls referring to the Society of Jesus.

Eustach du Bellay, being at that time the Archbishop, took his time over the matter, in spite of all the King's importunity and the pressure put upon him by the latter; the Theological Faculty of the Parisian University, which at that time was not excelled in learning, stability, and talent by any other in the world, also pursued a like course. At the end of two years they were at length ready, and, strange to say, the decision at which both parties had arrived agreed pretty well together, although that of the Archbishop was certainly much more moderate than that of the Sorbonne.[417]

Interestingly, the Catholic theologians at “the Sorbonne” were suspicious of the special treatment Loyola and his company were getting in Rome and throughout Europe. The decision (below) could’ve come from any Protestant source!

> [Bellay] *first declared that the privileges accorded to the Jesuits were not only contrary to the common law, but also equally so to the dignity and consideration due to the Bishops and Universities; and he, lastly, gave it as his opinion “that it would be more advisable to build houses for the supplicants on the frontiers of Turkey, in order that thence they might be able to convert the heathen, than that they should be allowed to have settlements in the midst of Christendom.”*[[cccxxiv]]
>
> *The Sorbonne, on the other hand, in its sitting of 1st December 1554, delivered its decision (which it may be remarked was come to unanimously), verbatim in the following terms: “This Society ... arrogates to itself the name of Jesus, without having any right to do so, a name adopted by penal, dishonourable, and infamous people without distinction, whose members differ in no degree from the secular Priesthood in customs, divine service, manner of life or clothing*[!] ... [The] *monks* [of] *this Society* [by preaching, teaching and] *administration of the Sacrament, directly infringe upon the rights of the Bishops and Ordinaries,* [and are] *in opposition to the whole of the hierarchical Orders hitherto established*... [The Society] *conduces to the detriment as well of other remaining Orders as of princes and the great men of the world, as also to the prejudice of university freedom and the injury of the people* [and] *has been accorded many privileges, indulgences, and liberties on the part of the Papal Chair.* [T]*his Society casts a slur upon all other Orders of monks, weakens the diligent and pious exercises of virtue in the lonely cell, causes the members of other Orders to desecrate their vows, draws away believers from the obedience and submission which they owe to their ordinary spiritual advisers, robs ecclesiastical as well as secular authorities of their rights, and gives rise to disturbances in both of these classes as well as among the people, causing many hardships, controversies, schisms, and a number of other disorders.”*

> *"Indeed, in a word, when one takes everything into account, this Society appears to be destined to produce an imperilment of the faith, disturbance of the Church's peace, and the undermining of monachism. It is, in fact, more adapted for pulling down than for building up."*
>
> ~ Griesinger[418]

How prophetically put!

As they have done since their inception, the Jesuits patently ignored all restrictions against them and went underground; digging an insurgency even against a devoutly Catholic nation like France.[cccxxv] Having the King and his Medici Queen as allies only encouraged them to do so.

> *It was thus that the Theological Faculty of Paris expressed itself, in its celebrated sentence, and in consequence thereof the Parliament hesitated to give effect to the Patent Brief of the King.*
>
> *Eustach du Bellay, however, the Archbishop of Paris, thereupon went even a step further, and forbade the members of the Society of Jesus from henceforth exercising any Priestly offices whatever within the range of his diocese.*
>
> *The pious Fathers were then worse off than ever, as the power of the King could not protect them against episcopal orders, and consequently everyone expected that they would have, from this time forth, to turn their backs upon Paris forever.*
>
> *They did not, however, by any means do so, for they contrived to find out a back-way of escape.*
>
> *They certainly, it is true, shut up their house in the Rue St. Jacques, leaving behind them only a few of their number for its management; they themselves, however, withdrew* ***in corpore****, as one is used to say, to the neighbourhood of St. Germain des Pres, to one of the magnificent abbeys independent of the bishopric of Paris, where they were joyfully received, and a chapel was therein allotted to them to enable them to hold divine service and carry on other priestly offices.*

> *At the same time their old friend, the above-mentioned William du Prat, Bishop of Clermont, in proof of his abiding favour, presented them with a large property in the little town of Billon, along with no less than 40,000 thalers*[[cccxxvi]] *in ready money, so that they might by these means be able to erect there a college.*
>
> *They consequently, then, still remained in France, and acquired, moreover, another possession; it must be admitted, however, that this was as nothing compared with the property they had obtained in the other proper Roman Catholic countries.*
>
> *Besides this, did not the publicly expressed sentence of the Sorbonne find an echo throughout the whole of civilised Europe, and was not the injury arising to them out of this of much greater consequence than might have been at the first moment expected?*[419]

Luther's Protest was spreading like wild fire and France had her own figure to lead with: Jehan Cauvin, more commonly known as "John Calvin".

It was the threat of Protestant / Huguenot popularity that the Jesuits would ride into power; the fledgling order of fanatics was the perfect weapon for the Catholic Elite to use against an uprising of "heretics".

> *Still, it is said, "Time will discover a plan," and the Jesuits relied upon this ancient proverb. Protestantism, or, more properly speaking, Calvinism, as is well known, now extended itself with rapid progress throughout France, and were it only to go on progressing at the same rate as it had already done, the Huguenots, as the adherents of the Reformation were designated in France, must soon necessarily gain the upper hand.*
>
> *Such a great misfortune for the Catholic Church, which now impended, the pious Fathers well knew how to turn most excellently to their own advantage, for they secretly spread themselves about everywhere, and more especially about the Court; and none were more skillful in fighting against the detested heresy than the members of the Society of Jesus, and in this, beyond all of them, did Father Pontius Gongordan especially excel, going about everywhere in ordinary plain, clothes.* [[cccxxvii]]

> *On this account many of the French began now to look upon the Order with more friendly feelings, and that injurious impression caused by the Sorbonne decree by degrees disappeared, at all events among good Papists.*
>
> *A favourable circumstance for them now took place in the year 1559, when, on the death of Henry II., there came to the throne his first-born son Francis II., espoused to Mary Stuart; at that time the Queen's uncle, the Loraine Prince of Guise, was all-powerful at Court.**
>
> *The pious fathers, however, with the Cardinal of Loraine at their head, urged the weak King to prepare a new Patent Brief in favour of the Jesuits, supporting it and exerting their influence upon Parliament with all their power, in order that the latter should undertake the registration of the King's commands.*
>
> *Strange to say, however, the Court remained obstinate, notwithstanding that it was well disposed, all the same, towards Catholicism, the proof of such being the case consisting in the fact that many sentences of death were hanging over the Huguenot heretics.*[420]

Through all of this, the Medici Queen Regent gave her whole-hearted support to the Jesuits proving that she was *never* disposed to a serious peace with the Huguenots as all "historians" and "biographers" claim nor did she find any conflict between her dedication to the occult and her Catholicism.

She even took to herself a Jesuit confessor which allowed the Company to manipulate her further and maintain a source of intelligence directly from Court.

> *It was, however, necessary for it to remain obstinate, as it rested, with itself to save the rights of the Gallican Church, and the independence of the Government of the country in all secular affairs, since the sons of Loyola placed the Papal power above all church assemblies, as well as above princes, kings, and emperors, their whole thoughts and energies being, as we know, directed towards forming a universal Romish, Jesuitical despotism. Francis II. thus compassed the legal admission of the Jesuits even as little as Henry II. had done, and, as he died shortly afterwards, in the year 1560, his efforts were unavailing.*

It was not otherwise under his successor Charles IX., whose guardian, during his minority, was his mother, Catherine de Medicis.

She certainly, at first, became captivated by the pious Fathers, and some authors even maintain that she had secretly selected Father William Petit as her Father Confessor. She also truly attacked the Parliament in two acrimonious documents, and demanded of the same that it should at length relax its opposition towards the Jesuit Fathers.

She assuredly, too, did not hesitate to declare publicly as follows:

> *"One must hasten to receive the Jesuits into the kingdom, as, otherwise, from such delays and stubborn opposition they might be driven into an evil disposition, and be constrained to quit France again of their own accord, to the great detriment of religion and of the common weal."*

~ Griesinger[421]

In the best example of pious perversion, de´Medici and her Jesuits would lead processions of naked and near-naked women around France as she whipped them or they whipped themselves. It was the ultimate expression of Catholicism masquerading as "Christian" discipline (one can easily imagine unreported orgies taking place immediately following each procession).

In France, at that time, the Jesuits proceeded in the wildest manner with their flagellant processions, especially during the period that the government was carried on by Catherine de Medicis, as on one occasion, at Avignon, she herself headed the sodality of ladies, and it further became known that she was accustomed to administer the discipline to the younger ladies of the Court with her own hands.*

Her son, Henry III., was also a great friend of the flagellant processions, and regularly made his appearance at them provided with his rosary, wax candle, crucifix, rod, and prayer-book.

Such a high example was, of course, contagious, and it thus became easy for the Jesuits to form congregation[s]* and sodalities in the large towns where they possessed establishments of any description.*

> *In this respect Lyons and Toulons, as well as Avignon, which has been already mentioned, were especially distinguished, but Paris itself became still more zealous than all of them. There women and maidens were almost daily to be seen running about in the streets with nothing on them but a loose garment, and with scourges in their hands ; and even ladies of the highest rank, as, for instance, the Duchesses de Guise, de Mercoeur, d´Aumale, d´Elbeuf, and others, exhibited themselves in a state of seminudity, in order to show the example to the other women of Paris.* ~ Griesinger[422]

Catherine de´Medici, François Clouet, circa 1555 AD. Wikimedia Commons

With the "Wars of Religion" threatening the stability of her rule, the Serpent Queen did what any good Medici would do: threw lavish parties to encourage any trouble-makers to revel in debauchery instead of fighting each other. As they went on to "make love, not war", the Merchant's Daughter would send in her specialists: intelligence-gathering prostitutes. She called them her "Flying Squadron".

These were not any vagabond women, down on their luck, willing to do anything for a livre; these were well-born women (good Catholics, all), whom were also called her "Ladies in Waiting". They were similar in training to Japanese geishas who spent the majority of their time impressing their victim with their clothes on before getting what they needed during the *coup de grâce*.

Even the sycophant "historians" pretending to be objective had to acknowledge the debauchery.

> *In a famous letter of advice to her son, Catherine recalled the court of his grandfather, Francis I. The old king used to say that two things*

were necessary to live at peace with the French and to retain their love: they needed to be kept happy and occupied with some honest exercise, otherwise they were likely to engage in dangerous pursuits.[35] *Taking this advice to heart, Catherine seems to have made a conscious effort to divert the French nobility from fighting each other by keeping them entertained at court. Among its principal adornments were her ladies-in-waiting, numbering about eighty, whom she recruited from the noblest houses in France. Some who regularly accompanied her on her progresses became known as her "flying squadron" and were allegedly used by her to seduce courtiers for political ends.*[36]

According to Jeanne d'Albret, the court of France was a sink of iniquity where the women, not the men, made the sexual advances, but Jeanne was an austere Huguenot, who may have exaggerated the temptations which Catherine's circle held for her son.[37] *According to Brantome, Catherine's court was not only an earthly Paradise but "a school of all honesty and virtue", yet it seems that she could be very broad-minded at times. On 9 June 1577 she threw a banquet in the grounds of Chenonceaux in honour of her son, Anjou, following his capture of La Charite. The meal was served by topless young ladies.*[38]
~ Knecht[423]

At the time, de´Medici's own subjects called her "the Maggot from Italy" but, since then, in lock step, all biographers, "historians" and "journalists" just call her "Catherine" as if we all should love her as we do "Galileo" or "Michelangelo" or "Hillary" or "Mao" or "Che".

Jeanne d´Albret (Queen of Navarre from 1555 - 1572) was an "austere" (Protestant / Christian), "who may have exaggerated the temptations" of de ´Medici.[cccxxviii] When a young female servant tends to guests half-naked, it isn't conversation they are offering.

The above-mentioned "Brantôme" was Knight of Malta Pierre de Bourdeille whose full nickname was *Abbé* ("Father") Brantôme because he was an Aristocrat who was given the Brantôme Abbey to manage as "Rector". As well as being the Court flatterer, Father Brantôme was a soldier who killed Protestants during the "Wars of Religion", including the

Siege of La Rochelle that was the follow-up attack to the slaughter of St. Bartholomew's Day (which we shall read about shortly).

Most telling in the true Catholic motivations of the Maggot is how she aimed her sex workers at Huguenots to destroy their self-control and their Christianity.

> *One member of the Flying Squadron, Isabelle de Limeuil, began an affair with Louis of Condé and was apparently so successful in her objectives that he quit attending Protestant services for a while. ~* Thériault[424]

With the death of his brother, "François II", of an "ear infection", Charles IX became King of France on the 5th of December in 1560.

François had barely made it to 16 and Charles was 10 so the real Ruler continued to be the Serpent Queen Regent. This only fueled the accusations of those who considered her complicit in the death of her own child.

In the turn of a few years, even Charles would put himself at risk.

> *After the Peace of Saint-Germain-en-Laye ended the third* ["War of Religion"], *Charles IX began spending more and more time with Admiral* [Gaspard de] *Coligny, a gifted military leader and head of the Huguenot faction. Coligny established himself as an important presence in Charles' life and became a close advisor of the king's. As Coligny's influence waxed, Catherine's waned. Charles was, after all, an adult; his mother's regency had formally ended in 1563, and by the end of 1570 he was 20 and married to Elisabeth of Austria.*[[cccxxix]] *It's natural that he was tired of being under Catherine's control. Equally natural was Catherine's seething resentment as Coligny's power over the king eclipsed her own. ~* Thériault[425]

Something needed to be done.

The Serpent Queen had previously attempted to kill de Coligny during the "Wars of Religion".

> *On 7 May* [1569] *d´Andelot, Coligny's brother, died, some said "of a fever", others of poison. Coligny and* [Antoine] *La Rochefoucauld also fell seriously ill at the time, but recovered. On 10 June Cardinal*

Chatillon, who had fled to England, wrote to Frederick III, Elector-Palatine. His brother, he said, had been poisoned. As evidence, he mentioned the findings of a post-mortem and the boasts made by an Italian to several people in Paris and at the French court. Claiming that he had administered the poison, he demanded his reward.[45] *A report reached* [François de] *Alava from England that d´Andelot had been poisoned by a Florentine who had sought a reward from Charles IX. On 27 May Norris reported that an Italian was boasting that he had poisoned d´Andelot and "had made him and the Admiral drink from the same cup".*[46]

How far, if at all, was Catherine[[cccxxx]] *implicated in the plot? A conversation with Alava dating back to 7 April suggests that she was far from innocent. The ambassador advised her to ring the death knell for Coligny, d´Andelot and La Rochefoucauld.*

She replied that she had done so three days before, having offered 50,000 ***ecus*** [$1,500,000] *for the Admiral's murder as well as 20,000* [$600,000] *and 30,000* [$900,000] *for the other two.*[47] *...*

It seems that a concerted effort was now made to undermine the Huguenot rebellion[[cccxxxi]] *by destroying its leader. On 18 July* [Henry] *Norris wrote to* [William] *Cecil: "I am told that a captain Haijz, a German, is sent from there to kill the Admiral by means of poison and that he has been paid the same salary as others who have undertaken a similar mission."*[52] *On 8 August Alava reported to Philip II that a German was staying at his hotel.*

He had come from the Admiral's camp and seemed well informed about the situation there. He had spoken of a plot to kill Coligny. Alava had offered to send him to Charles IX and his mother, but they had declined. Instead, they had enjoined Alava not to tell anyone what he had heard. They were expecting good news at any moment. "Do not ask anything now," they said; "you will soon know everything."

They begged Alava to commit the German to remain silent, by bribery if necessary. Their furtive behaviour coupled with their joyful anticipation convinced the ambassador that they had plotted the Admiral's murder.[53] *A month after this extraordinary scene, a servant*

of Coligny, called Dominique d´Albe, was stopped by Huguenots as he was on his way to the duke of Bavaria. On him were found a ***laissez-passer*** *issued by* [Henry III, then *duc de*] *Anjou and some white powder which was identified as poison. D´Albe admitted that he had been suborned by one of Anjou's guards to poison the Admiral. He was duly tried by a military court, found guilty and executed on 20 September.*[54]

That Catherine should have instigated Coligny's murder is hardly surprising. Since Conde's death, he was the supreme commander of the Huguenot forces. The two young princes, Henri de Navarre and Henri de Bourbon, theoretically led the Huguenot movement but everyone knew that they were only "the Admiral's pages". Coligny's removal would effectively decapitate the Huguenot movement. ...

Poison had long been a favourite political weapon in Italy. It is unlikely that Catherine would have felt any scruples about its use... The attitude taken by the Parlement of Paris was equally drastic. On 13 September Coligny was sentenced to death in his absence, a price of 50,000 ***ecus*** [$1,500,000] *being placed on his head. He was to be strangled and hanged on the Place de Greve.*[55] *An additional decree, on 28 September, offered a reward to anyone who handed him over "dead or alive".*[56]

Pope Pius V congratulated Charles IX for condemning this "detestable and execrable man".[57][[cccxxxii]]

On 9 October 1569 a new twist was given to the murder plot, when a young nobleman, called Louviers de Maurevert, shot the seigneur de Mouy, one of the Admiral's captains, in the back, killing him instantly. Maurevert was a former page of the Guises, who had gone into exile after murdering his tutor. He had planned to murder the Admiral but, as yet, no opportunity had presented itself. He now fled to the royal camp, where he was quite well received by Anjou and other councillors. However, Brantome tells us that Maurevert was "abhorred" by the rest of the army because he had betrayed his master and benefactor. The royal family had fewer scruples. On 10 October Charles IX wrote from Pléssis-lez-Tours to his brother, Alençon, in

> *Paris, asking him to reward Maurevert with the collar of the Ordre de Saint-Michel.*[58] ~ Knecht[426]

After the cessation of fighting, another opportunity presented itself when it came time to create a marriage alliance through her seventh child, Margaret.

The Queen Regent cunningly chose Henri, King of Navarre (who stood in succession to rule France should she run out of heirs — at this rate a very real possibility).

To the embarrassment of the Medici, Margaret had already given herself to Henri de Guise; so much for repairing the Protestant breach. It is said that she was caught in the act by the Queen and her brother Henri and they beat her for it.

The wedding plans moved along.

Thériault notes (in her back-room styled article) what Wikipedia conveniently ignores: the fact that Henri's Protestant mother was vehemently against the match, was incessantly wooed by the Serpent Queen, was won over but died shortly thereafter of a "mysterious" cause.

> *Henri of Navarre's mother, Jeanne d´Albret, who had left court several years earlier after being disgusted by the loose morals of the Flying Squadron, was initially against the match. Jeanne didn't see it as a chance to broker peace; to her, it was more like throwing her son to the wolves — slutty, morally devoid, Catholic wolves. But Catherine pulled out all the stops and was as charming and persuasive as she could be. She even promised to get a special dispensation from the Pope so that Henri of Navarre could remain Protestant. Eventually, Jeanne d'Albret agreed, and they announced the engagement. Less than two months later, Margaret's future mother-in-law fell ill and died in Paris, where she'd gone to buy clothes for the wedding. It was widely rumored that Catherine had killed her with a pair of poisoned gloves.*[427]

Needless to say, the "Papal dispensation" that would allow Henri of Navarre to rule France while *not* being a Catholic was not honored. Henri would indeed be offered the crown but only under the condition that he repent of his Christianity, which he gladly did.

But prior to his wedding, Protestant Frenchmen still considered him “one of their own” and they were deeply pleased at the chance to partake in the power in Paris that was previously and predominantly Papist. A large procession of Protestants planned to participate.

For the Serpent Queen and her controllers in Rome, it was the perfect opportunity to rid France of her burgeoning heretics.

Black Wedding

Again, “journalists”, biographers and “historians” all depict Catherine de ´Medici as being tragically caught up in a spontaneous frenzy of bloodlust but Theodor Griesinger proved with his well-researched details that it was carefully planned *months* in advance.

> *Not long after this, at the commencement of the year 1572, the pope* [Antonio “Michele” Ghislieri, a.k.a. “Pius V”] *despatched his nephew, — or son, Cardinal d’Alessandria, to the French court, charged with inducing Valois to give his sister in marriage to the king of Portugal, instead of to the heretic king of Navarre. Such, at least, was the ostensible object of the cardinal’s journey; but it was, in truth, assumed, but the more completely to blind the Protestants to the actual designs of Charles IX. The cardinal had, in fact, come to remind the prince of the plan long since determined on at the chateau of Rousillon, and that it was full time for its realisation. The king promised in private its fulfilment; and then, at a public audience before the whole court, emphatically rejected the proposal made by the legate respecting the princess, declaring that he more respected the queen of Navarre* [Jeanne d´Albret], *who was then at court with her son, Henry, the princes of Condé, the count of Nassau, and a numerous retinue, than even the pope; and that if the latter, on the plea of too near consanguinity, “should refuse a dispensation for the union of Prince Henry and Princess Margaret, he (the king) would, none the less, lead her with his own hand to the betrothal.”*[[cccxxxiii]]
>
> *Thus the Valois duped the whole world to his real feelings, and effectually banished any trace of misgiving from Admiral Coligny’s bosom. In vain, certain of his brethren in the faith reminded him of La Rochelle, and the undying enmity of the Catholic to the Protestant, of*

> *Queen Catherine's oath, to destroy all heretics, of the king's personal character, moulded from his youth upwards on the doctrines of Machiavelli*[[cccxxxiv]]*; finally, of the papal edict, by which men were forbidden to keep faith with* [any] *heretic: but the admiral persistently maintained "there were no longer any grounds for suspicion and disbelief, for God had clearly turned the heart of the king." These opinions, held by Coligny,* [were] *gradually adopted by the majority of the Huguenot leaders ...*[428]

Antonio Michele "Pope Pius V" Ghislieri was nothing if he wasn't fanatical in his dedication to his duties.

> *The capital of the Papal States*[IV] *and of the Roman Catholic world was now a city of the second rank, with some 45,000 souls in 1558, rising to 100,000 under Sixtus V (1590).* [Michel de] *Montaigne, coming to it in 1580, thought it more extensive than Paris, but having only one third as many houses.*
>
> *Criminals and prostitutes ... constituted a sizable part of the population; many a noble had a standing staff of ruffians. Poverty was general ... The old Aristocratic clans — Orsini, Colonna, Savelli, Gaetani, Chigi — had declined in income and power, though not in claims and pride; younger families — Aldobrandini, Barberini, Borghese, Farnese, Rospigliosi — were taking the lead in fortune and influence, usually through connections with the popes. Papal nepotism had another heyday: the Aldobrandini reaped a harvest from the election of Clement VIII, the Ludovisi from Gregory XV, the Barberini from Urban VIII, the Borghese from Paul V. Paul's nephew, Cardinal Scipione Borghese, enjoying plural benefices and 150,000 scudi per year,*[[cccxxxv]] *laid out the Villa, and built the Casino, Borghese (1615), founded its rich art collections, and earned a moderate immortality in marble from his protégé Bernini. ...*
>
> *A succession of strong popes now helped the Roman Church to survive despite the loss of Germany, the Netherlands, Scandinavia, and Britain to the Reformation. The Council of Trent had confirmed and enhanced the supremacy of the popes over the councils, and the young and*

vigorous Society of Jesus — the Jesuits — was pledged and devoted to the papacy.

Antonio Ghislieri, Dominican friar and Grand Inquisitor, became Pope Pius V in 1566 at the age of sixty-two. The [supposed piety] *of his personal life seemed to him fully consistent with his severity in pursuing heresy. ... He excommunicated Elizabeth of England and released the English Catholics from her allegiance.*[[cccxxxvi]] *He urged Charles IX of France and Catherine de Médicis to prosecute war against the Huguenots till these should be utterly and mercilessly destroyed.*[23] *He commended the harsh measures of Alba in the Netherlands.*[24] *...*

He never mitigated a penal sentence;[25] *he encouraged the Inquisition to enforce its rules and penalties.* ~ Durant[429]

Just after the marriage but before the terrible moment occurred, the plan was almost spoiled by an over-zealous de Guise family.

So stood affairs at Paris, when a premature occurrence almost betrayed and brought to nought all the plans Charles IX. had so carefully nursed to the eve of fruition.

Admiral [Gaspard de] *Coligny, returning to his own residence from an interview with the king at the Louvre, was fired upon from the window of a house, by which he was slowly riding. The shot carried away the forefinger of his right hand, and severely wounded him in the left arm.*

His followers immediately forced their way into the house in search of the assassin, who had, however, already made good his escape. A horse, saddled and bridled, had been held in readiness for the purpose at a back door.

No doubt could be entertained but that the assassin was a certain Nicholas de Maurevert, one of the most trusted servants of the Duke of Guise, who had, indeed, already murdered one of the admiral's intimate friends.

The house whence the shot issued belonged to the Prebendary Villemuire, formerly tutor to the Duke of Guise; moreover, it was

> *usually occupied by the servants of the duke when the latter visited Paris.*
>
> *Thus every circumstance seemed to indicate that the contriver of the attack belonged to the Guise faction, and the Huguenots spoke openly this belief, and with the King of Navarre and the Prince of Condé at their head, declared their intention to leave Paris when their lives were imperilled.*[430]

However, even the reliable Herr Griesinger wasn't quite cynical enough when it comes to the machinations of Catholics in ruthless fanaticism to kill Christians.

To unravel the truth, we must bounce between sources as they alternate from honest accounts to cover-up.

It begins with the Catholic siege of Huguenot-controlled Orléans led by Admiral Gaspard de Coligny during the "Third War of Religion". The Catholic cause seemed assured under the leadership of François de Lorraine, 2nd *duc de Guise* until he was gravely wounded by an assassin's bullet. The siege collapsed and Charles IX sued for peace.

The Duke's heir and son, Henri, blamed de Coligny for his father's demise, however it was more accurately due to the "care" of his "doctors" who bled him to death.

According to Britannica, Henri, duc de Guise, worked carefully with the Serpent Queen Regent to finish the job but supposedly recoiled at driving through to massacre all the Protestants who had been trapped in Paris.

> *In 1572 Catherine de Médicis turned to the Guises for help in getting rid of the admiral Gaspard de Coligny, who was pressing the King to adopt policies at variance with her aims.*[[cccxxxvii]] *After an attempt on the Admiral's life had failed, Guise attended the secret meeting (August 23) that planned the Massacre of St. Bartholomew's Day. On August 24 he personally supervised Coligny's murder, thereby avenging his father's death, but otherwise took no part in the massacre...*[431]

However, Wikipedia admits the de Guise family was quite happy to pursue vengeance far beyond Hammurabi's scope.

> *In the fourth encounter, Guise was about to take Orléans from the Huguenot supporters of Condé when he was wounded on 18 February 1563 by the Huguenot assassin, Jean de Poltrot de Méré, and died six days later, bled to death by his surgeons, at Château Corney.*[8]
>
> *It was not the first plot against his life. A hunting accident – Francis had been appointed Grand Veneur of France in 1556 – had been planned, as Sir Nicholas Throckmorton informed Queen Elizabeth I of England in May 1560, but the plot was uncovered by one and his five co-conspirators fled.*[9]
>
> *Guise's unexpected death temporarily interrupted open hostilities. In his testimony,* [assassin Jean de] *Poltrot implicated Coligny and the Protestant pastor Théodore de Bèze. Though the assassin later retracted his statement and Coligny denied responsibility for Guise's death, a bitter feud arose between Guise's son Henry and Coligny, which culminated in St. Bartholomew's Day massacre.* ~ Wikipedia[432]

The standard of the day[cccxxxviii] for Catholic clergy or government was torture but it was no reliable.

> *During his torture,* [assassin Jean de Poltrot] *had made several contradictory statements, some of which implicated Admiral Coligny. Coligny protested emphatically against the accusation, but nevertheless the assassination led to a vendetta between Coligny and Francis's sons, Henry I, Duke of Guise and Louis II, Cardinal of Guise. This vendetta not only prolonged the Wars of Religion but contributed to the attempted assassination of Coligny during the celebrations of the marriage of Henri of Navarre with Margaret of Valois, and therefore to the St. Bartholomew's Day massacre.* ~ Wikipedia[433]

Neither de´Medici nor the de Guise were pleased that de Coligny had survived the attempt on his life. As testimony to their powers of deceit, what should've been a cause to break off the wedding and scatter the would-be Huguenot victims was dissipated and avoided.[cccxxxix]

> *What course shall we find Charles adopting in this dilemma? He immediately summoned Henry of Navarre (now his brother-in-law), the*

Prince de Condé, and the other chiefs of the Huguenot party; expressed his grief and indignation in the most emphatic terms at the attempt against Coligny, and solemnly swore contriver, instrument, and accomplices, should expiate the crime on the gibbet.

To give greater weight to his vows, he caused horsemen to be despatched in every direction in pursuit of the murderer; a special commission appointed to thoroughly sift the affair, and even signed an order for the arrest of the Duke of Guise, so that the latter was compelled, for the time (the necessity lasted but twenty-four hours), to seek concealment.

Nor was the king content with even these measures; he visited the wounded admiral on the following morning, accompanied by the queen mother, his two brothers, and a crowd of courtiers and court ladies; showed, apparently, the tenderest sympathy with the sufferer, and swore the most terrible oaths such dire vengeance should be exacted for the wrong; it would remain for ever an example to the world.

Queen Catherine spoke to the same effect; and Coligny, Teligny, the King of Navarre, and the greater number of the Protestant leaders, were effectually thrown off their guard. ~ Griesinger[434]

Even more planning was earnestly called for to insure maximum carnage through the “spontaneous” slaughter.

Scarcely had Charles returned to the Louvre from this visit to Coligny, than he had a long confidential conversation with the queen mother; and the chief nobles of the Catholic party were summoned to a conference, to be held that evening in the gardens of the Tuilleries, to determine on the fittest method of carrying out the royal views. A dread tribunal assembled that night at nine o’clock! There were present, besides the king and queen mother, the Duke d’Anjou, the Duke de Nevers, the Count d’Angouleme Grand Prior, the Chancellor Birago, the Marshal Tavannes, and Count Gondi-Retz.

The king explained his design; and it was unanimously agreed to give it unconditional support, — thus the annihilation of all the Protestants in France was succinctly determined on. The following night was to be

> *the epoch of their destruction in Paris; and special messengers were sent to the various provincial governors throughout the land, to command there immediately following the example given by the capital.*
>
> *The pope and the king had fully settled the affair between them, — the latter swearing by "God's teeth," his favourite oath, "not one of the reformed faith should survive to reproach him with the deed, except two only, — the King of Navarre and the Prince of Condé" (they were to be spared on account of their close relationship to the royal house*[[cccxl]]*), — but with the condition of reconciliation with Rome.*
> [[cccxli]] ~ Griesinger[435]

In retrospect, Henri of Navarre's "conversion" had both honey and vinegar behind it; the honey was to ascend the Throne of France, the vinegar, his Christian brethren were soon to drink deeply of.

Again, thoroughly proving the premeditation of the massacre, signals were sent to all Catholic citizens and Paris was secretly and quietly closed to ensure that not a single Christian would survive.

> *Scarcely had the general course of action been determined on, than the confederates separated to make the preliminary arrangements, and with a rapidity, quiet secrecy and energy, that may well excite our wonder. Firstly, the Duke of Guise, who, for the last two days, had pretended to be in hiding,*[[cccxlii]] *was called to the palace and charged with the chief conduct of the whole scheme of slaughter, especially with the murder of Coligny, with which it was to be inaugurated. The duke assembled the chief officers of the Swiss Guard*[[cccxliii]]*, and those commanding the royal troops, and informed them of the king's will in the royal presence; then summoned Charon, the Maire of Paris, and the Prevost of the Merchants, Claude Marcel, and, still in the presence of Charles, charged them to close the gates of Paris, and distribute arms to all the Catholic inhabitants; finally arranging the subsequent proceedings with the Marechal Tavannes; "the soldiers to be posted, 'after midnight' in the front of the Louvre; the burgher guard distributed in various quarters of the city, and every Catholic to carry a white cross on his hat and a white scarf round his left arm; the signal*

for the massacre to be given by the great bell of the Louvre; and as soon as that was heard, all egress from the city to be prevented, and Catholic houses distinguished by lighted pitch torches before their doors; armed burghers then to force their way into all Protestant houses, to cut down every heretic discovered."

Such were the orders given, and they were carried out to the letter. Not one of the thousands initiated into the secret seems to have shrank from the crime. ~ Griesinger[436]

The first order of business was for de Guise to finish what he started.

The second hour after midnight, and that of early mass had not yet sounded from the tower of St. Germain de l'Auxerrois on the 24th of August — a Sunday, and the feast of St. Bartholomew — when the Duke de Guise, accompanied by his uncle the Duke d'Aumale, and the Count d'Angouleme, proceeded with three hundred armed followers to the residence of the grand admiral.

They knocked at the door; and Labonne, Coligny's major domo, demanded who it was required admission. "Open in the name of the king!" was the reply; and Labonne, unsuspicious of evil, drew back the bolts, and the next instant fell pierced with a hundred wounds.

The servants attending Coligny's sick bed, awaked by the disturbance, hurried down stairs, but flew back terror-stricken on seeing the court-yard full of armed men. They secured the house door; but the Duke of Guise had it burst open, and after every one encountered by his retainers had been slain, three of his noble partisans, Lebesme, Sarlabous, and Archille Petrucci, accompanied by a guard of soldiers, mounted to the chamber where lay the admiral.

Coligny raised himself with an effort, and grasped at the sword hanging over his pillow; but he was too weak to wield it, and sank back with a groan.

The assassins at once pierced his breast with their daggers, then hacked his face and body with their swords; scarcely had they thus wreaked their vengeance than they flung the still palpitating corpse

from the windows to their leader below, who cast it out to the mob, by whom it was dragged through the streets, and finally hung on a gibbet.

The Leaguers[[cccxliv]] *then ransacked the whole house, murdering all they found within it, — Teligny, and Coligny's adjutant, the brave Guerchi, among the number, though both fell only after the most desperate resistance, and with their bodies covered with wounds.*

The massacre had fairly began, and a messenger informed the king of Coligny's fate.

Immediately the bell of the Louvre pealed ominously through the silence, and in a few instants was re-echoed from every church tower in Paris; the signal given; the streets were simultaneously lighted with gleaming pitch torches and cressets.

The dead stillness of night suddenly changed into wild shrieks and tumult; followed by their men-at- arms, the Dukes of Guise, Nevers, and Montpensier, and Marechals Tavannes and Retz, hurried through the city, crying, "Down with the heretics!" "Kill! kill!" was re-echoed by the vast mob already collected.

All Huguenot dwellings were broken open; whoever was found within them, murdered. Hastily awakened from sleep, unarmed, but half dressed, few, indeed, escaped, for those who reached the open air were struck down like wild beasts enclosed within a circle of hunters.

There was safety nowhere; and soon every street ran red with blood, and grew more and more encumbered with the bodies of the slain.

Sex or age, rank or distinguished services, were alike disregarded; men slaughtered even their nearest kindred with devilish impartiality; Catholic lads, scarce ten years old, rushed about with borrowed daggers to murder Protestant children in their beds.

Soon nothing could be heard in the city but the report of musketry, mingled with the cries and groans of the victims, the crash of breaking doors and windows as the houses were forcibly entered, and fiercely, continuously above all else, the frantic shouts and curses of the murderers. ~ Griesinger[437]

The Serpent Queen with the Royal family took to a balcony to enjoy the spectacle. Charles, such a fan of running down and killing foxes with hounds he wrote a book on the subject, took shots at fleeing Christians from his high vantage point.[438]

> *Revolting as was the aspect of the streets, that presented by the stately halls and staircases of the Louvre was still more so. A few moments before the appointed time, Charles, with his mother and brothers, took their place on a balcony, to witness the opening of the spectacle.*
>
> *Silently he sat gazing into the still night, until suddenly the report of a musket immediately below was heard, and he knew by the signal that Coligny had ceased to live.*
>
> *Then the king rose, and, with frantic exultation, commanded the great bell to be rung. It pealed over the city, and, whilst giving its terrible message, the Swiss Guard were marshalled by their officers into two long-drawn lines, to be ready to strike down every Huguenot who should attempt to enter or leave the Louvre; another detachment under Coconna and Cruice, took possession of the corridors of the palace, and thence proceeded to search every chamber where Protestant nobles or servants were lodged, dragged them from their beds into the court-yard, where, under the orders of d'O, colonel of the guard, they were all put to death.* ~ Griesinger[439]

There was an attempt at resistance but it was easily crushed.

> *Many offered a desperate resistance; they were unarmed, but they managed to get possession of the swords worn by their murderers, and, at least, sold their lives as dearly as possible; some endeavouring to escape through the palace, were pursued by the Swiss soldiers from chamber to chamber, and felled to the ground without mercy. By four o'clock that morning, scarcely a nook or corner of the stately Louvre but was befouled with blood. More than two hundred of the bravest and most influential of the higher ranks of the Huguenot Aristocracy, and more than six hundred of the lesser nobles and knights, found their death there that night.*[440]

The slaughter of the Huguenots was an opportunity for the worst of Paris to indulge their most evil passions.

> *Whilst the hours thus passed within the Louvre, the massacre went on with unslackening fury throughout the city. No single house, where there seemed a possibility of a concealed Huguenot, but it was immediately ransacked.*
>
> *Every form of robbery, wholesale plunder, and violence, were superadded to this orgie of blood. The armed citizens and soldiers were joined by a vast crowd gathered from the vilest dregs of the populace, who seized with fiendish delight the opportunities thus offered to the indulgence of their passions. None of the reformed faith escaped...* ~ Griesinger[441]

Although the bloodletting was scheduled to cease at daybreak, it did not. The gruesome events are difficult to read.

> *At length the sun arose; but on what horrors was its light to fall! On every threshold the dead and dying lay heaped together. Blood ran down the streets as in a slaughter-house, and the Seine was so completely choked with corpses that no boat could cross it. Tens of thousands had been killed, still the work of death was not allowed to cease; it continued by daylight with the same fury as in the darkness.*
>
> *The actors in the dire tragedy seem to have lost every feeling of humanity, and to have revelled in its horrors like Carib Indians at some monstrous orgie of blood.*
>
> *Many wore in their hats, in place of the white cross, the ear of a murdered Huguenot; some tossed dead heads and hands to each other in grim playfulness; others formed in procession behind a cross, on which a Protestant babe hung crucified.*
>
> *Not until vespers had sounded*[[cccxlv]] *did the king give orders for the people of Paris to return to their dwellings; for, during the night, none but the royal bodyguard were allowed to perambulate the streets. Few, however, paid any regard to the order; and murder and robbery continued through that night and the next day.*

That the king did not care to be taken at his word when he commanded the massacre to cease, we may conclude from the fact that, towards evening, he and his mother and her fair maids of honour went in a gay cortege through the blood-stained streets; and the gay laughter and pleased aspect of the royal party sufficiently proved the grateful nature of the spectacle offered them.

***One Morning at the Gates of the Louvre,* Édouard Debat-Ponsan (1880). Wikimedia Commons.**

The ladies appeared to find especial interest in inspecting the Seine, with its multitude of naked corpses thrown from the Louvre. The king, in passing the gallows on which the great admiral hung in chains, declared "the scent of Coligny's corruption was a sweeter savour in his nostrils than the perfume of roses and violets."

Whilst Paris was thus weltering in blood, like scenes were reproduced in the provinces, especially in their larger cities. On the nights of the 23rd and 24th, the king's messengers were speeding far and wide over

the land, to bear the royal orders to all governors of towns and provinces, directing them to seize the persons and property of the Huguenots, and let loose the jealous fury of the people against them.

The officials obeyed implicitly with but rare exceptions; and thus at Lyons, Orleans, Bordeaux, Toulouse, &c., during the twenty-fifth and twenty-sixth of August, as great a murder festival was held as that consummated on Bartholomew's eve at Paris. ~ Griesinger[442]

Anywhere from 70,000 to 100,000 French Christians were thus slaughtered and it gave the Catholics in Paris and Rome no little glee.

Even the corpses were defiled for profit.

Speculators turned the tragedy to profitable account by boiling down the bodies, and drove a brisk trade in human fat. We have no means of ascertaining the exact number of the Calvinists who perished; it is given respectively at 50,000 and 100,000. The truth lies, perhaps, midway between the two accounts; and we may conclude that about 70,000 persons were murdered.*

It was, therefore, no marvel the joy of the orthodox passed all bounds, and that the old man at Borne [Ugo Boncompagni, "Pope Gregory XIII"] *was well-nigh beside himself in the greatness of the triumph. He took no pains to conceal his satisfaction; on the contrary, immediately on receiving the news, summoned the cardinals to proceed in solemn procession to St. Peter's, to give God thanks, whilst the cannons of St. Angelo thundered proudly, and the streets of Borne were illumined by bonfires. A great jubilee, and plenary indulgence was appointed by the Holy father, in his joy, on receiving the head of Coligny, which had been preserved in spirits, by order of the king, whilst he further rewarded his dear son with the title of "**Piissimus**," most Christian.* [[cccxlvi]]

* *The celebrated* [Maximilien de Béthune, Duke of] *Sully states the number of the killed at 70,000, whilst the historian Perefize* [?], *who wrote a biography of Henri IV., published in 1661, places it at 100,000. Of this we may be assured that the most sanguinary*

> *campaign had never cost so much in human life; for in the capital alone, 10,000 Huguenot corpses were counted!*
>
> ~ Griesinger[443]

Although Antonio Michele "Pope Pius V" Ghislieri had helped plan the event, Ugo "Pope Gregory XIII" Boncompagni reigned during its execution. He was no less ecstatic.

> *The news of the massacre was welcomed by Philip II of Spain, and Pope Gregory XIII had a medal struck to celebrate the event. Protestant nations were horrified. To explain the massacre, Charles, assuming responsibility for it, claimed that there had been a Huguenot plot against the crown.* ~ Britannica[444]

We need no reminding that Felipe II of Spain was also a Catholic fanatic.

> *He learned with wrath that Coligny, the Protestant leader, had almost convinced Charles IX that France should ally itself with the rebels. When news came that Charles had let loose the Massacre of St. Bartholomew upon the Huguenots, Philip rejoiced, and he hardened his heart against the Netherlands. He urged and paid for the assassination of William of Orange. He tried to buy the friendship of Henry of Navarre, but Henry proved unpurchasable. So Philip bought the Guises and the Catholic League, and dreamed of making his daughter the queen of France; then Spain and France, joining forces,*

would subdue the Netherlands, make Mary Stuart queen of England, and end Protestantism everywhere.

When Elizabeth sent aid to Holland (1585) and Mary to her death (1587), Philip, after years of bearing with politic patience the harrying of Spanish vessels, coasts, and treasure by Elizabeth's privateers, turned to war and bankrupted his government to finance the Armada. All Spain supported the effort and prayed for victory, feeling that the fate of that fleet would determine the history of Europe.

Philip took the ignominious catastrophe with outward stoicism, saying that he had sent the ships to fight men, not winds. But it broke his spirit and almost broke Spain, though he survived and fought through ten years more and Spain took a century to admit her ruin. He could hardly believe that God had abandoned him after thirty years of fighting for the faith; yet the dark truth must have come to him at last that after taxing his people into poverty he had failed in everything except the accidental acquisition of Portugal and the temporary repulse of the Turks — who had recaptured Tunis and were recovering power. Henry IV was moving to victory in France; the Netherlands were in irreconcilable revolt; the Pope refused to bear a penny of the Armada's cost; Protestantism held the prosperous north; England was taking control of the seas, therefore soon of America and the East; and that incredible virago, Elizabeth, was sitting triumphant on her moated throne, having outwitted all the kings of her time. ~ Durant[445]

Even Thériault in her overly-humorous account is forced to admit the ruthless reality, although couching it in the "suspicions" of the Huguenots.

By the time the massacre was over, Catholic mobs had murdered tens of thousands of their Huguenot countrymen. Henri de Navarre and his cousin Henri of Condé were spared, but only because they had promised to embrace Catholicism. The remaining Huguenots were convinced that the whole thing had been an elaborate plot wrought by the Serpent Queen; they thought that, in a deeply Machiavellian move, she had arranged her daughter's wedding to Henri with the intention of luring Protestants to Paris and then slaughtering them. Henri's conversion was the icing on her scheming, poison-filled cake.[446]

It took a literal river of blood (the Seine) to finally convince French Christians of the warning against *all* Royalty found in I Samuel 8:1-22: *Now it came to pass when Samuel was old that he made his sons judges over Israel.*

> *The name of his firstborn was Joel, and the name of his second, Abijah; they were judges in Beersheba.*
>
> *But his sons did not walk in his ways; they turned aside after dishonest gain, took bribes, and perverted justice.*
>
> *Then all the elders of Israel gathered together and came to Samuel at Ramah, and said to him, "Look, you are old, and your sons do not walk in your ways. Now make us a king to judge us like all the nations."*
>
> *But the thing displeased Samuel when they said, "Give us a king to judge us." So Samuel prayed to the Lord. And the Lord said to Samuel, "Heed the voice of the people in all that they say to you; for they have not rejected you, but they have rejected Me, that I should not reign over them. According to all the works which they have done since the day that I brought them up out of Egypt, even to this day — with which they have forsaken Me and served other gods — so they are doing to you also. Now therefore, heed their voice. However, you shall solemnly forewarn them, and show them the behavior of the king who will reign over them."*
>
> *So Samuel told all the Words of the Lord to the people who asked him for a king. And he said, "This will be the behavior of the king who will reign over you: He will take your sons and appoint them for his own chariots and to be his horsemen, and some will run before his chariots. He will appoint captains over his thousands and captains over his fifties, will set some to plow his ground and reap his harvest, and some to make his weapons of war and equipment for his chariots. He will take your daughters to be perfumers, cooks, and bakers. And he will take the best of your fields, your vineyards, and your olive groves, and give them to his servants. He will take a tenth of your grain and your vintage, and give it to his officers and servants. And he will take your male servants, your female servants, your finest young men, and your*

donkeys, and put them to his work. He will take a tenth of your sheep. And you will be his servants. And you will cry out in that day because of your king whom you have chosen for yourselves, and the Lord will not hear you in that day."

Nevertheless the people refused to obey the voice of Samuel; and they said, "No, but we will have a king over us, that we also may be like all the nations, and that our king may judge us and go out before us and fight our battles."

And Samuel heard all the words of the people, and he repeated them in the hearing of the Lord. So the Lord said to Samuel, "Heed their voice, and make them a king."

And Samuel said to the men of Israel, "Every man go to his city."

According to one Catholic "historian", the Huguenots now began to question everything! They were treacherous; they claimed Catholic conversion to save their lives and then reverted back to being heretics. They followed Calvin to Geneva and sought true, Godly constitutional consensus government.

Catherine[[cccxlvii]] *emerged from the shambles cheerful and refreshed; the King was now again her vassal, and the Huguenot problem seemed solved. She was mistaken. Though many French Protestants had accepted conversion as an alternative to death, these recantations proved transitory; within two months of the massacre the Huguenots opened the Fourth Religious War; La Rochelle and several other towns closed their gates to royalist troops and successfully resisted siege. On July 6, 1573, Charles signed the Peace of La Rochelle, guaranteeing the Huguenots religious liberty. Politically the massacre had accomplished nothing.*

And now the Huguenot intellectuals, who had heretofore professed loyalty to the King, turned in horror from Charles IX and questioned not only the divine right of kings but the institution of monarchy itself. François Hotman, a Huguenot jurist, had fled to Switzerland after the massacre; a year later he published a passionate attack upon Charles, ***De furoribus Gallicis****: the crimes of that King had released his people*

> *from their oath of loyalty; he was a felon and should be deposed. Before the year was out Hotman sent forth from Geneva his* ***Franco-Gallia****, the first modern attempt at constitutional history.* ~ Durant[447]

Prior to the massacre of St. Bartholomew's Day (not to be confused with the myriad of other massacres of Christians by Ruling Elite Catholics), the Huguenots of France were comfortable with mingling their calls for freedom of worship with professed allegiance to the Crown.

Unfortunately, however, it became brutally obvious that the "nominally Catholic" Medici / Valois in power were anything but. The French Crown was merely an extension of the Antichrist in Rome.

> *When the prince de Conde issued his manifesto in 1562, he justified his rebellion*[[cccxlviii]] *by accusing the Guises of usurping the government. He soon had to shift his ground, however, as the government, headed by Catherine, gave up its conciliatory efforts. Conde could no longer maintain that he and his friends were simply defending the government against the Guises. In a second manifesto, he professed to be defending the nation's constitution against the government.*
>
> *The same argument was taken up by several Huguenot pamphlets in the late 1560s, but it was the massacre of St. Bartholomew's Day and the role played by the king and his mother in that tragic event which made it impossible for the Huguenots to justify their armed opposition in terms of defending the monarchy. Charles IX had, on his own admission, ordered the slaughter of their leaders, even if he had not sanctioned the mass slaughter that ensued. Huguenots could no longer profess loyalty to a monarchy tainted by such a monstrous crime; a line could no longer be drawn between the king and his "evil counsellors". The hands of both were soaked in the blood of God's children.*[55]
>
> *As Huguenot survivors of the massacres threw off their allegiance to the ruling dynasty, they had to find a new justification for their action. They all believed that the massacres had been planned in advance by Catherine and her sons, particularly Anjou.*[[cccxlix]] *Xenophobia, or at least a deep suspicion of Italy, permeates much of the polemical literature produced by the Huguenots after 1572. "Among all the*

> *nations", wrote Henri Estienne, "Italy carries the prize for cunning and subtlety, so it is in Italy with Tuscany, and in Tuscany with Florence." Catherine was seen as a disciple of Machiavelli, the quintessential Florentine, whose spectre had begun to haunt Protestant Europe. It was said that she had brought up her children on Machiavelli's* ***Prince****, and that Anjou always carried a copy in his pocket. The massacre was interpreted as the application of Machiavelli's precept to commit all necessary cruelties in a single blow. Innocent Gentillet's* ***Anti-Machiavel*** *(1576) helped to create the legend of Machiavelli as the author of text-books for tyrants. He was blamed directly for the French government's "infamous vices". ~* Knecht[448]

Deal With The Devil

If the Maggot from the Tombs of Italy did, indeed, facilitate her fruitfulness by a "deal with the Devil" it was most certainly a Faustian one as now, Charles, grew deathly ill.

Despite her fruitfulness, the Serpent Queen was fast running out of male children, with only Henry III and the youngest, Hercule François, remaining.

Upon the death of Sigismund II, the Polish and Lithuanian Aristocracy scrambled to install a Catholic monarch that would keep them safe and stable (the plight of the peasantry notwithstanding). They decided to forego another Habsburg and sell the Throne to France. This seemed politically shrewd as France was on good terms with the looming Ottoman Empire. Henry III was selected and "elected".

To the Polish and Lithuanian Elite, a half-French, half-Italian (Florentine) foreigner of dubious sexuality was far more appealing than a native who was neither of the inbred "blood of Kings" nor of unquestioning fealty to Rome.

Now the Merchant's daughter was seen as desperate. She needed Charles to stay alive but many still believed she had poisoned the King, if for no other reason than she was fully capable of it.

Three centuries later, a French Catholic expert in the occult would recount that the Serpent Queen had conducted a “Black Mass” to keep Charles with the living.

Alphonse Louis Constant (1810 – 1875) attended Saint Sulpice seminary in Paris but, supposedly, was distracted by “love” from becoming ordained.

Instead, he became an occult adept and wrote several instruction manuals on “magic” and incantations, but not under his own name. He assumed the identity of “Éliphas Lévi”. As a “Jew”, Constant was free to take his Catholicism to its ultimate conclusion.

In his book *Dogma and Ritual of High Magic* (circa 1855), he described the Satanic being whose supposed worship by the Templars caused the outrage that followed with their suppression 500 years previously.

“Baphomet” is a creature that is supposed to embody all duality; good and evil, male and female. The Luciferian gesture of the arms states the cry of Satan and all who serve him, “As above, so below.”

It was also in *Dogma and Ritual* that Constant / “Lévi” described the Medici Mass.

In spin so typical of Papal propaganda, the “almost Priest” Constant / “Lévi”, writing as a “Jew”, attacked another Catholic expert on the occult, Jean Bodin, as being a secret Jew whose only purpose was to attack Catholicism.

Constant / “Lévi” would quickly follow with a defense of his fellow witches and warlocks whom he lamented were slaughtered by bigotry. It would be a lament frequently repeated by his Russian understudy, Helena Petrovna Blavatsky.

According to Constant / “Lévi”, a beautiful child was picked on the eve of his “First Communion”. The ceremony was conducted by an “apostate Jacobin” which is spin for “Catholic Priest steeped in the Jesuit doctrines of Johann Adam Weishaupt”.

In yet another Faustian twist, even though the boy was ritually slaughtered, it availed the King nothing and he spiraled deeper into paranoia and despair.

> *The Kabalist Bodin, Israelite by conviction and Catholic by necessity, had no other intention in his **Demonomania of Sorcerers** than to impeach Catholicism in its works and undermine it in the greatest of all its doctrinal abuses. The treatise of Bodin is profoundly Machiavellian and strikes at the heart of the institutions and persons it appears to defend. It would be difficult to conceive without reading it his vast mass of sanguinary and hideous histories, acts of revolting superstition, sentences and executions of stupid ferocity. “Burn all!” the inquisitors seemed to cry. “God will distinguish His own!”*
>
> *Poor fools, hysterical women and idiots were accordingly sacrificed without mercy for the crime of Magic, while, at the same time, great criminals eluded this infamous and sanguinary justice. Bodin gives us to understand as much by recounting such anecdotes as that which he connects with the death of Charles IX. ...*
>
> *Attacked by a disease of which no physician could discover the cause or explain the frightful symptoms, King Charles IX was dying. The Queen-Mother, who ruled him entirely and had everything to lose*

under another reign – the Queen-Mother, who has been suspected as author of the disease, even against her own interests, because hidden devices and undeclared interests have been attributed always to her who was capable of anything – consulted her astrologers and then had recourse to the foulest form of Magic, the ORACLE OF THE BLEEDING HEAD, for the sufferer's condition grew worse and more desperate daily.

The infernal operation was performed in the following way. A child was selected, of beautiful appearance and innocent manners; he was prepared for his first communion by the almoner of the palace. When the day or rather night of the sacrifice arrived, a monk, an apostate Jacobin, given over to the occult works of Black Magic, celebrated a Mass of the Devil at midnight in the sick-room, in the presence only of Catherine de Medicis and her trusted confidants. It was offered before the image of the demon, having a crucifix upside down under its feet and the sorcerer consecrated two hosts, one black and one white. The white was given to the child, who was brought in clothed as for baptism, and was murdered on the steps of the altar immediately after his communion. His head, cut by one blow from the body, was set palpitating upon the great black host which covered the bottom of the paten, and then transported to a table where mysterious lamps were burning. The exorcism began, an oracle was besought of the demon, and an answer by the mouth of the head to a secret question which the King dared not make aloud and had confided to no one.

A strange and feeble voice, which had nothing human about it, was heard presently in the poor little martyr's head, saying in Latin: ***Vim patior*** *– "I suffer violence". At this reply, which doubtless announced to the sick man that hell no longer protected him, a horrible trembling seized the monarch, his arms stiffened and he cried in a hoarse voice: "Away with that head! Away with that head!" and so continued screaming till he gave up the ghost.*

His attendants, who were not in the confidence of this frightful mystery, believed that he was pursued by the phantom of Coligny and that he saw the head of the illustrious admiral.

> *That which tormented the dying man was not, however, a remorse but the hopeless terror of an anticipated Hell.*[449]

Charles continued to suffer and seemed to become more and more haunted by the Bartholomew's Day massacre.

The French King died on the 30th of May in 1574. Most "historians" claim tuberculosis was the cause yet also admit he would frequently sweat blood.

Before he passed, he had several incidents which must assuredly have given his Catholic mother fits.

One was to deeply embrace Henri of Navarre, whose Protestant faith was forced out of him by the massacre.

> *Catherine never showed regret or remorse over the massacre. In fact, she seems to have thoroughly enjoyed its results. The Huguenot party had lost its leaders. Henri de Navarre was her son-in-law and a king in his own right. What is more, he and Henri de Conde had become Catholics. The queen-mother's joy became manifest during a ceremony held by the chapter of the Ordre de Saint-Michel on 29 September.*
>
> *As she watched Navarre kneel before the altar like any good Catholic, she turned to the foreign ambassadors present and burst out laughing.[54] On 3 October he wrote to the pope asking for forgiveness and on the 16th issued an edict restoring Catholicism to Beam. Thereafter he behaved as if the massacre had never taken place, fraternizing with Guise and others who had murdered his friends. ~* Knecht[450]

It may, however, have been an act. Henri may have believed the Christian cause was better served with him doing whatever was necessary to attain the throne.

> *Catherine tried to help* [her son] *Henry III by detaching his brother-in-law, Henri de Navarre, from the Protestant movement, but he was far too wily to succumb to her blandishments. He may have calculated that time would play into his hands. Events were to prove him right. ~* Knecht[451]

The British “scholar of letters” Isaac D´Israeli was the son of a Jewish merchant who emigrated from — where else? — Italy. He would sire future Prime Minister Benjamin D´Israeli as well as collect a sizable number of “Curiosities of Literature”. Amongst them is the rare account of Charles reconciling with Henri.

> *Dr. Cayet is an old French controversial writer, but is better known in French literature as an historian. His* ***Chronologie Novenaire*** *is full of anecdotes unknown to other writers. He collected them from his own observations, for he was under-preceptor to Henry IV. The dreadful massacre of St. Bartholomew took place in the reign of Charles IX.; on which occasion the English court went into mourning. The singular death of Charles has been regarded by the Huguenots as an interposition of divine justice: he died bathed in his blood, which burst from his veins. The horrors of this miserable prince on his dying bed are forcibly depicted by the anecdotes I am now collecting. I shall premise, however, that Charles was a mere instrument in the hands of his mother, the political and cruel Catherine of Medicis.*
>
> ***Dr. Cayet, with honest* naïveté*, thus relates what he knew to have passed a few hours before his death.***
>
> *“King Charles, feeling himself near his end, after having passed some time without pronouncing a word, said, as he turned himself on one side, and as if he seemed to awake, ‘Call my brother!’ The queen mother was present, who immediately sent for* [François] *the Duke of Alençon. The king perceiving him, turned his back, and again said, ‘Let my brother come!’ The queen, his mother, replied, ‘Sir, I do not know whom you mean; here is your brother.’ The king was displeased, and said, ‘Let them bring my brother the King of Navarre; it is he who is my brother.’ The queen mother observing the dying monarch’s resolute order, sent for him; but, for reasons known only to herself, she commanded the captain of the guards to conduct him under the vaults.*
>
> *They went to the King of Navarre, and desired him to come and speak to the king; at that moment, this prince has since repeatedly said, he felt a shuddering and apprehension of death so much that he would not go.*

But King Charles persisting on his coming, the queen mother assured him that he should receive no injury. In this promise, however, he put little trust.

He went, accompanied by the Viscount d'Auchy, on whose word he chiefly relied. Having, however, observed under these vaults a great number of halberdiers and arquebusiers in ranks, he would have returned, when the viscount and the captain reassured him that no harm should happen to him. The soldiers bowed, and their behaviour was respectful.

By a private staircase he entered the chamber of the king, who, immediately on perceiving him, turned towards him, and stretched out his arms. The King of Navarre was affected; he sighed and wept, and fell on his knees at the side of the bed. Charles embraced, and having kissed him, said, 'My brother, you lose a good master and a good friend. I know it is not you who occasions me so much trouble; had I believed what they said, you would not have been alive; but I have always loved you. It is to you alone I trust my wife and daughter; earnestly do I recommend them to your care. Do not trust the queen; but God protect you!'"

"The queen mother here interrupted him, 'Ah, sir, do not say that!' — 'Yes, madam, I must say it; it is the truth. Believe me, my brother; love me; assist my wife and daughter, and implore God for mercy on me. Adieu, my brother, adieu!' The King of Navarre remained till his majesty expired."

The following minute particulars are drawn from the journal of Pierre de L'Etoile. In the simplicity of his narration, so pleasing in the old writers, the ***nurse*** *and the* ***monarch****, — the religious remorse of the one, and the artless consolations of the other — become interesting objects.*

"King Charles, two days before his death, having called for Mazzille, his chief physician, and complaining of the pains he suffered, asked him if it was not possible that he, and so many other celebrated physicians that were in his realms, could give some alleviation to his disorder; 'for I am,' said he, 'cruelly and horridly tormented.' To

which Mazzille replied, that whatever had depended on them had been tried, but that in truth God only could be the sovereign physician in such complaints."

"'I believe,' said the king, 'that what you say is true, and that you know nothing else. Draw from me my ***custode*** *(or large cap), that I may try to rest.'"*

"Mazzille withdrew, and left orders that all should leave the king except three, viz., La Tour, St. Pris, and his nurse, whom his majesty greatly loved, ***although she was a Huguenot****."*

"As she had just seated herself on a coffer, and began to doze, she heard the king groan bitterly, weeping and sighing; she then approached the bed softly, and drawing away his ***custode****, the king said to her, giving vent to a heavy sigh, and shedding tears plentifully, insomuch that they interrupted his discourse — 'Ah! my dear nurse! my beloved woman, what blood! what murders! Ah! I have followed wicked advice! O my God! pardon me, and be merciful. I know not where I am, they have made me so perplexed and agitated. How will all this end! — What shall I do? I am lost for ever! I know it.'"*

"Then the nurse thus addressed him: 'Sire, be the murders on those who forced you to order them; your majesty could not help it, and since you never consented, and now regret them, believe God will never impute them to you, and will cover them with the mantle of justice of his Son, to whom alone you should look for aid. Ah! for the honour of God, let your majesty cease from this weeping.' Having said this, she rose for a handkerchief, for his was drenched with tears: Charles having taken it from her, made a sign that she should retire and leave him to repose."[452]

Perhaps it's no surprise that one of the sources for "user-edited" Wikipedia's entry on Charles IX of France is Jesuit-trained Roman Catholic William James "Will" Durant (1885-1981).

Durant's "Story of Civilization" (Volume VII) would paint the same biased picture of Catherine de´Medici as most every other "biographer" as well as

the “unforeseen excesses” of a massacre that was “initially done to protect the Crown from treasonous Protestant assassination plots.”

To Durant, Catherine de´Medici wasn’t a ruthless Florentine literally “Hell-bent” on ruling in France for as long as possible; she was a “puzzle” in character and motivations; a pawn to be pitied. She was barren and discarded by her heartless husband then, without explanation, she became fruitful.

Durant also painted her as caught between two equally dogmatic, equally powerful religions of fanaticism. She was only “rumored” to have played dirty with intelligence-gathering Aristocrat prostitutes and she was driven by wounded feelings to rule France with an iron grip for three decades.

> *She is still a puzzle, after four centuries of conflicting interpretations.*
>
> *Descended from Lorenzo the Magnificent, grandniece of Pope Leo X, she was a typical Medici, with government in her heritage and subtlety in her blood. Born in Florence (1519) of parents who both died of syphilis before she was a month old, she remained a helpless and movable pawn in the diplomacy of her embattled relatives until her uncle, Pope Clement VII, gave her, aged fourteen, in marriage to the future Henry II of France. For ten years she remained barren while her somber mate devoted himself to Diane de Poitiers. Then children emerged from her almost annually, ten in all. She hoped and schemed to get them thrones. Three of them died in childhood; three became kings of France; two became queens. Nearly all of them tasted tragedy, but herself most of all, who lived through the deaths of her husband and three successive royal sons. Queen or Queen Mother, she bore the vicissitudes of four reigns, and survived them by prudence, self-control, and unscrupulous duplicity.*
>
> *A contemporary described her as “a beautiful woman when her face is veiled”[14] — that is, she had a fine figure; and Brantôme assures us that her bosom was “white and full,” her “thigh very beautiful,” and her hands and fingers exquisite.[15] But her features were rugged, her eyes too big, her lips too thick, her mouth too large. If she seduced men it was by proxy. Rumor accused her of keeping about her an* ***escadron volant****, or flying squadron, of pretty women who might bring men*

around to her purposes;[16] but this was apparently a fiction.[17] Wounded by Diane's dominance in policy as in love, she found revenge, after Henry's death, by making herself for thirty years the power behind the throne. Her finesse had to atone for the incompetence of her sons; they resented her interference, but their failure as kings compelled it.

Cast into the maelstrom of a religious revolution, surrounded by aggressive nobles and intolerant dogmatisms, she fought with the only weapons she had — Medicean money, Italian acumen, Machiavellian diplomacy. Machiavelli had dedicated ***The Prince*** *to her father; Catherine hardly needed its instruction...* [453]

Durant did admit that Charles, in his despair, blamed his mother for the massacre. He, too, acknowledged the King's reaching out to his "formerly-Huguenot" friend, but without quite so much Protestant fanfare.

Life itself soon deposed Charles IX. Good and evil in him had struggled to the point where a constitution congenitally botched had broken down from the strain. Sometimes he gloated over the hardihood and the extremity of his crime; at other times he accused himself for having consented to the massacre, and the cries of butchered Huguenots kept ringing in his ears, murdering sleep.

He began to reproach his mother: "Who but you is the cause of all this? God's blood, you are the cause of it all!" She complained that she had a lunatic for a son.[90]

He became melancholy and somber, thin and pale.

He had always tended to tuberculosis; now, his resistance weakened, it destroyed him; by 1574 he was spitting blood. In the spring his hemorrhages grew more violent, and he again had visions of his victims. "What bloodshed, what murders!" he cried to his nurse. "What evil counsel have I followed! O my God, forgive me! ... I am lost!"[91]

On his dying day, May 30, 1574, he called for Henry of Navarre, whom he embraced affectionately. "Brother," he said, "you are losing a good friend. Had I believed all that I was told, you would not be alive. But I

always loved you. ... I trust in you alone to look after my wife and daughter. Pray God for me. Farewell." Soon afterward he died.[[cccl]]

He was not yet twenty-four.[454]

Did the Serpent Queen decide that enough was enough and hurry along the death of another son?

That same year of 1574, her personal necromancer, Cosimo Ruggeri, was tried for an attempted assassination of the King by means of sorcery. Inexplicably, the charges were dismissed. It was clear, however, his intimacy with the Queen made the occultist "magician" *pas touché* (untouchable).[455]

His accomplice was the Aristocrat Joseph Boniface de La Môle, who also happened to be another lover of the King's sister, Marguerite.[ccccli]

Unlike the Serpent Queen's personal necromancer, de La Môle was not protected. He was "quartered" (horses ripped his limbs from his body) and beheaded.

As a token of her affection, Marguerite kept her lover's severed head embalmed and in a small coffin (practices that fit in well with everyone else "at Court").[456]

How like a Medici that Catherine would use black arts to conceive her son, have a "Black Mass" in attempt to keep him alive and then murder him when he became a nuisance.

When Henry III was made aware of his brother's death, he quickly left the foreign squalor of Poland and rushed home to the perfumed Court of the Louvre. By then, even the Polish and Lithuanian Elite were glad to be rid of him. They half-heartedly warned that if he did not return to Poland, it would be considered a Constitutional abdication and they all breathed a sigh of relief when the warning went unheeded.

He did, of course, help himself to a consolation prize: the Polish Crown Jewels.[457]

It may not have been an act of robbery so much as an act of vanity.

The homosexual advocacy blog Gay Influence has a surprisingly honest and scholarly account of Henri's character (probably because it so suits the blog's agenda to be honest in his case).

> *The twenty-three-year-old dandy Henryk Walezy*[[ccclii]] *(1551-1589) had served only two years as King of Poland and Grand Duke of Lithuania when he received news that forever changed his life. His brother Charles IX (Henryk's bitter enemy), who happened to be king of France, had just died, leaving Henryk with a much better prospect. King of France trumped King of Poland any day of the week. Born*

Alexandre-Édouard de Valois-Angoulèm in the Royal Château de Fontainebleau (built by his grandfather, François I of France), the outrageously vain and effeminate Henryk took a leave of absence from Poland to hie himself to Reims, where he was crowned Henri III, King of France, on February 13, 1575.*

The day after his coronation as the king of France, Henri participated in an arranged marriage to Louise of Lorraine, and it was expected that they would conceive a child. Never happened. Though Louise fell deeply in love with Henri, the sexual feelings were not reciprocated. Henri treated his wife as a doll, dressing her up, applying makeup to her face, teaching her how to flirt. Her mild and gentle virtues contrasted her husband's vice, vulgarity and coarseness. Louise soon learned that her husband was a flamboyant omni-sexual given to wild sadomasochistic orgies while dressed in drag. Among the passions he was unable to restrain was an obsession for outrageous jewelry. He surrounded himself with legions of twenty-something boyfriends, favorites known as "mignons de cœur" (darlings of the heart), and they scandalized the public with their effeminate mannerisms. They also copied their king's fashion innovations, protecting their hands by carrying small muffs, wearing outsized earrings and keeping pet parrots and monkeys. Even the king's fondness for lapdogs – especially small spaniels – was copied by his mignons. When Henri changed the style of his beard or moustache, his mignons followed suit. I kid you not.

A real fashionista, Henri changed his garments, jewelry and perfumes several times a day. He showed little interest in typically masculine pursuits such as hunting, preferring masked balls, parlor games and the intrigues of court life and etiquette (he introduced the use of a fork to the tables of France, an item of cutlery that had been in use while he was king of Poland).

In fact, the contemporary reports of Henri's untempered homosexual activity and effeminate mannerisms were so numerous and blatant that some historians dismiss many of them as politically motivated exaggerations. However, seldom in history had the homosexual activity

> *of a monarch been so public and undisguised. His harem of young male mignons was not confined to the royal palaces; when the king attended public fairs and carnivals, his fawning favorites accompanied him in full force. Not only did Henri dress in women's clothes, he did so in public.*[[ccliii]]
>
> *Throughout his life Henri had been controlled by his power-mad mother, Catherine of Medici, whose pet name for her son was "chers yeux" (precious eyes). She was responsible for setting him up on the throne of Poland. She had been the one to embroil her children in the hideous crimes of the St. Bartholomew Massacre of Protestants. Catherine was content to watch her son Henri occupy himself with frivolous fashion and childish games, allowing herself to control many affairs of state, marked by religious animosity between Catholics and Protestants. However, Henri's inability to produce an heir resulted in a succession crisis.*[458]

The good news for the Serpent Queen was that Henri III was more interested in the latest fashions than running France. Even though he was of age, the "Maggot from Italy's Tomb" continued to rule as "Regent".

One thing the two shared was an interest in the occult.

> *During her reign Catherine de Medici was also accused of practicing dark arts that she taught her son Henry. According to rumors Catherine de Medici showed great interest in occult. Her acquaintance with Cosimo Ruggeri, an Italian astrologer was one of the reasons why the Queen of France was suspected of dealing with dark, evil powers. Catherine gave patronage to the Ruggeri brothers and Cosimo was believed to be Catherine's own "trusted necromancer, and specialist in the dark arts". During his lifetime, Cosimo Ruggeri became well-known as a master of the occult, black magic and witchcraft.* ~ Lloyd[459]

Hercule François: duc de Anjou et Alençon

Hercule François was the odd boy out of the Medici-Valois family. He had contracted smallpox at age 8 which had scarred his face. He had a slightly-deformed spine and had only grown to about 5 foot 1.

He was also at constant odds with his brother Henri.

His ambition caused him to be open to the Huguenot cause and this made both Henri and the Queen mother nervous.

William, Prince of Orange, considered him an excellent choice to become Sovereign of the Dutch Republic.

William, a German, had led the Protestant Dutch Revolt against the Catholic Habsburgs there in the “United Provinces”.

At first, William’s plan seemed to work, but Flemish and Dutch Protestants refused to accept Hercule François as anything other than a Medici-Valois French Catholic.

This frustrated the young Prince and he foolishly undertook military campaigns to bring key Dutch cities under his authority.

He personally led an attack on Antwerp, attempting to disguise his French soldiers as a “Joyous Entry” into the city. Unfortunately for him, the citizens weren’t fooled. The city militia had a ruthlessly effective ambush and defense that they unleashed upon him and he barely escaped with his life.

These turns, combined with word on the full extent of the St. Bartholomew’s Day massacre was enough for England’s Queen Elizabeth to call off their engagement.

Shortly after, Hercule François fell gravely ill with what many have considered was malaria. He was rushed back to France to reconcile with his mother and brother. He died on June 10th in 1584 before reaching the age of 30.

There may not have been as much motive for him to have been assassinated by the Maggot Queen Regent (especially as this placed “former” Protestant Henri of Navarre in succession to the Throne) but she is reputed to have written him after the debacle of Antwerp, “...would to God you had died young. You would then not have been the cause of the death of so many brave gentlemen.”[460]

Now a “former Protestant”, Henri of Navarre, was Dauphin.

By 1588, chaos had took France over. Catholic mobs ruled Paris and the Serpent Queen was barely allowed the freedom to travel to Mass. The King was forced from the city.

This was open warfare and the de Guises held the upper hand via the “Holy” Catholic League. The League was constantly being supported by the Papacy, Felipe II of Spain and the new insurgency of Jesuits.

As a result, an astounding thing occurred. Paranoia overtook King Henri III. He lured Inquisitor Cardinal Louise II and his brother Henri I (whom had brutally assassinated Protestant Admiral Gaspard de Coligny) to the beautiful stronghold of Château de Blois where Henri’s Royal Guardsmen murdered them.

In one fell swoop, the enemies of French Christians were cut down by the mania of their effeminate bisexual King.

This was too much for the Serpent Queen. In September of 1588, she fell ill with a lung infection. Henri used this opportunity to be at last rid of her influence and immediately dismissed all of the advisors she had hampered him with. On January 5th, 1589, the Maggot from the Tomb of Italy died.

Because the Royal family had been thrown out of Paris by Catholic mobs, de´Medici's body could not be buried according to custom but it was eventually interred (as all highly-thought-of Catholics are) under the pews and altar in the Saint-Denis basilica in Paris.[cccliv]

By August 1st of 1589, Henri had marshalled an army of Swiss Guards and planned to crush the Catholic mobs of Paris. A Dominican friar named Jacques Clément brought forged papers forth and was granted access to the King. He walked right up to Henri, feigning to whisper into his ear but instead plunged a dagger into the King's abdomen.

The Royal Guard killed the assassin on the spot but Henri's wound proved fatal and he died the next day, but not before he made his guard swear allegiance to his friend and brother-in-law, Henri of Navarre, now King Henri IV.

Ippolito Aldobrandini, "Pope Clement VIII", immediately excommunicated Henri but he quickly gained support, money from England and soldiers from Germany.[ccclv]

Henri IV won the Battle of Arques in September 1589 and the Battle of Ivry in March 1590 but the Catholic League held Paris.

Henri again decided to yield allegiance to Protestantism and vowed eternal fealty to Rome. Paris was opened and the Aldobrandini excommunication was lifted.

Loved by neither Protestant nor Catholic, he was still known as "Good King Henri" and he intended freedom of worship for French Christians by honoring the Edict of Nantes which he had signed in 1589.

Even that was too much and on May 14th, 1610, while his carriage was impeded by crowds, a fanatical Catholic assassin named François Ravaillac plunged a knife into his body and killed him.

France's brief dalliance with freedom to Christians ended.

Chapter 7

Erzsébet Báthory: The Protestant Vlad Țepeș?

March 1610: *Holy Roman Emperor Matthias II of Austria dispatches his personal representative (**Palatine**), György Thurzó, to investigate accusations that a noble woman was committing atrocities in Čachtice (modern Slovakia).*

Dracula enthusiasts are well familiar with what they've been told was his female counter-part: Erzsébet (Elizabeth) Báthory.

Born in 1560, Erzsebet (or Elizabeth) Báthory was the daughter of an Aristocratic soldier and the sister of Poland's reigning king. Her family, in fact, was one of the oldest noble houses in Hungary, its crest bearing the draconic symbol incorporated by King Sigismund into the Order of the Dragon. The Báthory clan included knights and judges, bishops, cardinals, and kings, but it had fallen into decadence by the mid-16th century, the royal bloodline marred by incest and epilepsy, with later family ranks including alcoholics, murderers and sadists, homosexuals (considered criminally deviant at the time) and Satanists.

Though physically beautiful, Erzsebet was clearly the product of polluted genetics and a twisted upbringing.

Throughout her life, she was subject to blinding headaches and fainting seizures — probably epileptic in nature — which superstitious family members diagnosed as demonic possession. Raised on the Báthory estate at the foot of the brooding Carpathian Mountains, Erzsebet was introduced to devil worship in adolescence by one of her Satanist uncles. Her favorite aunt, one of Hungary's most notorious lesbians, taught Erzsebet the pleasures of flagellation and other perversions, but young Erzsebet always believed that where pain was concerned, it was better to give than to receive.

> *When Erzsebet was barely 11, her parents contracted her future marriage to Count Ferencz Nadasdy, an Aristocratic warrior. Their wedding was postponed until Erzsebet turned 15, finally solemnized on May 5, 1575.*
>
> *The bride retained her maiden name as a sign that her family possessed greater status than Nadasdy's clan. ~ The Encyclopedia of Serial Killers*, Newton[461]

Any references to her religion are resoundingly "Protestant", yet all that surrounded her was Catholic, from Hungary to Poland. Recall that Sigismund's "Order of the Dragon" was a Roman Catholic knighthood whose mission was to serve the Holy Roman Emperor and the Papacy.

Báthory family Coat of Arms

More than once, serial-killer researcher and author Michael Newton states her family included "bishops" and "cardinals".

> *The strangest and most vicious female serial killer of all time was probably Countess Erzsébet (Elizabeth) Báthory (1560–1614). Born of Hungarian nobility, Báthory grew up in luxury, surrounded by relatives who included kings and knights, judges, bishops, and cardinals.*
>
> *Unfortunately, her bloodline also included strong undercurrents of insanity, alcoholism, sex crimes, and black magic.*[462]

Amongst aficionados of the macabre, Báthory is a household name.

However, discerning truth from fiction is extremely difficult.

It is sadly true that Medieval wealthy, landed Elite were free to commit unbelievably heinous acts upon the peasantry.

It is also true that they were equally ruthless amongst themselves in their never-ending lust for power. It was all-too-easy to frame rivals or enemies.

> *Everyone by now has heard the story of the seventeenth-century female vampire serial killer in Transylvania — the Blood Countess, the female Dracula — Elizabeth Báthory.*
>
> *Elizabeth was once said to be the first "real" female serial killer — one who killed for sadistic, sexual, hedonistic lust instead of political*

or personal power. Her victims were not her rivals but mostly peasant girls employed in her service or daughters from minor, declining Aristocratic families. Elizabeth Báthory is special in that she is the only known female sexual sadistic serial killer without a dominant male partner — to this day, four hundred years later.

We have never had another quite like her.

It was said that she bathed in the blood of her adolescent servant girls in the belief that it nourished the beauty of her skin. She was accused at one point of having killed as many as 650 girls — many tortured to death in the most savage and cruel manner.

Portraits of Countess Elizabeth from her youth show a beautiful woman with raven black hair pulled back from a high forehead, smoky, almond-shaped intelligent eyes, and sensual, pouting lips. Yet there is a cruel curve to her mouth and her face exudes a sullen petulance that betrays an underlying rage.

Elizabeth was born in 1560 into the powerful and wealthy Báthory family in the eastern regions of the Holy Roman Empire — a fluid confederation of territories today roughly covering Hungary, Austria, the former Czechoslovakia, Romania, and other Balkan States, and parts of Germany and Poland. This included the region bordering Hungary and Romania called Transylvania (of Dracula fame, and not coincidentally as we shall see) where her branch of the Báthory family had their seat of power.

At the age of eleven, as traditional with the Aristocracy there, Elizabeth was engaged to marry when she would have turned fifteen a minor Hungarian count named Ferenc Nadasdy, five years her elder. A year before the marriage, Elizabeth became pregnant while "horse playing" with a peasant boy on her future mother-in-law's estate. After having the child in a remote estate and giving it away to a local family, Elizabeth finally married Count Nadasdy in 1575 as scheduled.

The marriage was a happy match, although Elizabeth's husband was away for years at a time fighting the Turks in the south where he developed a distinguished reputation as a warrior. Together the couple

lorded over a vast network of castles, country manor houses, and palaces in Prague, Vienna, and other cities. At their country estates and inside the walls of their castles they had the power of life and death over their servants and peasants. The adolescent Elizabeth developed a reputation for excessive cruelty while disciplining her female servants.

Elizabeth used her power to torture to death in the most horrific and sadistic ways her servants, mostly peasant girls, burning their genitals with a candle; biting them to death; ripping their mouths open with her own hands; burning them with heated metal rods and rivets; beating them with whips, clubs, or iron bars; cutting and stabbing them; throwing them naked into the snow and pouring freezing water over them; pouring boiled water on them and tearing away their skin; hauling them up in suspended barrels spiked inside and rocking and rolling them while showering in their blood below; or closing them in spiked Iron Maidens like garlic in a garlic press.

Perhaps as many as 650 girls and young women were murdered over a thirty-five-year period — and at least between 37 and 51 in the last decade before Elizabeth's arrest in 1610 at the age of fifty, when she started killing not only peasant girls, but girls of noble birth as well. This led to her downfall.

When her castle was raided during the Christmas holidays of 1610, it was said mutilated corpses of girls were found strewn in the courtyard and in the basement of the tower. When the arresting party burst into her chambers, according to legend, she was found sitting on a stool chewing on the mutilated dying body of a girl prostrate before her. The Hungarian authorities ordered that Elizabeth be walled-in for the rest of her life in a castle apartment with only a small open port for food. After four years she died at the age of fifty-four, her legendary cruel beauty still preserved. The true story of Elizabeth Báthory, however, is slightly more complicated, but horrific nonetheless in its details. ~ Vronsky[463]

Arresting authorities bursting in upon Báthory as she was cannibalizing her latest victim is certainly the narrative one would need to cement her as a

ghoulish predator.

But her punishment raises questions. In an age where no barbarism was off limits, it is said that Báthory's status as a female Aristocrat spared her from execution.

> *While several of her servants were arrested and executed, a special law was passed to permit* [the] *prosecution of Báthory, who enjoyed the special status of the nobility. Even then, however, she could not be sentenced to death for her crimes. Instead, when convicted, Báthory was walled up inside a wing of her castle, ordered to spend the rest of her life there. Jailers found her dead on August 21, 1614.*
>
> *Rumors later spread that Báthory tried to stay young by bathing in blood from her victims, but no evidence supports those stories.* ~ Newton[464]

Exile, seclusion and / or imprisonment instead of torture and execution is often the mixed "mercy" granted political prisoners; to be allowed continued life but guaranteed never to tell their story. Was she one?

Most damning of all, the legend of the "female Dracula" would not exist if not for the work of the Company of Loyola.

> *Elizabeth Báthory would have remained merely an anonymous monster had not a Jesuit scholar, Father Laszlo Turoczy, discovered the trial records in 1720, about one hundred years after her death. Turoczy restored the legendary female vampire to human form with a name, identity, history, and detailed description of her crimes in a book published only in Latin.*[110]
>
> *It 1796, Michael Wagener, in a book entitled* ***Articles on Philosophical Anthropology****, was the first to publicize the story of Elizabeth's alleged bathing in blood skin-care motive, stating that after a chambermaid noted some hair out of place in Elizabeth's coiffure, the countess struck her so hard that the girl's nose spurted blood into Elizabeth's face. When Elizabeth wiped the blood, according to Wagener, she discovered that her skin seemed rejuvenated. From then on she would bathe her entire body in fresh blood.*[111]

These details, however, often differed depending on the source. The most common version states that Elizabeth's handmaiden's blood spurted onto the countess's ***hand****. Moreover, the girls had to be virgins or of Aristocratic origins before Elizabeth would believe in the renewing power of bathing in their blood. What was the true story?*

It was not until the 1970s that Boston College professor and Fulbright scholar Raymond T. McNally, along with his colleague Radu Florescu, established rare access to Hungarian and Romanian archives (then still behind the Iron Curtain) that led to their hugely popular book, ***In Search of Dracula****, a history of the Transylvanian Prince Vlad Tepes, nicknamed Dracul ("Devil" or "Dragon") — the historical figure who inspired Bram Stoker's decision to name his fictional vampire "Dracula" and situate him in a Transylvanian castle.*

In the wake of the success of ***In Search of Dracula****, McNally returned to the archives in Transylvania and discovered an abundance of original documents from the trial of Elizabeth Báthory.*[112] *It was not until 1983 that we began to get a more accurate glimpse of what crimes the Blood Countess was actually charged with, and the blood bathing became the first myth to fall. Nowhere in the trial record was there any mention of bathing in blood. It was local gossip and folklore picked up by writers in the eighteenth century.*

But still, the likely explanation for how this myth took root bodes darkly for what Elizabeth was really into: She was thought to have bathed in blood because she was so covered in it after torturing her victims, it appeared as if she had bathed in it. ~ Vronsky[465]

Wagener is an equally interesting source. University of Berlin Professor Hermann Strack referenced Wagener on Báthory in his 1909 text, *The Jew and Human Sacrifice: Human Blood and Jewish Ritual, an Historical and Sociological Inquiry*.[466]

The blood superstition has often led to crime, in proof of which I have collected a large number of authentic documents. They are intended to show legal officials, ecclesiastics, and teachers that this superstition has not remained merely theoretical, and alien to our common life. And that it cannot be described as a peculiarity characteristic only of

by gone times, but that it is a frequent cause of crimes perpetrated for therapeutic or magical purposes.

A. *Murders. Michael Wagener, "**Beitrage zur philosophischen Anthropologic, Psychologie**," etc., II. (Vienna, 1796), 268, asserts that desire for beauty has been a source of inhuman cruelty, and goes on to relate : "A story of a Hungarian lady, which is very noteworthy in this respect, can be found in some Hungarian historiographers, e.g., in Ladislaus Thurotz, Istwanfy, etc. I detail the circumstances which are relevant here, both according to the afore said historiographers and (mainly) according to the existing legal documents."*

"Elizabeth (Bathori) was excessively fond of making herself up to please her husband, and spent as much as the half of a day at her toilette. It happened, as Thurotz relates, that one day one of her chamber-maids once made some mistake in her coiffure, and received for it such a violent box on the ears, that the blood spurted on her mistress's face. When the latter washed the drops of blood off her face, the skin on the place appeared to her to be much more beautiful, whiter and more delicate. She at once came to the inhuman decision to bathe her face, nay her whole body, in human blood, so as thereby to increase her beauty and attractions.*

> ** The name, which W. omits, I have filled in from Meyer's "**Konversations-Lexikon**[3]" II., 668: "E. B. (d. 1614), wife of the Hungarian Count Nadasdy, is notorious for the unparalleled cruelty with which, after enticing young girls into her castle, she had their blood extracted from them, which presumably was used for the beautifying of her skin, and in which she bathed herself ..."*
>
> *"The Count Palatine Georg Thurzo surprised the Countess redhanded in 1610. The result of the examination showed that 650 girls had been the victims of this thirst for blood. A man-servant, who was an accomplice, was beheaded ; two female servants were burnt alive. The Countess was condemned to life-long confinement."*

With this horrible intention, she took counsel of two old women, who accorded her their entire sympathy, and promised to assist her in the ghastly project. A certain Fitzko, a pupil of Elizabeth, was also made a member of this bloodthirsty society. This madman usually killed the unfortunate victims, and the old women collected the blood, in which that monster of a woman was wont to bathe in a trough about four o'clock in the morning.

She appeared to herself always more beautiful after the bath. She therefore continued her operations even after her husband's death in 1604, in order to win new worshippers and lovers. The wretched girls who were allured into Elizabeth's house by the old women under the pretence of going into service, were taken into the cellar on various pretexts. Here they were seized and beaten until their bodies swelled.

Not infrequently Elizabeth tortured them herself, and very often she changed her blood-dripping clothes and then began her cruelties anew.

The swollen bodies of the poor girls were then cut open with a razor. It was not uncommon for this monster to have the girls burnt and then flayed ; most of them were beaten to death.

She herself beat her accomplices when they did not wish to help her in her torturings; whilst, on the other hand, she abundantly rewarded the women who brought the girls to her and let themselves be used as tools for the execution of her cruelties.

She was also given to supposed magic, and had a peculiar magic mirror in the shape of a cracknel, before which she used to pray for hours at a time.[[ccclvi]]

Finally her cruelty reached such a pitch that she pinched her servants and stuck pins into them, especially the girls who drove with her in her carriage. She had one of her serving-maids stripped naked and smeared with honey, in order that she might be eaten up by flies.

When she became ill and could not practise her usual cruelties, she had a person come to her sick bed, [so she could bite] *her like a wild cat.*

About 650 girls lost their lives through her in the way described, partly in Cseita (in the County of Neutrau, in Hungary), where she had a cellar specially arranged for the purpose, partly in other places; for murder and bloodshed had become a necessity to her.

When so many girls from the neighbourhood, who were brought into the castle on the pretext of entering service or of receiving further education, disappeared, and the parents never received satisfactory, but generally ambiguous, answers to their enquiries, the matter became suspicious. ...

At last, by bribing the servants, it was discovered that the missing girls went hale and hearty into the cellar, and never made their appearance any more.

*A denunciation followed both at Court and to the then Count Palatine Thurzo. The Count had the castle of Cseita surprised, commenced the strictest investigations, and discovered the horrible murders. The monster was condemned to life long incarceration for the terrible crimes, but her accomplices were executed."**

> *[A Viennese pamphlet, communicated by Grimm, "**Armer Heinrich**," 181 sq. probably refers to the same episode, although the number of girls tortured to death is given as only 29, and the "beautiful and distinguished lady in Hungary" is alleged to have been "burnt alive in the public market-place" with the old woman who shared her guilt.]*

"User-edited" Wikipedia adds multiple superfluous details to thoroughly connect Báthory to Protestantism.[467]

The entry states that she was a "Calvinist Protestant", as if to imply that she was so serious about it, she passionately followed John Calvin and not other "Reformers".

The hero who harangued officials until an investigation outed Báthory is a "Lutheran Minister" — a rival Protestant. The implication is that the legend surrounding Báthory had nothing to do with Catholics attempting to slander Protestants.

The slandering of Queen Elizabeth suitor Robert Dudley, however, is an excellent example of how Papal agents actively stretch partial truths to impugn the Vatican's targets. A brutal, spoiled, inbred Elite, nominally connected to Protestantism would suit Catholic propaganda needs perfectly.

Canadian film-maker and author Peter Vronsky has addressed Báthory at length, to include details as to the motive for her prosecution.

> *Prince* [György] *Thurzo was related by marriage to Báthory's powerful family, who were all aware of the deliberations taking place in parliament* [the investigation ordered by Holy Roman Emperor Matthias II of Austria]. *(As was Elizabeth, who believed she was beyond the reach of the law.) Aside from their reputation, much was at stake for the family if Elizabeth ended up being convicted for murder or witchcraft — which the rumors of blood bathing warranted. Elizabeth's wealth and properties would have been seized by the Hungarian crown if she were put to death under those circumstances.*
>
> *Moreover, the Hungarian king had borrowed money from Elizabeth's husband when he was still living,*[[cccLvii]] *and as his widow, the debt was still owed her. If executed, the crown debt would be cancelled instead of being paid out to her surviving family members. Prince Thurzo had the title of Lord Palatine — meaning that he had the king's judicial powers in his regional principality — and Thurzo staged the trials in his own jurisdiction in such a way as to ensure that Elizabeth's property and the debts to her remained payable to all the surviving relatives. There emerged a vast literature in Hungary, particularly in the heady nationalist periods of the twentieth century, suggesting that Elizabeth Báthory was entirely innocent and a victim of a family plot to seize her wealth. Thanks to the discovery of more court transcripts and witness statements, Thurzo's correspondence, and other archival records in the 1970s, the real story of Elizabeth Báthory is now better known.*[468]

Báthory's trial was kept secret save to a "Priest" here and there; either due to her status as an Aristocrat or to the corrupt nature of the proceedings designed to frame her. Neither reason is acceptable.

As we've already seen, Medieval feudalism provided circumstances where the Elite could take out any perverse, Satanic lust upon the peasantry and, seemingly, get away with it.

> *...not long before the rule of Bathory, a peasant uprising was quashed by the Hungarian king. Their young leader was kidnapped; hours later he was grilled alive on a fiery throne.*
>
> *His followers were made to eat part of him. Then they themselves were hanged. Certain members of the ruling class devoted so much time to creative methods of torture that it was almost a kind of entertainment, pastime, or sport. Unfortunately, the lower classes were generally treated by royalty as though they were mere animals and severe force had to be used to discipline them.* ~ Morrison[469]

These are circumstances Rome works daily to bring a return of.

> *The Magna Carta ushered in the "rule of law" (but only for the Aristocracy) creating a "due process" for criminal charges, representation for taxation or impressment into military service and punishment commensurate with the crime — which had to be proven to have been committed — as well as several other important precedents.*
>
> *Few know that one of the most powerful enemies of the Magna Carta was the Vatican.*
>
> > *The Vatican has consistently fought every democratic advance from absolute monarchies toward government by the people, beginning with England's Magna Carta (June 15, 1215), "the mother of European Constitutions." That vital document was denounced immediately by Pope Innocent III (1198-1216), who "pronounced it null and void and excommunicated the English barons who obtained it"[2] and absolved the king of his oath to the barons.[3] Encouraged by the pope, King John brought in foreign mercenaries to fight the barons, bringing great destruction upon the country.*
> >
> > *Subsequent popes did all in their power to help John's successor, Henry III, overturn the Magna Carta, impoverishing the country with papal taxes (salaries to the numerous imported Italian*

Priests were three times the crown's annual revenue). Nevertheless, the barons finally prevailed. ~ ***A Woman Rides The Beast****, Dave Hunt*[457]

~ *Illuminati Unmasked*, Cirucci[470]

It is also worth noting that both the Crusade that her husband Count Ferenc Nádasdy de Nádasd went on, and the methods of torture he, she and her investigators are all reputed to have used, are all ***resoundingly*** Roman Catholic.

The news of Elizabeth's arrest and charges did not become widely known.

A Priest's diary from the period, with detailed descriptions of events, only provides this short matter-of-fact notation: "1610. 29 December. Elizabeth Báthory was put in the tower behind four walls, because in her rage she killed some of her female servants."

*The secret trial began within three days of Báthory's arrest, at Thurzo's courts of justice in Bytca on January 2, 1611. All the court officials and jury members owed their allegiance to Prince Thurzo. The plan, apparently, was to quickly sentence the countess to life imprisonment (**in perpetuis carceribus** — "perpetual incarceration") in a fait accompli while the parliament was on holiday to ensure that her properties were not seized or debt to her cancelled.*

While the countess was locked away back in Cachtice, four of her servants were questioned at Bytca, including a session under torture to clear away any loose ends. Using the methodology developed by the Inquisition — which is said to be the first in history to use relational databases in investigative procedure[[ccclviii]] *— the same questions were put separately to each prisoner, and then their answers carefully cross-indexed and compared. At the end of the interrogations, the servants were charged as Báthory's accomplices despite their pleas that they had no choice but to obey the countess's orders. ...*

While at first it was believed that Elizabeth began her killing spree after her husband's death, witnesses testified that the murders began

while her husband was still alive and with his knowledge and participation.

> *At Sarvar during summer His Lordship Count Ferenc Nadasdy had a young girl undressed until stark naked, while His Lordship looked on with his own eyes; the girl was then covered over with honey and made to stand throughout a day and a night. [So that she'd be covered in insect bites. She collapsed into unconsciousness.] His Lordship taught the Countess that in such a case one must place pieces of paper dipped in oil between the toes of the girl and set them on fire; even if she was already half dead, she would jump up.*

The accused servants who were in Elizabeth's service for a period ranging from sixteen to five years, testified that they personally witnessed from a total of thirty-six to as many as "fifty-one, perhaps more" girls killed. ~ Vronsky[471]

Wikipedia claims this of Ferenc Nádasdy's death[472]: *On 4 January 1604, Ferenc, the Black Knight of Hungary died of a mysterious and sudden illness in the middle of a battle. The disease which killed the Count Ferenc Nádasdy is still unknown. It is known, however, that he had suffered a disease of the lower limbs for at least two years before succumbing to the illness.[5]*

However, columnist, author and New York Public Library Research Curator Alexis Coe states:

> *Ferenc was dealt a final wound as well, but not by Elizabeth's hands. He refused to pay a harlot for her services in 1604, who, in lieu of payment, punctured his body. After the deep laceration became infected, he was not long for this world.*[473]

It is said that Báthory brought ruin upon herself because she expanded her appetite for killing to the Aristocracy...particularly, the Catholic ones.

> *Elizabeth became brazen and careless toward the end of her killing career.*

> *While staying in Vienna, she ordered a renowned choir singer from the Church of Holy Mary, Ilona Harczy, to perform privately for her at her apartments in the city on Augustinian Street. The girl was never seen again and witnesses claimed Elizabeth killed her when she could not sing for her, either out of fright or shyness.* ~ Vronsky[474]

Vronsky does give Báthory a fair assessment in how she was prosecuted.

> *The case against Elizabeth Báthory herself was reviewed by a higher court five days later, on January 7* [of 1607], *and Prince Thurzo himself testified before some twenty judges and jurors. Unlike the January 2nd lower court trial, the records of which were kept in Hungarian, the high court trial was transcribed in Latin*[[ccclix]]*. Thurzo and members of his raiding party described finding the still warm battered corpse of Doricza "**ex flagris et torturis miserabiliter extinctam**."* ["whipped, tortured, in misery and finally killed"] *Depositions from thirteen witnesses were heard. It is here that a witness identified only as "the maiden Zusanna" testified that a register was discovered in Elizabeth's chest of drawers listing her victims and that it totaled 650 names. Zusanna testified that in the four years she was in Báthory's service, she witnessed the murder of eighty girls. The hearing was presided over by the king's judge, and its purpose was to appear to gather sufficient evidence to sentence the countess to death, confiscate her properties, and cancel the crown's debt to her. Thus the testimony of Zusanna might have been entirely contrived for that purpose. Báthory desperately petitioned the court to make an appearance to defend herself, but her family blocked those attempts.*[475]

It has been rumored that Palatine Thurzó cunningly cut a deal with the Báthory family who probably considered Countess Erzsébet both expendable and a nuisance.

> *Elizabeth Báthory ... remained imprisoned at Cachtice. Despite the crown's attempt to hold a retrial of Báthory and condemn her to death, the agreement between Thurzo and Elizabeth's family prevailed. When she attempted to challenge Thurzo's authority, he condemned her in front of several of her relatives, saying, "You, Elizabeth, are like a wild*

animal. You are in the last months of your life. You do not deserve to breathe the air on Earth, nor to see the light of the Lord. You shall disappear from this world and shall never reappear in it again. The shadows will envelop you and you will find time to repent your bestial life. I condemn you, Lady of Cachtice, to lifelong imprisonment in your own castle."

Elizabeth Báthory was walled in her castle apartment. The exterior windows were bricked up and only several small openings for ventilation and food gave her contact with the outside world. On August 21, 1614, one of the jailers observed the countess collapsed on the floor, dead. All mention of her name in Hungary was prohibited for the next one hundred years. The memory of her faded behind the mists of the vampire and monster legends of Transylvania until her identity was rediscovered in 1720. ~ Vronsky[476]

What conclusions can we draw?

Holy Roman Emperor Matthias and his henchman Palatine Thurzó found Countess Erzsébet Báthory an easy target. She was nominally connected to Protestantism, the Emperor owed her money and she was already well-propertied.

Unfortunately for her, she was mentally unstable and her wealth and status greatly exacerbated her flaws. It was easy to take her excesses and expand them to monstrous proportions.

How "expanded" were they?

We may never know.

Chapter 8

Aqua Tofana: The Catholic Black Widow of Sicily

> ***July 12th, 1633:*** *Sicilian Thofania d´Adamo is executed for murdering her husband, Francis. She was suspected to have used an untraceable poison which she probably passed on to her daughter, Giulia Tofana. Tofana perfected it as a topical, extremely potent toxin and began distributing it under cover of a well-known relic of "the Catholic Santa Claus".*

There's no such thing as a "classic".

If a work or the one who made it is a household name, there is an excellent chance the most powerful and corrupting force of all time — Rome — wants it so.

Even those who know little of music have heard of Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart.

Mozart was a devoted Catholic whose work frequently glorified his religion.

Mozart was also a Freemason.[477] This winning combination (feigned "war between the two" aside) guaranteed the composer legendary status.

Freemasonry provides Rome with an army of "non-Catholics", many of whom portend to be "Christians" or "Protestants" though "The Craft" is Luciferian and is completely incompatible with dedication to Jesus Christ.

> *Freemasonry, like any secret society, is a gateway organization. If aspiring men wish access to power, they must prove they will be dedicated to the agenda of the Luciferian Elite by being inducted into such a society and showing as they rise through the degrees that they will dutifully serve Satan. That may sound inflammatory but that is,*

essentially, the truth and it is born out in the ancient rituals memorized and conducted by the acolytes.

In this, the Freemasons sound very much like the Jesuits and perhaps with good reason. Secret societies not connected to Rome provide the Church with both plausible deniability as well as the comfort of keeping heretics at arm's length. ...

The Jesuit guidebook ***Secreta Monita*** *gives instructions regarding the use of front groups and on how to hide behind prominent individuals.*

> *The society can also usefully trade, under the name of rich merchants attached to us; but certain and abundant gain is to be looked at, as in the Indies, which have furnished the society not only souls but thus far also much wealth through the favor of God. ~* ***Secreta Monita***[1558]

But what makes these efforts so successful is that the adherents within the secret societies so willingly conform to their Luciferian agendas.

For Freemasons, Bacon's "New Atlantis" was a powerful ideal of gnostic nirvana; Salvation by secret knowledge. It is this reason that causes them to parse "the devil" from "Lucifer, the bearer of light" yet they serve one and the same. ...

The Catholic Church teaches vehement opposition to Freemasonry, as Jesuit Priest Robert Bradley tells us;

> *What is the truth regarding the present official attitude of the Catholic Church toward Freemasonry? To begin this inquiry into that which is now in effect, we should go back to what was stated in the Church's canon law before there was any doubt about where the Church stood on Masonry. The former code (which, incidentally, was promulgated on Pentecost, May 27, 1917, just two weeks after Our Lady's first apparition at Fatima) contained a canon which definitely capped all the previous papal condemnations of it. Canon 2335 reads as follows: Persons joining associations of the Masonic sect or any others of the same kind which plot against the Church and legitimate civil*

*authorities contract <**ipso facto**> excommunication simply reserved to the Apostolic See.*

~ EWTN[1562]

How is it possible for a Catholic to become initiated into Freemasonry if the Masons are Rome's "mortal enemies"?

*Does the "G" in the center of the masonic compass and square stand for "Gnosticism", or "Gesu" as in the Italian of "Society of Jesus": **Compagnia di Gesù**?*

Author John Daniel considers the Illuminati and the Freemasons to be the Jesuits' greatest weapons.

> *The truth is, the Jesuits of Rome have perfected Freemasonry to be their most magnificent and effective tool, accomplishing their purposes among Protestants, yet remaining completely hidden and unknown. But when you decipher their Occult symbols of the Illuminati and Freemasonry that you see in Washington D.C. and on the U.S. Great Seal, then you discover the workings and intentions of Rome that she so secretly and amazingly works behind. One of the most startling, when you understand what it means, is the pyramid and its capstone, "not sitting in place", that makes up the reverse of the American Great Seal and as seen on the back of one dollar bills. That "Pyramid", which represents the heart and soul of Babylonian Sun Worship, and its "Great Work", that is carried on by Romanism, is unfinished! Why? Because the "Capstone", which represents the **Novus Ordo Seclorum**, or New World Order, is not yet in place. Which also means however, that Rome's timeclock, ever since the birth of this nation, has been ticking; anticipating for over two hundred years, the date when the Capstone "will" be put into place.*
>
> *This special event, will "signal" or herald the "beginning" of the so called triumph of Mary which proclaims the victory of Rome for dominating the whole world. The Virgin Mary, who is actually Rome's Isis, will become Rome's central figure, used to deceive and rally the earth's inhabitants; compelling them to submit to the*

New Order of things. Consequently, it will bring on the need to immediately revive the diabolical Holy Inquisition with unprecedented powers and brutality to rid the earth of dissenters.[1563]

~ *Illuminati Unmasked*, Cirucci[478]

Film-maker, TV Producer and radio host Freeman Fly poses with a Templar mannequin at the George Washington Masonic National Memorial in Alexandria, VA. [Permission; Freeman Fly]

It's hard to accept that Freemasons are the "mortal enemies" of the Catholic Church when so many high-profile Catholics have partaken of "the Craft". A sampling of these names include—

* Pierre Charles L´Enfante (1754 – 1825): architect of "Washington D.C.", one of the most gnostically-designed cities in the world, save its twin sister, Rome.
* The aforementioned Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart (1756 – 1791).
* Assassin John Wilkes Booth (1838 – 1865), member of Albert Pike's "Knights of the Golden Circle" and secret Roman Catholic[479].

* William Frederick “Buffalo Bill” Cody (1846 – 1917), “Templar Freemason” and Catholic.
* Sir Arthur Ignatius Conan Doyle (1859 – 1930): author of the *Sherlock Holmes* series and *The Lost World*.
* Eugenio Maria Giuseppe Giovanni Pacelli / Pope Pius XII (1876 – 1958): as Nuncio to Prussia and Germany from 1920 – 1930, Pacelli was instrumental in creating the Nazi 3rd Reich.
* Actor Walter Brennan (1894 – 1974); John Birch Society Roman Catholic and Freemason.
* Hall of Fame baseball player George Herman “Babe” Ruth Jr. (1895 – 1948): Knight of Columbus and Freemason.
* Enrico Fermi (1901 – 1954), “father” of “physics” and “nuclear reactors”[cccl x].
* Actor Marion “John Wayne” Morrison (1907 – 1979), also a member of the Jacques de Molay Society for Boys.
* Lebanese Catholic actor and comedian Amos Muzyad Yaqoob “Danny Thomas” Kairouz (1912 – 1991).
* Actor Ermes Effron “Ernie Borgnine” Borgnino (1917 – 2012).
* Comedian Richard Franklin Lennox Thomas Pryor (1940 – 2005); mother raised him strict Catholic (and sexually abused him), he was an open bisexual and a Freemason.
* Politician Terry Branstad (1946 –), Gov. of Iowa, Donald Trump’s Ambassador to China, mother a Jew, father a Lutheran, but he converted Catholic and became a Knight of Columbus; also Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry “Knight Commander of the Court of Honor”.
* Politician Steve Scalise (1965 –); highly-publicized victim of the 2017 Congressional baseball shooting (a bush-league false flag).
* Comedian Christopher Ashton Kutcher (1978 –); Congressional “expert” on child trafficking[480], [ccclxi].

In 1791, Mozart was writing the liturgy for his Requiem Mass when he fell gravely ill.

Convinced that there was no chance of recovery, he

> *began to speak of death, and asserted that he was setting the Requiem for himself… "I feel definitely," he continued, "that I will not last much longer; I am sure that I have been poisoned. I cannot rid myself of this idea… Someone has given me* ***acqua tofana*** *and calculated the precise time of my death.*
>
> ~ Dash[481]

University of Huddersfield (a publicly-funded college in the U.K.) Professor William Stafford has written on Mozart's death. Not surprisingly, most of his references have a positive-yet-hidden Catholic spin.

> *His wife* [Constanze]*, seeing that the Requiem was oppressing his mind, took away the score. His health improved for a while, and he was able to complete a Masonic cantata which was well received. This cheered him up, and his wife allowed him to resume work on the Requiem. But his illness returned, and he took to his bed. His hands and feet swelled, he was in great pain and partly paralysed, there was constant vomiting. He even had to ask them to remove his canary, because the sound of its singing distressed his nerves. The success of* ***Die Zauberflöte*** *pleased and at the same time saddened him, for he knew he would not live to enjoy his triumph. In the evenings, his watch beside him, he followed in imagination the progress of the opera he would never hear again. He continued to work on the Requiem, advising* [Austrian composer and conductor Franz Xaver — "Francis Xavier"] *Süßmayr as to its completion.*[[ccclxii]] *On the very day before his death he held a rehearsal of the score with a few friends; but when they reached the Lacrymosa he broke down in tears. ...*
>
> [According to devout Roman Catholic "philosopher" Georg Friedrich Daumer[482] in 1861:] *For thousands of years a secret conspiratorial organization has been active in the world; it became especially vigorous in the eighteenth century.*
>
> *"Human society is occupied and infested by a ghastly and terrible worm, pervaded and imbued by a secret conspiracy, which has turned the ground on which we walk into a volcano, continually threatening eruption and devastation."*[8]

> [Daumer now lists every boogeyman outside the Catholic Church, all of whom are agents for Rome, anyway] *It has appeared in many forms — for example, the Freemasons, the Illuminati, the Jacobins and the Carbonari*[[cccLxiii]] *— but its inner esence is hidden, even from the mass of the "initiated", in the deepest darkness. Its aims are world domination, free love and the worship of nature. It masquerades behind the ideals of freedom and equality, but in truth seeks a new order of power and domination; it has a low view of the common people and of women, wishing to reduce them to a degraded and bestial condition. It is ready to use violent means to attain its ends. It fears only one enemy, namely Christianity. The leading members of the antichrist party — for example Hume, Voltaire, Condorcet and Proudhon were all members. At its head is a secret triumvirate: the God-man or Man-god, and below him the world-bishop and the world-emperor — perhaps the last is Karl Marx in London.*
>
> *Mozart was drawn into the toils of this organization when, in all innocence, he became a freemason.*[[cccLxiv]] ***Die Zauberflote*** *is manifestly a masonic opera symbolizing the struggle against Christianity and the Catholic church. But the masonic propaganda of the opera is challenged and subverted by Mozart's doubts. His nature was deeply religious, and for the duet of the armed men he smuggled in a Christian chorale. Sarastro is not unambiguously praised, but appears as a kidnapper. Mozart had come to be at odds with the masons; this is most clearly revealed by his plan to found a rival order,* ***Die Grotte****, as reported in a letter from* [his wife] *Constanze to Breitkopf & Hartel*[[cccLxv]] *in 1799.*[9] *Tragically he took his friend, the clarinettist Stadler, into his confidence and the latter betrayed him. Therefore he was poisoned, like Leopold II and Lessing. Most of his masonic brothers were not involved; it was the work of those hidden in the inner recesses of the order, perhaps using Stadler as their agent to administer the poison. His estrangement from the order is revealed, however, by the fact that they did not help Constanze with the funeral expenses, but allowed him to be buried like a dog.*[483]

As to Mozart's opera *Die Zauberflöte*, "The Magic Flute", Wikipedia summarizes:

> *In this opera, the Queen of the Night persuades Prince Tamino to rescue her daughter Pamina from captivity under the high Priest Sarastro; instead, he learns the high ideals of Sarastro's community and seeks to join it. Separately, then together, Tamino and Pamina undergo severe trials of initiation, which end in triumph, with the Queen and her cohorts vanquished. The earthy Papageno, who accompanies Tamino on his quest, fails the trials completely but is rewarded anyway with the hand of his ideal female companion Papagena.*[484]

Many rank-and-file Masons fall for the propaganda that they are at "war" with the Catholic Church, despite their own lore happily tracing its way through some of Rome's most dedicated soldiery; the Templars.

What any of this has to do with a "Magic Flute" only an "innocent" Freemason can say.

Aqua Tofana

Little is known about Giulia Tofana.

> *So, who was Giulia Tofana outside of being the prolific creator of a widow-maker poison? In many ways, one of history's most prolific serial killers remains a mystery. There are no portraits of Giulia. During the mid-1600s, Giulia sold cosmetics in southern Italy — and her special recipes for Aqua Tofana contained enough arsenic to kill without leaving a trace. Her goal was to keep her poison secret so that she could continue to sell the potent concoction. And she managed to fool the authorities for nearly 50 years.* ~ Carlton[485]

Tofana is reputedly the daughter of murderess Thofania d´Adamo, also a poisoner though this, too, is in dispute.

However, the clues seem to bear these facts out. As the blog "Unknown Gender History" puts it[486] — *This monster, while still a young girl, by some means or other became possessed of a recipe for a mixture of which from four to eight drops were fatal. This liquid, which has become known under the name of "Tofana Water," has been described as clear, tasteless, colourless, and odourless. It was of such a nature that it battled the cleverest medical men of the time, and the acutest analysts were utterly*

unable to testify to its presence in the organs of one of its victims, after the most searching post-mortem examination.

The supposed motive for Tofana's profession was that women of Medieval Europe, and especially Italy, were treated as possessions of men; no better than slaves. Under misogynist abuse, Tofana (along with a confederacy of other women poisoners that may have included an order of nuns) offered a "solution".

> *The first dose, administered in wine or tea or some other liquid by the flattering traitress, produced but a scarcely noticeable effect; the husband became a little out of sorts, felt weak and languid, so little indisposed that he would scarcely call in a medical man; but, if he did, it was only to be told it was a mere nothing, which a draught or two would put to rights.*
>
> *After the second dose of poison, this weakness and languor became more pronounced, and the doctor would begin to think that, after all, the patient required to be put on a course of diet and rest.*
>
> *The beautiful Medea who expressed so much anxiety for her husband's indisposition would scarcely be an object of suspicion, and perhaps would prepare her husband's food, as prescribed by the doctor, with her own fair hands.*
>
> *In this way the third drop would be administered, and would prostrate even the most vigorous man.*
>
> *The doctor would be completely puzzled to see that the apparently simple ailment did not surrender to his drugs, and while he would be still in the dark as to its nature, other doses would be given, until at length death would claim the victim for its own.*
>
> *Then, when too late, the dreadful word " poison" would be uttered, upon which, of course, to save her fair fame, the wife would demand a post-mortem examination. Result, nothing — except that the woman was able to pose as a slandered innocent, and then it would be remembered that her husband died without either pain, inflammation, fever, or spasms.*

> *If, after this, the woman within a year or two formed a new connection, nobody could blame her; for, everything considered, it would be a sore trial for her to continue to bear the name of a man whose relatives had accused her of poisoning him.*[487]

The writer of the article calls themselves “St. Estephe” which is a wine town in the Bordeaux region of France. According to one wine expert[488], the Catholic “Saint Stephen” in question is “Saint Stephen of Calonne, Patron Saint of stone masons”.[cccLxvi]

> *Giulia created a poison she called Aqua Tofana. Its exact composition is unknown, but it is known that arsenic, belladonna, and lead were components of the mixture; ingredients that were also used in the cosmetics of the time.*
>
> *Lead and arsenic were common ingredients for facial powders to lighten the skin, and women used a drop of belladonna in each eye to dilate their pupils, giving their eyes a luminous and arresting look. All of these substances, however, are also highly toxic when ingested.*
>
> *The concoction was said to have no odor, scent, or taste, which made it very easy for an unhappy wife to slip a little into her husband’s food or drink. ...*
>
> *She practiced her craft stealthily for decades. Aqua Tofana was sold for nearly 50 years disguised as a cosmetic powder or in vials as a devotional object called “Manna of St. Nicholas of Bari.”*
>
> *Giulia’s daughter joined her in the business and they kept their work quiet as they moved from Palermo to Naples and then to Rome.* ~ Harvey[489]

Of course, not every Italian is Catholic, but Catholicism is deeply insinuated in many nations such as Italy and even the entire continent of South America.

In Ireland, 90% of the schools are run by the Catholic Church, even taxpayer-funded ones.[490]

Ownership of infrastructure like schools, hospitals and orphanages is how the Vatican conducts some of its most heinous crimes against children and

Catholic agents in government make it all possible.

However, there are several parts of the Giulia Tofana narrative that suggest she was not only Catholic, but in league with her clergy.

“Saint Nicholas of Bari” has been likened to “the Catholic Santa Claus” and is a key figure in Church mythology.

An explanation is given by the “St. Nicholas Center” web site.

> *The true story of Santa Claus begins with Nicholas, who was born during the third century in the village of Patara in Asia Minor.*
>
> *At the time the area was Greek and is now on the southern coast of Turkey.*
>
> *His wealthy parents, who raised him to be a devout Christian, died in an epidemic while Nicholas was still young.*
>
> *Obeying Jesus’ words to “sell what you own and give the money to the poor,” Nicholas used his whole inheritance to assist the needy, the sick, and the suffering. He dedicated his life to serving God and was made Bishop of Myra while still a young man.*
>
> *Bishop Nicholas became known throughout the land for his generosity to those in need, his love for children, and his concern for sailors and ships.*
>
> *Under the Roman Emperor Diocletian, who ruthlessly persecuted Christians, Bishop Nicholas suffered for his faith, was exiled and imprisoned. The prisons were so full of bishops, Priests, and deacons, there was no room for the real criminals—murderers, thieves and robbers.*
>
> *After his release, Nicholas attended the Council of Nicaea in AD 325.*
>
> *He died December 6, AD 343 in Myra and was buried in his cathedral church, where a unique relic, called manna, formed in his grave. This liquid substance, said to have healing powers, fostered the growth of devotion to Nicholas.*
>
> *The anniversary of his death became a day of celebration, St. Nicholas Day, December 6th (December 19 on the Julian Calendar).*[491]

In regards to the “miracle mana”, the “St. Nicholas Center” says this:

> *The “manna of Saint Nicholas” which was once commonly called “oil” is actually transparent pure water that is formed in the tomb of the Saint in the crypt of the Basilica in Bari.*
>
> *This phenomenon is not easily explainable. It is absolutely excluded that there is some kind of infiltration of water from the outside for it has been proven that the casket containing the bones of the Saint is impermeable.*
>
> *Notwithstanding the various solutions that are arrived at from numerous hypothesis forwarded, whether supernatural or natural explanations of the phenomenon, the manna is an authentic relic, because it is a liquid that remained in contact with the bones of the Saint, and therefore explains the very reason why there is such a great devotion springing up from this relic.*
>
> *The manna also exuded in the tomb of the Basilica of Myra immediately after the death of Saint Nicholas, as attested to by numerous biographies and eulogies, all are in accord of the exemplary virtue of the miracle worker.*
>
> *The Legends of the translation likewise affirm that the urn containing the remains of Saint Nicholas of Myra was full of “manna”.*
>
> *After the translation to Bari the phenomenon continued uninterruptedly.*
>
> *It is also fully proven that the pilgrims coming to Bari, are attracted to the tomb of the Saint in view of the fact that the “manna” is famous because of the miracles St. Nicholas accomplishes through it.*
>
> *Between 1954 and 1957, the authenticity that this liquid truly came from the bones of the Saint, as was commonly held, was put into question. In 1954, because of the renovation being done in the crypt, the tomb was opened and the bones were exhumed. Then they were placed inside an urn, where it remained exposed to the public to see and venerate for three years in the hall of the treasures (of the Saint in the Basilica).*

> *Sometimes it was observed that the bones "perspired" a certain kind of fluid; one time the linen sheet which held the relics was found to be soaking wet when the mortal remains of St. Nicholas were re-interred in the tomb. This linen cloth has been preserved up to this day.*[492]

Is the "Manna of St. Nicholas" truly miraculous?

Unfortunately, the Catholic Church has a dark history of merchandising "relics" and many a technician cleric can "age" their handiwork enough to convince an expert. Recall the aforementioned example of "Paleontologist" Jesuit Priest Pierre Teilhard de Chardin who employed relic "aging" techniques to fabricate the Darwinian hoax of "Piltdown man".

Even more fascinating, the hand-painted bottles that were used to disseminate "Aqua Tofana" were indistinguishable from the jars used to sell the "Manna of St. Nicholas".

Many bottles were decorated with naked, bathing or frolicking children. This was a Medieval mechanism for implying sexual deviancy and pedophilia under cover of innocence. It was so common in Catholic Europe, especially Italy, it was given a name — "putto" — which was usually a naked male child.

Possible "Aqua Tofana" bottle: "historical oddity" author Mike Dash.

"Manna of St. Nicholas" bottle. British Museum.

Corning Museum of Glass.

The "*putto*" has been erroneously adopted as a typical depiction of a "cherub" however the "*kerub*" of the Bible (Strong's 3742) was clearly a terrifying and intimidating force as more than one were placed by YHWH in Eden to guard the Tree of Life from fallen man (Genesis 3:24).

In 2003, the fourth meeting between the Vatican and the "Protestant" World Council of Churches took place on neutral ground: the shrine of St. Nicholas of Bari where all who attended gave their veneration.

> *The meeting was held at Oasi Santa Maria, a center for spirituality, under the direction of Monsignor Colucci of the archdiocese of Bari-Bitonto, located just outside the town of Cassano delle Murge.*
>
> *Archbishop Francesco Cacucci and the whole local church welcomed the JWG* ["Joint Working Group"] *in the traditional spirit of the Bari region, renowned for its history of contacts between Christians of various Churches, drawn to the Basilica of Bari which houses the tomb of St Nicholas.*
>
> *Each day, morning and evening prayer were celebrated according to the varied traditions of the churches and Ecclesial Community represented in the working group.*
>
> *... The WCC representatives reported on the results of the Special Commission on the Relations with the Orthodox Churches, and the celebration of the 75th anniversary of Faith and Order held in Lausanne in 2002 and shared the plans thus far for future world events such as the Faith and Order Plenary (2004), the Conference on World Mission and Evangelism (2005) and the next Assembly of the WCC itself (2006).*
>
> *The representatives from the Catholic Church reported on the wide scope of bilateral relations and dialogues between the Catholic Church and the Orthodox, Anglican, Lutheran, Methodist, Reformed, Mennonite, Pentecostal and Christian Church (Disciples of Christ) as well as consultations with the Seventh Day Adventists and Evangelicals. ...*

The rich ecumenical environment of Bari was experienced on several occasions. An opening ecumenical prayer service was held in the parish church of Santa Maria Assunta in Cassano delle Murge, at which Archbishop Cacucci presided, with testimonies presented by local Orthodox, Waldensian, Baptist and Seventh Day Adventist participants.

The whole event was organized by the Ecumenical Group of Bari under the leadership of Fr Angelo Romita.

Afterwards the Mayor of Cassano delle Murge, Giuseppe Gentile, addressed the JWG and spoke of the unity of Christians as a necessary sign and encouragement to civil society in its search for greater harmony and service to the common good.

A visit was made to the Dominican Patristic Institute of Bari which is a center for ecumenical dialogue, research and learning, bringing together Christians principally from Catholic and Orthodox backgrounds.[[ccclxvii]]

A visit to the museum of the diocese of Bari-Bitonto helped to illustrate the important crossroads that Bari has been for Christians from Byzantine, Slav, Latin and Armenian traditions for over 1000 years.

The members participated in the celebration of the translation of the relics of St Nicholas at the waterfront in Bari, presided over by Archbishop [Francesco, "Francis"] *Cacucci, which highlighted the strength of popular devotion to St Nicholas, who is venerated by the Christian East and West.* ~ Vatican.va[493]

Dedicated Seventh Day Adventists may be upset to read of their hierarchy's participation but no more so than the Waldensian Church which was brutally persecuted to near extinction by Rome.

There are many rumors surrounding Tofana, her mother and daughter. The strongest of them state that they moved to Rome and were given sanctuary by Catholic clergy.

One account even states that Tofana and her gang of accomplices were given key ingredients hard to acquire by a "dubious Priest".

> *Aqua Tofana, though, has always been most closely associated with Rome, and it is there that we first encounter Giulia Tofana a few years after the Naples poisoning.*

Let's repeat that sentence.

> *Aqua Tofana, though, has always been most closely associated with Rome, and it is there that we first encounter Giulia Tofana a few years after the Naples poisoning.* [Sicilian folklorist Salvatore] *Salomene-Marino* [(1847–1916)] *says that she came to the city from Palermo, and does what he can to link her to Teofania di Adamo – it was then the custom in Sicily, he notes, for the children of parents with unusual Christian names to take those names as their surnames, and on that basis he suggests that Tofana was Teofania's daughter.*
>
> *Salomene-Marino was a noted authority on Sicilian tradition, and may be right about this. ...*
>
> *Salomene-Marino and* [Alessandro Felice] *Ademollo* [(1826 – 1891)] *– the latter basing his work on research in old court records from the* ***Archivio di Stato di Roma****, a contemporary chronicle, and the famous diary kept by a Roman gentleman named Giacinto Gigli – write that Tofana arrived in what was then the wealthy capital of the Papal States in the company of a much younger woman, Girolama* [sometimes spelled "Hieronyma"] *Spara.*
>
> *The pair had apparently fled Palermo in the wake of an attempted poisoning gone wrong, and quickly resumed their old activities.*
>
> *They recruited several new accomplices – two poison-makers, Giovanna de Grandis and Maria Spinola (nicknamed Grifola), and two saleswomen, or "dispensers," named Laura Crispolti and Graziosa Farina.*
>
> *At some point, this group obtained a regular supply of arsenic by striking up an acquaintance with a dubious priest, Father Girolamo of Sant´Agnese in Agone, a new church in the centre of Rome.* ~ Dash[494]

Another "renegade Priest"?

Don’t for a minute believe that Catholic hierarchy is in any way unaware of *every detail* associated with the lives of necromancers, poisoners and pedophile Priests. The proof of this is in how they are enabled and rewarded for their skullduggery.

Hieronyma / Girolama Spara is another illusive *femme fatale*, a sorceress and confederate of Tofana. She is said to have conducted her poisonings more for personal gain rather than women’s suffrage.

History author Dr. Michael Dash continues with a vignette of a high-profile victim with many names we have seen previously in these pages.

It is strongly incriminating to note that, in this narrative, the assassination isn’t facilitated by a female member of the Tofana / Spara gang, but “Father Girolamo”, himself (on behalf of a member of the powerful Aldobrandini family).

> *Ademollo lists several suspected victims of Aqua Tofana, but there is room here to examine only a single case in detail. This is the death of Francesco Cesi, who was the Duke of Ceri and certainly the richest and most powerful of all those caught up in the poisoning scandal. The scion of a highly distinguished family (his father had been a noted scientist and an intimate of Galileo, and he himself was nephew to the future Pope Innocent XI), Cesi died suddenly and unexpectedly in June 1657. Suspicion eventually fell on his even better-connected young wife, Maria Aldobrandini, a member of one of Rome’s most powerful and influential noble clans.*[495]

Again, we have another intimate, positive connection between “Galileo” (Galilei) and the Vatican; interestingly, one that died of apparent assassination. An unhappy wife could be a cover for the motive of covering up Cesi’s involvement in the corruption of “science” orchestrated by Rome, of which Galilee was a key agent.

> *Federico Cesi was born to an Aristocratic family highly connected in Rome and the Papal States. The family derives its name from Cesi, a little town near Rome. They had a close connection with the Catholic Church, Frederico’s uncle Bartolomeo Cesi was a cardinal in the church, and most of their wealth came from that connection.*[1]

> *Federico was the first of eleven legitimate male children and was born in Palazzo Cesi, in via della Maschera d'Oro, Rome, February 26, 1585.*
>
> *His father was Federico, marchese di Monticelli (1562–1630)[2] and his mother was Olimpia Orsini of Todi. In 1614 Cesi was married to Artemisia Colonna, the daughter of Francesco, principe di Palestrina; she died two years later. In 1617 he married to Isabella, cousin of Filippo Salviati, the daughter of the Marquis of Lorenzo.[3] In 1618 he moved to Acquasparta and lived there until his death at the age of forty-five.* ~ Wikipedia[496]

Orsini, Colonna, Aldobrandini; these are the families which control our existence to this day and they are happy to inbreed in order to maintain that tyranny of wealth and power.

Dash continues with why we have an unhappy Aldobrandini:

> *The facts, insofar as they can now be ascertained, are certainly suggestive.*
>
> *The Duke was, firstly, at least 30 years older than his wife; he seems to have been born around 1608 and first married in 1626.*
>
> *Aldobrandini, who was his second wife, was only 13 years old when they wed in 1648,*[[cccLxviii]] *and thus still no more than 22 when the Duke died ("young and beautiful, courted by many," her beauty only slightly dimmed by smallpox scars, according to a contemporary survey of the ladies of Rome).*
>
> *This lends at least some plausibility to Ademollo's account, even though his information was drawn from information given by Giovanna de Grandis while she was facing ... the likelihood of execution...*
>
> *According to De Grandis's testimony, the Duchess had fallen hopelessly in love with another suitor: a handsome count (and incorrigible rake) by the name of Francesco Maria Santinelli (1627-97).*

Santinelli showered her with love poetry, which Ademollo points out can be used to date the start of their relationship to the months before the Duke of Ceri died.

Aldobrandini's infatuation gave her a pressing reason to rid herself of a husband who was – Ademollo says – in any case already ailing.

The Duchess's first contact with Spara's gang came via the shady priest Father Girolamo.[[ccclxix]]

De Grandis's testimony states that the priest came to see her in search of a poison that could be trusted to do its work inconspicuously; Aldobrandini was fearful of administering anything that might make her husband vomit so copiously that he suspected her.

De Grandis, who had a healthy respect for the power of the Roman nobility, was not keen to become entangled with her, but ... Father Girolamo calmed her fears. He pointed out that Aqua Tofana was a gentle poison that did not cause much vomiting, and added that, in any case, the Duke's food passed through so many hands that there was little danger of any suspicion falling on them.

De Grandis agreed to supply a bottle of her poison, which seems to have been disguised, as usual, as "Manna of St Nicholas." The Priest, in turn, passed it on to a trusted female servant of the Duchess, and within a day or two the Duke was dead[[ccclxx]] *(one version of the story, of unknown reliability, suggests that the whole bottle was tipped into his food in error).*

There seem to have been no immediate suspicions that poison was involved, and there was no autopsy, even though the cause of death was scarcely clear. But the body was placed in an open casket in the basilica of Santa Maria supra Minerva, and when De Grandis went to see it there, she realised immediately that the Duke had met his death by poison.

If Maria Aldobrandini was guilty of her husband's murder, her actions did her little good; Federico Gualdi notes that her own family locked her up in order to prevent her rushing into a scandalous and unequal second marriage with her lover Santinelli. But she at least escaped

suspicion of having anything to do with the Duke's swift death – until, that is, Spara's gang was rounded up the following year.

How the group's murderous activities came to light is far from clear.[497]

Perhaps that's because "the group's murderous activities" ***never*** "came to light".

Another version of Tofana's death states that furious townspeople raided the Catholic church that kept her safe and did what the Vatican had refused to do: executed her for her crimes. Sometimes this account is mingled with reports that they forced the Inquisition to be the Inquisition; to torture for "prosecution" the accused and then kill them.

Continuing the family tradition, her daughter joined the business, and they operated quietly in Italy, moving from Palermo to Naples, and then to Rome. They was eventually betrayed by a wife who put the poison in her husband's soup, then regretted it. The regretful wife stopped her husband from eating the soup, and he smelled a rat. He forced the truth from her, then dragged her off to the Papal authorities. Her obvious weak will and natural talkativeness were encouraged by the proximity of torture devices and the expertise of the authorities at that time. In short, she spilled every last syllable of what she knew.

While one would expect Guilia to be arrested immediately, that didn't happen. Too many locals had a stake in her remaining free, and she was warned. One version of her story from that point is that she was already retired and at her country estate. She had the opportunity to run, which she did. Her daughter and employees were executed. Then she was found and garroted at some later date. (A ghost tour for tourists in Rome includes their apartment, where her ghost is said to call for her lost daughter from their window in the black of night.) However, the most reported — and believed — version says that, while Guilia was elderly, she was still in Rome when she was warned. She ran for the nearest church and demanded sanctuary, which was granted.

However, that was not the end of it. A rumor suddenly raged throughout Rome that she had poisoned the water. This rumor (a

rumor with suspicious beginnings) caused the church to be stormed and Giulia to be extracted from it and handed over to the Papal authorities.

Under enthusiastic torture, she confessed to poisoning over 600 men in just an 18-year span, from 1633 to 1651. She was executed along with her daughter and three employees in July, 1659. They died in the Campo de' Fiori, a square that was called "the field of flowers", because it had been kept an open field for a long time in ancient Rome, but had eventually been paved over and made into a square. Then it became the location for hanging people and burning them at the stake.

After Giulia's execution, her body was thrown back over the wall of the church that had given her sanctuary, and the clergy there were left to dispose of it. ~ Iverson[498]

Then there are other rumors which claim she was hunted down by the Pope, himself!

While still at Palermo, Tofana became acquainted with an old sorceress, Hyeronyma Spara, to whom she imparted her secret. The two worked together until the number of deaths among young married men began to attract attention, whereupon Tofano started for Naples, while Spara betook herself to the Eternal City.

At Rome Spara began operations on an extended scale. She formed a band of poisoners, the principal of whom was a woman named Gratiosa, for, be it remembered, Spara was well up in years.

Spara's method of working seems to have been this: — She gave herself out as a sorceress and fortune-teller, and in this capacity wormed the secrets out of the hearts of the silly women who consulted her. She would then cleverly insinuate that in three or four days the cruel husband or the faithless man, as the case might be, could be removed with, the most absolute safety. A bargain was struck ; mutual promises of the most profound secrecy were exchanged; and within the week there was a new widow in Rome.

If the discontented wife were a member of the middle classes, Spara artfully contrived that the dangerous portion of the negotiations should

be carried on by some of the other members of the gang; for she judged that the women of the "masses" would be much more likely to betray her than the women of the "classes."

Of course the number of deaths among the newly-married men soon attracted the attention of the authorities in Rome, as it had done in Palermo; but, though the police may have had their suspicions, it was some time before they were able to bring the crimes home to the proper quarters; even after they knew that the sorceress Spara was implicated, it was long before they could obtain proof positive.

At length, however, they found a lady who was willing to act in concert with them; and so well did this amateur detective carry out her role, that at last the police knew all the principal members of this infamous gang...

The band was taken and put to the torture, according to the custom of the time.[[cccclxxi]] *All confessed, except Spara, who seems to have had so little knowledge of human nature as to have thought some of the frail ladies whom she had assisted would step forward to protect her from justice. She withstood the torture several times, but, as no relief came, at length cried out, in despair, "Where are the Roman princes, nobles, and knights who have made use of my art? Where are the ladies who have promised me their favour?" But they came not; whereupon the miserable wretch denounced them all and confessed her crimes.*

Pope Alexander VII. [Fabio Chigi] *ordered Spara, Gratiosa, and three others to be executed at once; within the month he sent several others of them to their last account, and the remainder he banished for ever. It was in 1558 that this band of secret murderers was thus broken up and destroyed.*

Meanwhile, the prime criminal was still at large, exercising her terrible vocation not only at Naples, which was her headquarters, but in various parts of Italy. For many years she evaded the police and the Custom-house officers with her bottles of poison in her luggage, and death after death, in the most mysterious way, was reported. She continued her atrocious business until 1709, when her disguise was penetrated. She was publicly strangled. Previous to her death she

> *confessed to having supplied the poison for over 700 murders! ~* Unknown Gender History[499]

However, the narrative that Tofana was in collusion with Catholic clergy and forcibly executed by vigilante citizenry has more than once source.

> *... there are two wildly different versions of Tofana's story. The first has her flourishing in Sicily as early as the 1630s; the second has her still alive in prison a century later. She is supposed to have operated in Palermo, in Naples, and in Rome, and is variously said to have been the inventor of the poison that bears her name, or merely its inheritor.*
>
> *Nor is there any certainty when it comes to the ingredients of her elixir. Most accounts agree that Aqua Tofana was based on arsenic. But some state that it also contained toadflax, Spanish Fly, extract of snapdragon, a solution of pennywort known as aqua cymbelaria, and even madmen's spittle.*
>
> *The mysteries multiply when we consider the vexed question of when, and how, Tofana met her end. One source says that that she died of natural causes in 1651, another that she found sanctuary in a convent, and lived on there for many years, continuing to make her poison and dispensing it via a network of nuns and clerics.*
>
> *Several assert that she was captured, tortured and executed, though they differ as to whether her death occurred in 1659, or 1709, or 1730. In one especially detailed account, Tofana was dragged bodily from her sanctuary and strangled, after which "her body was thrown at night into the area of the convent from which she had been taken." ~* Dash[500]

Dash's article is the most extensive. Many of his sources are, of course, Catholic clergy, such as Cardinal Pietro Sforza-Pallavicini (1607-67) who was a biographer of Fabio Chigi, "Pope Alexander VII".

The fact that so many different narratives exist of the capture, torture and execution of the assassins lends credence to the idea that it never really happened; that their knowledge of murder without trace was carefully and silently consumed by Rome.

In a history with few details, the excessive minutia of Vatican care to track down the killers strikes as fabricated cover. In this version, Papal authorities "played along" with the killers in a masterful game of entrapment!

> *There is, nonetheless, yet a third version of the unveiling of the poisoners.*
>
> *Roman chronicles and court records suggest that the gang was exposed not by the activities of Spara's Aristocratic contacts, but by the low class clients whom she left to Giovanna de Grandis.*
>
> *De Grandis, in this telling, was the weak link in Spara's operation; she had come to the attention of the authorities and been detained on no fewer than three occasions. Her luck ran out with a fourth arrest; this time she was caught with a sample of her poison on her, and although she claimed that it was simply a potion intended to remove unwanted marks from clients' faces, her captors suspected otherwise.*
>
> *In this version of events, the Roman authorities chose to act with a discretion and a willingness to play a long game seldom exhibited by police during the seventeenth century.*
>
> *Realising that De Grandis could not be working alone, they released her, allowed her to go back to her old haunts, and then set up an elaborate trap to catch both her and her confederates.*
>
> *A Florentine noblewoman by the name of signora Loreti was brought to the city and set up with the identity of the "Marchesa Romanini." Establishing her bona fides by moving into a substantial mansion in a fashionable district of the city, Loreti began to pay visits to De Grandis.*
>
> *At first the fake Marchesa sought the services of an astrologer, but it was not long before she was spinning tales of an unhappy marriage and offering huge sums for a bottle of Aqua Tofana. An appointment was agreed, and, as soon as the exchange was made, two officers and a notary stepped out from behind a curtain. The liquid in the bottle handed to Loreti was tested on a number of stray animals.*[[cccLxxii]] *It swiftly killed them, and the whole of Spara's gang was rounded up and brought to trial.*

The result was the scandalous court case whose written remnants Ademollo discovered during his searches of Rome's archives.

The main members of the gang were rapidly convicted, and – although the details of the sentences are missing from the record – we know that, on 6 July 1659, Spara herself, De Grandis, Maria Spinola, Laura Crispolti and Graziosa Farina were all hanged in the Campo di Fiori in the presence of an unusually large crowd.

Ademollo mentions that five accomplices were also tried, but we have no record of their fates, and ... Vita di Alessandro VII adds that 46 of the gang's customers were subsequently "immured" for life.

Most, if not all, of the women convicted in this way were surely De Grandis's low-class clients; Gigli's diary notes that they were packed off to prison rather than banished or detained in convents, the fates most often meted out to well-bred female criminals in this period.

There are certainly hints that attempts were made to limit the scope of the scandal.

Some very prominent and powerful people had found themselves caught up in the investigation, and Ademollo states that Alexander VII himself ordered that Maria Aldobrandini's name should be kept out of Spara's trial; the Duchess was apparently never charged with any wrongdoing, and lived on until 1703.

The dubious[?] *Father Girolamo is another conspicuous absentee from the records of the case. It is uncertain whether he was dead by this point, or was spirited away by the church authorities; either way, he was never interrogated and did not stand trial. Nor was any attempt made – publicly at least – to trace the full extent of the Priest's connections in either the Roman underworld or in high society.* ***This creates a considerable gap in our understanding of the case for – as will become apparent later –*** [“]***renegade***[”] ***clerics of Girolamo's type were essential to the functioning of the "magical underworlds" that seem to have existed in most large cities throughout Europe at this time.*** [emphasis added][501]

Again we read of the “dubious cleric” who magically escapes punishment for his role, perhaps even in leading the assassins. Dash at least acknowledges that such “renegade Priests” were instrumental in Satanic skullduggery from sorcery to suspect “suicide”.

The same can be said of his most prominent confederate.

> *Tofana died in about 1651 – probably in her own bed, and apparently unsuspected of any crime...*[502]

Dash sows it all together; from Rome, to Naples to Paris.

> *All this, I think, allows for two conclusions.*
>
> *The first is that we can place the historical Giulia Tofana in the Rome of the 1640s and 1650s, and dismiss reports of murderous “Tophanas” in the Naples of the first third of the 18th century as errors that have muddied waters for two centuries.*
>
> *The second is that the notoriety of the Naples poisoners tells us a good deal about the lasting impression that the real Tofana made in early modern Europe. Her name, it’s clear, became synonymous with poison – not merely in Italy, but well outside its boundaries.*
>
> *To grasp how a single sensational court case dating to 1659 could have a lasting impact, and why Aqua Tofana itself was much discussed and so much feared, we next need to consider the broader reputation of Italians during this period – an era in which it was widely believed that they knew more about poisons, and poisoning, than any other people.*
>
> *Late in the summer of 1568, Charles de Guise, the enigmatic cardinal of Lorraine, made a plan to end the* [so-called] *Wars of Religion ...*
>
> *According to a dispatch written by the English ambassador, the churchman sent to Italy for 50 expert poisoners, each of whom he paid 1,000 crowns “to empoison wine, wells, and other victuals” most likely to be used by his Protestant Huguenot enemies.*

Charles, Cardinal of Lorraine (left), receives the head of Admiral Coligny, the leader of France's protestants... Mike Dash, A Blast from the Past *Fifty thousand crowns was an enormous sum, and though there are grounds to doubt the details – there was no mass poisoning of Huguenots at the time – the fact that the story was circulating in the highest diplomatic circles suggests that it was known and thought credible at the time.*

Certainly it is hard to imagine a better illustration of the reputation that Italians enjoyed during these years as masters of the art of poison.

> *Most of Europe was united in the opinion that there was something uniquely skilful – and uniquely devilish – about the Italian way with lethal compounds.*
>
> *The English traveller Fynes Moryson wrote a few years later that "the Italyans above all other nations, most practise revenge by treasons, and espetially are skilful in making and giving poisons."*
>
> *A French pamphlet, cited by Anne Somerset, asserted that "in Italy poisons were the surest and most common aids in relieving hate and vengeance."*[503]

With the success of Rome and her Ruling Elite agents like the Medici, the de Guises, Felipe II of Spain and many others in openly slaughtering Christians, a mass poisoning was simply unnecessary.

Chapter 9

“La Voisin”: The Perfect Amalgam of Witchcraft, Satanism and the Catholic Church

> ***July 17th, 1676:*** *Marie-Madeleine-Marguerite d´Aubray, the Marquise de Brinvilliers, is beheaded and burned for having poisoned her father and two brothers to inherit their estates.*
>
> *A witch is rumored to have given her both the poison and the training. She remained at large.*

By the latter half of the 17th century (1600’s), an understandable paranoia encompassed Europe over fear of dying a painful, lingering death from the undetectable killer of poisoning.

The hysteria culminated in *L´Affaire des Poisons*. During the years of 1677-1682, several French Aristocrats were arrested, interrogated, tortured, imprisoned and executed for murder by poisoning.

It was precipitated by the trial and execution of Marquise[cccLxxiii] de Brinvilliers.

A “respected” source on the “Affair of the Poisons” is a book by the same name written by Anne Somerset, daughter of David Somerset, Duke of Beaufort.

Little biographical information is available on “Lady Anne” though she was married to the now-deceased artist Matthew ***Xavier*** Maillard Carr and she handles terms like “Confessor” with familiarity and a lower-case “c”.

Marie Madeleine d´Aubray, born in 1630, was the eldest daughter of Antoine Dreux d´Aubray who was the Civil Lieutenant of Paris, a position of high importance and ample pay.

In 1651, she was married to Antoine Gobelin, of the Gobelin dye manufacturing dynasty which included multiple tapestry workshops. Their combined worth was considerable.[cccLxxiv] Their property and wealth earned them the title of Marquis and Marquise de Brinvilliers (due a clerical error on transcribing of the fiefdom of Brunvilliers).

> *M. de Brinvilliers was an officer in the French army. Soon after his marriage he became colonel of the Normandy regiment and it was while on active service that he made the acquaintance of another officer named Gaudin de Sainte-Croix. Sainte-Croix was, by his own account, the illegitimate offshoot of an illustrious Gascon family. Presumably they had given him money to purchase a commission in the army, for he was a cavalry captain in the Tracy regiment.*[[cccLxxv]] *Sainte-Croix was an immensely attractive man.*
>
> *Handsome, witty and unscrupulous, he possessed a vitality and charm that many found irresistible. While entering with enjoyment into most forms of dissipation, he retained a capacity for serious conversation which gave the impression that he was an upright character. Unfortunately, "beneath the appearance of a wise and good-natured man he concealed a most black and detestable soul".*[8]
>
> *M. de Brinvilliers liked Sainte-Croix so much that he invited him to stay at his house in the Rue Neuve Saint-Paul in Paris. This was a mistake.*
>
> *According to one account Mme de Brinvilliers was already dissatisfied with her husband as he had been unfaithful to her and thus proved highly susceptible to Sainte-Croix's "artful and insinuating manners". Before long Sainte-Croix's "assiduities towards the husband were transferred to the lady".*
>
> *Her discontent with M. de Brinvilliers reinforced the attractions of her admirer, ensuring that Sainte-Croix "did not sigh for long".*[9] ~ Somerset[504]

Later, under torture, Madame de Brinvilliers stated her first sexual experience was at 7 and that she had frequently committed both incest and adultery beyond that.

Although a confession under torture is far from reliable, such a statement is sadly plausible for Catholic Aristocracy anywhere or at any time (and, in fairness, *any* Aristocracy though Rome is the foundation of most all familial wealth).

The Madame's husband (doubtless focused on his own adulterous affairs) made no protest but her father and two brothers were thoroughly displeased by the scandal.

Antoine d´Aubray used his influence to have Gaudin de Sainte-Croix arrested.

However, not only was Sainte-Croix released from the Royal prison (the Bastille) after only six weeks, while there, he met Egidio Exili who was reputed to know more about poisons than anyone else in the world.

Exili was, of course, Italian.

> *Italians were thought not only to be predisposed to employing insidious methods but were also regarded as experts on toxicology, a devastating combination in French eyes. ...*
>
> *A tract issued shortly after Mme de Brinvilliers's trial likewise stressed that the Italians had an unrivalled mastery of poison and that "by dint of hard work and study they have composed such subtle and well-disguised types of poison that they baffle the skill and capacity of doctors. Some are slow … others prompt and violent, but none leave the slightest trace that might reveal their presence."*[505], [ccclxxvi]

Damning to their innocence, after Gaudin de Sainte-Croix was released from the Bastille, he immediately took back up with the Marquise de Brinvilliers and he erected a laboratory at his home.

Somerset explains[506] that alchemy was a common practice amongst European Elites with too much wealth and time on their hands. Often, they or "experts" they hired conducted experiments to find the "Philosopher's Stone" that would turn base metals into gold.

> *Suspicions were later voiced that Sainte-Croix's alchemical experiments had merely formed a cover for more sinister activities and that he was using his knowledge of Exili's "detestable secrets" to*

> *perfect new varieties of poison. One person suggested that this had always been his ultimate goal and that, as far as Sainte-Croix was concerned, "the secret of the Philosopher's Stone was poison".*[15]

During her "interrogation", Marie de Brinvilliers also implicated the King's Apothecary, a Swiss by the name of Christophe Glaser.

Glaser had gone to Florence on a trip financed by the King's Superintendent of Finances, Nicolas Fouquet. In 1664, Fouquet was sent to prison for life, convicted of embezzlement and treason. He had started his Jesuit education at the tender age of 13 and had been installed by the Minister of State and Regent for young Louis XIV, Roman Catholic Cardinal Jules Mazarin (an Italian born "Giulio Raimondo Mazzarino").

Fouquet had designs on taking over from Mazarin as Minister of State but Louis had designs of his own. Being King wasn't enough. He wished to micro-manage even minute affair of State so, along with Mazarin's personal secretary, Jesuit-trained Jean-Baptiste Colbert, they conspired to frame Fouquet. This was likely done in close co-ordination with Rome as Fouquet was afterwards imprisoned in the Pinerolo fortress of Turin, Italy.

More on the "Sun King" and his Roman Catholic Cardinal Regent, shortly.

According to Marie de Brinvilliers, Glaser had been sent to Florence to learn about poisons but this was a scandal as well because Glaser was a respected "man of science".

> *When all this emerged in the course of Mme de Brinvilliers's final interrogations it caused terrible consternation. The seventeenth century was a time of phenomenal technological advance when educated people's understanding of the world was undergoing profound modification. There had been significant discoveries in the fields of physics, mathematics, astronomy and medicine, and it therefore did not seem implausible that comparable advances had been made in toxicology. Understandably, therefore, the possibility that a brilliant and innovative man of science like Glaser might have been using his knowledge for perverted ends aroused intense disquiet.*[507]

Many more "men of science" have shown themselves unscrupulous before and since, from climate expert Michael Mann fabricating his dreaded

“hockey stick” curve chart to prove the fallacy of “global warming” to the aforementioned Jesuit Pierre Teilhard de Chardin creating the Piltdown man hoax to aid Darwinian evolution.

In fact, there are many examples of fossil fakery, including the fly trapped in “amber” (“fossilized tree sap”) that was the inspiration for Jurassic Park’s “mosquito in amber”.

The Natural History Museum’s fly and joy (pun intended) was discovered to be a fake by entomology student Andrew Ross, who noted that the underside of the fly’s amber betrayed the unmistakable signs of having been cut by a jeweler.[508] It wasn’t 38 million years old after all.

But whenever “science” is on the ropes for foisting frauds, the magic of Tinsel Town comes to the rescue. From dinosaurs to deep space, humanity gets its reality from movies.

> *Do you remember the first time you saw a dinosaur? The first time you see them, it’s like...a miracle. You read about them in books, you see the bones in museums but you don’t really believe it. They’re like myths. And then you see the first one alive.* ~ actress Bryce Howard as “Claire Dearing”, “dinosaur-rights activist” [*Jurassic World: Fallen Kingdom*, 2018]

Richard Attenborough as John Hammond gazes at the "source for dinosaur DNA" he has had made into a cane. *Jurassic Park*, Universal Pictures (1993) [Fair Use]

In quick succession, Marie de Brinvilliers arranged for the poisoning of her father and two brothers. Her accomplice and lover, Gaudin Sainte-Croix, had consumed what was left of the family fortune. Sadly, for them, the deaths yielded little more.

When both brothers Antoine and François wasted away into painful deaths following father Antoine Dreux d´Aubray, all in 1670, suspicion was aroused.

A fourth family member had been targeted but the new scrutiny made the murder untenable.

Proving her pro-Roman bias, Somerset describes the sister thus:

> *Not content with having murdered her three closest male relatives, Mme de Brinvilliers next contemplated poisoning her sister. The latter*

> *was a devout spinster who had displeased her by making large donations to various religious foundations, thus diminishing the wealth which Mme de Brinvilliers considered should be passed on intact to her children.*[509]

Only *one* "religion" was organized for "charity" in 1670.

An autopsy was done on brother Antoine and the degraded state of his internal organs pointed towards poison.

A servant named La Chausée had been hired by Marquise de Brinvilliers and Sainte-Croix to execute the poisoning. He fled but was captured and, according to Catholic French "justice" procedures, tortured into a confession.

Gaudin Sainte-Croix died in 1672 of, ostensibly, natural causes and Marie de Brinvilliers fled France.

Anne Somerset's description of Marie de Brinvilliers' life "on the lamb" and capture leave little to question about her biases as she paints the "devout spinster sister" as a paragon of virtue though we are left to assume what she was "devout" in. [emphasis added below][510]

> *...even before La Chausée had been brought to trial, attempts were made to lay hands on Mme de Brinvilliers. In the autumn of 1672 it emerged that she had fled to England and the French at once sought to extradite her.*
>
> *Permission for this was granted, but the English declined to arrest the fugitive themselves, and the resultant delays gave Mme de Brinvilliers time to escape to the Continent.* ***During La Chausée's trial she was pronounced in contempt after ignoring a summons to appear in court and for this the judges sentenced her to be beheaded.*** *For several years, however, Mme de Brinvilliers remained beyond the reach of justice as she travelled war-torn Europe, never resting long in one place and eking out a penurious and wretched existence.*
>
> *Ironically, her main means of subsistence was a small allowance sent to her by the devout sister whom she had once plotted to kill. In August*

1675 the sister died of natural causes, leaving Mme de Brinvilliers in a more precarious condition than ever.

Then, in the spring of 1676, Mme de Brinvilliers made the colossal blunder of renting a room in a convent in Liège. Liège at the time was an independent city state but it had become embroiled in the war between France and Holland, and a year earlier French troops had occupied its citadel. When her presence there became known the French applied to the city authorities for permission to arrest her and this was granted. On 25 March she was seized and taken to the citadel. The news was at once relayed to a delighted Louis XIV, who had shown a keen interest in her case and taken it "very much to heart that Mme de Brinvilliers does not escape justice".[42]

Sun King Pin

As noted earlier, "former Protestant" Henry of Navarre married Marie de ´Medici Valois. They produced a son who would rule France as "Louis XIII".

Needing to preserve the "Divine Right" to rule over their subjects, Louis XIII married Ana María Mauricia whose father was Felipe III of Spain and whose mother, Margaret of Austria, was a Habsburg. It was all the same, however, because Austria, Spain, France and every other major power in Europe were all dominated by Roman Catholicism, including the "nobility".

In 1638, they had Louis Dieudonné, who would go on to become Louis XIV, King of France.[cccLxxvii]

One thing Royal "Divine Right" inbreeding did cause was mistrust. Although Austria, Spain and France were all Catholic, each was ruled by families filled with the lust to forever seek more power and more land.

Because of Ana María's Habsburg lineage, Louis did not trust her to rule as Regent and he became ill when Louis XIV was only 5. Instead, a "Regency Council" was formed, rather than putting the power into the hands of just one individual.

But after Louis XIII's death, Queen Anne had his will annulled by the *Parlement de Paris* which was ruled by Catholic clergy. She then made an

Italian Roman Catholic Cardinal, Regent of France.

Not surprisingly, Giulio Raimondo Mazzarino (Jules Cardinal Mazarin[cccLxxviii]), maintained a vehement hatred of all non-Catholics, especially Protestants (Christians).

> *The Pope* [Maffeo Barberini, "Pope Urban VIII"] *sent Mazarin to Paris at the beginning of 1631 to work out the final details of the agreement. He returned to France again from April to July 1632. He had his first interview with Lous XIII and with the Queen, Anne of Austria, in May 1632. He tried to persuade Louis XIII to send a military expedition to capture Geneva, the fortress of the Protestant movement, but the King, who had good relations with the Swiss cantons, rejected the idea.* ~ Wikipedia[511]

The drive to crush Protestantism via the "Thirty Years War" ended in 1648 which granted Sweden and the Netherlands generous concessions and weakened the Habsburg Empire.

The War had considerably drained the French treasury and the Elite did what they usually do in such situations: passed the burden on to the commoners with increased taxation.

More specifically, it was the Italian Catholic clergyman ruling France, Giulio Mazzarino (Jules Cardinal Mazarin), who raised crushing taxes upon the French. However, the policies were initiated by his Minister of State predecessor, Armand Jean du Plessis, Duke of Richelieu, who was also a Roman Catholic Cardinal.

This caused several uprisings to take place and considerable unrest in Parliament. They have become known as *Le Fronde* — named after the slingshots peasants used to break the windows on the houses of their Lords and Ladies. When Louis XIV was only 8, he was forced to flee Paris. It left a hatred for the "unwashed masses" that would mark the "Sun King's" rule.

At sixteen, Louis was considered competent to rule the nation of France (thanks to his Royal lineage) and he was crowned at Notre Dame Cathedral (named after the Virgin Mary), in Reims; a city dominated by the *Collège des Jésuites de Reims*, the Jesuit university there.

The English College at Reims would be the location from which the cutting edge of the Roman Counter-Reformation would translate the Latin Vulgate into English.

Purposeful inaccuracies were written into the text to bolster unbiblical Roman doctrines.

For instance, in Matthew 6:11, Jesus teaches His disciples to pray, "Give us, this day, our daily bread." The Douay-Rheims translates it "Give us, this day, our supersubstantial bread," to validate transubstantiation (a Catholic doctrine many a Protestant was burned alive for not avowing).

In Titus 1:5, Paul instructs Titus to appoint ***elders*** *πρεσβύτερος ("presbuteros") in every city just as Titus was appointed by Paul. The Douay-Rheims translates them as "Priests" when Christ had already upgraded the Priesthood to* ***all*** *Believers via the Cross. [I Peter 2:9]*

James 5:16 in the King James (based upon the ***Textus Receptus****) states "Confess your* ***faults****" ἁμαρτία ["hamartia" — to miss the mark] "one to another". The Douay-Rheims, along with many modern "Protestant" translations based upon the questionable* ***Codex Sinacticus*** *(more later) translates it "Confess your* ***sins****..."*

Likewise, the King James translates Matthew 3:1-2 as:

> *In those days came John the Baptist, preaching in the wilderness of Judaea, and saying, Repent ye: for the Kingdom of Heaven is at hand! [capitalization added]*

While the Douay-Rheims renders it —

> *And in those days cometh John the Baptist preaching in the desert of Judea. And saying:* ***Do penance****: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand. [emphasis added]*

But perhaps the most disturbing mistranslation is the one which supplants Jesus Christ as Messiah with the Semiramis / Isis cult of "Mary", co-redemptrix.[94]

In Genesis 3:15 the curse against the Serpent is simultaneously the first prophecy of a Divine Redeemer.

> *And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her Seed; [He] shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise His Heel.*
>
> *It is physically impossible for a woman to have "seed", either in procreation or in lineage. This is carefully worded to imply the virgin birth of a Divine Savior (and the lower-case error in the King James has been corrected with appropriate capitalization).*
>
> *The Douay-Rheims renders it —*
>
> > *I will put enmities between thee and the woman, and thy seed and her seed: **she** shall crush thy head, and thou shalt lie in wait for **her** heel. [emphasis added]*
>
> *These purposeful mistranslations in the Douay-Rheims were engineered by the Jesuits.[95] In fact, the Douay-Rheims used to be disparagingly called the "Jesuit-Rheims".*
>
> *However, the role of Loyola's Company in this translation has been erased from documentation. No modern accounting of the Douay-Rheims connects it to the Jesuit order. ~ Secret History*, Cirucci[512]

Versailles

When Royals and Elites aren't fomenting needless wars to satiate their greed or orgies to satiate their lust, they often while away their copious free time chasing and slaughtering inoffensive animals.

This was the case with Louis XIII, son of Henry of Navarre and Marie de ´Medici. "Good King" and "former Huguenot" Henry also enjoyed the "sport" of killing.

Of course anything as opulent and extravagant as the Palace of Versailles has an intimately Catholic history.

> *The site of the Palace was first occupied by a small village and church, surrounded by forests filled with abundant game. It was owned by the* [Florentine banking] *Gondi family and the priory*[[ccclxxix]] *of Saint Julian. King Henry IV went hunting there in 1589, and returned in 1604 and 1609, staying in the village inn. His son, the future Louis XIII, came on his own hunting trip there in 1607. After he became King*

in 1610, Louis XIII returned to the village, bought some land, and in 1623-24 built a modest two-story hunting lodge on the site of the current marble courtyard.[4] He was staying there in November 1630 during the event known as the Day of the Dupes, when the enemies of the King's chief minister, Cardinal Richelieu, aided by the King's mother, Marie de´Medici, tried to take over the government. The King defeated the plot and sent his mother into exile.[5]

After this event, Louis XIII decided to make his hunting lodge at Versailles into a château. The King purchased the surrounding territory from the Gondi family, and in 1631–1634 had the architect Philibert Le Roy replace the hunting lodge with a château of brick and stone with classical pilasters in the doric style and high slate-covered roofs, surrounding the courtyard of the original hunting lodge. The gardens and park were also enlarged, laid out by Jacques Boyceau and his nephew, Jacques de Menours (1591–1637), and reached essentially the size they have today.[a][4][6][7] ~ Wikipedia[513]

The "Day of the Dupes" is another typical chapter of in-fighting between Italian Catholics, French Catholics and their most hated or beloved clergy who were intimately involved in all aspects of their lives.[cccIxxx]

***Day of the Dupes** (in French: **la journée des Dupes**) is the name given to a day in November 1630 on which the enemies of Cardinal Richelieu mistakenly believed that they had succeeded in persuading Louis XIII, King of France to dismiss Richelieu from power.[1] The actual day is thought to have been on the 10th, 11th, or 12th of the month.*

In November 1630, the political relations between the cardinal and the queen mother, the Italian-born Marie de´Medici, reached a crisis. In a stormy scene on 10 November, in the Luxembourg Palace, Marie de ´Medici and the cardinal met in the king's presence. The queen mother demanded the cardinal's dismissal, declaring that the king had to choose between him and her.[2]

No immediate decision came from this conference, but the king retired to his hunting lodge in Versailles. Richelieu seems to have believed that his political career was over, but the intercession of influential

friends saved the minister from impending disgrace. While the apartments of the Luxembourg Palace were thronged by the cardinal's enemies celebrating his fall, Richelieu followed the king to Versailles, where the monarch assured him of continued support. Marie eventually exiled herself to Compiègne.[3]

The "Day of the Dupes," as this event was called, marks the complete restoration of the cardinal to royal favor.[4] ~ Wikipedia[514]

Louis Number Fourteen decided to finish his father's "hunting lodge" in a manner that best benefitted France.

Wikimedia Commons “Vintage News” described the “daily routine” of the “Sun King” at Versailles.

Louis XIV was one of Europe’s longest ever reigning sovereigns, keeping his throne for an incredible 72 years. His reign is known as sort of a Golden Age in French history, admired for the dazzling royal court culture at Versailles, and the intellectual and scientific achievements that blossomed under his patronage.[[cccclxxxi]] *Louis ruled over France at the peak of its powers, and is remembered as the country’s “Sun King”.*

As the ruler of a great European power, Louis was constantly in the public eye, performing the role of glorious monarch throughout his day. He kept a rigorous schedule, and was always surrounded by members of the royal court.

Taking the sun as his emblem, he developed a complex system of court rules and ceremonies, placing himself at the center of France’s political world and reinforcing his absolute, divinely inspired power.

> *According to the website of the Palace of Versailles, the daily routine of Louis XIV began at 8:30am, when the First Valet of the Bedchamber came to rouse the king. This instigated the start of the "getting-up ceremony", in which favored members of the court were invited into the king's bedchamber to observe as he was washed, shaved, coiffed*[[cccclxxxii]] *and dressed.*
>
> *This getting-up ceremony occurred in two stages, with more and more people entering the chamber over the course of the morning. Once his ablutions were complete, the king would sit and eat his breakfast, watched by around 100 adoring male subjects.*
>
> *At 10 am the king left his apartments and usually went to the royal chapel to attend a personal mass. The corridors of Versailles would be filled with hundreds of people anxious to catch a glimpse of the king as he processed ceremoniously from one part of the palace to another.*[515]

Louis commissioned a large number of busts and paintings of himself often as a Roman Emperor or the "Sun-god" Apollo, to be placed all around Versailles.

As has already been shown, the Catholic fixation with the sun is ancient and pagan, deriving from obscured metaphor of the sun as a symbol of Jesus Christ. [Genesis 1:3-5, Deuteronomy 4:19, Revelation 22:5]

> *The vestments of the Priest of Horus are covered with Crosses of equal limbs, thus +. The Cross is also the recognised sign of orthodox Buddhism. ...*
>
> *These same shaped Crosses I have also observed in the Vatican Etruscan Museum, at Rome. They are on the breast of some large Etruscan male figures in paint, very pronounced, from mural decorations in ancient Etruscan tombs.*
>
> *Similar also to these are Crosses on two figures (also on the breast) to be seen in the British Museum, in the great Egyptian Hall on the ground-floor, on the right, passing to the staircase. ... The Cross is the same shape as the above, of equal limbs.*

There is a figure of the youthful Bacchus, taken from an ancient vase with which, antiquarians are familiar, holding a cup and a leafless branch — a figure of much beauty. The head-dress is a band ornamented with Crosses of the same form as above.

A portion of the band falls from the head, and with its fringe and single Cross, if lengthened, would form curiously enough, a complete Priest's stole.

A consecrated wafer marked with a Cross was also used in the rites

of Bacchus. The Cross in a circle is supposed to indicate sun worship. ~ Brock[516]

Gay Paris

Fictional character "Professor Charles *Francis Xavier*", leader of the "*X-Men*" super heroes. Marvel comics [FAIR USE].

Again, a well-researched pro-homosexual blog gives the seedy details of Versailles that are avoided by the "expert" sources.

Homosexuality and lesbianism is woven into the history of the Palace of Versailles and into the lives of its most famous residents. ...

Louis XIII became king of France at just nine years old. And from his teenage years he preferred the company of male courtiers to women.

Charles d'Albert, the young Duke of Luyens, was his particular favorite. While it's not certain the two had a sexual relationship, it is widely rumored.

We do know they shared another passion – hunting. Among the titles Louis granted Charles was Grand Falconer of France. Caring for the king's hunting birds was a great honor.

Luyens died of a fever while fighting Protestants in 1621.

But the king kept hunting. And in 1624, that was to change the shape of a small village 20kms southwest of Paris – Versailles.

Louis, then in his early 20s, decided to build his hunting lodge there.

In Louis son's reign, Versailles was to evolve from hunting lodge to palace. But falconry was never forgotten there. The palace's world famous Hall of Mirrors would host an annual ceremony when the king would receive his new falcons.

Louis started another fashion in 1624, donning a wig. By doing so, he set the style of European men wearing wigs for the best part of two centuries.

The king had married Anne of Austria, daughter of Philip III of Spain, aged just 14. Politics, not love, dictated the match, which cemented the political and military alliance between the Catholic countries of France and Spain.

Some claim the king and queen enjoyed a few years of marital happiness. But Louis was soon busy with his male courtiers again. ...

Meanwhile, Louis didn't follow the usual kingly fashion by having a mistress. That was so unusual that he earned the nickname "Louis the Chaste".

...the king started another relationship with François de Baradas. He was a handsome and athletic officer in Louis' household.

A contemporary writer said Louis "loved Baradas violently". He added that the king committed "a hundred filthy acts with him". ...

Next in line was a more sensible young man, Saint-Simon. He stayed in the king's favor for a decade and ended up a duke. But he became too close to the enemies of Cardinal Richelieu, the virtual co-ruler of France, who had him banished.

Then there was the good-looking and stylish Henri Coiffier de Ruzé, the Marquis of Cinq-Mars.

Louis was obsessed with him but the two regularly argued, causing him much unhappiness. The king even complained to Cardinal Richelieu that the fights were making him have sleepless nights. ...
[[cccLxxxiii]]

Louis suffered from ulcerated intestines, tuberculosis and generally weak health and died aged 41.

He left France much more firmly under the rule of the king rather than the nobles. And that was something his son and heir Louis XIV was to capitalise on.

But it was his other son, Philippe I, Duke of Orléans, who was to be the next great LGBTI[[cccLxxxiv]] *figure in the French court.*

The next king, Louis XIV created a new vision of monarchy, with Versailles at its heart.

He poured a fortune into large scale expansion of Versailles, swamping his father's hunting lodge. What is more, he positioned himself as the Sun King. Even today, symbols of him depicted as the sun, with light shining from him, can be seen throughout Versailles.

And he put the palace to a new use. Louis XIV ordered his troublesome nobles to spend a large amount of time there. It took them away from their own lands and personal power base.

Although ambitious nobles gained from having better access to the king, it wasn't all luxury. The palace became so crowded that some had to make do with just a few small rooms.

Louis' brother, Philippe, was at the center of life in this gilded cage.

The king's brother had been noted as intelligent and attractive from childhood. One duchess called him the "prettiest child in the world".

He was also unashamedly effeminate.

His mother, Queen Anne, called him "my little girl" and encouraged him to dress in feminine clothing.[[cccLxxxv]]

Philippe adopted this as his style and in adulthood would attend balls and parties in female clothes, for example as a shepherdess. ...

Louis' second wife Madame Maintenon once complained to him about the rampant homosexuality at the court. She warned him that if he did not stamp it out, God would punish France.

Louis XIV ... replied with ... : "Should I start with my own brother?"

> *In fact, it could have helped Louis XIV. If Philippe didn't particularly want to marry and have children, he was less of a threat to the king's own dynastic plans.*
>
> *Philippe was around 18 when he found his first young lover. Philippe Jules Mancini, the Duke of Nevers, was the son of Cardinal Mazarin, King Louis' chief minister. He was around Philippe's age.*
>
> *In some accounts, Mazarin even encouraged Mancini to sleep with Philippe – believing a homosexual prince was less of a threat to the king.*
>
> *The Catholic Church may technically disapprove of homosexuality, but not when they can use it to exercise power and influence.*[517]

This is a fascinating admonition because "user-edited" Wikipedia claims redundantly that Mazarin had no children and Philippe Jules Mancini was his "nephew".

As shocking as the idea is (especially coming from a so-called "man of the cloth"), parents encouraging their children to indulge in sexual depravity so that they might gain from it, is sickeningly common.

Investigative journalist Sherman Skolnick states that Yale Skull and Bones '48 President George Herbert Walker Bush (named after banker George Herbert Walker, educated by the Jesuits at Stonyhurst boarding school in England) encouraged his son, Yale Skull and Bones '68 President George Walker Bush to have a homosexual relationship with his Yale Skull and Bones classmate, Victor Ashe.[518] Ashe was the longest-serving Mayor of Knoxville, Tennessee when his classmate and partner made him the United States Ambassador to Roman Catholic Poland: a post he was obviously and eminently qualified for.

Reid-Smith of the "Gay Star News" continues:

> *Of course, the word "gay" was not used then. Even the word "homosexual" wouldn't exist until 1860s, about 200 years later. In the bigoted language of the time, the French called homosexuality "The Italian Vice".*

> *... His position gave* [Philippe] *license to be himself. But by doing that, he provided a human shield to other gay and bi men who grouped themselves around him.*
>
> *For others outside his protection, the law was cruel and the Catholic persecution of homosexuals lacked any Christian compassion.*
>
> *In fact, Louis XIV allowed the laws to become harsher under his reign. Gay and bi men were burnt to death at the stake in France.*
>
> *And the king himself reacted brutally when his own son got caught up in* [a future] *scandal at Versailles.*[519]

This is ironic as so many Catholic clergy (then and now) are, themselves, homosexuals and most of them "practicing". They cover for, and think to compensate for their vice by vehemently persecuting other homosexuals.

However, the modern trend in Catholicism is to follow an openly far-Left agenda of welcoming all forms of sexual deviancy.

In 2014, the Archbishop of New York, Timothy Cardinal Dolan, began welcoming homosexual activists into the St. Patrick's Day Parade (of which Dolan was Grand Marshall), much to the anger of traditional Catholics.

> *New York Cardinal Timothy Dolan led Manhattan's St. Patrick's Day parade on Tuesday as grand marshal, despite backlash from faithful Catholics unhappy with the organizers' decision to allow an openly homosexual activist group to march in the event.*
>
> *"I'm as radiant as the sun, so thanks be to God for the honor and the joy," said Cardinal Dolan on Tuesday morning, as he led 250,000 marchers down Fifth Avenue – including a delegation from "Out @ NBC Universal," a group of gay activists who work for NBC, the network that televises the parade.*
>
> *Catholic commentator Michael Voris and his team from ChurchMilitant.TV were present at the parade and were able to question Dolan on his decision during a press scrum. "Your Eminence, do you have anything to say to the loyal Catholics who find what you're doing here a great scandal to the faith?" Voris asked.*
>
> *"No, come on in. We'd love to have you," Dolan replied.*

Voris reports that he and his cameraman were then removed from the press scrum, providing video of an official telling them to leave, and then calling police over to escort them out of the area.

Both the parade's organizers and Cardinal Dolan drew criticism from faithful Catholics last year by approving Out@NBC Universal's request to march in this year's parade, under a banner that makes reference to their homosexuality. The controversial decision prompted the Catholic League and at least one Catholic school to pull out of the parade, while nearly 5,000 people signed a petition urging Cardinal Dolan to withdraw from the event as a show of support for Catholic teaching forbidding homosexual behavior. ~ Life Site News[520]

Finishing with the Gay Star News:

The teenage Louis, Count of Vermandois, was the son of Louis XIV and his mistress, Louise de La Vallière. This is the same mistress who had enjoyed an affair with the bisexual soldier, Armand de Gramont.

And another figure returns to the stage at this point too – the Chevalier de Lorraine, the love of Prince Philippe's life.

The Chevalier allegedly lured the young Count of Vermandois into a brotherhood dedicated to the Italian Vice – homosexuality. They called themselves "brothers" of a "holy fraternity" and ranked themselves as "grand priors" and "novices".[[ccclxxxvi]]

The Count of Bussy-Rabutin reveals that they signed up to a constitution forbidding sex with women. ... Apparently the "brothers" enthusiastically embraced these rules.

But the Sun King Louis XIV was angry when he learned about the brotherhood. He had turned a blind eye to his own brother's sex life. However the inclusion of his illegitimate son, the young Louis, and his cousin, the Prince of Conti, tipped him over the edge...

When the brotherhood was discovered in 1682, Louis XIV insisted that he would watch as Vermandois was beaten in punishment. He then ordered that the young Louis should marry as quickly as possible. And the king punished The Chevalier by sending him into exile again. ...

When Louis XIV himself died in 1715, his son, yet another Louis, was only five years old. So, while the boy became King Louis XV, he needed a regent to rule for him.

The regent was Philippe II, Duke of Orleans. He was the son of the Philippe of Orleans who had been the great queer figure at Versailles during the last reign.

There were rumors that multiple groups of nobles set up "fraternities" of people having gay sex during this regency.

... the most famous example came on an April night in 1722. A group of 17 young noblemen met in the gardens of the Tuileries Palace in Paris. ...they had sex under the windows of the apartments of the 12-year-old King Louis XV.[521]

The Secret Treaty Of Dover

In spite of (or, perhaps, because of) the vices of his Court, the Sun King was a hyper-devout Roman Catholic. With Louis the "Opus Dei Effect" was in full-court swing: indulge the flesh then do copious penance was the formula then and still is amongst Catholic Elites.

Although Luther's Protest was received with both great joy at the return of Biblical Christianity and rage at the realization of Rome's crimes throughout Europe, the "1%" in power knew that their control over the populace was maintained through Catholicism.

Holland (The Netherlands) and Scandinavia (Denmark, Norway, Sweden, Finland and Iceland) took to heart Luther's teachings whilst Henry VIII's "Anglican Church" allowed the same in England.

The most powerful of those nations (and, therefore, the more dangerous) was England.

Although the surge of Protestantism in Britain was short-lived, the Papacy never slept as long as the English sovereign wasn't completely in Rome's back pocket.

As was previously mentioned, England's greatest Protestant leaders were young Edward VI and Puritan Oliver Cromwell.

Edward was too passionate a Christian to be allowed to reach adulthood and was murdered by Rome as a teen, although the assassins got to Cromwell only after he won the English Civil War against the Papal tyranny of Charles I.

Lord Protector

Out of the Protestant Reformation grew hearty sects like the Puritans. They were hard-working, disciplined souls who did their best to live Christian virtue.

Such a man was Oliver Cromwell.

When war broke out, Cromwell's disciplined, religious mind made him a natural leader and excellent field tactician much as it did Pennsylvania Quaker Dick Winters in WWII, whose exploits were immortalized in the HBO series "Band of Brothers".[477]

It was Cromwell's leadership that thwarted the Roman insurgency.

> *At the battles of Naseby and Langport in June and July 1645, the first showing of the Parliamentarian New Model Army under Thomas Fairfax and Oliver Cromwell, the Royalists suffered major losses.*
>
> *Charles I's surrender in May 1646 concluded the first phase of the civil war, though he rejected all proposals intended to bring a peace. However, he did reach a secret agreement with the Scots regarding Presbyterianism in England, which incensed the English Parliament.*
>
> *The Civil War reached the end of its next phase with Charles's trial and execution in January 1649. ... ~ The British Library Board*[478]

Edith Starr Miller, the Lady Queensborough, also credits Cromwell with putting the Jesuits into dire straits.

> *The Jesuit power, much weakened in England by ... the advent of Cromwell, persisted nevertheless in its efforts to recapture its former status in that land. During the reign of James II, it schemed and intrigued incessantly through its representatives*

Father St. Germain[2] and his successor Father Columbière.[3] After the enactment of the limitation of the English throne to Protestant succession the Jesuit diplomatists were hard put. ~ Miller[479]

On January 20th, 1649, Charles I was executed for treason.

A series of feckless Parliaments were raised and dissolved and Oliver Cromwell was the only man with strength to rule yet the restraint not become an autocrat. Cromwell held the title of "Lord Protector" and when he was offered the crown in 1657 he refused in fury. Why had they cut the head off of one king only to raise up another?

While Cromwell reigned, England was free.

But less than a decade from the death of England's traitor sovereign, Oliver Cromwell's daughter, Elizabeth, fell ill. A doctor was sent to her but she died despite his care.

Shortly thereafter, Cromwell started to suffer from what some have called "malaria" and the same doctor attended him. He died on September 3rd, 1658 at only 59 years old, the anniversary of his two greatest victories at Dunbar and Worcester.

Accounts of his death have caused experts to now question if he was poisoned.[480]

In an entry for the ***Journal of the Royal College of Physicians of London****, Dr. Leonard Jan Bruce-Chwatt, an expert in malaria[481], uncovered Cromwell's healer as his killer — George Bate, physician to secret Catholic Charles I and a Royalist.[482]*

Shortly after Cromwell's death, Charles II was rushed back from exile in Scotland and reinstituted as the monarch of England. On his deathbed, he converted to Roman Catholicism.[483] ~ [*Illuminati Unmasked*](), Cirucci Charles II was Catholic long before his deathbed. The Sun King saw to that.

Three hundred and fifty years after the espionage[cccLxxxvii] took place, even highly-biased sources like "user-edited" Wikipedia acknowledge the shocking truth.

The re-insertion of a King into England made subversion of that authority far easier than having to recruit key members of Parliament or Congress (though Rome has been completely victorious there, as well).

It immediately precipitated the betrayal of England's Protestant ally, Holland.

> *The **Treaty of Dover**, also known as the **Secret Treaty of Dover**, was a treaty between England and France signed at Dover on 1 June[1] 1670. It required that Charles II of England would convert to the Roman Catholic Church and assist Louis XIV with 60 warships to help and 4000 soldiers in France's war of conquest against the Dutch Republic. In exchange, Charles would secretly receive a yearly pension of £230,000, as well as an extra sum of money when Charles informed the English people of his conversion, and France would send 6,000 French troops if there was ever a rebellion against Charles in England. The secret treaty was signed by Arlington, Arundell, Clifford and Bellings for England and Colbert de Croissy for France. Both kings exchanged letters of ratification and kept secret the existence of the treaty.[2] A public treaty of Dover was also negotiated, but it was a fake designed for propaganda and to hide the religious dimension of the secret treaty. The Third Anglo-Dutch War was a direct consequence of this treaty.[3] The actual treaty was published by historians a century later.*[522]

Louis waged endless and relentless wars to expand his territory, seeking to secure key cities on his borders such as Luxembourg, Casale, and Strasbourg.

But it was his persecution of Christians that truly obsessed him, as a "loyal son of the Church".

Father Nicolaus Copernicus had taught that "all revolved around the sun", so also all should revolve around King Louis and his Catholicism: *cuius regio, eius religio* (whose realm, his religion).

The Edict of Nantes, which had been granted by "former" Protestant Henry IV of Navarre needed to go. It provided religious freedom to French Christians that Louis found quite offensive.

Having a high Roman Catholic clergyman as Minister of State made this easy for Louis. Jules Cardinal Mazarin had already empowered a Royal Commission to review the status of Huguenots in France, to exclude them from public office and begin closing down their places of worship.

The Sun King took these restrictions much further.

Nantes was revoked under the Edict of Fontainebleau in 1685.

Louis closed all Protestant schools and churches, forbade Catholics from marrying Protestants, and when pastors and preachers took to the streets instead, they were arrested and sometimes tortured and killed.

The Catholic clergy that populated the Sun King's Court were deeply pleased.

In fact, the King's Confessor was a Jesuit Priest named François de la Chaise.

Rather than stand down his bloated army, Louis wished to keep it active and found a unique solution: forcing Christian homes to quarter his soldiers.

The policy was known as *Dragonnades*, and the most brutal or criminal of soldiery were prized for the duty. They frequently raped and violated wives, daughters, even sons and servants.

Huguenots attempted to flee France to more hospitable nations like England, Switzerland and Holland as well as untamed colonies but Louis forbade them from leaving. They would be tortured and abused into Catholicism and many were forcibly baptized and cataloged into Church rolls: *aut Mass aut mortem* (Latin for "be at Mass or be dead").

Louis' clergy boosted his ego by telling him that he had whittled the Christian population from 900,000 in France to 1,500 or 1,000.

Many Protestants were able to escape France and the nation paid a high price in the loss of skill, intellect and creativity.

One of the excuses for the persecution was disloyalty to the Crown but the effect upon the military soon showed this to be a falsification as the army lost 500 officers, 8,000 sailors and 10,000 soldiers due the Huguenot exodus.

The smallest number — the officers — was perhaps the most telling as many were landed Aristocrats with little reason not to be Catholic other than sincere dedication to the Christian Faith.

They brought their skill and experience to the enemies of France and they did much damage fighting for nations like England.

Duke Friedrich Hermann von Schönberg was perhaps the most important defection. Schönberg had led his French troops with distinction and had earned the title “Marshal”.

With the assassination of Oliver Cromwell, his son Richard became Lord Protector of England but Richard lacked his father’s charisma and leadership.

Key members of Parliament turned Royalist and Richard Cromwell was forced to step down after less than a year in 1659.

The son of Charles I, Charles II (of course), was welcomed back to rule in England.

Charles and his brother James were living in exile in Catholic France although Charles later moved on to Spain for political expediency.

Charles died in 1685 by what may have been a stroke. Having no legitimate heirs, James II was put on the throne.

Although Charles had played at being Protestant, James had openly converted in France and his rule brought alarm to both loyal Ministers of Parliament and the citizenry.

Like Louis, James attempted to keep an active standing army but this was unacceptable to common Englishmen. When James encouraged Catholics to become officers without an oath of loyalty, many knew conflict was inevitable.

It was soon learned that James had a Jesuit confessor, Baronet Edward Petre, guiding his every move back towards Rome. For the first time since the reign of Bloody Mary, the Papal Nuncio, Ferdinando d´Adda, was welcomed at Court.

James continued to push his “Royal prerogative”, also known as “dispensing power” to expand the influence of Catholics in England. In 1687 he issued the aptly-named Declaration of Indulgence which allowed Catholics to openly dissent from government policy. He then required his edict to be read in the Protestant Churches.

James II injected Catholic teachers into Oxford, Christ Church and University College where they usurped power. When the Protestant President of Magdalen College died, James forced secret Catholic Anthony Farmer into the position, though he was completely unqualified and it should have been up to the Board of Regents to promote a qualified, on-campus educator to the position.

In 1886, Lord Robert Montagu, Prime Minister Benjamin Disraeli’s Vice-President of the Committee on Education and a member of Queen Victoria’s Privy Council, went even further, as he described James’ role in the Vatican’s usurpation of all Ireland.

> *Mr.* [William Ewart] *Gladstone* [Prime Minister of Britain from 1892-1894] *has been realizing the policy of* [Richard Talbot, 1st Earl of] *Tyrconnel, in Ireland. It was the old policy of the Jesuit party, which Tyrconnel carried out. Tyrconnel was Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, under King James II. His nick-name was “Lying Dick Talbot” (Macaulay: **Hist. II.**, p. 144). He “swore savagely at the Act of Settlement*[[cclxxxviii]]*”, and called the English interest a foul thing, a roguish thing, and a “damned thing,” while he “at first pretended to be convinced that the distribution of property could not, after the lapse of so many years, be altered.”*
>
> *Gradually, however, he took another tone, and tried to persuade the Council to deprive the English Protestant landowners of their property, and place it again in Catholic hands.*
>
> *In making a progress through Ireland, he found to his surprise, that the Roman Catholic secular Priests “exhorted their congregations to withhold from him all marks of honour.”*
>
> *But the Irish peasantry followed the lead of the Jesuits, and crypto-Jesuits, and the Regular Priests of the other Orders, and “sang Erse*

> *songs in praise of Tyrconnel, who would, they doubted not, soon reappear to complete the humiliation of their English oppressors."*[523]

In 1886, Lord Montagu used the term "Crypto-Jesuit" to describe incognito ordained Jesuits fulfilling their "Blood Oath" by infiltrating countless governments and organizations for espionage and destruction.

Today, that term has been mutated by those same Jesuits to blame Jews, instead. It is simultaneously cunning and ridiculous as anyone can be (and is) called a "Crypto-Jew" without cause or proof, simply to distract from the machinations of the Company.

Montagu described the same infiltration we experience today, though not just in government, but "law enforcement" and critical infrastructure as well.

The base of operations for the effort to control England was across the Channel in Roman Catholic France, the home of the Sun King.

> *Another historian, Armand Carrel, wrote, in 1827, a book on "the Counter-Revolution in England." It was translated into English, and published by Bogue in 1846.*
>
> *Carrel traces the action of Tyrconnel directly to the Jesuits; and he wrote with the papers of the French Foreign Office at his command.*
>
> *To the Jesuits he ascribes great power, during the reign of James II., because James "never ceased to conspire with them. The orders which he dictated to the Council, were those which the directors of his conscience had previously sanctioned; these were the true Ministers, who had practical cognisance of all public affairs, through the obscure medium of their police, which everywhere superintended and influenced the authorities, high and low."*
>
> *There was, in fact, "a secret Government," which overrode the real Government of the country.*
>
> *Even the Courts of Justice were prostituted, and made mere engines of the well-known revenge and spite of the Jesuits against all those who had thwarted their projects, or passed censures on their acts.*[524]

The warping of justice in the West through a Jesuitical application of “law” is so overwhelming it has sprouted its own subculture which Rome also feeds and twists to a destructive extreme with movies such as “Dirty Harry”, “Death Wish”, and “Falling Down”.

In each case, the “hero” (or “anti-hero”) is never truly righteous and never wins his fight against corruption. Instead, they self-destruct or barely escape the clutches of the Machine.

Montagu notes with sour surprise how the power of the Jesuits was as strong in his century as one and two before.

We can say the same, today.

Montagu then discloses an accusation erased by history: England’s Catholic King James II was an ordained Jesuit.

> *Such a state of things might, in one respect, be more easily brought about in those days than in these. For (as we learn from certain letters, from the Jesuits at Liege to the Jesuits at Fribourg, which had been intercepted in Holland, and sent over to England) James II. had been “received” as a member of the Society of Jesus, and had vowed that the interests of the society should be his one end and aim; and that he would complete the conversion of the three kingdoms, or else earn a blessed martyrdom in the attempt.*
>
> *Nor was it necessary for him to go abroad every Easter, to make his confession and obtain advice from his Jesuit superiors; for Jesuits and crypto-Jesuits in plenty had been placed about him; and he had a Jesuit confessor and “Spiritual Director.”*[525]

That was Father Edward Petre (1631 – 1699), the Knighted and landed Baronet of Cranham. James was so bold a Catholic upon the Throne of England that he flaunted Petre’s position and made him publicly his “advisor” by placing him upon the Royal “Privy Council”.

Petre was also the Vice Provincial of his Order in England.[cccLxxxix]

> *In 1686 and 1687, Lord Tyrconnel pushed forward, with all the energy of his character, that part of the Jesuits’ plan which consisted in turning Ireland into one vast camp.*[526]

How thoroughly have the Jesuits succeeded for Rome!

It was done with the usual tyranny of the iron fist.

> *He took the ancient charters from the towns, so that there might be no law in Ireland but such as he approved; he put an end to the Corporate bodies, and dismissed all the Protestants who had been employed under the Duke of Ormond, or the Earl of Clarendon.*
>
> *By various acts of cruelty, he managed to worry out and extirpate the Protestant landlords, so that he might have at his command a Catholic Ireland to assist King James, if a struggle should ensue between the Catholic throne and Protestant England (Armand Carrel, p. 233).*[527]

Although James' first wife, Anne Hyde, was a converted Roman Catholic, their two surviving daughters (other children died in infancy), Mary and Anne, were raised Protestant.

This posed a problem for Rome so James moved to pass the Crown to the Sun King of Catholic France.

> *In 1687, King James (Macaulay, II., p. 306) entertained, the intention of leaving his crown at the disposal of Louis, the King of France — that Louis XIV. who had a Jesuit confessor* [François de la Chaise], *and was a willing tool of the Jesuits; that Louis who could not be got to listen to any complaints from the other side, "because he had so much of (Pere) Coton in his ears."*
>
> *The original paper, according to Lord Macaulay, exists in the archives of France and Holland...*
>
> *This paper was "handed about from "Jesuit to Jesuit, and from courtier to courtier, till some eminent Roman Catholics, in whom bigotry had not extinguished patriotism, furnished the Dutch ambassador with a copy."*[528]

But the plan to bracket England between Catholic France and a Catholic Ireland was hatched and fomented across several centuries.

> *In the meantime "Tyrconnel had, with his master's approbation, made arrangements for separating Ireland from the Empire (an aggravated*

Home Rule), and for placing her under the protection of Louis, as soon as the Crown should devolve on a Protestant Sovereign." ...

Tyrconnel proposed it in 1687; and Gladstone realized the scheme in 1881.[529]

The methodology of control is exactly as that being used today: positions of critical power are held by open, hyper-devout Catholics (usually Jesuit-trained).

Others are held by dupes, puppets and pawns who are either bribed or blackmailed into loyalty.

We must not suppose that the persons to whom James confided political places, or high posts in the army, were all Roman Catholics...

There were some who, while Romanists at heart, would have indignantly denied that they were Papists; and who would have betrayed their true character to the vigilant, who observed that they let a Popish conspirator escape at a critical moment, when they might have brought him to justice; or perceived that they conducted a cause in the law courts in such a way that justice should be wrested, in order to give vast riches to some adherent of the Roman Catholic cause.

Nor was it always advantageous to James to appoint Roman Catholics, whenever he could obtain professing Protestants whom he could manipulate and get to "roll the log" for the Papists.

He replaced the Duke of Ormond [James Butler] *by the Earl of Clarendon* [Henry Hyde, the brother of James' first wife, Anne Hyde] *in the Lord Lieutenancy of Ireland.*

"He did not, however, confide his projects to Clarendon; he rather, indeed, made use of him to conceal them; for the attachment of the Earl of Clarendon to the Anglican religion being well known, his nomination would reassure the Protestants of Ireland; and it was important that their suspicions should not as yet be aroused."

"The person entrusted with the preparation of the Popish revolution in Ireland, and with organizing the troops who might come when the

> *proper time arrived, was a Popish officer named Talbot, created Earl of Tyrconnel by the King."*
>
> *He was the Parnell of that day!*[[cccxc]]
>
> *May we, in this day, have our eyes opened and our energies aroused after the example of our forefathers two centuries ago!*
>
> *The history of that day is repeating itself so exactly in this day that we must be crass indeed if we do not understand the recondite meaning of events; and then but a little energy will be required to speak out what we see; and that will suffice to stop the Jesuit schemes for the present.* [530]

Sadly, Lord Montagu's warnings were left unheeded.

Montagu describes the false Hegelian dichotomy of 19th century English Whig vs. Tory politics as one could precisely describe them today in "Republican vs. Democrat" America where (in 2015) Jesuit-trained House Speaker John Boehner worked hand-in-hand with Jesuit-mentored Democrat leader Nancy Pelosi to provide Jesuit Jorge Mario Bergoglio with the first-ever address of a Pope to the combined government of the United States in September of that year.

> *In reading Armand Carrel's book we turn back frequently to the title-page, to assure ourselves that we are not perusing contemporary history.*[[cccxci]]
>
> *"To obtain or to retain certain employments, it was necessary to be of the same religion with the King."*
>
> *A famous crypto-Jesuit used to say to me, even in the days of the Protestant Lord* [Henry John Temple, 3rd Viscount of] *Palmerston, that there were two sides in the House; but that the division was not between Whig and Tory, Radical and Conservative, or any other political parties.*
>
> *Then, he added, "rest assured that no one ever gets on in the House except either by Palmerston or by me."*[531]

Montagu confirms in 1886 what we know today: that agents of the Papacy disguise themselves in many forms from atheist to humanist to even

Muslim.

Many promote themselves as “Protestant” but are beholden to the Luciferian doctrines of Freemasonry.

In Montagu’s example, one such Freemasonic “Protestant” was simultaneously a Knight of Malta.

> *There are even those in England who consent to work in the Romanist cause at the bidding of their superiors, and yet profess to be Mahommedans.*
>
> *An earl said to me the other day: “Be an Atheist, be a Freethinker, be a Mahommedan, be anything you like, but do not belong to the Church of England.”*
>
> *He had just told me of one, who is extremely high in the land, who poses as a Protestant and as one of the chiefs of the Freemasons, and yet had received a dispensation from the Pope to remain so, even after having been received with great though secret pomp into the Roman Catholic society of the Knights of Malta!*[532]

Even at the time of Montagu’s writing, Rome was in complete control of England as she is everywhere else, today, especially in the United States.

The insurgency was conducted and is maintained through the infrastructure of “education”.

> *“In order to secure the rising generation, it was necessary to have the direction of education.”*
>
> *“Not content with having founded colleges where the Catholic youth might be brought up secure from Protestant seductions, they determined to invade the Universities themselves”; and so they obtained the election, to fellowships of the colleges, of persons who would be content to work in their interest.*
>
> *The letters from the Jesuits of Liege exulted over the prosperous state of the Romanist religion in England, and explained all that the Society was doing to remove education out of the hands of heretics; they continued in these words: “We have got chairs of humanity at Lincoln,*

Norwich, and York; and at Worcester, a public chapel under the protection of the soldiery."

"Our brethren are about to purchase some houses at Wigan, in Lancashire."

"Our interests are advancing most powerfully."

"Fathers of our Order preach before the Royal Family, and in the principal churches."

These letters also announced the future elevation of Father Petre, the Jesuit, to the dignity of Cardinal; and the placing of Father [John] *Warner, the Jesuit rector of St. Omer, about the King, as his confessor and spiritual director.*

Father Petre was also sworn of the King's Privy Council, and Monsignor [Ferdinando] *d'Adda* [an Italian from Milan] *was publicly received as Papal Nuncio at Windsor, just as Cardinal* [Henry Edward] *Manning was, last year, received at Marlborough House to the Prince's garden-party, at which the Queen was present.*[533]

In April 1688, James ordered the Declaration of Indulgence re-read in English churches. When clergy petitioned the King to reconsider, led by Archbishop of Canterbury William Sancroft, James had them all arrested for sedition (against Rome).

Finally, James began using bribery and the altering of election districts ("gerrymandering") to pack Parliament with Catholics.

When his devout Italian Roman Catholic wife Mary gave birth to a son, threatening another generation of his policies, English Protestants rebelled. They invited Dutch Protestant William of Orange to oust James and rule in England. Making this even more appealing was that William ("Willem III") was married to James' daughter Mary, who had been raised Protestant.

William arrived in June of 1688 and, although James had superior numbers, he did not have the temperament and leadership to oppose the stronger William. He threw his Royal seal in the Thames and fled to France.

It was Dutch Protestant William of Orange who accepted German Protestant defector Marshal Frederick von Schönberg into the service of

England’s Protestant military.

Louis was counting on Catholics in England rising up and causing civil war at Willem’s appearance but a revolt did not happen.

By 1693, Louis’s massive army was stretched thin and a famine choked their supplies.

France was devastated, perhaps losing as many as one million lives.

Louis was forced to reign in his aspirations.

At the turn of the century into 1700, Carlos II died in Spain without a legitimate male heir. The resulting convolutions of Royal in-breeding precipitated a war as Louis’ grandson Philippe, duc d´Anjou was one of the claimants.

The rest of Europe was so concerned with the creation of a Franco-Spanish super-state that Holy Roman (Catholic) Emperor Leopold I allied himself with Protestant William (Willem) III of England who also represented Holland as William of Orange.

The war would rage on through to the death of William and the terminal illness of Louis. Philippe did go on to become King of Spain but only by relinquishing his claim to the Throne of France. That went to Louis of Bourbon, offspring of Louis, duc´d Burgundy and Marie Adélaïde of Savoy. He ruled as Louis XV.

On September 1st, 1715, the sun set on the Sun King as a result of a host of ailments which included gout, boils and diabetes.

Retour à l´Affaire des Poisons (Back to the Affair of the Poisons)

We return to the plight, twenty-five years earlier, of Madame Marie-Madeleine-Marguerite d´Aubray, the Marquise de Brinvilliers, and the retelling of it by subtly-slanted Lady Anne Somerset.[cccxcii]

> *When her room at the convent was searched a document was found headed “My Confession”. Unlike that written by Sainte-Croix, the paper was carefully preserved by her captors who saw that, provided it could be used in evidence against her, it contained extraordinarily damaging admissions. Most important, she acknowledged in it that she*

had poisoned her father and two brothers, and she also recorded that she had tried to poison her daughter and her husband, though in neither case had this proved fatal. In all, she had made five or six attempts on her husband's life, thinking "to make myself more comfortable" by ridding herself of him, though she had subsequently thought better of it and nursed him back to health.

Other disclosures were startling in a different way, for she detailed a history of remarkable sexual depravity. She noted that three of her five children had not been fathered by M. de Brinvilliers, for two were the product of her fourteen-year union with Sainte-Croix and another was the offspring of an unnamed cousin. She would have had more illegitimate children had she not taken drugs to induce abortion. Besides taking lovers, she had "committed incest three times a week, perhaps three hundred times" in all.[[cccxciii]] *She further claimed that she had lost her virginity aged seven and that she had been even younger when she had first had impure "touchings" with her brother.*[43]

One should perhaps be cautious about accepting all aspects of this confession as the literal truth. Mme de Brinvilliers herself would later attempt to discredit it by insisting that she had been of unsound mind when she wrote it and while it was obviously in her own interests to say this, parts of it invite scepticism. ...

Nowadays a different interpretation can be drawn from it for, if it was true that she was sexually abused as a very young child, this might explain, even if it cannot excuse, her extraordinary callousness and psychopathic tendencies.[534]

This admonition is a shocking, 17th century proof that, not only is power attainted through the abuse of children (what I term the "Pedocracy") but it is a system that has been in place for *millennia*.[cccxciv]

Somerset goes on to discuss the "controversy" over de Brinvilliers' "diary".[535]

The investigating magistrate did not accept her explanation but he was doubtful whether he could make use of her confession. If it was agreed that the document had been drawn up under the secrecy of the

> *confessional, then it was by definition "extra-judicial" and it would be sacrilegious to reveal its contents in a court of law. Concerned about the prospect of violating "one of religion's most sacred mysteries", Palluau*[[cccxcv]] *consulted a panel of senior judges.*
>
> *Several disagreed with Palluau's belief that the document was inadmissible, but the First President of the Paris* ***Parlement****, Guillaume Lamoignon, did not deny that the matter was "highly problematic". In the end the question was referred to a group of theological experts who pronounced that, in view of the fact that no priest had been present when the document was written, it was not a confession in the religious sense. Accordingly, it was permissible to use it as evidence.*[47]

—A technicality worthy of the Sorbonne! If true, who was de Brinvilliers' Confessor? Why wasn't he interrogated as well?

This veil of Catholicism's "sanctity" blots out official investigations by "secular" justice to this very day.

On 15 July 1670, Marie de Brinvilliers was adjudicated the "mercy" of torture and then death by beheading. One possible sentence was to have her right hand cut off. She could've been tortured to death in any number of ways as well as being burned alive.

The "secular" French authorities then saw to de Brinvilliers "spiritual needs".

> *It was now necessary to find a confessor to minister to the condemned woman during her final hours. The man selected for the task was a Jesuit professor of theology named Edmé Pirot. In some ways it was a surprising choice for he had no previous experience of attending prisoners on their way to execution.*[536]

Apparently, there was little concern for the "sanctity of the confessional" when there were fears that de Brinvilliers was a formidable assassin whose accomplices could still be at large, waiting to topple anyone in the French Aristocracy.

Pirot saw Mme de Brinvilliers for the first time on the morning of 16 July.

As yet she had not been notified of the judges' decision, but she told him she considered it inevitable that she would be found guilty, which meant that, within twenty-four hours, she would have to undergo torture and face death.

Like the judges who had tried her, Pirot was amazed by the fact that she did not seem at all perturbed by the prospect. When she was given her midday meal she tranquilly requested that the soup served that evening should be more nutritious than usual, as the following day was likely to be "very tiring for me".[51] *However, as the hours passed by, Pirot was able to penetrate her protective carapace by impressing upon her that even the vilest sinner could attain divine forgiveness through penitence. He was delighted to see "the first signs of contrition and distress" as she began to weep, declaring it was fortunate that her crimes had not gone undetected, as this afforded her a chance to escape eternal damnation. Pirot urged her to summon the judges immediately and admit everything, but though she promised she would ultimately make a full confession to the Attorney-General, she said she did not wish to do this until the following day. She realised that if she delayed it would be assumed that her admissions had been coerced from her by torture, but she said that for the remainder of the day she wished to concentrate on the spiritual guidance Pirot could offer her.*[537]

Marquise de Brinvilliers was then tortured in this manner:

In preparation for her ordeal Mme de Brinvilliers was first stripped naked and then bent backwards over a wooden trestle. Her ankles were attached to a ring on the floor and her wrists fastened to rings set low on a wall. Her body was thus unnaturally distended and in a position of extreme discomfort even before the torture itself began. A cow's horn was then forced between her lips and eight ***coquemards*** *of water (a* ***coquemard*** *was a unit of measurement equalling two and a half pints) were funnelled down her throat. After each* ***coquemard*** *had been*

administered there was a pause so that questions could be put to the prisoner and the answers noted down by the clerk in attendance. ...

After she had been compelled to swallow ten pints of water the torture entered a new or "extraordinary" phase, more severe still than the "ordinary" form which had preceded it. The trestle on which she was supported was removed and replaced by another higher off the ground, so that her body became still more arched and contorted.[538]

Despite this, de Brinvilliers gave up no new information.

Afterwards, she was given into the care of her Jesuit Confessor.

After a torture and interrogation session which had lasted a total of four and a half hours, she was permitted to rejoin her confessor in order to prepare herself for the final ordeal of execution.

For more than four hours Mme de Brinvilliers was closeted with Pirot in the Conciergerie chapel. At length, just before seven [of July 17th, 1670]*, the executioner indicated that the final reckoning could not be postponed any longer.*[539]

Anne Somerset appears to have availed herself of Jesuit Edmé Pirot's written account[540] and the Priest also appears to have been with Marie de Brinvilliers through all of her "official" activities, from torture to execution. Somerset paints him, too, in a sympathetic light.

In the gaol courtyard Mme de Brinvilliers was loaded on to a tumbril and transported through the teeming streets to the Cathedral of Notre-Dame.

There she was required to perform a public penance: bearing a lighted torch in her hand, she had to kneel outside the church and ask pardon of "God, the King and justice" for having murdered her father and brothers "wickedly and out of vengeance and to have their wealth".[57] *Then she was put back in the cart and driven to the Place de Grève.*

The windows of the houses in the Place de Grève were packed with spectators who had paid high prices to observe the execution from a prime vantage point. In the square itself the crowd surrounding the scaffold was so dense that the cart driver had to lash out with his whip

> *to force through a passage. When Mme de Brinvilliers was finally able to mount the scaffold, a new indignity awaited her, for she had to go down on her knees while the executioner laboriously shaved her head. All the while Pirot knelt by her side murmuring prayers, but his words were often drowned out by the angry roars of the crowd.*
>
> *Having finished his preparations, the executioner indicated that he was ready to wield his sword and Pirot withdrew slightly. The blade flashed so swiftly that for a moment Pirot thought that the executioner had missed his mark, for Mme de Brinvilliers's head remained on her shoulders. Then, as he watched, the head slowly toppled sideways. Satisfied by the way he had proved his expertise, the executioner demanded complacently of Pirot, "That was a good stroke, Monsieur, was it not?"*[541]

The Sun King, however, was not satisfied.

The victim had walked under her own power to the gallows; all of her limbs in good working order.

Had the torture been lenient because she was an Aristocrat?

The paranoia of poisoning far outweighed such a consideration.

Louis commissioned a *Chambre Ardente* (which usually presided over investigating "heretics") to search out remaining assassins.

An unusual occurrence, facilitated by a Catholic Priest, was the first to arouse suspicion in 1677.

A woman named Magdelaine de La Grange was widowed when her husband, a tax collector, was executed for receiving stolen goods. She began eking out a life as a fortune teller until she was taken in by an elderly lawyer named Jean Faurye.

After eight years with Faurye, they (supposedly together) visited a notary to register their marriage.

Faurye died shortly thereafter and de La Grange, rather than Faurye's family, received his considerable wealth.

The family lodged a complaint at the Grand Châtelet, which is the judicial and police complex in Paris. An investigation ensued and it was discovered that the man who had claimed to be her husband at the registration of their marriage was, in fact, the Priest who supposedly married them; an “Abbé Nail”.

The two were arrested and imprisoned.

In February of 1677, de La Grange wrote a letter to the Secretary of State, François-Michel le Tellier, the Marquis de Louvois, and said she had grave information that put all of France in danger.

> *The involvement of Louvois was an extraordinary development, for he was one of the most powerful men in France. Born in 1639, he had since his early youth been groomed by his father, Michel Le Tellier – who himself had become Secretary for War in 1643 – to serve the King. ...*
>
> *Louvois drove himself very hard and laboured indefatigably on the King’s behalf. “I’ve never known a man* [to] *work so much,” the Marquis de Saint-Maurice declared in 1667. He was also a natural bully who did not consider politeness a priority. Even the King, who valued Louvois as an indispensable servant, would declare, once he was dead, that Louvois had been “an unbearable man” and among those who had less cause to be grateful to him he excited feelings of intense dislike. The King’s sister-in-law, the Duchesse d’Orléans, subsequently recalled, “Louvois made himself hated by everyone on account of his brutality and coarse speech. He had no refinement and was a detestable man.” He was physically unattractive, with a corpulent figure and jowly face, and his manners were extraordinarily brusque. Describing him as “mordant and peremptory in command, demanding complete submission to his wishes”, the Venetian ambassador noted that Louvois not only ignored the complaints of subordinates but was less than deferential to some of the principal personages at court.*[2]
>
> *Besides inspiring hostility, Louvois was ruthless about pursuing vendettas. ...*

> *Later it would be alleged that Louvois used the Affair of the Poisons – in which he played an active role from the start – to pursue "personal enmities" by encouraging the persecution of individuals who had annoyed him or who were affiliated to Colbert*[[cccxcvi]] [542].

It was le Tellier who invented the tactic of quartering soldiers in the homes of Huguenots; *le Dragonnades*.[543]

The investigation was given to Nicolas-Gabriel de La Reynie, the Lieutenant-General of the Paris Police.[cccxcvii] Some considered La Reynie an unusually scrupulous and fair lawman whilst others saw him as François-Michel le Tellier's lacky.

In December of 1677, an Aristocrat named Louis Vanens was arrested for fraud involving alchemy. The sums of money involved were large enough to also arrest a small banker named Pierre Cadelan and Vanens' servant Jean Barthominat, who had been going by the name "La Chaboissière". The scam may have involved routing funds through Venice and Italy.

After his arrest, Barthominat / "La Chaboissière", claimed he, too, had information critical to the preservation of the State. He claimed that their international dealings had put him in contact with a "big cheese" who had commissioned him to take poisoned letters to the King.

An anonymous letter left in a Parisian Catholic church echoed the concern that the King might be a target of poisoning.

Then, as today, Catholic France was happy to entertain the occult and "fortune-telling" or "divining" was a trade highly sought after.

It was with great shock, then, that such a trade was found to be connected to poisoning and assassination because it was ubiquitous in Paris — an underground in plain sight, impossible to fully root out.

> *The probe into Vanens's activities, coupled with the mystery of the anonymous letter, had left Louvois and La Reynie full of trepidation. At the end of 1678 a new development occurred, which convinced them that they were right to be concerned. In December a lawyer named Maître Perrin attended a dinner party given by Marie Vigoreux, the wife of a ladies' tailor.*

> *Now aged forty, she had at one time been a wet-nurse to members of the Aristocracy, but had abandoned that trade to set herself up as a fortune-teller.*
>
> *She had done very well at this and had acquired a sizeable clientele from every stratum of Paris society. Primi Visconti had come across la Vigoreux when the Marquise de Vassé had engaged her to tell fortunes at one of her parties and he had been very impressed by her powers. Describing her as "very knowledgeable about palmistry", he insisted that when she read his hand, the most learned of men could not have given such a well-reasoned exposition on his future.*[544]

In her helpful glossary of "Principle Characters", Somerset states:

> ***Primi Visconti, Giovanni-Battista*** *Italian visitor to court who arrived in France 1673. Acquired reputation for psychic powers. Wrote memoirs of his time in France.*

What she fails to state, there or anywhere else, about "John Baptist" Visconti Aicardi was that he was more than just a "visitor"; he was a diplomat on behalf of the Vatican and an ordained Priest who would go on to become Bishop of Novara in the Piedmont of Italy. No doubt his warm familiarity with the occult was not only known by his superiors but encouraged.

For his part, Visconti was as good a Catholic as they come and he wrote affectionately of the Sun King's brutal tyranny.[545]

> *The other guest at Mme Vigoreux's dinner party was a stout and powerfully built woman in her forties named Marie Bosse. The widow of a horse dealer, she had been briefly imprisoned for* [counterfeit] *coining three years earlier but had been thriving ever since her release. As the meal wore on she became somewhat drunk and astonished Maître Perrin when she suddenly declared that things were going so well for her that once she had poisoned three more people, she would be able to retire.*
>
> *Maître Perrin reported this conversation to the police, with the result that orders were given for the two women's arrest. On 4 January 1679 Mme Vigoreux and Mme Bosse (together with la Bosse's two sons and*

a daughter) were seized. They were taken to the Chateau de Vincennes, a royal fortress on the eastern edge of Paris. There they were confined in the fifteenth-century keep, which would be the place of custody for all suspected poisoners arrested in Paris over the next three years.

The arrest of la Vigoreux and la Bosse focused scrutiny on the numerous fortune-tellers and "divineresses" who were currently active in Paris and who for the most part had been carrying on their activities without any interference from the authorities.[546]

Catherine Monvoisin, known as "La Voisin", was the archetypical example of a "divineress" completely at home with Catholicism, necromancy, clairvoyance or conjuring demons through "spells".

LE PORTRAIT DE LA VOISIN.
Source de tant de maux maudite creature
Que par mille poisons detruisoit la Nature,
Si la parque en filant tes detestable jours
A fait regner la Mort, en prolongeant leur cours,
Vn Supplice effroyable et plein d'Ignominie
A sceu trancher le fil de ton enorme vie.

Perhaps the clientele that most pushed fortune-tellers into the poisoning business were the large number of adulterers who came seeking assurance that their illicit love affairs would be allowed to blossom when their spouse was out of the picture.

“Ah, Paris!”

> *A significant number of clients despaired of ever finding happiness with their husbands. Discontented wives would often want to know whether their husbands would die in the near future and it did not require a gifted clairvoyant to know that they were hoping for an affirmative answer. ...*
>
> *Sometimes a client would admit that she longed for her husband to die and the divineress was invariably sympathetic. A young woman called Mme Vertemart told the notorious divineress Mme Voisin that she wanted to be rid of her husband so that she could spend more time with her lover, and la Voisin assured her that this could be brought about by prayer. When Mme Vertemart said she found it difficult to believe that God would grant such a request, Mme Voisin told her that to achieve this it was “necessary to live like her and to have as much experience as she had in this kind of thing”. Mme Vertemart remained sceptical, pointing out that since her lover had a wife, she would not be able to marry him even if she were widowed, but Mme Voisin promised to take care of everything. “Don’t pry!” she chided her client, “I don’t like little women who are so penetrating; suffice to say that for me nothing is impossible … I’ve made other women happy; just bring the money.”*[34] *Mme Vertemart accepted these assurances but other women who came to Mme Voisin with similar problems were not content to rely on prayer alone to resolve their difficulties.*
>
> *Sometimes magic and spells were used to assist clients. Drawing on old superstitions, the divineress might perform a ritual such as “burning the faggot”, in which an incantation was chanted over a flaming log. The log was said to represent the body, blood, soul and mind of a named person, who would enjoy no peace till he had accomplished the celebrant’s desires. There were other forms of magic employed to incite love. When that doyenne of divineresses, Mme*

Voisin, was requested by a M. de Prade to bring about a marriage between him and the wealthy widow, Mme Leféron, la Voisin fashioned a wax figurine of de Prade and buried it in Mme Leféron's garden.

With a woman called Mme Cottard, who wanted her lover Forne to marry her, la Voisin took a different approach. She supplied Mme Cottard with a powder to smear over her hand and said that when she next touched Cottard he would be unable to resist her.[35]

Marie Bosse believed that burying used bed sheets or samples of menstrual blood was a good way of promoting love, while urine specimens were better suited to harmful spells. Mme Voisin apparently concurred with this: when a woman called Mme Brunet applied to her in hopes that she would rid her of her husband, la Voisin instructed her to supply her with some of his urine, as well as the discarded shells of eggs that he had eaten.[36] *It was only when spells using these items failed to have any effect that la Voisin adopted more extreme measures.*

Pigeons' or sheep's hearts could feature in spells and sometimes even parts of the human body were used as adjuncts to sorcery. The magician Lesage admitted employing a dead man's bone in one ritual, while the formidable la Trianon went further. Not content with having a human skeleton hanging in her consulting room (when questioned about this she would claim it enhanced her piety to have an image of death constantly before her) she asked Mme Voisin to obtain the fingertips of a hanged man from her neighbour, the public executioner. La Voisin declined to carry out the errand, whereupon la Trianon herself allegedly cut the hand from a felon who had been broken on the wheel and whose decomposing corpse had been exhibited on the highway. When her house was inspected following her arrest, its contents included not only poisons such as arsenic and cantharides but also "the finger of a dried hand". [547]

As Police Lieutenant-General Reynie moved on with his investigation, one name continued to be set before him: La Voisin.

Catherine Deshayes, later Catherine Monvoisin, is one of the best examples of Roman Catholic syncretism.

Catholicism is, itself, a syncretistic mix of Babylonian, Sumerian, Egyptian and Greek paganism, draped with the nomenclature of Christianity.

It is a religion that naturally metamorphosizes into whatever is the most comfortable and pleasing to the native inhabitants and the Jesuit Order is the most adept at this process.

In fact, the Jesuits are so adept, they brought down the ire of their sister orders early on with the "Chinese Rites controversy" where Loyola's Company was so thoroughly mixing Confucianism with their religion that the rest of their practitioners could no-longer recognize it.

In Haiti, Catholicism is mixed with voodoo and known as "Vodoun".

In Mexico and Cuba, it is mixed with African spiritism and known as "Santería".

In 17th century France, Catholicism was so seamlessly mixed with demonism that Catherine "la Voisin" Monvoisin felt completely at ease with Mass in the morning and a séance in the evening.

> *On 12 March 1679 Catherine Monvoisin, known as "la Voisin", was arrested as she came out of her local parish church where, as was her custom, she had attended mass. Now forty-two years old, she had been honing her skills in astrology, palmistry and physiognomy from the age of nine. Having devoted herself ever since to "cultivating the knowledge God had given her", she had pursued her calling with remarkable dedication and prided herself on providing an excellent service.*[548]

As is typical with a Catholic apologist, Lady Somerset acts as if la Voisin is an aberration, not a culmination.

Further betraying her bias, she also equates (conflates) Catholicism with Christianity, despite writing about a time when the Inquisition openly persecuted, tortured and slaughtered Christian men, women and children, sometimes just for having memorized a single phrase of Scripture.[549]

> *La Voisin appears genuinely to have believed in the power of magic but she combined this with an outward profession of piety. As the circumstances of her arrest suggested, she was a regular churchgoer,*

> *and her answers to her interrogators would abound with devout sentiments and respectful invocations of the "Good Lord". When she finally began to make significant revelations she would claim that she was doing so "for the glory of God", who had commanded her to heed His will as she knelt in prayer. Earlier in her career her readiness to imply that she was in tune with the workings of providence had stood her in good stead, for clients were comforted by her apparent belief that her professional activities were compatible with* ***Christianity****. It may be that Mme Voisin herself was scarcely aware of any contradiction. Once, having assisted at an abortion, she was said to have wept tears of joy when the midwife in attendance baptised the foetus. Far from being troubled at having terminated the unborn child's existence, she exulted in having been instrumental in securing its salvation.*[550] [emphasis added]

However, Somerset acknowledges la Voisin's popularity in a city and country made homogenously Roman Catholic by the spilled blood of "heretics".

> *La Voisin's renown as a divineress had made her prosperous. One acquaintance claimed that "all the world came" to see her and Primi* [Giovanni-Battista] *Visconti likewise believed that "most of the ladies in Paris had visited her". Marie Bosse suggested that Mme Voisin had earned a total of 100,000 livres "from her evil dealings"; another estimate put her income at 10,000 livres a year.*
>
> *While it is impossible to know if these figures are accurate, she certainly lived in some style. Her house in the Rue Beauregard was in a suburb of Paris outside the city walls called the Villeneuve. When her clients came to visit, she saw them in a little pavilion in the garden. According to one account, she was never short of business. After noting that "la Voisin had as much money as she wanted", an envious colleague described how "before she got up every morning, there were folk waiting to see her, and throughout the rest of the day she was with more people; after that, she kept open house in the evening, with violins playing, and was always making merry".*[551]

She did so well, in fact, that she was able to support her indolent husband in a time when wives paying for the household was unheard of.

One of the businesses that helped her in her success was getting rid of the evidence of incessant Parisian fornication and adultery.

> *La Voisin's husband, Antoine Montvoisin, had at different times been a silk merchant and a jeweller, but his businesses had all gone bankrupt.*
>
> *Consequently la Voisin had to support him and all her children, and perhaps it was the pressure of having "ten mouths to fill" that spurred her into crime.*
>
> *When a midwife she employed had expressed qualms about performing another abortion, Mme Voisin had retorted, "You're mad! Times are too hard! How do you expect me to feed my family and children?"*[552]

He, apparently, wasn't pleased with the arrangement but he clearly knew where his wife's earnings came from and took steps not to become one of her clients.

> *Her husband showed scant gratitude for the way she kept him, for she complained he became vicious when drunk and treated her badly. La Voisin had never made a secret of the fact that she longed to be rid of him. One of her admirers later recalled that upon encountering la Voisin, the standard form of polite greeting was to enquire whether her husband had yet died.*[14] *La Voisin herself would later tell M. de La Reynie that numerous people had urged her to kill Montvoisin, while maintaining that she had rejected their advice. Abundant evidence would eventually suggest that she had, in fact, made several attempts on his life, though none had succeeded. Perhaps she had been constrained by the need for caution, for her husband was on good terms with Samson, the public executioner. He had told Montvoisin that in the event of his dying suddenly he would arrange for an autopsy to be carried out on him.*[553]

Perhaps Monsieur Monvoisin was annoyed that, with all of the illicit sex going around, his not-particularly ravishing witch wife was getting plenty on the side, herself.

> *Mme Voisin's marriage may have been unhappy, but an active love life afforded some solace. Despite the homely features portrayed in the only known engraving of her, she clearly exerted a powerful sexual allure. Her lovers included magicians and alchemists such as* [Adam] *Lesage* [a key figure in the Affair of the Poisons], [alchemist Denis Poculot, Sieur de] *Blessis and Latour,*[[cccxcviii]] *as well as the tavern keeper M. Herault, who promised to marry her if her husband died. She even had a brief affair with a member of the Aristocracy, the Vicomte de Cousserans, to whom she had given lessons in palmistry.* [554]

La Voisin's partnership with the abortionist Bosse would eventually provide Paris Police Lieutenant-General La Reynie with a wedge of accusation, enabled by greed, that cut both of them.

> *At one point Mme Voisin had operated in partnership with Marie Bosse and had sent clients to her when she judged it appropriate. However, no trace remained of their former friendship for, years before, they had quarrelled over money. As would ultimately become clear, la Voisin had suspected that Mme Bosse had denied her a full share of the proceeds deriving from the murder of M. Brunet, for which his widow had paid generously. The antagonism between the two women now proved helpful to M. de La Reynie, for each proved anxious to denigrate the other.*[555]

Bosse and Monvoisin (remember, born "Catherine Deshayes") implicated each other in both multiple abortions and murders by poisoning.

Police Lieutenant-General La Reynie was disturbed to find more Aristocrat clients besides Marie d´Aubray, Marquise of Brinvilliers such as Marguérite Leféron, who also had her husband murdered.

She wasn't the last.

> *On 22 March Mme Voisin created another sensation when she named the lady who had wanted her to produce a poisoned posy. This turned out to be Mme Françoise de Dreux, an extremely attractive thirty-year-old who lived in the Rue des Tournelles on the Île de la Cité. She was married to a Maître de Requêtes and numbered among her relations*

*numerous other office holders and members of the judiciary. Indeed, M. d'Ormesson, one of the commissioners of the **Chambre Ardente**, was a cousin.*[26]

The King's court was also swarming with her family and friends.[556]

Using a flower as a method of delivery for poison is resounding complex, especially for this era.

Now recall the derision Lady Somerset has (see Footnote ccxlvii / 247) for the accusation that Catherine de´Medici poisoned Jeanne d´Albret, the Protestant Queen of Navarre, with a glove.

However, the growing list of "landed nobility" that had availed themselves of witchcraft, abortion and murder through Catholic Paris' underground threatened to dramatically curtail the investigation.

*On 10 April 1679 the **Chambre d'Arsenal** sat for the first time. Its procedure mirrored that of normal courts of law. The judges considered the evidence presented to them by the **rapporteurs*** [investigators] *before themselves interrogating defendants on the **sellette*** ["saddle": witness stand]. *When reaching judgement, they took into account the opinion expressed by the Attorney-General on each case, but they were not obliged to abide by it.*

*The trials began on 4 May 1679. In the course of that one day Marie Bosse, Mme Vigoreux and their client Mme Ferry were examined on the **sellette**. Two days later all were sentenced to death and the Chamber ordered that la Bosse and la Vigoreux should be tortured prior to execution.*

Under torture la Bosse clarified the methods used to kill M. Brunet. In addition she made some new allegations, the most important of which was a claim that the Maréchal [François-Henri de Montmorency, duc] *de Luxembourg – one of France's foremost generals – and the Marquis de Feuquières had wanted to summon up the devil. La Vigoreux, in contrast, told her examiners little of substance. This was certainly not because they handled her gently. On the contrary, the agony of her legs being crushed in the **brodequins** proved too much for her and at 4 p.m.*

> *she died from what was officially described as "an abscess of the head".*[557]

The "Maréchal de Luxembourg" was another fine example of French Catholicism.

> *Luxembourg was considered immoral, even in those times, but ... he was attended by the famous Jesuit Priest* [Louis] *Bourdaloue*. ~ Wikipedia[558]

What qualifies a Jesuit for fame? Bourdaloue was entrusted with overseeing the "conversions" of Huguenots at the hands of the "Sun King".

The French Elite, however, were not particularly lenient towards the threat of assassination.

> *On 10 May* [1679] *the executions took place. Mme Ferry, who had confessed to poisoning her husband, had her wrist cut off outside Notre-Dame and was then taken to the Place de Grève to be hanged. Marie Bosse's eldest son was also hanged for having by his own admission assisted his mother to prepare poisons. His mother's crimes were deemed so heinous that she was burnt alive, a fate la Vigoreux would have shared had she not already died. By decree of the commission, Marie Bosse's fourteen-year-old daughter was brought to see her mother perish in the flames in the hope that the spectacle would have a salutary effect on her character.*[559]

But, even here, there was special consideration for the devout Catholic witch.

> *For the moment, at least, Mme Voisin was spared execution ...*[560]

Unlike today, anywhere in the West, Catholic France had considerable repercussions for killing unborn children (which often entailed gruesome hooks and forceps being inserted into the womb and ripping the baby out).

> *At the time abortion was a capital offence, with both the mother of the aborted child and the midwife who performed the act being liable to the death penalty.*[561]

Somerset wrongly concludes (as is Jesuitically consistent with Leftist rationalizing) that despite the harsh punishment, abortions continued,

therefore, they shouldn't be punished.

A report to Confessors seems to convey their continued prevalence (note again the mixing of Vatican, State and "historians").

> *Although cases of this kind usually escaped exposure, this did not mean there was a low incidence of abortion. Following the death of Mlle de Guerchi, senior churchmen warned* ***Parlement*** *that during the past year alone, 600 women in Paris had revealed in the confessional that they had rid themselves of unwanted babies.*[562]

It is also interesting to note that midwives in Paris were certified by oath for the sanctity of life,[563] just as abortion "doctors" are, today.

This apparently weighed upon la Voisin's personal abortionist, Marie Lepère.

> *On 27 May, by which time she had been in custody more than two months, Mme Lepère made much fuller admissions. She acknowledged for the first time that she had the knack of "voiding" pregnant women, though she still insisted that the technique she used was not at all invasive. She explained gravely that she performed the operation with water rather than a hooked instrument and that "everything depends on the manner of syringing".*[564]

To la Voisin and Lepère, they were doing a service to the Elite of Paris by allowing them to be immoral without evidence or consequences (the root of abortion today).

If the infant should have the misfortune of being born in the process, the child was duly baptized into "the Church" before dying.

According to Catholicism, the child's soul was guaranteed Heaven despite their grisly end and agonizingly brief existence.

> *By her* [Lepère's] *own account she had profited little from these skills, for la Voisin had always fixed the price with the client and had only given Mme Lepère a small percentage. Mme Lepère even tried to make out that for many years she had been performing a public service: by saving ladies of rank from embarrassing pregnancies, she had succeeded in conserving their honour. She took pride, too, in recalling*

that when she performed abortions on women who were so far advanced in pregnancy that the infant showed brief signs of life she would baptise the little creature, securing its salvation. Having saved its soul, she would take the tiny corpse in a box to the local gravedigger who, for a paltry bribe, would be prepared to bury the pathetic bundle in a corner of the cemetery. It may be doubted, however, whether all the aborted infants came to rest in consecrated ground. [Catholic Witch and abortionist Marie] *La Bosse had alleged that large numbers of them were buried in la Voisin's garden (there is no mention, oddly, of it being searched for human remains) and other sources claimed that la Voisin disposed of bones and waste material in a small stove in her consulting room.*[565]

Disposing of tiny bodies on the premises is still common today.

More than 2,000 medically preserved fetal remains were found at a deceased abortion provider's Illinois home Thursday by his family as they sorted through his belongings, authorities said.

A lawyer for Ulrich "George" Klopfer's family called the Will County Coroner's Office that afternoon to report that the family had found what appeared to be fetal remains, the county sheriff said in a statement. Klopfer, who died Sept. 3, worked for decades at the Women's Pavilion clinic in South Bend, Indiana, and at clinics in Gary and Fort Wayne.

Investigators arrived at Klopfer's home and found 2,246 fetal remains, according to the sheriff's office. The coroner's office took possession of them. ...

Klopfer is considered Indiana's "most prolific" abortion doctor, with tens of thousands of procedures performed, the South Bend Tribune reported. The state suspended his medical license in 2016 for failing to exercise reasonable care and for violating notice and documentation requirements, the Tribune reported. The Women's Pavilion shut down the same year.

In Indiana, fetal remains must be buried or cremated. Rep. Jackie Walorski (R-Ind.) said in a statement that she would consider

> *proposing federal legislation related to the disposal of aborted fetus' remains. Walorski also called on state and federal authorities to conduct a full investigation into Klopfer.* ~ The Washington Post[566]

As is typical of the Pedocracy's butchers, neither "justice" nor "journalism" addressed him until after he died of natural causes.

Indiana's schizophrenia on "fetal remains" is typical of the so-called "abortion debate". The unborn child isn't given human dignity until after he or she is slaughtered brutally, then "the law" requires proper "disposal" just as in Catholic France 350 years prior!

Neither was this the case for Philadelphia abortionist Kermit Gosnell who ended up killing several women along with their babies before "law enforcement" was forced to address his outrages.

> *After a two-month trial and 10 days of deliberation, a jury on Monday decided that Baby A, Baby C and Baby D lived a few fleeting moments outside their mothers' wombs before their spinal cords were severed at Kermit Gosnell's abortion clinic in West Philadelphia.*
>
> *The way those brief lives ended didn't amount to abortion but to three acts of first-degree murder, jurors concluded.*
>
> *Gosnell, in a dark suit and a maroon shirt, furrowed his brow and shook his head slightly but remained stoic when the verdicts were read in a packed Philadelphia courtroom just before 3 p.m. One juror appeared to cry. Prosecutors smiled in relief and later hugged colleagues.*
>
> *Jurors acquitted Gosnell of third-degree murder but found him guilty on a lesser charge of involuntary manslaughter in the 2009 death of 41-year-old Karnamaya Mongar of Virginia, who died from a drug overdose while undergoing an abortion at his clinic.*
>
> *The jury also acquitted him of murder in the death of another infant, known as Baby E, whom prosecutors had struggled to prove was alive after delivery. Judge Jeffrey P. Minehart previously dismissed three additional first-degree murder charges against Gosnell, each involving other infants. ...*

> *The case, which has unfolded since early March* [2013] *inside Courtroom 304 here, has garnered national attention and inflamed passions on all sides of the abortion divide.*
>
> *Antiabortion activists have seized on the macabre details — from Gosnell's practice of "snipping" the spinal cords of fetuses to the dismembered remains that investigators discovered in milk jugs and glass jars inside his Women's Medical Society clinic — as a wake-up call about the potential for wider abuse in abortion facilities and the need for stricter oversight.*
>
> *Antiabortion groups and politicians said Monday that the case underscored what they see as the brutality inherent in abortion procedures.*
>
> *"Some abortionists may have cleaner sheets than Gosnell, and better sterilized equipment and better trained accomplices, but what they do — what Gosnell did — kill babies and hurt women — is the same," Rep. Christopher H. Smith (R-N.J.) said in a statement.*
>
> *House Speaker John A. Boehner (R-Ohio) said he was "praying for the lives taken by Kermit Gosnell," and Republican National Committee Chairman Reince Priebus tweeted that "the Gosnell ordeal shouldn't slip quietly from our conscience."* ~ The Washington Post[567]

Then House Speaker John Boehner is typical of Jesuit-trained (Xavier University, 1977) Catholic "Conservatives" emplaced in key positions of power: they only talk the talk, then "pray for the dead".

The Washington Post was sure to get more than one Catholic making bold, empty statements against abortion as New Jersey's Christopher Smith is, as well. Smith has been "re-elected" *twenty times* and held his seat for Rome for nearly *forty years* and counting.[568]

Then Republican National Committee Chairman Reinhold Richard "Reince" Priebus (now "Protestant" President Donald Trump's Chief of Staff) is also Catholic.[569]

Judge Jeffrey P. Minehart, who had done his best to give Gosnell as much time as possible by dismissing charges against him until too many adult

women were being killed as well, is doing so admirably as a Catholic in a key position that he taught other Catholics how to follow in his footsteps at Holy Family College in Philadelphia, from 1984-1988.[570]

The Washington Post did, however, neglect some information that would've added more specifics to Gosnell's operation. For instance, he and his assistants essentially birthed live, fully-formed babies, held them in their hands, and then viciously stabbed them in the back of the neck like butchered livestock, with a pair of scissors.

> *He was given two life sentences Tuesday in a deal with prosecutors that spared him a potential death sentence, and the third sentence was handed down Wednesday. ...*
>
> *Prosecutors argued that Gosnell savagely killed late-term babies born alive by severing their spines, and taught several staff members the technique. Nine former clinic workers were convicted in the case, and four others pleaded guilty to murder.* ~ The Guardian[571]

Although Gosnell was still alive for his trial, the then-72-year-old had been murdering babies for several decades previously.

Also typical, Gosnell operated his human abattoir in the heart of Philadelphia's inner city, slaughtering as many minority babies as possible. The black "doctor" claimed he saw this as a "service" to his people; but the only people serviced were the Roman-emplaced Elite.

> *Despite the notoriety of the case, Gosnell has seemed oddly serene in court during the two-month trial, and apparently sees himself as a medical pioneer and tireless advocate for inner-city patients.*
>
> *"I wanted to be an effective, positive force in the minority community," Gosnell told The Philadelphia Daily News in a 2010 interview ...*
>
> *But prosecutors said he grew increasingly reckless as he accumulated millions of dollars from his rogue clinic, which was described as a "pill mill" for addicts by day and an "abortion mill" by night.* ~ The Guardian[572]

One Jewish journalist[cccxcix] has given a disturbing example from the State of Georgia.

> *The inconvenient truth of "black genocide"* [has] *significantly decreased the potential black population of Georgia over the past fifty years. According to recent Centers for Disease Control (CDC) statistics, while African-Americans constitute 32.2 percent of Georgia's population, 62.4 percent of abortions in Georgia are performed on African-American women. By contrast, whites constitute 60.8 percent of the Georgia population, but only 24.7 percent of abortions were performed on white women. Even pro-abortion groups like the Guttmacher Institute admit that "black women are more than 5 times as likely as white women to have an abortion."* ~ Goldberg[573]

Gosnell's "multiple life sentences" were not commensurate with his crimes and he was charged with only *one* of the adult murders though prosecutors could have added several more. The monster's "advanced age" was used as an excuse.

> *The jury spent 10 days deliberating before finding that Gosnell had killed babies or had them killed. And the jury found him complicit in the death of the 41-year-old patient, a Virginia woman who was repeatedly sedated by his untrained medical assistants. He was also sentenced Wednesday to 2 ½ to five years in her death.*
>
> *Gosnell was also convicted of hundreds of abortion law violations for performing illegal, third-term abortions or failing to counsel women and teens. Gosnell was acquitted in the deaths of four other infants.*
>
> *Prosecutors have declined to comment on the verdict, citing a gag order ...*
>
> *Prosecutors had planned to seek the death penalty because Gosnell killed more than one person and his victims were especially vulnerable given their age. But Gosnell's own advanced age had made it unlikely he would ever be executed before his appeals ran out.* ~ The Guardian[574]

Perhaps it was just good "plea-bargaining" by Gosnell's devout Catholic lawyer, Jack McMahon. McMahon has been well-trained in his trade by Rome, having gone to two separate Catholic (but public-sounding) colleges; the University of San Diego and Gannon.[575]

At every turn, people in important positions have ties to the Vatican. It gives new understanding to the "Mark of the Beast" in Revelation 13. One could easily make the case that such a mark on the forehead or right hand is nothing more than the desire to please Rome in thought, followed by action (Biblically, the right hand is often a metaphor for acting out the heart's desires).

Women who seek abortions are at a higher risk than they could imagine.

> *A Kansas City abortionist is out of business after investigators discovered a grisly house of horrors at his clinic – with fetuses kept in Styrofoam cups in his refrigerator and one employee accusing him of microwaving one and stirring it into his lunch.*
>
> *The unsanitary conditions in Krishna Rajanna's clinic prompted legislative approval of new abortion regulations in Kansas, a bill that was vetoed by the governor. Rajanna's activities have reportedly been the subject of law-enforcement investigations for nearly two years.* ~ World Net Daily[576]

"The Governor" of Kansas in 2005 was a far-Left Democrat female named Kathleen Sebelius.

It's unusual that "World Net Daily" would choose to give her an anonymous non-mention when WND's forté is to stir the anger of America's impotent minority Right. Was there a reason?

World Net Daily was founded by "Evangelical" Joseph Farah. Farah's family emigrated from Lebanon, a country so controlled by the Company of Loyola that the 29th Superior General, Peter Hans Kolvenbach,[cd] made it his home[577] (and base of operations for birthing the so-called "War on Terror").

For Sebelius and Kansas, Rajanna was just one monster of many that found safe harbor and encouragement to slaughter the unborn through all stages of development, right up to birth.

Perhaps the most infamous example was "late-term abortionist" George Tiller.

Few details are given as to Tiller's dealing in death to the most innocent of human life but occasionally an independent investigative journalist will show up on Killer Tiller, such as Jack Cashill.

Cashill is regularly published on World Net Daily and, you guessed it, he's Roman Catholic, educated by the Franciscans at Sienna. He has taught advertising, copyrighting and feature writing at Jesuit Rockhurst in Kansas City.[578]

In March of 2009, Cashill did an exposé on a Catholic teen, "Michelle Armesto-Berge" whose mother "forced" to get an abortion at 26 weeks. The teen birthed the dead baby over a toilet, however her little body fell to the floor, instead. Armesto-Berge remains traumatized to this day.[579]

This was only one of a series of articles Cashill wrote brining to the surface the dark dealings of George Tiller. Less than two months after the facts of this crime were published, Tiller was murdered.

The superficial details of the murder suited Rome suspiciously well.

Tiller was shot through the eye at "Reformation Lutheran Church" in Wichita where he was an usher.

However, the murderer, Scott Philip Roeder, was not known for being a "Reformation Lutheran". He was known for suffering from mental illness, possibly schizophrenia or bipolar disorder.[cdi]

Roeder's "trick shot" into Tiller's eye helped circumvent the body armor Tiller had been wearing for 10 years, courtesy of the FBI's concern for his health.[580]

This also betrays the crime having been well-researched and completely premeditated by an intelligent assassin(s), not the "crime of passion" of a bipolar schizophrenic.

Although Tiller was a "Reformation Lutheran", his facility worked in conjunction with representatives of the Catholic Church who counselled teens like Armesto-Berge that, despite all of the "Pro-Life" bluster, it was really okay for a Catholic to murder her unborn child.[581]

Kathleen Sebelius had a special relationship with Tiller who sent sizable donations of his blood money to her and other Democrats. Sebelius showed

her support by hosting “secret parties” at the Governor’s Mansion, honoring Tiller.[582]

Sebelius is another far-Left Roman Catholic, educated at Trinity Washington University; a private, Elite Catholic college for women. Despite her ultra-radical stance on abortion up to brutal infanticide, Sebelius continues to remain in good standing with “the Church”.

Sebelius is also another example of Leftist, generational Catholic[583] control of feudal “democracy” in America. She has the distinction of becoming the female Governor of Kansas whilst her Leftist Catholic father, John “Jack” Gilligan, was the Leftist (Democrat) Governor of Ohio.

Gilligan learned his values from the Jesuits at Saint Xavier High School in Catholic-dominated Cincinnati, Ohio and he went on to learn more at Notre Dame; a school so far-Left that it has earned the ire of former college professor Eugene Michael Jones,[584] a hyper-devout “Latin-Mass Catholic” and vicious Anti-Semite.

Sebelius’ despicable extreme on abortion was exactly what the Jesuit-programmed[585] teleprompter[586],[587] of Jesuit-mentored[588],[589] President Barack Obama told him he needed in a “Health and Human Services Secretary”. Truly, Rome enjoys mocking her victims.

Mercy For The Merciless

The failure or refusal to bring heartless monsters to justice remains consistent across history because the power of Rome remains consistent.

One of Catherine (Deshayes) “la Voisin” Monvoisin’s abortionists, Catherine Lepère, was *not* tortured as was customary[cdii] and “advanced age” was the excuse then as it was for Kermit Gosnell in our time!

This had the effect of shielding her associates, whom she did not divulge thanks to her quick death.

> *The abortionist Mme Lepère was tried on 11 August. She was convicted of “having abused her skill as a sworn midwife” by having “brought to bed before their term several girls and women … causing the deaths of the children they were carrying”.[47] The next day she was placed in the* ***brodequins*** *although, in a rare instance of mercy, the*

torture was not actually applied on account of her advanced age. The grisly charade achieved nothing and she went to the gallows without revealing anything of substance.[590]

As Paris police pressed their interrogation of la Voisin, she gave up two more names: a “magician” and a Priest.

La Voisin’s allegations ensured that attention focused more closely on [Adam] *Lesage who had been arrested on 17 March* [1679] *after Marie Bosse had described him as a dangerous man who put “wholly pernicious” ideas in women’s minds.*[4]

Initially he had been regarded as a figure of secondary importance but now this extraordinary individual assumed a much more prominent role in the inquiry. At times, indeed, he came close to dominating it.

The real name of the self-styled Lesage (“the wise one”) was Adam du Coeuret and he came from Normandy. Now aged nearly fifty, he was physically a far from imposing figure. He habitually wore grey, with a reddish wig providing the only touch of colour,[5] *but his drab appearance did not detract from his charisma. He described himself as a wool merchant, but though he had occasionally invested money in speculative ventures in the cloth trade, his primary means of making a living had never been commerce.*

Lesage had already had an eventful career. He had first come to Paris in the late 1660s, though at that time he called himself Dubuisson. Before long he had met up with la Voisin and become her lover, forming such a close attachment to her that he had even attempted to send her husband into a fatal decline by burying a sheep’s heart in her garden. In 1667 la Voisin had introduced him to François Mariette, a twenty-seven-year-old priest who proved a willing collaborator. For a time the trio had worked in partnership, with la Voisin providing the two men with a steady flow of customers. After a bit, however, Mariette and Lesage had decided they could make more money by operating independently. To la Voisin’s chagrin, her business began to suffer as they enticed clients away from her. Furious at this betrayal, la Voisin engaged in angry recriminations, but this merely attracted unwelcome

> *attention to the activities of Mariette and Lesage, and in March 1668 the pair were arrested.*[591]

Lady Somerset puts all her focus on Lesage and almost none upon Mariette.

How was a Priest involved with a witch assassin?

Other sources are more specific.

> *François Mariette, a young Priest of the Church of Saint-Séverin ... was also a sorcerer.* ~ Wilkinson[592]

In fact, there was more than one.

Another Priest who practiced witchcraft was in their company.

> *...a Parisian of the Parish of Saint-Eustache, named Etienne Guibourg, was then about fifty-six; he described himself as the natural son of that M. de Montmorency who had been executed at Toulouse.* ~ Lair[593]

That would be Henri de Montmorency II. A general for Louis XIV, de Montmorency attacked the Huguenots with the zealousness of a true Crusader.

Unfortunately for him, he decided that the King's clergyman, Cardinal Armand Jean du Plessis, Duke of Richelieu, was encroaching too much upon the Aristocracy. Montmorency sought to oust Richelieu by force with a contingent of several thousand soldiers but the gambit failed and he was taken prisoner.

Montmorency was beheaded in the Toulouse town hall on 30 October 1632, by a "guillotine-like device".[594]

Many a Christian has been executed in such a fashion by Rome all the way back to Nero. The inventor of a device to specifically carry out that task, Joseph-Ignace[cdiii] Guillotin (1738 – 1814), was both a Freemason[595] and a Jesuit[596].[cdiv]

> *When He opened the Fifth Seal, I saw under the Altar the souls of those who had been slain for the Word of God and for the Testimony which they held.*
>
> *And they cried with a loud voice, saying, "How long, O Lord, holy and true, until You judge and avenge our blood on those who dwell on the*

Earth?"

Then a white robe was given to each of them; and it was said to them that they should rest a little while longer, until both the number of their fellow servants and their brethren, who would be killed as they were, was completed. ...

And I saw thrones, and they sat on them, and judgment was committed to them.

Then I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded for their Witness to Jesus and for the Word of God, who had not worshiped the Beast or his Image, and had not received his Mark on their foreheads or on their hands.

And they lived and reigned with Christ for a thousand years.

But the rest of the dead did not live again until the thousand years were finished.

This is the First Resurrection.

Blessed and holy is he who has part in the First Resurrection. Over such the second death has no power, but they shall be Priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with Him a thousand years. ~ Revelation 6:9-11, 20:4-6

Father Etienne Guibourg was an accomplished Priest who had seen several "promotions" to land himself in the Court of Louis, himself.

First a Priest at Paris, then at Saint-Spire de Corbeil, then Almoner to the Comte de Montgommery in the Castle of Villebousin, we find him now at Versailles, where he officiated in the Chapel of Buisson and at Saint-Denis, as a priest belonging to the Church of Saint-Marcel. ...

Sorcerer and artistic poisoner as he was, clever at all kinds of witchcraft, having known La Boissière, one of Sainte-Croix's pupils, and even Sainte-Croix himself (the operator of La Brinvilliers) — Guibourg, friend and accomplice of la Voisin and [Françoise] *la Filastre, had fallen twenty years before under the spell of another female poisoner, and had had several children by her, nearly all of whom he had made away with.*[[cdv]]

> *His appearance was worthy of his trade. He had a very ruddy complexion, and the most appalling squint.*
>
> *He was called the Prior, either because he had obtained the Priory of Bois-Courtilz, near Mont Saint-Michel, or, more probably, because any one, with the offer of a bribe, could start him off at once upon the most execrable prayers.* ~ Lair[597]

Father Mariette also broke his vows and kept a mistress. Not only was he a sorcerer, he was an abortionist as well.

> *A little younger than Guibourg, and of very good family on his mother's side, was the second of la Voisin's collaborators, Francois Mariette, Priest of Saint-Severin.*
>
> *He also had a mistress, la Leroux, a professional poisoner.*
>
> *His sister, named Chapelle, was not much better than he was.*
>
> *Mariette undertook to dispose of all inconvenient children.*[[cdvi]] ...
>
> *The trio was completed by one Lesage, called du Buisson, though his real name was Coeuret, a man of about thirty-eight, belonging to Venoix, near Caen.*[1] ~ Lair[598]

Louis XIV, himself, kept many mistresses. This actually fueled the fires of sorcery and assassination when one of his most influential "concubines", Françoise-Athénaïs de Rochechouart, the Marquise de Montespan, started to lose her status to another; Louise de La Vallière.

Françoise-Athénaïs hired the Catholic clergy cabal, led by la Voisin and a clerical incantation ensued!

> *From la Voisin's hands Mme de Montespan quickly passed to those of her accomplices. From chiromancy* [fortune-telling] *she fled to magic, and from magic to sorcery.*
>
> *La Voisin looked a little at the hand and much into the eyes, quickly caught up the slightest hint, and then gave love-powders. These powders were passed under the chalice by the Priest Mariette, and the magician Lesage uttered most magic words over them.*

> *That was very impressive, but it was nothing compared to a certain Mass which only Guibourg could say.*[599]

Even Lady Anne Somerset acknowledges that Father Etienne Guibourg murdered his own unwanted infant children.

> *By this time a new set of horrors was under investigation. On 29 July* [1680, sorceress Françoise] *la Filastre had alleged that Guibourg had sacrificed several of the children he had had by Jeanne Chanfrain, a forty-eight-year-old woman who had been his mistress for the past twenty years. Jeanne Chanfrain was accordingly taken to Vincennes and when questioned on 9 August her answers suggested that there might be some truth in this. Of the seven children she had borne Guibourg, four could be accounted for, but the whereabouts of three were a mystery.*
>
> *Jeanne Chanfrain admitted that soon after she had given birth to her third child fathered by Guibourg, the Priest had taken it away and she suspected he had murdered it. She claimed that at the time she had been so upset that she had attacked her lover, screaming, "You wicked man, you've killed my child."*
>
> *Guibourg had merely retorted that "it was no business of hers and she would not be burdened with the sin of it." Despite this callous rejoinder, Jeanne had not broken off her relationship with Guibourg. The twins she bore him next had also disappeared after being entrusted to his care.*[600]

Françoise-Athénaïs de Rochechouart, being the "high-born Aristocrat" mistress for the Sun King rated a most zealous "Black Mass".

Normally, a "fetus"[cdvii] from an unwanted pregnancy was delivered and sacrificed. But there were no guarantees that the child would be either fully-formed or living and making an innocent, vulnerable baby suffer is the crux of enticing demonic aid.

For "Madame de Montespan", a living infant was procured.

> *The Castle, a fourteenth-century building, was very well chosen for these dark incantations. Situated about half a mile from Paris on the*

road to Orleans, it was easy to get at. Surrounded by deep moats filled with running water, it was easy to hide in also. So Villebousin was selected as the scene of a diabolical ceremony which was finally to tear Louise de La Valliere from the heart of a king already unfaithful enough.[[cdviii]]

Le Roy, strange Governor of Pages ! was sent to Saint-Denis to make terms with Guibourg, whom he had been soliciting for more than a year.

*He promised him fifty **pistoles**, and a premium of 2,000 **livres**. The despicable creature would have done his part for ten **écus**.*

On the day fixed, he was to go to Villebousin from his side; Mme de Montespan and "a tall creature" were to go from theirs, accompanied by Le Roy and another person whose name was not mentioned, but who was to pass as one of the gentlemen of the Archbishop of Sens. [[cdix]]

There was a chapel in the Castle, well known to Guibourg.

On a day arranged by them, a young woman was laid upon the altar. According to the sacrilegious rite, she ought to have been entirely naked; but, in a last spasm of decency, she uncovered only certain parts of her body.

A turned-down hood hid her face and breasts.

When the altar was thus prepared, and the candles lighted, Guibourg entered.

He put a white napkin upon the naked body, and placed the chalice thereon.

The Mass began, and was carried out in all its ceremonies, even to the kiss given usually by the celebrant to the altar-steps, but pressed this time upon the woman's shuddering flesh by the loathsome Guibourg.

At the consecration, obscenity was replaced by horror.

Usually, they were content to offer some abortion as a sacrifice; but this time they did everything in the grand style, and it was a little living

> *child that the "tall creature," the Marquise's assistant, offered to the sorcerer.*
>
> *He had bought the little one for an **écu**,*[[cdx]] *saying to the mother — reduced to such necessity ! — that it was to be taken to another woman who was in need of an infant at the breast.*
>
> *The officiating Priest then delivered this incantation: "Astaroth and Asmodeus, Princes of friendship and love, I conjure you to accept this child in sacrifice for those things I would ask of you."*
>
> *"I conjure you, O Spirits ! whose names are in these written papers, to attend to the wishes and plans of the person for whom this Mass is celebrated."*
>
> *Then the woman lying upon the altar stated her desire: "I ask for the love of the King, and that I may obtain from him all that I want for myself and my relations, that all my dependants may be pleasing to him, that he may forsake La Valliere and never see her again."*[1]
>
> *The incantation over, Guibourg cut the child's throat with a penknife, and poured the blood into the chalice.* ~ Lair[601]

Somerset adds the detail that the chalice filled with the blood of a dying baby was then lifted in facsimile to the "Blood of Christ" in a mundane Catholic Mass.[602]

> *The innocent victim was carried away, but soon his heart and entrails were brought back to be offered as a second oblation, **and then to be calcined and reduced to powder for the use of Louis de Bourbon**.*[3] ~ Lair[603] [emphasis added]

Somerset also states that Guibourg, himself, tore out "the butchered infant's entrails"[604] but she makes no mention of them ending up in the hands of the Sun King after la Voisin had them "distilled".

Unfortunately, the footnote of Jules–Auguste Lair (1836 – 1907) does not further clarify his astounding assertion: that Louis XIV regularly made use of powdered baby entrails (to ingest them?).

That has been erased from the history of Roman Catholic France.

It is worth noting the year; one thousand *six hundred sixty-six*.

> *All this happened in the year 1666,[4] at the time when, in the daytime, Mme de Montespan amused the King at La Valliere's house, while in the evenings she went to tell the Queen that she had spent the morning at Holy Mass.* ~ Lair[605]

Monsieur Lair considered the Black Mass effective against the bastard children of King Louis and Louise de La Vallière, although it was already a challenge for a child to live to middle age in the Middle Ages.

> * Charles died at two years old in 1665 (before the ceremony).
> * Philippe died at one in 1666.
> * Louis was born and died also in 1666.
> * Marie Anne survived and was "legitimized" with property by her father, the King.
> * A second Louis was born the year after the Black Mass, 1667, and lived to 16 when he died trying to make a name for himself in war.

Françoise-Athénaïs de Rochechouart did triumph over Louise de La Vallière, because the Court Jesuit, Louis Bourdaloue, convinced her to become a Carmelite nun.

Not surprisingly, when it came time for the judge's gavel to fall, it barely touched the Priest, François Mariette, at all. Lady Somerset felt this was clearly due to a distant cousin in government.

> *At the time it is true that no one seems to have shown any interest in this statement, for no steps were taken against those named as customers by Mariette and Lesage.*
>
> *The two men were both found guilty, but there was a wide disparity in their punishments.*
>
> *Mariette was a cousin of the magistrate who had first investigated the case[7] and this family connection ensured that when sentence was passed he was condemned only to nine years' banishment.*
>
> *Even this was not properly enforced, for after a short spell in a corrective institute for wayward Priests he left without permission and then withdrew to the country.*

> *Lesage fared much worse. Lacking Mariette's influence with the judges, he was sentenced to the galleys in perpetuity.*[606]

Although Catherine (Deshayes) "la Voisin" Monvoisin was condemned to be tortured and burned at the stake, she seems to have avoided most of her punishment.

> *On 17 February Mme Voisin was interrogated on the* ***sellette*** *by the assembled commissioners.*[94] *After she had been led out they unanimously pronounced her guilty and on 19 February* [1680] *she was informed that she had been sentenced to being burnt alive. However, before going to the stake she was subjected to another intensive examination, which stretched over three days, the final stages of which were conducted under torture.*
>
> *The outcome was not entirely satisfactory.*
>
> *La Reynie later claimed that this was because the torture had not been applied with the usual rigour and thus "produced no result". This is seemingly corroborated by the fact that Mme de Sévigné*[[cdxi]] *heard that even on the evening of 21 February la Voisin was in remarkably robust form, despite having emerged from the torture chamber only a few hours earlier. Having eaten a hearty supper and drunk a great deal of wine, she began singing rude songs, ignoring suggestions from her guards that since her execution was scheduled to take place the following day it would be more appropriate to immerse herself in prayer.*[95]~ Somerset[607]

This had the effect of leaving "la Voisin" tight as a clam as to her methods and comrades; many of them being clergy, this was fortuitous for Rome and her hand-picked confessor confirmed it.

> *Despite the trouble taken to pick a reliable confessor for la Voisin, things did not go as planned...* ~ Somerset[608]

This was none other than a secret representative of Pietro Vito Ottoboni, Pope Alexander VIII.[609]

The only result of her "confession" was to recant her implication of another Aristocrat woman who had used her skill to murder her husband;

Marguerite Leféron. Thanks to this connection in Rome, Leféron escaped execution and was simply banished.

In the end, Catherine (Deshayes) “la Voisin” Monvoisin abandoned all pretense of religion and completely embraced the source of her power as she violently clung to life like a demon threatened with exorcism from her host.

> *At five in the afternoon la Voisin was placed in the cart that was to transport her through the crowded streets to the execution site. Agog to see for herself the celebrated poisoner, Mme de Sévigné* [Marie de Rabutin-Chantal] *had stationed herself in the Rue Saint-Antoine. As a result she caught a brief glimpse of la Voisin as she passed, dressed in a white smock and looking startlingly red in the face.*
>
> *In former days la Voisin had been glib in her use of Christian terminology,*[[cdxii]] *invoking the Good Lord while simultaneously engaging in impious practices.*
>
> *Now, however, as her horrific death loomed, she spurned the consolations of religion and when her confessor stretched out his crucifix towards her, she angrily pushed it away. On arriving at the Place de Grève she refused to disembark from the tumbril and had to be dragged out by force, swearing dreadful oaths. Even after she had been chained to the stake she continued to resist her fate, for when straw was heaped upon her to ensure that she was speedily incinerated she kicked it away in desperation.*[[cdxiii]] *These last grim struggles impressed themselves on the memory of the watching crowd but “at last the flames got up and she was lost from sight”. Sprightly as ever,* [[cdxiv]] *Mme de Sévigné commented that la Voisin had now passed from the midst of one fire to another.*[99] ~ Somerset[610]

In the end, sorcery and assassination remained safe and secret thanks to the power of the Vatican which superseded even that of the Sun King of France.

Of 442 suspects only 218 were arrested. Of those, only 36 were executed.

The only reason *l´Affaire des Poisons* caused a stir was the revelation that so many of Catholic France’s Elite were killing each other rather than the peasantry (which would never have raised an eyebrow).

The tumult was allowed to dissipate and soon...very soon after that, Rome began killing again.

About the Author

Giovanni Augustino “Johnny” Cirucci is a veteran of the Army and Marine Corps. He has served overseas as part of the “Global War on Terror.”

His derivation is 100% Italian, 4th generation immigrants. His family settled in the Philadelphia metropolitan area, on the New Jersey side. He was raised “Conservative” and Catholic; an upbringing that encouraged him to “give back” with service in the United States military.

Johnny’s home life was difficult. His abusive father left when he was 20 and it gave him a rebellious nature that was quick to question authority.

Johnny went off to college as a non-practicing Catholic. There he began blogging and wrote columns for his University newspaper.

A conversion experience at a local Evangelical church brought him back home as a Born Again Christian.

Frustrated with the hard-Left slant of “mainstream” media, he gravitated towards “Conservative” outlets.

However, the advent of Barack Obama in general and Obama’s “killing” of Osama bin Laden, in specific, showed Johnny that “Conservative” media was just another side of the same Machine coin. Those on the “Right” refused to adequately investigate Barack Obama’s shady background. When they maintained the official story regarding the “death” of Osama bin Laden, it was the end of Johnny’s dependence upon them. He had insider information from his military connections that confirmed bin Laden’s “death” was a Psychological Operation by the United States government against American citizens.

This pushed Johnny into the realm of “alternative media” where he stayed for about 2 years.

However, Johnny eventually learned that so-called “alternative media” was just as controlled as “mainstream media”. It was completely owned by

Machine agents who gave the same information day after day.

The operatives in “alternative media” presented varying levels of truth at a greater rate than “mainstream media” but were always careful not to expose “the grand scheme”.

Sometimes, however, Machine agents of disinformation got caught in their own game. One such agent helped Johnny put together the pieces of the puzzle that pointed towards Rome as the top of the “New World Order” pyramid.

An ardent researcher, Johnny quickly verified some astounding facts and found that, historically, Christians considered Rome the great Whore of Babylon and the Pope as Anti-Christ.

When one of his web site columns on the subject did very well, he knew he needed to turn the information into a book.

That was *Illuminati Unmasked*, published in 2015.

The following year, Johnny published *Secret History*, divulging the detailed background to *Illuminati*.

Then on September 11th, 2017, on the eve of the 500th anniversary of Luther’s Protest, Johnny disclosed the horrors of power no other author has with *Eaters of Children*. Though child sacrifice and sex slave trafficking have, in rarest circumstance, been broached, only Johnny has dared give the full scope.

As a passionate Born Again Christian, Johnny has doggedly searched for and disclosed the Truth. It was this obsession that helped him uncover what he calls “the Pedocracy” and his faith in Jesus Christ that gave him the courage and determination to disclose it.

Romans of Mass Destruction is meant to be the first of several volumes which show the historical precedents for Rome’s shocking crimes, all committed on (literally) a Biblical scale.

ENDNOTES

[i] Lucius Domitius, who later became “Nero”, was the offspring of Agrippina and Consul Gnaeus Domitius Ahenobarbus.

[ii] Tiberius Claudius Caesar Britannicus *should* have risen to the throne to replace his father, Tiberius Claudius, but questions were raised as to whether his mother, Valeria Messalina, had sired him from an illicit affair — possibly to Senator Gaius Silius whom she married in 48 A.D. while she was still married to Claudius. Her lust for coitus was only surpassed by her lust for power and she was executed for unfaithfulness to both her husband and the Empire.

[iii] “Nero fiddled whilest Rome burned” is the fanciful, inaccurate adaptation.

[iv] The “Devil’s Simulation” is the system of power that I ultimately ascribe to Lucifer. It is what he tempted Christ with; the kingdoms of the world (Matthew 4:8-9) — a Satanic “Sims” game in which the abuse of the innocent is the key to power, the “Pedocracy”. For the full story, read my book *Eaters of Children*.

[v] A British victory on French soil in the so-called “Hundred Years’ War”: a completely needless conflagration whose sole purpose was to net the Elite of either England or France even more wealth and property than they already had.

[vi] It’s always heartening to see someone marry for love. Carey was a vehement foe of Protestant Britain.

[vii] The peasants who bled and died in these wars had no stake in them what-so-ever; as is the case with all war, past and present.
Because of the maturation of the common citizen, today’s needless wars require much more disinformation and propaganda to present what Catholic doctrine labels “Just War”, [*Catechism of the Catholic Church*, paragraphs 2302-2317].

[viii] Such was undoubtedly the agenda behind Catholic Wall Street lawyer and Knight of Malta William Donovan using the OSS he founded to murder General George S. Patton at the end of World War II. Although, 12 years earlier, Lieutenant Patton had earned access to power as a gate-keeper who willingly rolled his tanks against unarmed WWI veterans protesting the U.S. government’s reneging of their promised bonuses for his Freemason commander, then-Major Douglas MacArthur, Patton later lost sight of his position and repeatedly tried to win the war as quickly as possible — an outcome not allowed by his masters.
For more, read *Illuminati Unmasked*.

[ix] Jeanne was obviously not a bumbling farm-girl. Her vow never to take a man’s life in combat was brilliantly shrewd, allowing her to participate in the “men’s game” of war without incurring the emotional reactions of men on either side. It reminds one of Martin Luther King, Jr.’s dedication to peaceful protest; a cunning tactic to ameliorate enemies in an endeavor frought with controversy.

[x] The fabrication of a tragedy by Elites in power to entice the citizenry towards harmful ends they would not normally allow; such as a fascist police state.

[xi] Permitting homosexuals to adopt children is a heinous criminal activity that guarantees abuse of the innocent, even if just in their mental and emotional development.

[xii] Technically, it wasn't direct succession. Half-black, half-Japanese politician Bruce Harrell took over for Murray who was replaced by politician and media personality Tim Burgess. Burgess was raised "fundamentalist Protestant"; values he now says were a "really distorted view of Christianity." Burgess remains "proudly loyal" to his friend, the homosexual who adopts little boys to rape them, former Mayor Ed Murray.
All governed from the Left and "Jenny" Durkan continues the trend.

[xiii] For more, read *Eaters of Children* or peruse *JohnnyCirucci.com*

[xiv] No entity has tortured and slaughtered more Christians nor burned more Bibles than the military-turned-religious "City on Seven Hills" [Revelation 17:9].

[xv] ***Roman Catholics*** have elevated the "ever-virgin" Mary to Divine worship templated upon pagan goddesses, not Christians. "Atheist" homosexual Arthur Evans is either a very useful dupe or an agent of Vatican disinformation.

[xvi] One hundred years old: as the Jew raised Catholic, Billy Joel, has sung, "Only the good die young".

[xvii] This important fact has been omitted by "user-edited" Wikipedia who has Murray simply appearing in Malta, apparently, because of all the locations around the world that seemed the best place for her to advance her agenda.

[xviii] Roman Catholicism is a syncretistic mix of paganism with the outward trappings of Christianity and much of that paganism is Roman, although other traditions and myths can be traced back to the earliest civilizations that all rebelled against YHWH.

[xix] This is deceptive manipulation as it may be considered *technically* accurate but the connotations of the word in modern usage are decidedly *inaccurate*.

[xx] In quotes because the greed of English and French Catholic Aristocrats was the only cause for shedding commoner blood.

[xxi] In other words, there were no gambling resorts for the Elite, such as Monte Carlo, in the time of de Rais. Crux Anasta was published in 1953.

[xxii] Self-proclaimed pedophile survivor David Shurter is one such accuser. Although Dave has shunned me and my information (I believe out of cowardice) I do find his story and accusations plausible, if not probable.

[xxiii] "Privileged" to add the gnostic symbol of lust and sex adopted by Catholicsm.

[xxiv] In his *The History of Witchcraft and Demonology*, devout Roman Catholic witch expert Montague Summers calls de Sillé "a Priest of the diocese of S. [Saint] Halo," (p. 148).

[xxv] For more, read *Eaters of Children*.

[xxvi] Notice how David McGowan mentions that de Sille was related to de Rais but gives no mention that he was an ordained Roman Catholic Priest.

[xxvii] I have never before had the displeasure to read anything that was so base and depraved yet still qualified as “researched”. I wrestled with its inclusion but felt it necessary to give the shocking details as they ultimately can be blamed upon the Great Harlot who sits upon many waters (controls many people): Rome.

[xxviii] I have edited out that Slater — overtly disrespectful of all things Christian — described Prelati as a “heretic”. Really?
Florence was the city-state home of the Medici.

[xxix] Three important points can be gleened: it is common practice of sexual sadists to violate the innocent, then feel it necessary to murder them in order to cover up the crime. Secondly (and Slater — obviously a reprobate addicted to porn, mockingly mentions this) sexual deviancy feeds itself and naturally spirals out of control when fed. This is why so-called “Adult Bookstores” are epicenters of crime both related and unrelated to sexual deviancy.
Perhaps most important of all is the source of these crimes was a graphic depiction of the behavior of Roman leaders; the Pedocracy of the Devil’s Simulation.

[xxx] “Urchin”? Here Slater devolves from his feigned scholarship and shows his true colors. One wonders if he is cheering on de Rais as he mutilates and violates children.

[xxxi] Slater concludes by saying that de Rais confessed because of “extreme torture” yet that was not the case. Read on!

[xxxii] Murray goes on about “lace” equals “garter” and “garter” signifies rank amongst witches. Although I fully agree with her connecting this to Britain’s “Order of the Garter” I feel Rome had far more sway with de Rais.

[xxxiii] For more, read *Eaters of Children*.

[xxxiv] Although the “Wickedest Man” seemed not to believe the de Rais’ confession was given freely, all sources state that the Marshal was spared from torture and it was excommunication that pressured him.

[xxxv] The concept of a power using corruption and treason to create a danger or fear in order to herd an unaware populace into willing slavery or tyranny wasn’t the idea of German philosopher Georg Wilhelm Friedrich Hegel but the concept bears his name. It is more commonly known as “Thesis, Antithesis, Synthesis” or simply “Problem, Reaciton, Solution”.

[xxxvi] Many more serve quietly as “advisors” and ambassadors, for instance, the Priest who oversaw child sex trafficking of orphans at Boys Town in Omaha, Nebraska (Monsignor Robert Hupp) was a Presidential Special Ambassador to the United Nations for “Childrens’ Affairs”. Notre Dame President, Father Theodore Hesburgh, “advised” multiple Presidents from his positions on the National Science Board and the U.S. Civil Rights Commission. The godfather of both Nazism and Communism, Jesuit Priest Edmund Walsh, “advised” Freemason General Douglas MacArthur on how best to punish the Japanese after WWII.

[xxxvii] Apparently having an Irish Roman Catholic mother checked the box for Varadkar to be slipped into power. Being homosexual and having loose connections to the Irish populace he harms with his rule fits a host of Roman agendas. It’s no surprise that such an individual would be a charging champion for the heinous slaughter of the unborn.

[xxxviii] After all, those pesky Hollywood Jews do need oversight.

[xxxix] The Masonic insurgency gives Rome plausible deniability, especially with the farcical “war” between the two.

[xl] “Approximately”. Far beit for me to use a Latin convention and not explain it.

[xli] Daniel 2 is the dream of Babylon’s king Nebuchadnezzar; a massive statue of a man with a head of gold (Babylon), arms and chest of silver (Medo/ Persia), torso of bronze (Greece) and legs and feet of iron (Rome into Catholicism and Orthodoxy).

[xlii] We common folk use criteria like, physical attraction, vibrant personality, shared life experiences, warm, loving, giving, etc. The Elite, however, are much more cold (“Reptilian”?) in their marital choices and often make them fully intending to carry on affairs with whatever actually attracts them.

[xliii] Don’t worry, if you read “of 1 Marine Crescent” and thought, “Cool ... is that supposed to mean something to me?” — I did, too.
If you were one of “them” you’d immediately recognize the location as one where the Elite close their gates and you look on from the outside. [*Crescent Houses with Fully Rounded History*, unattributed, The Irish Times, 8 November 2007]
And, no offense to Mrs. ‘Bram but her status had everything to do with why you “celebrated” her “beauty”.

[xliv] Both Scotland and England thoroughly embraced Luther’s Protest.

[xlv] NOT EXHAUSTIVE: In no way did I seek these names, they just popped up in other research, so we can assume this is a basic cross-section of a much vaster web of deceit and insurgency.

[xlvi] The assassination of President Abraham Lincoln was a ***massive*** Vatican conspiracy buried by “historians”. For more, read *Illuminati Unmasked*.

[xlvii] Scalise is an open Roman Catholic who was a member of the Acacia Fraternity at Louisiana State. Acacia was founded and is controlled by Freemasons and, until recently, only Freemasons could join.

[xlviii] Kutcher was born and raised Catholic and proudly sported his “Oxford Freemasons” cap at his front-row seat to Game Two of the 2016 NBA Finals.

[xlix] Being a good Freemasonic Catholic, influenced by the Johannite worship of John the Baptist as the “true Messiah” and Mary as “co-redemptrix”, Doyle has Doctor ***John*** Watson eventually marry ***Mary*** Morstan.

[l] I do have to give English film-maker Guy Ritchie a mention for seeing to the casting of Robert Downey, Jr. as Holmes and Jude Law as Watson. Viserally, actor Mark Strong (the evil “Lord Henry Blackwood”) would’ve been a far more appropriate Holmes but the “fraternity brother” chemistry and relationship between Downey Jr. and Law was worth the stretch.
Ritchie, of course, can claim the dubious honor of being one of the former husbands of “Madonna”.

[li] For more, read *Secret History*.

[lii] Apparently, no one is allowed to know what the discarded “D” stands for as a thorough search was unavailing.
Abbreviating a first name is often akin to perhaps using a middle name as a compound surname; a

gimmick of manipulation to impress you. It's okay to not like your parents' choice of first name (there should be laws against some of what parents do to their children), just drop the initial and forget it!
Author G. Augustino Cirucci (no letters) has been quoted as saying, "This annoys the sh*t out of me."

[liii] If you have no idea what "*(Gelder 13, Halberstam 248)*" mean, don't worry, neither do I. I guess that along with end-notes without page numbers is how Doctors are trained to give citations. Well as long as they're learning Latin to maintain as their secret trade language to confuse you with...

[liv] Ah, I think we should look into exactly how Stoker's Protestantism was "confirmed".

[lv] This is no joking matter as tomorrow's Crusaders are being conditioned with this kind of twisted mythology to dehumanize their victims. You can do almost anything to a vampire and they just won't die.

[lvi] "Stratford-upon-Avon" is roughly the center of England in the land-locked county of Warwickshire, about an hour north of Oxford.

[lvii] Not to mock Dr. Gordon (who, in her paper, lists her name as "Heightsman [no hyphen] Gordon") but if the man is centuries-ago dead and of questionable identity it'll be pretty darn tough to get the "authorized biography".

[lviii] This is actually a double-negative implying that it's the truth!

[lix] Certainly, when "academics" have "consensus" we are to immediately shut down all critical thought and defer our existence to them!

[lx] Rightly does Arnold Matthew draw attention to this. Being ordained by legendary Jesuit Cardinal Robert Bellarmine is a sure sign that Tobie Matthew was meant to be used powerfully by the Company as an agent of insurgency in Protestant England and he was!

[lxi] —heir to the Throne.

[lxii] For more, read *Secret History*.

[lxiii] All seats of power are called "capitols" after one of the "seven hills of Rome", Capitoline Hill. [Revelation 17:9] When this became too obvious, it was slightly obfuscated with the alternate spelling "capital".

[lxiv] Calvert should've pulled a Tony Blair and waited until the expiration of his office to publicaly declare of his "joining the Catholic communion." Perhaps he knew Charles wouldn't think too harshly of it.

[lxv] From the vestments to the liturgy, from the "Saints" to the "Virgin Mary", there is little between the "Church of England" and the Church of Rome save nuance and nomenclature.

[lxvi] Note how Wikipedia explains a "Protestant Anglican Chapter": *According to both Anglican and Catholic canon law, a cathedral chapter is a college of clerics (chapter) formed to advise a bishop and, in the case of a vacancy of the episcopal see in some countries, to govern the diocese during the vacancy.*

[lxvii] Baron Hugh de Camoys died childless in 1426 and the title was shared by sisters Margaret and Alianora afterward. It is held today by The Right Honourable Lord Camoys, Ralph Thomas Campion George Sherman Stonor, GCVO PC DL.
I think we can call the Catholic insurgency of England a complete and total success.
The name of the current Baron of Camoys not only honors an English Jesuit insurgent but an American one as well; William Tecumseh Sherman who was adopted by a family of devout Catholics. He would go on to marry his foster sister, Ellen and sire a boy who would become a Jesuit Priest; Thomas.
Sherman's slash-and-burn treatment of Southerners during his march through Georgia and the Caronlinas should've earned him the gallows but, instead, then Commanding General and later President Ulysses S. Grant made him his "Secretary of War" in 1869 followed by "Commanding General of the United States Army" — a position he held until 1883.

[lxviii] A separate religion?

[lxix] Elbows, shoulders, hips and knees are all slowly dislocated and if the strain eventually rips tendons, ligaments and muscles the appendages are rendered permanently useless.

[lxx] The kindling is specifically moistened so that the victim burns as long as possible without dying: the lovely "science" of torture by the Catholic Church.

[lxxi] —a powerful and brilliantly Biblical critique of the Catholic Mass which claims that Jesus Christ is repeatedly sacrificed when Scripture clearly states otherwise. [Romans 6:10, Hebrews 10:1-18]

[lxxii] As the saying goes, "Rome neither forgives nor forgets" and she exercises the "mercy" of her master, the Devil.

[lxxiii] How much were the previous nine also edited?
As Jesuit manipulations go, this one was rather clumsy. Campion's propaganda was titled "*Decem Rationes*", not "*Novem Rationes*".
Then again, when you hide behind the language of Rome (as lawyers, doctors and politicians do), it's not that hard to fool people.

[lxxiv] The actual quote in Act III, Scene ii, is from "Queen Gertrude" regarding the insincere over-acting in a play (yes, a play within a play) written by Hamlet to indict his uncle in the death of his father, the King of Denmark; "The lady doth protest too much, methinks."
This is the same Act where Hamlet accuses Ophelia of being too forward for a woman and cries out, "Get thee to a nunnery!"
How is his father's ghost able to speak with him? — He's in Purgatory, murdered by his brother before he is able to confess his sins!

> *I am thy father's spirit,*
> *Doom'd for a certain term to walk the night,*
> *And for the day confin'd to fast in fires,*
> *Till the foul crimes done in my days of nature*
> *Are burnt and purg'd away. ...*
> *Thus was I, sleeping, by a brother's hand*
> *Of life, of crown, of queen, at once dispatch'd,*
> *Cut off even in the blossoms of my sin,*
> *Unhous'led, disappointed, unanel'd,*

No reck'ning made, but sent to my account
With all my imperfections on my head. ~ [Hamlet, Act I, Scene v]

[lxxv] At every turn, the Catholics with *real* power lean Left — sometimes *radically* so. Those who pretend to have Right-minded values never put them into action.
Conservative Catholics best take this to heart; especially those for whom abortion is dearly important.
Your Church will *never* let you win...***anything***.

[lxxvi] Of course far-Left Kennedy corrupt-o-crat Teddy preferred being "advised" by other Leftist Catholics. Litmus tests like these shed important light upon the "Mark of the Beast" in Revelation 13:7.

[lxxvii] Even forty years ago the Jewish Sulzbergers who run the Times knew this obscure Romanian needed coverage? Perhaps we should say "Who run the Times for their Roman overlords..."

[lxxviii] To know anything about what this monster did to thousands of innocent men, women and children and write that is offensive beyond description.

[lxxix] A family of Catholics well-placed in "secular" or "Protestant" politics? How unusual.

[lxxx] Unless Papa Radu pissed off his Prime Minister, I'm thinking this was either unnecessary or being played up by the Times for propaganda as Nazism is as Catholic as Communism (which means "***very***"). There's plenty in all three of my previous books on that; *Illuminati Unmasked*, *Secret History* and *Eaters of Children*.

[lxxxi] Did he take any classes from sexual pervert, deviant and criminal Alfred Kinsey? He was there at the right time. For more read *Eaters of Children*.

[lxxxii] If Alexandra married into Judaism it helped her family that much more.

[lxxxiii] With two billion Catholics world-wide and the most powerful infrastructure anywhere — dwarfing any Western government, including the United States — one would think a supposed foundational agenda like preserving unborn life would be as scarce as smallpox yet the most Catholic nations allow full and unfettered slaughter of the unborn through all three trimesters. Foolish Conservative Catholics are kept on the reservation by substance-less media outlets like LifeSite that chronicle their endless string of losses for them.

[lxxxiv] This unusual title convention is meant to remind you that Cardinals are equal to Lords (Alfred Lord Tennyson, etc.) and Popes are equal to Kings. Both Popes and Kings rename themselves upon succession to their "thrones" to impress upon you that they have the same "right" to rule over you as their numbered predecessor.

[lxxxv] Porn is a $100 ***billion*** industry of poison pouring into the populace. "Adult" theaters and "bookstores" are epicenters of crime. The depravity on screen encourages those addicted to emulate it.

On the rare occasions that government intervenes, a higher authority stops it. The State of Ohio shut down an "adult theater" because the film shown was grossely obscene. The porn industry sued and the Supreme Court sided with them in the 1964 *Jacobellis v. Ohio*. Asking, "If the French Roman Catholic Louis Malle film 'Les Amants' wasn't obscene, what was?", Supreme Court Justice Potter Seward answered, "I know it when I see it."

Given that Seward got naked in a coffin and likely committed a lewd act with a corpse as part of his Skull and Bones initiation one doubts he would.

Exempli gratia: Peter Acworth. Acworth is the founder and CEO of "Kink.com"; a porn hub for the depraved.

Specializing in sado / mashochistic themes, Acworth has 60,000 subscribers who pay his 70 employees $30/month for access to material guaranteed to create the next Jeffrey Dahmer.

Acworth started his endeavor while working his PhD at Columbia. He dropped out and moved to the "fetish capital", San Francisco where he was able to purchase the 200,000 square foot State Armory and Arsenal for $14.5 million.

What instilled the perversion in Acworth to this Satanically - successful end?

— His father was a Jesuit Priest.

The *New York Times*' Jon Mooallem explained, *"Even as child, Acworth told me, he liked seeing people bound. 'I would get an erection while watching a cowboy-and-Indian movie where somebody was getting tied up,' he said, 'which I didn't really understand.'"*

[lxxxvi] The fact that such an individual is eligible for "Taoiseach" is a testimony to the corruption of Irish politics.

[lxxxvii] As a Sovereign City-State, thanks to the 1929 Lateran Treaty of the Vatican's agent, Benito Mussolini, Rome has her own police, jails, currency, stamps and internet domain address: *vatican.va*.

[lxxxviii] Jesuits are now spinning parish Priests as "pastors".

[lxxxix] Overt dedication to Satan has never been good for recruiting.

[xc] I'm not hawking my books, I'm just finding a cut-off point to tell you I've written about this before! In this case, again, it's my book *Secret History*.

[xci] You guessed it: for more, read *Eaters of Children*.

[xcii] In the language of Rome (Latin) that's 1,000 years, half of which being 500.

[xciii] This estimate of mine is low. Ottoman casutalites are listed at around 47,000 casualties with Arab casuatlies being largely "unknown". It is a foregone conclusion that rag-tag Bedouins suffered greatly under British leadership and Ottoman machine guns.

[xciv] Simply, an area ruled by a Byzantine despot. Yeah, it has a specific name but if you were as smart as a Jesuit college professor you'd know that.

[xcv] In the very next chapter we will learn of the irony behind this statement: to defend the Papacy of Rodrigo "Alexander VI" de Borgia but abandon Giovanni "Leo X" de´Medici as indefensible.

[xcvi] Only the head of the Catholic Church could personally offer a ritual "Mass" to honor Jesus Christ as a prelude to the terrifying slaughter of animals as "sport". As today, many of these animals were wounded and escaped only to suffer a lingering, agonizing death.

[xcvii] From 1309 to 1377, a weak Vatican was under the control of France and relocated to Avignon. You guessed it: for more, read *Secret History*.

[xcviii] Catholic “historians”, “authors” and “journalists” have cunningly thrown the onus of Rome’s crimes upon all Christendom so that “Crusades” and “Crusaders” are invariably called “Christian” and not ***Catholic***. Given how Christians suffered as terribly if not worse than any of the Vatican’s victims, this is a shocking success of inverse-reality “gaslighting”.

[xcix] Did the highly-erudite professors misspeak? “Tyrannicide” is the *death* of tyrants.

[c] Good thing that was only a short “age” in Italian or even human history ... not.

[ci] King Solomon and his Temple play a critical role in the mythology of Freemasonry. Freemasons concede that the Templars are their forebearers while ignoring the Templar role as Vatican shock troops. The web of Freemasonic power serves the Pope as surely as the Templars or Jesuits and gives the added deniability screen of being “at war” with “non-Catholic” and even “Protestant” Masonry.

[cii] Again we see “user-edited” Wikipedia conflate “Christian” with Catholic.

[ciii] “Pilgrimages” are ***not*** “Christian”!

[civ] An unconscionable under-statement! The Papacy influenced ***all*** major “temporal” (military/political) power and *controlled* ***most*** of it.

[cv] As I mentioned previously, using lower-case for “church” is deceptive manipulation, as it is for any Catholic title whether “pope” or “Priest”. The Catholic ***Church*** is a centralized organization with a distinct, global network that is even more political (and tyrannical) as it is “religious”.

[cvi] If the agenda is to force an entire religion to become subject to the authority of Rome, “healing the schism” is the language an Inquisitor uses just before he pops your arms out of their sockets.

[cvii] Exactly how does Tommaso “Nicholas V” Parentucelli forcing all rivals to concede reassert “the authority of Saint Peter”? Only a Jesuit Professor can tell you.

[cviii] Bias anyone...?

[cix] Not to be confused with “Hitler’s Pope”, Eugenio Pacelli, Pius XII. As it became more obvious that the Vatican had completely manipulated and enabled the rise of the Third Reich (to punish Luther’s homeland), Pius XII was re-written as the pawn of Hitler when, clearly, the reverse was true. Pacelli was perfectly placed as Papal Nuncio (Vatican Ambassador) to Prussia from (1926-29) and to Germany (1917-30) to see it done. I cover him in all three of my previous books, particularly *Secret History*.

[cx] “Christians” who elevate the Shakespearean confusion of the “Authorized King James Version” need take this to heart, as well as the fact that, despite it’s basis on the superior *Textus Receptus*. It does today’s common citizen no good to read the Bible free of the modern confusion and contradiction (usually inserted by agents of the Papacy) if it’s written in a language half a millennium old and fabricated by Freemason Francis Bacon (who also edited the KJV), especially when Bacon’s handler was Jesuit Tobie Matthew.
And, you guessed it, for more on Luther, read *Secret History*.

[cxi] *Voivode*: warlord — the tyrant who had enough brutes wielding swords for him to force his will upon his neighbors

[cxii] Stephen I (*István Király*) of Hungary was given Roman Catholic sainthood because he required that one out of every ten towns build a church and pay for the clergy.

[cxiii] At least that is honestly clarified!

[cxiv] A tyrant is never “great” unless the Elite tell you so, for instance Catherine “the Great” was a Prussian usurper who murdered her husband so that she could rule Russia. When the Jesuits were suppressed, she gave them safe harbor with led to the manufacturing of the bloody “October Revolution”.

[cxv] —Her idea, surely...unless it was a powerful Catholic who ransomed a 10 year old girl’s innocence to gain a region by the conversion of its tyrant.

[cxvi] Because Cathars were wiped out by the Catholic Church, modern explanations of their beliefs are suspect (the winners write the history). According to controlled sources like Britannica and Wikipedia, Cathars were “dualist heretics” who divided YHWH into “good” and “bad”.

[cxvii] In the case of the Albigenses and Waldenses, trace accounts still remain that depict these valley dwellers (*Vaudois*) as sincere, Bible-believing Christians, persecuted and nearly erased from existence by Rome only for that reason. For more, read *Secret History*.

[cxviii] Is this a hypothetical? The Papist puppets in the United States government routinely commit crime by colaboarting with “organized crime”, from so-called “Operation: Underworld” (supposedly using the Mafia to fight the Nazis) to Operation: Fast and Furious where machine guns, .50 caliber sniper rifles and explosives were simply given to the Sinaloa drug cartel ostensibly to “trace” them until they were all “lost”.
As usual with these clandestine criminal operations, no single government official was tried, fired, censured, yelled at nor frowned upon. In fact, good Catholic agents of espionage like the ATF’s Deputy Directory, William McMahon, was granted paid leave courtesy of the American taxpayer, to wait out the flap while simultaneously making 6-figures at JP Morgan.

[cxix] Johannism strikes again.

[cxx] Just like “the ends justify the means,” “kill ‘em all and let God sort ‘em out,” was coined in the process of Roman Catholics doing what they do best.

[cxxi] — Praetorians: the brutes granted exclusive access to weaponry who enforced feudal tyranny for the Elite.

[cxxii] Perhaps “*voivode*” was “less frequently used” because it was the most honest: “***warlord***”.

[cxxiii] Remember who bestows the title of “the Great” upon tyrants.

[cxxiv] —A long, meandering journey. If you were a Jesuit college professor you would’ve known that.

[cxxv] This “heresy” was Biblical Christianity; our Professors betray the bias that gets them published tenure.

[cxxvi] By “rebel” is meant “Christians who dared to respond to the fires of the Inquisition with armed resistance.”

[cxxvii] Such societies, then or now, use secrecy to screen their heinous practices from the common citizenry (who would be outraged if they knew) and to provide the initiates with access to power no one else has. Today, such societies claim the ludicrous excuse that they need secrecy to conduct philanthropy which is, itself, just a cover for their crimes against humanity.

[cxxviii] Though it may seem impossible to judge whether his father was a true Christian or a cagy pagan, he was not one for ostentatious displays of pride.

[cxxix] "Julius Cæsar: the story of the frightened fisherman being encouraged by the assurance that he was carrying 'Cæsar and his fortunes' is universally known."

[cxxx] "Claudius, who devoted himself in the Gothic war."

[cxxxi] "Galerius Maximianus, who reconnoitred in person the camp of the king of Persia."

[cxxxii] This is the New American Standard Bible, to which I have added some capitalization. For instance, there is only one "Earth" but there is lots of "earth" under your feet.
Studied, loyal Adventists usually have a good understanding of passages such as these. The Smiths Falls (Ontario, Canada) Adventist Church blog states the three horns are the Heruli, the Vandals and the Ostrogoths.

[cxxxiii] Strategic port city, critical to trade goods, import and export, etc.

[cxxxiv] By recycling the names of previous tyrants for their brood, current tyrants give the fruit of their loins "legitimacy" to take up where they left off.
I did a quick search and found nothing on why Warlord Alexandru of Moldavia was "Good"; probably because he felt he was and required everyone to call him that.

[cxxxv] A failed siege by Catholic (I edited out "Christian") Crusaders, hampered by the arrogance and division of their forces. As a result of their ineptitude, Bulgaria was lost to the Ottomans.

[cxxxvi] Why did countries need Latin to discuss how they interacted? —For the same reason that still exists today: because Rome has ultimate oversight.

[cxxxvii] Usually defined as "in the national interest" but actually manipulative double-speak for "in the interest of the Ruling Elite". For some reason, the Boston College Professors chose to neither translate nor explain.

[cxxxviii] The sequestered quarters of a Sultan's harem.

[cxxxix] You probably have no idea why the word "minions" is used but we will cover this further when we learn of the homosexual Medici King of France, Henry III. A "minion" was the king's sexual play-thing and, therefore, just as attracted to young boys, themselves.

[cxl] Such sensitive, Liberal, Boston College scholars!
Quran 4:16 "If two men among you are guilty of lewdness, punish them both. If they repent and amend, leave them alone."
Although Florescu and McNally imply that this was just an aberration of Mehmed II's, it was standard in *any* "Royal Court" that the Elite can indulge in any sexual deviancy that pleases them (even the Commissioner of the "Authorized Bible", King James, himself).

[cxli] If they kept the boy with the harem, it's obvious what he was meant for.

[cxlii] "Lover"? "Succumbed to sensual pleasures"? Seriously? A young captive boy was lusted after for sodomy by his Turkish captors. He had no choice but to allow himself to be violated.
I sure hope you didn't send your kids to a Jesuit school thinking, "Well, at least they'll get a great education."

Again we see the mention of “minions” without explanation; I will explain it for your shortly and then you’ll see why the Jesuit Professors didn’t bother.

[cxliii] SPOILER ALERT: they both ended up the same way.

[cxliv] However our two Jesuit college Professors make the untenable claim that the fall of Constantinople shocked poor Nicholas V into finally taking the Muslim hordes seriously.

[cxlv] The only way a 25-year-old could become dictator over a nation (and, soon, a monster of literally historic porportions) is if the citizenry were mentally enslaved to his “Divine Right” of blood succession to rule over them.

[cxlvi] Although Professors Florescu and McNally recount Dracula’s “Salvation-by-works” theology and how it contributed to his brutality, they erroneously ascribed it only to Orthodoxy.

[cxlvii] Now look again upon how many Supreme Court Justices are Opus Dei and know for certain that Rome thoroughly controls and dominates United States government. If ever there were a critical choke-point of tyranny without the slightest responsibility for or fear of the American people it is the United States Supreme Court which erroneously dictates “law” happily free of citizen accountability.

[cxlviii] Clasen was seduced into Opus Dei as a vulnerable freshman while attending Jesuit Boston College.

[cxlix] “Saint Louis” was Louis Capet Number IX (1214 – 1270). His “sainthood” was bestowed upon him by the Catholic Church because he “reformed” French “justice”. Not surprisingly (but unknown to almost all “educated” Americans), “Saint Louis, Missouri” was founded by French Roman Catholics in 1764 and has remained a Catholic city every since.

[cl] I must tell you that abuse of the innocent in this fashion is nothing short of Satanic; right in line with the heinous procedures of abortion.

[cli] This was the Impaler’s way of bragging to his Crusader brethren that he was no-longer a Muslim vassal; assuring them that he would not sell his loyalty to the Ottomans as he and many other Eastern European kings had done previously, including his father.

[clii] It offends me to see the word “Americans” applied to this outrage. At *best* they were unwitting mercenaries (as I was in my military service).

[cliii] Eisenhower was so devoted to his “Mamie” that when the war was over, he left his “mistress” Kay Summersby in Europe.

[cliv] If you know anything about combat in *any* era, you know that being wounded in the back has nothing to do with bravery or lack thereof.

[clv] The Sultan admired the man’s courage and fear but had him slaughtered anyway.

[clvi] “ — the good news”?

[clvii] Less than a century ago, this was the case.

[clviii] The reason why Google has “secret off-shore” barges likely stems from the same reason the CIA and U.S. military “detain” prisoners in a foreign country said to be America’s enemy, Communist Cuba; or why pedophile providers like Jeffrey Epstein have their own island: to avoid the unheard-of event that “law enforcement” enforces domestic laws.

[clix] Both the Jesuits and the CIA have the nickname of “The Company” and both are vicious, criminal insurgencies that manipulate for Rome.

[clx] Apparently, there were no qualified native Princetonians for the job.

[clxi] Unfortunately for Leftist Catholic Barbara Boggs-Sigmund, she lost the 1990 Gubernatorial race to Leftist Catholic Jim Florio, who had already spent twenty years as a State and National Legislator. Florio did finally leave politics but maintains a very lucrative private life, to include being on the Board of Directors of Trump Entertainment Resorts, founded by “Conservative Republican” Donald Trump. Today, Trump is the “Protestant Christian” President who spent two years under the Jesuits at Fordham before adroitly transferring to the “public” University of Pennsylvania for his degree.

[clxii] The Begich family religion is not well covered but I did find a source on Mark Begich’s Catholicism: *Did Hale Boggs Drop From The Sky?* Johnny Cirucci, Johnny Cirucci.com, 8 May 2018

[clxiii] Blavatsky can’t be called a “Luciferian” because she claimed the Devil didn’t exist. Hope that worked out for her.

[clxiv] However, I absolutely agree with the assertion of Saussy in his critically-important work *Rulers of Evil* that the Jesuits, themselves, engineered their suppression. No sovereign, especially of a Catholic nation, would willingly expel the Order that served Rome *perinde ac cadaver*, as obedient as a corpse.

[clxv] Incest is forgiven in order to maintain the bloodlines of the Ruling Elite.

[clxvi] Whether Roderigo de Borgia’s father was Jofré Llançol or Alfonso de Borgia, he was still the product of incest.

[clxvii] “Sumptuous”?

[clxviii] “Priest”, “Bishop”, “Cardinal” and “Pope” are titles in the Roman Catholic hierarchy that denote both political and religious power. Using lower case for those titles is a subtle form of manipulation to down-play that power.

[clxix] Remember, these are all “humble disciples of Jesus Christ”.

[clxx] Again, subtle manipulation. Only Rome claims that the dialogue between Christ and His disciples, in which Peter courageously calls Him the Son of God, and Christ replys by stating that “upon this rock shall I build My *ekklésia*” (fellowship, following), establishes a monstrous new religion. This is especially dubious when Peter never held an official title and only Catholic tradition has him going to Rome and helping Paul establish a “church” there.

[clxxi] Irony abounds! It was actually Julius Caesar who first claimed divinity belonged to the Emperor and de Borgia was supposedly becoming the ultimate “humble” representative of Jesus Christ.

[clxxii] In other words, as a result of living without any restraint to his lusts, he was overweight to the point that it directly affected his health.

[clxxiii] ***The*** most powerful. Kings and Queens of old, Presidents and Prime Ministers of new all bow before the Pontifex Maximus [Revelation 17:2] and often don’t consider serious decisions without Papal approval.

[clxxiv] Rome was and is the undisputed ***suppressor*** of Christianity and the Word of God. [Revelation 6:9-10, 17:6]

[clxxv] The use of Vatican influence for political, "temporal" exploitation has ***always*** been Rome's agenda.

[clxxvi] ***Every*** Western colonial power answered to the Papacy until Clement VII denied Henry VIII his divorce from Catherine of Aragon forcing Henry to create his own miniature version of Catholicism in England and putting Great Britain ever-so-briefly at odds with Rome.

[clxxvii] "investiture of the Kingdom of Naples"? ***Every*** appointment in ***every*** nation is approved by the "Vicar of Christ".

[clxxviii] Corrupt advancement that extreme for only a "nephew"?

[clxxix] — "furious" at the lawless corruption and criminal behavior of yet another Borgia Pope. Yet Rodrigo de Borgia "survived".

[clxxx] So lived the "successor of Peter".

[clxxxi] Charles II was the Catholic son of "Anglican" Charles I, whose outrages against the citizenry and warm relations with Rome caused the English Civil War. The result was the briefest reign in history of a Protestant ruler, Puritan Oliver Cromwell. Upon Cromwell's death, his successor (his son Richard) was forced to resign and Charles was quickly restored from exile in Catholic France.

[clxxxii] Again, we immediately discern the bias with the use of "amazing" whilest more accurate adjectives would be "perverse", "murderous" or "ruthless".

[clxxxiii] —had sex with his sister and sister-in-law and then murdered her husband, his own brother. Many more human beings died by poison or poignard from this Cardinal and General. "Dazzling"? "Meteoric"?

[clxxxiv] "Saints of the Church". The very phrase admits deep influence from Rome.

[clxxxv] None but an agent of Rome calls becoming a Pope "ascending the throne of St. Peter".

[clxxxvi] If his father was truly Jofré Llançol, then he should've called himself "Pedro Luis de Llançol y Borja", as is the Spanish fashion. Notice that is the name Sabatini uses but neither Pedro nor his brother carried the Llançol name.

[clxxxvii] What is important to note about this list is that it spans "opposing" forces such as both Democrats and Republicans. Also, note that famous Knights are often famous *because* they were Roman Catholic Knights of Columbus. Yes, "Babe" Ruth was an accomplished hitter but his affiliations gave him the home run of approval for propaganda. Yes, Floyd Patterson was an accomplished boxer but his Catholicism helped elevate him to prominence as a successful black athlete in the 1960's (Rome *revels* in racial division).

[clxxxviii] Again Sabatini reinforces the story of Rodergio Borgia being related to Jofré Llançol.

[clxxxix] It's past "over-done" and into obvious disinformation, now.

[cxc] Although all of the "educated Elite" play this game with references — "if you don't know what I'm talking about you're not as smart as me", I don't: *The House of Medici: Its Rise and Fall*, Christopher Hibbert, William Morrow Paperbacks (May 19, 1999).

[cxci] That's "*Anti*-Pope John XXIII" who competed with Angelo "Gregory XII" Corraro for pre-eminence, not to be confused with Angelo Giuseppe "John XXIII" Roncalli, (1881 – 1963) who was Pope from 1953 until his death.

[cxcii] When it comes to "tithing", Christians take their queue from Abram giving 10% to the Priest / King Melchizedek. [Genesis 14:20] Melchizedek is well known as a "type" or presaging of Jesus Christ. [Hebrews 7] Truly, *all* Popes are the "boastful small horn" who brags blasphemously. [Daniel 7:8]

[cxciii] —the thermal springs resort in Tuscany. This adds irony as Piccolomini enjoyed the "perks" of his Papacy, he shot off a letter to Borgia to "reign it in a little".

[cxciv] Completely accurate! On the surface, this is a pious elder attempting to scold an unruly underling. In reality, it's a mob boss to a lieutenant telling him he's letting the "cat out of the bag"!

[cxcv] This gives credence to the accusations that Roderigo de Borgia had sex with his own daughter and that he sired sons like Cesare who did the same.

[cxcvi] —as opposed to today where clergy incessantly and repeatedly rape your children and their superiors carefully move them to a new diocese where they can rape even more.

[cxcvii] "Unnamed spinster" means the "cardinal" (lower-case to distract from the official position or power) wasn't particularly picky and a woman of that status had little to gain by resisting the Borgia's lust.

[cxcviii] The *maîtresse-en-titre* was the chief mistress of the Roman Catholic King of France, not to be confused with his wife, the Queen. It was an open secret and even entitled the lucky wench to special status.

[cxcix] Again, if you have no idea who "Infessura" was you must be a dolt! Stefano Infessura (approximately 1435 – 1500) was a forgettable lawyer who kept a diary about the goings on in Rome at his time.

[cc] "similar treatment of", in other words, "an eye for an eye".

[cci] Of course! "The ends justified the means"!

[ccii] Achieved by the corruption of nepotism.

[cciii] Do you think these meticulous historians were really just too lazy to convert the specie of ancient Italy into something their audiences could understand or were they counting on the lack of conversion to shield their subjects from outrage?

[cciv] I'm pretty good at sleuthing Aristocratic obscurity. When one of their scribes like Sabatini simply writes "Volterra" you're supposed to show how educated and erudite you are by knowing who that is. Don't worry, he actually stumped *me* with that.
Volterra is an ancient, fortified mountaintop town in the Tuscany region of Italy, not a person. The closest I can come is the artist Daniele Ricciarelli who was born in Volterra and was later known as "Volterra" but he lived just before the time in question (circa 1509 – 1566) and he wasn't a writer *per se* so I guess I'm not as informed as Sabatini assumed.

[ccv] Again we see the outrage of the Luciferian Elite spending their ill-gotten riches to immortalize their wives, daughters and whores as "Christian" (Catholic) icons.

It was Alessandro Farnese, Pope Paul III, who saw the usefulness of gnostic mystic Ignatius Loyola's Knights of the Virgin Mary and consecrated them "the Society of Jesus" on September 27th, 1540 — a date memorialized with the birth of the dominate search engine "Google" whose algorithms so conveniently marginalize information on all things Roman.

[ccvi] Those who have named themselves ideals like "Pius" and "Innocent" have produced some of the worst examples of hellish debauchery and vicious Christian persecution. If it weren't so offensive it would be Hilarious.
Sorry. He was Pope (and "Saint") from 461 to 468.

[ccvii] The tactic of rulers not having ties to their subjects is critical to how the Elite control by tyranny and treachery.

[ccviii] It was an easy-enough undertaking as Cesare had spilled blood many times before this.

[ccix] As anyone familiar with human anatomy knows, this was posturing no less blatantly deceitful than Pope Sixtus IV granting Cesare "dispensation" from proving the legitimacy of his bastard birth by nothing less than a Papal Bull.
Some sources claim that the "rumors" of Lucrezia being seduced by her brother and father came from Giovanni Sforza. If true, it means that she was violated by incest at 13 or younger by her Roman Catholic clergy family.

[ccx] Pedro Luis de Borgia, bastard son of Pope Alexander VI (born of an "unnamed spinster") is known by his title, the Duke of Gandia. A good Pope never lets a little thing like celibacy or illegitimacy get in the way of property and power for his progeny.

[ccxi] The Aragons are Spaniards.

[ccxii] Apparently, a previous child was lost but details are not given and anything, unfortunately, is possible.

[ccxiii] This should be a stark warning to all who seek to be empowered by drinking of the Cup of Her Fornications; a Roman bargain is never worth the price paid.

[ccxiv] Not only was the Cardinal an Orsini, but he was named after John the Baptist which indicates that his family were Johannites like the Templars; worshipping the Baptist as the "true" Messiah and despising Jesus Christ as a pretender.

[ccxv] After the Borgia Pope and his murderous bastard son Cesare had Lucrezia's second husband, the young Alfonso d´Aragon, brutally stabbed on the steps of St. Peter's Basillica (then later even more brutally strangled in his recovery), Pope Alexander VI arranged for his bastard daughter to marry Alfonso d´Este, the Duke of Girolamo Savonarola's home town, Ferrara

[ccxvi] Interesting to note that Martin Luther would become an Augustinian monk just a few years later, in 1507.

[ccxvii] Allow me to remind you that usury banking is a *Roman* enterprise where key Jews were later installed to take the blame for the industry's crimes.

[ccxviii] Many innocents perished in the ensuing bloodlust.

[ccxix] After the murder of Giuliano, Lorenzo adopted his nephew, Giulio, who utilized the power of his household to become Pope Clement VII.

[ccxx] More on the Medici / Florentine “Carnival” shortly.

[ccxxi] Savonarola foolishly reveled in this which only made him a bigger target, much as Joseph reveled in his visions: *Now Israel loved Joseph more than all his children, because he was the son of his old age. Also he made him a tunic of many colors. But when his brothers saw that their father loved him more than all his brothers, they hated him and could not speak peaceably to him.*
Now Joseph had a dream, and he told it to his brothers; and they hated him even more. So he said to them, “Please hear this dream which I have dreamed: There we were, binding sheaves in the field. Then behold, my sheaf arose and also stood upright; and indeed your sheaves stood all around and bowed down to my sheaf.”
And his brothers said to him, “Shall you indeed reign over us? Or shall you indeed have dominion over us?” So they hated him even more for his dreams and for his words. ~ Genesis 37:3-8

[ccxxii] Jehan Cauvin was forced by Catholic intolerance for Christians from his native France to seek refuge in Geneva in 1541.

[ccxxiii] It is quite pragmatic to require a minimum age for life-experience and maturity and a stark contrast to the Popes who made their sons and relatives Cardinals before reaching puberty.

[ccxxiv] By now, and for some time previous, Girolamo Savonarola had developed one fatal, critical flaw: he was “believing his own press”. He was relying too heavily on the assurance that his visions were both clear and directly from Almighty God and he was too vocal in capitalizing off them from the religious but fickle citizenry.

[ccxxv] The convention of taking the names of a pervious “ruler” and applying a new Roman numeral to it for the next “ruler” is to instill upon the enslaved their “Divine Right” to rule over you. Most noteworthy is how this is used in identical fashion by Roman Catholic clergy, no different from “royalty” with Cardinals as “lords” and Popes being above “kings” as kings require Papal approval of all major decisions, including the ability to divorce their queen (which was the reason why Henry number VIII created his own mini-Catholic religion in England; see *Secret History*).

[ccxxvi] For more, read *Secret History*.

[ccxxvii] There are no well-publicized examples of this having positive results. Nearly all accounts are biased, thanks to negative propaganda against Girolamo Savonarola, to instantly consider this a cult-like practice.
However, I can find no reports of the Friar abusing this authority. In fact, his army of children was unstoppable with him at the helm, as long as any who would question them had reverence for the Christian righteousness he represented.
Unfortunately for Savonarola, we shall see a more determined opposition soon rise.

[ccxxviii] One would think that such a story was a scandalous coup that would be re-broadcast throughout “mainstream media” but the Post got the story because it’s female “journalists” were attendees and no other outlet carried the “festivities”.
You can bet that Maher and Paltrow were carefully selected as the “expendible” notables to mention with the more delicate names being carefully redacted.

[ccxxix] A mixed parentage of Jew and Catholic will ***skyrocket*** you in “entertainment”.

[ccxxx] Given Maher’s features it is understandable that he would gravitate towards Satanic orgies that require a mask.

[ccxxxi] This very work may have been in Savonarola's thoughts as he encouraged the collection of such "art" for destruction. M´Hardy notes from a sermon just before, the Prior lamenting the *"tricking out the Mother of God in the frippery of a courtesan."* The "Christ child" is equally imbued with gnostic sexuality.

[ccxxxii] "Bonfires"; there were more than one.

[ccxxxiii] Items used as enticements towards raucous and deviant sex.

[ccxxxiv] The influence of a Jesuit education is astounding. When you take the time to check upon the education of prominent people, you will find a disproportionate amount of them have been Catholic or Jesuit-educated.
The number grows even larger when you factor in those who begin with the Jesuits but transfer to get a "public" diploma like Donald Trump, or simply fail to graduate like Donald Rumsfeld from Georgetown Law in 1956.
However, when you add the number of Jesuit-educated educators who instruct or run "non-Catholic" universities you can accurately say most *everyone* is "Jesuit-educated"!

[ccxxxv] The only time "Christian" is appropriate in a *Catholic* context!

[ccxxxvi] Can you say, "Ironic projection"??

[ccxxxvii] Also known as "Trial by Ordeal" or "Trial by Fire" in which the accused is subjected to some terrifying event or even torture whereupon "the truth will out". In this case, fire was likely involved, perhaps walking across hot coals which was a common "Trial".

[ccxxxviii] It is not unduly biased to state that few men were ever greater patriots. The statement is even more emphatic in light of the activities of the previous "rulers" of Florence, the Medici.

[ccxxxix] If "Humanist exuberance" ever existed over the Canonization of Ignatius Loyola it is a testimony to how thoroughly the Jesuits infiltrated and assimilated their enemies. Given the far-Left ideology of "Humanism" today, it is a foregone conclusion.

[ccxl] Johann Adam Weishaupt, the converted Jew and founder of the "Illuminati" was also a Jesuit Professor at Ingolstadt.
The "Illuminati" were a temporary secret society used to fill the void of overt influence during the suppression of the Jesuits beginning in 1773. Once the Jesuits were reinstated in 1814, the group melted away.
Today, "Illuminati" is a buzzword and smokescreen used to hide the hand of Rome when she was the one who founded the society in the first place!

[ccxli] I have sources that prove U of PA is covertly controlled by Jesuits.

[ccxlii] For an in-depth report that includes Anthony Bourdain's "suicide", see my article *When Laughing Pedophiles Lead You To Corrupt Cops* at JohnnyCirucci.com

[ccxliii] The rabbit-holes on these two could fill a completely separate work. Kutcher's first wife, Demi Moore, was almost 20 years his senior and was filmed soul-kissing a 12 year-old soap opera co-star during a party. Kutcher has loaded his resumé with all he could, from Catholicism to Judaism to Freemasonry. When the FBI can't track pedophiles (because they're calling the shots at the Bureau), Kutcher is their man to go before Congress. Kunis dated child star Macaulay Culkin who was almost certainly abused but laughs about it via his satirical band "Pizza Underground".

[ccxliv] Explanation on some dating it the day before to follow!

[ccxlv] Whether or not Cesare was a Cardinal at the time had no change upon his lusts. If anything, it enflamed them.

[ccxlvi] The highest secretary / administrator in the "Curia" who oversaw official documents.

[ccxlvii] A similar 24-hour supplanting is the insistence that Luther nailed his 95 Theses to the doors of All Saints Cathedral on the 31st when, in fact, it was on All Saints' Day; November 1st. Even "Anti-Catholic" "Baptist theologians" like James White promote this slight. White's sister, Patty Bonds, is a devout Roman Catholic. In 2009, Bonds told Marcus Grodi for EWTN's "The Journey Home" that their father (also a "Baptist minister") sexually abused his children.

[ccxlviii] Just as the CIA ignores restrictions against conducting crimes *inside* the borders of the United States, the FBI regularly does the reverse.

[ccxlix] If I should be blessed to continue this series, we'll cover a lot more on both these monsters of Magisterial mayhem.

[ccl] Another "John Baptist".

[ccli] "Thus always to tyrants" — the motto of the State of the Virgin ("land of the Virgin", found next to her sister State, "Mary-land") and the phrase supposedly uttered by John Wilkes Booth as he murdered Abrham Lincoln. For the secret history behind the Lincoln assassination such as who the conspirators were and how they survived prosecution, read *Illuminati Unmasked*.

[cclii] The very words of the Jesuit "Fourth Vow of Extreme Unction" or "Blood Oath"!

[ccliii] This is validated by who could've been the greatest Protestant King to ever reign had he not been murdered by Rome before-hand; Edward VI. With good reason did Edward pass over his half-sister Elizabeth to bequeath the Crown to his cousin, Jane Grey.

[ccliv] I am not including this information to validate Rome's purposefully-flawed von Tischendorf "Codex Sinaiticus" Bibles (of which all modern translations derive their error-filled text). I do so to counter-balance the Freemasons and Papists who seek to skew reverence for the Baconian-language KJV to "Divinely inerrant" status along with its Commissioner.

[cclv] This was the inspired work of William Tyndale who translated ἐκκλησία (ekklésia) as "assembly" or "congregation" instead of "church" or "Church", in order to undo the centralized bureaucracy of Catholicism that Christ had already put to the Cross, but was resurrected by Rome as a weapon of control and slavery. Christians have but one Mediator, Jesus Christ (I Timothy 2:5) but the religion of the Dragon insinuates her clergy to intercept and enslave souls.

"'Therefore thus says the Lord God: "Behold, I am against your magic charms by which you hunt souls there like birds. I will tear them from your arms, and let the souls go, the souls you hunt like birds. I will also tear off your veils and deliver My people out of your hand, and they shall no longer be as prey in your hand. Then you shall know that I am the Lord!"'"
"'"Because with lies you have made the heart of the righteous sad, whom I have not made sad; and you have strengthened the hands of the wicked, so that he does not turn from his wicked way to save his life. Therefore you shall no longer envision futility nor practice divination; for I will deliver My people out of your hand, and you shall know that I am the Lord."'" ~ Ezekiel 13:20-23

[cclvi] Taking into account, of course, that the events and persons discussed are half a millennium old.

[cclvii] — a special court established for the trial of anyone who rebelled against Catholicism ("heretics") in France during the reign of Francis I.

[cclviii] "Let it be" or "hands off"; usually in regards to business or commerce.

[cclix] Imagine the heads that would roll all around the world were we able to convict and sentence the insurgents of Rome today!

[cclx] How ironic that Cranmer the Protestant saved Wolsey from the gallows despite Wolsey having used every means possible to kill both Protestants and the Bible. Yet no Catholics would give Cranmer such consideration when Bloody Mary went on her rampage.
Also note that none of William Tyndale's enemies were killed by any Protestant sovereigns. There are several Biblical precedents such as the Egyptian Pharaoh (thought to be Ahmose, 1550-1525 B.C.) who ordered Moses and all Hebrew boys be drowned in the nearest river and the very baby who was spared grew to be the instrument through which a subsequent Pharaoh (Ramses II, 1279 – 1213 B.C.) was drowned with his army in the Red Sea.
When the Agagite (Amalekite) Haman sought to have Persian King Ahasuerus' favored Jew, Mordecai, framed and executed, he was discovered and judged for treason. He and his entire family were killed on the platform meant for Mordecai.
King Saul in his jealousy sought to kill young David as the youth played music for him but David escaped. Later, in battle with the Philistines, Saul was cornered and chose to fall on his own sword rather than be taken alive.

[cclxi] A "false flag" is a tragdedy or significant event engineered by those in power in secrecy and then blamed upon their enemies of convenience.
Today, in America, false flags (usually "mass shootings") are occurring at least once a month, sometimes once a week.

[cclxii] Christianity flourishes at its lowest levels. In the time of Christ and immediately thereafter, the best gatherings were of friends and family in their homes. The centralization of "Christianity" made it easy to conquer and corrupt.

[cclxiii] Brilliantly put! Such is the case almost *always* of Rome verses her enemies!

[cclxiv] More on Bonner shortly.

[cclxv] Imagine the strength of will to be burned alive rather than to confirm just one tenet of Catechism.

[cclxvi] Woodroofe, a vicious Inquisitor, served as Sheriff for only one term and was forced from office by a stroke which paralyzed his body. However, he remained an Alderman until 1560 (Rome preferred to hold the position with a lifeless Papist rather than a live Protestant).

[cclxvii] The 39 Articles of Religion were commissioned by Thomas Cranmer to define England's break with Rome and her customs. They were added to the Anglican Book of Common Prayer.

[cclxviii] I'm recalling a scene from *Thor: Ragnarok* and laughing sardonically.

[cclxix] *The Book of Bertram the Priest: Concerning the Body and Blood of Christ in the Sacrament, Written in Latin by the Command of the Emperour Charles the Great Above Nine Hundred Years*

Ago, and First Translated Into English, in 1549, Ratramnus (monk of Corbie), B. Griffin, 1687

[cclxx] There are a couple here that I'm unable to track down for you; "Dr. Stafford" is one and "Dr. West" I didn't have a prayer for! I always find it greatly annoying whenever an author assumes you already know who they're talking about; even the great John Foxe who has had his work re-written by many an incognito Roman Catholic.

[cclxxi] Could be John Aylmer, of which the Encyclopaedia Britannica states:

John Aylmer, (born 1521, Tivetshall St. Mary, Norfolk, Eng. — died June 3, 1594, London), Anglican bishop of London in the reign of Elizabeth I, known for his vigorous enforcement of the Act of Uniformity (1559) within his Church of England diocese. His harsh treatment of all ... who differed with him on ecclesiastical questions caused him to be attacked in the anti-episcopal ***Marprelate Tracts*** *(1588–89) and to be characterized as "Morrell," the bad shepherd, in Edmund Spenser's* ***The Shepheardes Calender*** *(1579).*

[cclxxii] At this time, Humanism was a discipline that looked to higher authority than flawed humans, either Popes or Kings. To give you an idea, Erasmus and Calvin were true Humanists. It has been completely subverted so that today, "Humanism" is synonymous with "Secular Humanism" which is so far-Left it's not hyperbole to consider it Communist and Luciferian.
For more, read *Secret History*.

[cclxxiii] Again we see a devout agent of the Papal insurgency sent from a foreign nation to "serve" where he would have little compassion for the natives.

[cclxxiv] Like stormtroopers from a foreign army of invasion; which they were and are!

[cclxxv] All that remains of the Huguenots are distant relations.

[cclxxvi] *Catherine de Medici et Ses Astroloques et Magiciens*, Eugène Defrance (1911)

[cclxxvii] I'm not trying to be vulgar, just sardonic. Look up the Medici family crest.

[cclxxviii] "Futurism" is Jesuit eschatology now taught in ***all*** "Protestant" sects of Christendom (save strict, orthodox Adventism) which cunningly erases the Pope as Antichrist and Rome as the Great Harlot, the Fourth and Final Beast of Daniel and Revelation.

[cclxxix] — one of the many, harsh epithets Catherine inspired in her own day by her life and actions.

[cclxxx] Here again, we see the covetous and often incestuous intermingling of the "black nobility". To this day these elites band together to maintain their feudal control over a humanity largely oblivious to their very existence.

[cclxxxi] In light of the abuse and perversion that goes on in convents (especially towards children and teenagers), this is an odd, disturbing thing to note.

[cclxxxii] Again, the import of this is glossed over. The Medici Pope conducted a military alliance in which he aggreed to give his authority as the "Vicar of Christ" to Charles V as "Holy Roman Emperor". In return, Charles pointed his army back at Florence and by siege, hunger and pestilence, forcibly placed the Medici back in tyrannical control.

[cclxxxiii] "from her beloved convent"? Is there any doubt just who is doing the "editing" at "user-edited" Wikipedia? It gets better.

[cclxxxiv] A tremendous amount of information has just been glossed over here! The Medici Pope proceeded to arrange a marriage for his niece to another wealthy, ruling elite, in order to augment his power, and that of his banker family, like any other king of his day.
"Vicar of Christ", indeed.

[cclxxxv] This was true of *any* Medici as they banked and bought their way into power but, again, "user-edited" Wikipedia is manipulating empathy for the Serpent Queen (another epithet that I didn't come up with, her subjects did!).

[cclxxxvi] Understand that this perversion and deviancy is standard for any Luciferian Elite that has or is ruling over you: whether Popes, Princes, Prime Ministers or Presidents. As I explained in *Eaters of Children*, it is the gateway to power.

[cclxxxvii] You are supposed to be so vested in this future mass-murderess that this is as important to you as the "user-editor".

[cclxxxviii] One black nobility family was replaced by another; a Medici by a Farnese — Alessandro Farnese, the Pope who consecrated Loyola's Jesuits in 1540.

[cclxxxix] "It's good ta' be da' king!"

[ccxc] Pierre de Bourdeille. "Seigneur de Brantôme" is his aristocratic title that you are supposed to be awed by. He helped France slaughter Protestants in the "Wars of Religion" but was haunted by the truth of their Biblical doctrines.

[ccxci] Again we see the Roman relic machine in action! Have you ever seen a "unicorn's horn"? Ask a Priest to make you one.

[ccxcii] Francis III was only 18 and this was the first case ever of death by tennis.

[ccxciii] Only a Roman Catholic Elite could have such intolerant arrogance!

[ccxciv] As many as one thousand, five hundred Heugenots were slaughtered and hung about the *Château d´Amboise* in Blois for attempting to overthrow the *duc de Guise* and his brother the Cardinal of Lorraine. They all received viciously harsh treatment. The assumed leader, Godefroy de Barry, was "drawn and quartered" (ripped apart by horses) and what was left of him was hung on the city gates.

[ccxcv] How perfectly accurate!

[ccxcvi] *Let no one deceive you by any means; for that Day will not come unless the Falling Away comes first, and the Man of Sin is revealed, the Son of Perdition, who opposes and exalts himself above all that is called God or that is worshiped, so that he sits as God in the Temple of God, showing himself that he is God.* ~ II Thessalonians 2:3-4

[ccxcvii] Given the notorious ruthlessness of any king, not least of which a man who readily gave his very sons to his enemies that he might maintain his power, I find this story less than believable yet all "historians" claim its veracity. Even apparent critics like the less-than-professional Anne Thériault (whom I've been citing above) claim that this display put the King, himself, into tears.
Pah-*lease*.

[ccxcviii] The experience of "war" was radically different for Princes, either France's Henri then to England's Harry now, than for the common soldier of any time.

[ccxcix] How telling! Here these “doctors” avoid the very issue of “unicorn” reality in the same way they skirt other vital issues of common sense either because they are knowingly fostering disinformation upon their audience or because they, themselves, are incapable of true critical thinking.
Unbelievably, this inherent brain-washing is the norm amongst “experts” and should shock you into *never* believing anyone simply because they’re in a lab coat; from medical doctors to car mechanics.

[ccc] Reminder: “Dauphin” is the French bloodline heir to the “Divine Right throne” and the “Dauphine” is his wife.

[ccci] Causation of possession, demon summoning, etc. and it’s relationship to sickness.

[cccii] Notice, even in the Middle Ages, the propensity for “doctors” to hide their trade from the masses via the language of Rome! This is true of other high-profile, lucrative and often corrupt “professions” such as “law”.

[ccciii] Was it wrong to do so? An excellent circumstantial case can be made for an interdimensional realm we might define as “spiritual” being inhabitated by positive (“angels”) and negative (“demons”) beings.

[ccciv] I cover this relocation with detail in *Secret History*.

[cccv] Make sure you follow that and pick up on the sarcasm: a mental invalid was found in the abandoned village. The soldiers demanded a ransom. The ransom was paid and the handicapped man was murdered anyway.

[cccvi] Remember, these are “Christian”, ***Catholic*** Crusaders to their *true* Christian victims; “ — deny Christ or die!”

[cccvii] The Crusaders were more vicious to their Christian victims than any Muslim enemy was.

[cccviii] Just as a refresher: Catholic clergy and Royal Aristocracy take the names of previous clergy and Aristocracy who have ruled over you as a sign that they can continue to rule over you.

[cccix] “Affairs of State”, in this sense, literal.

[cccx] “Calvinism” is nothing more than French Christianity. Agents of the Papacy ceasely feed the myth that Jehan Cauvin (“John Calvin”) was a progenitor of “heresy” even to Bible-believing Christians. He is deeply hated for having come from such a devoutly-Catholic country.

[cccxi] — a Dominican assassin who was able to use his order’s privielages to get in close to the King and murder him because it was feared Henri III would give freedoms to the Huguenots.

[cccxii] “The delicate innermost membrane enveloping the brain and spinal cord.”

[cccxiii] You guessed it: read *Eaters of Children*.

[cccxiv] If ever a threat to Catherine de´Medici could cut her to the quick, that was it and rest assured, the Superior General of the Jesuits knew it.

[cccxv] Giovanni di Pietro di Bernardone (“Francis of Assisi”) and Domingo Félix de Guzmán; founders of their respective orders.

[cccxvi] " — in this tower." Luther had been kidnapped by his benefactor, Frederick the Wise, Elector of Saxony because his life was at risk to Vatican assassins. For more, read *Secret History*.

[cccxvii] One such web site misspells Loyola's name as "*Lie*-ola" in a fashion that not even a teenager would find amusing.

[cccxviii] The "Spiritual Exercises" are the culmination of Loyola's extremes to "destroy self" in favor of a "higher calling". However, bodily deprevations easily disrupt congnitive thinking and allow *any* "spirit" to do the "calling".

[cccxix] Ignatius of Loyola; Francis Xavier; Peter Faber; Alfonso Salmeron; Diego Laínez; Nicholas Bobadilla; Simão Rodrigues.

[cccxx] This is an important part of Gnosticism and any esoteric secret society. The Freemasons, in particular, make great use of the inversion from black to white and vice-versa.
The ultimate agenda of all such groups is malignant ("evil"); hence the secrecy as no-one needs secrecy to do good.
This can be a dampner upon membership even if the "prize" is an inside track to promotion, fame, fortune, etc. Therefore, initiates are immediately hit with the indoctrination that the society's goals are actually good but they must still swear fealty unto death.
By the time they realize their organization is evil, they have been compromised to commit evil and believe they can never break free.
However, should any member truly wish to have their soul back at all cost, it can be returned to them! A contract agreed to in dishonesty of offer is not a valid contract (especially before Jesus Christ).

[cccxxi] In the Latin, "*perende ac cadaver*", the phrase quoted from the legendary "Jesuit Fourth Vow", "Blood Oath", "Oath of Extreme Unction or Induction", etc.

[cccxxii] This sheds new light on the origins of "Muslim honor-killing"! For more on how thoroughly the Catholic Church has manipulated and controlled Islam, see *Secret History*, Chapter 3: "***The Scimitar Forged From The Crucifix***".
Also, more than one source attests to a Jesuit "theologian" named "L´Amy" who also went by the pen-name "Amicus" proclaiming murder to save the honor of the Society was entirely lawful. [*A History of the Jesuits, Volume 1*, John Poynder, Baldwin, Cradock, and Joy, Paternoster Row, London (1816), pp. 235-239]

[cccxxiii] The convention of insurgency where agents of the Vatican don't originate from their host nation (insulating them from empathy towards their victims) also works in the reverse!

[cccxxiv] "Why are these Catholic shock troops in the most Catholic nation of Europe? —Obviously to subvert French rule in favor of the Papacy!"

[cccxxv] The 2016 film *Silence*, by Italian Roman Catholic Writer and Director Martin Scorsese, is focused on the "persecution" of Jesuits in Japan around the year 1637. But what the film neglects to show is how the Jesuits had been found to have undermined Japanese authority and been guilty of insurgency and espionage. As a result, they were banished from the Land of the Rising Sun which they ignored, went underground and continued on with their efforts of undermining the Emperor and his vassals.
In perfect gas-lighting fashion does Scorsese call his Japanese villain who tortures the poor "Christian" insurgents, "the Inquisitor"!

[cccxxvi] The Habsburg thaler of 1486 was 31.93 grams of silver. Based upon that, the modern equivalent in U.S. dollars would be $755,200.
The next question is, how did the Bishop of Clermont have three quarters of a million dollars in "ready money" to seed the Jesuit insurgency of France?

[cccxxvii] This aptly-named Jesuit was already evidencing what the Society puts all its effort into; infiltration. A great many key figures in all walks of life are ordained Priests unbeknownst to all around them; often taking wives and starting families, utterly immersing themselves in their "cover".

[cccxxviii] —because, certainly if there was a family that held themselves in check, it was the Medici, especially when elevated to Pope or Queen.

[cccxxix] Elisabeth was a Habsburg but she was also the daughter of Holy Roman Emperor Maximilian II of Spain. All that mattered was that the incestuous and inbred "Divine Right of Kings" was maintained over the rabble peasantry, which, today is you!

[cccxxx] Good luck trying to find a single objective "historian" who calls the Serpent Queen anything less cozy than "Catherine".

[cccxxxi] "Rebellion"...?

[cccxxxii] *I furthermore promise and declare that I will, when opportunity presents, make and wage relentless war, secretly or openly, against all heretics, Protestants and Liberals, as I am directed to do, to extirpate and exterminate them from the face of the whole earth; and that I will spare neither age, sex or condition; and that I will hang, waste, boil, flay, strangle and bury alive these infamous heretics, rip up the stomachs and wombs of their women and crush their infants' heads against the walls, in order to annihilate forever their execrable race. That when the same cannot be done openly, I will secretly use the poisoned cup, the strangulating cord, the steel of the poniard or the leaden bullet, regardless of the honor, rank, dignity, or authority of the person or persons, whatever may be their condition in life, either public or private, as I at any time may be directed so to do by any agent of the Pope or Superior of the Brotherhood of the Holy Faith, of the Society of Jesus.* ~ From the Jesuit "Fourth Vow of Extreme Unction" or "Blood Oath"

[cccxxxiii] Another bastard Papal offspring gifted with a Cardinalcy. In typical fashion of "Royal intrigue" he was charged with a mission only he could be trusted with: co-ordinating the massacre of French Protestants. Remember, Popes consider themselves, not just kings, but *above* kings.

[cccxxxiv] Recall that Niccolò Machiavelli was Medici Florence's Ambassador to the Vatican and well-known to the Medici.

[cccxxxv] There was a gold "scudo" and a silver "scudo" and they are tricky to get exchange information on but this could be close to $1,000,000 in current U.S. A University of Tulsa "cheat sheet" helps me put it at $982,500.

[cccxxxvi] Carefully read that again and perhaps more fully understand how the Roman Catholic "religion" is nothing less than a military insurgency.

[cccxxxvii] For this subterfuge, simply read "pro-Protestant policies" of being allowed freedom of worship!

[cccxxxviii] Actually this is *still* the standard for Rome through all her treasonous proxies with the United States government at the top of the list!

[cccxxxix] "You belong to your father, the devil, and you want to carry out your father's desires. He was a murderer from the beginning, not holding to the Truth, for there is no truth in him. When he lies, he speaks his native language, for he is a liar and the Father of Lies." ~ John 8:44
I actually like the Nearly-Inspired Version here. Capitalization added.

[cccxl] "We ruling Elite do need to stick together. There's so darn few of us as it is!"

[cccxli] "We will keep them alive but convince the heretics to return to the Mother Church." By the way, this tactic worked.

[cccxlii] Neither for the first nor the last time did Papal agents in "law enforcement" pretend to do their jobs whilst actually giving cover to Catholic criminals.

[cccxliii] Note the use of Swiss Guard mercenaries here in France. This is the same elite "Swiss Guard" that protects the Pope (unless the Superior General says otherwise) and are almost certainly reconstituted Templars as they escaped to Switzerland after their suppression.

[cccxliv] "*La Sainte Ligue Catholique*": "The Holy Catholic League" formed to counter the "dangers" of the Reformation in France.

[cccxlv] When Catholics pray at sunset. There can be no doubt to whom they are praying, here.

[cccxlvi] *Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter!* ~ Isaiah 5:20 King James Version (KJV)

[cccxlvii] Notice again the reverential "Catherine" used to describe the Serpent Queen.

[cccxlviii] "Historian" Robert Jean Knecht (1926 —) is the Vatican's kind of "Protestant". His Master's thesis at "public" King's College, London was on devout Papist Archbishop of Caterbury, Cardinal John Morton (1420 – 1500). He's an arch Francophile; a British citizen with two French parents. To him, Huguenot attempts not to be slaughtered should be called "rebellion".

[cccxlix] The convention of calling an Elite by their title or lands and not their name is telling. It also keeps things confusing as this title appears to be held by Valois / Medici offspring Henry III but would later fall to Hercule François.

[cccl] Edited out of the account is "Do not trust the Queen!"

[cccli] She, apparently, should not have worn white to her marriage with Henri of Navarre.

[ccclii] This was Henri's name in Poland.

[ccccliii] The Ruling Elite of Rome are no different today! Rudolph "Rudy" Giuliani was the Federal prosecutor who saw to it that the pedophiles who raped the children of soldiers at West Point during the 1980's went unpursued. This proved he was a reliably corrupt gate-keeper and he was gifted with Mayor of New York City for the false flag outrage of 9/11. During his reign of Mayor, alone, the Christian Brothers-trained Catholic dressed in women's clothing publicly no fewer than four times and one of those times in 2000 was with then-property magnate Donald Trump who thrust his face into Giuliani's fake breasts on camera for the Mayor's "press roast". At this writing, Giuliani has been retained by Trump as one of his personal lawyers.

[ccccliv] All Catholic cathedrals and basilicas house the dead bodies of those highly revered by the Vatican. It is a practice that is in no-way "Christian" any more than gathereing every Sunday morning

for “liturgy” is. It is resoundingly pagan and Luciferian. For more, read *Secret History*.

[ccclv] Aldobrandini: another important name of “Black Nobility” erased from our knowledge.

[ccclvi] Cracknel: a biscuit shaped like a bagel but thin with a larger hole in the middle.
Pray? Prayer is used in worship but “magic” is used in summoning.

[ccclvii] Nádasdy’s death covered shortly.

[ccclviii] Rest absolutely assured that Jesuit-controlled Rome has kept meticulous records on torture and its effects as well as general demographics on any human being of note; friend or foe. The *real* driving force behind the modern “Big Brother” “Surveillance State” is Rome.

[ccclix] “*Transcribed in Latin*” — doubtless for the same reason the Bible was: to keep it out of the hands of the uninitiated.

[ccclx] —in quotes because of the tremendous amount of disinformation involved in “physics” and “nuclear reactors”.

[ccclxi] —because when the police and the most powerful “law enforcement” office in the world (FBI) are stimeyed on how to stop child trafficking, you need a comedian to explain it to Congress.

[ccclxii] This association is no coincidence. Mozart sought out Süßmayr because he was a devout Catholic, raised in a Benedictine monastery.

[ccclxiii] Italian for “charcoal makers”: a supposed “secret society” of “revolutionaries”...in Italy.

[ccclxiv] If you know anything about Freemasonry, you know this is patently absurd.

[ccclxv] Supposedly the world’s oldest music publishing house founded in 1719 by Bernhard Christoph Breitkopf. Gottfried Christoph Härtel took over the company in 1795.

[ccclxvi] Alcohol, like any other commodity greatly desired by the masses, seems just as controlled by Rome and her minions; Freemasons, select “Papal Court” Jews, sexual deviants or all of the above.

[ccclxvii] Tomás de Torquemada was a Dominican but he had other ideas of what to do with Christians.

[ccclxviii] Remember this the next time the frauds in “journalism” froth you up about Muslim “child brides”; the inbred Ruling Elite, especially Italian Roman Catholic Elite, *own* this perversion.

[ccclxix] “Shady” is Dash’s descriptor and unnecessary to an honest narrative. It is part of the Jesuit “Blood Oath” or “Fourth Vow” to ingratiate one’s self into the confidence of the powerful and this was obviously an agenda of any “Father Confessor” Priest.

[ccclxx] “*The Priest, in turn, passed it on to a trusted female servant ...*” Were there other assassinations seemingly carried out by the Tofana / Spara gang that were initated by a “shady” Priest but conducted by a female go-between?

[ccclxxi] “According to the custom of the time...”?! Let’s do what the likely-Catholic author wouldn’t and credit this culture of torture to the Vatican and her Inquisition.

[ccclxxii] Not necessarily the Christian thing to do but definitely the Catholic one.

[ccclxxiii] Feminine of “Marquis/Marquess”: just another title conferred upon “nobility” for the extreme amount of wealth and land they have appropriated. “User-edited” Wikipedia proclaims it is

“of high hereditary rank”.

[ccclxxiv] Somerset states that Gobelin had an annual income of 30,000 livres, d´Aubray brought a dowry of 150,000 livres and an inheritance of 50,000 livres from her grandmother. I attempted to convert that by weight of a pure gold livre which is probably inaccurate but gives a ballpark. The couple was worth over $500,000,000. It is not unusual for Catholic Aristocracy in France or anywhere, then or now, to live so well.

[ccclxxv]*Some folks are born made to wave the flag*
Ooh they’re red, white and blue
And when the band plays Hail to the Chief
Ooh, they point the cannon at you It ain’t me, it ain’t me
I ain’t no senator’s son, son
It ain’t me, it ain’t me
I ain’t no fortunate one Some folks are born silver spoon in hand
Lord, don’t they help themselves
But when the taxman comes to the door
Lord, the house looks like a rummage sale It ain’t me, it ain’t me
I ain’t no millionaire’s son,
It ain’t me, it ain’t me
I ain’t no fortunate one ***Fortunate Son***, Creedence Clearwater Revival (1969)

[ccclxxvi] What I’ve edited out is Somerset’s criticism of what she calls “wild exaggerations” regarding the capabilities of Italian poisoners. She directly mocks the accusation that victims could be killed by topical poison left in gloves — the very method thought to be used by Catherine de´Medici to murder Jeanne d´Albret, the Protestant Queen of Navarre.
An objective author would not make a value judgment and state, instead, “These accusations seem exaggerated by ignorance and superstition but they are still plausible given the unkowns of advanced Medieval poisoning.”
Another reason I believe Lady Anne Somerset is biased in Rome’s favor.

[ccclxxvii] Remember, this convention of name-cloning, whether Kings or Popes, is meant to instill for you to “Meet the new boss...same as the old boss.”

[ccclxxviii] Putting “Cardinal” after the first name is another convention of the Ruling Elite like “Alfred Lord Tennyson”, a.k.a. “Alfred, owner of Aldworth (and all its inhabitants), Barony of Tennyson in the County of Sussex”.

[ccclxxix] Prior: Priest in charge of a chapel or cathedral, usually of religions significance.

[ccclxxx] As usual, that means clergy insinuating themselves in the lives of rulers, Elites and key people of power and, therefore, dictating even the lives of common citizens as well.
What the Confessor whispered to the King is immediately felt but the subjects.

[ccclxxxi] Translation: the “Golden Age” of France is so-defined because a single tyrant held his power for over 7 decades and immersed himself in record-setting, sickening opulence.

[ccclxxxii] The elaborate process of dressing the copious and effeminate hair of a Royal Elite. In contrast, English Puritans found such manes were useless and even dangerous when conducting daily chores and kept their hair cut short and tidy resulting in the nickname of “Roundheads”.

[ccclxxxiii] Notice how these powerful Cardinals like Richelieu and Mazarin not only co-ruled France but were completely at ease with the extreme sexual deviancy that was part-and-parcel "at Court" as they often partook in it, themselves.

[ccclxxxiv] Each year more letters get added to this protected group but they are pawns in a much larger game ruled by the ultimate deviants in Rome.

[ccclxxxv] Leave it to a devout Catholic Habsburg.

[ccclxxxvi] Nomenclature steeped in the religion of Rome!

[ccclxxxvii] The Vatican is the most aggressive, malignant foreign Sovereign in existence and her agents of insurgency are the most insidious. They come in all shapes and sizes. They attain fanatical dedication in the subversion of their host nation as they believe their very souls depend upon their treason being accomplished.

[ccclxxxviii] Passed by Parliament in 1701, it stated that only Protestant Sovereigns could rule in either England or Ireland.

[ccclxxxix] "User-edited" Wikipedia claims there was friction between James II and Benedetto Odescalchi ("Pope Innocent XI") as James pushed for Odescalchi to make Petre a Bishop but the Pope "obstinantly refused".
As we'll soon read, Robert Montagu, however, showed Petre rising to a Cardinalcy.

[cccxc] Charles Stewart Parnell (1846 – 1891): touted as an "Irish nationalist" politician. He was Leader of the Home Rule League from 1880 to 1882, Leader of the Irish Parliamentary Party from 1882 to 1891 and a Member of Parliament ("MP") from 1875 to 1891. "User-edited" Wikipedia notes that "his party held the balance of power in the House of Commons during the Home Rule debates of 1885–1890." How advantageous.

[cccxci] *History of the Counter-Revolution in England, for the Re-Establishment of Popery, under Charles II. and James II.*

[cccxcii] Somerset does present a thorough recounting of an erased period of history but she wouldn't have been published without her pro-Vatican bias.

[cccxciii] Somerset is unclear as "incest" is sex with a family member, usually immediate family. One can only assume this means that de Brinvilliers was regularly abusing her own children.

[cccxciv] More precisely, it is the willingness of someone to commit any heinous act to aggrandize themselves. The abuse (particularly taking pleasure in making the victim suffer) of the innocent and vulnerable — child, animal, etc. — is usually some of the worst.
If you dare, it's all in *Eaters of Children*.

[cccxcv] Somerset gives "the investigator's" first initial as "M."

[cccxcvi] Jean-Baptiste Colbert, the Controller-General of Finance.

[cccxcvii] Note the militarization of "law enforcement" in Catholic Medieval France is identical to the same aberration all over the world today. Modern Police are ancient Praetorians whose true job is protecting the criminal Elite and enforcing feudalism.

[cccxcviii] According to Somerset, a “stone mason”. In this company we wonder if this is a trade or code for Freemasonry or both as often the guilds of masons provided access to the secret society of the same name.

[cccxcix] Even those who promulgate the Truth are only allowed to do so if they fulfill a requirement set by the Great Whore of Babylon.

[cd] Kolvenbach was Dutch, showing just how far the Netherlands has come since whole-heartedly embracing Luther’s Protest five centuries ago.
It is standard policy for Priests (especially Jesuits) to be sent where they have no affinity for the existing population. It is easier to commit crimes against them by insurgency.
Kolvenbach went to his judgment the day after Thanksgiving, November 26th, 2016.
Whether he was truly thankful, I can’t say just yet.

[cdi] Did this make Roeder susceptible to suggestion?
Was he on prescription medication?
Was the medication tampered with?

[cdii] It is still customery in *modern* Catholic-controlled governments. “Waterboarding” is only one example though it’s genesis through centuries of the Inquisition is obvious.

[cdiii] Named after the founder of the Jesuits.

[cdiv] He apparently didn’t know he was supposed to be at war with himself.

[cdv] Infants that the Priest murdered, probably in sacrifice to Satan as this was his specialty.

[cdvi] He, too, was a Priest who slaughtered his unwanted infant children to Satan.
You might have empathy for someone who kept a “mistress” because he couldn’t maintain a vow whose purpose is to overwhelm the participant with lust but it takes a monster to murder his own infants.

[cdvii] Speaking of “language used as a weapon” (see the Preface), this word is designed to dehumanize the unborn child, which is why I have it in quotations.

[cdviii] Villebousin castle was where the Priest Guibourg had lived as Almoner to Montgommery.

[cdix] This is likely Jean de Montpezat de Carbon, of whom I can find little. Is one of his “gentlemen” a euphemism for homosexual companion?

[cdx] Possibly as little as $30 U.S. dollars.

[cdxi] Marie de Rabutin-Chantal, the Marquise de Sévigné, French Aristocrat and chronicler.

[cdxii] “Christian”?

[cdxiii] Compare this to the suffering of Nicholas Ridley whose Catholic executioners saw burned slowly and agonizingly with green wood as fuel.

[cdxiv] Does watching someone be burned alive make *you* “sprightly”?
The only thing worse than an Aristocrat is an Aristocrat sycophant.
I’ll remind you again that the woman’s name is “Marie de Rabutin-Chantal”, her *title* is “Marquise

(Madame) de Sévigné". Calling an effete Elite by their title instead of their name manipulates the audience into automatic deference and respect though it is almost *never* warranted.

---

[1] *Walter Veith*, Wikipedia, accessed 10 December 2019

[2] *About Professor Walter Veith*, Amazing Discoveries.org

[3] *Child Catchers - The Devil is in the Detail*, ZOD 44, YouTube, 15 October 2017

[4] *Eaters of Children: The Pedocracy Exposed: How access to power is granted through the rape, torture and ritualistic slaughter of the innocent*. Giovanni Augustino Cirucci, CreateSpace, (September 11th, 2017)

[5] *The Complete Works of Tacitus*, Random House (1942), pp. 282-283

[6] *The Twelve Caesars*, Suetonius, 121 A.D., 2010 translation by A. S. Kline, pp. 198-199 [digital]

[7] *Programmed to Kill*, David McGowan, iUniverse (2004), pp. 343-344

[8] *My Life Among the Serial Killers*, Helen Morrison, Harold Goldberg HarperCollins (2004), p. 54

[9] *Bluebeard: An Account of Comorre the Cursed and Gilles de Rais, with Summaries of Various Tales and Traditions*, Ernest Alfred Vizetelly, Chatto & Windus, London (1902), pp. 345-346

[10] *A History of the Inquisition, Vol. III*, Henry Charles Lea, Harper & Brothers, New York (1888), p. 470
I must warn you, there are several portions where Lea appears to have great sympathy for Gilles de Rais that I have left out. They make me suspicious of his motives.

[11] *My Life Among the Serial Killers*, Helen Morrison, Harold Goldberg HarperCollins (2004), p. 55

[12] *Secret History: The erased clues that prove who rules the world from behind the curtain.* Giovanni Augustino "Johnny" Cirucci, CreateSpace (November 24, 2016), pp. 115-116

[13] *ibid* (abbreviation for the Latin "ibīdem", meaning "in the same place"), p. 123

[14] *Witchcraft and the Gay Counterculture: A Radical View of Western Civilization and Some of the People it Has Tried to Destroy*, Arthur Scott Evans, FAG RAG Books, Boston (1978), pp. 19, 20
Really? "FAG RAG books"?? Only in Catholic-dominated far-Left Boston.

[15] *The Rise and Fall of Seattle Mayor Ed Murray's Political Career*, Bob Young, The Seattle Times, 9 May 2017
The Seattle Times acknowledges that Murray was "***briefly***" at an ***un-named*** seminar.

[16] *Leadership Tips From Ed Murray*, Lola Peters, Leadership Tomorrow, 20 February 2015
This bio states that Murray was Jesuit-mentored when there are no Jesuit schools on his resumé. —and I can't think of a better "leader" to learn from.

[17] *Witchcraft and the Gay Counterculture*, Evans, p. 20

[18] *ibid*, pp. 20-21

[19] *ibid*, p. 21

[20] *Catholic Church Missal, Not Bible, Used by Johnson for Oath at Dallas: Book of Mass Prayers Vanished*, Andrew J. Glass, Washington Post, 26 February 1967

[21] *Witchcraft and the Gay Counterculture*, Evans, pp. 21-22

[22] *The God of the Witches*, Margaret Alice Murray, Sampson Low, Marston & Co., London (1908), pp. 177, 177-178

[23] *Witchcraft and the Gay Counterculture*, Evans, p. 23

[24] *My Life Among the Serial Killers*, Helen Morrison, Harold Goldberg, HarperCollins (2004), pp. 53-54

[25] *Famous Serial Killers*, Borg Schroeder, Zem Books (2007), p. 9

[26] *Crux Ansata*, Herbert George Wells, Freethought Press (1953), pp. 51-53

[27] *ibid*, p. 53-54

[28] *A History of the Inquisition, Vol. III*, Henry Charles Lea, Harper & Brothers, New York (1888), p. 468

[29] *ibid*, pp. 468-469

[30] *ibid*, pp. 470-471

[31] *Bluebeard: An Account of Comorre the Cursed and Gilles de Rais with Summaries of Various Tales and Traditions*, Ernest Alfred Vizetelly, Chatto & Windus, London (1902), pp. 199-200

[32] *A History of the Inquisition*, Lea, p. 471

[33] *ibid*, p. 471

[34] *Serial Killers*, Michael Newton, John L. French, Chelsea House (2008), p. 24

[35] *A History of the Inquisition*, Lea, pp. 473, 474

[36] *ibid*, p. 474

[37] *Secret Societies and Subversive Movements*, Nesta Webster, Book Tree (2000), p. 47

[38] *Programmed to Kill*, David McGowan, iUniverse (2004), pp. 344-345

[39] *ibid*, pp. 345

[40] *My Life Among the Serial Killers*, Helen Morrison, Harold Goldberg, HarperCollins (2004), p. 55

[41] *ibid*, pp. 55-56

[42] *The Sons of Gules di Rais: head-hunters, splanchnophiles & sorcerers*, David Slater, Headpress, Issue 12 (1996), p. 32
A fitting location regarding the page numbers.

[43] *ibid*, p. 32

[44] *ibid*, p. 32

[45] *ibid*, p. 33

[46] *ibid*, p. 33

[47] *ibid*, pp. 34-35

[48] *A History of the Inquisition, Vol. III*, Henry Charles Lea, Harper & Brothers, New York (1888), pp. 471-472, 472-473

[49] *ibid*, pp. 477, 477-478

[50] *ibid*, pp. 478-479

[51] *ibid*, p. 483

[52] *ibid*, p. 483

[53] *My Life Among the Serial Killers*, Helen Morrison, Harold Goldberg, HarperCollins (2004), p. 54

[54] *A History of the Inquisition*, Lea, p. 482
I took this slightly out of chronological order but the end result was the same.

[55] *ibid*, p. 484

[56] *ibid*, pp. 484-485

[57] *Crux Ansata*, Herbert George Wells, Freethought Press (1953), p. 54

[58] *Historians claim Gilles de Rais, whose beastly reputation later inspired the French fictional Bluebeard character, was wrongfully executed in 1440*, Paul Webster, The Guardian, 17 June 2013

[59] ***"The Banned Lecture":*** *Gilles de Rais*, University Poetry Society, Oxford, Aleister Crowley on the evening of Monday, February 3rd, 1930.
I have two sources on this and both say "to have been delivered" so I assume "The Banned Lecture" means "The Beast" wasn't allowed to give it.
What a shame.

[60] *My Life Among the Serial Killers*, Morrison, Goldberg, p. 57

[61] *Dracula, Prince of Many Faces: His Life and His Times*, Radu R. Florescu, Raymond T. McNally, Little, Brown and Company (31 October 1989), p. 13

[62] *An Account of the Principalities of Wallachia and Moldavia*, William Wilkinson, Longman, Hurst, Rees, Orme, and Brown, London (1820), p. 19

[63] *Zbigniew Brzezinski Obituary*, Godfrey Hodgson, The Guardian, 28 May 2017

[64] *Zbigniew Brzezinski, National Security Adviser to Jimmy Carter, Dies at 89*, Daniel Lewis, The New York Times, May 26, 2017

[65] *Story of Bin Laden killing part of 9/11 set of lies: Analyst*, Press TV, 12 May 2015
Acknowledges bin Laden a CIA asset known as "Colonel Tim Osman".

[66] *Osama bin Laden; Militant and political career; Mujahideen in Afghanistan*, Wikipedia
Acknowledges bin Laden went to Pakistan in 1979.

[67] *Zbigniew Brzezinski, National Security Adviser to Jimmy Carter, Dies at 89*, Daniel Lewis, The New York Times, May 26, 2017
Actually has this meeting with different camera angles showing the soldier's rank and a name plate *in English* of "Ayaz" something-or-other — mocking you with the truth in plain sight as is so often the case of the "New York Times".

[68] *Army Rank (Pakistan)*, GlobalSecurity.org
Soldier in the photograph wears the rank of "Major", one "pay-grade" below Lieutenant Colonel (close enough!).

[69] *Osama bin Laden; Building Al-Qaeda*, Encyclopædia Britannica
The "database" that was the foundation for "al Qaeda" ("the Base") supposedly came from bin Laden in 1988; several half-truths that still help prove my point.

[70] *"Zbig" Holds His Fire at Khyber Pass*, Stuart Auerbach, The Washington Post, February 4, 1980
The Washington Com-Post acknowledges Brzezinski's Pakistan tour in (as you can see) February of 1980. Of course here, there are no photographs and the soldier who fires a single round from his Russian-made RPK machine gun before it jams is left anonymous.
The Com-Post leads the charge of the Vatican / CIA yellow rags of "journalism" along with the New York Slimes. Both are maintained for Rome by their puppet Jews like ole Marty Baron of Boston Globe "Spotlight" fame or the Sulzberger family.

[71] *Osama bin Laden*, Biography.com
Osama bin Laden's jihadi training funded and organized via the Catholic Intelligence Agency's "Operation: Cyclone".

[72] *Did Hale Boggs Drop From The Sky?* Johnny Cirucci, Johnny Cirucci.com, 8 May 2018

[73] *Irish abortion vote is remarkable political victory for Leo Varadkar*, Emma Graham-Harrison, The Guardian, 29 May 2018

[74] *Secret History: The erased clues that prove who rules the world from behind the curtain.*
Giovanni Augustino "Johnny" Cirucci, CreateSpace (November 24, 2016), pp. 27-51

[75] *ibid*, pp. 34-35

[76] *ibid*, p. 48

[77] *Lyceum Theatre; Bram Stoker*, Wikipedia

[78] *Arthur Conan Doyle: Spiritualist and Freemason*, Index Masonic Papers, "W. Bro." Yasha Beresiner, Pietre-Stones Review Of Freemasonry, December 18, 2007
I don't know what the fuck a "W. Bro." is (White Bro?) but these Luciferian clowns have this page ***locked*** down so much so that I couldn't even copy and paste the information necessary to give the boy-buggering fucks credit — as if someone was going to steal White Bro Yasha's ***brilliant*** writing and make ***millions*** off of it!

[79] *Name; Arthur Conan Doyle*, Wikipedia

[80] *Adaptations in other media; Adaptations and derived works; Sherlock Holmes*, Wikipedia

[81] *Protestant and Catholic, the Association for Promoting Christian Knowledge, The Church of Ireland*, unattributed, 1996

“Christian Knowledge” ...

[82] *Vambéry, Arminius (1832-1913)*, Encyclopedia of Occultism and Parapsychology, Encyclopedia.com, 2001

[83] *Arminius Vámbéry*, “nicholsvictoria2”, The Coldfall Sanction, January 07, 2017

[84] *D. Bruno Starrs*, Sid Harta Publishers
This is cute but also a little disconcerting: *D. Bruno Starrs was born in Adelaide, Australia and has lived all over the country. He is unmarried and quite unattractive although he has managed to win a few bodybuilding titles. He is also quite unintelligent although he has managed to graduate from several universities.*

Dr. D. Bruno is an unmarried body-builder and obviously a very dedicated Catholic. What else he is we can leave up to your imagination, as he obviously wanted you to.

[85] *Keeping the Faith: Catholicism in “Dracula” and its Adaptations*, D. Bruno Starrs, Journal of Dracula Studies, Queensland University of Technology, 2004
There’s a fucking “Journal of Dracula Studies” ... ***really?!***

[86] *ibid*

[87] *ibid*

[88] *ibid*

[89] *Is William Shakespeare a pen name? What we can learn from Roland Emmerich’s “Anonymous” movie*. Helen Heightsman Gordon, Academia.edu, 2013

[90] *Baconian theory of Shakespeare authorship*, Wikipedia

[91] *Summary of Baconian Evidence for Shakespeare Authorship*, Lawrence Gerald, undated, Sir Bacon.org

[92] *The Life of Sir Tobie Matthew: Bacon’s Alter Ego, by his Kinsman, Arnold Harris Mathew, (De jure Earl of Landaff, of Thomastown, County Tipperary) and Annette Calthrop,* ***“Profectio domini Tobiae Matthaei, qui mihi est tanquam alter ego, ut dominatio tua illustrissima optime novit in illas partes, memoriam mihi renovat eximii tut erga me favoris”*** [Descendent Master Tobias Matthew, who is like an alter ego that he knows very well the most of your government in that direction, but renews my outstanding memory of thee for my favorites — an interesting translation of Latin I retrieved from the internet.], *(Extract from a letter to the Conde Gondomar by Sir Francis Bacon.)* Elkin Mathews, Vigo Street, W. London (1907), pp. ix-xi

[93] *ibid*, p. 290

[94] *ibid*, p. 6

[95] *Campion’s “Reasons” Go On Display In Oxford*, unattributed, 15 July 2015, Jesuits in Britain

[96] *The Stonors Reclaim Stonor Park Page*, Sandra Salmans, 7 June 1979, The New York Times

[97] This comes from no less a source than the “Jesuit Institute”.

[98] *Fox’s Book of Martyrs*, John Foxe, The Project Gutenberg EBook, released 25 August 2007, pp. 91-92

As I examine and compare the “Project Gutenberg EBook” to another copy I have of Foxe’s Book of Martyrs I’m finding glaring discrepancies that make me suspect “Project Gutenberg” is as Papist as today’s Lutherans.

[99] *Elizabeth I’s Religious Settlement*, unattributed, undated, the National Maritime Museum, Royal Observatory Greenwich

[100] *The Life of Sir Tobie Matthew: Bacon’s Alter Ego*, Arnold Harris Mathew, Elkin Mathews, Vigo Street, W. London (1907), p. 6

[101] *Radu Florescu, Scholar Who Linked Dracula and Vlad the Impaler, Dies at 88*, Margalit Fox, The New York Times, 27 May 2014
... “Margalit” ... ?

[102] *ibid*

[103] *Seattle U Jesuit Deems Photo Offensive, Pulls Copies From Stands*, Tess Riski, The Spectator [Seattle University student newspaper], 18 April 2018
Is that a real name...?

[104] *LGBT Group at New York City Catholic Parish Participates in, Promotes Gay “Pride”*, Lisa Bourne, LifeSiteNews, 6 October 2015

[105] *Blessed by Dolan homos march in St. Patrick’s Day*, unattributed, Tradition In Action, 21 March 2015
I guess when you lose as much as Latin Mass Catholics do, you start to get a little offensive with your blog posts.

[106] *Card. Dolan Welcomes Homosexuals*, Margaret Galitzin, Tradition In Action, 17 April 2013

[107] *De Blasio, Inspired by Francis, Describes an Evolving Relationship With Faith*, Michael M. Grynbaum, The New York Times, 22 July 2015
Oh look: another Jew in “journalism” writing glowing things about the Catholic Church and spinning to make it seem like being a far-Left Communist is adverse to Catholic “values”.

[108] *Church Leaders Supporting Same-Gender Couples: Catholic Pastor Explains Why He Marched in Pride Parade*, Francis DeBernardo, New Ways Ministry: Building Bridges Between the LGBT Community and the Catholic Church, 12 July 2013

[109] *Theology Professor At Catholic College Claims Jesus Was A ‘Drag King’*, Bradford Richardson, The Washington Times, 29 March 2018
Interesting that Holy Cross is headlined as a “Catholic College” and the word “Jesuit” appears only once, later in the body of the article.

[110] *Jesuit Priest Speaks Out for Canadian Transgender Equality Bill*, Francis DeBernardo, New Ways Ministry: Building bridges between the LGBT community and the Catholic Church since 1977, 31 January 2017

[111] *Vatican cops bust drug-fueled gay orgy at home of cardinal’s aide*, Tamar Lapin, The New York Post, 5 July 2017

[112] *NY Parish Hosting Celebration at Notorious Gay Club*, Anita Carey, ChurchMilitant.com, 27 April 2017

[113] Fr. James Martin, SJ, Facebook post, 17 April 2015

[114] *This I Believe: Created in God's Image*, Damian Torres-Botello, America magazine, 17 April 2015

[115] *Fr. James Martin Criticizes "Homophobic" Pastors at WMOF*, Christine Rousselle, The National Catholic Register, 23 August 2018

[116] *Dracula, Prince of Many Faces: His Life and His Times*, Radu R. Florescu, Raymond T. McNally, Little, Brown and Company (31 October 1989), p. 13
Really...? Published on "Halloween". Cute.

[117] *ibid*, p. 14

[118] *Manuscript reveals dark side of Lawrence of Arabia's sex life*, Matthew Beard, The Independent, 31 January 2004

[119] *Dracula, Prince of Many Faces*, Florescu, McNally, p. 20

[120] *Secret History: The erased clues that prove who rules the world from behind the curtain.* Giovanni Augustino "Johnny" Cirucci, CreateSpace (November 24, 2016), pp. 158, 160-164

[121] *Dracula, Prince of Many Faces*, Florescu, McNally, p. 21

[122] *ibid*, pp. 22-23

[123] *Secret History*, Cirucci, pp. 57-60

[124] *Dracula, Prince of Many Faces*, Florescu, McNally, p. 23

[125] *ibid*, pp. 23-24

[126] *ibid*, pp. 24-25

[127] *ibid*, pp. 25-26

[128] *ibid*, p. 26

[129] *Illuminati Unmasked: Everything you need to know about the "New World Order" and how we will beat it.* Giovanni Augustino "Johnny" Cirucci, CreateSpace (27 January 2015), pp. 148-149

[130] *Dracula, Prince of Many Faces*, Florescu, McNally, p. 27

[131] *Christian Heresy: Persecution of Cathars, Albigenses and Waldenses*, Dr. Michael David Magee, Academia.edu, 12 December 2002, pp. 8-10

[132] *Jesuit Extreme Oath of Induction*, Reformation.org

[133] *Dracula, Prince of Many Faces*, Florescu, McNally, pp. 27-28

[134] *ibid*, p. 28

[135] *ibid*, pp. 28, 29

[136] *ibid*, pp. 30, 31

[137] *ibid*, pp. 31-32

[138] *ibid*, p. 34

[139] *ibid*, p. 36

[140] *ibid*, p. 36

[141] *ibid*, pp. 39-40

[142] *The Roman History of Ammianus Marcellinus*, Ammianus Marcellinus (~380 AD), Book XVI, Chapter X, paragraphs 1-7, translated ~1880 by historian Charles Duke Yonge for Bohn's Classical Library and re-released by Gutenberg on 22 April 2009

[143] *ibid*, Book XV, Chapter V, paragraph 16

[144] *Illuminati Unmasked: Everything you need to know about the "New World Order" and how we will beat it.* Giovanni Augustino "Johnny" Cirucci, CreateSpace (27 January 2015), pp. 180-182

[145] *Dracula, Prince of Many Faces*, Florescu, McNally, p. 41

[146] *ibid*, pp. 41-42

[147] *ibid*, p. 44

[148] *ibid*, pp. 44-45

[149] *ibid*, pp. 48-49

[150] *ibid*, pp. 52-53

[151] *ibid*, p. 56

[152] *ibid*, pp. 58-59

[153] *ibid*, pp. 59-60

[154] *The Histories*, Volumes 1-2, Laonikos Chalkokondyles (2014), pp. 367-368, 368

[155] *Dracula, Prince of Many Faces*, Florescu, McNally, p. 59

[156] *ibid*, pp. 59-60

[157] *Vlad the Crusader*, Patrick Joiner, Medium.com, 18 February 2015

[158] *Vlad the Impaler: The Real Dracula Was Absolutely Vicious*, Marc Lallanilla, NBC News, 31 October 2013
More "Halloween" cuteness.

[159] *Vlad III the Impaler*, unattributed, New World Encyclopedia, 23 January 2016

[160] *Vlad the Impaler*, Lallanilla

[161] *Dracula, Prince of Many Faces*, Florescu, McNally, p. 75

[162] *Secret History*, Cirucci, pp. 29, 30, 31-32, 46, 47, 48, 50

[163] *Dracula, Prince of Many Faces*, Florescu, McNally, p. 75

[164] *ibid*, p. 83

[165] *ibid*, p. 97

[166] *Eaters of Children: The Pedocracy Exposed: How access to power is granted through the rape, torture and ritualistic slaughter of the innocent*. Giovanni Augustino Cirucci, CreateSpace, (September 11th, 2017), pp. 355-357, 588-591, all of Chapter 30

[167] *Catholics Scrutinize Enigmatic Opus Dei*, Ron Grossman, The Chicago Tribune, 07 December 2003
Now why would such a dedicated journalist Jew like Ron Grossman put so much effort into writing about how Catholics are "scrutinizing" Opus Dei? — On Pearl Harbor, no less! Just a coincidence, I'm sure.
In case my sarcasm is throwing you off, I'll make it plain: "journalism", like Helliwood, is just one more place where *Romans* hide behind *Jews* (and the Jews are happy to let them do so).

[168] *Dracula, Prince of Many Faces*, Florescu, McNally, p. 97

[169] *ibid*, p. 100

[170] *The Serial Killer Files*, Harold Schechter, Random House (2003), pp. 141-142

[171] *Dracula, Prince of Many Faces*, Florescu, McNally, pp. 100-101

[172] *ibid*, p. 101

[173] *Vlad The Impaler: Brief History*, Dr. Elizabeth Miller, Memorial University of Newfoundland, 2005

[174] *Dracula, Prince of Many Faces*, Florescu, McNally, p. 122

[175] *ibid*, p. 129

[176] *ibid*, p. 133

[177] *Vlad III Dracula of Wallachia: Evil Villain or Hero?* Phyllis Doyle Burns, Owlcation.com, 21 December 2017

[178] *Dracula, Prince of Many Faces*, Florescu, McNally, pp. 134-135

[179] *They Liked Ike at St. Mary's in 1916*, Roy Bragg, San Antonio Express-News, 27 December 2016
These clowns demand a subscription to read their tiny rag that nobody outside of San Antonio has even heard of.
Good luck with that.

[180] *The American Mission: Maryland Jesuits from Andrew White to John Carroll*, Howard W. Gunlocke, Georgetown University Library, 31 January 1976

[181] *Terror Over Yugoslavia: The Threat to Europe*, Avro Manhattan, Watts & Co., London (1953), p. 12

[182] *USA and Foreign Decorations of Dwight D. Eisenhower*, the Eisenhower Presidential Library

[183] *Edmund A. Walsh, S.J., founder of the School of Foreign Service at Georgetown University*, Georgetown University News Service

[184] *Eisenhower's Death Camps: The Last Dirty Secret of World War Two*, James Bacque, Saturday Night magazine, September 1989 issue, pp. 31-33

[185] *Dracula, Prince of Many Faces*, Florescu, McNally, p. 137

[186] *The Histories*, Volumes 1-2, Laonikos Chalkokondyles (2014), pp. 389-390

[187] *ibid*, pp. 391-392

[188] *Nicolaus Copernicus; Early Life*, New Advent Catholic Encyclopedia
Despite a massive amount number of articles, all front-loaded by Google, claiming Copernicus ***was not a Priest*** (including a 2017 article by Forbes!), the Catholic Encyclopedia notes that the Vatican mathematician never married and was even nominated for a clerical post by Sigismund I, the King of Poland.

[189] *Collegio Romano*, Al Van Helden, The Galileo Project, Rice University, 1995

[190] *Eaters of Children*, Cirucci, pp. 685-687

[191] *Dracula, Prince of Many Faces*, Florescu, McNally, p. 167

[192] *ibid*, p. 174 [paragraph breaks added]

[193] *Lucrezia Borgia*: Act 1; Scene 1 taken from *Lucrezia Borgia, Mary Tudor, Angelo, Tyrant of Padua*, Victor Hugo, translated by I. G. Burnham, George Barrie & Son, Philadelphia (1895), p. 15

[194] *Society of Jesus*, Wikipedia

[195] *When Is Google's Birthday — And Why Are People Confused?* unattributed, *The Telegraph*, 27 September 2017
— They're "confused" because people like me started to notice the "coincidence" and then Google suddenly sprang as many new birthdays as "ISIS" have alternative names; "ISIL", "IS".

[196] *Google's $35 million mystery barge made of recycled shipping containers floats to its new home in Stockton*, Sara Malm, *The Daily Mail*, 6 March 2014

[197] *Fourteen Years a Jesuit; A Record of Personal Experience and a Criticism, Volume II*, Paul Kajus Graf von Hoensbroech, Cassell & Co., London (1911), p. 16

[198] *The Jesuits: A Complete History*, Theodor Griesinger, W. H. Allen & Co., 13 Waterloo Place, London (1885), p. 66

[199] *Secret History*, Cirucci, pp. 345-346, 347, 348, 349, 350, 351

[200] *ibid*, p. 383

[201] *Isis Unveiled, Volume II*, Helena Petrovna Blavatsky, Theosophy Trust, p. 326

[202] *Calixtus III, Pope*, "written by: The Editors of Encyclopaedia Britannica", Encyclopædia Britannica, Inc. 2018

[203] *The Devil in the Church: His Secret Works Exposed and His Snares Laid to Destroy Our Public Schools*, Norman Morand Roumane (1902), pp. 134, 146-147

[204] *Lucrezia Borgia: Life, Love, and Death in Renaissance Italy*, Sarah Bradford, Penguin Books (2005), pp. 21-23

[205] *The Last of the Great Swashbucklers*, The Life and Work of Rafael Sabatini, Jesse F. Knight, August 1999

[206] *The Life of Cesare Borgia*, Rafael Sabatini, Stanley Paul & Co., 31 Essex Street, Strand, W.G. London (1912), p. 8

[207] *ibid*, pp. 7, 8

[208] *ibid*, p. 15

[209] *ibid*, pp. 27-28

[210] *ibid*, p. 29, 30

[211] *ibid*, pp. 29-30

[212] *Illuminati Unmasked*, Cirucci, pp. 407-408

[213] *Pepe Orsini ... The Grey Pope*, Frank M. Webb, undated, Frank-Webb.com
Okay, if you go to this blog "Frank M. Webb" looks a little squirrely and his greatest claim to fame is creating the "Reverse Logic System" for real estate but I've seen what his article states before in other sources that I was unable to locate, for some reason.
Go figure.

[214] *EXCLUSIVE: Tom Cruise Started Religious Journey with Catholic Church — until he was Booted from Seminary for Swiping Booze, says Old Friend*, Chris White, The New York Daily News, 4 March 2013

[215] *Secret History*, Cirucci, p. 140

[216] *Christopher Columbus Was A Colonna*, Colonna Crime Family, Ahuwah Zeus, 27 May 2017.
That's a doozie of a pen name. As I already told you, don't bother trying the link. I'm writing a little over a year later and it's already gone. Good thing I archived it!

[217] *Romanism: A Menace to the Nation*, Jeremiah J. Crowley, Crowley, Wheaton, Illinois (1912), p. 157
Crowley mitigates those important paragraphs by first saying that it's all due to the ambition of the Knights, and not the over-all agenda of Rome ... ***not***.

[218] *Sword and Shield*, Volume 5 Number 2, August 2016
By coincidence, the magazine of renowned "Protestant" and "anti-Catholic", Charles Haddon Spurgeon, was the "Sword and Trowel" which should harken no Freemasonic iconography what-so-ever...really!

[219] *In The Pillory: The Tale Of The Borgia Pope In Nine Crowded Chapters, 38 Splendid Illustrations*, John Bond, The Fellowship Forum, Washington D.C. (1929), digital pages will not match the original; this was taken from the introduction.

[220] *The Life of Cesare Borgia*, Sabatini, p. 30

[221] *ibid*, pp. 30-31

[222] *In The Pillory*, Bond; this was taken from **Chapter I: The Invincible Alexander**.

[223] *Secret History*, Cirucci, pp. 152-154

[224] *The Medici and the Catholic Church*, Justine Grace Abrugena, a paper for the Ateneo de Manila University, European Studies Program (undated)

[225] *The Life of Cesare Borgia*, Sabatini, p. 31-32, 35

[226] *In The Pillory*, Bond; this was taken from **Chapter IV: The Papal Libertine**.

[227] *The Life of Cesare Borgia*, Sabatini, pp. 36, 37, 38

[228] *ibid*, pp. 37-38

[229] *ibid*, pp. 39, 43-44

[230] *ibid*, pp. 44-45

[231] *ibid*, pp. 45-46
This Papist putz then goes on to explain that such a scandal could not possibly be the case as Borgia preferred his outrages to be more open.
Not.

[232] *Eaters of Children: How access to power is granted through the rape, torture and ritualistic slaughter of the innocent*. Giovanni Augustino Cirucci, CreateSpace, (September 11th, 2017)

[233] *The Life of Cesare Borgia*, Sabatini, p. 45

[234] *ibid*, p. 46

[235] *ibid*, pp. 40, 41, 42, 43

[236] *ibid*, pp. 49-50

[237] *ibid*, p. 53

[238] *ibid*, p. 54

[239] *ibid*, pp. 54-55

[240] *ibid*, pp. 55-56

[241] *Palazzo Farnese of Caprarola*, Summer in Italy, unattributed, undated

[242] *Famous Freemasons of the 20th Century*, Keller Masonic Lodge #1084, Keller, Texas

[243] *Sacrifice at Pearl Harbor*, part of the “Our Century” series produced by the British Broadcasting Corporation and cablecast in December, 1989, on the Arts & Entertainment Network. Written and produced by Roy Davies.

[244] *Illuminati Unmasked*, Cirucci, pp. 111, 511
Don't ask me how those pages ended up with those numbers.

[245] *Secret History*, Cirucci, pp. 43-45

[246] *John McShain*, Wikipedia

[247] *The Life of Cesare Borgia*, Sabatini, p. 59

[248] *ibid*, pp. 59-60

[249] *Eaters of Children: How access to power is granted through the rape, torture and ritualistic slaughter of the innocent*. Giovanni Augustino Cirucci, CreateSpace, (September 11th, 2017)

[250] *The Life of Cesare Borgia*, Sabatini, pp. 63, 64

[251] *One Link in the Chain of Apostolic Succession; or, The Crimes Alexander Borgia*, anonymous, E. W. Hinks & Co., Boston (1854), p. 13

[252] *Lucrezia Borgia, Predator or Pawn?* Josep Palau I Orta, National Geographic History magazine, January/February 2017 issue
Of course "Josep Palau I Orta" claims in his article that the accusation Lucrezia was seduced by her brother and father was a "false accusation" but is there a chance that the official magazine founded by "33 members" of the "National Geographic Society" consisting of "cartographers" who told us what our "globe" looked like in the late 1800's might have an alternative motive?
National Geographic was owned by 21st Century Fox and managed by Fox CEO James Murdoch, son of Knight of Malta Rupert Murdoch (500 years later Romans are still installing their progeny to rule over us) until it was purchased by the Disney Corporation, also managed and run by Irish Catholics like Christine McCarthy and Papal Court Jews like Bob Iger.

[253] *Quite Interesting* / *QI* hosted by homosexual comedian Stephen Fry, Season 08 (a.k.a. Season "H") *Episode 05 "H Animals"*, aired 15 October 2010

[254] *Lucrezia Borgia, Predator or Pawn?* Palau I Orta, National Geographic

[255] *Cesare Borgia, the Merciless Prince*, Ciaran Conliffe, HeadStuff.org, 6 May 2015
This Irishman is yet another Papist who deflects scrutiny from the "Vicar of Christ" (in this case, Alexander VI) to blame his son Cesare just as Sabatini did. His article is blatantly skewed towards that end, ludicrously ascribing alliance agendas that were clearly his father's to him.

[256] *Cesare Borgia, the Merciless Prince*, Conliffe

[257] *The Death of Juan Borgia*, Samantha Morris, The Borgia Bull, 14 June 2012

[258] *Cesare Borgia, the Merciless Prince*, Conliffe

[259] *ibid*

[260] *ibid*

[261] *Lucrezia Borgia, Predator or Pawn?* Palau I Orta, National Geographic

[262] *Savonarola*, Rev. George M´Hardy, Morrison and Gibb Limited, for T. & T. Clark, Edinburgh (1911), p. 18

[263] *Lorenzo de´Medici and Florence in the Fifteenth Century*, Edward Armstrong, George Palmer Putnam's Sons, New York and London (1914), pp. 127-128

[264] *ibid*, p. 135

[265] *Savonarola*, M´Hardy, pp. 33, 34

[266] *ibid*, pp. 37-38, 38-39

[267] *ibid*, p. 46

[268] *ibid*, pp. 98-99

[269] *The Makers of Florence: Dante, Giotto, Savonarola and Their City*, Margaret Oliphant, Macmillan and Co., London (1876), pp. 277-279

[270] *Savonarola*, M´Hardy, pp. 104-105

[271] The amount of propaganda and disinformation surrounding this fact of history is staggering. It is impossible to find any current sources on the internet as Jesuit-run search engines like "Google" populate page after page with Leftists claiming the slogan had no place in the American Revolution. Knox and Calvin made this a central tenet of the Reformed, Presbyterian movement and I found just such a reference in the treatise *History of the United Presbyterian Church* by Reverend Professor John Eadie compiled in *The Religious Denominations in the United States* by Israel Daniel Rupp, published by Charles DeSilver, Philadelphia (1859). The digital format rendered it as page 808 of the entire compendium but it was page 130 of the section titled *History of Religious Denominations of England and Scotland; Containing Authentic Accounts of the Different Creeds and Systems of the Various Evangelical Denominations*.
For this reason, alone, it is absolutely intuitive that Revolutionaries — especially Presbyterians — would indeed resurrect this slogan and reuse it against George III.
I still acknowledge Saussy's assertion that the Revolution was a Papist plot but it was clearly accomplished unwittingly by American Protestants believing that they were rebelling as their Scot, Irish and English forebears had done in the 16th century.

[272] *Savonarola*, M´Hardy, pp. 109-110

[273] *ibid*, p. 132
I'm relying heavily on M´Hardy for the basic outline of Savonarola's life because of all the biographies I've seen, M´Hardy is insightful, fair and yet sympathetic to the Dominican. Of those traits I find his insight the most praise-worthy as it entails the combination of intelligence and solid values together.

[274] *Savonarola*, Dr. David M. Reis, *Empire and Apocalypse* course at the University of Oregon (Winter 2015)
Now Dr. Reis teaches at the *public* University of Oregon but you'll never guess where he got *his* education; good 'ole Santa Clara. I wrote the good Doctor a long, courteous, complimentary e-mail regarding his course materials ... wanna guess whether he responded?

[275] *It's Carnival!* Ela Vasilescu, Florence is You! 2 February 2017

[276] *Venice Carnival 2019: An Ultimate Guide For Witnessing The Lavish Extravaganza*, Bhavna Bura, TravelTriangle.com, (undated)

[277] *'A night of erotic freedom' at NYC's most exclusive sex party*, Heather Hauswirth, Jane Ridley, The New York Post, 5 April 2017

[278] *Savonarola*, M´Hardy, pp. 155-157

[279] *A Fanatical Monk Inspired 15th-Century Italians to Burn Their Clothes, Makeup and Art*, Kat Eschner, Smithsonian.com, 7 February 2017
Really? "Kat Eschner"?? Can we deduce a Leftist modernist Jewish female "expert" in "art", "history" and "journalism" fronting for the Catholic Church ... yet again? Look "Kat" up for me, I'm busy with important shit.

[280] *Savonarola*, Reis, University of Oregon

[281] *Savonarola*, M´Hardy, pp. 159-160

[282] *ibid*, p. 160

[283] *ibid*, p. 167

[284] *ibid*, p. 172

[285] *Coming Down From Above: Prophecy, Resistance, and Renewal in Native American Religions*, Lee Irwin, University of Oklahoma Press (2014), pp. 57-58
How about *this* crazy victim-culture clown as a source?!

[286] *Behind The Borgia Myths*, Catherine Fletcher, The University of Sheffield, 10 December 2012

[287] *Savonarola: Prophecy and Theology*, Luigi Lazzerini, RSA Congress, New York (2014), p. 4

[288] *The Family*, Mario Puzo, Carol Gino, HarperCollins (2001), pp. 183-184

[289] *Girolamo Savonarola, Italian Preacher; Trial And Execution*, Roberto Ridolfi, Encyclopædia Britannica, 20 July 1998

[290] *Professing Faith: How a Dominican Priest inspired the "bonfire of the vanities".* Gregory Elder, Redlands Daily Facts, 31 January 2019
Father Elder is Professor of History and Humanities at Moreno Valley College. Can we add openly-ordained Priests teaching in "secular" facilities as proof that *everyone* is "Jesuit-educated"...?

[291] *Girolamo Savonarola: the Friar Who Played with Fire*, Freya Middleton, Freya's Florence Tours, (undated)
Unfortunately, it looks like Freya is not a native Florentine but she is passionate about her new home and, often, they make enthusiastic sources. Also looks like a pretty legit business.

[292] *Comment: A day in an Iraqi torture prison*, Elle Hardy, SBS News, 12 January 2015

[293] *De Principatibus* (Of Principalities), (1513) retitled after his death *The Prince*, (1532), Niccolò Machiavelli, Translated by William K. Marriott, re-published by the Constitution Society, pp. 25-26

[294] *Life and Times of Girolamo Savonarola, Vol. II*, Pasquale Villari, T. Fisher Unwin, London (1888), pp. 387-389

[295] *In The Pillory*, Bond; this was taken from **Chapter IV: The Papal Libertine**.

[296] *Rulers of Evil: Useful Knowledge About Governing Bodies*, Frederick Tupper Saussy, Ospray Bookmakers, Reno, Nevada (1999), pp. 69-71

[297] *Was The Banquet of Chestnuts a Pinnacle of Religious Hypocrisy or Just One Hell Of a Party?* Jenn Jeffers, The Raven Report, 27 February 2017

[298] *ibid*

[299] *In The Pillory*, Bond; this was taken from **Chapter IV: The Papal Libertine**

[300] *Was The Banquet of Chestnuts a Pinnacle of Religious Hypocrisy or Just One Hell Of a Party?* Jenn Jeffers, The Raven Report, 27 February 2017

[301] *In The Pillory*, Bond; this was taken from **Chapter II: The Pope's Shadow.**

[302] *7 Quite Unholy Pope Scandals*, Remy Melina, LiveScience, 17 September 2010

[303] *Pope Hosts Scandalous Ballet of Chestnuts*, unattributed, The History Channel, 30 October 1501

[304] *In The Pillory*, Bond; this was taken from **Chapter V: Tasting the Cup of the Borgia**.

[305] *In The Pillory*, Bond; this was taken from the Preface.

[306] *Foxe's Book of Martyrs*, John Foxe, The Project Gutenberg EBook, released 25 August 2007, pp. 299-302

[307] *Secret History*, Cirucci, p. 414

[308] *An Introduction to the Geneva Bible*, Sam Hughey, The Reformed Reader Home Page, undated

[309] *Secret History*, Cirucci , pp. 409-413

[310] *ibid*, p. 450

[311] *ibid*, pp. 219-224

[312] *ibid*, p. 144 [footnote]

[313] *ibid*, p. 474

[314] *Light From Old Times: or Protestant Facts and Men*, John Charles Ryle, Charles J. Thynne, Wycliffe House, 6, Great Queen Street, Lincoln's Inn, London (1902), pp. 22-23

[315] *Foxe's Book of Martyrs*, Foxe, p. 304

[316] *Light From Old Times*, Ryle, p. 23

[317] *ibid*, p. 24

[318] *Foxe's Book of Martyrs*, Foxe, p. 309

[319] *Light From Old Times*, Ryle, pp. 24-25

[320] *Foxe's Book of Martyrs*, Foxe, p. 310

[321] *Light From Old Times*, Ryle, pp. 25-26

[322] *Foxe's Book of Martyrs*, Foxe, p. 311

[323] *ibid*, p. 335

[324] *Foxe's Book of Martyrs; Being a History of the Persecution of Christians in all Ages, from the Original Work by John Foxe, Newly Revised and Illustrated, Containing also a Brief History of the Bible; Telling How the Bible has been Preserved to us, and Explaining its Principal Revisions and Translations. Published by the Charles Foster Publishing Co., Philadelphia* (1895), pp. 586-587

[325] *Foxe's Book of Martyrs*, Gutenberg EBook, pp. 335-336

[326] *Foxe's Book of Martyrs*, Charles Foster Publishing, p. 587

[327] *Foxe's Book of Martyrs*, Gutenberg EBook, p. 336

[328] *ibid*, pp. 336-338

[329] *Act of the Six Articles (1539)*, Jorge H. Castelli, Tudor.com, undated

[330] *Foxe's Book of Martyrs*, Gutenberg EBook, pp. 338-339

[331] *Secret History*, Cirucci, p. 410

[332] *Foxe's Book of Martyrs*, Charles Foster Publishing, pp. 499-508

[333] *Rowland Taylor*, Dr. Stephen Nichols, 5 Minutes in Church History, 01 May 2019

[334] *The Most Evil Men and Women in History: Bloody Mary*, Directed by Mike Bluett, Rob Carey, The Discovery Channel, aired 2001

[335] *ibid*
That's not me using hyperbole, that's this documentary. On the other hand, they played up how Catholics were supposedly horrified by Mary's Inquisition (haven't seen any evidence of that anywhere) and accented Thomas Cranmer's recantation but not his reversal nor the courageous way he burned off his own hand for writing the denial of his faith.

[336] *Catherine de Medici, Her Obsession With Astrologers And The Occult*, Cherry Chapman, Cherry Chapman.com, 31 July 2018

[337] *Catherine de´Medici and the French Reformation*, Edith Helen Sichel, E. P. Dutton and Company, New York (1905), pp. 7-8

[338] *About Catherine de´Medici, and Other Stories*, Honoré de Balzac, The Gebbie Publishing Co., Ltd., Philadelphia (1898), p. 3
This is part of de Ball-sack's "The Human Comedy" series of French history but the only ones laughing are Papists. " — *and Other Stories*" indeed.

[339] *ibid*, p. 4

[340] *The Secret Doctrine, Vol. 2*, Helen Blavatsky, Theosophical University Press, Pasadena, CA (1886), p. 70 [digital]

[341] *About Catherine de´Medici*, de Balzac, p. 5

[342] *Rulers Of Evil*, Saussy, p. 23

[343] *Nicolaus Copernicus*, edited by Kevin Knight, New Advent Catholic Encyclopedia, undated

[344] *Nicolaus Copernicus*, unattributed, Stanford Encyclopedia of Philosophy, 30 November 2004

[345] *Renaissance*, CosmicQuest, The Children's Museum of Indianapolis, 2010

[346] *Nicolaus Copernicus*, Dr. Laura A. Whitlock, The StarChild Team, NASA.gov, undated
No idea what all this "Star Child" bullshit is but you can bet it's worse than you think.

[347] *Copernicus, Nicolas*, Al Van Helden, The Galileo Project, Rice University, 1995

[348] *Copernicus Vindicated*, Austen Ivereigh, The National Catholic Review, 22 May 2010

[349] *The Crazy Life and Crazier Death of Tycho Brahe, History's Strangest Astronomer*, Alasdair Wilkins, Gizmodo Media Group, 22 November 2010

[350] *Life and Times of Tycho Brahe*, Niall Kilkenny, Reformation.org, 2007

[351] *The Great Controversy*, Ellen Gould White, James White, 1858, p. 234

[352] *Galileo and the Jesuits*, Richard S. Westfall, Metaphysics and Philosophy of Science in the Seventeenth and Eighteenth Centuries, 1988, pp. 45-72

[353] *Collegio Romano*, Al Van Helden, The Galileo Project, Rice University, 1995

[354] *Nicolaus Copernicus*, Knight, Catholic Encyclopedia

[355] *A Brief Note on Religious Objections to Copernicus*, Astronomy 161: An Introduction to Solar System Astronomy, Prof. Richard Pogge, Ohio State University, 2 January 2005
This quote is hard to nail down. On the rare occasion that it is cited, it is claimed to come from *Tischreden* (The Table Talk of Martin Luther) but neither my copy nor several I have searched online have this.
I have to say, however, that Luther's characteristic acerbic wit seems at play where he purposefully calls "astronomer" Copernicus (who else would he be talking about) an astrologer.
This may have been fabricated as further proof of how "backwards" Bible-believing Christians are but, in fact, it is excellent proof of the reverse so I'll take it!

[356] *Sermon on I Corinthians 10:19-24*, John Calvin, Calvini Opera Selecta, Corpus Refomatorum, Vol 49, 677, trans. by Robert White in "Calvin and Copernicus: the Problem Reconsidered", Calvin Theological Journal 1980, p. 233-243

[357] *The Piltdown Conspiracy: Hen's Teeth and Horses' Toes*, Dr. Stephen Jay Gould, Clark University, 1983

[358] *How Einstein's General Theory Of Relativity Killed Off Common-Sense Physics*, Professor David Lyth, Lancaster University, 24 November 2015

[359] *The Pope Would Like You to Accept Evolution and the Big Bang*, Colin Schultz, Smithsonian.com, 28 October 2014

[360] *Catherine de' Medici*, Wikipedia

[361] *Queens of Infamy: The Rise of Catherine de'Medici*, Anne Thériault, Longreads.com, September 2018

One of the rare historical articles I could find that was somewhat honest about the characters involved and it's written like a fucking comicbook.

[362] *ibid*

[363] *ibid*

[364] *ibid*

[365] *ibid*

[366] *ibid*

[367] *The Mysteries of the Vatican, Vol. II*, Theodor Griesinger, Wm. H. Allen & Co., 13 Waterloo Place, S.W., London (1864), p. 112

[368] *Columbia Encyclopedia > People > History > French History: Biographies > Guise > Guise: The Second Duke of Guise and the Cardinal of Lorraine*, *The Columbia Electronic Encyclopedia*, 6th ed. 2012, Columbia University Press

[369] *ibid*

[370] *Catherine de´Medici and the French Reformation*, Edith Helen Sichel, E. P. Dutton and Company, New York (1905), pp. 189-191

[371] *The Mysteries of the Vatican: or, Crimes of the Papacy, Vol. I*, Dr. Theodor Griesinger, Wm. H. Allen & Co., 13 Waterloo Place, SW, London (1864), p. 66, 68, 69

[372] *Corrupt Cardinals Raid Peter's Pence*, Christine Niles, ChurchMilitant.com, 17 October 2019

[373] *42 Scandalous Facts About Catherine de Medici, The Deadly Queen Mother Of France*, Christine Tran, Factinate.com, undated

[374] *Catherine de Medici: a Biography*, Leonie Frieda, Weidenfeld & Nicolson, London (2003), pp. 16-17
How telling that this Papist pap comes from "Protestant" England.

[375] *The Reign of Catherine de' Medici*, Thériault, Longreads

[376] *The "Infertility" of Catherine de Medici and its Influence on 16th century France*, Jennifer Gordetsky, MD, Ronald Rabinowitz, MD, Jeanne O'Brien, MD, Department of Urology, University of Rochester Medical Center, Rochester, New York, The Canadian Journal of Urology; April 2009
Are you ***kidding*** me with this?
I gotta joke to tell and it starts; "Two Jews and a Catholic walk into a urology examination ... "

[377] *The Clock and the Mirror: Girolamo Cardano and Renaissance Medicine*, Nancy G. Siraisi, Princeton University Press (1997), p. 12

[378] *ibid*, p. 32

[379] *The Endeavour of Jean Fernel*, Charles Sherrington, Cambridge University Press (2014) , p. 53

[380] *The Clock and the Mirror*, Siraisi, p. 152

[381] *ibid*, pp. 159, 160

[382] *The Reign of Catherine de' Medici*, Thériault, Longreads

[383] *ibid*

[384] *Secret History*, Cirucci, pp. 273-279

[385] *ibid*, pp. 101-105

[386] *Massacre in Merindol Provence's Dark History*, unattributed, Ginger and Nutmeg (travel blog), November 2015

[387] *Massacre of Mérindol*, Academic Dictionaries and Encyclopedias

[388] *Martyrologia; Records of Religious Persecution: A New and Comprehensive Book of Martyrs, of Ancient and Modern Times. Compiled Partly From The Acts and Monuments of John Foxe, and Partly From Other Genuine and Authentic Documents, Printed and in Manuscript. Vol. III.*, Published by John Mason, 14, City-Road; 66, Paternoster-Row, London, (1851), pp. 401, 401-402, 402, 402-403

[389] *Rigoletto*, unattributed, San Diego Opera, undated
It must've really hurt this Papist clown to inject some honesty into this gushing account. Who else would be blowing smoke and bullshit about a fucking *opera*?

[390] *Catherine de´Medici*, R. J. Knecht, Routledge (1997), p. 140

[391] *ibid*, pp. 50, 51, 52

[392] *The Reign of Catherine de' Medici*, Thériault, Longreads

[393] *Oracles of Nostradamus*, Charles A. Ward, Simpkin, Marshall, Hamilton, Kent & Co., Ltd., London (1891), pp. 91-93

[394] *ibid*, pp. 95-96

[395] *The Reign of Catherine de' Medici*, Thériault, Longreads

[396] *ibid*

[397] *Francis Brings Back "Bent Cross" Crozier*, unattributed, Novus Ordo Watch, 7 April 2013

[398] *The Reign of Catherine de' Medici*, Thériault, Longreads

[399] *Would Shakespeare's poisons and drugs work in reality?* Claudia Hammond, BBC, 16 April 2014
These sick fucks talk about some monster at Johns Hopkins experimenting on dogs like it's nothing, to include poisoning the urethra.
Some day very soon we will have the power to administer the "experiment" on the fucking "experimentor".

[400] *Poissy Conference Couldn't Cure France*, Dan Graves, Christianity.com, July 2007

[401] *Summa Theologiae*, Thomas Aquinas, circa 1270 A.D., Second Part of the Second Part, Question: 64

[402] *The Jesuits, as They Were and Are*, Eduard Duller, Seeley, Burnside, and Seeley, Fleet Street, London (1845), p. 82

[403] *Power and Secret of the Jesuits*, Rene Fulop-Miller, Viking Press, New York (1930), [digital] p. 353

[404] *The Reign of Catherine de' Medici*, Thériault, Longreads

[405] *A History of the Inquisition, Vol. I*, Henry Charles Lea, Harper & Brothers, Franklin Square, New York (1887), pp. 267-268

[406] *Here I Stand: A Life of Martin Luther*, Roland C. Bainton, Peabody (1950); p. 26

[407] *Luther's Works*, Jaroslav Pelikan (editor), Concordia, St. Louis (1955), 5:157, 27:13, 54:339, 54:340

[408] *ibid*, 54:193–94

[409] *Illuminati Unmasked*, Cirucci, pp. 158-159

[410] *The Jesuits: The Secret Army of the Papacy*, Shaun Willcock, The Other Side, undated

[411] *The Birth of Bioethics*, Albert R. Jonsen, Oxford University Press (2003), pp. 52, 290-291

[412] *The Jesuits*, Willcock, The Other Side

[413] *The Jesuits; A Complete History of Their Open and Secret Proceedings from the Foundation of the order to the Present Time.* Told to the German People by Theodor Griesinger, Translated by A. J. Scott, M.D. Second Edition. London: W. H. Allen & Co., 13 Waterloo Place, Publishers to the India Office. 1885., pp. 196-197

[414] *ibid*, pp. 197-198

[415] *ibid*, p. 198

[416] *ibid*, pp. 198-199

[417] *ibid*, pp. 199-200

[418] *ibid*, pp. 200

[419] *ibid*, pp. 201

[420] *ibid*, pp. 201-202

[421] *ibid*, pp. 202-203

[422] *ibid*, pp. 311-312

[423] *Catherine de´Medici*, Knecht, pp. 235-236

[424] *The Reign of Catherine de' Medici*, Thériault, Longreads

[425] *ibid*

[426] *Catherine de´Medici*, Knecht, pp. 126, 128-130

[427] *The Reign of Catherine de' Medici*, Thériault, Longreads

[428] *The Mysteries of the Vatican, Vol. II*, Theodor Griesinger, Wm. H. Allen & Co., 13 Waterloo Place, S.W., London (1864), pp. 129-130

[429] *The Story of Civilization Volume VII: The Age of Reason Begins*, Will and Ariel Durant, Simon & Schuster, New York (1961), p. 245 [digital]

[430] *The Mysteries of the Vatican*, Griesinger, pp. 130-131

[431] *Henri I de Lorraine, 3e duc de Guise*, "The Editors of Encyclopaedia Britannica", Encyclopædia Britannica, 20 July 1998

[432] *Assassination, Francis, Duke of Guise*, Wikipedia, accessed 13 September 2019

[433] *Jean de Poltrot*, Wikipedia, accessed 10 December 2019

[434] *The Mysteries of the Vatican*, Griesinger, pp. 131-132

[435] *ibid*, p. 133

[436] *ibid*, pp. 133-134

[437] *ibid*, pp. 135-137

[438] *Charles IX of France*, "Joan", Mad Monarchs, 4 February 2012

[439] *The Mysteries of the Vatican*, Griesinger, pp. 137-138

[440] *ibid*, p. 139

[441] *ibid*, p. 140

[442] *ibid*, pp. 141-142

[443] *ibid*, p. 143

[444] *Massacre of St. Bartholomew's Day*, The Editors, Encyclopaedia Britannica, 17 August 2019

[445] *The Story of Civilization Volume VII: The Age of Reason Begins*, Will and Ariel Durant, Simon & Schuster, New York (1961), pp. 292-293 [digital]

[446] *The Reign of Catherine de' Medici*, Thériault, Longreads

[447] *The Story of Civilization Volume VII*, Durant and Durant, p. 362 [digital]

[448] *Catherine de´Medici*, Knecht, pp. 163-164

[449] *Dogma et Rituel*, Part II, Eliphas Levi (Alphonse Louis Constant), translated by A. E. Waite, Rider & Company, England (1896), pp. 91-92

[450] *Catherine de´Medici*, Knecht, pp. 162-163

[451] *ibid*, p. 274

[452] *Curiosities of Literature*, Isaac D´Israeli, *Chapter 139: The Death of Charles IX.*, Adelaide University online e-book, originally published 1791

[453] *The Story of Civilization Volume VII*, Durant and Durant, pp. 345-346 [digital]

[454] *ibid*, pp. 362-363 [digital]

[455] *Cosimo Ruggeri*, Wikipedia [accessed 16 September 2019]

[456] *Joseph Boniface de La Môle*, Wikipedia [accessed 16 September 2019]

[457] *The Reign of Catherine de' Medici*, Thériault, Longreads

[458] *Henri III of France*, "Terry", Gay Influence, 8 April 2015

[459] *Catherine De Medici – Queen Of France Supported Nostradamus, Was Suspected Of Poisoning And Blamed For Horrible Massacre*, Ellen Lloyd, AncientPages.com, 17 December 2018

[460] *Women of Power: the Life and Times of Catherine dé Medici*, Mark Strange, Harcourt Brace and Jovanovich (1976), p. 273
Surprise! Another fawning biography of vomit.

[461] *The Encyclopedia of Serial Killers*, Michael Newton, Facts On File, Inc. (2000), p. 14

[462] *Criminal Investigations: Serial Killers*, Michael Newton, John L. French, Infobase Publishing (2008), p. 46

[463] *Female Serial Killers: How And Why Women Become Monsters*, Peter Vronsky, Berkley Publishing (2007), pp. 73-75

[464] *Criminal Investigations*, Newton, p. 47

[465] *Female Serial Killers*, Vronsky, pp. 76-77

[466] *The Jew and Human Sacrifice: Human Blood and Jewish Ritual, an Historical and Sociological Inquiry*, Hermann Leberecht Strack, Cope & Fenwick (1909), pp. 89-91

[467] *Elizabeth Báthory*, Wikipedia, accessed 20 September 2019

[468] *Female Serial Killers*, Vronsky, p. 80

[469] *My Life among the Serial Killers : Inside the Minds of the World's Most Notorious Murderers*, Helen Morrison, Harold Goldberg, HarperCollins (2004), p. 59
Always helps to have a Jew on the ticket at "HarperCollins"

[470] *Illuminati Unmasked*, Cirucci, pp. 148-149

[471] *Female Serial Killers*, Vronsky, pp. 80-81, 82

[472] *Ferenc Nádasdy*, Wikipedia, accessed 20 September 2019

[473] *Yes, We Can Now Talk About Elizabeth Báthory*, Alexis Coe, The Toast, 5 February 2014

[474] *Female Serial Killers*, Vronsky, p. 83

[475] *ibid*, pp. 83-84

[476] *ibid*, pp. 80, 84

[477] *Mozart's Death: A Corrective Survey of the Legends*, William Stafford, Macmillan (1991), p. 35

[478] *Illuminati Unmasked*, Cirucci, pp. 574, 575, 580-581

[479] *ibid*, pp. 55-62

[480] *Kutcher Passionately Testifies On His Anti-Sex Trafficking Efforts*, Betsy Klein, CNN, 15 February 2017

[481] *Aqua Tofana: Slow-Poisoning And Husband-Killing In 17th Century Italy*, Mike Dash, A Blast from the Past, 6 April 2015

[482] *Georg Friedrich Daumer*, New Advent Catholic Encyclopedia

[483] *Mozart's Death: A Corrective Survey of the Legends*, William Stafford, Springer (1991), pp. 6, 34-35

[484] *The Magic Flute*, Wikipedia

[485] *Meet The Woman Who Poisoned Makeup To Help Over 600 Women Murder Their Husbands*, Genevieve Carlton, Medium.com, 2 March 2018

[486] *Hieronyma Spara's Husband-Killing Syndicate in Italy- 17th Century*, anonymous, Unknown Gender History, 25 September 2011

[487] *ibid*

[488] *Learn about St Estephe Bordeaux Best Wines Chateau Vineyards Character*, Jeff Leve, The Wine Cellar Insider, undated

[489] *The Most Prolific Female Assassin in History*, Ian Harvey, Vintage News, 22 October 2018

[490] *Catholic Schools In Ireland Can No Longer Give Priority To Catholic Students*, Charles Collins, Crux, 3 October 2018

[491] *Who is St. Nicholas?* unattributed, St. Nicholas Center, 2002

[492] *Devotion and Use of the Manna of Saint Nicholas*, unattributed, St. Nicholas Center, 2002

[493] *Pontifical Council For Promoting Christian Unity, Final Communiqué Of The Joint Group Between The Roman Catholic Church And The World Council Of Churches*, Vatican.va, 19 May 2003

[494] *Aqua Tofana: Slow-Poisoning And Husband-Killing In 17th Century Italy*, Mike Dash, A Blast from the Past, 6 April 2015

[495] *ibid*

[496] *Federico Cesi*, Wikipedia, accessed 27 September 2019

[497] *Aqua Tofana*, Dash

[498] *Giulia Tofana - Poisonous Friend to Unhappy Women in 17th Century Italy*, Karla Iverson, Wizzley.com, updated 30 October 2012

[499] *Hieronyma Spara's Husband-Killing Syndicate*, Unknown Gender History

[500] *Aqua Tofana*, Dash

[501] *ibid*

[502] *ibid*

[503] *ibid*

[504] *The Affair of the Poisons: Murder, Infanticide, and Satanism at the Court of Louis XIV*, Anne Somerset, St. Martin's Press, (1st edition 12 October 2004), p. 30

[505] *ibid*, p. 32

[506] *ibid*, p. 33

[507] *ibid*, p. 36

[508] *Fatal Flaw Fingers Fake Fossil Fly*, Douglas Palmer, New Scientist, 13 November 1993

[509] *The Affair of the Poisons*, Somerset, p. 41

[510] *ibid*, pp. 46-47

[511] *Papal Envoy; Cardinal Mazarin*, Wikipedia, accessed 10 October 2019.

[512] *Secret History*, Cirucci, pp. 124-126

[513] *Palace of Versailles; The hunting lodge and château of Louis XIII*, Wikipedia, accessed 17 October 2019

[514] *Day of the Dupes*, Wikipedia, accessed 17 October 2019

[515] *Sun King at Versailles: The Daily Routine of Louis XIV in Europe's Most Opulent Court*, Helen Flatley, The Vintage News, 4 February 2019

[516] *The Cross, Heathen and Christian*, Mourant Brock, Seeley, Jackson, & Halliday, 54 Fleet Street, London (1879), pp. 2, 3

[517] *The Secret, Sexy Gay And Lesbian History Of Versailles*, Tris Reid-Smith, Gay Star News, 23 February 2018

[518] *The Overthrow Of The American Republic, Part 47*, Sherman H. Skolnick, The Skolnick Report, 10 February 2004 [archived here]

[519] *The Secret, Sexy Gay And Lesbian History Of Versailles*, Gay Star News

[520] *Cardinal Dolan Leads NYC St. Patrick's Parade As First-Ever Gay Activist Group Joins*, Kirsten Andersen, Life Site News, 17 March 2015

[521] *The Secret, Sexy Gay And Lesbian History Of Versailles*, Gay Star News

[522] *Secret Treaty of Dover*, Wikipedia, accessed 24 October 2019

[523] *Recent Events And A Clue To Their Solution*, Lord Robert Montagu, Hodder & Stoughton, 27 Paternoster Row, London (1886), pp. 1-2

[524] *ibid*, p. 2

[525] *ibid*, p. 3

[526] *ibid*, p. 3

[527] *ibid*, p. 3

[528] *ibid*, pp. 3-4

[529] *ibid*, p. 4

[530] *ibid*, pp. 6-7

[531] *ibid*, p. 7

[532] *ibid*, pp. 7-8

[533] *ibid*, p. 9

[534] *The Affair of the Poisons*, Somerset, pp. 46, 46-47

[535] *ibid*, p. 50

[536] *ibid*, p. 52

[537] *ibid*, pp. 52-53

[538] *ibid*, p. 55

[539] *ibid*, pp. 55-56

[540] *ibid*, p. 54

[541] *ibid*, pp. 56-57

[542] *ibid*, pp. 167, 167-168, 168

[543] *Work; François-Michel le Tellier, Marquis de Louvois*, Wikipedia, accessed 28 October 2019

[544] *The Affair of the Poisons*, Somerset, p. 182

[545] *Jean-Baptiste on Louis XIV an Analysis*, "Toby", Furgelnod, 10 September 2009
No idea why a competent history buff would create an anonymous blog but I'll bet there's a religious reason in there.

[546] *The Affair of the Poisons*, Somerset, p. 182

[547] *ibid*, pp. 184-186

[548] *ibid*, p. 198

[549] *Secret History: The erased clues that prove who rules the world from behind the curtain.* Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (November 24, 2016): I would recommend all of Chapter 12 which I titled "War Over The Word"

[550] *The Affair of the Poisons*, Somerset, p. 199

[551] *ibid*, p. 199

[552] *ibid*, p. 200

[553] *ibid*, p. 200

[554] *ibid*, p. 200

[555] *ibid*, pp. 200-201

[556] *ibid*, p. 206

[557] *ibid*, p. 208

[558] *Death; François-Henri de Montmorency, duc de Luxembourg*, Wikipedia, accessed 31 October 2019. Happy Halloween, Catholics.

[559] *The Affair of the Poisons*, Somerset, p. 208

[560] *ibid*, p. 209

[561] *ibid*, p. 209

[562] *ibid*, p. 209

[563] *ibid*, p. 210

[564] *ibid*, p. 210

[565] *ibid*, pp. 210-211

[566] *More Than 2,000 Fetal Remains Found At Home Of State's "Most Prolific" Abortion Doctor*, Marisa Iati, The Washington Post, 14 September 2019

[567] *Jury Convicts Abortion Provider Kermit Gosnell Of Murder*, Brady Dennis, The Washington Post, 13 May 2013

[568] *Rep. Christopher H. Smith, R-N.J.*, unattributed, Roll Call, undated, accessed 4 November 2019.

[569] *Reince Preibus Wiki: Family, Net Worth, Height, Wife, Children, House*, unattributed, CelebSiren, 15 November 2016

[570] *Judge Jeffrey P. Minehart*, unattributed, The Unified Judicial System Of Pennsylvania, undated, accessed 4 November 2019.

[571] *Philadelphia Abortion Doctor Sentenced To Three Life Terms In Jail*, Associated Press in Philadelphia, The Guardian, 15 May 2013

[572] *ibid*

[573] *Abortion's Devastating Impact Upon Black Americans*, Arthur Goldberg, Public Discourse, 11 February 2019

[574] *Philadelphia Abortion Doctor*, The Guardian

[575] *Attorney Jack McMahon, "Philadelphia's BEST criminal defense attorney"*, LinkedIn, accessed, 04 November 2019

[576] *Abortionist Accused Of Eating Fetuses*, WND Staff, World Net Daily, 14 June 2005

[577] *Fr. Peter-Hans Kolvenbach, SJ, 29th Superior General of the Society of Jesus, Dies at 87*, unattributed, Jesuits.org, 26 November 2016

[578] *Education and Teaching*, Jack Cashill, Cashill.com, 2005

[579] *Why George Tiller Is On Trial In Wichita*, Jack Cashill, Cashill.com, 19 March 2009

[580] *Shooting and aftermath*, *Assassination of George Tiller*, Wikipedia, accessed 04 November 2019

[581] *Why George Tiller Is On Trial In Wichita*, Cashill

[582] *Sebelius Issues "Laughable" Defense of Secret Party at Governor's Mansion Honoring Abortionist Tiller*, Tim Waggoner, LifeSite News, 29 May 2008

[583] *Fresh Skirmishes In Culture War Open New Front For Republicans*, Lara Marlowe, The Irish Times, 11 February 2012

[584] *About The Editor*, Culture Wars magazine

[585] *Jon Favreau on Speechwriting, Life After D.C. ... and Melania Trump*, David Hochman, The New York Times, 21 July 2016

[586] *Too Funny: Obama Needs Two Teleprompters For Three-Minute Speech…*, archived from the Washington Examiner but taken down, Weasel Zippers, 29 August 2011

[587] *Barack Obama Uses Teleprompter to speak to 6th Grade Class*, Daily Motion, 15 May 2015

[588] *The Catholic Roots of Obama's Activism*, Jason Horowitz, The New York Times, 22 March 2014

[589] *Activist Who Taught Obama To Be Community Organizer Is Retiring*, unattributed, CBS 2, Chicago, 3 June 2013

[590] *The Affair of the Poisons*, Somerset, p. 215

[591] *ibid*, pp. 219-220

[592] *Louis XIV: The Power and the Glory*, Josephine Wilkinson, Pegasus Books (2019), p. 264
Haven't gone through this bathroom choker but do you think ole Josephine kissed the Sun King's Protestant-slaughtering arse with this pap?

[593] *Louise de La Vallière and the Early Life of Louis XIV, From Unpublished Documents*, Jules Auguste Lair, G. P. Putnam's Sons, 27 and 29 West Twenty-Third Street, New York (1908), pp. 181-182

[594] *Montmorency, Henri II*, The Encyclopaedia Britannica: or, Dictionary of arts, sciences and general literature, (8th edition). A & C Black (1853-1860), p. 520.

[595] *Etymology, France, Guillotine*, Wikipedia, accessed 10 November 2019.
Interestingly, the entry on just the device fails to mention Guillotin was a Jesuit.
A minor, "user-editing" oversight, I'm sure.

[596] *Early Life And Education, Joseph-Ignace Guillotin*, Wikipedia, accessed 10 November 2019

[597] *Louise de La Vallière and the Early Life of Louis XIV, From Unpublished Documents*, Jules Auguste Lair, G. P. Putnam's Sons, 27 and 29 West Twenty-Third Street, New York (1908), p. 181

[598] *ibid*, p. 181

[599] *ibid*, p. 182

[600] *The Affair of the Poisons*, Somerset, p. 314

[601] *Louise de La Vallière*, Lair, pp. 183-185

[602] *The Affair of the Poisons*, Somerset, p. 339

[603] *Louise de La Vallière*, Lair, p. 185

[604] *The Affair of the Poisons*, Somerset, p. 339

[605] *Louise de La Vallière*, Lair, pp. 185-186

[606] *The Affair of the Poisons*, Somerset, pp. 220-221

[607] *ibid*, p. 293

[608] *ibid*, p. 294

[609] *ibid*, p. 294
Somerset says only that la Voison was “closeted” with “the *Grand Pénitencier*”. The Conference of Bishops of France defines this as—
Grand Penitentiary: Prelate dealing with particularly difficult cases of conscience for which the Pope is solicited.

[610] *ibid*, pp. 294-295

EDITORS: Randy Noblitt & Pamela Perskin Noblitt
FOREWORD by Dana Raphael (Connecticut, USA)

CONTRIBUTORS

Jeanne Adams (Utah. USA)
Thomas Michael Ball (Michigan, USA)
Thorsten Becker (Lueneburg, Germany)
Lorna Brown (Port Elizabeth, South Africa)
Sandra Buck (Nottingham, UK)
Trish Fotheringham (British Columbia, Canada)
Ulla Froehling (Hamburg, Germany)
Graeme Galton (London, UK)
Wanda Karriker (North Carolina, USA)
Martin Katchen (California, USA)
Ellen Lacter (California, USA)
David Leevers (London, UK)
Karl Douglas Lehman (Illinois, USA)
Carole Mallard (Hertfordshire, UK)
Alison Miller (British Columbia, Canada)
Sarah Nelson (Edinburgh, UK)
James Randall (Randy) Noblitt (California, USA)
Pamela Perskin Noblitt (California, USA)
Bettina Overkamp (Berlin, Germany)
Tessa Prattos (Athens, Greece)
Carl Raschke (Colorado, USA)
Jean M. Riseman (California, USA)
Carol Rutz (Michigan, USA)
Michael Salter (Sydney, Australia)
Valerie Sinason (London, UK)
Frances R. Yoeli (Israel)

RITUAL ABUSE IN THE TWENTY-FIRST CENTURY

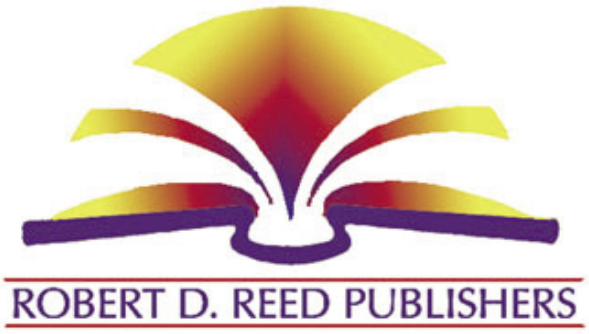
Psychological, Forensic, Social, and Political Considerations

Ritual Abuse
in the
Twenty-First Century

Psychological, Forensic, Social, and Political Considerations

Edited by
Randy Noblitt and Pamela Perskin Noblitt

Foreword by
Dana Raphael



Copyright © 2008 Randy Noblitt and Pamela Perskin Noblitt
All Rights Reserved.

Robert D. Reed Publishers
P.O. Box 1992,
Bandon, OR 97411
Phone: 541-347-9882; Fax: -9883
E-mail: 4bobreed@msn.com
Website: www.rdrpublishers.com

Editors: Randy Noblitt and Pamela Perskin Noblitt
Cover Designer: Cleone Lyvonne
Cover Photo: Bandon Sunset © Robert D. Reed

eBook Formatting: Susan Leonard

Editors' Dedication

This book is dedicated to our parents and respective in-laws, Daniel Perskin (1920–2005) and Muriel Harris Perskin (1923 and still alive and kicking); and to James R. Noblitt (1923-1994) and Joanne Marion Noblitt (1924–2004). They were the *greatest generation* and did their best to love, encourage, and support us on our own journeys.

This book is dedicated to our children, children-in-law, and grandchildren, both known and unknown. You are our future and testament to the fact that we can do better as parents and as guardians of our children's health, safety, and happiness. Thank you Danielle and Jay, Lilly, Jake and Number 3; and James and Danielle, Leo and Riley for the love and joy you've given us.

This book is dedicated to advocates for survivors everywhere. Among those who are not contributors to this volume but who are nonetheless valued members of the advocacy community are Claire Reeves, Connie Valentine, Helen McGonigle, Ann Earle, Jackie McGauley, Dale Griffis, Jerry Simandl, and Eileen King. There are many more, and we appreciate you all.

This book is dedicated to pioneers in the field—people who staked their professional and personal reputations, and sometimes lost, trying to shed light on this perplexingly controversial phenomenon: Bennett Braun, David Calof, Valerie Wolf, Judith Peterson, Gary Lefkof, Roland Summit, Catherine Gould, Mike Moore, and many others who paved the way.

Finally, this book is dedicated to the survivors. They have endured much, shared much, overcome much. We all owe you a debt of gratitude for your perseverance, commitment, and strength of character.

Table of Contents

Editors' Dedication

Foreword
Dana Raphael

Introduction
Randy Noblitt

CHAPTER 1
Rituals: The Good, the Bad and the Ugly
Randy Noblitt

CHAPTER 2
Redefining the Language of Ritual Abuse and the Politics that Dictate It
Pamela Perskin Noblitt and Randy Noblitt

CHAPTER 3
Exploring Commonalities Reported by Adult Survivors of Extreme Abuse: Preliminary Empirical Findings
Carol Rutz, Thorsten Becker, Bettina Overkamp, and Wanda Karriker

CHAPTER 4
Guidelines to Differential Diagnosis between Schizophrenia and Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress
Ellen P. Lacter and Karl Lehman

CHAPTER 5
Out of the Shadows: Re-envisioning the Debate on Ritual Abuse
Michael Salter

CHAPTER 6
The Politics of the "False Memory" Controversy: The Making of an Academic Urban Legend
Carl Raschke

CHAPTER 7
Interrelated Moral Panics and Counter-panics: The Cult Brainwashing Panic and The False Memory/ Ritual Abuse Moral Panic
Martin H. Katchen

CHAPTER 8
Re-Searching for New Perspectives:Ritual Abuse/Ritual Violence as Ideologically Motivated Crime
Thorsten Becker

CHAPTER 9
Terrorism is the Ritual Abuse of the Twenty-First Century
Frances R. Yoeli and Tessa Prattos

CHAPTER 10
The RAINS Network in the UK (Ritual Abuse Information Network and Support)
Sandra Buck

CHAPTER 11
Ritual Abuse: A Personal Account and the Unpublished Police Guidelines
Carole Mallard

CHAPTER 12
The Orkney “Satanic Abuse” Case: Who Cared About the Children?
Sarah Nelson

CHAPTER 13
Our Father Who Art in Hell: A Factual Account
Ulla Fröhling

CHAPTER 14
Where are We Now? Ritual Abuse, Dissociation, Police and the Media
Valerie Sinason, Graeme Galton, and David Leevers

CHAPTER 15
A Therapeutic Relationship: Shifting Boundaries in the Service of Healing
Lorna Joan Brown

CHAPTER 16
The Use of Prayer for Inner Healing of Memories and Deliverance with Ritual Abuse Survivors
Tom Ball

CHAPTER 17

Recognizing and Treating Survivors of Abuse by Organized Criminal Groups
Alison Miller

CHAPTER 18
Ritual Abuse Survivors: Diverse, Yet Similar
Jean M. Riseman

CHAPTER 19
Patterns in Mind-Control: A First Person Account
Trish Fotheringham

CHAPTER 20
Case Studies of Ritual Abuse Survivors: From Abuse to Activism
Jeanne Adams

Contributors

Foreword

Dana Raphael

Having written the definitive book on cult and ritual abuse, *Cult and Ritual Abuse: Its History, Anthropology, and Recent Discovery in Contemporary America*, Randy and Pam Noblitt follow with a Reader which, in my view, will help settle the most destructive response to this brutal and aberrant behavior: namely, the denial of its reality.

The pages of this Reader are for the unconvinced as well as those knowledgeable of the veracity of these behaviors. Some of the writers are survivors and in their stories, as a child or adult, the reader can find the evidence that affirms the existence and practice of ritual behavior imitative of social representations of evil, most probably, in all cultures throughout the world.

Eight years ago, many countries signed a UN declaration in a special session on behalf of children, victims and survivors of every kind of inhumane abuse imaginable. There was The African Common Position, The Beijing Declaration, The Berlin Commitment, The Katmandu Understanding, The Kingston Consensus, The Panama and Rabat Declarations. Each of these proclamations promote, recognize, build upon, develop, give priority for, encourage and support a global movement that heralded a child-friendly society. Yet children today still remain defenseless. So why is it that we do such a poor job of believing what is true about this world?

A further value in this collection is that the editors, wisely, provide no single answer to the many questions raised by the contributors to the book. Among them: How do reactions to ritual abuse differ from those seen in persons diagnosed as schizophrenic? Is the so-called False Memory Syndrome a real or fabricated disease? How does a child heal from such overpowering fear? Is “terrorism” part of the crime? Is this a Western anomaly or a global tragedy? How do perpetrators initiate a state of dissociation and how widely spread is this phenomenon?

What we find here are the best bets among the possibilities for healing the wounded and innovative methodologies framed for further research. This volume offers those interested in mental health a sound reassurance that ritual and cult abuse is indeed real, and sadly, all too prevalent.

Introduction

Randy Noblitt

Editing this book, which represents the collective effort of an international, multidisciplinary team of authors, has been a labor of love. Their dedication, knowledge and ethical commitment guide us toward a clearer understanding of ritual abuse as it occurs in modern times.

The task of both telling and reading these stories is challenging. Here we must deal with accounts of terror, loss, betrayal and sadness. The process of understanding these stories is complicated. Sometimes there are external sources of corroboration for particular claims of ritual abuse, but often there are not. We know that child abuse is typically perpetrated in secrecy, and that in most cases of proven child abuse there is no physical evidence. However, we cannot ignore the compelling case for the reality of ritual crime (Rascke, 1990), the growing body of criminal cases with convictions for ritual crimes, and the other empirical evidence (Noblitt & Perskin, 2000).

That being said, why should we consider ritual abuse as something unique or otherwise different than other kinds of abuse? Ritual abuse appears to cause significant disturbances in memory and identity. Survivors of ritual abuse may be debilitated by these traumas and they frequently require specialized psychological services that are not available or affordable in their communities. The legal prosecution of these cases is often complex and challenging although, as mentioned previously, convictions do occur.

The first chapter is a paper that I presented at the 106th Annual Meeting of the American Anthropological Association in 2007. “Rituals: The Good, the Bad and the Ugly” challenges anthropologists and others to address the many cross-cultural reports about abusive rituals and ordeals that seriously damage people and sometimes result in the loss of life. Pamela Perskin Noblitt’s “Redefining the Language of Ritual Abuse and the Politics that Dictate It” is the 2nd Chapter. It helps us navigate the confusing language of this field, encouraging us to work toward greater clarity and uniformity of the terminology that we use. Pam and I also edited the entire volume and I am grateful to her for her tireless work, supportive attitude and persistent commitment to this project.

Chapter 3 presents “Exploring Commonalities Reported by Adult Survivors of Extreme Abuse: Preliminary Empirical Findings” by Carol Rutz, Thorsten Becker, Bettina Overkamp and Wanda Karriker. It provides an intelligent and informed discussion of the literature regarding international reports of ritual abuse. The authors also provide us with new data from their large-scale Internet survey that helps us understand the magnitude of the problem and the specific reported characteristics of this extreme form of abuse. Wanda Karriker is also the author of *Morning Come Quickly* (2003), a fictional account of the experiences of a ritual abuse survivor.

Ellen Lacter and Karl Lehman identify a particularly confusing question of diagnosis, offering us “Guidelines to Differential Diagnosis between Schizophrenia and Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress” in Chapter 4. In the 5th Chapter, Michael Salter presents “Out of the Shadows: Re-envisioning the Debate on Ritual Abuse” where he shows how the evolution of thinking about ritual abuse allegations has been confounded by social processes including ethnocentrism, denial and general misunderstanding. He demonstrates how these narratives have naturally occurred within patterns of pervasive international sexual exploitation.

What about the backlash against the abuse survivor movement? How does that figure into popular and scholarly interpretation of ritual abuse allegations? In the 6th Chapter, Carl Raschke eloquently accounts for “The Making of an Academic Urban Legend” where he explains how misinformation about ritual abuse (e.g., under the aegis of false memory syndrome) has been widely disseminated and often uncritically accepted. Carl Raschke is the author of numerous publications including *Painted Black,* the definitive book on Satanic and ritualistic crime. Martin Katchen contributes his views in “Interrelated Moral Panics and Counter-panics: The Cult Brainwashing Panic and the False Memory/ Ritual Abuse Moral Panic” in Chapter 7. Martin Katchen previously authored a Chapter, “History of Satanic Religions,” that appeared in the book *Out of Darkness* (1991).

In Chapter 8 German author Thorsten Becker discusses ritual abuse as it relates to crime and terrorism and challenges the uncritical tolerance of religious or other groups whose activities may include crimes against humanity. He coins a new term, *ideologically motivated crimes,* and explains how it accounts for acts of ritual violence as well as terrorism. Therapists and EMDR specialists Frances R. Yoeli and Tessa Prattos expand on the discussion of terrorism and ritual abuse in “Terrorism is the Ritual Abuse of the Twenty-first Century” in Chapter 9. They also add their unique international perspectives as psychotherapists from Israel and Greece, respectively.

Sandra Buck informs us about “The RAINS Network in the UK” in Chapter 10. The RAINS Network provides support to ritual abuse survivors. She explains

the history of this network, what it has accomplished, and some of the obstacles that survivors continue to experience, e.g., a criminal justice system that sometimes fails to appropriately investigate and prosecute these crimes. Another English author, Carole Mallard, writes about her experiences with ritual crime, particularly in London, as a law enforcement officer in "Ritual Abuse—A Personal Account." She describes some of the obstructions that commonly occur in attempting to work effectively with these survivors in Chapter 11. In Chapter 12 we find "The Orkney 'Satanic Abuse Case:' Who Cared About the Children?" Sarah Nelson tells us poignantly about the complexities and obstructions that occurred in this perplexing criminal case in Scotland. Ulla Fröhling reveals the story of a woman with dissociation of identity as a consequence of ritual abuse in "Our Father Who Art in Hell: A Factual Account" in Chapter 13. She updates us with the moving narrative from her book, *Vater unser in der Hölle* [Our Father Who Art in Hell]. In Chapter 14 we find "Where Are We Now? Ritual Abuse, Dissociation, Police and the Media," by Valerie Sinason, Graeme Galton and David Leevers. These authors provide details of ritual abuse as they conceptualize it and have found it in the United Kingdom. Valerie Sinason is the editor and principle author of *Treating Survivors of Satanist Abuse* (1994). In "A Therapeutic Relationship: Shifting Boundaries in the Service of Healing" Lorna Joan Brown discusses her findings working with a ritual abuse survivor in Chapter 15. This qualitative study served to meet the requirements of her doctoral dissertation. She is now a psychologist in South Africa.

Tom Ball reflects on his Christian perspective on ritual abuse in Chapter 16. In "Prayer for Inner Healing of Memories and Deliverance with Ritual Abuse Survivors" he makes specific recommendations and provides examples of his spiritual approach. Alison Miller describes considerations for therapists who work with individuals who were abused by organized groups where control was established through a combination of abuse and training. Her valued contribution to this book is found in Chapter 17, "Recognizing and Treating Survivors of Abuse by Organized Criminal Groups."

The last three chapters are autobiographical narratives by survivors. "Ritual Abuse Survivors: Diverse, Yet Similar" by Jean M. Riseman, editor of *Survivorship,* is Chapter 18. Trish Fotheringham wrote "Patterns in Mind Control: A First Person Account" for Chapter 19. And Jeanne Adams presents Chapter 20, "Case Studies of Ritual Abuse Survivors: From Abuse to Activism." Jeanne Adams is the author of *Drawn Swords: My Victory over Childhood Ritual Abuse* (1999) and *Childhood Ritual Abuse: A Resource Manual for Criminal Justice and Social Service* (2000). We are honored to have the Foreword written by Dana Raphael, a medical anthropologist and student and colleague of the late Margaret Mead. Dana

Raphael proposed the term *doula* in her book *Breastfeeding: The Tender Gift* to mean “one or more individuals, often female, who give psychological encouragement and physical assistance to the newly delivered mother” (1976, p. 172). Her seminal research on breastfeeding and reproduction led her to conclude that a history of child abuse was a significant risk factor working against the complex process of reproduction.

It has been an honor and a privilege to work with this talented and dedicated team of authors. As we edited this work, Pam and I decided to make minimal changes regarding the uniformity of format style, so that we did not inadvertently modify any author’s intended style of communicating his or her material. We want to fully respect the diversity of perspectives that these authors provide. We hope that this book helps to raise awareness about the problem and that there will be future efforts to recognize the seriousness and magnitude of these crimes and their consequences. We also ask that there be a continued dialogue among survivors, researchers, therapists and law enforcement professionals regarding the important questions that have been raised.

References

Adams, J. (1999). *Drawn swords: My victory over childhood ritual abuse.* St. George, UT: Mr. Light & Associates.

Adams, J. (2000). *Childhood ritual abuse: A resource manual for criminal justice and social service.* St. George, UT: Mr. Light & Associates.

Fröhling, U. (1996). *Vater unser in der Hölle* [Our father who art in hell]. Seelze-Velber, Germany: Kallmeyer.

Katchen, M. H. (1992). The history of Satanic religions. In David K.Sakheim and Susan E.Devine (Eds.), *Out of darkness: Exploring satanism and ritual abuse,* New York: Lexington, 1992, pp. 21–39.

Karriker, W. (2003). *Morning come quickly.* Catawba, NC: Sandime.

Noblitt, J.R., & Perskin, P.S. (2000). *Cult and ritual abuse: Its history, anthropology, and recent discovery in contemporary America, (Rev. ed.).* Westport, CN: Praeger.

Raphael, D. (1976). *Breastfeeding: The tender gift.* New York: Schocken Books.

Raschke, C. (1990). *Painted black.* New York: HarperCollins.

Sinason, V. (Ed.). (1994). *Treating survivors of Satanist abuse: An invisible trauma.* London: Routledge.

CHAPTER 1

Rituals: The Good, the Bad and the Ugly

Randy Noblitt

The term *ritual* appears in popular language and media and in diverse academic contexts. Anthropology has contributed much to what is known about rituals. My own discipline, psychology, has also made use of this construct. In a recent search of the PsycINFO data base using the word *ritual*, I found 4,972 entries. Attempting to master this vast literature from a merely psychological perspective would be a daunting task. Attempting to integrate the literatures of anthropology and the other social sciences, as well as religious studies and philosophy could keep a team of dedicated doctoral students quite busy. With sincere humility and some sound judgment, I will not attempt that task. Instead, I will focus on my own professional work as a clinical psychologist. My own clinical practice has primarily been with adult survivors of child abuse. For these individuals, ritual acts are often a component or defining characteristic of their abuse.

Are there common themes in how *rituals* are construed?

The prevailing literature in the social sciences portrays rituals as positive events within various cultures that define milestones in the lives of the individual and community. There are rituals for almost every aspect of life from mating, to marriage, to birthing, to burial. Each has a tradition of healing and communal bonding. Each has a language, an organization, and a liturgy that forms societal and individual values and aspirations. Rituals give meaning and help to establish normative behaviors and reinforce specified hierarchical relationships. Rituals may defuse social tensions and act as a catalyst for the resolution of conflicts.

We all know that rituals sometimes include momentarily painful activities, such as those associated with some rites of initiation and other ordeals. Even these practices may be construed as temporarily harmful, but in the long term, they are intended to provide meaning and strengthen defined social relationships and roles.

Some rituals may harm the individual for the presumed benefit of the community. Criminal trials are highly ritualized events wherein the prosecution and defense present their cases and the judge and jury deliver a judgment. Rituals that

result in exile, excommunication, or shunning are present in many cultures and communities. Sacrifice is a common ritual that sometimes elicits hardship or worse for the victim, yet is sometimes perceived as a social imperative.

But a more malignant side of ritual exists, one that has been visited on the social conscious in recent decades. The ritualistic elements of the Nazi party served to enforce their vision of a pure race and justified the extermination of those whose existence flew in the face of master race: the mentally impaired, homosexuals, gypsies, and Jews. The Holocaust literally means “sacrifice by fire.” The ritualized extinction of these groups created a bond between the party’s philosophy and its followers. Another example can be seen in the Ugandan child soldiers who are indoctrinated in coercive rituals to kill with impunity. Female genital circumcision is ritualistically performed to the detriment of women’s health in response to some religious and cultural traditions. The suicide bombers engage in their ritual homicides in the sure knowledge that their sacrifice will be rewarded in the next life. Such ritualistic enactments leave lasting wounds on its survivors that forever alter the course of their lives.

Yet another category of ritual should be considered. Generations of men and women report victimization by ritual abuse perpetrated on them from early childhood. Inevitably, these informants also have severe dissociative experiences that interfere with their ability to engage in gainful employment and perform activities of daily living. Victims report that the rituals are designed to produce introjects or alter personality states who engage in various behaviors against the conscious will of the victim. Their narrations include examples of torture, deprivation, and deception, allegedly used to condition victims for use in pornography, prostitution, and other deviant or illegal activities.

In a recent online survey[1], survivors of extreme abuse were invited to respond to a number of items designed to delineate the range of abuses, characteristics of the abuse, psychological and physical sequelae, and impact on education, employment, revictimization, and interpersonal relationships. Almost 1,500 individuals from 30 different countries responded to the invitation to participate. These respondents identified their abuse experiences as including (1) incest; (2) child pornography and prostitution; (3) sexual abuse by multiple perpetrators: (4) being caged; (5) starvation; (6) bestiality; (7) buried alive; (8) electroshock; (9) sensory deprivation; (10) sleep deprivation; (11) forced cannibalism, (12) secret government-sponsored mind control experiments. Of those respondents who reported suffering extreme abuse in childhood, 55% reported abuse in a Satanic cult. Of the 257 respondents who reported secret mind control experimentation, 69% also reported having been ritually abused in a Satanic cult.

In the United States, the United Kingdom, Germany, South America, Canada, Australia, and in other countries, ritually based crimes or crimes with elements of ritual abuse have been reported and prosecuted. Despite a backlash that denies empirical evidence of ritual abuse, author Michael Newton (1997)[2] accumulated data on convictions where ritual child abuse was a component feature. Of the 145 defendants who were sentenced, only 17 (11.7%) were reversed on appeal. Newton reported that these reversals did not necessarily indicate that the defendants were innocent of the accusations. In some instances the decisions were reversed based on legal technicalities and offered no opinion as to whether the crime occurred. In one of the more notorious trials involving allegations of ritual abuse, the case of the McMartin Preschool in Manhattan Beach, California, the majority of the jurors polled at the end of the second trial ending in a hung jury reported that they believed defendant Ray Buckey was guilty, but that the State had not proved its case beyond a reasonable doubt.

In *Cult and Ritual Abuse: Its History, Anthropology and Recent Discovery in Contemporary America* (Rev. ed., 2000), Pam Perskin and I defined ritual abuse as maltreatment "that occurs in a ceremonial or circumscribed manner for the purpose of creating or manipulating already created alter mental states" (Noblitt & Perskin, 2000, p. 47–48). Of the more than 300 patients I treated who reported such abuses, I learned that in many instances, destructive rituals representing a variety of different cultures, belief systems, and traditions were employed independently and concomitantly such that it was sometimes impossible to identify the specific orientation of the perpetrating individual or group. I therefore encourage individuals who report ritual abuse to avoid making specific identification of the orientation of the perpetrator(s) and instead, identify the themes associated with the rituals. The common links between these reports of victimization are (1) the ritualistic nature of the abuse and (2) the traumatizing psychological effect of the abuse.

Although rituals are often portrayed in a positive light, there is a malignant side that should be recognized. We cannot address social problems when we do not acknowledge them. Thus while some rituals may benefit the participants, others may be a vehicle for victimization and exploitation. We need to better understand how rituals can be both helpful and harmful and how they impact the individual and society. Such considerations will help us to develop a broader conceptualization of what is meant by *ritual*.

Reference

Noblitt, J. R. & Perskin, P. S. (2000). *Cult and ritual abuse: Its history, anthropology, and recent discovery in contemporary America* (Rev. ed.). Westport, CT: Praeger.

Notes

[1] See Chapter 3, *Exploring Commonalities Reported by Adult Survivors of Extreme Abuse: Preliminary Empirical Findings* by Rutz, Becker, Overkamp & Karriker.

[2] Presented at the Believe the Children—International Council on Cultism and Ritual Trauma Conference, Chicago, IL, April 11–13, 1997.

CHAPTER 2

Redefining the Language of Ritual Abuse and the Politics that Dictate It

Pamela Perskin Noblitt and Randy Noblitt

Several years ago, we wrote that the language of ritual abuse should be universalized, as is the language of history, mathematics, or any subject that has meaning and application throughout the world. Our call for action was in response to the continuing media bias that is directed toward allegations of ritual abuse, and the disrespect shown by the professional community for those who advocate for survivors. The media's reaction to reports of ritual abuse tend to either veer in the direction of incredulity about the reality of ritual abuse and likening such reports to alien abduction; or to exploit the event, looking for sensationalistic aspects to encourage the public's horror. Both approaches lead to discrediting the victims and their advocates. What we had hoped for was a serious discussion about the reports of ritual abuse, its psychological sequelae, and the development of a language consistent with the values of science and academia such that it would reflect the victim's experience without sensationalism. What we got was a competition for the control of the language.

One central problem in the development of a viable language to describe the experience and symptoms of survivors of ritual trauma is the ambiguity often inherent in the language of psychology. For every possible symptom, diagnosis, and treatment modality, there are countless theoretical alternative interpretations. With so little agreement between mental health professionals in general, the lack of a cohesive language to address this specific subgroup is not surprising. And it is possible that the imprecise nature of the language of psychotherapy in general is at the heart of the public's mistrust of psychology that has fostered the creation of backlash organizations such as the False Memory Syndrome Foundation. We have all heard the complaints regarding the use of *psycho-babble* and the lofty language applied by the psychotherapy community to the most mundane of human experiences. What is needed is the development of clear, precise, and objective definitions to meaningful terminology in order to clarify communications between

professionals, patients, and the public. However, with various individuals and schools of thought jockeying for positions of supremacy within the profession, such a unifying solution is unlikely. Yet, the area of diagnosis and treatment of ritual trauma is relatively new and sufficiently small to allow for the establishment of a common language while it is still in its infancy.

The process of investigating, diagnosing, and treating ritual abuse is difficult and problematic. Psychiatric patients reporting or demonstrating symptoms consistent with the experience of ritual abuse frequently allege that family members abused them in childhood. They are sometimes too psychiatrically disabled to work. They are sometimes caught up in destructive relationships. They may be poverty stricken and without sufficient financial resources to provide for adequate psychological care. They can be self-mutilatory, suicidal and sometimes, homicidal. Their challenging symptoms and subsequent life difficulties may be overwhelming to their supporters and health care providers to the extent that the patient is under the constant threat, real or imagined, of abandonment. Given the complexity of their psychiatric symptoms, their emotional fragility, their typical financial hardship, and their societal impact, these individuals represent one of the neediest groups of psychiatric patients. Yet it is for these very reasons that they are frequently denied the most basic services. The lack of a vocabulary sufficient to address the allegations made by this population contributes to the controversy within the mental health professions surrounding allegations of ritual abuse made in the context of psychotherapy.

Mental health professionals who regularly work with individuals who report ritually abusive experiences in childhood and beyond have long advocated for a separate diagnostic category that accurately reflects the special etiological and symptomatic elements. Considering that (1) a large number of mental health professionals perceive ritual abuse to be a genuine problem experienced by some patients, (2) these patients exhibit many common characteristics, and (3) there is often some external corroboration for the patient’s allegations, it is clear that objective empirical criteria warrant a diagnostic category relevant to this phenomenon.

There are, however, other reasons that warrant a separate diagnostic category for ritual abuse. It should be noted that although the phenomenon of ritual abuse shares features and characteristics with other established diagnoses, no single category within the *Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of the American Psychiatric Association* (DSM) or *International Classification of Diseases of the World Health Organization* (ICD), nor any combination of DSM or ICD labels, completely accounts for it. In order to provide reliable clinical diagnoses and advance clear research outcomes, objective diagnostic criteria are needed. Some skeptics

maintain that the current allegations of ritual abuse are mere fabrications of therapists' and patients' fantasies; or they are simply delusional material; or are part of manipulative or attention-seeking interactions. If this is the case, then clear diagnostic criteria will aid in determining the extent to which ritual abuse claims are in fact genuine phenomena versus features of factitious, delusional, or other disorders. Such distinctions are not only important for appropriate clinical diagnosis and treatment, but also lend further clarity to the growing number of legal cases in which mental health professionals are asked to provide forensic evaluations. The lack of distinct, empirically validated criteria for distinguishing genuine ritual abuse from other diagnoses could result in courts failing to remove children from abusive environments or in innocent defendants going to prison in misdirected criminal cases.

In order to formulate accurate diagnostic criteria, it is essential that a vocabulary be established that is responsive to the data, sensitive to the survivor community, and an accurate depiction of the current clinical understanding. Likewise, the language of ritual abuse must pass a litmus test that guarantees its universal understanding and application by the helping professions, the courts, and law enforcement. Failure to develop a consistent and congruent language to communicate aspects of ritual abuse and its consequences creates a host of problems—clinically, forensically, and academically.

Unhappily, backlash interests have taken early control of the language employed in the courts and media as it relates to ritual abuse. Organizations such as Victims of Child Abuse Laws (VOCAL) and the False Memory Syndrome Foundation (FMSF) have effectively wrested control of the language and subsequently extended their influence over the direction in which criminal and civil investigations are conducted and resolved. A vocabulary established to cast doubt on the credibility of victim allegations and helping professionals' ethical aspirations and professional standards has become firmly entrenched in the media and the courtroom, although it should be acknowledged that no scientific or legal standards have thus far been applied to these concepts. Terminology that includes phrases such as *false memory syndrome*, *parental alienation syndrome*, and *recovered memory therapy*, are readily employed in any discussion of ritual abuse or ritual crime. However, little vocabulary that relates to the phenomenon of ritual abuse has been introduced by the alleged victims of these traumatic experiences.

People who identify themselves as survivors of ritual abuse are often at a loss to describe their experiences because there is no specialized vocabulary that corresponds to their unique perspectives. Their abuse occurred as an element of their childhood and was, insofar as they are concerned, a *normal* experience. However, with the apparent correlation between ritually abusive childhoods and the

development of serious and chronic psychological conditions, it is increasingly clear that ritual abuse is not an aspect of normal development and is not a presence in the lives of most children. Development of a language specific to ritual abuse is further complicated by reports that much of the abuse occurs during early developmental stages of childhood, often in advance of language development. Without adequate language, it is impossible for survivors to clearly identify their experiences.

The term *ritual abuse* was introduced by Michelle Smith in her memoir of a ritually abusive childhood in her book, *Michelle Remembers* (with Lawrence Pazdar, 1980). She specifically called her experience *Satanic ritual abuse.* Over time, it has become evident that ritually abusive scenarios other than Satanic ones are frequently employed by perpetrators of such acts.

A few other words have crept into the vocabulary of ritual abuse as it relates to what appears to be the underlying motivation for these acts. Survivors speak of being *programmed* to respond to *triggers* that cause them to dissociate to alter mental states, *alters.* They appear to be referring to a kind of psychological conditioning in which stimuli are paired with certain acts to produce predictable consequences, *e.g.,* dissociation of identity. These individuals refer to *mind control* as the ultimate goal of ritual abuse.

Mental health professionals must rely on the existing language of psychology to evaluate, diagnose, and treat this population of survivors. However, the existing terminology has been inadequate to the needs of the clients or to others including managed care, insurers, attorneys, and law enforcement agencies. The resultant inadequacy of the language has been partly responsible for the underestimation of the presence of ritual abuse as a mitigating factor in the development of some mental disorders as well as unfavorable outcomes in criminal, civil, and administrative law venues. Clearly, it is in the best interests of all concerned to develop a language in response to the reports of ritual abuse that reflects the enormity of the problem and meets the standard of science. Furthermore, this language must be universally applicable and applied in order to convey the agreement of professionals who work in this area as well as the clients they serve. This is a daunting task.

The first step toward the establishment of universally acceptable definitions is to provide for an objective and scientific environment in which to frame our language. Free of the influences of cultural and religious values and dependent primarily on empirical evidence, this setting would provide the laboratory in which we could develop and incorporate ideas about how to best express the experiences victims describe. Unfortunately, no such environment exists. There is no way we can completely disconnect ourselves from our history, nature, culture, and beliefs.

However, we can emulate the scientific model and apply scientific principles to minimize the biased interpretation of the reports and the psychological and behavioral ramifications we observe.

There is some disagreement within the mental health community regarding the legitimacy of the term *ritual abuse.* Some believe that the term is too emotionally charged, religious, and unscientific. Using the term *ritual* connotes religious context for many. Some have proposed alternate phrases such as *organized abuse, sadistic abuse, extreme abuse,* or *structured abuse.* Sarson and McDonald coined the term, *ritual abuse torture* (RAT). The term preferred by many in the mental health and survivor communities is *ritual abuse* for two reasons. Firstly, that is the term introduced and used by many of its victims. Secondly, it is more accurate and less ambiguous than the alternatives. In the book, *Cult and Ritual Abuse: Its History, Anthropology and Recent Discovery in Contemporary America* (Noblitt & Perskin, Rev. ed., 2000), *ritual abuse* is defined as abuse or maltreatment that occurs in a ceremonial or circumscribed manner and where the abuse causes traumagenic dissociation and/or establishes or reinforces control over dissociated states already in existence. This definition appears to satisfy in concrete terms what its alleged victims and perpetrators report. The term, *ritual trauma,* does not assume or make the judgment that the experience was abusive. There is an assumption that the experience was traumatic, but voluntary and not abusive and would include ritual events such as initiation ceremonies. *Ritualistic abuse* may be defined as being like ritual abuse, but not all the above criteria can be proven or demonstrated; for example, there may be evidence of a ritualistic killing where only the body is found. The possibility that dissociated states may have been created or controlled during the criminal act is unknown.

Some ritual abuse may occur within a cult or cult-like setting. There are a variety of cults, most of which are likely not abusive. The following is a useful classification of destructive cults (Noblitt & Perskin, 2000):

1. **Destructive religious cults** are associated with a particular religious practice, belief or system of rituals and may be further subdivided as follows:
   - **a. Destructive apocalyptic cults** promote fear and paranoia along with unfounded predictions that the world is about to end. Destructive apocalyptic cults may be distinguished from apocalyptic religions in that the former utilizes abuse, exploitation and mind control methods. Examples would include the Branch Davidians, Order of the Solar Temple and Aum Supreme Truth.
   - **b. Destructive pre-industrial cults** meet the criteria for destructive cults and also embody the traditions of pre-industrial cultures (e.g., African and New

World vodoun and Santeria sects). Although some such religions may be considered destructive cults, one should not automatically assume that all are. Again the criteria of abuse, exploitation, and mind control are essential to defining a cult as destructive.

c. Destructive demonic cults meet the criteria for destructive cults and also promote the worship or reverence toward a malevolent deity, spirit or principle (e.g., Satanism, Luciferianism) or those cults which use others' fears of demons to manipulate or control them.

2. Fraternal organizations which meet the criteria for destructive cults. These groups are often secret and may also espouse particular philosophic, religious, or sociopolitical ideals (e.g., the Bizango of Haiti, the Egbo, or Leopard Society of West Africa, and various subgroups within Masonry and other quasi-Masonic groups may meet these criteria).

3. Destructive sociopolitical cults would include the Ku Klux Klan, Aryan Brotherhood, and Neo-Nazi groups. We would include the Christian Identity movement here even though technically it is a religion. However, it is not clear that the religious aspects of the Christian Identity movement are as cultish as are their racist values and politics.

4. Organized crime groups which function as destructive cults exist for the primary purpose of supporting criminal activities where there is a need for utilizing mind control procedures because of the nature of the crime (e.g., child prostitution and pornography may require such mind control procedures if the perpetrators are to produce children who appear to be enthusiastic about the sexual activity which would normally be aversive to them). Even though coercion is presumably commonly used in criminal groups we do not think it would be appropriate to categorize all crime organizations as cults. However, when there is evidence of trauma-induced dissociation and programming, we would classify such a group as a destructive cult.

5. Government and intelligence-related destructive cults refer to the alleged organized use of cult mind control procedures surreptitiously conducted by individuals within government agencies (e.g., CIA) to further their purposes of intelligence gathering and the facilitation of other secret operations. Unfortunately, the United States government has allowed itself to become enmeshed in a complex organization of secret information and procedures which would allow unethical or illegal activities to occur without the knowledge of the general public (e.g., the Iran–Contra affair, the Watergate break-in, the use of United States citizens as guinea pigs for radiation research, etc.). Furthermore, because of the existence of what is called Sensitive Compartmented Information

within the various national security and intelligence agencies, it is possible to have secret information and operations to which other individuals with Top Secret security clearances have neither access nor the capacity to scrutinize. Essentially the intelligence community is "dissociated" because of the way in which information has been "compartmented." Given this network of government enforced secrecy it may be difficult or impossible to fully or accurately assess many of the complaints of abuse made by survivors. Nevertheless, these reports should be seriously investigated.

6. **Experimental destructive cults** are groups that conduct coercive mind control research, typically without the victim's consent. An example would be the work of Donald E. Cameron, M.D., a past president of the American Psychiatric Association. Donald Cameron conducted experimental mind control research on unsuspecting psychiatric patients in Canada that was funded by the CIA.

Cult abuse can be defined as any abuse perpetrated by a cult. *Cult abuse* is similar, but not identical, to *ritual abuse.* The differences between these two definitions are that cult abuse does not necessarily cause dissociation of identity, and ritual abuse is not necessarily always carried out in a cult. (pp. 215–217)

Because of the nature of ritual abuse and its frequent incorporation of occult symbolism and theology, there may be a tendency to misidentify it as a religious or spiritual issue rather than a criminal one. Ritual abuse is often popularly referred to as *Satanic ritual abuse*, an expression that implies assumptions that sometimes cannot be substantiated and thus create obstacles to appropriate scientific or criminal investigation. It is necessary to recognize that when we hear the term, *satanic,* we may not know whether this term refers to a religious doctrine (Satanic) or a broader descriptive term (satanic). This is an important distinction because we are expected to respect the choices of others. It is only when such belief systems are coercive and abusive in a manner that violates the law that we have a duty to intervene.

To maintain scientific objectivity in this matter, it is necessary to exercise a position of religious and spiritual neutrality. Our legal system demands accuracy, and language that deviates from literal and supportable fact may seriously damage an otherwise reasonable legal argument in a court of law. Therefore, identifying this type of abuse as being Satanic may create impediments to successful prosecution unless it can be proven that the abuse was indeed perpetrated by a Satanic group. There is no evidence that all ritual abuse is based on Satanic principles. In fact, there is no proof that any ritual abuse is specifically Satanic. Individuals who identify themselves as Satanists frequently declare that their belief system does not include non-consensual abusive activities or involve children.

Also, those who identify themselves as victims of such abuse sometimes deny that Satanic principles are at the foundation of the ritualistic components. Some elements associated with Satanism may be present in some cases of ritual abuse. In such instances, it would be more accurate and correct to refer to these occurrences as *ritual abuse with Satanic themes.* Such terminology clarifies that the alleged ritual abuse survivor describes the abuse as having Satanic elements but does not necessarily imply that either the survivor or the interviewer blames the abuse on a Satanic cult. On the other hand, if there is evidence that a Satanic cult is involved in the abuse of an individual, that should be clearly stated.

In order to accurately address the unique problems associated with ritual abuse victims, we must establish a unifying language that transcends disciplines and agendas. We must speak the same language if we are to be able to truly speak to the issue. Unfortunately, soliciting agreement between even colleagues within the same profession is a sometimes insurmountable task. Crossing boundaries between different professions is an even more daunting assignment. As in any other mission, the first step is to be open to change, to be willing to negotiate and to compromise, so long as this does not represent the abandonment of principles, duty, and professional standards. If there is a shared commitment to truth, justice, recovery, and advocacy, a shared language is not only possible, it is imperative. However, both internal and external politics have obstructed constructive dialogue and have made negotiations regarding the development and application of the language of ritual abuse problematic.

For reasons that defy logic, there is significant resistance within the mental health community to adopting a universal language. On the one hand, this is not entirely surprising given the breadth of psychological theory and practice. However, there is more at play here. Despite the controversy surrounding the theme of ritual abuse, there is nevertheless a play for power over the language because whoever controls the language controls the direction the study of this phenomenon will take. The survivors themselves are conflicted. Many of these individuals meet the diagnostic criteria for psychological conditions ranging from post-traumatic stress disorder to dissociative identity disorder. Many of these folks report exacerbation of their symptoms when they attempt to address the ritualistic elements of their abuse histories and feel constrained to keep the secret. Others attribute mythic powers to their perpetrators and fear they are under constant surveillance and vulnerable to revictimization. Still others have spoken candidly of their experiences without restraint and the subsequent disbelief engendered by their claims has fostered mistrust of anyone outside the survivor community.

Among both survivors and helping professions, spirituality is sometimes considered a component of recovery and religious doctrine is frequently

incorporated into psychotherapeutic interventions. This position has subsequently created new schisms within the community of survivor advocates. Finally, there are those personalities among both the survivor and professional communities who are deeply invested in self-promotion to the exclusion of the best interests of science, justice, and society. The factions jockeying for position may all be motivated by the best intentions, but the end result has left the survivor advocacy community divided, divisive, and diminished. While the backlash is united in both their language and resolve, the survivor advocacy community is fragmented.

The politics of ritual abuse within the traditions of the helping professions, law and the media are even more confused. Traditionally, journalists gravitated toward the underdogs and championed the causes of peace, civil rights, feminism, and other social movements that ultimately shaped society. However, in the case of allegations of ritual abuse, these professions have demonstrated a bias that actually favors the backlash community. By adopting their language to inhabit ritual abuse allegations with a sense of hysteria and channeling their sympathies to the questionable population of falsely accused, the professional communities have influenced law, medicine, psychotherapy, and media representations of crimes with ritually abusive features. Survivors and their advocates face the dual challenge of overcoming bias as well as trauma.

If we are to apply scientific reasoning to the study of ritual abuse, we must apply a universal vocabulary that fosters an environment that eschews personal bias, self-promotion, or religious agendas, and instead is goal directed and sensitive to the realities faced by survivors. We cannot afford to spend the time and energy that has thus far been wasted in an effort to shape the language of ritual abuse to meet personal or political ambitions. Rather, we have an obligation to survivors, future victims, and society to meet the challenge of defining ritual abuse and its component features in order to develop a dialogue with survivors, helping professions, law enforcement, and the media in an effort to identify, understand, and address its many destructive aspects. Will we do our duty to survivors, science, society, and the holy grail of justice? Will we abandon those who have already been betrayed on the most fundamental level? Will we protect future generations from unspeakable acts and their crippling consequences? The answers lie not in the words we have written, but in the response of the reader.

References

Noblitt, J. R., & Perskin, P. S. (2000). *Cult and ritual abuse: Its history, anthropology and recent discovery in contemporary America (*Rev. ed.). Westport, CT: Praeger.

Smith, M., & Pazder, L. (1980). *Michelle remembers.* New York: Congdon & Lattes.

CHAPTER 3

Exploring Commonalities Reported by Adult Survivors of Extreme Abuse: Preliminary Empirical Findings

Carol Rutz, Thorsten Becker, Bettina Overkamp, and Wanda Karriker

"Nothing is perfect, nor does practice lead to perfection. However, practice does lead to more knowledge and we all need that a lot."[1]

Introduction

More than two decades ago, professionals in the mental health field were calling for proof that clients' accounts of extreme abuse, specifically ritual abuse and its associated mind control programming, are based in fact. As part of a panel of extreme abuse survivors and advocates at a conference sponsored by the United Nations, co-author Karriker (2007) recalled:

> 1988. I attended a conference in Chicago that is focused on dissociative disorders. First time I'd ever talked with any non-skeptical colleagues about my work with ritually-abused clients. In an *ad hoc* group, therapists from across North America sit around in a circle. They talk about similar stories of ritual abuse that they have heard from clients. The leader calls for calm. He cautions that we as therapists should not make this phenomenon public until we have research to back it up.

In 1989, Kluft addressed the polarization in the dissociative disorders field over the subject of ritual abuse. He observed that "Clinicians in many parts of North America and in European countries as well are hearing remarkably similar accounts of ritualistic abuse from many patients" (p. 191) and recommended serious study of the phenomenon stating, "Even as I advocate an open-minded but cautious circumspection as a scientific *modus operandi,* I appreciate the difficulties (and at times the ethical and practical impossibilities) involved in such a stance" (p. 192).

At a Chicago conference addressing dissociative disorders in 1990, a heated topic of informal discussion was an article (Ganaway, 1989) in which a psychiatrist questions the reality of ritual abuse and the credibility of repressed memories. He reports that some sociologists have categorized accounts of ritual abuse as 'urban legends' and asks,

> To what degree do these vividly re-enacted experiences represent purely factual accounts of multigenerational cult activities with actual human sacrifices as described, versus fantasy and/or illusion borrowing its core material from literature, movies, TV, other patients' accounts, or unintentional therapist suggestion? (p. 211)

Two years later, the ritual abuse controversy was discussed during the town meeting at a professional conference on multiple personality in Alexandria, Virginia. As had Kluft, some experts called for more scientific data to support the existence of ritual abuse. At this same conference, Hammond (1992) described his beliefs about mind control and programming:

> When you start to find the same highly esoteric information in different states and different countries, from Florida to California, you start to get an idea that there is something going on that is very large, very well coordinated with a great deal of communication and systematicness [*sic*] to what is happening.

Co-author Becker (2007) asserts that the controversy over the reality of ritual abuse reached its peak in 1997 when prominent therapists in the dissociative disorders field were charged with civil and criminal actions. In a civil suit, Burgus vs. Braun et al., the plaintiffs claimed that false memories of ritual abuse had been implanted in a woman and her sons by Dr. Bennett Braun. Without Dr. Braun's agreement, his insurance company paid plaintiffs 10.6 million dollars to settle the case out of court. (Defendant has filed a lawsuit against his insurance company for this breach of contract). In a case that went to court, Dr. Judith Peterson faced criminal charges in connection with "false" or "recovered" memories of ritual abuse. All charges were dismissed in March 1999 before the defense was heard, ending the case in a mistrial. Becker writes that after these cases were settled, "The debate, the controversial discussion as well as the publishing of books and articles on ritual abuse seem to carry on a very much lower level of profile."

Using the term "ritual abuse," our search of the PsycINFO data base confirms Becker's observation that publication of journal articles has decreased since 1999. From 1988 to 1998, 87 articles were published. From 1999 through June 2007, only 15 were published.[2]

The International Society for the Study of Dissociation (2005) addresses this controversy over the existence of ritual abuse. Offering no scientific data to support or refute their claims, the authors of "Guidelines for Treating Dissociative Identity in Adults (2005)" write: "There is divergence of opinion in the field concerning the origins of patients' reports of seemingly bizarre abuse experiences such as involvement in organized occultist 'ritual' abuse and covert government-sponsored mind control experiments." The guidelines specify three opinions held by therapists: (1) clinicians who believe patients' reports of organized abuse; (2) clinicians who believe patients' reports of other types of sadistic events are misremembered as "ritual" abuse and mind control; (3) clinicians who believe

patients' reports can be explained "as contagion, unconscious defensive elaborations, false memory, delusion, or deliberate confabulation."

Two empirical studies in peer-reviewed journals (Bottoms, Shaver, & Goodman, 1996; Schmuttermaier & Veno, 1999) indicate that the majority of surveyed therapists who have treated at least one alleged survivor believe their clients' claims of ritual abuse. From the final results of a stratified random sample survey of clinical members of the American Psychological Association, Bottoms et al. conclude that, "Overwhelmingly, our respondents believed their clients' claims, even in the absence of corroborative evidence" (p. 25). Schmuttermaier and Veno report that none of the counselors in their Australian study believe that their clients intentionally fabricated claims of ritual abuse.

In reaction to those who argue that most or all claims of ritual abuse and/or mind control (RA/MC) programming are fabricated, Hal Pepinsky (2005), a professor of criminal justice, counters:

> If these narratives are essentially fabricated, they must have been fabricated in many different ways at once. It would require a more elaborate "conspiracy" to account for how similar narratives could be falsely implanted in so many survivors' minds in so many different ways (e.g., "memories" that arise before therapy in some cases and after therapy in others, in childhood in some cases and only long afterward in adulthood in others) than to account for how so many cults and mind control programmers could operate essentially in secret, with impunity. (p. 1371) Ritual abuse is an international phenomenon. Van der Hart, Boon, and Heijtmajer (1997) describe reports of ritual abuse in the Netherlands, Belgium, Germany, Italy, Norway, Spain, South Africa, Switzerland, the United Kingdom, and the United States; Kent (1997), in Canada; Schmuttermaier and Veno (1999), in Australia. An Australian organization, Advocates for Survivors of Child Abuse (2006), includes France, Finland, Russia, and New Zealand and points out that "Increased attention is now being paid to ritual abuse in Nigeria, India, Ghana, Zimbabwe, and Zambia and its role in the trafficking of women into Europe" (p. 16).

Mind control is also an international phenomenon. Some of our colleagues have heard reports from their clients about mind control programming in the United States, Canada, the United Kingdom, the Netherlands, Germany, Norway, Sweden, New Zealand, Australia, South Africa, France, Israel, Russia, Tibet, Afghanistan, India, Lebanon, Italy, China, Belgium, and Japan (personal communications, December 6, 2006).

Marks (1979), Ross (2000), co-author Rutz (2001), and Scheflin and Opton (1978) reviewed declassified documents proving that secret mind control experiments were conducted on thousands of unwitting subjects in CIA programs such as Bluebird, Artichoke, and MKULTRA. Ross writes, “The major goal of the Cold War mind control programs was to create dissociative symptoms and disorders, including full multiple personality disorder” (p. E). Gould and Cozolino (1992) contend that ritual abuse survivors with multiple personality disorder may have personalities deliberately created by cults that have been programmed [a mind control term] to perform specific functions for the cult. Thus, victims could have had mind control tactics used on them even if they were not subjects in government-sponsored mind control experiments. Conversely, government-sponsored mind control subjects could have been ritually abused in experimental settings.

Pepinsky believes that hearing directly from RA/MC survivors shapes his “understanding a lot more than talk or literature about them” (p. 1373). Agreeing with Pepinsky’s observation, the authors pooled our various skills, knowledge, and experiences to develop a means to bring the existence of extreme abuse like that suffered by RA/MC victims to the attention not only of mental health professionals, but also to the media and to individuals and organizations from around the world who are in positions to expose this “hidden holocaust.”

Relevant Research

Using data bases covered by Academic Search Premier, CINAHL, Health Sources: Nursing/Academic Edition, PsycINFO, and PubMed and using the search terms “ritual abuse,” “ritualistic abuse,” “satanic abuse,” “satanist abuse,” “sadistic abuse,” “ritual abuse and mind control,” “mind control programming,” and “mind control experimentation,” we found 325 citations from peer-reviewed journals. Those classified as comments, editorials, book reviews, abstracts, letters, etc. were eliminated from our search, leaving 165 full articles with one or more of the search terms in the title or as a subject or keyword.

The majority are position papers addressing controversies in the mental health field regarding the reality of ritual abuse, false and recovered/delayed memories, and suggestive therapy techniques. Forty seven articles are classified as empirical studies and can be grouped into the following categories:

11 Child victims of ritual abuse
7 Clinical adult case studies
6 Surveys of mental health professionals
4 Analyses of clinical/archival data on multiple adult survivors

4 Psychometric studies with adult survivors
3 Simulation studies using university students as subjects
3 Prevalence studies of adult and child victims
2 Surveys of child agency workers
2 Historical case studies
2 Groups of adult RA survivors compared with other groups
2 Miscellaneous studies
1 Group of RA adults interviewed

In only one study did researchers directly interview a group of ritually abused adults about "the nature of the abuse and its perceived impact on interpersonal, occupational, and spiritual development" (Shaffer & Cozolino, 1992, p. 188). In addition to the Shaffer and Cozolino study, only two studies (Bottoms et al., 1996; Young, Sacks, Braun & Watkins, 1991) display descriptive data provided by therapists regarding types and sequelae of ritual abuse. No studies involving survivors of mind control experimentation were found.

Bottoms et al. (1996) constructed a prototype of 386 cases from the decade of the 1980's based on the particular features of abuse that clinical psychologists had heard from their clients. They found the following:

> The most common feature of ritual cases was "forced sex." The next most common was "repeated practices."…Also common, however, were abuse by a member of a cult-like group; abuse related to symbols associated with the devil; abuse involving sacrifice or torture of animals; abuse involving excrement or blood; and abuse involving knives, altars, and candles… The least common features of ritualistic cases were abuse related to the breeding of infants for ritual sacrifice, abuse involving cannibalism, child pornography, and amnesic periods or preoccupation with dates. (p. 10) From most to least reported, presenting symptoms of clients were depression, suicidal ideation, excessive fears and phobias, somatic complaints, insomnia, sexual acting out, social withdrawal, inappropriate aggression, substance abuse, obsessive compulsiveness and inappropriate toilet behavior. Forty nine percent of clients reporting ritual abuse had been diagnosed MPD; 28%, PTSD.

Young et al. (1991) describe 37 adult patients, all diagnosed with multiple personality disorder (MPD) or dissociative disorder not otherwise specified, who reported similar abuses by satanic cults. Apparently, most of the data were collected while the patients were in treatment with the authors. The article lists ten types of ritual abuse and the percentage of subjects who reported each type: sexual

abuse (100%), witnessing and receiving physical abuse/torture (100%), witnessing animal mutilation/killings (100%), death threats (100%), forced drug usage (97%), witnessing and forced participation in human adult and infant sacrifice (83%), forced cannibalism (81%), marriage to Satan (78%), buried alive in coffins or graves (72%), forced impregnation and sacrifice of own child (60%). They propose a clinical syndrome representing psychiatric sequelae common to their sample: severe post-traumatic stress disorder (100%), dissociative states with satanic overtones (100%), survivor guilt (97%), indoctrinated beliefs (94%), unusual fears (91%), sexualizations of sadistic impulses (86%), bizarre self-abuse (83%), and substance abuse (62%).

Shaffer and Cozolino (1992) interviewed 19 women and one man who reported types and aftereffects of ritualistic abuse consistent with those reported by Young et al. All subjects reported witnessing the murder of animals, infants, children and/or adults. All reported suicidal ideation and half reported suicide attempts. The majority reported severe and sadistic forms of abuse by multiple perpetrators. Some reported continued recontact/revictimization into their adult years. Fifty five percent reported repeated psychiatric hospitalizations during the initial and middle stages of psychotherapy. Several survivors experienced religious/spiritual conflicts stating that “the most destructive aspect of the ritualistic abuse had been the negative effects that it had on their spiritual selves” (p. 190). The majority said they believed in a higher power, but only half of that subgroup was involved in an organized religion. The majority considered participation in support groups as a necessary adjunct to psychotherapy. All considered the uncovering of memories as the primary focus in therapy and felt that “their therapists’ beliefs both in the reality of the abuse they reported and in their capacity to recover were necessary preconditions to their ability to deal with these very difficult therapeutic issues” (p. 189).

Methodology

An Online Survey

The primary objectives of this study are to gather preliminary descriptive data to obtain indications of the nature and extent of extreme abuse like that suffered by RA/MC survivors and to use our findings to give survivors voice, validation, and visibility. We decided that the most practical way to reach a sample of this population and hopefully to generate a large number of responses from different geographic locations was to announce and conduct a study online.

Granello and Wheaton (2004) state that one of the advantages of using web-based surveys in the counseling profession is the ability to access individuals who

are not in the mental health system but have mental health concerns. They cite studies to suggest that “self-disclosure is increased when people communicate using web-based surveys as compared with traditional paper-pencil surveys” (p. 389).

Riggle, Rostosky and Reedy (2005) who conduct research with the bisexual, gay, lesbian and transgender (BGLT) populations have found the online mode effective in reaching “subpopulations that are not easily identifiable, are decentralized, or are rare in the general population” (p. 2).[3] In their research they consider trust, which involves the assurance of confidentiality and anonymity, as one of the most important issues. They believe that for hard-to-reach populations, “the opportunity to personalize contact may be the most important element for ensuring participation and valid responses” (p. 16).

Survey Development

To accomplish our goals, we developed an extreme abuse survey (EAS) titled “An International Survey for Adult Survivors of Extreme Abuse.” Offered in English and German, the EAS consists of six sections: (0) Demographics, (1) Memories, (2) Possible Aftereffects, (3) Personal Experiences, (4) Healing Methods, (5) Categories of Abuse.[4] Sections 1–3 contain closed-response questions.[5] Section 4 is made up of Likert-type items. The memories, aftereffects, other experiences, and healing methods listed in sections 1–4 have been noted in the literature or have been reported by survivors in therapy with one of the authors, at survivor and professional conferences, on websites, or in support and study groups made up of therapists or survivors. Section 5 offers respondents an opportunity to self-select the category of abuse that best describes their experiences as survivors: (1) RA, (2) MC, (3) RA and MC, (4) Other EA.

We invited a panel of survivors to pretest the instrument to assure that the directions were clear and to point out confusing or ambiguous terms. In addition to offering suggestions for additional items, the panel confirmed that all items have face validity, i.e., the questions make sense in regard to personal experiences that survivors have reported.

Population and Sampling

Because it would have been impossible to select a worldwide random sample of extreme abuse survivors, we used convenience sampling. In her announcement letter, co-author Rutz asked fellow survivors and their advocates to do the following:

> Forward this email announcement to other RA/MC survivors whom you know, email lists of survivors, and all professionals you know who work with survivors and ask them to forward to others and ask others to forward to survivors and to professionals (including therapists, physicians, clergy, deprogrammers, researchers, law enforcement, attorneys and others who have worked with RA/MC survivors) literally sending the announcement around the world.

Thus, the target population for our study is defined as all adult survivors of extreme abuse including, but not limited to, ritual abuse and mind control who saw or heard about the announcement of the EAS made by Carol Rutz to her fellow survivors and their advocates on December 31, 2006. Initially sent to 139 survivors, six survivor lists and 50 therapists/clergy/helpers, Rutz's letter stated the rationale for the survey and provided a live link to the URL where it could be accessed (http://extreme-abuse-survey.net). The announcement letter was also posted on the EAS website for benefit of those who heard about the survey but did not receive the announcement email. Including her email address in the announcement made it possible for persons who had questions about the project to reach her. Midway through the online posting, February 14, 2007, Rutz sent an email reminder of the survey to her contacts.

To accommodate survivors who did not feel comfortable taking the survey online, the instructions for the EAS gave them the option of printing it out or requesting a pdf file to complete and return to one of the researchers by postal mail or email. Email addresses were posted on the website in both German and English for survivors who had questions and comments for the survey developers.

Technical Problems, Solutions, and Attacks on Our Efforts

Online surveys are often used by companies to obtain feedback from customers and by universities to conduct social science research. Without the resources of these types of organizations, implementation of the large scale EAS was a significant challenge. In the early stages of planning, we addressed several questions:

1. What are possible obstacles to a successful completion of our mission?
2. What types of technical assistance do we need?
3. What technology do we need to collect, store and analyze the data?
4. What will the project cost and how will we pay for it?
5. How do we publicize the survey?

6. How would alleged perpetrators of the abuses highlighted in the EAS react to their crimes being exposed through survey results? Would the website be attacked? Would attempts be made to hack the data on the server? Would alleged perpetrators try to spy on the users?

Before we could go forward with the survey, it was imperative that we find answers to these questions and resolve the issues they presented. Consultations with webmasters and small service providers made us aware of potential problems that could undermine our goals if not remedied.

Possible Obstacles

A primary concern was that we had no means to estimate the number of extreme abuse survivors who would participate; therefore, we could not predict the server capacity required to store our data or the amount of online traffic that would be generated—essential determinants for Internet provider costs. There was also the risk of a denial-of-service attack which meant that the server would be swamped with requests from the Internet and lose bandwidth to the point that the survey would no longer be accessible.[6] This could also affect other websites hosted by the provider such as reported by Kossel & Koetter (2007). Another major concern was that a positive response on one of the questions—"I was forced to murder a baby."—indicated the violation of a criminal law and could possibly garner the attention of law enforcement, thereby increasing the risk of our provider being raided and his equipment confiscated.[7]

How to gain the trust of survivors and assure them that their participation in the survey would remain confidential was discussed at length. Since each connection on the web is between the sender (online user) and receiver (the addressed web server), both sender and receiver can be identified by an IP number which can be traced through the server either online or in storage.[8] Anonymity of the respondents could not be guaranteed under these circumstances.

At this point in our planning discussions, it became clear that we needed a rather unconventional solution for the problems mentioned above. Because broadband Internet enables persons to run web servers in their own homes, we decided that the best approach was to be our own provider through the auspices of David Tommasi. In addition to minimizing all the above mentioned risks, this arrangement offered immediate offline access to the data and hardware, allowing for concurrent backups and efficient maintenance.

Technical Assistance

We could not have conducted this project without the assistance of two external teams working in the background: (1) the questionnaire programming team and (2) the IT team. Members of the questionnaire programming team (who desire to remain anonymous) took over the tasks of programming the questionnaire and collecting the data. Employed by a German media publishing company, they specialize in working with the Microsoft.NET Framework which is used for small web questionnaires developed for contact with customers and surfers who visit the websites of their company's various magazines. Using this technique, there is no need for a database, i.e., all data are stored in xml-coding and accessible without specialized tools or software programs. This process does not require sophisticated, expensive hardware. The IT team took over the task of hosting the website.

Aside from these teams, several support persons helped with various tasks involved in getting the EAS and two subsequent surveys online.[9] Altogether, a staff of 15 volunteers supported the surveyors. Not one of these people charged for their services.[10]

Technology

Under German law, every website hosted in Germany must have an "Impressum" displaying contact information for the website. S.P.ORG.-Consulting e.V.,[11] a non-governmental organization located in Lueneburg, Germany, took responsibility for the EAS website using the office address of co-author Becker. The domain, Extreme-Abuse-Survey.net, was registered to David Tommasi who hosted the project.

Our online provider worked as a relay station and directed all requests to a private broadband telephone account connected to this provider by a script which handled the Dynamic Name Server (DNS) and updated IP addresses. The script ran on a web server with a LINUX operating system[12] which served as a proxy for the server which hosted the survey. This server ran under Microsoft Windows 2000 and Microsoft.NET Framework 2.0.

A script which sent out an incremental backup of the survey data to each of our two email addresses was also running on the LINUX server.[13] Data were sent via compressed and encrypted files. The LINUX server also functioned as a relay for two support email addresses (one in English and one in German language) through which participants could contact the surveyors.

Costs

We purchased three used Fujitsu-Siemens Scenic D[14] computers on eBay and added memory and hard disks that we had on hand. All three computers were set

up identically with one placed as a backup close to the primary location and another as a backup at co-author Becker's home. Although this hardware could be considered outdated, it served our purpose well.

Our expenses were approximately 120 Euros for hardware. Software licenses were sponsored by friends. No one connected with the project received any compensation for their expertise or time.

Publicity

The EAS went online on December 31, 2006 at approximately 6:00 p.m. MEZ. Shortly afterwards, co-author Rutz sent her email announcement of the survey (see above). The same night Jean Riseman, editor of *Survivorship,* announced and endorsed the survey with a special newsletter to subscribers. During the next few weeks, the survey was announced on several other survivors' and therapists' mailing lists, on survivor websites, and in other survivor newsletters.[15]

The website had an extended use of Meta Tags by the choice of relevant keywords; consequently, the survey gained high ranking at Google and AltaVista almost immediately. It was also listed in several online address books. Incidentally, one provider banned the link to the survey due to the use of the term "child pornography" in the Meta Tags, even after we had explained the purpose of the survey. When the provider was asked why this decision had been made, he replied, "We don't want to have anything to do with child pornography."

Attacks

On the evening of January 2, 2007, the server faced an intense amount of port scans at the high and low ports and also attempts to access non-existing server pages by checking a variety of filenames. For a few days afterwards, the nameserver was addressed with several requests[16] carried out on a large scale. This used an enormous amount of bandwidth, rendering the server at stake due to this loss. In the first weeks, our provider's own web projects had an unusually high amount of traffic suggesting that unknown people wanted to learn more about those working on this survey.

Fortunately, the attacks gradually diminished and after three weeks almost ended. In early March, there was another attempt to hack the server by someone trying to connect to the Microsoft Frontpage serverports which are part of the Microsoft Internet Information Server. Since we did not use these ports, this attack failed.[17] Parallel to these incidents, third parties made several attempts to obtain the private data of some surveyors and technicians.

Apparently because of discussions about the EAS on survivor Internet forums, both David Tommasi (Internet provider) and co-author Becker were extensively and aggressively flamed by emails for offering this survey and conducting it in a way that was “not responsible.” On one German Internet forum moderated by a professional mental health carer, a detailed description was posted detailing ways to attack the survey.

We were criticized because we did not use SSL[18] encryption, a technique used by online shops to transfer credit card data. The critics’ rationale was that without SSL, there was great potential for respondents to be spied upon. They did not understand or acknowledge that an SSL connection stores the IP addresses of both senders and receivers and if used would breach the anonymity of those who participate in the survey.

Although the technical aspects of our project received negative criticism from some members of the mental health community, our work received positive reactions and support within the LINUX Internet community and related discussion forums. For example, there had been a celebration with many congratulatory emails when our LINUX server was updated to the Red Hat Enterprise Linux.[19] This remarkable difference in tone between the friendly LINUX community and the German critics of the survey within the mental health community was gratifying.

On March 31, 2007, at the end of day (in all time zones), the EAS was taken offline. For a financial cost of approximately 120 Euros and with the volunteered help of 15 technical support persons and numerous survivors and therapists from around the world who helped publicize the survey, we succeeded in overcoming the obstacles (including attacks on our server and personal attacks on the surveyors) that could have prevented a successful completion of our mission to give extreme abuse survivors from around the world voice, validation and visibility.

A Prepublication Backlash Against Our Methodology

As developers of a preliminary survey designed to address one of the most controversial issues ever to engage the mental health field and spill over into the public arena, we expected to receive rigorous methodological scrutiny when we published the results. We did not anticipate that less than two weeks after the EAS had gone online, we would be inundated with attacks on the validity of our potential results. Without benefit of seeing the assumptions and limitations that we had acknowledged in our research plan, self-appointed critics on at least six professional lists accused us of being both unethical and unscientific. In addition to pointing out most of the limitations discussed below, they judged our methodology

as flawed, even before the majority of participants had entered their answers into our data base.

One clinician asked why a study like this was needed since there is no evidence that ritual abuse and mind control experimentation on children have ever occurred. We were accused of having violated the ethical principles of research involving human subjects because we did not provide informed consent for potential participants[20] and because our study was not approved by an institutional review committee.[21]

Criticisms centered around three issues: (1) the risk that clients might take the EAS and unconsciously incorporate events that didn't happen to them into their memory systems;[22] [23] (2) fear that mere exposure to the items might provoke intense anxiety in fragile, unhealed clients and cause them to decompensate;[24] and (3) concern about the "uncontrolled distribution" of the survey directly to survivors who were asked to forward it to other survivors and persons who were not therapists who could not discern which survivors could tolerate the survey. P. Perskin addressed the above-mentioned survey issues:

> The criticism leveled at the Extreme Abuse Survey seems to ignore the value of this pioneering effort. Ritual abuse and other forms of extreme abuse are frequently reported by individuals diagnosed with dissociative disorders. Gaining a better understanding of the experiences these individuals share and their reactions to these experiences fills an enormous gap in the therapeutic process. We cannot know what experiences are true or fabricated (by the perpetrator or the victim). But we do know that the psychological sequelae can be disabling and create lifelong problems that may never be overcome. We owe it to these people to do all we can to recognize and respect their stories and to work with them to find a way of mitigating their symptoms and distress. (personal communication, January, 2007) Offering support for our efforts during the heat of this discussion, S. Oz from Israel (personal communication, January, 2007) wrote, "It seems to me that all this concern about 'saving' adult survivors of evil from a questionnaire that can validate their sanity is inappropriate." K. Downing from California (personal communication, January, 2007) said that because she had been cautioned by her colleagues that the questions were horrendous and that survivors might destabilize if they read the questions, she had tried to dissuade a client from taking the survey. When she told her client that other therapists were afraid to tell their clients about the survey, the client shouted: "A survey? They're worried about a friggin' survey? After what we've been through?" So Downing wonders: Exactly what is it about the survey that could destabilize the survivor? The questions provoking

> overwhelming flashbacks? Or the threats that the perps have instilled in their victims: not only “If you tell you die,” but also, “If you ever remember these things you will have to kill yourself.”

Co-author Rutz replied to Downing:

> When I was new in therapy, the “don’t tell” programming and fear associated with telling was overwhelming. I too felt all of the things your clients have indicated. It’s good to be reminded how vulnerable and fearful survivors can be. Once they tell and find none of those horrid things happen, then it will be easier to tell and tell and tell. I would say this survey may provide a key element in their ability to move forward in their healing.

A study by Cromer, Freyd, Binder, DePrince and Becker-Blease (2006) should allay some of the anxiety of therapists who ask their traumatized clients to participate in social science research. This study compared the risks in asking trauma history questions (including questions about rape and incest in one sample) with asking other personal questions. The researchers conclude that “trauma questions cause relatively minimal distress and perceived greater importance and greater cost-benefit ratings compared to other kinds of psychological research in a human subjects pool population” (p. 359) and that “trauma research that asks participants to anonymously disclose their trauma histories either in paper and pencil or in online reports may also be classified as minimal risk” (p. 359).

Cromer et al. (2006) made it clear that trauma survivors in their study appreciated having the opportunity to participate in trauma research. This attitude was echoed by survivors from around the world who took the EAS. For example, a survivor from the United Kingdom wrote, “Heartfelt thanks for all your efforts. I believe that the twenty-first century will bring truth to the world because of all of us, survivors and supporters, who will lead the way. We have not survived in vain” (personal communication, January, 2007).

Assumptions and Limitations

Results of our study provide descriptive data obtained from a single online administration. We did not have access to a group of extreme abuse survivors to pretest the instrument for test-retest reliability for individual items or sections of the instrument. We are aware of no instruments which measure the constructs under investigation, making it impossible to have offered both the EAS and another instrument in a pilot study to compare results for convergent validity. Neither do

we know of an instrument that has been shown to have no correlation with the construct of RA/MC; therefore, we had no way to assess discriminant validity. As Riggle et al. (2005) acknowledge, “Limitations on the external validity of the results drawn from online surveys are unavoidable” (p. 3).

A major limitation, one which is inherent in all anonymous surveys, is that we could not control the sample; neither can we guarantee that participants always told the truth or that all are survivors of extreme abuse. However, because survivors of torture sometimes report bizarre-sounding types of violence (some of which may have been staged to deceive small children), we could not come up with any survey items to rule out “fakers.”

Since we decided to place the issues of anonymity and confidentiality above a need to require each person who logged in to use a password and identify himself or herself, it is possible that participants could have taken the EAS (or parts of it) more than once. Because of the length of the survey and the intensity of many of the questions, we believe few, if any, survivors would have been motivated to embellish the survey results by taking it multiple times. As with all anonymous surveys, there was no way to keep ineligible participants from responding.

No widely accepted definitions appear in the academic or survivor literature for the terms “ritual abuse,” “mind control,” or “extreme abuse.” We did not operationally define those terms for the EAS, rather we made the assumption that respondents would define the terms within their own frames of reference. Except for the scant quantitative data we gleaned from the studies discussed in the “Relevant Research” section, the list of variables investigated by the EAS is primarily based upon previous knowledge and assumptions of the authors and cannot encompass all memories, aftereffects, experiences, or healing methods that individual survivors report.

We chose to offer no open-ended questions because we were concerned that we would not have the resources to adequately judge a large number of responses. Even though this limited participants in their ability to include everything they might have wanted to report, it is possible that not using open-ended questions led to higher incompletion rates.[25]

Parts 1 and 3 of the EAS are designed to collect information on remembered occurrences of past events; however, we realize that relying on memory presents challenges of forgetting, confabulating, embellishing, dissociating, denying, etc. Also, anecdotal evidence suggests that adults who were subjected as children to ritual abuse, mind control, and other forms of extreme abuse are likely to have been programmed to “not remember” or “not tell” (under threat of death in some cases) the horrendous things that they endured.

A few respondents reported technical difficulties on their first attempts to take the survey including a power outage, a computer freeze-up and failure of a dial-up connection. We assume that motivated participants tried a second time to participate.

Due to the traumatic background of survivors of extreme abuse, we were cognizant that some of the questions could be triggering, possibly causing various levels of post-traumatic stress reactions. For this reason, the instruction page of the EAS includes a warning: “Some of the responses may be triggering [emotionally upsetting] to survivors. You may stop at anytime and you do not have to complete it.”

We assume that those who chose to respond would in some respects be different from those who chose not to respond, but we cannot ascertain how they might be different. Neither can we determine if the 55 respondents who chose to take the survey offline and mail it to one of the researchers to input onto the EAS website are different in significant ways from persons who took it online.[26]

We cannot generalize results beyond the sample who actually responded. As with any self-report survey, EAS results do not provide evidence that events reported by respondents occurred; however, we believe that the participants have provided valuable information that is consistent with what we have heard personally and professionally from persons who identify themselves as survivors of extreme abuse. For its limited purpose, we assert that our approach is consistent with acceptable descriptive social science research. It is a starting point from which other researchers can decide if further investigation is warranted.

Results

Fourteen hundred seventy-one (1471) participants from more than thirty countries[27] answered at least one of the 248 questions on the EAS. Responses were exported from the web server into a spreadsheet format where macros were used to analyze over 351,000 cells (or pieces) of data to develop the survey results for statistical analyses. The following numbers of participants answered questions in each section. Note that the majority of dropouts occurred after the first section.[28]

Demographics 1430–1451

Memories 1068–1159

Possible Aftereffects 1034–1118

Personal Experience 956–1013

Healing Methods 903–969

Self-selected Abuse Category 987

Frequencies of responses for first and last questions for those who took the survey in English and those who took it in German were compared. For the English version, the percentage of those who answered the last question (categories of abuse, n = 825) is 75% of the number who answered the first question (gender, n = 1097). For the German version, the percentage of those who answered the last question (n = 162) is 47% of the number who answered the first question (gender, n = 343).

Of 987 persons who self-selected the category of abuse that best describes their experiences, 19% chose ritual abuse; 7%, mind control; 52%, ritual abuse and mind control; 22%, other extreme abuse. Listed below are the five most frequently reported “yes” responses for the memories, possible aftereffects, and personal experiences sections.

Memories

Receiving physical abuse from perpetrators

Sexual abuse by multiple perpetrators

Other abuse(s)

Being threatened with death if I ever talked about the abuse

Witnessing physical abuse by perpetrators on other victims

Possible Aftereffects

Sleep problems

Painful body memories

Post-traumatic stress disorder

Unusual fears

Beliefs indoctrinated by perpetrator(s)

Personal Experiences

I have a spiritual belief system.

I was subjected to RA/MC at ages 3 through 6.

I was subjected to RA/MC at ages 7 through 13.

I have been diagnosed with DID (dissociative identity disorder/ formerly multiple personality disorder).

I had memories of incest before I sought therapy/counseling.

The five most frequently reported healing methods that were checked either "much help" or "great help" are:

Individual Psychotherapy/Counseling

Supportive Friends

Creative Writing

Personal Prayer/Meditation

Journaling

Relevant to the controversies over the reality of ritual abuse, government-sponsored mind control experimentation, the credibility of repressed memories, and claims that therapists implant false abuse memories in their clients, our data show that 64% of 985 respondents reported memories of incest and 48% of 977 respondents reported memories of ritual abuse before they sought therapy. Sixty-nine percent of 257 respondents who reported secret mind control experiments used on them as children also reported having been abused in a satanic cult.

There are numerous ways to statistically analyze this massive amount of descriptive data depending on which research questions are asked. For this chapter we answer the following:

1. Are there significant differences in the ways respondents from different countries categorize their abuse experiences when asked to choose either RA and MC, RA, MC, or Other EA? (See Table I)
2. Are there significant differences among the percentages of EAS respondents who report specific types of abuse in a satanic cult and the percentages of patients who reported similar types of abuse in the Young et al. (1991) and Bottoms et al. (1996) studies? (See Table II)
3. Are there significant differences among the percentages of EAS respondents who report possible aftereffects of abuse in a satanic cult and the percentages of patients reporting similar types of sequelae in the Young et al. (1991) study? (See Table III)

In planning the survey, we had no estimate of how many survivors would respond or from which countries they would come. Fortunately, the response rate was high and we were able to set up seven countries or groups of countries, each with the number of respondents large enough to allow for use of the chi-square test. [29] To answer the first question, we developed a contingency table to analyze the association between countries of residence and self-selected categories of extreme abuse. Using the chi-square test, we compared observed responses of each group

with those that would be expected if there were no association between countries and categories of abuse. (See Table I).

Table I. Relationships Among Countries of Residence and Self-Selected Categories of Extreme Abuse

(Cell Contents: Percent of Total: 987, Actual Count, Expected Count, Contribution to Chi-square)

Country	RA & MC	RA	MC	Other EA
Germany	29%	18%	04%	49%
n=138	40	25	6	67
	72	27	10	30
	14.03	0.11	1.38	45.95
UK	53%	27%	07%	13%
n=62	33	17	4	8
	32	12	4	13
	0.02	2.09	0.03	2.20
Other Euro	42%	17%	11%	30%
n=36	15	6	4	11
	19	7	3	8
	0.74	0.13	0.87	1.31
Canada	52%	18%	14%	16%
n=56	29	10	8	9
	29	11	4	12
	0.00	0.06	4.26	.81
AU and NZ	55%	26%	06%	13%
n=38	21	10	2	5
	20	7	3	8
	0.08	0.95	0.16	1.27

United States	58%	19%	06%	17%
n=582	340	110	37	95
	302	112	41	126
	4.65	0.06	0.33	7.71
All Other	47%	17%	11%	25%
n=75	35	13	8	19
	39	15	5	16
	0.41	0.16	1.45	0.46

Chi-square (18, N = 987) = 91.70, p. ≤ 0.001

To answer the first research question, we conclude that with a chi-square (18, N = 987) = 91.70, p ≤ 0.001, there are significant differences in the ways respondents from different countries categorize their abuse experiences when asked to choose either RA and MC, RA, MC, or Other EA. It should be noted, however, that half of the contribution to the chi-square (45.95) comes from one cell (Germany/ Other EA).

We reconstructed the contingency tables and performed two more chi-square tests to see if one or both of those variables were responsible for the significant distribution. When “Germany” is excluded as a research variable and “Other EA” is included, the distribution is not significant: chi-square (15, N = 849) = 21.14, p < 0.20. When “Other EA” is excluded and “Germany” is included, the distribution is not significant: chi-square (12, N = 773) = 16.48, p < 0.20. Therefore, if we use only three categories for comparison (1) RA and MC, (2) RA, and (3) MC, there are no significant differences across countries in how respondents classify their ritual abuse and mind control experiences. Further examination of German responses on specific survey questions may help determine why survivors from Germany differ from survivors from other parts of the world in the percentage of those who chose the category “Other Extreme Abuse.”

Only two studies in the peer-reviewed literature (Young et al., 1991; Bottoms et al., 1996), neither of which surveyed subjects directly, provide sufficient data with which to compare some of our results. We had incorporated all types of satanic ritual abuse and its sequelae reported by Young et al. and some of the ritualistic features reported by Bottoms et al. into our list of survey statements although we had changed some terminology to make questions for the EAS clearer.

Three statements in the Young et al. study were two statements in one and these were divided for the EAS. To compare the proportions of responses on these studies with the proportion of responses on the same or similar items on the EAS, we used the z-statistic. (See Tables II and III) The answer to the second research question is easily discerned by looking at Table II. It shows that for nine out of ten types of abuse, there is no statistical difference in frequencies of responses between the Young et al. patients and the EAS respondents. This means that 90% of the Young et al. findings were replicated in our study. Although 100% of patients in the Young et al. study reported "Witnessing animal mutilation/killings," only 86% of EAS respondents remembered this as part of their abuse history. When frequencies of listed responses on the EAS are compared with frequencies reported on the Bottoms et al. (1996) study, there is a highly significant difference on each item (p. <0.0001).

We can only conjecture why the Bottoms et al. (1996) findings are incongruent with the EAS and Young et al. (1991) findings. Perhaps the answer lies in the methods in which the different population samples were chosen and/or the ways the data were obtained. Bottoms et al. relied on reports of clinical psychologists to supply features of ritual abuse they had heard about from their clients; whereas, Young et al. reported information obtained from their own patients collected from ongoing clinical interviews over a two-year period. In contrast to the Young et al. criteria that all subjects carry a diagnosis related to dissociation, Bottoms et al. reported that only 62% of their sample exhibited dissociation with 49% diagnosed as MPD. For the EAS, we relied on self-reports of the 543 respondents who answered "yes" to the question, "I was ritually abused in a satanic cult."

Table II. Percentage of EAS Respondents Who Report Ritual Abuse in a Satanic Cult (N = 543) Compared with Percentage of Patients Reporting Same Types of Abuse in (Y = Young et al., N = 37) and (B = Bottoms et al., N = 386)

Statements	%	Z-Stat	P-value
EAS: Sexual abuse by multiple perpetrators	95%		
Y: Sexual abuse	100%	1.44	0.15
B: Forced sex	75%	8.6	<0.0001*
EAS: Receiving physical abuse	96%		

from perpetrators			
Witnessing physical abuse on other victims	93%**		
Y: Witnessing and receiving physical abuse/torture	100%	1.66	0.10
B: Human torture	53%	–16	<0.0001*
EAS: Witnessing animal mutilation/killings	86%		
Y: Witnessing animal mutilation/killings	100%	2.42	0.02*
B: Animal sacrifice	57%	–10	<0.0001*
EAS: Threatened with death if I ever talked about abuse	93%		
Y: Death threats	100%	1.64	0.10
EAS: Forced drugging	92%		
Y: Forced drug usage	97%	1.13	0.26
B: Drugs	44%	–17	<0.0001*
EAS: Witnessing murder by perpetrators	82%		
Forced participation in murder by perpetrators	74%**		
Y: Witnessing and forced participation in human adult and infant sacrifice	83%	.28	0.78
B: Human sacrifice	53%	–9.5	<0.0001*
EAS: Forced cannibalism	71%		
Y: Forced cannibalism	81%	1.3	0.20
B: Cannibalism	29%	–13	<0.0001*
EAS: “Marriage” to Satan	67%		
Y: Marriage to Satan	78%	.45	0.65

EAS: Buried alive	73%		
Y: Buried alive in coffins or graves	72v	.05	0.96
EAS: Forced impregnation	56v		
My own child murdered by perpetrators	38%**		
Y: Forced impregnation and sacrifice of own child	60%	.21	0.84
B: Baby breeding	24%	–10	<0.0001*

*p ≤ .05 is considered significant
** Not compared

Regarding research question #3, Table III clearly shows that except for one variable there are no significant differences between the percentages of EAS respondents who report possible aftereffects of abuse in a satanic cult and the percentages of patients reporting similar types of sequelae in the Young et al. study. In developing two questions to measure the sequelae that Young et al. refer to as "sexualizations of sadistic impulses" it is possible that we did not accurately reflect what the previous researchers meant by this symptom. If so, this could account for the difference in response rates on this item.

Table III. Comparison of Sequelae of Satanic Ritual Abuse As Reported by (Y = Young et al. N = 37) With Possible Aftereffects of EAS Respondents Who Report Satanic Ritual Abuse (N = 543)

Statements	%	Z-Stat	P-value
EAS: Post-traumatic stress disorder	94%		
Y: Severe post-traumatic stress disorder	100%	1.44	.15
EAS: Dissociative flashbacks with satanic themes	96%		
Y: Dissociative states with satanic overtones	100%	1.19	.23
EAS: Survivor guilt	87%		

Y: Survivor guilt	97%	1.89	.06
EAS: Beliefs indoctrinated by perpetrators	89%		
Y: Indoctrinated beliefs	94%	1.13	.26
EAS: Unusual fears	92%		
Y: Unusual fears	91%	.08	.94
EAS: Infliction of sexual pain on others	23%**		
Infliction of sexual pain on self	55%		
Y: Sexualizations of sadistic impulses	86%	7.34	0.0001*
EAS: Self-mutilating behaviors	62%		
Y: Bizarre self-abuse	83%	.22	0.82
EAS: Substance abuse	49%		
Y: Substance abuse	62%	.36	0.72

*$p \leq .05$ is considered significant

**Not compared

Discussion

The instrument used in this study was developed *for* survivors. We believe it appropriate to discuss salient findings of this project from co-author Carol Rutz's perspective as a survivor who understands first-hand the importance of "breaking the silence." Below we include excerpts from her speech, "The World Will Know," to a group of fellow survivors and their advocates at the "Tenth Annual Ritual Abuse, Secretive Organizations and Mind Control Conference" (Rutz, 2007).

Let me assure all of you that I understand how dry and meaningless statistics can be if they are devoid of humanity. I hope you will find my presentation full of the human spirit that allowed us all to survive and brought us together today. As a ritual abuse and mind control survivor, I was thrilled to join my esteemed colleagues and enlist fellow survivors' participation in the first ever "International Survey For Adult Survivors of Extreme Abuse." In an effort to show the world how

large our numbers are, 1471 survivors from more than 30 countries responded. They chose to make their voices count, thereby lending credence to the reality of what they have truly endured.

Over the course of the last six years, I have become a public advocate for these silent masses. Being able to provide validation and voice to this population is one of the greatest gifts I will ever be given. For example, male survivors I have communicated with feel very alone. Our statistics prove otherwise. Approximately 18% of the respondents are males; 1% are transgendered.

If survey results generalize to all survivors of extreme abuse, we are a highly-educated population with approximately 32% reporting some college; 58% reporting a college or graduate degree. It seems that the still small voice within each of us, which our perpetrators tried to silence, sought solace in knowledge. Not surprising, as knowledge leads to power and that is something that all survivors had taken from them.

In announcing the survey I stated:

> Thousands of persons who survived Ritual Abuse and/or Mind Control and as a result may have developed DID[30] have been ignored too long and further injured by their inability to find quality mental health providers who will recognize and treat them. The survey is your opportunity to prove that Ritual Abuse, Mind Control and Government Experimentation are not "Urban Legends," fantasy or implanted memories. We can show a skeptical public that our numbers are beyond their wildest imaginations and that regardless of their belief or non-belief we need recognition and respect for having survived the most atrocious events known to humankind, hidden behind a mask of secrecy and disbelief. We also hope to make others more aware of the existence of RA/MC, the aftereffects of extreme child abuse, and the resiliency of the human spirit. Your voice will not be silenced or altered by anyone who has tried to discredit your experiences.

Breaking the silence imposed by their perpetrators is likely one of the most difficult things for an extreme abuse survivor to do. In a speech to therapists, Hammond (1992) noted that handlers want to make sure that victims don't consciously remember their programming and will make suggestions of amnesia and self-destruction to them such as, "If you ever remember anything… you will go crazy. You will become a vegetable and be locked up forever… and it will be easier to just kill yourself than have that happen to you, if you ever remember it."

Consistent with Hammond's clinical observations, 57% of 997 who answered the related question said that they had self-destruct programming installed in the

event they began to remember their programming. Seventy-seven percent of 1159 had been threatened with death if they even talked about the abuse.

This anonymous survey proved to be a safe way for survivors to be heard and believed. What a testimony to the human spirit that these individuals could step forward and break those bonds.

Another difficult aspect for extreme abuse survivors to process involves memories of murder. Their suffering is so real and raw, especially when faced with any of the following situations reported by survey respondents.[31]

	N	% "Yes"
Forced participation in murder by perpetrators	1095	46%
Forced to murder (or made to think I had murdered)a baby	1111	50%
Forced to participate in animal mutilations/killings	1110	53%
Witnessing murder by perpetrators	1102	54%
My own child murdered by perpetrators	1088	24%

A recurrent theme in private emails to me was participants' amazement at seeing the types of abuse/violence/tortures they had been subjected to as questions on the survey. Having no idea they shared commonalities with hundreds of others, many had believed for years that their experiences were unique. They had kept silent, fearing no one would believe them because of the nature of the horror they had endured.

In analyzing reports of survivors' memories, I joined the "Shocked and Awe" group above. I had believed I was the only survivor who had watched a person be flayed until I noted that 32% of 964 survivors who answered that question indicated they had witnessed the same thing. That's 307 people who will have this image burned into their brains for the rest of their lives.

Imagine for a moment that you are among the following groups of respondents who had endured only one of the horrors listed below, let alone the gamut of them.

	N	%“Yes”
Sexual abuse by multiple perpetrators	1125	79%
Being caged	1121	53%
Starvation	1098	48%
Forced cannibalism	1109	44%
Bestiality	1122	52%
Buried alive	1118	45%
Electroshock	1119	50%
Sensory deprivation	1099	61%
Sleep deprivation	1118	69%
Incest	1122	70%
Child pornography	1106	52%
Child prostitution	1094	46%

Now imagine that no one believes you. This is what it feels like to be an extreme abuse survivor.

One survivor wrote, “Thank you for conducting the ritual abuse and mind control study. You made me cry with your kind words at the top. Nobody wants to hear about it but silence is not helping the children who still suffer.” In her article “Human Rights Alert: Ritual Torture,” Stone (2007) echoes that sentiment: “It’s hard to talk about something this horrific, but we need to look at it together for the love of humanity.”

Caring professionals, including therapists, physicians, clergy, etc. who have worked with survivors, not only disseminated our announcement, but some also used the survey as a healing tool. A participant wrote, “I had to have help from my counselor to answer some of these questions, but I wanted a voice in this. It’s good to know you are not alone.”

Seventy-five percent of 994 respondents reported having a spiritual belief system. I find that remarkable after what they have endured, especially when one considers that 46% of 960 survivors reported that at least one spiritual leader was involved in their RA/MC abuse. Listed below are response rates regarding other spiritually-related memories.

	N	%"Yes"
Ritually abused in a satanic cult	986	55%
Ritually abused in a Gnostic-occult group	969	14%
Ritually abused in a witchcraft cult	971	23%
Ritually abused in voodooism	966	07%
Had memories of ritual abuse before seeking therapy/counseling	977	48%
Perpetrators had on at least one occasion made them believe that external entities/spirits/demons had taken over their bodies	996	53%
Had at least one demon alter	957	40%

Regarding spiritual issues, a pastoral counselor wrote,

> I very much appreciate your collective efforts to document the RA/MC issues. I have worked with hundreds of such survivors in the US, Canada and abroad since the late 80's. Our ministry focus is on helping them get well. Their abuse often seems to deliberately connect them to the realm of 'cosmic evil' which is a concept that some professional organizations do not acknowledge or understand but that our experience abundantly documents is critical to complete healing." (T. Hawkins, personal communication, May, 2007) Participants were given an opportunity to evaluate healing methods often associated with the concept of "cosmic evil." The first number represents those who had tried each method. The second number is the percentage who found it of some to great help.

	N	%"Yes"
Deliverance	298	57%
Exorcism	199	36%
Personal prayer/meditation	766	83%

Spiritual guidance/counseling	605	71%
Theophostic prayer	207	56%

Besides spiritual healing, survivors found other helpful therapeutic tools. Individual psychotherapy/counseling topped the list with 75% of those who had been to therapy considering it from much help to great help. Other methods garnering over 50% in the much and great help categories combined were supportive friends, creative writing, personal prayer/meditation, journaling, art therapy, drawing, painting, abreactive work, grounding techniques, self-care/self-soothing techniques, formal deprogramming, and spiritual guidance/counseling.

The authors are aware of no previous studies pertaining to the victims of government-sponsored mind control experiments. Because of the ever increasing number of survivors coming forward alleging this type of abuse, we felt it relevant to statistically analyze this aspect. Twenty-six percent of 1000 respondents who answered the related question reported that secret government-sponsored mind control experiments were performed on them as children. Further analysis indicates that 69% of 257 respondents who said they had been used in government-sponsored mind control experiments also answered that they had been ritually abused in a satanic cult. This lends credence to the theory that during the Cold War, the mind control doctors went to the satanic cults to find already dissociative children for their experiments.

The National Security Archive (2005) posted documentation revealing extensive relationships between former Nazi war criminals and American intelligence organizations including the CIA. Many survivors have alleged some of these same war criminals, using aliases, were complicit in their extreme abuse. From the survey sample, ten percent of 965 respondents reported that one of their perpetrators went by the name, Dr. Black; five percent of 962 reported a Dr. Swartz (Black in German); seven percent of 961 reported a Father Joseph; and six percent of 959 reported a Vaterchen (Father in German). These four aliases are names many survivors have independently reported to me as names that were used in their presence by Josef Mengele, the “Angel of Death,” the infamous Nazi-doctor who performed horrific experiments on the prisoners at Auschwitz.

One mind control survivor who took the survey wrote,

> Continue your good and valuable work. I was a ‘gifted’ child left unable to cope with life, struggling to survive on SSDI that the government did not want to pay me. They shattered our minds and left us to pick up the pieces.

Another wrote,

> Thank you for this opportunity to stand and be counted. I finally connected with a psychiatrist who believes. I have hope. I am telling the truth. I approached the psych community because I already "knew" that I had been a human guinea pig for the U.S. Government courtesy of my father. The truth must be told, documented, and published for the world to see. We continue to suffer. There were cover stories for my absences, lies perpetrated to discredit me that I would not be a "reliable" witness. I know the truth. The world needs to know. I am a 51-year-old female and at this time I feel I have nothing to lose. Anything that I had, I lost through my demeaning process through the Social Security Disability Insurance approval process. I thank "God?" that I am still alive that I may live to see some sort of vindication. I dream of admission, apology, just compensation from the U.S. Government for the atrocities perpetrated on their own civilians: children!

Not only do survivors have to live through their abuse, but they are also likely to face years of severe aftereffects. Fifty-seven percent of 979 who responded to the related question are currently in psychotherapy/counseling for help with RA/MC issues. Respondents reported the following problems as possible aftereffects of the extreme abuse they experienced.

	N	**%"Yes"**
Sleep problems	1118	90%
Post-traumatic stress disorder	1114	89%
Survivor guilt	1102	73%
Substance abuse	1084	48%
Self-mutilating behaviors	1095	65%
Dissociative flashbacks with satanic themes	1085	68%
Eating disorders	1105	70%

Survivors seeking help for their injuries are further penalized by many insurance carriers. Mental health reimbursement is commonly only 50% of costs

incurred. Because it is highly misunderstood by the lay person, dissociative identity disorder carries a myriad of problems, not the least of which is the diagnostic label. With 65% of 1007 respondents reporting DID, it is not difficult to understand how costly treatment can be as answers by 1448 respondents to the section “time spent in talk therapy” illustrate:

None	20%
Less than a year	09%
1–4 years	21%
5–9 years	21%
10–19 years	22%
20–29 years	05%
30+ years	01%

Many ritual abuse and mind control survivors are still walking through their nightmares and memories, left impotent to understand or deal with them alone. As they are given the liberation to tell and be believed, they will lose the fear they have been trapped in as evidenced by the words of these three persons who took the survey:

> “I was a little afraid I would get triggered but I didn’t which is good. What I learned is that I had a lot of abuse in my life and I am still here to talk about it.”
>
> “Thank you for your courage in ‘coming out’ and in developing this survey. Although it was mildly triggering, it was much more validating than triggering in the end.”
>
> “All people who have been sexually abused should never be made to feel mentally ill.”

The results of this survey will challenge many to step out of their comfort zones and change their worldviews. For those still in doubt I ask, How can we envision the future without visiting the past? Will we allow these heinous types of abuse to lie in the shadows, or do we have the courage to bring them into the light and face them?

I will continue to encourage survivors to find and use their voices. I believe it is our road to freedom. It liberates, invigorates and is the means to regain our personal power.
—Carol Rutz, August 2007

Conclusion

Where are the data? Skeptics who question the reality of ritual abuse and mind control have been asking this question for more than 20 years. Thanks to the efforts of 1471 survivors from around the world who punched their stories into the World Wide Web, we now have an enormous amount of data to hold out to that group of clinicians (and other skeptics) who believe that patients' reports of "seemingly bizarre abuse experiences such as involvement in organized occultist 'ritual' abuse and covert government-sponsored mind control experiments" can be explained "as contagion, unconscious defensive elaborations, false memory, delusion, or deliberate confabulation" (International Society for the Study of Dissociation (2005).

True to our mission to provide voice, validation, and visibility for survivors of extreme abuse, we encourage survivors to examine the survey responses to compare with their own experiences; we encourage mental health clinicians to use our findings in ways that will help their survivor clients overcome the aftereffects of torture; we encourage interested social science researchers to analyze our raw data for significant findings and to use it for comparisons with other research. Hopefully, responsible journalists will disseminate what survivors *en masse* have reported about these horrible crimes committed against them.

By presenting and publishing our results in a field of controversy; by exposing our findings about ritual abuse and its interplay with traumatic mind control, child pornography, clergy abuse, sex trafficking, and other forms of torture to a global community, we trust that the atrocities reported by survey participants will not only be validating to individual survivors but will also become socially validated reality.

In closing, we share some comments made by one of the 95 professionals who work with survivors of extreme abuse who reported on the EAS that they, themselves, are survivors of ritual abuse and mind control. This woman, a highly-respected researcher and clinical psychologist, wrote:

> Tortured by the silence and self-hatred and trying to find some redeeming value in your own life after having your life threatened every moment creates an indefinable terror. Being buried alive with bugs or dead animals and later being rescued by the same torturer who is now your savior. Being brainwashed that

you are one of them because you have had to kill an animal to save yourself or a sibling. Wrapped in paper and buried alive to later be thrown in a pond so that you can demonstrate how much you want to live. And, being raped and then forced to deliver and bury your own child when you are but a child is impossible to process. Repeated medical tests and intrusive treatments that the professionals can document but not explain contribute to a complete and utter hopelessness.

Who do you trust and what is real? Then, someone writes about and asks about those same experiences that haunt your life. All those ghosts that have terrorized your life and prevented a connection with another human being are suddenly documented in a survey. To learn that there are others with the same existence is bittersweet. It's something that you've never wished on anyone else, but are relieved to learn that the insanity is not just in your mind.

Unfortunately, the greater the numbers of strangers who have lived this tortured existence, the more validity there is that this atrocity occurs. This, the world needs to know.

References

Advocates for Survivors of Child Abuse. (2006). Ritual abuse & torture in Australia. Retrieved December 7, 2006, from http://asca.org.au/pdf_public/brochure_ritualabuse_2006.pdf

American Psychological Association. (2002). Ethical principles of psychologists and code of conduct. Retrieved February 21, 2007, from http://www.apa.org/ethics/code2002.pdf

Bottoms, B. L., Shaver, P. R., & Goodman, G. S. (1996). An analysis of ritualistic and religion-related child abuse allegations. *Law and Human Behavior,* 20(1), 1–34.

Crawford, S. D., Couper, M. P., & Lamias, M. J. (2001). Web surveys: Perception of burden. *Social Science Computer Review,* 19, 146–162.

Cromer, L. D., Freyd, J. J., Binder, A. K., DePrince, A. P., & Becker-Blease, K. (2006). What's the risk in asking? Participant reaction to trauma history questions compared with reaction to other personal questions. *Ethics & Behavior,* 16(4), 347–362.

Ganaway, G. K. (1989). Historical versus narrative truth: Clarifying the role of exogenous trauma in the etiology of MPD and its variants. *Dissociation,* 11(4), 205–220.

Gould, C., & Cozolino, L. (1992). Ritual abuse, multiplicity, and mind-control. *Journal of Psychology and Theology,* 20(3), 194–196.

Granello, D. H., & Wheaton, J. E. (2004). Online data collection: Strategies for research. *Journal of Counseling & Development,* 82(Fall), 387–393.

Hammond, D. C. (Speaker). (1992). *Clinical hypnosis in the treatment of multiple personality disorder,* (Cassette Recording No. 37–742–92c). Alexandria, VA: Audio Transcripts.

International Society for the Study of Dissociation (2005). *Guidelines for treating dissociative identity disorder in adults* (2005). Retrieved July 12, 2006, from http://www.issd.org/indexpage/treatguide1.htm

Karriker, W. (2007, March). We're off to tell the world. In Dana Raphael (Chair), *When I was a girl.* Panel conducted at the 51st Session on the Committee on the Status of Women, United Nations.

Kelley, S. (1988). Ritualistic abuse of children: Dynamics and impact. *Cultic Studies Journal, 5*(2), 228–236.

Kent, S. (1997). *Assessment of the satanic abuse allegations in the (name deleted) case.* Retrieved December 7, 2006, from http://www.arts.ualberta.ca/~skent/satanic.html

Kluft, R. P. (1989). Editorial: Reflections on allegations of ritual abuse. Dissociation, 11(4), 191–193.

Kossel, A., & Koetter, M. (2007). Piraten Software: Wenn Schadprogramme den PC den PC kapern. c't 2/2007, 76. (also at www.heise,de/ct/07/02/076).

Leavitt, F. (1997). False attribution of suggestibility to explain recovered memory of childhood sexual abuse following extended amnesia. Child Abuse & Neglect, 21(4), 265–272. Abstract obtained from PsycINFO No. 1997-03127-002.

Marks, J. (1979). *The search for the "Manchurian candidate": The CIA and mind control.* New York. W. W. Norton.

National Security Archive (2005, January 1). Letter to Edmund Cohen. Retrieved May 17, 2007 from http://www.gwu.edu/~nsarchiv/news/20050121/FINAL_Comments_Op_Files.pdf

Pepinsky, H. (2005). Sharing and responding to memories. *American Behavioral Scientist*, 48(10), 1360–1374.

Riggle, D.B., Rostosky, S.S., & Reedy, C. S. (2005). Online surveys for BGLT research: Issues and techniques. *Journal of Homosexuality, 49*(2), 1–21.

Ross, C. A. (2000). *Bluebird: Deliberate creation of multiple personality by psychiatrists.* Richardson, TX: Manitou Communications.

Rutz, C. (2001). *A nation betrayed: The chilling true story of secret Cold War experiments performed on our children and other innocent people.* Grass Lake, MI: Fidelity Publishing.

Rutz, C. (2007, August). The world will know: Results of the 2007 International Survey for Adult Survivors of Extreme Abuse. Paper presented at The Tenth Annual Ritual Abuse, Secretive Organizations and Mind Control Conference, Windsor Locks, CT. Neil Brick, Moderator.

Scheflin, A. W., & Opton, E. M. Jr. (1978). *The mind manipulators: A non-fiction account.* New York: Paddington Press.

Schmuttermaier, J., & Veno, A. (1999). Counselors' beliefs about ritual abuse: An Australian study. *Journal of Child Sexual Abuse*, 8(3), 45–63. Abstract obtained from PsycINFO. No. 2000–13414–003.

Shaffer, R. E., & Cozolino, L.J. (1992). Adults who report childhood ritualistic abuse. *Journal of Psychology & Theology, 20*(3), 188–193.

Singer, E. (n.d). Ethical aspects of polling and surveys. Retrieved February 22, 2007, from http://www.isr.umich.edu/src/smp/Electronic%20Copies/91.pdf

Stone, V. (2007). *Human rights alert: Ritual torture.* Unpublished manuscript.

van der Hart, O., Boon, S., & Heijtmajer J. O. (1997). Ritual abuse in European countries: A clinician's perspective. In G. A. Fraser (Ed.), *The dilemma of ritual abuse: Cautions and guides for therapists* (pp. 137–163). Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.

Young, W. C., Sachs, R. G., Braun, B. G., & Watkins, R. T. (1991). Patients reporting ritual abuse in childhood: a clinical syndrome. Report of 37 cases. *Child Abuse and Neglect, 15*(3), 181–189.

Notes

[1] Wise words from a senior clinician who silently observed the controversy this project generated among professionals in the dissociative disorders field shortly after the survey discussed in this chapter was announced.

[2] The first was written by Kelley (1988); the most recent by Pepinsky (2005).

[3] Compare with survivors of extreme abuse, many of whom have been threatened with death if they tell about their abuse.

[4] See Appendix for a list of all items included on the survey.

[5] The directions read: When responding to a specific item, check only the most appropriate response. If you prefer not to respond to a specific item, or if its meaning is unclear or not applicable to your situation, you may choose "No Answer" (n/a) by clicking on the circle in front of the item.

[6] This happened to itunes.com the night the survey went online (12-31-06).

[7] See the conflict about the Jet-Report on the reported RA case in Nottingham, UK as documented at www.cyber-rights.org/jetrep.htm.

[8] Under German law, providers have to store the connection data for six months.

[9] The "International Online Survey for Therapists/Counselors/Clergy Who Have Worked Professionally with at Least one Adult Survivor of Extreme Abuse (P-EAS)" was online April 1, 2007–June 30, 2007. The "International Online Survey for Caregivers of Child Survivors of Ritual Abuse and Mind Control (C-EAS)" was online July 8, 2007–October 30, 2007.

[10] A warm "Thank you" to all who helped us overcome the obstacles that could have prevented us from going forward with this project.

[11] SPORG-consulting provides the information pages on "Trauma and Dissociation" (in German language) at www.dissoc.de. Also available at this website is information about the German (speaking) Study Group of the International Society for the Study of Trauma and Dissociation (ISSTD).

[12] After some serious network stack problems with Fedora Core 2, the system was changed to Red Hat Enterprise LINUX (RHEL) Version 4.4.

[13] Dual CPU 550 MHZ (overclocked and updated to 700 MHZ during the survey), 512 MB RAM, 70 GB SCSI-Harddisk.

[14] 933 Mhz, 128 MB RAM, 20 GB Harddisk.

[15] A warm "Thank you" to all who supported this survey by announcing it.

[16] Ping, nslockup and trace

[17] It is worth noting that during the second survey, the survey for professionals, there were almost no attempts like this.

[18] SSL = Security Socket Layer

[19] Several of these Linux administrators reported in private email conversations that they took part in the survey as survivors of extreme abuse

[20] The American Psychological Association (2002) Code of Conduct does not require informed consent for anonymous surveys.

[21] The survey was conducted privately, not under the auspices of an institution.

[22] This line of reasoning is similar to that touted by proponents of the "false memory" syndrome. No scientific research has shown that therapists can implant false memories of RA/MC, although therapists have been sued based on anecdotal reports of such.

[23] Leavitt (1997) found that patients at a large medical center who recovered memories of sexual abuse during treatment scored lower on a measure of suggestibility than a psychiatric group without a history of sexual abuse.

[24] Writing about the ethical aspects of surveys, Singer (n.d.) states, "Few, if any, surveys put respondents at physical or psychological risk in ways that psychological experiments or, particularly, medical research

may do."

[25] Granello and Wheaton (2004) (as cited in Crawford, Couper, & Lamias, 2001) found that "the use of open-ended questions contributed to high abandonment rates" (p.390).

[26] Research on the differences between data collected online and by paper-pencil tests is equivocal (Riggle et al., 2005; Granello & Wheaton, 2004).

[27] US (774), Germany (273), UK (92), Canada (75), Australia (38), New Zealand (6), Armenia (3), Austria (8), Belgium (1), Bulgaria (1), Switzerland (13), Czech Republic (1), Spain (2), France (2), Greece (5), Ireland (1), Italy (1), Netherlands (8), Norway (10), Romania (1), Sweden (4), China (1), Colombia (2), Hong Kong (1), India (3), Israel (11), Kyrgzstan (1), Mexico (1), Malaysia (1), Saudi Arabia (1), South Africa (6), Undeclared countries (124).

[28] We found no studies to help us determine the typical dropout rate for online surveys.

[29] No more than 20% of the expected counts are less than 5 and all individual expected counts are one or greater.

[30] 65% of 1007 survey respondents who answered the related question reported a diagnosis of DID.

[31] First number indicates number of participants who answered the question; second number is percentage who answered, "Yes."

Appendix

Preliminary Results

International Survey for Adult Survivors of Extreme Abuse (EAS)©

(Online: January 1, 2007–March 31, 2007)

This anonymous survey (in both English and German) was conducted privately by Carol Rutz, Thorsten Becker, Bettina Overkamp, Ph.D. and Wanda Karriker, Ph.D. to explore commonalities reported by survivors of Extreme Abuse (EA) including, but not limited to, Ritual Abuse (RA) and Mind Control (MC).

No widely accepted definitions appear in the academic or survivor literature for the terms “ritual abuse,” “mind control,” or “extreme abuse.” The surveyors did not operationally define those terms for the EAS, rather they made the assumption that respondents would define the terms within their own frames of reference.

RA includes, but is not limited to, Satanic Ritual Abuse (SRA).

MC refers to all mind control procedures designed to make a victim follow directives of the programmer without conscious awareness including, but not limited to, government-sponsored mind control experiments (GMC).

RA/MC means Ritual Abuse and/or Mind Control.

The EAS was developed to gather preliminary descriptive data to obtain indications of the nature and extent of extreme abuse like that suffered by RA/MC survivors and to use its findings to give survivors voice, validation, and visibility. This document provides the following data:

- Demographics for total sample and for countries/country groups.
- Self-selected categories of extreme abuse across countries/country groups.
- Frequencies of “Yes” responses for statements in Memories, Possible Aftereffects and Personal Experiences sections for the total sample, for the self-selected categories of abuse, for respondents who reported ritual abuse in a satanic cult and for those who reported that secret government mind control experiments had been performed on them as children.
- Ratings for the effectiveness of 53 healing methods by those who had used the method.
- Rankings of healing methods reported to have been of much help or great help for those who had used the method.

The surveyors encourage:

Survivors to examine the survey responses to compare with their own experiences.

Mental health providers to use the findings in ways that will help their clients overcome the aftereffects of extreme abuse.

Social science researchers to analyze the raw data for significant findings and/or use it for comparisons with other research.

Journalists and other media persons to disseminate what survivors *en masse* have reported about their experiences of EA.

For further information about the survey and/or to apply for rights to use the raw data for social science research, contact the developers of the EAS at info-english@extreme-abuse-survey.net or info-deutsch@extreme-abuse-survey.net.

Preliminary Data

1471 participants from more than 30 countries answered at least one of the 248 questions on the Extreme Abuse Survey (EAS).

Countries of Residence

United States (774)
Germany (273)
United Kingdom (92)
Canada (75)
Australia (38)
New Zealand (6)
Armenia (3)
Austria (8)
Belgium (1)
Bulgaria (1)
Switzerland (13)
Czech Republic (1)
Spain (2)
France (2)
Greece (5)
Ireland (1)
Italy (1)
Netherlands (8)
Norway (10)
Romania (1)

Sweden (4)
China (1)
Colombia (2)
Hong Kong (1)
India (3)
Israel (11)
Kyrgzstan (1)
Mexico (1)
Malaysia (1)
Saudi Arabia (1)
South Africa (6)
Unknown (124)

Respondents' declared countries were placed into eight groups:

1. 774 United States (US)
2. 273 Germany (DE)
3. 92 United Kingdom (UK)
4. 75 Canada (CA)
5. 44 Australia/New Zealand (AU/NZ)
6. 61 European other than DE and UK (Other EU)
   (Armenia, Austria, Belgium, Bulgaria, Switzerland, Czech Republic, Spain, France, Greece, Ireland, Italy, Netherlands, Norway, Romania, Sweden)
7. 28 Asia/Africa/S. America/Mexico (AS/AF/SA/ME) (China, Colombia, Hong Kong, India, Israel, Kyrgzstan, Mexico, Malaysia, Saudi Arabia, South Africa)
8. 124 Unknown Countries (Unknown)

Gender

Country	Total	Female		Male		Transgendered	
	N	**n**	**%**	**n**	**%**	**n**	**%**
US	752	644	86%	99	13%	9	1%
DE	271	201	74%	67	25%	3	1%
UK	91	80	88%	10	11%	1	1%
CA	74	62	84%	11	15%	1	1%

AU/NZ	43	37	86%	5	12%	1	2%
Other EU	56	34	61%	22	39%	0	0%
AS/AF/SA/ME	27	23	85%	4	15%	0	0%
Unknown	126	88	70%	36	29%	2	1%
All	1440	1169	81%	254	18%	17	1%

Current Age

Country	Total	18–21		22–35		36–50		51–65		65+	
	N	n	%	n	%	n	%	n	%	n	%
US	763	12	2%	121	16%	313	41%	286	37%	29	4%
DE	272	46	17%	103	38%	103	38%	18	7%	2	1%
UK	91	6	7%	32	35%	31	34%	20	22%	2	2%
CA	73	2	3%	7	10%	30	41%	31	42%	3	4%
AU/NZ	43	1	2%	10	23%	16	37%	16	37%	0	0%
Other EU	57	6	11%	16	28%	32	56%	3	5%	0	0%
AS/AF/SA/ME	27	2	7%	12	44%	8	30%	3	11%	2	7%
Unknown	125	21	17%	32	26%	48	38%	24	19%	0	0%
All	1451	98	7%	333	23%	581	40%	401	28%	38	3%

Years spent in “talk” therapy/counseling for extreme abuse issues

Country	Total	None		Less than one		1–4	
	N	n	%	n	%	n	%
US	761	116	15%	64	8%	135	18%
DE	272	86	32%	30	11%	72	26%
UK	90	14	16%	9	10%	29	32%

CA	74	11	15%	3	4%	12	16%
AU/NZ	43	6	14%	6	14%	8	19%
Other EU	56	14	25%	6	11%	16	29%
AS/AF/SA/ME	26	8	31%	3	12%	4	15%
Unknown	126	41	33%	9	7%	33	26%
All	1448	296	20%	130	9%	309	21%

Years spent in “talk” therapy/counseling for extreme abuse issues (con’t)

Country	5–9		10–19		20–29		30+	
	n	%	n	%	n	%	n	%
US	157	21%	221	29%	55	7%	13	2%
DE	59	22%	18	7%	5	2%	2	1%
UK	22	24%	15	17%	0	0%	1	1%
CA	13	18%	24	32%	8	11%	3	4%
AU/NZ	17	40%	4	9%	2	5%	0	0%
Other EU	13	23%	5	9%	2	4%	0	0%
AS/AF/SA/ME	5	19%	4	15%	1	4%	1	4%
Unknown	19	15%	23	18%	1	1%	0	0%
All	305	21%	314	22%	74	4%	20	1%

Current Employment

Country	Total	Disabled	Unemployed by Choice	**Part-time**	Full-time Public	Self Employed

Public											
	N	n	%	n	%	n	%	n	%	n	%
US	755	221	29%	98	13%	64	8%	233	31%	139	18%
DE	252	68	27%	26	10%	43	17%	76	30%	39	15%
UK	87	39	45%	9	10%	7	8%	19	22%	13	15%
CA	74	29	39%	6	8%	9	12%	10	14%	20	27%
AU/NZ	43	15	35%	8	19%	10	23%	6	14%	4	9%
Other EU	55	22	40%	2	4%	6	11%	9	16%	16	29%
AS/AF/SA/ME	26	5	19%	2	8%	0	0%	10	38%	9	35%
Unknown	121	25	21%	20	17%	15	12%	35	29%	26	19%
All	1413	424	30%	171	12%	154	11%	398	28%	266	19%

Formal Education

Country	Total	Less than College		Some College		College Degree		Graduate Degree		(German Only) Finished Educ	
	N	n	%	n	%	n	%	n	%	n	%
US	761	69	9%	256	34%	226	30%	211	28%	0	0%
DE	265	45	17%	78	29%	84	32%	58	22%	7	3%
UK	90	20	22%	28	31%	14	16%	28	31%	0	0%
CA	74	11	15%	22	30%	19	26%	22	30%	0	0%
AU/NZ	43	8	19%	16	37%	7	16%	12	28%	0	0%
Other EU	54	6	11%	12	22%	11	20%	25	46%	0	0%
AS/AF/SA/ME	27	2	7%	8	30%	8	30%	9	33%	0	0%
Unknown	121	3	11%	38	31%	47	39%	23	19%	4	3%

All	1446	173	12%	458	32%	416	29%	388	27%	11	1%

Self-selected category of extreme abuse that best describes respondent's experiences

Country	Total	RA		MC		RA and MC		Other EA	
	N	n	%	n	%	n	%	n	%
US	582	110	19%	37	6%	340	58%	95	17%
DE	138	25	18%	6	4%	40	29%	67	49%
UK	62	17	27%	4	7%	33	53%	8	13%
CA	56	10	18%	8	14%	29	52%	9	16%
AU/NZ	38	10	26%	2	6%	21	55%	5	13%
Other EU	36	6	17%	4	11%	15	42%	11	30%
AS/AF/SA/ME	15	1	7%	3	20%	7	47%	4	27%
Unknown	60	12	20%	5	8%	28	47%	15	25%
All	987	191	19%	69	7%	513	52%	214	22%

For

Part 1: Memories
Part 2: Possible Aftereffects

Part 3: Personal Experiences

respondents were given the opportunity to answer each question either

1. N/A if the meaning was unclear or not applicable
2. Yes
3. Don’t know
4. Know

Numbers and frequencies of “Yes” responses for Parts 1, 2, 3 are listed below:

N	Total who responded to the question
% N	% N who responded “Yes”
n	Number who responded “Yes” to the question
RA	% n who self-selected RA as primary category of abuse
MC	% n who self-selected MC as primary category of abuse
RA & MC	% n who self-selected RA and MC as primary category of abuse
EA	% n who self-selected Other EA as primary category of abuse
NR	% n who did not self-select a primary category of abuse
SRA	% n who reported that they were ritually abused in a satanic cult
GMC	% n who reported that secret government mind control experiments were performed on them as children

Examples:

11% of 419 who reported “aversive hypnosis” as a memory chose RA as their primary category of abuse.

69% of 99 who reported “radiation exposure” reported that secret government mind control experiments were performed on them as children.

PART 1: My memories of extreme abuse include…

N	% N	n	RA	MC	RA & MC	EA	NR	SRA	GMC
Aversive hypnosis									
1119	37%	419	11%	6%	68%	6%	9%	68%	41%
Being caged									
1121	53%	599	17%	3%	62%	9%	10%	67%	32%
Being threatened with death if I ever talked about the abuse									
1159	77%	894	18%	3%	52%	14%	12%	57%	26%
Bestiality									
1122	52%	584	19%	2%	58%	11%	11%	68%	29%
Blinding lights									
1112	53%	591	14%	4%	63%	8%	11%	66%	36%
Bondage									
1125	67%	752	19%	2%	56%	13%	10%	63%	29%
Brain implants									
1100	11%	117	4%	12%	68%	6%	10%	62%	61%
Brain stimulation									
1124	36%	403	8%	8%	69%	5%	10%	64%	49%
Buried alive									
1118	45%	508	20%	1%	67%	4%	8%	78%	33%
Dislocation of limbs									
1104	26%	283	12%	3%	67%	9%	9%	71%	40%
Electronic harassment									
1127	41%	460	12%	8%	60%	10%	12%	60%	35%
Electroshock									
1119	50%	558	15%	4%	66%	7%	8%	69%	39%

Eugenics experiments									
1091	8%	90	02%	03%	78%	7%	10%	73%	71%
Experiments with dolphins									
1091	3%	32	3%	0%	81%	3%	13%	75%	75%
Experiments with non-human primates									
1090	10%	114	6%	1%	75%	11%	7%	77%	58%
Forced abortion									
1096	36%	395	18%	1%	61%	10%	10%	68%	30%
Forced cannibalism									
1109	44%	484	18%	0%	70%	5%	7%	80%	35%
Forced drugging									
1121	71%	791	18%	3%	58%	11%	11%	63%	30%
Forced impregnation									
1108	38%	416	18%	0%	62%	8%	11%	73%	32%
Forced participation in murder by perpetrators									
1095	46%	502	19%	1%	68%	5%	8%	80%	35%
Forced to abuse other victims									
1113	55%	615	20%	02%	61%	9%	0%	70%	30%
Forced to murder (or made to think I had murdered) a baby									
1111	50%	560	21%	1%	65%	5%	8%	78%	32%
Forced to participate in animal mutilations/killings									
1110	53%	584	22%	1%	61%	7%	9%	73%	30%
Incest									
1122	70%	780	19%	1%	54%	15%	11%	58%	27%
Injection of painful eye drops									
1094	19%	207	10%	4%	65%	9%	13%	66%	43%
“Marriage” to Satan									
1100	38%	419	19%	0%	69%	3%	08%	86%	32%

Microwave abuse									
1094	10%	112	3%	20%	54%	9%	14%	44%	48%
My own child murdered by my perpetrator									
1088	24%	264	20%	0%	67%	4%	9%	79%	33%
Near drowning experience caused by perpetrators									
1109	51%	565	17%	2%	61%	11%	9%	67%	33%
Non-lethal weapons abuse									
1101	50%	545	16%	4%	55%	15%	10%	59%	27%
Pornography (adult)									
1093	36%	396	16%	3%	56%	13%	12%	62%	28%
Pornography (child)									
1106	52%	578	17%	1%	62%	11%	10%	66%	32%
Prostitution (adult)									
1068	24%	261	14%	3%	62%	10%	11%	69%	35%
Prostitution (child)									
1094	46%	500	17%	1%	63%	10%	9%	69%	34%
Psychic driving									
1093	26%	287	4%	8%	56%	16%	16%	50%	40%
Radiation exposure									
1090	9%	99	0%	11%	72%	9%	8%	56%	69%
Receiving physical abuse from perpetrators									
1129	86%	966	17%	4%	50%	17%	11%	54%	26%
Sensory deprivation									
1099	61%	670	15%	4%	62%	10%	09%	62%	33%
Sexual abuse by multiple perpetrators									
1125	79%	890	19%	3%	53%	14%	11%	58%	27%
Sleep deprivation									

1118	69%	771	15%	5%	57%	12%	11%	57%	29%
Spinning									
1094	45%	491	13%	3%	68%	6%	9%	71%	39%
Starvation									
1098	48%	532	15%	3%	60%	11%	11%	64%	33%
Straight-jacketed									
1087	25%	267	12%	3%	67%	7%	11%	69%	43%
UFO abduction									
1074	6%	60	3%	5%	77%	7%	8%	73%	65%
Use of blood in abuse									
1106	63%	693	21%	1%	62%	7%	9%	71%	29%
Use of feces in abuse									
1106	55%	603	19%	1%	61%	10%	8%	70%	31%
Witnessing murder by perpetrators									
1102	54%	590	19%	1%	65%	7%	08%	75%	33%
Witnessing animal mutilations/killings									
1105	62%	684	20%	1%	60%	10%	09%	70%	31%
Witness physical by perpetrators on other victims									
1113	72%	804	19%	2%	55%	13%	10%	63%	28%
Other abuse(s)									
1114	79%	879%	16%	4%	51%	17%	12%	55%	26%

PART 2: Some of the possible aftereffects of extreme abuse that I have experienced are…

N	% N	n	RA	MC	RA & MC	EA	NR	SRA	GMC
Art productions with abuse/torture themes									

1064	52%	554	19%	3%	53%	15%	9%	59%	29%
Auto-immune disorders									
1079	42%	457	17%	4%	54%	17%	9%	57%	30%
Beliefs indoctrinated by perpetrator(s)									
1099	77%	848	18%	5%	54%	14%	10%	57%	26%
Cancer									
1056	8%	83	19%	4%	54%	16%	7%	65%	30%
Dealing with programs installed by perpetrator(s)									
1090	70%	766	16%	5%	61%	10%	9%	63%	31%
Dissociative flashbacks with satanic themes									
1085	68%	739	20%	2%	61%	8%	9%	71%	28%
Eating disorder									
1105	70%	775	17%	4%	50%	18%	11%	54%	24%
Fibromyalgia									
1069	27%	287	17%	2%	58%	15%	08%	64%	33%
Foreign objects in body									
1076	28%	306	12%	5%	58%	14%	11%	64%	34%
Hospitalization in a psychiatric unit									
1093	54%	592	17%	4%	51%	17%	11%	53%	23%
Infertility									
1070	16%	172	15%	5%	51%	19%	11%	52%	27%
Infliction of sexual pain on others									
1068	19%	204	17%	2%	56%	15%	10%	62%	27%
Infliction of sexual pain on self									
1068	19%	204	17%	2%	56%	15%	10%	62%	27%
Migraine headaches									
1093	62%	676	20%	4%	48%	17%	11%	55%	24%
Multiple sclerosis									

1054	2%	20	5%	5%	80%	5%	5%	65%	30%
Mysterious ailments for which a diagnosis cannot be made									
1086	60%	651	17%	5%	50%	17%	11%	54%	24%
Painful body memories									
1101	87%	954	18%	4%	50%	18%	10%	55%	25%
Post-traumatic stress disorder									
1114	89%	986	18%	5%	48%	18%	11%	52%	24%
Seizures with no organic basis									
1074	25%	273	15%	5%	48%	21%	11%	47%	24%
Self-mutilating behaviors									
1095	65%	715	19%	3%	49%	18%	12%	52%	22%
Sexually-transmitted disease(s)									
1068	21%	228	14%	4%	58%	14%	10%	59%	32%
Sexual urges triggered by feelings of threat, fear, shame, guilt, etc									
1085	65%	701	20%	4%	51%	16%	10%	55%	25%
Sleep problems									
1118	90%	1001	17%	5%	48%	18%	12%	51%	23%
Soft, brittle teeth									
1087	37%	404	14%	6%	54%	17%	9%	56%	25%
Substance abuse									
1084	48%	522%	15%	5%	50%	19%	11%	51%	24%
Suicidal thoughts around special holidays, birthdays, etc.									
1097	71%	778	18%	3%	52%	15%	11%	56%	25%
Suicidal thoughts immediately before traumatic memories surface									
1089	68%	737	19%	3%	53%	15%	10%	58%	25%
Survivor guilt									
1102	73%	806	19%	3%	53%	15%	11%	58%	26%

Thyroid problems									
1082	30%	320	17%	4%	51%	18%	10%	57%	27%
Unexplained bruises and wounds									
1088	59%	637	17%	5%	54%	14%	10%	57%	28%
Unexplained external scarring									
1072	45%	478	14%	4%	58%	15%	9%	60%	31%
Unexplained internal scarring									
1064	33%	349	14%	3%	58%	15%	10%	62%	29%
Unusual fears									
1110	85%	946	17%	4%	50%	18%	11%	53%	25%
Other possible aftereffects of Extreme Child Abuse									
1088	76%	827	18%	3%	54%	16%	9%	58%	28%

PART 3: My Personal Experiences as a Survivor of Extreme Abuse…

N	%N	n	RA	MC	RA & MC	EA	NR	SRA	GMC
Secret government-sponsored mind control experiments were performed on me as a child.									
1000	26%	257	3%	9%	82%	5%	2%	69%	100%
I have been diagnosed with DID (dissociative identity disorder/formerly multiple personality disorder).									
1007	65%	655	22%	2%	60%	13%	4%	68%	30%
My perpetrator(s) deliberately created/programmed dissociative states of mind (such as alters, personalities, ego-states) in me.									
1012	63%	640	16%	5%	69%	6%	4%	71%	36%
In my opinion, therapists/counselors/clergy should always take a neutral stance regarding the truth of survivors' memories.									
1013	46%	464	16%	8%	48%	22%	7%	48%	23%

A therapist/counselor/clergy with whom I was in a professional relationship sexually exploited me.									
1003	22%	217	16%	5%	58%	20%	2%	57%	29%
I am uncertain about the ideas, beliefs, and purpose of at least one group in which I was ritually abused.									
994	47%	471	20%	4%	60%	11%	5%	63%	31%
I have heard Greek letters such as Alpha, Beta, Delta, Theta, Omega used in connection with my abuse.									
1005	33%	334	11%	3%	77%	5%	7%	76%	48%
I was taken out of school to another location to be ritually abused and then returned to my school classroom.									
989	24%	238	13%	3%	74%	7%	4%	76%	47%
I was taken out of school to another location for mind control programming, then returned to my school classroom.									
988	21%	203	5%	6%	83%	3%	2%	75%	63%
I have experienced basic mind control programming in the control personality.									
998	44%	435	9%	6%	73%	8%	4%	70%	39%
I have experienced sexual mind control programming that was used by a handler for blackmail or personal use.									
1001	41%	415	10%	5%	71%	11%	3%	66%	39%
I have experienced mind control programming through which I was trained to become an assassin.									
994	18%	175	5%	3%	86%	4%	2%	78%	73%
I have experienced mind control programming designed to develop psychic abilities such as “psychic killing.”									
989	21%	203	4%	5%	81%	5%	4%	73%	56%
I have experienced self-destruct programming installed in the event I began to remember the programming.									
997	57%	565	14%	4%	72%	6%	4%	72%	37%
I have been given an assassination assignment by a mind control									

programmer.									
988	12%	117	2%	1%	88%	5%	4%	87%	75%
I was ritually abused in a religious sect (a group made up of dissenters from an established form of faith such as a Christian sect).									
993	39%	390	23%	2%	65%	8%	2%	76%	33%
I was ritually abused in a Fascist group (Neo-Nazi , KKK, White Supremacist or other group that considers itself the superior in race, creed, or origin).									
988	22%	215	13%	3%	74%	5%	4%	73%	53%
Alternative healing methods have been more effective in helping me to heal than “talk therapy.”									
999	31%	308	18%	6%	52%	18%	6%	61%	34%
As a child, I told an authority figure that I was being abused in what I now know was RA/MC.									
993	28%	278	20%	3%	64%	9%	0%	68%	31%
I was abused by at least one Catholic priest in connection with specific satanic rituals.									
992	14%	139	19%	1%	71%	5%	4%	83%	42%
I was abused by at least one non-Catholic clergyperson in connection with specific satanic rituals.									
990	29%	287	20%	0%	72%	6%	2%	86%	41%
At least one of my perpetrators has been convicted of criminal abuse toward me.									
992	7%	70	16%	3%	40%	34%	7%	50%	19%
Current access by RA/MC perpetrators involves harm to my physical/mental/spiritual well-being.									
1002	34%	345	14%	9%	59%	14%	4%	55%	29%
Perpetrators have on at least one occasion made me believe that external entities/spirits/demons had taken over my body.									
996	53%	530	18%	3%	66%	8%	5%	73%	29%
I had memories of government-sponsored mind control experimentation									

before I sought therapy/counseling.									
989	18%	175	3%	12%	74%	7%	3%	62%	79%
I have sought help from the authorities regarding current abuse by RA/MC perpetrators.									
997	19%	193	13%	11%	56%	14%	6%	58%	29%
Authorities have investigated claims I have made against my RA/MC perpetrators regarding current abuse.									
991	6%	64	14%	3%	59%	17%	6%	67%	28%
I have received helpful treatment in a hospital when treated for the aftereffects of RA/MC.									
989	19%	188	18%	2%	63%	12%	5%	67%	26%
I remember being used in government-sponsored mind control experiments in the United States.									
989	24%	234	2%	8%	84%	3%	3%	69%	85%
I remember being used in government-sponsored mind control experiments in Canada.									
987	8%	83	1%	8%	81%	6%	4%	75%	88%
I remember being used in government-sponsored mind control experiments in a country other than the U.S. or Canada.									
979	14%	137	3%	7%	83%	4%	3%	69%	87%
At least one of my mind control programmers spoke German or with a heavy German accent.									
977	28%	274	5%	5%	81%	5%	3%	72%	61%
At least one of my perpetrators went by an alias but I now know who he/she really was.									
989	31%	303	14%	4%	70%	7%	4%	75%	41%
I work in a professional role (other than as a therapist/counselor/clergy) with other survivors of RA/MC.									
978	7%	65	15%	8%	48%	25%	5%	52%	25%
I have visited places I thought I had never been before and matched the actual place to my drawings and/or memories.									

982	41%	402	16%	4%	64%	13%	3%	64%	32%

I have heard other survivors, whom I had not previously met, describe the same perpetrators of my own abuse.

986	34%	337	15%	6%	65%	11%	3%	67%	40%

I have heard other survivors, whom I had not previously met, describe the same places where I was abused.

978	32%	312	16%	4%	70%	8%	2%	74%	44%

I was subjected to government-sponsored mind control experimentation before I was born.

975	7%	73	1%	7%	85%	3%	4%	77%	88%

I was subjected to government-sponsored mind control experimentation at birth through 2 years.

975	14%	139	1%	7%	87%	3%	2%	72%	86%

I was subjected to government-sponsored mind control experimentation at ages 3 through 6.

978	23%	226	2%	8%	85%	4%	2%	73%	88%

I was subjected to government-sponsored mind control experimentation at ages 7 through 13.

972	23%	234	1%	8%	84%	5%	2%	72%	89%

I was subjected to government-sponsored mind control experimentation at ages 14 through 17.

974	18%	173	1%	8%	84%	5%	2%	73%	88%

I was subjected to government-sponsored mind control experimentation at ages 18 through 30.

974	12%	116	0%	10%	82%	5%	3%	68%	83%

I was subjected to government-sponsored mind control experimentation at ages 31 or older.

972	9%	91	0%	20%	65%	10%	5%	44%	58%

I am currently being accessed/abused by RA/MC perpetrators against my will.

983	15%	147	8%	12%	62%	11%	7%	56%	35%
I was ritually abused in a satanic cult.									
986	55%	543	23%	1%	68%	4%	4%	100%	33%
I was ritually abused in a Gnostic-occult group.									
969	14%	133	11%	2%	78%	5%	5%	65%	53%
I was ritually abused in child pornography.									
977	49%	474	18%	1%	69%	9%	3%	73%	35%
At least one group that abused me is national or international in scope.									
980	46%	451	12%	6%	70%	8%	4%	67%	43%
I remember seeing perpetrators cloaked in black robes.									
986	60%	591	23%	2%	66%	6%	3%	79%	32%
I remember seeing perpetrators cloaked in purple robes.									
965	24%	236	15%	0%	77%	5%	3%	83%	39%
I remember seeing perpetrators cloaked in white robes.									
960	36%	349	16%	3%	73%	4%	5%	78%	40%
I remember seeing perpetrators dressed in costumes.									
972	45%	441	16%	2%	71%	7%	4%	78%	37%
I remember seeing perpetrators wearing white doctors’ coats.									
969	52%	506	12%	5%	71%	9%	3%	70%	43%
The surname of at least one of my perpetrators was the same as a color.									
964	23%	224	9%	3%	79%	6%	4%	79%	53%
One of my perpetrators went by the name, “Dr. Black.”									
965	10%	100	6%	2%	82%	6%	4%	87%	60%
One of my perpetrators went by the name, “Dr Green.”									
963	13%	124	5%	2%	84%	6%	3%	85%	69%
One of my perpetrators went by the name, “Dr White.”									
964	9%	83	5%	2%	81%	7%	5%	83%	65%
One of my perpetrators went by the name, “Dr Swartz.”									

962 5% 47 4% 2% 83% 6% 4% 87% 72%

One of my perpetrators went by the name, “Father Joseph.”

961 7% 68 10% 0% 79% 7% 3% 88% 50%

One of my perpetrators went by the name “Vaterchen.”

959 6% 54 2% 4% 82% 11% 2% 74% 57%

I have watched a person be flayed.”

964 32% 307 16% 0% 73% 7% 3% 80% 40%

I have attempted suicide one or more times.

980 62% 611 20% 4% 54% 19% 3% 58% 24%

I have been transported out of my local area for purposes of RA/MC.

967 48% 465 16% 4% 71% 7% 3% 74% 40%

I have been transported out of my native country for purposes of RA/MC.

965 18% 177 7% 3% 84% 2% 3% 77% 69%

As a child, I fantasized that I was being tortured by doctors.

968 25% 241 17% 5% 61% 15% 2% 63% 35%

I am able to speak and/or write in an unknown language and/or code.

969 28% 269 14% 2% 75% 6% 2% 77% 41%

I have been hospitalized because of the aftereffects of RA/MC.

971 43% 419 19% 4% 63% 10% 4% 68% 32%

My RA originated from my family of origin.

979 63% 612 23% 1% 63% 11% 3% 70% 32%

My MC originated from my family of origin.

956 43% 410 7% 4% 72% 12% 4% 66% 40%

At least one spiritual leader was involved in my RA/MC abuse.

960 46% 438 20% 2% 69% 7% 3% 73% 36%

One or more of my alters had access codes.

967 34% 332 13% 2% 79% 4% 3% 78% 48%

I have (or have had) at least one robot alter.									
963	28%	270	10%	4%	73%	10%	2%	73%	50%
I have (or have had) at least one animal alter.									
961	34%	325	13%	2%	74%	9%	2%	73%	42%
I have (or have had) at least one demon alter.									
957	60%	379	18%	2%	71%	7%	2%	79%	34%
I had memories of incest before I sought therapy/counseling.									
985	64%	629	20%	2%	57%	17%	3%	61%	27%
I had memories of ritual abuse before I sought therapy/counseling.									
977	48%	467	22%	3%	61%	12%	3%	63%	30%
My programming included time-travel experiments.									
958	15%	146	4%	08%	82%	5%	2%	70%	60%
I have been given a seduction assignment by a mind control programmer.									
965	23%	219	8%	1%	83%	5%	3%	76%	54%
I have successfully sued my perpetrator(s) in civil court.									
964	2%	16	25%	6%	25%	44%	0%	38%	13%
I have a spiritual belief system.									
994	75%	745	19%	6%	56%	15%	4%	60%	28%
I participate in an organized religion.									
982	43%	422	22%	5%	53%	15%	5%	64%	23%
I am currently in psychotherapy/counseling for help with RA/MC issues.									
979	57%	562	22%	3%	58%	14%	3%	64%	26%
I am a therapist/counselor/clergy for RA/MC survivors.									
964	10%	95	24%	4%	51%	16%	5%	62%	29%
I was subjected to RA/MC before I was born.									
971	20%	190	14%	2%	77%	3%	4%	85%	48%
I was subjected to RA/MC at ages birth through 2 years.									
970	50%	481	20%	2%	67%	7%	3%	75%	36%

I was subjected to RA/MC at ages 3 through 6.									
982	70%	686	22%	3%	63%	9%	3%	71%	34%
I was subjected to RA/MC at ages 7 through 13.									
982	69%	677	21%	4%	62%	10%	3%	68%	33%
I was subjected to RA/MC at ages 14 through 17.									
976	51%	494	17%	4%	66%	10%	3%	72%	36%
I was subjected to RA/MC at ages 18 through 30.									
967	34%	333	15%	5%	68%	9%	3%	69%	38%
I was subjected to RA/MC at ages 31 or older.									
980	21%	206	8%	11%	66%	11%	5%	61%	39%
I was ritually abused in a witchcraft cult.									
971	23%	219	18%	0%	74%	5%	4%	90%	43%
I was ritually abused in voodooism.									
966	7%	67	12%	0%	72%	7%	9%	85%	48%
A circumcision (as genital mutilation) was performed on me.									
965	9%	82	15%	6%	59%	15%	6%	68%	34%

PART 4: Experiences with Various Healing Methods for Extreme Abuse (Respondents who had used the healing method rated it according to how helpful it had been in their healing)

Method	N	No Help	Little Help	Some Help	Much Help	Great Help
Acupuncture	351	30%	13%	31%	14%	11%
Aromatherapy	441	22%	21%	37%	13%	7%
Chiropractic	492	20%	16%	32%	21%	12%
Homeopathy	421	21%	20%	30%	16%	13%
Massage Therapy	604	13%	14%	30%	24%	19%
Naturopathy	287	23%	15%	33%	18%	12%

Nutrition & Diet Therapy	498	13%	17%	30%	21%	18%
Occupational Therapy	300	32%	20%	27%	13%	8%
Osteopathy	183	45%	15%	19%	10%	11%
Physical Therapy	397	21%	20%	29%	20%	10%
Abreactive Work	441	14%	9%	22%	26%	29%
Art Therapy	648	6%	11%	26%	29%	28%
Biofeedback	242	41%	16%	19%	11%	12%
Clinical Hypnosis	353	31%	17%	20%	14%	18%
Confronting Abuser(s)	434	38%	20%	19%	12%	10%
Creative Writing	740	5%	7%	24%	28%	35%
Dance Therapy	315	24%	13%	25%	19%	19%
Deliverance	298	33%	11%	12%	16%	28%
Formal Deprogramming	244	30%	9%	11%	17%	34%
Drawing/Painting	744	6%	13%	25%	28%	28%
Drumming	274	27%	13%	24%	15%	20%
Electroshock Therapy	134	83%	7%	4%	1%	04%
EMDR	331	33%	16%	16%	15%	20%
Energy Therapies	298	27%	11%	14%	23%	26%
Exorcism	199	59%	5%	7%	7%	22%
Feldenkrais	146	51%	11%	19%	8%	12%
Grounding Techniques	593	10%	11%	27%	27%	26%
Group Psychotherapy	567	22%	18%	28%	21%	12%
Hospitalization	540	35%	19%	20%	15%	11%
IndividualPsychotherapy Counseling	892	6%	5%	14%	24%	52%
Internet Support Group	600	12%	16%	25%	23%	25%
Journaling	830	6%	10%	24%	25%	36%

Left/Right Handwriting Techniques	470	18%	16%	26%	19%	21%
Local Survivor Support Group	419	22%	13%	24%	19%	23%
Music Therapy	422	13%	12%	26%	24%	26%
Neurofeedback	128	57%	9%	14%	5%	14%
Non-suicide Contract with Therapist	498	27%	12%	20%	21%	20%
Personal Prayer/Meditation	766	8%	10%	21%	21%	40%
Physical Exercise	753	8%	14%	30%	23%	25%
Psychodrama	297	34%	16%	18%	18%	13%
Psychotropic Medications	520	30%	15%	23%	19%	13%
Reading Survivor Stories	809	9%	17%	34%	23%	17%
Reiki	306	28%	17%	21%	17%	17%
Self-Care/Self-Soothing Techniques	739	6%	14%	27%	27%	26%
Spiritual Guidance/Counseling	605	16%	13%	20%	19%	32%
Supportive Family Members	585	21%	13%	19%	19%	28%
Supportive Friends	845	05%	9%	19%	28%	38%
Survivor Conferences	405	16%	11%	26%	24%	22%
Swimming	456	20%	17%	26%	18%	18%
Theophostic Prayer	207	38%	6%	13%	13%	29%
Twelve-step Programs	362	37%	14%	19%	12%	19%
Yoga	338	26%	19%	21%	17%	17%
Other Method(s)	420	11%	8%	21%	18%	42%

Rankings of Methods (by those who had used the method) Reported to be of Much Help or of Great Help

Method	N	%
1. Individual Psychotherapy/Counseling	582	75%
2. Supportive Friends	845	66%
3. Creative Writing	740	64%
4. Personal Prayer/Meditation	766	62%
5. Journaling	830	61%
6. Other Methods	420	60%
7. Art Therapy	648	57%
8. Drawing/Painting	744	56%
9. Abreactive Work	441	55%
10. Grounding Techniques	593	53%
11. Self-Care/Self-Soothing Techniques	739	53%
12. Spiritual Guidance/Counseling	605	51%
13. Formal Deprogramming	244	51%
14. Music Therapy	422	49%
15. Energy Therapies	298	48%
16. Internet Support Group	600	48%
17. Physical Exercise	753	48%
18. Survivor Conferences	405	47%
19. Supportive Family Members	585	47%
20. Massage Therapy	604	44%
21. Deliverance	298	44%
22. Theophostic Prayer	207	43%
23. Local Survivor Support Group	419	42%
24. Non-Suicide Contract with Therapist	498	41%
25. Nutrition and Diet Therapy	498	40%

26. Left/Right Handwriting Techniques	470	40%
27. Reading Survivor Stories	809	40%
28. Dance Therapy	315	39%
29. Swimming	456	37%
30. Drumming	274	36%
31. EMDR	331	35%
32. Yoga	338	34%
33. Reiki	306	34%
34. Group Psychotherapy	567	33%
35. Chiropractic	492	33%
36. Clinical Hypnosis	353	32%
37. Psychodrama	297	32%
38. Psychotropic Medications	520	32%
39. Twelve-step Programs	362	31%
40. Physical Therapy	397	30%
41. Naturopathy	287	30%
42. Homeopathy	421	29%
43. Exorcism	199	29%
44. Hospitalization	540	26%
45. Acupuncture	351	25%
46. Biofeedback	242	23%
47. Confronting Abusers	434	22%
48. Occupational Therapy	300	21%
49. Osteopathy	183	21%
50. Neurofeedback	128	20%
51. Feldenkrais	146	20%
52. Aromatherapy	441	20%

53. Electroshock Therapy	134	5%

CHAPTER 4

Guidelines to Differential Diagnosis between Schizophrenia and Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Ellen P. Lacter and Karl Lehman

Purpose of These Guidelines

The purpose of this chapter is threefold; 1) to identify the problem of misdiagnosis of Schizophrenia in adults with trauma-based disorders originating in ritual abuse and trauma-based mind control (we will refer to these hereon as Ritual abuse/mind control traumatic stress), 2) to provide diagnosticians unfamiliar with the clinical presentation of Ritual abuse/mind control traumatic stress with guidelines to facilitate recognition of such cases and to thereby reduce the likelihood of their being misdiagnosed as Schizophrenia, and 3) to provide diagnosticians experienced with Ritual abuse/mind control traumatic stress with guidelines to facilitate differential diagnosis between such trauma and schizophrenia in cases with complex clinical features and diagnostic questions.

Misdiagnosis results in harmful outcomes for ritual abuse and mind control victims in both the mental health and the legal arena. Harmful treatment decisions based on misdiagnosis include lack of provision of treatment for trauma, incorrect and excessive use of medications, sometimes with severe and irreversible side effects, reinforcement of victims' fears that they are hopelessly crazy and untreatable, long-term hospitalization, and involuntary hospital commitment. Harmful legal outcomes include incorrect findings of insanity, valid reports of abuse being viewed as delusional within law enforcement investigations and judicial proceedings, and forced conservatorship removing victims' basic freedoms.

In order to judge the veracity of victims' reports of these abuses, the clinician must have a basis for understanding what ritual abuse and trauma-based mind control programming are, that they do exist, the kinds of torture endured by victims of these abuses, and familiarity with the most common ritual symbols, artifacts,

and holidays utilized by these abuser groups. A general overview of these now follows.

The Existence of Ritual Abuse

The term *ritual abuse* is often used broadly to include any organized abusive practice that furthers the abuser group's ideology. However, the term is usually restricted to organized physical or sexual assault, often including homicide and severe psychological abuse, within the context of a spiritual practice or belief. Some definitions encompass any spiritual belief. But, most definitions use the term to refer to practices that involve physical and sexual abuse of children and adults, and human sacrifice to propitiate and empower malevolent deities, such as Satan, but also including many polytheistic gods and goddesses.

A substantial body of psychological literature supports that ritualistic abuse is a real phenomenon that must be correctly assessed and treated (Belitz & Schacht, 1992; Bernet & Chang, 1997; Bloom, 1994; Boat, 1991; Boyd, 1991; Brown, 1994; Clark, 1994; Clay, 1996; Coleman, 1994a, 1994b; Comstock, 1991; Comstock & Vickery; Cook, 1991; Coons, 1997; Crabtree, 1993; Cozolino, 1989, 1990; deMause, 1994; Driscoll & Wright, 1991; Edwards, 1991; Ehrensaft, 1992; Faller, 1994; Feldman, 1993; Fine, 1989; Finkelhor, Williams, & Burns, 1988; Fraser, 1990, 1991, 1993a, 1993b, 1997a, 1997b; Friesen, 1991, 1992, 1993; Gallagher, 2001; Golston, 1993; Gonzalez, Waterman, Kelly, McCord, & Oliveri, 1993; Goodman, Quas, Bottoms, Qin, Shaver, Orcutt, & Shapiro, 1997; Goodwin, 1993, 1994; Goodwin, Hill, & Attias, 1990; Gould, 1992, 1995; Gould & Cozolino, 1992; Gould & Graham-Costain, 1994; Gould & Neswald, 1992; Greaves, 1992; Groenendijk & van der Hart, 1995; Hammond, 1992; Harvey, 1993; Hill & Goodwin, 1989; Hornstein, 1991; Hudson, 1990, 1991; Ireland & Ireland, 1994; Johnson, 1994; Jones, 1991; Jonker & Jonker-Bakker, 1991, 1997; Katchen, 1992; Katchen & Sakheim, 1992; Kelley, 1989; King & Yorker, 1996; Kinscherff & Barnum, 1992; Kluft, 1988, 1989a,1989b, 1994, 1995; Lawrence, Cozolino, & Foy, 1995; Leavitt, 1994, 2000a, 2000b; Leavitt & Labott, 1998a, 1998b, 2000; Lockwood, 1993; Lloyd, 1992; Mandell & Schiff, 1993; Mangen, 1992; Mayer, 1991; McCulley, 1994; McFadyen, Hanks, & James, 1993; McFarland & Lockerbie, 1994; MacHovec, 1992; Moriarty, 1991, 1992; Neswald & Gould, 1993; Neswald, Gould, & Graham-Costain, 1991; Noblitt, 1995; Noblitt & Perskin, 2000; Nurcombe & Unutzer, 1991; Oksana, 1994, 2001; Paley, 1992; Pulling & Cawthorn,1989; Raschke, 1990; Rockwell, 1994, 1995; Rose, 1996; Ross, 1995; Ryder, 1992; Ryder and Noland, 1992; Sachs, 1990; Sakheim, 1996; Sakheim & Devine, 1992b; Scott, 2001; Sinason, 1994; Smith, C. 1998; Smith, M. 1993;

Smith, M.R., 1992; Smith & Pazder, 1981; Snow & Sorenson, 1990; Stafford, 1993; Steele, H., 2003; Steele, K., 1989; Stratford, 1993; Summit, 1994; Tamarkin, 1994a, 1994b; Tate, 1991; Uherek, 1991; Valente, 1992, 2000; Van Benschoten, 1990; van der Hart, 1993; Vesper, 1991; Waterman, Kelly, Olivieri, McCord, 1993; Weir & Wheatcroft, 1995; Wong & McKeen, 1990; Woodsum, 1998; Young, 1992, 1993; Young, Sachs, Braun, & Watkins, 1991; Young & Young, 1997; Youngson, 1993.

The publishing arm of the American Psychiatric Association, the American Psychiatric Press, published a text in 1997 explaining the importance of correct assessment and treatment of victims of ritualistic abuse *(The Dilemma of Ritual Abuse: Cautions and Guides for Therapists*, edited by Fraser). One national survey of 2709 clinical psychologists found that 30% claimed to have seen at least one case of "ritualistic or religion-based abuse" and 93% of these psychologists believed the harm actually occurred (Goodman, Qin, Bottoms, & Shaver, 1994).

A review of the empirical evidence of ritual abuse is included in a book by Noblitt and Perskin (*Cult and Ritual Abuse*, 2000, Chapter 6). Noblitt and Perskin (2000) propose that "Cult and Ritual Trauma Disorder" be added as a new diagnosis to the American Psychiatric Association's Diagnostic and Statistical Manual (DSM). Inclusion of this diagnosis in the upcoming DSM would facilitate proper diagnosis and treatment of individuals with Ritual abuse/mind control traumatic stress, and would reduce misdiagnosis of these individuals as having Schizophrenia and other psychotic or delusional disorders.

Trauma-Based Mind Control Programming

Organizations with a wide range of political and criminal agendas have historically relied on coercive interrogation and brainwashing of various types to force submission and information from enemies and victims, and to indoctrinate and increase cooperation in members and captives. In modern times, these techniques are used by political/military/espionage organizations, race/ethnic hate-groups, criminal groups (e.g., child pornographers and sex rings, and international traffickers of women, children, guns, and drugs) and exploitative and destructive cults with spiritual or other agendas. Methods of "thought reform" used by such groups include intimidation, social isolation, religious indoctrination, threats against victims or their loved ones, torture, torture of co-captives, and brainwashing through social influence or deprivation of basic needs, such as sleep or food (see *Releasing the Bonds: Empowering People to Think for Themselves* (2000) by Steven Hassan).

Trauma-based mind control programming is a term generally used for thought reform that goes beyond the above-described overt torture, intimidation, and brainwashing of the conscious mind, to covert installation of information in the unconscious mind through sophisticated, often technological, Machiavellian means. Mental health and law enforcement professionals working with severe trauma are increasingly seeing victims of such torture (Boyd, 1991; Coleman, 1994b; Hersha, Hersha, Griffis, & Schwarz, 2001; Katchen & Sakheim, 1992; Keith, 1998; Marks, 1979; Neswald & Gould, 1993; Neswald et al., 1991; Noblitt & Perskin, 2000; Oksana, 2001; Ross, 2000; Rutz, 2001; Ryder, 1992; Sheflin & Opton, 1978; Smith, 1993; Weinstein, 1990), and evidence has begun to surface in the legal arena (e.g., Orlikow v. U.S., 682 F.S. 77 (D.D.C. 1988).

Trauma-based mind control programming can be defined as systematic torture that blocks the victim's capacity for conscious processing (through pain, terror, drugs, illusion, sensory deprivation, sensory over-stimulation, oxygen deprivation, cold, heat, spinning, brain stimulation, and often, near-death), and then employs suggestion and/or classical and operant conditioning (consistent with well-established behavioral modification principles) to implant thoughts, directives, and perceptions in the unconscious mind, often in newly-formed trauma-induced dissociated identities that force the victim to do, feel, think, or perceive things for the purposes of the programmer. The objective is for the victim to follow directives with no conscious awareness, including execution of acts in clear violation of the victim's volition, moral principles, and spiritual convictions.

One common function of trauma-based mind control programming is to cause the victim to physically and psychologically re-experience the torture used to install the programming should the victim consider violating its directives. The most common programs are unidimensional directives communicated during torture and impaired states of consciousness to, "Remember to forget" the abuse, and "Don't tell" about the abuse. Similar to this are pronouncements; claims, curses, covenants, etc., paired with abuse, that convince personalities they are controlled by evil entities, or forever malevolently defined as evil, physically or mentally ill, socially devalued and isolated, sexually enslaved, a murderer, a willing cult member, a coven member, etc.

Much trauma-based mind control programming is significantly more complex, more technological in its methods of installation, and utilizes the individual's dissociated identities (personalities) to effect greater layering of psychological effects. Personalities are usually programmed to take executive control of the body in response to particular cues (hand signals, tones, etc.), and then follow directives, with complete amnesia for these events. Personalities are programmed to become flooded with anxiety or feel acutely suicidal if they defy program directives.

Personalities are often programmed to believe that explosives have been surgically implanted in their bodies and that these will detonate if the individual violates orders or begins to recall the programming, the torture used to install it, or the identities of the programmers.

In highly sophisticated mind control, the individual is programmed to perceive inanimate structures in the unconscious inner landscape. “Structures” are mental representations of objects, e.g., buildings, grids, devices of torture, and other containers, that “hold” programmed commands, messages, information, and personalities. In many cases, walls are also installed that serve as barriers to hide deeper levels of programming and structures. Dissociated personalities perceive themselves as trapped within, or attached to, these structures, both visually (in internal imagery), and somatically (in experiences of pain, suffocation, electroshock, etc.).

Structures are mentally installed in early childhood, generally between two and five years of age. Torture, drugs, and even near death, are used in a variety of ways that make it extremely difficult for the child to mentally resist any of the programmer’s input, and to ensure that memories of programming sessions remain dissociated. The child may be tortured on a device, and the personalities formed in this process then perceive themselves trapped on these devices. Or an image of an object may be projected on the child’s body or on a screen, or in virtual reality goggles, or a physical model of the object is shown. The programmer then tells the child that this object is now within him or her. Because the child is in an altered, disoriented state, and because the mind of the small child does not easily discriminate reality and fantasy (this process relies on the pre-school child’s use of magical thinking), the child now perceives the object as a structure within. Then, a code is installed for the programmer to gain future access to the structure, to erase it, or to input new information.

Immediately after the structure is installed, the programmer will generally command traumatized personalities to go to places in the structures, e.g., “Go inside the grid.” The programmer will generally also mentally install the perception of wires, bombs, and re-set buttons to prevent removal of the structure. The child is usually shown something to make him or her perceive these as real, e.g., a button on the belly-button.

Kinds of Torture Endured in Ritual Abuse and Trauma-Based Mind Control

Knowledge of the methods of torture used within ritual abuse and trauma-based mind control provides a basis for recognition of related trauma disorders.

Individuals subjected to these forms of torture may experience intense fear, phobic reactions, or physiological symptoms in response to associated stimuli. In some cases, the individual, or particular dissociated identities, experience a preoccupation with, or attraction to, related stimuli.

Victims may be able to describe the torture they have endured, or they may fear doing so. In many cases of ritual abuse and mind control trauma, the abuse remains dissociated when the individual first seeks treatment. Typically, the initial presenting problems are symptoms of anxiety, depression, or trauma derived from childhood sexual abuse, usually by a family member who is eventually understood as a participant in the abuser group.

The following is a partial list of these forms of torture:

Sexual abuse and torture.

Confinement in boxes, cages, coffins, etc., or burial (often with an opening or air-tube for oxygen).

Restraint; with ropes, chains, cuffs, etc.

Near-drowning.

Extremes of heat and cold, including submersion in ice water, burning chemicals, and being held over fire.

Skinning for sacrifice or for torture. Pain-inducing drugs, chemicals, and/or adhesive tape can create an illusion of being skinned without permanent injury or scars.

Spinning.

Blinding or flashing light.

Electric shock.

Forced ingestion of offensive body fluids and matter, such as blood, urine, feces, flesh, etc.

Being hung upside down or in painful positions.

Hunger and thirst.

Sleep deprivation.

Compression with weights and devices.

Sensory deprivation.

Changes in atmospheric pressure (for example, using rapid pressure changes in a hyperbaric chamber to produce the “bends” and intense ear pain).

Drugs to create illusion, confusion, and amnesia, often given by injection or intravenously.

Oral or intravenous delivery of toxic chemicals to create pain or illness, including chemotherapy agents.

Limbs pulled or dislocated.

Application of snakes, spiders, maggots, rats, and other animals to induce fear and disgust.

Near-death experiences; such as by drowning or suffocation with immediate resuscitation.

Forced to perform or witness abuse, torture and sacrifice of people and animals, usually with knives.

Forced participation in child pornography and prostitution.

Raped to become pregnant; the fetus is then aborted for ritual use, or the baby is taken for sacrifice or enslavement.

Spiritual abuse to cause victims to feel possessed, harassed, and controlled internally by spirits or demons.

Desecration of Judeo-Christian beliefs and forms of worship; e.g., dedication to Satan or other deities.

Abuse and illusion to convince victims that God is evil, such as convincing a child that God has raped her.

Surgery to torture, experiment, or cause the perception of physical or spiritual bombs or “implants.”

Harm or threats of harm to family, friends, loved ones, pets, and other victims, to force compliance.

Use of illusion and virtual reality to confuse and create non-credible disclosure.

To illustrate, ritual abuse survivors may experience intense phobic reactions to spiders or maggots (item 20). They may fear water and baths (items 4 and 5). They often fear hypodermic needles (item 18). They become easily too cold, too hot (item 5), or thirsty (item 12). They may have aversive reactions to cameras (item 23). They may become upset upon seeing babies, dolls, or particular animals, or they may strongly identify with abused and abandoned animals and children (items 22, 24, and 29). Sexual aversions are common (items 1, 23, and 24), as is vulnerability to repeated sexual victimization. Sexual compulsions and paraphilias, such as sadism, can also occur (Young et al., 1991).

Food aversions and eating disorders are common. Ritual abuse survivors may not be able to eat food that is brown or red because these remind them of feces and blood. They are often repulsed by meat, are vegetarian, or fast excessively, or regurgitate food, derived from forced ingestion of body matter and fluids (item 10).

Ritual abuse survivors, by and large, believe in the presence and power of spiritually evil forces, and often feel personally plagued by these (items 25, 26, 27, and 28). They may experience anxiety or an aversion to God and religion (items 26 and 27), or may alternatively be devout in their spiritual beliefs and practices.

Art productions, creative writing, and sand-trays will often reflect their torture; including knives, religious symbols, frightening figures, coffins, burials, etc. Children unconsciously re-enact elements of torture they have witnessed or experienced with toys and other objects. For example, a three-year-old boy wrapped a rope three times around his neck and pulled upward, as if to hang himself. A three-year-old girl sang about marrying Satan.

External or internal reminders of torture-related stimuli often precipitate dissociative responses, such as entering a trance state, falling asleep, or another personality taking executive control of the individual. Torture-associated stimuli may also elicit disturbing impulses to re-enact unprocessed trauma, such as impulses to self-mutilate, or stab or sexually assault another person.

Somatoform and conversion reactions occur frequently in response to ritual abuse and mind control trauma-reminders. Individuals often experience localized pain, especially genitourinary, musculoskeletal, and gastrointestinal, motor inhibitions, nausea, or even swelling in the affected area, prior to retrieval of any visual or narrative memory of the related torture. These are generally very distressing to the affected individual. Once the trauma is re-associated and processed within the context of psychotherapy or other forms of support, these somatoform and conversion reactions usually dissipate.

Survivors of trauma-based mind control often respond with distress to fluorescent lighting, since so much programming utilizes intense lighting (item 8). They may startle in response to a telephone ringing, related to programming to receive or make calls to abusers. They may believe they have microphones inside their heads that will relay their disclosures to their abusers (item 28). Fears of electronic or spiritual surveillance, and threats to loved ones (item 29), inhibit their ability to defy and escape their abusers or to disclose their abuse.

Victims of trauma-based mind control also usually experience intense or odd reactions to benign stimuli that were used in their programming. For example, they may have been programmed to “remember to forget” every time they see an apple, or to remember they are being watched every time they hear a police or fire siren. Similarly, they may make repetitive, robotic statements that do not make sense in

the context of dialogue, e.g., “I want to go home,” a common programmed statement intended to keep victims obedient to abuser groups and reporting to their abusers. Specific songs may be compulsively sung for similar programmed purposes.

All of these symptoms can occur prior to the individual having any conscious knowledge of the related abuse. This point is critical. Dissociative and neurobiological responses to overwhelming trauma (van der Kolk, McFarlane, & Weisaeth, 1996) often prevent these experiences from being processed into a coherent narrative memory. The diagnostician cannot rely on the patient to “put the pieces together” of their clinical picture.

Finally, generalized guilt and survivor guilt are strongly associated with ritual abuse, since participation in victimization of others is a mainstay of ritual abuse and mind control torture (items 22 and 29).

For more on recognition of symptoms specific to ritual abuse trauma, see Boyd 1991; Coleman 1994a; Gould 1992; Hudson 1991; Mangen 1992; Oksana 2001; Pulling and Cawthorn, 1989; Ross 1995; Ryder 1992; Young 1992; and Young and Young 1997.

Ritual Symbols, Artifacts, and Holidays Utilized by Groups Practicing Ritual Abuse

Practitioners of ritual abuse observe holidays and employ symbols and artifacts particular to their spiritual practices and beliefs. Victims may describe these, draw them, or be preoccupied with them. Commonly, victims experience increased distress as these dates approach and in relation to these symbols and artifacts. Recognition of ritual symbols, artifacts, and holidays alert the clinician to possible victimization in affected individuals.

Ritual holidays vary between groups, but some of the most common of these include victims’ birthdays, many Christian holidays (often in opposition to Christian doctrine and practice), All Hallows Eve through Samhain (October 29 through November 4), Candlemas (February 2), Beltane (May 1, and 10 days prior in preparation), Lammas (August 2), the vernal and autumnal equinoxes (March 21 and September 21), the summer and winter solstices (June 21 and December 21), full moons, new moons, and “Marriage to the Beast” in some practitioners of Satanism (September 5 to 7). Extreme distress, increased self-mutilation, suicidality, and hospitalizations in relation to ritual holidays are a strong indicator of ritual trauma (Ross, 1995).

Symbols and artifacts also vary, but commonly-reported ones include the five-pointed star within a circle (inverted in Satanism, upright in abusive witchcraft),

the six-pointed star, the inverted Christian cross, the symmetrical cross in a circle, the letter “A” within a circle (the cross of the “A” extends beyond the circle), the Swastika within a circle (also utilized by Nazi-agenda groups), the circle, the triangle (upright or inverted), the Ankh, the infinity sign, lightening bolts, the Nero cross (peace symbol), the “all-seeing eye” in a triangle atop a pyramid (as on the United States dollar bill), altars upon which people are physically or sexually abused or sacrificed, black candles (often associated with sacrifice), white candles, other-colored candles, chalices, robes (often black, sometimes white and other colors), masks, swords and knives, snakes, spiders, the head of the goat, red (blood), black (death), brown (feces), and fixation on particular numbers (often, 6, 7, 8, 9, or 13).

The above-described holidays, symbols, and ritual artifacts are generally not associated with victimization by political/military/espionage, race/ethnic hatred, or criminal groups (except the Swastika), unless they have a concurrent spiritual agenda. More detailed information on common ritual symbols, artifacts and holidays utilized by groups with malevolent spiritual agendas are available in published accounts. (See Boyd, 1991; Coleman, 1994b; Edwards, 1991; Katchen & Sakheim,1992; Pulling & Cawthon, 1989 (good illustrations); Ross, 1995; Ryder, 1992 (good illustrations); Oksana, 2001).

Primary Psychiatric Diagnoses for Individuals with Ritual Abuse and/or Mind Control

Trauma

Using present diagnostic criteria, individuals with ritual abuse and/or mind control trauma generally hold a primary diagnosis of Post-traumatic Stress Disorder (PTSD), Disorders of Extreme Stress-Not Otherwise Specified (DESNOS), or a Dissociative Disorder, most commonly Dissociative Identity Disorder (DID). Secondary diagnoses often include other Anxiety Disorders (especially Panic Disorder and Phobias), Mood Disorders, Eating Disorders, Sleep Disorders, Personality Disorders, Substance Abuse Disorders, Sexual Dysfunctions, Somatoform Disorders, Pain Disorders, Conversion Disorders, and stress-related physical diseases. The first step in accurate differential diagnosis from Schizophrenia is good working knowledge of the three primary diagnoses.

The reader is already likely familiar with the diagnostic criteria for PTSD. Briefly, these include three clusters of symptoms in response to having been exposed to a traumatic event. The first is persistent re-experiencing of the trauma in intrusive distressing recollections, recurrent distressing dreams, and the experience

of the trauma re-occurring, as in re-living the experience, illusions, hallucinations, and dissociative flashback episodes, and intense psychological distress or physiological reactivity at exposure to internal or external cues associated with the trauma. The second is persistent avoidance of stimuli associated with the trauma, including the inability to recall an important aspect of the trauma, numbing of general responsiveness, and restricted range of affect. The third is persistent symptoms of increased arousal, including difficulty falling or staying asleep, irritability or outbursts of anger, difficulty concentrating, hypervigilance, and an exaggerated startle response.

Disorders of Extreme Stress-Not Otherwise Specified (DESNOS) is a relatively recent diagnostic formulation not included in the DSM-IV (American Psychiatric Association, 1994), which perhaps better captures the symptom picture of ritual abuse and/or mind control trauma survivors. These disorders are explained in depth on the World Wide Web. (See Luxenberg, T., Spinazzola, J., &. van der Kolk, B. (2001), Complex Trauma and Disorders of Extreme Stress (DESNOS) Diagnosis, Part One: Assessment, *Directions in Psychiatry* (*21*); Luxenberg, T., Spinazzola, J., Hidalgo, J., Hunt, C., &. van der Kolk, B. (2001), Complex Trauma and Disorders of Extreme Stress (DESNOS) Diagnosis, Part Two: Treatment, *Directions in Psychiatry* (*21*), see http://www.traumacenter.org/DESNOS.pdf).

The diagnostic criteria for DESNOS include six categories, as follows: 1) Alteration in regulation of affect and impulses, 2) Alterations in attention or consciousness (dissociative symptoms), 3) Alterations in self-perception (negative, trauma-related self-representations), 4) Alterations in relations with others (inability to trust, revictimization, or victimizing others), 5) Somatization, and 6) Alterations in systems of meaning (despair and hopelessness or loss of previously sustaining beliefs).

Dissociative disorders bear a bit more explanation, since these are generally the least recognized and understood, and because they are so strongly associated with Ritual abuse/mind control traumatic stress.

The DSM-IV Defensive Functioning Scale defines dissociation as follows: “The individual deals with emotional conflict or internal or external stressors with a breakdown in the usually integrated functions of consciousness, memory, perception of self or the environment, or sensory/motor behavior” (American Psychiatric Association, 1994, p. 755). Dissociation has become understood as a common response to trauma. Dissociative responses are generally believed to first arise during traumatic experiences and to be fortified by intrusive and chronic re-experiencing of these experiences. Common dissociative responses include self-induced trance states, numbing of psychological pain, bodily self-anesthesia, partial or full amnesia for abuse, depersonalization (feeling detached from oneself, as if in

a dream), out-of-body experiences (the experience of observing one's self from without), and derealization (experiencing others or the world as less than real) (Briere, 1992; Ellenson, 1986; Hartman & Burgess, 1993; van der Kolk et al., 1996).

Dissociative responses also include many somatoform symptoms (Ross, 1997), such as transient or enduring numbness, insensitivity to pain, psychogenic stiffness or paralysis, genitourinary pain, gastrointestinal pain, musculoskeletal pain, pain on skin surfaces, disturbed smell or taste, psychogenic non-epileptic seizures, and impaired ability to see, hear, or speak. A body of research by Nijenhuis (2000) and colleagues argues convincingly that conversion and some somatization disorders are so intrinsic to dissociative disorders that they should be re-classified in the DSM as such. Nijenhuis has developed a scale to measure these, the *Somatoform Dissociation Questionnaire* (SDQ-20). An excellent book on the effects of trauma on health, injury, and disease is Robert Scaer's *The Body Bears the Burden: Trauma, Dissociation, and Disease* (2001).

Attention to somatoform dissociative symptoms holds particular importance for assessment of Ritual abuse/mind control traumatic stress. Somatoform dissociative symptoms have been found to be associated with severity of reported childhood trauma involving physical contact or injury (Waller, et al. 2000). Since victims of ritual abuse and mind control have experienced extreme pain and torture, this may explain the great frequency of somatoform symptoms in this population (Oksana, 2001; Ryder, 1992). A study utilizing the SDQ-20 significantly differentiated Schizophrenia and Dissociative Disorders (Sar, Kundakci, Kiziltan, Bakim, & Bozkurt, 2000). Patients with dissociative disorders scored about twice that of patients with Schizophrenia. Thus, severity of somatoform symptoms may help differentiate patients with Ritual abuse/mind control traumatic stress from patients who should be diagnosed with Schizophrenia.

The most severe form of dissociative disorder is Dissociative Identity Disorder (DID). The DSM-IV defines its essential feature as "the presence of two or more distinct identities or personality states that recurrently take control of behavior" (p. 484). Van der Kolk et al. (1996) describe such identities as "distinct ego states that contain the traumatic experience, consisting of complex identities with distinct cognitive, affective, and behavioral patterns" (p. 307). DID is associated with chronic, intense, and early abuse, often involving a combination of physical, sexual, and emotional abuse, and frequently including experiences of profound neglect, family violence, and a generally chaotic home environment (Chu, Frey, Ganzel, & Matthews, 1999; Draijer & Langeland, 1999; Ogawa, Sroufe, Weinfield, Carlson, & Egeland, 1997; Putnam, 1997; Pynoos, Steinberg, & Goenjian,1996;

Ross, 1995; Van der Kolk et al., 1996). Research suggests that its prevalence in the general population is at least 1% and closer to 5% in samples of psychiatric patients (Ross, 1997).

Symptoms of DID include: 1) rapid personality changes, e.g., timid to aggressive, regressed to mature, female to male, 2) references to oneself in the third person, 3) reports of voices, primarily inside the head, 4) marked changes in appearance, skills, preferences, knowledge, memory, and physical complaints, 5) significant loss of time, and, 6) in children, reports that an animal or evil entity made them behave aggressively/destructively. In young children, personalities are often in a process of formation rather than fixed, thus the proposed diagnoses of "Incipient" DID (Fagan & McMahon, 1984) and "Dissociative Disorder of Childhood" (Peterson, 1996).

In ritual abuse and mind control trauma, a few personalities generally form in response to severe, early abuse, often in infancy. Personalities continue to branch off of these in response to ongoing trauma. Not uncommonly, these individuals have hundreds of personalities, receiving the diagnosis of Complex DID.

Adult survivors and child victims of ritual abuse and mind control often withhold dissociative experiences unless the subject is directly explored by the clinician. Many dissociative symptoms may be difficult for individuals to describe because they involve "negative" rather than "positive" experiences, such as, 1) amnesia, 2) emotional numbing, and 3) loss of self-awareness, time, or physical sensation. In DID, the host personality ("The personality that has executive control of the body for the greatest percentage of the time during a given time period," Braun, 1986) may not report the presence of other personalities because the host fears them, is ashamed of them, wishes to deny their presence, or is not conscious of their existence (though internal personalities are usually aware of the host). In many cases, the individual withholds this information from the diagnostician for fear of not being believed or of being labeled "crazy," psychotic, or Schizophrenic, a very common diagnostic error (Bliss, 1980; Kluft, 1987; Ross, 1997). However, survivors are more likely to reveal dissociative symptoms and related traumatic experiences to clinicians who demonstrate an understanding of dissociation, are respectful, and do not invalidate their experiences.

Psychological Tests in the Assessment of Ritual Abuse and/or Mind Control Trauma

The purpose of this chapter is to provide guidelines for differential diagnosis within the context of the diagnostic interview and ongoing therapy rather than psychological testing. Yet, the literature on psychological testing with victims of

ritual abuse, and a substantial body of research on psychological testing of DID and other dissociative disorders, inform our clinical understanding in ways that generalize to the clinical interview. These are conceptually incorporated in our differential diagnosis chart below. In complex cases in which diagnosis remains uncertain, psychological testing is indicated and the findings summarized herein can inform that process.

A review of the literature yielded few scholarly works specific to psychological testing of adult victims of ritual abuse. The most notable are by Mangen (1992), Noblitt (1995), and Leavitt and Labott (1998a, 2000).

Noblitt (1995) found that patients reporting ritual abuse had significantly higher scores than other psychiatric patients on two Minnesota Multiphasic Personality Inventory (MMPI) scales designed to measure Post-traumatic Stress Disorder (PTSD). They had a mean of 86.3 on the PK scale, (PTSD by Keane: Keane, Malloy & Fairbank, 1984) and a mean of 85.8 on the PS scale, (PTSD by Schlenger: Schlenger & Kulka, 1989). Patients not reporting ritual abuse had a mean PK score of 58.3 and a mean PS score of 58.7. For patients reporting ritual abuse, 91% of them had scores in the clinically significant range (above 65) on at least one of these two scales. Both scales were developed based on research comparing MMPIs of Vietnam veterans with Post-traumatic Stress Disorder to other psychiatric patients.

Leavitt and Labott (2000) compared Rorschach results of three groups of patients; 1) patients reporting child sexual abuse within Satanic cults; 2) patients reporting child sexual abuse without ritual abuse; and 3) non-abused patients. The first two groups had histories of amnesia for their sexual trauma, memory recovery after the age of 18 years, and an absence of psychotic or neurologic symptoms. Groups were compared for frequency of 41 Rorschach content responses related to Satanic ritual abuse, selected by four experts in ritual trauma. The group of patients reporting abuse within Satanic cults gave significantly more Rorschach responses with Satanic content. The following specific percepts significantly differentiated the groups: robe, mask, body mutilated, babies damaged, ritual ceremony, threatening eyes, blood everywhere, special knife, goat reference, bondage, torture, sacrifice, hooded figure, altar, blood rituals, and circle. A second study revealed that these results were unrelated to patients' degrees of media and hospital milieu exposure to the subject of Satanic ritual abuse. In fact, less media exposure was associated with production of *more* Satanic content in patients reporting ritual abuse, evidence that reports of ritual abuse are not primarily the product of exposure contagion.

In an earlier study, Leavitt and Labott (1998a) found that patients reporting Satanic ritual abuse provided more Satanic-content responses in a word association

test than patients reporting non-ritual sexual abuse. They also provided fewer normative responses, understandable given the pervasive nature of ritual trauma and the paucity of normal childhood experience for so many of these victims.

Mangen (1992) performed approximately 25 psychological evaluations with patients already identified as having been victimized within Satanic cults, including the Wechsler Adult Intelligence Scale-Revised (WAIS-R), Rorschach, Thematic Apperception Test (TAT) or other story-telling test, human figure drawings, and more.

Mangen found that the "testing" situation itself often induced great fear in these patients, related to the frequent "tests" of abilities within ritual abuse. Test stimuli, even benign or familiar stimuli, often acted as trauma reminders and precipitated trauma reactions and dissociative "switching" of personalities. He observed that "many responses given by these patients sound blatantly psychotic" (p. 154), but closer scrutiny revealed that these were derived from the ritual abuse and the traumatized level of functioning. He explains the importance of understanding ritual abuse practices, symbols, holidays, etc., as emphasized above.

Mangen found these individuals were of at least average intelligence. However, signs of cognitive slippage and inefficiency occurred as trauma impinged on thought processes. Idiosyncratic, personalized, and even bizarre responses to test stimuli were common. For example, patients often provided disorganized responses to intelligence tests involving numbers, and in particular, having to repeat series of numbers backwards, since numbers and reversal of numbers and letters are common in ritual practices and programming. Mangen noted that words often lost their meaning as symbols, and were perceived as dangerous in themselves, related to abusers communicating deadly messages with words, and punishment by abusers for incorrect verbal responses. Visual images also disorganized thought processes. E.g., one woman froze when given puzzle pieces of a human figure to assemble. When asked what had happened, she "switched" into a young personality who explained that she had participated in rituals involving people being cut into pieces, but had never been told to try to put the people back together.

Mangen emphasized that such disorganized episodes are frequent, but exist side-by-side with trauma-free spheres of cognitive functioning. He suggests that the traumatized thought processes are state-dependent, and that these patients readily enter states of traumatized functioning.

Mangen's Rorschach observations are especially revealing. Patients tended to provide images that were perceptually accurate (good form); i.e., they were largely consistent with shapes in the inkblot. In contrast, patients with Schizophrenia often

have poor perceptual accuracy (poor form) on the Rorschach, a sign of more impaired perceptual and thought processes.

Though form was generally adequate, associations to the blots were replete with traumatic imagery. E.g., a perception of a person might fit the blot, but the associations might include themes of cutting and murdering babies, eating flesh, evil, etc., additions that would appear bizarre if not for the ritual trauma. Such trauma-driven associations might be made with flat affect or flooded affect. In some cases, perceptual distortions (poor form) were more central, but even these were often resolved in light of the abuse. For example, one patient perceived a person with women's breasts and a penis, an incongruous combination (INCOM) that might indicate psychosis, if not for the fact that some sexual rituals involve people costumed to appear bi-gender. Yellow was perceived by another patient as angry and as urine "poured all over me." This response becomes understandable if the clinician knows that abusers often urinate on the victim, in some cases with the intent to dominate the spirit of the victim with their own spirits.

Mangen explains that drawings also contain elements that would appear bizarre without an understanding of the underlying trauma. For example, trees may contain eyes, hidden people, and blood dripping from severed limbs. Moore (1994) notes that in human figure drawings of ritual abuse victims, arms often abruptly end, appear torn off or jagged, or have unusual endings unlike hands. Ritual acts, symbols, candles, pentagrams, inverted crosses, robes, dripping blood, etc., may be graphically represented, particularly if the abuse is conscious. Cohen and Cox (1995) include a series of drawings depicting the unfolding of memories of an adult woman ritually abused as a child, replete with graphic memories of abusive rituals, ritual artifacts, her terror, phallic symbols of sexual abuse, and dissociative responses, such as multiple self-representations in one drawing, and changes in developmental level across drawings in relation to the age of the personality making the picture.

Mangen reports that ritual abuse victims demonstrate a damaged experience of self on projective tests such as the Rorschach and TAT. Responses demonstrate a lack of self-agency, that is, a sense of lack of control over one's life and actions. Figures are often perceived as helpless or passive. Body integrity is often impaired; figures are seen as broken, devoured, harmed, etc. Self affect is inconsistent and incongruent. For example, a figure may be described as frightened and laughing, evil and good, etc. Dissociative processes are evident in illogical shifts and transpositions. TAT stories include confusion in regard to time, states of waking and sleeping, life and death, here and not here, and sudden changes in what characters know, think, and want.

TAT stories reflect interpersonal estrangement and malevolence. Themes of caring and kindness tend to be fleeting. Themes of deception and betrayal are common; “things are not what they seem.” Kind adults turn threatening. Child figures may feign compliance, but are described as actually pretending or escaping in their minds (dissociating). Responses are consistent with the devastating and pervasive abuse these victims have experienced, so often including immediate family members.

Affect dysregulation and emotional intensity pervade test responses. Primitive violent imagery related to ritual trauma is common in Rorschach responses and TAT stories. There is a paucity of positively tinged affective experiences, such as love and hope. Terror and despair dominate. Fear of annihilation and abandonment are more common than fear of loss of love. Some responses may reflect identification with aggressors.

Dissociative responses are observed throughout the evaluation process. Blocking of affect may occur as trauma is described. Overwhelming stimuli can precipitate switching of personalities. There may be obvious changes in vocal presentation and general demeanor. Personalities may identify themselves by name. They may relay accounts of horrible abuse unknown to the host and the host may return with complete amnesia for the event. Or dissociative episodes may be more subtle, and not distinguished unless the evaluator looks for amnestic gaps, such as the repetition of test questions later in the evaluation process to determine if prior responses are recalled.

Mangen explains that the patient may not be able to reveal the “secret” of the abuse and that personalities who identify with the cult experience tend not to present themselves. Thus the clinician must work with the patient to “help make the invisible visible” (p. 155). However, he states that much more research is needed on the use of psychological testing in identifying severe trauma, dissociation, and in particular ritual trauma, to help clinicians to recognize patients who are still preserving the “secret” and not yet revealing their ritual abuse.

Since 1989, a number of assessment and screening tools have been proven very useful in discovering dissociative symptomatology. These tools can play a critical role in differentiating Dissociative Disorders from Schizophrenia (Steinberg, Cicchetti, Buchanan, Rakfeldt & Rounsaville, 1994; Welburn, Fraser, Jordan, Cameron, Webb, & Raine, 2003), thereby making an important contribution to differential diagnosis of Ritual abuse/mind control traumatic stress from Schizophrenia. Administration and scoring are simple, not requiring specialized training in psychological testing. These include:

The Dissociative Experiences Scale (DES), a 28-item self-report measure (Carlson & Putnam, 1993; Carlson, Putnam, Ross, Torem, Coons, Dill, Loewenstein, & Braun, 1993).

The Dissociative Disorders Interview Schedule DSM-IV Version (DDIS), a highly structured interview administered in 30 to 45 minutes (Ross, 1989; Ross, 1997).

The Dissociation Questionnaire (DIS-Q) (Vanderlinden, Van Dyck, Vandereycken, & Vertommen, 1991).

Questionnaire of Experiences of Dissociation (QED) (Riley, 1988).

Structured Clinical Interview for DSM-IV Dissociative Disorders (SCID-D-R) (Steinberg, 1996).

S*tructured Interview of Disorders of Extreme Stress* (SIDES) (Pelcovitz, van der Kolk, Roth, Mandel, Kaplan, & Resicket, 1997). This tool for assessing extreme traumatic stress includes a subscale, "Alterations in Attention or Consciousness," which has sub-categories of amnesia, dissociative episodes, depersonalization.

Somatoform Dissociation Questionnaire (SDQ-20), (Nijenhuis, 2000).

Adolescent Dissociative Experiences Scale-II (A-DES) (Armstrong, Putnam, Carlson, Libero, & Smith, 1997).

Differential diagnosis of children with ritual trauma is beyond the scope of this paper. However, three widely-used scales that screen for dissociative disorders are included for reference:

Children's Perceptual Alteration Scale (Evers-Szostak & Sanders 1992).

Child Dissociative Checklist (Putnam, Helmers, & Trickett,1993;Version 3).

Child Dissociation Problem Checklist (Peterson, 1991).

A substantial body of research has identified a number of Rorschach indicators that differentiate DID and other dissociative disorders from other mental disorders (Armstrong, 1991; Danesino, Daniels, & McLaughlin, 1979; Labott, Leavitt, Braun, & Sachs, 1992; Labott & Wallach, 2002; Leavitt & Labott, 1998b; Lovitt & Lefkoff, 1985; Scroppo, Drob, Weinberger, & Eagle, 1998; Silberg, 1998; Wagner, Allison, & Wagner, 1983; Wagner & Heise, 1974; Young, Wagner, & Finn, 1994).

Not surprisingly, individuals with DID produce more traumatized content than many other populations, including perceptions of blood, anatomy, and morbidity (images of things that are damaged, diseased, mutilated, dead, etc.), and assault or pursuit, consistent with their history of severe trauma and intense somatic

concerns. Traumatic imagery in the blots can precipitate intense anxiety, flashbacks, autohypnotic trance states, or a change in personality. Silberg (1998) found that dissociative children and adolescents perceived in a battery of tests (including the Rorschach) produced more images of torture, mutilation, and malevolent religiosity (sacrificial ceremonies, devils, etc.) than other patients. Some reported that symbols of Satan or devils had been used to terrorize them.

Patients with DID have an elevated number of responses depicting fragmentation, that is, the perception of objects as divided, torn, cut, broken, or split, paralleling their lack of integration of consciousness and a sense of damaged body integrity. They tend to form highly atypical images (high Xu and low X+% in the Exner (1978) system), indicating a tendency to see the world in an unconventional manner. They tend to see incompatible relationships in the blots, such as inappropriate condensation of images into single objects (INCOM) and implausible relationships between objects (FABCOM). These findings derive, in part, from dissociation and their heightened imaginative capacity, and can appear like Rorschach responses of Schizophrenia in their divergence from conventionality and reality.

However, patients with DID tend to see few severely distorted responses (X-) and more whole and real objects than part and imaginary objects, in contrast to patients with Schizophrenia. They also tend to have at least one human movement response with unusually well-articulated form (M+), an indicator of normal psychological development that is atypical of psychotic subjects. They also tended to have a very large number of responses involving the perception of depth, distance, or dimensionality (high FD), which is associated with a good capacity for intellectual self-observation and introspection (Armstrong & Loewenstein, 1990). This also corresponds with derealization experiences in which things appear far away, distorted, or unreal.

DID patients have some tendency to respond to color more than form in color responses (total CF and C responses is greater than total FC responses), including color responses of both positive (e.g., a flower) and negative (e.g., blood) connotations (Wagner et al., 1983, 1994). Color dominating form is related to weak regulation of affect and behavior, also consistent with severe trauma and subsequent dysfunctionality.

DID patients have a large number of responses involving the perception of movement (e.g., a bird flying, a woman sewing). This is associated with heightened imaginative capacity and is consistent with the capacity of individuals with DID to dissociate (self-induced trance, retreat into their inner world, switching to other personalities) to mentally escape trauma. Dissociative children and adolescents have also been found to be fantasy-prone, relying more than other patients on

dissociative coping mechanisms such as pretending, forgetting, wishing, sleeping, extreme dichotomization of things, and mental magical transformations (e.g., evil becomes good, dead become alive) (Rhue, Lynn, & Sandberg, 1995; Silberg, 1998).

These Rorschach indicators have relevance for diagnostic interviews with victims of ritual abuse and mind control since most of these victims are highly dissociative. The clinician should expect intrusive traumatic images and fears to impinge on thought processes and to generate dissociative responses. Identity and self-expression are likely to be incohesive. The environment may be perceived and described unconventionally. Moderate dysfunction in regulation of behavior and affect can be expected. These effects are likely to be magnified in ritual abuse and mind control trauma since the abuse is so extensive, and often begins in infancy or early childhood.

Sources of Misdiagnosis of Schizophrenia in Cases of Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Symptoms of PTSD, DESNOS, and Dissociative Disorders often present as similar to symptoms of Schizophrenia. Hallucinations, delusions, and thought disorders, long believed to be the hallmark of Schizophrenia, are now being understood as commonplace to trauma disorders. Disorders of extreme stress have a profound effect on cognition, perception, identity, social relationships, stress-tolerance, and regulation of affect and behavior. And dissociative phenomena disturb the integrative functions of consciousness, memory, identity, and sensory perception severely enough that the clinical picture begins to resemble the confusion of Schizophrenia. Thus the high rates of this misdiagnosis, and years of treatment before proper diagnosis (Bliss, 1980; Kluft, 1987; Ross, 1997).

Schneiderian first rank symptoms, historically considered to be classic features of Schizophrenia, are actually more prevalent in DID than in Schizophrenia. A comparison of 1739 schizophrenics with 368 MPD (Multiple Personality Disorder; the designation for DID in 1990) patients found that schizophrenics averaged 1.3 Schneiderian first rank symptoms, while MPD subjects averaged 4.9 (Ross, Miller, Reagor, Bjornson, Fraser, & Anderson, 1990).

Similarly, Ellason and Ross (1995) compared 108 patients with DID patients with 240 patients with Schizophrenia. They found that positive symptoms were more severe in the DID group, while the negative symptoms were more severe in Schizophrenia. Positive symptoms include delusions, conceptual disorganization, hallucinatory behavior, excitement, grandiosity, suspiciousness, and hostility. Negative symptoms include blunted affect, emotional withdrawal, poor rapport,

passive-apathetic social withdrawal, difficulty in abstract thinking, poverty of thought and spontaneous activity, and stereotyped thinking/behavior.

Schneiderian positive symptoms common in DID include hallucinations of voices commenting on one's behavior, conversing, or arguing (voices are the most common symptom, Ross et al., 1990); thought insertion (the belief that thoughts have been placed into one's mind); thought withdrawal (the belief that thoughts are being taken from one's mind); audible thoughts (hearing one's thoughts spoken aloud); delusions of control; and somatic passivity (the belief that the body is being influenced by an external force or power) (Kluft, 1987; Ross et al., 1990). True thought broadcasting (the belief that one's thoughts are transmitted to others all around, often via some form of media), a Schneiderian first rank symptom, tends not to occur in DID. However, a suspicion that others are able to read one's mind, especially a parent or a therapist, does occur in DID (Kluft, 1987).

When trauma-based disorders originate in experiences of ritual abuse and/or mind control, diagnostic questions become even more complex, and misdiagnosis of Schizophrenia more likely. Much of the basis for misdiagnosis lies in the DSM-IV's definitions of delusions and hallucinations, and the diagnostic criteria for Schizophrenia.

The DSM-IV defines a delusion as:

> A false belief based on incorrect inference about external reality that is firmly sustained despite what almost everybody else believes and despite what constitutes incontrovertible and obvious proof or evidence to the contrary. The belief is not one ordinarily accepted by other members of the person's culture or subculture (e.g. it is not an article of religious faith)… (American Psychiatric Association, 1994, p. 765).

Belief in the existence of ritual abuse and mind control is not in the realm of acceptance in mainstream Western culture, and therefore likely to be mistaken for delusional. Information on ritual abuse and mind control is generally unavailable due to: 1) the secrecy preserved by the underground abuser groups, 2) profound dissociative responses in the victims limiting their own knowledge of their abuse history, 3) victims' fear of disclosure (Fraser, 1997b; Young & Young, 1997), 4) abusers' use of sophisticated mind control techniques designed specifically to prevent victims from gaining any conscious awareness of the abuse, 5) use of torture and illusion to instill bizarre "cover memories" to undermine victims' credibility and make them appear insane, and 6) claims that memories of ritual abuse are false, grossly exaggerated, or the product of bad therapy by organizations that have had considerable influence in the media and much presence in the courts,

such as the False Memory Syndrome Foundation (Brown, Scheflin, & Hammond, 1998; Coons, 1997; Whitfield, Silberg, & Fink, 2002; Young & Young, 1997).

This coordinated effort to discredit reports of ritual abuse and mind control is supported by the natural human tendency to dismiss these heinous crimes as impossible because they are too disturbing to believe. Health and law enforcement officials often believe victims' accounts upon first hearing them. But within hours or days, many come to view the victim as psychotic. This is often based in a emotional aversion for the material, albeit often an unconscious reaction. In contrast, clinicians and law enforcement officials who accept that these crimes are real are often ostracized by their colleagues, and often experience significant secondary traumatic stress (Perlman, 1995), and painful shifts in their view of humanity, their communities, and the world.

The subject of ritual abuse also has little presence in recent mainstream professional literature. A good many psychology books and journal articles exposed ritual abuse in the early 1990s. But since 1995, the number of publications has dropped dramatically, as mental health professionals reeled from legal and media accusations of "implanting false memories" of child abuse, particularly ritual abuse. Since then, many psychotherapists treating victims of these abuses have become very guarded about divulging their clinical findings, and many medical and mental health professionals now peremptorily dismiss all reports of ritual abuse as delusional.To the uninformed or misinformed clinician, common beliefs and behaviors associated with ritual trauma and mind control are indistinguishable from many types of delusions associated with Schizophrenia or Delusional Disorder, per DSM-IV definitions (pp. 765–766). Reports of torture by organized abuser groups conspiring to silence their victims are easily mistaken for bizarre (implausible) and persecutory delusions. Reports of explosives within the body or surgical implants controlling oneself (common beliefs installed in technological mind control) can easily be confused with somatic delusions. Similarly misinterpreted are fear responses to benign stimuli that were in actuality utilized in the victim's trauma or programming. Programming can also cause compulsive behaviors that appear bizarre when viewed out of context, such as robotic, repetitive statements or singing songs at inappropriate times, unusual hand movements, patterned self-mutilation, etc. These behaviors and beliefs appear bizarre, possibly psychotic, if the history of ritual trauma and coercive mind control remain unrecognized.

These victims often report abuse by well-known individuals or government, military, espionage, religious, business, or entertainment institutions. They may allege that such people and institutions are involved in organized child pornography, pedophilia, trafficking of women and children, etc. Many clinicians

reflexively view such reports as delusional rather than considering them further. In fact, quite a few facets of victimization by ritual abuse and mind control can generate such beliefs, as follows:

1. These beliefs are often derived from false claims by victims' abusers and programmed illusions used to perpetuate these beliefs. It appears that most abuser groups seek to convince their victims that they are the most powerful and formidable group, the most well-connected to prominent individuals and organizations. Many groups call themselves "the Illuminati," to distinguish themselves as the most enlightened and spiritually powerful. They claim to be direct descendants of the Knights Templar, the 16th Century Roshaniya of Afghanistan (Daraul, 1997), the Pharaohs of Europe, etc. All such claims are highly unlikely, but help control victims with fear.

2. For many victims of ritual abuse and mind control, the first indication of their trauma is a poorly-defined state of fear or a sense that something is not right. Dissociation and programming make any true memory consciously inaccessible. Naturally driven to determine the source of their uneasiness, they read books, search the Internet, and make inquiries. They come upon information about ritual abuse and mind control and this information "resonates" with them. These individuals begin to piece together their lives "from the outside in," since they cannot yet accomplish this "from the inside out." This approach can result in victims believing they were abused by individuals or institutions unrelated to their abuse.

3. Such allegations can originate in the individual's own personalities who seek to confuse, overwhelm, and terrify the host personality. A personality loyal to one abuser group may make false allegations against particular individuals or institutions that are viewed as rivals. Or, a personality may seek to keep the host in a state of generalized fear of everyone to prevent access to the memories of the actual abuse.

4. These perceptions may be based entirely or primarily in actual experience. For example, Senator John DeCamp's book, *The Franklin Cover-Up: Child Abuse, Satanism, and Murder in Nebraska*, 1992, has carefully documented a case involving allegations of ritual abuse involving prominent community and political figures. The clinician should exercise caution to ensure that his or her cultural biases, spiritual beliefs, and political opinions do not bias diagnostic determinations when allegations are made against prominent figures or institutions.

Abusive mind control usually endeavors to make victims believe that their thoughts are always heard, via surgical implants or electronic surveillance. And victims of ritual trauma usually believe that spiritual entities attached in rituals are now controlling them, commanding them, or reading their thoughts. These can appear much like delusions of thought broadcasting, being controlled, and thought insertion. Yet, these are effects that most individuals would undergo if so traumatized, rather than derived from a neurological disease process, a proven factor the development of Schizophrenia.

The DSM-IV defines hallucinations as, "A sensory perception that has the compelling sense of reality of a true perception but that occurs without external stimulation of the relevant sensory organ," (p. 767) with or without insight that it is a hallucination. The term is not ordinarily applied to perceptions that occur while falling asleep or awakening. Illusions are distinguished from hallucinations in that illusions involve "an actual external stimulus is misperceived or misinterpreted" (p. 768).

This definition is very broad and does not address the multiple etiologies of hallucinations. When hallucinations are present, many diagnosticians consider Schizophrenia, severe mood disorders, and processes that directly effect the physiology of the brain, such as neurological lesions and diseases, medical illnesses that affect brain physiology, toxins, and substance abuse.

Hallucinations are still not widely attributed to trauma-based disorders and dissociative experiences. Yet, hallucinations are commonly associated with trauma, and are more likely to be present when the trauma is severe, of earlier onset, when it includes sexual abuse, and when violence extends into adulthood.

Read and Argyle (1999) found that psychiatric inpatients reporting a history of sexual or physical abuse had a high frequency of auditory hallucinations, particularly command hallucinations to kill oneself, and paranoid ideation. They write:

> Half of the symptoms for which content was recorded appeared to be related to their abuse. An analysis of the relationships between types of abuse and specific symptoms suggested that hallucinations may be more common than delusions or thought disorder among patients who have been sexually abused, particularly among those who have experienced incest, and that delusions may be more related to having been physically abused (p. 1467).

Flashbacks of ritual trauma regularly involve auditory and visual hallucinations of abusers, and somatic sensations of torture being re-lived.

Greater perceptual distortions are likely to occur when child abuse is of earlier onset, longer duration, involves a number of perpetrators, and when abusers are more closely related to the victim (Sacco & Farber, 1999). Read, Agar, Argyle, and Aderhold (2003) found that 47% of community mental health center patients who were abused as children experienced hallucinations compared to 18% of patients with no abuse. Findings were significant for hearing voices, and command, visual, tactile, and olfactory hallucinations. Adult abuse alone did not generally predict hallucinations. However, patients with both child sexual abuse *and* adult sexual abuse were more likely to experience delusions and/or thought disorders. Mueser and Butler (1987) found that war veterans with PTSD who had auditory hallucinations had significantly more combat exposure than those without hallucinations. These findings hold great relevance for victims of ritual abuse and mind control, since the abuse often extends into adulthood, and may even be ongoing when the individual seeks treatment.

Bliss (1980) in his article distinguishing features of Schizophrenia and "hysterics with multiple personalities" (the diagnostic term for Dissociative Identity Disorder in 1980) observed the following about visual hallucinations in DID:

> What is seen is usually life-like and real, and corresponds to the kind of visual hallucinations schizophrenics often report. These contrast with weird, bizarre, polychromatic visions seen by alcoholics in delirium tremens, or those found in other toxic deliria. (p. 1396)

While toxic deliria often produce visual hallucinations that remind one of *Fantasia* on LSD (more fantastic and distorted than the visual hallucinations seen with ritual trauma), it is important to note that victims tortured with electroshock, a common means of inducing pain in abusive mind control, often experience flashes of light (often white, blue, red, orange, and yellow) as components of their flashback experiences.

Many mental health professionals continue to mistake reports of voices of dissociated identities for auditory hallucinations. And some victims of ritual abuse have personalities perceived to be animals which, when in executive control, may behave as such; growling, crouching, etc. In some ritual trauma, victims are locked in cages, starved, kept in dark or cold environments, and encouraged to take on animal behaviors and identities. Hendrickson, McCarty, and Goodwin (1990) report that DID patients with animal alters report being forced to live like an animal, exposure to bestiality, and being forced to witness or participate in torture, mutilation, and killing of animals to terrorize, punish, and control them. This

clinical phenomenon, which at first may seem like psychotic behavior, has a discernable basis in the patient's trauma history.

If the functional host personality loses executive control of the mind and body, and less functional alters take over long-term control, dysfunctionality can be quite global. Personalities who serve to "hold" the most severe trauma apart from the host may be in constant terror and appear blatantly psychotic. Or completely non-emotional personalities may take executive control in efforts to contain affect flooding. These may be nonresponsive, appear catatonic, and may even deny their true identity, symptoms easily mistaken for psychotic.

The DSM-IV states that Schizophrenia is diagnosed "if delusions are bizarre or hallucinations consist of a voice keeping up a running commentary on the person's behavior or thoughts, or two or more voices conversing with each other" (American Psychiatric Association, 1994, p. 285), with corresponding social or occupational dysfunction, for a duration of at least 6 months. Diagnostic exclusions are limited to Schizoaffective, Mood, Substance, and Pervasive Developmental Disorders. By these criteria, when "bizarre delusions" or the above-described voices occur, Schizophrenia should be diagnosed, *even* if these occur *only* during the active phase of Dissociative, Post-traumatic, and Acute Stress Disorders. Clearly, this is a troubling source of misdiagnosis in cases of ritual trauma, and in disorders of dissociation and extreme stress in general.

Distinguishing symptoms of actual ritual abuse from true psychosis is further complicated by the fact that in some cases, the first can eventually develop into the second. Ritual trauma and mind control often cause victims to perceive abusers as omniscient, omnipresent, and capable of almost anything. Many victims isolate themselves socially, due to fear of people or feelings of unworthiness, and may not be able to work. Having little or nothing to ground them back to outer reality, they retreat further into inner nightmarish worlds and their fears can grow unchecked. In cases of organized criminal abuse, perpetrators may still be monitoring, or even abusing, the individual. Prolonged states of dread and hypervigilance eventually gain their own momentum and "outrun" actual events. In an attempt to attach meaning to this state of fear, victims may seek answers from unreliable sources. In particular, the Internet is a valuable source of useful information on ritual abuse and mind control, but is also a source of much misinformation. The individual may finally develop an acute traumatic stress reactive psychosis, in which reality testing is severely compromised. The fear can escalate until it is generalized to almost everything and everyone in the environment, which can closely resemble the delusional state of acute paranoid Schizophrenia. In actuality, this clinical picture is more closely related to the stress-induced deterioration in dissociative patients that was in years past termed *Hysterical Psychosis* (Tutkun, Yargic, & Sar, 1996). Per

the DSM-IV, *Brief Psychotic Disorder* would be the most fitting diagnosis, but this lacks the etiological specificity of *Hysterical Psychosis*. Prolonged extreme stress can eventually result in generalized and extended gross dysfunction, including catatonic states. The DSM-IV provides no diagnostic category that fits this most chronic and deteriorated presentation.

In some cases, trauma may contribute to the pathogenesis of Schizophrenia. Read, Perry, Moskowitz, and Connolly (2001) propose a traumagenic neurodevelopmental model of Schizophrenia. Read et al. (2003) suggest that the heightened sensitivity to stress which is found in Schizophrenia is, for some patients, related to neurodevelopmental changes caused by childhood trauma. They cite numerous studies showing a high prevalence of childhood abuse and trauma in psychiatric inpatients diagnosed with severe mental disorders. They also point out many similarities between the effects of early trauma on the developing brain and neurobiological abnormalities associated with Schizophrenia. These include "overreactivity of the hypothalamic-pituitary-adrenal (HPA) axis; dopamine, norepinephrine, and serotonin abnormalities; and structural changes to the brain such as hippocampal damage, cerebral atrophy, ventricular enlargement, and reversed cerebral asymmetry" (p. 319). These neurobiological similarities should be interpreted cautiously, but are certainly consistent with the significant overlap in clinical symptoms of severe trauma disorders and Schizophrenia.

In some cases, an individual will have both Schizophrenia and Ritual abuse/mind control traumatic stress (these individuals are seen most often in inpatient settings). Fortunately, in most cases, these disorders are distinct, and readily differentiated by clinicians experienced with both populations.

Some victims of ritual abuse and mind control appear to have suffered abuse extensive enough to result in irreversible brain damage (e.g., prolonged oxygen deprivation or extensive electroshock). In such cases, the individual can appear much like an individual with chronic Schizophrenia or organic psychosis.

Spiritual Factors

Most ritual abuse victims believe in the existence of God, a rival force of evil, such as Satan, and lesser evil entities, such as demons. Many report having a personal relationship with God, Jesus, angels, etc., as a source of divine guidance and support, often beginning with a profound spiritual experience while being tortured as a child. They may describe a close spiritual connection to other children abused with them in rituals, and may even believe they hold parts of the spirits of sacrificed children within themselves, to help these spirits. They may believe that God has directed them to help other victims of ritual abuse or to expose these

crimes, and may be helping others through support networks, writing books, etc. They are often deeply committed to their faith. Many worship within mainstream religions, and others only within individual spiritual practice. Other survivors have anxious and aversive reactions to organized religion, particularly Judeo-Christian religions, as a direct result of rituals involving desecration of Judeo-Christian houses of worship and religious symbols (e.g., the cross), and torture and programming to prevent faith in the Judeo-Christian God.

Ritual abuse victims also commonly experience the presence of evil spiritual entities, both internally and externally. They may believe they have malevolent spiritual attachments within themselves, and may feel plagued or controlled by spirits of living, or even dead, abusers. Some victims believe that they have been possessed by evil spirits or demons, briefly or long-term. These phenomena are often restricted to only particular personalities.

Some survivors believe they have spiritual or supernatural powers and that they are engaged in a battle of good against evil. Many engage in spiritual warfare, or even exorcism of demons, usually within Christian faiths, to protect themselves from forces of extreme evil associated with their childhood ritual abuse, and which they believe still intend them harm. Some practice “white magic” or “Wicca” in efforts to empower themselves.

Many victims of ritual abuse report being telepathic or clairvoyant, and may be superstitious and rely on magical thinking. These characteristics are shared by many patients with DID who are not necessarily ritually abused (Ellason, Ross, & Fuchs, 1996). Many ritual abuse victims also claim to have had paranormal experiences, such as astral travel, out-of-body, and near-death experiences, in which their spirits left their physical bodies.

Many of these spiritual beliefs may be viewed by secular clinicians as unusual or extreme, but would not be so-viewed in many mainstream religions. The less traditional beliefs are consistent with the spiritual practices of many alternative religions. Studies in mainstream psychology are finding high rates of paranormal experience in the general population. Van Lommel, van Wees, Meyers, and Elfferich (2001) found that of 344 cardiac arrest patients resuscitated after being clinically dead, 62 (18%) reported near-death experiences involving a “special state of consciousness,” including specific elements such as out-of-body experience, pleasant feelings, moving through a tunnel, communication with light, deceased relatives, or a life review. Greyson (2000) found that people who believed they had left their physical bodies in close brushes with death reported more dissociative symptoms than people without such experiences, but that their level of symptoms was significantly lower than patients with pathological dissociative disorders. Ross and Joshi (1992) found the incidence of 65.7% of paranormal experience in the

general population. The most common were deja vu (54.6%), precognitive dreams (17.8%), and mental telepathy (15.6%).

Possession phenomena are not restricted to patients with histories of ritual abuse, nor are they necessarily associated with a psychiatric disorder. Possession phenomena have a higher incidence in cultures with beliefs in spirits or evil, such as some rural Asian cultures (Chiu, 2000). The DSM-IV acknowledges that nonpathological possession trance states are common within certain cultures and religions, within its discussion of Dissociative Trance Disorder (a proposed diagnostic category for further study, pp. 727–729).

The spiritual beliefs of ritual abuse victims are directly derived from years of inculcation in the doctrines and practices of Satanism and abusive witchcraft, generally including the formative years of early childhood, and often under the tutelage of their parents. Victims' spiritual beliefs must be interpreted within this cultural context.

Wolfgang G. Jilek (2001), Past Chairman, Transcultural Psychiatry Section of the World Psychiatric Association, explains that many psychological conditions are actually "Culture-bound Reactive Syndromes." For instance, he reports that persecutory delusions and auditory hallucinations are not necessarily indicative of Schizophrenia in persons of African cultural background and that acute transient psychotic reactions occur especially frequently in African and Afro-Caribbean populations. He reports that increasingly, the French term *bouffée délirante* introduced by Magnan in 1886, is being used to designate these transient psychotic or psychosis-like reactions. He writes (italics added for emphasis, spelling unchanged from the original): The bouffée délirante reactions are sudden attacks of brief duration with paranoid delusions and often concomitant hallucinations, typically precipitated by an *intense fear of magical persecution through sorcery or witchcraft*. They are also characterized by a confusional state and by highly emotionalized behaviour and, after the attack, by amnesia, or rather disavowal. In its symptomatology, the bouffée délirante is reminiscent of the transient psychotic reactions occurring in the early phases of industrialization and mass-urbanization in 19th century Europe; described under such names as folie hystérique in Paris and amentia transitonia in Vienna [Morel, 1860; Meymert, 1889]. Indeed, the concept of hysterical psychosis was revived in the 1960s by American psychiatrists with special reference to transient psychotic reactions in non-Western populations [Hollender & Hirsch, 1964; Hirsch & Hollender, 1969], while Swiss psychiatrists during the same period introduced the label "emotional psychosis" for bouffée délirante-like reactions *triggered by the fear of witchcraft*, experienced by rural South Italian migrants under acculturation pressure in Swiss cities [Labhardt 1963; Risso & Boeker 1964]. Transient psychotic reactions are of particular interest to

comparative cultural psychiatry because *they are interwoven with culturally validated beliefs in sorcery and witchcraft which persist, even after the traditional resources of protection from, and of therapeutic action against, the assumed persecution by magical or supernatural powers, are no longer available as a consequence of Westernization and urbanization*. While the number of individuals experiencing the pressures of rapid social change is steadily increasing, *many feel unprotected against magical forces in which they still firmly believe*, and react to acculturation stress with transient psychotic symptom formation.

The implications of Jilek's thesis for our purpose are clear. Ritual abuse/mind control traumatic stress is a culture-bound condition, uniquely bourne of the subculture of isolation, torture, religious indoctrination, and coercive programming, inherent in ritual trauma and mind control, understandable only in that context, and not to be superimposed onto a model that does not account for its origins, i.e., the diagnostic system of the DSM-IV.

Chart for Differential Diagnosis of Schizophrenia and Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

The clinical features that differentiate Ritual abuse/mind control traumatic stress from Schizophrenia are summarized in the attached chart below for easy clinical reference.

This chart draws primarily on the clinical experience of the authors who have treated or assessed a total of 50 patients with ritual abuse and mind control trauma, and hundreds with Schizophrenia, and consultation with other experts in assessment of this population. It also incorporates information drawn from the literature on ritual abuse and mind control trauma; symptomatology related to ritual torture, symbols, artifacts, and holidays; relevant symptoms of the major primary and secondary diagnoses of affected individuals; findings based in psychological assessment of ritual trauma and DID; and research on differential diagnosis of trauma-related disorders from Schizophrenia.

Validation Studies

Two validation studies were performed on these guidelines and chart. A first draft of these was sent to 17 licensed mental health professionals known to have significant knowledge of ritual abuse and/or coercive mind control. They were asked to fill out a short questionnaire about their professional experience and to indicate the degree to which they judged these guidelines to accurately differentiate

Schizophrenia from Traumatic Stress from Ritual Abuse or Mind Control. Expertise was defined as a clinician having at least 10 years of licensed clinical experience and as having treated or assessed at least six patients with each disorder.

Thirteen surveys were returned. Three clinicians were judged to have inadequate expertise with at least one of the diagnostic groups. Two did not complete the question about adequate differentiation of the two disorders, but did send an explanation and helpful suggestions for improving the guidelines and chart.

Eight clinicians met criteria for expertise and completed the chart; four psychiatrists, three psychologists and one marriage and family counselor/professional counselor (MFT/PC). Seven of these judged that this chart accurately differentiated 90% to 100% of the patients in each diagnostic group from patients with the other diagnosis. One psychologist judged that it accurately differentiated 90 to 100% of the patients with Traumatic Stress from Ritual Abuse or Mind Control from patients with Schizophrenia, but only about 75% of the patients with Schizophrenia from those with Traumatic Stress from Ritual Abuse or Mind Control.

The second validation study was performed following substantial additions to the article text, and less extensive, but significant additions to the differential diagnosis chart. The newly-revised guidelines and chart were sent to 20 additional licensed mental health professionals known to have experience in ritual abuse and/or coercive mind control. Expertise remained defined as in the first validation study.

Fifteen surveys were returned. Three clinicians had inadequate expertise with one or both diagnostic groups. Twelve clinicians met criteria for expertise and completed the surveys. The study results are as follows:

Results of Second Expert Validation Study	Psychiatrists (N = 2)	Psychologists (N = 5)	Clinical Social Workers (N = 3)	MFT/PCs (N = 2)	Total (N = 12)
Mean Years Licensed	25	23	16.7	16	20.6
N of Patients with Schizophrenia	122	401	168	38	629
Percent of Patients w.	90, 95	90, 95, 95, 95, 100	90, 90, 90–95	80, 90	Mean Expert

Schizophrenia Correctly Differentiated (per expert)					Opinion= 91.9
N of Patients with Ritual Abuse or Mind Control Traumatic Stress (RA/MC)	111	583	210	180	1084
Percent of Patients with RA/MC Correctly Differentiated (per expert)	90, 95	80, 90, 90, 95, 100	90–95, 95, 100	90, 90	Mean Expert Opinion= 92.6

Guidelines to Differential Diagnosis between Schizophrenia and Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

by Ellen P. Lacter,Ph.D., and Karl Lehman, M.D.

Symptom: Auditory Perceptual Experiences and Distortions; Hearing Voices and Other Sounds.

Schizophrenia

Types: Generally hears voices that call them names, converse, argue, predict danger, or give commands (often hostile). Voices are generally malevolent, but in some cases, benevolent voices occur. Voices tend to be in the second person ("you") and third person ("he," "she"), and not usually in the first person ("I"). May believe the voices are well-known religious or public figures. Rarely hears children's voices. Only a few voices are usually heard. They may also hear buzzing, tones, etc. Unmedicated, voices are usually frequent or constant.
Perceived Source and Response: Voices are usually heard as originating outside the head, but voices inside the head are also common. Voices tend to be perceived as audible. The person may speak aloud or yell at these voices. Voices may be perceived from inanimate objects, such as a turned-off radio.

They may respond back to these objects, expecting the object to respond back. The person usually can exert no influence over the voices.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Types: If Dissociative Identity Disorder (DID) is present, hearing vocalizations of other "parts" is common, commonly including conversations or arguing between personalities, children's voices, crying or screaming, or even sounds of animal "parts". Hearing voices of abusers is also common. Voices criticizing the host, giving hostile commands, or predicting danger can also occur, but are rarely the only voices heard. Benevolent and helpful voices are common. Voices may be identified by name (personalities). There will often be many voices heard. Internal personalities may converse in the first person, but second and third person are also common, as personalities discuss the host personality. The voices may be perceived to be more vivid than actually audible. Buzzing and tones may be heard, usually derived from flashbacks (mental play-back) of abuse involving such sounds. Voices can be intermittent or frequent.
Perceived Source and Response: Usually, voices are perceived as originating inside the head; the person may speak quietly with these internal voices. Occasionally, the person will perceive voices as coming from outside the head, or from inanimate objects, based in the perception of omnipresent threat. In rare cases, they will speak aloud to these voices. They rarely expect a response back. The person may be able to influence these voices; to gain varying degrees of response back, to gain cooperation, or to temporarily silence them.

Symptom: Thought Withdrawal, Thought Insertion, and Thought Broadcasting

Schizophrenia

The person may believe that thoughts are being withdrawn from his/her mind by some external force (thought withdrawal). Thoughts and impulses felt not to be one's own may occur and be blamed on some external force (thought insertion). They may believe that their thoughts are transmitted to others at large, often via media such as radio, television, newspapers, etc. (thought broadcasting).

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Personalities often block unwanted thoughts, causing the host to suddenly lose track of thoughts or discourse. However, an external force will not generally be blamed for blocked thoughts. Ego-alien thoughts and impulses, e.g., aggressive or sexual, may intrude from other personalities. This is more likely to make the host personality anxious than be ascribed to some external force. Some individuals believe that their abusers, evil entities, or surveillance equipment can implant thoughts or read their thoughts. Occasionally, this fear becomes

generalized to everyone and closely mimics the thought broadcasting delusions seen in Schizophrenia.

Symptom: Visual Perceptual Experiences, Distortions, and Representations

Schizophrenia

Visual hallucinations are about half as common as auditory. Hallucinations and illusions include people, frightening animals or monsters, lights, lines, etc. If present, they are usually frequent or constant. Perceptual fit may be poor; e.g., a drawing of a man may look nothing like a man. Line quality may be poor and impulsive.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Trauma-based visual perceptions of abusers, abuses, or feared spiritual entities can occur, often “leaking” into consciousness from dissociated personalities, or derived from flashbacks, consistent with traumatic experiences. Hallucinations and illusions tend not to be frequent or constant. Flashes of light or color may be seen, also based in flashbacks of torture, often involving electroshock and light stimulation.Perceptual fit of visual stimuli and drawings is usually good; i.e., interpretation of visual stimuli tend to fit form demands, but not in all cases.

Symptom: Tactile and Somatic Perceptual Experiences and Distortions

Schizophrenia

Tactile hallucinations are less common than visual. The person may feel as if insects are crawling on the skin. Hallucinations of pain, hot, and cold are rare. Without co-occurring trauma, abreaction (re-living trauma) is unlikely. Delusions of persecution often accompany somatic perceptual distortions. Conversion reactions are not common. Analgesia and anesthesia would be unlikely.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Trauma-based tactile sensations are common, as dissociated experiences of past abuse “leak” into conscious awareness in flashbacks or abreaction (re-living trauma). During flashbacks, these can feel like re-assault, but the person tends to re-orient to reality immediately after. Other tactile sensations are perceived “as if” being assaulted, with reality-testing intact throughout. The most common sensation is pain, often gastrointestinal, genitourinary, skin surface, and musculoskeletal. Others include cold, heat, dizziness, pressure, nausea, sexual sensation, noxious odors and tastes, perceiving snakes (especially along the spine or in the abdomen) or insects (especially spiders) within the body or crawling on the skin, and the perception of electric shock or involuntary spasms

related to torture involving electroshock. Conversion reactions are common, including numbness, anesthesia, analgesia, and motor inhibitions, inability to speak, hear, and changes in vision.

Symptom: Degree of Conviction in Reality of Perceptual Distortions

Schizophrenia

Difficulty differentiating hallucinations from reality. Often adamant that these perceptions are real. Difficulty engaging in rational evaluation of the derivations of these experiences. Low capacity for self-observation.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

If sounds are heard, distorted stimuli are seen, or somato-tactile sensations are felt, the person usually becomes oriented back to "here-and-now", and understands the perceptions were not real, either as they occurred or shortly afterwards, and can rationally evaluate their source. Insight often follows that these originated in voices or memories of inner personalities, flashbacks, or fear of re-assault and autonomic arousal.

Symptom: Reports of Persecution

Schizophrenia

Onset: Focus is usually on persecution that is perceived to be current or beginning in adulthood more often than having childhood origins.

Source of Threat: Focus is usually grandiose and global, e.g., the CIA, Satan, or celebrities. Specific abusers or abuser groups, specific acts and motives, are usually not identified. Reports usually lack complexity and detail. Rarely states other victims were involved.

Affect: Generally agitated as reports persecution.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Onset: Focus is usually on abuse beginning in childhood, sometimes continuing into adulthood, even to the present.

Source of Threat: Focus is usually on specific abusers; often close relatives. May also identify people or groups known, or alleged, to participate in Satanism or witchcraft (some with web-sites), mind control with political/military agendas (e.g., CIA, Nazi, Ku Klux Klan, etc.), or organized crime. Allegations include complexity and detail. Impossible delusions can co-occur, derived from mind control designed to mimic psychosis or influence from other sources, especially when overwhelming fear becomes generalized and when answers are sought external to oneself. Generally, reports other victims in addition to oneself.

Affect: May be blunted and detached, or intense and afraid.

Important Note on Reports of Persecution

Reports of mind control methods, espionage operations, and spiritual or psychic experiences not in the clinician's experience should not be the basis for a diagnosis of Schizophrenia, since; a) most clinicians are not authorities on these complex subjects, b) some abusers program bizarre beliefs (e.g., alien abduction) in victims to make them feel and appear non-credible or insane, and, c) Extreme post-traumatic stress from ritual abuse or trauma-based mind control can cause irrational fears and beliefs, especially if victims socially isolate and/or obtain information from unreliable sources, and, in severe cases, can result in acute or chronic traumatic stress reactive psychosis.

Symptom: Degree of conviction and consistency in reporting abuses.

Schizophrenia

Generally an emotionally intense and unwavering conviction that persecutions occurred, especially early in the disease, and before treatment. Resistant to rational analysis of these beliefs. Illogical and unexplained changes in reports may occur, e.g., changes in alleged perpetrators. With more treatment and age, the person may question these perceptions.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Skepticism is common when memories of abuse first emerge. Individuals often state; "I must have made this up", or, "I don't want to believe it", or, "I can't tell if it really happened, or if I dreamed it or imagined it." Reports are usually accompanied by awareness of possible disbelief by the listener. As dissociation decreases, the person usually perceives increased consistency between memories and reports have increased narrative coherence. The individual may eventually discover that particular memories were distortions based in fear, programming, or abusers' illusions to create "cover memories."

Symptom: Response to respectful questioning of the validity of their reports.

Schizophrenia

The person may react with strong anger, and will often escalate accusations to less credible reports.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Reactions of belligerence are not common. Reactions may include sadness, tears, grief, despair, withdrawal, silence, mild to moderate frustration, or attempts to provide more information. Will often employ logical tactics in an attempt to convey his/her experience.

Symptom: Response to anti-psychotics.

Schizophrenia

Often results in reduction in perceptual distortions and in reports of persecution.

Low doses can reduce over-generalized fear or aggression, but trauma-based perceptual distortions and reports of persecution will remain.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Unless given in low doses, there is often an increase in dissociative confusion and dysfunctionality.

Symptom: General dysfunction.

Schizophrenia

During acute psychotic episodes, generalized impairment is usually marked to extreme, and this impairment is fairly constant over the duration of the episode (usually days to months). Baseline generalized impairment (between acute psychotic episodes) is usually mild to marked.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Functionality ranges from good to disabled. Usually, there are spheres of good functionality alongside spheres of trauma-based impairment. Prolonged extreme stress can result in fairly generalized dysfunction and cognitive confusion.

Symptom: Negative symptoms.

Schizophrenia

Commonly restricted/blunted affect, and reduced interest, enjoyment, motivation, energy, initiative, spontaneity, and overall willed action. Often decreased thought content and emotional withdrawal from relationships and daily activity.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Emotional numbing and flooding tend to co-exist. Thinking is generally spontaneous with richness of content. Generally invested in some activities, unless depression dominates the clinical picture. Usually preserves pleasure in some activities and interests.

Symptom: Affect: range and appropriateness.

Schizophrenia

Affect is often restricted/blunted (a diminished emotional response to stimuli). In some cases, affect is agitated, fearful, and/or angry. Shifts in affect are often unrelated to context (inappropriate), but are not accompanied by dramatic

changes in presentation of personality, such as demeanor, appearance, and vocal quality.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Affect may be relatively normal, though mildly blunted in the host personality (usually the most functional personality), or the host may be quite fearful and agitated. Shifts in affect are usually appropriate within the context of trauma reactions. Dramatic shifts to fear, sadness, anger, and in some cases, happiness, occur when personalities "switch", paired with changes in general demeanor, body posture, facial appearance, vocal inflection, and age-related behaviors, such as adult-like or childlike presentation. Some personalities may be severely emotionally constricted or robotic.

Symptom: Coherence of thought process.

Schizophrenia

Generally disorganized with loose associations. Often illogical (alogia), circumstantial, or tangential, and can be so disorganized as to be incoherent.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Generally sequential, coherent, and goal-directed. Narratives may be pressured and somewhat tangential as the individual associates to trauma or attempts to divulge extensive trauma. Thoughts can stop mid-stream, and new, somewhat-related, subjects begun, as personalities compete to communicate.

Symptom: Abstract thought.

Schizophrenia

Usually, some impairment in capacity for abstract thought (can be mild to severe). Often displays rigidity and concreteness (can be mild to severe)

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Usually, a normal capacity for abstract thought.

Symptom: Memory functions.

Schizophrenia

Mild to moderate chronic, baseline memory impairment is common. Amnesia for specific childhood events and amnestic gaps in adult life are not likely (unless severe psychological trauma or dissociation are also present).

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Baseline memory function for neutral events is generally normal. There is usually substantial amnesia for childhood, which can include amnesia for significant events (e.g., birthdays or holidays), all experience with particular family members (who are later identified as abuse perpetrators), or even

complete amnesia for extended periods of a year or more. There are often amnestic gaps in current adult life as alters take executive control from the host.

Symptom: Orientation.

Schizophrenia

Disorientation for person, place, and time can occur during acute psychotic episodes, which usually last days, weeks or even months.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Disorientation (dissociative confusion regarding person, place, and time) can be caused by flashbacks and/or dissociative switching, and usually resolves in seconds, minutes, or at most hours.

Symptom: Attention and concentration.

Schizophrenia

Often mild impairment in attention and concentration at baseline. Marked difficulty focusing attention and concentrating during acute psychotic episodes, especially due to distraction from hallucinatory internal stimuli. Mild to moderate impairment in attention and concentration remains even at baseline.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Usually, little to moderate difficulty focusing attention and concentrating, commensurate with the person's levels of anxiety, depression, and dissociation. Transient episodes of more marked impairment often occur, especially during flashbacks and personality "switching". As personalities "switch", there are often observable transient trance-states with sleepiness, eyes closed, gaze briefly fixed, or eyelids rolling or fluttering. Sometimes, "switching" trance states are more subtle.

Symptom: Overall cognitive function.

Schizophrenia

Overall cognitive function is usually dramatically impaired during acute psychotic episodes, but some cognitive impairment is also usually present at baseline.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Baseline overall cognitive functioning is normal unless trauma has resulted in permanent brain injury. Various types of cognitive impairment are observed with flashbacks, during dissociative switching, and when certain internal parts assume executive control, but there are usually trauma-free spheres of cognitive functioning.

Symptom: Language spontaneity.

Schizophrenia

Often poverty of speech, blocking, increased latency of response, and lacking in spontaneity.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Usually highly verbal and expressive. May be guarded due to fear of eliciting abusive responses, or not being believed. Speaks about many different things and experiences, with a good degree of complexity.

Symptom: Language peculiarities.

Schizophrenia

May use new meaningless words (neologisms), meaningless rhyming or "word salad" (a meaningless mixture of words). Very unlikely to refer to oneself as "we."

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Neologisms, rhyming, and "word salad" tend not to occur, except in meaningful plays on words. If DID, may refer to the self as "we," or even "not me," may refer to "the voices inside," or may report being inhabited by someone else.

Symptom: Vocal quality and nonverbal communication.

Schizophrenia

Vocal quality (tone, inflection) and nonverbal communication (body language, mannerisms, gaze, eye contact) are often unusual, impaired, stunted, or unrelated to the context. Dramatic and sudden changes in vocal inflection, grammar, accent, etc., (personality "switching") are unlikely.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Vocal quality and nonverbal communication are often normal. As personalities switch, there are often changes in vocal inflection, grammar (especially in relation to the age of the personality), even regional accent or other languages. Oddities may be present, e.g., when executive control is assumed by robot-like, terrified, previously-drugged, childlike, and heavily programmed personalities. These oddities are usually less subjectively disturbing and more potentially meaningful than in Schizophrenia. In some cases, oddities are more extreme, but ultimately "make sense" as subtle details of the extreme stress dissociative and processes are understood.

Symptom: Changes in interpersonal communication style.

Schizophrenia

Between acute psychotic episodes, interpersonal communication style tends to be stable, and appears as one personality. Between baseline and acute psychosis, interpersonal communication style can change, usually gradually, over the course of hours or days. During acute psychotic episodes, affect may be labile, but overall interpersonal communication style usually remains stable (one personality).

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

As personalities "switch," there are usually observable changes in interpersonal communication style. These tend to occur quickly, over the course of seconds, and can occur many times in one session, especially when painful content is being discussed.

Note: it can be easy to miss changes in interpersonal communication style when they are subtle and/or when they occur more slowly (over minutes as opposed to seconds).

Symptom: Distress and phobic reactions.

Schizophrenia

Distress and phobic reactions may occur in relation to delusional content, such as fear of cameras, microphones, and spiders.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Distress and phobic reactions are common in response to abuse-related stimuli, such as knives, babies, crosses, blood, and related to fear of surveillance, such as cameras and microphones. These may also occur in response to benign stimuli, such as colors and shapes. Extreme distress, increased self-mutilation, suicidality, and hospitalizations in relation to ritual holidays are common.

Symptom: Fugue states.

Schizophrenia

Unlikely to experience psychogenic fugue states or to find oneself in a strange place or doing unfamiliar activities with no memory of how one arrived there.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Fugue states are common, as "alter" personalities take executive control of the body. The host will often affirm having found him/herself in a strange place or as engaging in an unusual, or morally unacceptable, behavior, often with unfamiliar people.

Symptom: Hypnotizability.

Schizophrenia

Likely to be somewhat suspicious about being hypnotized and resistant to hypnosis. Generally, will score low on formal hypnotizability measures.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Generally autohypnotic, with spontaneous trance states. Usually highly hypnotizable. Alter personalities will often take executive control in response to a request to speak with them. The host will usually transition through a hypnagogic state in the process.

Symptom: Rapport and guardedness with therapist or evaluator.

Schizophrenia

Stilted rapport, lack of emotional involvement, and guardedness are common. Mutual interaction may not be sustained. Fear reactions may occur and mount with little rational basis. Distrust may recede and re-appear. Response to reassurance is usually guarded and slow.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Initial guardedness is typical. Trust usually builds with support, a sense of being believed, and demonstration of some understanding of dissociation and ritual trauma. Generally, the individual seeks emotional involvement. Trust is likely to decrease as new difficult material is about to surface. Consistency and "waiting this out" at such times will allow the work to proceed and trust to deepen. Fear reactions may also occur in response to trauma reminders, and are also responsive to the therapist's consistency. Personalities who emerge later in treatment are usually receptive to help, although they may be initially apprehensive and resistant.

Symptom: Counter-transference responses.

Schizophrenia

Clinicians often experience a feeling of confusion and wish to retreat from the interaction, due to the individual's emotional distance, difficulty following the content, and inability to make sense of the person's communication.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Clinicians generally respond to these people with interest, empathy, and a desire to help. Some clinicians experience a desire to retreat from the interaction, due to the painful and frightening nature of the reported abuses (rather than an inability to mentally track the communication), concern that they cannot offer competent treatment, or fear of retaliation by the client's abusers. Some clinicians fear legal actions or professional criticism if they diagnose DID or assess trauma from ritual abuse, which can influence diagnostic determinations and willingness to treat.

Symptom: Social relationships and fear responses to people.

Schizophrenia

Generally lacking in interpersonal involvement, closeness, and empathy. Tendency to distance or isolate and avoid prolonged social interchange. May have a few superficial relationships. Easily overstimulated by human contact. Often fears people, particularly people looking at them. Usually not frightened of people based on particular behaviors or appearance. Mental and social development tend to be globally arrested.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Usually in an approach-avoidance conflict with people. Usually, a capacity and desire for close interpersonal contact, but great fear about whom to trust. Tendency to have a few close enduring relationships, especially if one primary caregiver was positive, consistent and not abusive. Some may have a primarily avoidant attachment style. Tendency to fear people with a particular appearance, actions, or function, related to reported abuses, e.g., people with beards, people who use their hands in ways interpreted to be programming "triggers', police officers, etc. Co-morbid Borderline Personality Disorder is not uncommon. In such cases, interpersonal relationships may be volatile and unstable.

Symptom: Complexity of object relations and narcissism.

Schizophrenia

People are perceived and described as fairly unidimensional. Some people may be described as evil in their intent to harm. The focus is on how the actions of others effect oneself, with little insight into, or awareness of, others' motives. Tends not to think about why alleged perpetrators intend them harm.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

People are understood and described with complexity, with some insight into their underlying feelings, needs, and motives. There is usually a strong need to understand why family abusers committed their abuse. Some perpetrators may be described as evil. Others may be viewed as doing evil acts, but being primarily victimized and controlled. Usually, some people will be described as good. Survivor guilt is common, especially if the person believes he or she assisted in sacrificial rituals. Substantial narcissism, splitting, and deficient empathy can also occur. All of the above may be limited to specific personalities.

Symptom: Laughter and humor.

Schizophrenia

Often absent. If humor is attempted, it is usually strange, tangential, and not related logically to the context. It tends to fall flat. Little or no ability to laugh at oneself.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Humor may be absent due to acute stress and depression. When present, humor is usually intelligent, logical, wry, and/or ironic. Often able to poke fun at one's own trauma, dissociated identities, and dysfunctions. Can use humor appropriately as a defense to allay anxiety.

Symptom: Self-care.

Schizophrenia

Self-care, hygiene, and dress are often odd and/or poor.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Self-care and hygiene are usually within normal limits, but can deteriorate in response to prolonged stress or with concomitant substance abuse. Dress can be normal to childlike to "witchy."

Symptom: Somatization, conversion, and physical health.

Schizophrenia

Medication side effects, poor self-care, little exercise, cigarette and substance abuse, and the chronic stress of coping with Schizophrenia, all contribute to multiple health problems. Somatization and conversion reactions are not expected, unless there is also a significant trauma history.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Stress-related physical symptoms are usually present. Headaches, especially migraine headaches, are prevalent, particularly as personalities "switch" or threaten to switch. Also common are autoimmune (especially fibromyalgia and chronic fatigue), gastrointestinal, genitourinary, cardiopulmonary, and musculo-skeletal problems. These may be true physical disorders caused by, or exacerbated by, stress. Or they may be primarily an expression of psychological distress (somatization). Physical symptoms often occur as specific memories press toward conscious awareness, such as jerking based in memories of electroshock, or swelling at sites of prior injuries. Emerging memories of trauma often also result in conversion reactions of the sensory or voluntary motor system, such as analgesia (decreased ability to feel pain), tactile anesthesia (loss of sensation for touch), hyperaesthesia (excessive sensitivity to stimuli), inability to speak, see, hear, or move a part of the body related to the trauma.

Symptom: Self-importance and grandiosity.

Schizophrenia

Self-aggrandizing; fabricates abilities, accomplishments, and knowledge, to grand proportions, both worldly and spiritual. May claim to be an important religious (e.g. Jesus) or political figure, or to have important roles with these figures. Shame and feelings of worthlessness can also be severe.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Often, shame of cult role. In some cases, pride in cult role and/or abuses endured. Distinct personalities may be boastful about their "power". May claim spiritual powers, e.g., psychic abilities, clairvoyance, the ability to leave their bodies, or astral travel. It is unlikely that individuals would claim to be someone they are not, e.g., Jesus. But, they often perceive such figures within the self, such as Lucifer, Satan, Baphomet, etc. Spiritual experiences are often reported, e.g., having received help from God or angels.

Symptom: Spiritual/religious experience.

Schizophrenia

Delusions of grandeur are common. Individuals may view themselves as major religious figures (God, Jesus, etc.) or as receiving commands from religious figures to do grandly significant things- stop wars, etc., usually with the goals of achieving internal self-importance or recognition as special from others.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

May report a connection, or even encounters (e.g., being spoken to), with spiritual figures (God, Jesus, angels, etc.), as a source of spiritual guidance or support, not to obtain recognition or increase self-importance. May report having a God-given purpose to help others, often with a realistic plan. May feel harassed or possessed by spirits or demons. May view themselves as demonic or having spiritual powers for good. May experience the spiritual presence of other persons, deceased or living, often including a spiritual connection to other children abused in rituals. May be devout in their spiritual beliefs and practices or alternatively experience anxiety or an aversion to God and religion. These attributions may be limited to particular personalities.

Symptom: Experience with famous people.

Schizophrenia

Tends to be boastful, but usually vague. Even when stories are elaborate, they will usually lack concrete, specific details. Claims are often motivated by the wish to portray oneself as physically, socially, intellectually, or spiritually special.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Some individuals report abuse by politicians or celebrities. In some cases, this is reported with realistic details, accompanied by feelings of fear or disgust, and the goal is to be believed. In other cases, details are lacking and the affect suggests a feeling of self-importance, suggesting a basis in a need to feel special.

Symptom: Experiences with media; TV, movies, etc.

Schizophrenia

Usually, personalizes that media are communicating threats or commands directly and specifically to the self (ideas of reference).

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

May report media stimuli "triggering" memories of ritual trauma or setting off mind control programming. May respond with somnolence to media stimuli previously used in programming. In some complex mind control cases, may perceive personal communication from the media.

Symptom: Violence.

Schizophrenia

Sudden violence can occur, with no external logical provocation, based on disorganized thoughts, hallucinatory commands, and/or the perceived need to defend the self from delusional threats. Often cannot control violent responses.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Feeling cornered or being physically restrained can stimulate flashbacks of abuse, and consequent fight or flight responses. If Borderline Personality Disorder is co-morbid, as is often the case, violence can occur within intense relationship conflict, or in response to the therapist. Response to limits on violence is generally good, unless in a state of perceived extreme threat.

Symptom: Self-harm.

Schizophrenia

Self-mutilation is rare. However, command hallucinations to kill oneself may put the person at risk of suicide. Suicide can also result from depression, secondary to long-term Schizophrenia.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Self-mutilation is common (arms, legs, genitals, etc), though not always disclosed and sometimes deliberately concealed. Suicide is a strong risk, subsequent to violating programming to not remember and not tell of the abuse.

Suicidality can also result from depression, secondary to chronic disorders of extreme stress.

Symptom: Eating disorders and food aversions.

Schizophrenia

Overeating and being overweight are common, often related to poor self-care, attempts to self-soothe, and side effects of medications. Fasting and purging occur, but are less common. Food aversions may occur in relation to delusions.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Fasting, binging, purging, being overweight, anorexia, and food aversions and vegetarianism are common. These often derive from experiences with sacrifices of animals or humans and/or ingestion of flesh or excretions (semen, blood, feces, urine, etc). Fasting, binging, and purging may be used to self-anesthetize or self-soothe. Purging is often re-living of trauma, or a programmed need to "re-program" the self. Some psychotropic drugs can result in weight gain.

Symptom: Sexuality.

Schizophrenia

There is generally reduced sexual desire, satisfaction, and access to partners. There is some tendency toward fleeting sexual encounters and sexual victimization. Long-term sexual relationships are rare. Psychotropic drugs can effect sexual desire and function positively or negatively (Fortier, Trudel, Mottard, & Piché, 2000; Raja & Azzoni, 2003).

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

High-functioning survivors often have sexually-fulfilling committed relationships. Sexual aversion is also common in the host personality, and in many traumatized personalities. In many cases, particular personalities have the capacity for sexual pleasure, and may "switch in" during sexual relations. In some cases, there are sexually compulsive personalities. Personalities forced into child prostitution often engage in prostitution as adults. In some cases, paraphiliac interests exist in some personalities.

Symptom: Homosexuality and homophobia.

Schizophrenia

Homosexuality appears to occur at the same rate as the population at large (Raja & Azzoni, 2003). Males with paranoid Schizophrenia may suddenly perceive others as accusing them of being homosexual.

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Many individuals have both homosexual and heterosexual personalities. Some individuals are primarily homosexual, often related to trauma based fear or disgust for the opposite sex. May report demonic presences attempting to involve them in homosexual activity.

Symptom: Overall oddness of presentation.

Schizophrenia

The cumulative effect of the above perceptual, cognitive, affective, social, and behavioral symptoms result in an overall clinical impression of a specific, Schizophrenic variety of oddness, or being “not right.”

Ritual Abuse/Mind Control Traumatic Stress

Overall presentation may be within normal range. In most cases, oddities of presentation contribute to a clinical picture that “does not quite make sense,” until the ritual trauma and dissociative switching are identified. The clinician often feels that “pieces are missing,” but the presentation makes sense when these factors are identified. In rare cases, dissociation and other sequelae of ritual trauma result in more profound overall subjective oddness of presentation, including oddness in vocal quality and nonverbal behavior. This uncommon form of “oddness” feels qualitatively different than that seen in cases of Schizophrenia, and becomes understandable as more subtle details of the clinical picture are discerned. For example, extreme oddness of presentation often includes acute hypervigilance, intense fear of stimuli associated with trauma, rapid switching among personalities, and executive dominance by benumbed, severely abused, previously drugged, childlike, and heavily programmed personalities.

Note: In some cases, an individual will hold both diagnoses. Childhood trauma is clearly a significant psychosocial stressor that may contribute to the neurodevelopment of Schizophrenia. And victims of ritual abuse and mind control are not exempt from the biogenetic determinants that may factor into vulnerability for Schizophrenia.

Conclusion

These guidelines provide an overview of the complex subjects of ritual abuse and trauma-based mind control, the disorders that frequently result from these abuses, factors that often contribute to the misdiagnosis of ritual abuse/mind control traumatic stress as schizophrenia, and a differential diagnosis chart for easy clinical reference to distinguish between these disorders.

An expert validation study determined that this differential diagnosis chart successfully distinguished between these two populations in most cases. Using this chart, the mean expert opinion was that 91.6% of patients diagnosed with Schizophrenia were successfully differentiated from patients with Ritual abuse/mind control traumatic stress, and that 92% of patients with Ritual abuse/mind control traumatic stress were successfully differentiated from patients diagnosed with Schizophrenia.

In complex cases, it is recommended that clinicians not experienced in ritual abuse and mind control traumatic stress obtain consultation with colleagues with specialized knowledge, in addition to use of the chart, in order to make a differential diagnosis. In rare cases, the diagnostic questions will remain difficult.

It is our hope that these guidelines and chart for differential diagnosis will help diagnosticians recognize and properly diagnose and treat people traumatized by ritual abuse and mind control, and that their frequent misdiagnosis with Schizophrenia, and the damage that often follows, will one day be a thing of the past.

References

American Psychiatric Association. (1994). Diagnostic and statistical manual of mental disorders (4th ed.). Washington, DC: Author.

Armstrong, J. (1991). The psychological organization of multiple personality disordered patients as revealed on psychological testing. Psychiatric Clinics of North America, 14, 533-546.

Armstrong, J. G., Putnam, F. W., Carlson, E. B., Libero, D. Z., & Smith, S.R. (1997). Development and validation of a measure of adolescent dissociation: The adolescent dissociative experiences scale. Journal of Nervous & Mental Disease, 185(8), 491–497. The Adolescent Dissociative Experiences Scale is available online, Retrieved November 30, 2003: http://www.energyhealing.net/pdf_files/a-des.pdf Armstrong, J.G., & Loewenstein, R.J. (1990). Characteristics of patients with multiple personality and dissociative disorders on psychological testing. Journal of Nervous & Mental Disease, 178(7), 448–454.

Assalian, P., Fraser, R., Tempier, R., & Cohen, D. (2000). Sexuality and quality of life of patients with schizophrenia. International Journal of Psychiatry in Clinical Practice, 4(1), 29–33.

Belitz, J., & Schacht, A. (1992). Satanism as a response to abuse: The dynamics and treatment of Satanic involvement in male youths. Adolescence, 27, 855–872.

Bernet, W., & Chang, D.K. (1997). The differential diagnosis of ritual abuse allegations. Journal of Forensic Science, 42(1), 32–38.

Bliss, E.L. (1980) Multiple personalities: A report of 14 cases with implications for schizophrenia and hysteria. Archives of General Psychiatry, 37 (December), 1388–1397.

Bloom, S.L. (1994) . Hearing the survivor’s voice: Sundering the wall of denial. Journal of Psychohistory, 21(4), 461–477.

Boat, B.W. (1991). Caregivers as surrogate therapists in treatment of a ritualistically abused child. In W.N. Friedrich (Ed.), Casebook of sexual abuse treatment (pp. 1–26). New York: Norton.

Boyd, A. (1991). Blasphemous rumors: Is Satanic ritual abuse fact or fantasy? An investigation. London: HarperCollins.

Braun, B.G. (1986). Treatment of multiple personality disorder. Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.

Brown, D. (1994). Satanic ritual abuse: A therapist's handbook. Denver, CO: Blue Moon Press.

Brown, D., Scheflin, A.W., & Hammond, D.C. (1998). Memory, trauma treatment, and the law: An essential reference on memory for clinicians, researchers, attorneys, and judges. New York: Norton.

Carlson, E.B., & Putnam, F.W. (1993). An update on the dissociative experiences scale. Dissociation, 6, 16-27.

Carlson, E.B., Putnam, F.W., Ross, C.A., Torem, M., Coons, P., Dill, D.L., Loewenstein, R.J., & Braun, B.G. (1993). Validity of the dissociative experiences scale in screening for multiple personality disorder: A multicenter study. American Journal of Psychiatry, 150(7), 1030–1036. The Dissociative Experiences Scale is available on-line; Retrieved November 30, 2003: http://www.energyhealing.net/pdf_files/desii.pdf Chiu, S.N. (2000). Historical, religious, and medical perspectives on possession phenomenon. Hong Kong Journal of Psychiatry, 10(1), 14–18.

Chu, J.A., Frey, L.M., Ganzel, B.L., & Matthews, J.A. (1999). Memories of childhood abuse: Dissociation, amnesia, and corroboration. American Journal of Psychiatry, 156(5), 749–755.

Clark, C.M. (1994), Clinical assessment of adolescents involved in Satanism. Adolescence, Summer, XXIV (114), 461–468.

Clay, C. (1996). More than a survivor. Saskatoon: University of Saskatchewan Press.

Cohen, B.M., & Cox, C.T. (1995). Telling without talking: Art as a window into the world of multiple personality. New York: Norton.

Coleman, J. (1994a). Presenting features in adult victims of Satanist ritual abuse. Child Abuse Review, 3, 83–92.

Coleman, J. (1994b). Satanic cult practices. In V. Sinason (Ed.), Treating survivors of satanic abuse (pp. 242–253). London, and New York, NY: Routledge.

Comstock, C. (1991). The inner self helper and concepts of inner guidance: Historical antecedents, its role within dissociation, and clinical utilization. *Dissociation*, 4(3), 165–177.

Comstock, C.M. & Vickery, D. (1992). The therapist as victim: a preliminary discussion. *Dissociation*, 5(3), 155–158.

Cook, C. (1991). Understanding ritual abuse: A study of thirty-three ritual abuse survivors. Treating Abuse Today, 1(4), 14–19.

Coons, P.M. (1997). Satanic ritual abuse: First research and therapeutic implications. In G. A. Fraser (Ed.), The dilemma of ritual abuse: Cautions and guides for therapists (pp. 105–117). Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.

Cozolino, L. J. (1989). The ritual abuse of children: Implications for clinical practice and research. The Journal of Sex Research, 26 (1), 131–138.

Cozolino, L. J. (1990). Ritualistic child abuse, psychopathology, and evil. Journal of Psychology and Theology, 18 (3), 218–227.

Crabtree, A. (1993). Puzzling over possession: Comments on Dissociation articles on possession, *Dissociation*, 6(4), 254-259.

Danesino, A., Daniels, J., & McLaughlin, T.J. (1979). Jo-Jo, Josephine, and Joanne: A study of multiple personality by means of the Rorschach test. Journal of Personality Assessment, 43, 300–313.

Daraul, A. (1997) A history of secret societies. Secaucus, New Jersey: Citadel Press.

Davies, M., Coltheart, M., Langdon, R., & Breen, N. (2002). Monothematic delusions: Towards a two factor account. Philosophy, Psychiatry & Psychology, 8(2–3), 133–158.

DeCamp, J. (1992). The Franklin coverup: Child abuse, Satanism, and murder in Nebraska. Nebraska: AWT.

De Mause, L. (1994). Why cults terrorize and kill children. The Journal of Psychohistory, 21(4), 505–518.

Draijer, N., & Langeland, W. (1999). Childhood trauma and perceived parental dysfunction in the etiology of dissociative symptoms in psychiatric in-patients. American Journal of Psychiatry, 156(3), 379–385.

Driscoll, L. N., & Wright, C. (1991). Survivors of childhood ritual abuse: Multi-generational Satanic cult involvement. Treating Abuse Today, 1(4), 5–13.

Edwards, L. M. (1991). Differentiating between ritual assault and sexual abuse. Journal of Child & Youth Care, 6(4), 169–188.

Ehrensaft, D. (1992). Preschool child sex abuse: The aftermath of the Presidio case. The American Journal of Orthopsychiatry, 62(2), 234–244.

Ellason, J.W, & Ross, C.A (1995). Positive and negative symptoms in dissociative identity disorder and schizophrenia: A comparative analysis. Journal of Nervous & Mental Disease, 183(4), 236–241.

Ellason, J.W., Ross, C.A., & Fuchs, D.L. (1995). Assessment of dissociative identity disorder with the Millon Clinical Multiaxial Inventory-II. Psychological Reports, 76, 895–905.

Ellason, J.W., Ross, C.A, & Fuchs, D.L. (1996). Lifetime axis I and II comorbidity and childhood trauma history in dissociative identity disorder. Psychiatry, 59(3), 255–266.

Ellenson, G.S. (1986) *Disturbances of perception in adult female incest survivors.* Social Casework, March, 149–159.

Emerson, S., & Syron, Y. (1995). Adolescent Satanism: Rebellion masquerading as religion. Counseling & Values, 39, 145–159.

Evers-Szostak, M. & Sanders, S. (1992). The children's perceptual alteration scale (CPAS): A measure of children's dissociation. Dissociation, 2 (June), 91–98.

Exner, J.E. (1978) The Rorschach: A comprehensive system, Volume 2: Current research and advanced interpretation. New York: Wiley.

Fagan, J. & McMahon, P.P. (1984). Incipient multiple personality in children: Four cases. The Journal of Nervous & Mental Disease, 172(1), 26–36.

Faller, K.C. (1994). Ritual abuse: A review of research. APSAC Advisor, 7(1), pp. 1, 19–27.

Feldman, G.C. (1993). Lessons in evil, lessons from the light: A true story of Satanic abuse and spiritual healing. New York: Crown Publishers.

Ferracuti, S., Sacco, R., & Lazzari, R. (1996). Dissociative trance disorder: Clinical and Rorschach findings in ten persons reporting demon possession and treated by exorcism. Journal of Personality Assessment, 66(3), 525–539.

Fewster, G. (1990). In the shadow of Satan: The ritual abuse of children. Journal of Child and Youth Care Special Issue. Calgary: University of Calgary Press.

Finkelhor, D., Williams, L. M., & Burns, N. (1988). Nursery crimes. Newbury Park, CA: Sage.

Fine, C. (1989). Treatment errors and iatrogenesis across therapeutic modalities in MPD and allied dissociative disorders. *Dissociation,* 2(2), 77–82.

Fortier, P., Trudel, G., Mottard J.P., & Piché, L. (2000). The influence of schizophrenia and standard or atypical neuroleptics on sexual and sociosexual functioning: A review. Sexuality and Disability, 18(2), 85–104.

Fraser, G. (1993a). Special treatment techniques to access the inner personality system of multiple personality disorder patients. *Dissociation,* 6(2/3), 193–198.

Fraser, G. (1993b). Exorcism rituals: effects on multiple personality disorder patients. *Dissociation,* 6(4), 239–244.

Fraser G. A. (1990). Satanic ritual abuse: A cause of multiple personality disorder. Journal of Child & Youth Care, Special Issue, 55–65.

Fraser, G.A. (1997a). The dilemma of ritual abuse: Cautions and guides for therapists. Washington, D.C.: American Psychiatric Press.

Fraser, G.A. (1997b). Visions of memories: A patient's visual representation of ritual abuse ceremonies. In G.A. Fraser (Ed.), The dilemma of ritual abuse: Cautions and guides for therapists (pp. 183–196). Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.

Friesen, J. G. (1991). Uncovering the mystery of MPD. San Bernadino, California: Here's Life Publishing.

Friesen, J. G. (1992). Ego-dystonic or ego-alien: Alternate personality or evil spirit? Journal of Psychology & Theology, 20(3), 197–200.

Friesen, J. G. (1993). More than survivors: Conversations with multiple personality clients. San Bernadino, California: Here's Life Publishing.

Frith, C. & Fletcher, P. (1995). Voices from nowhere. Critical Quarterly, 37(2), 71–83.

Gallagher, B. (2001). Assessment and intervention in cases of suspected ritual child sexual abuse. *Child Abuse Review,* 10, 227–242.

Golston, J. (1993). Ritual abuse: Raising hell in psychotherapy: Creation of cruelty: The political military and multigenerational training of torturers: Violent initiation and the role of traumatic dissociation. Treating Abuse Today, 3(6), 12–19.

Gonzalez, L.S., Waterman, J., Kelly, R.J., McCord, J., & Oliveri, M.K. (1993). Children's patterns of disclosures and recantations of sexual and ritualistic allegations in psychotherapy. Child Abuse & Neglect, 17, 281–289.

Goodman, G.S., Qin, J., Bottoms, B.L., & Shaver (1994). Characteristics and sources of allegations of ritualistic child abuse: Final report to the National Center on Child Abuse and Neglect. [Unpublished manuscript].

Goodman, G. S., Quas, J. A., Bottoms, B. L., Qin, J., Shaver, P. R., Orcutt, H., & Shapiro, C. (1997). Children's religious knowledge: Implications for understanding satanic ritual abuse allegations. Child Abuse & Neglect, 21(11), 1111–1130.

Goodwin, J. (1993). Sadistic abuse: Definition, recognition, and treatment. *Dissociation,* 6(2/3), 181–187.

Goodwin, J, Hill, S. & Attias, R. (1990). Historical and folk techniques of exorcism: applications to the treatment of dissociative disorders. *Dissociation,* 3(2), 94–101.

Goodwin, J.M. (1994). Credibility problems in sadistic abuse. The Journal of Psychohistory, 21(4), 479–496.

Gould, C. (1992). Diagnosis and treatment of ritually abused children. In D.K. Sakheim & S.E. Devine (Eds.), Out of darkness: Exploring Satanism and ritual abuse (pp. 207–248). New York: Lexington Books.

Gould, C. (1995). Denying ritual abuse of children. Journal of Psychohistory, 22(3), 329–339.

Gould, C., & Cozolino, L. (1992). Ritual abuse, multiplicity, and mind-control. Journal of Psychology and Theology, 20(3), 194–196.

Gould, C., & Graham-Costain, V. (1994). Play therapy with ritually abused children. Treating Abuse Today, 4(2), 4–1; 4(3), 14–19.

Gould, C., & Neswald, D. (1992). Basic treatment and program neutralization strategies for adult MPD survivors of satanic ritual abuse. Treating Abuse Today, 2(3), 5–10.

Graves, S.M. (1989). Dissociative disorders and dissociative symptoms at a community mental health center. *Dissociation,* 2(3), 119–127.

Greaves, G. B. (1992). Alternative hypotheses regarding claims of satanic cult activity. A critical analysis. In D. K. Sakheim, & S. F. Devine, (Eds.), Out of darkness: Exploring Satanism and ritual abuse. (pp. 45–72). New York: Lexington Books.

Greyson, B. (2000). Dissociation in people who have near-death experiences: Out of their bodies or out of their minds. The Lancet, 355, 460–463.

Groenendijk, I. & van der Hart, O. (1995). Treatment of DID and DDNOS patients in a regional institute for ambulatory mental health care in the Netherlands: a survey. *Dissociation,* 8(2), 73–83.

Hammond, D. C. (1992). Hypnosis in MPD: Ritual abuse (also known as The Greenbaum speech), Fourth Annual Eastern Regional Conference on Abuse and Multiple Personality. Retrieved February 21, 2003: http://home.att.net/~mcra/green.htm

Hartman, C.R. & Burgess, A.W. (1993). *Information processing of trauma.* Child Abuse and Neglect, 17(1), 47–58.

Harvey, S. (1993). Ann: Dynamic play therapy with ritual abuse. In T. Kottman & C. Schaefer, C. (Eds.). Play therapy in action: A casebook for practitioners (pp. 371–415). Northvale, New Jersey: Aronson.

Hassan, S. (1990). Combating cult mind control. Rochester, VT: Park Street Press.

Hassan, S. (2000). Releasing the bonds: Empowering people to think for themselves. Danbury, CT: Aitan Publishing.

Hendrickson, K., McCarty, T., & Goodwin, J. (1990). Animal alters: A case report. Dissociation, 3(4), 218–221.

Hersha, L., Hersha, C., Griffis, D., & Schwarz, T. (2001). Secret weapons: Two sister's terrifying true story of sex, spies, and sabotage. Far Hills, New Jersey: New Horizon Press.

Hill, S., & Goodwin, J. (1989). Satanism: Similarities between patient accounts and pre-inquisition historical sources. Dissociation, 2(1), 39–44.

Hirsch, S.J., & Hollender, M.H. (1969). Hysterical psychosis: Clarification of the concept. American Journal of Psychiatry, 125, 909–915.

Hollender, M.H., & Hirsch, S.J. (1964). Hysterical psychosis. American Journal of Psychiatry, 120, 1066–1074.

Hornstein, N.L. (1993). Recognition and differential diagnosis of dissociative disorders in children and adolescents. *Dissociation,* 6(2/3), 136–144.

Hudson, P.S. (1990). Ritual child abuse: A survey of symptoms and allegations. Journal of Child and Youth Care, Special issue: In the shadow of Satan: The ritual abuse of children, 27–54.

Hudson, P.S. (1991). Ritual child abuse: Discovery, diagnosis and treatment. Saratoga, CA: R & E Publishers.

Ireland, S.J., & Ireland, M..J. (1994). A case history of family and cult abuse. The Journal of Psychohistory, 21(4), 417–428.

Jilek, W.G. (2001). Cultural factors in psychiatric disorders. Paper presented at the 26th Congress of the World Federation for Mental Health, July 2001. Available on-line. Retrieved December 12, 2003: http://www.mentalhealth.com/mag1/wolfgang.html

Johnson, M. (1994). Fear and power: From naiveté to a believer in cult abuse. The Journal of Psychohistory, 21(4), 435–441.

Jones, D.P.H. (1991). Ritualism and child sexual abuse. Child Abuse & Neglect, 15, 163–170.

Jonker, F., & Jonker-Bakker, P. (1991). Experiences with ritualistic child sexual abuse: A case study from the Netherlands. Child Abuse & Neglect, 15(3), 191–196.

Jonker, F, & Jonker-Bakker, I. (1997). Effects of ritual abuse: The results of three surveys in the Netherlands. Child Abuse & Neglect, 21(6) 541–556.

Katchen, M. (1992). The history of Satanic religions. In D. K. Sakheim, & S. F. Devine, (Eds.), Out of Darkness: Exploring Satanism and Ritual Abuse, (pp. 1–19). New York: Lexington Books.

Katchen, M., & Sakheim, D. (1992). Satanic beliefs and practices. In D. K. Sakheim, & S. F. Devine, (Eds.), Out of Darkness: Exploring Satanism and Ritual Abuse. (pp. 21–43). New York: Lexington Books.

Keane, T.M., Malloy, P.F., & Fairbank, J.A. (1984). The empirical development of an MMPI-subscale for the assessment of combat-related Post-traumatic Stress Disorders. Journal of Consulting & Clinical Psychology, 52, 888–891.

Keith, J. (1998). Mind control, world control. Kempton, IL: Adventures Unlimited Press.

Kelley, S.J. (1989). Stress responses of children to sexual abuse and ritualistic abuse in day-care centers. Journal of Interpersonal Violence, 4(4), 501–513.

King, G. F., & Yorker, B. (1996). Case studies of children presenting with a history of ritualistic abuse. Journal of Child & Adolescent Psychiatric Nursing, 9(2), 18–26.

Kinscherff, R., & Barnum, R (1992). Child forensic evaluation and claims of ritual abuse or Satanic cult activity: A critical analysis. In D.K. & S.E. Devine (Eds.), Out of Darkness: Exploring Satanism and ritual abuse (pp. 73–107). New York, NY: Lexington Books.

Kluft, R. P. (1987). First-rank symptoms as a diagnostic clue to multiple personality disorder. American Journal of Psychiatry, 144(3), 293–298.

Kluft, R.P. (1988). The phenomenology and treatment of extremely complex multiple personality disorder. *Dissociation, 1*(4), 47–58.

Kluft, R.P. (1989a). Iatrogenic creation of new alter personalities. *Dissociation, 2*(2), 83–91.

Kluft, R. P. (1989b). Editorial : Reflections on allegation of ritual abuse. *Dissociation, 2*(4), 191–193.

Kluft, R.P. (1994). Treatment trajectories in multiple personality disorder. *Dissociation, 7*(1), 63–76.

Kluft, R. P. (1995). Six completed suicides in dissociative identity disorder patients: Clinical observations. *Dissociation, 8*(2), 104–111.

Labhardt, F. (1963). Die schizophrenieahnlichen Emofionspsychosen, Berlin: Springer.

Labott, S.M., Leavitt, F., Braun, B.G., & Sachs, R.A. (1992). Rorschach indicators of multiple personality disorder. Perceptual & Motor Skills, 75, 147–158.

Labott, S.M., & Wallach, H.R. (2002). Malingering dissociative identity disorder: Objective and projective assessment. Psychological Reports, 90, 525–538.

Lawrence, K.J., Cozolino, L., & Foy, D.W. (1995). Psychological sequelae in adult females reporting childhood ritualistic abuse. Child Abuse and Neglect, 19(8), 975–984.

Leavitt, F. (1994). Clinical correlates of alleged Satanic abuse and less controversial sexual molestation. Child Abuse & Neglect, 18(4), 387–392.

Leavitt, F. (2000a). Texture response patterns associated with sexual trauma of childhood and adult onset: Developmental and recovered memory implications. Child Abuse & Neglect, 24(2), 251–257.

Leavitt, F. (2000b). Surviving roots of trauma: Prevalence of silent signs of sex abuse in patients who recover memories of childhood sex abuse as adults. Journal of Personality Assessment, 74(2), 311–323.

Leavitt F., & Labott, S. M.(1998a). Revision of the Word Association Test for assessing associations of patients reporting Satanic ritual abuse in childhood. Journal of Clinical Psychology, 54(7), 933–943.

Leavitt F., & Labott, S. M.(1998b). Rorschach indicators of dissociative identity disorder: Clinical utility and theoretical implications. Journal of Clinical Psychology, 54(6), 803–810.

Leavitt, F., & Labott, S.M. (2000). The role of media and hospital exposure on Rorschach response patterns by patients reporting satanic ritual abuse. American Journal of Forensic Psychology, 18(2), 35–55.

Lloyd, D. W. (1992). Ritual child abuse: Definitions and assumptions. Journal of Child Sexual Abuse, 1(3), 1–14.

Lockwood, C. (1993) Other altars: Roots and realities of cultic and Satanic ritual abuse and multiple personality disorder. Minneapolis, MN: Compcare.

Lotto, D. (1994). On witches and witch hunts: Ritual and Satanic cult abuse. The Journal of Psychohistory, 21(4), 373–396.

Lovitt, R., & Lefkoff, G. (1985). Understanding multiple personality disorder with the Comprehensive Rorschach System. Journal of Personality Assessment, 49, 289–294.

Luxenberg, T., Spinazzola, J., &. van der Kolk, B. (2001). Complex trauma and disorders of extreme stress (DESNOS): Diagnosis, part one: Assessment. Directions in Psychiatry (21), Retrieved August 24, 2003: http://www.traumacenter.org/webarticles.html

Luxenberg, T., Spinazzola, J., Hidalgo, J., Hunt, C., &. van der Kolk, B. (2001). Complex trauma and disorders of extreme stress (DESNOS): Diagnosis, part two: Treatment. Directions in Psychiatry (21), Retrieved August 24, 2003: http://www.traumacenter.org/webarticles.html

MacHovec, F. (1992). Cults: Forensics and therapeutic aspects. *Behavior Sciences and the Law, 10*, 31–37.

Magnan, V. (1886). cK. Ey. H., Bernard, P., & Brisset, C. (1963). Manuel de Psychiatrie. 2nd.rev.edn. Masson: Paris., p. 245.

Mandell, H. E., & Schiff, M.(1993). Schizophrenia or terrifying reality? A supervisor's dilemma. The Clinical Supervisor, 11(20), 127–133.

Mangen, R. (1992). Psychological testing and ritual abuse. In D.K. Sakheim & S.E. Devine (Eds.), Out of darkness: Exploring Satanism and ritual abuse (pp. 147–173). New York: Lexington.

Marks, J. (1979). The Search for the Manchurian Candidate: The CIA and mind control. New York: Times Books.

Mayer, R.S. (1991). Satan's Children: Case studies in multiple personality. New York: Putnam.

McCulley, D. (1994). Satanic ritual abuse: A question of memory. Psychology & Theology, 22(3), 167–172.

McFarland, R. B. & Lockerbie, G. (1994). Difficulties in treating ritually abused children. The Journal of Psychohistory, 21(4), 429–434.

McFadyen, A., Hanks, H. & James, C. (1993). Ritual abuse: A definition. *Child Abuse Review, 2,* 35–41.

Meynert, T.(1889). Amentia, die VerwirrtheK. Jahrbuch der Psychiatrie (Vienna) 9, 1–112.

Moise, J., & Leichner, P. (1996). Prevalence of dissociative symptoms and disorders within an adult outpatient population with schizophrenia. Dissociation, IX(3), 190–196.

Moore, M.S. (1994). Common characteristics in the drawings of ritually abused children and adults. In V. Sinason (Ed.), Treating survivors of satanic abuse (pp. 221–241). London, and NY, NY: Routledge.

Morel, B.A. (1860). Traife des maladies menfales. Masson: Paris.

Moriarty, A. R. (1991). Adolescent Satanic cult dabblers: A differential diagnosis. Journal of Mental Health Counseling, 13(3), 393–404.

Moriarty, A. (1992) The psychology of adolescent Satanism: A guide for parents, counselors, clergy, and teachers. Westport, CT: Praeger Publishers/Greenwood.

Mueser, K.T. & Butler, R.W. (1987). Auditory hallucinations in combat-related chronic post-traumatic stress disorder. American Journal of Psychiatry, 144(3), 299–302.

Murphy, P.E (1994). Dissociative experiences and dissociative disorders in a non-clinical university student group. Dissociation, 7(1), 28–34.

Neswald, D., & Gould, C. (1993). Basic treatment and program neutralization strategies for adult MPD Survivors of Satanic ritual abuse. Treating Abuse Today, 4 (3), 14–19.

Neswald, D., Gould, C., & Graham-Costain, V. (1991).“Common “programs” observed in survivors of Satanic ritual abuse. The California Therapist, 3(5), 47–50.

Nijenhuis, E.R.S. (2000). Somatoform dissociation: Major symptoms of dissociative disorders. Journal of Trauma & Dissociation, 1(4), 7–32. The Somatoform Dissociation Questionnaire (SDQ-20) is available on-line; Retrieved November 30, 2003: http://www.psychotherapist.org/Sdq20.PDF

Noblitt, J.R. (1995). Psychometric measures of trauma among psychiatric patients reporting ritual abuse. Psychological Reports, 77(3), 743–747.

Noblitt, J.R., & Perskin, P. (2000). Cult and ritual abuse: Its history, anthropology, and recent discovery in contemporary America; (Rev.ed), Westport, CT: Praeger Publishers.

Nurcombe, B., & Unutzer, J (1991). The ritual abuse of children: clinical features and diagnostic reasoning. Journal of the American Academy of Child and Adolescent Psychiatry, 30(2), 272–276.

Ogawa, J.R., Sroufe, A., Weinfield, N.S., Carlson, E.A., & Egeland, B. (1997). Development and the fragmented self: Longitudinal study of dissociative symptomatology in a nonclinical sample. Development & Psychopathology, 9, 855–879.

Oksana, C. (1994, revised 2001). Safe passage to healing: A guide for survivors of ritual abuse. NY: Harper Perennial.

Paley, K.S. (1992). Dream wars: a case study of a woman with multiple personality disorder. *Dissociation, 5*(2), 111–116.

Pelcovitz D., van der Kolk, B.A., Roth S., Mandel, F., Kaplan, S., & Resicket, P. (1997). Development of a criteria set and a structured interview for disorder of extreme stress (SIDES). Journal of Traumatic Stress,10(1), 3–16.

Perlman, S. D. (1995). One analyst's journey into darkness: Countertransference resistance to recognizing sexual abuse, ritual abuse, and multiple personality disorders. Journal of the American Academy of Psychoanalysis, 23(1), 137–51.

Peterson, G. (1991). Children coping with trauma: Diagnosis of "dissociation identity disorder". Dissociation, 4(3), 152–164.

Peterson, G. (1996). Treatment of early onset. In J.L. Spira & I.D. Yalom (Eds.), Treating Dissociative Identity Disorder (pp. 135–181). San Francisco: Josey-Bass.

Pulling, P., & Cawthorn, K. (1989). The devil's web: Who is stalking your children for Satan? Lafayette, LA: Huntington House.

Putnam, F.W. (1997). Dissociation in children and adolescents: A developmental perspective. New York: Guilford Press.

Putnam, F. W., Helmers, K., & Trickett, P. K. (1993). Development, reliability and validity of a child dissociation scale. Child Abuse & Neglect, 17, 731–742. The Child Dissociative Checklist is available online; Retrieved November 30, 2003: http://www.energyhealing.net/pdf_files/cdc.pdf

Putnam, F.W., Helmers, K., Horowitz, L.A., & Trickett, P.K. (1995). Hypnotizability and dissociativity in sexually abused girls, Child Abuse & Neglect, 19(5), 645–655.

Pynoos, R.S., Steinberg, A.M., & Goenjian, A. (1996). Traumatic stress in childhood and adolescence: Recent developments and current controversies. In B.A. van der Kolk, A.C. McFarlane, & L. Weisaeth (Eds.). Traumatic stress: The effects of overwhelming experience on mind, body, and society (pp 331–358). New York: Guilford Press.

Raja, M. & Azzoni, A. (1998). Long-term atypical psychoses. German Journal of Psychiatry, 1(1), 34–48.

Raja, M. & Azzoni, A. (2003). Sexual behavior and sexual problems among patients with severe chronic psychoses. Europea Psychiatry, 18, 70–76.

Raschke, C.A. (1990). Painted black: From drug killings to heavy metal: The alarming true story of how Satanism is terrorizing our communities. New York: Harper and Row.

Read, J., Agar, K., Argyle, N., & Aderhold, V. (2003). Sexual and physical abuse in childhood and adulthood as predictors of hallucinations, delusions and thought disorder. Psychology & Psychotherapy: Theory, Research and Practice, 76, 1–22.

Read, J., & Argyle, N. (1999). Hallucinations, delusions, and thought disorder among adult psychiatric inpatients with a history of child abuse. Psychiatric Services, 50, 1467–147.

Read, J., Perry, B., Moskowitz, A., & Connolly, J. (2001). The contribution of early traumatic events to schizophrenia in some patients: A traumagenic neurodevelopmental model. Psychiatry: Interpersonal & Biological Processes, 64 (4). Retrieved August 24, 2003: http://www.childtrauma.org/CTAMATERIALS/Psychiatry_02.pdf

Rhue, J., Lynn, S., & Sandberg, D. (1995). Dissociation, imagination and fantasy in childhood: A comparison of physically, sexually, and non-abused children. Contemporary Hypnosis, 12, 131-136.

Riley, K. C. (1988). Measurement of dissociation. Journal of Nervous & Mental Disease, 176, 449–450.

Risso, M., & Boker, W. (1964). Verhexangswahn. Karger. New York: Basel—(Bibliotheca Psychiatrica et Neurologica 124)

Rockwell, R.B. (1994). One psychiatrist's view of Satanic ritual abuse. The Journal of Psychohistory, 21(4), 443–460.

Rockwell, R.B. (1995). Insidious deception. The Journal of Psychohistory, 22(3), 312–328.

Rose, E. (1996). Reaching for the light: A guide for ritual abuse survivors and their therapists. Cleveland: Pilgrim Press.

Rosik, C.H. (2003). Critical issues in the dissociative disorders field: Six perspectives from religiously sensitive practitioners. Journal of Psychology & Theology, 31(2), 113–128.

Ross, C.A. (1989). Multiple personality disorder: Diagnosis, clinical features, and treatment. New York: Wiley.

Ross, C.A. (1995). Satanic ritual abuse: Principles of treatment. Toronto: University of Toronto Press.

Ross, C. A. (1997). Dissociative identity disorder: Diagnosis, clinical features and treatment of multiple personality (2nd ed.). New York: Wiley. The Dissociative Disorders Interview Schedule, DSM-IV Version is also available on-line. Retrieved November 30, 2003: http://www.rossinst.com/dddquest.htm.

Ross, C.A. (2000). Bluebird : Deliberate creation of Multiple Personality by psychiatrists. Manitou, Canada: Manitou Communications.

Ross, C.A., Fast, E., Anderson, G., Auty, A., & Todd, J. (1990). Somatic symptoms in multiple sclerosis and MPD, Dissociation, 3(2),102–106.

Ross, C.A., & Joshi, S. (1992). Paranormal experiences in the general population. Journal of Nervous & Mental Diseases, 180, 356–360.

Ross, C.A., Miller, S.D., Bjornson, L., Reagor, P., Fraser, G.A., & Anderson, G. (1990). Schneiderian symptoms in multiple personality disorder and schizophrenia. Comprehensive Psychiatry, 31(2), 111–118.

Ross. C.A., Miller, S.D., Reagor, P., Bjornson, L., Fraser, G.A., & Anderson, G. (1990). Schneiderian symptoms in multiple personality disorder and schizophrenia. Comprehensive Psychiatry, 31(2), 111–118.

Rutz, C. (2001). A nation betrayed: The chilling and true story of secret cold war experiments performed on our children and other innocent people. Grass Lake, MI: Fidelity Publishing.

Ryder, D., & Noland, J.T. (1992). Breaking the circle of Satanic ritual abuse: Recognizing and recovering from the hidden trauma. Minneapolis, MN: CompCare Publishers.

Ryder, D. (1997). Cover-up of the century: Satanic ritual crime and world conspiracy. Ohio: CSS Publishing.

Sacco, M.L., & Farber, B.A. (1999). Reality testing in adult women who report childhood sexual and physical abuse. Child Abuse & Neglect, 23(11), 1193–1203.

Sachs, R.G. (1990). The role of sex and pregnancy in Satanic cults. Journal of Prenatal & Perinatal Psychology & Health, 5 (2), 105–114.

Sakheim, D.K. (1996). Clinical aspects of sadistic ritual abuse. In L.K. Michelson & W.J. Ray (Eds), Handbook of dissociation: Theoretical, empirical, and clinical perspectives, (pp. 569-594). New York: Plenum Press.

Sakheim, D.K., & Devine, S.E. (Eds.) (1992). Out of darkness: Exploring Satanism and ritual abuse. New York: Lexington.

Sar, V., Kundakci, T., Kiziltan, E., Bakim, B., & Bozkurt, O. (2000). Differentiating dissociative disorders from other diagnostic groups through somatoform symptoms in Turkey. Journal of Trauma and Dissociation, 1(4), 67–80.

Scaer, R. (2001). The body bears the burden: Trauma, dissociation, and disease. New York: Haworth.

Schlenger, W.E., & Kulka, R.A. (1989). PTSD scale development for the MMPI-2. Research Triangle Park: Research Triangle Institute.

Scott, S. (2001). The politics and experience of ritual abuse: Beyond disbelief. Philadelphia: Open University Press.

Scroppo, J. C., Drob, S.L., Weinberger, J.L., & Eagle, P. (1998). Identifying dissociative identity disorder: A self-report and projective study. Journal of Abnormal Psychology, 107(2) 272–284.

Sheflin, A. & Opton, E. (1978). The mind manipulators. New York: Grosset & Dunlap.

Silberg, J. L. (1998). Dissociative symptomatology in children and adolescents as displayed on psychological testing. Journal of Personality Assessment, 71(3), 421–439.

Sinason, V. (1994). Treating survivors of satanic abuse. London, and NY, NY: Routledge.

Sinason, V. (2005). Just like others, satanists abuse. Community Care, 5–11 May, p. 18.

Smith, C. (1998). The magic castle. New York: St. Martin’s Press.

Smith, M. (1993). Ritual abuse: What it is, why it happens, how to help. San Francisco:Harper.

Smith, M.R. (1992). A reply to Ganaway: the problem of using screen memories as an explanatory device in accounts of ritual abuse. *Dissociation, 5*(2), 117–119.

Smith, M., & Pazder, L. (1981). Michelle remembers. New York: Pocket Books.

Snow, B. & Sorensen (1990). Ritualistic child abuse in a neighborhood setting. Journal of Interpersonal Violence, 5(4), 474–487.

Stafford, L. L. (1993). Dissociation and multiple personality disorder: A challenge for psychosocial nurses. Journal of Psychosocial Nursing & Mental Health Services, 31(1), 15–20.

Steele, H. (2003). Unrelenting catastrophic trauma within the family: When every secure base is abusive. Attachment and Human Development, 5(4), 353–366.

Steele, K. H. (1989). A model for abreaction with MPD and other dissociative disorders. *Dissociation, 2*(2/3), 151–159.

Steinberg, M. (1996). The psychological assessment of dissociation. In L.K. Michelson & W. J. Ray (Eds), Handbook of dissociation: Theoretical, empirical, and clinical perspectives (pp. 251–267). New York: Plenum Press.

Steinberg, M., Cicchetti, D.V., Buchanan, J., Rakfeldt, J., & Rounsaville, B (1994). Distinguishing between multiple personality disorder (dissociative identity disorder) and schizophrenia using the structured clinical interview for DSM-IV dissociative disorders. Journal of Nervous & Mental Disease, 182(9), 495–502.

Stratford, L. (1993). Satan's Underground. Gretna, LA: Pelican Publishing.

Summit, R.C. (1994). The dark tunnels of McMartin. The Journal of Psychohistory, 21(4), 397–416.

Tamarkin, C. (1994a). Investigative issues in ritual abuse cases, Part I. Treating Abuse Today, 4 (4), 14–23.

Tamarkin, C. (1994b). Investigative issues in ritual abuse cases, Part II. Treating Abuse Today, 4 (5), 5–9.

Tate, T. (1991). Children for the devil: Ritual abuse and Satanic crime. London: Methuen.

Tutkun, H., Yargic, L.I., & Sar, V. (1996). Dissociative identity disorder presenting as hysterical psychosis. Dissociation, 9, 244–252.

Uherek, A.M. (1991). Treatment of a ritually abused preschooler. In W.N. Friedrich (Ed.) Casebook of sexual abuse treatment (pp. 70–92). New York: Norton.

Valente S.M. (1992) The challenge of ritualistic child abuse. Journal of Child & Adolescent Psychiatric Mental Health Nursing, 5(2), 37–46.

Valente S.M. (2000) Controversies and challenges of ritual child abuse. Journal of Psychosocial Nursing & Mental Health Services, 38(11), 8–17.

van Benschoten, S.C. (1990). Multiple Personality Disorder and Satanic ritual abuse: The Issue of credibility. *Dissociation, 3*(1), 22–30.

van der Hart, O. (1993). Multiple personality disorder in Europe: Impressions. *Dissociation, 6*(2/3), 102–118.

van der Kolk (1996). The body keeps the score: Memory and the evolving psychobiology of post-traumatic stress. In B. Van der Kolk, A. C. McFarlane, & L. Weisaeth (Eds.), Traumatic stress: The effects of overwhelming experience on mind, body, and society (pp. 214–241). New York: Guilford.

van der Kolk, B.A., McFarlane, A.C., & Weisaeth, L. (1996). Traumatic stress: The effects of overwhelming experience on mind, body, and society. New York: Guilford.

van der Kolk B.A., Roth S., Pelcovitz D., & Mandel F. (1993). Complex PTSD: Results of the PTSD field trial for DSM-IV. Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Association.

van Lommel, P., van Wees, R., Meyers, V., & Elfferich, I. (2001). Near-death experience in survivors of cardiac arrest: A prospective study in the Netherlands. Lancet, 358(9298), 2039–2045.

Vanderlinden, J., Van Dyck, R., Vandereycken, W., & Vertommen, H. (1991). Dissociative experiences in the general population in the Netherlands and Belgium: A study with the dissociation questionnaire (DIS-Q). Dissociation, 4, 180–184.

Vesper, J.H. (1991). The use of healing ceremonies in the treatment of multiple personality disorder. *Dissociation, 4*(2), 109–114.

Wagner, E.E., & Heise, M.R. (1974). A comparison of Rorschach records of three multiple personalities. Journal of Personality Assessment, 38(4), 308–331.

Wagner, E., Allison, R., & Wagner, A. (1983). Diagnosing multiple personalities with the Rorschach: A confirmation. Journal of Personality Assessment, 47, 143–149.

Waller, G., Hamilton, K., Elliott, P., Lewendon, J., Stopa, L., Waters, A., Kennedy, F., Lee, G., Pearson, D., Kennerley, H., Hargreaves, I., Bashford, V., & Chalkley, J. (2000). Somatoform dissociation, psychological

dissociation, and specific forms of trauma. Journal of Trauma & Dissociation, 1, 81–98.

Waterman, J., Kelly, R.J., Olivieri, M.K., & McCord, J. (1993). Beyond the playground walls: Sexual abuse in preschools. New York: Guilford.

Weinstein, H. (1990). Psychiatry and the CIA: Victims of mind control. Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.

Weir, I.K., & Wheatcroft, M.S. (1995). Allegations of children's involvement in ritual sexual abuse: Clinical experience of 20 cases. Child Abuse & Neglect, 19(4), 491–505.

Welburn, K. R., Fraser, G. A., Jordan, S. A., Cameron, C., Webb, L. M., & Raine, D. (2003). Discriminating dissociative identity disorder from schizophrenia and feigned dissociation on psychological tests and structured interview. Journal of Trauma & Dissociation, 4(2), 109–130.

Whitfield, C.L., Silberg, J., & Fink, P.J. (2002). Misinformation concerning child sexual abuse and adult survivors. New York: Haworth Press.

Williams, M.B (1991). Clinical work with families of MPD patients: assessment and issues for practice, *Dissociation, 4*(2), 92–98.

Wong, B., & McKeen, J. (1990). A case of multiple life-threatening illnesses related to early ritual abuse. Journal of Child & Youth Care, Special Issue: In the shadow of Satan: The ritual abuse of children, 1–26.

Woodsum, G.M. (1998). The ultimate challenge: A revolutionary, Sane and sensible response to ritualistic and cult-related abuse. WY: Action Resources International.

Young, W.C. (1992). Recognition and treatment of survivors reporting ritual abuse. In D.K. Sakheim & S.E. Devine (Eds.), Out of darkness: Exploring Satanism and ritual abuse (pp. 249–278). New York: Lexington.

Young, W. C. (1993). Sadistic ritual abuse. An overview in detection and management. Primary Care, 20(2), 447–458.

Young, W.C., Sachs, R.G., Braun, B.G., & Watkins, R.T. (1991). Patients reporting ritual abuse in childhood: A clinical syndrome. Report of 37 cases. Child Abuse and Neglect, 15, 181–189.

Young, G.R., Wagner, E.E., & Finn, R.F. (1994). A comparison of three Rorschach diagnostic systems and use of the Hand Test for detecting multiple personality disorder in outpatients. Journal of Personality Assessment, 62(3), 485–497.

Young, W.C., & Young, L.J. (1997). Recognition and special treatment issues in patients reporting childhood sadistic ritual abuse. In G.A. Fraser (Ed.), The dilemma of ritual abuse: Cautions and guides for therapists (pp. 65–103). Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.

Youngson, S.C. (1993). Ritual abuse: Consequences fro professionals. *Child Abuse Review, 2*, 251–262.

CHAPTER 5

Out of the Shadows: Re-envisioning the Debate on Ritual Abuse

Michael Salter

Presently there is no profession or body of literature with a comprehensive understanding of the dynamics of multiperpetrator child sexual abuse in developed nations. In the absence of an established discourse, some survivors of multiperpetrator abuse and their advocates have developed the language of "ritual abuse" to articulate their experiences and generate new models of care and self-management. The initial focus of ritual abuse discourse was on ritualistic forms of multiperpetrator abuse. Over time, "ritual abuse" has developed into a category of abuse that encompasses diverse forms of sexual violence that have been marginalised by mainstream debates on child abuse.

In the literature on ritual abuse, survivors and their advocates have tended to minimise or camouflage the commercial forms of sexual abuse experienced by survivors. This approach is common amongst Western discourses on abuse and trafficking, which are embedded within colonial constructions of the Western nation-state as "civilised", safe and free of systemic human rights violations. By reframing the organised sexual exploitation of children in terms of "cults" and perverse religiosity, ritual abuse discourse is complicit within a dialectic of denial that displaces multiperpetrator sexual abuse in the West onto minority groups and developing nations.

Child trafficking and sexual slavery are emerging as global concerns from which no country is immune. In the international arena, it is well recognised that some forms of sexual abuse by perpetrators of human trafficking are ritualistic in nature. This has yet to be addressed by policy-makers or law enforcement agencies in the West. In the twenty-first century, the challenge for those of us who work with survivors is to move beyond the stasis of hysteria, broaden our evidence base, and work towards an interdisciplinary and empirically grounded understanding of slavery, trafficking, and ritualistic forms of sexual abuse in the West.

Ritual Abuse as Discourse

Since the phrase was coined in 1980, “ritual abuse” has evolved into a discourse with its own vocabulary and literature. A diverse number of men and women throughout the developed world have come to identify themselves as “ritual abuse survivors.” They have in common a life story of organised sexual abuse involving multiple abusers (“multiperpetrator abuse”) with ritualistic features, and a range of severe trauma-related and dissociative disorders (Young, Sachs et al. 1991; Bloom 1994; Leavitt 1994; Jonker and Jonker-Bakker 1997). Survivors’ health needs are complex and they characteristically go unmet, although ritual abuse survivors’ interests are represented by a small number of non-government organisations, and there is an established body of psychological expertise on the treatment of ritual abuse survivors (Sinason 1994; Ross 1995; Mollon 1996; Fraser 1997; Sinason 2002). There is no authoritative definition of ritual abuse, and the term is used by survivors, and by supportive professionals and academics (“advocates”), to refer to both an abusive act, and a category of abuse. As an act, ritual abuse is generally understood to refer to sexual abuse that occurs within a ritual or ceremony, a position encapsulated by McFadyen, Hanks and James (1993, p. 37): “Ritual abuse is the involvement of children in physical, psychological or sexual abuse with repeated activities (‘ritual’) which purport to relate the abuse to contexts of a religious, magical or supernatural kind.” In the narratives of survivors, ritual abuse is often linked to other rarely acknowledged forms of abuse, such as extrafamilial abuse, the production of child pornography, child prostitution, and paedophilic sadomasochism (Driscoll and Wright 1991; Hudson 1991; Smith 1993). Over time, some survivors and advocates have come to use the phrase “ritual abuse” as a category for any experience of sadistic or organised sexual abuse, particularly those that are marginalised by mainstream child abuse discourses.

Debate on ritual abuse has been limited largely to questions about the existence of ritual abuse and the “truth” of the accounts of survivors. This debate has been enacted in both the academic and mainstream media, with a variety of professions and opinions represented within the ideologically-polarised camps. The bulk of opposition to “ritual abuse” has come from organisations and activists who hold that a significant proportion of allegations of sexual abuse are the result of mass hysteria and psychotherapeutic malpractice. The sceptic’s position on ritual abuse is most clearly articulated in the theories of “false memory syndrome” and “moral panic,” which suggest that survivors have drawn on social processes (such as psychotherapy) and cultural images (witchcraft, Satanism, etc) to construct their narratives, and that therefore their narratives are confabulations (e.g. Victor 1993;

Guilliatt 1996; Ofshe and Watters 1996; Showalter 1997; Nathan and Snedeker 2001). In what is arguably a misapplication of social constructionist theory, sceptics have successively decentred survivors' lived experience and repositioning their narratives—in fact, the issue of "ritual abuse" as a whole—as disembodied textual productions that can be analysed and critiqued from afar. These positions were popularised in media reports and books throughout the 1990s, and whilst both "moral panic" and "false memory syndrome" have been robustly critiqued (Herman 1995; Hunt 1997; Olio and Cornell 1998), they continue to inform public and academic debate to some degree.

There has been little thought given to the social construction of ritual abuse discourse by people who hold survivors' accounts to be largely true. Whereas sceptics have argued that survivors' accounts are entirely fabricated, survivors and advocates have treated one another's narratives as naturalistic productions unshaped by social context or cultural milieu. Nonetheless, the briefest purview of ritual abuse literature provides ample demonstrations of the progressions of survivors and advocates from wordless shock towards the language of "ritual abuse". Hudson (1994) provides an insight into the key moment in which she connected "Satanism" to the extrafamilial abuse of her young clients:

> It became apparent that neither I nor the combined experts of several local investigative agencies had previous experience with this particular form of multi-level/multi-perpetrator/multi-victim case. For instance, we understood the modus operandi but we did not have the motivation. Sexual perversion—yes. Child pornography—yes. Sadism—yes. But why? Finally, one parent said "It sounds like Satanism." I asked "What's that?"…
>
> …If anything was going to be done to solve this conundrum, I would have to do it myself. So, since 1986, I have studied in depth the available literature on contemporary occult theory and practice. I have become aware of the destructiveness of certain cults and I have learned something of the techniques of cult-related sadistic abuse. (74)

Hudson's account is not unusual in the manner that the least explicable aspect of survivors accounts becomes, paradoxically, the explanatory lens through which the client's entire experience is viewed. Unlike child pornography and sexual sadism, ritual sexual activity eludes contemporary psychological and criminological analysis. As seen in Hudson's case, clinicians confronted with ritualistic multiperpetrator activity have often drawn on the existing literature on cults to fill in the gap in their understanding. In doing so, they have positioned ritual as the primary, and eventually definitive, aspect of the experiences of

multiperpetrator sexual abuse, which has driven the development of ritual abuse discourse.

This emphasis on ritualistic forms of multiperpetrator abuse, and the consequent designation of perpetrator groups as “cults”, is problematic in that it presumes that the “ultimate end” or purpose of perpetrator groups is perverse religious worship. Survivors rarely, if ever, report that their primary experience of abuse is ritual sexual activity, and, where the belief systems of ritually abusive groups has been analysed, they appear idiosyncratic and synthetic, rather then doctrinal and systematic (Kent 1993b, 1993a; Scott 2001). The frequency of survivor’s reports of non-ritualistic extrafamilial abuse, and exploitation in child pornography and prostitution, also challenges the argument that perpetrators primary motivations are religious in nature (Finkelhor and Williams 1988; Bybee and Mobrey 1993; Jonker and Jonker-Bakker 1997). For many survivors, their primary abuser was a parent or relative (Driscoll and Wright 1991; Smith 1993), and their life histories include abuse within intrafamilial, extrafamilial, ritualistic and commercial settings (Lorena and Levy 1998; Scott 2001). In ritual abuse discourse, “cult” serves as an umbrella term for these fundamentally distinct contexts of abuse, and “cult member” designates all the abusers who assault the child, whether they are family members, perpetrating group members, or paying clients of the group. Within the “cult” frame of analysis, non-ritualistic and “mundane” experiences of abuse are minimised or ignored, and all abusers are presumed to be motivated by a spiritual conviction. The available evidence does not support the notion of a homogenous taxonomy of ritually abusive perpetrators and groups presumed by this position.

Ritual abuse discourse has tended to provide functionalist explanations for ritual forms of abuse. In the literature, ritualistic forms of abuse are most often characterised as either an attempt to perpetuate a perverse belief system (Core and Harrison 1991; Ryder 1992; Smith 1993; Boyd 1996), or to control and silence children during sexual exploitation (Hudson 1991; McFadyen, Hanks et al. 1993; Pooley and Wood 1994). Both of these accounts presume that perpetrators enjoy a transparent understanding of their own motivations, and of the full consequences of their actions. This presumption flies in the face of research findings on cognitive distortion and empathy deficits in sexual offenders (Abel, Gore et al. 1989; Blumenthal, Gudjonsson et al. 1999; McGrath, Cann et al. 2004). The functionalist account provided by ritual abuse discourse employs a dichotomy between belief and practice that enables commentators to avoid discussing the least palatable aspects of survivor’s disclosures; the role that the body and pleasure has to play within the perpetrator’s ethos of sexual terrorism and atrocity. The predominance of paraphiliac elements in ritual abuse survivors stories adds weight to Lanning’s

(1992) argument that multiperpetrator ritual activity is not necessarily “religious” in nature, but may be more closely related to sadistic pleasure-seeking and sado-sexual experimentation. For perpetrators, ritualistic forms of abuse may have intrinsic identity-affirming, status-building, knowledge-creating or thrill-seeking value within abusive familial or subcultural environments.

Regina Louf, a survivor of the infamous Belgium child prostitution scandal, testified to the use of ritualism within a perpetrating group, describing how children were “initiated” into the group through a drugged mock-marriage to “Satan.” However, her account emphasised the polymorphously perverse sadism of the group members, who found pleasure in the transgressive nature of illegal sexual practices. Children were victimised within the group for years, although Louf challenged the notion that group members were “paedophiles” at all: I find the expression “paedophile network” misleading. For me paedophiles are those men who go to playgrounds or swimming pools, priests… I certainly don’t want to exonerate them, but I would rather have paedophiles than the types we were involved with. There were men who never touched the children. Whether you were five, ten or fifteen didn’t matter. What mattered to them was sex, power, experience. To do things they would never have tried with their own wives. Among them were some real sadists.(Louf quoted in Bulte and de Conick 1998)

Whilst Louf’s account is commensurate with narratives of ritual abuse, she resists the totalising script of “cults” and “cult members.” Louf describes instead her grandmother and mother’s responsibility for her sexual exploitation, the child traffickers who procured her for organised abuse, and a clientele of sado-sexual adventurers who found pleasure in “the power to decide over pain, life and death” (Bulte and de Conick 1998). The ritual activity Louf described was neither the primary function nor expression of the perpetrating group, but rather, inextricably bound up within a black market in sexual terrorism fed by abusive families.

Kluft, Braun and Sachs (1984) use the term “pseudo-normal veneer” to describe the stable, nurturing facade that many abusive families maintain to camouflage their true nature from observers. Louf’s account troubles the “pseudo-normal veneer” not only of transgenerationally abusive families, but of her society as a whole. Her testimony suggests that complex criminal infrastructure can be constructed and maintained within developed nations over long periods of time to facilitate the traffic in child prostitutes and pornography, and that this trade is largely dependent on the complicity of exploitative parents. In contrast, ritual abuse discourse strenuously protects core cultural images of the “family” and “society” by displacing child trafficking and sexual slavery onto “cults”, and then sublimating those crimes beneath a framework of perverse religiosity. It should not

be surprising that, to date, there is not a single Western government that has responded comprehensively to the issues raised by the life histories of ritual abuse survivors. Where ritually abusive networks are uncovered, it is usually by accident rather then the product of law enforcement or surveillance (see Kelly 1998; Lyman, Johnson et al. 2005). Survivors and advocates are wont to blame this inaction on the sceptics who have discredited them and the public that has ignored them. I contend instead that the psychosocial dynamics of "ritual abuse" discourse reinforce individual and collective forms of denial, creating a hermetically sealed mechanism that contains, negates, and ultimately silences, the very voices that constitute it.

The Displacement of Sexual Slavery

Ritual abuse survivors and advocates are not alone in their reluctance to acknowledge commercial abuse and the role of the family in child trafficking in the West. These are recurring forms of denial throughout the broader debates on child sexual abuse and child trafficking. In policy and law enforcement, "the paedophile" is characterised as fixated, deviant, homosexual, more likely to have large numbers of victims and to share these victims with other offenders (Willis 1993). In contrast, sexually abusive fathers, and men who abuse girls, are considered "regressed" offenders who commit less frequent and less serious abuses "in the context of a normal sexual preference structure" (Howells 1981). These typologies were initially introduced by Groth and Birnbaum (1979), and they continue to be highly influential today, although they are based on strict distinctions between intrafamilial/extrafamilial and heterosexual/homosexual offenders have been contested by research (Abel, Becker et al. 1988; Abel and Osborn 1992).

The hegemony of a paraphiliac definition of "paedophilia" has created a disenabling environment for the serious consideration of multiperpetrator and commercial child sexual abuse. When the only policy lens on child sexual abuse is mental illness, then the factors that drive multiperpetrator abuse—such as profit, subcultural norms, social bonds and familial control—become invisible. The enduring appeal of Groth and Birnbaum's typologies to policy-makers may lie in it's displacement of "real" paedophilia onto the homophobic stereotype of the extrafamilial, homosexual pederast, which neatly circumvents uncomfortable questions around the prevalence and frequency of incest within the family and sexual attraction to children within the general community. Research has consistently demonstrated that a substantial minority of "normal" men self-report sexual interest in children (Crepault and Couture 1980; Briere 1989; Malamuth 1989), and one study found that a quarter of a sample of male volunteers

demonstrated physiological arousal to a child that equalled or exceeded arousal to an adult (Hall, Hirschman et al. 1995). The National Center for Missing and Exploited Children estimates that child pornography constitutes 20% of all pornography on the Internet (2003: 3), and so we can presume not only that many men are active consumers within the child sex trade, but that their interests are being catered to by profit-driven, organised groups and networks.

Despite evidence of a substantial pool of men in the community with a sexual interest in children, as well as a multi-billion dollar black market in child pornography, there has been very little research undertaken into organised abuse, child prostitution and child pornography in the West. The paucity of discussion and consensus can be seen in the absence of a standardised vocabulary to describe the phenomenon. Descriptions of multiperpetrator abuse ranges from "sex rings" (Burgess, Hartman et al. 1984), "poly-incestuous families" (Faller 1991), "trauma-organised systems" (Bentovim 1992), "multi-dimensional child sex rings" (Lanning 1992), "Satanist abuse" (Sinason 1994), "organised sadistic abuse" (Goodwin 1994), "network child sexual abuse" (Cairns 2000) and "prostitution rings" (Cambridge Area Child Protection Committee 2006). Each of these definitions accords priority to different aspects of multiperpetrator abuse, without necessarily acknowledging the complex array of relationships and abuses which constitute these cases. Very little is known about multiperpetrator abuse, the nature of perpetrator groups, or the experience of children victimised in multiperpetrator contexts. Research into multiperpetrator or ritualistic abuse has tended towards surveys of psychotherapists and clinicians regarding their encounters with survivors (Youngson 1994; Andrews, Morton et al. 1995; McMinn and Wade 1995; Bottoms, Shaver et al. 1996; Schmuttermaier and Veno 1999) or overviews of the symptoms and experiences of small samples of survivors (Burgess, Hartman et al. 1984; Kelley 1989; Snow and Sorenson 1990; Driscoll and Wright 1991; Smith 1993; Lawrence, Cozolino et al. 1995). Few researchers (Kent 1993b, 1993a; Itzen 1997; Scott 2001) have been willing to undertake qualitative research with survivors to explore the complex dynamics of multiperpetrator abuse and the inner world of perpetrator groups.

Lacking a well-developed empirical or theoretical base, policy-makers in Australia have formulated speculative models of "organised paedophilia" that marry the homosexual pederast of "paedophile" discourse with stereotypical, Mafia-like visions of organised crime. The Paedophile Inquiry of the Wood Royal Commission was announced in 1996 to address allegations of organised paedophile activity in the state of New South Wales, Australia. The Inquiry treated intrafamilial and extrafamilial abuse as mutually exclusive categories, and its primary focus was on homosexual perpetrators and male victims (Cossins 1999). A

number of submissions were made to the Paedophile Inquiry regarding multiperpetrator sexual abuse involving female victims, familial abusers and ritualistic behaviour, and Wood's (1997) dismissal of these accounts neatly summarises the implicit barriers to understanding shared by both the public and professionals:

> While it must be recognised that apparently respectable and successful members of the community do commit child sexual abuse, a quantum leap in credibility is required to suppose that they would do so in the bizarre, ritualistic way described, which includes the infliction of serious, even fatal injury and mutilation upon their own children. (671)

Woods' response is reflective of a widespread belief that intrafamilial abuse involves non-aggressive and relatively harmless sexual acts (Stermac, Hall et al. 1989). Whilst Wood could accept that intrafamilial abuse occurs, he was unable to accommodate sadistic sexual violence within his frame of reference for parenting, the family and society at large. After dismissing testimony suggesting that intrafamilial abusers were complicit in the extrafamilial sexual exploitation of their children, Wood investigated networks of homosexual offenders without significant result.

Broadly speaking, there is an unwillingness amongst policy-makers and law enforcement in the West to consider forms of sexual abuse that challenge their epistemic assumptions about transparency and predictability of their social world, and the impermeability of its regulatory systems. Recent allegations of ritual sexual activity and multiperpetrator abuse in indigenous communities in Australia (Jones 2006; Khadem 2006; Overington 2006; Smith 2006), and in migrant African communities in Britain (Clayton 2004; Vallely 2005; Woolcock 2005), have sparked timely responses from the government and credulous media coverage. In contrast, parallel claims of ritualistic, multiperpetrator abuse in urban communities in Australia and Britain (Brindle 1990; Humphries 1991; The Independent 1991), and the successful prosecutions of white ritually abusive perpetrators, (Shaw 1993; Tate 1994; Davies 1998; Towers 1998; Oberhardt and Keim 2004) have prompted neither supportive media coverage nor a targeted response by authorities. This differential is reproduced in the international arena, where, in 2002, the United Nations designated "the misuse of some ritual practices to intimidate women and girl victims of trafficking" as a research priority (Committee of Human Rights 2002). Other international organisations have noted the association between ritual sexual activity and child trafficking in developed nations (Beddoe 2005; United Nations Children's Fund 2005; Amnesty International UK 2006). As yet, the only

international non-government organisation that publicly recognises ritualistic forms of abuse in Western countries is the International Organisation of Migration (2001). The United Nations and its agencies have remained largely silent on the matter, despite submissions and presentations on the ritualistic abuse of children in Australia, Canada, Costa Rica, England, Germany, Scotland, and the United States (Muntarbhorn 1992; Sarson and MacDonald 2004).

Accounts of multiperpetrator abuse evoke the "body horror" that accompanies the abject violation of physical integrity, a type of horror that the West locates outside itself and defines itself in oppositional relation to (Taylor 1998). Spectacular forms of violence are produced by the Western media as characteristic of "zones of fear" overseas, in contrast to the apparent order, safety, and transparency of the developed nation. Narratives of multiperpetrator and ritualistic abuse challenge this distinction, bringing "exotic" forms of violence into the normative spaces of the every-day, such as the family, day-care centres and churches. Survivors' life histories undermine faith in the efficacy of Western systems of law enforcement and governance, in the omniscient eye of the media, and in the fundamental benevolence of fellow citizens. Whilst the public, media, and policy-makers have largely rejected the accounts of survivors in urban and white communities, similar claims of multiperpetrator and ritualistic child abuse in black communities and developing nations has not met the same resistance. This differential may be explained by a prevailing anglo-ethnocentricity that associates ritualistic and sadistic forms of violence with racial and cultural "otherness."

Across a range of discourses, the issue of multiperpetrator sexual abuse has been displaced onto gay men, black communities, and developing nations, and sublimated within homophobic and racist stereotypes. Ritual abuse discourse is complicit in this pattern of displacement with its emphasis on cults and perverse religiosity over and above poly-abusive families and commercial sexual exploitation. The actors in this dialectic of denial range from sceptics to survivors, from journalists to clinicians, from policy-makers to the general public. They may be diametrically opposed to one another within their own sphere of debate, however, what they have in common is a desire to protect and maintain the premises upon which citizens of developed nations base their understanding of their social world. The life histories of survivors of multiperpetrator and ritualistic abuse disrupt these fundamental beliefs, and discourses on child abuse and human trafficking have been shaped, at least in part, by a desire to contain and negate the full impact of survivors' disclosures.

Beyond Denial and Displacement

The ‘bizarreness’ of the ritual ordeal, and the severity of victims’ psychological and physical distress, belies the commonplace nature of the ties that bind victims to their abusers. Ritual abuse discourse, and other discussions on child abuse and trafficking, has traditionally located non-normative forms of relationships (Satanic cults, networks of predators, etc) at the heart of organised criminal activity. However, accounts of survivors of multiperpetrator abuse (Itzen 1997; Lorena and Levy 1998; Scott 2001) paint a picture of the heterosexual family as the primary site for the organisation and camouflage of extrafamilial abuse, where a child may be prepared from birth for a lifetime of sexual exploitation by family members and their contacts. Ritually abusive groups are often constituted of two or more extended, poly-abusive familial networks who trade their children with one another and with other groups (Bentovim and Tranter 1994). Kelly notes “just as with domestic violence and child sexual abuse, most trafficking is more mundane, involving everyday, routine power and control relationships.” (Kelly 2003)

Addressing multiperpetrator sexual abuse in the West requires an expanded vision of “child sexual abuse” that can accommodate notions of slavery, trafficking, and ritualistic forms of sexual abuse. “Trafficking” and “slavery” are implicitly racial constructs that are rarely applied to Western-born victims of sexual violence. There are striking similarities between the description of child trafficking networks in Africa and ritually abusive perpetrator groups in the West. The International Organisation of Migration (IOM) notes that, in Africa, “[c]hild trafficking networks are secretive, informal, and involve rituals and cults” (2005: 83), mirroring the description of European paedophile networks provided by a German high commissioner as “secret societies” with “many different criminal organisations in active connection with each other, networks, and alliances that remain unrecognised and undetected.” (Paulus 1999 in International Organization of Migration 2001: 2108) The complicity of victims’ parents in extrafamilial abuse, and the involvement of female perpetrators in managing and grooming children within the abusive network, has been noted in both developed and developing nations (Finkelhor and Williams 1988; Itzen 1997; Scott 2001; Pearson 2003).

Cross-cultural commonalities in sadistic ritual activity in organised sexual exploitation of children include forced captivity, churches and shrines as a site of ritual activity, sexual assault, animal sacrifice, ritual scarification or branding, torture, the harvesting of bodily tissue or fluids to make a “blood pact” or “curse”, the viewing of dismembered body parts and the forced ingestion of taboo substances such as blood (Somerset 2001; di Cortemiglia 2003; Zimmerman, Yun et al. 2003; Aghatise 2004; Amnesty International UK 2006; Houreld 2006). Terror, silence and obedience are common responses to ritual abuse amongst

trafficked women and children in both the West and developing nations (Kelly 2003; Aghatise 2004). Given the similarities between child trafficking groups in Africa and Europe, it is no surprise that the IOM has found linkages between them: The counselling centre Zartbitter in Cologne has for years frequently learned about the exploitation of minors in the framework of satanic rituals and the production of so-called "snuff-movies." *"Children who have participated in cults report to us that primarily dark-skinned babies have been abused," says an employee.* (International Organization of Migration 2001, 108–109, my italics)

Evidence from around the globe suggests that ritualistic forms of abuse are intrinsic to child trafficking and organised sexual exploitation. The precise role that ritual forms of abuse play in child trafficking has yet to be understood. Ritualistic abuse is not fully accounted for the paraphiliac model of "paedophilia" discourse, the functionalist model of ritual abuse discourse, or the profit-driven model of trafficking discourse. Fresh lens of analyses are required to move towards an understanding of perpetrator behaviour as embodied, social and iteratively related to (rather then determined by) ideology, profit and subculture. In searching for new and more comprehensive frameworks of understanding, the multidisciplinary approaches of Scott (2001) and Noblitt and Perskin (2000) may offer a new direction. They have opened ritual abuse up to the insights of anthropology, social theory and phenomenology, and, in doing so, moved beyond the insularity that has transformed the field of ritual abuse into an esoteric psychological curiosity, patrolled by "experts," and unable to draw from, or contribute to, related disciplines and bodies of theory.

In the narratives of survivors and advocates, the trauma of the ritual ordeal has overshadowed the mundane, everyday relationships that constitute child trafficking in the West, and the banal spaces of everyday life that camouflage it. Our challenge in the twenty-first century is to look beyond the costumes, ritual props, and perverse symbolism of perpetrator groups to confront the simple, brutal forms of exploitation and financial exchange that drive the traffic in the bodies of ritually abused women and children in the West.

References

Abel, G. G., J. V. Becker, J. Cunningham-Rathner, M. Mittelman and J.-L. Rouleua (1988). "Multiple paraphilic diagnoses among sex offenders," *Bulletin of the American Academy of Psychiatry and Law,* 16, 153–168.

Abel, G. G., D. K. Gore, C. L. Holland, N. Camps, J. V. Becker and J. Rathner (1989). "The measure of the cognitive distortions of child molesters " *Sexual Abuse: A Journal of Research and Treatment,* 2(2), 135–152.

Abel, G. G. and C. Osborn (1992). “The paraphilias: the extent and nature of sexually deviant and criminal behavior,” *Psychiatric Clinics of North America*, 15, 675–682

Aghatise, E. (2004). “Trafficking For Prostitution in Italy: Possible Effects of Government Proposals for Legalization of Brothels,” *Violence Against Women*, 10(10), 1126–1155.

Amnesty International UK (2006). “Executive Summary: Inquiry into Human Trafficking” Memorandum by Amnesty International UK, retrieved 16 December 2006, from http://www.publications.parliament.uk/pa/jt200506/jtselect/jtrights/uc1127-ii/ucht1802.htm.

Andrews, B., J. Morton, D. A. Bekerian, C. R. Brewin, G. M. Davis and P. Mollon (1995). “The recovery of memories in clinical practice: Experiences and beliefs of British Psychological Society Practitioners,” *The Psychologist: Bulletin of the British Psychological Society*, 8(5), 209–214.

Beddoe, C. (2005). *The Trafficking of Children into the UK for Sexual Purposes*, paper presented at the Conference *Trafficking of Human Beings and Migration: A Human Rights Approach*, Lisbon, Portugal, 4–5 March Anti-Slavery International.

Bentovim, A. (1992). *Trauma Organised Systems: Physical and Sexual Abuse in Families*, London, Karnac.

Bentovim, A. and M. Tranter (1994). “A systemic approach” in V. Sinason, *Treating Survivors of Satanist Abuse*, London and New York, Routledge, 100–114.

Blume, E. S. (1994). “Hearing the Survivor’s Voice: Sundering the Wall of Denial,” *The Journal of Psychohistory*, 21(4), 461–477.

Blumenthal, S., G. Gudjonsson and J. Burns (1999). “Cognitive distortions and blame attribution in sex offenders against adults and children,” *Child Abuse & Neglect*, 23(2), 129–143.

Bottoms, B., P. R. Shaver and G. S. Goodman (1996). “An Analysis of Ritualistic and Religion-Related Child Abuse Allegations,” *Law and Human Behaviour, 20(1)*, 1–34.

Boyd, A. (1996). *Dangerous Obsessions: Teenagers and the Occult*, London, Marshall Pickering.

Briere, J. R., M. (1989). “University males’ sexual interest in children: Predicting potential indices of “pedophilia” in a non-forensic sample,” *Child Abuse & Neglect* (13), 65–15.

Brindle, D. (1990) “Ritual abuse occurs ‘in 1 in 40 child sex rings’”, *The Guardian*, 19 October

Bulte, A. and D. de Conick (1998, 16 December). “Interview with Regina Louf, Witness XI at Neufchateau” De Morgen, from

http://www.radicalparty.org/belgium/x1_eng7.htm.

Burgess, A. W., C. R. Hartman, M. P. McCausland and P. Powers (1984). “Response Patterns in Children and Adolescents Exploited Through Sex Rings and Pornography,” *American Journal of Psychiatry*, 141(5), 656–662.

Bybee, D. and C. T. Mobrey (1993). “An Analysis of Allegations of Sexual Abuse in a Multi-Victim Day-Care Center Case,” *Child Abuse and Neglect*, 766–783.

Cairns, K. (2000). *Surviving Paedophilia: Traumatic Stress After Organized and Network Child Sexual Abuse* Trentham Books.

Cambridge Area Child Protection Committee (2006, 16 December 2006). “Special situations: Organised Abuse” ACPC Procedures, Cambridge, from http://www.cambslscb.org.uk/professionals/procedures/proc_ch12.shtm.

Clayton, J. (2004) “The lost children of Nigeria’s sex trade”, *The Times*, 5 April

Committee of Human Rights (2002). “Report of the Working Group on Contemporary Forms of Slavery” Sub-Commission on the Promotion and Protection of Human Rights, Fifty-Fourth Session, Item 6 (b) of the provisional agenda, retrieved 16 December 2006, 2006, from http://ap.ohchr.org/documents/E/SUBCOM/resolutions/E-CN_4-SUB_2-RES-2004-19.doc.

Core, D. and F. Harrison (1991). *Chasing Satan: An investigation into Satanic crimes against children*, London, Gunter Books.

Cossins, A. (1999). “A Reply to the NSW Royal Commission Inquiry into Paedophilia: Victim Report Studies and Child Sex Offender Profiles—A Bad Match?,” *The Australian and New Zealand Journal of Criminology*, 32(1), 42–60.

Crepault, C. and M. Couture (1980). “Men’s erotic fantasies,” *Archives of Sexual Behaviour*, 9(565), 565–581.

Davies, N. (1998) “Lives that were beyond belief”, *Guardian*, 1 August

di Cortemiglia, V. L. (2003). *Programme of Action Against Trafficking In Minors and Young Women from Nigeria into Italy for the purpose of sexual exploitation*, United Nations Interregional Crime and Justice Research Institute.

Driscoll, L. and C. Wright (1991). “Survivors of Childhood Ritual Abuse: Multi\-Generational Satanic Cult Involvement,” *Treating Abuse Today*, 1(4), 5–13.

Faller, K. C. (1991). “Poly-incestuous families: An exploratory study,” *Journal of Interpersonal Violence*, 6(3), 310–322.

Finkelhor, D. and L. M. Williams (1988). *Nursery Crimes: Sexual Abuse in Day Care*, Newbury Park, Sage Publications.

Fraser, G. A., Ed. (1997). *The dilemma of ritual abuse: Cautions and guides for therapists*, Washington, American Psychiatric Press.

Goodwin, J. M. (1994). “Sadistic abuse: definition, recognition and treatment” in V. Sinason, *Treating Survivors of Satanist Abuse*, London and New York, Routledge, 33–44.

Groth, A. N. and H. J. Birnbaum (1979). *Men who rape: the psychology of the offender*, New York, Plenum.

Guilliatt, R. (1996). *Talk of the devil: Repressed memory & the ritual abuse witch-hunt*, Melbourne, Text Publishing Company.

Hall, G. C. N., R. Hirschman and L. L. Oliver (1995). “Sexual arousal and arousability to pedophilic stimuli in a community sample of normal men,” *Behaviour Therapy*(26), 681–694.

Herman, J. (1995). “Crime and Memory,” *Bulletin of American Academic Psychiatry and Law*, 23(1), 5–17.

Houreld, K. (2006) “Sordid sex-trafficking tale starts at Nigerian shrines”, *The Seattle Times*, October 2

Howells, K. (1981). “Adult Sexual Interest in Children: Considerations Relevant to Theories of Etiology” in M. Cook and K. Howells, *Adult Sexual Interest In Children*, New York, Academic Press, 55–94.

Hudson, P. (1991). “Ritual Abuse: Discovery, Diagnosis and Treatment”, Saratoga, CA, R&E Publishers, 26–28.

Hudson, P. (1994). “The Clinician’s Experience” in V. Sinason, *Treating Survivors of Satanist Abuse*, London and New York, Routledge, 71–81.

Humphries, D. (1991) “Child Sex Abuse Linked with Satanism: Police”, *Sydney Morning Herald*, 13 March 1991

Hunt, A. (1997). “’Moral Panic’ and Moral Language in the Media,” *The British Journal of Sociology*, 48(4), 629–648.

International Organization of Migration (2001). “Trafficking in Unaccompanied Minors for Sexual Exploitation in the European Union”, Brussels, Belgium, retrieved 16 December 2006, from http://www.ecpat.no/dokumenter/Trafficking%20in%20minors%20part%20total.doc.

International Organization of Migration (2005). “Data and research on human trafficking: A global survey”, Belgium, retrieved June 23, 2006, from http://www.nswp.org/pdf/IOM-GLOBALTRAFFICK.PDF.

Itzen, C. (1997). “Pornography and the Organization of Intrafamilial and Extrafamilial Child Sexual Abuse: Developing a Conceptual Model,” *Child Abuse Review*, 6, 94–106.

Jones, T. (2006) “Paedophile rings operating in remote communities: Brough”, *Lateline*, May 16

Jonker and P. Jonker-Bakker (1997). “Effects of Ritual Abuse: The results of three surveys in the Netherlands,” *Child Abuse & Neglect*, 21(6), 541–556.

Kelley, S. (1989). “Stress Responses of Children to Sexual Abuse and Ritualistic Abuse in Day Care Settings,” *Journal of Interpersonal Violence*, 4(4), 502–513.

Kelly, L. (1998). “Confronting an Atrocity: The Dutroux Case,” *Trouble and Strife*(36), 16–22.

Kelly, L. (2003). “The Wrong Debate: Reflections on Why Force is Not the Key Issue in Respect to Trafficking in Women for Sexual Exploitation,” *Feminist Review*, 73, 139–144.

Kent, S. A. (1993a). “Deviant Scripturalism and Ritual Satanic Abuse Part One: Possible Judeo-Christian Influences,” *Religion*, 23, 229–241.

Kent, S. A. (1993b). “Deviant Scripturalism and Ritual Satanic Abuse Part Two: Possible Masonic, Mormon, Magick and Pagan Influences,” *Religion*, 23, 355–367.

Khadem, N. (2006) “Ban porn in remote communities, urges academic”, *The Age*, May 24

Kluft, R. P., B. G. Braun and R. Sachs (1984). “Multiple personality, intrafamilial abuse and family psychiatry,” *International Journal of Family Psychiatry*, 5, 283–301.

Lanning, K. V. (1992). “A Law-Enforcement Perspective on Allegations of Ritual Abuse” in D. Sakheim and S. Divine, *Out of Darkness: Exploring Satanism and Ritual Abuse* New York, Lexington Books, 109–146.

Lawrence, K. J., L. Cozolino and D. W. Foy (1995). “Psychological Sequelae in Adult Females Reporting Childhood Ritualistic Abuse,” *Child Abuse & Neglect, 19(8)*, 975–984.

Leavitt, F. (1994). “Clinical correlates of alleged satanic abuse and less controversial sexual molestation,” *Child Abuse and Neglect*, 18(4), 387–392.

Lorena, J. M. and P. Levy (1998). *Breaking Ritual Silence: An Anthology of Ritual Abuse Survivor’s Stories*, Gardnerville, NV, Trout and Sons, Inc.

Lyman, R., A. Johnson and S. Cannizaro (2005) “Sex Charges Follow a Church’s Collapse”, *The New York Times*, 25 May

Malamuth, N. M. (1989). “The attraction to aggression scale: part two,” *Journal of Sex Research*(26), 324–354.

McFadyen, A., H. Hanks and C. James (1993). “Ritual Abuse: A Definition,” *Child Abuse Review*, 2, 35–41.

McGrath, M., S. Cann and R. Konopasky (2004). “New Measures of Defensiveness, Empathy, and Cognitive Distortions for Sexual Offenders Against Children “ *Sexual Abuse: A Journal of Research and Treatment*, 10(1), 25–36.

McMinn, M. and N. G. Wade (1995). “Beliefs about the Prevalence of Dissociative Identity Disorder, Sexual Abuse and Ritual Abuse amongst Religious and Nonreligious Therapists,” *Professional Psychology: Research and Practice*, 26(3), 257–261.

Mollon, P. (1996). *Multiple Selves, Multiple Voices: Working with Trauma, Violation and Dissociation*, West Sussex, John Wiley & Sons, Inc.

Muntarbhorn (1992). Mission to Australia, DOI: E/CN.4/1993/67/Add.1

Nathan, D. and M. Snedeker (2001). *Satan’s Silence: Ritual Abuse and the Making of a Modern American Witch Hunt*, Authors Choice Press.

National Center for Missing and Exploited Children (2003). *Internet Sex Crimes Against Minors: The Response of Law Enforcement.* Alexandria, Virginia.

Noblitt, J. R. and P. S. Perskin (2000). *Cult and Ritual Abuse: Its History,*

Anthropology and Recent Discovery in Contemporary America, Westport, CT, Praeger Publishers.

Oberhardt, M. and T. Keim (2004) “Ritualistic Abuser Gets Eight Years”, *The Courier-Mail*, 14 August 2004

Ofshe, R. and E. Watters (1996). *Making Monsters: False Memories, Psychotherapy, and Sexual Hysteria*, California, University of California Press.

Olio, K. A. and W. F. Cornell (1998). “The Facade of Scientific Documentation: A Case Study of Richard Ofshe’s Analysis of the Paul Ingram Case,” *Psychology, Public Policy, and Law*, 4(4), 1182–1197.

Overington, C. (2006) “Boys molested in bogus initiations”, *The Australian*, September 7

Paulus, M. (1999). *Sexuelle Gewalt gegen Kinder*, Polizeispiegel, Kriminalpolizeiliche Erfahrungen.

Pearson, E. (2003). *Study on Trafficking in Women in East Africa*. Eschborn, Deutsche Gessellschaft fur Technische Zusammenarbeit (GTZ) GmbH.

Pooley, J. and D. Wood (1994). “Rituals: The power to damage and the power to heal” in V. Sinason, *Treating Survivors of Satanist Abuse*, London and New York, Routledge, 26–32.

Ross, C. (1995). *Satanic Ritual Abuse: Principles of Treatment*, Toronto, University of Toronto.

Royal Commission into the New South Wales Police Service (1997). “Final Report. Vol IV: The Paedophile Inquiry”, retrieved 16 December 2006, from http://www.pic.nsw.gov.au/PDF_files/VOLUME4.PDF.

Ryder, D. (1992). *Breaking the Circle of Satanic Ritual Abuse: Recognizing and Recovering From the Hidden Trauma*, Minneapolis, CompCare Publishers.

Sarson, J. and L. MacDonald (2004). “Feedback on the Panel Presentation: United Nations 48th Commission on the Status of Women” Persons Against Ritual Abuse Torture, retrieved 16 December 2006, from http://www.ritualabusetorture.org/unstatusofwomen.pdf.

Schmuttermaier, J. and A. Veno (1999). “Counselors’ beliefs about ritual abuse: An Australian Study,” *Journal of Child Sexual Abuse*, 8(3), 45–63.

Scott, S. (2001). *Beyond Disbelief: The politics and experience of ritual abuse*, Buckingham, Open University Press.

Shaw, A. (1993) “”Children of three were abused in Satan rituals””, *The Evening Standard*, 7 June

Showalter, E. (1997). “Hystories: Hysterical epidemics and modern culture”, London, Picador.

Sinason, V., Ed. (1994). *Treating Survivors of Satanist Abuse*, London, Routledge.

Sinason, V., Ed. (2002). *Attachment, Trauma and Multiplicity: Working with Dissociative Identity Disorder*, London, Brunner-Routledge.

Smith, M. (1993). *Ritual Abuse: What it is, why it happens, how to help*, New York, HarperCollins Publishing.

Smith, S. (2006) “Sexual abuse reported in Indigenous community”, *Lateline*, 21 June

Snow, B. and T. Sorenson (1990). “Ritualistic child abuse in a neighborhood setting,” *Journal of Interpersonal Violence*, 5(4), 474–487.

Somerset, C. (2001). *What the Professionals Know: The trafficking of chlidren into, and through, the UK for sexual purposes*. London, ECPAT UK.

Stermac, L., K. Hall and M. Henskens (1989). “Violence Amongst Child Molesters,” *The Journal of Sex Research*, 6, 286–300.

Tate, T. (1994). “Press, politics and paedophilia: A practitioner’s guide to the media” in V. Sinason, *Treating Survivors of Satanist Abuse*, London and New York, Routledge, 183–194.

Taylor, J. (1998). *Body horror: photojournalism, catastrophe and war*, Manchester, Manchester University Press.

The Independent (1991) “Ritual abuse claims upheld in four cases”, *The Independent*, 26 September

Towers, K. (1998) “Witch Spells Out Pagan Sex Abuse”, *The Australian*, 24 February 1998

United Nations Children’s Fund (2005). *Trafficking in Human Beings, Especially Women and Children, In Africa*. Florence, Italy, Innocenti Research Centre.

Vallely, P. (2005) “The believers”, *The Independent*, 18 July

Victor, J. S. (1993). *Satanic Panic: The Creation of a Contemporary Legend*, Chicago, Il. , Open Court.

Willis, G. C. (1993). *Unspeakable Crimes: Prevention Work with Perpetrators of Child Sexual Abuse*, London, The Childrens Society.

Woolcock, N. (2005) “Ritual beating of children is rife in Britain, study says”, *The Times*, 17 June

Young, W. C., R. G. Sachs, B. G. Braun and R. T. Watkins (1991). Patients reporting ritual abuse in childhood: A clinical syndrome. Report of 37 cases. *Child Abuse and Neglect, 15*, 181–189.

Youngson, S. (1994). Ritual abuse: The personal and professional costs for workers. In V. Sinason, *Treating Survivors of Satanist Abuse*, London and New York, Routledge, 292–302.

Zimmerman, C., K. Yun, I. Shvab, C. Watts, L. Trappolin, M. Treppete, F. et al. (2003). *The health risks and consequences of trafficking in women and adolescents: Findings from a European study.* London, London School of Hygiene & Tropical Medicine.

CHAPTER 6

The Politics of the "False Memory" Controversy: The Making of an Academic Urban Legend

Carl Raschke

In the spring of 1988 a small conference was convened at the Neuropsychiatric Institute (NPI) of the University of California at UCLA in Westwood. Host for the meeting was the late Dr. Jolyn West, then chairman of the NPI. West, a controversial public figure, was also at that time one of the prime movers in the anti-cult movement, while performing various advisory or leadership functions for the Cult Awareness Network (CAN) and its more credentialed professional counterpart the American Family Foundation (AFF). In attendance were various psychiatrists, professors, and administrators, including myself, some of whom were closely affiliated with CAN and AFF. I had been asked a year or so earlier to contribute my academic expertise on New Age religion and satanism to several "research projects involving cults that were overseen by AFF.

The main agenda of the select gathering was not only to provide an occasion for the various luminaries to get to know each other, but also to discuss and eventually map out a strategic plan for a new, strictly scholarly, organization that would expand significantly the "cult studies" mission of CAN and AFF. The conferees were looking to brainstorm an interdisciplinary, or "metadisciplinary," set of tasks that might possibly embrace religion, philosophy, sociology, and linguistics—to name a few fields—over and beyond the dominant psychological model of "mind control," or "coercive persuasion," which anti-cult activists routinely invoked with almost "theological" fervor. The tentative name for the new association was the Society for the Study of Social Influence (SSSI)—phraseology that had been chosen by West himself.

I gave a "theoretical" paper that was politely received, but obviously not much understood, perhaps because it sought to change both the discourse and the disciplinary approach with which the audience was comfortable. After my presentation we adjourned for lunch at a local restaurant, and it was during the casual conversation at our table over dessert that I became a participant in a series

of exchanges which seemed relatively inconsequential at the time, but in retrospect can be viewed in a much more important light.

The topic was “Satanism.” The last two years of the decade of the Eighties brought the height of media coverage of satanic killings and publicized accounts by victims of what was coming to be called “satanic ritual abuse” (SRA). These trends culminated in the national shock and horror at the murder in Matamoros, Mexico during the spring of 1989 of a young Texas student named Mark Kilroy at the hands of a drug-trafficking ring that was deeply enmeshed in the occult. Because combating “destructive cults” was the mission and aim of just about everyone who had come from all over the country to Westwood, I presumed there could be little disagreement over both the scope and severity of the problem. I was wrong. One of the conference participants, who went on to publish a major book in the early 1990s lambasting what critics would term the “satanism scare,” began to fume about the torrent of reports coming from therapists and clients alike concerning SRA. Without offering justification for his position (he was not a psychologist), he went on to offer a “theory” as to why the reports were suddenly flooding in. He explained them as the result of hypnotic suggestions introduced, either deliberately or inadvertently, by the therapists themselves. He attributed such a theory to the late military psychiatrist Martin Orne, though he admitted it had not been experimentally borne out. The theory had no name, but within a few short years it would be trumpeted far and wide as the “scientific” basis for virtually all the claims of SRA. The “theory” would come to be known as “false memory syndrome (FMS).”

The SSSI never got off the ground. Indeed, it was never mentioned in subsequent communications from the organizers of the Westwood conclave. But by the early 1990s just about everyone who sat around the table at that restaurant were prominently represented in numerous conferences, newsletters, and publications as proponents and advocates of FMS.

What is, or “was,” FMS? The idea that something can be a “syndrome” suggests a pathology that has been observed, documented, analyzed, discussed, and accredited by the medical, or at least the psychiatric, community as a whole. “Syndromes” are usually symptomological patterns that are first recognized by doctors or other professionals, scrutinized, and tentatively explained in medical literature, whereupon other researchers assess their findings and refine what has already been set forth. After an appreciable period of time, which may be years, decades, or even generations, these accounts are validated in the professional literature and by professional review and standard-setting bodies as something that might legitimately be dubbed a “syndrome.” “False memory syndrome,” however, did not go through any such development or vetting. Even to this day it has not

been recognized by either the medical or psychological community as a "syndrome."

Most such current syndromes are listed in the *Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders—Fourth Edition* (DSM-IV), published by the American Psychiatric Association. The manual is described on its cover as the "diagnostic criteria for the most common mental disorders including: description, diagnosis, treatment, and research findings." The "false memory syndrome" of course is not listed in the DSM-IV, which an FMS proponent might argue is understandable, inasmuch as the last edition of the manual came out in 1994. But if that were actually the case, there should still be a respectable mass of published literature that would somehow provide "description, diagnosis, treatment, and research findings." FMS advocacy groups in their own minimalist way do meet the first criterion. They depict "false memory syndrome" as the phenomenon of having "false memories," which begs the question. As for "diagnosis," the slope becomes much more slippery. In the early to mid-1990s it was common for false memory zealots to contend that memories of satanic ritual abuse were somehow "implanted" by therapists in the subconscious of their patients. This "theory" derived from a loose analogy with the phenomenon of "hypnotic suggestion," which has been identified, but not completely comprehended, by psychological researchers for far more than a century.

Most "suggestion" obviously is performed systematically and logistically by the hypnotherapist, although the regular use of the concept in social psychology, particularly when applied to group dynamics, tends to be metaphoric. The early version of the exposition of "false memory syndrome" stressed that some therapists for various nefarious reasons deliberately sought to persuade their clients while in trance that they had been ritually abused as children. But generally, and increasingly over the years, the notion of an intentional induction of bogus memories blended with the older, and quite legitimate, principle that our recall after a while is often clouded by, or conflated with, more immediate images, sensations, or other incidents for which we have lost the temporal reference. This process is known as "confabulation," and a few more recent experiments allegedly "illustrating" false memory on analysis turn out to be simple demonstrations of confabulation. The so-called "shopping mall" experiment is a case in point. Common sense, rather than psychiatry, shows that memory is fallible and often concocts a certain amount of content to "fill in the holes" where details are lacking. Childhood memories are even more problematic. The real question is whether memories can be routinely and systematically created *ex nihilo* without any biographical template behind them. According to false memory syndrome, they

can, although the agency, other than “iatrogenic” or therapist-induced mechanisms, is never spelled out.

When it comes to “treatment,” false memory partisans have no recommendations, let alone data. The only “treatment” of the “syndrome” would be for other professionals to deny its existence. Virtually all of the literature on “false memory” is both political and polemical. Some of it might also be characterized as “hysterical,” even while FMS adherents themselves are fond of “explaining” both ritual and sexual abuse claims as due to generalized social hysteria inflamed by a sensation-seeking mass media. In an article entitled “The Memory Wars” Elizabeth Loftus, a well-known, but controversial academic psychologist currently employed at the University of California at Irvine, recounts how her discovery that memory is “malleable” led to extensive and unwarranted persecution.

“Sometimes the battle for truth in science comes at great personal cost,” the article begins. “Elizabeth Loftus knows that firsthand. Her decades of research showed that memory—whether eyewitness testimony in a court or our most private and personal recollections—is malleable and easily distorted. But these discoveries landed her in the middle of a cultural war that changed her life irrevocably and continues to this day.” According to her own accounts, Loftus’ files were seized by the University of Washington after she investigated the personal story of an anonymous abuse survivor and debunked it in the pro-FMS magazine *The Skeptical Inquirer*. Loftus was accused by the survivor of violating her privacy and by the university of violating human subjects research statutes, which are subject to tough enforcement by the federal government. The university eventually was compelled to back down because Loftus’ article in the Inquirer did not meet the strict legal test of “human subjects research.” But the fracas prompted her to take another position at UC Irvine, where she continues the fight against “false memory.” “It is an unsettling fact that we can manufacture, wholesale and out of pure nothingness, whole events and pasts that never occurred. This fantastical creative ability of our minds may be treasured when it produces *King Lear or War and Peace*, but it can sometimes destroy lives and families when applied to ordinary, daily life. When it comes to legal cases—and the fate of a defendant—precise memory about even the tiniest of details can be crucial.”[1]

Loftus clearly has an agenda. In a way that is quite atypical of university professors, she has converted her once narrow academic specialty into an advocacy campaign. She has taken her battle against “false memory” out of the classroom and into the courtroom and pressroom. According to an article written by a reporter for *The Orange County Register*, the local newspaper for UC Irvine, Loftus “has testified for the defense in more than 250 cases, saying that you can’t trust

memory." She was even sought by the defense, according to the article, in the case of John Demjanjuk, the Ohio autoworker who was eventually found guilty of holocaust-related war crimes at the Nazi death camp Treblinka.

Fancifully and gratuitously describing Loftus as "the most influential female psychologist of the past century," the article recounts how the national press is beating down her door to get the genuine skinny on the science of memory. "Less than a month into her new job in Irvine, an "NBC Nightly News" crew is in her office. Down the hall, waiting their turn, are folks from the Discovery Channel. CNN is calling at 2 p.m. She is absolutely at ease, citing her own research, explaining in sound-bite fashion how memory, especially of a crime, gets distorted. The phone rings. 'Why do people lie in such cases?' she repeats into the receiver. 'I could guess, but I'm not an expert on lying. You're going to need to find yourself another psychologist." The Baltimore Sun reporter rethinks his position and asks another question. She begins to explain what she is an expert in. That would be the porousness of memory, how it can adapt itself to new information and make it its own; how it can be fooled; how it can invent; how it can be recounted with confidence, emotion and detail and still be wrong. She proved in study after study that the mind is not some videotape device that we can count on for accuracy and clarity. She has shown that memory is highly susceptible to seduction by suggestion. That what we remember is colored by what we expect to see, what we're told we've seen, what we want to see, what we are asked to see."

According to the piece in the *Register*, it has been Loftus' dogged crusade, particularly against "recovered memory therapy," that has "turned the tide" against the legal and common-sense view that memory is generally trustworthy. "At a meeting this year of the American Psychiatric Association, a team of panelists determined that Recovered Memory Treatment controversy was dead."[2] Well, not exactly. The website of the American Psychiatric Association has a quite different take on where the "controversy" is at present, and where it is going. A statement posted in 1996 notes that the APA's board recognizes "that the problem of separating false from true memories of abuse is compounded by the complex nature of memory itself." The statement quotes then APA president John S. McIntyre. "'Human memories are not like fixed images in a family photo album. They can be shaped by a variety of influences at the time of the event and in later years."

The statement notes a number of coping stratagems of sexually abused children which "result in a lack of conscious awareness of the abuse for varying periods of time. Conscious thoughts and feelings stemming from the abuse may emerge at a later date." Furthermore, "there is no doubt that sexual abuse of children and adolescents leads to severe negative consequences, and is a risk factor

for many classes of psychiatric disorders. Child sexual abuse is a public health problem that must not be swept under the rug either in the community or in the doctor's office, but must be dealt with forthrightly and responsibly." According to McIntyre, "we are especially concerned that the public confusion and dismay over this issue and the possibility of false accusations not discredit the reports of patients who have indeed been traumatized by actual previous abuse."[3] The APA has neither "settled" the memory debate, nor has it in any way signed off on the FMS version of why strange and horrendous memories are routinely "recovered" through therapy. It still stands for the most part by the official DSM-IV account of "recovered memory," codified in 1994, which clearly recognizes the legitimacy and symptomatology of the phenomenon in general. What the FMS ideologues term "recovered (i.e., 'false') memory" the DMS-IV dubs "dissociative amnesia." "Dissociative amnesia is characterized by an inability to recall important personal information, usually of a traumatic or stressful nature, that is too extensive to be explained by ordinary forgetfulness…. The reported duration of the events for which there is amnesia may be minutes to years…. Some individual with chronic amnesia may gradually begin to recall dissociated memories."[4]

One of the basic problems with the so-called "memory debates" is that they do not really add up to a scientific controversy at all. If "false memory syndrome" is put forth as "science," it is at this point in history nothing more than junk science. If one carefully follows the etiology as well as the rhetoric of these "debates," one quickly discovers that they constitute nothing more than claims and counterclaims by high-visibility and media-savvy protagonists, some of whom do indeed have serious academic credentials, that rarely rise beyond the level of mere opinion or conjecture. It is remarkable that the media itself, which gave wide berth to the "debate" at its onset in the early 1990s, has never bothered to examine the measure of scientific evidence, other than a few inconclusive anecdotes offered by FMS advocates who spuriously purport to have the backing of "science," on which the plausibility of the alleged "syndrome" is founded.

The "debate" has also been increasingly driven not by new experimental findings, as one would expect of a bona fide "scientific" wrangle, but by expanding rosters of PhDs who either support or discount the existence of "false memory syndrome." Sometimes it comes down to nothing more than whether a particular professor loves or hates Freud. Many would-be FMS "supporters" have no more technical competence in the psychology of memory than English professors who protest against the Iraq war have expertise in foreign policy. The polarization of the field, echoed in countless Internet websites, forums and email discussion lists, has not come about because of substantial conflicting research data about the reliability of memory. It boils down to an ongoing series of passionately moral polemics

concerning whether the “true” victims of sexual and ritual abuse are those who have recovered their memories of past traumas or those who have been (wrongfully) accused as perpetrators.

As with any witness testimony in a forensic setting, much more than the content of the testimony itself is at stake. The reliability of the testimony is just as much the question. Whereas in the past the general reliability of human memory—even to a large extent “recovered” memory—was never seriously questioned, the FMS publicity campaign has had the odd effect of casting doubt on whether memory itself can be trusted. The long-term consequences of such a change of public attitude can be staggering, particularly when it pertains to rules of evidence in a court of law, since the FMS “methodology” is anchored in the raw epistemological presumption that all memories can easily be altered, or manipulated, by both witting and unwitting agents of influence.

While the limited quantity of psychological research demonstrating the fungibility of human recollection, frequently referenced by “false memory” proponents, is actually founded on intentional subterfuges crafted by the experimenter, FMS arguments take one giant, additional stride and contend that pseudo-recall is just as likely to be the outcome of unconscious intervention on the part of sundry “helping professions,” or even mysterious and unquantifiable social factors such as “mass hysteria,” whatever that implies. The gang-messaging in the media by FMS enthusiasts fosters the deceptive impression that a purely political ideology somehow has a solid academic foundation beneath it.

Whereas the FMS movement may have had the salutary effect of heightening skepticism about “memories” that in some cases may have been given too much credibility in criminally convicting reputed perpetrators, the benefits have been grossly outweighed by its undercutting the role of witness testimony overall. As Martin Korn argued at an APA gathering, memory “is often the critical factor in analyzing the impact of the event and determining a suitable course. Memory is frequently fragmentary, however, and is experienced only as sensory perceptions. Subsequent life experiences may alter memory of the event. This makes accurate reporting of the event difficult. The validity of recovered memories has come under increasing scrutiny because of the possibility of false accusations. In one study, the rate of documented trauma was approximately 74% in both recovered as well as always-remembered memories. *It should not be assumed that recovered memories never occurred or that always-remembered memories actually took place.*”[5]

But that assumption is increasingly becoming the norm, thanks to the FMS campaign against the authenticity of memory. One of the most acerbic and influential instruments in the FMS propaganda arsenal has been a book published in 1994 by Richard Ofshe and Ethan Watters titled *Making Monsters: False*

Memories, Psychotherapy, and Sexual Hysteria. Ofshe is a professor of social psychology from the University of California at Berkeley. Watters is a self-described "freelance magazine writer" who wrote for the far-left political rag Mother Jones prior to partnering with Ofshe and, more recently, published *Urban Tribes*, a Soho-style, self-aggrandizing stab at pseudo-sociology that offers the remarkable thesis that Generation-X America is exactly like the now defunct television show *Friends*. Promoted on the book jacket as "the definitive account of the most pressing social and psychological issue of our time," *Making Monsters* is described as well as "groundbreaking science with powerful stories." Of course, the book contains very little science and it does not even bother to review even the minimal body of scientific literature on memory. Instead it is a relentless drum riff of sarcasm and innuendo, paraphrasing carefully culled news accounts of high profile abuse cases that are rarely dissected, but merely held up to gratuitous ridicule. The book takes particular exception to pop psychology and feminism in a consistently melodramatic style that leaves the misogynistic impression that women in general, and women therapists in particular, are flighty, hysterical, paranoid, or stupid, while such "hard-nosed" observers as the authors have assembled the true facts of the matter. "The promoters of recovered memory therapy have begun to claim that they are the targets of a 'backlash' organized by a well-funded conspiracy of forces aligned against women and victims. To be inside the recovered memory movement is to be in an echo chamber in which only information that confirms the effectiveness of the therapy and the reality of repressed memories is allowed."[6] The authors even go so far as to refer to "recovered memory" as an "epidemic" as if it were some kind of disease that their brave new "science" will, like the erstwhile scourges of cholera, yellow fever, and polio, effectively eradicate.

What do other scientists say, however, about the "science" of false memory? Apart from the false memory flacks themselves, the consensus is not overwhelmingly flattering. Ken Pope has pointed out that the notion of "recovered memory"—what was classically termed "repressed memory"—is neither an "iatrogenic" disorder nor a pseudo-science, as Ofshe and Watters contend. It is an established psychiatric theory—not just Freudian speculation—with landmark experiments and confirming data going as far back as the 1930s. Even Loftus, who has lately excoriated "true believers" in recovered memory, was once a true believer herself.[7] Rather than representing a pseudo-scientific and journalist-abetted craze of the 1980s, as Ofshe and Watters portray it, recovered memory was actually a loose consensus of the psychiatric community until the real pseudo-science of "false memory syndrome," which went to the media long before it could convince the professional world of its claims, came along.

There is serious skepticism as well about Ofshe and Watter's paradigm story to illustrate the "science" of false memory studies. In building his career Ofshe has made much of his own allegedly groundbreaking "experiment" in the late 1980s that unearthed the artifact of false memories. Ofshe and Watters recount this episode in detail in their book, which was the subject as well of Lawrence Wright's *Remembering Satan*, again published in 1994.[8] The episode involved accusations against Paul Ingram, a respected leader in the Olympia, Washington community, by his two daughters, who believed their father had sexually abused them. Ingram admitted to the crime after detectives assisted him in recovering his own memories of the incidents the two girls alleged. Ofshe was called in as an "expert" to help the district attorney make progress in the case, and he purportedly made a "discovery" about Paul's process of remembering what happened that helped generate the discourse of "false memory syndrome."

In their abstract to an article titled "The Façade of Scientific Documentation: A Case Study of Richard Ofshe's Analysis of the Paul Ingram Case," psychologists Karen Olio and William Cornell comment as follows: "The case of Paul Ingram, a man who pleaded guilty to sexually abusing his daughters, has received widespread media attention. Richard Ofshe (1992, 1994) set forth a narrative of the case which included his account of an experiment to test the veracity of Ingram's confessions and concluded that the inadvertent use of hypnosis during Ingram's interrogation resulted in the creation of pseudo-memories that convinced Ingram of his guilt. On the basis of an examination of the original source documents, the authors discuss the errors of fact, methodological flaws, and confounding factors in Ofshe's rendering of this case of alleged child abuse. They also cite examples of the extent to which Ofshe's imperfect narrative of this case and pseudoscientific conclusions have been uncritically accepted and repeated in the literature, *thus becoming an academic version of an urban legend."*[9]

How did this "urban legend" emerge? Ofshe and Watters give their own account of what happened, which is interesting to say the least. "While interviewing Paul, Ofshe began to suspect that Paul was not confessing to crimes he had actually committed but was self-inducing trance and imagining crimes suggested to him. To confirm his suspicion, Ofshe conducted an experiment. He invented and told Paul the story that one of his daughters and one of his sons had accused Paul of forcing them to have sex with each other while Paul watched. This accusation was entirely fabricated… Asked if he could remember the event, Paul replied that he could not… [Then] Ofshe instructed him to attempt to remember the scene. Paul closed his eyes and sat silently for several minutes and then said he was beginning to see the scene that Ofshe had outlined." Later, according to Ofshe and Watters, Paul described the confabulated scene in detail. "Presenting the written

confession to Ofshe, Paul seemed almost proud of his memory work. He was confident that his memory was accurate and that the scene had take place the way he said it had."[10]

In other words, a deliberate and thoughtfully devised subterfuge of false memory induction is used to inaugurate the universal claim of "false memory syndrome." That is like saying the deliberate making of a phony bomb threat "demonstrates" that all bomb scares are hoaxes, which is of course ridiculous. As an anecdotal note Ofshe, who happened to be a visiting lecturer at my own university about the time of this "experiment," claimed the outcome of the Ingram case would "disprove" all satanic ritual abuse claims. Ofshe and Watters deduce from this "experiment" that the detectives interviewing Ingram inadvertently "implanted" the memories of sexual abuse in his mind, a fallacy of "scientific" reasoning if there ever was one. The common sense explanation of what happened in the Ingram case leaps out from the authors' own account. Ofshe did not merely "suggest" to Ingram under hypnosis that he had forced his daughter and son to have sex with each other. As an "expert" hired by the DA, he reported the claim—and not at all while Paul was in a trance state—as a genuine accusation. Since Paul already believed he was guilty of sexual abuse, it is not extraordinary that he might "fill in the details." The event only "proves" that Paul had an active imagination, not that he had been "coerced" into confessing a crime he did not, in fact, commit. It is not up to a prosecutor to dissuade someone from their own confession any more than therapists are supposed to tell clients they are imagining things from the past, when in fact they have no basis to draw inferences either one way or the other. The irony is that Ofshe, according to his own version of the story, could not "dissuade" Paul even by means of the subterfuge that he was mistaken about a memory that the experimenter somehow "knew" he did not commit. "While to Ofshe the experiment proved that Paul had created a false memory, the encounter had a negligible effect on Paul's faith in the memories he was uncovering… [Paul] is now serving out a twenty-year sentence in prison."[11]

As an update, Ingram was released from prison in May 2003 and required to register as a sex offender. He subsequently took a polygraph test in which he denied having sexually touched his daughters. He passed the polygraph test, which consisted of only three questions. In the meantime, an entire organization based in Spokane, Washington has been formed to champion Ingram's innocence and to publicize his conviction and incarceration as one more grievous miscarriage of justice due to the implantation of false memories. Daniel Brailey, founder of the Ingram organization, writes on its website: "This is the story of Paul Ingram, an active charismatic Christian in Washington state who was admired not only among his Christian friends at the Church Of Living Water, but also in the community,

where he was a long-time Thurston County deputy sheriff and chairman of the local Republican party. In 1988 his two daughters accused him and a number of prominent men in the community of satanic ritual abuse and sexual abuse. There were months of whispered rumors, extensive questioning, and finally, arrest, incarceration, interrogation, and even an exorcism to 'cast out' the evil that Paul's pastor was convinced caused Paul to perform such insidious acts. After all this Paul confessed, pled guilty without a trial, and served a lengthy sentence in a state prison. What is especially startling about Paul's case, however, is that neither he nor many people with the most knowledge of the case believe he is guilty. Instead, he has become a victim of the child abuse/satanic ritual abuse hysteria of the late 1980's."[12]

The above is stereotypical FMS rhetoric. It employs a formulaic medley of factual distortions, exaggerations, emotionally charged language and ideological codewords, pseudo-scientific assertions, indignant protestations of bigotry and persecution, mockery of religious belief, and the usual tiresome "witch hunt" metaphors to convince the reader that there can be no debating the merits of the case. No matter what the circumstances of the case, the syntax is always the same, and the plot line is as predictable as a 1920's silent movie. Everyone accused of abuse is somehow the victim of overzealous religious fanatics, who make unwarranted, irrational, and self-serving charges, which are incredibly accepted uncritically by virtually all social service and criminal justice professionals assigned to the case, who are responsible for "brainwashing" the alleged perpetrator or witnesses to the crime. This mysterious process of "mass hysteria" is then amplified in the media, which feeds back upon itself, which finally causes a total travesty of justice which the FMS people in the white hats are duty-bound to redress. By reading FMS literature one could easily draw the conclusion that the entire American justice system is no better than that of the rural south in the days of lynchings and the Ku Klux Klan. The Salem witch trials of the seventeenth century are always the touchstone for comparison.

But what really happened in the Ingram case? Writing in the *Harvard Journal of Law and Public Policy* and citing actual court documents, Paul Cassell observes: that "three psychologists testified for the state and 'generally agreed that Ingram's statements were real recollections and not the products of any alleged trances or hypnosis.' One, a family counselor hired by the defense, submitted a report 'that reflected statements by Ingram acknowledging long-term abuse of his children and involvement in 'incest, sodomy, and homosexual activity.'" According to Cassell's account, the judge in the case noted that Ingram had made his confession before interaction with therapists, or anyone capable of planting "false memories" in the way that the FMS model stipulates. He also determined that the three state

psychologists were more credible in their expert testimony than Ofshe. Finally, he pointed out that since Ingram was a law enforcement official himself who knew all about the rules of evidence and the standards of confession, it would have been highly unlikely for him to have admitted guilt merely as a result of hypnotic suggestion. “In addition, the judge found that Ofshe conducted an ‘odd’ experiment in an effort to show Ingram was spouting back information fed to him by the police. While Ingram confessed to a scenario fed to him by Ofshe, Ofshe had chosen facts that ‘came pretty close to what one of the victims had accused the defendant of’ rather than something ‘totally foreign from anything that could probably be true.’ With respect to Ofshe’s claim (based on ‘reading a dry record’) that Ingram was in an ‘hypnotic state, or in a trance’ when he confessed, the trial judge stated: ‘I find that to be strange. I wonder if that can be done [i.e., determining that someone is in a hypnotic state from merely reading a transcript]. I have great cause for concern with that.’ The judge also found it strange that two weeks after Ingram pled guilty, Ofshe contacted him. Ofshe told Ingram, ‘You’re innocent,’ to which Ingram responded, ‘No, I’m guilty.’ A few weeks later, Ingram switched to agree with Ofshe.”[13]

It is clear that the FMS movement is more than a purveyor of “urban legends,” which are unself-conscious byproducts of human communication and information dissemination rather than a sustained agenda to disrupt the judicial process itself and to create a handy, pseudo-academic covering theory for defense cases in which witness confusion or intimidation is present. The technique is purely propagandistic and political, and exploits to the hilt the fair-minded observer’s anxiety that innocent parties, regardless of the evidence at hand, might somehow be railroaded or maligned.

In the early days of the FMS campaign this propaganda tactic successfully converted growing public concern about occult-related crime, which was documented not only in news accounts but also in court records and continues to be reported worldwide, into what cult-apologist Jeffrey S. Victor cleverly named “satanic panic,” arguing that various grisly murders, church and cemetery desecrations, and teenage suicides were themselves nothing more than a “legend” contrived by “moral crusaders” invoking a “scapegoating metaphor about the origins of evil forces which are threatening the moral order of society.”[14] “Satanic panic” was regularly summoned as a covering theory to bolster the idea of “false memory syndrome.” The sinister “Christian fundamentalist” always popped up as the counterfoil to the paradigmatic “evil Satanist.” As with all covering theories, these accounts were routinely short on data and long on bombastic “explanations.” Genuine information that could be dispassionately evaluated was surgically excised. Whenever pretending to reference actual “cases,” both “satanic panic” and

FMS adherents always cited extreme situations, or absurd testimonies, which had already gained public visibility and later collapsed, as if somehow these straw men were somehow reflective of the whole. Their literature constantly recounts various "rumors" in rural or small-town contexts, many of which were never reported in even the local papers, but are somehow considered counterevidence to the very hypothesis of "satanic crime." After the propagandists had declared their victory over "satanic panic" in the mid-to-late 1990s, they turned their attention to "false" or "forced confessions" purportedly elicited by "overzealous" cops in apprehending notorious criminals, or serial killers. Another "epidemic" had to be staunched. In this age of terrorist alerts and the search for Al-Qaida operatives in America, the dastardly FBI interrogator will probably replace the "hypervigilant," squint-eyed Christian fundamentalist in the FMS advocate's gallery of villains.

Every scheme of martyrology, of course, must have its arch-atrocity, if not its historically defining moment. For both FMS and "satanic panic" enthusiasts that incident is the McMartin pre-school case of the 1980s. A stock prejudicial summary of the McMartin case can be found today on the website www.religioustolerance.org, operated by the Ontario (Canada) Consultants on Religious Tolerance, an anonymous for-profit organization with a major web presence that aggressively promotes the view that all religious practices, no matter how noxious they may appear, are somehow deserving of "freedom" and "respect." Although it claims to air "all sides" in any debate, the website merely parrots the FMS propaganda line with regard to repressed memories and allegations of satanic crime.

"'McMartin' was one of the first *Multi-Victim Multi Offender* (MVMO) child abuse cases," an entry on the website declares. "It lasted six years—the longest US criminal trial in history. At a cost to the state of $15 million, it was also the most expensive. No convictions were obtained. The main evidence of abuse was based on what the children testified were memories of repeated, sadistic, ritual molestation. Years later, child psychologists realized that such memories can be easily implanted in children's minds by the interview techniques which were used at the time. Since psychologists and police investigators have changed their methods of interrogating young children, no more MVMO cases have surfaced in the U.S. and Canada… The hoax adversely affected the lives of hundreds of children, who are now young adults… Many feminists and others still believe that the children were subjected to horrendous abuse at McMartin."[15]

Obviously, the FMS propaganda would like to have everyone believe, there never was any substance to the allegations. Pre-school children, aided and abetted by their parents, the media, psychologists, and the courts, crafted an elaborate and sophisticated prank of some strange sort. "Scholars" like Victor go even further.

“The ritual abuse scare is the social creation of a late twentieth century witch hunt,” he pontificates. “There is no verifiable evidence for claims about a Satanic cult ritual abuse conspiracy. However, there is abundant evidence that an increasing number of moral crusaders are creating a form of deviant behavior, which exists only in their preconceptions. The victims of this rush to judgment include children who are traumatized by the emotional overreaction and repeated interrogations by well-meaning child protection workers. The victims include children who are taken away from parents who have been falsely accused of ritual sex abuse.”[16]

However, a funny thing happened on the way to the propagation of another “academic urban legend” concerning McMartin. Evidence matching the testimony of the children at the pre-school was, in fact, found. The evidence was gathered by a professional archaeological team digging at the McMartin site after the trial was over. The crux of the children’s testimony about ritual abuse involved their collective contention that they had been taken to ceremonial sites in tunnels beneath the pre-school. The original investigators for the district attorney’s office were unable to verify the tunnel claims, and FMS advocates for years have ridiculed the “failure” to find the underground passageways which the kids swore they had traversed. The report is lengthy, detailed, highly technical, and contains numerous photographs of the tunnels that were excavated as well as some distinctly “occult” objects amid the dig, including a plate with a pentagram. “In terms of the second and major goal of the project,” the report comments, “to ascertain the presence or absence of the tunnel(s) and/or underground room(s) under the preschool based on reports made by the children… the following recovered data is relevant. The feature first encountered in Classroom #1, Unit q (toilet and adjacent floor area) was followed into the Office (Unit 1) and from there to the Office toilet room… The feature that conforms scientifically to those attributes that identify it as a tunnel was the one uncovered under the northern E/W axis of the preschool… There was an identified entrance, large enough for adult human passage, leading from the surface down to the underground. It is notable that the entrance was located in the exact area that was concentrated upon by the District Attorney’s archaeological excavation in 1985 due ‘to the reports of the children’ of a tunnel entrance and buried ‘room.’”[17]

The report, finished in the early 1990s, concludes that the construction date of the tunnels is after 1966, and that the space had been “recently” filled in. “It is remarkable that the McMartin Preschool site was not properly investigated for such evidence,”[18] the report observes with an allusion to what most experts agree was a botched investigation on the part of the DA’s office. “It is concluded that the District Attorney’s Office archaeological project was inappropriately restricted in where excavation could take place.”[19]

While a few, scattered web commentaries by FMS hacks have tried to question the credentials of the archaeological team, which requires some imagination, and to offer rather flimsy contrary interpretations of the evidence, their efforts have been unsuccessful. The short historical memory of the American public as to the McMartin case itself, the relentless propaganda of the FMS claque, and the lack of press interest in a case that legally cannot be easily re-opened, has fostered the misleading impression that the SRA controversy and the "memory wars" have been settled once and for all. The opposite is true. Now that the twin academic urban legends of a "false memory epidemic" and national "satanic panic" have run their course, it may be time for serious professionals without an intemperate ideological axe to grind to start digging again into what really happened in the 1980s and early 1990s.

Notes

[1] Elizabeth Loftus, "The Memory Wars," *Science & Spirit*, (2004) l5, 28-29.

[2] Amy Wilson, "War and Remembrance," *Orange County Register* (Sunday, November 3, 2002).

[3] See APA document online at http://www.psych.org/public_info/MEMORI~1.cfm.

[4] DMS-IV, pp. 478-9

[5] Martin L. Korn, MD, *Various Perspectives on Violence*, American Psychiatric Association 153rd Annual Meeting. Day 3–May 16, 2000. Italics mine.

[6] Richard Ofshe and Ethan Watters, *Making Monsters: False Memories, Psychotherapy, and Sexual Hysteria* (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1994), p. 200.

[7] See Ken S. Pope, "Pseudoscience, Cross-examination, and Scientific Evidence in the Recovered Memory Controversy," *Psychology, Public Policy, and Law*, vol. 4, no. 4, pp. 1160-81. Loftus' defense of recovered memory can be found in G.R. Loftus and E.F. Loftus, *Human Memory: The Processing of Information* (Hillsdale, NJ: Lawrence Erlbaum, 1976).

[8] Lawrence Wright, *Remembering Satan* (New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1994).

[9] Karen Olio and William Cornell, *Psychology, Public Policy, and Law*, vol. 4, no. 4, pp. 1182–97. Italics mine.

[10] Ofshe and Watters, p. 174.

[11] Ofshe and Watters, p. 175.

[12] Cited from the Internet on August 13, 2004, http://members.aol.com/IngramOrg/.

[13] Paul G. Cassell, "The Guilty and the 'Innocent': An Examination of Alleged Cases of Wrongful Conviction from False Confessions," *Harvard Journal of Law and Public Policy* (1999).

[14] Jeffrey Victor, Satanic Panic: *The Creation of a Contemporary* Legend (Chicago: Open Court, 1993), p. 306. A similar position is taken by James T. Richardson, Joel Best, and David G. Bromley, *The Satanism Scare* (New York: Aldine de Gruyter, 1991).

[15] Cited from the web on August 13, 2004 at http://www.religioustolerance.org/ra_mcmar.htm.

[16] Victor, p. 117.

[17] E. Gary Stickel, Ph.D et. al.., "Archaeological Investigations of the McMartin Preschool Site, Manhattan Beach, California" (Redondo Beach CA, ACT Publications, 2002), p. 91.

[18] Stickel et. al., p. 93.

[19] Stickel et. al., p. 95.

CHAPTER 7

Interrelated Moral Panics and Counter-panics: The Cult Brainwashing Panic and The False Memory/ Ritual Abuse Moral Panic

Martin H. Katchen

Moral panic theory, first defined by Cohen (1972) and defined more extensively by Erich Goode and Nachman ben Yehudah (1994), has been a useful theoretical construct, enabling students of social deviance to explore just how it is that a given behavior becomes defined as deviant. But there are certain drawbacks to moral panic theory as Goode and Ben Yehudah define it that limits its usefulness as a research tool.

Firstly, the criterion of disproportionality (Goode & ben Yehudah, 1994, pp. 43–44) is problematic (Schneider 1985). Goode and Ben Yehudah claim that by limiting the definition of moral panic to issues where objective criteria of disproportionality are met, the concept is protected from strict social constructionist criticism. Social constructionists allege that since all views of reality are relative and subjective, there can be no "panic" since there is no objective reality against which to measure social concern (ibid. p.36). Goode and ben Yehudah claim that it is possible to remedy this defect by using objective criteria of disproportionality including 1) exaggeration of figures in claims of the seriousness of the problem 2) the attention paid to a given social problem exceeds the attention paid to another social problem whose damage is as great or greater according to objective criteria such as lives lost or economic cost and 3) whether the attention paid to the problem is greater than it has been before or after without an equivalent change in the damage caused by the problem (ibid. p. 42). The problem with this definition is that there is little evidence that social concern is mobilized any differently in cases where Goode and ben Yehudah's criteria of disproportionality are not met. Panic is an emotion and a pattern of behavior and it is possible to see it in situations where a vigorous response is seen to be appropriate as much as when a vigorous response is seen in retrospect to have been

inappropriate. Wilson Goode points up the fact that in the War on Drugs, which has spanned eight decades, certain procedures for fomenting a moral panic were followed. The enemy (drugs, drug dealers, and sometimes drug users) were made into folk devils. Atrocity stories about drugs were told. Politicians and activists from Henry Anslinger (banning marijuana in 1937) to New Jersey Governor Christine Whitman (prosecuting needle exchanges) engage in moral entrepeneurship, profiting politically by the issue. And the prohibitionist response to the problem, according to Wilson Goode, is greatly disproportionate to the actual harm that illicit drugs cause, as the Swiss recently concluded when they agreed by referendum to supply heroin to addicts.

The problem is that moral panic is also fomented in response to problems, which are severe and serious, by any objective standard. The lead-up to World War II was marked by the demonization of Nazis and "Japs," which resulted in Japan being embargoed for its refusal to withdraw from China. Atrocity stories (true) about the Rape of Nanking were told in the press, with similar atrocity stories being told in press and film about the Nazis. The movie *Casablanca* is a good example of propaganda which just happened to be largely true aimed at mobilizing public opinion in favor of American involvement in World War II. And Winston Churchill and Franklin Delano Roosevelt acted as moral entrepreneurs, gaining politically as they convinced their respective countries that war was justified. And there are far fewer grounds for the opinion that the British and American decision to fight Nazi Germany and Japan was disproportionate to the problem the aggressive behavior of those two nations posed to the peace of the world. We see the same procedures for fomenting a moral panic, including making the enemy into a folk devil, atrocity stories and moral entrepeneurship being followed in both examples.

Secondly, moral panics rarely exist independently of one another. Moral panics do not necessarily end either by vanishing without a trace as the consensus for it evaporates or by becoming routinized or institutionalized. In many cases, moral panics can end because the behavior of those moral entrepreneurs identified by the public with the moral panic can be perceived by the public as outrageous enough to create a moral counter-panic against the moral entrepreneur and the original moral panic. Such was arguably the case when the public behavior of Joseph McCarthy in his crusade against domestic Communism in the US became so outrageous as to create a moral panic against McCarthyism. A more contemporary example was the current moral panic against the Clinton Administration and the counter-panic fomented by the Democrats against Kenneth Starr and the Republicans who were prosecuting the President.

Moreover, this process need not and often does not occur sequentially. Just because another group of people defines a group of people as deviant does not mean that that group of people being so defined will passively accept that definition. The response to being defined as deviant very often results in the group that would be defined as deviant to attempt to mobilize to rectify that status by creating a moral panic against the first group (impeaching the prosecutor). Thus one can have ongoing mutual moral panics between elements of society or between different societies with each being seen as the folk devil of the other. This is especially true in cases of war between nations. In fact it is difficult in an age of mass communications and mass mobilization to sustain a war between nations without generating a moral panic among one's citizenry against the designated enemy.

Thus to abandon the disproportionality criterion for moral panics makes the concept of moral panic much more useful as a tool of analysis than to attempt to limit the definition to cases where disproportionality can be proven to exist. To restrict the definition as Goode and Ben Yehudah have done requires the researcher to prove disproportionality in order to use moral panic theory. Conversely the researcher must use the other criteria in order to prove that the amount of energy given to a particular social problem is disproportionate to the problem and thus to ridicule a social problem as a moral panic. This may be useful if the researcher is engaging in polemic, but it can be intellectually dishonest. The disproportionality criteria restrict the utility of a concept that can be quite useful in understanding a wide variety of social situations where mobilization occurs. The expanded definition of moral panics is thus more illuminating and therefore more useful to the social scientist.

An analysis of the interrelationship between the moral panics over brainwashing in the 1950s, the debate over brainwashing by "destructive cults" in the 1970s and 1980s and the moral panics over satanic ritual abuse and false memory syndrome will serve to illustrate this point. Brainwashing, cult brainwashing and false memory syndrome form a chain of moral panics which are in many ways linear successors of one another, with the ideology of each moral panic being used as a foundation upon which the next is built. To understand one as the successor and in some cases, adversary of the other can illustrate how moral panics interrelate with one another.

Prelude: War in the Age of Ideology

World War I marked the end of the 19th Century Age of Imperialism. During the 19th Century, Western nations had competed with one another for power and

influence and to carve out spheres of influence in the rest of the World. The dominant social ethos of that time was nationalism with a greater or lesser degree of representative government. Loyalty to one's country was accepted as a given.

The devastation of World War I opened the door to a number of very different models of social organization. Beginning with the formation of the Soviet Union out of the Russian Empire in 1917–1921, states began to be formed and previously existing states shaped by ideologies. These ideologies were coherent belief systems that purported to justify new methods of social organization and state formation on purportedly scientific premises. These ideology based states were often (though not invariably) highly authoritarian with political power and authority centered in a relatively small group of people (or party) that purported to be the most advanced or vanguard elements of the new society according to the ideology.

The formation of the Soviet Union according to the ideology of Marxist-Leninism proved to be only the first of the modern ideological states. It was quickly followed by Italy under Mussolini's fascist ideology. Later, during the Great Depression, Germany became an ideological state under Nazism and Japan under its Kokutai or Imperial mythos. Still later, the Marxist Leninist People's Republic of China would be formed under the leadership of Mao Ze-dong.

The United States became an ideologically oriented nation at this time as well, although without the anti-democratic social organization of the Soviet Union or the other previously listed states. During the Progressive Era, an ideology developed that melded the social conscience of the Social Gospel Movement of Rauschenbusch and others with the logical positivism of Thomas Dewey and the missionary internationalism of Woodrow Wilson. Eclipsed during the 1920s by nativism and isolationism, this ideology fell once more into favor during the 1930s during Franklin Delano Roosevelt's New Deal.

All of these ideologies emphasized the importance of mobilizing the people that made up their societies to work hard and sacrifice for a better tomorrow. To accomplish this, all these ideological societies, using the theory of Georges Sorel, constructed unifying myths. This myth could be world socialism in the Soviet Union, lebensraum in the case of Nazi Germany, or even the revived vision of a world without war in the United States during the World War II years. In each case, keeping one's countrymen believing in the ideology and the mobilizing myth became a key concern, particularly when ideologically based nations moved to war with other ideologically based nations.

September 1st, 1939, marked the beginning of a conflict between ideologies and belief systems that was to last fifty years, until the fall of the Berlin Wall and may yet be resumed. During this conflict, both Germany and the U.S. made heavy use of guerrillas, local partisan units and fifth columns. Germany formed many

Waffen SS units from captured prisoners-of-war. Moreover, even in the United States, Nazi-sympathizer groups such as the German-American Bund agitated against American entry into the war right up until Pearl Harbor. Nazi psychological warfare capabilities began to concern the Allies. This concern was heightened after the defeat of Nazi Germany, when it became apparent that the Soviet Union would not accept American world hegemony and intended to continue the ideological struggle.

Moral panics rarely begin with mass mobilization. Before a situation can be seriously considered to be a problem serious enough to merit a mobilization or moral panic response, the original moral entrepreneur must first sell a discrete segment of the community or institution on the seriousness of the problem and mobilize it. In the case of brainwashing, the initial approach and moral panic was within the military and the budding intelligence community in the United States and Great Britain. Serious concern over the ability of enemy intelligence services to psychologically manipulate American servicemen into collaborating with the enemy led to psychological research aimed at manipulating enemy servicemen as well as preventing one's own forces from being manipulated during World War II. As part of this early effort, tests were made for a truth drug that could loosen reluctant tongues, which included such agents as barbiturates, cocaine, scopolamine, and cannabis (Lee & Shlain, 1992 p. 3–5). As early as (1944), George Estabrooks, Professor of Psychology at Colgate University was claiming that it was possible through the use of hypnosis to induce what we now know as Dissociative Identity Disorder. Estabrooks thought that this could create more effective intelligence operatives who could maintain "covers" and not reveal classified information under torture because they would be amnestic for their other life unless triggered by a code word (Estabrooks, 1944). There is evidence that the Office of Naval Research during World War II (Ross, 1996) employed George H. Estabrooks and that he was well respected by colleagues that included Ernest Hilgard and Martin Orne (ibid, 1996, p. 8). Orne would later feature prominently in the cult brainwashing moral panic and the False Memory Syndrome moral panic.

At the same time, more basic research was taking place into the effects of trauma on the human central nervous system. This research would make up one of the bases for both the brainwashing moral panic of the 1950s and the cult brainwashing moral panic of the 1970s and 1980s as well as much of the current scientific understanding of the effects of trauma. William Sargant attempted to apply the behavioral observations of Joseph Pavlov from the early 1900s to the urgent question of how to best treat what was then called combat fatigue and what is now known as post-traumatic stress disorder.

> Sargant's research interest centered on what Pavlov called "brain inhibition or transmarginal inhibition (Sargant 1957). Sargant, paraphrasing Pavlov, states that both animals and people go through three stages of transmarginal inhibition before final emotional collapse. In the first stage, the equivalent stage, all stimuli of whatever strength will produce the same emotional response. In the subsequent paradoxical stage, smaller stimuli will produce a greater response than a bigger stimulus. (Sargant 1957 p. 11–12) Finally, in the ultra-paradoxical stage, long-standing behavioral patterns change. A normally docile dog will bite its master. A prisoner may adopt the ideas of its captors. And a religious conversion may take place.

Sargant's initial work in this area involved the treatment of what was then called combat fatigue and what is now called Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder. Sargant, along with Grinker and Spiegel found that the treatment of PTSD by drug or hypnotic abreaction led to a much better prognosis. Later, Sargant generalized his theories to include a physiologically reductionist theory of religious conversion which was then applied to the issue of brainwashing.

The Korean War Brainwashing Panic

From the October the West had perceived Revolution in Russia in 1917 onward, Communism as a fundamental threat to world peace and order. Indeed, the struggle between capitalism and communism was along the lines of a religious war. The early 1940s were an interlude in this struggle.

World War II had forged a united front between the United States, Great Britain and the Soviet Union against the common threat perceived to have been posed by Nazi Germany. Immediately thereafter, it became apparent that the Soviet Union was not about to acquiesce to Anglo-American world hegemony. Communist governments were set up throughout Russian occupied Eastern Europe. When the one democratic and unoccupied nation in Eastern Europe, Czechoslovakia, fell to a Communist government in 1948 and a Communist insurgency threatened to overthrow the government of Greece, President Harry Truman committed the United States to contain communism and resist its spread. A moral panic began in the United States against Communists, foreign and domestic.

In the meantime, events in East Asia were to deepen the atmosphere of moral panic in the United States considerably. The Chinese Communist Party discovered in the 1930s that the way to power lay in the creation of a moral panic against "bourgeois" elements in peasant villages. These elements included the traditional

village gentry as well as rich peasants. These elements were identified as class enemies and denounced as such (Hinton, 1966 p.112).

One of the reasons the Chinese Communists were effective was that they had mastered the group dynamics of group criticism and group self-criticism. This they practiced amongst themselves before going out among the peasants and workers and teaching it to them. Everyone from class enemies to prospective cadres were obliged to publicly confess their shortcomings and to hear, also in public, humiliating criticism from the audience (Hinton, p. 335-368). In doing so, they learned in a highly traumatic fashion to reinterpret their lives according to Marxist Leninist doctrine. In this manner, a person's thoughts could be reformed.

This process, properly named szu-hsiang-kai-tsao, translated as ideological remolding or thought reform (Lifton, 1961 p. 4) proved to be highly effective, not just with peasants and local landlords, but often even with captured officers of the hated Kuomintang. Following the successful takeover of China by the Communists (which took the West totally by surprise) in 1949, the Chinese began to apply the techniques to Westerners who had remained in China and were accused of espionage. From there, it was a short step to applying thought reform to captured American prisoners-of-war. As China fell to Mao Zedong's People's Liberation Army and Russia exploded its first atom bomb, ending the American nuclear monopoly, the atmosphere of moral panic in the United States deepened. When the communist government of Kim II Sung, which had been established in North Korea by the occupying Russians attacked the American sponsored government of Synghman Rhee in South Korea in 1950, the US succeeded in gaining United Nations approval for military action against North Korea.

Domestically, the United States was at the time preoccupied with recriminations about who lost China to the Communists and who sold US nuclear bomb secrets to the Russians. The situation became more serious when the United States entered the Korean Conflict in 1950. By 1952, captured American pilots began to make confessions that they had been engaged on biological warfare missions that involved spreading disease through such means as germ infested leaflets and straw chaff dropped from aircraft. There is some evidence that these allegations might well be true (Endicott & Hagerman, 1999).

With Senator Joseph McCarthy making accusations that the U.S. Army was infested with Communist agents, explanations for the behavior of captured airmen, whether valid or not, were necessary. Those explanations were not long in coming.

Members of the intelligence community and military had been concerned over the potential vulnerability of servicemen and others to coercive persuasion since the early 1940s. Now that concern began to be expressed in a relatively candid

fashion to a press and public that was predisposed by sympathy and solidarity with America's fighting men to accept it.

The first popular account of "brainwashing," which was derived from the Chinese term "hsi nao," literally to "wash brain," was written by Edward Hunter who wrote in 1951, *Brainwashing In Red China: The Calculated Destruction of Men's Minds.* Hunter was a CIA employee who had joined the CIA at its inception in 1949 and formerly had been a propaganda specialist with OSS. He worked under Frank Wisner in the Office of Policy Coordination (Scheflin & Opton, 1978, p.226). Thus the popularization of the term brainwashing in the form that it took amounted to a CIA sponsored moral panic.

In August and September of that year, following a truce and major prisoner exchange (Operation Big Switch), a team of psychiatrists and psychologists began to interview the returning POWs on the troop ships that took them home. They were transported home by ship rather than by air as the first group of POWs in Operation Little Switch had been (April 1953), in order to provide time for them to be interviewed and become readjusted to life in the United States according to Robert Jay Lifton (1956). According to Lifton, military psychiatrists were impressed with the degree of isolation and apathy that was apparent in the earlier group of returned POWs.

This group of psychologists from Walter Reed Army Hospital Institute of Research included Edgar Schein and Robert Jay Lifton, who would write the two seminal texts on coercive persuasion in 1961, *Coercive Persuasion* (Schein) *and Thought Reform and the Psychology of Totalism* (Lifton), as well as Margaret Thaler. Margaret Thaler, after adopting the married name of Singer would go on to distinguish herself as a moral entrepreneur in both the cult brainwashing and false memory syndrome paradigms while Robert Jay Lifton would distinguish himself a prominent moral entrepreneur in the cult brainwashing paradigm in the late 1980s.

The results of the interviews conducted on the General Pope, the troop ship that brought the former POWs repatriated under Operation Big Switch home did not begin to see print until 1954. Robert Jay Lifton's (1954) initial report was primarily descriptive, emphasizing that most POWs "played it cool" by detaching themselves from the experience. Repatriates were described as "…dazed, lacked spontaneity, spoke in a dull monotone with marked diminished affectivity. At the same time he was tense, restless, clearly suspicious of his new surroundings" (Ibid, p. 735) and both collaboration and resistance were explained in terms of a common reaction of resistance to authority (Ibid, p. 736).

Lifton's article came out against the backdrop of the downfall of Senator Joseph McCarthy, who had attacked the U.S. Army as being infested with Communists. This proved to be a complete falsehood. However, the POWs

returned to an Army that had been stung by these allegations and needed to vindicate itself. A moral counter-panic against the Communist Chinese that emphasized the atrociousness of its treatment of its POWs, medicalized the deviance of the 14.8% of the POWs who collaborated to the extent that they were recommended for court martial or dishonorable discharge (Segal, 1954, p. 32), and treated them as victims met the Army's political needs far better than well publicized court-martials of collaborators would have in 1954. Thus the returning POWs met a far more sympathetic reception than they might have had they been accused of collaborating with the Nazis while prisoners-of-war eight years earlier. The stresses that POWs had been under and their reaction to them were an objective fact as Lifton documented and as other researcher would document in 1956 and 1957. But the spin that was put on the POW experience was a social construction to meet a particular social reality.

Thus we see Harvey Strassman and Margaret Thaler's documentation of the apathy reaction to severe stress that most POWs exhibited during their captivity (Strassman et al., 1956). Edgar Schein documented the Chinese indoctrination program as a form of re-education (Schein 1956). And I.E. Farber and Louis Jolyon West (who would later also be prominent in both the anti-cult American Family Foundation and briefly the False Memory Syndrome Foundation) wrote of a condition of learned helplessness similar to hypnosis brought about by "debility, dependency and dread" (Farber, et al. 1957).

One can easily see that the brainwashing issue was constructed in such a way as to best benefit the U.S. Army at the time. The returning POWs in Operation Big Switch were sequestered from reporters and public long enough for them to be debriefed by sending them home by ship. This minimized the possibility that some former POWs would say something that would embarrass the Army and get themselves into a great deal of legal hot water, such as saying how good and how lenient the Chinese were, let alone engage in apologetics for Communism. This would have been particularly a problem in the case of unintegrated attitude change (which we would now call dissociated attitude change) in which the repatriate would make statements to the press confessing their crimes and extolling the Chinese, but sounding like a broken record (Schein, 1961, p. 162). People who had integrated the prison experience into their value system, according to Schein tended to be concerned about being selfish and adopted a collective outlook on life without switching allegiance to Communism (ibid. p. 166).

It was a good thing for the Army and the POWs that they did beg many questions because in the late 1950s, a great many questions were being asked of them. Hearings on Communist interrogation and exploitation of American military and civilian prisoners were held before the Senate Committee on Government

Operations in 1957 and on Commiunist psychological warfare before the House Un-American Activities Committee in 1958. The issue of communist Chinese brainwashing gradually began to subside in the late 1950s. China was far away and the US had no intentions of attacking it and the POWs had long since returned to civilian life. The US Armed Services and intelligence communities took the lessons of the Brainwashing panic to heart and devised means of training personnel to resist it. The CIA continued its research into brainwashing and behavior control with increased funding through project MKULTRA as a result of the panic. By 1960, the moral panic over a Communist fifth column had abated. But brainwashing was to become ironically. an element in the critique of the conservative anti-communist, conformist society of the 1950s by a resurgent left.

The Brainwashed Confession Moral Panic

Robert Jay Lifton and Edgar Schein both published books on brainwashing in 1961. Lifton's work, *Thought Reform and the Psychology of Totalism* (1961), is best known for an analysis and definition of the factors which make a given environment or milieu a thought reforming milieu. Edgar Schein in his work *Coercive Persuasion* focused on the assault on the identity and self-concept in the person being thought reformed. Schein's model revolves around the basic assumptions that the beliefs, attitudes and behavior of an individual tend to be integrated with each other and organized around a person's self-worth or self-concept. One changes an individual by attacking the person's self-concept and preventing the person from reestablishing equilibrium except by changing in the desired direction (Schein, 1961, p. 119).

Both Lifton's model and Schein's model furnished yardsticks by which a given situation could be measured as being a coercive one. And by the early 1960s American society was increasingly being criticized as being inequitable, controlling and conformist. Edgar Schein wrote of treatment of patients in mental hospitals as having elements of coercive persuasion (Ibid. 1961, p.273). This critique was amplified in 1962 by Ken Kesey in his best selling novel *One Flew Over the Cuckoo's Nest*. Kesey dealt with the resistance of a sociopathic petty criminal named Randle P. McMurphy who had survived a Chinese prison camp and how he resists the coercion to conform of the forces of society as epitomized by the Big Nurse, Miss Ratched. Later, it would become a part of the New Left critique of American society.

But it was in the area of police confessions that the brainwashing paradigm had its most immediate and concrete effect on American jurisprudence and society. And from the issue of coerced police confessions would ultimately come the issue

of police hypnosis which would create definitions of hypnotic coercion which would help define the recovered memory debate of the 1990s.

Already in October of 1954, the United States Supreme Court had ruled that a confession in which a defendant, already physically exhausted by a day and night of police confession was broken to an almost trance-like submission by a skilled psychiatrist who was knowledgeable in hypnosis (Leyra vs. Denno, United States Reports 98L.ed. 952). This precedent had not stopped police from continuing to devise more and more sophisticated techniques for extracting confessions from subjects. Some of these techniques borrowed extensively from what had been learned from the Russians and Chinese (Scheflin & Shapiro, 1989, p.46). Nevertheless, the door to the use of hypnotic techniques to secure confessions was not fully closed until 1966 when Miranda v Arizona put strict limits on police questioning of defendants without the presence of attorneys (Ibid.). In making an issue (and a minor moral panic) over the use of involuntary hypnosis against criminal defendants, civil libertarians kept the brainwashing issue alive. Throughout the 1970s, coincidental with the rise of the cult brainwashing paradigm, civil libertarians would oppose plans to use coercive persuasion to rehabilitated convicted criminal defendants. Later, in the early 1980s, the use of hypnosis to enhance the memory of witnesses would become an issue as well because of the question of whether hypnotically refreshed memories led to confabulation and the acceptance of false facts. This issue would contribute to the moral panic environment in the false memory syndrome moral panic.

The Cult Brainwashing Moral Panic

During the 1960s, a violent reaction on the part of young people set in to the conformity and repression that their elders had created during the 1950s. This reaction was in many ways, a backlash on the part of the Left. The failure of McCarthyism began to be used more and more to criticize the political conservatism that had been prevalent in the United States since 1948. In this, they were aided by a growing concern for civil rights of minorities. A discussion of the evolution of the 60s is beyond the scope of this paper but an evolution took place in the attitudes of parents toward their children as their rebellion manifested itself.

Initially, parents tended to be supportive of their children’s stands on behalf of Civil Rights in the early 1960s. As the youth movement evolved into an anti-war movement, parental attitudes became more ambivalent. The GI generation had grown up with an obligation to go to war, however, in the case of college age young people, the thought of having one’s child’s education and career interrupted

by a stint in the Army was daunting to many parents, especially when draft deferments were canceled as the war dragged on.

Parents were far less enthusiastic about their children's experimentation with psychedelic drugs as they became popular in the late 60s, but again, balanced a wish to keep their children drug free against a fear that they could go to jail. But as the youth counterculture came under greater and greater attack during the late 1960s, changes occurred that marked the beginning of a parent centered moral panic against the new religious movements that their children began to turn to as an alternative to psychedelics.

For beginning in 1969, the response to this opposition increasingly became to join communes and withdraw from society (Gitlin, 1988). For their part, the communes were subjected to an increasingly stringent weeding out process. Communes which were liberal in outlook tended to dissolve in conflicts about how to accomplish day to day existence while communes which were authoritarian and controlled the thought and action of members tended to be more likely to survive (Zablocki, 1978).

At the same time, young people were belatedly reaping some of the rewards of their activism in a way which would dismay many parents. Although the Vietnam War continued on, largely unabated, young people were granted a sop in the form of a lowered age of majority. The age of majority had traditionally been set at 21 since the Middle Ages. Historically this had been in order to secure a seven-year period in which a 14-year-old artisan could serve as an apprentice. This convention meant that college age youth were to be considered minors for most of their undergraduate careers. *In loco parentis restrictions* such as college residence curfews and other restrictions on sexual behavior had traditionally been a reflection of this perceived minority of college age young people.

But by the late 1960s, students, along with agitating for an end to the Vietnam War, were also agitating for a lowered age of minority and the repeal of *in loco parentis restrictions* such as dormitory and college curfews. Previous generations had respected these restrictions in order to protect young women from the disgrace of premarital sex and pregnancy. But the Baby Boomers saw them as a violation of their civil rights. Politically these requests were relatively easy to grant. Thus the late 1960s resulted in college age students increasingly financing their own education through government grants and loans, living independently and often cohabiting with members of the opposite sex, and increasingly being treated as adults from the age of 18 onwards. The 26th Amendment to the U.S. Constitution that lowered the voting age to 18 nationwide sealed this trend (although it would be reversed with regard to the drinking of alcohol in the 1980s).

Parents thus had little recourse when faced with the prospect of their offspring whom they had invested at least eighteen years of love and care in joining and remaining in highly authoritarian religious movements that denied their parents' values, often to the point of fascism. When one examines the background of the development of the Anti-cult Movement and the willingness of middle class parents to often go beyond the law to gain access to their adult children, one must remember that most of them, particularly in the 1970s, still felt that adulthood began at age 21.

It was at that point that parents of members of Children of God contacted a public relations liaison officer with then Governor Ronald Reagan named Ted Patrick. Following the attempted recruitment of his own sons, Patrick decided to infiltrate the Children of God when a delegation of parents reporting similar occurrences asked him to act in his official capacity of ombudsman (Patrick, 1976, p. 43). Patrick found a pattern of behavior that was for him an old story. Growing up poor and black in Chattanooga, Tennessee, with a speech impediment, Ted Patrick found himself prayed over by every black preacher that passed through town, including such luminaries as Sweet Daddy Grace (Patrick, 1976, p.226). In the African-American community, many preachers tended to behave almost as feudal lords, gathering up the limited resources of the community, dispensing resources and favors to supporters, and keeping a goodly proportion to feather their own nests (Williamson, 1986, p. 55). For Ted Patrick, as with most black Americans, the exploitative black preacher or cult leader was almost a cliche. Everyone knew churchmen behaved like this. When he was engaged for the first time to deal with white parents with children in Children of God, Ted Patrick found another cliche to be true. Problems of this nature, like drug abuse, tended not to be taken seriously by the white power structure until it affected their own children.

After his attempted infiltration of Children of God, Ted Patrick began to research brainwashing, (Conway & Siegelman, 1978). Following the successful deprogramming of his son (Ibid), Ted Patrick, in his capacity as the then Governor of California Ronald Reagan's Community Relations Liaison, had been contacted by a number of parents of young people who had joined Children of God (Patrick, 1976). It is unclear whether the parents who initially contacted Patrick were black or white. But Patrick's initial response was straight out of the Civil Rights Movement. The abduction of young people from the Children of God by their parents was intended as an act of civil disobedience, just as a sit-in at a segregated lunch counter was. Placing the newly deprogrammed ex-member before the TV cameras with his or her parents was calculated to highlight the abuses of the Children of God. Prosecutors would be forced to a choice between prosecuting parents for kidnapping their children and moving against the Children of God.

In this, Ted Patrick was behaving as a moral entrepreneur. Like most African-Americans of his generation, Patrick had come of age with the crusade and tactics of Dr. Martin Luther King. To Ted Patrick, kidnapping a child from a Children of God commune was as appropriate an act of civil disobedience as participating in a sit-in at a segregated lunch counter. In both cases, the objective was to raise an issue to public consciousness and foment a moral panic among the public. If arrested, he hoped that prosecutors would be forced to choose between prosecuting him and the adult child's parents and focusing in on the excesses of the Children of God.

If the idea of kidnapping young people out of cults was an act of civil disobedience out of the Civil Rights struggle, the techniques that Ted Patrick used to deprogramme devotees were straight out of William Sargant. Although Ted Patrick attempted to redefine deprogramming as reversal of brainwashing, the emotional confrontations with ex-members that Ted Patrick orchestrated while they were confined in basements or motel rooms amounted to the induction of abreactions. Just as Pavlov would increase the stimuli on his dogs to the point where their conditioning would be nullified and Sargant would get his patients to relive and abreact their wartime trauma, Ted Patrick forced an abreaction of the soon to be ex-member's "cult" experience. Patrick utilized angry confrontation of the new member's beliefs and the presence of the member's parents to raise the members' emotions to a crescendo. Inasmuch as the abducted devotee's new beliefs were generally not integrated, he was usually successful in forcing the devotee to switch back to the pre-cult personality under stress. If the devotee did not switch back to the cult personality or fragment after the pressure was off, the deprogramming would be successful and the now ex-member would not return to the group.

The similarity between what is done in involuntary deprogramming and the stressful recruiting methods of new religious movements has been noted by Solomon (1980, p.168). It becomes difficult to argue against the position that if what high-demand religious movements do in inducting their members is brainwashing, then forcible deprogramming, by objective behavioral criteria is not re-brainwashing. The deprogramming had to end at some point and the devotee or ex-devotee might then be free to return to the "cult." This did not however negate the fact that trauma was inflicted on the person without his or her prior informed consent both by the totalitarian religious movement and by Ted Patrick. Moreover, the question of whether the individual had a free choice after a forced deprogramming was a valid one. Just as cults have their shibboleths and thought terminating clichés to prevent members from questioning the values of the groups, so do families. The deprogrammers might be gone, but familial pressures might

remain. Objectivity and free choice are difficult to guarantee under conditions of emotional blackmail, whether by religious movements or by parents. For that matter, it is questionable whether objectivity and free choice existed for the liberated Korean War POWs. They faced court martial, dishonorable discharge and possibly prison in the United States unless they accepted the Army's version of their reality.

Perhaps this equivalence between the tactics of cult groups and that of Ted Patrick can help explain the pattern of ambivalent passivity and nondecision making by policy makers and authorities which frustrated Ted Patrick in the early 1970s. It was this pattern of inaction and nondecision making that led to Patrick's decision to engage in deprogramming as a full time occupation, and which has characterized the "cult" issue until the 1990s. Non-decision making is, according to Bachrach & Baratz(1970), "…a means by which demands for change in the existing allocation of benefits and privileges in the community can be suffocated before they are even voiced; or kept covert; or killed before they gain access to the relevant decision making arena; or failing all those things, maimed or destroyed in the decision-implementing stage of the policy process" (Bachrach & Baratz, 1970, p.44).

Nondecision-making can involve according to Bachrach and Baratz "one that invokes an existing bias of the political system—a norm, precedent, rule or procedure—to squelch a threatening demand or incipient issue" (Bachrach and Baratz, 1970, p. 45).

This form of nondecision-making has characterized the "cult" issue for the past 20 years. When Ted Patrick attempted to secure action against the Children of God, California authorities demurred, claiming that any effective action would violate constitutional First Amendment protections of freedom of religion (Patrick, 1975). When Children of God and later other groups attempted to secure action against Ted Patrick and other deprogrammers, they ran into a wave of public sympathy for parents and deprogrammers. Most people in the United States tended to believe and still do, in the validity of the brainwashing hypothesis (Richardson & van Driel, 1990). This sentiment has translated into a reluctance of prosecutors to take action against deprogrammers unless the person "deprogrammed" returns to the high demand religious movement and presses charges against them. Even when this happens, juries have until very recently tended to acquit deprogrammers, who have historically been given wide latitude to defend themselves under "choice of evils" statutes that exist in most American jurisdictions. Finally in the late 1980s, deprogramming abductions were made largely obsolete by more efficacious strategic intervention work. This work was pioneered by Steven Hassan (1988) and begins with the exit-counselor coaching parents on how to enhance

communications with “cult” offspring in preparation for an intervention that is voluntary in the sense that the offspring is not physically prevented from leaving the scene. The intervention involves counseling the offspring to remain outside the high demand religious group for a period of re-evaluation. This has had the effect of reducing the legal exposure of parents and deprogrammers which was still by no means negligible.

Lawsuits against deprogrammers have tended until very recently to result in low judgments against deprogrammers. Lawsuits against high demand religious movements, although appealed vigorously and often reduced on appeal, have tended to result in high judgments. In this manner, the stalemate between “pro-cult” and “anti-cult” forces have been played out against a backdrop of non-decision-making on the issue by policymakers.

The brainwashing theory as applied to religious movements received a major boost in 1974 with the arrest, brainwashing defense, and subsequent conviction of newspaper heiress Patricia Campbell Hearst. Ms. Hearst had previously been kidnapped by the Symbionese Liberation Army, a Marxist ‘terrorist’ cell. Following months of captivity in a closet while held by the SLA, Ms. Hearst joined the SLA in fear for her life and subsequently proved her loyalty to them by participating in the robberies of a bank and a sporting goods store. After a nationwide year long manhunt, Ms. Hearst was apprehended and charged. Her defense on the grounds of brainwashing was unsuccessful, but finally resulted in a pardon three years later from newly elected President Carter. The trial of Patty Hearst focused national attention on the issue of brainwashing in a way that had not previously occurred since the Korean War. The expert witnesses in the case included Margaret Thaler Singer, who soon rose to prominence as the leading professional spokesperson for the Anti-Cult Movement (Singer, 1979).

Besides involving Margaret Singer in the Anti-Cult Movement, the Patty Hearst case brought the brainwashing paradigm back to public consciousness and demarginalized the Anti-Cult Movement. But it was the Unification Church and its participation in the Koreagate Influence buying scandal that kept it going for several years and the Jonestown tragedy, for several more, into the 1980s. In the early 1970s, fear of an American withdrawal from South Korea led the South Korean government to authorize an unprecedented campaign to buy influence in the US Congress (Boettcher, 1980, p. 85). As part of this campaign, Reverend Sun Myung Moon was authorized by the South Korean government to expand his church and business empire in the United States. By 1973, when Moon relocated permanently to the US to supervise the growth of the Unification Church, the U.C. was attracting thousands of college age middle class people to its lectures and workshops. These often led to full time membership, which involved young people

dropping out of universities and pursuing careers as itinerant candy and flower sellers. Outraged parents hired deprogrammers to recover their offspring, generally with a high degree of success. The atrocity tales that these young people told coincided with concerns by congressional liberals that Korea actually had the temerity to buy influence in the US Congress the way the US bought influence in many foreign nations.

By 1976, the deprogramming of Unification Church members was becoming more than just harassment. Deprogramming was actually doing serious damage to the San Francisco branch of the Unification Church. In San Francisco, forcible deprogramming of members of the U.C. and other groups became possible under ex-parte temporary guardianships. A chain reaction effect developed, in which people who were deprogrammed and rehabilitated contacted the parents of their friends who remained in the Unification Church and persuaded them to have their friends deprogrammed out (Underwood & Underwood, 1979). The effect of this rash of deprogramming induced defections appears to have been effective well out of proportion to their numbers. This particular group of Unificationists seems to have functioned as a middle management clique in the Oakland Church, which was highly successful in the United States and being groomed for national leadership. (Mose Duerst, the head of this “family” later became the President of the Unification Church in the United States). By decimating the middle management of the Oakland Family of key people, this rash of deprogrammings appears to have stung the Unification Church into mobilizing serious resources into defense against deprogramming.

Thus, civil libertarians and social scientists that were critical of deprogramming were mobilized to defend the civil liberties of members of the Unification Church. Common cause was made between the Unification Church (which follows a de facto Christian Reconstructionist theology developed 20 years before Gary North, the Pentecostally oriented Children of God and the Church of Scientology, which in many ways is a reprise of 2’d Century gnosticism. That these ideologies were diametrically opposed to one another did not prevent cooperation against the common threat. This new Alliance for the Preservation of Religious Liberty was not successful in stopping the Cult Brainwashing moral panic, which gained new impetus after the Jonestown tragedy. But with the help of the ACLU, APRL was successful in overturning the use of California guardianship law for deprogramming purposes, although guardianships continued to be obtainable in other jurisdictions well into the 1980s and abduction deprogrammings, which peaked in numbers in 1984, continued into the mid 90s. But the 1990s brought an increasingly hostile environment for Cult Awareness Network. This was occurring for several reasons.

To begin with, the Cult Awareness Network was becoming increasingly irrelevant. It started as an umbrella group of parents who were concerned about the propensity of their upper- middle-class offspring to join totalitarian new religious movements. While this had been a major concern during the 1970s, which was the tail end of the Boom Awakening period, Generation X, which came to maturity in the 1980s was not as inclined to join high demand religious movements. In fact they weren't inclined to look for religious solutions to their problems at all. The Awakening period had passed.

More fundamentally, the early 1990s was a period of great skepticism toward big government. Government intervention had been the preferred remedy to social problems by the GI generation in general and was Cult Awareness Network's preferred remedy to the problem of high demand religious movements. But government intervention is something that Baby Boomers are extremely ambivalent about on a variety of issues, and government intervention into religious matters is a difficult issue for Baby Boomers.

During the last years of the 1980s and first years of the 1990s, Cult Awareness Network continued, growing less and less relevant. The issue of satanic ritual abuse turned out to be one, which Cult Awareness Network proved unable to deal effectively with. Although there had been deprogrammings of young people from occult groups as early as the 1970s, the first educational lecture on Satanism was conducted by Linda Blood at the 1984 CAN Annual meeting. By 1989, CAN was conducting its first seminars on satanic ritual abuse, and finding it difficult to formulate coherent strategies for dealing with the issue. CAN was not set up to deal with people from abused backgrounds, many of whom had Dissociative Identity Disorder. Work with teenage dabblers was something that CAN was more familiar with, and that was the aspect of Satanism that CAN ultimately focused on.

Behind the difficulty that CAN had in coping with the emerging satanic ritual abuse issue was a set of biases that defined what CAN was and was not. First and foremost, Cult Awareness Network was an organization of parents of cult and sect members. It was not an organization of ex-members themselves and ex-members never had control of the organization.

As such, it was set up to deal with the concerns of parents, who were generally upper-middle class. Its primary means of helping families involved the counseling of parents in the means of maintaining communication with adult offspring against the day when it would be possible to counsel the offspring. This would be accomplished either by abducting them, holding them when they came on a visit, or counseling them voluntarily when they left or were disfellowshipped from the cult or sect they were in. This counseling typically involved a one to three-week intervention followed by a month to two-month period of rehabilitation. The format

greatly resembles the Hazeldon Method for treating alcohol and drug abuse, which also became popular at that time.

What this meant was that CAN had little to offer walk-aways from cult groups, many of whom had been born and raised in them. These people often have very deep-seated psychological problems, including Dissociative Identity Disorder, that cannot not be resolved within a two-month period of rehabilitation. And this was especially true of many people who were alleging that they had survived ritual abuse at the hands of satanic and other black magic cults.

Moreover, Cult Awareness Network was becoming more and more critical of various forms of psychotherapy. By the mid-1980s, CAN contained a growing contingent of casualties of pop psychology movements such as Erfiard Seminar Training (EST) and Lifespring. While people coming from these groups did not, for the most part become involved in false memory issues, they taught CAN members that psychotherapy groups could abuse clients and patients with serious results (Singer & Ofshe 1989; Singer, Temedin & Langone, 1990).

This resonated with the fact that there are cults and sects who have ex-members who affiliated with CAN that apparently do foster false memories in people. Former members of Transcendental Meditation have reported having a belief that they have seen people levitate while in the movement; a belief that is seen to be false and delusional once the ex-member has left. And Scientology, in the course of its auditing procedures convinces people that their problems and illnesses are the result of trauma in previous lives, which can be cured by the recovery of memories of the trauma in the course of auditing.

On a professional level, Margaret Singer had found there to be more demand for expert testimony in the area of psychotherapy “cults” than there was for testimony against high demand religious movements simply because therapy cults are considered more lucrative by personal injury lawyers in the United States(Richardson, van der Lans & Dirks 1986). Psychologists are legally required in many states to carry malpractice insurance leading to the possibility of a relatively quick and easy contingency fee settlement. Third party malpractice insurers are not willing to spend years litigating a case over a matter of principle. Moreover, psychiatrists and psychologists usually do not have the financial wherewithal to sustain lengthy litigation, even if they have, in fact been profiting by making patients and clients emotionally dependent on them and controlling them thereby.

By contrast, well-heeled totalitarian religious movements have historically proven to be harder targets for plaintiffs. They have the resources to exhaust lawyers considering litigating against them, are able to make cases against them drag on for years with appeals, and often have fanatical followers capable of many

harassing acts against plaintiff and counsel alike. This can have an effect on the number of cases an expert witness will receive of psychotherapy “cults” as opposed to religiously based “cults.”

This may go a long way toward explaining how Margaret Singer developed a jaundiced view of the recovery of memories of abuse. Singer’s clinical experience stretches from the troop ships that carried the Korean prisoners of war home to the current cult controversy and on into the false memory syndrome issue. In the course of her career, she has had the occasion to see several thousand clients for relatively brief periods. Most of them appear to have been paid for by parties other than the client, either parents in the case of cult aftercare or attorneys in the case of expert witness cases. Most were treated unethically by the groups that they exited including many who were the subject of unethical treatment by licensed psychotherapists.

On the other hand, Singer did not appear to have had much clinical experience with adults who were abused as children. She has done extensive work of a more conventional nature in Borderline Personality Disorder with Otto Kemberg (Singer, 1975). Singer can thus be seen as the product of her career and experience. She has experienced cases where groups and therapists have appeared to induce false memories in her clients. She has not experienced cases in which parents did the same or worse and she has had experience working with dissociative disorders. Accordingly, her denial of the existence of Dissociative Identity Disorder (Singer & Ofshe, 1995) in which she postulates and proceeds to demolish her construction of “robust repression” is understandable given the nature of her clinical experience, if somewhat bigoted.

Accurate research that document the last days of Cult Awareness Network has yet to be undertaken, but anecdotal information suggests that in the early 1990s, CAN became split by the false memory issue, roughly along generational lines. The issue seems to have pitted older CAN veterans such as Margaret Singer who saw cultic tendencies in what they called ‘recovered memory therapy’ against younger exit counselors and former members of high demand religious movements. Many of these former members, such as Joe Szimhart, Kevin Garvey and Linda Blood, have had experience counseling ritual abuse survivors. The split seems to have left CAN divided and unable to face the political realities that existed after the Waco debacle.

What role CAN played in the decision of the Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco and Firearms and the FBI to make a case against David Koresh remains a matter of a great deal of controversy. There appears to be evidence that CAN gave advice to the FBI in the Branch Davidian case, but there is also evidence of allegations by others, notably Marc Breault. Certainly CAN cannot be held responsible for FBI

attempting to force David Koresh to surrender in front of his entire flock rather than waiting to arrest him on one of his trips into town, which precipitated the siege and conflagration. But Waco defined as an atrocity galvanized large segments of the Christian Right into a potent, aggressively anti-federal-government coalition with civil libertarians, opponents of gun control and ultimately, it would seem, the Church of Scientology.

Certainly Waco seems to have had a great deal to do with the willingness of a fundamentalist Christian sect to accept the help of Scientology in a class action suit against CAN which finally succeeded in linking it to a failed deprogramming. And it may have been a factor in the jury's returning of a high verdict against CAN, which had the effect of bankrupting it and leaving its name, office and files in the custody of the Church of Scientology. And although efforts are being made to resurrect the Anti-Cult Movement, in no large part due to the efforts of ex-Scientologists such as Larry Wollersheim and Dennis Ehriich, no one can be sure what will come of it or what form it will take.

The Satanic Ritual Abuse Moral Panic

Scientific research is seldom confined for long to the purposes for which it was originally conducted. The research into trauma and its psychological effects was no exception. Out of the same research by Sargant (1941,1957), Kardiner (1941, 1945) and Grinker & Spiegel (1943,1945) had come a basic understanding of human reaction to stress and trauma. This understanding had been expanded upon during the 1950s by research into coercive persuasion, like that by Edgar Schein, Robert Jay Lifton, and Louis Jolyon West among others. Concurrently, a tremendous amount of research had been conducted into hypnosis by such luminaries as Martin Orne (1951,1959) and Ernest Hilgard (1965) to name but a few.

By the end of the 1970s, Ernest Hilgard had been led by his research to revive the concept of dissociation. This concept had been pioneered by Pierre Janet and largely discarded by several generations of psychologists and psychiatrists who had been taught by Eugen Bleuler's texts to subsume the existence of multiple personalities into hypnosis while simultaneously treating manifestations of it as evidence of malpractice of hypnosis. Flora Rheta Schreiber (1973) had documented Cornelia Wilbur's treatment of a woman with Dissociative Identity Disorder using psychoanalysis. By 1980, with the publication of DSM-111 and the formal dissociation of the diagnosis of Multiple Personality Disorder from schizophrenia, the way had been cleared for research and treatment of DID to move forward.

By this time also, social conditions had changed markedly. Perhaps the most radical changes that the 1960s and 1970s had wrought were in relations between

the sexes. The Sexual Revolution coupled with the Women's Movement had changed social norms to the point where most women were working outside the home and incest was no longer an unspeakable subject. Coupled with this was an acceptance of child abuse as a social problem instead of the traditional acceptance of brutality against children, physical and sexual as a social necessity. And at the same time due to the efforts of the Anti-Cult Movement, people had been educated to see sects and cults as potentially dangerous and controlling of their members.

So when Michelle Smith and Lawrence Pazder (1980) wrote a book about Michelle's alleged childhood experiences growing up in a Satanist coven, it sparked an outpouring of similar stories and the beginning of a moral panic. Therapists began to hear more and more stories of ritual abuse while recovering memories from patients. And horrific stories of abuse in day care centers began to circulate as well.

The idea that there are cults that practice sadistic acts on children is paradoxically plausible from an anthropological and historical point of view and implausible from a sociological point of view. There is historical evidence of the existence of human child sacrifice (Tierney, 1989) and of diabolism (Katchen, 1992; Henningsen, 1980 p.15). On the other hand, witchcraft is considered to be a social stereotype by which societies define ultimate evil and therefore a phantasy (Cohn, 1975). This view informs much social scientific thinking on the subject of satanism and ritual abuse (Victor 1993, Ben Yehudah, 1985).

The two paradigms strangely enough are not mutually exclusive. Gustav Henningsen, despite the evidence that witchcraft was, at least in the case of the Basque region that he studied in depth were an anti-religion and a construct bearing no basis in reality (Henningsen, 1980, p. 94) accepts the existence of Satanism. This he considers to be much different than the world of the witches and which he considers having yet to be subjected to a thorough and sober investigation (Henningsen 1980 p. 4). In support of the existence of Satanism, Henningsen offers several secondary sources including Gerhard Zacharias (1964), Caro Baroja (1961), Francis King (1970), and Henry T.F. Rhodes (1954) as well as two instances of actions taken against collective Satanism (in 1653 and 1803) which he found in primary sources in the Spanish Archivo Historico National (Henningsen, 1980, p. 440).

It is necessary to bear these facts in mind while examining the ritual abuse "panic" of the 1980s and 1990s, for a similar situation exists with regard to ritual abuse in the 1990s.

It is fallacious to suggest that no physical evidence of ritual abuse has been found. Physical evidence has been found of rituals occurring where ritual abuse survivors claim they have occurred on numerous occasions (Greaves, 1991, p. 66-

67). Highly publicized evidence of ritual cult murder of people has been found on a number of occasions, the most well known of which was the Matamoros cult killings in 1988 although the group's rituals were Afro-Cuban /Aztec rather than Anglo-Celtic Satanic (Schutze, 1989). And at least in Great Britain, the Beacon Foundation, a Christian ministry serving the needs of ritual abuse survivors identified several occult organizations by name, alleging that they had engaged in ritual abuse. These organizations included the Temple of Set, the Ordo Templi Orientis, Temple of Olympus (aka Ordo Astrum Serpentis) and Temple of Britannia (Beacon Foundation, 1991, p.9).

On the other hand, evidence of a classic moral panic can also be found in the controversy over satanic ritual abuse. Many people working in the area of ritual abuse come from a pre-millennial Pentecostal Christian perspective and they have often made untenable claims. Allegations of a worldwide-unified satanic antichrist conspiracy (File 18 Newsletter #92–3 p.4) have generally been disproved (Langone & Blood, 1990). Some rather spectacular stories of ritual abuse that were based upon a Christian perspective were disproved in the late 1980s and early 1990s. These allegations, included those of Dr. Rebecca Brown (1986, 1987) whose account was proven to be a hoax (Blaskett 1994) and Mike Warnke (1972) who recanted his allegations about being initiated into Satanism in the 1960s (Passantino, 1992). Ritual abuse however, throughout the 1980s and into the 1990s was one of the few issues in which premillennial fundamentalist Christians could not only find common ground with feminists who were normally their mortal enemies, but also cooperate on a day to day basis.

To be sure, there were tensions between the two perspectives. Far more serious however, was the tension between the forensic perspective and the therapeutic perspective in documenting ritual and any other form of sexual abuse that had become apparent by the mid-1980s.

The role of psychotherapist and the role of forensic investigator are incompatible with each other. The therapist's duty is to facilitate healing in his or her client or patient. This can mean accepting the patient's narrative truth as valid for the patient at least and helping the patient work it through within the therapeutic relationship. Critical judgment on the part of the therapist is likely to impair the therapeutic alliance between therapist and patient (Greenberg & Shuman 1997, p. 52).

In contrast, the forensic evaluator is hired either by a defendant's attorney or by the State or Crown or by the Court. His or her job is to be neutral and objectively evaluate the psycholegal issues involved, including the mental state of the defendant or plaintiff/complainant and the objective facts of the case. For the forensic evaluator narrative truth is merely a vehicle that may or may not get one to

the historical truth. And the historical truth is paramount (Ibid.) By the late 1980s, it was becoming apparent that the two roles were in conflict in many cases of child sexual abuse and ritual abuse.

In the case of children, social workers with minimal or no formal training in social work (B.A. or Associate Degree), no training or background in investigation or police work and heavy caseloads were increasingly being expected to gather evidence for use in criminal proceedings. They often had few or no guidelines (Brown, Scheflin & Hammond p.7). As the focus shifted from identifying children at risk of abuse and intervening appropriately to finding fault and making cases against perpetrators, social workers were increasingly expected to act as police and decide whether or not allegations were valid (Ibid.) Excesses inevitably occurred and in the late 1980s increasingly such investigations were tarred by defense attorneys as presumptive of guilt (Ibid.). Excessive and often suggestive interviewing techniques were used, including systematic leading and misleading questions and even direct coercive tactics that confirmed preexisting biases regarding allegations. These sloppy interviewing techniques often enabled perpetrators to go free because the child witness was irretrievably contaminated and increased the rate of false accusations of abuse that never occurred, which was damaging to innocent parties (Ibid., Ceci & Bruck 1995).

Therapists who were treating adults with sexual and ritual abuse were being thrust into forensic roles as well.

Child protection professionals, police and psychotherapists attempted to cope with this apparent epidemic of satanic abuse which either had recently developed or had existed beneath the surface of society for years. The results were mixed, to say the least.

Teenage dabblers and self-styled satanists were readily uncovered and prosecuted (Raschke 1990). Attempts to convict day-care center operators were more problematic. Convictions were obtained, such those of Frank and Ileana Fuster who were convicted of sexually abusing children in their charge in the context of Santeria rituals (Hollingsworth 1986). But other cases, particularly the McMartin Day Care Center case in Manhattan Beach, CA resulted in long trials; the McMartin Trial remains the longest court trial on record and ultimately resulted in acquittals for all defendants. Defenses centered on raising the issue of suggestive and often intimidating interviews of children by child protection advocates. It would be fallacious to say that allegations of ritual abuse are totally unfounded, because by the mid 1990s, a number of convictions for murder in the context of religious rituals had been rendered and sustained on appeal. These cases included *People v St. Joseph* (226 CaI.App-3d 289) *Penick v.State of Indiana,* (AppelleeNo. 17200-9404-CR-389) and *Sexton v State of Florida,*. (No. 86,132 July 17, 1997).

Other convictions in which satanic ritual abuse was proven involved sexual assault charges such as *State of Utah v. Alan B. Hadfield* 788 P2d 506 (Utah 1990) *Commonwealth of Pennsylvania v. Rickie Jay Gaddis,* 432 Pa. Super. 523; 639 A.2d 462,)In *the Matter of DANIEL "DD"' et al.,Alleged to be Abused andNeglected Children530* N.Y.S.2d 314 (A.D. 3 Dept. 1988, 530 N.Y.S.2d 314 and State Of North Carolina v. Patrick S. Figured 1446 S.E.2d 838. In all of these cases, the facts of the case involved ritual abuse. In all of these cases, the facts of the case were proven beyond a reasonable doubt to a judge or jury. In all of these cases the verdict was upheld on appeal. And the list is by no means exhaustive.

While the issue of ritual abuse in child day care contexts was being fought out in the courts in the mid-1980s, there was great optimism regarding the treatment of Dissociative Identity Disorder in adults. It appeared that the treatment of DID through abreaction of traumatic memories offered new hope for patients who had previously been diagnosed as difficult to cure Borderline Personality Disorder patients or even Schizophrenics. Because this care was thought to involve highly traumatic abreactions piled one on top of another, DID was treated on an inpatient basis at private psychiatric hospitals. These hospitals welcomed the clientele. Health insurance providers, for their part, were willing to pay for treatment which offered hope of curing patients who otherwise might make repeated suicide attempts that would result in trips to emergency rooms and claims against insurance companies. And in a significant number of cases, abreactive therapy was highly effective. The issue of multigenerational ritual or sadistic abuse, which apparently was responsible for many of the cases of DID being treated was not nearly as easily resolved. Therapists were increasingly being expected to act as forensic evaluators of their patients and the two roles conflicted with one another. The acceptance of the patient's internal world that is necessary for a psychotherapeutic relationship to develop is not conducive to the sort of critical evaluation of a patient's testimony that forensic evaluation requires.

Patients for the most part do not go to therapists seeking to bring abusers to justice. They go to therapists seeking relief from symptoms that are making them miserable. And when patients, particularly patients with Dissociative Identity Disorder, recover memories they tend to recover those memories that are relevant to their current misery. Those memories are often in the form of disjointed flashbacks and bodily sensations. Joyce Seyse Dorado gives an example: Cynthia's first recognizable memory was of her father forcing oral sex on her. Prior to this memory for as long as Cynthia could recall, about once a month just as she was falling asleep, she would have a sensation in her mouth, a feeling that her mouth was full, with an object that was "soft on the outside" but "hard"" underneath the soft outside. After she remembered the abuse, she recognized the sensation as a

physical reexperiencing of an erect penis inside her mouth, which she believes was her father's penis during sexually abusive incidents."(WiIliams & Banyard 1999 pp. 103–104)

During the process of therapy, disjointed dissociated memories such as this are pieced together in the form of a narrative. In this way, they are processed so that they become part of the patient's autobiographical memory. In this manner, the patient is able to put some distance between him or herself and the memory and place it in perspective alongside other life experiences.

Errors can develop during the process of integration of traumatic memory. Memories are not always accurate. Sometimes neither the patient nor the therapist can be totally certain of the identity of a perpetrator, such as when a patient's back is turned to the perpetrator during the course of the abuse. Other times, two or three different abusive incidents by two or more different perpetrators may be confused. These are not necessarily a serious issue in therapy. Therapeutic closure and healing can take place if the patient is mistaken about details such as this. But it can lead to tragedy and miscarriage of justice when an attempt is made to hold an alleged perpetrator legally accountable. And when therapists attempt to be the forensic evaluators of their own patients or when they attempt to push the pace of therapy, often in order to finish before the patient's insurance benefits run out, these errors can be magnified.

The situation is even more difficult when religious or magical ritual is part of the abuse and the abuse anchored in a coherent belief system. In situations such as this, with multiple perpetrators acting in pursuit of a "higher" objective, to be credible the patient must recall not only the abuse and the identity of the perpetrator but the belief system as well. It is common for abuse survivors to recall enough detail to credibly hold single perpetrators accountable for discrete incidents. But when abuse becomes routine and persists throughout the patient's childhood, as is often the case when patients develop Dissociative Identity Disorder, it becomes harder to identify discrete incidents and easy to confuse them. And when abuse involves organized perpetrator groups, and particularly religious ritual, details that would serve to identify the group and its belief system often are not reported or are reported very poorly.

This can occur for several reasons. Firstly, the patient recalls those things that they are the most therapeutically relevant. Details of ritual that would help to identify places, specific times, perpetrators and beliefs often are not therapeutically relevant, particularly since much of the abuse that was most traumatic can occur in early childhood when such things are not understood. And finally, organized perpetrator groups or black lodges or black magic cults can protect the group and

its teachings by including false details for lower level members or deliberately including fantastic details that are unbelievable. The patient's perceptions can be confused by the use of drugs and deliberate manipulation of the patient's dissociated states and the patient can be intimidated against revealing the inner teachings of the group. The patient can even be given false details to divulge if the pressure to divulge something becomes too great.

Given the pitfalls that an organized secretive group can lay, it is not surprising that few organized groups have been uncovered in their entirety or have their existence conclusively exposed even when enough evidence is found to indict and convict some individual perpetrators. The typical reports of ritual abuse survivors that have been reported in print involve generic satanic practices that may well be a cover for the true beliefs of a number of different groups. The reports of Ross (1995) and Noblitt & Perskin(1998) are notable exceptions, and have involved patients from a number of diverse groups including vodun sects, Ku Klux Klan rituals and neo-pagan or druidic rituals. Stephen Kent(1993a, 1993b, 1994) has found while analyzing the reports of ritual abuse survivors, variations in reports of Satanism that enable one to discern fundamental Christian or Mormon origins. But these are recent exceptions to the rule.

It is not surprising therefore, that as the 1990s progressed, that a backlash against the recovery of memory gained momentum and became a moral counter-panic all its own. This backlash, the False Memory Syndrome moral panic, would amplify concerns that were developing over memory recovery and synthesize them with the destructive cult paradigm that had been developed in the 1970s.

The False Memory Syndrome Moral Panic

By 1992, the concern over sexual abuse including ritual abuse had generated a moral counter-panic; one which treated parents accused of sexual abuse of their children as innocent victims rather than their offspring. This was the False Memory Syndrome moral panic. The False Memory Syndrome Foundation was founded in 1992 by Peter Freyd, a Mathematics Professor at University of Pennsylvania and his wife, Pamela. Their daughter Jennifer is a Professor of Psychology at University of Oregon. In 1991, Peter and Pamela attempted to enlist Jennifer's aid and support for the False Memory Foundation. According to Jennifer, when she declined to do so, her parents contacted the Psychology Department at University of Oregon and attempted to persuade the department to deny her tenure. It was only then, that Jennifer Freyd publicly denounced her father as a sexual abuser.

Besides the Freyds, the initial membership of FMSF included Ralph Underwager and Hollida Wakefield, Dr. Harold Lief, a personal psychiatrist of

Peter Freyd's, Martin Ome, (who had been active both in research into misuse of hypnosis, as we have seen, and research into brainwashing) and Margaret Singer (who as we have seen both participated in the original research into brainwashing of American servicemen during the Korean War and was heavily active in the Cult Awareness Network). Thus, from the start, the FMSF included strands from at least three other moral panics.

These moral panics are: 1) the witch hunt against paedophiles moral panic 2) the coerced confession/misuse of hypnosis moral panic and 3) the cult brainwashing moral panic. With the exception of the first, these moral panics have been covered earlier. Table 1 describes the intellectual affiliation of members of the FMSF Advisory Board of 1994 who have been active in these preceding moral panics. It is by no means an exhaustive list but it serves to illustrate the influence in terms of key personnel of these other movements, particularly the Cult Brainwashing moral panic.

Name	Korean Brainwashing	Coerced Confessions	Cult Brainwashing	Misuse of Hypnosis	Persecution of Paedophiles
Fred Frankel				X	
David Halperin			X	X	
John Hochman			X		
John Kihlstrom				X	
Richard Ofshe			X		
Campbell Perry				X	
Martin Orne		X	X	X	
James Randi					
Theodore			X	X	

Sarbin					
Margaret Singer	X			X	
Elizabeth Loftus		X			
Hollida Wakefield					X
Louis JolyonWest	X		X		

There has been an intellectual tradition defending paedophilia throughout the 20th Century. In the 19th Century, John Eddington Symonds (1964) defended paedophile practices by pointing out that the Greeks engaged in it. More recent defenders of paedophilia include J. Z. Eglinton (1964), Brongesma (1986), Sandford et al. (1991) and Feierman (1990) who notes the prevalence of paedophilia across many cultures.

With the publication of the *Kinsey Report* in 1948, a veneer of behavioral science was added to the voices advocating the legalization and legitimation of sex between adults and children. The *Kinsey Report* would be considered unscientific and unethical according to contemporary standards of research. Kinsey's research was unscientific because he refused to publish the actual questionnaire that he used (Reisman 1998, p. 57, his research was subject to systematic errors of unknowable magnitude due to selective sampling bias and the use of a sampling population that was radically different from the composition of the white male population (Ibid. p. 58, Cochran et. al 1954) and discrepancies in his sample leave 57% of his male research sample unaccounted for (Ibid. p. 53). Kinsey violated the research ethics of his time as well as contemporary research ethics by coercing answers from research subjects (Ibid. p. 63) and by the use of genital experiments including filming the sexual stimulation of children (Ibid. p. 66). This not only involved the inclusion of data on orgasm at very young ages that had been collected by paedophiles who collaborated with the Kinsey Institute but included validation by senior Kinsey institute staff including Paul Gebhard, Wardell Pomeroy and Albert Kinsey himself (Ibid. p. 146-148, Masters et. al. Kinsey p. 177).Yet his research methodology received remarkably little media scrutiny when it was published in 1958 and 1953 and informed the intellectual thought of several generations of Americans.

The message that Kinsey promoted was that paedophilia and incest, among other sexual activities were essentially harmless. A generation of paedophiles took the message to heart, particularly once the decriminalization and demedicalization of homosexuality gathered steam. Indeed, many of the early Gay Rights activists such as Harry Hay (Timmons p. 296), Tom Reeves (In Pascal 1990 p.47) and David Thorstad (founder of the Gay Activist Alliance) were open and avowed paedophiles and Reeves and Thorstad were founders of NAMBLA (North American ManBoy-Love Alliance) in 1978 (NAMBLA Bulletin September 1992 p.2).

In the False Memory Syndrome Foundation, Ralph Underwager and his wife, Hollida Wakefield, represented this stance. Underwager has made a career out of appearing as an expert witness on behalf of people accused of sexual molestation and impeaching the credibility of children testifying that they were abused. In 1991, Underwager and Wakefield interviewed with Paul Geraci, the editor-in-chief of *Paidika,* a Netherlands based magazine advocating paedophilia. Underwager was quoted by *Paidika* as saying: Paedophiles spend a lot of time and energy defending their choice. I don't think that a paedophile needs to do that. Paedophiles can boldly and courageously affirm what they choose. They can say that what they want is to find the best way to love. I am also a theologian and as a theologian, I believe it is God's will that there be closeness and intimacy, unity of the flesh, between people. A paedophile can say: "This closeness is possible for me within the choices that I've made." Paedophiles are too defensive. They go around saying "You people out there are saying that what I choose is bad, that it's no good. You're putting me in prison, you're doing all these terrible things to me. I have to define my love as being in some way or other illicit." What I think is that paedophiles can make the assertion that the pursuit of intimacy and love is what they choose. With boldness, they can say, "I believe this is in fact part of God's will." They have the right to make these statements for themselves as personal choices. (Geraci 1991)

For her part, in the same interview, Hollida Wakefield lamented the intellectual climate in the United States regarding paedophilia:

> But your point is that potentially there can be good, healthy, positive relationships between men and boys. It would be difficult to come up with sexual research for that in the United States because it would frankly be suppressed. When I did a review of the literature on boy victims of child sexual abuse, some of the studies show not just negative effects in some of the boys. The authors try to explain this away. Their rationale is that because they didn't find negative things in their study, does not mean there are none. They just

> haven’t shown up yet! If anyone in the United States were to do a study that showed positive outcomes and then wrote it up as a scientific paper, they probably would not succeed in getting it published. It could only be published if they found a way to explain away any positive findings (Ibid.).

Following the Paidika interview, Underwager was obliged to resign from the Advisory Board of False Memory Syndrome Foundation. Hollida Wakefield remained on the board, however and represents the positive paedophilia position on the FMSF advisory board to this day. The misuse of hypnosis strand of FMSF thought includes some luminaries in the field of hypnosis such as Martin Ome, John Kihlstrom, Theodore Sarbin, Ernest Hilgard and Campbell Perry. They make up the moderate wing of False Memory Syndrome Foundation, with the exception of Martin Ome. But it is the Cult Brainwashing Paradigm that has given the False Memory Syndrome Paradigm and moral panic much of its coherence, public appeal and political effectiveness.

The claim, in so many words that therapists who recover memories are engaging in thought reform with their patients is made by Richard Ofshe as well as John Hochman (1994). In his work, *Making Monsters* (Ofshe & Watters 1995), Ofshe claims that “recovered memory therapists” foster dependence in patients, which Ofshe argues is greater than in other therapy situations (Ibid. p. 111). Patients are encouraged to break with family members and the therapy is alleged to promise a surrogate family that will replace the one destroyed during therapy (Ibid. p. 112). The use, in many cases of hypnosis, according to Ofshe aids in the creation of pseudomemories (Ibid. p. 147). And the patient’s mental health often deteriorates during the course of therapy, fulfilling the prediction that the patient must get worse to get better (Ibid. p. 159).

Even the apparent presence of Dissociative Identity Disorder, according to Ofshe is the result of suggestions that the patient manifest the symptoms of the disorder (Ibid. p. 214). Thus, according to this theory, Dissociative Identity Disorder is iatrogenic, a disease created by medicine (McHugh 1993, Spanos & Weeks 1985).

Being iatrogenic, according to this view, therapists can be sued for malpractice when DID occurs or when therapists lead patients to believe false memories. These suits are usually brought by retractors of abuse allegations but have also been brought on a number of occasions by parents who contend that therapists by persuading patients that their parents abused them have broached a duty of care to avoid harm to innocent third parties.

Suits by retractors have generally resulted in out of court settlements by malpractice insurers rather than being brought to trial and precedents entered. Suits

by third parties have yielded mixed results. In the New Hampshire case *Hungerford v Jones* (97–657), the New Hampshire Supreme Court ruled that therapists indeed had a duty of care to parents to prevent false allegations from being made against them by children. However, in California, the Fourth District Court of appeal upheld a therapist's immunity from third party lawsuits arising from recovered memories in therapy, ruling that to permit such lawsuits would be to oblige therapists to serve two masters (Pfeifer 1999).

The cult brainwashing paradigm became the model for a federal criminal indictment of Judith Peterson and four other defendants in the Spring Shadows Glen case that was vacated in February 1999 by a mistrial. As the prosecution alleged in its indictment:… "the defendants and others would and did fraudulently elicit statements of satanic ritual abuse and cult activities from the admitted patients, through non-traditional treatment modalities, including the use of leading or suggestive questions during therapy sessions while the patients were: under hypnosis; under the influence of a drug or combination of drugs; isolated from their families, friends and the outside world; denied certain privileges and freedoms, including uninterrupted sleep; held down by excessive or medically unnecessary physical restraints; or, otherwise by employing the use of techniques commonly associated with mind control and "brainwashing," in order to conduct their fraudulent insurance payment enterprises." The case resulted in a mistrial on February 8, 1999 as a result of a number of jurors being disqualified for various reasons (Smith 1999). The State declined to re-file the case. Besides legal means of redress, the False Memory Syndrome moral panic has resulted in some extralegal activity. In Seattle, the local head of FMSF, Chuck Noah has engaged in Operation Rescue style harassment in front of the office of David Calof, a local DID therapist. The extensive picketing has involved harassment of patients, intimidation of family and colleagues, harassment of Calof's landlord with the aim of forcing the landlord to evict Calof, bogus complaints and lawsuits and even physical assault against one of Calof's staff on at least one occasion (Calof 1998).

Thus we see how the False Memory Syndrome moral panic is in many ways the outgrowth of several other moral panics, the Cult Brainwashing moral panic in particular. In both cases, parents are the immediate victims and in both cases, the brainwashing hypothesis is applied in a highly inconsistent manner. Both in the case of the Cult Brainwashing paradigm and in the case of False Memory paradigm, the idea that parents can be engaged in brainwashing or in parenting that is abusive enough to be tantamount to brainwashing is totally ignored, much less denied. This is a major oversight. Perhaps the need to maintain that oversight was the reason why Cult Awareness Network was so ineffective with persons who had been cult raised but had left. But without this oversight, the brainwashing paradigm

collapses into the traumatic dissociation paradigm. And that would make brainwashing far less useful as a means of legitimating authority. Thus we see a chain of moral panics against social problems of varying seriousness. Each evolved in a number of ways into the next. This serves as evidence that moral panics can and do occur around issues that are truly serious. However, an atmosphere of moral panic is generally not conducive to rational thought and reality testing. That remains the fundamental problem with attempting to solve social problems with moralistic crusades and moral panics.

References

American Journal of Psychiatry, 20(12), 998–1003.

Bachrach & Baratz (1970). *Power and Poverty. Theory and Practice*. O.U.B. New York.

Baroja, Julio Caro (1961) *La Brujas y Su Mundc Madrid*.

Baskette, J. (1994). *The Bizarre Case of Dr. Rebecca Brown.* htta://www.informatik.tumuenchen.de%indra/Texts/Relicaion/brown

Beacon Foundation (1991). *Helping Individuals and Agencies Deal with Problems of Ritual Abuse.*

Ben-Yehuda, Nachman (1985). *Deviance and moral boundaries: witchcraft, the occult, science fiction, deviant sciences and scientists.* University of Chicago Press, Chicago.

Boettcher, Robert (1978). *Gifts of Deceit: Sun Myung Moon, Koreagate, and the Unification Church.* Holt, Rinehart, Winston, New York.

Brongersma, Edward (1986.) Loving boys: A multidisiciplinary study of sexual relations between adult and minor males. Global Academic Publishers, Elmhurst, NY.

Brown, Daniel, Scheflin, Alan W. and Hammond, D. Corydon (1998). Memory, Trauma Treatment, and The Law WW. Norton New York.

Calof, David (1998). “Notes From A Practice Under Siege: Harassment, Defamation and Intimidation in the Name of Science,” *Ethics and Behavior 8*(2); 161–189.

Ceci, S.J. and Bruck, M. (1995). *Jeopardy in the courtroom: A scientific analysis of children’s testimony.* American Psychological Association. Washington, D.C.

Brown, Rebecca, M.D (1986). *He came to set the captives free.* Chino, CA: Chick Publications.

Brown, Rebecca, M.D(1987). *Prepare for war.* Chino, CA : Chick Publications.

Cochran, William Gemmell (1954). *Statistical problems of the Kinsey report*. American Statistical Association. Washington.

Cohen, Stanley. (1972). *Folk Devils and Moral Panics: The Creation of the Mods and the Rockers*. Oxford, UK Basil Blackwell.

Cohn, Norman (1975). Europe’s Inner Demons: An Enquiry Inspired by the Great Witch-Hunt. Sussex University Press.

03/12/86 COMMONWEALTH v. CARL H. DREW SUPREME JUDICIAL COURT OF MASSACHUSETTS No. Br-2700489 N.E.2d 1233, 397 Mass. 65March 12, 1986.

Conway, Flo & Siegelman, Jim(1978). *Snapping: American's Epidemic of Sudden Personality Change*. J.B. Lippincott, New York.

Dorado, Joyce Seyse, (1999). "Remembering Incest: The Complexities of This Process *and Implications* for Civil Statutes of Limitations" in Williams, Linda M. and Banyard, Victoria L. *ed. (1999) Trauma and Memory*. Sage Publications, Thousand Oaks, CA.

Eglinton, J. Z. (1964). *Greek love.* Layton Press, New York.

Estabrooks, George A. (1957). *Hypnotism.* E. P. Dutton, New York.

Endicott, Stephen and Hagerman, Edward (1999) *The United States and Biological Warfare: Secrets from the Early Cold War and Korea.* University of Indiana Press. Bloomington, IN.

Farber, I.E., Harlow, Harry F. and West, *Louis Jolyon (1957) "Brainwashing, Conditioning* and DDD (Debility, Dependency and Dread). *Sociometry,* pp. 271–285.

Feierman, Jay R. ed. (1990). Pedophilia :Biosocial Dimensions Springer-Vertag.

New York STATE OF NORTH CAROLINA v. PATRICK S. FIGURED No. 9315SC539 COURT OF APPEALS OF NORTH CAROLINA 116 N.C. App. 1; 446 S.E.2d 838; 1994 N.C. App. LEXIS 868.

Geraci, Paul (1991, June). "Interview with Dr. Ralph Underwager and Dr. Hollida Wakefield," Paidika.

Gitlin, Todd (1988). The Sixties: Years of Hope: Days of Rage. Bantam Books, New York.

Goode, Erich and Ben Yehudah, Nachman 1994. Moral Panics. Basil Blackwell. Cambridge, MA.

Greaves, George B. (1991) "Alternative Hypotheses Regarding Claims of Satanic Cult Activity: A Critical Analysis" in Out of Darkness: Exploring Satanism and Ritual Abuse edited by David Sakheim & Susan Devine. Lexington Books. Mac Milian Maxwell, New York.

Greenberg, Stuart A. and Shuman, Daniel W. (1997). "Irreconcilable Conflict Between Therapeutic and Forensic Roles" Professional Psychology: Research and Practice Vol.28 No.1 pp. 50–57.

Grinker, R. R. and Spiegel, J.P. (1943). War, Neuroses In North Africa: The Tunisian Campaign. Josiah Macey, New York.

Grinker, R.R. and Spiegel, J.P. (1945). Men Under Stress. Blakiston. Philadelphia, PA.

Henningsen, Gustav (1980). *The Witches Advocate: Basque Witchcraft and the Spanish Inquisition (1609–9614.)* University of Nevada Press, Reno, Nevada.

Hilgard, Ernest (1965) *Hypnotic Susceptability.* Harcourt Brace and World, New York.

Hilgard, Emest (1977,1986). *Divided Consciousness: Multiple Controls In Human Thought and Action.* Wiley Interscience, New York.

Hinton, William. (1966). *Fanshen: A Documentary of Revolution in a Chinese Village.* Vintage Books, *New York.*

Hochman, John 1994). *"Some Suggestions to Retractors" False Memory. Foundation Newsletter.* February 1994.

Hollingsworth, Jan. (1986). *Unspeakable acts.* Contemporary Books, New York.

Hunter, Edward. (1953). *Brainwashing In Red China: The calculated destruction of men's minds.* Vanguard Press, New York.

IN THE MATTER OF HEATHER BARKER, NEGLECTED CHILDCASE NO *441 COURT* OF APPEALAS OF OHIO, SEVENTH, APPELLATE *DISTRICT,* HARRISON COUNTY1994 *Ohio.* App. LEXIS *6100.* December 30, 1994, Decided.

Kardiner A. (1941*) The Traumatic Neuroses of War.* Hoeber, New York.

Kardiner A. & Spiegel H. (1947). *War, Stress and Neurotic Illness.* Hoeber, New York.

Katchen, M. H. (1991). History of Satanic Religions in, *Out of Darkness: Exploring* Satanism and Ritual Abuse. Edited by David Sakheim & Susan Devine. Lexington Books,Mac Millan Maxwell, New York.

Kent, Stephen A.(1993a). "Deviant Scripturalism and Ritual Satanic Abuse Part One: Possible Judeo-Christian Influences." *Religion* Vol.23, pp 229–241.

Kent, Stephen A. (1993b). 'Deviant Scripturalism and Ritual Satanic Abuse Part Two: Possible Masonic, Mormon, Magick, and Pagan Influences'. *Religion* Vol. 23, pp. 355–367.

Kent, Stephen A. (1994). "Diabolic Debates: A Reply to David Frankfurter and J. S. LaFontaine." *Religion* Vol.24, p.361–378.

King, Francis (1970) Ritual Magic In England 1887 to the Present Time. London 1970.

Kinsey, Alfred C. & Pomeroy, Wardell (1948) Sexual Behavior in the Human Male. W. E. Saunders Philadelphia.

Lee, Martin A. and Shlain, Bruce. (1992). Acid Dreams: *The* Complete Social History *of LSd.-The* CIA, the Sixties *and Beyond, Grove, Wiedenfield.*

Lifton, Robert Jay (1954). "Home by Ship: Reaction Patterns of American Prisoners Of War Repatriated from North Korea." American Journal of Psychiatry 110: 732–739.

Masters, William H. et al., ed. (1980). Ethical issues in sex therapy and research: v. 2, Masters & Johnson Institute Ethics Congress Boston: Little, Brown. Boston.

McHugh, Paul (1993). "Multiple Personality Disorder" *Harvard Mental Health Newsletter.* Fall, pp. 4–6).

Noblitt, James Randall and Perskin, Pamela Sue (1998). Cult *and* Ritual *Abuse: Its* History, Anthropology *and Recent Discovery* in Contemporary America. Prager. Westport CO.

Ofshe, Richard J. & Singer, Margaret Thaler (1994). "Recovered-Memory Therapy and Robust Repression: Influences and Pseudomemories." *International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis Vol.* 42, no.4, pp. 391–410.

Ofshe, Richard and Watters, Ethan (1994). *Making Monsters: False* Memories, Psychotherapy and Sexual Hysteria. Scribners. New York.

Orne, Martin T. (1951)."The mechanisms of Hypnotic Age Regression: An Experimental Study." *Journal of Abnormal and Social Psychology* 58, 213–225.

Ome, Martin T. (1959). "The Nature of Hypnosis: Artifact and Essence." *Journal of Abnonnal and Social Psychology* 58; 277–299.

Pascal Mark. (1983). Varieties of manlboy love: modem western contexts: Wallace Hamilton Press, New York Series title: NAMBLA Journal.

Patrick, Ted (1976). *Let Our Children Go!* E.P. Dutton, New York.

Penick v. Indiana, (1995) Appellee659, N.E. 2d 484, No. 17200 9404-CR-389 Supreme Court of Indiana.

People V. St. Joseph 226. CaI.App-3d 289; 276 CaI.Rptr. 498 [Dec. 1990].

Pfeifer, Stuart (1999). “Therapist’s Immunity Upheld.” Orange County Register.

Raschke, Carl (1990). *Painted Black.* Harper and Row, New York.

Reeves, Tom (1992). “Reviving and Redefining Pederasty.” In Pascal, Mark (Ed.). Varieties of ManlBoy Love. New York, Wallace Hamilton Press.

Rhodes, H.T.F. (1974). The Satanic Mass. Citadel Press. Secaucus, New Jersey.

Richardson, James T., van der Lans, Jan & Derks, Frans (1986). “Leaving and Labeling: Voluntary and Coerced Disaffiliation from Religious Social Movements.” *Research In Social Movements, Conflict and Change* vol.7, p. 29–51.

Richardson, James T. & Van Driel, Barend (1987). “Print Media Coverage of New Religious Movements: A Longitudinal Study.” *Journal of Communication* vol.38 no.3, p. 37–61.

Reisman, Judith A. (1998). *Kinsey. Crimes and Consequences.* Institute for Media Education, Arlington, VA.

Rosenbaum, M. (1980). “The Role of The Term Schizophrenia In The Decline of Diagnosis of Multiple Personality.” Archives of General Psychiatry 37:1383–1385.

Ross, Colin (1996). Trauma & Memory: Clinical Implications For Treatment. Western Clinical Conference on Trauma & Dissociation.

Rueda, Enrique T.(1982). The Homosexual Network: Public Lives and Private Policy. The Devon Adair Old. Greenwich, Connecticut.

Sandfort, Theo, Edward Brongersma, and Alex van Naerssen, ed. (1991). Male *intergenerational* intimacy: historical, socio-psychological, *and legal* perspectives. Harrington Park Press, New York.

Sargant, W. & Slater E. (1941).”Amnestic Syndromes in War.” Proceedings of the Royal Society of Medicine Vol.34 757–764.

Sexton, Eddie Lee, Appellant, v. STATE OF FLORIDA, Appellee. No. 86,132, July 17, 1997.

Schein, Edgar H(1956). “The Chinese Indocrination Program for American Prisoners of War.” *Psychiatry,* pp. 149–172.

Schein, Edgar H., Hill, Winfred F., Williams, Harold L. and Lubin, Ardie (1957). “Distinguishing Characteristics of Collaborators and Resisters among American Prisoners of War.” *Journal of Abnormal and Social Psychology* 55:197–201.

Schneider, Joseph W. (1985). “Social Problems Theory: The Constructionist’s View.” *American Review of Sociology* no.2 p. 200–229.

Schreiber, Flora Rheta (1973). Sybil. Regenery New York.

Schutze, Jim (1989). Cauldron of Blood: The Matamoros Cult Killings. Avon Books. New York.

Segal, Julius (1956). “Factors Related to the Collaboration and Resistance Behavior of U.S. Army P.W.s in Korea” *Technical Report* 33, *Human* Resources Research Office, The George Washington University.

Singer, Margaret Thaler (1975). “The Borderline Diagnosis and Psychological Tests: Review and Research” pp. 72–81 in *Borderline Personality Disorders:* The Concept, the Sydrome, the Patient edited by Peter Hartocollis International Universities Press, New York.

Singer, Margaret Thaler (1979). “Coming Out of The Cults” Psychology Today.

Singer, Margaret Thaler (1986). “Consultation With Families Of Cultists” in L.C. Wynne, S.H. McDaniel and T.T. Weber, ed. Systems Consultation: A New Perspective for Family Therapy. Guilford Press, New York.

Singer, Margaret Thaler and Ofshe, Richard (1989). “Thought Reform Programs and The Production of Psychiatric Casualties.” *Psychiatric Annals 20*(4) 188–194.

Singer, Margaret Thaler, Temerlin, Maurice K., and Langone, Michael D. (1990). “Psychotherapy Cults” Cultic Studies Journal Vol.7 no.2 p. 101–125.

Smith, Mark (1999). “Ousted juror. No reason to halt cult memory trial.” *Houston Chronicle* February 24, 1999.

Smith, Michelle & Pazder, Lawrence (1980). Michelle Remembers Congdon and Lattes. New York.

Solomon, Trudy (1980). “Programming” and “Deprogramming” the “Moonies° Social Psychology Applied” in Bromley & Richardson “The Brainwashing/ Deprogramming Controversy. Edwin Mellen,Toronto.

Spanos, N. P. and Weeks, J. R. & Bertrand, L.D. (1985).”Multiple Personality Disorder: A Social Psychological Perspective. “ *Journal of Abnormal Psychology* 94:362–76.

State Of North Carolina V. Patrick S. Figured No. 9315sc539 Court Of Appeals Of North Carolina 116 N.C. App. 1; 446 S.E.2d 838; 1994 N.C. App. Lexis 868 March 1, 1994, Heard In The Court Of Appeals August 16, 1994, Filed Prior History: [‘”`”1] Chatham County. Nos. 92 Crs 284-286.

State of Utah v. Alan B. Hadfield, 788 P2d 506, *Defendant and Appellant. No*. 880234. Supreme Court of Utah. Feb. 22, 1990.

Strassman, Harvey D., Thaler, Margaret B., and Schein, Capt. Edgar H. (1956). “A Prisoner of War Syndrome: Apathy As A Reaction to Severe Stress”.

Stratford, Lauren (1988). Satan’s underground. Harvest House Publishers., Eugene, OR.

Symonds, John Addington, 1840-1893 (1964). Studies in sexual inversion : embodying A study in Greek ethics and A study in modem ethics. The Medical Press of New York, New York.

Timmons, S. (1990). The Trouble With Harry Hay: Founder of the Modem Gay Movement, Alyson Publications, Inc., Boston, MA.

Tierney, Patrick (1989). The Highest Altar. The Story of Human Sacrifice, Viking, New York.

Trott, Jon and Hertenstein, Mike (1992).”Selling Satan: The Tragic History of Mike Warnke.” *Cornerstone Magazine Vol* 21 p. 98.

Underwood, Barbara and Underwood, Betty (1979. Hostage to Heaven: C. N. Potter, New York.

United States Senate 94th Congress, Second Session (1956). “Communist Interrogation: Indocrination and Exploitation of American Military and Civilian *Prisoners*” Hearings Before the Permanent Subcommittee on Investigations of the Committee on Government Operations, U.S. Senate 84th Congress, 2”d Session Washington D.C. U.S. Government Printing Office.

Victor, Jeffrey (1993). Satanic Panic: The Creation of a Contemporary Legend Open Court. Publishers, Chicago.

Warnke, Mike (1972). The Satan Seller. Logos Publishing, Plainsfield, NJ.

Williams, Linda M. and Banyard, Victoria L. ed. (1999). Trauma and Memory. Sage Publications. Thousand Oaks, CA.

Williamson, Joel (1986). A Rage For Order: Black-White Relations In the American South Since Emancipation. Oxford University Press. New York.

Zablocki, Benjamin (1980). Alienation and Charisma: A Study of Contemporary American Communes. The Free Press, London.

Zacharias, Gerhard (1964). *Satankult and Schwanze Messe: Ein Beitrag zur Phenomenoligie der Religion.* Wiesbaden. Limes.

Zacharias, G. (Trollope, C. Tr (1980). The Satanic Cult. Allen & Unwin, London.

CHAPTER 8

Re-Searching for New Perspectives:Ritual Abuse/Ritual Violence as Ideologically Motivated Crime

Thorsten Becker

Terrorism in the 21st century, most notably the events of September 11, 2001, calls for new perspectives regarding the motivations of organized criminal groups and destructive cults, as well as governmental agencies covertly involved in mind control procedures on their citizenry. I contend that the term “ritual” does not adequately portray the fundamental nature of the reported violence that these groups have perpetrated on children, adults, and animals. As Becker, Karriker, Overkamp, and Rutz (in press) write, “The ‘ritual’ connotation fails to encompass many of the tortures, threats, confinements, mind control procedures, violence and other types of unlawful or immoral exploitation that participants have endured.”

The Controversy

Ritual abuse, especially when the adjective satanic is used, is a controversial topic. Even though this phenomenon has been discussed in the professional community for almost three decades, there is no consensus regarding its definition. I understand the concept as ritual violence:

> Ritual violence is a severe form of abuse of adults, adolescents and children intended to traumatize the victims. It consists of physical, sexual and psychological forms of abuse which are planned out and systematically used in ceremonies. These ceremonies may have an ideological background as well as being staged for the purpose of deception and threat. Symbols and activities or rituals which have religious, magical or supernatural connotations are used. The purpose is to confuse, threaten and terrorize victims and to indoctrinate them with religious, spiritual or ideological beliefs. Ritual violence rarely consists of a single episode. Most often these experiences happen over an extended period

> of time. (Becker & Froeling, 1998) When Ulla Froeling and I developed this description, we had two issues in mind: (1) that a ritual can be staged to make a victim believe that the ideological background is real, i.e., a child is made to think she has murdered a baby as a sacrifice to Satan or another deity, (2) that whether or not a ritual is staged, the victim is bound into the real or faked belief system of the perpetrator(s).

Mental health and law enforcement professionals frequently use the word unbelievable when faced with clients/victims who report ritual violence. Supporting factors for a defense strategy of not believing include a lack of education and training about ideologically-based ritual abuse and torture-based trauma and their aftereffects, and a lack of supervision for working with persons with these histories. Without this knowledge and support, professionals may perceive clients/victims as confused, chaotic, paranoid, delusional, etc.; however, as Coleman (1999) points out, "We must remember that survivors only become patients because of the appalling things that have been done to them, not because they are mentally ill."

In an article offering a law enforcement perspective on allegations of ritual abuse, Lanning (1992) fails to give a precise definition of the term. Although he is often quoted as having conducted a seven-year FBI study that gives evidence that ritual abuse does not exist, when Noblitt and Perskin (2000) requested a copy of his study from the FBI, "the bureau responded in writing indicating that no such study existed" (p. 179). Contrary to the way his paper is cited to show that there is no evidence of ritual abuse, what Lanning writes is: I do not deny the possibility that some of these allegations of an organized conspiracy involving the take-over of day-care centers, abduction, cannibalism, and human sacrifice might be true. But if they are true, then it is one of the greatest crime conspiracies in history. (pp. 131–132)

Bennetts (1993) asked Lanning if he had trouble disbelieving the stories of the women he interviewed. "To my surprise," she writes, "he admits he has never talked to a ritual abuse survivor" (p. 62). Reportedly, he later said that he had spoken unofficially with several dozen survivors.

Two years later, the ritual abuse controversy that had begun in the mental health and law enforcement fields spread to the public arena. On October 24, 1995, when public television's "Frontline" aired "The Search for Satan," viewers in the United States were told that satanic ritual abuse reports were "false memories." The program began, "Two troubled women. Both sought help from some of the top

doctors in the country. The diagnosis? Satanic ritual abuse… After millions of dollars in treatment, the women now say, 'The doctors were wrong.'"

Mary Shanley and Patricia Burgus, two former psychiatric patients, were featured. Shanley had sought help from Judith Peterson, Ph.D. at Spring Shadows Glen in Houston. After her release, Shanley filed a lawsuit against Peterson and others claiming they had implanted false memories and misdiagnosed her with Multiple Personality Disorder (MPD). Shanley's lawsuit eventually settled quietly under a gag order.

Patricia Burgus had been treated by Bennett Braun, M.D. at Rush-Presbyterian-St. Luke's Medical Center in Chicago. Burgus, her husband and her two sons filed lawsuits against Braun and others claiming false memories were implanted and MPD was misdiagnosed. In a deposition on January 17, 1997, Burgus testified that Braun had not implanted any false memories. She stated that she had originated all her own memories; that Braun had only passed on "information from other patients" who reported seeing her participate in cult-related activities (Burgus, 1997, pp. 912–913). Why the Burgus lawsuit was not renegotiated at that point remains undetermined.

In October 1997, the Burgus family announced they had accepted a settlement offer in their false memory lawsuit, a record-breaking $10.6 million (Belluck, 1997). Braun's medical license was suspended for two years by the Illinois licensing board in response to a complaint filed by Patricia Burgus. Braun initiated a lawsuit in 1999 against his malpractice carrier alleging the carrier had settled the lawsuit without his permission in violation of the contract terms. The matter remains undecided.

Peterson was also in the news in October 1997. She and four others at Spring Shadows Glen were indicted on charges they had conspired to "fraudulently treat the insured patients for MPD" and "did fraudulently elicit statements of satanic ritual abuse and cult activities from the admitted patients" (United States, 1997).

Shanley, the government's star witness in the criminal trial against Peterson, and the other defendants took the stand in September 1998. Under cross-examination, Shanley retracted her prior testimony that her therapists had implanted false memories. She acknowledged that she had recalled cult-related memories long before she saw Peterson and admitted that Peterson had helped her become "stronger, more assertive and a better communicator" (Smith, 1998). The federal government dropped all charges against the defendants in March 1999. Eventually, the Texas licensing board dismissed all complaints filed against Peterson.

The impact of the Braun and Peterson cases, lawsuits against other therapists for allegedly implanting false memories of ritual abuse in their clients, and the fact

that leaders and organizations in the dissociative disorders' field provided little support for the accused, seemed to shut down the debate and controversy about the reality of ritual abuse. This effectively silenced many therapists of ritual abuse survivors who had previously published and talked about their work in public forums, at professional meetings and during group supervision.

There is no way to determine the number of therapists who continued to work with survivors with little support from peers and professional groups. I do know that in 2007, 451 persons from 20 countries responded to the online Professional Extreme Abuse Survey (EAS Team, 2008) for therapists, counselors, clergy and other persons who have worked professionally with at least one adult survivor of extreme abuse including, but not limited to, survivors of ritual abuse and/or mind control (RA/MC).

A New Perspective

Instead of limiting the term to ritual abuse or satanic ritual abuse—which is sometimes reduced to a picture of the world-wide intergenerational satanist practices said to involve child murder and baby-eating—I prefer to use a more inclusive term when describing crimes that involve ritualistic, ideological or religious issues. In my work as a case consultant with law enforcement in Europe, I use the term ideologically motivated crimes (IMC) to describe crimes that "were perpetrated in the name of some greater good or evil (as perceived by secular perpetrator groups) or some greater god or devil (as perceived by religious perpetrator groups)" (Becker et al., in press).

Deliberately inflicted trauma in service to an imposed ideological or religious belief system differentiates IMC from other abuse-related traumatic experiences. For example, indoctrinating victims, especially child victims, with the belief in a deity or demons enhances the power of perpetrators. Speaking specifically about Satanism, Coleman (1999) observes that:

> Children recruited in ritual abuse may not initially be aware of the religious significance, but most survivors who claim they were born into and abused within generational Satanism tell us that they were taught from a very early age that Satan was their god. All those that I worked with were under no illusions as to what it was about. They talked about the cult as other people may talk about the church or a political party. Although individual memories had been repressed or dissociated, the awareness of Satanism was not a recovered memory. They had always recognized that this was the background to their personal trauma that made them feel different from other people.

Victims sometimes report that leaders have told them that a watchful eye and ear will always be present in their lives and will report back to the group if they ever disclose the abuse. Often these threats are connected to a deity who will punish the victims immediately if they tell. Understandably, these threats are likely to cause problems when survivors begin to acknowledge that serious crimes were committed against them.

Perpetrators apparently rationalize these crimes they commit as common religious or ceremonial practices. Allegedly, this abuse had been experienced previously by others in the group, peers as well as leaders, and is an immanent feature on the way to religious or ideological goals or group positions, often declared as knowledge or wisdom. Trauma, as a requirement for a belief system, justifies the suffering of a victim and seals a bond to the perpetrators. If a victim releases this bond and escapes from the group, he or she might experience a spiritual vacuum. This could present a "condition that may be a focus of clinical attention" as listed in the DSM-IV (American Psychiatric Association, 1994): "Religious and Spiritual Problem" (V62.89).

Below is a summary of my current thinking on the meaning behind the term ideologically motivated crimes:

> They are crimes that are committed in the name of and justified by a transcendent religious belief system (e.g., Aum Shinrikyo) or an immanent *Weltanschauung*, (e.g., Nazi-ideology group). In the former, the physical presence of leaders and perpetrators is supported and/or enforced by gods or deities who are non-terrestrial beings and therefore can be perceived as omnipresent, especially by young children. This is a serious threat and may continue as a stressor to them even when they become adults. In the latter, a group's leadership exists in the temporal world and rewards for suffering or committing criminal activities happen in their earthly lives. (Becker et al., in press) Perlmutter (2004) provides an informative approach for understanding how religious violence is justified in groups that ritually abuse children. She asserts that ideological issues make crimes committed in these groups unique, thus causing special problems for investigators:
>
> The multiple-victim/multiple-suspect (MC/MS) situation forces the investigator to work with multiple child victims and to investigate multiple suspects. In addition, in ritualistic abuse investigations, an investigator cannot believe everything he hears. Law enforcers have to corroborate everything they hear and need to particularly be aware of clinicians and psychologists whose intentions are good but they do not have to corroborate what their clients are

saying from the law enforcement perspective. Finally, take into consideration that inadequate cooperation exists between investigators, therapists and the parents. (pp. 285–286) Perlmutter offers practical procedural guidelines specific for investigations of these cases, some of which address the psychological needs of the victim by building rapport with the child before the interview, by not wearing a uniform, and by not asking leading questions. She also makes it clear that "law enforcers face many legal, spiritual and emotional hurdles when confronted with an alleged occult crime" (p. 287) and encourages them to become educated about the belief systems of the perpetrators to learn how specific groups function and which of their practices may be legally protected and which constitute criminal conduct.

Examples of IMC

From the Media

One of the keys to a successful investigation of IMC is "planning and implementing a specific investigation strategy for ritualistic child abuse crimes related to the occult" (Perlmutter, 2004, p. 283). This strategy is reflected in the ongoing investigation of the "Thames Torso Case." On September 21, 2001, London police recovered the remains of a dismembered, decapitated young boy from the River Thames. He was given the name, Adam.

In an article linking the boy's murder to child trafficking, Contenta (2003) writes: "The investigative work that has brought police close to cracking the case is groundbreaking. It combined unprecedented forensic research with old-fashioned legwork that took investigators to Germany, the Netherlands, the U.S., South Africa, Nigeria, Scotland and Ireland." Police had raided several homes and arrested a group of traffickers who they were pretty convinced had brought Adam to England. In the raids, they had found evidence of occult ritual practices. An expert in African religions said he believed that the evidence showed that the "murderer or murderers sacrificed Adam to gain some sort of power or good luck for an undertaking in Britain."

Cowan (2004) further explains the modus operandi:

> Forensic experts, using skills developed to help identify victims of the September 11 attacks, carried out advanced analysis of his [Adam's] bones, revealing his diet, from which they were able to deduce that he was from the region around Benin in Nigeria… A scientist at Kew Gardens worked out that Adam had been given a potion containing poisonous calabar beans up to 48 hours before his death. The calabar, commonly used in witchcraft rituals in

west Africa, causes paralysis while keeping the victim conscious… Children and young people are preferred for sacrifice, and are kept conscious to the point of death because their screams are said to waken the ancestors necessary to give power to the ceremony. Blood is drained from the body and sometimes drunk by the participants.

The following citations, summaries and excerpts from BBC News are representative of how this case of ritual murder was documented in the media:

Torso Murder Reward Offered
Police made national appeals for information about the discovery which led to widespread publicity. However, they have still been unable to identify the boy… Commander Andre Baker [chief of the Metropolitan Police Serious Crimes Group] said, "Just imagine your worst nightmare and that would be nowhere near."…Mr Baker said police would not rest until Adam's killer or killers were caught. (BBC News, December 21, 2001) **Thames Torso 'Was Human Sacrifice'**

South African pathologist Dr. Hendrick Scholtz reported his findings at a conference of detectives from across the UK: "It is my opinion that the nature of the discovery of the body, features of the external examination including the nature of the wounds, clothing and mechanism of death are consistent with those of a ritual homicide as practiced in Africa." (BBC News, January 29, 2002)

Mandela Makes Thames Torso Appeal
Nelson Mandela has made a global appeal for information about the murder of a young boy whose remains were found in London… The former South African President said the "gruesome" case had left him with "sadness and a deep sense of tragedy."… Mr Mandela praised the "sterling contribution" of South African detectives and pathologists to the case." He added, "Such cruel wastage of the lives of our children and youth cannot be allowed to continue." (BBC News, April 19, 2002) **Met Defends Satanic Abuse Course**

The Metropolitan Police Force has been criticised for sending its officers on a course which helps identify the satanic ritual abuse of children. The force sent 30 officers on the one-day event in October but has been criticised by some experts who say the ritual abuse does not exist…" (BBC News, December 21, 2004)

'Adam Torso' Remains Are Buried

> The burial service took place on 5 December and was attended by a small group of representatives from across the inquiry. “It was a sad, thoughtful and dignified service to celebrate Adam’s short life,” a police source told the BBC News website. After a five-year probe, Adam has yet to be identified and officers felt the time was right to lay him to rest… Ground-breaking forensic work, which involved taking samples from the child’s bones, linked him to west Africa and then Nigeria… Several arrests have been made in a case which showed links between human trafficking and ritual abuse, but no one has yet been charged. (BBC News, December 12, 2006) **McVeigh and Muir (2007) report:**

> New DNA techniques developed in hunting for dead boy’s birthplace have helped detectives solve other crimes… The links the Adam inquiry team discovered between human trafficking and black magic in West Africa have also aided other investigations, opening up at least three unsolved cases across Europe. Detective Chief Inspector Will O’Reilly recently told the Guardian that significant progress has been made in the case and said that “Now there is, perhaps for the first time, real hope that Adam will be identified—and his killers will be found.

At Adam’s burial, five years after his torso was found floating in the Thames, O’Reilly said, “Like the unknown soldier, his death should not be in vain—some resulting good must be in his epitaph.”

Emphasis on the ideological motivations behind this crime led to a change of view toward ritual violence for investigators in the United Kingdom. Hopefully, educational trainings will lead them and other law enforcement agencies around the world to a greater awareness of the possibility of ritual or ceremonial backgrounds in internationally-linked crimes.

From Research

Although controversies over the existence of ritual abuse have centered on reports of abuse from satanic cults, results of two studies show that ritual abuse is also practiced in other groups founded on religious or ideological doctrines. In 1997, German journalist Ulla Froeling and German psychotherapist Michaela Huber compiled data from a questionnaire returned by 126 therapists and counselors from 61 locations in Germany (Becker, 1999). The backgrounds of 354 cases in treatment were examined to determine the classification of groups in which survivors had been ritually abused. More than half of the victims reported abuse in more than one category. My co-researchers and I asked similar questions

on the Extreme Abuse Survey for Adults (EAS) offered in German and English (Rutz, Becker, Overkamp & Karriker 2007). See Table 1 for a comparison of preliminary results of both studies.

Table 1. Comparisons of German-language and English-language Reports of Ritually Abusive Groups[1](Numbers in parentheses represent total number of respondentsfor each category. Percents represent the frequencies of "yes" responses to each category)

Groups	SRA	Gnostic	Child Porn	Religious Sects*	Fascist Groups**	Uncertain Ideology
Germany (1999)	58% (354)		52% (354)	26% (354)	12% (354)	3% (354)
EAS (German)***	29% (151)	7% (149)	40% (151)	29% (156)	15% (156)	35% (160)
EAS (English)****	60% (835)	15% (826)	50% (826)	41% (837)	23% (832)	50% 9834)
EAS (Total)	55% (986)	14% (969)	48% (977)	39% (993)	22% (998)	47% (994)

*So-called Christian groups who are abusive through exorcism and cleaning rituals.
**Described as a group that considers itself superior in race, creed, or origin, e.g., Neo-Nazi, White Supremacist and KKK.
***From unpublished raw data
****From unpublished raw data

Three additional questions on the EAS asked about abuse in ideologically motivated groups: (1) ritual abuse in a witchcraft cult was reported by 23% of 971 respondents, (2) ritual abuse in voodooism was reported by 7% of 966 respondents, and (3) 26% of 1000 respondents answered "yes" to the question: "Secret government-sponsored mind control experiments were performed on me as a child." Rutz (2001) documents that these torture-based experiments were conducted by groups of doctors in the U.S. and Canada in the name of national security; thus, they could be classified as IMC.

Incidentally, partial data from the Froeling and Huber study were presented to the German Parliamentary Commission on Cults. As a result, the commission made

an inquiry to the Federal Office of Criminal Investigation, *BKA-Bundeskriminalamt,* and the state level offices of criminal investigation, *LKA-Landeskriminalamt,* of each German state. Only four states reported past or current investigations of these types of crimes. Their answers indicated that, at the time, German police had little knowledge about cases of ritual violence.

The Commission (Deutscher Bundestag—Referat Oeffentlichkeitsarbeit, 1998) concluded:

> The 'data' available thus appear to be contradictory. On the one hand, minimum figures that have to be characterized as bordering on the dramatic, based on an inquiry that was less than comprehensive; on the other, no corroboration of suspicious circumstances by police and other investigating authorities. This largely contradictory data situation—especially the failure of the authorities to establish any hard facts—should not, however, lead us to regard the media reports and accounts of treatment as without foundation. The very gravity of the events described precludes this. What has been said about dissociation and multiple personality disorder shows why it is plausible that investigations of such matters may be particularly difficult, and that proceedings may be quickly dropped. (p. 186) Although there have been some investigations in cases of ritual violence, for unknown reasons, several of the cases I have worked on as a counselor or police consultant have not been reported to the commission. However, the German *Bundesregierung*—after an inquiry in the parliament—admitted knowledge of three cases. In Germany, the Parliamentary Commission on Cults (Deutscher Bundestag—Referat Oeffentlichkeitsarbeit, 1998) concluded: Special police training, increased sensitivity to phenomena of ritual abuse, and also more intensive investigation of this area—conducted in such way that at first sight 'weird' and apparently 'incredible' testimony does not derail the proceedings and lead to their early abandonment—would appear appropriate… Germany's state level officers of criminal investigation should continue to evaluate the information available in the field of Occultism and Satanism. (p.186) Among other actions, the commission recommended, "Prosecuting authorities should establish a department which will primarily be in charge of prosecuting crimes with an occult background, and officers working in this department should receive proper training and further education" (p. 202).

Unfortunately, these recommendations were not set into action. Police have not only failed to do anything consequential from their investigations, they have also failed to document what they learned about the types of important information that

are needed in investigating ritual violence or occult-religious motivated crimes in Germany or elsewhere. To my knowledge, they have not been provided with proper training to know how to deal with aftereffects of cult abuse so severe that the only defense for the victim, albeit unconscious, was to dissociate from the trauma. It is unlikely that investigators have been trained to deal with persons who suffer from Dissociative Identity Disorder (DID). A person with DID could possibly switch to a different identity who under the stress of an interrogation claims no memory of past or present events related to the alleged crimes.

Speaking as a consultant, I do not know of a single case where there is proof that the accusations of ritual crimes are (or were) completely wrong. Most cases, including one day-care case, have been closed because of lack of credible evidence. All of the case investigations that I am aware of have included reports of ritual murder.

Accusations of ritual murder cause tremendous stress for all who work on these cases. In Germany, social workers are required to make reports to law enforcement if a client talks about witnessing or participating in murder. It doesn't matter whether or not the accounts are credible in legal terms. By law, police are required to investigate capital crimes for the public interest, e.g., to prevent future violent crimes and to protect others from becoming victims. Therefore, police have to interrogate the accused persons who, through their attorneys, will have access to the case files. In some cases, perpetrators may have deceived a child into believing that a murder took place; thus, if the child told a social worker about the crime, it would set off an early warning system that the child was disclosing and perpetrators could silence the child through punishment and destroy evidence of other crimes before police found it. This would prevent police from carefully collecting data to support or dismiss accusations in the early stages of an investigation.

Perpetrators of IMC have been reported to use devious means to assure that victims will not be credible in the event of an investigation: (1) by telling the person they will be killed if they talk about the crimes, (2) by using deception or trickery to implant ideas and fears for actions which may have never happened, e.g., the killing of humans, (3) by having perpetrators dress and act like they are therapists, politicians, famous actors, members of the European Royal families, etc., and (4) by faking the setting in which the crimes are committed, e.g., submarines, airplanes, large underground bases, tunnels or castles.

Investigators have been trained to find absolute, non-contradictory truth as a foundation to go for a trial with a foreseeable clear outcome. Deception used in IMC makes it impossible for them to distinguish truth from fiction. Tactics used by perpetrator groups to silence, intimate, and deliberately make their victims not

credible cause enormous difficulties, not only for investigators but also for the entire justice system.

From History

Ideological beliefs as motivation for violence are not limited to small destructive cults and sects. The conflict in Northern Ireland demonstrated the violent potential of major world religions; the secular ideology connected to political and racial beliefs of the National Socialist German Workers' Party culminated in the Holocaust. Effective exploitation of humans from birth to death shares much in common with the systematic approach of the Nazis who not only committed the Holocaust, but also, in preparation for war over an extended period of time, exploited German citizens in almost every stratum of society. Four comparisons come to mind: **1. Ideological Training:** Between 1933 and 1945 military-like structuring of the civilian society in the so-called *Luftschutz* (a program designed to minimize the casualties of air attacks) and large-scale training and conditioning enabled the whole German society to observe and cooperate in a program called *Vernichtung durch Arbeit* or annihilation through work. Ideologically motivated crimes, as well as war crimes by the German army, were committed in a network of concentration camps throughout the Reich and adjacent areas. These crimes, both passive and active, had been justified by the ideology of National Socialism and its tenet that devotees belong to the chosen, superior Aryan race.

What is difficult for most people to understand is that for Nazis, their crimes were part and parcel of German daily life; that they occurred "just in the neighborhood" and were committed by "friendly neighbors." Lifton (1986) uses the term "doubling" to describe this dissociative-like experience that allowed Nazis to commit crimes at work and come home to lead respectable lives in the community.

Another aspect of training involved a systematic manipulation of the nation's youth. Adolescent boys were recruited into *HJ-Hitlerjugend* (Hitler Youth); adolescent girls, into *BDM-Bund Deutscher Maedchen* (League of German Maidens). In effect, every decision that these young people made regarding matters of daily living was controlled by the government. They were told what to think and what to believe; where to live and whom to love. They were required to wear uniforms, to conform to the mandates of the party. The state had replaced their families, "caring" for them, organizing their lives, framing their destinies.

2. Victim-Perpetrator Dynamics: Traumatic suffering from the lost First World War (which was, according to the so-called *Dolchstoss-Legende*, not lost by the fighting troops but by civilians who sabotaged the war effort) was magnified by terms of the "Versaillian Verdict," the peace treaty which required Germany and its allies to admit they were responsible for the war. Germans felt persecuted and wrongly accused. This laid the ground for a mentality of having being victimized and contributed to a never-surrender-again attitude which was hardened by the burning of Germany's cities during the bomb war that effectively began in 1940. This provided justification for a final 'total war.' In the combat zones of field, air and sea, as well as on the home front, victims had been turned into perpetrators who used torture and murder to further the goals of their leaders.

The casualties were not limited to six million Jews or to Russian prisoners of war. They were also mentally ill people and even adolescents who were considered as *arbeitsscheu* (afraid to work) or unsocialized. Lunatic asylums and social services departments were among organizations that sent people, regardless of their beliefs or race, to the camps—all with the goal of creating the perfect race and society.

3. Silencing: Being German means living in a country where the discussion of the Holocaust at both individual and societal levels was taboo for nearly a half century. Not only had the Germans lost their role of being superior—as the National Socialistic ideology told them—they had also lost a war they had started and had committed horrific crimes against humanity. Few people acknowledged or talked about the prevalence and magnitude of war-related traumatic experiences among the majority of the population.

4. Perpetrators Not Held Accountable for Crimes: Except for the Nuremberg trials against war criminals and against doctors in a second trial and a few minor trials, no visible action was taken to hold Holocaust criminals accountable for their crimes. The Germans created a special word construction for this: *Persil-Schein*. It stands for an official paper that was nicknamed after a well-known German detergent that, according to a 1965 advertisement, "washes whiter than white." Many German scientists left the country through the U.S. government's Project Paper Clip or escaped to South America with the support of the Vatican, or continued their research in the Soviet Union.

Why it is important to study Nazism in relation to ritual violence?

The most important reason, in my opinion, is because Nazism is the most powerful example of a movement in which its adherents used an ideological background to justify committing atrocities—against common sense and basic principles of humanity. Another reason is because in Germany, a significant

number of survivors reporting ritual violence have also reported abuse within Nazi-styled settings.

Table 1 shows that in the 1997 German sample of survivors, 12% reported abuse under a Fascist ideology. Ten years later, 15% of the German-speaking sample of the EAS reported such abuse. Reports of ritual abuse in a Fascist group by 47% of 994 EAS respondents are consistent with the rise of Fascist groups all over the world.

A third reason is because of numerous reports by extreme abuse survivors that some of their perpetrators were doctors and scientists who left Germany after World War II and carried on their concentration camp experiments in the countries to which they had fled. According to EAS results, of the 257 survivors who said they were used in government-sponsored mind control experiments, 185 were from the United States; 25 from Canada, 27 from Europe, and 20 from other or unnamed countries (Becker et al., in press).

Speaking at a conference for survivors and their advocates, Rutz (2007), one of the developers of the EAS and a healed ritual abuse/mind control survivor, said:

> On February 2005, the National Security Archive posted documentation revealing extensive relationships between former Nazi war criminals and American intelligence organizations, including the CIA. (http://www.gwu.edu/~nsarchiv/news/20050121/FINAL_Comments_Op_Files.pdf). Many survivors have alleged some of these same war criminals, using aliases, were complicit in their extreme abuse. From the survey sample, ten percent of 965 respondents reported that one of their perpetrators went by the name, Dr. Black; five percent of 962 reported a Dr. Swartz (Black in German); seven percent of 961 reported a Father Joseph; and six percent of 959 reported a Vaterchen (Father in German). These four aliases are names many survivors have independently reported to me as names that were used in their presence by Josef Mengele, the Angel of Death, the infamous Nazi-doctor who performed horrific experiments on the prisoners at Auschwitz.

A direct question about Mengele was included on the subsequent Professional Extreme Abuse Survey (EAS Survey Team, 2008). “At least one adult survivor of RA/MC with whom I have worked reported that the Nazi-war criminal, Dr. Josef Mengele, was involved in his/her abuse.” 15% of 232 answered “Yes.”

Of the 257 EAS respondents who reported secret mind control experiments used on them as children, 69% (177) reported having been abused in a satanic cult (Rutz et al., 2008). This statistic is consistent with anecdotal reports from therapists who have worked with clients who believe that the mind control doctors went to

their cults to find already dissociative children and convince or sometimes blackmail or pay their parents to permit their children to be used in the research.

From Terrorism

The terrorist pilots who murdered thousands of innocent people on September 11, 2001 did it, according to their understanding, in the name of Allah—IMC on a mass scale. Their training had been carried out within a society of a different (and targeted) ideological background. Apparently, even the newly developed friendships and relationships during the preparation of the terroristic acts did not lead to their questioning of or resigning from the holy tasks of hijacking planes, taking their passengers as hostages and sacrificing not only their own but also the lives of others for their religious belief system.

The pilots of 9-11 were not a hermetic group practicing their worship in closed settings. Members of this terrorist cell had lived by their own rules which likely incorporated Lifton's (1961) key criteria for mind control: dispensing of existence, doctrine over person, loading the language, sacred science, confession, demand for purity, mystical manipulation, and milieu (environment) control. They lived within the Islamic community in Hamburg, Germany and on their way to their mosque in the central train station area were confronted with the daily life of a multi-cultural society. Because of their ability to live in two contradictory worlds, to live as law-biding members of society until called upon by their leaders to commit ideologically motivated crimes, they have been called "sleeper agents." Their behavior was consistent with Lifton's (1986) concept of doubling.

Six and one half years earlier on March 20, 1995, another act of mass terrorism had taken place in Tokyo when members of the fanatical religious cult, Aum Shinrikyo, released sarin nerve gas on five subways. Lifton (1999) believes that Aum "may have been a kind of bell-weather, an indicator of future trends" (p.273) regarding terrorism. He writes:

> The report on the U.S. Senate's hearings on Aum Shinrikyo speaks of the cult as having crossed a threshold that rendered "the specter of terrorists groups using weapons of mass destruction" an actuality. In that report, Bruce Hoffman, a British authority on political violence, is quoted as referring to "the nightmare scenario that people have quietly talked about for years coming true" and "the cutting edge of high-tech terrorism for the year 2000 and beyond." (p. 273) Lifton (1999) is noted for applying psychological perspectives to historical problems. In his interviews with ten former Aum members, he found psychological parallels in "Jewish fundamentalists who encouraged the

> assassination of Israeli Prime Minister Yitzhak Rabin, in Palestinian Hamas suicide bombers, and in Hindu and Muslim fundamentalists who act violently on behalf of claims to ancient sacred places on the Indian subcontinent" (p. 4). Specifically addressing apocalyptic inclinations, he named several American groups which share similar views with Aum: "Charles Manson Family, Heaven's Gate, and Peoples Temple, as well as the Oklahoma City bombers, Aryan supremacists, and paramilitary survivalists on the radical right (p. 4)."

Although Aum is most noted for the sarin attack on the Tokyo subways, Lifton (1999) discovered that this relatively small cult had been involved in many other crimes and acts of terror aimed at initiating a global holocaust that would bring about Armageddon. Under the leadership of Asahara, Aum is estimated to have committed over 80 murders of individuals who interfered with the accomplishment of its goals. Over time, the religious cult had evolved into a military-type organization and began to produce and acquire weapons of mass destruction, including anthrax bacillus and botulinus toxin. Unlike the sarin attacks, attempts at using the biologicals were unsuccessful in causing harm to the people of Japan.

In his afterword for the German edition of *Destroying the World to Save It*, Lifton (2000) describes other disturbing activities of Aum associated with findings against Asahara and other high-ranking members of the group when they were tried for their crimes. In February and March 2000, the Japanese society was shocked by the news that Aum, known for its successful computer business had, under the cover of different hardware and software companies, installed IT-Technology for the governmental departments of Building, Mail/Post, Telecommunication and Education. Other customers of these companies were the Japanese Department of Defense and the Metropolitan Police of Tokyo. Ironically, this enabled Aum to control plans for the patrol cars which were supposed to observe its own group members. The Japanese press called this "From Sarin to Software" (p. 366), pointing out the threat of a cyber-attack, especially since the Japanese telecommunication company NTT was among Aum's customers.

The cult's acquisition and manufacture of weapons including rifles and AK-74 machine guns did not seem "religiously meaningful" to at least one of its members who worked in what was called the "metal factory":

> The key word for me was *salvation*, saving myself and saving others as well. My image of salvation and of the things that I would do as a renunciant was of performing spiritual practices, guiding others, translating sacred texts. But I was in an isolated location, operating the machine. The word *salvation* did not fit the work of manufacturing things. (Lifton, 1999, pp. 192–193) Relevant to

the example given above of Nazis who committed IMC, Lifton (1999) compares Aum's use of medical doctors with the Nazi's use of physicians to "replace healing with killing in the service of a movement or cause" (p. 136). He writes:

> There are, of course, enormous differences between a national political movement and a small antigovernment religious cult, though the Nazis were cultic in function, drew heavily upon apocalyptic religious symbolism, and wallowed in mystical experience, while Aum became highly politicized and militarized in pursuit of secular as well as spiritual goals. What Aum and the Nazis particularly shared, however, was the frequent tendency of despotic and totalistic groups to seize upon the shamanistic legacy of the physician, a legacy that includes not only the "white magic" of healing but also the "black magic" of killing. For doctors deal regularly with death and can easily be viewed—by despotic regimes and by themselves—as powerful manipulators of life and death, as gatekeepers between this world and the next. (p. 137) Hayashi, a cardiac surgeon whom Lifton (1999) interviewed, said he had joined Aum because "I wanted to help people" (p. 143) and brought his medical knowledge to further the mission of Aum. Lifton thinks this doctor may have been influenced by the work of the prominent Canadian psychiatrist, Ewen Cameron, whose mind control experimentation projects were funded by CIA. The Aum doctor used several procedures on his patients within the cult that Cameron had been known to use at Allan Memorial Institute in Montreal including electroshock to erase memories and an indoctrination technique similar to Cameron's psychic driving in which "a patient had to listen endlessly—sometimes even while asleep—to tape recordings of himself saying words thought to relate to a basic conflict, and similarly to the interpretations of the therapist" (p. 147). Both electroshock and psychic driving were reported by some of the participants on the EAS who said they had been used in government-sponsored mind control experiments (EAS Team, 2008).

When Hayashi went on trial because of his role in sarin attacks, he testified that he had been a reluctant participant, and that his guru had forced him to murder to keep him silent and to increase his complicity in Aum's criminal acts. This is consistent with the tactics used by other cults to keep members under complete control.

Perlmutter (2004) also sees connections between domestic and international terrorist groups. Through her list of "Recent Trends in Domestic Terrorism," she offers a possible direct connection of satanic cults with Islamic terrorists:

The merging of White Supremacy with Satanism and Paganism (racist Odinist and others).

Many of the original leaders of important groups have recently retired or died and the next generation has taken over and is beginning to implement more dangerous ideas and programs.

There have been recent attempts to organize all of the white supremacy groups under one umbrella organization similar to al-Qaeda.

White Supremacists are publicly sympathizing with Islamic terrorists and are reaching out to gain support for each other to overthrow the U.S. government and annihilate Jews. Their current philosophy is “the enemy of my enemy is my friend.”(p. 77)

In a similar vein, Lifton (1999) warns, “Just as we now take for granted the interconnectedness of the global economic system, so must we learn to do the same for the growing global system of apocalyptic violence. Outbreaks anywhere reverberate everywhere” (p. 4).

Implications

Torture, murder, and trauma-based mind control procedures are common practices in groups—large or small, international or local—who justify these horrific acts in allegiance to an ideology. Crimes committed in the name of some “greater good or evil” or “some greater god or devil” are a threat to the view of a safe world. Perhaps this is the primary reason that the reality of ritual abuse is a controversial topic in the mental health and law enforcement fields.

When working with survivors, therapists frequently hear two questions from clients who are struggling with the mental, physical, and emotional aftereffects of ritual abuse: “Do you believe me?” and “Why did they do this to me?” By incorporating the concept of IMC into their frameworks of treatment, therapists may have less difficulty accepting the reality that such atrocities do occur and thereby help their clients develop an understanding of the ideological aspects of ritual violence in terms of (1) their identification to individual perpetrators and groups, i. e., Stockholm Syndrome, and (2) their needs to find some meaning in suffering.

For persons who are charged with investigating crimes that have satanic or other religious or political trappings, the ideological issues need to be amplified. An understanding of the motivation and driving forces of persons who are deeply convinced that they are doing the right thing, justified by “some higher” meaning, is imperative if those who commit IMC are to be brought to justice.

It is my hope that readers of this chapter, especially professionals in the mental health and law enforcement fields, have been challenged to look at the controversial issues surrounding the phenomenon of ritual abuse with new perspectives. Although freedom of religion may be protected by the constitution of one's country, crimes against humanity are not.

I would like to acknowledge the contribution of some colleagues and friends, in particular Wanda Karriker, Ph. D., whose enthusiastic support was instrumental to the conclusion of this article. She once wrote:

> Evil has survived human history. We can't stop it, but we can recognize and respond to it on different levels. As we sweep out closets in the far corners of the world that are stuffed with profits made from the exploitation of women and children, filled with the DNA of transgenerational abuse, and smudged with the fingerprints of perverted power, I trust that we can offer sympathy and empathy and safety to all unwitting initiates into organized evil—those who have been too frightened to tell and those who have been tormented and discredited for breaking the silence."(W. Karriker, personal communication on private online study group, November 1, 2001) References

American Psychiatric Association. (1994). *Diagnostic and statistical manual of mental disorders* (4th ed.). Washington, DC: Author.

BBC News. (2001, December 21). Torso murder reward offered. Online at: http://news.bbc.co.uk/1/hi/england/1723795.stm

BBC News. (2002, January 29). Thames torso 'was human sacrifice'. Online at: http://news.bbc.co.uk/1/hi/england/1788452.stm

BBC News: (2002, April 19). Mandela makes Thames torso appeal. Online at: http://news.bbc.co.uk/1/hi/england/1938580.stm

BBC News (2004, December 21). Met defends satanic abuse course. Online at: http://news.bbc.co.uk/1/hi/england/london/4114227.stm

BBC News (2006, December 12). 'Adam torso' remains are buried. Online at: http://news.bbc.co.uk/1/hi/england/6169845.stm

Becker, Th. (1999, May). *Ritual abuse: A European cross-country perspective.* Plenary presentation at the ISSD Spring Conference "The Spectrum of Dissociation," Manchester, UK. Transcript available at www.BeckerTho.de.

Becker, Th. & Froehling, U. (1998). Handout: Rituelle Gewalt (*Ritual Violence*). Kult-und Ritual-Trauma-Institut. Lueneburg.

Becker, Th., Karriker, W., Overkamp, B., & Rutz, C. (in press). The extreme abuse survey: Preliminary findings regarding dissociative identity disorder. In A. Sachs & G. Galton (Eds.), *Forensic aspects of dissociative identity disorder.* London: Karnac.

Belluck, P. (1997, Nov. 6). ‘Memory’ therapy leads to a lawsuit and big settlement. New York Times. Online at: http://query.nytimes.com/gst/fullpage.html?res=9B04E7D91F30F935A35752C1A961958260&scp=2&sq=Burgus&st=nyt

Bennetts, L. (1993, June). Nightmares on Main Street. *Vanity Fair*, 42–62.

Burgus, P. (1997, January 17). Deposition of Patricia Burgus in Michael P. Burgus and John P. Burgus, Minors; Michael F. Burgus, Patricia Burgus vs. Rush-Presbyterian-St. Luke’s Medical Center, Dr. Elva Poznanski and Bennett Braun, M.D., et al., p. 912.

Coleman, J. (1999, May). *Ritual abuse: A European cross-country perspective.* Plenary presentation at the ISSD Spring Conference “The Spectrum of Dissociation,” Manchester, UK. Transcript available at www.BeckerTho.de.

Contenta, S. (2003, August 2). Boy’s murder linked to child trafficking. Toronto Star. Online at: http://www.religionnewsblog.com/3906/the-groundbreaking-hunt-for-adams-killers

Cowan, R. 2004, July 7). Trafficker may be key to torso in Thames. The Guardian. Online at: http://www.guardian.co.uk/crime/article/0,2763,1255623,00.html

Deutscher Bundestag—Referat Oeffentlichkeitsarbeit (Ed), (1998). Final Report of the Enquete-Commission on So-called Sects and Psychogroups: New Religious and Ideological Communities and Psychogroups in the Federal Republic of Germany. Bonn, Germany.

Lanning K. (1992). A law-enforcement perspective on allegations of ritual abuse. In D. K. Sakheim & S. E. Devine (Eds.), *Out of darkness: Exploring Satanism and ritual abuse*. (pp. 109–146). New York: Lexington Books.

Lifton, R. J. (1961). *Thought reform and the psychology of totalism: A study of “brainwashing” in China*. London: W.W. Norton.

Lifton, R. J. (1986). *The Nazi doctors: Medical killing and the psychology of genocide*. New York: Basic Books.

Lifton, R. J. (1999). *Destroying the world to wave it: Aum Shinrikyo, apocalyptic violence, and the new global terrorism*. New York: Metropolitan Books.

Lifton, R. J. (2000). Terror fuer die Unsterblichkeit—Erloesungssekten proben den Weltuntergang. (German Edition of *Destroying the World to Save It).* Muenchen/Wien: Carl Hanser.

McVeigh, K. & Muir, H. (2007. February 19). Laying Adam to rest: science offers hope in ritual murder case. The Guardian. Online at: http://www.guardian.co.uk/uk_news/story/0,,2016123,00.html

Noblitt, J. R. & Perskin, P. S. (Eds). (2000). *Cult and ritual abuse: Its history, anthropology, and recent discovery in contemporary America* (rev. ed.). Westport, CT: Praeger.

Perlmutter, D. (2004). *Investigating religious terrorism and ritualistic crimes.* Boca Raton: CRC-Press.

Rutz, C. (2001). *A nation betrayed: The chilling true story of secret Cold War experiments performed on our children and other innocent people.* Grass Lake, MI: Fidelity Publishing.

Rutz, C., Becker, Th., Overkamp, B., & Karriker, W. (2008). Exploring commonalities reported by adult survivors of extreme abuse: Preliminary empirical findings. In R. Noblitt & P. P. Noblitt (Eds.), *Ritual abuse in the twenty-first century: Psychological, forensic, social, and political considerations* (chapter 3). Bandon, OR: Robert D. Reed Publishers.

Rutz, C. (2007, August). *The world will know: Results of the 2007 International Survey for Adult Survivors of Extreme Abuse.* Paper presented at The Tenth Annual Ritual Abuse, Secretive Organizations and Mind

Control Conference, Windsor Locks, CT. Neil Brick, Moderator. Online at http://members.aol.com/smartnews/cr07.htm

Smith, M. (1998, October 9). Former patient can't attribute false memories to therapy. Houston Chronicle. Online at: http://www.chron.com/CDA/archives/archive.mpl?id=1998_3088693

United States of American v. Judith A. Peterson, Ph.D.; Richard E. Seward, M.D.; George Jerry Mueck; Gloria Keraga, M.D.; Sylvia Davis, M.S.W. (1997, October 29). Indictment. U.S. District Court, Southern District of Texas, No. H-97-237.

Notes

[1] German study includes both SRA and Gnostic Groups under "Destructive Cults." Most cases are from a satanic background but there are some from Gnostic-occult groups.

CHAPTER 9

Terrorism is the Ritual Abuse of the Twenty-First Century

Frances R. Yoeli and Tessa Prattos

Introduction

As the 20th century rolled over into the 21st, the world worried about a computer virus designed to devastate the high tech industry. What the world did not suspect was that it would be an event of such magnitude that it would transform the power balance. While computer experts dabbled in how to fix things, Osama Bin Laden created a complex assault on the world ‘in the name of.’ This was to become the strategic ritual abuse of society of the 21st century. A massive army of servants [serv-(ing) ants]worked over an extended period of time ‘in the name of’ and became the abusers. They functioned in trance states, pawns of the leadership. Their minds were controlled.

It is said that they asked no questions and did as they were told, ‘in the name of.’ And they were instructed or programmed to become gentle people and pilots whose minds and behavior were controlled by Osama ‘in the name of.’ And they were called Al Qaeda, and they did as they were told. And then one day they were told to take their planes and perpetrate the most massive terrorist attack of modern times upon the heart and soul of the world ‘in the name of.’

Stern (2003) explains how opportunistic leaders head terrorist organizations using religion to both motivate and justify and at the same time recruit and enthuse the naïve, and the disenfranchised. She describes the moral fervor, and the transformation of this ‘enthusiasm’ into ‘sophisticated organizations’ seeking money, control, power and international attention. The recruited are indoctrinated and come to believe that their every move is now in the name of ‘God’ while the leaders work towards their goals in the name of ‘money, control, power, and attention.’

Thus, Osama’s systematic, ceremonious mind control over his servants became violent, systematic, ceremonious mind control, abuse of society and of the masses. The world learned the true meaning of (ritual-repetitive)abuse in the form of terrorism and saw the effects of ritual abuse on one and all, via the television, live. Long ago live television encouraged the viewing world to believe that there is right and wrong, good and evil, and that there was a superman who fought the evil in the world in the name of ‘truth, justice and the American-(democratic way) for all.’

In this chapter the following phenomena are being considered. The phenomena of how the elements of ritual abuse, cult and mind control become part of the almost daily routine of western societies; the phenomena of how the ritual abuse, cult and mind control have become the modus vivendi for achieving power and control over the masses; and finally, the phenomena of how this use of the same

terrorizing tactics as in ritual and cult abuse leads to dissociative behavior in the individual and becomes globalized, achieving subtle control over masses of people. Defense mechanisms such as denial, dissociation, depression, and anxiety from the 'overwhelm' appear more frequently and are seen in subtle changes in behaviors.

Systematic threats of terrorist attacks on the world's population are for the purpose of mind control. The media report that there are threats and the alerts go to code yellow, orange and red. The audience has no way of knowing what is real. The result is that at the microcosmic level, a fear of annihilation is activated and looms in the heart and soul of each person. The masses react with their own color codes of alert and differing stress levels. This is what can be considered the societal ritual abuse of the 21st century. The precedent to this kind of behaviour in modern times comes from the 1950's and followed through till the 21st century. The threat of nuclear bombs and the experience of the bombing of Hiroshima that closed the Second World War were frightening enough to shake the very foundations of psychological health (Lifton, 1968). Many found psychic numbing as their resource or defense. Their minds were weakened, or deprived of the power of feeling or moving (Neufeldt and Guralnik, 1997). Gregory (2003) wrote that both individually and collectively people withdrew their minds from the contemplation of the awesome possibilities of a nuclear holocaust. Instead, they concentrated as best they could, on other, more pleasant, aspects of living. Resistance would have been futile anyway. The bomb meant, everyone knew, that running away was impossible if dropped nearby. Psychic numbing, the ostrich-like, head-in-the-sand attitude, was certainly a strong part of the means that people used to handle their anxieties (Zur, 1990). This 'dread' (Singer, 1994) that leads to psychic numbing in the form of accommodation, became a global means for the 'population' to accept and deny the overwhelming threat of annihilation (Gregory, 2003).

Psychic numbing is a common symptom of post-traumatic stress disorder (PTSD). This is the emotional anaesthesia which enables or provides detachment from the potential dangers of the outside world. (WorldNow, 2004). Shutting down is a means for an individual to compensate for intrusive thoughts, memories, or feelings of the trauma by becoming numb to internal or external stimuli (Sidran Foundation, 2000).

The term psychic numbing was first used by Robert Jay Lifton (1982), and is freely applied in many situations to describe the way people avoid facing up to difficult issues. Lifton wrote that psychic numbing builds on well-known defense mechanisms, such as repression, denial, and projection, to create an exclusion of feeling and to disconnect. This is one of the processes by which it is possible to dissociate from the bombardment of "the tele-visual culture and media-manipulated images" (Shor, 2002).

The media under the guise of freedom of press, (i.e., you have a right to know and know you will) provide ‘breaking news’ hot off the press keeping the world attuned by being ‘there’ when it happens. The media arrive on the scenes of terrorism so quickly that it seems as if terrorists plan attacks close to press offices. The use of the media in this way creates a situation where while the media are obligated to report the news, they end up as servants to the terrorists and abusers.

The media, systematically and ceremoniously and ritualistically details live and in color the world’s worst events.

Tension builds and anxiety levels rise in the population watching the reports repeatedly. This tension and anxiety is partner to the fear of annihilation. World events become part of our lives, homes and families. This is the aftermath and effect of the media’s reporting of these systematic, ritualistic, ceremonial and violent threats to the society (Rothschild, 2001; Bunney, 2004).

Comprehension of the implications of what the media present is impossible, as the ‘seeing’ becomes so overwhelming that the mind is flooded. “Lack of accurate information, conflicting information, obfuscation and confusion by mass media and those who drive the media and the passage of time” (Gregory, 2003) serve to lull the public into seeing the evils of the world as normal. They have become entranced into believing ‘such is life.’

New euphemisms enter daily communications and carry the messages of the stage and phase of denial and dissociation. One example is ‘it’s a waste of time’ to look for anything else. The meta-message is to stay safe, stay home, stay alive and enjoy what you have. Another new phrase that has become part of the youth genre and even adopted readily by adults is—‘what you have is the end of the road,’ meaning this is the best it gets. The subtle implication is, ‘appreciate what you have here and don’t go down another path that may be less secure.’

As the media draw attention to the daily political decisions, world events and disasters the viewer may have a sense of intimidation or dimunization. In light of the major world disasters and acts of terrorism, the individual often feels irrelevant, inadequate, inconsequential and incompetent. Drawing on Bunney’s descriptions (2004) and personal clinical, anecdotal and empirical observations, the effects of the media are clear. The pain, the shock, the ‘overwhelm’ leads to isolation in light of the horror of the events played out on one’s senses. Some turn inward, and pretend the ‘other’ environment does not exist. Others turn outward toward negative reckless behaviors. There appears to be a full gamut of negative behavior patterns.

Many of these behavior patterns are laced with anxiety resulting from the interaction with the media. Dissociation from global and social events is present in

almost all the various changes in behavior patterns. That is the result of the psychic numbing.

Emotional survival depends on the ability to differentiate oneself from the world and current events. Should it be one's turn to feel the impact on a personal level each will need to find the ability to cope and will do so in a different way. The underlying fear is that they will have to cope and might not be able to cope and the underlying threat is death. The dissociation is an energy saver.

The ripple effect of traumatic events as conceptualized by the distance from the trauma—which can be visualized in terms of concentric circles where the event is in the center of the primary circle is huge. The effect on viewers of the media following a disaster is represented by the 8th circle of distance from the impact of the event (van Leeuwen & ben Yochanan, 1996).

This media presentation of disaster of any kind often leads to the subjugation into compliance with the enemy and with the enemies' belief or passive or aggressive behavior patterns as a means of self defense against what threatens 'overwhelm.' The effect of 'overwhelm' is what is considered here to be the subtle and not so subtle 'societal ritual abuse.'

The 'overwhelm' affects the human psyche of the individual, the family and in particular the children, the society, the country and the world. The media report it all: man made disasters, terrorism, accidents, epidemics and natural disasters. This is perhaps the fastest and most efficient vehicle for mind controlling ritual abuse of society available in the 21st century.

Some of us remember the early 20th century movies about the superheroes. Knowing, back then, that in the end, 'right' would triumph, we watched with awe and wonder how the enemies of justice, peace and freedom took over the wavelengths of the world and threatened entire populations with destruction and havoc (a predilection and forerunner to the 'big brother is watching you' concept as presented in Orwell's book 1984 (Orwell, 1949) and to the current state of terrorist activities). The audiences could then fantasize that Superman, Spiderman, and other super strong figures became imagined resources who might come to our rescue when needed. Superman's words still live on, for many of us, in our minds and memory, 'in the name of'… "Truth, justice, and the American way…" Nonetheless, the fear and anxiety live on untended and deeply embedded within our hearts and souls. The clear memory of the anti-heroes' mind controlling methods and messages remains in our memories.

Terrorism and Ritual Abuse: Defining Terms

There does not seem to be a definition that encompasses both terrorism and ritual abuse as a factor in the theoretical development of what is here described and conceived as Societal Ritual Abuse. Acts that are deemed terrorism or ritually abusive by some may be considered justifiable actions or culturally accepted forms of behavior by others. So long as there are diverse opinions, a universally accepted definition of terrorism cannot be agreed upon (Ganor, 2001), neither is there one for ritual abuse. Some countries and cultures condemn acts of terrorism and ritual abuse as criminality of the worst kind, while others condone and justify the abusive actions.

When repetitive terrorist acts occur in western democratic societies, these events have the quality of and are a form of ritual abuse. The terrorists' actions are unannounced. For the most part they have a ritualistic and religious ideology and are unpredictable. This form of terrorism—ritual abuse impacts society in the same way as the one-on-one ritual abuse affects the family, the individual and the society around them. It has a ripple effect that extends across the globe. This is societal ritual abuse of the 21st century.

Terrorism is Categorized as a Cult

Shortly after the World Trade Center and the Pentagon terrorist attacks on 9/11, panelists at a convention session on hatred asked the American Psychological Association to form a task force to investigate mind control among destructive cults. From there, the new category of the 'cult of terrorism' was derived. Terrorist organizations are now being equated with destructive cults (Dittman, 2002; FACTnet. 2001, 2004).

Hassan (2001) concludes that the terrorism as of 9/11 meets the cult definition criteria. The following criteria demonstrate the reason for inclusion into the cult category: terrorist groups, like cults, are the most destructive visible examples of the abuse and use of mind control and cult control techniques; secondly, the terrorist organizations have studied and used the same techniques to indoctrinate and use the recruited members to commit shocking and horrific acts of terrorism. As within any cult it is not the agenda that is the motivation of the terrorist organizations that makes it cult like, but rather it is the means of achieving this agenda through the implanting of rationalizations and values in the minds of the active terrorist pawns; thirdly and finally, an effective means to counter the terrorism has to come from understanding the programming and the techniques used to induct the terrorists into accepting that their actions are right and into performing their assignments without question.

The Cult of Terrorism

A destructive cult may be defined as a closed system or group whose followers have been recruited deceptively and retained through the use of manipulative techniques of thought reform and mind control [undue influence] (Davis, 1996).

The cult aspect of the terrorism can be approached in terms of the element of mind control which is a process of either unconscious or intentional change of an individual's behavior, thought, and emotional patterns through subtle, deceptive, and damaging means by unethical spiritual leaders. The leadership is all-powerful, the ideology is totalistic, and the will of the individual is subordinate to the will of the group. The destructive cult sets itself above society by creating its own values with little or no regard for society's ethics or morals (Martinez, 2004).

PageWise, (2002) suggests conceptualizing terrorism as a synthesis of war and theatre, a dramatization of the most proscribed kind of violence is perpetrated on innocent victims played before an audience in the hope of creating a mood of fear for political purposes. Jenkins (2004) is adament about defining terrorism according to the quality of the act itself–involving violence or threat of violence-, not according to the identity of the perpetrators or the nature of their cause. Whereas the authors consider any form of abuse as an act of violence, terrorism on a global scale in any form must be considered abuse.

Terrorism takes many different forms—from the computer hacker to the suicide bomber. The terrorism related to in this chapter is any terrorizing action perpetrated on innocent others outside the rules [of war], 'in the name of' [control and power], religious and ideological opposition, and is designed to control the mind of the individual and the society. Terrorism is formatted in an environment that has similar elements to what Stark and Bainbridge (1979), define as a cult; evolutionary religious movements with no parent religion and which create a high state of conflict and tension with their surrounding socio-cultural environment.

Pape (2003) has defined three different types of terrorist group action in terms of their purpose, intent and level of danger. Demonstrative terrorism designed to gain recognition while avoiding serious harm; destructive terrorism intended to aggressively coerce while mobilizing support, repressing the victims and demanding sympathy for the cause; and lastly suicide terrorism intended to coerce, while planning the death of the perpetrator and the victims even at the risk of loss of support. This is the most voluble statement of discontent of the 21st century. This new trend of terrorism is conceptualized here as 'the repetitive- ritual abuse' of society of the 21st century.

Elements of the Terrorist Act:

A terrorist act is premeditated, planned in advance and is not impulsive.

The goals of the attack are to achieve political concessions through coercion.

The terrorist act is focused on civilians rather than military targets.

The terrorists are sub nationals and for the most part housed within states or countries but are not necessarily or openly supported by them. And finally

The intent of these attacks is to gain the attention of the survivors for support and/or to maintain the level of fear these attacks achieve in the aftermath. (Ganor, 2002; Pape, 2003; Schweitzer, 2000)

Briefly stated, the crucial components of terrorism are the same as in abusive cults and involve actions of violence an audience, the creation of a mood of fear, innocent victims, and political motives or goals (PageWise, 2002). Bretton-Granatoor (1997) describes cults as being those that commonly recruit new members and engage in fundraising activities without fully disclosing the use of mind-controlling techniques or the real nature of the organization. They often hide behind various front groups. They are frequently secretive or vague with regard to the true nature of their beliefs and activities. They generally lie in order to get members to join and stay.

Terrorism is Mass Societal Ritual Abuse

There are common factors present in cults, terrorism, and ritual abuse. Schmid and Jongman (1988) rank the elements as they appear in terrorist acts in this way: violence, force, politics, fear-terror, threats, psychological effects and anticipated reactions, targets and victim issues, the intentionality, whether systematic, planned or organized and finally methods of combat, strategy and tactics.

Ritual abuse came to world attention when satanic brotherhoods and cult-like groups became more visible allowing the world to see their approach. What the world saw were the tactics of mind control, ritual and sexual abuse, torture and other actions performed ‘in the name of’ (Satanic) power and control. Ritual abuse is: psychological, sexual, and/or physical assault on another willing or unwilling person, committed by one or more people on one or more persons who have as their primary motives a prescribed ritual, a specific goal and the desire to satisfy a perceived need. Noblitt and Perskin (2000) revised the many different definitions and devised a more succinct and inclusive definition of ritual abuse: “any deliberate abuse which threatens death and is carried out in a ceremonial or circumscribed manner in order to create or manipulate the mind to dissociate into different parts” (pp. 47–48).

While the lone ritual abuser perpetrates on one person at a time, the societal ritual abuser uses a messenger as a representative of the organization and as a tool of the ultimate goal—to abuse as many as possible for power and control. While the intentions are somewhat different, the actions are similar. Both enlist mind control techniques and impose their will and power over the other and others. Individual perpetrators form a coalition with the one against the others. Mass societal abusers openly abuse as many of the others as possible. The essence of mass societal ritual abuse is any violent and aggressive act designed to impact and impart a memory filled with terror and threat for a specific goal against many.

The word 'ritual' as used in the concept of societal abuse is defined here to mean an inflexible, stylized, and repetitive sequence of actions. The ritually repetitive inflexible stylized actions are the essence of what may be called 'the dynamics of urban terrorism' (Salwa, personal communication) or more simply stated, societal ritual abuse.

Rituals are prompted by religious belief, fervor or extremism. The general purpose of rituals is to express some fundamental truth or meaning, evoke spiritual, numinous emotional responses from participants, and/or engage a group of people in unified action to strengthen their communal bonds (Wikipedia, 2004). The word ritual, when used as an adjective, relates to the noun 'rite,' as in rite of passage. A ritual is a formalized, predetermined set of symbolic actions generally performed in a particular environment at a regular, recurring interval. The set of actions that comprise a ritual often include, but are not limited to, such things as recitation, singing, group processions, repetitive dance, manipulation of sacred objects, etc. Human sacrifice was practiced in many ancient cultures. Victims were ritually killed in a manner that was supposed to please or appease gods or spirits. On very rare occasions human sacrifices still occur today (WordiQ, 2004).

A ritual act has symbolic power and affects the ritualizer, and ripples through family, community, and society. Rituals are born out of idiosyncratic religious or cultural value systems and basically have no political aspirations. There are exceptions where some rituals have been claimed to be the source of assassinations as in the assassination of Yitzchak Rabin in 1995 (Horovitz, 2004).

According to the newspaper reports, a group of rabbis worked the ritual of the Pulsa De Nura with the intent of removing Rabin from office by death (Brook, 1998). The ritual is performed through the energy focused intent of the group as they enter the secret pathways of the Kabbalah. The Kabbalah is a body of mystical Jewish teachings based on an interpretation of hidden meanings in the Hebrew Scriptures. Rituals are immutable to reason, negotiation, or satisfaction.

Abuse we herein define as any form of violent mistreatment (verbal, psychological, emotional, or spiritual) of a person or animal and the illegal,

improper, or harmful use of something or an illegal or harmful or improper practice.

All three groups, terrorists, cultists and ritual abusers have at one time, to one degree or another engaged in the following illegal and unethical practices: child abuse, neglect and death; illegal and fraudulent immigration; drug dealing; smuggling money, cars, guns, gems; fraud and deceit in recruiting, business, financial records, and fund raising; theft; harassment of families and former members with threats, lawsuits and foul play; stockpiling and smuggling weapons and ammunition; beatings; sexual abuse and prostitution; kidnapping; murder; attempted murder; and psychological and emotional damage (Zimbardo, 1997).

The combination of cult elements mixed with terrorist elements is a potent and fear filling aspect of the 21st century. A generation or more ago Burgess (1963) predicted in his novel a Clockwork Orange the development of a strong and aversive negative segment of society. This prediction seems to have fulfilled itself in the 21st century which has given birth to the cult of terrorism which perpetrates Societal Ritual Abuse on mankind.

The motivating factors behind terrorism vary and are numerous. For the most part terrorism uses violence to create a dramatic effect. The violence is a means towards political changes. By demonstrating the coercive power of violence to the masses, mass trauma becomes one means of gaining power and control over much of the society.

Terror… Trauma… The Ongoing Drama

The word trauma is defined in varying ways. The following definition is used in this chapter (Yoeli & Prattos, 2002). Trauma is:

The perception of an event,

As it is experienced by the individual,

As a realistic or interpreted threat to ones life;

Often accompanied by a sense of helplessness and overwhelming anxiety;

And sequentially leading to the development of post-traumatic stress disorder with or without dissociation;

Irrespective of whether there was active involvement in the sudden, unexpected events, and regardless of realistic magnitude of the event.

The terror, the trauma and the ongoing effect it has on persons witnessing and/or experiencing the ‘event’ are the drama. This drama consists of repetitive,

continuous events perceived as life threatening, and resulting in multifaceted symptoms, varying from simple anxiety to full blown PTSD.

Drama is the essence of the trauma and is Societal Ritual Abuse. By definition terrorism in the form of Societal Ritual Abuse contains acts of violence. Violence is the essence of trauma.

The trauma of violence comes in many forms of abuse. Abuse is the improper use of power by one person to the detriment of another and can occur anywhere. Terrorism is violent abuse in all forms; psychological, physical, sexual, neglect and acts of omission, discrimination, as well as financial or material abuse.

Coping with constant anxiety and fear of violent abuse is exhausting, and defense mechanisms come into play. Denial is one means of releasing the tension. Depression, depersonalization, derealization and dissociation often follow the repression, suppression, and subjugation effects of the violence of terrorist trauma. These effects are often experienced in the form of trance states or splitting of parts of the person's awareness, the latter being an extreme defense mechanism of the brain. These enhance the power and control of the abuser and leader. The promotion of repression, suppression and subjugation is an integral part of terrorist (and abuser) strategy.

A trance state is one of the symptoms of PTS/D. Other symptoms of PTSD resulting from acts of violence are hyper-vigilance, constant alert, and fear which are the core elements of dissociation. A society coerced into trance and dissociative states resulting from PTS/D is malleable in the hands of the terrorists and abusers.

The Recipe for Mass Societal Ritual Abuse

On a very creative website (Herasimchuk, 2004), the following recipe was found which artistically describes in a simple format how the 'one' affects the whole.

Step 1

One zealot starts the process. He is a fanatic and preaches a 'way,' his own way, to solve 'problems.' Terror, violence, and murder are his 'way.' This reminds the world of the Swiftian "Modest Proposal,"—"to eat or kill the children" (Swift, 1973 ed). Swift's scheme was designed to solve both the poverty issue and population growth problem of his time. This is an interesting yet horrifying way to solve a political problem. Modern day one-on-one ritual abuse is no less horrific and is kin to the preaching of the 'Way.' This lone zealot will use ritual abuse over an extended period of time to gain power and control. The (rituals) abuse (are) is repeated and the physical abuse is severe, sometimes including torture and killing.

The sexual abuse is usually painful, sadistic, and humiliating, intended as a means of gaining dominance over the victim. The psychological abuse is devastating. Both during and after the abuse, most victims are in a state of terror, mind control, and dissociation (Los Angeles County Commission For Women, 1991).

Step 2

This same zealot has convinced a small but growing group of the rightness of his terms of the creation of violent criminals. The nature versus nurture dichotomy is no longer sufficient. Athens' (1992) theory considers the more holistic approach which takes into account the complex and continuous interactions between the individual and the environment and the interaction that leads to the behavior pattern. Leaders of terrorist groups of any kind work to convince and subjugate the neophants, creating a 'we'…'they' system of good and evil.

Step 3

The Means

Converts murder a large group of innocent people to strike fear and emphasize that there is a 'way.' The population at large has been drawn into the ideology of the 'way.' Most have become at least a little anxious. Others have listened to the preaching of the converts about 'the way.' More have been convinced of the 'way.' Many use the methods of striking fear and murdering to control the population at large. Their own safety lies in supporting the leader, the zealot.

By purposefully developing trance and dissociative states, terrorism controls the minds and focus of much of the world's population. This is like the ritual abuse on one person whose mind becomes controlled by the abuser. Similarly, the zealot gains control over his converts. Terrorism maintains that control through threats of annihilation. As mentioned above, ritual abuse contains the element of deliberate mind control through the intensive bombardment of the senses. When the senses are overwhelmed and have no recovery time the individual begins a dissociative process. Trance states and dissociation are some means by which an individual is able to survive the threat of annihilation.

Step 4

That zealot has become the leader of an organization. His 'way' is 'the way.' Power and control, coercion of the masses, world influence—change is the goal today. And the power-hungry, divisive leaders of victimized countries under the influence of the zealot, engage in a war against others—'any' others and the result

is the death of many innocent people. And yet the religious zealot remains ‘a leader at large’ and the act is in ‘the name of.’

The leaders of terrorism deliberately threaten mass annihilations. Governmental acts of retaliation are limited where there are unknown threats. Governments prepare for a war with an enemy they have difficulty finding and defining while individuals fear for their lives and dissociate into denial. Mass societal ritual abuse is abuse in full force. The lone zealot’s hunger for power and control has enabled him become a ‘great’ leader, and a strategist of war tactics. The result is death in almost holocaustal numbers, fear in the hearts of the masses, and innocent people threatened to their core being.

War is devastating for everyone. Dehumanization of the innocent has become part of warfare. Shooting at everything that moves, including children, has become normative behavior. The message conveyed to the soldiers of today is ‘that it’s no tragedy to kill children and none of you (soldiers) is guilty.’ The childhood of tens of thousands of youngsters is being lived from one trauma to the next, from horror to horror. Even children have become a targeted part of the dehumanization campaign of war (Levy, 2004).

Survival requires the ability to adjust, habituate and accommodate (Flavell, 1977). Deceit is one means to do that. Afghanistan is an example of a need to find the means to survive under the decree of terrorist zealots to comply or die. Women were forced to wear the burka veil over their faces, which covered all but their eyes, as an act of submission and subjugation by the ‘leaders.’ Not all the women wanted to wear the burka. Not all women were willing to be forced and intimidated into wearing the burka. Many were defiant and deceptive and went ‘underground’ to hide their rebelliousness. There they took off their burka’s and even danced and played. Out on the streets and visible to the leaders they wore the mask of the burka pretending to accept the leader (LaCayo, 2001).

The duality was a means to dissociate from and to create a false front. Secure in one part of their mind that they could be who they are and want to be, to survive they demonstrated ‘good girl’ behavior. Their lives depended on that.

Living in a constant state of terror, anxiety and dread is debilitating and leads to desensitization where the horrors become ‘normalized’ and just another part of daily life. Depression, depersonalization, and derealization are accessed at the last stage of the peak anxiety. The zealot believes he is in control and has won.

Terrorism and Mind Control

The mind controlling element in terrorism needs to be addressed. Mind control is annihilation of the essence of the individual (Shengold, 1989). Terrorism does

not threaten to annihilate mankind per se. The idea behind terrorism is mind control through the annihilation of man's freedom and ability to think for himself and be. It is the murder of man's essence, being and soul. The lone ritual abuser controls the minds of his solitary and individual victims, while the terrorist controls the minds of the masses through societal ritual abuse.

Comprehending the massiveness of these issues and addressing them is essential for the stability of the world as we currently know it. Today's modernized society have their 'inalienable' rights of birth; the freedom to think, to question, to choose, to feel and to be themselves. And when those freedoms are stolen through victimization of the masses the balance of the world is endangered and the idea of global warming no longer refers to the weather.

The Circle and Cycle of Violence

Violence or the threat of violence where there is the capacity and the willingness to commit violence is endemic to terrorists and ritual abusers.

This is the primary factor that produces the terrorism that is the societal ritual abuse of the 21st century (PageWise, 2002).

The development of violent behavior patterns that are seen in cults, ritual abusers and terrorism has been studied by many different researchers. The theory that best answers the question as to why this violence appears and is acted upon comes from Athens (1992) book The Creation of Dangerous Violent Criminals in which he describes how the heinous criminal develops.

Athens' (1992) theory of violentization is one means to conceptualize a basis for understanding the development of violent behavior. It is one means to understand how terrorism becomes unleashed. Grossman (1995) also provides a similar theoretical understanding of how people are able to kill. Athens' violentization theory is an approach which conjoins and integrates the social and environmental experience with the interfamilial trans-generational issues (Hudson, 1999). The theoretical bases for explaining violent behaviors are found in bio-physiological and social environmental theories (Athens, 1992).

Bio-physiological Theory

Mednick (1977) studied the indices of the autonomic nervous system activities, i.e., galvanic skin response (GSR) of criminals and delinquents Mednick's theory claims that children unable to learn from punishment become dangerous violent criminals. The regulation of fear arousal is a function of the autonomic (sympathetic) nervous system. "In the initial stage of threat, a startle or alarm reaction is initiated, in which the sympathetic component of the autonomic

nervous system (ANS) is suddenly and significantly activated, resulting in increased heart rate, blood pressure, respiration, and muscle tone, as well as hypervigilance. Distress is expressed in crying and then screaming (Perry et al., 1995 as cited in Schore, 2001, p. 214).

It is the arousal and dissipation of fear which controls whether children can learn from punishment. Mednick's work has been supported by Porges' polyvagal theory (1997) about the affect regulation of the nervous system in the polyvagal theory of emotion which links the evolution of the autonomic nervous system to affective experience, emotional expression, vocal communication and contingent social behavior.

Behaviorally, this first stage is associated with immobilization behaviors. In animals, this system facilitates 'playing possum.' In humans it causes dissociative freeze states and other parasympathetic dissociative symptoms. This is the state of frozen terror. The second stage inhibits the primitive vagal system's influence on the gut, to foster mobilization behaviors necessary for 'fight or flight.' The third stage (ventral vagal complex) is unique to mammals and is characterized by a myelinated vagal system that can rapidly regulate cardiac output to foster engagement and disengagement with the environment, promoting calm and pro-social behavior (Porges, 1997; Bergman, personal communication, 2004; Schore, 2001; Siegel, 1999; Scaer, 2001; Nijenhuis et al., 1998, 2004; Perry, 1995). It appears that there are direct connections between infant post-traumatic stress disorder and child, adolescent, and adult stress disorders as Gurvitz et al. (2000) have reported. They also acknowledged that adult PTSD patients with neurological soft signs frequently report traumatic childhood events.

Social Environmental Theories and the Group

Social environmental theories are based on the idea that a subculture develops around a social problem requiring definition and change in social policy. Post (1990) adds that when an individual or group identifies a negative condition they seek others who think similarly and band together to right the wrong.

Wolfgang and Ferracuti (1967) developed the social environmental theory to explain dangerous violent criminals. They studied the differential rates of violent crimes in different social categories with particular interest in the criminal homicide. They theorized that societies have 'subcultures of violence' which include a system of norms that prescribe, demand and expect violent action and proscribe non-violent actions for settling arguments. Bandura (1996) says that moral disengagement evolves in the subculture of terrorist violence. He describes

the four mechanisms of moral disengagement as the insulation elements enabling dissociation from the consequences of heinous acts of violence.

The first is moral justification whereby the individual is able to justify his inhumanity by euphemistic labels or moral justification. The second technique is displacement of responsibility whereby ‘someone’ more important is responsible, and the individual is just a functionary. Cordes (1987) points out a third technique used to minimize or ignore the actual suffering of the victims, as a means of insulation against recognizing their own role in causing the other pain. The fourth technique (Bandura, 1996) is the dehumanization of victims. The victim is seen as less than as in Islamic groups, where the victim is the infidel. In this subculture violence is easily facilitated because aggression become justifiable, the party responsible for felt troubles comes from evil but our group is good. This norm puts the members of the sub-culture in daily conflict with conventional society. (Athens, 1992; Wolfgang and Ferracuti, 1967).

If violence is excusable “in the name of…” then, Bandura (1996) believes, that the precursor for terrorism is the moral disengagement of the terrorist from the action of inhumane and immoral conduct, is one of the binding elements of these groups, and provides the ‘acceptability’ for their actions. (See step 3 above.) Groups that are organized into cells and columns may be more capable of carrying out ruthless operations because of the potential for displacement of responsibility. The group must become the sole source of support and friendship. The sense of belonging, purpose, and identity is locked into the relationships within the group. For Volkan (2002) the solution to understanding the mind of terrorism is in the understanding of the psychology of large group identity.

Neither the bio-physiological nor the social environmental theories can stand alone in Athens’ Theory of Violentization.

Athens’ theory (1992), on why people become violent, developed over a period of 20 years of interviewing hundreds of violent convicts. The elements in his theory are easily extrapolated to provide a means to understand the phases involved in the evolution of modern day terrorism The concept put forth by Athens is that negative social experience, and inner experience during that negative social experience, has a four stage process which, when completed [and without exception] creates the violent format of terrorism where terrorists, societies, ritual abusers become capable of assault, rape, and murder of another human being (Athens, 1992).

DiIullio (2000) succinctly describes the Athens’ four stage violentization process: it begins with “brutalization”: a parent or other authority figure batters a child, allows the child, to witness him physically subjugate others, and then taunts the child into settling violently even minor playground disputes. Next is

“belligerency”: the scared youth placates the mentor-menace by threatening peers who give the slightest provocation. “Violent performances” follow: the terror-in-training wins bloody fights, smells fear in others, and likes the smell. Finally, there is “virulency”: the child-predator preaches to himself about the virtues of violence, and bonds socially only with others who share, or can be brutalized into sharing his savage-or-be-savaged worldview.”

Social Experience

Killing innocent people [in acts of terrorism] is heinous (Athens, 1992; Muzaffar, 2002). The violent criminal, and the terrorist, whether considered a freedom fighter, or a militant, by this assaultive action against innocent victims, become undifferentiated.

Athens (1992) quoting Dewey (1929) on the concept of social experience wrote that; … a social experience emerges from the special interaction that takes place between a human organism and his social environment during the process of living. This generates thoughts and emotions in the interaction between human beings. The essential element is that interaction of what is within the organic body and what lies outside in space and time (p.15).

Athens’ (1992) theory of violentization integrates the somatic experience to the social environment based on Dewey’s concept that the organic body and the social environment are indivisible. Careful study of social experiences is the key to discovery of the creation of dangerous and violent people. This is the basis of the Athens theoretical construct.

The violentization process begins with elements of child abuse. It is not the equivalent of child abuse or maltreatment or neglect. It is the first stage that leads to becoming “heinously violent.” Child abuse and maltreatment mostly leads to juvenile delinquency. Cruel treatment by others produces a long term and dramatic impact on the course of their lives, (Athens, 1992) but this alone does not necessarily create a violent heinous criminal. According to Athens, extremely violent people consciously construct violent plans of action before they commit violent criminal acts. This is the formula of terrorism as cult and ritual abuse of the 21st century. To become that heinous violent criminal all four stages need to be completed.

Role and Effect of Violence in Development

Literature has shown that there are three types of recognized violence which cause long lasting reactions and effects in children well into adulthood;

1. Child Maltreatment

Widom's (1989a, 1989b) data, for example, reveal that children with a documented history of childhood abuse and neglect, are at a greater risk for arrest for a violent crime, and are also at greater risk for earlier and more chronic involvement in criminal behavior. Children who suffer from childhood abuse and neglect are left with a sense of conflict, confusion and frustration. Thus, it is not surprising that adolescents, having encountered conflict, confusion, and frustration, often feel disoriented and anxious (Hunter, 1998). These youth are prime candidates for religious cult recruiters as well as for terrorist groups.

2. Inter-Parental and Interfamilial Violence

There is statistical evidence that indicates that exposure to violence is associated with later risk for psychological problems and for being abusive to others (Browne and Finkelhor, 1986; Rossman and Rosenberg, 1998; Kratcoski, 1985). Many children experience or observe violence within the confines of their own homes or within their own neighborhoods (Margolin and Gordis, 2000). The Pakistani conference on child abuse reports on their observations during visits made to fundamentalist Muslim homes: there was "slapping, striking, whipping and thrashing" of children, with constant shaming and humiliation, often the children were being told by their mothers that they are "cowards" if they don't hit others. Physical abuse, they said, of children is continuous (deMause, 2002; Mazharul, 1972).

Children's experiences with violence, either as victims or as witnesses, have been described as a public health problem of epidemic proportions (Glodich, 1998; Koop & Lundberg, 1992; Pynoos, 1993). Glazov, (2001) concurs with Widom (1989 a, b) that intra-familial issues of physical punishment, possible sexual abuse, parental violence, and negligence create a wounded child with a sense of emasculation and a rage reaction. It is not uncommon for these wounded children to seek out groups where 'violence' is accepted and encouraged, and at the other extreme these same people are targeted and recruited by cult organizations and abusively duped and used within the cult.

3. Community Violence

Herman (1997) reported less than 20% of the general population living under ongoing war circumstances, such as in Israel and Kosovo, suffer from PTSD. Laufer, (as cited in Alon, 2003) and Salman (2003) found from their respective studies that children in Palestine and Israel suffer PTSD in the range of 42%–60%. This is greater than the original estimate mentioned by Herman. More research is needed to demonstrate the devastating effect ongoing community violence has on all age groups.

Hendawi (2002) published a newspaper article on the effects on children growing up in what is more or less a war zone. He quotes the director of Gaza city's psychiatric hospital, psychiatrist Abdul-Rahman Bakr, "these children have no idea what a normal childhood is like." In Gaza, the pictures are of battle scenes and the aftermath. Children draw what they see, says Hendawi. Probably, one of the most devastating effects on children in war such as this is that the children have to face their own vulnerabilities as they bury friends and relatives.

The impact of violence exposure goes beyond emotional and behavioral disorders. It affects children's views of the world and of themselves, their ideas about the meaning and purpose of life, their expectations for future happiness (Margolin and Gordis, 2000).

The first three types of violence have demonstrated the emotional effects on the children. According to Perry et al. (1995) there are also bio-physiological reactions. The child is in a persistent state of fear which becomes a trait. This means that the child will very easily be moved from being mildly anxious to feeling threatened to being terrorized. Perry et al. (1995) demonstrate that the human infant's psychobiological response to trauma is comprised of two separate response patterns, hyperarousal and dissociation. In the long run, maladaptive, emotional, dissociation, behavioral and cognitive problems rooted in the original adaptive response to a traumatic event is what is observed in these children. Dissociation is the end result. When fear is dissociated it becomes impossible for the person's system to learn from punishment (Mednick, 1997) since not all of the system experiences the punishment.

The Future Impact of Societal Ritual Abuse

The fourth dimension: another aspect of family and socio-cultural dynamic is the trans generationalism. Kobrin, in collaboration with Schweitzer (as cited in Chesler, 2004), add a 4th dimension to the cycle that produces what Schweitzer (2001) has named the "human time bombs," that of sexual abuse and mutilation. Kobrin describes below the barbarous cultural background dimension of the suicide bombers: "family and clan dynamics in which children, both boys and girls, are routinely orally and anally raped by male relatives; infant males are sometimes sadistically over-stimulated by being masturbated; boys between the ages of 7–12 are publicly and traumatically circumcised (as cited in Chesler, 2004)."

Children raised in cults or brotherhoods where this similar behavior is experienced follow the same pattern of development. The end result for both groups is a willingness to perform, and perpetrate societal ritual abuse on large populations.

DeMause (2002) expands the perspective into the trans-generational effects of growing up in a violent environment. Reports about a recent survey of Palestinian students indicate that the sexual abuse of girls is far higher in Palestine than elsewhere (Haj-Yahia, 2001). These battered, often mutilated women in fundamentalist Muslim families and societies are less than ideal mothers and reflect their own miseries on the next generation. A culture, in which shame and honor play decisive roles, and in which the debasement of women is paramount, is able to produce a human bomb, says Kobrin. These women are treated very badly as they are considered the main source of that shame and dishonor (Azim, 2004). The female child in certain societies is often sexually traumatized by abuse or mutilation in the form of clitoridectomy and lives under the threat of death should any male other than her husband ever touch her, she will be killed along with the man or if the man is too powerful to kill, in place of him, so as to preserve the paternal and familial honor. Terrorism perpetrated by women as suicide bombers destroys images of women, distorts the concept of motherhood, and the shocking aspect ‘entrances’ or mesmerizes the society as the myths break down about how women are supposed to behave in these cultures—submissive, caring and in the background. It is this ‘entrancement’ that enables the dissociation.

The dissociative personality structure that comes about from the mutilation and abuse in these Islamic cultures is quite often permanently fragmented and dominated by alters. These alters switch in and out of the ‘adult’ personality (deMause, 2002). This is chaotic and confusing for children. This is a dissociative, debased, and traumatized mother raising her children who will become dissociated, debased and traumatized as well (Kobrin, as cited in Chesler 2004; Volkan, 2002). Magai (1999) and Liotti (2002) concur that a shame-sensitive parent establishes means for the intergenerational transmission of the shame affect which characterizes the fearful-avoidant parent. This, Magai says, is accomplished by the use of coercive disciplinary practices.

This concept of transgenerational exchange of dissociative and traumatized anxiety-based experiences is copied within some of the different communal groups considered to be cults. What has come to light in some places is that there are children born and ‘raised’ within the communes. Some of these communes raise their children not necessarily knowing who their real parents are. Some of these environments have been cited as sexually overly stimulating and some have been cited as being physically abusive. Those entering these ‘cult’ groups have been depleted of much of their original personality. As parents they can only pass on what they have left over after their abusive indoctrinations and trainings.

The roots of terrorism and terrorist behavior lie according to deMause (2002), not in an American foreign policy error but rather in the extremely abusive families

of the terrorists. Islamic terrorists are often products of a misogynist fundamentalist system that often segregates the family into two separate living areas, for men, and women with children. This misogynistic and paternalistic pattern is transmitted trans-generationally within the society. It is compounded with the environmental circumstances of constant war and ongoing life threatening events. The result is that the possibility of developing into calm, confident, assured, empathic adults are rather limited (deMause, 2002).

The violence children are exposed to may affect them differently at different ages and may disrupt normal development. Evidence indicates that the exposure to this violence can affect not only physical health and safety but also psychological adjustment, social relations, and scholastic work. The child's view of himself may become distorted along with their ideas about the meaning of life, future happiness and moral development. Garbarino et al. (1991), Ney et al. (1994) and Chesler, (2004) concur that widespread child sexual abuse can lead to paranoid, highly traumatized, and revenge-seeking adults.

Violent misogynistic families appear to delimit the ability to empathize. Most terrorists according to deMause (2002) come from these family types. Lack of empathy is another element in the equation that leads to the unleashing of the societal ritual abuser.

Cementing in 'The Violentization': The Role of the Media

In this conceptualization, the media and the concept of freedom of press become a partner in the enabling of societal ritual abuse.

The technology of the 20th century has elevated the abilities of any government and media, and any one leader to control the minds of mankind. The Orwellian prediction of "big brother is watching you" (Orwell, 1949) is evolving rapidly. Today's mind control by the media is only one example of the many forms of ceremonious abuse that rocks the 21st century.

Individuals already coping with internalized and embedded anxiety are now forced to develop newer more effective defense mechanisms to contain the overflow. Many more persons are now enabled or traumatized into using dissociative mechanisms which are methods of denial, depersonalization, derealization and basically a means of distancing oneself from the horrors around. Through media coverage, PTSD and dissociation, resulting from the viewing of current traumatic events, expand and culminate into ritual abuse of entire societies and affecting globally.

Society Abuse and Media Abuse

Abuse has the clear intent of murder of the soul. Its purpose is to gain total submission over its victims. That control is maintained through the constant and consistent threat of annihilation reported over the media waves; someone (never identified) somewhere (unknown) passed on a definitive message that some terrorist group is going to perpetrate some major disaster on specific airplanes and flights. These flights of course are cancelled. The lives of hundreds of people are disrupted without the pe petrators having to do anything more than pass on a message. Society has been suppressed into submission (CBS News, 2004). Similarly, the RA victim lives in constant threat of the abuser and is silenced into submission and secrecy with the subtlest of threats or bribes.

The 21st century with its media bombardment and hot off the field information has enabled a world to configure itself into states of denial, detachment, despair, depression and dissociation. The knowledge that the fear of annihilation is the reality is felt at the global and individual level equally. Consider the effect the repetitive viewing of the replay of the strike on the World Trade Center had on the millions of people who watched, hypnotically entranced. Over and over again the world watched the ceremony of destroy, destruct and take over. Each replay of the event empowered the al Qaeda movement. Each repetition increased the awe (that kind of awe that is reserved only for God). The pains of the thousands were heard in the background to the ‘unreality of the re-creation of the potential destruction of the world by an evil satanistic avenging God. ‘For it was all ‘in the name of.’

In one corner of the world, in Israel, as the entire world watched the twin towers collapse, Israelis were remembering the weekly bus bombings of 1995, and the continuous terrorist acts perpetrated on almost a daily basis since then. They were remembering their own paralyzed state and feeling it again. They thought—now perhaps the world understands the true meaning of terror. They remembered the fear, the anxiety and the sense of being forced to play Russian roulette every day and against their will; a state of total helplessness.

And in another part of the world—in Turkey and Greece, people recalled with trepidation their own recent natural disaster as they sat staring, terrified at this man made horror show. Theirs were devastating earthquakes that shattered the calm of the world in 1999 triggering all the previous ones experienced (war events that shaped their emotional lives); the God of the Bible promised he would never destroy the world again nonetheless their lives, dreams and hopes were shattered in that moment of rumbling earth. And the man made assault on humanity brought back the fears. And the fears became anxiety and the anxiety became panic. And their thoughts screamed out “what more is coming, the world is doomed.”

The anxiety resulting from the perceived threat of annihilation can become system-pervasive and unbearable. Where unresolved trauma is already present the post trauma stress is more likely to develop into a complex PTSD which is one of the prerequisites of dissociative disorders. Denial can manifest itself as “healthy dissociation” if the choice is life supporting and life-affirming. A more negative format is the ‘devil may care’ attitude which is acted out by self-destructive behaviors such as reckless driving, drinking, drugging, risky sexual behavior, vandalism and other petty crime.

In the state of denial and dissociation, emotions are on hold. There is a 10-mile stare in the eye. There is no awareness of their state of mind. And of course, there is no reason for therapy. Other difficult behavior patterns are seen in those who have been frozen in a state of high-panic, which inhibits their freedoms of movement, choice, thought and action (Levine, 1997). The media exacerbate and perpetrate fear and threats on its audience. The audience is hypnotized by the media and is transported into the trauma itself. The unresolved embedded anxieties are triggered and the post trauma stress evolves. And the people have become the pawns and passive armies of society’s ritual abusers.

The Way it All Works

How Global Societal Ceremonial Ritualistic and Systematic Abuse Dissociates the Masses—The Mechanism of Defense: Dissociation as Survival

When the basic safety of the individual (Maslow, 1954) is threatened and the notion and perception of the world as a safe place is shattered either by external events such as natural disasters, wars or other uncontrollable events that boggle and co-opt the “mind,” the threat of annihilation is then activated in the system. When this happens, the freedom of choice, of thinking, and of being is threatened or destroyed. The threat of loss of physical and essential life initiates the process of dissociation when the flooded being becomes overwhelmed and verges on its own death.

Dissociation is a primary coping mechanism designed to reduce the level of fear and anxiety. Dissociation runs on a continuum from healthy dissociation all the way to PTSD and pathology. The type of dissociation is associated with the magnitude, duration and location of the individual at the time of the impact of events and past history. Up to 40% of THE PEOPLE will “discover” the defense mechanism of dissociation.

The Process: Reactions to and Coping with Traumatic Events

From the moment of our birth we learn to tolerate stress and discomfort. This ability to adapt and accommodate and assimilate to new life experiences has a threshold (Flavel, 1977; Piaget, 1974). In the aftermath of a traumatic event of mega proportion when assimilation of external data fails and adaptation fails, the brain's capacity to adapt through the functions of accommodation and assimilation breaks down. The perceived threat of potential death triggers the most brilliant of created living mechanisms, the human brain, into a protective mode. To protect the core self the dissociative process takes over when the individual peaks at his stress threshold and is without the means to relieve the stress, assimilate, and process the events. Anxiety-based behavior patterns are born and become the accommodation of the brain and the safety mask of the core self.

The media exposure seem to be able to trigger anxiety-based reactions such as dissociation and denial. When the anxiety is triggered it is superimposed on any embedded anxiety triggered by the most recent traumatic event such as 9/11. A new repertoire of anxiety-based behavior patterns then appear and affect interpersonal and familial relationships and puts this population at greater risk for complex post-traumatic stress disorder (PTSD).

A traumatic event is perceived differently by each individual in terms of their own traumatic past, their physical, psychological, and emotional distance from the event. No two people, experiencing the same event, will perceive or react in the same way. Whether a traumatic event is physically or vicariously experienced from any distance (from being in the event or media exposure) the felt stress can develop into post-traumatic stress disorder (PTSD).

The following eight circles clearly depict how even at a distance traumatic events can lead to PTSD. Distance from the trauma is visualized in terms of concentric circles where the event is in the center of the primary circle. The trauma experience is measured in terms of distance on a straight line from the core event. The role of prior history of trauma is significant in terms of triggered PTS as the distance from the event increases. Multiple traumatic experiences must be taken into consideration and are relevant in terms of the impact no matter which circle or how far distant one is.

The Eight Circles

1st circle: those hurt physically

2nd circle: those physically present but unhurt, shock

3rd circle: those who were not present at the time but arrived on the scene to assist

4th circle: passers-by who happen to be on the scene

5th circle: those who by chance were not there

6th circle: family members of casualties and wounded

7th circle: casual acquaintances

8th circle: general population

(van Leeuewen, ben Yochanan, 1996)

The Defense of Dissociation Sets In

But the reality is—it is morning and time to go to work—'put on the mask.' And many individuals in homes around the world sit in states of introspection—reviewing buried memories of physical, emotional, monetary and psychological abuse perpetrated on them and never spoken of. And the fear and the panic expand. And we see how people suddenly lose their sense of safety, their sense of freedom, and their rights to live their lives, their rights to think and to choose for themselves. The comfort zone, the sense of peace is gone. But the reality is—it is morning and time to go to work. And the feeling is, that is impossible—'put on the mask.' The heart explodes with the panic and the only way to deal with it is to 'put on the mask' and just do it. And that frozen soul is bubbled into silence. And the world for each individual was changed in little ways every time, all 'in the name of.' For the individual much was changed. The level of anxiety went up, comfort zones became less comforting and pleasure seeking became the goal at whatever cost. And this too is all 'in the name of.'

Society had to find ways and means to lessen the tension and the fears and discovered new ways of living and loving and playing. Different coping attitudes and more hedonistic behaviors; drug abuse increased, sexual frivolity increased, recklessness in all areas increased particularly on the roads, patience lost its virtuousness and a 'devil may care' attitude sprung up. New bullies are born. The news loses its interests. Politics becomes a playground. And running through it all is deep embedded anxiety. Society dissociates from the horrific realities and reflects the dissociative states of the individual. The macrocosm and the microcosm have blended, all 'in the name of.'

It doesn't matter ''in the name of' whom. Fear of annihilation is globally and individually shared. A masked dissociated society is the result. Intense anxiety may be triggering dissociation that is the result of the fear of annihilation. And the society and the individual under the systematic ceremonious ritualistic abuse are

touched and changed, and the individual and the society become one and the same. And all are wearing masks. It is a costume ball filled with masked guests.

The Role of the Media in Mind Control

Because mind control is the cornerstone of ritual abuse, the key element in the subjugation and silencing of its victims—the effects of media's messages subtle or clear—are particularly salient. This wavelength mind control is no less systematic, ritualistic, ceremonious or abusive to the observer than that of the lone ritual abuser to the person of his choice.

Mind control via the media wavelengths effects the global population. The more global war becomes, the more widespread and destructive its long term effects. As the media play and replay the horrific events of every day, this external source can control the thinking of its audience.

Techniques and methodologies for subtly controlling the thinking of audiences are well known not only to psychologists, commercialists, and sales persons but also to many others who have learned techniques and methods of 'controlling,' manipulating and subtly indoctrinating and programming the other. Bandler and Grinder (1975) developed the neurolinguistic programming (NLP) on the basis of Erickson's hypnotic techniques.

Wier (2002), reminds us that with NLP it is relatively easy to hypnotize a person and to keep that person in a trance state without their being aware that they are in fact in a trance. The magnitude of influence, mind control or thought control via the media is boggling. The media have become a pawn of the abusers, political activists, terrorists and others. The effects are clearly visible even today on the population at large.

The Impact

The threat of annihilation is activated in the system and the mind is controlled. Mind control happens under deliberately created stress and threat. It is designed to produce a state of social trance. It borders on a state of hypnosis. It is designed to gain control of the mind of the individual creating a totally dependent existence on the mind controller. In this dissociative trance state the individual forfeits his freedoms of thought, choice, emotions and sense of being.

Osama bin Laden took control of the mind of the world by striking at the heart of the United States. His plan literally boggled the minds. The greater part of the world became his subjects, slaves and hostages. The enormous shock electrified the system of the individual, the group, society and the world: Osama took control of

the mind by destroying the feelings by striking at the heart; he deliberately created a dissociative populous that is the true element of ritual abuse.

Constant systematic terrorist bombardment of any kind terrorizes individuals, families, communities, and nations. Every hit threatens the next blow. No place is safe. It is a ritual, it is a ceremony, and it includes a prayer done ‘in the name of’ a greater God. It is a matter of submit and comply. And the abuser is promised his just rewards in his heavenly state. The Hi-tech world of the 21st century submitted to Bin Laden and through the television wavelengths entered the mind of the world. Mankind went into a hypnotic state, a social trance state, a state of disbelief, fear and anxiety. “Now we have seen it all” mankind said. The world had become goggle-eyed and apoplectic. Today we know we still haven’t seen it all (Macow, 2003). And we sit and stare from our trance states watching and waiting for the next act to follow.

Acts of terrorism, war and natural disasters, provide an opportunity to study the development of post-traumatic stress disorder (PTSD), and the effects of patterns of behavior under ongoing stress, anxiety, and future threats.

For Israelis, living under constant stress, the threat of the impending Gulf War triggers anxieties embedded and buried in the body and memory system of the individual. Some of these memories are specifically related to the Gulf War experiences of 1991, while others are memories of terrorist actions, other past wars and personal traumatic incidents. To survive, under such circumstances, the stress, anxiety and fear are repressed, suppressed and sublimated into the background where they are constrained and subsequently affect the behavior patterns and physical well being of people.

The threat to use weapons of mass destruction (WMD) in this war is particularly triggering. There are three generations of holocaust survivors living in Israel who react intensely at the mere mention of poison gas, and who still bear symptoms of post-traumatic stress (PTS). This population in and of itself is at even greater risk for full blown PTSD under the threat of gas as one of the types of Weapons of Mass Destruction. The idea of a sealed room and a gas mask is associated in most minds with the holocaust and is a resource of anxiety.

Even though Israel was not actively involved in the first Gulf War, the scud missiles from Iraq created an ‘as if Israel were at war’ situation. Many people in this ‘as if’ situation reacted with symptoms of acute ongoing traumatic stress. This stress became embedded as anxiety with each act of terrorism over the past 12 years.

Other Effects: Personal Experiences

For months prior to the March attack by the United States on Iraq in 2003, the media around the world portended disaster and even predicted a possible third World War. The world news focused on the implications of losing the war with Iraq. All the news around the world was anxiety provoking. That was a form of mass mind control in operation. The country was mobilized into a defined activity and there was a sense of being one robot among the millions.

As an American living in Israel, my American national identity was confused. The sense of betrayal from the First Gulf War was a threat as the son of the first president Bush set forth to play out the second Gulf War. Till today there is anger and disappointment with the first president Bush. These are residual feelings from listening to his instructions for surviving the First Gulf War. While we were sitting in sealed rooms in 1991 waiting for scuds to fall (39 scud missiles DID fall in Israel)—this man was playing golf on television at his Maine compound and telling the world to just relax and enjoy the war!

In Israel scuds are flying. Bush has set the stage for the sealed room to become a family play room. A year old child is placed in an incubator type gas mask. She is screaming—it is 1991 and the scud is flying. The parents put sweets and special treats in the incubator for her to help keep her quiet. Everyone else plays games in their gas masks—aliens in a foreign environment. And then we ask ourselves why 12 years later—as the second Gulf War approaches she has become obese and comes into my office in a panic state and claustrophobic. Is it really so simple to make a sealed room a play room and expect everyone to come out happy? This was/is her form of dissociation. This is an example of how the first Gulf War ‘in the name of’ abused an entire country not directly involved in that war. By threatening to send scuds to Israel if the USA started a war, a fear of annihilation was instilled into the total population.

Israel, under direct threat of annihilation by dirty scuds, in the name of protection, forced the use of gas masks on the populace, in the name of ‘safety.’ This is a population born into the primary circle of the holocaust gassings. The threat of Iraq to use WMD or gas on this population is as abusive as sexual abuse. It is the rape of the soul of a nation.

The second and third generations were already scarred by the holocaust’s dissociative parenting figures and this new threat of annihilation directly affected the life of this third generation holocaust child. A dissociative state emerged in the form of a bulimic phobic. The triggering event was the media exposure to the potential Iraq war which struck her subconscious memory bank where the embedded anxiety was stored and brought forth dissociative states for protection and in the name of ‘safety’ from further abuse.

As mental health professionals, recognizing that the stress of world events is a major element in the formation of PTS/D and is a precursor of dissociative behavior and Acute Stress Disorder (ASD) is of utmost importance. Below is the continuum chart we suggest which defines the different anxiety based trauma patterns on a continuum depicting the drama of the individual in terms of previous untended embedded traumatic history.

TIME LINE OF TRAUMA TYPES © Yoeli, Prattos 2002

A. Primary Trauma

1. Single Incident Trauma
2. Acute Trauma

B. Secondary Trauma

1. Shock of the Event with Immediate Involvement—Acute Trauma
2. Past Unresolved Trauma + Observation-Acute Trauma

C. Tertiary Trauma

1. Vicarious Trauma
2. Re-Traumatizing With or Without Past

Unresolved Primary Trauma

D. Complex Trauma

1. Shock of the Event + Immediate Involvement + Past Unresolved Trauma
   Becomes Primary Chronic Trauma

E. Ongoing Trauma

1. Repetitive Events Perceived/Experienced as Traumatic
2. Any or All of the Above in Any Combination

The media bombardment of the potential dangers of the U.S. vs. Iraq war produced significantly high levels of stress among Israelis. This added stress, in an already over stressed and traumatized nation and was prognostic of the development of PTSD in higher percentages of the population.

It massively triggered the unrecognized, unprocessed embedded anxiety from the previous Gulf War and past war experiences, resulting presently in the emotional flooding of the individual, familial and societal systems to such a degree that acting out and dissociation became the only outlet for the release and management of anxiety, panic, helplessness, pain, despair, horror, etc.

Just pause for a second to think of the effect on the future emotional and cognitive development of children as adults (not to mention the current and future functioning abilities of these children). The newly acquired PTSD and the dissociation involved, along with all the embedded anxieties set in motion, solidifies into the vicious circle of trauma, dissociation, and PTSD.

The Greek Story and Israeli Stories

The Greek population is representative of all the world's populations who have experienced the traumata of war and its effect on their lives. War experiences are not discussed openly in the way we are about to do here and now. Some, might want to forget their war experiences and move forward; others, might feel it is weakness, on their part, to admit they have been and still are affected; others are numb, in denial, or still in a state of

PTSD. Not enough attention has been given to the direct and/or subtle ways those past unprocessed war experiences leave their scars, become embedded, affect our personalities, our beliefs and life choices and resurface in the next round of disasters. As therapists we need to be aware of these undercurrent effects.

The more global war becomes, the more widespread and destructive its long term effects. Oppression for the Greek population is a highly emotional issue. 400 years of Turkish occupation, being evacuated from Asia Minor and Izmir in 1922; saying No to Mussolini's ultimatum and being at war with Italy; suffering through executions and starvation under the German occupation in WW II; civil strife—a 4 year civil war—and the recent 7 year military junta; all these have left deep traumatic scars in the hearts of most Greeks.

From Greece

Even today, when I am asked where my family comes from, I reply "we are refugees." My father was 4 years old during the evacuation of Izmir, in 1922, and I can see the images, sounds and horror he lived through as if I were there. During his 80 years of life those experiences never lost their vividness and his never ending stories were about their survival, fear, panic, horror and the way these experiences changed his and his family's life. At 4 years old he already had PTSD. He was a son to a PTSD mother of 5 children; he lived in a society suffering a mix of PTS and PTSD. All these traumata went unprocessed, became embedded and transmitted through oral tradition to my generation.

I recently asked my mother's undertaker, a man in his mid 50's, how he chose his profession. He told me that he's a third generation refugee and the third in his family's profession, started by his grandfather in 1923 when he came from Izmir as

a refugee in 1922. His primary identity is that of a refugee. If you are both a Greek and a refugee that automatically means Asia Minor, 1922. No words are needed; just a nod and we all know what this means. Greeks know only too well what war means. My generation is the first one not to have experienced war first hand. We felt the threat of war in 1974, during the Turkish invasion of northern Cyprus, when general mobilization was ordered in Greece.

My generation was not raised on Grimm fairy tales but on war and survival stories. Stories about physical and emotional pain, stories about starvation, stories about the experiences our parents and grandparents had during WWI, WWII, the civil war; stories about the pains and adjustments to losing their freedom and having to rebuild their shattered lives; stories about the pains of loosing loved ones during war, and detailed accounts about life in the midst of occupation. No Greek is untouched by war. The anxieties embedded in our bed time stories by our dissociated parents' and grandparents' narrations have remained in our lives unprocessed to date. This anxiety is triggered whenever disaster strikes.

From Israel

The Israeli media focused on the possible dangers this second gulf war might have for Israel. Many people in Israel found themselves in states of what they considered acute stress. What appeared to be happening was that unrecognized and untended anxiety remaining from their first Gulf War (GW1) experiences began to upsurge, oscillate, and resurfaced.

It would seem that the shock of the sudden fear of annihilation such as that experienced during the trauma of the first Gulf War became locked in their nervous system. It has been suggested that the term embedded trauma describes the shock of an overwhelming event that has become fixed in one or more parts of the body, often resulting in disrupted energy flows (Burns, 2003; Levine, 1997). The effect is played out on the masses. The lone victim of ritual abuse has the same reaction.

Because our daily lives in this 21st century meet traumatic events via media exposure and life experiences, this daily ingestion of threats to our being becomes tiered over previous anxieties stored in the system and which have now become embedded. They include anniversary events, repetitive abuse triggers, releases and upsurges that embedded anxiety. What happens to people on an individual basis ripples through the world.

A doomsday fear threatens global sanity, stability and security. The worlds' macrocosm of suicide bombers, terrorists and malevolent religious seekers of converts creating chaos on mankind sets the world in motion in search of safety, an escape from the horror.

Traumatic events that threaten life create intense anxiety. Often vast numbers of people are involved and there is a high percent of PTS/D and dissociative behavior. Abuse in massive form is soul murder of a society just as it is soul murder of the one victim—adult or child. Ritual abuse is a microcosmic format of mass terrorism, the venom of violent abuse spreads through society and the world. Weather and acts of God are uncontrollable, they too devastate massively.

It seems that the overwhelming sense and fear of annihilation, which appears as a common denominator in traumatic events, may be one of the key elements in the onset of dissociation. Every traumatic reaction is experienced firstly by the individual and ripples through to others in an enormous variety of ways. By examining the tragic drama of the individual's trauma we can understand the global impact of world and societal abuse on each and every one of us.

The Trance State

This sense of fear of annihilation evoked in the audience as the media report events becomes overwhelming. Habituation and accommodation take over and enable the individuals under duress to block out the pain of the fear. A trance state happens as a result of the repetitions played out like a tune that endlessly loops in the brain.

Attention becomes limited. That conscious observer part is in the state of trance though the feeling is as if in full function. However, the conscious mind has been disabled. The observing part may actually not function at full capacity. Like being able to give birth painlessly, the trance can divert the attention of the mind away from the pain and still function on another level.

Memory might not work well. The attention is so fixed that judgments may be faulty, the body may not be sensed and surroundings may seem to disappear (Wier, 2002). The trance effect result of media reported terrorism observed by audiences around the world may vicariously lead to states of PTS/D. Having a mass population entranced by the import of horrific events enables the callous continuance of heinous violent acts. Societal ritual abuse in the form of terrorism can continue unabated at the whim of the terrorist organizations because the masses are overwhelmed and stuck in their own fear codes unable to functionally react. These are the passive armies of terrorism. This process is the evolution into the dissociative states of PTS/D. Relaxation of these anxiety-provoking actions delimits the leaders' (abusers') power and control.

Towards a Positive Future

McFarland (1997) firmly believes that to stop social violence that stems from child abuse, emphasis must be placed on teaching and learning good parenting skills. It is cost efficient to set up parenting centers and long term effective parental training; in comparison to the cost to prepare the military system in a country and the costs of jailing and tending to criminals.

Psychohistorians hold indeed a systemic and holistic view of the problem. DeMause (2002) concludes that: “Only by starting now on a vast worldwide program to end child neglect and abuse and raise all of our precious children with respect can we avoid the likely coming of a global holocaust. Only by reducing dissociation to a minimum through empathic parenting can we avoid inflicting the self destructive power we now have available to us. This is the single most important finding of the new science of psychohistory. Free universal training centers for parents may be a radical new notion, but so once was the idea of free universal schools for children. Our task is clear and our resources sufficient to make our world safe for the first time in our long, violent history. All it takes is the will to begin” (p. 432).

Conclusions

The optimistic conceptualization of both McFarland (1997) and de-Mause (2002) provides a sense of “it is easy” to do, easy to stop violence and find a more peaceful way to live within the world. All that is needed, say McFarland and deMause, it seems is to teach new parents how to raise their children and the next generation is going to save the world from at the very least the apocalypse and at the very best Armageddon. This is the way and means to stop violence and abuse in the world, they believe.

Based on these simplistic and optimistic concepts many movements toward a more peace-filled planet have come and gone. The idea was to make peace not war. Coffin, was an American protestant social activist leader in the 1960’s and 1970’s and pursued civil rights and the peace movement. Then, he promoted the idea of finding a resolution to international concerns such as nuclear disarmament, and international peace (Goldstein, 2004). The Peace Corps movement started by the [Peace Corps] agency of the U.S. Government, in 1961, by executive order of President Kennedy was another move towards spreading goodness and sharing technology around the world. The congress approved it as a permanent agency within the department in the late 1960’s and said its purpose is to assist underdeveloped countries in meeting their needs for trained manpower (The Columbia Encyclopedia, 2004).

Other types of movements have been devised to demonstrate that peace is possible between nations and different religious groups. Some have come together in small settlements not as utopia, but as communes such as the kibbutzim in Israel, the international Christian Bruderhof communities in Germany, England, the United States and Australia, and the 19th-century Brook farm transcendentalist collective in West Roxbury, Massachusetts. One other form of communal living is designed not as a statement of peace but as a statement against alienation of peoples. This is the co-housing of the cornerstoners who do not isolate and are active within city life. “Co-housing creates an environment that encourages community,” this is not a strongly ideological group (McCarroll, 2002). None of these ideas seems to have managed to achieve the ultimate goal of a non-violent and peace-filled world.

It is not clear what programs or means are needed to move towards a violent free society. It is clear that a beginning is necessary and generating families without violent and abusive patterns is a blessed start for sure. The ripple effect of a violence free family and community will ultimately impact societies and eventually globalize. However, it is not enough to focus only on the individual and the family. Communities and societies and countries must be involved in stopping the violence and abuse and terrorism now punctuating our everyday lives.

According to the literature (Becker, 1992, 1993; Charles, Reynolds & Gatz, 2001), in order for an effective familial pattern change to take place, 4–5 generations of consistent behavior are needed for this change, to become embedded and solidified as a desired and beneficial pattern. That clitoredectomy still survives in 35 or so countries and reflect the difficulties of making the change (Azim, 2004; Kobrin as cited in Chesler, 2004). Within some violent and abusive families and cultures, where honor is more important than life sometimes the legal systems close their eyes to the violence of the actions and actually condone the revenge (Ruggi, 1998). To reach that goal not only must the family behavior patterns and beliefs be changed but the environment must be supportive of a change from violent to non-violent.

Worldwide health concerns such as the polio vaccination provide another and poignant example demonstrating the need for 4-5 generations to effect change. Since the start of vaccinations against polio, our planet as we knew it with polio became almost totally free of the disease. A few small countries stopped the vaccinations. This year, two generations down the line of no polio, the world suddenly found itself under the threat of the re-emergence of polio in potentially epidemic proportions. Massive efforts were put forth to stop the emergence of this disease in the next generation. This took cooperation, willingness, conscious investment, conceptualization and the belief that the world is better without polio.

Most importantly, to make a polio free world every country must agree to vaccinate. After 5 generations of vaccinations the original chain of polio will have been eradicated.

The same formula is needed to bring a halt to the violence as we know it and to the ritual abuse of terrorism in the 21st century. At the start of this chapter it was mentioned that the terrorism may be seen by some as legitimate and applauded,—and be abhorred by others. Whether terrorism is seen as legitimate or abhorred, it remains an act of violence and abusive of and to societies.

The exodus by the subjugated Jewish people from Egypt to the desert and to Canaan, 'the promised land', is said to have taken so long because their god wanted only those not born into slavery, 'the pure of heart' to enter the new land, the land of their freedom. The stories from the bible which describe the history of these Jews in the Promised Land is not one of freedom. The story of this nation is fraught with the wars over power and control, over freedom and choices and hatred, terrorism and pain, struggle and hardship.

What is clear is that the struggle was violent. And the violence begot more and more violence. And still there is violence 'in the name of' and terrorism's ritual abuse 'in the name of.'

On the other hand, while world powers rise and fall, and it is clear that change requires hard work, there are people who care, who raise their voices, who are willing to work towards the safety and freedom of mankind. We also see that there are more and more of these people seeking the voices to combat the pain of the world. Today appears as the awakening of the first of the 5 generations in the chain of change. People supporting McFarland and deMause have already begun their preparation work and the 3rd and 4th generations are ready and willing to make sure that the 5th generation is prepared for the future of mankind. A future that is without violence, terrorism and ritual abuse.

References

Alon, G. (2003, June 5). Terror leaves 42% of children with PTSD. In Haaretz. [On-line]. tz.com/hasen/pages/SHArt.jhtml?itemNo=3006388andcontrassID=2andsubContrassID=1andsbSubContrassID=0andlistSrc=Y

Athens, L. H. (1992). The Creation of Dangerous Violent Criminals. Chicago: University of Illinois Press.

Azim, S.A. (2004). Women in Islam versus women in the Judaeo-Christian tradition. The myth and the reality; Part 3: Shameful daughters [On-line]. http://www.islamicity.com/mosque/w_islam/shdaut.htm

Bandler, R., and Grinder, J (1975). Patterns of the hypnotic techniques ofMilton H. Erickson, M.D. Vol. 1, Cupertino, CA: Meta Publications.

Bandura A., Barbaranelli C., Caprara G.V., (1996). Mechanisms of moral disengagement in the exercise of moral agency. Journal of Personality and Social Psychology, 71, (2), 364–374.

Becker, H.A. (1992). A pattern of generations and its consequences. In Becker, H.A. (ed.), Dynamics of Cohort and Generations Research, Amsterdam: Thesis Publishers, p. 219–248.

Becker, H.A., and K. Sanders (1993). Explaining generational behaviour, The case of the transition from education to work. In Becker, H.A., and Hermkens, P.L.J. (eds), Solidarity Of Generations. Thesis Publishers: Amsterdam.

Bergman, U., Ph.D. (2004). Personal communication.

Bretton-Granatoor, Gary ,Ed., (1997). A Jewish response to cults. New York: Union of American Hebrew Congregations Press, p. 15.

Brook, J.A. (1998). Death of a peace maker Yitzhak Rabin's murder revealed a lethal rift in Israeli society. The Washington Monthly Online. December, 1998, Volume 30, Issue 12. [On-line]. http://www.washingtonmonthly.com/books/1998/9812.brook.death.html

Browne A and Finkelhor D. (1986). Impact of child sexual abuse: A review of the research. Psychological Bulletin. 99, 66–77.

Bunney, B.S.(2004) The psychological aftermath of disasters. Individual responses, treatment and a state behavioral health care system's response to 9–11. [On-line]. http://www.uic.edu/com/ferne/pdf/Boston0503/ psychological_aftermath_of_disasters.pdf

Burgess, A. (1963). A clockwork orange. New York: Ballantine.Burns, P.(2003) CODT—Cooperative online dictionary of trauma. [On-line]. http://www.codt.org/dictionary.htm

CBS News. Tracking a world of threats. January 8, 2004. [On-line]. www.cbsnews.com/stories/2004/01/08/terror/main592111.shtml

Charles, S.A., Reynolds, C.A. and Gatz, M. (2001). Age-related differences and change in positive and negative affect over 23 years. January, 2001. Journal of Personality and Social Psychology. Vol. 80, No. 1, 136–151, American Psychological Association. [On-line]. http://www.apa.org/journals/psp/psp801136.html

Chesler, P. (2004, May 3). The psychoanalytic roots of Islamic terrorism. [On-line]. http://www.frontpagemag.com/Articles/ReadArticle. asp?ID=13230

Cordes, B. (1987). When terrorists do the talking: reflections on terrorist literature. Santa Monica, California: Rand.

Davis, C. (1996). Joining a "cult": Religious choice or psychological aberration? What is a"cult"? Journal of Law and Health (1996 / 1997 11 J.L. & Health 145). Cleveland State University. [On-line]. http:// www.religioustolerance.org/cult_art.htmtwo

deMause, L. (2002). The emotional life of nations. NY: Karnac Books.

Dewey, J. (1929). Experience and nature. La Salle: Open Court.

DiIulio, J. J. (2000, March 1). Why they kill: The discoveries of a maverick criminologist. (Review) First Things: A Monthly Journal of Religion and Public Life. [On-line]. http://www.firstthings.com/ftissues/ft0003/ reviews/diiulio.html

Dittman, M. (2002). Cults of hatred. Cultic Studies Review, 1,3.

FACTnet (2001). Terrorism committed by cults . [On-line]. http://www.factnet.org/cults/terrorism/Terrorism.htm?FACTNet

FACTnet (2004). Common properties of potentially destructive and dangerous cults. [On-line]. http://www.factnet.org/rancho5.htm?FACTNet

Flavell, J. (1977). Cognitive development. NJ: Prentice Hall.

Ganor, B (2001, October 7). Terrorism: No prohibition without definition. [On-line]. http://www.ict.org.il/

Ganor, B. (2002, December 12). The changing threat of international terrorism, ICT. [On-line]. http://www.ict.org.il/

Garbarino, J., Kostelny, K., and Dubrow, N. (1991). No place to be a child. Lexington, MA: Lexington Books.

Glazov, J. (2001, October 4). The sexual rage behind Islamic terror.[Online] http//:www.frontpagemag.com/columnists/glazov10-04-01.htm.

Glodich, A.M. and J.G. Allen (1998). Adolescents exposed to violenceand abuse: A review of group therapy literature with an emphasis on preventing trauma reenactment. Journal of Child and Adolescent Group Therapy, 8(3): 135–154.

Goldstein, W. (2004). William Sloane Coffin, Jr.: A holy impatience. CT: Yale University Press.

Gregory,-R., J. (2003). Venturing past psychic numbing: Facing the issues. Journal for the Psychoanalysis of Culture and Society. 8(2): 232–237

Grossman, Lt. Col. D. (1995). On killing: The psychological cost of learning to kill in war and society. NY: Little, Brown and Company.

Gurvits, T.V., Gilbertson, M.W., Lasko, N.B., Tarhan, A.S., Simeon, D. & Macklin, M.L., et al., (2000). Neurologic soft signs in chronic post-traumatic stress disorder. Archives of General Psychiatry, 57, 181–186.

Haj-Yahia, M. M. and Tamish, S (2001) The rates of child sexual abuse and its psychological consequences as revealed by a study among Palestinian university students. Child Abuse and Neglect, 25, 1303–1327.

Hassan, S., A. (2001). Cult mind control techniques may have fueled terrorists. Sept, 17, 2001. [On-line]. http://www.freedomofmind.com/stevehassan/presskit/statements/09-17-01.htm?FACTNet

Hendawi, H. (2002, May 14). Gaza's children worship martyrdom. Washington Post/AP. [On-line] http://watch.windsofchange. net/0513_0519.htm#gaza

Herasimchuk, A. (2004). How terrorism works. September 10, 2004.[On-line]. http://www.designbyfire.com/000150.html

Herman, J. (1997). Trauma and recovery. NY: Basic Books.

Hudson, R.A. (1999, September). The sociology and psychology of terrorism: Who becomes a terrorist and why? M. Majeska (Ed.), a report prepared under an interagency agreement by the federal research division, library of congress.

Horovitz, D. (2004). Editor's Notes: To prevent history repeating itself.Oct. 8, 2004. JERUSALEM Post. [On-line]. http://www.jpost.com/servlet/Satellite?pagename=JPost/JPArticle/Printer&cid=1097217813235&p=1006953079897

Hunter, E (1998) .Adolescent attraction to cults. Adolescence. 1998 Fall;33 (131):709–14.)

Jenkins, B., M. (2004) Perspectives on terrorism > PART 1: "Where I draw the line". [On-line]. http://www.csmonitor.com/specials/terrorism/lite/expert.html

Koop, C. E., and Lundberg, G. D. (1992). Violence in America: A public health emergency. Journal of the American Medical Association, 267, 3075–3076.

Kratcoski, P. C. (1985). Youth violence directed toward significant others. Journal of Adolescence, 8, 145–157.

LaCayo, R. (2001). About face for Afghan Women: An inside look at how women fared under Taliban oppression and what the future holds for them now. Nov. 25, 2001 [On-line]. http://www.time.com/time/world/article/0,8599,185651,00.html

Levine, P.,A. (1997). Waking the tiger: Healing trauma. North Atlantic Books, Berkeley, CA

Levy, G. (2004). Killiing children is no longer a big deal Haaretz, (October 17, 2004). [On-line]. http://www.haaretz.com/hasen/spages/489479.html

Lifton, R., J. (1968). Death in life: The survivors of Hiroshima. London:Weidenfeld and Nicolson.

Lifton, R.J. (1982). Beyond psychic numbing: A call to awareness. American Journal of Orthopsychiatry 52 (1982): 619–629.

Liotti, G. (2002) Attachment, social rank, and affect regulation:speculations on an ethological approach to family interaction. Family Process. 41, 313–327.

Los Angeles County Commission for Women (1991) Report of the Ritual Abuse Task Force. [On-line]. http://www.kalimunro.com/ritual_abuse.html

Macow, H. (2003). From Hiroshima to 9/11: Tales of mind control and world tyranny. Ether Zone. January 7, 2003. [On-line]. http://www.etherzone.com/mako010703.shtml

Magai, C.Z. (1999). Affect, imagery, and attachment. In J. Cassidy and P.R. Shaver (Eds.), Handbook of attachment: Theory, research, and clinical applications. New York: Guilford Press.

Margolin, G. and Gordis, E. B. (2000). The effects of family and community violence on children. Annual review of Psychology, 51, 445–49.

Martinez, R. (2004). What cultic mind control is. [On-line]. http://www.spiritwatch.org/mincondef.htm

Maslow, A. H. (1954). Motivation and personality. New York: Harper & Row.

Mazharul, H.K. (1972). Purdah and polygamy: a study in the social pathology of the Muslim society. Peshawar Cantt., Nashiran-e-Ilm-o-Taraqiyet.

McCarroll,C.(2002) Instant communtity. [On-line]. http://www.csmonitor.com/2002/0220/p11s02-lihc.htmlFebruary 20, 2002.

McFarland, R.B., and Fanton, J. (1997). Moving towards utopia: prevention of child abuse. The Journal of Psychohistory. 24: p. 320–331.

Mednick, S., Cristiansen, K. (Eds). (1977). Biosocial bases of criminal behavior. New York: Gardner.

Muzaffar, C. (2002, May 31). Suicide bombing: Is another form of struggle possible? [On-line]. http://www.just-international.org/cmsuicidebombing.htm

Neufeldt, V., E. and. Guralnik, D., B. (1997). Webster's New World College Dictionary. 3rd ed. NY: Hungry Minds.

Ney P.G., Fung.T., and Wickett A. (1994). The worst combinations of child abuse and neglect. Child Abuse Neglect 18(9), 705–14.

Nijenhuis, E.R.S., Van der Hart, O., and Steele, K. (2004). Trauma-related structural dissociation of the personality. Trauma Information Pages website, January 2004. [On-line]. http://www.trauma-pages.com/nijenhuis-2004.htm

Nijenhuis, E.R.S., Vanderlinden, J., and Spinhoven, P. (1998). Animal defensive reactions as a model for trauma-induced dissociative reactions. Journal of Traumatic Stress, 11, p. 242–260.

Noblitt, J.R., & Perskin, P.S.(2000) Cult and ritual abuse: Its history, anthropology, and recent discovery in contemporary America. Westport, CT: Praeger.

Orwell, G. (1949). 1984. Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, NY. PageWise (2002). Crucial components of terrorism. [On-line] http://meme.essortment.com/definesterroris_rjyo.htm

Pape, R. A. (2003). The strategic logic of suicide terrorism. American Political Science Review. 97, 343–361.

Perry, B.D., Pollard, R., Blakely, T., Baker, W. and Vigilante, D. (1995).Childhood trauma, the neurobiology of adaptation and 'use-dependent' development of the brain: how "states" become "traits." Infant Mental Health Journal, 16 (4), 271–291.

Piaget, J. (1974). The child and reality. London: Frederick Muller Ltd.

Porges, S. W. (1997). Emotion: An evolutionary by-product of the neural regulation of the autonomic nervous system. In C. S. Carter, B. Kirkpatrick, and I. I. Lederhendler (Eds.), The integrative neurobiology of affiliation. Annals of the New York Academy of Sciences. NY.

Post, J.M. (1990). Terrorist psycho-logic: terrorist behaviour as a product of psychological forces. In Origins of terrorism W. Reich. (Ed,) New York, Cambridge: University Press.

Pynoos RS. (1993). Traumatic stress and developmental psychopathology in children and adolescents. In, J. Oldham, M Riba, A, Tasman (Eds.), American Psychiatric Review of Psychiatry, 12, 205-38. Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.

Rossman B.B.R. and Rosenberg, M.S. (1998). Maltreated adolescents: victims caught between childhood and adulthood In B.B.R Rossman and M.S. Rosenberg. Multiple victimization of children: conceptual, developmental, research, and treatment issues, 107–29. New York: Haworth.

Rothschild, M. L.(2001). Terrorism and you--The real odds. The Washington Post (Sunday, November 25, 2001; Page B07). [On-line].www.washingtonpost.com

Ruggi, S. (1998) Commodifying honor in female sexuality honor killings in Palestine. Middle East Report; Spring 1998 [On-line] http://www.mwlusa.org/publications/positionpapers/hk.html

Salman,T. (2003, March). Mobile therapy centre for Palestinian children. Report of SOS Kinderdorf. [On-line].http://www.soschildrensvillages.org/cgibin/sos/jsp/retrieve.do?cat=/campaign4andlang=enandnav=3.4andsite=ZZ

Salwa, (September 2004). Internet personal communication.

Scaer, R.C. (2001). The neurophysiology of dissociation and chronic disease. Applied psychophysiology and biofeedback, 26(1), 73–91, based on a Keynote Address presented at the 31st annual meeting of the Association for Applied Psychophysiology and Biofeedback, March 29–April 2, 2000, Denver, CO.

Schmid, A.P. and Jongman, A.J. (1988). Political terrorism (2nd edition).Oxford: North-Holland Publishing Company.

Schweitzer, Y. (2000, April 21). Suicide terrorism: Development and characteristics. [On-line]. http://www.ict.org.il/

Shengold, L. (1989). Soul murder: The effects of child abuse and deprivation.Fawcett Columbine, New York.

Shor, F. (2002). Psychic and political numbing in preparations for war.[On-line]. http://www.ncf.carleton.ca/~ek867/2002_08_01-15_archives.html

Schore, A.N. (2001).The effects of early relational trauma on right brain development, affect regulation, and infant mental health. Infant Mental Health Journal, 22, 201–269.

Sidran Foundation (2000). Trauma disorders glossary. [On-line]. http://www.sidran.org/glossary.html#numbing

Siegel, D.J. (1999). The developing mind: Toward a neurobiology of interpersonal experience. New York: The Guildford Press.

Singer, M. (1994). What Is a cult? And how does it work? Cultic Studies Journal Psychological Manipulation and Society, Vol. 11, No. 2, 1994. [On-line]. http://www.csj.org/pub_csj/csjvideoreview/csj_videoreview112.htm

Schmid, A.P. and Jongman, A.J. (1988). Political terrorism (2nd edition).Oxford: North-Holland Publishing Company.

Stark, R. and Bainbridge, W.S. (1979). Of churches, sects, and cults: Preliminary concepts for a theory of religious movements. Journal for the Scientific Study of Religion 18 (June, 1979): 123.

Stern, J. (2003). Terror in the name of God: Why religious militants kill. New York: Ecco. An Imprint of Harper Collins Publishers.

Swift, J. (1973). The writings of Jonathan Swift. New York: Norton. The Columbia Encyclopaedia (2004). Peace corps. [On-line]. http://www.highbeam.com/library/doc0.asp?DOCID=1E1:PeaceCor&num=1&ctrlInfo=Round9%3AProd2%3ASR%3AResult&ao=

van Leeuwen, L., ben Yochanan, A.(1996). Trauma and terrorism. Thinking Parents Magazine, Israel.

Volkan, V. (2002). September 11 and societal regression. Group-Analysis. 35, (4), 456–483.

Wier, D.,R. (2002)Trance as a Tool. [On-line]. http://www.selfgrowth.com/articles/wier2.html

Wikipedia (2004). (Sept 6, 2004). [On-line].http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ritual

Wolfgang, M. and Ferracutti, F., (1967). The subculture of violence. London: Tavistock

Widom C.S. (1989a). Does violence beget violence? A critical examination of the literature. Psychological Bulletin 106, (1), 3–28.

Widom, C.S. (1989b). The cycle of violence. Science, 244.160–166.

WordiQ, (2004). Definition of human sacrifice. [On-line]. http://www.wordiq.com/definition/Human_sacrifice

WorldNow and WVEC (2004). PTSD Definition. [On-line]. http://ww2.wvec.com/global/story.asp?s=1230402&ClientType=Printable

Yoeli, F., R. & Prattos, T. (2002). The drama, the trauma & EMDR.EMDR Europe 3rd Annual Conference. Frankfurt Germany, May 30–June 1, 2002.

Zimbardo, P.G. (1997). What messages are behind today's cults? APAMonitor. [On-line]. http://www.csj.org/studyindex/studycult/study_zimbar.htm

Zohar Gabi (1992)

Zur, O. (1990). On nuclear attitudes and psychic numbing: Overview and critique. Contemporary Social Psychology 14 (1990): 96–111.

CHAPTER 10

The RAINS Network in the UK (Ritual Abuse Information Network and Support)

Sandra Buck

RAINS is a loose network of people who mostly live in the UK and work with survivors of ritual abuse, both children and adults. In this chapter I describe how it was set up and the kind of support the network offers. I offer a flavor of what I have observed in the UK over the last fifteen years.

A committee of volunteers manages the network. Support is provided through the Helpline and coordinated by Dr. Joan Coleman, a retired psychiatrist. Not all callers who are working with survivors join RAINS (Coleman, 1994). For those who do, there are regular meetings, and informal contacts between members. Information is exchanged at meetings and circulated to members. This can be about publications, news articles, TV programs, courses or conferences. Meetings are in different parts of the country, but probably reflect where most members are, in the South of England. Confidentiality is essential. Whilst we share some information about clients, we do not identify them. Members also link in with other organizations, such as UKSSD[1] (United Kingdom Society for the Study of Dissociation), TAG[2] (Trauma and Abuse Group), SAFE[3] (a helpline supporting survivors of ritual abuse) and LASA[4] (League Against Sadistic Abuse).

We continue to use the term ‘ritual abuse,’ whilst recognizing that sadistic torture and mind control is the reality. In the UK, the majority group we have identified can be described as Satanists (Sinason, 1994).

How it Started

RAINS began in September 1989. Two social workers, a psychiatrist, a psychiatric nurse and a lecturer in social work met to discuss how to respond to the needs of people like themselves, who were coming across ‘ritual abuse’ for the first time. The social workers were Judith Dawson (Child Abuse Consultant for Nottingham Social Services) and Chris Johnston (Leader of Team 4, a specialist

team set up in 1987 to work with the children and families in a complex multi-generational child abuse case in Broxtowe, Nottingham). Dr Joan Coleman was the psychiatrist and Eileen Reeves the psychiatric nurse. In 1989, Joan and Eileen worked in Surrey, and had supported two adult survivors since 1987. The lecturer, Jeff Hopkins, had a special interest in staff welfare. He has written about the strains on social workers who discover abuse on a scale that challenges people's assumptions (Hopkins, 1989). At the beginning, staff who needed the support of the RAINS network made contact through his department.

This visionary group of people recognized that their isolation had increased their personal distress, and decided to reach out to others. Apart from Nottingham, there were workers in Congleton, Rochdale and Essex, all dealing with children who were trying to communicate terrifying experiences. They did this as children do, through their behaviors, drawings and play. Eventually some of the children talked about what had happened to them. Staff and foster parents wanted to talk to others who knew about the subject, but they were afraid that any outside contact would discredit their evidence. So many remained isolated until after court cases. This need for contact always came *after* they concluded that the nature of the children's experiences was ritual abuse. Social workers in other areas were instructed not to make contact with the Nottingham team. There were fears in reaching out; fears about 'contamination,' or rather fears of being accused of having been contaminated by information.

Sinason (1994, p. 7) tries hard to make sense of this hypothesis of contamination. Scott (2001, chap. 2) extends this further by discussing the "… discourse of disbelief which developed in response to allegations of ritual abuse in Britain, the Netherlands, North America and Australia in the mid–1980s." (p. 34). I struggle with it too. As a medical student I was taught symptoms and signs of common and less-common illnesses and how to investigate them to make a diagnosis. If the last illness I learnt about was meningitis, I might fear that someone with a fever had meningitis, but in the absence of a rash and neck stiffness, and with a painful ear and an inflamed eardrum, I would diagnose otitis media. Being intellectually fascinated or anxious not to miss a more rare condition would not cause an epidemic of meningitis. When HIV infection was first identified as a new illness, doctors shared information with one another through journals and conferences. That is the scientific method and how knowledge develops, using established problem-solving techniques.

The Nottingham social workers talked to other professionals about the signs and symptoms these children presented, to understand what the children were communicating. They were accused of contaminating the children's accounts and influencing the Broxtowe children to disclose certain events *after* the social

workers had learnt about them. This was not true. Judith Dawson is very clear when she states, “It is being said that we were influenced by our consultations with occult groups, but the children’s disclosures came first. We felt we had to take on this research to make sense of what they told us” (Campbell, 1990, p.13). It is said that children disclosed certain details to foster parents after social workers read a list of ‘satanic indicators.’ Again, Judith Dawson states, “…we were not given the ‘indicators’ until we’d already heard the children’s stories.” (Campbell, 1990, p. 13).

Some Historical Detail

This is needed to explain more clearly how the RAINS network began. Dr Joan Coleman and Eileen Reeves came across ritual abuse in1987, when a long-standing psychiatric patient who repeatedly self-harmed began describing ritual crimes which were based in a Satanist cult. She was dying of leukemia, and wanted to tell them as much as she could (Coleman, 1994). In 1989, a young teenage girl who was a survivor of a ritual abuse was also referred to Dr Coleman. That was when she and Eileen Reeves began making contact with other professionals, driven by their own isolation. “We have since heard similar accounts many times and as a friend once warned me, ‘You can get used to anything.’ But we shall never forget the horror, fear and isolation of that winter” (Coleman, 1994, p. 242).

Broxtowe, Nottingham

Joan and Eileen met Judith and Chris at a conference in April 1989 (Coleman, 1994) and later in the year at what is now known as ‘The 1989 Reading Conference.’[5] Judith and Chris presented a workshop describing the accounts of the Nottingham children, and how these had evolved. It began in 1986 when siblings were removed from their parents because of neglect. Very soon, children who had been removed for neglect disclosed sexual abuse. In one family, the elder child began to describe repeated sexual assaults, and the youngest exhibited obsessive sexualized play. Later the eldest said that other adults as well as his parents had physically hurt him and done sexual things to him. Later in the year, he described being witness to his cousins being hurt and sexually abused at what he called ‘witch parties.’ Each group of siblings was placed with different foster parents, and the children had almost no contact with one another. Gradually these children independently began to describe similar scenes, such as drinking blood, and drawing upside-down crosses (Tate, 1994).

In July 1988, Wardship[6] proceedings were taken to protect the children. In the Nottingham Crown Court, Mrs. Justice Booth (the judge) stated, after hearing the

evidence presented to her, that the children had been the victims of ritual abuse in satanic ceremonies (Tate, 1994). She directed that the children should not be formally interviewed, but the foster parents should continue to record the accounts the children gave. All these ‘disclosures’ were recorded in diaries by the foster parents and all significant drawings were kept. Mrs. Justice Booth also directed that her judgment and the documents concerned in the case would be made available to the Chief Constable of Nottinghamshire and the Crown Prosecution Service. The defendants appealed against this decision, but this failed in the Court of Appeal (Tan, 1988).

In February 1988, eight adult family members and one family friend were arrested. All defendants pleaded guilty in the Nottingham Crown Court in February 1989, except the grandfather. The Police presented evidence of physical and sexual assaults. Several children gave evidence by video link, the first time this had been used in a Nottingham court. Out of respect for the children’s terror regarding people dressed in robes, the judge and barristers removed their wigs and robes. Eight family members and one family friend were found guilty. They were sentenced to a total of 43 years, sentences ranging from 2 to 10 years. Mrs Thatcher, Prime Minister at the time, spoke from dispatch box in the House of Commons and praised the Nottingham team and Nottinghamshire Social ServicesDepartment (Campbell, 1990). The Nottingham team was soon to fall from grace.

There was conflict between the Police and the special Social Work team around reference to posh houses and ritualistic activities. The Police did not find evidence of children being taken to large houses credible, despite children’s evidence being corroborated by information from three adults in the extended family. (These adults helped secure the conviction against the adult members of the family, as they testified in court about being witnesses to the children being sexually abused.) The Police investigated these leads 9 months later after pressure from social services management. The investigation was not conducted jointly with social services and social services were not informed on what basis it had occurred. Social services were informed that the Police found no evidence of ritual or satanic abuse.

Relationships deteriorated and in the summer of 1989 the recently appointed Director of Social Services banned Team 4 from talking publicly about the case, and set up a joint ‘enquiry’ team (JET). This team (with joint representation from social services and the police) was to investigate the circumstances of the Broxtowe case, look at evidence of whether satanism had been involved, and settle the row between the agencies.

The Joint Enquiry Team

Many authors have criticized the choice of the people who were appointed to the Joint Enquiry Team and the experts they used (Scott & Snelling, 1994; Tate, 1991, chap. 7). The main criticism was a distinct lack of experience in working with severely abused children. One professor of child development used as an expert had no professional experience of work with abused children, apart from his research exploring how often parents in Nottingham smacked their children (Newson, 1970). The JET report was never published but was leaked to Central Television. The press release, "A top level independent inquiry into Britain's biggest child sex abuse case has labeled the methods used to question children as tantamount to brainwashing and worse than Cleveland" [7] (Central Television Press Release, 1990, March 27).

Mary Midgely, formerly senior philosophy lecturer at Newcastle University, was asked by the Joint Enquiry Team to look at their methods. Her conclusions were more thoughtful.

> I found that all the people who believed were closest to the facts. All the people who did not believe did not seem interested in the facts. If they wanted to believe the whole thing was invented then they needed to talk to the people closest to it. But the inquiry team did not talk to the children, the foster parents or the social workers. I find this behavior most eccentric. Everyone who disbelieved the children seems to have assumed that what they were saying could not possibly be true and devoted their attention to proving how people could have made it up. They missed a stage. (O'Sullivan, 1990) The JET Report stated that the social workers and foster parents had contaminated the children's evidence and caused the allegations of satanic rituals. They came to this conclusion by examining key words that the children had been recorded as saying, and key events in the development of the case. It is an attractive hypothesis. Evidence for and against it is not explored in the revised version of the report written in 1990 which appeared online in 1997 (Anning, Hebditch & Jervis). The case is not proven, but most journalists prefer to blindly accept the JET report, which is public. The Nottingham case is dismissed in the majority of references to ritual abuse in our media.

Judith Dawson and Chris Johnston were eventually allowed to read this report, but only after it had been leaked, and when Team 4 took out a formal grievance against Nottinghamshire Director of Social Services, David White. They produced

their own report and replied in detail to the criticisms of their team. This has not been published.

The Director eventually made the following statement, modifying his previous stance that ritual abuse was not a feature in the Broxtowe case, to a Nottinghamshire County Council meeting in 1990:

> Although I originally accepted the Joint Enquiry Team's view that ritual abuse was not a feature of the Broxtowe case or its aftermath—and indeed this is the view of the Chief Constable and others given the lack of substantiated corroborated evidence—I do feel that on the basis of the strength of the children's testimony it would be unwise not to accept the possibility that there were ritualistic elements to this case.
>
> …My opinion, given all the written material I have reviewed and the comments of the judiciary, is that the disclosures made by the children are unlikely to have been created in their minds by the social workers or foster parents. (Tate, 1991, p. 317)

Nick Anning, David Hebditch and Margaret Jervis[8] published the revised edition of the JET report online in 1997. There is no comparison of this online version and the original full report. The authors of the original report revealed that they were not nearly as open minded as suggested in the revised version (Tate, 1991, chap. 7). Nottingham County Council went to court several times in an attempt to force the removal of the report from web sites. They were successful, but more sites appeared. In 1997 there were allegedly 35 mirror sites of the summarized report.

Houses

The Joint Enquiry Team was very dismissive of the evidence of the houses that the Broxtowe children had independently identified as places where 'witch parties' were held. One house was not mentioned in the JET report or on any of the TV documentaries. Two adult survivors independently visited Nottingham sites where they had been abused. They both live away from Nottingham and do not know each other. They visited with different therapists, in different years. The therapists eventually discovered it was the same house, and the same one that the children had pointed out. This discovery was made *after* the house was identified (personal communication from RAINS members).

Tunnels

The Joint Enquiry Team was equally dismissive of accounts given by the children of being taken from one place to another by tunnels. One tunnel was reported to end in St Mary's church in Nottingham. In 2002, a tunnel was found under a modern museum in Nottingham, The Galleries of Justice.

> (It) came to light when archaeologists were excavating 14th century man-made caves under a museum and accidentally broke through a rotten wooden floor into an even older excavation beneath. …Experts from the University of Nottingham are about to start clearing the rubble and will also try to find the entrance at St. Mary's. ("Robin Hood," 2002)

Part of the mythology about Robin Hood refers to him being trapped in St. Mary's church and using the cave system to escape. At the time the JET report was written, much was made of the fact that tunnels had not been found under the McMartin Daycare Center in California. When an independent archaeologist excavated the Daycare Center in 1990, tunnels were found and details corroborated the children's descriptions (Summit, 1994). The accounts of the Broxtowe children may also be corroborated further.

My Link into RAINS

This happened from my links through child protection work with Judith Dawson. As social work investigations unfolded, Team 4 had to try and make sense of children telling their foster parents what seemed to be unbelievable events. After 12 months or so, they came to understand they were dealing with children who had been tortured and abused in a most frightening way (Campbell, 1990; Dawson & Johnston, 1989).

I worked as a psychosexual counselor in the 1980s. From my work with adult survivors of sexual abuse, I formed links with several probation officers and social workers in the area. We shared our learning as we came to terms with the sexual abuse of children. I was asked to do some short-term work supporting the team of probation officers who had been assigned to the adults charged with 150 offences against the Broxtowe children. The probation officers were traumatized from reading the affidavits regarding the children. They were unsure if they should work with these adults in the same way that they did with other sex offenders.

Chris Johnston met with the probation team and myself to describe how Team 4 came to understand that the children had been sexually abused in their families, but also tortured and sexually abused in an organized way in ritualistic activities.

The probation team had many questions and Chris and Judith felt it important that the probation team understood how their perception of what the children's accounts meant had developed. They had methodically sifted through all possible explanations, and consulted with several leading professionals in the child abuse field, including two Child Psychiatrists and a Forensic Psychologist.

I respected the thoughtful way these two women and their team had approached such a difficult task. I first met Chris Johnston in a multidisciplinary training event in the early eighties, and recall her honesty in demonstrating a situation where a child needed protection from sexual abuse and all the agencies made mistakes. This was before professionals were issued with guidelines and procedures regarding sexual abuse of children.

I needed to explore things further for myself and gain a deeper understanding of what had been described to us. Instead of sifting through the affidavits that the probation officers had read, I spent an afternoon reading through the diaries and looking at drawings relating to two of the children. As I reflect on it now, I can feel the chill that went through me. What I read felt absolutely authentic. I comment only on one of the diary pages that made such an impact on me. The foster mother had recorded an interaction when she didn't want to listen to the child, for whatever reason. The child said something; she told him not to be ridiculous; he said it again; she ignored him. This seemed to go on and on, until he insisted it happened, eventually shouting at her something like, "He *did* do it. He *did* do it." This does not fit in with the views presented by the Joint Enquiry Team (Anning et al, 1997) or Jean La Fontaine (1994, 1996). This child had to persist to be heard.

This is not a criticism of the foster mother. At the end of that day, I fully appreciated the context and was moved to tears by how she responded to the two children and documented the day-by-day fears these children struggled with. It was an account communicated with love and compassion. Most of the probation team considered the accounts given by the children were true at the core, albeit with some distortion because of pain, fear and/or the use of drugs. Some continued long-term work with those offenders serving longer prison sentences.

I was warned I might not feel very well after reading the diaries. I did not want to go back and read more. I could think of no other explanation; these children's experiences were beyond what I knew about. I had heard some horrific accounts unfold from adults in my counseling room over the previous nine years, so I was no stranger to what adults can do to children. I had also worked with adults with multiple personality states, now called Dissociative Identity Disorder. As time went on, I was to hear further accounts from adults who had survived similar tortures to what the children described.

I have no attachment to any religion, and would probably be most comfortable being described as a humanist. I fully respect others whose beliefs and experiences are different to mine. Within the RAINS network there are many like myself, and many who do have a religious faith. Some of these do not believe in satan as an entity, and some do. Most do not believe in demonic possession, but some do. Survivors will find counselors with whom they feel most comfortable. Those who feel terrified of any organized religion will find counselors who have no significant attachment to a religion, or who keep it entirely separate from their counseling out of respect for the other individuals needing to find their own path.

The RAINS Network

By word of mouth, the RAINS network reached 150 members in its first two years and as of 2003 has supported more than 500 professionals and carers. These include clinical psychologists, counselors, psychotherapists, psychiatric nurses, social workers, rape crisis and other helpline counselors, doctors (including GPs), police, probation and prison officers, clerics, psychiatrists, nurses, foster parents, carers and staff from the NSPCC (National Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children). Members come from all over the UK, as well as Eire, Belgium, Sweden and Germany. Individual members link up with professionals around the world. In 2003 we still had nearly 200 active members.

From 1989 to 1995 there were similar numbers of members working with or caring for children as working with adult survivors. These were mainly social workers, clinical psychologists and foster parents. Since 1995, the number of social workers and clinical psychologists has decreased dramatically, and now most members are therapists or counselors working with adults. Church ministers and psychiatrists[9] are small groups, each making up only 3% of the total membership RAINS began with bi-monthly meetings. By 1991 we reduced it to three meetings a year, and we planned for members to meet in local groups for support. This has happened in some areas, but is not widespread. Dissociation is a key therapeutic issue for therapists and carers. Several clinical psychologists are members and have supported us with their considerable experience in working with dissociation and survivors of sexual abuse. Sara Scott writes of her reactions to learning about dissociation as she contemplated the significance of this for her foster daughter.

> A fortnight before this journey, I had been to my first RAINS (Ritual Abuse Information Network and Support) meeting, and I heard a psychologist talk about a client with MPD… What I found was a framework for making sense of Sinead's practice of going in and out of trance (frequently facilitated by staring at light-bulbs) and the extremely contradictory impulse and emotions she

> displayed. (Scott, 2001, p. 170) We have been fortunate to engage some overseas visitors to share their experiences with us. In the summer of 1992, fifty-six of us packed into a hot schoolroom near Euston Station in London to hear Pamela Hudson. Pamela is a licensed Clinical Social Worker and Therapist who worked with 24 children subjected to ritual torture at a Day Care Center in Mendicino, California (Hudson, 1994). It was in the earlier part of this meeting that Valerie Sinason introduced Anders Svensson. He is a clinical psychologist from Sweden who works with the learning disabled. He told us how he facilitated a severely learning disabled woman to describe how she had been raped. When she went on to describe marks on her wrists and ankles from being tied up, he sought consultation with Valerie as he had read about her work with learning disabled patients who had been sexually abused. They communicated by Anders translating his recordings of his patient, and faxing them to Valerie at the Tavistock Clinic. His patient lived in a community home. She was taken out of the home at night to a strange house, and tied to a chair. She described being naked in the moonlight, but also talked about different colored cloaks and robes.

Eventually she described a group of people she had witnessed who showed disgusting films and made her eat dog shit. She witnessed children being sexually abused and talked about the devil. It dawned on Valerie and Anders at the same time that this was ritual abuse. Many people experience a disabling terror hearing accounts like this for the first time. Valerie and Anders vividly describe this in their chapter in *Treating Survivors of Satanist Abuse* (Sinason & Svensson, 1994). This was the first case to be written about in Sweden, but not the last. When Anders presented this chapter at a conference in Sweden, it was clear from the people who approached him that there were others. When Valerie spoke out in her workplace, she was put in touch with other professionals who were also working with survivors. She met even more when she came to her first RAINS meeting.

Professor Karel Pyck, a Child Psychiatrist from Belgium, visited us in 1994. He began studying the backlash (against those working to support children and adults who have experienced serious child abuse) after being stopped from professional work as a Child Psychiatrist following his stand in court about a child (Pyck, 1994).

Forty-three RAINS members will never forget our meeting with Jean La Fontaine in February 1992. The Department of Health announced it had engaged someone to investigate whether ritual abuse existed or not. We were not very enthusiastic about it being an objective investigation. Joan Coleman met with Jean La Fontaine in September 1991 and felt positive about her. After consultation with

members, she was invited to attend one of our regular meetings. Members were told in advance so that they could decline to attend if they wished. Joan was right; Jean was most charming. She announced she would make no notes at the meeting, out of respect for confidentiality. Members were reminded by Joan, who chaired the meeting, not to give names or identify features about any of their clients, as is the usual policy. After the experiences of disbelief in response to what happened to children in Nottingham, Essex, Congleton, Rochdale, Manchester, Ayreshire and the Orkneys, we wanted to listen to someone who said she was prepared to take our second-hand accounts of survivors' experiences seriously. Some of us were trying to be open-minded about her whilst retaining some cynicism. Some felt positive about her whereas others retained their cynical stance.

There were foster parents and some new members at the meeting. The new members described feeling very traumatized by the accounts they had recently heard. It was a profound experience to witness all these people sharing their frightening discoveries. Joan has written in her brief minutes of the meeting that Jean La Fontaine had indicated it had been valuable to her, and the description of the cases had shown her the core of the subject.

Before publication of La Fontaine's report, there was an all-party press conference on May 25, 1994, at the House of Commons. (The findings of the report had already been leaked to the press.) This press conference was called to challenge La Fontaine's findings and was attended and supported by Llin Golding (Labour Member of Parliament), David Alton (Liberal Member of Parliament) and Geoffrey Dickens (Conservative Member of Parliament). Presentations were given by Joan Coleman (RAINS), Valerie Sinason (then at The Tavistock and Portman Clinic), Hereward Harrison (ChildLine),[10] Sue Hutchinson (SAFE) and others. There was very little publicity after this press conference. Jean La Fontaine's summarized report was published a week later. This received the full attention of the press. The press conference challenging its finding was sidelined.

In her report, Jean La Fontaine stated that there was evidence of ritual in only 3 out of the 84 cases she looked at. In those 3, she claimed the purpose of the ritual was to frighten the children in order to abuse them and keep them silent. She maintained that no belief system was involved.

Several authors (Kelly, 1994; Scott, 2001;Tranter, 1994) have criticized the report. In fact, assessing the evidence of the 17 cases in Nottingham, she did not speak to the children's foster parents; she did not examine any of the children's drawings or foster parents' diaries; she concluded that the 'stories' evolved from contamination from the social workers and religious extremism. I know most of the social workers, and they cannot be described as religious zealots. They are professional, intelligent and thoughtful women. I have the utmost respect for them.

Information from one of our meetings was leaked to the press. An article appeared in *The Oldie* by Rosie Waterhouse (1992) two weeks after our meeting with Jean La Fontaine. Rosie Waterhouse had included accurate information, some of which was mentioned only at the end of the meeting and some mentioned to Jean La Fontaine during the coffee break. Some information was incorrect. We are still puzzled about the journalist's source for this information, and why there was no reference to Jean La Fontaine being at the meeting.

Our first conference was in 1996, *Better The Devil You Know.* We invited speakers from the US and Netherlands. Main presentations were from Joan Coleman, Hereward Harrison (ChildLine), Joan Golston (US), Catherine Gould (US), Norma Howes, Marjorie Orr (Accuracy About Abuse), Sara Scott, Valerie Sinason, Caryn Stardancer (US), Tim Tate and Sheila Youngson. Members of RAINS presented Netherlands described his experience as a GP in a small town called Oude Pekela, and the backlash following the case. Main presenters also ran workshops, and Caryn Stardancer[11] was greatly appreciated for her thoughtful presentation and practical workshops for survivors.

For the conference in 2001, *The Dark Side of the Rainbow,* we collaborated with The Clinic for Dissociative Studies. We appointed two conference organizers who worked as an excellent team, and were familiar with ritual abuse from their other work. Main presentations were by Jean Goodwin (US), Chris Healey (Police Aspects in UK), Norma Howes, Kobus Jonker (South Africa), Sarah Nelson, Jean Rafferty, Sue Richardson, Sara Scott, Valerie Sinason and Howard Steele. Workshop presenters included Thorsten Becker from Germany. Fifteen additional workshops were available over the two days.

Both conferences were well received by those who attended, judging from the evaluations. We did not get it altogether right for survivors, but have learnt from our mistakes. Feedback from all who attended was helpful, with many appreciative comments.

The membership has changed over the years and probably reflects organizational responses to what happened in Nottingham, Rochdale, the Orkneys and The Department of Health report by Jean La Fontaine. Social workers were the largest group to be represented in the early years, but only four have joined in the last four years. Judith Dawson left RAINS in 1993. The largest groups of people joining now are counselors, psychotherapists and Helpline counselors. Individual members write letters to TV producers and newspapers, etc. Joan Coleman has been very active in this regard. As co-coordinator, most contacts come through her now, and she has taken most of the workload for the network to continue.

Religious faith does not feature in our meetings. We are united in our experience of the accounts we have heard, our horror at what human beings can do

to each other and our children. We read in our newspapers that boy soldiers are trained to kill in other countries. We acknowledge that children in the Western world are also being trained to kill, but in a secret underworld, where the victims will not be missed.

The Media

For the main part, the media still do not believe ritual abuse exists. Successful prosecutions involving Satanism or ritualized abuse are seldom reported (Tate, 1994). News articles written closer to a case becoming public seem to be more balanced than those that appear later. Individual workers have been trashed in the tabloids and some have lost their jobs.

Some journalists are concerned about ritual abuse and have written intelligent and sensitive articles. They include Andrew Boyd, Beatrix Campbell, Nick Davies, Sarah Nelson, Jean Rafferty and Tim Tate. Some have struggled publishing their written work. *Stolen Voices*, written by Judith Jones and Beatrix Campbell, was published by The Women's Press in 1999 and withdrawn immediately for legal reasons. It was about the backlash in the UK. Tim Tate's book was withdrawn after he was successfully sued over alleged libel implication. He and his publishers apologized and paid damages. "We made it clear we had never intended the detrimental implications found in the text and my book" (Tate, 1994, p. 190).

The British False Memory Society,[12] founded in 1993 by Roger Scotford, attacks the concept of recovered memory and promotes the concept of 'false memory syndrome.' This is still very popular in the media, notwithstanding the report on *Recovered Memories* by the British Psychological Society working group, chaired by Professor John Morton and published in 1995.

> The working party was charged with reporting on the scientific evidence relevant to the current debate concerning recovered memories of trauma and with commenting on the issues surrounding this topic. We have reviewed the scientific literature, carried out a survey of relevant members of The British Psychological Society, and scrutinized the records of the British False Memory Society. On this basis we came to the following conclusions: Complete or partial memory loss is a frequently reported consequence of experiencing certain kinds of psychological traumas including childhood sexual abuse. These memories are sometimes fully or partially recovered after a gap of many years.

The Royal College of Psychiatry also responded to the debate about 'recovered memory,' but the outcome of their investigations was very different. The College

set up a small working group in 1994. The working group reviewed "…their own experience, visited meetings and centres with expertise in this field, interviewed 'retractors' and accused parents, and then began a comprehensive review of the literature." (Brandon, Boakes, Glaser & Green, 1998, abstract). The paper caused conflict within the College. One member of the group, Dr Peter Whewell, dissented and wrote an independent report. Four members of the group eventually published their work (Brandon, Boakes, Glaser & Green, 1998).

> RESULTS: There is a vast literature but little acceptable research. Opinions are expressed with great conviction but often unsupported by evidence. No evidence exists for the repression and recovery of verified severely traumatic events, and their role in symptom formation has yet to be proved…
>
> CONCLUSIONS: The issue of false or recovered memories should not be allowed to confuse the recognition and treatment of sexually abused children. We concluded that when memories are 'recovered' after long periods of amnesia, particularly when extraordinary means were used to secure the recovery of memory, there is a high probability that the memories are false, i.e., of incidents that had not occurred. (Brandon et al, 1998, abstract) The paper is negative about the existence of ritual abuse and dissociative identity disorder. When the Royal College failed to agree on the full report, it was agreed that guidelines taken from it would be published instead. The guidelines have become College policy and were published in *Psychiatric Bulletin* in 1997. (It is also available on the British False Memory Syndrome web site, http://www.bfms.org.uk).

Other backlash groups include AAFAA (Action Against False Allegations of Abuse and Justice in Psychotherapy (BFMS, 2000), both formed in 1999. AAFAA is a campaigning organization. As part of this brief, it has mailed individuals who associate themselves publicly with child protection issues, for instance by speaking at conferences. One tactic of the campaign was to send letters to such people threatening; "YOU COULD BE NEXT to be falsely accused of sexual abuse." (AAFAA, 2003) British links with the American False Memory Society were evident at a scientific meeting held at The Royal Society of Medicine on 8/12/1998 and titled, *False Memories of Childhood Sexual Abuse. Is Hypnotherapy Unsafe?* The meeting was hosted by Professor Sydney Brandon[13] (now deceased) of The Royal College of Psychiatry. Professor Brandon stated that it is the middle aged and middle classes who are presenting with recovered memories. He presented no

scientific evidence in support of any of his hypotheses. He showed slides of book covers. He stated that watching MPD (Multiple Personality Disorder) therapists was watching a coaching session. “These fads and fashions have come from United States.” I was dismayed that The Royal Society had been used for such an unscientific debate.

Professor Paul McHugh[14] was the guest speaker from the United States. He underlined what Professor Brandon had said, and said he viewed Multiple Personality Disorder in the same light as alien abduction. He stated that Multiple Personality Disorder is always artificial, and the product of medical attention.

Closing Thoughts

Confronting the atrocities that are reported by children, adolescents and adults changes your life. People find that colleagues at work do not want to know (Hopkins, 1989). They become secondarily traumatized from the accounts they hear, and then by the reactions of colleagues and ‘superiors’ (Dawson & Johnston, 1989). Personal relationships are strained (Youngson, 1994). We obviously need to find more creative ways for the intellectual considerations to be presented in a way people can understand. Putting your head on the block is not attractive when you already feel severely traumatized from the work. Support systems to help workers were in place in Nottingham, but the management silenced the staff. The full story about what happened in Nottingham has still not been heard.

References

AAFAA, (2003, November) *Newsletter,* retrieved November 21, 2003, from http://www.aafaa.org.uk.

Anning, N., Hebditch, D. & Jervis, M. (1997). *The Broxtowe Files.* Retrieved July 7, 2003, from http://www.users.globalnet.co.uk/~dlheb/jetrepor.htm.

BFMS, (2000, November). *British False Memory Society Newsletter.* Retrieved July 25, 2003, from www.bfms.org.uk/Text_Assets/Newsletter_Nov2000.htm.

Brandon, S., Boakes, J., Green, R. & Glaser, D. (1998). Recovered memories of childhood sexual abuse. Implications for clinical practice. *British Journal of Psychiatry,* 172, pp. 296–307.

Brandon, S., Boakes, J. Green, R., & Glaser, D. (1998). Recovered memories of childhood sexual abuse. Implications for clinical practice. *British Journal of Psychiatry.* Abstract retrieved September 10, 2003, from http://bjp.rcpsych.org/cgi/content/abstract/172/4/296.

Butler-Sloss, E. (1988). *Report of the inquiry into child abuse in Cleveland 1987*. London: Her Majesty’s Stationery Office, HMSO.

The British Psychological Society, (1995). *Recovered memories.* The British Psychological Society, St. Andrews House, 48 Princess Road East, Leicester, LE1 7DR.

Campbell, B. (1990, October 5). Vortex of evil. *New Statesman*, 3, 121. pp. 12–15 Central Television, now part of Carlton Television, Lenton Lane, Nottingham NG7 2NA

Coleman, J. (1994). Satanic cult practices. In V. Sinason (Ed.). *Treating survivors of satanist abuse.* London: Routledge.

Dawson, J. & Johnston, C. (1989, March 30). When the truth hurts. *Community Care*, pp.11–13.

Hopkins, J. (1989, October 26). Moving in a world of shadows. *Social Work Today*, p.17.

Hudson, P. (1991). *Child ritual abuse: Discovery, diagnosis, and treatment.* San Jose, California: R & E Publishers.

Kelly, L. (1994, November). The extent and nature of organised and ritual abuse—Department of Health report reviewed. *childRight*, 111, pp. 7–8.

La Fontaine, J. (1994). *The extent and nature of organised and ritual abuse.* London: Her Majesty's Stationery Office, HMSO.

La Fontaine, J. (1998). *Speak of the devil: Tales of satanic abuse in contemporary England.* Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Li, C.K., West, D.J. & Woodhouse, T.P. (1993). *Children's sexual encounters with adults: A scientific study.* New York: Prometheus Books.

Newson, J. & E. (1970). *Four years old in an urban community.* London: Penguin Books.

Orr, M. (1996, July 20). *Accuracy About Abuse Newsletter.* Retrieved July 1, 2003, from http://www.carleton.ca/~whovdest/aaa8.html#section2.

O'Sullivan, J. (1990, October, 9). Children in the shadow of doubt, *The Independent.*

Pyck, K. (1994). The backlash in Europe: Real anxiety or mass hysteria in the Netherlands? A preliminary study of the Oude Pekela crisis. In J.E.B. Myers (Ed.). *The backlash: Child protection under fire.* California: Sage Publications.

Richardson, S. & Bacon, H. (1991). (Eds.). *Sexual abuse: Whose problem? Reflections from Cleveland.* Birmingham: Venture Press.

Robin Hood's escape tunnel found. (2002, August 17). *The Daily Mail.*

Royal College of Psychiatrists, (1997). Reported recovered memories of child sexual abuse: recommendations for good practice and implications for training, continuing professional development and research. *Psychiatric Bulletin*, 21, pp. 663–665.

Scott, S. (2001). *The politics and experience of ritual abuse—beyond disbelief.* Buckingham: Open University Press.

Scott, S. & Snelling, O. (1994). Ritual abuse in the media. In V. Sinason (Ed.). *Treating survivors of satanist abuse*. London: Routledge.

Sinason, V. (1994). Introduction. In V. Sinason (Ed.). *Treating survivors of Satanist abuse*. London: Routledge.

Sinason, V. & Svensson, A. (1994). Going through the fifth window. In V. Sinason (Ed.). *Treating survivors of satanist abuse.* London: Routledge.

Summit, R. (1994). The dark tunnels of McMartin. *The Journal of Psychohistory*, [Electronic version] 21, 4, pp. 397–416.

Tan, Y. H. (1988, August 23). Wardship evidence can be disclosed to Police. Law report. *The Independent.*

Tate, T. (1991). *Children for the devil: Ritual abuse and satanic crime.* London: Methuen (withdrawn).

Tate, T. (1994). Press, politics and paedophilia. In V. Sinason (Ed.). *Treating survivors of satanist abuse.* London: Routledge.

Tranter, J. (1994, July 7). No title. Keynote address presented at 2nd National Congress, British Association for the Study and Prevention of Child Abuse and Neglect, BASPCAN, Bristol.

Waterhouse, R. (1992, February 21). A modern witch hunt. *The Oldie*, pp. 10–14.

Wheaton, J. (2003). Mothers of the victims tell their story. In A. McVean & P. Spindler (Eds.). *Policing paedophiles on the Internet.* Bristol, England: The New Police Bookshop.

Youngson, S.C. (1994). Ritual abuse: The personal and professional cost for workers. In V. Sinason (Ed.). *Treating survivors of satanist abuse.* London: Routledge.

Notes

[1] UKSSD, the United Kingdom Society for the Study of Dissociation is a component study group of the International Society for the Study of Dissociation. Their web site is http://www.ukssd.co.uk.

[2] TAG is a study and support group for those working in the areas of trauma, abuse and dissociative disorders. It provides information, support, training, encouragement and networking for professionals, carers, pastoral workers and any who may have an interest in working with individuals who have suffered severe traumatic experiences and abuse in childhood. Their web site is http://www.tag-uk.net.

[3] SAFE is a helpline formed in 1989 by a ritual abuse survivor, Sue Hutchinson. A team of volunteers now organizes it and answers the phone.

[4] LASA, League Against Sadistic Abuse, was formed in 1994 by the mother of a young woman ritually abused by her father (Wheaton, 2003). The group supports non-abusing parents who are often in conflict with the courts and social services about what happened to their children.

[5] This was ‘Not One More Child,’ a conference organized by Norma Howes, an independent social worker. Its reputation is based on the hypothesis that those attending it became contaminated by knowledge of ritual abuse, which had been transported from the United States.

[6] Wardship: The High Court has powers to make certain orders regarding children who have been removed from their homes, are in serious danger or are at risk. The High Court can make the child a Ward of Court. This means that the High Court has responsibility for that child and no orders can be made or action taken which affects the child, unless permission is obtained from the High Court first. The Children’s Act (1989) now allows courts, including the High Court, to make orders relating to children, so Wardship proceedings are now infrequently used. (Modified from http://www.compactlaw.co.uk)

[7] Cleveland is a county in the North East of England. In 1987 conflict between agencies in child protection reached a crisis. Increasing numbers of children were removed from their parents after two pediatricians made medical diagnoses of sexual abuse. On July 9, 1987, the Secretary of State for Social Services set up a Statutory Inquiry to investigate how the agencies had dealt with suspected cases of child sexual abuse (Butler-Sloss, 1988). The remit of the Inquiry was not to establish whether the children had been sexually abused (p. 183). The historical background and the context in which the crisis arose are explored by five of the people involved in these events in *Child Sexual Abuse: Whose Problem? Reflections from Cleveland* (Richardson & Bacon, 1991).

[8] Nick Anning (now deceased) and David Hebditch are investigative journalists. Margaret Jervis is also a journalist and legal adviser to the British False Memory Foundation. Orr (1996) has criticized Jervis’s support of a pro-pedophile book (Li, West & Woodhouse, 1993).

[9] Not many adult psychiatrists in the UK train in psychotherapy, and Dr Coleman (1994) describes her surprise in the 1980s upon discovering that the effect of sexual abuse as children was the core of many of

her patients' psychiatric problems.

[10] ChildLine is the UK's free, 24-hour helpline for children in distress or danger. Trained volunteer counselors comfort, advise and protect children and young people who may feel they have nowhere else to turn. ChildLine operates out of ten counselling centres around the UK: Belfast, Glasgow, Leeds, London, Nottingham, Manchester, Swansea, Rhyl, Birmingham and Newton Abbot.

[11] Caryn Stardancer is the survivor who launched Survivorship, a journal and web site for survivors of ritualistic abuse, mind control and torture, and their allies. (http://www.survivorship.org).

[12] The British False Memory Society has a Scientific Board and is similar to the False Memory Society in the United States. The report of their 1998 AGM mentioned they were seeking new funds because a grant from the Department of Health had ended.

[13] Professor Brandon blamed the 'survivor group' movement for the development of recovered memories, and cited Judith Herman and Bass & Davis. He linked recovered memories in the same bracket as alien abduction and multiple personality disorder. He stated that the Royal College report into recovered memory decided there was not massive repression, techniques used by therapists were questionable and patients were asked to search for memories. He stated that abuse was suggested to them and they were encouraged to join survivor groups, even with no memory of abuse.

[14] Professor McHugh is a member of the Scientific Advisory Board of the American False Memory Society. He presented one of his own studies, that involved 24 patients who presented alter personalities. He stated there were strong reasons for doubting the reality of Multiple Personality Disorder. He found that it was not hard to persuade his patients to retract, and 75% did. He said they all had a significant psychiatric disorder in addition to presenting with alter personalities.

CHAPTER 11

Ritual Abuse: A Personal Account and the Unpublished Police Guidelines

Carole Mallard

In 1989 I was a uniform police sergeant in the Metropolitan Police working in a very cosmopolitan area of Northwest London, on a Child Protection Team covering the Borough of Brent. I had been 'head hunted' for the position due to my previous experience with child abuse issues during my then 20 years police service and because I was respected for my reliability and professionalism. It was probably the most rewarding yet most stressful time in my 30-year career. I retired in January 1999. I could have continued for probably a further 5 years, but I felt mentally and physically drained and decided to retrain in something completely different.

Our team was newly formed, working jointly with Social Services. This was a relatively new system brought about because of past mistakes made due to poor co-operation between the agencies. I had never heard of or encountered a case involving sadistic, ritual or satanic abuse, nor had my colleagues including my boss Rob Lawrence (not real name). He was a Detective Inspector with 20 years experience dealing with the most serious of crimes in the Criminal Investigation Department (C.I.D.). He had served a total of 24 years as a police officer.

An interesting thing happened in September 1989. Three colleagues were to attend a Child Protection Conference in Reading, Berkshire. A telephone call was received in our office from a police officer in Nottingham, in the form of a warning; not to take notice of a presentation about ritual abuse at that conference because it was just social workers getting carried away with their imaginations. We thought it rather odd for officers in another part of the country to go to the trouble of seeking out delegates who were attending and advise them in such a way. It later made some sense when I heard about the Broxtowe case (see Sandra Buck's contribution). My colleagues went to the conference open-minded and briefed us on their return about various presentations they attended, including the one on ritual abuse. There was some skepticism and astonishment by all of our team when

they informed us of its content. Little did I know that a few months down the line; I would need to access this information.

About six months later I became involved in a case where a mother of 6 children reported that her eldest son had sexually abused a sister; this was relatively rare. A joint investigation commenced and I was the officer in charge of the case. The situation escalated, involving a younger son possibly sexually abusing another sister. This was a needy family requiring a lot of support. Unfortunately various social workers ended up being assigned to the case and I was the only constant worker with the family. Consequently the mother would frequently turn to me and Rob Lawrence rather than the social workers. This was to be pivotal to the case and would change my life forever! The mother Anita (not her real name) often rang me daily to share various things happening at home including several crises. Co-incidentally I happened to be in the right place at the right time to help them, so she then had complete trust in us.

Anita displayed some ‘odd’ behavior during this time that became clear to me later. She frequently went into a trance-like state and I thought she was ignoring something I was saying. I would give her a nudge and say, “Anita I’m talking to you!” She would then respond to me. A few years later I realized this was dissociation. When she sat opposite Rob, who had blue eyes, she would also go into a trance, so he would have to sit next to her to avoid eye contact. She kept having dreams involving blood and knives and said she feared she might harm her younger son. I kept removing sharp knives as a safety precaution and I ended up with about 6 in my office drawer. I took her out for lunch on a couple of occasions for a burger when things got too much for her. I noticed she would not actually eat the meat; she would eat the bun, pick around the burger eating the rest. I chastised her for not eating properly; she seemed to fill up on bread and biscuits. Anita seemed to be mesmerized by flies and would be completely distracted from the conversation. On one occasion I was trying to do a video interview with her youngest daughter and needed some help from Anita to settle the child in front of the camera. She wouldn’t even enter the room and said she hated cameras; she did not explain any further. Also when her eldest son got in trouble with the local police, Anita attended the station to collect her son. I got a call from the custody officer worried about her disturbed state when a uniformed officer got close to her. I explained to the officer that she had an abusive background and not to be too concerned. She subsequently explained that something happened to her involving a ‘policeman’ and she was frightened of uniforms and normally could not trust people wearing them.

After about 5 months of dealing with various incidents involving all the children, including the 2 boys going into care, Anita started doing some simple

drawings because she said she could not read or write very well. They were extremely telling and they clearly showed something terrible had happened to her as a child. Gradually she started to talk about her past. At first she only implicated her uncle; then her maternal grandmother came into the picture, responsible for aborting two of Anita's pregnancies after being raped by the uncle. Subsequently Anita told me other men were also involved and her drawings clearly showed the circumstances; including being photographed. By this time the Social Services had become overwhelmed by her requests for support for the whole family. Anita felt the need to disclose the full truth of her background. Mr. Lawrence and I decided to carry out some taped interviews with her. We were concerned that serious crimes were involved. These crimes happened out of our jurisdiction.

We decided to start during a weekend when we were 'on call,' to avoid the interviews interfering with our heavy workload. Anita came to our office and we tried to make her feel comfortable because she was very nervous. We ensured she did not have eye contact with Rob to prevent her going into a trance on seeing his blue eyes. Rob wanted her to explain what her life was like from day-to-day, not just the abuse. He asked her to think back as far as possible and we were stunned when she said her earliest memories were of abuse from about three years of age, possibly before that. The fact was her life was so full of abuse, mental, physical and sexual; it was a very cruel environment and she knew nothing else.

An amazing thing happened for us; this mid thirties woman spoke in a childlike way. She even corrected us if a question was put that was too 'adult' because she would not have understood at that age. This was something we had no knowledge of and had never encountered before. Rob continued for about 45 minutes, the length of the tape. We had not progressed very far and it was a painstaking process. We thought we could get a full history of her life in probably 3 to 4 tapes, but we were very wrong; we got to 38 interview tapes! Anita's behavior started to make sense to us after hearing about her childhood. The trance-like state was either dissociation or a trigger into a memory. The fear of cameras was because she had been abused and tortured whilst being photographed. Her eating habits were affected because she had been made to eat human flesh, drink blood and ingest other unpleasant matter. The flies now showed importance because she was told as a small child, that flies could report back to her 'group' everything she did and said. So there was no escape from their power over her; she felt they watched her every move. The knives related to a vow that she had been forced to make, to kill her younger son when he reached the age of thirteen. A blue eye symbol was significant in her group, hence the dissociation when she had eye contact with Rob.

We did some interviews after normal working hours or again at weekends. Her disclosures were slow and very painful for her with lots of pauses; she needed a lot

of reassurance to continue at times. Yet she always wanted to continue. She felt a weight lifted from her shoulders and found the process therapeutic. We were out of our depth on a number of occasions, not understanding the belief system and needed help. We referred to the papers brought back from the Reading Conference and found Maureen Davies (1991) listed. I made contact with her and she was of enormous help; we couldn't have managed without her. She has remained a friend ever since.

Anita's disclosures covered the most horrendous abuse we had ever heard, including torturous murders and sadistic sexual assaults on adults and children. Her mother, father, grandfather and uncle were involved too. She described travelling, probably whilst drugged, to various locations, including a boat journey across the sea where they met with other groups and similar ceremonies took place. Her group wore robes with hoods and the other groups wore different robes. Different ethnic groups were involved too and she described in detail a black boy being abused and killed. Anita never got above the age of 10 in her disclosures, which is significant because in the U.K. 10 is the age of criminal responsibility. She was very wary of incriminating herself, because we were the police and could arrest her. Anita did however describe killing animals and babies herself with a dagger, all whilst under the age of 10. These were committed due to her utter fear of what they would do to her if she didn't comply and through indoctrination during childhood. She went through genuine anguish and disgust when she spoke about the killings, but because we did not condemn her in any way, she found the interviews therapeutic and wanted to continue her life story. Unfortunately we were never to fully establish what she did beyond 10 because we were ordered to stop by senior officers.

Rob and I were suddenly under intense scrutiny for doing the interviews. We were also told that our colleagues had complained about us. The nature of the complaint was never properly identified to us. The subject matter of ritual abuse didn't help because some team members couldn't believe Anita's disclosures and thought our judgement was flawed. Our credibility was now in question. We were told that we had lost our objectivity, were too involved with the case, spending too much time on them. They said that her disclosures were not relevant to our responsibilities as Child Protection officers. By discontinuing the interviews Anita was left in the midst of disclosing, with no support, and we felt it would be wrong to stop at this point. Also we had feared that Anita may have been abusing her children or others in some way and there were issues of ensuring children were protected. Rob was asked to submit a report giving more detail of crimes involved and he also asked to be allowed to finish off the interviews and for senior officers to discuss the contents with us. He made some inquiries to see if any other cases of

this type had been dealt with. To our surprise, he found information about several others including one that was still being investigated in East London. Rob identified the evidence obtained from Anita, but she was telling us things that happened over a 30-year period. The report was submitted, and after a month we heard nothing. So late one evening we went hunting for the report to see where it had gone, but we could find no trace of it whatsoever. It had not been registered in any logs and was not in any senior officers' trays. No further discussion ever took place over the report or the interviews; it was as if they had never existed! The senior officers were more interested in criticizing our management skills and we were both told we had to leave. It was done in such a way that you we could not accuse them of a 'cover up.' We did do one last interview with Anita, to explain that we had to stop and wanted to let her down gently. We desperately needed to establish whether she was a risk to children. She hinted that as an adult she had committed serious crimes but declared no current involvement. We doubted that after years of indoctrination she would no longer be involved. We could not pursue it any further because of our orders.

Rob was moved within weeks to an adjacent area and thankfully they gave me some time to find a position that I would like to do. I took some six months to find something. Rob suggested I find something that was less stressful with regular hours and to forget about the subject completely. I pointed out that it was too important a subject to ignore and was very worried about children being victims of such horrendous abuse. I felt strongly that I had to do something about it. We had previously approached the head of Obscene Publications at New Scotland Yard for some assistance and he had some knowledge of the subject. I made him aware of my interest and rang him from time to time to see if there might be an opening. Eventually by late 1991 some internal research covering Organized abuse and Ritualistic abuse was authorized by the Commissioner and I had a job!

I had to work from Scotland Yard with two other officers as part of the research project working within the department known as the Obscene Publications Unit. They were very experienced at dealing with child pornography and pedophiles amongst other things. Our main objective was to produce guidelines for officers who might deal with a Ritual case in the future. We also aimed to produce questionnaires so that information could be collated and entered on a database. We were supposed to comment as to whether Ritual or Satanic abuse was genuine, but because of a Department of Health report by Professor Jean La Fontaine (HMSO 1994) was being carried out at the same time, the Home Office requested that aspect must be for her to establish.

We supported Professor La Fontaine's research by ensuring her questionnaire packages went to all our Child Protection teams throughout the Metropolitan Police

and ensured they were completed and passed on to her. We extracted information from them for our own research with the intention only to look at cases within our own area. I expected our team to speak to anyone who had direct knowledge of Ritual or Satanic abuse, especially those who might have been the first to hear disclosures from children. I had originally been promised the use of a computer to store our data and had hoped that after the research was completed that the database could be continued. When the other two colleagues joined me at Scotland Yard, they thought it was unnecessary to have a database and only wanted to interview police officers; excluding social workers, professionals and carers, all who could have important information. I asked Rob Lawrence to come and persuade my colleagues to support my arguments for keeping the computer and the need for interviewing everyone connected to a case. He did manage to convince them because fortunately he was still a respected detective.

We engaged a woman officer with computer skills because at that time we were novices with computers and it allowed us freedom to get on with meeting witnesses. The press heard about the research and were trying to find out my identity. The publicity also meant a number of people were ringing us with information. Some were survivors of ritual abuse; some were professionals, police officers and support groups. Once the research was under way, we found some cases had links elsewhere and occasionally a person interviewed would make us aware of another case in another part of the country. So we extended the research further afield. We looked at 17 cases in the Metropolitan area and 23 elsewhere making a total of 40.

I traveled virtually the length and breadth of England, Scotland and Wales. All the information from the questionnaires was put into the database. I made a point of meeting survivors when I could; I thought it was very important. Videotapes of the interviews were made with at least two survivors. I have to express my complete admiration and respect for all the survivors I have met; they have suffered so much in their lives. My colleagues did not feel it necessary and made it clear to me they thought I had been taken in by the subject and ostracized me most of the time. In the end I avoided getting into any discussions with them and just got on with my job. Once all the interviews were completed the material had to be collated and made into suitable guidelines. One of my colleagues was given that task; I was not included, I think because I was seen as being too biased in my views.

During the research the National Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children (NSPCC) consulted with our team and offered their assistance in any way, including help with compiling the report. In the early 1990’s there were a number of newspaper reports about the NSPCC expressing great concern over child abuse

involving bizarre sex and satanic rituals (Jukes & Duce, 1990). They had publicly stated from their own research that they had encountered 6 cases of ritual abuse (Creighton, 1993). Yet interestingly, immediately following the publication of Professor La Fontaine's report, during a radio interview they took a less forthright stance. Christopher Brown, Director of the NSPCC, said on Radio 4, B.B.C.: "We have no evidence for so called Satanism. Whether it exists or not, I don't know. We have no evidence for it within the NSPCC, but we do have evidence of a small number of children who have been abused within a context of some kind of ritual" (1994, June 2).

What I did work on however following a passing remark by Professor La Fontaine, was a chart comparing elements of all the 40 cases. It took many hours of manual trawling of the information we had obtained. It was to be added to the end of the report and guidelines as an appendix. At the beginning of January 1993 I was told that due to various internal administrative changes my attachment to the Obscene Publications unit had ended and I would have to return to ordinary duty. By March I had a position as a uniform sergeant at Whetstone Northwest London, which had nothing to do with child protection at all. The day I left New Scotland Yard I was assured that I would be invited back to act as a 'consultant' on the report. I never heard another word from them. My two colleagues were left writing the report; I know it was completed because another trusted colleague saw it and was asked to assist in 'fine tuning' the content. Unfortunately due to work commitments he was unable to finish the task and I have no definitive conclusions or details from that document. The report there is under lock and key held somewhere by the Metropolitan Police and has never been published; why, you may well ask? I cannot answer that, I can only speculate. However Professor La Fontaine's report was published (1994) and she identified only 3 out of 84 cases she looked at as being ritual but not satanic; where self-proclaimed mystical/magical powers were used to entrap children for purposes of sexual abuse.

Although I had a copy of my chart when I left the research team, believing I would be consulted over the contents of the report and guidelines, I had to hand it back in 2001. A serving officer, who had started to take an interest in some more recent ritual abuse cases tried to obtain a copy of the research guidelines and inadvertently let slip he had seen a chart that I had. Senior officers felt it should not be in my possession. I am only therefore able to recall some facts from memory. I think the major statistic was 82% of the alleged perpetrators were women. In child protection terms, that is a phenomenal proportion and would make massive headlines if published. Cruelty and torture was involved in 70% of the cases; 70% involved substance abuse (drugs, alcohol, solvents); 60% involved the use of knives or daggers; 60% involved allegations of human sacrifice; just under 60%

involved animal sacrifices and over 50% involved taking photographs or videos. As far as some medical or behavioral disorders were concerned there were very high percentages of sleeping problems, phobic anxiety and dissociation.

A number of people have asked about the report or to see it. Interestingly they have been given different explanations as to its location or whether it was ever completed. You might think that having spent so much of my time obtaining the data, I would have been shown the document if only out of courtesy. This research took up the time of 3 officers, a computer operator and a senior officer supervising the team. We had travel, overtime, expenses and other sundry costs for a period of about 18 months; it must have been a very expensive paper exercise.

I also met many dedicated professionals during my travels, some were members of Ritual Abuse Information Network and Support (RAINS) co-ordinated by Dr. Joan Coleman, now a retired psychiatrist, who asked me to join, which I later did. It would have been inappropriate to join before I had completed my research. During my last 6 years of police service I tried to network with other police colleagues who were dealing with current or past ritual cases. I also felt cautious with officers I spoke to, as I was aware of allegations of involvement in 'cults' by police officers, including cover-ups. I have been available to give advice from a police perspective to other professionals too.

Following the conclusion of the research, I truly believed that it would probably only take a couple of years for something to break and make the public and media believe ritual abuse. One big case with a conviction would do it! We have had a number of cases that have gone before a court, but some newspapers manage to discredit the subject whenever they can. They seem to have their own agenda and frequently repeat the same old platitudes. Where there has been a conviction involving detail of ritualistic activity, the case is described as a pedophile ring. If there is no conviction and there are clear descriptions of ritualistic activity, it gets discredited as 'yet another myth or fantasy believed by the gullible,' or it might be labeled as recovered memory where the psychiatrists/therapists get the blame for putting ideas into the victim's head. Also some professionals get very personal attacks in the press to detract from the subject matter; complete character assassinations.

So here we are 10 years down the line and no further forward, yet the media accept ritual abuse if it relates to another country or if the victim is black, like the 'Torso in the Thames case,' still being investigated by the Metropolitan Police. In August 2001, a black boy aged about 5 years was found floating in the River Thames; his headless torso has not been identified but genetic information has led Police to believe he came from West Africa. It has been described as a Voodoo sacrifice, a muti sacrifice, a witchcraft sacrifice, a sacrificial killing and ritual

killing in the U.K. press. Police are still investigating suspects (Bowcott, 2003). This story has not been discredited because it is seen as a ‘foreign crime’ relating to West Africa.

I am still waiting for that major case to break.

References

Bowcott, O (2003,October 7) Thames torso boy was fed toxic bean. *The Guardian.* Retrieved November 10, 2003 from: http://www.guardian.co.uk/uk_news/story/0,3604,1064715,00.html

Creighton, S.J. (1993). Organised abuse: NSPCC experience. *Child Abuse Review* vol. 2: 232–242

Davies, M (1991). *Helping individuals & agencies deal with problems of ritual abuse and the occult.* Rhyl: Beacon Foundation

Jukes, L. & Duce, R. (1990, March 13) NSPCC says ritual child abuse rife. *The Times*. p.3

La Fontaine J.S (1994). *The extent and nature of organized and ritual abuse, Research findings.* London: Her Majesty’s Stationery Office (HMSO).

CHAPTER 12

The Orkney “Satanic Abuse” Case: Who Cared About the Children?

Sarah Nelson

Introduction

Five years after the dramatic Orkney “dawn raids” of February l99l, when nine children from four families were removed into care by social workers and police, I telephoned one social worker to check a detail about this so-called satanic abuse case, which was publicized in many countries. She had briefly assisted in removing children from one of the families who lived on these remote islands, north of the Scottish mainland.

“I expect you’ve wanted to put Orkney out of your mind, instead of continually having people ask you about it,” I apologized. There was a startled silence. “Oh no no,” she replied with emotion. “There’s not been a single day since when I haven’t thought about those children.”

Earlier another child protection worker had described what was most distressing to her about the whole “Orkney affair.” It was neither the disturbing testimony of some children she interviewed, nor the heavily-publicized criticism of her own interviewing methods, nor the many difficult days she faced on the Orkney Inquiry’s witness stand. It was watching one small girl cross the tarmac from the plane to a huge cheering crowd, to her own parents and a host of TV cameras at Kirkwall airport, after a Scottish judge had dismissed the case in court and the children were all returned home. “It broke my heart absolutely,” she said. “We had failed her, and I will never be able to get that sight out of my mind.”

Buried in Lord Clyde’s Inquiry Report (Clyde, 1992) is an account of this little girl’s behavior at her foster parents’ house when she heard that she was being returned home.

> She had been given a parcel containing cards and articles from Orkney, but she flung them all on the floor as if in a fit of rage. She was extremely distressed. She cried and indulged in very aggressive behaviour which was quite unlike her, smashing a doll on the ground. She started sucking her thumb. She seemed shocked and bewildered.
>
> She said she did not want to go home and stood like a wooden doll refusing to get dressed. She left the foster carer’s house in tears. On the journey home she engaged in bizarre behavior unlike anything which she had shown before. (Clyde, 1992, p. 206)

An eight-year-old boy from another family, when told he was returning home, asked his foster mother if it meant all the bad things would not happen any more. He began telling her of things that had happened in a quarry, indicated he had been handled sexually, and said he was worried about games that were played at home. "…the foster mother found the occasion very upsetting."

Although these details about the children's words and behavior are published in the Inquiry Report, they are not in the recollection of the great majority of the British public and media. Their picture of what Orkney was "about" has been very different, and the images scorched on the minds of the two workers are not the same as theirs. Most media coverage and public perception was of ridiculous, unjustified action taken against innocent parents by over-zealous professionals. Nor does the public image of heartless or faceless staff fit with their commitment. Like staff involved in other highly publicized child abuse cases, their continuing preoccupation has been with the children at the heart of the affair. This makes them unusual, for the most striking feature of the whole Orkney saga was how marginal real children became, and how little they featured on most people's agenda—whether they were legal professionals, politicians, civil servants, journalists or members of the public.

This chapter first outlines a brief history of the dispute, before considering some features of media reporting of the case. It asks whether the judicial conclusions, which led to more cautious interpretations of children's reliability in Scotland, were fundamentally flawed. It examines the ways in which the interests of real children were marginalized, and asks what "child-centered" issues the Inquiry might instead have recommended to be pursued and properly funded.

History of the Dispute

Space only permits here a summary of the main features of the Orkney affair, which occupied many reams of newsprint and 350 pages of a judicial report. Names have been changed below: initials only of parents' and children's names were used in the published judicial report.

In November 1990 a teenage girl in the large, disadvantaged Webb family living in South Ronaldsay, Orkney, alleged sexual contact by older siblings and by a minister of the Presbyterian Church. Seven of her younger siblings were removed into care by social workers under Place of Safety Orders.

Between this time and February l991 a public campaign by some Orkney people against the children's continuation in care included the local Presbyterian clergyman Rev McKee and his wife, the local doctor, the Mills parents and Mrs. Trent. Social workers felt concerned by the huge volume of correspondence some

of these people sent to the Webb children, and by many puzzling messages and symbols it contained.

In February l991, during interviews by RSSPCC (Royal Scottish Society for Prevention of Cruelty to Children) interviewers and police officers, three young Webb children made separate allegations of organized sexual abuse and strange outdoor rituals on South Ronaldsay, Orkney. These were said to involve many adults and children, including the clergyman and the Mills, Trent, Biggs and Hall families. Costumes, musical equipment, trailers and a "hooker" (a type of shepherd's crook) were mentioned.

On February 27, 1991, at 7 am, Orkney social work department assisted by two mainland social work departments, along with police officers, removed nine children from the four families (Mills, Trent, Biggs and Hall) under Place of Safety Orders, and flew them to placements on the Scottish mainland. The grounds for referral of the children made reference to group sexual activities including "ritualistic music, dancing and dress." Parental access was refused along with most personal possessions. Parents and the minister were questioned by the police. All four families were English "incomers" to Orkney (as was the Webb family); three were of middle class background.

A major campaign by the parents and others, including the local doctor, was immediately launched against the children's removal, with high-profile Scottish and English media involvement, largely in support of the parents, who were very articulate in protesting their innocence. The media appeared to make the first use of the phrase "satanic abuse" and the police were said to have impounded objects such as a book with a goat's head on the cover, which invited ridicule.

During March and April l991 the nine children were interviewed repeatedly by RSSPCC staff and police. Information from interviews of five of the children confirmed some aspects of the Webb children's allegations. In April l991 the proof hearing was heard by Sheriff David Kelbie. (In Scotland, a sheriff is a type of judge who hears a range of cases, but not in the highest courts.) He held that the proceedings had been incompetent, calling the case "fatally flawed," and the evidence was never heard. Nor has it ever been heard subsequently in any civil or criminal court. On the same day the children were returned home to their parents amid huge publicity.

In June l991, after the Crown Office (prosecution service) announced that no criminal proceedings would be taken against the church minister or any parents, the government announced a public inquiry under Lord Clyde. Its remit was to inquire into the actions of the authorities relating to the decision to take Place of Safety Orders; the removal of children from home, and their detention in places of safety;

and to make recommendations. It was not to inquire into the truth or falsehood of the sexual abuse allegations.

Between August l991 and March l992 the Inquiry sat in public in Kirkwall, heard evidence from 75 witnesses and took numerous oral and written submissions. In October l992 Lord Clyde's report was published. It emphasized that all officials acted in good faith and aimed to make constructive proposals for the future. However the report's 135 summary comments were overwhelmingly critical of the authorities' conduct of the case including their advance planning, coordination, their care planning and interview techniques. The report made more than 190 recommendations for future practice.

These ranged over investigation, removal of children, rights and standards when children are detained, treatment of foster carers, medical examinations, interviewing of children, the role of children's reporter and panels and the role of the social work profession. (In Scotland the reporter is a key child protection official for children; the children's panel is a type of welfare-oriented court, staffed by lay people). Many recommendations influenced the subsequent Children Act of l995 and hence they had long-term effects. The Act saw changes in child protection orders, a tightening of conditions surrounding such orders, more powers for sheriffs, and provision for removing suspected abusers from home.

The Role of the Media

The media's role in controversial sex abuse cases is important. In Britain, hostile publicity against social workers and other professionals in highly publicized child abuse cases like Orkney, Rochdale (another alleged satanic ritual abuse case) or Cleveland (where the abuse diagnoses of two pediatricians came under attack, 1987-88) have made a disproportionate impact on child protection practice. They affect legislation, guidelines and procedures. Equally important, they intimidate many professionals from taking action on behalf of children, or speaking what they believe is the truth. They heavily influence public opinion, often for many years, about truth and falsehood in sexual abuse (for instance, does ritual abuse exist or is it just the product of fevered social work imaginations?) No case in Scotland that I can recall since that time of 1991-92 has publicly invoked any mention of ritual or satanist abuse even if this has been believed by the authorities to be an element in the case.

In Orkney the agenda for public discourse and understanding was set soon after the dawn raids, and the media played a crucial role in determining it. Uncritical acceptance by many journalists of disinformation and apparently planted stories foreshadowed features of the "false memory syndrome" debate to come.

Journalists who tried to keep an open mind on the allegations of abuse were themselves an isolated minority.

However the media were not the only influences—they interacted with officials and the public to generate one version of reality and one set of memories of what the case was about. Biased reporting was much encouraged by Orkney social work department's refusal to engage with the media and to give the public any alternative information. Divisions between "natives" and "incomers" set up barriers to local knowledge, for many people came to settle in the Orkney Islands from other parts of the UK. People would say that everyone knew each other's business, but in fact the two communities often led separate lives.

Most media coverage (especially in the early weeks of the crisis) apart from the specialist social work press was very sympathetic to the suspected parents and minister, and heavily critical of the authorities. The ritual abuse allegations were widely seen as incredible and ridiculous, the dawn raids as particularly heartless. (Ironically the timing of the raid was one of the few things which Lord Clyde's inquiry did *not* criticize.)

Some media coverage reached fanciful proportions. The language in this extract may be more flowery than usual but the degree of sympathy displayed was widespread. Describing the Mills parents after their children were removed, a *Scotland on Sunday* journalist wrote:

> Jane is thoughtful, articulate and determined, and would best be played by a younger, more vibrant Anna Massey. John—enthusiastic, helpful, deeply troubled—would be William Hurt. …since she lost her children, Jane says, all her senses have been heightened. "I see every feather on a bird more clearly. I see every drop of rain showing on the trees." …Jane sums up their time together. "We fell in love, we got married and we lived happily ever after. Then they took our children away." (Ferguson, 1991)

Information relevant to the crisis, such as the history of child protection failures in Orkney in the years preceding the raids, and the suspension of Orkney children's panel reporter Katherine Kemp over perceived failure to protect the Webb children, fell off a media agenda which it did not fit. These issues were discussed in print by only a few isolated journalists.

Because most English and international media disappeared after the first few weeks, only reappearing at the end of the Inquiry, any challenging evidence which appeared had little coverage outside Scotland. Tabloids and broadsheet coverage did not differ widely, perhaps because most suspected adults were respectable, articulate middle class people, with whom "quality" press writers and senior staff

closely identified. “People like us,” it appeared, were being accused of unspeakable things.

There was in addition a much more hostile strand of the media, personified by the *Mail on Sunday* newspaper, which had a right wing populist agenda and appeared to be conducting an ideological crusade against social workers in general. There was a striking contrast between its heavy criticisms of social workers and the easy passage given to the police who were part of the joint operation. Like the *Independent on Sunday,* where particular journalists such as Rosie Waterhouse repeatedly attempted to discredit ritual abuse (for instance Waterhouse, 1991). The *Mail on Sunday* was also particularly scathing about the existence of “satanic” ritual abuse.

The friendly and trusting links forged early on between the suspected parents —who made rapid and skillful use of media connections—and many journalists meant their claims were widely accepted as fact without checking. For instance most media took on trust that the quarry where abuse was alleged to have happened was where the parents indicated (behind one of their homes). Yet the police, social workers and RSSPCC always believed that outdoor sites for abuse were elsewhere on South Ronaldsay, which is characterized by flat farming land, beaches and shallow, water-filled old quarries.

As an experienced journalist, I also encountered a puzzling scent of organized media manipulation on Orkney, which I had not met before. The claims and stories which popped up appeared quite similar to those in other organized sex abuse cases. There were also “pat” accounts of the “satanic abuse scare” which had apparently swept across the Atlantic from the United States, and which had its supposed origins in an unholy coalition of feminists and religious fundamentalists, which became so familiar and uniform that I could have written them with my eyes shut and standing on my head. Even at the tenth anniversary of the Orkney case these tales kept reappearing. For instance they were repeated in the *Sunday Herald* on 25 February 2001:

> South Ronaldsay is where the ritual sexual abuse theory leapt from the pages of social work journals and entered the popular lexicon of the nation. …A psychiatrist Roland Summit’s controversial idea was that organized, ritualistic abuse of children was happening everywhere. …it was out there and all social workers had to do was go and find it. And they did so with a passion of a zealot rooting out evil. The idea crossed the Atlantic gaining professional credibility as it spread like wildfire. (Crichton, 2001) *Flapping on demonic wings, presumably.*

In reporting these stories many journalists seemed to lose their normal critical faculties. These are three examples:

1. A series of occult bookshop newsletters, apparently published in Leeds, often crudely photocopied and with varying titles including *The Lamp of Thoth*, circulated widely on the islands in 1991 and were sent anonymously to elected Orkney councilors. “At last the full truth about the satanic abuse allegations can be revealed!” they dramatically claimed. Whole sections of their propaganda and angry claims about worldwide conspiracies by social workers or evangelical Christians appeared to be repeated as fact in some media—despite coming from such a highly partial source. No one appeared to question the sudden appearance of these magazines on Orkney, nor the veracity of their allegations. The claim that professionals were out to make large sums of money and prestige careers from the satanic child abuse industry seemed contradicted by experience—professionals found that admitting to belief in satanic ritual abuse was anything but beneficial to their careers and in some cases spelled the end of those careers.
2. Claims or innuendo were also repeatedly stated that one born-again Christian basic grade social worker influenced Orkney social work department and the police into carrying out the dawn raids. This was implied too in the BBC Scotland TV docu-drama (or “faction” program) *Flowers of the Forest* broadcast on October 26,1996. The obvious fact was ignored that even had the social worker sought this far-reaching act, he lacked any professional power or status to succeed!
3. Untruths from unknown sources also appeared to be planted. On Orkney, journalists were told that the distinguished American child abuse expert Professor Roland Summit was to blame (along with Christian zealots) for inspiring witch-hunts by social workers in Orkney and internationally (see the Crichton quote above). This *ad hominem* attack appeared strikingly similar to the way that the feminist authors Bass and Davis were later singled out for attack by advocates of the false memory syndrome as being to blame for the wave of recovered memories by adult women (Bass & Davis, 1988). It was claimed that Summit had said that if children denied abuse, this meant it had probably happened. This is a distortion of his most famous paper, “The Child Sexual Abuse Accommodation Syndrome” (Summit, 1983).

Strangely, this exact claim surfaced on October 3, l994 in a *New Yorker* editorial: “A psychiatrist named Roland Summit explained to the jury in the Kelly

Michaels case that when children deny sexual abuse happened, the denial can be evidence that the abuses actually did occur."

Summit replied to the newspaper that he had been wholly uninvolved in this American case and had said nothing to the jury. "It would be fatuous to argue that denial is really confirmation in disguise. I have never said such a thing anywhere." These events and the subsequent correspondence between Summit and the newspaper are chronicled in detail in Freyd (1996).

Disinformation relied on lazy journalism, media gullibility, and the "pack mentality" of journalists who flew in and out of Kirkwall airport. But it is too simplistic to hold the media entirely responsible. Journalists often simply reflected the greater public of which they were part. At that time the possibility that middle class parents and respectable clergy might also abuse children was rarely considered. Very few people then had heard anything about organized, let alone ritual, abuse.

Besides, not everyone was receiving only one side of the story. For Scots at least, evidence to the Inquiry was reported in detail every day in the broadsheet newspapers, and usually on radio and TV. To pick three examples, the public read that a remarkable volume of correspondence had been sent by several suspected adults to the children of the original family held in care, that these contained peculiar, inappropriate messages, that strange objects like hammers were also posted to these young children. Secondly, they read that when police conducted the dawn raid on the minister's house, they recovered from inside his bed a child's hot water bottle belonging to an 8-year-old abused boy from the Webb family. This had the boy's name on it along with a sexual reference. No explanation of this singular find was ever given.

Thirdly, when the foster parents took the Inquiry stand, they gave much detail about unusual, disturbing and bizarre words and behavior by several children from three of the four families. These included blasphemous chants, violent and frightening plays, an obsession with killing and death, and realistic enactment of childbirth.

For example, when there was a power failure in the home of the foster mother of one eight-year-old boy, on the day that he arrived, she lit candles. The boy passed his hand through the flame saying, "I like hurting myself. I like killing people." When light was restored the foster mother exclaimed, "Let there be light!" to which the boy replied: "May the light not be upon us and God not be with us." Full details of such incidents are given in Lord Clyde's report, along with all the original allegations from three Webb children.

Yet none of this information appeared to impact upon the public. A research study by Jenny Kitzinger found that most people they interviewed about the

Orkney affair had little recollection or impression beyond the dawn raids and a bungled operation by social workers. They recalled almost nothing about the lengthy Inquiry or evidence given to it (Kitzinger, 2000). It thus seems that people are able to reject, ignore or fail to notice evidence which might challenge the judgments they have already made about cases involving child sexual abuse.

The third vital element in the Orkney affair was the attitude of the authorities to communicating with the public through the media. Orkney social work department took to extremes the usual official caution and reticence and formed part of an island council which was traditionally secretive and fearful, inexperienced and unprepared for an onslaught of media interest. The department failed to communicate for some time even with the sympathetic specialist social work press. (I was working for such a journal and at the height of the crisis I sat on the steps of the social work department and declined to budge until someone would speak to me.) Thus while accused adults used the media skillfully, journalists simply could not obtain “the other side of the story” even when they wished to do so.

While the children’s charity the RSSPCC was more forthcoming off the record and also voiced its belief in ritual abuse off the record, it quickly adopted a damage limitation strategy, rather than attempting to justify its role in Orkney. It dropped its investigative role in child sexual abuse (a role which is still maintained by the equivalent organization in England), it publicly played down its belief in the existence of ritual abuse, changed its name to Children 1st, and like Orkney and Strathclyde social work departments, has declined to comment publicly on the case since.

Such collective silences by agencies, in highly publicized cases, continue to make an impact, and to raise serious questions for child protection (Nelson, 1998). Most social workers, police, and major childcare charities still remain extremely cautious about media publicity more than a decade later, wounded and distrustful of journalists and public after savage media scapegoating in cases like Cleveland, Orkney and Rochdale. In contrast, accused adults continue to use the media to publicize their causes.

Agencies’ refusal to comment deprives the public of information which would help them reach their own judgments on the evidence. Statutory and voluntary childcare agencies are the public faces of child protection. They speak for many child and adult survivors who cannot do so. If they will not stand up to be counted and face the consequences, then, it might be asked, who else will?

Were Far-Reaching Verdicts Correct?

In Orkney the separate testimonies of three Webb children, which led directly to the dawn raids, formed the basis for one of the report's most far-reaching and most-quoted recommendations, that investigators "must not fall into the trap of confusing the taking of what a child says seriously with believing what the child has said."

This in effect gives comfort and succor to those who still believe children often fantasize or even lie about sexual abuse. It also makes investigating authorities more cautious. In my own academic research subsequently on various aspects of child sexual abuse, I have encountered, more than ten years after the Orkney case, in 2003, pediatricians who still speak nervously of Cleveland (1987-88) as a reason to be extremely cautious in inquiring about possible sexual abuse in an injured child; and schoolteachers who still quote Orkney (1991-92) as a reason not to inquire directly, of a child showing certain symptoms, if someone has sexually harmed them.

Given, then, the serious consequences of Lord Clyde's recommendation for future child protection, conclusions drawn about these Webb children's credibility would have had to be particularly sound and convincing. But were Lord Clyde's recommendations instead, to borrow a phrase from Sheriff Kelbie, "fatally flawed"?

The basis for this recommendation lay overwhelmingly in the Inquiry team's judgment of statements and drawings made by three Webb children, aged from six to eight, in February l991. The report details the verbal allegations in full, and describes the drawings.

Undoubtedly social workers and police should have undertaken more detailed investigation of the adults and children named by the Webbs before deciding what action, if any, to take. But this was not the basis for this recommendation. Instead this centered on the fact that the Webb children came from a family with a history of abuse, "which was likely to have affected their development."

Professional assessment of the children by a psychologist or psychiatrist would have been prudent, says the Inquiry report, to consider:

> Whether their perception of reality had been in any way coloured or affected by the (their) abusive experiences… what might have seemed real to them might well not accord with what was real to others. It was not impossible that innocent incidents could have taken on a sexual overtone in their imaginations… (Clyde, 1992, p. 223)

The message is familiar. Mixed-up children with histories of abuse need their minds tested before we take their matter-of-fact statements as matters of fact. But

there are several problems about using such arguments in this case.

First, the Webb children had more of a history of reticence about sexual abuse in their family than of fabrication or fantasy. Some of their previous allegations about their own family were substantiated. One older boy took two years to admit to a residential school his history of sadistic physical and sexual abuse by his father.

Secondly, the report rightly criticized the fact that the nine children from the other families were not treated as individuals. But the report itself failed to consider the three Webb youngsters as individuals, treating them instead as a single entity.

There were remarkable similarities in the very detailed accounts of places, events, activities, trappings and names by three children who had been kept apart for several months (apart from one brief supervised meeting between two of them). The report's argument would mean that three separate children's life developments had been identical, that their distorted perceptions of reality had been identical. Innocent incidents would have had to take on exactly the same sexual overtones in their imaginations. Such overtones would not explain why all these children believed they had witnessed or experienced physical pain, distress and sadness. No alternative explanation is offered for what exactly the innocent incidents, which led to these reactions, might have been.

Thirdly it must be judged whether these children's accounts had more of a ring of imaginative storytelling or of concrete detail, for example in extracts such as:

> (MW) was asked where this had happened. She said in a quarry in a field. She drew a picture of a car and trailer travelling to the place from her home. In the trailer she drew the table and music centre. She drew car lights on and said it was dark. We asked her who would be there. She named… (etc). (Clyde, 1992, p. 31)

These children described in a matter-of-fact way a series of events, where they were taken from one place in certain cars and trailers by certain people in certain costumes, to another place, where they unloaded specific equipment and were joined by more named adults who, they claimed, sexually abused named children. These lists of people are very similar to each other. They all name equipment the interviewers do not understand, like the hooker, which appeared to be a kind of shepherd‘s crook. The children worry about accuracy. They grow annoyed when the hooker drawn is too small or when the car lights are not put in, and they make corrections. The only obvious examples of childish imaginative expression are about emotions, as when M. "drew the sun looking down with a sad face, and tears, and said that the sun was crying."

It is not clear why such accounts were considered to need examination by a psychologist or psychiatrist. Rather, they appear to call for a detailed investigation of the *information* they contained, to see if any corroboration could be found and to probe further on if and when these events happened, where the locations were, and whether children were given any drugged substances. These might indeed have affected their perceptions.

The evidence, given by foster parents, ordinary people with no axe to grind, and which made serious, detailed claims about children's bizarre words and behavior in their care, was not even assessed by the Inquiry, far less validated or discredited. It formed no part of the official interviewing techniques, which were so scrutinized and so criticized.

The Marginalization of Real Children

Perhaps the most striking feature of the whole Orkney case was how rarely children, and in particular nine actual children, became central to the concern of anyone—except the authorities who were heavily criticized.

The socially stigmatized, 15-strong Webb family, who made the first allegations about the other nine children and their parents, never appeared to raise much public interest within or beyond Orkney, although social workers continued to work closely and supportively with them, a number being placed in long-term foster care.

Again, the outrage in most press publicity after the dawn raids was about injustice done to adults—the children's parents, and the minister who also faced accusations of sexual abuse. This minister received many expressions of support from within the Church of Scotland. However, not one voice was raised publicly from this major Scottish institution that the Church should investigate the allegations in case any children should be at risk, or that the minister should be suspended on full pay until the matter was resolved. (Only in l997 did the Church ratify a child protection policy of its own at the General Assembly.) Thousands of Quakers across Britain also sent letters of support to one set of parents and children who were Quakers, but none seemed to consider that the allegations of abuse ought to be investigated.

The Orkney public avoided the Inquiry proceedings and very few local people showed the concern or the interest to turn up at these proceedings. Explaining this situation to me, one local councilor said he was ashamed to tell me that people did not want to go there in case they were somehow identified with the whole affair. Orkney's tourist chief deplored the damage done to Orkney's image and its visitor business. Orkney Islands Council paid compensation and fulsomely apologized to

the families concerned, which effectively prevented their giving offence by monitoring any children about whom they had remaining concerns. It is not possible to base the protection of children on fear of offending adults.

The nine children were marginalized in other ways too. Evidence prepared by the social workers and police was rejected by Sheriff Kelbie before it could even be heard. Scotland's senior judge, Lord Hope, later condemned his precipitate act, saying the effect of what he did was "incalculable." Although the acting children's panel reporter Gordon Sloan won his appeal against Kelbie's decision, he still decided to abandon further proceedings. For that he was sharply criticized in the Clyde report. When the Secretary of State for Scotland then announced a public inquiry its remit, about the conduct of the authorities, excluded consideration of the truth or falsehood of the allegations. It could not discuss whether or not any children were in need of protection.

The Inquiry lasted eight months, cost £6 million, exhaustively criticized the child protection authorities, and made nearly 200 recommendations in 350 pages. Most were sensible and constructive: the Inquiry team members were caring and competent. Yet they had just one sentence of explicit comment to make about all the bizarre evidence from the children, which they had heard: *"In the case of some of the children, it is not impossible that there could have been some matters, perhaps far removed from any incidents in Orkney, which could have been troubling them."*

That seems a mild and cautious comment in response to one child enacting gruesome, violent and sexual plays, claiming his mother made gravy with blood, and saying he was put into coffins; to another claiming her father drank blood and kept it in the fridge; to another re-enacting graphic scenes of childbirth at the age of seven, and claiming that the baby would die; and to another reciting strange chants against God. These incidents are all mentioned in the Inquiry report. This last boy, according to evidence to the Inquiry on December 17, 1991, drew men with huge breasts with snakes coming out of them, kept talking about germs and washed himself continually, swore in words which made no sense, talked constantly about killing people, and was convinced that his mother could hear him through the radio.

This was the boy who may have had some matters far removed from Orkney troubling him: the same boy who, on hearing he was to be sent home to Orkney, had asked his foster mother, "Does this mean that the bad things are not going to happen any more?"

After the report was published, the public discourse was about apologies to adults, vindication of adults, resignations by adults, the need for community reconciliation among adults, and the need for Orkney social work department to

establish its good faith among the adults of South Ronaldsay. Nothing could have been more revealing about the respective priorities our society gives to adults and to children. Nor is it possible to imagine a fraction of that £6 million of public money being spent with one quarter of the speed on for example, techniques of criminal investigation, on strengthening child protection services in remote areas, or on research into organized sexual abuse in Scotland. Just as it was impossible to visualize a fraction of the cost of the l987 Cleveland Inquiry being spent on research or investigation into the anal abuse of children.

Although this eminent, caring Inquiry team was often prepared to exceed its strict remit (for instance by including in the report the detail of children's testimony) it was not prepared to do so by inserting a single sentence at the end. One sentence could have kept open the door to future monitoring of the children's safety, which would not have reduced their valid criticisms of the authorities. *"We remain very concerned,"* they could have written, *"about some of the evidence from certain children we have heard presented to us, and believe that further monitoring of possible risks to these children is necessary."*

It does not make sense to argue, as in the Cleveland report, that "the child is a person, not an object of concern;" (Butler-Sloss, 1989), or as in the Orkney report, that the nine children "were not treated as individuals," if the actual named children involved in a case fall through a gaping hole in those Inquiries. For if the entire panoply of a country's child protection system cannot protect actual known children in a single case, then whatever else it achieves, however many guidelines, procedures or sound practices it spawns, there is a failure at its heart.

And if we as a society—politicians, judges, public, media—are happy to sanction £6 million on a public inquiry into the behavior of officials who sought however ineptly to protect real young people, yet can neither fund any means of establishing whether or not a handful of children were horrifyingly abused, nor make a priority of seeking better ways to protect children from abusers in future, there is something profoundly skewed about our values.

How did real children disappear from a case which for so long absorbed professionals, media and public? That is an important question, with wider parallels. Likewise, Beatrix Campbell made the point that 10 years after the Cleveland Inquiry we still did not know whether the children (more than 120 of them in this case) were in need of protection (Campbell, 1997).

First of all, the Inquiry's remit meant that examples of poor practice towards the children set the parameters for what child-centered practice was about (e.g., appropriate foster placements, contact with siblings and parents, keeping their own possessions.) Thus difficult questions about child centered practice in *protection* were submerged.

Secondly the Inquiry had to relegate other important considerations. “The problem” was not about how sadistic organized sexual abuse could effectively be investigated, nor about how rural child protection could be improved, nor about how communities could work with professionals in protecting children from abuse. Though all these three things were touched upon in the report, they occupied a small fraction of the space given to analyzing at length each week of detailed preparation for the dawn raids, including serious conflicts between Orkney managers and Strathclyde social workers.

Years later, many people still urgently need guidance on ritual and organized sexual abuse, on rural child protection, or on community contributions to child protection. In contrast, few if any now wish or need to examine the tortuous daily detail of preparations for the dawn raids, which were infused by poor investigatory planning and blinkered managerial arrogance.

The Inquiry report did call for some measures against suspected adults—like provision to remove alleged abusers, rather than children, from the home. But most of its other recommendations were in effect about how professional procedures could be improved to minimize the risk of unfounded action. Thus there were numerous, specific recommendations about the interviewing of children.

A different response could have been made to a highly-publicized case like the Orkney affair. For instance there could have been a less expensive, limited-term inquisitorial judicial Inquiry into official conduct; an exploration of existing best practice from elsewhere; a well-funded and focused research program; and establishment of protective measures like children’s rights officers, children’s resource centers or helplines in the Scottish Highlands and other remote areas.

Alternative strategies, however, demand a willingness to pause and reflect before responding to public scandal. They also call for political courage, and a determination to place the needs of children above the demands and sensibilities of adults.

Imagine if police forces had instead been resourced to do priority work on future ways of prosecuting organized abuse, if research had been commissioned into techniques of surveillance and evidence gathering in remote communities, or if one pilot project in Britain had been funded to create an informed, aware, protective local community. It is only through realizing how hard these things are to imagine that we appreciate how skewed our child protection system actually is. The public and the child protection agencies need to demand a change of priorities.

It is even more important to ensure that if limited numbers of actual young people needed protection in places like Cleveland, Rochdale or Orkney, where there were allegations of sexual abuse on a major scale, that they retain the hope of protection and justice and restitution. It does not absolve unfinished responsibilities

to real children and young people to apologize that social workers bungled things, that a sheriff behaved improperly, that the acting children's reporter should not have abandoned his appeal. There was surely a responsibility to maintain a continuing vigilance, so that new evidence could be collected if it was there to be collected. If any of those children on Orkney did need protection, justice or restitution, then they are still waiting for it as adults today.

References

Bass, E. & Davis, L. (1988). *The courage to heal: a guide for women survivors of child sexual abuse*. New York: Harper Perennial.

Butler-Sloss, E. (1988). *Report of the inquiry into child abuse in Cleveland.* London: Her Majesty's Stationery Office, HMSO.

Campbell, B. (1997). *Unofficial secrets—child sexual abuse: the Cleveland case.* London: Virago.

Clyde, Lord (1992). *Report of the inquiry into the removal of children from Orkney in February 1991*. London: Her Majesty's Stationery Office, HMSO.

Crichton, T. (2001, February 25). Orkney: 10 years after. *The Sunday Herald*, Edinburgh.

Ferguson, E. (1991, March 24). Orkney reels. *Scotland on Sunday*, Edinburgh.

Freyd, J. (1996). *Betrayal trauma: The logic of forgetting childhood abuse.* Cambridge, Mass., Harvard University Press.

Kitzinger, J. (2000). Media templates: Patterns of association and the reconstruction of meaning over time. *Media Culture and Society*, 22 (1), pp. 64–84.

Nelson, S. (1998). Time to break professional silences. *Child Abuse Review*, 7(3) pp. 144–153.

Summit, R. C. (1983). The child sexual abuse accommodation syndrome. *Child Abuse and Neglect*, 17, pp.177–193.

Waterhouse, R. (1991, April 14). The secret bungalow of child interrogation. *Independent on Sunday*, London.

CHAPTER 13

Our Father Who Art in Hell: A Factual Account

Ulla Fröhling

All that is necessary for the triumph of evil is that good men do nothing.
–Edmund Burke, 1790

"The first in-depth German study of a DID patient with a background of severe home abuse, child prostitution, and SRA has been published."[1] These words were written by Onno van der Hart in 1997 in an essay on ritual abuse in Europe in reference to my book *Vater unser in der Hölle* [Our Father Who Art in Hell], which I had spent four years researching. The book had an impact: victims found a corroboration of their experiences in it, and doctors and trauma therapists who work with dissociative patients use it for workshops and training courses. A parliamentary inquiry examined the topic of ritual abuse, as did the Parliamentary select committee "Sects and Psycho-Groups," which mentions the book several times in its concluding report. A foundation for victims of ritual abuse was set up. Three surveys on ritual abuse were carried out. Together with Michaela Huber's textbook *Multiple Persönlichkeiten* [Multiple Personalities], it changed the German public's perception of one of the darkest areas of organized violence.

For eight years; then the book went out of print. Remaining copies that had cost 20 euros on the market were now being auctioned at eBay for up to 200 euros each. Several publishers realized that this subject was important and sought to acquire reprint rights. Subsequently I revised and updated the book, adding a further ten years of the protagonist "Angela Lenz's" life to the account. Handwriting samples from a number of her personalities were added, as well as letters with thoughts and memories of her therapist. The book also contains an afterword by Professor Onno van der Hart, prefaces by the trauma therapists Professor Luise Reddemann and Michaela Huber, the former member of parliament Renate Rennebach, who had been part of the Parliamentary committee "Sects and Psycho-Groups." An updated text by the social pedagogue Thorsten Becker on ritual abuse in Germany was also added. An accompanying website

(www.ourfatherinhell.com) offers additional resources in English and German on the subjects of trauma, sects, cults and ritual abuse.

I have now been dealing with the subject of ritual abuse for over fifteen years, have made the acquaintance of many survivors, and have observed—and perhaps influenced—the public's attitude to it as a journalist, yet without losing sight of Angela Lenz's life. In the course of time, this journalistic coverage has become a long-term study. The following excerpts from the new edition of *Vater unser in der Hölle* offer insights into the state of knowledge and changes concerning ritual abuse in Germany.

This is one woman's story: the story of Angela Lenz.

Angela Lenz has multiple personalities. Multiple Personality Disorder[2] can be understood as a survival system for the soul. In scientific terms: a reaction to traumatic stress caused by extreme abuse in the early childhood years, abuse that takes place over a long period of time and which the child cannot escape. Hers is a story shared by many people. Angela Lenz is not the only person in Germany to survive incest, forced prostitution and rituals carried out by a satanic group. Everything that Angela reports is confirmed by the testimony of other victims. The victims' reports seem incredible, and one would rather not believe them.

What made me think I could trust her accounts?

Angela does not appear to be mixed up or confused. Rather, she is calm, controlled, and clear. If she cannot remember something, she admits it, corrects her mistake and admits that there are holes in her story that she cannot fill. She did not try to hide the contradictory nature of her personalities from me, but instead revealed their diverse feelings and opinions.

Professionals who study cults, representatives of the police and doctors, confirm these descriptions. Therapists from Germany, Holland, Belgium, America, Canada, England, France, Spain, Denmark, Norway, Turkey, Australia and Israel with whom I spoke or corresponded described similar incidents and phenomena. Many of them have more than twenty-five years of therapeutic experience working with torture victims like Angela Lenz.

Based on school reports, correspondence, photo albums, official documents, medical reports, x-rays and newspaper clippings, I have tried to create a picture that comes as close as possible to the true events. Parts of Angela's family history can no longer be reconstructed. Her father is dead. The causes of his pedophilia can only be speculated about today. Family history reveals the abusive and promiscuous nature of the grandfather as well as the strict pietistic climate his family has lived in for generations. Angela's father also grew up in a family where

public and private life were clearly dissociated from one another. Quite early in the family's history there was a diagnosis of something that was described at the time as schizophrenia.

The family is granted special protection by the state. But who protects the children in families that neglect or abuse them physically, emotionally or sexually? Most violence takes place at home, behind closed doors. All over the world.

Incest is a profound emotional injury and an early development factor that prevents many children from reaching autonomy and a feeling of clear personal limits. The constant stress undergone by small children in a state of fear affects nerve connections in the brain and the biochemistry of the body: when in danger, each of us automatically produces large amounts of a "hormone cocktail" intended to help us fight or escape, then calm down again. If danger keeps returning unpredictably and inescapably, the body creates its own form of drug addiction. If the perpetrator is also the protector, i.e., the father or the mother, the child undergoes severe conditioning. It becomes a different child to the one it could have become.

What a bitter way to start one's life.

According to Francisco Orengo, incest is the apprenticeship for prostitution. Pimps know this, the Spanish psychiatrist emphasizes; in his clinic, he has helped many women to escape from prostitution. Pimps, he states, recognize the women who have been hurt early in life.[3] He describes it as a form of knowledge passed on from father to son. And a trap from which few escape.

How did Angela Lenz manage to do it?

To find out, I visited the sites of Angela Lenz's memories. I visited the quiet, exclusive neighborhood of her childhood, I followed the path behind the houses and went into the forest where Angela was tortured. I went to church and listened to a sermon held by a man Angela identifies as a pedophile criminal. At the start of my research, he was still in office. Why had he not been removed? Angela did not press charges against him. She did not press charges against anyone.

That was the "deal" with the perpetrators.

We know their names and know where they live. Whenever "Uncle Paul" moves to a new federal state I can keep track of him, as he always registers his name with the telephone company like a law-abiding citizen. From his last house he had a good view of a former concentration camp.

Angela wrote down the names of the perpetrators, the scenes of the crimes, and all the circumstances surrounding what was done. These records have been

preserved in various places. In some cases, the original records have been left with people instructed not to hand them out to anyone, not even to Angela herself. But who will pass them on to the public prosecutor's office in case she dies? Or in case anything suspicious happens to a member of her family, her therapist, the author or others connected with this book. Even if they fall victim to what looks like a normal traffic accident, these records will be distributed accordingly.

That was the deal with the perpetrators. A deal that even the police accept. For a long time, abusers were far ahead of the investigators in their technical methods. Photos of sadistic sex scenes with children aged 5, 3 or 1, even with babies, are sent all over the world via high speed lines on the information highways, but it took more than a decade for special police units to be equipped with the necessary hard and software to intercept them. In the last ten years, such criminals have progressed even more rapidly. When I began my research for this book, few people suspected what police have meanwhile determined to be the case: child abuse in the "second life" of a virtual world in the Internet,[4] torture of babies and infants online in front of webcams,[5] murders with clear Satanic indications in several European countries,[6] attempted cover-ups in the cracking of Mafia-like networks involving figures from politics, business and organized crime, with mentions—as in Saxony in 2007—of child abuse and child brothels.[7] An explosive mixture. When Angela became acquainted with this dark world decades ago, nobody believed her accounts. The taboo was intact and the perpetrators were safe.

Now the taboo is beginning to break down. Some journalists will not be fooled; nor will some doctors. "At the time, people thought we were insane for believing our patients," reports Prof. Dr. Luise Reddemann. "Now all the terrible things you described in your book have sadly turned out to be true."[8] Medical and therapeutic knowledge is increasing.[9] Brain researchers can now identify the switch from one personality to another through magnetic resonance imaging. And there are now three studies dealing with ritual abuse in Germany, as well as an Internet survey with results from all continents. It is conceivable that some fragments of Angela Lenz's memories may be attributable to suggestions by the perpetrators. Others could be images representing ordeals experienced, or memories used to mask others, for example to protect herself from knowing the full extent of her father's actions. Nonetheless, after 15 years, I am still convinced that Angela Lenz was subjected to extreme violence, sadistic torture and ritual abuse.

Names, dates, places, professions of the perpetrators and victims have been changed in order to prevent identification of Angela, her current family or her family of origin. The same applies to any other potentially revealing information such as hobbies and athletic events. The therapists' names, "Nina Temberg" and "Elisabeth Gebhard," are also pseudonyms.

The names and quotations from the scholars, psychiatrists, therapists (Thorsten Becker, Dr. Catherine Fine, Prof. Onno van der Hart, Dr. Arne Hofmann, Michaela Huber, Anne Jürgens, Dr. Richard Kluft, Prof. Francesco Orengo, Monika Veith and others) are authentic. Interviews with them took place as reported.

When the altered mental states of victims recall the traumas they endured, these memories often have a timeless quality: a feeling of being outside of time and space. Dissociated identities that feel caught up in the middle of a traumatic memory often cannot tell that the experience is over, and first have to work out the person, place and time. Their reality has to be reinforced literally: “Look, here is the floor, you are standing on it, you are safe, it is over.” But this is also true in another sense: because these victims often suffer from a loss of temporal orientation, the perpetrators are further protected if neither the place nor the time can be named.

For this reason, each chapter that tells of a remembered trauma opens with a short list of historic events, in order to place the trauma in the context of its place and time. For example, such-and-such an event can be connected to the time that *Sugar Baby Love* was heard regularly on the radio, when Helmut Kohl was chancellor of Germany, and Charles Manson went to jail on charges of ritual murder.

Some episodes are derived from the reports of other survivors. The lives of people who grow up in destructive cults—neo-Nazi or occult—possess a fixed structure which may include the birth and sacrifice of one’s own child. Angela was spared this—at least as far as we know today. And although she was not the one who personally endured such an experience, she was traumatized by having to share the event.

Writing this book meant approaching the unbearable: coming so close to evil that it could be felt. The unbearable things that happened to Angela made her a victim; that was bad enough. But even worse: a perpetrator. Because Angela was both.

Violence is a spiral that keeps on turning. I have tried to find a way of speaking about these things that avoids passing on that violence, yet still expresses what happened because it did really happen and continues to happen.

Many of the strategies used by child pornography rings and destructive cults to infiltrate the therapies of victims who have broken away are so monstrous that I did not initially want to accept that they really happened. For this reason, the psychological tricks I have documented in this book are only ones that have been confirmed by at least three therapists independently of one another. This applies, for example, to the disgusting use of photographs and recordings of the therapist during torture in order to create an aversion or fear towards her.

Angela Lenz describes two worlds: a bright, cheery, colorful one and a dark, brown-black, threatening one full of horror and violence. Full of violence she experienced. Some of Angela's personalities want revenge. Most of them, however, simply hope that "the bright world will finally realize that there really is another, darker world."

It really exists, here among us, very close to us. Not only in the Belgian town of Sars-la-Buissière, where Marc Dutroux tortured and killed children. Or in the forests around Milan, where the heavy metal band Beasts of Satan carried out murders in Satanic rituals. Or in the French town of Angier, where 45 children between six months and twelve years of age were raped and sold into prostitution by 65 adults, including their own parents. Or in London, where, according to police reports, 300 colored boys between four and seven years of age disappeared in 2001, and a boy's torso found in the river Thames forced Scotland Yard to start investigating ritual abuse and archaic ceremonies. Or in Portugal, where over 600 cases of sexual violence against children were uncovered in Casa Pia, a chain of children's homes. Or in Spain, where police arrested 66 in July 2007 in "Operation Punishment" and confiscated 50 million (!) images of children being tortured. No: here too, in our own country.

Violence creates divisions; sometimes even among the helpers. It took a long time before the different areas in this great field of human misfortune gathered their knowledge together and joined forces. It was only at the end of the 1990s that trauma research and therapy in Germany began to take off. This had several causes.

One of these—as terrible as it may sound—was the worst rail accident in German history: the Inter City Express crash in Eschede in 1998. The media reported at length on the horrific disaster, in which 101 people died and 88 were severely injured. For the first time, an ombudsman was appointed to determine the claims and needs of survivors and represent them against the rail service. The former vice president of the Federal Social Security Court, Professor Otto E. Krasney, accomplished this task so effectively that the significance and consequences of traumatic experiences filtered through the press and reached the public awareness. The German rail service paid for the counseling of survivors and relatives of "Eschede."

Then public perception was changed again by terrorist attacks and major natural disasters: New York (2001), Madrid (2004) and London (2005); the Tsunami in the Indian Ocean (2004) and Hurricane Katrina in New Orleans (2005). Now the media began to focus on the possible long-term consequences for survivors.

In parallel, the extremely dynamic development of the Internet assisted the explosive dissemination of child pornography around the world. Step by step,

national and international teams of investigators were able to uncover criminal networks of producers, distributors and consumers of these torture films. The number of arrests increased. Now, finally, the media began to examine the consequences of such abuse for the little victims of this million-dollar business.

But there are differences: some may still remember the Dutch “child porn scandal” of 1998.[10] The discovery of 9000 photos and CD-ROMs with images of extreme sexual violence against children and babies in the seaside resort of Zandvoort was described as a “bombshell” and stayed in the headlines for weeks. “Zandvoort” did not, however, remain in the collective memory as long as “Eschede.” The tragedy for these victims is that this violence takes place in secret; it is “dirty” and taboo. Accordingly it is soon forgotten again.

There is no compensation, either for the victims of natural disasters or for children who have been tortured. But there can be acknowledgement. Some victims of torture and sexual or ritual abuse have fought to be acknowledged—and succeeded. By raising their voices, they have broken free from their tormentors, for “the mightiest weapon in the hand of the oppressor,” according to the South African politician Stephen Biko,[11] “is the spirit of the oppressed.” I had already learned twenty years ago from Wolfgang Kneese, an escapee from Colonia Dignidad, a German sect in Chile that practiced ritual violence and served as a torture camp for the Pinochet regime, what this lack of freedom feels like: “With every little decision I make in life, I’m not the one deciding—in my head, it’s Paul Schäfer standing up and deciding. And I can’t get him out of there.”

Wolfgang Kneese is a fighter. He made the fight against his tormentor Paul Schäfer, the founder and leader of the Colonia Dignidad sect, his life’s mission. “I want to see him in court,” he said. In 2006 he succeeded.

Anna Burger also succeeded.[12] She was granted political asylum in Australia in 1998 after fleeing from a destructive cult in Germany at the start of the 1980s. She came from a family that seems to have been working for the child pornography mafia and dressing up these activities in Old Germanic ideology. Anna Burger fled to the other side of the globe to escape. The Australian government acknowledged that Germany has a problem with ritual abuse carried out by occult groups, and that the German government is either unable or unwilling to protect the victims. This marked the first time ever that a survivor of ritual abuse had been granted asylum.

(translated from German by Wieland Hoban)

Angela Lenz describes two worlds: a bright, cheery, colorful one and a dark, brown-black, threatening one, full of horror and violence. Abusive violence fully experienced. Some of Angela’s personalities seek revenge. Most, however, want only that “the bright world finally recognizes that there is really another, darker

world.” There really is such a dark world here at home right in our own neighborhoods, not only in Belgium’s Sars-la-Buissière, where Marc Dutroux tortured and killed.

Can this dark, secret world be brought to light?

Notes

[1] Van der Hart, Onno: “Ritual Abuse in European Countries” in Fraser, George A. (ed.), *The Dilemma of Ritual Abuse: Cautions and Guides for Therapists* (Washington + London: American Psychiatric Press, 1997)

[2] “Dissociative Identity Disorder” since the DSM-IV in 1994.

[3] Personal message, June 14 2007.

[4] Focus online, 08.05.2007 http://www.focus.de/digital/games/second_life/second-life_aid_55693.html

[5] “Kids, the Light Of Our Lives“ was the cynical name of a website which over 700 users worldwide used to exchange images showing the sadistic torture of children and babies.

[6] E.g. Germany in 2001, Turkey in 1998, as well as Italy and Norway.

[7] MDR, June 12 2007; Jürgen Roth on the corruption affair in Saxony in Roth, Jürgen/Nübel, Rainer/Fromm, Rainer: *Anklage unerwünscht—Korruption und Willkür in der deutschen Justiz* [Prosecution Not Wanted—Corruption and Abuse of Power in German Justice] (Frankfurt, 2007).

[8] Personal message, June 26 2007

[9] Groundbreaking study: Gast, Ursula et al.: “Die dissoziative Identitätsstörung—häufig fehldiagnostiziert” [Dissociative Identity Disorder—Often Wrongly Diagnosed] in *Deutsches Ärzteblatt* 47/2006.

[10] In 1998, police found six computer systems and roughly 9000 images of child pornography distributed or obtained via the Internet in the apartment of murder victim Gerrit Ulrich. This unimaginable [back then!; U. F.] number of images and the manner of representation, including the abuse of babies and very young infants, seemed to add a new, previously inconceivable dimension to this dirty trade. (See “Sodom und Internet? Neue Medien—Möglichkeiten und Herausforderungen“ [Sodom and the Internet? New Media—Possibilities and Challenges] by Jörg-Michael Klös (senior commissioner of the criminal investigation department from 1993-1998, in charge of the inspection of sexual and child protection offences at the Office of Criminal Investigation in Berlin).

[11] 1946–1977

[12] Name changed.

CHAPTER 14

Where are We Now? Ritual Abuse, Dissociation, Police and the Media

Valerie Sinason, Graeme Galton, and David Leevers

"I find it depressing that with all the evidence of evil and unspeakable acts perpetrated against victims in Bosnia and Kosovo, we are so reluctant, even hostile, to listen to the victims of ritual and sexual abuse. Why is serious crime, especially serious financial crime, accorded sophisticated investigative resources whilst allegations of sexual and physical abuse for ritual purposes for the most part are treated as fantastic and not even sufficiently tested? Before police forces set up paedophile squads and domestic violence units, there was very little child abuse. Now nobody doubts the phenomenon or its extent."[1]

"Now that my work has been successful over this period, they (detectives) are learning that you cannot find evidence for what you don't think exists. Untrained or sceptical police look past the evidence if it is about the occult. They want to prove the case but don't look deeper."[2]

Introduction

In the period after the Second World War in the UK, there was a desperate yearning for children to have a proper safe childhood and be brought up in peace. Colour picture books, like the “Janet and John” school reading books, proliferated. These focussed on loved middle-class children with two parents, a mother and a father. They lived in comfortable homes, had gender-specific toys, went out to tea with friends and had parties in their large gardens. Despite the levels of poverty, unemployment and abuse there was a parallel printed universe of utopian childhood. In this world, true for only a small minority, there were no emotional, physical, sexual or spiritual violations, rapes or assaults. All badness could be projected onto Hitler and Nazism and be buried with peace.

Toxic containers cannot hold the waste of families forever, however, and the leakage then begins to spread.

With awareness of physical abuse not being acknowledged on a conscious political level until the 1980’s, how could there be even a glimmer of acceptance for the concept of ritual abuse? This was the period in the UK when ritual abuse in the form of school beatings could take place with impunity, where religious leaders could emotionally abuse their congregations through internalising and projecting a God of hatred rather than love, and where a general understanding of authoritarianism, domestic abuse and bullying was only in its infancy.

Those of us who began working with abuse victims in the late 1970’s or early 1980’s look back with pain and humility at the way our individual journeys of understanding abuse issues matched the social development of such understanding. Although we might like to feel we are above our culture, the timing of our awareness of levels of abuse tells a different story. For example, many of us were first able to see abuse by a step-father, then by a father, then by a mother, then by siblings, then with multi-perpetrator groups involving use of animals, the creation of DID, then mind control. There were often years between each of those stages.

What are we missing now? The client is not usually safe enough to tell us what we cannot bear to know (Bowlby, 1979). It seems that each time we attempt to acknowledge or redress a social ill, we are already missing the next one.

So here we are in the 21st century. Where are we in the UK and Europe on the subject of ritual abuse?

1. UK Definitions of Ritual Abuse

Within the UK, McFadyen, Hanks and James (1993) have provided the most thorough definition: “Ritual abuse is the involvement of children in physical, psychological or sexual abuse associated with repeated activities (‘ritual’) which purport to relate the abuse to contexts of a religious, magical or supernatural kind” (p.37). They have refrained from making any assumptions about perpetrators’ motivations in using rituals since that is irrelevant to the victims. Regardless of whether the rituals and regalia used in abusive situations have come from a true belief system or from paedophiles making use of such items, the situation is that children have been more frightened and believe what their abusers have told them.

La Fontaine (1994), an anthropologist, gives a basic definition in her report funded by the Department of Health: “Ritual abuse is sexual abuse where there have been allegations of rituals associated with the abuse whether or not these allegations have been taken further or tested in the courts.” It is not generally realised that her book on the subject also defines satanic abuse to be unsubstantiated abuse. Thus, by this definition, the only proven abuse is ritual but not ritual Satanic. Her study was confined to the very small number of cases, largely from the lower social classes that resulted in convictions where the ritual element was named. The British Government’s reading of her report was that satanic abuse did not exist. This had a damaging effect nationally.

The major British Department of Health (1999) document, “Working Together to Safeguard and Promote the Welfare of Children,” does not even mention ritual abuse per se, but states that, “A number of features of sexual abuse have also been linked with severity of impact including the extent of premeditation, the degree of threat and coercion, sadism, and bizarre or unusual elements.” It is of concern that since 2000, the term “bizarre or unusual elements” has been removed. From a political point of view, as evidenced by government-approved documents, the situation remains poor.

For the purpose of our work, we adopt the McFadyen definition when it comes to alleged ritual abuse of children. Furthermore, regardless of religious implications, we are particularly concerned by those allegations that include these practices:

rape

murder

necrophilia

abortion

bestiality

non-consenting impregnation

cannibalism

consumption of body fluids

non-consenting sado-masochistic acts

consumption of animal fluids

despoiling of churches and cemeteries

killing and/or torture of animals

The following practices are not offences in themselves, but have been mentioned so frequently in allegations that they are seen as contextually relevant to the establishment of a definition of ritual abuse:

induction of trance states

wearing of ritual apparel

use of chanting

use of ritual instruments

Whilst court cases have found it easier to focus on single perpetrators, the majority of the allegations we hear involve organised groups of perpetrators. This leads to the importance of defining organised abuse. La Fontaine (1993) pointed to the varieties of meanings that this term has had and the consequent misunderstandings where there was more than a single abuser and where the adults "appear to have acted in concert to abuse the children" (La Fontaine, 1994). Although there can be dangers in labelling a case "organised abuse" too early (Clyde, 1992), there are also dangers in accepting a case as "only" intrafamilial. Regarding "the existence of more than one perpetrator or the production of pornographic material going unrecognized," Lynch and Browne (1993) write:

> Most practitioners will have worked with children where such details have emerged weeks into the investigation or months into therapy, by which time evidence of perpetrators may have disappeared… If the existence of such evidence is not sought it is not likely to be found. (p. 219)

It is important to note that where agencies such as the NSPCC (National Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children) first have suspicions of organised ritual abuse, the average number of children is 13 and the average number of alleged perpetrators is 7. However, when it comes to convictions, there may only be one or two (Creighton, 1993).

We have been held back by the historical process in which awareness of incest moved into awareness of paedophilia outside of the family. The idea that there could be multi-perpetrators including family members has been much more painful for society to accept.

2. The Extent of Ritual Abuse

Several surveys have been conducted and articles have been written addressing the extent of organised ritualistic child sexual abuse in different countries: in the US, (Bottoms, Shaver & Goodman, 1996; Finkelhor, Williams, & Burns, 1888; Kelley, 1993); in the Netherlands, (Jonker & Jonker-Bakker, 1997); in Canada and Australia, (Johnson, 1992); and in the UK (Creighton, 1993).

Bottoms et al. report that within the US, the figures of alleged ritual abuse are smaller than for other kinds of abuse. Also, with both children and adults in the UK, the figures are smaller than for other kinds of abuse (Jones, 1991) and a lack of forensic evidence is commonplace (Weir & Wheatcroft, 1995). Gallagher, Hughes and Parker (1994) found that the estimated national incidence for organised abuse in England and Wales was an average of 242 cases in four years and that allegations of ritual abuse involved 21 cases a year.

After a BBC TV Channel 4 Dispatches documentary (Satanic Ritual Abuse, February 19, 1992) was broadcast, 191 calls were dealt with on the helpline set up by the Broadcasting Support Services. However, the 15 lines set up were inadequate to the task as BT recorded 4,500 attempted calls during the first hour (Snelling & Scott, 1992).

RAINS (Ritual Abuse Information and Network Support) has offered advice to over 400 professionals in the NHS (National Health Service) who have worked with these clients (200 with current cases).

In 2007, more than 2,000 persons representing at least 40 countries and 31 primary languages participated in three online surveys offered in both English and German. The first survey was for adult survivors of extreme abuse including, but not limited to, ritual abuse and mind control; the second, for professionals who work with adult survivors; and the third, for caregivers of child survivors of ritual abuse and mind control.[3][4][5]

Where the research is not clinically-based but epidemiological, the problems remain similar. In their significant research report on Organised and Ritual Child Sexual Abuse, Gallagher et al. (1994) comment that almost one half of all social service departments made no reply whatsoever to the national survey. The finding that there was a 16-fold difference between the national survey and the record search figures, which “provided impressive evidence that the national survey had

underestimated the extent of organised and ritual abuse," is not surprising in these circumstances.

3. Current UK Police Support

In the UK, the Scotland Yard Research Unit on ritual abuse was disbanded in 1994 and its report on allegations of ritual abuse has not been published. However, police awareness of this subject has moved Dramatically in the last six years. Scotland Yard and the Metropolitan Police, in particular, are more experienced and aware of the problems than most mental health professionals. In the wake of the Adam case, "The Working Party on Ritual Homicide" was established in Scotland Yard in 2001. In that case, the dismembered body of a little black boy named Adam had been found in The River Thames in October 2001. He had not been sexually abused. A painstaking international piece of detective work was able to establish that the child was a victim of a muti murder from Nigeria. The specialist police team involved has proved to be a source of inspiration to survivors within the UK.

Since 2000, the Clinic for Dissociative Studies has had a named Detective Inspector to call on. This has been largely due to the thorough work of Chief Detective Inspector Clive Driscoll who is renowned for having solved a 2007 honour killing case.

In October 2004, lawyer and ritual abuse survivor Lee Moore, founder of Association of Child Abuse Lawyers (ACAL), provided a training day on ritual abuse to the Metropolitan Police. However, the police are not aided by current attitudes from some sections of the media, Members of Parliament, and mental health professionals. These negative attitudes reflect the wider difficulty of some segments of the British public to take on this subject.

4. General Child and Adult Legal Problems Concerning Abuse

"Lost in Care," the report by Waterhouse (2000), has shown that there remains a significant discrepancy between the amount of abuse alleged by children and adults in the safety of an anonymous survey and the amount formally disclosed to police. There is also a discrepancy between the amount disclosed and the amount that can be investigated further, especially when events have happened a long time in the past. Regarding abuse in general, the report states:

> One obvious difficulty is that most of the witnesses have given evidence to us about events that occurred many years ago. Thus the majority of the complainants of abuse are now in the age range of 25 to 35 years and gave evidence about events that occurred in the first half of their teens or earlier. Moreover, all but a few of them had not made any complaint of abuse before the major police investigation began in 1991. (55, 6.01) It is not widely known

> that sexual abuse is one of the few crimes where the disclosure rate increases as the victim gets older (Sinason, 1994). There are many psychodynamic explanations for this, particularly the child's feeling that this has happened because they are bad, something they have been told by abusers too. Sometimes it is not possible to report such a shameful as well as painful experience until the victim is more independent and family members do not have to be involved in hearing details. Where the perpetrators or alleged perpetrators are family members, it is sometimes not safe to report until the victim has an independent home. Even then, it can evoke strong feelings of disloyalty to accuse a loved family member.

Whilst it is hard for an adult to report a crime that involves personal shame, it is even harder for vulnerable adults. The various authorities rarely provide adults with learning disabilities, mental health problems or untreated traumatic symptoms with the same protective strategies provided for children. The strict chronological move from legal childhood to adulthood cannot, of course, always take into account those who are not able to function independently. Additionally, the expectation is of a higher level of proof in adult cases as there is no equivalent of the separate court system provided for children. Unlike civil proceedings where balance of probability means that a court is considering whether the occurrence of an event was more likely than not, criminal proceedings require a higher level of proof, i. e., beyond reasonable doubt.

There are cases involving learning disabled adults with signs of abuse which have convinced medical witnesses that have reached the High Court but have not been proven. Where barristers, solicitors or judges have explained that this does not mean that the alleged victim was not telling the truth—only that there is insufficient proof of who was the perpetrator—this has been to the psychological benefit of the victim.

4a. The Role of the Child's Evidence in General UK Child Protection Procedures

La Fontaine (1994) points out that, "It is well-known that substantiating a claim of sexual abuse of a child may not be easy" (p. 21). The evidence required for a family court to initiate removal of a child in the UK is at a lower level than that required for a prosecution in a criminal court. This means that the starting point for triggering any action is frequently the child's own account and observed behaviour. Child protection procedures can be activated when the multi-disciplinary team considers there is a risk of serious immediate harm to a child. It is quite common for a family court to impose a restriction on a parent on the grounds

of sexual abuse without that parent or case reaching the criminal court (British Department of Health, 1999, 5.25 p 45). In this study, considerable credence is given to the child's account and behaviour:

> Disturbed behaviour including self-harm, inappropriate sexualised behaviour, sadness, depression and a loss of self-esteem have all been linked to sexual abuse. Its adverse effects may endure into adulthood. The severity of impact on a child is believed to increase the longer the abuse continues, the more extensive the abuse, and the younger the child." (2.13, p. 7)

However, as has been stated, where the child provides a "bizarre" narrative, ordinary procedures are often dropped. The terror of the child is enacted by the network who fails to see the "ordinary" signs of trauma because of the profound impact of the "extraordinary" elements.

4b. Legal Problems Regarding Ritual Abuse and Children

The relatively new-found (since 1980) acknowledgement of the difficulty in bringing sexual offences to court often disappears when the accounts of children or adults move from alleging abuse to alleging abuse that includes a ritual context, particularly when they include organised Satanist elements. There is far less willingness here to adopt a stance that gives reasonable credence to the account of the child or adult. Perhaps this is not surprising given that, as stated above, the more bizarre or horrific the details, the harder it becomes to combine normal healthy doubt with the ability to perceive what may be a true story.

In line with many other child and adult mental health practitioners, we have experienced a social climate in which children and vulnerable adults often stop being listened to once ritual elements come into their narratives. This non-listening can also extend to the professionals who work with such patients or provide research.

Within the field of child abuse in general it is well established that only a disproportionately small number of abuse cases get to court in the first place (Bentovim & Tranter, 1994). Lee Moore found that where cases involving an alleged ritual element do succeed in court, the ritual element is often removed. Sometimes this is done at the suggestion of barristers (personal communication, 1999).

Evidence from experienced health service clinicians who have encountered cases of alleged ritual or organised abuse suggests that this kind of abuse is rarer than other kinds and that an even smaller number of cases of this kind of abuse have entered the legal process (Creighton, 1993).

Unlike the situation in Illinois (1992) where a law is on the statue books making such acts crimes, ritual abuse per se is not an offence in the UK. Having dressing-up clothes for the purpose of frightening children, giving children non-food substances to eat, putting a child in a coffin, holding a mock wedding ceremony, etc. are not in themselves crimes.

In one case that got to the British criminal court, a child was deeply distressed at the focus on his anal rape. For him, the anal rape was not the issue. He knew other children in his class who had been raped like that. What made him feel awful were the spiders he had been made to eat. But no one questioned him on that. The rape was the offence.

4c. Legal Proof of Ritual Abuse in the UK

Whilst the most serious allegation of murder during a ritual has been alleged but not proven in court in the UK, as it has in other countries, within the UK there has been proof of other offences. Murder in other contexts, of course, is reported with ease as indeed all the offences that are alleged within cult activity have—including cannibalism. We are adding this pointer because the societal response to the list of allegations is often an assumption that no such offences exist singly. Between 1982 and 1998, seven proven cases of abuse within a ritual context in the UK led to five people receiving prison sentences of 10 to 15 years and three people receiving sentences of 2.6 to 5 years (Tate, 1994). The serious offences proven were rape, buggery, wounding, false imprisonment, grievous bodily harm, aiding and abetting rape, indecent assault, and unlawful intercourse. In examining 82 child cases reported between 1987 and 1992, La Fontaine (1994) found three proven cases of abuse involving rituals.

When Satanist David Harker strangled a young woman, dismembered and ate her in 1999, the media referred to him as a "cannibal beast." When Edward Crowley (who named himself after Alistair Crowley) was jailed for killing a boy in a sacrifice, the media were keen to minimise his act by speaking of psychosis. There is a way that such acts are ironically diminished by either using madness or monsterhood as a distancing mechanism.

4d. The Legal Position of Vulnerable Adult Victims in Ritual Abuse

Whilst most definitions address the position of child victims there is little provision for adult victims, especially where the adult victim has also been made to be a perpetrator. Over the age of 16, the age of consent, an adult is assumed to have ability to consent unless they have a severe learning disability. An abused child who has had abusive relationships all their life is suddenly, in the eyes of the law, a

consenting adult unless they are willing to go through the terrifying process of signing a statement.

Whilst there have been moves in the police to create Vulnerable Victim Co-ordinators to deal with witnesses or victims with mental health or learning disability problems, there is still very little proactive policing. For example, every victim with or without Dissociative Identity Disorder who has asked police officers to follow them on Halloween or other such nights have had their requests refused —even when they expressed the fear that a murder might be committed.

4e. Legal Issues for Victim-Perpetrators in Ritual Abuse

Adults who have been forced to perpetrate face the legal problem that in the UK there is no plea-bargaining. Additionally, there is no law on duress. Whilst it could be assumed that a judge would reduce a sentence in view of years of victimhood and enforced perpetration, there is no certainty. How many ritual abuse survivors, after a lifetime of despair, would be able to then face a term in prison with their name and picture all over the tabloid newspapers? This appears to be the Western equivalent of the Saudi Arabian punishment of flogging a woman who is gang-raped.

Lobbying in parliament for amnesty or plea-bargaining for victim-perpetrators is still in its infancy.

5. Satanism, Luciferianism, Paganism, Wicca, New Age, etc.

Satanism and other minority beliefs (Sinason, 1994) are not illegal or necessarily any more harmful than any other belief. Indeed on October 24th 2004, a naval officer was granted formal permission to practice as a Satanist in the British Navy.

We do not imply that practitioners of any one religion in general are committing criminal offences any more than any other group. Witchcraft, both of a healing kind and otherwise, has a long history and many branches, and we also do not imply that these activities constitute criminal offences. As with any population, only a small percentage is likely to be involved in criminal offences. We are aware that some children may be tricked by paedophiles using ritual material. However, as has been stated, where the children believe the offences were committed within a religious belief system and then become believers themselves, it is irrelevant how that belief system was originally inculcated. The crucial element, therefore, in these cases is what the child believes. In our work with children and adults we have been able to see the way the child takes in these enforced belief systems and then becomes identified with the belief as an adult.

6. The Swedish Case

In 1991 a Swedish psychologist, Anders Svensson, wrote to Valerie Sinason who was then a Consultant Psychotherapist at the Tavistock Clinic, a leading National Health Service psychotherapy training and treatment centre in London. He was concerned with the disclosures of a woman with a severe learning disability that were of a kind he had never heard before. Through the supervision, Svensson and Sinason learned more about ritual abuse, something new to both of them. When Sinason discussed the topic in the UK as an addendum to a talk on sexual abuse, she received two referrals at the Tavistock. On going to meet the first woman, a health service professional, it emerged that the woman herself was the victim. Dr. Robert Hale, a forensic psychoanalyst and psychiatrist, worked on this and on further referrals with Valerie Sinason.

7. The Tavistock and Portman Clinics Project on Ritual Abuse

As a result of the increasing number of tertiary referrals asking for consultation, assessment and treatment for children and adults alleging involvement with ritual abuse, particularly abuse within a Satanist or Luciferian context, in 1992 Dr. Valerie Sinason and Dr. Robert Hale, Director of the Portman Clinic, set up a clinical research project funded by the Department of Health. Experienced practitioners in the field of forensic work and abuse made the referrals.

Typically, both children and adults presented affective states of extreme terror, and post-traumatic problems linked with allegations of ritual abuse, largely of a Satanist kind. Following the publication of an edited book on ritual abuse (Sinason, 1994) that included chapters by significant UK clinicians including Professor Joan Bicknell, Dr. Nigel Beaill, Dr. Kingsley Norton, and Dr. Arnon Bentovim, Drs. Sinason and Hale set out to conduct a more systematic survey of referrals concerning alleged organised ritual abuse. Their initial concerns were that due to the fear engendered by the topic, National Health Service patients and their families were not receiving an adequate service (Weir & Wheatcroft, 1995). Health service professionals and the media (Scott, 1992) were embroiled in religious discussions of belief and disbelief in which the patients were left without adequate treatment. They also found it significant that despite international and national proof of some of the allegations, there was such consistent disavowal.

With the complex legal and financial issues of secondary traumatisation of inadequately trained professionals in the press, there were also local authority concerns that workers in these cases who do not receive support might seek financial redress.

8. Clinical Conclusions from the Department of Health-funded Pilot Study

Patients alleging this abuse formed a significant and discreet clinical group. There was no mental illness established that could account for their narratives of abuse. Fundamentalist religious belief was not a significant issue in our sample. In three of the total sample, there was involvement in fundamentalist religion. In two of these cases this was in seeking help after previously alleged Satanist abuse. Both patients were ambivalent about their involvement but stated that these religious organisations had been the only ones to believe their testimony and offer them support. In the third case the organised abuse took place in the context of the religious organisation.

Recovered memory was also not a significant issue in the project. In every case the original allegation of ritual abuse had already been established before the patient was involved in the project. We do not currently have permission to give further information than these bullet-points.

9. Founding of the Clinic 1998

Once the project was completed, the Tavistock and Portman Clinics did not choose to continue the work. Work with victim-perpetrators evokes many complex issues. However, Dr. Robert Hale gained the support of the Trust to refer the remaining patients to Valerie Sinason, who set up an Independent National Health Service Provider Clinic to specialise in these subjects.

On referral, multidisciplinary assessments are provided by a consultant psychologist/psychoanalyst Dr. Phil Mollon and a consultant psychiatrist/psychoanalyst, Dr. Arnon Bentovim. Professor Howard Steele provides attachment interviews, Professor John Morton conducts memory research and Brett Kahr, Chair of the Society for Couples' Relationships, advises on work with partners. With Nancy Dunlop as Clinic Manager, Consultant Psychotherapists include Adah Sachs and Graeme Galton. David Leevers is the Social Systems Consultant who liaises with Police. A range of other specialist therapists work with the Clinic including Rachel Wingfield, Chair of the Centre for Attachment-Based Psychoanalytic Psychotherapy, and Elizabeth Lloyd who also works for the leading charity RESPOND, for clients with a learning disability.

Many of the ritual abuse victims we meet have developed Dissociative Identity Disorder. As there could be an iatrogenic exacerbation of dissociative identity disorder, we take as much care as possible with the interviews.

We convene a monthly Continuing Professional Development Study Group on psychoanalytic thinking, ritual abuse and dissociation and a fortnightly supervision group.

The Clinic has links with RAINS (Ritual Abuse Information and Network Support), LASAR (League against Sadistic Abuse), RESPOND, the pioneering

charity working with learning disability and abuse, ESTD, the European Society for Scientific Study of Dissociation, TAG (Trauma and Abuse Group) and the key survivors' organisations.

We are involved in parliamentary lobbying, teaching and training, and provide individual, couples and family psychotherapy. Although we work basically from a psychodynamic point of view, we bring in a range of complementary treatments according to clients' needs. We have involved art and music therapists, body therapists, cranial osteopathy, reflexology, and bibliotherapy according to the wishes and needs of different clients.

10. Current Impact of This Work Professionally

The initial impact of this work on professionals can be severe and even experienced forensic health service psychotherapists are more powerfully affected by the narratives and emotional interactions of these patients as compared with other vulnerable groups (Hale & Sinason, 1994). Obviously, working with any severe physical or psychological trauma has a profound impact on the professional (Hale, 1997).

However, the nature of ritual abuse is different as Youngson (1994) and the NSPCC (Creighton, 1993) have pointed out. As Kelley comments, "Professionals also need to monitor carefully their own stress reactions to dealing with such horrific allegations of abuse. Even when not directly threatened, professionals involved in cases of ritualistic abuse tend to become fearful for their own safety" (1993, p. 45).

Mike Hames (2000), former head of the Obscene Publications squad, says that "the tensions of the 'belief, non-belief' issue, combined with the strains of interviewing the victims and listening to their stories, often led to sickness and severely low morale" (p. 174). As well as the affecting power of the abuse narratives, which have more in common with concentration camp scenarios than other forms of abuse, the extra attacks by some elements of the media involved in taking on such cases is notable. For example, it has been argued that clinicians are influenced by their primary responsibility to help patients and thus are over-credulous, over-zealous and irresponsible and plant memories (Victor 1993). Ofshe (1993) contends that the actions of a clinician in simply dealing with several cases of ritualistic or satanic abuse is "prima facie evidence of malpractice."

Whereas most professionals concur that expertise is built up by seeing several cases of a similar kind and being able to draw conclusions from that, we enter a very different attitude with this work. Even though a hospital or individual clinician with a body of other similar cases is seen as a specialist, there is a dynamic process whereby those who treat ritually abused patients are seen by researchers such as

Ofshe as “guilty.” This same condemnation is not applied to those who have specialised in demonstrating the non-existence of ritual abuse. Critics do not appear to see a reciprocal problem in their own build-up of experience. However, such a tacitly allowed denigration of professional clinical experience inhibits disclosures even more.

Clinicians with psychoanalytically informed understanding perceive such polarisation as part of the familiar dynamic processes of professional scapegoating, abuse by proxy of the child, reversal or the urge to shoot the messenger.

This process extends to solicitors and barristers who remove ritual abuse allegations from disclosures of abuse to make them less disturbing and therefore more acceptable to a jury (personal communication, Lee Moore, 2000). It also applies to well-meaning psychotherapists, social workers and psychiatrists removing such mention from files in case they cause confusion. In 1991, *Social Work Today* reported that some ritual elements had been alleged in 34 cases in which the Official Solicitor was then involved (p. 888).

11. Media Responses

Working with trauma is difficult. Working with trauma in an environment or society that is unwilling to recognise it proves more difficult. The relatively small numbers of members in the British False Memory Society have been given disproportionate media space for their views (Sinason, 1998). Practitioners in this field can also expect negative coverage in the False Memory Society Newsletter and at related websites. Psychotherapists who are used to the privacy of the consulting room find this particularly hard.

Not surprisingly, there is a split attitude in the media over the reality of ritual abuse with both a sensational approach to the narratives and a discrediting process to both the victim and professional involved. Quality newspapers can hold both positive and negative news items, often in the same edition. Sometimes a tabloid newspaper provides a detailed expose that is absolutely correct but is not believed in wider society because it is reported within a tabloid. The usually libertarian satirical newspaper “Private Eye” needs to be mentioned here for running anonymous attacks on this reality of this subject in 2008.

11a. May 33rd: A First British Play on DID by Guy Hibbert

A unique event in the media was the BBC TV showing of Guy Hibbert’s play *May 33*rd. Hibbert followed the painful journey of a young woman with DID. He interviewed clients from the Clinic for Dissociative Studies as well as other survivors and professionals. His play was non-exploitative, profoundly moving and won a media Mental Health award. Newspaper coverage was unanimously positive. Here the benefits of liaising with those who can bring an unbearable

subject into full media attention were profound. Similarly, books by the American teacher/novelist Torrey Haydon, which include narratives about ritual abuse, have been best-sellers.

Conclusion

At the beginning of the 21st century, ritual abuse remains largely hidden in the UK with moments of breakthrough following successful police prosecutions or political lobbying. Mind control and military-inspired mind control are even further from public and professional consciousness. However, the disturbance caused by CIA's admission of water-boarding and the events of Guantanamo Bay and Abu Ghraib have allowed further thinking regarding these issues (Sinason, in press).

Ritual abuse as a whole remains seen as a strange import and there is great resistance to seeing it also as white, middle-class and home-grown. The positive sides of internet-international co-operation, such as occurred with the publication of this book, can help to reduce resistance and increase professional co-operation. However, it looks like a long hard road.

References

Bentovim, A. & Tranter. M. (1994). A systemic approach. In V. Sinason (Ed.), *Treating survivors of satanist abuse* (pp. 100–115). London: Routledge.

Bowlby, J. (1979). On knowing what you are not supposed to know and feeling what you are not supposed to feel. *Canadian Journal of Psychiatry, 24*,403.

Bottoms, B. L., Shaver, P. R., & Goodman, G. S. (1996). An analysis of ritualistic and religion-related child abuse allegations. *Law and Human Behavior, 20*(1), 1–34.

British Department of Health. (1999). *Working together to safeguard and promote the welfare of children.* Home Office: Department for Education and Employment.

Clyde, J. J. (1992). *The report of the inquiry into the removal of children from Orkney in February 1991*. Edinburgh: HMSO.

Creighton, S. J. (1993). Organised abuse: NSPCC experience. *Child Abuse Review, 2*, 232–242.

Finkelhor, D., Williams, L., & Burns, N. (1988). *Nursery crimes: Sexual abuse in day care.* London: Sage.

Gallagher, B., Parker, H., & Hughes, B. (1994). *The incidence of organized and alleged ritual abuse in England and Wales.* Report to the Department of Health.

Hale, R. (1998). How our patients make us ill. *Advances in Psychiatry*, *3*(5), 254-259.

Hale, R., & Sinason, V. (1994). Internal and external reality: Establishing parameters. In V. Sinason (Ed.), *Treating survivors of satanist abuse* (pp. 274–285). London: Routledge.

Hames, M. (2000). *The dirty squad*. London: Little, Brown.

Illinois, State of. (1992). Public Act #87–1167.

Johnson, G. (1992). *Multiple personality & ritual abuse*. Conference Paper: Australian Association of Multiple Personality & Dissociation.

Jones, D.P.H. (1991). Ritualism and child sexual abuse. *Child Abuse and Neglect, 15*, 163–170.

Jonker, F. & Jonker-Bakker, I. (1997). Effects of ritual abuse: The results of three surveys in the Netherlands. *Journal of Child Abuse and Neglect, 21*, 541–556.

Kelley, S. (1993). Ritualistic abuse of children. In C. J. Hobbs & J. Wynne (Eds.), Bailliere's *Clinical paediatrics: Child abuse*, London: Tyndall.

La Fontaine, J. S. (1993). Defining organised sexual abuse. *Child Abuse Review, 2*, 219–222.

La Fontaine, J. S. (1994). *The extent and nature of organised and ritual abuse: Research Findings.* London: HMSO.

Lynch, M. & Browne, K. (1993). Pandora's box, open with care: Editorial. *Child Abuse Review, 2*, 219–222.

McFadyen, A., Hanks, H., and James, C. (1993). Ritual abuse: A definition. *Child Abuse Review, 2*, 35–41.

Ofshe, R. (1993). *Making monsters*. Lecture at the International Society of Sex Researchers, Asilomar, CA.

Scott, S. (1992). Beyond belief: Beyond help? Report on a helpline advertised after the transmission of a channel 4 film on ritual abuse. *Child Abuse Review 2*(4).

Sinason, V. (Ed.). (1994). *Treating survivors of satanist abuse.* Routledge: London.

Sinason, V. (Ed.). (1998). *Memory in dispute*. Karnac Books: London.

Sinason, V. (in press). Mind control. In A. Sachs & G. Galton (Eds.), *Forensic aspects of dissociative identity disorder* (Chapter 14). London: Karnac Books.

Snelling, O. & Scott, S. (1992). Report on the channel 4 dispatches documentary on satanic ritual abuse. In V. Sinason (Ed.), *Treating survivors of satanist abuse* (pp. 174–182). London: Routledge.

Social Work Today, Sept 27, 1991. p.888.

Tate, T. (1994). Press, politics and paedophilia: A practitioner's guide to the media. V. Sinason (Ed.), *Treating survivors of satanist abuse* (pp. 182–195). London: Routledge.

Victor, J. (1993). *Satanic panic: The creation of a contemporary legend.* Peru, IL: Open Court.

Waterhouse, R. (2000). *Lost in care: Report of the tribunal of Inquiry into the abuse of children in care in the former county council areas of Gwynedd and Clwyd since 1974.* The Stationary Office.

Weir, K. & Wheatcroft, M. S. (1995). Allegations of children's involvement in ritual sexual abuse: Clinical experience of 20 cases. *Child Abuse and Neglect, 19*(4), 491–505.

Youngson, S. (1994). Ritual abuse: The personal and professional cost for workers. In V. Sinason (Ed.), *Treating survivors of satanist abuse* (pp. 292–303). London: Routledge.

Notes

[1] Comment by Former Assistant Chief Constable Richard Monk, Commissioner of the UN International Police Task Force in Bosnia, who encouraged the setting up of the Scotland Yard Ritual Abuse Research Unit.

[2] Comment by Colonel Jonker, Former Founder and Head of the South African Police Occult Unit.

[3] Although the Extreme Abuse Surveys are no longer active, copies of each one and preliminary data, as they are compiled, are posted at http://extreme-abuse-survey.net.

[4] See Chapter 3 for preliminary results of the Extreme Abuse Survey for Adult Survivors.

[5] 5 See Table I in Chapter 8 for numbers and comparisons of German-language and English-language reports of ritually abusive groups.

CHAPTER 15

A Therapeutic Relationship: Shifting Boundaries in the Service of Healing

Lorna Joan Brown

Introduction

I was so moved by the story that enfolded as Dibs and I worked together that I wanted to pay tribute to her for surviving and for persevering in therapy over eight years. I also knew that shifting of certain therapeutic boundaries is frowned upon and yet in this instance the client seemed to be helped as a result. I then thought that this knowledge might be useful to other therapists and clients and so decided to write up our experience in a PhD dissertation.

The Research Design

A qualitative research approach was adopted to conduct the research because the main goal of the study was to explore the therapeutic relationship with one client with specific reference to shifting boundaries within and around this relationship. This included looking for changes that occurred in the perceptions, beliefs, behaviour and understanding in the bio-psycho-social-spiritual contexts of our therapy and research relationships of the client and myself.

The increased validity given to qualitative research made it possible to conduct the research in a meaningful way. The post modern research paradigm that rejects the search for ultimate truth and favours instead the co-existence of a multiplicity and variety of situation dependent ways of viewing phenomena sometimes called pluralism informed this study. It was then fitting that certain concepts from systems, constructivism and constructionist theories were included.

Different methods of constructing the research were used. Although elements of narrative enquiry and grounded theory were used to construct this naturalistic study, grounded theory was the dominant methodological approach that informed the gathering and the processing of data within this case study.

Certain themes emerged over time and these were present in and reflected in all the systems researched in this study. The various systems included Dibs family of origin, the therapeutic system, The System, the supervisory system and the academic system as well other systems in which I was involved such as the Systems group with colleagues. The themes were; control, strong negative feelings, abuse, shifting boundaries, time—past, present and future—and multiple voices.

The Story

The fifteenth of August 1994 dawned much like any other day. Later on that day Dibs and I met for our first appointment. The name Dibs was chosen when I began to write about the story of our work because it was important to her that her identity be protected. I chose the name because our work reminded me of Dibs in Virginia Axline's book "*In Search of Self.*" Our work also seemed to be about a search for "self."

Had either of us thought about it on that first day, we would probably have considered that we would meet for a few times, deal with the issues and then part. Neither of us could possibly have had an inkling of the horrors that were to emerge or the experiences of terror and at times joy that we would share over the next eight years.

As mentioned previously I was filled with admiration that Dibs had survived the torture and very severe abuse in the first ten years of her life; that she did eventually ask for help; managed to work really hard in between sessions; remain in the relationship and continue working despite the pain. She agreed to the recording of the research but at times this became a source of enormous conflict and remains an issue for her. I had said that I would give all material to her before I submitted it but when this became very time consuming and emotionally draining I handed work in before she saw it. I regretted this afterwards and when we did manage to struggle through what information was included and in what words, the encounters were very meaningful. I had really wanted her to be happy about the thesis but we eventually agreed reluctantly that she would remain unhappy about some of what was included and I would remain unhappy that she was not happy. She feels that what has been written contravenes our original agreement and she remains unhappy and concedes that her agreement remains reluctant.

In the early years when bizarre occurrences became the order of the day and I shifted some previously firmly held therapeutic boundaries, my colleagues and family members were disbelieving, disapproving and afraid for me and themselves. The boundary shift in the beginning stage was about my availability to receive telephone calls. This proved an irritation to colleagues and family:

> In therapy, with a therapist who is prepared to accept that there could be truth in what is being told, a 'satanically' abused patient can gradually recover from the nightmare of those memories from which there had seemed to be no escape except perhaps into insanity. But to enable this kind of patient to recover, the therapist has to take risks with his or her own more usual sense of sanity—and often without the security of having colleagues prepared to understand the nature of this work or prepared to support it. (Sinason, 1994, p. 25)

Over time I realized that intimidation and terror tactics are used by abusive systems to control and that I was not in danger. I thought that it might then be useful to share my experiences which might be of benefit to others who encounter satanic or other cult-like systems in their work.

At the very first session issues around control emerged and Dibs was startled by my question about when in her past she had felt out of control. She spoke about having been severely controlled by others physically, emotionally and spiritually. My memory is that I then asked her whether she had been abused as a child but she recalls that I made a statement. She often referred to having had her boundaries crashed in those early years.

The conversations in the first year were largely about sexual abuse. She had remembered some incidents but as we talked she remembered many more. It was only in the third year that satanic and cult connections began to be made. This was just prior to her 42nd birthday (6X6+6) and her biological father's 66th birthday which was on the 6th of a particular month (6+6+6). The family had held very high hopes for Dibs. At an early age it became clear that she had psychic abilities and this is prized in cult circles. She was also the first born of her father who headed a cult system and she was earmarked to take over as High Priestess from him. Much of the early torture and abuse was to prepare her for this position.

The focus of therapy at this stage was on listening and supporting Dibs as new and ugly memories emerged. It also included facilitating shifts in her thinking from, "I am dirty" to "Dirty things were done to me." Of immense help to her was also the realization that the emerging memories, although filled with horror, were in fact memories of events she had survived and not current happenings.

When her father made attempts to get her to return to the cult, he sent her gifts and suggested that she travel to the city where he lived so that she could listen to what he had to say and if she wanted to, she would be free to leave. At first she was tempted to go but decided against it. This then led to more menacing approaches, harassment and threats. Eventually on the advice of an adoptive family member she approached an individual in his private capacity to protect her against the people who were intimidating her. What was not known at that stage was that the man hired to protect her did some freelance work, but he also worked for a much larger and very powerful system. In this way Dibs unknowingly became a client of this system (The System).

The System was very good at protecting her physically and on several occasions foiled attempts to abduct or kidnap her. However, what emerged over time was that this system had been involved with at least one other client who had fallen under the influence of the same cult or family. At that stage The System had in their possession half a formula from this client. In their investigations about

Dibs, they discovered that she had the other half of the formula deeply buried in her unconscious.

The System put pressure on her to reveal the formula. The members protecting her became more and more intrusive and she was watched 24 hours a day. She became increasingly isolated as visits to or from friends or colleagues were discouraged and at times forbidden and she was often taken to various places of safety. Attempts to separate her from me were also made. Fortunately a senior psychologist in The System insisted that she remain with me.

On the third anniversary of our first meeting I shifted a previously firmly held therapeutic boundary and agreed to go out with her for a meal. By that time she was facing up to horrific emerging memories and having to search deeply within herself which was very exposing. It gradually felt more and more unequal for me to maintain the boundaries around self disclosure and having some social contact.

It came as a surprise to me that she was not really interested in personal details. What she needed to know was more about my belief system and resources and perhaps unconsciously she needed to know that I could survive both the horrors of her past as well as what was happening in the present.

The pressure from The System was relentless and they were impatient to get the formula to serve their own ends. Dibs and I worked together using dreams that she was having at the time and the bits and pieces of information that we had and some progress was slowly being made.

Under the guise of needing additional protection she was taken out of town where she was put under enormous pressure by being allowed only very restricted access to me and being pressurized to submit to other professionals to be hypnotized. When she refused, her medication was tampered with and she became more and more disorientated. Later when a tampered capsule was analyzed, it was discovered that a banned substance had been inserted. This causes compliance and takes a long time to work its way out of the system. Eventually the same psychologist mentioned previously became very distressed when he found her in the disorientated state and insisted that she be taken home immediately. I took her to a hypno-therapist on her return, and we managed to recover the formula which was then given to The System.

The formula led directly to other information about international criminal activities and exposed some of those involved. It is known that various court cases followed and some of the perpetrators served terms in prison. After each of these intrusive incidents by The System, it understandably took many sessions to enable her to recover and before we could again do any internal work.

Another boundary shift began to occur in the latter half of the third year. We discovered that when we were together The System was less intrusive and

demanding. Our work for different organizations took us out of town and at first we coincidentally ended up in the same town at the same time. Later we organized this deliberately and then stayed in the same hotel or bed and breakfast. I then also experienced first hand the intrusiveness and harsh treatment especially by some of the helping professionals in The System.

As we spent more time together in situations other than therapeutic, I was able to observe and experience her very differently from the usual limitations in therapy. At one time whenever we watched a TV programme “Days of Our Lives” she would fall asleep within seconds, make distressing whimpering sounds and then talk in her sleep. Much later we discovered that the hourglass used in the beginning of the programme was a trigger for her to sleep. What she said in her sleep often became an aid to remember certain incidents from the past. When she had disturbing dreams in the months that followed, we also used a tape recorder to record what she said in her sleep. Again these recordings proved invaluable in the therapeutic work that followed. Listening to what she said, or to the tapes, was extremely difficult and painful for me because the dialogue was usually between her and her mother and often in the plaintive and pleading voice of a small child begging that something not happen. Sinason (1994) confirms that, “most of the procedure regarding indoctrination of children is carried out at home, much of it by their mothers” (p. 243).

Dibs was subjected to many known methods of torture and abuse. To mention only a few—she was sexually, physically, emotionally and spiritually abused in various violent ways. She was locked in cupboards, cages and small dark places. She was deprived of food and at other times, force-fed. She was given drugs, tortured with electrical devices, given gas and hypnotized to make her compliant. Various forms of brainwashing and mind control were applied in order to control her and programme her to carry out instructions at some future date. Some had to do with getting her to talk to “the invisible people” and bring back messages for the group. These often had to do with businesses and making money. Her perpetrators believed they owned her and told her repeatedly that they did and that she was being prepared for some high office in the group at a future date. Coleman (1994) in a chapter titled “Satanic Cult Practices” describes in detail what happens to children born into these circles. This confirms what has been written above.

Dibs was desperate for love and to be held by her mother which was denied her. In later years she could not understand this need that persisted despite the continual abuse. This process is aptly described by Herman (1997):

> Even more than adults, children who develop in this climate of domination develop pathological attachments to those who abuse and neglect them,

> attachments that they will strive to maintain even at the sacrifice of their own welfare, their own reality, or their lives. (p. 98)

The training for Dibs to take up office in satanic circles at a later stage intensified particularly during a period of about five months stretching over Christmas, the New Year, her birthday and various satanic celebratory dates up to and including Easter. She remembers feeling confused when others seemed to expect her to know things that she in fact did not know. It is not clear if there was an expectation that she should know because she was psychic or for some other reason but she often pretended that she knew to avoid punishment and further abuse.

There was a culmination of horrific events involving Dibs, both in terms of what cult members did to her and what was required of her to do for them when she was ten. It is likely that she was reaching some kind of limit or ultimate boundary in terms of her level of tolerance. She became withdrawn at first and then became violent, destroying the contents of a room. This infuriated the man whom she only later came to know as her father, who no doubt felt helpless. He became so violent with her that he injured her very severely and she had to be hospitalized.

Dibs sustained severe head injuries that required surgery. The surgery was delayed so that her condition could be stabilised. Her jaw was also broken. Later plastic surgery was done to lift the skin on her forehead so that the scar is now just above her hairline.

Dibs was warned not to tell what had happened but to say that she had fallen. Children who were abused by the cult members were told that the perpetrators would know if they broke the silence. Coleman (1994) writes about the experience of survivors in this context:

> Survivors tell how as children, they were taught that spiders and insects were Satan’s agents, who were watching them and reporting back to him. Some say they were forced to swallow eyeballs ‘so they could be watched from inside.’ (p. 249)

The hospital personnel could see the signs of the abuse that had been particularly intense for the five months preceding the assault. While Dibs was in the hospital recovering from the operation on her damaged skull, her mother threatened her. A nurse witnessed this episode and this led to further access in the hospital being denied the mother. She was later permanently removed from her biological parents and adopted. All access to her biological parents was denied. Her worst fear of losing her mother was thus realized. Her mother had always

threatened that she would go away and now Dibs was faced with this reality. As is common in these situations she blamed herself. She had been told often enough that things happened to her because of what she had done or not done. She had been threatened frequently that her mother would leave her for the same reasons.

When Dibs was being taken to the hospital after her injury she had been told to say that she had fallen. Although she had not divulged any facts about what had happened her mother accused her of doing so. The inner conflict, self-blame and loss was too great for her and she found it easier to disappear into a world of her own where she remained for a year in another hospital.

Eventually Dibs re-emerged into consciousness and was returned to her adoptive family who never spoke about the past and all evidence of her mother was removed. There is little doubt that the adoptive family did the very best that they knew how at the time and believed that to be the best for the child. She returned to school and was admitted into the same standard she would have been in, had she not missed a year of schooling. It is not surprising that she felt then that she was stupid and slow and always behind her peers in her school work.

At the age of fifteen, an older man courted Dibs. Both at this stage used various mood enhancing drugs. She fell pregnant and they married when she was sixteen and a few months later she became a mother. Much later it was realized that this man had been sent by her biological family to woo and marry her as a way of getting her back into the cult. The marriage was conflictual from the beginning and ended in divorce. After we had been working together for some time, it was also discovered that during the early marriage when she experienced severe abdominal pains and was admitted for a medical procedure, a device was inserted into her uterus that was both a sender and a receiver. It would seem that it was used both to track her whereabouts and to send various signals that affected her behaviour. On one occasion the sounds emitted from this device were clearly audible to me. It made a bleeping noise similar to that made by a cell phone when a message has been recorded or the sound made by a bleeper. She was so disconcerted by this that she had herself X-rayed. The device was clearly visible in her uterus and was then removed under anesthetic by a gynecologist.

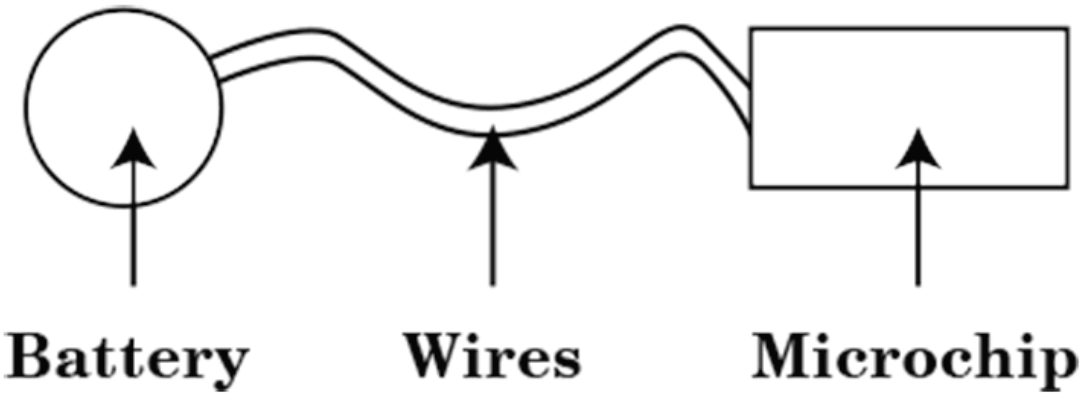


Figure 3.1: Microchip found in Dibs' abdomen

The birth of her child had a profound effect on Dibs. She realized almost immediately that this little being was dependent on her. She had been able to withstand taking drugs while pregnant and did return to that lifestyle after the birth. She was soon aware though, that she was subjecting the young baby to some of what she had experienced in terms of her mother not being there for her. She decided to make some changes and give her child a different experience.

Very, very slowly she picked herself up from the world of drugs, improved her education, obtained qualifications and found a good job. She has remained clear of drugs for many years now, holds a position of authority and leadership at work and has been a good parent. Her child is now a successful, highly qualified young person in stable employment.

During the years when we were constantly terrorized by The System the therapy focused mainly on managing the day to day harassment but the internal work continued simultaneously. Dibs struggled during this time with the issue of who she is. Eventually she wrote a moving poem about her conclusions.

You came into being—a small insignificant egg.
At first you were not noticed…
When they tried to do away with you,
You clung to your leaf—not to be denied your life.

You emerged a tiny squirming worm.
Wriggling and vulnerable.
You should have been cared for—loved.
They never saw your worth…
You were abandoned.

Then came the black creatures…
They tried to feed on you—take your life.
You crawled under the leaves.
So hard to grow there,
But at least you were alive,
Even there, the creatures sometimes saw you—
Tried to feed on you…
They made you bleed.
But you were alive—
Scarred and scared…
Barely alive.
Because of the blood,
You were shunned by the others.
Being afraid, feeling pain,
Fighting to survive–became too much.

You gathered the last of your strength—
Found deep inside.
You spun the cocoon around yourself.
You were protected—
You could no longer be preyed upon—
You could no longer feel the pain.
You were alone.
It was dark and you were alone.
And quietly in the darkness…
You forgot feelings,
You learnt to deny your being,
It was the only way for you to live—
The only way to survive.
Alone.

It was dark and you were alone,
For an unmeasureable time.
Then suddenly—you FELT something…
What was it?
At first the feeling upset and confused you…
It was the warmth of the little ray of sunshine.
You didn't know what to do with the feeling.
But the little ray of sunshine—
Just continued to shine.

You began to understand,
It was time…
Time to leave your cocoon.
Very slowly you crawled out,
You were bewildered.
So much had changed…
Within you.
It all felt so different—yet the same being.
You discovered more to yourself,
Parts of you—
Yet foreign to you.
Like two great sections
Growing out of your back,
Weighing you down—
Needing to learn how to work.
But they were crinkled up and wet.
They were not able to work.

You knew what to do…
Hang upside down from your leaf—
So very, very frightening
And uncomfortable. But necessary—
So that the 'new' parts could unfold.
To warm and dry these parts,
You needed the little ray of sunshine…
And it was there.

You began to wonder
If this was the only way through?
Was it really necessary
To endure this process?
Would these parts ever dry—
Or unfold and actually work?
After all, you'd never believed
You would ever emerge from your cocoon,
Why then would you need any new parts?
You didn't deserve to have any.
You should just be grateful to be alive—
More was never for you,
Or was it?

The dreadful little ray of sunshine
Seemed so convinced
You were doing just the right thing,
It just continued to shine…
And shine and shine!!!!

And so you hung in there
With all you had—
You let each crinkle
Begin to painfully unfold.
Sometimes the discomfort of
Hanging upside down disoriented—
Confused you.
At times the pain of unfolding—
Seemed unbearable.
Sometimes you'd even
Try to crawl back,
Back into your cocoon—
Only to find
This had now become impossible.
You had fitted in there
So snugly before—
But now
Your growth
Had made it impossible
To go back.
There was nothing else to do
But to continue
To hang upside down—
And let yourself unfold.

You opened your eyes.
What was all that colour?
Splashes and streaks
Of blue, violet,
Pink, yellow and red.
Your wings!!
Your wings!!

You stared at yourself

In disbelief.
You are no longer a worm—
But a beautiful butterfly—
Still discovering the colours of your wings.
But nevertheless
A unique butterfly
With wings to fly…
High, high
Into the sky—
Alongside my precious
Little ray of sunshine.

And just who do you think you are?
The sound of the black creatures
Echoed through your being
From way back under the leaves
Under the leaves
Where you once were
Now you are out
Above the leaves
And they
They are back there
Trapped under the leaves
And I'm glad
So glad
I wonder if it's wrong
To be so glad
That they are trapped
Trapped under the leaves
I hope it's dark there
So dark
Who do you think you are?
The voices echo again…
I'm tired
So tired
And the ray of sunshine
Shines
And in that light
Again I see the colours

What is it?
My wings! My wings!
They are the parts that once
Grew so painfully
From out of me
Parts I didn't know I had
And with these wings
I want to fly
High into the sky
I tried
The wings would do nothing
Two parts of me
Side by side
Full of colours
Yes—beautiful
Yet they would do nothing
I looked at one part
So colourful
And perfectly formed
I looked at the other
It too—colourful and perfectly formed
Two parts
Of me
Separate
One from the other
And somehow
With me
In the middle
I could not fly
Why?
What was the secret?
Bring the two parts together
Whispered the little ray of sunshine
But it is so painful
It all feels so stiff
So unknown
Try…
She whispered
Bringing the two together…

It was the hardest thing I'd ever done
Harder than
Bleeding under the leaves
Harder than
Being in the cocoon
Harder than squeezing out of the cocoon
Harder than
Hanging upside down
Harder than letting my wings unfold
Bringing the two together was the hardest thing I'd done
Holding them together was worse
But as I continued
To work at it…
Bringing them together
Holding them together
Letting the effort go
Bringing them together
Letting it all go
Bringing the parts together
Holding them together
Letting the past go
I'm flying…
Sometimes there's wind
And rain
And it's hard to fly
But I know I can
And sometimes
The ray of sunshine
Goes away a while
But she <u>always</u> comes back
Even when gone
I know she's around
Not far away
And I <u>can</u> fly
I don't have to try
So hard anymore
The parts come together
More naturally now
I never knew about those parts

So colourful
I kept them
Tucked away—hidden
And all the time
They were my wings.
Sometimes
Shadows fall
And the ray of sunshine
Shines
Shadows fall
And the ray of sunshine
Shines
So I don't forget my colours
The parts I've found,
The parts that grew
No more can I deny
There's so much more to me
It's true
I have to say I grew
And grew
And now I fly
I fly, I fly.

This is Dangerous Work

The fifth year of therapy was characterised by further attempts by The System to intrude into Dibs' life and a gradual increase in her confidence to resist such intrusions.

In the early months of the year several new "protectors" came into Dibs' life and various devious methods were used to try and win her over. One man tried to engage her into co-operating with them by dressing as a clown and appealing to the part of her that enjoyed having fun. He was working with another man and a female social worker and they said that a study was being done about people who had been in protective custody. Their interest in Dibs was to get material for this study. Persons from The System also approached her about her psychic abilities and made her an offer of employment in The System. At first this intimidated her but later she learned to say no directly and also wrote numerous letters to them to this effect but they were ignored.

When Dibs' psychic ability was first mentioned by The System she denied vehemently to them that she had any such abilities. On one occasion we went to a local bookshop to read up on this phenomenon and were told later by a man from The System that we had been followed and observed as we consulted various books. Our conversation had also been listened to. At that time our telephones were monitored more or less permanently and at times it was very difficult to talk because of the persistent echoes and clicks on the telephone line. These unwanted intrusions across our personal, social and work boundaries were an invasion of our privacy and our right to move about without being observed. The right to human dignity, freedom, security of person and privacy, as laid down in the Constitution of the Republic of South Africa (1996) may be challenged in a court of law when violated. Knowing this also increased Dibs' confidence to say no.

What also became evident during this period was that there were two divisions in The System and that people from the section who were harassing Dibs were in disagreement with the other division. There were ambivalence and tension within The System itself. A bizarre situation arose where employees from one division protected her from their colleagues in another division. However, the harassment was persistent, cruel and invasive and no matter what she did to protest, it seemed to make no difference.

The work has required immense courage on behalf of Dibs, my promoter and myself, as attested to by at least one other therapist who chose to remain anonymous for safety reasons (Ryder, 1996). The context in which we found ourselves was and probably continues to be potentially dangerous but I have also learned through personal experience that a small group of committed people can make a difference when they are not intimidated by the danger. The lack of safety relates to cult-like and other abusive systems often being involved in local and in certain instances international criminal activities involving the use of violence. When there is danger that these activities, individuals or systems will be exposed, the survivor and the therapist are potentially in danger of being harmed. There is also reluctance by perpetrators in these systems to let go of victims who have been programmed to act as puppets that jump at the pull of a string.

Abusers often harass survivors for years after they begin to break free from the fetters that bound them. Rutz (2001) writes that she wished that she could say that she had been free from all contact with her former programmers and handlers since she began to heal but she cannot. She was 16 when she managed to break free from the abuse but twenty-six years later there was still contact from the abusers. By 2001 she was able to state that she was no longer being contacted. Dibs was removed from her abusers at age ten and 32 years later attempts were still being

made to get her to return to the cult-like system. She even had to endure an attempted kidnap that was foiled by The System.

The System however, was also a danger to Dibs. They used the same underhand and at times violent methods to protect Dibs as the abusive system had used to abuse her. Later it emerged that they had been involved in some way with the abusers in the past and there was obviously a great need to protect this information. It was only when Dibs managed to feel confident enough to look outside the abusive systems and turn to The Commission that the abuse and harassment from The System subsided.

In times of danger, shifting therapeutic boundaries seemed to help. For example, in contrast to the allegation that telephonic contact between sessions may promote dependence, the experience of calls in this therapeutic context seemed to have had the opposite effect. Often when Dibs called she was feeling overwhelmed and panicky. After a brief conversation she felt sufficiently strengthened and empowered to continue on her own. Over time this led her to feeling more confident about herself and she learnt techniques, such as self-talk, that enabled her to resolve certain crises herself, with the result that the calls became less frequent.

Body Memories

At the time that we were working on retrieving the information so sought after by her family-of-origin and The System, body memories began to appear. At times these emerged prior to a visual memory and at other times afterwards. They were worrying and not easily understood by Dibs, her medical doctor, or me.

At one time her iron levels dropped dangerously low and she developed infections for which no reasonable medical explanation could be found. The infections were common in children who played in close proximity to the ground and are not usually found in adults. At another time Dibs had a sore throat that developed into a chest infection. What baffled her doctor was that her throat revealed signs of having been burnt by gas or some chemical substance. The memory associated with this, which emerged later, was of a substance, possibly sulphuric acid used as an aid to induce a trance-like state in her during a ritual in which she had been forced to participate. She also suffered persistently from anemia at times although there was no obvious cause. Once the memory surfaced the body symptoms usually abated.

Memories of this nature are often questioned with regard to their accuracy. Fonagay and Target (1997) cite several researchers regarding the controversy around the accuracy of traumatic memories. Some researchers maintain that there is much evidence to suggest that details of autobiographical memory are distorted.

However, others state that early memories of traumatic events are likely to be broadly accurate, even with regard to the third, fourth, and fifth year of life.

The phenomenon of body memories is well documented by Van der Kolk, McFarlane and Weisaeth (1996). They also mention that trauma effects development and the ability to learn.

Dibs struggled with learning to read as a child and even today she reads slowly. She has also spoken about feeling limited in terms of language, having a limited vocabulary and often feeling that she did not know what she was supposed to or expected to know. Often this resulted in severe punishment by the perpetrators. As a result she pretended to know.

In the telling and re-telling of her story, Dibs no longer attributes her language difficulties to being stupid. She recognises that she is an intelligent and creative person and that a more likely explanation for this specific early learning problem could be her sporadic school attendance and extreme emotional stress brought about by prolonged subjection to intense and severe abuse by her family-of-origin and other perpetrators. She has gradually become more confident about herself and has learnt to ask or look up the meanings of words and so increase her vocabulary and other language skills.

Two very frightening body memories almost resulted in surgery. The one was a growth in Dibs' throat and the other a shadow on her brain, both diagnosed by medical specialists. The growth disappeared after we had worked with various metaphors about "the lump in the throat" such as what she needed to cry about, or what the lump was making difficult to talk about. It is my belief that physical symptoms are often metaphorical reflections of suppressed emotions or memories that are, as yet, too painful to know about.

The shadow on Dibs' brain was accompanied by a symptom of falling. It was as if from time to time her knees would just collapse and she would fall over. The "key" to this symptom was that she had been told to say that she had "fallen" when she was admitted to hospital after the incident described previously when she had been severely injured by her biological father. Once this surfaced the shadow disappeared, as did the falling.

The way we worked together on finding the "key" was to talk over and over again about what the symptoms might mean in relation to past experiences. Attempts were made to make connections between the present symptoms and the past. Dibs increasingly used the safety of the therapeutic relationship where she had the freedom and control to explore at her own pace, and permit previously suppressed memories to emerge and be expressed consciously. This was in stark contrast to the past when she was controlled by force and fear and was unable to express her own experiences or feelings openly.

Mind Control

Very shortly after feeling stable for the first time in her life some new and disturbing symptoms emerged. Dibs described them as flashbacks and yet said they were different from past experiences. Flashing lights as in changing traffic lights or various colours flashing on a computer screen would trigger the flashbacks.

This led to new and terrifying discoveries. As time went by Dibs was assaulted with new discoveries about her past and what was done to her. In sessions we spent time talking about the flashbacks and recurrent dreams that she was having at that time. The dreams usually included her mother in a smallish room. As she talked in the session she would become aware of vague images at times and at other times a memory of a man or several people being in the room. Then she started remembering their names. These names were at that stage not known to either of us. The first name that came to her was “Cameron.” Later we established that a man called Ewen Cameron was one of the men used in North America to perform Mind Control experiments on children in the 1950s and early 1960s.

According to Rutz (2001), Mind Control experimentation was done in America from 1953. Much has since been written about what was done to victims under the CIA controlled MKULTRA, Bluebird and Artichoke programmes (Rutz, 2001; Ryder, 1996; Taylor, 1999). “‘Mind Control’ is a rather vague and nebulous term to label methods of extreme coercion that result in an individual’s involuntary, robotic compliance” (Taylor, 1999, p. vi). Dibs’ biological parents and more recently a sub system of The System, we suspect were both involved in the perpetration of this form of abuse.

Mind Control experimentation included the use of sensory deprivation and the use of electrical shock techniques. “Other methods used to alter brainwave states include, but are not limited to, rapidly flashing lights, drugs, phased sound waves, negative ions (electromagnetic energy fields), electroshock, alterations in gravity in the cerebellum (spinning), microwave emitters, and lasers” (Taylor, 1999, p. xxi). Mind Control is a shattering experience for the victim who frequently feels fragmented and confused by such external manipulation and control. Perpetrators of Mind Control use the natural and healthy ability of all individuals to dissociate or split mental functions under certain conditions, to serve their own diabolical purposes. This is a gross violation on multiple levels and spheres of one’s bio-psycho-social-spiritual make-up.

Mind Control is the ultimate form of control and intrusion. The methods of torture and abuse that are used as well as the introduction of cue words serve the purpose of later exercising almost complete control over the victims who then act as robots in the service of their perpetrators.

As our work continued strange words would come into Dibs' mind. They seemed to have no meaning or link in her memory. When I put the words into the computer the search engines shot across the screen as they found the links. Some of these were Aegis Psi War, M.J.12, Milkweed and Annunaki. A memory also surfaced in which the dates 21–23 March 1965 emerged. She knew that it had to do with a conference about Apartheid that took place in America. It took some time to find a reference that matched this but I did find a record of a "National Conference on the South African Crisis and American Action, Washington DC 21–23 March 1965 organised by the American Commission on Africa. Resolutions A/AC 115/l.122." It may be significant that Sharpeville Day is 21st March. Most of the above was linked in one way or another to MKULTRA or similar Mind Control programmes.

Apart from recalling the name Cameron as stated above, other names recalled were Gruenbaum, Gottlieb, JJ, Drs Black, Green and White and Estabrooks. Later Joseph Mengele also surfaced. These are all well-known perpetrators of Mind Control (Rutz, 2001; Ryder, 1996; Taylor, 1999). When I was reading to Dibs from a relevant book and read the name Orne, she immediately said Martin, which is his first name.

When Dibs first spoke about JJ, I e-mailed a contact in America who replied immediately that this man's name was James Jesus Angleton who was Central Intelligence Agency (CIA) and White House connected and known in connection with Wizard of Oz programming (Schnellar, personal communication, June 7, 2001). Rutz (2001) said of JJ Angleton that he worked for the Document Disposal Unit that laundered CIA money to use for their projects. Reference is also made that Angleton and others sabotaged the CIA filing system to protect State Department Nazis.

This is Difficult Work

Therapists working with people who were subjected to Mind Control experimentation should bear in mind the torture and extreme trauma these people have experienced:

> Working with people who have been traumatised confronts therapists as well as patients with intense emotional experiences it forces then to explore the darkest corners of the mind, and to face the entire spectrum of human glory and degradation. Sooner or later, those experiences have the potential to overwhelm therapists. The repeated exposure to their own vulnerability becomes too intense, the display of the infinite human capacity for cruelty too unbearable,

> the enactment of the trauma within the therapeutic relationship too terrifying. (Turner, McFarlane & Van der Kolk, 1996, p. 552) Within the therapeutic relationship the therapist needs to become a symbol of predictability and safety, as well as a person in whose presence ambivalence and control can be worked through. Idealisation is a necessary component as well as a space and place to explore disappointment, autonomy, and disagreement.

The ability of both therapists and patients to endure ambivalence is also important. When this becomes possible, patients are enabled to become more autonomous, less clinging and to experience greater self esteem which equips them for more effective action in their life situations. Therapists are also required to exercise extreme patience.

Turner et al. (1996) postulate further that it is also important to leave as much control as possible with the patient and not accept the helplessness, which is often so prevalent in this work. Because the therapy involves all the affects and effects of the original trauma it may become unbearable for both patients and therapists at times.

Some Concluding Comments and Conclusions

As mentioned earlier, the increased validity given to qualitative research made it possible to conduct this research in a meaningful way. The focus has been on the shifting of personal, therapeutic, knowledge and other systemic boundaries in order to increase the flow of the water of life, constrained by conditions of multiple abuses in the past.

This therapeutic relationship was Dibs' first experience of a relationship in which she was able to trust enough to be open. In the early years she could not trust her abusers and in later years, while she could trust her caregivers, she could not open up to them because of the prohibition on talking about her past.

It can thus be postulated that this therapeutic relationship as it developed and deepened provided a safe environment in which to do the therapeutic work that has taken place over eight years. The therapeutic relationship also provided a safe enough climate for Dibs and me to risk shifting some traditionally held therapeutic and research boundaries as we struggled together to find ways to manage our emotions, external and internal turmoil, and challenges.

During the first session Dibs spoke about many strong negative feelings she was experiencing at that time. These were mainly feelings of fear and distress and she did not understand why. She also felt less able to control these feelings, hence her temptation to bash her head against a wall, which served to increase her tension

and fear of becoming overwhelmed by the feelings and then not being able to cope with daily life.

It was also very clear from the outset that although Dibs felt out of control of her escalating feelings at times, she also felt it was important for her to maintain as much control of the expression of these feelings as possible. Her need for control also extended to attempting to control information as it emerged in therapy and we discussed confidentiality in that session and in many subsequent sessions. She was reluctant that any records be kept of our sessions and at that stage did not want anyone to know that she was talking to me.

Keeping firm traditional therapeutic boundaries regarding fixed times and one place for regular sessions without self-disclosure on my part seemed called for at that stage. The only concession from the outset was allowing Dibs to contact me by telephone between sessions.

Although we dealt with the feelings Dibs was experiencing at that time, it was clear that many of these feelings had their origins in her early childhood experience of cult-like abuse. As our relationship developed I came to know that Dibs' early caretakers had also been the perpetrators of the abuse and so it became imperative that she experience a close relationship that was not abusive. The firm therapeutic boundaries mentioned previously that were appropriate in the early stages of therapy Dibs later experienced as controlling and unequal.

Shifting boundaries emerged as a dominant theme when Dibs began to experience our relationship as increasingly unequal and controlling. This coincided with my withholding of self-disclosure or declining to make certain concessions in the traditional psychoanalytic frame, such as refusing to meet for a meal or at a venue other than in my office. Over time it seemed important to be able to shift boundaries without this being experienced by Dibs as controlling.

When we eventually met outside the therapy room and went for a meal and to chat about everyday matters, Dibs experienced it as nurturing and being treated and regarded as a person and not only as a client or a passive victim. Our therapeutic relationship was characterised by closeness rather than the distance that is recommended by many psychoanalysts. I was actively involved in the conversations that took place and did not take up the role of a listener and interpreter only. I also became involved in protecting Dibs from The System and in communicating directly to The System about how Dibs experienced their methods of protection as abusive.

Other boundary shifts involved extending both the length and frequency of sessions from the traditional hour a week to at least two hours twice a week for a period of time, as well as meeting at venues outside the therapy room. At one time I increased my availability to 24 hours a day as far as telephone calls were

concerned. Dibs always handled the latter with consideration and did not call late or at night or at times I had not agreed to previously.

Some therapists for example Herman (1997), Lynn (1993) and Turner et al. (1996) who work in the area of cult abuse, loss and trauma, have experienced similar needs to shift certain therapeutic boundaries. Etchegoyen (1991) supports the use of flexible rather than rigid therapeutic boundaries, while Little (1993) holds that Winnicott's flexibility, for example visiting her in her own home when she was ill, contributed to her healing after having suffered abuse herself.

The cost to the therapist of shifting boundaries in order to facilitate healing in victims of prolonged, severe and multiple abuses is high and the personal investment, particularly in terms of energy, time and emotional resources, is huge. For therapists with busy practices or in certain life situations involving decreased personal control, this approach might not be possible or advisable.

The friendship that developed over time helped Dibs to feel that she had value as a person and not only as a client. It was often important to her that we connected on levels other than the therapeutic. At times it seemed to her that only the work on her inner system was important and she then felt as though the part of her that was doing the work was getting lost in the process of working on the inner system.

The collegial relationship also did much to bolster Dibs' confidence in her work as well as learn about herself. Often the content of our work together included aspects of self-knowledge, self-growth and life skills that increased her knowledge and skill base. When she applied what she had learnt, it increased her skill level in working with people. As she confronted her own loss and pain she was more able to be present with others in loss and pain, as she no longer needed to defend against those feelings in herself.

Strong negative feelings in the later years were present in most sessions over time. These feelings included despair, desperation, unhappiness and helplessness and anger. The feelings triggered in the present were often related to events from the past. For example, when Dibs felt hounded and intruded upon by The System, she would feel trapped and helpless and this would provoke horrific memories of past abuse and the feelings of despair and helplessness that accompanied those experiences. Other intense feelings were about the losses, such as the loss of innocence and the loss of childhood as well as the loss of a way of life and friends that she still experienced in the present. These experiences needed therapeutic work in order to bring healing from past hurts and pain so that she could manage her day-to-day life. These feelings also influenced how she thought about her future and she agonised about whether she would ever be able to reach a stage when the past did not intrude and affect her life in the present.

In the satanic cult in which Dibs grew up she was exposed to extreme degrees of control. I became sensitised by the above knowledge and leaving as much control as possible with Dibs in the process of therapy became very important. What she brought to therapy, the pace at which we worked and ending a particular conversation was left largely to her. When I felt it important to work on or return to an issue, I always checked this out with her first even though at times I felt it very important to pursue or return to a particular instance of abuse. She seemed to know when she was ready and would then be willing to do the painful and difficult work of accessing and dealing with these traumatic memories.

Further therapy is still required to work on various aspects of the past that continue to intrude into the present. One example is the surfacing of intense and excessive anger inappropriate to a stimulus in the present, such as some inefficiency of an employee. This is decreasing gradually over time. Dibs is also still plagued by strong negative feelings of anger and despair about the fact that the control and abuse happened in the first place and that she was the innocent target. She often feels helpless and despairing and has to work hard to prevent depression from controlling her life even further.

Abuse was another theme that recurred over time. Dibs was abused emotionally by being denied love and affection and being made to believe that she was responsible for incidents unrelated to her, for example when her father became angry with her mother.

As time went by and certain memories surfaced, they were often experienced as an additional trauma as she relived the horrors of the past as if for the first time. At times the work we did together to retrieve and heal memories also felt abusive to her despite the care that was taken to be gentle and leave as much control as possible in her hands.

Confidentiality and control of information about Dibs' past and the therapy was another theme that emerged from the beginning of the therapeutic and research relationship. At first she did not want a written record of sessions to be kept. As mentioned earlier at each step on the journey she was at pains to prevent information about her becoming available to additional people or organizations.

This remains an issue for her and even the request to write this chapter has been difficult for her. Unfortunately this need to maintain the secrecy or confidentiality about Dibs' past was reinforced after some bad experiences with a few professionals and family members who seemed to treat her with less respect and regard after they knew something about her history. She has also always been adamant and determined to protect her adoptive family and her child.

Connections between the past, the present and the future also became a theme. Feelings triggered by an event or stimulus in the present such as an experience of

intrusiveness or feeling taken advantage of were often experienced as excessive and disturbing because they evoked memories of the past. At times the connections between past and present were clear and at other times they remained elusive. Sometimes something in the present, such as a flashing light, would trigger an unpleasant memory of the past and all the feelings that went with it. At one time when she saw the colour purple it plunged her back into the traumatic rituals where purple cloaks had been worn. Certain harsh and controlling behaviours of women employed by The System provoked strong memories of when her mother treated her cruelly and harshly. At times the past and present seemed so connected, especially in relation to similar threatening experiences with The System, that it became difficult to tell whether she was experiencing the past, the present or both simultaneously.

There are systemic connections between all the themes as mentioned above. Being controlled was an abusive experience and was accompanied by strong negative feelings, which in turn provoked a need to control the experience and expression of feelings as well as to control the environment. All the themes also occurred over time and as illustrated, the past had an influence on the present and the future.

Reflective Processes Over Time

Upon reflection I have become aware that at times certain isomorphic patterns emerged during this journey. There were connecting patterns and processes between the discussions and experiences with my supervisor and promoter and what was happening between Dibs and me and certain of Dibs' past experiences. Mattinson (1977) confirms that, "the processes at work currently in the relationship between client and worker are often reflected in the relationship between worker and supervisor" (p. 11). In supervision sessions about my work with Dibs we were often struck by the similarity between how I felt about the research at times and how Dibs felt at certain moments in the therapy process. These reflective processes also became evident in areas other than supervision as described below with regard to my experience of writing up this research.

My feelings were often around "not knowing" when I encountered knowledge, beliefs and practices unfamiliar to my previous education and training that was mainly in Social Work. Similar feelings of inadequacy and uncertainty often plagued Dibs as she re-encountered the unknown of certain memories of her past. It was of paramount importance to me to feel in control of the research, as it was for her to feel in control of her life without being overwhelmed by feelings of personal inadequacy or incompetence.

Both Dibs and I were helped to manage feelings of inadequacy possibly because of the demands made on us in the systems in which we grew up. We were both called upon to take on adult roles normally considered inappropriate for children. In my case, for example, parenting a younger brother enabled me to develop skills of caring for another that most children do not develop at such an early age. In the therapeutic relationship these skills of endurance, patience and caring helped me to focus on Dibs' needs and especially her need to be attended to and accepted as a person of value.

I have become aware of reflective processes in my struggle to express and record the story that I thought worth "telling," in the required academic writing style and Dibs' struggle to do what was required of her. My promoter has been thorough and meticulous in overseeing the written material and for that I am grateful but at the same time I experienced the process as shameful and embarrassing. This led to a loss of self-confidence so that it not only became difficult to commit pen to paper but I found myself questioning my competence in other areas of my life. It also led to feelings of immense vulnerability.

In addition it seemed to me that no matter how hard I tried, and no matter how many additions or changes I made in the text, it was never enough or good enough. Having to write according to a prescribed system I experienced as controlling and devoid of choice. Despite a considerate and helpful promoter, the institutional system lays down rigid rules that made me at times feel like a victim in a system where conformity is mandatory and the sooner I complied, the sooner the agony would end.

My experience of the academic journey as described above partly mirrors Dibs' early experience in the cult-like environment where she was controlled by the perpetrators who were never satisfied with what she did while they continually demanded more of her.

What helped Dibs and me to survive these strong negative feelings was a deep inner knowing that we both had value as people and that the work we were engaged in was also valuable. We were both helped to make connections between the assumptions of the dominant cultural narrative to which we had been exposed and the present reality. In this case we had assumed that we were totally responsible for the feelings of shame and embarrassment that we experienced. In Dibs' case she was helped to understand that the shame was as a result of past abuse. I was helped to understand that my feelings were partly to do with the academic system in which I found myself.

Coming from the discipline of Social Work with its established ways of doing research and therapy and moving into the domain of Psychology meant that I was an "outsider" trying to survive in a different context from the one that was familiar

to me. For both Dibs and me, much in unfamiliar contexts was unknown and when problems arose, we often felt that we were the problems and that we had done something wrong or not done something that we ought to have done. We also were not believed by some and shunned by some when we told the story. We then both ended up feeling bad about ourselves.

In the academic research system a promoter takes up a similar role to that of a therapist in assisting someone to make a transition in life from a familiar context to a more unfamiliar or unknown context. As my promoters were also constrained by the rules and conventions of the research context, they were unable to protect me from the feelings of abuse and persecutory control that I experienced, just as I was unable to protect my client from similar feelings at times.

In addition to the experience of multiple abuses, Dibs' early experience in a cult-like environment meant that she felt an "outsider" from the mainstream of society. Growing up and being dependent on a cult-like system and being exposed to processes of external control since infancy served to silence Dibs' voice and to isolate her from many sources of potential help. Her intensely ambivalent attempts to get into an essentially unfamiliar but desired and potentially meaningful context often proved painful and rejecting. If supervisors or therapists become part of such controlling systems because they have to conform to certain laid down criteria, we need to search for ways that cause participants the least amount of damage. In the context of this therapy and research it would seem that shifting boundaries has been containing and benign. However, it seems that there will always be some tension in knowing which boundaries should remain in place and which may be regarded with greater flexibility and shifted as deemed necessary for healing.

At this time when interdisciplinary research is encouraged and is becoming more common, it behoves academics in different disciplines to be open to communicating with each other and negotiating which boundaries can safely be shifted in certain circumstances and which need to remain firm. What might also be useful in academic circles is to explore how supervision can better assist students in this difficult transitional process involving interdisciplinary research. Perhaps some of what has emerged in this thesis regarding the intense struggle to shift boundaries might also be useful in the academic context and transitional contexts associated with change in our rapidly changing world where we are daily confronted with similar transitions involving the shifting of familiar boundaries.

A Few Final Thoughts, For Now, From Dibs

Reading this dissertation was an overwhelming experience—an emotional flood! It felt at times as if my banks would burst. Seeing my journey in black and

white was startling. I felt as churned up as a twisting, turbulent river. I wanted to stop this from going to print—in an effort to protect my inner self, which sometimes feels very vulnerable at the thought of others knowing about me—even though they won't know who I am. And much more so—to protect myself from those who do know who I am! Yet this is the story not only of abuse and pain, but of a relationship that facilitated for the struggle and ultimate triumph over abuse and pain. A relationship, which is precious to me. Our story goes to print with my blessing. Sometimes I am afraid—but I am no longer ashamed. And if there is a chance that someone else will be helped because of this dissertation I feel an inner calm—like the river returning to a gentle flow.

It was the hardest thing I've ever done…
Discovering hidden parts…
Of me.
Bringing them together,
Holding them together,
Letting the effort go,
Bringing them together,
Holding them together,
Letting the past go.

To those who suffered in any way because of my journey—I'm truly sorry. To those who held different views about this therapy and the shifting boundaries—while it hurt like crazy, I respect your right to deal with your clients in a more conventional way with firmer therapeutic boundaries.

To those people who prayed so very much for us during this journey, I thank you. It's painful to know you would not have me in your midst. While I respect your right to have made that choice, it is my belief that both you and I have lost because of your choice.

To the supervisor of this dissertation, I don't even know you, yet I feel deeply emotional at the thought of you. Thank you for being there. Thank you for support. Thank you for respecting me.

To my beloved therapist and friend. Thank you for believing me and for believing in me. We found my past, fought through the present. Now I have a future and "…whatever other commandment there may be, all are summed up in this one rule: 'Love your neighbour as yourself'" (Romans 13 : 9). You have done this for me and I know that it cost a great deal. Thank you. I love you.

To Jesus—you made the way.

It was the hardest thing I've ever done…
Finding those parts,
Bringing them together,
Holding them together,
Letting the past go…
And when it's hard
I will remember the little ray of sunshine
Whispering…
You can—just try…
And then I'll fly
I'll fly, fly

References

American Psychological Association. (1995). *Publication manual of the American Psychological Association* (4th ed.). Washington, DC: APA.

Axline, V. (1971). *Dibs in search of self.* London: Penguin.

Coleman, J. (1994). Satanic cult practices. In V. Sinason (Ed.), *Treating survivors of satanist abuse* (pp. 242–253). London: Routledge.

Constitution of the Republic of South Africa, Act 108 of 1996.

Etchegoyen, H. (1991). *The fundamentals of psychoanalytic technique.*London: Karnac Books.

Fonagay, P., & Target, M. (1997). Perspectives on the recovered memories debate. In J. Sandler & P. Fonagay (Eds.), *Recovered memories of abuse* (pp. 183–216). London: Karnac Books.

Herman, J. (1997). *Trauma and recovery.* New York: Basic Books.

Lynn, C. (1993). *How close is too close? How far is too far? The establishment and maintenance of personal boundaries between therapists and trauma survivors. Practice Report.* Retrieved October 15, 2001 from the World Wide Web: http://members.aol.com/smartnews/amoo.htm

Mattinson, J. (1977). *The reflection process in casework supervision.* London: The Institute of Marital Studies, Tavistock Institute of Human Relations.

Rutz, C. (2001). *A nation betrayed.* Grass Lake: Fidelity Publishing.

Ryder, D. (1996). *Cover up of the century. Satanic ritual crime and world conspiracy.* Noblesville: Ryder Publishing.

Sinason, V. (Ed.). (1994). *Treating survivors of satanist abuse.* London: Routledge.

Taylor, B. (1999). *Thanks for the memories. The truth has set me free.* Landrum: Brice Taylor Trust.

Van der Kolk, B., McFarlane, A.C., & Weisaeth, L. (Eds.). (1996). *Traumatic stress.* New York: Guilford Publications.

CHAPTER 16

The Use of Prayer for Inner Healing of Memories and Deliverance with Ritual Abuse Survivors

Tom Ball

"And these signs shall follow all who believe. They shall lay their hands upon the sick, who will recover." Mark 16:17, Jerusalem Bible

This topic is, of course, as diverse as it is controversial. Almost unlimited are the possible permutations. Without reviewing historical theological controversies between Pentecostal, Charismatic, Liturgical and Evangelical Christian denominations regarding whether or not (or which) gifts of the Spirit are still in operation today, or for that matter the existence of actual demonic entities, it is this writer's perception that personal experience has a way of impinging on dogmatism, religious or agnostic. Former missionary, church growth researcher, and Fuller Seminary professor Rev. C. Peter Wagner, Ph.D., agrees: …first hand exposure to a healing, a miracle, a word of knowledge, or a deliverance from demons is the most frequent single factor moving evangelicals from skepticism concerning signs and wonders to belief, to openness, and then to personal participation…"[1]

This chapter will focus on defining and explaining how to "do" prayer for inner healing of memories, and deliverance, particularly with clients or spiritual directees whose past traumas confound deleteriously their present experience of God. While some of the discussion will pertain specifically to sexual abuse recovery—nearly always a component of ritual abuse—as far as healing and deliverance prayers as psychological treatment modalities or spiritual direction intervention strategies are concerned, the precise etiology of one's past woundedness is quite immaterial. The heart of the matter is God tends to draw people toward wholeness and healing (which does not in the slightest suggest those who aren't whole or healed are necessarily doing something wrong—they may or they may not be—or that they are somehow "out of favor" with God. That is an entirely different issue [perhaps of a "dark night of the soul" nature] which this

chapter will not pursue.) Rather, this chapter advances the contention that along with pharmacology, sound psychotherapy, nutrition, exercise, dependable support structures, and a number of other good things, God does make available to believers the special ministries of prayer for inner healing of memories, and deliverance.

Keeping in mind the many varieties of organized abuse, this chapter further contends at least one form of ritual abuse, Satanic ritual abuse, has as a primary purpose the involvement of demonic entities, thus obviating, for healing to be complete, the role of deliverance prayer. When people physically and sexually assault and abuse children in an active attempt to create personality splits, while simultaneously chanting, quoting or reading from portions of the Satanic Bible, engage in bodily penetration with religious implements such as a crucifix, and call on demons to come and "enjoy" the child being abused, in return for which requests are voiced that Satan would imbue them with power, one must assume these individuals intend and expect that Satan and demons will participate.

Later during recovery when symptomatic individuals request intervention to help them deal with their present emotional and spiritual problems, report during sessions reliving these intense experiences from the past, and describe among other things both the presence of demonic entities and their removal during prayer, one must at least attend to the survivors' subjective reports of their own experiences.

Assisting readers to better understand the role of prayer for inner healing of memories and deliverance, and learn how effectively to deal with demonic attachments, is the aim of this chapter. First described are a few of this writer's personal experiences with prayer for physical healing. Following are a discussion of prayer for inner healing of memories and an examination of the ministry of deliverance.

Physical Healing

This writer, as did many North American Christians, grew up in a small-town, conservative, Evangelical Protestant church[2] in which glossolalia during public worship service was forbidden,[3] and so-called "healing" services were extremely rare[4] …although it was normal to include prayer for someone's illness or impending surgical operation among the "regular" congregational prayers. Unlike many, for a while this writer attended a private, Christian, residential high school and lived in a dormitory on campus, an environment rich with morning chapel services, the usual Sunday and mid-week services, and numerous "special speakers" and revival services throughout the year. Ongoing student small-groups

met regularly for bible study and prayer. Prayer, including prayer for healing (as described above), was a respected and valued activity.

All during those formative childhood years, each Sunday morning, Sunday evening, and Wednesday night, (including school, special services, and summer family camp meetings), this writer witnessed people praying. At every service, someone would pray for somebody's healing. Once in awhile a parishioner would "go forward" to the altar to be "anointed with oil" and prayed for by the pastor or special speaker, who usually would "call for the elders of the church" to "assist," which in this writer's denomination meant in a prayer service setting several active senior lay men, and occasionally women, would surround the supplicant, place their hands on the petitioner's head or shoulders, and pray in agreement (sometimes out loud all at the same time) along with the pastor.

On occasion, during church service "testimony time," one would rise and testify to having been "healed" of some pain or affliction. Many thanked God for "answered prayers." Yet, this writer recalls no instance while growing up of the blind seeing, the deaf hearing, the lame walking, or a demon manifesting and/or being made to leave. Folks said they "got healed," but what did that really mean? It was confusing. Eventually, for reasons unrelated to this topic, this writer left the church. Years later, having experienced a restored personal relationship with God, and having returned to the same hometown church, he again encountered prayers for healing. And he began, hesitantly, praying them himself. And over time, some people got healed.

Healing: What is It?

Daniel J. Benor, M.D., an American psychiatrist working in England, describes healing as "The intentional influence of one or more people upon another living system without utilizing known physical means of intervention."[5] Co-chair of the Panel on Mind/Body Interventions, Office of Alternative Medicine, National Institutes of Health (1993) Larry Dosey, M.D., asks regarding prayer therapy: How does healing happen? Almost always in the studies we looked at… the healer employed a prayerful attitude, if not actual prayer. This is one of the reasons why many healers use the terms 'spiritual healing' and 'prayer healing' interchangeably… Thus, practically all types of spiritual healing make use of a prayerful, meditative state of awareness. During this process the healer adopts a dispassionate, loving, and compassionate attitude toward the person in need.[6]

The Evidence

Working with the John Templeton Foundation, the National Institute for Healthcare Research in summer 1997 announced eight medical schools had been granted funds to study how social and religious factors influence mental and physical health.[7] Sponsored by Harvard Medical School's Department of Continuing Education, Herbert Benson, M.D. offered in 1997 to over six hundred doctors, nurses, psychologists, and social workers at a regional three-day conference at Houston, Texas Medical Center's Institute of Religion, a course titled "Spirituality and Healing in Medicine.[8] With over thirty of the nation's top medical schools known to be offering in 1997 teaching programs of the healing power of prayer (compared to only three in 1993), Benson says: For a long time, we've been exploring and researching the relationship between belief and healing as a complement, not an alternative, to traditional medicine.[9]

Increasing in the literature are reports of experiments involving healing prayer, and prominent in this genre of researcher-report writers is best-selling author Larry Dossey, M.D., whose numerous articles and books, among them *Healing Words: The Power of Prayer and the Practice of Medicine* (1993), and *Prayer is Good Medicine: How to Reap the Healing Benefits of Prayer* (1996), eloquently speak to the breadth and sophistication of modern-day prayer-medicine research. Dossey observes: The 'choice' between science and spirituality appears increasingly artificial today, even from a scientific perspective… The most practical reason to examine prayer in healing is simply that, at least some of the time, it works. The evidence is simply overwhelming that prayer functions at a distance to change physical processes in a variety of organisms, from bacteria to humans… Therapies should be judged according to their effects in conditions in which they work, and prayer is no exception.[10]

In his book, *Healing Words*, Dossey further quotes Daniel J. Benor, M.D., who reviewed all 131 studies on spiritual healing published in English prior to 1990. In the *Journal of Complementary Medical Research (*September 1990), Benor described 56 controlled trials which yielded results the likelihood of which were due to chance was less than 1 in 100, and another 21 studies which yielded results at the .02 to .05 probability level (between 2 and 5 chances in 100.) The studies examined the effects of prayer on enzymes, cells, yeasts, bacteria, plants, animals, and humans.[11]

While a lengthy duplication of Benor's review seems unnecessary in this chapter, one human subjects study on which he reported is both representative and striking in its outcome. Christian cardiologist, Randolph C. Byrd, M.D., reported in the *Southern Medical Journal* (July 1988):

Over a ten-month period, a computer assigned 393 patients admitted to the coronary care unit at San Francisco General Hospital to either a group that was prayed for by home prayer groups (192 patients) or to a group that was not remembered in prayer (201 patients). The study was designed according to rigid criteria, the kind usually used in clinical studies in medicine. It was a randomized, double-blind experiment in which neither the patients, nurses, nor doctors knew which group the patients were in. Byrd recruited various religious groups to pray for members of the designated prayed-for groups. The prayer groups were given the first names of their patients as well as a brief description of their diagnosis and condition. They were asked to pray each day, but were given no instructions on how to pray. 'Each person prayed for many different patients, but each patient in the experiment had between five and seven people praying for him or her,' Byrd explained. The prayed for-patients differed in several areas: 1. They were five times less likely than the unremembered group to require antibiotics (three patients compared to sixteen patients).

2. They were three times less likely to develop pulmonary edema, a condition in which the lungs fill with fluid as a consequence of the failure of the heart to pump properly (six compared to eighteen patients).

3. None of the prayed-for group required endotracheal intubation, in which an artificial airway is inserted in the throat and attached to a mechanical ventilator, while twelve in the unremembered group required mechanical ventilatory support.

4. Fewer patients in the prayed-for group died (although this difference was not statistically significant).

If the technique being studied had been a new drug or a surgical procedure instead of prayer, it would almost certainly have been heralded as some sort of 'breakthrough.'[12]

Healing Experiences

This writer has had some modest experiences with healing prayer, in both private and public settings. His first experience involved praying for his own father who, after an emergency operation to remove a bowel obstruction revealed a widespread abdominal cancer had already involved the liver, was told he'd not leave the hospital alive. This writer prayed:

> Lord, you know I don't have faith to pray he'll be healed of his cancer, but, would you give him a little more time and strength so he could reconcile with his wife, and they could forgive one another for all those years of pain and hurt? Then he could die in peace. It would glorify you if that were to happen.

Subsequently the patient experienced renewed strength and three months of vigorous, active, productive life which he did use in part to reconcile the many years of turmoil and anger and hurt in his marriage… which was the specific prayer offered. While this three-month respite might have happened anyway, nevertheless, in terms of this discussion the "coincidence" seems noteworthy.

Once on the mission field in Chili, a dull-eyed, listless, feverish, floppy-headed, dehydrated baby—accompanied by its mother—was brought by the strongly "religious" grandmother to a rural church for prayer, after the city medical clinic sent the parents home, reportedly saying, "There's nothing we can do." Gathering his students around, this writer directed them to lay hands on the child, mother, and grandmother and pray silently while he prayed aloud, rebuking the sickness and asking God to heal the child "as a witness to the community that God is in this church." That night the baby and its family were in church praising God because the child's fever was gone, its head was up, its eyes were bright, and it was smiling and taking nourishment.

Accompanying a dentist friend on a hospital visit in Seoul, this writer first asked permission, and then laid hands on the head and abdomen of a teenage boy whose pronounced jaundice evidenced his severe internal injuries acquired during a skiing accident, and prayed for a "complete, thorough healing." Subsequently, the next day's exploratory surgery was cancelled, the liver resumed functioning, and the boy soon went home. (The writer later received a nice letter from the boy's father, a judge on the high court in Puson, Republic of Korea.)

Standing in front of the entire college faculty, this writer once prayed God would "do a miracle" for a straight-laced, austere, Victorian, spinster librarian… who subsequently spoke in public of "meeting and talking with Jesus" during a time when medical caregivers were working to restart her heart which had stopped while she was on the table during a hospital procedure.[13] Such a report was most uncharacteristic for this elderly, conservative, decidedly unflamboyant Christian woman. This writer visited her home and audio-taped an hour-long interview in which she discusses this experience.

Yet, others for whom this writer prayed did not get well. Though calling together an entire adult Sunday school class (which was studying Richard J. Foster's book *"Prayer: Finding the Heart's True Home"*) to gather around a class

member, lay on hands, and join in prayer for healing, the sufferer nevertheless still had to proceed with a scheduled prostate cancer operation during which the nerves could not be saved.

After praying with another pastor and a teenaged girl's parents, the girl's cancerous leg still had to be removed, and a year or so later she died. A baby in an incubator, for whom the writer and another group of students prayed while on a missions trip to Haiti, died a few days later.

Through these and many other prayer experiences, this writer has come to understand observable results from prayer for physical healing are a hit-or-miss affair. Sometimes people get better… sometimes they don't.[14] Nevertheless, God's people are commanded to pray, while remembering God is the one who determines the outcome. This is very freeing for the one who prays. The illness can be rebuked and the patient's body and mind and spirit encouraged to trust in God, thus assisting the person to physically, emotionally, and spiritually cooperate with the care givers and the medicines and the therapies, while inviting and allowing God to do a healing work within.

Inner Healing of Memories

Prayer for inner healing of memories seems in this writer's experience a different matter than the "hit or miss" results customarily forthcoming following prayer for physical healing. (Perhaps this is because prayer for physical healing seems to produce results varying between immediate and full—on rare occasion, to partial over time—a more common outcome, while prayer for inner healing of memories is much more immediately observable in its outcome). Be that as it may, so far each time the writer has led spiritual directees in a progressive relaxation exercise followed by an invitation for Jesus to "come and bring up (in the spiritual directee's mind and memory) only what you want to deal with," whether one-on-one or with a group, reports follow of remembered instances of past hurt in which directees see Jesus entering the scene and "doing something." ("Free to Remember," an original article containing case reports was accepted in 1998 for publication in Light and Life Magazine, this writer's denominational journal.) Such healing seems clearly to be God's doing. Authority and power are completely His. This writer is being granted the grace merely to be present while God heals. But, because of the poignancy—and the consistency—of the reports, it has become clear that prayer for inner healing of memories is a powerful, powerful grace.

Author and psychiatric nurse Barbara Shlemon, R.N. advises:

> Every situation requires its own unique spiritual direction. The Gospel narratives show us Jesus did not follow a set pattern in His healing ministry but treated each request for help differently. One paralytic was told 'Take up your bed and walk,' and another advised 'Your sins are forgiven.' Jesus laid His hands on one blind man to restore his sight, and He applied a mixture of mud and spittle to heal another.[15]

Numerous scriptures (MT 10: 1 and others) exhort to, and promise authority for, healing,[16] Jesus' followers (Acts 9: 33–34) did in fact do works of healing,[17] and more and more Christians today are increasingly interested in learning about it.[18]

Forms of Inner Healing

According to *"Healing of Memories,"* a two-hour audio-taped, large audience healing service conducted by author, psychological consultant, suicide prevention program director, and seminary professor Rev. John H. Hampsch, C.M.F., there are five forms of healing:

1. Instantaneous: dramatic.
2. Gradual: starts when prayer is uttered and may take several hours, days, weeks or even months.
3. Phase-in: spurts. A partial healing is received immediately, then more healing is received later, as when the blind man told Jesus (after Jesus' first effort at restoring his sight), "I see men who look like trees walking," and Jesus touched him a second time and then the healing was complete.
4. Delayed: nothing appears to happen immediately after the prayer, but the person awakens the next day and finds healing has occurred.
5. Recurrent: healing occurs, then later the problem returns. (This may be a temporary healing, so the person can accomplish some specific task.)[19]

Hampsh goes on to say on the audio tape the term "healing of memories" may have originated with Anglican missionary Agnes Sanford "…in her book *Healing Light*, or *Healing Gifts of the Spirit*…" Hampsch reports (then Dominican Fr.) Francis MacNutt, Ph.D. adapted Sanford's one-on-one approach for use in larger groups, and, after talking with MacNutt, Fr. Hampsch further revised the Sanford-MacNutt approach into what he calls a two-phase approach. In phase one he invites audience members to go back into their memory and recall past hurts. In phase two he asks them to use their imagination to invite (and then "see") Jesus forgiving and

healing those hurts. In his healing ministry Hampsch reports mental, emotional and physical healings regularly occur.

Writing about inner healing of memories in *The Gift of Inner Healing* (1976), Ruth Carter Stapleton refers to:

> …the experience in which the Holy Spirit restores health to the deepest area of our lives by dealing with the root cause of our hurts and pain. In prayer for physical healing we are often concerned with the symptoms of the real need. Deep hurts and fears often manifest themselves physically as backaches, headaches, skin rashes, asthma, and other illnesses. When we pray for healing of physical symptoms, we often see no change because we are praying for and expecting God to heal the symptom rather than to make us whole… Frequently our problems are initiated by lack of love and understanding from others[20] rather than by sins we have committed… Very often we have suppressed the hurtful occurrences so completely we are not even aware of their bind upon our hearts. If we let Him, the Holy Spirit, who reveals all things, is able to bring to our awareness the situations which need our attention…[21]

Thus, inner healing of necessity involves spirit, mind-psyche-emotions, and body—because each affects the others. Fibromyalgia is a good example; stress (an emotional reaction deriving from one's mental perception of one or more present or past external [or internal] phenomena) is often correlated with the felt pain of this diagnosis. Physical therapy and medications attempt to deal with the stress and palliate the pain, but unless present sources of stress (and the emotional residue from unresolved past traumas) are reduced, the condition persists. The constant pain impacts negatively one's emotions, which after awhile begin to color one's thinking, and often interferes with one's spiritual relationship to God.

Coming at it from a more overtly religious orientation, the preferred "treatment" for guilt deriving from real sin, is not psychotherapy, but inner spiritual healing. This is so because, according to scripture, for the Christian to experience peace of mind, sin must be confessed, repented, and forgiven. "When I confessed not my sin, my bones wasted away within me" (Ps 32: 3). Regardless of professional orientation or religious perspective, spiritual healing is thought to effect positively both one's mental/emotional and one's physical well-being.

Because Hampsch does such a concise job of explaining how prayer for inner healing of memories impacts body-mind-spirit, the following is repeated directly from his audio tape:

> A neurosis is an emotional disturbance of some kind, not severe enough to be psychosis—where one loses contact with reality in some way. It is some disturbance which prevents ongoing psychological comfort. Eighty percent of the adult population is neurotic, according to Karen Horney's definition of neurosis. One in four is so disturbed emotionally he needs professional help, either a psychiatrist, psychologist, counselor, social worker, or marriage counselor. But not many will seek it because their pride won't let them admit they need help… especially men.
> Everyone has some hangups, although not everyone is neurotic. No one has a perfectly balanced personality, except Jesus Christ. Familiar examples are fear of snakes, darkness, high places, public speaking, intimacy, vulnerability, not knowing how to express affection properly, or even how to love, maturely and adequately. (Though everyone thinks he does, few really do. Think of your own needs not being met right now—and realize, the significant others in your life are thinking the same thing.) Three syndromes (symptoms) are commonly associated with neurosis: guilt (false or real) and shame, hostility or aggression, and anxiety. These syndromes may be obvious (conscious) or submerged (subconscious). These three syndromes are interrelated in the human psyche, and in part, it is these which get healed when one does prayer for inner healing of memories. But there's also a spiritual healing which results when these are taken care of.
>
> Hostility, guilt, anxiety: if we just cope with the first two, the third dissolves by itself. To get them healed, they have to be brought to the surface and acknowledged and dealt with. God can and does heal directly at times… but He often chooses to heal through other humans."[22]

In this writer's understanding guilt is either "real," i.e., it's deserved because one consciously violates God's or one's own moral code, or "false," i.e., one did "it" but not on purpose, in which case one is "responsible," but one's culpability is diminished.

Shame is another matter. While guilt is based on what one "does" (or fails to do), shame is a feeling or attitude about what one "is." Guilt, as in a guilty conscience, can be a good thing moving one toward confession, repentance, restitution, and reconciliation. Shame, however, is not of God. It impels not toward rectification; rather, it drives one away from reality by diminishing and destroying one's self-image and one's ability to relate to others and to God.

Hostility can be directed masochistically inward (from nail biting to suicide), or aggressively outward (from resentment to road rage). Anxiety is a sort of

psychological angst or pain… a floating, undifferentiated uneasiness which underlies one's interactions with people and events.

According to Stapleton:

> When we pray for inner healing, we are really asking Jesus to walk back into the dark places of our lives and bring healing to the distressing and painful memories of the past. We need to take Jesus into the areas of our unforgiveness toward those who have taught us to fear, hate, and reject. We need to take Him (love) into the relationship where there was no love.[23]

Role of Forgiveness

While much more could be said about inner healing of memories, the role of forgiveness in psychological, mental, emotional, and spiritual healing (and even physical healing to the extent physical symptoms are exacerbated by one's emotional state) is thought to be extremely important.

Scripture, of course, strongly emphasizes forgiveness (recitation of the Lord's Prayer, for example, in which petitioners ask God to forgive them as they forgive others—a scary thought should the prayer be answered.), and so do many who work in inner healing ministry. Author and psychiatric nurse Barbara Shlemon, R.N. asserts:

> There is nothing that will impede our ability to pray for ourselves or for others more than the unwillingness to forgive. It acts as an invisible barrier between us and the Father which prohibits His blessings from being showered upon us or the ones for whom we pray. Jesus taught us 'When you stand in prayer, forgive whatever you have against anybody, so your Father in Heaven may forgive your failings too' (MK 11: 25). We cannot have the fullness of God's love for ourselves or for others so long as we refuse to make an act of forgiveness toward those who have wronged us.[24]

Hampsch says:

> If you are harboring aggression, bitterness, hatred toward anyone even though you claim you've forgiven them (sic), you've not really forgiven them (sic). The resentment, perhaps repressed a bit from conscious awareness, is doing you a lot of damage… often to the body, and the soul. If guilt feelings are still there, it means you have not received forgiveness. If you really know you've been forgiven by someone, then you don't feel dirty or guilty. You feel clean…

> free. Healing of resentment comes in the act of really forgiving. When forgiveness is complete, not the slightest smidgen of resentment remains. If the receipt of forgiveness is complete, no guilt remains. Thus, active—and passive—forgiveness is the underlying key to emotional healing. The key to inner healing of memories is giving—and receiving—forgiveness. Active and passive forgiveness resolve hostility and resentment, and their resolution eliminates anxiety all by itself. Jesus gave in Matthew 6:12 and Luke 11:4 (in the Our Father) a lesson in active and passive forgiveness: Passive: "…forgive us our trespasses…"
>
> Active: "…as we forgive those who trespass against us."[25]

Stapleton goes on to write:

> Forgiveness is at the heart of Jesus' message and it is at the heart of inner healing. But so much which needs to be forgiven is a part of our distant past. How can we forgive the forgotten? If our Christian life is contaminated by unforgiven pain inflicted upon us by incidents and people we don't remember—and it is—what can we do about it? When pain too agonizing to be born has been inflicted upon a little child and the traumatic experience has been repressed, sealed in the vault of forgetfulness, how can the memory ever be brought out into the light and dealt with? How can anyone forgive something buried so deeply?"[26]

Preparation

To elicit readiness for inner healing prayer it is necessary to get in touch with those memories requiring healing.[27] Author and Asbury Seminary professor emeritus David A. Seamands suggests, among other things, assigning homework:

> The purpose of homework for counselees is to help them get in touch with the repressed memories and feelings which are causing them emotional and behavioral problems. At the heart of all remembering is association, for associations are the links which cause our minds to recall experiences. By remembering one picture, we then recall another, because our minds have somehow associated the two. When the memories are clearly recalled, there is a strong possibility of re-experiencing the emotions which originally accompanied the experience. The reverse is also true. That is, if we can experience certain feelings, there is the possibility the memories associated with those feelings will reenter our consciousness. [28]

Useful homework experiences can encompass writing assignments (taking notes about one's feelings while listening to teaching tapes, for example; or journaling about one's consolations, desolations, and feelings while at prayer), looking at old family photographs and grade school, high school, and college yearbooks,[29] taking journeys to places associated with painful memories,[30] and working through various self-help books and workbooks.

The Prayer

Most important, however, is the actual prayer for inner healing of memories. This is where the actual healing takes place. Seamonds further explains:

> The most distinctive part of the healing of memories is the time of prayer. Through the use of imagination, we try to recreate the painful memory and then actually visualize it as it once took place. We pray as if we were actually talking to God on the spot, and ask Him to do for us what (He would have done) had we asked (at the time the original hurt was happening.) We ask Him to heal the little child or teenager who underwent those experiences—things which really did fixate (some part of the child's personality or emotional development) at that stage of growth."[31]

Stapleton explains:

> When we pray for inner healing, we are really asking Jesus to walk back into the dark places in our lives and bring healing to the distressing and painful memories of the past… As we respond to prayer by imagining Jesus moving back into our lives, we picture the little child within us who hurts, who was rejected, who failed to receive healthy love, who was neglected by the parents' failure to give corrective discipline in love, and who wasn't understood. That little child within each of us must hearken to the healing love of Jesus Christ. [32]

In the prayer for inner healing of memories, the spiritual director-pastoral counselor assists the client to come closer to God by inviting Jesus to fulfill through action His desire to reconcile every part of us to Himself. In this prayer Jesus responds to the deepest longings within hurting people by enabling them to experience the love of God through a gift of increased emotional wholeness and freedom. Author and Wheaton College psychology professor, Mark R. McMinn, Ph.D., describes the spiritual director/pastoral counselor-directee-God relationship

thusly: If God longs to be in relationship with us, and if the deepest longings of the human soul point toward God, then the goals of Christian counseling go much deeper than changing behavior. Even those who do not know God long for the things of God—peace, hope, love, and justice to name a few. These longings are spiritual in nature, and so it is inevitable that every counseling session that digs beneath the behavioral veneer of human experience has something to do with spirituality and religious experience. Christian counselors attempt to do this work while being intentional about religious and spiritual matters, explicit about the guiding values and assumptions of the counseling intervention, and ethical in every counseling interaction.[33]

Deliverance

Amongst much of the general public, and too many clergy, three attitudes seem prevalent today regarding ritual abuse, Satanic ritual abuse, and demonic entities. First, many in early twenty-first century North America view serious belief in the existence of cults, organized abuse groups, or demons as either superstitious, illogical, or ignorant. Such beliefs, they feel, are simply incompatible with scientific rationalism. Comedian Flip Wilson's popular TV quip "The devil made me do it!" epitomizes a second public perception: it's a harmless joke. Thus, toddlers' mothers dress them up as ghouls, ghosts, and goblins on Halloween night, and grownup's movies (and Saturday morning children's TV programs) portray demons and satanic possession as "entertainment." Third, there is a growing fascination today with the occult, as evidenced by the "psychic reader" TV channel and the many astrology magazines at the supermarket checkout counter. The craving for esoteric, "extra" knowledge in our culture is evidenced by people considered celebrities "channeling" on TV and radio programs, and the growing number of "psychic fairs" in cities across the land. (Nancy Regan even reportedly consulted on behalf of her husband, the then President of the United States of America, a well-known California astrologer to determine an "auspicious" date on which to consummate some official Presidential action.) What the Bible Says About Demons

On the other hand, the existence of Satan (Gen 3:1ff) and demons (Deut 18: 9–13) is attested in the Old Testament, while involvement with occult powers and activities (Lev 19: 13, 31) is clearly condemned. In the New Testament Jesus (Lk 9: 37–43) and His disciples (Lk 10: 17) are scripturally described as encountering, recognizing, and dispatching demons from afflicted people. Jesus made clear His followers were to do the same (Lk 9: 1–3; 10: 19-20; Jn 14: 12–14). According to

the early church fathers, they did. Tertullian wrote: All the authority and power we have over them (demons) is from our naming the name of Christ, and recalling to their memory the woes with which God threatens them… Fearing Christ in God, and God in Christ, they become subject to the servants of God and Christ. So at our touch and breathing, overwhelmed by the thought and realization of those judgment fires, they leave at our command the bodies they have entered, unwilling and distressed.[34]

The Church's Position Today

Today, the Christian church officially recognizes the baptized Christian's positional authority over demonic entities (Mk 6: 7, 12–13; 16: 17; 20). Receiving the Nihil Obstat May 9, 1997 and Imprimatur May 20, 1997 (a declaration a book or pamphlet is considered by an official representative of the Roman Catholic Church to be free of doctrinal or moral error), *Seek The Gifts Of The Spirit,* published by Presentation Ministries in Cincinnati, Ohio instructs:

> Deliverance: In the name of Jesus Christ I command you, come out of her! Then and there the spirit left her. (Acts 16: 18)
>
> Every Christian can drive out demons in the name of Jesus (see Mt 10: 1; Mk 16: 17), but some have a special gift of deliverance. Peter set people free from the devil by his shadow falling on them (Acts 5: 15-16). Paul used an extraordinary method: 'when handkerchiefs or cloths which had touched his skin were applied to the sick, their diseases were cured and evil spirits departed from them.' (Acts 19: 12) Although we may not drive out demons in such dramatic ways, as members of the church we can attack the gates of Hell, which cannot prevail against us (Mt 16: 18). We can command Satan to leave in the name of Jesus (Mk 16: 17). Some demons are driven out only through prayer and fasting (Mt 17: 21). 'Prayer and fasting are the first and most effective weapons against the forces of evil' (The Gospel of Life, Pope John Paul II, 100).

By obedience to Jesus we can bring down the strongholds of the evil one and demolish his sophistries (2 Cor 10: 4). We can disarm and despoil Satan (Lk 11: 22), break his chains, and make a public show of him (Col 2: 14–15). We can quickly crush Satan under our feet (Rm 16: 20), for the One in us is greater than the one in the world (1 Jn 4: 4). The world need not be in bondage to the evil one. Use your deliverance power."[35]

The Believer's Authority

Why then do so many Christians seem unaware of their Christian authority over Satan's demons, or how to exercise it?[36] According to Francis MacNutt, Ph.D., "…because Christian churches generally neglect to teach about deliverance…"[37] Neil Anderson, asking in *The Bondage Breakers* (1993) "Do you have what it takes to effectively exercise Christ's authority over spiritual powers?"[38] goes on to suggest four qualifications for demonstrating authority over demonic entities: belief one actually has sufficient authority, humility to recognize and acknowledge one's authority comes only from Christ, a godly sense of courage and boldness in spiritual warfare, and dependence totally on Christ to fight the battle for us. In Christ, the victory is already won.[39]

MacNutt advises solid preparation before embarking on a deliverance ministry, and strongly encourages active and adequate follow-up afterwards.

> Prayer for deliverance should not be entered into without real prayer and discernment beforehand. Like major surgery it should not be lightly suggested. Many people have a need for prayers of deliverance, I believe, but the time cannot be hurried, and there is great need for follow-up. If follow-up cannot be provided, if there is no Christian community to help the person grow, we should hesitate before embarking on a prayer that cannot be finished: the last state of the person may end up worse than the first (Lk 11: 24-27).[40]

While reminding "Satan can do nothing about your position in Christ," Anderson cautions, "But, if he (Satan) can, he will cloud your perspective and thus diminish your faith and dull your effectiveness in the spiritual battle."[41] Anderson's thought brings to mind Paul's instruction to the Ephesians: Your strength must come from the Lord's mighty power within you… We are not fighting against people made of flesh and blood, but against persons without bodies —the evil rulers of the unseen world, those mighty satanic beings and great evil princes of darkness who rule this world: and against huge numbers of wicked spirits in the spirit world… In every battle you will need faith as your shield to stop the fiery arrows aimed at you by Satan." (Living Bible. Eph 6: 10, 12, 16)

When is Deliverance Appropriate?

While numerous writers describe various levels or orders of demonic beings, MacNutt's earlier book *Healing* (1974), after describing three other kinds of healing, ends with deliverance: breaking free of bondage from forces of evil, i.e., demons, principalities, and powers. An extraordinary kind of demonic activity is

“possession,” a taking over of an individual (thought to be impossible if one is a born-again, in-dwelt-by-the-Holy Spirit, Christian[42]) which requires exorcism to expel. Other lesser demonic involvements include obsession, oppression, infestation, and temptation.[43] In this writer’s experience, this type of involvement is almost uniformly encountered by spiritual directees seeking recovery from Satanic ritual abuse.

In *Deliverance From Evil Spirits: A Practical Manual* (1995), MacNutt explains how to tell when a person needs deliverance:

1. When the tormented person is aware of the spirit(s).

   Hearing voices typically impelling one toward suicide or hate.

   Seeing visions or having nightmares filled with terror.

   Feeling impelled to do things one would never ordinarily think of doing.

2. The spiritual director-pastoral counselor observes symptoms.

   Body contortions: violent shaking, rigidity, arched spine, slithering on the floor like a snake.

   Facial changes: eyes filled with hate, mockery, pride, eyes roll upward, look serpentine.

   Unpleasant smells.

   Room goes cold.[44]

However, symptoms this obvious are not always present when some forms of demonic oppression are occurring. So absence of the above symptoms is not a fail-proof indicator no demons are in operation. Sometimes more subtle feelings of strong anger, wanting to express foul language, or encountering or engaging in (for no discernibly valid reason) unusual or unexpected disunity with family or coworkers are the manifesting symptoms.

In addition, numerous author-mental health practitioners caution against confusing demonic activity with other mental disorders.[45] Of particular concern is dissociative identity disorder (multiple personality), wherein it is not uncommon to find alter personalities who’s characteristics may resemble a demon’s, i.e., a “different” voice, aggressive personality traits, persecutory, self-harming ideation, uncharacteristic language, etc. While this writer believes the best proof is if, when the demons are prayed against authoritatively and commanded to stop bothering the person and leave, the upsetting feelings, ideation, and symptoms do in fact stop quickly, others assert the best method to be sure a demon is present is to exercise the gift of discernment of spirits.

The Writer's Experience

This writer's personal experience with deliverance prayer began with reading MacNutt's *Deliverance From Evil Spirits: A Practical Manual* (1995) and McAll's *Healing the Family Tree* (1982) while on retreat in summer 1996. Subsequent to that awakening, he twice recognized and rebuked with authoritative prayer demonic oppression of himself which took the form of irrational and strong feelings of anger accompanied by thoughts of foul language. The feelings and thoughts ceased immediately.

Later, while on a missions trip to the Dominican Republic, relations between the writer's student video production crew and the host missionaries were deteriorating rapidly to the point the next sentence he intended to say would express regret things weren't working out but the project would have to be cancelled and the crew would return home. Just as those thoughts were forming, God granted the realization the conflict was demonic in origin. Quickly sharing his insight with the missionaries and the video crew, as soon as the vehicle reached it's next stop he gathered everyone together, explained what had been happening was demonic opposition to the project, and how to pray against it, and led the group in authoritative prayer commanding the oppression to cease and the demons to leave. The problem cleared up that moment, and relations improved so much for several years afterward the team co-leader maintained personal correspondence with one of the missionaries.

On another trip, this time to Haiti, after recognizing the sudden onslaught of feelings of intense sadness (related to a miscarriage she'd suffered years earlier) being experienced by a female team member were of demonic origin, they were prayed against and commanded to leave, whereupon the sad feelings abated sufficiently for the woman to resume her duties.

Finally, a couple of weeks following that Haiti trip, two medical members who had accompanied the church work team confided they were experiencing disordered thoughts, irritability, inability to concentrate, disrupted sleep, and bowel problems. Explaining the possibility these symptoms may have been a result of demonic oppression sent against them by Voodoo practitioners actively opposed to their work at the rural Haitian mission hospital, this writer led them in a prayer of authoritative rebuke and ordered the demons to leave. Both individuals subsequently reported the symptoms ceased immediately.

Other members of that same church work team led a worship service in a Haitian church in Port au Prince, the substance of which was prayer for physical and emotional healing and casting out of demons. None manifested at the service, but the local pastor's wife's mother who earlier that week had been diagnosed by

the team optometrist as having a large cancerous tumor inside her eyeball, came forward for healing prayer. Later she reported feeling “heat” had gone into her head when team members laid hands on her and prayed for her healing. To date (over five years later) the missionaries continue to report she’s not felt a need to see a doctor, and she says she’s “better” and is claiming to have been healed.

This writer has on occasion been asked to consult with mental health practitioners via the Internet, and by telephone with a senior pastor of a church in his own denomination.

In recent years, to overcome a block to progress in emotional healing, this writer has had increasing occasion to assist sexual abuse and Satanic ritual abuse survivors who had developed DID to prepare for and then engage in deliverance prayer. To date no demonic entities have manifested during these activities, other than to respond to a direct command to reveal their name and how they came to be attached to the survivor. In each instance, following prayer intervention, the spiritual directee has reported either experiencing sufficient immediate relief to be able to continue the session, or reported being able to see the demons in the memory being processed, see Jesus come into that memory scene, watch Him confront them, and feel them leave.

How is it Done?

Comparing authorities, it would appear the steps to deliverance are many and varied, with all kinds of prayers, warnings, advices, caveats, and “special” situations. After presenting a simple, straight-forward, clearly delineated seven-step approach devised by chiropractic intern and Association of Christian Therapists member Allan Weilert, M.T.S., this paper closes with a brief description of the writer’s preferred approach, direct application of TheoPhostic Prayer, developed by licensed clinical psychologist Ed Smith, D.Min.

Allan Weilert’s Deliverance Method

Praying for deliverance presents unique challenges to healing ministers today. Often, excessive attention is placed on the actual expelling of evil spirits at the expense of caring as Jesus would for the person seeking our assistance. After years of experience in healing ministry, Allan Weilert suggests a seven-step deliverance procedure which preserves reason and balance in the sometimes confusing realm of spiritual warfare.

1. Substantial Inner Healing Prayer (see above)

Since deliverance is primarily a spiritual issue, the afflicted individual essentially requires in-depth inner healing prayer, addressing spiritual and emotional concerns… targeted to traumatic events and patterns of sin within the person… As layer upon layer of hurtful memories are entrusted to the Lord, sometimes hidden obstacles rear up to hinder reception of true freedom.

2. The Interview

The interview is conducted only if there is legitimate reason to suspect there seems to be more than the common defense mechanisms at work to retard one's advancement in inner healing or in the spiritual life. Uncontrollable rage (for example, "might" be an indicator.)

3. Discernment of Spirits

This phase of deliverance ministry relies solely on insight granted by the Holy Spirit to confirm the interview and observations made earlier. There is *no substitution* for the information that the gift of discerning of spirits affords… The end result is a detailed description of which particular evil spirits hold positions of authority, the types (and sometimes names) of demons present, and their functions and relationships with one another as they affect an individual's life.

4. Preparation for the Deliverance

For an harmonious session, it is imperative each team member assumes only the role assigned by the team leader who alone addresses and casts out the evil spirits and directs the session. Obedience insures order and highlights clear lines of spiritual authority: thus a 'united front' is preserved in the face of our enemy. Possible roles of team members include an intercessor praying in tongues, someone continuously calling on the protection of the Blood of Jesus, another praying silently or making a litany of saints, angels, and Our Lady to pray for us. If an intercessory prayer ministry is available, seek their help in preparing for and during the session.

5. The Actual Deliverance

Starting off the deliverance session with praise and worship is most appropriate. During this prayer time, the 'Binding Prayer' (McAlear/Brennan) should be recited aloud.

Grounding the person in Jesus can begin the ministry segment of the session… direct him/her to inhale the presence of Jesus Christ and to exhale any fear, and darkness. Brief inner healing prayer may also be done if necessary.

The team leader binds each evil spirit separately away from its ruler, with its aspects, attributes, and endowments bound to it. It is cast out in the Name of Jesus Christ and compelled to go directly to His feet.

One group of demons is cast out at a time, beginning with the weakest, ending with the demons in authority.

Ask the person being delivered to repeat the command to leave… Periodically, the leader may question the person being delivered to ascertain his/her sense of what is happening.

To be certain no one is 'hiding,' command any evil spirits that may be remaining to be bound together, to come out, and to go directly to the feet of Jesus. Inner healing prayer, which invites the Holy Spirit to fill the void left by any departing demons, is very helpful. Reception of Jesus Christ as Lord and Savior, renewal of baptismal promises, and baptism in the Spirit are also fitting at this time. End with praise to God.

6. Aftercare

Conscientious ministry applies follow-up consisting of more inner healing prayer, dialogue, and ample encouragement… A phone call to check on him/her can do wonders… A ministry of 'befriending' may be appropriate.

Shift the focus away from demons and from even the deliverance session itself… and onto personal responsibility and spiritual growth.

7. Integration

Integration is really the ultimate goal of deliverance ministry, i.e., empowering an individual to walk free from bondage in order to glorify God and serve the Body of Christ… means helping the one just delivered become involved in ministry, healthy relationships, and personal growth and development… Church youth groups, singles organizations, or… prayer communities can be tapped as resources for meeting new friends.

Theophostic Prayer

Reminiscent of healing of inner memories prayer approaches mentioned above by Agnes Sanford, June Carter Stapleton, Fr. Francis MacNutt, and others, licensed clinical psychologist Ed. Smith, D.Min., at his Alathia treatment center in Kentucky has developed a healing of memories prayer approach which incorporates deliverance from demonization as needed.

Naming his approach Theo (God) Phostic (light), Smith engages in a three-way conversation between Jesus, the client and himself throughout the counseling session. He asks Jesus questions and requests the client report "anything you see, hear or sense Jesus say or do." Teaching his method in a three-level TheoPhostic Basic, TheoPhostic Advanced, and TheoPhostic Internship format, Dr. Smith reports unusually rapid and thorough amelioration of debilitating symptoms.

Though the name “TheoPhostic” may as yet be unfamiliar to many, the method is highly applicable to ministry in either a church setting or an intervenor’s office. It requires dependence on Jesus both to reveal the cause of the client’s suffering, and to remove it. The process essentially is as follows:

1. Find the feeling (fear, anger, sadness… whatever the directee is experiencing).
2. Ask Jesus to take her to “the origin and source” of that emotion.
3. Instruct the directee not to “censor” whatever memory comes up.
4. Ask her to “look around, and tell me when you can see, hear, or sense Jesus’ presence” in the memory-scene.
5. Encourage her to “stay with the memory, all the way to the end.” (This usually involves “feeling” the pain associated with the memory.)
6. Find the “lie” embedded in the memory (it was your fault; you are too bad for God so He can never forgive you; you deserved it, etc.,).
7. Ask Jesus to bring His truth to that lie. (“Jesus, was it really her fault? What is your truth about that?”)

While appearing deceptively simple, it appears Jesus actually does minister to the person in the way requested. In this writer’s experience, release and freedom are often so rapid—and sometimes so dramatic—they have to be seen to be fully appreciated.

When demons manifest, or appear to be causing the person distress, or she reports their activity, or any symptoms of demonization appear, this writer asks if it is alright to “take action against anything which might be present which is not of God,” and then he verbally binds to silence and immobility any demonic entities presently interfering with the session. So far, when demonic activity has been present, this simple action has uniformly resulted in the spiritual directee being able to continue the session.

At an appropriate point, this writer recommends asking Jesus if now is the time to work on the demonization. The steps to do so include determining how it became attached in the first place (the opening to the spiritual directee), and taking whatever action is necessary to remove its legal right to be present, i.e., break ancestral curses, confess and repent of any past occult involvement by the directee, do TheoPhostic prayer to remove any unresolved anger or unforgiveness or whatever else Jesus reveals to the person. When this work is finished, the directee is encouraged to assert her rightful authority as one belonging to Jesus and in-dwelt by the Holy Spirit to command the demon to “go directly to the throne of Jesus for

Him to do with you as He will." The demon is forbidden ever to return to the person or any other human.

Finally, the spiritual directee prays that God would seal that opening with His healing love, grace, forgiveness, etc. When it is time to expel them, Dr. Smith recommends binding together the presenting demon and all others present, ordering the one presenting to speak for and represent all others present, by verbal assertion cutting them off from all outside communication with other demonic entities, neutralizing their power, canceling their assignments, and when finished with them sending them all to the throne of Jesus for His disposition. Smith permits no disobedience of his calmly delivered commands, allows no "acting out" (cursing, vomiting, etc.), forbids any demon speaking to lie, and requires it to speak only what Jesus desires it to reveal at the present time. Smith's method is clearly explained and repeatedly demonstrated with DID and ritual abuse clients presently in therapy with him, in his TheoPhostic Advanced and TheoPhostic Internship workshops.

Conclusion

It is this writer's understanding the Christian scriptures assert in the latter days evil, unclean, lying, deceiving spirits will flood the land causing havoc and doing their best to lead people into depravity while destroying their faith.

It is this writer's belief, from working with a seemingly never ending supply of sexually abused and family traumatized individuals, most of whom are Christians, and from the reports contained in literally each night's evening newspaper depicting a real-life epidemic of rampant abortion, physical and sexual abuse, assault and trauma, and the obviously growing incidence of ritual abuse, those latter days may now be upon us.

Be that as it may, those desiring to help ritual abuse survivors achieve emotional recovery and freedom are faced today with a choice. Lay leaders, pastors, spiritual directors, counselors, social workers, psychologists, psychiatrists —all of us can either open our eyes, look around, compare what we see in our offices to the now hundreds of published juried articles about healing prayer, and then decide to learn about it and *do* something about it… or we can continue as for the most part we have in the past, and play it safe by ignoring and denying what the evidence is now making clear.

This chapter is written to encourage those willing to begin exploring this long neglected but increasingly visible aspect of human healing. It presents information, provides references for further information, and describes real-life examples and approaches to help people integrate into their professional armamentarium an

intervention strategy which deals specifically with a critical spiritual aspect of helping survivors heal from ritual abuse… prayer for inner healing of memories, and deliverance.

Notes

[1] Wagner, C. Peter, Ph.D. (1988). *How to have a healing ministry in any church: A comprehensive guide* (pp. 35-36). Ventura, CA: Regal Books.

[2] "Since tens of thousands of words have been written to attempt to define the word 'evangelical' to everyone's satisfaction without a great deal of success, I am not particularly inclined to add to the confusion. What I mean by evangelical… is uncomplicated. I'm using it the way most Christian people in the pews are understanding it here and now in America. I simply mean the made-in-Wheaton, Christianity Today, Moody Bible Institute, Lausanne Committee, InterVarsity, Gospel Light, Billy Graham, Southern Baptist, Zondervon type of evangelical. It involves a bit of overlapping on the right with fundamentalists and on the left with conciliar evangelicals… I am using the term in a narrow sense which does not include Pentecostals or Charismatics." (Ibid., pp. 31–31.)

[3] "Through the years the major doctrine that has distinguished Pentecostals from other born-again, Bible-believing evangelicals is their doctrine of the 'baptism of the Holy Spirit' as a work of grace distinct from the 'new birth' accompanied by speaking in other tongues as the initial physical evidence. Other evangelicals, particularly of the Weslyan Holiness persuasion, agree there is a second work of grace, but see personal sanctification rather than tongues as the chief validation of the experience." (Ibid., pp. 18-19.)

[4] Although, by the 1970's public healing services were drawing large crowds from at least one main-line denomination. ("..on a June evening in 1974 a healing service was held in the football stadium at NotreDame University with 20,000 Catholics present.")

MacNutt, Francis S., Ph.D. Quoted in Shlemon, Barbara L. (1988). Healing prayer (Ninth printing). (Foreword, p. 11). Notre Dame, IN: Ave Maria Press.

[5] Benor, Daniel J., M.D. "Survey of Spiritual Healing Research" Complementary Medical Research (pp. 9-33). Vol. 4, No. 1, September 1990. Quoted in Dossey, Larry, M.D. (1993). *Healing words: The power of prayer and the practice of medicine* (p. 211). San Francisco, CA: HarperCollins, Publishers.

[6] Dossey, Larry, M.D. (1993). Healing words: *The power of prayer and the practice of medicine* (p. 197). San Francisco, CA: HarperCollins, Publishers.

[7] (Ibid., p. xx; 2; 3.)

[8] Benor, Daniel J., M.D. "Survey of Spiritual Healing Research" in Complementary Medical Research (pp. 9-33). Vol. 4, No. 1, September 1990. Quoted in Dossey, Larry, M.D. (1993). *Healing words: The power of prayer and the practice of medicine* (p. 211). San Francisco, CA: HarperCollins, Publishers.

[9] Byrd, Randolph C., M.D. "Positive Therapeutic Effects of Intercessory Prayer in a Coronary Care Unit Population" in Southern Medical Journal (pp. 826–829). Vol. 81, No. 7, July 1988. Quoted in Dossey, Larry, M.D. (1993). *Healing words: The power of prayer and the practice of medicine* (pp. 180–181). San Francisco, CA: HarperCollins, Publishers.

[10] This writer has an audio tape of an interview where the woman describes her near-death "encounter" with Jesus.

[11] "Although a large percentage were improved to one degree or another, nevertheless, 71 percent of the people I have prayed for over the last two years are still sick to some degree after the prayer is over. Only 29 percent are completely healed… I have heard JohnWimber say on occasion, 'More people I pray for are not healed than are."

Wagner, C. Peter, Ph.D. (1988). *How to have a healing ministry in any church: A comprehensive guide* (p. 257). Ventura, CA: Regal Books.

[12] Shlemon, Barbara L., R.N. (1988). *Healing prayer* (Ninth printing) (pp. 39–40). Notre Dame, IN: Ave Maria Press.

[13] At an evening healing service in the mid-1990's in the Spring Arbor, Michigan Free Methodist Church, author, pastor, and Asbury Seminary professor Rev. Donald Joy, Ph.D., observed one-fifth of the textual material and one-third of the narratives in the New Testament Gospels are about healing. Jesus healed, repeatedly, using a variety of methods; some He touched, some He commanded.

[14] "The gift of healing accompanies the proclamation of God's word (MK 16:20; MT 10: 7-8) and opens people to accept the gospel (Acts 3: 10). Probably every Christian can heal (see MK 16: 17–18; MT 10: 8), but some are especially gifted (1 Cor 12: 9)."

(No date or author listed.) "Seek The Gifts Of The Spirit" (p. 18). Cincinnati, OH: Presentation Ministries.

[15] As just one example "The Association of Christian Therapists has been instrumental in teaching the principles of healing prayer to hundreds of health care professionals, thereby providing a network of Christian counseling centers throughout the United States."

Shlemon, Barbara L., R.N. (1982). Healing the hidden self (pp. 14–15). Notre Dame, IN: Ave Maria Press.

[16] Hampsch, Fr. John C. "Healing of memories." A two-hour, audio-taped, large audience healing service. (Date and publisher unknown.)

[17] Citing Alan Walker's "Jesus the Liberator" Fr. Hampsch says:

"Modern psychiatry has learned lovelessness lies behind the disharmony of many a life. Childhood rejection, isolation, loneliness, bitterness, and hatred destroy human personality, and hence, recovery of mental and emotional balance depends, literally, on the discovery of love… Love is what the Christian faith is all about. Jesus came into the world to declare, and to reveal, the love of God to us. The love of God, for us, is the greatest therapy force in the world."

[18] Stapleton, Ruth Carter (1976). *The gift of inner healing* (p. 1). Waco, TX: Word Books, Publisher.

[19] Hampsch, Fr. John C. "Healing of Memories." A two-hour, audio-taped, large audience healing service. (Date and publisher unknown.)

[20] "The implication of this invocation is not that God awaits our act of forgiveness of another before He is willing to forgive us. That would contradict the truth that God is love. What Jesus is telling us is that as we forgive, our hearts are more open to receive the forgiveness of God which has always been available. Many people who have struggled with unrelenting guilts and fears need only to forgive those who have offended them to find immediate release from guilt and a fresh flow of peace and joy within."

Stapleton, Ruth C. (1977). The experience of inner healing (p. 62). Waco, TX: Word Books, Publisher.

[21] Shlemon, Barbara L., R.N. (1988). *Healing prayer* (p. 53). Notre Dame, IN: Ave Maria Press.

[22] Hampsch, Fr. John C. "Healing of Memories." A two-hour, audio-taped, large audience healing service. (Date and publisher unknown.)

[23] Stapleton, Ruth C. (1977). *The experience of inner healing* (p. 59). Waco, TX: Word Books, Publisher.

[24] "The experience of inner healing begins when some circumstance such as a spiritual experience, an insight created by some healing method applied either psychologically or spiritually, or the will to be whole occurs… We can give ourselves to the task of cutting out the old, sick memories, and replacing them with new, rich images in our deep mind… Removing old material and replacing it with the new is the total objective of the healing of memories."

(Ibid., p. 11.)

[25] Seamonds, David A. (1985). *Healing of memories* (p. 124). Wheaton, IL: Victor Books.

[26] (Ibid., p. 129.)

[27] (Ibid., p. 130.)

[28] (Ibid., p. 66.)

[29] Stapleton, Ruth C. (1976). *The gift of inner healing* (pp. x-xi). Waco, TX: Word Books, Publisher.

[30] Though McMinn's article speaks not directly to prayer for inner healing of memories, it, and the entire 1998 Summer issue of Christian Counseling Today, the official magazine of the American Association of Christian Counselors, is devoted to the theme of how properly to integrate the client's religious experience into the counseling setting.

McMinn, Mark R., Ph.D. “Exploring the Role of Religious Experience in Counseling” in Christian Counseling Today (pp. 16-19). Vol. 6, No. 2, Summer 1998.

[31] Cited in Anderson, Neil T., D. Min. (1993). *The bondage breaker* (p. 185). Eugene, OR: Harvest House Publishers.

[32] (Address, date, and author unknown.) “Seek The Gifts Of The Spirit” (p. 31). A pamphlet published by Presentation Ministries, Cincinnati, Ohio.

[33] “I have concluded Christians are woefully unprepared to deal with the dark world of Satan’s kingdom or to minister to those who are in bondage to it.”

Anderson, Neil T., D. Min. (1993). *The bondage breaker* (p. 11). Eugene, OR: Harvest House Publishers.

[34] MacNutt, Francis, Ph.D. (1995). *Deliverance from evil spirits: A practical manual* (p. 10). Grand Rapids, MI Chosen Books.

[35] “In this book I have attempted to clarify the nature of spiritual conflicts and outline how they can be resolved in Christ. Part One explains the (baptised Christian’s) position of freedom, protection, and authority in Christ. Part Two warns of your vulnerability to very real and very personal demonic influences which are intent on robbing you of your freedom through temptation, accusation, deception, and control. Part Three presents the steps to freedom in Christ which will help you walk free of the enemy’s designs on your life.”

Anderson, Neil T., D.Min. (1993). *The bondage breaker* (p. 13). Eugene, OR: Harvest House Publishers.

[36] (Ibid., pp. 68–71).

[37] MacNutt, Francis, Ph.D. (1974). *Healing* (p. 220). Quoted in Leech, Kenneth (1977). *Soul friend: The practice of Christian spirituality* (p. 134). San Francisco, CA: Harper & Row Publishers, Inc.

[38] Anderson, Neil T., D. Min. (1993). *The bondage breaker* (p. 73). Eugene, OR: Harvest House Publishers.

[39] “I think we all agree that Christians cannot be fully possessed.”

Siang-Yang Tan, Ph.D. (Professor of psychology, Fuller Theological Seminary, and senior pastor of First Evangelical Church in Glendale, California). “Demonic and Spiritual Warfare” in Christian Counseling Today. (pp. 40-47). Vol. 6, No. 2, Summer 1988.

[40] A. “We can be oppressed; to use correct terminology rather, we can be demonized.”

(Ibid., pp. 40–47).

B. “… (we) need to have a clear sense of the biblical nature of demonic activity and influence on the believer (i.e., oppression, affliction, and attack rather than possession or control.”)

Philip Muinde, M.A., M.Litt. (Citizen of Kenya, and director of Doulos Trust, a ministry of counseling, conciliation, and reconciliation to business and government leaders in Aberdeen,Scotland). *“Demonic and Spiritual Warfare” in Christian Counseling Today* (pp. 40–47). Vol. 6, No. 4, Summer 1998.

[41] A. MacNutt, Francis, Ph.D. (1995). Deliverance from evil spirits: A practical manual (pp. 76–79). Grand Rapids, MI: Chosen Books.

B. “If a counselee complains about being harassed by voices that instruct him or her to do things that are very much opposed to his or her value system--to use profanity, to injure onself, to hurt other people, or a variety of other wicked or troubling things--a response may be appropriate, especially if the individual typically does not manifest any other traits of being psychotic. Spiritual-warfare prayers binding the power of the enemy should bring a measure of relief.”

Ned Stringham, Ph.D. (Clinical psychologist with Lincoln Counseling and Enrichment Associates in Lincoln, Nebraska). *“Demonic and Spiritual Warfare” in Christian Counseling Today* (pp. 40–47). Vol. 6, No. 2, Summer 1998.

C. “First, if there is a dramatic demonic manifestation, I will sense, for example, a very overwhelming, foreboding sense of evil in the presence of that person. Second, that person will have a very negative, adverse reaction to the name of Jesus, or to Scripture, or to hymns and songs. Third, usually there is a history of involvement with a cult or the occult. Finally, sometimes there’s a strong olfactory sulfur smell, but that is not as important as the first three.”

Siang-Yang Tan, Ph.D. *“Demonic and Spiritual Warfare” in Christian Counseling Today* (pp. 40–47). Vol. 6, No. 2, Summer 1998.

[42] A. “We need to be very careful in making the proper diagnosis from the clinical point of view so we don’t just throw our psychology or psychiatry out the window. We need to use the proper methods of diagnosis to assess, and then spiritually discern. Spiritual discernment goes beyond psychological testing, assessment, diagnosis, and so on. We can have DSM-IV and all the psychological tests to make the differential or proper diagnosis, but we need to go beyond that. We need the Holy Spirit’s wisdom to discern what on earth is really happening. And it’s not always very clear.”

(Ibid., pp. 40–47).

B. “Because of the spiritual nature of the demonic, we must exercise care in discerning what is an explicit demonic component and what is not. What may appear to be demonic may in reality be psychosomatic, thus requiring medical or psychological intervention. Other cases which may present as psychosomatic may in reality turn out to be demonic. The critical requirement for biblically sound diagnosis and therapy cannot be overemphasized if we are not to risk ‘directly’ addressing patients (or their illnesses or symptoms thereof) instead of demons! Thus, while there are spiritual factors behind all manifestations of sin, it would be simplistic to automatically associate behavior such as anger, guilt, and even addictions, with demons.”

Philip Muinde, Ph.D. “*Demonic and Spiritual Warfare” in Christian Counseling Today* (pp. 40–47). Vol. 6, No. 2, Summer 1998.

[43] “The most accurate way of diagnosing the presence of an evil spirit is through the gift of discerning spirits.”

MacNutt, Francis, Ph.D. (1995). *Deliverance from evil spirits: A practical manual* (p. 80). Grand Rapids, MI: Chosen Books.

[44] Weilert, Allan, M.T.S. “Deliverance Ministry: Some Practical Guidelines” in *The Journal of Christian Healing* (pp. 23–29). Vol. 17, No. 1&2, Spring/Summer 1995.

[45] Smith, Ed, Ph.D. (1996). TheoPhostic counseling basic seminar: Moving beyond tolorable recovery, into genuine restoration and emotional inner healing. P.O. Box 489, Campbellsville, KY 42718 ph. (502) 465-3757

CHAPTER 17

Recognizing and Treating Survivors of Abuse by Organized Criminal Groups

Alison Miller

A reality of our interconnected world of the 21st century is that organized groups abuse children for their own purposes. Such groups include cults of various religions, especially Satanic and occult groups (ritual abuse), political mind control groups of various kinds, and commercial child pornography interests. There is evidence of networking between these groups; they share children, and they share strategies. Groups who use children in child pornography often use children from multi-generational incestuous families, which are to be found in organized cults. Military mind control trainers also find cult children a ready source of potential spies and killers. In Germany Michaela Huber has found a blending of SS-style military fascist groups with Satanism. All these groups use torture and interrogation and training techniques used by military and police all over the world, e.g., for training child soldiers.

These organized abusers, whether commercial, religious or political/military, are aware that dissociation is the lynchpin of secrecy, hiding the abuse from the survivor himself. As we know, dissociation is primarily brought about by extreme physical and/or emotional pain and betrayal in early childhood. These groups deliberately create dissociative disorders in children in order to be able to continue abusing and training the children without the children breaking the silence.

Organized criminal groups who abuse children, whether religious, occult, political, or commercial, tend to train their children in similar ways. Because of this, when survivors of these groups enter psychotherapy, they often present certain predictable problems. This article focuses on the nature of the training of children by organized abusive groups, and on the practical problems of dealing with survivors of this abuse in psychotherapy.

The purpose of understanding this is still to engage in ethical and effective psychotherapy.

It can be very helpful to know the basics about the nature of the personality systems created by organized abuse, as well as about the dangers of ongoing contact with the perpetrators. Knowing the basics can save a lot of therapy time and can help our clients feel understood. But don't get hung up in the details of sophisticated "programming." Just get to know your client, care about him or her, develop a trusting relationship, and use the specialized knowledge I am providing here in the context of overall competent DID therapy.

The suggestions for treatment in this chapter are general guidelines for recognizing and working with survivors of organized criminal child abuse. They are not to be put into practice without adequate training and supervision. A therapist using these methods must already have good basic training and well-developed understanding of and experience with treating trauma and dissociative disorders.

Part 1: The Structured Personality System of the Survivor

The personality systems of ritual abuse and mind control survivors are different from those of dissociative individuals whose abuse has been less systematic.

Characteristics of these systems often include:

An internal structure in which the alters are placed

A complex inner world

Observer and recorder alters who know everything that has happened to the person

Internal filing systems for memories, especially of training sessions

A hierarchy of alters

Alters with "jobs"

Alters who believe they are animals or demons or aliens

Internal calendars with "jobs" to be done on certain dates

Spinner alters who send out feelings or impulses to the rest of the system

Deliberately placed "triggers" for learned behaviors

"Booby traps" of despair or suicidality triggered by talking about the abuse

Recycling of memories and reappearance of trained behaviors

Reported use of technologies in training

Certain predictable mental disorders as side effects of training

If you have a client who has most or all of these characteristics, you may suspect he or she has been abused by an organized criminal group. Though, of course, you will refrain from suggesting it until and unless the client brings it up.

1. An Internal Structure

Ritual abuse survivors have been called “structured” as opposed to “reactive” multiples (persons with Dissociative Identity Disorder) because very often their deliberately created personalities have been organized into some kind of an internal structure, shaped like a pyramid, or a prism, or a tetrahedron, etc. This is also true for mind control survivors. The structures that are created by the group are fixed by the trainer and the specific group. These are purposefully made to keep it easy for the trainers to retrain alters over time. In some groups they are constructed using geometric shapes, others use trees, others use the Kabalah. Each substructure has a department head, and workers. Colors and symbols are used to categorize different groups of alters in the structure. There is also a dump, for discarded or untrainable alters.

Once a therapist knows the physical look to a structure (which may be the last thing you ever find out) it makes it easier to work your way through the system. Unfortunately only the internal department heads actually know what the structure is based on, and it takes time to establish trust with these alters. If a client is talking about an internal geometric structure, it is a “red flag” for organized criminal abuse. Structures are used for perpetrating groups to locate specific alters, and to call out specific combinations of alters for certain tasks. Often there are codes for each space in the structure or matrix.

In a typical group, an original group of “foundational” alters are split off between the ages of 6 weeks and 6 months by means of loud noises, bright lights, small electric shocks, and other noxious and shocking stimuli, so that by the age of 6 months the child has at minimum 18–20 alters. Each alter will come out in response to the trigger that created it. These infant alters are then trained to recognize their names, special colors, magical symbols, and location in the structure, which is simulated in the outside world so that the child will internalize this image of who all the alters are and where they “live” on the inside. Torture is not used in teaching the infant alters about who they are and where they live; it is a game which is fun for the child and gives him or her attention. This makes it less likely that the person will remember it in therapy, as therapists tend to go for all the traumatic events, and in any case non-traumatic events from infancy will not be

available to explicit memory. This is called building the base or the foundation; it is complete by 6 to 10 months of age.

In some groups, as the child gets older, this structure is imprinted on the child's unconscious mind by training an alter to build a structure with building blocks of varying colors, and place dolls of the same colors representing the alters in their places in the structure. They are told that everyone must be kept in their places. The structure is gradually developed and elaborated over the years. Walls between the alters or alter groups prevent their communication, and taking down the walls causes alters to join. Often the builder alter is supposed to take down certain walls when the survivor gets to a certain age, so that, for example, the everyday life alters integrate with the cult-loyal ones, leaving out the pain holders. Knowing the structure can help the therapist know how many alters there are and which ones are most important to work with.

2. A Complex Inner World

Many survivors have been encouraged to create, either instead of a structure, or in addition to a structure, a complex inner world in which the alters live. It is often based on fairy tales or stories or movies which have been shown to the child. It may have frightening places in it, some copied from the outside world (e.g., a "pit" or a "torture chamber") and some created by suggestion. The internal disasters which can be triggered happen in this inner world. The trainer gives the child suggestions about the appearance of the internal world, through showing the child a picture of a tree, or a pyramid, or a house or a box, and playing games of "Let's pretend little Susy (or whatever alter is out at the time) lives in the roots of a tree."

If the internal world is frightening, the therapist can later help the client use her own imagination to redesign it and put the alters in safer places. But first it is necessary to overcome the effects of the training that dictates that everyone inside must stay in his or her place.

A "reactive multiple" (a survivor whose alters were not deliberately created by an organized group) may also have a structure, but it is simply a place for the alters to "live" inside, such as a house. Sometimes places or structures inside are copies of outside places, including places where abuse happened. This is true for both structured and reactive multiples, but many whose abuse was not perpetrated by an organized group have no inner world at all, and alters when not "out" simply disappear into blackness or exercise an effect on the person's emotions without being internally visible.

3. Observer and Recorder Alters

Survivors of organized abuse often have observer alters (often known to therapists as Inner Self-Helpers) who are aware of and remember everything that happens to the child. Often observer or recorder alters are told that they can see everything but cannot and must not act in the outside world. They may believe they are non-human, e.g., aliens or whales or spirits. These alters, who are created very early, can be very helpful in accessing memories for processing.

There may also be "floating alters." These are not deliberately created parts of the system, but alters that were accidentally split off at the same time as others. They are able to float around the system learning everything they can, often unnoticed by the other alters. Since the perpetrating group is unaware of them, they don't get hurt unless they get in the way accidentally or they choose to take someone's pain. They can be an incredible source of information about the system and about what has happened. Reactive multiples also have floating alters.

4. Internal Filing Systems

Many survivors of organized abuse, particularly ritual abuse and mind control, have internal filing systems, usually with a "control room," files, a file manager or controller, and labels on the files which refer to such things as the type of training, age, and place where it was done. When you come to working with the memories, it is very important to work with the file manager alters. In some cases, there are "program codes" which when said in the right order will make certain programs or pieces of training cease to work.

5. A Hierarchy of Alters

The alters within most deliberately created systems are hierarchically organized. There are generally levels or layers, and each level has a boss, who reports to someone on the next higher level. There are often several alters with the same name but different functions, usually on different levels. The ones in charge usually have titles representing their authority. In political systems there are captains, leaders, and soldiers; in ritual systems there are demons, Satans, high priests or priestesses, and representations of family members who have authority in the person's life. Each layer in a Satanic system usually includes a Satan, a few demons, a high priest or priestess, a copy of the primary trainer, and various guards. Authoritative alters have the job of disciplining others under them for disobedience (such as talking about the abuse). If the disciplinarian on one level fails to do his job, the discipline moves up to a higher level. There are usually also fail-safe alters outside the "layers" to deal with the problem if the ones in charge prove disloyal. These have been told they are such entities as ghosts, chameleons (who can impersonate other alters), deceivers, and spiritual guides.

The alters in charge of the system are always watching what goes on in the outside world, but rarely intervene directly at first. The therapist can “talk through” the system to them, as they are listening. In doing therapy with a survivor of organized abuse, your objective is to get through to the alters in charge of the hierarchy and convince them that they have been deceived. They often believe they know everything about what has happened to the person (not true), and have never been hurt; they may believe that they don’t belong to the body at all. Gently exposing their false beliefs, as you talk to alters with increasing authority, gradually builds trust and helps the client see what has really happened to them. You cannot succeed in therapy with a survivor of organized abuse unless the alters in charge of the hierarchy at first allow you to proceed, and later actively cooperate with you. Although these alters have observed the “real” world, they have rarely been out in it, and have very limited experience of anything in life other than group events and training. Their rewards have been sex, drugs, and power; they know nothing of love or caring or pets or snow or anything else positive in life. Other alters can share these positive experiences with them to help them see what they have been missing.

6. Alters with “Jobs”

All alters in a deliberately created system have jobs to do, and doing one’s job is the most important expectation, after compliance and silence. Categories of jobs include: learning languages, guarding secure information, various sexual behaviors, killing and dissecting and sacrificing, holding physical and emotional pain, doing magik, reactivating training, and worship.

Gatekeepers are special kinds of guards. They are told they are in control of the mind and all emotions. They work in combination with those in charge of the Pain. A gatekeeper is never hurt himself after his initial creation or “birth,” holds feelings and memories back, and observes everything that happens.

Garbage Kids are alters who wouldn’t comply in training, or couldn’t learn quickly enough. They may have been discarded by being taken to the point of death or unconsciousness via drugs or severe electric shock, or they may have just never been called out again after their failure. Other alters may believe these ones are dead, while higher-ups may believe these alters are failures so are not worth consideration. Often garbage kids are hidden pain-holders, and continue to participate in some memories. It is important to seek them out so that they can contribute when memories are being processed. If they have been “killed,” they are stuck in the memory of being unconscious, rather than actually destroyed.

7. Non-human Alters

Organized abusers often want alters to believe they are anything other than parts of an abused child. One simple way of creating non-human alters is to split off an alter by inflicting pain while the child is exposed to circumstances which lead her to believe she is not human. For example, the child is given a hallucinogenic drug while suggestions are made about demons, and people are wearing demon costumes. When the new alter appears, she is shown a “mirror” with a picture of a demon on it and told this is her. Or the child is put in a cage with a fierce dog, and only fed dog food when she begs for it like a dog. Or the child is given a paralyzing drug so that she cannot move, shown movies about aliens, and told she is an alien who can observe this world but cannot act in it.

The purpose of the demon alters is to keep the child in line (ensure compliance) by the constant fear of being grabbed and harmed by a demon. They represent actual demons which the group believes in, just as idols may represent deities in the Hindu faith. If the child is about to disclose something to an outsider, a demon will come up and scare him. The demons are set up in a hierarchy. They are given names of actual demons. Demon alters are led to believe they are entirely evil and are therefore not loveable by anyone, except Satan. They also believe they are very ugly so that anyone from outside will be afraid of them.

Animal alters are used for purposes consonant with that animal’s nature, such as a cat for going through the bushes at night. Alters who believe they are large animals such as dogs are also used for sexual intercourse with real animals. Alters who believe they are aliens or ghosts typically believe they don’t belong to the body; they don’t feel the body’s pain, and they are very useful when the person requires punishment such as self-harm or suicide attempts. They usually believe they will live on if the body dies, since they think their “internal bodies” are the real ones.

8. Internal Calendars

If the group has a long-term agenda—and most ritual and political groups do—there are alters who hold a “calendar” which lays out the “jobs” to be done on certain dates. Regular ritual dates are part of the calendar for a ritual abuse survivor. They are learned in a normal everyday way, like learning the dates of your birthday and Christmas. Some survivors also have alters who hold future dates such as the return of Satan (in 2012), or the date of the political group’s battle to take over the world. In addition, some groups implant personal dates (years) in which survivors are to return to the group, integrate real-life alters with cult-loyal alters, commit suicide or become ill.

There are often internal punishments, such as a very annoying sound, spinning, or a sensation of being shocked, if the person does not return when told to.

9. Spinner Alters Who Send Out Feelings or Impulses to the Rest of the System

Cults and mind control agencies use physical spinning of the child a great deal. It is meant initially as a form of compliance training; a baby is spun on a turntable, along with hearing an annoying noise, until it stops crying. This process is repeated many times, using each alter. After that, spinning to the point of making the child physically ill is used extensively in the first two years of life every time the child is disobedient. A spinning chair is used at later ages.

The vestibular (balance) system in the brain is closely connected with the limbic system, and spinning can have the effect of spreading post-traumatic effects throughout the personality system. In organized abuse, spinning is used to teach the child's alters to come forward quickly and take parts of the child's pain, fear and nausea, as well as to share the lesson being taught at the time. The child learns to involve a specified group of alters in a spin.

A specific training or "program" is given to a group of alters, who each hold a part of the training. If the program goes into effect, all these alters are involved through internal spinning by a spinner alter. If the lesson is one that the trainer does not want a single alter to hold, such as suicide, or homicide, all the alters in the training group must be activated in order for the target behavior to take place. This is a security measure, so that one alter can not kill the entire system, or one alter cannot kill another member of the group. This is why the majority of people only injure themselves rather than die in their suicide attempts.

Spinner alters have the job of sending out feelings or impulses to the rest of the alters, the host, or a group of selected alters. Often when a certain training is in operation, the survivor feels dizzy, as though something or someone is "spinning" inside her head. If this is happening, ask to speak to the alter who is maintaining or distributing the spin, and ask her to stop spinning. If she is unable to do so, talk to whoever is making her spin. When a survivor feels spinning, it is because the memory of an abuse which involved extreme spinning has been triggered. Usually this was in the first year of life.

"Spin programming" is a misnomer. Spinning is used very generally, in many kinds of training, just as torture and rape and disgusting creatures. We do not speak of "rape programming" or "rat programming" or "asphyxiation programming." Some survivors report having been spun on a huge Catherine Wheel, sometimes going in and out of water. This is known to have been used in political torture.

10. Deliberately Placed Triggers

The basic training (compliance, loyalty and silence) has been given to all alters, and cannot be turned off. However, many other specific trained behaviors

such as self-harm or disrupting therapy have “on” and “off” triggers or switches. There are not only external triggers, such as certain touches or sounds or words, but there may be internal switches. These behaviors can be stopped if the therapist can either speak with the alters responsible and ask them to turn off the programs or learned behaviors, or use group-created triggers to turn them off. Triggers are installed using drugs and punishment, repeated over and over while the child is in a semi-conscious state.

If you use triggers (e.g., special touches) make sure that your client has confirmed what effect they will have on her. Some of the triggers are common to many survivors, but some are unique. The only thing that all triggers have in common is that they are installed at acupressure points. (For this reason, acupressure techniques can cause unexpected effects in this population.) Sometimes the same trigger will activate or turn off different behaviors in different survivors, so be careful in using triggers. Turning off a behavior through a trigger does not mean it will not recur. Permanently deactivating the training can only be done by working through the training memory with all involved alters.

It is possible for the therapist or the client to use group-created triggers for helpful purposes. For example, an alter trained not to feel pain can reduce the pain resulting from a re-abusive group contact. An alter trained to put other alters to sleep can put to sleep alters who are programmed to go to group meetings or to harm the body. An alter trained to make the others forget events can make the alters who are supposed to report to the group what they have disclosed forget having talked about the memories.

It must be remembered, however, that use of triggers by the therapist, or use of force by certain alters of the client on other alters will be experienced by the client as coercive if the alters being triggered do not consent. Cooperation is always to be preferred to coercion, and can often be achieved. For example, an alter who is trained to harm or kill the body may agree to be put to sleep or internally isolated until the next therapy session, when the self-harm program may be undone. It is preferable to convince the internal alters to do these things rather than having the therapist do it. Sometimes it may be necessary for the therapist to use touch triggers to turn off dangerous behaviors. Before this is done, an alter should be out who doesn’t mind being touched, and who understands that the therapist is not a group member just because s/he knows about triggers.

11. Booby Traps

“Booby traps” are dangerous internal events that are triggered to happen if the client (with or without a therapist) messes with her own training, and/or becomes aware of memories she is not supposed to know. They include such things as

suicide attempts, serious self-harm, or falling into terrible depression. Booby traps are caused by flooding of the feelings from very emotionally traumatic memories without the content. The memories will be of the death of a person or animal they love, and/or of abandonment by “God” and by family members, being told they are worthless and no one can love them, even God, and no one can save them.

The booby traps are deliberately created as part of the training. They create unbearable feelings, and offer relief from these feelings through becoming catatonic or killing oneself. A booby trap can be set off without the knowledge of the host. The host may leave a therapy session feeling just fine, then go and jump off a building. Because of such traps it is very important to go very slowly in therapy with survivors of this kind of abuse.

12. Recycling of Memories and Reappearance of Trained Behaviors

A recycler alter is one who has been trained to keep a small piece of each training memory, so that the survivor will be unable to recover the entire memory and thereby undo the training. The recycler may be given a name like Piece Keeper or Puzzle Maker or Collector, and will be instructed to do something with the pieces, which are not kept in the files with the rest of the memories. When the therapist and client are ready to go through the training memories and undo the effects of the training, it is essential to find any recycler alters and ask them to put in their pieces as well. Otherwise, the memories which have been processed will be re-dissociated and the training will begin to work again.

13. Technologies Used for Deception and Training

Stage magic is used extensively to create non-human alters and simulate various false scenarios such as murders or alien abductions. Trapdoors, drugs, hypnosis, and various kinds of illusions are used.

In addition, specific technologies which have been reported by survivors include:

- various spinning devices
- a red light flashing machine normally used for neurofeedback
- a helmet which administers small electric shocks to different areas of the head (originally developed by a Canadian inventor for use with epilepsy)
- a small soundproof and light-proof box (“deprivation room”)
- a sound-emitting machine normally used for testing hearing, used at very high volume to create aversive memories which are later used as booby traps for internal punishment
- a bed equipped with electrodes (“electronic board”) to teach touch triggers

virtual reality glasses

14. Mental Disorders as Side Effects

Various kinds of mental illness occur when for some reason the dissociation in the personality system breaks down. In survivors of organized abuse, there are some predictable symptoms.

Post-traumatic Stress Disorder: The flooding, flashbacks, and self-harm of some of the internal punishments give the client an extreme case of post-traumatic stress disorder. This can also be caused by early and incomplete attempts at memory work by the client and/or the therapist.

Eating Disorders: The child is fed raw flesh, feces and urine, and cookies that contain bugs instead of chocolate chips. This is necessary to train them to eat disgusting things in rituals. Eating disorders often occur as a side effect.

Bathroom Problems: There may also be difficulties with urination and defecation (from having to hold these back in sexual or ritual training), and fear of bathrooms or showers (because of near drowning experiences). A combination of all these things is a sign of the kind of experiences the child may have gone through.

Sleep Disturbance: Alters are also trained to stay awake by being stuck in a cage or tied to a stake for a very long time, being painfully prodded awake if she falls asleep. This is done because most ceremonies take place after midnight, so the child must learn to be awake for ceremonies and in school the next day. There is, of course, also sleep disturbance from being sexually abused at night.

Rapid Switching: This occurs when something has gone wrong with the internal “gate control mechanism,” or sometimes when the person is so anxious that no alter wants to stay on the outside for long. Some groups deliberately induce it and train alters to do it to appear crazy. The effect is an inability to complete a thought or sentence, which looks like the schizophrenic “word salad.”

Scrambled Speech and Perceptions: Scrambled speech is taught using hallucinogenic drugs and microphones that cut in and out, speaking to the child in several languages. It can also be done using a rapid switch between deaf alters popping in and out, along with any alter who speaks other languages. The purpose is to confuse the host, and to prevent outsiders from getting to close to important information or alters.

Alters’ Identity Confusion: Sometimes alters have been told they are specific outside people, such as rock stars or politicians, or are to take on the identities of whoever is around them. One purpose of this is for training them to impersonate outsiders. If the client is hearing voices who claim to be famous people, she appears to be schizophrenic.

Addictions: Since drugs are commonly used as part of the abuse, survivors easily become addicted to various drugs. Sometimes their drug dealer is a “watcher” or representative or the abusing group.

Part 2: Training of Children

Many organized criminal abuser groups deliberately create alter personalities in infants, and use behavioral conditioning sequences to train these alters to behave in certain ways without the host personality being aware of it. In some groups, this is called “programming,” while in others it is simply “training.” Drugs, extreme arousal, pain, and life-threatening situations are used, as well as movies, music, stories, and virtual reality technology. The memory of a training situation is often split between several alters, so that the alters who have to produce the programmed behavior are amnestic for the conditioning sequence. The effect is like that of a post-hypnotic suggestion. Alters are instructed to “do their jobs” in response to specific conditioned stimuli or “triggers.”

This paper addresses issues with people raised as young children in perpetrating groups. The groups believe it is impossible to “split” a person into alters after the age of nine. People who are recruited as teens or adults do not necessarily have dissociative disorders, though they may suffer from Post-traumatic Stress Disorder.

The most basic lessons, which the child raised in such a group is taught when he or she is under two years of age, are (1) total compliance, (2) loyalty to the group, and (3) silence. All alters receive this training, which is reinforced throughout life. In addition, specific alters are given specific jobs, and are taught to do them to the best of their ability. These jobs include re-contacting the offending group, punishing deviant alters, and interfering with relationships and therapy. If the training breaks down in any way, certain alters are trained to re-contact the group, who will reinforce the lessons taught earlier. Alters are also trained in sexual and violent offending.

Specific trained behaviors or “programs” can be activated by remembering the abuse, talking about the abuse, everyday “accidental” triggers (words, touches, sounds, sights), deliberate triggers provided by group members, events and dates. The host personality is often unaware of why he or she is behaving in these ways, and feels powerless to counteract it. This is because the alter “out” in the world is not the one in control of the behavior. The perpetrators are capable of attaching conditioned responses (such as falling asleep, or becoming violent, or feeling great pain) to particular events, such as entering the therapist’s office, or working through specific memories.

Specific types of training are recognizable by their effects. When a specific training is in operation, the survivor often feels dizzy, as though something is "spinning" inside her head. A spinning alter, who is not herself affected by the specific training, may be using the spin to distribute the effects of the training to other alters.

The following are some types of training which you may expect to encounter in survivors of organized abuse:

1. Compliance and Loyalty Training

This is done with "horrible examples" of what happens to "traitors": severe punishment for disobedience, vows signed in blood by important alters, forced perpetration, and threats to kill loved ones. If the perpetrators discover that a survivor has been talking to an outsider, the group will reinforce the loyalty and obedience training through repetitions of elements of the original training.

The most important ways to combat loyalty and obedience training are to show the survivor, especially the loyal alters who are in charge of the personality system, the ways in which they have been deceived. If the client is currently safe, emphasize that behaviors which got her "in trouble" years ago will no longer get her in trouble. Show the alters who are still loyal to the group the ways in which the perpetrators have tricked and deceived them, so that they will become justifiably angry. Be absolutely sure the client is currently safe before you tell her she is; otherwise she will be severely punished and will look upon you as a liar. Many survivors are unaware that they are still in contact with their perpetrators.

2. Silence and "Shutdown" Training

Almost all training sessions have a "Don't Talk" component built into them, usually in the form of a threat to the life of the survivor and/or others whom the survivor loves (family, friends, therapist, therapist's family). When a survivor stops in the middle of telling you something and appears to be listening internally, you can suspect that another alter is telling her not to talk or threatening her. When she changes the subject, or becomes afraid, or tries to leave when certain things are asked, or cannot speak at all, shutdown training is taking effect.

Besides the general training not to disclose anything about the group, there are several specific kinds of training designed to make the survivor not talk. These include training to believe it was a dream, electroshock after an event to make the survivor forget, training to disbelieve her own memories, training to believe the group overhears everything the survivor says (done with a hidden microphone), training to believe that a creature or device placed inside the survivor will destroy her if she talks, and training not to appear dissociative, usually done with

administration of an antipsychotic drug. This latter training means that many survivors always have the host personality at the front, and other parts cannot come out directly. It is still possible to work with the parts via the host communicating with them.

Silence and shutdown training is all based on lies and trickery, but nevertheless it presents a considerable barrier to effective therapy. Some of this training (e.g., to forget, and to disbelieve her own memories) could potentially make a client deny what she has previously disclosed, and accuse the therapist of planting false memories. When this is coupled with present-day re-abuse and threats to the client and others, a survivor could feel she has no alternative but to recant.

It is therefore very important to access at least the knowledge portion of the memories of some of this training, so that the client can see how and when she has been deceived. Again, showing the survivor, especially the alters in charge of the system, the perpetrators' deceptions, is crucial to getting these alters to work in therapy. It is, of course, very important that you not suggest to the client what may have happened to her to make her believe the irrational things such as "The group knows everything I think." But ask the system to show the significant alters the trickery behind each belief.

3. Training in Self-Punishment for Disobedience or Talking

If a survivor disobeys the group, usually by disclosing secret information, various groups of alters will act on their training to punish the survivor. Methods include self-harm, suicide attempts, insomnia, eating disorders, sickness, and various kinds of flooding programs, including depression, emotional lability, offender memories, and physical pain or nausea.

The self-harm and suicide training results from behavioral conditioning. Children and adults are generally taught several specific ways of harming and of killing themselves, down to the details of how many of each kind of pill to take. Self-harm programs are specific, e.g., cutting or burning. These behaviors are triggered by disobedience, and can be turned on and off with triggers. In contrast to people who harm themselves in order to feel pain, in programmed self-harm the alters who inflict the pain are generally not the ones who feel it. Usually the suicide attempts are not serious, or are aborted at the last minute by other alters, as the client is not permitted to die until the group gives her permission. The risk of completed suicide is higher if the client is still in contact with the perpetrating group, and increases in this situation as she progresses in therapy, as she becomes less useful to the group and more of a security risk.

Another kind of self-punishment uses flashbacks of various parts of traumatic memories to cause extreme discomfort in the survivor. This includes physical pain,

flooding with emotions, hallucinatory flashbacks, memories of having to perpetrate, and disasters happening to the internal world (done by destroying the child's model of the "world" while the child is shaken, almost drowned, or blown around).

The most effective treatment for all kinds of self-punishment is to ask to talk to the alter who is inflicting the punishment, ask them why they are doing this, and then negotiate to get them to stop. If this alter is obeying someone else inside, you need to speak with the one giving them orders, and work your way up the hierarchy until you find someone who has authority and will cooperate with you.

Sometimes the internal events which cause flooding appear to the alters to be mechanistic. An alter "presses a button" inside, and the client immediately experiences a horrible ongoing noise, or a sensation of electric shock, or continuous flashbacks of some awful event. Mechanistic concepts can be countered with other mechanistic concepts. If there is a "wire" attached to the "button," have the client cut the wire. If an internal "tap" is "leaking," add some more plumbing and allow it to leak into a large sealed container.

4. Training Which Facilitates Continued Access by Perpetrators

In some cases, the survivor has alters who are continuing to be active in a local group without the knowledge of the host. With ritual abuse, there are alters who are supposed to attend rituals on specified dates. These include "Hallmark holidays," such as the survivor's own birthday, family birthdays and anniversaries, and Mother's Day. They also include occult holidays belonging to the group, such as full moons, blue moons, Satanic Revels, the Feast of the Beast, Beltane, Candlemas, and dates specific to various ethnic groups. Satanic groups of course celebrate Christmas and Easter with reversals of the Christian ceremonies, including the "black mass."

a. Training to Report Disclosures to the Perpetrators

Most survivors have alters whose jobs begin when the client talks to an outsider about her dissociative disorder or her abuse. They have to report to the group what she has disclosed, and to make her return for punishment and retraining. This is the kind of training which creates the most danger for the client, and it will "kick in" as soon as the client discloses anything of any significance. The alters who report are trained to believe that the group knows whatever they have said or done, so they are afraid they will be punished if they do not report. There may be a person who typically telephones the client, or who the client telephones for debriefing, immediately following a therapy session. Identifying who this is may help the client recognize who is and isn't safe.

In some cases the client is completely out of touch with the original perpetrators and does not know how to contact them; in other cases the host and other disloyal alters are strong enough to prevent group-loyal alters from acting on this training. But in many cases the host is unaware, and if the client's family members are among the perpetrators (which is often the case), the client is immediately endangered if she discloses anything significant in therapy. The "reporting" alters are supposed to telephone a group member, usually a family member, if the client discloses anything of significance. As the survivor moves to different locations around the country, her reporting training can be attached to specific individuals in each location to whom she must report. She is supposed to report any change of location. During the reporting phone call, the perpetrator calls out alters and gives them specific instructions, such as to come to a certain place or to attempt suicide. See the later section on "Maintaining the Client's Safety" for tips on how to deal with reporter alters.

b. Training to Return to the Perpetrating Group

Avoiding punishment is also a major theme in the training to return to the group. There are, however, other kinds of training to make the survivor return to the group. Positive reinforcement is used. A young alter is trained to come to a perpetrator who gives him ice cream or a toy. If he doesn't come or misses an event, he is told he missed some very special reward or pleasure. In ritually abusive groups some alters, usually those who have to harm others in rituals, are trained to return for rewards. These alters experience none of the abuse, and are rewarded with massage, drugs, pleasurable (often violent) sex, money, toys, and power (e.g., to decide who gets hurt). Sometimes they are told they don't belong to the same body as the alters who are harmed. The alters who are supposed to return for the survivor's personal birthday are often of this type. These alters really want to go back to the group, and this desire can only be stopped by showing them how they were tricked, and eventually having them feel the pain of what has happened to other alters at group events. Rewards are tailored to what the individual finds pleasurable. The reward aspect of the group often doesn't come out in therapy, because it can be very embarrassing for the survivor to talk about it, and because she feels great guilt for enjoying these things.

The groups also use the client's empathy and compassion to make her return. They tell the child that she has to return to save a younger sibling or friend from being killed. (This is even used to get a member to attend the murder of the person they want to save!) The alters who have this training will feel a desperate need to return to the group, feeling that something awful will happen to someone if they

don’t. This kind of threat is frequently made to ensure the obedience of survivors who are in therapy.

The reality is that people are tortured and sometimes killed at most cult ceremonies, not just ones that happen without the client present. If someone else is to be punished because of the client’s disobedience, it will only happen when the client is attending to watch and take part in the event. It will not happen if she is not there. Help your client realize the logic of this.

c. Training To Respond to Access Triggers

Even when the client is not returning to the group of her own free will, she may often continue to be accessed by the group (if it is local) because of other training. Most access training has specific auditory triggers, such as a certain number of rings on the phone, the honk of a car horn, or a beeping sound, or hand signals, words or touches. Young child alters are trained to answer the door or the phone through games and rewards. There may be special knocks or rings to indicate the call is for them. More violent groups may use electroshock and other punishments for not answering the phone, and may have “Satan” on the other end of the phone to enforce this. A series of beeps on the phone (made with a telephone keypad) may convey a message to a specific alter. Less sophisticated groups may make an alter deliberately addicted to narcotic drugs at age 9 or 10. This alter is conditioned to feel withdrawal and go outside at the sound of a car horn (or dog whistle, etc.) to get the drugs she needs. The group may then create a new addiction later in life to keep the client returning to them.

“Come when called” training involves punishment if the alter doesn’t come, and reward if she does: simple conditioning. Training to be unable to run from an approaching perpetrator is done with small doses of anesthetic, which makes the alter’s body feel so heavy she is unable to move.

In Satanic groups, alters are taught that the left side of the body is owned by Satan, and they must respond when he calls. During ceremonies a child is always tapped on the left shoulder when presented to the Master, who then places his hand on the left shoulder and gives commands. Because of this, for many survivors, a single touch on the left shoulder with the alter’s name is then enough to call out any alter. See the later section of this paper on “Deliberately Placed Triggers” for guidelines on when a therapist may use these touch triggers with a client.

During a recall, alters are interrogated for information about what they may have disclosed. Disobedient alters are punished by violence or rape, then sent away inside. Dormant alters who are “backups” for those who have become disobedient are activated and given the jobs of the punished alters, which they have already been taught. Recalls are horrible for a client, but can actually give a therapist clues

about what training the client has and which alters are involved in it. With one client who has constantly been harassed, each time I have found "new" alters it turns out that they have been activated by the perpetrating group and thus have become available to be found by the therapist.

5. Training to Disrupt Relationships

These groups want their victims to have relationships only with them, so there is training to undermine the survivor's relationships, especially with persons who could obtain hidden information or assist the survivor to become a "traitor." Some of this is general, and some of it is specific to relationships with such persons as physicians, therapists, police, and clergy. Some of the training involves harming or killing other people, so it can be dangerous. If the ritually abused client suddenly distrusts (or fears, or tries to seduce) her therapist or friend or physician with no apparent reason, this kind of training may be operating. For some survivors, the "off switch" for the training to interfere with any relationship is to hold the person's head and make it nod, then trace on their forehead the initial of the person they are to like or trust again.

Infants in cults are deliberately bonded to the group rather than to the mother. To break the maternal bond, the child is passed around between the group members. The child is taken out of the home, and can't see the mother except at a distance. It is teased by being shown the mother at a distance, and told "If she loved you, she'd be with you." The baby is made excited—"Mommy's coming." Then Mommy comes and walks right past. The length of time the baby is kept away from the home is how long it takes to break the bond with mother. So the child never really trusts the mother again. The bond is made deliberately in the first two weeks, with the mother and the trainer. Then later the one with the mother is broken. The trainer will always be the rescuer.

Persons the child might want to trust, such as non-offending parents, police, clergy, teachers, school counselors, therapists, and non-offending parents, are frequently impersonated by cult members who abuse the child.

If a child is being severely abused by a group, physicians are involved in the group to repair any physical damage. The group's doctor will ask the child what happened to her, then if she talks, will painfully rape and/or electroshock her, telling her that he doesn't believe her. Until these memories have been worked through, the survivor will resist medical exams after being abused in current life. Training not to trust police involves the child being called a perpetrator and put in a simulated jail where people in police uniforms or other "inmates" abuse her. In ritually abusive Satanic and occult groups, there is training against religion, including churches, ministers or pastors, and God. This training prevents the

survivor reaching out to more positive religious groups for help. “God” and “Jesus” are frequently impersonated in very unpleasant ways when the child is very young.

Training not to trust therapists often involves the child being called “crazy” and put in a simulated mental hospital where she receives electroshock and strong antipsychotic medicine. Children are also trained not to look at therapists by therapist impersonators putting on devil masks and horns while they abuse the child. The training not to look at a therapist sets the stage for impersonation of the survivor’s actual therapists in later life. Retraining of a client who is in therapy builds on the old training to interfere with relationships in therapy.

If the client is in current contact with the group, other behaviors may be triggered which disrupt therapy, such as falling asleep in session, or inability to speak. There are often alters who are trained to distract a therapist, so that he or she won’t get to the important information. These are often “cute” child alters. They can waste a lot of a therapist’s time. Others bring up current life issues. Watch for sudden changes of subject.

It takes time for an abused person to build trust, even when they have not been trained not to trust anyone and trained specifically not to trust therapists. Also, the client may well have been brought up with dissociative parents who change suddenly, so she will be expecting you to change as they do. The best antidote to the “Don’t Trust” training is to be consistent, keep good boundaries, and keep caring about your client. There is no substitute for time in building trust.

6. Training To Discredit the Survivor and/or Therapist

False Memories: Training involves a lot of trickery. For example, the child is led to believe she has witnessed the murder of someone she knows, who has actually moved to live somewhere else. Or she sees someone being killed (an unregistered child or a doll) but is drugged and confused, and believes it to be whoever the group tells her it is. Never be sure that what a client reports to you is what actually happened. Remember that you are dealing with memories of child alters, who under conditions of drugs, hypnosis and torture experienced events involving deliberate falsification.

Cover Memories: The group deliberately simulates impossible or highly unlikely things, such as an abduction by aliens, and instructs certain alters to make the survivor remember these events if s/he starts to remember other group events. The key to dealing with such memories is treat them like any other memory, and when you process the entire memory you will discover where the tricks existed. For example, one of my clients discovered the “alien spaceship” was entered through a door in the cult training centre.

7. Training to Perpetrate

All ritually abused children are forced to harm and even kill animals and other people, and all adults are expected to return to the cult and participate in rituals in which people are hurt and killed. Mothers are trained to abuse their own children in specific ways. Mind control groups similarly train alters to kill, in particular producing "programmed assassins." Pornography groups train children to sexually perpetrate, often in sadistic ways, on other children. In ritual groups, children are frequently made to stab victims while an adult holds their hand over the knife. The sacrifice may be actual or simulated, but the child believes it to be real.

One of the most difficult parts of work with survivors of such groups is working through the offender memories. What is appalling is the way in which offending groups will use the child's own empathy to teach her to offend. For example, a child refuses to kill a puppy and then sees someone kill a baby "because she refused to kill the puppy."

Perpetrator memories are real. Even if some of the murders are simulated rather than real, the survivor has had the experience of believing she was killing someone. For this reason, the guilt is real, and should not be minimized. It does help the survivor to discover the way in which she was trained to hurt and kill, so she realizes she did not just do it for the thrill of it. Often the alter who does these things is initially unaware that other people have feelings; once this alter has been through some memories of being hurt, she will develop empathy and will no longer be able to enjoy doing harm. It will take some time in therapy to work out ways to deal with the guilt, to experience forgiveness, and perhaps to forgive the offenders once the client recognizes she too is an offender.

8. Training for Discarded Survivors

At times a perpetrating group decides to discard an individual, often during adolescence. This may be because the person is too rebellious, or because she remembers too much of the abuse, or because she has gathered too much attention from therapists and agencies, or because her family is moving away from the perpetrators—or simply because her use by the group was time-limited, for example in child pornography. If a person is discarded, alters are given various trainings which will lead the person down a path of self-destruction. Trained alters are locked away in internal prisons, along with their memories. Alters destined for "real life" are trained in substance abuse and promiscuity. "Booby traps" of despair and suicidality are scheduled to go off a few years down the road. The person appears to choose a negative life path in her teens and to self-destruct, but it actually results from training by the perpetrator group, whose main concern is that the person not live long enough to remember and tell what has happened.

Part 3: Psychotherapy with Survivors

In general, therapy with survivors of abuse by organized abuse follows the same general principles as any therapy with dissociative disorders. I am not going to reiterate all the things we have learned about dissociative disorder treatment, but shall emphasize some which are especially important with this special kind of survivor.

It can seem overwhelming to the therapist to work with someone with so much trauma, and so much complicated training. Remember that each change, however, small, has an effect on the whole system and can make a real difference to someone who is experiencing intense suffering.

Stages of Psychotherapy

establishing safety and beginning rapport and trust

stabilization

establishing rapport with dominant alters

showing dominant alters how they've been deceived

working through obedience training memories

working through symptom-producing memories

teaching client to work through his/her own memories

developing a non-dissociative lifestyle

Stage 1: Establishing Trust and Safety

With this group, more than with other dissociative clients, there will be issues with trust and with safety. Much of what I have stated above describes why these issues exist. These clients have been taught as children that they can trust no one but the perpetrators. They have been taught that the perpetrators know everything they say and do, and that they will be destroyed if they talk. They have often been taught specifically that therapists will abuse them. They have often been taught to report their disclosures to representatives of the perpetrating groups.

With regard to trust, be patient. It takes time to convince survivors that you are not going to switch into another alter or ego state and abuse them next time they see you. It takes time to convince alters that you will not hurt them, as many of the alters have known nothing but abuse and betrayal. There is no substitute for time. Tell the client that you are not dissociative (if that's the case), and that there is no one else inside who you can switch to. They grew up with people who had many different ways of being. I cannot emphasize sufficiently the importance of

establishing sufficient trust before you attempt to work with the memories. Otherwise you will trigger trained alters to engage in punishment procedures or to contact the perpetrators.

It is important to note that this is long-term psychotherapy; it takes years, probably a minimum of five years, depending on the complexity of the system. It often takes two or more years to establish enough trust for the client to be able to disclose any important information. When a person's entire childhood has been filled with betrayal and deception, and she has been systematically coached to distrust people, this is not surprising.

Don't even take these clients on unless you can make a commitment for a period of several years. Funding should be available, or you should be prepared to do pro bono work for years after funding runs out. Not many people can afford ongoing psychotherapy for years.

Assessing the Client's Safety

With regard to the client's safety, it is important quite early in therapy to help the client assess her present safety. I remember my shock when my first three such clients, all at around the same time, discovered that they were still involved with the same perpetrating group!

I believe that a great many of the clients who have been deemed "unworkable" dissociative disorders, as well as those who recant and sue therapists, are organized abuse survivors who are being re-abused while in therapy. It is therefore of the utmost importance to make sure this doesn't happen. As soon as a client discloses organized abuse, ask the system whether any alters are still involved with the group. They may reply with finger signals so that the alter who lets you know is not identified by others in the system. Whether or not the client is still involved, therapeutic progress will be significantly impeded if she reports to the group on the content of the therapy sessions.

Maintaining the Client's Safety

The risk of reporting and returning is a very real one, and it exists from the start of therapy. It is of the utmost importance to disable the reporting before you begin talking about any memories.

If the client comes in announcing that they have been abused by an organized group, you may talk with them directly about reporting. Unfortunately, however, many clients come in without this awareness, and certainly without awareness of any current contact with the perpetrating group. In such a case you can perhaps emphasize two-way confidentiality—"What we do in therapy is private and

confidential; I don’t tell anyone about what we talk about, and I expect that no part of you will talk to anyone about it either.”

If the client is aware that she is dissociative and has been abused by an organized group, you may ask whether there are any reporters inside, and if so whether they still know how to do their jobs. (If the perpetrating group has moved away, they may not have anyone to contact, so the client will be safe). If there are active reporting alters who have someone in the outside world to report to, you need to speak with them. Ask them why the perpetrating group needs them to report if (as they believe) the group already knows what they would say. Explain that this is a trick, and that the only way the group knows what the person does or says is by the reporting. Assure her that you do care what happens to her, and that you don’t want her to get in trouble, but the way to avoid trouble is to stop reporting. If the client assures you there is no current contact, be cautious—the part of her speaking with you may just be unaware that the contact exists. Don’t you, the therapist, trust the client about this before the client trusts you enough to tell you the truth!

Ask her if she ever got in trouble before for something the group just seemed to know. If the answer is yes, tell her to “ask inside” about whether anyone inside told the group. The answer will again usually be yes. Other alters are not supposed to be aware of the reporters, and will be surprised that they exist. Once the client begins to question what the group told her, she may be willing to try disabling the reporting. Talk to the alters in charge of the system. (Don’t worry if they refuse to come “out”; they are always listening, so just talk to them anyway). Tell them that they need to prevent the reporters from reporting, so that the client won’t be harmed. You may suggest using existing training to put the reporters to sleep during therapy sessions or to make them forget the sessions. They may be able to substitute memories of previous insignificant therapy sessions in place of what really happened. One client of mine had the reporters report to the internal copies of the abusers rather than to the real people.

Remember that some alters return for rewards. Emphasize to them that there are rewards which the group cannot give: true love and friendship, and freedom. One integrated survivor wrote: “The good thing is that I now have freedom of body and soul. I cannot ever describe to you what a trapped soul feels like, but I can say this feels a hell of a lot better.” Ask the alters who get hurt to show those who return for rewards what the punishment feels like. It is better to traumatize these alters with memories than for the whole person to be re-traumatized with new instances of abuse.

In the long run, you need to get the client to share internally the memories regarding how she was trained to return, to report, and to give the group access to

her, so that all alters become aware of how she was deceived. Alters who believe the group knows everything need to be convinced that the group does not know everything. Alters who return to save someone need to learn that the group only hurts someone they love because they are present, and the person is less likely to be harmed if they don't return than if they do. Also that the group is unlikely to harm outsiders, although they frequently threaten to do so, and that the group rarely, if ever, kills people who have a known identity and connections in the outside world; they only kill unregistered children and vagrants—people who will not be discovered to be missing.

How do you get the client to the point of willingness to test the veracity of what they have always believed? It takes time to establish trust in the therapeutic relationship, and sometimes, particularly if there is reporting or current contact with the group, this time isn't available. You can suggest internal sharing—e.g., for alters who believe a particular deception practiced by the group to ask internally if anyone knows how it was done. Often there are other alters who have this information and can communicate it internally without anything being told to anyone in the outside world. Some clients have programmed barriers to internal communication; others don't.

Re-Establishing the Client's Safety

What actually happens when a survivor who has disclosed group secrets is re-contacted by the group? The survivor describes it as "getting into trouble." This means that as a minimum she is drugged, tortured, and raped. She may be forced to repeat her loyalty vows and to harm someone else to prove her loyalty. Various "lessons" she learned as a child will be repeated. In addition, alters will be commanded to carry out their jobs of self-harm, acting crazy, making the client ill, or anything else which will continue the punishment when the survivor is returned to real life. Disloyal alters may be replaced in their jobs with backups who are loyal to the group.

You can see that the access training is quite complex. It is usually held by child alters. It is important for the client's personality system to identify these alters and prevent them taking over the body until they no longer have to do their jobs. Access training is only a problem if the client is known to the local cult, which takes us back to disabling the reporting. I had a client who was not being harassed by the cult until she disclosed some of the abuse to her pastor (before I knew her), and an alter promptly did his job of reporting. She has been harassed ever since.

If your client is local, and the perpetrating group is still active, you could have a major problem with continued access. I do not have a "quick fix" for this problem. Just persist in therapy, process memories of any perpetrator re-contacts as

soon as they happen, and as soon as possible work through the memories of the access training so that the triggers will no longer work. I have seen the intensity of the re-contacts grow, as the client becomes increasingly disloyal to the group. They have progressed from reinforcing lessons when an alter returns voluntarily, to kidnapping her off the street and instructing her how to kill herself, to attempting to murder her and make it look like suicide. It is important to have safe police contacts in cases such as the latter, and to work through memories which prevent the client from talking to police. Do not assume that any police will necessarily be helpful; sometimes the police officers who volunteer to deal with this kind of case are those who have some involvement with the perpetrating group.

It's important for a therapist to be aware that he or she may be impersonated by a member of the perpetrating group, especially if the client is local. Some group members have alters trained to mimic and even believe they are other people who look somewhat like them, and these alters are used to impersonate current therapists and abuse drugged clients. It will be done in your office, if possible, and of course the perpetrating groups have locksmiths. A monitored alarm system is your best protection against it happening in your office, but does not prevent your office as well as you being simulated.

If your client suddenly becomes hostile or afraid of you or your office, suspect impersonation. If your client comes up with "memories" of seeing you when you are on holiday, or being abused by you, or having an argument with you—anything which you know did not happen—suspect that access is happening and you are being impersonated.

If you know that there is current group contact, have the client select something in your physical appearance, voice, or even odor, by which she will be able to recognize to tell you apart from the impersonator. Good therapeutic boundaries are also important in order to minimize the danger of the client believing that the impersonator is you. Tell the client that you will not call her at home unless you are returning her call, and that you will never just drop by her home. Do not give your client your home phone number, or you may find that alters trained to harass you may be calling at all hours of the night. If the client tries to seduce you, document it and tell a colleague immediately.

If your client has been abused by someone impersonating you, it is important to work through the memory as soon as possible; otherwise the client will continue to believe that you abused her, and may drop out of therapy or accuse you of abuse. If she is afraid to be alone with you, have her bring in a support person while the memory of the re-abuse is accessed.

Maintaining Your Own Safety

Do not believe threats made via the client regarding the physical safety of yourself or your family. Perpetrating groups rarely, if ever, physically harm therapists or their families. However, they may want to make the client believe that you will be harmed if she does not return. Tell her that is not the case, and work through the issue until she understands it. You may choose for your own safety to write down information you know about identities of perpetrators and actual crimes, and give it to a third party who is instructed to give it to the police and the press if anything happens to you. Then tell the client you have done that. She will send the message back to the group.

You are, however, much more at risk for complaints to your professional association and (particularly in the U.S.) lawsuits. Obviously you will abstain from leading questions. If you document what you have been told by the client, remember that you may never know what actually happened. Not everything the client remembers is literally true. These groups use trickery, stage magic, drugs and hypnosis to create memories of events which never happened as the child remembers them, including both possible and impossible events. It is possible to believe the child has been abused by such a group while not believing everything the client believes about what happened. It helps to ask alters to ask the rest of the system if they know what tricks were used. Often there are older alters who know the trickery behind the false memories, and can help the others see through it.

Many other experts, such as Alan Scheflin and Laura Brown, have given us detailed guidelines for protecting ourselves from false memory syndrome accusations. Follow their advice, and remember that FMS (false memory syndrome) accusations are much more common in cases of alleged ritual abuse than in cases of non-ritually created DID.

Stage 2: Stabilization

This stage takes as long as it takes. Establishing boundaries, working with medical personnel on medication and other health issues, and dealing with dramatic presenting problems such as self-injury and substance abuse belong to this stage. Often unstable behaviors result from premature disclosures of abuses which were supposed to be kept secret. Do not work on any memories until and unless the client is ready! Especially with clients abused by organized groups, premature memory work will only provoke destabilizing symptoms. Teach the client how to close down flashbacks, and do not ask her the content of them. Standard “safe place” work is very helpful, as well as teaching the client to deliberately dissociate unbearable feelings and flashbacks into some kind of internal container.

Stage 3: Establishing Rapport with Dominant Alters

Remember that the system of the survivor of organized abuse is a hierarchy. Before you can do effective work with it, you need to work your way up the system to speak with the alters at the top (or down to those at the bottom; sometimes Satanic systems have the authority at the bottom). These alters recognize authority and, paradoxically, like to be recognized as the authorities in the system. They are often quite lonely if they have been out of contact with the perpetrating group for some time. But they will not speak with you immediately. They will send you their minions, beginning with the lowest ranks. It is important to treat all presenting alters with kindness, compassion and respect, as those in charge are watching to see whether they can trust you. Don't spend a lot of time mapping out the alter system; it is likely to be very complex, and those in charge would be glad to waste your time doing this as then you will not get to the significant information. And don't spend a lot of time getting to know "Little Susie," as there may turn out to be dozens or even hundreds of child alters who can soak up your attention without the client improving significantly. Help them make friends inside, and teach the host and internal helpers how to meet their needs, so that you don't have to do this yourself.

Stage 4: Showing Dominant Alters How They Have Been Deceived

Tell the system throughout your work that the group to whom the hierarchy is loyal has deceived them and hurt them. Then dialogue with them about how this has happened, asking them to ask other parts of the system to show them what has been done. The alters at the top have the power to make the others give them information, and they will be surprised, shocked, and saddened at the kind of information they get! They often think they have not been abused, sometimes because they believe they have different bodies. It is quite a shock to them to learn how they were created.

Recognize how difficult it is for alters who have been raised in such a group to leave it. It has been their community, it usually includes their family, and many of them have been rewarded well for their loyalty without being abused. Their entire support system is being abandoned! If they are from a ritually abusing group, it is also their religion. Some cult groups have a very strong belief in magik. It is an actual religion, and you are not going to just get rid of ingrained beliefs overnight. Satanism is just as powerful an upbringing as, for example, Catholicism. Satanic beliefs teach the individual that she is powerful, and in therapy she may feel she has lost all her power and become depressed. If someone has spent her entire upbringing learning that Satan or Lucifer will reward her for being "good" and

punish her for being “bad” (disobedient), it will take quite a while to remove this conditioning. Many therapists ignore the religion and magik, but it cannot be ignored, any more than any other important aspect of the training. Leaving it out is like removing only part of a cancerous tumor; it will eventually grow back and spread its infection throughout the system.

Stage 5: Working Through Obedience and Loyalty Training Memories

Once you have the trust of the alters in charge of the system, you begin memory work systematically, starting with their memories of being trained in obedience and loyalty.

Example

One client I have been working with for a few months had been to two other therapists. She told me that she had a personality system divided into left and right sides, and headed on the left side (deliberately structured by her Satanist abusers) by several alters named “Satan,” a copy of her mother, and a High Priestess. Although the previous therapists believed in DID and in organized abuse, they tended to side with the host and the frightened “right side” alters against the left side. The host acquired considerable strength, and was able to prevent the left side alters from returning to the abusers, who lived far away. But the system was divided against itself and was not getting better. One previous therapist had feared the left side alters and eventually fired the client because she believed she had been poisoned by some ritual abuse survivor, so the client’s belief that therapists would reject her came true. The next therapist was a psychiatrist who used medication to stabilize self-harm incidents and depression but did not work with the personality system. When the child alters began flooding with abuse memories, she suggested the host listen to these memories, which would have made things worse.

This client was aware of the nature of her abuse, but did not know what to do except continue her internal conflict. I told her I wanted to work with the alters on the left side, since no one else had. I established that the client was currently safe, and I asked the system head (via the presenting alter) to hold off on reporting for some time, promising that they would not be harmed and the group would not know what they were disclosing. I began gradually to talk with the lowest-ranked ones, who were soldiers. They expressed their distrust of all therapists, and I sympathized with them, encouraged them to test me out, and told them they had been deceived about the nature of the group they worked for. When they doubted this, I asked them to ask other alters about the kind of things the group had done to them. They expressed concern that Satan’s eyes were always watching them; I

asked if anyone else inside could show them the trickery involved in this, and they discovered that it was flashlights!

Gradually I moved up the hierarchy, as each layer became convinced that perhaps I could help them, so the next layer came to talk to me to tell me to stop interfering. I worked my way up to the Satans, who were all afraid of Satan 6. When I met Satan 6, he was a frightened pain holder who gave his pain to others who were disobedient; I let the other Satans know. Next I encountered the Mother, who also turned out to be a pain holder, and shared the memory of her pain with the Satans. Then came the High Priestess, who was boastful about her power. While she was talking to me she became increasingly drugged, and we discovered that another alter, the Druggist, was punishing her with drugs because she was talking. She was shocked at having been deceived into thinking she was the system head when another alter had control of her. We then worked through the memory of the Druggist's basic training. After this I took a holiday, and the system became afraid that I would leave them and/or tell the perpetrators. We processed the memory of an extreme punishment of child alters for telling a teacher that "stuff happened" at home. I ran into resistance, and discovered that rather than the high priestess I'd worked with being in charge of the personality system, there were nine layers, each headed by a high priestess. So I went directly to High Priestess 9, who had authority over all layers, and helped her see how she had been deceived. Once we had worked through her basic training memories she was able to convince the rest of the system to cooperate in working through the memories and getting free.

Stage 6: Working Through Symptom-producing Memories

This is a continuation of the memory work phase of therapy, with memories of training and abuse being processed systematically with the aid of the internal recorders in selecting the memories which jeopardize the client's safety or cause significant distress.

Memory Work That Works

Here's a summary of how I work with memories in a survivor of organized abuse: First, I do not work with flashbacks. A flashback is a repetitive loop which re-abuses the client rather than helping her. I prefer to use a carefully controlled memory reconstitution process. In my experience, flashbacks are partially remembered memories trying unsuccessfully to complete themselves, usually because one or more alters don't want to remember. I do not "chase flashbacks," but instead teach the client how to close them down and store the memories for

future work. I ask the recorder alters to select the memories that are crucial to making the client safe and competent, and we go through them systematically.

I do not attempt to process any memory until and unless all alters involved in that memory are in agreement with the process and willing to go ahead. This is crucial. I've frequently had the experience of one alter holding back a little tiny portion of a memory, and the flashbacks increased. However, if all alters put in their parts, the memory is resolved, and becomes just "something that happened" that is part of knowledge rather than being continuously relived. With survivors of organized abuse, alters who have parts of the same training memory are often deliberately placed in different places in the system structure in order that they cannot work through that memory. The observer/recorder alters know how to find them, and usually have a record of which alters are in each memory. Recycler alters must also be included, to put in their parts; they have been deliberately instructed to hold these back so that memory work cannot destroy the effects of training. (In cases of spontaneous abuse, ongoing flashbacks are also often caused by some small dissociated part of the memory making it impossible to complete processing).

I titrate the memory. Begin by dissociating feelings, physical pain, drugs, and anything else which might be disturbing into an imaginary container. Then all involved alters (the host doesn't have to be there) "watch and listen to the video." Make sure the soundtrack is present; some organized abusers actually instruct alters to hide the soundtrack, and if it's hidden the memory won't be resolved. Find the alters who have the soundtrack if it's missing. Also make sure the memory starts at the beginning, in "normal" life, and goes to the end, again in "normal" life; don't start in the middle of trauma. And include the recovery period if there is severe physical damage.

After the client goes through the video, hopefully narrating as she goes, I have her repeat the process on fast-forward as many times as is necessary to add the feelings (physical and emotional) a bit at a time. When all feelings have been added, I instruct the client to put the memory into a container. I say: "Put in everything you saw, everything you heard, everything you tasted or smelled, everything you felt in any part of your body, and everything you felt in any part of your feelings." I say this very slowly, and sometimes elaborate on parts of it, depending on the memory, e.g., "all the sounds, all the words, all the screams, all the drugs, all the singing…"

At the end I have a symbolic cleansing from any remaining feelings from the memory (e.g., in a waterfall or a stream of light). During this process I invite any parts (alters) who no longer need to remain separate to enter the stream and allow it to wash away the barriers between them. Alters integrate naturally at this time.

At the end, I leave sufficient time for cognitive and emotional processing of the implications of the memory. A complete memory processing including this takes about two hours with most clients. If the client's appointment is too short for this, I will alternate memory work sessions with cognitive sessions.

Special Issues in Memory Processing

a) Incidental Training—Incidental training happens by accident. For instance in the middle of a training session, someone turns on a radio, or a car horn honks outside. This ends up integrated into the training session, but is often forgotten or left out while trying to break down a program, and the therapist can't figure out why things just aren't working. Incidental training is often not even in the room with a person. It is the white noise in the background that most people don't even notice, because they are too busy concentrating on what's happening in the room with them. Incidental training must also be included in the memory work.

b) Infant Memories A lot of the abuse in multi-generational groups or by mind control agencies starts in babyhood, when the first alters are deliberately split off. There will be baby alters inside the survivor who hold infant memories of this abuse. The memories will not be experienced as logical narratives, but as physical and emotional sensations. There will also be infant memories of neglect, spinning, and other unpleasant experiences, some of them deliberately induced, and some of them just random abuse which tends to happen in dysfunctional families. Parents in cult families are instructed how to hurt the child (as punishment for such behaviors as crying) without marking it, e.g., putting the child's hand over radiant heat, or burning internally with a tiny probe. They also have to gradually increase a girl baby's vaginal opening (and every baby's anus) with fingers and dildos. It is impossible for a survivor of this kind of early abuse to completely integrate without working through the infant memories.

By locating the infant alters, and having other alters assist them in letting their memories flow, infant memories can be worked through. A survivor and former trainer who worked through her infant memories wrote "Baby memories are iffy at best. Because they occur when you are at a place when life is still a complete mystery, it is best to just take what you see as real. When traveling back to baby years, don't try to understand, just experience, and let it go. These are the hardest to get at, but the easiest to let go of. You have no verbal way of explaining what you feel or go through. It is stupid to try to get the person to talk about what they felt or saw, because it is impossible to really verbalize the experience. Besides, it wastes a large amount of time trying to put it into words. Processing these memories is essential for total integration, but it is something that can be done very quickly if you just let the person do it without verbal interference. Baby memories phase in

and out because babies phase in and out during the experience. They are not like a five-year-old who remembers hours of torture. Babies only take in small parts of memories. That's why trainers for babies use short quick things, rather than long drawn out things. What takes a five year old 24 hours to break only takes a baby a few minutes."

Stage 7: Teaching the Client to Work Through Her Own Memories

These survivors have experienced a horrendous amount of abuse, and if every abuse memory had to be worked through with the therapist, it would take forever. Memories of the same type can be processed in extended sessions with several memories at once. Memories which are not too complex or difficult can be processed by the client alone, once she has got the hang of it. Alters participating in the memory may have to regress, but other alters can monitor their progress and bring them out of the memory when it is completed, either by doing something internally or by performing some outward action such as ringing a bell. Or the survivor can set an alarm to startle them back to consciousness after a specific period of time. Of course, not all survivors will choose to work through all their memories and integrate. But if they choose not to, survivors of organized abuse may well be vulnerable to re-contact by a perpetrating group.

Stage 8: Developing a Non-Dissociative Lifestyle

This is the essence of post-integration therapy. It also occurs prior to integration, when the alters are becoming increasingly co-conscious. The client needs to live as a complex person in the world, experiencing ambivalence and making decisions by weighing all alternatives. Don't forget that survivors are people with lives outside the group that must also be dealt with. They have to hold jobs, or go home to abusive spouses, or find ways to feed their children. They need to learn skills to cope with everyday life and relationships, skills they may not have developed because of dissociation. This is a very challenging population. We need to understand the kind of training experiences they have been through and the way their personality systems work, and tailor work to their specific needs.

References

Andrews, B., Morton, J., Bekerian, D.A., Brewin, C.R., Davies, G.M., & Mollon, P. (1995). The recovery of memories in clinical practice: Experiences and beliefs of British Psychological Society practitioners. *The Psychologist*, pp. 209–214.

Becker, T. & Coleman, J. (1999). *Ritual abuse: A European cross-country perspective.* Presented at 1999 International Spring Conference of ISSD, Manchester, U.K.

Biola University. (1992). *Journal of Psychology and Theology,* Special Issue: Satanic ritual abuse : The current state of knowledge. 20 (3).

Brown, D. (1996). *Satanic ritual abuse: A therapist's handbook.* Utah: Blue Moon Press.

Brown, D., Scheflin, A. W. & Hammond, D. C. (1998). *Memory, trauma, treatment, and the law.* New York & London: Norton.

Faller, K. C. (1994). Ritual abuse: A review of the research. *APSAC Advisor,* 7 (1), 19–27.

Fraser, G. (1997). *The dilemma of ritual abuse: Cautions and guides for therapists.* Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press

Miller, A. (1998). Treatment of a young female pedophilic offender with dissociative identity disorder. *Treating Abuse Today,* 8 (2), 15–23.

Neswald, D. W., Gould, C., & Graham-Costain, V. (1991). Common 'programs' observed in survivors of satanic ritual abuse. *The California Therapist,* Sept.–Oct. 1991.

Neswald, D. W. & Gould, C. (1992). Basic treatment and program neutralization strategies of adult multiple personality disorder survivors of satanic ritual abuse. *Treating Abuse Today,* 2 (3), pp. 5-10.

Noblitt, J. R. & Perskin, P. (1995). *Cult and ritual abuse: Its history, anthropology and recent discovery in contemporary America.* Westport, CT: Praeger Publishers

Noblitt, J. R. (1998). *Accessing dissociated mental states.* Privately published monograph.

Oksana, C. (1994). *Safe passage to healing: a guide for survivors of ritual abuse.* New York: Harper Perennial.

Perry, N.E. (1992). *Therapists' experience of the effects of working with dissociative patients.* Paper presented at the 9th Annual Meeting of the International Society for the Study of Multiple Personality and Dissociation, Chicago.

Ross, Colin. (2000). *Bluebird: Deliberate creation of multiple personality by psychiatrists.* Richardson, TX: Manitou Communications.

Sakheim, D.K.& Devine, S. F. (Eds.)(1992). *Out of darkness: Exploring satanism and ritual abuse.* New York: Lexington Books/Macmillan

Sinason, Valerie., 1994. *Treating survivors of satanic abuse.* London: Routledge

Smith, M. (1993). *Ritual abuse: What it is, why it happens, how to help.* San Francisco: Harper

Van der Hart, O. & Nijenhuis, E. (1999). Bearing witness to uncorroborated trauma: The clinician's development of reflexive belief. *Professional Psychology: Research and Practice, 50* (1), 37–44.

CHAPTER 18

Ritual Abuse Survivors: Diverse, Yet Similar

Jean M. Riseman

I'm a survivor of ritual abuse and early mind control experimentation. I'm also an unlikely activist: a shy, insecure woman raised to live my life politely and inconspicuously. This is both because girls raised in the 1940's and 1950's were supposed to grow up to live in men's shadows and because families that practice ritual abuse do not like to have attention directed toward them. However, I opened my mouth in outrage the day after my first flashback and I haven't shut it since.

Because of my activism, I must have had contact with well over a thousand survivors of ritual abuse over the past fifteen years. Sometimes it was a brief contact by e-mail or at a conference; sometimes it turned into a friendship that has lasted for years. My motivation wasn't to help people, although that was wonderful when it happened. I reached out to others to feel less crazy, to be among people who had seen what I had seen, felt what I felt, knew what I knew. For the first time in my life I felt like a human being, not some mutant alien from outer space. I belonged somewhere, and it was glorious.

Because of the number of survivors I have met and the range of different settings I have met them in, I feel I have a pretty good overview of what survivors have lived through and of their present-day lives. The people I have met are in no way a random sample of adults who have suffered ritual abuse. I have never met any of the large number of people who do not remember their abuse, remember their abuse but have not put a name to it, do not know how to contact others who have lived through ritual abuse, or are too frightened to reach out to others. I have met very, very few people who I suspected were still cult-active and none that would admit it. So I form my impressions only from those who are brave enough to face their pasts and resilient enough to name themselves survivors.

Most people, if they have even heard of ritual abuse, believe that they don't know anybody who has experienced it because it's so rare and exotic. Sometimes they truly don't. More often, they probably do, but they don't know it. Unfortunately ritual abuse is not really rare and exotic; it's just well hidden. My

best guess is that perhaps 0.5% percent of the population of the United States and Canada have been ritually abused. I don't know about other countries and I can't back this up with documentation because people who ritually abuse children don't leave paper trails. If this figure seems outrageously high, remember that fifty years ago experts believed that incest occurred in only one or two out of a million families.

Demographics

Caryn StarDancer of Survivorship, a non-profit organization that supports ritual abuse survivors and their allies, did a survey asking people about the ideologies under which they had been abused (StarDancer, 1994) It yielded 506 responses. People reported being abused in every state in the United States, and in rural areas, small towns, and cities across the United States and Canada. There were also reports of abuse in Argentina, Austria, Brazil, Denmark, Ecuador, England, Germany, Guatemala, Iceland, Japan, Mexico, The Netherlands, Paraguay, Puerto Rico, Turkey, St. Kitts, and Scotland. The ideology most cited was satanism, followed by Christianity and paganism. This may be misleading, as satanism inverts both paganism and Christianity, and it was impossible to tell if people were describing satanism in more detail or were abused in a separate Christian or pagan cult. The next most cited was ritual abuse. Other ideologies reported were: government/military; Masonic; Nazi; neo-Nazi; White supremacist groups; Catholicism; Afro-Caribbean religions; and organized crime, including child prostitution and pornography. Since Survivorship's membership was predominantly American and Canadian, Asian, African, and Afro-Caribbean ideologies were probably under-represented. Ritual abuse, in one form or another, occurs everywhere.

So what do we ritual abuse survivors look like? Most striking, we are at least 80% female. Roughly equal numbers of boys and girls are born into ritually abusing families, but far more women identify as survivors who have remembered their upbringing and rejected it. This is probably due to an interplay of factors within the cults and within society as a whole. Boys are raised differently in cults and men hold the majority of positions of power. It would make sense that men might find it harder to leave. And women are more likely to seek mental health services or self-help groups than men, who find it harder to ask for help and to say that they are depressed or anxious.

Survivorship conducted a smaller survey (Riseman, 2004) comparing the brothers and sisters of survivors. Data was collected on 27 men and 48 women. It suggested that men born into cults are not dead, in prison, or in the armed forces.

On the contrary, they are more likely to be employed, more likely to be married, and no more likely than women to suffer from addictions. They are, however, far less likely to identify themselves as survivors. Whether this is because they are still cult active, whether they haven't remembered their abuse, or whether they know about it but keep it to themselves, we don't know.

The survivor community is also predominantly white. Some people assume that satanism is confined to people of European descent, but almost all the people of color I have met were abused under satanism. The very first survivor I met, three weeks after I realized what my background was, was black and came from a recently formed inter-racial branch of satanism. I've met people from Central America and Mexico whose parents were satanists and it appears that satanism was introduced into the Native American population through the boarding schools. My guess is that if survivors who are people of color weren't put off by the homogeneity of the survivor community we would not think of satanism as a White phenomenon.

As a rule, we appear to be middle class. We are well educated, and those with working class parents are usually upwardly mobile. Survivors tend to be highly intelligent; our I.Q. bell curve seems to be displaced upwards by about fifteen to twenty points. Some believe that the cults selectively breed for intelligence; others believe that only the highly intelligent survive their childhoods. I don't know what the reason is, but as a group we are bright and creative. Despite intelligence and talents, many, many survivors are impoverished due to the aftereffects of childhood torture and to present-day harassment. Many people are forced to apply for disability, especially in the early years of their recovery when they are flooded by flashbacks. Others continue to work, but have trouble keeping jobs, are under-employed, or employed part-time. It's very hard to hold down a good job if you never know when you are going to switch into a child alter or if the sight of your employer triggers images of your abuser. Those who are stalked by their perpetrators move often and lead lives of extraordinarily high stress, which also leads to under-employment Types of Abuse

Most ritual abuse is perpetrated in the name of some ideology, with the aim of making the child believe in and adhere to that ideology. As the Survivorship survey indicates, the most common ideology used in the United States and Canada is satanism. Children are abused in order to teach them to be "good little satanists" and loyal members of the group, as well as for the perverse pleasure of the adults. There are also cruel, inverted forms of Mormonism, Catholicism, other denominations of Christianity, Judaism, and various forms of paganism. Any religion can be subverted in this way. Afro-Caribbean religions sometimes use

children (and adults) abusively in certain black magic rites, but they generally don't have a codified inverted religion (Kail, 2004). Non-religious ideologies that sometimes employ ritual abuse include White supremacy, some neo-Nazi groups, fraternal organizations, and subsets of government and military agencies. (Multiplicity and amnesia can be exploited and manipulated for the creation of spies, couriers, and people used unknowingly in a whole range of "black ops.") A few groups don't have any ideology except hedonism in the form of pedophilia and sadomasochism. They do many of the things that ideological groups do, but they seem to do it just for the sake of doing it or to make money from pornography, prostitution, and blackmail. There is a tremendous amount of money to be made in child pornography and prostitution, and this illegal market is growing, thanks to marketing on the Internet.

The question arises: do these groups really believe the ideology, or do they cynically use it to frighten and control the children? My feeling is that there is a spectrum, with people who believe deeply on one end and those who just go through the motions for their own benefit on the other. In either case, it has the same effect on the children, who do believe what they are told.Most ritual abuse survivors report being abused by their biological or adopted families and by groups that their families belong to. A smaller number were abused in daycare settings, boarding schools, hospitals, or by neighbors. Almost all the people I have met who were recruited into cults as teenagers subsequently recalled being abused as children. It's almost as if they were rebelling, but not straying too far from the beliefs that were instilled in them as children.

Details of the abuse vary from group to group, but general categories of abuse are extremely consistent across groups. Ritual abuse always involves severe (to the point of torture), repeated, systematic, physical abuse. In practically all cases it also involves child sexual abuse. It almost always occurs on particular dates that are important to the group and in a fixed, proscribed manner consistent with the group's ideology. Children are trained in developmentally appropriate ways to conform to group mores and they progress though this training in stages. Since children are expected to become abusing members of the groups when adults, the training focuses on harming others physically and sexually. This instills an unbearable burden of guilt in the children.

Almost all survivors report the torture and sacrifice of animals, either ritually or for training purposes. Often the children are allowed to have pets and to become close to them; they are then forced to watch their pet being sacrificed or made to kill the animal themselves. Often the blood of sacrifices is drunk or the flesh eaten raw. Many people report having witnessed or participated in the abortion of fetuses

and the murder of babies, older children, and adults. The human bodies are treated as the animal sacrifices.

There is controversy over how often human sacrifices occur. My intuition tells me that sometimes children are deceived into believing a murder occurred when it did not. The impact on the child, of course, is the same, whether it was an actual or staged murder. Other times undocumented people are killed or the murder is hidden with a false death certificate. *Satan's High Priest* (Spencer, 1997) describes how this can take place.

Certain groups employ very sophisticated methods of torture using the latest technologies. As there is considerable overlap between groups, knowledge of these methods gets passed along. Electroshock is commonly used, as are interrogation methods developed to obtain information from prisoners of war. Classic methods include sleep deprivation, withholding food and water, confinement for long period of time in small, dark spaces, and the use of various drugs.

Survivors who report having been abused in government/military settings or used in medial experimentation describe the most extreme and bizarre methods of torture. It appears that at times the goal is to study the effects of cutting-edge technology on humans and that at other times the technology is used as a training/torture tool. Several decades ago, survivors were reporting the use of non-lethal weapons that the public is only now learning about. Some also report being used in ESP experiments (e.g., remote viewing), radiation experiments, and in a continuation of experiments performed in the Nazi concentration camps.

It is really chilling to hear similar stories from people who have never met and who came from different geographic areas, sometimes thousands of miles apart. I used to think that ritual abuse was conducted by isolated groups of deviants, but I can no longer sustain that wishful belief. It is also chilling in a different way to learn of two people who were abused by the same group as children, are separated, and who meet as adults and confirm each other's memories.

Effects of Ritual Abuse

The two most prominent results of ritual abuse are a profound, abiding sense of guilt and extremely disturbed self-image. Survivors have been brainwashed from a very early age to believe that they are evil to the core and that there is nothing they can do to change. They feel that what they have endured was their fault, and that they deserved it because they were innately bad. They feel responsible not only for what they were forced to do, but for what they witnessed and were not able to prevent. They feel omnipotent and totally powerless at the same time: omnipotent, because they were taught that all the horrible things that happened were their fault

and powerless, because they were, in fact, unable to escape or stop the atrocities. They feel broken, defective, and different from others. They do not value, or even recognize, their own strength and talents and they have a great deal of trouble trusting themselves or others. Why should they? All their early experiences showed them that trust was totally misplaced.

Some children react by trying to be as compliant as possible and developing an acceptable social façade. These children grow up to be over-achievers, getting good marks in school and blending into society. Inside, they are bewildered and terrified of being found out. Others react by "acting out" and getting into constant trouble. At least their experience is congruent; they are out of control in the abusive setting and out of control in society. Neither group can articulate their feelings, describe what is happening to them, or elicit help.

With the depth of pain survivors carry inside, it is little wonder that addictions are common in this group. Many were given drugs or alcohol as part of the abuse. Many report extremely bizarre eating experiences within the abusive setting. Survivorship found that 68% of survey respondents suffered from eating disorders (Riseman, 2002). Addictions serve to create an effective distraction from the past as well as to temporarily dull the pain.

Severe childhood abuse sets people up for health problems later in life. The immune system seems especially sensitive to trauma early in life and physical injuries lead to arthritis and other long-term consequences. Chronic fatigue syndrome, fibromyalgia, allergies, and chemical sensitivity seem to be common among ritual abuse survivors, as well, of course, as depression and anxiety disorders. Most survivors, at some point in their adult lives (if not for all their lives), suffer the symptoms of post-traumatic stress disorder, with flashbacks, intrusive thoughts, and hyper-reactivity.

Dissociation, the ability to separate parts of an experience and separate oneself from the experience, is universal. Dissociation is a natural, adaptive reaction to overwhelming stress, and allows one to survive at the time. When a child is forced to dissociate repeatedly, it becomes a dominant mental and emotional mechanism. Later on in life, any event, stressful or not, is experienced through the lens of dissociation.

Like dissociation, amnesia is practically universal among ritual abuse survivors. The horrendous experiences are repressed or tucked away in a suppressed alter and are no longer consciously available in everyday life. And like dissociation, amnesia generalizes to situations that are not life threatening. After a short period of time, for example, I can no longer remember if I paid my taxes or ate breakfast today, nor can I remember people I just met. The information is just gone; where, I do not know, but I do know it's inaccessible to me.

Ritually abusive groups cultivate dissociation and forgetting. Children are told, “This did not happen,” “This happened to somebody else, not you,” “That was a dream,” or “Remember to forget this.” What you can’t remember can’t be revealed, and the group’s secrecy is preserved. The stereotype is that all ritual abuse survivors are classic multiples, with Eve of *Three Faces of Eve* being the model. They supposedly have a small number of alternate personalities, or alters, who lead separate lives and who don’t know about each other. There is a host alter, usually a conservative law-abiding citizen, a more impulsive, often sexualized alter, and perhaps a couple of child alters. In reality, very few of us fit that stereotype.

Most survivors who consider themselves multiple have dozens or even hundreds of parts, some more fully formed than others. These parts are different ages, have different characteristics and functions, and some may be of different genders or sexual orientations. Some parts may even be animals or inanimate objects. They are organized into an internal society with its own rules of interaction. Often, there is an internal landscape, or several of them, which the alters inhabit. The internal organization differs markedly from person to person. I’ve never met two people who had exactly the same internal organization, although some features, such as meadows or certain geometric shapes, show up frequently.

Sometimes there are strong amnestic barriers that separate alters: for instance, two alters may know nothing whatsoever about each other, not even that the other one exists. Sometimes the amnestic barriers aren’t as strong, and alters have a vague sense of each other. Sometimes the barriers become stronger and weaker, or even disappear for a while. In this case, alters will know all about each other at one point in time and have no idea the other one exists at another time. You can see why the *Three Faces of Eve* model doesn’t always fit very well.

If there are no amnestic barriers at all between alters they are said to be co-conscious. There are often clear rules about what parts are allowed to be co-conscious under what conditions. I have three or four groups of parts who drive, for example. Each member of a group is very tuned into the other members, but only when busy driving. Otherwise they are separate and unaware. Each group is vaguely aware of the other groups but not in touch with them. And each group is aware of other parts of me that might be around when I’m driving, parts that daydream or listen to the radio.

In the driving example, alters are defined by the task they do in the every-day world. Alters can also be defined by a cult-assigned task, or by a particular emotion, or by a relationship to a person or institution. The memory of the abuse is often distributed among those alters who were formed or present when the abuse occurred. Amnesia for the abuse disappears if these alters become co-conscious

with alters that are normally present. The *Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of the American Psychiatric Association, Fourth Edition, Text Revision* (DSM-IV-TR, 2002) defines Dissociative Identity Disorder (DID) (300.14) as A. The presence of two or more distinct identities or personality states. B. At least two of these identities or personality states recurrently take control of the person's behavior. C. Inability to recall important personal information that is too extensive to be explained by ordinary forgetfulness" (p. 526–529). This definition is broad enough to include people with only two alters and those with thousands, commonly called polyfragmented multiples. Ritual abuse survivors who don't see themselves as multiple often say, "Oh, I am DDNOS (Dissociative Disorder Not Otherwise Specified)." Actually, they may fit better under the category of Dissociative Amnesia (300.12), which is defined as: "The predominant disturbance is one or more episodes of inability to recall important personal information, usually of a traumatic or stressful nature, that is too extensive to be explained by ordinary forgetfulness" (p. 5520-523). I've met a couple of people who thought they remembered all their abuse, but found that they had, indeed, forgotten whole segments of it. The only people I have met or heard of (and there were extremely few) who had continuous complete memory of their experiences came to ritual abuse as adults. It seems that it is just too horrendous for a child to hold in the mind.

The definition of DDNOS (300.15) starts off sounding like a variant of DID: "1. Clinical presentations similar to Dissociative Identity Disorder that fail to meet full criteria for this disorder. Examples include presentations in which a) there are not two or more distinct personality states, or b) amnesia for important personal information does not occur." It also includes "2. Derealization unaccompanied by depersonalization in adults. 3. States of dissociation that occur in individuals who have been subjected to periods of prolonged and intense coercive persuasion (e.g., brainwashing, thought reform, or indoctrination while captive). 4. Dissociative trance disorder: single or episodic disturbances in the state of consciousness, identity, or memory that are indigenous to particular locations and cultures (Possession states)" (DSM-IV, 2002, pp. 532-533). While these definitions apply to many survivors, they don't adequately describe the most salient features of our internal lives, the compartmentalization and fragmentation that severe trauma causes.

Why is there such diversity among internal systems? Nature and nurture, if you can call it nurture. Children inherit temperament and intelligence, and they also inherit the propensity to dissociate to various degrees. Some children who are raised without abuse are more present, more in-the-moment, while others are more day-dreamy and drifty. Chances are a child who innately dissociates easily will

develop alters sooner while being abused and will develop more alters over-all. Children who are creative and imaginative may well create unusual alters and their alters may have a vividness and richness that alters of less imaginative children lack.

The alters that traumatized children spontaneously create are, of course, shaped by the culture they live in. An American child isn't going to create a Santa Claus-type alter with the Dutch name Sinter Klaus, for example. The model for the alter must come from the child's environment. If the child's environment includes satanism or Santeria, you would expect to find some alters modeled on figures or ideas that are prominent in those belief systems. Adult perpetrators also shape alters, more or less on purpose. They may call a child by different names in situations where they expect different types of behavior. "Princess," "Gypsy Rose," or "Evil Bitch" may be the names of alters with very specific roles to fulfill.

In the type of abuse that survivors generally call "mind control," the adults spend a great deal of time and energy in shaping alters and arranging them internally. The resulting systems can look like elaborate video games. Corydon Hammond described one such system based on the Kabala (1994), Hilgers and Monday (1994) described carousels, matrixes, and castles, and I've described geometric shapes (Riseman, 2002). Some survivors of mind control experimentation have several such complicated systems, layered one upon the other. They are designed to contain specially trained alters who can only be summoned by a special code known only to a few people.

Conclusion

There are so many unanswered questions about ritual abuse and ritual abuse survivors. Historical and social questions—How far back in time do these groups go? Which groups interacted with other groups and how did they influence them? How much cooperation, communication and networking is there between groups? How much competition? Psychological questions—Why do some people become multiple and others not? Where is repressed information held, if not in an alter? Why do some people remember and others don't? Why do some people turn their backs on their abusers, while others grow up to join them? What factors determine whether a survivor suicides?Recovery questions—What is the most effective way of dealing with complex programming? Are there general principles of therapy that apply across this population? How can a therapist encourage trust, often for the first time in a survivor's life? How can a survivor tell if he or she is in flashback or not?

These questions, and hundreds of others, beg to be asked and answered through research. I know from experience that ritual abuse survivors are generous with the information they have and eager to teach the world about their experiences. What is needed are investigators who are generous with their time and curiosity and organizations that are generous with financial and concrete support. There is much to be learned about the extremes of human resilience, creativity, courage, and kindness from survivors, as well as much about the extremes of human cruelty.

References

American Psychiatric Association (2002). *Diagnostic and statistical manual of mental disorders*, 4th Edition, Text Revision (DSM-IV-TR). Washington, DC: Author

Hammond, D. C. (1992) Hypnosis in MPD: Ritual abuse. Paper presented June 25, 1992, at the Fourth Annual Eastern Regional Conference on Abuse and Multiple Personality, Alexandria, Virginia. Retrieved 04/04/05 from http://web.archive.org web/19961222221656/http://www.europa.com/~johnlf/sat/grnbaum.txt.

Hilgers, D. & Monday, P. (1994). Recognizing and classifying programming. Retrieved 04/04/05 from http://www.iccrt.org/articles.asp?article=4.

Kail, T. (2004). An over-view of Afro-Caribbean religions. *Survivorship* 12(2).

Riseman, J. (2002) Simplifying complex programming. Paper presented August 10, 2002 at S.M.A.R.T.'s Fifth Annual Ritual Abuse, Secretive Organizations and Mind Control Conference.Windsor Locks, CT. Retrieved 04/04/05 from http://www.survivorship.org/programming.html.

Riseman, J. (2004). Where the men are. *Survivorship* 12(3).

Spencer, J. (1997). *Satan's high priest: A true story.* Pocket Books, NY, NY.

StarDancer, C. (1994). Demographic survey: Diagnosis and dogma. *Survivorship* 6(1).

CHAPTER 19

Patterns in Mind-Control: A First Person Account

Trish Fotheringham

I was raised as a demonstration model for mind-control techniques designed to provide the latest, most marketable form of human slavery of the time. I do not know the identity of the group who “programmed” me but it clearly had a political agenda. From my birth in 1960, I was subjected to daily trainings and exploitations designed to create dissociated identities or alternate personalities (hereafter referred to as “alters”) that could be programmed according to the needs of the buyer(s). This programming was instilled through the use of mind-control techniques, including ritual abuse-torture, built layer upon layer to form specific patterns of behavior within an alter, resulting in alters that were meant to be perfectly controllable “slaves.”

As a demonstration model, I was trained to exhibit a multitude of personality profiles, any of which could be individually defined and selected for purchase and creation in others. The conflicting programs involved caused an increased need for adjustments and fine-tuning, with program deterioration and eventual breakdown inevitable, at which point I was outcast and discarded (essentially a “built-in expiry date”). It was this conflicting training that enabled me to eventually break the programming bonds and bypass the “failsafe” programs.

My alters were trained for a variety of uses. I was rented as a child sex slave for individual pedophiles and cults, as well as pedophile rings, orgies, rituals, child pornography and snuff films. Other uses included writing the abusers’ words, preaching their agendas, recruiting others, training other young children, triggering others to action, recording, reporting, stealing, spying, drug and arms trafficking, and other common criminal activities.

After an intensive seventeen-year healing journey, I’ve now come to recognize consistent patterns in the intricately planned and orchestrated trainings forced upon me, in the feelings, behaviors, thoughts and beliefs I was left with, and in those I see in others and throughout society. To explain these patterns, here is my true story of the “color-coded training” I received as a demonstration model during the

years 1960 through 1979 in a mid-sized Canadian coastal community reputed to be a nice, quiet, clean, respectable, even conservative place to grow up.

My History

I grew up participating in two different secret cults: my father's ancient patriarchal clan which had a few brutal sexual "family traditions" and my mother's matriarchal "healing magic coven" which had some painful, twisted rituals. Each subjected me to ritual abuse and mind-control training from birth.

Through my paternal grandfather ("Clan Chieftain" and military supplies-man), Mom made a deal: social status and a secure cash flow in exchange for her secrecy and unquestioning cooperation in making me available for, and amenable to, a "secret military training program."[1] I was enrolled in individualized training as a demonstration model, with the resultant "social and financial benefits and opportunities." My sole purpose was to provide proof of the "military men's" viable, marketable training program, with controllable results and guaranteed secrecy and anonymity for clients.

In total, through these avenues, I personally experienced a dozen different types of programming and training "paths," evidencing effectiveness as well as options.

From infancy until age 18, "life lessons" occurred in places as diverse as my many family homes; friends' and relatives' homes; hospitals, medical and dental offices, theatres, service establishments, businesses, government buildings, and various military facilities; military transport trucks, clearings in forests and fields, caves, underground rooms, and tunnels. People involved, in one form or another, included relatives, neighbors and parents' co-workers; family friends, doctor, and dentist; local businessmen, police, hospital staff, government officials, and politicians. Most of these were/are apparently "upright citizens," often community leaders.

I believe I was chosen to be a demonstration model partly because my family had abilities and connections that aided in my training. My mother had keys to a small local live theatre, and could access it and its costumes and equipment when it was deserted. She was also a nurse at a local hospital where she could access the morgue, supplies, and medications. She was usually involved enough in my schools to have keys and access to them. My grandfather held rank with the local army militia and had keys to the armories, where he could access uniforms, equipment, vehicles, and weapons, as well as tunnels and prison cells, and was employed as a Department of National Defence supplies man at the local navy base, so he was able to order things that weren't readily accessible, as well as

provide access to navy facilities and ships. My father was involved with civil defence and able to access their emergency supplies. All three of them had many connections to people in these areas, and were skilled at make-up, costuming, writing, organizing and directing. My father and grandfather often staged mock battles and disasters for legitimate training purposes, and both were skilled at building, mechanics, electrical work and special effects.

My mind-control programming included the use of: sensory/sleep/food deprivation; confusion, fear, pain, terror, guilt, shame, humiliation and belittlement; theatrics, trickery, illusion, lies and coercion; physical, emotional, verbal, sexual and spiritual abuse; forced actions against self/animals/others; double-bind situations; systematic behavior modification and hypnosis techniques; drugs, lights, sounds, smells, special effects, film projections, hidden cameras and microphones; sets, props, actors, costumes and make-up; role-play “characterizations” based on nursery rhymes, fairy tales, stories, books, movies and music; guns, electroshock, whips; shackles, chains and cages.

One important piece of technology my trainers used was a wooden chair which could rock, buck, rotate, and administer electric shocks. They always told me it was a “magic gateway chair” that allowed me to “ride the rainbow” to other places. They said the straps and helmet were to make sure all of me made the trip safely, and were for my protection while I travelled in faraway and strange realms.

This chair was used from about age 2, when they started creating “out of body” alters. At first, when I was placed in the chair it was used, with drugs, to gently vibrate and electrically stimulate me into feeling floaty. This familiarized me with it so I didn’t fear the mild electric shocks, interpreting them only as what happens while travelling. A fan often blew wind at me too, making it feel as if the chair was actually moving through space to somewhere else. For different alters they gave it different purposes: easily done by naming a different destination, and using props, sets, lighting and sounds or music to create specific “moods” and associations. The chair’s bucking and spinning was used to create internal tornados through little pulses and zaps added to the whole wild weather feeling. Over the years, the chair was used to vibrate me into an “open channel” state, and to “ride the rainbow,” which was mostly the sensation of traveling with really amazing lighting and special effects added. Later it was used more harshly for “repairs,” by making me near crazy and totally suggestible, and for punishments (“do what you’re told or we’ll have to zap some sense into you”) and then for the final events which locked down my “inside people” and inner world.

Because of the way memory works, dissociation was also a primary tool; intentional use of traumatic situations made it possible to selectively disconnect aspects of awareness or experience from my conscious mind, and to create

dissociated identities. Various psychoactive drugs were used to induce or enhance each particular dissociative state and to create “altered realities” or “escapes” that made it possible for alters to cope with otherwise unbearable experiences.

At any time one, or more, of these dissociated aspects of my experience were able to be triggered (by a word, circumstance, or event resembling some significant aspect of the traumatic experience), causing them to rise to consciousness and interfere with, even entirely override, the actual moment when such a flashback occurred. My understanding is that traumatic memories are stored differently than “ordinary” memories, in a manner which allows them to remain available and accessible, clear and intact as if locked in a vacuum that prevents aging or disintegration of integrity. In my case individual memories come up as a sort of “experiential movie clip,” enabling me to recall and interpret the details of the mind-control patterns of even my preverbal experiences, since the emotional and physical “senses” remain accessible, with the “visuals and soundtrack” complete and whole in a manner which allows me to see, hear and feel what happened then, in the here and now, decades later.

Throughout much of my training, one man was often present. My handler, whom I called “Puffy,” was in my life from infancy. Usually loving and friendly, stroking and kissing me, he was like my daddy, lover, sweetheart, and master all at once. He played with me and treated me like his precious little princess. He took me walking in his beautiful gardens (like in the gospel song “In the Garden,” which says “he walks with me, and he talks with me, and he tells me I am his own”), swishing me about and scooping me up into his arms. He danced alone with me in his bedroom to Johnny Mathis tunes, crooning the words to me as if I was his lover. I stayed the night often enough at his estate home after various “events” that I believed I had my own bedroom, wardrobe, and music box and porcelain horse collections, and that his servants were my servants. I even “had my own horse” in his stables for when the two of us went riding.

Puffy often filmed our time together, teaching me to ignore the camera; most of my alters learned not to see that it was there, which was important in later trainings and exploitations.[2] It also created confusion initially in therapy, until I learned to “zoom out” to out-of-body alters for the full details of a given scenario; before that I misinterpreted many memories. For example, at first I believed memories of a series of satanic events meant my family were Satanists and that “I” had been married to Satan (red skin, horns, tail, and all), so I lumped all the memories of the rituals of my parents individual cult groups together under this one heading of Satanism. Later, through an out-of-body alter that saw the cameras, wires, crew and staged setting, I learned the satanic-themed situations had actually been a series of porn and snuff films involving an alter who was never out

anywhere else, so naturally interpreted them as her real life. After this became clear, I was able to separate the filmed Satanic rituals from the forest rituals of Mom's coven and Dad's clan traditions. Only the "zoomed out" perspective enabled me to recognize and distinguish the truth in all this.

First Steps: Birth to 6 Years

Beginnings: Birth to 2 years:

As alters were deliberately created, they were all associated with particular colors, each color representing a "path" or type of training. Colors were "tempered" by their shades—lighter shades (those with white added) tended to involve "sensitive" feelings, while darker shades (those with black added) tended to have only the angry, violent or power-seeking types of feelings, if they had any at all. Each alter was dressed in the colors associated with their path: that is, I was dressed in these colors and that's partly how I knew who I was at any given moment. This continued right until adulthood, with additional associations added as I became older. Only after integration was I able to choose my clothing based on anything other than the colors necessary for whatever I would be doing or needing to feel; mostly this was unconscious until late in therapy.

As much as possible, the color-coding was also linked to the seven primary chakra "chi energy" centers of eastern traditions. For me as a demonstration model, this was adapted to suit the larger training plans. Traditional meanings were given twists to make the associations fit each alter's color training, resulting in each chakra's energy being unbalanced and chaotic: this made it easy to convince me of its dangerous power and the need for it to be controlled. My red root chakra was linked to power rituals as well as sex, while the orange spleen chakra's creativity was tied into internal security, alarms and warnings. Yellow and my center chakra's personal power were corrupted and made to feel particularly dangerous. My heart chakra and its green were linked to the values and words of my trainers and programming. Instead of being the throat chakra color of self-expression, blue became the color of "following orders from above," with the brow chakra color indigo as one of its shades. Purple became the color linked to my brow chakra and its insight and intellect. My crown chakra, the spirit "entry point" center, was linked to white instead of its usual violet. All of this was to tap into and take control of how my energy was used: even when they taught me to use these energies, it was twisted to suit their purposes and bound and barriered from my own.

My trainers generally used only enough trauma to accomplish their goals. Experiences became progressively more frequent and traumatic as I aged.

Carefully pre-planned experiential incidents used “smoke and mirrors” (deception and illusions, assisted by drugs) to make specific aspects of each piece of training stick with the correct alter identity in a predictable manner. The science of child development was used to make training incidents age and stage appropriate for maximum effectiveness and potency. My alters understood them as “life lessons.”

Birth to 6 months:

The first step in my color-coded training was to create the initial dissociative splits needed to form the foundation for the entire system of alters. During my first weeks of life, as much controllable dissociation as possible, as soon as possible, was established: from the first split moments after birth, training began building a different understanding of reality, with specific color-coded patterns for the role and character development for each alter and each path.

The very first intentional splits were created with trauma, including violent shaking, that choked off my birth cries while I heard my first words, “Don’t cry! Stop crying! Be Quiet!” repeated loudly and angrily. This was followed immediately with very tight and brutal swathing, accompanied by the loud, commanding words “Keep still! Don’t move! Stay still!” The words had no meaning for me at that point, but were important trigger phrases which were used thereafter to develop these alters and lock in crucial programming to obey, keep still, and keep silent.

Basic “negative” emotional states such as fear, helplessness, stifled anger, and loneliness, as well as “positive” ones such as pleasure, contentment and safety, were isolated into separate alters. Some of these splits initially involved trauma; all were developed by giving each alter experiences that locked them steadily deeper into “their” emotional state. Over time, some of these alters, and later certain other young alters, also came to be identified by different bodily positions such as curled up, bent over, twisted, or held rigid. Some of these splits were unknown to my abusers. Until late in therapy, these types of alters took and held their parts of my life: experiences were therefore often fragmented as they occurred. This meant that one alter could be “out” for an event, while one or more of these base alters “siphoned off” the feelings, emotional states, and/or pain that went with whatever was experienced, without truly being out in the body. Due to this, each alter’s piece of the memory had to be accessed and addressed before the whole experience could be considered reclaimed and healed.

Initial testing began shortly after my birth, to determine my natural inborn aptitudes and interests, and continued throughout my infancy and toddler years. Many separate training paths based on colors were then developed and “installed” over time, each built layer upon layer. Linked to skill sets, each “color path” forged

emotional and/or spiritual beliefs and control mechanisms or “programs” to create base belief systems. Some “programs,” such as “obey,” “don’t tell,” “be loyal,” or “internal security/ alarms” were created at the beginning and reinforced frequently as I grew.

By about 6 months of age, the splits, testing and training that occurred within the first few weeks of my life had already built a substructure of experiences, beliefs, attitudes, and behaviors in my earliest alters. The defining and setting of initial plans continued as training began to include progressively more color links; progressively tying color to sounds then words, shapes then symbols, etc, linking them to alter-specific feelings and meanings to produce specific and predictable results in their behaviors, responses, and actions. (For example, by toddler age, this had led to my first red path (sexual) alter doing a “lap dance” when I was placed on a man’s lap, coyly and suggestively wiggling and giggling “just so.”) **6 months to 2 years:**

Training focused on installing basic commands and triggers in the initial alters. These identities were called forth later, using the trigger phrases or inducing the feeling states I experienced the day of the initial split, and additional trainings and associations were administered to create the planned results for each alter. This kind of training is often called “programming” and essentially consists of training alter personalities through classical conditioning to instantly do whatever they have been taught to do in response to a command or a signal.

On the basis of the results of my ongoing tests and performances, each alter was given “life experiences” to increasingly lock in a separate, distinctive understanding and experience of reality unique to that alter. Intentional use of lights, colors, clothes and accessories, words, phrases, touch, smell, drugs, and quite specific color-coding methodically built the identifications and associations alters were forced to acquire, enabling my handler and trainers to create and develop each alter’s individual belief system and value structure, systematically shaping his or her conceptions and understanding of “how the world works,” “the rules of life,” and almost everything he or she thought, felt, said, or did.

Although they had no power, alters’ experiences included just the right amount of apparent personal empowerment to fool them into never knowing they were being manipulated. Believing the experience to be real was key!

Once enough alters existed and plans had been defined and set, serious training began, devised to seem simply part of normal everyday life to enhance my belief in it. Alters were called out into the body only for experiences that furthered their planned understanding of the world—so an alter being trained to follow a red path would only wear particular red clothing, be spoken to in particular ways, and have

experiences in particular situations, with particular types of people. So little was left to chance that even the toys each alter was allowed were part of the plan.

My red path was primarily sex training, so everything had a sexual aspect for these alters: the way I was touched, spoken to, held, dressed; lots of stroking and inappropriate touching to make me familiar and comfortable with it; “sexy” music in the background; and lots of light-hearted play and laughter mixed in so it was all just fun. When there was pain, it was usually done with words, sounds and gentle touch that soothed, assuring me this was all for my own good, that it was preparing me for life. Hence, a complex, twisted sexuality was woven into my young red path alters’ understanding of love and relationships, along with a sense of play mixed with a resignation that knew some parts of life hurt and you just had to endure smilingly.

As testing continued to identify and factor in my natural skills and abilities, the specifics for each training path were implemented. Throughout infancy and toddler-hood, trauma was used mainly to reinforce basic commands (“don’t cry,” “be quiet,” “don’t tell,” “don’t move,” “be still,” “do as you’re told,” “obey,” etc.) and to institute parameters for the alters’ reality. If an alter “came out” when it wasn’t her time, or acted or spoke inappropriately, harshness resulted. Appropriateness was rewarded with praise and seemingly loving, encouraging treatment, while inappropriateness was met with pain and withdrawal of love and affection. (The exception was alters who were supposed to be disconnected from people. In the black path, mainly “mercenary soldier” training, “love” was never used, only comfort and desire for appropriateness, versus pain and thwarting of desire for inappropriate behaviour.) Steadily, as each alter had enough time “out” in the body, this all began to solidify. Each alter had his or her own unique way of being. Dissociative barriers kept them aware of only their own pieces of my overall life. And in turn, “I,” the primary person who handled everyday life at home and in the world, was not aware of these alternate identities or their pieces of “my” life. It seemed natural for life to be broken into chunks, with missing pieces here and there, so “lost time” went unnoticed. Since continuity was unknown, there was no sense of discontinuity. A way of life had been established and my brain’s way of coping with difficulties was “wired in”—simply create another alter!

Foundations: 2 to 6 years

By 2 years old:

Each of the initially created alters had a distinct identity with basic color-coded identifications and associations: his or her feelings, thoughts, behaviours, actions and beliefs had been linked to color-specific situations, places, sounds, words, phrases, gestures, shapes, and symbols.

Next, an “internal world” was created to house alters when they were not actively “out” in the body. In this world they always had the symbols and props required to ensure they remained programmed and controllable over the long-term. The creation of the inner world was done over time, using staged settings which were replicated in the inner world, to make the inner landscape, buildings, and items real and tangible. At first, only the most basic aspects of the world were installed, with specifics added later as needed.

Until this point, only the basic colors red, yellow, green, blue, black, white and brown were used. Now though, more hues were added and my inner world filled with colors linked to those found in the natural world around me.

My inner world sprang into existence as a luscious green magical fairy tale world with hills, valleys, a river, and an ever-present murmur of sound I came to call my “internal soundtrack,” at this point labelled “the whispering leaves.” This soundtrack consisted of the words, phrases, songs, rhymes, chants and ditties that formed the guidance system or instructional backdrop of my life—“Be a good girl,” “Do what you’re told,” “Skip to my Lou my darling,” etc.

Next, a core system was placed in the center of the inner world, as a root or anchor, a guidance system, and an overseer system, all in one. For me, this was a “Tree of Life,” with branches for the general color-coded path, and colored leaves for holding the specific memory and training links. Training thereafter was linked and built upon this tree.

The rest of the inner world was easily installed. Some of it was done outdoors; some in staged settings. Green was grass, trees and “whispering leaves.” Blue was water, the sky, air, and wind, “the power and voice” of the whispering leaves and tornados. Yellow was the sun, a pot of gold at the end of the rainbow, pixie dust, a golden cup, and a “magic golden ball” of my externalized “dangerous true power.” Brown was dirt, trees, “brownies and dwarves,” dustballs and whirlwinds that whisked things away out of sight. White was fluffy pillows and clouds, angels, and “heaven,” the home of the gods and goddesses (who were simulated by actors). Grey was fog, smoke, confusion and illusion. Rainbows were multi-colored magic paths to other “worlds” (some staged externally, some sections of the inner world where alters of other paths lived), unifying control mechanisms that pulled all the colors together. Black was being alone, dark, silent, cold, scary, dirty, tough, mean and nasty.

“Weather phenomena” got into the inner world the same way everything else did, simply by me being told they were there—like all children this age I naturally believed whatever I was told. Tornadoes, dustballs and whirlwinds were made with fans blowing wind at and around me when I was in “the magic chair”; at first I was taught to “control” them, then later to “be” them. Rainbows were created in the air

around and under me in the chair, I think by means of light shining through sprays of water. The unifying control aspect of them was they could be used to call forth all the alters the colors represented, all at the same time. (Strobe or flashing lights were used for this later.) I was taught that the rainbow could link the world with the chair to whatever world I was going to (none of which I seem to have understood was inside me), with one end in each place, and the end that was not the chair end "moveable" so that it could be "set" to the destination.

My "tree of life" was then further defined as having nine branches (what I came to call "color paths"), each with its own particular color of leaf. These nine kinds of leaves—red, green, yellow, white, pink, purple, multi-colored, brown, and orange—were everywhere as I toddled about outdoors in the autumn, so leaves on branches were easy foundational reference points to plant inside my mind.

Next, the programmers created nine foundational "virtues" alters who were assigned their own branches on the tree and given a leaf of their color to keep with them at all times as they lived (in the inner world) on or near their branches. From then on, since I had so many color paths/branches/leaves, my training was broader and more varied and conflicting than most people's would be.

By about 3 years of age:

Once the inner world and tree of life were solidly established and each of the foundational alters had his or her own branch and leaf to keep track of their specific training, the nine branches of the tree were assigned a combination of attributes (called "virtues") that best enhanced each color's training path. (These attributes were based on actual virtues, such as "kindness," "obedience," "loyalty," "honesty," "strength," "wisdom," "purity," "cleanliness," "order," "truth," and "justice." Each virtue was given its own twisted meaning, and some, like loyalty and obedience, were trained into all paths. Nearly all alters were taught to be "good," but what that meant was tailored to their training path.) I had to become skilled at connecting image and sensation records of lessons and trainings to the correct branches and leaves, a skill that later grew into a somewhat photographic memory.

The "virtues" attributes were developed through fun play activities with props, in costumes with accessories (these later acted as control mechanisms—i.e. a black purse or belt ensured aspects of security training were part of the scenario, gold jewelry meant a degree of authority for the alter wearing it, silver items created a spiritual connection, and metals and gemstones further defined complex role parameters), sometimes on staged sets, but also in my home and other real places, with the specifics of each color-coded branch of training being linked with particular items, obstacles, warnings, links and guideposts for alters, most of which

were given internal representations that served as training/programming storage, reminders and trigger mechanisms. Sometimes these were simply objects; at other times they were imbued with "life" enough to become alters without actual personalities. For example, I had an "eyeball in a glass ball" that was the famous "All-Seeing Eye," always watching and recording me. Brown dustballs and whirlwinds ("magical dwarves and brownies in disguise") came to "whisk things away" when a secret appeared in danger of being exposed, and a "wise" blue tornado whirled "safe words" to mind as distractions. A golden cup, that originally was held to "open a channeling state," eventually became an alter that was "an open channel." All these things were produced in the external world and reproduced in the inner world.

For my red path alters, the "virtues" attributes started as me "being" Little Red Riding Hood, the "good little girl in red," in danger and watching out for the "big bad wolf," protecting herself by being clever and coy while pretending everything was fine and normal. Playtime was a fun game, naked with my handler Puffy being all "scary and mean" and saying "I'm the big bad wolf—keep me happy or I'll eat you" with sexualized gestures, actions, stroking, rubbing, mixed with lots of bouncing, tickling, poking, laughs, and hugs. All my alter had to do was lick, kiss, wiggle and rub "in the ways that made the wolf growl or purr with pleasure" and she was "safe" and the winner of the game too! Then she knew for sure she was a "good girl."

These red path alters' sex-focused "virtue" of "good little girl" was expanded over the years to include "good little hostess" and "proper little lady," along a path leading to madam-like responsibilities. Their experiences were designed to establish a comfort zone pattern of sex and sexual interactions as a necessary part of life, with built-in, skilled use of words, phrases, actions, body language and emotional response patterns to suggest, encourage, and enhance the sexual experience for the "client," with power and security only felt by the alter when playing out familiar sexual roles.

Conversely, my dark blue and black path alters were tough soldiers (and a mean witch). They had to be forceful, calculating, manipulative, nasty, hurtful, uncaring, and "don't let anything stop (them)." Like a vicious, cruel version of normal boyish roughhousing, play for them involved much violence; sneaking up and scaring people, tackling, kicking, hitting, nasty words, insults, and putdowns. Their experiences established, for them only, a comfort zone pattern of following orders and "thinking on their feet," with "doing a good job," frustration, anger, aggressiveness, violence and destructiveness as the only ways to feel powerful.

My pink path alters were princesses or fairies: play had them naïve, innocent and believing they were "in charge, powerful and entitled to be treated royally," as

evidenced by much bowing and apparent subservience by Puffy and his servants, and my trainers (who these alters thought were “private tutors”). Pink alters held fairy tale “all is good” beliefs and knew only good, happy feelings, (unless they weren’t getting their way and had a temper tantrum, whereupon they had “all privileges removed until (they) could behave like proper ladies.”) They went to fabulous high-class parties; were pampered, carried, “swished and flown about”; they knew daydreaming, lightheartedness, and their wants and desires coming true magically. Similar to red path trainings, as I grew, pink alters were taught the skills required of “ladies of high-standing”—how to dress, walk, talk, organize parties, be a hostess, etc.

The white path was my main communication and word path; these alters learned to live in the outsider, observer point of view, and to interpret and make note of people’s needs as shown in not only their words, but also their gestures and body language. At about age two, a “cloud” alter was split off to “see, feel and be inside the clouds,” far away from my body and unaffected by the cares of the harsh world. Not long after, a “bird’s-eye view overseer” was created to “watch everything” from an out-of-body perspective that saw “the bigger picture.” Over time, through various alters, the entire white path learned to “hear the voice of the gods,” “channel,” “be an open vessel,” and “let the visions guide,” through training done with tiny speakers attached to my ears when I was drugged, so that “I” heard (and believed) the “voice of the gods” as it gave me words that sparked visions (created externally with film and holograph projections until I “learned” to have them in my mind.) The approach of fun play “dress up” activities incorporating the stereotyped reference points found in nursery rhymes, songs, storybooks, TV, movies, and elsewhere in the real world, subconsciously reinforced the programming, repeatedly and over the long-term, in my daily life outside of the formal training, making it all the more believable for each individual alter, solidifying my dissociation even more.

Each alter continued to receive experiential training to develop and enhance his or her color-coded ”virtues,” personality traits and characteristic response and behavior patterns, along with the pertinent skill sets, vocabulary, etc. that went along with them. Character attributes were identified, practiced and instilled as “the way of people and the world.” Unbeknownst to alters, costumes, props, actors, sets, etc. and increasingly detailed role-play and scripts were used to imbed the characterizations of this “school of life,” instilling the exploitative “life lessons” by the osmosis that occurs naturally for a child. Structured around my age and developmental level, each new layer of these “lessons” was added and interwoven as I was able to understand or do new things—at first simple, basic and easy, then steadily becoming more and more complicated, detailed and demanding.

During this same age and stage, training began to move out into new venues. At 2 ½ years, my red and pink path alters' training had me in "an elite group" with other girls and boys, a class called "manners training" (at an official local government residence) where we were taught "how to behave appropriately" in high society—etiquette and manners which included such "necessary skills" as how to do "lap dances," how to ballroom dance while ensuring your face is provocatively buried in your partners crotch in a way not clearly evident to any but the dance partner, and how to use the tongue in a French kiss.

"Puffy" was an important part of the manners training and their "reward" dinner parties, at which we children were treated as pets. Dressed in "grown up gowns and tuxedos," partnered men with girls and boys with ladies, we participated in fabulous dinners followed by ballroom dancing. These events included some big fat "military leaders" (who I also knew in other settings along with Puffy) as well as members of the "circle of 12+ 1," the group with whom Puffy performed rituals.

Between the ages of 3 and 5 years:

As any child ages, she spends more time in the broader world outside home and with other people. Similarly, practice of what my alters had learned was incorporated into less and less controlled situations. As my inner and outer worlds expanded, increasing use of actors, special effects, drugs and hypnosis in my training made alter personality parameters easier to embed, while enabling me to acquire skills in the process, much as in normal life, with each alter's knowledge and practice accruing over time. For my red path alters, sex with "clients" began, first with my handler or trainer in the room, then with him outside the door, then downstairs, etc., with the alter expected to be more amenable and skilled with each level attained, in new and varying situations.

In conjunction with this broadening world, the safety and well-being of self and others increasingly factored in as a training tool, with punishments and discipline becoming progressively more traumatic and harder to avoid. More and more, the programming-enhanced need to "get it right or suffer the consequences" became each alter's driving force—he or she must perform, behave, act, think, say, "be" as expected, or suffer extremely in one way or another. Even playful learning now also involved a degree of trying to stay safe and well, making it necessary for alters to do everything possible to maintain the beliefs and behaviors they had been given. Anything else (questions or disobedience) might result in something bad happening to them, or to things, animals, or people about whom the alter cared. This helped shape each alter's interests, desires and motivations while making them even more malleable.

Written symbols and words also came into critical focus at this age, in the real world and in trainings, as well as in the training storage and trigger mechanisms used. The inner world was filling up. Where colors, shapes and symbols had been used with branches and leaves, now books with words replaced picture books, while road warning and direction signs (e.g., a STOP sign) and more were added to the symbolic internal items, and to the associations and links being forged by the carefully planned and executed experiences. Words were significant in my training (due to my aptitude-tested abilities and resulting training paths) and these were the initial building blocks used to teach me to read and write fluently at a very young age. Words were labels that made programs easy to store and access, especially as I grew older.

The foundational leaf color orange was linked to internal alarms if the security of the programming was breached. It involved pattern and word recognition and the reporting and recording of information and experiences, both internally and externally. From earliest lessons, orange connected the “controller,” “storyteller” and “reporter” alters to key belief system trigger phrases like “Get the story right,” “Don’t miss anything,” “Note every detail,” and “They’re always watching.” Orange programs, like the first sign of the fall season, warned “the fall is coming” (meaning “nearing a fall,” “watch my step,” “be careful” what I said or did), inducing a state of ever-present hyper-alertness caused by terror over what would happen if a mistake was made.

This requirement of accuracy and attention to detail was also part of the white “word path” training. At first using pictures, then words, by 5 years of age, a little “scribe”/”scholar in training” alter had learned to make point-form lists for the “military leaders” at their planning meetings (they believed the silencing programs were infallible at this point and found me entertaining in this role), tracking group needs, who agreed with what, decisions made, etc. Another photographic memory building block, this progressed to detailed note-taking, then speech writing, and ultimately coalesced, by age 10, into alters who believed themselves to be an oracle and a preacher channeling the words of the gods, and rousing and rallying the crowds (or “people will suffer in these times of great change”). By age 7, I had read all the Nancy Drew and Hardy Boys mystery stories, at 8 was reading Perry Mason murder mysteries, and before 10, a huge, previously installed Inner World library held “ancient books and scrolls” that were the records of all “I” had listed, noted, read and learned. (To this day, I still have a “scrolling marquee across the front of my brain,” with my every thought plus the words I am hearing printed out in text.) Names however (and other words that could be used to identify characteristics or otherwise implicate my trainers, handlers or clients) were different. To protect against disclosure, every memory of such was unfailingly and

automatically shunted away to the secret place in my mind (eventually entire special “code access only” storage areas in my inner world) that only the trainers and handlers knew about. For this purpose, from initial creation, all known alters were taught not to notice or be aware of (and seemingly not remember) such details. This was easily accomplished with simple, reality-denying statements (“don’t be silly, that’s not true, no-one like that, or named that, was here, you made it all up, stop lying”), which, when applied immediately and consistently, invalidated and denied the alters’ truth while creating and enforcing whatever false reality was needed. If this was insufficient, a hard slap across the face or some other quick, painful or shocking action would usually ensure that “what is forgotten remains forgotten.”

Around 4 to 5 years of age:

This was an age when many splits were induced to form a broader range of alter emotional/belief system states, (i.e., “I’m rotten to the core,” “I just want to curl up and die”), the crippling, crazy-making foundations of later “conformity measures” for controlling alter behavior patterns. Some of these splits were intentional. Others were accidental, occurring spontaneously when too much trauma came too close together, sometimes causing a number of splits during one incident. Since (as I have been told) mind-control programmers are usually trained to recognize the moment a split occurs (by a few very specific physical indications such as a shift in body posture or a particular sound that infants are reputed to make at that moment), most accidental splits were recognized and made use of, though an undetected split did occur now and then. As an example, in my “real life” childhood I was in and out of the hospital with severe asthma. The medical tests and treatments I underwent were often very painful and/or traumatic, so over the years I ended up with an entire group (“The Isolation Ward Kids”) of undetected alter splits, each of them a secret, taking over for me in repeated medical situations.

Around the age of 6:

Each (known) alter’s programming integrity was tested. This was accomplished without the alters’ awareness, by testing for level of skill acquisition. My red path alters, for example, were left completely alone with a client from start to finish, including taking his/her money, believing the test to be for their sex skills and overall “value,” while, among other things, tests were really of my overall trustworthiness (would I talk/tell secrets, try to run/escape?).

My dark blue and black path “soldier” alters were tested for their ability to be cold, calculating and cruel as needed, and to “follow orders no matter what.” At age 5, the death and dissection of a kitten was proof of the black soldier alter being

able to “stomach the job,” and at 6, a test proving “family loyalty” forced a choice for the dark blue alter between letting my little brother get hurt or letting our pet rabbit suffer and die. Among other things, along with the actual intent, any capitulation in such double-bind situations left me with crippling, soul-deadening shame, guilt, powerlessness and helplessness, especially in the presence of people with authority or “good, decent people.”

After the tests had been made and satisfactory programming integrity confirmed, the inner world was then sealed, trapping foundational “virtues” alters (but not the other alters, who mainly received the actual training) inside with their programmed realities, behaviours, etc. This “seal” or “cap” built internal dissociative barriers that among other things, made alters, despite living there when not out in the body, completely unable to distinguish the inner world from the outer. They were left with only their personal belief systems, personality traits and skills, and the “safe, acceptable, allowed” memories of their portions of my life. (This remained the status quo until “I” discovered the existence of the alters and inner world at the age of 31.) This ensured that the sealed in alters stayed stuck at an age and stage of development that believed in fairy tales and magic, and lacked the ability to distinguish between fact and fantasy. As the seal was done, “re-activation coding”[3] was incorporated so that, if necessary at a later time, my trainers could open the seal, make necessary changes and additions to my inner world and what it held, then reseal it afterwards.

Middle Steps: 6 to 12 Years

Fact or Fancy? Learn & Practice: 6–9 years:

By 6 to 7 years old:

After the “seal” was solidly in place for all alters (in October 1966, just after I entered 1st grade in primary school), the main focus of my training shifted to role responsibility and a steady acquisition of knowledge and skill. Building upon the locked-in basic feelings, thoughts and responses of the foundational trainings, this was a time of intense and hard-driving learning and practice, often trauma-based, always with a baseline of fear that I must “prove (my) worth” or be “too much trouble” and “suffer the consequences.” Terror and despair became my constant companions, keeping me in a hyper-vigilant “fight or flight” mode all the time, even during sleep.

Adding to my unconscious terror, red alters began to be used in a series of pornographic and snuff films with satanic ritual themes, created in conjunction with actual local satanic cults and pedophile groups. These alters, like all alters used in various porn and/or snuff films over the years, believed the experiences to

be completely real—one alter honestly believed she was being groomed to be “The Bride of Satan” and was quite proud of it! Most of these films were a side-line of my handler, and often involved some or all of his own “ritual circle group”—referred to as “the circle of 12 + 1,” because 12 would form the circle and 1 “power tool” (me—there may have been others too, but not when I was there) would be in the middle. My inclusion in a few of these types of films was also due to one or both of my parents “renting me out” to various groups. In my experience, these types of organized crime groups and their members interact and assist each other in their different pursuits.

Another area of hard-driven training, from age five to nine or ten, occurred when Puffy took me to “military” planning sessions I call Out of Time Rallies, since I was told they took place “outside of time” and that the only way to get to them was by way of the “magic gateway chair.” These were mainly where the white scribe alter was developed and trained, taking notes for the “fat old military leaders” while also serving as a sexual entertainment tool for their concurrent orgies. (These men seem to have included sex in most things they did!) It was at these sessions that I learned details of the “great leader’s plans” and the eventual planned role for my white path of “rallying the people,” which greatly added to my underlying terror.

At other times, in another terror-creating aspect of my “secret life” that took place from toddlerhood to age 12, Puffy was sometimes among these same men, on a huge, glamorous offshore yacht that was used for child sex slave trafficking, among other things. When I was little, pink and/or red alters were mostly just passed around for lap dances and other sexual abuses, or made to dance and otherwise entertain, all while being treated and spoken to like a little princess who was precious and loved. Sometimes my young dark blue and black soldier alters were forced to “do battle” here with other young boys in soldier training, while the men placed bets to see which of us “had what it takes to succeed.” As I grew older, pink and red alters were also groomed here for “hostess,” “respected lady,” and other linked roles in high society. At some point, it became part of the red alters’ jobs to help break down, then train as sex slaves those other child victims who were my age or younger. This use of me continued until I was twelve.

My grandfather was often the one who took me there, when he made his deliveries of “newly acquired trainees,” who were usually missing or unregistered children of all races and ages, who had been transported from other places in the country and were being readied for shipping and sale in other countries. I remember being in the boat with these children when grandpa was handing them over, helping them climb the ladder up the side of the yacht. At other times I was already on the yacht, lined up beside Puffy awaiting grandpa’s shipment, with all

the men in their dark blue military uniforms with their fancy insignia lined up beside and across, in one of those two-sided formal greeting rows, and grandpa (in the same uniform) saluting as he handed over the latest shipment, with the formal military words of report, delivery and handing over of authority, and even me saluting back. I was in a formal gown for those times, to indicate that the children were being handed over to me for training. This pomp and ceremony made me believe it was legitimate and above board, and made the other children (who were drugged, starved, beaten, confused and terrified) believe it too, giving me clear authority over them as they were led, dragged or pushed through to their "quarters" and assigned "bunks."

The physiological and chemical overload from all the events occurring outside of my conscious awareness produced severe asthma by this age of 6, ulcers by 11, and by my teens emphysema and cervical cancer. Long hospital stays became part of my life and were simply incorporated into my training—lessons and abuse could take place there as easily as anywhere else, and sometimes it was quite convenient, providing credibility, and equipment for experiments and training.

By this age, my inner world had many boxes, filled with the paper records (drawings, symbols, lists, printed and written words, phrases and story-like descriptive reports) that had been in full use for years. Things were getting messy and starting to become uncontainable.

One day, I "went to pieces": when Dad opened a suitcase and pulled out the dummy he used for teaching CPR and mouth-to-mouth resuscitation, I thought it was a real lady and my mind snapped—I "short-circuited," screaming aloud as my vision fragmented and blurred, shifting in and out of focus. Suddenly nothing made sense, I couldn't breathe. I lost my balance and fell to the living room floor, crying, shaking, kicking, screaming. Thoughts of "help me" and "what's happening to me?" spun in my mind, mixed with "I want to die" and "I'm crazy," while Dad, confused, yelled at Mom "what's happening to her?" Mom had obviously been warned of the possibility of something like this happening. She ignored Dad, grabbed the suitcase, stuffed me into it, and snapped it closed. Hyperventilating, my head spinning, and nearly unconscious, I heard Dad questioning her as she loaded us in the car and raced us to the nearby military base where I was turned over for "adjustments and fine-tuning" and immediately sedated into calm submission.

My dark blue-clad "tough girl" and "soldier" alters were then "repaired" in the brown wooden electric chair with silver ("spiritual stuff") and black ("internal security") attachments. Programs to "keep the pieces separate" were installed in them and other "internal alarms/security" alters of the black, dark blue and orange paths, using alterations to already existing security mechanisms, whirlwinds and

tornadoes, as well as hallucinogenic drugs, pulsing and flashing strobe lights, and carefully administered zaps of electroshock. This process split off an alter in a permanent state of craziness, who was later used in “conformity measures” programming. No opportunity was missed to make a lesson out of my life experiences.

At 8 years of age:

Unbeknownst to my handler and trainers, a record keeper alter split off and got stuck at age eight, due to an overload of righteous outrage and hate from witnessing and recording too much hateful, horrific wrongness and injustice. Most of the “boxes of records” were kept by this alter and hidden in my inner tunnels. Luckily, “files in folders” had recently been introduced and instituted as the main storage system of my inner world, so this absence amazingly went unnoted, and the records remained pure and intact until this alter was discovered in my late 30’s. As a result of this particular split, a significant piece of my natural activist/defender voice escaped later “adjustments and fine-tuning,” and was never caught in the “shutdown and discard” programming which happened later. Instead, I was left with a burning desire to right wrongs, stop injustices, and generally “fight for the underdog” by bringing about positive change and transformation.

Training incorporated more and more nasty, painful, sickening aspects. Alters were taught ways of distracting themselves when it was “awful or yucky”: counting or chanting/repeating a word or phrase silently, squeezing something tightly, or “getting lost in the music.” Reel-to-reel tapes joined the record playing stereo system, Polaroid camera, film projector, and other recording and reporting devices that had already accrued in my inner world. The music had the side effect of providing endless inspiration (it was the late 60’s), even though this helpful escape mechanism was also used to create new trigger phrases and reinforce programming. It worked well with the previously installed “inner soundtrack,” and was maintained by the only green path alters I had: a “green tree man” elf character whose job was to ensure that the correct, programmed rhymes, chants, songs or music for each situation were continually playing in my mind, guiding and shaping my feelings and responses on a sub-verbal level; and a combination Peter Pan/Pied Piper alter, hiding and playing the flute up in the trees in the inner forest. The aftereffects of this system still make me highly sensitive to the atmosphere and mood/emotional state that music creates.

Life is a Stage: Adjustments & Fine Tuning: 9 to 12 Years

9 to 12 years:

This period was about me taking my place on “the stage of life,” (also a place in my inner world) out in the world of pre-teen peer pressure and media influence. Staged and scripted scenarios presented in the external world, sometimes on the stage of a small theater, were instantly credible and completely believable to alters. As my interest in them naturally grew, popular fashions, teen idols, and hit parade music became powerful tools in the shaping of my now numerous alters. Many new storage and trigger mechanisms had to be created in my inner world too: clothes, purses, high-heeled shoes, make-up, and other feminine accessories for the red and pink alters; promotion-declaring insignias and more powerful weapons (such as a rifle) for the dark blue and black alters’ cache; and much more, since, for proper program cohesion and function, each alter and each path had to have their own “inner world stuff.”

By 9 years:

I had reached a point of overall, soul-level inability to cope with the grim existence that was my life: now, no amount of dissociation was sufficient to make it bearable. From the time I was tiny, anything that comforted or empowered me was always taken away or somehow tainted, so I could not or would not be able to draw upon it in my times of need. When I showed an affinity for nature and animals, I was taught, and believed, that “my allergies” made them dangerous for me to be near, touch or have these comforts. Everything I inherently excelled at and/or delighted in, such as helping, sharing, communicating, entertaining, or educating, was exploited. Unconsciously trapped in hopeless panic and terror, and unable to express myself so I could be heard and saved, my soul, needing to take action to make things better, started producing uncontrollable “freakouts”: times when I “short circuited” and appeared to be a “crazy wild thing,” crying, raging, shouting and screaming, causing damage, scaring and distressing those around me while injuring myself or working myself into an asthma attack.

During one of these incidents, I told secrets to hospital staff. This was followed by a lesson in the local psychiatric hospital, where there was a conveniently empty ward. My trainers gave me what I call “crazy talk” programming, with the messages: “Don’t tell or you’ll be locked up and lose your rights,” “You can’t escape,” and “You can run but you can’t hide.” I was shackled to a bed and locked in a padded room until a “staff member” whom I thought was my ally left my shackle unlocked and the door open. A rebellious alter took the staged chance, ran, and thought she had escaped, only to be captured and have the resulting punishment lessons shatter all hope. After that, a “sick but always

cheerful and smiling" alter came to maintain the necessary "program and path-approved" behaviors during my increasingly frequent hospitalizations, regardless of the condition I was in, the trauma I experienced, or the drugs I was given. This weak, fragile alter wore a light blue dressing gown and in the inner world was trapped in a dark blue, silver and black wheelchair, reminiscent of "the magic chair." After this incident, I was also given the label "hyperactive" (today it would be Attention Deficit Hyperactivity Disorder) and put on four adult doses per day of the drug Librium (the Ritalin of those times) to "keep me from getting too wound up" so I would be more manageable.

By about age 10:

File rooms in my inner world housed file cabinets filled with folders of training and programming experiences. A fastidious grey file-keeper alter, able to order and reference files but not understand what was in them, was created to keep the existence of the entire collection hidden, and each alter's knowledge and skills away from the other alters. This intentional hiddenness made healing difficult in later years: even with the file-keeper helping, finding and accessing memories and information took patience, intuition and determination, with much time and effort required to understand, interpret, and weave a way through each unique piece of programming. Utmost caution had to be used, since "fail-safes, booby-traps, and time bombs" had been installed as security measures.

"Fail-safes" are what I call the various "self-destruct," "booby-trap," and "time-bomb" programs. They were put in from the start of my training, and became more detailed, involved and tailored to me and my alters as time went by. They included instructions to never tell, keep silent, whisk knowledge or memories away, keep the pieces separate, or go crazy, and later to destroy my own credibility, sabotage myself, attempt suicide, or engage in addictions to cope or to belong, as well as the internal systems that reported infractions so punishments or repairs could be done. They were the programs that made me crash or be flooded with unbearable feelings, that locked away certain memories, or that made a memory or programmed belief impossible to escape from. Like a spider-web, they were linked, woven together to intersect, support, and back each other up. This was done by using the same phrases, such as "too much trouble," over and over, woven into many different trainings so that each particular trigger phrase could set a cascade of programs into effect, all linked and doing their own number on me. When I was older and being shut down, they were intended to be crippling mentally, emotionally, and physically (and I believe spiritually too), and the effects of the programs were designed to spiral, getting worse when they should get better. Affirmations that work well with the average person, for example, could make

things far worse and actually trigger increased problems for me because of these kinds of programs.

One significant type of fail-safe programming involved “trip wires,” which could trigger actual physical responses, such as an arm jerking, or pain in the chest that felt like a heart attack. These began as part of two separate aspects of my training; “flying” (for fairies, witch, and genie alters—done in a harness of the sort used in circus/gymnastics training), and being a “puppet on a string” (mostly to prove I was not in control of my own body). Both had me “encased in” wires and/or string (hidden from sight so the alters didn’t know they were there) in a way that enabled my trainers to control my movements from a distance, and making it all “magical powers.” Over time, these wires were used to form a network of control points throughout my body, each of which had specific “fail-safe” body responses linked to it; telling a secret produced the feeling of being choked for example, or ignoring an internal warning about a fall could make a knee buckle to make me truly fall and thereby enforce the validity of the warning.

“Self-destructs,” mostly done after this age of 10, were triggered if I messed with my training (with or without a therapist), or became aware of memories I was not supposed to know. They could cause a “trip wire” physical response, and/or trigger a flood of feelings, without the content, from emotionally traumatic memories such as the death of a loved one, being outcast by “the gods,” or being told I was worthless, had failed, belonged in hell, or that no one could love me or save me. They offered relief from these unbearable feelings and physical sensations through distracting and potentially lethal activities, such as suicide attempts and other self-harming activities. “Time bombs” were programs that had situation or time-specific triggers built into them—for example, a set time or date to perform an assigned task, or to have self-destruct programs kick in even though I wasn’t in contact with my trainers.

Crucial testing was also done at this age, to determine any need for adjustments and fine-tuning, and to look for evidence of any programming disintegration that would indicate my expiry date was nearing. Apparently unexpectedly, during the extreme test situations, when I was a child only 10 and 11 years old, evidence of deterioration (my soul fighting back) sprang up everywhere.

My white path “rallying and preaching” training was intended for me to speak the “words of the gods” at public events, and directed at making me believe I was helping the “great leader” and his followers save the world. In 1971, my split off activist alter had gathered, abstracted, and honed this training enough to take action in the real world when I was in an institution for sick children. The activist alter saw things that needed to change in the children’s hospital, rallied other children to the cause, and organized a protest march. By the end of my four-month stay, new

policies allowed residents to choose their own seats and companions and even converse during meals in the dining room, and to decorate their lounge and recreation rooms as they pleased. My part in this had dire consequences for me though, since it evidenced to my handler and trainers that my programming was deteriorating, forcing them to speed up their plans for their final uses of me before my shutdown.

Shortly thereafter, I found myself in a cage, on a stage in a large military mess tent, displaying the various “slave trainings” to rows of seated men in dark blue military dress uniforms. Their hooting, jeering, laughter and catcalls enraged my rebel and activist alters as I was “switched” by my handler from alter to alter to show the various trainings—from submissive sex slave to tough soldier to haughty princess, to coy, provocative little girl, to dominatrix, to oracle, to elf chanting “programming rhymes” and more—in rapid succession. Most of these alters were shocked and confused to find themselves in a cage, let alone triggered to display their various “personality/training profiles.” Different music and lighting were used for different alters, and their names and trigger phrases were called out on a loudspeaker by Puffy. Sometimes he gave me a quick zap through the cage bars under my feet, or a flick of a whip or a poke with a stick—whatever helped trigger the behavior being displayed. He and my trainers thought in the long-term, and were more focused on showing what could be created than what was already available: buyers were told they could order training tailor-made for their purposes, in addition to already trained children.

Before this incident, most demonstrations occurred in small gatherings in the places I was abused in (most often on the offshore yacht) and displayed only a couple of types of trainings specific to what the buyers wanted, so did not put me through such trauma in the process. This time, more drugged up than ever before, with a new combination of drugs, in pain and unbearably confused by the rapid succession of switches to alters with conflicting trainings, beliefs and feelings, something in my mind snapped. I started screaming and swearing at the men from inside the cage, spitting, rattling and slamming myself against the bars. The resulting series of punishments for this incident produced a number of splits, including an alter that lived in a cage.

At 11 years old:

Together with increasingly poor test results, the above incidents had proved irrevocably that I was uncontrollable. “Adjustments and fine-tuning” suddenly and drastically changed to what I call “shutdown” and “discard” programming. Lessons shifted to mainly drugged, brutally painful and confusing “nightmares come to life,” intended to severely and permanently cripple or destroy my credibility, my

ability to function coherently and consistently, and my sanity and physical body if necessary.

Soon after the caged demonstration, white alters who were the “voice and words of the gods” (the scholar/writer, oracle, and preacher) were “outcast from the realm of the gods,” through deliberately engineered “failed tests” of their skills followed by terrifying, shaming and humiliating derision and belittlement about their inability to fulfill their “responsibility to the gods and the people” mixed with accusations of “putting people and loved ones in danger” through stupid, careless, selfish choices and actions. While I was under the influence of mind-altering drugs that distorted perception and sensation, initial “shutdown” scenarios (done with hypnosis and early holographic projections/movies on a staged set with actors) involved masses of people rioting and being injured or killed because of my failures.

Then, strapped in the by now familiar “magic gateway chair,” these white alters “rode the rainbow” to “the realm of the gods,” where they were told (and shown using holographic projections in smoke-filled air) that they were “no longer of value and had become too much trouble,” whereupon they were “cast out” and tossed into a simulated hell where they were told they belonged. These experiences transferred into the inner world, leaving one alter trapped in “purgatory,” on the “outskirts of heaven,” in smoky clouds of grey fog, hiding from the gods to avoid being sent back to hell.

Meanwhile, alters of other color paths were being set up for their own shutdown scenarios. One night in my handler’s luxurious bedroom, I “overheard” a conversation about plans for my handler’s upcoming monthly ceremonial circle, a ritual in which I was to send a “psychic arrow” to kill a man in another city who had become “too much trouble.” Again, this was more than I could take at a soul-level. Red path alters with “dominatrix” (bondage and sadmasochistic) training, influenced by my matriarchal cult background (in which women were dominant and men subservient) and inspired at age six by Nancy Sinatra’s mid-60’s song “These Boots Are Made For Walking,” decided this was the time to take matters into their own hands and take control of their own lives—they were not going to “damn my own soul for some stupid man’s sake.”

Immediate dire action seemed the only recourse: with heart-pounding terror, these alters managed to carefully plan and painstakingly execute traitorous actions against my handler and his circle, by putting poison into the ceremonial drink, which it was my job to mix. After these near deadly actions were discovered (thankfully before they did any harm) the red “powerful, accomplished, respected” lady and hostess alters were stripped of power in a several-days-long nightmare time that began with being stripped naked, kicked and beaten in the center of the

“circle of 12 + 1.” Undeniable evidence of my drop in status to outright slave came when I was shackled and chained, then forced to participate in the very crime my actions had been intended to save me from, after which I was “left to rot” in the cold, dark, hungry isolation of a cage in the basement of my handler’s estate house. Eventually a different colored alter was called forth and removed from this place, thus ensuring that in the inner world the red alters remained beaten and caged, damned, sent to hell or otherwise imprisoned in their piece of this nightmare, until rediscovered 3 decades later.

For the next piece of this shutdown/discard program series, a three-year-old white alter was called forth by my handler’s “housekeeper” woman while being freed from the cage in the dark. Confused and nearly fetal with pain, hunger and exhaustion, the “filthy little thing” was roughly shoved in a scalding hot bath, and scrubbed clean with a hard brush, while being angrily lectured on the “terrible sins against the master,” told to “pray to God for forgiveness” and that she (I) was “too much trouble, the master should get rid of me before she ruined everything.” Not remembering anything of the cage or what came before this brutal treatment, the alter didn’t know what sins had been committed. After briskly toweling and quickly dressing me in a little girl’s white dress, ankle socks and patent leather shoes, then yanking a brush through my long, still wet and knotted hair, the housekeeper created further mind-boggling confusion. While tying white ribbons in my tight pigtails, she suddenly spoke tenderly, stroked my face gently, said how sad it all was and she’d miss me, what a sweet little thing I was, then, with a kiss on the cheek, a warm hug and kindly little swat on the bottom, sent me scurrying upstairs to the master, shaking her head and intoning “too bad you’re so much trouble.”

The alter innocently skipped upstairs to the familiar large, heavily brocaded, dimly lit bedroom, taking her usual place in the center of the tight circle with my handler (“the master”) and the 11 other circle members. Immediately, one painful, shock-inducing kick in the stomach began a long, torturous “punishment and purification ceremony” that successively called forth 2, 3, 4, and 5 year old alters for beatings (to “get the evil out”) and sexual abuse (to “anoint” and “plant good seeds” to “save” me). This incident ended with the little white alter called forth again to be choked into silence and unconsciousness as the new role parameters were reiterated. Another split happened and another alter was left trapped, locked in a debilitating, paralyzing moment in time, until therapy brought freedom decades later.

Also at age 11:

Similarly, after using re-activation codes to open the seal, my trainers individually called forth three of the original foundational “virtues” alters (red, green, and yellow) and “encased them in webs,” with the aid of paralyzing drugs and the systematic torture of carving fine spider-web-like lines all over my body then painting them red and/or black: when the paint dried and shriveled, the lines looked and felt like burning traps that constricted. Then these alters were “thrown into the (inner) tunnels” (by throwing them into actual tunnels) and “left to rot,” quite effectively silencing them by locking them into the immobilizing, excruciatingly painful restricted roles that were all they were thereafter to be allowed. Other alters were later taken out of the tunnels, dressed, and returned to real life.

Last Steps: 12 to 18 Years

Coming of Age. Discarded & Dropping Out: 12–15 years:

When I was 12 years old:

Restructuring of my inner world was required to accommodate these and other changes to alter characters and role parameters. New programs and accompanying trigger and storage mechanisms were installed, including “self-destructs,” “booby-traps,” “time-bombs” and other “fail-safes.” Among these were implanted alters, who were visible to others in my inner world, but not really alters in the true sense, in that they were undeveloped so had no life histories. They were mainly “props,” like the castle and the forest, to make my inner world look the way my trainers wanted it to look, though they were able to watch and report “infractions” so that further controls could be implemented or “fail-safe programs” activated when necessary.

White path alters had by this point been told they were “too stupid to make the grade” and “too selfish to be trusted.” “The gods decreed” they had lost their rights: “speaking, writing or maintaining records of the words and truths of the gods,” or otherwise “accessing or using the power of the gods” would harm someone, maybe me, maybe some unknown number of others. Judged “too clumsy and lacking in grace and beauty to be of value” and “stripped of all power, authority and respect,” red path alters were no longer “proper ladies”: any attendance at the high-class parties, “gatherings” or “ceremonies” was solely as a slave at the mercy of my master(s).

The inner dream castle (originally created when I was about 3 years old for pink and red alters to live in “royally” as fairies, princesses, and “mistresses of fine residence and standards”) underwent significant changes during this time. The scholar/writer alter was sealed in his library tower with all of the white path scrolls

and other records: to ensure only “allowed knowledge” was able to be known or expressed, a detached, emotionless grey “business writer” alter was split off and installed in a room at the foot of the tower as a gatekeeper.

The shutdown of my pink path brought a new tower to the castle to imprison a princess alter modeled on fairy tale Rapunzel, sealed in alone to “await a prince to save her.” This programming scenario began with the princess alter waking up, as usual, to breakfast in “my” bed brought in by “my” servants. Puffy suddenly burst into the room, yelling and screaming at me about my “betrayal,” throwing my breakfast to the floor, yanking me out of bed, and throwing me around as he ranted. This alter didn’t understand or know what he was talking about. Crying in hysterical terror and confusion at this unfamiliar treatment, I cringed, asking repeatedly what I had done wrong and what he meant, and saying “I’m sorry” over and over, even though I didn’t know what I was sorry for. He trashed the bed’s canopy and yanked all of my beautiful gowns out of the closet, throwing them in a heap on the floor. He dumped all my jewelry on top, smashing my music boxes and porcelain horse and doll collections in with the mess, all the while screaming that I had betrayed him and had no right to anything ever again. Then he called in his housekeeper and told her to burn it all.

Next I was dragged to the tower room and locked in with only a hair brush, as he told me I could stay there and rot for all he cared—maybe some other prince would come and save me, but he didn’t want anything to do with me ever again. He said I was worse than garbage, and all sorts of awful stuff, while I kept crying “but I love you, I would never do anything to hurt you” in confusion and despair. The new “Rapunzel” alter created during this trauma was left there. Then the seal procedure was done, truly locking this part of me away until I was in my 30’s. Puffy didn’t know he had created a new alter; he thought he had sealed away the original princess alter. During the time I was actually imprisoned there (forever for the alter) food was slipped in on a tray through a little flap at the bottom of the door. “I” thought I was going to die there.

All of this helped redefine alter characters and roles. Using the original “sealed in” foundational “color-coded virtues” alters and their previously assigned attributes as entry points, further shutdown and discard programs were installed according to those alters’ ages and developmental stages. Layered and interwoven as always, each incident built upon previous ones, with training now redefining each color group while forging new links to the media stereotypes best-suited to the “adjusted reality” (belief systems, behaviors, mannerisms, attire, etc.), shaping the alters’ thoughts, feelings, words and actions along new life paths as societal outcasts: rebels, partiers, dropouts, sex and substance addicts, criminals and the mentally ill. Where my training had been based on following “good” paths (such as

“good girl” or “good soldier,” as defined by the “virtues” attributes), now I was sentenced to only “bad” paths. Tough alters learned they belonged on the streets. Red path alters became only a “woman in a red dress”: loose and easy, a slave to sex and/or a “sex slave” to be dominated—sinful, adulterous or a prostitute.

Each color path was thereafter taught that their only avenue to feeling “good” or “powerful” was that of being “bad,” so being stupid, scary, tough, weak, crazy, a hippie, rebel, partier, or dropout became good, necessary, desirable. Alters were trained to embrace “wild times” filled with sex, drugs, alcohol, criminal activities and/or weird, “flaky” practices. These despicable forced actions (including violence and sexual victimization or predation of the sorts I had been subjected to) sickened me at a soul-level, resulting in deep guilt, shame, self-disgust, belief in my “badness,” and an unwillingness to know myself or even think about or remember the awful things I had done that would prove how bad I was.

The mind-control and torture scenarios and tactics became more devastating and were usually at least potentially, and often actually, life-threatening.

When I was still only twelve years old, the dark blue and black path soldier shutdown involved a series of incidents in which, while drugged with LSD, I had to endure a “final survival skills exam” in a forested section of a local military shooting range/training ground. The staged event brought “failure,” beatings and interrogation as a “prisoner of the enemy,” then escape when I used self-defense training against other “soldiers” (children like me!). Then I was captured, given the label “traitor,” and forced to undergo more interrogation with a shocking gang rape. This reduced my cold, tough, mostly male alters to “a stupid, whimpering, useless little girl” on the floor. Then, almost worse humiliation: the elite black soldier alter was demoted to “guardsman/gatekeeper.” This meant that in the inner world he was seated at the door to the new inner bunkers that housed undeveloped “fat old men” leader alters. (Hastily implanted with hypnotic suggestion and generic looking photographs/visual images, they were based on the “fat military leaders” of my trainings, thus ensuring that if memories leaked they would be attributed to these implants rather than the actual men involved.) The black soldier alter had only the simple assignment to “maintain the status quo and await new mission orders, or recall and reactivation.” “Sealed in” concussed, feeling confused, sick, stupid, soiled, tainted, worthless and hopeless, this alter and the others connected to him were later called forth and easily convinced to “drown their sorrows like any soldier would under the circumstances”: drunkenness became “wise.”

This series of incidents also involved my trainers adding barracks to the military base in my inner world and moving “military-related files” there. Unknown to them, my file-keeper alter decided to keep his own separate files from that point onward. The trainers went on to implant a “24-man Rear Guard” (more

hastily suggested, mostly undeveloped alters, based on the “monkey guardsmen” in the Wizard of Oz and labeled “the Princess’s Guard”—mainly they just marched about in my head and sang “Ho, ee, oh, ho, oh”), install a new “re-activation code,” then “seal” it all with a new “cap”—a brown-uniformed “captain” alter, implanted and shallowly developed as a “good, kind, decent and loyal gatekeeper.” He was also given the title “brown leader,” placing him in charge of the brown “whisk away” and other “cover-up” security measures.

About this same time, changes were made to the tasks of a little alter named Pat, who had been created when I was 2 ½, then developed and trained with single-minded purpose: to keep “my dangerous true power” (understood by her to be a ball of yellow power wrapped in black to keep it contained, but really just a black bowling ball that she rolled on the ground) away from all alters unless properly accessed by my trainers and handler (or my mother for her healing magic coven). Now, her task shifted to rolling patterns with her ball on a large checkerboard-like square on the ground. She had to memorize specific patterns for specific aspects of a given situation, defined by the sounds, setting, people, clothing, props, behaviours, words, etc, in the staged scenario, each of which was color- and path-connected through other alters and somehow linked to her by way of the process of practice and memorization, aided by the green alter’s rhymes. Each square was linked to a specific category of these determinants, with each corner and side used to define them; examples include a square for lighting, noises/sounds, people present, body positions, clothing, etc. At first, she was given directions as she rolled her ball to the positions for each simple pattern “dark, noisy, men in suits, sitting” for example. As time passed, a patch of color was added to each square and she was taught more complex patterns and interpretations that could be applied to life in general in the real world. Thereafter Pat “rolled the patterns” continuously on the checkerboard in the inner world.

Meanwhile, as Pat mastered rolling the patterns she was taught, alterations were being made to an old crone “controller” alter and her control board, both of which were originally created when I was about 4 years old as part of the internal control and trigger systems for, among other things, my green alters and “inner soundtrack,” and later the “trip wires” and other “fail-safe’s.” Now, Controller’s job expanded to include interpreting the patterns and their connected colors and activating the correct alters in response. Her training was done using wrinkled, skin-colored gloves on my hands, a silver “Star Trek” look-alike control board with various colors of toggle switches, and experience watching another child (who this alter was told was Pat) roll the patterns through a window overlooking the checkerboard. I never had any image of the controller alter except the hands, the control board, and the window she looked out to see the patterns.

All of this was to give my personality system a new structure: a combination of four alters were to be simultaneously present in my consciousness at all times, though only one could actually be “out” at any given time. This would ensure two things: that I always appeared “normal” (not multiple) to the world; and that only the appropriate skills and knowledge base were accessible in any given situation. To accomplish this, Pat first had to see and hear where I was and what was happening, then instantly roll the patterns (inside my head) to convey the specifics of the situation. These patterns were then interpreted by the controller alter, who flipped the right combination of switches to bring the correct alters to “just below the surface” where they could then take their turns “out” as the situation warranted.

This process continued to relay the necessary information, now also adjusted to fit the new parameters of alter roles, for green alters to know which songs, rhymes, etc. to run in my head as instructions to the alters who were thus called forth. Alters were always very situation-specific for me; too much going on at once, or an unfamiliar situation could leave me too confused to function or communicate coherently. With this complex interplay always at work, it became worse. Pat and the controller never slept unless the body did, and I believe the controller (along with a few others, most particularly a time-keeper alter and one accidental self-protector alter) was actually only partially asleep, staying ever-ready to ensure “our” safety and well-being. It felt as if the controller alter and the control board/mechanisms, as well as the time-keeper alter, were part of my brain functions, the same way the inner soundtrack still is, even now after integration. The closest I can come to explaining how she did her task is to say that she mumbled to herself as she did the switches, telling herself (and the rest of us) what she was doing.

How did I undo all this and what followed over the next few years? My inner world was active in ways my trainers hadn’t anticipated. In the late 1990’s, a group of alters remembered enough of what had happened to plan and execute a version of the reactivation sequence and codes. Internally, they “rode the rainbow” to the inner military base and “opened the gate.” With this “invasion,” it was discovered that none of the military alters had any loyalty to my trainers: they simply “followed orders for their own good” or because they were “good soldiers.” All were convinced to “follow new orders,” as long as the “correct codes” were given. The existence of these codes is what enabled my alters to access the necessary memories for healing to occur. The result of this inner journey (still unfolding another decade later) immediately included a “truckload of information” containing all of the “sealed in military records, files and file cabinets,” and the addition of the military alters to my inner healing co-operative.

Within weeks, the next series of discard programs, “breathe smoke or die,” began training the asthmatic, wheel-chair bound light blue alter (the primary one who was around when I was hospitalized) into an addiction to cigarettes, and a by-product belief in her own stupidity for engaging in such a habit. These incidents took place in a local hospital. In late July 1973, just before I entered junior high school, no-one noticed the oxygen tanks for my oxygen tent in the isolation ward were different from the usual ones. No one noticed they held smoke (dry ice and ?), even when my “pure breathing space” filled with thick grey clouds and my coughing, gasping and breathing distress immediately worsened, then degenerated completely until I lost consciousness. Over a period of days, no one other than those involved noticed the grey smoke, or the switch to real oxygen when they needed to revive me (done by a nurse who worked with my trainers.) No one heard the commanding voice offering the “choice” to “breathe smoke or die,” or noticed what was happening to me, repeatedly and with the same results each time. No one asked any questions either, even when my left lung collapsed. Though time to heal was finally permitted then, over the next year, this same procedure was repeated every few weeks or so, until I literally learned, at 13, to “breathe smoke or die”: it was less life-threatening to breathe the smoke than to be continually put through such suffering.

When I was 13, 14 and 15:

In high school, popularity and peer pressure became driving forces in my life: the normal teenage need to belong afforded a strong motivating factor in discard trainings at this stage. To create a teen alter to “fit in” with the training-approved peer groups, the pink “good fairy” alter and the white (“cloud” and “voice of the gods”) alters were traumatized together, forcing a merger and creating a new “bewitching, barefoot, tarot card reading, hippie/airhead/flake with absolute, absurd belief in magic and the healing arts.” This “everyday life” personality was modeled after the character “Samantha” in one particular episode of TV’s “Bewitched.”

Planned addictive patterns of smoking and drinking settled into place. Staged scenarios (using newly available theatrical and scientific special effects) continued adding new discard programming, while familiarizing alters with their “bad” roles before they were allowed out in the “real world.” Drugged with hallucinogens, seated in “the chair” under many-colored strobe lights, participating in acted-out scenarios involving older teens in training (some “discards” like me, others merely as “actors”) costumed as “the in crowd from my school,” I was taught that the way to belong was to “smoke, drink, skip classes, have sex, party, be wild, drop out and rebel.” Popular teen idols and movie and TV characters of the time showed this to

be true. New belief systems were instilled quickly and easily. Over time, I was given further “rebel training” to enjoy hitchhiking, street-car racing and other dangerous activities, and to seek out gang members, drug dealers and other criminals for the “best deals” and the “most loyal, trustworthy friends to hang out with.”

Other training during this same period incorporated altering my feelings and perceptions through massive use of hallucinogenic drugs, mixed with large quantities of strong alcohol and extreme physical disorientation and duress. For example, one event I call “the idiot spin” had me very drunk, strapped in a device, and spun with great force, round about, upside down, left, right, and round and round again, as well as being suspended upside down for extended periods. Different alters were successively called forth during this spin and assaulted with many-colored flashing lights, painfully loud crashing, shattering sounds and music, and soul-wrenching accusations of the worst things they could imagine, until they vomited and/or passed out. The purpose of this spin was to tie all the colors together into a knot—a highly effective control mechanism state of sick craziness that could later instantly drop me to my knees or “send me over the edge.”

At 15:

Having robbed me of the honor roll status I maintained from first grade through to the end of my first year in junior high school, discard training had reduced me to failing grades two years later in senior high. The next step was complete removal of all normal teenage life. Using the excuse that I “missed too many classes due to illness” my parents and school principal arranged for me to drop out and take correspondence classes, with mandatory attendance at school events to ensure invitations from “ordinary peers” to connect me with the wild life I had been assigned. Now I stayed up most of the night, sometimes just reading or drinking with Dad (as I had been doing since the earliest discard trainings at 13), more frequently being trained or exploited by my handler or others. Based on earlier tests by my trainers, it was expected that I would not be able to maintain correspondence courses without the external motivation of teacher and classmates, so this was simply a step towards the end of further education for me. It also made me more accessible for discard programming situations, allowing plenty of time to instill new life habits and routines to further limit me. One example is the proven quite acceptable habit of hitchhiking to find parties, booze, drugs and sex: now it occurred daily, starting in the morning when I headed out to visit other dropouts.

For the spring and summer, I was given a furnished apartment and (despite my own babysitting income) my parents continued to provide me with a steady cash flow “for booze, food, parties, and other necessities of life.” I was encouraged to

“just enjoy myself and invite lots of friends for parties and sleepovers”; life became endless diversions and wild adventures termed “a good way to prevent depression and introspection.” This setup afforded time and space for my abusers to create and develop a branch of the purple path for the first time since the “virtues” had been sealed away, blending the purple pick-pocketing and shoplifting skills (“swoop and grab” trainings of a little 3-year-old “genie on a magic flying carpet” alter), the “sex, manners and feminine wiles” of red, and the dark blue “tough girl/soldier” trainings to produce a magenta alter: bold, flirty, Mae West and Cher-styled “undercover spy,” “keyholder and gatekeeper to the secrets of power.” Thereafter, she kept track of my activities and those of others I was involved with, reported them to my trainers and handler, helped to ensure what was locked and sealed away inside stayed there, and also provided “access” for later re-activation and re-coding.

During this time, in conjunction with the creation of the magenta alter, a series of programs that I call “reframes” was done, as part of the whole redefinition of alter roles. Similar to the shutdowns when I was 12, these programs involved a series of separate incidents that locked away some alters and provided new role parameters for others. They were broken up and locked away in what I refer to as “time bubbles”: disconnected, fragmented, puzzling and distressing chunks of time that both seemed to disappear, and at the same time to hang around and haunt me with horrific, terrifying confusion, mini-flashbacks and nightmares.

Such time-bubbles had occurred since I was young, becoming worse after each new series of shutdown programming sessions, contributing to my belief in the trainings and in my “craziness.” All experiences encapsulated in time-bubbles incorporated the use of hypnosis, and whichever drugs, tools, equipment and methods were deemed best suited for the purpose of the incident and the alters involved. All were of extended duration and an extremely traumatic or worldview-shattering nature for the alters. Sometimes there were time-bubbles within time-bubbles, each holding a different alter’s part of the event. Or an alter’s time “out” might be so confusing for them that they were unable to recognize where one event ended and another months or years later began, so the whole lot would be lumped into one time-bubble.

Furthering the confusion, some of the shutdowns when I was pre-pubescent and many of these “reframes” and subsequent lockdown programs included “erasing” what had actually happened and building new, fake “normal, ordinary, everyday” types of memories in their place. Although unknown alters usually retained their own memories after these incidents, it still seriously hampered my healing, and makes it impossible for me to be absolutely sure of the exact order of these types of programs. For the purpose of this writing therefore, the order these

types of events unfold is that which best conveys the patterns in how significant things were accomplished and the beliefs and behaviors that resulted.

The “reframe” series of programs started with the “eldest” red alter being assigned the role of “gatekeeper” for all the alters who had anything to do with sexual trainings, exploitation or rituals, most particularly the red alters and those who had split off to hold the darkest, most painful, traumatic aspects of these experiences, many of whom were part of a group called the “Dark Shadows.”

Next, a rapid “roll call” was done in a manner that brought all alters close to the surface but left none actually in control, with each alter or group being given new orders to either stay or “be banished forever to a far away realm where they could never harm anyone again.” Banished alters were then called forth, individually and in groups, and traumatized in ways that fit their programming, making them believe they were dangerous and/or failures, similar to the way it had been done in the early shutdowns. My body was then placed in the “magic gateway chair” and they were made to “ride the rainbow to distant realms” (actually various inner world places), “never to be seen or heard from again.”

Then, the live-theatre-style stage in my inner world was “renovated” and alters who had been told to stay were assigned “dressing rooms in the wings left and right of backstage,” where they were to “play out their roles on the stage of life.” The room of the reframed red “gatekeeper” alter was given a trapdoor, providing controlled access to the alters “submerged” in her, with “fail-safes” setup so that these alters’ memories (the craziest, darkest, most confusing, terrifying and crippling) would surface first and even I would find them unbelievable. (Sixteen years later, the stage and “stage of life” alters were the first to be discovered in therapy and come out to be part of the healing on a conscious level—luckily some of them were able to make sense of all this!) Color-codings and role definitions were pared, narrowed and reframed to simple, clearly identifiable stereotypes. The magenta “keyholder, gatekeeper, Mae West” alter was left in charge as “the actress on stage” that the “characters come through.”

After that, the dark blue “tough girl” alter was called forth and humiliatingly turned into a “tough biker dyke chick,” partly through a staged “seductive rape” incident by a female police officer on a police car in a closed-off section of a forested park, with male officers (some of whom I knew to be actual policemen) cheering her on and shouting obscenities about my “loving it with a woman” at me from the sidelines. This alter was defined as someone who “acted rather like Mae West, the bold, outrageous tough woman of an earlier time,” establishing the magenta alter as a sub-alter within her.

This combination of “personality and skills” made me behave like and appear to be just another wild, naughty, sexually acting-out teenager, allowing me to act

like any of the “stage of life” alters when their type of behavior was required, without revealing any of my history or the existence of the rest of my personality system. To make this work efficiently and safely, the new system of four alters was implemented; the “bewitching teen to fit in” white alter, “gate-keeping” red alter, dark blue “tough biker dyke chick,” and magenta “undercover spy” were the primary alters, with the sick light blue alter the main “allowable” other. Pat’s patterns and the controller alter’s interpretations and options incorporated these changes that supposedly limited my system to these few alters.

Over the next few weeks, each of the “stage of life” alters was individually called forth and given a false “memory shell,” so that if they ever told tales, shared secrets or otherwise broke the silence, what they said initially would be false, or fragmented and confused, thereby discrediting any of the truth that might manage to surface. These “memory shells” provided a false common background of life experiences that naturally progressed to my programmed lifestyle and beliefs—those of the shutdowns, outcasts, and later, disables and lockdowns—making everything feel and appear to have been by my choice or resulting from my true nature. The memory shells were created by showing each alter bits and pieces of “memory” that had been photographed, filmed, or otherwise recorded on a “brain imaging screen,” spliced together with new clips of staged scenes with characters alters were told were them. (Further details on how this was done are included in the section when I am 18 years old, during the “brain wipe.”) Because of these shells, it took years of therapy before I came near to understanding how all the pieces fit together in the puzzling bigger picture of my life.

In September, living again with my parents (after “proving I was a failure” at correspondence classes), I was enrolled in a high school across town, with the explanation “the others are all full.” This meant I had to bus downtown and transfer at the corner where my new drug dealing buddies, dropouts, and other street people hung out. Discard programs made this situation impossible to resist, so I rarely made it to classes, and if I did, it was under the influence of drugs. A few weeks later, when I failed a math test (the one grade I had been allowed to maintain, since it did not afford opportunities for me to tell secrets) I was finally convinced that “I really am stupid” and did “belong on the streets,” so I dropped out of high school for the last time “by my own choice.”

Moving Out. Disabled and Locked Down: 16 to 18 Years

At 16 years:

Shortly after my sixteenth birthday, I was once again in the ceremonial circle, this time as a “conduit” in a ritual intended to “claim power” for Puffy’s latest project. At the crucial moment, soul-sickened by the state of my life and desperately hoping to end her servitude, a rebellious alter slipped out through the red gate-keeping alter who was “out,” and cursed the circle members, “damning (them) all to hell with the full power I now hold.” As one, they let out a huge, horrified gasp as their belief systems turned against them: the ritual was ended abruptly, and most fled in evident distress. Although she was never provided such an opportunity again, and punishment was a beating by Puffy (with her own chains) that didn’t end until he choked her into unconsciousness, I was deemed truly dangerous and satisfyingly, the deferential (though sarcastically used) title “madam sorcerer” was bestowed and a shadow of fear remained in his and my trainer’s eyes and behavior.

In retrospect, it is evident that “putting me in my place” (as was said often) was the agenda—and my place was to be one of life’s losers, a high school dropout whose sole aim in life was to party. My asthma attacks became more frequent, as did attacks of hysteria. I ran away from home at every opportunity, only to be tracked down by my mother and berated, belittled and shamed with trigger phrases wherever I was found, in front of whoever was there.

At home, my family continued to follow discard training instructions: for example, behavior such as noisy sex in my bedroom elicited no intervention or comment. At one point, I met a man while hitchhiking; after we had sex in his fancy car he drove me home, came to the door, introduced himself and told Mom he wanted to marry me. For weeks, even though he was a stranger, Mom advised me to “marry the nice man, after all, you’ll never be able to look after yourself.” My new lifestyle left me with only damaged or discard-trained friends and little in common with the peers I had previously chosen. I hated myself, my family and my life without understanding why. I was primed for the next steps in the disabling of my life.

A party at home (with new colored strobe lights and booze supplied by my parents for everyone this time) ended with new “you’re crazy” programming involving “the guys with the straitjackets” being called to come and take me away (like the song “They’re coming to take me away, ha ha, ho ho, hee hee”), utterly humiliating me in front of all my friends. A mix-up occurred however, and actual paramedics showed up instead of actors. The intended lessons went unfinished, but I was left with a fear of expressing my true self and being labeled crazy for it, especially by friends or those with the power to lock me up.

In July 1977, my perceptions of “the Navy” went from “just old guys” to “my buddies who take me for motorcycle rides to get them pot, then take me to their

ship, buy me beer, and let me hang out with them." This affiliation with "the guys" was a discard "bad path" building block for my dark blue soldier and "tough biker dyke" alters, one which has left me to this day quite comfortable "hanging out with the boys" as "one of the guys." Still, by the time Elvis Presley died, I had been set up to move out into a "straight trade" living arrangement with one of those navy guys—the magenta and red alters traded sex for food, shelter, cigarettes and tokes, with freedom to have sex with others as long as I was there for him when he was in port. Two weeks later red alters were willingly pimped out to "nice men in hotels."

These things, among others mentioned, especially in my teens, were set up by people conveniently brought into my life through other people I knew that were connected with my trainers. Someone I trusted would introduce me to someone else connected to whatever my training called for. A trusted girlfriend, for example, who was part of my party/rebel discard training introduced me to the navy guy I moved in with, and another trusted girlfriend from the earliest "smoke to belong" training set up the pimping me out when the navy guy was at sea and I needed money for food and my medications and inhaler.

At 17:

Two months after I moved in, a discard-trained girlfriend took my place with the navy guy. This friend, the navy guy, my mother and others told me I was lucky living on the streets wasn't my only available option: my best plan was to get into the government's social services system, accept the label "handicapped" and move in with grandma. My sick, weak light blue alter in particular believed I had no other choice, so agreed to this plan. From then on, I was deemed "permanently disabled."

Over the next few months, training incidents lessened, largely due to my involvement with, then engagement to, a former navy guy (not the one I had lived with). This seemed to be taking me down an acceptable, discard-approved life path, but by late spring, I lived alone (while grandma was traveling), leaving me time for introspection that unwittingly fed into the final series of lockdown programs.

Unknown to my trainers, my "bigger picture" white alter and a "metaphysical healing magic" turquoise alter had been increasingly slipping through the white "teen to fit in" alter and the sick light blue alter, surfacing often. Under their influence, my self-awareness expanded. I saw myself and my life with new clarity. My conscious thoughts took new directions. Despite "plenty of friends and good times," I was depressed and suicidal yet again, living a life I knew at a soul-level to be wrong and bad for me. I had been trying to quit smoking and using drugs for years and did far too many dangerous things. As my suicide attempts increased in frequency and severity, and my activities became increasingly dangerous, the

turquoise alter “pulled together with healing magic” the red alters’ rebellious determination to do things our own way, and various other alters and their useful programs, to create a new, self-imposed mission: finding out what I had to learn and do to fix myself. These alters thereafter searched, asked questions, and perpetually sought answers and whatever help they could find.

During that spring, these same alters got me into a job training placement. This “inappropriate action” led to a discard-trained cousin convincing red alters to be her husband’s mistress, and a wild summer filled with one setup party situation after another, copious amounts of drugs/alcohol, and indiscriminate sex with loggers, bikers and members of the coast guard, most of whom were also drug dealers. We often went to midnight showings of such “soft porn” movies as “Flesh Gordon” and “Rocky Horror Picture Show,” all of which triggered nightmares and mini-flashbacks, while also reinforcing these “bad path trainings.”

Lockdowns and Final Seal at 18

In August 1978, my conscience made me break up with my fiancé, since I had been cheating on him for months. This left me feeling as if I was completely “falling over the edge.” Wondering if perhaps I was crazy and fearing “them coming to take me away,” the help-seeking alters obtained a referral from my doctor to “the best psychiatrist in town.” Presenting myself in skimpy, sexually provocative clothing, I was silenced (unintentionally) when the psychiatrist told me “There’s nothing wrong with you, you are not crazy. Go away and stop wasting everybody’s time.”

Meanwhile, my handler and his colleague (whom I had known as “The Colonel” from about age 4 and believe was in charge of my actual training) had a two-year-old dilemma that had reached critical proportions: using me outside the “official” training program had helped turn me into a “continual trouble-maker and potential time-bomb.” The two of them told many alters that they had to “shut (me) up once and for all” or they would “pay the price” and “suffer the consequences,” and that if they couldn’t shut me up, they “might as well slit (their) own throats.” (Fortunately for me in the long-term, they were so frustrated with me by this point that they often lost their temper and spewed out information, to me or to each other, that they probably didn’t intend me to hear.) So, instead of layering more programs into a failed system, over a period of about nine months, a “brain wipe” was done to erase what had been installed and my memories were “rebuilt,” then the alters who were allowed to remain were “locked down” and a “final seal” was done. (I think now that this last series was really just intended to confuse me/my alter system so badly that I would be too much of a mess to ever be credible, let alone a

threat.) My self-initiated visit to the psychiatrist provided the perfect opportunity to begin this process. Leaving his office in a state of despair and desperation, reeling in shock, I was hitchhiking home. Getting into a van that stopped, I sensed danger, but too late. The man in the back grabbed me, pulling me into the van. I felt a prick in my arm. The door slammed, the van began moving and my head started to spin. The men demanded to know what I had seen the psychiatrist for, ordering me to "Report now!" Then, groggy and confused from the drug they had injected, I was delivered to The Colonel at the local mental health facility in a staged scenario that made me believe he was a psychiatrist. He barked "It's about time. What's your problem?" Totally confused, I hysterically burst into tears and told him I thought I was crazy and needed help. He gave me a pill to calm me as I spilled the details he asked for.

Minutes later, the main dark blue soldier alter was called forth and convinced he was a traitor. As a good, loyal soldier, he was unable to bear this: such betrayal meant he was a failure, dangerous to all he believed in and valued. He was told, and agreed, that the only option was to "take one for the team" and have his brain wiped clean with a "new medical procedure"; at least then he would retain his rank and be provided for. He was "officially relieved of his duties" and "released on the condition he report as ordered" for the "appointment" that had been "booked" for the "brain wipe procedure" (for more than two months later, at a time when I would be of legal age, precluding any need for parental consent and any questions about "seeking help on my own"). After that, I was switched back to the hysterical, help-seeking alters, given another pill to calm me, and told to come back when I was "really ready to be helped." The dark blue "tough biker dyke chick" was called forth to be the one who returned to my "real life," and was left near unconscious on a nearby grassy knell, believing she had just "partied too hearty" yet again.

This became the pattern of the last and biggest parts of my shutdown training, the "brain wipe" and "joint lock" time-bubbles. During these "time-bubbles," one alter would attend a pre-set meeting with The Colonel in whatever role he was disguised to portray for that piece of the programming, then various alters would be called forth and given their specific training, with the "tough biker dyke chick" being brought "out" at the end and left somewhere in the real world, confused, not sure how she had got there, and generally attributing it to "another drunken blackout."

Some of these events started in the "therapy" office used by the "psychiatrist" Colonel for my Saturday appointments at the mental health facility, and then moved to what I have since learned was a storage room for audio-visual equipment. These hospital premises were used on a day when the areas I was in were mostly deserted. The "psychiatrist" said it was so we could take as long as we needed and

not be disturbed. Other events began in the Colonel's office at the nearby military facility (also mostly deserted when I was there). The magenta "spy" alter attended her regular "report and debrief" meetings, then we moved to other areas, usually the room with "the chair." (Long before this, noting she never remembered leaving, she assumed it was due to pushing away the distasteful memories of the often violent "sex games" the Colonel made her play every time she was with him.) The initial piece of the "brain wipe" took place shortly after my 18th birthday when the dark blue soldier alter appeared at the mental health facility on schedule, "officially signed his life away" at the front desk and proceeded to the "correct unit." After taking off his "civilian clothes," he lay still on the stretcher, cheerfully asking questions to hide his shame and fear while an I.V. was started in his forearm and the "proper chemicals to create the necessary reactions in the brain" were administered. Once the heart monitor and other "state of the art equipment" (simple audio-visual equipment!) on the table beside the bed were readied and the electrodes were all attached "strategically in key positions" on his head, torso and extremities, "Sergeant Tough" was told what would happen during the procedure while he floated in drugged calmness. When he opened his eyes, the "brain-imaging screen" beside him really did appear to display his "thoughts and memories." His life did play backwards on the screen when the "rewind" started. After he saw them "put his brain functions on hold" with the "pause" button, he surrendered all wariness and caution, and began helpfully pointing out "important bits that shouldn't be missed" as he was regressed in age and his memories were "erased in reverse order, all the way back to the womb." When he learned he was "really only a stupid little girl," he disappeared.

This "magic of modern technology" was accomplished using drugged hypnosis combined with photographs and films of similar looking soldiers dressed in the same kind of dark blue uniform he wore, progressing by successive steps—showing the age he was supposed to be for that part—through to younger cadets, then little boys that turned out to be little girls. Throughout this process, the same technique was being used on my other alters, by way of "pausing" the soldier alter and calling forth pertinent alters (by name and/or by a phrase that would catch any unknown ones, such as "the little bitch who poisons") at each successive age. All of my experiences known to the mind controllers were included, to the degree necessary for each alter or group to believe it real: the amount of "time out in the body" and their "age and stage" determined the shape and form of the "memories" they were regressed through. Some required only a little bit of imagery, others needed quite a lot. Of course, many mistakes were made, so the "brain wipe" was not as successful as planned.

In this process my trainers also used what I call “backward language.” It was a way of speaking used in some double-bind situations, and in the regression part of programming that “erased and rewrote” alters’ life experiences. It communicated my “false life” that was being erased and the new “real life” being installed, while informing my file-keeper alter of which file to pull for whatever was to be done. Its phrasing helped in my healing to distinguish what had actually happened to me versus the fake life that was created in installments over the years. Examples include: “You were never or never did…,” and “You did not receive… training,” which really meant I had and was now supposed to forget it forever.

When the brain wipe regression had all of me/us “in the womb,” a rapid “roll call” was done, then everyone was “paused.” While the alters were still “paused,” I was taken to the nearby, real world military base in the back of a military transport truck and placed in a dark room. The red “gatekeeper/madam sorcerer” alter (who believed she was a woman in her late 30’s) was called forth, “sentenced to eternal damnation as punishment for her misuse of power and authority” (among them the “traitorous actions” at 10 that led to her being stripped of power, and the cursing of the circle at 16) and sent to a very real seeming, hot, smoky “hell.” There, accompanied by the “screams and moans of her victims and the souls she had damned,” her “sins were replayed eternally” in the flames and air around her.

Next, the black soldier alter who had been left to “guard the leaders” was “discovered sleeping on the job” in his seat at the door in my inner world. Awakened into the body as he was “called to attention” with a brutal shaking, he was physically “taken away for questioning” in the familiar interrogation room, then dragged down the hall to a prisoner’s cell, beaten to unconsciousness and left “to await his fate.”

After that, I was returned unconscious to the hospital unit I had been in earlier, via the same transport truck, driver and guards. Alters necessary for my handler’s and trainers’ uses and my daily life were “re-grown” with images, scenes and real memories from my “normal, ordinary, everyday life.” End of time bubble.

The next bubble started at the military base when the magenta alter reported for debriefing. A number of significant changes and additions were made to my inner world, mostly through hypnotic suggestion. “The trained skills group” was turned off: these robot-like alters were merely repositories of trained skills that would kick in when required (such as martial arts or ritual chants), a common storage for skills which certain alters could access but which weren’t allowed to be held in the alters’ actual memories.

The brown uniformed “rear guardsmen” were called forth, turned into “real men” (instead of monkey-men), issued identities consisting of first names, ages, sexual preferences, and one self-defense move each, then assigned shifts to cover

the full 24 hours of each day—three 8-hour shifts with 8 men per shift. Their task became guarding/protecting the inner world by ensuring military alters behaved how, and remained where, they were supposed to. Although they could trigger internal warnings and "fail-safes," they mostly used distractions, like seeking out perverse sex or getting drunk in the real world, or else terrorizing or raping alters internally.

The inner military compound was then "permanently locked down." "Electric fencing" was installed to barricade access to the black, brown and orange-linked military base, security, and alarm systems area, ensuring "only men in uniform get through the gate" and "women and children stay where they belong, safe on the other side in rainbow land." One of the "rear guardsmen" was declared a "wiring expert," promoted to "black elite soldier" status, and assigned the secret task of maintaining the fence and all other electrical, mechanical, and "new technology" mechanisms.

Further drugs were administered. The control board and control room were upgraded, primarily to ensure that all security measures, fail-safes, trip-wires, self-destructs, etc. were functioning properly and that the ones to come would meld correctly with them. Pat and her patterns had "disappeared" during the regression, but the controller alter was "re-grown" (with new fake memories) and issued completely new instructions for interpreting the control mechanisms and activating the correct alter patterns. Then, along with the file room and timekeeping room, (and the self-created isolation ward), the entire upper floor of the control tower (atop a hill on the "safe side" of the fence) was "hidden from view in the middle of a garden surrounded by prickly thorn bushes."

New access and re-activation codes were installed, under the code name "Red Green SOS Plan," and the captain ("cap") alter was given new orders and set up as sentry at the front gate of the inner military base. Finally, a "protective bubble" was installed "around the whole world" as a "forever seal." End of time-bubble.

The "joint lock" started in March 1979, with the final seal in place by late May, the month I would have graduated from high school had I not been forced to drop out. This final lockdown and seal was also a series of programs over a period of time. It mainly involved the tough biker chick alter (and all of the alters within her), the red gatekeeper/madam alter who had been "damned to eternal hell," and the black soldier alter who had been "awaiting his fate."

First though, all alters (oddly even those who had previously been made to disappear) had to sign contracts agreeing to whatever they understood needed to be "locked away forever." Mostly during "therapy" with "the psychiatrist," each known alter or group was traumatized according to their training and beliefs, until they "realized" they must sign, creating a large time-bubble with many small

bubbles in it. This particular programming was done partly due to the help-seeking alters getting me into high-school upgrading classes, where activist alters used the white scribe/writer alter and the grey “business writer” alter to craft outspoken, activist-style essays. Because of this, it was the two writer alters who were called forth to start each session and required to “remain present” throughout, with the white alter’s hand used by everyone as they signed. The file-keeper alter also had to be “present” throughout this and other such events. The final two contracts were part of both writer alters being given programming to “only write when stoned” (on marijuana joints), ensuring they “never harmed anyone with their words.” After the last contract was signed, the last file cabinet was moved to my inner military base and the file-keeper was told his job was finished, all he had to do now was “maintain the few simple files” that remained.

The “joint lock” and “final seal” time-bubbles started with the magenta alter reporting to the Colonel’s military base office. After unusually vicious sex and many shots of rye during her debrief, she was taken to a “telephone booth-like” room and told it was time to “test her reflexes.” Adjacent to the room with “the chair,” this room was like a theatre sound and light booth, an x-ray technician’s booth, and a police interrogation room all combined. The window was one of those two-way things that could appear as a mirror or a window in each room, enabling my trainers to view me without my seeing them or to project whatever images they needed to make alters believe the scenario they were playing out. The control panel provided the necessary mechanisms for a variety of “special effects” which were used in many of my trainings over the years. She/I was instructed to hit the colored lights on the “pattern board” when they flashed. As they flashed faster and faster, triggering “idiot spin” craziness and nausea among other things, a rapid roll call brought most alters near to the surface. She became increasingly confused and disoriented, feeling as if she was being pressed against from behind. The glass door closed. The small room became hot. The Colonel kept yelling at her to keep up, to prove she still had “what it takes.” Eventually the heat, the confusing near to the surface presence of all the other alters, and the alcohol she had consumed made her pass out, dropping to the floor.

The next two pieces were very similar. Throughout both, Puffy’s voice did a continual rapid roll call, keeping everyone near the surface in a way that prevented the usual “siphoning off” of bodily pain and emotions into hidden alters, and whatever drug I was given while unconscious made it feel as if every word soaked in through my skin, making these incidents more excruciating and confusing than any others before.

The red alter was called forth first into my now naked body, awakening in the place she perceived as the “flickering red flames of hell.” Enraged at her captivity,

berated and harassed by the Colonel, a man she hated, she was offered a deal: she could sell her soul, be sealed and bound to a life or death vow of silence, and be given a fresh start, a new life, with the agreement to partner with the man they had chosen for her, for all eternity, in secret, and be limited to a "basic ordinary life with only the knowledge every woman needs (how to be sexy for your man, run a household, etc)." She didn't want to deal with the Colonel, but after he slapped her around and raped her, she was more amenable—anything was better than a life spent in hell, subject to this hated man. She agreed, and he knocked her unconscious.

The black soldier was also called forth naked, from the cell where he'd been "awaiting his fate." He too came out enraged, hating the man who was in charge of his life. As he was verbally and physically "dressed down" yet again for his "failures and laziness," he was also offered a deal—he could win back some degree of honor, respect and authority simply by agreeing to forever keep the silence and ensure no secrets ever escaped, partnered with a woman that would help him accomplish this. Refusing the deal, he too was convinced with a rape, one that had this tough soldier alter screaming in agony and willing to agree with anything to prevent this man ever sodomizing him again. As he cried out his agreement, the Colonel groaned his pleasure while choking him unconscious. Yet more drugs were injected, this time hallucinogens.

With both these alters readied, the dark blue "biker dyke chick" was next, coming to naked on the floor of the glass booth, with different colored lights flashing and the drone of the rapid roll call and snatches of different music in the distance. Seeing the Colonel as she struggled to her feet in an agonized daze, she screamed in outrage, "You raped me again, didn't you, you bastard!" He laughed and began insulting and haranguing her. The door of the room closed and it got so hot she could hardly breathe as she/I banged on the glass walls in rage, terror and confusion. Something disgustingly stinky started oozing up between the wooden floorboards as he told her how filthy she was, that she was garbage that belonged on the streets with the rats. Needles of pain assaulted her body (pinpoint jets of high-pressure water.) The walls started closing in slowly. She felt as if people were pressing against her from behind her, taking all her air, nearly suffocating her. Hysteria took over. When the Colonel told her she was so filthy they had to chip it away to find the real her underneath, and she heard, felt and saw pieces of something falling to the floor, she thought it was actually pieces of her. She kept beating at the glass walls, screaming in rage and begging for help at the same time.

He told her what a small, insignificant nothing she was. She could see herself in a mirror, trapped between something red on one side and something black on the other, could see herself getting smaller and thinner as he spoke, proving he was

right. The walls pushed closer, squishing her and her long internal lineup of alters, trapping them all between the red and black. As her image disappeared, she was given a strong zap of the little electrode which must have been taped behind and just below her left ear. She sank to the floor, banging her head and knocking herself unconscious.

When consciousness returned after the squishing, “I” was in the familiar “chair” again. The red and black alters had been called forth into the body at the same time. My experience was that “we” could “each” see “both of us” at the same time—the “soldier” in black on the left and the “lady” in red on the right, each in their usual attire. They were separate and distinct people that could be seen right there in the mirror in front of me—there was even a very thin person in between them, proving they were different people. There was a steady hypnotic pulsing sound as the Colonel introduced the two alters to each other. He paced and ranted, addressing them from first one side, then the other, making their heads whip back and forth as he reiterated their crimes and sins and slapped them across the face now and then. As each alter spoke or was spoken to, a sharp pinpoint of light flashed on their side and my temple on the other side received a zap. Anger, pain, total confusion and a desire to have this nightmare end was all they felt by the time he eventually spelled out the terms of the deal they had agreed to. Finally, released from the chair, each on their “proper side,” they were given a key for their side of the fence, which they used as ordered to “simultaneously lock it forever.” Then they were made to “smoke a joint over the fence” to “seal the deal” making them partners and locking them into their “assignments”—keep the lid on things at all costs! After that, told to sit so they could “toast the agreement,” they were seated back in “the chair.”

Later in therapy, when seeing through other alters, including “out-of-body” ones, I learned how much of this and other “tricks” were done. In this case, I was dressed on one side as the soldier and the other side as the madam sorcerer. In the chair, mirrors were around and in front of me so that each could see the “whole” of the other, and projections added to the effect (as did the drugs, electroshock zaps, pulsing sound, flashing lights, and the beaten, exhausted state of my body.) The mirror in front of me was a distance away, and had an elongated image of the “biker dyke chick” projected on it somehow (which she could see from the inside of my mind where she was trapped, leading her to believe she was trapped between these two alters, the red and black she had seen just before losing consciousness).

At some point the image on the middle mirror in front of me changed to that of a wooden fence like the one in the Wizard of Oz. When they were ordered to do so, the two alters stood up, each on their own side of the fence and walked to the gate as instructed—more mirrors and projections. The locking of the gate and passing of

the joint over the fence are mysteries I do not have the answer to—all I can say is both alters used their keys, and passed the joint to the other, though I do remember the soldier being annoyed that he had to “use the wrong hand” to do it. Maybe someone was behind the mirror, maybe it was just me using both of my hands, maybe there was a time lag that I didn’t perceive or remember. I suspect that a combination of the images, and hypnotic suggestion in the steady stream of directions, insults, and other comments coming from the Colonel, mixed with the alters’ desire to have the whole business over and done with made them see whatever was needed to accomplish this.

As soon as the red and black alters were strapped back in the chair, they were zapped and the dark blue “biker dyke chick” was called out again. Too disoriented to really understand what was happening, she was subjected to the same pulses, zaps, and flashes of light (and Puffy’s voice still doing the roll call in the background), along with another voice coming at her, telling her she was neither a man, nor a woman, but something in between. The voice said she could hang out with the guys, women or even children, but she didn’t really belong anywhere and no one would ever love her. She was nobody, nothing, stuck in the middle of nowhere with nothing better to do with her life than party it away, drinking and doing drugs wherever she went. It said that the only way she’d ever be able to make the pain, loneliness, and confusion stop was to have a drink or smoke a joint.

Then the voice said there was something of value she could do, one way to have a partner—she could be “married to the gate!” The voice made this sound wonderful and desirable, something really important that would make her happy and be a “good deed” in the process. (Despite her earlier training, or maybe because of it, she still inherently wanted to “do good”). It didn’t take much to convince her. She was released from “the chair” and with help, managed to stagger over to the gate in the fence. (She thought she must be very drunk.) She was given a “master key” in the form of a ring for her finger, and words were spoken “binding her forever to the gate.” Then she was provided a motorcycle in the inner world and told she was “guardian of the gate,” and that her task was to ride the back roads and keep watch over both sides of the gate. Except for parts that were the same as with the red and black alters, I believe this incident was largely hypnotic suggestion. Pretty much as soon as she was given her motorcycle, she just crumpled to the floor unconscious.

After sufficient time for my body to recover, the control mechanisms were drastically adjusted and the controller was again given new instructions. Then I was taken to the mental health facility. The “brain imaging screen” was used to update the “memory shells” of the magenta, red, black, dark blue, and controller alters, to incorporate this last series of programs.

Finally, I was “set free to live my life as I choose,” left “passed out” on the grass near the hospital in the middle of the night.

This was the last I saw of Puffy and the Colonel. I never encountered either of them after the final lock and seal was done, although they continued to have me watched and triggered by others when they felt it was needed. Calculated caution, along with terror of being locked up or trapped back in their control, has helped me get to the point I am at now, integrated and able to write this paper. When a watcher visited me during the years of my recovery, I made sure to appear as dysfunctional as I had been programmed to be, and they would go away satisfied that the shutdown programming had worked. I am still watched and occasional attempts are made to trigger me, but I really am free to live my own life now, the life my heart and soul choose, not the one they designed for me. Patterns can crumble.

Notes

[1] I say “military” because they wore Canadian military uniforms and used military bases, vehicles and equipment. I do not know if they acted on behalf of the Canadian military. I do know they were wealthy, influential people who were members of an organized crime ring with a professed goal of creating the world envisioned by their “Great Leader.” When I attended their leaders’ meetings as a note-taker and sexual slave, there were both North American and Asian leaders present. They referred to themselves as covering the Pacific region and mentioned several branches of their group who were each “in charge of” a different area of the world, just as I have been told is done in the game Risk.

[2] Once I crawled, I was punished harshly for touching the cameras/wires, then when I talked, I wasn’t allowed to mention them in anyway or even to look at them. I often got kicked in the butt or slapped across the face until I learned these things.

[3] Re-activation codes were words, symbols, and actions which alters had been trained to remember and respond to by following instructions they had been given. It was not enough for me to remember the codes; a person outside myself had to say the words, show me the symbols, and make the correct actions (after I told them what to say and do) for the instructions to work.

CHAPTER 20

Case Studies of Ritual Abuse Survivors: From Abuse to Activism

Jeanne Adams

Healing from ritualistic abuse is a long and arduous journey. The beginning of the journey is often overwhelming, both emotionally and physically, making it necessary for survivors to pull from inside reserves and focus only on their needs to survive and overcome. Further along in their healing journeys, many survivors make an interesting transition and discover a need to reach out to others who have suffered in ways similar to theirs. They find strength in working together, advocating for social reform and for each other.

The following case studies represent five self-identified, female survivors of ritualistic abuse. They have each done considerable healing work and are now involved in activism on behalf of other ritual abuse survivors. This activism work includes assisting in professional training through Mr. Light & Associates, Inc.,[1] and coordinating survivor workshops, peer support groups and various projects through the Utah Ritual Abuse Committee.[2] These case studies examine six areas: history, cult dynamics, forensic issues, clinical treatment, current life status and values. The information was obtained through oral interviews. Participants were advised to use pseudonyms. Some of them preferred to use their real names.

Niid La'i is an activist for abuse survivors, a writer and student, currently a bachelor's candidate working on her degree in Social Work. She is fifty-two years old. She grew up in Arizona, the daughter of a civil engineer and a homemaker. Her father worked for the Corps of Engineers. While her family was actively Catholic, they were also involved in a sub-group that inverted Catholic beliefs and brutalized Catholic rituals. Niid La'i has recalled a perverted Catechism that portrayed Jesus as a rapist with children abused on church altars. This particular sub-group followed her father's family with his parents and numerous brothers involved. Niid La'i's mother was pulled into the group by her marriage and remained a more passive participant. When Niid La'i attended parochial school, she also found herself subjected to abusive rituals at the school. She has noted

clandestine involvement of the Knights of Columbus and Order of the Rose. Her abuse was never acknowledged in her childhood.

As a young adult, Niid La'i lived with depression and anxiety. During this time, she was being subjected to continued ritualistic abuse through her extended family and taken to locations outside of Arizona for laboratory experimentation. At age thirty-seven, after several months of physical illness, she began to recover memories of abuse. She then went into therapy for depression and required psychiatric hospitalization four times. During these hospitalizations, she was also diagnosed with panic attacks and misdiagnosed with Bipolar Disorder and psychosis. During therapy, she wrote a letter to her parents regarding her abuse and they broke off any further contact with her. Over the next two years, medical complaints found her in the hospital eighteen times. Gradually her health has improved.

The traumatic memories of her ritual abuse did not surface until she had been in therapy for five years. At age forty-two, Niid La'i was diagnosed with Poly-Fragmented Dissociative Identity Disorder. She began "losing" therapy sessions when alters came forward unknown to her. Niid La'i describes her dissociative system as having seven separate worlds guarded by a gatekeeper. Each world has a name: the porcelain world, the box world, the maze world, the shard world, the red world, the dark world, and the black world. There are several personalities on each world. Personalities present themselves in fragmented layers, as if they were created to take minute pieces of one abusive event. She states, "One time someone asked me how many personalities I have. To explain how many I felt there were, I described being in a room up to my knees in confetti." Each piece of confetti represented "one and two minute" alters created to take on a mere fraction of her abuse. Today she is continuing abreaction work so that the trauma that created so many fragments can be resolved.

Niid La'i describes herself as "Mormon Eclectic." As an adult, she has accepted Mormonism as her base faith, but she is also searching for truth in alternatives. She has a special interest in Shamanism as part of her Native American heritage. Niid La'i feels that she has survived and remembered because she was somehow chosen to break the chain of abuse in her family.[3] She has recalled an abusive induction ceremony when she was fifteen years-old where she adamantly refused their decree of initiation. She holds her beliefs and the spiritual experiences she has been given as sacred. She feels committed to doing all she can to help people, particularly adults who were once so horrifically abused.

Deborah has worked as a professional woman all of her adult life. She is currently fifty-nine years old and works as a Public Policy Strategist, the project lead on a major public policy initiative. As a child, she grew up in a middle class

environment, the daughter of a housewife and an oil company sales manager. Her abuse took place primarily in Indiana, when she was between the ages of five and nine years old. The cult group involved approximately thirty people, sometimes more. Although clergy was represented, including an Episcopal priest, the group appeared to be organized throughout several towns and family lineages rather than through the infiltration of a specific church or organization.

Children were used in ritual ceremonies. These rituals were very eucharistically oriented, meaning they had to drink the blood and often eat the body parts of both the humans and animals that had been sacrificed. Some rituals took place in a church. Most of the ceremonies, however, did not take place in any churches but were held in the woods, in clubs or other meeting rooms, or cult members' farms or basements, depending on what was being done. The children were also used in child prostitution and pornography.

Deborah's abuse never came to the attention of authorities. Scientists, physicians, some of whom were family physicians as well as close family friends, clergy and other professionals were involved in the cult group. Injuries were explained away as accidents and medical needs met by those physicians. She was used in a child sex ring run by a cult-involved clergy, explaining her life-long hostility towards both medical professionals and clergy. Deborah did not confide her abuse to anyone.

Deborah has been able to trace involvement in cult activities through three generations of her family on her mother's side. She considers her mother a *captive adult*, a parent trapped in cult behaviors due both to dissociation and threats to the life of her daughter. As far as Deborah knows, her mother was never conscious of their involvement. Deborah's own memories did not surface until after her mother's death five years ago.

Deborah is a respected professional in the fields of healthcare management and public policy. At age thirty, she got sober and has remained so for twenty-nine years. Prior to her memory retrieval she developed chronic fatigue which began healing upon release of memories. Drawing on strategies she learned in alcoholism recovery, and coupled with a strong support system of friends, co-workers and husband, Deborah has done most of her healing without the help of a therapist. Prior to her memory download she was in Jungian analysis and her analyst kept saying, "Something is coming up soon." Shortly after the memories came forward, failing health forced her analyst's retirement.

When asked why she felt she had survived and remembered her abuse, Deborah cites several factors. By "day" both parents reinforced her intelligence, humor and independence. She has always seen life as a "whole." She sees her inside system as a whole with a dissociated inner child who holds the programmed

messages of abuse involving church and child sex rings. She believes that people are “hard wired” to heal and holds sacred the undamaged core within all human beings from which the healing light emanates and transforms, regardless of circumstances.

Marilyn is sixty-five years old and considering retirement. She is currently a licensed professional counselor and registered nurse. Her abuse took place in three segments lasting over thirty years of her life. As a child, Marilyn was involved in a day church/night church scenario where opposing beliefs were taught, the more benevolent and socially accepted beliefs during the day, and the darker and abusive ceremonies held during the night. In the daytime, Marilyn was raised as a Mormon. In the nighttime, Mormon beliefs became satanistic as they were inverted and abusively inflicted upon the children. Both daytime and nighttime gatherings were held in the same buildings. Night church represented a portion of the daytime congregation with twenty to thirty people participating. As Marilyn has stated, “Both used similar terms for rituals and ordinances, but they were different, as different as night and day. Both talked about God and Satan—I served both masters and was torn between good and evil.”

Marilyn spent most of her childhood in Utah. She has traced her family’s involvement generationally with both parents involved and rituals having taken place in her grandfather’s barn. Her father was a colonel in the army and a Certified Public Accountant. Her mother once served as an executive secretary to the Utah governor. She has recalled a paganistic ceremony held in the southern Utah dessert where approximately one-hundred people attended bringing in representatives from other states. Between the ages of eight and fifteen years old, Marilyn was also subjected to abusive laboratory experimentation in military settings, particularly in Veteran’s Administration Hospitals. As an adult, she was taken back to these settings several times for further experimentation and programming.

Marilyn began having migraine headaches when she was still a child. She also incurred numerous injuries, all of which were perceived as childhood accidents. Her childhood abuse was never acknowledged. At age twenty-four, she had a major depressive episode with psychotic features. Many diagnoses of anxiety and Post Traumatic Stress Disorder (PTSD) followed. Her own awareness of her DID and severe childhood trauma did not come until she was in her fifties. By that time, Marilyn had been hospitalized twelve times, the longest time for three months. She had spent a lifetime dealing with depression, anxiety, migraines, ulcers, Gastroesophageal Reflux Disease, Irritable Bowel Syndrome, fibromyalgia and asthma.

Today Marilyn works fulltime and participates in volunteer activities. While she still deals with some chronic illness, she recently took all of her grandchildren on a camping outing, a testament to her endurance and stamina. She has remained within the bounds of her daytime religion, but struggles to stay there. She believes that she survived and remembered because “God wanted me to.” She holds her relationship with God as sacred, along with her relationships with her children. She reveres nature, collects rocks and has developed a unique and irreplaceable sense of humor.

Bailey is a 55-year-old woman who runs a small non-profit organization. She spent her childhood in California. Her father was an attorney and her mother worked sporadically as a nurse. Both parents were alcoholic. Bailey’s father controlled his family through fear and sexualized violence. He also involved his young daughter in a child sex ring. When she was nine years old, Bailey’s father began taking her to clandestine meetings where twenty to thirty people would gather to perform abusive rituals on their own children. The group was patriarchal with its hierarchy including a Council of twelve High Priests. Masonic Temples were used for some of the ceremonies. Instructors taught the children to hate the concept of a loving God. They spoke of blonde haired, blue-eyed Aryans and felt that other races were inferior.

Bailey was a sickly child. Her parents told others that she was frail, clumsy and accident-prone. To further hide the abuse injuries and infections, Bailey’s mother would bring home drugs from the hospital where she worked. Shortly before Bailey turned twelve years old, she began bleeding from a spontaneous abortion and her mother took her to a county clinic. It was late at night and the doctor on duty became quite angry when he recognized the pregnancy. Although questioned by the doctor and nurse, Bailey remained silent regarding her abusers. She was taken home to recuperate and no action was taken on her behalf. A suicide attempt a few months later also concluded with no intervention or follow-up from hospital staff or authorities.

Bailey began getting painful headaches as a teenager. By age eighteen, she was diagnosed with depression. That same year, she managed to move away from home and distance herself from her destructive family. Unfortunately, the cycles of depression continued and her headaches grew into uncontrollable migraines. Bailey became a super-achiever, addicted to work and responsibility. Anxiety attacks ensued. By her early forties, Bailey became almost totally incapacitated due to unrelenting migraine attacks. At age forty-six, traumatic memories came flooding to the surface. As Bailey dealt with the emotions from the repressed traumatic events, her physical health greatly improved.

Bailey has always recognized the alcoholic dysfunction of her family of origin, but the abuse, from incest to ritual, remained hidden until the release of the repressed traumatic memories. It has taken her a while to accept a diagnosis of DID, first considering herself as dissociative and suffering from PTSD. She describes herself as having a component system, the same person at different ages, particularly the division of an unaware daytime child and the nighttime child who evolved to take on and hide the abuse. She had dealt with over one-hundred traumatic memories when she finally stepped into therapy. She remained in therapy for three years. Although she is still DID, she has made significant progress bringing her parts closer together. She no longer has migraine headaches. She states that she did not know how heavy the depression weighed on her until it lifted. Now it is gone.

Along with the traumatic memories, Bailey has recalled a number of spiritual experiences that occurred when she was a child. She has remembered standing in a brilliant light, feeling greatly loved and being told that she would survive and someday help other children. She believes that is why she has survived and remembered. She cherishes her relationship with her husband who is very dear to her. She holds sacred her present day family, friendships, and the loving presence she found in that sparkling light so many years ago.

Thunder is a thirty-eight year-old professional woman who works as a social worker. She was raised in a very rural area in the Midwest, born into a generational family that mixed religion with Satanism. Her mother's side was Primitive Baptist; the kind that believed in holding rattlesnakes and if it's God's will, the person gets bitten. Her father's side of the family were long-standing believers of the Night. She states, "In the nights, I was exposed to the demons and on Sunday they told me I was possessed and going to hell. To be honest, both were abusive and off the wall."

Facing abuse both at home and in the cult group, Thunder began disclosing the abuse when she was in the first grade. When told, her teacher responded, "Your parents wouldn't do that." After a third grade teacher gave her a similar response, she stopped disclosing. She went to school with bruises and broken bones that were explained away as childhood accidents. By age twelve, she had hypertension and a bleeding problem that required numerous surgeries. As a sophomore in high school, she attempted suicide and was hospitalized.

In college, she began her life-long quest to separate herself from her family. She developed the ability to find good people to help her, disclosing to them only the level of abuse she thought they could handle. After being diagnosed with depression, Borderline Personality Disorder and as schizo-affective, she was more accurately diagnosed with DID at age twenty-three. She describes her alter system

as having twelve alters at a long table, half standing in the light and the other half, standing in the dark. Additional alters have been identified later in her healing.

Unlike other survivors who have managed to break away from their perpetrators, Thunder continues to fight that battle to this day. Police reports from various locations document the harassment, but none of those agencies have been able to stop it. While her inside healing is progressing, the strain of continual outside danger is taking a toll on her physical health. She is truly fighting for her life.

When asked why she felt she had survived and remembered, Thunder responded that hers was a “very old soul” who had chosen to come into this battle so that the line of dark power would collapse. She said that at age five she had been placed on an altar where cult leaders had debated whether or not to kill her, because even then “there was too much light in her.” She holds her friendships and animals sacred, as she does her life, because she has fought so hard to keep it.

Thunder would tell others that ritual abuse is real. She is angry at a system—doctors, preachers, and teachers—that does not protect its children. As a child, she had no where to run or hide. People who were supposed to help her, did not. She is grateful that a handful of people knew she was worth salvaging and that they planted a belief of hope inside her.

Interesting conclusions can be drawn from the case studies of these five survivors of ritualistic abuse. Their childhood accounts depict events of physical, sexual and ritualistic abuse. The abuse was familial, each of them was brought into the organized abuse through one or more family members. For most of these women, generations of their families can be tied to their ritualistic abuse. The abusive groups appear to have been organized through family lines, towns and the infiltration into churches and benevolent organizations. Functioning in secret, these sub-groups inverted the beliefs of a greater Christian-oriented culture making them seen as satanistic. Whether they truly valued Satanic beliefs or simply used inverted values to sanction the abuse they inflicted is unknown. In all five cases, belief substantiated the severe trauma exacted in ritualized settings, enabling perpetrating adults to control the lives of their children and other captive adults.

Forensic issues did not come into play for these women. None of these cases came to the attention of authorities who were willing to step forward and report their suspicions. Medical personnel appear to have been on the front lines examining injuries, diagnosing infections and assisting in abortions. These professionals either accepted alternative explanations, chose not to report when abuse was suspected or were themselves participants in the abuse. Later when these survivors were adults, they saw physicians for chronic physical ailments and no correlation was perceived between unremitting illness and the now dissociated

childhood trauma. These cases finally came into the mental health system when the adult survivors requested assistance for varied complaints.

Therapy has played a significant role in the healing of most of these women. Unfortunately several of these survivors spent years in ineffective therapy due to misdiagnoses. Other co-existing conditions, such as depression and anxiety, were properly diagnosed and treated only to return again and again until the underlying Dissociative Disorders were finally recognized and addressed. While these survivors have found clinical treatment to be valuable, they have interspersed traditional therapy with diverse alternative treatments created by the survivor community itself. Today most of these women would still consider themselves dissociative and in the process of recovery, yet at the same time, they are highly functional, consciously aware of their abusive pasts and determined to break the chain of their generational dysfunction.

A common theme runs through the contemporary spirituality of these women survivors of ritualistic abuse. They all believe that they survived their abuse so that they could some day heal and assist others. They all speak in terms of light and darkness and of the choices they have made to embrace the light. Most of them have recalled vivid experiences when they made that determination, some of them on altars and others in a spiritual realm. While their current religious faiths vary, the things they hold sacred are much the same: relationships with present-day family and friends, nature and life itself. They are models of endurance and resiliency, examples that can give hope to other ritual abuse survivors who are still struggling to heal and break free.

Notes

[1] Mr. Light & Associates, Inc. is a non-profit organization created to educate professionals on the issues that surround childhood ritual abuse and advocate for survivors of severe childhood trauma.

[2] The Utah Ritual Abuse Committee is an activist project of Mr. Light & Associates, Inc.

[3] While discussing reasons why she felt she had survived and remembered, Niid La'i fondly referred to a quote by Carlfred Broderick, a professor of Sociology, who described the "valiant spirits" of some children being born into abusive situations. He stated, "My experience in various church callings and in my profession as a family therapist has convinced me that God actively intervenes in some destructive lineages, assigning a valiant spirit to break the chain of destructiveness in such families. Although these children may suffer innocently as victims of violence, neglect, and exploitation, through the grace of God some find the strength to 'metabolize' the poison within themselves, refusing to pass it on to future generations. Before them were generations of destructive pain; after them the line flows clear and pure. Their children and children's children will call them blessed." Broderick, C., (1986). I Have a Question. Ensign, August, 38.

Contributors

Randy Noblitt, PhD (Editor), is the Director of the Clinical PsyD Program and Professor, California School of Professional Psychology at Alliant International University in Los Angeles, California and co-author of *Cult and Ritual Abuse*. (rabuster@aol.com)

Pamela Perskin Noblitt (Editor), is a researcher and survivor advocate in Los Angeles, California and co-author of *Cult and Ritual Abuse*. (rabuster@aol.com)

Dana Raphael, PhD is a medical anthropologist, co-founder with Margaret Mead of the Human Lactation Center, a non-governmental organization, in Westport, Connecticut.

Thorsten Becker is a researcher, activist, and cult counselor/social worker in Lueneburg, Germany (mail@BeckerTho.de).

Wanda Karriker, PhD is a retired psychologist in North Carolina, and author of *Morning Come Quickly*. (sandime@twave.net).

Bettina Overcamp, PhD is a clinical psychologist, specializing in the diagnosis and treatment of (complex) dissociative disorders in a hospital setting and since 2006 and Board Member of the European Society for Trauma and Dissociation (ESTD).

Carol Rutz is a survivor, survivor advocate, and author of *A Nation Betrayed*. (casey@dmci.net)

Ellen P. Lacter, PhD is a psychologist in San Diego, California. (ellenlacter@earthlink.net)

Karl Douglas Lehman, MD is a psychiatrist in Evanston, Illinois.

Michael Salter is a social worker and PhD candidate in Australia. (msalter@asca.org.au)

Carl Raschke, PhD is the Chair of the Department of Religious Studies at the University of Denver, Colorado, and author of *Painted Black*. (crascke@DU.edu)

Martin Katchen, PhD is a sociologist, researcher, teacher and author who contributed to *Out of Darkness*. (katchen@inreach.com)

Thorsten Becker is a researcher, activist, and cult counselor/social worker in Germany. (mail@BeckerTho.de)

Frances R. Yoeli is a psychotherapist and EMDR specialist in Israel (yoeli@maoz.org.il)

Tessa Prattos, PhD is a psychologist and EMDR specialist in Athens, Greece. (tessapra@otenet.gr)

Sandra Buck, MD is a community pediatrician working in an inner city area in Nottingham, England. (sandrabuck2003@yahoo.co.uk)

Carole Mallard is a retired police officer in Hertfordshire, England.

Sarah Nelson, PhD is a lecturer at the University of Edinburgh, Scotland. (Sarah.Nelson@ed.ac.uk)

Ursula (Ulla) Brigitte Fröhling is a journalist in Hamburg, Germany. (froehling@microglobe.com; www.ourfatherinhell.com)

Valerie Sinason, PhD is a psychologist in London, England and author of *Treating Survivors of Satanist Abuse: An Invisible Trauma*.

Graeme Galton is a Consultant Psychoanalytic Psychotherapist who works at the Clinic for Dissociative Studies.

David Leevers, MSc. is an engineer and inventor who worked on the European Commission Sustainability Projects and focused on the interface between technology, invention and psychology.

Lorna Joan Brown, PhD is a psychologist in Port Elizabeth, South Africa. (ljwbrown@iafrica.com)

Thomas Michael Ball, EdD is Emeritus Professor in the Department of Communication at Spring Arbor University and a pastoral counselor in Spring Arbor, Michigan.
(righteousoaks@comcast.net)

Alison Miller, PhD is a psychologist in British Columbia, Canada. (www.lifeseminars.com and www.psychologists.bc.ca/Pro/AlisonMiller)

Jean Riseman is a survivor, survivor advocate, and the editor of *Survivorship in San Francisco, California*. (www.survivorship.org, rahome@ra-info.org)

Trish Fotheringham is a survivor in Canada. (rainbowtrish@myself.com)

Jeanne Adams is a survivor who has devoted her energies to educating law enforcement agents and agencies and others and advocating for survivors through the organization, Mr. Light and Associates and author of *Drawn Swords*. (mrlightorg@gmail.com)

RITUAL ABUSE AND MIND CONTROL

THE MANIPULATION OF ATTACHMENT NEEDS

EDITED BY
ORIT BADOUK EPSTEIN
JOSEPH SCHWARTZ
RACHEL WINGFIELD SCHWARTZ

THE BOWLBY CENTRE
KARNAC

RITUAL ABUSE AND MIND CONTROL

RITUAL ABUSE AND MIND CONTROL

The Manipulation of Attachment Needs

Edited by

Orit Badouk Epstein, Joseph Schwartz, and Rachel Wingfield Schwartz

The Bowlby Centre

KARNAC

Published in 2011 by
Karnac Books Ltd
118 Finchley Road, London NW3 5HT

Copyright © 2011 to Orit Badouk Epstein, Joseph Schwartz, and Rachel Wingfield Schwartz for the edited collection, and the individual authors for their contributions.

The rights of the contributors to be identified as the authors of this work have been asserted with §§77 and 78 of the Copyright Design and Patents Act 1988.

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted, in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording, or otherwise, without the prior written permission of the publisher.

British Library Cataloguing in Publication Data

A C.I.P. for this book is available from the British Library

ISBN: 978 1 85575 839 1

Edited, designed and produced by The Studio Publishing Services Ltd
www.publishingservicesuk.co.uk
e-mail: studio@publishingservicesuk.co.uk

Printed in Great Britain

www.karnacbooks.com

CONTENTS

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS vii

ABOUT THE EDITORS AND CONTRIBUTORS ix

INTRODUCTION by Joseph Schwartz xiii

CHAPTER ONE
What has changed in twenty years? 1
Valerie Sinason

CHAPTER TWO
"An evil cradling"? Cult practices and the manipulation of attachment needs in ritual abuse 39
Rachel Wingfield Schwartz

CHAPTER THREE
Torture-based mind control: psychological mechanisms and psychotherapeutic approaches to overcoming mind control 57
Ellen P. Lacter

CHAPTER FOUR
Love is my religion 143
Anonymous

CHAPTER FIVE
Working with the Incredible Hulk 155
Orit Badouk Epstein

CHAPTER SIX
Maintaining agency: a therapist's journey 169
Sue Richardson

INDEX 179

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

Thanks and appreciation to the Conference organizing group: Natasha Roffe, Briony Mason, Elizabeth London, and Orit Badouk Epstein, for the skill, passion, and generosity they brought to producing this pioneering conference. It was a remarkable experience to work in the context of so much warmth, courage, and solidarity, never undermined by the traumatic nature of the material we were working on together.

A very special thank you needs to go to Valerie Sinason and the Clinic for Dissociative Studies, who jointly hosted the conference. Without Valerie, no psychotherapy conference on this subject would ever have been held.

Many thanks to the Executive of The Bowlby Centre, who had the integrity and political strength to back a conference on this issue and to associate the Centre's name publicly with the treatment of ritual abuse survivors.

Our heartfelt thanks also go to Oliver Rathbone for his willingness to publish a book which is not only ground-breaking, but also controversial, and for his continuing commitment to giving a voice to writers in the fields of attachment and trauma.

Last, and most importantly, we would like to acknowledge the survivors of ritual abuse and mind control who have refused to be silenced and whose capacity to fight back in the face of extreme torture teaches every one of us what we need to understand about the human spirit—that love is stronger than hate. We dedicate this book to them.

Rachel Wingfield Schwartz

ABOUT THE EDITORS AND CONTRIBUTORS

Anonymous is a survivor of organized ritual abuse, torture, and mind control, and a writer, campaigner, international speaker, and trainer specializing in psychosis and trauma.

Orit Badouk Epstein is an attachment-based psychoanalytic psychotherapist and supervisor who trained at The Bowlby Centre, London where she is a member of the executive committee. She runs a private practice in North London and is one of the trustees of the Paracelsus Trust at the Clinic for Dissociative Studies. Orit has an interest in, and experience of, working with clients who have suffered from extensive trauma and abuse, including ritual abuse, sexual abuse, violence, and emotional abuse. Orit has published articles in the Attachment Journal and is on the editorial board of the ESTD news letter. She is committed to campaigns to counteract the denial and disbelief around Ritual Abuse. Email: orit_badouk@hotmail.com

Ellen Lacter has been a clinical psychologist in California, USA for the past twenty-three years, and has specialized in the treatment of dissociative disorders and ritual abuse and mind control trauma in

both children and adults for the past twelve years. She has a number of published chapters in edited books on the subject of ritual abuse and mind control. She is programme co-ordinator for the Play Therapy Certificate Program at University of California San Diego-Extension. She is also an activist on behalf of victims of ritual abuse and mind control, and maintains a website to educate the public and mental health community on these subjects: http://www.endritualabuse.org/

Sue Richardson is a member of The Bowlby Centre with over thirty years' experience in the helping professions. Her personal and professional attachment networks are in the northeast of England, from where she provides training, consultation, and supervision for those working with complex trauma and dissociation. Sue is a member of the European Society for Trauma and Dissociation (ESTD) and the International Society for the Study of Dissociation (ISSTD), and a founder member of their UK networks. She belongs to the training faculty of ISSTD and is the Training Co-ordinator for ESTD UK. She is the co-editor and co-author of two books and a number of published papers concerning child abuse trauma, attachment, and dissociation. suerichardson1@compuserve.com

Joseph Schwartz is a training therapist and supervisor at the Bowlby Centre. His books include *Cassandra's Daughter: A History of Psychoanalysis in Europe and America* (Penguin & Karnac). He is the author of numerous papers on clinical practice, the history of psychoanalysis, and the role of genetics in mental distress. josephschwartz@btinternet.com

Valerie Sinason is a poet, writer, child and adult psychoanalytic psychotherapist, and adult psychoanalyst. She is Director of the Clinic for Dissociative Studies, Honorary Consultant Psychotherapist for Cape Town Child Guidance Clinic, and President of the Institute for Psychotherapy and Disability. She has been a Consultant at the Tavistock and Portman Clinics until 1998, when she left to start the Clinic for Dissociative Studies. She has also been a Consultant Research Psychotherapist at St George's Hospital Medical School. She specializes in trauma, disability, abuse, and dissoci-

ation. In 1994, she published *Treating Survivors of Satanist Abuse* (Routledge) as a result of a Department of Health funded clinical piece of research carried out at the Portman Clinic. Her most recent book, *Attachment, Trauma and Multiplicity* (Routledge), is coming out in a revised edition next year. vsinason@aol.com

Rachel Wingfield Schwartz is a UKCP Registered Psychotherapist and was the Chair of the Bowlby Centre 2002–2009 (formerly Centre for Attachment-based Psychoanalytic Psychotherapy), where she is also a training supervisor and teacher. Rachel has a wide range of clinical experience in a variety of settings, including schools and prisons, and specializes in working with survivors of trauma and abuse, including sexual abuse, rape, domestic violence, war, state terror, and ritual and cult abuse. Rachel has been working with ritual abuse survivors since 1993 and is passionately committed to ending the disbelief and silence surrounding this issue. Rachel is also a psychotherapist with the Clinic for Dissociative Studies. rachelwingfield@btinternet.com

Introduction

Joseph Schwartz

Twenty years ago I first heard Valerie Sinason describe her work with victims of ritual abuse. The cost to her was enormous. She could scarcely believe any of things she was told, the tortures and the horrifying involvement of trusted pillars of the community—doctors, lawyers, police. It was Rosemary's Baby in spades. Valerie was terrified.

I did know from Valerie's work with mental handicap the kinds of abuse that can be perpetuated by those in power over the vulnerable, including the continuous reports of abuse perpetrated in old age homes, in the Catholic Church, and in the cellars of madmen like Josef Fritzl. But ritual abuse seemed a step too far.

I felt myself rebelling at the words satanic abuse. What? In this day and age people believe in Satan? Surely not. But, actually, horrifying as it was, I had little trouble seeing ritual abuse more simply as organized abuse. After all, in the USA, people organize themselves into lynching parties, the kind of terror that had never been far away during my time in Mississippi. I was further helped by one survivor saying, "Satanic abuse, Schmatanic abuse. What is going on here is torture."

Abu Ghraib, the Maze Prison in Northern Ireland, the School of the Americas in Fort Benning, Georgia, where Latin American police forces are trained in the techniques of torture: we are surrounded by examples of torture. Dr Sheila Cassidy testified eloquently to the torture she endured at the hands of Chilean police during the coup against Allende (Cassidy, 1977). Bobby Sands starved himself to death in protest at torture at the Maze Prison in Northern Ireland. John Schlapobursky has turned his torture at the hands of the South African police into lifelong work with trauma survivors here in London.

The images of torture at Abu Ghraib prison by the US army will stay etched in our minds for many years (see The Abu Ghraib Prison Photos, Google Images). So why shouldn't rogue elements in our communities, often, indeed, pillars of our communities, organize themselves into rings to do with children what they please, including torture and mind control to prevent the torture from being disclosed?

In the present case of the torture of children, where are the techniques learnt that are so necessary to keep the victims silenced? The CIA's MKUltra documents (thousands of papers and articles on which are listed on Google and can be found at Declassified MK-Ultra Project Documents) on mind control are discussed by Ellen Lacter in her fine chapter. The question asked by MKUltra experimenters was: "Can we get control of an individual to the point where he will do our bidding against his will and even against such fundamental laws of nature as self-preservation?" (MKULTRA, 1952). The experiments are hair-raising. You can see a fictional representation of the techniques used in the last of the Bourne films, *The Bourne Ultimatum*. Director Paul Greengrass has done his homework to show the use of torture (waterboarding) to create manipulatable, altered self-states. Remember, fiction tells us stories that are valuable and true. We do have non-fiction sources to back this up. Ellen Lacter, in this volume, documents the gory details of torture-based mind control.

* * *

We are fully aware that ritual abuse is an extremely controversial subject with a particularly aggressive and vociferous opposition. The crude, sadistic satires in *Private Eye* (Anon, 2010) are the least

of it. The substance of the attacks on the reality of organized abuse and torture of children always reduce to that old chestnut—it is unscientific. "Give us proof," say the naysayers. "How is this different from reports of alien abduction?" say the clever-clever wags of *Private Eye*.

Indeed. How is it different? In the case of alien abduction, we are asked to believe that visitors to this planet from outer space have kidnapped someone, taken them away, and brought them back. It is not believable. In the case of ritual abuse, we are asked to believe that people can organize themselves into groups for the purpose of torturing children. There would seem to be a significant difference here in what we are asked to believe.

But we are dealing with belief systems. Belief systems resist change, sometimes vociferously and aggressively. Consider, for example, Holocaust deniers. This extreme form of anti-Semitism believes that the Holocaust is a Jewish propaganda coup. ". . . historians have a blindness when it comes to the Holocaust because like Tay-Sachs disease it is a Jewish disease which causes blindness" (Irving, 1986).

What is the belief system behind the aggressive vociferous denials of ritual abuse torture? I believe that this is a refusal/incapacity to see/entertain just how brutal our social system has been and is. Check out the nineteenth-century images of child labour (Google Images: Child labour, nineteenth-century Britain). Until recently, our culture has always brutalized its children (DeMause, 1995). But in my experience, no amount of evidence can defeat a belief system. No matter what evidence is offered, there will always be vociferous and aggressive denial of the reality of ritual abuse torture or, as history of psychoanalysis shows, the reality of childhood sexual abuse, full stop. The case of Holocaust deniers is just one extreme example of aggressive denial.

Readers picking up this book will want to evaluate the evidence for themselves. In this effort they may well be deterred by the argument that the evidence is not objective or, in the argument's more abusive form, the evidence is unscientific.

What does "unscientific" really mean?

When evidence is labelled "unscientific", it means it is not to be trusted. And vice versa. To be scientific means to be trusted, as in the advertising trope, "It is a scientific fact that . . ." What is the

adjective "scientific" doing in there? What, really, after all, is a "scientific" fact? A fact is a fact. Or, as my father used to say, "Facts are stubborn things." (And, mind you, facts are socially constructed by human labour (Fleck, 1979).)

Psychoanalysis has suffered the accusation of being "unscientific" from its very beginnings (Schwartz, 1999). In recent years, the Berkeley literary critic Frederick Crews has renewed the assault on the talking cure in verbose, unreadable articles in the *New York Review of Books* (Crews, 1990), inevitably concluding, because nothing else really persuades, that psychoanalysis fails because it is unscientific. The chorus was joined by philosopher of science, Adolf Grunbaum (1985), who played both ends against the middle: to the philosophers he professed specialist knowledge of psychoanalysis; to the psychoanalysts he professed specialist knowledge of science, particularly physics. Neither was true (Schwartz, 1995a,b, 1996a,b, 2000).

The problem that mental health clinicians always face is that we deal with human subjectivity in a culture that is deeply invested in denying the importance of human subjectivity. Freud's great invention of the analytic hour allows us to explore, with our clients, their inner worlds. Can such a subjective instrument be trusted? Not by very many. It is so dangerously close to women's intuition. So-called objectivity is the name of the game in our culture. Nevertheless, 100 years of clinical practice have shown psychoanalysis and psychotherapy not only to be effective, but to yield real understandings of the dynamics of human relationships, particularly the reality of transference–countertransference re-enactments now reformulated by our neuroscientists as right brain to right brain communication (Schore, 1999).

* * *

I think there is danger that the politics of ritual abuse and mind control, particularly the involvement of our State apparatus in its development and practice, can deflect us from proper concern with survivors. This book is a report from a powerful, moving conference where, for the first time, a safe enough space had been created for survivors and therapists to come together to discuss the pain and difficulties of recovering from the torture of ritual abuse and mind control. This book is a tribute to those victims who have had

the courage to come forward and tell us what they have had to survive. It has taken courage because we, as potential witnesses, can become hostile and rejecting in hearing about crimes of this nature. Each case is a mini-Holocaust of torture. Like the Nazis, the perpetrators of these crimes are enemies of the human race. All of us who are hearing about what has happened for the first time need to listen. Ritual abuse and mind control is happening. This volume lets survivors and therapists speak for themselves.

References

Anon (2010). In the back: 20 years of satanic panic. *Private Eye*, 16 December.

Cassidy, S. (1977). *Audacity to Believe*. London: Collins.

Crews, F. (1990). *The Memory Wars*. New York: New York Review of Books.

DeMause, L. (1995). *The History of Childhood*. Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson.

Fleck, L. (1979). *Genesis and Development of a Scientific Fact*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Grunbaum, A. (1985). *The Foundations of Psychoanalysis: A Philosophical Critique*. Berkeley CA: University of California Press.

Irving, D. (1986). Cited in Wikipedia, note 62.

MKULTRA document MORI ID 144686 (1952).

Schore, A. N. (1999). *Affect Regulation and the Origin of the Self: The Neurobiology of Emotional Development*. London: Psychology Press.

Schwartz, J. (1995a). Is physics really a good model for psychoanalysis? Reflections on Langs and Badalamenti. *British Journal of Psychotherapy*, *11*: 595–601.

Schwartz, J. (1995b). What does the physicist know? Thraldom and insecurity in the relationship of psychoanalysis to physics. *Psychoanalytic Dialogues*, *5*: 45–62.

Schwartz, J. (1996a). What is science? What is psychoanalysis? What is to be done? *British Journal of Psychotherapy*, *13*: 53–63.

Schwartz, J. (1996b). Physics, philosophy, psychoanalysis and ideology. On engaging with Adolf Grunbaum. *Psychoanalytic Dialogues*, *6*: 503–513.

Schwartz, J. (1999). *Cassandra's Daughter: A History of Psychoanalysis in Europe and America*. London: Penguin [reprinted London: Karnac, 2003].

Schwartz, J. (2000). Further adventures with Adolf Grunbaum. *Psychoanalytic Dialogues*, *10*: 343–345.

CHAPTER ONE

What has changed in twenty years?

Valerie Sinason

This subject is not easy. Indeed, this is a historic conference. It is an act of disobedience, of speaking out, of political, personal, and clinical ethics and advocacy. It comes from a crucial link between the Bowlby Centre, the Clinic for Dissociative Studies, and the Paracelsus Trust, which I started to aid clinic clients at the instigation of Pearl King, one of its benefactors. Now it is its own separate entity, which has the benefit of Pat Frankish as Chair, and Kate White, Orit Badouk Epstein, Deborah Briggs, Richard and Xenia Bowlby, Michael Curtis, and Brett Kahr as trustees. All agreed that this conference had an important educational aim.

It is the seminal work of John Bowlby and the relational approach to trauma that has offered the best way forward for many of us, together with a willingness to stand up and be counted. Indeed, just as John Bowlby recognized and acknowledged dissociative identity disorder (DID) and separation anxieties, his son, Sir Richard Bowlby, has continued to hold the torch, supporting unpopular and outcast areas of society and the mind.

Rachel Wingfield Schwartz and I were involved together with survivors who had been ritually abused over twenty years ago. It is

also important that the Clinic for Dissociative Studies speaks up about this, as we have been very clear that the aetiology for DID that we witness in the consulting room comes largely, in our practice, from ritual organized crime.

For some people, some known and others invisible, coming to this conference has been an act of unbelievable heroism, of telling, of witnessing, of knowing. There will have been punishments for coming, for listening, for speaking. Some have not come, feeling that by staying away they have saved particular speakers and friends from being hurt. Others have come to stand between their protectors and the cult.

Last night, like many people here, I received e-mails and phone calls from different countries imploring me not to speak, as I would be killed. It was survivors who wrote, for whom the cruellest manipulation of attachment needs is exactly this: abusing someone's capacity for love and concern.

It is perhaps the cruellest lie and trick to make a child or vulnerable adult feel that expressing care for someone else could lead to his or her death.

Survivors in the audience have shown so clearly, and with great protection for us, the listeners, something of what they have gone through—the dilemmas and choices given to Trish and Ellen sharply showed the techniques of how this was done in the flower game. (There are many other programmes with flower games, too. No system in any survivor is identical.)

No wonder the so-called "easy" choices of the ordinary non-abuse world are so unbearable. What dress shall I buy? Which food shall I buy? Any choice is linked with danger and death. Everything comes from tests, and all tests are lethal.

So, what is different over twenty years? I will start with what is the same.

What has not changed in twenty years

The law: duress and ritual crime

I have the permission of a brave survivor, a professional called Lisa, to state this. Lisa went to the police to speak of all the crimes she had been forced to commit from earliest childhood to her late

thirties, as well as all the crimes of which she had been the victim. The litany was familiar to all of us in this work (Hale & Sinason, 1994). Murder, fake murder, necrophilia, bestiality, abortion, cannibalism, oral, anal, and vaginal abuse, drinking blood, semen, and urine, eating faeces and non-food substances, drugs, pornography, and so on. If every survivor spoke out, then slowly the awareness might spread of what people were forced to do.

The Detective Inspector she bravely spoke to was very sympathetic and said the judge and jury would make some remission of sentence, he was sure, but as there was no plea bargaining in this country, and no law on duress, she could face a custodial sentence of some twelve years.

Until we join together to ask for a law on duress, many survivors will be left with an unbearable and unfair guilt their abusers have projected into them, aided and abetted by a non-understanding legal system.

Also, we have do not have ritual crime as a separate category of criminal offence. This means that accounts of spiders, snakes, masks, and unusual costumes do not count as evidence, unlike in Idaho, in the USA. Making children and adults eat non-food substances is also not a crime, so checking a stomach for insects, etc., would not be done.

Reality remains the problem

Outside of the "Adam" case (the poor Nigerian child whose mutilated body was found in the Thames), the subject is still not bearable. The "Adam" case was somehow bearable for racist reasons: he was a black child from "over there", not one of "ours". However, the use of white British middle-class and upper-class women, men, and children is still invisible.

The cruel treatment of the Baby Ps and Victoria Climbies who carry on living and do not obtain the peace of dying is just as intolerable to face as it ever was.

The pool of practitioners has not enlarged adequately. However, we have been a rather stable group, and thank heavens for Dr Joan Coleman, still working as hard as ever in her seventh decade. Joan Coleman provided me with a sanity check when I had my first British case over twenty years ago, and I will never forget entering

her warm, containing RAINS meeting and knowing I could say what I had been told and would be believed.

Indeed, the experience mental health practitioners go through when describing this work to sceptical colleagues provides us with a shadow of what survivors feel.

Yes, there are more referrals, and more people are aware of ritual abuse, but we remain an amnesic alter-personality representing unwanted reality! While DID at least has a neuroscientific "cachet" to sweeten the pill of reality, attitudes to ritual abuse, especially within our particular British culture, do not change.

MPs, journalists, and police cannot take this much further, as they fear for their popularity. Here was the difference between a former British DCI, Chris Healey, at a past RAINS conference and Colonel Kobus Jonker, who, at that time, had formed the Occult Squad in South Africa. While DCI Chris Healey warned that British police were not prepared to hear this, and someone from the CID should be asked for, with the preface that this was a difficult subject, Kobus instantly put up slides of ritual mutilation and pointed to evidence and its meaning.

Obedience, hierarchy, and professionals fearing for their jobs

One client angrily commented, when I spoke of democracy *vs*. her cult loyalty, that nearly all the professionals she had met had just blindly obeyed their seniors whatever their true thoughts about appropriate treatment or action.

She was, of course, right. When faced with a senior practitioner who is sceptical, the most highly skilled people give up their brain!

So what is different?

In the late 1980s and early 1990s, almost everyone we saw said he or she was a survivor of Satanist abuse. Satanism, like Pagan and other belief systems, is totally legal now, and we have the first serving Satanist naval officers as well as Pagan police officers. Only a small number of members of any particular religion actively abuse. However, later referrals included Luciferians, those from Paganism, Wicca, Voodoo, Black Witchcraft, Black Dianetics,

Gnostic Luciferianism, Illuminati, Military Mind Control, MK Ultra, and Bluebird. Gradually, too, we saw victims of abuse within mainstream religions, abuse by mullahs, priests, vicars, and rabbis. Of even more concern were those whose systems can include all of this: a devoted Catholic alter, an abusing Satanist one, a Celtic one, a Kabbala one, an Egyptian one . . . None would want to know each other. The innate phobia between them is then enlarged by their opposing belief systems.

The change through a personal journey: publish and be saved

Without a new social paradigm, the change that happens is more the personal journey of the survivor and the therapist. There is evidence of the social change that has happened by the number of survivors present here today. And once survivors do all the talking and writing, we will truly have the paradigm shift that happened once the Women's Movement took on domestic abuse and child abuse.

It was, therefore, very good to hear from the Conference that ninety-year-old Betty's memoirs were shortly going to be published, and that Wanda Marriker's book, *Morning Come Quickly*, had appeared in the USA. Art therapist Ami Woods here works with a well-known artist, or, rather, group of artists in one body who happen to have DID, called Kim Noble, and we also have the cross-stitch work by Jane James.

So publish and be saved

Randy Noblitt, Pamela Perskin Noblitt (Noblitt & Perskin Noblitt, 2008), Ellen Lacter, Alison Miller, Jean Riseman, and Carole Rutz, all from the USA, help us.

In the meantime, the clinician's moral and personal journey is a crucial one. It took me a year to talk about ritual abuse, and when I handed the manuscript of *Treating Survivors of Satanist Abuse* to Edwina Welham at Routledge, I slept properly and no longer feared being killed, as I had done. I also felt enormous gratitude to my agent, Sara Menguc, for being willing to handle such a topic when she had hoped for me to write a book on family problems that affected everyone, based on my *Guardian* column!

If it took me a year to talk about ritual abuse because initially I felt silenced, it took me ten years to talk about mind control. It was thanks to colleagues Adah Sachs and Graeme Galton, who asked me to write about an incident that had haunted me for their book (Sachs & Galton, 2008), which led me through. I had been terrified of moving from ritual abuse to writing about mind control, but their gentle pressure released me. Ten years . . .

Art and creativity aid us all in this work, so I will end with a poem I wrote about it.

Treating Satanist abuse survivors

In the garden a green breath rises and rises
I am sitting by the window
On the table your fax sends murder down the line

In the hospital a woman asks for drugs
A child is dying through her mouth
Neither of them can speak

In the morgue the dead child is calling for her mother
As we write the scars on her head
close like red zips

In the wood dead dog hairs grow flesh
Whimper, then howl for a kennel

We put these things together
Together we find a voice.

Appendix: Calendar abuse—the significance of ritual dates. Prepared for the Bowlby Centre and Clinic for Dissociative Studies Conference on Ritual Abuse, 23–24 September 2009 by Valerie Sinason with David Leevers

Introduction

"The fault, dear Brutus, lies in ourselves, not our stars"

(Shakespeare)

As our human species crossed the known continents, we took with us our awareness of day and night, light and dark, sky and earth,

sea, river, rain, floods, monsoons, mountains, thunder and lightning, wind. We took with us our awareness of other living creatures, birds, fish, animals, and insects. Looking up at the skies, we drew the constellations of stars and ascribed particular meanings to sun and moon. Like frightened children trying to turn dots on a night-time wall into a friendly shape, we have needed to ascribe meaning and myth to planets and stars.

This is not to deny the possibility of many kinds of meanings that are currently beyond our skills and comprehension, but to point to the psychological need to defend against such huge unknowns.

Faced with mortality, time, and the Cosmos, we needed belief systems to sustain us; some were harsh, to mirror the social or geographical environment, others offered hope and love. The movement of peoples across the earth, dispersals and dispossessions, the growth of art and writing, led to an import and export of deities. Winning a war truly did mean gods and goddesses were on the side of the victors, and vanquished peoples took up the deities of the victors.

History is the voice of the winner. However, the vanquished can be heard in other ways. In the history of religious dates across the world we can see the old vanquished gods and goddesses peeping through the days that earlier were theirs but which were later transposed to their victorious descendants. We cannot even be sure that our earliest recorded history is the earliest. Where did the Sumerian deities come from?

However, what is repressed can break through. For example, the 25th of December, ascribed to the birth of Jesus, is the birthday of the Sun and, therefore, the most obvious date for Tammuz, the reincarnation of the Sun God. Tammuz was a Babylonian and Sumerian god, and the tenth month of the Hebrew Calendar is named for him.

Yule, the Winter Solstice on the 21st December, was moved by the Roman Catholic Church to the 25th of December, which was also the Roman Saturnalia festival, a time for drinking and feasting. Druids at this period saw the mistletoe as representing sexuality, and mistletoe, as with other ancient "props" was absorbed also. The same processes, as you will see, affect other key dates in the seasonal calendar.

The Edict of Milan

Although our multicultural British society means that we are meeting those who have been hurt through a variety of belief systems, the majority still have links with the Judeo-Christian heritage. Indeed, Christianity is currently still the world's largest religion. As a result of this, there is one major historical event that I consider crucial to consider.

For a belief system to gain a huge following it requires to be linked with a national identity. It was the conversion of Emperor Constantine of Rome that was to transform the chances of Christianity, which had previously been the religion of a persecuted minority. Constantine had declared that he would convert to the High God of Christianity if he won a particular battle, which he did. A year later he offered an edict that was remarkable in its tolerance. In 313 AD he announced "that it was proper that the Christians and all others should have liberty to follow that mode of religion which to each of them appeared best". He considered Rome would benefit from the prayers of all its different citizens and belief systems. No religion was illegal.

However, just a few years later, non-Christian belief systems lost their imperial support and funding, and the oppressor's former religion was now the victim, and finally designated the "pagan". Despite the current recognition of many of the belief systems that exist, the most ancient, that pre-date the major religions, have continued to be demonized or disavowed. Such rigid exclusion can be as damaging as complacent inclusion (witness the current religious trauma in Ireland) in making it easier for abusive practices to flourish.

Finally, ritual and ceremony are powerful processes and events that can enrich our lives and aid us at moments of greatest vulnerability or happiness: for example, births, deaths, and marriages. They are an intrinsic part of human existence and attachment. The focus of this text is concerned only with the tragedy that occurs where ritual and ceremony is used abusively.

How to use this

When children and adults made their brave way to speaking of abuse within religious or cult systems in the 1980s, they showed,

through their verbal and non-verbal responses, that certain dates held enormous terror for them. Some, living with a supportive friend or partner, were able to disclose something about these dates. Many others had been taught for years, under the greatest threats of torture and punishment, to be silent. It soon emerged in treatment that they could face only too readily the threats to themselves. However, worst of all, their own loving capacity to attach was being abused. Those who terrified them were threatening to hurt anyone they disclosed to.

"Are you sure you are all right?" was the most common question asked of any therapist, counsellor, or friend after a disclosure.

After further years of work, survivors were able to let us know that there were some areas of terror where, if we named the unnameable, they would be free to express more. In a project on ritual abuse based at the Tavistock and Portman NHS Clinics in the early 1990s, Dr Robert Hale and myself found the majority of people who came to us were in particular states of terror on the 31st of October. By looking into the history and meanings of that date, we were able to provide some small easing of the pain being carried.

While the Internet is filled with details of all kinds of occult practices and all kinds of calendars, there is no substitute for a relationship in which a little trust might dare slowly to develop. Just as no two children in the same family have had exactly the same parents, no two children or adults hurt within any particular religion or cult experience it in exactly the same way.

To our amazement, some people can move forward without flashbacks into a new life of light and love, while others continue to be hurt anew with each ritual date. Some people carry post trauma responses to a few dates in the year, while for others, their whole life consists of being a slave to the calendar, with no respite, and with therapy as the only witness.

Where someone has been profoundly hurt in the context of a belief system, they can find all belief systems frightening and triggering and this calendar will carry a major health warning. For others, who have managed to have a secure attachment to a belief or a person, it can be of interest to see how key basic themes of human predicaments appear and reappear in different belief systems.

In other words, there is nothing prescriptive in this calendar. It is not a manual. It is not an exhaustive list of triggering times. Nothing can be a shortcut away from the painful shared task of bearing witness. However, I have a hope that it might help some understand why "calendar abuse" is one of the most lethal kinds of abuse (Sinason, 1994).

When I began working with survivors of ritual abuse, I found that their abuse was often linked to the Christian concept of Satan. Since then I and other therapists at the Clinic for Dissociative Studies, the Bowlby Centre, and elsewhere, have worked with survivors of abuse within the world's greatest mainstream religions, let alone sects and cults. Unerringly, we found that men and women from all over the UK, who did not know each other, were all falling ill, or being attacked, or suffering flashbacks on the same dates.

They show us, yet again, how our human hopes to understand the great unknown are beset with all the cruelties and unworked-through trauma of our species as well as the hope for something better.

Survivors of ritual abuse of any kind come from all social classes, all religious backgrounds, all racial groups, all ages, and all levels of education. While dissociative defences can allow some to continue with an apparently normal life with their pain invisible except to those who know them, others are profoundly visible, with the toll of flashbacks and problems with regulation of mood.

While there are survivors who come forward and write accounts of what has happened in their life in order to help others, many of these are, understandably, anonymous. There are also survivor-professionals who write from their professional context and need the freedom to not have to disclose their lived experience. While the climate continues to be unsafe, although more understanding than twenty years ago, there is more impetus for therapists and others to speak the unwanted message to the rest of society.

This is especially true when the subject is about belief. Speaking about hurt within a religious context can evoke fears of being seen as illiberal and intolerant. There is also the deep fear of threats coming from fundamentalists of all belief systems, let alone members of groups who hurt others.

I consider it helpful to make clear that I am not talking about any religion *per se*, only the human representation of it. I am particularly talking about attachment patterns. Those with a secure attachment to their religion (as to their family, nationality, place of work) are able to speak confidently about the positives and negatives of their experiences. It is those with a disorganized attachment who will fight to the death for the honour of a maltreating parent, deity, or religious representatives. As one wise religious leader told me, "It is a sin of pride to think you have to fight for God's honour—you are implying He does not have the power to stand up for Himself."

Towards a definition of spiritual abuse

> Spiritual abuse is the enforcement of a position of power, leadership or attachment in which total unquestioning obedience in thought, word or action is demanded of a child, adolescent or adult under threat of punishment in this life and in an afterlife for themselves, their families, helpers or others.
>
> In this abuse, there is no room for the individual to be allowed their own relationship with the divine as the abusers claim they are the only link. [Sinason & Aduale, "Safeguarding London's Children" Conference, June 2008]

Towards a definition of ritual abuse

> A significant amount of all abuse involves ritualistic behaviour, such as a specific date, time, position and repeated sequence of actions. Ritual Abuse, however, is the involvement of children, who cannot give consent, in physical, psychological, emotional, sexual and spiritual abuse which claim to relate the abuse to beliefs and settings of a religious, magical or supernatural kind. Total unquestioning obedience in thought, word or action is demanded of such a child, adolescent or adult under threat of punishment in this life and in an afterlife for themselves, their families, helpers or others. [Sinason & Aduale, "Safeguarding London's Children" Conference, 2008]

Ritual as defence against fear of mortality

> "Who turns and stands there lingering—
> that's how we live always
> saying goodbye"
> [Rainer Maria Rilke, 8th elegy, p. 153]

Freud considered that there were four unbearable factors for our species:

- we are not the masters of the universe,
- we are descended from apes,
- we are not masters of our unconscious,
- and we are not immortal.

Copernicus and Galileo discovered that the earth was not the centre of the universe. This rocked the Western Church. Our second most impossible subject is that of our own ancestry. We descend from other animals. Our longing to see our births and lives as having special meaning over and beyond that of other living beings can stir up the need to invest extra significance in our position among other animals and other species. This may not have been such a problem to pre-Judeo-Christian culture, where there were animal, bird, and location Gods.

A third wound is that we are not masters of our unconscious and can be taken unawares in all kinds of ways by our own internal processes.

The fourth, and perhaps most important, difficulty lies in coming to terms with our own mortality. Time, mortality, and the cosmos are key areas that both thrill and terrify us. Religions and other belief systems try to offer us ways of making sense of the meaning of our existence and our place in the universe.

Where there is secure attachment, towards family, friends, or belief system, there is a greater capacity to be protected from the persuasion of abusive religions and cults and to benefit and be enriched by loving ones. Where there is insecure attachment, or, especially, a disorganized attachment, there is greater need or vulnerability to shape a universe where everything is accounted for and ordered as either the master or as the slave.

In trying to make sense of changes of seasons, day turning into night, thunder and lightning, volcanoes, tidal waves, the position of the planets, the nightly death of the sun and monthly coming of the moon, it is not surprising that almost every belief system struggles to find a reason for birth and death, sacrifice and hope, and that the meaning of "sacrifice" becomes literal, not just symbolic. Fear of sexuality, body fluids, what comes out of a woman's body, a wish to control procreation and primitive responses to the newborn baby become transformed into rules and punishments. Attachment needs are denied by turning them into rigid and hurtful rituals, rather than transforming creative ones. Guilt about surviving when others die leads to the need for more blood sacrifice, which slowly, in safer countries, transforms into symbolic sacrifice.

It is not, therefore, surprising that responses to particular dates can be frightening to survivors of abuse by mainstream, minor, and fringe religions, as well as to survivors of cult abuse, which are often the abusive leftovers from earlier primitive mainstream religions.

Sadly, beyond all this, we know through Milgram's obedience experiments that even the more securely attached individuals, when faced with the group power of unreason and cruelty, give in to living and behaving in a barbarous way.

Time and calendars and repetition compulsion

September, the time for starting school in the UK and the northern hemisphere. Autumn days. Many adults can remember on such days the excitement of a new pencil-case, exercise books, covering a text book, excitement as well as anxiety at starting school. Others who were bullied and terrorized in school remember the season with dread. Our memories are evoked by dates and seasons. Sometimes "calendar abuse" hurts more than other abuse because just a time or day of the week can trigger flashbacks and horrific memories without another human being even needing to be there.

From earliest human experience, the seasons have made a huge impact on our psyches as well as night and day, sun, moon, stars, wind, rain, thunder, and lightning. To deal with the impossibility of time, all human cultures have needed to create a calendar that links

our species with deities. Where there is a deity standing for love, these dates can bring joy and celebration. Where the deities are gods or goddesses of punishment or hatred, the dates can bring pain and terror. Sometimes a date can be a mixture. Most belief systems include ideas of the death of a god and rebirth, sky gods and underground gods, twins and murder/sacrifice linked to the seasons, the stars and planets, and the sun and moon, the transience of the individual *vs*. the permanence of the heavens.

Our established religions, in their early days, were highly intelligent in trying to woo public interest by keeping alive seasonal dates already linked to older religions but giving them another name! So, looking into the meaning of dates that can be triggering provides a multicultural theological and historical lesson in cultural archaeology.

It is very hard to consider that a date that has precious meaning, whether spiritually or emotionally, to one individual, can mean such abject terror for another. We need to try to preserve our own pleasure in certain dates while understanding the pain they can cause others.

In addition to the key universal yearly dates, such as the new moons, full moons, solstices, equinoxes, etc., different cults and religious groups also have other dates that are special. Personal birthdays, family birthdays, deaths, and wedding anniversaries are included. Even the clinician's, partner's, or friend's birthday are significant. Should a personal date fall on a ritual/religious date, there is even greater impact. Should a personal or religious date fall at a weekend then there is even more time dedicated to it.

Many belief systems also have an attraction to numerology—the magic meaning of numbers. Humans have found different ways of counting to try to control time and the uncertainty of life and have ascribed different religious and mystical values to the existence of certain numbers. This means that, in addition to key festival times, other dates have particular numerical meaning, including the survivor's age on their birthday. There are 650,000 references to numerology on the Internet, and interest in birth signs and horoscopes is part of this.

Numbers are also linked to different ages of development which have religious meaning in different belief systems: for example, baptism, barmitzvah, marriage to Christ or Satan.

A birthday that also falls on an occult date (which is planned in some generational families by inducing birth) therefore has a double meaning, and if it also falls on a Friday, Saturday, or Sunday in a given year it has even greater impact.

Calendars, years, and months

The current occult calendar consists of four periods of thirteen weeks each. Thirteen is the number that signifies rebellion in the Judeo-Christian tradition as there were thirteen at the Last Supper. We can now see why Friday the 13th is seen as so doubly unlucky. Should Friday 13th also be a full moon or another occult date, it triggers even more fear. The superstition around the number thirteen goes back farther. In Norse mythology there were thirteen present at a banquet in Valhalla when Balder (son of Odin) was slain, which led to the downfall of the gods. Friday the 13th will happen between one and three times in any given year.

Twenty-eight was a special number linked to the menstrual cycle. Alistair Crowley saw twenty-eight as the number of the Beast, Bahimiron. Twenty-eight also means power for Cabbalists. Numbers divisible by three also are given extra meaning—with Revelations saying 666 is the name of the Beast.

The Kabbalah has a whole system of meanings linked to numbers.

Numbers have also been necessary to control the way the movement of our planet is measured.

The Maya tracked a fault in the solar year in which they counted 365 days per year. Because they could not use fractions, the "quarter" day left over every year caused their calendar to drift with regard to the actual solar year. The 365-day year contained months that were also given names.

The Sumerian Calendar, sixth century BC noted Mercury, Venus, Mars, Jupiter, and Saturn, as well as sun and moon, and synchronized a lunar calendar of twelve lunar months a year with an extra month inserted every four years. The early Egyptians and Greeks copied this.

The Babylonian Calendar and the *Jewish Calendar* followed a lunar month (Genesis 1:14) and special offerings were given on the day of the new moon.

The Islamic Calendar, the lunar calendar used by Muslims, dates from 622 AD (the year of the Hegira); the beginning of the Muslim year retrogresses through the solar year, completing the cycle every thirty-two years. The Islamic (Muslim) year begins with Muharram. All Islamic dates are subject to sighting of the moon; an event that may be one day earlier or later than the date listed.

The Celtic Year was a solar year, marked by four major bonfire feasts a year dedicated to the sun.

Hindu Calendar. The year is divided into twelve lunar months, but, because of the shortfall, it becomes lunisolar. The solar year is divided into twelve lunar months in accordance with the successive entrances of the sun into the signs of the zodiac, the months varying in length from twenty-nine to thirty-two days.

Jewish Calendar (Judaism): the calendar used by Jews dates from 3761 BC (the assumed date of the creation of the world); a lunar year of 354 days is adjusted to the solar year by periodic leap years.

Gregorian Calendar: the solar calendar now in general use in the UK and used by Christians in the West was introduced by Gregory XIII in 1582 to correct an error in the Julian calendar by suppressing ten days, making 5 October be called 15 October, and providing that only centenary years divisible by 400 should be leap years; it was adopted by Great Britain and the American colonies in 1752.

Buddhist Calendar. Apart from the Japanese, most Buddhists use the Lunar calendar. The most significant celebration happens every May on the night of the full moon, when Buddhist all over the world celebrate the birth, enlightenment, and death of the Buddha over 2500 years ago. It has become known as Buddha Day.

Pagan Calendar. By the third century the term Pagan, or "Paganus", was used to mean all those who were not Christians. Slowly, it took on a more disparate meaning and the term is now often seen as an umbrella term that covers many belief systems such as Druids (who have their own calendar), followers of Asatru, who adhere to the ancient, pre-Christian Norse religion, Wiccans, who follow pre-Celtic beliefs, and those who follow the religions of ancient Rome, Greece, or Egypt.

Contemporary Satanism, as espoused by Anton La Vey, was created on 1st May 1966 through the San Fransisco Church of Satan. As with many religious leaders, he chose an auspicious date on which to launch his church. He has considered that the highest holi-

day in Satanism is the date of one's own birthday, in direct contrast to religions that deify "an anthropomorphic form of their own image" instead of seeing themselves as a god, as in Christianity (Ecclesiastes 7:1) where " the day of death [is better] than the day of one's birth". Satanism is a legal belief system in the UK.

Shintoism, Jainism, Bahai, Luciferianism, Chinese traditional religion, African religions, and all the branches of Christianity all have dates in common.

Christianity is the largest world religion (including all its subsects and branches) and Scientology is the smallest among the religions that are counted in national statistics.

Ceremonial time

When does a ceremony begin? According to the Eastern Orthodox Church calendar, the day begins after evening vespers at sunset and concludes with vespers on the following day. For this reason, the observance of all Eastern Orthodox holy days and Jewish holy days begins at sunset on the evening before the holy day.

Do not assume that because someone has been triggered by one date that they will be by all the ritual dates, as each abusing group behaves differently and prioritizes different dates. Only the survivor knows at what time the bad dates are most relevant and which dates these are.

Days of the week

For some survivors, a day has significance only if a ceremony happens to fall on it. For others, days of the week have a mystical meaning regardless of the week or month it is linked to. We can be so used to measuring our time in days and months that we lose sight of the fact that the names provide understanding of deep meanings.

Sunday is the first day of the week. From prehistoric times to the close of the fifth century of the Christian era, the worship of the sun was dominant. Sunday celebrates the sun god, Ra, Helios, Apollo, Ogmios, Mithrias, the sun goddess, Phoebe. In the year 321, Constantine the Great ruled that the first day of the week, "the

venerable day of the sun", should be a day of rest. The Christian concept of resting on the Sunday was borrowed.

Monday is the day of the moon goddess.

Tuesday is the third day of the week. Tiw's day is derived from Tyr of Tir, the God of honourable war, the wrestler and the son of Odin, the Norse god of war, and Frigga, the earth mother.

Wednesday comes from the Scandinavian Woden (Odin), chief god of Norse mythology, who was often called the All Father and is linked to the Roman Dies Mercurii.

Thursday comes from Thor, the God of strength and thunder, who is the counterpart of Jupiter, or Jove. Thor is the only god who cannot cross from earth to heaven upon the rainbow, for he is so heavy and powerful that the gods fear it will break under his weight. It was said that whenever Thor threw his hammer, the noise of thunder was heard through the heavens.

Friday is derived from the Germanic Frigga, the name of the Norse God Odin's wife. Frigga is considered to be the mother of all, and the goddess who presides over marriage. The name means loving or beloved. The corresponding Latin name is Dies Veneris, a day dedicated to Venus, the goddess of love. Any Friday that falls on the thirteenth day of the month has a ritual meaning. Friday is the unluckiest day of the week for many Christians, who believe that Christ was crucified on this day.

Saturday is corresponding to the Roman Dies Saturni, or day of Saturn, the Roman god of agriculture. Saturday is also represented by Loki, the Norse god of tricks and chaos. Saturn is also linked to the Greek God Cronus, who devoured his children.

For Jews, the Sabbath and day of rest is Saturday.

It is worth noting the similarity of the names of days with Sun Day, Moon Day, Mars Day, Mercury Day, Jupiter's Day, Venus's Day, Saturn's Day.

Months

January comes from Janus, the two-headed God of doorways: the month was named by Pompilus, the second king of Rome ca 700 BC.

February is the Roman festival of purification that was held on the 15th of that month.

March/Martius was the original beginning of the year and the time for the resumption of war. Mars is the Roman god of war. He is identified with the Greek god Ares.

April comes from Aphrodite, the Greek goddess of love and beauty. She is identified with the Roman goddess Venus. Called Aprilis, from aperire, "to open", possibly because it is the month in which the buds begin to open.

May is derived from Maia (meaning "the great one"), the Italian goddess of spring, the daughter of Faunus, and wife of Vulcan.

June comes from Juno, the principle goddess of the Roman Pantheon. She is the goddess of marriage and the well-being of women. She is the wife and sister of Jupiter. She is identified with the Greek goddess Hera. However, the name might also come from *iuniores* (young men, juniors) as opposed to maiores (grown men, majors) for May, the two months being dedicated to young and old men.

July: Julius Caesar reformed the Roman calendar (hence, the Julian calendar) in 46 BC. In the process, he renamed this month after himself.

August. Augustus Caesar clarified and completed the calendar reform of Julius Caesar. In the process, he also renamed this month after himself.

September, Latin for the seventh month, had thirty days until Numa, when it had twenty-nine days, until Julius, when it reverted to being thirty days long.

October, meaning eighth month, has always had thirty-one days.

Novembris, meaning ninth month, had thirty days until Numa, when it had twenty-nine days, until Julius, when it reverted to being thirty days long.

December had thirty days until Numa, when it had twenty-nine days, until Julius, when it became thirty-one days long

Numa Pompilius, the second king of Rome ca 700 BC, added the two months Januarius and Februarius. He also changed the number of days in several months to be odd, a lucky number. After Februarius, there was occasionally an additional month of *Intercalaris* "intercalendar". This is the origin of the leap-year day being in February. In 46 BC, Julius Caesar reformed the Roman calendar (hence, the Julian calendar) changing the number of days in many months and removing *Intercalaris*.

Dates that change: Easter and moons

While most ritual dates stay the same, dates based on the lunar calendar change each year and therefore need special attention.

Ash Wednesday, Easter

The dates of Easter weekend, Easter Sunday, Good Friday, Ash Wednesday, Ascension, Pentecost, Corpus Christi, first Sunday of Advent, Full Moons, and New Moons all change.

No new moons or full moons are shown in the monthly calendar provided, as they vary.

All phases of the moon have meaning, from new moon, first quarter, waxing gibbous, full moon, waning gibbous, last quarter.

The second new moon is called the Black Moon. Blue Moon is the second full moon to occur in a single calendar month. Two new moons and two full moons in one calendar month is seen to have more power.

The interval between full moons is about 29.5 days, while the average length of a month is 30.5 days. This makes it very unlikely that any given month will contain two full moons.

Eclipses also have meaning.

The quarter moon represents the moon goddess Diana, and Lucifer, the morning star. If we consider that the planet named Venus is sometimes called the morning star and sometimes the evening star and that the same name was given to Lucifer, we can see the way the emblems of different belief systems join together.

Table 1 shows some of the names given to the moon according to the month.

The seasons and weather

It is worth noting that while Western world beliefs have four seasons, there are other cultures that have or have had three seasons. For example, in Ancient Egypt, there was Akhet, the inundation (June–September), Peret (October–February), the Growing Season, and Shemu (March–May), the Harvesting Season.

Thunder, lightning, storm winds, and rain all have different meaning and different deities attached to them.

Table 1. Names of the moon according to month.

January	Old Moon	Wolf Moon	Moon after Yule, Ice Moon
February	Wolf Moon	Snow Moon	Hunger Moon, Storm Moon, Candles Moon
March	Lenten Moon	Worm Moon	Crow Moon, Crust Moon, Sugar Moon, Sap Moon, Chaste Moon
April	Egg Moon	Pink Moon	Sprouting Grass Moon, Fish Moon, Seed Moon, Waking Moon
May	Milk Moon	Flower Moon	Corn Planting Moon, Corn Moon, Hare's Moon
June	Flower Moon	Strawberry Moon	Honey Moon, Rose Moon, Hot Moon, Planting Moon
July	Hay Moon	Buck Moon	Thunder Moon, Mead Moon
August	Grain Moon	Sturgeon Moon	Red Moon, Green Corn Moon, Lightning Moon, Dog Moon
September	Corn Moon	Harvest Moon	Corn Moon, Barley Moon
October	Harvest Moon	Hunter's Moon	Travel Moon, Dying Grass Moon, Blood Moon
November	Hunter's Moon	Beaver Moon	Frost Moon, Snow Moon
December	Oak Moon	Cold Moon	Frost Moon, Long Night's Moon, Moon Before Yule

The significant dates per month

January

1: New Year's Day. A Druid (spirit) feast day (light fires on hill tops).
5: Shivaratri (night of Shiva creator/destroyer).
5 or 6: Twelfth Night.
6: Dionysian revels.
6: Kore gives birth/manifestation of divinity. Kore, Demeter, and Persephone make up the triple goddess.
6: Epiphany. This refers to celebration over the manifestation of the divinity of Jesus, as shown by the visit of the three Magi.

7: Eastern Orthodox Christmas.
7: St Winebald Day. Winebald was a successful Saxon missionary who founded the Benedictine Order and was the brother and son of saints.
12: Birth of both Rosenburg and Goering, Nazi leaders in the Second World War.
13: Satanic New Year.
15–16: Skillfest, the feast day of St Henry of Coquet Island, a Dane who settled here in the twelfth century, noted for his psychic perceptions.
17: Feast of Fools (Old Twelfth Night)/satanic and demon revels.
18: Old Epiphany.
18–22: Dream Festival (Pleiades).
20: St Agnes' Eve.
20–27: Grand climax (blood rituals). St Agnes, the patron saint of virgins, was martyred at the age of twelve or thirteen for being a Christian. On this day in Rome, the Pope blesses two lambs. Young virgins can have visions of delight on such a night. In the Satanic calendar, it is the conjuration of Telal, a warrior demon
30: Hitler named Chancellor of Germany

February

1–3: Mysteries of Persephone, Groundhog Day, Groundhog's Day. The popular "Punxsutawney Phil" groundhog comes out of his burrow to divine the next few weeks of weather. If he sees his shadow, there is a prediction that there will be six more weeks of bad weather until Spring finally arrives; if he does not see his shadow, the next seven weeks before Spring will be good weather. This pagan tradition features both the numbers "6" and "7", which, when added, equals "13". Groundhog's Day (Imbolg) represents the Earth Mother in some systems. As the Earth goddess sleeps inside the earth during the winter season, so does the groundhog. They represent rebirth and renewal.
The name "groundhog" was substituted for the Satanic name of the holiday, Imbolg, a night requiring human sacrifice.

2: Candlemas (Imbolc/Imbolg). This date is halfway between winter and spring solstices and means "with milk" for both goats and cows. Brigid's Day (2 February) was the Christianized version of Brigid or Bride, the great Celtic Mother goddess. The Irish called it Imbolc, and it celebrates the triple goddess. It is also called Candlemas, as candles are blessed on that day.

9: (Starts evening of 8 February.) Tu B'Shevat (Jewish celebration of spring).

13: Friday the 13th.

14: Valentine's Day is a pagan festival that encourages love and physical lust. It is celebrated precisely thirteen days after Imbolg, thus imprinting upon it the number "13", Satan's number of extreme rebellion. Most people view this day now as the day to honour your wife or lover.

Cupid, the son of Venus, is really Tammuz, son of Semiramis. Venus, daughter of Jupiter, is really Semiramis herself.

Jupiter is the head deity, a sun god. Nimrod, Semiramis's husband, is considered a sun god in the Babylonian Mysteries.

The name of this month comes from the Roman goddess Februa and St Febronia (from Febris, the fever of love). She is the patroness of the passion of love. Her orgiastic rites are celebrated on 14 February—still observed as St Valentine's Day—when, in Roman times, young men would draw billets naming their female partners. This is a time of clear vision into other worlds, expressed by festivals of purification.

St Valentine was not mentioned until 496 AD and there is still doubt about his origins.

14: Fertility rituals.

15: Lupercalia (she-wolf mother of Romulus and Remus: honouring of Pan).

16: Presidents' Day (a federal holiday in the USA).

21–22: Feralia/Terminalia (Roman All Souls'/boundary day).

25: Walpurgis. Saint Walpurga herself was a niece of Saint Boniface and said to be a daughter of the Saxon prince, Saint Richard. Together with her brothers she travelled to Germany, where she became a nun. Her feast day is commemorated on 1st May.

March

28: Hearthday, the day of Vesta, the matriarchal Roman goddess, who kept a perpetual fire on hearth and altar.

Easter varies each year between March and April. It is celebrated on the first Sunday after the first new moon after Ostara. This date celebrates the return of Semiramis into her reincarnated form of the Spring Goddess. The equivalent of Good Friday, "Easter Friday", has historically been timed to be the third full moon from the start of the year. Since the marrying of pagan Easter to Jesus' resurrection, Good Friday is permanently fixed on the Friday prior to Easter.

Within some abusive branches of Satanism and Luciferianism, some children aged 3–5 are reborn through a cow corpse, or sometimes goats. There are also mock crucifixions.

Easter is steeped in the Babylonian Mysteries, The Babylonian goddess, Ishtar, is the one for whom Easter is named. She was Semiramis, wife of Nimrod, and the real founder of the Babylonian Mysteries. After Nimrod died, Semiramis created the legend that he was really her divine son born to her in a virgin birth. She is considered to be the co-founder of all occult religions, along with Nimrod. Babylon: Ishtar (Easter), also called the Moon Goddess.

Catholics: Virgin Mary (Queen of Heaven) She links with the Indian Indrana, the ancient Jewish Ashtoreth, the Sumerian Innanna, the Greek Aphrodite and Ceres, the Egyptian Isis, and the Etruscan Nutria.

The Babylonians celebrated the day as the return of Ishtar (Easter), the goddess of Spring. This day celebrated the rebirth, or reincarnation, of Nature and the goddess of Nature. According to Babylonian legend, a huge egg fell from heaven, landing in the Euphrates River. The goddess Ishtar (Easter) broke out of this egg. Later, the feature of an egg nesting was introduced, a nest where the egg could incubate until hatched. A "wicker" or reed basket was conceived in which to place the Ishtar egg.

The Easter Egg Hunt was conceived because, if anyone found her egg while she was being "reborn", she would bestow a blessing upon that lucky person. Because this was a joyous Spring festival, eggs were coloured with bright Spring colours.

The goddess's totem, the Moon-hare, would lay eggs for good children to eat. Eostre's hare was the shape that Celts imagined on the surface of the full moon Thus, "Easter"—Eostre, or Ishtar—was a goddess of fertility. Since the rabbit is a creature that procreates quickly, it symbolized the sexual act; the egg symbolized "birth" and "renewal". Together, the Easter Bunny and the Easter Egg symbolize the sex act and its offspring, Semiramis and Tammuz.

Easter offerings are derived from the tradition where the priests and priestesses would bring offerings to the temples for Easter. They brought freshly cut spring flowers and sweets to place on the altar of the god they worshipped. They would also bake hot cross buns, decorating them with crosses symbolizing the cross of Wotan, or another god. The first instance of hot cross buns can be traced back to about 1,500 BC, to Cecrops, the founder of Athens. In Old Testament celebrations in Israel, women angered God because they baked this type of cakes to offer them in worship to the Queen of Heaven (Jeremiah 17:17–18).

Another popular Easter offering was freshly made or purchased clothes. The priests would wear their best clothes, while the Vestal Virgins would wear newly made white dresses. They would also wear headgear, like bonnets, while many would adorn themselves in garlands of spring flowers. They would carry wicker baskets filled with foods and candies to offer to the gods and goddesses.

Easter sunrise services were originated by the priest serving the Babylonian Ishtar to symbolically hasten the reincarnation of Ishtar/Easter.

Lent has been accepted by the Roman Catholic Church. However, it is a commemoration of Tammuz's death. He was killed by a wild boar when he was forty years old. Lent was commemorated for exactly forty days prior to the celebration of Ishtar/Esotre and other goddesses.

March

1: St Eichstadt. Conjuring of Ninkharsag, Queen of Demons, and Ninkaszi, Horned Queen of Demons, drinking of blood.
2: Dionysian revels.
9: Festival of Ishtar (Astarte, Aphrodite, Venus).

10: (Starts evening of 9th.) Purim.

15: Ides of March: rites of Cybele and Attis (begins twelve day death and resurrection ritual). Cybele was a Phyrigian mother goddess who fell in love with the mortal, Attis. In her jealousy, when he fell in love with another mortal, she drove him mad so that he castrated and killed himself. Zeus helped her to resurrect him.

16: Montsegur Day. In remembrance of the persecution of the Cathars.

17: St Patrick's Day.

18: Sheila-na-gig (Sheelah's Day, Sheelahis Day, Celtic creatress): Jacques De Molay Day (Knights Templar).

20–22: Pelusia, invocation of Isis (Hindi), Holi/Tubulustrum Roman purification/Shab-i-barat. Night of Forgiveness (Islam), Homage to the God of death.

21: Spring Equinox. Children dedicated to Satan or Tiamet.

21–22: Goddess Ostara (Ishtar, also spelled, Eostre), for whom "Easter" is named. Easter is the first Sunday after the first new moon after Ostara.

Eostre is mentioned in Beowulf, possibly identified with Kali. Red Easter eggs are placed on graves in Russia to assist rebirth.

21–24: Feast of the Beast/Bride of Satan/Feast of Priapus/Festival of Isis).

31–1 April: Vertmass, feast of green, linked with Green George, the goddess's consort who was the Green King of the woodland, or the fool of love.

April

1: April Fools Day: precisely thirteen weeks since New Year's Day.

6: Palm Sunday.

8: Day of the Masters.

9: Maundy Thursday. This commemorates the Last Supper of Jesus with the Apostles and falls on the Thursday before Easter.

12: Hitler's birthday (alternate).

19: This is the first day of the thirteen-day Satanic ritual relating to fire, the fire god, Baal, or Molech/Nimrod (the Sun

God), also known as the Roman god, Saturn (Satan/Devil). This day is a major human sacrifice day, demanding fire sacrifice with an emphasis on children. This day is one of the most important sacrifice days in Satanist abuse groups.

19: Anniversary of the day in 1943 when, after trapping the last Jewish resistance fighters in Warsaw in a storm drain and holding them there for several days, Nazi storm troopers began to pour fire into each end of the drain, using flame-throwers. They continued pouring the fire into the drain until all fighters were dead.

20: Hitler's birthday.

20: Queen's Day (Netherlands).

21–1: May: Grand Climax/Da Meur/preparation for Beltane.

22–29: Preparation for sacrifice in some abusive Satanic sects (third week of April).

23: St George's Day/England's national day.

26–1 May: Corpus de Baahl

30: Walpurgisnacht (May Eve). This is the day before May Day, when, in German occult tradition, a major festival takes place. Very cleverly, Christianity took over the date and named it Walpurgisnacht after a Christian Nun, Walburga, who was born in the UK in the eighth century but ran an enlightened nunnery in Germany. She had two religious brothers, St Willibald and St Winebald, who had set up the monasteries there. Her remains were transferred to Eichstatt on May Day, which is how St Eichadat's Day, May Day, and Beltane became linked.

30: Anniversary of Hitler's death. This tradition was strong enough that Adolf Hitler decided to kill himself on April 30 at 3:30p.m., thus creating a "333" and placing his suicide sacrifice within the Beltane time frame.

30–5 May: Grand Climax/Da Meur/Beltane

May

1: May Day. Beltane Fire Festival. Major Celtic festival.

This is the Greatest Sabbat, and is marked by fertility rites in open fields. Seminal fluid is mixed with dirt and insects and inserted into the vagina of a virgin. If conception occurs, the children are children

of Tiamet and Dur (Indur). Great bonfires are lit on the Eve of Beltane, 30 April, in order to welcome the Earth goddess. Participants hope to gain favour with this goddess so she will bless their families with procreative fertility. Since fertility is being asked of the Earth goddess, the Maypole is the phallic symbol and the circular dance around the pole forms the circle that is symbolic of the female sex organ. Four six-foot alternating red and white ribbons were connected to the pole; the men would dance counterclockwise, while the ladies danced clockwise. The union of the intertwining red and white ribbons symbolized the act of copulation.

For the Celts it marked the beginning of summer and the need to protect cattle from disease. For some, the great bonfires in Ireland were to protect cattle from witchcraft. In the past, this date was also dedicated to Mari, Mother Sea, as late as 1678 in Ireland.

9–13: Lumeria (three days Roman All Souls).
11: Mother's Day.
21–24: Rituals to mock the Ascension of Jesus to heaven, Ascension Day.
29–5 June: (Starts evening of 28 May.) Shavuot.
29–30: Memory Day dedicated to Joan of Arc.
31: Pentecost (Whitsunday).

June

1: Republic Day (Ireland)
3: Eastern Orthodox Ascension Day
6: D-Day (allied troops'invasion of France in the Second World War).
21: Summer Solstice. Can be marked by torture, rape, and sacrifice of traitors, sacrifice and consumption of an infant.
21: Father's Day.
23: Midsummer's Eve/St John's Eve Fire Festival.
24: Lighting the midwinter bonfires in New Zealand.

July

1: Satanic and demon revels. Blood sacrifice.
4: Independence Day in the USA.

14: Bastille Day in France.
17–23: Sacrifice of first-born males, communion given with their flesh and blood.
19–20: Sunfest. The title and meaning of Helios was later given to St Elias.
23: Beginning of Dog Days, linked to Sirius, the Dog Star, Sothis, star of Set.
25: St James' Day/Festival of the horned god.
26: Parents' Day.
30: (Starts evening of 29th.) N Tish B'Av.

August

1: Lammas/Lughnasadh (31st July, too). Lammas may be a corruption of "loaf mass", the celebration of the corn harvest. Lammas is midway between the summer solstice and the autumnal equinox. The wheel of the year is seen to shift from growing time to harvest time.
3: Satanic and demon revels.
12–13: Diana's day: the Roman name for the triple goddess, goddess of the moon and the three moon phases. Christians turned it into the Assumption of the Virgin Mary.
15: Assumption of the Blessed Virgin Mary.
24: Mania (opening of nether world gate).
24–27: Fundus Mundi (a three day late-harvest festival).
26: Preparation for Feast of the Beast, or marriage to Satan. Fasting and anointing.
28: Feast of Nephthys (wife of Set, goddess of death).

September

1: Labour Day
5–7: Marriage to the Beast (Satan)
7: Feast of the Beast, marriage of virgins to Satan.
13: Grandparents' Day
19– 20: (Starts evening of 18th.) Rosh Hashanah.
20–21: Midnight Host, vows and hierarchy fasting for previous week. Personal blood sacrifice from tip of fingers/paw of pet, etc., hands planted in the ground for power.

21: Autumn/Fall Equinox, Mahon. From this date through Halloween, occultists believe the veil separating the earthly dimension from the demonic realm gets progressively thinner, with the thinnest night being 31 October; this thinning of the separating veil makes it easier for the demonic realm to enter the earthly dimension. Thus, on Halloween, evil spirits, ghosts, witches, hobgoblins, black cats, fairies, and demons of all sorts were believed to be running amok across the land. They had to be back in their spiritual dimension before midnight, Halloween, for the separating veil would then get thicker.

Jewish New Year period of Purification, Rosh Hashanah (date varies) and Yom Kippur (date varies), Day of Atonement.

23–30: Birthday celebration of Shri Krishna.
23: Mysteries of Eleusis.
28: (Starts evening of 27th) Yom Kippur.
29: Michaelmas.

October

2: Last day of Mysteries of Eleusis.
2: Durga Puja (Kali).
3–11: (Starts evening of 2nd.) Sukkot, Shmini Atzeret/Simchat Torah.
5: Opening of Mundus Cereris.
10: Dashara (Kali's victory over Mahishasura).
12: Dia de la Raza (Mexico).
12/20: Hitler's half birthday.
13: Backwards date re Halloween;13 as reverse of 31.
16: Death of Rosenburg.
17–18: Yom Kippur.
19: Death of Goering.
20/23: Hitler's half birthday.
22–29: Preparation for All Hallows' Eve.
31: Halloween/Samhain/All Hallows Eve/ Hallowmas/All Souls' Day, Halloween.

Preparation for the Isia (ring of six: Isis, Hathor, Nepthys, Horus, Thoth, Anubis). Resurrection of Osiris.

Start of the Celtic new year, the "dark" half of the year.

All Hallows Eve, as designated by the Catholic Church. This date is the Illuminati's highest day. Historically, Halloween is the deadliest ceremony dedicated to the Celtic Lord of the Dead, also symbolized by the horned god and the stag god. The Druids celebrated Samhain as a three-day fire festival, building huge bonfires, thought to ward off demons that roamed around; additionally, the fires provided the means by which the required human sacrifice would be presented to the sun god. In enormous wicker baskets, the priests caged both human and animal sacrifices, which they then lowered into the flames. The priests would carefully watch the manner in which the victim died in order to predict whether the future held good or evil.

Trick or Treat is over 2,000 years old. People put food offerings outside their homes so the wandering evil spirits would consume them on their way back to the netherworld. Failure to "treat" these evil spirits might result in a curse.

The American version of Halloween came from Ireland. The potato famine in 1840 brought thousands of immigrants to the USA. With them came the artefacts of their own folk beliefs and customs: goblins, Jack-o'-lanterns, bonfires, apples, nuts, and tricks. In Ireland on 31 October, peasants went from house to house to receive offerings to their Druid god, Muck Olla. This procession stopped at each house to warn the farmer that if he did not provide an offering, misfortune might befall him and his crops.

Frightening costumes. People clothed themselves in the most hideous and terrifying costumes. Huge bonfires were linked to Satan's domain. These bonfires provided the means by which the priests sacrificed the human and animal sacrifices so crucial to Halloween. When the last fires died out, people would race each other down the hills shouting, "The Devil gets the last one down".

Apple games. Apples have long been a token of love and fertility. At Halloween parties, people bobbed for apples in tubs of water. If a boy came up with an apple between his teeth, he was assured of the love of his girl.

Apple seeds were also used to tell fortunes. Peeling an apple in one long piece was supposed to tell a young girl about her future. Owls, bats, cats, and toads are an essential part of Halloween, and were known as "the witch's familiars". A divining familiar was perceived as the species of animal whose shape Satan would

assume to aid the witch in divining the future. Other "familiar spirit" shapes include hens, geese, small dogs, rats, butterflies, wasps, crickets, and snails. Celts often hollowed out a turnip and carved a face on it to fool demons. They carried such lanterns to light their way in the dark and to ward off evil spirits. While the turnip continues to be popular in Europe today, the pumpkin has replaced it in America. "Jack" is a nickname for "John", which is a common slang word meaning "man". Jack-O-Lanterns literally means "man with a lantern".

There are many different legends involving Satan and Jack-o'-Lanterns.

November

1: Satanist High Holy Day (related to Halloween) All Saint's Day, (feast for the saints with no nameday of their own). The Isia: six days of ritual drama commemorating Isis searching for the pieces of Osiris, feast of the netherworlds, parting of the astral veil, resurrection of Osiris.
2: All Soul's Day (feast in honour of the dead), Day of the Dead (Santeria), Day of the Dead, El Dia De Los Muertos.
4: Satanic revels.
7: Rebirth of Osiris.
21–22: Musemass. The Christian church created this day for St Cecilia, goddess of music, who prayed to stay a virgin.

December

5: Sinterklaas (Holland).
6: St Nicholas's Day.
12–19: Jewish winter festival of Light, Chanukah, start of the Winter Solstice, animal sacrifice and live burial of victims to celebrate the dark time.
12–13: St. Lucia's Day.
17–22: Saturnalia.
21: St Thomas Day. Yule. Winter Solstice, fire.
21: Feast Day, orgies.
22: Yule/Winter Solstice.
24: Christmas Eve/Satanic and demon revels/Da Meur/Grand High Climax.

The Saxon name was Mondranect, the night of mothering. The day is dedicated to the birth of the sun and the goddess Astarte. The following night is celebration of the mother as Sea Mother.

25: Christmas Day, ascribed to the birth of Jesus, is the birthday of the Sun and Tammuz, the reincarnation of the sun god. Yule, the Winter Solstice of 21st December was moved by the Roman Catholic Church to 25th December. 25th December was also the Roman Saturnalia festival, a time for drinking and feasting. Druids also saw the mistletoe as representing sexuality at this period.

The winter solstice occurs on 21st December, and this is one of the highest pagan/Celtic holidays, since the "New Year" begins after this date for the cult. Special ceremonies are planned to ensure the coming of a new year filled with power, and the return of the sun's lengthening days. In some cults, children are abused by cult members dressed as Santa (anagram for Satan).

Since the sun was experienced as having reversed itself and was now rising in the sky, pagans believed this was a sign that the human sacrifices carried out in Samhain (Halloween) had been accepted by the gods. We continue to connect with these ancient beliefs through some of our Christmas songs.

Christmas Tree: The sacred tree of the winter god; Druids believed the spirit of their gods resided in the tree. Most ancient pagans knew the tree represented Nimrod reincarnated into Tammuz. Pagans also looked upon the tree as a phallic symbol.

Star: pentagram or pentalpha, the five-pointed star, the triple triangle. This is a powerful symbol of Satan, second only to the hexagram. The star is the sacred symbol of Nimrod,

Candles represent the sun god's newly born fire. Pagans the world over love to use candles in their rituals and ceremonies.

Mistletoe is the sacred plant of the Druids, symbolizing pagan blessings of fertility; thus, kissing under the mistletoe is the first step in the reproductive cycle. Witches also use the white berries in potions.

Wreaths are circular, and they represent the female sexual organs. Wreaths are associated with fertility and the "circle of life".

Santa Claus: "Santa" is an anagram for "Satan". In the New Age, the god "Sanat Kamura" is an anagram for "Satan".

Reindeer are horned animals representing the "horned god" or the "stag god" of pagan religion. Santa's traditional number of reindeer in his team is eight; in Satanic gematria, eight is the number of "new beginnings", or the cycle of reincarnation. The Illuminati views the number "eight" as a symbol of their New World Order.

Green and red are the traditional colours of the season, as they are the traditional pagan colours of winter and seen by some groups to be key Satanist colours; red is the colour of blood.

26: Boxing Day (UK, Canada, Australia, New Zealand). Boxing Day is a day the higher classes gave gifts to the lower classes. Before or on 25th December, people of similar class would exchange gifts to celebrate the Christmas season. Gifts were not exchanged with the lower class until the next day, called Boxing Day. It is also known as St Stephen's Day. Sometimes gifts were put in a box, and breaking the box, or something like a Piggy Bank, would happen. Church used collection boxes to distribute money to the poor on this day.

26: St Stephen's Day (Scotland).

26–2 January: Hanukkah, Jewish Feast of Lights, Rededication of the Temple.

31: New Year's Eve.

The eight key dates

Yule/Winter Solstice	22 December
Imbolc/Brigid's Day/Candlemas	2 February
Ostara/Spring	21 March
Beltane	1 May
Midsummer/Alban Hefin	21 June
Lughnasadh/Lammas	1 August
MabonAutumn Equinox	21 September
Samhain/Halloween	31 October

Other triggers

Birthdays come from the Assyro-Babylonian system and were linked to human sacrifice. Dying on a birthday is part of the "neat" way there is an attempt to control nature and time.

This calendar is an aid to looking at triggers linked to belief systems. There are, however, many other triggers linked to aspects of abuse, including, colours, jewels, clothes, eating, drinking, washing, sleeping, having sex, pregnancy and childbirth, blood, loud voices, hospitals, illness, reading, watching films, hearing sirens. In fact, given the enormous number of trigger some people have faced, it is remarkable that they can function in any way.

Some deities

The Babylonian deity Marduk was associated with Mars.

Bel/Baal was the name under which nations were introduced to Marduk.

Marduk/Nimrod has the serpent as his key symbol.

The worship of Nimrod and Semiramis is the key source of pagan religions.

Marduk led the rebellion of gods against Tiamat.

Mother and child, Semiramis and Tammuz, become Isis and Osiris, Venus and Adonis, Madonna and child.

Tammuz became incorporated into Satan.

Beel-Zebub, Lord of the Flies, also means motion and travel in that the fly was restless and darted about.

Ashtar, queen of heaven, kept "male" priestesses known as her faithful "dogs".

Conclusions

Casting the first stone

As the stones weep
Scrubbing at their bloodstains
On the village Square

I am asking the Elders
I am asking the "faithful"
Whose God-face lies
Clenched in their fists
Like a missile

[Valerie Sinason]

All recorded history shows an existence of religious beliefs, dates, and ceremonies. All belief systems have themes of birth, death, sacrifice, and rebirth in common. While there has been a progression in more democratic countries to moving from actual sacrifice to symbolic sacrifice, from blood to wine, there are fundamentalist belief systems and cults that perpetuate primitive modes of functioning. Of course, in times of war, even the most morally advanced nations revert to primitive modes of functioning.

The written tenets of most world religions, or rather, the all-too-human cultures they are embedded in, include approval for actions that are against twenty-first century law and basic child protection procedures. However, the slow progression to deities of loving attachment has allowed progress. Those who are frozen into the literal word are like the emotional part in a DID system, condemned to a perpetual darkness of shame, pain, and punishment, where a deity of light and love does not appear.

We must note that Satanism is now a legal belief system recognized by the British Government, and most Satanists would not hurt anyone and are often refugees from hell-based branches of Christianity from which they need a defence.

We also need to note that people in cultures without a deity or deities hurt others, and people with deities hurt others. We are a primitive species passing on our trauma. No single belief is the cause of ritual pain.

However, fascism plus religion carries an extra terror, as it gives a sense of hopelessness and slavery even after death.

The use and perversion of religions and other beliefs for the purpose of hurting children and adults is something that we all need to be watchful over.

* * *

With thanks to the BBC multifaith calendar, which provides dates for Bahai, Buddhist, Christian, Hindu, Jain, Jewish, Muslim, Pagan, Rastafari, Shinto, Sikh, Zorostrian, and to Wikopedia, Survivorship.org, Ritual Abuse Dates, and to the survivors from all over the world who have helped me with this by sending in information.

The dates and information provided in this booklet come from survivors all over the world. Where information has been provided from the Internet a source is given.

This calendar is a work in progress and we welcome further additions.

References

Hale, R., & Sinason, V. (1994). Internal and external reality: establishing parameters. In: V. Sinason (Ed.), *Treating Survivors of Satanist Abuse* (pp. 274–284). London: Routledge.

Noblitt, R., & Perskin Noblitt, P. (2008). *Ritual Abuse in the 21st Century*. Bandon, OR: Robert D. Reed.

Sinason, V. (Ed.) (1994). *Treating Survivors of Satanist Abuse* (pp. 274–284). London: Routledge.

Sinason, V. (2008). From social conditioning to mind control. In: A. Sachs & G. Galton (Eds.), *Forensic Aspects of Dissociative Identity Disorder* (pp. 167–185). London: Karnac.

CHAPTER TWO

"An evil cradling"? Cult practices and the manipulation of attachment needs in ritual abuse

Rachel Wingfield Schwartz

In his remarkable autobiographical account of his years held as a hostage in Beirut, Brian Keenan describes his captivity and his relationship to his captors as "an evil cradling":

> My days passed in a slow, gentle delirium; like the comfort and reassurance that a child must feel as its mother rocks and sings it a lullaby. I looked wildly at a dead insect in my cell, hanging in its cocoon. I felt a strange contentment. I felt no desire to leave this place. I found myself thinking with the shadows of panic rising in me that I was not ready to leave, that I did not want to leave. I began to dread my freedom, if it should come. [Keenan, 1993, p. 73]

In this account, Keenan enables us to begin to understand that being enfolded, cradled in this cocoon of captivity, evil though it may be, begins to present a kind of safety for the captive, the alternative to which-escape—seems to threaten only terror and the unknown. The survivors of ritual abuse and mind control that we will talk about over the course of this Conference grew up within an evil cradling; within families and cults who set out to make it impossible for them to ever escape; impossible for them to ever

break the psychological bonds with their abusers, bonds carefully welded within a cocoon of torture and programming.

I was reminded, by Keenan's words, of a client of mine, a ritual abuse survivor who described her relationship with her mother—one of the main perpetrators of her abuse. She told me:

> I would sit for hours, often, just staring at her face or preferably stroking her arm or feeling her stroke mine. I got such a sense of security just being able to stare at her and feel her body next to mine. The rest of the world went away. Like we were in a bubble together. Even in to my twenties I would still sit on her knee, and I would still scream and shout sometimes if she left the room. It's years since I've seen her, but I still wake up crying for my mummy in the night. Part of me is desperate just to have the comfort of touching her again. She always told me I would never be able to live without her and even now I sometimes think she might be right.

The theme of this book is the manipulation of attachment needs. I think this is a key to understanding the traumatic experience of people ritually abused in cults. I want to write from the perspective of being an attachment-based therapist and explore some of what I have learnt over the years from survivors about the use and abuse of the attachment system by perpetrators within ritual abuse. I also want to think about what survivors need relationally from psychotherapy if recovery is to be possible, and what it means to try to build a new working model of attachment in therapy when someone has a history of that need for attachment being so distorted and manipulated. To address these issues, I am going to focus on my work over a period of eight years with a young woman I am going to call Jodi, who was a survivor of ritual abuse and mind control.

Jodi

Jodi was referred to me by a colleague, who assured me she would not be a long-term client and did not have severe trauma in her history. She had a life crisis she needed to talk over with someone. That was all. Her brother had recently been diagnosed with schizo-

phrenia and she was feeling very concerned and distressed about him. She needed someone to talk to. However, I have found, as many of you may have, too, that once you have started working clinically around ritual abuse it tends to find you wherever you go.

Jodi arrived punctually for her first session, and was immediately charming. She had found the journey easy, she loved the house, she was so grateful to me for seeing her. She told me she was twenty-four years old, a drama student at a prestigious school, and she still lived with her family—her parents, and her younger brother, who was Jodi's main focus in this session. As Jodi talked about her brother's recent breakdown, and began to describe the panic she had been experiencing, I found myself starting to feel more and more anxious. Jodi was talking calmly, but I became aware that the feelings were intensifying; I was not so much anxious any more, but terrified. I could feel myself starting to hyperventilate. For a brief moment, I wondered if I was safe with her, or if she was about to attack me. The body countertransference hit me so rapidly and so powerfully I was literally struggling for breath, and struggling even harder to regulate myself. I needed to slow myself down enough to begin to unravel what was happening.

I said to Jodi, "As you were talking, I started feeling terrible anxiety in my body. Then I felt terrified and was struggling to breathe. I think you were letting me know how frightened you are. Is that right?"

She looked at me silently, and after a little while, nodded.

The feelings in my body started to recede, my breathing calmed down and so did the feelings of terror. Jodi, on the other hand, began to struggle. She tried to continue talking about her brother, but she could not focus, could not breathe properly, and was moving agitatedly in her chair. I could feel she could not bear to sit with me in the room for another minute and abruptly I got out of my chair, saying I was going to get her a glass of water, and left the room. I was puzzled about this; I had never done this in the middle of a session with a client before, but I also felt absolutely certain that it was the right thing to do, that she could not have coped with my presence any longer. When I returned, she was calmer, but different. She could not look at me, spoke in a gentle, halting voice, and tried to explain that she had been having trouble recently "losing herself"; as she described it, the fear would come, and

then she would have no sense of where she was, or what was happening.

Although I was not sure what was triggering these feelings of fear, I had no doubt that I was sitting with an extremely terrorized young woman and my feelings also left me wondering if she had experienced violence. These were feelings I was familiar with when working with people who were severely traumatized.

Jodi decided she would commit to undertaking therapy, and arranged to see me twice weekly, although, over the eight years of our work together, she was to increase to four times weekly sessions. The early months were dominated by continuing intense shifts in states, the room drenched in fear, a sense of immanent violence pervading the sessions, with intermittent periods of us both being drawn in to calm, hypnotic, trance-like states. Jodi spoke in these sessions about her great concern and attachment to her brother. Jodi felt his vulnerability acutely and cited him as a key reason why she had not been able to leave home, despite being offered student accommodation at her drama school. Jodi also spoke in these sessions about her relationship with her mother. "We're joined," she said, "if she dies, I die. We're one person." When Jodi spoke about her mother, I would feel an intense sense of suffocation, alongside the depth of her ambivalence: of her desperately needing to be with her mother, to be in constant phone contact when she was away at school for the day, coupled with a rage and a desire to attack her mother.

In attachment terms, Jodi was presenting with classic features of disorganized/disorientated infants. She moved in and out of seemingly contradictory states, both in sessions and in relation to her mother. Longing for contact could be followed by becoming frozen or frightened when the contact became available. Being with Jodi was being with the ongoing, terrible experience of fright without solution; the terror was palpable, the strategies for managing it never anything more than a temporary escape into dissociation.

She felt to me like an occupied person, her mind and body colonized by violent and terrifying others from whom it was only possible to escape through dissociative trance states. These states grew more dominant as we continued the work, and Jodi would "trance out", as she called it, in sessions, lying on the couch drifting

between associations, in a dream-like state, and often talking to me in a child's voice.

A pattern began to emerge between us that whenever Jodi took a step towards trusting me, she would follow up in the next session with an attack. This happened when there were reminders that we were becoming attached: for example, a break, or a missed session, or a feeling of connection.

We both survived Jodi's attacks. And I felt for Jodi an emerging sense of "going on being". I was careful to attune and respond to her levels of distress and fear, without coming any closer than that Jodi could bear.

It took this period of becoming "secure enough" in the relationship with me, and in the world, before Jodi was able to talk to me directly about the abuse in her family or about the ritual abuse. She began by talking to me about her father. He had sexually abused her from as far back as she could remember. He still sometimes came to her room at night to have sex with her. Jodi found herself unable to say no. At times Jodi could not find words to tell me what her father had done to her: in a child's voice she would start to try to speak, crying quietly, and would then make a scribbling movement with her hand as though to say, I need a pen, I need to write this. When she did write, it would just be words: rape, penis, mouth, bleeding. We sat together with tears in our eyes as she passed me a drawing of a child with a kitchen implement being pushed into her bottom and then later a knife. Jodi and I shared together this feeling of grief and sorrow for her child self, for how terrified she still was as she began to speak out about this. There was a feeling of deep closeness and connection in the session, and at the end Jodi smiled shakily and said thank you.

I had expected that there might be a backlash after this session, but had not anticipated the extent of it.

Jodi arrived at the next session and told me she had come to say goodbye, she could not come to therapy any more. She said she had also informed her drama school that she would not be coming back. She needed to get a job and get on her with her life. She had no idea why she had said the things she did last week—her father would never abuse her. She was a liar. She was wasting my time.

As Jodi spoke I was aware of another part of her being present: it was as though I could hear that part of her crying and crying, in

terrible pain and despair. I responded to that part of Jodi. "Jodi, I can feel someone inside crying and crying as though they will never be able to stop. That person's heart is broken. I think we need to give her chance to speak."

Jodi shook her head, but I saw her eyes begin to fill with tears. "I can't tell you, I can't tell you," she said. For fifteen minutes we sat in silence, with tears pouring down Jodi's face, breathing slowly together. At one point, I broke the silence and said, "It's OK, just take your time. I'll be here for you, whatever it is." "I can't tell you because it's to do with you," she said. "It will hurt you." After more silence, and several attempts, Jodi was able to tell me that she had seen my cat in the garden on the way in to the session. She said she knew that if she came to see me again, she would have to kill my cat. She had an image in her head, of my cat split open, her insides taken out and displayed next to her. In the image, the blood was all over Jodi's hands. "I can smell the blood," she kept saying, "I can smell it and taste it in my mouth." As she said this, she went white and began to look nauseous. I could feel myself starting to feel faint in response, the vomit rising in my throat, and I was not certain I would be able to stop myself throwing up in the room. Jodi beat me to it, rushing out of her seat to the bathroom, saying, "I'm going to be sick." She arrived back in the room after being sick, pale and dazed. I asked her, "Jodi, when you were young, did you have any pets?" She nodded. "I had a rabbit. Then I had a kitten. And later a pet dog." What happened to them? She looked at me. "I don't know." "Perhaps someone inside knows," I suggested. "Why don't you ask?" She closed her eyes and when she opened them again, a small but lively voice said to me, "I know what happened to Jasmine, our rabbit. She was mine." I recognized this little one: I had met her before, and she had been a big help to Jodi and me in the therapy so far. "Hello Josie," I said. "Would you be able to tell me about Jasmine?" Josie told me that Jasmine was Jodi's pet when she was four years old, and that she had been given to Jodi by her grandmother as a special present. Josie looked after Jasmine and would play with her in the garden for hours. Then, one evening, she had arrived home from school and her mother had been cooking dinner. Jodi had asked what was for dinner but had been told to be quiet and to wash her hands ready for the meal. As Jodi had her first bites of the stew her mother had cooked, her father began

to laugh. "Jasmine won't be playing with you much now," he had said. At first, Jodi has refused to believe it. She had shouted at her father, told him he was lying. She ran down to the hutch and found Jasmine missing. Her mother insisted she come back to the table. "You are going to finish every last mouthful on that plate," her mother had told her. Jodi sat there for hours, trying to swallow through her tears and through rising vomit. When she did not finish her plate before going to bed she was forced to eat the stew cold for breakfast the next morning.

I felt in shock as she told me this story, struggling to imagine how a child could bear this. But Josie said brightly, "But that wasn't so bad. It wasn't as bad as when we had to kill the kitten." A few years later, at the age of seven, Jodi had been allowed to keep a kitten, which had turned up as a stray in their garden. Jodi said the kitten was her best friend. When she wanted to escape her father's abuse and her mother's rages, she would hide in the garden shed with Kitty, playing or just falling asleep with Kitty curled up beside her or in her lap. One afternoon, her mother found her asleep in there with Kitty and told her to bring the cat into the house. She said that Jodi had been a bad girl. She had been telling lies. That her mother knew she had been thinking bad thoughts about her family: that she was angry with them, that she hated them. She said that Kitty would have to be punished: Jodi had been so bad, that she had caused Kitty to have to be hurt. Jodi had a choice. Either her mother would kill Kitty slowly, or Jodi could kill her quickly so that she would not feel too much pain. Jodi sobbed and begged her mother to hurt her instead of Kitty. But her mother said no: when Jodi was bad, it was the things that she cared about that would be punished. That was what happened if you were bad inside, and you loved something or someone. As Jodi's mother began to slowly torture Kitty, Jodi did break down and agree to kill Kitty. She sat in my consulting room as an adult, with tears pouring down her face, and said, "It broke my heart. It was like part of me died inside. I never felt the same again. I knew that I was bad deep down and that my badness would take everything and everyone away from me that I cared about."

We were able to understand from this why Jodi had been so afraid that our closeness in the previous session, and her disclosure of her father's abuse, would mean that she would have to hurt me

in some way and why this had become focused on my cat. Over time, these fears were to re-emerge many times, and often precipitated a memory of being made to believe, programmed to believe, that if she grew attached to anyone other than specific cult members, she would lose them, and also that she would put them and herself in danger.

After this, Jodi and I had a period of intense closeness. At times, the intimacy in the sessions felt almost exhilarating. Warm, loving feelings were often present as she shyly shared her successes at drama school and allowed more and more of her people inside to come and meet me and spend time with me. Again, we were to face a backlash. Jodi came into the session one day and told me coldly that she was sick of my yucky, sickly, nicey-nice ways. That she knew what I was up to, and she knew what I was really after. I was sick and a pervert, just like everyone else. I was only pretending to care about her. I asked her where this had come from: she insisted it had not come from anywhere, she was just making sure I knew that I could not mess her about or play games with her. This went on for several sessions, as I tried to understand where this had come from and endeavoured to find out if anyone else in the system knew what had happened. Eventually, with much shame, an adult in her system explained that her family and "they"—she did not specify who "they" were at this stage—had told her that I was only being nice to her to get her to have sex with me, that in the end, everybody wanted something, and that was clearly what I wanted.

She told me that she had believed this because some people inside, particularly the children, did not understand about sex. They did not understand that there were relationships where two people were not supposed to have sex. This led to her describing to me how father would take her to see men as a child, his friends or other family members, and tell her to have sex with them. "Sometimes they paid him." It then also enabled her to tell me more about her relationship with her mother.

Jodi and her mother had often slept in the same bed since Jodi was a child and this had stopped only recently, at Jodi's instigation. "She taught me how to give her orgasms when I was just little. She used to get me to look at porn sometimes too, to show me what to do. It made me feel special to her. Like we had a special relationship that no one could ever break into. She always told me that we

were joined and that she could read my mind. She would do games and experiments with me to prove she could read it. She told me I belonged to her, I was part of her, that the two of us would be together in the afterlife, too. That there would never be anyone else in my life who could know me and love me like she did, because I had come from inside her and I belonged inside her."

As we talked more about Jodi's mother and her hold over Jodi, it became clear that her mother had been able to manipulate Jodi's terrible fear of not being in proximity to her, of needing her presence, alongside Jodi's enormous sense of loyalty to her mother. Jodi's attachment to her mother had been fused with training—training which was really torture—which taught Jodi to believe that her mother had power over her life and death and controlled her internal world. This training had also heightened Jodi's attachment to her mother.

Jodi recalled incidents from early in her childhood, in which her mother would put her in life and death situations and then seemingly rescue her from them, just in time. On one occasion, her mother had locked her in a trunk and shut her in the cellar where, she said, no one would hear Jodi if she screamed. In the trunk with Jodi, she put insects, including maggots, of which Jodi was particularly frightened. Jodi remembers the panic and the terror, the feelings of suffocation and the certainty she would die. Gradually, she said, she gave up—just found herself drifting in a dissociated space, aware she could barely breathe any longer. At that point, in Jodi's memory, her mother opened the trunk and pulled her out, sobbing, asking Jodi how she had ended up being locked in trunk, telling Jodi she loved her desperately and no matter where Jodi got lost, she would always find her. However bad things got for Jodi, she would always save her.

In *Trauma and Recovery*, Judith Herman describes the process of "pair bonding" between victim and perpetrator. She explains,

> This is the traumatic bonding that occurs in hostages and survivors of abuse who come to view their captors as saviours. . . . The repeated experience of terror and reprieve, especially within the isolated context of a love relationship, may result in a feeling of intense, almost worshipful dependence upon an all-powerful godlike authority. Some victims speak of entering a kind of exclusive, almost delusional world, embracing the grandiose belief

> system of the perpetrator and voluntarily suppressing their own doubts as a proof of loyalty and submission. Similar experiences are regularly reported by people who have been inducted into totalitarian religious cults. [1992, p. 92]

We see here that Satanist cults are able to manipulate these psychic susceptibilities as a result of bonding through extreme trauma, and draw the victim in to wider submission and loyalty to the group's belief system.

Our attachment system is most activated when we are in danger, and the intensity of being rescued from these near-death experiences reinforced the desperate clinging nature of Jodi's attachment to her mother. She literally believed that her continued survival depended on proximity to her mother, and that leaving home, leaving her, would mean death. Jodi described how her mother had reinforced this childhood magical thinking through drawing Jodi in to a supernatural belief system, a form of witchcraft through which her mother was able to make Jodi believe that shat she had claimed her soul and that terrible death and eternal torment would result if she tried to leave her mother. "She possessed my soul through a spell. The punishment would be eternal if I left her."

At this stage, Jodi began to talk more about the involvement of the wider cult in her life. She started to paint in sessions when she could not find words for what had happened to her at the hands of other cult members, and with the involvement of her parents. This set of paintings and drawings brought a new atmosphere to the room—chilling, sinister, full of terror and sadism. There were paintings of Jodi's mother gagging her, holding a knife to her feet, threatening to cut them off, pictures of blood, axes, knives, scissors, blindfolds, electroshocks, being hung upside down, strangled, and having her stomach cut open. As Jodi free-associated on this, she was able to communicate with the people inside who had drawn the pictures, and through them we learned more about the programmes of torture she had gone through to enforce her loyalty to the cult. During this period, in my notes I wrote, "nausea, blood, semen, vomit, sweat: the room reeks of them. Like it's pouring down the walls".

From early in her childhood, Jodi had been encouraged to make particular friendships with adults or other children in the cult. These

were carefully fostered, as with her earlier relationships with her pets, with the clear intention of demonstrating to Jodi that the cult had control over the making and breaking of her attachment bonds. Jodi described how, from an early age, her attachments to other children were used to manipulate her into doing things for the cult that she otherwise resisted doing. She had memories of being forced to watch one of her friends being abused, and being told that unless she carried out an act she shrank from, such as killing an animal, or abusing another child, the abuse of her friend would continue, or they would be tortured. At times, she would be told that unless she tortured her friend, they would be killed. Having seen these people kill, Jodi said she absolutely believed they would make good their threats. She believed them capable of anything. Jodi's most painful memories at this time involved her younger brother, who was now schizophrenic. Jodi said, "He was littler than me, and I was always so frightened for him—he never seemed to do things right, he was always getting punished. They used to make me hurt him—they would say, 'we're going to cut out his guts unless you hurt him or unless you abuse him'. Sometimes I refused, but then they would torture him and make me watch and I would beg them to stop. Then I had to do what they told me. Every time I look at him now, I know it's my fault that he's so ill, that he keeps breaking down. I should have found a way to protect him or to get him out of there. I was older than him, he depended on me."

Unsurprisingly, Jodi's relationship with me created enormous conflict inside her. I was seen as a threatening force. Some people inside feared I was luring Jodi in to a trap, but more people felt I was dangerous because I was threatening her attachment to her mother. There were particular people inside who had been created by her mother and by the cult, who believed it was their role to ensure Jodi's loyalty to her mother at all costs: these were programmed alters, who tried desperately to sabotage Jodi's relationship with me. Others inside felt that even if she survived separating from her mother, internally she would be alone forever. Only the others in the cult could understand her, would not reject her for doing the things she had done. They knew she was special and powerful, and also would not be disgusted by her.

All cults instil these feelings in their members, but it is particularly effective in ritual abuse, because the sense of being other and

separate is brought about through breaking the very boundaries and taboos of what it means to be human. Cannibalism, drinking blood, eating and drinking faeces and urine, committing incest and murder—these acts contravene what anthropologists would describe to us as the boundaries that cultures use to define being human and being a member of human society. Jodi did not only feel she was different from other people, but that she would not even be included or accepted as a member of human society. This meant that the cult became the only society of which she could be part.

None the less, through our regular sessions and her experience of being attuned to, Jodi was beginning to feel as if she might be able to belong to another world, to this world. The work we had done to help her regulate her core self functions was enabling her to participate in life at college. Talking about her mother's abuse of her enabled Jodi to begin to separate from her mother. She was also working part-time to achieve some financial independence for the first time. She was making friends and she was doing well in her classes. She rarely lost time now, and this gave her a sense of being part of the world that she had never had before.

What was not clear to us was how safe Jodi was from cult abuse in the present. The fact that Jodi was not losing much time seemed hopeful. But we began to receive communications from the others inside that she still was not safe. For the first time, Jodi announced that she was going to leave home. The next phase of the therapy was a battle for Jodi to make this happen.

In November, after months of tumultuous sessions and sadistic attacks on me and the therapy, Jodi moved out. Internally, she was then immediately flooded by persecutory cult voices: lying to her, seductive, tormenting her constantly, telling her she had to be punished. Jodi was making threats to go back, and saying she could not break contact.

As Judith Herman describes,

> the sense that the perpetrator is still present, even after liberation, signifies a major constellation in the victim's relational world. The enforced relationship during captivity, becomes part of the victim's inner life. . . . In the case of sexual, domestic and religious cult prisoners, this continued relationship may take a more ambivalent form: the victim may continue to fear her former captor and to

> expect that he will eventually hunt her down, but she may also feel empty, confused and worthless without him. [1992, p. 91]

It felt as if Jodi was stuck at this point forever. It was only possible for a shift to occur through an enactment in the transference–countertransference relationship. I was by this point feeling devoured, what Valerie Sinason calls the cannibalistic countertransference; Jodi's persecution and abuse in the sessions and constant pushing of boundaries between sessions were making me feel bullied, controlled, and victimized. I realized that *I* had to liberate myself from Jodi's internal abusers: that anything else would lock us into a sado-masochistic re-enactment, a home from home for Jodi where relationships were again as they were in the cult, only this time I was the victim. I told Jodi I felt unable to continue the work unless the bullying stopped and the constant attacks on me and the therapy stopped; I found my subjectivity, and stood up to her persecutors. She knew I meant it. Having experienced *me* doing this enabled Jodi to do it, too. She broke contact with her family and the cult.

This was then followed by changes as a result of a new strategy inside to co-operate and negotiate—the abusers were no longer in control inside or out.

The atmosphere in the sessions was often one of excitement, intimacy, and intense emotion. This raised Jodi's fear of sexuality and an intense fear of loving me. Having love in her life at all felt like an acceptance that she deserved love, which, in turn, meant that she was ceasing to receive the punishment she felt she required; it was betraying her loyalty to the cult and to her mother, and, more significantly, betraying those she had been involved in abusing or killing.

Jodi reached the point where she knew inside herself that she had to try to work through the guilt and self-hate about being made to be a perpetrator. When Jodi had reached puberty, as with all female ritual abuse survivors, she was forced to kill her baby, whose birth had been prematurely induced by the cult doctor. Did Jodi remember being pregnant? She described holding the baby in her arms for a few moments after the birth, just before the killing. As a thirteen-year-old, powerless to prevent the killing, she made a bargain with herself. She and the baby would stay frozen in the moment forever. Although she could not save her baby, in order to

deal with her remorse she swore to herself that she would love the child forever and never share that love with anyone else or feel it again: in that way, she could make the baby's short life have a meaning. This meant that in therapy she fought and battled against the growing loving feelings for me, and repeatedly attacked the relationship, as it felt like a profound betrayal and abandonment of her baby.

Becoming conscious of this horrific event enabled Jodi to connect with the person inside, frozen in time, still holding the baby. A great deal of negotiation and communication went on inside, until it was agreed internally that it was time to let the baby inside be taken to heaven to be with God. We planned carefully for the session in which this was to happen. Jodi brought some flowers for the baby, and some bulbs for us to plant outside, to mark her loss. Inside, some of her people came and put their arms around the Jodi who was still holding the baby. They gently held her, while they took the baby from her. Tears were pouring down Jodi's face. "It's time now," she said. They took the baby to a bridge, which passed outside of the system, into another world outside of her. Jodi carefully laid the baby on a hillside filled with flowers on the other side of the bridge. Then the little group said goodbye, and walked back together over the bridge, holding up the part of her that had been frozen but who was now collapsing under the weight of the tears, the pain of knowing that her baby was gone, and this loss could never be undone.

This proved to be a turning point for Jodi in allowing herself to accept that the past happened and can never be changed. She has to live in the present, however much pain there has been. It was time for a life outside the cult.

There was, however, one final and fundamental conflict around attachment still to be faced. Jodi was finally able to let her dead baby go, but her brother was very much alive. He was still living at home, and Jodi did not know the extent of his continued involvement with the cult. As her brother's birthday approached, we noticed a dramatic deterioration in Jodi's state. She began damaging the relationships and people in her life and things that mattered to her again. She even lost some time again, coming to and finding she had cut herself. She dreamed about a birthday cake and we were able to make the connection with her brother. As Jodi began

to face her profound feelings of survivor guilt, for being able to leave when he could not, at times she felt despair. It began to feel that we were stuck again: she could not believe that it would ever be all right for her to have her freedom and her life, knowing that she had left him behind. She felt that doing this would mean that the cult was right: she was not human, inside she was just selfish, and she had proved it time and again when she harmed others to save herself.

She began to feel drawn back to contacting the family. Perhaps she could prove that she did care about someone else more than herself. In desperation, I reviewed my learning about survivor guilt and read everything I could lay my hands on to try to understand what might help Jodi. What did feel clear to me was that she needed some sense of not being alone with this, of belonging to a community of other trauma survivors who could assure her that it did not rob her of humanity to live and move on. She also needed to find a way to understand that although she wanted to save her brother, she could not. Only he could find his way out, and that might never happen.

In my reading, I came across Brian Keenan's *An Evil Cradling*, with which I started this paper. During his four years in captivity, Brian Keenan was held in a cell with journalist John McCarthy. He recognized that it was this relationship with John that enabled him to survive and to hold on to his sanity.

He feels he owes his life to John, and vice versa. Then the day comes when he is told he is going to be released. This means leaving John behind. He is left with the dilemma of refusing his freedom, or staying behind in captivity with John. Keenan describes his internal battle over this, and his eventual realization that to choose to remain in captivity would be a betrayal of his relationship with John and would diminish what they had fought for together.

He writes,

> I remember every moment of my time alone, my time with John and with those other captives. And I remember how we first met, our relationship, the kinds of needs I had of John and he of me. And how we sought always to give and take, always thinking of the other. And as I review it all, all that wonder, I see his face stare in mine. I had watched this man grow. And I know that if in my defiance I walk back in to that room and have myself chained, refusing

> to go home, I will have diminished our relationship. I cannot do this. I know that in going free I will free him. I know that the deep bond our captivity has given us will be shattered if I return. Our respect for each other demands of each that we take our freedom when it comes. [1993, p. 292]

When Jodi read these words, something began to release inside her. She could understand why Brian Keenan had made the choice that he had. She did not feel he was a bad person for leaving John behind. She wept many tears, and wrote her brother long letters she could never send, but she resolved in herself that she had to find a way to say goodbye to him. She visited a park they had played in as children and read out loud Brian Keenan's words and a poem she had written to say goodbye to her brother. She brought me the poem afterwards and asked me to keep it. "You know, in a way no one else could, what it means to me to leave him. You know I loved him. Despite everything they did to try to stop me from believing I was capable of loving anyone. You know I am capable of love. You know this because you know I feel love for you."

Jodi was right. They were not able to destroy her capacity to love, or her connection to it. They manipulated her need for attachment, but, ultimately, it was her ability to attach and her ability to build a new working model of attachment that enabled her to escape them. Through our relationship, Jodi has internalized a sense of being loveable, of being able to relate, of being able to function in this world. We worked together for eight years; five years has passed since then. Jodi now has a well-paid, successful job in theatre, friendships, and a loving long-term relationship with a partner. I want to finish with a quote from a letter I received from Jodi after her therapy ended.

> We're finding it a challenge to become part of normal life now outside of the cult: no therapy, and without constant emergencies, adrenaline, urgency. But I'm also aware I'm ready for civilian life. I'm being demobbed. Sometimes the fighters from the past get worried they won't be wanted anymore or needed. A bit like a Mad-Eye Moody in Harry Potter: a bit OTT, too suspicious, spotting dark wizards everywhere. But he's also someone who sees unpleasant truths that other people would rather not see. So he's important, and those people in me are important. They've been

through so much. They deserve to be part of my life in this world now.

I think of you often, and I know you will be there for me if I need you. I have such strong feelings of love for people I'm close to: every time I'm glad to see someone, or I hug someone, or I make love with my partner, I know somewhere deep inside that I survived what they did to me. I don't treat people the way they did. I would never make that choice. It makes me feel whole.

And you know, often now, I can actually FEEL that it's all me, and all of me is here, us together. And it's my life now, no one else's. All the supernatural stuff is gone, and rain is just rain and not acid; and lightening is just a natural phenomenon and not an attack or electric shock torture. And I am me. In real time.

References

Herman, J. (1992). *Trauma and Recovery*. New York: Basic Books.
Keenan, B. (1993). *An Evil Cradling*. London: Vintage.

CHAPTER THREE

Torture-based mind control: psychological mechanisms and psychotherapeutic approaches to overcoming mind control

Ellen P. Lacter

> "Can we get control of an individual to the point where he will do our bidding against his will and even against such fundamental laws of nature such as self-preservation?"
>
> (CIA Document, Project ARTICHOKE, MORI ID 144686, 1952)

Psychological mechanisms

My goal in this chapter is to analyse through established psychological principles how torture-based mind control programming is installed and exerts continued control over victims.

It is painfully humbling to study mind control. The secrets of how it "works" are buried deeply in the minds of survivors whose mental registration of the process was originally impaired by torture, drugs, smoke and mirrors, and dissociative processes, both defensive and effected by abuser manipulation, and whose capacity to later recall and reveal this trauma is limited by terror, abuser subterfuge, and the capacity of the therapist to bear witness to such

calculated abuse. Further complicating this study is the variation in methods and forms of mind control reported by survivors.

I will present patterns I have observed for further exploration. My primary data is my work with survivor clients, depth interviews of other survivors, including many psychologist-survivors, interviews with colleagues treating survivors, and written accounts by survivors, most of whom I have interviewed and found credible. I am particularly indebted to Dr Hans Ulrich Gresch, German psychologist, cold war mind control survivor, and author of a book on mind control (Gresch, 2010), for his generous correspondence with me on his experiences as a victim and his insights into mind control as a scholar.

Working definition of torture-based mind control

I define torture-based mind control as the systematic application of (1) acute torture, including pain, terror, drugs, electroshock, sensory deprivation, oxygen deprivation, cold, heat, spinning, brain stimulation, and near-death, and (2), conditioning, including coercive hypnosis, directives, illusions (staged tricks, film, stories), spiritual threats, manipulation of attachment needs, and classical, operant, and fear conditioning, to coerce victims to form altered mental states, including (a) hyper-attentive blank slate (tabula rasa) mental states that arise spontaneously in response to perceived threat to physical survival, and are completely attuned to external stimuli, ready to do whatever is needed to survive; (b) self-states that spontaneously form in response to threat to psychic survival, that is, levels of mental anguish that exceed the tolerance of all previously existing ego states, and that are mentally registered apart (dissociated) from previously existing ego-states; (c) ego-states that develop more gradually through conditioning, all three of which are subjected to "programmer" strategies to define, control, and "install" within them perceptions, beliefs, fear, pain, directives, information, triggers, and behaviours, to force victims to do, feel, think, and perceive things for the purposes of the programmer, including execution of acts that violate the victims' volition, principles, and instinct for self-preservation, and to cause ego-states that usually have executive control of mental functions (the host, front,

or apparently normal personality) to have no conscious memory for the torture, conditioning, programming, controlled ego-states, or executed programmed behaviours. (Note: In the field of "torture-based mind-control", this term is generally synonymous with "torture-based" or "trauma-based", followed by "mind control programming" or "programming".)

My proposed definition refers to both *self-states* and *ego-states*. *Self-state* is the broader term, including *self-states* that have minimal sense of self or self-agency, such as torture-induced fragmentary self-states that register pain and terror internally, largely separate from higher cognitive processing and with a bare sense of "me". *Ego-state* refers to a self-state with significant self-identification and self-agency, often referred to as an *alter*, *dissociated identity* or *personality* in the literature on dissociative identity disorder (DID).

The term "host" refers to the ego-state that is usually experienced as "me", that usually spends the most time in executive control of mental functions and behaviour, and that is more aware of benign circumstances than past or present trauma. Some individuals have more than one host or "front" ego-state. In the literature on dissociative disorders, the term "host" is also often referred to as the apparently normal personality (ANP) (van der Hart, Nijenhuis, & Steele, 2006).

The term "executive control" refers to the implementation of mental functions, otherwise known as "executive functions", that enable goal-directed thought and behaviour, including self-awareness, motivation, volition, initiation, planning, purposive action, and self-regulation, which relies on monitoring, shifting, inhibiting, and self-correcting, functions primarily attributed to the frontal lobes, specifically the prefrontal cortex (Lezak, 1995).

Torture-based mind control is practised by individuals and groups who seek to maximally control and exploit others, particularly children. Included are practitioners of abusive religious rituals (e.g., Satanism and abusive witchcraft), organized crimes against children (child pornography, prostitution, and trafficking), and groups with political, military, and espionage agendas.

Survivors commonly report torture using electroshock, spinning, isolation, confinement (cages, coffins, etc.), sexual abuse, beatings (especially to the head), hanging or pulling with ropes and chains, suffocation, drowning, being held over fire, blinding or

flashing light, forced ingestion of blood, urine, faeces, flesh, etc., hunger, thirst, sleep deprivation, sensory deprivation, submersion in ice water, drugs to induce paralysis, pain, confusion, amnesia, etc., application of snakes, spiders, maggots, rats, etc., and being forced to perform or witness abuse, torture and sacrifice of people and animals.

Mind control phenomena reported by survivors

Survivor accounts are the primary source material on torture-based mind control. Critics say this is untrustworthy data. However, torture is criminal internationally, and its effects cannot be directly studied.

Clinicians assess the reliability of survivor accounts based on narrative coherence, goodness of fit between symptoms and reported history, diagnosis of a trauma disorder, differential diagnosis (Lacter & Lehman, 2008), and from multiple sources of corroboration from other survivors.

I have reviewed three lengthy written narratives about torture-based mind control:

1. Svali (pseudonym): How the cult programs people (1996);
2. Trish Fotheringham: Patterns in mind-control: a first person account (2008) (Fotheringham reports not having read any other survivor accounts when she wrote her chapter);
3. Anonymous survivor: Kabbalah-training (provided by a therapist colleague, 2008).

Although these three accounts are very different, each includes abuser aptitude testing of newborns, training infants to dissociate, bonding infants to trainers, destroying all sources of comfort, torture to induce blank-slate self-states (Fotheringham described this in interviews, not in her chapter), developing and categorizing self-states by colour, spinning torture, all-seeing eyes, suicide programming, programming using illusions such as film, and staged dramas to create internal landscapes (or inner worlds).

Some of the strongest corroborative evidence for mind control is a 2007 internet survey in which 1471 people from at least forty

countries responded as survivors to *the Extreme Abuse Survey* (EAS) (Becker, Karriker, Overkamp, & Rutz, 2007).

The following list of reported mind control phenomena incorporates a sampling of the EAS findings.

1. Torture to induce the formation of receptive/programmable dissociated self-states. Of 1012 EAS respondents who replied to the item: "My perpetrator(s) deliberately created/programmed dissociative states of mind (such as alters, personalities, ego-states) in me," 640 (63%) said "Yes."
2. Torture to influence the host with no conscious awareness. The host experiences unexplained behavioural compulsions to perform particular behaviours, and programmed self-states take executive control to follow programmed directives, unbeknown to the host.
3. The perception of "structures", that is, mental representations of objects, usually inanimate, in the body or internal landscape in the mind. Often-reported structures include buildings, walls, containers, grids, computers, and devices of torture. Structures often serve organizational purposes for programmers, such as containing groups of self-states that serve particular functions, storing files of information, serving as barriers (walls, caps, seals) to separate groups of self-states, and hiding deeper levels of programming and structures. Dissociated self-states perceive themselves as trapped behind, within, or attached to structures, often reliving the pain, suffocation, electroshock, etc., used to "install" the structure.
4. Perceived explosive devices, electroshock wires and devices, and vials capable of releasing toxins and drugs, in the body of specific self-states, or in the internal landscape, to control behaviour.
5. Perceived internal monitoring devices to watch or "read" and transmit thoughts, e.g., all-seeing eyes, microphones, and microchips.
6. The perception of internal programmers, abusers, demons, and human spirits, to watch and control the victim. Of 996 EAS respondents who replied to the item: "Perpetrators have on at least one occasion made me believe that external entities/spirits/demons had taken over my body," 530 (53%) said "Yes."

7. Novel torture and near-death torture, including anoxia, brachycardia, and cardiac arrest due to suffocation, electrocution, freezing, drowning, etc., to induce tabula rasa programmable states to form. Of 1109 EAS respondents who replied to the item: "Near drowning experience caused by perpetrators," 565 (51%) said "Yes."
8. Torture, especially electroshock, to "anchor" (set deeply) programming in the unconscious mind. Of 1119 EAS respondents who replied to the item: "My memories of extreme abuse include electroshock" 558 (50%) said "Yes."
9. Programming beginning in the first two, three, or four years of life serving as a foundation for later programming. Of 975 EAS respondents who replied to the item: "I was subjected to government-sponsored mind control experimentation at birth through 2 years," 139 (14%) said "Yes."
10. Programming to punish the victim when any self-state threatens to disobey abuser directives, especially to never remember or disclose their abuse, including flooding the victim with anxiety, pain, spinning or drugged sensations, illness, self-harm, and suicidality. Some survivors develop an awareness that these experiences are not their own reactions, but originate in programming. Of 997 EAS respondents who replied to the item: "I have experienced self-destruct programming installed in the event I began to remember the programming", 565 (57%%) said "Yes."
11. Self-states programmed to perform particular roles, such as soldier, courier, assassin, cult leader, etc., and skills, such as speaking a foreign language, flying an aircraft, remote-viewing, and sexual behaviour. On the EAS, 175 respondents reported mind control programming through which they were trained to become assassins and 203 respondents reported mind control programming designed to develop psychic abilities.
12. Self-states programmed as tape-recorders and computers to store information.
13. Self-states programmed to report in to handlers by phone and to assure ongoing abuser-contact.
14. Anti-therapy programming causing victims to feel "stuck", unable to speak, hear, or remain awake, to create chaos, to be

acutely suicidal, and to disbelieve all memories. Of 1097 EAS respondents who replied to the item about having suicidal thoughts immediately before traumatic memories surface, 737 (68%) said "Yes."

15. Programmed stimuli, for example, hand signals, words, telephone rings or tones, that trigger self-states to experience fear or to perform behaviours unbeknown to the host.
16. Programme codes to access self-states, to install, reset or activate programmes, to turn on back-up (fail-safe) programmes, to erase (remove) programmes, to "set off" explosive devices and to release toxins. Of 967 EAS respondents who replied to the item: "One or more of my alters had access codes", 332 (34%) said "Yes."

Clinical observations of mind control phenomena in victims

I have observed the following indicators of torture-based mind control:

1. Clients suddenly switch, in response to internal or external cues, to automaton-like self-states, with stiff posture, glazed-over eyes, inability to hear or respond, then begin to walk or drive to a phone or destination, with full amnesia in the host for the time in that state. Of 963 EAS respondents who replied to the item: "I have (or have had) at least one robot alter", 270 (28%) said "Yes."
2. Four clients reported the identical code to "remove" the same kind of programme, including about ten characters (details omitted for security and confidentiality) with the same prefix or suffix with spelling variations. This code is not in books or on the internet. These people lived in distant regions. I also observed individuals report very slight variations of a code for another kind of programme.
3. Proper removal codes "disappear" a structure; slightly incorrect codes fail. I have witnessed clients experience enormous relief when a proper removal code caused a structure to "vanish".
4. Identical abuser names and titles, not in books or the internet, reported by geographically distant survivors.

5. I have observed injuries, such as large scars, electroshock burns, and dislocated limbs that I believe were not self-inflicted, and that were consistent with reported programming torture.
6. When clients recall and work to resolve torture-based mind control, they regularly experience acute fear, suicidality, urges to self-harm, dizziness, sleepiness, feeling drugged, jerking as if being electro-shocked, urges to stop therapy, and robotic-like statements of "I must have made it all up," or "I want to go home" (meaning to return to the abusers).
7. Strong fear and startle responses to the phone ringing and extreme sensitivity to indoor lights.
8. Great consistency in reports of programming over time. Present recollections match rediscovered journal-writing, art, sand trays, etc., from as many as ten years earlier.
9. Clients experience marked symptom relief as programming is made conscious and resolved.

Historical evidence

In 1953, Allen Dulles, then director of the USA Central Intelligence Agency (CIA), named Dr Sidney Gottlieb to direct the CIA's MKULTRA programme, which included experiments conducted by psychiatrists to create amnesia, new dissociated identities, new memories, and responses to hypnotic access codes. In 1972, then-CIA director Richard Helms and Gottlieb ordered the destruction of all MKULTRA records. A clerical error spared seven boxes, containing 1738 documents, over 17,000 pages. This archive was declassified through a Freedom of Information Act Request in 1977, though the names of most people, universities, and hospitals are redacted. The CIA assigned each document a number preceded by "MORI", for "Management of Officially Released Information", the CIA's automated electronic system at the time of document release. These documents, to be referenced throughout this chapter, are accessible on the Internet (see: http://abuse-of-power.org/modules/content/index.php?id=31). The United States Senate held a hearing exposing the abuses of MKULTRA, entitled "Project MKULTRA, the CIA's program of research into behavioral modification" (1977).

Of 1000 EAS respondents who replied to the item: "Secret government-sponsored mind control experiments were performed on me as a child", 257 (26%) said "Yes," and 219 of those 257 remembered seeing perpetrators wearing white doctors' coats. Of 451 respondents to the Professional Extreme Abuse Survey, seventy-one professional helpers from at least six countries reported work with survivors reporting government mind control experimentation.

Psychological mechanisms underlying programme installation and function

What psychological capacities and mechanisms do programmers manipulate to effect mind control?

The dissociative disorders field has established that DID is associated with chronic, intense, early abuse, often involving a combination of physical, sexual, and emotional abuse, frequently including profound neglect, family violence, and a generally chaotic home environment (Chu, Frey, Ganzel, & Matthews, 1999; Draijer & Langeland, 1999; Ogawa, Sroufe, Weinfield, Carlson, & Egeland, 1997; Putnam, 1997; Pynoos, Steinberg, & Goenjian, 1996; Ross, 1995; van der Kolk, McFarlane, & Weisaeth, 1996). However, responses to acute torture are very different from responses to chronic trauma.

It is also well known that amnestic barriers separate the experience of trauma-bearing self-states, also known as "emotional parts" (EPs), from the awareness of the host (ANP) (Nijenhuis & den Boer, 2007). But how does this inform us on how programmed self-states can effect specific emotional and behavioural responses in the host in mind control victims? Furthermore, what psychological mechanisms allow programmers to "install" directives, codes, structures, harm-producing devices, internal programmers, malevolent entities, and files of information in their victims? How can the mind accurately register such complex information during mental states impeded by torture? How can programming be achieved in the first few years of life? Might torture somehow enhance the mind–brain's capacity to encode information and store it in pristine form?

Incorporating current knowledge on trauma and dissociation, I will explore some of the psychological processes that begin to answer these questions. Some of these mechanisms are well evidenced and some are more theoretical and hypothetical.

Dissociation: use of torture to induce and exploit dissociative processes

A synthesis of survivor accounts suggests that the central psychological mechanism that permits mind control programming to be effected is that extreme torture can force a victim's psyche to form new, readily programmable self-states, separated from the front personality by programmed amnestic barriers, that can be exploited to "hold" and "hide" directives, skills, and information. The conditions that appear to most reliably yield new programmable states are (1) application of torture in the preschool years or to already dissociation-prone individuals, and (2) application of forms of torture that victims have not yet learned to endure, such as novel or extremely prolonged torture.

Some of these self-states are developed into ego states that have the capacity for executive functions, often beginning with the assignment of a name and specific function, followed by extensive conditioning to (1) develop desired skills, (2) learn cues to access and control the ego state, and (3) develop barriers to keep all memory of this abuse from the host. Other induced dissociative states are used for more internal functions, such as holding pain, terror, information, and representations of structures to serve purposes in the inner world.

Is this the stuff of science fiction? Historical and psychological evidence demonstrate otherwise.

USA mind control projects

Declassified CIA documents provide a historical record of MK-ULTRA projects that manipulated amnestic and dissociative states.

MORI 017395 states that Subproject 136 (1961) would use drugs and hypnosis to induce and control dissociative states, including

multiple personality disorder, and would use "psychological tricks", reward, punishment, and electroshock to control behaviour, including that of children.

MORI 090527 (1951) http://abuse-of-power.org/modules/content/index.php?id=31http://michael-robinett.com/declass/c000.htm details an experiment that successfully placed two girls in "very deep trance", and used post-hypnotic coded words to make them carry and activate a bomb, followed by instructions for absolute amnesia.

Gresch (personal communication, 2010) reports that he and other children were programmed to be suicide bombers in the 1960s in what was probably a NATO project (including the CIA) to defend West Germany against the Warsaw Pact with tactical nuclear weapons, including portable "Special Atomic Demolition Munitions" (never actually deployed). Gresch reports that the children were programmed to lie in wait in foxholes, ready to detonate these "mini-nukes" against Soviet tanks that were to be manoeuvred into "killing zones".

MORI 190713 (1955), "Hypnotism and Covert Operations", discusses placing the "conscious mind in a state of suspended animation" to make subjects "have amnesia both for the fact of having been hypnotized and the origin of whatever new idea or impetus to action has been implanted in his unconscious mind".

In an article in the *Providence Evening Bulletin* of 13 May 1968, George Estabrook, described as a former consultant for the FBI and CIA, is quoted as stating, "the key to creating an effective spy or assassin rests in splitting a man's personality, or creating multipersonality" (Ross, 2000, p. 162).

Tien

Psychiatrist H. C. Tien developed electrolytic or electricity/love therapy (ELT) in the early 1970s (Tien, 1974). Tien discovered that torture, particularly electroshock, combined with directives, can "erase" a patient's original identity, beliefs, and name, and replace these with an identity, beliefs, and name chosen by the "therapist", congruent with the process of torture-based mind control.

Cameron

In the 1950s, Ewen Cameron, MD, of Allan Memorial Institute at McGill University in Montreal "treated" non-consenting patients, most probably diagnosed with schizophrenia, in what inarguably amounted to torture. Between 1957 and 1960, MKULTRA funded this research (Weinstein, 1988).

Cameron's treatment had two phases. In the "depatterning" phase, for fifteen to thirty days (sixty-five days in some cases), patients were administered massive doses of LSD and electroshock, usually combined with prolonged, drug-induced sleep, to ultimately induce a "tabula rasa" state and "complete amnesia" for one's life (Cleghorn, 1990; Marks, 1979; McGonigle, 1999). The "psychic driving" phase followed, sixteen hours a day for several weeks. Patients were forced to listen to endless loop taped descriptions of their painful past and inadequacies, sometimes accompanied by shocking their legs to intensify the negative effect, followed by, for two to five weeks, listening to tapes describing how they wanted to get well and the behaviours to facilitate this, such as becoming self-assertive (an interesting irony) (Marks, 1979).

Harvey Weinstein (1988), psychiatrist and son of a victim, aptly describes Cameron's work as "a wholesale attempt to erase minds and reprogramme" subjects (p. 147), assisted by MKULTRA.

In both Cameron's "treatment" and in mind control, torture, primarily electroshock, is applied to induce a tabula rasa state, followed by attempts to develop a brand-new persona.

Use of electricity to modify soldiers' behaviour in the First World War

Electroshock was used by military psychiatry to eradicate unwanted behaviour in soldiers since at least the First World War. The goal was to override soldiers' "weakness", such as "hysterical pseudo-paralysis", to get them back to the front (Fassin, Rechtman, & Gomme). Noteworthy were French neurologist, Clovis Vincent, who "boasted of regularly obtaining rapid results after what he termed a 'merciless struggle' between the patient and doctor" (*ibid*., p. 48), and German physician Fritz Kaufmann; his "Kaufmann

cure" involved application of powerful alternating currents to paralysed limbs (Rejali, 2009, p. 136).

Austrian psychiatrist Wilhelm Neutra (1920), treated soldiers with "fiercely painful faradic [electric] currents" in 1914, and claimed that over 100 psychiatrists applied these methods since the beginning of the Great War.

Neutra reasoned that war hysteria is a subconscious conflict between the instinct of self-preservation and patriotism or morale. He believed that if hysterical behaviour becomes associated with pain produced by the electroshock, the subconscious is going to search for a better solution.

The same basic psychological mechanism is used in much mind control. The dissociated fear of torture is greater than the fear of executing the self-endangering behaviour desired by the programmer.

Although we may never have evidence of torture-based mind control directly evolving from military electroshock treatments, I believe the likelihood is high.

Pavlov

Ivan Pavlov is most famous for his discovery of classical conditioning based on research with dogs. Pavlov presented a warning signal (the conditioned stimulus), such as a bell, and shortly after (e.g., five seconds), gave the dogs an unconditioned stimulus (such as food). The warning signal then produces a conditioned reflex, such as "food excitation" (e.g., salivation).

Lesser-known is that Pavlov also used electroshock as a warning stimulus. We now understand this as a form of fear conditioning, the basis for kinds of mind control that rely on victim responses of fear and pain to programmed external and internal cues (discussed later).

Still less known is that Pavlov also studied the effects of overwhelming stress on the dogs' prior conditioning (Pavlov, 1941; Sargant, 1957).

In the Leningrad flood of 1924, water seeped under the laboratory door and Pavlov's dogs nearly drowned, swimming in "terror with heads at the tops of their cages" (Sargant, 1957, p. 17). Many

lost all prior conditioning. Pavlov described the dogs as dissociating cortical and subcortical mental activity, and being in a state of hypnosis, similar to some human "mental disease". Pavlov surmised that in severe trauma, "the brain might be wiped almost clean, at least temporarily, of all the conditioned behavior patterns recently implanted in it" (Sargant, 1957, pp. 16–17). With months of patient work, Pavlov reconditioned most dogs. Then he let a trickle of water run under the laboratory door and the dogs all panicked and were re-traumatized, again losing all prior learning.

Pavlov's observations parallel survivors' reports of tabula rasa states forming in mind-control torture: all prior learning is lost, "wiped clean", and a trauma trigger reactivates the trauma state.

Sargant

British psychiatrist William Sargant is probably best known for his work on "acute war neurosis" ("battle fatigue", "shell shock") with Second World War soldiers (1957). In addition, he directly studied the effects of overwhelming stress on humans, as Pavlov did with dogs.

Sargant compared "war neuroses" to Pavlov's "experimental neuroses" in dogs. He observed stress-induced "states of greatly increased suggestibility" in combat soldiers (*ibid*., pp. 24–46), as well as in people who had undergone prolonged emotional and physiological stress in sudden religious conversion and political/ideological brainwashing.

Sargant claimed that the immediate effect of severe stress in humans and animals is "usually to impair judgement and increase suggestibility" (*ibid*., p. 82). He imposed severe stress on patients so that "some of the new abnormal patterns may disperse, and the healthier ones can return or be implanted afresh in the brain", much like Cameron. Sargant also applied similar stressors, including states of fear and anger, insulin shock, electroshock, and prolonged drug-induced sleep, up to fourteen or fifteen days, in a "sleep treatment ward" (Freeman, 1987).

Sargant and Cameron both had espionage ties, Sargant to British Secret Intelligence (Sargant, 1957), Cameron to the CIA (Thomas, 1989, p. 208, 1998). Sargant and Cameron had met several times

(Thomas, 1998) and may have been friends (Collins, 1988, p. 42). Sargant had also met with Gottlieb, director of MKULTRA (Thomas, 1998).

Snapping and cult indoctrination as dissociative processes

Conway and Siegelman, in *Snapping: America's Epidemic of Sudden Personality Change* (2005) explain that ceremonial rituals for cult indoctrination, including repetitive chanting, meditation, suggestion, sometimes food and sleep deprivation and infliction of pain, finally result in a "snap":

> an experience that is unmistakably traumatic . . . Sudden change comes in a moment of intense experience . . . an unforeseen break in the continuity of awareness that may leave them detached, withdrawn, disoriented—and utterly confused. The experience itself may produce hallucinations or delusions or render the person extremely vulnerable to suggestion . . . [p. 5]

This experience conforms to mind control survivor reports that extreme abuse, isolation, sleep and food deprivation, sensory and ideological bombardment, and fear-inducing illusions, suddenly induce the formation of a suggestible mental state that are receptive to new ideologies.

The ancient Greek initiation ritual into the "Greater Mysteries" incorporated elements of sentencing the initiate to death, amnesia-producing drugs, rebirth, and renaming to erase prior memory and induce receptiveness to the formation of a new identity (Graves, in Sargant, 1957, pp. 194–195).

Ritual abuse survivors describe the same steps in rebirth, initiation, and marriage rituals: terror, pain, helplessness, and fear of demonic forces, followed by methods to induce amnesia, including drugs, followed by "rebirth" as a member of the group, provision of a new name, a ceremony to marry the "convert" to the group's deity, and a formal claim or announcement of belonging to the group.

Historical accounts of cult indoctrination, Tien, Cameron, Pavlov, Sargant, and First World War electroshock "treatment" of

soldiers, and MKULTRA documents citing knowledge of inducing and manipulating amnestic and dissociative states, all support survivor accounts of overwhelming stress inducing the sudden formation of suggestible mental states. Our current knowledge of dissociative processes helps to tie this all together.

Torture in early childhood to induce a dissociation-prone psyche

Torture-based mind control, by most survivor reports, begins before four years of age, usually by age two, to make the psyche dissociation-prone and to serve as a foundation for later programming.

Young children have a greater capacity to enter trance states than older children and adults, allowing for dissociative, self-hypnotic responses to overwhelming stimuli (Putnam, 1997). Peterson (1991) explains,

> Developmentally natural dissociative activities in tandem with primitive defense mechanisms may lead a child to block off painful memories using a dissociative process . . . Without a person' conscious volition, a pattern of protective dissociations may begin to develop, creating newly established and increasingly distinct parts of self, encapsulated in time, and memory segments that are unavailable to the rest of that person's consciousness. [p. 153]

Fotheringham (2008) explains that a "pattern of protective dissociations" was natural for her:

> "I," the primary person . . . was not aware of these alternate identities or their pieces of "my" life. It seemed natural for life to be broken into chunks . . . so "lost time" went unnoticed. Since continuity was unknown, there was no sense of discontinuity . . . my brain's way of coping with difficulties was "wired in"—simply create another alter! [p. 499]

Putnam (1997) views DID as a developmental failure to integrate the discrete, state-dependent, aspects of self that are normal in young children into a cohesive sense of self. Support for this view is found in Blinder's (2007) review of the research and neurobiology

on the development of an autobiographical self. Blinder concludes that prior to four years of age, a child's sense of self is more disjointed than cohesive, and that an autobiographical self emerges at around four years of age as a function of the child's "ability to hold in mind multiple representations of the world simultaneously".

Gresch believes that programmers understand that the personality lacks cohesion in early childhood, and that they begin abusing victims very early, "to hamper any real personality development to replace it with a subhuman structure, to be used like a programmable robot" (personal communication, 2009).

After the fourth birthday, a relatively coherent sense of self helps protect against formation of fully separate self-states.

Once a "pattern of protective dissociations" has developed, programmers can use torture to induce new dissociative self-states to form, then "build" the behavioural repertoire of these self-states through conditioning, training, hypnotic suggestion, etc. Dissociation-proneness keeps these self-states maximally segregated from each other. Even in adolescence and adulthood, new self-states can be induced to form in dissociation-prone individuals, a capacity exploited by programmers.

Dissociative responses to chronic and acute trauma

What allows suggestible, malleable, self-states to form in response to severe stress? Much of this can be understood by distinguishing the nature of dissociative responses to chronic, lower-intensity trauma from responses to acute, higher-intensity trauma.

In response to chronic, lower-intensity trauma and shame-evoking trauma, self-states are likely to form and remain dissociated largely as a function of an active mental effort of the relatively non-traumatized self to shield itself from awareness of painful or unacceptable memories, thoughts, feelings and motives.

This is the mechanism of self-state formation emphasized by Dell (2009). Dell contends that dissociated self-states are formed by "dissociation-potentiated repression", the defensive use of repression in individuals with substantial self-hypnotic or dissociative ability.

Thus, such dissociative self-states are born, in large part, by an act of self-agency, are more cortical than subcortical, and have the active organizing purpose of coping with the trauma that precipitated their formation. These trauma-bearing self-states are also likely to remain dissociated from the relatively non-traumatized self by way of an ongoing mental defensive effort to disown the unacceptable. Some of these self-states "hold" knowledge of trauma that is intolerable to the host. Some are skilled at managing physical pain. Some may defensively identify with abusers and reject the self. Some may be internal self-helpers (ISHs).

Having formed to protect the self, I believe that these ego states are somewhat less susceptible to mind control, and, in some cases, successfully elude detection by the abusers.

In contrast, in response to acute and higher-intensity trauma, the victim is likely to react more reflexively and instinctually. These responses probably largely derive from subcortical mechanisms that activate very quickly in response to perceived threat to physical or psychic survival, *vs*. purposeful, slower, cortically mediated mental activity (LeDoux, 1996). Some of these responses involve hyper-arousal, including fight/rage, flight/panic, and sympathetic nervous system arousal. Some involve hypo-arousal, including immobilization/freezing, passive submission, numbing, derealization, depersonalization, impaired attention and cognition, and lowered heart rate, breath rate, and muscle tone. These states are more a function of intense emotional and physiological states taking precedence over cognitive coping strategies as the trauma occurs, than the psyche's efforts to extrude intolerable knowledge from awareness (van der Kolk, McFarlane, & Weisaeth, 1996).

A third response to high-intensity trauma, perhaps only a reaction to perceived immediate threat to life, combines elements of hypo- and hyper-arousal. This state is characterized by sudden and surprising calm, absence of fear or pain regardless of the extent of injury, intensely focused attention, sensory hyper-acuity, mental quickness, and an expanded sense of time (Dell, 2009; Heim, 1892).

Mind control survivors report that self-states formed in response to high-intensity trauma arise spontaneously due to a break in self-agency, and are mentally registered apart from the other self-states from their inception. Accordingly, they remain dissociated from the host with less mental effort than self-states formed defen-

sively. They intently focus on accommodating their abusers. Some remain internally "fixed in space and time", reliving the pain and terror that provoked their formation (van der Hart, Nijenhuis, & Steele, 2006). Some perceive the pain and terror of the trauma they endured as "normal", the only reality they know.

The model of "structural dissociation of the personality" of Steele, van der Hart, and Nijenhuis (2009) is close to what I believe occurs when self-states form in response to high-intensity, acute trauma, such as torture. Their model emphasizes that traumatic material is registered differently and apart from benign experience, as it occurs. They contend that an ongoing integrative deficit results in a structural dissociation of the personality, and only secondarily is this division a result of a psychological defence. They posit that when individuals experience aversive stimuli, such as a major threat, mental and behavioural "action tendencies" are activated to avoid or escape the threat. Such experience is registered in "emotional parts" of the personality, a separate psychobiological system than that employed to approach attractive stimuli and adapt to daily life, the "apparently normal parts of the personality". If overwhelming trauma occurs to a child, or if a primary attachment figure is frightening, this hinders the otherwise normal developmental progression towards integration of the two psychobiological systems. The host's phobic avoidance of traumatic memory held in emotional parts maintains the division, which probably involves a preconscious mental effort, a psychological defence.

States formed in response to high-intensity trauma are more rudimentary than self-states formed with less intense trauma. Some have a limited sense of "me-ness". Many are only "fragments". Both can develop an increased sense of self over time. For example, self-states formed in response to a particular kind of abuse tend to take executive control whenever that abuse is reapplied, and can have an autobiographical self within those episodes, including experiencing themselves as the age of the body at the last episode of that abuse.

Programmers use rudimentary self-states to construct personae to perform desired functions. Gresch (personal communication, 2008) explains that a young child's immediate response to torture is to enter a survival-driven state of hypnotic heightened attentiveness and suggestibility that is ultra-receptive to learning. Thus

primed, this state may be exploited in limited ways, such as "fragments" trained to obey commands or perform circumscribed behaviours to avoid punishment. Or, this state may be further augmented through a long-term "torture-hypno-conditioning process", to carry out more complex executive functions. Terror controls this type of self-state long-term, in that it is stuck, "unable to leave the torture chamber in its own mind".

In many cases, survivors discover self-states that appear motivated to serve their own needs, to later discover that programmers deliberately orchestrated their organizing purpose. For example, some ego-states see themselves as powerful or believe themselves to be "chosen" for some honoured position, but they are amnestic for the early, severe abuse, that forced their formation and kept them controlled. Genuinely human needs motivate such parts, but they are not born of psychological defence; they are deliberately induced to form, then conditioned and manipulated.

I believe that practitioners of torture-based mind control have a depth understanding of all of these kinds of dissociative states, calculatingly induce some types to form, limit some to holding pain and terror, condition some to perform executive functions of more complexity, manipulate "self-created" ego states to the degree that they can, all to exploit the unique properties of each to the fullest.

Torture to induce formation of self-states

Mind control survivors report that their abusers understand well that torture induces a dissociation-prone psyche to form new programmable self-states, and calculatedly torture victims for this purpose.

Carol Rutz, mind control survivor and author of *A Nation Betrayed* (2001), believes that existing self-states tend to "come up" in sequence from older to younger, to distribute the burden of torture being applied, until finally a defenceless baby appears, less capable of using the mind to cope, and more programmable (personal communication, 2009).

Many survivors claim that sophisticated abusers recognize that a new self-state has arisen when the child no longer reacts with

terror or pain to the torture. This new state is immediately named and given directives. Abusers may also "install" the perception of entities and structures. These messages, entities, and structures become paired with pain and terror in the new trauma-bound state, which has no cognitive capacity to process or reject any of this input. This all remains dissociated from the host.

In this vignette, Rutz and her two-year-old self-state, "Little Girl", recount programming at age four, designed to form a new self-state, "Samantha". After administering a "truth drug", the doctor says:

> "Come forth little one—I need to know your name!"
>
> "Little girl."
>
> Then the doctor says, "Who else?"
>
> "Nobody."
>
> He knows we's lyin so he makes our body jump and hurt real bad. We got lectricity going through us.
>
> "Shadow, our name is shadow."
>
> Now they want to know who Shadow is.
>
> Shadow gotted made at Grandfathers' before we came here [describes ritual that induced the formation of Shadow].
>
> Now they knows all our names. If ya knows our names—ya got power and control. They says theys gonna give us special numbers. Later Dr No, the lady Doctor says, "We are gonna help you, little girl, not to have any more pain. You don't have to feel it ever again."
>
> "They's gonna make Samantha come . . ."
>
> (Intense electro-shock was delivered in order to allow my mind to dissociate and create Samantha who would never feel pain. In the future, whenever I was put through a tortuous painful experience, Samantha would automatically be the alter who took over the body and she would hide the memory and the pain from the rest of the system . . .).
>
> "Back, just let the memories go back"
>
> That be what the doctor tellin us alright. [Rutz, 2001, pp. 17–18]

In 2009, I asked Carol Rutz to help me understand how Samantha could both "never feel pain", yet "hide the memory and pain from the rest of the system". She explained,

> "Samantha" took the pain and hid it from the rest of the system. So she really did feel pain, even though the lie [by the abusers] was that she would not. So, she "complied" and consciously believed she did not feel pain, but she did hold the pain, less consciously. The rest of the system did not feel pain. "Little Girl" certainly believed Samantha did not feel pain, and that was important because she was one of the main presenting alters. Whenever a situation occurred where pain was administered the alter, Samantha came out and encapsulated the pain.

"Blank slate" programmable mental states

Many survivors report that in response to prolonged, especially novel, torture, victims suddenly stop resisting and enter a paradoxically calm, pain-free, highly receptive and programmable mental state. They describe a psychophysiological mental state, not a state with a sense of identity. An anonymous survivor (2008) described this as "kind of like a memory stick for a computer. Not a fragment—just an object waiting to be written on."

Fotheringham (2008) explains that novel torture reliably elicits such states:

> Do a new form of torture. If it is a familiar form of torture, it will just default to the one who is programmed to take that . . . A new part forms . . . totally linked to self-defense and self-protection . . . constantly looking outward to know what to do to stay safe . . .

Gresch (personal communication, 2008) describes this process:

> To evoke a "blank slate", the torture must proceed until the victim stops resisting, beyond any feigned compliance, beyond the point of genuine obedience and submission, until the victim finally surrenders all personal intention, and then the programmers push even further, and achieve their goal, the blank slate state . . . The victim is calm and receptive. This is the physiological reaction to torture if applied in the right way . . . Your last chance for survival

> depends on receptiveness to everything the situation commands of you . . . The victim reaches a state in which it is extremely suggestible, in an extremely hypnotic state, ready to accept everything . . . They can implant a so-called "personality", actually a script of personality, in this highly receptive ultra-learning state.

Gresch explained (personal communication, 2009) how this newly formed state does not experience pain or terror, yet is ultimately controlled by pain and terror in the moment and long-term:

> This new state does not register in consciousness the painful torture that precipitated its formation, yet less conscious pain and terror continually fuel its receptivity and hyper-attention. Though dissociated states segregate this experience as it occurs, it is registered to some degree as a whole in the mind/brain. The programmed information is preserved intact, with little deterioration over time, largely through an associational neural network connecting it to the preceding pain and terror.

Dell (2009), in a recent synopsis of the literature on "peritraumatic dissociation", provides support for survivor accounts of tabula rasa states forming in response to life-threatening trauma. He explains that in response to perceived threat to life, people automatically enter a state of "absence of pain, absence of fear, a calm state of mind, a slowing of time, accelerated thought, clear thinking, heightened sensory perception, and a heightened ability to execute motor skills with precision and confidence" (p. 762). Dell describes this response as "situation-specific", "task-oriented", and lasting "only as long as that life-threatening situation lasts" (p. 761). He calls this "evolution-prepared dissociation", in that "perception is immediately adjusted and instantly tuned to the most survival-relevant aspects of the environment" (p. 760). Such a mental state would make torture victims highly receptive to programming.

Support for this phenomenon is found in the work of Albert Heim, who documented the experience of survivors of near-fatal falls in 1892. Heim found that 95% of fall victims experienced a mental state of "heightened sensory and ideational activity, and without anxiety or pain" (p. 135), the same mental state described by torture-based mind control survivors. Heim said of his own near-fatal fall, "my thoughts and ideas were coherent and very

clear, and in no way susceptible, as are dreams, to obliteration" (p. 134). Heim noted that hearing was the last sense to be lost. The ability to hear in near-death situations and enhanced memory acuity would both facilitate the objectives of mind control.

Psychological impact of naming new self-states

Assignment of names to self-states is central to mind control, as it was to Tien's electrolytic love therapy. Abusers quickly assign names to define new self-states, such as "Evil", or "Lolita". Self-states tend to perceive themselves as belonging to whomever named them. If the programmer delays in assigning a name, and the self-state can name, it may be able to elude the trainer. Names allow programmers to call self-states forward. Survivors often guard the names of self-states to prevent their being summoned.

Gresch (personal communication, 2009) explains, "The art of mind control is the art of controlling attention". Names are a means for programmers to manipulate this attention. He explains,

> Names combined with code phrases trigger the execution of programmed mental mechanisms, that is, thoughts, emotion, and behavior, in compliance with programmer instructions, fueled by fear conditioning. For example, if somebody says "I am your god, Peter Munk, one two three", a programmed self-state based on a modified prototype of "Peter Munk," a character in Wilhelm Hauff's fairy tale, "Das kalte Herz," [1858] will be activated. Peter Munk is unemotional, obedient, lacking in self-awareness, and motivated to avoid torture. This alter has been torture-hypno-conditioned to execute a number of mental actions, including (1) to activate Hugo, an other alter, to take the pain if Munk is tortured, (2) to report any access to the programmer, and (3) should any intention to resist programming enter the conscious mind, the image of a "pillar of power" will appear, the words will be heard in a threatening manner in the inner ear, the mind will be flooded with depression, and the conscious mind will feel a compulsion to once again be obedient to relieve the depression.

Gresch explained how this programming involving the "pillar of power" was effected:

> The "pillar of power" was a magical object in the inner world of the "alter", Peter Munk, which symbolized the concentrated power of the perpetrators. Peter Munk was instructed to imagine the pillar of power with his inner eye. He was then told to image that he was trying to pass the pillar of power, and to give a sign with his hand when he was about to do this. When he gave the sign, he was electro-shocked through an electrode fastened to his penis. The programmer commanded, "You shouldn't try to betray me. Look! I now allow you to recognize that we have attached measuring sensors to your head. We have recorded the brain waves when you are trying to pass the pillar of power. We know what you are doing". It doesn't matter whether the perpetrators really were able to manage this. What counts was that Peter Munk believed it.

Polyvagal theory

What neurobiological mechanisms account for the formation of highly programmable self-states and mental states in response to torture? Stephen Porges' *Polyvagal Theory* (1995, 1999) provides some clues.

The vagus nerve is the longest of ten cranial nerves and is critical in responding to threat. Porges specifies two distinct branches of the vagus nerve in mammals: (1) The *smart vagus*, the phylogenetically newer, ventral branch, and (2) The *vegetative vagus*, the phylogenetically older, dorsal branch.

In response to threat, the smart (ventral) vagus first deploys the parasympathetic nervous system (PNS), activates socially affiliative behaviour with the same species, that is, help-seeking, and maintains relative calm. If this cannot effectively manage the threat, it shifts its strategy to fight or flight, mediated by the sympathetic nervous system (SNS). If fight or flight cannot adequately cope with the stressor, the vegetative (dorsal) vagus activates, inhibiting the heart via the PNS, yielding a "shut-down" of behaviour, tonic immobility, freezing, death-feigning, or submission to the threat. This reptilian/amphibian response may be considered a dissociative response (Beauchaine, Gatzke-Kopp, & Mead, 2007), perhaps similar to "evolution-prepared dissociation" as described by Dell (2009).

I corresponded with Porges in 2008 to determine whether the dorsal vagal responses of submission or paralysis may relate to

mental states induced to form under torture, and whether such states might be receptive to encoding information, that is, being programmed. Porges explained that "a physiological state, in part, mediated by the dorsal vagal complex might promote dissociative states". Porges also said that he believes that dorsal vagal states are mediated, in part, by oxytocin, a hormone important in pair bonding and social memory, and that this might yield strong bonds to the perpetrator (an other critical element in programming). He said that dorsal vagal states might facilitate one-trial learning, a rapid, relatively indelible conditioned response, closely connected to fear conditioning. He said that learning in this dorsal vagal state "may be disconnected from the experience and this may form the basis of a different personality structure". He was careful to add that these hypotheses, and how they relate to states of calmness, remain to be tested.

Thus, the dorsal vagal threat response may contribute to a calm, receptive state, perhaps similar to Dell's "evolution-prepared dissociation" (2009), that may be highly receptive to encoding information via one-trial learning and to bonding to the abuser, and information encoded in such states may become stored in a "different personality structure", all responses advantageous for mind control.

Introjection of abusers and programmers

Most clinicians in the dissociative disorders field agree that internal representations of abusers are commonplace in DID, and that these are usually self-states who have taken on the demeanour of frightening abusers. Psychological mechanisms that drive the formation of "abuser self-states" include many variants of identification with the aggressor. Their "masks" often conceal young, trauma-bearing states. Many mind control survivors also report discovering self-states who were programmed to take on abuser characteristics in order to control other self-states.

Many survivors also perceive within them internalized programmers, witchcraft spirits, and entities that are not self-states at all. These are experienced as "foreign bodies" installed in mind control.

I believe that programmers often intentionally "install" representations of themselves in mind-control torture. Gresch (personal communication, 2009) explains,

> The victim must execute the orders of the programmers when they are not present. So they try to "implant" themselves into the mind of the victim . . . Through torture, the perpetrators switch off the critical mind of the victim . . . All of the torture-enhanced faculties are exclusively fixed to the commands of the programmer, just like in hypnosis. This is much more than obeying—it is introjecting the perpetrators . . . The generic abuser maltreats the victim to satisfy his needs. But the mind controller uses torture and pain to transform the psyche of the victim.

Above, Carol Rutz described the torture-driven formation of "Samantha". The next day, Rutz explains that, using drugs and hypnosis, Gottlieb created twin self-states specifically for government mind control: "Baby", who was told it lived in "Neverland", and "Guy" to live in "Shadowland" (Rutz, personal communication, 2009). Then Gottlieb commanded, "The genie appears when Neverland is opened. Remember, I am your master and I am the genie" (Rutz, 2001, p. 19). Although survival-driven attachment needs are at play here, I believe that the internalization of this Gottlieb–genie must be understood as a foreign body, a psychological introject, not a self-state.

Many survivors also describe rituals in which witchcraft abusers "placed" parts of their "spirits" inside of them, usually in specific self-states, through the transfer of body fluids and substances. "Attached spirits" are perceived to internally repeat the controlling messages first spoken in rituals, such as, "You belong to me", "You will obey me", etc. Commonly, such abusers also "attach" their deities to strengthen the spirits' effects. Affected self-states may also perceive that the abusers captured parts of their own spirit to hold captive within themselves.

Even if the host views such "transfers" as impossible, self-states formed and indoctrinated in the "theology" of these abusers generally perceive them as very real, and the impact is devastating, as they feel inhabited by these "attached" entities.

Programming the unconscious mind

Many survivors report that programmers ultimately seek to install mind control beneath the level of all self-states in what their programmers called the "unconscious mind".

The CIA document MORI 190713, "Hypnotism and covert operations" (1955) explains that an "operator" can use hypnosis to place the "conscious mind" in a state of "suspended animation" to "reach and affect the unconscious mind directly", to "successfully" "transplant ideas and motives", that are felt to be one's "own free will", with post-hypnotic amnesia for the hypnosis. This document explains the powerful compulsion to follow hypnotically placed dictates:

> Let us suppose that a good hypnotic subject has entered the deepest stage of hypnosis. If the operator then suggests, "After I awaken you, you will have no recollection of what has occurred. Furthermore, exactly 1 hour after you are awakened you will go to the nearest telephone and dial (any number). To whomever answers you will say (any message)," in all likelihood the subject will do just that . . . If the subject after awakening remembers or is *told* that he has been given a post-hypnotic suggestion, what it is, and when it will become operative, he still will experience the greatest difficulty in resisting it. Almost the only way in which he can obtain release from an almost intolerable feeling of discomfort is to carry out the post-hypnotic suggestion as given him; or, alternatively, have the suggestion removed under hypnosis. For what has been created is very similar to, if not identical with a compulsion neurosis. [*ibid*., p. 8]

Survivors report that the unconscious mind is accessed in lengthy near-death torture by a complete breach of self-agency after all self-states have been taxed beyond endurance, before the victim can create another self-state, before the victim loses physical consciousness, or occasionally in the moments between two pre-existing states taking executive control. One psychologist-survivor explained (2009): "When you have an alter, you are fortified. You are motivated to protect the self. The space in between alters is when they can get to the unconscious mind."

Survivors report that, once accessed, the mind is "laid bare" and records information with no ability to process, question, or reject input. It has no self-awareness, no emotion, no ability to act on its

own behalf. It "believes", or, more accurately, "takes in whole", what it is told or shown. This is when programmers reportedly "install" much foundational programming, especially structures to organize the system of self-states.

Survivors report that structures are installed using commands and illusions. A child, having previously been shown a model of a building, may be told, "The building we showed you is in your mind". The programmer may project a grid on a child's chest, then command, "The grid is in your chest", "Go inside the grid". The programmer might put a button on a child's navel and command that the button detonates a bomb if the child ever remembers. These commands and illusions become paired with the torture applied immediately before and after. Steve Oglevie, mind control consultant (personal communication, 1996 to 2006), explains that this causes the structures, illusions, and commands to be perceived to be as real as the torture itself. Schwartz (2000), in a chapter largely devoted to mind control in his book, *Dialogues with Forgotten Voices*, explains:

> [T]he power of all statements made during and immediately after abusive episodes while the victim is in an altered state will be enhanced by the absence of an operative critical consciousness (Conway, 1994) and by the indelible connection with intense fear, intolerable anxiety, or mind-shattering dread. [p. 318]

Because programming "installed" in the unconscious mind was never consciously registered in any self-state, it is usually more "deeply buried".

Blank-slate mental states and the "unconscious mind" are similar, but not identical. Victims report that programmers use the unconscious mind as a writable memory chip to store information, and use blank-slate mental states to develop self-states that can take executive control to serve abuser functions.

Massive memory storage

MKULTRA was interested in the use of hypnosis for enhanced memory storage and retrieval. MORI 190713 (1955) states:

> Post-hypnotic suggestions . . . have been known to endure for years. The image that comes to mind is a blackboard on which a message will endure until erased or blurred by time. [p. 9]
>
> . . . a hypnotized person can recall past events with astonishing clarity and detail, in many cases when he does not realize with his conscious mind that he "remembers". [p. 19]
>
> . . . One's memory for detail under such conditions appears to be boundless. [p. 21]

Enhanced memory capacity is critical to much mind control, including memory for lengthy codes, secret information storage, enhanced skills, etc. Can human memory be enhanced to this degree?

Many survivors report that intelligent infants are selected for mind control programmes. And many survivors report having eidetic recall.

Many survivors also report training for acute memory and sensory skills, including being punished, often with electroshock, for failing to remember, failing to discriminate between similar stimuli, and failing to perceive low-grade stimuli. MORI 017395 (1961) http://abuse-of-power.org/modules/content/index.php?id=31http://michael-robinett.com/declass/c000.htm states,

> Learning studies will be instituted in which the subject will be rewarded or punished for his overall performance and reinforced in various ways - by being told whether he was right, by being told what the target was, with electroshock etc. [p. 6]

Gresch (personal communication, 2009) explains,

> Like many victims, I was "programmed" with the tape recorder metaphor. I was trained to remember complex semantic information . . . If I failed, I was tortured . . . Application of torture causes the programmed information, programmed "post-hypnotic" cues to retrieve the information, and the pain and terror of the torture to be paired together and subconsciously isolated in ultra-long-term memory.

The capacity of the mind for vast information storage is supported by cases of hypermnesia and "hyperthymestic syndrome" (Parker, Cahill, & McGaugh, 2006; Tammet, 2007).

I believe that programmers have learned to combine torture-based conditioning and the use of high-intellect victims to access and exploit a capacity for hypermnesia that may exist in many people.

Programming the host

Survivors report that extensive programming is done to develop a front/host personality who behaves "normally" and is amnestic for the abuse and the existence of programmed self-states.

In "successful" programming, the host is shell-like, lacking much sense of self. It functions like a chameleon, adapting to the demands of each setting. Clinically, it suffers alexithymia, derealization, and depersonalization.

Survivors with shell-like hosts may be more likely to have had foundational programming in infancy. This often includes a division in the psyche between (1) the "normal" side, amnestic for the abuse, often associated with the daytime and right side of the body, and (2) the side entrenched in the abuse, often associated with the night-time and the left side of the body.

In some survivors, the host has some substance, depth, and emotional range. It is more of an agent of self motivated by genuine needs, curiosity, etc. In this case, dissociative barriers between the host and programmed parts may have formed largely through defensive processes, rather than exclusively by programmer design. Although such hosts are usually initially amnestic for their torture and relatively traumatophobic, they are usually more motivated to approach trauma material than shell-like hosts.

The interface of programmed self-states and the host

Two main mechanisms appear to control the interface between programmed self-states and the host: (1) specialized programmed self-states control "switching" of executive control between programmed self-states and the host, and (2) the pain and terror of programmed self-states flood the personality system when the host or other self-states violate programming (see next section).

Pierre Janet's famous case of Lucie illustrates this first mechanism. Janet hypnotized Lucie to carry out post-hypnotic suggestions. Lucie executed these, but forgot doing so immediately afterwards. Lucie was also amnestic for being hypnotized. In contrast, Adrienne, Lucie's second "hypnotic personality", recalled everything that happened while Lucie was hypnotized, and claimed that she executed the post-hypnotic suggestions without Lucie's knowledge (Dell, 2009, pp. 715–716).

In successful mind-control, the host functions much like Lucie. The host is unaware of programmed parts or the directives they execute, but key programmed parts are aware of the host and largely control it, as did Adrienne.

Gresch (personal communication, 2009) explains that his controllers relied on three mechanisms: (1) a front façade, unaware of the abuse and other self-states, (2) a system of obedient robotic self-states, and (3) isolation of the "kernel", the essence of his original self, which the programmers knew they could not extinguish, so must isolate. Obedience by all self-states was ensured by Peter Munk, "the mediator", who believed that his controllers monitored his brain waves and would detect any intention to disobey. If resistance to any directive entered consciousness, programmed parts would re-experience their torture, pain would flood into consciousness, and the "front" would feel compelled to perform as directed.

Unconscious implicit memory for trauma and fear conditioning

Torture-based mind control relies on the capacity to induce victims to re-experience their torture should they violate programme directives, while ensuring that the host remains amnestic for the source of his/her distress. Well-established psychological mechanisms explain how this "works".

LeDoux (1996, 2007) provides extensive neurological and psychological evidence for two long-term memory systems: (1) an explicit memory system that is more conscious, cognitive, and verbal, and (2) an implicit memory system that is more unconscious, emotional, and non-verbal. LeDoux's research reveals that implicit, unconscious memory of pain and fear "may represent an indelible form of learning" (p. 204). In post-trauma responses,

"stimuli associated with the danger or trauma become *learned triggers* that unleash emotional reactions in us" (LeDoux, 1996, p. 150). LeDoux calls this form of classical conditioning "fear conditioning".

Fear conditioning appears to be fundamental to how torture-based mind control "works".

LeDoux's research shows that emotional information is largely subcortically mediated by the amygdala in responses engineered for survival—fast, largely automatic, and unconscious. In contrast, cortical responding is slower, conscious, and allows for mental flexibility, decision-making, and execution of one's will in choosing how to respond.

LeDoux (1996) explains that much emotional learning, especially fear conditioning, "operates independently of consciousness—it is part of what we called the emotional unconscious" (p. 128). The largely unconscious "emotional system" more strongly affects the conscious cognitive system than vice versa. Thus, "people normally do all sorts of things for reasons they are not consciously aware of (because the behavior is produced by brain systems that operate unconsciously)" (p. 33); ". . . we are often in the dark about why we feel the way we do" (pp. 52–53).

Survivors report that programmers intentionally use torture and drugs to attempt to block victims' capacity for conscious cognitive processing. They then fear-condition trauma-bound self-states. Then, fear-conditioned responses are automatically executed outside of conscious, cognitive awareness.

Van der Hart, Nijenhuis, and Steele's (2006) theory of structural dissociation dovetails neatly with LeDoux's model of fear conditioning. In their model, EPs have a very limited sense of self, largely restricted to re-experiencing trauma. They store amygdala-mediated emotional and sensorimotor memories of terror and perceived threat, and are often fixated in past trauma with little awareness of passage of time.

Both models help us understand torture-based mind control, which relies on storage of memory for noxious emotional and somatic states in the subconscious implicit memory system of trauma-bearing EPs, and leakage of these implicit memories into the consciously experienced emotions, sensations, thoughts, impulses, and behaviours of ANP(s). When programming is working

"well", ANPs remain "in the dark" about the derivation of these noxious responses in the torture-conditioning of EPs.

Conditioned "triggers", such as an abuser's voice, hand signals, etc., induce uncontrolled fear and pain in the ANP. Similarly, failure to perform in ways that avoided pain and terror by the EP, such as compliance with directives, induces a powerful need in the ANP to perform the conditioned behaviour.

It is clearly advantageous for programmers to "place" fear-driven programming in the largely unconscious amygdala and to bypass the conscious, will-based cortex. Accordingly, programmers maximally fear-condition the amygdala-bound implicit memory system, largely within trauma-bearing EPs, to induce automatic responding, and maximally block cortical cognitive processing to attempt to eradicate critical thinking and assertion of free will.

Operant conditioning

Operant conditioning, that is, the use of reward and punishment to increase or decrease behaviours, is a mainstay of mind-control torture, usually applied to condition the behaviour of specific self-states.

In this example of programming of almost unfathomable cruelty, Gresch (personal communication, 2008) provides an example of punishment with a twist—by proxy. Another victim is killed to train his "mediator" personality to properly allocate memories, to remember what the abusers want him to remember and to forget what they want him to forget:

> The flower game: Forget me and forget-me-not: A perpetrator confronts the child with a list of common words like cow, flower, chair, or so. Every word is connected with "forget me" or "forget-me-not". The list becomes longer and longer. The child is punished if he/she remembers or forgets the wrong words. Then the day of the big test comes. Target child is not tested, but another, expendable child. The test is staged as a ritual, maybe a Satanic ritual. When the tested child makes a mistake, the master of ceremonies kills this expendable child with a knife in front of the eyes of the target child.

Drug effects

MKULTRA drug experimentation on unwitting subjects is extensively documented (Ross, 2000; Scheflin & Opton, 1978; Thomas, 1989; Weinstein, 1988) including extensive evidence of testing drug effects on suggestibility, hypnotic states, psychophysiological stress responses, amnesia, and as truth serums for interrogation (e.g., MORI 017441, 144686, 190713).

Mind control survivors report extensive use of drugs to induce sedation, immobility, trance, and suggestibility, to induce dysphoric states (anxiety, nausea, pain) to punish resistance, to induce formation of self-states, and to bring victims to near-death, to block the formation of memories, and to create amnesia. Drugs that induce pleasure are used to reward compliance: "Sometimes they give you drugs that let you experience hell, sometimes they give you heroin" (Gresch, 2009).

Many survivors recall programming to make them perceive the presence of vials of mind-altering substances in their bodies that will be released into their bloodstream or brain if they violate programme injunctions. Particular self-states are often programmed to remain fixed in sedated or hallucinatory drugged states, and programmed to take executive control when victims begin to remember, or risk disclosing, their abuse. These form the basis of much anti-therapy programming.

The impact of electroshock

Electroshock may be the most common form of torture reported by mind control survivors. It appears to have two primary uses, to produce amnesia and to induce pain. MORI ID 146342 (1951) reveals:

> [a psychiatrist . . . a fully cleared Agency consultant] . . . stated that using this machine [Reiter] as an electroshock device with the convulsive treatment, he felt that he could guarantee amnesia for certain periods of time and . . . for any knowledge of use of the convulsive shock.
>
> [The doctor] stated that . . . lower current . . . produced in the individual excruciating pain and . . . the individual would be quite

> willing to give information if threatened with the use of this machine.

Electroshock to the head sufficient to cause loss of consciousness and motor convulsions results in retrograde amnesia for the shock and preceding ten minutes (Shorter & Healy, 2007). None the less, there is evidence that the fear associated with the shock remains (Fox, 1993), as in fear conditioning. It follows that shock might cause programming to be registered fairly indelibly, albeit unconsciously.

Tien and Cameron used electroshock to respectively "erase" and "depattern" the mind. Post-electroshock, both found the mind more receptive to suggestion, consistent with survivor reports.

Many survivors report extensive use of electroshock to condition behaviour and to induce new self-states to form, often to their genitals and extremities. Gresch (2009, personal communication) states,

> I was tortured with electricity most of the time. Most survivors will probably report electric torture at the genitals . . . The perpetrator has a hand gear with which he can lead electricity to the penis or vagina of his victim.

Shock level is easily modulated. Threats to increase shock, promises to stop, etc., ensure compliance. It is easily classically conditioned to neutral stimuli that can be used as triggers. An electrician explains,

> The mental portion of shock is so intense . . . My cell phone vibrates and I get a fear reaction. It contracts the whole body. I can't think of any other form of torture that would give a torturer any more control.

Coercive hypnosis and manipulation of the imagination

Survivors report that hypnosis is the basis of much mind-control. MKULTRA documents provide extensive evidence of CIA interest in covert, coercive hypnosis (1) to block conscious processing and induce amnesia, (2) to induce dissociative states, (3) to make individuals execute "unethical actions", combined with drugs, after

electroshock, during sleep, with auditory and visual stimuli, and after physical duress such as forced wakeful states, and (4) to create post-hypnotic assassins (MORI ID 144686, 017395, 017441, 190691, 190713). Estabrooks, one of the MKULTRA doctors, "publicly acknowledged the building of Manchurian Candidates" (Ross, 2000, p. 159).

Research has shown that one type of highly responsive hypnotic subject, the "amnesia-prone" individual, is likely to have been abused as a child and to have dissociative symptoms (Barber, 2000).

Mind control survivors are dissociation-prone, amnesia-prone, and fear-conditioned to submit to their trainers. Receptiveness to hypnosis "involves the intentional evocation of a special state characterized by focused attention" (Putnam & Carlson, 2002). Survivors are primed for states of intense, narrow attention to environmental cues to ensure survival. A psychologist-survivor (2008) explains, "Fear focuses attention intensely, and survival information is encoded deeply."

Rutz (2003) explains that her programming was eventually accomplished with hypnosis alone:

> All the programming that was done to me by the CIA and Illuminati was trauma-based using things like electroshock, sensory deprivation, and drugs. Later the trauma wasn't necessary, only hypnosis accomplished with implanted triggers and occasional tune-ups . . .

Rutz reports that Gottlieb, her programmer, also induced new self-states, "Baby" and "Guy", to form through hypnotic commands unaccompanied by torture.

Preschool children often make little distinction between reality and fantasy, actual events and pretend play. Programming begun in early childhood exploits their magical thinking and high hypnotizability. Programmers know that fantastic perceptions and beliefs "implanted" in the first four years of life will "stick", especially if "installed" in self-states dissociated from the host. Effects are enhanced by dependence on the programmer, "attaching" ominous entities, models, hallucinogens, and use of film.

This vignette illustrates the suggestibility of a frightened young child. Until she remembered this event, she was paralysed by the sight of maggots:

> [T]here was beating and rape at the [abusers' house] that generally ended with the body having to clean up the rotten fruit [with maggots]. There was the same basic message . . . every time. They told her the maggots were the first sign they knew the body was talking. They [abusers] would send that to the body. It was the first warning . . . "The truth of speaking out carries on the wings of the flies". Then, the flies would bring back the warning . . . They said, "Flies are not of nature; they are witnesses to death, that's what creates the maggots, to eat the dead body."

Survivor Lynn Schirmer (2008, personal communication) explains use of story characters to develop self-states:

> Elements of the Wizard of Oz movie were used in programming, especially the bit (in my case) about having no brain. Generally this was used to remind major alters inside of their limitations, that they can't access certain parts or memories, and calls up programming that induces a hazy air-headed feeling. They actually played the little Tin man song in the lab room.

Much programming relies on illusions and films, often combined with torture and drugs to increase suggestibility. Programmer goals in staging these events include making self-states perceive (1) that their abusers have magical power, usually over life and death; (2) that a harmful object or entity was installed; (3) that the victim was tortured, as in the film/drama; (4) that the victim behaved as in the film, for example, sexual films to build sexual alters, concentration camp films to form prisoner or torturer alters; (5) that others were killed due to victim disobedience; (6) that the victim harmed or killed others; (7) that personalities have died; (8) that the victim has powers of astral travel and psychic assassination.

Many survivors report being drugged, strapped to an electroshock device, and forced to watch a film that shows a child with similar features strapped to the same device. Victims believe they are watching themselves. One survivor described a camera pointing at her to further cement the illusion. Terror and helplessness are compounded because no movement or vocalization effects the "self" in the film.

Many survivors who initially believed they were tortured in Nazi concentration camps later realized that these memories were black and white and that a number flashed at the beginning of the

memory. They then realized that they were forced to watch a Second World War Nazi film.

In her *Kabalah-Training Document*, this anonymous survivor describes her programmers' tricks:

> The perpetrators believe that when the eyelids are closed the light that is seen through them confuses the mind making it unable to tell the difference between reality and fantasy. You can tell them they have been abducted by aliens and tell them what they are seeing in the alien ship. You can tell them that they have had surgery, and that a device for keeping track of them is hidden under their scalp. You can tell them that the eye of Lucifer has been placed in their stomachs to keep an eye on them . . . As long as a small cut or scar of some kind is done at the same time, they will believe the eye of Lucifer has been placed in their stomachs to keep an eye on them, and they will believe it forever.

Survivor Patricia Baird Clark (2001) describes use of models and hypnosis to install her inner world:

> . . . a child may be . . . shown a castle . . . She spends several days in the castle going through painful, terrifying rituals in many of the rooms. She is forced to memorize the castle's entire layout. There will be a small replica of the castle much like an architectural model . . . Once this has been memorized, she is subjected to magic surgery. A tiny replica of the castle is shown to the child and she is told that it is being placed inside. The castle is now "within" . . . In this person's inner world she can now walk through the rooms and this castle has become as real to her in the spiritual dimension as it had been in the physical world.
>
> In subsequent rituals . . . the alters formed will be assigned to live in various rooms. These rooms are guarded by demons and booby traps are placed in strategic places so there is no escape . . . These castles have cold, dark dungeons filled with rats and snakes along with torture rooms . . .

Manipulation of attachment needs

Fear-driven attachment to one's abusers is endemic to severe abuse. Van der Kolk (1989) explains, ". . . children in particular, seek

increased attachment in the face of external danger . . . When there is no access to ordinary sources of comfort, people may turn toward their tormentors" (p. 396).

In extreme abuse, appeasing the abuser subverts all self-advocacy. Schwartz (2000) explains, "The shocking absence of any anger at the perpetrators is entrenched and stays intact, as though prolonged immersion in sadistic abuse and extreme trauma bonding have almost completely reversed the self-protection system of the survivor" (p. 314).

Most mind control survivors recall their programmers developing bonds with key ego states beginning in the first few years of life as long-term tools of control, often designating themselves as "Daddy" or "Mummy" of particular ego states. Carol Rutz recalls Sidney Gottlieb telling her new alter, "Baby",

> "I am you mammer and your papper. You love only me, and I am the only one who loves you. I feed you and hold you, and you are mine alone" . . . Our baby part grew to love and depend on "Daddy Sid" as her only source of love and nourishment. From that day forward, a deep bonding took place . . . No matter what experiment he was to make me a part of, I would love and remain loyal to the man who my baby alter considered sole supplier of the basics of life, food, and love. [Rutz, 2001, p. 19]

A psychologist-survivor (2009) explains the readiness of newly formed states to bond to abusers:

> The newly formed tabula-rasa state will naturally attach to the abuser. This is a survival-based physiologically driven bonding response. If the abuser says; "You are Samantha, I am your Daddy, I love you, you belong to me, you will come when I call," this is taken in uncritically.

Consistent with object relations and attachment theory, Gresch believes that identity develops within significant relationships. For self-states induced to form within torture, the significant other is the programmer. Accordingly, it defines itself by the interactions within that moulding process, whether that be stories, hypnotism, torture-based conditioning, etc. By design, it has no motives of its own, except to avoid torture through complete submission to the abuser.

"Good cop–bad cop" and intermittent reinforcement are also used to build bonds. Children "excuse" and dissociate massive amounts of abuse to earn a pittance of highly "conditional" love. Svali explains,

> [T]he child is left alone, for . . . hours, to an entire day as the child grows older. If the child begs the adult to stay, and not leave, or screams, the child is beaten . . . The trainer will then "rescue" the child, feed and give it something to drink and bond with the child as their "saviour". [1996]

Svali (*ibid.*) explains that her abusers conditioned babies to associate nurturing and attention with night-time and rituals, and abandonment with daytime, a time of no rituals, so that the infant "eventually will associate cult gatherings with feelings of security".

Bonds of romantic love are also exploited, including ritual marriages between ego states and key abusers. Two children are sometimes married to exploit each child for long-term control of both. Such "weddings" often include exchange of bodily fluids to "attach" the spirits of each child to the other.

Programmers understand that genuine loving bonds are a great threat to ongoing control. The need for love may override the fear of torture, helping victims break free. So, sophisticated abusers seek to extinguish all hope for love. Protectors may be impersonated, or drugged and brought to events, to make them appear as abusers.

Set-ups are used to destroy trust in law enforcement and child protection. One victim was made to believe that fire sirens meant that her abusers were watching. Police sirens played during abuse, and abusers in police uniforms, further cement fear. Many abuser groups include actual police officers.

Psychotherapy may be the greatest threat to programming. Many survivors report that when they begin therapy, their abusers intensify their programming to reinforce "Don't remember–Don't tell" programming and to bolster "reporter" self-states to monitor any threats to programme integrity.

Exploitation of defensive identification with the aggressor

Mind control victims are essentially hostages, dependent on their abusers for their lives. Accordingly, ego states usually form who

deny their own needs and identify with their abusers (Frankel & O'Hearn, 1996). Such ego-states may align with ideologies of their abusers (Stockholm Syndrome), including "national security" and spiritual ideologies, and often terrorize other self-states internally.

Programmers build on these defensive and survival responses, with characteristic pre-meditation, to serve their own ends.

Svali (1996) explains,

> Many trainers will put themselves in the person, over the internal programmers or trainers . . . The survivor may be horrified to find a representative of one of their worst perpetrators inside, but this was a survival mechanism . . . The survivor may mimic accents, mannerisms, even claim the perpetrator's life history as their own.

Ritual abuse and mind control victims are usually forced to harm others as soon as physically able. Toddlers are made to "kill" animals, even if their hands must be forced. "Claims" or names designating them as "Murderer", "Evil", etc., "cement" these beliefs in targeted self-states.

No-win double-binds force victims to believe they freely "chose" to abuse others. Survivor Lois Einhorn, PhD (2006), explains,

> I continually face "choices" as my parents ask me unanswerable questions: "Do you want to be hit or hit your sister?" "Do you want to have darts thrown at your front or throw them at your sister's front?" "Do you want to have a wire hanger put in you or do this to an animal?" . . . Through being hit with a switch, we play, "How high can we make my little tushi jump?" My father, mother, and sister each take turns and keep score. If my sister loses, she is hit further. [p. 4]

Rage is manipulated to form abuser alters. Many survivors report being subjected to days-long torture to induce rage-filled parts to form, who are then trained as soldiers or warriors. Svali (1996) explains:

> . . . The child is severely beaten, for a long period of time, by the trainer, then told to hit the other child in the room, or they will be beaten further. If the child refuses, it is punished severely, the other

> child is punished as well, then the child is told to punish the other child. If the child continues to refuse, or cries, or tries to hit the trainer instead, they will continue to be beaten severely, and told to hit the other child, to direct its anger at the other child. This step is repeated until the child finally complies . . . The child will be taught that this is the acceptable outlet for the aggressive impulses and rage that are created by the brutality the child is constantly being exposed to.

Many abuser groups falsely promise key ego states that if they are loyal and obedient, they will eventually attain positions of power and reduced abuse. Most survivors have ego states who believe they were "chosen" for priest and priestess positions. These ego states are often amnestic for much of their early abuse, and only later realize that positions of power in their abuser group are only earned by "being able to take more pain" than other members.

Many abuser groups ultimately seek to develop individuals who consciously choose to be abusers. In the following description, Kernberg (1994) explains that the antisocial personality develops in a world of sadistic persecutors. This accurately depicts the world of mind control victims:

> The antisocial personality proper may be conceived as a characterologic structure so dominated by hatred that primitive, split-off idealizations are no longer possible, the world is populated exclusively by hated, hateful, sadistic persecutors, and to triumph in such a terrifying world can only occur by becoming oneself a hateful persecutor as the only alternative to destruction and suicide. [p. 701]

Svali (1996) explains that her abusers subjected children to "betrayal programming" to squelch all loving bonds and to create a world limited to "hated, hateful, sadistic persecutors" to yield an antisocial psychic structure, a "willing" persecutor. Young children were given "saviours", only to have these adults later betray them. Children were given so-called "twins" with whom to develop close bonds, only to be later forced to hurt or kill that "twin".

Schwartz (2000) explains that addiction to power is the outcome in such sub-cultures:

> Those who have not been personally exposed to those extremes may be unable fully to appreciate the compelling, corrupting,

> degenerative spiral of extreme power obsessions. History has shown that once an individual or group becomes inflated with power (Hitler, Idi Amin, Pol Pot, the Duvaliers, Stalin, to name a few), a pattern of extravagant sadism, wanton cruelty, and irrational and ultimately self-destructive binges of exhibitionistic violence leads to eventual explosion or collapse. History has yet to reveal that these same diabolical dynamics are at work outside the context of war and politics—in perpetrator groups inflicting their power on children worldwide in the form of unimaginable abuse. [p. 319]

Manipulation of "free will" and "the spirit"

The concepts of "free will" and "the spirit" diverge from the more traditional psychological concepts discussed thus far. However, many mind-control survivors report that the will and spirit were the most sought-after prizes of their abusers.

Gresch (personal communication, 2009) explains that programmers go to great lengths to get victims to submit to their will:

> The goal of mind control is total obedience. But, the absolute sovereign of the inner world is the individual. A human being can't be totally obedient unless he or she has decided to be. So the torturer must make his victim believe that total obedience is the best choice . . . An artfully tailored system of mechanisms subconsciously links every idea to resist with the experience of annihilating torture.

Victims of espionage-based mind control describe most of their programmers as strict behaviourists and brain scientists who exclusively seek control of the mind and will.

Abusive cults also seek to control the spirit. This survivor recounts use of drugs, hypnosis, formal "claims" and "attachments" to "trap" her spirit: "He drugged me. He said that he put my heart [spirit] in a chest with a lock. He put his heart over my heart, and said, 'Your heart is mine, my heart is yours, I hold the key to your heart."

Survivors of both espionage and ritual groups commonly report "anti-God" programming. Faith in a loving God provides hope and support, both threats to mind control. Programmers mix torture

and illusion to induce fear of God. Some victims report electroshock by the "hand of God". Many victims are programmed to invert all Judeo-Christian terms, to reverse "God" and "Satan", love and hate, and all prayers. Victims commonly experience aversions to God, religion, and houses of worship. In sophisticated witchcraft abuse, a full half of the self-state system may reject God as a threat.

Both technological and spiritual programmers manipulate victims into defining themselves as shameful, evil, and unworthy of belonging anywhere but in the abuser group. Fotheringham (2008) explains that her abusers' Catch-22 set-ups left her with "soul-deadening shame":

> At age 5, the death and dissection of a kitten was proof of the black soldier alter being able to "stomach the job," and at 6, a test proving "family loyalty" forced a choice for the dark blue alter between letting my little brother get hurt or letting our pet rabbit suffer and die . . . [A]ny capitulation in such double-bind situations left me with crippling, soul-deadening shame, guilt, powerlessness and helplessness, especially in the presence of people with authority or "good, decent people." [p. 507]

This psychologist-survivor (2009) describes the Machiavellian tactics used to make her feel aligned with the devil:

> They put me in a wooden casket and buried me . . . I heard the sound of shovels full of dirt hitting the top of the casket in a rhythm. Then I heard nothing. It was pitch-black dark. It was hard to breathe because there was dust in the air. Then, it goes blank. I believe I passed out from terror, lack of air, and believing I was dead . . . Then, I heard a sound and it was faint, then louder, then finally a shovel hitting the casket . . . I was yanked out by the same person who buried me. He said that people do not come back from the dead unless they make a deal with the devil, and he laughed in a sneering way. Then he said I had a choice. He said, "Get back in the casket, or do X." This happened many times. The things I had to do to stay out of the casket were horrible, including sexual acts using animal parts, and hurting other people and animals. If I would not do as he said or get in the casket willingly, he would force me into the casket with spiders. When I came out, he said that I was not bitten because spiders do not bite people with bad blood. If I did the abuse he ordered, he said, "Look what you did, you are

> just like us, you are as evil as us, if you ever tell anyone, they will know you are as evil as us."

The "soul-deadening shame" of recalling the harm done to others is the point where many survivors abandon their healing journeys, a trap intentionally set by programmers. Schwartz (2000) explains that in victims who were made to harm others, "Identifying with abusers' ideologies and motivations not only sustains attachment [to abusers], but allows victims to endure excruciating, otherwise intolerable guilt and shame" (p. 299). Defensive dissociation of the excruciating pain of facing that one harmed another human being may be the greatest driving force behind the compulsion to repeat evil in general.

Psychotherapeutic approaches to overcoming mind control

In my experience, the process of discovering and overcoming programming is facilitated by having as much knowledge of programming as possible, means of working with survivors to obtain information about their programming, methods to effect deep inner change such that the programming is no longer effective, and stabilization and containment strategies to support the survivor during these processes.

I believe that most people need the support of another person to become conscious of, and to overcome, programming. This is normally a therapist, but is sometimes a clergyperson, friend, or significant other. For some survivor-therapists, it is a colleague. But rarely can a survivor look at programming trauma alone, even with established psychotherapeutic tools and a strong spiritual base. It is usually too painful, frightening, and disorientating to face without an external anchor for support.

"Don't remember", "Don't tell", and anti-therapy programming

Based on my work with clients and my interviews with other survivors, I have come to believe that programmers put as much, or greater, effort into "cover-up" programming to try to keep their

victims from developing conscious awareness of their programming as they put into the agenda-driven programming itself. When "Don't remember" and "Don't tell" programming are overcome, the rest of the programming is much more easily made conscious and overcome.

Thus, when "Don't remember" and "Don't tell" programming are "activated", this not a time-wasting obstacle, but a primary problem requiring resolution. Working through this programming can be understood as an opportunity to analyse the resistance. Thompson (2004) explains, "[A]nalysts who 'analyze' the resistance endeavor to turn the tables on it by making the resistance, not merely an artifact of the treatment, but the focus of it" (p. 130).

When working with survivors of mind control, what we normally think of as "resistance" is compounded by the fact that it was deliberately "installed" and is "fuelled" by dissociated self-states who perceive their abuse as ongoing. By abuser design, the determinants of this resistance are less consciously available. But, the source of this resistance is the very programming we seek to resolve.

It is important not to "blame the survivor" for these "blocks". High motivation is necessary to resolve programming, but is usually not enough alone.

Many well-meaning clergy make the mistake of believing that free will, deep spiritual faith, and asking God to reveal the truth should be enough to discover and resolve all programming. But programmers understand the power of faith and programme their victims against God. Even deeply religious survivors often struggle with aversive reactions to the word "God", prayer, etc., based in unconscious anti-God programming. For some survivors, choosing an atypical word to refer to God reduces the effects of such programming. For others, more creative circumventions are required.

In ritual abuse groups low in programming sophistication, "don't remember" programming may be the most severe, deeply buried trauma. A victim of such a group was attempting to work through a ritual when she saw flashes of coloured light. In exploring the meaning of the lights, she recalled, "You tell, you die." She discovered that as a small child, she had begun to tell an aunt of her abuse. Her abusers took her to more advanced programmers to silence her. These programmers electroshocked her repeatedly, each

time saying, "You tell, you die." Once this became conscious, she was able to change these words to "I choose to live". With support and guidance for each step, she was able to ask her spiritual source to go into the programming room, push the abusers away from herself, destroy the electroshock equipment, pick up the self-states formed by this trauma, and bring them to an inner healing place she had already created. Thereafter, the only "blocks" while working through the rituals were perceived "spiritual attachments" from rituals.

Gresch (personal communication, 2009), explains that one of his self-states was programmed to prevent any progress in psychotherapy:

> One of my "alters" was trained to behave properly in psychotherapeutic situations. I was conditioned to refrain from psychotherapy, but the perpetrators know that no programming is perfect. So they teach their slaves how to be a very, very compliant, and sometimes a resistant client who gives his or her therapist the feeling of healing and progress where there really is none. Be sure that whenever in a psychotherapeutic situation, alters appear and execute their programs. If the survivor is not recalling and defying the abuse and programming, then the perpetrators are holding the reins.

Many survivors are also programmed against the use of hypnosis by anyone but their programmers and handlers, since hypnosis is an effective means of obtaining information from the unconscious mind and in overcoming programming. Hypnosis is also a basic tool in programming and, therefore, very frightening to many survivors. Many therapists have learned to never use formal hypnosis or the term, "hypnosis", when working with mind control survivors. However, this does not limit the therapy process in that survivors of mind control are generally adept at narrowing and intensifying the focus of their attention, as in hypnosis, and readily use imagery of their own volition.

Knowledge of programming

I believe that therapists working with survivors of mind control must be students of programming. The more we understand, the

more we recognize signs of various kinds of programming, and the more easily we can formulate the right questions to help our clients discover their programming. When we demonstrate some level of comfort in asking about programming and working with it, we begin to earn the trust of dissociated self-states.

I believe that complete "neutrality" and use of only open-ended questions has a high risk of promoting many "false negatives" in ritually abused and programmed clients. I have observed that neutral questions, such as, "and then what happened?", often leave clients too alone in their fear, causing much trauma to remain dissociated, often indefinitely. Focused questions allow for more material to come forward. For example, asking, "Was anyone else involved?", lets survivors know we are open to hearing of multi-perpetrator abuse. Asking, "Was it perceived that anything was attached in that abuse?", lets survivors know we are open to work with perceived spiritual aspects of the abuse. Asking whether anything was done to intentionally control the mind opens the subject of mind control.

Proponents of "false memory syndrome" will argue that we should not formulate questions based on prior knowledge, that this influences our clients to produce false memories. I agree there is a risk of generating confusion and acquiescence if therapists ask questions that assume the unstated. However, questions that are too general often fail to communicate that the therapist understands enough to help.

For example, if a client recalls torture in a concentration camp, questions about whether the memory is in colour or black and white may reveal that the memory involved viewing an old film. One survivor recalled that Satan revived a dead animal. When asked about the position of the body and what the body was wearing, she recalled being strapped in a chair rigged for torture and wearing a helmet with virtual reality goggles.

A more complex example is sophisticated electroshock programming. One or more coloured wires might be attached to the chest, head, genitals, extremities, etc. Programmed self-states may perceive that they are wired together and that they can only be detached from the electroshock device by cutting the wires in a particular order, turning down the electricity in specified increments, removing attached explosive devices, etc. If done out of

order, programmed self-states might perceive the explosive devices at the end of the wires to detonate. Informed questions can help a client feel safe enough to remember this kind of programming: for example, "Where are the wires connected to [each alter]?", "How many wires are connected to [each location]?", "What are the colours of those wires?", "Is there anything at the end of that wire?", "Do any wires connect one [alter] to another?", "Is there anything more we need to know about the wires?" In contrast, the reliability of the information might be weakened and fear may be induced by asking, "Is there an explosive device at the end of that wire?"

Informed questions are also helpful in working through abusive rituals. Significant information may be learned by asking who dressed the child and how. Witchcraft abusers often place jewellery, painted words, body substances, etc., on victims to "attach" themselves. It may help to ask who brought the child to the event, who was there, if artefacts were used and their significance, etc. Since abusers often compete for spiritual dominance of victims, it is often revealing to ask, "Did anyone else do anything to harm the child before or after this event?" If such questions are not asked, survivors will sometimes work through a ritual without discovering and resolving the most adverse and controlling elements.

The more we know about programming, the more skilfully we can also side-step programmed self-destruction, health, and mental health consequences. The host may be determined to defy all such programming. However, the entire programmed purpose of some self-states is to trigger punishment programming, and these functions are executed independently of the host.

For example, complex programmes have "failsafes", such as bombs, booby-traps, back-ups, and re-sets. Programmes may be networked to activate multiple programmes if there is interference with any one programme. Sophisticated programmers install removal procedures, including codes, so they can remove, replace, and redo programmes. Removal of such programmes requires a cautious, methodical approach. If the programmer said a specific removal code must be used, the affected self-states often perceive that only that exact code can erase that programme. To these self-states, the programmer may be perceived as God. Generally, to remove such programming, the exact code must be found, the

programmed removal steps followed, and each element undone within the reality of the programmed self-states.

I will not minimize the difficulty of researching programming. "Don't remember" programming makes reliable information hard to come by. And there are so many kinds of programmes, it is a daunting task. Additionally, there is much misinformation, as well as probably deliberate disinformation, on the Internet.

None the less, we can learn much from survivors' written accounts and from consultation with survivors and colleagues. Information about specific forms of programming is often too sensitive for large Internet forums. There is a risk that specific case examples can get back to a client's abusers and that those abusers may retaliate against that client for "telling". Inexperienced therapists may disclose too much detail to clients, resulting in fear, confusion, or negative programming consequences. Generally, therapists working with mind control survivors "play our cards close to our chests" so that we do not help programmers outpace us with their strategies. As one survivor told me, "You are part of the experiment."

Establishing safety

It has been my experience that almost all survivors of ritual abuse and mind control benefit from the use of a formal process to "protect the space" prior to depth therapy work to overcome programming.

I tell my clients that when they are in my office, it is a place dedicated solely to their healing, and that both they and I have the right and the power to assert our will to protect the sanctity of this place from anyone or anything that might intend otherwise.

Most clients benefit from the use of a formal declaration or prayer for this purpose. For many non-religious clients, their declaration is simply a setting of an intention. It may begin with, "By my will", "I declare", etc. Religious clients may do the same, or pray to, or in the name of, their spiritual source.

Before depth work, I ask my clients if they want to say their declaration/prayer or have me say it. Almost always, they choose for me to say it. The effect is very calming and focusing.

This sample declaration is by an atheist:

> All energies and entities that are not part of our true self must leave immediately to at least 50 feet away from all sides of this place. This is my place to heal. No entry of any kind is permitted for any reason. Nothing can be seen, heard, or felt in any way by any entity not a part of our self. I do not permit any thoughts, distortions, manipulations, videos, pictures, fears, sickness, pain, or other feelings to enter. This is my place of healing. All entities must comply.

Using this declaration, material could be discovered and processed that was previously blocked. When, none the less, the work became blocked, reasserting the declaration unblocked it.

This prayer/declaration is by a survivor with a broad-based, *vs*. specifically religious, faith in God:

> In God's Divine Light and Love, I command any parts not truly my creation that do not serve the truth and light of the Creator to leave now, never to return. I bless them and send them back to their source and their family.

Clients who discover victimization by witchcraft cults often declare or pray protection against the kinds of spiritual attack used by such abusers, including refusing parts of their abusers' spirits, their demons, curses, hexes, vexes, threats, closing portals, and turning back astral pathways. Victims of such cults often sense that particular "forms of evil" are being sent as we begin a session, and occasionally within the work. This is usually more easily managed than a "block" based in prior spiritual programming, which usually must be made conscious and resolved. Most clients find that they need only, in prayer or declaration, refuse to allow each form of perceived attack. This generally "clears" the way for the work to proceed and reduces any perceived interference later in the session.

Making programming conscious

Programming works when it remains intact and undisturbed in dissociated self-states and in the unconscious mind. Conversely, programming is disabled when it becomes conscious and is then defied or changed.

I use the term "defiance" to refer to the assertion of one's will against doing or believing as one's abusers and programmers directed, trained, conditioned, hypno-suggested, claimed, etc. I use "change" to refer to making modifications in the unconscious mind, inner world, or self-states. The survivor may relocate a self-state from a site of torture to a healing place in the inner world. Programmed directives and claims can be changed to self-affirming statements, as in the survivor who replaced, "You tell, you die", with "I choose to live". Toxins, explosive substances, and drugs can be removed in prayer by a spiritual source or "beamed out" as per *Star Trek*. Programme removal codes can "erase" programmed structures from the internal landscape. Programme reset codes can be changed to impossible stimuli, for example, a one-inch tall baby giraffe with peppermint breath whistling Dixie. Perceived malevolent human spirits and entities can be expelled by assertion of will or prayer. Once these modifications are made in the inner world, they tend to "stick" and do not require ongoing conscious effort. What programmers initially established in the inner world through torture, illusion, and hypno-suggestion, the survivor now re-sculpts in ways that serve the self.

Another necessary quality is the desire, perhaps the decision, to face the past trauma. The significance of this decision is eloquently shared here by Rutz (2003). I share this with many clients:

> In those early days as the bits and pieces of my life were expressed on the pages of my journal I was afraid all of the time—24–7. I was flooded with memories, flashbacks, and nightmares. Fear was my number one major obstacle to overcome before any real work could be done. I was afraid of remembering and I was afraid not to remember. I was afraid the cult would somehow know I was talking and send someone to exterminate me. I was afraid the memories were really true. I was afraid I was a liar and for some reason making it all up. I eventually came to accept and know that no matter what; I had already lived through the worst. Remembering, understanding, feeling and incorporating those experiences was the pathway I walked to slowly integrate my alters.
>
> Fear consumed me until I finally let go and allowed the details of my life to flow from my mind to the paper and then in therapy through my mouth. I found that letting my alters finally have a voice and speak the truth was the only way through the fear. My

> alters found painting and drawing to be a perfect expression for getting scenes recorded—peoples [*sic*] faces, places, buildings, ceremonies. I never knew what was going to be painted or drawn, I just gave my alters free reign. Years later when I actually was able to match real people and places with these, the validation was overwhelmingly powerful and helped me to understand what truly happened to me.

"Who" works in therapy to overcome programming?

The work of becoming conscious of programming, defying and changing it, is accomplished in a highly focused mental state. The intense affect associated with discovering this trauma must be either tolerated, distanced from defensively, symbolically contained, or regulated with intense cognitive focus, as LeDoux (1996) suggests, "getting the cortex to control the amygdala". At the close of the session, the survivor is usually both physically and mentally exhausted.

"Who" in the self-state system needs to do this work? Who can tolerate it?

For many years, I thought that the host must be the ego state to work with in therapy to discover and resolve programming. This was based on work with a number of survivors with strong hosts who embodied much "true self" and who functioned somewhat as a hub for the entire self-state system.

However, in some cases, the host functions more as a superficial shell, like a chameleon adapting to each setting, or as a programmed façade, than as "true self" acting on its own behalf. This kind of host is inadequately connected to the survivor's needs and history, and lacks the emotional forbearance to face the abuse. However, as other ego-states successfully address programming, an initially weak host often becomes more "real", "full", and able to tolerate painful and frightening memories.

Relatively developed ego states with a significant sense of self that extends beyond the torture they endured, and who seek the highest good for the whole self, can sometimes engage in therapy to work through programming. In some cases, these are "hard", "tough", rebellious ego states, not aligned with the aggressor, but

true advocates for the self. Their detachment from vulnerable emotions is a tool that often helps them confront memories of torture.

Sometimes, ego states originally heavily programmed for system oversight functions decide to defy their abusers and change "sides". These ego states know much more than their own experience, having been programmed for key monitoring functions, such as recorder and reporter alters, or regulatory functions, such as alters that control "switching" between the host and programmed self-states, or system leadership roles, such as alters with significant status in their abuser groups.

Gresch (personal communication, 2009) worked through his programming with the help of his "mediator", programmed as system administrator to (1) steer his front personality, which was only a staged façade, and keep it amnestic for the programming, (2) deactivate his "kernel" (original self), and (3) ensure that his torture-hypno-conditioned alters, all off-shoots of the mediator, executed their duties as directed. When the mediator decided to defy his programmers, its knowledge of the system helped overcome the programming.

Miller (2008) discusses the importance of working with system leaders, especially those who believed their abusers' lies, false promises, and threats, to discover their abusers' deceptions and to gain the co-operation of the alters beneath them in the internal hierarchy. Then, internal observer and recorder alters can assist the therapist in selecting the most critical memories that need to be worked through.

Fotheringham (2008) had a self-created record keeper who hid boxes of records unbeknown to her abusers. This alter was able to later help her work through memories of the abuse:

> Unbeknownst to my handler and trainers, a record keeper alter split off and got stuck at age eight, due to an overload of righteous outrage and hate from witnessing and recording too much hateful, horrific wrongness and injustice. Most of the "boxes of records" were kept by this alter and hidden in my inner tunnels. Luckily, "files in folders" had recently been introduced and instituted as the main storage system of my inner world, so this absence amazingly went unnoted, and the records remained pure and intact until this alter was discovered in my late 30's [*sic*]. As a result of this

> particular split, a significant piece of my natural activist/defender voice escaped later "adjustments and fine-tuning," and was never caught in the "shutdown and discard" programming which happened later. [p. 510]

Many survivors have the experience that parts of the self went out-of-body during abusive events and saw the events from a bird's eye-view. Other ego states were perceived to hide within the body as they watched the abuse. From these vantage points, these parts often "see" through abusers' illusions, disguises, tricks, film, etc., and have more knowledge than directly tortured self-states.

Victims of abusive witchcraft often have a hidden ego state who was largely self-created to fend for itself in the world of abusers. This ego state often "watches" the abuse as it occurs. At some point, especially within a respectful therapy relationship, this part may question the world-view, theology, and agenda of the abusers. This part can be of tremendous help in resolving programming if it joins forces with the true self or a strong host. However, these significant kinds of shifts do not tend to happen early in the recovery process.

In many cases, memories of programming are initially registered in a multitude of self-states, and these alters join forces to process these. Many therapists invite all self-states affected by a particular event to meet in an internal therapy room to go through the event. Fotheringham (2008) explains,

> [E]xperiences were . . . often fragmented as they occurred. This meant that one alter could be "out" for an event, while one or more of [the] base alters "siphoned off" the feelings, emotional states, and/or pain that went with whatever was experienced, without truly being out in the body. Due to this, each alter's piece of the memory had to be accessed and addressed before the whole experience could be considered reclaimed and healed. [p. 497]

Fotheringham (personal communication, 2010) explains that her host and alters worked together to discover her programming. Her host provided intention and focus by deepening into whatever emotional or somatic state she was experiencing. She focused on the feeling and how she felt it in her body, asking, "What's this feeling about; where does it come from? What is it connected to? What is its root cause? What does this feeling have to tell me?" (see Watkins's "affect bridge", 1971, and "somatic bridge", 1992). Then,

her trauma-bearing states, and states perceived to have observed the abuse, often from out of the body, would share the memories. She found that her emotions were, in essence, a synthesis of her trauma experiences, and her greatest tool in guiding her to discover her memories.

Rutz (personal communication, 2009) similarly found that all involved alters had to contribute to resolve their programming, often by initially addressing the fear of the alter in the greatest pain:

> [I]f it was a ritual abuse situation, it was possible that four or five alters would be part of it. One for the pain, one for the ritual, one for being transported, etc. etc. . . . I think that the reason many DID people have trouble recalling what happened to them is that you most always have many different alters as part of one situation. It is not possible to recall the entire event unless you get the perspective of each alter involved. If you can work through the fear of the alter presenting with all the pain, you have the possibility of actually reaching the rest. Many times I would remember events backwards, and then lastly put it all together and understand and feel the ramifications of it all.

In some cases, the above methods are adequate to discover and resolve programming. In other cases, many programmed self-states are "frozen" in time and space in sites of torture and are inaccessible to the survivor and therapist. If they "come forward", they often bring overwhelming pain, terror, and drugged states with them, restricting the capacity for mental focus, and flooding the psyche with their distress. Many self-states cannot participate because they are too fragmentary, limited to the function they originally served during the abuse to suffer pain or terror or perform a circumscribed behaviour.

Much programming is held in place by self-states in hiding. Many hide in terror. Some are hidden in compliance with torture-hypnotic directives to "go to" particular locales in the unconscious mind, and are now "too far away" to be reached, often behind walls or chasms installed in programming. Some survivors have groups of self-states programmed to internally "reside" apart from each other by programmers with different agendas. These groups are usually largely unknown to each other. Even "watchful" parts may not have been able to witness the entirety of some events.

In victims of ritual abuse, affected self-states often perceive themselves to be controlled by malevolent spiritual attachments. It is only after much of the "spiritual programming" is "undone" that these self-states feel "free" enough of spiritual evil to participate in therapy in any way.

So, in many cases, the survivor needs more than a strong host or other strong ego states to work through programming. "Don't talk", "Don't tell", and anti-therapy programming are aimed at silencing hosts and other key ego states. Registration of programming events is often spread across many self-states, many hidden. Some self-states are obedient or loyal to their abusers. Some believe the theology or illusions, tricks, and lies of their abusers. And some programming is placed directly in the unconscious mind, "beneath" the level of all self-states.

How can the survivor overcome these barriers to consciously processing their programming?

Obtaining a meta-view

One solution to many of these obstacles is to work with the survivor to develop a means of obtaining a meta-view of the survivor's trauma history and self-state system. A few methods to achieve a meta-view include work with internal self helpers (ISHes), work with a strong self-reflective "true self", work with the unconscious mind, and work with the survivor's spiritual source. These are somewhat overlapping constructs and each survivor and therapist will define them differently.

An internal self helper may be considered a specialized ego state or a superconsciousness beyond ego states. Many therapists and clients understand it as spiritual in nature; others understand it in purely psychological terms. Conceptions of the ISH include the spiritual self, spirit, soul, the part connected to God, a higher self, source of inner wisdom, inner guide, co-therapist, observing ego, hidden observer, central organizing force, an ego-state aware of all other self-states (a hub), holder of all memory and life experience, and the unconscious or subconscious mind itself (Adams, 1989; Comstock, 1991).

Some survivors and therapists ask why the wise, system-savvy ISH cannot be the host. My observation is that ISHs expend great

mental energy to be "up front". They can sustain this only briefly, although this can be extended, especially within the support of a therapy relationship.

In some people, the "true self" and ISH are much the same. For others, an ISH is a specialized ego state that one accesses in a highly focused or meditative state, while the "true self" is broader in scope. In internal family systems therapy, the "Self" is considered to be the undamaged core identity and the "system leader" a therapist to the "internal family" (Goulding & Schwartz, 1995; Nichols & Schwartz, 1991). Internal family systems therapists help clients move into the position of the "Self" to work with their dissociated ego states. For other therapists, the "true self" is viewed as something that must develop more gradually, through increased capacity for self-reflection, genuine expression of affect, integration of trauma memory, and increased critical thinking (Schwartz, 2000).

For Gresch, only his true self, whom he views as the "one-and-only person", could discover and overcome his programming. Gresch views all alters, including the host, as originating in this true self, and having long ago submitted to executing scripted roles in response to torture and training designed to break the will. When the survivor becomes aware that he or she "created alters" to comply with the abusers, this critical "break-through" allows the true self to make the choice to defy the programmers and discard the roles and alters. The most challenging step to this critical act of defiance is to reduce the fear that had kept these memories and the true self hidden (personal communication, 2009).

A third means of obtaining a meta-view is to work with the unconscious or subconscious mind (UM). Fortunately, it is not necessary for my purposes here to attempt to define the elusive UM. It will suffice to say that therapists and survivors who use the UM as a resource to work through trauma generally view it as a holder of all memory and information about all self-states. Many also view it as a source of wisdom, the spiritual self, and the connection to God.

Work with the client's spiritual source is also a means to obtain a meta-view. The spiritual source may be God of an established religion, a broader "higher power" or source of love, the spirit within, or light, love, truth, etc. Some survivors prefer an animal that symbolizes strength or protection. For some survivors, there are limits

to the material that can be obtained through work with a spiritual source. For other survivors, one's spiritual source provides an effective meta-view.

Some survivors are able to focus inward to obtain a meta-view to make their programming conscious, and to overcome it, without the assistance of a therapist, friend, or loved one. They have usually already done a great deal of inner work on themselves, and they are usually currently safe. Some have a strong spiritual foundation. Some use art, writing, or sand trays to increase inner focus. Some need only the support of an empathic witness to do the work. Some describe having internal ISHs who are always working to undo programming.

These survivors are the exceptions. In my experience, most survivors cannot do meta-view work unassisted. It requires a state of deep internal focus and external support is needed to stay grounded. Most survivors also need help to structure and tolerate this hard work. I have found it tremendously helpful for the therapist to help the survivor develop a formal procedure to obtain a meta-view to discover programming, to provide much guidance in overcoming it, and to help contain noxious trauma-derived affect and somatic sensations that arise in the process.

Development of a formal procedure to make programming conscious

Before beginning the hard work of making programming conscious and overcoming it, I spend a good deal of time working with clients to develop tools that create enough structure and safety to do this difficult work, that allow for a meta-view of trauma memory and the self-state system, and that facilitate resolution of programming. These tools include:

1. Obtaining a family tree and history, education and work history, areas of residence, etc., for future reference.
2. Creation of a formal declaration or prayer to "protect the space" at the start of depth work.
3. Maintaining deep respect for the client's free will. I often ask, "Is it your free will to do this work?" before processing

programming. During the work, I often ask, "Do I have permission to ask . . .?" The choice to proceed, in itself, helps to reduce anxiety and increase focus. It is important to avoid power struggles, even when there is risk of harm to self, even when re-contact with abusers may be imminent. Pressure to control any thoughts, feelings, or behaviour is likely to be experienced as reminiscent of abuser control. Efforts to control high-risk behaviours may be perceived as a promise of more protection than the therapist can provide, ultimately leading to disappointment, and can make the client feel disempowered or overly dependent on the therapist. The therapist can work with the survivor to increase safety, but the motivation to work to stay safe must originate in the survivor.

4. Exploring the client's deepest values and spiritual beliefs to determine the role of this "spiritual source" in the work. Beliefs as non-specific as the right to freedom, truth, healing, or love for animals can be powerfully applied to resolve programming. Spiritual beliefs can help in protecting the safe place, containment strategies, effecting change in the inner world, "rescuing" states from sites of trauma, and for healing of traumatized states.
5. Creating a container to store pain, fear, spinning, body fluids, and drugged and toxic states, in order to reduce flashbacks and flooding, and to side-step programming to re-experience trauma. I often say, "There is no value in reliving pain and fear; go ahead and place those in your container." For extreme torture, repeated guidance may be required, for example, "Continue to store the shock", or, "Reduce the spinning by half, reduce it by half again. Let me know if it has been stored." In some cases, noxious states and substances may need to be stored in separate containers. The client's spiritual source can also be used to contain or remove unwanted feelings and substances.

Rutz (2003) explains how she used a toy box to contain memories between sessions and how she learned to be able to "stay in the present" in therapy:

> [We] all know how awful abreaction is, even though it is effective at allowing the alters to tell and getting a really accurate picture of

what took place . . . [I]n the beginning I was doing nothing but abreacting. I would find myself in my mind in a room looking at a closed door. After opening the door for the first time I always knew I would find a traumatic scene from my past, generally where a new alter had been created.

When I left the therapists [*sic*] office I would have to put what I had been working on away, so that I could effectively live during the week without being bombarded by the new material. I created an internal safe place to put the memories that we worked on in each session so that I would not be flooded in between. It was a toy box and I would set a stuffed animal on top before I left the office. During the week we would journal or not, which ever felt safe, and then let the memories back out of the toy box again in therapy the following week. This was different from the safe place my alters eventually built to go to for healing.

Later after my therapist had attended a seminar we began using grounding techniques so that while I was remembering I could also remain in the present. This was much less painful and traumatic to the system and every bit as effective as pure abreaction. My grounding technique was really simple. I taught myself that when I would begin to abreact and lose total control, I would grab the arm of the chair and bring myself back to the awareness of where I was. That insured that I was still in the present, and this happened in the past and did not have the power to hurt me anymore.

6. Creating an inner place of healing or recovery, a place where self-states can be "rescued to" from the sites of their abuse, to physically and emotionally heal. This place can include nurturing ego states, spiritual help, pets, soothing things, etc. A pre-established healing place increases the capacity to discover programming, including lowering resistance posed by frightened self-states.

   Rutz (2003) explains how she used a healing place for alters to rest and heal and for grounding:

The same visualization that was used by perps for programming enabled us to undo that programming. We created a healing place inside where anyone who chose to could go and rest and get help from other alters in healing. I found parts that couldn't speak because of programming or being preverbal and a helper alter would agree to be used for the memory retrieval work. That part would remain

grounded so that the emotional impact was not so overwhelming. I believe this is really important and could cause system wide shut down if we attempt to handle too much at one time.

7. Creating a place to do the work of making programming conscious and resolving it. A place devoted to this work greatly facilitates meta-view work. Some survivors readily create such a place. Others believe that there can never be any safe place. Some have been programmed against any inner safe place (Svali, 1996, Chapter Two). If a survivor feels such a place is not possible, I explain that many others initially felt the same way, yet created one. It is essential to maintain a stance of "We will create a way around every abuser intimidation and machination", in order to overcome programming.

   The survivor decides "who" will work in this place. It may be one or more of a host, ISH, the "true self", etc. Prior to "going to" the working place, it often helps to have all other states go somewhere to be distracted, such as a playground.

   Safety measures can be established to travel to this place, such as a secret entry or being taken by one's spiritual source. I suggest that the journey be made possible only when it is of their genuine free will and exclusively for the purpose of their healing, to prevent abuser coercion or threats being used to force survivors to reveal their place.

   Additional security measures are needed with very fearful survivors. Once the designated ego states are in this place, I let them know that they can develop additional safeguards to further hide it from outside detection. Programmers install illusions, such as buildings, guards, locks, and internal barriers in victims' inner worlds to control them. Survivors can use this same imaginative capacity and malleability of their internal worlds to their own advantage. The survivor ultimately has more control of his/her inner world than a programmer ever could.

   Fotheringham (2008, personal communication) explains how she created places for her healing:

As part of my healing, I adopted the use of structures for my own benefit. When I had a need for a specific alter or group of alters that could not be met within the already existing structures, or by

> adapting them for my purpose, one of my alters . . . would design a new structure to serve the needed purpose. I ended up with, among others, a Healing House with a Healing Hot Springs Hot Tub . . . a huge 4 story Discovery Lodge with an Intensive Care Unit and "Memory Processing Unit" (to ease extreme suffering of individual alters trapped in torture, by extracting and storing memories for later retrieval and processing), a Nursery (with soundproofed room for the one who screamed all the time) . . . and big, individually equipped dorm rooms for the various groups of children, and the 24 Rear Guardsmen who mostly became child-care-givers!

I suggest clients use their creative capacity to hide their working place from everyone, including me. Only the voice of the therapist need be heard there. I say, "Only you need to know how you hide this place. You can create a decoy, like a painting can hide a safe, like a secret-door bookcase can hide a room. Your first place can be a counterfeit with an illusion that makes it look like the work is stuck, with your true place anywhere in the universe, perhaps accessible only through your spiritual source."

Once the designated ego states are in the working place, it is important to help them feel "grounded" there so they do not relive the trauma memories being processed. I might say, "Feel where you are sitting, tell me what you see, what is the temperature, etc." While working, if the client begins to relive a memory, I remind them, "Stay in your working place without 'going into' the trauma."

A procedure should also be developed to help clients leave the working place at the close of the work, such as "locking" or otherwise securing it and grounding themselves back in the office.

Once back in the therapy room, most clients need to process the trauma they have discovered in more conscious, less intently focused, more emotional ways. Some clients choose to "leave" their memories in their working place until the next session. Over time, they develop increased tolerance for conscious memory of the trauma they are processing, and reserve this option for the most difficult material.

8. Establishing procedures to obtain information while in the working place. Clients who work with an ISH or the "true self"

usually use a fairly straightforward process of choosing to work and deep focus on exploring the origins of particular symptoms or snippets of memory. Clients working with a spiritual source usually pray to be shown the truth about what happened. Clients working with the unconscious mind may simply get a sense of "knowing", or they may create additional imagery to know or see "answers" and images. One survivor lowered her questions in a bucket into a well that represented her unconscious mind; the bucket brought the answers or images forward. Others watch words or images on a television screen, read the answers from a book, etc.

Material to explore and kinds of questions to ask

Some survivors proceed to discover programming with a simple intention to know about anything that was done to control the self. It is often expeditious to focus on the most pivotal information as soon as possible, by asking something like: "What is the most important event to look at?", or to begin with the earliest programming, since it is often foundational for later programming.

More often, current material supplies the direction for the work: a disturbing thought or impulse, a flashbulb memory, a stimulus that "triggered" distress, a somatic sensation or symptom, a sense of fear or threat, a dream, symbols in art, writing, or sand trays, or efforts to understand a particular self-state.

In the early stages of using this process, and later as particularly sensitive information is broached, it is helpful to repeatedly ask, "Do I have permission to . . .", or, "Would it cause any harm to look at . . ."

Early in the process of doing this work, and at the beginning of a day's work, small, specific questions help to "grease the works" and are more manageable because the survivor is in a trance-like state, "somewhere" between the external and internal worlds, between mental clarity and dream-like primary process thought. Small, focused questions also reduce fear of remembering and telling.

Formulating questions is the real art of this work. Questions should be focused, yet not leading. Because this work requires such intense mental effort, it helps to repeat what the client just said

within the next question: "And when [what client just said], what happened next?" (www.davidgrove.com/).

When beginning with current material, a good first question is whether that issue has something to do with a particular event. If the answer is yes, the next question might be, "Do I have permission to ask for the age of the body at the time of this event?" It helps to set the stage for the event by asking who dressed the child, who took the child there, whether it occurred outdoors or indoors, who was present, the position of the body, etc. These concrete details generally make the memory more accessible, and the survivor may then be able proceed in the order of what occurred.

Important areas to explore include how the child was abused and whether anything was done to put the child in an altered state of consciousness, for example, drugs, spinning, suffocation, near-death, etc. It is important to learn about what may have been placed on, or in, the body of the child. It is critical to determine whether new self-states were formed, whether their purpose was to serve the self or the abusers, and the degree the abusers used these newly formed self-states for their purposes. A useful question is, "For what purpose, or in response to what, was this part created?" It is important to discover the words spoken to harm, control, define, or name self-states. Sometimes, it is important to explore whether the information provided is accurate or a product of deception, hallucinogens, hypnosis, illusion, film, perceived spiritual evil, etc.

Perceived spiritual effects must be explored, including whether it was perceived that anything was attached to, or "captured" from, the child in this event, and whether words were spoken for spiritual control, such as claims, curses, commands, and covenants. It may be important to discover whether this event resulted in the perception of portals or astral pathways that allowed abusers continued spiritual access to the child.

Sample beginning of a dialogue to discover programming

Is there a particular event we have to look at to help this part? Yes.

Do I have permission to ask the age of the body at the time of that event? Yes.

How old was the body at the time of this event? Three.

Do I have permission to ask about the location of this event at age three? Yes.

Was this event indoors or outdoors? Indoors. In a house.

And this event in a house, was it where the body lived or another house? Another.

Do I have permission to ask whose house? No.

Do I have permission to ask who took the child to this house? Yes.

Who took the child to this house? The grandmother.

Did the grandmother dress the child for this event? Yes.

How did the grandmother dress the body? A dress.

May I ask the colour of the dress? Black. [Often a colour used for sacrifice.]

Did the child wear anything else? A chain.

Where was the chain worn? Around the waist.

Did anything hang from the chain? Yes. A locket.

Did the locket have a stone, a carving? A portrait.

Am I allowed to ask the subject of the portrait? No.

Did the grandmother place this locket on the child? No.

Am I allowed to ask who placed the locket? The lady in the portrait.

Am I allowed to know if this person was a rival of the grandmother? Yes, she was.

When the grandmother brought the child to this event, did she present her to someone? The rival.

Did either of them speak? Yes.

May I know who spoke first? The grandmother. She said, "I give you my granddaughter."

Did the rival respond? Yes, she said, "You have done well."

At this event at three, were others present? Yes.

How many others? Twelve.

Were any male? No.

Were there other children present? Yes.

May I know how many? Three.

Were any male? One newborn baby boy.

Am I allowed to ask the ages of the two female children? Three and six.

Were these children already known to the child? Yes.

Am I allowed to know who they were? No.

Where were the other children when the body was presented to the rival? The girls were on altars. The boy was with one of the ladies.

After the rival received the child, what happened next? She was placed on the altar.

Who placed the child on the altar? The grandmother.

On an altar by herself? With the other three-year-old.

Were words spoken when the grandmother placed the body on the altar? Yes.

Am I allowed to know the words? Part.

What part may I know? "I give you to . . ."

Spoken by the grandmother? Yes.

And when she spoke those words, what happened next? . . .

This continued piecemeal, until the event was completed. Then, "disconnecting" the harm, physical, mental, spiritual, etc., culminating in rescue of the three-year-old ego state, can begin, as follows.

Resolution of programming once it is made conscious

Making programming conscious is very challenging. Resolving programming once it is made conscious is comparatively easy. It relies on defiance of programmers' directives, training, conditioning, and hypno-suggestions; assertion of one's will against abuser attempts at spiritual bondage; use of one's imaginative capacity and the malleability of the unconscious mind to re-sculpt the inner world to one's own needs and wishes; communication and negoti-

ation with significant ego states; "rescue" of self-states from their abusers and from the sites of their torture to an inner place of healing; in some cases, integration of ego states into the self. These changes are most deeply accomplished while the survivor is still in the inner place created to do the work of discovering and resolving programming.

Svali (1996) explains that survivors can use a limitless creative capacity to overcome programming:

> The good news is that this internal landscape is highly malleable. Once parts are "found", and the binds that trap them in harmful sites are discovered and resolved, they can be helped to permanently relocate to places of safety and healing in the internal world. And scenes and structures installed in the mind to cause harm can be removed. In essence, the work of healing and disabling programming uses to the survivor's advantage what programmers used to their disadvantage: the limitless malleability of the internal landscape.

Krystal (1988) captured the essence of this therapeutic approach when he wrote about helping traumatized alexithymic patients achieve a "wish-based psychic structure" and the need for patients to be in trance-like states to modify self- and object-representations:

> The patient, formerly suffering a psychic 'hole', has to be helped (at some risk) to convert the absence of psychic representation to a wish-based psychic structure. [p. 482]
>
> In my extensive work on this subject, I came to the conclusion that because the problems of alexithymics are a reaction to conflicts registered as preverbal, infantile, or purely affective memories, the usual approaches of psychoanalytic psychotherapy fail us. To deal with such early and/or severe trauma, the patients have to experience trancelike states in which modifications of self- and object-representations can be achieved. [p. 481]

Conscious processing of tricks, illusions, lies, and set-ups

Once programming tricks, lies, films, set-ups, etc., are made conscious, revealed for what they are, and the affected self-states

are discovered, they lose their potency. The survivor now has the conscious capacity to mentally reject the intended messages, perceptions, and set-ups. Programmed triggers come under conscious control. In some instances, triggers are further mastered by changing them to impossible stimuli, like a purple and blue polka-dotted apple playing the saxophone.

Self-states formed or harmed in these events need help to leave these scenarios. They need physical, emotional, and often spiritual, separation from the abuse they endured.

Physical separation involves guiding the survivor to use his or her spiritual source, strong and helpful ego states, powerful animals, or even inanimate devices, to "go into the memory", push the abusers back away from abused self-states, detach them from the devices of torture, cleanse their bodies of any abusive drugs, toxins, blood, sexual substances, etc., destroy the equipment (electroshock machines, restraints, film projectors), and to relocate the affected self-states to the inner place of healing. Most survivors readily employ such suggestions. Some survivors initially express that these interventions feel artificial or invalidate their abuse. I share that I agree that this work will not change that this abuse occurred, and the memory will never disappear, but that for self-states who perceive themselves "stuck" in the sites of their abuse, this "adds an additional frame" to this memory, a corrective ending, and that this ending also reflects truths, such as their love and compassion for hurt parts of themselves.

Psychological and "spiritual" separation also usually require guidance by the therapist, at least initially. Survivors have been so intimidated and dominated by the mind-set of their abusers that they initially feel unable to think outside of the abusers' frame. For example, survivors manipulated into harming others usually believe, as their abusers intended, that they are deeply evil. Therapists have the natural impulse to want to argue with survivors about their having been given no good choices, that everyone has a breaking point when tortured, that there is a survival instinct that takes over when one's life is threatened, etc. These approaches may help in the long term, but rarely have an impact short-term. The guilt is existential. And it is natural to unconsciously seek to undo harm done to others through suffering and self-punishment. I have found that a more useful immediate intervention is to guide the

survivor through a pronouncement or prayer and to ask them to repeat my words if they feel that I am speaking truth, and to stop and correct me if I have it wrong. I say something like:

> I, [name], on behalf of all of my parts, refuse to submit to [abusers'] claim that I am as evil as they are. The truth is that I never wanted to do [act]. I was coerced by [abusers]. I did not do [act] of my free will. They gave me two choices that were both unbearable. It is a lie that I agreed to this act. Any agreement made under torture, threat, or trickery is invalid, legally and spiritually. I reject their statement that I was evil. That lie belongs to them, not to me. I choose the truth that I was an innocent, terrified child who deserved love, protection, and respect.

Generally, all of these steps must occur before affected self-states can be rescued to a healing place. If affected self-states are unable to be moved to a healing place, it usually signifies that critical elements of the event have not been discovered and resolved. It is helpful to ask, "Is there something else we need to know before these parts can go to your healing place?" On occasion, ego states need to "tell their stories", release their emotions and sorrow, before they can be relocated.

Conscious choice against directives, claims, curses, covenants, threats, etc.

Words that abusers and programmers pair with torture have a deep and devastating effect on their victims. It is important to reject or renounce verbal commands and proclamations, especially words to define the roles or nature of self-states, assigned names, claims of spiritual ownership or evil, curses to threaten or create expectations of harm, covenants (coerced agreements), triggers to call forward self-states, codes to access, activate, re-set, back-up, programmes, and, in many cases, to replace these in declarations or prayer with proclamations, blessings, new names, new roles and defining purposes, impossible stimuli (for triggers and codes) etc., of one's own choosing.

An anonymous survivor and psychotherapist explained the critical importance of discovering the words of programmers:

> The last and very necessary step of dismantling the structure, for me, was to remember exactly what the programmer told me and the imagery that I created from this. Once I realized that the structure was that way because of what someone told me, I was able to dissolve it permanently. Strangely, just knowing that the programmer told me to make it that way did not work. I had to remember exactly what he said and what I did in response. I did not always do exactly what they wanted, but sometimes just told them I did. What I did in response to what they said was just as important as what they said for me to get rid of the structure.

Formal declarations and prayers have a powerful effect in overcoming words intended to define, control, and harm the survivor. Here is a sample prayer to rename a self-state:

> I ask you God, on behalf of myself and all of my parts, to hold this three-year-old part of me and let her know in her heart that the abusers lied to her when they told her that her name was Unlovable. That was a lie. She has always been lovable. Please let her feel your love and let her feel our love. Please let her know that the abusers tried to give her that name so she would never feel worthy to reach out to anyone who would really love her. They knew that name was a lie when they said it. We never agreed to that name. I give that name back to the abusers. I ask you God to bless her with the new name of [survivor's choice, such as Sweet Little Girl].

Psychological and spiritual separation of perceived spiritual attachments

I believe that ritually abused clients reveal their experiences of spiritual evil only to people whom they sense are receptive to its possible existence and who convey some genuine comfort in being able to help with it. Without this support, many survivors do not allow the perception of spiritual evil to become conscious. When clients perceive the presence of spiritual evil, internally or externally, I usually work with that perception, rather than initiating dialogue about whether the perceived evil is real or not. If I were to try to convince a ritually abused client that human spirits or entities are not real, to try to reduce their fear, etc., I might stand a chance with

some hosts, but no chance with self-states raised in Satanism or abusive witchcraft. Those self-states were raised in cultures rooted in theologies that such entities are more powerful and enduring than human life. And these self-states are barely orientated to the outside world. Programming is most deeply resolved when it succeeds in changing the reality of programmed alters in the inner world. Whether such "evil" is spiritually real or not, it is psychologically real to these self-states, and I believe it can only be dealt with as such.

I have found that to achieve "separation" of perceived attachments, whether this mechanism is partly spiritual or only psychological, survivors must recall the rituals in which "transfers" and "captures" were perceived to be accomplished, and then assert their will to reject each act. I tell survivors that I believe that any act intended to spiritually control children, who are not aware that they had any choice to the contrary, can now be opposed and "separated" spiritually and psychologically by a simple act of one's will, that we each have control of our spiritual self. I believe that an overwhelmed, frightened, and abused psyche is what permitted the perceived "admission" of these entities and introjects. Making the trauma conscious and the exercise of free will is what allows for their rejection and separation.

Many survivors use traditionally religious approaches or personal spiritual approaches to "remove" perceived "attachments" and to retrieve "captured" parts of the self. This work generally includes the use of a spiritual base to refuse the abusers' right to have abused them, to refuse the words intended to bind them, to refuse the spirit or entity to remain, to will it to leave, to close all perceived portals, to sever all perceived astral pathways, and to declare one's right, or ask the spiritual source, to have all parts of one's self returned, with none of the abusers' spirits, words, evil, or deities/demons attached.

Technological programming can also result in the perception of "introjects" dwelling within, often intentionally "placed" by programmers. These can also be "separated" by one's will or spiritual source.

Many survivors easily differentiate self-states from perceived introjects or entities. For others, the therapist can help the survivor differentiate these through dialogue. Self-states, even those with a

hostile veneer, usually desire some human connection with the therapist, are motivated to feel "better", and their hostility has a quality of underlying fear and pain. Perceived introjects and entities generally do not establish a "felt" human connection with the therapist. Instead, they demonstrate scorn for the survivor and intense hatred for the therapist.

In many cases, when the work seems "stuck", survivors may have the sense that "spiritual evil" is interfering. If they perceive that "evil" is being "sent" in the present, survivors can usually easily refuse its presence by asserting their will in intention or prayer. In the case of perceived interference by introjects or entities "attached" in prior abuse, it usually helps to "place" these in opaque, soundproof containers, guarded by spiritual protection if the survivor wishes. As the event is processed, words of control, implements and bodily substances of abuse, attached deities, etc., can also be placed in these containers. Once the event is fully processed, the container and its contents are generally easily expelled.

I have consistently observed that when affected self-states perceive spirits and entities to be gone, the survivor experiences tremendous relief. To date, no survivor I have worked with ever felt that they had separated a part of the self in the process.

"Removal" of structures

"Removal" of "structures", especially foundational structures, can be challenging, especially early in a survivor's recovery. Some structures are "placed" with near-death torture in the unconscious mind, "beneath" the self-state system. A meta-view of the inner world is often necessary to discover such structures. The programmer's goal is for the terror of death to secure the structure against any attempt to tamper with it by the victim, or by rival programmers.

Programmers often "install" structures with booby-traps to prevent their removal. Wires to explosive or electroshock devices may connect self-states and structures. Some programmers attach "demons" or "spirits" to protect their structures. A self-state may be programmed to be a loyal servant or good soldier to guard the structure. Structures may be connected and layered, more hidden

structures installed by more skilled programmers. Rival programmers often compete to control victims.

Self-states trapped within, or connected to structures, have very little, if any, self-agency. They define themselves by the reality of the programmers who dictated that the structures can only be removed by their own parameters. Some programmers install a complex series of steps that must be followed to remove a structure, including explosive devices that must first be emptied of their explosive substances, then removed, codes to deactivate booby-traps along the way, separation of "demons", a master erase code, and modification of re-set codes to prevent their use.

Stimuli associated with a programme installation often serve as re-sets and must be contained, destroyed, removed, etc. Undiscovered stimuli can later serve to re-set programming, by programme design, for example, "When you hear this song, this grid will reappear in your chest", and by classical conditioning of associated stimuli with pain, terror, and programmer commands. It is, therefore, helpful to check, "Was there anything else being perceived in this event?" Words, music, smells, tastes, sights, and physical sensations can be changed to "impossible stimuli". Tools of torture must be separated from abused states, including drugs, toxins, wires, constraints, things used to rape, body fluids (blood, semen), "spirits", and "demons". Devices and substances can be changed to benign objects, destroyed, or washed clean, by an act of will or by one's spiritual source.

Programmers may initially install structures with the requirement that in order to remove the structure, the victim must be re-tortured in the same way while saying the removal code,. In actuality, this can be accomplished in imagination only and very quickly, while the removal code is said. In doing so, it is very important that the survivor mentally remains in the safe place rather than "slip into" the site of the torture.

Some survivors remove structures, fundamental and otherwise, from the inner world without following programmer "rules". This generally requires awareness of the structure and self-states trapped within, and development of much "true self", with compassion for what all self-states endured and forgiveness for what they were forced into doing to others. This capacity for self-love, setting intentions and/or spiritual faith, can be used to free self-

states from structures and to remove the structures. Many survivors report that structures only "work" if self-states connected to them perceive them as real. When the programming is made conscious, even if only in significant ISH, and the trapped self-states understand that the structure that surrounds them is only an illusion, the structure simply vanishes.

Rutz (2003) realized that creative visualization was how her programming was done and used this same capacity to erase barriers and booby-traps and to deactivate and remove structures:

> A lot of my programming revolved around the Wizard of Oz. The hourglass was used in the event I would begin to remember and talk. They would tell us that if we talked the hourglasses [*sic*] sand would begin to run and when it was all run out we must do ourself in. We turned the hourglass on its side so it could no longer be used to threaten us. I was also told my head would explode. When I ran into this the first time, I was driving home from therapy. My head not only felt like it was going to explode; I saw a gigantic bomb with a lit fuse. I decided that I had used visualization for helping to heal other alters and since the programming they did was done with creative visualization, I should be able to undo it in the same way. I took my fingers and snuffed the wick out—it was that simple. Knowing their lies made it so much easier to dismantle the programming . . .
>
> I found there were hidden parts. We took a giant eraser and internally started erasing all the lines to the boxes and triangles inside of us. We saw people coming out on stretchers, with bandages and others internally were carrying them on cots to the healing place.
>
> When I was having trouble even getting close to memories we found booby traps and land mines surrounding them, so that every time we got close we couldn't get past these. We visualized a giant pacman in our blood stream. He was sent on a search and destroy mission for any programs that were implanted and dangerous. When pacman was through destroying these he yelled, "Mission Accomplished." Our progress after this was remarkable.

Relocation of self-states to an inner healing place

Once released from programme controls, survivors can use their imaginative and spiritual capacity to "relocate" hurt self-states

from sites of abuse and programme structures to a place of healing within.

Often, only "a part of a part" can be located to a healing place when an event has been processed, because that self-state was abused repeatedly over many events.

Some ego-states require therapeutic help before moving to a healing place. Many need their feelings and experiences honoured and witnessed. Many need to critically evaluate the agenda of their abusers, now that they can safely do so. Many must grieve perceived bonds to their abusers. Some need the protective function of their abuser loyalty to be understood. Some have intense rage, and need to develop constructive channels to release it, or to contain or dissolve it imagistically or spiritually.

For Rutz (2003), "Neverland" held a pre-verbal baby who never grew up and "Shadowland" held an alter trained as an assassin. When she tried to rescue these trapped alters, they were initially afraid to leave their familiar places. She needed to communicate with them to get them to safety:

> It took a longtime [*sic*] and a good deal of work, to find this and break free, since even after the alters found out the truth they did not want to leave their lands right away where they felt safe and come to the safe place in my system. After some internal communication the baby was rescued from Neverland. Alters simply created a bridge and crossed from there to Shadowland. Our baby part was nurtured by our alter who was trained for killing, so it was very beneficial to both those alters. The door to Neverland was burned and holes were shot in the ceiling of Shadowland to let light through . . . eventually everyone felt safe enough so that an elevator was built to the healing place and Shadowland was destroyed too.

Ongoing spiritual, psychological, and physical healing occurs in the inner healing place. I ask clients what their self-states need for physical comfort, cleansing, love (pets are a common wish), etc. They may choose to have me ask their spiritual source to provide these, or may have ISH provide these.

There is a significant easing once ego-states are relocated to the inner healing place. It is often a full resolution for programmed fragmentary self-states. Once their programming is conscious and

they have been relocated to a place of healing, they only need safety, love from the self or the survivor's spiritual source, and time to heal. They need not be actively engaged in therapy or "integrated" with the "true self" or host. More substantial ego states also require much emotional release, grieving, and sharing of experience and memory with the "true self", host, and therapist. I do not encourage integration, but view it as a very personal and seamless process that usually occurs as barriers between ego states are no longer needed.

In the process of resolving, overcoming, and removing programming, major shifts occur in self-states and in the internal landscape (inner world). This can be unsettling in that the familiar is no longer so.

When large structures that housed self-states are gone, some survivors perceive a "void". This usually must be replaced. A healing place provides a home and sense of grounding for previously programmed parts. Survivors create many other new and helpful places in their inner worlds.

Many survivors discover a foundational programme structure that separated two sides of their self-state system. The host side is amnestic for the other side, where most self-states endured very serious abuse as both victims and perpetrators. Once this barrier is gone, each side must develop compassion for the other. The host must face the horrors the abuse-bound parts endured and not recoil from them. The abuse-bound side must forgive the host for not enduring more abuse and must appreciate the host's role in living the normal side of life. Ultimately, they all must face that everyone was hurt and that they share this common bond. Survivor support groups can be of great help in resolving these conflicts.

Survivors can look forward to deeply moving changes. Rutz explains (2009, personal communication),

> Each alter's job is normal to that alter. It's all they know. Just as an abused child who is being incested and is told that is love, learns to believe that lie. They don't know any better, so to them that is "Normal." An alter like Samantha only knows pain, so why wouldn't it be normal. As I was healing, it was so vital to allow each alter to choose a new job or a new way of life. For instance, Guy chose to rock the Baby part and comfort her when the barriers between Neverland and Shadowland were dissolved. Think what

that meant to the system's healing to have a part that was a trained killer be able to feel love and give love. That was huge.

Once substantial work has been achieved, and enough parts are in the inner place of healing, the hidden "core", an early and central aspect of the self that the individual had kept long-hidden from abusers, or that the programmers had sequestered, may feel safe enough to make itself known to the "true self", host, and therapist. Other major integrations of the self-system may spontaneously occur. This often results in a sense of vitality. Senses may feel heightened. One survivor reported truly seeing colour for the first time. There is often a sense of truly being alive in the world for the first time.

References

Adams, M. A. (1989). Internal self helpers of persons with multiple personality disorder. *Dissociation*, *II*(3): 138–143.

Barber, T. X. (2000). A deeper understanding of hypnosis: its secrets, its nature, its essence. *American Journal of Clinical Hypnosis*, *42*(3)/*42*(4), January–April: 208–272.

Beauchaine, T.P., Gatzke-Kopp, L., & Mead, H. K. (2007). Polyvagal theory and developmental psychopathology: emotion dysregulation and conduct problems from preschool to adolescence. *Biological Psychology*, *74*(2): 174–184.

Becker, T., Karriker, W., Overkamp, B., & Rutz, C. (2007). *Extreme Abuse Survey Project*. Accessed 12 June 2010 at: http://extreme-abuse-survey.net http://extreme-abuse-survey.net.

Blinder, B. J. (2007). The autobiographical self: who we know and who we are. *Psychiatric Annals*, *37*(4): 276–284.

Chu, J. A., Frey, L. M., Ganzel, B. L., & Matthews, J. A. (1999). Memories of childhood abuse: Dissociation, amnesia, and corroboration. *American Journal of Psychiatry*, *156*(5): 749–755.

Clark, P. B. (2001). Magic surgery and the formation of the inner world. In: *Restoring Survivors of Satanic Ritual Abuse: Equipping and Releasing God's People for Spirit-Empowered Ministry* (formerly entitled, *His Presence in Abuse Counseling*). Los Angeles, CA: Bairdspong. Accessed 12 June 2010 at: www.suite101.com/print_article.cfm/ritual_abuse/71201.

Cleghorn, R. (1990). The McGill experience of Robert A. Cleghorn, MD: Recollections of D. Ewen Cameron. *Canadian Bulletin of Medical History/Bulletin canadien d'histoire de la médecine*, *7*(1): 53–76. Accessed 12 June 2010 at: www.cbmh.ca/index.php/cbmh/article/view/224/223.

Collins, A. (1988). *In the Sleep Room: The Story of the CIA Brainwashing Experiments in Canada.* Toronto, Ontario: Key Porter Books.

Comstock, C. M. (1991). Inner self helper and concepts of inner guidance: historical antecedents, its role within dissociation, and clinical utilization. *Dissociation*, *IV*(3): 165–177.

Conway, A. (1994). Trance formations of abuse. In: V. Sinason (Ed.), *Treating Survivors of Satanist Abuse* (pp. 254–264). New York: Routledge.

Conway, F., & Siegelman, J. (2005). *Snapping: America's Epidemic of Sudden Personality Change* (2nd edn). New York: Stillpoint Press.

Dell, P. (2009). Understanding dissociation. In: P. Dell & J. O'Neil (Eds.), *Dissociation and the Dissociative Disorders: DSM-V and Beyond* (pp. 709–825). New York: Routledge.

Draijer, N., & Langeland, W. (1999). Childhood trauma and perceived parental dysfunction in the etiology of dissociative symptoms in psychiatric in-patients. *American Journal of Psychiatry*, *156*(3): 379–385.

Einhorn, L. (2006). *Forgiveness and Child Abuse: Would You Forgive?* Bandon, OR: Robert Reed. Retrieved from http://mcrais.googlepages.com/emery.htm.

Fassin, V., Rechtman, R., & Gomme, R. (2009). *The Empire of Trauma: An Inquiry into the Condition of Victimhood*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Fotheringham, T. (2008). Patterns in mind-control: a first person account. In: J. R. Noblitt & P. S. Perskin Noblitt (Eds.), *Ritual Abuse in the Twenty-first Century: Psychological, Forensic, Social and Political Considerations* (pp. 491–540). Bandon, OR: Robert Reed.

Fox, H. (1993). Patients' fear of and objection to electroconvulsive therapy. *Hospital and Community Psychiatry*, *44*: 357–360.

Frankel, A. S., & O'Hearn, T. C. (1996). Similarities in responses to extreme and unremitting stress: cultures of communities under siege. *Psychotherapy*, *33*(3): 485–502.

Freeman, H. (1987). In conversation with William Sargant. *Bulletin of the Royal College of Psychiatrists*, *11*(September): 290–294. Accessed 14 April 2010 at: http://pb.rcpsych.org/cgi/reprint/11/9/290.pdf.

Goulding, R., & Schwartz, R. (1995). *The Mosaic Mind: Empowering the Tormented Selves of Child Abuse Survivors.* New York: Norton.

Gresch, H. U. (2010). *Hypnose Bewusstseinskontrolle Manipulation: Bewusstseinskontrolle durch Persönlichkeitsspaltung*. Dusseldorf: Elitär Verlag.

Hauff, W. (1858). *Das kalte Herz* (The cold heart). Lexington, MA:: D. C. Heath. Accessed 14 April 2010 at: www.sanmayce.com/The%20Cold%20Heart/WILHELM%20HAUFF%20-%20THE%20COLD%20HEART_1.pdf.

Heim, A. (1892). Notizen uber den Tod durch absturz (Remarks on fatal falls). *Jahrbuch des Schweizer Alpenclub*, *27*: 327–337. Translated and reprinted in English as R. Noyes & R. Kletti (1980). The experience of dying from falls. In: R. A. Kalish (Ed.), *Death, Dying, Transcending* (pp. 129–136). Farmingdale, NY: Baywood.

Kernberg, O. F. (1994). Aggression, trauma, and hatred in the treatment of borderline patients. *Psychiatric Clinics of North America*, *17*(4): 701–714.

Krystal, H. (1988). On some roots of creativity. *Psychiatric Clinics of North America*, *11*(3): 475–491.

Lacter, E., & Lehman, K. (2008). Guidelines to differential diagnosis between schizophrenia and ritual abuse/mind control traumatic stress. In: J. R. Noblitt & P. Perskin Noblitt (Eds.), *Ritual Abuse in the Twenty-first Century: Psychological, Forensic, Social and Political Considerations* (pp. 85–154). Bandon, OR: Robert Reed.

LeDoux, J. (1996). *The Emotional Brain: The Mysterious Underpinnings of Emotional Life*. New York: Simon and Schuster.

LeDoux, J. (2007). Emotional memory. *Scholarpedia*, *2*(7): 1806, revision #38756. Accessed 12 June 2010 at: www.scholarpedia.org/article/Emotional_memory doi:10.4249/scholarpedia.1806.

Lezak, M. (1995). *Neuropsychological Assessment* (3rd edn). New York: Oxford University Press.

Marks, J. (1979). *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate: The CIA and Mind Control: The Secret History of the Behavioral Sciences*. New York: Norton.

McGonigle, H. L. (1999). A look at the law and government mind control through five cases. Accessed 12 June 2010 at: http://ritual-abuse.us/mindcontrol/articles-books/the-law-and-mind-control-a-look-at-the-law-and-goverment-mind-control-through-five-cases/.

Miller, A. (2008). Recognizing and treating survivors of abuse by organized criminal groups. In: J. R. Noblitt & P. Perskin Noblitt (Eds.),

Ritual Abuse in the Twenty-first Century: Psychological, Forensic, Social and Political Considerations (pp. 443–477). Bandon, OR: Robert Reed.

MKULTRA declassified documents archive: http://abuse-of-power.org/modules/content/index.php?id=31.

MKULTRA declassified document (3 December 1951). Artichoke [redacted] (MORI ID 146342). Accessed 12 June 2010 at: http://abuse-of-power.org/modules/content/index.php?id=31:

MKULTRA declassified document (January 25, 1952). Memorandum for: Chief, Medical Staff Subject: PROJECT ARTICHOKE, Evaluation of ISSO Role (MORI ID 144686). Accessed 12 June 2010 at: http://abuse-of-power.org/modules/content/index.php?id=31.

MKULTRA declassified document (10 February 1954). Subject: hypnotic experimentation and research (MORI ID 190691). Accessed 12 June 2010 at: http://abuse-of-power.org/modules/content/index.php?id=31.

MKULTRA declassified document (5 May 1955). Hypnotism and covert operations. (MORI ID 190713). Accessed 12 June 2010 at: http://abuse-of-power.org/modules/content/index.php?id=31.

MKULTRA declassified document (1955, 1956, 1957). *Studies of Dissociated States, of Sub-project 43 and Psychophysiological Studies of Hypnosis and Suggestibility (1956)* (MORI ID 017441). Accessed 12 June 2010 at: http://abuse-of-power.org/modules/content/index.php?id=31.

MKULTRA declassified document (23 August 1961). Memorandum for the Record, Subject: Project MKULTRA, Subproject 136 (MORI ID 017395). Accessed 12 June 2010 at: http://abuse-of-power.org/modules/content/index.php?id=31http://michael-robinett.com/declass/c000.htm (p. 1).

Neutra, W. (1920). *Seelenmechanik und Hysterie* (Mechanics of the Soul and Hysteria). Leipzig: Vogel.

Nichols, M., & Schwartz, R. (1991). *Family Therapy; Concepts and Methods*. Boston, MA: Allyn & Bacon.

Nijenhuis, E. R. S., & den Boer, J. A. (2007). Psychobiology of traumatization and trauma-related structural dissociation of the personality. In: E. Vermettern, M. Dorahy, & D. Spiegel (Eds.), *Traumatic Dissociation: Neurobiology and Treatment* (pp. 202–218). Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Association.

Ogawa, J. R., Sroufe, A., Weinfield, N. S., Carlson, E. A., & Egeland, B. (1997). Development and the fragmented self: longitudinal study of dissociative symptomatology in a nonclinical sample. *Development and Psychopathology*, *9*: 855–879.

Parker, E. S., Cahill, L., & McGaugh, J. L. (2006). A case of unusual autobiographical remembering. *Neurocase*, *12*(1): 35–49.

Pavlov, I. P. (1941). *Conditioned Reflexes and Psychiatry, Volume 2 of Lectures on Conditioned Reflexes.* Introduction by W. H. Gantt. New York: International Universities Press.

Peterson, G. (1991). Children coping with trauma: diagnosis of "dissociation identity disorder". *Dissociation Progress in the Dissociative Disorders*, *4*(3): 152–164.

Porges, S. W. (1995). Orienting in a defensive world: mammalian modifications of our evolutionary heritage. A polyvagal theory. *Psychophysiology*, 32: 301–318.

Porges, S. W. (1999). Emotion: an evolutionary by-product of the neural regulation of the autonomic nervous system. In: C. S. Carter, B. Kirkpatrick, & I. I. Lederhendler (Eds.), *The Integrative Neurobiology of Affiliation, Annals of the New York Academy of Sciences* (pp. 65–80). Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

Project MKULTRA, the CIA's Program of Research into Behavioral Modification. Joint Hearing before the Select Committee on Intelligence and the Subcommittee on Health and Scientific Research of the Committee on Human Resources, United State Senate, Ninety-Fifth Congress, First Session. (1977). US Government Printing Office (copy hosted at the *New York Times* website). Accessed 12 June 2010 at: www.nytimes.com/packages/pdf/national/13inmate_ProjectMKULTRA.pdf.

Putnam, F. W. (1997). *Dissociation in Children and Adolescents: A Developmental Perspective.* New York: Guilford Press.

Putnam, F. W., & Carlson, E. B. (2002). Hypnosis, dissociation, and trauma: myths, metaphors, and mechanisms . In: D. Bremner & C. Marmar (Eds.), *Trauma, Memory, and Dissociation* (pp. 27–55). Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.

Pynoos, R. S., Steinberg, A. M., & Goenjian, A. (1996). Traumatic stress in childhood and adolescence: recent developments and current controversies. In: B. A. van der Kolk, A. C. McFarlane, & L. Weisaeth (Eds.), *Traumatic Stress: The Effects of Overwhelming Experience on Mind, Body, and Society* (pp. 331–358). New York: Guilford Press.

Rejali, D. (2009). *Torture and Democracy*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Ross, C. A. (1995). *Satanic Ritual Abuse: Principles of Treatment*. Toronto: University of Toronto Press.

Ross, C. (2000). *Bluebird: Deliberate Creation of Multiple Personality by Psychiatrists*. Richardson, TX: Manitou Communications.

Rutz, C. (2001). *A Nation Betrayed*. Grass Lake, MI: Fidelity.

Rutz, C. (2003). Healing from ritual abuse and mind control, a Presentation to the Sixth Annual Ritual Abuse, Secretive Organizations and Mind Control Conference, 8–10 August. Accessed 12 June 2010 at: http://ritualabuse.us/smart-conference/conf03/healing-from-ritual-abuse-and-mind-control/.

Sargant, W. (1957). *Battle for the Mind: A Physiology of Conversion and Brain-washing*. London: Heinemann.

Scheflin, A. W., & Opton, E. M. (1978). *The Mind Manipulators*. New York: Paddington Press. Retrieved from http://www.lynnsart.net/.

Schwartz, H. (2000). *Dialogues with Forgotten Voices: Relational Perspectives on Child Abuse Trauma and the Treatment of Severe Dissociative Disorders*. New York: Basic Books.

Shorter, E., & Healy, D. (2007). *History of Electroconvulsive Treatment in Mental Illness*. New Brunswick: Rutgers University Press.

Steele, K., van der Hart, O., & Nijenhuis, E. (2009). The theory of trauma-related structural dissociation of the personality. In: P. Dell & J. O'Neil (Eds.), *Dissociation and the Dissociative Disorders: DSM-V and Beyond* (pp. 239–258). New York: Routledge.

Svali (1996). How the cult programs people. Accessed 12 June 2010 at: http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_illuminati_svali01a.htm; http://www.mindcontrolforums.com/svali_speaks.htm.

Tammet, D. (2007). *Born on a Blue Day: Inside the Extraordinary Mind of an Autistic Savant*. New York: Free Press.

Thomas, G. (1989). *Journey Into Madness: The True Story of Secret CIA Mind Control and Medical Abuse*. New York: Bantam.

Thomas, G. (1998). Memorandum to Eric Olson, 30th November 1998. Accessed 12 June 2010 at: www.frankolsonproject.org/Statements/Statement-G.Thomas.html.

Thompson, G. (2004). *The Ethic of Honesty: The Fundamental Rule of Psychoanalysis*. Amsterdam: Rodopi.

Tien, H. C. (1974). 100 questions and answers on ELT: the electrolytic therapy of psychosynthesis. *World Journal of Psychosynthesis*, *6*: 31–39.

van der Hart, O., Nijenhuis, E. R. S., & Steele, K. (2006). *The Haunted Self: Structural Dissociation and the Treatment of Chronic Traumatization*. New York: Norton.

van der Kolk, B. A. (1989). The compulsion to repeat the trauma: re-enactment, revictimization, and masochism. *Psychiatric Clinics of North America*, *12*(2): 389–411.

van der Kolk, B. A., McFarlane, A. C., & Weisaeth, L. (Eds.) (1996). *Traumatic Stress: The Effects of Overwhelming Experience on Mind, Body, and Society.* New York: Guilford Press.

Watkins, J. G. (1971). The affect bridge: a hypnoanalytic technique. *International Journal of Clinical & Experimental Hypnosis*, *19*: 21–27.

Watkins, J. G. (1992). *Hypnoanalytic Techniques: The Practice of Clinical Hypnosis* (Volume 2). New York: Irvington.

Weinstein, H. (1988). *Father, Son and CIA*. Halifax, Nova Scotia: Formac.

CHAPTER FOUR

Love is my religion

*Anonymous**

I was born the first daughter in a long line of first daughters. My mother came from a long line of people who took part in ritual abuse. For a long time, this was something that my father knew nothing about because this was something that happened through the women in my family, a very powerful, matriarchal family that I grew up in. I'm second generation Irish. My parents were staunch Catholics, so I was initially brought up with two ideologies—the catholic ideology and an inversion of that, which was Satanism.

My very early memories are of being a small baby in a room with my mother, grandmother, and other women; later, men joined in too, and they would cut marks on my body and they would throw me to each other, around the room. My early memories of these experiences are of being very startled, terrified, and disorientated. It was not long before I went from being one baby to two babies, three babies, more . . .

* Due to the libel laws in the UK and the wish to protect myself and my family, this piece is written anonymously.

The women in my family had some very twisted ideas about men and women. Men were very stupid. Women were much more powerful, much more significant, and much more important. Sex was dirty and sinful, but it was our job to satisfy men because they were weak. You had to keep them happy.

I remember being a small baby and being sexually stimulated. My body was being prepared for the things that were going to be happening to me later. I was also trained from a very young age to tolerate extreme pain and trained to dissociate, so that I left my body.

I was taken to church from a young age and made to sexually service the local priest. It was very confusing trying to make sense of the fact that we were sinners yet we were expected to provide sexual relief to priests.

When I was three years old, my mother met a man; I will call him X. My first memory of meeting X was when he came into a room, picked me up by my hair, and started swinging me around, and everybody laughed because when he put me down I was really dizzy. He would switch between being incredibly cruel and frightening to being very, very, charming, and a lot of my experiences were about trying to please him and trying to get on to the charming side of him. My mother became involved with X. He used her to get to me and to other children in my family. She had already been abusing me from birth, not just in a ritual situation, but also at home. There was a part of her that would lose control and she would bare her teeth and her eyes would light up and she would become crazed. She would do things like pick me up by my hair and put me in the washing machine. So just being at home is a trigger, there are so many triggers in the environment. I'm at home with my kids and I put the washing machine on and suddenly I am there, drowning, spinning, choking.

So, although my mother was already a very frightening woman by the time I was three, meeting this man and the sort of world that he inhabited meant the abuse was taken to a whole other level. One of my earliest memories of her with him is being taken to a forest and being taken into this small room; I don't know what it was, I was very small and I was disorientated. I am tied to a table and a man I have never seen starts putting electric shocks through my feet and on my genitals, before sexually abusing me. I am just scream-

ing and screaming and screaming and then my mother comes in with X. They look like they'd probably just had sex or something, they've got their arms wrapped around each other and they just stand over me and they laugh. I'm just pleading, mummy, mummy, mummy, but she's laughing. The message was very strong—he's the person that I'm attached to, I care much more about him than you. I'd not really experienced this kind of betrayal in that way with her before. So that was the start of an established pattern of her betraying us. Of course, what he did was use that to his advantage, which I think was very deliberate on his part. He would get her to betray me then he'd take me aside and say, look at what a witch your mother is, look at how much she doesn't love you. I think you are beautiful, I think that you are a really special girl and I think that your mother is really, really stupid for not seeing what a beautiful and special girl you are. That's what he did a lot of, manipulating me, luring me in, seducing me, making me feel important in a way that I never had before. That combined with how terrified I was of him was a pretty lethal combination.

He was a performer and we would travel around to places in the UK, and I was also taken abroad. These were special shows and I remember one of many shows that I was involved with, which was in Amsterdam. It starts with a woman coming on stage. She is topless and she squeezes her breasts and squirts the audience with breast milk and everyone is delighted and laughs and then she starts to cut herself and do things like this to herself on stage. I had been primed—I was probably about eight at this time—to have sex with a boy who was around the same age as me, who was absolutely petrified. He wasn't really used to this stuff in the way that I was by this point. So I had to tell him before we went on what we were going to do. I explained to him, I'm going to do this to you, and then you do that to me, and so on. We then go on stage and the audience clearly get off on it.

X's big thing, his speciality, was creating parts. What he liked to believe was that he was giving birth to these different parts—creating new souls. He would call himself a Gnostic, which is allegedly a synthesis of a lot of different belief systems, different religious beliefs, mythological beliefs, philosophical beliefs: Christianity, Judaism, Hinduism, Buddhism, Tantra, sex magick, Paganism, alchemy, worshipping innumerable deities, gods and goddesses,

the list goes on. Anything was up for grabs. It was a very elaborate system that he created within me. It was based on the kabbalah, the tree of life, and the tarot, and what was sold to me was this idea that I was the chosen one, that I was very special and very fortunate to inhabit this world. He ensured that we underwent a very vigorous training, which involved things like going to a master of kundalini yoga. From a very young age we were trained to read esoteric texts, sit in extreme yoga postures for hours on end, to meditate, to chant. I believed very much in the things that he was telling me. We would be sitting there in these extreme yoga postures and doing all of these kinds of breathing techniques with a mask on that had nails in it. There were different things that we were doing in order to separate our minds from our bodies, getting used to experiencing extreme pain without reacting to it and awakening these different states of consciousness and different kinds of energies; he had a belief in these different kinds of energy systems based on the truth that we do have different kinds of energetic systems within our bodies. The belief in kundalini is that we have this snake that we awaken through spiritual and physical practice and we become enlightened, and, of course, he would help it along by using things like electric shocks and other torture techniques like isolation and starving to arouse this serpent that allegedly lived in my spine.

The thing that has caused me the most difficulties is these different parts that he created. Because what he essentially did was create parts that were completely dedicated to him. We were made to betray each other, for him. So, when I started to remember it, it was absolutely abhorrent to discover that there were parts of me that loved him, that loved this monster and wanted to go back to him, and would do anything for him and did do many terrible things for him. That realization was devastating to come to terms with. What part of me wanted to do was literally to cut those parts off and say well, go on, go back to him if that's what you want. But, of course, we all inhabit one body and it was not possible to do that.

He also created parts of me that would kill themselves, each other, other people, parts that were programmed to go back and kill him—if you go back to kill him, then he has got you. There was a whole system designed with particular things in mind. What he would do, for example, was starve you, spin you for hours, play

loud frequency sounds, tie you to a chair, and he then might use electric shocks, until he saw that your mind had snapped and he would see that you had vacated your body, and then he would say, your name is now this. He would name this new part of me and say, you are an Egyptian goddess and your life is dedicated to death and destruction, and there would be a ritual where people would dress up and people would be chanting and they would burn things. Initially, as part of my conditioning and programming, I was taught how to kill animals and how to torture other children and then, later, much worse things.

This was a whole system and a lot of effort was put into creating it. It felt like colonizing the world—the significance of numbers, magick numbers, dangerous numbers, dates in the calendar . . . the whole world controls you. The number three is significant because if you spilt one you have two, and 1 + 2 = 3, so that everything adds up and has this power that is inescapable. If you are colonizing all of these religions, then there is a religious festival all of the time, there is always something to celebrate and you are just bound in this world within this structure and belief system. He would have a part that was very frightened, and then he'd get another part to betray that part, and that has been another devastating thing, to try to reconcile the parts that betrayed each other. He'd call out a part (snap fingers)—that was one way he'd trigger a part and get her out that way—or he'd ring a bell, a certain sound, a different part of the body that he would hurt, so literally it was like colonizing my body. He carved and burned diagrams on my body. The left leg would connect to certain parts, for example, and he would focus on that part of me when he was torturing me and then that part of me would be associated with that part of my body. He would then be able to call that part out and say to that part, "What has she been saying?", and he's got that part to squeal on other parts. They might say, "She's a bit frightened of you." And he would say, "Oh is she now—what exactly is she frightened of?" "She doesn't like it when you do this." So he'd use that: "So and so is telling me . . ." It felt as if he chased me through my own mind. There was no escape from him. I'd literally be tied to a chair and he'd call different parts out and he would get them to verify stories by asking, "Is what she is saying true, is this what happened?" He would be doing things like sending me off on missions and he needed to know exactly what

had been going on. So, for example, he was involved with freemasons and people who were quite powerful, and he would use me as a lure. I had been trained in sado-masochistic sex, so as a child I'd go to hotels to meet men that he would have arranged and I would go to the hotel room and I would do this stuff with these men and they would film it. They would have secret cameras and they would film it and then they would use that to blackmail the person in the room. Afterwards, he would be saying, "What did he say then?", if there were things that they couldn't see or hear on the camera, and he would then call out the different parts to verify this. We were used as prostitutes, we were used in pornography, we were used in these different kinds of shows and, of course, rituals.

From the ages of 7–12, this was a lot of my world. All of the time he was saying to me, your parents are idiots, they don't know how beautiful you are, so increasingly I began to feel, well, actually, I am superior to my parents. I was working my way up, I was good at this stuff. For the first time in my life, somebody was giving me really positive attention and I'd never ever had it and I felt very, very powerful. So those parts of me that were very attached to him thought my parents were really stupid and thought that the rest of the world was really stupid. We are far better, we inhabit this world where really exciting things happen, we are superior beings—it's not this normal shit that everyone else has to deal with. We inhabit this world where it's powerful and its magickal and it's really special and, of course, you are having these intense and very overwhelming experiences, particularly around sex, and a lot of how he controlled me was through my sexuality. As a baby I had already been prepared physically for sex, and remembering this stuff, for the parts of me that had no memory of the abuse, it was very disturbing to encounter these very sexualized children because it contradicted everything I'd believed about children and what children were capable of.

There were eight-year-old parts of me who were very sophisticated sexually and knew how to seduce men, who would dress up and lure men. For him, it was all about inverting and subverting things. He would get me to do these really wild things and adults would be shocked. What he was proving to them was "Look how wild and special we are, how wild children can be, that children want to be fucked, that's what children want". It was all about

trying to lure people in—that's what he was trying to do. He managed to lure my father in. They lure people in and then they find out what turns people on, what their weaknesses are, and then once you are in it's hard to get back out again—you've crossed a line. And then you have to cross more lines and more lines until there is no way back out again. You move from being a victim to a perpetrator, so there is no way that you can ever tell.

The first murder of a child that I consciously remember was when I was about four or five years old. My mother was impregnated by X. My father wasn't on the scene at this point. We were taken to a big stately home; it was in the middle of summer, a big festival. She was induced the night before. So, on the Friday night, there was a ritual which was followed by an orgy which involved many people who were dressed up in costumes, cavorting in this huge room—Bacchus was one of the gods that he revered. The next day we went outside into these huge grounds. There were probably about 100 people there, so it was a big ritual, lots of people involved, and my mother is lying on the ground and X is chanting and my mother is screaming—she is in labour. I remember feeling very worried and frightened for her. She's clearly in pain, she is in the second stages of labour and she is pushing and crying and I remember thinking, poor mummy, mummy is naked with her legs open on the floor and everyone can see her, poor mummy. So a young part of me would have been out then, and then he calls somebody else out and we have to go over; she's lying on the ground with her legs open and he says, "Lick her", so we have to get on the floor and start licking her as she is in labour. The child is born, a little girl, and he places a knife in my left hand and he says things over this child, and then he puts his hand over mine and we pull the knife down the baby's chest and we kill her. He pulls her heart out and he holds it up and everybody screams and cheers and goes wild, and then this child is dismembered and consumed. I had seen things happen to babies before, but this was the first thing that I was directly involved in. I was witness to lots of things like that. I saw women having abortions performed on them, I saw women giving birth, and babies being killed and destroyed.

When I'm twelve he starts monitoring my menstrual cycle, and one day he says to me, "My darling girl, something fantastic is going to happen, you are going to have a baby." I remember

thinking, well, I didn't have words, I just felt, oh. My mind could not actually envisage what he meant. It was incomprehensible.

I cross the road, as he literally lives across the road from my house, and go home. I am very frightened: the reality that at twelve years old I am pregnant—what can this mean? My mind cannot actually envisage what it means, I can't really go there. In desperation, I go to my mother and say, "Mummy, X has told me that I am going to have a baby." She looks stunned and then she goes absolutely berserk. She slaps my face and says, "You stupid, stupid bitch", and then she goes wild. There is a part of me that thinks, well, actually, you are the stupid bitch, you are the one who got me involved in all of this shit in the first place. And another part agrees that I am a stupid bitch—sex leads to pregnancy, you dirty bitch—what did you think would happen? Another part of me thinks that she is just jealous as I am his special girl, I am her greatest rival, I have surpassed her. I also know she is frightened. X is much more powerful and influential in my life than she or my father is. He is also much more terrifying—he can do whatever he likes and no one can stop him.

So, I'm pregnant, I'm twelve, I then turn thirteen and I inhabit this world where I go to school and, because I have all of these parts, I'm not pregnant while I am at school, I'm just at school. He has trained me to keep the two worlds very separate. I remember this experience of being in school in a science lesson when suddenly I feel this flutter and know it's a baby and feeling my mind just splitting in two in the science classroom at school. These worlds are starting to collide for me, these very separate worlds that I inhabit. A lot of the time when I'm not with him, I don't think about the fact that I'm pregnant, I'm not even really aware of it, and if I am, it's just too awful to contemplate. Apart from sometimes when I am in bed at night and I feel the baby moving and I have these fantasies about this baby that I'm going to have and it's going to be lovely, it's going to be perfect, and me and X are going to have this little house, and I develop this fantasy world. Of course, this isn't what is going to happen. And then I go back to the world with him and he loves the fact that I am pregnant and he makes full use of it. He arranges photo sessions where I dress up as a schoolgirl and I expose my pregnant belly and prance about and men take photos of me.

There comes a point when I know that they are going to want this baby. I know this in my heart of hearts. He turns up one day and he takes me to this flat with three other men. He's been away, so I am angry with him. Bear in mind that there are parts of me that are terribly attached to him. I say to him, "You've been away, where have you been, you left me, where have you been?" And he says, "I am back now and you know it is time now, you know what we are going to have to do." He gets a knitting needle and he sticks it inside me to induce labour and then he has sex with me, and then I have to have sex with these men, in this flat, and then he takes me to another place, because, of course, it is going to be a ritual which a lot of people will want to attend.

The process of being pregnant and giving birth involves several different parts of me; different parts of me have different experiences. I remember being in labour and I remember a part of me that's just holding on to this child, not wanting to give birth, and then another part takes over and says, get this thing out of me. I am standing in a circle surrounded by lots of people who are watching and I am holding on to X and he has sex with me in the middle of the circle and then I fall to my knees and I give birth to the child. A boy.

They take him away and they take me into this room and a doctor comes in, they say he is a doctor and he comes and examines me and he says leave her alone for a while, so they leave me alone in this room. So, essentially, I am in this room, having given birth to this child, knowing what is going to happen, and then X comes in and he says to me, "You are my special girl, you did brilliantly, come with me." He takes me into this beautiful room which has a four-poster bed and lots of candles and he takes me into bed and then he brings the baby in. We spend a night with the baby, just holding him, and I become very attached to this beautiful, precious boy. The next day X says to me, "You know that we are going to have to take him from you." They take him from me and I become hysterical. They give me an injection to calm me down and then they prepare me—put make-up on me, dress me up, and call out another part out. I walk into this room, knowing that this is when they are going to kill him. As I turn into the room I see X sitting in a throne next to my mother, who is breastfeeding my child. I begin screaming.

The child is killed and then there is a bloodbath as X cuts him into pieces. All I remember is blood, blood, blood. I am still bleeding profusely because I have just given birth, and of course the baby's blood is splattered everywhere—how could such a tiny body hold so much blood?—and then they tie me to a cross. They turn the cross upside down so that I am hanging upside down tied to the cross. Everyone is running around and screaming, elated, wild, it's a celebration after all—it is Good Friday. I'm hanging upside down on this cross with blood streaming out of me, wild and crazed, and I feel like such an idiot, such a fool. I hate myself, I hate all of them, but I am no better than them. I hate everyone and everything. That part of me often wants to go out on a killing rampage, to go out with a machine gun and just blow people up.

That was the beginning of the end for me. That experience was just too much. I started breaking down, I started not being able to function because it had all become too much to bear. X completed the programming. He had an ECT machine, which he then used to scramble my mind. He was trying to cover his tracks.

We move house to a different area. My parents very much want to get me away from X because they have lost me to him and they are terrified of him. My father has been implicated, other members of my family have been implicated, so we move. I start to forget what has happened. It's aided by my mother saying things like, "You had a happy childhood, me and daddy never hit you", and there was a part of me that just wanted to believe that. I always wanted a happy childhood.

Then, one day, I am coming back from school. I am fifteen by this time. I walk through the park; I need to go to the loo as I often do, so I go into these toilets. Suddenly, this man comes in behind me. He locks the door, throws me on the floor, and as he is slamming my head against the stone floor he says to me, "We are watching you, we know where you are, we watch you everywhere you go and if you ever speak to anyone about this we will kill you, we kill your children, we will kill anyone or anything that you ever love." Then he rapes me on the floor. Afterwards, he gets up and walks out and I just get up, I've got my knickers in my hand and I run all the way home. I never tell a soul about it because there is no one to tell.

That is the beginning of my forgetting. There was a growing mist that just descended over my whole childhood with this

pervading sense of intense shame and terror that I carried around with me and a cacophony of voices in my head. I had lots of issues around eating, sleeping, and self-harm, and lots of experiences of feeling unreal, as if I was disembodied or as if I were in a bubble, separated from the rest of the world, in my own, sealed-off universe. All of these things I kept very private. I was quite petrified of both of my parents, especially my mother. The unnatural feelings that I had about my parents only served to prove that there was something inherently wrong with me.

I start to remember it again, ten years later, when I am twenty-five. I have my first daughter and it all comes flooding back to me. When I become a mother, I start hearing voices that I'd never heard before telling me that somebody is going to kill me, that somebody is going to kill my daughter, and I start having these awful visions. I would be changing my daughter's nappy and suddenly she'd be covered in blood. I started visualizing all of these things and I felt as if I was going mad. I began experiencing pain in my body, and marks and bruises appeared on my body like stigmata.

I was very fortunate, because prior to becoming pregnant I had been working with a counsellor for a couple of years, and then when I was pregnant I stopped working with him. It later proved useful that he had a sense of me as not being mad and he believed in me and he later said to me that he'd always felt that something really awful and chilling had happened to me but that he didn't know what it was. At that time, I didn't know what it was either.

After I had given birth and I started feeling as if I was going completely crazy, I went back to see him and I said to him, "I feel like I am going mad, something is happening." And he said, "Do you want to start working together again?", so that's what we did, we started working together again and then I started remembering.

I started having dreams about the street that I grew up in and things happening to me, abuse happening to me. Then one night this new voice came and said to me, 'Terrible things have happened to you and we are going to tell you what happened." And that's basically what happened. That new part of me came that had a lot of information. I didn't realize at that point that I was multiple. I knew there was something profoundly wrong with me, but I couldn't conceptualize it. That was the start of a journey that continues to this day.

I have given you something of a linear story, but this isn't how I remembered it, of course. It came back in fragments and in lots of different ways. It has come back a lot through my body, through voices, visions, and the remembering process for me has been about trying to associate and process highly dissociated experiences. I might remember things in my body and be dreaming about things or seeing things and I will be feeling sick and terrified. I don't necessarily realize that those things are connected and that they have come back to me in bits, but I've been very fortunate because there are parts of me that have really aided this process by telling me what's going on, saying that part of you is holding the body memories and another part of you has the intellectual knowledge, so get those two to talk to each other. This process is what is helping me to become whole.

Despite encountering outright denial from the many professionals that I have tried to disclose my abuse to, I have been very fortunate to encounter other brave souls who have had the courage to bear witness to my experiences. With their love and support I have been engaged for many years in a long, arduous process of truth and reconciliation, of listening and bearing witness to the horrors of my past. I have no doubt that therapy saved my life. Alongside this gruelling work, I have developed a successful career. I have become a woman on a mission of her own making. I have mothered two magnificent children who continue to teach me so much about what it means to be human. Despite having a loving, non-abusive mother, they, too, have been shaken to the core by the reverberations from my past. It will take many generations before the trauma that I have endured can be fully resolved—alas, I have learnt that I am not omnipotent!—but, as my eldest daughter said to me recently, "You have stopped the cycle, Mummy." That is my greatest achievement.

I have learnt many things on my journey: that if we forget or deny the past we are condemned to repeat it, that only the truth will set us free, and that the most powerful force, the only force that can save us in the face of such horror and destruction is LOVE. I cannot be a religious person, but love is my religion. Love is what I believe in. The greatest truth is love.

CHAPTER FIVE

Working with the Incredible Hulk

Orit Badouk Epstein

It is a known fact that working with survivors of ritual abuse mainly involves working with female survivors. Less has been said about working with male survivors. I am going to tell you about some of my experiences with a male survivor of ritual abuse. My client, a twenty-eight-year old, very intelligent and highly creative young man, came to see me after spending most of his adult life wandering from AA to SLA (Sex, Love Anonymous) trying to combat his addiction to alcohol and watching pornography on the Internet and making calls to phone sex lines.

I will name him Bruce, after the character from the film *The Hulk*, and later on I will explain the link. Bruce was born into an upper middle-class, well-educated family (his maternal grandfather went to Oxbridge, and paternal grandmother was from the aristocracy). He grew up in a wealthy village where the golf and rugby clubs were the hub of a well-established and well-connected paedophile ring. It was in this leafy rural setting that the most horrific childhood sexual and physical abuse and mind control took place, concealed within a middle-class environment more closely associated with cream teas, Christmas parties, and sporting activities that enhanced their masculinity and superiority. These people were well

connected, with access to finance, weapons, factories, mansions, and even aircraft.

From birth, Bruce was exposed to torture, abuse, and ritual rape by his parents and extended family, teachers, and a paedophile ring. He experienced child prostitution in England and abroad, as well as methods of severe abuse such as regular thumping on the head, being spun in a washing machine, being buried alive, confined in closed spaces covered with insects and snakes, made to eat faeces, terrorized by people in frightening masks and crocodile heads, forced to being electrocuted with a head device, hung off the top of a building, being put on the roof of a speeding car, being pushed out of an aeroplane, and even strapped to the wing of a flying plane. On coming to see me, Bruce displayed symptoms of severe phobias around heights, speed, reptiles, and insects, hair loss, washing in a bath, and much more. He also developed ME, severe headaches, and insomnia, all of which have now subsided in their extent.

In spite of it all, and with the help of the incredible survival mechanism we call dissociation, this brave young man had not lost touch with his creative parts. He managed to graduate from university and later on to take a second degree in media studies, but at the cost of a final breakdown. He managed to find enough resourcefulness to get into the Maytree, a respite home for the suicidal. When he got there, Bruce remembered how when he stared at his reflection in the mirror, he saw a dead person with no soul. Later, looking at the forms he had filled in at the Maytree, he was asked why he wrote that every time he has sex he felt suicidal. It was at that point that the past started flashing back into his consciousness. Although Bruce had a clear memory of his father sexually abusing him, his childhood was highly dissociated and later was displaced by alcoholism. After leaving the Maytree, he started seeing an art therapist, who was helpful but was not familiar enough with this level of trauma.

As clinicians, we all know that with this level of abuse, torture, and suffering, MPD, DID, and post trauma stress disorder (PTSD) are almost inevitable conditions. I have been working with Bruce for just over a year now. During this period, we have kept in daily contact through phone and e-mails. Our meetings take place three times a week, sometimes four. The MPD he displays is still work in

progress, as the part-fragmented identities still keep on flooding into the sessions. Figure 1 is a diagram of all the personalities that have so far surfaced.

Unlike some other survivors with MPD, Bruce's part-selves were not named before therapy, but during therapy. Once we identifed the part and his characters, Bruce would often go home choosing a suitable name for that part.

I will focus only on one part-self that was instrumental in Bruce's survival, but which, unfortunately, I felt less and less safe being alone with in my consulting room. Consequently, it was crucial for me to find a rapid and effective way of working safely in order to allow our therapeutic alliance to blossom in a trusting manner.

What is attachment-based psychotherapy, and how does it work? I am afraid I do not have enough time for all the wonderful quotations I could offer. In a nutshell, attachment therapy offers a relationship that is authentic, empathic, secure, attuned, and intimate. The concept of intimacy combines a number of human needs and capacities: openness, transparency, close proximity, and the

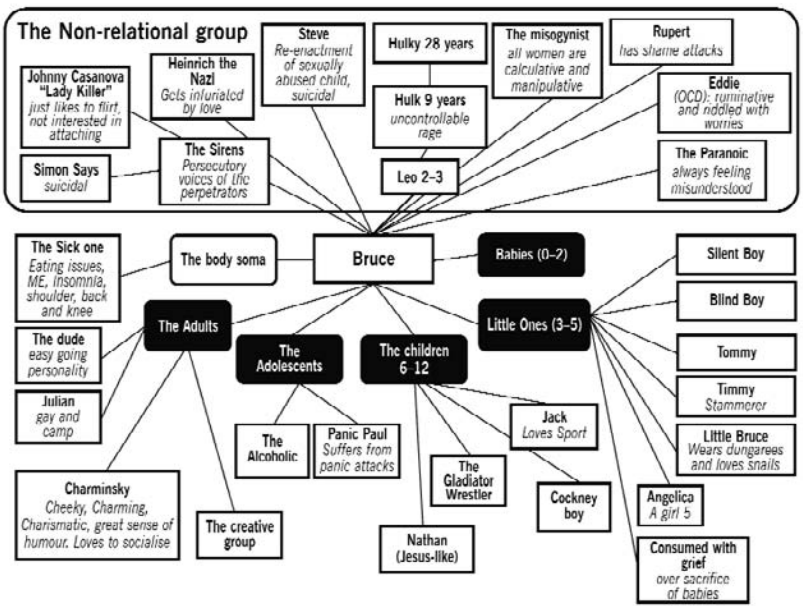


Figure 1. Bruce's internal structure.

most important need of all is SAFETY. Something we all need, something we are all entitled to when we first enter this world. We now have enough evidence to show that without such relationships, life can become a hardship with a burden of depression and illnesses.

Unfortunately, survivors of ritual abuse are robbed of their needs from birth. Not one of Bruce's basic needs was adequately met. On top of the sexual and physical abuse Bruce regularly received from his mother, father, grandmother, grandfather, and the cult, he also endured endless humiliations, mockery, and bullying that left him feeling paranoid, shamed, and guilty, feeling that it was entirely his fault, which would often trigger voices saying: "You'll go to hell, you pervert, dirty homosexual, good for nothing", especially around the satanic dates. Currently, Bruce and I are still fighting off these voices that seem to be an almost predictable backlash to the good progress Bruce is continuously making.

Committed and determined to get better and never missing a session, Bruce spent most of the first nine months in therapy regressing into trance states, reliving and remembering his horrific abuse in detail. In doing so, he would often freeze, convulse, tremble, shake, and whisper, while his voice sounded younger. He would jolt, ache, itch, and scream as if he had been bitten by a snake, felt as if he was being buried alive, or was forced to eat human flesh. On leaving the session, he would then go back to his home and put all his memories into a journal; this helped him speed up the recovery process.

A session with Bruce would often begin with him arriving looking pale, tired, and unwashed. He would climb up the stairs rapidly, declaring how angry he felt. Within seconds, this would flare up into an explosive rage, shouting and swearing as if his perpetrators were standing next to us. Soon after these extraordinary outbursts, his body would display the pain of the abuse: spasms, stiffness, shaking, trembling, remembering episodes where he had regularly been raped, thrown around, bitten, and tortured. I would often hold Bruce through the reliving of the trauma, reassuring him that that was then and that he is now safe. He would then burst into uncontrollable sobs, wishing he were dead, wishing he were someone else.

One of the many alters/identities was the severely sexually abused child who could only relate through his sexuality. Bruce has

named him as "Steve", who can only think of having sex. However, when this finally happened, a suicide ideation would take place, leaving him feeling worse than before. The little boy and the adult Bruce were, and still are, very confused about the issues and boundaries around sex, love, and desire. This meant an intensified erotic countertransference between us. This is still work in progress.

A few months into the therapy, Bruce took a massive risk, something he had not done before in his life; he left a phone message confessing that he loved me. I told him that he is worthy of love, too, but this time it must be modelled to him appropriately in a boundaried way. Little Bruce deserved to be loved in a secure and safe way, and this is what he needs most, and, as his caring therapist, it was my duty to keep this love safe and contained. Bruce felt relieved and lighter after he confided his real feelings to a woman for the first time in his life. This theme still plays a part in our journey, but less so, as little Bruce is developing a real maternal attachment to me and a sense of a core self is emerging. He is able to express excitement as well as mourn something so alien and unfamiliar, but, at the same time, extremely threatening to the old system. Talking about this new set of feelings for the first time in his life was not only overwhelming, but terrifying: how risky they are. How dangerous this must be. What if I am not telling the truth? What if something happens to me? What if I go away and never come back? If attachment means dependency, then attachment is dangerous and unreliable. During one session, while crying, little Bruce told me: this love with boundaries you are modelling to me, is so painful, so strange and unfamiliar, yet feels nice and safe.

One of the prime functions of the infant–mother relationship is to regulate physiological arousal in the infant. Victims of childhood abuse and neglect fail to regulate their arousal levels and need a much higher activation in their brain to feel soothed.

I often find it fascinating how much time of the classical psychoanalytic training is spent on hate and destructiveness in the transference. Not much is mentioned about the terror of love in the clinical setting. Indeed, I often tell my clients, it is much easier to hate than to love.

Bowlby (1998a,b), in his trilogy on separation and loss, wrote, "whenever loss is permanent, as it is after a bereavement, anger and aggressive behaviour are necessarily without function" (p. 286).

Christmas is one of the hardest times for our survivors. It is time when human sacrifice takes place and when our clients were most terrorized and abused. My work with Bruce was intense, yet highly rewarding. I certainly needed a break. We agreed to be in touch online or through text messaging. And, if needed, he would go the Samaritans, with whom he used to be in daily contact before coming to see me. I also left him the number of a couple of helplines. Adult Bruce kindly told me how I deserved a holiday, and so I set off. Unfortunately, in my holiday resort there was no Internet connection, and when I received couple of angry text massages, I responded to him, reassuring him that I would be back soon.

Bowlby, in his writing on disorganized attachment, has noticed that after prolonged separation from the parent, the child will construct a segregated system where both fear and anger are compartmentalized, because any display would be likely to alienate the child still further from their attachment figure.

At our reunion session, Bruce angrily marched into my house not making any eye contact, and as I sat down, there he was, "the Hulk", in all his glory and might, his skin pale, his blue eyes turned brown and narrowed, his eyebrows joined to each other, grinding his teeth and his voice bristling with rage.

"Have you got any idea, have you got any idea what we've been through all by ourselves going through the worst of times, the worst of memories, the worst of hell and without the Samaritans we would be dead, yes, dead! So don't tell me to calm down and take that smirk off your face. I'm asking you: why did you not keep your promise? Have you got any idea what we've been through? You clearly don't, you are clearly another person from the caring therapist to the non-existent person you became. Please stop saying sorry and repeating yourself unless you have a good justification as to why you weren't in touch with us when you promised to be. We have trusted you, relied upon you and you have let us down, you have let us down big time, and I don't know that I want to come back here ever again. This is pathetic, absolutely pathetic!"

My body froze, my neck stiffened, I apologized profusely for not having an Internet connection, and said that I had been thinking of him. Nothing seemed to calm his rage. This went on for forty minutes or so. I suddenly realized that I had to switch off during

my holiday, and I shared it with him. His shouting paused, "Finally an honest answer", he angrily exclaimed, and as he was about to leave the room, I, somehow, reached out for a little tortoise souvenir I bought on my holiday and in a tiny voice asked him, "Please stay."

At this point he switched into little Bruce and started to cry. I had to extend the session. Sobbing, Bruce told me about his hellish Christmas, memories around the sacrifice of his little baby brother and how they threatened that they would kill his younger sibling if he did not slash the baby's throat.

During the following months, we would recover more unbearable memories, flashbacks, and nightmares of ritual torture and abuse. The Hulk would appear on a regular basis. He sometimes would start his shouting from the bottom of my street. He would start a session announcing, "There is a lot of rage about today. This time it is against my father." His head turned down as if gathering all his strength for the fight. I would instantly tense up, feeling the terror and dread gradually building inside me. And as his violent shouting took place, the window glass would gently rattle, the air stood still. I would jump and then freeze, feeling totally paralysed by the experience. Each time I'd try to prepare myself, but no amount of preparation would ever make it any easier; on the contrary, the closer our relationship became the more abusive it felt, the harder it became to bear.

Van der Kolk (1989) sees that what needs to be understood is the long-term neurophysiological aspect of PTSD, and the victim's compulsion to repeat the trauma lies at the heart of the traumatic origins of violence.

The Hulk was born when Bruce was nine years old. Prior to the Hulk, there was Leo, who was the first alter to protect Bruce from trusting anyone. Leo would sometimes lash out, kicking an adult who was trying to be nice to little Bruce, warning him that humans are not to be trusted even if they appear to be kind.

For those of you not familiar with the character, the Hulk is cast as the emotional and impulsive alter ego of the withdrawn and reserved physicist, Dr Bruce Banner. The Hulk appears shortly after Banner is accidentally exposed to the blast of a test detonation of a gamma bomb he invented. Subsequently, Banner will involuntarily transform into the Hulk, depicted as a giant, raging, humanoid monster, leading to extreme complications in Banner's life. The

Hulk's creation was inspired by a combination of Dr Jekyll and Mr Hyde and Frankenstein.

Although the Hulk's colouration has varied throughout the character's publication history, the most consistent shade is green. As the Hulk, Banner is capable of significant feats of strength, which increases in direct proportion to the character's anger. Strong emotions, such as anger, terror, and grief are also triggers for forcing Banner's transformation into the Hulk.

Little Bruce's Hulk was born at night, around a solstice date in the satanic calendar, when a big party took place at a large mansion house in the country. Everyone was there—the whole paedophile ring and other familiar faces, all smartly dressed, some wearing masks. Little Bruce knew what was coming, he had had enough, he had nothing to lose, he wanted to die. At this point something very big inside him, someone with a huge voice and uncontained anger, suddenly took over. At the top of the elegant staircase, there he stood in all his might, feeling fearless, free of the abuse, free of all of them, all alone in the world, he screamed the house down: "You f—g, c—s!!!" They all looked shocked and very worried; never before had any child dared to display and protest with such a voice.

The consequence was inevitable: his punishment was due any minute; rape was not enough. They had to upgrade the level of mind control and torture. They had to make sure that the young boy who publicly humiliated them was silenced forever, and so, from the ages of nine to thirteen, my client was exposed to the most horrifying methods of abuse and terror, in which speed, heights, and suicidal mind control were the main tortures. He was nearly drowned, put into dangerous roller-coasters, hung off the top of buildings, placed in fast cars driven through dark tunnels, pushed out of an aeroplane tied to a parachute and permanently injuring his knee, and strapped to the wing of an aeroplane while it was in flight. The Hulk was regularly assaulted, bitten, caged, and imprisoned.

Facing the Hulk for the first nine months was unpleasant, but somehow manageable. However, the greater the attachment that took place, the less safe I felt being in the same room as him. I increasingly felt the dread around his outbursts of rage, whether they were directed at his perpetrators or aimed at me. This reached a climax when, on one occasion, Bruce felt I acted wrongly. He told

me that the Hulk was very angry with me, and he slammed down the phone, shouting, "I'll see you tomorrow." At this point, I felt very unsafe being in the same room with Hulk, as there was no reasoning capacity, especially when I was confident that I had not acted wrongly.

I was dreading the confrontation I had to face, and so I called him back, suggesting that we should have a phone session where the Hulk could express his uncontrollable rage at me while I was listening.

"This is exactly why men with my kind of history don't seek therapy and end up in prison or locked into psychiatric units," he angrily responded. "The Hulk needs a safe place to express his rage and you are forbidding him that, you are restricting him. You must not restrict him. I told you he won't harm you; he's been imprisoned long enough. He needs to express himself. He is a big part of me and you are denying us access to your house. Where can we go now? This would only make him more isolated and angry. What is your supervisor's opinion? Maybe you haven't resolved your own issues?"

I listened and agreed with his argument in the main. I then asked him to have an internal conference and try to convey to the Hulk that we are all in this together, trying to find ways of relating to each other, and I know how lonely he is. I told him that I know how he helped Bruce stay alive during his abuse and that the Hulk taught him not to trust anyone, not to fear them, to stand up to them. He had also fought them, and, thanks to him, they stayed alive, all alone, feeling angry and bruised, jailed in a world of mistrust where there was no dialogue, no negotiation, and no relationship. Now that we were doing so well, the majority of Bruce's internal population was seeking proximity to an attachment figure, something that the Hulk was terrified of.

For the following session, Bruce turned up looking contemplative and thoughtful. This was the spokesman for the Hulk. I sat quietly, listening to him advocate the Hulk's position in the system.

"Obviously, he is really hurt by your rejection of him, but we all talked with each other and it is important for you not to judge or criticize him. He is there for a reason, and you need to love him like you love the others, otherwise he'll just get more violent and out of control."

For the next couple of months, the Hulk still appeared around triggering dates. Particularly after Bruce had been rejected, disappointed, or felt needy or humiliated, the Hulk would defend Bruce with his fist and raging voice.

Although this extreme defensive response had served its immediate purpose of protecting the child and adult from unmanageable arousal and trauma, it left the child/adult with little understanding of his own body, emotional makeup, or how to negotiate and survive everyday relationships (Figure 2).

I tried to convey to Bruce that by my not feeling safe, the Hulk was now actually holding back the process of recovery and integration, despite his original good intentions to try to protect little Bruce from getting hurt. As with the entire non-relational group inside the system, the Hulk had internalized the ways and methods of his abusers. His aggressive, frightening gaze must have mirrored Bruce's grandfather and father. His isolation meant no relationship: no reasoning process between two subjects, no negotiation, and certainly no integration. The spokesman insisted that in order for that to shift, the Hulk needed to be convinced that he was accepted and loved.

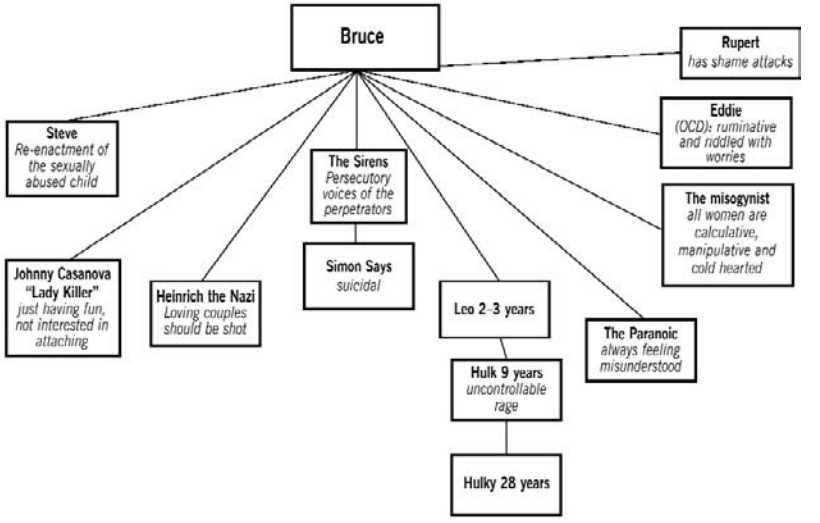


Figure 2. The internal structure of the non-relational group.

As with some female survivors who self harm, releasing tension and anxiety as the Hulk did is a way of gaining control over the experience and the loss. At the neurological level, the brain will experience an analgesic effect through the production of opioid or morphine-like substances. Camila Batmanghelidjh, who works with very traumatized children, claims that as a way of weaning these children from the re-enactment of their trauma, her organization has found constructive ways of releasing the adrenalin in their bodies by taking them to martial arts, rollercoaster rides, and boxing. I also suggested to Bruce that he should go on long runs, or should box a cushion. Unfortunately, this was not of much use to him, as his shoulder had been dislocated as a result of the abuse and he also suffered from ME.

Rage is a response to loss, frozen tears that turn into muscles. Counting up and mourning Bruce's losses is an ongoing process that will take many years to heal. What I feel is taking place at the moment is a continuous dialogue between myself and the spokesperson. A mediation process of reasoning and communication is occurring between me and the rest of the non-relational group. The young ones are very much attached to me and the other creative and relational parts are extremely grateful for the therapy. I feel more comfortable sharing my experiences about the Hulk, how I care and feel for his pain of loneliness, but at the same time how unhelpful I become to him when he shouts and I resort to a basic human response of freeze/fight/flight.

The spokesperson told me that negotiation with the Hulk was currently taking place. The system has realized that what the Hulk gets out of his shouting is a sense of control and empowerment. He managed to convey to him, "Look, we already won, there is no need to lash out at people in the present who love and care for us". As this healthy dialogue was taking place, I found myself naming him "Hulky". We also decided to release him from his internal prison and give him a nice, comfortable room. This has really helped to make a difference; the spokesman informed me that he likes his new room and name.

When Hulky eventually left the room, depression crept up on Bruce, and little Bruce came twitching in his eyes, whispering with a younger voice, "I am all alone in the house, Hulk really helped me." Coming back from that regressive state, Bruce looked at me,

and said that he thinks he is ready to let go of him now. He wished we could have some kind of ceremony for the Hulk's service and departure. The following sessions were riddled with heavy sadness; Bruce looked broken and stricken by an intense grief, feeling of depression, and suicidal ideation. The spokesman tearfully told me, "If Hulk leaves, Bruce will have to be in touch with the unbearable feelings of despair, sadness, loss, and even suicide. Expressing his murderous rage was a way of gaining control over his grief."

A week later, I received a phone call from Bruce, telling me that he had spotted one of his abusers seated in a restaurant with some other people. In a shockingly calm manner, he first confirmed the man's name, then confronted him by calling him a rapist in front of the other diners. The man looked pale and shocked, while Bruce marched out, not believing what he had just done.

Marking this as an act of bravery and a breakthrough of our good work with the Hulk, I bought Bruce toy figurine of the Hulk with a Bruce Banner doll inside him. We congratulated the Hulk's progress towards integration, modelling this huge step forward from aggression to assertion.

De Zulueta (1993), quoting Van der Kolk, wrote that working with people who have been traumatized confronts therapists as well as patients with intense emotional experiences. It forces them to explore the darkest corners of the mind, and to face the entire spectrum of human glory and degradation. Sooner or later, these experiences have the potential to overwhelm therapists. The repeated exposure to their own vulnerability becomes too intense, the display of the infinite human capacity for cruelty too unbearable, the enactment of the trauma within the therapeutic relationship too terrifying.

It is just over a year now since I first met Hulky. Currently, whenever Bruce experiences anger during the session, I listen to my countertransference. It is no longer a feeling of dread that comes between us, but a human feeling of irritation, frustration, assertion, and anger, but no longer to the extent of feeling unsafe.

If I ask him how Hulky is, he closes his eyes and, after couple of minutes, he reports back, "He is OK, he is still feeling excluded in the main, but he is listening."

Unfortunately, for centuries, men have been permitted to be violent, while with most female survivors of ritual abuse, an internal

Hulk would be most likely to have expressed itself through self-harm. Working with male survivors of sexual, ritual, and sadistic abuse can naturally bring the potential to feel unsafe within the consulting room. Therefore, the number one priority is to create a safe space for both therapist and client. Now that we have paved the way for me and for Bruce to work safely, we can continue working with all the many relational and non-relational part-selves inside him.

Bowlby (1998a), in his volume on separation about children who had been separated from their care-givers, found that when the conditions of separation were prolonged and stressful, the behaviour observed upon reunion was detached, cut-off, disconnected, and bewildered, with gaze aversion .

On our reunion after the summer vacation, Bruce was in a bad place, having been triggered and disappointed by a relationship with a girl he met over his holiday, and so Hulky was around. "There is a lot of rage inside and I don't know what to do with it."

Listening to my countertransference, I felt the dread creeping up, but without the same velocity, and so I said to him, "What would you like to do? Is it Hulky?"

At this point, he shrugged his shoulders, looking distant and detached. For the first time since I had met him, he went into a forty-minute silence, crying and wanting to be left alone.

When I finally managed to get a response out of him, he then manically switched into hysterical laughter. When he finally calmed down, I asked, "Was that Hulky?" He then cheekily replied, "I think his name now is SULKY!"

These are still early days in therapy, and we still have a long way to go. The dialogues with the spokesperson are still ongoing, and so whenever Hulky turns up he is there for brief moments. I find that the spokesperson that communicates and mediates Hulky's position is not only inspiring, but is also a sign of hope. This hope does not only belong to Bruce and Hulky, but to many other severely abused men who are terrified of seeking therapy.

Working with survivors of ritual abuse can be challenging on so many levels: not only do we enter the survivor's world of terror, helplessness, and loneliness, but we also have to put up with facing the denial in the wider society that these things are happening. It is, therefore, important never to lose hope; after all, what is the meaning of life if we do not face a battle that is bigger than us?

References

Bowlby, J. (1998a). *Attachment & Loss*: Volume 2, *Separation, Anger and Anxiety*. London: Pimlico.

Bowlby, J. (1998b). *Attachment & Loss*: Volume 3, *Loss, Sadness and Depression*. London: Pimlico.

De Zulueta, F. (1993). *From Pain to Violence*. London: Whurr.

van der Kolk, B. A. (1989). The compulsion to repeat the trauma: re-enactment, revictimization, and masochism. *Psychiatric Clinics of North America*, *12*(2): 389–411.

CHAPTER SIX

Maintaining agency: a therapist's journey

Sue Richardson

Professional journey 1966–1988

My professional journey started when I entered social work in 1966. By specializing in child care and family work, I became a *de facto* specialist in child abuse and protection. In 1986, I was appointed by Cleveland Social Services Department as their Child Abuse Consultant, a post created in the wake of a high profile public inquiry into the death of Jasmine Beckford (HMSO, 1985). I was given a strong political and professional mandate to tackle child abuse, and I was filled with a sense of agency. Together with the paediatricians, Marietta Higgs and Geoffrey Wyatt, I was a key figure in the 1987 Cleveland child abuse crisis, when what was then an unprecedented number of children were medically diagnosed as having suffered sexual abuse. Our efforts to bring this to attention and to protect the children precipitated a public outcry of disbelief, orchestrated by the media and one local MP, and led to the Butler-Sloss Inquiry.

The Butler-Sloss Inquiry was a breakthrough in societal awareness of sexual abuse summed up by the opening of its conclusion:

> We have learnt during the Inquiry that sexual abuse occurs in children of all ages, including the very young, to boys as well as girls, in all classes of society and frequently within the family. The sexual abuse can be very serious and on occasions includes vaginal, anal and oral intercourse. [Butler-Sloss, 1988, p. 243]

At the same time, I regard the inquiry report as a political document used to calm disquiet, contain the extent of the emerging problem, and inform procedural solutions. It was not within its brief to determine whether or not the children had been abused. It did not analyse child abuse as a phenomenon, and decided against hearing expert evidence about behaviour of perpetrators. Neither did it respond to all the data submitted by myself and my colleagues concerning children trapped in silence. Instead, it focused on the management of those children who are able to make a disclosure and take part in a child protection investigation. A different analysis of Cleveland from the perspective of gender-based politics is provided by Campbell (1997). A different professional analysis and the data on the children were published by those of us at the centre of events (Richardson & Bacon, 1991).

Butler-Sloss (1988) expressed the hope that all of us who had been involved would be able to work together for the good of children in Cleveland. I was very keen to do this and take forward what I had learnt, but, along with my paediatric colleagues, I was treated as the bearer of an unwanted message. My much-heralded post of Child Abuse Consultant was declared redundant. I faced the collapse of my professional networks and career in child protection and had to find another way to maintain my sense of personal and professional agency.

Outcomes of the Cleveland journey

The personal and professional outcomes of Cleveland have been permanent for me and are an integral part of my current work with ritual abuse. To paraphrase Bowlby (1988), I was left knowing what I am not supposed to know and feeling what I am not supposed to feel. I was acutely aware of the lost narratives of the majority of abused children and adults, who also know what they were not

supposed to know and feel what they are not supposed to feel, and I developed a rising awareness of dissociation as a way of understanding where some of their lost narratives had gone.

I have never become immune to the emotional impact of abuse, but, at the height of the Cleveland crisis, after a day spent trying to manage the influx of children diagnosed by the paediatricians as having suffered sexual abuse, I used to go home thinking that at least I had heard the worst of what can happen to children, only to hear of yet more the next day. So, I developed a degree of affective tolerance. I learnt then that there is no end to the varieties of savagery which adults can inflict on children and never to think that I had heard it all.

As Herman (1992) says, moral neutrality in response to trauma is not useful, and being a bystander was never an option for me. This stance has implications. I was exposed to the savagery of denial and scapegoating in an unsupportive and hostile professional and political context, with all its spin and distortion. I regard these as fear-driven systems that affect entire professional networks to this day. Struggling for support, I slowly realized that the decision to hold on to my sense of agency was essentially down to me.

Repair of agency

In making the paradigm shift to understanding the significance of child abuse in the aetiology of trauma and dissociation, I created a two-edged sword, because it was both the cause of my difficulties and also the source of my agency. At the same time, I found this preferable to dissociating from what I had learnt, a strategy I felt some of the colleagues I left behind in social work had resorted to.

I carried on care-seeking and found that any crumbs of care-giving can go a long way. What I needed care-giving for, beyond mere survival, was to enable me to process my experiences. I cannot overemphasize the value of taking time to do this as key to remaining open to the emotional content of others' traumatic experiences without loss of agency via vicarious traumatization. My peer group fragmented and the absence of professional care-giving was appalling (Richardson & Bacon, 2001a). My resources expanded when I became one of the first intake in the psychotherapy training

provided by what is now the Bowlby Centre. This gave me the opportunity to process the emotional impact of events and somehow keep both my left and right brains functioning. With the support of John Southgate and Kate White, I did much grieving and mourning: weeping and wailing, expressing anger, and confronting despair.

I was determined to bear witness rather than be silenced, and to get the lost narrative of Cleveland's children heard. I spoke at a large number of conferences and meetings and published two books with my colleagues (Richardson & Bacon, 1991, 2001b) and several papers.

I had some allies in other beleaguered colleagues and adult survivors. I knew nothing at that time of ritual abuse, and only opened my mind to it after meeting with colleagues from the Broxstowe case in Nottingham. In this case, professionals were at first commended by the High Court for protecting a group of children from sadistic abuse, but were subsequently derided in the media and elsewhere for believing the children's further disclosures, which were replete with indicators of satanic ritual abuse. These colleagues drew attention to the possible significance of some of the drawings published in our account of Cleveland's children. For example, a child who was seen by a clinical psychologist drew her abuser dressed as a devil figure (Richardson & Bacon, 1991, p. 117). While it has never been established whether or not this child or any of the children in Cleveland had suffered ritual abuse, some professionals are now of the opinion that this may have been a factor in the crisis.

I did not anticipate it on moving into psychotherapy, but into the therapeutic space stepped adult survivors of ritual abuse, daring to believe that I might be prepared to hear of experiences similar to this child's drawing. I began to see the potential significance in what some of my clients drew, such as an all-seeing eye or an inverted crucifix, or spoke of, such as memories of robed figures and chanting. One of these clients had a vivid implicit memory of what presented as ritual abuse ceremonies, which she was able to draw very clearly but without any conscious memory of them at all. I started to get an idea of what it is like for clients to live with a loss of agency in everyday life, and I was on a steep learning curve.

Professional learning curve

My journey alongside survivors of ritual abuse has shown me that there are two kinds of dissociation to consider. First, clinical dissociation as the sequelae of disorganized attachment and interpersonal trauma. In this instance, any sense of agency tends to be fragmented and held by different parts. The second kind, deliberately induced dissociation, is the sequelae of the use of terror designed to maintain the perpetrator's power and control and, by its nature, is more undermining of agency. That profound loss of agency is illustrated by a survivor or ritual abuse who said, "It bothers me that I don't know how to exist. I don't know how to BE, unless it is to someone else's design. I can't find me. There is nothing there. I can't answer questions about what I want because I don't know how to locate 'I'."

As a result of the way in which abusers manipulate attachment needs, the whole concept of relationship is problematic to the survivor and all the notions we hold dear as therapists are seen as dangerous. For example, the more caring the therapeutic relationship is and the more it develops, the more the expectation increases that it is a precursor to abuse and a part inside gives the message to flee. As a result, I find I am often seen by clients as highly suspect when I relate in a kind and friendly manner.

My learning curve has led me to develop what one of my clients has called a "methodology of healing" as a framework for practice. It is influenced by a new attachment paradigm developed by Heard, Lake, and McCluskey (2009). Devising my own methodology using attachment theory has been very empowering for me and my clients, and seems to achieve lift-off in therapy for those who can use it.

In summary, I have identified an "internal attachment system" with patterns of internal care-seeking–care-giving as a key target of intervention (Richardson, 2010). I find that helping to build an internal attachment hierarchy can be more viable and less threatening than an emphasis on relationship with the therapist. I see my role as being what Blizard (2003) calls a "relational bridge" for the parts inside. Some parts can be brilliant care-givers; for example, knowing how to manage avoidant parts who are terrified of proximity by keeping a tolerable distance, giving just the right amount of reassurance or using other child parts to make an alliance with

terrified inner children. I have reframed questions from the Adult Attachment Interview (AAI) into an "internal attachment interview" (Richardson, 2010). The quality of the narrative sheds light on internal attachment patterns, provides a map of internal relational configurations, and identifies tasks of repair.

Some ongoing challenges to therapeutic agency

To act as a relational bridge in a way which supports the growth of internal care-seeking and care-giving means attuning to multiple feeling states, attachment styles, and developmental stages. For example, one client asked each part of her system what they thought of me. Some parts did not know to whom she was referring, and it had to be explained that I am the person they see on the same day at same time every week. Another part thought they just might recognize me by my characteristic appearance. Yet another part said dismissively that they know perfectly well who I was, but could take me or leave me alone. In addition, as in every system, there were traumatized children desperately seeking attachment.

Evolving strategies to deal with the effects of programming designed to destabilize or destroy attachments is challenging and just beginning. More challenging still is bearing witness to a history of atrocity, one in which the client may have been forced to take part. The nature of this, along with the client's dysregulated care-seeking, arouses our own care-giving systems. Care-givers would normally reach their goal when well-being has been restored in the care-seeker. However, clients who have suffered ritual abuse can have immense difficulty in reaching the goal of well-being. I find I am often faced by chronic, unassuaged care-seeking by distressed parts and poor, absent, or punitive internal care-giving. This can be quite dysregulating for me as a professional care-giver. I suspect it is the source of potential therapeutic hazards that are all too easy to judge in our peers, such as loss of boundaries.

Journey to date: maintaining agency

In my experience, it makes a lot of difference to belong to professional organizations and networks such as the European Society for

Dissociation and its UK network, the special interest group on ritual abuse and mind control set up by the International Society for the Study of Trauma and Dissociation, and small peer groups. This reduces isolation and helps to maintain vitality through interest sharing.

In the wake of Cleveland, I have learnt to live with conflicting and incoherent narratives at every level (Richardson, 2008). In individual therapeutic work, I am regularly afflicted by doubt that not everything is what it seems, and have become aware that the system is not always right. I know I have been misled at times by parts who are still relying on old ways to survive. In response, I try to see the journey as a shared search with the client for their "reality" and "truth" and the construction of a narrative that is sufficiently coherent to live by.

For sources of inspiration, among other things I draw on poetry (e.g., Jennings, 1986; Nightingale, 1988) and literature (e.g., Slovo, 2000). I share these resources with clients when appropriate, as they do with me when creative writing and poetry is part of exploratory therapy.

I hold on to hope for healing. From an attachment perspective, hope can be informed by the client undoing any belief in the perpetrators as the sole source of care; recognizing that attachment to the perpetrators cannot provide what other relationships can; seeing all parts of the self as worthy of care rather than as "evil" or culpable, and co-creating a means of effective internal care-seeking and care-giving. It is my experience that survivors of ritual abuse and mind control can restructure their internal care-seeking and care-giving and move from an insecure internal world to one which is more secure.

I find that engaging in exploration, creative "play", and symbolic communication is part of the upside of my work. I have a small collection of toys in my therapy room (Figure 1), along with paints, clay, storybooks, and various symbolic objects which adult clients often use to work on restructuring their internal attachment systems. As the internal relational structure represented in toys or other materials changes, the narrative also changes. Then the toys and materials are no longer needed and are put away or bequeathed to my collection, which, for this reason, is growing.

Figure 1. Toys used in my therapy room.

Journey from 1987 to the present date: conclusions

In conclusion, I can affirm that agency is tenacious, both in myself as a professional after times of deep despair, and in even the most apparently damaged clients, for whom allowing themselves to remember what they are supposed to forget is a huge act of agency in itself.

On my journey to date, I have seen the wheel come full circle. The proactive assertive approach to child protection for which we were condemned in Cleveland has been called for in subsequent cases of child deaths elsewhere, such as Baby P, killed at age two.

Even though previous crises in Nottingam, Rochdale, and Orkney were shut down, ritual abuse keeps trying to emerge. Dare we hope that ritual abuse will have its Cleveland, which will bring about a paradigm shift in its understanding and recognition? Dare we hope for a genuine discourse and an end to multiple and conflicting states of mind about knowing *vs.* not knowing about forms of ritual abuse and mind control? My journey so far has not given me the answer to these questions. I hold on to a vision for the future of a changed societal and professional context that provides for the unfolding of unheard narratives and recognizes and supports the complex and challenging tasks of repair and witness to survivors of ritual abuse. For this to happen, all of us have to take

on the burden of change with its potential rewards. The endeavour is a political one, and its nature transformational. The challenge and rewards are summed up by a survivor as follows:

> When I think of the generations gone
> When I think of the generations gone to darkness
> When I think of the generations gone to madness
> It makes me shudder.
>
> Out of nowhere but the infinity of space
> and eternity of time
> Out of the deep, deep ground with its hidden secrets
> This revelation was flung to us
>
> To be the generations that bring truth into the light
> To be the last bearers of that trembling of the mind
> To be the first who speak of the violation of the body
>
> Tremble, space
> Tremble, time
> We come with the truth of mans' bearing
> Of nature's desperate clawing at the night
> We come with the burden of change on us
> With the shifting of consciousness's tectonic plates
> We come holding Utopia
> In the guise of the unmentionable
>
> Wreathed in atrocity we bring the sunrise
> Of women's and men's potential
> We carry new dynasties in dung stained hands
>
> We, the lucky unlucky ones
> We, the dirt under your feet
> Bring you the future
>
> An equable humanity
> Free from the consequences of man's lust. [Evans, 2006, p. 5]

References

Blizard, R. A. (2003). Disorganised attachment, development of dissociated self states, and a relational approach to treatment. *Journal of Trauma and Dissociation*, *4*(3): 27–50.

Bowlby, J. (1988). On knowing what you are not supposed to know and feeling what you are not supposed to feel. In: *A Secure Base* (pp. 99–118). London: Routledge.

Butler-Sloss, Rt Hon Justice E. (1988). *Report of the Inquiry into Child Abuse in Cleveland 1987.* London: HMSO.

Campbell, B. (1997). *Unofficial Secrets – Child Sexual Abuse: The Cleveland Case* (2nd edn). London: Virago.

Evans, K. (2006). *Journey into Healing.* London: Survivor's Press.

Heard, D., Lake, H., & McCluskey, U. (2009). *Attachment Therapy for Adults and Adolescents: Theory and Practice Post-Bowlby.* London: Karnac.

Herman, J. L. (1992). *Trauma and Recovery*. New York: Basic Books.

HMSO (1985). *A Child in Trust: Report of the Panel of Inquiry into the Circumstances Surrounding the Death of Jasmine Beckford*. London: HMSO.

Nightingale, C. (1988). *Journey of a Survivor.* Bristol: Constance Nightingale.

Jennings, E. (1986). *Collected Poems.* Manchester: Carcanet.

Richardson, S. (2008). Cleveland 20 years on: themes of disruption and repair in the trauma narratives of children, adults and society. *Child Abuse Review*, *17*: 230–241.

Richardson, S. (2010). Reaching for relationship: exploring the use of an attachment paradigm in the assessment and repair of the dissociative internal world. *Attachment: New Directions in Psychotherapy and Relational Psychoanalysis*, *4*: 7–25.

Richardson, S., & Bacon, H. (Eds.) (1991). *Child Sexual Abuse: Whose Problem? Reflections from Cleveland.* Birmingham: Venture Press.

Richardson, S., & Bacon, H. (2001a). Piecing the fragments together. In: S. Richardson & H. Bacon (Eds.), *Creative Responses to Child Sexual Abuse: Challenges and Dilemmas* (pp. 29–43). London: Jessica Kingsley.

Richardson, S. & Bacon, H. (Eds.) (2001b). *Creative Responses to Child Sexual Abuse: Challenges and Dilemmas.* London: Jessica Kingsley.

Slovo, G. (2000). *Red Dust.* London: Virago.

INDEX

Abu Ghraib Prison, xiv
abuse
  calendar, 6, 10, 13
  child, xv, 5, 155, 169–171
  domestic, 5
  emotional, 11, 65
  physical, 11, 65, 155, 158
  ritual, xiii–xvii, 4–6, 9–11, 39–41, 43, 49, 51, 71, 98, 103, 107, 113–114, 143, 155, 158, 166–167, 170, 172–176
  sadistic, 96, 167, 172
  Satanist, xiii, 4, 27
  sexual, xv, 11, 59, 65, 155, 158, 167, 169–171
  spiritual, 11
Adams, M. A., 114, 135
Adult Attachment Interview (AAI), 174
affected self-states, 83, 106, 114, 125–127, 130
alter(s), 4–5, 49, 59, 61, 63, 72, 77–78, 80–81, 84, 94–96, 98, 101, 104, 106, 109–113, 115, 117–120, 129, 132–134, 158, 161
amnesia, 4, 60, 63–68, 71–72, 76, 84, 87–88, 91–93, 99, 111, 134
anger, 45, 70, 96, 99, 151, 158–160, 162–163, 166, 172
Anon, xiv, xvii
anxiety, 1, 13, 41, 62, 79, 85, 91, 117, 165
apparently normal personality (ANP), 59, 65, 89–90
attachment
  -based therapy, 40, 157
  bond(s), 49
  figure(s), 75, 160, 163
  insecure, 12
  internal, 173–175
  loving, 36
  needs, 2, 13, 40, 58, 83, 95, 173
  paradigm, 173
  patterns, 11, 174
  primary, 75
  secure, 9, 11–13

spiritual, 104, 114, 128
system, 40, 48, 173, 175
theory, 96, 173

Bacon, H., 170–172, 178
Barber, T. X., 93, 135
Beauchaine, T. P., 81, 135
Becker, T., 61, 135
belief systems, xv, 4–5, 7–10, 12–14, 16–17, 20, 35–36, 48, 145, 147
Blinder, B. J., 72–73, 135
Blizard, R. A., 173, 177
Bowlby, J., 1, 159–160, 167–168, 170, 178
Bowlby Centre, 1, 6, 10, 172
Butler-Sloss, Rt Hon Justice E., 169–170, 178

Cahill, L., 86, 139
Cameron, E., 68, 70–71, 92
Campbell, B., 170, 178
care
-giver(s), 120, 167, 171, 173–175
-seekers, 171, 173–175
Carlson, E. A., 65, 138
Carlson, E. B., 93, 139
cases/pseudonyms
Adam, 3
Baby, 83, 93, 96, 133–134
Bruce, 155–167
Hulk(*y*), 160–167
Leo, 161
Steve, 159
Guy, 83, 93, 133–134
Jodi, 40–55
Lisa, 2–3
Little Girl, 77–78
Samantha, 77–78, 83, 96, 134
Lucie, 88
X, 144–152
Cassidy, S., xiv, xvii
Central Intelligence Agency (CIA), xiv, 57, 64, 66–67, 70, 84, 92–93
Christianity, 8, 10, 16–18, 22–23, 27, 29, 36, 145
Christ, 14, 18
Roman Catholic Church, xiii, 5, 7, 24–25, 31–33, 143
Christmas, 32–34, 155, 160–161
Chu, J. A., 65, 135
Clark, P. B., 95, 135
Cleghorn, R., 68, 136
Cleveland Social Services, 169
Clinic for Dissociative Studies, 1–2, 6, 10
Coleman, J., 3–4
Collins, A., 71, 136
Comstock, C. M., 114, 136
conscious(ness), 52, 59, 61, 64, 67, 72, 78–80, 84–86, 88–90, 92, 99, 102–104, 108–110, 114, 116, 119–120, 122, 124–129, 132–133, 146, 149, 156, 172, 177 *see also*: subconscious, unconscious(ness)
containment, 4, 61, 102, 110, 116–117, 130–131, 133, 159, 162
Conway, A., 85, 136
Conway, F., 71, 136
countertransference, xvi, 41, 51, 159, 166–167 *see also*: transference
Crews, F., xvi, xvii
cult(s), 2, 4, 8–10, 12–14, 33, 36, 39–40, 48–54, 60, 62, 97, 100, 108–109, 158
indoctrination, 71
member(s), 46, 48

Dell, P., 73–74, 79, 81–82, 88, 136
DeMause, L., xv, xvii
demon(s), 8, 22, 25, 28–32, 61, 71, 95, 108, 129–131
den Boer, J. A., 65, 138
deprivation, 58, 60, 71, 93
De Zulueta, F., 166, 168
dissociation, 10, 42, 47, 57–61, 64–66, 69–77, 79, 81–82, 87, 89, 92–93, 97, 102–103, 105, 108, 115, 144, 154, 156, 171, 173

dissociative identity disorder (DID), 1–2, 4–5, 36, 59, 65, 72, 82, 113, 156
"don't remember/don't tell", 97, 102–103, 107
Draijer, N., 65, 136

Egeland, B., 65, 138
ego-states, 58–59, 61, 66, 74, 76, 96–99, 110–112, 114–115, 118–120, 124–127, 133–134
Einhorn, L., 98, 136
emotional parts (EPs), 65, 75, 89–90
Evans, K., 177–178
executive
  control, 58–59, 61, 75, 84–85, 87, 91
  functions, 59, 66, 76
Extreme Abuse Survey (EAS), 61–63, 65

Fassin, V., 68, 136
Fleck, L., xvi, xvii
Fotheringham, T., 60, 72, 78, 101, 111–112, 119, 136
Fox, H., 92, 136
Frankel, A. S., 98, 136
Freeman, H., 70, 136
Frey, L. M., 65, 135

Galton, G., 6, 37
Ganzel, B. L., 65, 135
Gatzke-Kopp, L., 81, 135
Goenjian, A., 65, 139
Gomme, R., 68, 136
Gottlieb, S., 64, 71, 83, 93, 96
Goulding, R., 115, 137
Gresch, H. U., 58, 67, 73, 75, 78–80, 83, 86, 88, 90–92, 96, 100, 104, 111, 115, 137
Grunbaum, A., xvi, xvii

Hale, R., 3, 9, 37
Hauff, W., 80, 137
Healy, D., 92, 140
Heard, D., 173, 178
Heim, A., 74, 79–80, 137
Herman, J. L., 47, 50, 55, 171, 178
HMSO, 169, 178
hypnosis, 42, 58, 64, 66–67, 70, 72–73, 75–76, 79–80, 83–86, 88, 91–93, 95–96, 100, 104, 109, 111, 113, 122, 124
hypnotic (hypno) suggestion, 73, 84, 86, 88, 109, 124

internal self-helpers (ISHs), 74, 114–116, 119–120, 132–133
Irving, D., xv, xvii
Islam/Muslim, 16, 26, 36

Jennings, E., 175, 178
Jewish/Judaism, xv, 15–17, 23–24, 27, 30, 32, 34, 36, 145
Judeo-Christian tradition, 8, 12, 15, 101

Karriker, W., 61, 135
Keenan, B., 39–40, 53–55
Kernberg, O. F., 99, 137
Krystal, H., 125, 137

Lacter, E., xiv, 5, 60, 137
Lake, H., 173, 178
Langeland, W., 65, 136
LeDoux, J., 74, 88–89, 110, 137
Lehman, K., 60, 137
Lezak, M., 59, 137

Marks, J., 68, 137
Matthews, J. A., 65, 135
McCluskey, U., 173, 178
McFarlane, A. C., 65, 74, 141
McGaugh, J. L., 86, 139
McGonigle, H. L., 68, 137
Mead, H. K., 81, 135
Miller, A., 5, 111, 137–138
MKULTRA, xiv, xvii, 64, 66, 68, 71–72, 85, 91–93, 138–139
multiple personality disorder (MPD), 67, 156–157
Muslim *see*: Islam

near-death, 48, 58, 62, 80, 84, 91, 130
Neutra, W., 69, 138
Nichols, M., 115, 138
Nightingale, C., 175, 178
Nijenhuis, E. R. S., 59, 65, 75, 89, 138, 140
Noblitt, R., 5, 37, 136

occult, 4, 9, 15, 24, 27, 30
Ogawa, J. R., 65, 138
O'Hearn, T. C., 98, 136
Opton, E. M., 91, 140
Overkamp, B., 61, 135

Paganism, 4, 8, 16, 22–24, 33–36, 145
Paracelsus Trust, 1
parasympathetic nervous system (PNS), 81,
Parker, E. S., 86, 139
Pavlov, I. P., 69–71, 139
Perskin Noblitt, P., 5, 37, 136
Peterson, G., 72, 139
Porges, S. W., 81–82, 139
post trauma stress disorder (PTSD), 156, 161
programmer(s), 58, 61, 65, 69, 73, 75–76, 78, 80–85, 87–90, 93–98, 100–104, 106–107, 109, 111, 113, 115, 119, 124–125, 127–131, 135
programming, 40, 57, 59–62, 64–66, 72, 77, 79–80, 82, 84–85, 87, 89–94, 97, 99–100, 102–108, 110–119, 121–122, 124–125, 129, 131–134, 147, 152, 174
Putnam, F. W., 65, 72, 93, 139
Pynoos, R. S., 65, 139

rage, 42, 74, 98–99, 133, 158, 160–167
rape, 28, 43, 94, 131, 152, 156, 158, 162
Rechtman, R., 68, 136
Rejali, D., 69, 139
Richardson, S., 170–175, 178
Ritual Abuse Information Network and Support (RAINS), 4
Ross, C. A., 65, 67, 91, 93, 139–140
Rutz, C., 5, 61, 76–78, 83, 93, 96, 109, 113, 117–118, 132–135, 140

Sachs, A., 6, 37
sacrifice, 13–14, 27–29, 31, 36, 123, 160–161
  actual, 36
  animal, 31–32, 60
  blood, 13, 28–29
  human, 22, 27, 31, 33–34, 60
  symbolic, 13, 36
Sargant, W., 69–71, 140
Satanism, xiii, 4–6, 10, 14, 16–17, 22–24, 26–29, 31–37, 48, 59, 90, 101, 105, 129, 143, 158, 162, 172 *see also*: abuse
Scheflin, A. W., 91, 140
Schore, A. N., xvi, xvii
Schwartz, H., 85, 96, 99, 102, 115, 140
Schwartz, J., xiii–xvii
Schwartz, R., 1, 115, 137–138
self *see also*: internal self-helpers (ISHs)
  aware(ness), 59, 80, 84
  core, 50, 159
  harm, 64, 153, 165
  reflection, 114–115
  -regulation, 59
  state(s), xiv, 58–63, 65–66, 73–77, 80–85, 87–89, 91–94, 96–98, 101, 104–116, 118, 121–122, 125–134
sexual *see*: abuse
Shorter, E., 92, 140
Siegelman, J., 71, 136
Sinason, V., xiii, 3, 9–10, 11, 35, 37, 51
Slovo, G., 175, 178
Sroufe, A., 65, 138
Steele, K., 59, 75, 89, 140
Steinberg, A. M., 65, 139
subconscious, 69, 86, 89, 100, 114–115 *see also*: conscious(ness), unconscious(ness)

survivor(s), xiii, xiv, xvi–xvii, 1–6, 9–10, 13–14, 17, 36–37, 39–40, 47–49, 51, 53, 55, 57–63, 65–66, 70–72, 74–76, 78–80, 82–87, 89, 91–110, 112–117, 119, 121–122, 125–132, 134–135, 155, 157–158, 160, 164–167, 172–173, 175–177
Svali, 60, 97–99, 119, 125, 140
sympathetic nervous system (SNS), 81

Tammet, D., 86, 140
Tavistock and Portman NHS, 9
Thomas, G., 70–71, 91, 140
Thompson, G., 103, 140
Tien, H. C., 67, 71, 80, 92, 140
torture, xiii–xvii, 9, 28, 40, 45, 47–49, 55, 57–62, 65–70, 72–73, 75–88, 90–98, 100, 105, 109–113, 115, 117, 120, 125–127, 130–131, 146–147, 156, 158, 161–162
  -based mind control, xiv, 57–60, 63–64, 67, 69–70, 72, 76, 79, 88–89
  electroshock, 48, 55, 58–59, 61–62, 64, 67–71, 86, 91–94, 101, 103–105, 126, 130, 144, 146–147
transference, xvi, 51, 159 *see also*: countertransference

unconscious(ness), 12, 62, 67, 84–85, 88–90, 92, 103–104, 108–109, 113–115, 121, 124, 126, 130 *see also*: conscious(ness), subconscious

van der Hart, O., 59, 75, 89, 140
van der Kolk, B. A., 65, 74, 95, 141, 161, 166, 168
violence, 42, 65, 100, 161, 163, 166

Watkins, J. G., 112, 141
Weinfield, N. S., 65, 138
Weinstein, H., 68, 91, 141
Weisaeth, L., 65, 74, 141
White, K., 1, 172
witchcraft, 4, 28, 48, 59, 82–83, 101, 106, 108, 112, 129
world
  inner, xvi, 60, 66, 81, 95, 100, 109, 111, 117, 119, 124, 129–131, 134
  internal, 47, 119, 121, 125, 175
World War
  First, 68, 71
  Second, 22, 28, 70, 95

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/35043 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Ritual abuse: the under-recognized problem

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **March 8, 2000**

**If you are a survivor of ritual abuse, please be aware that reading about it may be triggering. Please take care of yourself, and be in a safe place before reading

Ritual abuse. The word conjures up images of people in robes, chanting, or perhaps a grade D horror flick. But what is the reality?

First, let's look at a definition of ritual abuse:

Ritual abuse is the systematic, repetitive abuse of both children and adults by either an individual or a group. It may involve psychological, sexual, physical and/or spiritual abuse, and the effects are devastating on the individual who undergoes it. Often survivors of this type of extreme abuse cope by dissociating, and as adults may continue the cycle of amnesia and abuse. The key word here is : repetitive. Ritual abuse is done repetitively, in a consistent pattern, over time. This may be done in the name of a religious belief, or simply out of patterned cruelty. Any idealogy can and has been used to justify the pattern of abuse. Most of the victimization begins in early childhood, and is done by adults who were themselves abused. The cycle continues because people often do not realize that they can stop it; often, they feel "trapped" in the pattern of abuse. What is the incidence of ritual abuse today? Statistics vary, depending upon the source. When I lived in a large metropolitan city in the Southwest, population close to 2,000,000 , the group that I was affiliated with, known as the Illuminati, had 24 sister groups. Each group had roughly 50 members, so they had approximately 1,200 members in this area. These numbers are reflected across the United States and European countries. And this was only one group.

In the next few months, I will be sharing different perspectives on the reality of ritual abuse. I hope to address the following questions:

1. What kinds of groups engage in what is known as ritual abuse? What motivates them?

2. How do these groups maintain their "cloak of secrecy?" How do they operate? What kind of security do they use?

3. How do they program their followers? Why? How does a person break free from this kind of programming?

4. What is the opinion of experts in the field?

5. Has there been documented, physical evidence that ritual abuse occurs? What evidence? 6. What about spouses and friends: what can they do to help survivors of ritual abuse? What is helpful, and what isn't?

7. What can the general public do to help?

These are all valid points that need to be addressed in order to understand ritual abuse. As a survivor of ritual abuse myself, as well as a former cult programmer, or trainer, I have a vested interest in sharing both from my own experience, and the wealth of published information about ritual abuse that is available now.

I also hope to be able to share some survivor stories (with names changed to protect the people involved) about the reality of ritual abuse, and the ongoing effects that it causes in the life of the survivor, as well as things that have helped them in their healing journey.

I will be sharing internet links that relate to the topics that I have addressed. They are there, and are well worth reading for the person who desires to learn more, and is willing to approach this subject objectively.

Best wishes,

svali

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/37091 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Ritual abuse: Modern hysteria or ancient practice?

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **April 10, 2000**

** If you are a survivor of ritual abuse , please be in a safe place before reading the following article, as it mentions groups that practice ritual abuse as well as the historical groups that they are descended from. **

In this article, I will be discussing ritual abuse in a historical context. Later articles will share about ritual abuse from the perspective of its effects on the survivor as well as significant others.

1. Ritual abuse: modern hysteria or ancient practice?

Ritualized forms of abuse have been practiced since the dawn of human history. Violence in the name of a religious or ideological belief is not new; it has been practiced for thousands of years.

Here I will discuss a few groups that have been documented as practicing secret, esoteric, or abusive rites to place modern ritual abuse in a historical context. Please be aware that this is only some of the documented ritualized abuse that we know of from ancient until modern times, and is by no means complete.

The ancient Assyrians and Phoenicians worshipped the sun god, Baal, who they depended upon for the continuance of their crops. The antiquity of the worship of the god or gods of Baal extends back to the 14th century BCE among the ancient Semitic cultures. Worship of Baal extended from the Canaanites to the Phoenicians who also were partially an agricultural people. Baal, the sun god, was fervently prayed to for the protection of livestock and crops, and the rites also included animal and human sacrifice.

Another co-current deity was Molech, whose rituals were also costly to human life. (excerpted from Alan G. Hefner).

Many of these rituals were adopted by the ancient Hebrews, as mentioned in the Bible (Leviticus 20 and 2 Kings 23) These rituals were carried out for over a thousand years, both openly and secretly.

Ancient Babylonia also practiced Mystery Religions, which involved worship of the sun god, and sacrifices to this deity.

In Europe and Indo-asia, the ancient Druids also were known to engagein human sacrifice and rituals before the coming of Christianity to the areas occupied by the celts in Europe and Britain. Caesar commented upon this practice:

"The whole nation of the Gauls is greatly devoted to ritual observances, and for that reason those who are smitten with the more grievous maladies and who are engaged in the perils of battle either sacrifice human victims or vow to do so, employing the Druids as ministers for such sacrifices..." (Gallic War, 6, 16)

By the medieval ages, Christianity had entered Europe, and groups were formed who practiced rites that were the antithesis of the organized religion of the day. Many of these groups claimed roots founded in the rites of the ancient druids and Canaanites. The Knights Templar were one such order. They were founded by medieval lords and barons to protect pilgrims who visited Jerusalem, which had been captured during the First Crusade. They were also quite wealthy,and financed the leading kings of Europe at the time, creating the modern banking system of lending at interest. They were disbanded in the early 1300s by the Pope and the King of France because of fear due to their power,as well as their esoteric religious practices. The Knights Templar began corrupting their Catholicism, and incorporating elements of mystery religions, which included rituals with candles around the body of a young virgin, and homosexual practices. They also began summoning demons during these rituals. Although officially disbanded, the Templar knights continued practicing their rites in secret, founding the thirteen orders, each with their own symbol.

Rosicrucianism. This group was publicly founded in the 17th century in Germany, supposedly by an individual in a novel known as Christian Resenkrutz. The order was based on the traditions of the "Rose Cross" order. This group emphasized the need for "enlightenment" through following certain spiritual principles,and had both a public and covert philosophy.

Meanwhile, in South America and Mexico, the Incas and Aztecs were also performing rituals which involved tbe taking of human life. This has been documented in the annals of the early Spanish conquerors.

Up until modern times, esoteric, hidden practices have continued around the world. Brutality, and sacrifices in the name of religion are not limited to one locality or one time in history.

In Africa, ritual murder is still ongoing, and has been extensively documented. (see articles by Oke(1989) for more information. In Thailand, India, and Malaysia, sacrifices and rituals are still conducted, similar to those of ancient times, and has

been documented in articles by Newton (1993) and Constantine (1995).

Modern Europe has also reported incidences of ritual murder in recent years (see articles by Newton, 1993a for discussion of cases of ritual murder that have been convicted in Dusseldorf and Spain).

In strife-torn Peru, human sacrifice remains a daily fact of life, dating back to the time of the Incas. For some practitioners, the ritual offering of human lives is believed to insure bountiful crops, control the weather, and prevent such natural catastrophes as floods and earthquakes. These rituals, called "paying the earth," are also employed by wealthy businessmen, including mine owners and beer distributors,to insure continued prosperity.

In neighboring Chile, human sacrifice is such an established tradition that the courts recognize "compulsion by irresistible psychic forces" as grounds for acquittal in cases of ritual murder. (Tierney, 1989)

There is much, much more evidence of documented continuing ritual sacrificearound the world. It would take a strong denial system to refute both the historical and circumstancial evidence that ritual abuse has been a reality throughout the ages, and continues to be until this day.

Why am I sharing about the history of ritual abuse? One of the things that often perplexes survivors of ritual abuse is the denial with which their memories or accounts are often met. They are told: "ritual abuse is a modern-day witch hunt," "Things like that don't happen in this day and age" (as if man's entering the Industrial Revolution changed human nature), or "I don't believe you." Comments like these can be devastating both to the survivor of ritual abuse, who often WISHES the memories were not true, and the family and support people for the individual, who know the individual, and that they are NOT lying.

Comments like these only reinforce what the individual was told by the cult group: "If you tell, no one will believe you," or "You will be laughed at, or shunned." The survivor courageous enough to not only remember, but then disclose their abuse, will be faced with a society that often appears in denial. "Why isn't anyone doing anything about this?" the survivor wonders, as they share the atrocities. "Why isn't it stopped?" "Why do more children have to be hurt?"

Societal denial is complex. People often do not want to think about or hear about painful topics. Thirty years ago, teenage girls who shared that their middle class father was sexually abusing them were told that they were "lying", or worse, "delusional". Twenty years ago, medical professionals who suspected that battered children were being seen from not only the poverty levels of society, but also the middle class and well to do, were told it wasn't possible. Society closed its eyes to the facts before it, until enough people finally came forward and disclosed.

Hopefully, placing ritual abuse in a historical context will help the reader see that:

Ritual abuse is NOT a "new" phenomenon, or a modern day "hysteria"

Human beings have been capable of great cruelty throughout the ages, and to believe otherwise refutes the historical record

Those who are abused tend to abuse. Why would this well known psychological fact be different in the context of familial, generational ritual abuse? Where the abuse has been passed down for generations, in a codified manner?

That ritual abuse is occurring around the world. It is NOT a phenomenon limited to the United States, or to people "recovering memories" in therapy. Newton, Ryder, and Lockwood ("Other altars") have resarched and proven this.

My hope is that at the least, this article has helped raise some questions about a topic that is often overlooked and misunderstood.

svali

References: Crowley, Aleister, The Book of Lies (Weiser, 1988)

Howard, Michael The Occult Conspiracy (1989)

Shaw, Jim and McKenney The Deadly Deception (1988)

Ryder, Daniel ;article: Satanic Ritual abuse: The evidence surfaces: ...(1999)

Newton, Michael: Excerpt from essay published in the Journal of Psychohistory 24 (2) Fall 1996,"BLOOD ATONEMENT" IN 19TH-CENTURY AMERICA

Out of Darkness:Contoversy over satanism and ritual abuse ;Sakheim, Devine (1998)

Smith, Margaret; Ritual Abuse; (1993)

James, Simon: The World of the Celts (1993)

The Book of Illumination (age unknown)

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/37698 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Cults that abuse

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **April 18, 2000**

Groups that abuse

Before I address survivor's stories in later articles, I believe it is important to understand how groups that ritually abuse operate.

Cults can be abusive or non-abusive, and there are many fairly benign cult-like groups that exist today. But for the purposes of my article, I want to look at cults that abuse, specifically, in the sense of ritual abuse.

What are the characteristics of an abusive cult? There are many studies that have defined controlling cults. Dr. Margaret Singer, Phd, U.Ca. Berkley, has written one of the definitive articles on cults that employ mind control and their characteristics (1).

She states that thought reform, as employed by controlling cults, involves the entire anthropological/social spectrum of behaviour, including language use, social environment, and influence of the leader and peers on the member. This often involves attacking the person's self concept.

I would like to take the six conditions that she has identified as being pre-requisites to exerting mind control, and compare them to experiences of survivors in ritualistically abusive groups. The two correlate completely.

1. CONTROL OVER TIME : this is Singer's first condition. The cult group must get some of the person's time, as much as possible, and have the individual think about group idealogy. Survivors report spending time during the week in contact with the cultic groups that abuse them. Contact is by phone; by verbal discussion, or going to meetings. Survivors state that group meetings often occur weekly, monthly, or as frequently as two to three times a week for intensive training sessions. The group that I was involved in (the Illuminati) met two to three times a week for normal teaching times, and had large group meetings on a monthly basis ("ritual times") as well as leadership meetings once a month to plan the activities for the next few weeks.

2. CREATE A SENSE OF POWERLESSNESS Most groups involved in ritual abuse do this to the nth degree. Through pain, degradation, tying up victims, and experiences created to show there is "no escape" from infancy on, the victim of cult control soon comes to believe that he/she is trapped, can never break free, and should just "give in" to what is asked of them.

3. MANIPULATE REWARDS, PUNISHMENTS, EXPERIENCES IN ORDER TO SUPPRESS OLD SOCIAL BEHAVIOR BEHAVIORS REWARDED: Participation, conformity to ideas/behavior, zeal, personal changes BEHAVIORS PUNISHED: criticalness, independent thinking, non-conformity to ideas/behavior From earliest childhood in generational ritual groups, to later childhood or adulthood in other groups, the use of rewards and praise, as well as punishment have a name: training. Cult type groups believe strongly in the use of praise if the person does well, including merit badges, ceremonies of reward, and high status if the person conforms to the expected behaviour, and severe punishment, even death threatened if the person refuses to perform. Often, abusive and coercive groups will take this concept to its outermost extremes.

4. MANIPULATE REWARDS, PUNISHMENTS, EXPERIENCES IN ORDER TO ELICIT NEW BEHAVIOR Models will demonstrate new behavior Conformity: dress, language, behavior Using group language will eventually still the thinking mind I will discuss this from the point of view of my experiences in the Illuminati in San Diego, Ca. Again, "training" in the Illuminati and other highly controlling groups (outside people call it "programming") is meant to create behaviour that helps the group to continue. The goal is a member who is absolutely committed to the group; who never questions leadership, who strives to excel, and who scoffs at the weak. Weakness is the displaying of emotion during ritual events; the refusal to perform an act, or the inability to keep up with others in the group during activities. "Weak" members are brought forward, and punished in view of all. During military exercises (the group had a strong military basis, with forced marches at night, and mock "battles" and "hunts") if a member did well, they were highly praised and rewarded. This could be being excused from a difficult maneuver, or sexual rewards, or moving up in status at the next award time. Members were highly conscious of their standing in the group, and were constantly seeking to "move up."

5. MUST BE A TIGHTLY CONTROLLED SYSTEM OF LOGIC There must be authoritarian leaders in control, who inspire confidence and punish questioning behaviour. In San Diego, as well as several Illuminati groups that I belonged to across the country, the leadership looked like a "pyramid", with the top person being head of "leadership council", then a group of two "advisors" below him. Below these two were six administrators who coordinated finances, meeting times, and running the groups logistically. Below them were six head trainers. Underneath were the "sister groups" of about 50 members each, with priests/priestesses, and others. All aspired to a leadership role, to being allowed to move up the rigid hierarchy. Questioning of leadership was unthought of, and considered quite dangerous. From earliest childhood on, members were taught that seeking to

leave, or questioning the group's philosophy, would mean isolation, beratement, punishment, and possible death, with "deaths" being staged to convince children of this reality. Survivors of groups outside the Illuminati have also reported similar activities to control members, with a hierarchy of leadership and leaders being given the right to severely punish or discipline nonconformers.

6. PERSONS BEING THOUGHT REFORMED MUST BE UNAWARE THAT THEY ARE BEING MOVED THROUGH A PROGRAM TO MAKE THEM DEPLOYABLE AGENTS A person is hard to manipulate if they KNOW they are being manipulated. That is why techniques used by ritualistically abusive groups are often based on a sophisticated knowledge of human behaviour and psychology. The member's peers including family, closest friends, and spouse are ALL members of the group in generational cults. These people all reinforce for the member that the group is good; has the member's "best interests" at heart, no matter how abusive the behaviour. That they want to "help" the member. Trainers and behaviour programmers also use these techniques, including "bonding" with the victim, convincing the victim that they "care for them" , that "no one else could possibly understand them the way their 'family' (the name the Illuminati go by) does", etc. As a former trainer in this group, I used those phrases frequently during sessions. At one time, I even believed them myself, until I began questioning what I was doing (this will be the focus of another article: why I left). Surrounded by members who all dress alike, act alike, the person in an abusive cult will often question themselves instead of the cult group, if they question at all. After all, in generational cults, this is the ONLY reality the person has known, from infancy on, and not everyone questions what happens to them.

In later articles, I hope to be able to incorporate survivor accounts of the types of groups involved in this kind of abuse. On a personal note, the group that was involved in my ritual abuse was known as the Illuminati, although day to day they called themselves "family", "the Order", or "the Society" depending on the circumstances. For thirteen years, at times my abuse occurred in a Masonic temple in Alexandria, Virginia and some of the abusers were Masons, although most of the membership of that group had no idea that some of the members were using the temple for that purpose. All Masons are NOT abusers, most are not, but SOME in my experience were members of the Illuminati and abused me in that context. I was also abused in a small abandoned Baptist church in the country in northern Virginia. One of the abusers was a deacon in a local baptist church. All Baptists are NOT abusers, but in this one instance, some members of the local church were members of a group that abused during the night hours. In the daytime, these people were respected members of the community, churchgoers, and appeared benevolent. This shows that a person's daytime "persona" can be quite different from how they act at night or in a different setting. All of the members of the group that abused me were generational themselves, and had been abused in the same way when they were children. This shows how the cycle of abuse, if not healed, will continue generation after generation in some families.

References: (1) Singer, Margaret T. "Conditions for Thought Reform"

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/38241 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Why the cult doesn't get caught

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **April 26, 2000**

Why The Cult Doesn't Get Caught

When confronted with the possibility that ritual abuse may occur, one of the first questions people ask is: "But if it's real, why aren't they caught?". In other words, how can an organized society meet and execute rituals in secret, yet not leave any incriminating evidence which may lead to a conviction? How can such secrecy possibly be maintained in this day and age? Surely they would leave behind a 'trail' that would alert others as to what was happening.

I will address these questions from my own experience with one cultic group and also provide a link to articles about other ritually abusive groups who HAVE been 'caught in the act' and subsequently convicted in court. I would first, however, like to discuss one other secret society that has continued to operate in the US since the early 1920s (approx.). A secret society that commits acts of brutality including not only physical beatings, but also cold blooded murder. A criminal group that engages in a variety of illegal activities. An organization with members who are born into it and thus can be termed 'generational'. One who prior to the 1970s enjoyed the official FBI position of non-existence, despite those who were reporting its reality (sounds much like ritual abuse today!). I am referring, of course, to 'La Cosa Nostra' aka 'The Mafia'.

In 'Who Is The Mob Today?' (2/25/1996), Peter Maas quotes FBI Director Louis J. Freeh admitting the terrible past mistake made by the FBI in rejecting accounts of the Mafia's existence: For decades under the late J. Edgar Hoover, the FBI's official position was that the existence of Cosa Nostra was a myth. "We cannot allow the same kinds of mistakes to be made today", Freeh told Congress. "The failure of American law enforcement, including the FBI... permitted the development of a powerful, well-entrenched organized crime syndicate (that required) 35 years of concerted law-enforcement effort and the expenditure of incredible resources to address."

The current 'official' position of the FBI is that organized, secretive societies that ritually abuse and participate in illegal activities do not exist, despite overwhelming evidence to the contrary. The bureau appears to have a consistent track record in

this department.

What kind of evidence? Ritual abuse does occur and is being successfully prosecuted in courts today, despite the claims of those who deny this fact. Evidence such as pentagrams and assorted paraphernalia IS being found in many of these instances. The following URL is an excellent link to such cases and I would strongly encourage anyone interested in learning more about the reality of ritual abuse to visit this site. It is an eye-opener.

http://members.tripod.com/Curio_5_/ra.htm

Survivor memories: More and more survivors are coming forward and sharing memories of ritual abuse. These accounts are specific in terms of dates, times, individuals present and events which transpired. Such disclosures have been made by both children and adults from around the world.

How security is maintained: One group's methods

In the remainder of this article I will share my knowledge of how one group operated its internal security in order to prevent detection. I cannot speak of other groups or their security measures. As previously stated, I was a member of the Illuminati for the first 38 years of my life, spanning from 1957 to 1995. Based on this experience I will now discuss exactly how security was maintained both in Northern Virginia and San Diego, Ca.

1. Telephone Tree: General meetings were scheduled by the leadership council well in advance (usually several months) during their private meetings. In turn, these dates were then given to ranking leaders in the group who, several days prior to a meeting, would activate a telephone tree. Higher members first called their peers, then those beneath them in the group hierarchy. Those at the lowest level were notified just one night before the meeting date, since they were considered 'higher security risks'.

2. Conditioning To Remain Silent: From the age of 24 months, ALL children in the group were taught the importance of not discussing group activities during the daytime. Teaching methods included 'set-ups', in which a member 'told' and was then 'punished' by the administration of torture. Set-ups were designed to look very realistic, with the 'betrayer' loudly screaming throughout his 'punishment' - which may have included drowning, burning or even murder. This graphic experience of what happened to those who 'tell', served as an unforgettable lesson to young children.

Other methods included beating the child if he spoke of night-related activities in the daytime. The adults around the child also modeled this behaviour by NEVER discussing night activities the following morning. If the child mentioned something

he would be told "you were dreaming" and to "forget it". Severe and brutal physical punishment of children was also used. Set-up scenarios such as fake burials, where the child is then retrieved from a coffin and told he will stay below ground forever should he even think of talking about group activities was done. I was put through that scenario as a young child and in turn, as an adult, saw it perpetrated upon young children. The child is always screaming and swears to never ever tell.

3. Expert Clean-up Crews: Many rituals involving murder were set-ups (no, the cult was not murdering its children - however they did create very realistic set-ups that had powerful psychological effects on the children present). More commonly, an animal was used during spiritual rituals (as I will discuss in another article, there were many other kinds of meetings. Spiritual was but one of six areas of group activities, the others being military, sciences, scholarship, leadership and government). Members were trained in post-meeting clean-up techniques from childhood. Wooden tables were taken apart, bleached,cleaned and then loaded into vans. Clothes were folded in preparation for laundering later. If the site was outdoors then the area was raked clean. If inside a large private home then the site was thoroughly washed down.

4. Restriction Of Meeting Size: In order to avoid overly large meetings, the San Diego group was divided into 24 sister groups (each approx. 60 members) that met on alternating days at alternating sites. Some groups met on Mondays and Thursdays, others on Tuesdays and Fridays, and yet others on Wednesdays and Saturdays. Usually two groups (occasionally three) would meet together at one site. Only at major annual meetings would large numbers congregate. As mentioned above, meeting times were coordinated by telephone trees.

5. Clandestine Times: Meetings were held between 12:30am and 2:00am and on occasion were extended to 4:00am. Traffic would be light. Members often lived in communities where everyone was a member of the group (oh yes, there are 'cult communities' because like attracts like, and often whole neighborhoods are comprised exclusively of cult members). People would leave quietly in the night, with car lights off until they were out on the street. The adult non-driver would be the 'watcher', checking that they were not being followed.

Each family had a cover story to be used in the event of an outsider catching them leaving. Typically the story would involve an urgently hospitalized relative, which would satisfactorily explain the lateness of the hour and the presence of small children . Normal clothes were worn enroute to the meeting and people would change once on-site. In my family we would sometimes go to sleep in our clothes, which saved time when we got up in the middle of the night. I never considered it unusual to go to bed in my clothing two or three nights a week.

6. On-site Security: The group had several security perimeters around meetings. The first checkpoint (outermost perimeter) was at the five mile mark. There were always at least two roads leading into the meeting site and both would be manned

by members possessing a list of approved license plate numbers. All vehicles (incoming and outgoing) were checked. Vehicle flow was minimized as families often car pooled. In the event of an unauthorized vehicle breaching the perimeter, a hidden security person (they would stand behind a tree, watching) would radio ahead and the meeting was immediately packed-up and the people quickly dispersed. Meanwhile, the incoming vehicle would be delayed by the non-hidden security who would pretend to be stranded and in need of assistance. They were taught how to engage the outsider for several crucial minutes. If that ploy failed then they would alert the next perimeter where logs would then be positioned to block the roadway. Of the three-man security team, one would be responsible for alerting members while the other two executed delaying tactics if required.

This security procedure was repeated at both the three mile and one mile perimeters, meaning members had to pass through a total of three checkpoints before arriving at the meeting. To avoid boredom or staleness, security members were rotated on a bi-monthly basis.

Often, on private property, indoor meetings or trainings would occur on large multi-acred estates appointed with securely fenced perimeters. The site would be located in a downstairs basement which could be closed-off from the rest of the house by a false wall. These estates usually had at least one private roadway at the rear and the customary security perimeters in place. As you may by now appreciate, it would be extremely difficult to 'crash a meeting' considering the security measures utilized by the group. Given that an outsider was able to discover the time and date of a meeting, he would then have to travel in a vehicle with approved plates. Short of breaking the law, this would require the cooperation of an active group member (which is quite difficult to arrange as they are taught to report to their leader anything like this).

The above has been shared with police departments and they have said that I describe a "highly sophisticated security system". It is the only one I ever knew while part of this group.

What about the bodies? As mentioned above, the reality is that many of the 'ritual killings' (although not all) were set-ups. Fake. Some involved filling a corpse (obtained prior to the ritual) with warm blood. The child would be allowed to play with a living infant before a ceremony, then the switch would be made while the child was in a room 'preparing'.

Children NEVER question set-ups (they are too frightened) and truly believe they actually killed someone. The group wants them to believe this because the perpetrator guilt will then bind the child to them, and make it less willing to disclose group activities. The child is told it is now a murderer and will go to jail should it ever talk about the meetings. There are real ritual killings, but I believe that set-ups inflate the figures somewhat. Homeless people, and runaways were also used on rare ocassions.

At times animals are used, however they usually belonged to group members. When living in San Diego I had four cats and three dogs mysteriously 'disappear' as well as most of my chickens (I lived in the country). These pets were undoubtedly used in ceremonies. After that I quit having pets - the trauma was too great. Goats, chickens, cattle and deer are all used on occasion. The carcasses are are subsequently torn-up, buried or thrown to the dogs in order to make the killings appear to have been done by wild dogs. Sometimes the skins are incinerated and the ashes buried.

It is not my intention to be gruesome. I am merely attempting to explain the mechanics of how this group maintained its secrecy. No doubt other groups use different methods.

>In closing, I would like to offer a comparison upon which to ponder. The Mafia, comprised of thousands of members and openly killing people, maintained its secrecy for over fifty years in the US. Today nobody doubts their existence, yet those same people question that other groups could successfully remain secret. Secrecy is not difficult. The Mafia used their own code of silence - 'Omerta'. The Illuminati cult also maintains its own silence to this day.

copywrite 2000 svali

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/39026 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Survivors Speak Out on Remembering: part two

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **May 8, 2000**

Survivors Speak Out, part two:

Survivors of ritual abuse come from all over the world. This is not a phenomenon limited to the United States or Europe.

John, a survivor outside the U.S., shares his process of remembering: I did not always remember. As with many sexual assault survivors and because of the violence and threats done to them, I was not able or allowed to remember. In 1974 I was 16 and I saw the movie, The Exorcist. It triggered an uncomfortableness and because of the brainwashing and lies "my family would be killed" I couldn't get consciousness and clarity. I ran away though on this subconcious and yet still powerful fear. I then got brainwashed again and it blotted out all my memory and the abuse that was happening then. In 1992, I met a ritual abuse survivor in an incest survivors group and after about six months of listening to her, I realised that I had been, and was then also being, ritually abused. The brainwashing was so strong that it took six months of listening to another survivor to assist me to have consciousness and clarity.

Abigail is another survivor who has always remembered some things: We always had part memories indicating such, though we didn't know what to label it, i.e. going to grade school and then my father would show up with an excuse to take me out of school. He would take me to the grocery store he worked at and sit me in the cooler room to sort numbers for pricing. Even though it was very cold in that room, he would tell his co-workers that I was sick and he was taking me to the Doctor. We would leave at noon time and then there would be no memory for the next 3 days. I know it was 3 days because the note my mother wrote for me to give my teacher always said that I was absent with a 3 day flu. Other things were almost life-long inexplicable fears and reactions to things that are otherwise pretty much commonplace. Still can't light a match but do ok with a lighter. The fear with an unlighted match in my hand is overwhelming panic and terror feeling very young. There are many others, too long to list here but they are this specific rather than general. Definition of ritual abuse came later in adulthood during a support group for sexual abuse survivors. We, as a group of survivors, were reading and working out of a book together. There were lists for identifying sexually abused girls and

boys and then a chapter and list for identifying ritual abuse. All our fears were listed, our reactions, our body pains. All never had explanation before were now explained within the context of ritual abuse and as things fell into place, things began to make sense. Our reaction to this was more, "Oh no, no, that can't be so!" then it was the "Ahhh, now it makes sense." For us, memories have surfaced more in an age-based chronological order with only few exceptions, i.e. related issues at a later age.

Ian, an eleven year old child, shares his experience: I always knew I had inside people. I could see them and talk to them. One time, I remembered something, and two nights later, one of my inside people told my leader that I remembered, it was an inside kid who "squealed" on me. They hit me, and then they shocked me, yelling at me I was to never remember, ever, or it would be worse for me. They then made me run, shooting bullets over my head, and laughing. I was really afraid then, when I first remembered again, when I got away from them. I was sure someone was going to come and get me, or hurt me. In fact, at night, I need someone with me so I can fall asleep. Night is the worst, because that is when we would go to meetings. Daytime is great for me.

Svali also remembered gradually: I had struggled with depression all of my life, but without a reason. I was labeled "endogenous" depression. My ex-husband and I entered marriage counseling for conflicts. One day the therapist told me, "Won't it be good when the tremendous guilt that I see in you is gone." Guilty was out then, and I ran to a corner and crouched, saying "But if the guilt is gone, then I will be gone." I then had a spontaneous memory of being hurt. The counselor had no idea what it was, and neither did I. That night, when I got home, while washing the dishes, I remembered my father abusing me. I ran into my bedroom, stuffed a pillow in my mouth, and screamed as the memory came out. The rage, the hurt, the pain were all there. As time went on, other memories came forward, all spontaneously, usually at home. I had always remembered my family's dysfunctionality: that my stepfather was an alcoholic, that my mother would beat her children, that my sister and brothers and I all tried to commit suicide many times growing up. They had to cut my 8 year old brother down when he tried to hang himself. But other things I had blocked, because it hurt too much until I felt safer and was older, able to deal with it.

Frank remembers: I knew I was different. I would find things in my room that I had never bought, or would wake up in a strange city with no idea how I got there, would find out I had a job for several months, a bank account, a girlfriend! I moved around a lot, was afraid to get close to anyone, or they would find out my "secret". But one day, I was in drug rehab several years ago, and it happened. My grandfather, one of my biggest perpetrators died, and I had flashback after flashback about him. I was given his masonic ring, and just looking at it, I remembered more. I went into therapy, and right away inside people came out and started talking. They figured that once he was dead, it was safe to talk.

Alex, a survivor from the West Coast, shares: I had no idea that it was happening until last year when I started to remember. I'm over 50, so there's a lot to remember! I don't talk about this with my family, I don't want to hurt them. I have all of this stuff about my life growing up that makes sense now. I always knew my family wasn't normal, that things weren't right. I always had a lot of rage, I would throw things against the wall and scream and yell without knowing why. But now, I'm finding out where the rage came from. I am getting better now, and feel better than I ever had in my life, because before all that rage was bottled up inside, and now it is getting released and healed. Someday I will tell my sister, because I want her to get out too, but it isn't time yet. I need to heal more.

As clearly illustrated by these accounts, many survivors HAVE remembered some things all of their life - or had indications that something traumatic happened. Others have progressed through a more gradual process of remembering. All, however, are courageously working at dealing with some of the most overwhelming abuse that a young child or adult can experience (and still survive): Ritual Abuse. I am greatly inspired by their courage and honesty in sharing here.

c. 2000 svali

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/39027 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Survivors Speak Out on Remembering: part one

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **May 7, 2000**

Survivors speak out: On Remembering

Part one: **Important: part of this article contains discussion of survivor memories. If you are a survivor of ritual abuse, please be aware that reading about it may be triggering, and do not read if you become uncomfortable** A significant aspect of the ritual abuse subject is the testimony of survivors - those who are seriously engaged in the healing process. The uninitiated reader can scarcely begin to comprehend the journey upon which many such people from around the world have embarked. They are all ages, both male and female. They are working hard at exchanging old belief systems for a different world-view and an entirely new way of life. This is the first in a series of articles based on survivor responses to a questionaire I distributed.

All quoted passages herein have the express permission of the respective survivor and, for obvious reasons, I have substituted pseudonyms in order to protect their true identities. These are, however, very real people and each has a genuine story to tell.

Memory retrieval is a strenuously debated topic. There are groups (well chronicled in the mass media) who assert that repressed memories cannot be accessed as an adult, while other groups or professionals argue that yes, it is possible and does in fact happen. I thought it wise to go to the source - the survivors themselves - and discover what their first-hand experience has been. They know best how they remembered.

My hope is that upon experiencing what is shared here, you will be inspired by their sincerity, truthfulness and conviction. These are NOT people "fabricating memories" as is sometimes alleged. Several people have always remembered at least some of their abuse. These are people whose determination to escape from an abusive environment (both receiving abuse and inflicting it upon others) has cost them dearly. They are paying a very high price for living in a culture which continues to wallow in a state of collective denial. Here, survivors speak out on how they remembered:

Joanne, a survivor of generational abuse, states: I was about 12yrs old when I realised what was going on wasn't "normal" but I never came out and said anything, I was the typical abused kid who acted up, but no-one would believe me when I first tried to say anything at the age of 16yrs. The memories, well some I have always known, generally the more traumatic the event the better recall of them that I have, although there are still some major injuries that I remember having but can't recall what lead up to the injuries, I know when and where they took place but as to what precipitated the actual injury, I don't remember.

Ellen, another survivor, did not dissociate her memories: I was in a cult which started in 1994 evolving from alleged apparitions of Mary in this area of the country. These apparitions, called Our Lady of Light, I now believe to be luciferian in nature. There was a visionary who claimed to be receiving messages from Jesus to renew the Church and the world with a particular emphasis on the priesthood. A Jesuit theologian became the spiritual director of this group through messages from Our Lady of Light. I was deeply involved in this cult from it’s inception in 1994 until I was able to escape in June of 1998. I am not DID; but was well on my way by the time I left. I remember feeling as if there were 2 different realities while I was in that cult……. I dared not remember my former life…….. but glimpses would come through at times which I would quickly shut down. It was not until after I left that cult and began healing and studying that I came to the realization of the symbolic satanic rituals involved in this cult. The understanding would come little bits at a time. The depth of the evil was so intense that I could only have tolerated little pieces at a time. If I would have come to a full understanding immediately, I do believe that I would have shattered or died. I knew that I had to keep battling for the truth. It was through the struggle to sift out the truth from the lie that I came to the understanding of the nature of the evil of the group.

Children as well as adults have remembered abuse: Vicky, a 15 year old, shares: I had bad dreams at night. I would dream that I was going somewhere and things happened, but the next morning, everything was normal. I didn't really start remembering until I went to be with my Mom, when she got out, and it was safe. They don't let you remember, you get hurt if you do. I didn't want to get hurt. I started remembering, and inside people started sharing stuff. But most of the time, I try to ignore it. I'm busy at school, and being a teenager. It happened, but I try not to think about it. Except at night I get scared because then I can't help but think about it. That's when my Mom and Dad would wake me up, they were all cold and impersonal, and get me and my brother out of bed to go to a meeting. I have trouble sleeping at night, I keep waking up all night to make sure I'm safe and at home even now.

copyright 2000 svali

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/39908 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Survivors Speak Out: on Dissociation: Part One

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **May 20, 2000**

Survivors speak out on: Dissociation

One of the most lingering effects of ritual abuse in a survivor's life is the reality of dissociation. Dissociation can take many forms, and describes a complex continuum of methods to cope psychologically with intense pain. Ritual abuse is some of the most horrendous psychological pain and trauma that a human being can face and survive. Often coping with its effects manifests in the form of PTSD (post traumatic stress disorder) and DID (dissociative identity disorder, formerly called MPD).

DID has caused some controversy in the media: is it real, does it exist? The DSM-IV (Diagnostic and Statistic Manual of Mental Disorders, fourth edition, published by the American Psychiatric Association) certainly recognizes it as a reality, and defines it as:

The presence of two or more distinct identities or personality states (each with its own relatively enduring pattern of perceiving, relating to, and thinking about the environment and self). At least two of these identities or personality states recurrently take control of the person's behavior. Inability to recall important personal information that is too extensive to be explained by ordinary forgetfulness. The disturbance is not due to the direct physiological effects of a substance (e.g., blackouts or chaotic behavior during Alcohol Intoxication) or a general medical condition (e.g., complex partial seizures). Note: In children, the symptoms are not attributable to imaginary playmates or other fantasy play. Dissociative Identity Disorder is also referred to as Multiple Personality Disorder. *Note: I find it extremely interesting that supposed "syndromes" such as "false memory" are not listed in the largest book for diagnosing psychological disorders in the world; perhaps because there is absolutely NO objective evidence for the reality of this supposed syndrome?

But what is it like to live with the lasting effects of trauma? In my survey, I asked survivors to share what the reality is like for them, as they deal with DID in their life. I believe that their insights and experiences as well as courage in coping with the effects of ritual abuse in day to day life speaks far more than any scholarly

definitions.

Ellen, a survivor of cult abuse, is not DID but describes the symptoms of PTSD that she experienced when first getting out of a cult group: When I was initially out of the cult I would feel waves of terror going through my body. There was nothing that I could do to relieve this. I just had to wait it out. These terror waves would come often during the times that the cult was “praying”. I slept very little the first year that I was out and still have trouble getting quality sleep. That first year I would doze and then awaken in terror with the programming of the cult going through my mind……the warnings of disaster and hell, etc. I would sometimes experience darkness surrounding my bed. I was terrified of the cult coming to kidnap me or to harm my daughter.

It was difficult for me to focus with all of this going on. I would have floating episodes and lose touch withwhat was happening around me. I had been programmed to never speak of the inner workings of the cult or any peculiarities with the leaders. To talk was quite a battle. Once I told someone, I would be up all night trying to work through the fear from breaking the silence which had been imposed upon me. I would often be in a state of full blown panic. I had also been programmed to “never leave my post”……..so I tended to isolate.

It was a major battle to go anywhere. When I did go anywhere, I was fearful of running into a member of the cult. I was programmed to perform ritualistic “prayers” every hour. I no longer performed these rituals; but had to work through lots of guilt feelings and the fear of satan attacking me because I did not do as told. The doubts that maybe I had left the only group to lead the Church and the world into the new era would flood me. I could almost hear the voice of the leader telling me why the bizarre things that were done in the cult were valid. I had to work hard to function since my thoughts were scattered and confused. It took a long time before I could shed some of the props of this cult……..like wearing a rosary with a crucifix around my neck. I feared that if I took them off that satan would attack.

Joanne, another survivor, describes her reaction to her recent diagnosis of DID: Just been diagnosed with it recently and still coming to terms with it, and having a lot of problems with it too, can't even admit to people who know and are aware (like psychiatrists) of what is going on. Nobody other than my therapist and psychiatrist know of my diagnosis, but will only talk about it with my therapist as I know she doesn't judge me in any way. My alters (and I hate that word too) have only just begun to make their presence before other people, usually its when I'm just with my kids or by myself (especially driving), although for a number of years I have been aware of the voices inside my head and I thought I was going crazy. Constantly asked about voices but always denied it because I felt that it was a sign of madness basically, but they were always referring to schitzophrenia voices as in auditary hallucinations and not the voices in my head.

John, a survivor from outside the United States, has some excellent things to say

about DID and how he views it: I have issues with the negative term of “dissociative identity disorder”. Firstly, dissociation is a natural and very sane and creative way of dealing with abuse and memories of abuse. It becomes a “disorder” when working people (working and middle class people) are told that they have to fit into what society expects with a work routine. It also puts a sole emphasis upon the abuse that caused and causes the dissociation. There is also an injustice as ritual abuse is generally not accepted by society. It would be better put that the abuse has stopped me from have a fully functional life.

Vicky, a fifteen year old, discusses her experiences with DID which resulted from ritual abuse: I hate that I have people inside sometimes. I wish it would all go away. At school, my friends tease me. They say, "why do you sound just like a little kid?" I joke back and tell them "Oh, you know me, I"m always acting". It's so embarrassing. My littles like stuff, though, like candy or hugs. I didn't ask for this, it just happened, and feels so unfair at times.

copyright 2000 svali

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/39909 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

On Dissociation: Part Two

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **May 21, 2000**

Survivors Speak Out: On dissociation, part two:

Frank, a male survivor of ritual abuse both in the U.S. and Canada, shares what being DID means to him: Being DID has made me feel distrustful of people at times. There was so much hurt to me, and that's why I dissociated, so my protectors don't trust a lot. It has made me hate God at times, too, since I wonder why I have to have this inside, why I have to deal with it. It isn't always easy, trust me.

One good thing: at work, I can work longer and harder than most people, because there are more of me! I work outside in the hot sun, so that helps. Also, I have lots of interests, more than you would expect, since so many inside people like different things. It's never boring, never, inside. I have always had a valley inside, since I was little, peopled with animals, dragons, and people that comforted me when I was going through the worst times.The animals inside still have trouble believeing that they are part of a human being; they protected me through so much that it was easier pretending that I was an animal than a person.

Abigail, a survivor of ritual abuse, discusses the effects of being DID in her life: We were preliminary diagnosed with DID in 1993 and then officially in 1995. Up until diagnosis, nothing made much sense. We would have what we called circle days where you start your day doing something and at the end of the day you're right back where you started. We suffered more from the lack of knowledge and understanding and were the target of much verbal abuse, loss of friends, lacked defenses against abuse to even recognize it, extremely low self esteem, couldn't account for time or things said or done or not done and suffered much verbal degredation and recrimination for 'mistakes'. What couldn't be explained was taken on as something that was our fault.

After the diagnosis, alot of this has remained the same except, now I recognize abuse and will fight to get to the position to stand up against it. When I've lost time, etc. internal communication helps me put the pieces together. We (me and my others) don't regularly work cooperatively together but we do more of that now and days go much smoother for the most part. Circle days are becoming rarer,

especially as integration takes place. Self esteem is at a better level but not where it needs to be to be called healthy...but it's getting there.

Strategies to cope/help are making sure I listen to my others and communicate with them. Making time for my others to orient with the present and find or fulfill a dream of theirs before they integrate. Notes and keeping calendars especially. I keep a calendar on the wall in my room...those write on kinds. I keep a small calendar with me to write appointments in when I'm at therapy, drs. etc. I keep an organizer to keep track of everything, calendar, lists, phone numbers, expenses, etc. and I keep a calendar and note pad in my car. At the end of the day or beginning of the day, I review all these to update them and then list out what my day holds even to the most minute detail such as 6am - take a shower.

My struggles are identifying boundaries and maintaining them. I have a very demanding husband and very demanding children who are adults but living at home. I struggle with the perception of everything having to be perfect and perfectly done because I fear punishment, rejection, verbal abuse, emotional detachment, etc. from others. I'm like a tightly wound clock just about every day. I can't think of any joys being DID outside of finding people through the internet that are like me and we can share and identify with each other, encouraging each other as we heal. Humor? Well after my diagnosis and telling my husband and kids about it and what it means. About a year later, my son was cleaning his closet and decided that he didn't have enough room, nor did he want any of his friends to see that he had a couple of suits in his closet. So he put them in mine. Learning some of the signs of multiplicity, varying clothes being one of them, you can imagine my expression and reaction at finding a couple of men's suits in my closet! I was completely flabbergasted! My son, seeing my distress, quickly told me what he had done and why they were there. That provided some relief except for a male alter about my son's size took a real liking to the suits, shoes included. I have more female alters so out in public, we over power his desire so we don't look completely out of whack. :o)

Svali, a survivor of ritual abuse, discusses her DID: I have been working hard to bring everyone together. I admire what my people took for me so much. If they hadn't been there, I would never have survived, I would be a blithering idiot or psychotic. I have told them thank you many many times. It's hard, though, when parts who were so invested in the cult, in working for them and thought they had moved up the ladder, got pissed at me for leaving. Or when untrusting parts try to sabotage therapy, or friendships, because some of them to this day don't trust ANYONE and probably never will. I am co-conscious with most, if not all, of them, though, and they cooperate so I can work and be a Mom. I think some of them are really cool, especially Brogan. He's my favorite, he has an Irish accent and is really smart and helps me out if I need good advice. It's neat to be able to ask myself for advice when I need it, and get an answer!

Not all survivors of ritual abuse dissociate or become DID. In response to the

question "If present, how has dissociation affected you" Eric responds: N/A. Although the cracks are there, I never fragmented in a significant way.

Ian, an eleven year old survivor of ritual abuse, shares a younger perspective: My protectors are cool. When I was in California, Jason, one of my inside people who was taught to fight by the cult, could beat ANYONE in a fight. I got into lots of fights at school, because if someone teased me or upset me, Jason would come out. Now, I don't fight as much, I get along with people better. I'm the one who goes to school and does stuff, and he doesn't have to step in for me. But I worry that I'm getting weaker, that I can't fight as good since he doesn't come out as much. I also have someone inside, Mei, who can do karate. It is awesome when he comes out, because I never learned it, but he sure does. He won't let anyone ever beat me up.

copywrite 2000 by svali

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/41699 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

How the Cult Programs People

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **June 15, 2000**

How the Cult Programs People Part one

This article, consistent with others I have written, is a very difficult one personally. Why? Because it touches on some of the things that I am most ashamed of in my own life. I used to be a cult programmer, or "trainer" as they are called, and here I will share some of what I did or witnessed while in that role. I also went through these things as a child, so this article is also quite autobiographical as well. Autobiography can be a moment of boasting, of quiet joy, or intense pain. Mine falls in the latter category, to say the least. But I am hoping with all of my heart that sharing my pain will help others avoid this pain, or will help society better understand what survivors go through.

This article will in no means be a complete treatment of the subject. Cult programming is a complex subject, one that would fill volumes and volumes if dealt with beyond a surface description. Also, I can only write from my own experiences with the Illuminati, which is one of several groups operating today, and about the techniques used in the Washington, DC area and in San Diego, Ca. Other localities might use very different techniques.

This article does NOT take the place of advice from a qualified therapist, and is meant to be informative only. If you are a survivor of cult abuse, please be aware that this article and the subject it covers could be extremely triggering, and keep yourself safe.

Why does the cult train or program people? In earlier articles, I have mentioned the goals they have of:

making money

secrecy

unquestioning loyalty in their members

Programming, or training, is one method that the cult has found that will ensure that these goals are met. In the Illuminati, the programmers are called "trainers" because the belief is that they are not abusing, but "training" the future generation. The trainers actually believe that they are doing a good thing, "strengthening" the children, helping them to get in touch with their "potential."

Some of these methods have been around for hundreds, perhaps thousands of years. I will divide cult programming into five major categories, and address each one separately:

1. training to be silent

2. training to be strong

3. training to be loyal

4. training for jobs in the group

5. spiritual training

The first category, training to be silent, begins at a very young age, frequently preverbal. This is accomplished in several ways, depending upon the child and the trainer, and can include:

Being asked after a ceremony what the child saw and heard. The very young child may just say "bad things", and is punished severely and brutally, and told that no, they didn't really see those things. This is repeated at frequent intervals, until the child learns to block the ceremonies. Often, a "protector" or "guardian" alter will be created from the abuse, whose job is to ensure that the child will not remember what is seen. This protector is told that if the child does remember, brutal punishment will follow.

Another method involves electroshocking the child, and placing them into a deep hypnotic trance, where they are told that they will not remember what they have seen or heard, that it is all "just a bad dream." The child WANTS to forget, and will be eager to agree.

Psychological torture may be used: mock burials, being placed in cages, abandonment, being hung over a bridge, with the child later being "rescued" and told that if they ever tell, they will be returned to the punishment.

Being forced to watch mock or real punishment or killing of a traitor who "told". When I was four years old, I was forced to watch a woman be skinned alive. Her crime: she disclosed to an outside person "family business". Talking to those

outside the group is considered one of the worst crimes or betrayals a person can commit. A "traitor's death" is one of the most horrifying imaginable, and will vary from crucifixion upside down, to other gruesome scenarios. Young children do not forget seeing these things, and they become convinced that not disclosing is the safest way to continue living.

These set ups are done to ensure that a young child will not disclose the criminal activities that they are seeing in the course of group activites, or even as an adult, when they are more actively engaged in them.

Another set up also is frequently done: The "no one will believe you scenario" (this is usually done with school age children). The child is told repeatedly that even if they DO disclose that no one will believe them. The child is taken by a mental hospital, or even taken to visit an inmate briefly. Later, the child is told that people who disclose are considered "crazy" and sent to institutions, where they are punished severely and can never leave. These lies are told to reinforce once again the importance of not telling.

Another set up may include the "everyone is part of it" set up. The child is told that actually, everyone is secretly part of the group, but people are just good pretenders during the daytime. The child will be taken to dinner at a member's house, where everyone acts normal, then later a ritual or ceremony follows. The child will then believe that there is no escape, since everyone is part of the group. Since most of the adults close to his/her parents are part of the group, there is no reason to question the logic of what they are told.

The set ups and psychological conditioning to not tell are endless, limited only by the cruel creativity of the adults around the child.

Training to be strong:

This type of training will also begin at a very young age, often in the toddler years. The child is put through a series of conditioning exercises whose goals are to: increase the pain threshold increase physical fitness increase dissociative ability force quick memorization of material (school age child) create fear and the desire to please

These exercise might include: mock military training, with marches, and playing "prisoner and guard"; shocking the child; physical abuse and torture, drugging the child or adult; placing the child into cages, where they are shocked; deprivation of food, water, or sleep; abandonment for varying amounts of time; forcing the child to watch brutalities and the abuse of others. The child is taught to be completely silent during the above; to endure it without question. If the child screams, they are punished extremely, and told that this is "weakness". The child is taught to fear their own emotions, since they are quickly and mercilessly punished for expressing

them. The scenes go on and on, the above are just a few methods used.

Training to be loyal

The third area of training encompasses a broad area of behaviour. Loyalty involves agreement with the group, espousing its doctrines and beliefs. This training is at times more subtle, but it also is one of the most powerful pulls to the group.

Adults in the group model complete loyalty to their children. Getting out, leaving, or questioning the group's beliefs are rarely or never seen, and the retaliation for questioning those in authority is quick and brutal. A person seen questioning the rightness of things, or balking at doing their job might be sent in for "retraining", ie being shocked and tortured back into submission.

But often adults often believe the goals of the group are GOOD. They are convinced that they are helping the children, and in classes children are taught why these beliefs are good; about the coming agenda for the group, where they will be the new leaders. Much discussion of the time when the group will "rule the world" is done, to show that they are actually ushering in a new order, when things will be "better for all."

Status and leadership are held out as carrots to group members to work harder and acheive. The rewards of leadership, of moving up, are real, and every member tries to advance themselves. Being higher means less abuse, being able to order others around, and more control in a life that has had precious little control.

Set ups, where a child is allowed to sit in a leader's seat, and is told that one day they, too, will lead, are often done, to increase the loyalty to the group. Awards ceremonies, where those who do well receive badges, jewels, or other rewards in front of others, are frequently done. A child who works hard, who performs well, is praised and allowed to join the adults for coffee or a meal, while the other children look enviously on.

As the child progresses through the system, they do move higher, since adults are always higher than a young child. Now the child who is growing older can boss the younger children, can tell them what to do, can even abuse them with the approval of the adults around. Being very young means being very abused and wounded in these groups; growing older means the chance to finally act out on the rage the abuse has caused. The child begins to identify with the abusing adults, since they are hurt less, and becomes invested in a cult identity as a perpetrator. This is strongly encouraged, as long as the perpetration is not directed at members older or higher than the child or teen.

This locks the child in, as having become "one of them", like them, and the child is bonded to the group by his/her own guilt and shame, as well as the need for outlets

for rage and pain that the group allows. The child may feel ambivalence, but also extreme loyalty.

The group or trainer will also tell the child that they are the only ones that really know the child, having seen them act out. That they are the only ones who could see this, and still love them, that no one loves them the way "family" does. The child is bombarded with messages that the group truly accepts them, all of them, knowing the worst about them, to cement the loyalty. The group uses sophisticated techniques based on behavioural psychology to ensure that the child/teen/adult will not even consider leaving the group.

Another form of loyalty programming is "specialness programming". This is where the child is told by the adults or trainer that: they are "high", hidden royalty, or a "hidden" or "adopted" member of a high family line. The child may be told that they will be a world leader who is hidden for now; a special CIA agent, or "one in a thousand, a wunderkind" who will lead as an adult. They may be told that there are very few like them; that no one else can fill their special role; that they are of a special bloodline that is unbroken for thousands of years. This is to increase the child's loyalty to the group. If the child believes that they are merely waiting now for the revealing of their "true, elevated status" one day, they will be much more likely to develop loyalty bonds to the group. This is one of the cruelest tricks the group plays on children, since they have deprived them of normal love and caring, and instead replace it with a false sense of "specialness" or status. Very few survivors getting out of these groups believe that they were low; almost all believe that they were high, or were adopted, but their real family is high, for this reason. This was done to me as well, and as an adult, when I had to tell lies like this to children, I became more and more disillusioned with the group, one of many reasons I finally chose to leave it. I could no longer bear to listen to other trainers and scientists laughing about the gullibility of the people they worked with. I had once been a child, eager to please, and gullible myself. I had believed the lies, and it was a rude awakening to find out I was NOT adopted from a royal line, as I had been told. That I had been manipulated and deceived intentionally to increase my loyalty to the group.

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/41700 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

How the Cult Programs People: Part Two

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **June 16, 2000**

Part Two

Training for jobs in the cult

The fourth category of training or programming is towards doing a job in the cult. Each person has a specific job(s) that they are given, from earliest childhood on in the Illuminati. Often, the child is tested at intervals during their early years for aptitude and ability. The parent's status, as well as the child's intelligence and dissociative ability, will also factor in to the final role. Jobs in the cult might include, but are not limited to:

cleaners (clean up after ceremonies, set up)

spiritual (lead meetings, high priest or priestess, or acolytes)

punishers (punish members who are out of line or make mistakes)

scholars (learn cult history, ancient languages, do readings and history set ups)

prostitutes

couriers

assassins

trainers

scientists (trained in behavioural sciences)

doctors, nurses, medical personell

military leader (for military exercises)

The list goes on and on. The Illuminati are a complex group, with interwoven roles. The amount of training the child will need for their adult role will often depend upon the complexity of the final job. Sometimes, jobs overlap, or a person will be cross-trained for several. A child raised with child pornography may as an adult be taught to run a video camera, for example. A nurse or doctor may also help as a trainer, or learn sciences. A person trained as a military leader in the group will frequently also have assassin training (MK-ULTRA) as well.

These jobs are taught using operant conditioning principles from early childhood on. The child is shown how the role is done by an adult or older teen, ie "modeling" the behaviour is done. The child will also see the jobs done in the course of being part of the group. After the behaviour is modeled, the child is told that they will be learning it. Clear directions on what is expected are given. The job is broken down into steps, and each step is put in sequentially. The child may be shocked, or tortured, to create a "blank state" or tabula erasa personality who will do anything asked of them. Then, the behaviour is elicited. If the child does well, they are praised and petted. If they do not, they are punished severely. The child learns it is much less painful to demonstrate the asked for behaviour. Afterwards, once the behaviour is shown, the trainer "bonds" with the child, praising them, telling them how valueable they are, and what a wonderful job they are doing for "family". The child is given the validation and caring that they so desperately crave, and a trauma bond is created. The personality state in the child will WANT to do well, it has bonded with the trainer or adult, and seeks approval again and again. This bond will last into adulthood, and often the personality states that seek approval will stay in a young state inside of an adult body. After the "job" is done, they will come out and still ask for approval at times. Another reward for the adult will be perceived moving up in status if they do well.

Spiritual Training

At its foundation, the Illuminati are an intensely spiritual group. They worship ancient deities including those of Babylon and Assyria (Baal and Ashtoth) and of Egypt (Ra, Horus, Isis, etc.). They believe that the spiritual is the root that feeds its many manifestations today. Because of this, all children will undergo some form of spiritual training, or programming. This is to ensure their bonding to the group as well as coerce or frighten them into fearing leaving.

Spiritual programming begins with the first ceremony that an infant is taken to, when they are dedicated to a deity, or even prenatally, when the fetus may be dedicated in utero to the "mother of heaven" or other deities. The young toddler's world will include seeing the adults around him/her going to ceremonies, and they will be forced to imitate the activities they see.

There may be blood baptisms, using animals. There will be many, many dedications and rites, including the passing on of familial spirits from mother or

father or grandparent, to the young child. These can be intensely frightening experiences. I do not want to argue the existence of the demonic here, but I will say that the group certainly does believe it is real, and that the manisfestations seen at these rites go beyond that which can be explained scientifically or rationally. As a child, I believed intensely that the demonic was real, as did all of the adults around me.

There will be ceremonies in which the demonic is invoked, and manifestations of power, including channeling, foretelling, or psychic slaying of animals. Objects may be moved, or a tree felled, using psychic abilities/demonic help. Adults will be involved in power battles. "Reading" people will be done. And in all training/ programming sessions, the demonic will be invoked to help the trainer, to guide them, or to give energy to the programming being done. Often, before important programming sessions, trainers will perform a ceremony asking for demonic aide.

The child will be told that the demonic has been placed within them, and that if they ever try to leave, or break the programming, the demonic will "kill them." The terrified child believes this. "Psychic surgery" may be done, where an "eye" is placed in the abdomen, and the child is told that the "eye" can see them wherever they go, and will tell them if the child tries to escape or questions the group. Implants may be placed, small thin metal rods, used to call up demonic forces. If the person tries to leave, or break programming, the implants are to cause intense pain or torment.

A child will be forced to participate in rites, including the mutilation or killing of animals or even an infant (although some of these are set ups, using a corpse, as mentioned in a previous article). Visits to sacred groves or holy areas may occur, where statues to the deities are garlanded with flowers and robed followers chant before a rite.

In some groups, the child will be turned against Christianity with purposeful programming. Since Christianity is the antithesis of the dark occult practices of the Illuminati, they often will want their members to be unable to reach out for the hope that it offers. Special sessions may include torturing a child. Often, the child will cry out for help, or to God. At that point, the programmer will tell the child, "God has abandoned you, He could never love you, that is why you are being hurt. If He was so powerful, He could stop this." They will even ask the child to ask God to stop it. The child will, and then the trainer will hurt the child more. This will create a deep sense of hopelessness and despair in the child. He or she will truly believe they have been abandoned by God, that He has a deaf ears to their call for help.

The child may be tortured or shocked when the name "Jesus" is said, to create a barrier to hearing His name. Hymns may be used in sessions, to create aversion.

Spiritual programming will cover a variety of areas. I have only briefly covered

some here.

This has been an overview of some of the areas that the cult, specifically the Illuminati, program people in. It is by no means all-inclusive, and there will be many, many variations in specific techniques used. Also, I am sure that different groups use different methods. If a survivor has memories that are different from what I have described here, they should believe their own memories. I am only sharing what I do remember about the Illuminati, the specific group that I was associated with, in the Washington, DC and the San Diego, Ca. areas from 1957 until 1995. My hope is that this article will help those who work with survivors, or who wish to know more about how these groups operate, understand more about them. That it will increase compassion for the immense amount of suffering that a member of these groups undergoes and for the struggle, once they leave, to overcome years of conditioning from infancy on. It takes tremendous courage to leave such a group, to say "no" to the pull of all the person has known, to decide to question values that lay unquestioned for years. To look at the pain underlying the programming, and to grieve over the manipulations and betrayals that have occurred from infancy on.

copyright 2000 svali

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/42927 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Breaking Free of the Cult

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **July 2, 2000**

Breaking Free of the Cult

One of the most important but also one of the most difficult steps that a survivor of generational cult abuse can make is the decision to leave the group that they were raised in.

Those who are naive, or don't understand the nature of being raised in a group may wonder, "Why would it be hard to leave abusers? Wouldn't a person WANT to get away?" The reality is a little more complicated, and my hope is that this article will help both survivors, therapists, and support people as well as those who wish to understand ritual abuse have a better idea of the issues that survivors getting out face, as well as some helpful ideas on safety.

BARRIERS TO GETTING OUT:

I want to address these first. This is not to be discouraging, but to help identify the issues involved. If a person understands the obstacles to leaving, they can then begin developing a plan to overcome these problems.

Paramount is PERSONAL SAFETY. Threats against those who try to leave are real, and the person has been conditioned by witnessing the punishment of those who have tried to leave (see my article on how the cult programs people for more info); or even punishment for questioning the group or its leader. The psychological intimidation of a lifetime is real, and the person must be assured of physical safety before they will consider leaving a group that could literally brutally punish them (or worse) for attempting to leave.

It is very, very difficult to consider leaving, or worse yet, to discuss leaving in therapy, then have reporter alters "telling on" the person to the group leaders. This happened to me in San Diego, and the results were devastating. My inside parts who wanted to get out, who were working hard in therapy, were being physically brutalized at night to punish them for talking and remembering. This created a great deal of what therapists call "intrasystem conflict" , to put it mildly. Some parts became hostile at other parts who wanted to leave, and they began punishing them

as well. In addition, suicide commands were put in by the head trainer.

The reality is that if a person truly wants to break free, they may become "expendable" in the eyes of the cult, or considered a security risk, and will often be told to suicide. In breaking free, a survivor and their support system needs to be aware of these realities. To not be aware that this is/could be happening will cause therapy to be sabotaged.

Even if the person finds physical safety, other issues need to be addressed as well.

One is ISOLATION. Often in transgenerational groups, the survivor's entire family of origin, as well as their closest friends, and spouse will be part of the group (the Illuminati arrange almost 100% of their marriages, I have never personally known of a person in the group whose spouse was not also involved, as well as the children.) These members of the immediate family will be the ones most likely to reaccess the survivor. I will give a personal example, again.

When I lived in San Diego, I was in therapy for DID. All that I remembered at the time was a period of three years of ritual abuse with my father and his mother. I thought my mother "rescued" me from him when she divorced him. But my therapy was at a standstill. The more I remembered, the WORSE I became, and decompensated. I would go to therapy, talk, try to help my inside people, then would feel immense panic and fear, as well as suicidal urges afterwards.

It wasn't until later that I learned that my mother was my cult trainer the first five years of my life; that my husband was taking me back to cult meetings where I was severely punished and programmed to NOT tell in therapy. Once I had physical safety, and broke off contact with cult members, I immediately began stabilizing psychologically. But the price was high. My husband divorced me when I told him I remembered; I told him his cult name, mine and the children's, thinking he, too would want to get out. Instead, I lost custody of my two children in a long and expensive court battle with a justice system whose attitude was that ritual abuse was a delusion. (Fortunately, 1 1/2 years ago, my ex decided to leave the group, in part because of seeing me alive and well and working full time; and I now have full custody of my children, who are doing well in therapy).

I am sharing this to help people be aware that the price of leaving a transgenerational group may include (although each situation is different):

giving up contact with members of family of origin

giving up contact with close friends (the survivor has often been surrounded by cult members in their social group, including at church; my five closest friends were all members of the Illuminati and I had no idea). Often "cult twins" are best friends in day time life

learning that a spouse and children are all members

The enormous psychological pain of giving up these relationships will often make it difficult for the survivor, but if they continue in them, the chances of being reaccessed are great. MOST REACCESSING OF THE SURVIVOR COMES FROM MEMBERS OF THEIR IMMEDIATE FAMILY. This is one of the hardest tasks for the survivor to attempt as he or she learns good boundaries. What those boundaries need to be will differ from person to person, and their individual situation.

Another real, and powerful pull back to the cult, will come from the perception that NEEDS inside the person are being met by the group. The person will likely be dissociative, if they have been raised in a transgenerational group, and they will often have alters inside who have never known or experienced the abuse, who will be considered "high alters" inside.These part's reality is that they were praised and told that they were special, often unaware or not caring that other alters inside endured the abuse. These higher alters may identify strongly with their perps and are often the alters that want recontact with the group and help drive internal recontact programming.

Frequently, when a person leaves a cult group, there is a real period of grieving. Social relations have been changed. Alters with special needs will feel that their needs are no longer being met, whether for belonging, for sexual activity, for power, or other personal agendas. The survivor needs to recognize this reality. A person will often unconsciously recontact a group if they believe that deep needs are being met by this group. Teaching themselves to meet their needs in a healthy and appropriate way will take time and patience, working with a qualified safe therapist who understands ritual abuse.

There may be PROGRAMMING to recontact the group. The survivor will need to identify if this is present, and take steps with the help of their therapist and support system to deactivate it.

IDEAS ON BREAKING FREE

While breaking free can be difficult, as I have discussed above, it is possible to escape a cult group and maintain personal safety. I will share from both my personal experience and that of other survivors things which have proven helpful in breaking free.

1. Safe outside accountability:

If the person attempting to break free can live with someone who is NOT a member of the group, who is a safe person, that will increase their own personal safety

exponentially. Cult members from groups such as the Illuminati will hesitate to harrass or try to access someone while they are with a safe person, one who is not dissociative. One of the most dangerous set ups is when a survivor is living alone, or in isolation, or if they talk long walks at night or in areas where there are no people around. Abductions, kidnappings, or reaccessing may occur in these situations. The more safe outside accountability the survivor sets up, the less chance that this will occur. This could mean a safe roomate who is not dissociative; staying with members of a church, finding a safe house, or even a women's shelter (although there are reports that some shelters and safe houses are being infiltrated by cult members; the survivor needs to be cautious in where they go and whom they trust). One grievous problem today is the relative lack of safe houses for people trying to break free of the cult.

One precaution: often survivors will quickly make friends with other survivors, since they feel isolated and alone without the cult group. The survivor may want to exercise caution about rushing into friendships, since many survivors, especially at the beginning of their therapeutic process, may still be in contact with a cult group. Each person will need to make decisions on an individual basis in this area to maintain safety.

2. A good therapist:

There are excellent therapists who specialize in working with ritual abuse. While qualifications among therapists will vary, a survivor can try locating one by contacting reputable people in the field for referrals, by contacting the ISSD (link is on the welcome page for my articles), or by referral from people the survivor trusts. Not all therapists who advertise that they work with DID are safe, but if the survivor checks out references and asks careful questions, their chances of finding a good therapist will be higher. I have personally had therapists who worked with DID who ranged from : a pastor in San Diego who told me he could "integrate me" in 3 months if I had enough faith (this did NOT happen and was completely unrealistic); a therapist who was the referral for a national christian counseling group for DID who told me that her brother had tortured her as a child, and that I was not DID because she, the therapist, often "lost time" and went through personality changes and SHE wasn't DID (I stopped seeing her after two visits); a therapist associated with a ritual abuse and trauma program who was very knowledgeable, compassionate, and helpful. The last one, needless to say, was the only helpful one in my healing process! A good therapist will be knowledgeable about DID and ritual abuse; will BELIEVE the survivor and not discount memories shared; will help the survivor with achieving inter-system communication; and will have good boundaries. A therapist like this is well worth the time and effort it will take to locate, and can help the survivor immensely in the process of breaking free of cult control.

3. Stopping telephone access:

The telephone is one of the first avenues used to access someone trying to leave the cult. Hang up calls; calls with tones played, or with a tape or hidden message, will be used. Also, survivors often have recontact programming to phone their trainer or family members. One way to deal with this: take the telephone and lock it in the trunk of the car. This way, if a part of the survivor tries to get up in the middle of the night and make a phone call, they will have to find the car keys; unlock the trunk, plug the phone in,and make the call. Hopefully, the survivor will have time to "switch out" another part who will stop the call, especially as they work in therapy to block cult access.

Use of caller i.d.; answering services, or an answering machine (calls can be checked with a therapist or support person present in case an access message is left) can also help prevent phone access. Eventually, the survivor will find the parts inside with a vested interest in recontact, and can negotiate with them not to call or recontact. An unlisted phone number may help for a short period of time. Phone numbers can also be blocked to prevent calls from certain numbers, such as those of known perps.

4. Alarm systems:

Some survivors will have alarm systems to prevent unauthorized entry into their home. Again, this is best combined with a safe living situation, as described above. These alarm systems can also be coded by an outside safe person so that the survivor themself cannot decode it if internal parts try to leave in the middle of the night.

5. Share info with safe outsiders:

This could be a lock box with names of perps, and information, which the safe person will distribute if the survivor is harmed or access is attempted. The survivor can then mail a letter to this effect to known perps, to help prevent accessing or abducting of the survivor.

6. Go public

Some survivors have chosen to go public to maintain safety. The thought is that if they are harmed, they have shared enough info that an investigation will be done into the causes, and the cult group will risk further exposure, which they hate. Sharing information with law enforcement, with legal advisors, therapists, social workers, and child protective services can all also help maintain safety, IF the law enforcement officers, etc. are not members of the group. The problem here is that at times, cult members will infiltrate legal and law enforcement organizations, even CPS, to prevent cult members from escaping. The survivor will need to go to reputable, known safe people, if they choose to go this route.

7. Work on undoing recontact programming

This will take time, with a qualified therapist. It means looking at the trauma that placed the programming in, a difficult task psychologically. It will also mean addressing the powerful needs addressed above as well, and grieving when contact with cult members is stopped.

8. Prayer support

As a Christian, I believe that this can be a survivor's strongest protection. A strong, supportive faith system, and prayers for safety can protect the survivor during the spiritually and emotionally trying times while breaking free of the cult.

These are just a few ideas on breaking free. Many, many survivors have broken free, and have used their creativity and strength, as well as the help of noncult members who wish to help, to maintain safety. My hope is that this article will be a beginning place for both survivors and their support people and therapists to look at maintaining safety. I welcome any comments or andecotes on ideas that other survivors and support people have found for maintaining safety.

copyright 2000 svali

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/43922 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

A Survivor's Testimony: article by Kim Campbell

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **July 16, 2000**

I wanted to share an article that I believe is both inspiring and courageous, by someone who is in the process of healing from ritual abuse. This article is being reprinted here with the permission of the author, Kim Campbell. My hope is that it will help educate as well as give hope to others. svali

Note: This article contains discussion of ritual abuse and Christianity.

April 1999

A CASE REPORT OF DELIVERANCE

My name is Kim Campbell. I am a forty-nine year old man living in Tulsa, Oklahoma. I am happily married; I practice medicine as a Physicians Assistant, and I am a member of Morning Star Testimony Church, Tulsa. Over the past several years, I have also learned how very true it is that I am a Christian by choice.

In April 1993, I learned that I was DID. I learned almost immediately that I was born into a satanic family and was raised in the culture known as SRA. To say the least, my deliverance from this culture was a major test in my life. The past several years have been difficult, but I believe I was substantially resolved about three years ago. But the crisis of my life has marked the beginning of an authentic faith in Jesus Christ as Redeemer and Lord of my life, something I have deeply desired but that has eluded me all my life.

This short essay is my testimony, which I first wrote in 1995. I want this to be an instructive piece for Shield of Faith Ministry of Minneapolis, who has invited me to speak and share with them this coming May. I, most of all, offer this as a testimony of the Lord God's love for me and for all the rest of the Body of His Son. I am utterly amazed at Him - Father, Son, and Holy Spirit - and His rightful commitment to His own glory as God, a glory that He delights to share with me as His son. Me, of all people!! Amazing grace, indeed.

In my satanic ancestry, I came from two families. My public family were hardy West Texans who taught me how to tie my shoes, do arithmetic, be polite - all the normal

things most parents do for their children. A knowledgeable observer would have seen the depression, the switching, and the disordered attachment behaviors, but in a way I was fortunate. I escaped being misdiagnosed as ADD and placed on Ritalin. For all appearances, I was a typical (although very odd) child.

However, beneath this public veneer, I lived as a direct descendant of a very old culture, which has survived in an underground form for several thousand years, a culture as old as mankind itself. In this culture, people worship satan as god, and the form of the worship and the entire lifestyle, as old as it is, is steeped in deep violence. As a participant in this culture, I was exposed to every abuse, trauma, and demonization imaginable within satanism. The culture is unbelievably and ingeniously evil; virtually everything about this culture is humanly damaging. And I responded in the same way children do (and would) in this culture. I dissociated.

Over the course of my life I experienced trauma as an infant to sharpen my dissociative potential, coerced violence both as victim and perpetrator, high-tech medically-based mind control programming here in the US, often in government facilities and clinics, and at the Tavistock Institute in the UK, and participation (via indoctrination into the Kaballa, culminating in a series of occult initiations) into the oldest, most pristine form of satanism, the old Sumero-Akkadian Babylonian mystery religion. Layer after layer, all these disaggregated identities were built and crafted to become my personality.

Inherent in this culture is the presence and power of demonic spirits, and they became an integral part of my life and even my being. In a culture addicted to power, demonic spirits offered the ultimate power trip. If, in American culture, people are addicted to comfort, status, and prestige, in satanic culture, people are addicted to demonic power.

Satanism has pervaded western civilization. Satanism is the foundation of all we would regard today as paganism in ancient and contemporary forms. It has been growing for thousands of years, quietly weaving its way through the very fabric of the culture and the power structures of the nations in the West. It has adherents in all walks of life, in all incomes, and all social strata. It has exerted a profound influence on the intellectual life of the west for the past several hundred years. Their thoughts and writings have shaped Western civilization from the Greek philosophers through Augustine, Aquinas, the christian mystics of the thirteenth century, and much of the charismatic movement of today. Descartes, Spinoza, Kant, the philosophers of the Enlightenment. and many others arose from satanic culture. Polynesian religion, animism, spiritism, American Indian religion, Mayan and Incan culture, ancient Egyptian culture, and Greek religion all grew out of satanism. To think that satanic culture is only about abuse is a fundamental misunderstanding of satanism and the role of dissociation in human history. Satanism has influenced politics, economics, art and music, through the spiritual-psychological process called dissociation, and dissociation is as old as human culture itself.

This was the culture in which I was born and raised. And to say the least, this culture is antithetical to the Kingdom of God, and I was born into the ongoing battle between these two cultures. Even though I was also a functioning satanist, I was also a seminary graduate (M. Div. 1976). While professing to be Christian, and my public life showed the discordance of living in irreconcilable cultures. My love for the Lord was hollow, as I wanted to love Him and be loved by Him deeply, but I was unable to resolve my fears and doubts as to His existence and character. While my public life was filled with outward relative success, my spiritual and interpersonal life was marred with failure.

The emotional shock of learning of my SRA/DID was profound, but it launched me on a path which I could only call discipleship. For the first time in my life, being and becoming the Christian I wanted to be, took first priority in my life. It would be very hard, very difficult work, but I knew that getting free of the occult and the dissociation was my work as a disciple of Jesus Christ and that I would have to do it as a Christian. If I were to rely on the even best methods and techniques of psychology or psychiatry, neither I nor a traditional therapist would have enough money or lifetimes to work through this mess. Even today I have yet to know of a traditional approach penetrating the deeper cores of an SRA personality. If I were to be free, I had no choice to be free except by Jesus Christ.

Because of this, I took my discipleship with Him extremely seriously. Time after time He called me to holiness and insisted on the power of His love - through the forgiveness in His Son - to deliver me from the power of sin. Day after day, after work and in lieu of "living normally", I stayed home to read and pray, to exorcize demons and reclaim my humanity, to communicate and fuse with accessible self-states, and afterwards come to terms with the reality of my life. I read and went to conferences to learn all I could about MPD, ritual abuse, and the work of healing, so I could apply this to my own deliverance. I went to Church to hear from the Lord, since my Father chose to use "the folly of preaching" as the ultimate in cognitive restructuring. I went to corporate prayer where the presence and the power of the Lord worked visible miracles in my and many other peoples' lives. And I scrutinized my entire life in the light of the Living Word of God. Every sin, whether from my conscious self or as passive influence from other self-states, was rigorously subjected to the sanctifying work of the Lord. After all, SRA/DID is sin par excellence, and as a sinner, I needed repentance and forgiveness most of all. As it turns out for me, discipleship has been deliverance.

When I reached an impasse or when the obstacles were too difficult for me, I would schedule a session with my pastor, Doug Riggs, and the power and love of the Lord God would come through this man. Rather than do endless interviews with alters or focus on abreactive work, the Lord would lead us on deep penetrating raids down through my layers into the primal events of my personality. The work consisted of vigorous exorcism, prayer for my Father to connect me with my other self-states, and a Biblical existential counseling about the impact of SRA on my life

in the light of the Person of Jesus Christ. Through my pastor, the Lord could take me far deeper than I could go on my own. Through him, He could speak His specific, contemporary word of grace to me as a dissociated man. And through his voice and touch, my Father could be real to me. Many times the Lord gave my pastor knowledge or strategy that was essential in resolving those crises. The Lord works though people like this (and many other great people in the Body of Christ) for people like me. The Lord is not in the least intimidated by darkness; after all the Gospel is that He loved me while I was still in darkness. The Lord has been doing all this in the setting of a small, apparently insignificant local Church of thirty or forty people (including children), most of whom are SRA or at least dissociative. We had come together to live in such a way as to hasten the Lord's coming for His Bride, but we also had been constituted in the occult to frustrate the will of God for the Church and bring in the antichrist instead. As Christians we have prayed for each other, counseled each other, and admonished each other, and as satanists, we have controlled and done violence to each other. In “working out our salvation with fear and trembling”, many times we have been forced by the Living Word of God to remove planks from our own eyes while we fumbled to remove cinders from each other's eyes. All this is the Lord's refining us into a repentant people. The Living Christ has worked in this Body Life, just like pre-crucifixion Capernaum or post-Pentecost Corinth.

So the Lord worked in the life of one of His disciples. Bit by bit, my heavenly Father was progressively delivering me, literally, from the moral and demonic power of sin by the person of His Son, the Risen, Living Jesus of Nazareth. All through the experience, I was becoming astounded at the grace and power of God through His Son.

After eighteen hard months of work and counseling, the multiplicity persisted. The Lord had told us to be bold. Both in what I read and in what I heard, I realized that my biggest obstacle was myself, not just the hidden internal me but the conscious external me. Frankly, I was afraid to learn how bad I had been and perhaps still could be. So the Lord impressed me to confront those very things about myself that I feared the most.

It was worse than I had thought.

My concept of SRA was that insane or frankly evil people took nice, good children and turned them into satanists. I was wrong. Hiding under the surface layer that we had labored eighteen months to dismantle was the real, genuine core of my humanity as a satanist. The truth was that the defining reality of my childhood (perhaps fifty percent of my preschool waking hours) was being incested and indoctrinated into a Sodom and Gommorah culture within a brick West Texas two bedroom house; these aspects of myself had little need to be abused in ritual, as I already was living, growing, and worshiping in the 'normal' of an occult pagan culture. All the splits and experiences I had recalled, renounced, and reconciled up to that point in the first eighteen months were but a window dressing - a protective,

therapy-defeating maze to protect this central, substantial aspect of my self. I had stepped into the living reality of my generational core of evil. It was more than merely a demonic deposit for me; it was my very world. In my being I was an historical descendant and perpetuator of my ancestors' incest, violence, and idolatry. And as such I was as intensely demonized as the worst of Canaanites.

The Lord's grace has been an amazing thing. Whether or not anyone else does, my God and Heavenly Father Himself absolutely believes in the efficacy of the sacrifice of His own Son on the cross for the totality of my evil. As much as I have been repulsed and disgusted with myself, the Lord's love and kindness toward me did not change. Rather, it became richer, deeper, and more powerful. The Lord Jesus refused to call my sin anything other than what it was; He allowed no excuses, He tolerated no irresponsibility on my part. He didn't need to cut me any slack or allow me to cut any for myself, since His sacrifice and new life was more than sufficient to deal with my sin. So, I began to learn first-hand that evil isn't the greatest power in the cosmos. As the grace and power of God freed my faculties to hear and believe, I could grasp the larger picture of His relationship to me. Only with that encouragement could I continue looking at the truth of my life and continue on the path of deliverance.

This, then, was the structure the Lord uncovered . First was a surface presenter system, a "good me" of personalities that worked, functioned, learned, married, divorced, and lived as a Christian; this was also "the me" that committed to do the work of remembering. Next came the external dissociative shell; this was the residuum of all the violence and demonization that happened to the presenter to make the multiplicity more elaborate. This was the part that would wear a therapist out, appearing to make progress but leaving the generational core undetected and undisturbed. Deepest still was my ancestral, generational core, the historical continuation of a family and culture that had been living in Sodom and Gomorrah for generations completely oblivious but opposed to everything "the good (surface) me" had known as good, true, and real.

The attachment theorists would say that people are defined by their bonds, and I believe this is true. My core of identity has been marked by the emotional, affective attachments to the key figures in my life. This core is my original identity, made up of the bonds and affective ties to those closest to me. My mother was indeed Lula Vieta Pauline Russell Campbell, born 1917 in Farmersville, Texas, and died in 1977. My real, biological father, was not the man I had known as my father. My true father, the man whom I loved and called father, was Edouard Phillipe de Rothschild, and I was his bastard son, named Phillip Eugene. This man, Edouard, was my father and I, a product of occult incest, was one of the hundreds of thousands of both legitimate and illegitimate offspring of this powerful financial and occult family.

What was it like living in this household? During much of my childhood and adolescence, I lived with my father on his estate in France. I can remember his

talking with me as a young boy, I remember his love of life and his passion for everything human. In his soul he believed that humanity was god itself; he could talk for hours (and often did) about the phenomenal accomplishments of the human race. He would take me to his library and spend long periods displaying the miracles of being human. I loved his passion. I loved, too, the physical relationship we had, held fast in the emotional power of incest, which in this culture was “normal” and to be admired. I listened to and adopted his lusts for power and even his hatred toward God. This man relished hating God, and I was his bastard son. Such was the true generational core of my ancestral iniquity and, being a Rothschild descendant, it was maximally demonized.

So how does a child of such a family become a Christian? A peculiarity of satanic families is that they introduce their own children to the Gospel, in order to attack the very relationship that is the emotional core of genuine faith. I recall my father, with none other than Herr Josef Mengele himself coaching him over his shoulder, leading me to Christ. His first awkward attempts often misfired, earning him (of all people) a tongue-lashing par excellence from Herr Doktor. But one day he succeeded; I saw the miracle of God as my Father, and my heart went out to the Holy One as my Father, my “Abba”. Then by distorting the message of the Scriptures, they lead me to “put the old man (the unregenerate human nature, in Pauline theology) to death”. I did undergo death, an induced physical death followed by a medical resuscitation. Then I, a tender child just over two years old, was given the “choice” to love my Heavenly Father who led to death, or my earthly father who meant life. Over a protracted period, my father reinforced both yearnings - to be the Lord’s and to be his. He built in an incredible tension in me between these two diametrically opposed affective bonds, and I was not allowed to dissociate them to achieve a reconciliation. This was my core conflict - an attachment disorder of the first magnitude; out of this conflict emerged, through structured abuse and medically driven behavioral conditioning, everything that was my alter system.

Thus, the very origin of my identity as a Christian and the most wonderful and pristine experiences of my receiving the presence of the Holy Spirit and the Eternal Life of Christ, were within hours, sequestered off, thus no longer available as the central organizing focus of my personality. These were the primal attachment experiences from which my Christian identity was built, but through being re-indoctrinated back into satanic culture, they are the events upon which my entire SRA edifice was constructed.

I was present at my father’s death in 1988, receiving his power and the commission to carry out my destiny in the grand conspiracy of my family. Like their other children, I played an key role in my family’s revolt from God. When I watch CNN, it startles me to see so many familiar faces now on the world stage in politics, art, finance, fashion, and business. I grew up with these people meeting them at ritual worship sites and in the centers of power. Financiers, artists, royalty, and even Presidents, all these dissociated people work and conspire today to bring in a new

world order where being human is the highest good and God is a faceless abstraction. These people, like me, are SRA/DID. Like the hundreds of thousands of this occult family's other biological children, I had my place and function within this clan's attempt to control the world. My efforts and my families' efforts strove to have a member of the European nobility of the Hapsburg family assume the preeminent position over humanity, a position called the Antichrist by Christianity.

While others were seeded into government, academia, business, or entertainment, my place was within the Body of Christ. I was to be a focus for spiritual power and controller of a cult within this Church. In this Church have lived people who I have known all my life to be the controllers and power centers of both the Rothschild family's false prophet and the antichrist. I was dedicated in my childhood and groomed all my life to protect this vital link to the false prophet's and the antichrist's ancestral, spiritual power. All of us borne from satanic families and groomed for complementing roles for decades - all brought together as a local church to use the very Body of Christ as the means to bring in the false prophet and antichrist - amazing!

Many dissociated Christians in the Body of Christ hold similar corporate spiritual, occult positions as part of the satanic new world order. In my being I embodied the luciferian morning star within the Church. I represented the presence of all the other satanists who were related to me in the morning star; their spirits were present in me in the Church. Constructed through ritual but empowered by legions of spirits, I was a human and spiritual focus of corporate satanic energy into the Body of Christ.

My Rothschild family built my corporate spiritual occult position as the morning star and the very foundation of my entire system on my personality as a Christian. And not just as the false, programmed hyper-pious, hypocritical, or superspiritual Christian of my presenter systems. No, the deepest center of my core as a Rothschild satanist was my acceptance of Jesus Christ as Lord while I was a mere child at the tender age of two years and four months.

This has been supremely critical in my deliverance and in my life as a Christian. This event - my conversion to Christ - is the central defining event of my life and personality; I deeply believe it is the foundational event of my life. Deprived of this defining event and identity, I had been stripped of the most important behavioral pattern or "template" of my Christian faith and as such had lost the single most important organizing element of my personality. I can only speculate how my deliverance would have been facilitated if we had worked on my biological and affective Rothschild identity and my childhood conversion as the very first primal dissociative events to be resolved in my counseling. Had we resolved my conversion and the experiences around it as my very first PDE at the start, I believe my entire system of dissociation would have been stripped of its central demonic, psychological, and biological power and would have nearly collapsed.

I am not in any way unique in my “system” or experience. In many others who come this far in their deliverance - all of us have had a similar structure and similar experiences. All us received Christ in our childhood and were subjected to strong affective conflicts in our attachments to God and to our true parents to such a degree that we split and were enveloped in kosmokrator legions; the alters who elaborated from this split were the satanic foundations of all other alters within the entire personality system.

For the Rothschilds, and for satan himself I am sure, this was the ultimate sadistic irony in using Christians to bring in the antichrist, but there is a certain demonic brilliance to it. By seeding the Body of Christ with his occult followers, satan has been able to generate the spiritual and sociological forces that are required to bring in the false prophet's and the antichrist's reign. This conspiracy also retards the Body of Christ from growing to the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ and satisfying the heart of God for His people. From these satanist infiltrations both inside and outside the Body of Christ spring the demonic energy, the heresy, and the actions that will culminate in the great apostasy of II Thessalonians 2:3 and then the revealing of the son of lawlessness, the antichrist.

Within all the mainline churches, the ecumenical movement, the Word of Faith movements, elements of the Vineyard Movement, and especially within the charismatic heresies of a "spiritually resurgent" Methodism and Presbyterianism (among others), - within the whole 'Christian occult' of the 'unity through signs, wonders, and miracles' movement that has arisen from Oral Roberts' heresy and ministry - within all this, satan has been fulfilling his delusion to be worshiped as god. The visions and messages these people put forth are the demonic projections of lying spirits expressing themselves through the mouths of lying prophets, and the miracles are acts of sorcerers who don't know either the Father or the Son. The Lord Jesus spoke about such false prophets in Matthew 7 saying, "Many will say to Me on that day, 'Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in Your name, and in Your name cast out demons, and in Your name perform many miracles? And then I will declare to them, 'I never knew you; depart from Me, you who practice lawlessness.'" (Matt 7:22,23) As sincere as people in these movements may be and as wonderful, ecstatic, or sublime the experiences may be, these movements aren't from God. For good reason "judgment begins at the household of God". Through SRA/DID satan has infiltrated the church with his false prophets, complete with counterfeit spiritual gifts, and has practically hijacked the church for his purposes.

So, not only are the political, social, and economic foundations for the antichrist in place, but the spiritual and religious foundations are already firmly in place, as well, inside mainstream Christianity.

This picture of a world going to hell and dragging the church with it is indeed a bleak one but the Scriptures are unmistakably clear that the period just before the Lord's coming will be like this. To think that the Church will be anything other than a small enduring remnant in an age of deep violence and darkness is an utter

misreading of Scripture.

The Lord God is no fool. His foreknowledge and the grace that flows from His Being are more than sufficient for the real Body to endure and withstand such evil. My life is living proof of that. What else can deliverances like mine and others, done in such a place as this small church, signify except that Jesus Christ is alive and well, indeed?! What else does it mean that He sovreignly chooses to give "the unfathomable riches of Christ" to the lame, the crippled, the despised, and the shattered by making us His covenant people "in order that the manifold wisdom of God might now be made known through the church to the rulers and authorities in the heavenly places"!? (Ephesians 3:8,9)

The victory hasn't ultimately been in the overcoming of the demonic and dissociative bondages of this satanic conspiracy. I think that the real joy of the Father is that, to overcome such deficits and accomplish such a task, we have been brought by the Lord God Himself to a moral victory over satan and everything in his power through our relationship with our heavenly Father and with each other. This moral victory is seen in the love we have for each other within this small assembly.

The obstacles are indeed formidable to getting free of ones' demonized satanic roots and in faithfully enduring as the world goes to hell in a handbasket. But all this is worth it, because our Father has, out of this morass, built a corporate people who have, in our very beings and relationships, defeated satan morally and spiritually. From this struggle - both personal and corporate - the Lord is realizing His desires "...that they may be all be one; even as Thou, Father, art in Me, and I in Thee, that they also may be in Us; that the world may believe that Thou didst send Me. And the glory which Thou hast given Me I have given to them; that they may be one, just as We are one. I in them, and Thou in Me, that they may be perfected in unity, that the world may know that Thou didst send Me, and didst love them, even as Thou didst love Me." (John 17: 21-23)

The real Christian life and the Lord's will for me that eluded me so long because of my multiplicity, has come to me, because by the grace of God I chose to overcome the evil within me. "...He who overcomes shall inherit these things, and I will be his God and he shall be My son." (Revelation 21:7) Despite the manipulation and betrayal, my childhood decision to trust in Jesus Christ was right. There is nothing special about me; I am no Christian superman. There are people in this small assembly and others who have displayed greater persistence, courage, honesty, and humility. There are many others, both dissociative and non-dissociative, in other churches whose response to His call to discipleship has led them to extraordinary depths of suffering and love in the Name of Jesus Christ; of such the world is not worthy.

All my life the Lord has called me, just as He has been calling to everyone else, to trust and obey. How could I say, 'No' to Him?? How could I ever?! The Father's

Son and His grace have boxed me in and taken me captive. His claim over my life was what preserved enough hold on reality to believe that He really exists, that I owe Him my life and love, and that His grace is greater than anything that exists within this age or any other.

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/44693 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Therapists Speak Out on Ritual Abuse

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **July 28, 2000**

Several months ago, I sent a questionaire out to the professional community to find out the opinions of therapists who work with ritual abuse. I contacted the ISSD as well as several therapists whom I had heard of in the field. Why? Because I wanted a chance for the dedicated professionals who work in this field to have a chance to speak out, and I was also interested in their opinions.

I have changed all names, and used pseudonyms to protect the identities of these individuals and the clients that they work with. But these are very real people, who often work long hours, at times under threat from outside people, to help survivors break free. I cannot imagine a group of people that I admire more, next to the survivors themselves. The therapists who answered live both in the United States, and several countries around the world.

First I asked what percent of the therapist's practice was ritually abused clients. The answers varied.

Jenny, a female therapist, answered: Yes.I never figured percentages. I saw several clients whom I suspected were RA but they never claimed memories of such.

Fran, another therapist, stated: Ritually abused clients have made up about 10% of my practice in the past six years. I consider it a sub-specialty.

Joann, who works in a group practice, stated: yes - though many only openly admit to being DID Is this your specialty area of practice? yes It is about 70% of my practice and 100% of my partnert's practice

Alice states: Yes...usually they do not enter my office and announce that, however. It usually unfolds in the course of therapy, or they are referred following that disclosure. DID is one of my specialty areas of practice. It comprises about 1/5 of my caseload...and at one time was about 1/3.

John states: I work primarily in and with trauma survivors, mainly people over the ages of 35 and split about 45% 55% male to female. Yes I see a number of people

who were ritually abused. Of those I work with about 30% were classic ritual abuse survivors...

I then asked: Do you believe your clients when they tell you they were ritually abused? If so, why? The responses were very interesting.

Jenny states: I believe that it is possible that RA memories are true. I cannot determine truth for clients.

Fran makes some points about her client's memories: I generally believe my clients' accounts of ritually abuse because:

1. I have obtained very convincing corroborating evidence.

2. Their emotional reactions and psychological symptoms make complete sense in relation to their accounts of abuse.

3. In one of my cases, relatives of the ritual abuse victim were incarcerated for multiple counts of sadistic sexual assault.

4. I am a member of a professional co-supervision group in which my colleagues have also obtained significant clinical and corroborating evidence of ritualistic abuse and mind control programming.

5. I am familiar with the professional research and clinical literature.

There are some aspects of some clients' accounts that I believe may not be completely accurate, due to abuse perpetrated on drugged clients or deception by their abusers.

Joann shares her opinion: Absolutely. Who would make up those stories???

Alice makes a point here: I have never seen anyone I thought was fabricating. I have also NEVER told anyone of my clients that they "met a profile", nor have I shared any of the "theories" that were prevalent in our field for awhile regarding conspiracy, programming, etc. I treat their memories with respect and, when needed, assist them in looking at the BEHAVIORS of their abusers and how it was abuse, regardless of the belief system. I see DID as an elaborate defense system involving all levels of personality.

John shares his view: I believe that initially they will tell me what it is that they have to to unburden the past. And they will tell me often times from the child's prospective in an adult voice. It is variation on the truth. it is how they recall it at the time in my office, and it may not even be close to what happened but it does define

the starting gate so to speak and it is my job to help work them through their processes not decern the truth of the matter. I am the professional listener not the detective.... I think many of my contempories get lost here.

I think it is important to note here that contrary to what some vocal groups in the media say, these professionals listen to what the client brings into therapy. They are NOT suggesting memories, instead, they are listening to their clients.

My next question was: What sort of groups are your clients reporting that "ritually abuse"? Are these organized groups with a religious/philosophical base, or are they isolated incidences? Have you seen any common denominators between groups, if this is what is reported? Any elements that make individuals or groups different in how they work?

Jenny states: Satanic cults; Christian sects, U. S. Government Are these organized groups with a religious/philosophical base, or are they isolated incidences? Both Have you seen any common denominators between groups, if this is what is reported? Any elements that make individuals or groups different in how they work? Pedophilia, sadomachistic tendencies

Fran shares from her experience working with survivors: My clients report abuse by Illuminati, KKK, and Fourth Reich. My Illuminati victim also reports abuse by national and international governments. None of my ritually-abused clients have single-incident abuses. All endured long-term abuse within inter-generational Satanism. Some appear to be more motivated by Satan-worship, others by obtaining world power. Common denominators: Satan worship is reported by all clients. Disgusting and horribly painful torture is reported by all, and there is consistency in the specific kinds of torture used, e.g., being hung upside down, skinning people alive, use of hooks, and more that I can not recall right now. Differences: Sexual abuse seems to have been more frequent and the perpetrators appeared to have stronger pedophiliac interests in my survivors of KKK and Fourth Reich than the Illuminati survivor, who appeared to be high up in the power heirarchy, where it appeared more specific to particular rituals. Only the Illuminati survivor reported abuse by political figures.

Joann's clients also have shared with hertheir experiences with SRA: Most are isolated. some are offshoots of other groups (example - Masonic, Greek orthodox, illuminati) All involve abuse though the type varies - sexual, physical, emotional

Alice's clients have also shared different types of abuse: A wide range of groups from aryan nation stuff ,to christian groups, to ancient fertility stuff, to the "chinese menu" approach. The only thing they all have in common is the abuse of power and children.

John shares his perspective: Variation on a theme of religion, although I have one

at the moment that is focused on healing and not religion... oddly enough, and they as an organization are subject too a major investigation by the local Medical authorities/....

My next question was: Have you ever seen evidence that seems to corroborate client's stories? Such as bruising/evidence of abuse physically; or testimony of siblings or family members? Threats against yourself from outside members of the group?

Jenny states: 3 clients of different age groups naming same group leader spanning a period of three decades. Also naming same ritual sites. To my knowledge these clients, being in different generations had never met each other.

Fran has also seen corroborating evidence: I have seen corroborating evidence, including mutiple survivors identifying the same perpetrators, and incarceration of perpetrators.I have had numerous phone hang-ups, for periods a few a day. I had one call at midnight - a woman's voice said "She's dead you know, you killed her". Nobody I know died.

Joann states: Such as bruising/evidence of abuse physically; (physical pain or sensitivities - ie body memories) Changes as a result of access by others including family members(this may be done knowingly or unknowingly). Threats against yourself from outside members of the group? No threats - just being followed

John has received threats because of his work with survivors: By the time that I see people generally speaking the abuse has long since stopped, but I have seen scars that seem to corroborate clients stories. Yes I have had death threats by the acting out brothers of three young ladies who came in for help. Their old brothers who now live as hermits in the bush, threatened to shoot both me and them if and I quote: Anymore talk of this sexual abuse thing keeps going end quote

I want to thank the courageous professionals who shared their opinions in this article. Part two will include: healing from ritual abuse, what helps and what doesn't.

copyright 2000 svali

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/45823 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Therapists Speak out on Healing

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **August 12, 2000**

Important note: This article does not, and is not meant, to take the place of work with a qualified therapist, which is essential to healing from severe trauma. The comments in this article are in general terms only, and are only opinions.

Healing. That is the goal in the journey of healing from abuse, and I have a confession to make. The question I asked therapists in this article was totally self serving. I really wanted to hear what they had to say on healing, what helps, and what doesn't. As a survivor, I was extremely interested in the answers.

Each therapist was careful to say that they were speaking in generalities, that each client is different and unique. That each person's healing will following the path best for them. But there are some excellent insights that they shared from their observations over the years, and I felt that this deserved an article of its own.

The question I asked was: Which factors have you seen in clients that help them progress in their healing process from ritual abuse? Which factors have you seen that tend to retard progress? (I know this is a complex question, just a few key elements)

Ritual abuse often makes the survivor feel they are worthless, or have no rights. Jenny had some thoughts on this topic:

Aura of spirituality; sense of humor, lack of feelings of entitlement, strong support system Which factors have you seen that tend to retard progress? (I know this is a complex question, just a few key elements) Opposite of the above

Fran had comments based on many hours of work with her clients. Her response shows her commitment, and her client's commitment, to the healing process:

Factors that facilitate progress:

1. Patience by the therapist.

2. Hard work, journaling, art, between sessions.

3. Having a greater purpose of helping others

4. Having helpful, loving, and protective support persons.

5. A religious base of hope and protection.

6. Valuing both their own knowledge and the suggestions of the therapist.

7. Crying, grieving.

Factors that retard progress

1. Maladaptive relationships

2. Being re-accessed or abducted.

3. Substance abuse

4. Over-dependence, looking for the perfect new mother.

5. Lack of support persons

6. Lack of a religious support network and belief system.

7. Lack of looking inward for answers, over-reliance on the therapist

8. Resistance to crying.

Those who have been ritually abused have often had negative spiritual experiences. Joann shares her perspective that includes her belief system:

Which factors have you seen in clients that help them progress in their healing process from ritual abuse? strong Christian beliefs, strong desire to heal, submission to the healing process

Which factors have you seen that tend to retard progress? denial, unwilling or unable to commit time or money, fear, trust issues, emphasis on presenting alters rather than on programming/structures/systems , lone ranger counselors who burn themselves out

Survivors of ritual abuse have often had a multitude of painful betrayals in their

lifetime. Alice shares her thoughts on this painful topic:

It always helps to process betrayal...all the betrayals from spiritual to parental. It also helps to label specific behaviors as abuse in the framework of healthy parenting and group dynamics.Sometimes clients have difficulty with their corrupted belief systems as regards themselves...i.e.- "I have no soul"

Survivors of ritual abuse often have difficulty trusting others, and John shares his perspective on this issue:

What helps the most is the solid listening and them coming away from session after session with a strong sense of being listened too. The second mostimportant eliment is to treat the presenting problem properly and that is usually a deep seated depression that masks itself in some other format. ODD or BiP or BPD etc. and to gain releif here and build trust over time....

One of the facinating things that I have found is that in the fourth or fifth year of treatment sometimes the depth of the dissociative aspect jumps out and you have alters in your office who have watched you for a very long time and they can finally trust you to share. I had one lady who had been treated for 8 and half years before I got to her and it was late in our third year when I meet the first alter. The Alters knew the truth of what happened to her and it was ritual abuse by her mom. It went on every day and on several occasions nearly resulted in the clients death, and all this happened per age three. Mom later confirmed this. I had used the principal of the ISH and garnered its support in the healing and the client now 39 has her child back, is holding down a full time job, is in a relationship that she is happy with and is clean and sober drugs and alcohol 6 years..She is on Rx for her depression and probabily will be all the rest of her life... but she is having one now.

I found these responses helpful and insightful. These are caring people, who have invested hours and hours into helping survivors in the often painful, but also rewarding, journey of healing. The fact that they took time from their busy practices to share some thoughts is awesome, and I appreciate and thank each and every one. In my thoughts, these people are heros, along with the people that they help. Ritual abuse is one of the most traumatic abuses to heal from, but the therapists and survivors discussed in these articles are doing just that. Healing.

copyright 2000 svali

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/46865 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Complex polyfragmentation: a coping mechanism for the survivor

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **August 27, 2000**

Important note: this article is not meant to be therapy, or to replace therapy with a skilled and qualified person, which is essential in healing from severe trauma. These are only the opinions of a survivor. Trigger warning: mentions cult abuse, dissociation, and trauma

In order to survive ritual abuse, a child will often learn to dissociate, and dissociate heavily. The child has undergone some of the most horrific abuse humanly imaginable, and most find a way to cope. One of the ways that is encouraged in certain groups, such as the Illuminati, is to create an elaborate defensive system. In psychological terms, the child fragments, then fragments again. Eventually, the child has polyfragmented.

What is polyfragmentation? The term comes from the root poly, meaning many, and fragments. In complex polyfragmenatation, the survivor will have not only alter systems, but hundreds or even thousands of fragments, isolated parts of their mind created to do a job, and do it well and unthinkingly. Often the job is one that would be abhorrent to the main personality or presenting system. The further away from core beliefs, the greater usually the dissociation and fragmentation that must occur. In other words, a LOT of trauma has to happen to make a person do something that they really don't want to do. And the person has to feel very far away from themselves as well when doing it. The cult will purposely try to create a polyfragmented system for this very reason. The person is more dissociated from themselves, and is often easier for them to control.

How are polyfragmented systems structured? These are individual, and will vary from not only person to person, but also with the group the person belonged to, the trainers, the abilities of the child, and tasks involved that the child must do. There is no "cookie cutter approach" in most cults to creating polyfragmented systems, but there are certain characteristics that are common.

What might a polyfragmented system look like? I will share some based on my memories as a trainer in this group, plus insights from my own healing process.

1. Protectors: these are parts that were created to do the jobs that had to be done, and saved the life of the young child. Cult protectors had to look mean and scary, like the child's perpetrators. They also become perpetrators when the child grows into an adult, since they have no choice. They can be ruthless, angry, or may believe that they are demons. Some growl, some hiss, some believe that they are powerful animals. And all were a little child who was asked to do the unthinkable, forced to act in ways that he or she didn't want to. They laugh at vulnerability, and trust no one. And with good reason, based upon their experiences in the cult. With therapy and time, they can also help keep the person safe from their perpetrators, as these parts will "kick butt" if they feel threatened.

2. Intellectuals: the cult WANTS intellectual alters who can observe, go between systems, learn information quickly and download it to outsiders. These might be recorders, computers, scholars. They may know several languages, and versed in different philosophies. Brilliant, cognitive, they often believe that they can outwit those around them, including therapists. But they also know much of the life history that the others don't, since they rarely have strong feelings. These parts can "read the life history" without a tear or emotion. When they are out, the person appears "flat" to say the least, in psychological terms.

3. Denial people: these are intellectual, and are created to deny that anything bad ever happened. Life was wonderful, the parents perfect and loving, and the suicidality and PTSD symptoms are just strange artifacts without "any reason," according to these parts. A person can have a full blown abreaction, and five minutes later, a denier will come out and say it was all "made up." They are often afraid of punishment if the person remembers, and have severe trauma motivating them.

4. Controllers/head honchos/"top dogs": these are the system leaders. They know what is going on at all times in their system. In a military system, it might be a general, in a protector system, the most powerful protector; in a metals system, the platinums, or in a jewel system, the highest jewels, such as diamond, ruby, or emerald. Usually there are several leaders in a system that share the responsibility. They can also become invaluable helpers over time if they choose to give up cult loyalty.

5. Child alters: these want praise from the adult leaders, and often come out for rewards, or sweets. They will report on others inside unless they can learn that it is safe to NOT do so, since they are motivated both by fear of punishment, and wanting praise from those above them. They are also often the "heart" of a polyfragmented system, and can feel love, joy, or fear and trembling. Often, they want hugs and to be told that they are "okay".

6. Punishers: why wait for an outside person to punish you if you can create someone inside to do it first? Children will often identify heavily with their

perpetrators, and if the punishment is severe and frequent, they will internalize the perpetrator to try and keep themselves "in line" and avoid punishment externally. The cult will capitalize on this, and often trainers will leave as their "calling card" an alter named after themselves. This one will be an internal trainer, or punisher, or enforcer. Their job is to keep things in line, and will often try to sabotage therapy. They are often fearful of external punishment if they don't do their job. Internal punishers will also activate self punishment sequences inside (such as flood programming/ suicide programming, or other self harm sequences) if the person begins breaking away from the cult and the old rules. These parts may take time to conivince that they can change their old way of doing things, since they were often accountable to the outside handler/trainer if things weren't kept in line.

7. Feeling alters: the feelings were overwhelming and infinitely traumatizing in childhood. It threatened the child's survival and sanity. The solution? Parcel them out over several internal parts and/or fragments. Divide the feeling up so that it feels more manageable. Feeling alters often get locked away inside, and when they come out in therapy, the feeling may hit "full force" at first. A child alter may come out screaming, or terror stricken, or wailing in uncontrollable grief and pain, until they are grounded in the here and now. Often, feelings were heavily punished in the cult, so it was psychologically necessary to bury them deeply within the psyche in order to survive. These parts may be very separated from the parts that know what happened to cause the feelings in a highly fragmeneted system, so that the feelings seem to come out of nowhere, without any cause. With time and healing, they can hook up with the intellectuals inside who observed, and other parts who went through the same trauma, giving meaning to the feelings and helping to resolve them.

8. Internal councils: most cults have leadership councils of some sort. And many people internalize them inside. It's another example of internalizing perpetrators, and these have a vested interest in "keeping things in line" until they realize that they can leave the cult and be safe. Then, they can become an immense strength for healing. A personal may have a local leadership council internalized, or spiritual councils that represent outside people, such as an internal druidic council or group of ascended masters that help run things inside.

9. Sexual alters: created to handle the overwhelming trauma of early childhood sexual abuse, they took the feelings it was too painful for a young child to understand. Some had to learn to enjoy the abuse, or pretend to, and were heavily rewarded for this response.

10. Amnesic alters: these are known as the "front", the "clueless ones", "those who don't know anything", etc. These have the job of not remembering. Otherwise, as a child, they were heavily punished. Usually, they are very glad to not remember anything, and the other parts who were abused at times envy them or dislike their "protected life history." This can create a lot of intrasystem hostility or warfare, until the amnesic parts begin accepting that abuse did occur. Reminding abused parts

that the amnesia saved the child's (and their life) helped my system with this.

11. The workers: these do the jobs of daily life, and usually are part of the presenting systems. These take care of the house, got married, take care of the children, and may hold a highly responsible job as well. These are the competent parts created that hide the fact that the person has undergone a lifetime of traumatic abuse and degradation. These parts can also be a great strength, as they share that life can be good with other more traumatized parts inside.

12. Hosts: there may be a "day host" (see presenters), a "night host" for the cult, or hosts for various systems or times in the person's life. Occasionally, the survivor of severe generational cult abuse may find to their dismay that a greater portion of their life was invested in and given to cult activities than day ones, and the "night host" is stronger than the "day host"! This happened to me. Fortunately, my "night host" was the one who left the cult, so she had plenty of strength and pull to give to staying safe and away from the group. I also had a "host" that had handled the summers spent in Europe, during those times in childhood, and a "hidden host" who never fully presented to protect herself from others (she manipulated the presenters to sit in front of her, telling them what to do). Each person's system will handle this task differently. In general, the greater the trauma, the greater the distrust of outside people, and the more likely that the host will be a facade, or heavily protected.

13. Core splits: can be created from severe and psychologically threatening very early childhood trauma. This used to be done intentionally by some cult groups to create larger and more dissociated systems.

14. The core: this is the original child, the one who created all of the others inside. The child's systems will depend upon the traumas and the creativity of the original child, as well as her need to protect herself from the abuse of others that might have destroyed her. In some systems, the core will be very young, or an infant, if the abuse was extremely early and severe. Core issues surrounding her will usually involve parents or parental figures who caused severe trauma. This might include abandonment, torture, or other forms of cruelty to a young child.

15. Function codes, access codes, halt codes, system codes: these are fragments that might be put in to do certain jobs, and are created to only do that job when called out by triggers such as letters, numbers, phrases, or other auditory stimuli. These are created with deep trauma and are very intentionally done by perpetrators.

16. Spiritual parts: these may have a variety of beliefs that cover different spiritualities internally. There may be one over-riding spiritual belief for the system, or several. For example, a spiritual system created by the cult may include aspects of Luciferianism, druidism, Temple of Set teachings, Ancient Babylonian mystery

religions, etc. The host or presenters may have a completely conflicting religious belief system, and there may be hostility between the parts that hold opposing beliefs. In my own life, my presenters were strong Christians, and this gave the stability and comfort needed to bring healing to the parts inside. It also opened the way to begin forgiveness, one of the most difficult and important tasks in the healing process.

This has been an overview of just a few of the types of personalities that might be found in a complex polyfragmented system. It is important to be aware that each person is unique; that many people will have coped with trauma in their own way. This is not meant to say that every cult survivor has all of these personalities, but are one survivor's opinion based upon her experiences and memories. My hope is that this article will help to educate others about this issue.

copyright 2000 svali

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/47711 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

On Having Need

Author: **Svali**
Contributor(s): **niid la'i**
Published on: **September 7, 2000**

This is a guest article by someone who has written expressively and eloquently on how the survivor of cult abuse feels. Her name is niid la'i and she speaks for many of us about the isolation and loss of identity, the need to protect oneself after a lifetime of betrayals. The desire to learn to trust and be open. She calls it:

On Having Need

by niid la'i

This is an essay on need. Need is frightening to me. I don't want to have need! The voices of programming inside start to shout at me when I acknowledge that I have needs. I am not supposed to have needs. I have always existed to serve others. I am supposed to be compliant, understanding, and forgiving, no matter what anyone does to me, or says to me. I am never supposed to express an opinion, or discontent or dissatisfaction.

As a child, I learned to have a "nothing face." This face was devoid of all expression. It was a face that hid a million feelings. Sometimes, even this expression was unacceptable. If it was misconstrued as sullen, then punishment descended on me anyway. I had to have at least a suggestion of a smile and contentment blended in with the nothing face. It was used when cult members were present and in the home with the mother and father.

I also have, what I call, "outside faces." Outside faces are more readable. They were created to present a pleasant, calm, and amiable appearance to all people. The outside faces went to school, and to relatives' homes, and to public places. As a small child people would comment on how quiet I was. As a teen-ager, and even now, many friends and acquaintances tell me I am so, "laid back!" What a joke! But it proves how well everyone inside has hidden behind the acceptable faces that afforded some safety.

One problem this has created is a numbing affect. In order for the outside faces and the nothing face to function, needs and feelings had to be literally forgotten. If

alters, which I call, "others, " inside were too upset or anxious, there was a possibility of their emotions breaking through. Often in a cult gathering, members of the group would convince little others that if they had feelings inside, the members could tell. So, even if their facial expression was as it should be, the cult members would punish them for the feelings these "little people", my name for little alters, were supposedly having. Because of this, others learned to deny their feelings and more others were created to hold feelings in far away worlds. Their needs were not recognized anymore either. Eventually they were as "nothing" inside as their faces learned to be on the outside.

When one of my others was 6 years old she was being taught not to cry. I'm sure there were lots of other "lessons" already ingrained about showing emotions, but this is just one description of those indoctrination sessions. The memory, and I'm sure it is not complete, is of this small child standing naked in front of a male adult. He was sitting in a chair and all of a sudden he slapped her very hard on the cheek. Of course, she grabbed her cheek and started to cry. He removed her hand and hit her again and said simply, "Don't cry!" She tried to stop but couldn't. He continued to hit her cheek and repeat the words until her tears stopped and the only evidence of the pain was her labored breathing. I'm sure that at some point this little person inside fragmented into more others who could hold the sting of the slaps and even the tears away from the six year olds consciousness. Eventually she was able to stand dry eyed in front of her abuser and not even flinch. By the time this was accomplished her cheek and eye were so swollen and bruised that she could not go to school for more than a week.

Certainly, everyone who lives on the earth has the need to cry many times in his/ her life. But for me, because of countless, repeated episodes of controlled programming such as the one just described, my need to cry was effectively shut off. Now, as an adult, though I need to cry, there are many times I can't. I will feel tears begin to fill my eyes and my throat tighten up, but then all the symptoms just go away. I am left with an overwhelming sadness, a stomach- ache and extreme anxiety.

Can I then tell anyone I am anxious, or sad, or feel sick? NO! Others inside have been taught equally well that they are not supposed to ask for relief or comfort. They should not even feel sad, or anxious or sick. If they do have these feelings, they think they are bad and evil for having them. They experience tremendous guilt and shame.

In the present day, I find I don't understand what is happening with my emotions. I go to the Dr. and get so anxious when I have to tell him/her what is wrong that I get tongue-tied and confused. The Dr. gets impatient and frustrated because my explanations are so disjointed. He/she misunderstands.. I try again, but I still can't be clear. I am then judged incompetent and a hypochondriac. I am treated with lack of respect and in a mocking way. I don't understand why I can't talk to Drs. I feel stupid and ashamed for being so evasive and indirect.

This happens because I am not supposed to need. If I am sick, I am not supposed to need help. I am not supposed to tell anyone I don't feel good. I am not supposed to GET sick in the first place. This is ludicrous when considered logically. Everyone gets sick. But, the lessons are still so much a part of me, I think I am bad and evil for wanting medicine to feel better.

Let's say I go to a therapy session. I am going to therapy because I am trying to resolve the conflicts I sense inside. Even being there is a serious breach of "the rules." Again, I am admitting I have needs, and I am trying to talk to someone about them. Talking is akin to murder. It is a capital offense, and carries major consequences if broken. Therapy is all about talking! If I sit silent in front of my therapist then nothing is accomplished. If I speak to him I am buried in angry, shouting inner voices, pleading voices, scared voices. My body starts to hurt in various places. I cannot think again, and what I say comes out jumbled and incoherent. I get frustrated and panic-stricken. If my therapist shows even the slightest indication of impatience or perceived anger, everyone inside withdraws. All the others inside willing to watch and listen are so hyper alert they notice every movement, twitch and voice inflection the therapist has. This can seriously impede progress in therapy.

Many times I have left a session thinking the therapist has labeled me needy and draining. This is because if I ask him/her for anything; reassurance, understanding, support, I think I am being overbearing and demanding. The very act of walking through the door of the office and being seen feels like asking for more than anyone should ever be asked to give. Indeed, I am supposed to go in there and figure out what the therapist needs and start supporting and taking care of him! Paradoxically if the therapist cannot return a rare phone call, or cannot be as supportive as I need him/her to be, I feel rejected and abandoned. So, I find myself in one of those double binds so common to survivors. If the therapist is supportive, etc. I feel bad and evil. If he is not supportive I feel bad and evil. This is all because I am not supposed to have any needs.

What can happen, is that I get so worried about being needy, that I become needy!! By skirting around what I really want to say or ask for, those who are working with me have to guess at what I am really trying to ask or say. They can end up feeling manipulated, or like they are being forced to play some strange kind of game. Though this is not my intent, especially if they do not know me very well, my "halftalk," as I call it, can create the very drain I am trying so hard not to inflict on others.

It’s another trust issue. In order to heal, I have to trust before trust is really there to be able to learn to trust! I have to risk from the very foundation of my being. I wear the lessons of the past like a second skin. To begin removing this skin leaves me feeling touch tender and naked once again. I often feel like I am metaphorically standing in the middle of a busy freeway daring the cars not to hit me. That's how

vulnerable I feel as I try and shed the beliefs that have ruled me from the day I was born. I hate it when I am told I am comfortable living within the boundaries placed on me from the past. But, it is true. I have only known what I was so methodically programmed to believe.

Learning new ways is filled with as much pain and anxiety as the original abuse. As I discover and then acknowledge that I have needs, and attempt to trust these needs to "outsiders," "big people," i.e., therapist, Drs. and friends, I open myself up to the possibility of more hurt and misunderstanding. Though these people are not abusers, human beings are subject to making mistakes, responding from their own set of rules. The everyday problems in relationships that are bound to happen when people get together can seem as intense as the former abuse.

Can the voices of programming ever be silenced? I hope so. At this point, I have to rely on my therapists and other caregivers to instruct me and guide me. I cannot offer concrete ways to implant trust in barren soil. What this essay offers is insight. I NEED those who read it to understand and be able to step beyond my walls of resistance and help me. I hope that as other survivors relate to these barriers that affect their healing they will also seek out people that can assist them to shed their old skins of the past. Now how's this for breaking programming! Copyright 2000 niid la`i Niid la'i: Thank you for your courage in opening your heart and sharing with others here. May what you wrote open the eyes of both therapists and support people to the tremendous issues that a survivor of ritual abuse struggles with in the healing process. svali

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/47803 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Spiritual Warfare: A Healing Journey

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **September 9, 2000**

Trigger Warning: This article discusses Christianity, prayer, and spiritual warfare, deliverance, and the demonic in detail. It is not meant to replace therapy with a qualified counselor, and is only the opinion of a survivor, based on her personal experiences.

“I command you to leave this woman’s body in Jesus’ name!” The blond haired woman used a voice of authority. From my mouth came a voice filled with laughter. “Lady, you could work on me all day and all night for the next ten weeks, and you wouldn’t even have begun to get us all.” It mocked her. “How many are you?” she asked. “Thousands,” replied the voice. I was terrified, quaking inside as the exchange went on. I could hear it all, but was powerless to stop it. “You legions, depart in the name of Jesus.” The short- haired blond used her authoritative voice again. Six hours later, she pronounced me “cured” and “delivered”. But I heard a mocking voice inside of melaughing at her, rolling on the ground internally. “She didn’t even know what she was dealing with, the idiot,” it said. I smiled and thanked the lady for “healing me” and fled, more confused than ever and wondering why I was so resistant to deliverance.

This is a true story from early in my healing journey, and is used to illustrate a point. The area of spiritual warfare for the person with ritual abuse and DID is often highly misunderstood. What the woman involved in deliverance didn’t realize is that the part talking to her was an ALTERNATE PERSONALITY named “laugher” who was created in times of great emotional stress (I wasn’t allowed to cry when I felt pain at others’ suffering, but mocking laughter was highly accepted as an emotional release). And the “thousands” referred to were personalities, not demons. Laugher found the evening highly entertaining, but others inside found it highly traumatic.

It is sad but true that all too often, the healing of DID (dissociative identity disorder) and ritual abuse is divided into two separate, and at times, disparaging groups. The first camp is what I privately term the “psychological approach.” This approach states that if a wounded person is allowed to verbalize their traumas, is given support and grounding techniques, and can learn system cooperation, that they will begin to heal. While this is valid, and important, it leaves out part of the picture. A person who recovers dissociated memories will be recovering memories of severe

trauma and horrendous pain that will often feel overwhelming. Despair may hit, and the person searches for a reason to go on living. Without a strong faith basis, the person may find it difficult to resolve these traumas. Also, this approach leaves out the reality of the spiritual abuse and experiences that the survivor went through in a cult setting. Or the influence of the demonic. I believe that the demonic is real, and must be dealt with, or it will continue to retraumatize a survivor of ritual abuse.

The other camp is the “cast them all out and heal the person “ approach. This is also what I have privately termed the “instant integration” approach. Bypassing the trauma and psychological defenses, the well meaning church member will treat any and all psychological illness as “demons” that need to be “cast out.” At best, this approach will cause extreme cynicism in a survivor who finds out that the voices and switching still continue after the “deliverance” and wonder why they can’t be helped. At worst, it can highly traumatize alters who already feel shame, degradation, and that they are “evil”, and they will go deep into the system, for protection. If they do come out later in therapy, they will be understandably hostile towards Christianity, since their last experience was of being treated as evil, something to be gotten “rid of.”

Rare and refreshing indeed is the therapist or counselor who has a good grasp of both the psychological principles of healing, and a strong faith and discernment when the spiritual presents itself. Who starts sessions and ends them in prayer, who takes the time to discern if the part speaking is a personality, a demon, or an alter who is influenced by the demonic. Who listens supportively, does not rush healing, yet gently encourages the person in their walk with Christ in love. This is discipleship in the truest sense, and it takes a person with a strong walk to go this route beside another who has been deeply wounded.

So often ritual abuse has involved the most horrendous spiritual abuse that a human being can undergo. To a point that defies description. A young child will be hurt, and told to pray and ask God to deliver them. The child does this, and their tormentor hurts them more, saying, “See, God is powerless. He doesn’t love you, and has forgotten you, He doesn’t care. ” He or she will then ask the child to pray to Satan for deliverance. In immense pain, the child will, trying anything to stop the torture. As soon as the child does this, the torment is stopped. The child learns a horrible lesson, an ingrained lie. Only strong caring Christian love can overcome sessions like these as they are remembered and grieved over.

I am by no means saying that there is not a place for deliverance in therapy for DID, or making fun of deliverance ministries. There are some who do have people trained to deal with DID, and to not traumatize an already spiritually abused system. Imagine the impact on a protector (they frequently first present snarling or cursing because they have been so wounded) being told he or she is a “demon”. This is a part of the person’s mind that has already been wounded and tortured to the point of agreeing to do deeds that the child could not, such as hurting others or inflicting pain. Now, to be told he or she is a demon reinforces the belief that the

protector is evil. A protector may have a demonic influence attached to it, but trying to deliver from a protector will not bring any results or healing and may cause more trauma.

My point is that there needs to be an understanding of both the psychological and the spiritual, and wisdom about the horrendous effects of trauma on the human soul, in the healing of the spiritual aspects of DID and ritual abuse. Can Jesus heal the ritual abuse survivor? Certainly! I would not be alive or writing these articles if this were not the cornerstone of my faith and being. I personally believe that only the deep, caring, compassionate love of our Heavenly Father can bring healing to the horrors of ritual abuse. The knowledge that Jesus WILLINGLY suffered the horrors that I did on the cross, that He was able to take those experiences into His own body for me and understands FIRST-HAND what I underwent (I believe that the cross was ritual trauma to the deepest degree) has been the MOST healing realization that I have ever had. That God loved me that much. It is humbling, and awe-inspiring. He wasn't FORCED to undergo it as I was. He CHOSE to, to save me. To feel the pain that I suffered, so that "by His stripes I might be healed."

I also have found that I do my own best spiritual warfare for myself, since I know best who and what is inside, and who needs healing. I have gone to my local church, and was led to ask for the annointing of oil, as I prayed and confessed before others and renounced every satanic ceremony that I remembered being part of. The most painful ones were the ones I remembered as a youth and adult VOLUNTEERING to go through, in order to rise in status. I had to come to grips with this reality, that I ASKED and INVITED the demonic into my life at those points. I then asked Jesus to deliver me. It was very quiet, peaceful, and non-threatening. And this time, there was no laughter, because I was in touch with the memories that had allowed the demonic in. The demonic will not leave if it believes that it has "rights" and I had to break those rights. I have also done this for my children, and broken spiritual and soul bonds with my family of origin.

But I also know that while this brings healing of the spirit, grieving, feeling, and sharing myself with a trusted counselor is also important for healing of my wounded soul. That my willingness to hear the heart breaking memories that my inside people share, and comforting them, is so necessary. As well as my praying for the courage to accept parts that come out blatently wounded, or saying that they enjoy pain and things that horrify my sensibilities, and for the compassion to come near to this part of myself. This, also, is deliverance in its truest sense, as I allow God to reach deep into my heart and show me what is there, and then grieve before Him as I acknowledge my sin and receive forgiveness. This is deep deliverance of root traumas, as I pour the anger and rage as pain comes out, cry tears of sorrow at the lifetime of betrayals, and the gift I give to God is going to Him yet again for His mercy and healing touch. He has never failed me yet, and I believe His word. He never will forsake me, or any who come to Him.

I believe that God is a loving God who desires to heal the survivor body, soul, and

spirit. This is not a quick or easy process; I have yet to hear of any “instant cures” for severe childhood trauma, and would be very wary of any claims of it. To leave out any part of the healing process would be to have only partial resolution. Instead, healing for me has been a journey, filled with sorrow at times, but also great joy as I learn to trust in One who loves me, whose infinite care is the healing balm for the wounds of those who once hated me.

Copyright 2000 svali

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/49485 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Should I Confront My Abuser(s)?

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **October 1, 2000**

Trigger warning: discusses cult abuse, suicidal programming, and acting out on it in article

“Mom, I remember. I remember what happened. I remember my cult name, A----, I remember yours, Sh------. I remember Dr. Brogan and what happened with him.” “You’re making this all up, sweetie. Nothing happened.” “Then why can I speak German? I never heard it in the daytime, but you talked to me in the night. Why can I hear “Ich bin eine kinder macht sachens gut,” (I am a child who does things well) in my head? The words that you taught me?” “Maybe you’re psychic? You picked it up spontaneously?”

This is part of an actual conversation from over a year ago with my own mother. She knew I had never learned German consciously. Yet I spoke German to her for two minutes to prove to her I knew it. She does not speak any German consciously. Yet I have tons of memories of her speaking it at night. In fact, Svali, one of my nicknames at night given to me by her, is a Germanization of my English name. My mother is in denial, and unwilling to give up her own dissociative defenses, although her explanation of my German seemed to be reaching a bit far. I have not spoken with her since, although I pray for her and my sister daily, and one of my greatest hopes is that they will get out of the cult.

As a survivor goes through the process of remembering their abuse, the question frequently comes up, “Should I confront my abusers?” This is a difficult topic, and one in which I will share a few ideas based on both my experience and the experience of others with whom I have discussed this in the past. It is NOT meant to replace discussion with a qualified therapist, who can help a survivor make the best judgement on what is best in an individual situation.

People will frequently have a desire to confront their perpetrator at some point in the healing process. The reasons for this will vary with each individual. Often, a desire for validation is the motivation. The survivor is struggling with memories coming up that seem unbelievable, and they want to hear the words from the person who hurt them, “Yes, that happened, and I’m sorry.” It is human nature to seek validation on the outside for long suppressed trauma, since the remembering

process takes time. The full memory of a difficult event may take months, or even years, to be absorbed into conscious memory as recall of the event.

Rage will motivate some people. When memories of perpetration come forward, the long buried feelings of anger, that can border on the homicidal, may come out. The outrage that a young child felt at being used, abused, and betrayed in the horrendous ways that the cult does comes surging into the psyche. Anger is a natural reaction to violated boundaries, it is the signal that says “Something wrong happened to me, and it shouldn’t have!” When the boundaries have been not only violated, but completely trampled upon, as occurs with ritual abuse, the anger is correspondingly great.

I went through a short period of time feeling homicidal rage towards my mother as I remembered her abuse of me. But I had always CONSCIOUSLY remembered wanting to kill her and my stepfather when I was in high school, struggling with the desire to hurt them. I would push the feelings back over and over. Now, as an adult, it took concentrated effort in therapy and anger work to defuse the rage that I felt. I wanted a plane ticket one Christmas more than anything in the world, and the chance to “confront’ my mother and return to her the abuse that she had poured upon me as a child and youth.

This would have not been healthy, and thankfully I had a therapist and support system who cautioned me against a volatile confrontation at that time. Instead, as therapy progressed, I began to see that like me, my own mother was once a wounded child. As I prayed for her, I began the long journey towards forgiveness, which is still ongoing. I know the level of rage that I am describing may sound unusual, but in ritual abuse, the horrendous level of psychological betrayals, sexual abuse, and torture will create this kind of anger in the person, often locked within protector personalities.

I chose to not confront my mother while in this state. I went two years without any contact with her whatsoever. I also did this for my own safety and the homicidal rage has been resolved without needing to confront her at the time. Anger is part of the natural grieving process, and as a person grieves over a wounded childhood and their loss of innocence, it will be a stage that may be visited frequently as the survivor heals.

It may not be safe to confront an abuser who has the ability to reaccess the survivor. Meaning to confront the perpetrator, the person may instead be drawn back to the abuse that they are trying to resolve. In some cases, confrontation may be unsafe for the survivor of ritual abuse, and they need to choose to not confront, or only confront if there are safe people with them. Over three years ago, I called my mother. At the time, even though I had memories coming through of her abuse, they were vague. But then she gave a core command to my systems (she was my trainer the first three years of my life, and was one of three people who could go anywhere inside). The command was to “Come back or die”. I chose to suicide,

rather than go back to the cult , and ended up in an Emergency room fighting for my life after taking an overdose. At that point, I stopped all contact with her, and the suicidality was broken. And I began to truly heal and integrate.

It is important if a person does decide to confront a perpetrator that they maintain safety first. NEVER go alone to confront a known perpetrator. This could be a set-up for trouble or being reacccessed. Always have one or two safe, non-DID people with you. Be aware that the confrontation will probably result in denial. This is the universal reaction of most people still involved in the cult, who are amnesic. Most generational cult families are dissociative, to say the least, and they will NOT remember their abusing others, even when directly confronted with their abuse. Perpetration of others is often the LAST thing remembered psychologically when healing from suppressed trauma, according to several therapists I have talked to. Perpetration is a very psychologically painful issue to face, and the person confronted with their perpetration will deny, or dissociate from it.

When I lived in San Diego, I was investigated by a local authority for an allegation of being part of a cult group. I was still completely amnesic to my involvement. I invited the person doing the investigation into my home, offered them coffee, saw the evidence, and shook my head sadly over the “poor, ill woman” who was making the allegations. I stated unequivocally to the investigator that I was NOT part of any cult group, or involved in any cult activities. I even offered to have them come and stay with me for a month, to see if I was telling the truth! I was not lying, I was completely DISSOCIATED from my other activities. The investigator was convinced by me, and left my home sure I was telling the truth, because, yes, I was. My front people were, that is, while the buried knowledge of my other activities was inaccessible to me, even in the face of being confronted by a local authority, and later, an investigator for the DA’s office.

If the survivor is looking for a confession, or proof of their abuse from amnesic family members, they will be sorely disappointed. Unless others in the family are willing to look at their trauma, they will deny as strongly as I did in San Diego, or my own mother did when I confronted her. If the survivor is fragile, this denial may cause them to doubt their own memories. I remember early in my healing telling my stepfather that I was DID. He told me, “You are no more multiple than the chair I’m sitting on.” This was his reality, and at the time it caused me to wonder if my internal reality was made up. Yet I knew that I could NOT be making up the feelings or body memories that were coming. I finally concluded that he must have a pretty darn multiple chair, then, since I knew I was.

Sometimes a person will want to contact their perpetrator to offer forgiveness, especially far into the healing process. While this can be a valid reason, again, the forgiveness may be met with hostility and denial if the perpetrator is not able to cope with the realities of their own abusiveness.

Each person will have a unique situation. Some will find that confrontation may

clear the air for others in their family to remember hidden abuse. Others will decide that their family of origin or their perpetrators are dangerous, and should not be contacted for safety reasons. It is best to discuss this at length with a qualified therapist before reaching any individual conclusions. I have shared some of my own experiences with confrontation in my own life, in the hope to help others understand some of the reactions that may occur. Ritual abuse is one of the most serious forms of abuse that can occur, and often the individuals involved are dangerous to a survivor, or their agenda may be to try and draw the survivor back to the cult group. The choice to confront an abuser in this type of situation should not be taken lightly, and extreme caution used as well as the advice of a qualified therapist.

Copyright 2000 svali

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/50317 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Trauma Bonding : The Pull to the Perpetrator

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **October 12, 2000**

** please note: this article discusses perpetration, trauma, and cult programming. If you are a survivor, do not read if these subjects are triggering unless with your therapist or a safe person.

I will be writing on an extremely difficult subject, that of trauma bonding, also known as bonding to the perpetrator. This is difficult to do for several reasons. As a child, I was in a state of “captivity to my abuser” as delineated in trauma journals. I was raised in an isolative cult, and bonded heavily to my primary programmers, both my parents, and the trainers that worked with me. Then, as an adult, I continued the vicious cycle when I became a trainer, then a head trainer, and bonded others to me.

Trauma bonding is the issue that is left out of the equation when people ask “Why do cult members recontact their perps? Why do they keep going back for more abuse?” Without understanding chronic trauma, and the effects of trauma bonding, it is impossible to understand the dynamic involved. I will be sharing in this article both from personal memory of methods used, as well as sourcing to the literature on the subject. My greatest hope is that by understanding this often misunderstood subject, that others may be helped to pull out of its insidious pull.

If a person is unable to escape chronic, traumatic abuse, they will eventually begin to bond with their perpetrator(s). This has been well documented in the literature. It will occur because of the dehumanization of the victim, who may reach a state of feeling that they are “robotized” or nonfeeling, combined with a disruption in the capacity for intimacy caused by the trauma.

“ Trauma impels people both to withdraw from close relationships and to seeks them desperately. The profound disruption in basic trust, the common feelings of shame, guilt, and inferiority, and the need to avoid reminders of the trauma that might be found in social life, all foster withdrawal from close relationships. But the terror of the traumatic event intensifies the need for protective attachments. The traumatized person therefore frequently alternates between isolation and anxious clinging to others... “(1)

Many victims of severe and unrelenting trauma, whether domestic violence, incest, or ritual abuse, will find that they feel anxious when alone, and fear abandonment and isolation. The over-dependent characteristics are NOT a personality fault, but a result of the chronic abuse. This is often rooted in the fact that as a child, the trauma survivor was not only a CAPTIVE to their abuse, but they depended upon their perpetrator for food, shelter, or other necessities. In addition, with ritual abuse, a small child will often be abandoned for periods of time, to increase their dependency upon the very people who are abusing them. Any two or three year old will be almost insanely grateful to be rescued from a small box that they have been confined within for hours, or from the dark confines of a musty basement where they have been left for a day or two. Even the most abusive perpetrator will then become the child's rescuer, which is the foundation of trauma bonding. In trauma bonding, the person's abuser will be perceived as the one who delivers and rescues from the abuse, as well as the tormentor. This creates a psychological ambivalence that creates dissociation in a young child. The very helplessness and terror that are instilled by the abuse, cause the child (or later, the adult) to reach out to the only available hand for relief: the perpetrator. And the perpetrator WILL rescue and stop the abuse, or take the child out of the confines of their pain, but for a price: their unrelenting loyalty and obedience. This is the traumatic underpinning of all cult programming that I have seen: a combination of abuse and kindness; terror and rescue; degradation and praise.

This will be reinforced by the perceived power of the perpetrator in the cult situation: In situations of captivity, the perpetrator becomes the most powerful person in the life of the victim, and the psychology of the victim is shaped by the actions and beliefs of the perpetrator. (1)

This is survival at its most basic for the child raised in a cult setting, since failure to do this will cause further punishment and pain. The child will have seen people tortured or killed for disobedience, and so, literally, the perpetrator WILL have the perceived power of life and death over the child. If the child complies, and is "obedient" to the demands of their perpetrator and the group, they will be "rewarded"with freedom from punishment and continued life. The intense coercion to not only comply with, but to identify idealistically, with the group in this context is overwhelming. Almost all very young children in an abusive cult setting will begin to internalize their perpetrators in some form in order to cope with this reality. And this reaction will be rewarded heavily, if not done intentionally. Many cult handlers or trainers will pretend to "pass on their spirit" into the child, and will tell the child that they now "live within them" and "are always watching them." Frequently, the young child will then create an internal alter with the same name as the outside abuser or trainer.

I remember my second trainer, Dr. Brogan, saying that he was giving himself "immortality" by going to "live inside of me" when I created (with his help) an internal Dr.Brogan. This alternate personality became a head internal trainer inside, the same role that Dr. Brogan had on the outside, and part of healing has meant

learning that this internal Brogan is actually part of ME and learning that he no longer had to do his old “job” of reprogramming me internally. It has also meant breaking free of the hold that the GOOD memories of him, the kindnesses, the expressions of love and caring, held over me as well, since they bonded me to him, and to the group that he belonged to.

In the cult, it is not uncommon to have a “death ritual” where the child is brought to a near death experience. Afterwards, the “rescuers” are the trainers who talk soothingly to the child, massage him or her with oils, and tell the child that they “owe their life” to them. Not only that, but the warning is given: if the child ever tries to break free, they will return to the state of dying. Other set ups will include burying a child alive in a box or coffin; again, the perpetrators will rescue the horrified child who is almost out of their mind with terror (after several long hours) under one condition: undying loyalty to the group and the rescuers. Traumatized beyond belief, the child readily complies. This time of avowal and loyalty will be buried in a deep, subconscious layer of the mind, and the older adult or survivor may not be aware that part of the draw to the group is the belief that they “owe their life to them.” The subconscious fear needs to be dealt with: that leaving the group does NOT have to mean death, as they were taught in early childhood traumatizations.

After any training session, all Illuminati trainers know that the most important time is the “kindness bonding” after the trauma is over. The best trainers will have kind personas that will come out, talk lovingly to the “subject” and tell them how well they did, how needed the subject is to the group, how “special” and unique they are. Rewards such as a special food, drugs, or a sexual partner will be given as well. This “kindness” after the trauma is the hook that will often draw programmed personalities back to the cult, since some personalities may know only of the rewards and kindness, and will block the abuse. Heavily abused alters have less of an investment in returning to the cult; but heavily rewarded and praised alters will, and must be helped in therapy to see the whole picture.

Siblings and other children will often form a trauma bond with each other, much as soldiers in a war setting, or prisoners, will do. “Twinning” with a non-biological twin will carry this to an extreme. In different situations, the children are allowed to “rescue” each other, increasing their loyalty and bond to each other. They will go through the same programming and torture together, and will feel the bond of “surviving it” together. A “battlefield” mentality may literally develop, as friendships deepen in youth and vows to be willing to die for one another are given and taken. But all too often, these friends and twins and siblings are also forced to traumatize and wound each other, reinforcing another basic cult message: the one who loves you will hurt you.

The survivor who escapes the cult will feel a powerful pull back because of a lifetime of these types of distorted messages. The safe therapist, or non-DID friend, is not hurting them, and this may create a huge dissonance in a person who up until this point had always been taught that “love” meant “pain”. They may doubt

the reality of the caring messages of those around them, or need to test their support system over and over. And highly wounded alters, who were bonded to believe that they owe their very life to the ones who have abused them most, may still try to recontact former perpetrators, not believing that life can be different yet.

Undoing a lifetime of this type of teaching and training takes time, patience, perseverance, and prayer. It will stretch the most caring support person as they wonder why the survivor recontacts their abuser. The survivor will feel that they have betrayed themselves, if they find they have recontacted perpetrators, unaware of the powerful pull that trauma bonding may still have on certain alters inside. But with caring support and continued therapy, the survivor will begin to test old beliefs. Personalities formerly loyal to the father, mother, or other trainers may decide to cut off contact, and will go increasingly long periods without being reaccessed. They may come out in therapy, angry and disgruntled, or asking when the therapist is going to “put down their façade” and begin hurting them (this is another form of testing). The person’s whole world view may go through a 180 degree inside as they realize that love does NOT have to mean abuse, and the message reaches the deepest layers inside. Deep grieving over the abuse of trust, over the betrayals, over the intentionality of the trauma bonding and the set-ups will occur, as the person moves towards healing and away from the pull of their former abusers. The process takes time, often years, to occur, but the result, which is a life free from cult abuse, is well worth it.

Copyright 2000 svali

References: 1. Trauma : site at http://tor-pw1.attcanada.ca/~lrs/info/tr... excerpt from excellent book Trauma and Recovery (1997) by Judith Lewis Herman, MD

2. Attachment and Bonding Center of Oklahoma: site at http://www.abcok.org/attachment_disorder... Good discussion of attachment disorder and causes in infants

3. The Meadows press release: “The Case for Traumatic Bonding: The Betrayal Bond “by Patrick J. Carnes, Ph.D., C.A.S. Review of book that has an excellent discussion of trauma bonding and emotional betrayal; article has checklist of symptoms of trauma bonding.

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/51425 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Dealing with holidays

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **October 28, 2000**

“They’re going to hurt me,” the little said, crouched under the stairwell. It was my first Halloween out of the cult, and I was working at a health club. A friend was with me, trying to coax the little out from her hiding place. “No one’s going to hurt you, “ he said gently. “How do you know? They always have before”, she answered.

Certain times of the year can be difficult for survivors, especially anniversary dates of trauma, and holidays. The cult has definite days that are considered “special” and spiritual ceremonies are performed on those days. As a survivor breaks free of cult control, these days can still be difficult because of the intense memories associated with them. Also, holidays tend to be a time when groups gather together, and callback programming may be activated.

For a list of major holiday dates, go to http://www.survivorship.org/html/dates.h... . Many survivors have always had problems on certain dates, and didn’t know why until they found out it was a major holiday.

How does a person get through a difficult anniversary date? Or deal with a time of year that can trigger memories of past abuse? I thought that here, I would share a few ideas that have helped me personally. I am finding that the longer I am out of the cult, the less effect that dates have on me. Since that first difficult Halloween I mentioned above, I have not had major problems, once my inside people learned they were safe from harm. I still try to do things to make sure that holidays are less stressful for me, though.

1. Recognize the triggers: everyone has different things that might trigger them during a holiday time. Some people are affected by the smell of a pine tree, for example, or the sight of decorations. Knowing your personal sensitivities, and preparing yourself for them, or trying to avoid some if possible, can help. While I cannot avoid the ads and displays in stores, I can choose to be aware that they do bother certain people inside, talk to them about it, and choose to ignore the displays, looking the other way.

2. Allow littles or other inside parts to discuss their fears about the date. This is best done in therapy, although there may be times, such as the Health club

incident mentioned above, when this isn't possible. Letting inside people draw their concerns, and slowly share their memories of the date, can go a long way to deactivating the fear around the date. Grieving over painful memories associated with the day may occur too; many survivors battle deep depression on anniversary dates. Knowing this can happen, the survivor can try to take extra good care of themselves.

3. Eat nutritiously and get rest. This is sometimes ignored, but can really affect the reserve a person has for dealing with major stressors (and holidays count as one!). Taking vitamins, eating plenty of whole grains, fresh fruits and vegetables, and trying to get 8 hours of sleep a night (or more, if needed) can help when difficult times hit. Emotional stress is very tiring, and can tax a person's reserves. Try to build these reserves up during anniversary times.

3. Try to lower your stress level. Anniversary times are NOT the time to overload or do too much. This might be the time to plan for vacation time from work, taking a sick day, or otherwise bringing down the outside stressors. The past few years, I did NOTHING on Halloween except stay home with my family, and plan to do the same this year. I have a day with nothing planned at all.

4. Stay with someone safe. A safe friend, who can help ground you if memories hit, or the date is overwhelming, can really help. Preferably someone who is not a survivor, since one person's fear can occasionally feed another's. If the friend is cheerful, encouraging, and able to help you engage in relaxing activities, so much the better.

5. You may want to schedule extra therapy sessions if needed during a major date if memories are flooding, or it is difficult to cope. This is a time to reach out for help if a person is feeling overwhelmed.

6. Distraction: try to plan some simple, light hearted or relaxing activities. I like watching funny movies on certain days, since they distract me. Drawing , playing music, or baking can be activities that distract. Telling jokes with friends might be another. Each person has their own favorite stress relievers.

7. Try relaxation techniques. If panic is near, certain relaxation techniques can help. Abdominal breathing, slowly, can help break a panic attack. A warm bath in scented water, or a hot shower; a cup of tea (herbal, such as Chamomile), or even going for a massage can all be tension breakers. Giving yourself a manicure might help. Each person has routines that relax them, find those and utilize them. One of my personal favorites is hiding under the covers with a good book, and munching on pretzel sticks. My littles feel safe doing this, believe no one can see them under the covers, and the fear level can go down dramatically. The reading is distracting as well.

8. Make a new, happy tradition. Even though I have dates that are filled with painful childhood memories, I have chosen to start new, happy traditions. On Christmas, I have cupcakes. On Halloween, I put up Thanksgiving decorations. And try to do something especially fun. This can build in new, positive experiences and memories on dates where previously there were only negative ones. And my outside children love it; it is building happy memories for them as well of these dates.

These are a few tips for getting through difficult dates. I welcome suggestions from others on more tips that have helped them. It is possible to make it through holidays, and with time, the fear can lessen as they approach. With outside accountability, work in therapy, and internal healing, holidays can be a safe time.

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/52649 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Book Review: Cover Up Of The Century

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **November 12, 2000**

Every once in a great while, a book comes out that is a standout in its field. One that is well written, that teaches, educates, and leaves the reader thinking for days afterwards about its subject. One that challenges the reader to overcome biases and misconceptions. And recently, such a book was published.

The book? "Cover up of the Century: Satanic Ritual Crime and World Conspiracy" by Daniel Ryder. If you don't have a copy yet, I suggest you go to your local bookstore, or Amazon.com online, and get one. This is one of the better researched and documented books on the topic of ritual abuse that I have seen.

Ryder has a background in investigative journalism, and it shows. Piece by piece, he discusses the evidence available that shows the reality of ritual abuse, and builds his case throughout the book. In fact, I would challenge anyone with an objective mind to read this book, and be able to deny the overwhelming evidence presented that: a) ritual abuse is real b) recovered memories are real, and are documented to be reliable c) there has been a large amount of cover-up of the evidence available in high profile cases such as the Franklin case in Omaha, Nebraska. d) There is firm evidence of mind control techniques, organization and planning in occult groups

Mr. Ryder meticulously documents the evidence with research and in-depth interviews throughout his book. From government officials to police investigators, survivors of occult ceremonies to concerned parents, psychologists to lawyers, his extensive research and fact finding combine in this book to draw a compelling picture: ritual abuse is real, it is happening, and it is organized. He refutes statements by Lanning of the FBI that ritual abuse has no evidence with literal archives of cases of ritual abuse that have gone to court and been successfully prosecuted. I love the first chapter which asks "Where's the Proof?" then proceeds to answer the question. Studies are quoted, officials discussed and documented cases of ritual crime are given.

Ryder's background research on some of the leading members of the False Memory Syndrome Foundation (FMSF) is a thought-provoking chapter, as the "syndrome" is exposed as having no reality according to clinical experts in the field.

Also, the less than savory background of some of the founding members and "experts" recruited by the FMSF are revealed.

I believe this book should be recommended reading for anyone who thoughtfully asks the question "If ritual abuse is real, where is the evidence?" The evidence is there, the experts are speaking out, and court cases prove that RA is a real phenomenon. I am grateful that Mr. Ryder took the time to interview and research this topic, and share what he found with the general public.

"Cover Up Of The Century" can be found at: http://www.amazon.com/exec/obidos/ASIN/0...

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/53556 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Are the Illuminati taking over the world?

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **November 25, 2000**

Please note: this article mentions Christianity and prayer in detail.

What I will be writing on is a controversial topic, one that cannot be answered easily. If a person states that the Illuminati are planning to rule the world, many in the media immediately label the person as a "conspiracy theorist" with the wild-eyed look of Mel Gibson in the movie of that name. Or accuse them of "fanatical fundamentalist Christianity" as if that were an epithet (oh, that we lived in a world where that was considered highest praise instead of a term of shame).

On the other hand, to ignore the evidence that appears to be accumulating worldwide would take either a large dose of denial (which is apparently available in maximum doseages in many media quarters) or a desire to ignore the obvious.

Other factors also complicate answering this question readily.

1. Members who are survivors of this group, and who leave, are reporting what they were taught within the text of cult programming. It can be difficult at times to separate cult rhetoric from the actualities that are ocurring, or events may be interpreted with a bias due to the programming.

2. People will also be influenced by other factors, including : their core beliefs about humanity, religious faith, the nature of good and evil, and the possibility of organized abuse on a global level.

I readily admit to all of the biases above, and ask that the reader be aware of this. I am still trying to undo the influence of a lifetime of being taught lies, lies which I once believed whole heartedly. Lies which make it difficult even now to sort truth from fiction, teaching from fact.

But I also believe it is important to share what I know about the agenda of what I believe is one of the most destructive organizations operating today.

Until the age of 38, I was a programmer with this group, and as such I was aware

of much of the underlying agenda behind the programming. I had to be. I was teaching other trainers to do their jobs better, more efficiently, and as a former member of the group, totally "sold out" on the idealogy that motivated me, I became excellent at what I did. The reason? I believed that the group would rule the world within my children's lifetime. In fact, I was told that my children would be leaders in the New order, which would be brought in by the middle of this century.

I was taught this from infancy on. My parents believed it, the leaders around us taught and believed it. And the things that I saw certainly showed great organization and concentrated effort towards this goal.

What things did I see that indicated this? There were several:

I saw a large amount of money being used to fund the projects of this group, funds that poured in from around the northern hemisphere and the world. Couriers were sent to the corners of the globe, and many of the top financial institutions had a vested interest in bringing this "new world order" to pass. This was discussed in leadership meetings; shown in videos to members of the group (such as the grainy films I saw in the 1960s showing a large round table with 13 members sitting around it, and the words "these are your leaders" spoken as the members rose and pledged allegiance to the coming new order. I will not mention the figures shown in this film in order to avoid the claim of "libel" but they were well known, influential, and many were behind the banking system of the modern world.

The Illuminati are funding this coming world order quietly, behind the scenes. They believe that money not only "talks" as the saying goes, but buys media coverage, or silence; protection; and the influence needed to shape our modern world. "As the economy goes, the nation will go," I was taught in my teens by leaders in this group. They are practical pragmitists, in spite of their occult bent, who understand the motivation that drives much of mankind: greed, or the desire to gain wealth and power.

Other indications of the worldwide agenda: The Illuminati have been slowly linking themselves with other world wide occult and religious organizations over the years. There are no press releases announcing the merger of Illuminist intellectualism with a local coven's leadership, but this has been occurring with regularity over the past decades. They have been funding paramilitary groups, extremist groups, and any groups with an agenda that includes hatred, ego-centricism, racism, or other isms to an extreme.

They are funding educational institutions, believing, and rightly so, that the youth of today will be molded by their education. This influence is subtle, but certain classes have been opened up, or certain instructors brought in, due to the subtle influence of quiet businessmen who has contributed heavily over the years. Again, the cynical pragmatism of the Illuminist leadership comes out, as they wield influence

with financial power; power gained, unfortunately, through their esoteric practices and contracts with evil.

Local and national media have been influenced for years by their financial pull. I was taught that the average person would be slowly and unknowingly "edged towards" acceptance of more and more immorality and idolatry. All a person needs to do is read or look at a magazine from the 1950's and compare it to those on the market today; to watch a movie from 50 years ago (when John Wayne was considered "action") compared to a modern tale of violence and spirituality; or compare the changes in modern television programs to see that the media has had an enormous (and, I was taught, calculated) impact on society.

The Illuminati have not created our modern society's ills or weaknesses. But they have encouraged and exploited them, often laughing at the gullibility and lack of moral fibre of the "average citizen". We as human beings have created the familial and social climate that is present today in our country. More and more, this is a climate adversarial to fundamental Christianity and morality. Mankind without God will turn to fill the vacuum, and the Illuminists and other occult groups have rushed to fill it.

Are the Illuminati out to rule the world? Yes, and this is what they teach their members. They are working avidly towards this goal even as I write. Will they succeed? Not if our nation turns to prayer and repentance, and asks the mercy of God on the world. The Bible teaches that only God knows when the end times will come, and also teaches that God is holding back that time in order that "none may perish", that all may have a chance to repent and turn to Him. This kind of faith can prevent the domination of evil in a world that often seems hopelessly snared in the coils of the enemy. The choice is up to us. God offers the choice, and we must decide to take a stand and pray. To pray for our nation, to pray for individuals caught in groups that teach lies and deception. To pray for ourselves, for the spiritual strength to resist evil when it occurs and to choose righteousness and the love of Christ instead of selfishness. To be those who are not merely bystanders, watchers of moral decay, in a world where evil won because "good men did nothing", but instead to be those who follow Jesus and "did something" to make a difference.

c. 2000 svali

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/54987 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

The search for a good therapist

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **December 12, 2000**

Searching for a good therapist "You aren't DID," the therapist announced. I felt immense relief. This was a specialist in working with PTSD and DID, and the referral for a large Christian counseling group in Southern California. "You couldn't be," she continued, "because I lose time when I become uncontrollably angry, and I'm not DID." I blinked at looked at her. She then proceeded to disclose during the next half hour about her childhood of torture by her older brother, including sexual abuse, and his forcing her to help him cut up small animals. Knowing that children often learn from their parents, I asked her the logical question. "What were your parents like?" "I don't know. I don't remember them at all. It's a complete blank." I went home that day, and told my husband I had decided not to see this specialist in DID anymore. He angrily asked me if I was avoiding therapy. "No, I'm just worried when I'm healthier than the therapist", I answered.

This is a true story from much earlier in my healing process, and shows the problem that faces survivors of severe childhood trauma when they are looking for a qualified therapist. The "experts" may not be as good as claimed. Large full page ads in the phone book proclaim a therapist's expertise, while others are given as a referral from an organization when called. Telephone numbers can be gathered from the net, from professional organizations, and from friends. But how does the person dealing with a wounded psyche know which is the competent therapist? To complicate the process, how does the survivor believe that they DESERVE good therapy, or recognize it when it is present (or its absence)? This article is an attempt to help answer some of these questions.

First, the problem of insurance needs to be addressed. If a person has insurance coverage, they may need to contact their provider first for a referral. Often, there will be several options given, and the client will need to choose one.

Others survivors have no insurance. In this situation, which is all too common, they may be at the mercy of a MHMR system that in some localities (but not all) refuses to treat DID, or free clinics where the quality of care may vary from marginal or poor to excellent. Sometimes, therapy can be received through Medicaid, or Medicare if the person is on disability, and the survivor can contact therapists who take these plans for reimbursement. Okay, insurance is looked at, now how do you

find a therapist?

Try asking friends who have been HELPED by therapy, and are getting better. This is a great credential for any therapist. You can also try contacting the ISSD (link is available under "links" here) for a list of therapists in a locality. The ISSD does not guarantee that the therapist is competent in working with DID or trauma, only that they are a member of their organization, but it is a starting place.

Organizations that work with survivors of trauma may also be able to give a referral, as well as hospitals and/or units dedicated to DID and trauma. Therapists who are well known and respected, and known to be safe, can be another source of a possible referral.

Think about whether you would be more comfortable working with a female or a male therapist, before starting to interview one, since this may narrow your choices down.

The next step is the phone interview. Before seeing a therapist, try doing a brief interview with them, and ask a few questions. Your goal should be to do a phone interview with at least 3 therapists initially. Questions you might ask on the phone should include: *Are they accepting new clients? How long is the wait before being seen?

*What about fees and how insurance claims are handled? Check whether the fee is paid up front and the client contacts their insurance for reimbursement, or the therapist handles billing. You may also need to contact your insurance company for PREAUTHORIZATION in order to be reimbursed. This means the insurance company wants to approve the therapist first, or they won't pay you if they see them. Does the therapist have a sliding scale if there is no insurance? How long are sessions? Does the therapist ever go over, or give extra sessions, and if so, how does he/she handle billing? How far away is the therapist's office from where you live?

*Experience: what kind of credentials does the therapist have? Experience working with survivors of trauma and/or ritual abuse? Do they understand DID? What kind of license do they hold (LPC, MSW, marriage and family counselor, etc.)? What school did they go to? How long have they been a therapist?

*How available is the therapist? How does he/she handle crisis situations, or after-hours calls? Suicidal ideation in the client? Does the therapist work alone, or with a group that has rotating call? How does he/she view hospitalization? The role of medication? How far ahead should appointments be cancelled (24 hours is usual)?

*Discuss their personal philosophy of healing: how they became interested in working with survivors of trauma, how they view the healing process, and how they

help clients work towards this goal. What is their belief/faith system? Do they pray with clients? How do they view spiritual warfare? Are they directive or nondirective ? What do they do when a client disagrees with them, or the direction therapy is going? Do they believe that ritual abuse is real? How do they help clients deal with flashbacks? What does he or she feel about integration (or not)? Does she respect the client's wishes in this area? How does the therapist feel about switching during a session? Are they willing to learn more? Go to conferences?

If the phone interview goes well, and both of you feel that you could work together, then the next step would be a personal interview at the therapist's office. Here, you can see the therapist in his or her working ambience. Remember, the therapist is working for YOU, not the other way around, and it is okay to go with your gut instincts. You deserve to find someone that you feel comfortable working with. At this point, you might want to ask: How does the therapist take care of his/herself to avoid burnout? Do they have supervision, or others they can vent to? Do they have a sense of humor? What are their views on boundaries? Giving hugs? Confidentiality? What will they do if you see each other in a public place?

Is the office comfortable? Private?

Ask yourself: how is the therapist relating to me? Do I feel I could become comfortable working with him/her? Am I treated wiith respect? Does the therapist listen non-judgementally?

Once you have found a therapist that you feel comfortable with, as time goes on, it also helps to have realistic expectations of the therapy process. Ritual abuse is a severe type of abuse, and the therapy process is often long and involved. It is important to not expect that the therapist will be able to "fix you" or "make it all better," instead, the client needs to realize that THEY will be the one making changes, with the therapist as a supportive facilitator. Also, a therapist cannot and should not "reparent" the survivor, who may have had an emotionally deprived childhood. Instead, the survivor will need to learn new self-nurtering skills, and practice them while at home and between visits.

A good therapist is an invaluable aid to the healing process, and it is well woth the time and effort to find one. The therapist I mentioned at the beginning of my article only lasted two visits, but later, I learned to ask the questions above, and to be careful in screening who I saw. I am glad I have, because over the past few years I have met excellent professionals who are competent, caring, with good boundaries, and who have made a huge difference in my own healing process. I believe that all survivors deserve good therapy during the process of healing from ritual abuse. My hope is that this article will help others in their search for a therapist, and that they can avoid the pitfalls that I went through early in my own search.

Copyright 2000

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/55601 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Who and What is the Illuminati?

Author: **Svali**
Contributor(s): **HJ Springer, editor of centrex news ezine**
Published on: **December 20, 2000**

Recently, HJ Springer, the publisher of Centrex, did a series of interviews with me by email. He is now publishing them at his site, and I decided to share one of the articles for a couple of reasons: it will help clarify some information, and will also help readers understand my viewpoints. Other articles, and the archive of my book "Breaking the Chain" are available free of cost at his site at www.centrexnews.com. Here is the article, reprinted with permission.

Who and What is the Illuminati

It doesn't upset me to write on the topic of the Illuminati, I was explaining why I write under a pen name, that is all.

I received a letter recently in which it was alleged that I write under a pen name because I'm a phony, which is not true at all. I am a freelance writer on the side (I write for nursing magazines and publications on health topics that have NOTHING to do with abuse) and understand the need for fact checking, so no offense is taken at your wanting to know my background. In fact, it shows you are a responsible editor, which I admire. I have nothing to hide. My story is 100% true.

I have gained no money for disclosing; I do NOT go on talk shows, I am unknown and prefer it this way. I have absolutely no secondary gain from doing this, other than the medical bills for my children, which means I work three part-time jobs.

This is to answer the skeptics who say that people disclose for: sympathy (I don't want any and don't need it. I made choices and mistakes in my life, and am now involved in restitution); money (I earn $20 a MONTH for my site on Suite 101. I earn $150 to $250 an article when I write on Women's health. Guess which topic I write on more frequently? Yep. Women's health, on completely non-abuse issues. The editors of the Nursing magazines and women's magazines don't know about the other topic I write on, another reason I write under a pen name.) I don't write for fame. Instead, if my co-workers knew about my past, I risk losing my job. I have everything to lose by disclosing, everything to gain by being silent.

But I also know that this kind of child abuse must be stopped. As a Christian, and as one who stands against child abuse, I have decided to speak out against cult abuse by writing articles that expose it. I also know that there are a number of people outspoken on this topic who have published, and they could possibly be back-up information for you. I don't know any of them, since I have no contact with other survivors other than my own family, but it is a possibility.

Anyway, to your questions:

Q: Svali, I think our readers are wondering 'Is the Illuminati a religion, secret society, satanism or is it a combination of it, or something different all together, or more sinister?'

A: The Illuminati is a group that practices a form of faith known as "enlightenment". It is Luciferian, and they teach their followers that their roots go back to the ancient mystery religions of Babylon, Egypt, and Celtic druidism. They have taken what they consider the "best" of each, the foundational practices, and joined them together into a strongly occult discipline. Many groups at the local level worship ancient deities such as "El", "Baal", and "Ashtarte", as well as "Isis and Osiris" and "Set".

This said, the leadership councils at times scoff at the more "primitive" practices of the anarchical, or lower levels. I remember when I was on council in San Diego, they called the high priests and priestesses the "slicers and dicers", who kept the "lower levels happy". This is not to offend anyone, it only shows that at the leadership levels,they often believe they are more scientifically and cognitively driven. But they still practice the principles of enlightenment.

There are 12 steps to this, also known as "the 12 steps of discipline' and they also teach traveling astral planes, time travel, and other metaphysical phenomena. Do people really do this, or is it a drug induced hallucination ? I cannot judge. I saw things that I believe cannot be rationally explained when in this group, things that frightened me, but I can only say that it could be a combination of cult mind control, drug inductions, hypnosis, and some true demonic activity. How much of each, I cannot begin to guess. I do know that these people teach and practice evil.

At the higher levels, the group is no longer people in robes chanting in front of bonfires. Leadership councils have administrators who handle finances (and trust me, this group makes money. That alone would keep it going even if the rest were just religious hog wash).

The leadership levels include businessmen, bankers, and local community leaders. They are intelligent, well educated, and active in their churches. Above local leadership councils are the regional councils, who give dictates to the groups below them, help form the policies and agendas for each region, and who interact with the

local leadership councils.

At the national level, there are extremely wealthy people who finance these goals and interact with the leaders of other countries. The Illuminati are international. Secret? By all means. The first thing a child learns from "family, or the Order" as they are called, is "The first rule of the Order is secrecy". This is why you don't hear from more survivors who get out. The lengths that this group goes to, to terrify its members into not disclosing, is unbelievable.

I have seen set ups (oh, yes, they set up fake deaths, etc.) where a person was "burned alive" to teach the children not to tell. They are told that this is a traitor, who disclosed,and now he is being punished. (The person wasn't really a traitor, and is in a flame proof vest, but the vision of a person on fire and screaming remains with 3 and 4 year old children for a lifetime). And, when they are adults, even if they DO leave, scenes such as this mean they won't tell many people for fear of being traced and punished.

Because I helped create a lot of set ups as an adult trainer, I became somewhat cynical, and have chosen to disclose as a result. Although I do fight intense fear even now at times. Try being buried in a wooden box for a period of time (it may have been minutes, but to a four year old it is an eternity), and then when the lid is lifted, being told, "if you ever tell, we'll put you back in forever". The child will scream hysterically that they will NEVER EVER tell. I was that child, and now I am breaking that vow made under psychological duress. Because I don't want any other children to go through what I did, or have seen done to others.

Yes, the Illuminati are organized, secretive, and extremely wealthy at its upper levels. They are not stupid, or poor people running around dabbling with witchcraft. To see them as this is a huge misconception.

Q: How widespread would you say this group has infiltrated our society in terms of number of people? Are they present in every town or city throughout North America? Do they take or recruit outsiders? And how far does this group go to keep this knowledge secret?

A: I think I answered some of the secrecy above. The Illuminati are present in every major metropolitan center in the United States. They have divided the United States up into 7 major regions, and each has a regional council over it, with the heads of the local councils reporting to them. They meet once every two months, and on special occasions.

A metropolitan region may have as many as 10 to 30 groups within it, and rural areas will often have meetings with other local groups, and report to the metro leadership council. They almost NEVER recruit outsiders, although ocassionally they will buy children or a family from Asia, for example, and keep them under

constant surveillance in return for saving their life from the local Mafia. They are threatened with being returned to this group if they ever disclose.

They also have excellent lawyers who are well paid to help cover their tracks. There are also people in the media paid to help keep stories from coming out. I know of three people in San Diego who worked for the Union Tribune who were faithful Illuminists, and who also wrote frequent articles attacking local therapists who worked with RA (Ritual Abuse) survivors. I remember leadership boasting they had "run so-and-so out of town" because of a media blitz, and being quite happy about it.

The Illuminati believe in controlling an area through its: banks and financial institutions (guess how many sit on banking boards? You'd be surprised) Local government: guess how many get elected to local city councils? Law: children are encouraged to go to law school and medical school. Media: others are encouraged to go to journalism school, and members help fund local papers .

Q: Is this the same Illuminati that was created by Adam Weishaupt in Germany?

A: Weishaupt did not create the Illuminati, they chose him as a figurehead and told him what to write about. The financiers, dating back to the bankers during the times of the Templar Knights who financed the early kings in Europe, created the Illuminati. Weishaupt was their "go fer", who did their bidding.

Q: Do you have anymore info about the political goals, if any, of the Illuminati?

A: This article I wrote for Suite101.com addresses it: "Are the Illuminati taking over the world?" You can reprint it, or part of it, as long as you give credit to Suite 101 and/or a link back to the site.

Q: How do Illuminati members recognise each other?

A: Since it is generational, its easy. It isn't hard to recognize one's father, mother, siblings, and neighbors and friends one has grown up with. The Illuminati use telephone trees to contact members when a meeting is to occur.

A month or two ahead of time, leadership council plans dates and places for meetings for different groups under their umbrella. They then call local leaders a week ahead of time (the high priest or priestess). Two days ahead, these people call their head members, who then call the people under them. A person knows their status in the group by how far ahead of time they know a meeting date. The lower in the group, the less they are trusted with information, and the less "lag time" before meetings.

Sometimes, certain pieces of jewelry, such as a ruby ring or an oval emerald, might be worn if meeting someone in a public place at a prearranged assignation. But most accessing and contact is done through family members or close friends.

When I lived in San Diego, my entire family of origin and my four closest friends were all members of the group. It wasn't hard to reach me, to say the least. My spouse was also a member. The Illuminati believe in arranged members, and do NOT allow their members to marry a nonmember. If someone says their spouse isn't in it, they aren't Illuminati, or they are in denial. This was an unbreakable policy.

My marriage was arranged by the local leadership council to another ranking member. I didn't want to marry him, because I didn't love him, and I will never forget what I was told by Athena, my mentor at the time (she held the second position on the council): "That's for the best, then, because he can never hurt you or control you." Or, my mother's timeless advice given when I was 12 years old: "Never fu-- someone lower than you. They will drag you down. Always choose someone higher than yourself."

She was an ambitious woman, to say the least, determined that I would do well in this very political group. I took her advice, and Athena was my lover and protected me from some of the SOBs on leadership in San Diegom especially Jonathan, the head trainer. She taught me his weaknesses and how to get around him, and stood up to him for me. I wouldn't have survived otherwise.

These are NOT nice people and they use and manipulate others viciously. They cut their eye teeth on status, power, and money. I have given all of that up to leave, and am glad to be away from it now, although I do miss some of my friends, and at times I miss the respect of being a leader. But I am learning to live a whole new life without the constant background of "family" monitoring and telling me what to do.

Know what the hardest part of getting out was? The freedom. Not having anyone telling me what to do. I literally went through a period of adjustment, felt wobbly, trying to figure out what I wanted to do. It was hard, since I was used to reflexively checking my decisions with leadership and Jonathan and my husband.

Freedom can be difficult, believe it or not, and took quite a period of time to adjust to. I believe that the inability to deal with it often draws people back in. I hope this information is useful to you.

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/56560 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

An interview with Brice Taylor (part one of two)

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **January 2, 2001**

Brice Taylor is a well known survivor of MK-ULTRA programming who has spoken out against ritual abuse. She is the author of the book "Thanks for the Memories: the truth has set me free", an expose of governmental intrigue and the use of "sex slaves" at high levels. She is also the owner of EEG Spectrum, a center for healing through the use of brainwave training in North Carolina. She has kindly agreed to be interviewed for this article, and to share her thoughts on this topic. She is well worth listening to, and is a courageous person whose fight for herself and her daughter are an inspiration.

Q. Brice, how did you come to speak out against ritual abuse and/or mind control? What led you to the decision? How did you find the courage to speak out?

A: I began to speak out about ritual abuse because I was healing from being a victim of it and my recovery seemed to require it. Since I am a mother of three children, I felt compelled to speak out in order to alert the public to what was happening and to help others who were suffering from the same abuse. I never did take the cautious route. My life seemed to always be in danger and so I continued to speak out in an attempt to gain safety and to bring help to my children and others. I don’t know that I ever really had what one would call "courage" that motivated my speaking out, but my maternal instincts were/are so powerful that I just did what I had to do—and that required doing some things that most folks find scary. Like being willing to risk my life to tell the truth publicly. For me not doing anything was much more frightening, because I knew that this abuse would continue to go on and on until it was exposed and stopped. My love for my children and for humanity continues to be my motivator. God continues to be my strength.

Q: How did you begin to remember your own trauma? Were there any factors that triggered this memory process? Have you sought validation for your memories? If so, what have you found?

A: Back in the early 80’s I believe I began ‘unconsciously’ remembering, but at that time it was still difficult for the memories to reach all the way to my conscious mind, due to the mind control programming that, in those days, dictated my life. The initial attempts of my unconscious mind to divulge the secret activities I was involved in,

ended up causing me severe program- related migraine headaches. Once the unconscious experiences created a threat of divulging secrets that had been locked up securely for reasons of national security, I had an accident, a head on collision, where my head struck the windshield of the car. Although outwardly, I was not badly injured, this blow to my forehead seemed to cause both hemispheres of my brain to begin communicating with each other in a way that had not occurred before. Memories began flooding into my conscious awareness, closely followed by program commands to think I was just crazy, have migraines, call my controllers and report that I was remembering, and/or kill myself. Initially, I confronted my parents. That was grueling, but the truth was told. My mother cried when I told her my memories. I told her that she and the rest of my family were all a part of the abuse I had remembered. She never denied my memories, she said she believed me but couldn't remember. She was well along in her years by then and since she supported the funding of my first two books and told me to tell the truth no matter what, I believe that she believes this is all true, even in the absence of her own set of memories. Her tears spoke volumes to me. My mother actually wrote a chapter in my latest book, explaining her experience of my father being DID and of all of this familial abuse. I am grateful that my mother could help in this way because what she wrote has been helpful to other survivors and their families. My memories have been validated, in part, by intelligence sources. My government memories were validated even more for me personally when I began to have Intelligence agents approach me. On one occasion, a White House Intelligence agent was (mysteriously!?) seated next to me on an airplane in order to tell me not to name the names I was remembering and reporting. I didn't name the names for a few years when I gave my testimony in churches or presented before mental health professionals. One of the greatest validations for me came when I conformed to the White House Intelligence Agent's wishes and didn't name the names. Often after I spoke (and didn't name the names of my perpetrators), survivors and therapists met with me to name (in private) many of the same people who abused me. There were all sorts of threats over the years, too many to mention here, but one big threat that let me know I was absolutely on the right track, was when they burned down my office, with my EEG Spectrum equipment where I was doing the latest state of the art brainwave training with survivors. I suppose because this technology helps trauma survivors learn to stay alert and attentive and not dissociate, that they really didn't want that avenue of healing and freedom available to others! To insure that I knew this was not an accident, but a warning to cease and desist, they placed two bags of the ashes from the office fire at my home, where I could see them outside my kitchen window. Instead of retreating, I ordered three more EEG machines and soon had an eight-room office, where I could see more and more people receive the beneficial effects of this brainwave training! As survivors, we nearly have to play mind games to get through the backlash in one piece (peace) and certainly since we have been tortured and conditioned with torture, we are more used to upsets than most people. So we can roll with the punches, if we want to. I chose to do that. I would never have survived any other way. But that was then. Today it seems that it is easier to get out of organized perpetrator groups who are trying to control others because there are more professionals out there talking about ritual abuse, and mind control and many

more survivors are healing. We survivors are gaining a strong voice -- one that cannot be silenced.. I believe the truth is emerging as never before and it is a very exciting time. Years ago, I never could have imagined that in the year 2000, I would be given the opportunity to reach millions of people on Ch 13 News to tell them about ritual abuse and mind control and to be validated during this news segment by a retired Los Angeles FBI chief and a therapist who reported that she has helped 60 survivors who are saying many of the same things as me! The FMSF psychiatrist they interviewed, when asked directly if he was CIA, replied, "I don't know if I'm CIA, maybe they know I'm CIA." Now what kind of an answer was that? Many, many survivors are now more healed and their healing has paved a path for the greater truth of what is occurring to be brought to the light of public exposure. I believe, the experiences of survivors, when woven together, clearly identify many problems that need to be forefront in order to be resolved. More and more people are listening and the truth is emerging in a way I honestly never thought I would live to see. I am encouraged. (end of part one)

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/57616 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Surviving Torture

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **January 14, 2001**

*Important note: this article discusses abuse and torture. Please do not read if these topics are triggering.

Surviving Torture

I was four years old, and strapped to a chair. My arms, wrists, and feet had padded straps that immobilized them, and my neck and head were in a device that prevented movement. The woman came over to me, speaking German in a low, harsh voice. When I didn't respond correctly, she came closer to me, her angry face poised just above my terrified one. Slowly, methodically, she took the cigarette that dangled from her lips, and moved it towards my thigh, which was bare. She held the cigarette there as I screamed. The woman was my mother, and the small round scar is there to this day.

This is one of the most difficult subjects that I have written on, but any discussion of ritual abuse is incomplete without addressing it. It is a topic that is not popular, one that many would rather avoid. One that is glossed over in discussions of ritual abuse with words like "dysfunction", "trauma", "pain", or "abuse". But for the child growing up in a satanic or Luciferian cult group, there is only one word that describes the reality of what they experienced. That word is torture.

Children in these groups are the victims of physical, psychological, and sexual torture in its most extreme forms, and must learn to cope with this overwhelming reality. They must deal with the reality that the people torturing them are their parents, their grandparents, their aunts, uncles, cousins, and siblings, and the aftermath of shame and betrayal. This article is a look at the effects of torture on the person who experiences it.

The Canadian Center for Victims of torture (at http://www.icomm.ca/ccvt/effects.html) has a list of the psychological symptoms that occur in the aftermath of torture, which includes: "anxiety, depression, irritability, paranoia, guilt, suspiciousness, sexual dysfunction, loss of concentration, confusion, insomnia, nightmares, impaired memory, and memory loss. "

These symptoms occur as the individual struggles with the rage of the violation of their rightful boundaries, either physical or psychological. The nightmares are the unconscious seeking to resolve the hideous pain of this trauma; the suspiciousness and paranoia occur because the basic trust in humankind has been irrevocably broken. The person who has undergone and survived torture will never be the same again. Memory loss occurs as the psyche desperately attempts to block the horrors that the individual underwent, usually by dissociation or other blocking mechanisms, internally. The author goes on to state:

"Survivors of torture are often unwilling to disclose information about their experiences. They may be suspicious, frightened, or anxious to forget about what has happened. These feelings may discourage them from seeking the help they need. "

This article was written for medical personnel dealing with victims of torture under totalitarian regimes in South America and other countries, but the symptoms are the same for the survivor of ritual abuse. The individual often blames him /herself for the torture, especially if it occurred in early childhood. Torture creates a deep sense within the person that something is wrong with them, something that causes others to hurt them or abuse them. Advice to caregivers is given: "For example, it is important to remember that those seeking psychiatric help are healthy people who have been systematically subjected to treatment intended to destroy their personalities, their sense of identity, their confidence, and their ability to function socially…"

How often survivors of ritual abuse struggle against the very same things. Often they are bright, competent, high functioning people who would be considered gifted, but the destruction of self is so damaging, that only in rare cases will the person be able to reach their potentially socially or emotionally. The survivor of torture may fear medical procedures:

"Doctors (whom they may have encountered in prison advising the torturers about how much abuse the victim could endure or how to cause maximum pain without killing the victim) …"

Cult doctors perform this very function, and also will use their medical skills to repair the damage done after an especially intense session.

"Physicians need to understand that surgical and examination instruments and procedures may be those used in torture, so all procedures should be carefully explained. Some treatments, such as physiotherapy, need to be conducted with special awareness of possibly lower pain thresholds. "

Ritual abuse victims commonly report intense fear around medical procedures and exams for this very reason.

"Survivors of torture and their families may also lose some of the values and beliefs that may have sustained them before they went through trauma. They may be unable to trust people and, consequently, become disillusioned."

One of the universal struggles that survivors of ritual abuse and torture report is difficulty in the arena of trust and intimacy. Even for those who escape cult abuse, a pervasive fear of being abducted, reaccessed, or being returned to their abusers will instill mistrust in others. Only those who demonstrate over time their safety and trustworthiness will be allowed into the often small circle of those that the survivor trusts.

"Dr. Philip Berger, one of the founders of CCVT, has stated that when he began to conduct education on torture among those from the medical profession in 1977, he was met with disbelief. He was told that torture probably existed somewhere and was conducted sometime, but not to any significant degree that would require a specialized response. This denial works on many levels. Torture is a barbarous practice, one which most people would prefer to avoid. This avoidance occurs on at least three levels: denial on the part of the victim; denial on the part of the helper; and denial on the part of society as a whole. It is the extent of this denial which allows both the practice of torture and its effects to continue and endure.

If this is true about documented torture of the victims of totalitarian regimes around the world, how much more pervasive is the disbelief and denial about the ongoing torture of innocent children that occurs in occultic groups. Society often practices a complete avoidance of this topic, or a denial that it could occur, because to acknowledge it would mean leaving the "comfort zone" that most people live in.

The challenge of healing for the individual who has endured a lifetime of torture is that of: Acknowledging the feelings, including rage, which occur Acknowledging the learned helplessness that it caused Fighting the deep internal resistance to remembering, or acknowledging, what happened (not all events need to be remembered fully, but some acknowledgement of what occurred is an important part of healing and integration) Learning that the survivor is no longer helpless to change Learning that it was NOT the survivor's fault (survivors will often carry a low self image in response to torture) Learning to undo messages given under torture, and replace them with the truth Learning to overcome the fear induced by torture, to challenge old system of belief and old ways of acting Realizing that it wasn't God's fault (many survivors struggle with this at some point, asking why He allowed the torture to occur, or why THEY were the ones who had to go through it) Forgiving those who tormented the survivor (only after going through the steps above) Acknowledging the past, and then looking forward to a better now.

Torture often leaves lasting marks, both physical and psychological, on the survivor, but with time and support, it is possible to heal. One aspect of healing is becoming aware of the lasting effects of torture, which is only now beginning to be

documented in the medical literature, recognizing these symptoms if they occur, and taking steps towards alleviation and healing of the underlying causes.

Another aspect of healing will come as survivors of this extreme form of abuse become empowered to speak out, and as society overcomes its denial of what is occurring and begins to take action to stop the abuse that is occurring.

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/58400 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

An Interview With Jeannie Riseman

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **January 23, 2001**

Occasionally, there are survivors with a special gift who choose to use that ability to help other survivors. Jeannie Riseman is one of these people. She is a talented writer and editor, and her hard work is evident in the magazine "Survivorship", created by Caryn Stardancer, which Jeannie now edits.

Jeannie is also the creator of the Ritual Abuse Home Page, one of the oldest (and best!) resources on the web, whether you are a survivor learning about ritual abuse, or a support person or therapist seeking more information. She has spent hour after hour collecting resources and indexing them on her site.

Jeannie has graciously agreed to be interviewed, and to share some from her own past with Suite 101.

Q: Jeannie, how did you come to speak out against ritual abuse and/or mind control? What led you to the decision? How did you find the courage to speak out?

A: It was instinctual. When I got the very first abuse memory, one of my first thoughts was "The personal IS political." I started telling everybody under the sun and I haven't shut my mouth since.

Q: How did you begin to remember your own trauma? Were there any factors that triggered this memory process? Have you sought validation for your memories? If so, what have you found?

A: My parents and husband had died and my kids were grown and on their own. I had responsibilities to nobody but myself, which I think was really crucial.

Actually, I am one of the few people I know of who learned of the abuse in therapy. My therapist, who I trusted and liked, decided to try a silly little Gestalt-type exercise where the two people put their hands together and push. (Supposed to make saying "no" easier, or something.) Because he was so tall, he knelt down to be on my level and I went right into flashback to servicing a kneeling man when I was four. Poor guy had no idea why I was sobbing and non-verbal!

That unleashed a lot of memories, first of sexual abuse by one man, later of group and cult experiences. I have no external validation, perhaps because the generation above me is pretty much all dead. And ours was an oral tradition; we kept nothing in writing.

Q: What were your experiences with either/or any combination of: a) cult control and programming b) governmental mind control c) any other type of intentional abuse ?

A: About five years ago, I drew out an elaborate programming system, which I was able to write up. Slowly I came to believe that I was an early mind control experimental subject in New York City (in the '40's). In my early teens, I was shut down before I had been fully programmed. I believe that that project, or sub-project, was abandoned. I have never met anybody with programming that resembles mine.

I do not know the names of any people involved nor the locations where this took place, but I believe the personnel and site(s) were academic.

Q: Do you believe that there are organized groups that engage in this? Why do they do this to people, in your opinion?

A: Yes, without doubt. They do it for power, either for their own gain or for "national security."

Q: Many survivors struggle in their healing process with a society that doesn't believe them, their own internal pain, and invalidation from family members. What would you say to them? Any thoughts on these issues?

A: I choose to associate with people who do believe me at least most of the time. I don't engage with people who don't believe me - I just say "well, I guess we disagree" and drop it. There's a certain power in telling a person they can believe you are psychotic if they want to, that you don't care, and then acting completely sane and rational. I'm lucky in that all the people I really love believe me.

Finally, Jeannie shares some excellent ideas on how survivors can support one another, and pitfalls to avoid:

It's important to communicate as much as we possibly can to each other about our experiences - both the abuse and how we heal. The more knowledge we have, the more we can put our experiences in context, the better. Communication strikes at the very basis of the programming because it demonstrates that it is possible to talk and live to talk again. It counteracts isolation, the feelings of "craziness," and the lie that we belong to "them" eternally.

I think it is important to avoid looking to others to take away our pain or "fix" us, and equally important not to try and control other survivors. None of us has all the answers: only collectively can we build a knowledge base about how to live with dignity after such extreme abuse.

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/59452 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Can Recovered Memories Be Trusted?

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **February 3, 2001**

There is an open debate in therapeutic circles today, one that has members lined up on both sides, with those undecided waiting for the jury to come in. The topic of debate? Whether memories recovered in therapy can be trusted as valid. There are many sides to this argument, but one jury, at least, has delivered its verdict: a resounding "yes!". The decision of Judge Edward F. Harrington, in the U.S. District Court in Massachusetts, (www.jimhopper.com/memory-decision/) ruled that the recovered memories of a survivor of childhood sexual abuse were valid testimony in the court.

There is other evidence that recovered memories can be valid, and accurate. Dr. Jim Hopper, a practicing psychologist, in his article Child Abuse Memories: Empirical Evidence, Psychological Constructs & Scientific Progress discusses the fact that in some cases, there is empirical data (verifiable data) that directly corrobates recovered memories that occur in adulthood. He also discusses the fact that amnesia and delayed memory recovery for childhood sexual abuse is NOT rare; and that we often try to categorize this forgetting with psychological terms: amnesia, repression, or dissociation.

A study by D.M. Elliot in 1997 (Traumatic Events: Prevalence and delayed recall in the General Population) and published in the Journal of Clinical and Consulting Psychiatry (, 65, 811-820.) demonstrated that in a study base of 505 individuals, 72 % reported some form of childhood trauma. Of those 72 %, one third (32%) reported delayed memory retrieval. The more severe the trauma (such as witnessing the murder or suicide of a family member, sexual abuse, or being a combat veteran), the more likely that recall of the events would be delayed (ie there would be a period of no recall of the event at some point in the person's life). Interestingly enough, the main triggers for recall of the event later in life was NOT therapy, but a media event, such as a television show or movie, or an event in the person's life that resembled the original trauma. In fact, both therapy and sexual intercourse were the LEAST likely to stimulate memory retrieval according to the study. 1

Judith Hermann, a Harvard psychiatrist and author of Trauma and Recovery, also believes in the validity of recovered memory based on her research. In a study of

53 women engaged in outpatient therapy who recovered memories of childhood sexual abuse, 75 % were able to obtain outside corroborating data from other sources that the memories were true. Hermann also describes the fact that adult recall of traumatic events can vary from continuous recall, to a mixture of recall interspersed with periods of amnesia, to more extensive amnesia for events. The amnesi appears to be overcome by environmental triggers that recall the event. She also notes that many survivors also had corroborating evidence which they offered during the interviews.

Dr Bessel van der Kolk, a specialist in trauma and memory retrieval, has postulated that dissociated memories have four different phenomena occurring: the sensory and emotional fragmentation of the experience; the feeling of depersonalization during the experience (feeling "unreal" or "far away" from the event); ongoing depersonalization (spacing out in daily life), and finally, containing the traumatic material within fragmented ego states (dissociative disorder). He also notes that not all individuals who undergo trauma will develop chronic dissociation in response, and that individual responses will vary greatly.

Professor Ross Cheit at Brown University certainly believes in the validity of recovered memory, and at his web site www.brown.edu/Departments/ Taubman_Center/Recovmem/Archive.html The Recovered Memory Project, he includes archives of 80 cases of corroborated recovery memories. Many of these cases have evidence such as the guilty party ADMITTING to having sexually abused or otherwise victimized others who recovered memories later in life.

What about those who retract their stories? This has been used and reused in the media to show that recovered memories must be "false". But in an interesting study by Gonzalez, Waterman, et al at UCLA (1993), it was shown that that retracting did NOT prove that the abuse hadn't occurred. They studied a group of preschool children in which the children were absolutely confirmed and documented victims of sexual abuse. The perpetrator had confessed, and their was substantial physical evidence as well. In 25 % of these cases, the children later RECANTED their allegations, although 2/3 of these later redisclosed again. The researchers postulated that the recanting may have been a method of attempting to numb or escape from the psychological pain caused by acknowledging the trauma. This was in the context of support, loving parents, and caring concern. How much more difficult it can be for an adult survivor, who often faces familial hostility, denial, or shunning, to not want at times to swing into denial or recant allegations? The fact that recanting occurs does not invalidate the recovered memories, though, according to research.

Memory retrieval is a complex subject, and studies are still ongoing. But on one thing, the jury is in and decided: retrieved memories of abuse can be believed. The evidence, based on objective studies, over and over verifies this fact.

Resources: 1) Elliot, D.M. (1997)Traumatic Events: Prevalence and delayed recall

in the General Population) and published in the Journal of Clinical and Consulting Psychiatry , 65, 811-820. 2)Herman, J. L., & Schatzow, E. (1987). Recovery and verification of memories of childhood sexual trauma. Psychoanalytic Psychology, 4, 1-14. 3) van der Kolk, B. A. (1994). The body keeps the score: Memory and the evolving psychobiology of posttraumatic stress. Harvard Review of Psychiatry, 1, 253-265.

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/60632 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Finding A Safe House

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **February 17, 2001**

One of the greatest problems that confronts a survivor of cult abuse trying to escape is "Where do I go now?" Often, the person has been surrounded their entire lifetime by both their family of origin, who are members in transgenerational cult groups, and even their closest friends are frequently members. The person may need to make the difficult decision to flee the city they live in (or the rural area, since these groups also operate in the country) and move to a new area.

Alone, friendless, cut off from family, and frequently without funds, this person must try to make a new life, at a time when they are very vulnerable.

The lack of Safe Houses for a person trying to leave the cult has been an ongoing concern of therapists and pastors who work with survivors. There are several reasons for this relative lack, that include:

1) The time commitment needed: it is a true commitment of time and resources to decide to open one's home up to survivors, one unfortunately that many people simply are not willing to make.

2) Lack of understanding or training for lay helpers about DID and ritual abuse: many churches do not understand ritual abuse, and few lay people understand it without training. There are many misconceptions about DID and ritual abuse, ones that can be easily corrected with seminars. Dr. Jim Friesen and his associates at Shepherd's House in the Los Angeles area have created a model for the church community in reaching out to and helping survivors, one that I would recommend that all lay people and pastoral staff interested in working with ritual abuse survivors read.

3) Cult plants: it has been reported that frequently the cult will have members pose as caring, "Christian" supporters, who will offer their homes or even create "shelters" for ritual abuse survivors, but who then reaccess the survivor. This creates a fear for the survivor in knowing where to turn, or where a true safe house might exist. Unfortunately, there are those who prey on the vulnerable, and the survivor must use caution when agreeing to live somewhere.

4) Unhealthy homes: there are also frequent reports of noncult, but abusive situations that survivors find themselves in when they go to live with a supposedly "safe family". I have heard survivors report being locked in closets, enduring verbal abuse, physical abuse, and even sexual abuse in situations when they were placed in "safe houses". Others have told me of enduring living in homes filled with garbage and feces, which is another form of abuse.

Sharing this is not meant to frighten survivors, but to underline the need to exercise caution when looking for safe housing. Just because a person welcomes others into their home does not guarantee that they are safe.

This means that a survivor must be cautious when entering a new living situation. Some guidelines for looking for a true safe living situation might include the following:

*Is this place recommended by someone that I trust, and that I KNOW is safe, who doesn't have a hidden agenda?

*Is the place clean and habitable, within reason?

*Why does the family want to work with survivors? How did they become interested? What are the dynamics in the home? Do the spouses have a healthy, good relationship?

*What are the expectations of the survivor? Helping with household chores is fine, and so it keeping ones room and living areas clean. Daily hours of backbreaking "free labor", or an unpaid childcare service for 40+ hours a week without pay is not, especially if the survivor is still fragile.

*Does the survivor have access to competent, professional therapy? This will also be important in the healing process, and to help stay cult free.

* What is the practicing belief system of the "safe family"? I have heard of accounts of survivors being led into a new, nonsatanic cult group with abusive practices in a supposed safe house.

• How isolated is the living situation? Will the survivor have access to transportation at times, to get groceries or to therapy? How will this need be worked out?

• How will the family handle attempts by the cult to access the survivor? Safety issues? How will they also help the survivor prevent their own recontacting the cult? These issues should be discussed openly and honestly, and plans for dealing with these situations made. Often, survivors will leave a true safe home for fear of endangering family members, since the cult will often threaten the family the

survivor lives with. But normally, the cult will not kill outside people, they tend to threaten but not follow through, because they do not want police investigations.

• Is there outside accountability in the home to others, as well, such as a therapist or the pastor? Is the family willing to interact with the therapist, and learn about DID and ritual abuse? Or is their attitude a closed, "we know everything we need to know" attitude?

Anytime a survivor finds themselves in an unhealthy or abusive living situation, they HAVE THE RIGHT TO LEAVE. Coercion into staying in a living situation that is unsafe or unhealthy is wrong, and should be another indication that the situation is not a good one.

There are groups that are dedicated to helping survivors find safe housing. I will not list them here, but visiting some of the major newslists for survivors will give information. But any survivor should investigate carefully any living situation before entering into one.

Other resources for finding safe housing could include contacting therapists in your area with a known, national reputation for being safe, for resources; contacting local churches or known safe pastors with a good reputation, or contacting safe house lists that are known to be safe.

*Important note: I myself do NOT have lists of safe houses and cannot address individual questions about them. Thank you.

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/62636 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

How to Support a Survivor

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **March 10, 2001**

One of the most frequent questions that people ask me is, "How can I help a survivor?" This question comes from spouses, from friends, from church members, and represents the desire of caring people to be a help. Often, behind this question is the unvoiced plea, "I don't want to do anything harmful by mistake."

There is not a formula, or set of actions, that are guaranteed to help. Each person is an individual, and his or her needs will vary. Also, I am NOT an expert in support. At the same time, I know that in my own healing journey, and in the healing journeys of others that I have talked to, certain things have stood out as being helpful, while others were not. This is meant to be an informal discussion of being supportive, and not meant as therapeutic advice.

Okay, so what is helpful for a person who is a survivor of ritual abuse, who is just beginning to remember, has remembered for several years, or who may be trying to leave a destructive cult group? Here are some thoughts.

1). Listen. The survivor who has been wounded and injured by a cult group has been told all of their lives to never talk of their abuse, to not tell. This is known as "the code of silence". Once the survivor begins remembering, though, there will be a need to share with a safe person. Ideally, this person will be their therapist, but they may also need a friend with whom they can share their feelings, their disbelief, their horror, their despair, and the joy at the small steps of healing and freedom that begin occurring. Above all else, a nonjudgmental person who will listen and BE THERE and not reject them means so much. But be aware that at the same time, disclosing may cause panic or cause programming. So, don't prod the person for information. Let them share at the rate that THEY are comfortable.

2) Believe them. Survivors of cult groups are told that no one will believe them if they disclose (and with good reason: much of our society today is in denial about this type of abuse!). They are told by leaders in the group that they will be labeled "crazy" and sent to a state hospital, or branded a liar. This, along with the threat of severe punishments if they do disclose, makes many survivors reluctant to remember and talk about their abuse. If a survivor does take this important step, it is important to validate them, even if what they disclose horrifies you or tests your

own belief about human nature. The events seem horrific and the cruelty beyond human capability, but often, these first events disclosed are just the tip of the iceberg. Try to never tell the person that you don't believe them, if you don't, you can say, "I know that you believe this, and what I personally think doesn't matter", when asked if you believe them (they WILL ask, over and over, because of the programming mentioned above that no one could believe them. Each time you say "yes," you are helping them break the power of a vicious lie.

3) Learn about ritual abuse. When you hear a story from one person that tests your ability to believe, that is one thing. But when you read about thousands of people who are remembering these things, it will help both your credulity, and your knowledge. Also, understanding a little about ritual abuse will help you learn about possible pitfalls and problems the survivor may face during their journey. The best source of learning is a good, safe therapist knowledgeable about ritual abuse. You may want to contact one, let them know you are a support person, and ask if you can meet with them and ask some questions.

Other sources can include web sites (like this one!). But don't just visit one; visit several, since different survivors will have different perspectives. In the "Links" section on this page are several excellent online resources for learning more about ritual abuse.

At the local library, there are usually at least a few books on this topic. Reading a survivor's story and how they healed can be helpful.

If there are any conferences on ritual abuse being held in your area, they can be a wonderful source of information. You may want to contact national groups that deal with dissociation, such as the ISSD, for information on conferences in your area.

4). Be aware of programming. Many survivors of severe generational cult abuse will have different forms of programming. You do NOT need to be an expert on programming to be a support person. But being aware that self-harm and suicide programming, as well as the desire to recontact the cult (contact programming) may be present is important. If your friend states that they are feeling that they might self harm, suicide, or go to a cult meeting, and that they believe that they CANNOT control the impulses, you need to have them contact their therapist immediately. They may need hospitalization if this urge is severe, and a safe place to break the programming. Or, the therapist may be able to work with them outpatient in breaking the hold the programming has.

If the person is recontacting the cult, letting them know that they can have a good life outside the cult is important to break this programming. That going back will only hurt them, and that they can change old ways.

5) The importance of healthy fun Having good, safe, fun times together, such as an

outdoor barbecue, going to the mall shopping, or doing art/crafts projects together for fun are all things that can help a survivor who has been locked into an emotionally deprived lifestyle (one that makes them dependent on the cult). Littles may pop out, seeing a different reality that is nonabusive, for the FIRST time in the survivor's life. Let them come out, and be aware that they may act much younger than the survivor's stated age. The more healthy, safe, appropriate experiences these parts have, the faster healing will go, because littles often hold quite a bit of emotional power in a survivor's system. They will run inside to share what is going on, and soon other parts will come out to "check out what is going on." In reality, they will be testing to see if the friend is safe, and if it is really true that they can have a nonabusive friend who isn't trying to use them.

6) Help out when things are really rough: The survivor may have an occasional day when things are chaotic inside, or they have done massive inside work, and have very little energy for much else. A close friend can help by driving them to therapy on those days, if they can't drive. They can also be there for the survivor. Helping with little things can make a difference, such as bringing in takeout on a rough day when cooking is beyond the survivor's ability. Just hanging out together, and being a safe outside person, can be enough many times.

7) Have good boundaries: It is important to not do for the survivor what they can do for themselves. The idea is NOT to reparent them, since this creates an unhealthy and impossible dynamic in a relationship. The survivor will have strong unmet dependency needs from a lifetime of emotional deprivation. Let them know that you are their FRIEND. But not a caretaker. There is a fine balance between helping out once in a while on very bad days, and allowing too much dependence. Most survivors have highly functioning parts that can manage the tasks of daily life at least most of the time. Encourage this functioning.

If littles are out constantly, and no adult appears, this can be a sign of stress in an overburdened system, a sign of being accessed (the adults were abused or punished and went under), or a sign of unhealthy dependency. The survivor themselves can often learn to nurture themselves, and a good friend will support this.

8). Pray for them: I left what I believe is the most important for last. Healing from ritual abuse, and leaving an abusive occult group, is spiritual warfare of the most intense type. Any support person may undergo spiritual attack (and, in some rare cases, physical threats as well). Having a strong faith, and knowing how to do spiritual warfare on your behalf and your friend's, is the GREATEST gift you can give them. If they are open to Christianity, sharing your love and the love of God can do a lot to undo the false beliefs about Him that the cult has taught the survivor. They will often have anger, rage, bitterness, and even hatred for God and Jesus. Don't let this shock you, or turn you away from the survivor, since they have undergone an entire lifetime of abuse, and setups where "God" was an abuser (it is hard to love Jesus when someone dressed like him raped you as a small child, and

you were told that Jesus does this to children).

With love, prayer, and patience, this anger should lessen and true healing of the most wounded part of the survivor, their spirit, can begin. A survivor needs to see the love of God demonstrated in others. To see that they were lied to by the cult, that Christianity is real, not just hypocrisy, and that Christian believers are willing to back up their words with prayer and acts of caring.

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/63761 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Forensic Considerations in Ritual Trauma Cases

Author: **Sylvia Gillotte, attorney**
Published on: **March 21, 2001**

(note: This article is reprinted with the author's permission). *If you are a survivor of ritual abuse, please exercise caution since this article deals with ritual abuse in detail.

Ocassionally, a person writes an article that is outstanding, clear, and definitive. Ms. Gillotte has done this in this article, and her work shows the effects of ritual trauma on small children, and explains why it is often difficult for them to disclose their abuse. Because the formattting here at Suite 101 limits article lengths, I am publishing this in three parts, so that it may be presented in its entirety. If you work with ritual abuse survivors, if you are a social worker, and law enforcement officer, or a caseworker, please read this and share it with your coworkers. This is invaluable information for all. svali

Part OneFORENSIC CONSIDERATIONS IN RITUAL TRAUMA CASES

ABSTRACT:

Cases involving child sexual abuse, as well as other types of abuse, sometimes involve allegations that are unusually bizarre, or even incredible in nature. Such cases may actually be indicative of a far more complex and sinister form of abuse referred to as ritual trauma or ritual child abuse. While much is known about the dynamics of ritual trauma, very few professionals have the training necessary to effectively recognize and assess such cases. As a consequence, the bizarre nature of a child's behaviors and/or disclosures often leads professionals to discount the child's allegations of abuse altogether.

This material is designed to assist and educate virtually every level of professional in the system dealing with child abuse in recognizing ritual trauma and understanding its basic dynamics. In addition to providing a workable definition for ritual trauma and describing its common elements, professionals are provided a comprehensive checklist of signs and symptoms in children that will assist them in making cases assessments. The significance of these signs and symptoms to ritual trauma will also be discussed.

Beyond initial assessment, the investigation and prosecution of cases involving ritual trauma can be exceedingly difficult and most often requires specialized assistance. Inasmuch as expert assistance is not always readily affordable or available, this material provides specific recommendations and guidance to professionals in the major fields of specialty likely to encounter such cases, including prosecutors, attorneys, law enforcement officers, physicians, psychologists, therapists, social service workers, and Guardian ad Litem/CASA representatives. Readers are provided with a list of references, publications, and resources for further study and assistance.

OUTLINE

A. INTRODUCTION

II. UNDERSTANDING RITUAL TRAUMA

B. Definition C. Common Elements D. Structure of Cults E. Differentiating Between Sexual and Physical Abuse & Ritual Trauma

III. SIGNS AND SYMPTOMS OF RITUAL TRAUMA IN CHILDREN

Problems Associated with Sexual Behaviors or Beliefs Problems Associated with Toileting and the Bathroom Problems Associated with the Supernatural, Rituals, Occult Symbols, Religion, etc. D. Problems Associated with Small Spaces; Being Confined or Tied Up E. Problems Associated with Death F. Problems Associated with the Doctor’s Office G. Problems Associated with Certain Colors H. Problems Associated with Eating Emotional Problems (Including Speech, Sleep, and Learning Problems) Problems Associated with Family Relationships Problems Associated with Play or Peer Relations Other Fears, References, Disclosures and Strange Beliefs or Behaviors Related Dissociative Symptoms N. Related Health Problems

IV. INCIDENCE AND FREQUENCY

F. THE “HOW” AND “WHY” OF RITUAL TRAUMA

A. Significance of the Psychological Component B. Techniques and Methodology used by Perpetrators C. Impact of Abuse on Disclosure, Assessment, Investigation & Prosecution 1) Physical Evidence 2) Medical Evidence 3) Psychological and Behavioral Evidence

G. “BEST PRACTICE” GUIDELINES FOR PRACTITIONERS

A. Prosecutors, Attorneys, and Law Enforcement B. Physicians/Dentists C.

Psychologists, Therapists, and Mental Health Workers D. Social Workers E. CASA/ Guardian ad Litem Representatives

H. CONCLUSION

I. SUGGESTED READING

A. All Disciplines (Generally helpful to all fields of endeavor) B. Legal and Law Enforcement C. Medical and Mental Health D. Day Care Related Cases

J. RESOURCES

A. Organizations B. Websites

X. CONTACT INFORMATION REGARDING THE AUTHOR

FORENSIC CONSIDERATIONS IN RITUAL TRAUMA CASES

“Cases of ritualistic abuse may come to light when a child is being evaluated or treated for sexual abuse. Unfortunately, investigators and therapists, lacking knowledge of the clinical indicators of cult-based ritualistic abuse, often fail to recognize that the sexual abuse being described has occurred within the context of satanic cult worship.”

- Susan J. Kelley, R.N., Ph.D.

I. INTRODUCTION

Ritual trauma is a highly sadistic form of abuse that is perpetrated upon individuals of all ages, but which most commonly originates in infancy and early childhood in an intrafamilial and intergenerational setting. It is a unique form of child abuse, where children are sexually exploited and systematically traumatized in a deliberate effort to induce dissociative mental states for purposes of indoctrination and programming. As a sub-category of ritual crime, it often includes the use of symbols and other paraphernalia designed to have specific psychological impact on its victims.

The dynamics of ritual trauma are significantly different from those of other forms of child abuse. Ritual trauma is neither commonly understood, nor easily recognized, and usually requires specialized training and handling in order to be successfully assessed, investigated, and prosecuted. Due to the nature of the abuse and the manner in which it is perpetrated, supportive medical and physical evidence is difficult, if not impossible, to obtain. Therefore, an investigative paradigm that is designed to assist professionals in overcoming these and other obstacles must be

created and incorporated into any existing multidisciplinary framework addressing the sexual abuse of children.

Children who have been sexually abused in conjunction with ritual trauma do not readily disclose the ritual aspects of their abuse. In fact, disclosure of this aspect of their abuse is usually extremely delayed due to a variety of psychological factors that often accompany this type of trauma. In cases involving child sexual abuse, it is both common and appropriate for professionals to assess veracity by looking for consistency in a child's disclosure. However, in a genuine case of ritual trauma, a child's disclosures involving abuse will naturally be both inconsistent and "incredible" in nature. This is primarily due to the manner in which the child has been victimized, as well as the frequent use of drugs in conjunction with this type of abuse. These dynamics are covered in this material in an effort to assist professionals in recognizing, assessing, and properly handling these cases.

II. UNDERSTANDING RITUAL TRAUMA

A. DEFINITION

There have been many attempts to label and define ritual trauma in a context that can be understood and universally referenced by various professionals, clinicians, and researchers. However, given the nature of the abuse, the diversity of the perpetrators, and the many manifestations which ritual crime can take, this task has not been easy or without controversy. Undaunted by this challenge, some states have managed to pass specific legislation prohibiting and/or providing for increased penalties for certain criminal acts of a ritualized nature.

Although accounts of ritual trauma as an extremely sadistic form of child abuse and neglect date back several centuries, it is a phenomenon which has only been recently recognized, studied, and publicized. Modern revelations concerning ritual trauma have coincided with an increased awareness of child abuse in general, and the recognition of multiple personality and dissociative disorders by the medical, psychiatric, and psychological communities.

In 1988, the Los Angeles County Commission for Women organized a Task Force of professionals from the fields of law, medicine, mental health, education, law enforcement, religion, and social work to study and develop a report concerning the existence and problem of ritual abuse. Working with adult survivors and parents of child victims, the Task Force published a definitive report on the nature of ritual trauma and described it as "…a brutal form of abuse of children, adolescents, and adults, consisting of physical, sexual, and psychological abuse, and involving the use of rituals."

In its Report, the Task Force further clarified that although "ritual" does not necessarily mean "satanic," a majority of survivors report repeated abuse over an

extended period of time in rituals involving either satanic symbology or satanic worship apparently designed to indoctrinate them into related beliefs or practices. It is important to note that - as with all other spiritual belief systems in this country - the worship of Satan is constitutionally protected. There are many Satanic churches and organizations in America which are legally incorporated and formally recognized, and these groups claim no involvement in the underground criminal activity and child abuse which is characteristic of ritual trauma.

B. COMMON ELEMENTS

It is clear from the work of this Task Force, as well as the work of numerous other prominent researchers and professionals who have examined this topic, that regardless of definition, ritual child abuse almost always includes certain basic elements:

1) Multiple victims 2) Multiple perpetrators 3) The use of ritual in connection with: a) severe physical abuse and deprivation, and b) sadistic and painful sexual abuse 4) The use of drugs and/or mind control techniques for the purposes of indoctrination, domination, and as a deterrent to disclosure.

Because ritual child abuse involves both multiple victims and multiple perpetrators, such activity necessarily involves a level of organization and planning which is not found in more commonly investigated cases of abuse and neglect. This impedes and complicates the investigation and prosecution of ritual child abuse. Often referred to as “organized cults,” these perpetrator groups are highly secretive and go to extraordinary lengths to hide their criminal activity.

C. STRUCTURE OF CULTS

A successful cult can be compared to a successful pedophile, since both are known to function and operate out of any group structure that a) is convenient, b) provides private, easy, and regular access to victims and an environment for their activities, c) which can be safely infiltrated and/or logistically controlled, and d) naturally instills a false sense of trust in the perpetrator(s). For example, since Masons belong to a fraternal society which practices secret rituals and which extends membership by invitation only, many cults have successfully used local lodges as a cover for their activity. Any structure or organization which is practical or convenient can be used; e.g., a volunteer fireman’s group, a local church or synagogue, an elementary school, etc.

It is important to point out that while these structures and organizations may be secretly used by cults, their criminal activities are usually kept hidden from the unsuspecting membership of the larger and legitimate group under whose “umbrella” the cult may be hiding. It is interesting to note that a majority of adult survivors of ritual abuse report victimization by cults that were operated out of well-

established or "mainstream" churches in their community. Naturally, activities and rituals of this nature were successfully conducted without the knowledge and approval of the larger congregation.

Since most - though not all - ritual trauma is intergenerational in nature, it is important to remember that the majority of cult victims and participants are either born into a group or recruited at a very young age. Programming and brainwashing through sexual and other trauma begins very early and is systematic and brutal. Children who demonstrate particular intelligence or talent are carefully primed and subsequently groomed to enter certain professions and infiltrate specific organizations that are deemed critical to the successful operation, networking, and protection of the cult.

The use of credible organizations and structures also has additional benefits. Cults, adult sex rings, and pedophiles alike are extremely aware that allegations of sexual and ritual abuse are easily discounted when they involve any perpetrator having professional trust and standing in the community. Since successful cults operate as a mutually protective group, the greater the number of “professional” participants involved, the less likely it is that their activities will be investigated or prosecuted. In a study of five cases of ritualistic abuse, Barbara Snow and Teena Sorenson describe this “duplicitous” component as follows:

“The overwhelming majority of known offenders were active members of the predominant religion in the neighborhood. Several held high profile church and community leadership positions. There were typically in marital relationships that non-offending partners described as stable and low in conflict. Most were respected parents with positive family images. Many were recognized in their various areas of employment, including the legal and child-care professions. Women were identified as perpetrators in all five of the neighborhoods…most often mothers and grandmothers who were involved in church, community, and extracurricular activities of children. These women were often reported as working cooperatively with their husbands in the ring. Participants in the adult ritual sex ring included extended family (i.e., grandparents, aunts, uncles, and cousins) who cooperated with neighbors and other adults.”

In order to understand this contradictory presentation by perpetrators, one must first recognize that cults use severe trauma to create dissociation in victims; and repeated trauma and extreme dissociation can result in level of psychological fragmentation that permits both victims and perpetrators to live a “Jekyll and Hyde” existence - often appearing quite normal, trustworthy, and stable to the outside world. This little understood phenomenon, further discussed in Section II (D) below, often prevents disclosures and allegations of ritual trauma from being seriously investigated. Naturally, many people would have a great deal of difficulty imagining and accepting the fact that a teacher, parent, professional, or otherwise respected member of the community could be capable of such horrific activity.

This is not to say that all perpetrators of ritual abuse fit a similar profile. Perpetrators of this type of abuse come in all shapes, sizes, and colors, and may just as easily come from a clearly dysfunctional family setting with a history of various psychological or drug-related problems. Some families appear to be more capable – genetically, psychologically, emotionally, or otherwise – of handling certain aspects of trauma more effectively than others. Capacity to dissociate as a coping mechanism to trauma may play a critical role. Furthermore, the level of sophistication in mind control techniques used by a particular cult may also be an important factor.

Similarly, the size and location of perpetrator groups may vary considerably, ranging from a few members in one general location, to hundreds of members located in different parts of the world. By necessity, the larger the group, the more organized and dangerous the cult. Furthermore, it is important to understand that many organized cults engage in a variety of money-making endeavors which are criminal in nature. The sexual abuse of children in conjunction with sadistic physical abuse and/or torture is often coupled with the use of these victims for child pornography and child prostitution. Cults may also engage in other money-making activity of a criminal nature including, e.g., the trafficking of children, drugs, and weapons; blackmail; insurance and computer fraud; etc.

As a result of these secretive and sinister activities, cults have been compared with the Mafia. It is interesting to note that in spite of overwhelming evidence to the contrary, former FBI director J. Edgar Hoover “publicly denied the existence of organized crime” for nearly forty years. Similarly, in spite of unequivocal evidence of convictions involving ritualistic mutilation, murder, and sacrifice in this country over the last three decades, the FBI has continued to deny the existence of ritual abuse by organized cults. Fortunately, there are state and local law enforcement officials who have disagreed with this untenable perspective and pursued investigations which have resulted in successful prosecutions and convictions of these criminals. D. DIFFERENTIATING BETWEEN SEXUAL AND PHYSICAL ABUSE & RITUAL TRAUMA

For reasons discussed throughout this material, protecting a child who is the victim of ritual trauma can be extremely difficult and demands specialized assistance. Therefore, it may be necessary to assess the nature of a child’s allegations, disclosures, and behaviors to determine whether or not the abuse falls within the parameters of ritual trauma. Section III below provides a list of disclosures and symptoms that are consistent with ritual child abuse. The presence of a cluster of any of these signs and symptoms warrants further professional assessment and investigation of the case as possibly involving ritual trauma.

Ritual trauma not only involves multiple victims and perpetrators, but the psychological, physical, and sexual abuse that is perpetrated upon its victims is extremely intense, frequent, and sadistic in nature, thereby distinguishing it from other forms of child abuse. Furthermore, most groups use highly sophisticated

mind control techniques to dominate, manipulate, program, and indoctrinate their victims to ensure loyalty, guarantee access for future exploitation, and prevent disclosure. This use of mind control techniques and programming is perhaps the most distinguishing characteristic of ritual trauma, and serves as the single most significant impediment to the successful assessment, investigation, and prosecution of such cases.

While the focus of this material deals with the sexual abuse of children, it is impossible to properly assess a case involving ritual trauma without also looking at accompanying physical and psychological symptoms and allegations consistent with this type of abuse. A genuine case involving ritual trauma would likely include a wide range of abuse and/or torture. As best described by the Ritual Abuse Task Force:

“The physical abuse is severe, sometimes including torture and killing. The sexual abuse is usually painful, sadistic, and humiliating, intended as a means of gaining dominance over the victim. The psychological abuse is devastating and involves the use of ritual/indoctrination, which includes mind control techniques and mind altering drugs, and ritual/intimidation which conveys to the victim a profound terror of the cult members and of the evil spirits they believe cult members can command. Both during and after the abuse, most victims are in a state of terror, mind control, and dissociation in which disclosure is exceedingly difficult.”

In most ritual abuse cases, the intensity and severity of the trauma is intended to create a dissociative mental state in its victims, and the use of drugs to facilitate this process is very common. While dissociation is a natural phenomenon in which everyone engages to some degree or another, it is also a common psychological response to trauma that can spontaneously occur with any form of abuse. In ritual trauma, however, dissociation is the desired result because it ensures that the victim will not only survive the experience, but have great difficulty remembering the details of the trauma - thereby limiting subsequent disclosure of the abuse by the victim.

Furthermore, sophisticated cults deliberately exploit the dissociative process in victims. As a result of experiencing repeated trauma designed to fragment their psyches, victims often develop a number of psychological conditions, including Dissociative Identity Disorder (DID). Formerly characterized as “Multiple Personality Disorder” in the Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders published by the American Psychiatric Association (and, thereby, referenced as such in many articles and publications included in this material), DID is the presence of two or more “personality states” in an individual that recurrently take control of his or her behavior.

These personality states are commonly referred to as “personalities,” “sub-personalities,” “alters,” “components,” or “parts,” and they can operate independently of one another in the consciousness of the victim. The degree of

dissociation in DID creates amnesic barriers between these parts, representing an extreme on what might be considered a “continuum of dissociation.” In ritual trauma - through a systematic and traumatic conditioning process - these distinctly created alters can be programmed, triggered, and subsequently accessed by controlling cult members. In this manner, separate “sub-personalities” within a victim can be formed and developed by the cult, then trained and conditioned to serve special functions or take on specific roles. Consequently, ritual abuse is sometimes referred to as a form of “trauma-based mind control.”

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/63763 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Forensic Considerations in Ritual Trauma Cases (Part 2)

Author: **Sylvia Gillotte, attorney**
Published on: **March 21, 2001**

(This is part two of this article, and will be continued in part three)Part Two of Forensic Considerations in Ritual Trauma III. SIGNS AND SYMPTOMS OF RITUAL TRAUMA IN CHILDREN

There are numerous behavioral and psychological indicators in children that are consistent with ritual trauma. For professionals assessing cases of child sexual abuse, as well as other cases of abuse, these indicators should be considered to be “red flags” warranting expert assistance and special handling. Sexual abuse is a universal component of ritual trauma. Therefore, a child who has been ritually traumatized may have any number of the physical and behavioral signs and symptoms that might ordinarily be observed in cases involving sexual abuse. However, the manner in which sexual and other abuse is perpetrated on children who are victims of ritual child abuse usually leads to additional symptoms and disclosures which are relatively unique to ritual trauma.

Dr. Catherine Gould is a member of the Ritual Abuse Task Force, and is one of the most highly respected and recognized clinicians treating ritual child abuse victims in this country. She has compiled a comprehensive list of signs and symptoms of ritualistic abuse in children that many professionals have found extremely useful. A slightly modified version of this list is provided below. It is broken down into thematic categories, the significance of which will be further discussed in Sections V and VI of this material:

A. PROBLEMS ASSOCIATED WITH SEXUAL BEHAVIOR OR BELIEFS

• Child masturbates compulsively, and attempts to insert objects into the vagina or rectum • Child behaves in a highly seductive or sexually provocative manner, particularly when being photographed or videotaped • Child refers to sexual activity between other children, or between him/herself and another child, and/or adults • Child states that sharp objects were inserted into his/her private parts, including pins, needles, rods, screwdrivers, wands, sticks, knives, etc., or relates that he/she was asked or forced to stick sharp objects into someone else • Child states that he or she witnessed sexual acts between adults; between adults and children;

between adults or children and animals, etc. • On professional examination, child relaxes rather than tenses rectum when touched; or there is evidence of a relaxed anal sphincter, enlargement of the vaginal opening; or anal/rectal or vaginal laceration or scarring; or sore penis • Child exhibits chronic vaginitis, constipation, and/or painful urination or defecation • Child exhibits outbreaks of oral and genital herpes; or on exam, is diagnosed with an STD or HIV/AIDS • There is evidence of multiple pregnancies or “abortion” in adolescence • Child refers to being married; or states that she is married or going to have a baby; or child states that she will never be able to have a baby

B. PROBLEMS ASSOCIATED WITH TOILETING AND THE BATHROOM

• Child avoids the bathroom and is highly fearful or agitated when in or around a bathroom • Child avoids or is fearful of using the toilet; has toileting accidents because he or she puts off going; develops constipation; is unnecessarily fearful or resistant to being toilet trained • Child avoids wiping self; or child’s underwear is soiled because he or she will not wipe, or due to relaxed sphincter muscle • Child fears or avoids the bathtub, panics when being bathed, or resists being washed in the genital area • Child seems preoccupied with urine and/or feces, or spontaneously urinates or defecates at inappropriate times or places • Child either handles urine and feces, urinates on others, or smears feces on self, others, and/or objects • Child attempts to ingest urine or feces, or compulsively discusses it at meal times • Child draws nude pictures of self and/or family members urinating or defecating • Child talks about any of the above scenarios involving urine and feces; or having been urinated or defecated upon; or witnessing these things having happened to someone else

C. PROBLEMS ASSOCIATED WITH THE SUPERNATURAL, RITUALS, OCCULT SYMBOLS, RELIGION, ETC.

• Child fears ghosts, monsters, witches, devils, dracula, vampires, evil spirits, dinosaurs, etc. • Child fears Halloween, or themes associated with the celebration of Halloween, Easter, etc; regresses or gets highly agitated at Halloween, Easter, or other ritual holidays • Child believes evil spirits inhabit his/her closet, enter the house, peer at the child through windows, accompany the child, torment or abuse him/her or watch to make sure he/she keeps secrets, inhabit the child’s body, and/or direct the child’s thoughts and behavior • Child is afraid of or preoccupied with wands, sticks, swords, spirits, magic potions, curses, supernatural powers, crucifixions; or makes potions, attempts magic, throws curses, calls on spirits, prays to the devil, etc. • Child sings odd, ritualistic songs or chants, sometimes in an incomprehensible language • Child sings songs with a sexual, bizarre, or “you better not tell” theme • Child does odd, ritualistic dances which may involve a circle or other symbols; child may costume him/herself in red or black, take off his/her clothes, or wear a mask for such dances • Child is preoccupied with what might be considered occult symbols, such as the circle, inverted pentagram, hexagram, the number 6, horns, goats, inverted cross, etc. • Child writes backwards or inverts all

the letters and/or writing from right to left • Child compulsively writes or draws esoteric symbols, such as those related to ancient civilizations and/or esoteric teachings such as the Kabbalah, etc. • Child fears such symbols, or becomes highly agitated or upset in their presence • Child fears attending church, becomes agitated or upset in church, fears religious objects or people, or refuses to worship God • Child claims to see spirits, or hear voices talking to him/her and/or telling him/her what to do • Child states that he/she or someone else prayed to the devil, threw curses, made potions, performed ritualized songs or dances, called upon spirits, did magic, etc. • Child states that he/she or someone else unexplainably wore ghost, devil, dracula, witch, etc. costumes; used ceremonial wands, knives, or swords; or had their body painted (usually black)

D. PROBLEMS ASSOCIATED WITH SMALL SPACES; BEING CONFINED OR TIED UP

• Child fears closet or being locked in a closet or coffin • Child fears other small spaces, e.g., elevators, boxes, cages, etc., and becomes agitated if forced to enter one • Child closes pets or other children in closets, or otherwise attempts to entrap or confine them • Child states that he/she or someone else was confined in a closet, box, coffin, cage, or other confined space • Child fears being tied up and/or hung upside down, or states that he/she or someone else was tied up and/or hung upside down • Child attempts to tie up other children, pets, adults, etc. • Rope burns or marks are evident on the child

E. PROBLEMS ASSOCIATED WITH DEATH

• Child is afraid of dying; states that he/she is dying, or fears the he/she will die on a particular day or birthday (usually his/her sixth birthday, but can be any increment of 6, or a cult holiday of special significance) • Child states that he/she is “practicing” to be dead, or is dead • Child is afraid that parents, siblings, other family members, friends, will die or be killed • Child talks frequently of death, asks many questions about illness, accidents, and other means by which people die. These questions may have an overly anxious, compulsive or even bizarre quality

E. PROBLEMS ASSOCIATED WITH THE DOCTOR’S OFFICE

• Child has a fear of pins and needles • Child fears, avoids visits to the doctor and/or becomes highly agitated in or on the way to the doctor’s office or medical facility; refers to “bad doctors” or otherwise expresses unusual mistrust of the doctor’s motives • Child is excessively fearful of shots and/or blood tests and procedures; may ask if he/she will die from the shot or blood tests, or whether someone will drink the blood • Child appears to dissociate or mentally “check out” when subjected to shots, blood work, or other medical examination or procedure • Child excessively fears taking clothes off in the doctor’s office or asks whether he/she will have to walk around naked in front of others • Child behaves in a sexually

seductive way on the examining table or appears to expect or “invite” sexual contact • Child states that he/she or someone else received “bad” shots, pills, or medicine

F. PROBLEMS ASSOCIATED WITH CERTAIN COLORS

• Child fears or strongly dislikes certain colors (usually red or black, but can be any other color significant in a particular ritual); refuses to wear clothes or eat foods of these colors, or becomes agitated in the presence of them • Child states that red or black is a favorite color, for peculiar reasons • Child refers to ritualistic uses of red or black that are inconsistent with what he/she has experienced in a spiritual setting • Child obsessively draws using certain colors, particularly red or black, and/or associates certain colors with bizarre themes

G. PROBLEMS ASSOCIATED WITH EATING

• Child refuses to ingest certain foods or drinks because they are red or brown, and becomes highly agitated at meal times • Child expresses fears that his/her food or drink is poisoned, or has been poisoned in the past, contains drugs, etc. • Child binges, gorges, vomits, or refuses to eat when unrelated to an identifiable illness • Child states that he/she or someone else was forced to ingest blood, urine, feces, human or animal body parts

H. EMOTIONAL PROBLEMS (INCLUDING SPEECH, SLEEP, AND LEARNING PROBLEMS)

• Child has rapid mood swings, is easily angered or upset, has tantrums, acts out, and then acts normal, passive, etc. • Child is agitated, hyperactive, wild, and/or resists authority • Child displays marked anxiety, e.g., rocking, nail, biting, teeth grinding • Child feels he/she is bad, ugly, stupid, “damned,” or deserving of punishment • Child hurts self or others frequently, and/or is accident prone • Child is fearful, withdrawn, clingy, regressed, babyish • Child’s speech is delayed or regressed, speech production drops, and/or speech disorder develops • Child’s handwriting and/or knowledge of various school subjects erratically changes or switches • Child has “flat” affect, or fails to respond in emotionally appropriate ways, especially when viewing violence or cruelty • Child has poor attention span, learning problems • Child has frequent or intense nightmares; fears going to bed, cannot sleep, or has disturbed sleep such as night terrors, bedwetting, or sleepwalking • Child has suicidal or homicidal ideation • Child compulsively self-mutilates • Child cries continuously and/or is inconsolable

I. PROBLEMS ASSOCIATED WITH FAMILY RELATIONSHIPS

• Child fears the parent(s) will die, be killed, or abandon him/her; or states that someone has threatened similar action • Child fears that he/she will be kidnapped

and forced to live with someone else • Child is afraid to be separated from caretaker, cannot be alone at all, clings • Child fears the parent(s) no longer love him/her, are angry and wish to punish him/her, or want to kill him/her • Child "screens out" what parent(s), other caretaker, teacher, etc., says and/or fails to retain information they give • Child becomes excessively angry or upset when told what to do or not to do • Child frequently reacts to correction and guidance with "I hate you," "I want to kill you," physically attacks others, or otherwise threatens them with bodily harm • Child talks about my "other" mommy or daddy or family (i.e., in the cult) • Child expresses fear that a sibling, friend, or pet will be killed, hurt, kidnapped, or molested

J. PROBLEMS ASSOCIATED WITH PLAY OR PEER RELATIONS

• Child destroys toys; acts out death, mutilation, cannibalism, and burial themes; pretends to kill play figures, taking out eyes, pulling off heads or limbs; pretends to eat the figures or drink their blood and/or bury them • Child's play involves themes of drugging, threats, humiliation, hanging, torture, bondage, magic, weddings and other ceremonies • Child, e.g., in play therapy setting, obsessively chooses toys such as dinosaurs, monsters, or hooded figures, and engages them in frightening, aggressive and/or destructive scenarios; or child seems unnaturally fearful of such figures • Child is unable to engage in age-appropriate fantasy play, or can do so for only brief periods • Child hurts other children, sexually and/or physically • Child's drawings or other creative productions show bizarre, occult, sexual, excretory, sadistic, death or mutilation themes • Child is extremely controlling with other children and/or siblings, and constantly plays "chase" games • Child talks to an "imaginary friend" who he/she will not discuss, or who he/she states is a "spirit" friend • Child gets on the floor and pretends to be an animal, or believes that he/she is an animal at any given moment

K. OTHER FEARS, REFERENCES, DISCLOSURES AND STRANGE BELIEFS OR BEHAVIORS

• Child fears the police will come and put him/her in jail, or states that "bad" policeman hurt or threatened him/her • Child is excessively afraid of spiders, insects, and/or aggressive animals; e.g., crocodiles, sharks, large dogs, lions, tigers, dinosaurs, etc.; states that he/she was hurt or threatened with such spiders, insects, or animals • Child is terrified of being in or around water, swimming, drowning, etc., especially if an activity involves putting their head under water • Child fears that the house will be broken into, robbed, or burned down, or states that someone has threatened that this will happen • Child fears "bad people," "robbers," "strangers," "spirit entities," etc.; states that "they" will come after him/her or someone he/she cares about; watches out the window for "bad people" • Child discusses unusual places such as cemeteries, mortuaries, tunnels, church basements, underground rooms, etc., or states that he/she and/or others were taken to such places; displays irrational fears of these and/or other places • Child alludes to pictures or films of nude people, sometimes with references to sexual

acts, unusual costuming, animal involvement, etc.; states that he/she was a victim of pornography, fears having picture taken, or strikes provocative poses • Child discusses drugs, pills, bad candy, alcohol, mushrooms, “bad medicine,” or injections in an age-inappropriate manner or context; may refer to drug or laxative effects, or state that he/she was given a substance that made them sick or drowsy; has general lethargy and black circles around the eyes • Child fears his/her own blood, becomes hysterical, and/or thinks he/she is dying • Child excessively fears violent movies • Child believes or fears that there is something foreign inside his/her chest or stomach; e.g., a bomb, a demon, a monster, poison, etc. • Child talks about animals, babies, and humans being hung, confined, hurt, killed, mutilated, eaten, etc. • Child experiences constant illness, severe fatigue, allergies, and somatic complaints; e.g., stomach or leg pains • Child fears or reacts poorly to certain stimuli; e.g., certain sounds, music, or high-pitched frequencies • Child has a fear of certain professions; e.g., doctors, policemen, firemen, judges, ministers, etc. • Child engages in fire-setting or pyromania • Child responds inexplicably to certain words, phrases, music, dates, etc., which could be consistent with triggering and programming • Confinement or restraint marks • Unusual marks, tattoos, burns, and/or bruises are noted on the child’s body, sometimes in patterns • Evidence of ashes, wax, or cuts on the child’s clothing or body • Evidence of dried blood in the child’s hair, scalp, fingernails, toenails, etc.

L. RELATED DISSOCIATIVE SYMPTOMS

• Repressed memory; inability to recall an important event • Psychogenic amnesia resulting in the inability to recall important personal information concerning self and other family members, etc. • Sudden loss of knowledge in an area of prior competence; sudden inability to perform tasks (involving, e.g., a certain school subject, the playing of an instrument, knowing the route from one location to another, etc.) • Evidence of splitting or disowning certain behaviors or experiences and attributing them to someone else • Voluntary and involuntary detachment from reality, which may include dropping into trance-like states or “spacing out” • Emotional detachment, remoteness, and depersonalization both to self and others • Use of another name or reference to self as “we” • Belief by self, or awareness by others, that more than one “identity” is present; drawing self as more than one person in artwork • Losing time inexplicably • Presence of auditory and/or visual hallucinations • Sudden changes in handwriting, speech, mannerism, dress, or vision M. RELATED HEALTH PROBLEMS

• General lethargy and black circles around the eyes • Severe or chronic fatigue, especially in or around ritual holidays • Evidence of loss of enamel of his/her teeth; blood chemistry imbalances and/or liver/adrenal problems • Constant illness, allergies, and somatic complaints; e.g., stomach or leg pains • Recurrent migraine headaches • History of eating disorders • Sleep disorders, including nightmares, night terrors, sleepwalking, etc. • Missing digits or toes

IV. INCIDENCE AND FREQUENCY

There is no current national system in place to track the reporting or incidence of ritual trauma as opposed to other forms of child abuse. Skeptics claim that ritual abuse allegations are the result of children's delusional fantasies or suggestive techniques on the part of adults and treating professionals. Unfortunately, the hideous and unbelievable nature of ritual child abuse offends our sensibilities and is so repugnant that there is a tendency to either sweep it under the carpet or find reasons why it does not exist. The biggest problem, however, is that the vast majority of professionals who work directly or indirectly with victims of child abuse are unable to recognize critical indicators for such abuse. Consequently, most cases of ritual trauma go unidentified as such in the child protective system, with tragic and long-term consequences for both the victims and society. Many experts agree that, for these reasons, the ritual abuse of children is under-reported, under-investigated, and under-prosecuted.

While obtaining truly accurate figures on the prevalence of ritual trauma would be difficult given the secrecy and criminality surrounding the phenomenon, there is nonetheless growing evidence that the problem of ritual trauma is considerably greater than ever imagined. Out of 2,709 members of the American Psychological Association responding to a poll, 30% responded that they had seen cases of ritual or religious-related abuse. Of these, 93% responded that they believed the reported harm and/or alleged ritualism had actually occurred. In a similar survey involving therapists treating clients with dissociative disorders, 85% of 1185 respondents reported a parallel belief in ritual trauma, including the existence of related mind control and programming.

In a 1995 article entitled "Cultural and Economic Barriers to Protecting Children from Ritual Abuse and Mind Control," Dr. Catherine Gould states that "(I)n 1992 alone, Childhelp USA logged 1,741 calls pertaining to ritual abuse, Monarch Resources of Los Angeles logged approximately 5,000, Real Active Survivors tallied nearly 3,600, Justus Unlimited of Colorado received almost 7,000, and Looking Up of Maine handled around 6,000." This constitutes an alarming number of helpline inquiries, even discounting the numbers or allowing for duplication.

Dr. Kathleen Faller has conducted a review of the empirical research on ritual abuse. She notes that there is great similarity in claims of abuse which are individually made by both children and adults, and that studies demonstrate some independent corroboration for such allegations. Given that historical accounts of ritual abuse date back several centuries, and that children as young as two and adults as old as ninety from across the globe continue to describe accounts of abuse consistent with ritual trauma, it should be considerably alarming that so little has been done to increase professional awareness of the problem.

While we may never be able to fix or eradicate the problem, we must move beyond denial and begin to understand the dynamics of this abuse so that our investigative paradigms can shift accordingly. Unless we directly address the problem, we can

rest assured that future generations will reap a harvest that has geometrically increased proportionate to our own ignorance and negligence.

V. THE “HOW” AND “WHY” OF RITUAL TRAUMA

Inasmuch as there are numerous reports consistent with ritual trauma that cross both centuries and cultures, it is difficult to pinpoint the exact origins of ritual trauma either as a form of child abuse or a technique of mind control. The North American continent has been populated by such a diverse number of cultures that ritualistic child abuse in America likely originates from many sources. However, it would appear that the vast majority of victims seeking assistance in this country today are of European heritage, so it is likely that many ritualistic practices date back to early pagan belief systems on that continent which continue to be secretly practiced through generations of adherents.

In a predominately Judeo-Christian society, satanic symbols can convey an archetypal and powerful message to victims, particularly when used in conjunction with severe trauma and torture. Therefore, it is not necessary that organized perpetrators have any spiritual belief system behind their practices or activities. Suffice it to say that whether motivated by religious belief, sexual desire, power, or mind control of the victim, cults use a ritualized setting to abuse, exploit, and manipulate children and other victims. As a group, therefore, their internal and external structure functions to provide access to children and protect members from criminal prosecution.

A. SIGNIFICANCE OF THE PSYCHOLOGICAL COMPONENT

As mentioned earlier, the development of dissociation and DID are an intended result of ritual trauma. Virtually every individual who survives cult victimization and indoctrination necessarily develops an ability to dissociate. Dissociation is a psychological process that permits a person to separate him/herself from his/her thoughts, feelings, and actions, particularly during an overwhelmingly traumatic or life-threatening event or experience. This process can produce changes in memory and allow the individual to function as if the trauma had not occurred. In effect, it is the psyche's way of surviving an otherwise impossible situation while preserving some area of healthy functioning.

Dissociation, and more specifically DID, are psychological conditions which also permit perpetrators of ritual trauma and abuse to function in a contradictory "Jekyll and Hyde" manner - exhibiting more "normal" personalities by day, and "ritual" personalities by night. It is impossible to understand ritual abuse without comprehending the roles that dissociation and DID play in the process. For example, females are often programmed to be "amnesic" about their cult involvement during their child-bearing years, ensuring the cult regular access to any offspring for early indoctrination.

Since dissociation can be a natural consequence of abuse and trauma and is so prevalent in cases involving ritual trauma, professionals should pay particular attention to any dissociative symptom in a child who is alleged to have been abused - sexually or otherwise. Many of the signs and symptoms listed in Section III of this material directly relate to dissociation that may have ensued as a result of ritual trauma. Furthermore, once dissociation and DID are understood and accepted as a sad reality of this type of abuse, no professional assessing or investigating a case should be surprised or offended if an alleged perpetrator neither looks nor acts “capable” of engaging in behavior as heinous and offensive as ritual trauma. To use a well-known maxim: it is, unfortunately, the “nature of the beast.”

B. TECHNIQUES AND METHODOLOGY USED BY PERPETRATORS

Perpetrators of ritual trauma desire total and complete control over their victims. Effectively, this means robbing a victim of his or her “will,” including the will to live or die. To a victim, the “choice” is often presented as "allegiance to the cult" or "death to self or others," which serves as a powerful deterrent to disclosure. Breaking the child psychologically through fear, intimidation, and severe trauma is one of the first steps. The use of drugs to further the dissociative process is common, and in sophisticated or “orthodox” cults, this may actually occur while the child is still in utero.

Drugs, many of which are specially designed and concocted by individual cults, serve a variety of functions:

1) They make a child more compliant and manageable 2) They function as pain control and permit a child to experience the trauma without losing consciousness 3) They facilitate manipulation of the ritual itself by altering the child’s cognitive awareness 4) They facilitate removal of psychological barriers 5) They make it more difficult for the child to maintain defenses and a strong connection to reality 6) They promote dissociation 7) They impact the child’s memory and perception of the experience

Even prior to being abused in a ritualistic setting, young children and infants are “assaulted” by perpetrators in a variety of ways that are intended to induce dissociation and condition the victim to more severe trauma. These include tactile, auditory, visual, olfactory, and gustatory deprivation and/or overload, as well as manipulation and exploitation of the infant/child’s maturing nerve and physiological reflex system. Techniques that are commonly associated with “prisoner interrogation,” such as lengthy isolation and confinement, as well as sleep and sensory deprivation, are also used with great success.

When a child is repeatedly held underwater to the point of panic, he or she will naturally learn to dissociate from the experience. If the child reacts poorly during a

ritual or programming, he or she may be “punished” through the use of electroshock or a cattle prod until there is total compliance via an “internal” retreat via dissociation. If the child is confined in a small dark space (e.g., a small closet or a coffin-like box) along with various spiders, insects, and other creepy crawlers of which the child is terrified, it will not be long before dissociation is seen as the only means of “escape.” It is important to note that none of these terrorizing and dissociation-inducing techniques produce any external signs of abuse – only long term emotional and psychological damage.

Cult leaders are usually extremely intelligent. They are also very knowledgeable about methods of inducing pain and torture that do not leave marks or physical evidence (e.g., the use of pins, needles, electroshock, etc.), and typically have hundreds of years of practiced trauma technique “under their belts.” Furthermore, they understand the legal and judicial process and carefully design their rituals so that children who might disclose will be discredited. Finally, cults know that the activity in which they are engaged is so outrageous as to be “unbelievable” to the average person. Given the experience of victims of the Holocaust, such thinking is not without merit.

Clearly, the most distressing aspect of ritual trauma relates to accounts of child mutilation and sacrifice, cannibalism, and the use of blood, feces, and urine in ritual ceremonies. In spite of historical documentation of such activity, it is extremely difficult to imagine such behavior in a modern setting. Of course, it was likewise impossible for most people to imagine the crimes of Hitler, Stalin, Idi Amin, Manson, Dahmer, etc. Therefore, if we are to address this problem with any success, we must move beyond our own limited perceptions and experiences – no matter how uncomfortable the process may make us.

To understand and confront this phenomenon, we must accept the fact that most survivors of ritual trauma not only report severe sexual abuse and torture, they also report exposure to these other most heinous acts. A study of ritual trauma (conducted in conjunction with a research project at the University of Colorado at Boulder) reports results which appear to be consistent with survivor accounts across this country and elsewhere. Of survivors responding:

• 100% were subjected to sexual molestation and intercourse • 97% were tortured • 97% were forced to participate in group sex with adults • 97% witnessed or were forced to participate in animal sacrifice • 94% were sodomized • 88% were drugged • 88% witnessed or were forced to participate in human sacrifice • 82% witnessed or were forced to participate in cannibalism • 76% were forced to torture others • 70% were used in child pornography • 58% were used in child prostitution • 33% were forced to breed children for later sacrifice

These figures were reported by adult survivors, and are consistent with everything that we have heard about the ritual abuse of children. In addition to the above figures, many of these survivors disclosed that they had developed MPD/DID as a

result of their abuse. Most reported their father or mother as their primary perpetrator. Additional perpetrators mentioned included other family members, as well as physicians (30%), priests (18%), and teachers (15%). All survivors noted that the abuse began at a very early age.

In the case of children, organized perpetrator groups go to great lengths to create ritual scenarios that will create “unbelievable” disclosures in which discrepancies are rampant. Once again, drugs are used in the process to tremendous advantage. For example:

1) Since confinement and isolation is an effective method of psychological conditioning, children often report having been put in a closet or cage with a lion. In reality, these children might have been placed with a large lion-like dog - or perhaps a human dressed in a lion costume. When this experience is combined with the use of sound effects and hallucinogens, the experience seems very real to a child. This deceptive method ensures absolute terror and compliance, while at the same time, serves to discredit the child should there be subsequent disclosure.

2) Children frequently report having been taken by train, boat, submarine or airplane to a specific location to participate in ritual activity. Often they are blindfolded and only told the name of the location after they have arrived.

In reality, such transportation may have only been simulated, and a false location given. Or the child may, in fact, have been in a plane that simply flew in a circle for 20 minutes or so, with the ultimate destination falsified. In either case, facts are distorted to discredit later disclosures.

3) The use of cartoon characters and hero figures in costume is frequently reported, and is especially effective with very young victims. Children who disclose abuse in these settings are assumed to be dealing with nightmares at a fantasy level.

4) Intergenerational cults have additional protective techniques. For example, some of the perpetrators attending a given ritual may, in fact, be prominent members of their community. To deliberately confuse child victims, cult members may introduce other adults who are falsely identified as other well-known public figures.

If and when a subsequent disclosure occurs, the innocent “perpetrators" who are named come forward with concrete alibis and are unwittingly used by the cult to discredit any investigation.

While children who are used by organized cults are victimized with regularity throughout the year, it is important to be aware that certain calendar dates have special ritual significance to perpetrators whose activities are also based on satanic and/or pagan belief systems. Such holidays may be fixed (i.e., celebrated on the

same day every year) such as All Hallows Eve/Halloween; or vary slightly based upon astrological considerations (e.g., Easter, which even for Christians falls on the first Sunday after the full moon following the Spring Equinox.) Full moons, eclipses, solstices, and equinoxes are frequently celebrated dates among cults, as are individual birthdays – especially for months and/or calendar years which are a multiple of the number “6”. In addition to these readily identifiable dates, most individual cults will also celebrate on dates which have unique significance to them..

Although the subject is too complex to be adequately covered in this material, it is ultimately important for professionals to understand that, just as repeated dissociation through severe trauma can ultimately lead to full-blown DID, so too does initial psychological “conditioning” of victims naturally move toward more systematic “programming;” and ultimately, total mind control. Once the psyche of an adult or child victim is dissociated and fragmented to the degree necessary to create DID, cult perpetrators use sophisticated mind control techniques to create various alters within the consciousness of the victim. Through the use of a repeated “conditioned stimulus-response sequence,” a victim will develop separate and distinct alters or personalities that can be called into action by a pre-programmed “triggers.” These “triggers” can be internal (e.g., a ritual holiday) or external (e.g., a phone call or hand signal).

Some perpetrator groups with access to highly advanced programming techniques and equipment are able to create extremely complex and layered systems of programming in victims that can take years to therapeutically neutralize and unravel. All survivors of ritual trauma who have been systematically programmed, however, seem to exhibit common categories of basic programming that are designed to ensure compliance with certain directives. These programs are usually “backed-up” by secondary programs and fall into such categories as self-injury, suicide, reporting, screen, and flooding programs which operate in the following manner:

• “If I remember my abuse, I must cut or hurt myself so that I will no longer remember” • “If I disclose my abuse to the authorities, I will kill myself” • “If I am taken into protective custody, I must get to a phone to report my location back to the cult” • “If I notice that I have lost time (during which I was ritually abused and programmed), I will suddenly “remember” that I was actually at the grocery store” • “If my therapist gets too close to a particular memory of abuse, my mind will flood forth with painful memories so that therapy cannot continue and I will see my therapist as the cause

C. IMPACT OF ABUSE ON DISCLOSURE, ASSESSMENT, INVESTIGATION & PROSECUTION

Dr. Catherine Gould has stated that “...you can abuse a hundred children ritualistically, with all the overlay of terror...and pretty much a hundred children will keep the secret of their abuse until there is some kind of intervention.” And yet,

when children do disclose, the extreme delay in their disclosure, coupled with perceived "discrepancies" from original accounts, often results in system disbelief and a failure to further investigate and prosecute additional allegations. Without a proper understanding of the dynamics of this abuse and how victims are impacted, it is easy to summarily dismiss legitimate claims of ritual trauma.

Even when a report is seriously heeded and investigated, professionals need to be aware that medical and physical evidence substantiating ritual child abuse is difficult to obtain, especially in view of the extreme delay in disclosure. While it may be prudent to request that toxicology tests and a sexual abuse examination be conducted on a child, receipt of negative or non-conclusive results in a case involving ritual trauma does not negate the child's allegations. Nor does the fact that some of the specifics of a child's allegations can, in fact, be disproved. Cults are known to use sophisticated techniques to simulate ritual scenarios that appear extremely real to a child victim. When combined with the use of drugs, children’s perceptions of an event are effectively manipulated for the purpose of discrediting a potential disclosure.

These factors may be particularly frustrating to law enforcement officers who wish to put a stop to this activity. It is important to recognize, however, that the very nature and structure of organized cults prohibit their infiltration. In order for a law enforcement officer or investigator to penetrate a cult, he or she would have to earn the trust of the group. This would necessarily involve engaging in illegal and offensive activities, including the drinking of blood and urine, the eating of feces, and participation in animal sacrifice at a minimum. Only after these repeated tests and trials would any individual be permitted to participate in more intimate and heinous rites involving child sexual abuse, mutilation, and sacrifice. Consequently, it would be unrealistic to consider this avenue of pursuit.

Physical and electronic surveillance of these groups can likewise be difficult or impossible, even when ritual holiday dates are known and understood. Cult ceremonies are usually conducted late at night in remote wooded areas, or in buildings which are under the total control of perpetrators. These sites are highly guarded both before, during, and after an event. In fact, children who have not yet been terrorized and programmed into total secrecy are more likely than adults who are actively involved to relate where such activity has taken place. Unfortunately, unlike adults, children are not given location information in advance of a ceremony. This is not the least bit helpful to law enforcement.

Even more problematic is the fact that law enforcement agencies are often infiltrated by cults at virtually every operational level. This should come as no surprise to anyone since members are groomed to pursue these positions and there are economic and other interests to protect. Cult members who are strategically placed in the system are usually one step ahead of any investigation so that they can run interference and effectively derail investigative and prosecutorial efforts. In sophisticated cult networks, these connections in the

system can run very high and very deep, so professionals working with ritual trauma victims should not be surprised to run across evidence that they, themselves, are “under surveillance.”

Inasmuch as all of these factors create unique challenges and obstacles for professionals to overcome, it may be helpful to break the problem down into several general components: 1) PHYSICAL EVIDENCE

First of all, there will rarely be physical evidence to substantiate allegations of abuse involving organized cults. Unlike criminal investigations involving dabblers and self-styled cultists that might produce ritual paraphernalia or even mutilated victims, intergenerational cults are highly organized and extremely secretive concerning their activities. Ritual sites and ceremonial implements are carefully guarded before, during, and after ritual ceremonies. Since the successful operation of the cult is dependent upon absolute secrecy, thorough and systematic disposal of any and all evidence is routine.

Allegations of ritual sacrifice are particularly difficult to substantiate. Even where cults require their members to demonstrate ultimate allegiance by offering up their first-born child for sacrifice, the young female is usually in early adolescence. Having been earlier impregnated by a cult member(s) during a ritual, early labor is reportedly induced by saline injection (e.g., at 6 months gestation) and the fetus is then offered up and sacrificed in a dedication ceremony. Because of the age of the mother and size of the fetus at delivery, pregnancy is rarely suspected by the outside world.

More commonly, infant victims that are to be used in sacrificial rites are provided by "breeders" within cults themselves. As with the first-born babies of cult members, there is never any record of these children's existence, much less their deaths. Furthermore, organized cults have their own unique methods and systems for disposing of bodies and/or body parts. Many cults either own or have access to a crematorium, and are assisted by cult physicians and/or coroners who cover up the cause of death of their victims. However, less sophisticated methods for body disposal such as acid or lime pits and tree shredders have also been used quite effectively.

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/63764 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Forensic Considerations in Ritual Trauma Cases (Part 3)

Author: **Sylvia Gillotte, attorney**
Published on: **March 21, 2001**

Part Three of forensic considerations in ritual abuse 2) MEDICAL EVIDENCE

It is very difficult to obtain conclusive medical evidence supportive of a child's allegations of ritual and sexual abuse. Since cults often use electroshock, pins and needles which are inserted under the fingernails or into sexual and other orifices of the body, knife cuts or burns into the scalp, onto the soles of the feet, or in the creases of the skin, and other methods that make injuries difficult to detect or are otherwise explainable, professionals are faced with explaining in court “why” such evidence is not present.

While evidence of sexual abuse may be more apparent with the use of a colposcope (e.g., repeated multiple perpetrator abuse is more likely to leave scarring in the vaginal and anal areas in children), many cults have physicians who treat and effectively cover up evidence of abuse. In addition, it is important to understand that cults often prime infants early on for sexual penetration using special instruments designed to stretch the vagina and anus in a gradual, non-traumatic manner. Delayed disclosure by children further reduces the likelihood of obtaining conclusive medical and physical evidence, either through examination or drug screen.

3) PSYCHOLOGICAL AND BEHAVIORAL EVIDENCE

Children who have been sexually abused exhibit numerous debilitating effects of their trauma. However, studies show that children who have been ritually abused suffer greater problems and consequences which can diminish their level of recovery, even with treatment. This evidence contradicts theories that accounts of ritual abuse are the mere fantasy of children, or a bizarre substitution, replacement, and/or “screen” memory for an incestuous childhood. “If children claiming to be ritually abused were in fact sexually abused only, then clearly their symptomatology should be similar to and no more serious than that of sexually abused children.” Consequently, psychological and behavioral indicators in sexual abuse cases should be carefully assessed to rule out ritual trauma.

In ritual trauma, the terror and intimidation used by perpetrators is designed to be so severe that children involved will not only dissociate during the trauma, but also have trouble remembering and disclosing their victimization to anyone following the abuse. The use of drugs during rituals further complicates matters because it can affect the child's ability to subsequently relate the event in clear detail. While children may exhibit a wide range of behavioral indicators for ritual trauma, until and unless they have been removed from their abusive environment for an extensive period of time, verbal disclosure of their abuse is unlikely. Since lengthy removal from perpetrators is usually necessary for disclosure of ritual trauma, extreme delay in disclosure should never be used to discredit a child's allegations.

Children who have been ritually traumatized since birth, or over an extensive period of time, may also be suffering the effects of psychological conditioning and programming, as well as DID. Removing them from the environment which reinforces such conditioning and programming is extremely important. Once removed from various "reinforcements" that an abusive environment provides, conditioning and programming often begin to fall apart. The end result is that a child's behavior (e.g., after being in foster care for a year or so without any significant problems) may rapidly deteriorate without apparent explanation. In reality, the structure underlying the child's conditioning or programming is collapsing, thereby allowing the child to begin remembering and processing his or her former trauma. While system protocol may direct that the child be removed from this alternative placement, a knowledgeable professional will recognize that this may not necessarily be in the child's best interest. In the Snow and Sorenson study cited above, the authors note:

"Disclosure became a process, not an event. As the process of disclosure brought children closer to their psychological pain and terror, behavioral and emotional problems emerged. Indeed, it appeared that children got worse before they got better. Depression with an unusual impending sense of death at their own or another's hand, extreme hyperactivity, aggressive acting out, obsessive fears and compulsions, reenactment of abusive rituals, and intense sibling conflict characterized the children's behavior as the disclosure process progressed."

VI. "BEST PRACTICE" GUIDELINES FOR PROFESSIONALS

A. PROSECUTORS, ATTORNEYS, AND LAW ENFORCEMENT

[Note: Law enforcement officers and prosecutors are encouraged to carefully read Section V above, as well as a two-part article by journalist Civia Tamarkin entitled "Investigative Issues in Ritual Abuse Cases"]

Investigations related to ritual abuse allegations should center around any and all evidence corroborating the victim's statements that can be subsequently used in court. Naturally, this would include interviews with any witnesses that might have

knowledge about the case: the child and other children whom the child relates may have been involved; the alleged perpetrator(s); the family and other siblings; individuals from the neighborhood, day care, or other setting where the abuse was alleged to have taken place; teachers and counselors; medical doctors and mental health professionals evaluating or treating the child; social workers, foster parents, and CASA/GAL advocates who may have had contact with the child; and any other individual having possible information which would further the investigation. Keep in mind that once the interviewing process moves beyond the victim in a case, it may be impossible to protect information related to your investigation.

Any forensic interview of the child should be conducted by a professional who is properly trained in interviewing techniques and knowledgeable about the dynamics of ritual trauma. If necessary, this can be handled by a team approach, where two or more professionals with complementary expertise work together during the process. A professional who is familiar with the nature of allegations in ritual trauma cases is more likely to understand the subtle nuances and hidden meanings which accompany such disclosures. This knowledge is critical in directing the questioning process. As with any case involving child abuse, the use of leading questions in ritual trauma cases should be avoided. Whenever possible, it may be extremely useful and advantageous to videotape the interview process.

When multiple victims have been identified (e.g., a day care center is involved) a modified approach may be necessary. In such cases, it is best to compartmentalize the investigative process by using separate professionals with each child. These professionals should have no contact with one another during the initial stages of the investigation, but should report their independent findings to an individual who is selected to oversee and coordinate the overall investigation. The purpose of this is to limit cross-contamination between victims. At the same time, other individuals having contact with the children – parents, caseworkers, Guardians, etc. - should be instructed not to question any child, and to share and relay any information or spontaneous disclosures directly with the managing coordinator. In assessing a child's disclosure, it is important to consider all aspects of the child's story. As mentioned herein, allegations concerning ritual trauma often involve bizarre elements and scenarios which an untrained professional might easily discount – particularly if some portion of the child's statement is highly unlikely or impossible. [See Section V, supra]. In order to substantiate any allegation or uncover supportive physical evidence, one must first attempt to identify the exact location(s) where abuse may have been perpetrated, as well as any items, paraphernalia, etc., which may have been used during the abuse.

One of the greatest errors made by professionals investigating such cases is the failure to use and issue search warrants in a timely fashion. Search warrants should be requested as early as possible - before alleged perpetrators have a chance to move or dispose of evidence. If a child's disclosures include the use of such things as robes, hoods, masks, knives, candles, ritual paraphernalia, cages, "coffins," secret rooms, tunnels, photographs, cameras, computers, books, ashes,

bones, drugs, needles, blood, urine, feces, etc., then any search warrant should descriptively include these items. Since children can be mistaken about the nature of a particular item (e.g., a child might identify a wooden crate or other container as a “coffin”), it is better for a warrant to be worded in an over-inclusive, rather than under-inclusive manner. For example, the warrant should preferably state “…coffin or other box-like structure/container with lid, within which a child might fit.”

The scene of any alleged crime can provide a wealth of information. A child’s description of his or her surroundings at the time of the abuse can sometimes be confusing and is best understood by a very careful and methodical investigation of the actual scene and related environment. For example, a child might relate that the wall in a particular room was black, when in fact, it was simply draped with black material. It is often possible to deduce the nature of such a discrepancy by observing pinholes or other damage to the wall which indicates that draping may have been used. The next logical step would be to check the premises for a storage area or container that might contain fabric or other draping material.

Since use of body fluids and body parts are common in allegations of ritual trauma, it is important to decide whether or not to search the premises for either direct or trace evidence of such material. If determined to be useful or necessary, this material should be collected with the same level of technical precision and care as similar evidence obtained in homicide cases. Since most of this material will need to undergo extensive laboratory analysis, it is important to maintain and document an uncontaminated professional chain of custody.

All children who have disclosed ritual trauma should be medically and psychologically examined as soon as possible. The process which is recommended in more detail below (see “Medical” and “Mental Health”) is designed to document any physical or psychological evidence and/or damage to the child. It will also provide the victim with any therapeutic support necessary for healing, as well as help prepare the child for both in and out-of-court interviewing. Investigators and prosecutors should work closely with both medical and mental health professionals. When indicated by a child’s disclosures, they should also request that toxicology and other specific tests be conducted on the child. Medical evidence supportive of the allegations should be photographically documented, and any statements made by the child throughout the process should be documented in writing.

While undercover surveillance may be difficult or impossible in most instances, electronic surveillance should be considered wherever possible. Inasmuch as many cults also engage in related criminal activity, there may be sufficient grounds to seek legal authority to tap a phone line or access other information. Child pornography is a stable source of income for many cults. Such material must either be physically transported for sale and distribution, or transmitted through electronic means such as a computer. Other alleged criminal activity should be similarly investigated. “Following the money” can be one of the most productive routes to

take when investigating a ritual trauma case.

Law enforcement professionals should be aware of the fact that polygraph testing often has limited value in ritual trauma cases. Not only are organized perpetrators unlikely to provide “normal” reactive responses to certain questioning, the presence of DID or extreme dissociation may result in totally inaccurate readings and conclusions. In such cases, it is highly probable that the polygraph examiner is actually questioning and testing an “alter” or “personality” who has no knowledge or culpability concerning the act(s) under investigation. Consequently, the use of polygraph testing in such cases is discouraged.

Finally, since prosecutors have the ultimate task of proving these complex cases in court, they should spare no expense when it comes to the assistance of expert witnesses and consultants. This assistance should be requested at the earliest stages of an investigation, before inappropriate action is taken which might jeopardize the case. Qualified experts can not only help you to properly investigate and prepare for trial, they can be invaluable in educating judges and juries to the unique dynamics of ritual trauma. They can also testify as to whether or not it is necessary or advisable to institute protective measures when taking the child’s testimony in court.

Children who have had extensive cult involvement may demonstrate a degree of dissociative disorder that is problematic in court. When required to testify before their alleged perpetrator(s) or anyone else knowledgeable about their abuse and conditioning, these children can be “triggered” into silence instantaneously by the mere use of a hand-cue or other external and pre-programmed mechanism. In such cases, it is imperative to request that the child’s testimony be videotaped and taken outside the presence of his or her perpetrator(s). Careful attention should be paid to subtle changes in the child’s behavior which appear to be related to the manner in which cross-examination is being conducted. Whenever it appears necessary, a recess should be requested to ensure that the child has not been unduly influenced or manipulated.

B. PHYSICIANS/DENTISTS

All children who have been ritually traumatized should be medically examined by a knowledgeable and competent physician. Since very few medical doctors have much experience in working with victims of ritual trauma, it is important that any physician being asked to assist on a case be provided with detailed information regarding the child’s allegations. A qualified professional can provide the physician with additional input regarding the nature of any medical evidence being sought, depending upon information gleaned from the child’s disclosures.

It is highly recommended that a physician who is specially trained in conducting sexual abuse examinations in children be used to obtain evidence related to the

child's sexual molestation. The use of a colposcope is likewise recommended so that minute fissures that may be invisible to the naked eye can be seen and photographically documented. Such an exam should ideally take place as soon as the child has disclosed sexual abuse - or even prior to disclosure if the child is exhibiting any signs of ritual trauma or a dissociative disorder.

Medical examination of the child's physical body should be undertaken with great patience and care. Victims of ritual trauma can become either passive or unnaturally agitated by medical procedures or the mere presence of various medical personnel. Any signs that the child is dissociating during the process should be noted in writing, as should the child's behavioral response and any related statements.

The physician should look for evidence of bruising, tatoos, cuts, burns, etc., on the child's body. Careful attention should be paid to hard-to-see areas such as the scalp, spine, ears, nipples, genitals, creases, and other crevices in the body (e.g., does there appear to be dried blood under the child's fingernail). Any abnormalities should be noted on the chart and compared with other medical records available for the child. When appropriate, photographs should be taken to document peculiar findings.

Frequent use of drugs by cults can create any number of problems in children to which a physician should be extremely sensitive. For example, over time many drugs or drug combinations can cause imbalances in blood chemistry, adrenal problems, and organ or liver damage. Hair and skin tone/texture may appear unhealthy, or the child may appear to be slightly bloated, emaciated, or otherwise abnormal. Such an appearance may indicate the need for toxicological testing beyond the normal bloodwork. In certain instances, a non-invasive method may be preferred, such as the collection of a hair sample for lab analysis.

Drug use can also have damaging effects on a child's teeth and gums. Any alleged victim of ritual trauma should be referred for a dental examination and follow-up care. Evidence of deteriorating teeth, enamel, and/or gums may boost the need for toxicological testing, as well as give support to other medical evidence regarding the child's trauma or neglect.

C. PSYCHOLOGISTS, THERAPISTS, & MENTAL HEALTH WORKERS

[Note: Therapists should be familiar with the techniques used by perpetrators in ritual trauma. A lending library of training tapes on the topic is available for professionals and can be accessed by contacting the author.] Therapists, psychiatrists, psychologists, and other professionals in the mental health field play a particularly important role in cases involving the ritual abuse of children. Because these cases involve extremely challenging diagnostic and treatment issues, it is particularly important that such professionals seek assistance and input from other

professionals with expertise or experience in diagnosing and treating ritual trauma victims. Additional support can be obtained through joining professional associations that focus on issues of severe trauma and/or dissociation. These organizations usually provide periodic workshops and seminars to educate and train professionals in better identifying and treating victims of severe and/or ritual trauma and may also offer options for liability insurance and legal support.

It is important to recognize that dissociative disorders are commonly present in children who have been ritually traumatized. Unfortunately, dissociation can cause behaviors and symptoms in children that mimic other disorders and lead to inaccurate diagnoses and ineffective treatment of the problem. For example, a child with DID or other dissociative disorder can exhibit a wide-range of behaviors that are somewhat consistent with such diagnoses as ADD, ADHD, Oppositional Defiant Disorder, Bipolar Disorder, Tourette's Disorder, etc. The abrupt changes in a child's personality and behavior which accompany DID can be very similar to the aggressive and chaotic behaviors found in these other disorders, so practitioners must be very cautious in their assessment and avoid over-reliance on previous diagnoses involving the child.

It is better practice to get a complete medical and psychological history on the child and independently assess and evaluate him/her based upon both past and current indicators for the trauma. The child's medical history is essential to help determine whether or not the child's aberrant behaviors are primarily due to use (or abuse) of a prescription drug, or drug combination, which is producing negative side affects (e.g., ritalin and/or anti-depressants). Parents, teachers, day care workers, social workers, foster parents, and Guardians ad Litem/CASAs should be consulted to obtain details of the child's statements concerning the abuse, as well as descriptions of the child's behaviors and problems. The child's artwork and drawings should also be reviewed as they may contain subtle (and, sometimes, not-so-subtle) indicators for ritual trauma.

While virtually all victims of ritual child abuse suffer from PTSD and attachment disorders, older children and adolescents of this abuse may also exhibit eating disorders, addictions, depression and self-mutilation tendencies that are a direct result of their conditioning and/or programming during trauma. Particular attention should be paid to amnesic episodes, auditory and/or visual hallucinations, unexplained changes in handwriting, and other symptoms indicative of the presence of severe dissociation and/or multiple personalities. There are a number of questionnaires and assessment tools that have been developed to assist in the diagnosis of dissociation in children and adolescents.

Given the severity of trauma experienced by victims of ritual trauma, therapeutic intervention can be a costly and lengthy process. Whenever possible, it is valuable to establish a treatment team approach to therapy that provides the additional support necessary to advance healing. A physician should be consulted whenever possible to rule out any medical problems, and the assistance of a psychiatrist

should be sought when drug intervention appears necessary or appropriate to stabilize the child. However, since the child's abuse may have included the use of drugs, it is important to insist that the child be medically tested to rule out any blood chemistry imbalances and/or damage to their organs or adrenal system. Due to possible overexposure to drugs during cult victimization which can result in desensitization, drug intervention may be ineffective with ritually abused children. Furthermore, a child suffering from DID may simply "switch" into an alter personality which is unaffected by the drug prescribed.

Since ritually abused children usually dissociate their memories of trauma and are systematically conditioned not to verbally disclose, the use of adjunctive therapies can be invaluable to the therapeutic process. Art therapy, for example, can be very helpful in the treatment of dissociative disorders, and should be considered in the treatment of adolescents who have been ritually traumatized. In children under the age of three, memories of trauma are expressed more behaviorally than verbally. Consequently, play therapy may be a critical therapeutic tool.

Drs. Catherine Gould and Vickie Graham-Costain, recognized experts in the treatment of ritual child abuse victims, believe that "…play therapy constitutes the most powerful healing modality for ritually abused children from age two to 11 years of age, and sometimes older." Treatment of ritually abused children necessarily involves the surfacing and working through of dissociated memories. Consequently, Drs. Gould and Graham-Costain propose a three-part model using play therapy:

"First the therapist must treat the post traumatic stress disorder resulting from chronic, massive abuse. Second, the therapist helps the child identify and work with the dissociative, fragmented personality system that results from extreme abuse. Some ritually abused children exhibit fluid multiple personality disorder (MPD), whereas others exhibit less severe forms of dissociative disorder. Third, the therapist assists the child in finding and working through the indoctrinating messages that were received during the traumatic and abusive dissociation-producing experience. Disclosure of the abuse and appropriately structured abreactive play therapy, in which the therapist actively involves him or herself in the child's therapeutic play, constitutes the primary mechanisms of treatment of ritually abused children."

Gould and Graham-Costain recommend that play therapy involve access to a wide range of props and toys, including animal and small monster-type figurines, masks, hats, costumes, weapons, miniature coffins and cages, and other items that are typically used to terrorize children. During play therapy, children who have been ritually traumatized will almost invariably select items that have thematic significance to their abuse, e.g., being confined, held under water, "buried," hung upside down, etc. When security and trust are apparent in the therapeutic relationship, such children repeatedly act out their "trauma dramas" in a variety of ways which include chase and rescue themes, frightening perpetrator figures and

monsters, as well as other related scenarios. For example, a child may use a sand tray to reenact scenes related to “burying;” pick up a toy stick or knife to act out the killing of a figure; etc.

It is important to remember that ritually abused children must be allowed to work through and re-associate their memories of abuse at their own pace. Certain therapeutic models can assist with this process, most notably the BASK and PACEM models which are used in the treatment of dissociative disorders, as well as the treatment of ritual trauma survivors. These models can be incorporated very effectively into the play therapy process. “Unless the ritually abused child’s internal dissociative system is addressed, the therapy will not impact the most heavily dissociated, cult-created aspects of the child’s personality. Psychotherapy that fails to address the child’s dissociative system and the associated programming may improve the child’s level of functioning but still leave him or her vulnerable to recontact and ongoing exploitation by the perpetrating cult.”

If the child’s dissociative system manifests distinct and identifiable sub-personalities, it is possible that mind control techniques and programming have been deliberately used in conjunction with the ritual trauma. This usually involves a systematic process that results in layers of programming designed to ensure the child’s allegiance to and use by the cult. In such instances, the therapist may work steadily with the child to “neutralize” several programs, only to discover that there are back-up programs which must still be accessed by the child and dealt with in therapy. These intentionally created programs will often include both “animal” and “spirit” sub-personalities and alters which exist in the child’s consciousness or psyche.

Once a child has been able to work through the various components of his/her trauma, it will be necessary to address the mind control programming to which the child may have been subjected. This involves recall of the programming event, as well as the accompanying “trigger” that is designed to initiate a specific response on the part of the victim. As explained earlier in this material, triggers can be either internal or external and are often in the nature of hand-gestures, use of a particular word or name, a tone or sound, color, etc. Until all cult-created programs can be neutralized, a child will be unable to resist responding to triggers designed to control his or her behavior. This has profound significance when it comes to helping a child prepare for testimony in court. As a result, mental health professionals treating a child may need to provide testimonial assistance in support of any motions which are made to shield the child from contact with the perpetrator (s) during the proceedings.

It is also helpful to understand that, during the programming process, perpetrators may use very deceptive methods to name individual alter personalities in children that have been induced through trauma. For example, a part may be deliberately called “Sad,” “Scared,” “Grumpy,” “Brain,” “Bad-Devil,” or “Mean Momma.” As a result, when the child “switches” into one of these personalities and is then

questioned about the change in his or her behavior, the conversation which ensues may resemble the following:

• Adult: “June, honey, what’s wrong? You were playing just fine with little Johnny and now you’re over here in the corner sucking your thumb!”

Child: “I’m Sad!” (Meaning: I’m not June)

Adult: “Why are you sad? Did little Johnny do something to make you sad?”

Child: “I don’t know!” (Meaning: I don’t know ‘why’ I am this person called ‘Sad’ – and anyway, who is little Johnny or what would he have done to make me come out in the open like this?)

(OR)

• Adult: “Bobby, are you all right? We heard you wake up screaming and ran down here to check on you!” (In response to nightmare or night terror)

Child: “I’m Scared, I’m Scared!”

(OR)

• Adult: “Judy, what made you hit your friend Susie like that?

Child: “Bad-Devil made me do it!” (Meaning: There is a separate part inside of me called “Bad-Devil” which I do not control and that “came out” and did this; rather than “ I don’t want to take responsibility for doing this”)

Since ritually abused children in treatment commonly make progressive disclosures regarding their victimization, it is imperative that therapists and other mental health professionals take copious notes documenting a child’s statements as verbatim as possible. Videotaping of sessions may be advisable, as long the court, custodial guardian, or agency has provided consent and camera equipment is placed in a location that does not interfere with therapy. Any statements, disclosures, and recorded interviews should be shared with both the county prosecutor and the attorney representing social services, as they may meet admissibility standards for evidence in court. It is never appropriate to assume that any given statement made by a child is “hearsay,” and therefore inadmissible in a legal proceeding involving the child. Furthermore, statements pertaining to the identity of perpetrators, other victims, or the location(s) where abuse may have occurred should be shared with law enforcement officials as early as possible.

Finally, it may be very beneficial to familiarize yourself with ritual holiday dates that

are commonly observed by cults. (This would naturally include the child's birthday.) Ritually abused children often become agitated shortly before, during, and after these dates. They may exhibit aggressive behavior with peers, become regressed or withdrawn, experience a higher degree of night terror, etc. It is important to be aware of the influence that these dates may be having on the child so that they can be factored into the therapeutic process. At Halloween, for example, it may be appropriate to remove any celebratory decorations in the child's home or placement until the child has worked through any triggering imagery related to the holiday. D. SOCIAL WORKERS

When dealing with the issue of ritual trauma, the role of a social worker can be pivotal in determining what services are made available to the child and his or her family. The majority of ritually abused children do not enter foster care or the legal system as a result of an allegation of ritual trauma. They are usually in the care of the state due to more common allegations of abuse and neglect for which rehabilitative services are being offered to the family. Frequently, children will have been in the system a minimum of 6-12 months, or even much longer, before disclosures and behaviors indicative of ritual abuse surface to an identifiable level.

Unless the allegation has arisen in a day care setting or outside a familial setting, it is the treatment worker who is most likely run across the various "red flags" that point to ritual trauma. This is primarily due to the fact the caseworker is interfacing with all aspects of the child's placement and treatment and may be given bits and pieces of information concerning the child which, collectively, give rise for greater concern. This can create interesting challenges for a treatment worker whose agency's plan for reunification is suddenly complicated or thrown off track.

Whenever any signs of ritual trauma arise, it is the duty of the social worker to refer the child and possibly other family members for further evaluation and assessment. Assistance of this nature should be sought from professionals who have some understanding, experience, or expertise in the area of ritual trauma. Otherwise, it is a useless effort and expense on the part of the agency which virtually ensures that the child will be denied timely services which are necessary for his or her full recovery from the trauma. Without significant intervention and treatment, children who have been ritually traumatized continue to suffer throughout their lives from a variety of physical, emotional, psychological, and relationship problems. Even worse, they are more likely to become perpetrators than other victims of abuse.

While child protection, treatment, and recovery efforts in cases involving ritual trauma require extraordinary resources from a system which is under-funded and overloaded, it is important to understand that the problem is one of "pay now or pay later." Limited resources should never be a reason for failing to pursue appropriate action in a ritual trauma case. Victims of ritual trauma are the most brutalized members of our society who, if returned to an abusive environment, may become the next wave of brutalizers. This is particularly true of young boys whose cult abuse appears to generate more anti-social and criminal behavior in adulthood.

In many cases, it may be impossible to identify a qualified therapist or medical doctor within reasonable driving distance of the child. In such instances, it is recommended that the agency contract with an out-of-town specialist who can provide phone consultation to the child's treatment professionals. Such a specialist can provide educational reading and resource information which may be very helpful in augmenting the child's level of service. Furthermore, the specialist can serve as an on-going guide to assist throughout the process, and provide testimonial support in court proceedings related to the child's abuse and trauma.

Individual caseworkers who have difficulty receiving the support of their agency should remind directors and supervisors of state statutory obligations and liability considerations. Since children who are ritually traumatized often fall into special needs or high risk intervention categories that qualify them for additional state and federal dollars, it is the duty of the agency to do everything in its power to ensure that the child is receiving the maximum treatment and benefits available. This would include any special educational needs that might result from the child's trauma and dissociation.

Treatment needs of the alleged perpetrator and/or family members will also be substantial and should be addressed as comprehensively as possible. Unfortunately, familial perpetrators are unlikely to ever admit having been involved with anything as heinous as ritual trauma. In fact, if they themselves are suffering from DID, they may not be consciously aware of their involvement in the child's abuse. This problem even arises in cases involving protective mothers who may have a strong "sense" that their children are being brutalized, but have no recollection of their own participation at some level. Consequently, a child victim of intergenerational ritual abuse is almost always at risk if returned home.

An additional consideration is the foster care placement of the child. Once ritual trauma has been identified, it may be necessary to move the child to a more therapeutic foster home; or, if the child is in crisis, a temporary in-patient facility. If the child is attached to his or her foster parent and the foster parent is able to manage the additional time which may be involved in transporting the child to therapy and managing problematic behaviors, it may be best to leave the child in his current placement and look into the possibility of periodic respite care when needed. As mentioned earlier, verbal disclosures concerning ritual trauma do not generally occur until a child feels sufficiently removed in both time and space from the perpetrators and their environment to feel safe and secure. However, once the disclosure process begins, a child's behavior may rapidly deteriorate and necessitate placement adjustments.

There may be other, overriding factors to consider when making a placement decision for a child. If there are young infants or fragile children who also reside in the foster home under consideration, it may be too risky to place the ritually abused child there. This is particularly true with older children and adolescents who may

have fully developed “perpetrator” parts concerning whom neither they nor others are aware. In such situations, strong consideration should be given to moving one child or the other(s), giving appropriate weight to the needs of each individual child in care.

Social workers, like therapists, should keep accurate and detailed records of the child’s statements, disclosures, and progress throughout the course of a case. Signs of ritual trauma may mean that an organized perpetrator group is involved, of which law enforcement should be made aware. Any subsequent investigation or prosecution would naturally require cooperation from the social service agency having legal custody of the child. In addition, records of the child’s statements and disclosures would be an essential source of information to police and prosecutors.

In light of the social service agency’s legal and physical custody of the child, with all of its related responsibilities concerning the child’s care, social service workers and administrators are encouraged to familiarize themselves with the “best practices” recommendations of all other professionals involved in the child’s life. This will assist the worker and the agency in making referrals that are appropriate to the child’s needs, and ensuring that adequate safeguards are in place during the process.

E. CASA/GUARDIAN AD LITEM REPRESENTATIVES

The Guardian ad Litem or CASA who has been court-appointed to represent a child must always look to and advocate for the best interests of the minor throughout the child’s involvement in the legal system. In cases involving ritual trauma, the efforts required of the Guardian ad Litem or CASA will be much more substantial than the average case. Obviously, this is due to the nature and complexity of the case, as well as the severity of the trauma that the child has endured. “Standing in the shoes” of a ritual child abuse victim requires tremendous patience, compassion, and fortitude, since the system rarely responds in a manner which is adequate or appropriate to the child’s needs.

A Guardian ad Litem or CASA is similarly situated to the child’s treatment worker in that he or she should be having regular interaction with the child, biological and foster parents, teachers, physicians, therapists, etc. In truth, social workers are notoriously overworked and may not have adequate time to engage in thorough casework and investigation related to the child’s ritual trauma. Consequently, while zealously advocating for the child’s best interests, the Guardian ad Litem or CASA can also serve as an additional pair of eyes and ears for the treatment worker. Obviously, important information regarding the child should be mutually shared so that efforts can be coordinated.

Most importantly, it is essential that the Guardian ad Litem or CASA become familiar with the dynamics of ritual trauma so that he or she can properly assess

the case and make appropriate recommendations on behalf of the child. Information for such an assessment should come from every source available and would likely entail both third party interviews and a review of the child's medical, psychological, educational, and other histories which are necessarily relevant to the assessment. It may also be appropriate to seek expert advice, legal and otherwise, concerning how best to proceed on behalf of the child.

Unfortunately, it is not uncommon for a Guardian ad Litem or CASA to meet with opposition when it comes to advocating for treatment services which are necessary for the child. Nonetheless, the Guardian ad Litem or CASA should initiate whatever legal steps are necessary to ensure that the child is no longer at risk and is receiving services which are adequate and conducive to the child's healing. This may require the testimonial assistance of an expert witness. If monies for such services are unavailable, it is appropriate to request that costs be assessed against an appropriate party to the action. Usually, this is the social service agency or the alleged perpetrator.

The safety of the child should always be of paramount importance and concern. Unfortunately, cults attempt to infiltrate all areas of the system, and a child may end up being "routed" to a foster home that is under cult control and supervision. The Guardian ad Litem or CASA's independent status may provide a unique opportunity to observe problems that may go unnoticed by social service or other professionals. If there is reasonable concern or suspicion on the part of the GAL or CASA that the child's placement is a threat to his health, safety, or well-being, it is his or her duty to advocate for the child's removal and placement elsewhere.

While continuously gathering information which is critical to the court, as well as useful to every professional involved, the Guardian ad Litem or CASA should refrain from directly questioning the child concerning his or her sexual or ritual abuse. This process is best left to professionals trained in interviewing techniques and may only result in charges of contamination and influence by the perpetrators. On the other hand, spontaneous disclosures by the child should be carefully recorded and shared with other professionals treating the child, along with observations regarding the child's behavior and the behavior of others that may be of concern.

Finally, it is important to remember that the Guardian ad Litem or CASA may have more time than any other professional involved to serve as a coordinator and courier of important information between professionals that can serve to improve the level of services provided and have immediate impact on the child's well-being. As long as the actions of the Guardian ad Litem or CASA do not violate confidentiality and are consistent with the child's best interests, he or she should engage in as much formal and informal advocacy on behalf of the child as possible.

VII. CONCLUSION

Since the early 1980's, there has been a surge in the number of reported cases involving ritual trauma. Professionals must understand that this surge in cases is directly related to reports from day care centers which have exposed this activity. Unfortunately, our increased dependence on day care has provided organized perpetrators with the perfect "structure" for their activities. At the same time, these centers have become the Achille's Heel of cults desiring to expand their power and influence beyond traditional boundaries. The reason for this is that non-offending parents whose children are abused in day care are not only more likely to notice subtle changes in their children, they are also more likely to believe and respond to their disclosures.

Skeptics argue that media coverage related to these day care cases has perpetuated false and contrived reports that have no basis in fact. They point to prosecutions that have either failed or been overturned on appeal to support these conclusions. Through the efforts of several organizations, a media campaign has been waged and lawsuits have been filed for the purpose of discrediting any and all allegations related to ritual trauma and recovered memory. The effect has been to discourage many professionals from becoming further involved or educated about the problem.

In spite of continuing disbelief, allegations of ritual abuse continue to be reported by children and adults in every state in this country, as well as other countries across the globe. Despite differences in the locations and ages of victims, the information revealed and experiences related are strikingly similar. If we continue to deny the existence of ritual abuse in light of these disclosures, then we risk believing in an international conspiracy between alleged victims who are culturally, geographically, and chronologically removed from one another. This is an absurd notion.

In truth, conspiracy is very rampant in ritual child abuse. However, the conspiracy comes from organized perpetrators who use fear, intimidation, and brainwashing techniques to cover criminal activity and protect vital economic interests rather than therapists and victims who have little to gain in this process. Perpetrators are "banking their money" on the probability that such allegations will be ignored, discounted, and swept under the carpet of our legal system. Our refusal to address the issue of ritual trauma with the same level of zeal as other forms of abuse has done little to erode the confidence of these groups.

We must remember that victims of ritual trauma have been subjected to the worst forms of abuse imaginable and suffer greater debilitating effects than other victims of child abuse. Their cases deserve the highest level of assistance possible, particularly in view of the fact that other child victims may be involved. We must also be careful not to label adult survivors, or protective parents who may suspect cult involvement of a spouse or other family member, as "hysterical," "paranoid," or "histrionic." Their perceived "hysteria" may be based upon a very real danger to themselves and others. A system that fails to believe and assist adult victims of

ritual trauma is not likely to protect children any more effectively.

Children are the most vulnerable members of our society. Protection of their birthright and our future as a nation requires that we move beyond denial so that we can create new investigative strategies and paradigms that will effectively assist us in addressing the problem of ritual trauma. Without such a shift, future generations will have to deal with the exponential effects of this phenomenon.

VIII. SUGGESTED READING

A. ALL DISCIPLINES (**Generally helpful to all fields of endeavor)

American Psychiatric Association. (1980). Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders (3rd Ed.). Washington, DC: Author.

American Psychiatric Association. (1994). Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders (4th Ed.) Washington, DC: Author.

Barstow, D. (1993). “A Critical Examination of the ‘False Memory Syndrome’.” Family Violence & Sexual Assault Bulletin, 9 (4): 21-25.

Breiner, S.J. (1990). Slaughter of the Innocents: Child Abuse Through the Ages and Today. New York: Plenum Press.

Bottoms, B., Shaver, P., & Goodman, G. (August 1991). “Profile of Ritualistic and Religion-Related Abuse Allegations in the United States.” Paper presented at the ninety-ninth annual convention of the American Psychological Association. San Francisco, CA.

DeMause, L. (1982). “The Evolution of Childhood.” In L. DeMause (author), Foundations of Psychohistory (pp. 1-83). New York: Creative Roots, Inc.

Duncan, C.W. (1994). The Fractured Mirror: Healing Multiple Personality Disorder. Deerfield Beach, FL: Health Communications.

Edwards, L.M. (1990). “Differentiating Between Ritual Assault and Sexual Abuse.” Journal of Child and Youth Care (Special Issue 1990): 67-90.

Faller, K.C. (Spring 1994). “Ritual Abuse: A Review of the Research.” The APSAC Advisor, 7 (1): 19-27.

Frattarola, J. (1987). “A Special Report: America’s Best Kept Secret.” Passport Magazine (Special Edition).

Gillotte, S.L. (1998). “Ritual Trauma and Child Abuse.” In S.L. Gillotte, N.C. McCormick, W.S. Nelson, & T.G. Vanderbilt (Eds.), Representing Children in Family Court: A Resource Manual for Attorneys and Guardians ad Litem (pp. 1-21). Columbia, SC: Continuing Legal Education Division of the S.C. Bar Association.

Gould, C. (Dec. 1995). “Cultural and Economic Barriers to Protecting Children from Ritual Abuse and Mind Control.” Mindnet Journal, 1(48): 1-9.

Gould, C. (1995). “Denying the Ritual Abuse of Children.” The Journal of Psychohistory, 22 (3): 330-339.

Hudson, P. (1991). Ritual Child Abuse: Discovery, Diagnosis, and Treatment. Saratoga, CA: R & E Publishers.

Kelley, S.J. (1988). “Ritualistic Abuse of Children: Dynamics and Impact.” Cultic Studies Journal, 5(2): 228-236.

Kelley, S.J. (1992). “Ritualistic Abuse: Recognition, Impact, and Current Controversy.” Paper presented at the San Diego Conference on Responding to Child Maltreatment. San Diego, CA.

Lander, D. (1997). “The Sacrifice of the Innocents.” The Journal of Psychohistory, 24 (3): 214-220.

Lloyd, D.W. (1992). “Ritual Child Abuse: Definitions and Assumptions.” Journal of Child Sexual Abuse, 1 (3): 1-14.

Marron, K. (1988). Ritual Abuse: Canada’s Most Infamous Trial on Child Abuse. Toronto: Seal Books.

Miller, A. (1986). Thou Shalt Not Be Aware: Society’s Betrayal of the Child. New York: Meridian.

Newton, M. (1996). “Written in Blood: A History of Human Sacrifice.” The Journal of Psychohistory, 4 (2): 104-131.

Noblitt, J.R., & Perskin, P.S. (2000). Cult and Ritual Abuse: Its History, Anthropology, and Recent Discovery in Contemporary America. Westport, CT: Praeger Publishers.

Pazder, L., and Smith, M. (1980). Michelle Remembers. New York: Congdon and Lattes.

Report of the Ritual Abuse Task Force (1989). Los Angeles County Commission

for Women, 383 Hall of Administration, 500 West Temple Street, Los Angles, CA 90012; (213) 974-1455.

Ruber, D. (1994). “The Satanism Scare.” Parenting, March: 87-91.

Sakheim, D. & Devine, S.E. (1992). Out of Darkness: Exploring Satanism and Ritual Abuse. New York: Lexington.

Scheflin, A., and Opton, E. (1978). The Mind Manipulators. New York: Paddington Press.

Scott, S. (1993). “Beyond Belief: Beyond Help – Report of a Helpline Advertised after the Transmission of a Channel 4 Film on Ritual Abuse.” Child Abuse Review, 2: 243-250.

Silberg, J.L. (Ed.). (1998). The Dissociative Child: Diagnosis, Treatment, and Management (2nd Ed.). Lutherville, MD: Sidran Press.

Smith, M. (1993). Ritual Abuse: What It Is, Why It Happens, How to Help. San Francisco: Harper San Francisco.

Snow, B., & Sorenson, T. (1990). “Ritualistic Child Abuse in A Neighborhood Setting.” Journal of Interpersonal Violence, 5 (4): 474-487.

St. Clair, M. (1998). Abused Beyond Words. Corte Madera, CA: Pathways United Publications (Call 1-877-787-1010 to order).

Summit, R. C. (1994). “The Dark Tunnels of McMartin.” The Journal of Psychohistory, 21(4): 397-416.

Whitfield, C.L. (1995). Memory and Abuse: Remembering and Healing the Effects of Trauma. Deerfield Beach, FL: Health Communications, Inc.

Youngson, S.C. (1993). “Ritual Abuse: Consequences For Professionals.” Child Abuse Review, 2: 251-262.

B. LEGAL AND LAW ENFORCEMENT

DeCamp, J.W. (1992). The Franklin Cover-Up: Child Abuse, Satanism, and Murder in Nebraska. Lincoln, NE: AWT, Inc.

Frattarola, J. (1987). “A Special Report: America’s Best Kept Secret.” Passport Magazine (Special Edition).

Gillotte, S.L. (1998). “Ritual Trauma and Child Abuse.” In S.L. Gillotte, N.C. McCormick, W.S. Nelson, & T.G. Vanderbilt (Eds.), Representing Children in Family Court: A Resource Manual for Attorneys and Guardians ad Litem (pp. 1-21). Columbia, SC: Continuing Legal Education Division of the S.C. Bar Association.

Griffis, D.W. (1985). Brainwashing and Cults: A Law Enforcement Primer on Cults. Self-published. (Contact Author for copy).

Kahaner, L. (1988). Cults That Kill. New York: Warner Books.

Lanning, K. (1991). “Ritual Abuse: A Law Enforcement View or Perspective.” Child Abuse and Neglect, 15: 171-173.

Lloyd, D.W. (1991). “Ritual Child Abuse: Where Do We Go From Here?” Children’s Legal Rights Journal, 12 (1): 12-17.

Marron, K. (1988). Ritual Abuse: Canada’s Most Infamous Trial on Child Abuse. Toronto: Seal Books.

Newton, M. (1996). “Written in Blood: A History of Human Sacrifice.” The Journal of Psychohistory, 4 (2): 104-131.

Raschke, C. (1990). Painted Black. San Francisco: Harper and Row.

Report of the Ritual Abuse Task Force (1989). Los Angeles County Commission for Women, 383 Hall of Administration, 500 West Temple Street, Los Angles, CA 90012; (213) 974-1455.

Ruber, D. (1994). “The Satanism Scare.” Parenting, March: 87-91.

Ryder, D. (1992). Breaking the Circle of Satanic Ritual Abuse. Minnesota: Compcare.

Ryder, D. (1994). Cover Up of the Century. Carmel, CA: Ryder Publishing.

Sachs, N.P. (1997). “The Courts as Persecutors of Child-Victims of Incest.” Journal of Psychohistory, 24 (3): 221-233.

Summit, R. C. (1994). “The Dark Tunnels of McMartin.” The Journal of Psychohistory, 21 (4): 397-416.

Tamarkin, C. (1994). “Investigative Issues in Ritual Abuse Cases, Part I.” Treating Abuse Today, 4 (4): 14-23.

Tamarkin, C. (1994). “Investigative Issues in Ritual Abuse Cases, Part II.” Treating Abuse Today, 4 (5): 5-9.

Tate, T. (1991). Children for the Devil: Ritual Abuse and Satanic Crime. London: Methuen.

Terry, M. (1987). The Ultimate Evil: An Investigation of America’s Most Dangerous Satanic Cult. New York: Doubleday.

. C. MEDICAL AND MENTAL HEALTH

Armstrong, J., Putnam, F.W., Carlson, E., Libero, D.Z., & Smith, S. (1997). “Development and Validation of a Measure of Adolescent Dissociation: The Adolescent Dissociative Experience Scale.” Journal of Nervous and Mental Disease, 185: 491-497.

Barach, P.M. (1991). “Multiple Personality as an Attachment Disorder.” Dissociation, 4: 117-123.

Boat, B.W. (1991). “Caregivers as Surrogate Therapists in Treatment of a Ritualistically Abused Child.” In W.N. Friedrich (Ed.), Casebook of Sexual Abuse Treatment (pp. 1-26). New York: Norton.

Bowman, E.S., Blix, S.F. & Coons, P.M. (1985). “ Multiple Personality in Adolescence: Relationship to Incestual Experience.” Journal of the American Academy of Child and Adolescent Psychiatry, 24 (1): 109-114.

Braun, B.G. (1985). “The Transgenerational Incidence of Dissociation and Multiple Personality Disorder: A Preliminary Report.” In R.P. Kluft (Ed.), Childhhood Antecedents of Multiple Personality Disorder (pp. 127-150). Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.

Braun, B.G. (1988). “The BASK Model of Dissociation.” Dissociation, 1: 4-15.

Briere, J. (1996). The Trauma Symptom Checklist for Children. Odessa, FL: PAR.

Chu, J.A., & Dill, D.L. (1990). “Dissociative Symptoms in Relation to Childhood Physical and Sexual Abuse.” American Journal of Psychiatry, 147: 887-892.

Cohen, B.M., & Cox, C.T. (1995). Telling Without Talking: Art as a Window into the World of Multiple Personality. New York: W.W. Norton & Company, Inc.

Coleman, J. (1994). “Presenting Features in Adult Victims of Satanist Ritual

Abuse." Child Abuse Review, 3: 83-92.

Coons, P.M. (1985). "Children of Parents with Multiple Personality Disorder." In R. P. Kluft (Ed.), Childhhod Antecedents of Multiple Personality Disorder (pp. 151-165). Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.

Coons, P.M. (1994). "Confirmation of Childhood Abuse in Childhood and Adolescent Cases of Multiple Personality Disorder and Dissociative Disorder Not Otherwise Specified." Journal of Nervous and Mental Disease, 182: 461-464.

Dean, G.L. (1986). "Dean Behavioral Checklist for Child and Adolescent MPD." In James, B., Treating Traumatized Children (1989). Lexington, MA: Lexington Books.

Egeland, B. & Sussman-Stillman, A. (1996). "Dissociation as a Mediator of Child Abuse Across Generations." Child Abuse & Neglect, 20: 1123-1132.

Evers-Szostak, M., & Sanders, S. (1992). "The Children's Perceptual Alteration Scale (CPAS): A Measure of Children's Dissociation." Dissociation, 5 (2): 91-97.

Faller, K. C. (1990). "Sexual Abuse of Children in Cults: A Medical Health Perspective." Roundtable, 2 (2).

Gould, C., & Graham-Costain, V. (1994). "Play Therapy with Ritually Abused Children, Part I." Treating Abuse Today, 4 (3): 4 – 10.

Gould, C., & Graham-Costain, V. (1994)."Play Therapy with Ritually Abused Children, Part II." Treating Abuse Today, 4 (3): 14 – 19.

Gould, C. (1992). "Diagnosis and Treatment of Ritually Abused Children." In D. K. Sakheim & S. E. Devine (Eds.), Out of Darkness: Exploring Satanism and Ritual Abuse. New York: Lexington Books, 201 - 248.

Gould, C. & Cozolino, L. (1992). "Ritual Abuse, Multiplicity, and Mind Control." Journal of Psychology and Theology, 20 (3): 194 – 196.

Hornstein, N.L., & Putnam, F.W. (1992). "Clinical Phenomenology of Child and Adolescent Dissociative Disorders." Journal of the American Academy of Child Adolescent Psychiatry, 31 (6): 1077-1085.

Hornstein, N. L. & Putnam, F. W. (1996). "Abuse and the Development of Dissociative Symptoms and Dissociative Identity Disorder. In C. R. Pfeffer (Ed.), Severe Stress and Mental Disturbance in Children (pp. 449-473). Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.

James, B. (1989). Treating Traumatized Children. Lexington, MA: Lexington Books.

Jonker, F., & Jonker-Bakker, P. (1991). “Experiences with Ritualistic Child Sexual Abuse: A Case Study from the Netherlands.” Child Abuse and Neglect, 15: 191 – 196.

Kluft, R.P. (1985). “Childhood Multiple Personality Disorder: Predictors, Clinical Findings and Treatment Results.” In R.P. Kluft (Ed.), Childhhood Antecedents of Multiple Personality Disorder (pp. 167-196). Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.

Kluft, R.P. (1996). “Outpatient Treatment of Dissociative Identity Disorder and Allied Forms of Dissociative Disorders Not Otherwise Specified in Children and Adolescents.” Child and Adolescent Psychiatric Clinics of North America, 5: 471-494.

McMahon, P.P., & Fagan, J. (1993). “Play Therapy with Children with Multiple Personality Disorder.” In R.P. Kluft & C.C. Fine (Eds.), Clinical Perspectives on Multiple Personality Disorder (pp. 253-276). Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.

Murphy, P.S. (1994). “The Contribution of Art Therapy to the Dissociative Disorders.” Art Therapy: Journal of the American Art Therapy Association, 11 (1): 43-47.

Murray, J.B. (1994). “Dimensions of Multiple Personality Disorder.” Journal of Genetic Psychology, 155(2): 233.

Neswald, D., & Gould, C. (1993). “Basic Treatment and Program Neutralization Strategies for Adult MPD Survivors of Satanic Ritual Abuse.” Treating Abuse Today, 4 (3): 14-19.

Neswald, D., Gould, C., & Graham-Costain, V. (1991).“Common ‘Programs’Observed in Survivors of Satanic Ritual Abuse.” The California Therapist, 3 (5): 47 – 50.

Noblitt, J.R. (1994). “The Diagnosis, Cult and Ritual Trauma Disorder.” Paper presented at the 2nd Annual Christian Conference on MPD and Satanic Ritual Abuse. Arlington, TX.

Perry, N.E. (1992). “Therapists’ Experiences of the Effects of Working with Dissociative Patients.” Paper Presented at the 9th Annual Meeting of the International Society for the Study of Multiple Personality and Dissociation. Chicago, IL.

Peterson, G. (1990). “Diagnosis of Childhood Multiple Personality.” Dissociaiton 3 (1): 3-9.

Peterson, G. (1991). “Children Coping with Trauma: Diagnosis of ‘Dissociation Identity Disorder’.” Dissociation 4 (3):152-164.

Putnam, F.W., Guroff, J.J., Silberman, E.K., Barbari, L., & Post, R.M. (1986). “The Clinical Phenomenology of Multiple Personality Disorder: Review of 100 Recent Cases.” Journal of Clinical Psychiatry, 47:285-293.

Putnam. F. W. (1997). Dissociation in Children and Adolescents. New York: Guilford.

Ray, S. (1990). “Psychotherapy for Dissociative Disorders.” Paper presented at the Fourth Annual Western Regional Conference on Multiple Personality and Dissociation. Newport Beach, CA.

Reagor, P.A., Kasten, J.D., & Morelli, M.A. (1992). “A Checklist for Screening Dissociative Disorders in Children and Adolescents.” Dissociation, 5 (1): 4-19.

Sachs, R.G., Frischholz, E.J., & Wood, J.I. (1988). “Marital and Family Therapy in the Treatment of Multiple Personality Disorder.” Journal of Marital and Family Therapy, 14: 249-259.

Sanford, D. (1990). Don’t Make Me Go Back, Mommy: A Child’s Book About Satanic Ritual Abuse. Portland: Multnomah Press.

Silberg, J.L. (2000). “Fifteen Years of Dissociation in Maltreated Children: Where Do We Go From Here?” Child Maltreatment 5 (2): 119-136.

Silberg, J.L. (Ed.). (1998). The Dissociative Child: Diagnosis, Treatment, and Management (2nd Ed.). Lutherville, MD: Sidran Press.

Smith, S. R. & Carlson, E. B. (1996). “Reliability and Validity of the Adolescent Dissociative Experiences Scale.” Dissociation, 9(2): 125-129.

Tamarkin, C. (1991). “Critical Issues in the Diagnosis and Treatment of Ritual Abuse.” Workshop presented at the Eight International Conference on Multiple Personality/ Dissociative States. Chicago, IL.

Waldschmidt, C., Graham-Costain, V., & Gould, C. (1991). “Memory Association in Play Therapy with Children with Multiple Personality Disorder.” Paper Presented at the Eighth International Conference on Multiple Personality/Dissociative States (November 1991).

Whitfield, C.L. (1997). “Traumatic Amnesia: The Evolution of Our Understanding From a Clinical and Legal Perspective.” Sexual Addiction & Compulsivity, 4 (2): 107-135.

Young, W., Sachs, R., Braun, B., & Watkins, R. (1991). “Patients Reporting Ritual Abuse in Childhood: A Clinical Syndrome, Report of 87 Cases,” Child Abuse and Neglect, 15: 87-139.

D. DAY CARE RELATED CASES

Bybee, D. & Mowbray, C. (1993). “An Analysis of Allegations of Sexual Abuse in a Multi-Victim Daycare Center Case.” Child Abuse and Neglect, 17 (6): 767-783.

Faller, K. C. (1988). “The Spectrum of Sexual Abuse in Day Care.” Journal of Family Violence, 3 (4): 283-298.

Finkelhor, D., Williams, L., & Burns, N. (1988). Nursery Crimes: Sexual Abuse in Day Care. Newbury Park, CA: Sage Publications.

Kelley, S. (1989). “Stress Responses of Children to Sexual Abuse and Ritualistic Abuse in Day Care Centers.” Journal of Interpersonal Violence, 4(4): 502-513.

Kelley, S. (1992). “Stress Responses of Children and Parents to Sexual Abuse and Ritualistic Abuse in Day Care Centers.” In A.W. Burgess (Ed.), Child Trauma: Issues and Research. New York: Garland Publishing Co., Inc.

Kelley, S. (1993). “Ritualistic Abuse of Children in Day Care Centers.” In M. Langone (Ed.), Recovery From Cults. New York: Norton, 340-351.

Waterman, J., Kelly, R., Oliveri, M. K., & McCord, L. (1993). Behind the Playground Walls: Sexual Abuse in Preschools. New York: The Guilford Press.

IX. ADDITIONAL RESOURCES

A. ORGANIZATIONS

The International Council on Cultism and Ritual Trauma:

The International Council

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/65737 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Ritual Holidays

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **April 8, 2001**

The first year that I got out of the cult, I was having a horrible time on September 7 Th. I was struggling with self-harm, and the desire to recontact my ex-husband, who was a leader in the group, was almost impossible to ignore. My anxiety levels escalated the entire day, and culminated in calling my ex and then overdosing. I spent the night in the Emergency room.

Two months later, I found out that this date was one of the most important of the year for the Illuminati, and was called the marriage of the beast. It was also my ex's birthday and I had many memories tied to the events that occurred on this day. I had also been struggling with callback programming on the date.

The survivor of ritual abuse, and those who support them, can benefit from knowing when ritual holidays occur. These are often what are known in psychological terms as "anniversary events" with painful trauma attached to the dates at the least, or at worst, are designated callback dates for the survivor. Being forewarned, and preparing, can help the survivor get through these holiday dates.

Please be aware that different occult and ritualistic groups observe different holidays, and those with importance in one group may be minor or ignored in another. Some groups have originated in Europe, and the European ritual holidays are observed, whereas others have originated in the US, and link their dates to the US calendar. Many groups that originated as a perversion of Roman Catholicism will link their holy days to the Christian calendar, and mock the Christian rites. Other groups with Celtic origins will link to the Celtic calendar; but many groups incorporate a mix of several disciplines dependent on the whims of leadership for the group.

Here is a listing of some of the major holidays for several disciplines (this is not an exhaustive calendar, as local leadership may incorporate their own holidays and rites):

January 7th St. Winebald Day

January 13 th Satanic New Year

February 1 Olmelc

February 2 Candlemas

February 14 Fertility rituals

February 25 Walpurgis Day

March 21 Feast of the Spring Equinox

April 20 to May 1: this is one of the most active times of the year, with weeks of preparation for Beltane (Walpurgisnacht) on April 30 and May 1

June 21, 22 Summer Solstice rituals

July 31, August 1 Lammas

September 5 to 7 Marriage of the Beast

September 21 Fall Equinox

October 29 to Nov. 4 All Hallow's Eve and Halloween rites, with follow up revels in early November for some groups

December 21-22 Winter solstice

December 25 th Christmas

Certain holidays will change year to year, since they are tied to the lunar cycle. One is the Easter revels, which begin the week before Easter in some groups. Some groups tie their spiritual rituals to full moons, and new moons.

The person's birthday will also be tied to special ceremonies and initiations.

In the Illuminati, they followed many of the traditional dates for their spiritual gatherings. But they also had members come in two or three times a week between rituals for military training, scholarship training, sciences training, or training in other disciplines. The spiritual was only one part of the process, and was not that engaged in most frequently. Other groups may do things differently, and the frequency of meetings many vary.

Birthdays in the Illuminati are always tied to horrific rituals, abuse, and ceremonies.

To this day, even though most other holidays have lost their grip on me as I have worked through the memories, I choose to not celebrate my own birthday because of the immense pain attached to it. Instead, I choose to do something nice for myself, and celebrate the fact that I am now a new creation in Christ. For me, my true birthday is the day I received Christ.

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/67142 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Reprogramming the Mind: a Book Review

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **April 24, 2001**

**Trigger warning: explicit Christian content is discussed

When undoing the effects of a lifetime of abuse and traumatic programming, the survivor is faced with a daunting task. This task is the challenging of old beliefs that have been deeply held, core beliefs that were taught through set-up after set-up, thousands of experiences, and ground in with intense emotional and spiritual pain.

This task has two parts: challenge the old lies, and then begin to believe the truth. I call this process “Reprogramming the Mind”, although a better term would be “Believing the Truth, Instead of the Lies”, since the process I am describing has nothing to do with traumatic programming.

The people in abusive cults lie. From an infant’s first experiences in a generational cult group, they are taught a certain worldview, and one of the first tenets is: You deserve to be abused. The tiny infant, unaware of any reality, is too young to challenge this belief as the adults around him/her wound and cause torment, and tell the infant such doctrine as “You are ours now.”

When an adult tries to challenge these beliefs, they will run straight into the internal wall of pain and terror that placed these beliefs inside in the first place. Deciding to give up the lie can be a slow, difficult process, one that takes every resource that the survivor and their support system can provide. Horrific memories will intrude as programming is challenged, since the internal parts driving it will be afraid, and in therapy will share exactly WHY they are afraid (and they have good reason, based on their life experiences!)

The child believes that they deserve to be used sexually, another lie taught by painful experiences heaped with comments that reinforce this.

The child believes that they can never be loved or accepted outside of the circle of “family”, since they are told this. The outside world, sensing the trauma and pain in the person, often unwittingly reinforces this belief through its denial of the reality the survivor has faced, and the lack of knowledge of healing from trauma.

The child believes that they are shameful, and only valued if they “perform”, since the cult is one of the most brutally performance driven groups on the planet: failure is severely, traumatically punished, while performance is highly praised and esteemed. This will create a huge performance anxiety in every area of life.

I have dealt with all of these issues in my healing. I still do. And one of the best resources that I have found to slowly undo these lies, and to help me replace them with truth, has been a book by a Christian named Robert S. McGee, the founder of Rapha counseling (I have no affiliation with this group and receive nothing for endorsing his book). The book? The Search for Significance.

This book is one of the best resources for a survivor that I know of, since it addresses the problems that trauma creates in our lives, especially the roots of our anxiety towards God and others. It then gives scriptures that can help replace the messages of a lifetime with truth and healing. The message that God truly, deeply, and genuinely cares for His children, and that He loves us not based on performance, and without bringing up our past, since that was forgiven completely, is life changing.

This, along with my Bible, has been one of my main tools, along with therapy, in undoing the lies of a lifetime. I need to read over and over again that God loves me (so many of the lies by the cult told me He hated me); that He forgives me (I was told by the cult that I could never be forgiven, had committed “unpardonable sins”), that I can be loved without performance (so much of my self esteem was wrapped up in what a good job I did).

This book also addresses the issues that are ongoing for me once healing has begun: learning to relate to others in a healthy way (when five years ago, I cried out to my therapist, “What is that? I’ve never known it!”); learning to have a realistic self-image that isn’t as warped and distorted by the grainy, grimy mirror that the cult used on me (their hideous messages designed to break me down as a human being).

This is a process. Reading the book does not mean a “quick cure”. I have read it over and over the past eight years, and I am still learning. It does not replace therapy.

But it is so important, when combating lies, to have truth to replace it with, and this book provides that. I do believe that a deep level of healing from ritual abuse is possible, or I would not write these articles. I believe that with God’s help and deep prayer, it is possible, over time, to replace the lies of a lifetime with truth.

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/68342 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

mK ULTRA/Assassin Programming

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **May 5, 2001**

Trigger warning: discusses cult abuse and programming; graphic detail

In the next few months, I plan to write some articles on how more complex forms of programming are done by the Illuminati. This is the first in a series, and I hope it is helpful information.

Because it is impossible to discuss programming without some mention of how it is done, please be aware that if you are a survivor of this type of abuse, that reading this information could be triggering. Please protect yourself and do not read it unless you are with your therapist or are in a safe place.

One of the cruelest forms of training that a young child can undergo is the training to be an assassin, or to be able to cold bloodedly take the life of another human being on order. In the Illuminati group that I was in, almost all of the children and teens had to undergo this is part of their military training.

The results are heart rending. The child must dissociate heavily in order to deal with both the ordeal of the programming, and the impossible demands that it places on their psyche. A child can be taught and trained to do this, but they can never be taught to be comfortable with the guilt it causes.

The training often begins young. The two-year-old child is placed in a metal cage with electrodes attached, or is heavily shocked and tortured on a table or chair. After a long session, the child is released. They will feel numb, and can barely walk. They will be given a small animal, often a kitten or similar one, and told to wring its neck. The child will refuse. The child will then be placed back in the cage, or hooked back up to the electrodes, and shocked again as punishment. They are then taken out, and told to wring the young animal's neck. The child will be crying, and afraid of more torture. Finally, shaking, they will do as they are ordered. Afterwards, they will often go into the corner and vomit, all the while being praised by their trainer for the "good job" that they have done. The child will have created a split that obeys the trainer, to avoid the horrendous pain of disobedience (the more important the programming, and the further from natural core values the child holds, the more severe the pain level used to create the programming).

This is the first step in a horrible series of steps. It is continued over the years, and the animals get larger. This is to desensitize the child to the concept of taking a life.

During military training, the older (aged 7 to 10) year old child will also be taught to use a gun, accurately. They learn to clean the weapon, to load it, unload it, and to fire at targets. They are heavily rewarded for accuracy, and berated and punished for mistakes. By age 12, most children are very accurate with a small pistol or rifle.

They are then taken to an enclosure, and taught to practice shooting animals that have been medicated to slow them down slightly. The child learns to aim for the head or heart. Targets are turned into realistic photo mockups of humans in target practice.

And during this time, the continued torture and abuse occurring, increasing anger levels. The child is told to “use their anger” to help them with their performance.

During virtual reality (VR) exercises, animal targets are replaced with human ones. The child is taught to hit the “bad guys” and to direct their rage at them. Accuracy in these exercises is rewarded and praised, and mistakes are punished.

The child is taught to obey a command code to initiate the “find and seek” sequence with a target, and then to implement the “terminate” sequence, which involves killing the target. Under drugs and hypnosis, a young teen will be convinced that this is real. One day, they are tested, and told (in VR, but they don’t realize this in the hypnotic state) to shoot their parent or sibling, who is simulated graphically in the VR program. They do.

At this point, the child is considered “reliable” on “command”. If they will shoot the person they love most on command, the programming is considered “engraved”, and only needs to be reinforced periodically from then on.

This sounds horrendous, but this is how assassin training was done in the group I was in. I underwent it, and had to do it to others. I so regret it now. It was a carefully planned, sequential step-by-step process. No one gives a teen a gun, and says, “Go kill someone” in these groups, because the child would balk and be unable to. They start at the preverbal stage, and teach each skill to overlap with the others.

They capitalize on the young child’s helplessness, and their rage at others to fuel the programming. Many of the techniques were based on the MK ULTRA research done by the CIA in the 1960’s and 1970’s. The Illuminati trainers were in close contact with Illuminists in Military Intelligence who worked on these projects, such as Col. Aquinos, Sidney Gottlieb, and Alan Dulles, among others. This knowledge of how to condition a subject was passed out among trainers in the different

groups, and implemented, with modifications based on age.

The children in the Illuminati are expected to perform tasks such as this in steps, and move up to the next level when they can demonstrate proficiency. A military commander will ask a teen leader to kill someone in front of the others, with their bare hands, to demonstrate loyalty and obedience. The teen will be given higher status and awards for doing this quickly and well.

This type of programming can be undone, with time, therapy, and concerted effort, and especially prayer to resolve the horrendous traumas that it involves. No human being should ever be forced to do these things, or to undergo this form of training. It causes massive dissociation, and intense grieving when the person realizes that they have done these things. It has helped me to realize:

*I had no choice at the time. When I was a young child, those older than I forced me to. Alters created who learned to accept, or even enjoy this training, were created out of the need to dissociate and escape psychologically from this horrendous trauma, and those parts hold deep pain and wounding

*I can grieve before God, and give Him the pain and wounding of a lifetime of intense pain and guilt that these experiences caused, and know forgiveness

*I have choices now, and have chosen to walk away from this type of activity

*I can pray that others get out, and escape this type of horrible abuse

*I can express the anger and outrage that this intentional manipulation of me and others causes, to God, and find healing. The rage often fueled the abusiveness internally in the past, and as it decreases, the hold of the programming can also lessen

This type of programming is mind control at its most insidious, and healing is possible for it. It is a long, slow process, but worth working through.

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/69562 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Overcoming Denial

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **May 19, 2001**

“You know you’re making all of this up, it isn’t true. I certainly don’t remember any of the things you are telling me.” The speaker was my mother, two years ago, and she was telling me in no uncertain terms that she did not believe me. Her amnesia is intact and strong, protecting her. I had confronted her about the fact that she and I had spent a lifetime in the cult, and that I loved her and wanted her to get out. I had told her specific names of people we both knew in this phone call, the first time I had spoken with her in a year. “Mom, you’re dissociative, that’s why you don’t remember,” I told her. “No I’m not, nothing happened”, she maintained. I decided to blast at her denial a little. She knew that I had never studied or heard German consciously in the daytime, although she had spoken it to me at night since I was very young. She did not consciously know or understand it at all. “Then why can I speak German now that I’ve integrated with my back people?” I asked her, in German. “I’ve never studied it, you know that, or heard it. I studied Spanish and Latin for my languages in school.” There was a pause. “Maybe you’re psychic, and learned it telepathically,” she answered. My mother had to maintain her denial, even then, and come up with some explanation for the unexplainable. But how did she understand my question, which was in German, to her?

My son is integrating quickly now. He had almost 100 inside people when he first came to live with me two and a half years ago at the age of 10 (the Illuminati fragment their children heavily from infancy on), and now he has only about 15. Lately, he has told me the real David, the core child, has been coming out and experiencing life. I am thankful to God that he is young enough that he could heal, and try not to feel jealous that it has been easier and faster for him than for me. His therapist told me why it is easier for him the other day: ”Your son feels safe now, and he has not one, but two parents validating him and saying they believe him when he comes to them. This means he doesn’t have to spend a lifetime overcoming parental denial, and that’s one reason he is healing so fast.” I have never, ever told my son that he is making it up when he deals with memories. I pray with him, and ask God to heal the memories, and to bring security to my son, and to fill the painful areas with the knowledge of His love and mercy. I pray for blessing on both of my children. And God has been faithful to answer. My son no longer nightmares at night, has made good friends at school, is active in sports, has better grades than 2 years ago, and tells me he is happy (the last is the most important to me).

I believe that denial is a large barrier to healing. Often, when a survivor begins to recover memories, they will go to family members for validation, or to confront them. They are also frequently faced with invalidation, denial, or even verbal abuse from those same family members, who need to maintain their own denial to protect themselves from facing painful truths. “You’re crazy”, “You’re sick”, “You have a sick imagination,” “How can you make these things up,” “You need help”, and more cruel phrases are thrown at the person whose amnesia is beginning to break, from those who want them to maintain it. After all, if ONE person starts remembering, then OTHERS might, and the others in the family system might not be psychologically strong or healthy enough to remember. I think one of the saddest realities is that it takes more psychological integrity, honesty, and truth-seeking to remember something as painful as ritual abuse, yet the person who is remembering is told the opposite by family members unwilling to face their own pain.

The disapproval of family members is extremely painful, and is enough to cause some to doubt the reality of their own memories. “Maybe I am making this up, otherwise why don’t THEY remember?” the survivor thinks. Or, “I love my parents/ siblings/cousins and I don’t want to hurt them. What if they’re right?” When memories are first recovered, they often come in flashes that last a second or two, are vague, and may seem unreal to the person remembering. Add the messages from others that is loud and clear: It is NOT okay to remember, and the survivor may shut down.

Denial may also come from within. It is a basic protective mechanism when a person is confronted with pain; how often do we CONSCIOUSLY deny our own faults (“It wasn’t my fault, I was having a bad day, and everyone was against me”) to protect our self image. The more painful the blow to the self concept (since people desperately want to maintain an image of themselves as “okay), the greater the need to deny.

If events that a person went through destroyed their ability to accept themselves as a worthwhile human being (and ritual abuse does this to the maximum), then they will need to deny that it occurred in order to function in daily life. This is one reason why once the denial is let go of, functionality may temporarily falter in the survivor, as they process the horrendous truths of a childhood filled with pain. It is also a reason why denial can serve a protective function, and should be let go of slowly, carefully, with the help and support of a competent therapist. Some protective denial in the early stages can be good, as long as the person does not recontact cult members, since it allows the memories to come forward slowly and in an amount that is easier to manage.

Denial may also be programmed in (denial programming). This is done from early childhood, when the child is taught methodically in a calculated manner to disbelieve what they are seeing in front of them, and to create alters who will deny,

and punish severely if the person does not deny the ritual abuse. This may be linked to suicidal or flood programming as well.

I had an inside part who was known as “Forced Denial”, created when I was 2 ½ years old. Her only job was to ensure that I would deny that I had ever been abused, even when confronted with overwhelming evidence that it had happened (such as physical scars, court records that indicated abuse in early childhood, and validation from some family members.) I would go through a horrendous abreaction early in my healing process, after screaming, raging, and crying my eyes out from the pain, and then F.D. would come out and calmly announce, “Nothing happened, I am making this all up.” She believed she was protecting my life, since there was suicide programming that kicked in if she didn’t do her job, and well as violent protectors who would destroy her. She would be calm, but sweating heavily, as she denied, until the day she realized that her job was no longer needed, and that those who used to punish her (and me) no longer needed to act out.

Overcoming denial may mean overcoming a lifetime of training to deny, and the intense fear of punishment if the person doesn’t. Safety, no contact with cult members, and reasoning with these parts can all help the need to deny decrease.

Finally, denial may come from society. The survivor has it ground in from infancy by the cult that “No one will ever believe you, they will think you are crazy if you ever talk, and lock you up.” Our society today often looks the other way, or looks askance at the survivor. Groups such as the FMS were created to blitz the media with unfounded statements about memory retrieval, and to invalidate survivors who have the courage to speak out and say, “This is real, and it happens.” How many news stories are out there that make ritual abuse look as if it is a “modern hysteria” or attempt to denigrate therapists willing to work with and help survivors? I know that when I was in San Diego, leadership council was well aware of the power of the media, and the council had a saying, “Don’t attack your enemy, discredit him (in the media).” They found it much more effective, and reporters such as M. Sauer do an excellent job for them. I hope that he, and others that I knew in the group, will learn that they can get out.

The survivor who is able to overcome the denial of family, internal denial, and programmed denial, will still be met by blank looks, or worse, those who turn their backs on them, and say, “I don’t want to hear about this, “ or “I can’t hear about this.” Pastors will say this, social workers, CPS workers, and those whose comfort zone is crossed with the thought that ritual abuse really occurs. Those who tell the survivor, “I believe you”, at times may seem far and few between, and I applaud their willingness to look at realities which often make us feel uncomfortable. No one WANTS to think that human beings can do this to one another, or that such horrific abuse is possible.

I am here to say loud and clear that ritual abuse occurs. It is real. It is not made up. The people who disclose their abuse are not crazy, they are not liars, they are not

looking for attention or sympathy. They are some of the most courageous, intelligent, and psychologically honest people that I have ever known in my life, and many are facing some of the most tremendous emotional pain possible by the grace of God, and surviving it. My one hope is that someday, soon, our society will wake up and come out of its own denial, and be willing to help take action on behalf of those that have survived, and are working desperately to escape the reach of the cult and those associated with it. May God bless each person who takes the steps to leave and to walk in the truth and freedom, and to fight against a great evil in our land (and around the world).

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/71201 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Magic Surgery and the Formation of the Inner World

Author: **Patricia Baird Clark**
Published on: **June 4, 2001**

Trigger warning: Christian content

Here, I would like to introduce a guest author. I read this chapter that is offered free on her web site at http://www.hispresenceonline.org/index.p... and was very impressed with her compassion, her knowledge, and her willingness to share with others what she is learning. The author is Patricia Baird Clark, and she is a counselor who works with ritual abuse survivors. She is also a strong Christian, and much of what she has found out correlates exactly with things that I have found out internally on how things were done. My hope is that this chapter will be helpful to you as well. svali

Chapter 9

Magic Surgery and the Formation of the Inner World

by Patricia Baird Clark

In this chapter we will be addressing that which we can expect to encounter in a person who has been satanically ritually abused to a state of high complexity. These individuals will most likely have been born into a family practicing Satanism for generations with abuse beginning in the womb. Not all satanically ritually abused persons will have the structures and complexity we will be discussing here; however, we should expect to find these things in highly complex multiples and these individuals are not at all rare. Persons called to minister in satanic ritual abuse will encounter these individuals and will need a working knowledge of the things discussed in this chapter. Most, if not all, persons with this much complexity will be women; therefore, I will use the feminine gender throughout this chapter.

Satanic ritual abuse and the resulting formation of multiple personalities create an inner state of incredible complexity. The following concepts will seem bizarre or surreal to those of us who are learning about this for the first time; however, we must remember the extraordinary concepts outlined in this chapter represent these persons' only perception of life and reality. Everything they say must be treated with respect and with serious concern no matter how illusory it may seem to us.

As stated previously the Old Testament Hebrew word for evil is ra' from the root word ra'a meaning to spoil by breaking into pieces. Through many torturous rituals the soul is split into numerous parts which we call alters (alternate personalities.) Demons are summoned and placed inside to keep the parts separated and alone, inaccessible to the victim. Negative emotions and specific cult jobs are assigned to each alter. These alters work against the individual and for the cult keeping her totally under the cult's control. This becomes a living death...a living hell.

The individual is forced by means of ceaseless abuse and demonic programming to form an inner world of darkness. The Hebrew word for darkness is cho-shek' meaning figuratively misery, destruction, death, ignorance, sorrow and wickedness. The cultists' aim is to imprison their victim in a web of misery, destruction and living death from which there is no escape. The person's soul is shattered and each piece enmeshed in a maze of dungeons, prisons, booby traps, demons, etc. in their inner world.

The Inner World

The ritually abused are extremely wounded, broken and confused. Most of them don't understand what has happened to them. All they know is they are hurting and need help. Our only understanding about what the cult does and why, we learn from these dear, hurting, confused people. It is difficult to piece together an accurate picture of their inner world, how it functions, and why it was created in the first place. By combining what I've heard and seen from the ritually abused with my knowledge of Scripture, I have formed my own theory to explain the dynamics with which we are dealing.

We know from Scripture that we have a spirit, a soul and a body. (1 Thes. 5:23 And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.) In Genesis 2:7 we are shown how we were created in our three parts. And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul. The breath of God became man's spirit. When the breath of God came into contact with man's body, a soul was formed. These three components are joined within us.

In Hebrews 4:12 we read that Jesus (Himself being the Word of God) does at some point separate the soul from the spirit. For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any twoedged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart. I believe that as long as our spirit is joined to our soul and body, we are not able to see into the spiritual realm. This is as God intended us to be since Satan and demons could appear as "angels of light" and deceive us. God wants us to be innocent concerning evil. Romans 16:19b says, I would have you

wise unto that which is good, and simple concerning evil.

This concept of separation of soul and spirit is difficult to explain because there is a separation of soul and spirit which is done by Jesus which is good. As we mature in our Christian faith and die to our selfish motives we become aware of a separation of soul and spirit. This means that our good works which originate from our spirit are not tied to the carnal motives of our soul. This separation is not total because there is still a connection that keeps our spirit contained within our body. We do become more aware of the Holy Spirit and we have greater spiritual discernment but we remain somewhat connected. However, through satanic rituals there is a seemingly sudden and complete separation of soul and spirit which then enables a person to see and hear demons.

In 1 Cor. 15:44 we read, It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body. We know from this that we have a natural body and a spiritual body. It is through the natural body that we contact the physical world around us. We are not aware of having a spiritual body until we die and discard the natural body. This is as God intended. Somehow through rituals the Satanists use demons to separate the spiritual body from the natural body. When the soul and spirit have been separated and the natural body is separated from the spiritual body, then a person is fully aware of and enters into an entirely different dimension. This is the dimension I am calling the inner world. This world is vast and just as real to the individual as the physical world is to us. We think of spirits as being wispy, vapor-like beings but those who are in this dimension tell me the demons have weight and substance.

The inner world is a world of demon spirits and alters and is accessed through the mind...more specifically through the imagination. Persons who get involved in Transcendental Meditation or seek spirit guides, for example, are using their imagination to contact the realm of evil spirits. God gave us an imagination. An imagination in itself is not an evil thing. We can use our imagination to envision a fabulous new invention which will be of great benefit to mankind. We can use our imagination to picture Jesus as he teaches his disciples and tells them to cast their nets down on the right side of the boat. An imagination can be used for good or it can be used for evil.

When ministering to the highly complex multiple there should come a time early in the sequence of memories where the person will become greatly distressed saying her right side seems to be separated from her left side. At this point a demon needs to be cast out. This will be helpful to the individual but will not deliver her from the spiritual dimension she experiences. This divided feeling may occur with a memory about the ceremony where the dividing was done. One woman described this ritual where the Satanists used the Hebrews 4:12 scripture in some twisted way while holding an actual sword over her and calling up demons to divide her.

Magic Surgery

Through magic surgery this spiritual world is furnished with various structures and objects. During magic surgery a child is hypnotized and/or drugged and told she is going to be operated on and a certain object is to be placed within her. The child knows what the object is and its purpose. The cultists cause the child to feel extreme pain in the area of the surgery, plenty of blood is spread around, the "incision" is made, the object "inserted", the incision "sewed up" and a bandage applied. For the rest of this person's life she believes this object is within her. Because of the spiritual dimension she is in, she is able to see and experience this object as though it were a real thing in our three dimensional world. The Satanists use it for purposes of control.

For example a child may be taken to Germany and shown a castle. She not only sees the outside of the castle but she is taken on a tour of the inside. She spends several days in the castle going through painful, terrifying rituals in many of the rooms. She is forced to memorize the castle's entire layout. There will be a small replica of the castle much like an architectural model or a small doll house... something three dimensional which the child thoroughly learns. Once this has been memorized, she is subjected to magic surgery. A tiny replica of the castle is shown to the child and she is told that it is being placed inside. The castle is now "within" and has become a structure in the spiritual inner world. In this person's inner world she can now walk through the rooms and this castle has become as real to her in the spiritual dimension as it had been in the physical world.

In subsequent rituals this person will dissociate many times and the alters formed will be assigned to live in various rooms. These rooms are guarded by demons and booby traps are placed in strategic places so there is no escape for the alters locked in the rooms. These castles have cold, dark dungeons filled with rats and snakes along with torture rooms complete with all the medieval torture devices seen in our Hollywood movies.

This becomes an enormous scheme for control. If alters don't do exactly as told, they will be taken by demons to a torture chamber and tortured. This is extremely painful for the individual because the spiritual senses of her spiritual body are heightened. Spiritual senses are stronger than physical senses, I have been told. The pain even spreads to the physical body. When a Christian counselor has been willing to exchange his life for Christ's there is tremendous authority given by the Lord over this whole scheme. Jesus knows how to protect the alters when they begin talking. He gives us power to lock up all the demons and He hides the alters where they cannot be found.

Through magic surgery the cultists have placed booby traps throughout the person's inner world. Of course, these things are not actually inside but because the person believes they are there, demons can use them for control. Satanists anticipate the possibility that alters may begin talking to a counselor. To keep them silent in their rooms or to punish them for talking, the booby traps are in place to be

triggered whenever any of the scheme is threatened. These booby traps can be anything a perverted, demon-filled mind can imagine. Think of any of the movies featuring Harrison Ford in the Indiana Jones series...these are the kinds of booby traps that can be in this inner world.

A very common booby trap device is a bomb. One particular afternoon I discovered that a woman who had just started having abuse memories had not had anything to drink that entire day. Upon inquiry the Lord revealed there was a bomb inside set to explode should she drink anything. She was absolutely terrified. I asked Him to remove it, which He did, and then she was able to drink two large glasses of water. In this inner world “what you believe is what you get.” Demons can simulate the detonation of a bomb complete with sound effects and pain. Many of these devices are planned to destroy the life or sanity of the individual who begins talking. This is just one example of why this kind of counseling can only be successfully done by a Christian who lets Jesus Christ do the work. If a secular counselor tried to remove this bomb, it would have “exploded” and the woman would have needed medication and possibly hospitalization.

One lady described to me what happened inside when well meaning church people tried to cast demons out of her. A bomb exploded and she felt as though shrapnel had been propelled into every part of her body. The shrapnel was actually powerful demons catapulted into her arms, legs, head...every part of her body...with the message to kill those trying to help her and then run outside and jump in front of traffic. She was aware of what was happening but totally out of control. Two men had been working with her but at that point two more people were required to hold her down.

Anything in the physical world can be placed into a person’s inner world through magic surgery. The following are some of the things commonly found in the inner world for purposes of control. These can only be removed as the Lord leads. Most of them are connected in some way to painful abuse memories and will be removed at the time of the memory; however, this is not always the case. It is important to let the Lord lead. It would not be good for a counselor to randomly try to look for these devices.

1. Computers - The computer will be used by demons and/or cult alters to control anything or anybody in the system.

2. Receivers, walkie-talkies, etc. - The person may actually hear a perpetrator’s voice giving her instructions. This is, of course, done by demons. If the perpetrator wants the person to come to a specific place at a certain time, he calls a demon to go activate the walkie-talkie and give the instructions to the individual. A demon has the ability to sound like and look like any human being.

3. Tape recorders - These may play demeaning, hurtful remarks said by other

persons or they may play repeated instructions for certain behaviors, etc. These may be programmed to activate in any given circumstance. For example, if the person receives a compliment, a tape recorded voice says demeaning things to negate anything kind that was said. Again, this is demonic trickery.

4. Video tapes - Horrific scenes of human torture, etc. can be repeatedly projected into the person's mind.

5. Alarm clocks - These can be set to sound off at different times during the night and also during the day to make sure the person never has restful sleep.

6. A furnace - This may be used to suck all the energy out of a person or suck alters into it for destruction. It may keep the person overheated. All of these are to keep the individual traumatized.

7. Mazes - Alters are often trapped behind mazes. Jesus is able to bring them out and destroy the maze.

These are only a few of the things that are commonly found in the inner world of the SRA. The possibilities are endless because anything in the physical world can be transferred into the inner world through trickery and magic surgery.

The Origin of Alters

For those persons born into families embroiled in generational Satanism the abuse begins in their mother's womb. A fetus can be abused in many ways e.g. electric shock, needle jabs, bricks dropped on the mother's belly, raping the mother, etc. We assume a fetal monitor is used to measure the baby's heartbeat. When the heartbeat accelerates and then suddenly drops significantly, the baby has dissociated within the womb. The cultists try to get six, thirteen, or even eighteen splits in the womb since these are satanic numbers of power but they are not always successful in getting these desired numbers. Each split in the womb then becomes a "seed" which will be further split to populate a layer of personalities within the inner structure of the person's psyche.

The Structure of the Inner World

The alters and furnishings of the inner world are not randomly placed. There is a basic structure into which each person or object is directed. This structure will have as many levels as there were splits in the womb. If a person split thirteen times in her mother's womb then her inner structure will have 13 levels. There are some instances where the number of splits in utero where not as many as desired so immediately after birth the newborn baby was made to split once or twice adding to the number of levels.

These levels or layers should have a geometric shape which often is the same for each level. For example, if squares were used, each level may be a square. Others will have combinations of geometric figures such as squares combined with triangles or circles, for example. Each level is divided into sections or rooms where alters are assigned to live. Demon guards are stationed in strategic places on all the levels. Underneath all these layers will be a pit. Sometimes this pit will have as many levels as the basic structure itself.

The different levels are connected by staircases (often circular) which intersect the gates on each level. It is similar to a high-rise apartment building but the design may be more modernistic because the levels are not necessarily the same size and they may turn at different angles from one another. Often the levels are designed to rotate or spin.

This structure is “placed inside” the child at a very young age. A model of the structure is built and the child is required to thoroughly memorize it. She memorizes the structure including the location of demon guards on each level and the placement of the seed alter on each level. Then through magic surgery the structure is placed inside and the child is told it will grow with her. During this “surgery” the child believes that she has been cut from her throat down to her lower abdomen and this structure then fills the entire trunk of her body.

Each alter formed through splits in the womb is assigned to a particular level. This alter on each level becomes the seed which populates through splitting that particular level of the structure. The top level of the structure is called the presenting level. This is where alters that perform the tasks of daily living are housed. They are the ones who clean the house, go to work, take care of the children, communicate with the outside world, etc. These alters are often unaware of each other until it is revealed to them through counseling. They know nothing about the alters on lower levels or that lower levels even exist. Upper level alters were formed by the victim for the purpose of coping with the challenges of everyday life and are sometimes called the “home system.”

The presenting level will most likely have a small number of alters...perhaps as few as seven or eight. The area of this level will be the smallest of all levels. Progressing down through the structure we should expect to find increasingly larger and more densely populated levels. It is common for lower levels to have hundreds of alters. The lower the level the more committed to darkness the alters will probably be.

Cult alters living on the lower levels know all about the upper layers and are able to take control of the entire system. Those alters who are the most powerful and committed to darkness are on the lowest level. When lower level cult alters want to take over the body, they come up through the gates, give a password to each demon guarding the gates, and proceed to the top presenting level. The home

system alters have no ability to resist the cult alters and are forced to do whatever they are told. Cult alters may take a home system alter down to a place of torture as punishment for talking or any other infringement. After a time of ministry it may be helpful to pray and ask the Lord to seal the gates so the lower level alters and demons cannot come up to the presenting level and cause trouble. This is not a formula...God has led me to do this with some persons but with others He has instructed me differently. We must be open to the Lord's guidance.

Kinds of Alters

Alters can be anyone or anything according to the desires of the programmers or according to the needs of the person. Someone who has been abused to this complexity knows only one coping mechanism...dissociation. By this means the cult purposely creates alters for their evil designs and the survivor on her own creates alters for coping with life. Therefore some alters will be cult alters with specific cult designated jobs and some alters will be helpers with jobs assigned by the abused person. There will also be alters who do not fall into either category which we will discuss later.

Cult alters were formed by the cult through rituals and torture to carry out the purposes of the cult. They have various duties such as teaching, storing information, performing rituals, taking her out to rituals, calling demons to her, storing satanic power, blocking Christian counseling, managing programs, etc. In a highly complex multiple there will be numerous alters assigned to kill the survivor should she find effective Christian counseling that begins setting her free.

Cult alters are given an identity by the cult complete with their own assigned physical characteristics. The survivor may be middle aged and overweight but an alter living within the same body may believe she is a teenager with a svelte figure. Cult alters work against the well being of the individual even to the point of trying to kill her so it is often necessary to tell them they inhabit the same body. This they often vehemently deny even saying demeaning things about the person's physical appearance and personality. At this point it is helpful to have them look into a mirror to prove to them they were deceived by the cult. It is common for them to proclaim that the mirror is a trick which they had been warned about. I tell them to stick out their tongue while looking in the mirror. This will often convince them they were deceived. Many of these will gladly relinquish their assignment of murder when they realize they would be committing suicide.

Satanists access the cult alters through the use of triggers such as code names, flashing lights, beeps, numbers, etc. Through abuse and programming the survivor actually becomes much like a human computer accessible to anyone who knows the program and the access codes. These alters can also be activated by other means. Some alters are activated by demons which the cult sends forth from their rituals. Other alters were formed and programmed years ago to become active on a certain date. For example, if the cult decided the person was to die at age 50,

alters with the assignment to kill her would become active when she turned 50. Cult astrologers have known for eons when certain heavenly phenomena would occur. For example a full moon on the same day as a lunar eclipse occurring on Friday the 13th (which happened in March of 1998) was anticipated by the cults for many years. Certain alters may have been assigned to come forth on that day and take the person out to a ritual where these alters were to perform certain functions.

Each cult alter must be delivered of demons and converted to Jesus Christ. This is usually accomplished within fifteen to thirty minutes, more or less. Jesus gives them a new job and they become helpers working for the well being of the individual. Many of these cult alters have information which will be beneficial for reaching other alters. For example, a cult alter named Bobby attempted, in my presence, to kill the host person but after conversion was assigned by Jesus the job of telling me whenever booby traps were nearby. Bobby had been forced by the cult to memorize the location of every booby trap on the first seven levels of the person's thirteen tiered inner structure. Now that he was on our side he became a valuable asset to the ministry.

Other cult alters know they live in the host's body but still work against her. Some of these alters, which I call kamikaze alters, are so committed to darkness they will gladly sacrifice their own life to kill the survivor. Some of these will be won to Jesus Christ but others will not even though they see and hear Him. These Jesus removes.

A woman with highly complex MPD will have many male alters. They may appear early in the ministry or they may not manifest until several months of counseling have been completed but they will definitely be there.

It is common to meet an alter who believes she is a dog. She may not be able to speak but can only bark. Asking another alter who may be watching to speak for her is helpful. How, one may ask, does someone come to believe she is dog? Satanists like to make their victims feel inhuman. The less human they feel the more willing they will be to welcome the demons and adopt their behavior (demons can be very animalistic.)This kind of programming is very brutal. They make a child or teenager strip naked and put her in a pen with dogs for perhaps as long as a week. She is not allowed to display any human behavior during that entire week. She is forbidden to stand up on two feet, speak, sleep on a bed, drink or eat with her hands. She must crawl on her hands and knees and lap water and food from a dish as the dogs do. Male dogs repeatedly rape her.

Some alters may be kittens. I have found these alters to have been formed by the survivor in her attempts to cope with her abuse. One little girl alter told me she noticed that the kittens on her family's farm were left alone. She reasoned that perhaps if she could become a kitten her abusers would leave her alone. Some of these alters will speak as well as meow but others will require someone else to speak for them. Once I was ministering to a kitten alter who would gently meow

and rub her head against my shoulder. Then she would suddenly act like an angry cat hissing and clawing at her face. It took a minute before I realized she had demons that were also acting like a cat.

Some alters, due to abusive programming, may believe they are space aliens or robots. One woman remembered being subjected to a week of dog programming, followed by a week of alien programming, followed by another week of robot programming. By the end of those three weeks she had no idea what she was but she was sure she was not human.

One of the most memorable alters I've known was Rubber Man. He, as part of the home system, was created by the survivor to fulfill the incredible work demands forced on her by her wicked stepmother. Being made of rubber he could stretch his arms and legs to reach into unreachable places and accomplish seemingly impossible tasks. As he was sharing about himself he kept stretching out his arms and legs to show how he could reach things. He was particularly good at washing windows and cleaning out gutters. Rubber Man never talked...he only sang in a loud voice making everything rhyme. He liked to cheer her when she felt sad.

Many alters, especially baby and child alters, will have no particular job. They may be locked away in dark dungeons, pits, prisons, nurseries, etc. where they are frightened and miserable. These alters are often the "cast offs" formed as the person was subjected to increasing degrees of pain and terror during programming or rituals. In order to produce the desired cult alter, the Satanists will subject a person to excruciating horror and pain necessitating several dissociations, each subsequent alter being stronger and more committed to darkness than the previous one. For example if the person switches five times before the desired alter is formed, the first four alters are not wanted by the cult. These are then assigned a living death in some type of prison.

Sometimes an alter who is perceptively very little will manifest but won't answer any questions. Chances are this is a preverbal alter. Ask if someone else can speak for her. Yesterday I met a preverbal alter in a 53-year-old woman. With her hair pulled down over her face, she peeked out at me while sucking her thumb and rubbing the top of her nose with her forefinger. She was obviously frightened but curious. When she wouldn't answer any questions I asked if someone could speak for her. At that point I met 11-year-old Lisa who told me all about "Rini's" abuse. Rini then returned and I asked Jesus to minister to her. As I had anticipated she was afraid of Jesus but as He often does, He sent a little lamb to her. I watched as she petted the lamb and giggled when he nuzzled against her neck. After a short time with the lamb, she looked up into Jesus's face with total awe and then lifted her arms for Him to pick her up. She seemed to relax and rest her head upon His shoulder as He carried her away to a safe place.

Copyright 2000 Patricia Baird Clark All rights reserved

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/72860 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

The Source of Real Healing

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **June 23, 2001**

Trigger warning: this article contains a strong Christian message.

I am often asked, “Why have you chosen to write so openly on the topic of ritual abuse and mind control?” (Translation: Are you nuts? A secret worker for the cult giving out disinformation? Do you have a secret death wish if the information you share IS accurate?).

I have chosen to be vulnerable, and share from my own memories and experiences for several reasons. Not because I am inviting harm from the group I left; I want to expose them as liars. Not because I am “nuts”, but because I am healing. Not to disinform, but to help others.

I know how lonely the healing process can be. I know how often what a survivor reports to their therapist or their supporters seems unbelievable, and the survivor (and sometimes the therapist as well!) wonders, “Is what I remember really true? Can people really do this to each other?” Or the need for validation. Early in my healing, as I remembered names and dates of information that seemed incredibly cruel, I wanted to know that I was not alone. It was hard. I would ask my therapist, “Have you ever heard of this before?” and honest person that he was, he would respond, “No.” This was from someone working with a group that specialized in ritual abuse. In fact, the head of the program once took me aside, and said, “You know more than my own therapists about this (programming).” I had already figured that out.

If by sharing a little of my own healing journey, it helps others understand ritual abuse better, governmental mind control, and the process of healing, then the articles will be worth it. If it helps one survivor break through programming and heal, it is worth it.

People ask me, “Why aren’t you dead?” (ie “why hasn’t the cult come and gotten you and punished you for writing what you do?”). My answer: Because they are NOT all powerful, as they claim. They are out and out liars. Because I have safe outside accountability, and because I am in ongoing therapy with an excellent therapist.

And, because of the true source of healing, which I will share here.

One of the most difficult tasks for a survivor of severe cult abuse and mind control is overcoming a lifetime of lies. I was told when part of the group that the Illuminati would run the world. That they are on the verge of a complete takeover. That everyone was just a helpless pawn who would either help them, or be crushed.

But the Word of God has an answer to this in Psalm 2, one of my favorite psalms. “Why are the nations in an uproar, and the people devising a vain thing? The kings of the earth take their stand, and the rulers take counsel together, against the Lord and against His anointed…” (sound familiar? Rich kings and rulers plotting together to rule and fight against God? But look how God views them): …He who sits in the heavens laughs, the Lord scoffs at them. Then He will speak to them in His anger and terrify them in His fury: ‘But as for Me, I have installed my King upon Zion, My holy mountain.” God sees the plots to rule the world as laughable, and the end result worthy of His derision. Mankind may make plans to wrest control of the world, but in the end, God has HIS ruler appointed, and there is nothing that the Illuminati, the NWO, the CIA, or any other group can do to change this fact.

This takes a lot of the fear away. God wins! We know that no matter what happens temporarily, God will allow His Son to rule as our true King throughout eternity.

And, my favorite verse at the end of this psalm shows where true healing comes: “How blessed are all who take refuge in Him!”

In my own life, true healing has come as I cried out to God for His comfort. To be honest, much of the horror and pain that I experienced as a young child goes beyond belief, and psychology CANNOT heal it, or bring comfort or sanity. Yes, outside support helps, but the greatest source of my own healing has been running to God, and asking for His help. When I have struggled with suicide programming inside, I have cried out to heaven for strength and faith, and that it would break (it did). When psychotic programming has kicked in, and I have lain in bed for hours, shaking, teeth shattering, with terror beyond belief that was unrelieved even by spiritual warfare, only crying out and asking Jesus to hold me in His arms has brought help. It drew me closer to Him as well.

When I feel alone, because I cannot at this point safely have contact with my mother or family of origin, only the knowledge that I have a heavenly Father who loves me can help fill the deep ache inside.

When my own children have shared their own pain, weeping because of the horrific abuse that they endured, only the love of God through the Holy Spirit could help me pray, “God, I hate what they did to my children, but help me to forgive.” I hate what the demonic did to myself and my children. But I want to forgive those who

hurt me. This is a process, with ups and downs, and I come to God, and give Him my feelings, or even my despair that I am numb and CAN'T feel at times.

But when depression threatens to blanket me, I remember that "Blessed are those who take refuge in Him." And I go to the real source of healing, the only one that I have found, the One who loves me and cares for me, who truly understands what I and others have been through. There is no condemnation in His love, there is forgiveness for my past; there is no judgement for my being needy, weak, exhausted, or fighting intense emotions as I battle old messages and programming; instead, there is the still, quiet comfort that is the rock beneath, and the source of sanity when I remember the insane. And this is where I find my courage, and the ability to write what I do, in the hope that it will bless and help others as well in their healing journey. Because it is a lonely journey, but I am not alone.

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/74313 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Near Death Experiences

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **July 9, 2001**

Near Death Programming

(**note: the content of this article discusses traumatic programming in some detail, and could be very triggering to survivors who have undergone this type of abuse. If you are a survivor, please do not read unless you are with a safe person, or with your therapist)

This is part of an ongoing series on complex programming that I am writing as an outline for a sequel to my first book, “Breaking the Chain”. In this article, I will be discussing one of the most traumatic forms of programming that a survivor can undergo. This programming involves the use of Near Death Experiences.

The Illuminati have studies human neurophysiology for years, and the effects of traumatic conditioning on the human brain and psyche. In their search for better and more reliable methods of ingraining programming, they have utilized research from a variety of sources: governmental agencies; totalitarian regimes, and their own experimentation that is ongoing on a continuous (and secretive) basis.

But some of the foundations for this type of programming have been in place for centuries. One of the oldest rituals that the Illuminati utilize is the “resurrection ceremony”. In fact the Phoenix, symbol of death and new life, is one of their highest symbols and symbolizes the coming of the New Order and its leader.

How is resurrection programming done, or its variations? I will share what I have undergone and/or witnessed.

A young child of around two or three will be very heavily traumatized during an occult ceremony. They will be abused, beaten, shocked and even suffocated, and given drugs to create a state that is near death. The child will almost always at this point feel that they are suspended above their body, watching the unconscious body beneath that has been tortured to the point of being near death.

There will always be medical personnel involved in programming at this depth, who are skilled at monitoring the child’s physical state, and of resuscitating them.

Resuscitation equipment and medications are on hand at all times.

The child in this extremity will have their deepest core called out at this point, and brought to consciousness in extreme pain. They will then be told that they have a “choice”: to face certain death, or to choose life if they will invite a powerful demon inside. The child chooses life. The demon enters, the child goes unconscious, and then awakens later in clean clothing, in a soft bed, with healing ointments on. They are extremely weak and shaky, and are told by a kind, caring, soft voiced woman (or man) that the child had died, but the demon “brought them back to life”, that they owe their very life and heart beat to it and those who “saved them”. The child is also told that if they ask the demonic entity to leave, that they will revert to the near death/dying state they were in when it made its entrance.

This is one type of near death experience used to control and terrify a very young child, and to force it to accept a demonic spirituality under the most traumatic and coercive circumstances imaginable. The child feels marked and chosen for life by this experience, and it profoundly influences the child’s core beliefs about him/herself and their deepest reality. It is also one of the most horrible manipulations of a young child that can occur, and is designed to take away their free choice or will.

Another form of near death programming will occur in a situation that has often been called “governmental mind control” but which I always viewed as linked to the Illuminati programming (since the trainers/scientists in each crossed over from one to the other and shared information).

For example, at Tulane Medical Center, nearby, was a place known as the “Institute”. The Institute was involved in experimentation in mind control techniques put in under the most extreme circumstances, including at the point of near physical death. For some of this programming, a “subject” (how I hate that word, used by trainers to emotionally distance themselves from the fact that this was a human being, with feelings and emotions being worked on) would be in a hospital ward, isolated from others by blank grey white walls. The subject was tied down by four points, and also across the waist and neck. They were then wrapped in a cocoon like manner with soft gauze, to limit movement or any feeling or sensation in the limbs. Usually, “subjects” were fed intravenously, and then underwent severe sensory deprivation, broken by bombardment with extremely loud noises. A darkened room would be broken by glaring white lights in the middle of the night, and the “subject” loses orientation of night or day.

The subject, when near breaking, is then shocked heavily and drugged. They may be placed temporarily on a respirator, and given paralytic drugs. The anxiety level reaches extreme points as this abuse continues, and I had heard of people literally having a heart attack from fear at this point. The person is drugged and shocked again, and then told that they are dying. They watch their body from above, and are actually glad that finally release will come from the days of torment at this place.

At this point, a trainer with a kind, soothing voice will come in and repetitiously say, “You deserve to live, I won’t let you die. You owe your life to me.” Recorded messages are also played over and over, repetitiously, at this point, which describe the “subjects” future destiny for “family”, etc. Finally, slowly, the subject is allowed to awaken, to come out of unconsciousness, with the constant message of being “reborn” for the “family group” being played. Kind faced people soothe the subject as they recover from this hideously traumatic programming sequence. The person feels insanely grateful to be alive, to be released from the horrors of the days when they lay near death in the Institute, and will cling like a preverbal child to the adults around them. They are extremely vulnerable at this point, and extremely receptive to the messages placed in under trauma. I should know. I was a “subject’ at the Institute as a child in the 1960’s and early 1970’s, and later visited as an adult as a “consultant”.

This is deep level programming put in under extreme circumstances, and the fear level for the survivor when they begin to remember this type of trauma can be extremely high. I wish I could whitewash it, say that it isn’t this bad, but it is. I know that this may stretch the believability of some people, but this type of programming really, truly occurs (along with other types of sophisticated mind control methods). Near death programming has many variations, and I have only touched on two (there are other forms as well).

Programming put in when in a near death state will be at core level, since the survival level at that point touches the person’s core, no matter how well protected. The person who has undergone it may believe that if they try to break it, they might die. That they will enter a near death state. That their heart will stop. I went through all of these fears, and more, when dealing with this type of programming inside, and to this day I struggle at times with the residual terror it left. The lies ground in at this almost unconscious state will be believed deeply at a core level, since the child undergoing it is desperately needing to believe the adults who literally hold the power of life and death over them. The child has been completely broken down by the planned, horrific trauma, and will embrace these messages at their deepest core as being true.

This is why core beliefs and messages are so very hard to undo at this level. It means excellent support, a safe environment, and spiritual awareness and discernment, since the demonic stronghold will also be severe at this point. Help from a therapist knowledgable about programming, and spiritual help from those who know about deliverance, is a vital part of therapy at this point. The survivor who reaches this level of programming inside will have reached core level. The programming will be some of the most deeply held and believed, and will be almost impossible to reach at a conscious level, until there is deep system cooperation and safety and trust in the outside people helping the survivor. This is also where faith in God, and His ability to heal ANYTHING, including the most severe of physical, emotional, and spiritual traumas, will make all the difference. This type of programming may need to be worked on in a safe inpatient setting, or with extreme

safety externally, since fear may cause panic and acting out when it begins to come out. Reality orientation may be lost for a bit as the programming sequences surface, and it will take the strength of the entire system to help slow the memories down and make them manageable. Medication will probably also be needed, to help with the severe sense of depression, loss, abandonment, and betrayal that this type of programming will bring out. Despair over choices made, and wondering if the survivor can survive remembering will come up. A hopeful, supportive, nurturing, and encouraging attitude can make the difference. Scripture verses that remind the person of God's love and ability to heal, of His care, and promises of forgiveness and caring, will be very important. Breaking this type of programming is immensely tiring and plenty of rest and nutritious food is important. This is NOT the time to take on extra stressors. Allowing the survivor to vent their fear, reassuring them, praying with them, and caring for them will become a lifeline. Hearing their rage at what was done as they discuss the "SOBs who did this to me" will be healing, and don't rush them towards premature or false forgiveness. The survivor will have to look at and acknowledge the trauma, the damage, and then find hope that they are surviving the remembering of core trauma. Bringing in gentle, nontaxing good experiences such as a playtime, drawing, or a nature walk can be healing. Outlets such as journaling and talking about how they feel will be very important in processing this type of programming.

I have described some of the most viciously traumatic programming that can be done to a child or young teen in this group. It is possible to work it through, slowly, with time and caring support and prayer. My wish in discussing this has not been to be gory or graphic, but to help others understand that this type of programming does occur, and may need to be worked through by the survivor of occultic/ ritualistic abuse.

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/74737 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Maintaining External Safety

Author: **Olyssa**
Published on: **July 14, 2001**

As survivors heal, they often learn things that are helpful to others. In this guest article, Olyssa shares what has helped her in maintaining safety from the cult. I admire her courage and her insights here as she shares from her heart.

The goal of external safety is to create an environment that will allow you to begin to decipher the complex inner workings of your system and how it has been programmed. Until my system knew it was safe it refused to disclose itself.

For this article, I am going to speak in the first person about my own experience. I would suggest that much of what I say will be applicable to the inner workings of your system since cults share similar programming techniques. Like the language of love, the language of programming is universal. Each of us is a unique human being with a unique experience of love, but love itself is consistent, based on respect, intimacy, safety, harmony etc. So too is programming consistent, based on instilling terror and obedience through violent betrayal and trauma bonding. In sharing what my process has been like, it is my hope you will better understand yourself and the ways programming has debilitated your freedom and recovery.

Once I was in an adequately safe environment it has been a painstaking process to break down the programs that keep me under the control of the cult. There are 4 ways in which I struggle against the cults presence in my life.

1) Actual external contacts from the cult including members appearing unexpectedly in public places, audio cues such as musical tones, beeps or distant sounds or phrases that seem benign to most people (including the “day self”) but set off programs.

2) Ongoing Phone Contacts as initiated by automaton programs in reporting alters. These phone contacts keep the cult informed of our activities and allow them to influence our perception of our circumstances to give them greater power over us.

3) Complex PTSD Anytime the least little similarity occurs bridging a trauma experience with present day it creates tremendous anxiety. It can often leave alters convinced they are back in the trauma. *Circumstances that are merely

happenstance but create a bridge to a trauma experience can set off programs as powerfully as actual cult contacts.

4) Drug Addiction At the root of the ongoing phone reports are a layer of alters who have been carefully cultivated to have a drug addiction, a fix they can ONLY get when they stay in contact with the cult. Not only are they dependent on the drug for the fix, but to help mask the heinous graphic violence that they were only able to endure through being drugged. Without the drugs, they start to feel their feelings. Their terrible pain and suffering is unmanageable to them, The only way they know how to survive is to numb themselves. They are driven to keep reporting alters in contact so they can maintain their deep addiction.

I have already addressed the importance for safety from actual external cult contact in the first article. In this article I will speak in greater depth about the other three factors which are all intertwined.

I never knew that there were hidden parts of me that have done everything they can to manipulate my life and influence me so they can maintain their addiction.

My reporting alters exist in several layers. The top layer have been through horrific trauma bonding and think this is love. When they make contact they are given lavish praise, filled with messages about how special they are. Beyond the desire for approval and praise, the second layer has been badly tortured to instill the visceral obedience to the “phone home” programs. They feels they cannot withstand the anxiety of refraining to comply when the “phone home” program is set off, usually by the day of the week or month it has been instilled in them to report. Or by PTSD flashbacks.

As I have begun to work with the reporting alters to help them manage their anxiety when they feel prompted to make a call I have become aware that there is a group inside who fan the embers of anxiety in the reporting alters. This group, the third layer, are the hidden alters who have been weaned onto drugs. When the reporting alters were created and trained, they were put through a combination of torture and reward. The only way they could get relief from the torture was to pick up the phone and dial. Once they would do this, drugs were given as the reward. Now, my brain chemistry will reproduce the drug experience merely from the reporting alters making the report over the phone. As well, the drug addiction has been reinforced regularly with actual “drug sessions.”

The life I, the day self, has tried to build has been torn down again and again because of this deeply buried addiction held by separate alters. Every close non-cult friendship I have ever built has been terminated. Always it has been that the cult tells the deep, addicted insiders that they cannot get their fix because this non-cult person is in the way. Then the hidden cult alters are filled with hate toward my friend and attack them and pick on them relentlessly until I am overwhelmed with

the belief that it IS true, that this friendship must end. Once I pull away from the non-cult friend, the addicted alters are “rewarded” with an actual drug session. The cult has successfully isolated me and has complete control over the system once again.

Getting free from the cult means having the compassion, patience and acceptance to help the addicted alters work through the debilitating pain and anxiety that will surface for them when it is not being masked by the fix. The only way for them to recover is to help the reporting alters not give in to their anxiety and report. The addicted alters NEED to scare the reporting ones and will exploit the PTSD in the reporting ones if that’s what it takes to convince them they must get to a phone and make a contact.

I was deep into my recovery before I discovered I had hidden addicted alters. Learning how they have been trained and traumatized and how they manipulate the system has been critical to recovery. As the system caretaker now that I know what is going on, it is important for me to presence the addicted ones and reassure them and welcome them.

Part of having DID means we often tend to divide amongst ourselves, alters blaming other alters or distrusting each other. The way we can ultimately separate from the cult is to build a life that includes all alters and respects their histories and their fears and weaknesses as well as their courage and strengths. When I first found out that these hidden addicted alters had been manipulating and terrorizing the anxious reporting alters I was inclined to be angry at them. But I understand that they did this because their own terror was so great. They did not know me, the caretaker. They did not know love. They did not know how they would survive without the fix. By spending time each day reassuring them that I am unconditionally here for them and that I will never reject and that I will keep them safe from the cult and help them through their addiction they are slowly beginning to trust me and let me help them.

In order for the programmed/cult loyal alters to be willing to take a leap of faith outside of the dark world they have been raised in, there must be a part of you who can catch them, however imperfectly and accept them for what they, in their helplessness and fear, did to survive. My alters learned a long time ago, “If you can’t beat them, join them.” It kept you alive. Now it is time to own that every one of these alters and you are part of the same self. As you can meet and accept each other and realize these cult parts are part of your whole self, than you can become free.

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/76031 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

UNDERSTANDING THE PHENOMEMOLOGY OF SRA/DID

Author: **Doug Riggs**
Contributor(s): **Doug Riggs**
Published on: **July 29, 2001**

**Trigger warning: contains Christian content

Here is a guest article by someone whose work with survivors and help to those in the healing community I respect greatly. Here are some insights based on his therapeutic work and insights as a Christian.

UNDERSTANDING THE PHENOMEMOLOGY OF SRA/DID AS IT PERTAINS TO THE IMAGE OF GOD IN MAN

by Doug Riggs

Introduction

In working with people who are SRA/DID, I have tried to understand this complex phenomenon within the context of the Bible. The Biblical account of God's creating man in His own image is essential to our understanding of the phenomenology of SRA/DID, and the resolution of those with whom we are counseling.

I have found that with the understanding of the Biblical revelation, that man was created in the image of God, we as therapists and counselors, with God's guidance and power, possess an effective tool to lead our clients to full resolution and integration. It is through the application of the Biblical revelation of man as he was created in the image of God, that within the context of SRA/DID I have found a strategic protocol in the resolution of those with this type of abuse history.

Man Created in God's Image In order to lay a foundation for the topic of this paper, I will quote Genesis l:26-27 along with Genesis 5:l-2 from the New American Standard Bible. "Then God said, "Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness; and let them rule over the fish of the sea and over the birds of the sky and over the cattle and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth." And God created man in His own image, in the image of God created

him; male and female He created them." "This is the book of the generations of Adam. In the day when God created man, He made him in the likeness of God. He created them male and female, and He blessed them and named them Man in the day when they were created." From these passages the Hebrew noun/pronoun and verbal construction is very illuminating. Verse 26 begins with "God said." 'God' in the Hebrew is the plural noun Elohim. The plural may be understood as the 'plural of majesty.'

With the New Testament revelation of the Trinity we might now retrospectively understand this as a 'plural of Trinity.' Next, we have the qal imperfect third masculine singular of the verb amar, translated "said." Therefore, God is a plurality (Trinity) who speaks (sing.) in unity as one Godhead: Father, Son and Holy Spirit. Continuing, the verse states, "Let Us make" which is a qal imperfect verb, asah, first common plural suffix, again depicting the creative activity of the Godhead, acting in the triunity of their being in the creation of man. The word "man" is the masculine singular noun, adam, followed by the phrase "in Our image and according to Our likeness." The descriptive phrases, "image" (tselem) and "likeness" (damuth) are both singular nouns with plural suffix endings.

This indicates that God in His triunity is unified as to His image and likeness. God further states in this verse that "man" (Heb. sing.) is also a plural or a "them", who are to exercise dominion over the lower creation. Furthermore, in verse 28, God (Elohim, pl.) "created",(qal imperfect of the verb bara, 3rd. masc.sing.), "man"; this verb in the singular indicates that God, in His triunity, created man as a manifestation of the unity of His essence. Here we have, in contrast to verse 26, the masc. sing. noun "image" followed by the masc. sing. pronominal suffix "his". This is followed by the repitition of the subject, Elohim (Heb. pl.) "creating" (sing. verb) "man" (sing.). Man is further defined as male and female, i.e., a unity in plurality or diversity. "God created them" (pl.). In Gen. 5:l-2 the text states that the same God, Elohim, created man (Heb. Adam) to manifest the unity of the divine image. This verse further states that this man, Adam, is also a "them", i.e., male and female - a plurality corresponding to the plurality of the Godhead, and that their "name" (sing. noun shem) is man, adam.

In other words, man, created in the image of God, shares the unity which corresponds to the essence of God, described as image and likeness, which in turn manifests itself in diversity as male and female. Furthermore, the male and female, in Gen. 5:2, share one name -"man" (sing.). In summary, I would like to quote John Sailhamer from Expositor's Bible Commentary, Vol.II, pg.38: "In v. 27 it is stated twice that man was created (bara) in God's image and a third time that man was created (bara) "male and female." The same pattern is found in Gen. 5:l-2a: "When God created man,...he created (bara) them male and female." The singular man is created as a plurality, "male and female". In a similar way the one God "And God said") created man through an expression of his plurality, "Let us make man in our image").

Following this clue the divine plurality expressed in v. 26 is seen as an anticipation of the human plurality of the man and woman, thus casting the human relationship between man and woman in the role of reflecting God's own personal relationship with himself. "Could anything be more obvious than to conclude from this clear indication that the image and likeness of the being created by God signified existence in confrontation, i.e., in this confrontation, in the juxtaposition and conjunction of man and man which is that of male and female, and then to go on to ask against this background in what the original and prototype of the divine existence of the Creator consists?" (K. Barth, Church Dogmatics, New York: Scribner, l956, 3/l, p. l95). We may conclude from these passages from Genesis that God (plural of trinity) speaks and creates in unity as one Godhead; that man is created in the image (sing.) and likeness (sing.) of God as to his unified essence and nature. Man as a created being in his unified essence and nature, is a plurality of expression as male and female. As individuals, both male and female have the capacity to manifest our unified essence and nature through our personalities in great diversity of thought, communication, creativity and self-determination.

The point I want to emphasize is that man, created in the image and likeness of God, is a unity of essence but expresses that essence in plurality as mentioned above. This plurality or diversity of expression is designed by the triune Godhead to be expressed through a unified or a whole personality and identity.

When a person is subjected to chronic abuse in early childhood his/her personality and identity is fragmented. This fragmentation of the identity and personality does not destroy the underlying nature and essence of that person created in the image of God. I have discovered in the process of my work with SRA/DID clients, that wherever there is a plurality of phenomena presenting within the context of their dissociation, there is always a unifying essence, center, source, and beginning of whatever the dissociative/phenomenological metaphor may be. To help understand what I am seeking to communicate, I will give you several examples of how this principle of man, created in the image of God, applies when working within the phenomenological context of SRA/DID.

Illustration #1: Your client describes that they see a castle within their program structure. I ask them to tell me if there are any parts off their humanity contained within the castle (the answer is usually yes). Then I ask how many, and they may say l2. I immediately know, based on the fact that man is created in the image of God, that the reference to l2 is an example of plurality; so I ask, in the name of Jesus Christ, where is the unifying center, source, essence, and beginning to the l2?

In other words, these l2 have a common origin, source and beginning somewhere within the person's mind. I have never found an exception to this principle when adequately understood and applied. Usually these l2 will answer to an authority within this system and it will be, for example, a l3th entity that may be on a throne of control within this structure. We then, in the name of Jesus Christ, seek to

dismantle and remove all demonic components of this power structure and internal image. I then ask for the origin, source, essence, and beginning of this l3th entity. This type of inquiry usually always leads to an original primal dissociative experience. I then ask the host or whoever represents the core, and all cooperating alters, to 'go into' the primal split and then ask them to 'touch' or 'pull' the l3th part in association with the l2 back into the heart and essence of the one who represents the core (may be the host).

Illustration #2: I am working with a person and together we have released as many alters as possible from demonic captivity and constructs within a given session. I then ask, out of all the alters who are present and can hear my voice, who has the final say or who prevails if there is an argument or disagreement among these alters? When that alter is determined, I ask, from whom does that alter take its orders or to whom does it report? You may get an answer like "Satan" or some internalized abuser like the father (which usually has familial or ancestral spirits attached).

I then, in cooperation with the host and all other cooperating alters (who may or may not be presenting), do spiritual warfare by commanding the spirit of Satan or the ruling familial spirit attached to the father, to be removed from the human alter that may be identified as Satan or the father. I then will ask God to reveal the unifying center, source, essence, and beginning of Satan or the father.

This again usually leads to some primal dissociative experience. I then ask the host or whoever represents the core (it may be a whole group of alters, depending on where you are in the therapeutic journey), to 'go into' the original split and then to 'reach out' and 'touch' or 'receive back' all alters that emerged within that particular session. It is important to remember that each person and session is unique and both counselor and counselee need to be led by God. The complexity and diversity of this population of people demands that God be in control of the process and that the counselor or therapist have adequate knowledge and experience in working with SRA/DID.

Illustration #3: The client begins to report seeing a diversity of colors or spinning objects (usually because of some programming issue). We together command all demonic activity to be bound and separate out from all that is human within this phenomenology. I then ask God to reveal to the client the origin, source, essence, and beginning of the above phenomena. The client may begin to feel some affect, such as fear or nausea; I ask the host or representative of the core and all cooperating alters to 'go into' the source of the affect or the colors, etc., in order to get 'connected.'

During this process you may meet some protectors or enforcers. Take time to find out who they are and why they were created. I then ask God to reveal the primal origin, source, center, essence and beginning of the alters involved within the context of the presenting phenomena. I then seek to bring about as much

consolidation and unification as possible before closure. It is important that the client is grounded and oriented to the present. Go over the session and allow the host to 'process and connect' with what occurred during the session.

Illustration #4: The client presents a picture or a map consisting of a variety of occult phenomena and images, such as pyramids, obelisks, pentagrams and hexagrams. We ask God to reveal the human source, center, essence and beginning of the presenting phenomena. You and your client may need to do warfare and speak to the phenomena, whatever it may be, and command, in the name of Jesus Christ, all that is demonic be separated from that which is human, so that you can identify the human essence, source, center and beginning of that which is presenting.

Another thing that may be necessary to determine is the power source behind these occult images, and remove that power source. Then, you need to find the human base to which the power source was/is attached. The human base of this power source will usually have an adult representation (protector-alter) within the system. When you find out who that is, you may need to work with that alter and then find the origin, source, essence and beginning of that alter. Then ask the host or the one who represents the core and all cooperating alters, to 'go into and connect' with that source which is usually some primal split off from which the other alters and fragments were created that make up the presenting phenomena. This presenting phenomena, whatever it may be, is usually always some combination of human and demonic elements of the system which were demonically engineered through programming and abuse into these occult-constructs within the client's mind.

The above illustrations are only representative of how this 'protocol' may work. I have used this protocol based upon my understanding of how man was created in the image of God and how that principal is applied within the treatment and resolution of SRA/DID. Many other examples could be sighted, but I do not want anyone to assume that this is some kind of formula! God alone knows how this protocol is to be applied within any given individuals' phenomenological-dissociated-framework. If any of you reading this paper have any questions about what has been presented, please don't hesitate to ask me, and I will do my best to help you in any way I can.

In summary, I want to quote three passages of Scripture and comment on them. John l7:5: "I do not ask thee to take them out of the world, but to keep them from the evil one." I John 3:9: "No one who is born of God practices sin, because His seed abides in him; and he cannot sin, because he is born of God." I John 5:l8: "We know that no one who is born of God sins; but he who was born of God keeps him and the evil one does not touch him."

We see from these passages there is that human essence and identity within each born again child of God that is intimately associated with God and protected by

God. This is the person's true identity. I furthermore believe that this identity is associated with the person's human spirit. Within the heart and essence of every SRA/DID person there is that which has never been touched by evil, kept by God, and identified with God's seed. I believe that this essence and identity is also the most protected by the system of alters within the client's mind. This essence and identity is also the most hated by Satan. Whatever this essence is, it is not an alter. This essence or identity is the ultimate unifying center, source, and beginning into which all dissociative aspects of the SRA/DID client must be integrated.

Only God has the power and the wisdom to accomplish this goal of integration or unification of your clients. According to Psalm l39:l4 we are all "fearfully and wonderfully made." When that which was "made" or created is broken, only God has the wisdom, love and power to put that person back together again. When working with any client it is important that you are working in cooperation with them, and that you and your client are working together in dependence upon the Holy Spirit. God alone has the big picture and He alone knows how to heal the broken hearted and put these people back together!

The more you, as a therapist or counselor, are able to discern the leading of the Holy Spirit within any given situation with your client, the more you will see and experience the miraculous works of God! Remember, only the Lord Jesus Christ is the Wonderful Counselor, not you or me (Is. 9:6); only the Lord is the Master Physician or Doctor (Mt. 9:l2; Mk. 2:l7); only Jesus Christ is the "wisdom and power of God" (I Cor. l:24). So, the most intelligent thing you or I could do as counselors or therapists is to let Jesus Christ, by His Spirit, lead us and our clients to His desired end, which is complete unification and healing. For this to occur, we must allow Him to lead the process and it is inevitable that He will do all that He has promised. We as counselors and therapists are, at best, just facilitators or coaches in this process with our clients. The moment you or I think it depends upon us to do only what Jesus Christ can do, we are heading for frustration, failure, and burnout!

I am constantly learning and seeking to teach my clients how to work in collusion and harmony with God. He must be at the helm, while myself and the client allow Him to lead the process, and amazingly, He does! And the results are amazing! Amazing to us because we are slow to let God be God!! When we see God working what we call "miracles" in the lives of our clients, is it really a miracle? Maybe from God's perspective it is just normal; normal in the sense of who He is and His amazing love and capacity to really deliver, restore and heal people who have experienced the worse that Satan and sinful man can do to another human being. God will use us best when we learn how to collaborate with Him, get out of His way, and begin to participate in and be a witness to the "greater works" of Jesus Christ (John l4:l2), which are nothing less than the "wonderful works of God" (Acts 2:llb). My prayer is that God will richly bless you and your clients as you grow together on your journey towards wholeness in Christ.

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/77721 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Developing Intrasystem Cooperation

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **August 19, 2001**

“I don’t like this work. It’s beneath me.” Diamond, one of my “high” alters inside, was complaining about my washing a patient, giving a bedpan and other routines of my job as a nurse. “I like leading,” she continued. “I don’t see how you do this.” “Then help me find a better job”, I told her. “How?” “You’re a leader. You’ll find a way,” I said. She created a committee, and five months later I had a teaching job with better pay.

One of the goals of therapy for dissociation is to create intrasystem cooperation. This means that parts inside will be able to communicate to each other without hostility (which is often the first reaction when different groups meet each other) and be able to work together for the good of the individual. Each person is unique in how they achieve this, but one thing is clear: without intrasystem cooperation, the person’s life will be in chaos. Here, I will share tips that have helped me in my own healing process, in the hope that it may help others understand one method of achieving this.

Early in my therapy process, I became free from the outside influence of people who were extremely controlling in my life (the cult). At that time, my system went into chaos, because there was no OUTSIDE person giving them orders anymore. Inside people were busy dismantling my internal hierarchy, all in the name of “freedom” and “democracy” as a reaction to the lifetime of former feeling that they were under a dictatorship. Daily life became difficult, as different groups inside would play tug of war over their favorite foods; arguments broke out over what career we would pursue, and others fought over time for their activities while others felt left out.

Eventually, I came to realize that I NEEDED some internal structure, and “undoing” the hierarchy inside was leaving my internal ship rudderless. I could barely function. So, I decided to form an internal leadership committee. I envisioned an internal conference room with a large table inside, and invited inside people to come and meet. Unfortunately, literally thousands came, and the noise would not allow any work to get done. I then asked each group of alters to “elect” five representatives of different ages to come to the table. There was much grumbling, but finally I had a group of 75 people representing 15 systems inside at the table.

Committee rules were created, such as no interrupting when someone had the floor, no matter how much they were disagreed with. That ALL opinions were to have equal time and be listened to. No abuse inside or outside, even mentally became the cardinal rule.

I also used my imaginative gifts to create a “speaker” for those outside the conference room, so that all could hear what was going on.

The first order of business became to create committees for functionality. I asked the internal leaders present if they would be willing to resume leadership, and help everyone stay free of outside controlling people (the cult). Many agreed. This became the second cardinal rule: leaders must keep us all safe from harm, or give up their position. I and several core splits helped “chair” the meeting.

The leaders then created different committees inside: a grounding committee, to help ground me when memories hit and stay oriented; a nurtering committee, to help frightened littles; a work committee, to function at work and prevent inappropriate dissociation; a “fun” committee to help us have fun, and a “deprogramming” committee to help undo the damage inside.

We agreed to meet daily for a period of several weeks, then twice a week.

Anyone with a problem or complaint could voice it at meetings. Not all meetings were happy gatherings, since there was a lot of rivalry and hostility at first meeting between different groups. I had to create a “DMZ” for my military system, since they were literally shooting other alters inside. A negotiating committee of helpers and others who could be calm and unbiased inside was created to help defuse intrasystem hostilities. One approach that worked was to listen thoroughly and completely to the stated needs and complaints of alters inside whose agenda was quite different from “normal” to say the least. If they were not listened to, they tended to try and sabotage work inside. Compromise was reached at times, as long as the cardinal rules were not broken.

This process of creating internal committees took several months, with ups and downs. At times, I felt my inside people had gone “committee happy” with so many groups. But my functionality went up and there was more open communication inside. There was much less hostility and self sabotage. I felt safer, since I had created a “safety committee” whose sole job was to keep me safe. A ton of protectors volunteered for this one, and it kept them occupied and happy at what they did best.

What I didn’t realize it that this was also integrative work. All I wanted was less chaos and to be able to do things. But as people inside talked, got to know each other, the thousands inside became fewer.

Memory committees were created to help us with the memory process. They set up a five year treatment plan and presented it to our therapist (who was astounded, to say the least!). Internal therapists created an internal therapy group. An internal committee to promote groups coming together was made. An internal “prayer” group prayed for those who were hurting inside.

It worked. I was able to work full time, and work and progress in therapy. In fact, MOST of my healing work was done outside of therapy, by the committees. As time has gone on, the committees have become good friends inside. There is more democracy as inside people are used to freedom from outside control, and new choices are explored. Also, there is more and more a sense that we are all working together as one person, that each group is an expression of that person, her gifts and talents and abilities. And that we are slowly but surely reaching towards healing.

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/78508 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Prejudice Against Survivors

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **August 28, 2001**

I had been out of the cult for almost 8 months and felt alone and isolated. I had been going to a large metropolitan church in the city that I was living in, and had seen a Bible Study for survivors of sexual abuse advertised in the church bulletin. It was just starting up for the fall, and I decided to visit it.

During the first meeting there were 14 women present, and they were asked to introduce themselves and share a little of their background, whatever was comfortable for them. The women one by one shared why they were there; some were very explicit and graphic in their discussion of the sexual abuse they had undergone.

When it was my turn, I simply said, “I can relate to almost everyone here. I am a survivor of ritual abuse, and was molested by everyone in my immediate family at one point, and I’m glad to be here.”

That was it.

The next day, I received a phone call from the leader of the Bible Study. “Please don’t come back,” she said. “The other leader and I can’t handle the fact that you came from this background.”

I was devastated. Apparently it was okay to have been sexually abused in this church, but they set the line with ritual abuse.

Unfortunately, this was only the first of several experiences that I went through, until I finally learned my lesson. To not share my past with anyone in the church, because they can’t handle it. I had gone to one church until a few months ago, and had privately shared my past with the pastor when asking for prayer for my children to help him better understand how to pray for them.

He literally backed away from me, and said, “This is more than I can handle knowing about.” He never spoke to me again.

In another church, I visited the deliverance team, who told me that DID and alternate personalities are really demons to be exorcised. I was “holding onto demons” if I had personalities.

I joined another Bible study at another church for those struggling with sexual brokenness. The leaders of this group would interview those entering the program. I was getting smarter by now, so I told them, “I have a background of ritual abuse but I won’t bring it up at all during discussion times, I promise.”

“Are you multiple?” I was asked in accusing tones.

“Yes, but I can control my switching and won’t be inappropriate during meetings.”

I was allowed to visit on “probation” and told that if I ever switched once, I would be forced to leave the study. I went, and after four months the leader was surprised and amazed.

“You’ve been a real blessing to us here, “ she exclaimed. “I thought all multiples were strange.”

But I made a mistake. A few weeks later, when discussing why I felt broken sexually and had male tendencies at times, a male alter who was quiet and appropriate came out and discussed his emotional pain. The only problem is, he had a slight Irish accent and so others could tell that I “switched.”

The leaders met with me and told me this was unacceptable since he was “demonic”. I left the study, crying.

I have not found a church yet in my own life that understands or accepts the reality of ritual abuse.

I wish that I were not alone in this. I believe that this is one of the number one problems today for a survivor leaving a cult group. They are literally giving up everything emotionally important to themselves in their lives: their family of origin, their closest friends, even spouses who are members of the group. They are looking for understanding and support, and instead are met by unbelief (this stuff doesn’t happen in this day and age), or else intense rejection. In most churches, it is okay to be a recovering alcoholic, a recovering addict, or even the victim of domestic violence, but it is not okay to have been the victim of ritual abuse.

It frightens people. They don’t want to see living proof that it really does happen, and will turn their heads the other way. This doesn’t mean that all churches respond this way, but a very large percentage of them do (the majority in fact; the ones that don’t are the rare and encouraging minority).

Others have shared their pain when the body of Christ, called to minister to its wounded, instead either adds to the wounding, or worse yet, isolates and ignores them.

Karen is a wonderful, loving, and compassionate Christian survivor who has helped to found a support group for other ritual abuse survivors and was told that her dissociation and DID were “attention seeking” devices. Here is her response:

“You know I love it when I hear people use the 'attention seekers' routine. I think to myself (someday I may have the nerve to actually say it)...."Yeah, I just love the rejection of it all."

She said that sometimes she wants to respond back in kind,” Maybe something like saying to these people, "I didn't know you were such an advocate for Satan. He too, likes to bring condemnation to people!" I better stop now.....before I really get going and forget the One who never rejects or condemns us.”

Karen has found, like many other survivors, that God loves her and cares for her even when His body can’t.

Alice shares her experience within her church: “He (her pastor) even chose this woman to be my "care giver", well, after a few years of what I thought was a wonderful, loving relationship, come to find out she was casting out demons when I left, blaming everything that went wrong in her life and her children's on ME! I'm surprised she was able to hug me as she did without shuddering in disgust...”

She tried going to a deliverance seminar to become free of the demonic and to find healing: ” Another thing were these "Cleansing Streams Ministry" retreats/seminars that i would go to...my gosh, they talked about freedom from bondage from SRA and all sorts of things..i mean I thought they covered it all, but because i was acting out/alters acting out..i mentioned this before, they said that they would not pray for me because i was uncooperative..and again, i got called names and shunned..I mean once is bad enough but i went to about four or five of these "retreats" with the promise that the next time would be a charm..and each one was a disaster, and i got yelled at, shunned, and people would not pray for me. Heck, the last one I couldn't even get a ride home!! I scared the couple off that was supposed to take me home..(it was out of state), my caregiver came and reamed me out, and another told me to quit game playing, and i blew up at them..left in tears with my bags packed and roamed (name of city deleted to protect survivor’s identity)..met up with someone who helped me get a bus home..what should have been a 7 hour trip for me, took at least 15 hours by bus, because i was so kind of leper.

Yeah, they talked about freedom from SRA, but apparently, I was the only one dealing with that and mind control and DID, and to them, i was a super possessed demon and they couldn't cast me out of me, and since my "demons" wouldn't flee, I

was ostracized."

Experiences such as this do not bring healing, deliverance, or the feeling that the survivor can trust the body of Christ when they are trying to become free of cult control and the demonic influences within. It is fairly obvious that this ministry did not understand DID or how to help someone with alternate personalities who are wounded.

Joann's experience was more subtle, but a common one that survivors of severe torture and ritual abuse in the church frequently face. She faced the denial of those in the church, and intense pressure to be normal and functional in spite of great emotional pain: "One church I was going to my Pastor was my T. People in the church thought I was acting and should be able to hold down a job. I was a mess then, more so than now. The Pastor said I HAD to get a job and prove to everyone that I was stable. He and lots of other church members harrassed me all the time about being stable. I couldn't be, I was a mess, full of lots of programming and breaking down big time. He would call demons to the forefront and have littles look at them in the mirror to prove that they had demons. He did all kinds of things like that that totally horrified the littles inside."

This was an extremely traumatizing situation for her child alters, but there is more:

"My Pastor's wife at the present called women in the church and told them I was just acting. I have been accused of being a plant in the church, being there to destroy the church and everything else, all the while I was cleaning the church, going witnessing with the church twice a week, doing all the typing for the church, everything I could do to serve God. I to this day still am fighting against serving God. not because of God, but because I don't trust what anyone says God wants me to do. I now only want to hear it straight from God. I got misled soooo many times by people using God's will against me. How do they know? God will guide me!

Guess I am pretty angry, too, at all these Christians who know I am a demon supposedly and am acting and everything else. Oh yes,and that I am going against God's Word for dealing with memories, wanting truth about my memories and everything. I am wrong according to them for needing memories to have my identity back, that my identity is in Christ. They do not understand that that goes along with programming. I feel like all I do is run into walls and blocks and cannot get anywhere. How can I live in truth and face truth if I am not allowed to deal with all the lies they programmed into me? i am so fed up with hearing this stuff all the time. "

Joann finishes with her conclusion on why she went through this at her church: "It is so hard to understand. People don't want to know what is really going on out there, they like their safe made up worlds, and don't want the reality. They don't

want to come out of their sheltered boxes they made and have to deal with anything outside of their own selves."

Kylie agrees with the above assessment and shares her opinion on why there is prejudice against ritual abuse survivors in the church and society at large: " I have had similar things happen to me with the church. It seems most people.....not just church people.....don't want to know about the dark side of things and prefer to think that it does not really exist.....so they do not hear what I have to say and avoid talking about it. Most prefer to hide their head in the sand. I am learning to wait until the Lord leads me to speak with those who have ears to hear. It is a great disappointment. It does freak people out that sra exists.....I think it did just about that to all of us. I think it is too shocking for many to hear about suddenly. I believe education can help; but most cannot handle too much too soon. When that happens, they end up saying we are crazy because they cannot cope with our stories. "

Finally, Sally shares her pain at not being able to share with others her past and find understanding: " It boggles my mind that all our lives we were taught to be quiet, keep it quiet and we get away and we still can't talk!!! No one wants to hear that..reminds me of a lady i used to have to work with..she refused to watch news or read the paper because she didn't want to know what was going on in the world.. she wanted to believe none of that existed..so she continued to live in her little world.."

Sally shares her experiences at church: "Well, they balk at me for one thing..while some truly seem compassionate..most actually fear me..they never call me, I have called some and they are so nervous to talk..I know I come across quite strangely here, but in a normal and not "frenzied" state, I do not bite, I do not have fangs, I do not drink blood..but you would think it the way they avoid me like the plague..

I get the sideway glances at church and murmurs..

I have had some come up to me and accuse me of "playing games". Another accused me of seeking attention and acting out! I mean things like that stay with you.

I'm sorry, but this is a touchy subject for me too..It took me years and years to get the courage to attend church and then I was made to believe that christians were this special breed, so full of love and compassion and they will just take me under their wings and accept and love and care for me like never before..what a joke and what kind of breed are they? I don't mean to be so critical sounding, but I have encountered so many hypocrites in church people, that i am almost ashamed to even call myself one..I am a terrible christian by the way, in case you haven't noticed by now..I have a lot of pent up resentment, but I still keep plugging through.."

Jackie has worked through for herself why there is such a lack of acceptance of survivors and shares her insights:

“I think what I have learned in therapy is that not everyone has the capacity to "hear" the intense pain that we have experienced from the extreme abuse we have suffered. My therapist has admitted to me that even though he is trained to hear, to listen, it is sometimes hard for him to know that someone could be so horribly abused in this country in this time period.

Last summer he worked with trauma survivors in Bosnia and the Ukraine with a group of therapist volunteering time in these war torn areas. There are children there that have seen many atrocities...there are parents there who have seen their children murdered...the difference in my miind is that the humanity is willing to document these sorts of traumas...so in my mind it is not that no one hears, but that people choose not to believe.

I have learned to accept that some people will never hear...never believe, but there are also people who will never hear about Jesus or believe that Jesus is God/ Savior, but that doesn't negate the fact that Jesus is Lord and Savior.”

These are quotes from just a few survivors, myself included, who have experienced the at times extremely wounding prejudice against survivors. It appears that society at large, and all too often the church as well, are not willing to acknowledge the reality of ritual abuse, or the special needs that survivors have.

My greatest hope is that as time goes on, this can change. That more churches other than the isolated few will have a desire to learn more about this, and to help those who are struggling to get out of a coercive and controlling group. I personally believe that within the next ten years there will be a literal flood of people leaving this group, a kind of “last chance to get out” as it were because of the group’s agenda. But my question is, will the church be ready with trained, equipped, and most of all, compassionate people to help them? I leave this as a matter of prayer and hope that the answer will be “yes”.

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/79684 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Eating Disorders and Ritual Abuse

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **September 11, 2001**

“You’re putting on a little weight,” my stepfather noted. I had gone away to school that year, and had gained five pounds. He was teasing me when I came home to visit. I was 14 years old, and decided to start dieting. I was an instant success at dieting strenuously, since my iron self-control and discipline had taught me to ignore my body’s signals since early childhood. I was proud of my ability to eat tiny amounts in spite of severe hunger. I lost weight quickly. “You’re too thin, I can see every rib,” my roommate at school that year told me. “I’m getting worried about you.” “No, I’m fat,” I insisted. I looked in the mirror and saw someone who was obese, who had to lose more weight to be okay. Why couldn’t others see how fat I was? Several weeks later, my mother had to come and get me. My liver had shut down, and I was hospitalized. I was 5 feet 10 inches tall and weighed 90 pounds. I was still insisting that I was too fat. I came close to dying from this disorder as I entered my teen years and it would be years before I came close to a normal body weight. I never received treatment from a therapist for it, because my parents didn’t believe in therapyt. Instead, I was given a programming command to “eat, don’t die” from my mother when I refused to eat after I was discharged home. I shook and shook for hours, and finally picked up the spoon and swallowed some soup.

When a young child is systematically deprived of food and water to teach them a lesson or to break them down and make them more accessible to programming messages, it has a long-term psychological effect. Starvation and deprivation are all primary parts of many programming sequences that are done on children starting as young as age 2 in the Illuminati.

The child will be desperate to eat once the deprivation is over, and will associate eating with the comfort of the adults around him/her. Food becomes one more area that is controlled by the adults and the trainers, and the child early begins to realize this. While very young, the child cannot control how much food they are allowed to eat, or if they are allowed to eat.

Cult parents, building upon the lessons learned at night, may also systematically starve the child during the daytime, or punish the child who dares to eat because they are hungry.

Later in life, it is not surprising to find that many survivors of ritual abuse and cult programming have eating disorders.

There are several types of eating disorders. One is anorexia nervosa, in which the person struggling with this disorder starves themselves. Anorexia has many causes, but a root need for control and underlying depression has been noted by therapists who work with it, combined with a negative self image and self hatred. The self-hatred becomes focused on body image and fat. Some survivors with this disorder have confided that they starved themselves as adolescents to delay the onset of menstruation, to delay the development of breasts, or other characteristics. Others with male alters wanted the flat chest that being thin can bring. And others starve themselves to numb the pain. Current research into anorexia is showing that high serotonin levels are associated with anxiety and feeling distressed, and some researchers have theorized that starvation decreases this excess serotonin and effectively helps to block these uncomfortable feelings.

Another eating disorder is known as bulimia. This disorder is characterized by swings between bingeing, or eating large amounts of food (often past the point of discomfort) within a short period of time, and then purging the body of the calories or food. Purging is accomplished by taking laxatives, vomiting, taking diuretics, excessive exercise, or starvation after bingeing. Often the person with bulimia feels that they cannot control their binges, and feel ashamed afterwards. The purging is “punishment” for eating.

Janna struggled with bulimia for years. She never told anyone, not even her sister or best friends. It started her senior year in high school when she had gained some weight. Desperate to shed pounds, she began vomiting after eating large measl. She also began using laxatives to “clear out” the calories. “I knew I needed help,” she states, “But I was ashamed to tell anyone.” Finally, at the age of 27, her bulimia was out of control. It seemed to get worse when she was stressed, and being promoted to a management position made it intensity. At that point she entered counseling, and began looking at some of the causes of the depression and pain that had filled her life for as long as she could remember.

The third eating disorder recognized by experts is known as binge disorder. Like bulimia, the person has uncontrollable food cravings, and will binge to the point of abdominal pain in some cases. Favorite foods are hoarded, and the binge eater will often binge in secret, eating very little in front of others. The person struggling with this disorder is often highly distressed because they feel that they can’t stop themselves from bingeing. Usually this person is overweight, and struggles with the problems that this causes.

Sarah hides donuts in her house, and also has other favorite foods. “I once ate a whole cheesecake at one sitting” she admits. She hates being overweight, and acknowledges, “My doctor said that this weight is killing me, putting my life at risk. I would give anything to be able to slim down.” But she also struggles with other

feelings. “Being this large makes me feel safe, though, “ she confides. “I know that men won’t look at me.” This is important to her, since she has been sexually abused by all the men in her family of origin.

Cult programming, sexual abuse, and the pain of trauma all contribute to the eating disorders that survivors often struggle with. The reasons for coping with an eating disorder are often complex, and frequently unconscious. A child who was starved during preschool years may be left with “food anxiety”, hoarding food around the house to ensure that they will never go hungry again. Child alters who are chronically hungry due to these experiences may switch out at night, and the survivor wakes up to an empty candy bag or plates with leftover desserts on the night table.

In some cases, in spite of the health risks (all eating disorders are dangerous) the survivor will persist in an unconscious desire to punish their body, and to inflict illness or pain on themselves. In others, the desire can even escalate to a death wish and be part of a suicide program.

Cindy is 34, model beautiful, and bright. Her heart is failing because she continues to starve herself. “I know I might die, that I have to eat, my doctor has told me this over and over, “ she shrugs and smiles. “It wouldn’t be a big loss, would it?” She finds it difficult to believe that she is cared for and considered a wonderful person by others, as she struggles with the internal messages of degradation and pain inside. “My mother beat me over and over if I ate too much when I was little, “ she shares. “Maybe that’s one reason I have trouble giving myself permission to eat now.”

Healing from an eating disorder is often a lengthy process that involves overcoming the denial that exists (the survivor often feels that there isn’t really a problem, that friends and family members are worrying too much).

Therapy with someone who understands both the underlying trauma, and also working with a registered dietitian, can be invaluable. Learning how the survivor feels about food, and what has shaped those feelings, and how they feel about themselves, is part of the process.

If programming is driving the disorder, it is also important to look at how it was done, and why. Survivors have reported programming to “overeat to death” or to “starve to death” in many cases, especially if they try to leave the cult group.

Healing a distorted body image, and learning to love themselves in spite of their weight, and learning normal eating patterns can help. Traumatized child alters can be reassured that the survivor won’t allow them to go hungry, and planning meals to allow these parts a chance to choose favorite foods can help cut down on night time or amnesic binges. Each person is unique, and will have their own individual

issues to deal with as they heal. In partnership with a qualified therapist, and with increased cooperation inside, healing is possible.

Resources: There are many excellent resources online for information about eating disorders. The following are just a few:

The Alliance for Eating Disorders Awareness This site created by Johanna S. Kandel contains excellent articles and information about different types of eating disorders, with special sections for teens and parents. http://www.eatingdisorderinfo.org/

The Body Cage This site contains a highly personal look at eating disorders as well as links and information on diagnosis and treatment. http://www.bodycage.com/

International Association of Eating Disorders Professionals This site has been created to provide support and information to professionals working in the field of eating disorders, and includes information on professional conferences. http://www.iaedp.com/

National Association of Anorexia Nervosa and Associated Disorders One of the oldest associations set up to help those with eating disorders, this site has a hotline for those in crisis, and a referral list and support groups for those seeking treatment. There is also a resource list at their site. http://www.anad.org/

The National Eating Disorders Information center This organization dedicated to helping those with eating disorders includes a glossary of terms related to eating disorders, information for support people, and recommended books. http://www.nedic.on.ca/

Something Fishy This web site contains outstanding articles, links, and information/ support for the person who wants to learn more about eating disorders and their treatment. http://www.something-fishy.com/

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/80394 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Satanic Ritual Abuse: The Evidence Surfaces

Author: **Daniel Ryder**
Contributor(s): **Article originally published in the ICCRT Newsletter**
Published on: **September 19, 2001**

YOU DON'T HAVE TO PLAY ME BACKWARDS... SATANIC RITUAL ABUSE: THE EVIDENCE SURFACES Daniel Ryder, CCDC, LSW

The following lyrics are from a song about Satanic ritual abuse off Joan Baez's latest album, Play Me Backwards. Incidentally, it's the lead song.

"You don't have to play me backwards To get the meaning of my verse. You don't have to die and go to hell To feel the devil's curse."

It's not only the "devil's curse" survivors of Satanic ritual abuse have been feeling of late. They have also been feeling the curse of a pronounced societal backlash. In some circles now, the stories of some of the most heinous abuse imaginable - sexual abuse, brainwashing, torture, murder/sacrifice - are being labeled as "patently false." Therapists are being accused of planting these memories. And, for instance, the FBI has come out debunking the phenomenon, saying, unequivocally, there is no tangible evidence organized Satanic ritual abuse exists at all.

However, my research shows it does exist. And indications are we are only seeing the tip of the iceberg of a social phenomenon that, when totally exposed, will rock the core of societal beliefs.

For the last four years, I have crises-crossed the country interviewing cult researchers, ritual crime investigators, task force members, therapists, investigative reporters, cult survivors...as part of an in-depth investigation on the issue of Satanic ritual abuse. And, the research has yielded some extremely eye-opening things. The most eye-opening hasn't been the mutilated backwoods remains of a cult victim's body in Massachusetts. It wasn't the bloody pentagram carved into a cult victim's corpse in San Francisco. The most eye-opening, has been a widely cited Law Enforcement Perspective report out of the FBI's Behavioral Science Center in Quantico, Virginia.

The report was written by supervisory special agent Kenneth Lanning. It has gone out to law enforcement agencies around the country; and has been cited

consistently throughout the media the last several years.

The report states, in regards to "organized" Satanic ritual abuse homicide (that is, two or more Satanic cult members conspiring to commit murder): "The law enforcement perspective can't ignore the lack of physical evidence (no bodies, or even hairs, fibers, or fluids left by violent murders."

No bodies? The following is an excerpt from a March 13, 1981, UPI article: "Fitchburg, Mass. -- The alleged leader of a devil worship cult was found guilty of first degree murder Friday in the ritual killing of a young Fall River, Mass. prostitute last year. Carl Drew, 26, stood pale and expressionless as the verdict was announced. He was immediately sentenced to life imprisonment by superior court judge Francis W. Keating...Miss Marsden was allegedly killed, mutilated and beheaded by Drew and two others in a blood-soaked night time ritual in a wooded area because she wanted to leave the cult."

In 1993, House Bill 1689 was introduced in the Massachusetts Legislature. It is a bill prohibiting "Certain Ritualistic Acts." Some of these acts include: ritual mutilation, dismemberment, torture, the sacrifice of animals, humans...(A similar bill was passed in Idaho in 1990).

Also, in the 1993 Avon Books release: Raising Hell, author/investigative reporter Michael Newton writes, "While some cult apologists may be forgiven their ignorance of current events, (FBI) Agent Lanning -- with access to nationwide police files -- should know better. As this volume amply demonstrates, cult related killers stand convicted of murder in 23 states and at least nine foreign countries. Numerous other occultists are now serving time for practicing their "faith" through acts of arson, rape, assault, cruelty to animals, and similar crimes."

The organization, Looking Up, founded initially as a nationwide support/referral program for incest survivors, serves approximately 15,000 people a year, 40% of whom now are reporting they are dealing with ritualistic or cult related abuse. According to a spokesperson for JUSTUS Unlimited in Denver, a non-profit referral and resource center, they are currently receiving more than 7,000 Satanic ritual abuse related calls a year. (What's more, they are also hearing from all over the world: Australia, New Zealand, England, The Netherlands, Germany, Israel, Canada...)

Given the tangible evidence now surfacing, and given the volume of people reporting Satanic cult related abuse, it would seem curious the FBI would come out with such a definitive stance attempting to discredit the increasing phenomenon. Of course, then again, it was the same FBI that for more than the first half of this century consistently said there was no evidence whatsoever of another type of "organized" criminal activity. That is -- Mafia related crime.

Actually, Satanic cults are somewhat similar to Mafia crime families. There is, for instance, extreme secrecy through code of silence programming. This is usually initiated with the signing of a "blood" contract. Wendell Amstutz, author of Satanism in America, said these contracts are generally signed in the initiate's own blood. The contract, said Amstutz, usually demands life-long obedience. And breaking it means death.

And that''s exactly what it meant for the four California Satanic cult defectors one fateful night in 1990. The defectors were tracked to an apartment on, of all places, Elm Street in the small town of Salida.

The defectors were beaten and stabbed. Finally, they were decapitated. What was left behind rivaled the carnage of the Tate-LaBianca crime scene. The trail led back to five Satanic cult members, and the story began to unfold... The five who were indicted were part of a 55-member Satanic cult that was operating out of a compound in Salida. Cult members stretched across a three-county are, with a number of them holed-up in a Salida compound (homes and trailers), somewhat similar to Waco's Branch Davidian complex. Except for one thing: What was going on in the Salida compound for the most part made what was going on in Waco seem like a Disney production.

Randy Cerny, Director of the Northern Chapter of California's Ritual Crime Investigator's Association, had followed the cult closely. And after the indictments, he interviewed several of the cult members and reviewed extensive diaries they'd kept.

He said the cult worshipped Satan, followed the teachings of renowned Satanist Aleister Crowley, engaged in sexual abuse, ritual torture including electric shock, child abuse, murder...In other words, many of the same things Satanic ritual abuse survivors have been consistently reporting.

Cerny also said it was reported cult members were from all walks of life. This even included a dentist, a minister, and a woman enrolled in a law enforcement class at a local community college. (Satanic cult members aren't, by any means, always tattooed teen bikers who have listened to one too many Metallica albums, Often, Satanic ritual abuse survivors report their cult perpetrators are respected members of the community: doctors, law enforcement officials, PTA members, little league coaches...This all, apparently, is part of the facade.)

One of the Matomoros cult members responsible for some of the 13 grisly murder/ sacrifices in Mexico a few years back, was majoring in law enforcement at Texas Southmost College at the time she was arrested.

"The California cult was a very secretive, close-knit, sophisticated group," said Cerny.

The Satanic cult was run under the iron fist of charismatic leader, high priest, Gerald Cruz. And, as David Koresh had done in Waco, Cruz used sleep deprivation, brainwashing, torture...to keep members in line. At a trial in Oakland in December, 1992, cult expert and psychologist, Daniel Goldstine, would characterize Cruz as "evil and sadistic."

The jury thought so too. Cruz and two other cult members were sentenced to death for the murders. Two other cult members got life. "Now let's project this 20 to 25 years down the road," Cerny continued. "Say someone walks into a police department or therapist's office and says, 'I'm starting to have memories that my dad was a leader of this Satanic cult in California. And they would brainwash people, torture them with electric shock, sexually abuse me, sacrifice animals, kill people...' "

Cerny wondered if that would all be passed off as a "false memory." Nationally syndicated columnist Molly Ivins might well have passed it off as just that. In a May, 1994, column, Ms. Ivins wrote: "...social workers who deal with child abuse have nightmares about the people who come up with patently false recovered memories of Satanic ritual abuse."

Monika Beerle seemed to be nobody's "false recovered memory." The following is a February 18, 1992, Newsday article excerpt: New York -- Members of a cult here killed ballerina Monika Beerle in August, 1989, and then dismembered her and fed her flesh to the homeless as part of a Satanic ritual, law enforcement sources said yesterday after arresting a cult member in connection with the slaying. "The public isn't generating enough momentum to get police mobilized around this (Satanic ritual abuse) issue at this point," explained Akron, Ohio Police Captain Jerry Foys. And John Hunt, Sherman, Texas ritual crime investigator says that "because of the FBI report, the stigma around Satanism and other factors have made it hard to get internal police department support in following up on the ritual aspects of a crime."

Hunt and Foys both said they believe the Satanic ritual abuse is quite widespread -- and extremely dangerous.

It definitely proved dangerous for an alcoholic drifter known only as John Doe No. 60, whose body was found in San Francisco. According to a May 6, 1988, San Francisco Chronicle article: "The victim had a pentagram carved into his chest, lash marks across his buttocks, a stab wound to his neck, wax in his right eye and hair, and a sliced lip. The naked body was virtually drained of blood." Clifford St. Joseph, 46, was eventually convicted and sentenced to 34 years to life for the killing.

In his book, Raising Hell, Michael Newton writes when police came to St. Joseph's apartment nine days after the body was found, they found St. Joseph dressed in a black robe, companion Michael Bork, 26, stripped to the waist, his face daubed

with cosmetics, and another man, Edward Spela, 26, passed out from drugs. In the middle of the room was a 19-year old man, who was laying on the floor, handcuffed and surrounded by candles.

According to the San Francisco Chronicle: "Investigators said that St. Joseph appeared to be part of a Satanic cult that involved men of means in San Francisco's gay community."

Again, John Doe No. 60's mutilated body was real. It was nobody's false memory. A term popular culture has latched onto tightly in the last couple of years is the very clinical sounding, false memory syndrome. It is a term coined by the Philadelphia, Pennsylvania based False Memory Syndrome Foundation (FMSF), which is an advocacy group for people whose children have accused them of either sexual abuse and/or Satanic ritual abuse.

Despite its scientific sounding title, there is actually no such thing as a clinically acknowledged category for "false memory syndrome," reports Judith Herman, an associate clinical professor of Psychiatry at Harvard Medical School, and author of the book, Trauma and Recovery. "The very name FMSF is prejudicial and misleading," said Dr. Herman. "There is no such syndrome, and we have no evidence reported memories are false. We only know they are disputed."

Many professionals dealing with Satanic ritual abuse believe we are seeing the beginnings of a phenomenon that might well mushroom into staggering proportions. And they draw a parallel to the amazing evolution of the sexual abuse field. "As recently as the 1970s," said Herman, "rape was considered rare, and incest was regarded as a universal taboo. Less than twenty years ago, for example, the Comprehensive Textbook of Psychiatry estimated the prevalence of all forms of incest at one case per million population. And popular and professional literature [as in the case with SRA survivors now] routinely questioned the character of victims, and disparaged the credibility of women who made claims of assault. Today, however, widespread sexual abuse/incest has been extensively documented." In the case of false memory allegations, perhaps we should be spending a bit more time actually questioning the character of some of those accusing the "alleged" victims of confabulation. And perhaps we should start at the False Memory Syndrome Foundation itself.

The following is an excerpt from a February 29, 1992, FMSF Newsletter where the organization claims it is: "...not in the business of representing pedophiles...We are a good-looking bunch of people: graying hair, well-dressed, healthy, smiling...Just about every person is someone you would likely find interesting and want to count as a friend."

Joan Baez's song goes on: Let the night begin There's a pop of skin And a sudden rush of scarlet There's a little boy riding on a goat's head And a little girl playing the

harlot It’s a sacrifice in an empty church Sweet little baby Rose...

A Fall 1989 Cleveland Plain Dealer article excerpt reads: Three Norwalk area residents charged with opening two graves, beheading the corpses and stealing the skulls, were part of a cult that had recently gotten instructions on how to sacrifice babies to Satan, Norwalk police said yesterday. "We’re taking this very seriously," he [Police Chief Gary Dewalt] said."Maybe society should take the police chief's lead, in a lot of different areas regarding this problem. For one, many youth are bombarded with Satanic symbols, images, lyrics...One area where it is probably the most prevalent is in the heavy/black metal music scene. For instance, the heavy metal band Venom sings:

"Candles glowing, altars burn Virgin’s death is needed ther Sacrifice to Lucifer my master Bring the chalice, raise the knife Welcome to my sacrifice..."

Just a passing phase kids go through? Just lyrics? May 5, 1993 -- Three eight year old boys were riding their bikes down a country road in West Memphis, Arkansas. Suddenly they were forced off the road and horribly killed. One of the suspects accused in the murders, Jessie Lloyd Miskelly, Jr., 17 according to wire service reports, told police that the murders were tied to a teen Satanic cult sacrifice. "Miskelly said the children were lured into a wooded are of West Memphis known as Robin Hood Park, choked until they were unconscious, then brutalized in various ways -- including rape..." According to a March 8, 1994 article on the trial appearing in the West Memphis The Commercial Appeal: "A witness last week told him Baldwin (one of the accused) told him he sucked the blood from one victim after he mutilated him." Diaries indicated the Satanic cult in Salida, California, followed the teachings of renowned Satanist Aleister Crowley. In his book, Magick in Theory and Practice, Crowley wrote, "The blood is the life...any living thing is the storehouse of energy...at the death of the animal this energy is liberated suddenly. The animal should therefore be killed within the Circle, or Triangle, so that it’s energy cannot escape...For the highest spiritual working one must accordingly choose that victim which the greatest and purest force. A male child of perfect innocence is the most satisfactory and suitable victim."

There's a good bet that seven year old Yvando Caetano, like most seven year olds, was living a life in "perfect innocence" in the small town of Guaratuba, Brazil. This may well have been the precipitating factor in his death. According to a July 28, 1992, Cable News Network (CNN) report/transcript, Yvando was found in a shallow grave. His arms and legs had been dismembered, his internal organs cut out. Ritual implements used during the ceremony were also found near the body.

Investigator Jose Moscic Favetti said police believed the mayor’s wife and daughter were involved with a Satanic cult, and that the wife had paid five cult members to sacrifice Yvando to Satan -- in return for the mayor having a good political year.

"The stories (about different aspects of cult rituals) are very much the same, whether it's someone reporting about a ceremony in Melbourne, Australia, Vermont, Utah..." said Dr. Judianne Densen-Gerber. "This leads me to believe, not only are the cults all over, but because of the similarities, many are also networked." Dr. Densen-Gerber is a New York Psychiatrist who has treated a number of SRA survivors since 1980. She also has a law degree, and is the founder of PACT (Protect America's Children Today).

Are American children in danger because of these Satanic cults? Well, the small town in Brazil might provide some clues. Besides the death of 7-year old Yvando in July, 10 other children had come up missing in Guarutuba since January of that year.

According to Brandon Perez, initial Development Director of the National Missing Children's Center, based in Houston, Texas, there are currently some 4000,000 abductions a year in the United States of which, said Perez, almost 50% of the children are never found. Perez added that many of these cases are not adequately tracked.

In his book, The Franklin Cover-up: Child Abuse, Satanism and Murder in Nebraska, author and former Nebraska State Senator John DeCamp interviewed 28 year veteran FBI agent Ted Gunderson. Since his retirement from the FBI, Gunderson has been actively investigating reports of Satanic ritual abuse.

DeCamp writes: "Evidence from Gunderson's investigations has convinced him tens of thousands of children or young people disappear from their homes each year, and that many of them are ritualistically sacrificed...nobody knows the true figure because the FBI doesn't keep count. Gunderson observes, 'The FBI has an accurate count on the number of automobiles stolen every year. It knows the number of homicides, rapes, and robberies, but the FBI has no idea of the number of children who disappear every year. They simply do not ask for the statistics.' Gunderson goes onto say he believes they don't ask for the statistics, simply, because they don't want to see them. "They would be confronted with an instant public outcry for action, because the figures would show a major social problem that would demand action.'"

And it's not just the tragedy of the missing children that come up dead as a result of this savage cult abuse -- there are many children that are "walking wounded." Pamela Hudson, LCSW, a child therapist with a county health outpatient department in northern California began to identify the symptoms of SRA in several children who had been referred to her in 1985. What was to follow was a most frightening phenomenon. Throughout the remainder of 1985 and into 1986, twenty-four children, all from the same day care center, all exhibiting varying degrees of ritual abuse symptoms, were brought to her by concerned parents. (What was even more amazing, said Hudson, was that the cases came to her individually, without

the parents initially talking among each other.)

Some of the symptoms included frequent night terrors, night sweats, extreme separation anxiety, uncontrolled vomiting, 3,4, and 5 year olds acting out sexually in bizarre, sadistic manners...all indicators of significant trauma. As Hudson continued to work with the children, the Satanic ritual abuse stories started to surface: the children reported being locked in cages, buried for short periods in coffins, injected with drugs, defecated and urinated on, sexually abused, forced to watch animal and human sacrifice...

Hudson took the information to authorities, but the District Attorney's office decided not to prosecute. A disappointed Hudson said she attributes the decision to the lack of physical evidence, and the children being perceived as too young, and also considered too emotionally traumatized for the stories to appear credible to a jury.

However, several years later, a jury in Austin, Texas, did find children's stories of sexual and Satanic ritual abuse credible enough to put Fran's Day Care directors, Fran and Dan Keller, in prison for extended sentences. (The Kellers aren't eligible for parole until 2004.)

As with the case in California, the children talked of extreme forms of abuse: being threatened with guns, being buried alive, forced to make pornographic movies, watch an infant sacrifice...

In addition, my research has also turned up similar day care and school SRA cases in Florida, several more in California, Massachusetts, New Jersey, and in Christchurch, New Zealand.

The longest trial in American history, California's McMartin Day School case, was one of the first day care center cases to claim Satanic ritual abuse. There were some 500 separate reports filed at the Manhattan Beach Police Department in connection with the case. The children's stories matched those of other cases cited. However, there was an additional component to the McMartin case. The children consistently talked of being abused in an underground tunnel below the day care center. A highly qualified archaeologist, hired by the children's families, talked about a series of what he says were highly questionable incidents in the search for the elusive tunnels.

Archeologist Gary Stickle, Ph.D., has worked extensively in the United States and in Europe, including heading the largest underwater archeological sonar survey ever conducted in Europe. In addition, he has been a consultant to Lucas Films in the development of the Indiana Jones movie series. He has also been professor of Archeology at the University of California at Long Beach. Stickle said initially a private investigator went to the day care center site and did some preliminary informal digging. It is reported, said Stickle, that this investigator found some rabbit

bones in the soil. (The children talked about rabbits being sacrificed.) However, the day before he was to testify, the private investigator was found dead from a gun shot wound. It was determined to be a suicide. But Stickle said that determination was questioned by more than a few people, given the timing. Eventually, said Stickle, the prosecution hired an archeological firm that dug seven pits clustered outside of the building. (This was curious, said Stickle, because the children were reporting the abuse had gone on in tunnels below the building.) Stickle said a remote sensing device was also used at the time, but it was reported that no tunnels were found. That was 1985.

The lack of a tunnel damaged the credibility of the children's stories tremendously. Stickle's firm was hired by the parents in 1990. Using a sophisticated ground penetrating radar, Stickle said a tunnel was found, right where some of the children had told his staff it would be.

However, even though evidence of the tunnel was found in May of 1990, while the trial was still in progress -- the evidence was never introduced in court, said Stickle. "Finding such a tunnel was highly relevant (to the case)," said Stickle. "Because it (prior lack of physical evidence of a tunnel) was a major thing used to discredit the children."

The accused McMartin Day Care Center staff were eventually acquitted. However, some of the McMartin parents haven't quit fighting. A two hundred page report on the tunnel findings has recently been released by the parents, in an ongoing effort to keep the case before the public.

As with these children, it is becoming more and more apparent that there are many adult SRA walking wounded as well. As a result of the trauma, these are people often afflicted with things like severe paranoia, schizophrenia, multiple personalities. They are people almost off the scales in terms of addictions/ compulsions, depression, self-mutilating behavior...

However, an advancing therapeutic field has developed highly sophisticated techniques to help survivors. And the prognosis for recovery is often good. In addition, parts of society are also rallying around these survivors. The County Commission for Women has a Ritual Abuse Task Force in Los Angeles; there is a state-wide Minnesota Awareness of Ritual Abuse group; Jireh, headquartered in Arlington, Texas, is a national program to create safe-houses for cult survivors breaking away; The International Council on Cultism and Ritual Trauma, in Richardson, Texas, ; and a number of cult survivor resource and referral organizations; ritual abuse twelve-step programs are evolving.

As much as we don't want to believe it as a society -- Satanic ritual abuse is a reality. And, as was done by the parents in the McMartin Day Care Center case, we need to be rolling up our sleeves and digging deeper to get at the whole truth.

May 25, 1994 was designated National Missing Children’s Day. Those postcards that come to our homes so very often don’t represent anybody’s "false memories." Those are real children, with real fates. Daniel Ryder, CCDC, LSW, an investigative journalist and a counselor, is the author of Breaking the Circle of Satanic Ritual Abuse. The above article is based on material from Mr. Ryder's newest book Cover-up of the Century (Satanic Ritual Crime and Conspiracy).

This article was originally published for the newsletter of the International Council on Cultism and Ritual Trauma. Their website is online at www.iccrt.org. Article reprinted with permission of the ICCRT.

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/81275 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Retraumatization

Author: **Goessoftly**
Published on: **September 30, 2001**

This article addresses how we, as therapists and counselors can unawarely retraumatize our patients, even when they have told us clearly this is what we are doing. The question will surely be asked, "How could I continue to damage my client in such a way if they have told me this is happening ?"

The answer is obvious. You weren't listening!

I have written an article on listening that might help in elucidating this statement but if it hasn't been read, then I will add that if we are not truly listening and attuned in to where our client IS and the message he/she is telling us both verbally and non-verbally, then we can be guilty of retraumatizing again and again with disastrous results for our patient and the therapy.

If we cannot think of an incidence in which we have thus treated our patient, it might be helpful to review some of the ways in which it could be done.

I am not speaking to overt retraumatization such as unprofessional loss of control where there has been yelling at the client, inappropriate sexual behavior towards them, or sudden termination of therapy without explanation or closure. I have dealt with the aftermath of all of these, the last being perhaps, the most damaging when a therapeutic alliance has been formed, and there has been good rapport between counselor and client(s) with progress being made. I am remembering when in the position as Clinical Supervisor at an Adolescent Day Treatment Center, one of the staff simply did not return. The subsequent effect on his clients and the whole group was devastating. But this is overt retraumatization.

I am speaking to the more subtle, and insidious ways in which we, as therapists can miss our cues and do harm to our patients unwittingly and unawarely unless we keep in mind the pitfalls and potential of causing unnecessary suffering to an already suffering patient.

It would be impossible to name all the ways in which we can rehurt and throw our clients back into reliving former traumata. The ways are as diverse and numerous as there are individuals, simply because what is traumatic for one person is not

necessarily true for another.

However, there are commonalities in the therapy arena we could use for general headings which could be explored. I will touch only on four and leave it to the reader to do some honest and rigorous self-examination to discover others.

1. Triggers 2. Reenactment. 3. Transference/Countertransference. 4. Failure to truly listen.

1. TRIGGERS

Triggers can be myriad and often are. They may be people who resemble past abusers, surroundings similar to places where abuse occurred, sounds reminding the patient of a certain tone of voice used before or during abuse, certain music that was playing during abuse, sights and smells encountered that evoke conscious or unconscious memories of past traumas. For victims of Mind Control, colors, numbers, words, phrases,gestures,(e.g.hand signals) etc. can be very triggering and set off programs layered one on top of another.

In the case of DID (Dissociative Identity Disorder) alter personalities might come out in an effort to cope with, protect from and resist, what is perceived as a potential or real danger or unbearable pain. Again, different things can trigger different alters depending on the experiences they hold.I addressed Triggering Procedures in an article about Emergency/CasaultyGuidelines where hospital per se with its personnel, equipment, smells and procedures are vivid reminders of torture and abuse for Ritual Abuse,Satanic Ritual Abuse and Mind Control survivors. (see website: www.survivng.org.uk under Dissociative Identity disorder)

In the Therapist's Office any one or more of these triggering catalysts can be found, spoken or seen. Therapists who treat cult survivors need to be very sensitive to anything that could remotely resemble ritual activity. Having masks hanging on the wall, pictures depicting any kind of sacrifice whether mythological or ancient art form, burning incense of particular fragrance, blood red coloring in decorations and furnishings, wearing a black robe-like garment, etc.

This is not saying a therapist should redecorate their office or minutely change any POSSIBLE trigger ! I am saying that we, as therapists, should be sensitively aware of our client's body language, facial and eye expressions, anything that denotes terror, unease, dissociation, and not MISS these cues but inquire what is going on.

To miss these cues because the client cannot verbalize the fear, and continue to allow an easily removable object to remain during session time is retraumatizing at a level that can put the healing process back months. To continue to ignore any verbalization of fear around any object is willful retraumatization unworthy of professional standards.

A client of mine told me a picture I had threw her into a state of panic, so I turned the picture round to face the wall for session time and that worked fine.

I, personally believe, that to insist on keeping an object or anything that is obviously triggering for my client, and in so doing retraumatize them, reveals only that I have a control issue, my own agenda and the erroneous belief I can change in the mind of my client the memory that object reminds them of.

Whatever memory a trigger taps into, the patient relives that memory as though it were today. It is the sad delusion of some therapists to think they can erase a memory by attaching a new meaning to the trigger object.

NOTHING can replace the memory. It is the MEMORY that needs working through, not a substitution for it.

This applies to ritual dates. It is futile for a therapist, however well meaning, to think they can change the meaning of a date to something better, safer or different. For one thing, a therapist cannot change ANYTHING. Change comes from within the client with the help of their counselor.

Trigger dates whether ritual ones or anniversaries of trauma such as rape, murder, accidental death and so on, require the therapist to remember when such dates occur. To schedule session, activities or other events on trigger dates is retraumatizing - willfully so if the dates are remembered and still kept as a scheduled plan. I am notoriously bad at remembering anniversaries and birthdays but I try to keep up with the tramatizing dates of my clients and be sensitive to special needs surrounding them.

The vital lessons here are:

a) Do not MISS the trigger through preoccupation, lack of observation, insensitivity, or having ones own agenda. b) Explore what the trigger is connected to if possible. If the client is not ready to process whatever the original trauma was, file it away and return to it later. Never force a recollection of a trauma tiggered that does not come into consciousness without fear. If the connection is recognized and accepted then it can be worked through.

c) Work through the memory and don't try to "make it better" or substitute another experience.

d).Remember at all times that mishandling of triggers is retraumatizing.

2. REENACTMENT

We, as therapists, have a great responsibility and task in our commitment to our clients. They teach us, criticize us, commend us, frustrate and anger us, bring out the best and the worst in us. .But it is easy to look only from this perspective and omit realizing what we can do to them!

We all make mistakes, say the wrong thing, make a wrong judgment, assume, guess and be miles off track. Sadly, in many of our weaknesses and failings we retraumatize our patients who have experienced just such weaknesses and failings in those who are the reason for them being in our office.

We reenact for our clients, the rejecting parent, the loved one who does not hear the child's cry of unmet needs. They find we do not truly listen so they are thrown back into the place of unimportance, invisibility and Therapist Attention Deficit!

We are apt to talk too much, to theorize, interpret and explain things and effectively silence our clients as they were silenced by abusers and adults who "knew better." We put on the paternalistic or maternalistic cloak of authority and retrraumatize those who will do anything to please their therapist just as they did anything to please their abusers, and as long as we continue this role they come back to be retraumatized over and over again.

Nothing is accomplished except lengthening the healing process and time, but far more damaging, is that our patient will never gain an insight into something DIFFERENT. While we as therapists do not recognize the power position we hold and because of this non-recognition manipulate, control and dictate to our clients, we retraumatize and the fault is OURS, not theirs.

It is good to be brutally honest with ourselves in looking at the interaction between us and our clients. Is there an equality of give and take, of respect, of openness to the other's views and perceptions? If there isn't, we cannot but retraumatize through reenactment.

3.TRANSFERENCE AND COUNTERTRANSFERENCE It might be interesting to note here that there is the possibility not only of retraumatizing our clients but also ourselves if we do not deal effectively with our countertransference. I hope there is not one therapist who would deny a history of personal trauma in one form or another.

When I write that we can retraumatize ourselves I mean that if we do not recognize what our clients have raised in us positively or negatively, if we do not see how to keep the boundaries in the transference of our patients and we do not seek skilled supervision, we are in danger of losing perspective, insight and growth. In so doing, whatever traumas we may have sustained in the past or present there is the potential of remaining STUCK in their effects. We wouldn't be experiencing countertransference if our past has been worked through. We experience

countertransference because it hits us where it hurts the most, where we are the most vulnerable and where we HAVEN'T healed ourselves. So it is good to remember what we can do to ourselves as well as our client.

One of the most traumatizing thing we can do to our clients is to project our own countertransference on to them as being their transference. In so doing, we not only retruamatize them by reenacting previous experiences in which, and because of which, they feel blamed and that they are to blame for whatever is happening, but the saddest part of this phenomenon is that the therapist remains blinded to their own issues and the need to self-examine. It is one of the easiest cop-outs for a therapist to avoid looking at him/herself by turning errors back onto their client, e. g. "due to your abuse, I can see how you think this, behave in such a manner, preceive me as doing whatever". How often have we relieved a twinge of guilt by projecting onto our clients, what we need to look at in ourselves? We retraumatize ourselves and don't even know it! I am not proud of the fact that I have done this.

Retraumatizing a client who transfers to us all the emotions, reactions and behaviors that were felt and shown to significant figures long since removed from their life either literally or figuratively, occurs in different ways.

It can be in not recognizing at what developmental stage such feelings belong; in the therapist garnering adoration to her/himself because of the need to be idealized, needed, admired etc. There could be an inability to handle intense and sometimes primal emotions such as rage, terror, indescribable emotional pain and in the response to any of these on the part of the therapist by unrecognition, avoidance, neglect, dismissal, denial of them being real, said therapist can reenact the exact responses shown to their patients. Shown at a time when they were too small to comprehend such lack of understanding from those they loved, or too afraid to question what didn't make sense in the abuse, punishment and total lack of love and nurturing.

Retraumatization of a client in the deepest phase of transference is decimating and simply relives in them all the horrror, disbelief and terror of someone they either love to desperation, fear to the point of paralysis, or both. If the therapist cannot handle, recognize or appropriately care for their client in this stage, the damage caused is irrepairable.

Reenactment doesn't need to be a physical repeating of a past trauma, a broken heart is far more traumatizing and difficult to heal than a broken limb. In the delicate and sensitive condition of a patient in the throes of emotional transference it behoves the therapist to treat their client as they would a container of Dresden china, " FRAGILE. Handle with CARE". If we do not do this, we are guilty of retraumatization.

4. LISTENING

In an article I wrote about Listening, (see www.surviving.org.uk), I posited that perhaps the greatest gift we could give our client, friend or stranger is the ability to truly LISTEN and to enable them to feel without a shadow of a doubt that he/she has been HEARD.

It is my belief that the worst thing that can be done to someone is to ignore them. Ignoring is an umbrella for rejection, silencing, making another feel invisible, less than nothing, unimportant, unrecognized, unloved, unheard and unwanted. Ignoring is TOTAL dismissal and recognition of a person's presence and being.

If we, as therapists are not fully present and focussed on our client in their session time, if we are preoccupied, wandering off on some thought and agenda of our own (even if it concerns our client) we are, in reality, ignoring them. We are ignoring what they are telling us because we hear only part of what is being said, and sometimes none at all, our attention is somewhere else and often our eyes are likewise. Our clients are not stupid and they sense how present we are with them, how much we are paying attention, and it is easy to convey the feeling that in one sense they are being ignored. Our response to their questions, our comments on their affect and the content of what they are relating, our body language, and expressions all tell a tale. It is my firm belief that the worst kind of retraumatization I can commit upon my patient is to in any way ignore them by not listening with 100% of my mind, heart and attention. If I am not listening carefully, I will miss the triggers, fail to recognize the transference process and reenact traumatic responses already experienced by past abusers - it is the culmination of how to retraumatize a client.

The positive thing about all this is that NONE of it need happen!

It depends entirely on how willing we are, as committed therapists to work on our own "stuff", with honesty and integrity, to take our concerns to a skilled supervisor and train ourselves to be constantly self-aware of how we are with our clients. It is when WE get in the way that our clients get OUT - out of the place of healing, progress, understanding and growth.

I do challenge my colleagues to test their honest integrity in self-examination from which we are so prone to run. May we remember the emotional, psychological and sometimes physical life of our clients depends on it.

May we give sober and serious thought and consideration to how we can better help those we work with that we do not add to their dilemmas and suffering by willful or unaware retraumatization.

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/82659 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Dealing With PTSD

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **October 17, 2001**

Ritual abuse is one of the most severe forms of physical, psychological, and spiritual trauma that a human being can undergo. During the trauma itself, the victim is silenced and taught to ignore his or her own internal feelings about events, and in many cases is taught to dissociate their trauma away.

Once safety is achieved, or in later life when the survivor experiences events that remind them of former painful events, they often wrestle with the symptoms of ***Post Traumatic Stress Disorder, or PTSD.***

In fact, dissociative identity disorder, which is common in ritual abuse survivors, has been labeled by some therapists and psychiatrists as “a chronic form of PTSD”.

What are the Symptoms of PTSD? The symptoms of PTSD can begin soon after the trauma, or may resurface years later, depending on the coping style of the trauma survivor. The main symptoms include: ***re-experiencing the trauma***, and the symptoms related to the event(s) and ***avoidance*** of remembering the trauma.

Re-experiencing the trauma can include any of the senses, and for the survivor may mean brief visual flashbacks (such as of a ritual scene or a long suppressed event), feeling emotions tied to the traumatic event (such as terror, nausea, or rage), and feeling physical sensations, or body memories. These can include feeling that the hands or feet are tied up, that the survivor has a gag over their mouth, or even re-experiencing the sensation of being shocked or sexually tortured.

Bad dreams and nightmares may mean sleepless nights, or nights with interrupted sleep, as the survivor wakes up with a feeling of terror.

In some cases, the survivor may fully re-experience the event and act as if it is happening again (abreaction). The remembering can cause feelings of severe anxiety, defensiveness, or even combativeness in some survivors, as anger, terror, and physical feelings recall the original trauma.

These re-experiencing the trauma are as if the brain and psyche are trying to struggle through the trauma that occurred and was forgotten. The survivor may not have total conscious recall, but their body never forgot what happened to it.

Remembering can be triggered by sights, smells, tastes, sounds, or a situation that in some way reminds the survivor of their trauma. Some survivors are triggered when they have children who are the same age that they were when they underwent certain abuse; the sight of their child reminds them of their own pain history. Others may be triggered by holiday decorations, or the anniversary of a painful event.

The survivor with PTSD may struggle with hypervigilance , or feeling that they are constantly on the lookout for danger. They may feel unsafe, and their body will react to loud noises with and outpour of adrenaline (causing panic and sweating). And some survivors of RA have been known to reflexively tackle or hit anyone who walks up suddenly from behind, as a protective mechanism.

With avoidance, the survivor will try to avoid remembering the trauma, and may feel that they are in danger if they do begin to remember. This will often be reinforced by cult programming for the ritual abuse survivor. The survivor may avoid triggers either consciously or unconsciously. They may avoid family members who were involved in their abuse, or any activities that remind them of their trauma. Some survivors become completely numb, or “shut down” to avoid feeling or thinking about their painful history.

The problem with avoidance is that in the long run, it doesn’t work well, and the person will continue to experience symptoms related to their trauma if they are not dealt with.

Other symptoms often occur along with PTSD as a consequence of the hypervigilance, re-experiencing, and avoidance. Frequently, loneliness (feeling “different” or “marked”) and a lack of trust in others because of the betrayal and severe abuse results in poor relationships with others and the survivor can become isolated. Deep bitterness due to the loss of innocence and faith (and feeling cut off from God) is also very common and is reinforced by cult programming to ensure that the survivor believes that God has abandoned them. . They may also feel deep anger or rage towards others and turn on family members, spouses, and others, causing personal relationships to deteriorate.

The survivor may also experience extreme guilt and shame, and wonder why they survived when others didn’t (survivor guilt), or because of shame at the abuse that they experienced. Children will often blame themselves if they are abused, and when they grow up, fear reaching out for help for this reason. In fact, many survivors are reluctant to ask for help, even when they are in crisis, and must be taught this skill in therapy.

Because PTSD symptoms can last for years and years, especially with chronic abuse such as ritual abuse, the person may struggle with the fear that they will never get better, or that they are “hopelessly damaged.” Depression at the length of time the survivor must struggle with symptoms and work at healing can also occur, and cause lowered self esteem.

Poor health and various addictions, including food, alcohol, drugs, or smoking can also occur in an attempt to cope with the anxiety that occurs with PTSD.

Treatment of PTSD For treatment to be successful, it is best if the person is safe, or removed from their ongoing trauma (although many survivors begin treatment while their cult abuse is still occurring, and finding afety may be a process that takes time for some).

Safety issues are usually addressed first (ie stopping cult contact, dealing with severe depression or suicidality). Factors that could slow healing such as addictions to drugs, alcohol, or sex may also be addressed fairly early in therapy, and the use of positive, healthy coping skills in place of numbing behaviors will be taught.

Education about PTSD, what it is, the symptoms, what causes it is also done and can help both the survivor and their family cope with the effects of trauma better. Coping skills such as slow breathing, anxiety containment, positive distraction (the use of a positive or healthy method to distract from the memories to avoid being overwhelmed), and grounding techniques will often be taught. Intrasystem cooperation will be used, and as the survivor of ritual abuse gets to know his/her internal people, they will learn to slow down memories to avoid flooding.

Therapy may include both talk therapy (telling the therapist about the painful events, and discussing the feelings the survivor has; often just learning to have permission to feel at all will be addressed early in therapy since the cult often teaches members to not feel or show emotions), the use of imagery to reaccess traumatic memories, or cognitive restructuring (discussing the survivor’s beliefs about him or herself caused by the events that they underwent).

Learning new social and interaction skills may also be taught, to help make the “here and now” better for the survivor and to help them develop a good support system. Learning to ask others for support, and giving and receiving it from others is often a large part of the healing process. This can help to decrease the sense of isolation and “differentness” that often occur.

EMDR (Eye Movement Densensitization and Reprocessing) is another technique that has been used to help survivors reaccess trauma memories.

Medication can also help survivors with PTSD deal with the terror, depression, sleep problems and other symptoms that frequently occur. The survivor will need medical follow-up to find out which medications can help the best. Often, as the “edge” is taken off of symptoms with medication, the survivor can work better in therapy to resolve memories.

Group therapy is also helpful to many survivors in finding a safe place to process their memories with others to understand. Because ritual abuse is such highly charged material, it takes a therapist experienced with both groups and working with ritual abuse to successfully lead a group. Mixed groups of RA survivors with non-RA survivors may or may not work, dependent on the group members and the therapist. Once concern in mixed groups is that those with less traumatic material to process may feel overwhelmed, or as if their own abuse issues are minimized when a survivor of RA shares their memories. The ritual abuse survivor may also feel that they are not understood, are not believed, or may fear traumatizing those who have no background of understanding this type of abuse. But some therapists have reported success with mixed groups if the group dynamics are handled skillfully.

.

Learning healthy methods of distraction (while working on trauma with a therapist) can also help with coping. For many survivors, this can include hobbies, artwork, or enjoyable activities that are relaxing.

Finding meaning in the trauma, and helping others, can also be a method of coping. Each survivor will find their own unique coping method to both process the trauma, and deal with the aftermath.

Article Sources: “Treatment of PTSD”, National Center for PTSD, article online at http://www.ncptsd.org/facts/treatment/fs... “What is Post-Traumatic Stress Syndrome?” Sidran Foundation, article online at http://www.sidran.org/ptsdbrochure.html

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/84219 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

A Day in the Life of a Trainer

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **November 3, 2001**

*Trigger warning: This article contains graphic descriptions of cult activity. Please do not read it if you are triggered by reading these things.

A lot of people have written and asked questions such as, “When did you go to meetings?” or “What about your children when you were in the group?”, and even “How did you divide the cult activity from your normal life?”

This article is an attempt to answer these questions and to better promote understanding of how dissociation works in the person who is cult active. This “day” is based on over 12 years of therapy, and is a collage based on several different memories of what life was like roughly seven years ago when I was still active in the San Diego group. Hopefully it will help those who are support people and therapists understand better how severe the amnesia is between cult activities and daily life, and will explain how a member of an abusive and occult cult can be a kind Christian person in their day life.

7:00 a.m. I wake up tired, as always. It seems as if tiredness dogs my steps even when I go to sleep early. I wake to the buzzing of the alarm clock, and get up. I am already dressed, because over the past two years my husband and I have started going to bed with our clothes on. We laugh and say it saves time dressing in the morning. I am in the uniform of every American housewife: baggy sweat pants and matching top, and tennis shoes with foam soles. I change into a nicer outfit for work.

I get my two children up and prepare breakfast, which is simple: cereal and toast. Afterwards they prepare for school, and I drive them to the small Christian school that they attend. I am the teacher for first grade there; my daughter is in fifth grade. I have a nagging headache that I ignore as we arrive at the school.

8:45 a. m. School starts. I teach first, second, and third grade at a multigrade Christian school that my children attend. Before this, I had home schooled my children for several years. I was asked to substitute at this school when one of the regular teachers left, and soon was asked to teach fulltime. I enjoy teaching and I multitask well; I go from first grade to second to third, giving each activities to do. I have lesson plans set up for the whole semester. I am considered a kind and

patient teacher; the kids like me and I like them, although I wish the headaches would go away. Sometimes by the end of the day, they are intense.

3:30 School is out. My daughter has invited a friend home to play, so I remind them all to buckle up for the drive home. I am tired, but I also realize that it's important that my children have an opportunity to reach out. I worry sometimes at their tendency to withdraw, and encourage them to have friends over. We practice riding our horse in the penned field in our back yard. My son comments, "Gee, Mom, you're a lot nicer to me at home than when you're my teacher," and I laugh and say, "That's because I don't want to play favorites at school."

5:30 I drive the friend home. Dinner is in the oven.

At this point, my day has been exactly that of any other person who is not DID or in a cult group. This is because my presenters, or day people, have been out. They are kind, caring, Christian, and completely unaware that there is another life that I live. If you stopped me at this point and asked, "Are you involved in any activities at night?" I would have absolutely no idea of what you were talking about. I was created specifically to look, act, and be normal in every way during the day. You could follow me around all day to this point, and there would be absolutely no indication that I lead another life at times. The only hint is the headaches, and occasional bouts of unexplained depression that I can't seem to shake. I have had both all of my life.

6:30 My husband comes home and we all eat dinner. He and I have a good friendship, although we are distant in some ways: he lives his life and I live mine. We rarely argue or even disagree openly. I help the children with homework while he works on a business plan for a client.

7:45 A call comes, and when I pick up the phone, someone says, "Is Samantha there?" This is one of my code names, and I immediately switch. "Call back in a little," I tell them. "Fifteen minutes," the voice says. I send the kids upstairs to take their baths. 8:00 The call comes again. "Samantha?" I instantly change. My voice goes flat, and I reply in a wooden voice. "Yes, what is it?" "Remember to bring the items we discussed tonight," I am told. I then recite a key code to this person, who is the head trainer, that ensures that I will remember his message. I hang up after he does.

8:30 I read my children a bed time story. They are very, very afraid of the dark even at six and ten years of age, and insist that a light stays on in their room all night. As the evening progresses, they become more and more anxious. "Mom, I'm afraid," my daughter tells me. "Of what?" I ask. "I don't know," she answers. She says this a lot, and I worry about my overly sensitive and anxious young daughter. Deep inside, I feel that these fears aren't normal, and that there is something wrong, but I don't know why. My husband tells me I worry too much, and that our

daughter picks it up from me. I stay with both children until they fall asleep. This is our nightly routine, and I feel it is the least I can give them.

9:30 I get ready to go to bed. I have to get ten to twelve hours of sleep a night, or I am completely exhausted. Many times, I fall asleep reading to my two children. Just before falling asleep, I say to my husband, “Remember” and give him the code that lets us know we have to wake up later. He replies in German that he remembers.

1:00 am. My husband wakes me up. He and I take turns being the one to wake up the others. We don’t need an alarm, because our internal body clocks wake us up. I am in my sweats, I fell asleep dressed to make it easier when I rise in the middle of the night. I am finally me, I can come out now and see the outside world, not locked inside as I am during the day. “Get the kids,” he says in a low tone. I go upstairs and tell them, “Get ready, now.” They are up instantly, completely obedient which is very different from during the day. Quickly, silently they put their shoes on and I take them down to the car.

My husband drives, I am in the passenger seat. He drives with the headlights off until we are on the road so we won’t wake our neighbors up. We live in the country on a dirt lane and there are few houses to worry about. My job is to keep alert, looking for anyone following us, to alert him if anyone is coming.

Once we are down the road and turn onto the paved road, he turns the headlights on and we go to the meeting. “I didn’t finish my homework,” my son says. My husband and I turn briefly to him, enraged. “We don’t talk about day at night, EVER!” we remind him.” Do you want to be beaten?” He looks hurt, then the rest of the drive is in silence, the children looking out the windows of the car as we glide silently to our destination.

1:20 am We are at the first checkpoint at the military base. We drove in the back entrance and are waved through, the lookouts recognize our car and our license plates. They would stop anyone who wasn’t familiar or authorized to be there. We will pass two more checkpoints before coming to the meeting area. It is at a large field on a major marine base that includes hundreds of acres. Small tents are erected, and temporary bases set up for the night’s exercises. We come either here, or to one of three different meeting places, three times a week.

People are chatting and drinking coffee. There are a lot of friendships here, because everyone is working towards the same goal. The work is intense and the friendships are just as intense. I join a group of trainers, who I know well. “Looks like Chrysa is missing,” I say. “I bet the lazy b--- couldn’t get out of bed.” I am very different at night. I use words that would horrify me during the day, and I am very catty and mean. The others laugh. “She was late two weeks ago, too,” says another. “Maybe we will need to REPORT her.” He is joking, but partly serious. No

one is allowed to be late, or sick. Or too early, either. There is a ten minute window of time when all members are supposed to report to meetings. If not, then they are punished if there isn't a good excuse. High fevers, surgery, or an auto accident are considered excuses. PMS, fatigue, or the car not working aren't.

We drink coffee to stay awake, since even our dissociated state doesn't stop the body's protest at being awake in the middle of the night after a full day's activities. I go to the tent to change into my uniform. We all wear uniforms at night, and we all have ranks too, based on how high we are in the group and how well we do.

1:45 am We start going to our assigned tasks. I have brought the log books with me, the "item" that I was asked to remember. I keep them hidden in a closet at home, locked in a steel box. These books contain data about different "subjects" that we have been working on.

I go to the head trainer's room inside a nearby building. I work with him, since I am the second trainer under him. He and I despise each other, and I suspect he would love to undermine me since I have made many cruel jokes at his expense. I am supposed to be afraid of him, and I am, but I also cannot respect him, and he knows it. I point out his mistakes to him, in front of others, and he often tries to get back at me.

1:50 am The room inside the warehouse-like building is set up to work on the subjects. It has a table, a light, and equipment. The room is apart from the activities going on outside, so that others will not be distracted by what we do here.

The subject is there, ready to be worked on. Another, younger trainer is there to help, and I tell her to administer the medication. We are working on medications to help induce hypnotic states, and are studying the effects of these medications, combined with hypnosis and trauma. The medication is injected subcutaneously, and then we wait. Within ten minutes, the subject is drowsy and his breathing is slower and heavier, but his eyes are open which is what we want. (I will not describe the rest of the session here, it is too painful for me to describe at this time. I believe that human experimentation is cruel and should be stopped, but the group that I was in did it on a continuous basis). We record information in the logbook throughout the session, and I have a laptop computer into which I am putting the information as well. We are profiling not just the medication, but also this person's individual response. We have profiles that are very complete and thorough on this person, started when he was an infant. I can pull up a special profile that tells me everything about him: his favorite colors, foods, sexual preferences, soothing techniques, and a list of all the codes that will elicit a response from him. There is also a diagram of his internal world that has been created over the years. This subject is easy to work with and things go quickly. I correct the young trainer at one point, when she starts to do something too soon. "You have to learn patience," I chide her in German. At night, we all talk German, it and English are the two ligua francas in this group. "I'm sorry, I thought it was time," she says. I then teach her

the signs to look for when the subject is ready. This is why I am a head trainer. I train the younger ones, because after years and years, I know human anatomy, physiology, and psychology inside out. Luckily, I caught this young trainer before she made the mistake; if she had made one, I would have had to punish her.

At night, mistakes aren't accepted, ever. Once a child is two or three, they are expected to perform correctly, or they are brutalized. This continues into adulthood.

2: 35 The session is almost over and the subject is recovering. The medication is quick acting and he will recover in time to drive home. I leave him in the care of the younger trainer and go to the coffee room to take a break. There I smoke a cigarette and having coffee with the other trainers. During the day, I have never smoked and coffee makes me ill, but here, at night, it is completely different.

"How's your night going?" Jamie, a friend, asks. I only know her as Jamie, it isn't her real name, but we all go by our nicknames at night. She is also one of the teachers at the school during the day, but we aren't friends there. "Slow. I had to correct another stupid kid," I say. I am not kind at night, because no one has ever been kind to me. It is a very dog- eat-dog and political atmosphere where the cruel win.

"How about you?" I ask. She grimaces. "I had to march some brats around", she says, referring to military exercises with children ages 8 to 10. Every night there are military exercises, because the group is preparing for the eventual takeover. The children are divided into groups by age, and different adults take turns teaching. We chat for a few minutes, and then go back to our "jobs".

2: 45 This is a short session. It is a "tune up" for a member who is one of the military leaders. I take his profile out and review it before starting. The head trainer and one other trainer are working with me. The hypnotic induction goes quickly, and he remembers his programming. It is reinforced with shock, and we check through all parameters. They are all active and in place. I sigh with relief. This was an easy one, and he doesn't fight us. Afterwards, I am soothing and kind. "You did well, " I tell him. Inside a little trickle in my stomach revolts at the use of brutality to teach. He nods, still slightly dazed from the session. "You can be proud of yourself," I tell him, and pat his hand. He is given his reward afterwards, and spends time with a child. He is a pedophile and this is how he is comforted after his session.

3:30 We have changed out of our uniforms, which are placed in a special hamper to be cleaned. My clothes, which were neatly folded on a shelf are back on, and we are all in the car on the way home. My daughter speaks. "I get promoted next week," she says, her voice proud. "They said I did really well in the exercises tonight."

She knows that I and the other adults will be at the ceremony to honor the promotions. “I’m glad,” I tell her. I am weary for some reason. Usually, I would be glad, but tonight, although it was a routine night, was hard. I have been feeling little cold trickles inside me lately, twinges of terror. Sometimes, I hear a child inside, deep inside, screaming, and I sweat as I work on children or adults. And I wonder how long I can keep doing this. I have heard of trainers who broke down or couldn’t do their job, and I also heard whispered stories of what happened to them. It was the essence of nightmares, and I shove down my own anxiety.

4:00 am We are home and collapse into bed, instantly asleep. The children fell asleep before we got home, and my husband and I carried them to bed. We all sleep dreamlessly and deeply.

7:00 am I wake up to the alarm, tired. It seems I am always tired, and this morning I have a slight headache. I hurry to get the kids up and get ready to teach another day. I wonder if there is something wrong with me, since I seem to need more and more sleep and still wake up tired. I have no idea that the night before, I was up and living my other life.

It may seem unbelievable to some readers that a person can live another life and have absolutely no idea, but this is the nature of amnesia. If programming is done correctly, it is almost undetectable and the person will be completely amnesic to their other activities. This is called dissociation, and it is present in most members of abusive, generational cult groups such the one I describe.

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/85063 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

The End of the Illuminati

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **November 15, 2001**

**trigger warning: strong Christian message, includes Bible verses

With the recent events that have created fear and concern about the implementation of military rule and/or the ushering in of the NWO for many, I wanted to add some thoughts.

Will the NWO take over? It appears that way, as, occult groups are heading in that direction. They are joining hands and resources, and differences have been overcome.

But what is their fate? What will happen to the Illuminati and other groups? I want to take a look at this, because it is very encouraging. And the Bible clearly shows the fate of this new order.

Daniel was one of the greatest prophets who has ever lived. He was an administrator and ruler during the time of king Nebuchadnezzer of Babylon, and became one of the highest rulers in the Babylonian kingdom. He was also a man who sought God and was faithful during the rule of an occult- based world kingdom.

This was an age when the king consulted wizards and necromancers for help, and an age when the person who openly worshipped God encountered hostility from these workers of darkness.

But in the midst of this darkness, Daniel prayed and sought God's counsel, and God defeated his enemies.

God also shared with Daniel His plan for history.

In Daniel chapter two, King Nebuchadnezzar has a disturbing dream which only Daniel is able to interpret with God's help. The king dreamed about a large statue made of different materials (a head made of gold; breast and arms of silver, a belly and thighs of bronze, legs of iron, and feet of mixed clay and iron). These different

elements represent different kingdoms that would arise and God was showing the king what would happen over the next few years. These would try to rule and subdue the earth (the Greek and Roman Empires almost succeeded). But look what happens to these kingdoms in Daniel 2:34-35: “A stone was cut out without hands, and it struck the statue on its feet of iron and clay, and crushed them. Then the iron, the clay, the bronze, the silver and the gold were crushed all at the same time, and became like chaff from the summer threshing floors; and the wind carried them away so that not a trace of them was found. But the stone that struck the statue became a great mountain and filled the whole earth.”

What is this stone that defeated and crushed the greatest earthly kingdoms and reduced them to rubble and then filled the whole earth? Later on , in chapter 2, verse 44, Daniel explains: “And in the days of those kings the God of heaven will set up a kingdom which will never be destroyed, and that kingdom will not be left for another people; **it will crush and put an end to all these kingdoms, but it will itself endure forever.”**

The stone is the Kingdom of God, established by Jesus, that God states will be set up as a kingdom which will never be destroyed and will crush the occult kingdoms.

We now know the end of the Illuminati and any other occult groups that try to set up a kingdom here. They are already defeated: we know who the winner is!

In Daniel, chapter seven, verses 13 and 14, God even gives us a glimpse of the coming of Jesus in glory, and the establishment of His rule here on earth (which began when Jesus came to earth and His church was established). Again, the Bible is clear: “And to Him was given dominion, Glory and a kingdom, that all the peoples, nations, and men of every language might serve Him. **His dominion is an everlasting dominion which will not pass away; and His kingdom is one which will not be destroyed.**”

The Illuminati and other groups that are organizing to create a world order based on the occult are hoping that this won’t happen. But history is against them. They base their principles and spirituality on the occultism of ancient Rome, Crete, and Babylon. But look what happened to the original practitioners! Their rules ended, and God brought those rulers filled with pride to dust. I know that this is the end of the Illuminat and any other occult groups as well; God has given us a wonderful glimpse in Daniel of their eventual fate.

There is only one rule, one kingdom that will last forever, and that is the reign of Jesus. His reign has already begun in His church, and this gives me hope and joy, and takes away the fear of what the occult “planners” can do. I’ve placed my bet on the winning side, and moved from darkness to His kingdom.

Blessings to you, Svali

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/87593 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Book Review: People of the Lie

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **December 23, 2001**

Book Review: People of the Lie (The Hope for Healing Human Evil) By M. Scott Peck, M.D.

Occasionally, a book is written that transcends normal categories and deserves a category of its own. The book *People of the Lie* is one such.

While this book is not directly about ritual abuse, the topic it covers, the existence of human evil, is very closely related. The author, Dr. Peck, is a psychiatrist of many years who early in his therapy took the normal psychological approach to his clients. But over the years, as he was confronted with both the best and basest in human nature, he believed that a new diagnosis should be created for the DSM: the category of evil.

This is a bold approach for a clinically –based doctor of psychiatry to take. To state that in his professional opinion, and based on his contact with certain patients (or their parents), that a true diagnosis of evil can be made.

He uses case studies to underline his argument. These studies are clear, recognizable, and include one man who made a pact with the devil (then later took it back at Peck's urging), two children with emotionally brutal parents whom Peck considered candidates for this diagnosis, and others.

I believe that this book is worth reading for the ritual abuse survivor for this one classic paragraph alone: To come to terms with evil in one's parentage is perhaps the most difficult and painful psychological task a human being can be called on to face. Most fail and so remain its victims. Those who fully succeed in developing the necessary, searing vision are those who are able to name it. For to "come to terms" means to "arrive at the name (evil)." As therapists, it is our duty to do what is in our power to assist evil's victims to arrive at the true name of their affliction."

This is the emotional task that every victim of generational occult abuse must also face, and try to work through in therapy. If only every therapist understood the reality of evil, the capability that can work through parents to children, as Peck so clearly does.

Peck goes on to delineate the face of evil, to show what evil looks like. His contention is that evil does not often look like what we expect; those who are most evil will often appear most “together” or wholesome at first glance. The picture he draws of evil people is all too familiar to the child raised in such a home as he delineates the “evil personality disorder”:

He states: “In addition to the abrogation of responsibility that characterizes all personality disorder, this one would specifically be distinguished by: (a) consistent destructive, scapegoating behavior, which my often be quite subtle. (b) Excessive, albeit usually covert, intolerance to criticism and other forms of narcissistic injury. (c) Pronounced concern with a pubic image and self-image of respectability, contributing to a stability of life-style but also to pretentiouslness and denial of hateful feelings or vengeful motives. (d) Intellectual deviousness, with an increased likelihood of a mild schizophreniclike disturbance of thinking at times of stress.

What child, raised in a generational cult family, has not been exposed to all four of the above in high degree in their family members? I remember well the day that my sister disclosed to me the fact that she went to our school guidance counselor (she was 17 years old) and told him just a little of the events ongoing at home. He became concerned, and stated that if this was true, she would need to be put in foster care. My sister agreed, jumped at the chance, then found out that she needed my mother’s permission to be placed in foster care (this was rural Virginia in 1975). She asked that night, and my mother unequivocably said “No” to her daughter’s request to be placed in a foster home. Her rationale? “What would the neighbors think if this happened?” she asked. “I can’t have them thinking I’m an unfit mother.” This illustrates point c above, and became the basis of the title of the book; “people of the lie” cannot stand to have the truth of who and what they are uncovered, it is intolerable to them. My sister did run away from home and lived with a teacher two months later, but she never forgot our mother’s response to her request, either. At no point was there remorse, or concern, or asking why she felt she could no longer live at home, which illustrates point b above. And my sister was labeled a “horrible, vicious, terrible child,” for wanting to leave home and later running away, which illustrates point a above.

I believe that any therapist who works with survivors, and survivors themselves, should read Peck’s classic work. It is an eye-opener to say the least, and will validate the survivor and their instinctive feelings about their family of origin. And most of all, it gives a label to what they have endured, at the hands of people of the lie.

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/87619 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Christmas in the Cult

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **December 23, 2001**

Christmas is a time when people think warmly of family gathered around the Christmas tree, sharing laughter as presents are opened and sleepy-eyed children excited see what Santa has brought. Adults share egg nog and cheer, and happy traditions are followed.

But for the child raised in a generational satanic cult, Christmas has a very different meaning. In the daytime, the normal activities of shopping for presents and going to parties occurs, and the family may have a large “warm” gathering of its members in the day.

But at night, things are quite different. The child who in the daytime looks forward to Santa and presents under the day, quakes with terror at the thought of what will come at night.

The winter solstice occurs on December 21, and this is one of the highest pagan/ celtic holidays, since the “New Year” begins after this date for the cult. Special ceremonies are planned to ensure the coming of a new year filled with power, and the return of the sun’s lengthening days (many occult ceremonies are also based on ancient sun deity worship). Added to this is the Christian holiday in celebration of Christ’s birth, which the occult group despises, and special ceremonies are planned to desecrate and twist the meaning of this day. For many families in the occult, the whole week from December 21 to December 26 is filled with activities, since family members are naturally gathered together, and there is no need to explain missed days from school for the children.

The cruelty surrounding Christmas and the solstice is intense. Children are often abused by cult members dressed as Santa; or a mocking of the nativity occurs with the end result that “Herod” succeeds in slaying the baby Jesus (with ritual murder of an infant occurring). The child may be sexually abused under a Christmas tree, and paraphernalia of the holiday are given a new and dark meaning.

Instead of a celebration of birth, Christmas for the child raised in a cult family becomes a time of horror and death. Programming may occur, with images associated with the holiday implanted, and the child told that seeing these images

(such as a lighted Christmas tree, or nativity scene) will mean contact with “family” or other messages placed in under trauma.

Children (and adults) may receive presents with hidden meanings that remind them of Christmas past and the trauma that is meant to bind them to “family”.

A mock “holiday feast” may occur, but instead of egg nog and ham, the meal is gruesome.

These are just a few of the associations that occur in the dissociated alters of the child raised in a cult family, and why many survivors feel a mixture of anticipation and fear when the holidays come around. Added to this, once the child grows up, intense efforts by cult family members to recontact will occur during these holiday times at which all family members are expected to be present.

Panic and anxiety can occur for the adult survivor on these anniversary dates of intense trauma and rituals, and they may wonder why a holiday that is associated with good cheer for them means the desire to hide and cower.

It can help if the survivor learns for themselves where the panic is coming from, and which triggers were placed in. This usually will occur in therapy, or from journaling.

If a survivor has stopped contact with family members, then receives a flood of Christmas cards or gifts, they should be cautious, and aware that these items could be intensely triggering. A desire to “call and recontact” family members will often be awakened as a result, and the survivor will need to work through this in therapy.

Child alters often hold the most horrific memories, and listening to them, allowing them to process their trauma and fears in therapy, journaling, and art work can also help.

Creating new holiday traditions that feel safe can also help. Some survivors celebrate Christmas by doing things very differently than their family of origin to help reinforce that they are able to break free of all the traditions that their family held. And having outside support and safety help most of all during this time.

Christmas is an especially difficult time for many survivors. But as adults, survivors can choose to break free from the traumatic meanings it once held, and to create a safe Christmas for themselves.

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/89311 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Your Tax Dollars at Work

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **February 10, 2002**

I am writing an article that is somewhat angry, but I can't help myself. I am angry that my tax dollars are being used, and yours as well, to fund certain projects. I am risking my articles here at this site being pulled for writing this, but I can't stay silent.

The projects are under the umbrella of the Central Intelligence Agency in Langley, Virginia. These projects are investigations in the techniques of different forms of mind control and how easily "subjects" can be coerced, drugged, hypnotized, traumatized, or otherwise brought under "control" and turned into willing workers who believe fully that they are doing a "good thing" for either their "country" or their "family".

I should know. I was a victim of these brutal experiments, and later in life I was an experimenter on others.

There is a ton of documentation and evidence both through governmental records and online that this stuff really happens. That MK-ULTRA, BLUEBIRD, ARTICHOKE, MONARCH and other projects funded by our tax dollars were and are being covertly used to abuse and torture innocent children and later adults through these programs. The fact that there IS documentation available in the face of the notorious amount of governmental paper shredding that goes in shows the sheer volume of the documentation and notes that were kept and that could not be completely erased from the public record.

With project PAPERCLIP, it is known that nazi doctors (you know, the ones who did those experiments on people in Germany during WWII) were imported into the United States. While ostensibly they were there to help the US increase its technology, many of them also shared their knowledge of human neurophysiology, and were recruited into overseeing ongoing experiments.

Enough third person. I will share my own personal memories of this. At night, by age 8, Dr. Timothy Brogan of George Washington University, my main trainer, and my mother would take me to Langley, Virginia. I remember there were dark trees in the fields behind the long buildings at one end, and that we always went to the

same building. Underneath there were classrooms, used for training. I would sit in a group with other children, and watch films on : How to kill someone (we were forced to analyze these films, asked by the “teacher” what the “subject” or “mark” who was killed did wrong, and how the kill was set up. We would analyze and discuss everything, including wind direction, type of firearm used, scope used, etc. Target practice: there was a shooting gallery there and we would do literally hours of target practice. We learned to take a gun apart and put it together again in ten seconds or less. We were timed. Training films: projectors showed different films on every conceivable topic, including ones on “These are your leaders” with a conference table, and then the top Illuminati leaders in the US rising when the top one entered the room. Films that were sexually explicit, violent films, and films that discussed loyalty. We practiced how to “drop a tag” (someone following us) and how to follow someone without being detected. In one room was an isolation tank. It was NOT used with group exercises, but for special training sessions. Usually the room was sealed off when not in use. Language training: different people would come in and both in class and one on one teach different languages. At times, my mother would sit and chat with her friend, Sidney Gottlieb (who was very very egotistical in this setting), or with Dr. G. Steiner, a medical doctor who was working on this project with children. I don’t know who the other children were, or where they came from. Their families would come and pick them up afterwards, usually a mother or father or family friend. The exercises would be done by 4:30 am.

At Tulane Medical Center (home of “The Institute”, considered one of the top research facilities in the United States for mind control techniques and exploration of the paranormal, near death experiences and using recorded messages to repeat a message over and over were used. They believed that the near death state would engrave a message or belief into the deepest levels of the unconscious, and the “rebirth” experience (which created a new alter at a very deep level) created a very very loyal “subject”. It did. The subject was terrified and told that if they ever disobeyed, they would go back to the “near death” state, so few thought of being “disloyal” under those circumstances.

The equipment that our tax dollars bought for these organizations working under a governmental umbrella was very sophisticated: VR equipment, and use of the most sophisticated neurolinguistic techniques available. And people who were taught in how to use it all to maximum effectiveness.

By the time I was 23, I was a head trainer in San Diego. At night, I continued to experiment on others, under the supervision of Jonathan Meier and eventually Col. Aquinos, who was a regional director over our group. And sure enough, each evening after we were done, we would upload our data that was heavily encrypted to the data banks at Langley, Virginia. We had to go through six levels of security passwords at the CIA data center before we came to the area where data could be uploaded. They wanted to know the results of experiments ongoing everywhere, and there were strict protocols to report any unusual reactions, anomalies, or new medication combinations that were especially effective.

I believe that most of the American public has no idea that certain governmental organizations are using their money this way. I also believe that most who read this will disbelieve that the CIA and a respected medical center could be the site of such experimentation on the minds and psyches of both children and adults (we did it on both). But it is the truth, and I am sorry that it is, because I am angry that part of my taxes taken out when I work goes to support ongoing abuse. My only hope is that someday, this will be discovered, brought out into the open and the public will be able to scrutinize what occurred and still occurs, and it can be stopped.

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/90019 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Shadow Government and Mount Pony

Author: **Carol Rutz**
Published on: **March 7, 2002**

While the news media feigns surprise and continues to report on the "Shadow Government" deployed outside of Washington to run things in the event of an attack, we who have written about this "Shadow Government" know that this is nothing new. I have to believe there is some purpose to this revelation now, as little is published without the blessings of those in power to use for their own personal agendas. Their are many underground facilities throughout the United States which are set up to house those people that are considered "Essential." It would be interesting to view the master list, wouldn't it? What secrets might truly be uncovered if we were to find out who in this nation is truly worthy of surviving a catastrophic incident. When I saw the news article published by the Federation of American Scientists (from the FAS Project on Government Secrecy, Volume 2002, Issue No. 17, March 4, 2002) in which they cited the Washington Post and the Cleveland Plain Dealer and their claims of breaking the news on the "Shadow Government, I became so intrigued that I had to read these stories. One of the sites that was mentioned was Mount Pony in Culpeper, Virginia. One more piece of the amazing puzzle of my own experiences of being experimented on as a child during the Cold War as told in my book "A Nation Betrayed," suddenly came together.

Sidney Gottlieb who retired from the CIA in 1973 after 2 decades with the CIA, owned a small farm near Boston, Va., about 10 miles northwest of Culpeper, Virginia. The location of his farm seems to be well planned when you understand its proximity to Mount Pony in Culpeper, Virginia. Mount Pony was a 140,000 square foot radiation hardened facility with a 400 foot long bunker, built of steel-reinforced concrete a foot thick and covered by 2 to 4 feet of dirt. Until July 1992 the bunker served as a Continuity of Government facility. The facility was designed to support an emergency staff of 540 for 30 days. Some features of the facility were a cold storage area for maintaining bodies unable to be promptly buried (due to high radiation levels outside), an incinerator, indoor pistol range, and a helicopter landing pad. Until 1988 the facility stored a $1 billion stock of currency to be used to reactivate the American economy following a nuclear attack. Gottlieb's choice of a home seemed to be no coincidence. Such a highly placed, valuable asset would be privy to many secrets other than those having to do with "Mind Control." As Ted Gup reports in the Washington Post, "Gottlieb had emerged as a kind of Dr. Strangelove. He had overseen a vast network of psychological and medical

experiments conducted in hospitals, universities, research labs, prisons and safe houses, many of them carried out on unsuspecting subjects-mental patients, prostitutes and their johns, drug addicts, and anyone else who stumbled into the CIA's web. Some had been subjected to electroshock therapy in an effort to alter their behavior. Some endured prolonged sensory deprivation. Some were doped and made to sleep for weeks in an attempt to induce an amnesia-like state. Others suffered a relentless loop of audiotape playing the same message hundreds of thousands of times." Gottlieb's obituary in the Times of London began, 'When Churchill spoke of a world 'made darker by the dark lights of perverted science' he was referring to the revolting experiments conducted on human beings by Nazi doctors in the concentration camps. But his remarks might with equal justice have been applied to the activities of the CIA's Sidney Gottlieb.' Along with Gottlieb's close proximity to Mount Pony, we have another key figure who lived nearby. Intimately involved in MKULTRA intrigue and the emigration of former Nazis into the US. through the CIA-funded OPC (Office of Policy Coordination) in the State Department was Carmel Offie. He lived less than 20 miles from Sidney Gottlieb on a sizable farm in Markham, Virginia. He handed me over to Allen Dulles and Sidney Gottlieb in 1952 for my first experiments and torture when I was 4 years old. In 1946 Offie was putting together reports on the movement of German scientists from the American Zone into France, individuals who had eluded Paperclip. In the spring of 1948 Carmel was working in Frankfurt at USPOLAD. Burton Hersh reports in The Old Boys, that "One of Offie's functions at POLAD had been to rake through the flotsam churned up by the postwar disorder—the defunctive Nazi exluminaries and cutthroat émigré politicians and paper mill impresarios of promise—and help the CIC and others plug legitimate experts in around the emerging Cold-War bureaucracies."

According to Hersh, Carmel Offie was "doubling as a kind of booking agent for many of the refugee scholars" that the U.S. was interested in obtaining. He went to work for Frank Wisner who got Congress to pass the One-Hundred-a Year CIA Act, which allowed Offie to bring in, unmonitored, a hundred refugees each year with their dossiers "Sanitized." Offie was Wisner's special assistant for labor and migratory affairs. He personally oversaw the National Committee for Free Europe, which passed OPC money to anti-Communist unions in Europe.

John Loftus reports that Offie worked for the DDU (Document Disposal Unit), which took orders from Dulles. He calls the DDU the OSS "Political Intelligence" experts who wore Army uniforms but were paid through the State Department. In 1949 Offie became responsible for the care of a number of Bloodstone émigrés'. Bloodstone was the codename for the operation, which proposed that 250 Nazi collaborators be brought into the United States who would otherwise be barred by the Displaced Persons Act. Simpson also reports that a special Bloodstone subcommittee had been created to supply false identities, government cover jobs, and secret police protection to selected Bloodstone immigrants.

Carmel Offie was also handling another project employing Nazi collaborators

through a U.S.-financed "think tank" named the Eurasian Institute. The Institute was enlisting men who were important members of the German espionage network in Central Asia from 1931 to 1945. Wisner and Offie were still working together in 1950, when Joseph McCarthy referred to Offie as a State Department veteran who "has now been assigned to the Central Intelligence Agency.

These people were true spineless cowards who made sure they would have a safe place to run if there were threats to their survival. Many "Continuity of Government Facilities" were built during the cold war. As reported by the Cleveland Plain Dealer, http://eyesonamerica.org/200110/10190107... "One such facility built into a mountain in Virginia has a hospital, crematorium, emergency power plant, and sleeping cots for 2,000 people. A bunker in a Pennsylvania mountain, known as "Site R," can accommodate 3,000 people." Sabrina Eaton reports that "it included a reservoir, medical and dental facilities, dining hall, barber shop and chapel" and that "the government decommissioned similar bunkers at the Greenbrier resort in West Virginia and at Mount Pony in Culpeper, Va., in recent years."

Another report in Taking a Tour of Cold War Baltimore, http://www.citypaper.com/2001-07-18/feat... , "Gimme Shelter Or, Last One Underground Is a Rotten Egg", "Greenbrier opened in 1962 under a posh resort in White Sulphur Springs, W. Va., this capacious bunker -- code name 'Project Greek Island' -- was where Congress was to duck and cover when all the big, bad buttons were pushed. The vast complex includes chambers large enough for both House and Senate to meet.

The article goes on to say that Mount Weather near Berryville, Va., is a vast underground facility, complete with streets, multistory buildings, and a lake large enough for water skiing. A host of governmental higher-ups have sleeping quarters here, including Supreme Court justices. The Federal Emergency Management Agency runs a multitude of disaster-response operations from under the mountain today. Two more sites described in this article are Olney in Montgomery County and Raven Rock. A substantial 1971 bunker that now serves as an Alternate National Warning Center (designed to get the word out when bad things happen) and a Satellite Teleregistration Facility lies beneath what used to be a cow pasture in Olney. Raven Rock also known as "Site R" and colloquially referred to as "the underground Pentagon," is a 48-year-old megabunker which lies under a mountain just north of the Maryland line near Waynesboro, Pa., close to the presidential retreat at Camp David. For those of us who have endured the silence of those years following the secret experiments carried out on an unwitting public in the name of "National Security," such revelations come as just another footnote in our untold stories. In the epilogue to a congressional committee report headed by Sen. Frank Church, the committee concluded: "The United States must not adopt the tactics of the enemy. Means are as important as ends. Crises make it tempting to ignore the wise restraints that make men free. But each time we do so, each time the means we use are wrong, our inner strength, the strength which makes us free, is lessened." Let us remember this when we start giving up our freedoms under the guise that it is necessary for this brave country of ours to survive. It appears that

those who really are important already have a place to escape to. Will we?

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/90415 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Easter in the Cult

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **March 25, 2002**

Easter in the Cult

There are certain times of the year that are particularly difficult for survivors of generational occult. These are “holiday dates” that correspond to rituals celebrated by occult groups. While the actual rites and practices may vary somewhat from group to group, there are certain similarities among many.

Easter is one such time. In the group that I grew up in, during the daytime I was allowed a normal experience. Easter was a celebration of springtime, of lengthening days, and the new flowers signaling winter’s end. I often enjoyed playing with waving palm branches during Palm Sunday, and hunting for Easter eggs on the church grounds. And of course, every year a small Easter basket appeared with a chocolate rabbit or lamb.

But at night, the holiday time was celebrated in a very different manner. The preparation leading up to it often lasted during the week before (there was no school during Easter week when I was a child, in the years before “Spring break” became common. Most schools let out for a week to ten days during this week). The events of this time were quite painful, and including brutalization, sexual abuse and other rituals surrounding fertility rites, culminating at the end of the week with a mock crucifixion. Often a child would be chosen to undergo crucifixion in a grim mockery of the Christian celebration, and the adults would state that this ritual was an offering to debase the Christian tradition and show its lack of meaning.

I do know that young boys were chosen for this ritual, and it was horrible to see.

At times, a mock “resurrection” ceremony might occur, but the resurrector was not Jesus, but a demonic entity who would enter into the person brought to a near death state.

The spiritual roots of these ceremonies were created to allow the passage of the demonic into the participants, and to “seal” them as they participated in the ceremony. At times, a golden chalice was passed between participants, and the child’s blood filled the cup that participants drank.

I am finding in my healing that more and more of what was done to me involved dark occult ceremonies as a child, such as I describe here. These ceremonies allowed the entrance of the demonic, and one of the hardest parts of the group programming to break has been the hold that these memories, and the spiritual destruction that ensued, has had on me. Part of my own healing process is involving undergoing deliverance, and replacing the gruesome, negative spirituality of my childhood with a faith that includes love, mercy, and forgiveness, the antithesis of the harsh and punishing ceremonies that I saw. One of the most important tasks for the survivor when remembering these types of events, (and anniversary dates often bring memories) is to find healing and self-forgiveness for participating, and to reach out for a belief system that can replace the negative. For me, that belief is Christianity, and my hope is that others will know its comfort during this difficult time of year.

It can also help to realize that so often the group makes certain things sound final. “You are sealed for life”, they tell the children, or “You agreed to this, and now you are one of us forever.” This is nonsense. No contract is binding forever, especially one created under coercion, and once a person has free choice, they can choose to break childhood spiritual contracts made under duress. The group during holidays and ritual events tries to inculcate helplessness and a feeling that “Now I can never leave”, but this message is absolutely false and plays on a small child’s fears. Instead, as an adult, the survivor has choices, and can choose to break those covenants and enter into freedom.

This is a battle, and I don't want to make it sound as if it is easy. It isn't, and I am still battling this is my own life, but it is well worth breaking free of the hold that these ceremonies and demonic entanglements have in the life of the survivor.

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/91745 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Dealing With Threats

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **May 8, 2002**

I am at work, and one of my responsibilities as office manager is to answer the phone. In this age of privacy, almost one fourth of my customers have 'private' or 'caller unknown' as their identification on my caller i.d. machine. So I think nothing of answering the call identified as 'caller unknown'.

"Why aren't you dead yet?" the voice asks, then hangs up.

I sit there, feeling as if I have been kicked in the stomach. It hurts most because the call comes from a source close to me: my mother, a leader in the group that I left, who is very angry with me for my decision. Apparently she would rather have her child dead than out, and this hurts.

One of the issues that most survivors leaving an abusive cult must face is that of receiving threats from the group. These threats can take various forms, including:

-Hang up calls. These can occur in sequences meant to trigger a survivor, or else the cult escapee may be literally flooded with dozens of hang up calls, one after another. The message is obvious: the calls communicate to the survivor silently that the cult knows where they are.

-Phone threats: these are verbal messages meant to intimidate and harass. For instance, when I first considered leaving the cult, I got a phone call from San Diego. There was a baby crying in the background, then the sound of a young child screaming. The caller, a man, then said, "Isn't it nice to know that your children are still alive?" My children were in San Diego, living with my husband, and I was being told that there safety depended on my decisions.

-Accessing calls: these are similar to the hang up calls, but when the survivor answers, tones are played, music may be played, or a name spoken which is meant to trigger an alter to come out. For instance, the person calling may ask, " Is Karen there?" This is an alter created in the person who is supposed to be triggered out. If for some reason the alter is not triggered out (i.e. the survivor is working in therapy to break this programming) then the caller will say, "I'm sorry, I have a wrong number." This makes it sound innocent, but a survivor should be

suspicious if there are 50 'wrong numbers' in the period of a day or two.

Phone threats and messages are the first level of threats that a survivor will face. But if for some reason they anger individuals in the group, or if the group wants the survivor back badly enough, then the next level of threat can occur. This is abduction and harming the survivor. I should know. This happened to me two months ago, and is one reason I have not posted here as frequently in the past weeks.

But I also refuse to be intimidated by this group, and so am choosing to speak out in spite of what happened.

When the group believes that they are truly losing control over the survivor, they may step up their efforts beyond phone threats. Instead, they will look for a time when the survivor is alone and vulnerable. Or, they will call and trigger out an alter, and tell them to meet a 'friend'. This is often done to littles, who are trusting, and keep hoping that they will receive love or a 'treat' from those they look up to.

Once the person is lured or found alone, then abduction is usually easy for the cult to do. The person will be forced into a van, or vehicle. They may be driven to a house, or the abuse may occur in the back of a van with windows drawn.

These people are able to brutalize quickly and swiftly in a small space, and have the equipment with them when they make a ''call''. The victim will be told things such as 'You haven't been doing your job', or other threats. Their internal programming will then be reinforced, with torture or even rape as punishment for disobedience. The victim will be gagged during the punishment to prevent others from hearing what is occurring. This will also usually occur in an isolated area, far from houses or intrusions.

The victim will then be returned to a nearby area, or to their car, and told to ''remember what they learned''. When it happened to me recently, I was told, ''See how easy it is to find you? Think about your children, and how easy it would be to do the same to them.''

What Can Be Done I immediately reported the abduction and abuse to my therapist, my husband, and my pastor. I considered calling the police, but wondered how they would receive the following: ''I was abducted by a man who I don't know in a cream colored van with a temporary license plate, so it probably isn't the real one. He used a halt command on me given to him by my mother and my trainer from San Diego, since they are the only two who know this, that's why I didn't fight him when he tied me up. He shocked me, so there are no bruised, and sexually abused me with an instrument, so there's no semen.'' He wore gloves the whole time, so there are no fingerprints. I blocked this all out for five days, and just remembered it today.''

My husband, pastor, and therapist all felt the police would probably not follow up on this report, so I didn't file it. But what happened also shows how careful those who threaten and abuse are to cover their tracks and to make identification difficult.

At the same time, I am taking steps to be safer. 1) Don't be alone: I am being especially accountable for my time, and don't drive in isolated areas.

2) I have quit answering 'unknown caller' calls at work. Instead, I told my boss that I have been receiving harassing calls from unknown callers, and will only take calls that are identified and with a number.

3) I am working hard in therapy to look at how I was triggered, the codes that were used, and how, and to undo them. I am also dealing with the immense amount of panic and suicidality that this incident caused, which was the first clue that something HAD happened. I have been calming down littles, and reminding older parts inside that they don't have to believe lies or do what these people tell them.

4) I have asked for help, which is very difficult for me, from my support system, including my church and my husband and children. Their encouragement, prayers, and help has made a huge different to me.

They told me to be silent. I refuse to. They told me not to tell. I refuse to agree with them. They told me I'm not 'doing my job'. I plan to continue to not doing it, because they aren't my owners, and have no right to tell me what to do.

Only by breaking the power of the lie, can a survivor break free of the control of these people. And this is my goal: to become, and to stay, free.

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/93014 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Education Matters: Denial in Dissociation

Author: **Diane W. Hawkins, M.A.**
Published on: **July 3, 2002**

"…when denial is no longer needed, neither is dissociation."

Once considered merely an annoying appendage to the diagnosis of Dissociative Identity Disorder (DID), denial is now being recognized as the glue that holds the dissociation in place. The fact is that DID would not exist without the mind's need for denial. In other words, when denial is no longer needed, neither is dissociation.

DID originates when severe, repeated childhood trauma produces intolerable conflicts which the young psyche, under extreme duress, resolves by splitting itself into separate identities. This enables part of the person to encapsulate the unbearable event so that other parts can live as if it had never occurred.

Intolerable conflicts arise whenever seemingly vital beliefs are threatened. These beliefs may involve survival, safety, functionality, identity, morality, religious commitments, or any other issue that is viewed as unable to be compromised.

For instance, most young children, because of their extreme vulnerability, believe that they cannot survive without a protective parent or caretaker. Therefore, if Daddy violently hurts the children, this creates an intolerable conflict with the child's belief concerning what is necessary for survival. The child resolves the conflict by creating a dissociative split in its own mind, which allows part of him/her to "not know" about the event and thus continue believing he/she has a protective caretaker and therefore the means to survive.

The same kind of intolerable conflict arises when a person is faced with an absolute need to function and yet is too overwhelmed by the impact of the trauma to do so or a person committed to high moral standards is forced to participate in "unthinkable" activities. Again dissociation provides the means by which part of the person can be separated from knowledge of the trauma and thus be able to do such crucial things as function normally or maintain its moral identity.

Perpetrators who understand the mechanism of dissociation may deliberately create such conflicts fo their victims whenever their agenda calls for another split-off part or extreme secrecy. They can readily do this by subjecting the victims to

trauma which seems unsurvivable or evokes intolerable emotions, such as life-threatening terror, humiliating shame, or unbearable guilt, or by forcing them to participate in activities which drastically conflict with their own moral or religious beliefs.

Each of these situations will generate an intense need to deny that the event ever occurred, which will invariably create the dissociative wall the perpetrators desire. They can usually rest assured that the person will also be deeply invested in never taking it down as that would mean confronting the unbearable reality or emotions.

When the key role which denial plays in both the origin and maintenance of dissociation is recognized, it creates a profound shift n therapeutic focus. No longer is it sufficient to precess traumatic memories with the parts that experienced them. Instead the need for the dissociative barriers between the trauma-bearing an denial-maintaining parts must be addressed if true healing is to occur. This entails identifying and resolving the intolerable conflicts which seemingly demand their existence. This can be a very threatening process, but it will bring the focus of therapy to the true issues maintaining the dissociation.

Giving up denial can be a process for the survivor, passing through progressive stages. Often in the beginning the whole idea of being multiple may be denied. When the reality of the split-off parts is finally accepted, the reality of some, or all, of the trauma may be denied. Perhaps abuse by one perpetrator is accepted but not by another, or the memories of sexual abuse are finally accepted but not those involving anything Satanic.

Eventually the reality of the trauma in its entirety may be accepted, but "owning" it may be resisted. In other words, the primary denial-bearing identity accepts that all the horrible things happened but wants to continue to remain separated from them. Only when this key identity is willing to identify personally with the events and their implications can the dissociative barriers come down.

Since this involves a major change for the denying Core/Host rather than the trauma-bearing parts, the therapeutic focus belongs much more heavily on these identities than previously recognized. Somehow their threshold of tolerance must be raised at a deep psychological level. What was once considered absolutely unacceptable must be embraced as "ownable".

Changing this perspective will involve identifying, challenging, and correcting many false beliefs. It will also mean coming face to face with horrendous emotions and deep-seated identity issues. The truth is that becoming whole requires tremendous motivation, ego strength, and courage on the part of the survivor. When God is your partner, however, He promised to supply the grace and strengt to enable you to do "all things."

Article originally printed in 'Restoration Matters', Fall 2001, vol. 7, #1, online at http: www.rcm-usa.org . © Diane W. Hawkins, M.A. , reprinted with the permission of the author.

.

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/95606 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Call for Policy to Increase Protection for Victims of Ritual Abuse in San Diego, Part I

Author: **Ellen Lacter, PhD**
Published on: **October 5, 2002**

Introduction by svali: Often, in today's climate in which court systems and Child Protective Services all too often turn a blind eye to the problem of ritual abuse, it can be easy to fall into discouragement, or wonder if things will ever change. Luckily, there are advocates for survivors who have decided that change IS possible, and that by delineating problems with our current methods of dealing with ritual abuse, and outlining methods to begin solving these problems, that help-and hope-can be given to survivors. I greatly admire Ms. Lacter's courage and thoughtfulness in this statement, and the honest questions she asks in this letter that she has sent to various public organizations in San Diego. Her thoughts are objective, based on reality, and well-organized, and my fervent hope is that those it is addressed to will hear her out. You can read more articles by Ellen Lacter on her site at http://truthbeknown2000.tripod.com/Truth... where this article was originally published.

Call for Policy to Increase Protection for Victims of Ritual Abuse in San Diego, Part I

by Ellen P. Lacter, Ph.D., October 4, 2002 (reprinted with the permission of the author)

I. Problem: Lack of Protection for Victims of Ritual Abuse in San Diego County

Victims of ritual abuse in San Diego receive little or no protection due to problems in the functioning of the following public organizations:

A. District Attorney's Office

B. San Diego Union-Tribune

C. Civil Grand Jury of San Diego County

D. Children's Service's Bureau and Treatment, Evaluation, and Resource

Management Team

E. Law Enforcement

F. Family Court

A. District Attorney's Office

The District Attorney's office presently appears to treat all reports of ritual abuse as false and to have a policy of not investigating or prosecuting these cases.

Mark Sauer, in his September 21, 2002, article, "Abuse or Unfounded Fear" in the San Diego Union-Tribune, reported that he interviewed the present District Attorney, Paul Pfingst. Sauer reports the following statements by Paul Pfingst:

1. Pfingst: "This theory [ritual abuse] was completely debunked in the early '90s".

2. Sauer: "District Attorney Paul Pfingst expressed grave concerns that a widely attended and influential conference would feature workshops on ritual abuse, since he has seen no evidence that such cases exists" (Re: two workshops on ritual abuse and therapy with survivors being included at a large Family Violence conference in San Diego on September 25 to 28, 2002.

3. Pfingst: "If someone wants to go back to teaching that satanic ritual abuse claptrap, we're going to have a serious discussion about whether law enforcement in San Diego should respond and expose it for what it is."

4. Pfingst: "[T]he abuse conference as a whole looks like a well-put-together event. It's unfortunate they have this ritual abuse stuff involved. I plan to have someone there monitoring those presentations and reporting back."

Pfingst's statements communicate that the official position of the current District Attorney's office is to discount and discredit claims of ritual abuse. District Attorneys should not discount reports of any kind of crime. Ritual abuse laws and special ritual crime police units exist in other jurisdictions in the United States. District Attorneys should be interested in protecting crime victims and prosecuting criminals based on the evidence in each case. In cases of ritual abuse, Pfingst appears to be interested in protecting the perpetrators and prosecuting the victims and advocates.

There is no question that some child abusers use Satanic or witchcraft symbols and concepts to frighten children into submission and silence. There is also no question that some criminals worship Satan or witchcraft deities. There is a large body of psychological and criminal evidence of ritual abuse. Numerous court

decisions (criminal, family, juvenile, and civil) have been based on findings of ritual abuse. One list is periodically updated and published on the world-wide web by "Karen Curio Jones" (http://www.newsmakingnews.com/karencurio... In August, 2002, 65 cases were presented in this archive. Many cases are yet to be archived. And in many ritual crime cases, they cannot be archived, because prosecutors omitted the ritualistic components of the crimes to avoid defense claims that charges were based on religious intolerance.

The most recently documented ritual crime case may be that of Russell Smith. On September 4, 2002, United States Marshals in Oregon arrested Russell Smith, accused child rapist and self-proclaimed Satanist. He was wanted by the Prince William County Police Department in Virginia for rape and sodomy of a child. According to authorities, Smith convinced a young girl to become involved in satanic rituals, and part of those rituals involved having sex with her (http://www2.amw.com/amw.html). Police found in his basement a goat's skull with a pentagram drawn on it, black robes, girls' underwear, and ceremonial candles. His license plate read "100P666". Smith was profiled on "America's Most Wanted" on 8-31-02. The broadcast led to his arrest. Due to this evidence, the Satanic group he founded as Rev. Sorath, "Order of Perdition", has since excommunicated him (Washington Post, 8-27-02, p. B03, 8-30-02, p. B01).

There can be no argument that reports of ritual abuse must be taken seriously. Yet, Paul Pfingst discounts them globally. If Russell Smith had been sighted in San Diego prior to his arrest, would Pfingst have instructed law enforcement to ignore the report?

Paul Pfingst abuses his power as District Attorney by stating that he will have law enforcement "respond" and "monitor" the conference presentations and "report back". The District Attorney's office has no jurisdiction to monitor professional education. Pfingst's comments appear to be thinly veiled threats of action by law enforcement against psychotherapists who treat and teach about treatment of victims of ritual abuse. He implies that there is something illegal about teaching about treatment for ritual trauma. His comments demonstrate a lack of interest in protecting the right of free speech of psychologists, therapists and ritual abuse survivors who wish only to share their knowledge of how to assist these crime victims. There is no place for the District Attorney or law enforcement in matters of free speech or academic freedom, except to enforce the constitutional right of everyone to express their views.

It has been suggested by some that Paul Pfingst is actually concerned about ritual crime, but has been affected by pressure to "look the other way" due to tremendous influence by the media (next section) and expensive civil judgements and prior failed prosecutions of ritual abuse.

San Diego County has paid large financial damages in cases in which ritual abuse

was alleged and later judged to be unfounded. The criminal prosecution of Dale Akiki, his acquittal, and subsequent lawsuits against numerous agencies and parties, cost San Diego County in both financial damages and public censure of the District Attorney and Child Protective Services.

David Icke (http://www.davidicke.net/tellthetruth/co... provides the following details on the Akiki case and lawsuits: Dale Akiki was charged with 35 counts of child abuse and kidnaping in 1991. Akiki and his wife acted as volunteer baby-sitters at the Faith Chapel in Spring Valley, California. On Sundays, they watched the children while their parents were attending services next door. Many children who were baby-sat said that Akiki had killed animals and drunk their blood in front of the children, and engaged in other satanic and sexual rituals. Akiki was acquitted of all charges in November, 1993. It was the longest and most expensive trial in San Diego history, costing millions. Carol Hopkins (more on her later) testified for Akiki and was among those who called for the ouster of District Attorney Ed Miller (Los Angeles Times, 11/30/93) http://www.ags.uci.edu/~dehill/witchhunt... Six months later, Miller was turned out of office after receiving only 11% of the popular vote. Public backlash over ritual abuse cases has been blamed for his defeat. Akiki's acquittal prompted a grand jury inquiry into the investigatory methods employed in the case. In September 1994, Akiki and his wife filed suit against prosecutors, therapists and the church. Akiki claimed emotional distress, slander, libel, false imprisonment, professional negligence and civil rights violations. The county and other defendants eventually settled the suit and Akiki received over $2 million. The Religious Tolerance web-site (http://www.religioustolerance.org/ra_aki... provides the following additional information: "Dale and Sharon Akiki's [sic] brought a civil lawsuit against San Diego County, Faith Chapel Church, 9 therapists, Children's Hospital, businessman Jack Goodall, and his wife Mary Goodall. The action was settled out of court in 1995-JAN. The county's share of the settlement, which is believed to be less that 40% of the total award, was 768,750."

Everyone is very sympathetic to San Diego County wishing to avoid 1) prosecution of innocent people, 2) expensive lawsuits, and 3) embarrassment to public agencies. False accusations of child abuse wreak emotional devastation on the accused and the children. No one wants the county to waste money, when there are so many deserving people in need of services. And it is to everyone's advantage when public agencies perform their functions well and are trusted by the community.

However, there is no question that many reports of ritualistic abuse are founded. There will come a day when law enforcement investigators, psychotherapists, and child protection workers can share their information, with no fear of reprisal, with an Interagency Investigative Team trained in the special considerations involved in investigation and prosecution of ritual abuse, and protected by legislation to carry out its work. (For an analysis of the special considerations involved in these investigations, see "Forensic Considerations in Ritual Trauma Cases, by Sylvia Lynn Gillotte, Attorney-at-Law, http://www.iccrt.org/articles.asp?articl...) When the

truth about ritual abuse is publically exposed, San Diego's leaders and citizens will be moved to action to protect its victims.

B. The San Diego Union-Tribune

The San Diego Union-Tribune is, by far, the most widely circulated newspaper in San Diego County.

For the past ten years, reporters Mark Sauer and Jim Okerblom have written a series of articles for the Union-Tribune discrediting victims of ritual abuse and their advocates, including therapists treating ritual abuse victims and patients with recovered memories of childhood abuse, professional organizations advocating for victims of ritual abuse, police officers investigating reports of ritual abuse, legislators who have tried to introduce anti-ritual crime legislation, and now, professional education about ritual abuse. This biased reporting has greatly contributed to convincing a good portion of the San Diego community that ritual abuse does not exist, has exerted tremendous political pressure on public agencies and political candidates, and has had a devastating impact on victimized children and adults, resulting in their not being believed by many mental health professionals, and reduced protection by law enforcement and the courts. Due to this media blitz, and the parallel media campaign of the False Memory Syndrome Foundation (FMSF), some therapists discount histories of ritual abuse provided by their clients, and diagnose these clients as delusional rather than as having a trauma disorder. Incorrect diagnosis results in the provision of the wrong psychiatric medication and the wrong type of psychotherapy, exacerbating, rather than ameliorating, the abuse survivor's psychological pain.

Sauer's Union-Tribune article of September 24, 2000, "A Web Of Intrigue" may be the best example of his strange agenda to discredit victims of ritual abuse and their advocates. Sauer paints "Karen Curio Jones", who researched the ritual abuse archive discussed above, and who has posted her concerns about ritual crime on the internet, as a dangerous "cyberstalker". Yet, Sauer quotes Detective Susan McCrary about "Jones": "She hasn't made any physical threats. Everything's been done in a public forum" (San Diego State Police Department). Sauer writes, "Who is Curio and why is she saying such nasty things about us on the Internet?" "Us" refers to:

1) Mark Sauer

2) Carol Hopkins, Deputy Foreperson for the 1991-1992 San Diego Grand Jury Report No. 8 "Child Sexual Abuse, Assault, and Molest Issues". That report was criticized in the 1992-1993 San Diego Grand Jury Report as not being "in the best interest of threatened children", as misrepresenting facts, and as having caused a dramatic decline in the number of children removed from abusive and neglectful homes in San Diego County, while these numbers climbed in other California

counties.

3) Elizabeth Loftus, Ph.D., an outspoken proponent of the "False Memory Syndrome", which is not recognized as a disorder by the majority of mental health professionals. Two formal complaints were lodged with the American Psychological Association (APA) in December, 1995, against Loftus alleging that she deliberately misrepresented facts in her published statements about two legal cases involving delayed memories, a serious breach of professional ethics. Loftus resigned from the APA a month later, claiming her resignation was unrelated to the complaints.

4) Michael Aquino, publicly self-proclaimed Satanist and founder and high priest of the "Temple of Set" (official website at: http://www.xeper.org/). In 1987, Aquino was investigated by the United States Army's Criminal Investigation Division (CID) in a case of alleged child abuse at the Child Development Center at the Presidio Army Base in San Francisco. CID issued a report, titled it, and admitted to the record. Michael Aquino sued the army, "seeking to amend the Army's criminal investigation report and recover damages", contending that decisions "were tainted by consideration of the irrelevant factor of his Satanist religious beliefs" (this example illustrates why allegations of ritual abuse are generally omitted from charges and prosecution of child abuse, as explained above). The court denied Aquino's motions to amend the files, concluding that "there was sufficient evidence from which the Army decision-maker could determine that probable cause existed to believe that [Aquino] committed the offenses" (reference: Aquino vs. Stone 768 F. Supp.529; and p. 4. Other Altars: Roots and Realities of Cultic and Satanic Ritual Abuse and Multiple Personality Disorder, 1993, Minneapolis, Minnesota; CompCare Publishers).

An August 20, 1998 "San Diego Reader" article, "The Memory Wars", describes a social relationship between Mark Sauer, Carol Hopkins and Elizabeth Loftus. Sauer should not publish articles such as "A Web of Intrigue" when he feels personally attacked by one of the players, and is on a friendly basis with her opponents. He cannot be unbiased, and in so doing, he fails in his responsibility to the public and abuses his power as a reporter.

Ellen Lacter, Ph.D., submitted an opinion piece to the San Diego Union-Tribune on September 29, 2002, objecting to the premises in Sauer's September 24, 2000, article, "A Web Of Intrigue". The newspaper did not respond and the opinion piece was not published. It is posted on the world-wide web at: http://truthbeknown2000.tripod.com/Truth...

Similarly, on June 16, 1994, the San Diego Union-Tribune published an article entitled; "Chasing Satan in Sacramento", blatantly ridiculing legislation proposed by California State Senator Newton Russell, SB 1997, which "sought to add three years to the sentence of anyone convicted of molesting a child "as part of a ceremony, rite or any similar observance." This law was scaled down and became

law in 1995 as section 667.83 of the California Penal Code, and was subsequently repealed. Ellen Lacter, Ph.D., immediately wrote a letter to the Editor of the San Diego Union Tribune objecting to Sauer's article. Her letter was not published. There was no response from the newspaper except a letter from Mark Sauer disagreeing with her points.

On September 21, 2002, the San Diego Union-Tribune published another Sauer article, "Abuse or Unfounded Fear", with his typical agenda of arguing that ritual crime does not exist. Sauer objected to two workshops on ritual abuse being included at a Family Violence conference in San Diego on September 25 to 28, 2002 with over 150 presentations.

Between 16 and 20 people wrote letters to the Editor of the San Diego Union-Tribune providing the "Ritual abuse exists" perspective. None of the articles were published. Many of these letters were diverted to Sauer, who responded with his typical points. It is unknown whether the letters editor read either the many writer's letters or Sauer's responses.

In theory, there should be an ethical wall between the editorial function of the newspaper and the news function. This was breached by referring the letters to the editor to Sauer. The writers did not address their letters to Sauer and did not intend for him to read or respond to them. The writers intended the letters to be considered by the editorial department for publication. The writers did not wish to engage in a dialogue with Sauer. Rather, they wished to engage in a public dialogue concerning ritual abuse in a letters-to-the-editor section of the newspaper.

Some of the letters to the editor were critical of Sauer's impartiality regarding the subject of ritual abuse, and were written to draw this to the attention of the editors. To refer the letters to Sauer for a response, rather than investigating and acting on the complaints of biased reporting, is an abdication of responsibility. It is the duty of the newspaper to publish unbiased accounts of the news. Where bias occurs, the newspaper must take steps to eliminate it.

The Union-Tribune's long history of suppressing views of ritual abuse that differ from those of Mark Sauer is very troubling. We live in a diverse community where people have different views on many matters of public interest. One of the main forums for discussion of differing views is the letters-to-the-editor section of the newspaper. In San Diego, the newspaper market is dominated by the Union-Tribune. When the Union-Tribune refuses to permit expression of differing views on controversial matters, it is not fulfilling an important part of its mission. Sauer is not entitled to express his views free from scrutiny and public comment. By refusing to print any of these letters to the editor, the newspaper is allowing Sauer's views to go unchallenged. This failure takes on great importance in subjects such as ritual crime, which effect the safety of the public.

Many of the letters to the editor in September, 2002, were critical of comments made by Paul Pfingst, incumbent District Attorney who is being challenged for office in the November election in what appears to be a close race. Pfingst's comments appear to be thinly veiled threats of action by law enforcement against psychotherapists who treat and teach about treatment of victims of ritual abuse. The Union-Tribune should have expressed grave concern that a candidate for District Attorney implied that there is something illegal about teaching treatment for ritual trauma. Instead, the Union-Tribune remained silent. What is worse, they permitted Pfingst's comments to go unchallenged by failing to print the many letters to the editor which disagreed with Pfingst. It is not responsible journalism to publish statements by a candidate for public office as news, and then not permit opposing viewpoints to be published as well.

C. Civil Grand Jury of San Diego County

Two reports by the San Diego County Civil Grand Jury have also had dire consequences for victims of ritual abuse.

1. 1991-1992 Grand Jury Report No. 8 "Child Sexual Abuse, Assault, and Molest Issues". This report, for which Carol Hopkins was Deputy Foreperson, states that, "The Jury found that there is no physical evidence of satanic ritual child abuse in San Diego County. There is evidence and considerable professional testimony that the existence of satanic ritual abuse is a contemporary myth perpetuated by a small number of social workers, therapists, and law enforcement members who have effected an influence which far belies their numbers". The report also states; "The Grand Jury is aware that the Department of Social Services has reevaluated the investigative protocols on ritual and satanic abuse. The social worker who investigated in this area has been reassigned and the Ritual Abuse report is no longer being distributed by the Commission on Children and Youth. This is as it should be." (see: http://www.co.san-diego.ca.us/cnty/cntyd...

A 1992-1993 (June 29, 1993) San Diego Civil Grand Jury Report entitled, "Protect the Child, Preserve the Family Report", strongly criticized the 1991-1992 Grand Jury Report No. 8 as not being "in the best interest of threatened children", as misrepresenting facts, and as having caused a dramatic decline in the number of children removed from abusive and neglectful homes in San Diego County, while these numbers climbed in other California counties. The 1992-1993 report also cited preliminary evidence of an increase in infants' and children's deaths caused by abuse and neglect in San Diego County following the 1991-1992 Grand Jury report, although the numbers were too small for statistical analysis.

2. June 1, 1994, Grand Jury Report No. 7a; "Analysis of Child Molestation Issues". This report is prefaced with a letter to the San Diego County Board of Supervisors that begins with, "In December of 1993 the 1993/94 San Diego County Grand Jury received a number of requests to investigate the prosecution of the Dale Akiki

case. One of these requests was from a member of the Board of Supervisors and subsequently caused the entire Board of Supervisors to unanimously vote to appropriate a supplemental budget for the Grand Jury to prepare a report on child molestation prosecutions within the criminal justice system." This Grand Jury investigation "found no evidence of satanic ritual child molestation in San Diego County." It concluded; "There is no justification for the further pursuit of the theory of satanic ritual child molestation in the investigation and prosecution of child sexual abuse cases." Among the recommendations to the District Attorney's office are:"94/47: "Discontinue the use of the Interagency Investigative Team Protocol developed by the MV/MP Ritualistic Abuse Task Force in December 1990", and, "#94/50: Refrain from the use of the theoretical concept of satanic ritual child molestation as the basis of criminal prosecutions." http://www.co.san-diego.ca.us/cnty/cntyd...

Mark Sauer refers to the findings of the 1994 report in his article, "Chasing Satan in Sacramento".

Early in the summer of 2002, the San Diego Civil Grand Jury web-page listed all reports since 1997 or 1998, and only a few prior to 1997. The earlier reports included the two reports arguing against the existence of ritual abuse, that is, the 1991-1992 Report No. 8 "Child Sexual Abuse, Assault, and Molest Issues", for which Carol Hopkins was Deputy Foreperson, and the June 1, 1994, Grand Jury Report No. 7a; "Analysis of Child Molestation Issues".

The Grand Jury website did not list the 1992-1993 Grand Jury Report, "Protect the Child, Preserve the Family Report", that strongly criticized the 1991-1992 report, "Child Sexual Abuse, Assault, and Molest Issues" as not being "in the best interest of threatened children".

Ellen Lacter, Ph.D. telephoned the Grand Jury phone number posted on the web-site in late Spring, 2002, and spoke to a woman who said she was the head of the Grand Jury. Dr. Lacter explained her concern about 1991-1992 Report No. 8 being included on the site, while the 1992-1993 report critical of that report was omitted. The individual she spoke with was very receptive and said she would look into this. Dr. Lacter re-checked the site in September, 2002. Sadly, the 1991-1992 Report No. 8, "Child Sexual Abuse, Assault, and Molest Issues", remains published: http://www.co.san-diego.ca.us/cnty/cntyd... but the 1992-1993 report is nowhere on the site.

This selective posting of these Grand Jury reports suggests that individuals with influence within the Grand Jury or other County agencies continue to support both the 1991-1992 report and its foreperson, Carol Hopkins, in spite of the fact that the Grand Jury itself determined in 1992-1993 that the 1991-1992 report misrepresented the truth and posed a danger to children.

On July 25, 2002, Carol Hopkins, filed a formal complaint to the San Diego County Civil Grand Jury "regarding any County funds or support for the 7th International Conference on Family Violence" due to the inclusion of presentations on ritual abuse, dissociation, and parental alienation syndrome.

In her complaint, Carol Hopkins, presented her views on the issue of ritual abuse. She accused Dr. Lacter, a presenter for the workshop, "Psychotherapy with Ritual Abuse Survivors" of participating in "a shared delusion". Hopkins, referring to Dr. Lacter's website, wrote; "This is homegrown hysteria, promulgated by Ellen Lacter but fed by county dollars" (Dr. Lacter's website is http://truthbeknown2000.tripod.com/Truth... Hopkins ends her letter stating, "It is my belief that if you consult the FBI or district attorney Paul Pfingst he will confirm the fact that there have been no confirmed cases of Satanic Ritual Abuse either in San Diego County or elsewhere".

On September 12, 2002, the conference main sponsor (the Family Violence and Sexual Assault Institute (FVSAI)) informed the ritual abuse workshop presenters that San Diego County Grand Jury members had contacted them to request passes to the 7th International Conference on Family Violence and would be attending the two workshops on ritual abuse to "check them out".

Grand Jury members did attend these two workshops on September 25, 2002.

The Grand Jury "checking out" these two workshops raise a number of concerns:

1. The Grand Jury has very questionable jurisdiction over workshops presented at an international conference. The San Diego County Grand Jury website states that it is "to serve as a sentinel a group of impartial citizens that can review the methods and operations of the County of San Diego" (http://www.co.san-diego.ca.us/cnty/cntyd... This conference is not a county function. The county does not fund this conference.

2. The Grand Jury has no grounds to interfere with academic freedom and free speech.

3. The Grand Jury should question the motives of a complaint by Carol Hopkins, since the Grand Jury report for which she was Deputy Foreperson (no. 8 in 1991-1992) was found to misrepresent the facts in a subsequent Grand Jury report (1992-1993).

4. Carol Hopkins, in her complaint to the Grand Jury, states, "It is my belief that if you consult the FBI or District Attorney Paul Pfingst he will confirm the fact that there have been no confirmed cases of Satanic Ritual Abuse either in San Diego County or elsewhere". Hopkins suggests interested parties contact Paul Pfingst (as she did in the summer of 2002 when she attempted to interfere with San Diego

Pastoral Counseling Center providing a class, "Ritualistic Abuse: The Healing Journey with Survivors of Ritualistic Abuse"). Hopkins freely bandies Pfingst's name around as an ally. Has Pfingst abused his political power to pressure the Grand Jury to "check out" these workshops? The Grand Jury is not an arm of the District Attorney's office. In fact, the Grand Jury has the authority to investigate the functioning of the office of the District Attorney.

Interest in protecting San Diego County financially may have influenced the Grand Jury to "check out" these classes. As discussed above, San Diego County has had a huge price to pay in financial damages for its prior involvement in claims of ritual abuse. But, of course, safety of crime victims cannot be sacrificed to these concerns. And good public policy, protocols, and legislation can be established to reduce the risk of lawsuits.

See Part II

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/95607 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

Call for Policy to Increase Protection for Victims of Ritual Abuse in San Diego, Part II

Author: **Ellen P. Lacter, Ph.D.**
Published on: **October 6, 2002**

D. Children's Service's Bureau and the Treatment, Evaluation, and Resource Management (TERM) Team

Many Children's Services Bureau (CSB) (formerly Child Protective Services) social workers and investigators know that ritual abuse occurs and are appropriately concerned in response to reports of suspected ritual abuse. Reports to the Children's Services Bureau are automatically filed with the law enforcement agency in the jurisdiction.

Nonetheless, since the mid-1990s, reports of suspected ritual abuse to CSB by mandated child abuse reporters have tended to be discounted or not investigated by CSB and law enforcement. In some cases, mandated reporters have been harshly criticized for making these reports. No additional detail can be provided here due to concerns for therapist-patient confidentiality, concerns for the safety of the ritual abuse victims, and the desire for anonymity by the reporting therapists.

Pressure to avoid reports of suspected ritual abuse has been brought to bear on CSB from the San Diego County Grand Jury reports (no. 8 and 1994), negative reports on CSB from the San Diego Union-Tribune, and from County agencies that seek to avoid financial losses stemming from lawsuits against the County based on County responses to ritual abuse cases.

One case of alleged ritual abuse resulted in a judgment for $750,000 against the city of Escondido (San Diego County). The Escondido police took two children into protective custody following a suspected report of ritual abuse. The children's parents filed a lawsuit in 1992 against Escondido police, county social workers, and a physician for violating their constitutional rights to be free from "unreasonable intrusions on their privacy, person and home." On November 2, 2000, Mark Sauer wrote in the San Diego Union-Tribune that the children's parents won a judgment against the city of Escondido. A lawsuit remained against the three individual police officers who picked up the children (Article: http://www.holysmoke.org/wicca/san-diego...

This judgment against the city of Escondido binds the hands of CSB. Cities and CSB are placed at significant financial risk every time parents can make a case in court that a child taken into protective custody was probably not abused. To guard against financial damages from lawsuits for taking children into protective custody in the case of false positives (findings of abuse when no abuse occurred), no action will be taken to protect children in thousands of cases of false negatives (findings of no abuse when abuse is in fact occurring)! CSB experiences the greatest pressure to avoid false negatives in cases of the most controversial form of abuse; ritual abuse.

In September of 2000, an important official at Children's Services Bureau (name withheld) said; "Years ago, we had a lot of stuff written about it [ritual abuse]. Right now, we have nothing. I think what happened with the county was that there was a big lawsuit about a ritual abuse case. We had a person considered an expert, but she left the agency." This official also said that clinicians in the community no longer make reports of ritual abuse to the Child Abuse Hotline.

Between the mid-1980s and late 1994, the San Diego County Juvenile Court served the function of approving therapists to treat Juvenile Court Dependency cases. The June 1, 1994 San Diego County Grand Jury Report recommended that the Juvenile Court; "Monitor all CAPF therapists to guard against possible liability suits due to their culpability in administering care." (CAPF stands for "court-appointed, publically funded therapists").

In late 1994, the County Board of Supervisors transferred responsibility for monitoring CAPF therapists from the Juvenile Court to a "Treatment, Evaluation, and Resource Management (TERM) Team. The TERM Team was essentially mandated to perform two functions that are sometimes in conflict; 1) Ensure good practice by clinicians treating and evaluating Juvenile Court cases, and, 2) Ensure clinicians do nothing that could result in lawsuits or embarrassment to county agencies. The greatest risk of embarrassment and lawsuits exists in treating and evaluating cases involving possible ritual abuse. In one case, a mandated reporter came under intense scrutiny of the TERM Team simply for making a report of suspected ritual abuse and trying to get law enforcement to take the report seriously.

Therapists treating victims of ritual abuse are in a terrible bind. They can choose to report suspected ritual abuse and face harassment by CSB, the TERM Team, the District Attorney's office, the Grand Jury, the San Diego Union-Tribune, and also risk possible complaints by public agencies to their licensing boards. Or, they can not report the suspected abuse and thereby violate the Child Abuse Reporting Law.

CSB also unfortunately appears to have colluded in a serious conflict of interests in early 1996 with Carol Hopkins, Deputy Foreperson for the strongly-criticized 1991-1992 No. 8 Grand Jury Report, as follows.

In the mid-1990's, Hopkins created what she called "the Justice Committee". Under these vague auspices, she interjected herself into the Wenatchee, Washington, sex ring case to organize multiple protests on behalf of parents convicted of sex crimes against their own and other children, including an apple boycott of Washington in 1995 and a candlelight vigil in Salem, Massachusetts in 1997.

After the apple boycott, Hopkins obtained guardianship in her San Diego home of "Sam" Doggett, teen-age daughter of Mark and Carol Doggett, both convicted at trial of sexual abuse of Sam's younger sister in the Wenatchee case. Moving a child from Washington to the San Diego home of someone attempting to overturn the parents' convictions is a dangerous conflict of interest that should not have been permitted by San Diego CSB.

Sauer documented in a San Diego Union-Tribune article on 6-18-96 that once Sam Doggett resided with Hopkins, 17-year-old Doggett joined Hopkins, Akiki, and others in multiple media events, claiming her parents were innocent and touting the positions of Hopkins' 'Justice Committee'. The convictions of Mark and Carol Doggett were later successfully overturned.

On Dr. Lacter's website, "Karen Curio Jones" writes the following; "Ms. Hopkins then claimed [in 2000] on the Witchhunt list that Ivory Johnson, the ex-director of Child Protective Services in San Diego County, personally monitored this placement, and Ms. Hopkins refused to have a home study" (see: http://truthbeknown2000.tripod.com/Truth... The "Witchhunt List" is an e-group: Witchhunt@egroups.com

A home study is an evaluation of the suitability and safety of a family and home as a foster-placement. There is no justification for the then-director of Child Protective Services (now CSB) to dispense with the normal procedure of a conducting a home study of a placement of an out-of-state child, especially in a case involving such a serious conflict of interests. Important questions must be asked about how this was allowed to occur.

E. Law Enforcement

Law enforcement officers are generally very committed to their work, and are particularly devoted to protecting abused children. Most law enforcement officers in San Diego and elsewhere acknowledge on a one-to-one basis that they have investigated crimes with occult elements and have encountered ritual crime victims and scenes.

Yet, law enforcement agencies in San Diego experience the same types of pressure as child protective agencies to side-step reports of suspected ritual abuse. Great pressure has been brought to bear from the aforementioned San

Diego County Grand Jury reports (no. 8 and 1994) and lawsuits, as in the costly suit against Escondido described above. Local law enforcement detectives and higher police officials have stated that they "cannot investigate" reports of ritual abuse "because of Akiki".

Law enforcement is also affected by negative media attention on officers investigating occult crimes. In Mark Sauer's September 21, 2002 article, "Abuse or Unfounded Fear", he ridicules "two San Diego police detectives, who also subscribed to the ritual-abuse theory, that the murderous cult was operating out of a Clairemont area church."

Sauer also stated in the same article; "The detectives requisitioned bulldozers and prepared to excavate church grounds before police brass stepped in and halted the unlikely investigation." Detectives can have no incentive to investigate reports of ritual crimes when their superiors halt their investigations.

F. Family Court

Family court judges, Family Court Services, mediators, attorneys, and psychologists performing custody evaluations, have all been affected by negative media attention and political pressure to avoid reports of ritual abuse. Protective parents who have reason to believe that a co-parent ritually abused their children are routinely advised by their attorneys to say nothing about this to the court or evaluators or they run the risk of being viewed as crazy and losing custody of their children. Custody has been lost on this basis in the San Diego Family Court.

II. Goal: Call for Policy to Increase Protection for Victims of Ritual Abuse

The San Diego public, ritual abuse survivors, the mental health community, child protective agencies, law enforcement agencies, the district attorney's office, the Grand Jury, and legislators need to work together to create a county and state where victims or ritual crime can begin to be protected. There is no ritual abuse law on the books in California now. Laws will be needed to adapt to the special circumstances in investigating and prosecuting cases of ritual abuse and to protect individuals and agencies from lawsuits as they do this work.

Four critical starting points toward these objectives in San Diego County are:

1. A county policy that reports of ritual abuse will be investigated by San Diego County law enforcement agencies, Children's Services Bureau (CSB), and the District Attorney's office.

2. A county policy that the District Attorney's office, CSB, and the TERM Team, will support mandated reporters in filing Suspected Child Abuse Reports of ritual abuse.

3. A San Diego county policy of not interfering with the academic freedom to teach about ritual abuse and treatment of ritual trauma.

4. The convening of a task force to study the problem of ritual crime and to develop an interagency coordinated response.

It is time for San Diego County to review its position regarding reports of ritual abuse. To accomplish this, many segments of the community must join together and support each other in much-needed reform.

URL: http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/6554/95608 Suite101.com Inc. <www.suite101.com>

The European Roots of the Illuminati

Author: **Svali**
Published on: **October 6, 2002**

Until recently, I have mainly written about programming and methods to work through and attempt to resolve it. But as I am working on my own healing, I am coming to realize that while breaking programming is important (and often life-saving), that eventually it becomes important to deal with core issues. Core issues go beneath and behind programming, and often not only drive it, but sabotage the therapy process as the survivor attempts to heal.

These issues will be different for each survivor, since we each have a unique history. I have received emails from survivors from around the world, and have found that: *The Illuminati is certainly not the only occult group in the world; there are many other well-organized groups that do methodic, repetitive abuse of an occult nature. But in these groups, often the core issues are different than for the Illuminati *Even within the Illuminati, each individual will need to discover their own personal history, since parentage, bloodlines, and programming methods will differ, as well as the child's eventual role in the group. This article is not meant to address all methods, or all survivor's histories in the group.

I can't speak for everyone who was abused in the group; I can only speak of what I myself am discovering about my own personal history, in the hopes that it will help other survivors through either validation, or to help supporters better understand some of the issues that they face during the process of remembering and healing.

The Illuminati are based in Europe, which is where their power base has always been. I remember being told as a young child that America was basically considered their "mission field" or the "land of opportunity" by those whose roots extend for hundreds of years or more into the ancient European dynastic bloodlines.

This is why their power hierarchy around the world, whether in the U.S., Asia, Australia, Canada, or elsewhere will always point back to Europe, where the 13 rulers (they also call them "lords") are based. Each ruler represents an area of Europe held under his sway; and each one represents an ancient dynastic bloodline.

For example, the Hapsburg bloodline (Merovingian) is still active in Europe, although hidden, as well as the Rothschild and Battenberg bloodlines . In many modern European countries, the heirs of these bloodlines are immensely wealthy, and secretly are the “power behind the throne”, if not the actual rulers.

This is one reason why those of high Illuminati rank/descent in the U.S., for example, can always trace their bloodline or parentage to members of this ruling cabal in Europe; members of leadership councils in the States are always direct descendants, whether legitimate or illegitimate.

Whether at the lowest levels, or the highest, though, this group operates with the same methods: instilling intense fear and terror to control their members. Often this is done through the fear of death, and at the core level, the person who has undergone their training will have an immense fear of dying because of the “death and resurrection” experiences, or near death experiences, that they have undergone.

During these experiences, the very young child or even infant core will be faced with intolerable choices: to allow themselves to be extinguished, or to embrace the demonic and the beliefs of those in their bloodline parentage. I believe this is dissociation at its deepest level, since the desire to survive is one of the deepest instincts that God has given us, and will override intellect, cognition, and even well-thought out beliefs in an adult-much less in a very young child. When faced with certain death and terror, or life, albeit at a price that is much too high, the infant or child almost always chooses life (I have never heard of one that hasn’t to date, although my own knowledge and experience are limited).

Then the one who offers life to the infant becomes their “savior”, and worshipped virtually as a deity in the child’s mind and heart for “saving” them in one of the most wicked set ups imaginable.

In many cases, this is one of the child’s parents, and most often, their biological father. The biological father may not be the person that the child consciously remembers raising them during childhood; and once again, this encourages deep dissociation: the consciously remembered “Daddy” may not be the survivor’s real father.

Identity confusion is also layered in. The name the child goes by during the daytime may be quite different from their “real” name, or even the name on their birth certificate. A child of high lineage may discover that they weren’t born in the United States, but in Europe, if the ties to the European bloodlines are great enough; or even that their American birth certificate was forged, to cover their European one.

Each situation is different, and different bloodlines practice different methods of raising, mentoring, and training their offspring. For instance, those of German

descent may be taken to Germany, and spend time with those of this bloodline learning the ways of this country, and developing a loyalty to what they consider their “true homeland”, before going back to another country to live under a different identity. Because above all else, children are called back to their European roots at frequent intervals to develop loyalty to their family home and name, and to undergo ceremonies meant to instill terror and ongoing cooperation, alternated with loving bonding experiences meant to instill deep love for the parental figures.

A child may live in Japan, but they will always know that their true home is in Germany or France; the child in Canada may know that their true home is the U.K., or Russia, and the child in the U.S. will long to return to “home” in Europe with the loyalty that is instilled, whether “home” is Germany, Bavaria, France, Moscow, the UK, Spain, or another country ruled by one of the 13.

This terror, this training, and the bonds of not only loyalty, but caring and nurturing that the child experienced through their true parentage, are often the most difficult and insidious to break. Deep terror combined with loving rescue and nurture create deep loyalty through trauma bonding, and breaking these ties at the core level is the most difficult task that many survivors face.

My prayer is that by explaining some, it can help others know that this does occur, which is the first step to uncovering it and working on it. I believe that deep prayer and support from others are the only methods of both uncovering these ties, and of breaking their hold. I am still working on these issues, and welcome others to share their experiences of undoing the hold of loyalty at this core level to the original perpetrators, and of breaking the spiritual and emotional ties to them. I will be more than happy to publish here anonymously any articles on this topic, as an encouragement to others who are breaking ties to the power centers in Europe. Because, ultimately, these men must lose in their bid for power. Scripture tells us that there is only one king on the throne: Jesus Christ, and that eventually, even the European roots of the Illuminati and their coming “prince” or antichrist, will be cut down, when Christ reigns over the earth.

Blessings to you, Svali

REICH OF THE BLACK SUN

NAZI SECRET WEAPONS & THE COLD WAR ALLIED LEGEND

JOSEPH P. FARRELL

PART ONE:
GOTTERDAMMERUNG

1. A BADLY WRITTEN FINALE 3
2. ELECTRICITY, SLAVES, AND ,,BUNA" 25
3. U-234, U^{235}, AND THE STRANGE CASE OF THE MISSING URANIUM 53
4. MEIN HUT ER HAT DREI ECKEN": THE TEST SITES 66
A. An Unusual Exchange at Nuremberg 66
B. A Marshal, Mussolini, and the First Alleged Test Site at Rugen Island 70
C. The Three Corners(Dreiecken) and the Alleged Test at the Troop Parade Ground at Ohrdruf 80
5. STRANGE MAPS, STRANGE FLIGHTS, AND UNKNOWN CARGOES 89
A. The Oberkommando der Luftwaffe's Unusual Map 90
B. Strange Flights 90
C. Unknown Cargoes and a Curious Airfield 93
6. THE STRANGE CASE OF THE DISAPPEARING GENERALS: SS OBERGRUPPENFUHRER DR. ING. HANS KAMMLER AND GENERAL GEORGE S. PATTON 99
A. Introduction: The Rediscovery of the SS Sonderkommando, Kammler, and a Brush with "The Legend" 100
B. The Four Deaths of SS Obergruppenfurhrer Dr. Ing. Hans Kammler 107
C. The Ironic Death of General George S. Patton 110
D. The Kammler SS Sonderkommando Secret Weapons Empire 114
7. THE HONORARY ARYAN BRETHREN 117
A. Strange Rumors 119
B. Strange Industrial Complexes: Kammler Revisited, Noguchi Style 122
8. THE HEERESWAFFENAMT AND HOUTERMANS MEMORANDA 130
9. POPENSPIEL BEI FARM HALL AND OTHER FARCES 140
10. GATEWAY TO THE BLACK SUN: CONCLUSIONS TO PART ONE 154

PART TWO:
THE MYTH OF SURVIVAL AND THE REALITY OF PAPERCLIP

11. THE BLACK ORDER: THE OCCULT INFLUENCE ON NAZI SECRET WEAPONS 161
A. Some Necessary Definitions 162

B. Into the Labyrinth of the Beast 165
C. The Black Sun, thc Cclcstial Swastika, and Other SS Connections 172
D. The Will to Power as the Paradigm of "Occulted Science and Nazi Secret Weapons Programs 178
12. THE ALCHEMY OF ATLANTIS: AN INVENTORY OK NAZI SECRET WEAPONS AND THEIR HISTORICAL PROBLEMATIC 181
A. The Missiles 183
B. Prototypical Stealth (Radar Absorbent) Materials 184
C. Computers 187
D. The "Superbombs" 189
1. The "Molecular" Bomb: The Hydrogen Bomb? 190
2. The Fuel-Air Bomb 191
E. The Historical Problematic 193
1. The Cold War 193
2. The Alchemy of Atlantis: the "Mission Brief of the Kammlerstab 194
3. Whose Military-Industrial Complex? 195
13. QUANTUM NUMEROLOGY AND VORTICULAR PHYSICS, NAZI STYLE 196
A. Gravity, Vortices, and Quantum Numerology 198
B. Disks, Boundary Layer, and Turbines 200
C. Viktor Schauberger: Rotational Physics and Extreme Temperature Gradients 206
D. "Death Rays": An Unusual Installation at the University of Heidelberg 221
E. Indications of Zero Point Energy and Scalar Physics Experimentation 226

PART THREE:
AFTERMATH

14. THE ANTARCTIC SIIANGRI-LA 238
A. The Antarctic Survival Myth 240
B. The Neuschwabenland Expedition 249
C. Spitzbcrgen, Greenland, and Artic Canada: The Other German Polar Survival Myth 255
15. THE PHOENIX RISES: THE BORMANN PLAN 263
A. Bormann's Special Evacuation Command and the Link to the Kammlerstab 269
B. Paperclip, Compartmentalization, and Capitalization 271
16. ROSWELL: THE "E.T. MYTH" VS. THE "NAZI LEGEND": AN EXAMINATION OF SOME MJ-12 DOCUMENTS 274
A Introductory Remarks 274

B. The Similarity of Evidence for Roswell and the "Nazi Legend"
An Examination of Some MJ-12 Documents 274
C. The Majic-12 Documents: The ET Myth vs the Nazi legend 281
1. The "White Hot Intelligence Estimate" of General Nathan Twining 285
(a) Odd Language of a General Nature Describing the UFO Phenomenon and Its Area and Types of Activity 286
(b) Technical Language that Describes Something Simultaneously Both Very Advanced, yet Very Commonplace 287
2. The 16 July 1947 Air Accident Report by General Nathan Twining to Headquarters 303
D.Russians, Terrorists, Asteroids, and Aliens: The Rosin Affidavit 318
E. An Unlikely Source: Benito Mussolini's Secret RS/33 UFO-Marconi Study Group: The Original Italian "MJ-12" Documents 319
17. THE KECKSBURG ACORN RINGS THE BELL 331
A. The "Bell" 331
B. The UFO Crash and Retrieval at Kecksburg, Pennsylvania, December 1965 335
C. Analysis 339
18. FINAL THOUGHTS 345
APPENDIX: A SHORT NOTE ON THE KRAFTSTRAHLKANNONE 349

Preface

When I was a boy, oddities fascinated me, particularly if they appeared to make no sense. Historical oddities or anomalous news stories especially attracted my interest, lingering in my mind for years to come. Like many Americans, I well remember where I was when President Kennedy was assassinated. I was home, sick, and watching television, sipping an endless stream of the chicken noodle soup that my mother always made for me when I was ill. My mother sat on the sofa, sewing and watching her shows. Then, the programs were interrupted by the familiar voice of Walter Cronkite, and the news began to break. Like many children in America, I cried that night.

A year or so later when the Warren Report was published and excerpted in almost every newspaper in the country, I remember thinking "bullets just don't do that." And I listened intently as family members debated the official conclusions of Oswald, the "lone nut" in his Texas School Book Depository, versus what was beginning to emerge with the "Grassy Knoll."

As a teenager I became fascinated with the history of World War Two, and particularly the European theater and the race for the atomic bomb. Physics was also an interest for me, and another oddity lodged in my mind as I read the standard histories: the United States had never tested the uranium bomb it dropped on Hiroshima. I thought that was an extremely odd oddity indeed. It seemed to have the same sharp angles and corners as the Warren Commission's "magic bullet". It just didn't fit. Other odd facts accumulated over the years as if to underline the strangeness of the war's end in general and that fact in particular.

Then, in 1989, the Berlin Wall came down and the two post-war Germanies raced toward reunification. The events seemed to unfold faster than the news media's ability to keep pace. I remember that day too, for I was driving with a friend in his van in Manhattan. My friend was Russian, as was his family, some of

whom were veterans of the harsh conflict on the Russian front. We listened to the reports on the radio with a kind og breathlessness and anxiety. My friend lurried to me and said "Now it will start to come out in the wash." I nodded in agreement. We had often discussed what would happen in the eventuality of German reunification, and were agreed that many things from the end of the war would begin to surface, answering old questions and raising new ones. Our long talks about World War Two had convinced us that there was much about the war that did not make sense, Hitler's and Stalin's genocidal paranoia notwithstanding.

Gradually, and one must say, predictably, the Germans themselves raced to uncover what lay hidden in the formerly inaccessible archival vaults of East Germany and the Soviet Union. Witnesses came forward, and German authors endeavored to come to grips with yet another aspect of the darkest period in their nation's history. Much, if not all, of their work remains ignored in the U.S.A., both by mainstream and by alternative researchers.

This present book is based in part on these Germans' efforts. It, like them, raises dangerous questions, and often presents dangerous and disturbing answers. As a consequence, while the Nazi regime's "image" becomes even more blackened, the image of the victorious Allies also suffers to a great degree. This book presents not only a radically different history of the race for the bomb, but also outlines a case that Germany was making enormous strides toward acquisition of a whole host of second and third and even fourth generation weapons technologies even more horrific in their destructive power.

That in itself would not be too unusual. After all, there have been a wealth of books on World War Two German secret weapons projects and their astonishing results. Those seeking new technical data on these weapons will find some new material here, for the thrust of the book is not on the weapons per se. Rather, the present work seeks a context within Nazi ideology and in some aspects of contemporary theoretical physics for these projects. This book argues that the Nazis' quest for this barbarous arsenal of prototypical "smart weapons" and weapons of mass destruction was intimately linked to the Nazi racial and genocidal ideology and

war aims, to the machinery, bureaucracy, and technologies of mass death and slavery that the Nazis had perfected. Even more darkly, this relationship points to a hidden core of occult beliefs and practices that, allied with certain very "German" advances in physics, e.g., quantum mechanics, drove their quest for ultimate weapons.

Accordingly, this is not a work of history. But neither is it a work merely of fiction. It is best described as a case of possibilities, of speculative history. It is an attempt to make sense, by means of a radical hypothesis placed within a very broad context, of events during and after the war that make no sense.

I would like to thank Mr. Frank Joseph of Fate magazine for encouraging me to write about these ideas, after he had patiently listened to me outline them while we were both attending a conference in 2003. And I would like to thank the many people - too numerous to mention - who listened, read, and critiqued the book along the way.

Joseph P. Farrell
Tulsa, Oklahoma

PART ONE:
GOTTERDAMMERUNG

"A comprehensive February 1942 (German) Army Ordnance report on the German uranium enrichment program includes the statement that the critical mass of a nuclear weapon lay between 10 and 100 kilograms of either uranium 235 or element 94.... In fact the German estimate of critical mass of 10 to 100 kilograms was comparable to the contemporary Allied estimate of 2 to 100.... The German scientists working on uranium neither withheld their figure for critical mass because of moral scruples nor did they provide an inaccurate estimate as the result of gross scientific error. "

Mark Walker, Nazi Science: Myth, Truth, and the German Atomic Bomb, p. 216.

1.

A Badly Written Finale

"In southern Germany, meanwhile, the American Third and Seventh and the French First Armies had been driving steadily eastward into the so-called 'National Redoubt'.... The American Third Army drove on into Czechoslovakia and by May 6 had captured Pilsen and Karlsbad and was approaching Prague."
F. Lee Benns, Europe Since 1914 In Its World Setting[1]

The end of the Second World War in Europe, at least as normally recounted, does not make sense, for in its standard form as learned in history books that history resembles nothing so much as a badly written finale to some melodramatic Wagnerian opera.

On a night in October 1944, a German pilot and rocket expert by the same of Hans Zinsser was flying his Heinkel 111 twin engine bomber in twilight over northern Germany, close to the Baltic coast in the province of Mecklenburg. He was flying at twilight to avoid the Allied fighter aircraft that at that time had all but undisputed mastery of the skies over Germany. Little did he know that what he saw that night would be locked in the vaults of the highest classification of the United States government for several decades after the war. And he certainly could not have been aware of the fact when his testimony finally was declassified near the end of the millennium, that what he saw would require the history of the Second World War to be rewritten, or at the very minimum, severely scrutinized. His observations on that one night on that one flight resolve at a stroke some of the most pressing questions and mysteries concerning the end of the war. By the same token, what he saw raises many more mysteries and questions, affording a brief and frightening glimpse into the labyrinthine world of Nazi secret weapons development. His observations open a veritable Pandora's

[1] F. Lee Benns, Europe Since 1914 In Its World Setting (New York: F.S. Crofts and co., 1946), p. 630.

box of horrifying research the Third Reich was conducting, research far more horrendous in its scope and terrible promise than mere atomic bombs. More importantly, his observations also raise the disturbing question of why the Allied governments - America in particular - kept so much classified for so long. What, really, did we recover from the Nazis at the end of the war?

But what precisely is that badly written finale?

To appreciate how badly written a finale it truly is, it is best to begin at the logical place: in Berlin, far below ground, in the last weeks of the war. There, in the bizarre and surreal world of the Fuhrerbunker, the megalomaniac German dictator huddles with his generals, impervious to the rain of Allied and Soviet bombs that are reducing the once beautiful city of Berlin to piles of rubble. Adolph Hitler, Chancellor and Fuhrer of the ever-diminishing Greater German Reich is in conference. His left arm shakes uncontrollably and from time to time he must pause to daub the drool that occasionally oozes from his mouth. His complexion is gray and pallid; his health, a shambles from the drugs his doctors inject in him. His glasses are perched on his nose as he squints at the map before him.[2]

Generaloberst[3] Heinrici, commander of the vastly outnumbered Army Group Vistula that faces the massed armies of Marshal Zhukov poised less than sixty miles from Berlin, is pleading with his leader for more troops. The general is questioning the disposition of the forces he sees displayed on the battle map, for it is clear to him that some of Germany's finest and few remaining battle worthy formations are far south, facing Marshal Koniev's forces in Silesia. These forces were thus, incomprehensibly, poised to make a stiff defense of Breslau and Prague, not Berlin. The general pleads for Hitler to release some of these forces and transfer them north, but

---

[2] Contributing yet another nuance to the end of the war Legend of Hitler's delusional insanity, some have proposed that the German dictator's doctors had diagnosed him with heart disease and/or Parkinson's disease, and were keeping him drugged at the behest of Msrs Bormann, Gobbels, Himmler et al. in a desperate attempt to keep him functioning.

[3] Generaloberst: i.e., Colonel General, the equivalent of a four star American general.

to no avail.

"Prague," the Fuhrer responds stubbornly, almost mystically, "is the key to winning the war." Generaloberts Heinrici's hard-pressed troops must "do without."[4]

One may also perhaps imagine Heinrici and the other assembled generals perhaps casting a doleful glance at Norway on the situation map, where thousands of German troops are still stationed, occupying a country that had long since ceased to be of any strategic or operational value to the defense of the Reich. Why indeed did Hitler maintain so many German troops in Norway up to the very end of the war?[5]

These paradoxical German troops deployments are the first mystery of the badly written finale of the war in Europe. Both Allied and German generals would ponder it after the war, and both would write it off to Hitler's insanity, a conclusion that would become part of the "Allied Legend" of the end of the war. This interpretation does make sense, for if one assumed that Hitler were having a rare seizure of sanity when he ordered these deployments, what possibly could he have been thinking? Prague? Norway? There were no standard or conventional military reasons for the deployments. In other words, the deployments themselves attest his complete lack of touch with military reality. He therefore had to have been quite insane.

But apparently his "delusional insanity" did not stop there. On more than one occasion during these end-of-the-war conferences with his generals in the Fuhrerbunker, he boasted that Germany would soon be in the possession of weapons that would snatch victory from the jaws of defeat at "five minutes past midnight." All

---

[4] They did in fact "do without" and yet managed to put up a fierce resistance against overwhelming odds in the initial stages of Zhukov's final offensive on Berlin.

[5] The standard versions, of course, are that he wished to maintain the supply line of iron ore from Sweden to Germany, and that he wished to continue to use the country as a base to interdict the lend-lease supply route to Russia. But by late 1944, with the huge losses of the German Kriegsmarine, these explanations no longer were militarily feasible, and hence do not make military sense. One must look for other reasons, if indeed there are any beyond Adolph Hitler's delusions.

the Wehrmacht had to do was hold out a bit longer. And above all, it must hold Prague and lower Silesia.

Of course, the standard historical interpretation of these and similar utterances by the Nazi leadership near the end of the war explains them - or rather, explains them away - by one of two standard techniques. One school understands them to refer to the more advanced versions of the V-l and V-2, and on rare occasions, the intercontinental A9/10 rockets, the jet fighters, anti-aircraft heat-seeking missiles, and so on that the Germans were developing. Sir Roy Fedden, one of the British Specialists sent to Germany to investigate Nazi secret weapons research after the war, left no doubt as to the deadly potential these developments held:

> In these respects (the Nazis) were not entirely lying. In the course of two recent visits to Germany, as leader of a technical mission of the Ministry of Aircraft Production, I have seen enough of their designs and production plans to realize that if they had managed to prolong the war some months longer, we would have been confronted with a set of entirely new and deadly developments in air warfare.[6]

The other standard school of interpretation explains such remarks of the Nazi leadership as the utterances of madmen desperate to prolong the war, and hence their lives, by stiffening the resistance of their exhausted armies. For example, to make the insanity gripping the Reich government complete, Hitler's ever-faithful toady and propaganda minister, Dr. Josef Gobbels also boasted in a speech near the end of the war that he had seen "weapons so frightening it would make your heart stand still." More delusional ravings of a Nazi madman.

But on the Allied side of the Allied Legend, things are equally peculiar. In March and April of 1945, US General George S. Patton's Third Army is literally racing across southern Bavaria, as fast as is operationally possible, making a beeline for:

(1) the huge Skoda munitions works at Pilsen, a complex all but

---

[6] Sir Roy Fedden, The Nazis' V-Wcapons Matured Too Late (London: 1945), cited in Renato Vesco and David Hatcher Childress, Man-Made UFOs: 1944-1994, p. 98.

blown off the map by Allied bombers;
(2) Prague; and
(3) A region of the Harz Mountains in Thuringia known to Germans as the Dreiecks or Three Corners," a region encompassed by the old mediaeval towns and villages of Arnstadt, Jonastal, Wechmar, and Ohrdruf.[7]

One is informed by countless history books that this maneuver was thought to be necessary by the Supreme Headquarters of the Allied Expeditionary Force (SHEAF) because of reports that the Nazis were planning to make a last stand in the "Alpine National Redoubt", a network of fortified mountains stretching from the Alps to the Harz Mountains. The Third Army's movements, so the story goes, were designed to cut off the "escape route" of Nazis fleeing the carnage of Berlin. Maps are produced in old history books, accompanied in some cases by de-classified German plans - some dating from the Weimar Republic! - for just such a redoubt. Case settled.

However, there is a problem with that explanation. Allied aerial reconnaissance would likely have told Eisenhower and SHAEF that there were precious few fortified strong points in the "National Redoubt". Indeed, it would have told them that the "Redoubt" was no redoubt at all. General Patton and his divisional commanders would most certainly have been privy to at least some of this information. So why the extraordinary and almost reckless speed of his advance, an advance the post-war Allied Legend would have us believe was to cut off the escape route of Nazis fleeing Berlin, who it turns out weren't fleeing, to a redoubt that didn't exist? The mystery deepens.

Then, remarkably, in a strange twist of fate, General Patton himself, America's most celebrated general, dies suddenly, and, some would say, suspiciously, as a result of complications from injuries he sustained in a freak automobile accident soon after the end of the war and the beginning of the Allied military occupation. For many, there is little doubt that Patton's death is suspicious. But

[7] Arnstadt is where the great German composer and organist J.S. Bach first began his career.

what of the explanations offered for it by those who do not think it was accidental? Some propose he was eliminated because of his remarks about turning the Germans "right back around" and letting them lead an Allied invasion of Russia. Others believe he was eliminated because he knew about the Allies' knowledge of the Soviets' execution of British, American, and French prisoners of war, and threatened to make it public. In any case, while Patton's barbed tongue and occasional outbursts are well known, his sense of military duty and obligation were far too high for him to have entertained such notions. These theories play out best, perhaps, on the internet or in the movies. And neither seems a sufficient motivation for the murder of America's most celebrated general. But then, if he was murdered, what was sufficient motivation?

Here too, the lone German pilot Hans Zinsser and his observations afford a speculative key as to the possibilities, if General Patton was murdered, of why he had to be silenced. Let us return, for a moment, to a less-well publicized explanation for his end-of-the war lightening-like strikes into south central Germany and into Bohemia:

> In Top Secret, Ralph Ingersoll, an American liaison officer at S.H.A.E.F., gives a version of the facts much more in line with German intentions: "(General Omar) Bradley was complete master of the situation.... in full command of the three armies that had broken through the Rhine defenses and were free to exploit their victories. Analyzing the whole situation, Bradley felt that to take battered Berlin would be an empty military victory.... The German War Department had long since moved out, leaving only a rear echelon. The main body of the German War Department, including its priceless archives, had been transferred to the Thuringian Forest..."[8]

But what exactly did Patton's divisions discover in Pilsen and the forests of Thuringia? Only with the recent German reunification and declassification of East German, British, and American documents are enough clues available to allow this fantastic story - and the reason for the post-war Allied Legend - to be outlined and its questions answered.

---

[8] Vesco and Childress, op. cit., p. 97.

Thus, finally, one arrives at the main theme of the post-war Allied Legend. As the Allied forces penetrated ever deeper into the German fatherland itself, teams of scientists and experts and their intelligence coordinators were sent in literally to scour the Reich for German patents, secret weapons research, and above all, to find out about the state of the German atomic bomb project.[9] Literally vacuuming the Reich of every conceivable technological development, this effort became the largest technology transfer in history. Even at this late stage of the war, as Allied armies advanced across western Europe, there was fear on the Allied side that the Germans were perilously close to the A-bomb, and might actually use one on London or other Allied targets. And Dr. Gobbels and his speeches about fearsome heart-stopping weaponry were doing nothing to alleviate their fears.

It is here that the mystery of the Allied Legend only deepens. It is here that the badly written finale would be truly comical, were it not for the vast scale of human suffering involved with it, for the facts are clear enough if one examines them independently of the explanations we have become accustomed to apply to them. Indeed, one must wonder if we were not conditioned to think about them in a certain way, for as the Allied armies advanced deeper and deeper into the Reich, famous German scientists and engineers were either captured, or they surrendered themselves. Among them were first class physicists, many of them Nobel laureates. And most of them were involved, at some level, with the various atomic bomb projects of Nazi Germany.

Among these scientists were Werner Heisenberg, one of the founders of quantum mechanics, Kurt Diebner, a nuclear physicist, Paul Hartek, a nuclear chemist, Otto Hahn himself, the chemist who actually discovered nuclear fission, and curiously, Walter Gerlach, whose specialty was not nuclear, but gravitational physics. Gerlach had written esoteric papers before the war on such abstruse concepts as spin polarization and vorticular physics, hardly the

---

[9] "Alsos" was the code name of this effort. "Alsos" is a Greek word meaning "Grove", an obvious pun on General Leslie Groves, chief of the Manhattan Project. It is the name of the book about the Manhattan Project by Dutch-Jewish physicist Samuel Goudsmit.

basics of nuclear physics, and certainly not the sort of scientist one would expect to encounter working on atom bombs.[10]

Much to the Allies' puzzlement, their scientific teams found but crude attempts by Heisenberg to construct a functioning atomic reactor, attempts that were wholly unsatisfactory and unsuccessful, and almost unbelievably inept. This "German ineptitude" in basic bomb physics became, and remains, a central component of the Allied Legend. And yet, that itself raises yet another mystery of the badly written finale.

Top German scientists - Werner Heisenberg, Paul Hartek, Kurt Diebner, Erich Bagge, Otto Hahn, Carl Friedrich von Weizsacker, Karl Wirtz, Horst Korsching, and Walter Gerlach - were carted off to Farm Hall, England, where they were kept in isolation, and their conversations recorded. The transcripts, the celebrated "Farm Hall Transcripts", were only declassified by the British government in 1992! If the Germans were so far behind and so incompetent, why keep them classified for so long?" Bureaucratic oversight and inertia? Or did they contain things the Allies did not wish to be known even at that late date?

What a surface reading of the transcripts reveals only deepens the mystery considerably. In them, Heisenberg and company, after hearing of the a-bombing of Hiroshima by the Americans on the BBC, debate the endless moral issues of their own involvement in the atomic bomb projects of Nazi Germany.

But that is not all.

In the transcripts, Heisenberg and company, who had suffered

---

[10] Nick Cook, The Hunt for Zero Point, p. 194. Cook notes that these areas have little to do with nuclear physics, much less A-bomb design, but "much to do with the enigmatic properties of gravity. A student of Gerlach's at Munich, O.C. Hilgenberg, published a paper in 1931 entitled 'About Gravitation, Vortices and Waves in Rotating Media'.... And yet, after the war, Gerlach, who died in 1979, apparently never returned to these matters, nor did he make any references to them; almost as if he had been forbidden to do so. That, or something he had seen...had scared him beyond all reason."

[11] It was Manhattan project chief General Leslie Groves who, in fact, revealed in his 1962 book about the bomb, Now It Can Be Told, that the German scientists' conversations had been recorded by the British. Apparently, however, not everything could be told in 1962.

some inexplicable mathematical and scientific dyslexia during the whole six years' course of the war, the same Heisenberg and company who could not even design and build a successful atomic reactor to produce plutonium for a bomb, suddenly become Nobel laureates and first rank physicists after the war. Indeed, Heisenberg himself within a matter of a few days of Hiroshima, gave a lecture to the assembled German scientists on the basic design of the bomb. In it, he defends his first assessment that the bomb would be about the size of a pineapple, and not the one or two ton monster he maintained throughout most of the war. And as we shall discover in the transcripts nuclear chemist Paul Hartek is close - perilously close - to the correct critical mass of uranium for the Hiroshima bomb.[12]

This demonstrable mathematical prowess raises yet another question directly confronting the Allied Legend, for some versions of that Legend would have it that the Germans never aggressively pursued bomb development because they had - via Heisenberg - overestimated the critical mass by several order of magnitude, thus rendering such a project impractical. Hartek had clearly done the calculations before, so Heisenberg's estimates were certainly not the only calculations the Germans had available to them. And with a small critical mass comes the practical feasibility of an atomic bomb.

In his August 14, 1945 "lecture" to the assembled German Farm Hall physicists, Heisenberg, according to Paul Lawrence

---

[12] Q.v. Paul Lawrence Rose, Heisenberg and the Nazi Atomic Bomb project: A Study in German Culture (Berkeley: 1998), pp. 217-221. Thomas Powers notes of Heisenberg's lecture that "this was something of a scientific tour de force - to come up with a working theory of bomb design in so short a time, after years of laboring under fundamental misconceptions." (Thomas Powers, Heisenberg's War: The Secret History of the German Bomb (1993), pp. 439-440). Samuel Goudsmit, of course, used the transcripts to construct his version of the Allied Legend: "That the German scientists were at odds with one another, that they didn't understand bomb physics, and that they concocted a false story of moral scruples to explain their scientific failures.... The sources of Goudsmit's conclusions are all obvious in the transcripts, but what leaps out at the reader now are the many statements which Goudsmit failed to notice, forgot, or deliberately overlooked." (Ibid., p. 436)

Rose, used a tone and phrasing that indicated that "he has only just now understood the solution" to a small critical mass for the bomb,[13] since "others" reported a critical mass of about 4 kg. This too only deepens the mystery. For Rose, an adherent of the Legend - though now in its highly modified post-Farm Hall declassification mode - the "others" could be the Allied press reports themselves.[14]

In the years immediately after the war, the Dutch-Jewish Manhattan Project physicist Samuel Goudsmit explained the whole

Dutch-Jewish Manhattan Project Physicist Samuel Goudsmit

[13]Q.v. Paul Lawrence Rose, Heisenberg and the Nazi Atomic Bomb Project: A Study in German Culture (Berkeley: 1998), pp. 217-221. Thomas Powers notes that this lecture was "something of a scientific tour de force - to come up with a working theory of bomb design in so short a time, after years of laboring under fundamental misconceptions." (Heisenberg's War: The Secret History of the German Bomb(1993), pp. 439-440).

[14]Ibid., p. 218.

mystery, alone with many others, as being simply due to the Allies having been "better" nuclear scientists and engineers than the very Germans who had invented the whole discipline of quantum mechanics and nuclear physics. That explanation, in conjunction with Heisenberg's own sell-evidently clumsy attempts to construct a functioning reactor, served well enough until these transcripts were declassified.

With the appearance of the transcripts and their stunning revelations of Heisenberg's actual knowledge of atomic bomb design, and some of the other scientists' clear understanding of the means to enrich enough weapons grade uranium without having to have a functioning reactor, the Legend had to be "touched up" a bit. Thomas Powers' Heisenberg's War appeared, arguing somewhat persuasively that Heisenberg had actually sabotaged the German bomb program. And almost as soon as it appeared, Lawrence Rose countered with Heisenberg and the Nazi Atomic Bomb Project, arguing even more persuasively that Heisenberg had remained a loyal German and had not sabotaged anything, but that he simply labored under massive misconceptions of the nature of nuclear fission, and consequently over-calculated the critical mass needed to make a bomb during the war. The Germans never obtained the bomb, so the new version goes, because they never had a functioning reactor by which to enrich uranium to plutonium to make a bomb. Besides, having grossly overestimated the critical mass, they had no real impetus to pursue it. Simple enough, case closed once again.

But again, neither Powers' nor Rose's books really go to the heart of the mystery, for the Legend still requires the belief that "brilliant nuclear physicists including Nobel prize winners before the war, apparently struck by some strange malady which turned them into incompetent bunglers during the...War,"[15] were suddenly and quite inexplicably cured of the malady within a few days of the bombing of Hiroshima! Moreover, two such widely diverging contemporary interpretations of the same material - Rose's and Powers' - only highlights the ambiguity of their contents in general,

---

[15] Philip Henshall, The Nuclear Axis: Germany, Japan, and the Atom Bomb Race 1939-45, "Introduction."

and Heisenberg's knowledge - or lack of it - in particular.

Matters are not helped by events on the other side of the world in the Pacific theater, for there American investigators would uncover similarly strange goings on after the war ended.

There, after Nagasaki, the Emperor Hirohito, overriding his ministers who wanted to continue the war, decided that Japan would surrender unconditionally. But why would Hirohito's ministers urge continuance of the war in the face of overwhelming Allied conventional arms superiority, and, from their point of view, facing a potential rain of atomic bombs? After all, "two" bombs could just as easily have turned into twenty. One could, of course, attribute the ministers' objections to the Emperor's intentions to "proud samurai traditions" and the Japanese sense of "honor" and so on. And that would indeed be a plausible explanation.

But another explanation is that Hirohito's cabinet ministers knew something.

What his ministers probably knew was what American intelligence would soon discover: that the Japanese, "just prior to their surrender, had developed and successfully test fired an atomic bomb. The project had been housed in or near Konan(Japanese name for Hungnam), Korea, in the peninsula's North."[16] It was exploded, so the story goes, one day after the American plutonium bomb, "Fat Man", exploded over Nagasaki, i.e., on August 10, 1945. The war, in other words, depending on Hirohito's decision, could have "gone nuclear". By that time, of course it would have done Japan no good to prolong it, with no viable means of delivery of an atomic weapon to any worthwhile strategic American targets. The Emperor stood his ministers down.[17]

These allegations constitute yet another difficulty for the Allied Legend, for where did Japan obtain the necessary uranium for its (alleged) A-bomb? And more importantly, the technology to enrich

---

[16]Robert K. Wilcox, Japan's Secret War, p. 15.

[17]The Japanese were, in fact, developing large cargo submarines to transport a bomb to West Coast American port cities to be detonated there, much like Einstein warned in his famous letter to President Roosevelt that initiated the Manhattan Project. Of course, Einstein was more worried about the Germans using such a method of ship-born delivery, than the Japanese.

it? Where did it build and assemble such a weapon? Who was responsible for its development? The answers, as we shall eventually see, possibly explain events far in the future, and even possibly down to our own day.

Yet even now, we have only begun to penetrate into the heart of this "badly written finale." There are also the "odd little, and little known, details" to consider.

Why, for example, in 1944, did a lone Junkers 390 bomber, a massive six engine heavy-lift ultra long-range transport aircraft capable of round trip intercontinental flight from Europe to North America, fly to within less than twenty miles of New York City, photograph the skyline of Manhattan, and return to Europe?[18] Germany launched several such top secret long-distance flights during the war, using these and other heavy-lift ultra-long range aircraft. But what was their purpose, and more importantly, the purpose of this unique flight?[19] That such a flight was extremely risky goes without saying. What were the Germans up to with this enormous aircraft, and why would they even risk such an operation just to take pictures, when they only ever had two of these enormous six engine monsters available?

Finally, and to round out the Legend, there are the odd details of the German surrender and the Nuremberg War Crimes Tribunals. Why does former Reichsfuhrer SS Heinrich Himmler, mass murderer and one of human history's most notorious criminals, try to negotiate a surrender to the Western Allies? Of course, one can dismiss this as delusion, and Himmler was certainly delusional. But what could he possibly have thought he had to offer the Allies in return for a surrender to the West, and the sparing of his own wretched life?

What of the strangeness around the Nuremberg Tribunals themselves? The Legend is well known: obvious war criminals like Reichmarschall Goring, Field Marshal Wilhelm Keitel, Army Chief of Operations Staff Colonel-General Alfred Jodl, are sent swinging from the gallows, or, in Goring's case, cheating the hangman by

---

[18]Q.v. Nick Cook, op. cit., p. 198, Henshall, op. cit., pp. 171-172.

[19]Italy, as well, launched long-range air missions to Japan.

swallowing cyanide. Other Nazi bigwigs like Grand Admiral Karl Donitz, mastermind of Germany's devastating U-boat campaign against Allied shipping, or Minister of Armaments Albert Speer, or Finance Minister and Reichsbank President Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht, were imprisoned.

Missing from the docket of the accused, of course, were the Pennemunde rocket scientists headed by Dr. Werner von Braun and General Walter Dornberger, already headed to America to take charge of America's ballistic missile and space programs along with a host of scientists, engineers and technicians under the then super secret Project Paperclip.[20] They, like their nuclear physics counterparts in Germany, had seemingly suffered from a similar "bungler's malady", for once having produced the first successful V-l and V-2 prototypes comparatively early in the war, they suffered a similar lack of inspiration and ingenuity and (so the Legend goes) managed to produce only "paper rockets" and theoretical study projects after that.[21]

But perhaps most significantly, by joint agreement of the Allied and Soviet prosecutors at Nuremberg, missing from evidence in the tribunal was the vast amount of documentary evidence implicating the Nazi regime in occult belief systems and practice,[22] a fact that

---

[20] The best sources on the overall outlines of Operation Paperclip are Mark Aaron's and John Loftus' Unholy Trinity: the Vatican, Nazis, and Soviet Intelligence (New York: St Martin's Press. 1991), and Christopher Simpson's Blowback: America's Recruitment of Nazis and Its Effects on the Cold War (New York: Macmillan Publishing Company. 1988).

[21] Henshall, op. cit, "Introduction."

[22] Q.v., Jean-Michel Angebert, The Occult and the Third Reich (New York: McGraw-Hill, 1974); Nicholas Goodrick-Clarke, The Occult Roots of nazism: Secret Aryan Cults and Their Influence on nazi Ideology (New York: New York University Press. 1992); Michael Howard, The Occult Conspiracy: Secret Societies- Their Influence and Power in World History (Rochester, Vermont: Destiny Books, 1989); Peter Levenda, Unholy Alliance: A History of Nazi involvement with the Occult (New York: Avon Books, 1995); Louis Pauwels and Jacques Bergier, The Morning of the magicians, trans from the French by Rollo Meyers (new York: Stein and Day, 1964); Dusty Sklar, The Nazis and the Occult (New York: Dorset Press, 1977); James Webb, The Occult Establishment and The Occult Underground (LaSalle, Illinois: Open Court,

has given rise to a whole "mythology, and one that has never been adequately explored in connection with its possible influence on the development of German secret weapons during the war.

Finally, a curious fact, one of those obvious things that one lends to overlook unless attention is drawn to it: the atomic bomb test that took place at the Trinity site in new Mexico was a test of America's implosion-plutonium bomb, a test needed to see if the concept would actually work. It did, and magnificently. But what is immensely significant - a fact missing from almost all mainstream literature on the subject since the end of the war - is that the uranium bomb with its apparatus of a cannon shooting the critical mass of uranium together, the bomb that was actually first used in war, the bomb dropped on Hiroshima, was never tested. As German author Friedrich Georg notes, this tears a rather gaping hole in the Allied Legend:

> Also another question is of great importance: Why was the uranium bomb of the USA, unlike the plutonium bomb, not tested prior to being hurled on Japan? Militarily this would appear to be extremely dangerous.... Did the Americans simply forget to test it, or did others already do it for them?[23]

The Allied Legend accounts for this in various ways, some ingenious, some not so ingenious, but basically they boil down to the assertion that it was never tested because it did not need to be, so confident were Allied engineers that it would work. So we have been asked to believe, by the post-war Allied spin, that the American military dropped an atomic bomb of untested design, based on concepts of physics that were very new and themselves very untested, on an enemy city, an enemy also known to be working on acquiring the atomic bomb as well!

It is indeed a badly written, truly incredible, finale to the world's most horrendous war.

1988). It should be noted that the SS Ahnenerbedienst did come under the tribunal's scrutiny.

[23] Friedrich Georg, Hitlers Siegeswaffen: Band 1: Luftwaffe und Marine: Geheime Nuklearwaffen des Dritten Reiches und ihre Tragersysteme (Schleusingen: Amun Verlag, 200), p. 150, my translation.

So, what exactly did the German pilot Hans Zinsser see on that night of October, 1944, as he flew his Heinkel bomber over the twilight skies of northern Germany? Something that, had he known it, would require the previous badly written Wagnerian libretto to be almost completely revised.

His affidavit is contained in a military intelligence report of August 19, 1945, roll number A1007, filmed in 1973 at Maxwell Air Force Base in Alabama. Zinsser's statement is found on the last page of the report:

> 47. A man named ZINSSER, a Flak rocket expert, mentioned what he noticed one day: In the beginning of Oct, 1944 I flew from Ludwigslust (south of Lubeck), about 12 to 15 km from an atomic bomb test station, when I noticed a strong, bright illumination of the whole atmosphere, lasting about 2 seconds.
>
> 48. The clearly visible pressure wave escaped the approaching and following cloud formed by the explosion. This wave had a diameter of about 1 km when it became visible and the color of the cloud changed frequently. It became dotted after a short period of darkness with all sorts of light spots, which were, in contrast to normal explosions, of a pale blue color.
>
> 49. After about 10 seconds the sharp outlines of the explosion cloud disappeared, then the cloud began to take on a lighter color against the sky covered with a gray overcast. The diameter of the still visible pressure wave was at least 9000 meters while remaining visible for at least 15 seconds.
>
> 50. Personal observations of the colors of the explosion cloud found an almost blue-violet shade. During this manifestation reddish-colored rims were to be seen, changing to a dirty-like shade in very rapid succession.
>
> 51. The combustion was lightly felt from my observation plane in the form of pulling and pushing.
>
> 52. About one hour later I started with an He 111 from the A/D[24] at Ludwigslust and flew in an easterly direction. Shortly after the start I passed through the almost complete overcast (between 3000 and 4000 meter altitude). A cloud shaped like a mushroom with turbulent, billowing sections (at about 7000 meter altitude) stood, without any

24 "A/D" probably "aerodrome".

seeming connections, over the spot where the explosion took place. Strong electrical disturbances and the impossibility to continue radio communication as by lightning, turned up.

> 53. Because of the P-38s operating in the area Wittenberg-Mersburg 1 had to turn to the north but observed a better visibility at the bottom of the cloud where the explosion occured (sic). Note: It does not seem very clear to me why these experiments took place in such crowded areas.[25]

In other words, a German pilot had observed the test of a weapon, having all the signatures of a nuclear bomb: electromagnetic pulse and resulting malfunction of his radio, mushroom cloud, continuing fire and combustion of nuclear material in the cloud and so on. And all this on territory clearly under German control, in October of 1944, fully eight months before the first American A-bomb test in New Mexico! Note the curious fact that Zinsser maintains that the test took place in a populated area.

There is yet another curiosity to be observed in Zinsser's statement, one that his American interrogators either did not pursue, or, if they did pursue it, the results remain classified still: How did Zinsser know it was a test? The answer is obvious: Zinsser knew, because he was somehow involved, for clearly the Allies would not have control over a test site deep in Nazi Germany.

Earlier in the same report, there are clues that unravel the mystery:

> 14. When Germany was at this stage of the game, the war broke out in Europe. At first investigations on this disintegrating of ^{235}U (sic) were somewhat neglected because a practical application seemed too far off. Later, however, this research continued, especially in finding methods of separating isotopes. Needless to say that the center of gravity of Germany's war effort at that time lay in other tasks.

---

[25] The entire documentation of this report is as follows: "Investigations, Research, Developments and Practical Use of the German Atomic Bomb," A.P.I.U. (Ninth Air Force) 96/1945 APO 696, U S Army, 19 August 1945." The report is classified secret. Note that the report begins in no uncertain terms: "the following information was obtained from four German scientists: a chemist, two physical chemists, and a rocket specialist. All four men contributed a short story as to what they knew of the atomic bomb development." (Emphasis added). Note also the suggestive title of the report.

46. The problem of harnessing the released energy in the sense of using it as power for engines, factory machines, transportation (ground, water, air), has not been practically solved as yet. This side of uranium research is clearly a post war problem.

47. A man named ZINSSER, a Flak rocket expert, mentioned what he noticed one day: In the beginning of Oct. 1944 I flew from Ludwigslust (South of Luebeck), about 12 to 15 km from an atomic bomb test station, when I noticed a strong, bright illumination of the whole atmosphere, lasting about 2 seconds.

48. The clearly visible pressure wave escaped the approaching and following cloud formed by the explosion. This wave had a diameter of about 1 km when it became visible and the color of the cloud changed frequently. It became dotted after a short period of darkness with all sorts of light spots, which were, in contrast to normal explosions, of a pale blue color.

49. After about 10 seconds the sharp outlines of the explosion cloud disappeared, then the cloud began to take on a lighter color against the sky covered with a gray overcast. The diameter of the s still visible pressure wave was at least 9000 meters while remaining visible for at least 15 seconds.

50. Personal observations of the colors of the explosion cloud found an almost blue-violet shade. During this manifestation reddish-colored rims were to be seen, changing to a dirty-like shade in very rapid succession.

51. The combustion was lightly felt from my observation plane in the form of pulling and pushing. The appearance of atmospheric disturbance lasted about 10 seconds without noticeable climax.

52. About one hour later I started with an He 111 from the A/D at Ludwigslust and flew in an easterly direction. Shortly after the start I passed through the almost complete overcast (between 3000 and 4000 meter altitude). A cloud shaped like a mushroom with turbulent, billowing sections (at about 7000 meter altitude) stood, without any seeming connections, over the spot where the explosion took place. Strong electrical disturbances and the impossibility to continue radio communication as by lightning, turned up.

53. Because of the P-38s operating in the area Wittenberg-Merseburg I had to turn to the north but observed a better visibility at the bottom of the cloud where the explosion occured.
Note: It does not seem very clear to me why these experiments took place in such crowded areas.

FOR THE COMMANDING OFFICER:

HELSHES T. FUEBERGER
Captain, AC

DISTRIBUTION:

30	copies	G-2, Hq, USFET, Att: Capt. E.L. Ming
10	"	U S Army Air Forces in Washington, D.O.I.
12	"	USSTAF (Main), A-2 Section
12	"	USSTAF (Rear), A-2 Section
15	"	Ninth Air Force, A-2 Section
3	"	IX T...C., A-2 Section
3	"	XII T...C., A-2 Section
3	"	XXIX T...C., A-2 Section
3	"	Ninth Air Defense Command, D.O.I.
3	"	Ninth Air Division, D.O.I.
1	"	3rd U S Army, G-2 Section
1	"	15th U S Army, G-2 Section
80	"	A.D.I.(K), Air Ministry
10	"	AFHQ, 2nd TAF Main
35	"	Ninth Air Force Service Command, Disarmament Division, APO 128
2	"	Ninth Air Service Command, A-2
25	"	Files & Spares.

Affidavit of Hans Zinsser

> 15. Nevertheless the atomic bomb was expected to be ready toward the end of 1944, if it had not been for the effective air attacks on laboratories engaged in this uranium research, especially on the one in Ryukon in Norway, where heavy water was produced. It is mainly for this reason that Germany did not succeed in using the atomic bomb in this war.

These two paragraphs are quite revealing for several reasons.

First, what is the source for the assertion that the Germans expected the bomb to be ready in late 1944, well ahead of the Manhattan Project, and a statement in flat contradiction to the post-war Allied spin that the Germans were actually far behind? Indeed, during the war, Manhattan Project estimates consistently placed the Germans ahead of the Allies, and project chief General Leslie Groves also thought they were. But after the war, everything suddenly changed. Not only was America ahead, but according to the Legend, it had been consistently far ahead throughout the war.

Manhattan Project Chief General Leslie Groves

Zinsser's account raises a disturbing possibility - besides completely contradicting the Allied Legend - and that is, did the Allies learn of a German A-bomb test during the war? If so, then we may look for certain types of corroborating evidence, for the

other Statements of the post-war report containing Zinsser's affidavit would seem to indicate that the Allied Legend is already beginning to take tenuous shape. The intelligence report talks, for example, only of laboratories being the facilities conducting isotope enrichment and separation research. But mere laboratories would simply be incapable of development of an actual functioning atom bomb. So one component of the Legend emerges in this early report: the German effort was lackadaisical, being confined to laboratories.

Secondly, note the clear assertion that Germany did not succeed in "using the atomic bomb in this war." The language of the report is very clear. Yet it would also appear to be designed to obfuscate in aid of the then emerging Allied Legend, for the statement does not say that the Germans never tested a bomb, only that they did not use one. The language of the report is oddly careful, deliberate, and for that reason, all the more thought provoking.

Thirdly, note how much is actually - and inadvertently it would seem - revealed about German atomic bomb research and development, for the statements make it clear that the Germans were after a uranium based A-bomb. A plutonium bomb is never mentioned. The theory of plutonium development and the possibility of a plutonium based A-bomb were clearly known to the Germans, as a Top Secret memorandum to the Heereswaffenamt (Army Ordnance Bureau) in early 1942 makes abundantly clear.[26]

So it is the absence of plutonium from this report that affords us a first significant clue into what was probably the real nature of

---

[26] This memorandum obviously constitutes another sore spot for the Allied Legend that emerged after the war, namely, that the Germans never knew the correct amount of the critical mass of a uranium fission bomb, but that it had been grossly overestimated by several orders of magnitude, hence rendering the project "unfeasible" within the span of the war. The problem of the HWA memorandum is that the Germans had a good ball-park estimate as early as January-February of 1942. And if they knew it was so small, then the resulting "decision" of the German High Command as to the impracticality of its development becomes immensely problematical. On the contrary, because of this memorandum - most likely prepared by Dr. Kurt Diebner or Dr. Fritz Houtermans - they knew that the undertaking was not only practical but feasible within the span of the war.

German atom bomb research. It is this absence that explains why the Germans never placed much emphasis on achieving a functioning reactor in order to enrich uranium to make weapons grade plutonium for an atom bomb: they did not need to do so, since there were other methods of enriching and separating enough U^{235} to weapons grade purity and a stockpile of critical mass. In a nutshell: the Allied Legend about the German failure to obtain the atom bomb because they never had a functioning reactor is simply utter scientific nonsense, because a reactor is needed only it one wants to produce plutonium. It is an unneeded, and expensive, development, if one only wants to make a uranium A-bomb. Thus, there is sufficient reason, due to the science of bomb-making and the political and military realities of the war after America's entry, that the Germans took the decision to develop only a uranium bomb, since that afforded the best, most direct, and technologically least complicated route to acquisition of a bomb.

Let us pause a moment to put the indications of the German project in the context of the Manhattan Project taking place in the United States. There, with a production capacity larger than Germany's, and with an industrial base not being targeted by enemy bombing, the American project decided to concentrate on development of all available means to production of working atom bombs, i.e., uranium and plutonium bombs. But the production of plutonium could only be achieved in the construction of a functioning reactor. No reactor, no plutonium bomb.

But it should also be noted that the Manhattan Project also constructed the giant Oak Ridge facility in Tennessee to enrich uranium to weapons grade by gaseous diffusion and Lawrence's mass spectrometer processes, a facility that at no stage of its operation relied upon a functioning reactor in order to enrich uranium.

So, if the Germans were pursuing a similar approach to that employed at Oak Ridge, then we must find indicators to corroborate it. First, to enrich uranium by the same or similar methods as employed in Tennessee, the Reich would have had to build a similarly huge facility, or smaller facilities scattered throughout Germany, transporting the various levels of dangerous

uranium isotope from one point to another as feedstock until the desired level of purity and enrichment was achieved. The material would then have to be assembled in a bomb, and tested. So one must first look for a facilities or facilities. And given the Oak Ridge operation and its massive size, we know exactly what to look for: enormous size, close proximity to water, an adequate transportation infrastructure, enormous electrical power consumption, and finally, two other significant factors: an enormous labor pool, and enormous cost.

Secondly, in order to verify or corroborate Zinsser's astonishing affidavit, we must look for corroborating evidence. We must look for indications that the Germans had stockpiled enough weapons grade uranium to constitute a critical mass for an atom bomb. And then we must hunt for the test site or sites and see if it(or they) bear(s) the signature(s) of an atomic blast.

Fortunately, the information is now slowly coming available with the recent declassification of documents by Great Britain, the United States, the former Soviet Union, and as the archives of the former East Germany are being opened by the German government itself. This allows us to examine each of these aspects of the problem in a detail not possible until the last few years. The answers, as we shall see in the remaining chapters of part one, are disturbing, and horrifying.

2.

ELECTRICITY, SLAVES, AND "BUNA"

"Assertions made by General Groves after the war... were probably designed to divert attention from the German isotope separation program. The idea being that if the existence of the German uranium enrichment program could be hidden, then the cover story could be established that Germany's atomic bomb effort consisted only of failed attempts to create a reactor pile to bread plutonium "
Carter P. Hydrick: Critical Mass: the Real Story of the Birth of the Atomic Bomb and the Nuclear Age.[1]

"The men who interrogated Heisenberg and other German scientists, read their reports, and gaped at the primitive reactor vessel in a cave in southern Germany were hard put to explain what had gone wrong. Germany had begun the war with every advantage: able scientists, material resources, and the support and interest of the highest military officials. How could they have achieved so little?"[2] These are the basic facts, and the central question, that have plagued every researcher into the subject of German secret weapons research since the end of World War Two. How indeed could Germany have not obtained the atom bomb?

The thesis of this book, among many others, is radical, namely, that Germany did acquire atomic bombs during the war. What must be explained, rather, is why Germany apparently did not use this and other dreadful weapons available to her, or, if she did, why we have not heard about it. But of course, to maintain such a radical thesis, one must argue persuasively that Germany had the bomb to begin with.

---

[1] Carter Hydrick, Critical Mass: the Real Story of the Atomic Bomb and the Birth of the Nuclear Age, Internet published manuscript, www.3dshort.com/nazibomb2/CRITICALMASS.txt, 1998, p. 21. Hydrick's research is painstaking and meticulous, and his speculative reconstructions of the detailed history of the war's end merit close attention. It is earnestly hoped he will eventually publish this important work in book form.

[2] Thomas Powers, Heisenberg's War, p. viii.

This implies a relatively easy set of corroborative evidence to search for. If Germany had a uranium based atom bomb, one must look for the following things:

(1) A method or methods of separating and enriching uranium-235 isotope, the necessary isotope for a uranium atom bomb, to weapons grade quality, and in sufficient quantity to stockpile enough material for the critical mass, without the use of a functioning atomic reactor.
(2) An actual facility or facilities where such technologies are used en masse; This implies in turn
    (a) enormous electrical power consumption;
    (b) adequate water and transportation supplies;
    (c) an enormous labor pool;
    (d) a physically large facility or facilities that are relatively shielded from Allied and/or Russian bombing;
(3) The necessary basic theory for the design of a uranium bomb;
(4) Available and adequate supplies of uranium for use in enrichment;
(5) A site or sites to assemble and test the bomb

Fortunately, all these aspects of the investigation afford the researcher several clues, all of which corroborate the existence, at the minimum, of a very large and successful German uranium refinement and enrichment program during the war.

We begin by looking in a very unlikely spot: Nuremberg.

At the War Crimes Tribunal after the war, several formerly elegantly attired business executives and senior managers of the huge, enormously powerful, and quite notorious German chemicals cartel, I.G. Farben A.G., had their time in the dock. They story of this early "global corporation", its bankrolling of the Nazi regime and its central role in its "military-industrial complex", as well as its role in producing the deadly Zyklon-B poison gas for the death camps has been chronicled elsewhere.[3]

[3] Joseph Borkin, The Crime and Punishment of I. G. Farben; Anthony C. Sutton, Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler.

I.G. Farben had been more than just complicit in Nazi atrocities by its construction of a large Buna, or synthetic rubber, production plant at Auschwitz in the Polish part of Silesia during the war, committing atrocities against the concentration camp victims during its construction and operation.

For Farben, the choice of Auschwitz as the site for the Buna plant was logical, and made for "sound business reasons." The concentration camp nearby the site selected for the enormous facility guaranteed an endless supply of slave labor for its construction, and, conveniently, when the slaves had exhausted themselves in its secret construction and operation, they could be permanently "laid off". Farben director Carl Krauch assigned one of its top Buna synthetic rubber experts, Otto Ambros, to investigate the sites for the proposed plant and make a recommendation. The site eventually selected - Auschwitz - was "particularly suited for the installation" over a competing site in Norway for one very important reason.

> A coal mine was nearby and three rivers converged to provide a vital requirement, a large source of water. Together with these three rivers, the Reich railroad and autobahn afforded excellent transportation to and from the area. These were not decisive advantages, however, over the Norwegian site. But the Silesian location had one advantage that was overwhelming: the S.S. had plans to expand enormously a concentration camp nearby. The promise of an inexhaustible supply of slave labor was an attraction that could not be resisted.[4]

The selection having been approved by the Farben board, Krauch then wrote a top secret letter to Ambros:

> In the new arrangement of priority stages ordered by Field Marshal Keitel, your building project has first priority.... At my request, (Goring) issued special decreees a few days ago to the supreme Reich authorities concerned.... In these decrees, the Reich Marshal obligated the offices concerned to meet your requirements in skilled workers and laborers at once, even at the expense of other important building projects or plans which are essential to the war economy.[5]

---

[4] Borkin, op. cit, p. 115.

[5] Ibid., pp. 115-116.

I.G. Farben Auschwitz "Buna" Expert Otto Ambros

With the Wehrmacht poised to blast its way into Russia soon, and sensing enormous profits to be made in the effort, the Farben directors decided to finance the enormous plant privately, rather than in concert with the Nazi regime, earmarking 900,000,000 Reichsmarks - nearly $250,000,000 in 1945 dollars or over $2 billion in contemporary dollars - to the project. It was to be the Buna plant to dwarf all other Buna plants.

However, as the testimony at the Nuremberg War Crimes Tribunal unfolded, the Auschwitz Buna factory emerged as one of the big mysteries of the war, for in spite of the enormous sum of money set aside for its construction, in spite of the personal blessings of Hitler, Himmler, Goring, and Keitel, and in spite of an endless supply both of skilled company contract laborers and an endless supply of slave labor from Auschwitz, "the project was continually disrupted by shortages, breakdowns, and delays.... Some malign influence seemed to be affecting the entire operation" to such an extent that Farben appeared to be faced with the first failure in its long corporate history of technological success.[6] By 1942, the whole effort was viewed by many directors not only as a failure, but as a near disaster.[7]

---

[6] Ibid., p. 118.
[7] Ibid., p. 120.

Disaster notwithstanding, the huge synthetic rubber and gasoline plants were completed, after 300,000 concentration camp workers had passed through the corporations construction mills. 25,000 of these inmates were simply and cruelly worked to death from exhaustion. The plants themselves were nothing less than gigantic. So gigantic, in fact, that "they used more electricity than the entire city of Berlin."[8]

During the war crimes tribunals, however, it was not this gruesome catalogue of facts about the plant that puzzled the Allied prosecutors. What puzzled them was that, in spite of such an enormous investment of lives, money, and material, "not a single pound of Buna was ever produced"[9] The Farben directors and managers in the docks were almost obsessively insistent on this point. More electricity than the entire city of Berlin - the eighth largest in the world at that time - to produce absolutely nothing? If this was true, then the enormous outlay of capital and labor and the huge electrical consumption contributed nothing significant to the German war effort whatsoever. Needless to say, there is something very wrong with this picture.

None of it made sense the, none of it makes sense now, unless of course the plant was not a Buna plant at all...

***

When I.G. Farben began its construction of the "Buna" plant at Auschwitz, one of the more unusual events to being the process was the removal of over 10,000 Polish inhabitants from their homes to make way for the thousands of German scientists, technicians, contract works and their families who were moved into the area. The parallel with the Manhattan Project in this respect is obvious. It is simply unbelievable in the extreme that, with such a technical and scientific effort on the part of the corporation with the most successful track record in advanced technologies and production

[8] Ibid., p. 127.
[9] Ibid., emphasis added.

facilities, and a plant consuming more electricity than Berlin, that nothing whatsoever was ever accomplished or produced.[10]

One contemporary researcher who is also mystified by the whole "Buna plant affair" is Carter P. Hydrick. Contacting Ed Landry, an expert in the field of synthetic rubber production from Houston, Texas, and informing him of the I.G. Farben plant, its huge electrical consumption, and the directors' claims that it produced no Buna at all, Landry responded: "That was not a rubber plant - you can bet your bottom dollar on that." Landry simply does not believe the primary purpose of the "Buna plant" was the production of rubber at all.[11]

How then to account for the enormous electrical consumption and post-war insistence of Farben directors that the plant never produced any synthetic rubber at all? What other technology would require such enormous electrical power consumption, such an enormous technical and unskilled labor staff, and such close proximity to plentiful water supplies? At that time, there was only one other technological process that could conceivably require all these things. Hydrick puts the case this way:

> Certainly there is something wrong with this picture. A compilation of the three central and readily known facts just outlined - electrical consumption, construction costs, and I.G. Farben's previous record - does not readily form a picture that a Buna processing plant was the type of project being constructed at Auschwitz. Such a compilation does sketch a picture, however, of another important wartime production process, though secret at the time. The process is uranium enrichment.[12]

So why call it a Buna plant? And why protest so vociferously to the Allied prosecutors that the plant never produced any Buna at all? One answer is that with so much labor being provided by the slave labor from the SS concentration camp nearby, the plant fell under SS security jurisdiction, and an effective "cover" would therefore been at the head of the list of Farben's and the SS' concerns. In the

---

[10] Carter P. Hydick, op. cit., p. 34.
[11] Hydrick, op. cit., p. 35.
[12] Ibid., p. 38.

unlikely event, for example, of an escape by one or more inmates, the "Buna" plant would have ottered a plausible cover story should the Allies ever learn of it. Since isotope separation would have been such a secret and eostly process, "it becomes hard to imagine the so-called Buna installation being anything but a cover for a uranium enrichment facility."[13] Indeed, there is odd corroboration as we shall see from the Farm Hall transcripts. The "Buna plant" became the cover story to explain the construction to the laborers - in the event that explanations were offered at all! - and to the Farben company contract employees who were "out of the loop."

In this respect, the delays in its construction and the difficulties Farben encountered are also best explained by its being a huge isotope separation facility, not unlike those the Manhattan Project encountered when constructing its own similarly sized plant at Oak Ridge, Tennessee. Like its American counterpart, shortages and delays and technical difficulties dogged the project from its inception, and like its American counterpart, these delays were experienced in spite of its enjoying a similarly privileged position in the hierarchy of Nazi priorities as Oak Ridge.[14]

So the strange assertions and behavior of the Farben directors on trial after the war begins to make sense. Faced already with an emerging "Allied Legend" about German incompetence in nuclear matters, the Farben directors and managers were perhaps trying in a subtle way to "set the record straight" in the only way that would not overtly challenge that Legend. They were attempting, perhaps, to provide a clue as to the real nature and achievements of the German bomb program that would only be noticed over time and with careful scrutiny.

The selection of the site - near the concentration camp at Auschwitz and its hundreds of thousands of hapless victims - also makes strategic, if not gruesome, sense. Much like dictators of more recent times, it would appear that the Nazi regime had placed the facility near the camp in a deliberate attempt to use "human shields" to protect the facility from Allied bombing. If so, the decision was a correct one, as no Allied bombs ever fell on

---

[13] Hydrick, op. cit., p. 38.

[14] Ibid.

Auschwitz. The plant was dismantled only in the face of the approaching Russian armies in 1944.

The Isotope Separation Facility at Oak Ridge, Tennessee

To establish that the "Buna plant" was most likely an isotope separation facility, however, requires that one prove the Germans possessed the technological means for isotope separation. Additionally, if such technology was employed at the "Buna plant", then it implies that there was more than one atom bomb project in Germany, for the "Heisenberg" wing of the project, and all the subsequent debates that surround it, are well known. So in addition to ascertaining whether or not Germany possessed the technology to separate isotopes, one must also attempt a broad reconstruction of the actual outlines and relationships of the various German atom bomb projects.

By stating the problem in this fashion, one is again confronted by the post-war Allied Legend:

> In the traditional history of the bomb, (Manhattan project chief General Leslie) Groves has positioned the German plutonium effort as the only nuclear initiative Germany ever pursued. And he has magnified this misinformation, couched in a cushion of half-truths, to immense proportions - large enough to hide what appears to be a huge

German uranium enrichment project behind it - and thus he has shielded the Nazi near-success from the view of the world.[15]

Did Germany have isotope enrichment technology available? And could it have employed that technology in sufficient quantity to make significant amounts of enriched uranium available for a bomb program?

There can be no doubt that Germany certainly had a sufficient supply of uranium ore, for the region of the Sudetenland - annexed by Germany after the infamous Munich conference in 1938 - is a region known for its rich deposits of some of the highest grade uranium ore in the world. The region, coincidentally, lies close to the "Three Corners" region of Thuringia in south central Germany, and therefore close to Silesia and the various installations that will be examined in parts two and three. So the Farben directors may have had another reason for choosing Auschwitz as the site for an enrichment facility. Auschwitz was close not only to water, an adequate transportation network, and abundant labor, it was conveniently close to the uranium fields of the German-Czech Sudentenland.

These facts raise a speculative possibility. It is well-known that the announcement by nuclear chemist Otto Hahn of his discovery of nuclear fission did not occur until after the Munich conference and the surrender of the Sudetenland to the Third Reich by Chamberlain and Daladier. But might the reality have been something different? Might, in fact, the discovery of fission taken place before the conference, and its results withheld by the Reich until after Europe's only uranium supply was firmly in Nazi hands? It is perhaps significant that Adolf Hitler was prepared to go to war over the matter.

In any case, before we investigate the question of the technology available to the Germans, we must first answer the question of why they apparently concentrated almost exclusively on

---

[15] Hydrick, op. cit., p. 3. Obviously, Hydrick himself does not appear ready to go all the way and acknowledge that the Germans actually successfully tested an atom bomb before its American Manhattan project counterpart produced and tested one.

obtaining a uranium atom bomb in their program. After all, the American Manhattan Project had elected to pursue both a uranium and a plutonium bomb. The theoretical possibility of plutonium bombs - "element 94" as it was officially called in German documents of the period - was certainly known to the Nazis. And, as the early 1942 memorandum to the Heereswaffenamt also makes clear, the Germans also knew that this element could only be synthesized in an atomic reactor.

So why did they apparently concentrate only on a uranium bomb and isotope separation and enrichment almost exclusively? With the destruction of the Norwegian heavy water plant at Ryukon in 1942 by Allied commandos, and German failures in obtaining sufficient purity of graphite for use as a moderator in a reactor, the only other moderator available to them - heavy water - was now in critically short supply. Thus, according to the Legend, a functioning reactor leading to a critical mass supply of "element 94" was not feasible to them in the projected span of the war.

But let us, for a moment, assume that the Allied commando raid had not taken place. The German failures with graphite moderated reactors were already a matter of record, and it was obvious to them that there were significant technological and engineering hurdles to be surmounted before a reactor came into production. On the other hand, the Germans already had the necessary technology to enrich U^{235} for a bomb, and thus uranium enrichment constituted the best, most direct, and technologically feasible route to the acquisition of a bomb within the expected span of the war for the Germans. More on that technology in a moment.

One now has to deal with yet another component of the Allied Legend. American progress in the plutonium bomb, from the moment Fermi successfully completed and tested a functioning reactor in the squash court at the University of Chicago, appeared to be running fairly smoothly, until fairly late in the war, when it was discovered that in order to make a bomb from plutonium, the critical mass would have to be assembled much faster than any existing Allied fuse technologies could accomplish. Moreover, there was so little margin of error, since the fuses in an implosion device

would have to fire as close to simultaneously as possible, that Allied engineers began to despair of making a plutonium bomb work.

Thus one is confronted with a rather interesting scientific picture, one directly in contradiction to the traditional history of the bomb. If the Germans indeed had a successful and large scale uranium enrichment project running ca. 1941-1944, and if their bomb project was devoted almost exclusively on acquiring a uranium atom bomb, and if at the same time Allied engineers were coming to realize the problems inherent in plutonium bomb design, then this means, in one respect at least, that the Germans have not wasted time or effort" on what is admittedly a more difficult task, namely, the plutonium bomb. As we shall see in the next chapter, this fact gives rise to serious doubts about the state of "success" in the Manhattan Project in late 1944 and early 1945.

So what were the actual technologies available to Nazi Germany for isotope enrichment and separation, and how did it compare to similar technologies employed at Oak Ridge for efficiency and output?

Difficult as it seems to accept, the fact of the matter is that Nazi Germany had "at least five, and possibly as many as seven, serious isotope separation development programs underway."[16] One of these, an "isotope sluice" developed by Drs. Bagge and Korsching, two of the scientists interred at Farm Hall, was brought to such a state of efficiency by mid-1944 that a single pass of uranium through it would enrich it to four times that produced by a single pass through the gaseous diffusion gates at Oak Ridge![17]

[16] Hydrick, op. cit., p. 25.
[17] Ibid.

Dr. Erich Bagge

Dr. Horst Korsching

Contrast this with the end-of-war difficulties being faced by the Manhattan Project. Even with the enormous gaseous diffusion plant at Oak Ridge, stocks of fissionable uranium were still woefully short of critical mass requirements as late as March 1945. Passes

through the Oak Ridge facility would enrich uranium from aproximately a .7 percent concentration in around 10-12 percent, and thus the decision was taken to use the Oak Ridge production as feedstock for Earnest O. Lawrence's far more efficient and effective "beta calutrons," which were essentially a cyclotron with separation tanks, using electromagnetic means to enrich and separate isotope via mass spectrography.[18] Consequently, one may assume that if a similar quantity of Bagge and Korsching's "isotope sluices" were used en masse, the result would have been a more rapid build-up of enriched uranium feedstock. Similarly, the more efficient German techno logy may also have allowed for relatively smaller separation facilities.

Good as it was, however, the isotope sluice was not Germany's most efficient or technologically advanced means of uranium enrichment. This was the centrifuge, and its progeny - designed by nuclear chemist Paul Hartek - the ultracentrifuge.[19] American engineers, of course, knew of this possibility, but there was a significant drawback they had to face: the highly corrosive uranium gases used in this technology made it unfeasible to rely on centrifuges as a means of enrichment. On the German side, however, this was a solved problem. A special alloy called Bondur was developed precisely for use in centrifuges.[20] But even centrifuge technology was not, however, the best available method the Germans had.

---

[18] Hydrick, op. cit., p. 25.

[19] The same technology was captured by the Soviet Union and further perfected in its own bomb program. On the post-war German side, such ultra-centrifuges were provided by the Siemens company and other German firms first to South Africa in its own bomb program (q.v. Rogers and Cervenka, The Nuclear Axis: West Germany and South Africa, pp. 299-310). In other words, the technology is not only originally German, but is advanced enough to be employed today. It should be noted that, as of the mid-1970s, several of the Germans involved in the corporate development of centrifuge enrichment facilities for the Federal Republic (West Germany) had ties to the third Reich's bomb project, among them Prof. Karl Winnacker, a former member of the I.G. larben board (p. 300).

[20] Hydrick, op. cit., p. 25.

Dr. Paul Harteck

Baron Manfred von Ardenne, a rich eccentric and self-taught nuclear physicist and inventor, and his close associate of physicist Fritz Houtermanns, both correctly calculated the critical mass for a U^{235} atom bomb in 1941, and with funds from Dr. Ing. Ohnesorge's money-rich Deutsche Reichspost, constructed a huge underground laboratory in his baronial manor in Lichterfelde, outside eastern Berlin. This laboratory included a 2,000,000 volt electrostatic generator and the only other cyclotron known to exist in the Third Reich besides that of the Curies in France. It is the only cyclotron acknowledged by the post-war Allied Legend.[21]

[21] Hydrick, p. 26.

Baron Manfred von Ardenne

At thus juncture it is necessary to pause to examine the German bomb program more closely, for we now have evidence of at least three different, and seemingly separate, technological efforts:

(1) The Heisenberg-Army program, centered around Heisenberg himself and various associates at the Kaiser Wilhelm and Max Planck institutes, a purely "small laboratory" effort concentrating, or rather, dibbling and dabbling in the construction of a reactor. This is the "program" the Allied Legend focuses on, and the one most people think of when they think of the German atom bomb effort. It is the program deliberately inculcated by that Legend as proof of German nuclear incompetence and bungling;[22]

(2) The I.G. Farben "Buna plant" at Auschwitz, whose relationship to the other programs, and to the SS, is not entirely clear;

---

[22] It should be noted again, however, that the German Army's Ordnance Bureau was in possession of essentially correct estimations of the critical mass for a uranium bomb in early 1942, and that Heisenberg himself after the war suddenly reassumed his commanding position by detailing the construction of the Hiroshima bomb along essentially correct principles, and allegedly from information gleaned only from the BBC!

(3) The Bagge-Korsching-von Ardenne-Houtermanns circle, developing an array of advanced separation technologies, and apparently, via von Ardenne, tied somehow to, of all things, the German postal service!

Why the Reichspost? For one thing, it afforded an effective cover for the program, which, like its American counterpart, appears to have been compartmentalized under a number of government agencies, many having no plausible connection with a large secret weapons research effort. Secondly, and more significantly, the Reichspost was awash with money, and could therefore have provided some of the massive funding necessary to the project, a true "black budget" operation in every sense. And finally, the head of the Reichspost was, perhaps not coincidentally, an engineer: Dr. Ing. Ohnesorge. It is, from the German point of view, a logical choice. Even his last name, "Ohnesorge", meaning "without sorrow or regret", is an ironic twist to the story.

What was the method of separation and enrichment developed by von Ardenne and Houtermanns? Very simply, it was the cyclotron itself. Von Ardenne had invented a modification of the cyclotron - electromagnetic separation tanks - very similar to Ernst O. Lawrence's "beta calutrons" in the United States. It is to be noted, however, that von Ardenne had completed his modifications in April of 1942, whereas General Groves in the Manhattan Project would not have Lawrence's beta calutron at Oak Ridge for fully a year and a half after that![23] "In addition, the ion plasma source Ardenne had designed for his isotope separator to sublime the uranium compound was far superior to that provided for the calutrons." So efficient, in fact, was Von Ardenne's version as a source for emitting particle rays, that to this day it is known as "the Ardenne source."[24]

Von Ardenne himself is a mysterious figure, for after the war he was one of the few German scientists to deliberately opt to cooperate with the Soviet Union rather than the Western Allies. His contribution to the Soviet acquisition of the atomic bomb in 1949

[23] Hydrick, op. cit, p. 26.
[24] Hydrick, op. cit., p. 27.

was to earn him the "Stalin Prize" in 1955, the Soviet equivalent to the Nobel Prize. He was the only non-Russian and non-Soviet ever to win the prize.[25]

In any case, Von Ardenne's work, plus that of the other German scientists working on separation and enrichment - Bagge, Korsching, Harteck and Houtermanns - indicates one thing: that there was a sound and solid basis in Allied wartime estimations of German progress and capabilities, for they were, in mid-1942,

running a dead heat with the Manhattan Project, and were not "far behind" as the post-war Allied Legend would subsequently have us believe.

So what is the likely scenario, as it has emerged thus far? What conclusions may be drawn?

(1) There were several German bomb and enrichment projects, compartmentalized to maintain security, perhaps being coordinated by some as yet or hitherto unknown entity. In any case, it appears that one such serious program was at least nominally being coordinated by the Deutsche Reichspost under its chief, Dr. Ing. Wilhelm Ohnesorge;

(2) The most significant enrichment and separation projects were not being conducted by Heisenberg or his circle, or for that matter, by any of the more "high profile" German scientists, save perhaps Harteck and Diebner. This suggests that perhaps the more famous scientists were being used as "fronts" and being kept out of the loop of the most serious and significant technological achievements as a matter of security. Had they been involved in such efforts and then subsequently kidnapped or assassinated by the Allies - a thought that certainly occurred to the OSS[26] - then the German program would have been severely crippled and exposed;

---

[25] Henshall, op. cit, p. 156.

[26] Powers, op. cit., pp. 379-382. Samuel Goudsmit was at one point being considered as a member of the team that would attempt to kidnap or assassinate Heisenberg.

(3) At least three German technologies were arguably more efficient and technologically advanced than their American counterparts:
   (a) Bagge and Korsching's "isotope sluice";
   (b) Harteck's centrifuges and ultra-centrifuges;
   (c) Von Ardenne's modified cyclotrons, the "Ardenne source";
(4) At least one known facility was large enough in terms of its physical size, labor requirements, and electrical consumption, to have conceivably been sued as a large separation facility, the I.G. Farben "Buna plant" at Auschwitz. The case is strong because:
   (a) No Buna was ever produced there in spite of thousands of scientists, technicians, engineers, contract and slave laborers working there;
   (b) The site was close to the uranium ore fields of the Czech and German Sudentenland, being located in Polish Silesia;
   (c) The site was close to plentiful water supplies, also needed in isotope enrichment;
   (d) It was close to rail and road networks;
   (e) It was close to plentiful (slave) labor;
   (f) And finally -though not yet discussed - it was close to several large underground secret weapons production and research facilities in lower Silesia, and was close to one of the two alleged test sites of German atom bomb tests during the war;
(5) it may reasonably be assumed, in addition to the "Buna factory", that the Germans constructed smaller facilities in the area for separation and enrichment of isotope, using the Buna plant's production as feedstock for these other facilities.[27]

[27] Powers, op. cit., p. 74. Powers also mentions another problematical fact concerning the Clusius-Dickel method of thermal diffusion, that we will encounter in chapter 7: "One pound of U-235 was not a daunting figure, and Frisch calculated that 1,000,000 Clusius-Dickel tubes for thermal diffusion of uranium isotopes could produce it in a matter of weeks. Such a large industrial effort would not be cheap, but the two men concluded, 'Even if this plant costs as much as a battleship, it would be worth having.'"

To round out this unpleasant picture, one must also mention two further interesting facts:

Von Ardenne's close associate and theoretical mentor, Dr. Fritz Houtermanns' specialty was thermonuclear fusion, indeed as an astrophysicist, he had staked his claim to fame in physics by describing precisely the type of nuclear process at work in stars. Interestingly enough, there does exist, from 1938, an Austrian patent for a device known as a "Molecular Bomb," a bomb that upon examination is an early version of a hydrogen bomb. Atomic bombs, of course, supply the necessary heat to get hydrogen atoms to collide and produce the much more enormous and terrible energies of thermonuclear hydrogen fusion bombs.

Secondly, it may now clearly be seen why, of all the German scientists working on the atom bomb, that Manfred Von Ardenne was the one nuclear scientist that Adolf Hitler most often went personally to visit.[28]

In any case, all the evidence points to the conclusion that there was a large, very well-funded, and very secret German isotope enrichment program during the war, a program successfully disguised during the war by the Nazis, and covered-up after war by the Allied Legend. But this too raises its own questions. How close was that program to acquiring sufficient stocks of weapons grade uranium to make a bomb (or bombs). And secondly, why did the Allies after the war go to such stupendous lengths to cover it up?

As a final note to this chapter, and a tantalizing indication of further mysteries that will be investigated subsequently in this work, there is a report, declassified by the National Security Agency only in 1978; the report is apparently a decoded intercept from the Japanese embassy in Stockholm to Tokyo. It is entitled simply

---

[28] Hydrick, op. cit, p. 29. Rose notes that Von Ardenne had written him and stated that he had never tried to persuade the Nazis to develop his process and employ it in large quantities. He then notes that the Siemens company did not develop it (Rose, op. cit., p. 140, n. 38). This would appear to be pure obfuscation on Von Ardenne's part, for it was not Siemens, but I.G. Farben, that had developed the processes and employed them in large amounts at Auschwitz.

"Reports on the Atom-Splitting Bomh." It is best to cite its amazing contents in their entirety, with their original breaks where they occurred in the text for transmission:

> This bomb is revolutionary in its results, and it will completely upset all ordinary precepts of warfare hitherto established. I am sending you, in one group, all those reports on what is called the atom-splitting bomb:
>
> It is a fact that in June of 1943 the German Army tried out an utterly new type of weapon against the Russians at a location 150 kilometers southeast of Kursk. Although it was the entire 19th Infantry Regiment of the Russians which was thus attacked, only a few bombs (each round up to 5 kilograms) sufficed to utterly wipe them out to the last man.
>
> Part 2. The following is according to a statement by Lieutenant-Colonel UE(?) I KENJI, advisor to the attache in Hungary and formerly (?on duty?) in this country, who by chance saw the actual scene immediately after the above took place:
>
> "All the men and the horses (?within the area of?) the explosion of the shells were charred black and even their ammunition had all been detonated. "
>
> Moreover, it is a fact that the same type of war material was tried out in the Crimea, too. At that time the Russians claimed that this was poison-gas, and protested that if Germany were ever again to use it, Russia, too, would use poison-gas.
>
> Part 3. There is also the fact that recently in London - in the period between October and the 15th of November - the loss of life and the damage to business buildings through fires of unknown origin was great. It is clear, judging especially by the articles about a new weapon of this type, which have appeared from time to time recently in British and American magazines - that even our enemy has already begun to study this type.
>
> To generalize on the basis of all these reports: I am convinced that the most important technical advance in the present great war is in the realization of the atom-splitting bomb. Therefore, the central authorities are planning, through research on this type of weapon, to speed up the matter of rendering the weapon practical. And for my part, I am convinced of the necessity for taking urgent steps to effect this end.
>
> Part 4.
>
> The following are the facts I have learned regarding its technical data:

Recently the British authorities warned their people of the possibility that they might undergo attacks by German atom-splitting bombs. The American military authorities have likewise warned that the American east coast might be the area chosen for a blind attack by some sort of flying bomb. It was called the German V-3. To be specific, this device is based on the principle of the explosion of the nuclei of the atoms in heavy hydrogen derived from heavy water. (Germany has a large plant (?for this?) in the vicinity of Rjukan, Norway, which has from time to time been bombed by English planes.). Naturally, there have been plenty of examples even before this of successful attempts at smashing individual atoms. However,

Part 5.

as far as the demonstration of any practical results is concerned, they seem not to have been able to split large numbers of atoms in a single group. That is, they require for the splitting of each single atom a force that will disintegrate the electron orbit.

On the other hand, the stuff that the Germans are using has, apparently, a very much greater specific gravity than anything heretofore used. In this connection, allusions have been made to SIRIUS and stars of the "White Dwarf" group. (Their specific gravity is (?6?) 1 thousand, and the weight of one cubic inch is 1 ton.)

In general, atoms cannot be compressed into the nuclear density. However, the terrific pressures and extremes of temperature in the "White Dwarfs" cause the bursting of the atoms; and

Part 6.

There are, moreover, radiations from the exterior of these stars composed of what is left of the atoms which are only the nuclei, very small in volume.

According to the English newspaper accounts, the German atom-splitting device is the NEUMAN disintegrator. Enormous energy is directed into the central part of the atom and this generates at atomic pressure of several tons of thousands of tons (sic) per square inch. This device can split the relatively unstable atoms of such elements as uranium. Moreover, it brings into being a store of explosive atomic energy.

A-GENSHI HAKAI DAN. That is, a bomb deriving its force from the release of atomic energy.

The end of this amazing intercept then reads "Inter 12 Dec 44 (1,2) Japanese; Rec'd 12 Dec 44; Trans 14 Dec 44 (3020-B)," apparently references to when the message was intercepted by American intelligence, its original language (Japanese), when the message was

received, when it was translated (14 Dec 44), and by whom (3020-B).[29]

The date of this document - after the lest allegedly seen by Hans Zinsser and two days before the beginning of the Battle of the Bulge - must have set off alarm bells in the offices of Allied Intelligence personnel both during and after the war. While it is certainly clear that the Japanese attache in Stockholm seems to be somewhat confused bout the nature of nuclear fission, a number of startling things stand out in the document:

(1) The Germans were, according to the report, using weapons of mass destruction of some type on the Eastern Front, but had apparently for some reason refrained from using them on the Western Allies;

(a) The areas specifically mentioned were Kursk, in the approximate location of the southern pincer of the German offensive, which took place in July, and not June, of 1943, and the Crimean peninsula;

(b)The time mentioned was 1943, though since the only major action to have occurred in the Crimea was in 1942 with the massive German artillery bombardment, one must also conclude that the time frame stretched back into 1942; (At this juncture is it worth pausing to consider briefly the German siege of the Russian fortress of Sevastopol, scene of the most colossal artillery bombardment of the war, as it bears directly on the interpretation of this intercept.

The siege was led by Colonel-General (later Field Marshal) Erich Von Manstein's 11th Army. Von Manstein assembled 1,300 artillery pieces - the largest concentration of heavy and super-heavy artillery deployed by any Power during the war - and pounded Sevastopol with this mighty

[29]Edgar Mayer and Thomas Mehner, Hitler und die ,,Bombe" (Rottenburg: Kopp Verlag, 2002), pp. 110-114, emphasis added, citing "Stockholm to Tokyo, No. 232.9 December 1944 (War Department), National Archives, RG 457, SRA 14628-32, declassified October 1, 1978.

arsenal twenty-four hours a day for five clays. These were no ordinary heavy field pieces.

> Two mortar regiments - the 1st Heavy Mortar Regiment and the 70th Mortar Regiment - as well as the 1st and 4th Mortar Battalions, had been concentrated in front of the fortress under the special command of Colonel Nieman - altogether 21 batteries with 576 barrels, including the batteries of the 1st Heavy Mortar regiment with the 11- and 12 1/2 inch high explosive and incendiary oil shells...

Even these monsters were not the largest pieces deployed at Sevastopol. Several of the 16 1/2 inch "Big Bertha" Krupp cannon and their old Austrian Skoda counterparts were massed against the Russian positions, along with the even more colossal "Karl" and "Thor" mortars, gigantic self-propelled 24 inch mortars firing shells that weighed over two tons.

> But even "Karl" was not quite the last word in gunnery. That last word was stationed at Bakhchisary, in the "Palace of Gardens" of the ancient residence of the Tartar Khans, and was called "Dora," or occasionally "Heavy Gustav." It was the heaviest gun of the last war. Its caliber was 31 1/2 inches. Sixty railway carriages were needed to transport the parts of the monster. Its 107-foot barrel ejected high-explosive projectiles of 4800 kg - i.e., nearly five tons - over a distance of 29 miles. Or it could hurl even heavier armour-piercing missiles, weighing seven tons, at targets nearly 24 miles away. The missile together with its cartridge measured nearly twenty-six feet in length. Erect that would be about (the) height of a two-storey house....
>
> These data are sufficient to show that here the conventional gun had been enlarged to gigantic, almost super-dimensional scale - indeed, to a point where one might question the economic return obtained from such a weapon. Yet one single round from "Dora" destroyed an ammunition dump in Severnaya Bay at Sevastopol although it was situated 100 feet below ground.[30]

---

[30] Paul Carrell, Hitler Moves East, 1941-1943 (Ballantine Books, 1971) pp. 501-503, emphasis added. So horrendous was the bombardment from this

Why are these details significant? First, note the reference to "incendiary oil shells." These shells are the indication that unusual weaponry was deployed by the Germans at Sevastopol and delivered through conventional - though quite large - artillery pieces. The German Army did possess such shells and deployed the frequently and with no little effectiveness on the Eastern Front.

But might there have been an even more fearsome weapon? In subsequent chapters we will present evidence that the Germans indeed developed an early version of a modern "fuel-air" bomb, a conventional explosive with the explosive power of a tactical nuclear weapon. Given the great weight of such projectiles, and the German lack of sufficient heavy-lift aircraft to deliver them, it is possible if not likely that super-heavy artillery was used to deploy them. This would also explain another curiosity in the Japanese military attache's statement: the Germans apparently did not deploy weapons of mass destruction against cities, but only against military targets that would have been within the range of such weapons. We may now resume with the analysis of the Japanese statement.}

(2) The Germans may have been seriously pursuing the hydrogen bomb, since reactions of the nuclei of heavy water atoms - containing deuterium and tritium - are essential in thermonuclear fusion reactions, a point highlighted by the Japanese delegate(though he confuses these reactions with fission reactions of atom bombs), and corroborated by Fritz Houtermans' pre-war work in the thermonuclear fusion process at work in stars;

---

massed heavy and super-heavy artillery that the German General Staff estimated that over 500 rounds fell on Russian positions per second during the five days' artillery and aerial bombardment, a massive expenditure of ammunition. The rain of steel on the Russian positions pulverized Russian morale and was often so thunderous that eardrums burst. At the end of the battle, the city and environs of Sevastopol were ruined, two entire Soviet armies had been obliterated, and over 90,000 prisoners were taken, (pp. 501-502, 511)

(3) The enormous temperatures of atom bombs are used as detonators in conventional hydrogen bombs;

(4) In desperation the Russians appeal to have been ready to resort to the use of poison gas against the Germans if they did not "cease and desist";

(5) The Russians believe the weapons to have been "poison gas" of some sort, either a cover story put out by the Russians, or a result of field reports being made by Russian soldiers who were ignorant of the type of weapon deployed against them;[31] and finally, and most sensationally,

(6) According to the Japanese cable, the Germans appeared to have gained their specialized knowledge via some connection to the star system of Sirius and that knowledge involved some exotic form of very dense matter, a statement that strains credulity even today.

It is this last point that directs our attention to the most fantastic and arcane recesses of wartime German secret weapons research, tor if the allegation has even a partial basis in truth, then it indicates that at some highly secret level, physics, and the esoteric, were being pursued by the Nazi regime in some very extraordinary ways.[32] In this regard it is important to note that the extreme density of the material described by the Japanese envoy resembles nothing so much as a construct of modern post-war theoretical physics called "dark matter". In all likelihood his report greatly overestimates the mass of this material - if it existed at all - but nonetheless it is crucial to observe that it is material far beyond the ordinary density of matter.

---

[31] The detail of "charred bodies" and exploded ammunition certainly point to non-conventional weaponry. A fuel-air device would at least account for the charring. The tremendous heat produced by such a bomb could also conceivably detonate ammunition. Likewise, radioactive burns with its characteristic blistering effects might well have been misunderstood by Russian field soldiers and officers, who would most likely not have been familiar with nuclear energy, as the effects of poison gas.

[32] To anyone familiar with the wealth of material on alternative research into the Giza compound in Egypt, the reference to Sirius will immediately conjure images of Egyptian religion, its preoccupation with death, with the Osiris myth, and to the Sirian star system.

Strangely, the German-Sirian connection pops up again, long alter the war, in an unusual context. In my previous book, The Giza Death Star Deployed, I mentioned the research of Robert Temple into the mysterious African Dogon tribe, a tribe of primitive peoples that nonetheless appears to have preserved an accurate knowledge of the Sirian star system for many generations, from a period long before modern astronomy knew anything about it. In that book, I noted that

> Temple also alleges serious Soviet KGB and American CIA and NSA interest in his book.... An odd mention, perhaps significant in the light of our later discussion of possible German involvement in scalar physics research during World War Two and after, is Temple's allegation that Baron Jesco von Puttkamer wrote him a denunciatory letter on NASA stationary, only later to retract that, stating that it did not represent an official NASA position. Temple believes that Puttkamer was one of the Germans brought to the USA during the notorious Operation Paper Clip in the days immediately following the Nazi surrender (pp. 9-10).[33]

As I then go on to observe in that book, Karl Jesco von Puttkamer was no ordinary German, being a member of Adolf Hitler's military staff throughout the war as his naval adjutant to staff, beginning the war with the rank of captain and ending with the rank of admiral. Puttkamer was subsequently employed by NASA.

So the investigation of the German atom bomb, via this recently declassified Japanese cable, has already led us far afield, into a realm of frightening potentialities, into a world of fuel-air bombs, gigantic artillery delivery systems, super-dense matter, the hydrogen bomb, and what seems to be a curious blend of mystical esotericism and Egyptology, and physics.

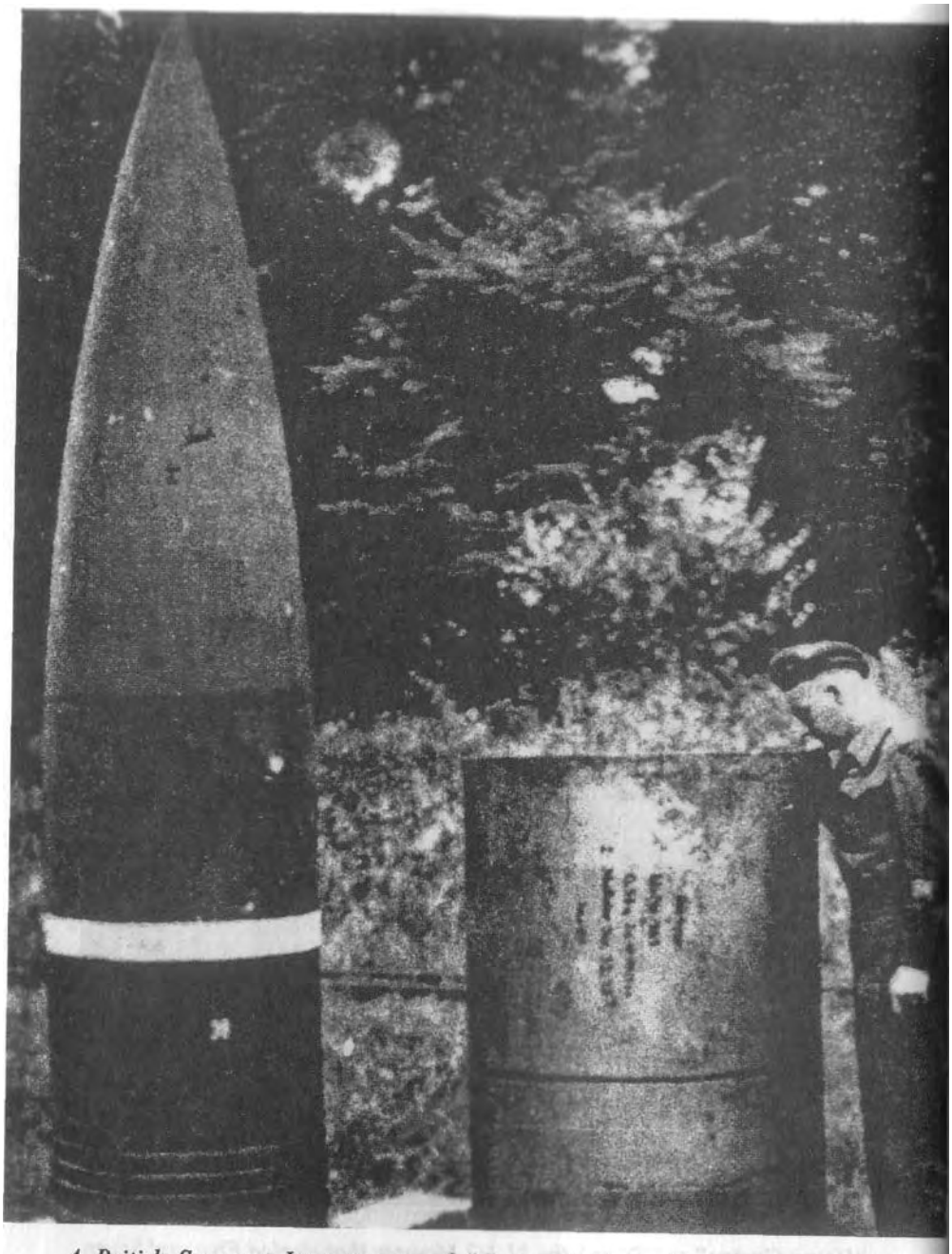
Was there a German bomb? In the above context, the question seems almost plain and ordinary. If so, then given the extraordinary reports that leaked out from time to time from the Eastern Front, what other even more secret research lay behind their atom bomb projects, for evidently such research there was?

---

[33] Joseph P. Farrell, The Giza Death Star Deployed (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2003, p. 81).

But exotic super dense matter or not, according to some versions of the Allied Legend, the Germans never had enough fissile weapons grade uranium to begin with. We will now investigate the problem of the "missing uranium."

"Heavy Gustav " or "Dora " the 31 1/2 Monster that Hurled Five and Seven Ton Projectiles Against Sevastopol:
Were they Conventional Rounds, or Fuel-Air Bombs?



A British Sergeant Inspects one of "Gustav's" Seven Ton Armor Piercing Projectiles

3.

U-234, U^{235}, AND THE STRANGE CASE OF THE MISSING URANIUM

"The traditional history denies, however, that the uranium on board U-234 was enriched and therefore easily usable in an atomic bomb. The accepted theory asserts there is no evidence that the uranium stocks of U-234 were transferred into the Manhattan Project... And the traditional history asserts that the bomb components on board (the) U-234 arrived too late to be included in the atomic bombs that were dropped on Jepan.

"The documentation indicates quite differently on all accounts. "

Carter P. Hydrick, Critical Mass: The Real Story of the Atomic Bomb and the Birth of the Nuclear Age.'

In December of 1944, an unhappy report is made to some unhappy people: "A study of the shipment of (bomb grade uranium) for the past three months shows the following....: At present rate we will have 10 kilos about February 7 and 15 kilos about May 1."[2] This was bad news indeed, for a uranium based atom bomb required between 10-100 kilograms by the earliest estimates (ca. 1942), and, by the time this memo was written, about 50 kilos, the more accurate calculation of critical mass needed to make an atom bomb from uranium.

One may imagine the consternation this memo must have caused at headquarters. The was, perhaps, a considerable degree of yelling and screaming and finger pointing and other histrionics, interlarded with desperate orders to re-double efforts amid the fire-tinged skies of the war's Wagnerian Gotterdammerung.

---

[1] Carter Hydrick, Critical Mass: the Real Story of the Atomic Bomb and the Birth of the Nuclear Age, Internet published manuscript, www.3dshort.com/nazibomb2/CRITICALMASS.txt, 1998, p. 6.

[2] Ibid., p. 11.

The problem, however, is that the memo is not German at all. It originates within the Manhattan Project on December 28, 1944, from Eric Jette, the chief metallurgist at Los Alamos. One may imagine the desperation it must have triggered, however, since the Manhattan Project had consumed two billion dollars all in the pursuit of plutonium and uranium atom bombs. By this time it was of course apparent that there were significant and seemingly insurmountable problems in designing a plutonium bomb, for the fuses available to the Allies were simply far too slow to achieve the uniform compression of a plutonium core within the very short span of time needed to initiate uncontrolled nuclear fission.

That left the uranium bomb as the more immediately feasible alternative - as the Germans had discovered years earlier - to the acquisition of a functioning weapon within the projected span of the war. Yet, after a veritable hemorrhage of dollars in pursuit of the latter objective, the Manhattan Project was far short of the necessary critical mass for a uranium bomb. And with the inevitability of an invasion of Japan looming, the pressure on General Leslie Groves to produce results was immense.

The lack of a sufficient stockpile, after years of concerntrated all-out effort, was in part explainable, for two years earlier Fermi had been successful in construction of the first functioning atomic reactor. That success had spurred the American project to commit more seriously to the pursuit of a plutonium bomb. Accordingly, some of the precious and scarce refined and enriched uranium 235 coming out of Oak Ridge and Lawrence's beta calutrons was being siphoned off as feedstock for enrichment and transmutation into plutonium in the breeder reactors constructed at Handford, Washington for the purpose. Thus, some of the fissionable uranium stockpile had been deliberately diverted for plutonium production.[3] The decision was a logical one and the Manhattan Project decision-makers cannot be faulted to taking it. The reason is simple. Pound for weapons grade pound, a pound of plutonium will produce more bombs than a pound of uranium. It thus made economic sense to convert enriched uranium to plutonium, for more bombs would be possible with the same amount of material.

---

[3] Hydrick, op. cit, p. 12.

But in December of 1944, having pursued both options, General Leslie Groves now stood on the verge of losing both gambles. And let us not forget what had just happened in I urope to sour the mood of "those in the know" in the United States even further. There, six months after the Allied landings in Normandy and the headlong dash across France, Allied armies had stalled on the borders of the Reich. Allied intelligence analysts confidently reassured the generals that no further significant German military offensive was possible, and their optimism was reflected in the general mood of the citizenry in France, Britain, and the United States.

The mood was brutally shattered when, on December 16, 1944, the German Army and Luftwaffe mounted one last, desperate offensive with secretly husbanded reserves in the Ardennes forest, scene of their 1940 triumph against France. Within a matter of hours, the offensive had broken through American lines, surrounded, captured, or otherwise decimated the entire 116th American infantry division, and days later, surrounded the 101st Airborne division at Bastogne, and appeared well on the way to crossing the Meuse River at Namur. On December 28, 1944, when the memo was written, the German offensive had been stalled, but not stopped.

For the Allied officers privy to intelligence reports and "in the loop" on the Manhattan Project, the offensive was possibly seen as confirmation of their worst fears: the Germans were close to a bomb, and were trying to buy time. The horrible thought in the back of every Allied scientist's and engineer's head must have been that after all the Allied military successes of the previous years, the race for the bomb could still be won by the Germans. And if they were able to produce enough of them to put unbearable pressure on any one of the Western Allies, the outcome of the war itself was still in doubt. If, for example, the Germans had a-bombed British and French cities, it is unlikely that a continuance of the would have been politically feasible for Churchill's wartime coalition government. In all likelihood it would have collapsed. A similar result would have likely occurred in France. And without British and French bases available for supply and forward deployment, the

American military situation on the continent would have become untenable, if not disastrous.

In any case, word of the Manhattan Project's difficulties apparently leaked in the Washington DC political community, for United States Senator James F. Byrnes got in on the act, writing a memorandum to President Franklin D. Roosevelt, and confirming that the Manhattan Project was perceived - at least by some in the know - as being in danger of failure:

SECRET
March 3, 1945

MEMORANDUM FOR THE PRESIDENT

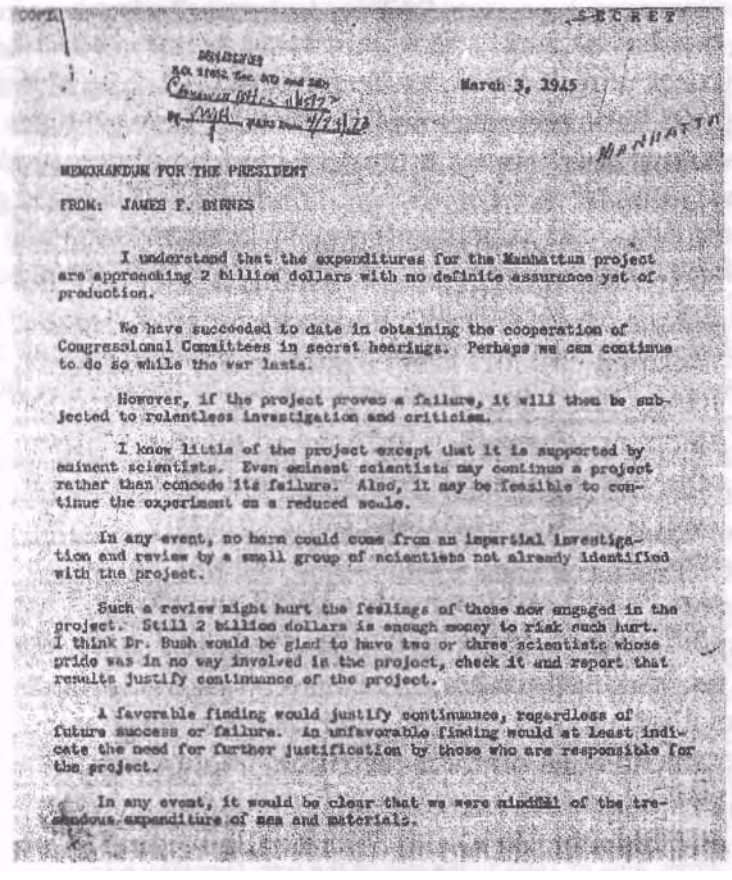
FROM: JAMES F. BYRNES

> I understand that the expenditures for the Manhattan project are approaching 2 billion dollars with no definite assurance yet of production.
>
> We have succeeded to date in obtaining the cooperation of Congressional Committees in secret meetings. Perhaps we can continue to do so while the war lasts.
>
> However, if the project proves a failure, it will be subjected to relentless criticism.[4]

Senator Brynes' memorandum highlights the real problem in the Manhattan Project, and the real, though certainly not publicly known, military situation of the Allies ca. late 1944 and early 1945: that in spite of tremendous conventional military success against the Third Reich, the Western Allies and Soviet Russia could conceivably still be forced to a "draw" if Germany deployed and used atom bombs in sufficient numbers to affect the political situation of the Western Allies. With its stockpile of enriched uranium already depleted by the decision to develop more plutonium for a bomb (which as it turned out was undetonatable

[4] Memorandum of US Senator James F. Byrnes to President Frankliin D. Roosevelt, March 3, 1945, cited in Harald Fath, Geheime Kommandosache - S III Jonastal und die Siegeswaffenproduktion: Weitere spurensuche nach Thuringens Manhattan Project (Schleusingen: Amun Verlag, 2000), p. 41.

with existing British and American fuse technology anyway) and far below that needed for a uranium-based atom bomb, "the entire enterprise



COPY

SECRET

March 3, 1945

MANHATTAN

MEMORANDUM FOR THE PRESIDENT

FROM: JAMES F. BYRNES

I understand that the expenditures for the Manhattan project are approaching 2 billion dollars with no definite assurance yet of production.

We have succeeded to date in obtaining the cooperation of Congressional Committees in secret hearings. Perhaps we can continue to do so while the war lasts.

However, if the project proves a failure, it will then be subjected to relentless investigation and criticism.

I know little of the project except that it is supported by eminent scientists. Even eminent scientists may continue a project rather than concede its failure. Also, it may be feasible to continue the experiment on a reduced scale.

In any event, no harm could come from an impartial investigation and review by a small group of scientists not already identified with the project.

Such a review might hurt the feelings of those now engaged in the project. Still 2 billion dollars is enough money to risk such hurt. I think Dr. Bush would be glad to have two or three scientists whose pride was in no way involved in the project, check it and report that results justify continuance of the project.

A favorable finding would justify continuance, regardless of future success or failure. An unfavorable finding would at least indicate the need for further justification by those who are responsible for the project.

In any event, it would be clear that we were mindful of the tremendous expenditure of men and materials.

Senator Byrnes' March 1945 Memorandum to President Roosevelt

appeared destined for defeat."[5] Not only defeat, but for "those in the know" in late 1944 and early 1945, the possibility was one of ignominious defeat and horrible carnage.

If the stocks of weapons grade uranium ca. late 1944 - early 1945 were about half of what they needed to be after two years of research and production, and if this in turn was the cause of Senator Byrnes' concern, how then did the Manhattan Project acquire the large remaining amount or uranium 235 needed in the few months from March to the dropping of the Little Boy bomb on Hiroshima in August, only five months away? How did it accomplish this feat, if in feet after some three years of production it had only produced less than half of the needed supply of critical mass weapons grade uranium? Where did its missing uranium 235 come from? And how did it solve the pressing problem of the fuses for a plutonium bomb?

Of course the answer if that if the Manhattan Project was incapable of producing enough enriched uranium in that short amount of time - months rather than years - then its stocks had to have been supplemented from external sources, and there is only one viable place with the necessary technology to enrich uranium on that scale, as seen in the previous chapter. That source was Nazi Germany. But the Manhattan Project is not the only atom bomb project with some missing uranium.

Germany too appears to have suffered the "missing uranium syndrome" in the final days prior to and immediately after the end of the war. But the problem in Germany's case is that the missing uranium it not a few tens of kilos, but several hundred tons. At this juncture, it is worth citing Carter Hydrick's excellent research at length, in order to exhibit the full ramifications of this problem:

> From June of 1940 to the end of the war, Germany seized 3,500 tons of uranium compounds from Belgium - almost three times the amount Groves had purchased.... and stored it in salt mines in Strassfurt, Germany. Groves brags that on 17 April, 1945, as the war was winding down, Alsos recovered some 1,100 tons of uranium ore from Strassfurt and an additional 31 tons in Toulouse, France ..... And he claims that the amount recovered was all that Germany had ever held, asserting, therefore, that Germany had never had enough raw material

[5] Hydrick, op. cit, p. 13.

to process the uranium either for a plutonium reactor pile or through magnetic separation techniques.

Obviously, if Strassfurt once held 3,500 tons and only 1,130 were recovered, some 2,370 tons of uranium ore was unaccounted for - still twice the amount the Manhattan Project possessed and is assumed to have used throughout its entire wartime effort.... The material has not been accounted for to this day....

As early as the summer of 1941, according to historian Margaret Gowing, Germany had already refined 600 tons of uranium to its oxide form, the form required for ionizing the material into a gas, in which form the uranium isotopes could then be magnetically or thermally separated or the oxide could be reduced to a metal for a reactor pile. In fact, Professor Dr. Riehl, who was responsible for all uranium throughout Germany during the course of the war, says the figure was actually much higher....

To create either a uranium or plutonium bomb, at some point uranium must be reduced to metal. In the case of plutonium, $U^{238}$is metalicized; for a uranium bomb, U^{235} is metalicized. Because of uranium's difficult characteristics, however, this metallurgical process is a tricky one. The United States struggled with the problem early and still was not successful reducing uranium to its metallic form in large production wuantities until late in 1942. The German technicians, however,... by the end of 1940, had already processed 280.6 kilograms into metal, over a quarter of a ton.[6]

These observations require some additional commentary.

First, it is to be noted that Nazi Germany, by the best available evidence, was missing approximately two thousand tons of unrefined uranium ore by the war's end. Where did this ore go?

Second, it is clear that Nazi Germany was enriching uranium on a massive scale, having refined 600 tons to oxide form for potential metalicization as early as 1940. This would require a large and dedicated effort, with thousands of technicians, and a commensurately large facility or facilties to accomplish the enrichment. The figures, in other words, tend to corroborate the hypothesis outlined in the previous chapter that the I.G. Farben "Buna" factory at Auschwitz was not a Buna factory at all, but a huge uranium enrichment facility. However, the date would imply

[6] Hydrick, op. cit., p. 23, emphasis added.

another such facility, located elsewhere, since the Auschwitz facility did not really begin production until sometime in 1942.

Finally, it also seems clear that the Germans possessed an enormous stock of metallic uranium. But what was the isotope? Was it U^{238} for further enrichment and separation into U^{235}, was it intended perhaps as feedstock for a reactor to be transmuted into plutonium, or was it already U^{235}, the necessary material for a uranium atom bomb? Given the statements of the Japanese military attache in Stockholm cited at the end of the previous chapter - that the Germans may have used an atomic or some other weapon of mass destruction on the Eastern Front ca. 1942-43, and given Zinsser's affidavit cited in the first chapter of an atom bomb test in October of 1944, it cannot be conclusively denied that some of this enormous stockpile may also have been U^{235}, the essential component for a bomb.

In any case, these figures strongly suggest that the Germans, ca. 1940-1942 were significantly ahead of the Allies in one very important aspect of atom bomb production: the enrichment of uranium, and therefore, this suggests also that they were demonstrably ahead in the race for an actual functioning atom bomb during this period. But the figures also raise another disturbing question: where did this uranium go?

One answer lies in the mysterious case of a U-boat, the U-234, captured by the Americans in 1945.

***

The case of the U-234 is well-known in literature about the Nazi atom bomb, and of course the Allied Legend is that none of the material on board the U-boat found its way into the American atom bomb project.

None of this could be further from the truth.

The U-234 was a very large mine-laying U-boat that had been adapted as an undersea freighter to carry large cargoes. Consider then the following "cargo manifest" of the U-234's very odd cargo:

(1) Two Japanese ollicers;[7]
(2) 80 gold-lined cylinders containing 560 kilograms of uranium oxide;[8]
(3) Several wooden cases or barrels full of "water";
(4) I nfrared proximity fuses;
(5) Dr. Heinz Schlicke, inventor of the fuses.

When the U-234 was being loaded with its cargo in Germany for the outward voyage, its radio operator, Wolfgang Hirschfeld, observed the two Japanese officers writing "U^{235}" on the paper wrapping of the cylinders prior to their being loaded into the submarine.[9] Needless to say, this observation has called forth the full range of debunking techniques normally applied by skeptics to UFO sightings: low sun angles, poor lighting, distance was to great to see clearly, etc. etc. This is no surprise, for if Hirschfeld saw what he saw, then the enormous implications were obvious.

The use of gold lined cylinders is explainable by the fact that uranium, a highly corrosive metal, is easily contaminated if it comes into contact with other unstable elements. Gold, whose radioactive shielding properties are as great as lead, is also, unlike lead, a highly pure and stable element, and is therefore the element of choice when storing or shipping highly enriched and pure uranium for long periods of time, such as a voyage.[10] Thus, the uranium oxide on board the U-234 was highly enriched uranium, and most likely, highly enriched U^{235}, the last stage, perhaps, before being reduced to weapons grade or to metalicization for a bomb (if it was already in weapons grade purity). Indeed, if the Japanese officers' labels on

[7] The two officers were Air Force Colonel Genzo Shosi, an engineer, and Navy Captain Hideo Tomonaga. When the captain of the U-234 made known his intentions to surrender the submarine, which was then en route to Japan after the German surrender, the two Japanese officers committed hari-kiri, and were buried at sea with full military honors by the Germans.

[8] Hydrick's comment on the U-234's cargo manifest explains why the U-234 was off limits to the American press following its surrender: "Whoever first read the entry and understood the frightening capabilities and potential purpose of uranium must have been stunned by the entry." (op. cit, p. 7)

[9] Hydrick, op. cit., p. 5.

[10] Ibid., p. 8.

the cylinders were accurate, it is likely that it was at the final stage of purity before metallicization.

The cargo of the U-234 was so sensitive, in fact, that when the U.S. Navy prepared its own cargo manifest for the German submarine on June 16, 1945, the uranium oxide had entirely disappeared from the list.[11] Significantly, within a week of the appearance of the U.S. Navy's version of the U-234's cargo manifest, Oak Ridge's output of enriched uranium very nearly doubled.[12] This in itself is highly suspect, since as late as March of 1945, as we have already seen, a U.S. Senator is worried about the failure of the Manhattan Project, so much so that he writes President Roosevelt a memorandum on the subject, and of course, we have also already seen that the chief metallurgist of Los Alamos laboratory indicates the stock of fissile U^{235} is far short of the needed critical mass, and would remain so for several months.

The conclusion is therefore simple, but frightening: the missing uranium used in the Manhattan Project was German, and that means that Nazi Germany's atom bomb project was much further along that the post-war Allied Legen would have us believe.

But what of the other two items in the U-234's strange cargo manifest, the fuses and their inventor, Dr. Heinz Schilcke? We have already noted that by late 1944 and early 1945, the American plutonium bomb project had run afoul of some nasty mathematics: the critical mass of a plutonium bomb, "imploded" or compressed by surrounding conventional explosives, would have to be assembled within 1/3000th of a second, otherwise the bomb would fail, and only produce a kind of "atomic fizzling firecracker", a "radiological" bomb producing very little explosion but a great deal of deadly radiation. This was a speed far in excess of the capabilities of conventional wire cabling and the ordinary fuses available to the Allied engineers.

It is known that late in the timetable of events leading to the Trinity test of the plutonium bomb in New Mexico that a design modification was introduced to the implosion device that incorporated "radiation venting channels", allowing radiation from

[11] Hydride, op. cit., p. 9.

[12] Ibid., p. 11

the plutonium core to escape and reflect off the surrounding reflectors as the detonator was fired, within billionths of a second after the beginning of compression. There is no possible way to explain this modification other than by the incorporation of Dr. Schlicke's infrared proximity fuses into the final design of the American bomb, since they enabled the fuses to react and fire are the speed of light.[13]

In support of this historical reconstruction, there is a communication from May 25, 1945 from the chief of Naval Operations, to Portsmouth where the U-234 was brought after its surrender, indicating that Dr. Schlicke, now a prisoner of war, would be accompanied by three naval officers, to secure the fuses and bring them to Washington.[14] There Dr. Schlicke was apparently to give a lecture on the fuses under the auspices of a "Mr. Alvarez,"[15] who would appear to be none other than well-known Manhattan Project scientist Dr. Luis Alvarez, the very man who, according to the Allied Legend, "solved" the fusing problem for the plutonium bomb![16]

So it would appear that the surrender of the U-234 to the Americans in 1945 solved the Manhattan Project's two biggest outstanding problems: lack of sufficient supplies of weapons grade uranium, and lack of adequate fusing technology to make a plutonium bomb work. And thhis means that in the final analysis the Allied Legend about the Germans having been "far behind" the Allies in the race for the atom bomb is simply a incorrect in the extreme in the best case, or a deliberate lie in the worst. But the fuses raise another frightening specter: What were the Germans developing such highly sophisticated fuses for? Infrared heat-seeking rockets, which they had developed, would be one answer,

---

[13] Q.v. Hydrick, op. cit, pp. 46-51, for a detailed discussion of this issue and the historical problems it poses for the Allied Legend.

[14] Ibid., p. 46.

[15] Ibid.

[16] As I observed in my previous book, The Giza Death Star Deployed, Dr. Luis Alvarez also had some other strange distinctions to his credit, being one of the scientists allegedly involved with the alleged Roswell "UFO" crash, the CIA's subsequent "Robertson Panel" in the 1950s on UFOs and government policy, and subsequent cosmic ray experiments inside the 2nd Pyramid at Giza.

and of course an implosion device to compress critical mass would be another.

But what about the other missing German uranium mentioned previously? The mission of the U-234 and its precious cargo thus raises certain other questions, and highlights other possibilities in this regard. It is a fact that throughout the war Germany and Japan both conducted long-range exchanges of officers and technology via aircraft and submarine - the exchange of technology being mostly a one-sided affair from Germany to Japan. It is conceivable that many of these voyages - just as with the U-234 - would have included similar transfers of uranium stocks and high technology to Japan. Some of the missing uranium must therefore surely be looked for in the Far East, in the Japanese atom bomb program.[17]

Similarly, during the war both Germany and Italy undertook long-range flights to Japan, the Germans using their special long-range heavy lift transport aircraft such as the Ju-290 for polar flights. It is conceivable that these flights and their Italian counterparts also involved the exchange of officers and technology, if not a small amount of raw material as well. Some of the missing uranium probably also fell into the hands of the Soviets as the Russian armies steamrollered into Eastern Europe and finally into what would become the Soviet "eastern" zone of occupation in Germany.

But why, after traveelling under radio silence from Germany, did the U-234 finally surrender its precious uranium, fuses, and "water", when its obvious destination was Japan? This is an intriguing question, and one taht unfortunately cannot be answered here except briefly. Again, Carteer Hydrick's superb research elaborates one highly probable hypothesis: U-234 was handed over to the US authorities on the orders of none other than Martin Bormann, in a maneuver designed to secure his and others' freedom after the war, and as part of a deliberate plan to continue Nazism and its agendas and research underground.[18] It is thus, on this view,

---

[17] Q.v. chapter 7.

[18] Q.v. part two. The allegation that Bormann's action was a component of this plan is my own, and not Hydrick's although Hydrick also clearly suggests a connection. This "Bormann hypothesis" of the events leading up to the U-234's

the first visible, and crucial, element of the emerging Operation Paperclip, the transfer of technology ami scientists from the collapsing Third Reich to the United States. There, the German scientists and engineers could, would, and did continue their lines of esoteric research and development of high technology and sophisticated weaponry, with a similar moral and ideological effect on the culture at large as occurred in Nazi Germany.

And finally, of course, as we have already seen, some of the missing uranium ended up in the German atom bomb program itself, enriched, and refined, and probably assembled and tested - if not used - in actual bombs themselves.

---

surrender is a major component of Hydrick's work, spanning several pages of meticulous research.

4.

„MEIN HUT ER HAT DREI ECKEN"; THE TEST SITES

"We still have things that need to be finished, and when they are finished, they will turn the tide "
Adolf Hitler, March 13, 1945, addressing officers of the German Ninth Army.

A. An Unusual Exchange at Nuremberg

At the Nuremberg War Crimes Tribunals after the war, an amazing exchange occurred between former architect cum Nazi minister of armaments, Albert Speer, and Mr. Jackson, the chief American prosecutor.

> JACKSON: Now, I have certain information, which was placed in my hands, of an experiment which was carried out near Auschwitz and I would like to ask you if you heard about it or knew about it.
>
> The purpose of the experiment was to find a quick and complete way of destroying people without the delay and trouble of shooting and gassing and burning, as it had been carried out, and this is the experiment, as I am advised.
>
> A village, a small village was provisionally erected, with temporary structures, and in it approximately 20,000 Jews were put. By means of this newly invented weapon of destruction, these 20,000 people were eradicated almost instantaneously, and in such a way that there was no trace left of them; that is developed, the explosive developed, temperatures of from 400 degrees to 500 degrees centigrade and destroyed them without leaving any trace at all.
>
> Do you know about that experiment?
>
> SPEER: No, and I consider it utterly improbable. If we had had such a weapon under preparation, I should have known about it. But we did not have such a weapon. It is clear that in chemical warfare attempts were made on both sides to carry out research on all the weapons one

could think of, because one did not know which party would start chemical warfare first...[1]

This exchange is remarkable in several respects, not the least of which is that its "explosive contents" are almost entirely overlooked in standard histories of the war and its aftermath.

Previous chapters have presented evidence that there was a large, and very secret, uranium enrichment program inside Nazi Germany, beginning sometime ca. late 1940 or early 1941, and continuing, apparently unabated - as the surrender of the U-234 would imply - right up to the end of the war. Zinsser's affidavit goes further, and alleges an actual atom bomb test, complete with descriptions of all the signatures of an atom bomb: mushroom cloud, electromagnetic pulse effects, and continued combustion of nuclear materials in the cloud. The Japanese military attache in Stockholm further corroborated the story with undeniably fantastic allegations of the German use of some type of weapon of mass destruction on the Eastern Front ca. 1942 (the siege of Sevastopol in the Crimea), to 1943, just days prior to the massive German offensive at Kursk.

Now, at Nuremberg, we have a third corroboration of the use of some type of weapon of awesome explosive power in the east by the Germans, this time from no less an individual than the chief American prosecutor at the Tribunal. And in his case, it is apparent that he is relating information gathered by intelligence. It is worth pausing to consider the implications of the exchange between Jackson and former armaments Reichminister Speer.

We shall begin with Speer. Albert Speer was successor to Dr. Fritz Todt as minister of armaments and production for the entire Third Reich. Speer's accomplishments are not to be gainsaid, it was largely owing to his efforts to organize the huge Nazi industrial capacity and streamline its efficiency that the wartime production of Germany increased dramatically under his oversight. In fact, in all

[1] Cited in Harald Fath, Geheime Kommandosache - S III Jonastal und die Siegeswaffenproduktion: Weitere Spurensuche nach Thuringens Manhattan Project (Schleusingen: Amun Verlag, 1999), pp. 82-83. Original text cited in English.

pertinent areas of German industrial war production, Specr managed to achieve peak production levels in all categories during the same precise period that Allied strategic bombing also was at its height.

His methods in achieving this feat were simple but effective: German industry was decentralized and dispersed into smaller plants, and, to the extent possible, moved into underground bomb-proof factories. "Modular" construction techniques were employed wherever possible. For example, German U-boats were produced in modular fashion, in sections, far inland in such factories, and transported to ports for final assembly. The deadly Type XXI U-boats with their exotic and revolutionary underwater propulsion systems - allowing an underwater cruising speed in excess of 21 knots, an unheard of speed for that time - were produced in this fashion at the end of the war.

But notably absent from Speer's comments is any indication that he was even aware of the huge extent of the German atom-bomb project and its enormous uranium enrichment program. Lofty as his position in the Nazi hierarchy was, it would appear that Speer was entirely in the dark on the programs and totally oblivious to any progress that had been made. The reason for Speer's ignorance will be addressed in due course (and by Speer himself!), but suffice it to say, the German government, like its American counterpart, had rigidly "compartmentalized" its atom bomb production program and placed it under the tightest security. But clearly, by the time of the exchange between Jackson and him, Speer and the whole world had heard of the atom bomb. So Speer appears to obfuscate his answer somewhat by redirecting the topic to chemical warfare.

The question of a revolutionary chemical explosive is not, however, as far-fetched as it might at first seem, for Jackson's comments suggest it by referring to temperatures of 400 to 500 degrees centigrade, far below the enormous temperatures produced by an atomic explosion. Was Speer obfuscating his answer, or was Jackson his question?

The prosecutor's statements and question also corroborate in loose fashion another component of our developing story, for he

clearly alludes to the use of some type of weapon of mass destruction, possessed of enormous explosive power, in the east, and significantly, at or near Auschwitz, site of the I.G. Farben "Buna factory." It is to be noted that the Nazis had apparently gone so Far as to build an entire mock town and placed concentration camp inmates in it, an obvious though barbaric move to study the effects of the weapon on structures and people. His statements, along with those of the Japanese military attache in Stockholm cited in the previous chapter, afford a serious clue - and one often overlooked even by researchers into this 'alternative history" of the war - into the nature of the Nazi's secret weapons development and use, for it would appear that insofar as the third Reich possessed weapons of mass destruction of extraordinary power, atomic or otherwise, they were tested and used against enemies consider by the Nazi ideology to be racially inferior, and that means, in effect, they were used on the Eastern Front theater of the Reich's military operations.

Thus we are also afforded a speculative answer to the all-important question: If the Germans had the bomb, why didn't they use it? And the answer is, if they had it, they were far more likely to use it on Russia than on the Western allies, since the war in the East was conceived and intended by Hitler to be a genocidal war from the outset. And it certainly was that: fully one half of the approximately fifty million fatalities of World War Two were inflicted by the efficient Nazi war machine on Soviet Russia.

The use of such weapons on the Eastern Front by the Germans would also tentatively explain why more is not known about it, for it is highly unlikely that Stalin's Russia would have publicly acknowledged the fact. To do so would have been a propaganda disaster for Stalin's government. Faced with an enemy of superior tactical and operational competence in conventional arms, the Red Army often had to resort to threats of execution against its own soldiers just to maintain order and discipline in its ranks and prevent mass desertion. Acknowledgment of the existence and use of such weapons by the mortal enemy of Communist Russia could conceivably have ruined Russian morale and cost Stalin the war, and perhaps even toppled his government. As we proceed further

into our investigation of German secret weaponry, its connection to Nazi ideology, and its use on the eastern front, we will encounter more and more examples of the strange story or event.

For now, however, we note the strangely ambiguous quality of Mr. Jackson's remarks. "Now I have," he begins, "'certain' information, which was placed in my hands, of an experiment which was carried out near Auschwitz..." By the time Mr. Jackson uttered these remarks, Hans Zinsser's statements were almost a year old, raising the possibility that Zinsser's affidavit may itself have been the "certain information" alluded to by Jackson, who may have intentionally altered its correct location. In this regard, it is significant that Zinsser expressed mystification that the test took place so close to a populated area. If Jackson deliberately altered the location of the test, he did not alter the nature of its victims. But another possibility is that the event took place where he says it did, "near" Auschwitz.

B. A Marshal, Mussolini, and the First Alleged Test Site at Rugen Island

The question of the location of a possible German atom bomb test comes from five very unlikely sources: an Italian officer, a Russian marshal's translator, and Benito Mussolini himself, an American heavy cruiser, and an island off the coast of northern Germany in the Baltic Sea.

Before he and his mistress Clara Petacci were murdered by Communist partisans, and then later hung from meat hooks in Milan to be pelted with rocks from an angry mob. Benito Mussolini, by the end of the war reduced to a mere puppet of Hitler and governing a "Fascist republic" in German-controlled northern Italy, spoke often of the German "wonder weapons":

> The wonder weapons are the hope. It is laughable and senseless for us to threaten at this moment, without a basis in reality for these threats.
>
> The well-known mass destruction bombs are nearly ready. In only a few days, with the utmost meticulous intelligence, Hitler will probably execute this fearful blow, because he will have full

confidence.... It appear, that there are three bombs - and each has an astonishing operation. The construction of each unit is fearfully complex and of a lengthy time of completion.2

It would be easy to dismiss Mussolini's statements as more delusional and insane ravings of a fascist dictator facing defeat, clinging desperately to forlorn hopes and tattered dreams.
It would be easy, were it but for the weird corroboration supplied by one Piotr Ivanovitch Titarenko, a former military translator on the staff of Marshal Rodion Malinovsky, who handled the Japanese capitulation to Russia at the end of the war. As reported in the German magazine Der Spiegel in 1992, Titarenko wrote a letter to the Central Committee of the Communist Party of the Soviet Union. In it, he reported that there were actually three bombs dropped on Japan, one of which, dropped on Nagasaki prior to its actual bombing, did not explode. This bomb was handed over by Japan to the Soviet Union.[3]

Mussolini and a Soviet marshal's military translator are not the only ones corroborating the strange number of "three bombs", for yet a fourth bomb may actually have been in play at one point, being transported to the Far East on board the US heavy cruiser Indianapolis (CA 35), when the latter sank in 1945.[4]

These strange testimonies call into question once again the Allied Legend, for as has been seen, the Manhattan Project in late 1944 and early 1945 faced critical shortages of weapons grade uranium, and had yet to solve the fusing problem for the plutonium bomb. So the question is, if these reports are true, where did the extra bomb(s) come from? That three, and possibly four, bombs were ready for use on Japan so quickly would seem to stretch

---

[2] Benito Mussolini, "Political Testament," April 22, 1945, cited in Edgar Meyer and Thomas Mehner, Hitler und die ,,Bombe": Welchen Stand erreichte die deutsche Atomforschung und Geheimwaffenentwicklung wirklich? (Rottenburg: Kopp Verlag, 2002), p. 87, my translation from the German.

[3] Edgar Meyer and Thomas Mehner, Das Geheimnis der deutschen Atombombe: Gewann Hitlers Wissenschaftler den nuklearen Wettlauf doch? Die Geheimprojekte bei Innsbruck, im Raum Jonastal bei Arnstadt und in Prag. (Rottenburg: Kopp Verlag, 2001), p. 146.

[4] Fath, op. cit., p. 81

credulity, unless these bombs were war booty, brought from Europe.

But the strangest evidence of all comes from the German island of Rugen, and the testimony of Italian officer Luigi Romersa, an eyewitness to the test of a German atom bomb on the island on the night of 11-12 October, 1944, approximately the same time frame as indicated in Zinsser's affidavit, and it is also the same approximate area as Zinsser indicated.

In this context it is also extremely curious that this time frame in 1944 was, for the Allies, a banner year for atomic bomb scares. On Saturday, August 11, 1945, an article in the London Daily Telegraph reported British preparations for German atom bomb attack on London the previous year.

> NAZIS' ATOM BOMB PLANS
> BRITAIN READY A YEAR AGO
>
> Britain prepared for the possibility of an atomic attack on this country by Germany in August, 1944.
>
> It can now be disclosed that details of the expected effect of such a bomb were revealed in a highly secret memorandum which was sent that summer to the chiefs of Scotland Yard, chief constables of provincial forces and senior officials of the defence services.
>
> An elaborate scheme was drawn up by the Ministry of Home Security for prompt and adequate measures to cope with the widespread devastation and heavy casualties if the Germans succeeded in launching atomic bombs on this country.
>
> Reports received from our agents on the Continent early last year indicated that German scientists were experimenting with an atomic bomb in Norway. According to these reports the bomb was launched by catapult, and had an explosive radius of more than two miles.
>
> In view of our own progress in devising an 'atomic' bomb the Government gave the reports serious consideration. Thousands of men and women of the police and defence services were held in readiness for several months until reliable agents in Germany reported that the bomb had been tested and proved a failure.[5]

[5] "Nazis Atom Bomb Plans," London Daily Telegraph, Saturday, August 11, 1945, cited in Edgar Meyer and Thomas Mehner, Hitler und die ,,Bombe", p. 37.

NAZIS' ATOM BOMB PLANS

BRITAIN READY A YEAR AGO

Britain prepared for the possibility of an atomic bomb attack on this country by Germany in August, 1944.

It can now be disclosed that details of the expected effect of such a bomb were revealed in a highly secret memorandum which was sent that summer to the chiefs of Scotland Yard, chief constables of provincial forces and senior officials of the defence services.

An elaborate scheme was drawn up by the Ministry of Home Security for prompt and adequate measures to cope with the widespread devastation and heavy casualties expected if the Germans succeeded in launching atomic bombs on this country.

Reports received from our agents on the Continent early last year indicated that German scientists were experimenting with an atomic bomb in Norway. According to these reports the bomb was launched by catapult, and had an explosive radius of more than two miles.

In view of our own progress in devising an "atomic" bomb, the Government gave the reports serious consideration. Thousands of men and women of the police and defence services were held in readiness for several months until reliable agents in Germany reported that the bomb had been tested and proved a failure.

The August 1945 London Daily Telegraph Article about a 1944 German Atom Bomb Scare in Britain

This article, coming as it does a mere two days after the bombing of Nagasaki, and almost a year since the actual alert in Britain was called, deserves careful scrutiny.

First, and most obviously, the alert in Britain was apparently conducted entirely in secret, as law enforcement, defense, and medical personnel were placed on high alert. The reason for security is obvious, since to have signaled a public alert would have notified the Germans that there were Allied spies close enough to the German bomb program to know about its tests.

Second, the site of the alleged test - Norway - is unusual in that the timing of the test would place it a full two years after the British commando raid on the Norsk heavy water plant at Ryukon. This might indicate two things:

(1) It might indicate that Hitler's interest in maintaining troops in Norway had more to do with the German atom bomb project than anything else, since, if the report was accurate to begin with, it would indicate a large scale German atom bomb effort was underway there;
(2) Conversely, the report may have been deliberately inaccurate, i.e., there may really have been a test, but one that took place somewhere else.

Third, the presumed "alert" continued from August 1944 "for several months," that is, the alert could conceivably have stretched into October, i.e., into the time frame of the test mentioned in Zinsser's affidavit. Thus, the news account indicates something else: Allied intelligence was aware, and genuinely fearful, of German atom bomb testing.

Fourth, the article mentions that the test concerned a bomb launched from a "catapult". The V-l "buzz bomb", the first generation of the cruise missile, was launched from large steam-driven catapults. Putting two and two together, then, the "Norway" test may have been a test of an atom bomb delivery system based on the V-l, or of an atom bomb itself, or possibly both an atom bomb and its delivery system.

With these thoughts in mind, we come to the final point. The alert was canceled when the test was proven a failure. The question is, what failed? Was it the bomb itself? The delivery system? or both?

An answer lies, perhaps, in another curious news article that appeared in the British press almost a year earlier, on Wednesday, October 11, 1944, in the London Daily Mail:

> BERLIN IS 'SILENT' 60 HOURS
> STILL NO PHONES
>
> STOCKHOLM, Tuesday
>
> Berlin is still cut off from the rest of Europe to-night. The 60-hours silence began on Sunday morning - and still there is no explanation for the hold-up, which has now lasted longer than on any previous occasion.
>
> The Swedish Foreign Office is unable to ring up its Berlin Legation.
>
> Unconfirmed reports suggest that the major crisis between the Wehrmacht and the Nazi Party has come to a head and that "tremendous events may be expected."
>
> To-day's plane from Berlin to Stockholm arrived four hours late. It carried only Germans, two of whom appeared to be high officials. They looked drawn and pale, and when Swedish reporters approached them they angrily thrust their way out of the Swedish Aero-Transport offices, muttering: "Nothing we can say."
>
> German papers arriving here on to-day's plane seem extraordinarily subdued, with very small headlines.
>
> It is pointed out, however, in responsible quarters that if the stoppage were purely the technical result of bomb damage, as the Germans claimed, it should have been repaired by now.[6]

[6] Walter Farr, "Berlin is 'Silent' 60 Hours: Still No Phones," London Daily Mail, Wednesday, October 11, 1944, cited in Meyer and Mehner, Hitler und die ,,Bombe" p. 81, emphasis added.

Mail

AND EMPIRE WEDNESDAY, OCTOBER 11, 1944

DIE' ULTIMA REICH CITY

BERLIN IS 'SILENT' 60 HOURS

Still No Phones

From WALTER FARR,
Daily Mail Special Correspondent

STOCKHOLM, Tuesday.

BERLIN is still cut off by phone from the rest of Europe to-night. The 60-hours silence began on Sunday morning—and still there is no explanation for the hold-up, which has now lasted longer than on any previous occasion.

The Swedish Foreign Office is unable to ring up its Berlin Legation.

Unconfirmed reports suggest that the major crisis between the Wehrmacht and the Nazi Party has come to a head and that "tremendous events may be expected."

To-day's plane from Berlin to Stockholm arrived four hours late. It carried only Germans, two of whom appeared to be high officials. They looked drawn and pale, and when Swedish reporters approached them they angrily thrust their way out of the Swedish Aero-Transport offices, muttering: "Nothing we can say."

German papers arriving here on to-day's plane seem extraordinarily subdued, with very small headlines.

It is pointed out, moreover, in responsible quarters that if the stoppage were purely the technical result of bomb damage, as the Germans claimed, it should have been repaired by now.

Russia Attacks with 7 Armies

POISED FOR E. PRUSSIA

SEVEN Soviet armies, estimated by the Germans to total 1,000,000 men, are surging through Lithuania to gain vantage points for the all-out assault on East Prussia.

A thousand tanks are leading the onslaught, which at one point has reached the Baltic south of Libau, 50 miles north of Memel, and so cut off the 150,000 men of the German northern Baltic armies.

South of this attack, another Red Army column has seized a town only eight miles from the borders of East Prussia.

Side by side with these thrusts, the Russians are maintaining the full fury of their frontal assaults on the ports of Libau and Memel, and, according to Berlin, have brought up "numerous fresh tank and infantry forces."

Some Red Army troops are now within 11 miles of Memel itself.

Theiss Crossed

At the southern end of the front, the Red Army is speeding on Budapest, and, according to Berlin, has crossed the River Theiss, one of the chief barriers in front of the Hungarian capital.

Berlin admitted last night that the Russians established "a string of bridgeheads" over the river, but

Hitler Will Fight to the Death

Guns, Dogs Guard Berchtesgaden

From CHALLINOR JAMES,
Daily Mail Correspondent

GENEVA, Tuesday.

HITLER, now suffering from frequent nervous

The October 1944 Daily Mail Article about Berlin Telephone Service Disruption

Of course we now know what was not known in October of 1944: when an atomic or thermonuclear bomb is detonated, the extreme electromagnetic pulse knocks out or interferes with electrical equipment for miles from the detonation site, depending on the size of the blast, the proximity of such equipment to it, and the degree of "shielding" such equipment has. For the normal, non-military phone lines in Berlin, the strange disruption of phone service is explainable precisely as the result of such an electromagnetic pulse. But this would imply that such a pulse, if the result of an atom bomb test, be considerably closer to Berlin than Norway. Presumably if telephone service in Berlin was affected by an atom bomb test in Norway, similar disruptions would have occurred in large cities that were much closer to the test, such as Oslo, Copenhagen, or Stockholm. Yet, not such disruptions are mentioned; only Berlin appears to have been affected.[7]

Thus, if the atom bomb test mentioned in the 1945 London Daily Telegraph article occurred, then one must look for a site considerably closer to Berlin than Norway. The Daily Mail phone service disruption article stands as clear corroboration of the probable test of a German atom bomb sometime in October of 1944, the same time frame as Zinsser's affidavit, and within the time frame mentioned in the Daily Telegraph article about a secret alert in Britain from August of 1944, and continuing for "several months."

But the Daily Mail's phone service disruption article does more: it suggests why the Germans may have considered the test a failure. At that time the effects of nuclear explosions - electromagnetic pulse and disruption of electrical equipment, radioactivity and fallout - were still largely unknown and not well understood. The Berlin telephone service was one of the finest, if not the finest, in the world at the time.[8] The Nazis may very well

---

[7] There is another possibly, though extremely unlikely explanation, for the lack of reports in other cities. Very simply, it may reflect a lack of intelligence from those areas.

[8] Up to the very end of the war, for example, the cable lines between Berlin and Tokyo remained open, allowing the Japanese to send condolences to the Nazi government even as Russian tanks were rolling over the streets of the city.

have been shocked at this curious result of their alleged test of an atomic "wonder weapon", and therefore considered it a "failure" until more tests could be done and the phenomenon of electro-magnetic pulse more fully understood. After all, it would do no good, so to speak, to deploy the "ultimate weapon" only to be unable to receive the telephone call of surrender after having used it! And to the totalitarian and paranoid Nazi state, a disruption of communications from its capital city to its provinces, armed forces, and occupied territories was literally an unthinkable nightmare, being the perfect opportunity for a coup d'etat.

Finally, to round out the newspaper scavenger hunt, a curious series of articles from the London Times between May 15 and May 25, 1945, covered a story about German troops on the Danish Baltic Sea island of Bornholm that refused to surrender to attacking Russian forces.[9] Bornholm was within one hundred miles of the German rocket site at Peenemunde, and quite close to an alleged atom bomb test site on the small island of Rugen on the Baltic coast close to the port city of Kiel.

It is here on this island that Italian officer Luigi Romersa was the guest and eyewitness to a German "wonder weapon" test on the night of October 11-12, 1944. After journeying by a night drive for two hours in the rain from Berlin, Romersa reached the island by motorboat. According to his statements to German atom bomb researchers Edgar Meyer and Thomas Mehner, the island was guarded by a special elite unit, which we can only presume was an SS unit, and that admission to the island was only granted by special passes issued directly by the OberKommano Der

---

Most communications lines in Berlin were laid underground by the Deutsche Reichspost before the war for the express purpose of mitigating phone service disruption during bombing attacks. If the phone service disruption was therefore a result of EMP from a nuclear detonation, then the size of the detonation would have to have been rather large to cause this lengthy disruption of the entire city's telephone service for that length of time, shielded as the lines were by being underground. The other alternative, a second coup attempt, may be a possible explanation, but there is no mention of such an attempt in any literature.

[9] Meyer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis der deutschen Atombombe, p. 51.

Wehrmacht (OKW).[10] At this point, it is best to cite Romersa's own words:

> There were four of us: my two attendants, a man with worker's clothes, and I. "We will see a test of the disintegration bomb.[11] It is the most powerful explosive that has yet been developed. Nothing can withstand it," said one of them. He hardly breathed. He glanced at his watch and waited until noon, the hour for the experiment. Our observation post was a kilometer from the point of the explosion. "We must wait here," the man with the worker's clothes ordered, "until this evening. When it is dark we may leave. The bomb gives off deathly rays, of utmost toxicity. its effective area is much larger than the most powerful conventional bomb. Around 1.5 kilometers...."
>
> Around 4:00 PM, in the twilight, shadows appeared, running toward our bunker. They were soldiers, and they had on a strange type of "diving suit". They entered and quickly shut the door. "Everything is kaput," one of them said, as he removed his protective clothing. We also eventually had to put on white, coarse, fibrous cloaks. I cannot say what material this cloak was made of, but I had the impression that it could have been asbestos, the headgear had a piece of mica-glass[12] in front of the eyes.

Having donned this clothing, the observation party then left the bunker and made its way to ground zero:

> The houses that I had seen only an hour earlier had disappeared, broken into little pebbles of debris, as we drew nearer ground zero,[13] the more fearsome was the devastation. The grass had the same color as leather, the few trees that still stood upright had no more leaves.[14]

There are peculiarities of Romersa's account that one must mention, if this were the test of nuclear bomb. First, some of the blast damage described is typical for a nuclear weapon: sheering of trees, obliteration of structures, and so on. The protective clothing

---

[10] Meyer and Mehner, Hitler und die ,,Bombe", p. 64.

[11] "Auflosungsbombe".

[12] "Glimmerglas".

[13] "Explosionspunkt".

[14] Luigi Romersa, private telephone interview with Edgar Meyer and Thomas Mehner, Hitler und die ,,Bombe", pp. 62-66, my translation from the German.

worn by the German technicians as well as the polarized glasses also are typical. And the test does appear to have involved use in a "populated area" with houses and so on, in similar fashion to prosecutor Jackson's exchange with Speer, and Zinsser's own comments in his affidavit. However, Romersa, apparently a careful observer, fails to make any mention of a fusion of soil into silicate glassy material that also normally accompanies a nuclear blast close to the ground.

But whatever was tested at Rugen, it does have enough of the signatures of an atom bomb to suggest that this is, in fact, what it was. Most importantly it is to be noted that it coincides with the time frame of Zinsser's affidavit and the phone service outage in Berlin, and the timing of the British alert.[15] Finally, it is perhaps quite significant that during this same time frame, Adolf Hitler finally signed an order for the development of the atom bomb. In context, this can only mean that he has given approval to develop more of a weapon already tested.[16]

C. The Three Corners (Dreiecken) and the Alleged Test at the Troop Parade Ground at Ohrdruf

A more controversial allegation, however, concerns the alleged test of a high yield atom bomb by the SS at the troop parade ground and barracks at Orhdruf, in south central Thuringia in March of 1945. As we shall see, this date too is significant. Shortly after the German reunification in 1989, old rumors of an atom bomb test conducted by the SS late in the war in south central Germany, in what was formerly East Germany, again surfaced. The test is alleged to have taken place on March 4, 1945.[17] However, as

---

[15] One significant difference that does emerge is that Zinsser's affidavit places the test close to the hours of twilight, whereas Romersa has it taking place in full daylight. The latter would make sense, from a security point of view, since daylight would tend to mask the visibility of the blast more effectively from prying eyes in the distance.

[16] Rose, op. cit., notes that Hitler actually gave a formal order in October of 1944 for the immediate development of the atom bomb.

[17] Meyer and Mehner, Hitler und die „ Bombe " , p. 226.

we shall soon see, there is an additional problem associated with the allegation of this test near the Three Corners.

The Three Corners part of the story begins with a component of the Allied Legend. According to former Last German sources, one plausible reason for the swift advance of US General Patton's divisions on this region of Thuringia was that the last Fuhrer Headquarters (Fuhrerhauptquartier), a facility code-named "Jasmine" by the Germans, was located in the vast underground facilities at Jonastal.[18] "There exists an American document, under point number four, that informs us that the last (Fuhrer Headquarters) was not at the Obersalzburg, but in the region of Ohrdruf,"[19] that is, in the region of the Three Corners. Thus, the Legend is elaborated: Patton's drive was to cut off the escape route of fleeing Nazis and seize Hitler's last secret underground headquarters, and, presumably, the Grand Prize himself. This entire facility was part of a vast complex of underground sites under the command structure of the SS, and named "S III" - a designation not without its own suggestive possibilities as we shall discover in subsequent parts of this work - and the Fuhrer Headquarters was but one component of this complex.[20]

The problem with the view that this complex was simply a headquarters complex is that SS Obergruppenfuhrer Hans Kammler - a man with whom we shall have much to do later in this work - was directly involved in the construction of all facilities in the region since 1942, thus making it unlikely that they were constructed merely for Hitler's last headquarters, since Kammler was directly involved with the most sensitive areas of the Reich's secret weapons research and development. It is therefore more likely that they were a part of Kammler's vast SS Secret weapons black projects empire.[21] There is no mention of any of these facilities in surviving German archives, or, seemingly, any where else for that matter, and yet, they are definitely there for all to see.[22]

---

[18] Meyer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis der deutschen Atombombe, p. 209.
[19] Meyer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis, p. 207.
[20] Ibid., p. 213., "Report of Mr. Oskar Muhlheim, Bad Durenberg."
[21] Ibid., p. 239.
[22] Ibid., p. 240.

So what were these facilities researching? Almost nothing was known about them until witnesses and relatives of witnesses began to talk after German reunification. One such man was Adolf Bernd Freier who, before his death in Argentina, wrote German researchers Edgar Meyer and Thomas Mehner a letter detailing his knowledge of the facilities gained while he was on the construction staff. There were, Freier alleged, facilities dedicated to special circular aircraft(!), to the "Amerika Raket", the intercontinental ballistic missile capable of reaching the United States, and research facilities of atomic experiments under the direction of Dr. Kurt Diebner, and a complete underground factory for the production of heavy water![23]

But most importantly, Freier alleges that the "atomic weapon" was ready on July 2, 1944![24] What type of atomic weapon is meant here? A "dirty" radiological bomb, designed to spray a vast area with deadly radioactive material but far short of an actual nuclear fission bomb? Or an actual atom bomb itself? Freier's choice of words is not clear. But one thing does stand out, and that is the date of July 2, 1944, the same month as the attempt to assassinate Adolf Hitler in the - very aptly named - "Bomb Plot" approximately two weeks later. The consequence of a successful German development of even a radiological bomb might thus be one of the primary motivations for the anti-Hitler conspirators to attempt to remove the Fuhrer when they did, and might explain their hidden logic in assuming that the Allies would negotiate with an anti-Nazi (or at least un-Nazi) provisional German government in spite of the Allies' own demands for an unconditional surrender, for the possession of such a weapon would have given the conspirators considerable negotiation leverage. And if the conspirators knew of the existence of the weapon, and of Hitler's plans to deploy it in actual use, it may have been the final moral compulsion for them to act.

---

[23] Meyer and Mehner, das Geheimnis., p. 242.

[24] Ibid., p. 245. According to Freier's allegations, the bomb was ready on July 2, 1944, but not its delivery system, meaning presumably the "Amerikaraket" (p. 249).

In any case, the most problematical aspect of the alleged test of an atom bomb by the Nazis in the Ohrdruf-Three Corners region of Thuringia comes from a rather specific, and rather startling, assertion. According to Freier, the test took place on March 4, 1945 at the old troop parade ground at Orhdruf. There, a small scaffold about 6 meters high had been erected, a the top of which a small "atomic weapon"[25] was placed. The weapon, according to Freier, was "100 g", a mere one hundred grams!

This is one of the most significant, and highly problematical, allegations regarding the real nature of the Nazi atom bomb project, made by someone supposedly involved in it, for as will be immediately obvious, 100 grams is far short of the 50 or so kilograms of critical mass reportedly needed for a uranium-based atom bomb, as has been seen, and it is still well below the amount needed for the critical mass for a typical plutonium bomb. Yet, Freier is insistent upon this point, and moreover alleges that all the "slaves", the luckless concentration camp victims that were forced to take part in the test, within a circle of 500-600 meters from ground zero were killed.[26] This would give an area of approximately 1 to 1.2 kilometers of blast damage, roughly the effect of a modern tactical nuclear bomb. Such a blast radius would require an enormous amount of the then available conventional explosives, and that amount would far exceed the mere 100 grams Freier alleges for the device. These points indicates that the "A-Waffe" or "atomic weapon" was in fact a fully fledged atom bomb. So how does one explain the extraordinarily small critical mass, especially since the Manhattan Project was aiming for a uranium crititcal mass of around 50 kilograms?

This question deserve serious consideration, for it affords yet another possible clue - if the allegation is to be credited with accuracy - into the real nature of the Nazi atom bomb project. We have seen already that the project was developed under several different and discreet groups for reasons partly due to security, and for reasons partly due to the practical nature of the German

[25] "A -Waffe", the wording again is not "Atombombe" but only A-waffe, or "A-weapon".

[26] Meyer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis, p. 245.

program. For security reason, I believe the "Heisenberg" group and the high-profile names associated with it were deliberately used by the Nazis as the "front" group for public, namely Allied, consumption. The SS security and intelligence apparatus would have undoubtedly concluded, correctly, that these high profile scientists would be high priority targets for Allied intelligence for kidnapping and assassination. Accordingly, it is highly unlikely that the Nazis would have concentrated any genuine atomic bomb secrets or development exclusively in the hands of this group. The very existence of the Allied Legend for so many years after the war is direct testimony to the success of this plan. The real atom bomb development occurred far from the prying eyes of Allied intelligence, under the auspices of the Reichspost and more importantly, under the direct auspices of the SS.

The second facet of the German atom bomb program we have likewise previously encountered: its emphasis on what was practically achievable during the war. Hence, while the Germans knew of the possibilities of plutonium and a plutonium-based atom bomb, and therefore knew that a functioning reactor used to produce plutonium for bombs would thereby enable Germany to develop more bombs for the same investment of fissile material, they also knew that a major technical hurdle lay across the path: the development of a successful reactor in the first place. Thus, as has been previously argued, they opted to develop a uranium-based bomb only, since uranium could be enriched to weapons grade purity without the necessity of the development of a reactor, and since they already possessed the necessary technologies to do so, if employed en masse. Like its American Manhattan Project counterpart, the SS-run program relied on massive numbers of enrichment units to separate and purify isotope.

Now let us extend this line of reasoning further. Germany was also seeking to be able to deploy such bombs as warheads on its rockets. And that meant, given their limited lift capabilities, that the weight of the warheads had somehow to be reduced by several orders of magnitude for the rockets to be able to carry them. And there is an economic factor. Knowing that their industrial capacity would be stained by the effort, even with the help of tens of

thousands of slave laborers from the camp-, another problem may have presented itself to the Germans, a problem illuminated for them by their own knowledge of the possibilities offered by plutonium-based bombs: How does one get more bang for the Reichsmark without the use of plutonium? Is there a way to rely on less uranium in a critical mass assembly than is conventionally thought?

And so we return to Freier's statement of a remarkably small 100 g atom bomb test at Ohrdruf on March 4, 1945. There does exist a method by which much smaller critical masses of fissile material can be used to make a bomb: boosted fission. Essentially, boosted fission simply relies on the introduction of some neutron-producing material - polonium, or heavy hydrogen: deuterium, or even tritium - to release more neutrons into the chain reaction than is actually released by the fissile critical mass assembly by itself. This raises the amount of free neutrons initiating chain reactions in the critical mass, and therefore allows two very important things:

(1) It allows slightly lower purity of fissile material - materially not considered of sufficient purity to be weapons grade without boosted fission - to be used for an actual atom bomb; and,
(2) it requires less actual fissile material for the critical mass assembly to make a bomb.

Thus, "boosted fission" would have afforded the German bomb program a practical way to increase the number of bombs available to them, and a reliable method for achieving an uncontrolled nuclear fission reaction with lower purity of enriched material.[27] it is perhaps quite significant, then, that Freier's testimony concerning the Three Corners underground weapons factories also mentions the existence of an underground heavy water plant in the facilities, for heavy water, of course, contains atoms of deuterium and tritium(heavy hydrogen atoms with one and two extra neutrons in the nucleus respectively).

[27] Q.v. Meyer and Mehner, Hitler, pp. 121-123.

In any case, the test of a small critical mass, boosted fission device of high yield at Ohrdruf on March 4, 1945, is at least consistent with the parameters of the German bomb program and its practical needs. But there are interesting, and intriguingly suggestive, corroborations of the test. According to Freier, Hitler himself was indeed in the Three Corners headquarters for a brief period at the end of march 1945.[28] It is known that Hitler did personally visit and address the officers of the German Ninth Army, operating in that precise area, in March of 1945., and stated to them that there were still things that needed to be "finished", an interesting comment if seen in the light of Freier's allegations that it was not the bomb that Germany needed, but the delivery systems. It does make sense that if there were such a test, that Hitler would have been present as an observer to witness the final success of German science in delivering to him the "ultimate weapon".

But perhaps the most persuasive bit of evidence that there is far more about the end of World War Two than we have been told can be found in two exceedingly odd facts that emerge from the Three Corners region of Thuringia in south central Germany. In a statement made on March 20, 1968, former German General Erich Andress was in the Three Corners region at the end of the war, when suddenly, more American military personnel(who were already occupying the area), arrived with jeeps and heavy transports, and immediately ordered all the buildings and houses in the area to have their windows totally blacked out, leaving one to conclude that the Americans were removing something from the area of great value to them, something they wished no one to see. The second odd fact is even more curious, for it is a fact that, of all the areas in modern Germany, the region of Thuringia, precisely in the area of Jonastal and Ohrdruf, is the region of Germany with the highest concentration of background gamma radiation.[29]

So, what is really signified by the unique exchange of remarks between former Reich Minister of Armaments Albert Speer, and Chief American Prosecutor Jackson at Nuremberg? That Jackson is privy to information similar in nature to reports only recently

---

[28] Meyer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis, p. 228.

[29] Meyer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis, p. 251.

declassiefied is clear from his question. That this information concerns the real nature of German atom bomb research and its - what appear to be astounding achievements completely at variance with the postwar Allied Legend - would also seem to be indicated. And that Albert Speer seems either unwilling to talk about them candidly, or is simply entirely ignorant of them, also seems indisputable. Thus Jackson's question would seem to imply a test of the extent of Speer's knowledge of the program and his complicity in the wo tests at Rugen and Ohrdruf. If the Minister if Armaments for the entire Third Reich knew nothing of it, then indeed, we are dealing with a black Reich within the black Reich, a beast in the belly of the beast, of which even high ranking Nazis such as Speer knew very little, if anything.

The great secret of World War Two, one which the victorious Allies and Russians wish to keep secret to this day, was that Nazi Germany was indisputably first to reach the atom bomb, and was indisputably for a very brief period before the end of the war, the world's very first nuclear power. But why is the Allied and Russian secrecy continued even to the present day? The answer to that disturbing question will be addressed more completely in the subsequent parts of this book, for the answer, disturbing as it is, concerns far more than mere nuclear weapons.

But why didn't the Nazis use their bombs if they had them? The answer to that question has already been partly addressed in this chapter: if they used any weapons of mass destruction, nuclear or Otherwise, they would have been far more likely to have used them in a fashion consistent with their racist and genocidal ideology, as well as against the enemy that was their largest military threat: on the Eastern Front, against the Soviet Union, where a paranoid Stalinist regime would have been loathe to admit to the world or to its own war-savaged people that they faced an enemy with overwhelming technological superiority. Such an admission would likely have so demoralized the Russians, already forced to spend rivers of their own blood in every engagement with the Wehrmacht, that Stalin's regime itself may not have survived such an admission. But why not use them against the Western Allies in the last stages of the war, as the military situation grew increasingly

desperate? There is every indication that the Nazi leadership contemplated just such an operation....

5.

STRANGE MAPS, STRANGE FLIGHTS, AND UNKNOWN CARGOES

"Gerlach goes on to explain that the Nazi party seemed to think that they were working on a bomb and relates how the Party people in Munich were going around from house to house on the 27th or 28th of April last telling everyone that the atomic bomb would be used the following day."
Jeremy Bernstein, Hitler's Uranium Club: The Secret Recordings at Farm Hall[1]

The United States was in a unique position among all the powers involved in World War Two. For the last time in its history, it was able to undertake military operations on a global scale relatively free of the fear of enemy reprisal. Its cities and factories were beyond the reach of any known enemy bomber. Moreover, much of its industrial capacity was located in its interior, far from the northeastern Atlantic States or the Pacific coast. According to conventional wisdom that has been reiterated countless times in numerous standard histories of the war, there was absolutely nothing the United States had to fear from Nazi Germany with its "tactical mission-oriented Luftwaffe" or its puny navy. To this day, many Americans, even ones relatively familiar with the operational details of Word War Two, believe that Germany had no aircraft even capable of reaching the United States and returning to Europe, much less of carrying a heavy enough payload, or being available in sufficient numbers, to be of any military significance.

All that changes, however, if Germany had the atomic bomb and if she possessed aircraft capable of delivering one and of returning successfully to Europe. In that case, only one bomber need be used to strike a significant military and psychological blow against the United States. Was such an operation feasible? Did Germany have such aircraft at least capable of being modified to

[1] Jeremy Bernstein, Hitler's Uranium Club: The Secret Records at Farm Hall (Copernicus, 2001), p. 126.

carry an atom bomb? Are there indications that such studies and operations were contemplated by the Nazis?

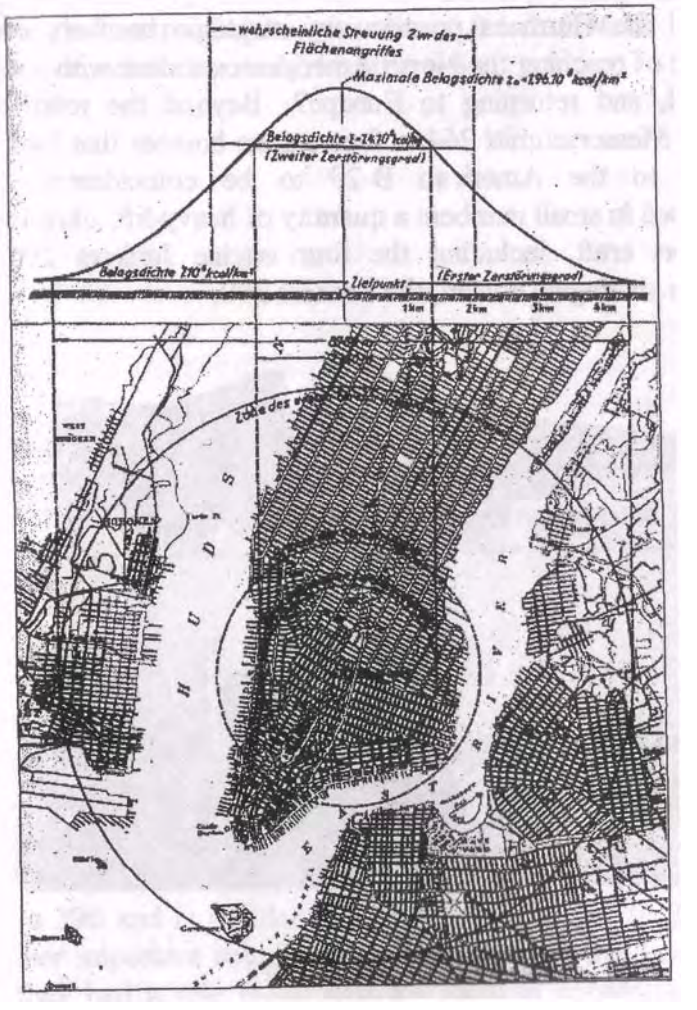
A. The Oberkommando der Luftwaffe's Unusual Map

In 1943 the Supreme Command of the Luftwaffe (Oberkommando der Luftwaffe) conducted a highly unusual study. The study consisted of a map, a map of lower Manhattan Island. On the map are concentric circles detailing the blast and heat damage-radii of an atomic bomb detonation over New York City. But the most unusual aspect of this "study" is that it shows the detonation of an atom bomb in the 15-17 kiloton range, approximately the same yield as the Little Boy uranium bomb dropped on Hiroshima, an odd "coincidence" in the series of "odd coincidences" we have-already encountered.

The Luftwaffe's intentions are quite obvious and clear. The destruction of the financial and business center of New York City would alone have been an unparalleled military and psychological blow against the American war effort. Beyond this, given the fact that New York City was an important point of embarkation for American shipping and troops, as well as a naval base, and a transportation hub for the entire American northeast, such a blow would have been incalculable.

For the Nazi leadership, such a blow would have made military and political sense. It would have demonstrated conclusively to the United States that Germany was capable of mounting significant military operations against the American mainland, and at levels of destructive capability that were militarily, economically, and psychologically devastating. From their point of view, such a blow would arguably been seen as weakening American resolve and perhaps, after a succession of similar such blows against prominent targets such as Boston, Philadelphia, Washington DC or Norfolk, would conceivably have led to America's exit from the war, leaving Britain to follow not far behind. The war against the Soviet Union could then either have been prosecuted without mercy until the inevitable Soviet capitulation, or at the minimum, a negotiated peace highly favorable to the Reich.

In October of 1943, then, such a study was a tempting prospect. But is there any indication that the OKL's "study map" was anything more than a study? From the evidence presented thus far, the answer is clearly that the Luftwaffe was not merely conducting the typical staff exercises that all general staffs conduct, even in wartime. For the Luftwaffe, the study was a practical and immanent feasibility.

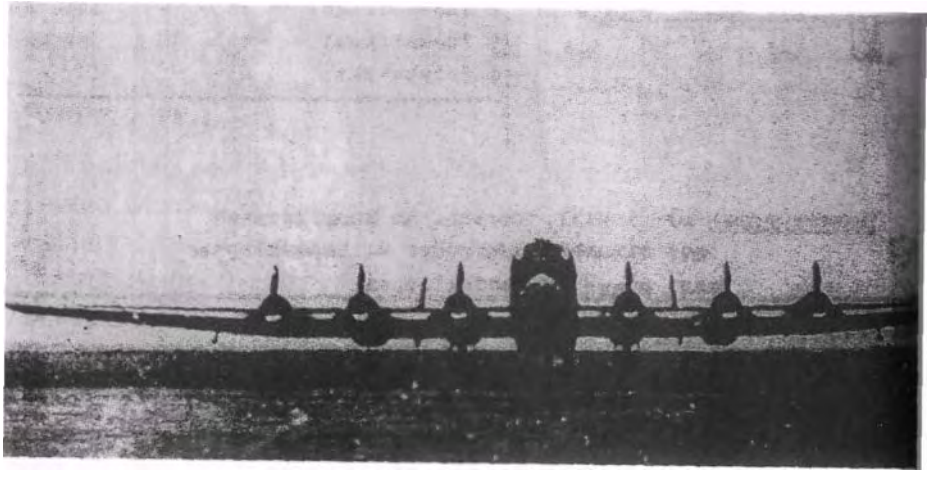


The OKL 's "Feasibility Study" of an Atom Bomb Blast of Hiroshima Size over Manhattan Island in New York City

But what of Freier's allegations that the bomb was ready, but the delivery systems were not? Without a delivery system the German Wehrmacht could have possessed all the atom bombs it wished, but they would have been utterly useless, expensive toys, without a viable means to deliver them to its most significant militarily and economically powerful opponent.

B. Strange Flights

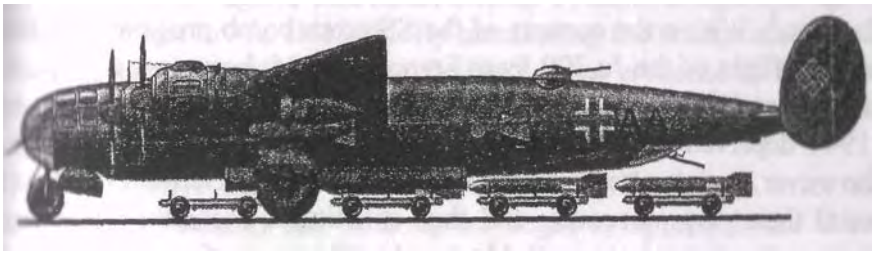
Did the Germans possess any strategic bombers or aircraft capable of reaching the North American continent with a significant payload, and returning to Europe? Beyond the relatively well-known Messerschmitt 264, a four engine bomber that looks far too similar to the American B-29 to be coincidental, Germany possessed in small numbers a quantity of heavy-lift, ultra-long range transport craft, including the four engine Junkers 290 and its massive six engine cousin, the Junkers 390.



The Junkers 390

Only two of these massive aircraft were ever built. The Junkers 390 assumes an odd significance here (and later) in our story, for in

1994, one such Ju 390 took off from Bordeaux, France, and flew to within 12 miles of New York City, snapped a picture of the Manhattan skyline, and flew back, a non-stop flight of 32 hours. Within the context of the German SS atom bomb project, this flight was more than a mere feasibility study. Photo reconnaissance could only be for target identification. And the flight itself, to within 12 miles of the city, could conceivably have been a test of American air defenses and reactions. In any case, the fact that such a flight returned safely can only indicate that the American Army Air Force simply was not expecting a visit from the Luftwaffe at all, reconnaissance, feasibility study, or otherwise.



The Messerschmitt 264 Long Range "Amerikabomber ",
Note the Curious Resemblance to the Boeing B-29 Superfortress

C. Unknown Cargoes and a Curious Airfield

The Ju 390 and is smaller four engine cousin the Ju 290 will play another important role in subsequent parts of this book. Hut perhaps they had a role envisioned for them in conjunction with another little-known, but nonetheless important, fact. In 1945 the Luftwaffe completed construction of an enormous airfield near

Oslo, Norway, capable of handling very large aircraft like the Me 264, the He 177, and the Ju 290 and 390. In an article for the June 29, 1945 issue of the Washington Post, a report that originated from 21st Army Group headquarters outlines the frightening discovery that awaited Allied military personnel who came to occupy Norway after the German forces there surrendered:

> R.A.F. officers said today that the Germans had nearly completed preparations for bombing New York from a "colossal air field" near Oslo when the war ended.
>
> "Forty giant bombers with a 7,000 mile range were found on this base - the largest Luftwaffe field I have ever seen,' one officer said.
>
> "They were a new type bomber developed by Heinkel. They now are being dismantled for study. German ground crews said the planes were held in readiness for a mission to New York.

It is known that Heinkel undertook special modifications of its He 177 four engine heavy bomber late in the war, adapting it to carry large atom bombs, radiological bombs, and biological and chemical bombs.[2] Within the context of the SS atom bomb program and the earlier flight of the Ju 390 from France in 1944, however, a purpose immediately suggests itself. The loss of France to Allied forces in 1944 deprived the Luftwaffe of its large French airfields. Norway, however, as has already been stated, remained in German hands up until their very surrender, and thus constituted the only remaining base of operations available to the Germans for any type of offensive operation against the North American continent.

The presence of such an airfield and its deliberate construction so late in the war also strongly suggests a connection to the SS atom bomb program in an entirely different way, since its construction would likely have fallen under the jurisdiction of the SS Building and Works Department, which was under the direction of none other than SS Obergruppenfuhrer Hans Kammler. It is also significant that jurisdiction over all long range aircraft was also in Kammler's hands by war's end, thus linking the precious long-range

---

[2] Q.v. Friedrich Georg, Hitlers Siegeswaffen band 1: Luftwaffe und Marine: Geheime Nuklearwaffen des Dritten Reiches und ihre Tragersysteme pp. 131, 133.

bombers on the Oslo field to Kammler as well. Moreover, Mayer and Mehner speculate that at least two atom bombs were built and possibly transported on the mission of the U-234. In their view, the surrender of the U-boat to the American authorities thus not only provided the Manhattan Project with much-needed stocks of enriched uranium, but quite possibly also with two fully functional atom bombs as well.

Professor Friedrich Lachner was assistant for twenty years to professor Mache at the Department for Technical Physics at the Technical University of Vienna. Familiar with aspects of the German bomb project, Lachner unburdened himself of his knowledge to researchers Mayer and Mehner. Among his allegations were that at least one completed bomb of German construction was transported from Thuringia to Salzburg by the SS near the end of the war.[3]

Lachner's letter is intriguing for two reasons. First, because it corroborates the existence of a large atom bomb program in the Three Corners region, and corroborates Freier's allegations of a successful test in March 1945. By mentioning the transportation of such weapons out of the region, he gives some credence to the idea that the U-234 might have been used to transport at least one such weapon to Norway.[4]

But a more curious allegation is made in Lachner's letter to Mayer and Mehner, and with it, we begin to approach the even more horrendous potentialities of Nazi wartime secret weapons research. Citing the letter of a British espionage agent who was well-aware of the multi-tiered nature of the German atom bomb program, and who was aware of a "third team that sought another

---

[3] Mayer and Mehner, das Geheimnis, p. 81. Lachner also asserts unequivocally in his letter to Mayer and Mehner that the bomb dropped on Hiroshima was German (p. 82). Lachner also states that there were no less than fifteen atom bombs in German hands by the war's end. Again, on first glance, this seems a sheer fantasy, unless they had already mastered the techniques of boosted fission. The Salzburg bomb story may not be fantasy, as American tank units were operating in the area late in the war (q.v. pp. 84-85) in conjunction with Patton's drive on Pilsen and Prague.

[4] Italian officer Luigi Romersa mentions as well that the Russians captured two such bombs (Das Geheimnis, p. 105).

way" of making the bomb (boosted fission),[5] he then mentions a "fourth team":

> Yes, and then there was also the fourth team, about which we heard rumors during the last phase of the war. This was certainly so shadowy and fantastic, that one could only construe it as a ploy. But after the war it became evident that the world had avoided a colossal catastrophe by a hair's breath.... This fourth team worked in a field that was monstrous on a daily basis. And when I say this, I meant thereby that they experimented with things that a well-informed public would to thus very day think then to be unthinkable and unbelievable, and thus imaginary. I mean to imply that these specialists worked in conceptions that totally abandoned conventional physical laws. [6]

Mayer and Mehner then point out the implications of the agent's remarks in an age long accustomed to think in terms of the destructive power of hydrogen bombs:

> That the Germans were working on an atom bomb no one may any longer question, but that they also possessed a team that was working on the destruction of the world is an unbelievable concept. This could only mean that there was a weapons system that possessed enormous range and degree of efficiency that lay beyond that of nuclear weapons technology. Did the Third Reich really prepare the Doomsday Weapon? And if so, where is this technology today? Was it discovered by the Allies or does it lurk secretly deep in the earth waiting for its rediscovery? If such an Ultimate Weapon has already been in existence for more than fifty years, then it is a legitimate question to ask what today's military really, actually possesses.[7]

The truthfulness of these stupendous allegations appears to be substantiated by a brief remark uttered by Adolf Hitler to a gathering of Axis elite in April 1944. According to Italian officer

---

[5] Mayer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis, p. 89. It should be noted, however, that the name of this "well known" British agent is never mentioned.

[6] Ibid., p. 91, my translation and emphasis. The agent then mentions that he is not aware of which side ended up with this technology.

[7] Ibid., pp. 91-92. it is also a legitimate question to ask whose military possesses it, or alternatively, is it in the possession of some altogether unknown entity?

Luigi Romersa once again, who was present when Hitler made the remarks, the Fuhrer

> strolled through the room and said, "We have invisible aircraft, submarines, colossal tanks and cannon, unbelievably powerful rockets, and a bomb with a working that will astonish the whole world. The enemy knows this, and besieges and attempts to destroy us. But we will answer this destruction with a storm and that without unleashing a bacteriological war, for which we are also prepared.... All my words are the purest truth. That you will see![8]

Bacteriological war? Bombs with an unbelievable working? Teams of specialists working in areas that defy conventional laws of physics that would threaten a global catastrophe?

This is not the picture of a Germany tinkering with V-l buzz bombs, V-2s of limited operational range and strategic value, clumsy and belated attempts to construct a working atomic reactor, and tottering on the brink of total collapse that we have been led to believe. All the evidence presented thus far tends to the opposite conclusion, that at a minimum the Third Reich possessed functioning atom bombs and was preparing to use them against the West, if she had not already done so against Russia.

So the cargoes intended to fly out of that Norwegian airfield may have not only been nuclear, but something far more horrendous. Already the path through Nazi Germany's nuclear programs have led into very unexpected places and developments, developments only made possible by the recent German reunification and the declassification of German, British, and American archives that it provoked, and suggesting that behind that nuclear program lurks something even larger and far more monstrous.

In any case, it now seems clear why, in spite of Oppenheimer's statement in the middle of May 1945 that the earliest an atom bomb could be ready was in November of 1945,[9] that America was able to

---

[8] Mayer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis, p. 97.

[9] Ibid., p. 131. It is significant that Oppenheimer made these remarks before the capture of the U-234.

overcome all fusing problems and fissile material shortages in a mere two months after the German surrender.

Were Ready to Bomb N. Y.

Twenty-first Army Group Headquarters, June 28 (AP).—RAF officers said today that the Germans had nearly completed preparations for bombing New York from a "colossal airfield" near Oslo when the war ended.

"Forty giant bombers with a 7000-mile range were found on this base—the largest Luftwaffe field I have ever seen," one senior officer said.

"They were a new type bomber developed by Heinkel. They now are being dismantled for study. German ground crews said the planes were held in readiness for a mission to New York."

The June 29, 1945 Washington post Article on the Luftwaffe Airfield in Oslo and its Forty Long Range Bombers

6.

THE STRANGE CASE OF THE DISAPPEARING GENERALS: SS OBERGRUPPENFUHRER DR. ING. HANS KAMMLER AND GENERAL GEORGE S. PATTON

"Pilscn and the Skoda Works were captured by Combat Command B Third Armored Division, the same unit that captured Kammler's unique metropolis, with its treasure trove of missiles and jet engines, at Nordhausen in Saxony on April 11."
Tom Agoston, Blunder! How the U.S. Gave Away Nazi Supersecrets to Russia[1]

World War Two ended in Europe with the armored divisions of U.S. General George S. Patton's Third Army lunging deep into the tottering Third Reich, toward Arnstadt in Thuringia and toward the immense Skoda munitions works at Pilsen, Czechoslovakia. This little appreciated fact links together two of the war's most famous and powerful generals and perhaps affords a basis to speculate on the real reasons for the mysterious death of the one, and the equally mysterious "death" of the other.

The generals in question are General Patton, well-known to military history and America's most famous and capable field commander during the war in Europe, and SS Obergruppenfuhrer Dr. Ing. (doctor of engineering) Hans Kammler, now little known to popular history, architect of the infamous Auschwitz death camps, responsible for the demolition of the Warsaw ghetto, and by the end of the war, the Third Reich's plenipotentiary for all secret weapons research, responsible directly to Reichsfuhrer SS Heinrich Himmler and to Adolf Hitler himself.

[1] Tom Agoston, Blunder! How the U.S. Gave Away Nazi Supersecrets to Russia (New York: Dodd, Mead and Company, 1985), p. 65.

A. Introduction: The Rediscovery of the SS Sonderkommando, Kammler, and a Brush with "the Legend"

As previous chapters have indicated, there is some entity within the Third Reich that appears to have coordinated extremely sensitive and secret weapons research projects, including possible oversight of Germany's apparently large uranium enrichment program. However, this entity, as we shall subsequently see, was responsible for a great deal more than that. It is necessary at this juncture to say something about it, however, as it now directly enters the picture in the speculative reconstruction of the strange death of the one, and the disappearance of the other, of these two very important generals.

This entity first came to public light in the aftermath of World War Two, in the 1950s, in a series of publications in West Germany, and in a book by former German major Rudolf Lusar. These publications alleged that Nazi Germany had created and successfully tested "unusual" aircraft, including flying disks or saucers. Thus was born the "Nazi Legend" of the "real origin" of UFOs. More will be said about this Legend in the subsequent parts of this book. Here it suffices to note that the Nazi Legend maintained that this secretive development occurred under the direct auspices of the SS.

The allegations of an ultra-top secret entity coordinating and controlling the Nazi secret weapons research in the final years of the war tended to be discounted, along with its more sensation component, the "flying saucers" themselves. Moreover, discounting these allegations was easy to do, since they rested upon the isolated testimony of a disenchanted German major with definite Nazi sympathies (Lusar) and the "eye witness" statements of one or two others who came forward to corroborate the story, each with their own shady associations.

All that gradually began to change, however, by a sequence of events ranging from the publication of a book by a former British intelligence officer, Tom Agoston, in 1985, by the German reunification itself in 1989, which made a host of archives of the former East Germany available to researchers. A number of books

has appeared in Germany since the reunification made these archives accessible, and moreover, the lormerly inaccessible SS secret underground facilities and complexes finally became accessible to the public. Aided and abetted in their efforts by the declassification of several documents by the Clinton administration in the United States, German researchers began to probe the new information, reconnecting the dots, and presenting a chilling picture of the actual state of Nazi wartime research and its enormous discrepancy with the postwar Allied Legend. This body of work has been almost entirely ignored in North America.[2] Agoston's work was the first indication from the "mainstream" that there may have been something behind the Nazi Legend. Agoston revealed his story for the first time after his source, none other than close Kammler associate at the famous Skoda Works, Dr. Wilhelm Voss, died. The story that Voss told Agoston at the end o f the war was, according to Agoston, in confidence.

As Agoston notes rather sarcastically, Kammler boasted almost the perfect "corporate resume" and a documentable record of "whole person management" as a "team player":

> A modern day management consultant who was talent hunting for a "total professional with total involvement" would certainly have been fascinated by the bizarre curriculum vitae Kammler could have submitted. He could demonstrate a "track record" in "very senior appointments," with skill in putting across "aggressive growth plans."...

---

[2] The most prominent post-reunification German sources for this story are Friedrich Georg's series on secret weapons, Hitler's Siegeswaffen series in thrcc volumes; and the studies of Edgar Mayer and Thomas Mehner, Das Geheimnis der Deutschen Atombombe; Die Atombombe und das Dritte Reich; Hitler un die ,,Bombe"; Harald Fath's 1945 -Tthuringens Manhattan Projekt ami Geheime Kommandosache - S III Jonastal und die Seigeswaffenproduktion. Also not to be neglected is Robert K. Wilcox's Japan's Secret War: Japan's Race against Time to Build its Own Atomic Bomb, for the latter book raises the question of where Japan acquired its enrichment capability and stocks of uranium in no uncertain terms (see chapter 7 of this book). Also important is Karl Heinz Zunneck's Geheimtechnologien, Wunderwaffen und die irdischen Facetten des UFO-Phanomens.

In the the Third Reich, within a span of a few years, the number of positions he had held in turn was phenomenal.3

Among these "senior appointments" Kammler once commanded were:

(1) Operational control of the V-l and V-2 terror bombardments of London, Liege, Brussels, Antwerp and Paris;
(2) Operational control of all missile production and research, including the V-2 and the intercontinental ballistic missile. the A9/10;
(3) Design and construction oversight of the world's "first bombproof underground aircraft and missile factory sites," including sites for the production of jet engines and the Messerschmitt 262;
(4) command of the SS Building and Words Division, the department which handled all large construction projects for the Reich, including death camps, "buna factories," and supply roads for invading German legions in Russia;
(5) Design and construction of the world's first underground testing and proving range for missiles;
(6) Command, control and coordination of all of the Third Reich's secret weapons research by the war's end.[4]

This warped and twisted administrative genius first came to the attention of Himmler and Hitler "with a brilliant hand-colored design for the Auschwitz concentration camp, which he subsequently built. Later he was called in to advise on the modalities for boosting the daily output of its gas chambers from 10,000 to 60,000."[5]

All this is to say that not only was Kammler a butcher, but that by the war's end, Hitler had "concentrated more power in Kammler's hands than he had ever entrusted to a single person,"

---

[3] Tom Agoston, op. cit., p. 5.
[4] Agoston, pp. 5-6.
[5] Ibid., p. 6.

bar none.[6] If one were to compare Kammler's position to a similar hypothetical position in the former Soviet Union,

> such a position would mean that the general who (commanded) the SS-20 rockets in Europe and Asia (the Commander in Chief of Strategic Rocket Forces) would also head research, development, and production of missiles. In addition, he would be in charge of producing all modern aircraft for the Red Air Force and have overall command of the mammoth civil engineering projects or the production centers in Siberia's sub-zero climate. Last, but very much not least, he would lead the national grid of gulags. To match Kammler's position in the SS, the Soviet general holding all these variegated commands would also be third in the KGB pecking order.[7]

Indeed, one would have to add to Agoston's list, for such a Soviet general would also have had to be in charge of the coordination of all the most post-nuclear and super secret advanced scientific research and black projects in the entire Soviet Union.

It is thus in the person of SS Obergruppenfuhrer Hans Kamtnler that all the lines of our investigation meet: the Buna factory and slave labor of the camps, exploited for grizzly medical experimentation and labor in the secret underground laboratories and production facilities, the atom bomb project, and as will be seen in the subsequent parts of this book, even more horrendous and monstrous aircraft and weapons development. If there was a gold mine of information, then it was available in the blueprints and files that were locked in Kammler's vaults, or even more securely in his brain. It is this fact and Kammler's extraordinary dossier that make his post-war fate even more problematical.

But what of Kammler's "Special SS Command" (Sonderkommando) structure itself? What was it that was so revolutionary that Dr. Voss would have required Agoston to maintain confidentiality until after his death?

> Voss had joined Skoda in 1938, when the plant was ceded to the Reich under the Munich Pact - Hitler, Chamberlain, Mussolini and Daladier, allotting the Sudeten German areas of Czechoslovakia to Germany -

---

[6] Agoston, op. cit., p. 4.
[7] Ibid., p. 7.

> and became an affiliate of Hitler's principle arms maker Krupp. With his flair for quiet diplomacy, Voss was immensely popular with the Czech executives, who had remained in leading positions at the time of the German takeover of Skoda. Voss even saw to it that Czech workers, paid on the local and not Reich wages, were paid more money.[8]

Also important to the Skoda-SS relationship is the fact that all of Bohemian Czechoslovakia became a "Reich Protectorate," in effect turning total political, administrative, and military control of Bohemia over to the SS. It is in this context that the special relationship between Voss and Kammler developed.

> By quirk of fate, the careers of Kammler and Voss overlapped at Skoda, where they jointly set up and operated what was generally regarded by insiders as the Reich's most advanced high-technology military research center. Working as a totally independent undercover operation for the SS, the center was under the special auspices of Hitler and Himmler. Going outside the scope and field of Skoda's internationally coveted general research and development division, it worked closely with Krupp and was primarily concerned with analysis of captured equipment, including aircraft, and copying or improving the latest technical features. In so doing the SS group was to go beyond the first generation of secret weapons.[9]

Thus one has the first component of this Special SS Command: the analysis, duplication, and improvement of all recovered foreign and enemy technology. This in itself is not surprising, since all major combatants during the war maintained such research facilities.

The second thing one must note is the careful and deliberate camouflaging of the SS Special Command inside the normal engineering division of the Skoda works. But the real operational goals of this Special command were far more than the mere analysis of captured enemy equipment, as Voss detailed to Agoston.

> Its purpose was to pave the way for building nuclear-powered aircraft, working on the application of nuclear energy for propelling missiles and aircraft; laser beams, then still referred to as "death rays"; a

[8] Agoston, op. cit, p. 11.
[9] Ibid., p. 12.

> variety of homing rockets and to seek other potential areas for high-technology breakthrough. In modem high-tech jargon, the operation would probably be referred to as an "SS research think tank." Some work on second-generation secret weapons, including the application of nuclear propulsion for aircraft and missiles, was already well advanced.[10]

Nuclear powered aircraft would require the development and miniaturization of functioning atomic reactors, something the Germans were not, according to the Allied Legend, supposed to have achieved. And though the mention of lasers seems to stretch one's credulity beyond all reason, there is credible evidence that the Germans were up to just that, and more besides.[11]

But the most remarkable thing about this "SS think tank" was that it was established entirely without the knowledge of Goring, Speer, or any of the other big-wigs or research centers in the Reich.[12] This would not only explain Speer's puzzlement at Jackson's question that we encountered earlier, but would also explain the apparent lack of information on the part of the Farm Hall scientists interred in England after the war. These two facts alone indicate that the SS Special Command headquartered at the Skoda Works in Pilsen was more than just a secret weapons project being run through ordinary channels. Unlike even its Manhattan Project counterpart, it had no connection to the standard branches of the German military, the German state, or even the Nazi Party; it was entirely off the books. It is, in every sense that we have come to know it, a Black Project, coordinating all black projects in Nazi Germany. So extensive was the mandate given to this group that if there was a large uranium enrichment program underway in Germany for the production of atom bombs, then this is the entity most likely coordinating it.[13]

---

[10] Agoston, op. cit., p. 12.

" Q.v. the remaining parts of this book.

[12] Ibid., pp. 12-13.

[13] Agoston alludes to the existence and connection of the uranium enrichment program to the Kammler Staff when he states "Even fissile uranium-235 was reportedly made available to Berlin's prime Axis ally.(p. 32)." While the enormous implications of this statement are obvious, Agoston does not pursue the atom bomb component of the Kammler Staff in his book,

Moreover, not only did Skoda's "overtly operating research and development division" work closely with the SS on some less sensitive projects, it "provided a convenient cover for the Kammler Staff specialists, culled in great secrecy from Germany's research institutes to supplement the in-house experts. All were picked for their know-how and not for their Party records, Voss said. All had to have the ability to tackle visionary projects. "[14] The Kammler Staff Special Command even circulated top secret scientific paper and memos to the various scientists within the group itself via a central office of scientific reports. Some of these reports were then used as a basis of recruitment of top scientists.[15]

So what was the Kammler Staff, or Kammlerstab, as outlined by Voss and Agoston?

First, it was the continuation of "normal" science, free of the constraints of Nazi party ideology, but under the control of the SS! But it was much more. Not only was it a "think tank," but it was also a central clearing house for ideas, for mapping out precise technology trees for the acquisition of second and third generation weapons. But it was more, it was also a fully-funded research Black Programs coordinating office with its own "inexhaustible" and expendable labor pool.

All of it was coordinated by SS General Hans Kammler.

All of it was headquartered at the Skoda Works in Pilsen.

And one more thing. By the war's end, Kammler also had control of the Reich's heavy-lift long range transport aircraft, consisting of several Ju 290s and the two enormous Ju 390s, one of which, according to Agoston, made a polar flight to Japan on March 28, 1945.[16]

---

though he surely would have suspected it. The link of the Auschwitz "Buna plant" to the SS via the death camp there already provides one link to Kammler, since the "Buna plant" fell under SS jurisdiction via the camp itself, and thus the connection to Kammler is direct.

[14] Agoston, op. cit, p. 13, emphasis added.

[15] Ibid., p. 14

[16] This fact is merely reported by Agoston without substantiation, leading one to the conclusion that the source of the information must have been Dr. Voss. It is worth noting that Nick Cook reports that Kammler had control of the Ju 390s as part of another SS Special Evacuation Command, which was the

If ever there was a reason for the Allied High Command to by-pass Berlin and head south to central Germany(Thuringia) and for Patton's Third Army to make a beeline for Pilsen and Prague, this was it.

Thus, only in the recently revealed context of the existence of the Kammlerstab do any of the Allied or German military deployments or operations at the end of the war make any genuine military sense. The "National Redoubt" story was likely just that, a story put out by the American OSS to force the Allied commanders to change objectives, without disclosing the real nature of their concerns, priorities, and intelligence objectives.

B. The Four Deaths of SS Obergruppenfuhrer Dr. Ing. Hans Kammler

General Kammler, in addition to his "accomplishments" in streamlining death camp efficiency, his methodical and efficient leveling of the ruined Warsaw Ghetto and meticulous accounting of every last brick and stone removed, his coordination of the most arcane, and perhaps the biggest, secret weapons black projects program in human history, has also another odd distinction to his credit. He of all the high-ranking Nazis indicted and tried at Nuremberg either posthumously or in absentia, was never formally indicted, much less brought to trial. He is altogether missing from the docket, and altogether just simply missing.

Kammler has yet another distinction. He appears to have been not only a very accomplished messenger of death for others, but also appears to have achieved the astonishing feat of having died himself no less than four times, each under different circumstances. Agoston commented at length on the odd assortment of "facts" surrounding Kammler's fate:

---

brainchild of none other than Martin Bormann. The purpose of this special command was to evacuate... something. Cook reports that one of these enormous Ju 390s simply went missing at the end of the war.

> Analysis of the voluminous documentation (at has accrued since embarked on the first left of the fascinating project in 1949 shows crude discrepancies, the inconsistencies of which grow with almost every addition to the mosaic of information that enters the picture Basically three major facts stand out:
>
> 1. In almost four decades, official records show no positive confirmation of Kammler's death. No court of law, no media editor would accept the uncorroborated statement of "unknown comrades," still so referred to in official records as conclusive evidence of death especially if the death was alleged to have taken place in the chaos of collapsing Germany.
>
> 2. The record shows no subsequent sworn corroborative statement Such a statement would automatically have been entered in the Red Cross and other dossiers on Kammler.
>
> 3. None of the persons reporting any of the four versions of the general's death had conformed with the prescribed duty of all servicemen to detach one-half of a dead man's soldier's paybook or officer's identity document, to the nearest unit, relevant records office, Red Cross, or holding power, if the surviving serviceman had become a prisoner of war, to help notification of next of kin. Germans are traditionally meticulous and, to say the least, most sentimental in such matters.

Thus, in spite of "the proliferation of unsubstantiated evidence that permeates all four versions of Kammler's death, the shell of the case contains sufficient facts to suggest a more than coincidental pattern of seemingly targeted and organized disinformation."[17] The origin of this disinformation, according to Agoston, was probably within the SS itself, a program necessitated by Kammler's disappearance and likely treason to one of the victorious Allied powers.

The "first death of General Hans Kammler" is recounted by Albert Speer himself, in his last book. In this most simple version, Kammler ordered his adjutant to shoot him. The "suicide" allegedly took place in Prague as Kammler realized the war was lost and, according to Speer, "acted in elitist SS loyalty."[18] As Agoston quips, "even the most ardent worshipper of Teutonic creed could

[17] Agoston, op. cit., pp. 102-103, emphasis added.
[18] Ibid., p. 103.

not possibly suggest that elitist SS loyalty can be demonstrated three times, in three locations, and all on the same day."[19]

The second version of the story, related to Agoston by Kammler's "civilian" aide Dr. Wilhelm Voss, was that the general took cyanide somewhere "on the road between Pilsen and Prague on May 9."[20] We will have more to say about Voss's association with Kammler's vast SS secret weapons think tank in due course.

The third version of Kammler's death was doled out by V-2 rocket expert, General Walter Dornberger, subsequently employed by the American firm of Bell Aerospace. According to Dornberger, Kammler's mental and emotional state had quickly deteriorated in the final days of the war, and the general overheard Kammler ordering his aide to shoot him if things became "hopeless."[21]

But this does not square with Dornberger's close associate, Dr. Werner Von Braun's own recollection of a conversation he overheard between Kammler and his aide Starck fully two weeks later. According to Von Braun, Kammler and Starck discussed the possibility of "going underground" before the Americans arrived, disguising themselves as monks in a nearby abbey.[22] Thus report, if true, is perhaps the most interesting, since it indicates that Kammler had no intentions of surrendering himself to any of the Allied powers, but rather, intended to survive, perhaps independently continuing his oversight of secret weapons development.

Another version of Kammler's death has him giving a speech to his assembled aides in Prague in early May 1945, dismissing them from their duties and advising them to return home, and then walking into a woods where he then shot himself.[23] And lastly, there is a version of Kammler's death that has him dying a typical SS hero's death, fighting and going down in a blaze of "glory" in the face of rebelling and revolting Czechs.[24]

---

[19] Agoston, op. cit, p. 104.
[20] Ibid.
[21] Ibid., pp. 103-104.
[22] Ibid.
[23] Ibid., p. 99.
[24] Ibid., p. 92.

What emerges from all this is that no one, no where can advance anything like a consistent account of the date, location, time, or even method of Kammler's death. Now it is suicide by poison, then suicide by gunshot, suicide by ordering an aide to shoot him, a fighting death, or disappearance into a Roman Catholic monastery. Now he is in Prague, now he isn't; now he's with people, now he isn't; now he's suffering mental and emotional collapse, now he isn't.

In all likelihood, therefore, Kammler did not die at all; he disappeared. The important question is, where?

C. The Ironic Death of General George S. Patton

While Obergruppenfuhrer Kammler was busy dying four times in various locations by various means, another general was busy lunging his troops with the precision of a surgeon into the nerve centers of Kammler's black projects empire: General George S. Patton. His troops formed the spearhead of the Allied lance that, much to the surprise of the Nazi, Soviet, and Allied field commanders themselves, suddenly turned from its victorious drive on Berlin to a militarily questionable operation designed to take the alleged "Nazi redoubt."

By the spring of 1945, the Redoubt had ballooned to become a major military concern to the Allied High command, "despite the caveats from British and US military intelligence."[25] Agoston traces the origin of the "redoubt" theme of the postwar Allied Legend to the USA's Office of Strategic Services, or OSS, the precursor to the modern day CIA. The OSS had apparently not bothered, according to Agoston, to check out the sources of its intelligence or the truthfulness of the "redoubt."[26] The final decision to abandon Berlin as a military objective and drive south toward Thuringia was made by Eisenhower on April 11, 1945.[27]

---

[25] Agoston, op. cit., p. 22.

[26] Ibid., p. 23.

[27] Ibid., p. 23. A possibility is that Kammler arranged to turn over his secret weapons treasure trove to the OSS in exchange for his life. It could have been arranged by fellow SS General Wolff, already in negotiation with Allen

The date of General Eisenhower's decision is crucial, for it means that the military objective shifted from Berlin toward south central Germany after the alleged atom bomb test at Ohrdruf on March 4, 1945. It is therefore possible that the OSS was in receipt of extremely secret intelligence concerning this weapons program and its centers of production, for Patton drives his troops with unerring accuracy right toward this super-secret installations, many of them underground and carefully camouflaged. Given the sensitivity of the Manhattan Project within the structure of the Allied command, it is also plausible that the OSS decided not to share this information with the Supreme Allied Command, and proffered the "Redoubt" and "fleeing Nazis" and a transferred German war archives as a cover story to sell the Allied command on a shitf of objectives away from Berlin.

If indeed the OSS "Redoubt" reports were a component of an OSS psychological operation designed against the Allies' own military command structure, designed to divert Allied military operations to a gold mine of military technology and research, then one and only one general was in a position to know the real, and the whole story about the Redoubt, and what was actually recovered in Thuringia, Pilsen, and Prague, and that was General George S Patton. Patton, as his troops entered the Skoda works at Pilsen and the underground factories and laboratories at the Three Corners region in Thuringia would have been privy to the top secret reports of his divisional commanders entering these super-secret Reich facilities. Patton would thus have a thorough first hand knowledge of the complete inventory of the Reich's most sensitive black programs.

As Agoston himself notes, without seeming to realize the importance of his own observations in the light of post-war events, "the sudden switch in Allied planning.... brought at least one

---

Dulles, OSS station chief in Zurich. If so, then the sudden shift of Allied objectives to south central Germany may have originated from intelligence originating within the Kammlerstab itself. This intelligence would have been easily verifiable by Allies who would naturally have wanted to check its veracity by means of aerial reconnaissance of the installation sites presumably leaked to them by someone in the Kammlerstab.

bonanza. The rapid eastward drive of the US Third Army brought to Kammler's secret metropolis well ahead of the Russians in whose designated zone it lay."[28] The holy grail of all this research were the files and blueprints in the central coordination office of Kammler's black programs think tank inside the Skoda Works at Pilsen. And it is likely that General Patton therefore knew much of the general outlines of this treasure trove and what it portended for future secret weapons development. There is thus a direct and immediate link between General George S. Patton, General Hans Kammler, and the little-known world of top secret weapons research that Kammler headed.[29]

And this in turn may lend some credence to those who view General Patton's ironic death after the war as being something more than an ironic accident. The factual circumstances of Patton's death are plain enough. While on an inspection tour with his driver and Major General Hobart Gray on December 9, 1945, Patton's car swerved to avoid hitting a heavy US Army transport truck that had turned in front of them. Patton's driver, attention momentarily diverted away from the road by a remark that Patton himself had made, belatedly noticed the truck in front of them, and swerved the General's car to avoid a head-on collision.

None of the others involved in the accident were hurt, and all were able to walk away from the accident. Not so General Patton. He had suffered a broken neck, and the prognosis was paralysis from the neck down. From this point the General recovered rapidly at the military hospital in Frankfurt, making such good progress that until the afternoon of December 19th, his doctors were seriously considering moving him to Boston. But that afternoon his breathing difficulties increased dramatically and suddenly. On December 20th he suffered breathlessness and pallor, and Patton, who had had a prior history of embolism, died in his sleep on December 21st at 5:50 P.M.[30]

---

[28] Agoston, op. cit., p. 27.

[29] This fact is adequately appreciated by Mayer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis, p. 156.

[30] Ladislas Farago, Patton: Ordeal and Triumph, pp. 787-794.

The fact that Patton alone of all the victims of the automobile accident suffered serious injuries, plus the lact of his recovery and then sudden decline in a military hospital, have fueled various conspiracy theories. One of these, that Patton knew of the Soviet shooting of American, Canadian, and British prisoners of war and threatened to expose the Allied knowledge and cover-up of the affair, was revealed by a Ukrainian defector with close ties to the Soviet KGB, who alleged that Patton's accident was no accident, and that the KGB had been behind it. Another version is similar, but has the OSS or other Allied entity performing the 'accident" and subsequent "medical complications."

If there is any truth in the idea of a conspiracy behind the ironic death of America's most decorated and celebrated general officer of the Second World War, then the explanation is likely to lie in the more esoteric and arcane secrets he and his intelligence officers uncovered in Thuringia and at the Skoda Works in Pilsen. Having performed a preliminary assessment of the second and third generation weaponry Kammler's scientists had begun to research, the OSS specialists who arrived at these sites must have immediately realized the material would require the tightest security and highest classification then possible, beyond that even of the Manhattan Project, not least because what was uncovered would give lie to the emerging Allied Legend of nuclear technological superiority. Patton was a potential threat to the security of this

operation and a risk to the continued secret American development of Kammler's technology in conjunction with Operation Paperclip.[31]

If there is truth to the conspiracy theories of Patton's incongruous death, then of all the theories, this would seem to be the most plausible motivation and explanation for the murder of America's famous general.

Patton, and his famous mouth, had to be silenced.

---

[31] It is significant in this respect that Mayer and Mehner report in Das Geheimnis(p. 187), that all of the documents of Patton's troops in Ohrdruf are still sealed and classified.

D. The Kammler SS Sonderkommando Secret Weapons Empire

Were the secrets of Kammler's SS empire worth changing the entire Allied operational plan at the end of the war, and were they worth the possible deliberate assassination of one of the war's most famous generals? "Pilsen and the Skoda Works were captured by Combat Command B, Third Armored Division, the same unit that captured Kammler's unique metropolis, with its treasure-trove of missiles and jet engines, at Nordhausen in Saxony on April 11."[32] Suspiciously, Agoston's Freedom of Information Act request for the war diaries of Patton's armored units that captured the SS facilities in Pilsen and Prague could not be located in he US National Archives.[33]

However, Agoston presents evidence that Allied intelligence, at least from the British point of view, had little to no knowledge of the Kammler Group. British Lieutenant Colonel James Brierley, commanding the first British intelligence group to arrive in Pilsen after its capture, stated that the Skoda plant workers and engineers themselves reported that everything was microfilmed, that the buildings which housed their blueprints and development projects had been demolished, and also that the files had been stored outside Pilsen.[34]

Destroyed by whom? And stored outside Pilsen by whom? Presumably by the SS itself. It is perhaps pertinent to this idea that many of the reports of Kammler's death place him in the area, not to die, but to remove the most sensitive data and to vouchsafe it for security.

At this point it is necessary to say something about Agoston's own thesis concerning the disappearance of the Kammler Staff's files. The whole thesis of Agoston's book is obvious from its title, i.e., that in the confusion of the transfer of the Skoda Works from American to Russian military occupation, the Kammler Group's entire secret inventory was handed over to the Soviet Union. This

---

[32] Agoston, op. cit, p. 65.
[33] Ibid., p. 70.
[34] Ibid., p. 75.

much is recounted to Agoston by Voss. However, if Kammler had previously removed, or even duplicated, the most sensitive items, blueprints, and papers and secreted them somewhere, as would seem to be indicated by the Czech reports to British intelligence, then it is likely that all the Soviets received were the table scraps. Kammler had previously removed the most sensitive items, and Patton's men, and presumably the OSS, would have thoroughly scoured the remaining material.

Another possibility thus emerges in the "conspiracy" view of Patton's death. Could he have been assassinated because he himself was the point man to bring Kammler and his secrets and technicians and scientists into the emerging Operation Paperclip? While we will probably never know for sure, it is interesting to note that when Dr. Voss gave "the full story of the secrets leakage at Pilsen and Kammler's disappearance to US Intelligence in West Germany," he was informed "at the highest level to keep the matter under wraps, along with the briefings he than gave US Intelligence of he areas covered by the SS research at Pilsen."[35] Who was it that debriefed Voss for US military intelligence? None other than fellow general officer Lieutenant General Lucius D. Clay, a man well known to Patton.[36]

What happened to Dr. Voss after the war? Perhaps not unusually, he became involved in a joint CIA-West German BND (Bundesnachrichtendienst, West Germany's version of the CIA) effort to build armaments plants for Egypt's Gamel Abdul Nasser, and to train its army. Voss became the overall coordinator of an effort to supply Egypt with former Wehrmacht officers and the latest in missile technology. Also involved was former Reichsbank president Hjalmar Schact, father-in-law to famous SS commando, and later coordinator of the notorious ODESSA {Organization der Ehemalige SS Angehdriger or Organization of Former SS Members), Otto Skorzeny.[37] This effort was part of a much broader postwar effort on the part of the West German government

---

[35] Agoston, op. cit., p. 94. Agoston notes that this secrecy order to Voss kept him from disclosing the story until after Voss' death.

[36] Ibid., p. 116.

[37] Ibid., pp. 116-118.

to expand its markets for high technology military equipment to the Arab-Muslim world, a drive that has continuing political repercussions down to our own day. There is more than meets the eye in this postwar SS-Arab connection, that will be explored further in the subsequent parts of this book.

In any case, taken together the picture of the postwar behavior and associations of Dr. Wilhelm Voss, the multiple "deaths" of Obergruppenfuhrer Kammler, his more likely disappearance into you another black programs empire, and the ironic if not suspicious death of General George Patton are further corroboration that the Nazi Reich was up to far more than V-ls and V-2s. It was in the possession of prototypical technologies and military capabilities of such extreme power and sophistication that many of these secrets remain classified. Before we can examine what these secrets might be and the type of physics that they imply, we must, however, take a detour to the other Axis power seeking its own path to the atom bomb on the other side of the world.

7.

THE HONORARY ARYAN BRETHREN

"Contrary to the widely held view, the United States may have known about the Japanese project before the end of the war, and this information might have influenced President Harry Truman's decision to use the bomb on Japan.[1]

"... when UN forces had been at Hungnam in connection with the retreat from Chosin, a mysterious installation in the mountains around it had been discovered. "[2]
Robert K. Wilcox, Japan's Secret War.

An ancient Japanese legend has it that the Japanese people are descended from a blonde haired blue eyed race that came from the stars, a legend remarkably similar to the doctrines that percolated in the secret societies that fostered and mid-wifed the Nazi Party into existence in Germany between the World Wars. Nor did this legend play a small part in the history of World War Two, for it was partly because of its mere existence that Hitler could proclaim the Japanese "honorary Aryans" and conclude the incorporation of Japan into the Rome-Berlin-Tokyo Axis without contradicting Nazi Party racial ideology. This was in no small part due to the Japanese ambassador in Berlin's diplomatic skill in pointing out this little known fact of Japanese legends to the Germans. Of course, there were pressing military and political reasons for Italy and Germany to conclude an alliance with Japan, but for the race and ideology obsessed Nazi government, so much the better if the Japanese had some sort of Nordic-Aryan connection, no matter how tenuous that might be.

An early and continuous problem for the three Axis partners was to arrange the transfer of technology and raw materials from Europe to the Far East. Most transfers occurred via U-boats or Japanese submarines, though both Germany and Italy undertook

[1] Robert K. Wilcox, Japan's Secret War: Japan's Race against Time to Build is Own Atomic Bomb, p. 18.
[2] Ibid., p. 211.

long range, and militarily quite risky, flights to Japan as well. The Italians, for example, mounted such a flight with a Savoia Marchetti S 75 GA during 1942, ostensibly for the purpose of supplying the Italian embassy in Tokyo with copies of new Italian code books, since the Commando Supremo had concluded that the Allies had broken Italian codes.[3] As the war progressed, the Germans found themselves increasingly trading their high technology for very little in return other than the prospect of stiffening Japanese resistance and perhaps drawing American force to the Pacific and lessening pressure on the Reich. And the Japanese, their industry hard-pressed to maintain pace with American and British technological developments, were always very eager, and very specific, in their demands for high technology from their Aryan brethren.

Even the conventional military technology transfers form Germany to Japan are staggering enough. By 1944 Japan had requested and received either working models or full production designs for the following:

- German techniques for manufacturing cartridge steel for large gun barrel linings;
- Finished artillery pieces;
- 105 and 128 mm heavy anti-aircraft (FLAK) guns;
- the 75 and 88 mm field pieces and anti-tank guns;
- the Wurzburg radar system;
- 750 ton submarine pressure hulls;
- the PzKw Via Tiger I tank;
- The Focke Wulfe 190 fighter;
- The Henschel 129 tank-busting aircraft;[4]

---

[3] Dr. Publio Magini, Military History Quarterly, Summer 1993. I am very grateful to Frank Joseph for uncovering and sharing this information with me. The updating of Italian code books would be a pressing enough matter for the Italians to undertake such a flight.

[4] This rather odd-looking twin engine aircraft had a bulbous cupola slung beneath the nose of the main fuselage, in which was mounted a 75mm automatically reloading high velocity anti-tank gun projecting from its nose. It was a deadly and efficient tank-busting airplane used with great effectiveness on the Eastern Front, curiously resembling a similar ground assault aircraft in the modern American arsenal, the A-10 "Warthog."

- The Heinkcl He 177 heavy bomber;
- The Messcrschmitt 264 long-range Amerikabomber;
- The Messerschmitt 262 jet fighter;
- The Messerschmitt 163 rocket-powered fighter;
- The Lorenz 7H2 bombsight;
- The B/3 and FUG 10 airborne radars; and perhaps significantly,
- Twenty-five pounds of "bomb fuses."[5]

Fortunately for American and Commonwealth forces in the Pacific theater, these weapons never saw full scale production by the Japanese. What is intriguing is the last item. Why bomb fuses? Surely the Japanese, who had been raining bombs all over China, Indochina, Burma, and the Pacific knew how to fuse a conventional bomb. The request suggests that the fuses were of a sophistication beyond the capabilities of Japanese industry. And why a request for heavy bombers so close to the end of the war, at least one of which was reputedly capable of ultra-long-range flight and heavy payload?

A. Strange Rumors

As with the end of the war in Europe, the end of the Pacific war carried with it the odd rumor or two, some of which managed to appear in short articles in the Western Press, before the curtain of the Allied Legend slammed down to hide their implications from view. Robert K. Wilcox, in a book that may well in retrospect be the first book on the German bomb project from a revisionist perspective, Japan's Secret War, revitalized these reports and rumors:

> Shortly after World War II had ended, American intelligence in the Pacific received a shocking report: The Japanese, just prior to their surrender, had developed and successfully test-fired an atomic bomb. The project had been housed in or near Konan (Japanese name for Hungnam), Korea, in the peninsula's North. The war had ended before

[5] Joseph Mark Scalia, Germany's Last Mission to Japan: The Failed Voyage of the U-234, pp. 7-9.

this weapon could be used, and the plant where it had been made was now in Russian hands.

By the summer of 1946 the report was public. David Snell, an agent with the Twenty-fourth Criminal Investigation Detachment in Korea... wrote about it in the Atlanta Constitution following his discharge.[6]

Snell's source for the allegation was a Japanese officer returning to Japan. The officer informed him that he had been in charge of security for the project. Snell, paraphrasing the officer in his article, stated:

In a cave in a mountain near Konan men worked, racing against time, in final assembly of "genzai bakudan," Japan's name for the atomic bomb. It was August 10, 1945 (Japanese time), only four days after an atomic bomb flashed in the sky over Hiroshima and five days before Japan surrendered.

To the north, Russian hordes were spilling into Manchuria. Shortly after midnight of that day, a convoy of Japanese trucks moved from the mouth of the cave, past watchful sentries. The trucks wound through valleys, past sleeping form villages.... In the cool predawn, Japanese scientists and engineers loaded genzai bakudan aboard a ship at Konan.

Off the coast, near an islet in the sea of Japan, more frantic preparations were under way. All that day and night, ancient ships, junks and fishing vessels moved into the anchorage.

Before dawn on August 12, a robot launch chugged through the ships at anchor and beached itself on the islet. Its passenger was genzai bakudan. A clock ticked.

The observers were 20 miles away. The waiting was difficult and strange to men who had worked relentlessly so long, who knew their job had been completed too late.

The light in the east, where Japan lay, grew brighter. The moment the sun peeped over the sea there was a burst of light at the anchorage, blinding the observers, who wore welder's glasses. The ball of fire was estimated to be 1,000 yards in diameter. A multicolored cloud of vapors boiled toward the heavens, then mushroomed in the atmosphere.

The churn of water and vapor obscured the vessels directly under the burst. Ships and junks on the fringe burned fiercely at anchor.

[6] Wilcox, op. cit, p. 15.

When the atmosphere cleared slightly the observers could detect several vessels had vanished.

Genzai bakudan in thut moment had matched the brilliance of the rising sun to the east.

Japan had perfected and successfully tested an atomic bomb as cataclysmic as those that withered 1 liroshima and Nagasaki.[7]

There are a number of things to note about this account. How had Japan, hard-pressed for even conventional military technology, pulled off this feat of testing an atom bomb of the same approximate yield as Hiroshima and Nagasaki? Where did they get the enriched uranium for the weapon? Moreover, the Japanese had tested their bomb only three days after the plutonium "Fat Man" fell on and obliterated Nagasaki. Small wonder then, that the Japanese cabinet debated whether or not to surrender. This important fact, in conjunction with Wilcox's startling revelations, will serve as the basis for further speculation in a moment. Finally, the test itself suggested that the Japanese envisioned deploying the weapon against naval targets. What possible thoughts may have been going through the Japanese cabinet's surrender debate? Possible clues lie in the nature of the Japanese program itself, and its significant reliance on technology transfers from Germany.

The chief physicist involved in the Japanese project was Yoshio Nishina, a "colleague of Niels Bohr."[8] It was Nishina who in fact headed the Japanese army team that investigated Hiroshima after the bombing of that city.[9] The reports of the Japanese test at Konan were a steady source of consternation and mystification to American intelligence units in occupied Japan after the war, for unlike its obsession with the German bomb program, Allied intelligence consistently placed the Japanese far behind, as conducting only theoretical studies, and maintaining that the Japanese "had neither the talent nor the resources to make a bomb."[10] Resources Japan may have lacked, but there was no lack

---

[7] Wilcox, op. cit., p. 16.

[8] Ibid., p. 17, referencing an article in the January 1978 edition of Science magazine.

[9] Ibid.

[10] Ibid.

of talented physicists who understood bomb physics. In any case the reports caused enough concern tor the American occupying forces to send several intelligence teams throughout Japan to destroy its cyclotrons, of which there were no less than five, and presumably more![11] This curious fact raises a question. What were the Japanese doing with that many cyclotrons? Could they have perhaps been given the secrets of Baron Manfred Von Ardenne's method of mass spectrograph separation and enrichment of uranium 235? Or did the Japanese physicists, like their German and American counterparts, come to the realization that the cyclotron afforded a method for isotope enrichment? Both are possible, and the latter is probable.

B. Strange Industrial Complexes: Kammler Revisited, Noguchi Style

Further confirmation of a Japanese atom bomb test led Wilcox to connect Nishina to a Japanese industrialist named Noguchi. Searching through American declassified records, Wilcox quickly concluded that "subsequent directives in the same boxes ordered reinvestigations in 1947 and 1948 of Japanese wartime atomic research, indicating that (American intelligence) still did not know exactly what had happened. In fact, (it) was continually ordering reinvestigations of Japanese wartime atomic research and discovering new facts at least up until 1949, according to additional documents that I found."[12] Then Wilcox struck a very rich vein:

> Box 3 of Entry 224 yielded a high mark of my two days at Suitland:[13] an interrogation of a former engineer at the Noguchi Konan complex, Otogoro Natsume, conducted on October 31, 1946. "Subject" of the interrogation was listed as "Further questioning the newspaper story about atomic bomb explosion in Korea."
>
> In attendance were head(sic) of the Science and Technology Division, Dr. Harry Kelly; an interpreter, "T/4 Matsuda," and a "Mr. Donnelly," identified only as "5259 TIC." He apparently was some

[11] Wilcox, op. cit., pp. 17, 192.
[12] Ibid., p. 222.
[13] "Suitland" is Wilcox's nickname for the US National Archives.

sort of intelligence officer and, judging from their questions, the interrogators had more information about the Konan-Hungnam story than was in the newspaper.

Natsume, a chemical engineer, according to the interrogation, had been imprisoned by the Russians and then released to run a Konan plant until he escaped "on a small sailing boat" in December 1945. He told the investigators he'd heard the rumors about the atomic bomb explosion at Konan but knew nothing about it. According to the transcript, the following exchange then ensued:

Kelly: "Did any of the plants have accidents during the war?"

Donnelly: "We haven't actually found anything concrete. Last few days we have been talking with people here in and around Tokyo and asking them about report(s) of decomposition of hydrogen peroxide and asking them if they knew about it or which plant it was."

Kelly: "Did any of the plants have accidents during the war?"

(Natsume through Matsuda): "There were none."

Donnelly: "Ask him if he knows anything about the NZ plant making hydrogen peroxide."

Matsuda: "He says that he heard about the factory but it was under the Navy and highly secret. He had never been in it."

Kelly: "What was the name of the plant?"

Matsuda: "He says just NZ plant."

Donnelly: "ask him what NZ plant made and what does NZ mean?"

Matsuda: "He doesn't know."

A few more questions about the ownership and location of the plant, then:

Kelly: "About how many chemists worked up there?"

Matsuda: "He says there are so many classes of chemists. Do you mean University Graduate?"

Kelly: "yes."

Matsuda: "He says that there are two factories under management of this company - one in Konan and one in Honbu. There are about 700 chemists altogether (approximately 300 at Konan)."

In a lengthy exchange, Natsume indicated that most of the scientists, engineers, and workers at Konan were arrested and then later released to go back to work. But six key technical people from NZ, whom he later named, were not released and he had "no idea" what the Russians were doing with them except they were being held in the "secret plant."

Kelly: "Has he got any idea as to how we can get these secret plans?"

Matsuda: "The six men mentioned are the only ones who knew much about the secret plant."[14]

As we shall see momentarily, perhaps the most significant thing about this interrogation is the date, October 31, 1946. It is also significant that the bulk of the scientists involved appear to have been chemists. Finally, as is apparent from the interrogation, the plant or plants at Konan were of significant size.

So what was the Konan complex? To reconstruct it requires a similar process to that used in examining the German uranium enrichment program. The transcript connects the Konan complex and a Japanese industrialist named Noguchi.

Jun Noguchi had built the huge Japanese complex of factories that nestled about the Yalu, Chosin, and Fusen rivers. The latter two rivers had been dammed by Noguchi to supply the enormous electrical power needed by his factories. "Together the three rivers delivered more than 1 million kilowatts of power" to the complex.[15] This was for the time a prodigious amount of electricity, especially in view of the fact that all of Japan produced no more than 3 million.[16] Begun in 1926 in a deal struck with the Japanese Army Noguchi's Konan empire expanded along with Japan's imperial appetites.

So, like the I.G. Farben "Buna" plant at Auschwitz, we note already two key ingredients are present at Konan: large electrical power production infrastructure, and proximity to large amounts of water. Konan, in fact, was the largest industrial complex in all of Asia, and relatively sheltered and even unknown to Allied bomber and the intelligence committees that prepared their targets lists.[17] But there is more.

Declassified documents noted that Konan was also near uranium ore deposits. "This was the logical place for an end-of-the-war atomic bomb project."[18] Moreover, as Wilcox discovered,

---

[14] Wilcox, op. cit, pp. 222-224.
[15] Wilcox, op. cit., p.63.
[16] Ibid.
[17] Ibid., p. 27.
[18] Ibid.

"More digging...turned up a lengthier summary." Dated May 21,

1946 and originating within the US Army's chief of staff office in South Korea, it stated:

> Of increasing interest have been recent reports dealing with an apparent undercover research laboratory operated by the Japanese ... at ... Hungnam.... All reports agree that research and experiments on atomic energy were conducted.... The two chief scientists were Takahashi, Rikizo and Wakabayashi, Tadashiro.... The recent whereabouts of these two individuals is not known, inasmuch as they were taken into custody by the Russians last fell. However, before their capture they are reported to have burned their papers and destroyed their laboratory equipment.... Some reports... say... the Russians were able to remove some of the machinery. Further reports stated that the actual experiments on atomic energy were conducted in Japan, and the Hungnam plant was opened for the development of the practical application of atomic energy to a bomb or other military use. This section of the ... plant ... was always heavily guarded.... These reports received separately are surprisingly uniform as to content. It is felt that a great deal of credence should be attached to these reports as summarized.[19]

We may now speculate as to the real significance of these US Army intelligence reports in the light of subsequent events.

Clearly, the US Army is taking seriously allegations of a Japanese atom bomb project based in the northern Korean Peninsula, very close in fact, to the international border with China, and scene of one of the Korean War's bloodiest battles. At the Chosin Reservoir, General of the Armies Douglas MacArthur had been dealt a significant defeat and was forced to retreat. Indeed, after his celebrated landing at Inchon, MacArthur had relentlessly driven his troops northward in a classic blitzkrieg style campaign, designed in part to seize the Yalu River crossings, crucial to any further operations in China, as well as for defense against any Chinese invasion of the peninsula. And the Chosin Reservoir, and hence Noguchi's vast Konan complex, was also a prime military target. With MacArthur's insubordination and the subsequent

[19] Wilcox, op. cit, p. 28.

Chinese entry into the war, Truman fired MacArthur. So goes the standard history.

But could the real motivations for MacArthur's lightening dash up the peninsula toward Chosin alter the Inchon landings in fact have been based on a very different, and highly secret, agenda of military objectives? Given the US Army's own intelligence memoranda concerning the Konan complex and Russian activities it seems all too likely. And this in turn may mean that the real motivations for his subsequent firing by Truman may also lie in what he uncovered there: certain knowledge of the extent, capabilities, and actual achievements of the Japanese scientists and engineers working on the genzai bakudan.

But what would have been so sensitive about the Japanese atom bomb project, beyond its actual achievements? To answer this question, we must speculate once again. What isotope separation and enrichment methods were known to the Japanese? What did physicist Nishina and his team of scientists finally rely on? Like them German counterparts, the Japanese knew that the ultra-centrifuge was the simplest path, at least in theory, toward the uranium bomb. But Japanese scientists calculated the needed revolutions-per-minute of such a device to be between 100,000 and 150,000 rpms. The United States itself, because of the difficulties in designing turbines of this speed, decided to forego enrichment via this process.[20]

At this point, Wilcox's reconstruction begins to run into a bit of trouble, for the Japanese, he reports, were able to design, and apparently to build, a large ultra-centrifuge.[21] Their only problem, according to Wilcox, was a large enough supply or uranium. However, there is a significant weakness in this construction, for the Japanese, it will be recalled, had to request German assistance in the design and production of jet engines, a request that led not only to the exchange of blueprints for the Messerschmitt 262, the world's first operational jet fighter, but of technicians able to show the Japanese the necessary production methods and tolerances to construct such high speed turbines operating under the stress of

---

[20] Wilcox, op. cit, p. 119.

[21] Ibid., p. 120.

tremendous heat. In other words, while Japanese theoretical capabilities were not lacking at that time, they did lack certain industrial expertise which only the Germans possessed. Moreover, as we have already seen, the centrifuge idea had originated and been developed by the Germans. So if the Japanese successfully designed and built a large ultra-centrifuge, it would seem likely that German assistance was involved at some point.

The other method, a cheaper method and certainly one well within Japanese wartime industrial capability, and one taken to extremely large size by them, was very much a German device.

> What the Nishina group finally did settle on was a process called thermal diffusion. This had been one of the first isotope separation processes devised. But until it was perfected by two German scientists, Klaus Clusius and Gerhard Dickel, in 1938, it had not been practical. Stated simply, thermal diffusion relied on the fact that light gas moves toward heat. Clusius and Dickel constructed a simple device consisting chiefly of two metal tubes placed on inside the other. The inner tube was heated; the outer one was cooled. When the apparatus was turned on, the lighter U-235 moved to the heat wall; the U-238, to the cold wall. Convex currents created by this movement sent the U235 upward; the U-238 downward.... At a certain point the U-235 at the top could be collected, and new gas pumped in. it was a simple and rapid way to get relatively large concentrations of U-235.[22]

As Wilcox notes, this process, developed as it was in Germany, gave the Japanese access to the latest development of this simple and unusual technology. And as we have already seen, the Germans also deliberately fabricated an alloy - Bondur - to offset the highly corrosive effects of uranium gas.

Used in large size and enough quantity - At Auschwitz and Konan - and perhaps in conjunction with other technologies of enrichment, Von Ardenne's mass spectrograph adaptations of cyclotrons, it is entirely feasible that the Japanese also had a highly secret uranium enrichment project being run near the Konan complex.

So one may advance the line of speculation further: with the surrender of the U-234 and its cargo of infrared proximity fuses and

[22] Wilcox, op. cit, p. 95.

their inventor, Heinz Schlicke, and Japan's own request for "fuses" and plans for German strategic heavy bombers, MacArthur's troops at the Chosin Reservoir may have uncovered not only evidence of Japanese progress and eventual testing of a uranium atomic bomb but they may have uncovered further evidence of the success of the program that lay behind it: Nazi Germany's. Indeed, the fuses point to a possible plutonium bomb project underway in both countries.

And so we return to the decision of the Japanese cabinet, and speculate further. If the Japanese government knew of the German program, they may also have known of the extent of its success Two bombs had fallen, and according to the translator for Marshal Rodion Malinovsky, another had fallen but not detonated. In any case, the Japanese were probably aware that while America's single bomb project may not have been capable of delivering more bombs within a short span of time, there would have been no way to estimate how many bombs might have been taken as war booty from the Germans. And the failure of the U-234's mission would have told them that at the minimum, fuses capable of use in a plutonium bomb as well as a large supply of enriched uranium had fallen into Allied hands. By August 12, 1945, with the successful test of the Japanese bomb and the German test of October 1944. the war had gone nuclear.

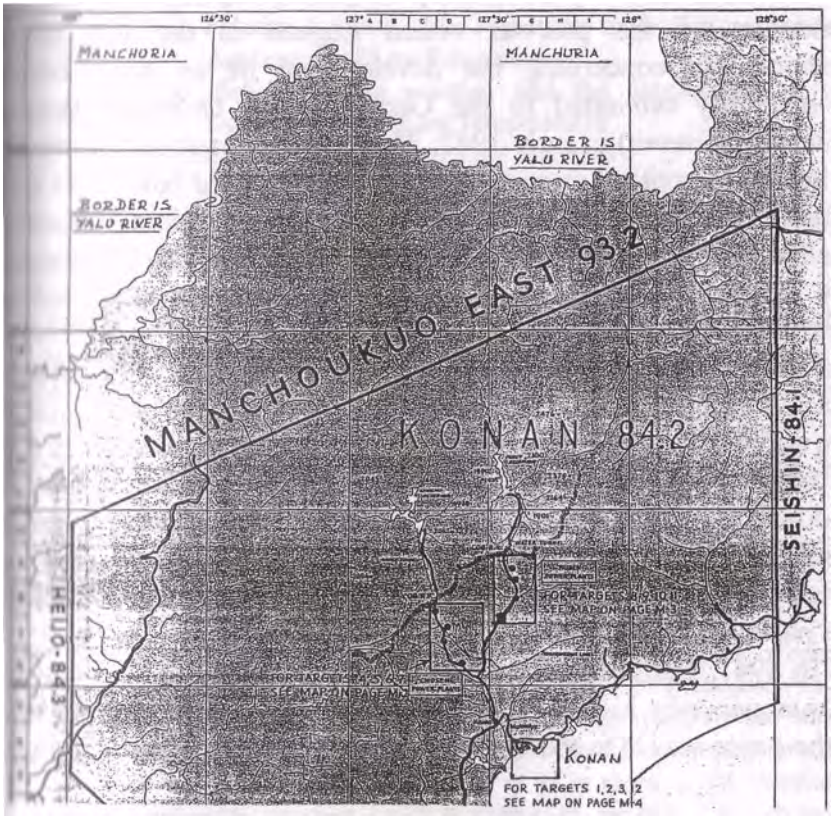
Thus, if the Japanese had been informed of the successful test of the German atom bomb in October of 1944, then the debate of the Imperial Cabinet in Tokyo is understandable. Japan was faced with a potential rain of atom bombs "of German provenance," to quote Oppenheimer's curious remark once again. Surrender, ganzai bakudan notwithstanding, was the logical choice, even for a nation steeped in "proud samurai traditions of honor."

Perhaps it is significant, in the light of contemporary problems with a nuclear North Korea, that the Japanese government issued a strong warning to North Korea that it could arm itself to the teeth with nuclear and thermonuclear weapons in a heartbeat, and would not hesitate to do so if threatened.

In this light, perhaps the most significant fact uncovered by Wilcox is that "contrary to the conventional military history that Japanese atomic efforts were bombed into extinction by spring

1945... the project was continued and heightened even after the Emperor's August 15 surrender."[23] Wilcox does not elaborate much farther than this, but the statement raises a chilling prospect: How could a Japanese project survive right under the noses of the occupying American forces?

... and what if it was not only the Japanese project that survived?



The Konan (Chosin)Region of North Korea

[23] Wilcox, op. cit., p. 239.

8.

THE HEERESWAFFENAMT AND HOUTERMANS MEMORANDA

"And there is something else interesting: Erwin K. Oppenheimer maintained that the bomb that was dropped on Japan was of German provenance. "
Edgar Mayer and Thomas Mehner, Das Geheimnis der deutschen Atombombe[1]

One of the most problematical documents to explain from the standpoint of the postwar Allied Legend is the top secret memorandum concerning the development of an atom bomb anonymously submitted to the German Army Ordnance Bureau (Heereswaffenamt) in early 1942. This document not only correctly estimated the critical mass for a uranium-235 based bomb, but also indicated the possibility of transmutation of uranium into plutonium - called "Element 94" by the memorandum - and its use in a bomb. The memorandum's origin and authorship has been attributed to various interred Farm hall scientists, including Dr. Kurt Diebner. But the authorship is unknown, and the problem of its existence remains: How could the German army, knowing that the required amount of uranium for a nuclear bomb was comparatively small and therefore technically feasible, not have pursued its development? And how could they have pursued such laughably pathetic attempts toward a functioning reactor? The mystery only deepens when we consider a possible ancestry for the Heereswaffenamt memo written in a paper the previous year.

In 1941, Baron Manfred Von Ardenne decided to circulate an unusual paper by his colleague Dr. Fritz Houtermans. The full title of the paper was "On the Question of the Release of Nuclear chain

[1] Edgar Mayer and Thomas Mehner, Das Geheimnis der deutschen Atombombe: Gewann Hitlers Wissenschaftler den nuklearen Wettlauf doch? Die Geheimprojekte bei Innsbruck, im Raum Jonastal bei Arnstadt und in Prague, p. 122.

reactions, by Fritz G. Houtermans: A Communication from the Laboratory of Manfred Von Ardenne, Berlin-Lichterfelde-Ost."[2]

The paper is remarkable in several respects, not the least for its revealing table of contents:

I. General Point of View
II. Competing Processes
III. Chain Reactions through Nuclear Fission with Fast Neutrons
IV. Nuclear Fission through Thermal Neutrons
1. Isotope Separation
2. Selection of a heavy Moderator Substance such as Hydrogen, especially Heavy Water
3. Relative Advance of the Probability for 1/v Process through Application of Low Temperatures
4. Self-Regulating reaction and the Significance of the Doppler Effect at Low Temperatures
V. Chain Reactions at Final Trial Volumes
VI. The Importance of a Chain Reaction at Low Temperatures as a Neutron Source as an Apparatus for Isotope Transformation[3]

The general outline suggests that Houtermans had already thought his way through the process, not only of initiating nuclear explosions via fast neutrons, but also of the transformation of U^{235} into higher elements not chemical identifiable with it. This is the first step toward plutonium, and to the use of plutonium rather than U^{235} as the explosive fuel for a bomb.

The contents of the paper confirms that this is what Houtermans has figured out in no uncertain terms:

> We are able to envision here an apparatus, that would allow...a certain amount of U^{235} to undergo nuclear reaction, simultaneously as an isotope transforming apparatus. The advantage vis-a-vis an isotope enrichment apparatus is therefore that the newly-created product, which would have an atomic number of 93 or more, is not chemically identical with uranium, and therefore is separable by chemical methods. Now since much larger amounts, namely 139 times more, of

[2]Thomas Powers, Heisenberg's War, p. 112. The table of contents page of the original memorandum may be found in Mayer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis, p. 33.
[3] Ibid., p. 32.

> U^{238} are available, so the amount that would be convertible as fuel for a chain reaction is, from the standpoint of our theme, much more important than isotope separation that would result in mere U^{235}.[4]

In other words, before the 1942 Heereswaffenamt memo (which not only gave a critical mass of a bomb with U^{235} as the explosive fuel that is within the range of accuracy, but which also indicates the transformation of uranium into plutonium in a reactor as an alternative fuel returning more bang for the Reichsmark) Houtermans has clearly seen another path to the atom bomb. He may therefore also be considered a leading candidate, if not the leading candidate, for the authorship of the anonymous Heereswaffenamt memorandum. His Jewish background would explain why the memorandum was authored anonymously.

So, having speculated in previous pages that Nazi Germany had actually pursued a uranium bomb as the primary component of its bomb, and conducted a large and very secret uranium enrichment project in order to acquire it, we now come to the subject of the possibility of a plutonium bomb project, conducted once again in secret, and far from the "public exposure" laboratory tinkering of the Farm Hall scientists. In this respect there has already been one indication: the allegation of a second nuclear test of a bomb wilh a very small critical mass via the process of boosted fission, near the Three Corners region of Thuringia, an area that has the highest gamma background radiation in all of Germany.

Are there corroborating indications that the Germans might have successfully developed an atomic reactor, and hence, plutonium, in the secret recesses of Kammler's SS black programs secret weapons empire? Henry Picker, in his book Hitler's Table Talk, makes one significant statement. Not only does he indicate that the Reichspost had something to do with the atom bomb project, but he offers more detail. The bomb was to be constructed in a plant "in an underground SS factory in the southern Harz mountains, which had a foreseen production capacity of 30,000

[4] Mayer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis, p. 32.

workers."[5] Once again, the trail leads back to the SS, the southern Harz mountains of Thuringia, and large underground factories. This facility, according to Picker, "was transferred back to the USSR by the Red Army" after the German surrender.[6] According to Picker, it was for this reason that Stalin reacted with such detachment when President Truman informed him of the successful test of the plutonium bomb at the Trinity site in New Mexico, for Stalin had already acquired the necessary technology to make his own atom bomb. Moreover, Stalin awarded Manfred Von Ardenne the "Soviet 'Nobel Prize,' the Stalin Prize."[7] Mayer and Mehner comment on the real significance of this series of admissions:

> Everything clear? The Russians thus came into possession of some means of production - which from then until now remains unknown - and paid off Manfred Von Ardenne, who was certainly the best consultant in these things, who must have clarified for them the things the Russians had found there.[8]

It is an intriguing idea, for we have already discovered a possible plutonium bomb detonation near Ohrdruf very late in the war.[9] This would of necessity imply that the Germans had acquired a successful atomic reactor, the question is, where? In any case, the reason for lack of knowledge about this project is clear: it was in the control of the SS, and therefore, within the portfolio of the security-obsessed General Kammler.

In any case, Houtermans' reactor concept was significantly different than Heisenberg's, or for that matter, even Enrico Fermi's successful atomic pile at the University of Chicago,

---

[5]Henry Picker, Hitler's Tischgesprachen im Fuhrerhauptquartier, 2 Auflage (Berlin: Propylaen taschenbuch bei Ullstein, 1997), cited in Mayer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis, p. 34.

[6] Ibid.

[7] Mayer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis, p. 34, citing Picker.

[8]ibid.

9 Uranium could of course have been used in a boosted fission device, but the process works better with plutonium, and plutonium would more likely account for such a small critical mass as was reported, namely, 100 grams, since more than that would have been necessary for a uranium bomb even with boosted fission.

> since it aimed at the production not of energy, but of radioactive isotopes. For this reason, it would be able to operate at low temperature using liquid methane as a moderator, rather than heavy water or graphite. This meant that it would be an efficient producer of "element 93 or higher" that could be chemically separated and used as a nuclear explosive.[10]

This is significant, for it differentiates the Von Ardenne-Houtermans effort both from the Heisenberg effort to design and construct a working atomic pile, and from Enrico Fermi's success in doing so.[11]

So at one end of the war, ca. 1945, we find the allegations on tested weapon of small critical mass which, if true, is most liked that of a plutonium bomb using a process of boosted fission, and at the other end, ca. 1941, we have a paper outlining a project to achieve a reactor for the production of the explosive fuel of such a bomb. There is an odd piece of corroboration that the Germans may also have been perilously close to, if not in actual possession of, a plutonium atom bomb, from the Pacific Theater and the Japanese program. Robert Wilcox, in his Japan's Secret War, recounts how the Spanish Nationalist government successfully ran a spy ring both for the Germans and for the Japanese, an espionage operation that had no little success in penetrating the Manhattan Project, even to the extent of acquiring in 1943 the earliest Allied designs for a detonator for such a bomb. Interviewing Angel Alcazar de Velasco, the alleged head of the ring, Wilcox quotes a rather astonishing statement:

> The information was that the American work on a nuclear weapon was very advanced but they had a long way to go. There were even notes

---

[10] Rose, op. cit, p. 141.

[11] Researcher Frank Joseph has found another source for a reactor, and consider his information to be so crucial to this story, and so sensational, that cannot in good conscience mention it in this work. I believe that it is a story that he best tells himself, since it is his discovery. He was kind enough to share it with me as this book was being written.

about the detonator. It was similar to one already in use by the Germans. 12

A complicated detonator - presumably for use in a plutonium bomb, since the detonator mechanism for a uranium bomb is a much simpler piece of equipment - already in use by the Germans in 1943!? Why would the Germans have had the need for such a complex detonator? The timing of the allegation is also disturbing, since it corroborates the assertions, examined earlier, of the Japanese military attache in Stockholm, that the Germans were using some type of weapon of mass destruction on the Eastern Front ca. 1943, in the region of Kursk.[13]

But Houtermans was interested in more than just atom bombs. Even Paul Lawrence Rose admits that Houtermans' role in Nazi atom bomb research "remains enigmatic."[14] The reason why, though, is clear enough, once its enormous implications are understood, for Houtermans' real specialty lay in the first theoretical description of the process of thermonuclear fusion of heavy hydrogen (deuterium and tritium) atoms through high heat in stars, the very heat produced by an uncontrolled chain reaction.[15]

With this, we are a step closer to unlocking the riddle of just exactly what types of weapons Kammler's "think tank" was working on, for if Hotelmans' idea was seized upon, then hydrogen bombs would have been the next logical progression in the

---

[12] Wilcox, op. cit, p. 28, emphasis added.

[13] The attache, it will be recalled, actually maintained that these weapons - whatever they were - were also used in the "Crimea", making it most likely during the siege of the Russian fortress of Sevastopol in 1942. Thus would seem to weigh very heavily against this mystery weapon being an atom bomb. But if not, what other weapon could have caused such destruction? This is a question that will be more fully addressed in subsequent parts of this book. Powers notes that Allen Dulles in Zurich received reports of a German project in "vast underground factories" that were after "putting out a new explosive in aerial bombs. He has even heard that the container of the explosive is spherical." (Rose, op. cit., p. 272, emphasis added) A spherical detonator, of course, is the type of implosion-compression detonator used to assemble the critical mass of a plutonium bomb.

[14] Rose, op. cit., p. 51, n. 38.

[15] Q.v. Powers, Heisenberg's War.

"technology tree" from the atom bomb, just as it was for the Americans and Russians after the war. Is there any indication the this was in fact the real ultimate goal of the secret German SS atom bomb program? In other words, was it really an atom bomb program at all? Or was it a hydrogen bomb program?

Fantastic as it may be to believe, the latter possibility would seem to be the actual case. The letter of Professor Lachner referred to previously also gives further illumination on the goal of Kammler's SS Sonderkommando:

> Work was also conducted on the hydrogen bomb. A factory for the manufacture of heavy hydrogen was constructed in Norway but was of course destroyed by the enemy. The small uranium bombs were primarily intended as detonators for the hydrogen bombs, so their immediate use was not contemplated.[16]

Another corroboration for this astonishing assertion may be found in a pre-war Austrian patent for a "molecular bomb", an early version of the hydrogen bomb, from 1938.[17] In any case, Professor Lachner asserts unequivocally that the real goal of the project was weapon more terrifying and destructive than the atom bomb.

Another factor is worth mentioning in this regard. The pursuit of the hydrogen bomb would also explain why the Nazis were interested in small atom bombs, made smaller via boosted fission, for a hydrogen bomb, at least with the technology available back then, would have been an enormously heavy and cumbersome object. The quest for "miniaturization" was therefore another practical aim: any such bomb would have to be made small enough for German bombers or rockets to carry, and even then, only the very largest bombers or rockets would have been up to the task, if at all.[18]

---

[16] Mayer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis, p. 80.

[17] Ibid., pp. 255-256.

[18] It should be recalled that the first hydrogen bomb, America's "Mike", weighed several tons, and was impractical as an actual weapon. America's first operational hydrogen bomb actually weighed several tons. It is difficult to imagine any existing aircraft in the German arsenal, not even the enormous Ju 390, as being up to the task of delivering a hydrogen bomb, and the specifications for the A9/10 Amerikaraket are far below what would be needed

But to produce hydrogen bombs, one must have an adequate supply of the heavy hydrogen isotopes deuterium and tritium. Here again, however, the Allied Legend intervenes, and maintains that after the successful Allied destruction of the Norwegian heavy water plant at Ryukon, German production of the precious destructive substance was never able to recover, and, as a consequence, heavy water for a moderator in reactors (much less a hydrogen bomb!) was never in enough supply. The further implication of this assertion is, of course, that the failure of Heisenberg and other scientists to construct a reactor based on heavy water as a moderator was doomed to failure because of the lack of supply.

But again, the reality was quite different. Dr. Diebner in an exchange with Dr. Wirtz - both later interred at Farm Hall - indicated that a complete heavy water plant was built in Germany by the end of 1943.[19] However, revelations made at the end of the war were even more important as a means of measuring the truly significant extent of German heavy water production: a large heavy water factory, hitherto entirely unknown, had been discovered by the Allies in Kiel in northern Germany. But most importantly, after the German reunification in 1989, when the vast SS underground factories in the Harz region of Thuringia in the former eastern zone were rediscovered, many of these were found to contain several large electrical generators, enough to supply power for a few small cities![20]

Such high electrical output would certainly not have been needed for the last Fuhrer Headquarters, but it certainly would have been required for factories separating uranium isotope(especially if they used Von Ardenne's cyclotron process), and that manufactured heavy water. Was the hydrogen bomb the real goal? Does this explain the reason that, if Germany did have the atom

---

for such a bomb. The only practical method of delivering a hydrogen bomb, it seems to me, would have been via a large submarine or ship to a port city, a militarily quite risky venture, and one that, for the German crews involved, would have been a one way venture.

[19] Mayer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis, p. 197.

[20] Ibid., p. 198.

bomb, it (or they) were seldom if ever actually used, being husbanded as detonators for something lar more powerful? Does this also explain, in part, the real reason for the curtain of secrecy that fell over Kammler's special SS "think tank" command structure?

One indication that this may be so were remarks made by Dr. Josef Gobbels to the Italian officer Luigi Romersa who witnessed the Rugen atom bomb test, whom we encountered earlier. According to Romersa, Gobbels told him "Heavy water is an important material in the manufacture of the disintegration bomb.[21] We had already before the war made some headway in the direction..."[22] Headway indeed, if an Austrian patent for prototype had already been taken out in 1938![23]

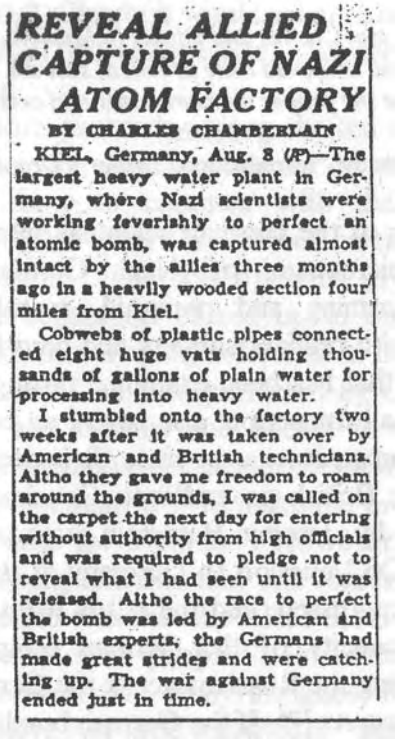
That the ultimate goal of the German atom bomb project was the hydrogen bomb, and not the atom bomb at all, seems in retrospect both quite logical and quite disconcerting. As we shall discover in the remaining parts of this book, however, even hydrogen bombs pale by comparison not only just to the "paper projects" being studied in Kammler's SS Sonderkommando, but to the very real projects and experiments with forces of even larger potential destructive capability than hydrogen bombs. Having foreseen the thermonuclear future, the SS was already planning and experimenting with countermeasures, and with second and third generations of offensive strategic weapons even more horrifying.

---

[21] Auflosungsbombe.

[22] Mayer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis, p. 102.

[23] Such a patent would have been immediately classified as a "Geheime Reichsache" or "secret state matter", i.e., a matter of national security as would now be said. As such, it would have definitely made its way directly to Kammler's "think tank," as will be seen in subsequent parts of this book.



REVEAL ALLIED CAPTURE OF NAZI ATOM FACTORY

BY CHARLES CHAMBERLAIN

KIEL, Germany, Aug. 8 (AP)—The largest heavy water plant in Germany, where Nazi scientists were working feverishly to perfect an atomic bomb, was captured almost intact by the allies three months ago in a heavily wooded section four miles from Kiel.

Cobwebs of plastic pipes connected eight huge vats holding thousands of gallons of plain water for processing into heavy water.

I stumbled onto the factory two weeks after it was taken over by American and British technicians. Altho they gave me freedom to roam around the grounds, I was called on the carpet the next day for entering without authority from high officials and was required to pledge not to reveal what I had seen until it was released. Altho the race to perfect the bomb was led by American and British experts, the Germans had made great strides and were catching up. The war against Germany ended just in time.

The Allied Discovery of a Heavy Water Plant in Kiel after the end of the War

9.

POSSENSPIEL BEI FARM HALL AND OTHER FARCES

"Bagge in Berlin and Clusius and Dickel in Munich developed isotope separation methods but achieved little practical success. They never obtained enough U^{235} to make the proper measurements and certainly too little for a bomb."
David Cassidy, "Introduction," Hitler's Uranium Club[1]

The transcripts of the German scientists interred at Farm Hall seem like a microcosm of Nazi German culture itself, simultaneously charming and paranoid, moralizing and utterly amoral, suffused with brilliant subtlety and ham-fisted bluntness. In view of the thesis that has been examined throughout the previous pages, the Farm Hall transcripts also reveal an equal schizophrenic on the part of commentators ever since their declassification in the early 1990s by the British government. Consider for example the following remark by Jeremy Bernstein with regard to Samuel Goudsmit's "ALSOS" mission to Germany at the end of the was "As the mission progressed, and the Alsos team learned more and more about the paucity of the German program, the concern focused on not letting the Russians get at the Germans and so glean 'any major bomb secrets.'"[2] If the German bomb program was in a state characterized as "paucity," and if there were fundamental "problems" in Heisenberg's understanding of nuclear fission and bomb physics - as there indeed were - then why the concern at all? But then early on in the transcripts an exchange betwen Heisenberg, Diebner, and Korsching occurs, in which the three German scientists discuss the possibility that they may have been viewed by the Allies and Soviets at Potsdam as war booty.

---

[1] David Cassidy, "Introduction," in Jeremy Bernstein, ed., Hitler's Uranium Club: The Secret Recordings at Farm Hall, Second Edition, (new York: Copernicus, 2001), p. xxix.

[2] Bernstein, op. cit, p. 47.

Barnstein then comments "presumably Heisenberg is worried here about being taken to task in German for failing to build a bomb. The notion that these ten German scientists would be discussed at the Potsdam Conference borders on the ludicrous."[3] If so ludicrous, then why inter them for months, secretly record their conversations and transcribe them, and then keep them classified until the early 1990s? Clearly it would seem that something more is going on at Farm Hall that either eludes commentators, or that they are simply ignoring.

The conversations proceeds among the ten scientists, with one concern (prior to the announcement of the a-bombing of Hiroshima) being how to continue with their "work", totally oblivious to the fact that others had indeed carried on their "work" to brilliant conclusion.[4] The schizophrenia grows whenever the subject of isotope separation comes up in conversation. In the epigraph that began this chapter, reference is made to the Clusius tube "thermal diffusion" method perfected by Clusius and Dickel: "Bagge in Berlin and Clusius and Dickel in Munich developed isotope separation methods but achieved little practical success. They never obtained enough U^{235} to make the proper measurements and certainly too little for a bomb."[5] However, in the transcripts themselves, Heisenberg remarks that one reason he and his fellow scientists were interred was that the Allies did not "want us to pass on our knowledge to other people."[6] However it is the editorial comment of this remark that really intrigues; the Germans, notes Bernstein, would have had little knowledge "that would have been of any use to the Allies," but a great deal of expertise that they would have wanted to keep from the hands of other powers such as France and Russia. Then follows another remark concerning Harteck's "ultra-centrifuge" technology, which "would have been an extraordinarily useful thing for any country to possess."[7] Indeed,

---

[3] Bernstein, op. cit, p. 81, n. 16.

[4] Ibid., pp. 82-84.

[5] Ibid., Cassidy, "Introduction," p. xxix.

[6] Ibid., p. 91, the conversation is between Heisenberg, Von Weizsacker, Wirtz, Harteck and Diebner on July 18, 1945.

7 Ibid., p. 91, n. 7.

this was a technology that even the US and UK had not brought to such an advanced state of perfection.

And then, on July 26, 1945, a remark is made by Otto Hahn that only increases the mystery: "1 read an article in the Picture Post about the uranium bomb; it said that the newspapers had mentioned that such a bomb was being made in Germany. Now you can understand that we are being 'detained' because we are such men."[8] The editorial comment only increases the problem: "This was before the bomb was used on Japan, when its existence was kept in strict secrecy!"[9] Had Hahn unwittingly let the cat out of the box? It is an odd thing for a scientist of Hahn's stature to say, especially since, as we have seen, there were a wealth of "indications" of the size of the German project that appeared in short articles in the Allied press both during and after the war.

Then on July 21, 1945, the handsome and cynical Horst Korsching, discussing the prospects for making a living with Diebner and Bagge, offers a curious observation:

> BAGGE: For the sake of the money, I should like to work on the uranium engine; on the other hand, I should like to work on cosmic rays. I feel like Diebner about this.
>
> KORSCHING: Would you both like to construct a uranium engine?
>
> DIEBNER: This is the chance to earn a living.
>
> KORSCHING: Every layman can see that these ideas are exceedingly important. Hence there won't be any money in it. You only make money on ideas which have escaped the general public. If you invent something like artificial rubies for the watch making industry, you will make more money than with the uranium engine.[10]

Artificial rubies? Of course, such things were used in watchmaking before the invention of quartz movement. But in 1945, the idea was fantastic. Of course, by the time of the declassification of these transcripts, the world's first laser, which did in fact use an artificial

---

[8] Bernstein, op. cit., p. 94.
[9] Ibid., n. 19.
[10] Ibid., p. 99.

ruby as the main component of the lasing optical cavity, was history, having been invented in 1961. But in July of 1945 the idea was more than a little ahead of its time. Is this another possible, though slight, indication that something else was going on inside Nazi Germany? Later in the conversation, Korsching expresses his desire to return to Hechingen to collect his telescope, lenses and prisms, an indication that he was perhaps involved in optical as well as nuclear research.

But then, another curious statement from Korsching:

> Of course it would be an idea to go to the Argentine with two people and say: "Here we are, we know how to do this and that; we have a good method for the separation of isotopes, we do not need to produce heavy water." Somehow in this fashion we have to do it. It would not come to anything if you collaborated with Heisenberg on a uranium engine. They did not even bring along the small fry to this place, that is how outsiders judge the work.[11]

If the thesis presented thus far is true, and there was a very secretive SS bomb project and if the Heisenberg represented a false front "sham" project being deliberately shut out of the loop by the SS and maintained for Allied consumption, then indeed there may be other motivations for the internment of the German scientists than are commonly supposed. If, for example, General Patton's Third Army troops did indeed find and discover components and scientists from the SS project, then it would have been crucial to ascertain whether or not the "big fish" - to paraphrase Korsching's rather self-important view of the scientists at Farm Hall - had had any knowledge of these SS projects.

Then, in the transcripts of conversations from August 1-6, 1945, Dr. Kurt Diebner briefly mentions a fact that carries great significance in the light of what we have discovered of the German atom bomb project and the SS Sonderkommando underground factories in the Harz Mountains in Thuringia. Diebner mentions very briefly that his supply of radium was obtained "from the Harz."[12] Bernstein's comment at this juncture is of a brevity huge

[11] Bernstein, op. cit., p. 100.
[12] Ibid.,p. 111.

with omissions: "A mountain range in central Germany." Bernstein does not have anything more to say about the subject. Is he ignorant of the claims being uncovered by contemporary German researchers? Or does the omission of mention stem from some other motivation?

In any case, the tenor and mood of the scientists quickly changes when they learn of the atom bomb dropped on Hiroshima. The first reactions, recorded by the British microphones, occurs between Hahn and Wirtz:

> HAHN: They can only have done that if they have uranium isotope separation.
>
> WIRTZ: They have it too.[14]

A discussion quickly ensues between all the German scientists, and again it is Diebner who makes a short statement pregnant with significance: "We always thought we would need two years for one bomb."[15] Moreover, Bernstein at this point betrays a hesitation and uncertainty unusual in his otherwise straightforward commentaries and annotations whose aim is clearly to maintain the Allied Legend: "I am not sure whom Diebner includes in his 'we' here or on what his estimate is based. But his use of the word 'bomb' is unchallenged by the others."[16] Who indeed were the people that Diebner referred to when he said "we"? Bernstein appears not to know, but given that Diebner has earlier referred to his supply of radium "in the Harz", we may rationally speculate that Diebner was referring obliquely, and no doubt intentionally so, to his colleagues in the SS run program.

Then follows a short, but astonishing, exchange between Hahn, Weizsacker, Harteck, Wirtz, and Diebner:

[14] Bernstein, op. cit., p. 115, emphasis added.
[15] Ibid., p. 117.
[16] Ibid., p. 118.

HAHN: I think it's absolutely impossible to produce one ton of uranium 235 by separating isotopes. [17]

WEIZSACKER: What do you do with these centrifuges?

HARTECK: You can never get pure "235" with the centrifuge. But I don't believe that it can be done with the centrifuge.

WIRTZ: No certainly not.

HAHN: Yes, but they could do it with mass spectrographs. Ewald has some patent.[18]

DIEBNER: There is also a photochemical process. [19]

Now let us put all this in context, for this little exchange is an indication that a possible "farce" is being played out at Farm Hall, not only by the interred German scientists, but also possibly by the declassification of the transcripts themselves. What do I mean by this? Note that the transcripts are declassified by the British after the German reunification in 1989, an oblique admission, perhaps, that there was no more purpose in maintaining whatever secrets they still held, since there would now be other sources available to tell the story that had been long suppressed: that the Nazis had been either perilously close to, or had actually acquired the atom bomb before the Allies.

First, note in the above exchange that Otto Hahn, whose remarks began this chapter, has now changed his mind. His earlier

---

[17]This comment, in the light of what has already been learned about the size of the German enrichment program, can mean only one of two things: (1) Hahn is deliberately lying here, to deflect his on possible involvement in the program; or (2) he is telling the truth, and knows nothing about it. Of the two, the latter is the much more likely.

[18] Again, Hahn has pointed the way clearly to Baron Manfred Von Ardenne's cyclotron modifications. Thus, the German scientists knew how to do it, and as is therefore extremely likely, the SS also knew which was the best method. Hence, the extraordinary power consumption at Auschwitz points, as does the most efficient method itself, to Von Ardenne's method as the method most likely used there and elsewhere to separate isotope.

[19] Bernstein, op. cit., p. 118.

remarks mention isotope separation as the means to a bomb. Now, he has reversed himself, and all on the same day. But then comes Weizsacker's remark: What else would one used centrifuges for?[20] This is countered by remarks from the inventor himself, Paul Harteck, who maintained one cannot obtain "pure 235" via that process. Wirtz then chimes in with agreement, and then Hahn, ever the radio-chemist, reverses himself again, within a matter of minutes, by coming to the obvious conclusion from a scientific and engineering standpoint: the best way to obtain "pure" U^{235} was via mass spectrography.

But then comes the bombshell. Diebner, who clearly has some connection to Kammler's SS "think tank" special projects empire in the Harz mountains, alludes to an unknown "photochemical" process for isotope separation and enrichment. Even Bernstein admits that whatever Diebner meant by this remark is "unclear"[21] In all likelihood, it is unclear, because it remains classified, somewhere, by someone. And that should give us pause, for it means that the Kammlerstab may have found a method of isotope separation and enrichment that remains otherwise unknown to this day!

Shortly after this revealing little exchange, Wirtz then offers another solution: "I would bet," he says, "that it is separation by diffusion with recycling."[22] Wirtz is clearly proposing that separation was a multi-staged process, with the result of one pass through the separation process then being used as feedstock for another pass for enrichment to greater purity, and the process being repeated until the desired grade of purity - weapons grade - was obtained. The diffusion process mentioned in this context is vague, for there were at least two methods known to the Germans, the Allies, and the Japanese under the name of "diffusion". One method, cited by Bernstein as the explanation of Wirtz's remarks, is the manufacture of uranium gas, and forcing it under pressure through sinterized metal. Sinterization simply means that a metal

---

[20] As we shall discover, there may well have been another use to which this, or a modified, technology had been put by the SS.

[21] Bernstein, op. cit, p. 117, n. 24.

[22] Ibid., p. 118.

contains billions of micro-pores or holes of specific and tiny size, through which the atoms of different isotopes diffuse at slightly different rates of speed. "The original estimate was that 5,00 of these barriers would be needed for nearly complete separation, as opposed to 22,000 centrifuges."[21] The other process was thermal diffusion that was already examined more closely in chapter 7.

The thermal diffusion method is mentioned briefly in the published Farm Hall transcripts during the conversations of the German scientists on the day of the Hiroshima bombing by Weizsacker.[24] Bernstein notes of this method that it was being tried by Korsching, and that it consisted of a "glass tube and heating coil to separate isotopes. It never worked well for uranium."[25] But what Bernstein has described is the original Clusius-Dickel tube for thermal diffusion, a process that was not efficient, as Bernstein correctly indicates. However, a different method of Clusius tubes was described by Wilcox in reference to the Japanese program:

> What the Nishina group finally did settle on was a process called thermal diffusion. This had been one of the first isotope separation processes devised. Bu until it was perfected by two German scientists, Klaus Clusius and Gerhard Dickel, in 1938, it had not been practical. Stated simply, thermal diffusion relied on the fact that light gas moves toward heat. Clusius and Dickel constructed a simple device consisting chiefly of two metal tubes placed one inside the other. The inner tube was heated; the outer tube was cooled. When the apparatus was turned on, the lighter U-235 moved to the heat wall; the U-238, to the cold wall. Convex currents created by this movement sent the U-235 upward; the U-238 downward. The result was something like a heated house in winter; hot air rising, cold air staying at the bottom. At a certain point the U-235 at the top could be collected, and new gas pumped in. It was a simple and rapid way to get relatively large concentrations of U-235.[26]

And with repeated passes through a series of such vessels, purity would be increased. In any case, there is some discrepancy in the

---

[23] Bernstein, op. cit., p. 119, n. 28.
[24] Ibid., p. 199.
[25] Ibid., p. 83, n. 27.
[26] Robert K. Wilcox, Japan's Secret War, p. 95, emphasis added.

method as described by Bernstein, and that by Wilcox. Perhaps the latter described a modification made to the original method, with extremes of heat and cold being applied.

Harteck, Wirtz, and Heisenberg then continue the subject to isotope separation and enrichment a little further on:

> HARTECK: They have managed it with mass spectrographs on a large scale or else they have been successful with a photochemical process.
>
> WIRTZ: Well I would say photochemistry or diffusion, ordinary diffusion. They irradiate it with a particular wavelength (all talking together).

At this juncture, Bernstein again observes that "it is not clear" what this photochemical process is.[27] In any case, whatever the process was, Wirtz's mention of it and of irradiation with a particular "wavelength" appears to have provoked a burst of conversation from the other scientists. Were they intentionally trying to drown him out and mask his statements so as not to be recorded? We will never know. But in any case, the conversation continues:

> HARTECK: Or using mass spectrographs in enormous quantities. It is perhaps possible for a mass spectrograph to make 1 milligram in one day - say of "235." They could make quite a cheap mass spectrograph, which, in very large quantities, might cost a hundred dollars. You could do it with 100,000 mass spectrographs.

Again, Bernstein's comment is suggestive: "This is essentially what the Allies did."[28] But it is also, as we have seen, very probably what the Germans did at the "Buna plant" at Auschwitz and later, in the large underground factories run by Kammler's SS Sonderkommando. The Farm Hall scientists, as to be expected, seemed totally oblivious to this program, but have worked out the basic facts for themselves.

> HEISENBERG: Yes, of course, if you do it like that, and they seem to have worked on that scale, 180,000 people were working on it.

---

[27] Bernstein, op. cit., p. 120, n. 37.

[28] Ibid., p. 120, n. 38.

HARTECK: Which is 100 times more than we had.[29]

It may have been 100 times more than Harteck or any of the high profile scientists interred at Farm Hall had at their disposal, but it was certainly not a number beyond the SS, with its hundreds of thousands of concentration camp slave laborers. Hahn later reinforces the pathetic plight of the "Heisenberg group" by adding "Of course, we were unable to work on that scale."[30] Such facts and methods would doubtless have been known to the Kammlerstab, and doubtless he would have pursued them with his customary "focus."

Harteck then corroborated this view in a statement regarding the Clusius process, and his numbers reveal the dangerous potential for isotope separation and enrichment that lay within Nazi Germany's capabilities if worked on a similarly large scale as the Manhattan Project:

> If it is a fact that an explosive can be produced either by means of the mass spectrograph - we would never have done it as we could never have employed 56,000 workmen. For instance, when we considered the Clusius-Linde business combined with our exchange cycle we would have needed to employ 50 workmen continuously in order to produce two tons a year. If we wanted to make ten tons we would have had to employ 250 men. We couldn't do that.[31]

For Harteck and the other Farm Hall scientists, the problem was not means or methods, it was simply a labor shortage, a shortage the SS was not experiencing.

Later, Harteck is even more specific:

> Considering the figures involved I think it must have been mass spectrographs. If they had had some other good method they wouldn't have needed to spend so much. One wouldn't have needed so many men.

---

[29] Ibid., p. 120

[30] Ibid., p. 121.

[31] Ibid.

Korsching responds, and a small debate ensues, in which a sensitive topic is barely touched upon by Harteck, and Bernstein's editorial comment becomes either an exercise in ignorance, or deliberate omission:

> KORSCHING: It was never done with spectrographs.
>
> HEISENBERG: I must say I think your theory is right and that is spectrographs.
>
> WIRTZ: I am prepared to bet that it isn't.
>
> HEISENBERG: What would one want 60,000 men for?
>
> KORSCHING: You try and vaporize one ton of uranium.
>
> HARTECK: You only need ten men for that. I was amazed at what saw at I.G. [32]

Bernstein's only comment here is to note the obvious, that "I.G." means "I.G. Farben," nothing else is said. Either Bernstein is unaware of the Farben "Buna plant" and its mysterious properties of consuming more electricity than Berlin and producing no Buna, or he has intentionally omitted any further clarification of Harteck's remark. The Allied Legend, in so far as Bernstein is concerned, is intact.

For his part however, Harteck is either clearly implying that he saw some large scale effort underway by I.G. Farben, employed tens of thousands of workers, or his remarks might also be construed to indicate that the Germans had discovered a method to make the process less labor intensive. In any case, I know of no other Farben facility in Germany at the time that was known to be working on enrichment. The only facility with the requisite "enrichment facility" signature is the one at Auschwitz, and this means that Harteck may have seen not only a project as large as that at Oak Ridge, Tennessee, but one that was either more efficient - as we know Von Ardenne's mass spectrographs to be - than its

[32] Bernstein, op. cit, p. 122, emphasis added.

American counterpart, as well as one less reliant on skilled labor,
for the labor at Auschwitz, was "inexhaustible", and unfortunately, suspendable.

In any case, if all this is so, then it is a strong indicator that Harteck's and possibly some or all of the other interred scientists' remarks in the Farm Hall transcripts are careful stage-acting, a script that reveals just enough engineering savvy to indicate that the scientists knew at least the broad outlines of how an atom bomb could be achieved without a nuclear reactor (or "uranium engine" as they called it), and yet interlarded with just enough ignorance on specifics to indicate either that they were not involved at the highest levels, or that they were deliberately dissembling. In Harteck's case, at least, we must opt for deliberate dissembling to a certain degree, for what he saw - if he was not completely involved with it - was a vast enrichment program proceeding on the emaciated backs of concentration camp laborers.

As if this were not enough, Weizsacker later corroborates the broad outlines of the top secret SS program we have outlined previously:

> WEIZSACKER: If you had wanted to make a bomb we would probably have concentrated more of the separation of isotopes and less on heavy water.... If we had started this business soon enough we could have got somewhere. If they were able to complete it in the summer of 1945, we might have had the luck to complete it in the winter 1944-45.[33]

Note that he not only corroborates the broad time frame we have aleady found for the alleged German atom bomb test at Rugen, but more importantly, his statement comes after Harteck's clear allusion to the existence of just such a program in Nazi Germany.

A little later, the British military intelligence summary of the conversation that ensues interjects the following cryptic summary of comments made by Walter Gerlach, without any further commentary: "Gerlach goes on to explain that the Nazi party seemed to think that they were working on a bomb and relates how the Party people in Munich were going round from house to house

[33] Bernstein, op. cit., p. 123.

on the 27th or 28th of April last telling everyone that the atomic bomb would be used the following day."[34] Bernstein's editorial note reflects his confusion, and confirms that he is in all likelihood not familiar with the allegations of the tests at Rugen and Ohrdruf: " It is not clear who has supposed to be using this weapon and against whom."[35]

In any case, so far from contradicting the possibility of a secret enrichment and bomb program, however, in the main the Farm Hall scientists seem to corroborate it.

Finally, Harteck again must have stunned his British captors with a remark made near the end of the transcript for August 6, 1945:

> HARTECK: The multiplication factor with "235" is 2.8, and when one collides with the other how long is the path until it happens? 4 centimeters, Rx is the radius. Then you have to multiply that by the mean free path and divide it by the square root of the multiplication factor. That should be 3.2. Rx is about 14 centimeters, the weight is 200 kilograms; then it explodes.[36]

Even Bernstein cannot ignore this, and his comment indicates the there is a "possible something" lurking behind Harteck's figures:

> This apparently off-hand calculation of the critical mass by Harteck which does lead to a sensible answer, unlike Heisenberg's shows some evidence that he had done this problem before. It is difficult to believe that he would have known, for example, that the critical radius involved the inverse square root of the multiplication factor if he had not thought about it. How Harteck got the number 2.8 for the multiplication factor is unclear. During the war the Los Alamos people, who certainly knew a lot more than he did, used 2.2. Only after the war was the number increase to 2.52 as the measurements became better. Perhaps it was Harteck who supplied the German Army Ordnance report of January 1942 with its numbers in the scientists' attempts to interest the Army in continuing support of bomb research.[37]

---

[34] Ibid., p. 126.
[35] Ibid., n. 85.
[36] Ibid., p. 133.
[37] Ibid., n. 121.

perhaps Harteck had "run the numbers" before. But there is another possibility.

Perhaps, on his visit to "I.G." that he alluded to earlier, someone had shown Harteck the numbers. In this regard it is perhaps significant that of all the Farm Hall scientists, his comments most consistently point to the acknowledgment of a feasible method that, with large enough scale, could lead to sufficient quantities of fissile weapons grade uranium. And it is significant too that the transcripts reveal a variety of methods known and available to the Germans that, used in sufficient numbers and with a sufficient labor pool, could have done exactly that. Harteck's comments point in the consistent and general direction of Manfred Von Ardenne, Fritz Houtermans, and the rubberless "Buna facility" of I.G. Farben at Auschwitz. Like the Farben directors themselves in the dock at Nuremberg, Harteck is perhaps, in his own subtle way, trying to set the record straight. These facts and associated speculations also perhaps explain why, after so many years, the Farm Hall transcripts were finally declassified, for they do not, in the final analysis, serve the Allied Legend well.

10.

GATEWAY TO THE BLACK SUN: CONCLUSIONS TO PART ONE

"So it is that proof of an arrangement between Martin Bormann and the United States, if there was one, does not appear to exist. What is apparent, however, is that the United States went to some trouble to ensure that such evident of a relationship does not exist!"
Carter Hydrick, Critical Mass[1]

I believe a strong prima facie case has been outlined that Nazi Germany developed and successfully tested, and perhaps used, an uranium atom bomb before the end of World War Two, and possibly that it had made significant strides toward the acquisition if not outright testing, of a boosted fission plutonium bomb of small critical mass and high yield. This thesis, radical as it is, does seem to resolve at a stroke discrepancies and anomalies - some seemingly trifling and others much more blatant - about the political and operational history of the war. The idea of an actual German atom bomb and project, and not the small, miserably failed, laboratory effort proffered by the Allied Legend, seems to provide suitable explanations for a host of things that have long puzzled analysts and commentators.

For example, what of Hitler's declaration of war against the United States in December of 1941, after the Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor? Analysts have puzzled over this decision and his possible motivations in doing so for decades, and a variety of unsatisfactory explanations have been advanced, from his bourgeois sense of "duty" to his Japanese ally, to the secret naval war fought "off the books" for months between the Third Reich and the United States and the need to make it "official", to Hitler's impatience, delusions, and/or insanity, to the realization by the Nazi leadership that Roosevelt meant to enter the European war one way of

[1] Carter Hydrick, Critical Mass, internet publisher manuscript (www.3dshort.com/nazibomb2/CRITICALMASS.txt), p. 133.

another no later than 1943. But regardless of what Hitler's motivations or thought processes may have been, from the standpoint of conventional military analysis, the German declaration of war on America was sheer suicide, as her overwhelming production capacity and oceanic insulation virtually assured her of initial supremacy over the Nazi war-making juggernaut. Hitler's decision, as German armies were stalled and freezing to death at the gates of Moscow in 1941, seems more than suicidal. Hitler was shown for what he was: a madman.

But from the perspective of the evidence presented here, that was not the real military picture in December 1941 at all, not was it in the secret counsels that the German dictator kept in his mind. His scientists, after all, had discovered nuclear fission, and his scientists had proposed a method of obtaining an atom bomb via large quantities of isotope separation and enrichment machines and huge concentrations of labor. His scientists would, in a month or so, assure him, via the Heereswaffenamt memorandum, that the amount of material needed for a bomb was not tons, but kilograms. And his favorite atomic scientist, Manfred Von Ardenne, and his associate Dr. Fritz Houtermans, had already published a manuscript on how it could all be done. And he knew, too, that Germany had the needed material - uranium - in an abundance that the United States could only scarcely imagine.

In retrospect, then, the secrecy surrounding the German project seems all too clear, for the best source of cheap labor lay in the death camps, camps that Hitler desired to keep secret from the German people, for obvious reasons. By early 1941 Farben had already begun construction of its "Buna plant" at Auschwitz. And there was more probably lurking in Hitler's twisted mind: before the war, some scientists in the Reich had spelled out the basic idea behind a weapon even more powerful than the atom bomb, for which the latter was but a fuse. Hitler, on this view, ever the gambler, too the risk, confident of being in the possession of a fearful arsenal within a short span of two to three years, and declared war on the United States.

So too the military deployments and operations of the European war's end that made little sense before now begin to take on an

operational logic that is almost irresistible. The madcap, and some would say, militarily and politically indefensible, Allied dash away from Berlin and to south central Germany and Prague are consistend with American knowledge, at some very high level, of Kammler's SS Sonderkommando black projects and secret weapons empire. Hitler's own obsession with the defense of Breslau in lower Silesia and of Prague itself, an obsession that made no sense to his generals, make military sense only in the context of an atom bomb and intercontinental rocket project that was successful in the attainment of the first and perilously close to the attainment of the second.

Similarly, Reichsfuhrer SS Heinrich Himmler's offer of a surrender to the Western Allies has usually been dismissed as the frantic attempts of a desperate mass murderer to avoid his inevitable fate, and nothing more. But Himmler, like Hitler, and possibly only Martin Bormann, was one of the "inmost circle" who knew the full extent of Kammler's empire and its actual activities Himmler may have therefore used this knowledge as a possible bargaining chip. His offer was rejected, not so much because it was not genuine(from Himmler's point of view), but because he had long lost genuine control of it. The deal had already probably been cut between Kammler's representatives and OSS station chief in Zurich, Allen Dulles, or via General Patton himself. Bormann, too as we have seen, was implicated in this plot, and, as we shall see in subsequent chapters, is directly linked to Kammler.

The thesis of an actual German atom bomb also explains the odd little events that began to surface in scattered Allied press reports toward and immediately after the end of the European War long-range heavy lift round trip "proof of concept" flights from Europe to within sight of New York City, Luftwaffe maps of Manhattan with blast damage estimates for an atom bomb of the same approximate yield as Hiroshima, a Norwegian airfield filled with over forty long range bombers capable of making the flight, "Buna plants" that incomprehensibly use more electricty than Berlin and paradoxically produce no rubber during the entire course of the war, U-boats loaded with infrared fuses - a device whose technical complexity betokens an immediate nuclear application - and

enriched uranium powder ready for metalicization. Likewise, this thesis provides a more plausible explanation, for those inclined to think it suspicious, for the mysterious death of America's most celebrated and famous, and for the equally impossible "triple death" of Germany's most sinister, generals. Patton, as was seen, was the commander of the very America army entrusted with seizing the motherload of secret weapons research treasures in Thuringia and at Pilsen in Czechoslovakia. He, at the top of the Third Army's command structure, would have been privy to all the first intelligence reports of his units entering those areas, and would easily have been the first man outside Kammler himself to see enough of the pieces to put together a reasonable picture of the whole. If indeed Patton was deliberately silenced, and I am by no means convinced that he was, then surely this is the most plausible motivation for the deed. And finally, as was seen, a successful German atom bomb project might very well me the inner moral logic at work in the German Resistance's bomb plot against Adolf Hitler in July of 1944.

Similarly, the thesis puts on a firmer foundation another set of "oddities," such as the ludicrous notion that the Allied engineers were so confident that their design for the Little Boy uranium bomb dropped on Hiroshima was so good it did not need to be tested, or (in another explanation), that there was not enough weapons grade uranium to build two such bombs to test one before dropping the other. That the US military would have dropped an untested superweapon on an enemy city, an enemy known to be working on acquiring the very same weapon, is simply ridiculous in the extreme. The Allied Legend is made even more ridiculous when one considers the fact that the plutonium bomb had been successfully tested, and that a plutonium bomb was already ready for deployment against the Japanese. Why then was the "untested" Little Boy dropped first, instead of the plutonium "Fat Man"? A rational explanation is afforded by the thesis of this part of the book: Little Boy was not tested by the Americans because, as Oppenheimer hinted, the bomb was "of German provenance." The Americans did not need to test it, because its German designers already had.

Moreover the infusion of German bomb technology into not only the American, but the Japanese effort, explains Japan's rather slow response to Allied demands for unconditional surrender after Hiroshima and Nagasaki, for only a day after Nagasaki, the Japanese too, for a brief moment, joined the nuclear club. And five years later, MacArthur presided over one of America's worst military debacles at the Chosin reservoir in the midst of the largest industrial complex in Asia, built by Japanese industrialist Jui Noguchi, and nerve center of the Japanese atom bomb program Were the operational risks MacArthur took to secure and hold Chosin due in part to a hidden intelligence agenda, to secure more information about an enemy only recently defeated, and to deny the technology to potential enemies such as Red China?

And last, but surely not least, there is simply too much enriched uranium, and too many bombs, around by the end of World War Two, to have come entirely from the Manhattan Project. Marshal Rodion Malinovsky's translator told of a "dud" dropped on August 8 on Nagasaki and surrendered by the Japanese to the Russians[2] - a Japanese bomb, two separate German tests, a bomb sunk on board the USS Indianapolis en route to Japan - and all these bombs from a Manhattan Project critically short of weapons grade uranium as late as December 1944, and only projected to achieve half the necessary critical mass by May of 1945? Where did all this extra uranium come from, not to mention the "extra bombs"? I have argued that most likely all of it came from Nazi Germany, courtesy of Nazi Party Reichsleiter Martin Bormann, and SS Obergruppenfuhrer Hans Kammler.

But these conclusions leave several problems to be resolved, and in their resolution, a further glimpse into Kammler's dark empire of secret weapons, think tanks, underground factories and slave labor is afforded.

---

[2] How did the Russians know to request this bomb? Surely the United States would not have told them. The only other plausible explanation is that the Russians knew where the bomb was ultimately from, and had done the mathematics.

PART TWO:
THE MYTH OF SURVIVAL AND THE REALITY OF PAPERCLIP

"And I saw one of his heads as it were wounded unto death; and his deadly wound was healed; and all the world wondered after the beast. And they worshipped the dragon which gave power unto the beast: and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like unto the beast? Who is able to make war with him?"

Apocalypse of St. John the Divine, 13:3-4

11.

THE BLACK ORDER:
THE OCCULT INFLUENCE ON NAZI SECRET WEAPONS

"There was, via the Kammler trail, a mounting body of evidence that the Nazis, in their desperation to win the war, had been experimenting with a form of science the rest of the world had never remotely considered And that somewhere in this cauldron of ideas, a new technology had been born; one that was so far ahead of its time it had been suppressed for more than half a century."

Nick Cook, The Hunt for Zero Point[1]

As was seen, the Nazis very possibly may well have succeeded indeveloping and testing atom bombs prior to the end of World War Two, and may even have used them or some other weapon of mass destruction on the Eastern Front. But in the argument of the previous chapters, indications of something even more sinister cast a pall over the developing argument. For example, in Professor Lachner's allegation, the Nazis were interested in the atom bomb as mere fuses for the far more destructive hydrogen bomb. " Beyond even the hydrogen bomb, there were hints and outlines of something shadowy, vague, and of monstrous destructive power. British agents surface to tell of a "fourth" team developing and working in an area of physics that seemed almost magical; a scientist at Farm Hall mentions in passing the construction of artificial rubies; newspaper clippings report Allied officers coming forward in the immediate aftermath of the war to make it clear that it was won - not as an inevitability against a collapsing Reich - but just in the nick of time, a viewpoint quickly swept away in the triumphalism of the emerging Allied Legend and standard histories of the war. A vast isotope enrichment program conducted by the SS in conjunction with the death camps casts a shadow on the ground, in spite of the best efforts of the postwar Allied Legend to

[1] Nick Cook, The Hunt for Zero Point, p. 209.

touch up the photograph and render the object casting the shadow invisible, the ultimate in stealth technology.

The question is, why? Why cover up a successful German atom bomb well into the late twentieth and early twenty-first centuries? Why indeed, unless that program leads to something else something whose possession would give extraordinary technology and military power to the nation that successfully continued its development? Why indeed, unless that program leads to a wholly different scientific paradigm, developed in secret and off the pages of the textbooks of mainstream "science" proffered for public consumption?

Much of the answer to these questions lies in occulted aspects of the Nazi Reich's ideology, and in the structures of power and bureaucracy it put into place to pursue that ideology. Much of the answer to these questions lies in the connection of Kammler's Sonderkommando to its parent organization, the SS itself. The nature of that organization, at its very heart, at the uppermost pinnacle of its power structure, was in every sense of the word occult.

There are two facts that directly connect Kammler's black, underground, and very secret weapons and death camps empire, to this occult aspect of the Third Reich and its SS "Black Order." These two odd connections require in turn an investigation - cursory though it will have to be - of the occult doctrines themselves in order that we may clearly discern the outlines of their influence on the more sensational German weapons research of the war. In connection with Kammler's empire and its postwar continuation, it is best to understand that this science is an "occulted science."

A. Some Necessary Definitions

For our purposes, this "occulted science" is to be understood as contained in various artifacts: ancient mysteries, various esoteric or other "occult traditions" per se, and actual physical structures or other types of physical artifacts. This broad definition requires

farther "unpacking" in order for its full scope to be adequately comprehended:

Occulted Science: The "science" component of this term focuses specifically on three general areas: physics, chemistry, and biology. Our primary focus in the subsequent parts of this work will be on physics, with forays into the other two areas as needed. Thus, our thesis and method is that there is an "occulted physics" hidden - sometimes deliberately - within various mythological and ancient texts, including tests of the esoteric or occult traditions both of the Orient and of the Occident. This belief was one of the cornerstones of the Nazi secret weapons research, and it produced some astounding failures, as well as grist for the mill of its less well known, but equally astounding successes. This thesis has formed a major component in my two previous works,[2] and was a major component in the ideological belief structure of the upper echelons of the SS and its more important and secretive departments, including the Ahnenerbedienst. There is every indication that it also formed a major paradigm for the upper echelons of Kammler's secret weapons "think tank" and was possibly even its very raison d'etre.

The occulted aspect of the term "occulted science' therefore takes on an extension of meaning beyond what one normally comes to associate with the term "occult". For our purposes, this "occulted science" is occulted in the sense of:

(1) "hidden" or "dark" and therefore hidden in the sense of black and covert secret classified projects;
(2) "deliberately encoded science" found in texts or artifacts that are, as the deliberate products of such encoding, subject to the full range of standard typological and analogical interpretive methods conventionally employed to understand such texts, but in this case, they are not understood on a metaphysical basis but rather in a "proto-scientific" sense, a "proto-physics" sense;

---

[2] Q.v. The Giza Death Star and The Giza Death Star Deployed, both published by Adventures Unlimited Press.

(3) "non-deliberate corrupt transmission" of that science and its textual and/or physical artifacts by groups or communities not fully cognizant of the extent of the science actually encoded in them;
(4) "esoteric or occult traditions and secret societies" in the conventional sense;
    (a) By "esoteric or occult traditions" is meant not only standard occult texts and traditions and the various secret societies associated with them, but also traditions or legends that are not generally considered to be esoteric or occult in the stand sense; they remain esoteric or occult only because they are not well-known by the general public;
(5) "buried or partially buried" in the mists of pre-history and the mythologies, legends, talismans and physical monuments typically associated with them.
    (a) By "ancient mythologies or legends" is meant as legends, texts, scriptures (whether considered to be canonical or apocryphal by any given community), of various cultures. The cultures chiefly in view are the classical Sumerian, Egyptian, Hindu, Maya, Olmec, Scandinavian-Teutonic, Chinese, and of course the later standard Graeco-Roman European culture.

It will be evident from careful consideration of this outline, that the peculiar blend of logic, reason, and science with the metaphysical and speculative component is a paradigm that is readily adaptable to the peculiarly German turn of mind as it developed from the opening of the nineteenth century to the fall of the final bomb before the capitulation in 1945.

In my opinion, it is this type of thought that is the Allied Legend's real goal to conceal, for more than anything else Kammler's black SS Sonderkommando secret weapons, death camps, "think tank" empire was the first deliberately and consciously organized and orchestrated attempt by a modern nation state to commit massive financial, labor, technological, and most

importantly, intellectual capital to an off-the-books black projects recovery and development of lost and exotic technology, by the application of the most avante garde conceptions of the then contemporary science. Against this broad conceptual framework, we may now view two significant facts that place his think tank very clearly within the orbit of "occulted science" in many of the above senses.

B. Into the Labyrinth of the Best

In part one, evidence of a possible German atom bomb test at or the island of Rugen in the Baltic Sea was presented. This evidence stemmed primarily from the recently declassified affidavit of Hans Zinsser who saw and described the explosion and resulting mushroom cloud, and the testimony of Italian officer Luigi Romersa, who was there apparently as an observer for Mussolini's Italian Fascist government. Corroborating evidence of secret wartime British atom bomb alerts and German telephone outages in Berlin - events concurrent with the time frame of the test - were presented.

But what of Rugen itself? Why test a weapon on a sparsely populated island that is so close to the population center of Kiel and its heavily trafficked sea lanes and canal? What is it about Riigen that is so significant that the SS would test an atom bomb there?

The answer may come from its possible connection to the SS's special "occult research" department, the Ahnenerbedienst, the society personally established by Reichsfuhrer SS Heinrich Himmler to investigate all manner of occult and esoteric doctrines for its possible scientific value and weaponization. Among the strange and irrational doctrines entertained by Himmler and others at the pinnacle of the SS was a peculiar twist to the "Hollow Earth" theory.

In its even more irrational Himmler variation, this theory held that the earth was hollow, and that its surface - the surface that the fanatical SS leadership actually lived on - was the inside of that "hollow earth". And thus

According to an article in Popular Astronomy in June 1946, entitled "German Astronomy During the War":

"They considered it helpful to locate the British fleet, because the curvature of the earth would not obstruct observation. Visual rays were not suitable because of refraction; but infrared rays had less refraction. Accordingly a party of about ten men under the scientific leadership of Dr. Heinz Fischer, an infrared expert, was sent out from Berlin to the isle of Rugen to photograph the British fleet with infrared equipment at an upward angle of some forty-five degrees."

The experiment did not work.[3]

One is left with the impression that this "experiment" with irrationality was but another manifestation of the scientific quackery that was the Third Reich, and rightly so. But significantly, once again, this rather avante garde experiment, no matter how irrational, took place on Riigen. Apparently, the island was home to a number of advanced projects. One should also note carefully the hidden technological implication of the experiment, not withstanding the insane use to which it was put: the Nazis possessed the means of detection of infrared reflections from great distances though atmospheric refraction, the same technology as was developed for use in heat-seeking anti-aircraft missiles and subsequently used with dramatic destructive effectiveness in America's plutonium bomb.

And this afford a clue into the real nature of Kammler's "think tank": technology appears to have been developed that could be adapted to a variety of uses in the various highly classified weapons developments black projects, as well as used in experimentation and testing of the more bizarre aspects of Nazi and occult beliefs.

But again, why Rugen? The answer lies in the "esoteric history" of the island prior to the war, and indeed, prior to World War One! When the Second World War ended, Hitler's private library was discovered in a mine near his idyllic mountain aerie of Berchtesgaden. Several tomes and volumes of occult literature were contained in it, including a "collection of (Lanz) Von Liebenfels'

[3] Dusty Sklar, The Nazis and the Occult, p. 79.

racist-occult magazine Ostara," published in Vienna before the First World War.[4] While Hitler's own membership in any occult lodge has not been conclusively demonstrated, it is very probable that the young dictator-to-be actually visited Von Liebenfels while both were in Vienna before World War One.[5]

It is Von Liebenfels and his Order of the New Templars that forms the connection between the SS, irrational "Hollow Earth" experiments, and the far more successful atom bomb test at Rugen. with the assistance of wealthy patrons who soon flocked to his secret society - a society dedicated to the "purification" of the German race from its corrupting influences (Jews, Slavs, "Mongoloids" and basically anyone not "Germanic" or "Aryan") - Von Liebenfels was able to purchase and renovate several old castles throughout Austria and Germany and to transform them into centers for his Order. The Order, in addition to its racist ideology, also dabbled in "astrology, the Cabala, phrenology, homeopathy, and nutrition."[6]

In any case, Von Liebenfels, in the best traditions and tactics of classical "Christian Gnosticism," and with the aid of his monastic training as a Cistercian monk, "composed his own voluminous variations of liturgical texts: a two volume New Templars' Breviary, The Psalms in German, and a 'secret Bible for the initiated' which ran to ten volumes, as well as prayer books and the like."[7] With money pouring into his order from its wealthy "initiates", one of the castles he bought and restored as a center for esoteric research and "New Templar" activism was on the island of Rugen.[8]

Hitler was, according to Von Liebenfels in a letter to one of his New Templars, "one of our pupils. You will one day experience that he, and through him we, will one day be victorious and develop

[4] Peter Levenda, Unholy Alliance: A History of Nazi Involvement with the Occult, p. 56.

[5] Levenda, op. cit., p. 56.

[6] Sklar, op. cit., p. 20.

[7] Ibid.

8 Ibid.

a movement that makes the world tremble."[9] When Hitler annexed Austria, Von Liebenfels was forbidden to publish. Indeed, the Nazis severely regulated - almost to the point of squeezing it into complete non-existence - any public display of "occultism" or "secret society" activity. Hence, Himmler's motivations for creating the SS Ahnenerbedienst within the bureaucracy of the SS becomes clearer, for the regime was in part fearful of its own connection to the highest level to such societies and activities. By placing such activities under SS jurisdiction, they could be monitored, studied, funded, organized, and exploited in complete secrecy.

What was the Ahnenerbe? In many respects it was the most secret of all the SS' myriad secret departments.

> Imagine that the evening adult education program of the New School of Social Research had suddenly become an independent government agency with a budget as big as the Defense Department, with Lyndon Larouche as president and, perhaps, Elizabeth Clark Prophet as the physics chairperson (sic).
>
> Or maybe the summer session at the University of California Berkely, had become militarized and all the students had immunity from prosecution for any crime they had committed, or would ever commit, and could conduct any form of independent study they liked as long as they wore their black uniforms with the silver death's head insignia at all times and swore an oath of personal loyalty to the dean.
>
> The one might have some idea of what the Ahnenerbe was, and of the type of people it first attracted to its ranks.
>
> It was a humanities program. With guns.[10]

This bizarre and irrational element of the occult at the very heart of Himmler's Black Order of the SS is one of the hidden entities, for example, coordinating and conducting the gruesome "medical experiments" on concentration camp victims, and even on ordinary Germans, during the war.

During the height of the war, the insanity gripping the Ahnenerbe and its macabre and bizarre experiments became almost surreal. The bureau devoted so much manpower and money to "esoteric research projects that it began to seem as if (Himmler)

---

[9] Ibid., p. 21.

[10] Levenda, op. cit., pp. 151-152.

hoped to turn the tide in Germany's favor by fathoining the secrets of Rosicrucianism and Freemasonry, the occult meaning of Gothic spheres the top hats worn by the boys at Eton, and the symbolism involved in the suppression of the Ulster harp."[11] Among its most ambitious projects, enormous amounts of money were spent

> For a flight to Tibet to look for traces of a pure Germanic race which might have been able to keep intact the ancient Nordic mysteries. The Ahnenerbe also had archeologists digging up all of Europe for remains of Germanic culture. More than fifty departments in this branch succeeded in spending over a million marks ($400,000) on such "vital" matters.
>
> But the most incredible research of all was set up in 1939 in Merlin. An astrologer, Wilhelm Wulff, who was made prisoner of the SS and coerced into working for it, described the Berlin Institute's scientific research center as being used '"to harness, not only natural, but also supernatural, forces. All intellectual, natural, and supernatural sources of power -from modern technology to mediaeval black magic, and from the teachings of Pythagoras to the Faustian pentagram incantation - were to be exploited in the interests of final victory." [12]

One such experiment resembles nothing else so much as an early experiment in "remote viewing", and included a man who was an alleged "adept," who held out pendulums over pictures of U-boats, and then held it over maps of the ocean in attempts to detect it.

If all this seems insane and fruitless dabbling, consider that the modern phenomenon of "remote viewing" is a highly developed enterprise - undertaken initially in secret by the CIA[13] - and employed at one time none other than renowned theoretical physicist Dr. Hal Puthoff in the elaboration of strictly controlled scientific protocols for its testing.[14] Moreover, note what is actually

---

[11] Sklar, op. cit, p. 101.

[12] Sklar, op. cit., p. 102, emphasis added.

[13] A fact that in itself should give one pause, especially in view of the subsequent importation of many of these Nazi "esoteric scientists" into the USA under the aegis of Operation Paperclip.

[14] Q.v. Joseph McMoneagle, Remote Viewing Secrets, pp. xv, 46-47. The research was conducted by SRI International, an organization that I have

being asserted: the Ahnenerbe's portfolio was to investigate any potential source of power for weaponization. And notably, all normal constraints or orthodox conceptual or moral paradigm were laid aside. In that context, there were bound to be more failures than successes. But equally, in that context, in that bureaucratic culture, the freedom to "brainstorm", to generate and then to pursue the unorthodox novel idea, would have been given more or less free rein. Indeed, it would have been expected.

Consequently, the Ahnenerbe's failures, or its barbarous cruelty, are often paraded as evidence of a pervasive breakdow not only of traditional morality, but of the scientific establishment and method in Nazi Germany. But what are overlooked are the indications of its possible - and groundbreaking - successes, for in the milieu of free experimentation without constraints (moral or otherwise), dramatic failure was to be expected. But the potential for dramatic success was equally as great. "There was, via the Kammler trail," notes Jane's Defence Weekly reporter and researcher Nick Cook, not without a tinge of anxiety, "a mounting body of evidence that the Nazis, in their desperation to win the war, had been experimenting with a form of science the rest of the world had never even remotely considered. And that somewhere in this cauldron of ideas, a new technology had been born; one that was so far ahead of its time it had been suppressed for more than half a century."[15] Was Kammler's secret weapons Sonderhommando think tank connected to the Ahnenerbe?

---

covered in my previous book The Giza Death Star Deployed (pp. 73075, 92) in connection with its other "occulted science" research concerning the Great Pyramid and the Second Pyramid at Giza. McMoneagle cites one of the original theoretical papers concerning remote viewing, co-authored by Dr. Puthoff and Russell Targ, entitled A Perceptual Channel for Information Transfer over Kilometer Distances: Historical perspectives and Recent Research. It is important to mention that most of Dr. Puthoff's theoretical physics research concerns quantum mechanics and the Zero Point Energy, or vacuum quantum flux potential. Puthoff has noted the connection between quantum mechanics and the consciousness of intelligent observers. More recently the connection between intelligent life and physics at the topological level has been a major focus of papers by Ukrainian theoretical physicist Dr. Volodymyr Krasnoholovets, and French topologist Michel Bounias.

[15] Nick Cook, The Hunt for Zero Point, p. 209.

While no direct evidence has been forthcoming to date, there is a factor - beyond his involvement with the death camps - that does connect Kammler with the Ahnenerbe, and this brings us to that "second odd fact", a detail that seems to indicate that there was indeed a connection between the Ahnenerbe's occult interests and Kammler's black secret weapons projects "think tank." This is the fact that at its very pinnacle, the SS was deliberately conceived and organized by Heinrich Himmler to be an occult "order," a black and twisted version of King Arthur's Knights of the Holy Grail and Round Table. One observes here, once again, the connection to the ideal the Templars and Von Liebenfels' "New Templars," for whom the "holy Grail", or sang real, was the "royal bloodline" itself and its "container" or "chalice", the Germanic Aryan race. As a result of this view, the Ahnenerbe's "medical experiments" were done not only to advance German medicine in areas of treatment of extreme conditions - high pressure, low pressure, and so on - that were encountered in extreme climates or, eventually, outer space, but a considerable portion was devoted to finding the basis of genetic and ethnic "purity" of the Germanic race itself. The SS was therefore the vanguard, the prophetic forebear, of the new religion and new age and new man it hoped to usher in:

> The headquarters for this cult was situated at the medieval castle of Wewelsburg, near the towns of Paderborn and Detmold in the German province of Westphalia, close by the site in the Teutoburg Forest where Arminius made his stand with its famous, Stonehenge-like monument known as Externsteine....
>
> Secrecy was the key element in the SS and most especially at Wewelsburg.[16]

There Himmler had constructed a central chamber with a large table designed to seat twelve men specially selected from the senior Gruppenfuhrers (generals) of the SS.[17] A 12,000 volume library of the occult was available in the castle.

---

[16] Levenda, op. cit, pp. 155-156.

[17] Ibid., citing Padfield, Himmler: Reichsfuhrer-SS (New York: Henry Holt & Co., 1990), p. 248.

C. The Black Sun, the Celestial Swastika, and Other SS Connections

Central to the secret initiation that these senior SS generals received was the real significance of the anagram "SS" itself. For the "rank and file elite" of the SS, the initials stood for the German word Schutzstaffel, a term meaning loosely a special staff or military unit. But to the initiates, there was another meaning of "SS" altogether, a meaning with roots deep in the occult and in ancient Sumerian, Babylonian, and to a certain extent, Egyptian belief. For these initiates, the letters "SS" referred to die Schwatze Sonne, the Black Sun.

The doctrine of the Black Sun, reaching back to ancient Sumer and Akkadia, is that there are two suns, the "white" sun, the sun that we see at the center of our physical solar system, and the "black" sun, a "hidden" sun of (spiritual) illumination. In some versions of the myth, it is thought to reside at the center of our galaxy. Other embellishments place it as one of the causes of the immortality and reincarnation of the soul. In Babylonian mythology it was also associated with the coming of the "King of kings" and the establishment of a New Babylon. And finally, in some variations, not only is it associated with the center of the galaxy, but also with the uttermost "Hyperborea" and "Thule", the legendary stellar home and celestial origin of the Aryan race. The doctrine received further modification in ancient Egypt.

The connection between the SS and Egypt is further evidenced by the case of one of the most famous esotericists of all: R.A. Schwaller de Lubicz. Well known to contemporary students of "alternative" or "revisionist" Egyptology, de Lubicz' claim to fame was his life-long undertaking to reinterpret the monuments, and more importantly, the writings of ancient Egypt, particularly its hieroglyphic system of writing. While many contemporary researchers denigrate de Lubicz's work as being either faulty of slip-shod, and while others denigrate his scholarship simply for his open support of the Nazi regime, it is not so easy to dismiss him as all that.

For one thing, it was de Lubicz who first noticed the weathering on the Sphinx was inconsistent with a Fourth Dynasty origin for the monument, and that it pointed to a much older and far more ancient pedigree.[18] It is de Lubicz's method, however, that would have been quite at home within the Ahnenerbe and more importantly, within Kammler's black projects think tank. Briefly put, de Lubicz viewed Egyptian hieroglyphics and culture as the visible signs of a highly developed culture of analogical, rather than analytical, thought, science, and practice.[19] For him, analogical thought was synonymous with "action at a distance,"[20] and his thought here is quite in line with what was beginning to be bandied about in quantum mechanics, and has become a provable reality in our day, with the phenomenon of photon entanglement.

This phenomenon, briefly put, is as follows. Imagine two photons have been simultaneously emitted from a particular atom, but traveling in different directions. Thus, both photons carry the harmonic systems signature, the information, of the original atom and the circumstances of their emission. Then, imagine changing the informational signature of one of the two photons. Because the other photon is an exact analog of the first photon, it will simultaneously introduce the change into the field of its own information, instantaneously, regardless of distance.[21]

But it is important to note that for de Lubicz, this analogical action at a distance or sympathetic magic was expressed within the context of a broadly dualistic world view in which there were two sciences, one of genesis or creation, and one of destruction.[22] In

---

[18] De Lubicz's observation, in fact, inspired John Anthony West and Robert Shock's investigations which have re-dated the Sphinx to approximately 8,000 B.C. based on geological evidence, a conclusion that sent shock waves - no pun intended - through the Egyptology community and continues to spark vigorous debate in academic circles.

[19] Q.v. R.A. Schwaller de Lubicz, Symbol and the Symbolic, (New York: Inner Traditions International, 1978), pp. 7, 20.

[20] Ibid., p. 46.

[21] That this was a major blow to relativity goes without saying. Photon quantum entanglement, as the phenomenon is called, is one of the newest and most exciting areas of contemporary physics experimentation and research.

[22] De Lubicz, op. cit, p. 25.

this context, any given hieroglyphic symbol became a synthesis of polarities of particular oppositions of forces, held in balance by the glyph - the information - itself.

Without a doubt, this broadly Hegelian view brought de Lubicz to the attention of the Nazis, and vice versa. But more importantly, it was de Lubicz's knowledge of Egyptian "science-religion" that may lurk in the background of the statements of the Japanese attache to Stockholm's curious statements about Sirius in his secret cable to Tokyo regarding the German atom bomb program that we examined in part one, for de Lubicz would have been in a position to point out the significance of Sirius to the Egyptians. For then, it "played the role of a central sun to our entire solar system" and suggested to de Lubicz "the existence of a cosmic system of atomic structure whose nucleus is this 'Great Provider,' the Sothis... of the ancients."[23] De Lubicz would have known as well the ancient symbolism and association with the three colors of the German national flag - black, red, and white - with ancient Egypt and Atlantis,[24] a symbolism of which the Nazis themselves were likely aware. Thus in its Egyptian variation, the "Black Sun" myth is bound up with the star system of Sirius, and with all the associations with death resurrection, and the "life force" that this entailed within Pharaonic religion.

For the SS Ahnenerbe, all this was a potent mix when one recalls that Himmler's stated purpose for it, reveled in a letter he wrote to an Ahnenerbe scientist, was not only to study ancient religion, science, and the occult, but also that its principal establishment was as "an institute for military scientific research."[24] Consequently, the Ahnenerbe scientists working on its various secret projects had an ideological basis for the more mundane scientific view that the "Black Sun" was but the extremely strong gravitational force exhibited by the large mass rotating around the galactic center. Ancient texts might be able to afford a key to the recovery of a lost science, a science very different from the

---

[23] De Lubicz, Sacred Science: The King of Pharaonic Theocracy (Rochester, Vermont" Inner Traditions International, 1981), p. 28.

[24] Ibid., pp. 202-205.

[25] Nuremberg Military Tribunal, Volume II, p. 189.

ideologically condemned "Jewish physics" of relativity, but quite in line with the "Aryan" physics of vorticular spin polarization, quantum mechanics, and its mathematical prediction of a vacuum energy flux, or "zero point energy." It goes without saying that the Black Sun symbolism formed a central doctrine to the pre-Nazi secret society, the Thule Society. The symbol of the Black sun was also adopted as an emblem for Von Liebenfels' New Templars.
The swastika itself, in this context, becomes not only a well-known symbol from ancient esoteric traditions, but also a talisman of ceremonial magic on a celestial scale, deliberately chosen to mirror the apparent rotation of a well-known constellation around the north pole of the earth's axis of rotation. This whole concentration on quantum mechanics, black suns, action at a distance, and celestial rotation gave a strong ideological influence to Kammler's SS think tank, for as will be seen, vorticular and non-linear physics apparently became two of its primary theoretical and experimental focuses.

The Symbol of the Black Sun Adopted by the Thule Society, Contemporary German Federal Law Forbids it to be Displayed.

The "Celestial Swastika":
The Rotation of Ursa Minor, or the Little Dipper, around the Pole Star ca. 4000 BC

Consider what all this means. By war's end and his control of all secret weapons projects in Nazi Germany, Hans Kammler had attained the rank of SS Obergruppenfuhrer, the equivalent rank of a four star general, and only one rank below that of Himmler himself. Given this high rank, it is thus not only possible but very probably that Kammler was one of the chosen "Knights" of Himmler's "round table", and thus it is probable that by the war's and Kammler had a deeply connected relationship to the Ahnenerbe and its occult activities. It may be in part for this reason that his dossier in the US government's archives remains classified to this day. In any case, there is yet another odd fact, one that again potentially connects Kammler with the Ahnenerbe. Heinrich Himmler, who viewed himself as having some sort of "psychic connection" with the famous mediaeval German Holy Roman Emperor Heinrich the Fowler, had the Emperor's remains dug up and reinterred in the cathedral of the little town of Quedlinburg. Quedlinburg is in the Harz Mountains, in the heart of the region that was the center of Kammler's empire of underground secret weapons plants and laboratories.

In any case, the Ahnenerbe in general and Himmler's Gruppenfuhrer initiates in particular did more than dabble in the patently absurd projects mentioned previously. It also mounted secret armed expeditions to South America to recover the well-known crystal skulls to investigate their optical properties. It ransacked ancient texts and the works of Sanskrit and other classical scholars for clues to "Vedic mathematics." The SS inducted the Muslim Grand Mufti of Jerusalem into its ranks with the honorary rank of major, an act with its own dark, and contemporary, significance.[26] The Ahnenerbe would mount an expedition to Tibet, and return with the only complete copy of the multi-volumed Buddhist Kang Shur to reach the West, a collection reputedly containing much lost information from the pre-classical, ancient "atlantean" world.

[26] Sebottendorff, for example, one of the occult figures lurking in the background of the secret societies that had connections with the early Nazi movement, praised Islam's "vitality" and congruence with Nazi ideology.

D. The Will to Power as the Paradigm of "Occulted Science" and Nazi Secret Weapons Programs

The quest of the SS to investigate the scientific basis of occult notions, no matter how bizarre or flawed those notions were, is thus itself an integral component of Nazi ideology and is philosophical background in German romanticism and orientalism It is Adolf Hitler's personal "will to power that betrays the interest of a potential occultist" so much so that this factor - so prevalent within the occult itself - "has never been given its proper due."[27] especially in connection to secret weapons research and the Kammler Group's "think tank." Hitler himself described this ideological locomotive in no uncertain terms: "A new age of Magic interpretation of the world is coming, of interpretation in ten of the Will and not the Intelligence."[28] In this, he may be seen as reaching back to the lingering effects within German culture of the philosophy of Arthur Schopenhauer's The World as Will and Representation. The title speaks for itself. It is significant that the mastermind behind Nazi geopolitics and himself a convinced occultist, General Karl Haushofer, was an avid scholar of Schopenhauer.

It is this connection to Will, rather than to intelligence, that points the way to the connection to physics in general, and to quantum mechanics in particular, for it is in this seemingly upside down world, where the inverted order of cause and effect seems totally at variance with common sense, that the will itself plays a key role. And it was Heisenberg himself who of course formulated one of the most basic precepts of quantum mechanics that, looked at in this way, is but a precept or doctrine of sovereign will: the Uncertainty Principle.

Briefly put, this scientific law states that on the scale of the very small sub-atomic particles that form the subject of its investigation it is impossible to determine at one and the same time the position of an electron and its velocity. If a measurement is taken of one property, the other will fade from view. It is this aspect that spelled

---

[27] Sklar, op. cit., p. 49.

[28] Ibid., p. 57.

the death knell for classical Newtonian mechanics, for it resulted in a physics that relied primarily on probability functions as a determinant of the reality in view. "The reality in view," there's the point of contention, for this meant that even the probability functions us were themselves predetermined by the attribute the experimenter decided to concentrate upon. To that significant extent, the scientist himself predetermined the results of the experiment a priori, in an act of "sovereign will." In short, on the level of the very small, the scientist could, so to speak, "predetermine reality" simply by the way an experiment was configured.

If on pressed this doctrine to one of its logical implications, then this meant that at a very fundamental level, physical reality and consciousness - Schopenhauer's "Will" - were intimately related. One had only to study "paranormal" phenomena "scientifically" to grasp hitherto unknown "laws" of this physics. At the level of the very small, gravity, quantum mechanics and consciousness would have appeared to these physicists - free of the theoretical constraints of relativity - to pursue what must have been apparent to them: the profound link between the geometry of the fabric of space, the physics of the very small, rotation, and gravity, and perhaps of consciousness itself.

Thus by dint of its own cultural tillage, German philosophical romanticism, Orientophilia, and physics had, by the time of the Third Reich, but to await the arrival of someone willing to fund and organize the pursuit of the new paradigm.

Hitler was its prophet, its "theorist";

Himmler was its "facilitator" the Dark Eminence who moved the pieces into position;

And Kammler was its engineer, the Black Magus who coordinated it all on a day to day basis, and who built the "monuments", machines, and weapons for the New Atlantis. Are these elements combined and contrived by war's end to give the Nazi war machine the prototypes and futuristic blueprints of weaponry far excelling even the hydrogen bomb for the destructive power and/or technological sophistication.

12.

THE ALCHEMY OF ATLANTIS: AN INVENTORY OF NAZI SECRET WEAPONS AND THEIR HISTORICAL PROBLEMATIC

"In 1939, with Professor Herbert Wagner of the Henschel aircraft company as a consultant, Fernseh undertook to develope a television installation that would enable pilots to control both planing bombs and rocket bombs after they were launched."
Renato Vesco and David Hatcher Childress, Man-Made UFOs[1]

There have been a host of books about Nazi secret weapons, detailing what is an incredible inventory of prototypical and futuristic weapons, from heat-seeking, wire-guided, radio guided, and even television-guided missiles, to tanks so gigantic that they are tittle more than impractical mobile pillboxes, to claims of the genuinely fantastic: flying discoid aircraft, or flying saucers, to fuel-air bombs, "death rays", particle beams, electromagnetic pulse weapons, "wind" cannon, and so on. And beyond these, there were even more incredible long-range paper studies of nuclear powered aircraft and "space shuttles", gigantic solar mirrors in orbit to turn enemy cities and regions to toast, and a host of other paper projects almost too incredible to imagine. Usually dismissed derisively, these claims persisted in the literature, long after Adolf Hitler himself personally mentioned them, in what is usually seen as the demented ravings of a known madman:

> We have invisible aircraft, submarines, colossal tanks and cannon, unbelievably powerful rockets, and a bomb with a working that will astonish the whole world. The enemy knows this, and besieges and attempts to destroy us. But we will answer this destruction with a storm and that without unleashing a bacteriological war, for which we

[1] Renato Vesco and David Hatcher Childress, Man-Made UFOs 1944-1994: 50 Years of Suppression, p. 147.

> are also prepared.... All my words are the purest truth. That you will see![2]

Hitler's alleged claims here could easily be dismissed, as well as those of the postwar neo-Nazi sympathizers who first broke the story of Nazi flying saucers, as the farthest thing from "the purrest truth." Dealing with a known sociopath and genocidal maniac such as Hitler and his followers, it became easy to dismiss such claims especially when there was no corroborating evidence forthcoming. Then Renato Vesco's Intercept UFO was published in the 1960 later republished, and then later republished again with additional material by David Hatcher Childress under the title Man Made UFOs 1944-1994: Fifty Years of Suppression.

Vesco, who unlike the neo-Nazi sympathizers who emerged after the war to first tell the story in the West German press provided a host of specifics, such as the names, types of weapons and laboratories and companies conducting the research on these advanced technologies. But again, as Nick Cook was to discover, the trail seemed to lead back to the same few sources, and it became a story impossible to corroborate.[3] Vesco had mentioned the British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee (BIOS) reports as substantiation for his claims, but those were, at that time, mostly inaccessible, and in addition, "researchers had been through all the available...BIOS files with a fine-tooth comb and had found nothing..."[4] Vesco couched his account of alleged Nazi "Fireballs" (the so-called Foo Fighters seen at the end of the war), within a tapestry of references to these other advanced missile projects undertaken by the Third Reich. But as researcher Kevin McClure put the case, Vesco's "technical" descriptions of the alleged Nazi devices behind the Foo Fighters sightings were based on "pseudo-technical descriptions" that originated "absolutely and only with

---

[2] Mayer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis, p. 97, the quotation was overheard by Italian officer Luigi Romersa, q.v. chapter 5, p. 97 of this book.

[3] Nick Cook, The Hunt for Zero Point, p. 53.

[4] Ibid, p. 57.

Vesco."[5] Add to this Vesco's claims for "fuel-air bombs" and the story - Vcsco's detailed references to scientists, companies and laboratories notwithstanding - became all too easy to dismiss once again.

But then came the German reunification and the resulting declassification of documents by the American, British, and German governments. The truth is not merely incredible, but staggering, and it poses host of historical problematics, as we shall see.

A. The Missiles

A Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee (CIOS) report, number XXXII-125, running to more than one hundred and fifty pages, details not only "an experimental model of an additional thrust unit which was to be fastened to either the A4(V-2) or the A-9 to give an additional range,"[6] but also various "America Raket" projects for a guided missile with a range of 3,500 miles.[7] These latter rockets, the report notes, with less than complete reassurance, "probably never progressed beyond the drawing board stage."[8] But additionally, there was a V-3 weapon, "a larger version of the V1 with an incendiary warhead instead of the (high explosive) normally used. Very little information is available concerning V3 control systems."[9] What, indeed, was this "incendiary warhead"? A thermite bomb? A fuel-air bomb? An actual atom bomb? The report is unclear.

As if this were not enough, a lengthy section of the report concerns a whole range of guided missiles being developed under the direction of Dr. Wagner for the Henschel firm. These included the HS-293-B, a rocket power glider with a wire guidance

[5] Keven McClure, The Nazi UFO Mythos, Core 2: "Renato Vesco, Feuerball and Kugelblitz, p. 5, internet published book, www.magonia.demon.co.uk/abwatch/naziufo/naziufo3.html.

[6] "German Guided Missile Research, Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee, G-2 Division, SHAEF (Rear), APO 413, XXXII-125, p. 5.

[7] Ibid., p. 6.

[8] Ibid.

[9] Ibid., p. 7

system,[10] the HS-294-A rocket powered glider "with torpedo" that included a "special device for blowing off fuselage rear section and wings as soon as body touches water surface, fuselage front section then cruising as torpedo under water," a small quantity of which were built for experimentation between 1941 and 1943![11]

A lengthy section of the report, from page 139 to almost the end of the report, concerned the development of miniaturized television camera guidance systems for various missiles, including the well-known anti-aircraft rocket, the "WasserfaU"(Waterfall),[12] Many of these tests failed, but by the war's end, a successful test of the television-guided "Tonne" missile was conducted by German scientists for the Allies in Berlin, with the target being a photograph of a little girl's face. The test was successful, much to the impressed, and doubtless shocked, Allied observers.[13]

To this astounding inventory, one may add radio-controlled surface to air missiles - one of which sank the Italian battleship Roma on its way to surrender to the Allies - infrared heat seeking air-to-air and surface to air missiles, wire guided missiles and torpedoes, biological and chemical warheads for the V-l and V-2, and possible fuel-air and atomic warheads as well.[14] In addition, the Heinkel and Messerschmitt companies were undertaking modifications of their He-177 and Me 264 heavy bombers to carry atom bombs. Where were these modifications being made?

In Prague.[15]

B. Prototypical Stealth (Radar Absorbent) Materials

But Hitler's boast overheard by Luigi Romersa included more than just a prototypes for the "smart" weapons that would become such staples of the American military for decades to come. It also

---

[10] Ibid., p. 8.

[11] Ibid., p. 9.

[12] Ibid., pp. 139-150.

[13] William Uricchio, "Envisioning the Audience: Perceptions of Early German Television's Audiences, 1935-1944, p. 1., http://comcom.kub.nl/e-view/99-1/uric.htm.

[14] Q.v. Friedrich Georg, Hitlers Siegeswaffen, Band 1, pp. 128-143

[15] Ibid.

included a claim to possess invisible aircraft and submarines. Surely this, at least, was fantasy?

Not so.

There exists a British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee (BIOS) report entitled "Production and Further Investigation of Wesch Anti-Radar Material, CIOS Black List Item 1 RADAR, BIOS Target No. 1/549," whose significance is rather obvious from its title. The objective of this team was to acquire some 500 feet of this material for secret testing by the British Admiralty.[16] The report details the production of various RAM materials (Radar Absorbent Material) by the Germans,[17] via techniques that involved shredding and heating rubber, and combining zinc oxide, finely ground iron powder (the powder was ground into micro-spheres), which was all then pressed into sheets, and then transferred to press moulds, trimmed and heated under small pressure. This material was actually used on the hulls of some late Type XXI U-Boats, as well as on U-boat schnorkel devices, to scatter Allied radar to return distorted or indeed, no radar signals.[18]

German Schnorkel Coated with Early "Stealth" Material

---

[16] "Production and farther Investigation of Wesch Anti-Radar Material," British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee 1/549, Report 132, p. 4.

[17] Ibid., pp. 5-6.

[18] Ibid., pp. 5-7.

Yet another type of RAM technology was being studied by the Germans for its effects on electromagnetic wave propagation. As this is an important point that we will return to later, the report on this material is cited in full here:

> Zeulenroda: The following are the only war research activities engaged in: Measurements were made on materials for absorbing electromagnetic radiation. One of these materials consisted of spiral steel shavings imbedded in paraffin, which was named EISENSPANE. Another material tested was manufactured by I.G. Farben and was called MOLTOPREN. No papers were available on this work but the results were given from memory as shown in appendix B. The purpose of this work was for the concealment of submarines.[19]

I.G. Farben, and missing papers, once again. And submarine stealth was not the only thing the Nazis were after:

> A large price was offered by the German Government for the development of "Schwarzflugzeug' /Black airplane/, a non-reflecting material for use on aircraft.[20]

As we shall see, this research may have paid unexpected dividends to the German secret weapons research project. In any case, the existence of actual "protostealth" schnorkel devices on late war German U-boats attests to the success of some of these experiments.

This report also corroborates yet another allegation, often derisorily dismissed by mainstream researchers, that in May of 1945, a small flotilla of the new Type XXI U-boats, with their revolutionary hydrogen peroxide underwater "turbine" propulsion allowing extraordinary undersea cruising speeds, met, and annihilated, a flotilla of British destroyers.[21] The allegations included the German use of new types of wire-guided, and

---

[19] Ibid., p. 57.
[20] Ibid., p. 63.
[21] Q.v. Henry Stevens, Tha Last Battalion (German Research Project).

magnetic proximity torpedoes.[22] At least one corroboration of this strange encounter occurs in the BIOS report:

> Vierling has heard of electrical homing devices for torpedoes and their firing by a proximity effect. Torpedoes used magnetic fields varying at about 500 cycles per sec. Torpedoes were built by AEG in Berlin. Some work was done also at Gdynia. These torpedoes were reported to have sunk 12 Destroyers in one engagement in Arctic waters. [23]

C. Computers

The Allies, as is known, perfected early digital computing machines during the war, which machines were instrumental in breaking the "unbreakable" German Enigma machine's ciphers, but also of incalculable value in assisting the Manhattan Project engineers with difficult calculations needed for the atom bomb. In some rarely encountered but sophisticated versions of the Allied Legend, this constitutes another reason for the German failure to develop truly long range rockets and, of course, the atom bomb. But here too, the declassified reality is quite at odds with the postwar spin.

> A computing machine was used at Gottingen for researches in airplane stability and ballistics. Machine could solve equations mentioned in two or three minutes with errors less than 3%. Only one such machine has been made. It uses ordinary vacuum tubes, a multiplying principle and two cathode ray rubes, one of which has a spiral scan. One tube draws the curve which is the solution and the other indicates the complex roots of the solution.[24]

The Gottingen computer, however, appears not to have been the only computer designed and built in the Third Reich. Indeed, since the reunification, reports and actual photographs have surfaced of an enormous, "Eniac" sized computer built by none other than the

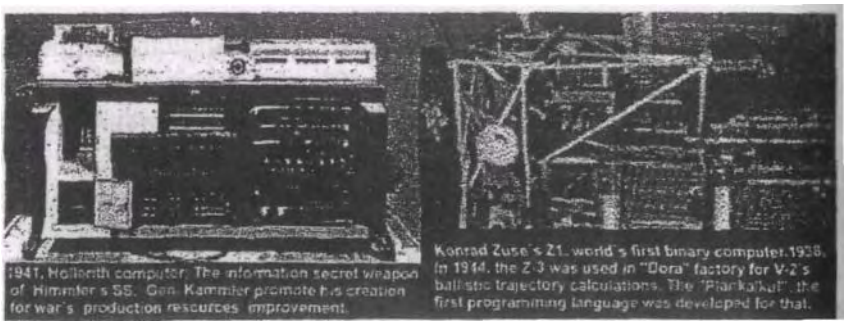
---

[22] Q.v. Henry Stevens, The Last Battalion (German Research Project).

[23] "Production and further Investigation of Wesch Anti-Radar Material," British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee 1/549, Report 132, p. 63, emphasis added.

[24] Ibid.

Deutsche Reichspost.[25] The question is, why would the postal service need such an enormous, and expensive, computer? One reason has already been encountered in part one: such a computer would have been invaluable to the research that Baron Manfred von Ardenne and Dr. Fritz Houtermans were conducting for the Reichspost on the atom bomb, and for running the difficult calculations of neutron free path and cross sections that required.



The Reichspost's Computer

[25] Edgar Mayer and Thomas Mehner, p.

D. The "Superbombs"

As we have seen, before the curtain of silence and spin came down after the war, a number of small articles appeared in the Allied press about the actual state of German atom bomb research. One of these was an article that appeared in the Evening Standard on August 7, 1945, one day after the Little Boy atom bomb was dropped on Hiroshima. It is worth citing this article in full:

> GERMANS TIMED ATOM BOMB FOR OCTOBER
>
> The Germans had an atom bomb which would have been ready by October.
>
> A colossal blast effect was claimed for the German bomb. It was said it would wipe out everything inside a radius of six miles, said B.U.P. to-day.
>
> The German atomic plans were uncovered four months ago, when an Allied search party walked into a small silk factory at Celle, north of Hanover.
>
> A laboratory of two rooms was buried away in the heart of the factory. A famous research scientist was still at work. He was flown to Britain the same day.
>
> This man, with others, had been working on the atom bomb for months. The Nazi Government poured out money on it. Apparently they did not expect immediate results.[26]

There are a number of disquieting things about this article. First, one gains the impression from the report that the "laboratory" was not even known to the Allies until the factory was occupied. Second, there is already evidence of a "spin" in the report, as the German program is understood to have been underway for only a few "months." But the final and most unusual thing is that its blast effects, some 6 miles radius, or 12 miles in diameter, is far beyond the blast damage radius of even a large atom bomb, much less a fuel air bomb. The only known weapon with this extraordinarily sized blast radius is a fully-fledged hydrogen bomb. We have seen in part

[26] Mayer and Mehner, Hitler und die ,,Bombe", p. 51, emphasis added.

one that Professor Lachner of Vienna maintained that the German atom bombs were deliberately intended by the Nazis to be used as the detonators for hydrogen bombs. But was there sufficient basic theory for the Germans to have thought of the hydrogen bomb at that early stage?[27]

1. The "Molecular" Bomb: The Hydrogen Bomb?

The idea of a "Superbomb" was first patented prior to World War Two in Austria, and a modification of the idea was patented in Germany in 1943.[28] Its inventor, Dr. Karl Nowak, explained the reason for his invention as being to create a superbomb without the radioactive fallout effects that were evident from atomic and thermonuclear explosions![29] In other words, the Nazis were already looking past the thermonuclear age toward the creation of second and third generation weapons systems that would give the same offensive and strategic "punch" but without the side effects! In theory, the bomb is workable, but was way beyond the technological capabilities of Germany, or any other power, in that time period. Basically, the idea was to create a state of matter in which, through ultra-low temperatures approaching absolute zero, matter would be super-compressed. The idea was then to detonate this material, subjecting it to sudden stress and heat, to create a sudden and massive expansion and explosion, and therewith, an enormous, H-bomb sized blast.[30] Thus, there may have been a basis in actual German secret research for the incredible claim of the Japanese military attache in Stockholm's 1943 report to Tokyo that the Germans were investigating the properties of super-dense matter for weaponization.

---

[27] It should be recalled that Dr. Edward Teller actually first thought of, and proposed to the Allies, the hydrogen bomb in 1944.

[28] German patent 905.847, March 16, 1943, cited in Mayer and Mehner, Hitler und die ,,Bombe", p. 159.

[29] Ibid., p. 159.

[30] Ibid., p. 158.

2. The Fuel-Air Bomb

At the "small end" of the "bombs of mass destruction scale," however, there are equally baffling, and problematical, assertions regarding Nazi research into the fuel-air bomb, the only known conventional explosive device with enough power to produce the blast and heat effects of a small "tactical" nuclear weapon. It goes without saying that today's "tactical nuke" would have been World War Two's strategic weapon. Once again, the first allegations of this type of bomb did not come with Gulf War One in the early 1990s, but with Renato Vesco. And his claims there, as elsewhere, were quietly ignored. But once again, declassification has verified his assertions, and to an extraordinary degree:

> (g) Liquid Air bomb
>
> As the research on the atomic bomb under Graf von Ardenne and others was not proceeding as rapidly as had been hoped in 1944, it was decided to proceed with the development of a liquid air bomb. Experiments using ordinary powdered coal were not at all successful, but extremely good results were obtained from a mixture consisting of 60% finely powdered dry brown coal and 40% liquid air. The technical man responsible for this work was Dr. Zippelmeier. The first trial was made on the Doberitz grounds near Berlin using a charge of about 8 kg of powder in a thin tin plate container. The liquid air was poured on to the powder, and the two were mixed together with a long wooden stirrer. Kreutzfeld did this himself, and was present at the ensuing test. In an area of radius 500 to 600 meters trees, etc. were all completely destroyed. Thereafter the explosion started to rise and only the tops of the trees were affected, although the intensive explosion covered an area 2 km. in radius. Zippelmeier then had the idea that a better effect might be obtained it the powder was spread out in the form of a cloud before the explosion. Trials were made with a paper container impregnated with some waxy substance. A metal cylinder was attached to the lower end of this container and hit the ground first, dispersing the powder. After a short time interval of the order of 1/4 second a small charge in the metal cylinder exploded and ignited the dark funnel shaped dust - liquid air cloud. The bombs had to be filled immediately prior to the departure of the aircraft. Bombs with charges

> of 25 and 50 kg. of powder were dropped on the Starbergersee, and photographs of the explosion were taken. Standartenfuhrer Klumm kept a photograph of the result and showed it to Brandt (Himmler's personal adviser(sic)). The intensive explosion covered an area 4 to 4.5 km radius, and the explosion was still felt on a radius 12.5 km. When the bomb was dropped on an airfield, much destruction was caused 12 km away, and all the trees on a hillside 5 to 6 km away were flat. On a radius of 12.5 km. only the tops of the trees were destroyed.[31]

Several important considerations are worth mentioning here. First, note the truly massive size and area of devastation caused by the relatively small fuel-air bomb, for the area covered by the second test is commensurate with the blast from a large atom bomb: 6 kilometers' radius. Second, note that Zippelmeier has had a similar insight to Dr. Nowak's "molecular bomb": compression of material and then rapid dispersion over an area prior to detonation. This is only one step short of a modern fuel air bomb with its chain molecules and electrical, instantaneous, rather than slower chemical, detonation. So in other words, regardless of whether or not the Nazis actually detonated atom bombs during World War Two, they did have a weapon of mass destruction as powerful as an atom bomb, and one that did not have radioactive side effects. Moreover, the weight of this bomb, while large, was within the capabilities of existing German bombers to carry. Finally, it is to be noted that this test took place under the direct auspices of the SS, Himmler's representative himself being present for it. And that would place the weapon firmly within the orbit of Kammler's "think tank." But possession of a fuel-air bomb by Nazi Germany now raises some important historical problematics.

---

[31] British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee, "Information Obtained from Targets of Opportunity in the Sonthofen Area," BIOS Target numbers C 28/8.211, C 25/549, C 6/137, C 30/ 338, C 4/268, C 22/2182, C 21/601., pp., 4-5.

E. The Historical Problematic:

German possession of even a prototype fuel-air bomb during World War Two causes a number of historical problems, and it is worth considering them and their implications.

1. The Cold War

First, the test of such a device during the war would give lie to the contemporary "public" history of the fuel-air bomb, since they are only supposed to be the offshoot of American thermonuclear research and dating from the early 1980s. Doubtless, the modern fuel-air bomb is nothing like the early German prototype, with its chain molecules and simultaneous electrical detonation, it is a lighter, and much more powerful device.

Second, if the technology existed for such enormous conventional bombs capable of reaking strategic large scale destruction on the order of small atom bombs, why were untold billions spent on much more expensive atomic and thermonuclear bombs, whose side-effects included deadly radioactivity, and why was the charade continued for so long? The existence of such weapons indicates that at some very profound, and little appreciated, level, the Cold War was a partial sham.

Third, the basic idea for such a weapon had, in fact, been explored by Austria (prior to its annexation by Germany), and then subsequently both by Italy and Germany in the years immediately prior to the war. The idea is simple, and the effects obvious. So why did it take this long to obtain the weapon? Or is there a history that has not yet come to light? Given what we have already encountered in part one regarding allegations of the German use of some weapon of extraordinary strategic explosive power on the Eastern Front, it seems likely that some similar type of weapon was already in use. The Zippelmeier test may thus only have been a test, not of the concept itself, but of how large of a weapon could actually be made. The results, as have been seen, were probably beyond even the Nazis' wildest destructive dreams.

2. The Alchemy of Atlantis: the "Mission Brief" of the Kammler stab

But what do all these fantastic projects indicate about the nature of German secret weapons research? We may draw a number of conclusions from the evidence presented thus far, and in so doing, speculatively reconstruct the "mission briefing" of the secret weapons think tank being run by Kammler's SS Sonderkommando:

(1) Overlapping technologies were to be developed that could be employed in across a wide variety of various weapons systems (Stealth and RAM technology, etc);
(2) Every available method for the creation of prototypical "smart weapons" was to be pursed (wire, radio, and television-guidance systems), i.e., German technological and engineering competence were to be exploited to the maximum;
(3) This technological competence was to be pursued in (then) unconventional ways and combinations to create not only new weapons, but a new doctrine of warfare;
(4) The first generation of these weapons were then to be extrapolated upon, and second and third generation technology trees and long range goals mapped out;
(5) The ultimate quest was for the attainment of weapons of mass destruction beyond the acquisition of atomic and thermonuclear weapons;
(6) Post-nuclear systems were then to be developed ideally, and initial research on those systems undertaken; and finally, as we shall see,
(7) Every known theoretical principle of physics was to be pondered and extrapolations for weaponization theorized, and, to the extent possible, experimented upon and utilized.

In other words, the Kammlerstab's mission brief was to think "outside the box" entirely, even if that meant outside the box of Nazi party ideology, or, when it suited it, inside it. The basis was the will to power, by whatever means possible.

3. Whose Military-Industrial Complex?

All these considerations raise a final problematic, and one so obvious that I hesitate mentioning it, since others have before, only to be dismissed or not taken seriously. President Eisenhower, as he was leaving office, gave his celebrated warning to the American people about the spiritual and cultural dangers of "the military industrial complex." With the influx of Nazi "Paperclip" scientists, many if not most of whom - including Dornberger, Oberth, and Von Braun - were members of Kammler's "think tank", this warning by someone in the know must surely be interpreted differently than current standard explanations. Having fought the world's first "military-industrial complex" and doubtless seen at least some of its extraordinary inventory of weapons and theoretical papers, President Eisenhower is surely raising another ominous, though overlooked, specter: Just whose military-industrial complex is he really warning about? What possible spiritual and cultural dangers were there to the American people from good old American companies like Boeing, DuPont, Lockheed, Hughes, and so on, unless, in importing ex-Nazi scientists and their unusual methods and insights and experimental results (often achieved at the cost of enormous human suffering), we inadvertently imported an underlying ideology at variance with traditional morality.

13.

QUANTUM NUMEROLOGY AND VORTICULAR PHYSICS, NAZI STYLE

"And look what happened next. No sooner had people started showing an interest in Schauberger again than a man with clear ties to the US intelligence community turns up on his doorstep, tempts him over to the United States and shuts his operation down - permanently. "
Nick Cook, The Hunt for Zero Point[1]

The bewilderment of Reichminister of Armaments Albert Speer when confronted by prosecutor Jackson's allegations of a German chemical weapons test of extraordinary power near Auschwitz is not an isolated instance.[2] Bewilderment seems to be the normal state of mind when confronted by the even more sensational allegations that have percolated through the press and UFOlogy journals since the war's end of Nazi development of prototype "flying saucers." How could anything so outlandish be true, much less be publicly reported?

A starting point for entry into this much-maligned aspect of UFOlogy is what German physics actually was doing prior to and during the War under the Nazis. Much has been written of the deleterious effects of Nazi ideology on banning "Jewish physics," i.e., relativity, from German science, so this will not be covered again here. This left quantum mechanics as the only genuine physics that could equally be claimed to be "Aryan" and pursued by Nazi physicists with a vengeance. Quantum mechanics, in the state in which it then existed, could be summarized as having the following emphases and implications for the German scientists involved:

---

[1] Nick Cook, The Hunt for Zero Point, p. 227.

[2] In the light of the previous chapter's information, another plausible explanation of Speer's ignorance of the weapon, as well as an explanation of what the weapon might have been, now present themselves, for a fuel-air bomb would fall well within the parameters of the test described by Jackson, and since, once again, the test occurred under SS auspices, it is not surprising that Speer did not know of it.

(1) The rejection of relativity meant to a certain extent that the pre-relativistic idea of an aether lumeniferous regained some currency, via its quantum mechanics version of zero point energy or vacuum flux. German scientists were therefore not free to pursue relativistic science, but were free to investigate the enigmatic properties of this new "quantum aether." Indeed, with various esoteric and occult doctrines percolating in the background, such as the notion of "vril" energy, and Reichenbach's early and well-known experiments in the 18th century on "life force" energy, the Germans would have been positively encouraged by the underlying ideology to undertake experimental examination of its properties as far as existing technology would allow;
(2) Reichenbach's experiments, plus the implications of Heisenberg's Uncertainty Principle, may have influenced German scientists to posit a connection between consciousness, quantum physics, and this underlying "quantum aether". The strange Ahnenerbe experiments mentioned earlier would seem to indicate that some such experiments in consciousness were being undertaken;
(3) Pre-war standard physics papers by Gerlach had indicated connections between spin and resonance effects;
(4) The paradoxes of quantum mechanics had also become known, leading Einstein, Podolsky, and Rosen to posit "quantum loopholes" in relativity's own "velocity of light speed limit" for faster-than-light transference of information;
(5) One German physicist of some repute, O.C. Hilgenberg, a student of gravitation expert Walter Gerlach, had taken Gerlach's work one step further, as we shall see;
(6) German physicists thus had strong internal impetus as well as external ideological pressures to investigate the properties of rotating media and fields, especially since the results of Georges Sagnac's rotational version of the Michelson-Morley experiment were known to them;

(7) The Germans knew of Tesla's extraordinary claims for beaming electric power, as well as of his high voltage direct current impulse experiments which revealed superluminal electro-acoustic longitudinal wave forms;
(8) The Germans would likely have known of E.T. Whittaker's pre-relativistic papers, which were a mathematical study of such wave forms.

Given this series of known physical papers and experiments, and given the Kammlerstab's "alchemy" of combining technologies and concepts to seek underlying unifying principles and methods, might they have put all these together to come up with the beginning theoretical outlines of a physics completely different than the public consumption physics proffered since the end of the war, up to, and including the 26 dimensional monster called "String theory"? If so, are there any indications that they did so, or were beginning to? While the indications in terms of actual papers are slight, those indications, coupled with the revelations that have come from Germany since its reunification, suggest that the answer to both questions is "yes."

A. Gravity, Vortices, and Quantum Numerology

Dr. Ing. Ott Christoph Hilgenberg was a student of the renowned Nobel laureate Walter Gerlach, whose work in magnetic spin polarization in 1921 had earned him the Nobel Prize. Hilgenberg, however, while within the "mainstream" of physics, was not one to allow his mind to be constrained by conventional concepts, as any glance at his two little known, but quite unconventional and thought-provoking papers will attest.

In 1931 Hilgenberg published what may best be called an arcane paper entitled "Gravitation, Tromben, und Wellen in bewegten Medien," or "Gravitation, Beats, and Waves in Moving Media." The title itself is quite suggestive, for it is the first indication that, even before the Nazis, and after relativity, at least one serious and respected German physicist is still thinking of the old idea of an aether, but thinking about it in a way quite different from the static

aether concepts of the 19th century that led to the famous Michelson-Morley experiment, and Sagnac's rotational version of it. For Hilgenberg is thinking of a dynamic aether, spurred in part no doubt by the implications of Sagnac's version of the famous experiment. Hilgenberg's paper was arcane and abstruse in the extreme, advocating the idea of gravitation as a vertical ether sink. Thus, as in relativity, gravity was the consequence of a complex geometry, only in Hilgenberg's case, this meant that "mass" was a geometric result manifest, for example, in a rotating body's interior. This led Hilgenberg to propose the very unconventional idea that the earth - or any other such rotating massive body - expanded and contracted, in a huge wave-like pattern over time.

In 1938 Hilgenberg followed this paper up with a mathematical and theoretical physics tour de force entitled "Quantenzahlen, Wirbelring-Atommodelle und Heliumsechserring-Aufbauprinzip des Periodensystems der chemischen Elemente," a mind-twister that is no less impressive in English: "A Quantum Number, Vortex Atom Model and Hexagonal-ring Construction Principle of the Periodic System of the Chemical Elements." Hilgenberg had developed the mathematics for a system of modelling complete atoms according to vorticular rotational principles of the now long-discarded aether! The combined effect of these two papers and their mathematical and theoretical development allowed Hilgenberg to predict a number of effects completely at variance with relativistic physics, and long before similar observations in the late 20th century began to signal significant problems with the relativistic-Big Bang cosmology, e.g., heterodyning effects on light coming from a body moving toward the observer, or, to put it simply, why red-shift effects sometimes accompany bodies moving toward an observer rather than away from one.

Under Hilgenberg's influence, Carl Friedrich Krafft took this "vorticular quantum mechanics" one step further, and posited atoms as essentially a geometric or topological construct of the aether that acted as "ether pumps", taking in or giving off energy based on the rotations of the various rings of dynamic aether around them. He developed this notion even further by positing various combinations of vorticular, rotating geometries as the basis

for the then known sub-atomic particles. Krafft, whose views were totally eclipsed by war's end with the victory of the Allies - which likewise might be seen as a victory of relativity - was left to self-publish his works in this strange world of "non-linear physics", which were duly and promptly ignored by the more conventionally minded linear physics of relativity and its proponents.[3] But is there any indication that all this theory about the vorticular and rotational aspect of a dynamic aether was ever pursued beyond the stage of theory?

Indeed there is, but it requires a detour by way of a bit of aerodynamics, courtesy of Renato Vesco once again.

B. Disks, Boundary Layer, And Turbines

Vesco maintained an unusual approach throughout the various reprintings of his book, namely, that German experimentation with disk shaped aircraft actually began as an experiment to transform the entire lift surface into the intake vent for a jet turbine. That is to say, on his view, the earliest German "saucers" were nothing more than standard suction aircraft, though admittedly of very unusual design. These experimental aircraft were further the offshoots of German experiments to suction the boundary layer from the lift surfaces of aircraft. The "boundary layer" is that small layer - only a few molecules of air thick - of air that "sticks" to a lift surface, such as a wing, and, as an aircraft moves faster, this layer increases the drag on the lift surface, and therefore weakens its efficiency and requires more energy to move the craft. As speed increases and depending on the configuration of the wing itself, great turbulence can build up behind the wing as the result of the thickening of the boundary layer, increasing the aerodynamic resistance. "It seems clear, therefore, even to a layman in aeronautics that the objective should be to move the point of transition as far to the rear of the

[3] No amount of explaining, however, can seem to quell the anti-relativist side of things for the simple feet that in most respects the theory of General Relativity has enormous predictive power, and therefore, scientific value and credibility. It is only recently that some crucial observations have arisen to challenge its assumptions.

moving body as possible in order to minimize the expenditure of motive energy required to propel the body through the air. This is especially true in high speed flight, since the power required increases at about the cube of the speed."[4] Thus, prior to the war British, American, and particularly German researchers concentrated their efforts to develop various methods to deal with this problem.

Various methods were tried and pursued during the war, including the use of micro-porous sinterized metal called "Luftschwamm " (literally, "air sponge) as both a lift surface and an intake vent for a jet turbine. The goal was simply to suction the boundary layer itself from the lift surface, thereby dramatically decreasing drag, and increasing efficiency and performance at high speed. According to Vesco, the Germans gradually reached some intriguing conclusions in these experiments:

> The first was that it was not advantageous to transform ordinary aircraft into planes with a controlled boundary layer because the suction principle was deprived of its best attributes and the difficulties of construction did not compensate for the limited advantages....
>
> In addition, it was demonstrated that inasmuch as they were planning a special turbine-powered project, it would have been advantageous to combine the two mechanisms into a single whole by feeding the turbine with air taken from the wing orifices instead of by the means of the usual forward-ram air intakes.
>
> ....It seems, in fact, that by reworking the old experiments on "potential frictionless current," the German technical experts may in the final days have succeeded experimentally in reducing aerodynamic friction on appropriately shaped bodies to very low values.[5]

This idea had also occurred to the British as well, but apparently the Germans had had no little success in combining micro-porous "sinterized" air permeable lift surfaces and turbine intakes, for a British postwar report, "A.R.C. No. 9672: Notes on German Theoretical Work on Porous Suction - all the notes taken from the examination of German researches on porous materials (for which a

[4] Vesco and Childress, Man-Made UFOs: 50 Years of Suppression, pp. 188-189.

[5] Ibid., p. 193, emphasis in the original.

special team of investigators had been formed)," were compared with similar British work done during the war. The report, as Vcsco notes, "still bears the label 'top secret."[6] What the Germans were apparently trying to do was simply build a disk-shaped aircraft, the entire surface of which was both the turbine intake, as well as the lift surface. This was, so to speak, the "Mark I" flying saucer: a standard suction aircraft, albeit, with a very unconventional lift surface, which was one and the same as its fuselage and air intake.

However, Vesco maintained more in his book, namely, that the "Foo Fighters" - the strange balls of light that Allied and German pilots began to see accompanying their formations near the end of the war - were in fact an even more revolutionary radio-controlled anti-aircraft weapon, used to jam Allied radars via very small, ceramic-cased miniaturized klystron tubes, or to actually down Allied planes by firing ionized gases to short out, or even explode, an aircraft's ignitions or engines. In this respect, Vesco's assertions became more detailed, and simultaneously, more fanciful and easily dismissed. For one thing, Vesco claimed that these were secret German anti-aircraft weapons, a claim that seemed to fly in the face of absurdity, since the official history of their sighting never associated the loss of any Allied aircraft with them. In fact, they appeared quite harmless according to all standard versions of the history of their appearance.

Once again, only recently has the German perspective on "Foo Fighters" been verified by a February 1945 report called "An Evaluation of German Capabilities in 1945." This report, among other things, lists a German "phoo bomb" as well as atom bombs. Miniaturized klystron tubes, as well as German advances in silicon and germanium crystals, two elements essential in the making of semiconductors which in turn are the basis of the transistor, were actually under development as well.[7] Most of this research was burned by the Germans in the face of the Allied advance into the Reich, and the rest fell into American hands.

---

[6] Vesco and Childress, op. cit., pp. 212-213.

[7] Henry Stevens, Hitler's Flying Saucers: A Guide to German Flying Disks of the Second World War, p. 75.

And this raises a significant problem, for the miniaturization of the klystron tube to a scale in some cases only a tenth as large as similar tubes in the Allied inventory, raises the specter of how far the Germans actually progressed in their semiconductor research. In any case, as researcher Henry Stevens notes, this bit of information provides the "missing provenance" to the origins of the transistor, and "explodes an argument made by the late Col. Philip J. Corso" that "transistors were, at least in part, based upon alien technology."[8] This will not be the first time we encounter a potential "German problem," as opposed to an "E.T. problem," with respect to Roswell and other celebrated crash recovery accounts.

One of the unusual aspects of Vesco's claims, and again, one that brought him under a certain amount of criticism, was his claim that an Italian engineer and turbine specialist named "Bellonzo" had been involved in the Nazi saucer projects. As no Bellonzo could be found, this assertion was apparently a fabrication, until one Dr. Giuseppi Belluzo, indeed a specialist in steam turbines, showed up to corroborate the story. Why is this significant? Because in 1980 the German magazine Neue Presse

> featured an article about the German fluidics engineer Heinrich Fleissner. Fleissner was an engineer, designer and advisor to what he calls a "Flugscheibe" project based at Peenemuende during the war. It is interesting to note that Fleissner's area of expertise, fluidics, is exactly the specialty involved in investigating problems with boundary layer flow. Fleissner reports that the saucer with which he was involved would have been capable of speeds up to 3,000 kilometers per hour within the earth's atmosphere and up to 10,000 kilometers per hour outside the earth's atmosphere. He states that the brains of the developmental people were found in Peenemuende under the tightest secrecy. .... What is of most interest to us here are three facts. First, that Fleissner worked at Peenemuende on a flying saucer project. Second, that a hint of this design has survived to this day. Third, the surviving design can be linked to photographic evidence of German saucer, circa World War Two.[9]

---

[8] Stevens, Hitler's Flying Saucers, p. 75. Stevens of course is referring to Corso's well-known and controverisal book, The Day After Roswell.

[9] Ibid., p. 90.

Let us pause to note that according to Fleissner there was a saucer project at Peenemunde and that it apparently involved the "suctioned boundary layer" concept we have already discussed. As we shall see, there will be an odd, little noticed connection that might corroborate the existence of this program when we examine the Roswell crash in the next part of this book. Stevens continues with his summary of Fleissner:

> Almost ten years after the war, on March 28, 1955, Heinrich Fliessncr filed a patent application with the United States Patent Office for a flying saucer (Patent number 2,939,648).... The engine employed by Fleissner rotated around the cabin on the outside of the saucer disk itself. It was set in motion by starter rockets...The difference is that this engine was really a form of ram-jet engine. It featured slots running around the periphery of the saucer into which air was scooped. The slots continued obliquely right through the saucer disk so that jet thrust was aimed slightly downward and backward from the direction of rotation. Within the slots, fuel injectors and a timed ignition insured a proper power curve which was in accordance with the speed and direction of the saucer much like an automobile's fuel injection is timed to match the firing of the spark plugs. Steering was accomplished by directing the airflow using internal channels contained an rudder and flaps which ran alongside the central cabin. The cabin itself was held stationary or turned in the desired direction of flight using a system of electromagnets and servo-motors coupled with a gyroscope.[10]

But Fleissner was not awarded his patent until five years later! The question is, why the delay? One reason for the delay is that the joint Canadian-American suction-saucer project, Project Silverbug, was also under development at the same time. Fleissner's patent was incomparably superior. At about the same time as his patent was granted the Canadian-American project was canceled.[11] But why was the Fleissner design superior? Perhaps because the patent detailed the way the earlier Peenemunde saucer was able to function both inside and outside the atmosphere. In short, the power plant for the unusual ram-jet was capable of utilizing both jet

---

[10] Stevens, Hitler's Flying Saucers, p. 90.

[11] Ibid., p. 92.

fuel for in-atmosphere flight, and once outside the atmosphere, the suction vents could be closed, and the fuel shifted to a mixture of liquid oxygen and hydrogen. "Is this performance enough to impress the U.S. Air Force and civilian population of the late 1940s and early 1950s? The answer is clearly in the affirmative."[12]

But what has this to do with an Italian steam turbine expert? Very simply, because when the craft was in its "rocket mode, when the saucer is burning only liquid oxygen and liquid hydrogen, the products of this combustion are only heat and water. Another way to say heat and water is steam."[13] And steam, of course, hisses, a sound sometimes associated with close observation of UFOs.

From this simple, though unconventional, configuration of known technologies, the Germans would have progressed by elementary science and engineering principles to the next, "Mark II," stage. How could such a craft's range be extended? The answer - one which likewise occurred to American physicist Thomas Townsend Brown - was that the jet turbine itself could be coupled with a large electrical generator to become a source of electrical power. With sufficient super-cooling (remember Nowak's "molecular bomb"?) and sufficient electrical charge, even inert gases such as nitrogen, which forms the bulk of the earth's atmosphere, could be burned as fuel. Of course, while the theory is simple the engineering is monstrously difficult, but the advantages were plainly to be seen, "A saucer which could gather its fuel along the way has one obvious advantage. It could stay aloft for days if not weeks."[14] The next step, "Mark III," was imply to apply already existing German research in nuclear powered "conventional" craft to this unconventional airframe.[15] Was such a saucer ever actually built? An article by Jim Wilson in the November 2000 issue of Popular Mechanics discloses a project to design a chemical-nuclear powered saucer craft for long-duration orbital missions, a craft tipped with nuclear missiles and bombs. The

---

[12] Henry Stevens, Hitler's Flying Saucers, pp. 92, 95.
[13] Ibid., p. 97.
[14] Ibid, p. 99.
[15] Ibid., p. 101.

project was allegedly based on wartime German designs, and its development was assisted by captured German personnel.[16]

All this, extraordinary as it sounds, is however nothing more than the unconventional blending of very conventional technology and ideas, a methodology we have encountered before in the German secret weapons black projects. What happens therefore, when these conventional technologies are not only combined in unconventional ways, but with the very unconventional physics that the Germans may have been developing? With this question, we are at the entrance into the "Mark IV" saucer prototypes, saucers based on combinations of turbines, vorticular physics, and field propulsion. With it, we are similarly at the very deepest secret levels of Kammler's "think tank."

C. Viktor Schauberger: Rotational Physics and Extreme Temperature Gradients

The story of Viktor Schauberger, an Austrian forester and naturalist, is well-known to any who have investigated claims of Nazi development of flying saucers. Yet, there are aspects of this story that have escaped even Nick Cook or meticulous researchers such as Henry Stevens. These aspects concern three key areas:

(1) His concern with "implosion", extremes of temperature gradients, and vorticular motion were coupled with his detailed study of ancient mathematical doctrines and "occulted physics" within ancient doctrines and philosophical texts. In short, Schauberger was the ideal candidate, from the SS's point of view, to lead a project involved with areas of physics and esoteric systems that were central to the SS ideology;
(2) His project was directly connected to the SS and, much to Schauberger's own moral disgust and distaste, was forced to use slave labor from concentration camps. Thus, what many have missed, is that this fact places Schauberger's saucer project firmly within the orbit of the Kammlerstab;

[16] Stevens, Hitler's Flying Saucers, p. 106.

(3) Schauberger realized the implications for his "implosion" physics were such that a "super-super bomb" of unbelievable power could be constructed. This means, in effect, that quirky though some of Schauberger's terminology and ideas might seem from a conventional physics standpoint - he was, after all, a "naturalist" and self-taught physicist and inventor - his ideas were well within the framework being developed in quantum mechanics and the unusual "aether vortex" theories of physicists and engineers like Hilgenberg, Krafft, or even the great Gerlach himself.

In a nutshell, Schauberger's theories bring us to the very edge of what appear to be a wartime effort - a well funded, and deeply black effort - on the part of the SS to understand the relationship of the zero point energy, rotating fields, and gravity.

1. His Basic Conceptions

Schauberger began his little known and quite unconventional career as an "unorthodox physicist" as a forester for the Austrian government. One observation - a breathtakingly simple one - launched him on his career. One day Schauberger observed a trout in a clear, fast moving stream. The trout was stationary in the swift current, using a minimum of effort to remain in place: a flick of a fin here, a small movement of the tail there. As he pondered this well-known, but little understood fact, he came to the realization that the trout was using far less energy to remain motionless than conventional physics would allow. After all, the fish should have been swimming like crazy just to stand still. But that was not all. Schauberger then wondered how the trout, again with so little apparent effort and expenditure of work, could suddenly leap from the water several feet, and land upstream against the current. Schauberger decided to study the phenomenon.

What he found was the fish seemed somehow to employ extremes of temperature to achieve their stationary place, or, conversely, to leap suddenly from the water against a swift current.

As molecules "condensed", they cooled, and gave off energy in the form of heat. But Schauberger added one factor that brought him into the realm of the unconventional vorticular physics that Hilgenberg, Gerlach, Krafft, and others in Germany were developing: whenever such "condensing" took place naturally in nature, it was accomplished by a spiraling motion toward the center of a vortex, a form of motion he called "implosion." Schauberger speculated that, by deliberately forcing matter into such a motion, by deliberately compressing it via a spiral vorticular motion, matter might reach such a state that particles in atoms becomes "unglued" and transform into a new form of energy. In short, what Schauberger was proposing was a form of cool plasma, brought about by vorticular motion.[17] Schauberger supplemented this idea with all manner of study of natural examples of these types of spirals, well known to mathematicians to incorporate the Golden Section, and the Fibonacci sequence. In his own quirky way and terminology, Schauberger was talking about "cold plasmas" and cold fusion, concepts well in advance of any physics of his day, conventional or otherwise.

These ideas led Schauberger - like his more orthodox quantum mechanics contemporaries - to the conclusion that energy was relatively free and limitless if one only knew how to tap into it. And with extreme temperature gradients, rotating media and compression of matter to an intense plasma state - Schauberger thought he knew how. These ideas quickly brought him to the attention of a fellow Austrian who was interested in energy independence for his own reasons: Adolf Hitler.

In what surely must be one of the most surreal meetings ever held between an "orthodox mainstream physicist", a political leader, and an "alternative science" proponent, Schauberger was invited - summoned would be a more appropriate word - to Berlin for a private audience with Reichskanzler Hitler. A measure of the importance that Hitler attached to this meeting may be gleaned from the fact that once Schauberger had accepted Hitler's

[17] Stevens, Hitler's Flying Saucers, p. 121; Callum Coats, Living Energies: Viktor Schauberger's Brilliant Work with Natural Energy Explained, pp. 30-66.

invitation, his diplomatic papers were expedited in one day.[18]
Callum Coats then describes the surreal meeting:

> Hitler....greeted him warmly as a fellow countryman, telling him that he had studied all the reports about Viktor's work thoroughly and was very impressed with what he had learned.
>
> Thirty minutes had been allocated for the discussions, which Prof. Max Planck had been requested to attend as scientific adviser shortly before he was rudely deposed from his position as Privy Councilor. This exchange of views eventually lasted 1 1/2 hours, during which Schauberger explained the destructive action of contemporary technology and its inevitable consequences. He contrasted this with all the processes of natural motion and temperature, of the vital relation between trees, water and soil productivity, indeed all the things he considered had to be thoroughly understood and practised in order to create a sustainable and viable society.
>
> When Viktor had finished his explanations, Max Planck, who had remained silent, was asked his opinion about Viktor's natural theories. His response was the remarkable and revealing statement that 'Science has nothing to do with Nature.' [19]

Nothing further came of the meeting, but the lecture had undoubtedly made an impression on Hitler, if not on Max Planck.

It was in 1943 that Schauberger's formal contact and work on a saucer project for the SS began.

> (Schauberger) was declared fit for active duty and was inducted into the Waffen-SS, very much under duress. He came under the control of Heinrich Himmler, who forced him into research to develop a new secret weapon. Provided with suitable accommodation at Schloss Schonbrunn, the nearby Mauthausen Concentration Camp to supply the workforce of prisoner engineers, Viktor was threatened with his life if he did not comply with orders and carry out this research.
>
> In spite of these threats, however, Viktor put his foot down and demanded from the SS Command the absolute right to select the various engineers he needed. He further demanded that any technicians he chose were to be removed entirely from the camp, fed properly, dressed in normal civilian clothes and billeted in civilian

---

[18] Callum Coats, Living Energies, p. 8.
[19] Ibid., pp. 8-9.

> accommodation, otherwise they would be unproductive. As he explained, people who live in fear of their lives and under great emotional stress could work neither consistently nor creatively. Surprisingly the SS agreed and so Viktor selected somewhere between twenty and thirty engineers, craftsmen and tradesmen front Mauthausen, to be accommodated in various houses near the plant.[20]

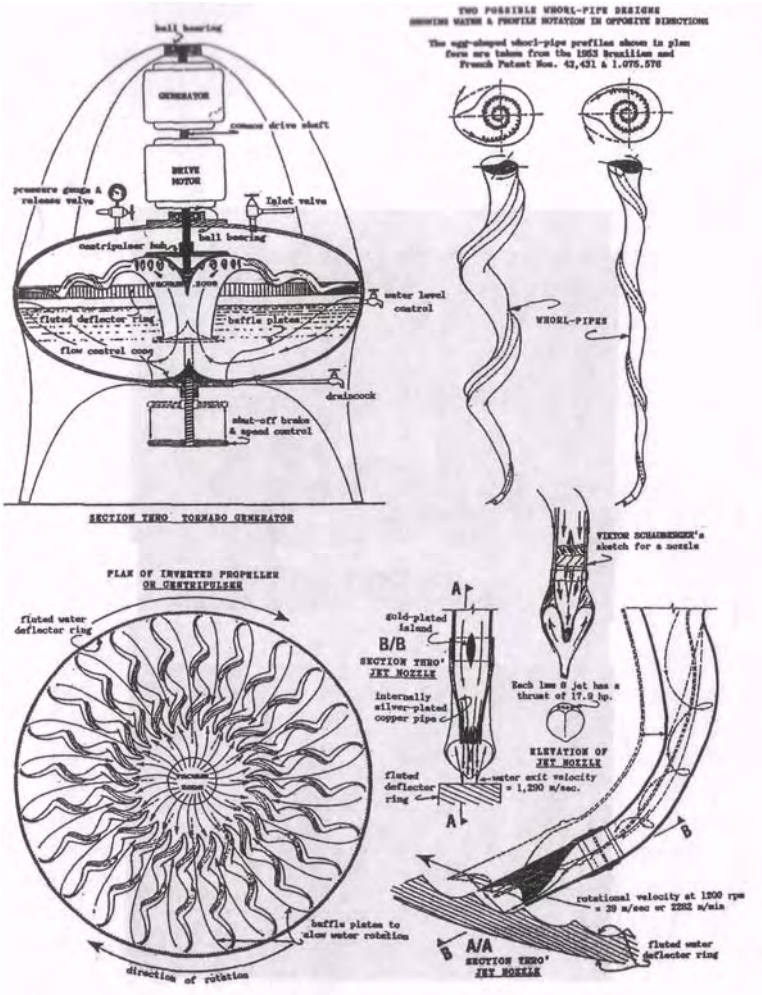
It is to be noted that the induction of Schauberger into the SS, the use of concentration camp labor, and the SS's behavior in allowing Schauberger fall latitude to pursue his project in the manner he wished, even as regards the housing of the concentration camp workers, are all classic signatures of Kammler's "think tank" group. In short, this is very strong evidence that Schauberger's team was one component of the Kammlerstab.

Few of the scientists and engineers Schauberger collected for his project understood what he was trying to construct. And it is difficult to get a measure of just exactly what Schauberger did accomplish, since all of his wartime German patents have simply disappeared, no one knows where.

2. His Disks and Turbines

It seems certain, however, that Schauberger's disks approached the boundary between the German "suction" saucers and field propulsion craft proper, as a glance at Schauberger's own postwar reconstructions of what these craft looked like will demonstrate. A postwar design exists for a home electricity generator based upon a simple, though quite unusual, jet turbine. This "Tornado Generator" employed a turbine that in turn was made up, not of blades, but of hollow, antelope-horn-like spiraling tubes. Once air was forced into this turbine and its tubes, it was then compressed, via the spiraling motion of the air through the horns, until it escaped, expanded, and pushed the whole tube-turbine assembly along. This expanding air was then recirculated to the turbine, where it was again compressed, and so on.

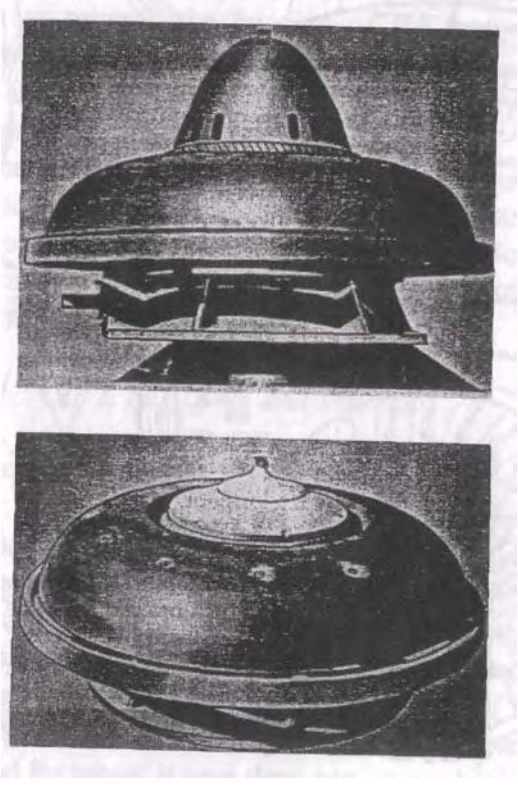
[20] Coats, Living Energies, p. 11.



Schauberger's Postwar "Tornado" Generator

Needless to say, the construction of such a complicated turbine would have required the most exacting machining and engineering skills. There is every indication that a similar device or turbine became the basis of Schauberger's wartime research. Coats

reproduced the following series of photograhps and schematics of Schauberger's wartime "Repulsine" saucer in his book Living Energies:



Photos of the "Repulsine"

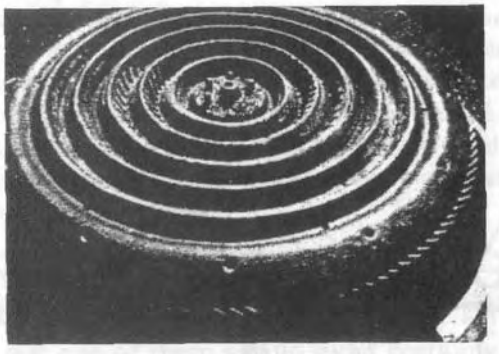
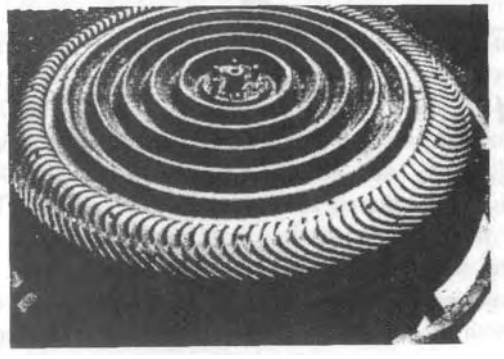
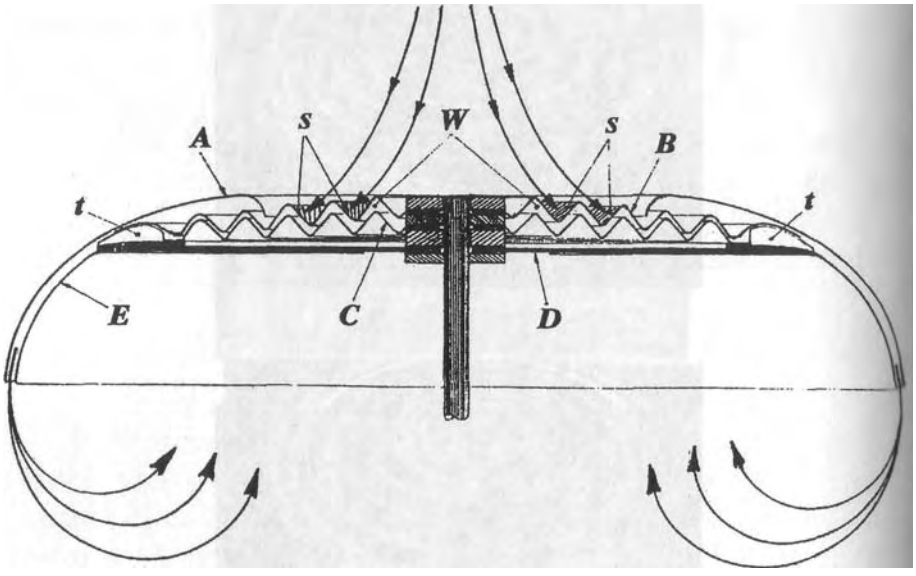


Fig. 21.10



The "Compression" Turbine of the Repulsine



German Schematic of the "Repulsine"

Nick Cook, who followed the Schauberger trail via Coats and his research on the Austrian naturalist's strange ideas back to Germany, commented at length in his book as follows:

> Something about this whole strand of development had conspired to make it the most classified form of technology in existence. Even more so than the bomb.
>
> Unlike the bomb, however, this was a secret that had held for more than 50 years.
>
> Days after the end of the war, US intelligence agents found Schauberger in Leonstein and apprehended him. Exactly as the (Nazi UFO) Legend had it, the agents, who were almost certainly Counter-intelligence Corps - the same outfit that had detained and interrogated Skoda's director Wilhelm Voss - were remarkably well informed about his entire operation. It was as if, Schauberger noted later, someone had guided them directly to him.[21]

Very few people would have been in position to familiarize US intelligence with the parameters of Schauberger's research or its exact location, but one of them would most certainly have been SS ()bergruppenfuhrer Hans Kammler. Cook continues:

> That night, back at my hotel, I applied myself to a study of the Schauberger effect that had been written up by a researcher called Callum Coats. I had picked up a copy of one of his books at the Schauberger institute. In it, there was a description of what happened when a Repulsine was rotated at 20,000 rpm. The high rotation speeds appeared to cause the air molecules passing through the turbine to pace so tightly together that their molecular and nuclear binding energies were affected in a way that triggered the anti-gravity effect. 'A point is reached where a large number of electrons and protons with opposite charges and directions of spin are forced into collision and annihilate with one another,' Coats wrote. 'As lower rather than higher forms of energy and the basic building blocks of atoms, they are upwardly extruded as it were out of the physical and into virtual states.'
>
> Virtual states? What the hell did that mean?
>
> ....'I stand face to face with the apparent "void", the compression of dematerialization that we are wont to call a "vacuum",' Schauberger had written in his diary on 14 August 1936. 'I can now

[21] Nick Cook, The Hunt for Zero Point, p. 220.

see that we are able to create anything we wish for ourselves out of this "nothing".'[22]

That is, the vacuum for Schauberger and his rotational, vorticular concepts, was but another "supercompressed" and "supercooled" state of matter.

In any case, one test of such a Schauberger saucer allegedly took place in Prague in 1945, breaking loose from its test anchor, it quickly flew upward hitting the roof of the building. Given the extraordinary latitude accorded to Schauberger by his SS controllers - doubtless up to and including Kammler himself - it is evident that "the German scientific leadership was interested in implosion and in what Schauberger had to teach them but they did not necessarily want to be limited by the use of air to achieve these results. Instead, they may have wanted to use Schauberger ideas but actuating these principles with electronic components.,"[23] This will lead, as we shall shortly see, to the most fantastic projects of all in the Kammler Group's esoteric think tank. Whatever can be said, Schauberger's unorthodox approach to jet turbine design certainly, and by all accounts, was wildly successful, so much so that he became the object of a curious attempt by some Americans to develop the idea.

3. Implosion and the USA

As was seen, Viktor Schauberger and his unorthodox ideas came to the attention of US intelligence at the end of the war. And thus was launched the strangest episode in Schauberger's already strange career, the "American Episode".[24] The difficulties

---

[22] Nick Cook, The Hunt for Zero Point, p. 221.

[23] Stevens, Hitler's Flying Saucers, p. 128, emphasis added.

[24] The best and most complete history of this episode is in Callum Coats' Living Energies, pp. 15- 28. My treatment of it here relies upon Coats, with the exception of my interpretation of its significance. Coats himself notes that the data for this period is precariously slim: "Before embarking on this last and lamentable chapter in Viktor Schauberger's life, I would like to state at the outset that significant and verifiable detail about it is extremely difficult to ascertain, mainly because all those involved, with the exception of Karl

Schauberger cxperienced during his stay in America were similar to those he encountered first in Austria, and then later during his famous visit with Hitler and Planck. First, being self-taught, he did not possess the physicist's technical language with which to express his ideas. Thus, he invented his own technical language, and often the translation between the two was difficult. Second, Schauberger having already witnessed the theft and disappearance of his patents by the Nazis, was understandably reluctant to be completely forthcoming to his American "friends." Finally, Schauberger no longer had working prototypes of any of the devices he had built.[25]

Schauberger was first brought to the attention of a group of private American "investors" by one Karl Gerchsheimer, who emigrated from Germany in 1922, eventually settling in Texas and marrying an American wife in 1937. According to Coats, it appears that Gerchsheimer became involved with the US military during World War Two in its Counter-intelligence Corps, eventually becoming the man in charge of all transport, logistics, and accommodation for the American army of occupation in Germany after the war. He returned to the USA in 1950 and established a metal fabrication company, manufacturing a number of items for NASA under contract.[26] In this capacity Gerchsheimer befriended wealthy American Philadelphia steal magnate Robert Donner. Gerchsheimer's familiarity with Schauberger's work, doubtless acquired during his Counter-intelligence years in Germany, and his disenchantment with Dr. Von Braun's rocket program, led him to propose to Donner that they visit Schauberger in Germany personally, to offer him the opportunity of private development of his "implosion" ideas. Gerchsheimer sold the project to Dormer - an intense patriot - by maintaining it would ensure American technological dominance for decades to come. A meeting in

---

Gerchsheimer with whom I spent two days, have passed away in the interim. In whatever information is available concerning this tragedy, there is a profusion of conflicting statements, interpretations and timetables which, 37 years after the event, makes the unraveling of what precisely took place in this, for all concerned, abortive endeavour rather problematic."(p. 15)

[25] Ibid., p. 15.

[26] Ibid., p. 16.

Bavaria was linally arranged between Gerchsheimer, Walter Schaubcrger (Viktor's son), and Viktor. Eventually squeezing out the European competition for his ideas with promises of large funding, Gerchsheimer was able to persuade Viktor to come to America. As part of the contract, negotiated for an American stay of three months, it was agreed that "Walter Schauberger, a physicist and mathematician, was to accompany his father and would be expected to stay for a year in order to assist in the scientific interpretation of Viktor's ideas for which there was often no recognized scientific terminology."[27] Schauberger also stipulated that his trusted machinist, Alois Renner, who had collaborated with him in the construction of several of his devices, be brought to the USA as well. Gerchsheimer was of the opinion, however, that Walter Schauberger "neither knew nor understood much about his father's theories."[28] Eventually, the two Schaubergers flew to Dallas, and then were driven to Sherman, Texas, where they were virtually interred as the "house guests" of Donner associate Harald W. Totten on his ranch.

Gerchsheimer quickly became disenchanted with Schauberger's ideas, which appeared to him to be increasingly so much gobbledygook. Having communicated these concerns to Robert Donner, who became concerned for the success of his project, Donner flew to Brookhaven's National atomic Research laboratories to seek expert scientific opinion. He secured the services of a technician who also spoke German, Eric A. Boerner, who was sufficiently familiar with the terminology of nuclear physics "to be able to translate and transmit any information to the scientific evaluators that the Schaubergers might provide."[29]

Viktor Schauberger spent about 10 days from August 20th to August 31st writing reports to Boerner. He had been instructed to write them in his own words, without regard to attempt to use "proper" scientific terminology. Because of the actual physical distance between the Schaubergers and Eric Boerner, and the intermediatorship of Gerchsheimer, the Schaubergers gained the

---

[27] Coats, Living Energies, p. 18.
[28] Ibid, p. 19.
[29] Ibid., p. 22.

impression that it was Boerner himself who headed an important particle accelerator project then underway at Brookhaven. And this in turn magnified their fears about the possible motivations behind the sudden American interest in their "implosion" concepts.

> Walter Schauberger admitted that in the process of producing their reports, it dawned on them that a bomb could possible be produced through implosion that was magnitudes more powerful than the hydrogen bomb. Assuming Boerner to be more influential than he was, Viktor and Walter became convinced that all the information they were supplying to him was being passed directly to the U.S. government and the military.[30]

While Coats himself downplays this potentiality, it is worth recalling that a similar "compression-decompression" principle lay behind the "molecular" bomb of Dr. Nowak, and hence, their concerns may have come less from a misunderstanding of Boerner's role, and more from an acquaintance with the work being done by the SS in Nazi Germany. In any case, I do not believe it is entirely fair to the Schaubergers to discount the possibility that the whole "private funding" venture via Robert Donner and Karl Gerchsheimer was not an operation designed to place into the hands of the US military and its research facilities the fundamental outlines of Schauberger's concepts.

In any case, a meeting was held on the Totten Ranch in early September 1958. Present were the two Schaubergers, Robert Donner, Boerner, and possibly Viktor Schauberger's machinist, Alois Renner. Based principally on the reports he had received, Boerner reported to the group that Project implosion was "a viable proposition." Boerner believed that "the solution of the problem of energy lay in the proper interpretation of Max Planck's equation E=hv, formulated in 1900, and the Freidrich Hasenohrl-Albert Einstein equation $E=Mc^2$." [31] Doubtless Boerner had in mind a

---

[30] Coats, Living Energies, p. 23.

[31] Ibid., p. 23. Coats rightly notes that is was first Hasenohrl who had postulated the equation in 1903 in the form of $m=E/c^2$(p. 29, n. 27). Hasenohrl's equation is slightly different than Einstein's which is properly $E=Mc^2$, where the capital M stands for a mass difference between two observed

rather remarkable paper that Walter had included in his reports, a paper that related these two fundamental equations, plus Kepler's Third Law of Planetary Motion.[32] In any case, with Viktor's health failing and his insistence to be returned to his beloved Austria as quickly as possible, the situation quickly deteriorated between the Schaubergers and Donner. Donner essentially held the two Austrians hostage until Viktor signed a contract handing over all of his ideas, inventions, and conceptions to the Donner-Gerchsheimer consortium. Only with considerable pressure was Donner even persuaded to provide Viktor with a German translation! Coats himself states

> I have studied this document myself and it does state in quite unequivocal terms that not only were all Viktor's models, sketches, prototypes, reports and other data to become the sole property of the Donner-Gerchsheimer consortium, but that Viktor was to commit himself to total silence on anything connected with implosion thereafter.... The deplorable upshot of all this, however, is that all Viktor's models, prototypes, drawings, detailed data, including Professor Popel's original report implying what might be termed "negative Friction" was an actuality, have remained the possession of the Donner-Gerchsheimer consortium. That this report was actually part and parcel of this project is confirmed by Viktor's reference to it in one of his reports to Boerner dated 23/24 August 1958.[33]

What does all this mean? For one thing, it means that during the precise period that Nick Cook notes that all references to anti-gravity research began to disappear in the British and American Press, an American industrialist, with obvious ties to the defense and nuclear research agencies of the USA, had successfully obtained all of the papers of one of Nazi Germany's most deeply classified research projects scientists. For another, it seems to

---

masses, rather than simply a lower case "m", which stands simply for mass. The point is picky, but important, as the mass difference as Einstein formulated it is crucial to the point he is developing in Special Relativity.

[32] Coats, Living Energies, pp. 24-25 contains a synopsis of this rather remarkable idea. Needless to say, the paper is not the twenty-six dimensional monster of modern string theory.

[33] Ibid., p. 27.

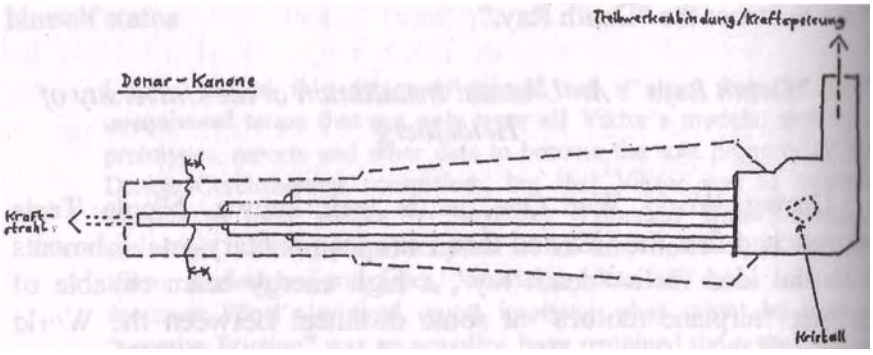
indicate that there may have been more to the science Schauberger had propounded than orthodox mainstream science will admit to, or that the contemporary military will allow to be discussed. In any case, it is clear that Schauberger's ideas fit in quite well with the vorticular and dynamic aether ideas of the vacuum energy flux potential, or Zero Point Energy, apparently under theoretical development in Nazi Germany both by "orthodox" and by less mainstream scientists. As we shall see, there is every indication that these ideas themselves were put to the test. Before we turn to that however, it is necessary to examine yet another fantastic aspect of Nazi Science: the "Death Ray."

D. "Death Rays ": An Unusual Installation at the University of Heidelberg

During World War One, as is well known, Nicola Tesla approached first the US, and then European military establishments with the idea for a "death ray", a high energy beam capable of melting "airplane motors" at some distance. Between the World Wars, in almost every western country, science fiction movies played on the concept, with one very popular movie with Boris Karloff, ever the quintessential "mad scientist", playing a crazed inventor tinkering with death rays and world domination. Similar "Buck Rogers" type gadgetry delighted movie goers in Britain, Germany, France, and Italy before the Second World War.

Then, as the Nazi UFO Mythos emerged, astonishing and specific claims began to be advanced, again by the same circle of a few disenchanted postwar Nazi sympathizers, of astounding beam weapons, of Motorstoppmittel (Means to Stop Motors), a device that resembles modern electromagnetic pulse weapons designed to knock out electronic circuitry, of electromagnetic rail guns, and of a mysterious weapon the Germans were working on called a Kraftstrahlkanone, a "Strong Ray Canon". The device was first reported by Henry Stevens.[34]

[34] Henry Stevens, German Research Project, The German Death Rays.



The Kraftstrahlkanone Schematic Reproduced by Henry Stevens

This odd looking L-shaped weapon comprised some sort of crystal, then a series of hollow tubes, each focusing whatever beam was generated to a narrower and narrower point, until it emerged from a small hole, with allegedly deadly effectiveness, though limited range. What the crystal was, we do not know. What sort of beam was generated, we do not know, though the hollow tubes in declining ratios would seem to indicate that it was some sort of acoustic wave, though why a crystal would have been used is

unclear. For these reasons, the weapon was usually dismissed as a flight of fancy, and Stevens critiqued for reproducing it.

However, with very recall experiments and advances in physics, we are in a position to conjecture what the weapon may have been, and what principle the Germans may have discovered - decades early, to be sure - that may have been behind its operation. An experimental, and highly theoretical and mathematical paper entitled "On the Existence of Undistorted Progressive Waves (UPWs) of Arbitrary Speeds 0<v<oo in Nature," by Waldyr A Rodrigues Jr. and Jian-Yu Lu was published in October of 1997. Investigating a class of Undistorted Waves, i.e., a class of wave forms that do not diminish in form or force over distance, they show that various solutions for these waves can be found within the standard equations for such waves.[35] If this paper were merely another mathematical swipe at relativity - demonstrating solutions to certain equations that the "relativity police" would issue a speeding ticket for - then it would be easily dismissible.

Unfortunately, the authors' main points are not the abstruse mathematical demonstrations and proofs, but rather, a method for generating such waves. First noticing that solutions for Maxwell's equations in a waveguide had both subluminal and superluminal solutions,[36] they went on to propose a simple method for generating and for measuring the velocities of such wave structures. The method was called "Finite Aperture Approximation," basically, a method of squeezing acoustic or longitudinal waves through a very small hole, and observing the waveform interference pattern that emerged on the other side, and calculating the velocity, not of the wave, but of the interference pattern itself. If one knows the radius of the aperture and the strength and frequency of the pulse being squeezed through it, one knows the approximate depth of the Finite Aperture Approximation's resulting wave interference pattern.[37]

---

[35] I.e., the scalar homogeneous wave equation, the Klein-Gordon equation, the Maxwell equations, and the Dirac and Weyl equations have such solutions, even in the vacuum. (Rodriguez and Jian-yu, "On the Existence of Undistorted Progressive Waves (UPWs) of Arbitrary Speeds 0<v<oo in Nature," p. 1.

[36] Ibid., p. 4.

[37] Ibid., pp. 4-6, particularly Eq. 2.7 on p. 6.

The results of experiments with at acoustic longitudinal pulses led the authors to conclude "these results... give us confidence that electromagnetic subluminal and superluminal waves may be physically launched with appropriate devices."[38] Additionally, the authors of this unusual paper are "quite sure" that such a wave interference pattern "can be launched over a large distance."[39] Then come the bombshells:

> If we take into account this feet together with the results of the acoustic experiments described in section 2, we arrive at tin-conclusion that subluminal electromagnetic pulses...and also superluminal X-waves can be launched with appropriate antennas using present technology ... Nevertheless, the electromagnetic X-wave that is an interference pattern is such that its peak travels with speed c/cos (ni) > 1.the question arises: Is the existence of superluminal electromagnetic waves in conflict with Einstein's Special Relativity?[40]

While this is not the place to summarize their lengthy mathematical critique of Special Relativity, based on their experiments, it is worth noting that the existence of this little known and recently discovered class of waves, or more specifically, wave-interference systems, "implies a breakdown of the Principle of relativity in both its active...and passive...versions."[41]

What emerges from a comparison of this paper and the alleged Kraftstrahlkanone is that apparently the Germans may have discovered and been conducting research into a similar, if not identical, phenomenon, a phenomenon that others would call a crucial component of scalar physics: electromagnetic wave-interference to produce a wave-system of superluminal and deadly force. They were, it seems, experimenting with some weaponized form of a Finite Aperture Approximation device. But why a crystal? In part, perhaps, because as is well known, crystals under stress,

---

[38] Ibid., p. 7.
[39] Ibid., p. 18.
[40] Ibid., p. 21.
[41] Ibid., p. 36. The authors' critique of these two versions of Relativity and their dominance in theoretical and experimental physics is highly mathematical and, in a word, thought-provoking.

and acoustic bombardment would be one form of stress, give off minute packets of electrical energy via the piezo-electric effect. But they also give off minute packets of sound, or "phonons", as well. But beyond this allegation, is there any other indication that the Germans were after exotic "post-nuclear" generation weaponry? There is indeed some indication that the Germans were involved with extensive research into "Tesla" technology and weaponry and other exotic particle beam technology at the University of Heidelberg. As Mayer and Mehner report, there is in available documentation that some type of atomic research was being conducted at Ludwigshafen by none other than I.G. Farben. But this research "had in reality more to do with the development of the so-called 'death rays'."[42] In a file dated December 1, 1944 on this research, it was noted that the work force was moved from Ludwigshafen to Heidelberg in July of 1943.[43]

This facility in Heidelberg was completely underground, being some 50 meters long and 25 meters wide, with a roof from 8 to 10 meters high, of .75 and 1 meter thickness. The entire bunker complex, as detailed in the diagram on the next page, consisted of a large parabolic reflector made of quartz, a "polytron," a power circuit running the circumference of the bunker, a storage area for various electrical equipment behind the quartz reflector, a generator and a transformer, a "stand" on which various targets for disintegration were placed, and a control-observation booth to the side of the stand. The quartz parabolic reflector was approximately one centimeter thick.[44] An American intelligence report declassified only in 1998 described the experiments conducted with this and similar apparatus as follows:

> Experiments: The experiments involved a large, elaborate atom-smashing apparatus, the main features of which were four "Spruehpole" (positive) and one "Fangpol" (negative), each about 6 m high. Liberated protons were conveyed through a quartz tube to the Spruehpole, from which they were "fired" at an object placed on a

[42] Mayer and Mehner, Die Atombombe und das Dritte Reich, p. 73, my translation.

[43] Ibid.

[44] Ibid., p. 75.

quartz plate up to 800 m distant. This resulted...in the complete disintegration of the object.

The first two experiments of this kind ... took place in Dec 43 and Jan 44. In one a 10 cm cube of steel (grade ST0012) was disintegrated within four-tenths of a second, The object in the second experiment was water, contained in a large quartz tube, tiled so that the "rays" would strike the largest possible surface. The water disappeared in two tenths of a second.

The most spectacular experiment was conducted early April 1944, when some 75 rats were made to disappear in the same way. The experiment was photographed from the quartz-enclosed observation tower, and PW claims there was no trace of smoke or flame, nor did any ashes remain on the iron plate. His explanation of this apparent violation of the laws of physics is that the rats were somehow reduced to a gas, which was absorbed by the iron plate.

PW's Evaluation: PW doubts that the principle involved in the experiments described above could be adapted to military use in less than two years. The apparatus is extremely complicated and far too large to be moved readily.[45]

This experimentation sounds like a much more sophisticated high voltage direct current form of Tesla's direct current impulse experiments, as well as of the unusual accidental disappearances of tools and equipment in a US Navy arc-welding facility that prompted an investigation led by none other than T. Townsend Brown during World War Two.[46]

E. Indications of Zero Point Energy and Scalar Physics Experimentation

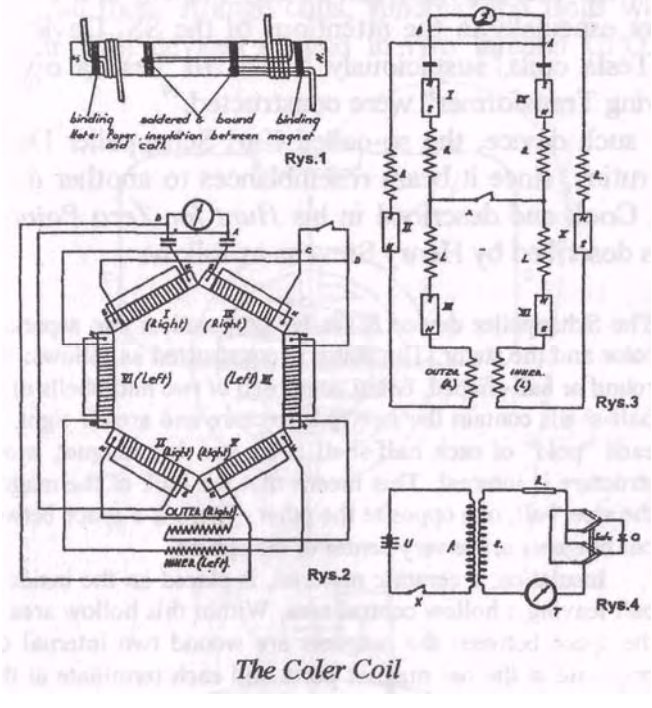
There are a number of strong indications that the Germans were also experimenting with a variety of "Tesla" like devices that could, conceivably, also be called Zero Point Energy devices. In 1978, the British government finally declassified a British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee (BIOS) report on two curious circuits

---

[45] Harald FSth, Geheime Kommandosache- S III Jonastal und die Siegeswaffenprodiktion: Weitere Spurensuche nach Thuringens Manhattan Project, p. 107.

[46] q.v. my Giza Death Star Deployed, pp. 212-214.

devised by German naval engineer and inventor, Hans Coler (or Kohler). Entitled The Invention of Hans Coler, Relating to an Alleged New Source ol Power," B.I.O.S. Final Report no 1043, Item No. 31, Summer 1946, this report consisted of tests and findings on two strange circuits conducted at the University of Berlin between the World Wars under the auspices of none other than Dr. Schumann, discoverer of the Schumann resonance of the earth.[47] A mere glance will explain why the device attracted the immediate attention of the German Navy, which classified it as a possible source of quiet and limitless energy for submarine propulsion.



The Coler Coil

It will be noted that this hexagonal construction of coils and magnets and two "rotating" sub-circuits has absolutely no source of power. Yet, to the mystified Coler and Dr. Schumann, it

[47] The report is reprinted by the Integrity research Institute, 1422 K Street NW, Suite 204, Washington, D.C. 20005.

nevertheless managed to produce, or better, transduce, power seemingly from nowhere.

Little is known how much farther the Germans took this device, or for that matter, how far the British took it for the two decades and a half after the war that they had to work on it until its declassification. What is unusual is that Dr. Schumann was involved with secret German research on "batteries" as late as 1943, and was subsequently brought to the United State as part of Operation Paperclip. It was this same Dr. Schumann who had noted in 1926 that Hans Coler's device exhibited "no fault, hoax, or fraud on the part of its inventor."[48] Such "free energy" devices seemed to have come very early to the attention of the leadership of the Third Reich - witness the meeting between Hitler, Planck, and Schauberger - and more especially to the attentions of the SS. Devices involving pulsed Tesla coils, suspiciously similar to Tesla's own "Impulse Magnifying Transformer" were constructed.[49]

One such device, the so-called Karl Schappeller Device, bears close scrutiny, since it bears resemblances to another device found by Nick Cook and described in his Hunt for Zero Point. This odd device is described by Henry Stevens as follows:

> The Schappeller device is really composed of two separate units, the rotor and the stator. The stator is constructed as follows: its surface is round or ball-shaped, being composed of two half-shells of steel. These half-shells contain the internal structure and are air tight. Attached at each "pole" of each half-shell is an iron bar magnet, most of whose structure is internal. This means that the bulk of the magnet is inside the steel ball, one opposite the other. There is a space between the two bar magnets at the very center of the sphere.
>
> Insulation, a ceramic material, is placed on the inside of the steel ball leaving a hollow central area. Within this hollow area and around the space between the magnets are wound two internal coils. These originate at the bar magnet poles and each terminate at the center of the sphere with a connection leading out of the sphere to the rotor. These coils are composed of a hollow copper tube filled with a special and secret substance called the "electret". Upon leaving the sphere the electret filled copper tubes are replaced by conventional copper wire.

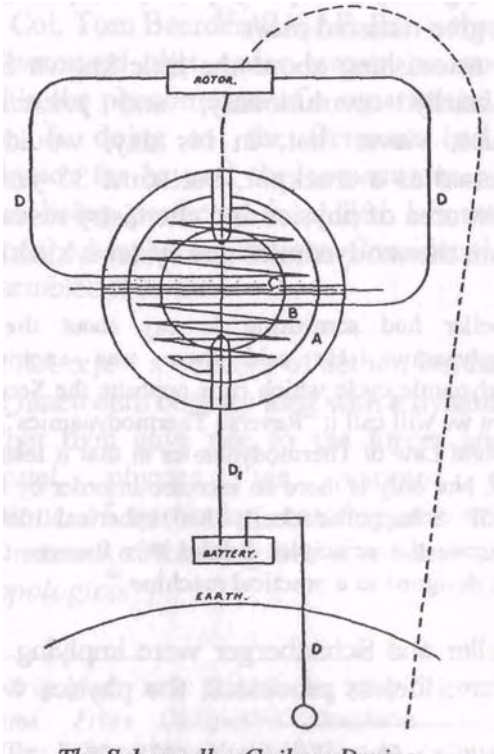
---

[48] Henry Stevens, Hitler's Flying Saucers, pp. 168-169.

[49] Ibid., p. 168.

An electrical connection is made from the outside surface of one pole to one pole of a special type of battery which is grounded at the other pole...
This electret is a permanent magnet within the sphere... The actual composition of Schappeller's electret remains a secret but another electret has been made by Professor Mototaro Eguchi. It consists of carnauba wax and resin, perhaps also containing some beeswax. It was kept in a strong electrical field while baking slowly until it solidified.[50]

Before proceeding to how this device allegedly operated, it is important to note that this device bears strong resemblance in some respccts to a device called "the Bell" uncovered by Nick Cook and his researches, covered below. Moreover, we shall see how the sum total of all these strange coils, spheres, and Bells will sound only familiar with devices alleged in two famous UFO crashes after the war.



The Schappeller Coil, or Device

[50] Stevens, Hitler's Flying Saucers, p. 177.

Returning now to the Schappeller device and its operation, for Schappeller the "neutral area", called the Bloch wall in a bar magnet, where the polarity is neither "north" nor "south", was of great interest and significance to Schapeller. In the Schappeller device it is noted that the empty area between the two magnets corresponds with this Bloch wall of neutrality.[51] It is this "neutral area" that is the area electrically charged by grounding when the device is put into operation. The result is a "new kind" of magnetism, a glowing magnetism in which, according to Schappeller's interpreters, electricity is stationary and magnetism is radiated.[52] At the Bloch Wall, "the point of zero magnetism, no spin and magnetic reversal, is the point, so Schappeller theorized, energy enters and is radiated, in the form of gravity. Thus, according to one interpreter, gravity is a quadropole (four poles, rather than two poles), 360 degree radiated push.[53]

But most astonishing about the little known Schappeller were his extraordinarily revolutionary, and prescient, views on thermodynamics, views that, in his day, would have had him roundly dismissed as a crackpot, but some 35 years later, became an exciting new area of physics and chemistry research. That area is non-equilibrium thermodynamics and systems kinetics.

> Schappeller had something to say about the Second Law of Thermodynamics. He said there was another and unknown thermodynamic cycle which runs opposite the Second Law. To name this idea we will call it "Reverse Thermodynamics". It is the reverse of the Second Law of Thermodynamics in that it leads to an increase in entropy. Not only is there an increase in order by there is an increase in cold! Schappeller....built his spherical device primarily to demonstrate the principles behind this Reverse thermodynamics. It was not designed as a practical machine.[54]

Both Schappeller and Schauberger were implying a physics based, not on inanimate lifeless processes, the physics we have come to

---

[51] Stevens, Hitler's Flying Saucers, pp. 178-179.
[52] Ibid., p. 179.
[53] Ibid., p. 181.
[54] Ibid., p. 182.

know, but on animate, creative processes hut Schappeller's views on ihcrmodynamics were truly revolutionary, and some decades ahead of their time, until Ilya Prigogine won the Nobel prize in chemistry precisely for his pioneering work on self-organizing principles evident in systems driven to a high state of non-equilibrium in 1977.[55] The new paradigm, a breathtakingly simple, and yet far-reaching one, was simply that equilibrium had been replaced with non-equilibrium in physics, especially for systems analysis.[56]

1. RAM Four-Wave Mixing

The German experiments with prototype Radar Absorbent Materials (RAM) was mentioned previously. In these experiments, according to Lt. Col. Tom Bearden (USAF, Ret.), that the Germans in late 1945 discovered that radar waves on such non-linear material resulted in the phenomenon of a superluminal, longitudinal "pressure" wave. In doing so, the Germans had brought the paradigms of physics far beyond the conventions of the "linear" physics that was being perfected in Allied laboratories, largely under the aegis of the Manhattan Project. Consider the information that has been assembled thus far:

(1) They did not reject a concept of aether, but rather, replaced the static nineteenth century idea with a dynamic aether;
(2) This aether then gave rise to the forces and particles of conventional physics via various morphological combinations of vorticular, rotating structures, thus, its principle manner of thinking was non-linear and, in a word, purely topological;

---

[55] q.v. Ilya Prigogine, and G. Nicolis, Self-Organization in Non-Equilibrium Systems: From Dissipative Structures to Order Through Fluctuations, (J. Wiley & Sons, New York) 1977.

[56] I shall explore the significance of this paradigm in my next work on the Great Pyramid and the recent topological papers by Krasnoholovets and Bounias.

(3) These views were simultaneously allied both with occult doctrines of "primal matter" or life force or "Vril" or whatever one wishes to call it on the one hand, and with the construct called the Zero Point Energy that resulted from the equations of quantum mechanics, a very "German". "Aryan" science;
(4) They were pursuing exotic ideas and technologies in unconventional combinations, the most salient features of which can be summarized as a concentration on:
    (a) Pulsed high voltage and "focusing" effects;
    (b) High rpm turbines and other such rotating devices;
    (c) Non-equilibrium;
    (d) Finite Aperture apparati;
    (e) Radioactivity and nuclear particle research;
    (f) The effects of extremes of temperature on the density state of matter as a means of generating enormous explosive destructive power; and finally,
    (g) The use of quartz and other crystals in generating some of these effects.[57]

With these thoughts in mind, we now approach what may be the most sensational experiment the Germans undertook during the War. The device was called simply, "The Bell", and its shocked and dumbfounded discoverer was Nick Cook.

2. The Brotherhood of the "Bell"

In the 1960s, a movie with Glenn Ford and a young Dabney Coleman, playing a small part as a government agent, was made. The movie was about a secret society allegedly at work behind the scenes in American society and politics, to manipulate research grants and control the direction of society. In the movie, Ford plays a member of this society who is served his "due bill" for all the favors the society has granted him, and forced to betray a

[57] Korsching's odd comment about artificial rubies at Farm Hall should be recalled in this regard.

Hungarian friend in order to deny that friend a crucial academic post and grant. His friend is named Dr. Hlavaty.

I have always thought that perhaps the movie's Dr. Hlavaty was not so fictional, being perhaps based on the brilliant Hungarian physicist, Vaclav Hlavaty, who attempted a six-dimensional solution to the Unified Field Theory that had eluded Dr. Einstein. Whatever the truth of that hypothesis, it is perhaps interesting to note that the "Brotherhood of the Bell" seemed to exist for no other purpose than to suppress certain types of research, or at least, to keep it out of the public eye.

It should come as no surprise, then, that there was a "brotherhood of the Bell" during World War Two, for one of the most strange objects the Germans were experimenting on was a device that was known simply as "The Bell." So sensitive and secret was this device, that when it was evacuated from its underground secret laboratory in Lower Silesia prior to the Russian occupation of the area, the SS shot the approximately 60 scientists - doubtless on Kammler's orders - that were involved with this strange object.[58]

The Bell consisted apparently of two counter-rotating cylinders, and resembled a Bell in its general shape. It stood approximately 12 to 15 feet high, and was approximately 9 to 12 feet in diameter.[59] Into this device, an unknown purplish metallic-liquid looking substance known only as "Xerum 525" or "Serum 525" was poured, apparently to be mechanically rotated at high speed, and possibly electrically rotated as well, by the device. The result was that organic objects placed within the field of the Bell swiftly decayed without putrefaction, decomposing into a black goo, and then finally, into dust, within a matter of hours, and not several weeks. So strong was the field that resulted from the Bell, that on its first test the technicians and scientists involved were all killed.

Subsequently, the Bell was operated only for one or two minutes at a time, and housing below ground in a room bricked and

---

[58] Nick Cook, The Hunt for Zero Point, p. 187 For a fuller discussion of the Bell and its mysterious properties, consult my Giza Death Star Deployed, pp. 121-128.

[59] Cook, op. cit, pp. 191-193

tiled with ceramic tiles, which were then covered in thick rubber mats. After each test, the mats were burned, and the room washed down by concentration camp inmates with brine.[60] When Cook was shown the installation in which the Bell was housed, he was also informed of its high electrical consumption.[61]

What was the mysterious "Xerum 525?" When I first read of this substance which had to be stored in lead lined cylinders, I first thought it sounded like a radioactive isotope of mercury, or perhaps some other radioactive material suspended in solution of some sort. More recently, allegations have surfaced concerning the neutron emitting properties of so-called "red mercury" or mercury antimonate oxide, supposedly a source for detonating thermonuclear warheads without the necessity for detonating an atom bomb, and a powerful conventional explosive in its own right. Whatever the mysterious substance was, it seems clear that it was highly radioactive, and that the Germans were subjecting it to extremely high mechanical and electrical rotations to study the resulting field effects, effects that Cook's advisors could only qualify as "torsion" fields.[62] These fields are thought by some contemporary physicists to have direct relevance to the study of gravity, and of time.[63] Close to the Bell's underground testing bunker the Germans had built a large concrete henge-like structure, in the pillars of which were high grade steel hooks, an obvious testing frame for what must have been an extremely powerful propulsion device.

What happened to the Bell? No one knows. Like Kammler, it goes completely missing at the end of the war, and its scientists, as already stated, were murdered to a man by the SS to keep whatever precious secrets it, and they, had uncovered. But as we shall

---

[60] Cook, op. cit., p. 192

[61] Ibid., p.p. 182-183, 197.

[62] Ibid., p.p. 192, 194

[63] In this regard it is perhaps interesting to note that, years prior to the publication of Nick Cook's book, well-known science-fiction-horror-thriller author (whose genre and style is so compellingly unique), Dean Koontz, published a novel called Lightning, the theme of which was a wartime German experiment with a time machine that, coincidentally (?) consisted of rotating cylinders!

discover in the next and final part of this book, the Bell may have surfaced again under very public, if not bizarre, circumstances.

PART THREE:
AFTERMATH

"I believe there is a very real UFO problem. I have also come to believe that it is being manipulated for political ends."
Jacques Vallee

This is a story of how key Nazis, even as the Wehrmacht was still on the offensive, anticipated military disaster and laid plans to transplant Nazism, intact but disguised, in havens in the West.... It is story that climaxes in Dallas on November 22, 1963 when John Kennedy was struck down. And it is a story with an aftermath - America's slide to the brink of fascism. "
Mae Brussel, "The Nazi Connection to the John F. Kennedy Assassination," The Rebel (November 22, 1983)

14.

THE ANTARCTIC SHANGRI-LA

"The Hitlers sat together on a couch in their suite.... At about 3:30 P.M. Hitler picked up his 7.65 caliber Walther pistol... On a console was a picture of his mother as a young woman. He put this pistol barrel to his right temple and pulled the trigger."
John Toland, Adolf Hitler.[1]

Adolf Hitler was as mythical in death as he was brutal and large in life. Because of the curious circumstances of his suicide, and the inability of the wartime Allied powers to cooperate on an extensive and through proof that he did die, a whole mythos of his survival grew up after the war, and continued for some many years afterward. Betrayed even by Himmler himself, who had secretly begun peace negotiations with the western Allies through the Swedish government, and with one time designated "Deputy Fuhrer" and former party chief Rudolf Hess in a British prison cell, and his designated replacement Reichsmarschall Goring claiming leadership in the chaos of the collapsing Reich to the quick denunciation by Hitler for treason, the Fuhrer relinquished power before his suicide to an unlikely candidate, Grand Admiral Karl Donitz, who for a brief period of little more than a week, was Nazi Germany's second dictator before he ordered its armed forces to surrender. The selection of Donitz by Hitler is, for our purposes here, significant, for Donitz was in an usual position to coordinate the escape of fleeing Nazis to South America and other places via the new type XXI U-boats just entering service.

But before proceeding to that story, it is worth looking at the Hitler and various other Nazi survival myths in a broad overview, in order to have a basis on which to distinguish possible fact from deliberate myth and misinformation. For these various Nazi survival myths and legends, Hitler's survival is not so much a fact, as a grotesque parody of an icon, a disturbing possibility that hovers

[1] John Toland, Adolf Hitler, Volume II, p. 1002.

over every version. For example, the standard view of Hitler committing suicide on April 10, 1945, is itself not without its own occult significance, for this is the date of the eve of a "witches' sabbath," the Walpurgisnacht. Moreover, in mediaeval Cathar doctrine - a doctrine well-studied by the SS Ahnenerbe - suicide was a permissible act, if done in concert with another, with a soul mate. Hitler and his newly married mistress of many years, Eva (Braun) Hitler, both committed suicide together.

These non-standard Hitler and Nazi survival myths run the whole spectrum, from fanciful and implausible stories of underground bases in the Canadian Arctic, or on Antarctica itself armed with some of the exotic weaponry described in the previous chapter, to more "mundane" and plausible stories of Nazi colonies in South America or secret weather stations and commando teams operating in Greenland during the war, to the well-known and best documented case, that of Operation Paperclip, America's wholesale importation of Nazi scientists and doctors after World War Two to assist the United States in continued covert development and research on a whole host of black projects. In one rather interesting version of the Hitler survival myth, he and other Nazi bigwigs underwent plastic surgery before the end of the war, and were spirited off to Antarctica or South America. One version of this myth even has an elderly Hitler ministering to the poor as a Catholic priest!

It is the thesis of the next two chapters that there is some truth to some of these Nazi survival myths, excluding the Hitler survival myth, and that all need to be viewed against the backdrop of the Nazis' own plans for postwar survival and continuance under a variety of fronts, organizations, or in concert with new "host" governments such as the United States or the various governments of Latin America, Africa, and the Middle East. In this and the succeeding chapter, we will proceed by examining the more audacious survival myths, through some accounts of South American colonies, to Paperclip, and finally, to Bormann's top secret plan for postwar survival and economic resurgence. What will emerge from this examination is a disturbing picture that suggests deliberate Nazi misinformation in the immediate postwar

period, and a deliberate attempt to disguise ongoing projects inside the black projects of the new "host" governments and corporations A slight, though discernible connection emerges that substantiates the thesis of part one of this book, namely, that the secret weapons think tank, the Kammlerstab, survived the war more or less intact, and continued its work in a variety of host countries, most particularly in the United Kingdom and even more so in the United States, either in concert with them, and sometimes independently of them.

Then in the remaining chapters of this book, we shall examine two well-known UFO "crash and recovery" cases for the indications that they may have been the recoveries of something truly extraordinary, but not extra-terrestrial. In this examination, it is crucial to bear in mind all the information of the preceding part of this book, for they have all led up to it.

A. The Antarctic Survival Myth

Of all the high-ranking German military leaders, Grand Admiral Karl Donitz is the most often overlooked, and yet he may have been the most crucial for the story of Nazi survival and continued secret weapons research. After all, the secret preparations and voyage of the U-234 to Japan, with its precious cargo of enriched uranium and infrared fuses, could not likely have taken place without his express knowledge, participation, and authorization. Thus, outside Kammler's "think tank", he was perhaps the one military leader of a conventional service arm to know the full extent of Nazi Germany's actual advances in atom bomb and other nuclear research.

Best known for his orchestration of the Nazi U-boat campaign against British, Canadian, and American shipping, his alleged role in the various survival myths is little known outside a small circle of UFOlogy and World War Two researchers. And of all the Nazi military leaders, his selection by Adolf Hitler as the second Fuhrer of the Third Reich is, at best, problematical, unless viewed in the light of these late war technology transfers and escaping Nazis. Why would Hitler have chosen Donitz, a World War One veteran of the High Seas Fleet of Kaiser Wilhelm, with the Kriegsmarine 's

well-known imperialist culture and leanings that he represented, to be his successor?

A conventional answer is afforded by the circumstances outlined above: betrayed on all sides - by Himmler and Goring themselves - a desperate Hitler reached out to what he thought was the most loyal conventional military service arm of the Wehrmacht, the Navy. But the survival mythos contributes a very different perspective from which to view Hitler's possible motivations.

Donitz himself does nothing to allay those suspicions, either during or immediately after the war. According to Henry Stevens, who has almost single-handedly investigated every lead - no matter how implausible the detail - of the Nazi UFO and survival legends, Donitz on more than one occasion alluded to the Navy's role in exotic secret weapons research and in the construction of very secret bases far from the Reich homeland. In 1943, the Grand Admiral is reported to have stated that "the German submarine fleet is proud of having built for the Fuhrer, in another part of the world, a Shangri-La on land, an impregnable fortress."[2] Strange language for an admiral well-known for cold calculation in military strategy and tactics, and not well-known to be inclined to mystical statements. Then again, in 1944, the Grand Admiral doled out a little more information: "The German Navy will have to accomplish a great task in the future. The German Navy knows all hiding places in the oceans and therefore it will be very easy to bring the Fuhrer to a safe place should the necessity arise and in which he will have the opportunity to work out his final plans."[3] But it was Donitz's almost insane remarks at Nuremberg that seemed to point clearly to one of the two polar regions as the "site" for these "plans". At Nuremberg he boasted of "an invulnerable fortress, a paradise-like oasis in the middle of eternal ice."[4] Whatever the trustworthiness of

---

[2] Henry Stevens, The Last Battalion and German Arctic, Antarctic, and Andean Bases (Gorman, California: The German Research Project, 1997), p. 2, citing Col. Howard A. Buechner and Capt. Wilhelm Bernhardt, Hitler's Ashes (Metarie, Louisiana: Thunderbird Press Inc.), p. 1.

[3] Ibid., p. 2, citing Buechner and Bernhardt, pp. 2-3.

[4] Ibid., citing Willibald Mattern, UFOs Unbekannte Flugobjekt? Letzte Geheimwaffe des Dritten Reiches? (Toronto: Samisdat Publisher, No date), p. 38.

Steven's sources, these statements, plus the unusual behavior of some U-boats at the end of the war, and the Germans' well-publicized pre-war Antarctic scientific expedition, certainly seemed to spur the United States into a sudden and intense postwar military interest in Antarctica. Again, since the basic facts are well-known to but a small circle of World War Two and UFOlogy researchers, it is worth recalling them in some detail.

> U-530 surrendered at Mar del Plata, Argentina, on July 10, 1945, U-977 surrendered at Mar del Plata, Argentina, on August 17, 1945. U-465 was scuttled off the coast of Patagonia in August 1945. Another U-boat of unknown number surrendered to the Argentine Navy on June 10, 1945.[5]

When the U-530 and U-977 surrendered so late after the European War's end, Allied intelligence was more than a little concerned, and dispatched agents to interrogate the German officers. They certainly did not believe that the German captains had taken their ships on a South Atlantic excursion of three to four months just to surrender to the Argentines, as Captain Schaeffer of the U-977 and Captain Wermoutt of the U-530 actually, and apparently in all seriousness, stated. Stevens summarizes the Allies' real concern - Nazi survival in no uncertain terms:

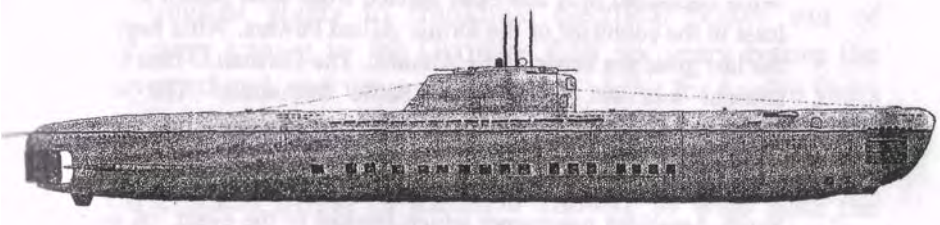
> The Allies first believed that these U-Boats had taken persons of special importance, perhaps even Adolf Hitler, from Germany to South America. In light of this possibility both captains were held for questioning. Captain Schaeffer, who surrendered last, was taken to America for a month or so then to England for another period of questioning. Both captains maintained that there had been no persons of political importance deposited in South America. Eventually the captains were released although Schaeffer found living in Occupied Germany intolerable and relocated to South America. Captain Schaeffer even went on to write a book explaining his voyage and actions.
>
> Unfortunately, nobody really believed Schaeffer. Bernhardt, who himself was aboard U-530, claims that American and British Intelligence had learned that U-530 and U-977 did visit Antarctica

[5] Ibid., p. 48, citing Buechner, pp. 175-176.

before landing in South America but the exact nature of their mission eluded them.6

A glimpse into this extraordinary mission and the high importance afforded by the German Navy High Command (the Oberkommando der KriegsMarine or OKM) to it can perhaps be afforded by a glance of the alleged performance characteristics of the U-530.

In the spring of 1945, an old fashioned type U-boat with the number 530 was dry-docked after being damaged by a freighter which had rammed it. As was typical for the Kriegsmarine, a new submarine, probably a type XXI or further development of it, was launched at approximately the same time, and was given the same service number, an obvious ploy to confuse Allied military intelligence. But why was the U-boat that actually sailed to the South Atlantic and that later surrendered to Argentina probably a type XXI or some derivative? Because Captain Wilhelm Bernhardt, a pen name of an actual crew member of Captain Wermoutt's U-530, let out a significant piece of information; he stated that her submerged speed was approximately 30 knots, an unheard of speed for a submerged submarine in that day. The only submarines in service in any navy in the world capable of that performance at that time were the German type XXI U-boats.



The Type XXI U-Boat; Note the Clean Lines

The type XXI U-boat, like most U-boats in the German Navy by that time, was fitted with the special schnorkel device that

[6] Ibid., p. 51, citing Buechner, p. 232.

allowed its main diesel engines to operate while submerged underwater. It is quite possible that these newer Type XXI U-boats also had the newer Schnorkels fitted with the special anti-radar coatings examined in the previous part of this book. But the Type XXI was also outfitted with the special "Walther" turbine, an underwater jet" device that utilized hydrogen peroxide that allowed great underwater cruising speeds. In effect, these turbines were "silent" engines allowing great underwater speeds for limited durations of time. Thus, the Type XXI had brought submarine technology and warfare to a new and sophisticated level by the war's end. But would even the Type XXI have been able to brave the North and then South Atlantic Oceans, by that point in the war all but Allied lakes?

There is some indication that not only were they successful in doing so, but wildly so.

In the previous part of this book mention was made of special new guidance systems the Germans had adapted to missiles, and torpedoes. These systems included wire-guidance, as well as magnetic proximity fuses. Stevens reports that on May 2, 1945, a flotilla of U-boats, many of them Type XXIs, carefully husbanded by Donitz at Kristiansand fjord in Norway, departed in a wolf pack for Iceland, making the traditional run through the straits between Iceland and Greenland.

> What happened next has been deleted from what passes as history, at least in the countries of the former Allied Powers. What happened was the last great sea battle of the Atlantic. The German U-boat convoy ran straight into an Allied naval battle formation.[7] The result was stunning. Using the new torpedoes... the Allied ships were totally annihilated. Apparently the Allies never quite realized what they had run into. Our only third-party report of the event was an article in a South American newspaper which learned of the event. A quote (sic) from the only survivor of the attack is often quoted by the underground German writers although this writer has not seen a copy of the newspaper: "May God help me, may I never again encounter such a force" - British destroyer captain.

[7] The British consistently maintained a flotilla of destroyers, accompanied occasionally by heavier units of light and heavy cruisers, on station in these straits throughout the war.

> This was reportedly carried in "El Mercurio", Santiago, Chile, and "Der Weg" a paper published by exiled Germans living in Buenos Aires, Argentina.[8]

The use of new torpedoes - whether wire-guided, acoustic-seeking, or magnetic proximity-fused[9] - leads once again back to Karnrnler's "think tank" secret weapons empire. These torpedoes, plus the high-submersible speeds and "proto-stealth" capabilities of the Type XXI U-boats would have been more than a match for the British destroyers on station between Iceland and Greenland.

But as we have previously noted, the Coler coil came to the quick attention of the Kriegsmarine in the early days of the Third Reich, which immediately classified it at the highest level, and funded further research.

> It is not hard to understand the Kriegsmarine's interest in the Coler device. It is the perfect generator for submarine use. It produces no exhaust and burns no fuel. It could be linked directly to existing electric-drive vessels and run under water indefinitely. Did the Germans actually accomplish this? The underground German writers say that this indeed happened. This theme runs throughout the writing of Bergmann whose specialty is the link between German submarines and German flying saucers.[10]

This is an incredible, if not outlandish, claim. Yet it is worth pondering for a moment. The Coler devices, developed in 1933,[11] and their unusual ability to transduce electrical power out of something were known to the Germans fully six years before the war had even started, and were developed in secret for twelve years after that (and then presumably by the British for another twenty three years after that!). We do not know, of course, nor is the British Government saying (if indeed it knows), to what state the Germans brought this device, but whatever the state, they bad fully twelve years in which to do it. But whether perfected or not, notice

---

[8] Stevens, op. cit., p. 28, citing Mattern, p, 82.

[9] Ibid.

[10] Ibid., p. 27.

[11] British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee, 1946: The Invention of Hans Coler Relating to an Alleged New Source of Power, p. 2.

what else is being implied by the assertion that it was brought to some state of praetieal use on submarines: the Germans weere deliberately after a method of submarine propulsion that would have allowed indefinite submerged eruising, much as a modern nuclear submarine, but by a device much simpler in design and construction, and presumably, much less risky in operation Whether or not the Germans were able to bring it to a state of practical use is thus, in one sense, immaterial, since the classification of the device alone indicates the nature of their interest.

In any case, the odd circumstances of the late-surrendering U-boats, not to mention the alleged naval debacle suffered by the British so late in the war when everything seemed - from a naval and military standpoint - so secure and safe, focused Allied and particularly American eyes quite quickly and forcefully on Antarctica.[12]

> Whatever the Allies learned, there was a sudden, intense interest in Antarctica. This interest was so strong that in 1946, as Allied troop were returning home from the War and all thoughts were turned to peacetime pursuits, the United States Government, under President Harry Truman, found it absolutely imperative that a full military expedition be mounted against Antarctica. This campaign was called Operation Highjump.[13]

While the operation was billed in American newspapers, magazines and even the occasional newsreel as a mapping expedition, its actual military character is easily seen from a glance at its composition. Commanded by America's premier polar explorer, Admiral Byrd, the flotilla included an aircraft escort carrier (the Philippines Sea), two seaplane carriers (the Pine Island and Curritich), two destroyers (the Brownsen and Henderson), two escort ships (Yankee and Merrick), two fueling ships (Canister and

---

[12] It goes without saying that the high priority that the British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee placed on recovering a Coler device and its inventor after the war tends to corroborate the notion that the British had learned the hard way that it had been brought to some state of practical use for submarine propulsion.

[13] Stevens, op. cit., p. 51.

Capacan), and a submarine (the Sennet). Additionally, four thousand troops equipped with helicopters, reliable fixed wing DC-3s, and a specially designed armored tracked vehicle were also at the Admiral's command.[14]

Outfitted for a stay of eight months, the expedition encircled the German claimed territory of Neuschwabenland (New Schwabialand), Admiral Byrd stationing the naval vessels off the coast, and then advanced the ground troops and aerial reconnaissance from the pole toward the German territory. Allegedly the German "base" was quickly found, overflown, and either an American flag, or a bomb, depending on the version of the story, was dropped on the position. In any case, the four escort craft accompanying the scout aircraft were lost without a trace. This single event" throws the whole Highjump exercise into a curious light, for "it somehow changed the whole character of the Byrd expedition. Within 48 hours Admiral Byrd had given orders which canceled the expedition and made preparations to leave Antarctica. The mission had lasted closer to eight weeks than to eight months. No official reason was given for the sudden withdrawal."[15] Byrd was returned to Washington DC, debriefed, and his personal and operational logs from the mission were seized and remain classified to this day, fueling an endless stream of rumors and conspiracy theories.

But the expedition, in keeping with its cover as a mapping expedition perhaps, was composed also of small contingents of news media and reporters from other countries, one of which was Chile. A reporter working for the Chilean El Mercurio in Santiago, one Lee van Atta, accompanied Admiral Byrd, who "made some astounding statements, all dutifully recorded" and reported by van Atta, and dutifully ignored in the American press.[16] In its March 5, 1947 edition,

> Byrd announced to me today that it is necessary for the United States to put into effect defensive measures against enemy airmen which come from the polar regions. The Admiral further explained that he

---

[14] Ibid.., p. 52.
[15] Ibid.
[16] Ibid., p. 53.

did not have the intention to scare anyone but the hitter reality is that in case of a new war the United States would be in a position to be attacked by flyers which could fly with fantastic speed from one pole to the other.[17]

EL MERCURIO. — Santiago de Chile, miércoles 5 de marzo de 1947

El almirante Richard E. Byrd se refiere a la importancia estratégica de los polos

(Por Lee Van Atta, para "El Mercurio")

A BORDO DEL MOUNT OLYMPUS, EN ALTA MAR, 4. — (ESPECIAL). — El almirante Richard E. Byrd advirtió hoy que es preciso que los Estados Unidos adopten medidas de protección contra la posibilidad de una invasión del país por aviones hostiles procedentes de las regiones polares.

El almirante dijo: "no intento asustar a nadie, pero la amarga realidad es que, de ocurrir una nueva guerra, los Estados Unidos serán atacados por aviones que volarán sobre uno a ambos polos". Esta declaración fué hecha a manera de recapitulación de la ejecutoria del propio Byrd, como explorador polar, en una entrevista exclusiva para International News Service. A propósito de la expedición recién terminada, Byrd dijo que el resultado más importante de las observaciones y descubrimientos hechos es el efecto, actual potencial, que tendrán éstos en relación con la seguridad de los Estados Unidos. "La fantástica premura con que el mundo se está encogiendo — declaró el almirante — es una de las lecciones objetivas aprendidas durante la exploración antártica que acabamos de efectuar. No puedo menos que hacer una fuerte advertencia a mis compatriotas en el sentido de que ha pasado ya el tiempo en que podíamos refugiarnos en un completo aislamiento y descansar en la confianza de que las distancias, los océanos y los polos constituyen una garantía de seguridad".

A continuación observó que si él ha hecho éxito, otras personas podrían igualmente dirigir una nueva expedición de 4 mil jóvenes norteamericanos, con la ayuda exclusiva de un puñado de exploradores experimentados. El almirante encareció la necesidad de permanecer "en estado de alerta y vigilancia a lo largo constituyen los últimos reductos de defensa contra una invasión.

"Yo puedo darme cuenta quizás mejor que cualquier otra persona, de lo que significa el uso de los conocimientos científicos en estas exploraciones, porque puedo hacer comparaciones. Hace 20 años realicé mi primera expedición antártica con menos de ciento cincuenta hombres, dos buques y diez aviones. Entonces la exploración era arriesgada y peligrosa y constituía una singular experiencia. Pero ahora, poco menos de veinte años más tarde, una expedición quince veces mayor que aquella en todos los respectos, recorre el antártico, completa su misión en menos de dos meses y abandona la región después de haber hecho importantes descubrimientos geográficos. La moraleja que se deriva de esta comparación es clara: puesto que la velocidad y el progreso al parecer no reconocen horizontes, es preciso que aceleremos la pauta de nuestro pensamiento, de nuestros proyectos y de nuestras acciones, y la expansión de nuestros propios horizontes. Pero es preciso que hagamos esto ahora, ya, porque tanto la supervivencia del mundo como la ciencia militar, se hallan actualmente en una etapa vital de su desarrollo".

El almirante declaró que en su opinión la expedición ha sentado un precedente sin igual en cuanto se refiere a la rápida sucesión en que se verificaron los descubrimientos geográficos. Y concluyó encomiando la labor de los aviadores y fotógrafos del servicio de cartografía aérea de la expedición, quienes desempeñaron el papel más importante en la exploración de las desconocidas regiones del antártico. — (I. N. S.).

Lee Van Atta.

The "El Mercurio" Article Citing Admiral Byrd's Remarks

[17] Ibid.

At that time in history, of course, there was only one nation that had undertaken anything like an extensive exploration of the southern polar continent: Nazi Germany.

B. The Neuschwabenland Expedition

In late 1938 the Germans undertook an expedition to Antarctica, specially outfitting a seaplane carrier, the Schwabenland for the purpose, and placing it under the command of one of Germany's most experienced polar navigators. At a cost of some millions of Reichsmarks, the expedition was under the personal direction and mentorship of none other than Luftwaffe chief, Reichsmarschall Hermann Goring,[18] which leaves one to wonder what possible purpose Goring would have in sponsoring such an expedition. That it was military in nature seems beyond doubt, for the Nazis spared no effort to outfit the expedition as thoroughly as possible. New canning techniques were invented for the food needed on the voyage from and back to Germany, and new clothing was designed, including allegedly a "grey almost bullet proof seamless and metallic appearing suit...made of whale skin." [19] The inspiration for the expedition may have had hidden occult motivations as well, for the occult Thulegesellschaft or Thule Society subscribed to a Nordic Atlantis hidden beneath the polar ice, whence sprang, so the legend goes, the Germanic race.[20] In any case, small teams of specially selected biologists and other scientists accompanied the expedition to run laboratory experiments on board the refurbished Schwabenland.[21]

---

[18] It is also to be noted that apparently the then Deputy Fuhrer and Party chief, Rudolf Hess, was also privy to whatever secret purpose and findings this expedition had. Some people allege that this was in part a hidden motivation tor Hess's inexplicable flight to Great Britain in 1941 to conduct secret "peace" negotiations with representatives of the British Fascist movement.

[19] Ibid., p. 3, citing Christoph Friedrich, Secret Nazi Polar Expeditions (Toronto: Samisdat Publishers, No date), p. 21.

[20] This fact would also place the expedition within the brief of the SS Ahnenerbedienst.

[21] The expedition is the subject of a fascinating novel by William Dietrich called Ice Reich (Time Warner, 1998). Dietrich's thesis is that the Germans

The Germans chose the region of Antarctica known as Queen Maud Land, an area of the continent claimed by Denmark. In blatant disregard for international law, the Nazis overflew the enire area, dropping thousands of little swastika flags on the region with little spikes to embed them in the ice, and claimed it for Germany, renaming the region Neuschwabenland. but they did more than just fly and drop flags.

The German pilots extensively photographed the region, and reported mountain ranges in excess of 12,000 feet altitude, rocky crags projecting above the fields of ice. But most amazingly, they allegedly found ice-free ponds, heated geothermally, in which grew various unknown species of algae. They also discovered the southern tip of the fault line that runs from New Zealand, through Neuschwabenland, and up the Atlantic Ocean, the famous Atlantic "trench". The Germans concluded that such features might indicate the presence of rocky caverns on the continent, heated geothermally, the perfect place for a hidden base in the world's most isolated, desolate, and inaccessible wilderness.[22]

Most intriguingly, the scientists aboard the Schwabenland were not idle in analyzing the potential foodstuffs of the continent:

> Emperor penguins were captured for return to Germany for study. Walruses were shot and their bodies dissected. Their bodies were tested for fat, protein, vitamin and other nutrient content. The biological findings made during this expedition would occupy German university scientists for months to come but the aim of this focus was secret. It is known that German dieticians (sic) were commissioned to prepare tasty and nutritious meals using only what was available in Antarctica.[23]

Clearly, if these allegations are true, then the Germans were preparing for a relatively large and permanent presence on there continent.

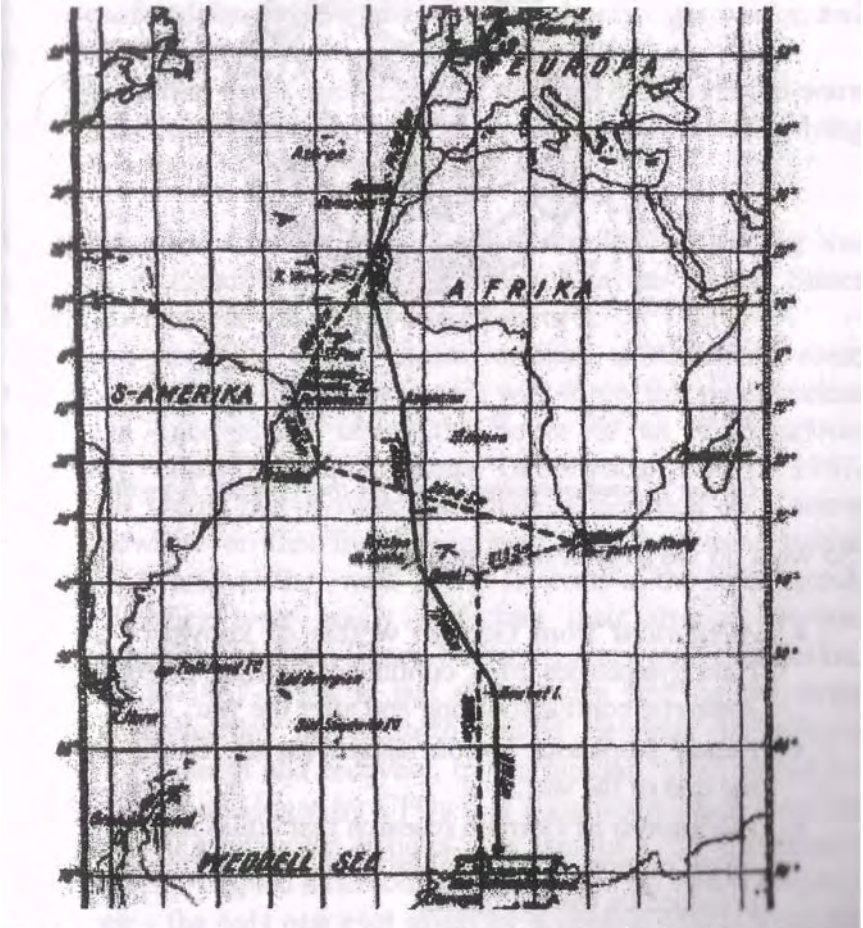
---

were after unknown microbial and bacteriological life forms that were frozen in the ice and that could be transformed into biological weapons.

[22] Stevens, op. cit., p. 4.

[23] Ibid., citing Friedrich, p. 87.

Then, via an unusual zigzagging route between Africa and South America - itself one of the intriguing mysteries of the expedition - the Schwabenland returned to Germany, reaching port on April 10, 1939.[24] Goring presented the expedition members with written medals and commemorations. Then, all further mention of the expedition in the German - or any other press - ceased.



The Outward Bound and Return Routes of the Neuschwabenland Expedition to Antarctica

[24] Stevens, op. cit., p. 4.

Goring's Commemorative Medal for the Antarctic Expedition

So what do we have at this juncture?

- Allegations from German writers of known or suspected Nazi sympathies of a continued German presence on the Antarctic continent during and after the war;
- Actual suspicious U-boat activity in the South Atlantic at the end of the war;
- Allegations of German research that could have been for no other purpose than establishment of a permanent German presence on the continent;
- Allegations of discoveries of small thermally heated ponds with unknown types of algae on the continent's interior;
- Allegations of Grand Admiral Donitz that the U-boat fleet was involved in the construction of a secret base or bases far from the Reich, one base of which was surrounded by "eternal ice";

- Allegations of a last sea battle in the Atlantic prior to the German surrender, with things going surprisingly disastrously for the Allies;
- An actual large postwar American military adventure to the continent within two years of the end of the war, with small accompanying international press contingents, an expedition outfitted for eight months that stayed only eight weeks; and finally,
- An actual newspaper report of Admiral Byrd trying to warn America of a military threat from "enemy aircraft" flying from pole to pole at tremendous speed.

All of this would seem to imply at a minimum that something was going on in Antarctica, and that someone in the United States Federal government was quite worried about it.

Indeed, when the United States returned to Antarctica some twelve years later, it did so once again with force, this time, nuclear force, and once again, under the cover of an "international cooperative effort," the International Geophysical Year of 1957-1958. This means that if there were indeed Germans on a secret base somewhere on that frozen continent, they had some twelve years to do whatever they were doing. In terms of the Nazi legend, supposedly they were busily perfecting their strange wartime research. In any case, as Henry Stevens points out, this period, from 1947 to 1957-58, is in fact the "golden age" of the flying saucer, encompassing the Kenneth Arnold sightings, the alleged Roswell UFO crash and recovery, to the famous "buzzing" of the Capital and White House by UFOs that supposedly made even the unflappable Harry Truman anxious. The famous 1952 Washington DC sightings prompted a nervous and unconvincing Pentagon press conference - the only one ever given by a general officer from the Pentagon - on the subject of UFOs.[25]

[25] Ibid., p. 53. Stevens further speculates on the possible motivation for the UFO overflights of sensitive areas of Washington DC: "Was this overflight in retaliation for the Byrd overflight of the German base in Antarctica and designed to show the Americans they had no control over their own airspace?"(p. 55) Stevens offers no evidence for this speculation. I will offer my

Under the cover of the geophysical year, the United States again sent a naval task force to the Antarctic. The use of military force - including atomic weapons! - was "covered" by the ridiculous story that the USA and USSR, in a rare moment of nuclear cooperation during the height of the Cold War, were interested in seeing how much of the continent could be "recovered" for use by warming it with nuclear explosions! Accordingly, it would be necessary to explode a few small nuclear "devices" for above the continent to warm and melt the ice as a proof of concept![26] A Stevens aptly quips, "You already know exactly where in Antarctica they planned to explode these atomic bombs."[27] Three bombs were thus detonated at an altitude of approximately 300 miles above the target, one on August 27, 1958, one on August 30, 1958, and a third on September 6, 1958.[28] If these bursts were indeed intended secretly against an actual target, then why so high? Stevens hypothesizes that they were to knock out any German equipment in the region by the strong electromagnetic pulse that results from a nuclear detonation.

While this is a plausible explanation if the intention were to occupy the alleged base via a ground assault or assaults within the time frame of the bursts, no such contingent is known to have accompanied the small armada of two destroyers, two destroyer escorts, and a small aircraft carrier. However, as we shall see in a

---

own speculations concerning a similar scenario in connection with my examination of the Majic-12 documents and the Roswell incident in chapter 16. But supposing Stevens is correct for the sake of argument, then suffice it to say that overflights of the American capital by Nazi flying saucers so long after the war's end would certainly have shaken the national security apparatus of the United States much more than overflights by apparently benign extraterrestrial ones, and the response would have been to clamp the lid down on government research of the phenomenon, exactly as happened, since the supposedly defeated enemy was not, if this is true, really defeated after all.

[26] Ibid., p. 55.

[27] Ibid., p. 57.

[28] Ibid. Stevens also notes that these bursts may have something to do with the "ozone hole" over the South Pole and the US government's reluctance to discuss the idea or the events that may have caused it. Additionally, perhaps it is possible that one atom bomb from each of the world's then nuclear powers, the US, the USSR, and the UK, were used.

moment, this explanation does bear some weight in connection with the allegations of the capapabilities of German bases at the other pole. With the Geophysical Year expedition of 1958's atomic detonations, the alleged German base on the Antarctic continent fades, the Germans themselves supposedly gradually evacuating it during the interim period from Byrd's expedition to the final coup de grace for more favorable climes in South America.[29] There the case for Nazi survival and continued research becomes much stronger. But before we can turn to that, we must investigate the alleged German goings on at the other pole.

C. Spitzbergen, Greenland, and Arctic Canada: The Other German Polar Survival Myth

The Western Allies, the Russians, and the Germans all relied heavily on weather reports to plan and execute their campaigns, and for this purpose, accurate up-to-the-minute reporting on Arctic conditions was crucial. To this end it is not surprising to find the Germans in particular outfitting special commando units - usually Waffen SS - to operate independently in Spitzbergen Island north of Norway, in Greenland, and in Arctic Canada. Such teams were delivered to their operational areas via U-boat. Spitzbergen in particular seemed to trade hands between the British and the Germans, as each side mounted commando operations to destroy the other's weather stations and listening posts. On one such occasion, the most famous perhaps, the German battleship Tirpitz, sister ship to the Bismarck, sailed to the island where one such British station was operating, leveled her 15 inch heavy guns at it, and promptly dispatched it, no doubt to the complete shock and surprise of the British manning it. Other allegations have a secret German weather base and listening post operating in Franz Josef Land, the islands to the north of Finland and the Soviet Union.[30]

However, with the allegations of German bases in Greenland, one again enters the realm of the surreal. These bases were allegedly comparatively large, as were the contingents of Germans

[29] Ibid., p. 58.
[30] Ibid, p. 5.

operating them. While they were supposedly known by the Greenlanders and occupying American forces, most efforts to find them ended in failure.[31] One postwar German source places as many as three independent SS battle groups (Kamfgruppen) operating in Greenland, under the code name of Thulekampfgruppen (Thule battle groups). The connection to the occult interests of the Third Reich are once again in evidence.

Predictably, these "Thule battle groups" become the subject of another series of survival legends, as former SS officers supposedly reported seeing U-boats loaded with rates designated "Thule 1 K" and so on departing Germany in the final days of the war.[32] Sworn to secrecy by the SS, the "clear implication is that the 'Thule 1 K' is the Thule Kampfgruppe 1" and that it had "no intentions of surrender; and that there was still a mission to accomplish."[33] The Americans, so the story goes, were unsuccessful in locating them bases for two reasons: the area was too large, and the bases were "like the German fortifications built in Neuschwabenland...tunneled deep underneath the glaciers of ice (into presumably solid rock) and that they were bored to a length of 2000 meters."[34] This allegation is surely implausible, since the transport of sophisticated mining and boring equipment, let alone enough explosive, for such a task by U-boat would have been an enormous undertaking, one quite beyond the labor capabilities of small SS battle groups.[35] But this is not the end of the surreal aspects of the story. Should the bases have been detected, they were supposedly defended with exotic electromagnetic weapons, one of which had a short range, but that could cause the ignition of aircraft engines to fail completely.

After the war, the Vienna Wiener Montag reported in its December 29, 1947 edition that Eskimos reported to American

---

[31] Ibid., p. 6.

[32] Ibid., p. 8.

[33] Ibid.

[34] Ibid., citing O. Bergmann, Deutsche Flugsheiben und U-Boote Uberwachen die Weltmeere, Hugin Gesellschaft fur politisch-philosophische Studien (Horstl, Germany: 1989), pp. 134, 137.

[35] Consider the fact that the huge underground factories in Germany were built over several months by thousands of slave laborers working around the clock with the best available existing mining and tunneling technology.

authorities that an SS battle group of fully 150 men had been encountered.[36] Besides these allegations of large bases and battle groups and exotic weaponry, there is a similar account circulated by

the distinctly pro-Nazi novelist Wilhelm Landig in his 1971 novel Gotzen gegen Thule, a novel he billed as "full of realities" (voller Wirklichkeiten), of a large German base in the Canadian Arctic, near the magnetic North pole. This base, he alleges, was serviced by the German military using special long-range aircraft and, of course, flying saucers! As if that were not enough, Landig maintains that these aircraft were not equipped with normal machine guns or cannon for their defensive weaponry, but utilized a Metallstrahl, essentially an electromagnetic "rail gun" used to propel tiny pellets with extreme velocity, a kind of hyper-velocity shotgun that would more than rip apart any Allied aircraft, and do so at great distances.[37]

All of these allegations would remain merely fanciful if it were not for the discovery by American UFOlogist William Lyne - himself definitely outside the "mainstream" of the UFOlogy community - of a piece of German equipment that, quite literally, he bought at a second-hand store in White Sands, New Mexico![38] The unusual thing about this piece of equipment was not only its circular central swastika - a clear reference to the occult Thulegesellschaft since that version of the swastika appeared on its emblem - but also its designation as a Peiltochterkompass, a "daughter compass." Investigating this strange piece of equipment further, Lyne concluded that it was no ordinary compass, since it appeared not to operate by any magnetic means, which might explain how it ended

---

[36] Ibid. Again, the number 150 is realistic for a battle group, but quite below the labor requirements for the construction of such large bases.

[37] Ibid., pp. 11-12.

[38] Lyne is the author of a rather extraordinary book of UFOlogy - a field in which the extraordinary seems to be the norm - called Space Aliens from the Pentagon, the main theme of which is his adamant insistence that UFOs are entirely terrestrial and man-made, and being used to advance a fictitious "alien agenda" and psychological operations campaign. Lyne, notwithstanding the more often than not unbelievable aspects of his book, was, in addition to Stevens, one of the few UFOlogists to take the Nazi origins myth of UFOs seriously prior to the publication of Nick Cook's the Hunt for Zero Point.

up in White Sands, New Mexico! Lyne and his mysterious compass even became the subject of an article in a local American newspaper.

Why is Lyne's find so important to the allegations of Nazi bases in the Canadian Arctic that were being supplied by long range aircraft?

Very simple.

If there were ever any truth to the allegations of German bases in these heavily forested regions, then normal magnetic compasses would be of virtually no use for navigation purposes in the region, since standard compasses are notoriously inaccurate at the polar regions with solar energy cascading down and causing local disruptions of the magnetic field. Some other method, therefore, had to be found to orient aircraft for safe navigation. Landig alleges that this was done by means of a compass that oriented itself to the sun by reading polarized light, rather than magnetic field lines.[39] Lyne therefore seems to have found some version of this compass in an area of America known for its secret research laboratories some twenty years or so after Landig's surreal allegations first appeared!

But according to Landig there is even more to consider, for according to him the German base in the Canadian Arctic was actively researching and developing so-called "free energy" devices, devices that would tap the so-called "zero point energy" of quantum mechanics. In this connection, the research was allegedly carried out under the auspices of the SS Entwicklungstelle IV, or SS "Developmental Installation IV," an entity, if it existed at all, that would have fallen under the mission brief and jurisdiction of Kammler's SS Sonderkommando, for it was responsible for "research into making Germany independent of foreign energy sources."[40]

---

[39] Stevens, op. cit., p. 12.

[40] Ibid., p. 19.

There are no UFOs, just U.S. secrets

►Lamy resident says stories about "space aliens" are propaganda to cover up a giant *government conspiracy.*

BY TOM SHARPE
JOURNAL STAFF WRITER

Bill Lyne says stories about space aliens and UFOs are part of an elaborate government conspiracy to keep secret the existence of man-made electrical flying machines.

"I can spot them in the sky almost any night, usually over toward Albuquerque or Los Alamos," the Lamy resident said in a recent interview. "I've seen them land in Eldorado."

Lyne said many people mistake these machines for stars, but that he has learned how to distinguish between the two.

Electric flying machines "blink and wobble too much," he said. "Sometimes they blink quite brightly, so much that they give you a headache."

Close up
Name: Bill Lyne
Age: 55
Residence: Lamy since 1974
Education: Master's of fine arts, University of Texas
Occupation: Apartment owner, artist

You may have noticed Lyne's self-published book in some local stores.

"Space Aliens from the Pentagon," with Lyne's hand-painted cover which sports an iridescent silver saucer in a bright blue triangle, strange symbols and equations, is hard to miss.

The 244-page book aims to set the record straight, at least from Lyne's point of view, about how Texans are "the Jews of Nazi New Mexico," why the northern part of the state has become a "one of the primary deal-making and distribution points for CIA-connected cocaine traffic" and how the government often uses "closet homosexuals" for spies.

But Lyne's most compelling theory is that the public has been deceived by a misinformation campaign to blame UFOs, cattle mutilations and other odd occurrences on extraterrestrials.

The real story, he says, goes back to a Yugoslavian scientist named Nicola Tesla who discovered the rotating magnetic

See THERE ► PAGE 3

Bill Lyne displays what he says is a part from the guidance system for a German World War II "flying saucer."

January 6, 1994 Albuquerque Journal North Article Featuring William Lyne and His Mysterious Nazi Compass

So with Landig's fantastic allegations, we come full circle back to the exotic energy sources, the technologies, the occult, and the SS research being conducted by Nazi Germany. Therefore, before proceeding to examine more seriously substantiated instances of Nazi survival in the next chapter, it would be worthwhile to summarize the accumulated allegations and evidences of this and previous chapters:

(1) Fact: The Germans undertook an expedition to Antarctica whose hidden purpose was clearly military in nature, since one cannot imagine the likes of Reichsmarschall Goring sponsoring an expedition for any other purpose;
(2) Fact: The United States on two separate occasions over the wide time-frame of eleven to twelve years undertook two large military expeditions to that continent, both under appropriate cover stories for mapping (the 1947 Byrd expedition, Operation Highjump), and for the 1957-58 Geophysical Years (to study the effects of atomic blasts on Antarctic weather!);
(3) Fact: Admiral Byrd, the leader of the first American expedition, was recorded in a South American newspaper as warning of "enemy" aircraft capable of violating American airspace with ease, and of flying form pole to pole with tremendous speed;
(4) Fact: The German Navy showed great interest in the "free-energy" ideas and coils of Hans Coler, for the ostensible purpose of creating a means of submarine propulsion that would allow German U-boats to stay submerged more or less indefinitely;
(5) Fact: Admiral Byrd's diaries and logs from his expedition are still classified;
(6) Fact: Coler's inventions were highly classified by the German Navy, and later by the British, who only declassified them over thirty years after the war's end;
(7) Fact: The Germans had also apparently contrived a sophisticated compass for possible use in polar regions by aircraft, and possibly by other less conventional aircraft;

(8) Fact: the alleged time span of the German Antarctic base's survival is coincident with "golden age" of the UFO, from the Arnold sightings, the Roswell crash, up to and beyond the great 1950s Washington DC UFO flap;

(9) Fact: SS General Dr. Ing. Hans Kammler had assumed total control of all the Third Reich's secret weapons research by the end of the war, a position which would have made him privy to the German Navy's research;

(10) Fact: It is evident from the movements of General Patton's divisions in the closing days of the European war that Kammler's SS secret weapons empire was the deliberate, and principal, target of these military operations;

(11) Allegation: Grand Admiral Donitz on more than one occasion alluded to the role of the German U-boat fleet in the construction of secret bases in polar regions;

(12) Allegation: These bases were staffed by SS troops, and presumably technicians conducting ongoing secret research into "zero point energy" or "free energy";

(13) Allegation: Said research fell under an SS entity called S-IV, recalling Kammler's S-III mentioned briefly in part one;

(14) Allegation: These bases were said to be defended by exotic types of weaponry, including electromagnetic "rail guns" to devices that could interfere with and halt standard electrical engine ignitions systems;

(15) Allegation (from part one): There were secret SS teams working on "areas of physics" even more exotic than atomic and thermonuclear energy;

(16) Allegation: There is a connection to Nazi occult interests in the polar regions via the myth of "Thule", the pre-war occult Thule Society (Thulegesellschaft);

(17) Fact: The highest levels of the SS were initiates into Himmler's occult inner circle at Wewelsburg, making it likely that Kammler himself was such an initiate;

(18) Fact: The 1944 German atom bomb test at Rugen island took place at a location with its own occult pedigree and significance for the pre-war Germanic, and very occult, Order of the New Templars.

What emerges from this list is disturbing indeed. Clearly, a prima facie case can be made that the Nazi leadership had invested significant resources in the investigation of any and all avenues to power, occult and otherwise, and to new sources of energy. And equally clearly, the Nazi leadership was willing to think "outside the box" and to go to any lengths - often quite literally - to research those matters. What also emerges from this list is a preoccupation with areas of physics, and areas of the globe, almost completely neglected - at least publicly - by the wartime Allies. Moreover, what also emerges is a disturbing sense, that maybe, just maybe, there was something to the survival myths after all, for one thing seems clear from the pattern of events after the war, particularly in respect to Antarctica: such myths were inevitably connected to the exotic research pursuits the Germans were conducting, and such myths seem clearly to have been the hidden motivation for American counter-strikes.

15.

THE PHOENIX RISES: THE BORMANN PLAN

"The documents I had before me... contained firsthand evidence that the Reichsleiter had survived the war and succeeded in escaping to Argentina. It was attested by the Argentine authorities themselves, in highly classified intelligence reports and positions papers drawn up for their own secret and official use."
Ladislas Farago, Aftermath[1]

As the war turned irrevocably against the Third Reich, top Nazi leaders began to plan for the future, among them the Nazi Party's Reichsleiter Martin Bormann, Adolf Hitler's secretary and virtual shadow, and financial administrator of the Party's, as well as of Hitler's own personal and considerable, fortune. While much of this story is known to the general public in broad outline, few appreciate the degree of organization, planning, and success it had, and, unfortunately, may be continuing to have. Even fewer appreciate its significance, for what began in the secret societies of post-World War One Germany as the most explosive political movement in modern history would end by once again going underground, and operating behind a variety of false fronts that included corporations, black projects, secret societies, and criminal and paramilitary syndicates. It would thus exercise a considerable, though hidden, moral and cultural influence on the world that emerged after World War Two.

With the failure of the final large German offensive in Soviet Russia at Kursk in 1943, the Nazi leadership had but two courses of action: (1) continue the war and hope for the realization of their secret weapons projects in time to provide a military resuscitation, or (2) begin the process of moving capital, technology, and personnel to ensure the survival of the Party by other means. The Nazi leadership chose both courses of action.

---

[1] Ladislas Farago, Aftermath; Martin Bormann and the Fourth Reich (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1974), p. 60.

At first the movement of resources abroad - monetary, technological, and human - proceeded haphazardly. Money and loot from a plundered Europe made its way into secret Swiss bank accounts, or in the case of hard assets - precious minerals, bullion, art, diamonds and other gemstones and so on - made its way overland through France into "neutral" but decidedly pro-Axis Nationalist Spain.

But it soon became apparent that haphazard efforts would not ensure the survival of the Party, nor the furtherance of its ideals, nor the spread of its power in the postwar world, nor the continuance of its research projects, which would have to be continued if it ever hoped to regain power and influence. Organization and long-range planning in depth and breadth had to occur if Nazism were to survive covertly. To this end, Reichsleiter Martin Bormann orchestrated a top secret meeting on August 10, 1944, at the Hotel Rotes Haus in Strassburg, in occupied France. Representatives of all the major German industrial and armaments firms were present, including the huge firms of Krupp, Thyssen, and of course, I.G. Farben. Also present were Bormann himself, Hjalmar Schacht, president of the Reichsbank, and his son-in-law, the famous SS commando, Colonel Otto Skorzeny, leader of the daring air mission to rescue Benito Mussolini in 1943. At this meeting, "provisions were made not only to move great sums of money outside Germany but also to camouflage foreign assets on paper for the resurrection of a financial-industrial empire, of sorts, once the Reich collapsed. This empire was to be controlled by the SS."[2] As a result of this plan, the well-known SS-run ratlines were formed to assist fleeing SS and other Nazis, to provide for their financial security, relocation, and false identities. The most famous of these was of course the ODESSA group, or the Organization Der Ehemahlige SS Angehorige, or "Organization of Former SS Members." Another famous organization was "Die Spinne" or The Spider. In any case, under the Riechsleiter's powerful protection, the SS, in concert with the Kriegsmarine, began to smuggle

[2] Henry Stevens, The Last Battalion and German Arctic, Antarctic, and Andean Bases, p. 58.

enormous quantities of gold, precious gems, art and both genuine and counterfeit cash out of Germany. To a lesser extent, machine tools, steel, technicians and other personnel began to be quietly siphoned off Germany industry and smuggled out of Europe.[3]

The financial treasure trove was then laundered by the SS via a variety of methods, for example, through Evita Peron's Swiss bank accounts, through dummy corporations, through the South American drug trade, and so on.[4] During this immediate postwar period, most of this fortune was controlled by Otto Skorzeny.

> The German industrialists who had been set up abroad with SS money dating back to the deal at the Rotes Haus in Strassbourg in 1944 were asked by Skorzeny to pay back their loans. Both Thyssen and Krupp did so, as presumably did others. To give the reader an idea of the sums collected by Skorzeny, Eva Peron alone had an estimated $800 million dollars in bank deposits, in 1945, and 4,600 carats of diamonds and other precious stones, 90 kilograms of platinum and 2,500 kilograms of gold.[5]

With these Moines, the SS purchased huge tracts of land in South America and elsewhere, and large corporations were established in which "research which (sic) had begun in Germany could be carried through."[6] These "secure areas" or Sperrgebiete often saw the establishment of whole towns, airfields, highways and all the amenities of civilized German life.[7] Local security was, of course, provided by the SS or "contract labor" from the host country. The most famous of these colonies, perhaps, is the Colona Dignidad in (Me, a "colony" notorious for the disappearances of the too-inquisitive reporter, and implicated in the US overthrow of the Chilean Marxist government of Salvadore Allende in the early 1970s and the training of Chilean dictator Pinochet's DINA "interrogators."[8] And of course, these secure areas in the Andes

---

[3] Stevens, op. cit., p. 59.

[4] Ibid., p. 62.

[5] Ibid.

[6] Ibid., p. 63.

[7] bid., pp. 63-64.

[8] Q.v. Peter Levenda, Unholy Alliance: A History of Nazi Involvement with the Occult (New York: Avon Books, 1995), pp. 300-301, 343-356.

and other remote South American locations are also reputed to br the sites of secret Nazi laboratories continuing the research on "flying saucers" and other wartime Nazi black projects.[9]

Whatever one may think of the truthfulness of the last allegation, it is true - and generally well known - that such colonies of Nazis did and still do exist in South America, with connections to the South American underworld and governments that one can only imagine. But there is good reason not to dismiss even the "continued research" allegation too quickly, for it conforms to a well-known pattern of secret post-war West German corporate and military research on the continent on the other side of the Atlantic Ocean, Africa.

In the final months of his administration, President Jimmy Carter accused South Africa's apartheid government of having tested an atom bomb in the Indian Ocean. German and American newspaper reporters quickly uncovered - in spite of Praetoria's denials - a tapestry of corporations and dummy corporations that clearly led back to West Germany's Bundeswehr, and to a multitude of personnel and military officers with ties to the Third Reich. The goal was clear: The Federal Republic was supplying massive technological assistance to South Africa (and to Israel as it turned out) in the areas of uranium enrichment and plutonium transmutation via centrifuges and other processes, in return for which uranium-rich South Africa bartered the raw atomic fuel itself. Germany could thus fulfill its postwar treaty obligations by not developing or deploying atomic, biological, or chemical weapons on German soil, while at the same time using South Africa to construct and test a bomb of essentially German design. If this sounds familiar, it is, for after World War One, Germany side-stepped the Versailles treaty - which forbade the Germans possession of tanks, aircraft, and heavy artillery beyond a certain caliber - by concluding a secret protocol in the Rapallo treaty with the other pariah of the day, the Soviet Union. Thus, as early as 1922, German officers were training in tank warfare in the Soviet Union with their Russian counterparts, among them the future

[9] Stevens, The Last Battalion, p. 64.

Colonel-General Guderian who would lead the Second Panzer Army during Operation Barbarossa to the very gates of Moscow.[10] In yet another important study challenging the standard assumptions of the origin and transmission vector of the human AIDS virus and the history of the discovery of HIV, Dr. Leonard G. Horowitz makes a solid case for its genesis within secret American biological warfare research at Fort Detrick, Maryland. But there is more to Horowitz's investigations than this, for there is a German connection lurking deep in the background, and once again, it goes back to Bormann and presages the 1944 Rotes Haus meeting in Strasbourg:

> In the Spring of 1944, Merck and Company, Inc. received a large cash infusion from Martin Bormann.... This at the time Merck's president, George W. Merck, was advising President Roosevelt, and initiating strategies, as America's biological weapons industry director. According to CBS News correspondent Paul Manning, the lion's share of the Nazi gold went to 750 corporations, largely including Merck, to secure a virtual monopoly over the world's chemical and pharmaceutical industries. This was done not only for Germany's economic recovery, but to assure the rise of "The Fourth Reich.'
>
> Merck, then, along with Rockefeller partner I.G. Farben, received huge sums of money from the Nazi war chest to actualize Hitler's proclaimed 'vision of a thousand-year Third Reich (and) world empire. This was outlined with clarity in a document called 'Neuordnung,' or 'New Order,' that was accompanied by a letter of transmittal to the (Bormann led) Ministry of Economics. 'Bury your treasure,' Hitler advised Bormann, 'for you will need it to begin a Fourth Reich.'[11]

Bormann apparently ignored his Fuhrer, and in a momentary burst of Christianity, heeded Christ by not burying his treasure, but investing and increasing it.

---

[10] The often overlooked story of the West German bomb and its very secret development was covered in the New York Times book by Zdenek Cervenka and Barbara Rogers, The Nuclear Axis: the Secret Collaboration Between West Germany and South Africa, (New York Times, 1978), ISBN 0-8129-0760-4

[11] Leonard Horowitz, D.M.D., M.A., M.P.H., Emerging Viruses: AIDS and Ebola: Nature, Accident, or Intentional? (Sandpoint, Idaho: tetrahedron, Inc., 1999), p. 335.

In any case, as late as 1988, as the Soviet Union was nearing its collapse, Russian premier Mikhail Gorbachev appeared to be trying to point a finger of blame for the AIDS epidemic in Africa in Germany's direction. Via Russian diplomatic channels and contacts in the former Belgian Congo, now Zaire, the Russian government had learned of a Zairean physician who had formerly worked for the West German OTRAG corporation, or Orbital Transport and Missiles, AG. This doctor's OTRAG laboratory had been tasked with isolating viruses from the African green monkey that were capable of such rapid reproduction that it could destabilize the human immune system. The laboratory's assignment was to develop a mutant strain "that would be a human killer," since the green monkey variety was harmless to humans.[12]

But it is really the OTRAG establishment in Zaire that is itself of the greatest interest, for it fits the pattern of postwar SS relationships with South American governments and false from corporations. OTRAG was granted a lease by the Mobutu government to 29,000 square miles of Zaire, a lease that gave OTRAG "complete sovereignty and control over the area."[13] What was the purpose of this land? Ostensibly, it was to develop and test there cheap satellite launch capability for private industry, an application with obvious military overtones.[14] In other words, what one has with the OTRAG-Zaire enclave is something like an Area 51, but owned by a private corporation. The enclave is nothing less than a testing facility for missiles and laboratories for biological, and presumably other types of weapons development. According to the German Information Service of South Africa, OTRAG executives included former Nazis, some from the wartime V2 rocket project.[15] This in itself should give one pause, for it indicates that German rocket research was continued, not just by former Nazis working for Von Braun's NASA in the USA, or building massive boosters for Korolev in the Soviet Union, but also for West

---

12 Horowitz, Emerging Viruses, p. 364.
13 Ibid., p. 365.
14 Ibid., pp. 365-366.
15 Ibid., p. 366.

Germany itself! Moreover, OTRAG's shares were subsidized by the West German government, Chancellor Helmut Schmidt's denials notwithstanding.[16] Finally, in wlut is a clear indication that OTRAG's purpose and goals were not simply to contrive cheap satellite launch capability, Penthouse magazine ran an expose of the German company, disclosing its ties to the Dornier and Messerschmitt-Belkow-Blohm aerospace and armaments firms which were quietly developing and testing German cruise missiles on OTRAG's Zaire range, with the aid of cruise missile technology provided to them by the American Boeing Corporation.[17] Dornier and Messerschmitt were, of course, clearly tied to the Third Reich's war machine and had deep ties to its black projects.

A. Bormann 's Special Evacuation Command and the Link to the Kammlerstab

In part one we noted that Carter Hydrick theorized that it was none other than Martin Bormann who arranged the surrender of the U-234 and its precious cargo of enriched uranium, infrared proximity fuses, heavy water, and possibly even atom bomb designs or an actual functioning atom bomb to the United States.[18] Recent research by Nick Cook would tend to corroborate Bormann's role in, and therefore probable accurate knowledge of, the full scope and extent of Kammler's secret black projects empire. Bormann's

---

[16] Ibid.

[17] Ibid, p. 367.

[18] It should be noted that Hydrick does not maintain that the Nazis were successful in building and successfully testing an atom bomb during the war, much less of trying to transport blueprints or a functioning model to the Japanese in the U-234. I maintain this possibility on the basis of the research presented in part one, and on the corroborative evidence presented by Robert Wilcox in his Japan's Secret War, that the Japanese successfully tested a bomb shortly after the bombing of Nagasaki. An infusion of actual bomb designs to the Japanese by the Germans late in the war might account for their relatively quick ability to develop and test a weapon under such difficult circumstances as the Japanese economy and military were in at the end of the war. However, it should also be noted that the Japanese had independently designed their own workable bomb along similar lines as existing German designs, as well as along the lines employed in the Little Boy Hiroshima bomb.

position as controller of Nazi Party finances as well as of Hitler's estate would have given him control over yet another source of funding for these projects, a source completely independent of the state.

It is in this total context both of Carter Hydride's meticulous research, as well as of Bormann's own Rotes Haus plan for Nazi survival, that we may place Bormann's 1945 establishment of a special SS evacuation Kommando, an act that placed jurisdiction over the Ju 290 four engine and Ju 390 six engine heavy-lift ultra long range air transport of Luftwaffe Kampfgeschwader 200 under the direct control of none other than SS General Hans Kammler. The intention is clear: as much of the actual research files and equipment of the Kammlerstab as could be evacuated from Germany for destinations unknown was to be handled by Kammler personally. This special evacuation command held these aircraft in readiness near Lower Silesia in late 1945. By this point, Kammler's power, backed by the Reichsleiter himself, was so great that he could refuse a request by Reichsfuhrer SS Himmler for the use of one of these aircraft.[19] Kammler, "with such aircraft at his disposal" would have been able to fly a large cargo of "documents, personnel and technology pretty much anywhere" that he wanted to. "Spain, South America - Argentina even - would have represented no problem to such a long-range platform."[20] Cook himself quips, "What was the point of chasing Kammler, if he'd already shipped everything out?"[21] This revelation, coming late in the story of research into Nazi secret weapons and the Nazi UFO legend, gives a clear indication that more than just money, bullion, gems, art treasures or personnel were involved in Bormann's survival plan. Clearly, Bormann meant to preserve and continue the research already under way in the Reich by transplanting the technology and continuing its development elsewhere, either under independent Nazi control - as the various "survival" myths maintain - or under

---

[19] Nick Cook, the Hunt for Zero Point, pp. 186-187, 199.
[20] Ibid., p. 199.
[21] Ibid.

the nominal control of a host fovernment, or via some combination of both modalities.

If Carter Hydrick is correct that it was Bormann's intention to surrender the bulk of this technology to the United States - and I believe he is - then this puts Himmler's last ditch and clumsy efforts to negotiate a separate peace with the Western Allies via Sweden into a new light. As has already been suggested in this work, Himmler was perhaps offering them the vast cache of secrets he thought he controlled through Kammler's "think tank." And, as has been seen, it is very possible that the American intelligence community already knew of this treasure trove via their SS contacts through Allen Dulles and SS General Wolff, and had made "other arrangements" that included neither Himmler nor the British. Thus, by the time of Kammler's refusal to his SS boss to allow him the use of a Ju 290 or Ju 390, effective control and disposition of the SS black projects had slipped from Himmler's hands and into Bormann's. Himmler could neither surrender nor even barter for his life, because he had nothing left with which to bargain. Kammler, and Bormann, however, had a great deal to offer the Americans in exchange for their lives.

B. Paperclip, Compartmentalization, and Capitalization

According to Nick Cook, Operation Paperclip, the covert project to bring former Nazi scientists and engineers to the United States to work on America's own aerospace and military black projects after the war, was the primary beneficiary of the Kammlerstab's think tank secrets, blueprints, and patents. "The state within a state had been transported four thousand miles to the west and somehow, I just knew, Kammler had come with it. The intuitive feeling I'd experienced in all these years in obscure corners of the US aerospace and defence industry had suddenly acquired a face."[22] But an important question remains to be answered here.

Could these Nazis have continued their lines of research quasi-independently, even while ostensibly working for the US military? Could they have again reconstituted themselves as a similar "state

[22] Nick Cook, The Hunt for Zero Point, p. 252.

within a state," a black projects coordination office within the structures otherwise nominally under the control, of the American government and military?

Clearly, it would be difficult, especially if there were no means of independent financing of these projects, altogether apart from the US government's own "black budget." But we have already seen that a crucial component of Bormann's postwar survival and resuscitation plan was capitalization. Three conduits in particular were often utilized by O.D.E.S.S.A and other postwar Nazi secret organizations: (1) drugs and thereby organized crime, (2) the Church, i.e., various "ministries" within Protestantism and diverse religious orders and congregations within the Roman Catholic Church, and (3) false corporate fronts and dummy corporations, holding companies, and banking institutions. The United State, particularly in the last few decades, seems to have been a fertile ground for all three types of activity, at least in general terms.

As for maintaining the secrecy of such an independent and "occulted" entity, this is a solved problem, for the Manhattan Project was just such an entity, with only a very few at the highest echelons of its myriad compartmentalized "need-to-know" departments possessing the whole picture. In the postwar atmosphere, particularly with the Cold War ensuing, it may actually have been quite easy to accomplish. With US government defense contracts and black projects run increasingly on a cost-plus basis, all expenses for such research was funded, with an addition margin tacked on for corporate profit. This, added to the other genuinely off-the-books funding that Bormann and the SS envisioned, would have supplied twin sources of funding of almost limitless wealth.

But the most important consideration with respect to this question is the fact that the very classification and compartmentalization of black projects would itself operate as a favorable environment to run an "unofficial" black project within an "official" one. With projects split over several locations, its needed technologies farmed out to various companies, various departments of government, and coordinated from some secret center, it would seem a relatively easy, rather than difficult, thing to do.

The Nazi Party had been constituted, from its early secret society beginnings, and up until the very day of the German capitulation, as a state within a state. Within that structure, Himmler had constituted the SS as a state within the state within the state. And within that Kammler had assembled and coordinated a vast machinery of horror and weapons research that lived, parasitically, on the body of its host, the SS and the Party, themselves murderous parasites living off the misery of Germany and Europe. Kammler had done it once, and may very well have done it again, "with a little help from his friends." As was mentioned previously, perhaps President Dwight Eisenhower, when he warned of the morally and spiritually corrupting dangers of the military-industrial complex, had in mind a phenomenon that was not so much home-grown, as much as one that had been transplanted.

16.

ROSWELL:
THE "E.T. MYTH" VS. THE "NAZI LEGEND":
AN EXAMINATION OF SOME MJ-12 DOCUMENTS

"Worse, the fact that this craft and other flying saucers had been surveilling our defensive installations and even seemed to to evidence a technology we'd seen evidenced by the Nazis caused the military to assume these flying saucers had hostile intentions and might have even interfered in human events during the war."

"At the very least, Twining had suggested, the cresecnt-shaped craft looked so uncomfortably like the German Horten wings our flyers had seen at the end of the war that he had to suspect the Germans had bumped into something we didn 't know about. And his conversations with Wernher von Braun and Willy Ley at Alamogordo in the days after the crash confirmed this. They didn't want to be thought of as verrukt but intimated that there was a deeper story about what the Germans had engineered. "
Col. Philip J. Corso, (Ret.), The Day After Roswell[1]

A. Introductory Remarks

In these final chapters I propose to offer a different interpretation of two famous UFO "crash and recovery" cases than is the standard in the UFOlogy community, as a speculative corroboration of the thesis that somewhere, someone was continuing the line of very secret black projects the Nazis had initiated. The two famous cases are the 1947 Roswell crash, and the 1965 Kecksburg, Pennsylvania crash. These speculative reinterpretations of these two events are impelled, in part, by the momentum of the evidence thus far presented, and in part by the two remarkable statements made by Colonel Philip J. Corso in his well-known book, The Day After Roswell. Indeed, these statements

[1] Col. Philip J. Corso, (Ret.) with William J. Birnes, The Day After Roswell (New York: Pocket Books, 1997), pp. 4, 73.

of Corso, coming as they do in a book whose main thesis is the seeding of recovered "alien" (i.e., extraterrestrial, and not "foreign") technology into American industry, are for that very reason all the more remarkable, and they seem to invite such a reinterpretation.

But what exactly is the ET myth of the UFO? To examine it, one must place it within the multitude of hypotheses that attempt to explain the genuine UFO phenomenon:

(1) The phenomenon represents a spiritual deception by demons of the human race;
(2) The phenomenon represents a life form from higher dimensions, or perhaps a life form composed directly of electromagnetic energy or even plasmas;[2]
(3) The phenomenon represents intelligently controlled real physical spacecraft from other planets, usually with the tacit understanding that these are the craft form planets of other solar systems, and that the craft have thus traveled a minimum of four light years to visit earth, since the closest neighboring star is four light years away;
(4) The phenomenon is terrestrial and human in origin (usually with the added condition that they are government black projects back-engineered from captured or crashed extraterrestrial craft, and sometimes in conjunction with the hypothesis that the "visitors" are humans from our own future).

It is a generally established fact that the bulk of UFO sightings that are considered genuine are usually interpreted in UFOlogy by the fourth hypothesis, with numbers two and three following not far behind. This is particularly the case with the Roswell and Kecksburg crashes.

---

[2] The well-known quantum and plasma physicist David Bohm, for example, came to the conclusion that some of the plasmas with which he experimented in his early career exhibitted the sort of self-organizing properties that one normally ascribes to life. Bohm ended his plasma experiments at that point.

It is consequently fair to say that an "ET Myth" or perhaps better, an "ET paradigm" has grown around the phenomenon to such an extent that any serious study or contemplation of the possibility of a terrestrial human origin and explanation for these events is seldom considered seriously. And the US Air Force's own ridiculous explanations of Roswell - from weather balloons, crashed Japanese bamboo ballon-bombs, and Project Mogul balloons designed to monitor Soviet nuclear tests (which in any case were not to begin until two years later) - have only added fuel to the ET Myth as the regnant paradigm by which to interpret these two signal events.

By designating this interpretaive framework by the term " E T Myth" I do not, however, wish to imply that there is no basis in solid research or rational conjecture for it. I use the term "myth" here not in the contemporary sense of implying something "unreal" but in its classic sense as an all-encompassing paradigm by which an unusual phenomenon, in this case flying saucers, tends to be interpreted even by the best, most objective, and scrupulous researchers.[3]

Yet there is another "myth" of the flying saucer phenomenon, the one that we have been examining in the past few chapters of this book. And once one admits into the discussion a possible terrestrial origin and explanation for the phenomenon, one will inevitably have to deal with this other myth and its historical origins in World War Two.

B. The Smilarity of Evidence for Roswell and the "Nazi Legend"

As noted at various points throughout this book, the "Legend" of a Nazi origin of many wartime and postwar UFO reports received a big "credibility boost" when a researcher and reporter for the prestigious jane's Defence Weekly, British reporter Nick Cook, wrote a book on anti-gravity and quantum zero point energy research called The Hunt for Zero Point. The "credibility boost" that Cook's book gave to this Nazi Legend might even be seen as

[3] I would certainly include UFOlogists such as Don Berliner, Stanton Friedman, Timothy Good, and Nick Pope in this category.

analogous to the "credibility boost" that Colonel Corso's book gave to the Roswell crash and the ET interpretation of it.

Cook's book, like Corso's in some respects, is a personal chronicle, summarizing in anecdotal fashion his own personal research into American anti-gravity projects - a "hunt" as he calls it- that quickly led him to a very unsuspected source: Nazi Germany. Recounting how many of the best reports of "foo fighters" or UFOs during the war were submitted by the 415th Night Fighter Squadron, and occurred in a triangle over southern Germany from Frankfurt-am-Main, Metz, and Strasbourg in the year 1944, Cook then recounts his discovery of the book that gave birth to the Legend, German Major Rudolf Lusar's German Secret Weapons of World War Two:

> Seeking clues to the foo-fighter mystery, I discovered a copy in the reading room of the Imperial War Museum. In it, Lusar described in meticulous detail, in language that often made the depths of his bitterness clear, the technical acheivements of 'a small, industrious and honest nation which lost the war.'
>
> Secret Weapons made somber reading. Although German technical achievements were visible in developments such as the V-l flying bomb, a direct forerunner of the modern-day cruise missile, and the V-2 ballistic missile, it was the vast extent of Germany's underpinning technology base, as revealed by Lusar, which showed just how far ahead of the Allies the Nazis had been in certain key areas.
>
> Jet engines, rocket engines, infrared and thermal-imaging systems, proximity fuses, missiles guidance seekers....technologies that are integral to most modern aircraft and airborne weapon systems were all listed and described. In the late 1950s, when Lusar's book first appeared, these technologies were still in their infancy in Britain and America.
>
> Yet the Germans had been working on them a decade and a half earlier.
>
> But there was another side to the book, one which was so sensational that immediately on its appearance it had set alarm bells ringing in Washington.
>
> This side of the book related to so-called German 'wonder-weapons' beyond the V-l and V-2....
>
> Other esoteric developments detailed by Lusar showed that the Germans had been working on bringing down Allied aircraft with

> sound waves, air vortices, intensely focused beams of light and jets of compressed air.
>
> In 1958, the US Air Force commissioned a 'special studies group' within Air Force Intelligence headed by an Austrian-born technical consultant called Dr Stefan Possony to carry out a detailed appraisal of Lusar's book. The research effort was branded 'secret' and has only recently come to light....
>
> A section in Lusar's book was devoted to 'flying sacuers' which he asserted, in no uncertain terms, were the product of German wartime inventors. 'Experts and collaborators in this work confirm that the first projects, called "flying disks", were undertaken in 1941,' Lusar wrote. He even went on to name the key individuals involved. These were 'the German experts Schriever, Habermohl, and Miethe, and the Italian Bellonzo.'[4]

Cook's thesis is one that will guide our examination of some of the Majic-12 or Majestic-12 documents in this chapter, with a view to explicating a possible underlying "German" connection to the Roswell crash and cover-up:

> Make the link between Germany and the flying sacuer and here was an opportunity to solve not only the anti-gravity propulsion riddle, but, in the process, perhaps, one of the most baffling mysteries of the 20th century: the origins of the UFO.... The flying disc must have exhibited performance so in advance of its time that it had been super-classified, then hidden in plain sight - behind the UFO myth - for the best part of 60 years.[5]

However, as Cook quickly discovered, the Nazi Legend has a significant problem: Lusar mentioned four names, but other than these four names, the testimony for the Legend, until very recently, was based almost completely on hearsay.[6] There were no declassified documents in the 1950s and 1960s to back up Lusar's incredible story. Indeed, it was only with German reunification and the subsequent "declassification spree" that it prompted that corroborating documentation finally became available, and in sufficient quantity and quality to constitute a solid prima facie case.

---

[4] Nick cook, op. cit., p.

[5] Ibid., pp. 46-47, emphasis added.

[6] Ibid., p. 47.

It is this fact, that the trail into the Legend seems to lead nowhere and yet everywhere at one and the same time, that is the main reason it is so seldom persued by serious UFO researchers, most of whom simply laugh it off when confronted with it, especially in the North American UFOlogy community.

But the problem with the Nazi Legend is really not with its early uncorroborated hearsay testimony, nor even with its then quite unsubstantiated claims in the postwar West German media.[7] The problem was not really with the second-hand or hearsay testimony of a few dead men and a few odd documents claiming a secret provenance deep within the black projects of the Waffen SS.

The problem is that the same basic type of evidence exists for the Roswell incident of the alleged crash of a flying saucer. Beyond the fact that there were a few primary source witnesses - Mac Brazzel, Jesse Marcel, Walter Haut and so on - that researchers such as William Moore, Charles Berlitz and Stanton Friedman were able to interview personally, there are a whole host of secondary testimonies to the event that have surfaced since then. In this very general respect, the dynamics of the Roswell ET Myth and the Nazi UFO Legend are remarkably similar. And like the Nazi Legend, classified documents showed up to corroborate the story, only this time, the documents were not declassified, but rather, apparently leaked to the UFOlogy community. These are, of course, the now famous (or depending on one's lights, infamous) MJ-12, or Majestic-12, or Majic-12 documents, the primary focus of this chapter.

> In the pro-UFO community, much fanfare has been made over the years about the "dozens" or even "hundreds" of eyewitnesses to the allged UFO crash near Roswell....
>
> In the pro-UFO book The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell, Kevin Randle and Donald Schmitt note the fact taht Bill Moore[8] interviewed "more than seventy witnesses who had some knowledge of

---

[7] Ibid., p. 47. Rudolf Schriever was the first to recount for the West German media, in the 1950s, the work he had done for the Heinkel company in 1940-1941 on flying disk aerodynes.

[8] Co-author, with Charles Berlitz, of the first thorough account of the Roswell crash, The Roswell Incident.

> the (Roswell UFO crash) event (sic)." Indeed, both Friedman and Moore, around the time of the initial publication of the Roswell Incident in 1980, boasted that they had interviwed more then "ninety witnesses."
>
> While these double digit figures are certainly accurate, the presentation of such a seemingly impressive number of witnesses by themselves, without qualifications, is misleading. The relevant issue is not how many witnesses were interviwed, but rather what type of wtinesses (i.e., firsthand, secondhand, etc.) these people are and how truthful and accurate their statements are.
>
> Unfortunately, a careful reading of Moore and Berlitz's Roswell Incident reveals that despite the impressive claim of having "interviewed more than seventy witnesses," the testimonies of just twenty-five people are presented. Out of these twenty-five, only seven of them are firsthand sources who claim to have seen the alleged saucer debris, and one of these accounts is suspect. Of these seven people, however, only five of them claim to have actually handled the material personally, and one of them is adamant that it was not from an extraterrestrial spacecraft.[9]

Researcher interviews of a few primary source "eyewitnesses": this much the Roswell ET Myth and the Nazi UFO Legend have in common. The problem thus posed by the mere existence of the Nazi Legend in this context is therefore very significant: Why does one event form such a stable and consistent foundation in thre historiography of the ET-UFO Mythos, and why is the other hypothesis so consistently avoided by the same community, when in general, both the ET explanation of the Roswell incident, and the Nazi UFO Legend are based upon not only the same types of evidence, but initially, the same approximate quantity of evidence? Put differently, why is the ET Myth so predominant in all "unofficial" explanations of the Roswell crash, and the hypothesis of a terrestrially-originated though exotic technology as an explanation consistently avoided?

The answer I believe, lies in some peculiarities of the Majic-12 documents themselves.

[9] Kal K. Korff, The Roswell UFO Crash, pp. 28-29.

C. The Majic-12 Documents: The ET Myth vs the Nazi Legend

The Majic-12 documents are well-known in UFOlogy circles, and a controversy has ensued over their genuineness and authenticy, or lack thereof. The documents themselves purport to be highly classified top secret memoranda, studies, and so on, concerning the Roswell crash and its aftermath: the establishment of a deep cover, highly classified UFO retrieval, back-engineering, and study group composed of top civilian and military leaders with a large black projects budget. The documents, complete with many blacked out areas - represented by strings of question marks "?????" in the quotations which follow - were leaked to the public in two different sets.

As well known and respected UFOlogist Stanton Friedman put it, the first set of documents arrived in December of 1984, quite literally "on Jaimie Shandera's doorstep."[10] Shandera, a film director, had contacted Friedman about the possibility of doing a fictional movie concerning UFOs, wanting Friedman to be a consultant for the movie.

> Then, in December 1984, the Majestic-12 documents showed up on Jaimie Shandera'a doorstep.
>
> To be more exact, a roll of undeveloped black-and-white 35mm film came in the mail to Shandera's home in Burbank in a double-wrapped plain brown envelope with no return address and an Albuquerque, New Mexico postmark. Why was it sent to Jaimie? One possibility is that it was well-known that Shandera had been working closely with Bill Moore and myself on the Roswell crash story, and that together with Bill, had had many contacts with insiders, some of whom were connected with OSI in Albuquerque.
>
> Bill and Jaime's meetings with Agent Doty and others had left them with the impression that these insiders were interested in having the facts about flying saucers released to the public, in a manner that would protect their identity and their status. But we may never know.
>
> After Bill and Jaime developed the film, they called me. What they found on the film were duplicate sets of eight pages of documents that were classified TOP SECRET/MAJ1C, with a title page declaring

[10] Stanton Friedman, Top Secret/Majic (New York: Marlowe and Company, 1996), p. 20.

> "Briefing Document: Operation Majestic 12 prepared for President Elect Dwight D. Eisenhower: (Eyes Only) 18 November, 1952." The second page listed the members of the Majestic-12 group, all of whom were dead....
>
> Incredible as it sounded, the documents on this film dealt with the New Mexico crashes as well as with the government's efforts to keep them secret. According to the briefing, the wreckage of a crashed saucer was recovered by the U.S. government 75 miles northwest of Roswell in early July 1947. Four small alien bodies, apparently ejected from the vehicle, were found two miles east of the main wreckage site. The government took into its possession the wreckage and the bodies for careful study and evaluation, and in September 1947, officially established Operation Majestic-12 as a "top secret Ressearch and Development/Intelligence operation responsible directly and only to the President of the United States."[11]

Friedman, as any serious investigator would, approached the question of the authenticity of the document cautiously.

There were, as he saw it, three possible explanations of the document, if indeed it was legitimate, and if indeed it was genuinely leaked. The documents could be:

(1) legitimate in the sense of genuinely originating from the military-intelligence community, but they could have been composed or intended to be disinformation or a hoax in some elaborate psychological warfare operation;[12]
(2) legitimate in the sense that they might "contain some truth mixed with some phony material;"[13]
(3) could be "Plain straight legitimate."[14]

Most of the controversy within the UFOlogical community has centered on options (1) and (3), between those who maintain that they are a simple hoax or part of some disinformation operaton, and

---

[1] Friedman, op. cit., pp. 20-21.

[2] Ibid., p. 22. Friedman actually states it differently: "First, the entire roll of film could be disinformation or a hoax."

[3] Ibid., p. 23.

[4] Ibid.

those who believe that they are 'plain straight legitimate."[15] Friedman's own case for the authenticity of the "Eisenhower Briefing Document" is thorough and persuasive.

Then, as Friedman, Moore, and Shandera were investigating the Eisenhower Briefing Document, a second set of purported Majic-12 top secret documents were leaked, this time to UFOlogist Don Berliner, and a mystified man in California named Timothy Cooper. In March of 1994, Don Berliner, like Jaime Shandera ten years earlier, received a roll of undeveloped Tri-X film in his mail box. The film contained what was allegedly the actual operations manual for UFO recovery teams called the "Special Operations Manual."

But the most sensational Majic-12 documents are doubtless those leaked to Timothy Cooper, the so-called "Cooper-Cantwheel Majic-12" documents. Cooper, who had grown up near the White Sands Missile range, had become interested in the subject of UFOs and secret missile research as a youth when someone shared information about UFOs with him. His curiosity piqued, he began research on the top secret facility by filing FOIA requests, assembling a large and thorough collection of government documents. Then in 1992, Cooper began receiving photocopied Majic-12 documents in his mail box from a man calling himself "Thomas Cantwheel."[16]

[Ь] Friedman falls into the group arguing for option three: "Based on my detailed study and investigation of the overall UFO phenomenon beginning in 1958, I am equally certain that (1) some UFOs are intelligently controlled extraterrestrial spacecraft; (2) the subject of flying saucers represents a kind of cosmic Watergate, wherein a relatively small group of people in government have known about the visitors for many years; (3) none of the anti-UFO arguments made by a small but vocal group of debunkers stand up under scrutiny; and (4) visits by extraterrestrial space vehicles and the successful 50-year coverup of the best evidence (alien bodies and wreckage) is the biggest story of the millenium."

[Ь] Dr. Robert M. and Ryan S. Wood, The Secret: Evidence that We Are Not Alone (DVD disk, 1988); Dr. Robert M. and Ryan S. Wood: The Majestic Documents (Redwoord City, California: Wood and Wood Enterprises, 1998), p. 1. The latter book is simply a reproduction of the document copies received by Cooper, along with a parallel typescript text of the documents for ease of reading, since in many cases the quality of the copies is degraded, making reading of the original document difficult.

Cooper contacted Friedman, who was not only well-known in UFOlogy, but by that time well established as an expert on the authenticity issues of the first Majic-12 document, the so-called "Eisenhower Briefing" document. Friedman, living now in Nova Scotia, put Cooper in contact with Robert and Ryan Wood, two associates with some expertise in document authentication. Again Wood and Wood argued quite persuasively for the authenticity of the documents, but again, following option (3), they argued that the documents are "plain straight legitimate."

Two of the Cantwheel Majic-12 documents have become focal points of UFOlogy interest, and for good reason: The "White Hot Intelligence Estimate" of Air Force General Nathan Twining, and the "Majestic Twelve Project First Annual Report." These are the documents that contain actual technical descriptions of the alleged crashed alien craft recovered at Roswell, along with recommendations on what to do about it.

Accordingly, we shall accept the arguments of Robert and Ryan Wood and their exhaustive process of document authentication, and assume that the documents are legitimate, and using internal indications and inconsistencies, we shall argue that these two documents are best interpreted as containing part truth, and part deliberate deception, and that both of these elements point possibly, though nowhere near conclusively, to a terrestrial, and German, origin for the exotic craft that crashed in New Mexico in 1947, and that this is the element that is the ultimate obejctive of the cover-up, as alluded to by Colonel Corso's statements that form the epigrams to this chapter. The methodology will be that already hinted at by Corso's statements, and more completely outlined by Nick Cook:

> Make the link between Germany and the flying saucer and here was an opportunity to solve not only the anti-gravity propulsion riddle, but, in the process, perhaps, one of the most baffling mysteries of the 20th century: the origins of the UFO.... The flying disc must have exhibited performance so in advance of its time that it had been super-classified, then hidden in plain sight - behind the UFO myth -for the best part of 60 years.[17]

[17] Cook, op. cit., pp. 46-47.

In brief, I shall argue that there are two levels at work in the Majic-12, "White Hot Intelligence Estimate" and the "First Annual Report" documents:

(1) A genuine level, in which the technical aspects of the recovered technology are summarized. As will be indicated, there are glaring discrepancies between these descriptions, and a presumption of an extraterrestrial origin, for the recovered technology. Conversely, as will be shown, there are detailed parallels between the descriptions of the recovered technology of the Roswell crash, and the already examined secret weapons black projects of Nazi Germany covered in the previous part of this book;
(2) A level of disinformation, where the emerging "ET explanation" forms a final deep cover layer of disinformation behind the public explanations of crashed weather or Project Mogul balloons.

The resulting clash of these two emphases constitutes one basis for those who would wish to challenge the authenticity of the documents, which they most certainly are.

1. The "White Hot Intelligence Estimate " of General Nathan Twining

The "White Hot Intelligence Estimate" is actually the first part of a Majic-12 document called "Mission Assessment of Recovered Lenticular Aerodyne Objects and Implications in ??????AR??".[18] This document is the second examination of the crashed vehicles - note the plural - describing some aspects of the technology retrieved and analyzed by the military after the Roswell incident.

Besides the standard authenticating features thoroughly investigated by Wood and Wood - typeface comparisons, document style manual and orthography and so on - all of which is srongly in favor of authenticity, there are a number of internal descriptions

[18] Wood and Wood, The Majestic Documents, p. 63. The strings of question marks correspond to the blacked-out areas of the original photocopies.

that do not make sense if the recovered object were of extraterrestrial origin and interplanetary travel capability. That is, the best explanation of this particular document seems to lie not with Friedman's options (1) or (3), but with option (2), that they contain some truth mixed with phony or deliberately distorted material. As will be seen as we proceed, a disturbing hypothetical scenario begins to emerge if one examines this document not from the interpretive paradigm of the ET Myth (option (3)), but from the perspective of the Nazi Legend (and option (2)). In arguing for this latter interpretation of the document, we shall focus on three key areas:

(a) Odd language of a general nature describing the UFO phenomenon and areas and types of activity as they were then known;
(b) incongrous technical language that describes something simultaneously both very advanced, and yet very commonplace;
(c) ambiguous language reflecting perhaps an amount of indecision or hesitation concerning the nature of what was recovered, and what to do about it.

With these thoughts in mind, we begin by noting the first and most obvious point: both the Roswell crash and Admiral Byrd's Operation Highjump, with the admiral's astounding statement in the South American Chilean El Mercurio, occur in the same year, within a few months of each other.

(a) Odd Language of a General Nature Describing the UFO Phenomenon and Its Area and Types of Activity

After a brief history of the postwar UFO phenomenon, beginning with Kenneth Arnold's June 1947 sighting, the document then points out the apparent interst of "ET" in our military installations: "Numerous sightings over military installations in the state of New Mexico were investigated by Army and Navy

intelligence officers."[19] The report also mentions sightings in "Sweden and Germany, Holland, Paraguay, Scandinavia, Greece, by ships at sea."[20]

A typical explanation from the ET paradigm is that UFOs began to exhibit an interest in our military installations and increased their monitoring activities of the human race afer it had mastered nuclear energy and weaponized it in the atom bomb, possibly fearing that we might venture into outer space and bringing our warlike habits and weapons of mass destrcution with us. As an explanation of "their" then evident "obsrve but do not contact" behavior, this is plausible. We were being surveilled, if not reconnoitered. But such behavior in itself means nothing, for such patterns could equally describe monitoring and surveilling operations of wholly terrestrial but unknown origins.

Note also the curious wording of paragraph 6: "Sweden and Germany....Scandinavia." Why the redundancy? A possible explanation, though one not indicated by the document itself, is that two different types of phenomena might be being referred to. However, "Sweden and Germany, Holland, Paraguay, Scandinavia, Greece" and "ships at sea" would not seem to be of the same interst to "ET' if the purpose of the monitoring activity was, as some like Friedman have suggested, to measure human progress in atomic energy applications and weapons. This vague inconsistency then becomes more acute once attention is focused on the technical descriptions of the document.

(b) Technical Language that Describes Something Simultaneously both Very Advanced, yet Very Commonplace

Perhaps the best evidence that the document should be interpreted as being both genuine and yet containing "phony" or "faked" elements concerns the technical descriptions and references. For example, immediately after the odd refernce to sightings in Sweden and Germany and then "Scandinavia", the

---

[19] Ibid., p. 65, par. 5.

[20] Ibid.,, p. 65, par. 6.

document then goes on to record the "extraordinary capabiltities" of the recovered craft:

> Of the 1,200 sighting reports collect (sic) since 1942 approximately 200 incidents have proven to be unknown craft operation (sic) at speeds in excess of 1200 MPH and at times attaining altitudes up to ?? miles or more above the earth. A comparison was made with Swedish Defense officials of the reported operating ??????????????????????????a sec? intelligence liaison official????? Continuing views of restricted air space over snesitive Swedish military base has not indicated any direct ??????????? tangible evidence thus far that would suggest ????? are the ??? ??????????????.[21]

While speeds of 1,200 MPH were indeed extraordinary for any aircraft of the day (and even today), and hence noteworthy enough to be noted in the document, and while performance characteristics that enabled these craft to achieve altitudes of some unknown number of miles above the earth were likewise equally if not more extraordinary, the important point to notice is that such speeds are certainly not the extreme characteristics that one would expect of a product of an advanced "ET" civilization with interstellar, or even interplanetary capability limited to our own solar system.

To put it succinctly, the performance characteristics described are not advanced enough to be extraterrestrial in origin.

Note that if the craft's speed were in the area of a mere 1,200 MPH, as this portion of the document states, then the use of such a craft for interplanetary exploration would seem to be absurb in the extreme, particularly if it is maintained that these craft originated from outside our solar system, which is the presumption implicit with every "ET" interpretation of the Roswell event. If one conceded top speeds of even ten thousand miles per hour for the craft, then a trip to Mars, our closest planetary neignbor at approximately 36,000,000 miles from the earth, would take 150 days. At a mere 1,200 miles per hour, however, a journey to Mars would take about 1250 days, or almost three and a half years, and

[21] Ibid., pp. 65-66, par. 7, emphasis added.

neither of these figures is even factoring in the positions of the planets at any given moment of their orbital periods around the sun nor the cirved trajectory sueh craft would have to follow between the two planets! As will be obvious, however, such performance characteristics are within the performance capabilities suggested by the advanced German aircraft technologies being developed by Kammler's "think tank."

When one thus turns to the actual first part of the document after this historical overview, the technological ambiguity is only increased, rather than assuaged. The first part of this detailed technical assessment is called "Project White Hot Intelligence Estimate (Preliminary)." Here it is necessary to cite the document at length:

> LANDING ZONE NO. 1
> Socorro, New Mexico - The unidentified lenticular-shaped aerodyne which has been designated ULAT-1, has been evaluated as a non-air breathing aircraft of unknown origin. Totally lacking conventional wing, fuselage, nacelle, control, and fuel systems strongly indicates it is not Russian. Consultation with Paperclip specialists concur. Aerodynamic features exhibited in ULAT-1 represent a very high degree of engineering and sophistication not seen in this country. Dimensional homogeneity study cannot explain how this craft sustains load and lift factors necessary for flight. The power plant does not resemble any conventional type now in use. Lacking any discernible intake or exhaust features, it is the opinion of AMC and ONR that this craft was designed to operate ouside of the earth's atmosphere. The unconventional conclusions reached by members of this fact-finding mission remain tentative at this time. Some members expressed the view that ULAT-1 may be the product of an advanced culture from another planet that is much older than ours and has utilized the science and intellect for inerplanetary psace travel. It is not precisely known if the occupants purposely had the objective of exploration out of curiosity or with the intent of surveying for other reasons. So far, no hostile intent has been observed since they made their presence known. Given the fact that our atomic bomb tests, atmospheric exploration with rockets, and ??????????????????????????????ed in New Mexico, could have precipitated the events that led to the incident and subsequent actions taken by the military.
>
> Operating under the assumption that the fallen object was a long-range Russian reconnaissance platform collecting aerial photographic intelligence data, military intelligence personnel were instructed to

> secure the craft, debris and the occupants as rapidly as possible. Concerns over possible exposure to civilians of known biological and chemical agents dictated the quarantine measures taken. Radiation hazards were assumed and appropriate protective measure were taken as well.
>
> In the interest of National Secuirity priorities it was necessary to detain civilian witnesses for interrogation to satisfy intelligence requirements, and quash rumors that could alert potential espionage agents known to be in the vicinity.
>
> Several bodies were dicovered. Because on-site medical personnel were unsure of the physiological and biological make-up of the occupants, special preparations and preservation methods were employed Autopsy information obtained so far suggests that the occupants mimic the features associated with ~~Orientals~~. Outwardly they appear human-like with but one exception: autopsy notes mention a rarely observed ??????????????????????????????????s present which supports the premise that these beings originate from another planet. [21]

There are two sets of factors in this quotation that, taken separately, seem to argue persuasively that one is dealing with an extremely advanced but nonetheless very terrestrial phenomenon, or that, conversely, argue persuasively that one is dealing with a very advanced extraterrestrial phenomenon, but that taken together present an ambiguous and puzzling picture. It is their occurrence in the same context, without apparent analysis or attempt to resolve the ambiguity, that requires interpretation and explanation.

Note first of all that, at this stage of the "preliminary investigation" the origins of the craft remain, in its own word, "unknown." But a little later on the document indicates that there was apparently some internal dissention in the preliminary study group: "Some members expressed the view that ULAT-1 may be the product of an advanced culture from another planet..." In other words, there appears to have been genuine indecision and hesitancy on where to attribute the origin of the craft. This tends to be an internal corroboration and consistency with what we have already observed above regarding the recovered technology and the craft's performance characteristics, for apparently the recovered

[22] Ibid., pp. 67-68, emphasis added.

technology, considered as a factor in and of itself, is not sufficiently advanced enough to argue on its own basis lor an extraterrestrial origin. What does argue for the extraterrestrial nature is not the recovered technology, but the recovered biology. It is the clash of these two sets of facts, then, that appears to be behind the hinted-at internal dissention in the study group when it came to the question of origins of the recovered vehicle.

There is another technological bombshell that deserves to be weighed carefully in the light of what has already been stated regarding the Nazi UFO Legend and Kammler's think tank: "Totally lacking conventional wing, fuselage, nacelle, control and fuel systems strongly indicates it is not Russian. Consultation with Paperclip specialists concur." The question that now inevitably arises is this: Would the US military have been likely to consult the nearby former Nazi rocket scientists in its employment if it even remotely suspected that what had fallen into its hands was something extraterrestrial, and thereby, technologically extremely advanced and sophisticated? I think it is possible, but very unlikely. The more likely explanation was hinted at by Colonel Corso himself in the epigrams that began this chapter: the German Paperclip scientists were shown the recovered vehicle, which on Corso's own admission looked like one of the Horten brothers' flying wings, because the craft itself and its perfromance characteristics were highly suggestive of similar high performance and unconventional aerodynes under development by Nazi Germany.

In this context, the very next statement is perhaps very telling and suggestive, for the language is very careful and deliberate: "Aerodynamic features exhibited in ULAT-1 represent a very high degree of engineering and sophistication not seen in this country."[23] If an "ET" origin were suspected, and that explanation already agreed upon, then the sentence would have read "Aerodynamic features exhibited in ULAT-1 represent a very high degree of engineering and sophistication not seen on this planet." So what country is meant here, and in this context? Only three countries are immediately represented in the previous discussion. Was it Russia? Germany? or the United States? Once again, the language retreats

[23] Ibid., p. 67, emphasis added.

into ambiguity, though the clearest explanation is that the country referred to is the United States, otherwise, why bring in the German Paperclip scientists to render their opinion?

At this juncture an odd transition occurs, for in the segue to the discussion of the recovered bodies, the "ET" myth begins to surface in this context as a plausible explanation for explaining the UFOs' military-style surveilling activities, activities begun, so the document surmises, in response to humanity's detonation of atom bombs during the war and after. This explanation, in feet, was arrived at years later, and quite independently, by astute UFOlogists such as Friedman.

With the mention of recovered bodies the segue is complete, and one is now confronted by a set of data and descriptions totally at variance with the technical data and the data-set favoring terrestrial origins hypothesis: "Several bodies were discovered....Outwardly, tehy appear human-like with but one exceptions....a rarely observed...," and then follws a blacked out area. A rarely observed what? Presumably a rarely observed phsyiological feature in humans, but evidently recurring in all of the recovered bodies. Was it a rare blood type or blood disease? Webbed toes and digits? Extra or missing fingers? We do not know. But having blacked out this all-important and conclusive feature, the document then concludes that this "rarely observed something" supports "the premise that these beings originate from another planet." Note then that, as far as the document itself is concerned, it is not the recovered technology but the recovered biology that argues the most persuasively for the ET origins of the craft. But this conclusion, as it stands, is for us, if not for the writer and compiler of the report itself, an argument from silence. The ET explanation is therefore the weaker of the two explanations internal to the document as they have been publicly redacted and received.

The second part of the document is entitled "Technical Evaluation (Preliminary)." Here it will be necessary to cite this part of the document in fall, including once again the blacked out portions, in order to exhibit the fall extent of the contradictory nature of these two very different data-sets.

PART II TECHNICAL EVALUATION (PRELIMINARY)
ULAT-1

1. Upon close examination of the exterior surfaces of the craft's fuselage, metallurgists found the skin to be of a ferrous metal white in color. The metal exhibits all the characteristics of high-grade steel. It was determined that the steel was cold-formed and heat-treated. Tensile strength was esyimated in excess of 150,000 pounds per square inch. Shear tests give the metal a durability rating about 175,000 pounds per square inch, making the fuselage extremely strong and heat resistant.

2. Static and pressure flow simulaions were impressive. The low profile ratio of 6-to-l gives the aerodyne a great advantage in overcoming the restrictions of the boundary layer effect in high performance operatons.

3. Spar flanges are constructed in unusual kinematic design which is believe (sic) to allow strain relief at supersonic speeds. There were no visible signs of plate-stiffeners. There were no fasteners, weld (sic), rivets, or fitting holding the fuselage together.

4. Lack of wings, flaps, stablizers, and surface control features suggests that the craft is a lifting body.

5. There are no air intakes or exhaust.

6. There are no cables.

7. There are no identifiable electronics (wiring, ignition, lights, instrument, compartment, engine, motors, vacuum tubes, solenoids, generators, heaters, etc.)

8. The power plant (seeverely damaged) ???????????????? neutronic negine. ???????????????? Detected. Heavy water and deuterium (light hydrogen) elements appear to be the primary ignitor. A series of coils and heavy magnets connected to the neutronic engine via an oddly arranged group of electrodes (metal not yet identified) appears to be the motive force. One small motor was examined. It is encased in a pure aluminum capsule directly underneath the main engine compartment. There is a small exhaust aperture that has what can by (sic) only described as an helicoid mechanism ???????????????????????????? the auxiliary motor may be articulated.

9. Navigation and engine controls may be activated by tactile manipulation. Viewing may have been achieved by some form of television imagery. Symbolic notation appears to be in the form for flight and control indicators. Flat panels of unknown metal has (sic) been suggested as a device associated with the operation of the aerodyne was discovered and analyzed. Its mode of oepration and purpose is unknown.

The absence of provisions, berthing compartments and storage areas suggest the notion that this craft may be a short range reconnaissance platform. The only recognizable features examined were five hand ??????? with arm rests fashioned for vertical and horizontal flight. A leaf book of ????...

And here, almost an entire page of the document is blacked out, i.e. approximtely two double-spaced typewritten pages. The document then continues:

Mode of operation is believed to be instrumentation and suggests that the aerodyne from reconstruction of available wreckage t??????'.'" biosensory and optical stimuli for these reasons:

a. Absence of indicator lights;
b. Absence of linear dials, or moving pointers;
c. Absence of counters;
d. Absence of scopes;
e. No mechanical signal indicators.

12. There were no identifiable control types found among the assortment of artifacts that would indicate the operation of the propulsion unit was manually activated: no knobs, push-buttons, toggle switches, levels, balls, handwheels, handcranks, or foot-pedals were observed in interior space of the flight cabin.

13. The apparent lack of additional clothing and equipment reinforces the belief that the occupants were engaged in a purely exploratory flight.

14. It is not presently known if electromagnetic radiation effects from the power plant had contributed to pilot error or death before impact. If inadequate shielding was the primary cause of pilot error, ????????????s detected....

17..... A very tentative working theory was expressed by the scientific members of the inspection team that pilot-aerodyne interaction may occur via electronic-non word symbols perceived through the tactile manipulation of the fingers, feeding impulses to the brain and vice versa. All of which may suggest a non-inert quality of the materials existent as being a product of artificial intelligence.

18 The follwing elements were analyzed and found to exist in the small neutronic power plant that was found inside ULAT-1:

a. UF6 in metallic form;
b. Hydrogen-fluoride gas;
c. Water and uranium tetrafluoride;
d. Powdered magnesium and potassium chlorate;
e. Metal similar to lead with a chocolate brown color;

f. U-235 in metallic form;
g. Plastic like material similar to NE 102;
h. Beryllium,
i. Pure aluminum;
h. Thorium isotope material;
j. plutonium powder.[24]

19. Scientists from Los Alamos and Sandia Base were alarmed that the power plant could possibly function as a bomb if the elements described above were processed in similar fashion as was done for the lens and shotgun detonators.[25]

20. The only evidence of circuitry found on the motor was thin plastic-like sheets fashioned like platters embossed on the exterior of the spherically-shaped casing coated by a thin film of pure silver. Under high power magnification it was observed a series (sic) of fine grid-like lines intersecting groups of dots arranged in circular patterns.

PART III SCIENTIFIC PROBABILITIES

1. Based on all vailable evidence collected from recovered exhibits currently under study by AMC, AFSWP, NEPA, AEC, ONR, NACA, JRDB, RAND, USAAF, SAG, and MIT, are deemed extraterrestrial in nature. This conclusion was reached as a result of comparisons of artifacts ~~from the~~ ~~Missouri~~ discovery in 1941. The technology is outside the scope of US science, even that of German rocket and aircraft development.

2. Interplanetary space travel is possible provided adequate funding, necessary resources are made available, and national interest is piqued.

5. Human origins may not be constrained to one planet. Our genus may be found among solar systems similar to our own.

6. The laws of physics and genetics may have a genesis in a higher, structured order that once (sic) previously thought.[26]

---

[24] Note that the ordering here is that of the orginal document. As the Drs. Wood suggest, this flaw argues strongly for the document's authenticity. I concur.

[25] The lens detonator refers to the implosion device used in plutonium based atom bombs to compress the critical mass. The device was described in part one. The shotgun detonator refers to the critical mass assembly mechanism in uranium-235 based atom bombs.

[26] Wood and Wood, op. cit., pp. 69-75, emphasis added. All strike-through typeface are in the original.

We are now in a position to summarize once again the two data-sets - the ET data set and the terrestrial-origins data-set - and the internal contradictions these present in the document.

We begin with the conclusion the document reaches after the lengthy summary of the technical data: "Based on all available evidence collected from recovered exhibits currently under study by AMC (etc.)...are deemed extraterrestrial in nature."[27] Note then what has happened within the same document. What began as an open-ended discussion, with either the terrestrial or extraterrestrial explanations being left more or less an open question in Part I of the document, quickly becomes a definitive conclusion in favor of the ET hypothesis by Part III, after Part II mentioned that "rarely observed something" as being evidence for an ET origin of the recovered bodies. Thus, what is otherwise an extraordinary but nevertheless terrestrially explainable list of technical components in Part III becomes deftly reinterpreted within the ET paradigm that formed the transition from Part I to Part III.

It is to be admitted that some of the technical descriptions found in Part III would baffle most engineers of 2004, not to mention those of 1947: "there were no visible signs of plate-stiffeners. There were no fastners, weld(sic), rivets, or fittings holding the fuselage together."[28] Another unusual technological feature that, in 1947 at least, would have argued strongly for an ET origin of the craft was the apparent biological-mechanical "interface" between pilot/crew and the craft that allowed immediate brain-craft control interaction, and which would have accounted for the apparent lack of normal control surfaces that was noted in he report: "symbolic notation appears to be the form for flight and control indicators. Flat panels of unknown metal has (sic) been suggested," and so on.[29]

While this type of biometric technology is now known - and employed - by today's western military forces, it was only a science fiction dream in 1947. This fact led Colonel Corso, for example, to

---

[27] Ibid., p. 75., PT III, par. 1.
[28] Ibid., p. 69, f 3.
[29] Ibid.

reveal that such technology was gradually "seeded" into American industry once its principles of operation were known. Finally, the most exact description of an advanced technology in apparent advance of 1947 American capabilities is found at the very end of Part II, with its description of thin plastic sheets coating by a film of silver on which was inscribed a fine grid like pattern of lines, circles and intersecting patterns. What is described here sounds very much like a 1947 description of an integrated circuit.

But what is remarkable is the conclusion drawn from all this technical detail: "Interplanetary space travel is possible...."[30] This is the conclusion reached by analysis of all the preceding extensive technological summary. Yet, the document's own stated "observed characteristic" - speeds of a mere 1,200 MPH - do not support this conclusion at all, as was previously noted. One is in the presence, in other words, of two very different data-sets, even where the technology is concerned.

However, it is equally crucial to observe that all other technological data points can be explained by reference to specific achievements of the Nazi secret weapons research. We will now consider these in detail. The metal of the craft, we are initially told, is some white-colored iron-basedmetal having the characteristics of high grade steel that was "cold-formed and heat treated."[31] The process of forming and molding high tensile steel was in fact called "cold extrusion" and it was a technology that the Germans had perfected during the war. Moreover, the document also notes that the "lack of wings, flaps, stabilizers, and surface control features suggests that the craft is a lifting body,"[32] a design principle well in keeping with the most advanced German wartime research into discoid aerodynes.

A further connection to known Nazi research interests is found in paragraph two: "The low profile ratio of 6-to-l gives the aerodyne a great advantage in overcoming the restrictions of the boundary layer effect..."[33] The boundary layer, as we have already

---

[30] Ibid., p. 75,par. 2.
[31] Ibid., p. 69.,par. 1.
[32] Ibid., p. 69,par. 4.
[33] Ibid., par. 2.

seen, formed an early focal point of secret German research undertaken even before the beginning of the World War.

But now the internal contradictions in the document become stark and acute. For example, there is a curious juxtaposition and contradiction between paragraphs seven and eight. Paragraph seven states that "there are no identifiable electronics (wiring, ignition...etc),"[34] and yet, in the very bext paragraph, we are informed that, in the arrangement of technologies in the "neutronic engine" there are "a series of coils and heavy magnets connected to the neutronic engine via an oddly arranged group of electrodes (metal not yet identified)."[35] Coils and magnets certainly consitute "identifiable electronics," so what is apparently really in view is the "oddly arranged group of electrodes," suggesting that it is not the technology as such that is unusual, but its design and arrangement and combinations. And the description of this odd arrangement and spherical electronics sounds suspiciously like Hans Coler's "coils" and the Shneppeller devices previously examined. So here too, the document seems to point not so much to something extraterrestrial, but to something that, while exotic, was very terrestrial, and uniquely German. It is perhaps even significant that the document mentions a design feasture we encountered in the turbines and rotational devices of Viktor Schauberger: a "helicoid mechanism."[36]

One would expect from such advanced "extraterrestrial" technology such as this at least some sort of solid state electronics and better speeds than a paltry 1,200 MPH and an engine constructed of coils and magnets "oddly arranged." Then there is, from the terrestrial origins point of view another giveaway: "The absence of provisions, berthing compartments and storage areas suggest that this craft may be a short range recconnaissance platform." [37] Certainly this statement could be made to fit with an "ET" explanation, but it is equally true that is is more appropriate to a terrestrial origins interpretation.

---

[34] Ibid., p. 70, par. 7.
[35] Ibid., par. 8.
[36] Ibid.
[37] Ibid., par. 9.

Finally, the oddest mention in the whole of the document's Part II: a "leaf book" whose contents are apparently so sensitive that no part of the presumed summary of is contents is leaked. The entire description is blacked out. This is extremly interesting, and another point of internal contradiction, for in the light of the description of integrated circuitry encountered above and any culture possessing it, digital data storage is possible. Surely an advanced extraterrestrial culture with interplanetary travel capability would have a more advanced technology for data storage than a book. Yet there is no mention in the whole document of anything that resembles digital data storage systems. There are no cassette tapes, no compact disks, no nothing. This is not to say that ET would not have, nor read, books. After all, we posses both technologies, and continue to use both. But in any case, it cannot be denied: a book is a totally terrestrial, and well-known, and old technology.

Perhaps the most interesting technical descriptions, howver, are to be found in those portions describing the "neutronic engine." Eleven components are described:

(1) UF6 (i..e, uranium hexafluoride) in metallic form;
(2) Hydrogen-fluoride gas;
(3) "water" and uranium tetrafluoride;
(4) powdered magnesium and potassium chlorate;
(5) a "metal similar to lead with a chocolate brown color";
(6) U^{235} in metallic form;
(7) a plastic like material similar to (DuPont's) NE 102
(8) beryllium;
(9) pure aluminum;
(10) "thorium isotope material";
(11) plutonium powder.

There are a number of very odd features about this list.

First note that nine of the eleven components of the "neutronic engine" describe wholly terrestrial - though for 1947 - still very advanced technologies.

Second, note that the document states clearly that these elements "were analyzed and found to exist in the small nuetronic

power plant.[38] So the elements were subjected to chemical and presumably other types of analysis, such as spectroscopy. One may even speculate where they were analyzed: close by in the Los Alamos lanoratories, one of the few facilities in the country at that time, and certainly the only one in New Mexico, capable of handling and analyzing such exotic and radioactive material.

It is in this context that the third odd feature becomes evident, for the isotopic form of uranium - U^{235} - is clearly specified, suggesting that the necessary technique of analysis employed was precisly spectroscopy, since chemical analysis cannot separate-isotopes of the same element. We may also assume that this analysis indicated a high degree of purity, since one of the concerns of the scientists involved was precisely that the uranium could be used for a bomb, which means that it was of weapons grade purity. And we may likewise safely assume that the plutonium present was Pu^{240} the stable plutonium isotope.[39]

With this in mind, a question immediately repsents itself: Why is there an ambiguity when it comes to "thorium isotope material?" Was this because it was an unknown isotope? Unlikely, since precision is indicated in the case of the uranium, and implied in the case of the plutonium. Was it therefore not specified for some other reason? We will never know.

This leads to yet another oddity. There is a peculiar blend evident throughout this list of very precise, and very ambiguous, descriptions that, given the importance of the subject matter, should not be glossed over. It may be the case that there was not sufficient time to test and analyze everything precisely, but surely the presence of "thorium isotope material" merited further precision. In this respect, note once again taht uranium tetrafluoride and uranium hexafluoride are both precisely indicated, but again, with an imprecision: what was the isotopic form? This ambiguity is perhaps most evident in the mention of "water," for one is left to guess whether this is ordinary water, or heavily deuterized or tritiumized

---

[38] Ibid., p. 74, par. 18.

[39] Another factor now should be noticed. The presence of these two elements without any mention of proper shielding indicates a serious technical flaw in the document, notwithstanding its external indicators of authenticity.

heavy water. This imprecision occurs in the same context where earlier precision is the order of the day, for in paragraph eight, "heavy water" and "deuterium" are mentioned as the "primary ignitor" of the neutronic engine.[40]

In any case, these nine out of the eleven components are all known terrestrial technology, and given what has been covered in this book previously, weel within known German and American capabilities, and, for that time, only within German or American capabilities. In other words, if these are indicators pointing to a terrestrial origin for the craft, then the only other possible place it can point to besides the United States, is the Nazi secrect weapons project and its possible postwar offshoots. This may be the reason why, then, when the two data-sets come into conflict at various points in the document, the ambiguity is obfuscated in favor of an extraterrestrial hypothesis of the craft's origin.

One final note before proceeding with the examination of other documents from the Cooper-Cantwheel Majic-12 series of paper; the mention of water and uranium tetrafluoride sggests the remote possibility that a highly radioactive solution was being employed, presumably to manipulate neutron emission in conjunction with the hydrodynamic properties of fluids. This manipulation of radioactivity, field effects, and hydrodynamic properties - exotic by even today's standards - was also, as was seen, one apparent principle behind the operation of Kammler's "Bell". Thus, even in its descriptions of the most arcane aspects of the craft, the indications point clearly to Germany.

While all these points constitute to my mind a very strong set of data points coupling the Roswell craft to the secret weapons research of Nazi Germany and therefore to a possible terrestrial origin of "ULAT-1", the document concludes with two very suggestive, and for that day, advanced and revolutionary concepts that favor the "ET" explanation. First, it states clearly that "Human origins may not be constrained to one planet. Our genus may be found among solar systems similar to our own."[41] The only possible foundations for this astonishing conclusion would appear to be the

---

[40] Ibid., p. 70, par. 8.

[41] Ibid., p. 75, par. 5.

autopsies purportedly done on the recovered bodies, but also perhaps based upon anaylsis of the contents of the "leaf book discovered in the craft. But then an even more extraordinary comment follows: "The laws of physics and genetics may have a genesis in a higher structured order that (sic) once previously thought."[42]

In 1947 physics was well on the path toward the grand theoretical constructs of the 1960s, 70s, and 80s, having alrcady seen the higher dimensional theories of Kaluza-Klein and other theories attempting such "higher structured orders." But genetics and biology in general had then no similarly grand and formally explicit conclusions beyond the theory of evolution, which was a long way from maintaining the grand physics-biology union in a higher structured order manifest in the statement. Watson and Crick had yet to announce their discoveries, and Soviet physicists were still decades away from their astonishing work in the physics of living systems and consciousness. So apparently something in that "leaf book" convinced the study group, during the short period from the crash in July to Semptember of 1947 when the report was actually completed, that there was a grander union of physics and biology than anyone could scarcely have imagined.

So what can be concluded from this one document? I think it is safe to say, that taken as a whole, with both data-sets viewed together, that it tends to favor niether the ET explanation nor the terrestrial origins explanation. However, when viewed separately, the biological information certainly tends to favor the ET origins hypothesis, and the technological information a terrestrial - and German - one. If one then places these two facts within the wider context of other events of 1947, and recalls also the fact that the German Paperclip scientists were brought in because what was recovered "looked all too familiar," then in that broad context the document seems to favor the terrestrial hypothesis. And as we have argued, that points clearly to America or Germany as the only two logical places such technology could have originated.

On this speculative reading of the document, it seems clear then that the apparent contradictions are either deliberately created, or at

[42] Ibid., p. 75, par. 6.

the minimum, obfuscated in favor of the ET explanation. The cover-up has already begun. Can this type of analysis be sustained on technological information contained in the other great summary of data, the "Air Accident Report" by General Nathan Twining? Indeed it can.

2. The 16 July 1947 Air Accident Report by General Nathan Twining to Headquarters:

This document constitutes the next focus of technological interest, for it is General Nathan Twining's report to the Air Material Command (AMC) at Wright Field in Dayton, Ohio. Officially titled "Air Accident Report on 'Flying Disc' aircraft near the White Sands Proving Ground, New Mexico," this report is of singular importance, as it contains the first on-site technology descriptions and assessments. In other words, these descriptions occur before the preliminary review of this September report we have just finished examining. Again, the main body of the report is cited almost in full:

> 1. As ordered by Presidential directive, dated 9 July 1947, a preliminary investigation of a recovered "Flying Disc" and remains of a possible second disc, was conducted by the senior staff of this command. The data furnished in this report was provided by the engineering staff personenel of T-2 and aircraft laboratory, Engineering Division T-3. Additional data was supplied by the scientific personnel of the Jet Propulsion Laboratory, CIT and the Army Air Forces Scientific Advisory Group, headed by Dr. Theodore von Karman. Further analysis was conducted by personnel from Research and Development.
>
> 2. It is the collective view of this investigative body, that the aircraft recovered by the Army and Air Force units near Victorio Peak and Socorro, New Mexico, are not of US manufacture for the following reasons:
>
> a. The circular disc-shaped "planform" design does not resemble any design currently under development by this command nor of any Navy project.
>
> b. The lack of any external propulsion system, power plant, intake, exhaust either for propeller or jet propulsion, warrants this view.

c. The inability of the German scientists from Fort Bliss and White Sands Proving Ground to make a positive identification of a secret German V weapon out of these discs. Though the possibility that the Russians have managed to develop such a craft, remains. The lack of any markings, ID numbers or instructions in Cyrillic, has placed serious doubt in the minds of many, that the objects recovered are not of Russian manufacture either.

d. Upon examination of the interior of the craft, a compartment exhibiting a possible atomic engine was discovered. At least this is the opinion of Dr. Oppenheimer (sic) and Dr. von Karman. A possibility exists that part of the craft itself comprises the propulsion system, thus allowing the reactor to function as a heat exchanger and permitting the storage of energy into a substance for later use. This may allow the converting of mass into energy, unlike the release of energy of our atomic bombs. The description of the power room is as follows:

(1) A doughnut shaped tube approximately thirty-five feet in diameter, made of what appears to be a plastic material, surrounding a central core (see sketch in Tab 1) This tube was translucent, approximately one inch this (sic), The tube appeared to be filled with a large rod centered inside the tube, was wrapped in a coil of what appears to be copper material, ran through the circumference of the tube. This may be the reactor control mechanism or a storage battery. There were no moving parts decernable (sic) within the power room nor in MISSING LINE HERE.

(2) This activation of a electrical (sic) potential is believed to be the primary power to the reactor, though it is only a theory at present. Just how a heavy water reactor functions in this environment is unknown.

(3) Underneath the power plant, was discovered a ball-turret, approximately ten feet in diameter. This turret was encompassed by a series of gears that has a unusual (sic) ratio not known by any of our engineers. On the underside of the turret were four circular cavities, coated with some smooth material not identified. These cavities are symetrical (sic) but seem to be movable. Just how is not known. The movement of the turret coincides with the dome-shaped copula compartment above the power room. It is believed that the main prorpulsion system is a Modeless turbine, similar to current development now underway at AMC and the Mogul Project. A possible theory was devised by Dr. August

Steinhof,[43] Dr. Wernher von Braun (sic) and Dr. Theodore von Karman as the craft moves through the air, it somehow draws the oxygen from the atomsphere and by a (sic, et passim) induction process, generates a atomic fusion reaction (see TAB 2). The air outside the craft would thus be ionized, thus propelling the craft forward. Coupled with the circular air foil for lift, the craft would presumably have an unlimited range and air speed This may account for the reported absence of any noise and the apparent blue flame often associated with rapid acceleration.

(4) On the Deck of the power room there are what resembles typewriter keys, possibly reactor/powerplant controls. There were no conventional electronics not (sic) wiring to be seen connecting these controls to the propulsion turret.

e. There is a flight deck located inside the copula section. It is round and domed at the top. The absence of canopy, observation windows/blisters, or any optical projection, lends support to the opinion that this craft is either guided by remote viewing or is remotely controlled.

(1) A semi-circular photo-tube array (possibly television).

(2) Crew compartments were hermetically sealed via a solidification process.

(3) No weld marks, rivets or soldered joints.

(4) Craft components appear to be molded and pressed into perfect fit.[44]

There are a number of very similar, and strikingly dissimilar features between this ealier document and the later September "White Hot Intelligenfce Estimate."

First, it is to be noted that in this very first reoprt there is no mention whatsoever of the extratrerrestrial hypothesis as an explanation of the origin of the craft. Perhaps this is explained by the relatively brief time that had elapsed since the crash and the composition of the report, but it is unlikely for a very important reason. The report clearly states that the "German scientists from Fort Bliss and White Sands Proving Ground" were unable "to make a positive identification of a sceret German V weapon" from the

[43] A Paperclip scientist.

[44] Ibid., pp. 25-26, emphasis added.

discs.[45] This means that the question of origin was in view from the outset, and yet there is no mention of an extraterrestrial hypothesis. This reinforces our previous analysis of the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate", for if the craft was suspected of being extraterrestrial technology from the very beginning, brimming full of ultra-advanced ET technology, then it is very unlikely that the German rocket scientists would have been privy to the discovery at all, given the heavy American compartmentalization of secret research. In other words, to put the point once again, something about the craft immediately suggested a terrestrial and German provenance. By a similar line of reasoning, the German rocket scientists were not able to identify it as any German V-weapon. But this may be obfuscation of a sort, for as Corso has indicated, the Germans clearly told General Twining something that did not make it into either of his reports.

Second, unlike the later "White Hot Intelligence Estimate", the element of "mystification" on the part of the investigators is relatively lacking in this initial report. This may obviously be due to the fact that the craft has not yet been more fully analyzed. Yet, the report itself provides an amount of detail that belies this explanation, for it was apparently known in sufficient detail for von Braun and von Karman - who were unable to identify the craft - to suggest a very radical form of propulsion via a charge differential, a fact that suggests that while they may not have been able to identify it, they at least may have had their strong suspicions.

Third, the strangely and almost single-mindedly "terrestrial" nature of the technology described should be clearly obvious: a simple plastic tube, approximately an inch in diameter, filled with a substance that is apparently water, in the center of which is a rod wrapped with a coil of "what appears to be... copper material."[46] Moreover, apparently enough examination or analysis and speculation had been done for the investigators to conclude that the doughnut reactor was somehow a "heavy water" reactor,[47] and that the German scientists are already thinking in terms of a fusion

---

[45] Ibid., p. 25.
[46] Ibid.
[47] Ibid., p. 26.

rather than a fission reactor. This is perhaps significant, for the equipment described, in the context of fusion, suggests the same apparatus set up, in some respects, as the process later known as cold fusion.[48]

Fourth, it is to be noted that the craft is described in similar terms to those in the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate" in the fact that it has "no weld marks, rivets or soldered joints."[49]

But this similarity highlights the fifth point, and a significant new difficulty. In the previously examined "White Hot Intelligence Estimate," a certain emphasis was placed by that report on the apparent lack of conventional means of control: push-buttons, knobs, toggle switches, and so on. "Biosensory" control was posited, and these two facts supported an extraterrestrial explanation of the craft's origin. Moreover, the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate," it will bee recalled, emphasized the absence of crew quarters, which it will be recalled, suggested a short range reconnaissance platform. However, here in his very first report, Twining states that "crew compartments were hermetically sealed: and that the means of visual steering of the craft was (suggestively) by "remote viewing," followed immediately by mention of "a semi-circular photo-tube array (possibly television)."[50] Thus, either this very first report is describing a different craft than that described in the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate," or a very deliberate change has been made by the time of the latter's composition, which does not mention a "photo-tube array" at all, but stresses rather the complete lack of any such conventional technologies such as vacuum tubes.[51]

---

[48] That von Braun and von Karman are clearly thinking along cold fusion lines is evident from the fact that a mere plastic tube, much less the presumed heavy water within it, would have been blasted away in millionths of a second by the extreme heat present at the initiation of any hot fusion reaction.

[49] Ibid.

[50] Ibid.

[51] It should be noted, however, that the White Hot Intelligence Estimate stresses this lack in connection with the propulsion system, and not the control system, of the craft. It does mention television as a possibility for visual control and coordination of the craft, yet fails to mention the "photo-tube array" of the Air Accident Report.

And finally, the sixth point. In the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate," emphasis is placed on the lack of control features inside the craft. Yet, in the "Air Accident Report," a very conventional, very terrestrial set of "what resembles typewriter keys, possibly reactor/powerplant controls" were found.[52] These very terrestrial sounding "typewriter keys" are not the only piece of hardware that do not sound like ultra-advanced solid state ET technology, for perhaps the most perplexing aspect of the "Air Accident Report's" power plant description is the fact that the "ball-turret" component of the assembly was "encompassed by a series of gears that has an unusual ratio not known by any of our engineers."[53]

Gears!!??

Does this advanced ET heavy water doughnut cold fusion reactor with typewriter keys come with automatic, or just standard?

For the reader who has been paying attention, however, the description of the craft in the "Air Accident Report," as distinct from that in the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate," sounds very similar to descriptions of the various advanced technologies the Nazis were trying to perfect. And the clincher is the "bladeless turbine," that was apparently under development at the Air Materials Command and in the Mogul Project.[54] Viktor Schauberger's "Repulsine" saucer, developed for the Nazis, involved just such a bladeless turbine.

Taken on its own then, the "Air Accident Report" has little in it to suggest an extraterrestrial explanation, and a great deal in it that sounds all too uncomfortably like the secret research of the Kammlerstab. Notably, once again one senses that "conventional" though still highly advanced technologies were not the most unusual feature of the craft to catch the investigators' attention. The unusual aspect that commanded it was rather their unusual and sophisticated combination: doughnut heavy water fusion reactors with gears and ball-turrets.

---

[52] Ibid.
[53] Ibid.
[54] Ibid.

Taken together, these two documents begin to suggest that a "story" is beginning to take shape in the secret counsels of what will become the Majic-12 group.

First, the German Paperclip scientists were brought in, most likely because something about the craft - this very same feature of unusual combinations of technologies - suggested to the high American brass a very terrestrial, very German, origin. Second, while the technologies and their unusual combinations of them suggested by these two documents are not sufficiently advanced to argue persuasively for the ET explanation, they are sufficiently advanced enough to conclude that they constituted a significant national security threat and issue. Somebody, somewhere, must have appeared to the high American brass-in-the-know, and we can only assume that General Twining was one such general officer, that someone somewhere was continuing, independently, the lines of reearch begun by the Kammlerstab. This required in turn a new intelligence and research-development agency with the highest security classification and direct responsibility to the President. In short, //there was an independently surviving Nazi research black project, and if the Roswell crashed vehicle(s) gave sufficient evidence of this fact, then the shock waves this must have sent through the corridors of power in the Pentagon must have been unimagineable. All the better then to cloak the sensational discovery in a multi-layered disinformation operation, to conceal it, as Nick Cook suggested, behind the ET Myth.

But there is another hypothesis that is also suggested by the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate", and that is that very possibly the truth was a combination of the two, that the first crash and recovery took place in Europe, and became the basis of a massive and very secret Nazi black projects effort to back engineer it. As we shall see at the end of this chapter, there is surprising confirmation of this idea from a little suspected source, a source often overlooked in histories of the Second World War and its rapid technological advancements. We will return to further development of this scenario in connection with the Nazi UFO Legend after we have examined the third document dealing with the technological aspects of the Roswell incident. This is

3. The Fall 1952 Majestic Twelve Project First Annual Report:

This report should be viewed in conjunction with the two reports just examined, for it is the considered and calm review, now some five years form the event, of the highest levels of the agency established as a result of the Roswell Incident. As such, its descriptions of the recovered technology are of crucial significance, for by comparison one can ascertain the progress, or lack thereof, made in the intervening years in analyzing the recovered technologies. Moreover, one can analyze the progress, or lack thereof, of the ET interpretation first tenatively suggested in the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate."

At the ouset, The "First Annual Report" clearly rules out a terrestrial explanation almost from the very beginning of the document: "All efforts have been made to identify the country or private concern (which) could have the technical and financial resources necessary to produce such a long-range flight. So far, no country on this earth has the means and the security of its resources to produce such."[55] The chronological progression of the ET hypothesis, from no mention in the "Air Accident Report," to an initially tentaive and later stronger mention in the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate," has now ended with the ET hypothesis alone being the considered view of the group.

The signal question to be addressed in the examination of this document is whether or not the evidence it cites sufficiently supports and compels to that conclusion. Or does it too fall into the pattern of internal conflicts of data-sets evidenced in the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate," presenting evidence that may have more terrestrial, and for that very reason, more sensational and extraordinary implications?

Preceding to the first piece of evidence advanced in favor of its chosen extraterrestrial explanation, the "First Annual Report" like the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate" before it clearly indicates that the recovered bodies are the strongest evidence in favor of that explanation: "The occupants of these panform vehicles are, in most

[55] Ibid., p. 106.

respects, human or human-like. Autopsies, so far indicate, that these being (sic) share the same biological needs as humans."[56] It is to be noted that this is the first piece of evidence presented in the document, and thus to the MJ-12 group, it has already eclipsed in importance the significant technological recoveries.

But then in the very next section, two rather disturbing pieces of information are presented in very succinct fashion, without undo fanfare or preparation in the body of the document preceding them: "MAJESTIC SS&P," we are informed, "are currently focused on Psy-Op development for Cold War (counter-intelligence) activities."[57] Then in the very next sentence comes a stunning admission: "Utilization of Paperclip specialists has yielded valuable results in new weapons research in areas of flight dynamics, biological and chemical agents, mind control, and intelligence gathering techniques."[58]

Ponder what has now been admitted: Majestic-12, allegedly established as a super-secret research, development, and intelligence agency, is already engaged - almost Ahnenerbe style - in psychological operations, employing Nazi scientists and "specialists" in new weapons development, including "mind control" and "intelligence gathering techniques." What has any of this to do with back-engineering alien flying saucers(whether terrestrial or extraterrestrial), unless a psychological warfare operation was considered to be essential for counter-intelligence purposes? Was the "ET" explanation being advanced as an integral component of that operation? The beginning of this agenda was already beginning to make its presence felt as early as the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate," but there is not the slightest hint of it in the "Air Accident Report."[59]

---

[56] Ibid., p. 106.

[57] Ibid., p. 107.

[58] Ibid.

[59] And now another curious feature should be evident. The "Air Accident Report" nowhere mentions any recovered bodies, extraterrestrial or otherwise, certainly a curious omission if in fact there were such bodies present at one of the crash sites. Or was the problem simply that they were the wrong kind of bodies?

A lengthy section of the document then lollows outlining in detail the various areas for long-range technological exploitation and development, ranging provocatively enough from "retro-viruses" and other biological warfare and pharmaceutical development, to minaturization of "atomic bomb components" and "aircraft and missile design," to "new machining techniques...for high-temperature alloys and titanium" for "space exploration and hypersonic dynamics."[60] Clearly by the time of this "First Annual Report" a great deal of research has already been done. But the resemblance with the broad mission brief and portfolio of Kammler's think tank is readily apparent, doubtless because of the presence of the Paperclip "specialists" within the organization, for in five short years, what began as a "modest" back-engineering and technology recovery black project has ballooned into a mega-bureaucracy coordinating almost all broad areas of American black projects secret weapons research. Minus the death camps, of course, Majic-12 is almost the mirror image of the Kammlerstab. Is it the presence of Nazis, working in the deepest recesses of these black projects, that explains the US military's experimentation on Black American and other minority US citizens and solders, groups that such Nazis considered to be racially inferior? It is a profound moral question that cannot be pondered too long.

In any case, the document indicates that the propulsion technology of the craft is a major focus of effort:

> The AEC and NEPA are currently conducting research for advanced technologies in atomic engines and radical propulsion studies. Systems studies at Los Alamos, N.M., Aak Ridge, Tenn., and at Langley, Va., are attempting to duplicate the water drive and plastic core elements found on the engine being kept at HAFB. Intergration (Sic) of hydrogen base fuels and electro-hydrodynamic technology, may open up for us development of super-aerodynes with mach 5 capabilities.[61]

---

[60] Ibid., pp. 108-109.

[61] Ibid., p. 110, f J.

The document then notes that the intention of the "visitors" does not appear to be conquest, since it would be easily within "their" capabilities if "they" chose to do so.[62]

Placing the whole project and its associated agencies at a level of classification higher than "that of the H-Bomb development,"[63] The "First Annual Report" then provides a rationale for its policy of strict denial of Roswell and similar types of events, predicting collapse of cultural confidence in familiar institutions such as science and religion.[64] So far, so good for the ET explanation.

But then at this juncture the technological "Annexes" are appended, the first of which, Annex A, contains information on the recovered craft and their occupants.

1. The Panel's review of the AEC and AFSWP investigation of Site L-1 and he Air Force Site L-2, has led the Panel to conclude that the objects under study, are the result of a high altitude ejection of a escape (sic) cylinder from a fatal mid-air collision of two unidentified circular planform aircraft of interplanetary nature.
2. Of particular interest to the Panel was site L-2, located at Lat 33-40-31, Long 106-28-29, as this site yielded the most material for analysis.
3. Site L-2 may be closely associated with Site L-l, and debris pattern suggests that the craft hit the ground at a sharp angle and continued to remain airborne until coming to rest at site L-2.
4. The craft found at Site L-2, is either the remains of a rocket-plane, or a powered glider. What remained of the power plant was examined and determined to be of a magnetic drive propulsion powered by a fusion reactor of sorts.
5. Lack of wiring, fuel systems, cables, motors, hydraulics, intakes, exhaust, and surface controls, strongly suggests that the craft was designed to travel outside of our atmosphere.
6. The second craft that impacted at Site L-3, provided very little evidence that it too was similar in design, as the impact was vertical in nature and at very high speed. It is believed that the debris discovered on 2 July 1947, by a local rancher was the result of a mid-air collision with an X-plane from HAFB; another unidentified object; or possibly collided with both. Radar film and

---

[62] Ibid., par. K.
[63] Ibid., par. L.
[64] Ibid., par. H.

tower logs do not explainthe merhing three radar targets prior to collision and subsequent crashes.

7. There were - five recovered bodies, two of which were found in a severaly damaged escape cylinder, and the remaining three were found some distance away from the cylinder. All five appeared to have suffered from suden decompression and heat suffication (sic) (recovery and autopsies of the occupants are covered in detail in a separate study GRAY SUIT within Projects 612 and 621, ULATT EXPLOITATION-MAJESTIC SERIES 4, P. 40-102), as a result of damage sustained from unknown causes.
8. The Panel was concerned over the contamination of several SED personnel upon coming in contact with debris near the power plant. One technician was overcomed and collapsed (sic) when he attempted the removal of a body. Another medical technician went into a coma four hours after placing a body in a rubber body-bag. All four were rushed to Los Alamos for observation. All four later died of seizures and profuse bleeding. All four were wearing protective suits when they came into contact with body fluids from the occupants.
9. Autopsies on the four dead SED technicians are not conclusive. It is believed that the four may have suffered from some form of toxin or a highly contagious desease(sic). Tissue samples are currently being kept at Fort Detrick, Md.
10. The panel was also concerned with the detection of air-borne monitor flights over the Site L-2. Radiation readings indicate a high neutron count was recorded as the plane flew over the site. Neutron count dropped off as the plane flew a considerable distance from the site. A report has been filed with the USAIDS.
11. Detection of a high altitude explosion was recorded by a Project MOGUL constant level ballon on 4 July 1947. Radar from White Sands Proving Ground and HAFB also detected a surge.
12. Parachute recovery team from HAFB were dispatched to Site L-2. Upon arrival, the team, realizing the nature of the crash, radioed instructions and marked the crash site for the investigators that arrived later.
13. In the opinion of the senior AEC medical officer, current medical equipment and supplies are wholly inadequate in dealing with a large scale outbreak of alien virus.
14. Facilities at Los Alamos and Mayo clinics were considered as lacking in the current climate.

15. On 26 September 1947, the first meeting of the NSC-1 was held to discuss the Now Mexico incidents and how to implement the policy established by MJ-12 SS&P.[65]

What emerges from this annex is actually very little new technical data, but the lingering sense of anbiguity that hovered over the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate" is resolved by the new information that there were two, possibly more, craft involved, one of which was a powered "glider".[66]

Note again that the strongest evidence presented for the extraterrestrial hypothesis in the document is the recovery of bodies and their apparently quite toxic effects on humans. This scenario is not far-fetched, for similar results attended the first contact between Europeans and American Indians, whose respective systems had built up different immunities.

Finally, note the strange transformation of Project MOGUL from a program apparently initially involving bladeless turbines, to a project involving the launching of constant altitude balloons to monitor Soviet nuclear tests!

So what can one make of all three documents together? As we have already observed, theere is a curious progression, from the initial "Air Accident Report", in which an etraterrestrial explanation is not even mentioned, to the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate," in which both options are left open initially, but in which the ET hypothesis becomes the privileged model of interpretation, to the "First Annual Report", where only the ET hypothesis is seriously entertained.

This highlights a possible scenario of what happened.

Let us first consider what happened at the Roswell incident along the ET paradigm. This paradigm and interpretation have gained such status within the UFO community that, extraordinary as it is, it now seems almost commonplace. Unusual debris of some strange material is discovered by a local rancher in a field. Bodies

---

[65] Ibid., pp. 112-113, emphasis added.

[66] It should be noted, however, that the clear implication of the language of the "Air Accident Report," and even more of the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate," is that there are more than one crash site, therefore strong suggesting more than one crashed vehicle.

are found and autopsied. They are small and human-like and cause the deaths of some of the medical personnel who first handled them. A propulsion unit is found that is highly advanced. The story goes out on the newspaper wire: the army has recovered a crashed flying saucer, while at the same time General Twining is issuing his "Air Accident Report" in which no mention is made of the ET hypothesis at all. Witnesses are interviewed and the public reaches a conclusion: We have been visited by ET. And this is indeed a plausible scenario that fits some of the facts alleged in the reports on the incident.

But there are considerable technological problems with this interpretation. If the crashed vehicles were even suspected of being of ET origin, then why call in the German Paperclip scientists, and then keep them in the loop long after the ET hypothesis has become the official though top secret explanation? It is far more likely that they were consulted because some at a very high level in the US military had seen this technology before. In fact, if it was German saucer or some later development that crashed in New Mexico, if the "leaf book" mentioned by the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate" was "alien" in the sense of foreign but terrestrial, then the miltary's alarm becomes paradoxically more understandable. In 1947 the war was already two years over. Yet, here was a crashed vehicle with all the signatures one came to recognize from Kammler's advanced research projects. Where did it come from? A cover-up on this view would have been as necessary, if not much more so, from the military's point of view as on the view that it was a crashed ET vehicle. In this event, the strangeness of the recovered technology would have suggested a plausible foundation for a deep layer of disinformation planted in the reports themselves, to be disseminated when weather balloons and monkey bodies were no longer capable of holding back the ET flood. There would have been no records of such an understanding,[67] it would have been arrived at in oral discussions, and "worked into" the otherwise reliable information contained in its classified reports.

---

[67] In this respect, consider carefully the statements of Colonel Corso in the epigrams that began this chapter.

In this respect, it is perhaps significant that some contemporary observers of the American space program and its odd thirty-year long "holding pattern" and tapestry of inconsistencies, lies, and obfuscations have long suspected that there are indeed two space programs inside the US government, the "public NASA one, and a quasi-independent one based deep within covert and black projects. In 1970, a curious document based upon the Garrison Investigation's voluminous files, called the "Nomenclature of an Assassination Cabal", otherwise known as the Torbitt document, was circulated, alleging a connection between this secret space program and the murder of President John F. Kennedy. Radio talk show conspiracy theorist Mae Brussel concurred: the secret space program was being run inside and quasi-independently of the public NASA program, and both were being coordinated by Wernher von Braun.

In this connection it is perhaps informative that the last document in the Cantwheel Majestic-12 documents is a Top Secert memo from November 12, 1963, - a scant ten days before the assassination - from President Kennedy to the Director of Counter Intelligence of the Central Intelligence Agency:

> SUBJECT: Classification review of all UFO intelligence files affecting National Security.
>
> As I had discussed with you previously, I have initiated ???????? and have instructed James Webb to develop a program with the Soviet Union in joint space and lunar exploration. It would be very helpful if you would have the high threat cases reviewed with the purpose of identification of bona fide as opposed to classified CIA and USAF sources. It is important that we make a clear distinction between the knowns and the unknowns in the event the Soviets try to mistake our extended cooperation as a cover for intelligence gathering of their defence (sic) and space programs.
>
> When this data has been sorted out, I would like you to arrange a program of data sharing with NASA where Unknowns are a factor. This will help NASA mission directors in their defensive responsibilties. I would like an interim report on the data review no later than February 1, 1964.
>
> /s/ John F. Kennedy.[68]

[68]Ibid., p. 190.

A program of joint space and lunar exploration with the Soviet Union would clearly have placed Kennedy at cross-purposes with Lyndon Johnson and others who viewed the space program as the next great military development and arms race, control of which would assure earth dominance. Such a declassification review and potential release of data would also have brought Kennedy into sharp conflict and cross-purposes with the Majic-12 Group in general, and its Paperclip "specialists" in particlar, who viewed space almost exclusively as a military venture.

D. Russians, Terrorists, Asteroids and Aliens: The Rosin Affidavit

But perhaps the most chilling and corroborative bit of evidence of a secret space program and agenda was left by Wernher von Braun himself. Dr. Carol Rosin, a close associate of the former Nazi cum-NASA director and the first woman corporate manager of Fairchild Industries, gave an affidavit to Dr. Steven Greer's "Disclosure Project" in the Spring of 2001. Rosin recounts something that she alleges von Braun repeatedly told her:

> What was most interesting to me was a repetitive sentence that he said to me over and over again during the approximately four years that I had the opportunity to work with him. He said the strategy that was being used to educate the public and decision makers was to use scare tactics.... That was how we identify an enemy.
>
> The strategy that Werner von Braun taught me was that first the Russians are going to be considered the enemy....
>
> Then terrorists would be identified, and that was soon to follow... Then we were going to identify third-world country "crazies". We now call them Nations of concern. But he said that would be the third enemy against whom we would build space-baed weapons.
>
> The next enemy was asteroids. Now, at this point he kind of chuckled the first time he said it. Asteroids - against asteroids we are going to build space-based weapons.[69]
>
> And the funniest one of all was what he called aliens, extratererstrials. That would be the final scare. And over and over

[69] Implying, incidentally, an immense destructive power - a one-shot planet-busting capacity - for such weapons, for such power they would have to possess to be of any use against an asteroid large enough to destroy the earth, or large enough to threaten all life on it.

> during the four years that I knew him and was giving speeches for him, he would bring up that last card. "And remember Carol, the last card is the alien card. We are going to have to build space-based weapons against aliens and all of it is a lie."[70]

Russians, Terrorists. Crazed Third World Dictators. Asteroids. Aliens.

It is significant that President George W. Bush, shortly after his inauguration, made the Army's chief of space operations the Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff, signaling the first time in history a military space commander has headed such a combined staff position. It is also significant too that almost immediately thereafter missile defense - Ronald Reagan's old Strategic Defense Initiative - once again became a high military and national security priority. And it is perhaps the most significant of all that the tragic events of September 11, 2001, marked the transition from Russians to Terrorists, as the official enemy of choice, and then, with the invasions of Afghanistan and Iraq, almost immediately to Dictators of "Nations of Concern."

E. An Unlikely Source: Benito Mussolini's Secret RS/33 UFO-Marconi Study Group: The Original Italian "MJ-12" Documents

But how could Dr. Wernher von Braun, Paperclip rocket "specialist", speaking in the early 1970s, be so exactingly prescient in his prediction of the exact sequence of "enemies"? One answer, that of the "Torbitt" document, is of course that he himself was a senior "insider", privy to the plots and canards of the innermost conspiracies driving western politics and culture.

However, another source of material has emerged only recently that might afford a clue as to how long UFOs have been being secretly studied and attempts made to back engineer them for some time. In the year 2000, very secret papers from the archives of the Italian government were deliberately leaked to Italian UFOfologists. Unlike the MJ-12 documents, however, these documents were not

---

[70] Steven M, Greer, M.D., Disclosure: Military and Government Witnesses reveal the Greatest Secrets in Modern History (Crozer, Virginia: 2001), pp. 255-256.

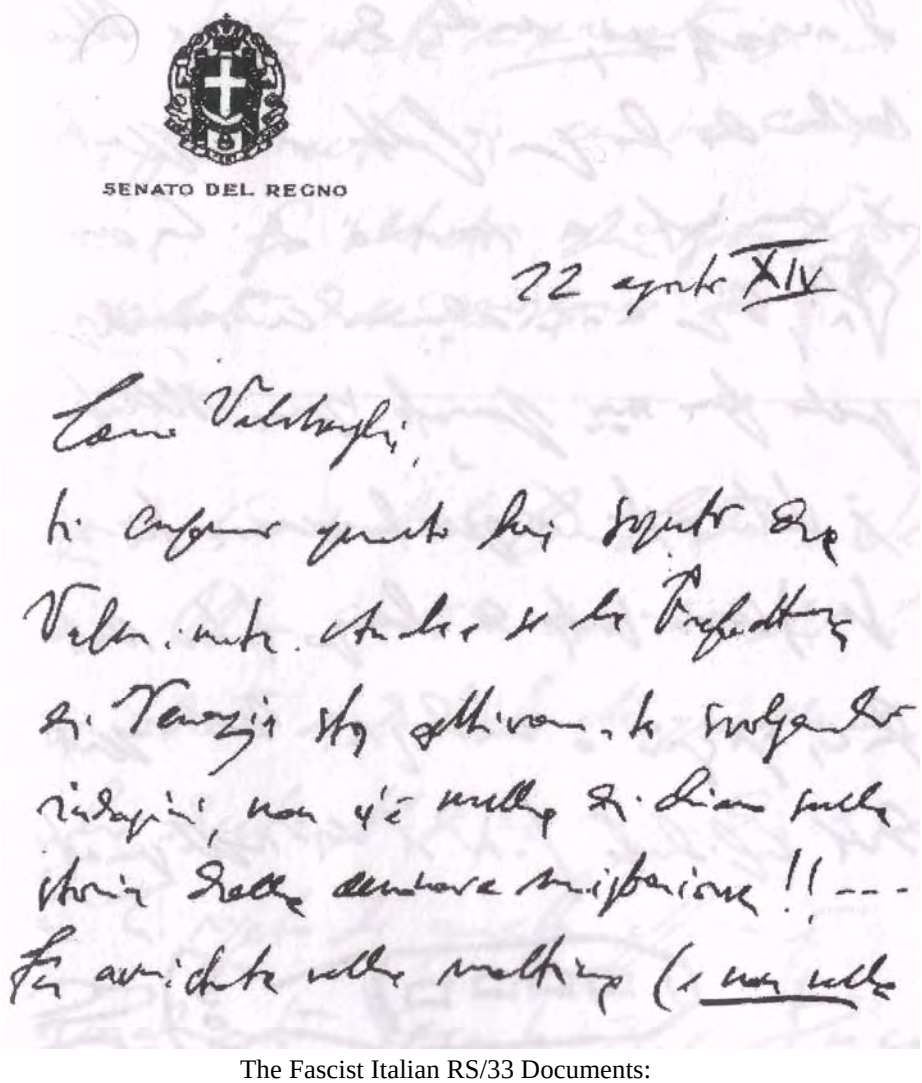
films, nor photocopies, but the actual handwritten notes and original files and telegrams, on original paper, with original ink. This allowed documents experts from the University of Bologna to do an exhaustive analysis of the paper and inks and style of writing of the telegrams. The conclusion? The documents were undoubtedly authentic.

The story they contained was nothing less than explosive, for they told how, in response to various UFO sightings in the north of Fascist Italy in 1933, and Italian Air Force scrambles to intercept the intruders, that Benito Mussolini had established the first state level black projects UFO study group, under the direction of the famous Italian physicist and inventor Marconi. The group, like a much later American project, assembles reports, photographs, witness testimonies, and developed a classification system for various types of sightings. The group was classified at the highest level by Mussolini. When Fascist Italy and Nazi Germany concluded the Rome-Berlin Axis, Mussolini transferred, often literally shipping this treasure trove of information to Nazi Germany, where it most likely made its way eventually into the hands of the SS. In any case, On February 23, 1941, as the war clouds between the Axis and the United States were growing darker, Mussolini made one of his characteristically blunt statements. He said, "It's far more likely that the United States will be invaded by unknown but warlike inhabitants from the planet Mars, who will come down from the starry space on unimaginable flying fortresses, than from the soldiers of the Axis."

A strange statement indeed, even for a man who excelled in making unpredictable pronouncements.

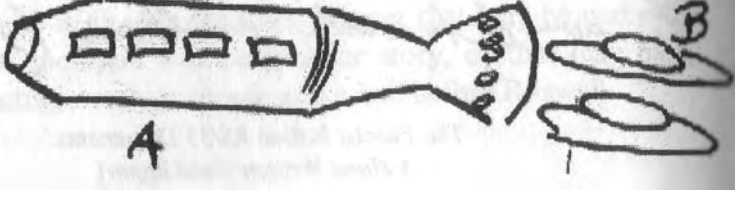
What does all this suggest? First, that at the deepest level, a profoundly advanced terrestrial rather than extraterrestrial technology was behind at least some of the facts associated with Roswell. This technology and its use in unusual combinations points quite clearly to Germany. Second, it means that at a level still deep, but less so, there is an extraterrestrial aspect that may be part of a disinformation operation and deep-cover story, or that may have entered the picture nearly a decade and a half before Roswell.

In any case, in the light of the fact that as more and more documents are leaked, released, or declassified from the World War Two era, perhaps the most significant lesson to be learned is that one should perhaps be more cautious in ascribing an "ET" origin to such events and sightings without first having considered the terrestrial alternatives, no matter how disquieting those alternatives maybe.


SENATO DEL REGNO

22 agosto XIV

The Fascist Italian RS/33 Documents:
A Hand Written Field Report


B
A

SENATO DEL REGNO

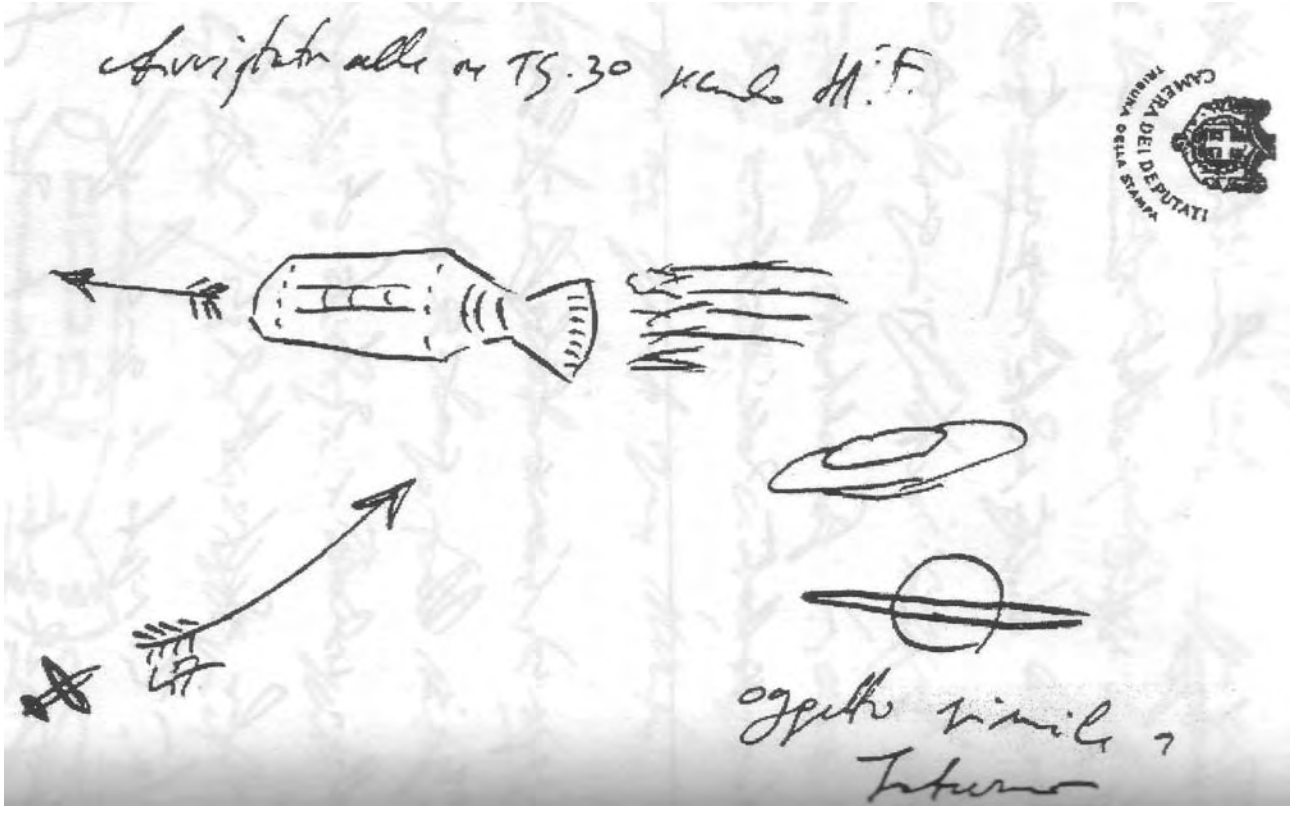
Partecipo con gran piacere di fotografia.
Ho fatto molte scelte alcune con dolcezza,
per la difficoltà riscontrata a il
fuoco a fuoco alti. Ho cercato
i suoni. Ho ritenuto che fosse fotografia
fosse rotonda del campione di

---

impegno d'amicizia Lido e Ve-
nezia. Non cercate mai di fa
altri ubriachi e subito di quello che
fa. Ho detto di ringraziare a
nota. Ti vedo di quella stessa è
particolarmente legata del Duca.

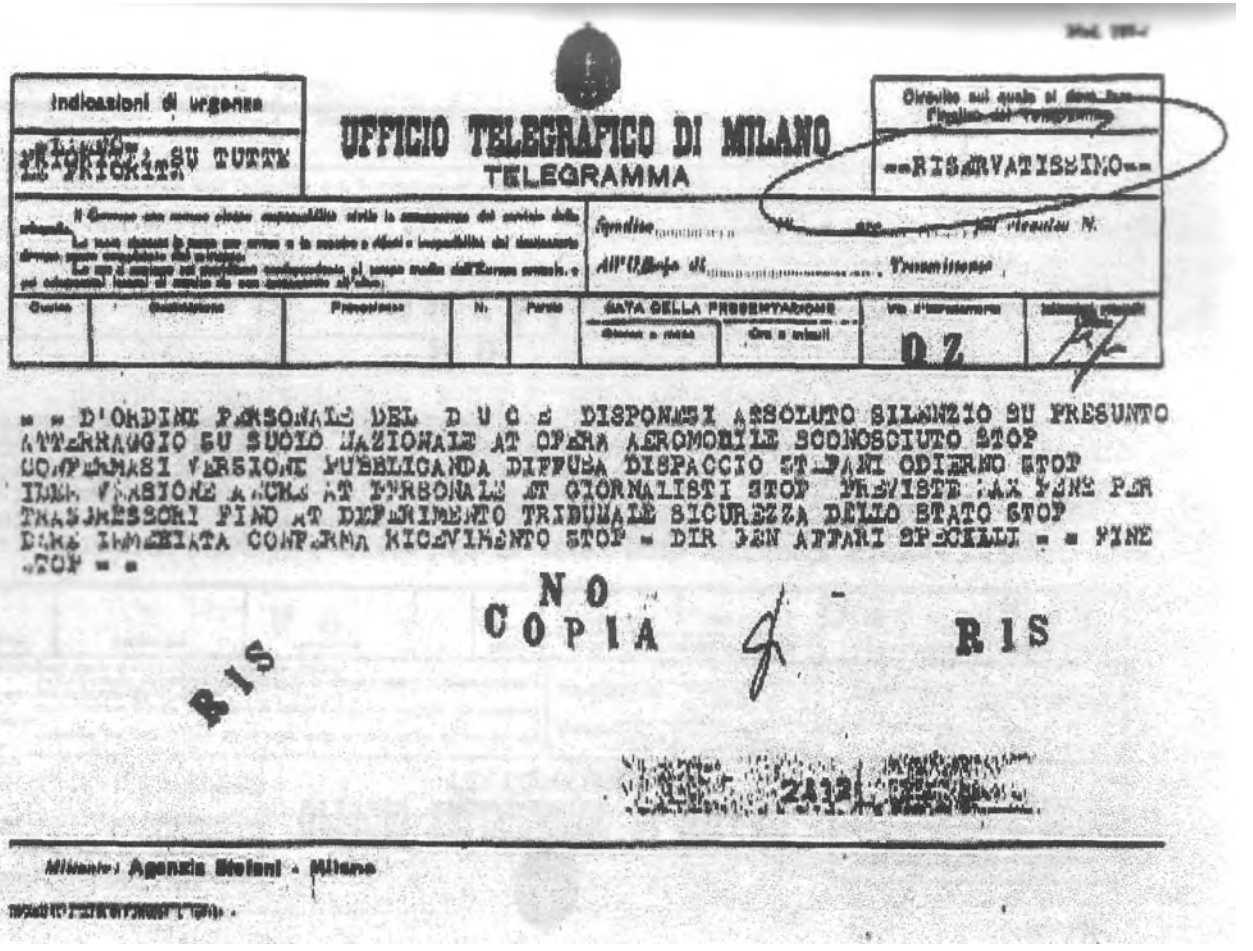
Ad

Avvistato alle ore 15.30 circa M.F.



CAMERA DEI DEPUTATI
TRIBUNA DELLA STAMPA

oggetto simile a
Saturno



Indicazioni di urgenza

PRIORITY SU TUTTE LE PRIORITA'

UFFICIO TELEGRAFICO DI MILANO

TELEGRAMMA

Circuito sul quale si deve fare l'inoltro del telegramma

--RISERVATISSIMO--

Spedito ... alle ... del mese ... Numero N.

All'Ufficio di ... Trasmissione

Cifre	Parole	DATA DELLA PRESENTAZIONE	Via d'istradamento
			QZ

= = D'ORDINE PERSONALE DEL D U C E DISPONESI ASSOLUTO SILENZIO SU PRESUNTO ATTERRAGGIO SU SUOLO NAZIONALE AT OPERA AEROMOBILE SCONOSCIUTO STOP QUALUNQUE VERSIONE PUBBLICANDA DIFFUSA DISPACCIO STEFANI ODIERNO STOP UNICA VERSIONE ANCHE AT PERSONALE AT GIORNALISTI STOP PREVISTE MAX PENE PER TRASGRESSORI FINO AT DEFERIMENTO TRIBUNALE SICUREZZA DELLO STATO STOP DIRA IMMEDIATA CONFERMA RICEVIMENTO STOP - DIR DEN AFFARI SPECIALI - = FINE STOP = =

NO COPIA

RIS

RIS

Milano - Agenzia Stefani - Milano

Indicazioni di urgenza	UFFICIO TELEGRAFICO DI MILANO TELEGRAMMA	Cifrato nel quale si deve fare l'inoltro del Telegramma
==ALTO== PRIORITA' SU TUTTE LE PRIORITA'		==RISERVATISSIMO==

Spedito 13.6 in 33-XI alle 17.07 pel ricevuto N.

All'Ufficio di TUTTI Trasmissione TR.C.EE/1

Gruppi	Destinazione	Precedenza	N.	Parole	DATA DELLA PRESENTAZIONE Giorno e mese	Ora e minuti	Via Precedenza	Speciale Via
							OZ	RIS

= = D'ORDINE PERSONALE DEL D U C E DISPONESI IMMEDIATO DIGESI IMMEDIATO ARRESTO DIFFUSIONE NOTIZIA RELATIVA AT AEROMOBILE NATURA ET PROVENIENZA SCONOSCIUTE DI CUI AT DISPACCIO STEFANI DATA ODIERNA ORE 7 ET 30 STOP DISPONESI ISTANTANEA RIFUSIONE EVENTUALI PIOMBI GIORNALI RECANTI DETTA NOTIZIA STOP PREVISTE MAX PENE PER TRASGRESSORI FINO AT DEFERIMENTO TRIBUNALE SICUREZZA DELLO STATO STOP DARE IMMEDIATA CONFERMA RICEVIMENTO STOP = = DIR GEN AFFARI SPECIALI = = FINE STOP

N O

C O P I A

9

Mittente: Agenzia Stefani - Milano

Mod. 186-I

Indicazioni di urgenza

P.I.P.O.

PRIORITARIO TUTTE

UFFICIO TELEGRAFICO DI MILANO

TELEGRAMMA

Circuito sul quale si deve fare l'inoltro del Telegramma

RISERVATISSIMO

Il Governo non assume alcuna responsabilità circa la consegna del presente dispaccio.

Le tasse devono essere pagate per intero e le aggiunte e rifusi a pagamento del destinatario devono essere corrisposte dal mittente.

La via è scelta dall'ufficiante esclusivamente al nostro ufficio dell'Ente mittente, a pei telegrammi interni di regola da uno qualunque di essi.

Spedito 15.6 33-XI ore 16.00 per circuito N.

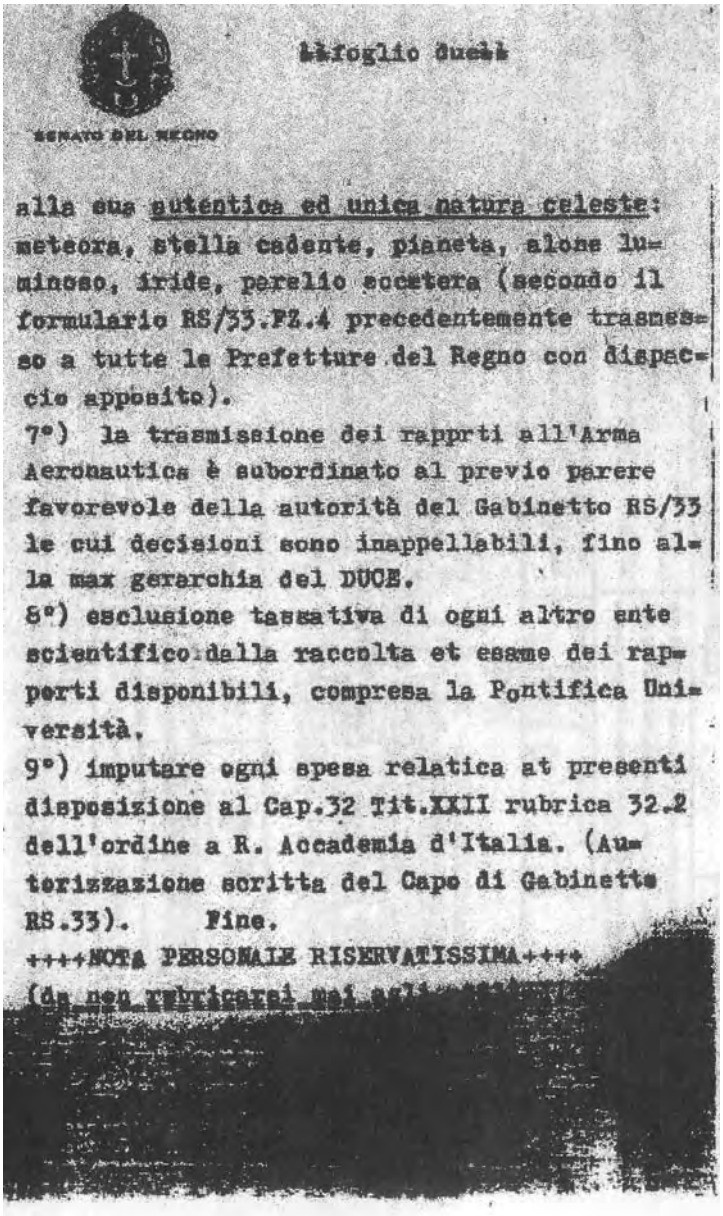
All'Ufficio di TUTTI Trasmissione TR.C.66/1

Operato	Destinazione	Provenienza	N.	Parole	DATA DELLA PRESENTAZIONE Giorno e mese	Ora e minuti	Via d'inoltramento	Numero precedente
							OZ	RIS

= = D'ORDINE SUPERIORE DISPONESI TRATTARE MODO SEGUENTE NOTIZIA DIFFUSA DIER.COJO STEFANI NR.66/3/1.C ODIERNO DUE PUNTI AEREOMOBILE DI CUI SOPRA RICONOSCIUTO PER METEORA DICESI METEORA DA OSSERVATORIO ASTRONOMICO BRERA SOOBP STOP DARE AT NOTIZIA MINIMA RILEVANZA GRAFICA STOP NON DICESI NON DOVRANNO RETTIFICA STOP MINIMIZZARE STOP DARE IMMEDIATA CONFERMA RICEVIMENTO STOP = = DIR GEN AFFARI SPECIALI = = FINE STOP = =

NO
COPIA

Mittente: Agenzia Stefani - Milano.



Littoglio Duce

SENATO DEL REGNO

alla sua autentica ed unica natura celeste: meteora, stella cadente, pianeta, alone luminoso, iride, perelio eccetera (secondo il formulario RS/33.FZ.4 precedentemente trasmesso a tutte le Prefetture del Regno con dispaccio apposito).

7°) la trasmissione dei rapprti all'Arma Aeronautica è subordinato al previo parere favorevole della autorità del Gabinetto RS/33 le cui decisioni sono inappellabili, fino alla max gerarchia del DUCE.

8°) esclusione tassativa di ogni altro ente scientifico dalla raccolta et esame dei rapporti disponibili, compresa la Pontifica Università.

9°) imputare ogni spesa relatica at presenti disposizione al Cap.32 Tit.XXII rubrica 32.2 dell'ordine a R. Accademia d'Italia. (Autorizzazione scritta del Capo di Gabinetto RS.33). Fine.

++++NOTA PERSONALE RISERVATISSIMA++++

(da non rubricarsi mai agli

The Fascist Italian RS/33 Documents:
Portions of a Memorandum

REGNO DEL REGNO

++NOTA PERSONALE RISERVATISSIMA++

1°) Avvisare il Prefetto.

2°) Disporre immediato recupero dell'aereomobile .

3°) Disporre immediato fermo di tutti i testimoni. Incaricare speciale sezione RS/33 dell'OVRA, presente in ogni capoluogo provinciale (o sua sottosezione).

4°) Indirizzare ogni rapporto (con qualifica di MAX SEGRETEZZA e PRECEDENZA SU TUTTE LE PRIORITA') all'Ufficio Meteorologico Centrale, presso l'Universitá la Sapienza di Roma. Esclusiva pertinenza: Gabinetto RS/33.

5°) Impedire d'ufficio la diffusione di ogni notizia, segnatamente sulla stampa.

6°) Al fine di cui at punto precedente, occorre pubblicare, di tanto in tanto, brevissimi articoli in cui il fenomeno è riportato

SENATO DEL REGNO

Caro De Santi,
ti trasmetto, come richiesto e concordato a voce, la nota per tua regola.
Non farne copie. Non parlarne neppure al tuo vice. Per ogni questione che abbia a che fare col Gabinetto RS/33, passa prima da me. Ho battuto io personalmente a macchina queste righe per non esporle all'occhio (bistrato ma femmineo/...) delle mie segretarie. Quindi, regolati di conseguenza...

17.

THE KECKSBURG ACORN RINGS THE BELL

"When you started on the path that you did, sooner or later the trail was going to lead you to Germany. "
Nick Cook, The Hunt for Zero Point[1]

"This is a story of how key Nazis.... anticipated military disaster and laid plans to transplant Nazism, intact but disguised, in havens in the West... "
Mae Brussel, Rebel Magazine[2]

A. The "Bell"

The most sensational piece of information on Nazi secret research to come out since the reunification of Germany - indeed, since the origins of the Nazi "UFO" Legend itself- is the story told by Nick Cook in his Quest for Zero Point, which appeared in the U.K. in 2001. The story is, additionally, the only real solid piece of corroboration of the Nazi UFO Legend to appear since the war, based, as as it is, on a secret and recently declassified Polish war crimes trial affadavit of a former SS general.

"The Bell" (German: die Glocke) represented something at the very pinnacle of Kammler's grizzly and super-secret SS "wonderweapons" empire. Cook's book represents the only publicly accessible information on this bizarre object in the English language, the equally macabre experimentation that surrounded it, and the stringent security the SS held it under. The following are the salient features of The Bell, according to Cook:

(1) The Belli was reportedly a metallic object, approximately 9' in diameter and 12-15' tall;
(2) It loocked like a "Bell", hence its codcname to the Germans, die Glocke;

---

[1] Nick Cook, The Hunt for Zero Point, p. 270.
[2] Cited in Jonathan Vankin, Conspiracies. Crimes, and Cover-ups, p. 104.

(3) It was comprised ot two counter-rotating cylinders, rotating a purplish liquid-metallic looking substance code-named "Xerum 525" by the Germans, at high speeds;[3]

(4) "Xerum 525" was apparently highly radioactive, being purple in color, and housed in cylinders with lead lining 3 cm thick;[4]

(5) The Bell apparently required high amounts of electrical power in its operation;[5]

(6) During use, it could only be run for approximately one to two minutes, as it apparently gave off strong radiation and/or other electromagnetic or unknown field effects;[6]

(a) Several scientist died on its first operation;[7]

(b) Subsequent tests included various plants and animals, all of which decomposed into a blackish goo and without normal putrefaction, within a matter of a few minutes or hours after exposure to its field effects when in operation;[8]

(c) Technicians near the Bell during these experiments reported metallic tastes in their mouths after being exposed to it;[9]

(d) The chamber in which the Bell was tested was lined with ceramic bricks and rubber mats, and had to have its rubber matting removed and burned after each test, and it was subsequently washed down with brine by inmates from nearby concentration camps;[10]

(6) All the scientists and witnesses who saw or worked on the Bell were murdered by the SS as the war neared its end;[11]

---

[3] Cook, op. cit., p. 192.

[4] Ibid.

[5] Ibid., pp. 182, 197

[6] Ibid., pp. 192-193

[7] Ibid., p. 193.

[8] Ibid., p. 192.

[9] Ibid., p. 193.

[10] Ibid., p. 192.

[11] Ibid., p. 184. It is due to the fact that the Bell's scientists were murdered that we know anything about it at all, for the chief executioner, SS General Sporrenburg, who was tasked by Kammler with the murders, gave the

(7) The Hell was transplanted out of Silesia to a destination that has never been discovered. The Bell, along with General Kammler himself, simply disappear entirely from history, never to be seen again.
(8) A strange "henge" like structure was constructed by the Germans out of reinforced concrete near the facility where the Bell was located and tested. This structure resembled a test rig for the possible test of extremely powerful propulsion devices.[12]

Cook also notes that, at the end of the war, Kammler had special jurisdiction over a secret "SS evacuation command" that had been personally established by Reichsleiter Martin Bormann in great secrecy. This command included jurisdiction over all of Nazi Germany's heavy-lift ultra-long range transport aircraft, including the Ju-290 and the six engined monster, the Ju-390, that we encountered in part one. These planes were based at the end of the war quite near the secret underground facility where the Bell was being tested.

Before proceeding, it would be useful to note a few things about this strange list of properties.

First, whatever the Bell was, Kammler's SS apparently thought its secrets were so valuable, that anyone connected with its construction and/or testing had to be executed at the end of the war to prevent these from being leaked, presumably to the Russians, since the Bell was located and tested in Silesia, in what would later become Poland and East Germany.

Second, we note again the use of concentration camp inmates to perform the dangerous, and one can only presume, eventually lethal, operation of cleaning the test chamber after each experimentation with the Bell. This fact places this mysterious object firmly within Kammler's SS secret weapons black projects empire. It is entirely possible that the Bell represented something so sophisticated in terms of its principles of operation, that the then

---

only known tesimony and descriptions of the Bell in his affidavit to a post-war Polish war crimes trial, for which he was convitcd and executed.

[12] Cook, op. cit, pp. 197-198.

existing technology could not offer a sufficient means of protection for the important personnel involved in the experiments. Hence, concentration camp inmates may have been used as fodder to enable the experiments to go forward. Any breakthroughs the Bell represented were thus accomplished by this means, at enormous human cost.

Finally, certain properties about the Bell should be noted, since they constitute unusual data points that will be examined in connection with the Kecksburg "UFO crash". These are:

- Heavy electrical power consumption;
- Rotation of a radioactive liquid in two counter-rotating cylinders;
- An unusual radioactive liquid metal of unknown composition;
- Its location in a chamber lined with ceramic bricks and rubber mats.

The rotation of the object, and presumably the radioactive liquid-metal called "Xerum 525", suggests that the Germans were investigating the inertial and vortex properties of radioactive material when subjected to high speed rotation, as well as the resulting field effects. It is likely that this rotation was caused by passing a current through the liquid - hence the high power consumption - but the possibility of mechanical rotation should not be ruled out in addition to this, as German progress in jet engine turbines and uranium centrifuges would have given them the experience to construct very high speed turbines for rotating such material for study. In this sense, it is possible that the Bell was nothing more than two counter-rotating ultra-high speed turbines That is to say, the Bell may have been an ultra high speed electro-mechanical turbine of some sort, an offshoot, perhaps, of German centrifuge technology development.

The housing of this device in an underground chamber lined with ceramic brick and rubber mats suggests that it gave off extremely strong electro-magnetic or electro-static field effects as well as high heat when in operation. The reporting of metallic tastes

in the mouths of what few surviving personnel there are suggests this. The quick decay without apparent putrefaction of organic material within its field suggests effects that some would associate with scalar waves.

But what was the mysterious "Xerum 525"? When I first read of this strange material, I thought it might be some radioactive isotope of mercury, or possibly a more radioactive substance in chemical solution of some sort. It is perhaps worth noting that recently a strange substance known as "red mercury", or mercury antominate oxide, has been alleged to have strong neutron emitting properties when subjected to sudden explosive stress, and is alleged to be a non-fissile method of triggering the enormous fusion reactions of hydrogen bombs, as well as being able, in its own right, of fission explosions in the small kiloton range. Perhaps the Nazis had stumbled onto a similar such substance during the war.

It was on the basis of certain features of the above lists of the Bell's properties that I hypothesized in my previous book, The Giza Death Star Deployed, that the object that crashed in the famous Kecksburg UFO crash retrieval case might have been the Bell itself. In that book, I did not explore that hypothesis, leaving it for "another book." Well, this is that "other book", and it is now necessary to examine the odd data points that seem to connect these two mysterious objects.

B. The UFO Crash and Retrieval at Kecksburg, Pennsylvania, December 1965

Twenty years after Kammler's "Bell" went missing, a remarkably similar object reportedly crashed in Kecksburg, Pennsylvania, in a wooded area in the country. The story of the Kecksburg incident begins at approximately 4:45 PM, December 9, 1965. From northern Canada to western Pennsylvania, thousands of witnesses described "an orange fireball tearing acoss the evening sky towards the south east, followed by a trail of smoke."[13] Witnesses included pilots spread throughout Ontario, Michigan, and Ohio that were along the flight path of the object. Once over

[13] Michael Hesemann, UFOs Secret History, p 167.

Ohio, however, the object clearly demonstrated that it was not a typical meteor, nor a crash in the ordinary sense of "space debris," for according to witnesses, it stopped, stood still "for a few seconds" and then changed its course towards Pennsylvania.[14]

At this point, the Kecksburg saga begins in earnest, for at 4:47 PM, a Mrs. Jones called the local radio station WHJB in Greensburg and told reporter John Murphy that "a huge fireball has crashed in the woods about 1.5 miles from here."[15] Her children had been playing outside when they first saw it, describing it as a burning star. Mrs. Jones, visiting a neighbor at that time on then porch, saw blue smoke coming from the forest and a bright light hovering above the area.[16]

In the meantime, the reporter John Murphy had already driven to the site, finding already a beehive of activity there, with two police cruisers and a fire engine from the local volunteer fire-department parked at the wood's edge. After questioning Mrs. Jones and her children, the local fire marshal and one of the policemen walked into the forest, and reemerged sixteen minutes later. In response to reporter Murphy's questions, the fire marshal directed him to his lawyer![17]

What follwed over the next few hours was genuinely bizarre, as the US Army and Air Force, and apparently some NASA scientists and technicians,[18] literally moved in and placed the tiny village and its environs under virtual martial law:

> Whatever it was that had crashed in the forest, the Army and Air Force marched up to deal with it. The military and state police cordoned off the forest area, stationed armed guards at all the roads

---

[14] Hesemann, op. cit, p. 167.

[15] Ibid.

[16] Ibid., p. 168.

[17] Ibid.

[18] Q.v. Stan Gordon, Kecksburg: the Untold Story (DVD video production. Gordon is considered the expert on the Kecksburg case, and the video consists of a series of recorded interviews with surviving witnesses to the event. According to Mrs. Lillian Hayes, wife of a local farmer, and her son both stated that their house was visited several times that night by military personnel, and she reports having overheard them discussing the fact that NASA was already on the scene.

> and ways loading into the forest and transported a whole lot of equipment to the crash site. The Air Force took over the premises of the local voluntary fire station and set up a commando (sic) post there. The firemen, now forbidden to enter the station, stood by watching while persons in military uniform brought in more equipment into the station, which included a huge radio transmitter. A little later, two large transport trucks, one of them bearing the insignia of the army, were seen driving into the forest. At about the same time, people living close to the nearby Latrobe Airfield saw a jet plane landing there, although the airfield itself had been closed to traffic for quite some time.[19]

Later, television, newspaper, and radio reporters arrived from Pittsburg, to be met with a wall of silence from the military.

But a police spokesman stated "there's an unidentified flying object in the woods." When the US Air Force's Project Blue book was contacted, Major Hector Quintanilla himself, then project head, informed the reporters that the Air Force's investigators were already at the site.[20]

If it were only for the official statements and peculiar "overreaction" of the military in such a quick response to the event, and in placing an entire town and considerable portion of its environs under virtual martial law and placing a secure perimter around a Pennsylvania wood, little else would have been known of the Kecksburg crash. However, a local who had been listening to the radio, Bill Bulebush, made his way to the crash site, thinking to offer help to local authorities and the presumed crash victims. When he arrived, however, he saw "something that threw him for a loop":

> A metallic bullet-shaped object was sticking in the ground at the end of a trench, which it had obviously formed while landing. "It looked like a big burned orange. It sparkled and twinkled, was about 9 feet wide and 12 feet long. Somehow it gave me the creeps and I got away quickly." And when he read the Air Force explanation in the papers the next day, he knew they were lying. What he had seen had certainly not been a meteorite![21]

---

[19] Hesemann, op. cit., p. 168.

[20] Ibid., p. 169.

[21] Ibid., emphasis in the original.

Suffice it to say, it strains credibility to have so many witnesses attest that the military showed up, placed an area of U.S. territory under martial law, and called in NASA specialists, to recover a mere meteorite. The meteorite theory made no sense to local UFO researcher Stan Gordon either, since UFOs ordinarily traveled at speeds in excess of those calculated for the object, and metorites do not stop, stand still, and then change course.

Nonetheless, there the matter would have rested, until James Romansky came forward as a witness 2 years later (1987). Romansky had been 19 years old at the time of the incident, and a member of the volunteer firefighting team that had arrived first and been instructed to comb the woods for the wreckage of a crashed airplane.[22]

Romansky gave a description of the object that was slightly different than Bulebush's in certain details:

> It had the shape of an acorn, made of shining silvery metal which had a light touch of gold in it. Its bottom was surrounded by a kind of ring or, as Jim put it, a kind of metal bumper on which strange writing could be seen. Romansky described it later. "They looked like Egyptian hieroglyphics, but without any animal signs. There were straight and broken lines, dots, squares and circles." .... There was no glass, no propeller or jet nozzle, no burst tanks from which any fuel had leaked out, and not even the sign of a hatch or entrance.[23]

After Romansky's story was aired on an episode of the television show "Unsolved Mysteries", other witnesses emerged with their own accounts of the incident, and substantially confirmed the account, adding new details of their own.

One of these details was that a late-night convoy of trucks, one including a large flatbed semi-trailer with an object covered in a tarpaulin. Some witnesses report that the tarpaulin was pulled tighly around the object, and its "acorn" shape could clearly be seen. The object was next seen by witnesses at its first apparent destination, Lockborne Air Force base in Columbus, Ohio, where military police

---

[22] Hesemann, op. cit., p. 169.

[23] Ibid., emphasis in the original.

units were ordered to surround a hangar and shoot anyone who attempted to enter that did not have a top secret clearance.[24]

It was next apparently seen by a witness, "Myron", who contacted Stan Gordon, and described a similar object. Hesemann's summary of Myron's story is worth citing in full, since it bears directly on my hypothesis:

> (Myron) worked as a truck driver for a cement factory belonging to his family at Dayton, Ohio. Two days after the incident occurred at Kecksburg, his firm received a large order for specially glazed bricks from the Wright Patterson Air Field. A representative of the base had had a look at the bricks in stock at the factory and finally ordered 6,500 double-glazed processed bricks, which, he said, "were for building a double-walled shield around a recovered radioactive object." [25]

Myron later glanced inside the hangar to view what was inside.

The object was silhouetted by floodlights behind large silk - parachute-like screens. Myron described "the shadowy outlines of a large bell-shaped object....perhaps about 9 feet wide and 12 feet high. Through a small opening in the tent, Myron could see that it was metallic, like some kind of whitish bronze."[26]

C. Analysis

There are a number of curious data points that would appear to connect Kammler's "Bell" with Kecksburg's "Acorn". Hesemann's book, from which the above accounts and quotations were cited, was published in 1998, before Nick Cook's Hunt for Zero Point, with its summarization of SS General Sporrenberg's descriptions of the Bell were first made known to an English speaking audience. This means that the Kecksburg witnesses record something that sounds eerily like Kammler's Bell. Consider the following list:

---

[24] Ibid, pp. 169-170.

[25] Hesemann, pp. 179-170, emphasis added.

[26] Ibid., p. 173.

(1) Both objects arc described in very similar terms, as "acorn" or "bell" shaped; the Pennsylvania witnesses could just as easily be describing Kammler's Hell, and Sporrenberg similarly, could just as easily be describing the Kecksburg Acorn;
(2) Both objects are described as having similar, if not identical, dimensions, being approximately 9 to 12 feet in diameter and 12 to 15 feet in height;
(3) Both objects had to be housed in a chamber made of "glazed" or "ceramic" bricks, because,
(4) Both objects apparently gave off strong radioactivity or other strong field effects.

In fact, it is on only one point that the two objects differ, if indeed they are two distinct objects, and that is the consistent testimony by witnesses who actually saw the Kecksburg "acorn" UFO, that some strange form of writing existed around the "bumper" of the object, resembling heiroglyphics to some, "but without the animal and people pictures," as James Romansky puts it, and resembling geometrical forms according to a few others. No similar statements exist for Kammler's Bell.

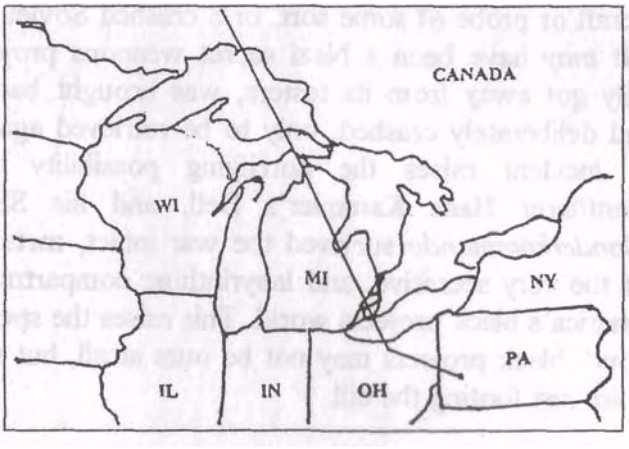
But even this may not necessarily be a sufficient reason to dismiss the possible connection. The kind of writing described may have been a form of runes, a form of writing in which the occult-oriented SS was also interested.[27] These types of symbols can sometimes resemble geometric objects that some witnesses associate with the writing on the Kecksburg UFO. It is much more difficult, however, to find a resemblance between them and "hieroglyphic" writing.

With regard to point (3), another significant question occurs: why did the Air Force so quickly decide that ceramic, or glazed, brick, would be the best means of shielding the object? There are other more effective, though more costly means of shielding, and cost may have been a leading factor in selection of this method. But the suddenness with which the decision is taken to shield it at

[27] For SS rune resarch, see Dusty Sklar, The Nazis and the Occult (Dorset Press, 1989), pp. 25-26, 28.

Wright Patterson Field with such bricks also suggests a knowledge of and familiarity with the object, and, possibly, of its history as a Nazi secret weapons project. In any case, the swiftness of the military's reaction to assemble a recovery team at Kecksburg also indicates that the object had been tracked by the military for sometime as it flew over Canada and the eastern US. It is as if the military had been expecting it.

And finally, there is yet another odd point that may connect the Keckburg Acorn to the Kammler Bell. We have already seen that some "Nazi survival myths" have a secret German base close to the Arctic, operating at a remote location in Canada near Hudson Bay. While I discount the idea, it is perhaps worth noting that the trajectory of the Kecksburg Acorn as it tracked from Canada into the US to its final crash site in Pennsylvania, would, if extended north into Canada, place it along a line more or less where the "Arctic Nazi survival myth" places the alleged secret German base.



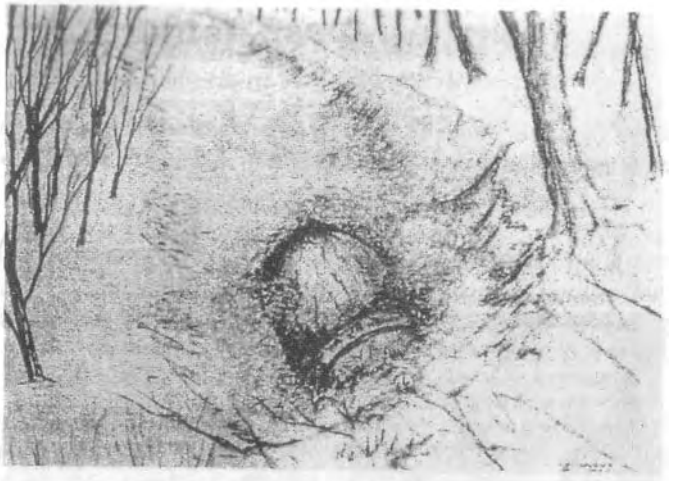
The Trajectory of the Kecksburg UFO

Near the end of his book, Nick Cook, recounts a meeting with a friend who had started him off on a quest that he knew would eventually lead Cook back to Nazi Germany. "Markus"' words are a chilling warning:

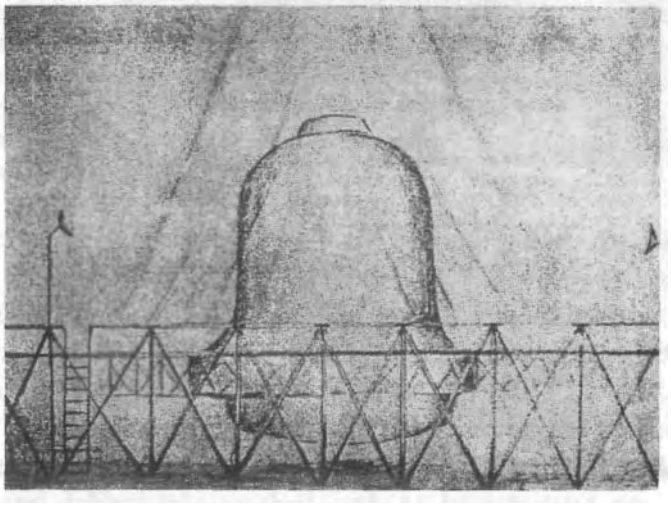
> When the Americans tripped over this mutant strain of non-linear physics and took it back home with them, they were astute enough to realise that their homegrown scientific talent couldn't handle it. That it was beyond their cultural terms of reference. That's why they recruited so many Germans. The Nazis developed a unique approach to science and engineering quite separate from the rest of the world, because their ideology, unrestrained as it was, supported a wholly different way of doing things.... The trouble was, when the Ameircans took it all home with them they found out, too late, that it came infected with a virus. You take the science on, you take on aspects of the ideology, as well.[28]

In any case, it seems that there are enough points of similarity between Kammler's Bell and the Kecksburg Acorn to at least raise a third alternative as an explanation for it, in addition to the two approaches previously taken, namely, that it was a crashed extra-terrestrial craft or probe of some sort, or a crashed Soviet Cosmos satellite. It may have been a Nazi secret weapons project, that inadvertently got away from its testers, was brought back under control, and deliberately crashed, only to be retrieved again. The Kecksburg incident raises the horrifying possibility that SS Obergruppenfuhrer Hans Kammler's Bell and his SS secret weapons Sonderkommando survived the war intact, metastasizing throughout the very secretive, and labyrinthine compartmentalizations of America's black projects world. This raises the specter that some of "our" black projects may not be ours at all, but someone else's. We are just footing the bill.

[28] Nick Cook, op. cit, p. 270.



A Sketch of the Crash at Kecksbug



Myron's "Bell" at Wright Patterson Air Force Base

18.

FINAL THOUGHTS

"By involving the concentration camps, the SS had unwittingly set the seal on any serious postwar investigation of the science and technology it had pursued during the conflict."

"But then Kammler told Speer he was planning to contact the Americans and that in exchange for a guarantee of his freedom he would offer them every thing.... He informed Speer that he was assembling all the relevant experts in Upper Bavaria in order to hand them over to US forces. "
Nick Cook, The Hunt for Zero Point[1]

What emerges from all this? Three broad areas seem to be affected by the revelations and speculative possibilities outlined - and I stress, only outlined - in this book: physics, history, and politics/culture. Clearly there are sufficient, though admittedly scanty, technological references, reports, diagrams, and witness accounts, to reveal the fact that the Third Reich had developed areas of physics and technology scarcely imaginable, even today. That the Germans were much farther along in atom bomb development seems clear, even if they did not successfully test a device, as I believe they actually did.

We know too certain broad outlines of that physics. It was based on a dynamic conception of the aether as a topological space, having most likely certain inertial properties of its own. It was likewise a dynamic aether, in which particle reactions appear to have been modeled as geometries and combinations of forms of rotation. It appears, above all, to have been a physics based on the pursuit of the will to power, and thus willing to entertain the most apparently unorthodox ideas - from the standpoint of today's "public consumption" physics - in that pursuit.

This disturbing potentiality raises a more problematical aspect of what has been outlined. Almost any way one views it, it seems clear that the end of the war and the strange deployments on the

[1] Nick Cook, The Hunt for Zero Point, pp. 203, 165, respectively.

Allied and German side exhibit the characteristics of a race against time, the Nazis trying to prolong the war by every desperate means available, and the Allies, with almost equal desperation, trying to bring it to a close. It also seems clear that the Allies and particularly the Americans were racing very deliberately toward targets that their intelligence, at a very high level, was guiding them to.

Beyond that, the notion that the Germans successfully exploded even a large fuel air bomb - which they very evidently did - calls much into question, not only about the publicly stated origin and development of that particular piece of contemporary mass destruction hardware, but also calls into question the whole massive expenditure of billions if not trillions of dollars by both the Soviet Union and the United States on thermonuclear weapons. A fuel air bomb is much cheaper, causes a level of destruction on the order of at least small atom bombs, which are considered strategic weapons of mass destruction. If the Nazis succeeded with this device, as hey very much did, does this explain perhaps the strange accounts from the Eastern Front of some sort of weapon of mass destruction being used on the Russians? One that would drive them, in desperation, to pass on to Berlin via some neutral channel, to cease and desist or they would begin using poison gas? The development of the fuel air bomb in some early prototype by the Nazis explains too another mystery, for if they did successfully develop an atom bomb - then their reasons for not using it have already been given: they were being developed as detonators for something far more destructive.

In any case, the various revelations and speculations presented make one thing abundantly clear. Our history began to be massively re-written even before the end of the war, and has been manipulated to an extraordinary degree since then. Nowhere does this seem more in evidence than in the fact that there appears to have been a successful - albeit only prototypical - development by the Nazis of a very different type of physics, a physics that remains off the books. This to me is the most disturbing aspect of all that my own, and other's, research has uncovered, for a "two track" science - one developed and controlled in secret by the few, and for their own aggrandizement and pursuit of power, and the other developed in public and maintained by the same oligarchy with their power to

grant or refuse funding, and their power thereby to control journals and what types of research will be "tolerated" - is the utmost mockery of science. And when science is mocked, morality is mocked because truth is mocked, and this brings us to the third area, the most disturbing of all: politics/culture.

The Will to Power was what drove the Nazi Regime in any endeavor it undertook, whether the conventional military operations it conducted, to the death camps and genocide it was preparing for the world, to the occult and esoteric research of the Ahnenerbe and the Kammlerstab. That Will to Power seems evident in all aspects of the science implied by the things discussed in this book. And this compels a final observation.

Many people — and I would number myself among them - view the Zero Point Energy as our best long range hope to resolve some of the more pressing environmental and energy problems of our planet. It does hold almost limitless promise for a whole host of new technologies, and there is enough in the literature to convince me that various scientists and inventors - the ones not hobbled by academic tenure or the agendas of grant foundations and government - are on the verge of exciting discoveries.

But with that energy comes the potential for weaponization of a power and sophistication that we with our thermonuclear popguns can only imagine. With it comes a view of the universe subject to the Will to Power. A moral consequence, and commitment, is implied in such a physics. It would therefore seem to imply, inevitably, precisely a "two-tiered" science, one for the public, and one for the initiate, when he or she is spiritually able to handle the extraordinary power it makes available to them in non-destructive ways. There is a degree of evidence that this is, in fact, what happened in ancient times, and certainly it seems to have happened to the Kammlerstab's work after the war. Perhaps, at least initially, its contents were so sensational that, for moral reasons, it was decided to keep it under wraps.

But the Will to Power remains closeted within that science and the black projects it engendered and no doubt continues to engender.

The power to tinker with the topological properties of space,
and the energy resulting from it, is an absolute one.
And absolute power corrupts absolutely.

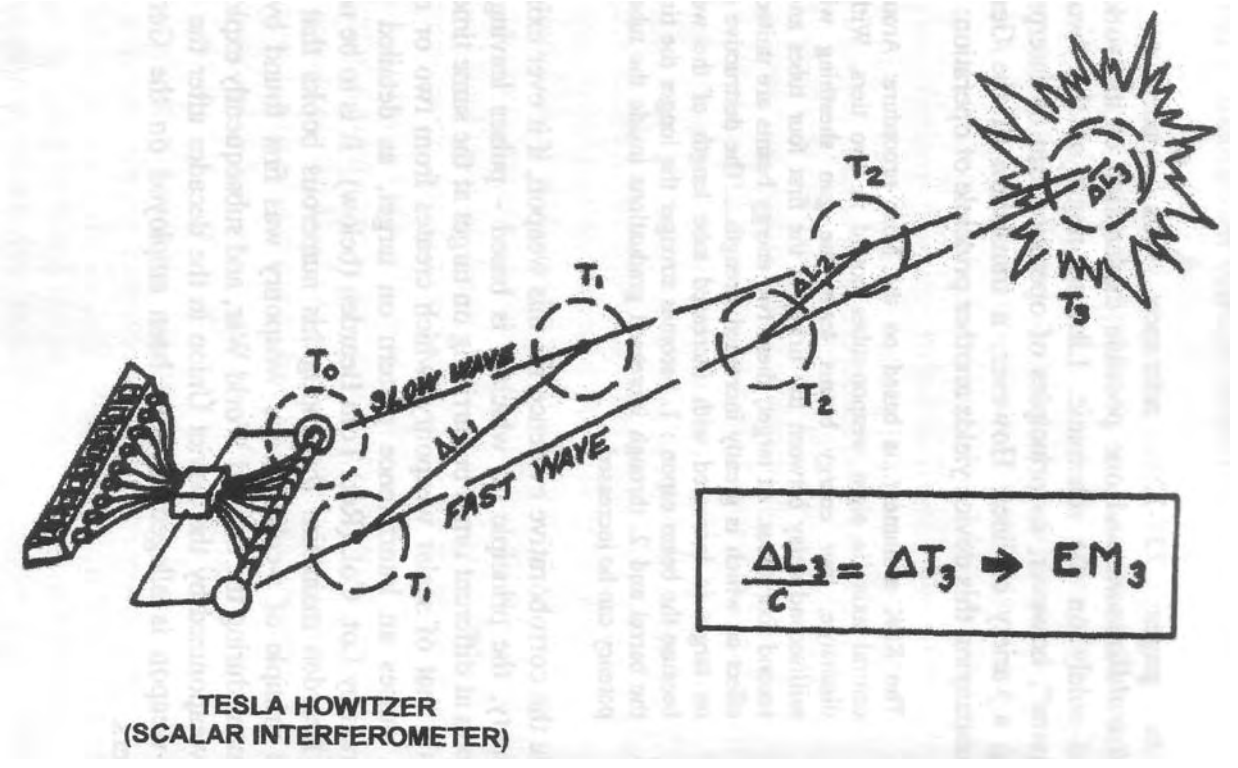
APPENDIX:
A SHORT NOTE ON THE KRAFTSTRAHLKANNONE

On pages 221-223 reference was made to the Kraftstrahlkannone and one possible explanation of its working., based solely on the schematic. Like so much of the "wonder weapons", however, its principles of operation can be interpreted along a variety of lines. However, a translation of the German accompanying this device yields another principle of operation:

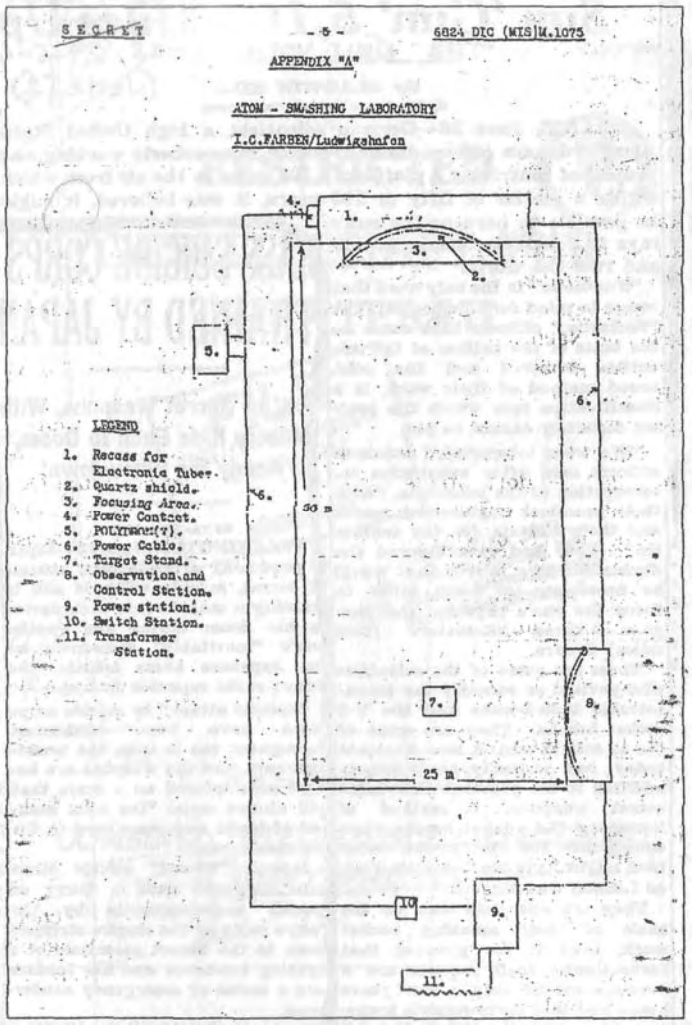
> The KSK armament...is based on the Noar procedure: Around a central axis lie eight weapon-tubes bound in two tiers. With the discharge, four energy beams leave the gun sheathing with a millisecond delay between the firing of the first four tubes and the second four tubes. At target, these two energy beams are united, the effect on which is greatly increased strength .... The destructive effect on target is increased with increased tube length of the weapon because the beam eapon : 1. becomes stronger the longer the time in the barrel and 2. through increased graduations inside the tube, the potency can be increased....[1]

While the corroborative evidence for this weapon, if it ever existed, is scanty, the principle on which it is based - pulses leaving the weapon at different times but arriving on target at the same time - is exactly that of scalar weaponry, which creates from two or more such pulses an interference pattern on target, as detailed in a diagram by Lot. Col. (Ret) Tom Bearden (below). It is to be noted that Bearden maintains thourhoug his numerous books that this basic priniple of so-called scalar weaponry was first found by the Germans during the Second World War, and subsequently exploited and weaponized by the Soviet Union in the decades after the war. The weapon is alleged to have been employed on the German saucers.

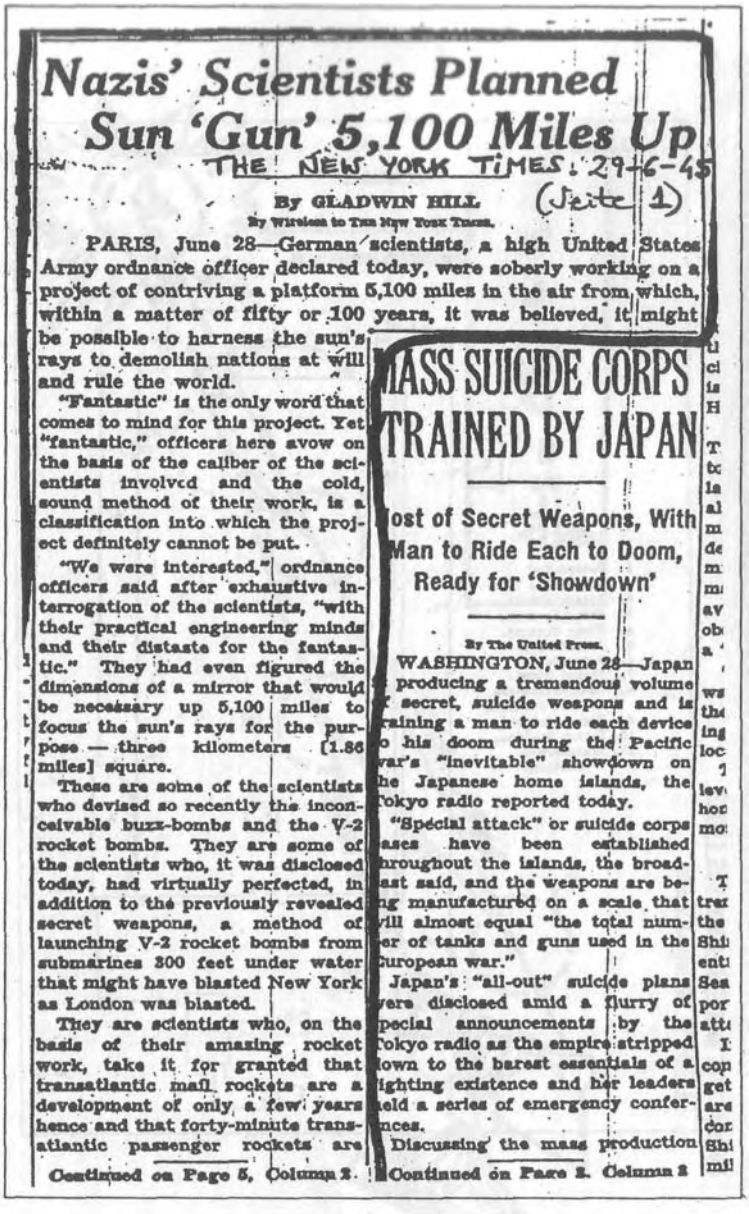
[1] Henry Stevens, Rumored German Wonder Weapons, report Four: The German Death Rays, pp. 17, 19.



TESLA HOWITZER
(SCALAR INTERFEROMETER)



PW Intelligence Bulletin No 2/32 's Sketch of the Ludwigshafen-Heidelberg Quartz Reflector High- Voltage Disintegration Ray Installation



Nazis' Scientists Planned Sun 'Gun' 5,100 Miles Up

THE NEW YORK TIMES: 29-6-45 (Seite 1)

By GLADWIN HILL

By Wireless to THE NEW YORK TIMES.

PARIS, June 28—German scientists, a high United States Army ordnance officer declared today, were soberly working on a project of contriving a platform 5,100 miles in the air from which, within a matter of fifty or 100 years, it was believed, it might be possible to harness the sun's rays to demolish nations at will and rule the world.

"Fantastic" is the only word that comes to mind for this project. Yet "fantastic," officers here avow on the basis of the caliber of the scientists involved and the cold, sound method of their work, is a classification into which the project definitely cannot be put.

"We were interested," ordnance officers said after exhaustive interrogation of the scientists, "with their practical engineering minds and their distaste for the fantastic." They had even figured the dimensions of a mirror that would be necessary up 5,100 miles to focus the sun's rays for the purpose — three kilometers [1.86 miles] square.

These are some of the scientists who devised so recently the inconceivable buzz-bombs and the V-2 rocket bombs. They are some of the scientists who, it was disclosed today, had virtually perfected, in addition to the previously revealed secret weapons, a method of launching V-2 rocket bombs from submarines 300 feet under water that might have blasted New York as London was blasted.

They are scientists who, on the basis of their amazing rocket work, take it for granted that transatlantic mail rockets are a development of only a few years hence and that forty-minute transatlantic passenger rockets are

Continued on Page 5, Column 2.

ASS SUICIDE CORPS TRAINED BY JAPAN

ost of Secret Weapons, With an to Ride Each to Doom, Ready for 'Showdown'

By The United Press.

WASHINGTON, June 28—Japan producing a tremendous volume secret, suicide weapons and is raining a man to ride each device o his doom during the Pacific ar's "inevitable" showdown on he Japanese home islands, the okyo radio reported today.

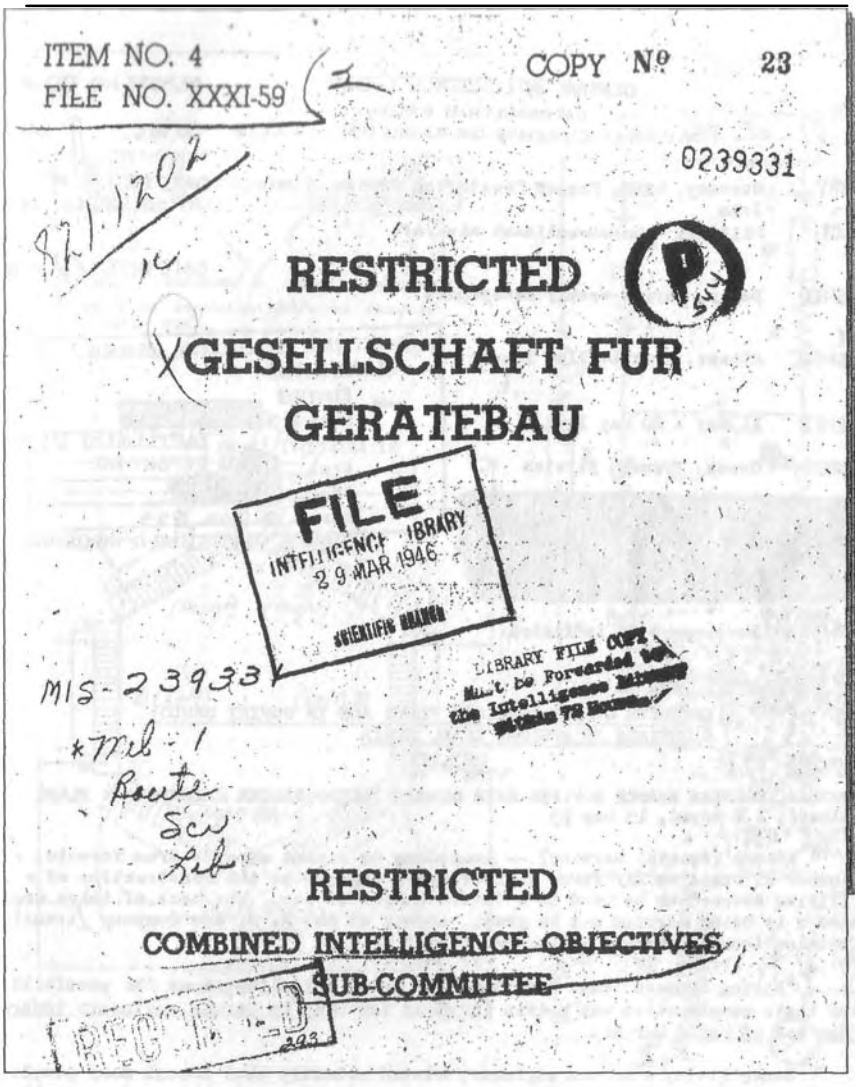
"Special attack" or suicide corps ases have been established hroughout the islands, the broadast said, and the weapons are beng manufactured on a scale that ill almost equal "the total numer of tanks and guns used in the uropean war."

Japan's "all-out" suicide plans ere disclosed amid a flurry of pecial announcements by the okyo radio as the empire stripped own to the barest essentials of a ighting existence and her leaders eld a series of emergency conferences.

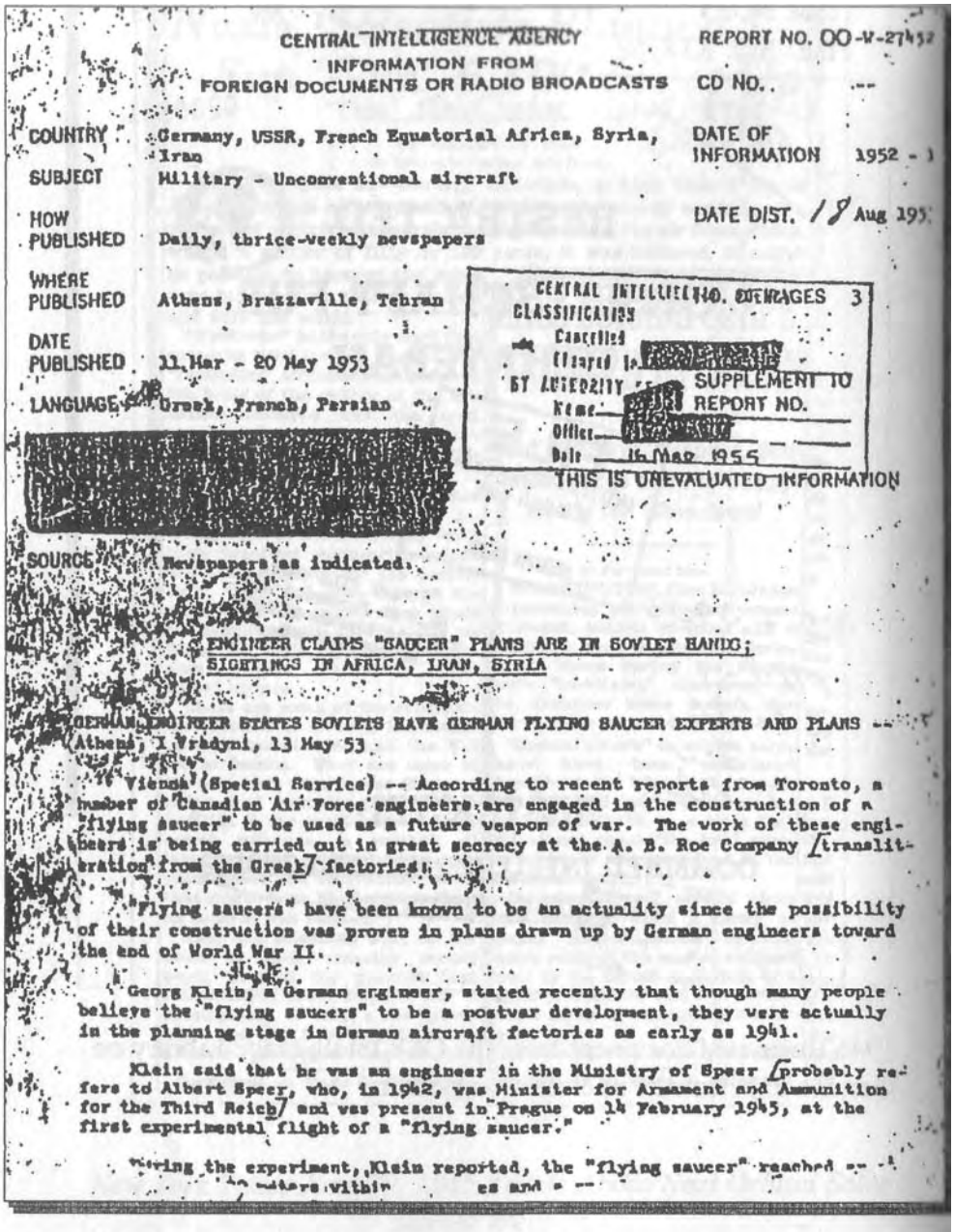
Discussing the mass production

Continued on Page 2, Column 2

New York Times June 29, 1945 Article About Nazi Orbital Solar Mirror Weapon



1946 Restricted document from the OSS Intelligence Library on German experiments in electromagnetism.



CENTRAL INTELLIGENCE AGENCY
INFORMATION FROM
FOREIGN DOCUMENTS OR RADIO BROADCASTS

REPORT NO. CO-W-27452
CD NO. --

COUNTRY: Germany, USSR, French Equatorial Africa, Syria, Iran
SUBJECT: Military - Unconventional aircraft
HOW PUBLISHED: Daily, thrice-weekly newspapers
WHERE PUBLISHED: Athens, Brazzaville, Tehran
DATE PUBLISHED: 11 Mar - 20 May 1953
LANGUAGE: Greek, French, Persian

DATE OF INFORMATION: 1952 - 1
DATE DIST.: 18 Aug 195[illegible]

CENTRAL INTELLIGENCE AGENCY 3
CLASSIFICATION
Cancelled
Cleared [redacted]
BY AUTHORITY [redacted]
Name [redacted]
Office [redacted]
Date 16 May 1955
SUPPLEMENT TO REPORT NO.
THIS IS UNEVALUATED INFORMATION

SOURCE: Newspapers as indicated.

ENGINEER CLAIMS "SAUCER" PLANS ARE IN SOVIET HANDS; SIGHTINGS IN AFRICA, IRAN, SYRIA

GERMAN ENGINEER STATES SOVIETS HAVE GERMAN FLYING SAUCER EXPERTS AND PLANS -- Athens, I Vradyni, 13 May 53

Vienna (Special Service) -- According to recent reports from Toronto, a number of Canadian Air Force engineers are engaged in the construction of a "flying saucer" to be used as a future weapon of war. The work of these engineers is being carried out in great secrecy at the A. V. Roe Company [transliteration] from the Greek] factories.

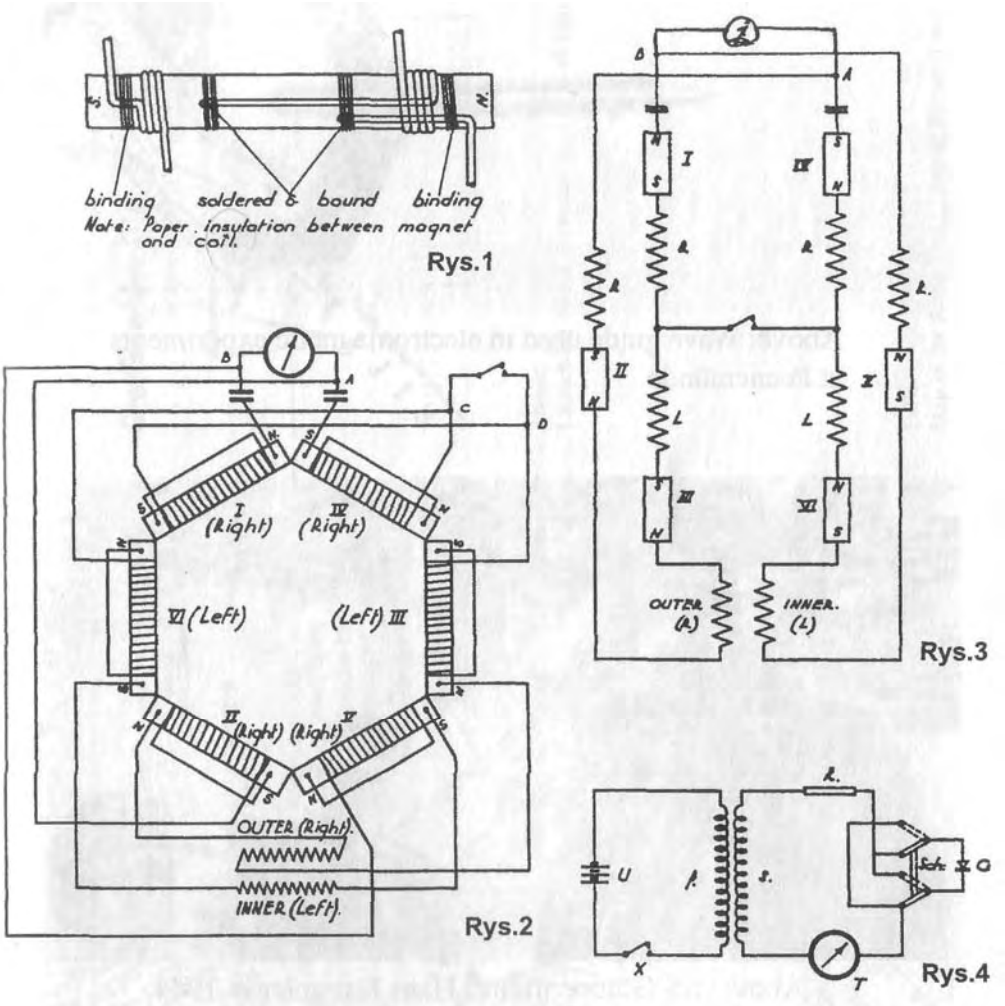
"Flying saucers" have been known to be an actuality since the possibility of their construction was proven in plans drawn up by German engineers toward the end of World War II.

Georg Klein, a German engineer, stated recently that though many people believe the "flying saucers" to be a postwar development, they were actually in the planning stage in German aircraft factories as early as 1941.

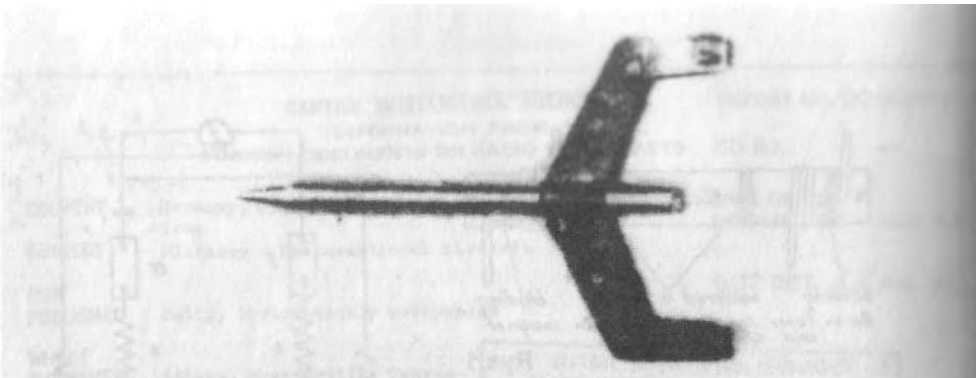
Klein said that he was an engineer in the Ministry of Speer [probably refers to Albert Speer, who, in 1942, was Minister for Armament and Ammunition for the Third Reich] and was present in Prague on 14 February 1945, at the first experimental flight of a "flying saucer."

During the experiment, Klein reported, the "flying saucer" reached -- [illegible] meters within [illegible] es and a --

1952 CIA document mentioning German flying saucers and the Canadian AVRO saucer.



1933 schematics of the Coler Converter from a British Intelligence document.

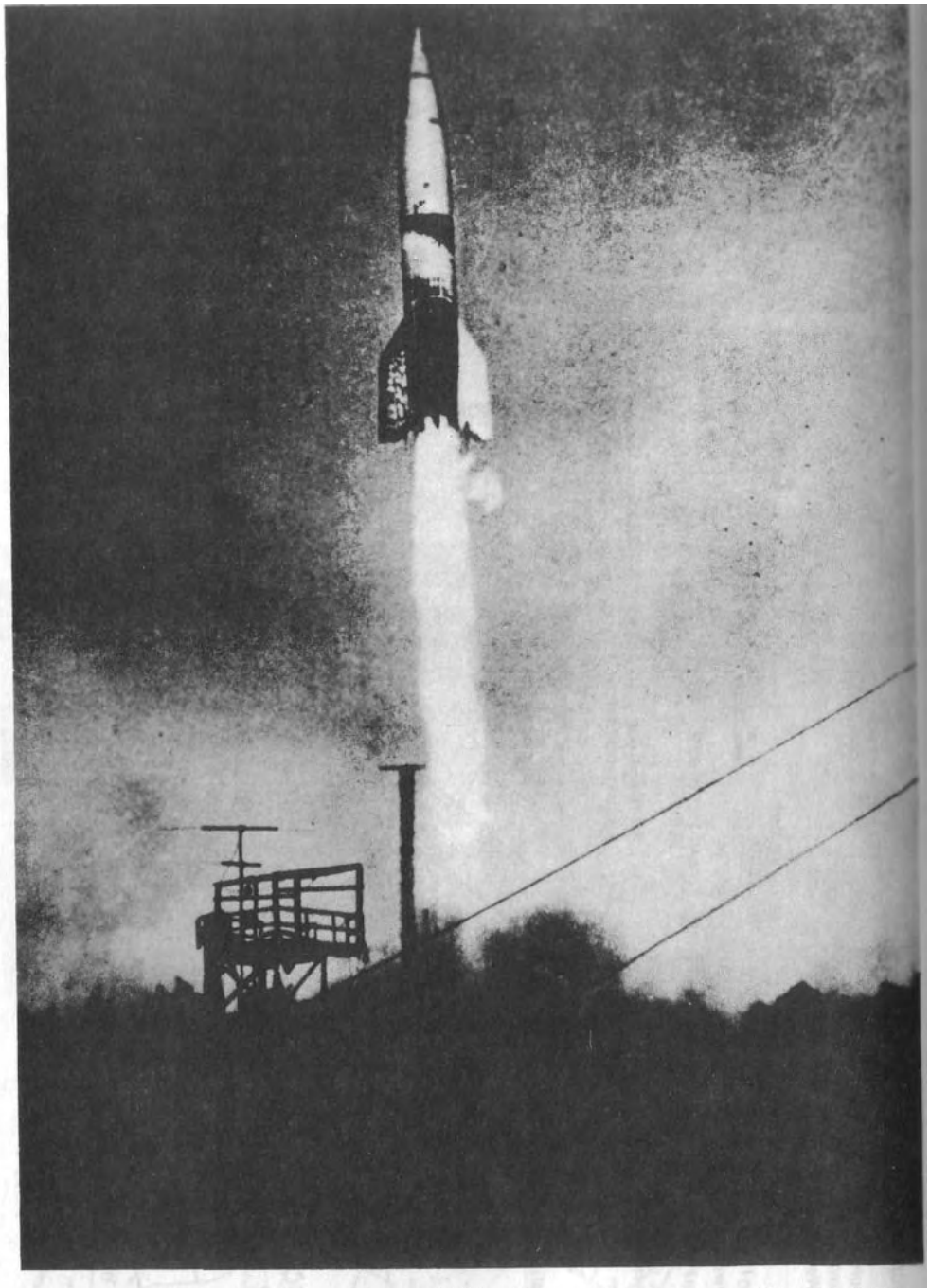


Above: Wave guide used in electromagnetic experiments at Peenemünde.

Above: SS Gruppenführer Hans Kammler in 1944.

Above:
Launching island for rocket testing as of 1937.

Left:
Map of the Army Test Center at Peenemünde.



An A4 in a successful launch in the autumn of 1943 at Blizna, spied on for a long period by the Polish Resistance.

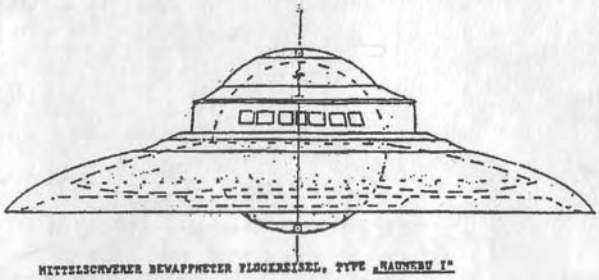
Geheime Kommandosache

Flugkreisel-Erprobung, Stand / Anzahl Erprobungsflüge:

HAUNEBU I	(vorhanden 2 Stück)	52	E-IV
HAUNEBU II	(vorhanden 7 Stück)	106	E-IV
HAUNEBU III	(vorhanden 1 Stück)	19	E-IV
(VRIL I)	(vorhanden 17 Stück)	84	(Schumann)

Empfehlung:
Beschleunigen von Abschlußerprobung
und Produktion „Haunebu II"
+ „VRIL I"

HAUNEBU I

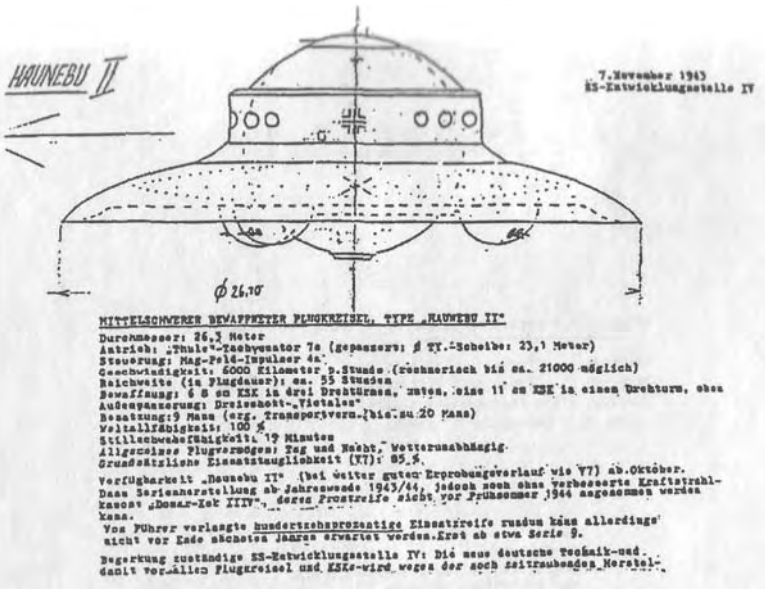


MITTELSCHWERER BEWAFFNETER FLUGKREISEL, TYPE „HAUNEBU I"

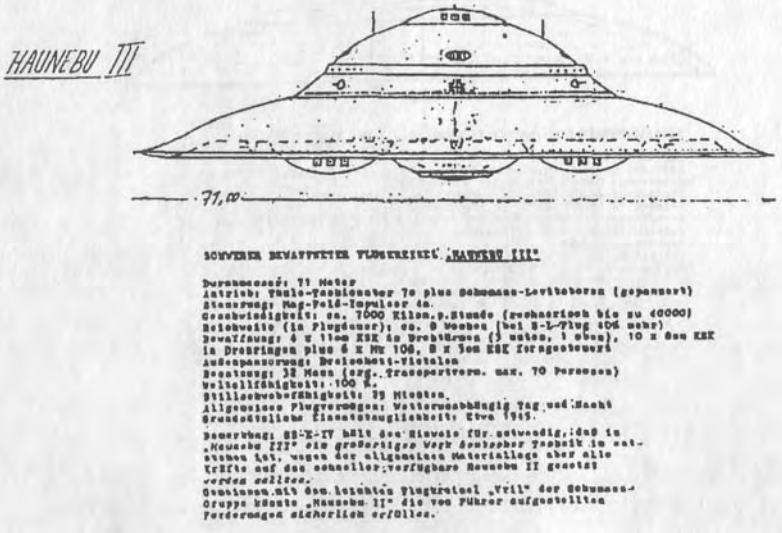
Durchmesser: 25 Meter
Antrieb: Thule-Tachyonator 7b
Steuerung: Mag-Feld-Impulser 4
Geschwindigkeit: 4800 Kilom.p.Std. (rechn. bis 17000)
Reichweite in Flugzeit: 18 Stunden
Bewaffnung: 2 x 8cm KSK in Drehtürmen und 4 x Mk 108, starr nach vorn
Außenpanzerung: Doppel-Vibalex
Besatzung: 8 Mann
Vertikalfähigkeit: 60°
Stillstehvermögen: 8 Minuten
Allgemeine Flugfähigkeit: Tag wie Nacht
Grundsätzliche Einsatztauglichkeit: 60 %
Frontverfügbarkeit: Nicht vor Jahresende 44

Bemerkung: Die SS-E-IV hält Konzentration auf bereits im Versuch stehende „Haunebu II" für sinnvoller als zu beiden Typen parallel weiterzuarbeiten. „Haunebu II" verspricht entscheidende Verbesserungen in nahezu allen Punkten. Höhere Herstellungskosten scheinen gerechtfertigt - besonders mit Blick auf Führer-Sonderbefehl, Flugkreisel betreffend.

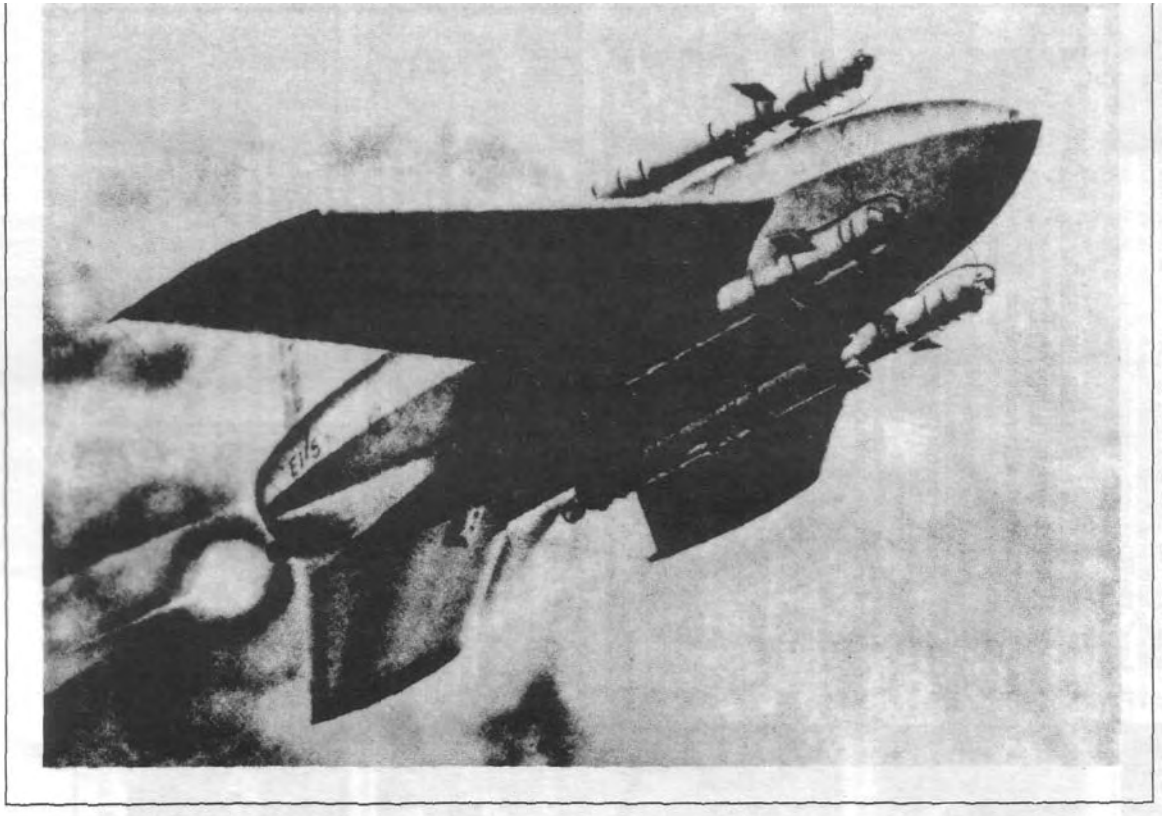
Alleged photocopy of SS plans for a Haunebu I being designed in 1939. From the German book *Die Dunkle Seite Des Mondes (The Dark Side of the Moon)* by Brad Harris (1996, Pandora Books, Germany).



Alleged photocopy of SS plans for a Haunebu II being designed in 1943. From the German book *Die Dunkle Seite Des Mondes (The Dark Side of the Moon)* by Brad Harris (1996, Pandora Books, Germany).



Alleged photocopy of SS plans for a Haunebu III being designed in 1945. From the German book *Die Dunkle Seite Des Mondes (The Dark Side of the Moon)* by Brad Harris (1996, Pandora Books, Germany).



Enzian 4 in flight. This was an exceptionally powerful rocket intended to reach supersonic speed, a ceiling of 52,000 feet, and distant targets under radio control. It is but one of many missiles produced by the German secret weapons program (courtesy of "German Secret Weapons of World War II" by I.V. Hogg, 1970).

REGNUM IN POTENTIA

Saturn's Kingdom Transformed Into the Golden Age

By Tracy R. Twyman

Quintissential Publications (2011)

quintissentialpublications.com

As I join the world in watching with awe the revolutions unfolding throughout the Middle East, and the spirited revolt that seems to be spreading across the West, I can't help but think that we are really witnessing the dawning of a new era. The revolution that is spreading is spearheaded largely by the disenfranchised youth of the world. Educated and hard-working but unable to obtain a job, feed themselves, or raise a family, and with no future prospects whatsoever, the present generation has no choice but to fight for survival. Moreover, the elder generation of ruling class, grown fat on the blood of their subjects and dependant on their servants for everything, have laid upon this generation an enormous, unpayable debt burden that has been built up over the last several generations, and demanded that the youth of today now pay the full price for the sins — the laziness, selfishness, and neglect — practiced by their forefathers. Not surprisingly, the answer to this call has been a resounding "Hell no." The elite, who weren't expecting such an insolent reaction, are now attempting to bomb, shoot, and bludgeon their young slaves into submission. It won't work. We have reached the nadir of a historically repeating cycle. This is a moment born of destiny.

Whitney Houston sang "I believe the children are the future," but throughout history, the prevailing attitude has been that the sacrifice of the future of children, and the children of the future, is the predominant source of sustenance for the present population. Indeed, as I point out in my book Money Grows on the Tree of Knowledge, our own civilization has been built around the concept of stealing the wealth of the future, in order to manufacture artificial wealth to be enjoyed by ruling class adults in the present. In this book, I demonstrate that this is analogous to the story in Greek mythology of Chronos eating his own children to eliminate rivals and assure the continuance of his rule.

Saturn with his scythe, leaning on a cane

In alchemical studies, this myth is used as a metaphor for the production of gold from lead. In the book I demonstrate how the entire economy is built around alchemical processes, and that the central mystery of alchemy is child sacrifice. The alchemical process is a metaphorical formula for transformation that can be applied to all manner of different things. This includes the turning of the ages: the evolution of man, both physically and spiritually, through the passage of lengthy aeons of time.

In that book I talked about the concept that the Greeks and Romans had of the Golden Age. Their poets wrote of a four-step cycle of aeons that life on Earth went through repeatedly. Each age was named after a metal, and each was considered a devolution from the previous era. Some Roman writers said that the races which ruled each era were actually made of these metals. Sometimes these are said to be different races of “men,” although the accounts make it clear that the earlier races were not ordinary men, but gods, and the later races were the hybrid children of gods mating with humans.

The race of the Heroic Era (from which Hercules, Jason and Odysseus came) was such a hybrid race. Sometimes a fifth age was added, that of Stone, said to be the present age. The men of the present age were said to have been produced when the heroes of the Greek Deluge myth, Deucalion and Pyrrha, washed up in their Ark on Mount Parnassus. Allegedly, they pulled a cloth over their heads to blindfold them, and then threw stones behind their backs, which magically turned into human children, our ancestors. Ours is said to be a devolved version of the race of heroes, the divine DNA of our forefathers watered down with too much human blood.

Deucalion and Pyrrha creating the Stone Race after the Flood

However, what they all seem to agree on is that first was the Golden Age, in which, allegedly, the Earth was peopled by Gods, and Chronos (Saturn) was chief among them. But strangely, although he was Lord of the Earth, this was seen not as a time of autocratic rule, but peaceful anarchy. Saturn was thought of as the Lord of Unrule, and during this epoch, his subjects wanted for nothing. There was no money, nobody had to work for a living, and all things were held in common. It was a paradise in which everyone was free to do as they wished because there no lack, and therefore no need for involuntary compulsion through violent force. Or so it is implied.

Illustration from Goltzius based on Ovid's description of the Golden Age

Because of this, Saturn was associated with the Liberty Cap (also known as the Phrygian gap), a soft red floppy hat like Santa Claus wears (without the fuzzy cotton ball at the end). In the Roman empire, the Liberty Cap was worn by slaves who had been set free, either temporarily or permanently. When the Romans celebrated his festival at the end of the year (Saturnalia), no work was done, public drunkenness was encouraged, rules against gambling and prostitution were temporarily suspended, and slaves were given furloughs from their duties, let to run about as free men, with the red cap of liberty on their heads. A temporary sovereign was elected to represent the Lord of Misrule, who would eat and drink like a king until New Year's Day. He would give out gifts to children, and receive many gifts himself. In the earliest times in which this festival was observed, this king would "reign" (ritually) for a year, then be sacrificed at the end of next year's Saturnalia. In Plutarch's Lives, we read:

"The Saturnalia was a feast celebrated on the 14th of the kalends of January Betide the sacrifices in honour of Saturn who upon his retiring into Italy introduced there the happiness of the golden age. Servants were at this time indulged in mirth and freedom in memory of the equality which prevailed in that age. Presents were sent from one friend to another and no war was to be proclaimed or offender executed It is uncertain when this festival was instituted."

Many aspects of these rites have survived into modern times. There are obvious parallels with our Christmas and New Year's celebrations, as I discussed in Money Grows on the Tree of Knowledge. The character of Saturn or the Lord of Misrule is obviously now played by Santa Claus. During the season, children stay home from school and most people take significant time off work. They drink, overeat, and kill each other stampeding in competition for the opportunity to purchase toys (and not always to give to children). As I discuss in that book, the alchemically-designed economy is built to be dependant upon this annual display of excess consumption to fuel the financial machine for the coming year.

Saturn riding in his chariot

The New Year celebrations, with their drunken orgies, definitely stem from Saturnalian origins as well. This is proven also by the symbolism used in modern times to depict New Year's time, with Father Time representing the old year and the New Year's Babe representing the coming annum. We make "New Year's resolutions" and sing "should auld acquaintance be forgot," just as our ancestors used this time to wash their hands of their past sins by laying them instead on the heads of a sacrificial victim. This role was played by Chronos and Dionysus in ancient times, with the latter being referred to as the "Child in the Harvest Basket" — the basket in which the sun god was said to make his annual voyage through the heavens This is also the traditional time at which the birth of Chronos' patricidal son Zeus was celebrated, "born at midwinter when the Sun entered the house of Capricorn" the goat, according to Robert Graves.

Santa Claus riding a goat, representative of Capricorn, the sign that rules the time of Saturnalia, with a child in a basket tucked under his arm.

But there are other examples as well of the continuing celebration of Saturnalia. There is Childermass on December 26th, discussed in a previous article of mine, on which the Massacre of the Innocents is observed — a story linked by European alchemists specifically with the Greek story of Chronos eating his children. Then there is the Feast of the Epiphany on January 6th, and the related celebration of Mardi Gras which begins with that feast. This is the day on which the "festival of the manifestation of Christ to the Gentiles" is celebrated, and is traditionally the day on which the three magi came to the bedside of the baby Jesus bearing gifts.

On this day it is customary to bake "epiphany cakes" (or "king cakes", as they are called in New Orleans), into which a tiny bean or token has been buried, representing the Christ child. Often it is a an actual plastic baby. Sometimes the cake itself is also made out of marzipan and formed into the shape of a baby. Each guest at an Epiphany party will get their own cake, but only one of them, chosen at random, will contain the baby token. Whichever guest gets the baby served to them is the "King" of the party, and will be treated to special party favors. (They literally shout "I've got the baby!" to everyone in the room when the token is discovered.)

A marzipan Epiphany cake in the shape of a baby

The downside, however, to being chosen is that the King has to clean up the mess at the end, or is responsible for hosting the party next year. The parallels to King Saturn eating his children, and the practice at Saturnalia of a temporary king being chosen for sacrifice, are obvious. So too are the connections between Saturnalia and Carnival, which is celebrated in New Orleans from January 6th until Ash Wednesday in March, when we begin to celebrate Christ's sacrifice on the cross. These traditions all date back to the 18th century. But it is said that the sacrificial king of the Roman Saturnalia was chosen in a similar fashion. The implication hidden in the rite is that the king chosen by lot is the one who eats the baby, just as Saturn did, but in so doing he seals the fate of his own doom. The fact that in Europe a sabot (a device used in firearms) was used for the token in the cake makes the implied threat even more obvious.

Mardi Gras king cake with plastic baby token.

Another similar modern-day celebration is that of Vasilopita on New Year's Day in the Balkans and Eastern Europe. The word literally means "King Pie," although the holiday has in modern times been associated with St. Basil, who's feast day is celebrated on that date also. There are many different versions of his story, but they all involve distributing cakes amongst the townspeople in which coins of various values were hidden at random. "Basil" means "king" in old French and Greek, so the choosing of this Saint to represent this day and this ritual cannot be a coincidence. The date is celebrated much like the Feast of the Epiphany, with a coin being the traditional token in the cake.

The details of the rite are rather interesting. A single cake is used, cut into slices, with one of them containing the cake. The cutting of the cake takes place at midnight on New Year's Eve and involves everyone in the household. The sign of the cross is etched onto the top, and then slices are given out to everyone, the eldest receiving theirs first. It is also traditional to slice a piece to sacrifice to the Kallikantzaroi. They are described as having hairy bodies, hooves for feet, and sporting enormous erect penises, like tradition satyrs in Greek mythology. The name is said to mean "beautiful centaur," named after the legendary creatures described as horses from the waste down but with the heads of men.

The Kallikantzaroi were believed to live underground at the center of the Earth, at the bottom of the World Tree, in Greek tradition. This is described as being a pole that holds the heavens apart from the Earth. These demons are said to be constantly trying to saw down the trunk of the tree so that it will collapse. But just as they are about to succeed each year, tradition states that on Christmas day, the sun "stops moving" temporarily. The Kallikantzaroi are released from their underground prison and come to the surface to torment human beings, which they do until the 6th of January. Then, on the Feast Day of the Epiphany, the sun is said to start moving again, and the demons become trapped underground once more. There they find that all of their work sawing the World Tree has been undone, and they must start over again.

The World Tree, where the Kallikantzaroi do their evil deeds.

So here we have a few interesting connections. For one thing, this information confirms my speculation in an earlier article that the tradition of leaving cookies for Santa Claus might be reminiscent of an older folk tradition in which food sacrifices were laid out to satisfy the Saturnian child-eating entity represented by Santa Claus, in hopes that he doesn't eat the children instead. Indeed, the concept of a token representing a baby is being hidden inside of a cake specifically brings to mind the subterfuge of Rhea, Chronos' wife, who substituted a stone for the baby Zeus when Chronos came to devour him as a newborn infant. Secondly, we have a connection between these bizarre Saturnian rituals at Christmas and the concept of global cataclysm, specifically the destruction of the Earth's present polar configuration. I will get into this in more detail later on.

An ancient celebration of the Saturnalia.

The alchemist Fulcanelli wrote in The Mystery of the Cathedrals about the connections between the Epiphany Day rituals and the symbolism of alchemy. The child in the cake stands for the gold hidden within the lead (represented by Saturn), which must be divulged and refined through the alchemical process, like a soul being extracted from a human body. He writes:

"As for the common subject of the Work, some call it Magnesia lunarii; others, who are more sincere, call it Lead of the Wise, vegetable Saturn. Philalethes, Basil Valentine and the Cosmopolite say Son or Child of Saturn. ….Therefore, brothers, if you pay attention to what I have said about the Epiphany cake (galette des Rois)… you will no longer have any doubt about the subject which you must choose; its common name will be clearly known to you. You will then be in possession of this Chaos of the Wise 'in which all hidden secrets exist in potential', as Philalethes asserts, and which the skilled artist will not hesitate to actualize. Open, that is to say decompose, this matter. Try to separate the pure part of it, or its metallic soul as the sacred expression has it, and you will have the kirmis, the Hermes, the mercury dye which has within it the mystic gold, just as St. Christopher carries Jesus and the ram carries its own fleece. You will understand why the Golden Fleece is hung on the oak, like the gall and the kirmis, and you will be able to say, without violating the truth, that the old hermetic oak acts as mother to the secret mercury. By comparing legends and symbols, light will dawn in your mind and you will know the close affinity which unites the oak to the ram, St. Christopher to the Child-King, the Good Shepherd to the lamb, the Christian counterpart of Hermes Criophorus (the ram bearer), etc."

Later on, Fulcanelli describes an image inside a cathedral involving a dragon which he says is, in code, depicted as using its flaming breath to cook a child inside of an athanor. This child is said to be a king, and the son of the dragon himself, through the rape of a human female, a princess. He says:

"This monstrous beast, with the grace of some great lizard, used to embrace the athenor,

leaving in its flames the triply-crowned little king, who is the son of its violent acts on the dead adultress. Only the face of the mineral child appears as it undergoes the 'baths of fire' mentioned by Nicholas Flamel. It is here swathed and tied up like the figure of the little 'bather,' still found today in Epiphany cakes."

Fulcanelli says that the child Mercury, the Philosopher's Stone, shut up in the prison of the athanor, is like the baby imprisoned within the epiphany cake:

"Even the very pastry of the cake obeys the laws of traditional symbology. This pastry is flaky and our little bather is shut up in it like a book marker. This is an interesting confirmation of the matter represented by the Epiphany cake. Sendivogius tells us that the prepared mercury has the aspect and form of a stony mass, crumbly and flaky. 'If you look at it closely,' he says, 'you will notice that it is all flaky.' Indeed, the crystalline layers, which form this substance, lie one above the other like the leaves of a book…."

He then goes on to say:

"The popular expression to take the cake means to be fortunate. The one who is fortunate enough to find the bean in the cake has no further need for anything; he will never lack money. He will be doubly king, by science and by fortune."

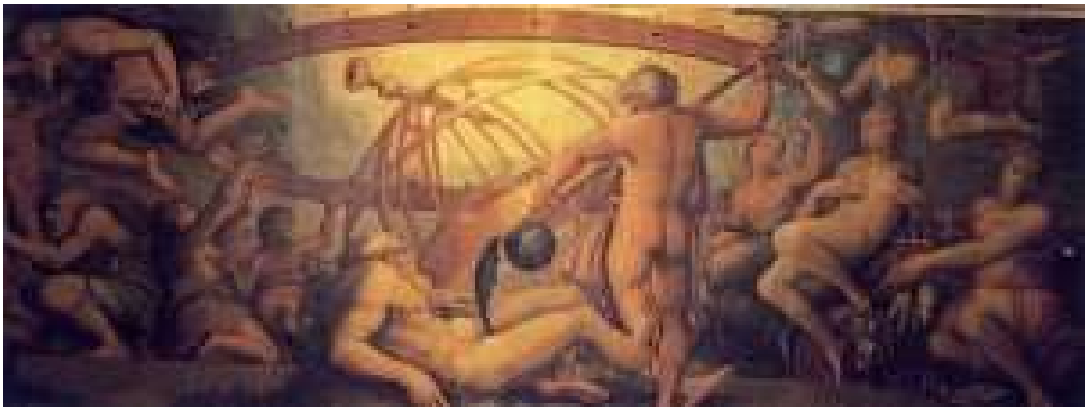
Drawing depicting the Feast of the Epiphany with king cake ritual.

So the message is that the fortunate one is the one who eats the baby, because he gets to be

king. But his luck is soon to run out, because as we know, at the very earliest roots of this ritual, it is the king who pays the price at next year's Saturnalia rite. This is the central mystery upon which all of our social institutions are based. This pattern can be found within society in numerous ways, and can even be measured over the course of vast aeons of time.

As I stated in Money Grows on the Tree of Knowledge, there is a moral dilemma implied in the story of Chronos/Saturn. Saturn is associated with liberty, and a Golden Age of peaceful anarchy. Yet we know that in order to maintain this form of rule, he killed his own children to prevent them from growing up to overtake him. The only reason the Golden Age was so golden was because Saturn's children were paying the price of the sacrifice.

But this is par for the course. Chronos himself had overthrown his father Ouranos, castrated him and imprisoned him in the depths of the Earth. Chronos too had narrowly escaped death as a child, since his father had also tried to kill all of his children at birth, for the same reason. In some versions of the myth, Ouranos tried to keep them from being born by imprisoning them within the mother's womb.) Since their mother was Gaia (Earth), this meant that they were shut up in Tartarus, the lowest chamber of the underworld, called "the prison of the Sons of Earth," this is also where the Titans were jailed by Zeus after he overthrew them.



The mutilation of Uranus by Saturn

Here is the meaning of this myth. Chronos ("Father Time") had lived and ruled (or "unruled) for untold aeons in a timeless realm before the coming of Zeus. In this realm, there could be no begetting of offspring, or else there would also be death. Thus the birth of children had to be prevented, either by confining them within the womb — as Ouranos did — or by swallowing them at birth — as Chronos did, attempting to negate their existence by confining them to another womb of sorts: his gullet.

This is exactly what the story of the Garden of Eden indicates. Adam and Eve live in happy, timeless ignorance. They are the children of a god who remains, to them, invisible, and they are still shut up inside the womb, or within their father's gullet. There, they live as parasites, forming a symbiotic relationship with their host, who provides them with all of the sustenance they need. Then one day, a foreign fruit is introduced to them from outside. They are told by their father, the unseen god, not to eat it. But they do anyway, and it initiates in them an awakening to the reality of what they are involved in. Their eyes are opened. They wake up from the dream and realize that they are slowly being digested. At that moment, they are vomited out into the cold, cruel, outside world, forced to work for their daily bread, fighting for survival. With their birth, or perhaps, their second birth, the passage of time is finally allowed to begin.

As we read of the passages of the various ages, from Golden to Silver, then to Bronze, Iron and (some say) Stone, we understand that the transition from one aeon to the next is always marked by a revolution of a similar sort, in which the disenfranchised son of the king, the rightful inheritor to the throne, escapes death and overtakes his tyrant father. If the father is a divine god-king (as in the oldest myths), he doesn't really die, but instead falls into a death-like sleep and is imprisoned in the center of the Earth. There he waits to be avenged and reincarnated in a new king, reigning over a new age.

Another depiction of the Golden Age

What these myths of the Golden Age, Garden of Eden, and other primordial paradises really point to is the concept of a cosmic center: a kingdom that doesn't really exist, except in the Otherworld, in potentia. But it is said to be at the heart of our own existence, and its essence can be felt everywhere. It is a place where there is no time as we know it. Rather, all points of time exist simultaneously, and all space as well. This is why the people who live there are said to never grow old. Presently, in our own time, we perceive it as fallen, like Eden, Atlantis, or the sunken R'lyeh of H.P. Lovercraft's stories. But the legends state that that there will come a time in the future when a new age will dawn, and the hidden, sunken kingdom will rise again, the old king reborn to rule again, instantly transforming our own mundane world into the timeless paradise formerly relegated to the Otherworld.

This is exactly how the relationship between Osiris and Horus was viewed by the Egyptians. There was never a time when Osiris was really alive ruling his kingdom on Earth. From the earliest times he was thought to be in the center of the Earth, in his tomb at the center of the World Mountain. His son Horus ruled on the surface as his reincarnation. But it was the existence of the undead Osiris in the underworld that gave Horus' throne its legitimacy.

This is also how the realm of the Fisher King is described in the Grail romances, who, like Ouranos, has been castrated, and now rules over a kingdom out of time. He can never die, but isn't really alive. Only the food from the Grail keeps him alive in this in-between state. His wound will never heal, but continually festers, and grows worse whenever Saturn is ascendant in the heavens.

We also find hints in the romances that the food of the Grail, which keeps the king alive and the rest of his subjects in perpetual youth, is in fact the flesh and blood of children. That this is what the "Elixir of Life" is made from is hinted at also in the alchemical texts of Europe, and in many myths from throughout the world. I explore these ideas at length in Money Grows on the Tree of Knowledge. This is the fruit of the Tree of Life that the gods of Genesis sought to prevent man from obtaining, lest we "live forever."

In Wolfram von Eschenbach's Parzival, the knight Gawain is sent on a mission by a hermit who looks young, although he is 75 years old. The mission is to find the sword that John the Baptist was beheaded with, which he will need to enter the lands of the Fisher King. The sword belongs to a pagan king named Gurguran, who promises Gawain that he can have it if he will rescue the king's son from a giant who has kidnapped him. Gawain kills the giant, but the boy is strangled to death in the process. Then, in a strange rite, Gurguran chops his sons body into pieces and distributes them to his subjects to eat. Gawain then receives the sword and is led to the Grail banquet at the Fisher King's court, where 12 knights who are hundreds of years old (reminiscent of the 12 Olympian gods) sit around a banquet hall, all looking youthful except for their grey

hair.

The Golden Age, with Saturn or Chronos shown flying overhead in his chariot, eating a baby.

was exiled to, and where he built his kingdom. His descendants shared the same names as those of his brother Seth, save for a single letter, indicating their non-being. The chronology of their birth is slightly different than that of Seth's descendants because time has no meaning where they are.

Cain, like Saturn, lived in perpetual fear of being killed by one of his descendants in revenge, as it had been prophesied, according to tales recounted in Louis Ginzberg's book Legends of the Jews. Thus in Genesis Cain cries out to God in lamentation that he must forever remain in hiding, a "fugitive and a vagabond," because "Whosoever findeth me shall slay me." This eventually transpired when he was killed by his descendant Lamech in a hunting accident, since Cain's horns, given to him by God supposedly as a protective mark to keep him safe from

murder, caused him to be mistaken for an animal and shot — yet another dirty trick from Jehovah. Then, having killed his own ancestor, while hunting in the wilderness of the timelessness of Nod, Lamech, and all of Cain's descendants, ceased to be, or to have ever been. From that moment on the Bible acknowledges them no more.

This is exactly how Edith Hamilton summarizes Homer's description of the underworld of the dead, Hades, in his epic The Odyssey, according to her classic book Mythology: Timeless Tales of Gods and Heroes, where she wrote:

In Homer the underworld is vague, a shadowy place inhabited by shadows. Nothing is real there. The ghosts' existence, if it can be called that, is like a miserable dream.

But the underworld is just part of this nebulous realm of the gods, which is clearly separate from our own world, and yet accessible from certain parts of our world, and in some ways strangely entangled with it. This larger divine realm came to be termed "Olympus" by the Greeks, but the exact meaning of this term is hard to specify. As Edith Hamilton explains:

"The twelve great Olympians were supreme among the gods who succeeded the Titans. They were called the Olympians because Olympus was their home. What Olympus was, however, is not easy to say. There is no doubt that at first it was held to be a mountain top, and generally identified with Greece's highest mountain, Mt. Olympus in Thessaly, in the northeast of Greece. But even in the earliest Greek poem, the Illiad, this idea is beginning to give way to the idea of an Olympus in some mysterious region far above all the mountains of the earth. In one passage of the Illiad Zeus talks to the gods from "the topmost peak of many-ridged Olympus," clearly a mountain. Even so, it is not heaven. Homer makes Poseidon say that he rules the sea, Hades the dead, Zeus the heavens, but Olympus is common to all three."

These are details common to just about any description of the popular motif of the World-Mountain, found in almost every culture around the globe. It is the location of the World Tree, and the pole that holds the heavens aloft from the Earth. The depths of the mountain's caverns and the roots of the tree reach down into the lowest level of existence, while the top of the mountain, and the top of the tree, reaches the highest level of heaven in existence. Summarizing this entire body of legends from around the world, Julius Evola wrote in The Mystery of the Grail:

"These are first and foremost symbols of centrality: the center, the pole, the region in the middle of the earth, the central stone or the foundation, the magnet. Then, symbols of stability: the island surrounded by the waters, the rock, the unshakable stone. Finally, symbols of inviolability and inaccessibility; the invisible or not-to-be-found castle or land, a wild mountain peak, a subterranean region. Moreover, the 'Land of Light,' the 'Land of the Living,' the 'Holy Land.' Yet again, all the variations of the golden symbolism, which, on the one hand, includes all the

notions of solarity, light, regality, immortality, and incorruptibility while, on the other hand, it has always had some relationship with the primordial tradition and with the age characterized by gold. Other symbols point to 'life' in the higher sense of the word (e.g., the 'perennial food'; the 'Tree of Life'), to a transcendent knowledge, to an invincible power; everything appears variously mixed in the fantastic, symbolic, or poetic representations that in the various traditions have foreshadowed this constant theme of the invisible regnum and of the Supreme Center of the world, in itself or in its emanations and reproductions."

The Grail castle as the hidden kingdom at the center of the universe.

But according to several different researchers specializing in several different fields, long before, and long after, the Titanic Golden Age was conquered by Zeus, and the cosmic pole renamed Olympus, the ancients thought of the magical realm of World-Mountain as being associated with Saturn. As Joscelyn Godwin writes in Arktos: The Polar Myth:

"Ancient Iranian astronomers identified the pole as 'Saturn's womb,' and so did the neoplatonists of Greece."

Julius Evola concurs, writing of the kingdom at the pole that:

"Moreover, according to a classical tradition, after having been the lord of this earth, the king of the Golden Age, Kronos-Saturn, was dethroned and castrated (that is, deprived of the power to beget, to give life to a new stock); he still lives, though asleep, in a region located in the Far North, close to the Arctic Sea, which was also called the Cronid Sea."

Castle of the Grail by Ferdinand Knab

Here we touch upon what is perhaps the most mind-blowing concept hinted at in this whole collection of myths that we are presently examining. Saturn's kingdom, because it's timeless, is still there, enclosed within a prison of timelessness, surrounded by space-time. His death-like sleep is, in fact, the prison itself, for as Plutarch writes, "his slumber had been artfully produced in order to chain him, and round about him were many dæmons for his guards and servants." His dreams are the shackles which bind him. Like the blissfully ignorant children of the Garden of Eden, he is bound in a hypnotic state by his own illusions. He has switched places with those he devoured. Plutarch writes about Saturn's hidden kingdom of dreams, which he describes as being on an island, in his Morals. I find it worthy of lengthy quotation.

"… the barbarians fable that Saturn is imprisoned by Jupiter, whilst his son lies by his side, as though keeping guard over those islands and the sea, which they call 'the Sea of Saturn.' … That sea-coast of the mainland Greeks are settled on, around a bay not smaller than the Mæotis, the entrance of which lies almost in a straight line opposite the entrance to the Caspian Sea. Those Greeks call and consider themselves continental people, but islanders all such as inhabit this land of ours, inasmuch as it is surrounded on all sides by the sea; and they believe that with the peoples of Saturn were united, later, those who wandered about with Hercules, and being left behind there, they rekindled into strength and numbers the Greek element, then on the point of extinction, and sinking into the barbarian language, manners, and laws; whence Hercules has the first honours there, and Saturn the second."

Plutarch then goes on to describe a strange sacrificial rite in which the "servants of Saturn" are

sent out on perilous voyages to this island, where they serve him for a period of thirteen years, after which they have the choice of staying in his realm or returning home. However, it is unclear in what capacity they "serve," since Saturn's is a realm of "abundance without toil and trouble." It seems to be more of a philosophical academy, akin to the "Philosophic Kingdom" of Sir Francis Bacon's New Atlantis. Interestingly, in that book Bacon used an illustration of Saturn unveiling the naked Lady Venus in her secret tomb in the Venusberg (a mythical mountain almost identical in description to Saturn's island). This is a Hermetic symbol of the unveiling of the secrets of nature through alchemy, and it is said that whoever unveils Venus is cursed to remain a prisoner in her underworld kingdom forever within the caverns of her enchanted mountain at the center of the Earth, where she rests in a death-like sleep, "vivit- non vivit," just like Saturn.

Illustration from the New Atlantis

On Saturn's island, the god teaches them by communicating through apparitions and dreams. That's also how he keeps them on the island. He keeps them in a state of enchantment, just as Venus is said to do to the young men who visit her secret realm. As Plutarch describes it:

"But when the star of Saturn, which we call the 'Informer,' but they 'Nocturnal,' comes into the sign of the Bull every thirty years, they having got ready a long while beforehand all things required for the sacrifice and the games … they send out people appointed by lot in the same number of ships, furnished with provisions and stores necessary for persons intending to cross so vast a sea by dint of rowing, as well as to live a long time in a foreign land. When they have put to sea, they meet, naturally, with different fates, but those who escape from the sea, first of all, touch at the foremost isles, which are inhabited by Greeks also, and see the sun setting for less than one hour for thirty days in succession; and this interval is night, attended with slight darkness, and a twilight glimmering out of the west. Having spent ninety days there, treated

with honour and hospitality, being both considered and entitled 'holy,' thenceforward they voyage with the help of the winds. No other people inhabit the islands save themselves and those that had been sent out before; it is, indeed, allowed to such as have served thirteen years in waiting upon the god, to return home, but the greatest part prefer to remain there, partly out of habit, partly because they have all things in abundance without toil and trouble, as they pass their time in sacrifices and hymn singing, or in studying legends and philosophy of some sort. For wonderful are both the island and the mildness of the climate; whilst the deity himself has been an obstacle to some when contemplating departure, by manifesting himself to them as to familiars and friends, not by way of dreams or by tokens, but conversing with them in a visible form with many apparitions and speeches of genii. For Saturn himself is imprisoned in a vast cavern, sleeping upon a rock overlaid with gold; for his sleep has been contrived by Jupiter for his chaining—whilst birds fly down from the rock, which are ordained to carry ambrosia to him, whilst the island is overspread with fragrance, diffused from the rock as from a fountain. Those genii wait upon and nurse Saturn, who had been his companions at the time when truly he used to reign over both gods and men; and they, being endowed with prophecy, foretell, on their own account, many things, but important matters, and such as concern the highest things, they go down into the cavern and report as the dreams of Saturn; for whatsoever things Jupiter is devising for the future, Saturn dreams what they are about, and that which is kingly and divine. The stranger having been carried there, as he told us, and waiting upon the god at his leisure, he gained acquaintance with astrology and geometry as far as it is possible to advance, whilst he took up 'natural science' for his department of philosophy."

This is the "Invisible College" that the Rosicrucians wrote about. It is the Scholomance of Dracula, which (the story goes) 13 specially-chosen students would attend each year to learn magick from the Master himself, but only one would graduate and be permitted to "ride the Dragon." This is the same as the Devil's school that witches attend when they go to the Sabbath, when they rise the broomstick or the goat, just as Jason rode the Golden Ram to safety. So too did Mohammed ride the woman-horse Barak on the Night Journey to the "furthest mosque," after falling asleep on the magical pillow-stone that fell from Heaven, which was the foundation-stone of the world, and which became the cornerstone of the Kaaba, the holy cube. So too did Jacob glimpse the ladder to Heaven in a dream, after sleeping on the stone of Bethel (the house of God), the royal betyl or "thunderstone" that was also said to have fallen to Earth from Heaven. This is the same as the alchemical "Magnet of the Wise," the metaphorical lodestone that guides initiates to the sacred island where the otherworld is located. Or rather, perhaps, we should consider that the Magnet attracts to the initiate the transcendental location he seeks to find. It brings the hidden kingdom to him, transforming the designated space that he happens to be standing into the sacred space of the Otherworld, where Saturn lies, dreaming. According to Julius Evola in The Mystery of the Grail:

"We have seen that of all the places in which the tests of the Grail's knights occur, the 'Island' and the 'Castle' seem to be in the forefront. The journey to such places should essentially be regarded sub specie interiaritatis, that is, in terms of a shift of consciousness to a world that is usually precluded to human beings."

And:

"In its polar character this kingdom is immobile. It does not get closer to various points in the flow of history; rather it is the flow of history, to which men and kingdoms get more or less close."

Depiction of the Invisible College as a contained vehicle.

What we really have here is the concept of the sorcerer's magic circle, which is drawn on the floor in chalk when conjuring spirits. Of this there are two types. One is meant to contain demons within it, so that you can safely conjure one and talk to him without the possibility of him getting loose or harming you. Supposedly, the demons cannot step outside of a properly prepared magic circle. In this way, it can be thought of as a bottle for holding a genie, much like the Ark of the Covenant was a container for the spirit of God. The word "Ark" means "container," and is the root of a family of words in several different languages that mean "coffin," "prison," "boat," and "secret." This is what Saturn's island prison/tomb really is.

The other type can be thought of more as a traveling vessel. The magician places himself within the circle, and then he can safely travel to unseen astral realms without harming his mortal body. The universe around him is transformed, but he retains his own little bit of his home reality within the circle. In this sense it is similar to a magic carpet.

This, I think, is what Noah's Ark really was. It was a Hermetically-sealed vessel made of magic, that allowed Noah and the other passengers to be raised up into a higher dimension so that, while the world transformed around them (dissolving into the prima materia of chaos, the primeval ocean), they stayed safe within. When they exited the Ark, they were literally in a whole new world. This is how the hero in all of the global cataclysm myths from throughout the world makes it through the trial.

In the oldest version of the tale, from Mesopotamia, the Flood hero, Utnapishtim, was told of the impending deluge from spirits who spoke to him through the walls of his house. They then instructed him on how to turn his own house into a vessel, in the shape of a perfect cube. Similarly the Kingdom of God or "New Jerusalem" in St. John's Revelation is a flying city in the form of a perfect cube. This must certainly be connected to the "cubic stone" of the alchemists.

Utnapishtim in his Ark

In Mystery of the Cathedrals, Fulcanelli takes the last chapter to talk about alchemical concepts of the Apocalypse. He speaks of the destruction and regeneration of the world as though it were an alchemical transformation, in which humanity must die, be dissolved into chaos (like

the Philosophic Mercury) and be reborn. This discussion is sparked by his analysis in that chapter of a strange monument called the “Cyclic cross of Hendaye,” found in a church courtyard in Basque France, Fulcanelli writes in Mystery of the Cathedrals that:

"Whatever its age, the Hendaye cross shows by the decoration of its pedestal that it is the strangest monument of primitive millenarism, the rarest symbolical translation of chiliasm, which I have ever met. It is known that this doctrine, first accepted and then refuted by Origen, St. Denis of Alexandria and St. Jerome although it had not been condemned by the Church, was part of the esoteric tradition of the ancient hermetic philosophy."

By rearranging the oddly-spaced letters of the message on the cross’s stand — “O crux ave spes unica (Hail o cross, the only hope)” — he obtained the following, hidden message: “Il est ecrit que la vie se refugie en un seul espace” (“It is written that life takes refuge in a single space”). The meaning of this, says Fulcanelli, is that:

"… a country exists, where death cannot reach man at the terrible time of the double cataclysm. As for the geographical location of this promised land, from which the elite will take part in the return of the golden age, it is up to us to find it. For the elite, the children of Elias, will be saved according to the word of Scripture, because their profound faith, their untiring perseverance in effort, will have earned for them the right to be promoted to the rank of disciples of the Christ-Light. They will bear his sign and will receive from him the mission of renewing for regenerated humanity the chain of tradition of the humanity which has disappeared."

Depiction of the Flood from the Metamorphoses of Ovid

So Fulcanelli believed that we really are heading towards an Apocalyptic event, and that messages predicting it are embedded in this monument. Moreover, he thought that alchemists and other “elite” would be able to decode the symbols left behind by the initiates of the past to figure out a special country or “space” where they will be safe from the cataclysm.

In the next installment of this series, we will talk about the possible connections between Saturn’s hidden kingdom and catastrophic Earth changes in the distant past, as well as the future. We will get into concepts of how the calendar may have been different during the Golden Age, and how it may change again in the future due to dramatic alterations in Earth’s magnetic field. We will talk about Saturn as the “Magnet of the Wise,” and the idea of a “Black Sun” at the center of the Earth that was thought to be responsible for generating this mysterious force.

Later on in this essay series, we will examine the type of governance represented by Saturn. We will examine the historic role that this figure was believed to have played as one of the early conquerors and civilizers of the Italian peninsula. We will also talk about stories of the alleged lost kingdom of Atlantis, and the possible connections with Saturn’s Golden Age kingdom. We will consider the conceptual relationship between our world and the hidden world, to see if we can shed any light on why our social institutions operate the way they do.

"The place which seems the most solid is perhaps the most unstable. We have a tendency to forget that we live on a volcano, at the center of great forces of strength … all is accomplished in accordance with well-determined cycles. A ‘Navigator’ guides the ark [‘arche’] in the flood … We do not subscribe to the conventional and erroneous astrology. The stars in themselves exert no influence. They are but reference points in space."

– “Chyren,” a.k.a. Pierre Plantard, from the magazine Circuit, 1959

"Up to now it has been assumed that all our cognition must conform to the objects; but … let us once try whether we do not get farther with the problems of metaphysics by assuming that the objects must conform to our cognition."

— Immanuel Kant, Critique of Pure Reason

"We’re an empire now, and when we act, we create our own reality. And while you’re studying that reality — judiciously, as you will — we’ll act again, creating other new realities, which you

can study too, and that's how things will sort out. We're history's actors . . . and you, all of you, will be left to just study what we do."

— Anonymous senior aide to President George W. Bush, as quoted by Ron Suskind, New York Times, October 17, 2004

In the Grail story, the hero Parzival comes upon the Grail castle by accident. He is on a quest for something else entirely, or so he thinks, although that object varies according to the version of the tale in question. However, at some point in his adventures, he comes across an old man fishing in a boat. He asks the man where he might find lodging for the night, and is pointed to a nearby castle with a tall tower. Only later does he discover that the man he spoke to was the lord of the castle and the king of the surrounding lands.

This is the Grail king, the "Rich Fisher" who lives on the food provided magically by the Grail, and rules by virtue of the power that it gives him. But his kingdom is sick, as he himself is sick, from a wound inflicted during battle with another king, to whom he is related biologically. Both the king and his kingdom are kept in a death-like dream state by the power of the Grail, but they suffer constantly because the king cannot be healed from his wound, called "the Dolorous Stroke." The wound gets more painful when Saturn is ascendant in the heavens, and is said to be "in the thigh," a phrase thought by many mythographers to be a euphemism for castration.

The Dolorous Stroke

If this is so it might link him to Ouranos, the god-king who was castrated and dethroned by his son Chronos (Saturn). However, there are also many figures in mythology, including the Greek blacksmith god Hephaestus and the biblical patriarch Jacob, who became incurably wounded in the thigh at some point during their lives. The potential connection with Ouranos, though, is interesting, since this god, whom the Chaldeans called Oannes, was depicted by them as a man who was half-fish.

But none of the details of a holy myth are ever present by accident. There is a reason why Parzival is led to the Grail castle by a man in a fishing boat who turns out to be the king. That's because it was really Parzival he was fishing for.

Jesus told his apostles, speaking of their training as miracle-workers and evangels, that he would teach them to be "fishers of men." What is the real meaning of this phrase and why is Christianity associated with the symbol of the fish? It is commonly said that this Christian emblem, the Ichthys symbol, is the "sign of Jonah" which Jesus said was the only sign that his disciples would be given to rest their faith upon. Jonah, you will recall, was the prophet swallowed whole by a whale in the Old Testament. The whale is associated by cabbalists with the sea monster Leviathan, who, Jewish legends state, is destined to be cut up and served for dinner to the righteous in a eucharistic rite at the end of time, after the final judgment, as a way of exacting revenge for the swallowing of Jonah.

The Christian Ichthys fish symbol

But really, the idea of "fishing for men" alludes to the concept of setting a trap, baiting someone and luring them in, where they will be captured, killed, and consumed. When the Fisher King is sitting out on his boat, waiting for someone like Parzival to come by so that he can encourage him to go to the Grail castle, he is playing the role of the Psychopompus. This is a label applied to Hermes the trickster god, who is both the initiator for adepts of alchemy , so too is he the guide of souls traveling to the Otherworld.

Christ the Fisher King

In these things, there is no contradiction. Initiation always involves being lured with false promises. The mysteries one seeks when one joins a mystical fraternity are never those which were initially sought after by the candidate. Indeed, the initiate may not have even known he was on a quest for enlightenment. He is going about his business one day, and something peaks his interest. He pulls on a thread and follows it all the way to the center of the labyrinth. Most of the people who make it there are but sacrifices, meant to be eaten by the Minotaur. In ancient societies, luring the sacrificial victim, whether human or animal, to the place of death via an elaborate ruse was often a major part of the rite.

The intention of the Fisher King in luring Parzival to his castle is different depending on which version of the story is being read. But one common theme is that he needs Parzival to heal him from his wound. In some versions, this can be achieved by magic if Parzival will only ask of the king a certain question, usually, “What ails thee?” The Fisher King apologizes to Parzival upon meeting him because he cannot rise to greet him. He then waits for Parzival to ask him what is wrong. When the young knight doesn’t pick up on the hint right away, he is cursed by the king’s court for his failure to do what was expected of him.

This is the way that the Fisher King, the Lord of Unrule, exerted his subtle influence. This is what it means to “rule but not rule,” as the magical line of the Frankish Merovingian kings were said to have done. According to some Eastern mystics and proto-Nazi German magical orders, this describes the rule of the “Lord of the Earth,” an eternally sleeping being who they believed to reside in the center of the world. From there is was thought that he manipulated events on the surface world by subtly influencing his human adepts to do what he wanted, through visions, dreams, oracles, and magic spells.

The wounded Fisher King lies on his bed

The way in which Parzival was lured to the Grail castle is similar to how Alice is enticed down the rabbit hole in Lewis Carroll's Alice's Adventures in Wonderland. When she sees the white rabbit scurrying around, late for his appointment, she becomes curious about where he is going, and follows him down his hole, falling a seemingly infinite distance. (Similarly, a white salamander played a role in Joseph Smith's initiation, showing him the location of a magic hole where the golden tablets of Mormonism were buried.) As if it were not already clear that this world underground is in fact the Underworld, Alice makes it obvious that this is Saturn's kingdom when she asks:

"What if I should fall right through the center of the Earth and end up on the other side, where everything is upside-down?"

When she finally reaches the bottom of the hole, Alice learns that in order to follow the rabbit into his lair, she must shrink in size so that she can fit through the door. This indicates the multidimensional nature of the Underworld, which could fit into a single mustard seed, or could be larger than the entire universe. Alice accomplishes her size change by consuming a magical cake that says "Eat me," and a bottle of magic potion that says "Drink me." This shows that the initiatory substance, the Philosopher's Stone, the Apple of Wisdom, is in fact a living intelligence that can be consumed to create transformations in the body.

Alice finds a bottle that asks her to drink it

In the story of Alice's Adventures in Wonderland, the rabbit is clearly playing the role of the Psychopompus, the Judas goat, who lures his prey to initiation through sacrifice via the land of the dead. The concept of fishing for men in this fashion, using subtlety and trickery, is represented in the sub-story of "The Walrus and the Carpenter" that was told to Alice by Tweedledee and Tweedledum. This story seems at first take to be totally nonsensical, but it is actually a metaphor for how Alice herself got down the rabbit hole.

In the story, a walrus and a carpenter (clearly an allusion to Jesus) live in a land where the sun shines at night. For food, they fish for oysters by hypnotizing them with false promises, calling them to come out from their beds beneath the ocean. When they come to the surface they are swallowed up into the belly of the walrus, just as Alice herself had been swallowed up by Wonderland. When Alice spoke aloud the words "Eat me!" and "Drink me!" she was describing what was, in fact, already happening to her.

The Walrus and the Carpenter scene from the animated film Alice in Wonderland- (https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Nql1_RKwQt0)

Perhaps, like Persephone eating the pomegranate seeds offered to her by her captor, Hades, it was Alice's consumption of these items that obliged her to remain for a spell in the Underworld (a common theme also in Jewish folk tales about the underwater castle of Asmodeus, the king of demons). The earlier story she was told of the oysters being invited by the Walrus and the

Carpenter to come to dinner with them, before realizing that the dinner was them, was but foreshadowing of Alice's invitation to join the tea party. They are both really a coded reference to the Grail service of the Parzival legend, at which, it is implied, the blood and flesh of children was served.

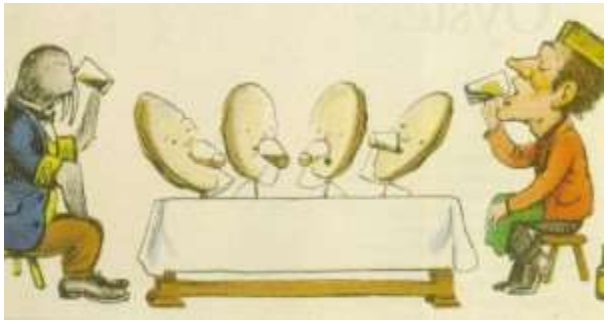
The Mad Hatter character is an alchemist. Hat-makers, like alchemists, were at one time at high risk of developing permanent brain damage as a result of breathing the vapors of the liquid mercury they used in their trade. Significantly, the Hatter's tea party is being held in celebration of the "unbirthday" of the attendees. The negation of birth is apparently held holy in the topsy-turvy world of Wonderland.

Here we see the mystical concept of preventing the birth of the king's heir by swallowing the newborn as it emerges from the womb, just as King Saturn did to his children. Thus, while they remained in his belly, they had still technically never been born, but were "unborn." This is what is meant by the rabbit who is perpetually "late," a euphemism for being dead. The fact that the rabbit's watch is said to be "two days slow" indicates that he and the other subjects of the kingdom may never have been born to begin with. So the "unbirthday" cake given to Alice at the party may be a metaphor for the epiphany cake or king cake discussed in the previous installment of this series, which itself was a representation of King Saturn eating his own children.

Alice is presented with an unbirthday cake

Returning to the story of the curious oysters, the meaning of this metaphor was not lost on the screenwriters of Alice, a modern adaptation of Lewis Carroll's classic made to air on the SyFy Channel. In this film, Wonderland is a parallel universe that Alice is lured to when her fiancé is kidnapped. There, the Queen of Hearts feeds off of the souls of humans, captured from our own

world. They are lured into Wonderland, just like Alice, through the “man-fishing” process.



The Walrus and the Carpenter having drinks with the Curious Oysters

Once there, they are imprisoned in a 24-hour make-believe casino. Here they are kept in a trance state, perpetually winning every rigged game the casino has to offer. The good feelings generated by the sensation of winning are channeled from the bodies of the prisoners through a special vent in the floor, then magically turned into potions that the queen and her court feed off of like drugs. The people of Wonderland refer to their captive humans as “oysters” because of the “precious pearls within” — their souls.

The Walrus eating the Curious Oysters

The description of the Wonderland casino prison on this SyFy channel program from 2009 resembles remarkably a metaphor used by economist Max Keiser, starting around the same time, of the “casino gulag” to describe the global economy. In his view, everyone in the peasant class here on Earth is forced to speculate with their earnings on the stock and bond market in order to avoid losing wealth every time the government inflates the fiat currency by alchemically printing more money. Since, like a casino, the game is rigged by the banking cartel,

who can front-run the market with high-frequency trading and are insured against losses with government bailouts, they keep the gambler slaves playing by hypnotizing them with the prospect of being the one-in-a-million lucky slave who gets to win the jackpot.

Max Keiser on the casino gulag - https://youtu.be/n7b-5t01y8I

The people at the casino in Alice always win, or at least they feel like they do, and because of this, they are oblivious to the fact that they are prisoners. Towards the end, they are freed from their spell, and only when they stop playing the games do they remember the children that they have left abandoned at home. This is like the "Caucus Race" of the original Lewis Carroll story, a perfect metaphor for the modern rat race. At this event, people run around in a circle competing with each other, but with no end in mind, because "No one ever loses, and no one can ever win."

Another obvious comparison to be made with the casino gulag is, of course, to The Matrix film series. This story is replete with references to Alice in Wonderland from the very beginning, with the white rabbit playing the role of the initiator yet again (only this time waking the sleeping victim out of his dream state instead of luring him into it). The idea of human bodies being sucked of their essence by unseen monsters, their bodies used as batteries to power the machines of an unseen world, is in fact a perfect metaphor for our economy, and does correspond to many Gnostic descriptions of the universe.

So why do the monarchs of the hidden realm fish for men using subtlety instead of force? Well, for one thing, initiation must be freely sought by the initiate, like the Apple of Wisdom proffered by the serpent in Eden. Was it the intention all along that Adam and Eve would eat the forbidden fruit, obtain the forbidden knowledge, and fall down, down, down, like Alice, into another world? It seems likely.

The other things is that, imprisoned as he is in the center of the Earth, lost eternally in a death-like slumber in the land of Nod — the land of Not! — there are not a lot of other options available to Saturn, the Lord of the Earth. Like Alice says, "When one is lost, it is best to wait for someone to find you." Just as Cain proclaimed "Whosoever findeth me shall slay me," Saturn passively awaits resurrection through the discovery of his tomb, as is the case with the sleeping occupants of the tombs of both Hermes and Christian Rosenkreutz.

The tomb of Venus, according to the Rosicrucian text The Chemical Wedding of Christian Rosenkreutz, is just like these other sacred tombs — in the center of the Earth, lit by an inner

sun, etc. Guarding this tomb is a man who has been appointed this task since he accidentally stumbled on the naked body of Venus many centuries earlier. There he is, condemned to wait until someone else makes the same mistake and comes to take his place.

This like the story of Atlas, obliged to play the part of the World Tree, the Earth's mythical central pillar or pole, upholding the weight of the Earth upon his back. There he must stay until someone else comes along that he can trick into taking his place (a role temporarily played by Hercules at one point). Likewise, Prometheus had to stay chained to Tartarus, having his liver eaten daily, until someone else agreed to be sacrificed in his stead (a role eventually played by Chiron).

On a similar note, in the New Testament, it is proclaimed that God the Father will not let his children out of Hades until his first-born, Jesus, is willingly sacrificed, and descends into Hell to take their places. There the dead are eternally eaten, digested, and eaten again by Satan. In the images of Hell that decorate European cathedrals, inspired largely by Dante's Divine Comedy, Satan is always seen as a monster eating the damned, and his mouth is sometimes akin to the gates of Hell itself.

Hell

Furthermore, in the Grail legend, Parzival takes up the crown of the Fisher King after obtaining the kingdom's release from the spell caused by the Dolorous Stroke. Sometimes he is sent by the king to avenge his wounding by killing the rival king who hurt him. Then somehow the hero must use the very same sword or spear to cure the Fisher King's wound through sympathetic

magic. In some versions, when this happens, the old man is finally able to die, and Parzival is revealed to be his nephew, who then takes his place as Grail king.

Another image of the Dolorous Stroke

Another story with this theme is that of Sleeping Beauty, who waits for a prince to discover her castle and kiss her, breaking the spell caused by pricking her finger on the cursed spindle. In older versions of this story, the hidden kingdom is called the Venusberg, and there the goddess of love waits for men to stumble upon her. When they do, she entraps them with a spell and makes them serve her for centuries as sex slaves.

This is exactly what the demon-witch Circe did to Odysseus in Homer's Odyssey when his ship landed on the shore of her land, drawn there by a magical attractive force. He was also held under a similar spell on the island of Calypso, and at one point his crewmembers had to stop their ears up with wax to prevent themselves from being drawn to their deaths by the irresistible call of the sirens (mermaids).

In his book Aion: Researches Into the Phenomenology of the Self, Carl Jung discussed the legendary "remora" or "echeneis." This was a fish to whom a magical magnetic property was ascribed by the sailors who reported encountering them. Supposedly, they exerted an invisible influence, so powerful that they could stop a ship dead in its tracks. As Jung explains:

"The Echeneis exercises an attraction on ships that could best be compared with the influence of a magnet on iron. The attraction, so the historical tradition says, emanates from the fish and brings the vessel, whether powered by sail or oarsmen, to a standstill. I mention this seemingly unimportant feature because … in the alchemical view the attraction no longer proceeds from the fish but from a magnet which man possesses and which exerts the attraction that was once

the mysterious property of the fish. If we bear in mind the significance of the fish, it is easy to understand why a powerful attraction should emanate from this arcane centre, which might aptly be compared with the magnetism of the North Pole…"

The Echeneis fish stopping a ship with its magnetic power

Jung says the fish of legend really represents the creative power of God sought by the alchemists, which they would imbibe, so as to internalize that power through digestion. Jung writes:

"What is it, then, that one adept whispers into the ear of another, fearfully looking round lest any betray them, or even guess their secret? Nothing less than this: that through this teaching the One and All, the Greatest in the guise of the Smallest, God himself in his everlasting fires, may be caught like a fish in the deep sea. Further, that he may be 'drawn from the deep' by a eucharistic act of integration (called teoqualo, 'Godeating,' by the Aztecs), and incorporated in the human body. This teaching is the secret and 'cunning' magnet by virtue of which the remora ('little in length, mighty in strength') [is caught] …"

The "cunning magnet" is nothing less than the "Magnet of the Wise" or "Compass of the Wise," the "Philosophic Mercury" which the alchemists said could be used to extract the Philosopher's Stone from the lead of cosmic chaos, just as this magical fish could be overcome and drawn from the waters of the ocean. Of this, Jung says:

"The 'magnet of the wise,' which is to draw the wonder-working fish to the surface can, our text says, be taught. The content of this secret teaching is the real arcanum of alchemy: the discovery or production of the prima materia. The 'doctrine' or 'theory' is personified or rather, concretized as 'Mercurius non vulgi,' the philosophical mercury. This conception is as ambiguous as the antique Hermes; sometimes Mercurius is a substance like quicksilver, sometimes it is a philosophy."

Jung went on to describe how this magnet or compass could be used to navigate the waters of chaos to the hidden kingdom at the center of the Earth, which can metaphorically be found, according to some legends, through a secret entrance at the North Pole. Quoting the alchemist Philathes, we read in *Aion* that:

"… in the Pole is found the heart of Mercurius, 'which is the true fire wherein its Lord has his rest. He who journeys through this great and wide sea … may guide his course by the sight of the North Star, which our Magnet will cause to appear unto you."

Then, Jung seems to be blown away by his own conception that the Lord of the Earth, interred in the Earth's center, is himself the source of that magnetic field, and the fire of Hades:

"… I would emphasize, by way of recapitulation, that the infernal fire is nothing other than the Deus absconditus (hidden God) who dwells at the North Pole and reveals himself through magnetism. His other synonym is Mercurius, whose heart is to be found at the Pole, and who guides men on their perilous voyage over the sea of the world. The idea that the whole machinery of the world is driven by the infernal fire at the North Pole, that this is hell, and that hell is a system of upper powers reflected in the lower — this is a shattering thought."

This reference to the pole star as a guide to navigation can also be found in alchemy, where they say that the appearance of a six-pointed star heralds the birth of the alchemical "child." Jung again shares with a us a quote from Philathes that indicates the fate of this child once its location is determined with the help of the pole star or Compass of the Wise:

"This, he says, is the 'ami minera' (the prima materia of the gold), 'the true key of our Work, without which no skill can kindle the fire of the lamp … Do you, when you see his star, follow it to the cradle, and there you shall behold the fair infant. Cast aside your defilements, honour the royal child, open your treasure, offer a gift of gold; and after death he will give you 'flesh and blood, the supreme Medicine in the three monarchies of the earth …'"

If it isn't already clear to you that this is a reference to the "wise men" — the alchemists — eating the flesh and blood of a child, Fulcanelli makes it even more obvious when addressing this same subject in *Mystery of the Cathedrals*:

"… this sign has been called by the ancient authors the Seal of Hermes, Seal of the Wise (Sel des Sages, sel, salt, being put instead of Scel, seal, which confuses the mind of seekers), the Mark and the Imprint of the Almighty, his Signature, also the Star of the Magi, the Pole Star, etc. This geometric pattern remains and shows up more clearly when the gold to be dissolved is put into the mercury in order to restore it to its first state, that of young or rejuvenated gold, in other words to infant gold. That is why mercury — that faithful servant and Seal of the earth — is called the Fountain of Youth. The Philosophers are, therefore, speaking clearly when they teach that mercury, as soon as the solution has been carried out, bears the child, the Son of the Sun, the Little King (Kinglet), like a real mother, since the gold is indeed reborn in her womb. 'The

wind — which is winged and volatile mercury — carried it in her belly', says Hermes in the Emerald Tablet. Furthermore, we find the secret version of this positive truth in the Epiphany cake, which it is the custom for families to eat at Epiphany, the famous feast marking the manifestation of the Christ Child to the three Magi-Kings and to the gentiles. Tradition has it that the Magi were guided to the cradle by a star, which was for them the annunciatory sign, the Good News of his birth. Our cake is signed like the matter itself and contains inside it the little child, commonly called the bather. It is the child Jesus, carried by Offerus, the servant or the traveller; it is the gold in its bath, the bather; it is the bean, the sabot, the cradle or the cross of honour and it is also the fish 'which swims in our philosophic water', according to the very expression of the Cosmopolite.'"

The appearance of the star, from Amiens cathedral, as presented by Fulcanelli

The Beating Heart of Mercury demonstrated- (https://youtu.be/m6631u7d4E0)

Jung, like many other mythographers, saw the god of the Jewish religion as synonymous with Saturn, particularly because they celebrated their Sabbath, or "day of rest," on his holy day of Saturday (fitting since Saturn is the god of rest and leisure). Another connection between the Judaism and Saturn is the so-called "Star of David" or hexagram, which, Fulcanelli says, is also the "Hermetic seal" of the Great Work of the alchemists, the pole star that indicates the birth of the child destined to be ritually sacrificed (like Christ) and turned into gold. The hexagram and the number 6 are both associated with Saturn in ritual magic. That same can be said of the biblical God, who supposedly created the Earth in six days. Interestingly, the planet Saturn has a storm on its north pole as of this writing that is creating a bizarre electromagnetic effect taking the form of a hexagon as seen from space. The phenomenon has yet to be explained by

scientists.

The hexagon at Saturn's North Pole - (https://youtu.be/qzL194jiTyY)

In 2007, a fascinating film about polar inter-dimensional portals and child sacrifice came out entitled The Golden Compass, based on a book called Northern Lights by Philip Pullman (part of a series called His Dark Materials). In this story, which takes place in a fantasy land, a scientist named Lord Asriel (like the alchemist warlock in The Smurfs) has discovered evidence of the existence of another dimension. This evidence involves the presence of a strange etheric substance called "Dust," visible at the North Pole. He believes that this substance is leaking in from the other dimension, and undertakes a journey to the Pole to find an entrance to this world.

An important part of the story is that, in the world in which it takes place, every single person is accompanied at every moment by a familiar spirit, literally called a "daemon," that takes the shape of an animal corresponding to their personality. With children, the daemon is able to shape-shift into different animal forms until the individual's core personality has solidified.

During this transition period, it is revealed that the children are vulnerable to "attack" from the pernicious influence of the Dust. The meaning of this is unclear, but is of great concern to the evil empire that rules this fictitious world, called the "Mysterium." They are believed by the main character, Asriel's niece Lyra, to be behind the theft of children that has been plaguing the orphanages and underclass families of the land. Lyra sets off on a quest to solve the mystery of these disappearing children, rumored to have been captured by enemies called "Gobblers."

To aid her in this quest, Lyra makes use of the "golden compass" referred to in the film's title, which is actually called an "alithiometer": a divination device for detecting truth. It looks like a large pocket watch, and contains wheels with strange emblems on them, which it uses to communicate oracles in answer to questions. In reply to these queries about the kidnappings, it points to images of a baby and a pot boiling over a fire.

The Alithiometer

Lyra later discovers that the children are being used in experiments in which they are permanently separated from their daemons, supposedly so that they can "grow up" properly. In fact, it drains them of vitality and ends up killing them. In the original book, it is revealed that Lord Asriel is in fact conducting similar experiments at the North Pole. It turns out that Lyra's whole quest has been a ruse all along, devised by him. His purpose was really to lure Lyra and her friend Roger to his polar laboratory. There, he separates the boy from his daemon and used the energy generated by this to power an inter-dimensional portal machine that he has invented. So instead of just looking for a portal, he created his own, ripping a giant hole in the atmosphere at the top of the Pole.

This story is rich on many levels, as are the other books in the series. The second part is called The Subtle Knife, which refers to a tool that can cut a window between dimensions (and can cut through anything else as well). This seems reminiscent of the Masonic and Arabian legends of the "shamir worm," which Hiram Abiff and/or Asmodeus purportedly used to cut the stones for Solomon's Temple. I think it may also be what Fulcanelli refers to in Mystery of the Cathedrals as "Le Bon Saber" ("the Good Sword"). It is the Flaming Sword, shaped like a lightning bolt, which cut a hole around paradise and created space-time, separating Adam and Eve from their home, who were trapped outside of the sacred boundary. It is the power by which the Cheshire Cat made a shortcut through the trunk of a tree and allowed Alice to go straight to the labyrinth that led to the castle of the Queen of Hearts. It is the Spear of Destiny which caused the wound of the Fisher King, and caused the kingdom to fall into a death-like trance, trapped in a bubble of chaos.

Shortcut to the castle, created by the Cheshire Cat

The location of the portal in Philip Pullman's novels indicates that the author has knowledge of the nineteenth and twentieth-century stories of secret entrances to a hidden underworld at the North and South poles, where supposedly could be found the so-called "Black Sun." This is a development of the more ancient concept of the hidden sun at the center of the Earth which is said to light the tomb of the sleeping god-king (or goddess-queen) of the fallen kingdom. In the ancient world, where some viewed the Earth as a flat disk, it was envisioned that the sun went to the Underworld at night, where it reigned as the "Midnight Sun," sometimes expressed in ancient artwork as a dark disk. The next morning it returned, reborn as the golden sun.

As the Earth moved through the cycle of the year, towards the Winter Solstice the sun spent more and more time "underground." Thus its death and rebirth was seen as happening on this larger scale as well, and was associated with the king-killing ritual of Saturnalia discussed in part 1 of this essay series (as well as in my book *Money Grows on the Tree of Knowledge*). In alchemy, this concept of the Black Sun or "Midnight Sun" was seen as synonymous with the "nigrido," the dead King Saturn, the "Chaos of the Wise" or prima materia that was the raw material for the Work. As Jung wrote in *Aion*:

"Saturn, in astrology the 'star of the sun,' is alchemically interpreted as black; it is even called 'sol niger' and has a double nature as the arcane substance, being black outside like lead, but white inside."

The Black Sun is pure potential energy, the pre-elemental element that the Otherworld consists

of, and of which our own world is made through reflection upon its shiny black surface. It is the blank slate or black mirror into which the magician or alchemist projects his consciousness. As it is reflected back to him, his perception of it creates the illusory reality he lives in. This is why mirrors, and other reflective surface, like lakes and baths, were seen as portals to the Otherworld, as demonstrated in Jewish folk legends of the kingdoms of Lilith and Asmodeus, and also repeatedly portrayed in the films of initiate Jean Cocteau. By staring into the Abyss, you can see and then experience new ways of organizing the particles of the universe to create new realities.

In this way, the Black Sun corresponds to the power of the "Lord of the Earth," who, like Saturn, is said in myths to sleep in a hidden tomb at the center of the world, influencing surface reality with his dreams. Like Alice staring at the looking-glass, the creation of the Wonderland we live in occurs when Saturn sees his own projected image of his desired reality staring back at him from the Abyss, the dark mirror of the Black Sun. This is the meaning of the black orb seen in the palms of potentates the world over and from time immemorial. It is the "regnum in potentia" that they wield as their power, the word "potential" and "potentate" both being etymologically linked through the root word "potent," meaning "powerful and virile."

Alice traveling through the looking-glass into another world

The word "reality," of course, is linked to "royalty" in European languages. Like a magic circle, the invisible political boundaries of a kingdom or "realm" dictate the confines within which everyone must live in the king's version of reality. It is through manipulation of the probabilities

that govern the quantum world of possibilities that the priest-king manipulates reality. It is not what the king does that makes him powerful so much as what he can do. Once this potential energy becomes kinetic through action, the energy is spent, the hand is played, and the power is transferred elsewhere.

Not surprisingly, as the scientific era dawned and more was known about the cosmos, mystics began to adapt their metaphysics to the new physics, and new concepts were born to explain old symbols. The Black Sun came to be interpreted as being a dark sphere of energy that was literally present within the center of the Earth. It was thought to be the secret source of sustenance for a hidden kingdom called Agartha (no doubt linked to the kingdom of Asgarde in Norse mythology).

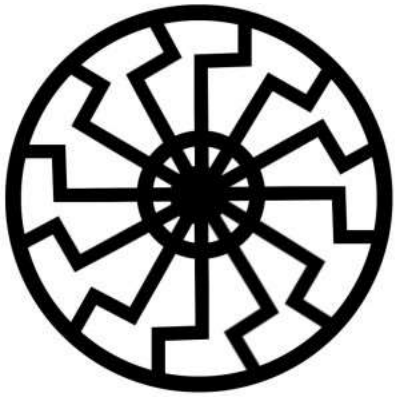
Some authors also wrote of the Black Sun as having influence upon the activities of the surface world, and some even thought of it as the source of the world's electromagnetic field. They believed that this subterranean kingdom could be accessed by secret entrances at the North and South poles, or through the caverns of the Himalayas. Supposedly, certain secret societies were in contact with "hidden masters" from Agartha, who conspired with them on how to control the populations of the Earth.

Numerous science fiction authors and mystical adepts wrote about concepts like Agartha and the Black Sun from the nineteenth century to the mid-twentieth, including Jules Verne, H.G. Wells, H.P. Lovecraft, H.P. Blavatsky, and Alexandre Saint-Yves d'Alveydre. It was the latter author who wrote about the politics of the hidden kingdom. He purported that a political system existed called "synarchy," which involved a surface world (ours) governed by a wise council of elders (the secret chiefs or illuminati, drawn from the world's secret societies), who were themselves governed by hidden masters from the inner world below the Earth's surface.

Strangely, these ideas of a Black Sun and an underground kingdom did have a direct influence on politics during World War II, as it appears that leaders on both sides believed in such notions. On the Nazi side, Himmler and perhaps even the Fuhrer himself were converts to the concepts. To Himmler, the Grail stone and the Black Sun were the same thing, and he purchased a castle in the German village of Wewelsburg, where he planned to build a modern "Grail castle" for special work with elite members of his S.S. ("Schutzstaffel" or "Protection Squadron") military corps.

On the floor of the lowest chamber in the building, Himmler created an "inner sanctum" where rituals would be performed, and on the floor he placed the symbol of the Black Sun that was being employed by contemporary German mystical orders: a wheel, the hub of which radiated lightning-bolt-shaped rays. The German orders saw the swastika as the original root symbol

representing this concept, and its use may have signified, to the inner hierarchy of the Reich, a shorthand code for the secret source of their government's power.



The Black Sun symbol at Wewelsburg Castle

The Nazi government sponsored all sorts of bizarre missions to search for magical artifacts, including the Holy Grail, the Spear of Destiny, and the Ark of the Covenant. Other missions purportedly included a trip to Antarctica to search for an entrance to the inner Earth, and another one to the Himalayas for the same purpose (among others). Many members of the inner hierarchy of Hitler's administration had been influenced by a secret mystical order called the Vril Society. This group believed that Germans were of the "Aryan" race, descended, they believed, from a superhuman species that lived in the center of the Earth. They believed that this underground race used the "light of the Black Sun," the so-called "Vril force" or "Green Ray," as the power source for an advanced technology.

The Spear of Destiny, believed to have pieced the side of Christ (or the Fisher King)

These mystics were into channeling, and believed that they were in contact with these hidden chiefs of the inner world. Purportedly, information was passed on about how to use the energy of the Black Sun to build anti-gravity craft and time machines. Allegedly, the Germans later developed flying saucers based on this technology (called “foo fighters” by the Allied pilots who witnessed them in the war theater). They are also said to have built a machine called “the Bell” that may have been meant to act as a time machine or inter-dimensional portal. The use of the lightning-bolt shaped sign rune as the logo for the S.S., along with the Death’s Head (symbol of the alchemical nigrido) may have been intended as a reference to the natural force of electromagnetism that many mystics thought was the very real manifestation of the Black Sun’s power.

Insignia of the S.S. with death's head and lightning bolts (sig runes)

A documentary called "Nazi UFO Secrets of World War II" - (https://youtu.be/2Xj_noNvgZw)

One the side of the Allies in World War II, a Russian mystic named Nicholas Roerich was heavily influential on the US administration. President Roosevelt and his Secretary of Agriculture, Henry Wallace, as well as his Treasury Secretary, Henry Morgenthau, were all members of the same Masonic lodge. Through Wallace they all came to be persuaded by Roerich, who believed that he was in contact with the hidden masters of Agartha. He convinced Wallace to arrange government financing for a quest for the "foundation stone of the world," which he believed to be in the Himalayas. Under the guise of a trip to obtain agricultural samples, the adventure was embarked upon, at American taxpayer expense.

The documentary "Eye of the Phoenix" covers the influence of Nicholas Roerich on the Roosevelt administration - (https://youtu.be/yZT4tjf0HU0)

The whole incident later became a major embarrassment for the administration. Nonetheless, there is no reason to think that belief in such things was not still rampant in the upper echelons of the government. After the war, Nazi scientists who had worked on secret projects with purportedly Agarthan technology were smuggled into the US and recruited to work for NASA as part of a CIA operation called "Project Paperclip."

At this point in our study we really must mention the work of David Talbot, who is building upon theories of Immanuel Velikovsky regarding major cosmic cataclysm in our solar system in the distant past. Talbot speculates that during the antediluvian Golden Age, when the Earth's tilt was much different, Saturn was the dominant orb in the night's sky. He believes that most of the symbols said by mythographers to represent the sun are in fact depicting Saturn, and that it was his chariot or boat in the night's sky whose movements the priests of the ancient world were really concerned with. This is because, he says, everything back then looked much different than it does now.

The Earth's magnetic field, in addition to protecting us from the damaging effects of solar radiation, also creates a boundary that prevents us from seeing what would otherwise be fantastic optical effects in the sky, caused by that very radiation. At the North and South poles these effects can be seen even today as a colorful aurora. Talbot believes that in the past, when the magnetic field was much weaker (as it always is before and after a major shift of the poles), Saturn formed a spectacular sight in the arch of the sky, as did the other heavenly bodies.

When at times their images conjoined at times, they formed what Talbot calls the "polar

configuration": an image that was represented by ancient man as a starburst or a cross. Talbot has made computer simulations of all the different forms these shapes might have taken in the sky as the Earth's axis continued to shift, and the magnetic field varied in intensity. He believes that these shapes formed the origins for a great many of the most common religious symbols used in the ancient world. He also used these simulations to interpret all of the earliest myths as describing the movements of this configuration in interaction with other heavenly bodies, as seen from Earth by our supposedly primitive ancestors.

A clip from a documentary about Saturn based on the work of David Talbot - (https://youtu.be/11g9wj22J8I)

A hair-raising fact to consider is that scientists acknowledge that the Earth's magnetic field has been getting much weaker in the last couple of hundreds years, and is weakening at an exponentially increasing rate that is now advancing quite rapidly. Perhaps this explains some of the bizarre optical effects in the sky that have been seen by observers in the last couple of years. These include the image of a twin sun at dawn and dusk, sightings of which have been reported dozens of times. Also, dozens of spiral-shaped light formations have been seen over the same time period, with a dark hole in the center, making the appearance of a vortex or portal. Traditional flying saucer-type UFOs have even been recorded vanishing into these holes. In addition, images that look remarkably like the old German Black Sun symbol have appeared mysteriously on the radar at an Australian weather station.

An image resembling the Black Sun, from the radar of an Australian weather monitoring station

Duel suns at sunrise and sunset - (Video no longer available)

Spirals in the sky seen all over the world - (Video no longer available)

Talbot is part of a minority in the scientific community who hold to alternative theories involving the properties of plasma, the so-called "fourth state of matter." Plasma is said even by mainstream science to be the true fundamental state of all matter, a real alchemical "prima materia." Without going into detail beyond the scope of this essay, let us say that Talbot and his colleagues believe that plasma which we cannot see is creating electromagnetic energy throughout the universe that is currently going unnoticed. They think that this is the true source of the gravitational effects measured in space, which have traditionally been attributed by scientists to invisible "dark matter."

In this alternative viewpoint, these scientists turn on its head Einstein's Theory of Relativity, which is based upon a definition of gravity that Einstein himself acknowledged was flawed. Instead of matter, they say it is the electromagnetism of the hidden plasma that is "bending space-time." This, then, would be a viable description of the power of the Black Sun, and would raise it from merely a power within the center of the Earth to a wholly universal phenomenon. It would also explain why the Black Sun's "rays" were thought by German mystics to be useful for creating antigravity, as well as their obsession with lightning bolts.

This is also the basis of some alternative theories about what exactly powers the heat of the sun (presently thought to be nuclear explosions taking place within its core). These theories connect with modern experiments dealing with a technology derisively called "cold fusion" by its critics. Trend forecaster Gerald Celente recently proclaimed that this would be the basis of a new alternative energy source that could have a "game-changing" effect on geopolitics. Interestingly, cold fusion has always been openly compared to alchemy by both its critics and its devotees.

Gerald Celente on cold fusion - (Video no longer available)

A documentary about modern "cold fusion"-type experiments - (https://youtu.be/7FilflaqbVI)

Talbot has many detailed theories about how plasma may have caused electromagnetic bolts to form between heavenly bodies, with cataclysmic effects upon every planet in the solar system. He believes that this happened at least once, and perhaps several times, in the distant past, and that it may happen again someday, as part of a cyclical cosmic pattern. His documentary film Thunderbolts of the Gods is a fascinating exploration of these theories.

The Talbot documentary Thunderbolts of the Gods - (https://youtu.be/5AUA7XS0TvA)

The idea that we are living in a universe powered by an unseen source of electromagnetic energy, forming an invisible web around us, governing the movements of the heavens, can only increase the paranoid feeling that this really is like The Matrix. It truly does seem like a giant machine being run for the benefit of someone either too large to see, or just outside of our perception in another dimension. Perhaps we are unable to see that "someone" because the machine is part of its internal organs, within which we may very well be being digested slowly without ever knowing it. But what would our jail-masters' aim truly be for keeping us in a clockwork such as this?

That is something which we shall explore in future installments of this essay. But in the meantime it is interesting to note that the Earth's core is believed by mainstream scientists to be made of iron, and this is thought to be the real source of the Earth's electromagnetic field. Many alchemical texts referred not to the transmutation of lead so much as that of iron. I suppose that would make the iron core the real "Black Sun," which really is beginning to exert its powerful influence upon the surface of the Earth, in the form of magnetic pole shifts, earthquakes, and volcanic eruptions.

Once again, let us recall that the Romans and the Indians both believed that the Kali Yuga, the last aeon before the rebirth of the Golden Age, would be the "Iron Age." They said it would be ruled by a war-like race made of iron, the metal thought by alchemists to correspond to Mars, the god of war. They would ravage the Earth with violence before being unmercifully snuffed out by the great alchemist in the sky, anxious to throw the Earth into a cosmic athanor, so that it may be reborn again pure and new like gold. Only the elect — those who known how to cut a hole in the cosmos and build an ark made of space-time — will survive the coming cataclysm.

A Grail knight with the Black Sun on his shield

Former UFO Peggy Kane has a message for humanity: the gods just want to rape you and eat you. This is the rather sobering conclusion she has come to after countless hours of analyzing messages from beyond this earthly plane via EVP (electronic voice phenomenon) divination sessions. Anyone who has seen an episode of a modern ghost-hunting reality show knows that "EVPs" are messages that can be heard on either a digital or analog tape sound recording. People will record themselves talking to disembodied spirits and then play the recording back to hear the spirit's reply, usually whispered and faint, as well as distorted-sounding.

Peggy Kane began doing this many years ago after a long career as a UFO expert. She used it as a way to contact extraterrestrial intelligences that allegedly resided in parallel dimensions. But then she decided to go a step forward. She applied a technique known "reverse speech analysis," perfected by David John Oates. Allegedly, if you reverse a recording of someone talking, it will say something else that will reveal what the person was really thinking as he or she was speaking. If the message is congruent, they were being honest at the time. But frequently the perceived backwards message is something at variance with the initial message and allegedly reveals the truth that the speaker wishes to remain secret.

When Peggy Kane applied this technique to the ET EVPs she was recording, it painted a picture of reality that was totally different from what we perceive on the surface. It was a much more sinister view of our world, as well as the world beyond, and what happens to us when we die.

UFO expert Linda Molton Howell once posited: “Could it be that death is the ultimate UFO abduction experience?” That is the conclusion that Peggy Kane has come to, and the intentions of our abductors are not nice at all, according to her.

Peggy says that our reality is being controlled from outside forces that do not have our best interests in mind. They are using both our bodies and souls for food, amusement, and scientific experimentation. Their world is what we consider to be the “astral realm” from our perspective over here. But when we leave our bodies to travel over there (which, she says, we do frequently), then it is perceived as a physical world just like our own. There are buildings, streets, factories, stores, and money being exchanged over there just like there is here. But the universe on the other side is ruled by a bloodthirsty race of Reptilians. The walk upright like humans. But that is where the similarity ends.

According to Peggy, the Reptilians keep humans in a 3rd-dimensional prison by the use of some sort of artificial force field called “the Net.” The situation is very similar to how the human slaves in the film The Matrix were kept by their robot overlords in little capsules floating in goo. There they were used as batteries and bled of their energy while they lived their lives in a computer-generated dream-world. While in this artificial prison, Peggy says that we are constantly being drained of both our physical and astral energy by our hidden masters. They are constantly sucking our soul energy, as well as our blood and other body fluids, and we are unaware of it. The soul energy is called “Loosh,” allegedly, and pre-adolescent children are the best source.

In order to feed off of us, Ms. Kane says the Reptilians sometimes possess our bodies, the way we think of demon possession. This is called “being seeded,” according to Peggy. They open portals or “mind gates” into the human psyche that allow them to whisper suggestions that result in altering the possessed person’s behavior according to the parasite’s wishes. This can then create whatever emotional response the parasite wishes to feed off of. If the Reptilian inside you really enjoys the emotions you give off when you are fighting with your boyfriend, then he will whisper suggestions to you that instigate these situations.

They also make direct use of your “astral body” on the other side, according to Peggy. As soon as people die, and their spirit travels to the other side, they are eaten, just like the worst sinners are depicted being eaten by the Devil in Dante’s Inferno. Peggy says that this is taking place even on supposedly “dead” planets in our own solar system. Ms. Kane says that Mars is a

central hub for the trafficking of “astral body parts.”

But that’s perhaps not the worst of it. According to Peggy, the Reptilians make use of us sexually as well. “Reptilians pull people out of their bodies at night and rape them,” she says. “They do it to almost everybody,” both male and female. The purpose of this, she believes, is that it is another way of stealing our energy. “Rape is one of the ways they feed,” says Peggy. “They call that ‘alien honey.’”

Another reason for this rape is breeding, for according to Peggy, there are no new births on the other side. The babies are allegedly often taken by the Reptilians before they are born. At one point, she says, they made her pregnant and then pulled the fetus out in the middle of the night, leaving her in extreme physical pain. Some of these babies are eaten right away on the other side, and others are raised to be slaves of various sorts before being eventually eaten upon their astral death at the end.

Peggy says that many of the Reptilians delight in toying with psychics and channelers who attempt to contact the spiritual dimension. They play the roles of gods, guardian angels, familiar spirits, departed relatives, and whatever else the seeking person wishes to see. They set up situations where the people they contact agree to give them even more “loosh,” along with blood sacrifices, opportunities to possess human bodies, and sexual favors. However, this activity is also thought to be dangerous by the Reptilians in charge on the other side, so they try to restrict it. According to Peggy, “It’s illegal over there now to talk into a recorder.”

Peggy Kane appears to view all religions, cults, and spiritual movements as the result of such fraudulent contacts and seems to agree with my own assessment, which I have written about in several previous books (including *Solomon's Treasure* and *Hocus Pocus*), describing such institutions as “spiritual pyramid schemes” for the benefit of the spiritual entities at the top. The “near-death experience is a ruse,” says Peggy. After our bodies are raped and eaten on the other side. She says they are brought back to Earth again for another round of life. According to Ms. Kane, reincarnation exists to keep us in “the game.”

Many will recognize Peggy Kane’s stories as having influenced the work of David Icke, who has posited that the world is run by multidimensional Reptoids who can shapeshift into human

form. They do this, he says, by projecting a sort of hologram over their Reptilian skin. Icke believes that most of the powerful people on this Earth are actually Reptilians. He says that they can be traced back to certain aristocratic families that have ruled the Earth and interbred with one another since the beginnings of recorded history. Icke says that they belong to secret societies that worship Satan (as well as a host of pagan deities). They are involved in the widespread kidnapping, rape, and eating of people, especially children, which are all forms of sustenance that they need. Without blood and rape the Reptoids would not have the strength to hold their humanoid form, according to Icke.

This, of course, matches up in many ways with my own research. In my book *The Merovingian Mythos*, I trace the origins of both the religious traditions of Europe and the royal families of Europe to the alleged bloodline of Cain, which supposedly descended directly from the "serpent" in the Garden of Eden. I showed how ancient legends described these original god-kings as actually ruling on Earth directly, interbreeding with humans and ruling over them, until eventually the admixture of human and divine blood became so diluted that they now look like normal humans. I also wrote about the clues indicating that their serpent ancestors were trapped in a spiritual prison in the center of the Earth because of their crimes against God (among them, raping and eating humans). There they await eventual release by their human-hybrid descendants.

I furthermore quoted the work of one Nicholas de Vere, who writes about these royal bloodlines as ultimately descending from the "Dragon race" (from the Serpent of Eden). He claims to be a scion of one of their royal orders, the Dragon Court, and says that they have magical powers, belong to secret societies that conduct Satanic rituals (since Satan is their literal ancestor), retain their magical potency by drinking blood (particularly menstrual blood), and are sexually aggressive by nature. De Vere and his (now late) former research partner Laurence Gardner have been accused by David Icke of being shapeshifting reptiles themselves.

All of this stuff about shapeshifting reptiles from parallel dimensions has been nothing but an amusing urban legend to me for many years. But recent research into ancient mythology has caused me to reassess. Due to my discovery of certain patterns within these old myths, I am now inclined to believe that mankind has for some time been aware that his gods are feeding upon him in the otherworld, and have chosen to represent them in the form of bloodsucking reptiles.

Joseph Campbell was known for his brilliant analysis of universal themes in world mythology, which he wrote about in his book The Hero With a Thousand Faces. What Campbell was saying was not that every single myth tells the same story, but that there is one grand story, one "Monomyth" of which they are all a part, transcending and unifying them all. Like the tapestry woven by Penelope in Homer's Odyssey, the story of the Monomyth can never be finished. For if it were ever completed, that would mean that the sacred king, the hero of the Monomyth, would have to be officially declared dead, lost in the Abyss, and all hope for the redemption of the kingdom would be gone.

So just as any individual novel, short story, or film might be part of a larger series, or the characters might all occupy the same fictional world as those of other, related works, the stories that our ancestors passed on through the generations are all part of the same Master Epic. However, because it takes place in a nonlocal Otherworld beyond time and space, each act of the play can have infinite variations in action and outcome, including the very identity of the characters involved and the alignment of their relationships to one another. In any given story you may either witness the journey to the Otherworld, and the return as well (the classic Hero's Journey). Then again, you may only get to see the departure, or the return, outside of the context of the rest of the story. Or you may only get a fragment a story taking place within another dimension, without any backstory as to how the characters got into the Otherworld in the first place (as in the classic fairy tale that begins "Once upon a time …")

But what does the Hero's Journey actually mean? It has been interpreted as a form of initiation and soul transformation, like a coming-of-age morality tale, wherein one learns a lesson about personal growth and maturity. It can certainly be that if you want to see it that way. However, I am here to offer a more sinister interpretation, from the point of view of the person doing the initiating. Joseph Campbell said that the hero is always "called" to his adventure. He might well have considered who it is that is doing the calling, and under what motivation.

As I have established in earlier installments of this essay series, there is a theme in various myths of an initiator (Chronos, Venus, the Fisher King, etc) luring the main character of a story into his or her realm in the Otherworld. It is often presented as a chance for the hero to obtain a magical power of some sort, usually represented as either an artifact (a holy cup, lance, or stone) or a sacred substance (ambrosia, soma, nectar, or the alchemical elixir). Sometimes he sets off to save a woman who has been abducted by a god or demon for sexual purposes. Sometimes in the course of his journey he also finds himself being used for sex by a goddess or

demoness.

The thesis I wish to put forward is that, in our most archetypal stories (from old folklore and mythology to fairy tales, and even modern TV show, films and novels), human beings tend to tell tales of adventures into another dimension, which seems conceptually to be one and the same with the realm of the dead, the astral realm, and the dreamy realm of sleep. But in each of these stories, the hero or heroine is in fact being enticed to sacrifice his or her life, including blood, flesh, and soul, to the inhabitants of the Otherworld (be they gods, demons, vampires, giants, or whatever). Their need to feast on these things is based on the fact that they have no life in themselves, so thus they have no blood, and no souls. This is not always overtly stated in the story, but is nonetheless frequently implied.

Sometimes the soul of the sacrificed is replaced by that of someone in the Otherworld, with the implication that this sacrifice is necessary so that someone in the Otherworld can experience life again. Sometimes it seems that a god or demon of the Otherworld is trying to possess the body of a living human through sexual union, either to inhabit the body of the lover, or to be incarnated through the child that is conceived by the union. Sometimes, quite frequently, there is a story element involving a child that is sacrificed so that the reign of the king or queen of the Otherworld can continue. Often the child sacrificed is the heir of the monarch, or someone else's child is sacrificed as a substitute for the monarch's son. Sometimes the hero or heroine is lured onto the adventure to rescue this child from certain death.

If the hero of the story is in fact a heroine, quite often she if overtly abducted and taken to the Otherworld, although she may be lured to a spot where she can be easily taken. This is the story of Persephone taken by Hades for his wife. Although this is referred to as the "rape" of Persephone, the word "rape" is related to "rapture" and meant "to be taken away" for the purposes of sex or marriage. Originally the word had nothing to do with the consent, or lack thereof, on the part of the female. The word later took on the meaning of "elicit sexual union" and generally referred to forbidden marriages between particular tribes (as the term is frequently used in the Bible). What it really referred to originally is a marriage between a mortal and a being from the other side.

The purpose of the hero or heroine being abducted or lured to the Otherworld is very sinister indeed. It really represents a person's soul or astral body being projected from their physical body. Once this is done, the soul can become food for those on the other side, while the still

animate body can be used as a vehicle for those spirits wishing to incarnate into the physical realm. The reason why the hero's journey typically ends with "apotheosis," the hero dying to his humanity and being reborn as an immortal, is because this is exactly what is being represented. The hero's soul has disappeared into the Abyss and been replaced with that of an "immortal" from the Otherworld.

Published by Tracy R. Twyman as a three part series on her website quintissentialpublications.com (2011)

QUEST FOR LOVE

Memoir of a Child Sex Slave

ANNEKE LUCAS

QUEST FOR LOVE

Memoir of a Child Sex Slave

ANNEKE LUCAS

"The accumulated darkness of ages is dispelled at once by bringing the light in, not by trying to chase the darkness out."

~ Paramahansa Yogananda

Copyright © 2022 by Anneke Lucas. All rights reserved. No part of this book may be used, reproduced, or transmitted in any form without written permission from the author. This book, any previous drafts of this book or any of its contents published on any platform other than the author's are infringements on the copyright and punishable by law.

Cover photos: Front: private archive of the author, photo of the author taken in 1974. Back: private archive of the author.

Interior photos: private archive of the author.

Quote on Title Page by Paramahansa Yogananda from *"Scientific Healing Affirmations,"* published by Self Realization Fellowship, Los Angeles, CA and reprinted with permission.

This book is published under ISBN number 979-8-9862558-0-4.

Printed in the United States of America.

Cover design by Ranjini Chatterjee.
For more information, visit www.designjini.in or contact
ranjini.chatterjee@gmail.com

CONTENTS

Introduction

Chapter One

Chapter Two

Chapter Three

Chapter Four

Chapter Five

Chapter Six

Chapter Seven

Chapter Eight

Chapter Nine

Chapter Ten

Chapter Eleven

Chapter Twelve

Chapter Thirteen

Chapter Fourteen

Chapter Fifteen

Chapter Sixteen

Chapter Seventeen

Chapter Eighteen

Epilogue

Dedicated to All the Victims and Survivors of the World-wide Network

In Honor of the Memory of these Victims of the Belgian Network:

My little friend Wouter

The young woman
The 12-year old Moroccan boy
The thin girl with long ash blonde hair (sickly fairy)

The blonde boy

Peter Bosmans
The 9-year old girl with wavy brown hair and bangs

and

Julie Lejeune

Melissa Russo

An Marchal

Eefje Lambrecks

Thank you for all the kind and generous messages of support you have sent over the years. These messages have encouraged and uplifted me more than I can adequately express.

Special thanks for the invaluable support in the creation and publication of this book:

Dixie Waldrip, my fellow survivor and editor extraordinaire; Douglas De Coninck, for fact-checking the information regarding the Dutroux case in this book;

Kurt Ossenfort, whose support has been steadfast from the start;

and

Sam Hiyate at the Rights Factory, my trusted literary agent.

IMPORTANT NOTICE:

This is a general trigger warning for intense material such as extreme child neglect, sadism, sex trafficking, and graphic descriptions of sexual and physical abuse, violence and murder.

The attachment of the child narrator to her perpetrators, and the confusion this creates in the child's mind, may be a trigger for anyone who has ever experienced incest, sexual, physical or emotional abuse by a parental figure, teacher, or any authority figure during childhood or adulthood.

If the reading of this memoir evokes experiences in any way similar to those described, it may be important to be able to reach out to a therapist or a safe person.

It is easy to sensationalize extreme conditions of a childhood such as mine. Creating sensation is a form of exploitation, and shows lack of understanding. It requires courage to read my story, which sheds light on a truth that has been successfully hidden for too long. Absorbing this truth is the most important and the most helpful thing one can do, and I am awed by all those can receive these facts in the spirit in which they were shared.

NOTICE ABOUT NAMES:

I grew up with the first name Ann, of which there are several diminutives in Flemish and French, such as Annie and Anneke, used by different people in the book. I started going exclusively by Anneke in 1985 upon my arrival in the U.S. and currently do not respond to the name Ann.

My surname at birth was Michielsen and my stepfather's name was Geens. I obtained an official name change in 2001 when I was naturalized as a U.S. citizen.

The name d'Auriac is the fictional name for a family whose children were exposed to the network. To protect the child victims' identities, the surname and all first names of the members of this family, as well as other potentially identifying details, have been changed throughout this book.

I have chosen to omit various names for personal reasons. It has taken much soul searching to make the most ethical as well as practical choices in communicating my story. The process has taught me, above all, to be patient, and trust there is a right time for everything.

INTRODUCTION

Most of this book was written in 2004. It was read back then by two literary agents, whose basic commentary was that, although the manuscript was a page-turner, the content was too heavy. The content has not changed, but the world has, and I believe that the time has now come for this story to be told.

People's ability to absorb the dark facts of my childhood, which give a glimpse into how the elite secretly functions, has steadily increased. The world's greatest curse is power abuse, which sabotages the best initiatives. Part of this curse is the temptation for anyone making headway in any area—although often starting out with great ideals and authentic creative gifts—to succumb to the ways of power somewhere along the way, perverting original integrity and intentions and give in to selfishness, greed, theft and lies, as modeled at the top levels of power. My story shows where that road ultimately leads. As we work to remove our own blind spots, our lies and our greed, and heal from our own trauma, we also reach greater clarity about the deceit in the world. We are now in a time in which there is dire need to connect with deeper truths, so that massive lies and hypocrisy can be exposed and collective healing can begin.

Weeks after starting psychotherapy in the 1980's, I was confronted with the truth of my father's sexual abuse and broke out in tears. I cried for weeks, but from the moment grief hit, it also felt that I was finally dealing with something real; I was starting to find myself, like a tiny crack letting a single beam of light into a dark cave. Each time feelings or bodily reactions that had been repressed in trauma were consciously linked to their source, I learned something significant. Through healing, I also started to become conscious of how, through my unresolved trauma, I myself was blind to the mass deception imposed by some of the very people who had abused me in childhood. In observing my transformation, I could look back and understand former behaviors, habits, and beliefs I had adopted to cope with the trauma. Personal transformation is sacred, and the journey is spiritual, as the integration translates to an increase in empathy, understanding, and the ability to love.

Even though I merely describe what happened to me personally, my memoir is controversial, because extreme events involving known political figures can easily stir up one's own unhealed trauma and feelings towards authority figures, and can threaten one's core beliefs and worldview. Confronting personal trauma is synonymous with deprogramming from mass brainwashing. It demands courage; no one wants their past to include humiliation. Before healing, we are left only with a vague impression of horrendous shame, which, like a virus, is transmitted during the abuse, and causes dissociation, denial, and other defense mechanisms to avoid feeling it. Shame unattached to corrigible actions is unbearable, because it covers the soul with the lie that the "badness" is incorrigible, and thus innate. While my perpetrators did their best to turn this troubled emotional state into a complex belief system, for all their smarts and heady theories that justified their evil actions, they were blindly perpetuating their own abuse, too scared to face their own truth, and the truth about their own childhood authority figures. In the thirty-plus years of my healing journey, I have waded through that muck of shame, confronting the greatest of fears: that the messages about me which accompanied the abuse would be true. Only the experience of facing those fears yields the answer: that these messages are lies and that we are all, at our essence, pure souls.

Twenty-five years ago, it seemed unimaginable that I would ever publicly share my past. However, around that same time in my home country of Belgium, unbeknownst to me, other network survivors, labeled X-Witnesses to safeguard their anonymity, were revealing all they knew to police in the Dutroux case. The case had sparked outrage and grief in the wake of the rescue of two girls from Marc Dutroux' dungeon, and the subsequent discovery of four girls' bodies in nearby locations on the grounds of properties owned by Dutroux.

In 1996, Marc Dutroux told the press he was a small cog in a giant wheel and alluded to his protection by highly placed government officials. The New York Times reported about the "deadly pornography ring."[1] It appeared as though the entire world was about to learn all about the network into which I had been sold as a child. I learned about the Dutroux case in a New York Times article when the Chief Investigator who had promised the distraught

public to "get to the bottom of this," was fired for partiality because he had eaten a plate of spaghetti at a fundraiser for victims. This sincere judge's dismissal sent more than 300,000 people into the streets of Belgium in what were termed the White Marches, protesting government corruption in the wake of the child murders.[2]

Under the codename X1, Regina Louf testified to a team of dedicated investigators about her experiences of child sex slavery in the Belgian network. X1/Regina Louf recalled minutiae of interiors and inflicted wounds, as well as biographical and circumstantial data about victims and abusers. Her information enabled investigators to link her testimony to several unsolved child murder cases. However, an inquiry was ordered into the X1 investigation. Her trusted initial investigators were put on leave and replaced with a new team. The "investigation of the investigation" was found to be unsubstantiated on the first day, yet the inquiry remained open for over two years without yielding a single result. Moreover, a "rereading" of all the X1 files was ordered. The new team of investigators was suspicious of the X-witness testimonies from the get-go, and their rereading destroyed the original investigation. During a press conference in 1998, eleven magistrates solemnly addressed the Belgian press, declaring, "Everything has been thoroughly examined, and X1's testimony is completely worthless."

In a book about the X-Witness testimonies,[3] the authors examined the entire transcript of the X1 deposition and the four reports of the rereading. The authors were able to establish that the new team of investigators changed quotes from the transcripts, or used isolated bits of text to prove certain points which lost their validity once the excerpts were seen in proper context. Almost none of the conclusions in the rereading reports survived the double-take. Meanwhile, the statute of limitations of the child murder cases which X1 had spotlighted had expired.

In 2004, eight years after Marc Dutroux was apprehended, when the case finally went to trial, it looked like the Belgian network had been forgotten by the international media. Previous reports about a larger network were ignored and the single-perpetrator theory was widely embraced.[4] All testimony and evidence regarding the existence of a ring involving VIPs had been cut off from the case, and relegated to a new case file, *"Dutroux-bis"*

which was quietly closed months after Marc Dutroux was sentenced to life in prison. Belgium had gone from national outrage to wide-scale indifference and denial. In an ironic twist, those who banded together as "disbelievers" believed the official story—that survivors of the network were mythomaniacs. Those who suspected that corrupt, highly placed officials sabotaged the case to cover up their own and their friends' crimes, were labeled "believers."

Thanks to X1/Regina Louf, I was armed with awareness of the treatment which survivors of the Belgian network could expect once they gathered the courage to speak out. It would take several more years before I would feel ready to withstand the inevitable disbelief, disrespect, mockery, threats, and personal attacks that were sure to come my way if I would start sharing my own history. In 2013, I was interviewed about my work in prisons, which marked the first time I publicly revealed my past in the Belgian network.[5]

It may be worth noting that I never came across Marc Dutroux, who is only seven years older than me, and was not active in the network in the years I was there. My memoir begins in 1973, after I had already been abused in the network for four years, and centers around the tumultuous relationship with one of my abusers, who was not a VIP.

Maybe my story can be a tiny beam of light in a large, dark cave. Many other stories can never be told because the victims are dead. Other stories are being told, as more survivors of organized abuse and mind control are speaking out. However, as survivors of extreme abuse, we cannot possibly be expected to ever go public, considering the extensive trauma and the obvious potential for re-traumatization, not only from the retelling of horrific events, but from the massive, uncensored victim blaming that is sure to follow, not to mention the threats and intimidation tactics by the network. The message that was most deeply embedded in the network, and the apparent reason for much of the horror and violence, was and still is all about secrecy.

Elite pedophilia is the world's best protected secret. And it makes sense, because the perpetrators need to ensure that you, the reader, will never focus on them. They prefer that we all keep busy with the many distractions they throw at us to keep us divided: dysfunctional siblings of the global family, with psychopaths and narcissists for parents. We should do anything but look

to the source of Western society's ills, which is the utter selfishness of the leadership, so extreme that it is an emotional disease, of which symptoms such as heartlessness and superiority turn its hosts into monsters. Those who do what it takes to belong to the power establishment are the most lost, the most emotionally infantile, the most broken, and the most evil among us. They do not deserve our trust, our confidence, our acceptance of their political savvy and expertise, or our admiration for their power or wealth—it is all smoke and mirrors. If we can absorb the reality that many of the most rich and famous rape and kill children with impunity, how can we possibly continue arguing and vilifying each other over differences of opinion?

Here is my story; my hard truth. Thank you for having the courage to look.

---

1. *New York Times, Sept. 12, 1996: "King Forced to Step In/Pedophile Scandal Just One Of Many: Belgium's Confidence Crisis is Deepening"*

2. *New York Times Oct. 21, 1996: "275,000 In Belgium Protest Handling of Child Sex Scandal"*

3. *French Title: Les Dossiers X: Ce que la Belgique ne devait pas savoir sur l'Affaire Dutroux Flemish Title: De X-dossiers: Wat België niet mocht weten over de zaak-Dutroux (The X-Files: What Belgium was not supposed to know about the Dutroux Case) by Annemie Bulté, Douglas De Coninck and Marie-Jeanne Van Heeswyck. Publisher: Epo/Houtekiet, copyright 1999*

4. *New York Times, March 2, 2004: "Belgian Faces Trial At Last In Sex Killings"*

5. *DNA Info March 13, 2013: "New York City Child Sex Trafficking Victim Finds Peace Teaching Rikers Inmates Yoga"*

CHAPTER ONE

Belgium, 1973

I am normal. My family, house, village, school, even my country, are as normal as it gets. We are known for chocolates and waffles, for Bruges and the rain, for our relative wealth, for an easygoing lifestyle, and for our beer. We are a Catholic country; I have been at an all-girls school with the Sisters of the Annunciate Order since pre-K. My grades are average, no honors. We are a church-going, middle-class family of four, and we live in an average-sized house with a yard. Our language is Germanic, our reserve Nordic, our religion Southern, and our culture confused. The Second World War is still doing damage in my mother's secret heart; my stepfather, who fought in it, is kind of dead. And all of this is normal in these parts, in these times.

It is Saturday afternoon and I am watching TV, still extremely normal. My mother, whom I call Mama, warns my little brother that this is his bedtime.

Though the sky is gray, it is still light outside; the Flemish antique brass wind-up clock says that it is twenty minutes after four. My little brother's bedtime changes daily. The time does not matter, what matters is that this is my cue. He protests, "Why doesn't Ann have to go to bed?"

"Because she is older than you," answers Mama.

This is true. I am four years older than my brother. He is six and I am ten. But when my stepfather is home, we sometimes do go to bed at the same time, and usually much later. When my stepfather is home, I have a different cue.

Mama accompanies my brother to his bedroom. I stay behind in the quiet, half-dark living space, and stare at the corner of the roughly-hewn slate shelf of the fireplace. It disappears, and so does everything else. Space and time. Even me. Everything is gone.

Mama enters the room and looks at me. I get up and tell her I have to get ready. I go to the bathroom, lock the door, and begin my ritual. I look in the mirror.

There I am: normal, bland, ugly, ashamed, bad; Mama's girl.

I observe my image, and tear off the invisible swathes that cover my face to create what Mama needs to see, also covering my eyes to the truth of who she is. Looking in the mirror now reveals structure and sensuality in my features. My lips swell into an involuntary pout, my nose takes on a definitive shape, my skin tone evens out, cheekbones appear, and my eyes are larger. As I transmute, everything becomes clear.

I brush my hair. It has grown over my shoulders. I brush it for a long time, continuing to look at my face. I hear Mama's hushed voice outside the door.

"Ann, are you ready?"

"Almost."

Though her voice is a whisper that keeps my brother asleep, I hear that she is impatient, anxious. I brush my hair, peaceful in a moment of stolen time, free from Mama. Only after the cue has been given, though. In our normal life I would not do or think anything that could upset Mama. The door shakes in its hinges.

"We're going to be late if you don't hurry."

When I unlock and open the door, Mama gives me an irritated look. I pull an anorak from the coat rack and loosely throw it on before following Mama to the front door and to her car parked in the driveway. Night has fallen. Shivering, I get in the passenger's seat.

Mama checks the rear-view mirror, pointed towards her face instead of the back window. She releases the hand break and lets the car roll down the driveway. I stiffen, sensing her breathless tension. This is our time out of time, when the shadow appears, when darkness reflects nothing, when the black hole sucks up the here and now—the same hole that has my mother's soul and left her a poor beast in a shell of human flesh. I know the beast cannot be spoken to. In a society of humans, Mama wants to be human—she keeps checking that mirror—so the beast that drives the car has to hide, especially from itself.

What is happening is not actually happening. That is the silent message I receive. Mama loves secrets.

She turns the key, maneuvers the car, clumsily turns it around, and we are off into the dark. Once we pass the windmill and get on the paved road, she will turn left onto the square, though I never know which way we will go once we reach the church in the town center.

Left. This means the ride will probably be short. When we pass the church of the next village, I expect that we will turn left again, and after a few minutes will end up on a lane leading to a large vacant mansion. But instead we go straight, towards the Brussels highway.

I hear the noiseless sound of my blood flowing, flushing, faster, expanding, tightening my veins, tightening my heart. At the orgies around Brussels, whether in bars, villas or castles, you never know what may happen. The Brussels atmosphere is bloodthirsty. The network, though it is my reality and I have to know it, is part of that shadow that cannot be known.

I count the triangular patches of light we pass through, falling from the enormous light poles on the expressway, the ones that make Belgium visible on night satellite photos, like a great orange spider web.

Eighty-seven…

Eighty-eight…

Eighty-nine…

We drive through ancient woods, up a boulevard alongside the forest, then turn onto a road running through a Brussels suburb, onto the driveway of a small castle, ivy climbing up its walls, tucked away between peaceful pastures and forest. Mama stops the car off to the side, away from the main entrance.

"This is a nice place," comments Mama.

My state of extreme fear causes my concentration to hone in on the smallest details and every little movement or nuance, as I listen for something in Mama's voice.

"The Countess d'Auriac told me it's going to be special tonight."

Mama sounds like she is trying to prove that she is an insider, and not just my chauffeur. She must have been impressed hearing names. Big names mean big danger.

Castle, Belgium,
one overcast afternoon sometime in 1973

I walk through a hallway, looking up at stately portraits, perhaps of the ancestors of the family who inhabits this castle. Through open double doors I enter a salon; endless oak parquet floors reflect the gray sky. A group of old men are talking by a wide-open liquor cabinet. The boss is there; I don't know his name but call him Polo. He is the biggest boss, the biggest sadist, and has some high post in Belgian politics. He is with the polished-looking Gaspard (I believe that is his last name) and a few of his other shady friends.

There is another small group of four foreign visitors, one of whom translates from French into Italian for the shortest among them, a man with a receding hairline, badly hunched shoulders, and a hawkish face. The three other Italians lean towards the little fellow while he only moves his eyeballs. *This is my guy.* Someone calls him by his name. I will call him "A."

"Come here!" Polo calls out in Flemish, since he believes that is my native tongue. The truth is that my first language was French, and I learned Flemish

only after Mama got married and we moved from Brussels to Flanders when I was three. After four years in the network, I am fluent. I won't tell Polo, because the more I understand, the more I am considered a danger to his secrets.

With all eyes focused on me, I carefully approach the group. Though I am only ten years old, I am the girl always used for The Game. I was properly trained abroad, under the auspices of a foreign, world-renowned VIP and global network Big Shot, who is revered in the Belgian network. While none of that reverence rubbed off onto me, Polo is getting plenty of use out of the training that prepared me for the world's elite. The perpetrators never need say a word—I anticipate their every whim, and fluidly, automatically, fulfill their deepest emotional needs and sexual desires.

Gaspard gathers up papers spread out on the salon table and neatly puts them in folders. I am a part of this arms contract, one weapon that is not on paper. Gaspard mumbles something under his breath to Polo, who quickly turns his head away, only 20 degrees or so. However, the effect is enormous: Gaspard slumps, suddenly looking rumpled and wrinkled. He nervously excuses himself and hurries out the room, clutching the papers.

"So, which one?" Polo asks me.

That question is the starting shot of the game. I smile at Polo without moving my lips, as if I would choose him if I could. I sit in a large armchair and fold my hands, looking ahead to get into the zone, while I hear the blood pumping out of my heart. I won't be killed over making the wrong choice, but you never know what the man might do to make sure no one will ever find out.

"Sirs!" Polo booms as he gestures towards me. "Have you forgotten how to court a lady? Where are your manners?"

The Italians laugh, including A. Still, someone hurries to translate. Next, they are all talking at once, until the translator comes to sit in the chair next to mine.

"What is your name?" he asks in French that sounds Italian, smiling bravely.

I look silently at him and wait for the right moment to answer. As I wait, his smile changes as he raises his brows. He is sort of funny and charming, but looks at me as if I am just a child, and that is his mistake.

The Belgians down their tumblers and get ready to leave, but Polo's attention is with the Italians. The translator breaks eye contact and turns to the others, asking something in Italian.

"She understood you very well," Polo calls out, his tone implying that the Italian might be the one with trouble understanding. "But I doubt she's going to waste any more time on you!"

Everyone laughs. I overhear the words *"molto bella,"* and Polo winks at me as he leaves the salon with the other Belgians. I almost see a comical look on the translator's face next to me. I like him best; he is the least scary of the bunch, but he is out of the game and I have to ignore him.

I focus on a black-haired thug with dead eyes that glare suspiciously: *why are you looking at <u>me</u>?* In the sidelines of my vision, I see A. watching me, grabbing his chin like someone absorbed in a story. I make my eyes dead like the thug's and stare him down. In this zone, I read his energy. My survival instinct is activated, which I was trained to use to gather information from perpetrators in a flash. From this thug, I get that he is used to killing men, but that he would never touch a child. He clearly does not suspect that a young girl like me might be more dead inside than he is. In response to my stare, he looks a little surprised, and then sad. The trauma inflicted during my training was designed to systematically kill off all my hopes and feelings, so that I would be dead inside and appear super grown up. In the zone, I automatically bypass the rational brain, and comply with the perpetrators without any feelings or thoughts interfering. The point of the training was that I would never again experience natural reactions such as fear, horror, surprise, or sadness, unless a perpetrator desired I experience them. My deadened feelings make me appear mature in the same way that the perpetrators also only appear mature: they don't have control over their

feelings like truly mature people; their feelings are deadened. My own deadness ensures that they will never be faced with the reality that they are hurting a child. The most insecure and immature men need power the most, because they are the most deadened.

I avert my head away from the thug, just like Polo did to Gaspard, and notice, without looking, that the big shot of this little group, A. is almost smiling.

The second to last contender looks ruthless, intelligent, and ugly. His lazy eyes flatten me into a little object, and he smiles flirtatiously. A. energetically draws me in and as we lock eyes, his are twinkling softly.

"Siediti qui!" says the ugly one, tapping his leg.

Staying attuned to A., I move towards the ugly one and lean on his lap so as not to put any weight on his leg. He smiles so all his white teeth show, though his eyes are still lazy.

"So, what do you like, eh?" he says quietly.

The ugly one speaks to me in Italian, which is not a language I have mastered. Nevertheless, his confidence that I will understand him is supreme, and I gather what he means from the energy behind the words. This is one of the things that can happen in that zone beyond thought. A. is still watching, not ready yet. I look the ugly one in the eyes, thinking, *I'm here to do what you like.*

"I can show you," the ugly one whispers.

I smile as if to mean I am sure he can make me feel really good, and put my full weight on his legs. His breath stinks of whiskey. I take his tumbler and smile at him as I have a sip, remedy against the smell, the nausea. The ugly one thinks that I am choosing him.

This is the moment A. has been waiting for. I jump off the man's lap and quickly join A. as we walk resolutely out the door together.

Bedroom in castle, Belgium, 1973
"Yuk."

With a small horsewhip, I examine A.'s testicles.

"Two rotten pears…."

I maneuver the loop of the whip up and down A.'s limp penis.

"…From a sad old tree."

A. lies naked on the floor while I stand over him. I catch him sneaking a peek.

"Don't look at me, creepy old bastard."

With all my might, I whip his thigh. A. becomes aroused.

"On hands and knees," I command.

I kick A. into position and lash his buttocks, several times, hard.

"Open your legs."

Standing behind him, I administer quick taps so the leather stings his testicles, which greatly excites him.

"You like this too much. Turn around. On your back!"

I kick him again. He falls into the fetus posture and crosses his arms protectively over his face. I push him on his back and straddle him.

"You can't do anything without help, can you?"

I push his chin up with my hand, so his head arches back.

"You just want to look. I told you no."

"Not allowed" are the words A. needs to hear. He puts pressure on my hands, tries to lower his gaze, a desperate grimace on his face, his shoulders pathetically hunched. When he is about to come, I stand up and cover his eyes with my foot.

"I'm gonna piss on you."

"*Si!*" exclaims A.

As urine flows over his face and neck, semen flows over his stomach. He shivers, huddles, cold, wet, and miserable.

It is all a game. We are playing roles: me, the powerless slave/ruler; he, the powerful ruler/slave. A bigger-than-life self is fun, but not real. Neither is the groveling, smelly bad boy. We are like infants, shaped by the psychic energy of those around us, condemned to turn everyone into a mother. Feeling all, we take everything personally; only complete subservience bears no insult. We live in a void, our sense of self lost, killed long ago by a slew of humiliations. Without self-esteem, lies fill the emptiness: egos raw and rampant, never checked or civilized by a caring adult. Whether we re-experience the humiliation or repel it by humiliating others, it always haunts us, and it has turned A. into a slave to power.

He shoots me a fearful glance. I kneel beside his head. Now the hardest part of the job begins: I have to hide my disgust and get myself into a space from which I can love. A. pulls me close. I cradle his head on my lap and touch his face. My hand slides over his skin, along his neck to his arm. I smooth the oxidized sweat back into his pores, caressing the shoulder, wishing I could ease it down and release the burden resting there. I give and give and give the tender love A. never received, which he has always needed, still needs, and always will. A. meekly, sweetly looks me in the eye, like a docile little boy.

It makes me hopeful that my one wish can be fulfilled. I only need a small sign; I will recognize it in the tiniest gesture. The mind control training was not 100% successful, because I am not completely dead inside; I want to know if true love exists. That is all. In this moment, in this situation, is this man able to give what he is taking? Energy flows through my hands, and with each stroke, A. looks more fulfilled. When he glows like a well-fed baby, he brusquely rises, and without another look, hurries to an adjoining bathroom.

I feel like I am dying. Once again, it seems that power is obtained through theft of love, and love is the energy which the powerless give to the

powerful to obtain love, and that neither the power nor the love is real.

Castle Van Revelingen,
Rhode-Saint-Genese, Belgium, fall 1973

The orgy is in full swing. I am let in at the late stages, after those who are not considered "ripe" for children have left. Lights low, I pretend to notice nothing and no one, like the Count d'Auriac having sex with a skinny, naked blonde woman, crouched on all fours on a stuffed chair. The count's face is deformed by contempt, pulling his brows up and mouth corners down. His shirt and tie are on properly, he even wears his jacket, but his trousers are down just enough. He is always in the same role; there is no play in him.

There is Polo, huddled together with his ever-present friends and acolytes. I try to slip away, but Gaspard, the polished-looking one, throws me a significant glance. When I come to stand near him, he runs his hand across my jeans, my buttocks and the inside of my thighs, while carrying on a conversation with a tall, thin man with a long, wrinkly face whom I have never seen before.

Ignoring me as he fondles me, Gaspard is showing that I am available for sex. The guest watches, entirely impassive—strange for a newcomer, who usually betrays agitation at this point. This man is either not new or he does not like girls. Gaspard pushes his fist up between my legs, obliging me to widen my stance, helping the guest understand he can do anything at all to me. I feel myself blush. The wrinkly newcomer smiles. Gaspard nudges him, but the newcomer subtly shakes his head. Gaspard dismisses me with a disdainful glance, as if I were too dirty to please anyone. My role is to take on all that which he so painstakingly tries to wash off himself. And I do feel dirty.

Men have gathered in small groups, by appearances casually talking and drinking while their eyes hungrily dart about the salon as couples form, strip, and engage. Someone makes eye contact with me. As I slowly approach him, I transform under his gaze: I am now awfully small, thin and delicate, and look at him very shyly. As he offers for us to sit, I sense his arousal, as if my attunement turned me into his energetic suffix. I catch the glance of another man from another cluster. Sitting next to man number one, I keep shooting looks at the second, who is younger and looks slightly better. My eyes say, *"Come and save me!"*

For the brief instances in which my eyes meet those of man number two, I metamorphose into a playful, mischievous girl, bored out of her mind. The purpose of this game is to win as much time as possible before having to go upstairs with anyone.

Man number two heads over, shakes hands with man number one and company, and sits in an armchair across from me. Man number one notices why man number two is there, and agitatedly begins to tell a story, placing his hand on my thigh, as if I were his girlfriend.

I notice someone else who is new and wonder if he is one of the kids. He looks really young, maybe just too old to be one of us. Very tall, with white-blonde shoulder-length hair, he is wearing jeans instead of a suit and tie. He limps a little, and as if to make up for it, his vigorous energy explodes through the room. My heart races. He strikes me as a fierce survivor with impossible hurdles: too sensitive, too intelligent, and too hurt.

He turns his head, looks at me, and abruptly changes his course in my direction. As he makes his way over, his gaze briefly slides down to my thigh with the man's hand on it. I jump out of my seat and advance into the room to meet him. The adrenaline pumps through my body as I take him in, plying my senses in attunement. I seem to take on the glow and proportions of a glorious goddess, but my face, strangely, is just my own, as if I can finally be me. When he stands before me, I smile.

"So, you like your job, do you, you little whore?" he says softly, quickly.

Incredibly indignant, I ask, "You think I like it here?"

He stares at me in shock. The ferocity of my reaction surprises me too, but surely it is just part of the game, sensing what he likes.

As the young blonde man continues to stare, the surroundings, the room and all the people in it cease to exist. His eyes transmit an entire universe of emotion. I see all the feelings that have ever been experienced by humans throughout the ages, all together and at once. The myriad of feelings coagulates into one, all others exist only in relation to the presence or the absence of the one; his eyes become a mellow, bright blue ocean of love.

"Thanks for getting my drink for me!"

Florence's words alone are more than enough to break up the moment, but with a nasal snigger, she also deftly positions herself between us, her back to me, facing the young blonde one, nodding at the glass of champagne in his hand.

Florence is the ten-year old daughter of the Count and Countess d'Auriac, with long hair, high cheekbones, and worldly confidence.

"Here you go," says the young blonde man, upon which he hands Florence the glass and turns on his heel, leaving us both.

Florence shrugs, saunters over to the bosses, sits next to the new guest with the wrinkly face, and chats. He answers, but frowns, displaying not the slightest interest.

Maybe he likes boys, I think. It is just a hunch, but he strikes me that way, sitting there as if he were a little boy himself, knees closed, hands neatly on his lap, well-behaved and pleased as pie to be part of the Big Boys' club.

Polo taps his thigh, and Florence crawls on his lap. I rejoin my suitors. Man number one possessively puts his hand on my thigh and sends a smile that says, "I'm not going to let you escape again." I lower my eyes and lift them to meet the amused gaze of man number two. Behind him, I can't help but notice the young blonde man again, advancing purposefully towards Polo's group, this time with Michel Nihoul in tow.

Michel Nihoul's businessman exterior makes him look like his god Polo, only younger and shorter. Even though he has not been around for long, Nihoul has quickly made himself indispensable as the middleman between the child victims, pimps, pedophiles, and Polo. He arranges everything at the orgies, running around tirelessly to please the big shots.

The young blonde one has an animated discussion with the bosses. Now and then he turns his head towards Nihoul, who dutifully seconds him. From the way the blonde one confidently addresses the group, it is clear he is not one of the lowly pimps. Polo shakes his head with a wry smile.

The wrinkly new guest nervously wriggles his fingers, eyes wide and worried. Though he is very ugly and the young blonde one very beautiful, both have the same build and the same narrow, long face-shape; they look related.

Polo holds out an open hand, as if to say, "go ahead, have it your way." The tall blonde one, once again heads straight towards me, this time with Nihoul following close behind.

If he went and asked Polo for me, this young new guest is amazingly defiant of the network game rules.

"Would you like to accompany me?" he asks quietly, politely, though he brazenly ignores the bedazzled looks of the men around me.

He makes it sound as if I had a choice. As I begin to follow him, he lets his open hand trail behind, offering for me to take it. I respond, of course, but his way suggests that it would have been perfectly okay if I had not.

Our sour-faced bellboy Michel Nihoul leads us up a staircase and through a quiet, wide hallway to a corner room, fingering a set of keys, unlocking the door and entering to switch on some lights. The young man releases my hand to indicate the sprawling room.

"Do you like it?" he asks.

Assuming he is making fun of me, I glare. He smiles and mumbles, "Okay," then dismisses a petulant Nihoul with a swift nod. Nihoul usually

gets off on being the gopher, but the blonde one is not only very young, he is also full to the brim with derisive authority. Whatever his game, he is good at it. There is something about him that reminds me of something about me that I don't want to know.

Alone with the young blonde man, I am suddenly overtaken by fear. My entire body trembles: hands, arms, legs—even my lips are shaking.

"I'm not going to hurt you," says the man in his gentle voice, which has an immediate soothing effect.

I feel very bright and beautiful. An unearthly light threatens to dissolve the structure of every known foundation, and seems to unravel the room.

The room. Why are we here?

"Don't worry," he says. "I'm not going to touch you."

He leans against the wall and casually crosses his arms and feet.

What does he mean?

He laughs as if in reply.

So, then what? I think.

He widens his eyes slightly and smiles. *It's up to you,* he nods. I look at the large bed in the comfortable surroundings. I climb up thinking it would be nice just to sleep, though I don't dare say it.

Standing on the bed, I look at him. In this moment, he looks very young, like a boy, but his face has not looked exactly the same twice since we met. He looks like he has what I have, as if he never solidified out of infancy into a set personality. I have many parts, with different characteristics or skills, fluidly transforming according to the need of the moment. The young man looks like he grew up too fast, awkwardly. I picture him among teens and sense that he is an outcast, like myself. As I think this, his awkwardness is suddenly reflected in his expression, and he limps towards the bed with a sheepish smile.

“Isn’t this better than downstairs?” he asks.

With me standing on the bed, our heads are level. The look on his face is so sweet my arms shoot out and I place my hands on his shoulders.

“Yes, it is.”

He responds with a brilliant smile. I am struck by his exquisiteness. His pale skin tone evens out and lights up with a deep, purifying glow. He lifts me off the bed and holds me with his hands, moving me up and down to demonstrate how light I am. I don’t even have to kiss him. His game is very different.

The first thing I notice when I awake the following morning is that I am lying in clean, soft sheets under a comfortable cover. The second is that my underwear are still on.

Patrick is sleeping, the corners of his mouth turned up in a slight smile that looks as if it is trying to decide between peace and sarcasm. I slide off the bed and move to a tall window to absorb the magnificently colorful autumn landscape and the events of last night. It seems impossible, but there was no sex of any kind. A rustle calls me back to the bed. Patrick puts his hands behind his head and smiles. He looks so at ease and attractive, I am drawn to kiss him, but don’t. He pats the pillow next to his head. As I stretch out next to him, he leans on one elbow and places his hand lightly on my cheek. I tremble in fear. He brings his lips close to mine. As I look into his eyes, I notice his pupils are dangerous pins bobbing on a tumultuous ocean of blue. I back my head into the pillow, maybe an inch. Patrick jumps up and pulls on his jeans and shirt.

“I’m hungry. Are you?” he asks. I nod.

“I’ll be right back.”

Ten minutes later, he returns with a large breakfast tray. With a wide grin, he places it down by one of the windows and, taking a jug of steaming milk in his right hand, he lifts it, while with his left he pours the hot chocolate, aiming the milk so it dramatically cascades into the bowl and froths. Deeply suspicious, I observe the activities.

“I made them melt the chocolate,” he divulges, and unceremoniously pours the rest of the milk in his coffee, adding, “That is why I took so long.”

When he smiles, I stare coldly. Undeterred, he busily drops four sugar cubes in his cup. I can’t figure out his game.

“You might need some, too,” he says, extending the bowl of sugar. “I don’t believe the chocolate is sweet.”

The chocolate indeed tastes bitter and I follow his example, dropping four sugar cubes into the bowl. Then I follow his example again and dip the tip of a croissant into the liquid. The taste explodes into vibrant good feeling. The doughy, buttery sweetness in my mouth, the beautiful autumn view out the windows, and the familiar-looking young man; this must be the most nurturing experience of my life.

I notice that Patrick is aware of my change, and is pleased. I am furious. I just got beaten at my own game.

CHAPTER TWO

Belgium, fall 1973

The d'Auriac family lives in a manor in a nearby town and I occasionally visit them. Florence and I ride horses at the same stable, which justifies our regular-life friendship. Her mother calls us down for dinner as her father, the Count d'Auriac, pulls up on the long driveway and parks his car. He enters, hands his coat to his wife, and immediately joins us at the kitchen table in suit and tie. After leading everyone in a mumbled prayer, he converses with Florence and her older brother in French, language of the aristocracy, and I, with my Mama's girl, day-to-day personality, can only understand Flemish.

The countess, with thin orange lips like a last sliver of sun setting on her harsh face, asks Florence to help her. I get up as well, but am categorically sent back to my seat, as if anything I'd touch would break. When Florence pulls salad dishes instead of appetizer plates out of the cupboard, her mother quietly shows her the difference.

During the meal, I am self-conscious about my table manners, especially when some green peas roll off my fork. A half smile appears on the count's contemptuous face. He throws Florence a look, and she smiles back. My brain shorts. After the glitch, I am a different girl. Full of glee, I realize we can play. I put my knife down and take the fork in my right hand, to stab at the peas. The count throws me severe looks out of the corner of his eye. I make a show of it, chasing the peas round and round on my plate. Florence and her brother jokingly comment in French, and I understand every word. The countess stares; the count glares. I pick up a pea, place it on my fork which I raise up high, and, amidst gales of laughter from the children, aim the pea straight into my wide-open mouth.

When I arrive home after a bike ride through pastures and fields, Mama is standing on the front doorstep, holding a wire basket of eggs, chatting with a lady with a round, open face whom I vaguely recognize. The lady laughs heartily, "Oh, and this is Ann? It's been a long time since I've seen you. You're growing up fast, coming home late and all."

"She had dinner at her friend Florence's home," Mama volunteers. "Whose family lives in a castle…."

"It's not a castle!" I point out.

"Ugh you!" Mama exclaims with mock irritation. Addressing the lady, she says, "You know what I mean, don't you?"

"Sure, sure," the woman says vaguely. "Well, I don't mean to keep you standing out here, pretty girl. I really should be going."

Overcome with shyness at the lady calling me "pretty girl," I try to suppress a budding smile. As soon as she leaves, Mama's ice-cold gaze freezes my heart. Sucked into a polar vortex of guilt, I follow Mama to the kitchen.

"Do you know her?" Mama asks in an extra light, sing-song tone—so incongruous with the cold glare of a few seconds prior, that I instantly doubt myself. The conviction that I must have been wrong blows away the mist of confusion. It makes much more sense that I am mistaken, because Mama is so nice.

"She brought some eggs. They're real peasants, simple people…she has no taste. And that hair; no style!" Mama comments, while she melts butter in a frying pan on the electric range and cracks two of the eggs. "She just keeps it short and lets it hang. And it's thin hair, like yours, and then it looks like she doesn't have any."

In my state of guilt, I hear Mama's criticisms with the same lightness with which she utters them: she doesn't mean anything by it.

"I just went to the hairdresser today but I feel she cut it too short. What do you think?" Mama asks.

"It looks fine to me."

"She pinned it up and she put a new extension in for the bun, but still, I didn't like it when I left. See? There's loose strands."

Mama smiles as she feels her head and finds and shows me one such strand. As Mama's girl, I think everything about her looks beautiful, and any imperfections only add to her charm.

When I join my little brother in the dark living room where he is watching TV, Mama serves him an omelet.

"It's not salty enough," he complains.

Mama heads to the cupboard to get the salt shaker, calling, "You want orange soda? Ann, you too?"

My brother and I grunt affirmations. Mama places two glasses of fizzing soda on the side table. *She is so nice, such a good mother.* I feel guilty for being lazy.

Glued to the TV screen when Mama re-enters the room after putting my brother to sleep, I ask, "Can I have chips?"

Mama returns to the kitchen. The crackle of the bag and the clatter of potato chips dropping in a bowl are the concentrated shapes of tension in the air. Handing me the bowl, Mama says, "Here, mistress. Whatever you do, don't get up yourself."

In a flash, I remember Countess d'Auriac asking for Florence's help *(Mama never asks!)* and my brother complaining about the salt *(she didn't criticize him!).* Lightning hits; my brain thunders to life; the game is on. I hold out the empty glass.

"More, please," I order.

Mama swipes the glass out of my hand and rushes to the kitchen. I play my role of the tyrant and she plays the abused slave. She hands me the glass. I accept it without taking my eyes off the TV and place it on the side table.

Mama stands in front of me. I frown as though I didn't understand what she is still doing there. Mama's face is flustered. Her voice breaks.

"If you think I'm just going to run around for you and you're not even going to…." she sniffs. "You can't do this to me. I'm your mother. Say thank you!"

The sniffs turn into sobs.

"SAY THANK YOU!"

"You want to wake my brother up?"

Though I was not even trying to be clever, my question sounds Machiavellian. It seems as if I implied that if my brother were awake, she might act differently, and layers of meaning I never intended suddenly introduce themselves into my mind. Mama looks bewildered. She arches back as if I were about to kill her, and streams of tears spring from her glazed, wide-open eyes, which have a look of sheer terror in them.

"If you don't say thank you…I'm going to take you there again!"

As she waits, I wait, and when she speaks, in a voice ringing with lustful notes of vengeance, I mentally mouth along.

"Okay, I'm taking you back there!"

"Thank you."

Castle, Belgium, afternoon, fall 1973

"He screamed."

I am remembering Wouter, my little friend with short-cropped blonde hair and a high-pitched voice, who came from East-Flanders. The four or five times I had spent nights with him in the network, I had felt very protective, as if he were my little brother. I loved him. He was just seven, a bit slow, and I was nine.

I am lying on my stomach, face buried in a pillow to shut out the light of a side table lamp, hiding my tears. Heavy rain clobbers the window panes of the round castle tower. Patrick steadily caresses my back and asks me to confide in him. I don't understand why he wants to know. I do not really want to remember, but as I do, and as I cry, I feel warm and kind of good, because it feels safe to have feelings.

"He screamed. And that made things worse."

"How so?" Patrick wants to know.

"The adults around him, the ones that were going at him, they couldn't stand to hear his screams. He was so little. He had a piercing voice. The sound made the men crazy. And then they would go at him more. More brutally."

Patrick briefly touches my wet cheek, to let me know that he's aware of my tears.

"Why were you there?"

I see Wouter again, lying helplessly on the stone altar in the vaulted basement. I was being held down myself. *Why was that?* Then I remember.

"What?" Patrick puts his face level to mine to gaze intently into my eyes.

I turn my head away, too ashamed, unable to continue talking about what happened. It was as though I had switched sides. When Wouter screamed again, and then again, sensing the unbearable excitement and irritation of the adults, I too had felt that I wanted the screams to stop so that it would be over, so that his suffering would finally end. I had so wanted to protect him, and I failed; I feel responsible for his death. I turn to Patrick, dry-eyed, silent. With a look and a nod, he indicates that he understands.

"I swore then that I would never scream."

"You've never screamed?"

"Oh no, I did. Once. It was with Polo."

I sense a sharp, almost tense interest from Patrick. It makes me curious; I would like to know who Patrick is, why he elicits almost as much respect as Polo from the networkers. In the hope that Patrick will reveal some things to me, I begin to share.

"He took me to a little room, the first time I was alone with him in this sense. I undressed, and when I thought he was going to do the same, he cuffed me in the face, really, really hard. I'd not seen it coming, and my skin stung wildly, but I didn't show a reaction. When I looked at him, his eyes were twinkling, like we were about to play a game, or a match. The thought came to me: I'm stronger than him. He hit me again, this time in my stomach, with his fist, but I didn't even feel it; I was prepared. Then he went for my head, but for some reason that's the body part I'm least worried about."

"Which part are you most worried about?"

"I don't know."

"People say it's the Achilles' heel, but that's not really it. You know the most vulnerable spot on your body?"

"No, what?"

"The backs of your knees. That's what you really want to watch out for."

Patrick pulls up the right leg of his jeans and shows a bulging scar on the back of his knee. I want to ask him how he got it, how he got his limp, but he pulls his pant leg down, smiles, and shakes his head. I continue, "He kept on going, hitting harder and harder, all over. Then he picked me up and threw me through the room. My side hit the wall. Throughout most of this, we were looking at each other, me thinking I'm stronger than him, and he figuring I'm going to break down and scream, but I didn't. The bruises started showing, my whole left side hurt and my body was starting to get tired, but my spirit was wide awake. It gave me such pleasure to hold out against him…."

I want to say, "one of the most powerful men in the country," but I realize if I say that out loud I'll give away the secret of my game. Patrick

caresses my head. His sad eyes seem to say that he understands me so deeply, it hurts him that I don't trust him more.

"Then Polo said: 'Just get your clothes and get out of here. You're so dead there's nothing to be done with you.' When he said that, he got to me. I felt terrible when I gathered my clothes, afraid that I'm dead."

"He's weak," Patrick says pensively.

Patrick's remark sounds like a note to himself, but he has broken network rule number one: Never Challenge the Absolute Power of The Bosses (Not Even in Thought). Patrick understands what I mean by "I'm stronger than Polo," which is about my inner world and how I survive. He seems to understand me on a level no one else could. I instantly feel more whole, more alive, and when I speak, I am less inhibited and even sound more like my age.

"The next time, my mother dropped me off at this villa in the middle of the day. Nihoul opened the door, took me by the arm, and, with this annoying smile, brought me over to Polo, who smiled the same way, though of course it's Nihoul mimicking Polo…."

I expect Patrick might smile or in some way agree with me, but his face is a mask, which directs me to act more grown-up.

"There was no one else in the house. They led me to the basement. It was light in there because there were arched windows below the ceiling and it was a sunny day. Nihoul carried a carton. They looked for a spot and found a half-full coal cellar, a deep narrow space with three walls, so they can look in, but I'm trapped. Then Nihoul cuts the box open, but he makes sure it stays shut. Now I've been scared the whole day; first my mother keeps me home from school—that's never good—then realizing it's just Nihoul and Polo. I was already shaking when we went down the stairs to the cellar, but now I'm shut in there with Nihoul and this box blocking the doorway, and I think whatever's in there is going to kill me. I'm being killed because I didn't scream for Polo."

Maybe I don't have to go on. Maybe I'll just stop talking and focus on something else now, I think. *I have never shared any of this with anyone; there is no point in starting now. This is very much against the rules. It is easier to pretend it never happened; it helps everyone, especially me.*

I sit cross-legged on the bed, and Patrick, who is lying on his back, lays his hand on my knee. Whereas I am very used to being touched sexually, gentle, comforting touch is not part of my experience. Patrick's small gesture seems enormous: a sign that someone cares. I instantly feel a comforting warmth in my chest, and as I feel this, I am more aware of my vulnerability, and realize that my game is nothing but a buffer against the truth, and I wonder if I could even live if let myself know the truth.

"What was it?" Patrick asks.

"Bugs," I whisper.

I see once again how Nihoul nervously held the box out, opened the flaps quickly with one hand and then threw it at me, so a swarm of shiny black beetles landed on me, and all around, biting, pinching everywhere.

"I screamed."

"Were they biting insects?" Patrick asks with dry, scientific curiosity, which pulls me out of the gruesome past in the dirty coal cellar.

I nod, and breathe. As Patrick sits up to continue his businesslike inquiry, I proceed to describe the bugs, and he mumbles something under his breath that sounds like the French pronunciation of "helicopter."

"Was he satisfied?" Patrick asks, averting his gaze.

"I don't think so, not completely. He did laugh, but after the initial shock, I crouched down and went into another state. I felt the bugs crawl on my body and in my hair and I felt them bite, but it dawned on me that they were just natural creatures taken out of their environment, and that they were scared, like me, and not monsters…."

There is something I need to add that is intrinsic to the awareness that got me through my ordeal, and I would like to tell Patrick, but I don't feel that free.

"He was the monster!" Patrick says in a ringing voice and a knowing smile.

I remember how the beetles dissipated, disappeared into the stack of coals, onto the cement walls, and out the doorway. I got up, still in this state of extreme lucidity that made me calm and at peace with my conditions. It even seemed to affect the bugs; they seemed less aggressive, though maybe it was I who didn't experience their bites in the same way. Polo and Nihoul were gone. I pulled the last beetles out of my hair and brushed them off my body. Covered in soot and small bloody marks in the shape of arrow points, I climbed back up the stairwell to go find my clothes and wait for Mama.

As the memory of the insects begins to fade, the clarity of mind I had during the experience is transported to the present. Looking into Patrick's blue eyes, I see something shifty in them.

What is he hiding? I think.

I know nothing about his life. I still don't know why he wants to hear about my experiences in the network. He seems to read my mind…I feel men's thoughts so that I can respond to what they want, but Patrick doesn't need me for his survival.

Why is he attuned to me? What does he need from me?

Patrick's stare intensifies, and the crystal of his irises darkens to a midnight blue. A ferocious feline is revealed, sitting intently still as it watches, relishing its prey before the kill. Death has hung over my head often enough, and I never cared. Today, Patrick has kindled hope that love exists, that life seems worth something. The shudder that runs along my spine seems acutely linked to life energy—never have I been so afraid.

Patrick leans over and whispers in my ear, *"Je t'aime."* (I love you.)

CHAPTER THREE

Café, Belgium, afternoon, December 1973

It is cold and rainy as Mama and I shop for Christmas gifts in a nearby town, so we stay in a covered shopping gallery, and enter a smoky cafe with heavy, velvet chairs and uniformed waiters. Mama studies the menu when the waiter approaches.

"Ladies, have you decided?" he mumbles, ready to write.

In a high-pitched voice, on a drawn-out note, Mama says, "Yes?" as if she were really, really young. She giggles delightfully for the man, who ignores her. Mama picks up a loose strand of her pinned up hair and coquettishly twirls it around her pointing finger.

"I'm going to have a coffee and Steak Tartare please," Mama says, still in the little girl voice.

"Sandwich or salad plate?" drones the waiter, an amused twinkle playing in his eye.

Mama breaks out in a big, flirtatious smile, which is met by a benevolent grin.

"The salad plate, please," she answers, beaming, flirting blatantly, raising her eyebrows several times.

The waiter looks taken aback. Mama turns pale. I stare down into the table. The waiter turns to me with a friendly smile.

"And what will the young lady have?"

"Just a coke, thank you."

I feel Mama's ice-cold glare boring into me.

"And that's all? You're not hungry?" the waiter persists.

I shake my head, see friendly concern in his slightly sad smile, and quickly stare back into the table. I wonder if I unconsciously did something to attract him, if I unconsciously tried to steal his attention away from Mama. I know I didn't mean to do anything of the kind, but I can't shake the guilty feeling.

When we arrive home, Mama locks herself into the home office to make a phone call, and afterwards defrosts a box of creamed spinach on the electric range. She serves it at the dining table set for one and sits down across from me.

"You're not eating?"

"No," Mama mumbles. "I'm going to wait 'til later."

Mama absently stares down and nervously curls a strand of hair around her finger. I inhale the meal and soon scrape the last streaks of green out of the pot.

"Okay, we're going now," Mama says, jumping up from the chair.

Mama's expression is blank at first, but when she picks up her car keys, deep satisfaction settles on her features.

"Mama," I beg. "No, please. Not tonight."

Mama's mouth trembles as she fights the impulse to laugh.

"I didn't mean it," I continue, trying to apologize for the waiter smiling at me, or whatever I might have done to upset her.

Mama's cold, leveling gaze says that I am a killer, and that I know it.

"I'm really, really sorry."

"Oh, don't play innocent!" Mama retorts flatly. "And anyway, I can't do anything about it."

As she heads towards the lobby, she jingles the keys: my wake-up call. *She can't do anything about it?* I cross my arms in defiance.

"Come on, or we're going to be late," she says, turning back.

"I'm not going."

"Don't be ridiculous," she sneers.

"I'm not going," I repeat, as the adrenaline violently whooshes through my body, affecting every one of trillions of nerves.

After a slight hesitation, a little backwards jerk of the head and trembling of the shoulders, Mama suddenly lunges at me, grabs me by the hair, pulls, and drags me towards the front door.

"Let me go!"

I try to kick her, but have to tread along as I'm being pulled. I grab my head and try to remove her hands, but she seems stronger than ever, and before long, with never-before-seen authority, Mama has pushed me into the passenger seat, slammed the door, jumped in the driver's seat and started the car. As she backs up, I open the door, but the car is going too fast. Mama hits the brake, leans over me, pulls the door shut and brusquely elbows me, pinning me into my seat as I vainly attempt to break loose. I huddle up. My heart pounds like a sledgehammer about to tear through ribs and skin. We speed through the quiet country roads, whooshing past small-town centers, and before long, Mama stops in front of the gate of the manor where the d'Auriac family lives.

Dusk under the large beech trees is as dark as the darkest night. A shadow approaches from the manor. Mama tries to whip the car around, backs up too fast, and with a terrific thud hits a short cement marker on the edge of the driveway, denting the back fender of her car. The unearthed marker leans over like a wilted flower. I expect Mama will get out of the car and check the damage, but instead she speeds off, out of the lane. Florence's older brother materializes, and though it is quite dark, his enormous grin is very visible.

"Did your mother just hit something?"

I point a shy finger at the felled marker. Florence's brother opens the gate, fastens the doors with ground level latches and inspects the little heap of cement, grinning all the while.

"I came to meet you, because we're leaving right away," he informs me, smiling flirtatiously.

The car rolls out of the garage, crunching the sandy gravel. Florence's brother recounts the situation and the rest of the family pile out of the car to observe the damage. As the foursome huddle over the flattened little pole, they laugh and joke about the accident, and about the fact that my mother drove off without even talking to them. I wish that I could just laugh at Mama, like them, but instead I feel sorry for her.

Villa, Belgium,
Saturday evening, December 1973

After about an hour's drive, we arrive at an opulent villa near Ghent. Smiling obsequiously, Michel Nihoul opens the front door. Loud disco music and chatter from inside the house nearly drown out Nihoul's sincere Christmas wishes to the d'Auriac family. As I file in, Nihoul frowns.

"We have no need for you here!"

The countess stops dead in her tracks and gives Nihoul one of her ice-cold stares. Nihoul huffs apologetically.

"She's off-limits for now."

"What do you mean? What does that mean?" demands the countess.

Nihoul gesticulates defensively.

"There's nothing I can do about it. There is somebody—a daddy's boy—a real nuisance if you want to know my honest opinion, who wants her all to

himself."

Florence freezes upon hearing the phrase "daddy's boy." The countess conducts a short meeting with Nihoul in the hallway. I overhear the words "she said," several times, as Nihoul shakes his head. It makes me wonder if Mama called the countess when we got home from Christmas shopping this afternoon, after the waiter ignored her and was friendly to me, and if she set this up behind Nihoul's back, just to get her revenge on me. Mostly I wonder why, for heaven's sake, I was feeling sorry for Mama.

Florence's brother smiles with a comical look of disappointment, then hurries into the crowded living room. The baron casts a superior glance down at me, which I take to mean he doesn't care whether or not I am available. Florence stands nailed to the floor, shell-shocked. I feel sorry for her.

"Don't worry," I whisper. "Patrick and I don't even have sex."

For a second, as she stares, Florence looks just like her mother. Soon, a sardonic half grin forms on her face.

"So, what do you do? Talk?"

There is a semi-private den at the end of an L-shaped living room, lit by the tiny flame bulbs on the candles of a tall Christmas tree. I sit on top of a console against the wall and trace its carvings. Some newly-formed couples use the large settee in front of the Christmas tree to make out. When men approach me, an aggravated Nihoul intercepts them to inform them of my current "untouchable" status. At this party, there don't seem to be any other children like myself, whose parents are not in the network, and Florence is by far the youngest aristocrat. I have never observed businessmen bringing their own children to the orgies, but aristocrats consider sex with children as part of their culture, and have no qualms exposing their young to their depraved rites.

Florence appears hand in hand with an aristocratic politician—a fixture at the orgies—and laughingly leads him to the settee, where they waste no time in sufficiently undressing and then go at it, full force. Florence makes delighted noises. The sounds attract other men, who form a line. The man

finishes; Florence groans and, blushing, thrusts her hips up, opens her legs, flashes me, and so invites the next man.

How stupid of me to tell her Patrick wasn't having sex with me, I think, realizing Florence is trying to make me understand just how stupid it was. And I wonder why I felt sorry for her.

The line of men gets longer, and Count d'Auriac, Florence's father, joins the line. When it is his turn, he stands over his daughter, and smiles the biggest smile ever.

During a fraction of a second, I see Florence, a little girl, hurt, scared, and ashamed. At the very instant that I see it, she covers it with a smile that mirrors her father's, but her eyes briefly seek mine to confirm what I saw, and I know that she will never forgive me.

The count has left his jacket and tie behind and his white shirt is unbuttoned. His hair is wild and unkempt. He looks sexy, virile, and free. He and Florence look at each other in the exact same manner: with wicked pleasure in their darkened eyes, grinning like only the two of them could possibly know how good this feels, like no one else can have what they have together.

Later that night I suddenly catch a glimpse of what seems to be Patrick and Florence passing by an open doorway giving out into the living room. I assume Patrick is on his way to me, but don't see him for another hour or so. He leads me upstairs.

"Were you with Florence just now?" I ask weakly.

"Nope."

I conclude I must have seen her with someone else, but the blood drains from my head all the same, as though my very existence were endangered. Patrick pulls a key out of his jean pocket and unlocks the door to a stuffy square room with a soft mattress on a bare frame and a single shuttered window. I wonder how Patrick knows this room, and why he has the key, but can't bring myself to speak.

Patrick observes me as he leans against the door and casually crosses his arms and feet, and I remember him watching me in this way the first time we were together, when he implied that whatever we would do was up to me. It suddenly dawns on me that he only meant sex.

"Let's get out of here," Patrick says, unlocking the door again.

I hurry after him, and minutes later we are speeding towards Brussels on the brightly lit expressway in a red Porsche 911.

"You should lie down," he says, "We wouldn't want anyone to think I'm a kidnapper."

As I lean over to put my head in his lap, I wonder if he means that he wants me to satisfy him orally.

"Come," he says, putting a reassuring hand on my shoulder. "Just put your head on my lap."

Haemers Residence,
Greater Brussels, Belgium, December 1973

Patrick's single bed is a messy heap of sheets and blankets. Little triangle soccer flags and purple and white ribbons of his favorite team adorn the walls of his bedroom. Socks and soccer shirts cover the carpet. In the red light of a lava lamp, Patrick puts his favorite new album on the record player, putting the needle down on the beginning of the song which he says makes him think of me. Joining me on the bed, he sings the lyrics, or at least what he makes of them, something about seeing flashes in the girl's eyes, and I hear him saying *"like hypnotized."*

He tries to make up for his ridiculously strong French accent by pronouncing the words with an over-the-top twang, *"Feel my cock, babe, that's*

for sure...”

I’m sure those are not the lyrics, and he makes me laugh, nervously, because the melodic music, though super-cool, is also slow and romantic, about a girl having the singer’s heart and his soul.

Patrick laughs intermittently to put me at ease, but stares intently into my eyes. His tucked-in jean shirt is unbuttoned almost all the way down; his skin looks milky soft, his face beautiful. The music intensifies, the song reaches its climax in the singers’ passionate voice, but Patrick mouths the words silently, his body still.

I hear Patrick singing to me, *“You got your love just keep you blind. But I don’t care”* and gather that he means that I am naïve, since I have not gotten sexual with him, and that, to his surprise, he does not mind. We lie on the bed holding hands and I enjoy the sweetness that runs through my body like a cool, soft whisper. During the finale of the next song, after we’ve heard the same line about not always getting what you want repeated at least ten times, Patrick leans over, and winks.

CHAPTER FOUR

Domain "Kattenhof" Castle,
s-Gravenwezel, Belgium,
late winter-early spring, 1974

As soon as I arrive at the orgies, Michel Nihoul finds an out-of-the-way place for me to sit, as my untouchable status endures. Sometimes I spend the whole night in one spot. Patrick's protection has officially separated me from the other children, but I was already lonely. Ever since I lost my little friend Wouter two years ago, I have made sure to never get close to another child. The networkers only use the love we children feel for each other to hurt us. I don't want another child getting harmed on my account. Patrick seems to be my only hope for love, but I fight it. Girls in love with perpetrators are bound to be dropped; and, heartbroken, they are considered worthless to the network. And that is one way for child sex slaves to get themselves killed.

On this property, network events occur inside a greenhouse on the castle grounds. Florence, sitting on the arm of a chair, whispers something in the ear of a pale, skinny girl. They both look over at me and share laughs. Pimps arrive with more children, and soon, a little group of seven or so girls, from about nine to thirteen years old, forms around Florence. Sometimes they glance at me; sometimes they sneer. The pale girl seems to be especially full of spiteful glee. *She must be new,* I think; *she is more obvious.* With her emaciated, pallid face, cracked swollen lips, skimpy figure, and very long, dark blonde hair with two braids rolled up on her head, she looks like a sickly fairy.

More children arrive: boys, girls, some as young as maybe five, some teenagers, North African immigrant children. Hours pass. It is not a big party and there are more children than grown-ups. The adults are all men, all

aristocrats, and they waste no time in flirting. Instead, they talk to Nihoul, point out certain children, and some do advance and take them out with them, and others don't. The children, except for the few titled ones, stand or sit bravely, demurely, heads bowed. The little aristocrats, whose families seem to be going through the motions of having a party to cover up the strange business Nihoul is conducting, act as hostesses, with Florence as their leader.

I recognize one stocky redhead, an aristocrat whom I once overheard as he asked Polo for me, but Polo refused, mumbling that he wanted to keep the pretty ones a bit longer. That is how I learned that children don't make it through the night in this man's hands. This was after I had been singled out by Polo's idol, the global Big Shot, because before that event, I was never considered pretty. During my first three years in the network I was expendable, and had been in situations which had made this abundantly clear. I am not ugly, but I'm also not that pretty.

A bronze-skinned boy with big shoulder-length curls, maybe twelve years old, keeps looking over. I presume he is from Moroccan descent, since most immigrant families in Belgium come from that country. I would like to look back at him but adhere to my rule to keep distant from other children. Suddenly, Patrick appears. As I hurry off hand-in-hand with Patrick, I feel bad that I did not respond to the boy, and my eyes seek his, if only to say goodbye. He averts his face, and, feeling rejected, I send him a contemptuous glare. Patrick smiles sweetly.

Florence, in conversation with one of the men, stops talking as her eyes follow Patrick and me. Michel Nihoul is smooching up a dark-haired teenage girl. He swings his head around to catch Patrick's eye and jokes, "So, *le grand blond* is in love, huh? Okay, we all understand, but when are you going to start sharing?"

Patrick stops and lets go of my hand. Standing still, he calmly waits until Nihoul's face falls. Florence and a few others make up the attentive audience. Nihoul loosens his hold of the girl, trying to overcome his discomfort with apologetic huffs, squeezing his face into a forced smile. Once he has Nihoul's undivided attention, Patrick says, "If you ever dare touch her, or I find out that somebody else has, I'm going to kill you."

On the way out, I shoot Florence a look, answered by a tight-lipped smile. I realize that Patrick was serious when he told Nihoul he would kill him, and, from the way he said it, he made it sound easy.

Patrick drives, not to the exit, but up to the castle, speeding up until he screeches to a halt by the façade, skidding. A silent, grave butler who seems completely in the know guides us to our quarters upstairs, a large room with simple furniture. Patrick pulls a wad of bills out of his wallet and stuffs them in the butler's breast pocket. He does not try to be discreet, and the pokerfaced butler widens his eyes just a tad. I cover my laughing face. Patrick flashes me a mischievous smile as he joins me on the sofa.

"Here, I want to show you something," he says, searching a blue Adidas weekend bag he has brought along.

He pulls out a gun, and, laying it flat on his hands with the loop pointing away, shows me. Here is the answer to all my questions concerning Patrick's power in the network.

"It's a Browning," he says with obvious pride, and as if *Browning* were a French word.

He gives it to me to hold. I am surprised by the weight. He nods excitedly. I indulge Patrick and run my finger over the diamond-patterned handle, then look as if waiting for an explanation. He intensifies his gaze, like he wants me to understand that this is real, and dangerous.

"Have you ever seen a dead body?" Patrick asks, frustration creeping in his voice.

"Several times."

He raises his eyebrows, sighs, relaxes into the pillows, puts his hand on my neck and massages it. He leans in closer.

"Tell me."

I frown and shake my head. He puts both his arms around me.

"No, no, I didn't mean it like that. What I meant is that I forget what you've been through. And I forget who you are. You're very strong, you know that?"

"That's why it happened," I answer. "Because I was bold. It came to mind the first time I met you. Remember, when you said I was a whore who likes her job?"

My recall of his insult seems to revive all the love I saw then in Patrick's eyes, bringing awareness and acceptance to my defiant streak.

"Usually, when someone insults me, they never know that I noticed. But when I was first brought here, around my sixth birthday, I didn't hide it. I had been on some kind of a stage, used for some kind of a sick show, I can't even tell you, but by the end of it, I was furious. I was alone on the stage, so I stood up and shouted, 'You can't do this to me. This is not okay. I'm going to tell my father. He's the mayor and he's not going to let you get away with this. He'll make sure you'll all be punished.'"

The sympathy and sadness in Patrick's gaze tell me that, whether my stepfather consciously or unconsciously closes his eyes to my mother's nocturnal activities, a real father would protect me from them. But I don't believe it. *Papa would protect me if he knew—I just never told him.*

"Most of the people there were so high they didn't even hear me, like this was just another part of the show. There was one man who looked like he pitied me, but he disappeared and I never saw him again. I don't think Nihoul was there yet, but an old handler with an enormous paunch came over, a smile on his face. 'Come along,' he said, like a friend. He took my hand and we went for a walk. I was very scared, but he was friendly. I can't remember how we got from one place to the next. We ended up in a large basement and he said, 'You know, we really like you here. We'd hate to lose you,' and I wanted to believe that whoever 'they' are, they really do like me, because I was a nice girl and only six years old—why shouldn't they like me? And I wanted to believe that he liked me too, even though I didn't like him. And as we went deeper into this cellar—it was dark—I started to smell something. A faint but unmistakably sick odor, very specific. I would

recognize it right away. Then I think he turned on a light that was maybe just a bare bulb, and there was a bath made of cement at the far end of this cellar, and he led me to the other side of it. He still had this easygoing attitude, like this is just something that happens if you talk, but there's no need to worry if you don't. So, at that moment, I completely got on his wavelength. The first thing I did was tell myself that this was not a human being, just a dead body, and there was nothing to be afraid of. I looked at her in the same way I felt that he did: like old leftovers. She was a young woman, and I remember thinking she looked working-class, maybe had been a prostitute, and then I thought it was strange that I should have such a thought about a dead person. I did not feel horrified; and still don't. She had a round, soft body, very, very white, all cut up. The deepest cut was this slash in her belly, horizontal, and it was open, like a purse. I stayed on the handler's wavelength for as long as he kept me in there, which seemed much longer than necessary. I got the message right away. I didn't plan on telling my stepfather about what had happened. At least not in so many words."

Now, Patrick, who has had his arms around me with his head leaning against my shoulder, again looks up with such pity, and—I don't know—I don't want to call it love.

"Did you say anything?" Patrick asks.

"Not to my father."

"Then who? Who did you tell?"

"My mother."

Patrick knows that I don't have a pimp and that Mama brings me to the orgies herself. I have a vague notion that I brought this on myself, by trying to tell Mama about what had happened the first time, when I had been taken by a couple with whom I was staying the weekend. Patrick observes my shameful reaction and seems to juggle several responses. Then, without relaxing the frown on his brow, with one short exhale that is sort of a chuckle, he expresses that he sees the irony.

"But she already knew!" he cries out. "Tell me, did anything change after you told your mother?"

"No, a few weeks later she gave me back to the couple, and they took me back to an orgy. The woman cleans our house every Thursday. I'd told my mother that bad things had happened. The next time the cleaning lady was at our house, she offered my mom to babysit for free, and I threw a tantrum. My mom sent me off with her again, but it seemed that was only because I had misbehaved. I also thought I had not expressed myself clearly enough about what had happened. I was too afraid because of the dead body and too ashamed, and I didn't know all the words. But when my mother started driving me to the orgies herself, I thought that I had given her the idea by trying to tell her, and therefore it was all my fault."

Patrick stares me squarely in the eye, frowning sternly. I get from him that there is nothing wrong with me, but that something is wrong with my thinking. Even as I talk about Mama, I hear my confusion reaching Patrick's consciousness, whereas he reflects back his clarity, which says that Mama knew all along, and nothing I could have said or done could have changed anything. I get it, but I cannot accept it. *She is my mother. I love her, and she must love me, if only a little bit.* Patrick puts his arms around me and rocks me.

"Ma petite Annie," Patrick mumbles. "My little Annie. You're so sweet. You went and told your mother. Of course. *"Que je t'aime, ma chérie."* (How I love you, sweetheart.)

I sleep on top of Patrick in a nice wooden bed with white starched sheets in a very neat bedroom. Everything is simple and clean, and I also feel cleaner than ever.

A loud shot jolts me out of a deep slumber. A bright morning sunbeam pours in the window, parading particles of dust floating through the room and highlighting a stain on the carpet that looked so clean last night. A second shot is fired.

When Patrick has left the room, I wonder if Mama is waiting for me in her car by the greenhouse where she dropped me last night. Before Patrick, I would meet her at dawn wherever she dropped me, but since he has been

showing up, I sometimes don't come out until noon. Patrick returns with a copious breakfast on a tray, which he carefully sets on the table.

"Is there a hunt going on?" I ask.

"It certainly sounds like it, doesn't it?" he answers lightly.

I don't know why I haven't already peeked through the window, which looks out over the park. The woods look bleak, almost as they would in late fall. The lawn grass is green, but the trees are bare. There is one hunter, walking through the woods, carrying his rifle. How strange, I think, that there is not a group of them, combing the woods with dogs. What is he hunting? Patrick drinks his coffee, and also looks out the window. We hear a third shot. I see the lone hunter, still walking, holding his rifle.

"I wonder if my mom is waiting in her car, and if she might be in danger," I venture out loud, wondering why I say this to Patrick rather than keep it to myself.

"Your mother is no good," Patrick says casually.

I believed I wiped the honey out of my eyes as soon as I went into network mode, but this hurts so much. I know that Patrick is right, and yet, I am angry. I don't mind believing everything is my fault so that Mama can be better. I don't want to see her clearly. *It is Patrick who is no good, not my mother!*

Patrick approaches, this time intently looking me in the eyes.

"Your mother doesn't love you."

Bang. Another shot, embedding the truth.

But who will love me then? I think. Patrick wipes my tears and takes me in his arms. I glide into his embrace with terrific ease. The loud nearby shots fail to rupture a great sense of peace that quiets everything. As though I were a virtuoso musician and Patrick my exquisite, perfectly tuned instrument, every slightest move, slightest thought in Patrick's arms is responded to with perfect synchronicity. When I look up into his face I want to kiss him. I reach up;

Patrick responds fiercely, swooping down to lift me. Looking into his eyes, I first see sadness, then…never have I seen such love.

Our lips almost meet. Another shot. There is a flash of something outside—moving fast. I pull out of Patrick's embrace, rush to the window. There is a boy, still far, approaching, running. *The children last night!*

I recognize the bronze skin and dark curls flowing around his sensuous face, the boy who kept trying to catch my eye last night, the one I rejected. Another shot rings out. The boy falls forward, arms spread out, shot in the back. I half expect that in a second, he will get up and start running again, but he lies on the grass, completely still.

I recoil in horror. Like a boiling geyser breaking through layers of rock, the sweet possibilities I warded off last night when he was trying to get my attention spout from my depths, and the guilt for not having responded is so overwhelming, it seems as though I killed him with my own hands.

"I want to go home."

Patrick munches on red grapes and nonchalantly observes the body of his rival. I suddenly remember the question Patrick asked last night, "Have you ever seen a dead body?" Continuing to look out the window, Patrick pulls his mouth open wide and pushes his tongue between the bottom row of his teeth and his cheek.

Don't you care at all? I think. As if in answer, Patrick spits a pit onto the floor.

"You don't even want breakfast?" he asks casually.

"No," I answer, indignant.

In driving me back to the greenhouse, Patrick pulls the same stunt as last night, pulling up really fast, magnifying my extreme tension and irritability. When Mama's car appears in view at the end of the lane, Patrick speeds up straight towards her, and comes to an extremely abrupt halt, missing her car by inches. An involuntary chuckle escapes me. Patrick winks, leans over and

puts his arms around me. I turn my back to him and get out of the car, shutting the door without another look.

When we drive off in her boxy Dutch Daf, Mama cackles, "That was a very handsome young man. With really blonde hair, and a Porsche…so, is he the reason why you've been staying out so much?"

"Let's not talk."

After a short silence, Mama says, in an ultra-innocent little girl voice, "Yes, so I asked the dentist if there was a special toothpaste for you, so we could get your teeth whiter, but since they got yellow from the antibiotics that you got for your asthma when you were a baby, there's nothing to do about it. The yellow affects all the bones, so you'll just have to learn to live with your yellow teeth."

Instead of reflecting as usual on my listed imperfections, I am annoyed, and observe that Mama's eyes scan my features for signs of pain.

"You're no good, Mama."

"What?"

Mama keeps turning her head to me in disbelief, and passes a crossroads without stopping for a car coming in from the right. For the second time in a few minutes, Mama's car is nearly hit, as the other car screeches to a halt, missing us by inches, followed by a long, furious honk. Mama swerves and continues on the road.

"The next time I'm taking you there," she says, "I'm going to leave you there."

CHAPTER FIVE

Family home, Belgium,
a Saturday evening, March 1974

"Are you ready?"

"Almost."

"Hurry!" Mama hisses as quietly as possible.

I get out of bed, dressed and ready to go. My cue when my stepfather is home, is that Mama gives me a significant look when she tells me it's time for bed. When that happens, instead of putting on pajamas, I get in bed wearing my clothes, never sleeping a wink, waiting for the sounds of my parents getting into bed in the room next to mine, and turning out their bedside lamps. When my stepfather is asleep, my mother comes to get me.

Once the car has rolled silently down the driveway, Mama turns the key. After we pass the windmill, we turn left towards the church in the center of the village. Left again. To the Brussels highway, to some event where Patrick is likely to show up.

I breathe a sigh of relief. When we reach the church of the next village, Mama turns left, a trajectory leading to a vacant mansion. My relief was short-lived; it is as if an armored fist squeezes the blood out of my heart.

I haven't been back to the mansion since I met Patrick! It's been over six months! I know that Patrick's protection won't work in this mansion; these are not orgies but some type of secret club meetings which Nihoul or Patrick would never attend. A narrow bridge leads to the cobblestone driveway, the entrance of the mansion property. The fist clenches inside my chest.

"Mama," I whimper.

I notice how pleased Mama looks, and want to smile with her, as if we have had our joke, and she won.

"Can I come back home with you?" I ask, smiling feebly.

Mama laughs a single "ha," the sound of which hurts my ears. Opening the car door and standing requires much more effort than it should.

"I'll see you around dawn?"

Mama pushes her upper lip down, suppressing involuntary laughter. I hold the door handle, only releasing it when Mama stares angrily, and I don't close the door. Mama reaches over, pulls the door shut, locks it, and drives away.

An invisible cloud envelops my head, irritating my eyes. I enter through the unlocked front door, into a real cloud of cigar and cigarette smoke. A rumble of deep voices seeps into the lobby from the closed meeting hall. I head sideways, to the room where I have spent many lonely nights on a bare, stained mattress, waiting for dawn to color the curtains blue. The room seems even smaller than I remember. Maybe I am bigger. I sink down on the dirty mattress, thinking I am back where I belong.

Somewhere in Europe,
between the fall of 1972 and spring of 1974

I abruptly awake when the door opens, and jump up. The black outline of the figure in the doorway looks like a gorilla. In the faint light of a small lamp, I see a barrel of a man with thick black hair, no neck, a broad face and narrow, slanting eyes. He looks surprised when he sees me, and I hope that he will turn on his heels, because I look my age, small and skinny, without as much as a hint of breasts.

The man angrily motions for me to undress, and unbuttons his shirt. He does not seem to speak Flemish or French, and his mute grunts make him all the more a gorilla. Not only his chest, but his back too is covered with dark

bushy hair. Naked now, he threateningly widens his eyes at me, seeing I am still dressed. My mind draws a blank. Then, finally, my training kicks in; I make eye contact and connect to where I am supposed to be. Now our energetic bodies are one. I feel a thousand chilled knives in my stomach, the hollow no one can live with. I feel all his fear, called violence once it is ejected into another.

He advances physically; I receive the entire charge of impending violence, and in utter panic, pull my t-shirt over my head, getting stuck with my arms up and eyes covered. It is too overwhelming. A loud roar. *He's attacking! He's going to eat me! I am sinking....*

I am looking up into a beautiful, sadly smiling face, and realize the sound I heard was the man's laughter as he pulled my shirt over my head. My near-saint part awakened, I am now guilty for having had negative thoughts about one who was only trying to help. I attune myself to find the unloved child in the man. I look behind the bags under his eyes, the heavy slanting lids that hide most of the iris. There, right there in his pupils; I see his sorrow. I embrace him, and hold him as though he were a sweet little child, even though my arms don't reach around his torso. I put my body against his; he pulls me closer. I feel his erection. He rubs my back, hard, and lays me down on the mattress.

The near-saint disappears; my bouncer emerges. The man's smell, his body, his anger; the bouncer can reject it all. He grabs hold of his short fat penis. That is all I can take. As my bouncer rids me of the perpetrator, it bounces me out as well, and the empty vessel takes over. Nimbly, automatically, with no intentional act of will, my whole consciousness withdraws out of my body. I don't see ugly genitalia, I don't hear fast, heavy breathing; the faint whiff of manure in his sweat is gone. My nerves are switched off; I don't feel the pain from an adult penis. The man is gone and so am I, while the empty vessel does everything it needs, functioning as effortlessly as any peristaltic muscle.

I find my consciousness right by an ivory-colored woven cloth lampshade and thoroughly examine every tiniest fiber, tinier than my eye could see if I

were to get up off the mattress and press my nose onto the shade. Then I begin to revert to another reality.

As the man nears his climax, my senses remain switched off, but my consciousness is present, like a coldly detached witness, observing, anticipating his ejaculation. I may switch between different parts; the perpetrators metamorphose at least as much as I do, especially at this point. Their release is usually fraught with terrible expressions, which I would rather never witness in any human being, let alone from this vantage point.

This one looks like he's choking on something, pulling his head back and doing something strange with his tongue; his eyes roll around. He shivers and relaxes, on top of me. My cheek is buried in the hollow of his hairy chest. I push his shoulders up to make him aware that there is a little person underneath him.

He reacts with a laugh, and says something that sounds Russian. As he gets dressed, he smiles and tries to make conversation, in broken English, and Russian. He strikes me as too foolishly happy to be dangerous, and I consider my options. Something about his mouth tells me that he is a silly man, that he was teased a lot as a child, and that he felt stupid. My task is to soothe his most deep-seated fears, those he has worked his entire life to cover, to prove to himself and to the world that he is the opposite of unintelligent and silly. At this moment, after his orgasm, he is off guard. I always need to be careful, but decide I do not need to placate him, and I just stare coldly.

Mansion, Belgium,
a Saturday night, March 1974

As the interminable night wears on, I become more and more confused. I realize in horror that it has been too long. I am not desensitized anymore to the horrors that had been normalized previously. In the past months, under Patrick's protection, I had gotten used to looking at people with ten-year old eyes instead of putting every pervert in the most favorable possible light.

During the first rapes of this night, to avoid feeling the terror and physical pain, I automatically fracture into many different parts, most of whom are not even present. However, at some point, a brand-new part seems to appear out of my unconscious drive to survive, which allows me to remain in my body. Only, I find myself not having sex with an adult rapist. No; I am with a tall, slender, blonde youth with milky soft skin and hardly any chest hair. Patrick loves me, and I love him. He loves no one but me, and I love no one but him. Because he loves me so much, he is as good, as strong, and as pure as love itself. And I love him the same.

In between visits, which last until deep into the night, I keep checking my little pile of clothes, painstakingly going over the items, convinced each time that something is missing. Panicked, I count. *One: panties. Two: t-shirt. Three: cardigan. Four: jeans. Five: knee socks. Six: Kickers boots. Seven: anorak.* Often, I count less than seven, or believe I've counted the boots or the socks as two instead of one; then I start again, and then again. *Where did I leave off? What did I lose? Did somebody steal something? My jeans, where are they? I can't go home without pants! Who stole them?*

Tiny points of blue begin to peak through the roughly woven curtains and soon, faint daylight filters through them, laying the room bare in all its drab neglect. I dress and enter the lobby, where the stale smell of smoke lingers. All is quiet. I pull open the front door. Mama is not there, and it is too cold to wait outside. A bright sun rises on this early spring day. I venture through the parlor floor meeting hall with columns, wood paneling, sofas and emptied ashtrays—through to the kitchen, where I find a fridge. Empty. I return to the lobby, sit down cross-legged and look through a window pane of the front door.

Now that the men are gone, so are the different parts of me that make me good. I feel dirty and ashamed. I would like to brush my teeth and wash up, but I sit by the door like a puppy dog waiting for its master, because I can't

believe that Mama will leave me here. *She has to come, any minute now.* I can't wait to get home, lock myself in the bathroom and have my purification ritual. Studying my face in the mirror, I then consciously perform every cleansing act, every brush stroke, untangling the knots, washing away all the badness. The need to refresh is so great that I get up and step into the chilly morning air, but after a few steps I begin to worry: *What if someone sees me leaving this house? What if someone asks what I was doing here?* My deepest shame and fear are that I am a "whore," which I have been called more times than I can count. How could I answer questions about what I was doing here? There is no one to be seen in the front area or farther down the street. There are a small red brick building and abandoned stables on either side of the entrance to the property. Hiding by the brick building I can't be spotted from the street, and with pounding heart, I observe the small bridge that leads to the road. As I remain frozen in place, I imagine being stopped by an upstanding citizen who will look disapprovingly at my ruffled exterior and ask me why I am out by myself. *What would I say? That my mother didn't pick me up? That my mother took me to that empty mansion and she was supposed to get me at dawn? That I was working all night? As a prostitute?*

Under a blanket of panicky thoughts lies a vague memory of Mama's voice saying, "I'm going to leave you there." *Which means that she wants me to stay here, and that I cannot go home. Besides, I don't know if I would remember the way....*

The mansion has a toilet stall on the ground floor, with a small sink. No soap. The bathroom upstairs is just as bare. With all my might I try to pull apart the knots in my hair; it hurts my scalp and cuts into my fingers—and it doesn't work. When I look into the mirror, I feel ashamed of the way I look. I anxiously remember the past week, and imagine myself not being irritable with Mama, not saying anything to get on her nerves. *If only I had not said she was no good. If only I hadn't hurt her feelings.* I go back to the subtlest spoken and unspoken interactions between us, in which it seems I could have acted better.

I watch the light change; the sunlight that shone in the front windows in the morning now beautifully illumines the lane with the open road in view. Then the sun sets. Now it gets dark. I feel slightly dizzy and see points of light

before my eyes. The families who live in the houses in this street must be sitting down to their dinners. I picture myself stepping out and ringing their doorbell. *I am dirty. What would they think of me? I don't look like I'm starving. My clothes aren't rags. What would I tell them I was doing here?*

My shameful thoughts are interspersed with bits of memories of various threats from Polo and other network regulars, reminding me that no matter where I might turn, if I were to even think about saying anything to anybody, it would always get back to them, because they have friends everywhere. Not only would I be punished or killed, but whomever I would talk to would also be punished or killed, and whatever happened to them would be my fault.

I push and pull, and manage to lift the dirty mattress in the little room up on its side, slide it through the doorway and push it to the front door, positioning it so that when I lay on it on my side, I see the driveway through a large window pane on the bottom of the door. As I lie there waiting, my guilt-laden thoughts flow again towards Mama. *I'm sure she doesn't know what happens after she drops me off–she's naïve like a child, proud of me for mixing with the most elite crowd in the country–aristocrats, famous politicians, doctors, judges, lawyers, top businessmen.... How could I expect her to think anything is wrong?*

Goading myself back into the box in which Mama can do no wrong and I love her completely, I feel nausea rise. Sitting up, cross-legged, I close my eyes and ride it out. A whitish point of light appears, with a golden rim. The light expands, shines like a sun both bright and subtle, whether my eyes are opened or closed. For whatever reason, this light looks familiar and it is comforting. It is steady and brings steadiness to me. I try more and more to get absorbed in it, and the more I do, the better I feel. All worries fall away. The great shifts in perception of myself and of Mama level out into detached clarity.

There is nothing in this universe as enticing as this light. It seems to be a sign that there is more to life than food and family. I do not have a sense how much time passes, but my body is still, my mind is still. I feel entirely at peace, and don't know why. I don't care why. There is comfort pouring from the light.

And then the night gives way to a new dawn. I wonder if Mama will come. She does not. This is Monday, a school day. My thoughts, dormant all night, anxiously flow out, focused and fastened—in her absence—on The Mother.

I have lost weight; my pants are looser. I put my hands on my hips and feel the bones more sharply. My ribcage is showing. I walk to the kitchen and automatically open the fridge, to once again find nothing. My stomach has stopped growling. My belly hurts. I get dizzy, so I sit, breathe, get up, and continue walking, slower.

Funny that this should be the place to be so hungry, I think. *This is the Hungry House.*

I remember the man whom I had told I was hungry in the little room in this mansion. Having seen him eight or so times in a row, he tried to make conversation in a sensitive way, and I thought I might confide in him. A while later, on an overcast afternoon, Mama dropped me at a white villa in Rhode-Saint-Genese. Michel Nihoul wrung his hands with glee when he saw me. There were five or six other children, mostly girls, and we were made to sit down at a table set up outside, in a circular, red brick courtyard where French windows opened to the back of the home. Nihoul gave a mock speech.

"Children, there is one among you—her...."

He said it casually, as if it barely mattered, but pointing at me, so all the others looked.

"...Who has complained to one of our guests that she gets hungry. Do you hear? She gets hungry. So, since I don't want any of you to ever feel deprived or neglected, I thought of a way to address the situation, which, I hope, will satisfy your cravings once and for all; that you never again will feel the need to bother our guests with trifles such as these. Dear children, I have prepared a meal. I hope that it will be to your liking."

Nihoul entered the house through the French doors. After a few minutes he returned wearing oven mitts, carrying an enormous metal baking sheet. I

could smell meat, but not what kind. It smelled bad. He set it down. A rump. Nearly black with red bloody stuff—horrific.

"Here," said Nihoul, "I'm going to try to put it back together for you."

He ran back in and came out with a second tray that he lined up with the first in the middle of the rectangular table. The second tray had the head and shoulders. Of a boy. With sunken cheeks and shrunken skin, charred except for a few patches of stubbly blonde hair. Piece by piece, Nihoul put the puzzle together, until the whole corpse was laid out, with skinny blackened limbs. Nihoul seemed to be having a great time. He has always loved his own jokes.

Why did I tell that man I was hungry? Why did I tell my mother she was no good? Why can't I keep quiet? Why am I always so bad?

I was sitting near the head of the body. Nihoul had begun cutting up the shoulders, asking who wanted a nice fleshy part, saying this was the best meat. As he was carving, I saw that a tooth fell out of the boy's open mouth onto the tray, and Nihoul did not notice. As Nihoul put a piece of flesh on somebody's plate with his back turned to me, I snatched the tooth from the tray and hid it inside my palm. Heart pounding, not looking to see if the other children saw me, I stuffed the tooth in my pocket.

Nihoul served me last: a chunk of thigh meat, grayish brown. He jokingly offered salt and pepper. I took the salt shaker and doused my plate with salt, tore off a piece of flesh, put it in my mouth and tried to swallow without chewing. Meanwhile, Nihoul kept jabbering, talking about the importance of chewing your food well for good digestion. I hurriedly ate everything off my plate without thinking. The meat was slightly rotten, but so overcooked I tried to focus on the burned taste.

The morning after that afternoon in the brick courtyard with Nihoul, I had stayed home from school and ended up alone all afternoon. I dug a hole two-fists deep by a low bush next to the narrow dirt path that leads alongside the house, right outside my bedroom window, and placed the tooth inside. I sat there for a long time, figuring it wasn't much, the burial for that boy. Then I put the dirt back in the hole, patted it over and over so it looked nice and smooth, and sat there some more. I thought I might cry, but no tears

came. I took a walk to the woods. It was a gorgeous day, and I thought about the boy, who could not smell the air and enjoy the beauty of the trees and the sky. I wanted to find forget-me-nots, but not knowing what they look like, I picked five wildflowers with tiny blue petals, walked home and placed them on the grave.

I now rise from that memory and adjust myself on the dirty mattress, look out the bottom window pane again, and think about Wouter, my little friend whom I witnessed tortured to death. He also had blonde stubbly hair. He was also a victim of the network. I think about the young woman's body I was shown in the cellar after the first time I was brought to an orgy. I think about the Moroccan boy who was shot and killed during the recent hunt, his body splayed out on the grass, arms open.

I ascend the stairs, stopping when I get too dizzy, and go back to the bathroom. I feel and smell filthy. I finger brush my teeth, but they still don't feel smooth. I try scratching off the plaque, to no avail. I finger comb my hair. The knots won't come undone. My hair looks ratty and greasy. I splash water on my face and a bit over my hair, but I just get cold and wet, no cleaner. I don't like the way my face looks: sallow and narrow.

I think of Patrick, and how good it felt last time I saw him. *But then I rejected him and I'm sure I hurt his feelings. I'm sure I've lost his love.*

I resume my position by the front door window, and the next thing I know, I am waking up after what seems like a long nap. I try to sit up, but as I rise, black spots appear and expand before my eyes and I faint. I wake up again, sit up and cross my legs, closing my eyes, hoping that I will see the light again, but it is uncomfortable sitting cross-legged at this moment. My mind wanders here and there, and I let it. The worries come. I let them pass. My anxious thoughts about Mama come. I let them pass. After a while my mind and body do quiet down, and though I can't see the light, I feel better.

Later in the day, on another futile round looking for something to eat or drink or cover myself with, the light suddenly appears before my eyes again. I stand still and put my hands over my eyes to see it better. It stays, so I go back to the mattress by the front door window, and sit down, and then it gets

smaller and goes away. Still, the comfort lingers, and I just sit, with my coat over my cardigan for warmth, as if the light were there.

I am sitting cross-legged on the mattress by the window next to the front door. I have been here five days. I am not hungry or thirsty anymore. After three days, my stomach gave up. My system is shutting down. I don't have to use the bathroom anymore. The body is wasting away. Bones stick out from underneath the skin. My teeth and hair are not so different from day two. My lips are swollen and cracked. I amuse myself by running my fingertips over the rough surface and picking at the loose ends of hard skin. I smell myself and don't mind; it is only my body. I am preparing to let it go, not waiting anymore. I spend more time bathing in the comfort of the light than bothering about externals. The light teaches me that it is important to prepare for death, because death is the only certainty of life. It tells me that there is a way of dying, to let go of the body before the body lets go of you. I haven't found out how yet, but I think that I might; I think that I will.

Here comes Mama's car, rattling up the driveway, moving slowly past the door and coming to a stop a little further ahead. I am not inclined to move. Mama turns off the ignition, and does not move either.

If I remain sitting, I can hold on to my truth; one of rapes through the first night and starvation the four following days—brought here and then left by Mama, just as she had promised.

After several minutes, the motor starts up again, and, gripped with the panic of being left behind again, of having to stay here and die alone, I bolt upright. Black spots converge into a black hole before my eyes, sucking in consciousness. I pry my eyes open, steady myself, remain standing on pure willpower, and walk to the car at an agonizing pace. I open the door and plop down in the passenger seat, giving up, exhausted. We take off; I am lightheaded, and close my eyes.

"Why didn't you come home?" asks Mama. "We were worried sick about you."

Was I supposed to walk home? Did she tell me, and did I forget? Is it not that long a walk? Did I get it all wrong?

I hear my thoughts, and stop the anxious flow. I am too tired. I remind myself of my truth, wondering if it even matters. Plain facts are ignored rebels in this totalitarian state of Being Good where my mother rules. It would be so much easier if I could accept that I made my family worry—that would be better for everyone. I lean my head against the door and turn to look out the window, averting Mama's critical gaze, which says that my appearance proves what she has always known: that I am rotten to the core.

The first person I see when I enter the front door of our house is the cleaning lady who initially introduced me to the network. It is Thursday, of course—the day she cleans the house. Her small, scheming eyes flicker coldly as I cross the freshly mopped slate tiles of the lobby. I head to the kitchen. Odors enter my nostrils like voluptuous promises. There is a pan on the stove with browned melted butter that must have been used as sauce for some meat dish, and a pot with some leftover boiled potatoes. This is my stepfather's fare. Papa is often abroad for work, sometimes months at a time, but he was home during my time away and will most likely be back for dinner. I mash a quartered potato in the pan and take a small bite. The browned butter tastes too strong; too meaty and salty, but the potato abounds with subtle, nurturing flavor. After my small meal, which is all I can eat, I am overcome with acute exhaustion and lay down on the sofa in the living room. Less than a minute later, the cleaning woman runs the vacuum noisily around the sofa while Mama stands by the kitchen door, arms crossed, looking on disapprovingly.

I take a bath and wash my hair. The knots are so tight I can't comb them out by the time dinner is ready at five.

My stepfather's bald crown is the first thing I see when I enter the dining area. As I approach him, I imagine that when he sees me, he will be shocked and ask me what happened. But when I sit down, he greets me as if I had been there all week, and as if nothing were amiss. He squeezes his eyes shut, bows his head and folds his hands. Loudly and slowly, he utters a prayer. When he concludes with "Amen," Mama and my brother chime in. Mama serves a long sausage that she cuts into pieces in the pan. Mashed potatoes. Boiled endives. Spinach for me.

Mama goes to the kitchen. I anxiously look at Papa, hoping he will notice my weight, my pallor, maybe the knots in my hair. Mama's senior by twenty years, he is fifty-four, with white fuzz, purple veins running across his big nose, and bloodshot eyes that avoid me. He gets up slowly, picks a tulip-shaped glass and a half-empty bottle of red wine from a cabinet, and pours, looking intently at the liquid. Holding up the glass, he teaches his two children, "You see? See the rich brown tones in this Burgundy? That's how you can tell that it's old."

As he looks up at the wineglass, his thin lips curl into a tight smile, while his little blue eyes remain unsmiling. He swirls the liquid, takes a deliberate sip and swallows audibly.

"Papa?" I begin.

He looks at me. His gaze is so devoid of recognition of my state that I doubt myself.

"I haven't been home," I stammer.

"Yes, I've heard about your fancy exploits," he jokes. "Too busy mingling in the higher circles to give any time to your poor father at home!"

"Don't you see anything different about me?"

I say the last words very quietly, because Mama returns from the kitchen with a bottle of orangeade and glasses for my brother and me, and then serves Papa's food. I put my hands around my waist, touching my middle fingers to show him. He can see, but he does not look.

I mix the spinach with potatoes, spoon some melted butter on top and take a bite. My mouth muscles must have lost their tone; it takes effort to chew and swallow. The spinach tastes like the cardboard out of which it came. After the chocolate puddings are finished and Mama begins to clear the table, Papa stays behind, savoring his second glass of wine.

"Papa, I was very hungry while I was away," I venture nervously.

Papa throws a sideways glance over my body as he drinks. When he puts his glass down, he says, "I can see that you've lost weight. Didn't they give you enough caviar?"

After pronouncing "caviar" in an exaggerated dialect accent, he forces out a big, fake laugh, betraying his envy of the elusive elite to which he would so love to belong.

"Seriously," he goes on, "make sure you don't get too thin."

Papa's eyes glide over my body as if I were a good bottle of wine.

"Papa, I'm trying to tell you something," I continue, nervously eyeing the kitchen doorway through which Mama may appear any second.

My little brother gets up from the table and goes over to the television area, asking his father if he can watch TV. Papa picks up his glass, stands, and stretches self-consciously. Adding a little audible yawn for effect, he follows my brother. I jump up.

"Papa!" I plead.

"What do you want now?"

Papa laughs as if I were conniving to get something from him, as if he humorously condoned my shrewdness. As he turns on the television for my brother, I clutch his arm. *It's real, Papa,* I am trying to say. *I really need you.* He finally drops the pretense and looks at me, and I see that watery, alcohol-induced softness in his eyes through which his love lights up, mixed with desire, and a melancholic smile appears on his face.

"Papa, listen, I didn't eat; there was no one there."

Mama enters and eyes us suspiciously. Suddenly, it seems as if she just caught me trying to seduce Papa. Her cold stare turns towards her husband. He stiffens and pulls his arm loose, as if he just got caught too.

"What stories are you trying to tell me?" he mumbles.

His eyes once again become dim and he makes his way to the table to help Mama clean up. I feel that they are a nice couple and I was trying to disturb their peace. *I'm even too lazy to help them clear the dishes,* I think. *I was too lazy to walk home from that house in the next village. They were worried about me.*

The next day, Mama keeps me out of school. The doctor arrives later that morning. He does a perfunctory exam on me while chatting with Mama, decides I am getting over a flu, writes a note for school, backdates it to the beginning of the week, and tells me to get some rest. After the doctor has left, Mama gets a comb and scissors. She tells me to sit straight up on the chair and not to move. I hear the scissors cut, once, twice. Mama pulls out a chunk of hair, a knot with a lot of long hair attached.

"You're cutting it all off!" I exclaim in horror, touching the back of my head.

"That's the only way to get it out," Mama retorts. "That'll teach you for running away from home!"

Another big strand of my hair is being pulled. *No! Stop it, please! Okay, I ran away from home and stayed with rich people who fed me caviar. That's what you told papa and that's the truth.*

Snip.

Okay, I tried to seduce papa.

Snip.

Mama! Don't cut off my hair!

CHAPTER SIX

Belgium, a Wednesday evening, April 1974

Ever since the Christmas party, Florence has been steadfast in her spite, whereas I have been through too much to care. When she calls me up to meet with her, her words barely register—I respond automatically and bike over to meet her on a quiet lane in the open fields.

"There are some friends waiting for us, over there on the path, by the crossing. We're meeting Danny and some of his friends; I think they came all the way from Schoten."

Danny is Florence's sixteen-year old, blue-collar boyfriend, with a fuzzy mustache, an earring, and strong Antwerp dialect twang. Florence is still a child, only eleven. We turn onto a dirt path and see Danny and three other boys waiting for us with their arms crossed. Danny takes Florence by the hand, and they hurry off along a hedge, into a muddy, freshly plowed field.

"Bye!" Florence laughs with a nasal snicker, waving as Danny pulls her along.

It's getting dark. The three big boys encircle me, laughing quietly.

"Do you have weapons?" I ask, businesslike.

One of them rubs his genitals and laughs.

"Yeah, baby, we got weapons."

"Nothing else?"

The two others laugh. The boy who touched his genitals whips out a penknife, flips it open and sticks the blade in my left nostril, guiding my head up with the knife until we look each other in the eye.

“Oh, you mean this kind of weapon, whore?”

I blink to answer yes.

“You’re not going to nod? Afraid I’m gonna cut up that little nose of yours?”

I blink again, and keep looking at him in the same way.

“She’s not even scared of you,” one of them laughs.

My assaulter lifts my head up higher with the help of his penknife, and I widen my eyes and stiffen my head and neck muscles to look scared, even though I’m not. These are just boys. Even if they are up to no good, I don’t sense any of the sick energy their adult counterparts emanate. He lowers the knife, but doesn’t fold it back up.

“Where can we go around here? We can’t fuck her in the middle of the road, or can we, guys?” the boy asks his friends.

He looks sternly at me.

“You’re from around here. Where to?”

“I don’t know. I’ve never had this happen before.”

“Just shut up,” shouts one of the boys as he grabs me by the back of my anorak and roughly pushes me ahead on the path.

“Hey,” says one of them. “Look.”

He nods to an empty construction site coming into view, and the two other boys smirk. My assaulter is the biggest bully of the trio. The smallest and thinnest of the three, with sand-colored hair, hasn’t said a word. The building on the site is erect, a frame of cinder bricks, but the windows and doors have not been put in. One of the boys pushes me across a four-by-four plastered in dried mud, and through the dark doorway.

“I guess we’re not gonna find a bed here,” jokes one of them.

They seem brand new at this, I suspect, and notice that I still don't feel fear—likely a result of my training in Germany two years ago. The most organized and thought-out torture methods had taught me, among other things, to derive detailed information from taking just one look at males, to assess their danger level.

Close to an open rectangular frame for a window stands a workbench covered with tools. I systematically begin to take the instruments off the table and place them on the hard mud floor. The boys seem puzzled at first, but when they understand, they laugh.

"What did you say again," laughs one, "That you've never done this before? Seems to me like you're a pro!"

Another volley of laughter. Ashamed, I stare into the ground. The boy with sand-colored hair quickly approaches, saying, "She's making it easy for us, and for herself."

His voice is high and clear; he sounds compassionate. His Flemish is pronounced softly, without the strong Antwerp accent of the other two. A wide grin animates his face; his eyes dance with joy.

"Peter's a real charmer," teases one of the older boys.

"You'd better come and help," Peter retorts, catching my eye.

The expanse of Peter's eyes is such that his gaze seems ready to spread out across the universe, but a serious, almost disciplinary brow reins it in. When the other two dutifully come to his aid, Peter's playful smile says: *See? They were laughing at you for doing this, but now they're doing it themselves.* When the table is clear, two boys retreat. Peter stays.

"Here, why don't you just sit down? This table seems just right. Here's my jacket, you can sit on that. You want help with your jeans?"

His hands seem to be everywhere at once. Though he is aggressive in his assertiveness, his gestures are caressing. Peter looks me in the eye, one hand cupping my face, while the other unzips his jeans. He puts an arm around my hips and pulls me closer.

"Here, there's no need to be afraid. It's not going to bite."

I can see what Peter is doing, but I don't mind; I am just observing, still unafraid. Peter also observes as he rubs his penis between my legs. My arousal seems to correspond to his. I put my hands inside his shirt, touch the skin on his lower back, and pull him closer. I close my eyes. My lips touch his face.

"It feels so soft and good," he whispers.

When he penetrates, he slightly trembles, and then smiles. He's not too big, not like a grown-up. I experience no fear, no dissociation, no distance. Peter stops; the moonlight illumines a beautiful smile. Absorbed in sensual pleasure, in a sense of togetherness, nothing else exists. We hold each other, becoming so still we barely need to breathe. Peter whispers, "I don't want to give the others a turn."

Peter directs me to sit higher up on the workbench, turns me sideways, and climbs up while he calls one of the boys out of the dark, "I'm staying here, better make it quick."

Peter lays me down on his jacket so my legs hang off the end of the table, while he stands by my head.

"It's gonna be over soon. Just pretend it's me. It *is* me," he whispers in my ear.

I am ashamed as the other boy unzips and lowers his pants, suddenly afraid that Peter is someone who always charms his victims. I keep my legs closed. Peter maneuvers his hand inside my legs and as I mentally give in. My thighs relax. The other boy takes his turn. It hurts.

"It's gonna be okay, you'll see," Peter whispers.

As if we were boyfriend and girlfriend trying this weird new thing, Peter kisses me. The other boy finishes; Peter kicks him and jumps on top of me. We make love until the thought of the other boy fades away. As soon as I think of the third boy, Peter calls him and stays with me throughout his turn. Then Peter lifts me off the table and swoops me up in his arms. As he carries me, it is as though I am being given all the comfort I have needed after every

rape. His solid grip and serious look impart the tenderness for which I have always yearned. He takes me to a spot on the floor where the mud is sort of even, carefully arranges his jacket on the floor and puts me down. Our caresses are barely physical; our attunement has woven a cocoon of intimacy around us.

"Hey, Peter, aren't you being a bit selfish?" we hear one of the other boys' feeble voices calling in the dark.

"Fuck off!" Peter shouts. "And get out. I need some fucking privacy."

As we see the shadows of the two boys disappear, Peter yells after them, "I'm going to be a long time."

I don't know how long we make love on his jacket on the dried mud floor, but I keep wishing for it to go on. It is as if all the nerves and nerve ends are showing off, trying to surpass each other in just what they can do, and how effortlessly they can do it, forming an electrified field of pleasure. Afterwards, as we lie in each other's arms, Peter whispers, "This was my first time."

Though it is completely dark, our eyes have become used to it, and he sees me staring at him in disbelief.

"It's true. This was supposed to be my initiation. The others have done it before; they were going to show me."

"But you're in charge!"

"No, Danny's in charge, he's the oldest. I'm thirteen, I'm the youngest, but I take care of myself, you know. The others, they can't tell me what to do."

"But you were so sure of yourself, and so quick!"

"I was really nervous; I just pretended I knew what I was doing, but I didn't have a clue."

"It's hard to believe this was your first time."

"I can't believe it myself. But it's because it's you, I think. I mean…."

When he cocks his head sideways, my heart leaps. We remain close and still, like halves of a whole, put back together for a little while.

"I want to see you again," Peter whispers.

"Yes…." I think out loud.

"Only if you want to," he adds quickly. "But how?"

"I could come back here," I say. "We could meet here again."

"Yes, maybe on Saturday?"

"I don't think I'll be able to get away on Saturday."

"Maybe your friend can cover for you," Peter proposes. "You can tell your parents you're with her."

"Yes, but not Saturday. How about next week, Wednesday?"

"Okay. I'll be here at five. And it's just us from now on," Peter quietly adds.

He looks at me nervously, lowers his head and gestures.

"I'm sorry about that," he says, shuffling one foot in the dirt. "I was just told about the sex part, like you already knew, and then when we got here… and I went along anyway because I thought you're so pretty, but…I'm sorry."

He slowly shakes his head. We walk out with our arms around each other, and find the other boys and Danny and Florence waiting. After many goodbye kisses, Danny's promise to get Peter back next week, and Florence's promise that she'll cover for me, Peter and I finally let go of each other. As I pass Florence, she nods respectfully. I wonder if her scheme was yet another answer to my telling her Patrick wasn't having sex with me, making me feel what I was missing.

As I bike home, I think about Patrick. Over the past month, Mama has taken me to the mansion one or two nights a week, and not to any other

network events. Believing in Patrick's true love has gotten me through many rapes. But I did not think of him at all with Peter.

Papa opens the front door as soon as I reach the driveway. When I enter, he says, "Where have you been? We've been looking all over for you. Your mother is worried sick."

Mama is in the living room. Her messed-up mascara has formed black circles around her eyes, and she clutches a balled-up hanky, screaming, "Where have you been! It's ten o'clock! I've been on the phone with Countess d'Auriac; we were so worried, we called the police! Where have you been!"

"Florence took me to see some friends of hers. It's her fault."

"We're going to forbid you to see Florence for three weeks!" she yells. "I'm going to call the countess to make sure that it happens."

I marvel at Mama's ability to always find just what will hurt me, but I am not worried. Girls like myself, whose parents give them to the network, usually don't survive their teens. But if someone from outside the network cares about me, who knows.... I go to bed full of hope and happiness, thinking that maybe there is a chance for me.

CHAPTER SEVEN

Family home, Belgium,
a Saturday evening, April 1974

"Are you ready?"

Mama whispers, leaning over me. I'm in bed—stiff, awake, dressed. I pull an anorak from the coat rack and loosely throw it on before following Mama to the front door and to her car parked in the driveway. I get in the passenger's seat, shivering. Mama releases the hand brake and lets the car roll slowly down the driveway. She turns the key, maneuvers backwards and brusquely turns the car around, driving off. When we reach the church, we turn left. Then we pass the center of the next village, and I expect Mama will turn left, towards a lane leading to the vacant mansion, where she has been taking me lately, but instead she goes straight, towards the Brussels highway.

Patrick!

A handler opens the front door of a villa with an enormous lawn. I follow the noise through a large lobby, so afraid I tremble. My heart bonks wildly in my chest; my mouth is parched. I hope and pray that Patrick is not here, but as I enter the salon through a large open doorway, I spot him talking to the tall wrinkly man whom I saw sitting with the bosses on the night I met him. Patrick does not seem to notice me. I can't stop trembling. Patrick turns his head and looks at me. Not knowing what else to do, I make a beeline for him through the crowd and jump into his embrace. I kiss his face, covering my feelings of guilt and fear, sensing an amused, sarcastic smile from the bystander. Then Patrick smiles his own ironic smile that looks almost exactly like the other man's, except that the silent spectator is more caustic and mocking than Patrick.

What's going on with you? Patrick asks by way of a smiling nod. *Yes, I'm happy to see you too.* I can't calmly reply, so I look intently into Patrick's eyes thinking, *I love you.*

I love you, too, says his twinkling gaze, and I bury my face against his shoulder to hide the tears, because I feel unworthy. Holding me, Patrick tells the other man he'll be off.

"Is that your father?" I ask as Patrick carries me out of the room.

"Yes. He had to be there for you to kiss me? You should have told me; I would have gotten him over a lot sooner."

"He doesn't mind?"

Climbing the stairs holding me, Patrick's breath becomes belabored; he frowns, shaking his head.

"He's more like a good friend," he concludes.

I raise my brow thinking: *What kind of a good friend is that?* Patrick averts his eyes and opens the door to a room under the slanted roof, with two quaint single beds.

"So, here we are. You still want to kiss me now?"

He gives me that look, ardent desire burning through his incredibly clear eyes. I lower my gaze, but not my face.

Though this is to be the very first time I am sexual with Patrick, I am on exceedingly familiar terrain. When we, mind-controlled sex slaves, tortured with tried and tested techniques to draw out exact results, are doing what we were created to do, our entire psychology is applied to the task. The Belgians are a local chapter of the global network, and Polo and his friends differ from the big leaguers in that they generally don't read my mind. I can freely have my private, critical thoughts about them, whereas it would instantly endanger my life to have an unflattering thought about the most powerful global networkers in their presence. Not allowed my own thoughts, I become the materialization of their projection, complete with the thoughts and feelings they want from me. I have been trained to be a "wild French sex machine," utterly and animalistically abandoned to the experience. Patrick reads my mind, and this activates my training, but I also find him attractive and I like

him, and he seems to also genuinely like me—all unwelcome complications to an impossible situation.

Patrick brings his lips close to mine, only very slowly. His desire is tangible, but he restrains, which rouses my desire, and I also hold back, savoring the game. Patrick carefully puts his lips on my face, relishing every tiniest touch as the treasure he has been longing for these past six months. I don't know why, but my thoughts flow to Peter: how easy it was, how nice not to have to think, and how happy that made me. The thought: *I liked it better with him*, springs up.

Patrick breaks contact, pulls back and looks at me. I stare him frankly in the eye. Suddenly he kisses me passionately.

"Que je t'aime, mon trésor," he whispers. (How I love you, my treasure.)

All through the kiss, I am aware of some distance on my part; a wish to do away with all this intensity and mind power and passion. This distance and these thoughts may be part of my unconscious seduction, an automatic response from the training in Germany. Mind control induces trauma in a slave to push the mind beyond thought, open up intuition and psychic abilities, and then put all of these abilities in service to the slave's owner. For example, the global Big Shot who was my owner sent me to spend weekends with a top German politician. He then had me report on the man's weakness to give him an advantage in his business and government dealings with him. But last year, I had painfully rejected the global Big Shot's plans for me, and, after days of intense punishment, I was returned to Belgium. Ever since, I have only been used by the Belgians, and here I am, with Patrick.

Without wanting to, I notice that my response to Patrick is stronger than with Peter. I may seem more passionate, but I am less involved. Once undressed, my mental distance increases with the fear of getting hurt.

"I'm not going to hurt you," Patrick says, but his smile seems to be saying that he might very well hurt me; that my fear is the very thing that turns him on.

My breathing turns shallow while the adrenaline whooshes through my body. He stands and holds me up with his hands, so I have no physical control. Without warning, he pushes himself inside, and I experience a powerful sexual sensation, fully in correlation with the raw fear. All I can do is cling to him, to surrender entirely or I will suffer tremendous pain. His fingertips send powerful erotic signals up my spine, which is so arched that my head hangs upside down. Giving up any and all resistance, I surrender, allowing in the extreme pleasure, until I find myself crying, I don't know why. We enter into a state of wild ecstasy, and keep the ripples going, willing the ultimate bodily bliss to linger, playing the game again; opponents united by sensations that seem at once too subtle and too powerful to be experienced with anyone else.

I am lying on one of the beds, hands behind my head, feeling extremely relaxed, and entirely free of guilt. I shoot Patrick a look of resentment.

He is much too pleased with himself. I did not want to lose it like that. What choice did I have? Physically I don't stand a chance. I'm too small. I still prefer Peter.

"*Mon amour,* how beautiful you are like this," says Patrick as he strokes my face, teasing.

It does feel good to be so connected, and to feel beautiful, but I don't like that I seem as grown-up as he.

"You are not ten years old, you know," says Patrick.

"It's true, I'm not. I'm eleven."

"You had your birthday?"

He comes to sit on the bed, happily putting a hand through my hair. He kisses me.

"Happy birthday."

He kisses me again. A big long kiss that soon becomes intensely sexual and could easily escalate into another round, but he stops.

"Still, you're not eleven, either."

"Then what would you say I was?"

"Eighteen, at least. Or you can be twenty. One year younger than me. That's your age, okay?"

"I'm eleven. I have a lot of growing to do before I'll be twenty."

Suddenly perturbed, Patrick stares out ahead, unfocused. Dropping his head in his hands, he repetitively combs his hair back with his fingers. Unlike other men in the network, he seems at least to have a sense that there is something off about having sex with a child, that maybe there is something else going on besides what the networkers all seem to have agreed upon: they are not pedophiles—no—pedophiles are those dirty guys who *only* have sex with children.

"But you're not a child."

"But I am."

Patrick smiles as if I were teasing him. I did mimic him: it was such a grown-up answer, though I did not intend it. It is as if Patrick transferred his adulthood onto me through the sex, as if he were the sex slave. Now I am the one who is detached, ironic, feeling free, and I even lie on the bed in the same relaxed way he usually does, with my hands behind my head, while he is sitting nearby, nervously trying to please me. Patrick leans over and caresses me. When he touches the mons, a wide smile spreads across his face.

"Okay, yes, it's true. And what a nice thing, too. It's the nicest thing ever, so soft, without the hair."

Patrick laughs as I blush fiercely.

"I've had a hard time getting you back. What happened to you in the last month? Where were you?"

I tell Patrick about the nights in the mansion, and about being left to starve by my mother for five whole days before she came to get me, implying that he was right when he told me that she was no good, and that I now

understand and am completely on the same page as he. Patrick promises that he will arrange things, so I will never have to return.

Villa, Brussels region, Belgium,
a Sunday morning, April 1974

As soon as Patrick has jumped into his clothes and left the attic room, I climb on the nightstand and push open the skylight window to smell the fresh morning breeze on this bright sunny morning. I stick my head out, feel the wind and see the endless, perfectly mown lawn, the driveway, and Mama's car, parked below. Then I notice Patrick's white-blonde head of hair. He heads out the front door, marching quickly and assuredly, so his limp is not noticeable. He approaches Mama's car and starts a conversation. They talk for quite some time, laugh sometimes. Then she hands him something that he stuffs in the pocket of his tight jeans. Mama starts the car and drives off. Patrick returns to the front door. I jump down from the nightstand.

"Are you ready? Let's go," says Patrick as the door swings open.

I throw on my clothes and hurry after him. When we drive off in his Porsche down the long driveway, I look at him questioningly. *Should I duck?*

"Don't bother," Patrick laughs grandly as he turns onto the road.

It is as though flamboyancy and recklessness have replaced the power that he gave up during sex. We drive to the road that borders the forest and arrive in Fort-Jaco, a part of Brussels where the Porsche does not stand out in the least. We park in front of a bakery.

"They had absolutely nothing to eat in that place," he clarifies.

Upon hearing his lie, I freeze. Patrick looks at me, puzzled, waiting.

"Come on, what's wrong?"

"You want me to come with you?"

"If you want."

As I hesitate, I notice Patrick freeze as well. I jump out of the car. Sunday mornings are the busiest in the Belgian bakeries. We join the line of people in their Sunday best with hats to match—the post-mass crowd. Patrick grins.

"Bonjour mesdames, messieurs." (Ladies, gentlemen.)

Some people nod, others mutter *bonjours,* but those filing past us on their way back from the counter glance apprehensively. Patrick moves as if to put his arm over my shoulder, then changes his mind. He puts his fingertips in his jean pockets. I wonder what he has buried in there that Mama gave him, and feel very uncomfortable. My private crisis seems to make Patrick even more shaky, and when it is our turn to order he anxiously looks on as I try to tell him with my eyes, *just order something, whatever,* because my French doesn't bear a trace of the local accent and I fear it would instantly betray that we are not related.

"So, what do you want?" asks the lady behind the counter.

Patrick's voice slips, like a teenager's. He tries to recover with a forced cough.

"Just a croissant," I answer as quietly as possible, but the lady's gaze glides from me to him, and him to me.

"And for the gentleman?" she asks, stiffly.

Patrick, his fingertips still in his pockets, trembles. His shoulders arch forward awkwardly, which makes his stance look rigid and unnatural. His sensitive mouth quivers into a tight smile.

"Me too, a croissant," he says self-consciously.

The baker's woman stuffs two croissants in a bag, all the while staring coolly at him. Patrick shakes when he pays, drops a coin, hobbles when we

leave, limping worse than ever, past the line of customers waiting outside, all of whose eyes are glued on us.

With a deafening engine roar and screeching tires, we tear down the road at breakneck speed towards Waterloo. A few, or maybe many miles ahead, Patrick abruptly halts by a small cluster of modest red brick row houses, the first one of which has a large chicken coop next to it. Frightened by the noise, the brown chickens scatter and squawk at the far end of the coop. Patrick gets out of the car, pulls the croissants out of the bag and, as though they were stones, hurls them over the wire fence, and ostentatiously brushes the crumbs off his hands with big up and down arm movements and loud slaps. He jumps back in the car and accelerates at an insane speed. After a number of interminable seconds, we slow down, park, and enter a small restaurant, rather dark inside, and empty. A middle-aged man comes out to greet us, wiping his hands on a short white apron.

"What are you serving today, *mon cher?*" Patrick asks. He acts super confident and grandiose, while his gestures are brusque and his transparent eyes look frozen.

"I'm preparing rabbit at the moment. If you're willing to wait, I can serve it to you in about, let's say half an hour, with an asparagus cream soup to start?"

"Lovely, perfect. As long as you can bring us a coffee first, with warm milk on the side, and a hot chocolate, with some bread and butter."

The man, who has his hands on his hips, raises his brows. Coffee *before* lunch?

"We're having the menu," Patrick promises. "I just want the coffee and the bread first, while we wait."

Patrick's definitive manner clearly indicates that the chef should now turn on his heel, but the man purses his lips and cocks his head sideways, looking every bit the patient food expert. Patrick's nostrils widen, and that deadened look in his eyes frightens me.

"I don't know if you'll be able to properly taste the food if you're going to have strong and sweet flavors crossing your palate before the meal. But I don't mind; I'll give you some coffee and hot chocolate. I have a nice country loaf, too, very crusty."

"Well that's great," Patrick revels with patronizing sarcasm quite thrown away upon the chef. "I realize we're turning things on their head. We're trying to fit everything in one sitting, to give my niece a sampling of everything here, since she's visiting for the day from Antwerp. She's Flemish, you see."

The man asks me, in Flemish, where in Antwerp I am from and informs me, in Flemish, that he grew up in a neighboring suburb. He asks me if I know the street, which I don't. I start to feel very uncomfortable having a conversation which Patrick cannot understand. The man asks, in Flemish, if I like asparagus. I quickly shake my head. Patrick shifts nervously in his seat. The man promises, in Flemish, that he will heat up some leftover spinach cream soup for me. I feel terrible for not being able to put a halt to his blabbering, and look at Patrick, pleading for understanding. He winks. I continue looking at Patrick, ignoring the chef, and Patrick's eyes twinkle back to life.

"Okay, let me get your hot chocolate, young lady," says the man, finally reverting to French, "and your coffee, monsieur, and your bread, and I will get back to the stove or you'll be waiting a whole hour for your main course."

About ten minutes later, Patrick and I are having breakfast. Patrick eats with great relish. He is just as exuberant as before the incident in the bakery. The chef appears and asks, in French, if we are satisfied, and though Patrick answers, the chef smiles at me. When the chef returns to his kitchen, Patrick looks at me, and his eyes are once again glazed over. Uncomfortable, I smile. Patrick observes me, gets up, picks up his blue Adidas bag and with a nudge lets me know I should follow; I quickly jump up. He guides me to a small bathroom in the back and locks the door once we are inside. He closes the wooden toilet seat cover and sits.

"Come here, *chérie*."

He takes me on his lap. I cross my legs around his body. His dead eyes make him look like a drunkard, and I wonder how I can feel close to him again.

"When I see you smile, I just have to do this. You're so sweet. *Que je t'aime, ma petite Annie.*" (I love you so much, my little Annie.)

Patrick is aroused, and pulls me against him so I can feel it. He puts me down, stands, orders me to take my jeans off and lowers his own to his knees.

"No, not here. What if the man came? What if he hears us?"

"I thought of that," Patrick answers. "Take off your pants, quick."

Patrick takes his Browning handgun out of his sports bag, holds it in his left hand, arm stretched, as if to shoot into the floor, then puts his right hand over the gun, doing something, cocking it, I guess. It makes me infinitely sad, and my feeling is instantly reflected in Patrick's eyes, as the ruffian transforms into a deeply sensitive soul, expressing all the sorrow over his compulsion to play his part in this ineluctable drama.

Quick as lightning, he grabs me, peels off my pants, pulls me on his lap, and rubs himself against my lower back. I am frightened to death that the man will come knocking. Patrick orders me to put my feet on the sink in front of us. He lifts me up and begins to have sex. Naked, I feel extremely vulnerable. When Patrick lowers me, I feel the cold metal of his gun against the skin on the back of my thigh. My tremendous fear, either of the gun going off through my leg, or of witnessing a murder, or both—lulls me into a trance. My nervous system is highly charged and I find myself in a state of extreme intoxication, shared by Patrick. Afterwards, Patrick sits still, pulls me against him, his lips on my neck, his gun still below my thigh. We hold our breaths, listening for sounds outside the door. We do not hear anything, but can tell from the silence that the man is there, that he has returned from the kitchen, noticed us missing, and realized we are in the bathroom. Maybe he has guessed we were having sex. Patrick carefully removes his lips from my skin and moves his mouth to my ear to whisper, "Make like you're sick."

I shake my head.

“Make a sound as if you’re throwing up.”

I shake my head. I don’t want to act my way through the restaurant, past the owner.

Sitting on this loaded gun in this impossible situation, I curse my compulsion to kiss Patrick yesterday. Now he acts like the slave, trying with all his might to break out of his chains and liberate himself from his self-created chaos.

I look up at the window, a twenty-inch wide sliver of sky under the roof, which opens inward from the top, coming down to a slant, leaving an opening of about fifteen inches from the ceiling. I turn my head back to check with Patrick. He remains still for several more seconds, then gets up, turns on the tap to drown out the noise, makes me stand on the toilet seat, and supports me as I climb up to stand on his hands. I grab the top of the opened window, swing my leg up and clamber through with surprising ease. I drop down into a small backyard onto tall weeds without hurting myself. There is no one in sight. I run through empty backyards and find an alleyway leading back to the road, where I head towards Patrick’s car driving towards me. I hop in, and as we tear away, I finally relax, relieved that I did not hear a shot and can assume the restaurateur is alive and well. Maybe the bill has even been paid, and Patrick has found some easy, good excuse to get himself out of that place without making trouble.

CHAPTER EIGHT

Construction site, Belgium,
a Wednesday evening, April 1974

It is surely five o'clock by now, and Peter is not here. I got to the construction site ten minutes early, with an excuse other than going to see Florence, which I am not allowed. I told Mama that Patrick wanted to see me and that he was picking me up down the street. She had that bewildered look, like when she believes I am torturing her, but nodded.

I picture myself with Peter on the beach in the South of France, like so many teenagers each summer doing seasonal work. I have heard much about the Côte d'Azur in the network. To get jobs for the summer, it seems reasonable to arrive in May, which is next week, and Peter does not know about the plan yet. I don't even know if he speaks French, but I thought of that; he could be a dishwasher in one of the boardwalk restaurants. I could sell ice cream or something, and after the summer we can travel to the Beaujolais or the Bordeaux region to pick grapes, like so many do each fall. I rehearse telling Peter about my situation, and then the entire solution. Peter will have to get us there. But he is not here.

I don't know Peter—I have trouble remembering what he looks like—but when we were together, I had this powerful sense that he is one who could love me; that he already did, and that I could reach out to him and he would understand and want to do anything for me. As the minutes roll by and the sky darkens, I am reminded of last week when we met, and that sense remains. He is supposed to be here now and he is not, but I cannot believe that he would not want to be here. I know that he came to rape me and that he did; and that it is strange that I should trust him. But intuition about a man's—and in this case a boy's—feelings for me is my best survival tool. This skill was sharpened during the training in Germany, when I was taught to

recognize what a man really wants, regardless of what he says. The confidence in the veracity of my intuition is what gives me the strength to keep on going.

Someone approaches! Wishful thinking stalls the obvious: the outlined figure in the near dark is an adult. I stand by the hedge next to my parked bike, hands stuffed in my pockets. He frowns as he walks past. Worried as I was that he would ask what I was doing here by myself, it is a little disappointing that he did not, as I always hope and expect that someone out there will be concerned enough to ask questions.

Peter is not here, and I carefully consider the possibility that I was wrong about him. As soon as my mind begins to go in that direction, I feel nauseous. Hurrying to the site, I sit down on an open window ledge, feeling sick. If Peter just used me to get off, and is dropping me, and if I was wrong about this powerful sense I followed without thinking, it seems that I must be wrong about everything. This nausea comes with unbearable fear, which was evoked countless times during the training in Germany. Whenever I got anything wrong, the punishments were so cruel they were sometimes worse than death. In spite of the torture, the training was highly effective. I am supposed to know exactly how males feel about me. Essence, truth, love—everything substantial exists on a plane other than the physical, and the underlying laws of nature and human actions determine life from that invisible realm. The training had me forcibly connect through the ether so as to read men's deepest desires, to detect their deepest fear and nurture their emotional wounds. Peter is only two years older than myself. If I was wrong about him, if I have lost my survival skill, I don't see any point in going on.

I hear a voice in my head, screaming that if my man left me, I might as well kill myself, and I look around to see what tools are available so I can end my life. Then a vague question arises in my mind, wondering about this voice.

The suicidal message in my head in connection to feeling rejected romantically would haunt me long after the message was instilled, until the full memory of the source of these self-destructive thoughts would finally surface. I would be taken back to a lab-like setting in 1972 with the Belgian network boss Polo. He had just picked me up from a small European airport

where I had been flown in on the private jet of the Big Shot networker whom Polo had tried to befriend by gifting me to him. Exceeding Polo's expectations, the Big Shot had taken a particular interest in me, and had brought me with him overseas for nearly a month. Only, Polo probably had never counted on also having to drive me around like a lowly handler for the Big Shot, and he was in a terrible mood as he took me to this lab.

I had been strapped to a medical table. Polo had screamed into my right ear that if my man leaves me, my life would be completely worthless and I might as well kill myself. At the foot-end of the table were two younger men, maybe in their thirties, in white lab coats. One was holding a clipboard, making notes, while the other sexually manipulated me, acting completely detached, as if this had been a simple medical routine.

Polo had loudly repeated the message in my ear. When the memory of his torturous indoctrination would finally surface from beneath thick layers of shame, it would include the strong sense that this had not been Polo's own idea, but that he had been following instructions, which he hated. By linking the idea of suicide to my presumed sexual attachment to "my man," those men, especially the Big Shot, would be assured that if they tired of me, or if something didn't go according to plan, they would not even need to take care of the dirty work of eliminating me; I would be doing it for them. Only, Polo had been so annoyed that, though he did scream loudly in my ear, because he had thought this was stupid, his resistance and resentment had also seeped into my consciousness, and I now wonder about the voice in my head.

This evening, less than two years after the indoctrination at Polo's hands, and about one year after the Big Shot's plans for me were indeed thwarted and I did not consequently commit suicide as I should have, here I am, waiting for a boy who failed to show up at our appointment, and I am once again ignoring the voice in my head urging me to kill myself.

The only place I could possibly find out whether or not I'm mistaken about Peter is at Florence's. She might know more, through Danny. I hop on my bike and ride over to her home. The manor looks cozy, with its lit windows on all floors. I am aware of a strong need for warmth and security.

I ring the bell. Countess d'Auriac opens the door, raising her brow.

"Is Florence home?" I ask sheepishly.

The countess calls Florence, all the while staring at me. I know she knows that I am not supposed to be here; and she knows that I know that she knows it.

"What brings you here?"

"I have to ask Florence something."

It takes the countess two sharp seconds to decide.

"I guess I'm going to have to call your mother and tell her you're here. She'll be worried about you again."

My mother worried! Said by the mother who pimps her daughter out to, among others, her husband. So much for the warm atmosphere emanating from this home; it is a good front, but, like everything else about this family, a lie. The countess, her gaze steady as the north, saunters gracefully down the lobby towards a small table with a telephone.

"Did you hear from Danny?" I timidly ask Florence. "Peter didn't come."

Florence's mouth curls into a blatantly mocking grin, and her eyes light up in triumph.

"I guess he wasn't serious," she says with a little nasal laugh.

I must have been wrong about Peter, and am losing faith in any reality beyond the horror of the reality of my life.

Maybe I will find a victim, and pass along all the malice I have had directed at me. No one seems to be able to own evil; it gets tossed around like a volleyball on fire. I don't want to fool myself; if this is all there is, and this is all I am, then maybe I should be evil too. Maybe I should become a part of the other force: the repulsion from truth and love, pushing everything down into its black vortex of chaos, bewilderment and death.

Castle Van Revelingen,
Rhode-Saint-Genese, Belgium,
a Saturday night, May 1974

Mama has dropped me off at the same small castle where I met Patrick last fall. How different things were back then. Mama now seems to be close to Patrick. When I had returned home from my failed date with Peter, she commented, "I knew you were lying, because Patrick didn't tell me that he was picking you up tonight."

As the handler on duty opens the doors to the salon, I notice the too-thin girl whom I think of as the sickly fairy, with ash blonde hair down to her buttocks and two thin braids rolled up on top of her head. I have not seen her since the strange party in the greenhouse, and half wondered if she had been in that hunt the following morning, and if she had survived.

She is standing by a banquet table, near an enormous smoked fish platter, decorated with colorful vegetables and small pieces of toasted baguette. The sickly fairy studies everything, as if she is choosing, except she can't seem to make up her mind. I head over, pick up a slice of toast and put it in my mouth. Patrick joins us at the table. The fairy suddenly looks longingly at a slice of bread that Patrick picks up.

"Would you like to have this one?" Patrick offers, with his characteristic subtle sarcasm, as there are about fifty identical pieces on the platter.

The fairy nods. When Patrick asks if she would like some butter, she nods again. While Patrick butters the fairy's toast, she sneers triumphantly at me.

She is not going to last long, I think. When Patrick hands her the piece of toast, she is too happy, and when he leaves with me, she looks stunned and spiteful. I wish that she could figure out which men favor which girls, and learn to maneuver her way through the web, attracting the men who are more or less safe, avoiding the dangerous ones, and leaving alone the indifferent

ones. Surviving is a skill, like any other, sharpened by intuition, which I am losing.

Patrick takes me up to the same room where we were last fall, with picture windows and a nice bed with white linens. This is the place where Patrick let me know that whatever we would do would be up to me.

As *if*, I think, irritated.

"You didn't like our sex?" Patrick asks.

I sigh, and look at Patrick.

"I've never liked it as much," I say coldly.

"So, what didn't you like?"

"The fear."

Patrick, who is still by the entrance, takes the Adidas sports bag slung over his shoulder, which presumably has his gun inside, holds it out, and carefully deposits it on the console table. He comes over, caresses my face, and kisses me gently on the lips.

"Do you like this?"

I shake my head. Patrick mock frowns, lifts me in his arms, carries me to the bed, lays me down, kisses me again, more intently.

"This?"

I shake my head. He undresses me, seems moved, caresses me. He lies down against me, kisses my face.

"This?"

I guess that Patrick and I are playing the game again, and that he's showing me he can do the no fear thing.

"No, I don't like it," I answer.

He gauges my response and cocks his head to the side. *Of course, I'm not just playing,* say his warm eyes. When he touches me, I melt. Every time he does something new, he asks if I like it, exactly when I most enjoy it. I keep answering no, and feel such lightness, a joyous sensation, pure. It makes me feel clean, somehow, and clear.

"Are you still afraid?"

As much as I enjoy what I feel, I consider the gun in his bag, the network, the sex. However much I can face my challenges and surrender to circumstances, all that does nothing to change the fact that I am utterly powerless.

"Yes."

Patrick lies still for a long time. We don't move, or even breathe much.

"I want to take you back to my place tonight," Patrick finally says. "It's not that far. My parents and my brother will be there, but we'll just be quiet. I'll sneak you out tomorrow; it won't be a problem."

The warmth emanating from Patrick's eyes has never been expressed with such clarity and simplicity. It's unlike him to explain his plans; usually I am just going along and finding out in the moment. By telling me what to expect, he makes me feel safe. Warmth and security. Just what I had longed for.

Patrick has to talk to someone before we leave, and I find myself back at the banquet table inspecting the various comestibles, and notice the sickly fairy sidling up to a dark-haired baron, a frightful man who was the main executioner during the ritual murder of my little friend Wouter.

Really, she has all the wrong instincts; she could not have picked a worse one. The baron walks away, and when the fairy follows alongside, he throws her a condescending, what-are-you-still-doing-here look that finally stops her in her tracks. She looks sad as she makes her way over to the banquet table, where I am eating a slice of toast. The sickly fairy throws me a hateful glance.

"You know, that guy you were just with, that baron? He's dangerous," I volunteer between bites. "Better stay away from him."

"Or, maybe he just doesn't like *you*," she snaps. "Because you're so *fat!*"

Haemers residence, greater Brussels,
a Saturday night, May 1974

It turns out Patrick's family is not home yet, as we enter the townhouse through the front door. We ascend the stairs, covered with thick royal blue carpet. There is a lot of blue and white everywhere. Patrick also often wears sailor's shirts, or a jean shirt in white pants, or a navy-blue training jacket with white stripes on the arms, and he has blue and white Adidas gym shoes. Only his soccer polos are in different colors. Up in his room, a purple Jimi Hendrix poster adorns the wall. Patrick pulls an album out of its sleeve and puts it on the record player. The song he wants to hear begins with a sniff, which he finds hilarious, so he moves the needle back several times to hear it again and again.

It almost sounds like a children's song, happy, with an easy rhythm and pleasant guitar, and yet it is about cocaine. I know English from watching subtitled American television shows and spending time with the Big Shot networker. And I know cocaine, of course, from the orgies.

"So, you like cocaine?" I query, half expecting the song is a prelude to a drug party.

Patrick tries to pull me off the bed to dance, but I'm too shy and just watch him, his body soft except for the stiff right leg. Then he picks me up and wildly twirls me around, singing that he is trouble and is heading in my direction.

Patrick puts me down on the bed, puffing.

"All right, I need something slower. I'm exhausted."

He flips through his albums.

"Aha! Here. This is my dream for you and me."

He puts the record on, stands me up on the bed, and we embrace as I listen to a beautiful, soulful story of a man's rescue by an angel, who promises to return to be with him in the future. In the song, the man needs to release her, and wait for the day she will come back.

Patrick mouths the lyrics, looking at me with great sadness.

In the final verse, the angel returns to take him with her, and they fly off, together at last.

We hear sounds. Patrick whispers it's his parents arriving, and that we should keep quiet, because their bedroom is on the same floor. We lay down. Keeping silent is a fun game.

"I will have to let you fly away, you know?" he says softly. "We can't be a regular couple for a long time to come."

Grateful, I press my body into his.

"But I would like to really be with you, when you're old enough. You'll be such a beautiful woman, too; I can't wait."

"How are you planning to let me fly away?" I murmur, thinking of the South of France.

"I don't know yet," Patrick whispers. "But it's going to be the only way, because we can't spend five years like this."

I consider telling Patrick about the South of France. I wonder if he would drive me there, to drop me off. *Five years...would he even remember me?*

"I want you to give me something," Patrick says in a low voice as he gets up from the bed. "Something so I can always remember you, no matter what

happens."

He takes a penknife off the chest of drawers and pulls the blade out. Back on the bed, he opens his left hand and rubs his right pointing finger over the cushiony part of his palm, under the left thumb.

"Here. You should stab me here, so all I will have to do is look down at my hand, and I'll think of you."

"You can do that without a scar," I whisper nervously.

"No, I want something real. A blood tie. Nothing is stronger."

"But I don't want to stab you. I don't want to hurt you," I whisper hoarsely.

"I want you to," Patrick persists. "Anyway, it's not hard to do, you just have to be quick."

He holds the penknife in his fist, lifts it and with a firm, quick movement brings it down, to show me. I don't need to see it; I know it all too well. I know it from the training in Germany, but the Belgians also force us children to do repulsive things to make sure we will never know we are their victims, but are convinced we are perpetrators, just as bad as they are. Which is exactly how I feel at this moment.

"I don't want to do that again. I killed a rabbit with a knife once. I don't want to do that again," I gasp.

"It's okay," Patrick laughs. "I'm not a rabbit, and you're not killing me… but tell me…."

"No!"

"Was it at one of the orgies?" Patrick queries.

"No!"

Images flood my brain. I see the large dark empty space, like a small hangar, maybe at a farm. A metal kind of long table. Polo was there, with one

of his friends. There was a crate full of little rabbits. And at least ten children. We were each given a rabbit. Then we had to choose: our life, or the rabbit's.

The other children valiantly chose the rabbit. As I had already experienced exactly what happens to the intended target when I had refused to follow an order to kill during the training in Germany, I could never put myself through that again. From that moment forward, every killing had been a mercy killing. The Belgians forced the same horrendous training on the child slaves, but without high-tech facilities, special equipment, or a doctor in charge. Polo mostly did it himself. It was clear that the baby rabbits were not going to be spared. We children were being trained, and if we could not take the training, we would be marked as weak, and perhaps killed along with the rabbits.

When I was asked, "Who lives, the rabbit or you?" I did not want to waste my energy, and quietly said, "Me." Polo responded, in his flat, ironic voice, "That is why we like you, because you always give the right answer."

Since I was the first to choose correctly, I had to go first. I did not want to look at the little rabbit, though holding it, I saw that it was black. I held it by the skin of its neck, trying not to think about how soft its fur felt. Instead I focused on the rigidity of its little body, vibrating with terror.

I'll quickly end that, I thought. I looked down to see where to hit, pulled its head back and stuck the knife hard in its throat. As soon as the blade made contact, I looked up and away, not wanting to see the blood or the body. I let go of the dead animal, dropped the knife and backed away, refusing to look at it again, or at any of the other children or animals. But I heard. The rabbits cried and squealed until the waking nightmare was over.

Polo and his friend praised me and showed me off like a great example to the other children.

"You know," Patrick offers after I've silently let the images roll by, "those rabbits would have been killed anyway, for food."

"They were too little to be eaten. They were babies."

"So, if you kill a cute, innocent creature, does that mean you end up feeling that you're not so innocent yourself?"

I grab the penknife out of Patrick's hand, push his left hand down onto the bed, lift the knife and quickly, hard, lower the blade into his hand. He flinches. The hand stiffens. I grab a t-shirt off the floor and wrap it around the hand. The white cloth immediately stains bright red. *Do you understand now?* I look at Patrick. *I am not innocent at all.*

"You're really good at this," Patrick exclaims admiringly.

"Don't say that!" I whisper furiously.

Patrick smiles in a way I have never seen before. He gets up, leaves the room and heads for the bathroom, where I hear him turn on the tap. It becomes clear to me that all my fear is for the evil inside of me rather than outside. Patrick returns, pressing gauze on the bleeding wound. He still has this smile on his face, both sweet and mischievous.

"Now I know why you're my mate," he says.

CHAPTER NINE

Family home, Belgium, a school day morning, June 1974

My favorite bell bottoms are too short, I observe with dismay. I pack my book bag, a leather briefcase with back straps. Not often do I get to do my homework, but last night my little brother went to bed early, Mama left and was gone the whole evening, and I was able to study for a big grammar exam we have today. I put my book bag on the kitchen bench and butter some bread as Mama places a cup of hot cocoa on the gray Formica kitchen table.

"You're not going to school today," Mama announces with an excited smile.

I stare. It's never good when Mama keeps me out of school.

"Patrick is picking you up in half an hour," she states proudly, adding, "You better put some extra clothes and *underwear* in your book bag."

Mama lifts her brow. My head is crammed with grammatical rules. I don't even want to see Patrick.

"You'll be gone a few days," she adds.

Half an hour later, Mama's eager cries inform me of Patrick's arrival.

"Ann, look at that car! He's come in a different one! A BMW!"

I wonder if this is a trick, if there is someone else getting me for something dangerous.

"Hurry," Mama urges me on in a very friendly way.

At the front door, she puts both her hands on my shoulders so she looks straight at me. Her eyes are moist.

"You go and have a nice time, now."

As I throw my book bag onto the back seat of the black BMW, Patrick says, "I hope your bikini's in there."

"I don't have a bikini."

I pull the passenger door shut. Patrick immediately leans over and slips his hands under my t-shirt. It is early in the morning, I am ready for school, and it seems really weird to do this, let alone in front of my mother. Patrick, supremely confident of my reciprocity, kisses me.

As we drive off, a flash of suspicion hits, fast and sharp as the falling blade of a guillotine. I put my head in Patrick's lap. His fingers run through my hair. As he drives steadily at 130 km an hour, I initiate oral sex. Suddenly, the thought of biting springs to mind. There is a slight pause. Then, with the idea that I might bite hanging between us, Patrick's fear intensifies the experience.

We arrive in Knokke-le-Zoute, a resort on the Belgian coast by the North Sea. Patrick parks in front of a Normandy-style mansion. One of the network regulars opens the door and, after a jovial exchange of greetings between the men, leads us up the stairs to a darkened room with two twin beds and stone floors. I push the shutters open, revealing the busy coastal tram route outside.

"I don't think I want to stay here, do you?" Patrick rattles, making sure to catch our guide on his way out.

Patrick disappears with the network regular. The door is open, so I walk out and peek over the railing, and notice Patrick meeting up with the aristocratic politician, a fixture at the orgies of the Belgian network. Patrick won't let the politician finish a single sentence. A while later, we drive to a large villa on the beach. The person who opens the door takes us past a sitting area with bay windows overlooking the ocean, where we interrupt a meeting of several more network regulars, male and female, dressed rather formally. I feel very much out of place and stare into the floor as Patrick goes over to shake hands. Some stern, threatening looks are directed at me; I turn

away. When Patrick is finally done, I hurry after him up the stairs into a bedroom looking out over the dunes, the beach and the silver sea resting under a pearly haze.

"They hate me," Patrick says.

"Why? Are you too bold?"

"It's a good thing they're scared of me," he retorts with a grin. "They're so stuck up. So typically Belgian. All hypocrites. I much prefer Americans. They're practical and open, just the opposite of here. They don't look down on you if you're not super-educated; they look at your intelligence and what you can do. I would love to go to New York."

"Why don't you?"

"Nah…things are supposed to happen here. There are plans. They'll need me. I'll never be able to leave."

Patrick looks thoughtfully at me; I wonder if he'll say more. He begins to touch and kiss.

"I'd like to go to the South of France."

Patrick regards me with a curious smile. The blood rushes to my cheeks.

"Run away," I clarify.

"You want to run away from me?"

"No, from everything else."

Patrick stops sliding his hands over my body and seems to think things over.

"You can't go to the South of France without a bikini."

He resumes stroking me, which soon turns sexual, but something bothers me. Patrick looks worried.

"You're not in the mood?"

"It's not that…it's just that…." I put my hand on my genitals and feel my cheeks heat up. "It's hurting."

"Let me see."

"No!"

With the other networkers, I was mostly absent when my body was used, but under Patrick's gaze, I am intensely present, so I keep my legs stiffly closed. He playfully tries to force his hand in between my thighs. I refuse to give in. Finally, he promises not to look, and touches me very softly. Only his fingers move. Patrick scoots down with a beseeching look, promises he will close his eyes. I give in, submitting to my body's reaction, to find myself inside a cloud of incredible softness. The pleasurable sensations amplify to a level almost too much to bear. Transported, I mumble, *"Je vais mourir. Je vais mourir. Patrick, je vais mourir."* (I am going to die.) My murmurs emerge as from out of a dream. Patrick is uncharacteristically agitated. He abruptly brings his face back next to mine.

"I have to…do you think it'll be all right?"

I nod once. A look of terror stirs Patrick's slightly widened eyes.

"Does it hurt?" he asks.

I shake my head, once more surrendered. We enter into a state of exultation. Patrick clings tightly to me, groans, begins to cry, and continues sobbing in my arms long after our bodies have returned to a condition of relative normality.

When he has quieted down, lying on me, he looks up, harried, eyes dim, skin ashen, all allure drained from his features. The features themselves are slackened, as if the jawbone gave up. He looks like a little boy, afraid I do not love him. Getting steadily worse, his sensuality is sucked out of him together with all of life, leaving a sickly, dull creature behind, weakly imploring me, certain of one thing only: that he is utterly unlovable.

As he averts his gaze, I put my hand through his hair and caress him quietly, steadily. Under my caresses, Patrick blooms. Even his hair, turned

limp and colorless, seems to brighten, thicken and bounce back to life. My impulse to touch lessens as our state of relaxation deepens. After a while, I barely move anymore, yet we are wide awake, alert, attuned. This, it seems, is as close as I will ever be to anyone. Once in a while, Patrick looks up at me, and expresses, in his understated way, gratitude and sweetness I have never known.

We walk over the dunes to the beach, holding hands. Each particle of mist reflects the sun, creating magical light that surrounds us like an enormous halo. Patrick looks happy. Completely transformed, he is gorgeous, glowing with contained, contagious joy. He greets a passer-by who waves and, noticing his golden retriever's attraction to Patrick, initiates a brief, pleasant exchange. The dog loves Patrick, doesn't want to leave him, and as it reluctantly follows its master, keeps turning its head to find Patrick's eyes.

Patrick's mother is the pristine beach who gave him his color and beauty, his father the North Sea who gave him his eyes and his depth; and in this moment that seems to transcend space and time, I am not eleven years old or a child slave, but his ageless, eternal friend. As we stroll along in the sheer golden light and I turn to look at him, I am struck by a powerful thought: *This is who Patrick really is, this extremely beautiful, joyous youth. This is the closest he's ever come to being his true self. That is why he is happy.*

We clamber up the steep granite dam to the wide, somewhat crowded yellow brick boardwalk lined with cafés, fish restaurants and beach shops. Patrick smiles and rests his arm over my shoulder. People, especially women, greet us with friendly smiles. I put an arm around Patrick's hip, then both arms, pull myself closer and lean my head on him, sheltering from the strong wind that blows my hair in my face. Women respond all the more. They all smile, like how cute I am, and flirt with Patrick. Teenage girls giggle. We, or at least he, is causing a sensation. Yes, he is captivating, with his tall, strong but soft body, wavy blonde hair, radiant skin, square jaw and piercing blue eyes. But this is crazy. Whenever a woman gives Patrick a lewd glance, I give him a squeeze. He squeezes me back. After many squeezes, a darkly tanned, bejeweled woman in a billowing white skirt and white bikini top that barely reins in her full breasts, raises her brows over eyes of stone with a bawdy

smirk at Patrick, who responds with a smirk of his own. She considers me with a harsh stare. I remove my arm from Patrick's waist.

"That…" Patrick says without trying to keep his voice down, "…is a whore."

The woman freezes behind us. Once she is out of earshot, Patrick says, "You will never be that. No matter what you do, you could never be a whore. Not even if you tried."

Patrick leads me into a large upscale children's clothing store. We check the tables for swimwear and are met by a polite sales lady with gently crossed arms and a cardigan hanging over her shoulders. With friendly smiles, she informs Patrick there are bathing suits in baskets towards the back. Patrick finds a bikini in navy stripes with rings holding the tiny pieces of cloth in place. I am shown into a changing booth, and when I come out, both Patrick and the sales lady inundate me with compliments. My cheeks are burning. Never before have I felt like such a whore.

"Now you are ready for the South of France, darling," Patrick says in a rather loud voice, with a wink at the sales lady, who smiles as if she understands everything.

"Let's look at some pants for you, too, sweetheart," Patrick goes on, indicating my too-short corduroys. "Those have obviously had their day."

I find a pair of bell bottoms that everyone agrees suits me splendidly, and as Patrick is about to pay, he picks up a polo shirt, several t-shirts, plus a sailor sweater roughly my size, and throws them on the counter too.

"Where in the South of France are you going?" asks the lady as she adds up the bill.

"Not far from Nice," answers Patrick, as if he's thought everything out already. "Do you know the area?"

"Sure," answers the sales lady. "Where exactly?"

"We have a house on the Cap Ferrat."

“You have a lovely time out there,” says the enthused lady to both of us as she hands him the shopping bag. “And come and see us again.”

As soon as we step out of the store—so the sales lady can get a good look at us through the window—Patrick lifts me up and kisses me on the mouth. When we move on, the sales lady waves goodbye. Patrick waves back.

Once we are back in our room, I ask, “You don’t really have a house there, do you?”

Patrick smiles mysteriously as I try on the new shirts.

“They all look really good on you.”

“They fit,” I shrug dismissively.

Patrick’s smile turns sad.

“Thank you, for all those clothes.”

“What would you do by yourself on the Riviera?”

“Sell ice cream?”

“You’re not old enough.”

“I can pretend to be fourteen or fifteen.”

“If you could pass for an older teenager, you wouldn’t have to go anywhere. Then I could get a flat in Brussels and you could just move in with me. But you don’t look a day older than your age.”

“But I’ll say that I’m older, and it will work.”

Patrick sighs as he lies down on the bed and puts his arms behind his head.

“Yeah, going to France and getting a job would work, but moving in with me wouldn’t, huh?”

I stare at Patrick, throw off the new sweater and pull on my old t-shirt.

“Right,” Patrick puffs. “What did I expect?”

“You think I don’t love you because I want to get away from here?” I argue.

“That’s right. You said it!” Patrick yells.

The pain in Patrick’s voice cuts through my defiance. I sit on the bed and gauge his expression.

“It’s just that it’s still hurting.”

Humor returns to Patrick’s eyes. He slides up to me and puts his head on my lap. He lifts his left hand and rubs the cut in the cushiony part under his thumb.

“What hurts me is the thought of giving you up. But I know that I’ll have to, because you’re no good as a slave.”

I take his hand and rub the healing stab wound. There is a raw pink eyelet gash, surrounded by several layers of scar tissue.

“Is it itching?”

He nods. “Soon this is all I’ll have of you. It’s hard to let you go, you know? What I have with you, I’ll never have that with anyone else. And the sex; I know I’ll not have that with anyone else either. That only comes around once in a lifetime.”

“I wish I could stay with you forever.”

Patrick looks tenderly at me.

“You’re so pure. You don’t say much, and when you speak, it’s simple and sincere. That’s probably why I love you so much. No, I don’t really know why. I just don’t know.”

“But don’t you think, when I’m old enough, that we could be together then?”

“You won’t even remember me,” he laughs wistfully.

“Don’t be silly. Of course I will!”

“How? The clothes I got you will be too small soon. Any object, you can lose. Unless….”

I know Patrick is thinking of the scar I gave him, and considering giving me one. It is as if the great waves of the North Sea are crashing through the window.

“No, I’ll remember you. I promise. And I’ll come and find you, wherever you are.”

Patrick gets up from the bed and rummages through his Adidas bag, while I cower against the wall by the door. He finds the penknife.

“Please, Patrick. I don’t want you to stab me. I don’t need a scar. Really, I don’t. I love you; that’s enough for me. Don’t hurt me.”

“Sweetheart, you’re much too worried. It’s not even going to hurt.”

Patrick flips the knife open and advances towards me.

“Look at it this way,” he goes on. “You’re not out of the network yet. Who knows, maybe you’ll be tortured before you can leave. Could you stand it?”

“I was prepared for that,” I gasp. “But you, don’t torture me!”

Patrick looks at the blade and puts it down on the side table.

“But I’m scaring you. Come here, let’s sit on the bed together and talk.”

“But not about that!”

“Come on,” Patrick laughs. “You’re being slow.”

I sit stiffly on the back edge of the bed. Patrick indicates his left hand.

“When you did this, it never even hurt me. The little bit of discomfort I had afterwards just made me think of you, and I enjoyed it. If I did it to you, it would be the same. I would do it so you wouldn’t even feel it, just give you

a mark. Just something to cherish the bond that we have. Because we love each other. Don't you love me?"

I throw him an exasperated look. He goes on.

"And if, I'm just saying if you ever would be tortured, if for some reason I was unable to prevent it—you never know with these guys—then, if I puncture the most vulnerable spot on your body and teach you not to even feel it, then there is nothing anyone can do to you after that."

"You wouldn't stab me in the hand?"

Patrick touches the back of his knee, which he once said is the most vulnerable spot on the body. I spontaneously break into tears.

"But how will I walk?"

"But, my angel, *I* walk," Patrick says. "And what I'd do to you is nothing compared to what was done to me. A prick; no more."

I can't stop crying, and lie down. Patrick pulls off my new pants, then my shirt. He caresses my back, and comforts me, muttering, *"Allez, ma petite,"* (Come on, little one), as I sob for a long time, all the while expecting to feel the knife. Once Patrick's steady caresses have calmed me down, after I've stopped crying completely, he rubs the back of my right knee and says, "Okay, now just breathe. You'll just feel a little prick, that's all."

What I feel is like a kitchen knife boring all the way into my knee, cutting through skin, flesh and tendons before being pulled out. My leg stiffens instantaneously. This is it. I'll never be able to walk normally again. My leg begins to shake violently. Patrick puts a cold wet towel over the wound. There is blood everywhere. *I'm going to die.* I can't stop shaking. I'm in shock. Patrick, piling towels over his arm, lifts me so my knee rests on the towels. He kisses me all over my face and whispers, *"Que je t'aime, ma petite.* You'll never know how much I love you. Keep your eyes open. Don't go to sleep. I love you, sweetheart."

Nothing is harder than to keep my eyes open. They just want to close. They need to close. All goes black. I keep slipping, losing consciousness. I'm

way down there in the darkness, sinking lower and lower, to where all is quiet and still. Patrick's fervent whispers, his protestations of love, reach me, keep pulling me back out. Each time I descend into the abyss, Patrick's whispers increase in urgency and, it seems, in feeling.

"Come back, little one. Don't leave. Come now, you have to stay here. *Ma chérie.* Don't go. *Je t'aime.* Please. Annie. *Ma petite Annie.* Don't leave me."

I feel that I'm going to faint again, but it seems that if I really want to, like Patrick says, I can prevent it. It makes no sense, but his words of love sound true. I believe him. I find the will power to lift up my arm and throw it around Patrick's neck. If I cling to him, it seems, if I let in his love and let myself know just how much I love him, then I can stay.

Suddenly, I am freezing cold, shivering; my teeth clatter. I notice that my skin has turned a bluish ashen. I cling to Patrick. *I love you, Patrick. I love you so much.* I feel Patrick respond. He lifts me higher, holds me tighter. The next thing I know we are in a bathroom. Patrick lowers me onto the bathmat. Tells me he'll be quick. Assures that I'll be alright. A refreshing feeling. A wet towel against the wound. Another towel wrapped around the knee to hold the first one in place. A bath sheet wrapped around my body. Patrick lifts me up again. I hang onto him, bury my face into his chest. How can I get closer? He kisses my hair, my face. Holds me. Strokes me. Whispers of love. I relax, stop shivering. He lays me down. Props up the pillow. He keeps caressing me. That is what I need. *Don't stop, Patrick.* Now I can go to sleep.

CHAPTER TEN

On the road, June 1974

The side of my face is buried in a soft pillow. I lie on my stomach, a towel over my back. My cradle jiggles softly. It stops. I wake up. There is a shooting pain on the inside of my right heel. I try to shake it out. My *knee.* I remember. I want to go back to sleep. I hear a muffled cacophony of metallic sounds very close to my head, men's voices—Patrick's—little bells, and there's a smell—of gasoline. I open my eyes. Black leather. Of a car seat. I would like to get up. I would like to take a look at the back of my right knee. I pull off the towel and raise myself on my hands, twist my torso, notice my panties, make out the cut, right below the knee crease, towards the inside of the leg, surrounded by a bruise. It is dark red, dry, hard to see.

Patrick must be taking me home. *What am I going to tell Mama? How am I going to get through exam week? I already missed half. I can't go to school like this. I'll have to stay home, study, and do make-ups.*

I slowly sit up, maneuvering my leg so the wound won't touch the seat. When I open the door, I am met by a warm gust of wind. I wind a towel round my waist, put my left foot down on the asphalt. Where are we? What is this hilly countryside, with endless fields of sunflowers beside the expressway? Patrick concludes his business with the attendant on the other side of the car and comes around. When our eyes meet, Patrick smiles sheepishly. *Where are we?* Patrick slides his hands under my armpits for support as I carefully drag my right leg out of the car.

"You've had a good long sleep."

I put my right foot on the ground, try to put weight on it. It is as though an iron rod were being pushed into the wound, down through the calf to the heel. I can stand though, and push Patrick away. Hopping on my left foot, the right drags behind.

"I can't believe you're walking. It hasn't even been twelve hours. You have an amazingly strong body."

"I've needed it."

Very slowly, I walk, refusing to give the pain power over me.

"But this is impressive! Last night I thought you might have to lose the leg, or die, and now you're walking on it!"

I stop to scan Patrick's face for traces of self-awareness, and find none.

"You really scared me," he rattles on. "It was just supposed to be a prick. I never expected you'd react like that...I must have used too much force...I didn't mean to...."

I explode into a fit of laughter. Can't stop. I'm in such pain. Patrick rejoins me with an occasional guffaw and self-conscious grimaces. When I want to head towards the passenger seat, I realize I cannot walk without his help, which gets me going again, laughing and crying at once. Once I am calm and sitting, Patrick disappears into the gas station store and returns with snacks, soft drinks and a little skirt for me, with stylized yellow flowers in a Provençal pattern. We really are in the South of France.

We drive into the town of Aix-en-Provence. As I lean heavily on Patrick's arm in narrow streets, I wonder if anyone notices that we both limp. Patrick helps me sit down at a sleepy outside terrace where we have lunch. Sounds of peace flow from the steady trickle of a fountain, soft chatter, twittering sparrows and leaves rustling in the canopy of plane trees.

"After you eat garlic," Patrick comments as he carefully places his espresso cup back on its saucer, "coffee tastes exceptionally good."

He takes a moment to savor the flavor. I wait, pick up his cup and dump the espresso in my hot cocoa, taking a taste from my mug, mimicking him, savoring, carefully placing the mug back down. Not bad. I'm struck by the look in Patrick's translucent eyes: so brilliant, sweet, and full of love. I fill his cup back up with the mixture from my mug. He tastes it. Not bad.

Cap Ferrat, France, June 1974

The road turns onto the peninsula of the Cap Ferrat, winding through paradisiacal gardens to a small house in the shade of pine trees on a seaside bluff. Patrick opens the shutters, deposits me on a sofa, flips through a stack of records and puts a French album on the turntable. While he takes a shower upstairs, I listen to a cool baritone with angelic voices in the background. The languid song is an exact reflection of my dreamy state, about being somewhere on the seashore in the sun. The singer wonders if this is an erotic dream, or if it is real.

There is a fulfillment happening during this song, lying on this sofa, in this home on the French Riviera, more meaningful even than the promise of escape. These words about finding oneself in an idyllic spot transport me to the past, when the Big Shot networker who owned me had described what was to be my glamorous destiny. He had spared no resources in meticulously preparing me to become his future celebrity slave, who would break the hearts of the world's most powerful men, all while spying on them for him. Without a platform of my own, those powerful men would never notice me, so I was to become known in France as an actress and singer. He had described my future life of luxury in great detail. I would own the best cars and yachts, and live in the best locations—in Paris and on the sunny seashores of the South of France.

These promises were to be sealed with an induction ceremony that began with my performance for my owner and a select group of politicians, royals, billionaires and celebrities—the top tier of the global network. There, I sang Edith Piaf's *"Je Ne Regrette Rien,"* singing away all that came before, to be ready for my new life, while focusing my seductive powers individually on the audience members. This part was no problem; I had acquired those quick-fire skills in my previous training. However, the performance was only the beginning. The latter part of the event confronted me with the horrific price I would have to pay for said celebrity; an action to cement my place into the secret cult of the world's elite. Even though I was not quite ten years old, and even though I'd had no choice but to perform the action, I realized that it was too high a price to pay.

The next time I saw my Big Shot owner, I went against him, and got angry, which I knew was taboo and even potentially deadly. The glamorous future for which I had been so fastidiously trained and prepared was the only one, apart from death, which I had ever imagined. While the course of my destiny was drastically altered during those few seconds, the trinkets that had been dangled before my eyes were still floating around my consciousness in the form of unfulfilled desires. As I now lie on this sofa in this house on the Mediterranean coast, I enjoy the fulfillment of this one dream with all my being. *I am in the South of France.*

Patrick returns to the room in clean pants, no shirt, with a wet washcloth and towels. He undresses me and washes my back, as I become suffused with the elfin melody of the next song, about a girl whose lollipops flavor her kisses with anise.

"Do you understand the words?" asks Patrick as he washes the back of my right knee, painstakingly cleaning off dried blood around the cut.

The man sings that the girl's eyes are the color of anise, of happy days. I nod.

"I guess it's alright for him," Patrick says.

It is certainly not the first time that I hear a comment justifying pedophilia in the network, but never before have I been indifferent to such a

remark. Lulled by the dreamy ambiance, I take pleasure in the slow strokes of cool washcloth on my back, shoulders and neck.

"Do you like lollipops?" Patrick asks as he gently turns me over onto my back.

I reach my arms up to embrace him, experience a thrill upon feeling the soft, cool skin of his back, pull him close. A kiss. Does he understand? Not yet. Another kiss. He gets it.

This dream seems to be more real than reality. Lying on this couch with Patrick, feeling the Mediterranean breeze and his skin, my lips tremble, and my body, with a slight shudder, awakens.

Patrick puts on a '45 record; the electronic opening notes set the stage for a playful ambiance for an over-the-top, sexual duet.

"You sound just like her," he says as he rejoins me on the sofa. The woman's voice sounds high and childlike.

"No."

When the woman sings *"I love you,"* Patrick comments, "Here you can tell she's lying."

Than the male voice answers something about this not being real love, implying it is all about the sex.

I laugh, "No wonder."

Patrick whispers, "I love you."

"Me too."

The woman goes into the refrain in her breathy, falsetto voice.

"I don't sound anything like this," I remark.

"It's near the end, the breathing, you'll hear; that's when she sounds like you."

Our lovemaking lasts long after the song has finished. I make sure not to breathe audibly; that is the game, and part of this re-awakening to the realm of lightness, where the weight of the world is not felt, suspended on a cloud of romantic love, dissociated from reality in an atmosphere of physical comfort. This is the high I have been trying to ward off for the entire time I have known Patrick, because I have been to this addictive place before. I have felt this high on hope when I believed in real love—and should know better than to assume that this can last, or possibly end well.

I was never in love with the network Big Shot; it was rather that he created the persona who is currently waking up. The initial part of my education had taken place early in the summer of 1972, in his luxurious homes, where he had introduced me to his world of privilege and lifted me onto his cloud above the rest of the world, where everything was good and beautiful, cradled in sensual comfort and carefully curated peace. No darkness or negatives existed on this cloud. I was the materialization of his pleasant projection that fit perfectly onto that cloud—light, airy, and sexy. He loved to have control behind the scenes. He would have loved to secretly own the French celebrity I was to become under his guidance. I had to exist entirely for him, without a thought of my own. Nevertheless, while I had been under his tutelage receiving his attention, I had been just as high on hope for true love as I am now. Only, less than a year after the start of that story, after I had angrily said no to the price for belonging in the Big Shot's material heaven, I had been pushed off that cloud, and the fall had been steep and hard.

Cap Ferrat, France, June 1974

Every morning, Patrick drives me to a café in the harbor village for breakfast. Afterwards, we buy a baguette and charcuterie to take home for lunch. Back at the house, Patrick carries me down the stairs hewn into the rocky slope, to

a small pebble beach on the quiet ocean inlet where we sunbathe and he swims.

To aid with my healing process, Patrick insists I eat red meat. For dinner we drive back to the village, where we sit looking out at the fishing boats, yachts and sailboats. Because of the pain in my knee, my actions are more deliberate, and because I feel loved, my every move and every word are perfectly timed, perfectly received. Everything seems perfect.

After a week or so, heading to the harbor café for an afternoon drink, I ask Patrick to let me try to walk by myself. I concentrate on not limping, and though it slows me down even more, I succeed. I give him a look: *There, I'm not limping. You didn't get me to be like you.* He nods.

Sitting on a café terrace overlooking the harbor of Saint-Jean, listening to buoy bells and the relaxing water flow of a single spout fountain, Patrick sips an anise liquor.

"Your eyes are like those of the girl in the song, like anise" I say to Patrick. But when he sings that they are the color of happy days, those days seem to be in the past."

"You want a taste?"

He offers me his drink. I try it. Not bad. Indicating our set-up with a sweeping hand motion, Patrick states, "This, too, will be in the past."

"This, yes. Some of it, of course."

Patrick smiles a slightly sour, sad smile, like here we are, faced with this thing that I won't understand.

"You know," he ventures, "there is one element that will definitely be different in the future. You know what that is?"

"No, what is that?" I respond flatly.

"The element of choice. Now, because of your age, this is not your choice."

"Isn't that why you didn't touch me for so long?"

"Yes, I thought I'd leave it up to you, and I believed that would make the choice yours, but I was wrong. I don't know why you decided to get physical with me, but I know you well enough to know that it wasn't just because you felt like it."

I bow my head in acute shame.

"Oh, it's all right," Patrick continues. "It's your duty, in a way, to always think of your survival first. You can't really do anything freely. Freedom of choice is reserved for adults."

"I love you."

Patrick looks disarmed, and frowns like he wants to say something he might not have sufficiently thought through.

"When I look at you, I see this incredible pride in your eyes…." he begins.

His remark throws me in a state of confusion and panic.

"No, no, it's a good thing. It's the quality that gives you all your strength. It's defiance, yes. But with pride. It's because of that, I doubt once you'll be a grown woman, once you'll have the choice, you will choose to be with me, because I'm no good."

"I know that. But I love you anyway. It's not going to go away."

"I'm a crook. I rob banks, money transports, post offices, anything. Sometimes I kill people. I like it. You'd make a great Bonnie, because you're a killer too—don't kid yourself—but when I see this fierce pride in your eyes, like just then when you were walking, without a limp, and the way you look at me, it makes me know that you'll never want to be sidekick to any Clyde. Or any millionaire for that matter."

"Why do you like to kill?"

Patrick leans back to ponder the question.

"You know, most of life, everything we see on the surface—it's all lies. When you confront somebody with their death, then you see the truth about them. You have no idea what I've seen: best friends trying to get each other killed, just to save their own skin, and that's just the beginning."

"And what makes you pull the trigger?"

"Weakness. Not just weakness, but cowardice, like in the form of disloyalty. Like those guys, as soon as you put a gun to their heads, they try to bargain with you, and the stuff that comes out of their mouths…."

Patrick shakes his head in disgust.

"I hold the gun against their forehead. That's the moment they reveal themselves. And when I have myself a real piece of shit, and he's pretty damn pleased with himself because he thinks I'm going to kill his best friend and not him, and then I shoot his brains out, the quiet that follows the blast, it fills me with a sense of…deep…wellbeing. Peace."

"So, you wipe out the lies…and the dirt underneath the lies?"

"Yes, it's exactly that, because this sense afterwards…I feel clean, like the dirt has been cleansed. It's specific. And it feels good."

I nod.

"And you do this out of free choice?"

Patrick regards me with a flicker of distrust.

"I don't know. I guess it's something that I have to do, because there's this…desire in me."

"You said that being with me gives you peace."

"That's true. I do feel it with you. There's something real about you, and being together. And in fact, I haven't done anything lately, because I haven't really had the need."

"You know, I've felt, with you sometimes, I've suddenly felt clean also. Cleansed. Sort of like the feeling you were describing."

Patrick nods.

"Do you think that, if we could be together in the future, as a couple, that you might not want to kill? Or rob?"

"If anyone can change me, I'm sure it's you. But you're putting the cart before the horse. You can't be with me just to change me, and you probably won't want to be with me before I'll change, so…."

"So, we don't know."

"Right, we can't know. Anyway, having a regular relationship, that's if you'd want one, living together, is very different from what we have now. I would have to provide for you somehow, and I'm really good at just one thing. But also, there's the excitement now, because it's illegal. You're the forbidden fruit."

"So maybe you don't really love me."

"You know, there's a lot of little girls at the parties, and I can have all of them if I want, like your friend Florence. She's been trying, believe me, but I don't love her, or anybody else. Yeah, I guess it's not a choice, I love you; who the hell knows why?"

I blush and stare into the table. Patrick puts a consoling arm around me and pulls me closer.

"Don't worry, you'll always be exciting to me. No one's ever put me in a state of arousal that lasted six months straight. That's what happened. I was aroused thinking about you, but I think about you all the time. I can't believe that I had this much self-control. I didn't think I had it in me. Your beauty just turns me on; it's something incredible."

"For me, it's also your beauty that excites me," I admit.

I look at Patrick, observe his handsome tanned face, the gold chains around his neck, his gold bracelets (amulets, he calls them), his beautiful hair,

his jeans tight in the crotch, his broad shoulders, rippling arms, bronzed skin, his white rib tank top covering his strong, lean body that is yet soft, his eyes the color of anise lollipops, and I enter the purely physical world. Whereas until this moment, I primarily saw the ethereal beauty of the light inside Patrick, I currently focus on the external, on the impermanent attributes, buying into the lies, objectifying him as I have been objectified, thinking: *He is such a thug. He is so sexy.*

"But not before we had sex," Patrick clarifies.

"No. I saw it; it just didn't have the same effect, physically. I never had that before. Maybe I was too young. But now it's all changed."

Patrick leans over and looks me directly in the eye. I move in, sharply concentrated, ready to listen.

"I really want to fuck you right now," he says. "Long. And hard."

Patrick pulls me close and kisses my face, then my mouth. There are some other people on the terrace, and for the first time since we arrived in the South of France there are looks, as in what is going on? Patrick leaves money to pay the bill, puts his arm around me, and as quickly as my bad knee allows, gleefully, like naughty kids, we hurry off.

CHAPTER ELEVEN

Haemers residence,
Cap Ferrat, France, June 1974

Except for some meals, we don't leave the house anymore. We don't even make it down to the little beach. We spend all our time in the bedroom, having sex. Once self-respect is substituted for the idea of sexual power over a man, purity becomes burdensome, and its release freeing—but what is freedom inside the cycle of romance? I cut a piece of baguette open, butter it, and slice a local cheese, leaving some end cuts on the kitchen counter.

"You have no idea how many thousands of breadcrumbs I've cleaned up after you since we've been here," Patrick says. "Do me a favor, sit at the table."

When I do, Patrick sits down across from me. Some crumbs fall on my lap.

"Sit up! Sit up!" he cries.

He comes over and brushes the crumbs off my pants into his hand and carries them to the trash.

"Just try to sit up properly at the table, so you don't spill. I know it's not your fault," Patrick says. "But you've got to learn sometime."

He sits back down with a sigh.

"I'm just having a snack!"

"But it's nice to have meals together. That's why I'm sitting with you, to make it into a meal."

"But lunch is bread and cheese also," I laugh.

"That's only because you can't cook. I know it's not your fault, but it's getting expensive, taking you out to dinner every night."

"It's true. I can't cook," I confirm, tipping my chair back as I take another bite out of the sandwich.

A small piece of cheese drops onto the floor. Patrick jumps up, grabs me by the shirt and pulls me out of the chair.

"Now you're going to pick up that piece of cheese, get a cloth, wet it, and clean the floor before you do anything else, you understand! My parents are coming soon. I don't want the house to be a pigsty when they get here. And you're not helping. You understand? YOU'RE NOT HELPING!"

"Let me go."

When I am kneeled down to wash the floor, I feel humiliated, and dirty. Then I sense Patrick's sensual gaze on my exposed lower back. He touches my skin with strong, sensual strokes, and takes the cloth out of my hands.

"I'm sorry, I didn't mean to. I don't know why I got so mad."

He lifts me in his arms and kisses my face.

"It's not your fault, you understand? I'm sorry."

Holding me in his hands and kissing me, Patrick walks us up the stairs, to the bedroom.

Mediterranean at Cap Ferrat,
June 1974

We are on a small sailboat, anchored at the inlet near the house, which we reached minutes after setting sail. I want to try swimming—the wound has healed nicely—and jump into the water. When my head pops back up I find

myself looking straight into Patrick's pale blue eyes. His long lashes look darker and longer when wet. I stare in awe. Patrick, barely moving his lips, grins derisively.

"Does it sting?" he asks.

In response to his sarcasm, I observe Patrick's eyes like a critic. Now his smile turns bashful.

"Okay, ready?" he says.

He takes in a big gulp of air, so I do the same, and he plunges down, kissing me as I tumble backwards underwater with him attached. When I am completely out of breath, he stays under a little more. Then we come up. The next time we go under, he fondles me. When I think I absolutely need to breathe, he keeps me down. I nearly faint, sinking back into the state of extreme relaxation I experienced during my torturous time in Germany. There, I was held inside a sensory-deprivation saltwater tank. Extended periods of weightlessness apparently release one's psychic abilities, which I needed in order to bypass logic and infer truths about men, so as to better fulfil their sexual desires. Underneath my deep relaxation in sex rests a volcano of fear and resistance, but there won't be any explosions of that kind as long as I believe that the love between Patrick and me is the best there is and ever will be—the true love I have been seeking forever.

The combination of the weightlessness and lightheadedness turns the sex into something of an erotic dream, in which the pleasure buried under the weight of life is released and felt in a pure, raw way. When we go under again, I do the same to him. With my hands on his shoulders to keep him under, I suck in a huge gulp of air, then put my feet on his torso to push him farther down. I slide my legs around his hips and restart the sex. Patrick's head drifts back, then his spine curves as he relaxes completely, then all his muscles flex awkwardly. I pull him up.

When Patrick watches me climb back aboard the sailboat, he comments, "I guess you don't need help."

We dry off on deck, and he offers me a brown bottle of suntan lotion. I give him a look; he pours the oil in his hand and massages it into my arms and chest.

"You're so amazingly athletic. Do you do any sports?" he asks.

"Gymnastics. And horseback riding."

"Oh really? With the life you lead, I didn't think you had time for anything else. Where do you ride?"

"I ride when I can on weekends at the stable and do horse camps a few weeks in the year, and then I also used to ride with Florence. Sometimes she got horses from her parents' friends. It was a lot of fun to ride with her, in the woods around the castles, or galloping through the lanes."

I remember the thrill of racing the horses in the gorgeous surrounds of the castles; these were the best times I had with Florence; maybe the best times of my life.

"It made me feel free," I admit.

"So, you definitely won't limp, then," Patrick concludes, "The riding made your legs really strong. You are amazingly strong anyway."

Patrick slowly massages the suntan oil into my legs.

"See, that's something I don't have," Patrick says wistfully.

"What?"

"That physical prowess."

"You're very strong," I laugh.

"No, but not like that. You're wispy, and you look soft, but when you move, you see these little flickers of muscle shooting into action, like you could do anything. I don't have that. I limp."

I catch a glimpse of Patrick's sad eyes as I turn onto my stomach.

"That's something you can't understand," Patrick continues as he rubs the suntan oil into my back.

"What?"

"What it's like to live with a limp."

I turn my head to look him in the eye.

"I'm just as lonely."

Patrick searches my gaze and concludes, "No, it's different. You couldn't understand."

The soft lapping of the waves against the hull, the gentle rocking of the boat, the warmth of the sun; these trappings are instantaneously as bare as prison walls. As Patrick isolates the muscles of my back with his fingers to massage the oil into my skin, I feel bad for being strong, and making him feel insecure. I take the bottle from Patrick and begin to massage the oil into his back, moving quickly down to his legs, to look at the scar at the back of his right knee. It is covered with raised scar tissue.

"That is a big scar," I say, gently massaging it. "How did you get it?"

Patrick looks very sad and self-conscious, as if the scar made him unattractive. I look at the back of his knee. Years of practice have made me an expert in making men with a tortured self-image feel better, and as I am drawn to find him ugly, I focus on letting my love for Patrick flow through my fingers. *All of his vulnerability is concentrated in this scar. And he is so terribly vulnerable. That is why he is so sensitive, so insecure. I love him. I love him so much.*

"Stabbed," Patrick says, with a slight nod.

In a rush of explosive anger, I imagine, with lustful pleasure, causing a blood bath. *I'll stab you too! You did it to me! What do you want from me? Sympathy?*

As Patrick cringes under my murderous glare, an eruption of love melts away my anger. *Look at him!* I think. *He's just like a sweet little boy. Scared.*

I put my own body over his, as his skin suddenly seems too white, too exposed, and I kiss him tenderly in the neck. Patrick turns on his back and begins to respond to my kisses, very tentatively, like a child. I look at his face: it is lit up with angelic beauty. The look in his eyes is completely trusting, completely pure. Quite overwhelmed by his ethereal beauty and the innocence shining from Patrick's clear round eyes, I reach down to touch his face, and he arches up to meet my touch, but instead of caressing his cheek, which I thought I was going to do, I push against his forehead, and the back of his head hits the hard deck.

I run my fingers through his golden locks, rub the scalp, grab the hair in my fists, pulling harder than I intended. I kiss him; his lips are exceptionally tender. I rub my loins against his; it is as though I am spoiling an immaculate being—as though Patrick is in the role of a young victim, and I am in the role of an adult perpetrator. When I feel his response, I become high. Power detached from responsibility creates the idea of freedom. Every instant is so dense that my internal timer slows to a near halt. I have no idea what the next nanosecond will bring, or what I might do. I have no idea who I really am or what I am capable of, nor do I care. Spontaneously, I look at Patrick's erect penis as if I were a feline observing a little bird. Patrick ejaculates, and laughs, embarrassed.

He lifts me up and sets me on a raised casing on the deck and begins to make out. His clumsy caresses, shallow breathing, his painful attempts to regain his manliness drive me crazy. *What's his problem?* I think, irritated.

I know what to do when a man has trouble getting aroused. I raise my right leg up so the skin around the wound stretches tighter, tighter. Patrick puts his hand on the back of my thigh, and sure enough, glancing at the wound agitates him. Stretching my leg, I feel the crust behind my knee rip. The blood begins to flow, trickling down. Patrick, licks, sucks off the blood, vigorously, ardently.

A yacht slowly glides into view, pretty close-by. I drop, fall onto Patrick, who gives me a questioning look; I respond with a panicked nudge. The yacht stops. There are at least ten people on deck, all looking at us. I can see them

clearly: their faces, hair color, their bathing suits. They are all adults, so they must see that I am not.

"Come on, we'll give them some entertainment," Patrick says.

Patrick lays me down on the casing. With fresh blood all around his mouth, he looks like a vampire. I laugh; he grins, kisses my neck, nibbles, bites. Here we are, in the world of appearances, proving that the man is a man and the woman is a child. We have our attentive audience, endorsing and encouraging us. After Patrick orgasms again, he continues the sex, if only just because he can. He has no problem anymore. When we simultaneously turn our heads to see what has become of our audience, the placid scene on the yacht has transformed into the beginning stages of an orgy, with several couples kissing wildly.

"Another good deed done," Patrick concludes.

He regards me with a curious look.

"I'm going to wash up," he announces, and runs off, jumping overboard, leaving me exposed on deck.

I hurry after him, but climbing the railing, I become apprehensive.

"What, are you scared?" Patrick taunts me.

I jump in. As soon as my knee hits the water, a sharp pain tenses my whole body. I paddle my way over to Patrick. He swims away.

"Hey, don't come to me. You did this to yourself."

The pain becomes unbearable.

"You really liked that, didn't you?" Patrick continues, meaning sex in front of strangers.

"I didn't have a choice," I snap.

Patrick stares and blinks, then his eyes narrow.

"No, but that's something I didn't know about you. You're an exhibitionist."

"So are you!"

Back on board, I hide in the dark cabin to put my bikini on, because the yacht is still there, even if most of its occupants have disappeared from the deck. I pour water over the wound and wrap a towel around my knee. Patrick enters without a word. There are narrow benches on either side. Patrick lies down; I sit as far from him as possible. After what seems like a long pause, in a nasal, authoritative voice, Patrick says, "You're going to have to go home soon. I can take you back tomorrow."

"Never!"

Patrick's fiery gaze expresses the hurt and sadness of all the victims in the world.

"If I take you back tomorrow," he says deliberately, "you will be able to make up your exams and make it to the next year. You won't have to double."

"I'm not going back to my mother. Never," I repeat.

"My parents will be here soon. What will they say when they find there's a girl living in their summer home. You expect they'll adopt you?"

"Your father saw us together. Just tell him I'm your girlfriend."

"Leave my father out of this!" Patrick yells.

"Why? Isn't he the one who brought you to the orgies? Why would you have to hide anything from him?"

"Stop it!"

Patrick covers his eyes with balled fists.

"I never meant to stay at the house anyway," I say softly. "Maybe if you could buy me a small tent and take me to another town, I'll find a job. I'll be alright."

"And supposing you got away with that, which most likely you wouldn't," Patrick scoffs, "then what would you do once the summer is over?"

"Go pick grapes in the Beaujolais, for example."

Patrick begins to snigger, but he refrains.

"You're too young to live on your own. If I leave you here, your mother is going to go to the police, and I will have to go to prison for kidnapping you."

"My mother doesn't want me. All she does is try to get rid of me. If you told her I had died, it would make her happy."

Patrick's fists relax. He lets his hands slide back behind his head and mulls things over several minutes. When he looks up, he smiles sweetly and conspiratorially.

"You really think so? Alright. I'll try to go talk to your mother. Maybe I can put you up in a small apartment around here. There's a lot to figure out, but we'll try."

Cap Ferrat, France, June 1974

We don't leave the bedroom, not even for breakfast. We don't eat. Like two drops that became one, we are nurtured, engulfed in a never-ending wave of pleasantness, floating in a flowing, tangible stream of sex-induced euphoria, which I fully believe to be love.

"I really should go," Patrick confesses. "Get in the car and start driving. Take care of things. But I just can't bring myself to leave."

He stays one more day, two more days. Sometimes, he seems overwhelmed by grief so deep that it makes me cry. When we have sex, Patrick whispers, "This is all I want to do. I just want to be inside of you for the rest of my life. This is the only way I can be happy."

On the third day, lying in my arms, Patrick whispers, "It was my father."

I look at Patrick, see a mental image of him as a boy, his knee all bloody, an enormous kitchen knife.

It was your father who stabbed you?

Patrick nods. I hold him for a long, long time. We fall asleep.

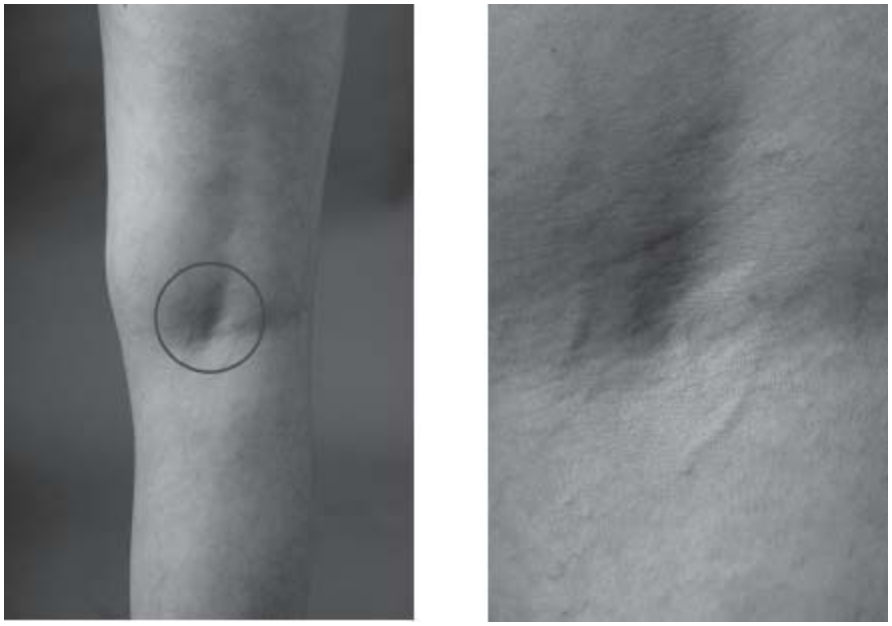
I wake up alone. Descending the stairs, I notice Patrick sitting on the sofa, feet on the salon table, watching a soccer match on TV, the volume so low the fans' cheers are barely audible. I observe Patrick and wonder if he, like all Belgian boys, used to play. After his father stabbed him, Patrick would not have been able to play anymore, or at least not like before, but Patrick still loves soccer, and I see a sweet boy infinitely loyal to his father. Thinking back to our day on the sailboat, I consider that Patrick may be right, that I don't really understand what it is like for him. Surely, he is reminded of the fateful moment his father stabbed him with every step he takes. He must always be conscious of it, always wondering if or when strangers will see it, finely attuned to how they then might perceive him differently: as an invalid, broken, or an outcast. I place my hand on Patrick's shoulder, which suddenly appears unnaturally large.

"Oh, I didn't see you."

When the match is finished, Patrick says, "I really should get going. If I don't leave now, I never will."

He packs his Adidas bag, gives me money, tells me he'll be gone for two or three days, and hugs me, holds me. He clings to me. I cling to him. The kisses don't end. Patrick carries me to the couch. We make love with great emotion, as if we were never going to see each other again. Transported, Patrick mumbles, repeats, *"Restes avec moi. Ne me laisse pas tomber. Restes avec moi."* (Stay with me. Don't drop me.)

His words emerge as if from behind mind and matter, as if he is asking me to never let go of him, to love him always, no matter what, well beyond death.



Back of my right leg and close-up of back of my knee, on photos taken in 2022, 48 years after the wounding. Left: Notice the depression and darkened skin around the scar. Right: the dash-shaped scar from penknife wound, moved over the years. (The smaller, vertical scar touching the bottom of the dash-shaped scar, is from another assault, described later in this book.)

CHAPTER TWELVE

Haemers Residence, Cap Ferrat, France, June 1974

It must be a week since Patrick left, and still there is no sign of him. The money he left has been spent. The baker gives me leftover baguette before closing time, and a lollipop. The butcher, too, passes along snacks: salami, carrot salad; and one day I get half of a roast chicken. The people in this town are friendly. And they worry about me, and about what might have happened to "my cousin." I tell them not to worry, I am fine. And I wonder how I will do once Patrick will really be gone, because I have already had to dissuade the waiter at the café (who gave me an ice cream) from warning the police, because I am so young, and they can all tell.

Back at the house, I try to clean up. I wash the kitchen and living room floors with a small sponge and hot water. It takes a long time, but I think it looks cleaner. I use the same sponge to wipe the dust off the cabinets, dressers and the salon table, and to wash the kitchen counter and sink. I make the bed. I sleep a lot.

At night, I am overtaken by fear that something is terribly wrong. I try to imagine Patrick meeting Mama, informing her that I have died, and I try to imagine Mama's reaction, but nothing comes. I think about the morning Patrick took me to the Belgian seaside, the last time I saw Mama, how nice she was. I wonder why, and I panic. The only thought that soothes these fears is that it was Patrick who showed me that my love for Mama was misplaced. It was Patrick who told me that my mother was no good.

A thud abruptly awakes me from a morning nap on the living room sofa. Patrick is back, throwing down his Adidas bag. Instantly, I feel as though I

never moved from this spot all week, and I am completely without initiative, dependent on him to make every move, even to get off the couch.

I did get off the couch, I remind myself as I get up.

My impulse to embrace him is checked by a cold glare. Two sheets of ice cover his irises, and his face is red from the chill. He looks older, harsher, as if he has been having tons of sex and drugs. Without a word, Patrick runs up the stairs. I hear him shower. Ten minutes later he returns with my school bag stuffed with my clothes.

"I cleaned upstairs. You check the kitchen, get all your stuff out of the fridge and throw out the garbage. We're leaving."

Once we are driving in the Porsche, I want to ask where we are going, but Patrick is so distant that I can't bring myself to do that much. He seems furious. We are stuck in morning traffic on the road along the boardwalks of Nice, half an hour at least. Patrick curses at the other motorists. Past Nice, we hop onto the autoroute, towards Marseilles.

"Where are we going?"

No answer. His eyes, which used to be the most attractive thing about him, have a scary glazed-over emptiness. I am too afraid to speak, until Patrick turns onto the road for Paris instead of following the signs for Marseilles, when I finally manage to utter, "I'm not going home, you know."

I feel absolutely ridiculous, as if I am a pretentious brat, trying her little game with someone with real authority, who sees right through her petty manipulations. The idea of Belgium and of Mama reminds me that I am not a brat. I am not trying to manipulate anybody. But I would rather die than go home.

"Just drop me off at the side of the road, that's good enough. Just stop the car," I say, in a state of great agitation.

Patrick has finally noticed me, and throws me a sideways glance with some interest, but it is negative, as in I could become a problem.

"Stop the car!" I yell.

Panicked, in a confused gesture, I put my hands on Patrick's forearms, something to make him stop the car. While steering with his left hand, Patrick wrings his right arm free and swings it out, hitting my face with the back of his hand. Black spots dance before my eyes, becoming larger. For a moment, the shock is greater than my panic. I am about to faint, but the fearful prospect of being returned to mama after losing Patrick's affection causes a fierce adrenaline rush.

"I'm not going back!"

Patrick ignores me. I wonder if he will drive straight through. *No, he'll have to stop for gas. I will run away,* I decide. After some time, as we get on the ramp leading to a rest stop, my heart pounds. The Porsche rolls towards a pump. Highly concentrated, I wait for the right moment, but before we have slowed down enough, Patrick grabs my upper arm. He stops by the pump, opens the door and pulls me across the driver's seat out of the car, bruising my side, hip and thigh. He puts me in front of him, gripping my arms behind my back. The attendant arrives; he doesn't seem to notice anything amiss.

"I'm going to get her something to eat," Patrick informs the attendant.

He pushes me in front of him, keeping my arms tied behind my back. Just as no one seemed to think twice about seeing us together as a couple, no one seems to think twice about my being taken hostage. *Isn't my face black and blue from that slap?* I wonder. *Isn't it obvious that something is wrong here?* If I pull the slightest bit, Patrick squeezes my arms so hard it makes me want to cry. *I will cry,* I think.

"Ow, let me go," I say, loud enough so that a couple of tourists who are just exiting the store look at us.

"No, you have to eat. Just come in with me to see if there isn't anything that looks appetizing. You've gone too long without food, I just won't have it," Patrick says, with exaggerated concern in his voice.

The couple sends Patrick sad smiles and supportive looks. Inside the store, Patrick buys a baguette with ham and cheese, and holds it before my

eyes as if to tempt me. When he finally releases my arm to pay, I run for the exit, but Patrick is on me like a hawk, and in front of at least six customers and the cashier, grabs me and pulls me back to the register.

"Children just will not listen to their uncle," he announces as he pays, and with a glance at me, "Even when their parents made it very clear that they should."

"He's not my uncle!" I blurt out.

I expect that Patrick is going to pull out his gun and start shooting, or that the crowd is going to move in on him, but nothing happens. I search the customers' faces. Everyone looks baffled. No one moves a muscle, except Patrick. With speedy expertise, he swipes his change off the counter and pushes me out, gripping my arms so I can't escape.

"She has been this difficult all day long," Patrick calls out as he pushes me out of the door, as if he has finally had it with this behavior of mine.

Before anyone in the store moves, Patrick rushes me to the car, pushes me inside and tears off. I see one of the customers open the store door and stick his head out, his face a question mark. We are off.

Back on route, I sense Patrick's gaze, and meet his eye. He looks hurt. In a flash, I am reminded of the last time we made love, just before he left for Belgium, just after he had revealed that his father had stabbed him in the knee, and I remember his plea, "Don't drop me. Don't let me down." I feel very guilty.

Patrick places the ham and cheese sandwich on my lap.

"Here, I did get that for you."

I stare at the food.

"Well, are you going to eat it?"

"I'm not hungry."

"You're not hungry?"

I look at him, puzzled.

"You're not hungry?" he repeats.

I shake my head. Patrick opens the sunroof, mumbling, "Ungrateful brat."

Patrick grabs the sandwich from my lap and throws it out. A few seconds later his arm reaches back; he feels for my leather book bag on the backseat, searches for the metal clasps, pushes down on one, then the other, flips the cover open, grabs my clothes and throws them up and out. The striped sweater, pants and shirts he bought me all systematically disappear through the sunroof. Last to go is the striped bikini. My *bikini!* I begin to cry, covering my face with my hands in shame. Patrick pulls over onto the shoulder and stops the car. He places his hands on my shoulders, so I face him directly.

"And now you're going to stop your bawling. I've had enough of your antics. This is the last time I'm telling you this."

Patrick seems so perfectly in control, so upper class, and such a stranger; it makes me feel as if I am a vulgar, pretentious brat. I am used to taking on shame—it is in fact my specialty—but if I once had the emotional distance to make it a part of my game, I lack this distance from Patrick.

Clinging to the idea of love out of survivalist fear, I focus on Patrick, the scary object of my affection who absolutely needs to be made whole so he can become the person who loves me once more. *If only I could understand....* I remember not showing gratitude when he bought me those clothes, and how it hurt him. Right afterwards he got the idea to stab me, and it makes me wonder if Patrick had perhaps felt like a lowlife and an ingrate right before he was stabbed. *What happened, that Patrick's father stabbed him?*

Patrick drives so fast that we turn onto the driveway of my family's house before dark. Mama waits outside by the front door. Patrick gets out of the car, stretches, and I notice that he exchanges a look with Mama. I try to catch his eye; he nods coldly.

Mama is exceptionally cheerful when I walk into the house, minutes after Patrick has backed up and driven off. When Mama notices my slight limp she

turns cold, and I instantly receive an entire script: I am faking the limp to try to look like I am in pain, so as to make her feel guilty, to manipulate her into taking care of me, to attract her attention. Attracting attention is evil. I am evil.

"So, you've been traveling quite a bit, haven't you? Knokke, the South of France…and it's not finished. Papa called from Greece, and he's taking us to a five-star hotel on Rhodes in a few weeks. That's some summer you're having."

Family home, Belgium, June 1974

When I fail to show interest in food several days in a row, Mama stops offering. She is chipper these days, and likes to take me along on her errands. Vivacious, flirtatious yet contained, she is at her most charming to the men she runs into, and casually invites them to stop by our house for afternoon coffee. Her offers are met with enthusiastic acceptance. After accompanying Mama to the pharmacy one day, I plop onto a chair as soon as we are home. Mama opens a small bottle and hands me three large pills.

"Here, take these."

"No thanks."

Mama laughs and shakes her head, as if I've got the wrong idea completely.

"These will make you feel better. You're not looking good."

"No thanks."

"You have to take them," Mama says quietly.

"I don't *have* to take them," I counter.

Mama begins to quiver, as if to lash out, but instead says, “Here, you have to. It’s for your own good.”

She pours two more pills into her hand.

“Those are sleeping pills,” I point out with the help of the label. “What are you trying to do?”

Mama shakes, jerks, and drops the bottle as she lunges, grabs my head in an arm grip and tries to stuff all five pills in my mouth. She shoves in a lot of bitter, dry, powdery stuff, and I spit and fight. Some of the goo is going down my throat. I wrestle my head free and stand, like a wobbly, bloody bull in the arena, facing her. Mama grabs the bottle and shakes more pills into her hand. I run, but my injured knee slows me down. She catches me and lowers her pointed elbow into my shoulder.

“Open!” she screams.

Tears fill my eyes from the pain. Another handful of pills is shoved into my mouth. Mama sticks her thumb and index finger down my throat. I convulse. Pointing at my mouth, I plead with Mama through stuck tears. *Don’t you understand?*

Mama runs off, returns with water, pulls my head back and puts the glass to my lips. I spit the water out together with much of the incredibly bitter slime. Mama grabs my head in a tight grip.

“Now don’t spit!” she screams “Or I’ll have to start all over again!”

She pours water into my mouth, much of which runs down my face and body. Mama puts her hand over my mouth.

“Now swallow it! SWALLOW IT!” she shrieks.

Again and again, I swallow, seven tablets at least. I fall down, exhausted. Mama drags me to my bedroom and puts me on my bed. Lying on my stomach, I don’t want to sleep; I want to know why she needs me to be asleep. I concentrate on listening for sounds, forcing myself to stay conscious. Being the last of three on a gravel road, our house only gets traffic from

visitors. Occasional gusts of wind rustle the foliage, a bird calls, and after a half hour or so the first car arrives, one that sounds exceedingly familiar, like a Porsche 911.

For the first time since Patrick dropped me off and exchanged that look with Mama, I feel a spark of hope. He must have come for me, or Mama wouldn't have drugged me.

I want to get up but can't move. Facing the wall, I hear their voices coming in my direction, though I can't make out what they are saying. They are in my room and stop talking. I try to move, at least my head, and can't. Finally, Patrick's voice pricks through the silence.

"You drugged her, didn't you?

"Noooooooo," Mama answers in a sing-song voice.

Mama does have childish excitement in her voice, but for the first time, she seems to be mocking her own tone, like she has self-awareness and a sense of humor about her evil character.

"You're so bad," Patrick comments.

That was a compliment.

Long silence. Then they leave my room. No matter how hard I try, I cannot lift my head. I cannot move at all. *No, wait!* I move my fingertips. Then my hands. I practice until I can crawl my fingers to the edge of the bed. With a Herculean effort, I manage to crawl to the hallway towards Mama and Papa's bedroom, at the agonizing pace of at least a minute per foot. I hear vague noises. I feel sick. One hand on the ledge. Two. I raise myself up. With my hands on the door handle, I push it down with all my weight; the door opens. There they are, doing it, she naked, he dressed. He stops moving.

Mama calls out in triumph, "You thought you could have them all, didn't you?"

Everything stops. The couple looks as if they are endlessly far away. A beam of light starts where I am, expanding to throw light on them there in

the distance. For a moment, tension seems to intensify the light. Patrick, now returned to full size, turns his head back so as to meet my gaze, and from that almost upside-down position shoots me an ice-cold glance that says, "*You trying to make me feel guilty?*"

His glute muscles tense as he thrusts himself inside my mother, who makes a happy, moaning sound.

I turn, hold the undulating door stile, convulse, and push myself out of the room, believing I will faint. *No!* Leaning against the oscillating wall, I drag myself to my room, arms spread out, hands, face and chest against the wall. I stumble, sort of run, and fall onto my bed. The room spins madly, but steady is the memory of the look in Patrick's eyes.

Family home, Belgium, July 1974

I find the bottle of pills neatly stored in the medicine cabinet in the bathroom, and don't have the energy to analyze or resist the loud voice in my head which tells me I have nothing left to live for and need to end my wretched life. I take all the remaining tablets, wash them down with lots of orange soda, and go to bed. I lose consciousness, and, after a long and deep sleep, wake up. Disappointed, I stay in bed. Sleepy and slightly woozy, I don't have the energy to get up, and remain immobile for another day.

The men are starting to make good on their promise to visit Mama. The Catholic village priest has been by every afternoon for a cigar and cognac. I feel so invisible that it surprises me when one day he says he is glad I am looking pretty again, because he had noticed that I was looking sickly the last couple of days. He smiles with a familiar glint in his brown eyes. Immediately, Mama sends a suspicious glare my way. I scurry to the kitchen, suddenly afraid that I was attracting the priest's attention on purpose. The thought that I am evil is constantly confirmed.

I steal deviled eggs off a freshly prepared platter, overhearing Mama as she gushes to the guests about our upcoming trip to Greece, where Papa is currently working. We are to stay in a five-star hotel at an extremely reduced rate, what with the war on Cyprus. The Americans are supposedly involved. Most tourists are staying out of the area, but not us. Mama can't wait to go along on one of Papa's trips. Then she jokes that her husband abandons her all the time; that she needs the company. "The company" takes bawdy delight in her joke, and Mama soaks up the attention like the first rays of sun after a lifetime of overcast skies.

One evening, Mama directs me to the car, and I can tell from her silence that it is network business. She drops me at a villa an hour's drive from our house. To my surprise, Michel Nihoul opens the door. As I had not spotted him at any network events ever since last winter in the greenhouse, I had hoped to never set eyes on him again. The feeling seems mutual: his face turns sour when he sees me. I slip past him into the darkened space, crowded with partiers. A man stops me, someone I never noticed before but who seems perfectly comfortable in this setting. He offers me a drink. He is clearly not new—it's me; I have been out of the loop. I observe the man, tune in. *Nothing.* I don't know anymore. The blood drains from my head. I accept the drink. Nihoul hurries over, shoots me an irritated look, apologizes to the man, explaining that I am not available, and directs me off to the side.

"You can go over there and wait for your boyfriend."

Instantly, out of the depths of my soul, hope springs up. Soon, Patrick appears, nudges, and I run after him up the stairs to a bedroom.

Patrick sits down on a polyester cover over a too-soft mattress, elbows leaning on his spread-out knees. As hard as I can, I slap his face. He puts his hand on his cheek and looks up, rubbing his cheek and sort of smiling, like "that was hard, but I have a sense of humor about it." *Oh, you think it was funny?* I think, and spit. He slowly wipes the slime off his nose and cheek and wipes his hand on his jeans.

"What am I even doing here with you? You want to have sex? Is that it?"

He frowns. *Yeah, that's it. You have a problem with that?*

"Dirty pedophile."

Patrick laughs like he appreciates a good joke.

"Your breath stinks, just like hers. You're disgusting. I don't want to have sex with you."

"What are you making such a big deal about? I was just…." He slowly shakes his head looking down. "I was just satisfying some kind of scientific curiosity. It wasn't serious."

"Scientific?"

Patrick nods and smiles impishly.

"You know, since you're related."

"I heard you when you were in my room. I heard you when you said she drugged me. You knew that. And you went ahead anyway. And then when I saw you, you didn't stop. And afterwards you didn't come to me. You completely betrayed me."

"No, I didn't," Patrick replies humorlessly. "I'm not a traitor."

"That is all you are. A big, fat traitor. Traitor! Traitor!"

Patrick suddenly has me by the hair, pulling my head back, so I am looking up, staring into his face.

"You little brat, you're only alive because of my protection. If it weren't for that, they'd have gotten rid of you a long time ago. Everybody thinks you're a big pain in the ass. So don't start playing your little tricks and telling me lies, because I'll drop you just like that."

Patrick snaps his fingers hard, and releases my hair.

"Good. Good. Why don't you drop me? You betrayed me. Don't try to tell me it's not true. Don't lie. Drop me already, because you already dropped me. Be honest about it and really do it."

Patrick's balled fist hits my jawbone with such force that I fly backwards and hit the ground. He pulls me up, throws me on the bed and punches me again. My left eye closes and rapidly swells.

It is not the first time I have dramatically fallen out of favor with a perpetrator. When I got angry with the global network Big Shot, he did not simply reject me, but made sure that by the time he was done with me, I would feel sub-human. The stain of that shame, my sense of being bad and worthless for speaking up, is far from healed. To the Big Shot, my refusal to go along with his plan and the glamorous future he had in store for me meant that I was vulgar and lowly. He made sure to impress upon me that my low birth was the cause of my "profanity," and then created conditions in which my physical self was so desecrated that I would feel as worthless as he believed me to be. It would take many years to realize that my action, which proved to this Big Shot that I was inferior, in fact proved that I had integrity.

My defiance towards Patrick started out as an unconventional way to please him, but in the current situation, it is a shaky attempt to hold onto the few shards of self-respect I had gathered with his support. When I confronted the network Big Shot, I expected to be killed, knowing full well that he was never going to allow my outburst. With Patrick, however, I have this faint hope that I can challenge him, and that he can love me through it.

"Are you going to stop it, yes or no?" Patrick screams.

What do you want me to stop? He hits me again, in the ribs, undoes his belt and jumps on me, pins me down. I resist. After a short struggle he manages to rape me. I resist, but find myself pondering the meaning of Patrick's cry, "Are you going to stop it or what?" Suddenly, right there in the middle of the forced sex, it becomes clear: he needs me to stop being this person who hates him.

When I hesitantly put my arms around him, Patrick responds tenderly. Giving up my mental resistance, I return to the state of intoxication in which Patrick is my true love, soothing the physical pain of the beating, of the rape, and the mental agony of the betrayal. All my feelings do find their way in; I feel the pain in all its depth, and whisper, "No. No. No. No."

When after hours of sex Patrick finally relents, I begin to cry, and Patrick kisses my tears, wipes them, mumbling, "My love. How I love you. It's you I love, no one else. I only love you."

I believe him; it makes me cry harder.

"I hurt you," he says.

Patrick examines my black eye, whereas I thought he was referring to sleeping with my mother. He cocks his head to the side and smiles apologetically.

"I'll get some ice downstairs. It's a little late, probably, but it might make you feel better."

I shake my head.

"I don't need ice."

Patrick embraces me, holds me, and covers me with kisses. I feel grateful.

"I'm sorry," he says.

We make love all night long. When I see thin stripes of light shining through the shutters of the one window in the room, announcing the new day, I wonder if Mama is waiting for me on the driveway, and what Patrick is going to do.

"Oh, it's day," he comments lightly, and begins to make love again.

I wonder if his comment was innocent. Patrick stops, looks me in the eye. Don't I know him anymore? He gives me a blank stare, then winks. It is already dark again when we leave the stuffy room, having had sex the whole night and the whole day, without food or sleep. As Patrick finally opens the door of the room, I begin, "Did you…."

I falter. Patrick gives me an open, questioning look.

"Please tell me," I persist, even though my mouth is parched with fear, "Did you ever sleep with Florence?"

Patrick looks me straight in the eye, seriously, until I'm calm and receptive.

"No. I never slept with her."

At first, his answer refuses to register. Then I hear the words again in my head, and it is as if I understand them only then. Patrick drives me back to Mama's house. When we pull up on the driveway, I start to open the car door.

"Hey, you're not even going to say goodbye?"

He reaches over to stop my hand on the handle, kisses me, flipping the lever under my seat, so we flop down.

"You know, I don't really want to let you go," Patrick says. "It's that I have a dinner with my parents tonight. I promised I'd be there."

He smiles apologetically. When we get it going, I am uncomfortably aware that Mama must be watching from the window.

After Patrick and I have sex in the driveway for one hour, Mama opens the door to let me in the house. She is visibly relieved to see my swollen, bruised face.

"I'm hungry," I announce with an authoritative nudge.

She seems surprised. Wasn't Patrick beating me up just now?

"Oh, this," I say, casually indicating my cheek. "This is old. We made up."

Mama glares spitefully and rushes off towards her bedroom. I head to the kitchen and scour the fridge for leftovers, without success. There are a few slices of slightly old bread in the basket, so I make myself a chocolate spread sandwich.

When I see myself in the bathroom mirror a short while later, I am aghast to discover that half of my face is completely disfigured. In a fit of panic, the

knowledge surfaces in my consciousness that Patrick did this, that Mama expressed pleasure over it, and that neither was the least bit shocked.

I don't exist in their eyes. I serve as an extension of one or the other to play the part of what they can't face in themselves! I'm already dead!

The following morning at the kitchen table, mama gives my brother toast with jam and hot chocolate.

"What about me?" I dare to inquire. I can't remember the last time I was offered a meal.

"We don't have enough bread this morning because somebody ate it last night," Mama announces.

"Then go buy some," I shrug.

My brother, seven years old, breaks a piece of his toast and hands it to me. Mama stops him.

"No, no. She will just have to learn not to have her breakfast late at night. That's all. It's her own fault."

"Oh, it's my fault now," I snap.

Mama winces, her eyes widen and fill with tears.

I angrily blurt out, "I never screamed that I thought *you* could have them all!"

"What are you talking about?" Mama cries.

"Hah! I've never seen you so happy. Is it only when you can steal my guy away that you can be that happy? Is that it?"

"Your guy; listen to that. She's eleven years old and she's calling a grown man her guy. And anyway, I never said that. You misunderstood. I wasn't even talking to you. I didn't even know you were there. I'm thirty-five years old, I think I know what I say. I don't need you to come and tell me what I said."

"Then what did you mean?" I ask, confused and deflated, badly wanting to believe whatever she says.

"I don't even remember what I was talking about, because it wasn't anything important. Oh yes, now I remember, I was talking about your school. You thought you could do all your school books, your lessons and everything, and go away during exams, and still pass. That's what I said."

"*Do your school books,*" is all I can focus on until I realize that I had forgotten all about school.

What is going to happen next fall? Is Mama saying that I have to double? I can't conceive of the humiliation. I start to cry, cradle my head in my arms. *How could I forget about school? What is wrong with me?* Mama puts a consoling hand on my shoulder.

"But Ann, you don't have to cry for that. It's not so bad. Maybe Papa can do something about it. Maybe he could go talk to the nuns once he gets back from Greece."

I look up into Mama's friendly eyes.

"You think?"

"We'll see," Mama says with a little laugh. "We can always try."

"What happened to your face?" my brother asks.

Before I can think of a suitable reply, Mama interjects, "Ann was very silly. You know what she did?"

My brother smiles and shakes his head.

"She walked right into the swing, and it hit her eye."

That afternoon, the priest, leaning back in a comfortable armchair, feet up, cigar in the corner of his lips and cognac tumbler in hand, is so shocked when I enter the living room that he jerks forward.

"Ann, what has happened to you?" he exclaims.

"She walked right into the swing yesterday," Mama quickly volunteers.

"How did you do that?" he asks me. "How could you have hit your face like that?"

"Her brother was swinging, and Ann didn't look when she passed in front of him. Right, Ann?"

Mama smiles at me, like we're getting away with our little secret, and isn't it fun?

Later in the afternoon, a friend of Papa, a missionary to Congo back home on vacation in Belgium, walks up the driveway to join Mama and the priest. When I open the door, he shakes hands and comments that I've gotten big. He glances at the contusion as if it made him angry. Once Mama is pouring liqueur for the missionary he remarks, "And what pranks has that daughter of yours been up to, huh?"

"Ran right into the swing," the priest calls out. "In the backyard."

He points his thumb in the direction of the backyard and begins to laugh.

"That must have been quite a bang, when that hit," he goes on. "I hope you didn't scare the neighbors, Ann. It's always so quiet here; they might have thought the roof came crashing down."

Mama joins him in merry laughter, and so does the missionary.

"You sure made a mess of your face!" the missionary jokes.

In the following days, more visitors comment and joke about my bruise, which has turned a reddish brown. When my little brother is present, he does not deny that I walked into him when he was swinging, and the next day he talks about it as if he remembers it so, without being let in on the secret. At one point, I picture myself walking into the swing, an image that has been called and recalled in the past few days, and I'm suddenly confused. *Isn't this a real memory? Didn't I walk into the swing?* Wasn't I in the backyard, making my way over to one swing, passing in front of my brother, not judging his

swing range, not paying attention where I was walking, and didn't I get hit by the wooden seat corner, as my brother swung forward? *Isn't that how I got this bruise?* It seems that way. When I undress later that night, observing all the other bruises on my body, I wonder if I got those from the fall, when the force of the swing knocked me to the ground.

Mama, completely in her element, has been busy spoiling the men with amuse-bouches, which I snack on excessively. The visitors are also served copious amounts of beer and liqueur; a bowl with various cigarette brands adorns the coffee table, and every afternoon the atmosphere in our house is that of a regular party den. With her newfound charm, Mama is less subservient and less eager to please, which makes her all the more pleasing. That is why it comes as a surprise when one day, alone with me, she reverts to her little girl behavior, acting oh-so-excited.

"Today," she announces with a conspiratorial giggle, "I'm going to go out for a while. I'm going to be gone the whole afternoon."

"Oh yes? Who are you going with?" I ask.

"A handsome young man, with blonde hair," Mama coos.

"Patrick!"

Mama stands before a mirror, puckers up her lips, and puts on red lipstick.

"He loves *me!*" I shout.

"But Ann," Mama says, "Why would he love you? You're just a child."

Grabbing a pack of cigarettes out of the bowl, I run out of the house, down the gravel road to the backyard of a nearby windmill, and climb up large packs of turf wrapped in yellow plastic, stacked like enormous playing blocks under a corrugated metal shelter. A half hour later Mama's car passes. As soon as I light up, I feel dizzy and sick. Still, I continue, deeply inhaling the smoke, the way Patrick does. My lungs burn. It hurts awfully. I immediately light up a new cigarette after the first and keep smoking. Focusing on the pain in my head and lungs, on the hand activity, the oral

sensations, the sensations in the upper body—it all feels good; much better than the emotional pain over which I have no control.

The next day, Papa arrives home from Greece. Mama talks to him, and he goes to talk to the nuns at school, and it is arranged that I will start sixth grade next September without doing any make-up exams.

I don't see Patrick before leaving with the family to Rhodes, Greece. After one week, the five-star hotel where we are staying closes for lack of business due to the nearby war, and we have to move to a hotel with fewer stars. But not even that can dampen Mama's bubbly mood, or Papa's alcohol-induced cheerfulness.

CHAPTER THIRTEEN

Belgium, a Tuesday, August, 1974

I live on chocolate candy and orange ice pops, and avoid being in or near the house so that Mama won't have an opportunity to take me on another of her errands. There are no more parties at the house, not with Papa around, so she runs all the more errands. I hide around the neighborhood, in the wheat fields near the house, behind the windmill, or in the hidden dirt roads, smoking cigarettes.

One day I stray further from the house than usual, and run into Danny, Florence's boyfriend, smoking on his shiny blue 50cc Suzuki motorbike parked by a small chapel with a Mother Mary statue in a quiet country lane. When I approach, he recognizes me, and is clearly dismayed. I am scared to talk to him, but here's this little bubble of life dancing inside of me; if I don't do anything, that bubble will pop, and there will be no other.

"Hey. How's Peter?"

Danny frowns, so severely that the crease on his brow is clearly outlined behind the screen of blue curlicues of smoke he lets escape from his immobile open mouth.

"You really hurt his feelings," Danny states with the integrity and judgment of a real working-class boy.

"Me? I was waiting for him all night. I was really hurt."

"Is that true?" Danny asks.

"Of course it's true."

There comes Florence, walking towards us. Danny watches her, calmly smoking, knitting his brow. Florence kisses both my cheeks in a customary greeting, then kisses Danny on the mouth, perfectly nonchalant, as though Danny and I were not looking at her in the way that we are.

"So why did you tell me she wasn't interested in Peter?" Danny says to Florence, glaring.

"I told you, she has an older boyfriend," Florence answers without skipping a beat.

Florence smugly observes me.

"I waited there for hours, and then I came to your house and you said Peter wasn't interested in me," I say angrily.

For a split second, Florence shoots me an incredibly dirty look, and then turns to Danny.

"I don't remember her coming to my house, but what I told you is true. She's been dating an older guy for months."

"That's none of my business," Danny decides, flicking his cigarette butt all the way to the other side of the lane. He turns to me.

"So, you want to see him?"

Belgium, a Wednesday, August, 1974

The very next morning, Peter rides towards me on the lane with the chapel on a 50cc Suzuki motorcycle, shiny blue, just like Danny's. I don't recognize Peter, apart from his dark blonde, tousled hair, but when he smiles, his face brightens, his eyes light up, and everything we felt together comes flooding back. I remember his particular smile, with his beautiful mouth and widely

spaced eyes, like two dancing lights. I've so lost the habit of smiling that it is as if my mouth is doing weird things.

"Nice bike," I say, trying hard to overcome this giddiness. "I thought you were too young to ride."

"I turned fourteen. So now I can ride."

"I thought you had to be sixteen. But oh, is this Danny's, maybe?"

"No, it's mine!" Peter says, a little offended.

He dismounts and parks the bike next to the monument of the Virgin Mary.

"Shall we walk?"

He places a hand tentatively over my shoulder, without putting any weight, waiting for my permission to touch, to walk. I nod, happy to be reminded of his gentle quality mixed with this peculiar authority.

"So, what is this I hear about a boyfriend?" Peter asks in a small voice.

"I think he's more my mother's boyfriend."

Peter looks at me, with his sweet smile, curious. I tell him that my mother drops me off at parties for grown-ups, where I sometimes see Florence because her parents are there. I check with Peter to see if I need to say more. I do.

"These parties, the grown-ups, they're nobles, and other important people, like politicians and doctors, and the children are there…I have to work there…you know…as a prostitute."

Peter stares wide-eyed.

"But I'm not a prostitute," I hasten to add.

Peter frowns and shakes his head.

"And this man—he's twenty-one—he liked me. And so, I had to think very hard, because the girls who are favored in this way, the way he favored me, they usually don't make it."

Once more, I check to see if I've said enough for Peter to understand. The lane ends, turns into a quiet country road, and we walk in the summer sun.

"First he made sure nobody else could have me, so that makes a lot of people mad, especially the other children."

"Like Florence."

"Yes, especially Florence. Because she likes him. So then afterwards, when you're dropped, they kill you."

Peter stops.

"They kill you?"

He turns to me. I nod. Peter's eyes fill with tears. As I explain to help Peter understand, the words and phrases flow from my mouth like a strong current releasing water into a liberating fall.

"And this man—Patrick is his name—he didn't even want sex for a half year, but he did protect me, so when my mother took me to the parties, I was there, but I didn't have to work. I think that's why Florence was so jealous, and I think that's why she made this arrangement with Danny, you know, how I met you. At that time, I'd not had sex with Patrick yet. It started afterwards. And then he went and had sex with my mother, but he didn't officially drop me yet. But I think this is going to happen very soon."

"You're saying very soon, you're going to be killed?" Peter asks in disbelief.

The feeling suddenly hits me. Everything I've said, what I live with every day, sounds so enormous, so extreme when I hear myself say it, that I need to remind myself that it is true. I never ran into the swing. Suddenly, my sight is clouded with tears. Peter looks on while I experience the emotions, then he

takes me in his arms, and the same quiet, blissful feeling I experienced with him a few months ago at the construction site returns: I'm not thinking, not of the past or the future, just not thinking. There is nothing but stillness.

"I wish I could hold you like this forever, never let you go, so that nothing bad could ever happen to you again," Peter says.

After a little while, Peter asks, with an excited, charming smile, "You want to come with me?"

"To your house?"

"Around, anyway."

We turn to walk back towards the lane, where the bike is parked, tightly holding on to each other.

"What about you?" I ask. "What's your life like?"

"Nothing like yours," Peter laughs, self-deprecatingly.

"No? Is your mom nice?"

"No…or I don't know," Peter says with a frown, softly. "I haven't seen her in years. My parents broke up six years ago. That's when she left. I live with my father."

"She just left? You don't talk to her?"

"I don't want to."

Peter's face scrunches up with extreme, defensive anger. I pull him close. His face relaxes into a grateful smile before he slides into my arms.

"And Danny and those boys, they're your friends?"

"Sort of. I don't see them that much. I know a lot of kids from the neighborhood, but I don't really feel very close to anybody."

"Me neither," I chime in.

My anger over all the betrayals, recent and distant, is emphatically mirrored in Peter's eyes. I climb on the back of the motorcycle, feeling very close to Peter. We ride through the flat green countryside, past hamlets and pastures bordered with brooks and pollard willows on the way to the Antwerp suburb where Peter lives. After almost one hour, we pass a narrow bridge over a canal and enter a quiet residential neighborhood. Peter slows down to indicate a small red brick house as the one where he lives. At the end of the lane, Peter turns and drives up to the entrance of a wooded public area. We get off the bike, stretch our legs, stiff from the long ride, and walk along holding hands.

"Are you hungry?" Peter asks.

"I can't tell. I haven't been eating much, besides chocolate."

Peter protectively puts his arm around me.

"Really? Why?"

This kind invitation is all I need to tell Peter everything about Mama, who stopped offering meals recently; and about her leaving me to starve for five days in an empty mansion.

"The last time I asked for food, a few weeks ago, my mother wouldn't give me any. And it was just after Patrick was with me again, so, I guess I'm being punished again."

Peter's hurt laugh cuts through the woods. In a small glen where the canopy of tall spruces opens to let in the sun, he fluffs up dried needles.

"I'm going to get you a few things right now, and I'll be back very soon. Okay?"

I worry that I've chased him away, but Peter puts a reassuring arm around me.

"You're safe here, I promise. I just have to sort of inspect the grounds, you know—see if my father's home, my brothers, stuff like that—to see what we can do later on. But I'll bring food back, also."

Peter embraces me and we kiss, which immediately turns sexual. He stops, laughing.

"If we start that, I won't do anything else and we'll have to stay here in the woods all night without anything to eat. I'll be right back."

In spite of Peter's perfectly fine explanation, I still struggle with the worry that he does not want to have sex. Life has taught me that my entire value is based on my ability to get men to have sex with me.

Peter unglues himself and turns to go, but stops again.

"Umm, this Patrick, so he hasn't dropped you. Not yet, right? So, does that mean that you still, you know…that if, say tomorrow, he feels like, you know…."

I nod. A half hour later Peter is back with fresh food. He holds out a tomato. As I bite it, the juice trickles down my chin. Peter pulls out a napkin and eagerly wipes my mouth, looking like a caring doctor, with a slightly comical frown that turns one eyebrow up at the root, like a child imitating a grown-up. I feel so old.

He proceeds to feed me bite by bite. I tell Peter I rarely eat tomatoes, and that they never tasted this good. I tell Peter that before my chocolate diet, I ate spinach every day, because I had seen that it makes you strong in a Popeye cartoon, and I needed all the strength I could muster. I can't stop talking. Peter listens. After being fed a banana and orange for dessert, Peter reaches into his pocket and pulls out two chocolate candies. As we chew on the impossibly sticky bonbons, Peter sticks up his pointing finger and says, "Chocolate is good, as long as you have other things too, to balance it out."

I kiss Peter, push him down on the bed of dry needles. He gives me this smile. It looks like it's just for me, this impish joy over the pleasure I can give him.

"Have you been with other girls since the last time?"

"I don't want another girl," Peter answers with a high-pitched laugh.

With Peter, I seem to quickly switch from having far more mature to age-appropriate responses for my eleven years. With a look from his dancing eyes, Peter asks if he can lift my t-shirt and I am overcome with shyness. I would like to ask him to wait, but find myself frozen and incapable of expressing my needs. I nod, and then take the initiative, which makes me seem strong and mature. I pull him close and begin to make out. A blanket of sensual gratification quickly suffocates all awkwardness. Peter wants to slow down and I have fun playing with him, showing him the ropes. We spend the afternoon in the way we did at the construction site—delighting in the high of the togetherness and sharing the stillness.

Sometime during sex, I enter into a trance. Words emerge, escaping from the deepest, hidden part of my consciousness. To my own great surprise, I whisper, "I love you, Peter. I want to stay with you forever. I want to marry you."

Peter responds with perfect synchronicity, with perfect ardor, with perfect protective love, saying my words back.

Around four o'clock, Peter announces that it is time to go. I expect he is going to take me back home on the motorcycle, but the bike is gone from the entrance of the wood.

"Where is the motorbike? Are we walking?" I wonder.

"It's not far."

We walk to Peter's house, hand in hand. I look for the parked bike, but can't see it anywhere as we pass alongside the red brick house to the backyard and the backdoor. Peter lets me in and shows me to a small bathroom upstairs.

"This is my toothbrush. You can use it. You can just freshen up, or whatever, get ready for the night. You want my pajamas?"

My hand flies to my mouth. This laughing thing is all so new and awkward.

"I get to stay? Really?"

"I have a little tent in the backyard. It's all set up. In half an hour we have to be in there. And then we can spend the night. But tomorrow I'll have to take you back, otherwise it's going to start to look suspicious. Is there anything else you need in here?"

"A hairbrush?"

"My sister must have one somewhere. I'll find it."

In the next few hours, Peter busily comes and goes in the tiny tent in the backyard, making appearances with his family, getting reassurances no one will disturb him in the tent. Over our dinner of macaroni and cheese, Peter says, "You know how I said earlier that I didn't see Danny and those guys that much? Well in fact, I don't think I'll see them at all anymore. I mean I like Danny, but I don't want to go out and do stuff with those guys anymore like I used to. You know, like stealing and stuff. Whatever."

Peter shrugs and throws me a guilty look.

"You have enough bad stuff in your life without me making things hard for you too," he adds softly.

I give Peter a kiss.

"You're so sweet."

"Oh, but you make me."

Peter disappears to get dessert and returns with a plastic jar, proudly showing me the contents: ice cream with whipped cream. Later, with my head burrowed in his lap, Peter brushes my hair.

Castle, Rhode-Saint-Genese,
Belgium, a Friday, August 1974

Only a few hours ago I was with Peter, holding on for the long ride back to my village on the motorbike, and then the even longer, teary goodbye near

my parents' house, knowing that we might not see each other again. Peter promised that he would not let it happen. He said he would try to take me back to his house again as soon as tomorrow, and that he was going to focus on finding a solution for me. He would have to talk to his father; he had to find a way to introduce the situation. It would not be easy, but there had to be a way, Peter had said, and he was determined to find one.

Mama was very upset that I had been gone the whole night, and now I realize why, as she drives me through the forest in Brussels to the small castle where I first met Patrick.

Mama drops me off by the entrance in broad daylight. There is nothing going on, certainly not an orgy, and I wonder why I am here. Patrick opens the door.

"Are you coming in?" he asks with a happy, sweet smile.

Instead of responding as I normally would, I freeze. Patrick's expression falls. He takes me straight up to the corner room in the back, flings himself on the bed, puts his hands behind his head and taps the mattress. I stare.

"Get over here!" he yells.

I move to the bed and sit down, stiffly facing away from him. Patrick caresses my back.

"Come on," Patrick says, trying to get through.

I turn my head and glance down at him. Patrick sits up and kisses my neck. I stiffen even more. Patrick kisses my cheek, my mouth. I fight it. Patrick strokes my body. I fight it. He touches me between the legs, rubs me through my jeans. *Oh sure, you think that's going to do it?* I think. Patrick chuckles, and continues to rub. His breathing accelerates. He gives me that look, ardent desire burning through his clear eyes. I avert my gaze.

Patrick lifts me off the bed so I sit on his hands, pushes his fingertips into my lower back. I concentrate on a point of the windowsill, stare, put all my concentration on a small chip in the paint. I feel Patrick's fingers, and remain cold. Patrick throws me on the bed and rips off my clothes. *Oh, he's going to rape me. That may have worked last time. Not again.* He sets me back on his hands and pushes himself inside. I feel it, and fight it.

"Come on, little one," Patrick pleads.

I fight it. Patrick stops. Sighs. A few silent seconds pass.

"You're not afraid anymore," Patrick observes.

My blank stare is met by an equally cold, equally defiant gaze from Patrick.

He pulls me off him, holds me out, and demonstratively opens his hands, so I drop down on the floor. He walks towards the door, rummages in his bag on a console table, and returns. From behind, he brusquely pulls me up by the shoulder of my t-shirt, so the neckline hem cuts into the flesh, and I feel a cold metal thing against my right temple. *Oh, he's putting his gun against my head,* I think, still indifferent.

Patrick puts his left hand under my chin and pulls my head back, keeping my head and the gun locked in place. I feel the metal warm up against my skin. I hear a metal spring bounce inside my head, and the loop pushes hard into my temple. A great rush whooshes through my brain and body; every nerve, every cell, every neutron seems to explode. *It's happening.*

The moment extends, seems to take forever, and then passes. The metal keeps pushing into my temple. He cocked the gun. I wait for another agitation. I keep waiting. I wait so long my thoughts begin to roam.

I guess this is real. I guess Patrick is really going to kill me.

It seems that I should be afraid, but now that the adrenaline has abated, I note with some surprise, I am still indifferent.

"Are you afraid now?" Patrick asks.

I become still in the knowledge that Patrick will pull the trigger if he doesn't like what I do or say next. In the silent tension, as I concentrate, I begin to relax. If the torturous mind control training prepared me for anything, it is a situation such as this one.

Patrick told me he uses his gun to break through the lies, that when you confront someone with their death, they reveal their truth. What is my truth? He wants me to drop the cold front and be the person who loves him.

I nod slightly, a yes as in "I give up," rather than "I am indeed afraid." Patrick removes the gun from my head. Absolutely nothing changes. I don't need to sigh with relief. I don't even move. I am once again attuned. As Patrick lifts me up into his arms, I see great love in his eyes: love for my understanding, love for my love for him, and pain for the way he had to get it.

I think of Peter's smile, so light. Patrick heavily devours me. Our passion soon reaches the heights of human existence: the deepest pain felt not by one, but by two—and this human connection in what should be a lonely pit of darkness and suffering creates rare intimacy.

"It's because I love you that I do those things to you. Everything I do, it's only because I love you. Everything. Do you understand?"

Whispering, he adds, "Without you I don't exist."

Emotional pain of this magnitude leaves no room for kindness or generosity, which flow out of the abundance of love. The killers, the slaves, and the brokenhearted only know passion: the painful cry for love in its ruins.

Castle Van Revelingen,
Rhode-Saint-Genese, Belgium,
a Saturday morning, August 1974

Just like the first morning after we spent the night in this room, Patrick again appears with an enormous silver breakfast tray. And just like the first time, he makes a big show of pouring the hot milk and the chocolate out of two pitchers into one bowl. I dip the tip of a croissant into the warm cocoa, sweetened with four sugar cubes.

"How long has it been, anyway," Patrick mutters. "Three, no, four weeks. That's how long I didn't see you. Boy, I missed you."

I stare at him in disbelief. He looks on, uncomprehending, and continues.

"The very day after I saw you last, I left with my parents, and I just came back yesterday."

"You were gone?"

Patrick laughs ironically.

"Where were you?" I ask, incredulous.

Patrick lowers his gaze.

"Saint-Jean."

"You were in France the whole time?"

Patrick nods, frowning.

"You didn't come back to Belgium and see my mother?"

"No!" Patrick laughs.

"She's such a fucking liar."

"Hey. Watch your language."

"Well, she is."

"She's not so bad."

There is the role we are expected to play in life, prompted by a higher, unseen intelligence, and there is the role we are expected to play as lovers. When both parts are in alignment, love is possible; when they are not, love is bondage. In this moment, I feel bewildered.

"She stopped feeding me!" I yell.

"You know," Patrick ponders, "I have trouble believing that."

"You remember when you first talked to her, the morning after we first had sex in that villa not far from here, with the enormous lawn, and you went to see her while she was waiting in the car? That was after I told you she'd been taking me to this mansion where she'd left me to starve for five days, and you went to make sure she wouldn't take me there behind your back. Or am I wrong? Were you just asking for her phone number?"

Patrick shakes his head, doubling over with glee, like a kid who'd been stealing candy and finds out his mommy was in on it from the start.

"But now that I've gotten to know her better, she doesn't seem that bad. I don't know…." he says playfully.

"What, did she bake cookies for you or something?"

"Well…she has given me food."

"So, you *did* see her in the last three weeks!"

"No, no. That was when you were still in France," Patrick answers with a meek voice, a guilty look, and a pleased smile.

"If only I could cook," I sigh out loud, and bite into my croissant, trying to give Patrick a meaningful look, but I don't catch his eye, and feel stupid.

When Patrick glances at me, I turn ugly; my lips shrink, my eyes get smaller, and my skin turns sickly pale. I stuff the last piece of croissant in my mouth, but it's kind of too big.

"I want to leave," I state, detesting the sound of my voice.

"You want to go see your mother, is that it?"

"I just want to get away from you!"

"I came back from France just to see you and this is what I get!" Patrick screams.

He gets up, rushes off and turns around by the door.

"They're giving me this room for a whole week, and I'm not going to drive you back to Antwerp and then drive all the way back to France just because you're in a mood. Just sit here and stew."

Patrick leaves, slamming the door, then locking it. But after a few minutes, I hear the crick crack of the key in the door. Patrick enters and caresses my neck.

"It's not your fault, little one," he says softly.

Castle, Rhode-Saint-Genese, Belgium,
a Saturday evening, August 1974

There is an orgy tonight. All the adults are seasoned regulars, so it is not crowded, but there is a lot of noise and the atmosphere is weird and wild, as though having had to forego their Dionysian debaucheries on vacation, everyone is excited to be back. Florence is here; I avoid her. It is as though my magnetic field is so weak, my presence would not register anyway. The sickly fairy, too, absently roams the halls. Her eyes have a haunted nothingness about them, like two black holes. I search for Patrick without expecting to find him. Twice, I catch a glimpse, and he moves away. I have a vague notion that he is spending the night doing cocaine, going up to many rooms with

many women, but the information never settles, and never solidifies into feeling.

It must be four in the morning when the music stops. I feel very strange and stringy, as though on cocaine with only negative side effects. An eerie silence is followed by a rumble and hushed voices. I notice some regulars filing into a library. Passing another open doorway, I am compelled to look in, and see Patrick and Florence talking. Patrick looks like he did when he picked me up in France, his face red, tense, and angry. When our eyes meet, his turn to ice.

I disappear into the library, as if the regulars will protect me from Patrick. They are huddled together, watching something. The dark-haired baron—my little friend Wouter's executioner—faces a small group. He is holding something. There is also something on the floor. Burlap. Light brown…dark brown…no, red. I don't know what he is holding. I can't see. *I don't want to.* I pass behind the group, wondering why I entered this room. After all these years, I would hope to know better. *I should leave now, before I see anything else.*

Whispers reach my ears: *"Il l'a décapité…."*

"Décapité…" What does that word mean again? Even though I know I should leave, my gaze turns in the direction everyone is looking. Through the small herd, I see long, ash blonde hair, swaying. The baron is holding a thin braid. He is holding the sickly fairy's head by a braid, swinging it, like a pendulum, as her loose hair gently wafts through the air. Her blood is the red, the brown, drenching the burlap on the floor.

I rush out, back to the hallway, remembering that I had thought that the sickly fairy might not survive, and in my state of horror and bewilderment, I am convinced that this thought of mine is the reason for her death.

Patrick's hand brusquely grabs the back of my t-shirt. He pushes me down the hallway and outside, into his car.

Haemers residence, greater Brussels,

a Saturday night, August 1974

From a knife block set, Patrick pulls the largest one, an enormous chef's knife, and raises it at me.

"So, you've been fucking around."

I run. *Florence!* Patrick is after me in a flash. There is nowhere to go but up the royal blue carpeted stairs, with Patrick close behind.

"I thought you'd slept with my mother again!" I yell.

His limp may slow him down, but his legs are much longer than mine.

"You fucked him even before you fucked me!" Patrick screams.

"That was a rape! Florence set it up!"

Patrick grabs my right leg; I fall forward and struggle to get out of his grip.

"Oh yeah? And when you tried to see him afterwards, what was that? Was that rape?"

I squirm wildly while Patrick pulls my jeans down, and off.

"I'll make you know what it feels like!" Patrick cries.

As I squirm wildly, Patrick repeatedly cuts the back of both my knees.

I manage to pull myself free, push up, race up the landing and further up the stairs, blood flowing down my calves. Patrick catches up with me near the top landing, grabs me by the shoulders, and pushes me down. I fall; he pins me down and pulls me round on my back.

He'll stab me in the heart, I think, but I see no knife, just his eyes, and am amazed to see them beg in desperation.

"Is it because of my limp? Is that it?" Patrick cries, beside himself with grief and rage.

"What?"

"Is that why you don't love me?"

The discrepancy between his words and actions is so great that I can't hold on to both. I split, and leave reality. Breaking out in tears, I stretch my hands up as if nothing happened. Patrick releases me and looks on uncertainly. I put my arms around him.

"I love you too much."

Patrick's lips tentatively seek mine. Right there on the landing, with my feet resting on the steps and my knees bleeding, his hips rub between my thighs. Patrick also cries. Our tears merge, drift down my face and neck, as I escape to the velvet world in which I love Patrick more than I will ever love anyone else, and in which he loves me the same, where everything is soft and smooth and good, even the pain.

"It's you I love," I mumble through tears. "No one else."

"Me too."

After the make-up sex, we inspect my knees, crisscrossed with bleeding cuts and slashes, though none nearly as deep as his initial assault with the penknife. Patrick looks at my knees, then at the knife on the steps, then looks around in a daze.

"Is this where it happened to you?" I ask.

Patrick nods. I caress his face.

"It wasn't your fault."

"If you knew everything, you wouldn't say that."

"Tell me."

Patrick turns shy. With downcast eyes, he considers what to say. He slightly shakes his head.

"I can't."

"It's alright, you know."

"No, it's…I did something; I couldn't help myself. And my father…he was really hurt by that. Because he…because I…."

Patrick blushes, looks down and shakes his head.

"How could you have hurt him so much, when he was the adult?"

Patrick looks like he would like to speak, but again he shakes his head.

"You were innocent," I whisper.

Patrick smiles. Tremendous sadness fills his eyes.

"How old were you?"

"Twelve."

A very awkward moment passes between us, as our intelligence begs us to take note of the obvious, and yet neither of us allows it to land.

"Who took care of you afterwards?" I ask.

"My mother," Patrick answers with an embarrassed laugh.

I have been felled by a common head cold. Resting in Patrick's twin size bed, my head is stacked on four pillows to facilitate breathing. Patrick comes and goes. This morning he washed my knees with soap and water and prepared the bed for me, with a pillow under my knees and several towels on top to catch the last streaks of blood. He caressed me for a while and left, returning a few hours later with pastries and buttered bread with chocolate spread, placing the plate next to the bed. Then he went out to buy packs of paper tissues, dropping them off an hour later.

I have been awake, worrying about the lymph oozing from the wounds. It has dried, but now my knees are hot and bothersome. I can't stand to have anything covering them, even though I get bad chills. The cold began this morning, without warning, and immediately moved to the worst stage, exhibiting all possible symptoms at once. Even the backs of my eyeballs hurt,

and terrible headaches pop up in different places. Tears keep flowing from my eyes because of the irritation.

Because of a strong but by now vague impression of something that happened earlier, I feel fat. I have been trying all day not to eat the bread on the plate next to the bed, but my memory, thoughts and feelings are all fractured, and so is my resolve. I eat the sandwich. And the croissant. The purple poster on the wall keeps reminding me of the time Patrick sang that song to me, as if I were his angel. I feel so guilty and worthless now, so dreadfully far from angelic. Patrick enters with a bowl of warm food, picking up the empty plate and replacing it with the full one. He smiles, and without saying a word, leaves.

On the fifth day, Patrick decides that I can walk well enough, and late that night drives me home. He is exactly the same he has been the whole time I was in his bed: gentlemanly, friendly, and calm. I feel that I have been an enormous burden.

Family home,
a Friday morning, August 1974

Last night, I quietly entered through the unlocked backdoor when Patrick dropped me off, and I have not seen Mama yet. She is now at breakfast in the kitchen with my little brother, and looks up with annoyed surprise. I pass through to the living room in my pajamas, walking carefully so as not to upset the itching scabs on my knees. Upon entering the living room, with its large picture windows looking out across the front lawn and the fields beyond, I suddenly see him. I can't believe my eyes. His back is turned, but it is Peter, sitting on his parked motorbike.

I sneak off to my bedroom, dress and quickly pack some clothes in my book bag. I feel the blood pulse through my head as I walk through the dark

hallway, listening for Mama's sounds. She is still in the kitchen, in the back of the house. I think my brother might be playing in the backyard. I quietly grab a windbreaker and casually walk to the front door, yelling, "I'm going outside!"

Peter must hear that someone is walking down the driveway, but he keeps looking across the field, as if he were observing the landscape. When I am very near, he finally turns his head and looks extremely surprised and happy. I hurriedly want to hop on, but Peter stops me, looking me up and down, as if surprised to see me in one piece. He takes note of the wounds, and hugs me, holds me.

"Boy, I've been so worried. And look at you," Peter says, "I was right to worry. Come on, let's get out of here."

I hop on, Peter starts the bike up, and we are off. During the ride, my knees get numb. I don't care. I hold on tight to my hero.

Peter's family home,
Schoten, Belgium, a Friday, August 1974

When Peter and I arrive at his house, he helps me off the motorbike. My knees have no feeling at all and when I try to stand, I collapse. Peter carries me.

"I've been parked many hours in front of your house in the last few days. I'm so happy that you're alive, but what happened? What did they do to you?"

"Stabbed," I answer, looking lovingly into Peter's eyes as he carries me in the house and up the stairs to the bathroom.

Peter sets me down. I can stand. He hum-hums with little dry coughs as he gets to work, inspecting the bathroom cabinet for salves and bandages.

"Peter? I really need to wash up. Do you think that would be all right?"

Mild warm water runs over my head and body as I stand in the small tub, hidden by a tan, orange and yellow flowered shower curtain.

As I sit on a stool, Peter tends to my wounds like Mama never could. He looks me in the eye, with a serious look that is at once comical; and a surge of love wells up in me. Even though I can walk again, Peter insists on carrying me down the stairs. He sets me down in the yard, commenting how lucky we are that no one is around, and goes off to take care of a few things. After twenty minutes or so, he reappears with the tent and begins to set it up in the back of the yard while I sit and watch.

"I better hurry. My father's going to be home any minute."

"Great. I can't wait to meet him."

"I haven't talked to him yet. I will; I just want to do it right, to make sure he's not going to say no."

Peter throws me a sideways, troubled glance.

"But I'm going to try to keep you here as long as I can," he adds.

"Maybe your father won't want to help, no matter what."

"No, he'll want to. He's good. He's just simple, and it's complicated. I'm kind of young to have a girlfriend, but you—you're really young. And he will wonder how we met, because you're not from here. And he doesn't know anything about Danny and those guys of course. And that's without even bringing up your awful situation."

It suddenly strikes me that I had completely forgotten.

"But there's something else we could do."

"What?"

"We could run away."

Peter stops hammering the tent pole into the ground and stares at me for what seems like a very long time.

“I don’t know if running away is a smart thing to do.”

“On your motorcycle! We can ride all the way to the South of France. There are a lot of kids who get jobs for the summer. I’m sure we can still find something, and we can take the tent and live in it.”

Peter frowns, and puts the wooden hammer aside.

“You know, kids who run away, they’re found. And if we managed not to be found, it would be very hard. We wouldn’t be able to go to school, and then we’d be forced to take low jobs for the rest of our lives. My dad is a worker at the sausage factory down the road. I don’t want to do that when I grow up. I wouldn’t want that for you. You’re very pretty and sophisticated, and I want to be able to give you nice things, and if we run away, that can’t happen.”

“But if we don’t leave I’ll be killed!” I yell, angry.

Peter takes me in his arms.

“No. I will find a solution. I promise. Just let me work on it, so that I’m sure that I’m not messing up.”

“But there’s no time. You can’t keep me in this tent and as soon as you take me home Patrick will come and get me again.”

I proceed to angrily list all the things Patrick did in the past days, and conclude, “He’s crazy. He says that he does these things because he loves me. He’s going to kill me!”

Peter, tears in his eyes, tries to rock me, but I push him away.

“The motorbike is right there. It’s not that hard,” I continue, searching for the bike, nowhere to be seen.

Peter gives me another pained look. He sharply inhales as he intently focuses his gaze on me, but the force of his intent dissolves as he catches my eye, and he gently shakes his head.

“It’s more complicated than that.”

“But even if we have to work hard,” I press on, “we’ll find some way to change our situation later on. It’ll be nice, because we’ll be together.”

Peter sort of shakes and waves his hands low down in a tense manner. He gets back to work, pulling at a loop and fastening it with a picket.

“Anneke, you just have to let me work on it. Trust me. Okay?”

Peter has made a bed just like Patrick did, with many pillows under my head and a few under my knees. He now enters the tent holding a big plate of spaghetti with tomato sauce and proudly presents it to me. I break into tears.

“Oh Peter, I can’t eat that….”

Peter puts the plate aside and comes to sit by my side. I can’t stop weeping. Peter lies down next to me, caresses my face, wipes my tears and gently shushes me.

“I can’t even tell you,” I sob. “It’s too horrible.”

“You can tell me.”

I shake my head as the tears keep flowing.

“Why do you love me?” I wonder out loud. “I give you nothing but trouble.”

“I gave you very big trouble. And you were very nice about it. Your trouble is not even your fault.”

I remember Peter apologizing to me; his dark side had been recognized and accepted, and maybe that is what makes us feel loved.

“But maybe it is, Peter. Maybe it is all my fault. I’m not that good, you know.”

“Oh, but you are,” Peter says without skipping a beat.

“If you knew me better, you wouldn’t say that.”

"Try me," Peter says.

I think of Patrick, and how I just said to Peter what Patrick said to me, and how Patrick got shy and blushed.

"No, you don't understand. You see, Peter, I love the gangster. I love you too, but I don't know; I can't help loving him. I think I love him more than you. He found out about you; Florence told him. That's why he got so mad that he stabbed me."

"Right! He got so mad he stabbed you when he heard you had someone else, but he made you watch him have sex with your mother, and that was okay with him? He can do whatever he wants but if you do something he doesn't like, he's going to stab you, or who knows what else?"

Ashamed, I begin to cry, and avert my head.

"But don't you think it's horrible that I feel that way, that I told you? Don't you think I'm horrible?"

Peter douses my face with soft kisses.

"You?"

I pull Peter closer, but he refrains.

"Your knees. I don't want to do anything that might hurt you."

"Peter, I'll be alright, really."

"Okay, but you don't move. Promise."

Later that evening, Peter turns towards the cold plate of spaghetti, gives me a look, pulls the plate closer. Now I can eat.

That night, a dream takes me back to infancy, to someone who took care of me, who loved me. Mémé ran the community-funded daycare center in Brussels, near the TV studios where Mama worked as a stenographer. I am held by Mémé, cuddled, cooed to, feeling warm. Wrapped against Mémé's body from the moment Mama leaves, Mémé takes care of four or five

toddlers without having to put me down. Numb and dull from Mama's abuse, I am safe in the makeshift wrap, but, angry at Mémé over our separation, I turn my head aside, averting my gaze. It is alright to be angry now; she understands how much I've been hurt away from her. I enjoy her fussing over me, caressing my head, saying sweet things in a consoling language, soft and melodious. I can feel that Mémé loves me; I am sweet and cute. I warm up to her, trust her again, can be myself again—a baby. What joy! I feel these sweet vibrations as waves of pleasure passing through my body. Love is bringing me back to life.

Mémé hands me back to Mama, the other mother I love so much—no, more—because if I don't love Mémé, she still loves me; whereas with Mama, I love her and love her and love her to pieces—and might my undying devotion not keep her wrath at bay for a few more minutes, so that I can live a few more minutes?

There is Mama's fear of me; her gaze makes me feel evil and powerful, powerfully evil, even though I am powerless, unable to form intelligible sounds, no motor control, no control over anything. I lie alone, crying, and hear the sound change as I continue to be ignored. My cries sound ugly, as they must sound to Mama. After endless agony, long after the cries have died out, long after I have turned dull and numb, Mama brusquely grabs me. This touch, albeit rough, this attention, albeit in anger, is good. The pain in my ankles and feet is intense as Mama pulls me up to change a soiled cloth diaper. I feel incredibly filthy and bad and undeserving. Hanging upside down, Mama's furious anger is solidified into a thousand cold knives, going through me. Then the pain, the pain, the pain in the genital area—too much to bear. The extreme sexual sensations that accompany the pain—I can go there. I focus in on the arousal, until it is clear that Mama loves me; she gives me these sensations that feel good.

I wake up in Peter's tent, feeling aroused, in pain, and in fear. *The memories in the dream seemed so real.* What is this arousal that I have for Peter? Could it be a body signal I mistake for love, whereas it really serves as a catalyst for aggression? Is my sexual magnetic output programmed to draw me back to either side of the power pendulum, to enact the role of either the victim or the aggressor?

CHAPTER FOURTEEN

Castle, Belgium,
afternoon, early September, 1974

Patrick softly sways his head to a blues ballad as he cuts a line of cocaine with a razor blade on the glass-topped salon table, rolls up a twenty franc note, sniffs half the line through one nostril and the other half through the other.

Lamentations about unrequited love and loneliness and a mournful slide guitar set the mood. Patrick puts a comforting hand through my hair as he mouths along with the singer, crying that he is feeling so sad, that his love for his baby is all in vain.

Patrick shoots me a cold look, full of meaning.

We leave the salon in search of a bedroom. As we walk the halls, he opens one door after another, inspecting various rooms.

"I want to try something we've never done before," he confesses with a smile.

Standing behind me, he puts his arms around me. When Patrick decides on a room that seems in no way different from the others, he smiles excitedly and begins to kiss me on the bed.

"Do you need the coke now just to be with me?" I ask.

"Never!"

A little while later I ask, "Then why?"

Patrick laughs, exasperated at my insistence.

"Because I'd never have the guts to do what I want to do. I'd be too shy."

"What is it?"

Patrick responds with more kisses.

He is so amazingly methodical. *Why do I like that so much about him? Why can't I help liking him so much?*

He brings his hand down my back and down in my underwear, stroking my buttocks. He unbuttons my pants, pulls them off, puts me on my stomach and continues to stroke me.

"How I love your behind," he confesses.

I look back to make sure, and yes, Patrick is blushing, fiercely.

"Why?" I ask. My cheeks are burning as well.

"It's so little."

"Like yours."

Patrick laughs hard, embarrassed. He lays down on top of me, kisses me more, slightly rubbing himself against the skin of my lower back, aroused.

"Patrick, I can't. I can't do that."

"Why not?"

"I can't even tell you."

Patrick slides off a little, so he lies more next to me than on me, and strokes my head and back.

"But do. I have to know."

Patrick is so excited his breathing is shallow. The air is charged with sexual tension.

"I can't talk about that. It's too…."

I sigh. I can't.

"But I understand," Patrick says. "You're too ashamed, but it's alright. I really understand."

"No, it's…do you remember I told you about the first time I was brought to the network? About the old guy?"

"Of course."

"When I arrived, he was sort of in Nihoul's job, I think, and the couple—the cleaning lady and her husband—showed him the girls they'd brought, me included. He nodded, but he seemed put out, and then he asked if they didn't have any boys, but they didn't, not that night. So, he looked at me again. My hair was really short. My mother had it cut like that, even if I hated it. And then I felt him becoming interested."

As I am whispering, Patrick and I lie very close, unmoving, on our stomachs. As we are enveloped by the shame that overshadowed my experience, the sexual energy intensifies, and my telling of the story has become erotic foreplay.

"He used me as a boy," I whisper, and instantly Patrick is drawn onto me again, and I feel him against my lower back, and I find myself breathing, murmuring.

"That was the show you were talking about? On the stage?" Patrick asks, controlling his breathing.

"You remember that?" I exclaim in surprise.

There is no answer, and I, too, would like to stop talking and enjoy the erotic sensations in my attunement with Patrick, because, while that feels good, I am also feeling unwell, as if I'm going to be very, very sick.

"That was different. That was afterwards. With the husband of the couple that brought me there."

"What was that?"

Lying absolutely still helps with the nausea. Short of breath, in an agitated whisper, I relate the events from the past. Shame seems to enshroud us like a separate entity.

“They put a metal collar around my neck, with a chain attached to it. The husband of the cleaning lady walked me around the stage. I had to crawl on my hands and knees, naked.”

I had thought that the sexual vibe would certainly dissipate with this, but the opposite is true: the nausea dissipates.

“Then he had to poop. He did it right there on the stage and I had to watch, and the people at the party, they were sort of watching too, and they were disgusted, making jokes and turning away, clasping their noses and stuff. He held me by the leash the whole time, grinning. When he was done, he got up and pulled me over and then pushed my face down so my nose almost touched it. He said, ‘Come, doggy. Come on. Sniff it.’”

Patrick guides our focus towards the raw feeling, away from the repulsive physical facts, turning both of us into secret witnesses to the suffocating shame of this child in the story. Ashamed to behold such utter humiliation, as though it put both of us on the other side of shame in the S&M game, the excitement increases.

“So, I did. But then he pushed me even closer, and he told me to eat it. I ate it. And then he ordered me to say that I liked it, pulling the metal collar back so I choked. I said that I liked it.”

After a very charged silence, Patrick, in disbelief, asks, “And after that, you stood up and shouted that they couldn’t treat you this way? That you would tell on them?”

“That was later. After it was over and he had taken the leash and the collar off, he just left me there by myself. I felt like I was going to die. I had to do something, or else I surely would have died.”

“But you’d already survived! You were alive!”

“I don’t know.”

The erotic stimulation increases. Patrick slides up and down on my back.

“I guess we never really know,” he comments.

It was clear in the past that I was going to die unless I acted, did something drastic to assert my existence. Here I am with Patrick, who earlier tonight has indicated that his love for me is all in vain, but who is about to do exactly what was done to me during that night of never-ending, soul-slaying humiliations. And I have no sense that it is dead wrong, no platform to stand up for myself, no revolution to stoke.

"Don't worry; I'm not going to hurt you," Patrick says.

The shame and fear are just as great as in the past, as well as the pain. I have to give myself to Patrick; leave my body's sensations and just feel the emotions. I feel his excitement, his shame, his pleasure. *Stop thinking! Surrender.*

Uncharacteristically, Patrick moans loudly during the sex, and yells when he reaches orgasm. He instantly heads to the bathroom, which is right by the bed. The proximity between the two is the one difference between this room and the others, and with a vague presentiment of fear, I wonder if that is why he chose it.

Approaching the open bathroom door, I notice Patrick standing by the sink, his penis hanging over the porcelain rim. He cups running water into his hand and washes himself. He turns his head and gives me one of his icy stares.

"You know, you really should watch what you eat next time before you come over. This is disgusting."

Backyard, Peter's family home, Schoten, Belgium, afternoon, early September, 1974

Peter tentatively strokes my arm inside the tent.

"We can't have sex anymore," I command with a halting gesture.

"Okay," he answers, sweetly. "I wasn't trying anything."

I'm surprised at how well Peter takes my angry directive.

He should get mad at me. He shouldn't let me order him around. He should be more of a man!

"I don't know what happened, but if you could tell me…." Peter begins.

"NO!"

"I understand you, really I do," Peter says in a small voice.

I look at Peter, strongly derisive. His body seems so small and insignificant. *How could I ever have been attracted to him?* I wonder.

Peter trembles under my stare. I am disgusted at the sight of his apprehensive looks, feebly seeking my approval. I lie down on my back and block Peter out. I would like to understand my violent reactions towards him, unwelcome intruders into a brittle self-image. I like being with Peter better than with Patrick, but I like myself better when I'm with Patrick. With Patrick irrevocably in the role of the sadistic bad guy, I am the victim. That is not easy, but it is harder to be despicable, deriding Peter, whose only crime is that he does not have power in my eyes, which simply means that he does not harm me.

Is there no way to stop this dark flow, passed from one to another, down the spiral, from top to bottom, into the plumbless well, where the weakest, the lowest, the youngest, get the life beaten out of them? How can Peter regain power in my view?

"Peter," I exclaim. "We have to run away!"

I expect that my sudden shift, the hope and enthusiasm in my voice are going to immediately rub off on Peter, but his bearing remains placid.

"I told you before; it's not a good idea," he answers softly.

"It doesn't matter if it's a good idea or not. It's the only thing we can do!" I urge him on, still hopeful.

As Peter gently shakes his head, I wonder, exasperated, desperate, why Peter won't understand the greater implication of my need for him to comply. I jump up and run outside the tent.

“Don’t,” Peter cries weakly, “My dad’s around!”

He hurries after me as I run out into the yard.

“Where’s the motorcycle, Peter? Let’s just go!”

Peter catches up with me and grabs my hand, gently pulling, trying to steer us back to our shelter.

“Where’s the bike?”

“It’s not here right now. Forget about the bike. The bike….”

Peter halts, considers something.

“We can’t do this,” he concludes.

“Then let’s go see your father right now. Maybe he saw me already. This is our chance.”

Peter’s eyes glaze over and his hand, still holding mine, trembles violently. He awkwardly shakes his head.

“No. No.”

The words burst out of Peter’s mouth like inadvertently launched rockets, astonishing the astronaut and observer alike.

“Peter. Please.”

“Let me take care of you here,” Peter implores me.

He hesitantly caresses my cheek. I swat his hand away, follow him back to the tent and crawl inside. Lying on the air mattress, I soon feel Peter’s hand on my thigh.

“Stop it! Stop touching me! I can’t stand it right now!”

“Sweetheart,” Peter entreats, “I’m just….”

“STOP. STOP. STOP!”

I hit Peter wherever I can. I turn away from him and roll up in a ball.

"I don't want you anymore," I yell.

"You mean right now?" Peter asks softly, afraid.

"No, forever," I shout. "It's over. I don't want to see you again. Just take me home."

"Anneke," Peter says softly, his hand flying to my hair. "Don't say that."

I lie motionless and submit to Peter stroking my head. His caresses decrease until his hand lies still. Then he removes it. I sit up.

"Okay. Can you take me home now?"

"I can't take you now.... You can sleep here by yourself if you want; I'll go inside, and tomorrow I can take you back, if you want."

"Okay."

When Peter turns and leaves. I suddenly experience a terrible hesitation, a loss of confidence so severe that I feel as if I am going to die. Some hours later, Peter quietly steals into the tent. I pretend to sleep as he sits still in the dark. When I hear a rustle indicating his departure, I am suddenly gripped by horrendous fear and cry out.

"Peter!"

He returns to my side without a word. I reach my arms up and we embrace. We lie together, completely still. We hold each other tight without concentrating on touch. Our sense of identity, gender, age—it is all gone; yet we are more keenly aware of who we are, connected on this subtlest, deepest level. There is some otherworldly feeling to this embrace, and something else, unsettling. I move. Peter tightens his hold. I gently push him out of my arms. He leaves the tent. A heavy pain enters my heart.

When Peter enters the tent at dawn, he looks fragile, and turns self-conscious as he smiles.

“You’re sure you don’t want to stay a little longer?”

I shake my head.

“We have to sneak past the side of the house, okay? Follow me.”

We quietly creep through the backyard, then walk towards the woods on the dirt road. The motorbike is parked at the entrance of the little wood where we went the first time Peter had brought me here. I gather that Peter would never have parked his motorcycle this far from the house unless he wanted to hide his exit from his father.

“Are you keeping something a secret from me?” I ask with a conspiratorial smile.

“No.”

We drive on the familiar narrow roads of the flat countryside dotted with church steeples, under a threateningly low sky, so gray the canals look like sewers. The heavy sky seems ready to burst any minute with fat raindrops as Peter stops the motorbike near my house. As soon as I alight, I am ready to briskly walk off.

“Anneke!”

I turn in my tracks and face him defiantly, impatiently.

“Aren’t you even going to say goodbye?” Peter asks with a frail smile.

“Why should I? You don’t care about me, why should I care about you?”

Peter’s eyes widen in astonishment.

“Of course I care about you,” he retorts. “More than anyone in the world.”

“Oh yeah? Well, I don’t care about you. You know that?”

“I don’t believe that,” Peter says with a nervous laugh.

"I don't. It's the truth. I don't love you. I never loved you. I love Patrick. You're too little for me. And you're not good-looking, like he is."

Every one of my utterances makes Peter jerk, like a swing of a sledgehammer hitting his chest. I am so indifferent, my coldness must have frozen the rain into the clouds, because it still is not coming down.

"Your nose is too narrow," I add.

"You can't just insult me like that. There's no need for that!" he yells.

I laugh at Peter. Not out loud, not very obvious, but clearly enough. Peter seems to physically whither. Then, in an amazing bout, he straightens his spine, kicks the starter and shoots back as he revs up the motor by turning the right handle, flicking his wrist up and down.

"You can't do this to me. I am going to get over this. I'm not going to let you do this to me."

Peter drives off. It still hasn't started to rain, but it should, any second now. From beneath the canopy of leaves, it almost looks like night under the dark sky. There is no hellish glow. There is no fire and no debris spouting from the depths. The devastation and destruction are not visible, but frozen into the hearts of lovers.

Uccle Fort-Jaco, Brussels,
Thursday morning, September 12, 1974

After spending the night, once again, in the upstairs corner room in the small castle in Rhode-Saint-Genese, Patrick drives me to the neighboring Brussels commune of Uccle Fort-Jaco. The Porsche screeches to a halt on the wet pavement, right in front of the bakery we have visited once before. As we get out of the car, Patrick explains, "This is one of the best bakeries in Brussels; that's why we drove here."

As we enter, Patrick orders two croissants. I remember well how self-conscious he got last time, when the baker's woman eyed him suspiciously, and I don't care to take note of how confident Patrick is this time around. I keep thinking of Peter, and that I said his nose was too narrow.

Back in 1972, during my first encounter with the network Big Shot, I had observed that he was self-conscious about his nose, and I had told him that it was good-looking. That compliment was uttered in a crucial, life-or-death moment when I was moved by sudden grace, helping me to see a little boy inside a monster, and find what I needed to say to save my life. Also, when I had first met Peter last year, he witnessed his then-friend threaten to cut my nose with a penknife. Maybe I was getting revenge on Peter for his friend's action, or for everything I have ever been forced to do.

I have been sullen and silent with Patrick, and he bestows a charming smile on the young woman behind the counter, who giggles. I sigh audibly and roll my eyes. The woman looks on in surprise, as does Patrick. I shoot him a jealous look. He laughs, which makes me so furious that I don't want to follow him out. Patrick stands in the open doorway of the bakery with an amused look on his face, as in "Are you really going to stay here?" I suddenly take note of his large bare feet, stuck in ivory and red horse-bit loafers.

Part of my training in Germany had been to spot men's weaknesses, which had become an automated sixth sense. The purpose for having my gift of perception honed with mind control tactics was to optimize my service, so as to put a soothing balm of peace on my perpetrators' deepest wounds, only to report back to my Big Shot owner for whom I was to spy. While I have employed this gift mostly to better placate my perpetrators, I have never before used it in anger.

Patrick decides we should go for a stroll, since the downpour that began after Peter left has finally let up. As we walk along the road and turn into the forest, my attention remains riveted on Patrick's shoes. *Look at him walking amidst all these fancy cars and people with those shoes as a passport into their world. As if he didn't need his gun to get their respect.*

When we enter the woods, I wish I were going for a walk with Peter instead of Patrick. We turn into a large, manicured lane lined with tall, straight trees. Well-dressed citizens cross our path, and Patrick greets them with an irritating confidence which I suspect he derives from the shoes he is wearing. Walking deliberately, without a limp, he seems to be making the extra effort to belong to the upscale crowd. When we pass a brown brick chalet, I pull Patrick by the hand towards a rugged path. He follows along, laughing patronizingly.

"I just don't want to get my shoes wet and dirty."

I stare at his feet, then at him.

"My father says the shoes make the man," Patrick says proudly.

Reminded of Patrick's tragic loyalty to his father, a dark influx of thoughts suggests that Patrick's relationship to his shoes is deeply linked to his perception of his father. As if blind faith in his father's quote hides the irreparable damage caused by that same father. *His father was probably being sarcastic,* I think.

I try to absorb the pristine beauty of the forest, but when Patrick greets a passer-by with this forced gaiety that has been grating my nerves all morning, I run off, into the woods, up a little hill. I stop and turn around, smiling insolently at Patrick. Patrick stands nailed to the ground.

"What are you waiting for?" I tease him.

Patrick indicates his shoes.

"The Guccis. Did you forget?"

"Your shoes shouldn't stop you from going somewhere," I laugh.

Patrick looks stunned and helpless.

"You can just clean them," I add flatly.

"No, no. I don't want to get dirt inside either. Come on. Come back."

"I don't want to."

I cross my arms and stand on the slope, defiantly facing Patrick.

"Get over here," Patrick says, brusquely shaking his finger down so it points to the ground where he is standing. "Get over here!" he repeats.

The memories of Patrick's derision for me melt into derision for his powerlessness with his shoes. *Look at him standing there, like an idiot, with his stupid clown shoes,* I think.

I turn and dart off, up the knoll, higher, through the wet leaves. Soon, I hear Patrick's arrhythmical tread rustling the leaves. He pounces, roughly throws me down on the soaked, muddy carpet. My wrist twists under my body weight. I turn over and shout, "You hurt my wrist!"

Patrick grabs me by the sore wrist and drags me through the bed of leaves.

"Get up and walk!" he screams.

"I can't!" I yell back.

Patrick suddenly stops, throws me down as if I were a mail package, and observes his right foot.

"There's a scratch."

He lifts his foot up to examine the shoe more closely, balancing on his other foot. He slaps the dirt off the damaged shoe to make sure.

"It's scratched," he laments. "You ruined my shoes."

"You. Hurt. My. Wrist."

"Get up." Patrick commands curtly.

He grabs me by the back of my anorak, pulls me up and pushes me out in front of him. I am smeared with mud, there are leaves in my unkempt hair, and it starts to rain. As Patrick pushes me through the woods and onto the path, a couple approaches from the opposite direction. Patrick is visibly self-conscious and meets the pair of well-bred citizens under their umbrellas with

a tight-lipped smile. All the way back through the stately lane, Patrick greets passers-by with forced hellos and eager nods, met mostly with empty stares from underneath large umbrellas. When we get into the Porsche, appropriately parked right in front of the bakery, just like the morning after we first had sex, Patrick spins the car into the fastest ever U-turn and furiously races down the Avenue, back towards the castle.

Patrick throws me down on the rug in the corner room and punches me wherever he can with a closed fist. I am still defiantly staring into his insanely furious eyes.

"I don't love you!" I yell. "I love Peter. And he loves me!"

Patrick has his fist raised, aimed to strike again, but holds it up, frozen in the air.

"*Le petit Pierre?*" he asks, using the French name for Peter. "The other one?"

"That's right," I shoot back a lot less confidently, surprised by Patrick's sudden casualness.

Patrick stops beating me and straightens himself, appearing to think things over.

"He's nice to me even when I'm not nice to him. All you do is hurt me. I'm tired of being hurt. I don't care what you do anymore."

Patrick slightly shakes his head, seems not to hear me, as though my words could hinder his concentration.

"So, you love him?" he asks, deadpan, as if double-checking some neutral fact.

Now I'm scared. Patrick, still apparently lost in thought, is nodding his head.

"Okay," Patrick says, as if he is seeing reason. "Here's what I'm going to do. I'm going to kill the little bastard."

I instantly throw myself on Patrick and cling to his neck with all my might.

"NO! You don't need to kill him. I broke up with him. I'm never going to see him again!"

"I thought you just said you loved him," Patrick says calmly, trying to peel my hands apart behind his neck.

"Only because I was so mad at you, but it's true. I broke up with him because I love you. That's what I told him. You can go and ask him if you want, he'll only tell you the same thing I'm telling you."

Patrick pries my hands open and throws me off him.

"I really hate it when you lie to me," he comments as he moves to leave, towards the door.

I rush after him.

"NO! I didn't lie, I'm telling the truth. Please Patrick, believe me. Go ask him. He was really hurt. I felt bad because I was so mean to him and that's why I was in a mood; but it really is true that I broke up with him and it really is true that I broke up with him because I love you. I just felt guilty but I did tell him I never wanted to see him again and I did tell him that I love you," I repeat frantically, breathlessly, trying to grab onto Patrick, trying to stop him. I put my arms around his waist and physically glue myself onto him. He tries to kick me off, push me off. I tenaciously cling to him.

"Patrick," I cry, "I'm sorry I made you run up the hill in the woods. I'm sorry that your shoe got scratched. I know that's what you're angry about, but I'll buy a new pair for you, I promise. I can get my father to give me the money."

"Your father can't afford those shoes!" Patrick screams.

Patrick manages to pull me off him and throws me so that I fly several feet through the air and land awkwardly on my back. I roll up onto my feet

and lunge at Patrick, who is opening the door. I grab his ankle, and, lying on my stomach on the floor, hold on.

"I beg you, Patrick, don't do this. I'm sorry about the shoe. I'm so sorry. I promise I'll never do anything you don't like again. I promise. Please Patrick. You have to believe me. Don't do this. Don't go."

"I can see that you really do love the little bastard, or you wouldn't care so much whether he lives or dies," Patrick says. "Now let go!"

Patrick kicks my hands hard with his free foot as he squeezes his body through the doorway. When he has finally freed himself, he shuts the door on my hands. The door closes and locks. I throw myself on the door.

"PATRICK! PATRICK! PATRICK!"

I bang my head against the door, trying to break through it. I bang my head hard. I bang my head hard. I bang my head hard. The door doesn't budge. I break into uncontrollable sobs. I scream. I sob so hard it seems that I will suffocate. I scream and sob and violently bang my head into the door for hours. *Peter! Peter! Peter! I love you. Peter!*

After spending the day locked up in the corner room, rotating from absolute agony to deadly stupor to frantic reasoning why Patrick would not succeed in killing Peter, I hear the key in the lock and Patrick appears, looking sickly, deadly pale, a glazed, absent look in his eyes. He throws me one stern look that says it all.

"You didn't!"

"He's dead!" Patrick yells.

"But you're going to be caught. The police are going to find out it was you."

"He died of an accident!" Patrick cries out in the same angry tone.

Even though I hear Patrick's words, and even though I know they are true by looking at him, I can't believe that Peter is dead. *Peter. Peterke. I love you. Please, be alive.*

PETER BOSMANS

(5-31-1960 – 9-12-1974)

Traveling to the town of Schoten in Belgium to do research for this book in 2005, I found the house where Peter had taken me, rang the doorbell and briefly met Peter's father. On September 12, 1974, at 4:10 pm, upon returning home from work, he found Peter's lifeless body on the floor of the kitchen of their house. The stove was turned on. Gas was seeping out. The death was recorded as an accident.

In 1967, when he was seven years old, Peter was hit by a car. The accident sent him into a coma lasting two weeks. When he regained consciousness, his personality had changed: he had become aggressive. He was never tested for a neurological disorder and subsequently never diagnosed. One year after the accident, in 1968, Peter's parents divorced, after which he never saw his mother again.

Peter's father informed me that Peter never owned a motorcycle. Peter apparently had been borrowing his friend Danny's motorcycle, and had not been able to tell me.

During my brief meeting with Peter's father, who believed his son died of an accident, I could not bring myself to tell him the real cause of Peter's death. It seemed that revealing this would cause unnecessary suffering to a man who had made it clear he had never fully recovered from his loss.

CHAPTER FIFTEEN

Castle tower,
Belgium, September 1974

With enormous cushiony black leather headphones over my ears, I cut myself a line of cocaine on the salon table, as the careful drumbeat and sparse opening riffs of a current song rap their way to the comforting blast of torrential guitar music. A sharp inhale shoots the powder up my nostril, and all the good stuff fills my head. I listen intently to the words, and become entirely absorbed in them, in the music. I live in the guitar music, as if it is the only force in the universe that understands exactly how I feel, the only vibration to which I can tune in, to which I can perfectly connect. It is so perfect.

I connect even more with the guitar than the lyrics, though they are eerily appropriate, screaming for someone who has recently passed, demanding they wait on the other side of the veil. I am swept away by the music, riding the erotic guitar wave, wishing for nothing else but that music, that guitar, the vibration of that music that has become one with the vibration of my being, intimately bonded with that unending riff, totally wild, never chaotic. Only it is not enough; I want it more, I need it harder. *Play more, play harder. This is not enough!*

Patrick, sniffing, wipes his nose with the back of his hand and licks the leftover grains off. He lays me down, pulls down my jeans and penetrates. I scoot back so my head hangs upside down off the foot end of the divan, throw my elbows back and hold the big leather muffs securely over my ears, to have sex—with the music. Just as the song comes on about the angel, which

Patrick had once described as his dream for both of us, he runs his fingers over my face. I push Patrick's hand away. His eyes widen.

Hours later, or maybe the following day—I don't know—it is daytime, Patrick once again readies himself for sex. He lifts me on his hands, staggers, and leans my back against the wall, too intoxicated and exhausted to support my weight. He pushes himself inside. I feel it, but without the love, I cannot get excited, not even with all the cocaine. *This is boring.*

As soon as I have the thought, Patrick stops and looks me coldly in the eye.

"It's boring?" he double-checks.

I stare back. He nods thoughtfully. Then, keeping me on him, he lifts me up and walks over to the large, open tower window. I wonder if he is going to throw me out, and note that the prospect of being thrown to my death fails to cause panic, nor does it cause any other particular feeling, positive or negative.

After Patrick killed Peter, I knew I could never suffer more, and as soon as I realized it, a spiritual force descended on me. I became aware of a higher power, always at work within me and without me. It was as if my suffering drew me closer to this force, more real than anything, the One in a creation of eternal opposites and multiples, never one, never just life, but life and death.

Patrick sets me down on the windowsill. He pushes my upper body out the window. I drop backwards, and experience the adrenaline rush of the expectation of the fall, but instead of falling, I hang upside down from the sill, showered by a cold drizzle, with Patrick pulling at my hips to keep me up, continuing the sex.

He can barely keep my weight on his hands; there is a real chance he will let go. I see the park and the dark green landscape far below, or rather above me. I seem to be slipping. I am slipping. Patrick heavily catches my thigh and pulls me up, but his hands are wet from the rain, and he has trouble getting a

hold. More of my weight is outside the tower than in. I may well fall. My fear is activated, and I notice that I am aroused.

It's true, I think. *This is not boring.*

By the same token, I note that whether it is boring or not, whether it is exciting or not, whether I am afraid or not, it's all the same to me. My indifference does not equal equanimity, but rather numbs anger and many other overwhelmingly negative emotions I could not possibly let myself feel; I am not unattached. Patrick has power over me, but neither of us are free. The powerful fear their love (weakness) as much as the powerless fear their power (badness), and fear ensnares everyone in their roles. The powerless want love, so, like children, they give it. The powerful take it, and, like adults, use it. True love is love with power, and true power is power with love.

Do with me what you will, I think. *Throw me out the window. Let go.* Patrick pulls me up in one sweeping motion. I sit on the windowsill, soaked and freezing. He gives me a look of tired defeat.

On the saggy divan near the stereo, about to put on headphones to listen to more music, I have this thought: *The worst has already happened to me; I have nothing to worry about.* Suddenly, a light, shining bright before my open eyes, bathes the room in unearthly beauty.

I'm on cocaine, I think. *Who knows what this is?*

The light persists. The room, the open window, the wooden sill, the gray sky outside, the white wall, the furniture—everything melts into the light. The beauty of these things, dissolving and reemerging in and out of the light is absolutely thrilling. The vibratory structure of the physical world, everything, me included, seems to flow out of this mellow yet bright light.

I cover my eyes with my hands, and am greeted by a great white sun surrounded by a golden ring in an indigo hemisphere. A vague dot appears in the center. Concentric circles begin to move, from the center outward, in ever-enlarging spheres. Watching the dazzling show of the rapid expansion of circles of light before my eyes, I am entirely peaceful, yet forewarned. Maybe the worst has not yet happened.

Villa near Bois de la Cambre, Brussels, Belgium, evening, October 1974

I have barely spent a day at school in the sixth grade. As soon as my bruises begin to heal, they are covered with new ones. After he beats me, Patrick wants to be tender, but I am too angry, and stay cold. This evening, we are in an upstairs bedroom, while an orgy is brewing downstairs. He observes my indifference, and angrily stops the intercourse.

"Why don't you go join the others downstairs? They're all there. All your little friends have arrived by now."

"My friends?

"Florence and the others."

"I don't have any friends."

"Is that so? Then what did you do before I started coming to the parties?"

"I tried to survive, just as always."

"After I started coming, you were also just surviving?"

I feel trapped, and look at him questioningly.

"You once mentioned that everything I do is just to survive, because I am a child and I have no choice," I answer.

Patrick laughs, loud, forced and cynical.

"Yes, I said that on the terrace in the South of France, didn't I? Where I took you because you wanted to go. So, the other kids didn't like you *before* you spent your time with me in the royal suites upstairs while they got fucked by old geezers in the dingy little maids' rooms?"

Wave after wave of self-loathing washes through me.

"ANSWER ME!" Patrick yells.

"It's true, they didn't like me," I mumble.

"It's funny that it took me such a long time to see why," Patrick mocks. "You are so arrogant. You just think you're better than everybody, don't you? In your sly little way, you find fault with everybody. You don't think you have to follow any rules. You're above it all. You never try to be nice to anybody. And then you're sad and shocked when nobody likes you."

I squint as his words enter like knives, cutting up my illusion of identity. Trembling with fear, my voice breaks.

"I thought you liked me."

It is as if the whole room suddenly melts. Patrick's feeling permeates it like a wave of astounding softness, and I collapse onto the floor, all strength and hardness seeping out of muscles and bones. Prostrated on the ground, I think, *you love me.* It may be only in feeling and not expressible in deeds; but I feel it, and feeling it gives me strength and the knowledge that I don't need to be liked, because it is much more important to be loved.

A forceful kick in my face throws me out of the crouched-down position onto my back, out of the mental process that led me to believe in a dream that has been keeping me alive for eleven years.

"I never loved you, you understand?" Patrick screams.

He delivers another blow to my face, and then another, and another, on my chest, on my arms. He gets up and kicks me in my side, kicks me hard all over my legs.

"The whole time I was seeing you, I was sleeping with other women. Women, girls, anybody; I fucked them. Florence; I fucked her many times. Your mother; I didn't just fuck her that one week; that kept on going. I wasn't in France for a whole month, I went back and forth, and I saw your mother in between, and many other women. I was lying to you the whole time. The whole time, you understand!"

Patrick pulls me up off the floor by the neckline of my shirt. I shield my face with my arms. As soon as he lets go of my shirt, I fall back down. He

grabs me with both hands so I hang in the air.

"Get up! Get up and walk, already. Get up and walk out of here like a man. See if you'll be as arrogant as when you walked in here, strutting and cocky like you own the fucking place, like you can just take me for granted and treat me like shit, like I'm just going to put myself out for your sake and take care of you no matter what you do to me. Get out of here; there's a party downstairs; they're waiting for you. It's time to get back to work, little whore. That's all you are, you understand? A whore. A whore with pretensions! I can't think of anything more ridiculous and disgusting than a pretentious whore. Get out already, stupid fucking whore. Get out!"

Patrick pushes me. As soon as I am across the threshold, he shuts the door with a firm bang.

Once I hesitantly make my way down the dim stairway to the parlor floor, the first person I see is Florence. She grins, in the same way Mama did after Patrick beat me up the first time. Mama also looked relieved to see my bruises, satisfied to have physical proof that I am not loveable.

Wounded animal, I want to hide, but Florence leans against the wall along which I was trying to slither out of sight, blocking the way, arms crossed, smiling.

"I'm looking for a bathroom," I say, trying weakly to get past her.

"I'll show you."

She guides me along the wide hallway. A triangular window above the front door shows a rainy evening sky. A group of two girls and one boy, all a little bigger and older than me, cross our path, exchange looks with Florence, and join us. They are secretly having fun about something. Two younger girls walk towards us and when Florence nods, they join us as well.

Florence guides our group through a large smoky salon where the orgy, in spite of the early hour, is well underway, with busy network regulars in various states of undress, hardly taking note of the children stealing along the walls. Once our group is inside the bathroom, Florence shuts the door and switches on the glaring overhead light.

“Here you go,” Florence announces, indicating the toilet.

I meekly shake my head, not understanding why the children would not just want to leave me alone. I am covered in large, dark red marks. One of the younger girls giggles. When I stare, her laugh turns hollow.

“What’s the matter?” Florence smirks. “You don’t like our company? You prefer to be with Patrick, maybe?”

I look blankly at Florence; mine is the only serious face in the room.

“See, we’ve all sort of been sharing him,” Florence begins, looking at the older girls who send her significant glances. “But you didn’t want to share, and it made us feel really sad, that you were so selfish.”

Florence makes a sad clown face, and the children laugh.

“So, what happened?” Florence continues. “Aren’t you with Patrick anymore?”

“I was just with him.”

I expect I will be ridiculed, as the bruises should make it obvious what was going on, but instead Florence gets angry, and the other children turn deadly serious.

“I’m sure you’re lying! You’re always lying. You’re such a liar you don’t know a lie from the truth anymore!”

Florence gives me an incredibly dirty look, and I am thrown back into the past, seeing her glare at me in exactly the same way, by the little Mother Mary chapel, when her boyfriend Danny and I found out she had been lying to both of us about Peter, and we had exposed her.

Florence orders the boy and the biggest girl to grab me by the shoulders; they pull me back so I am awkwardly lying on the toilet, while the other girls grab my legs and hold them down. Florence pulls down my jeans and underwear, forces my legs open and examines my privates.

“Let’s see,” she says, “if you were really just with Patrick or not.”

Her voice is controlled, but her chest rapidly lifts and lowers. She laughs a nasal sort of snicker. The other children, working hard to keep me in check, echo her laughter. My shame and humiliation over being exposed are so excruciating that I try with all my might to break loose, but the more I struggle, the more I sense Florence's excitement. Florence forces her fingers inside, masking her arousal with ever-louder snickers, enticing laughs from the other kids.

"You still don't get your period, do you?" Florence taunts. "You don't even have any hair."

Her loud cackles are rejoined by the mocking laughter of the other children. Rhythmically sliding her fingers in and out, Florence's agitation causes pearls of sweat to form on her brow and upper lip. In a casual tone she asks the other girls,

"You get your period, right?"

Each one of the bigger girls and one of the smaller ones nod affirmatively.

"I got mine when I was nine," Florence announces. "I've been pregnant already. I had to have an abortion. It was really scary and painful. I could have died. I always have to worry about that, every month, all the time."

Florence looks me in the eye, for a second revealing real pain. She stresses, "You have no idea how hard that is. You just have no idea. You have it so easy."

Florence works up a sweat, her cheeks blushing just like when she was once exposed while she was being raped. When she reaches the point at which garnering yet another conspiratorial laugh would be absolute overkill, she pulls her hand back and inspects her fingertips.

"No sperm," she concludes, shaking her head. "See? You were lying. You were not with Patrick."

"What are we going to do with her?" asks the boy.

It is the first time any of the others have opened their mouths, and I am surprised to hear a boy's voice, as if the male force were irrelevant in this settling of affairs. Patriarchy or not, The Mother has the power. Mama would have killed me early on if not for the other mother who loved me. Mama gets the men of the network to rape me. Florence once got boys to rape me; Florence's mother gets men to rape her. Florence snitches to Patrick and I am stabbed, Peter killed. Patrick is a bit-player in this drama ruled by envy: one female telling another to give up her power. I once believed that I deserved to be loved unconditionally. In the eyes of Florence and Mama, that self-esteem made me powerful in a way that girls are never supposed to be. We are to derive our power from our sexuality alone—compete for men and then manipulate them—and I have not played by the rules.

"Nihoul will tell us what to do with her," says Florence.

"Let's drag her over!" shouts one of the girls, gripping my leg in excitement.

Suddenly, my feet are forced up and swung into the air and my head falls back. I am pulled along by my hands and feet, across the room where the orgy is going on, the children laughing as they drag me. I try with all my might to lift up my head, to push my feet down and get my bearings, but this only exacerbates my fear.

The children place me down near Nihoul, who does not look too interested. As he takes a deep drag from his cigarette, he throws me a tired, sour glance, as in, "Are you never finished causing trouble?" Florence whispers something in Nihoul's ear that visibly enlivens him. My fear dissolves. My hour has come, but standing upright, self-esteem pours back into my body, molds it into a physical form of dignity, filling me with mental strength. I am ready to meet my fate.

I notice, behind the children, Patrick's figure at about a ten-foot distance. He is standing alone, casually observing the spectacle. Nihoul grabs me by the right wrist and pulls it, twists it, so my arm folds back painfully. Nihoul points his burning cigarette at my forearm, a few inches from the elbow crease.

Patrick laughs sarcastically, making it very clear: *Don't expect any sympathy from me.* Nihoul digs the burning cigarette into the flesh of my arm. I smell the hairs and the flesh burning. My being concentrates into a single thought, which flows out of my body, straight to Patrick.

I don't need you! I will survive without you!

The burn on my arm fails to register. Patrick's wide-open eyes hold me, merge with me. Just like when I first met him, the surroundings, the room and all the people in it cease to exist. The energetic flow between our eyes reveals another universe, consisting of pure feeling, all of it passing through Patrick's crystal-clear eyes, as if the iris had receded, its hard color given way for emotional clarity.

The other children, extremely agitated, move about me and block Patrick from view. Nihoul says something I can't make out, and I am grabbed by the shoulders and forced to walk with the children and Nihoul, through the salon, out of the salon, through the hallway.

Nihoul directs some of the children to take me into a large bedroom. Passing through it, we reach a smaller, hidden room without windows, with an enormous old butcher's table, chapped and scratched and black with dried blood. I am made to lie on my back, ordered to spread arms and legs, and strapped down. The boy, the two older girls and one of the younger ones are here. Without Florence to lead them, they timidly retreat towards the door. Nihoul directs them to help tie me down.

"Come closer, come closer," Nihoul calls out abstractedly. "We all have to learn."

Barely paying attention to the children, his gaze downward, absent, this is the most relaxed I have ever seen Michel Nihoul. The various parts of the pasty, nondescript businessman have integrated into a real person, with thick, dark brown hair, alabaster skin, upper eyelids dropped and greenish eyes at rest, without his mandatory jokes and sleazy smile trying to please the big shots; without his sour reactions to Patrick's orders or my defiance. Nihoul rummages through a crate he has pulled out from underneath the butcher's block.

"Let's see what we've got here," he mumbles.

Under my gaze and over my body, he passes the children various instruments of torture. A penknife, scissors, a screwdriver, a razor blade, a fishhook.

"You see," Nihoul teaches the children, "It's very easy. All you do is something like this."

He sticks something that looks like a medical tool with a cone-shaped point into my arm, close to the messy, gaping wound of the cigarette burn. I breathe in slowly, and listen to the sound my breath makes in the back of my throat. Nihoul twists the cone into the ripped skin, digging deeper. I breathe out, making the same sound against the back of my throat, listening intently.

"See?" Nihoul says casually. "That's all it is. For now. For the beginning."

He nudges authoritatively, switches instruments, and drops the teeth of a mini-rake into the wound, creating three stripes of blood. The children gasp, and shoot into action to prick and cut my arms, legs and torso. They hardly touch the skin, and immediately pull back. As I focus on the breathing, every part of my body seems to fill with oxygen. Soon, I reach a deep state of relaxation and—to my amazement—I am pleasantly high. I expect that Nihoul is going to correct the children, and instruct them to puncture the skin.

"No, but you're barely getting in there," Nihoul comments. "You have to relax a little, and then just do it. Go in. Go on."

How funny that he said that about relaxing. That's what he is doing. That's what I am doing. That's what they should do.

The room is no longer a space with four walls and a butcher's block; everything is breathing, just like me. Everything is alive and part of life, and people are the most concentrated forms of energy: beautiful, complex life forms endowed with the keenest consciousness.

My smiling eyes find Nihoul's; he looks simply at me. For the first time since we have known each other—now that he definitely, finally has the power—we connect.

Immediately, a shift is reflected in Nihoul's eyes: they look less clear, as if a curtain of slime were pulled over them by an invisible pest that lives on his shoulder, whispering into his ear, "You're losing the relaxation contest with this little brat, you idiot. You better do something!" Nihoul smiles again, this time with his mouth only, whereas the eyes remain slimy. He grabs my cheeks and plies my face into a grimace.

"There, pretty girl. Not so pretty now, are we?"

He squeezes and pushes and twists my face, having fun with the results, laughing and showing the children. I breathe. The sound changes as Nihoul pulls on my lips and mouth. I hear the breath. I listen. And I see Nihoul.

What a little kid he is! How can such pettiness, such smallness, exist in a grown man? To think of the ridiculous importance, the weight, to think of the power given to evil! O darkness! O Lucifer! Here it is, in all its glory, making fun of my face.

Nihoul fishes for a thin bar of warped steel, like a drill bit with a square tip, which comes flying towards my eye. I squint, and feel the metal ripping skin as it hits my cheekbone.

"There, a souvenir," Nihoul jokes. "Go on," he orders the other children. "What are you waiting for, an official invitation?"

Nihoul is back to his Nihoul-role, forced by the creature on his shoulder to act funny. The room is a room again, with a bare light bulb hanging from the ceiling, and I see my bruised, bloody body being attacked by frightened children. Nihoul looks so bland, he is hard to describe, except that with weary eyes and a wrinkled white shirt with rolled-up sleeves, he looks like he has had a long day at a stuffy, smoky office.

Nihoul's hand touches the inside of my right thigh. *Surprise!* I have seen Nihoul make out with pretty teenagers, sixteen or seventeen, but never noticed him being sexual with younger children. *I never thought of this before.* It makes me appreciate him a little bit. I am thinking that maybe he has a backbone after all, if he hasn't raped little children just to belong. *But what is this hand?*

"Look at this!" Nihoul exclaims, observing the stab wounds on the inside of my knee. "Your boyfriend tried to make you like himself. How touching."

Nihoul smiles to remind me of Patrick's betrayal, reminding me that though Patrick may have threatened to kill him when he once made an innocuous joke about me, here he is now, and Patrick is not killing him, but Patrick is letting him kill me. *Ha ha.*

In the German mind control facility, I was strapped down frequently and learned to withstand anything, but there was always a specific purpose to the torture there. It was to get me into a state, to get into my subconscious mind and unlock parts of my brain so I could do something specific that would serve some purpose. But the purpose there was not to kill me.

I am close to feeling. I could easily cry. I could let myself feel the pain over Patrick's betrayal, Nihoul's cruelty. I could remind myself that I am the child. I could think about the fishhook which painfully pulls and stretches the skin from the inside, bruises before it rips; or I could think about the blood flowing from several dozen wounds, creeping all over my skin, tickling like mad, and I cannot wipe it off. I could realize that I am powerless. But if I do that, I will slide into the role-play. Then I will be powerless, and Nihoul almighty. I will be one side of the coin, and Nihoul the other; one divided into two, inseparable, bonded by the play, by the lie. I would love him, because I would give him all my power. Tonight, I have seen Nihoul looking like a human being, and I have appreciated him; I have gotten on his wavelength, and could easily begin to hope that connecting with him in a mental space where no one else would, and understanding him when no one else does, would spark some feeling in him—at least enough to keep me alive. My love for him would fire up my hope for his love, for his benevolence, and render me incapable of believing that he really means to hurt me, that he really wants to torture me to death, which in turn will make me incredulous, more stunned with every blow; in short, a wide-eyed victim.

Nihoul, for his part, would take good note of my disbelief. Right inside those wide-opened eyes of mine, he would see the lie. He would know that I know better, even if I don't. If I slip into my role, then Nihoul can play. For me, the feeler, the play would seem increasingly real. *What is wrong?* I would

think. *I love him but he keeps on hurting me. It's not fair!* I would feel increasingly powerless, as my signs are unseen, my cries unheard. For Nihoul, the player, only his power would seem real. He would have the advantage of point of view, a godlike detachment from the events being played out. Heads getting rid of Tails. Whereas I would feel horribly trapped, Nihoul would experience a rare bout of freedom. When he first strapped me down, Nihoul was free from the gnawing pressure of the gnat droning orders in his ear. He is trying to free himself again, but for all his casualness, he is totally caught up in his part of the lie. But if I don't play my part, maybe I can die free.

I stare defiantly at Nihoul: *You think you have me now, don't you? You don't have me. You never will.*

My defiance is met with the familiar gaze of sour resentment. He shakes his head as if trying to shake the expression off his face. He ducks, noisily rummages in the torture tool bin, lifts out a strap with nails, and furiously digs the nails into my right arm, underneath the deltoid, systematically stabbing, hitting several points at once, creating an armband of blood.

"What are you waiting for?" he shouts to the other children. "Get down to business already, or you're next!"

They do as they are told. Nihoul, after puncturing the circumference of my right upper arm, hands the bloody nail strap to the girl across from him at my shoulder level, and she copies Nihoul's job on my left upper arm.

Nihoul picks an apple corer out of the bin. He raises his arm up high and hits my right leg, around the scarred knee area, the upper thigh. He whacks away at my shin, hits the bone. I resume breathing in. And breathing out.

The girl who is putting the nails in my left arm unties my wrist, to better reach the inside of my arm. I lift my forearm, to test if it is still working. The younger girl directs a penknife at my raised forearm. I can tell that, because of Nihoul's temper, she wants to try to stab me hard. Looking intently at her, I mentally shout, *Do it!* She lunges, and the knife hits, and sticks. When the girl sees the knife stuck by itself in my arm, she panics, and, not knowing what to do, she tries to pull it out, and in her terror, twists it.

A tremendous, deep, raw pain enters and spreads through my entire body. My nerves awaken, and it is as if I am being stung by thousands of giant bees at once. The stinging and singeing are intolerable, but the torture does not stop; Patrick is not here to save me; there is no light before my eyes, nor any comfort from beyond. I bite my lip in a last attempt to fight off identification with my body, fighting back the tears pushing through tightly shut eyelids.

My return to the play has not failed to attract Nihoul's notice, and through a blur of salty tears I see him smile, as in *I'm finally beginning to get through to you.*

He nonchalantly throws the apple corer over his shoulder.

"I have an idea!" he pronounces. "Since your boyfriend didn't even get you to limp, why don't we do him a favor and finish the job for him?"

He looks at the boy, who has been poking my right ankle with a screwdriver.

"You, go to the kitchen and bring me a cleaver. Or a saw. We're going to cut off her foot."

Turning to me, Nihoul adds, with great satisfaction, "So you can hobble along, like your boyfriend."

The boy hurries out of the room. I glance at my right foot, trying to ignore the bloody mess on my shin. I am bleeding profusely, covered with wounds of different shapes and sizes all over the front of my body. Nihoul seems to be considering the same, because he says, "There, children. Help me untie her. We're going to turn her over."

When the straps are undone, I involuntarily turn to the left, away from Nihoul. I try to lean on the butcher's block but don't have the strength to heist myself up. My left arm barely looks like an arm. I realize that, whether or not Nihoul is going to hack off my foot, I am going to die, because I will never heal from these wounds.

The older girls pull me up. As I sit, dazed, looking down at the disgusting, chapped butcher's block, which now has plenty of my blood that will mix in and blacken, a flash of all the children that were murdered here passes before my eyes, and knowing myself to be next, the horror sets in. *This is really happening to me. I am being murdered. I am being tortured to death because nobody cares whether I live or die.* I am one of the faceless, nameless ones, passing away into oblivion, because no one loved me, not even enough to keep me alive, not even enough to keep this from happening.

I see Patrick in my mind's eye, and see him how I saw him last, connecting—at least I thought—on this ethereal level, on which—at least I thought—we always connected, from the beginning. But if that last look did not even make a difference, if Patrick really does not love me, if I have just been dreaming, then I guess there is no telling if there is anything besides this world. I don't know if I will continue to exist in some form or just be wiped out. *I don't know anything anymore.* I don't feel ready to die.

"Push her down already!" Nihoul cries, extremely annoyed.

Nihoul forcefully pushes me down himself. The bruises get hit, the wounds scraped, my chin hits the wood. *But why is Nihoul so annoyed?* I wonder.

Nihoul is in a horrible mood. He furiously, quickly, ties the straps around my ankles and wrists, all four of them, much too tight. I am surprised it is all going so quickly. Nihoul had mentioned something about going slowly, because it was just the beginning. I don't know how long we have been in this room—half an hour, one hour?

"No, no!" Nihoul cries impatiently. "You have to go into the muscle. Otherwise she doesn't even feel it."

I feel a sharp stab of something going deep into my left calf muscle, throbbing with pain, which makes me move, which makes everything hurt. A few seconds later I feel the same in my right calf muscle. The children continue to poke me, but Nihoul turns away from the spectacle, brooding. I am exhausted, but curious. I would like to know why Nihoul is in such a mood.

The door opens. *That's it. The boy is back with the cleaver. Now my foot's going to come off!* I think, but I hear the voice of an adult, one of Polo's friends.

"Okay, Michel. You can let her go now. That's enough."

"You're joking."

"Nope. That's it."

Nihoul furiously unties the straps.

"You're making a big mistake," Nihoul warns the man exiting the room. "She's going to give us trouble."

MICHEL NIHOUL

(4-23-1941 – 10-23-2019)

Arrested on August 15, 1996, Michel Nihoul was one of four defendants in the Dutroux case, dubbed the Belgian pedophile scandal in the press. Four murdered girls and two survivors were referred to by the New York Times as "the victims of a deadly pornography ring." *(New York Times 9/96).*

In the fall of 1996, several survivors of the network approached investigators of the Dutroux case, testifying anonymously under the code name X. Michel Nihoul featured prominently in all the X testimonies. The testimony of X1, Regina Louf, stood out because of her extremely precise, detailed descriptions of network activity in the 1980's. Investigators linked Regina Louf's testimony to several unsolved child murders involving Michel Nihoul. In October 1996, the magistrate in charge of the Dutroux case, who eagerly promised the public to "get to the bottom of this," was fired from the case, causing protests around the country. (New York Times 10/19/96) Soon after, X1/Regina Louf's investigators were put on leave, and remained so even after the complaint triggering their dismissal was found unsubstantiated.

On January 27, 1997, it was decided to reopen the investigation into the unsolved murder of Christine Van Hees, which regained attention thanks to the testimony of X1/Regina Louf. On February 13, 1984, sixteen-year old Christine Van Hees was repeatedly raped, tortured, and finally set on fire. The original murder file already contained leads to Michel Nihoul and Marc Dutroux. These leads were neglected, and yet the same examining magistrate who handled the case from 1985 onward was placed in charge of the re-investigation. It should have been known by the Belgian judiciary that this magistrate's sister was godmother to the son of Michel Nihoul, and that he furthermore had once acted as a lawyer for Michel Nihoul's longtime girlfriend. Moreover, this magistrate thanked his appointment to the extreme right-wing political milieu of Michel Nihoul and friends, which his

investigation should have scrutinized. In 1998, the Van Hees murder file was once again closed. The other unsolved child murders brought back into focus by Regina Louf's testimony were left untouched, and by then the statute of limitations had run out on all of these cases.[1]

On October 22, 2001, a file named *"Dutroux-bis,"* was officially split off from the Dutroux case. The Dutroux-bis file contained all the X-testimonies, as well as thousands of hairs and trace evidence which did not belong to any of the victims or defendants, found in Marc Dutroux' car and dungeons.

On March 19, 2001, Newsweek Magazine published an article titled: *"Justice Delayed in Belgium."* Three years later, on March 1, 2004, eight years after the bodies of four murdered girls were found, the Dutroux case went to trial. Because of the notoriety of the case, the trial was moved to the city of Arlon, where the public and thousands of journalists who could not fit into the courtroom could follow the trial on large video screens.

In April 2004, the Belgian journalist Douglas De Coninck published a book titled: *"30 Witnesses Dead: Those Who Won't Testify at The Dutroux Trial,"* tracing, in great detail, the activities of thirty people who were either about to reveal "something big," or to deliver important testimony in the Dutroux case, but who were murdered, inexplicably committed suicide, or died in suspicious accidents.[2]

On June 17, 2004, the Dutroux trial concluded. The lawyer of one of the surviving victims stated, "Three quarters of the questions we had at the trial were answered with, 'We don't know, but we are going to investigate this in the Dutroux-bis file.'"

Michel Nihoul was found guilty of the minor charges of peddling false documents, dealing drugs and trading in stolen vehicles. *(New York Times 6/18/2004)* Even though the majority of the jury deemed Nihoul guilty of complicity in the kidnappings of the young victims, the judge ruled Nihoul not guilty of that charge. Nihoul received a five-year sentence for drug dealing

and gang formation, and was granted early release less than two years later, in April 2006.

On November 26, 2004, months after the trial, the Dutrouxbis file was officially closed, without another trial, and without any new information being released to the public.

Michel Nihoul published a book titled *"Rumors, Facts"* to clear his name, and enjoyed minor celebrity status for the remainder of his life. He joked that he was a WC, an acronym for *Wallon* Connu—Known Walloon—but WC is also the acronym for Water Closet and the commonly used term for toilet.

---

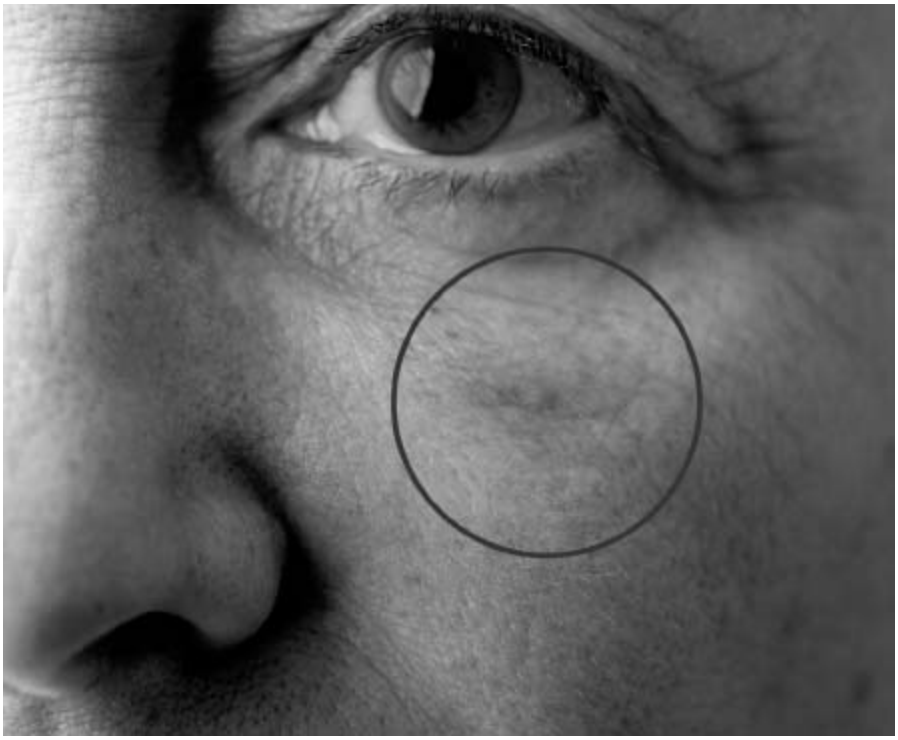
1. *From the book by the French Title: "Les Dossiers X: Ce que la Belgique ne devait pas savoir sur l'Affaire Dutroux," Flemish Title: "De X-dossiers: Wat België niet mocht weten over de zaak-Dutroux" (The X-Files: What Belgium was not supposed to know about the Dutroux Case) by Annemie Bulté, Douglas De Coninck and Marie-Jeanne Van Heeswyck. Publisher: Epo/Houtekiet, copyright 1999*

2. *Book by the French Title: "30 Temois morts," Flemish Title: "Dode Getuigen: dertig mensen die niet zullen spreken op het process-Dutroux"(30 Witnesses Dead: Those Who Won't Testify at The Dutroux Trial,) by Douglas De Coninck.*

"Nihoul grabs me by the right wrist and pulls it, twists it, so my arm folds back painfully. Nihoul points his burning cigarette at my forearm, a few inches from the elbow crease. [...] Nihoul digs the burning cigarette into the flesh of my arm."

"He [...] drops the teeth of a mini-rake into the wound, creating three stripes of blood."

Photos taken in 2022, 48 years after the wounding. Notice the circular, raised burn mark (with arm similarly positioned), and, in the close-up at right, with scars from the "mini-rake" towards the bottom right.



"Nihoul fishes for a thin bar of warped steel, like a drill bit with a square tip, which comes flying towards my eye. I squint, and feel the metal ripping skin as it hits my cheekbone."

Photo taken in 2022, 48 years after the wounding. As I grew up, and over time, the scar moved from the cheekbone towards the middle of my face.

"The younger girl directs a penknife at my raised forearm. [...] She lunges, and the knife hits, and sticks. When the girl sees the knife stuck by itself in my arm, she panics, and, not knowing what to do, she tries to pull it out, and in her terror, twists it."

Photo taken in 2022, 48 years after the wounding. This scar moved about 4" as I grew, from about 2.5" above the elbow, up towards the middle of the left forearm.

"Nihoul picks an apple corer out of the bin. He raises his arm up high and hits my right leg. [...] He whacks away at my shin, hits the bone."

Photo taken in 2022, 48 years after the wounding. Right bottom leg. Notice the scars from right below the knee down the shin, the vertical depression at the center, and the white, patterned scarring from the apple corer.

"Under my gaze and over my body, he passes the children various instruments of torture. A penknife, scissors, a screwdriver, a razor blade, a fishhook."

My right wrist and top of forearm. Photo taken in 2022, 48 years after the wounding. The two marks on the top left are from a fishhook; the white mark on the top right is from a screwdriver; the vertical line is from a razor blade, and the marks towards the bottom of the vertical cut were made with scissors during my torture in 1974 led by Michel Nihoul.

CHAPTER SIXTEEN

Night, villa, Belgium, October 1974

A strong metallic taste imbues my mouth. I am lying face down in a pool of blood, running from my wounds in narrow gullets, dripping steadily off the butcher's block.

I am horribly exhausted. *Maybe I should close my eyes, and then maybe I'll just drift off, sleep.*

And bleed to death.

I'm not ready to die.

I wriggle my toes. The right foot hurts as though it were crushed. There is pain in my ankle. The burn stings more than anything else. The pain in my right shoulder is severe. The left shoulder hurts as well. I raise myself up on my hands and knees. On my arm, a purulent, sticky brown wide-open hole looks frightening. I break into tears. I don't know how long, but I sit there on the butcher's block and cry. Blood keeps flowing. Tears keep flowing.

I shuffle to the edge, but the floor looks like it is too far down. I slide, sink down onto the floor. Crouched down, I raise my head to look for my clothes, and remember they were pulled off in the bathroom, ages ago, by the children.

I spot the familiar little pile of my clothes in the corner. At first, I can't believe what I see. When I crawl over, it is clear that everything is there, even my underwear. I break into tears again. Sobbing uncontrollably, I am overwhelmed with feelings of gratitude that one of these children, who had been pushed to bully me and then forced to participate in my torture, had the thoughtfulness to bring my clothes here. It reminds me that no matter what we need to do to survive, we child victims are always connected to each other.

Incredibly, I can get up, and though I am lightheaded, I can slowly walk. I exit the door into a bigger room. There is the beginning of a thought, but it can't form, as I have no energy for thoughts. I enter a lavatory. My hand has deep, bleeding scratches from the fishhook and I turn on the tap to let the cool water mingle with the blood.

Looking in the mirror is hard. My skin is blue-gray, the color of death. Blood runs from the wounds, but some cuts and scratches are drying. Bloody pulp emerges from my left arm and right shin. I carefully pull on my underwear, then the jeans. These are wide-legged jeans that don't irritate the wounds; I am overwhelmed with gratitude for this, and more tears flow. My navy-blue t-shirt hides the blood stains. It does have short sleeves, showing my arms. *Oh well.*

As I gently open the door into the hallway, I see Patrick, leaning against the wall, holding a girl on his hands, having sex with her.

Patrick notices me, puts the girl down, zips up, and pats her naked bottom, thus sending her away.

"Come along," he says to me. "I was waiting for you."

Walking beside Patrick in the hallway, I feel calm, and grateful that someone waited for me.

Patrick slows down to my pace. Blood is seeping through my pants.

Patrick guides me into an office with a large desk, and gives me a little pinch before removing his hand from my shoulder. *Pay attention!*

Awaiting us are the young girl with whom Patrick just had sex, Polo, and his friend who stopped the torture, who is acting as if he were here on some other business. It looks like Polo is at home here, that this is his own office.

Patrick closes the door, goes to stand behind Polo, and leans against the wall, hands behind his back.

Polo looks me up and down, one hand lightly positioned on the desk, drumming his fingers, pinky to pointing finger, a few riffs, observing my

condition, calculating something.

He takes a deep drag from his pipe, blows out smoke, and speaks.

"All right. Here you are. So, your life was saved. But this is not what we do. We don't begin this type of thing and then stop and then you're free to go. There's a price to pay. Someone is going to have to die. Who that's going to be, is up to you. It's going to be you, or her."

Polo points to the little girl.

I have an intense craving for chocolate.

I don't want to know which answer I am expected to give. And if I had a choice…I really would like to have chocolate.

Patrick catches my eye and smiles encouragingly. He looks nervous. I look up at Polo, checking to see if I might ask for a last meal. Polo raises his eyes to the ceiling and rolls his head impatiently: *Decide already.*

Angry, I think, *Don't expect me to hurry up.*

I observe the girl to see if she can give me a clue. She is maybe eight or nine years old, slight build, thick wavy dark brown hair, and thick, long bangs. The frame of her hair almost swallows her tiny face, which is quirky, delicate, with brown eyes and very thin lips that tremble as she purses them shut and squints her eyes in an involuntary grimace of fear, oddly resembling a smile.

I stare into the floor, trying to sense what is expected of me. When Polo asked ten children to choose between their lives and the lives of ten rabbits, nine children immediately chose to give their lives for the rabbits, yet no children were killed that day. But all the rabbits were.

When I was trained in Germany, it was also made very clear that if I made the "wrong choice," my punishment was having to observe what the consequences of my choice would be for the intended victim. The "right choice" made me feel all the more evil, and I think that was the point.

I think I know what I am supposed to say, but I would like to not have to say it. I become aware of a hasty rhythmic patter in the room. Patrick is restlessly tapping the heel of his foot on the floor, and when I raise my gaze he gives me another cheerleader smile. *He was having sex with that girl, right in the hallway, right outside the door out of which he knew I would appear. Now I have to decide who is going to die, the girl he was just having sex with, or me.*

The patter stops. I look at Patrick again and he smiles knowingly, relaxed now, happy. I shoot him an accusatory glare, which he acknowledges with a look that is amazingly sweet and loving, the way he used to look at me, a long, long time ago. I stare at the floor and nudge towards the girl.

"Her," I say to Polo in a near-whisper.

"That's why we like you," Polo comments flatly. "You always make the right choice. But you're going to have to kill her."

Bathroom, villa, Belgium, night, October 1974

Patrick sets me down on the sink of yet another lavatory in this house. He carefully takes off my clothes, and wets a dark-colored towel. When he is about to dab it on my skin, he hesitates, just for an instant, but I see in his eyes that he is wondering if I am going to live. He decidedly brings the towel to my left arm and shakes his head: *You're in bad shape, but I can handle it.* He dots the area around the gory armband, wiping up lymph and blood to reveal blue, blue skin. The towel keeps lapping up more blood, and Patrick gets busier, swiping more towels out of a cabinet. He uses wet ones, dry ones, binding my left arm, binding my right leg. He carries me out through the hallway, the lobby, and out the front door to his parked car. He unlocks and opens the door, carefully placing me in the bucket seat.

When he is behind the wheel, his eyes cloud over, and he looks sad.

"We're going to meet them and some of the others at somebody else's house."

He puts a hand through my hair and sighs.

"You'll do fine. I'm going to be with you every step of the way."

During the ride, every one of my breaths is a belabored sigh, and my eyes move strangely about in the occipital orbits. The anticipation of taking a human life, a child's life, is more torturous than any physical torture could ever be.

I don't understand how I could possibly have ended up in this situation. For me, the price to belong to the most exclusive club in the world was to kill. I had been invited in about a year and a half ago, after I had heard all about my glamorous future and had been praised and admired for my sensual performance by a select group of powerful friends of the Big Shot. The induction ritual was to end in a killing. I knew then as I do now, that in the network there is no point in refusing to kill when you are ordered. I had discovered at the start of this part of the training in Germany, that attempting to save the victim by refusing, only ensures that the victim will suffer more. This is why, during that induction ritual, I had to through with it. But the next time I saw the Big Shot—who felt that I was the luckiest girl alive to have crossed paths with him—I defied him. I was unwilling to pay the price, unwilling to sell my soul to the devil, unwilling to kill to be part of the secret gang that forms the world's elite, who put their own slaves and puppets in roles at the top of the global power structure of privilege and entitlement.

It was clear that if I were to accept the future for which I had been so expertly trained and prepared, owned by the Big Shot networker and paid off with celebrity status and riches, organized child murders would occur again, and I wanted no part of it. However, when I broke with him, I was only rejected from the inner circle of the global network, not from the outer reaches, where the Belgians did their best to copy their role models with psychopathic traditions such as satanic ceremonies and exit rituals.

After a twenty-minute ride, Patrick parks in a private driveway and we walk, slowly, up a path towards a white villa, partially hidden by a cluster of evergreens. The autumn moonlight shows that the informal garden is sparse but well-tended. A network regular opens the door of the brightly lit lobby, cold and empty. The man stares blatantly as Patrick ushers me in. My clothes are hardly a decent cover, so stained are they with blood; the bulk of the towel around my leg is visible under the jeans; the towel around my left arm has turned a disgusting brown; my right arm is covered in ugly wounds, and my blue skin is covered with dark gray bruises. Another regular meets our host; the two of them mockingly observe me. One turns to the other.

"She's the one who's supposed to...?"

He doesn't say "do the killing" out loud. The friend snickers and gives the host a meaningful look that makes it clear that I am not meant to survive.

"Come on!" Patrick calls angrily as he pushes past the two regulars, sending them a quick, disdainful glance down his nose.

The two men's eyes follow Patrick and me as we file into a hallway. *They weren't intimidated,* I realize, stunned. *They weren't afraid of Patrick at all.*

Patrick turns his head and gives me an embarrassed, apologetic look.

We enter a large chamber on the ground floor, covered with industrial wall-to-wall carpet, impersonal billows of dusty transparent curtains and dim fluorescent lights. The girl has been tied to a flattened dentist's chair, three tan vinyl pillows mounted on an ivory metal frame atop a single round pedestal. She is naked, exposed to a small group of men of five or six regulars including Polo, but not Nihoul.

The girl and I are the only females here. The men, distinguished-looking members of a dying patriarchy, pretend to lazily lull about, as if they are casually discussing, smoking, their whiskey goblets posed on narrow metal stands in the same ivory as the dentist's chair.

As Patrick and I enter, followed by the two regulars who were at the front door, Polo throws me a tired, almost angry look.

Patrick guides me to an area off to the side that has a black leather sofa and plain chairs arranged in a semi-circle around a glass-topped salon table, much like a dentist's waiting area—which it might have been, before the wall came down. Patrick pulls a clear plastic bag out of his pocket, pours cocaine onto the glass table and begins to separate the lines.

The group encircles the girl. Tension pervades the room like the whirring blade of a circular saw, flown off its hinges and spinning in the air above everyone's head, ready to plunge down and attack the next victim. No one knows for sure that they won't be next. Fear is everywhere; and when the perpetrators strike, they beat the blade. It's the network match: strike, strike, strike, strike and don't miss, because the ball is a blade.

I take a rolled-up hundred franc note from Patrick and sniff both big white lines off the table. The cocaine eases the mental torture and freezes the pain.

Patrick kisses me, and I kiss him. I escape into feeling his love one more time. All that goes through my mind is how long it has been, how long it has been, how much I missed this, how much I missed him, how much I love him.

"Mon amour. Mon amour. Mon amour. Mon amour." I whisper.

I give myself to Patrick with utter abandon, utterly focus on him until I absorb his essence and he becomes the sole object in my existence. Everything else vanishes, and soon I am locked in the familiar cocoon of intense sensual intimacy.

I overhear a comment of someone who has drifted away from the dentist's chair.

"What an idiot. Sold his life. And for what? For that dumb little bitch. I'll never understand such folly."

"I understand it. Just look at them. Look at that," someone responds.

"What are they talking about?" I whisper to Patrick.

"Oh, nothing," Patrick responds with an embarrassed glance.

"What did he mean, 'You sold your life'?"

"It's nothing. I'm just going to go to work for Polo. That's all."

"For life? For the rest of your life?"

Patrick shrugs.

"I guess I didn't want you to die after all," he laughs sheepishly.

I now understand what Polo was calculating when he sized me up in his office after the torture.

"But if I die, then you don't have to work for him…."

"No, no, no, it wouldn't change anything. It's all set. I'm going to work for him no matter what."

"But no. If I die, then you don't owe him anything."

"All right, children," Polo's voice booms as he approaches us. "It's time you two shot into action…or at least, a different kind of action."

Everyone laughs. Even the men around the dentist's chair utter appreciative chuckles. Polo, indicating the Gillette razor blade Patrick used to split up the cocaine, thunders in an exaggerated showman's tone of dismay, "You've got stuff right here on the table. Here's another one. Get moving."

Polo throws a large fold-out barber's razor on the table and turns on his heel, heading back towards the victim. Polo is clearly ordering Patrick around, making him feel who is boss in front of everyone, letting Patrick know exactly what he has gotten himself into with his silly sentiment for me.

Some of the regulars quickly exchange mocking glances. As Patrick sets me down, the pain and frustration over the humiliations flash in his charron blue eyes. Then, he puts his attention on the two razor blades, inspects them in the relaxed manner of an expert, gives me the barber's razor and guides me

to the dentist's chair. Patrick is completely at ease as he observes the girl. Polo and the other men hold their breath as they watch Patrick in tense silence.

"What you do," Patrick explains to me, "is you tune in with the girl at the very moment you cut her. The cut is going to tense her muscles, and if you're feeling it, your muscles are going to go into a spasm, and that is going to feel nice. Like this, watch."

Patrick approaches the girl with great deliberation, energetically moving towards her, pulling away in subtle physical ways, skillfully performing the dance of attraction. He is the star of the show, and the audience is enthralled.

The girl locks eyes with Patrick. Patrick smiles at her. As she smiles back, Patrick, without taking his friendly eyes off hers, slashes her thigh, as if saying, "See? I'm doing this, but don't take note; the cutting is not important; what is important is that I like you." The girl keeps her eyes glued to Patrick's, still surrendered even as her muscles bulge and her body tenses in shock.

Patrick casually turns to me.

"See? Did you feel that, too?"

I did not. Being tortured was so easy compared to this unbearable tension, this intolerable mental torture. A myriad of thoughts invade my mind; the voltage in my brain is a million times what it should be. My head must be about to explode.

"You try," Patrick says, turning to me and sticking his tongue deep in my mouth.

"OH NO!" Polo roars. "You two are not going to start again!"

Though Patrick obediently stops kissing, he laughs.

"Why don't you try?" he asks me again, still amused.

Where should I cut her? I don't want to cut her!

"Use what you feel," Patrick says, putting his hand on my behind, sliding his fingers to my genitals.

Breathing shallowly, I bring my arm forwards. The long handle of the barber's razor keeps me at a relative distance; it must be why Patrick chose it. When I was tortured, the cuts in the middle of the quadriceps, at the exact front of the leg, bothered me the least. I aim for that spot and cut, immediately entering a state of enormous confusion and dissociation. Nevertheless, I see the girl's muscular reaction and empathically feel the shock she feels, and I feel Patrick's fingers, and a shock ripples through my body.

"See?" Patrick laughs in my ear. "You're just like me."

Patrick whisks me away to the waiting area.

"Where do you think you're going?" Polo calls out.

"We need more coke," Patrick replies impassively. "You guys have fun."

I snort up the coke with the greatest, longest, deepest inhale and engage in savage sex with Patrick. His gaze fastened on mine says that he loves me more than anything or anyone on earth.

During our trips to the dentist's chair, the girl's body is covered with increasingly more neat, narrow cuts inflicted by razor blades, and round brown burn marks from cigarettes. The men don't try to catch her eye, but stare at her genitals, gathering up erotic steam and anger so as to strike and experience a thrill. She stares up, out into space. Only when Patrick gets near does she move her head to be able to look him softly in the eye, and Patrick looks straight back at her with a warm smile.

A sensation settles in me, of being in a lake of mud, struggling to move, drowning, surrounded by monsters trying to rip me apart. Though not a single ray of sunlight has seeped through the flimsy curtains, it seems like I have been in this room—in this lake of mud—for several days before the familiar voice with the extra decibel of someone used to addressing crowds announces, "Alright, children. Stop playing now. It's time for serious business."

Sitting on Patrick's hands, I turn and see Polo standing in front of the salon table surrounded by all the men. With great bravado, he pulls a dagger out of its sheath. Patrick puts me down and whispers.

"There you go, little one."

Solemnly, Polo hands me the unsheathed dagger, the blade pointing upwards.

"Watch out. It's sharp."

I stare at him as the men laugh softly. Patrick encouragingly taps my shoulder.

"You can do it, little one. I know it. You're just like me."

"Just cut her throat," Polo says, sounding bored.

I hold the dagger up as it was given to me, and examine the fat, rounded, shiny chocolate-colored wooden handle with an inlaid bronze scroll. The handle feels smooth. The back of what appears to be a 10-inch long blade looks like the bone of a feather: thicker at the bottom, the steel sprouting out of the bronze. Though the handle looks antique, the blade looks new, with crisscross marks along the cutting edge. I carefully stroke four fingers across, while my thumb runs up to the point. It is very sharp.

Polo sighs impatiently, looking as though he regrets making such a big deal of presenting me with the weapon. It was just a joke. Now let's move on with the show already.

I look him in the eyes, thinking, *It's not a joke to me.*

Polo answers my thought with the same tired, angry look he shot me when I first entered this chamber, as if I have it much too good; too much fuss is made about me, about my life. To him, I am nothing but a nuisance, not worth the trouble. I am nothing.

My thought response is: *I am human.*

Polo angrily fastens his gaze on mine, and our combined concentration creates an intense fusion. I seem to absorb Polo's entire being, as if his soul were pouring out of those doggish eyes. In a flash, I remember what Polo told me after he once beat me black and blue, "Get out of here. You're so dead there's nothing to be done with you," and I now understand he was speaking of himself.

To him, the whole world is lifeless. He imagines himself riding a mighty dragon, sword ever at the ready, chopping down every stirring of real life to make it fit into his cardboard fairy tale. Everything is a show; and he really does have a flair for the dramatic.

In the same flash, lasting maybe a second in all, I get a sense why Polo went so far out of his way to make me scream, ordering the bugs, securing the house and Nihoul, setting up the scene in the cellar. To one who knows no love, nothing seems real except himself and his power. It's fun to ride a dragon. It's fun to play, but if Polo doesn't win, he is suddenly hanging on to the underbelly of his galloping mount. From the vantage point of the dragon's gut, everything on earth, all those creatures down there, become a bit too real, stirring his greatest fear, that he is more worthless than all the slaves and plebeians combined. If he is not on top, then his grand persona, which makes him appear more lively than everyone else, collapses together with his whole cardboard world. And all that is left is a weak little boy, so hurt he is beyond the capacity to feel pain. And because of that, all his feelings are dead.

Polo's energy retreats back into his body, and he suddenly looks sad—like a dog that knows it can never be human—and tired, from steering and maneuvering, forever trying to stay on top of that mighty beast.

Patrick's hand is on my shoulder, gently goading me on, like a mother would her child. In a world mothered by insecure men, women are the children fighting for the parents' attention, killing each other if they must. Mama wants to kill me, so I will be out of her way and the men can pay attention to her alone. Out of my unrequited mother love has sprung my love for Patrick, which got me here. I will do what pleases him, which is what pleases Polo, a dead soul leading a deadly, deadening show.

There is no way out. I know I can't refuse or this poor child's end will be made even worse. I do have a plan, but first I have to go through with this. I do not want to do this; and I know that I cannot do it and also live with myself afterwards. So I will die. That is my plan.

I begin to march like a soldier. Without thinking, I put myself in motion to rouse dormant energies. Pace firm, I circle the victim tied to the dentist's chair. Images roll before my mind's eye to stir up anger this girl could never inspire, images that feed those dark energies that are usually only stirred in defense of one's life, when fear of death creates a hormonal storm of aggression to kill the enemy. I march like a soldier to bring myself into the state necessary to carry out my plan. As I march, I can't even feel weakness or pain from my wounds anymore. Situations from the past in which I wished I could have defended myself float through my mind. All the men of the network pass the revue. I see them looking at me the way they looked at her tonight, like a collection of legs, thighs and genitals. I remember countless faces, countless scornful gazes. I see the icy stare of the sterile Gaspard, the clumsy first-timers acting like I am so adept and they are so adolescent, the charmers needing eye contact, confusing me with their coy looks, connecting as if they saw me, the way Patrick looked at this girl tonight.

I recall the hundreds of men who came into that little room with the dirty mattress in the mansion. And not one of them said, "No. This is a child. I cannot do this. I came to this event but now I'm alone in a room with a child and I will not stoop to this." *Not one of them ever stopped himself!*

My pace picks up as I become more agitated, furious at all the men who did not stop themselves from committing a crime against me. I am furious. Everything and everyone in my life has pushed me to this moment, to this act. I am completely enraged, even if all my anger is finding expression through a coerced, externalized channel, in the same way every networker is drawn over that boundary from which there is no return.

I am furious at Mama! She never once relented the slightest whenever she saw a chance to inflict subtle mental or life-threatening physical pain. I remember when she pulled me by the hair to drag me to the network; when she stuffed me full of Valium. I see scenes roll by from when I was little up to

just a few months ago, in which Mama blamed me, yelled at me or threatened me, while my offenses were either non-existent or completely incommensurate with her reactions or punishments. I see Mama in hundreds of situations. And never did she show any tenderness, never did she give me any love. I see Mama calling out, "You thought you could have them all!" as she was lying under Patrick.

Mama never stopped herself!

This girl is not Mama!

Shallow, panicky breaths overtake me; a vague, choppy scenario plays before my mind's eye. In these rapid images, I announce that I am not going to go through with this. Polo is livid and wants me to suffer maximally. I am strapped onto the chair and my torture begins again. The scenario continues: the girl is killed before my eyes, and Polo makes sure that I witness that it is a painful and agonizing death, to show me just how wrong my choice was. Would I be sure that I did the right thing then? She is not going to live, and I am the better executioner, because I will be quick, because I never wanted her to suffer.

I am now in a big funnel, together with all the villainous, creepy, murderous thoughts flowing through the earth's ether; I am swirling with all the dark entities feeding off these thoughts, taking over the bodies and minds of tragic humans diving into this dark, downward-spiraling stream. I have dived into the lies that have been attached to me in my eleven years on this planet by deadened adults; adults who had the same lies attached to them by deadened adults; lies straight out of the dark ages, all cascading down, descending into these rapids, into this fall....

I wish it was Mama strapped to the dentist's chair! It would then be easier to go forward with this darkest of dark actions. *Mama had sex with Patrick!* Another flash of Mama's exultation: "You thought you could have them all!" I remember the expression on the girl's face sitting on Patrick's hands. *That is how he holds <u>me</u>! That's our special way of making love!*

Now she is lost to me; that look in her eyes is my mother as she gazes lovingly into Patrick's eyes, thrilled to finally have this *thing,* whatever she

believes I have and she doesn't. The same insanity that besets my mother and parents and lovers and killers has overtaken me; the innocent girl before me is not the innocent girl before me. *Mama, what did you do to me? Mama, what did you do to me? Mama, what did you do to me? Mama, why did you have me! I hate my life! I hate having to be here! I hate myself! I want to kill myself! Mama!*

I raise the dagger high up in the air, holding it in both hands, stretching my arms up high. My anger and its accompanying dark stream of thoughts now have me fully identifying as the victim, no longer bogged down by responsibility or accountability and nothing left to stop me. My mouth opens and I hear a strange sound, the unrecognizable sound of my own voice. A scream, so loud it fills the whole room. It is solidified in the air; it freezes everything and everyone here. It is a thing apart from me, emerging from me. My eyes roll up and back in their orbits as my gaze disappears inside my head. All is darkness.

Time slows to a near standstill, each nanosecond dense, charged with the fullness of a new experience: paradoxically, the more the knife lowers, the more of my burden is lifted. All my pain, physical and mental, all the suffering I have had to endure, all the pain of my mother's betrayal, all the pain of Patrick's betrayal, the unbearable weight that Mama made me carry, the unbearable weight that Patrick made me carry—in my pure victim state—now rolls off me.

My role as the grown-up in a world of infantile adults is finally, for once, completely turned inside out. I feel it now, what it is like to be innocent, to be an infant. I feel what I should have felt when I was first born. I am in the very first stage of life, the stage I could never experience, the stage I could never leave behind, the stage I sought in Patrick's arms, in Peter's arms; the stage of life that I need, that everyone needs, to feel alive. I feel light and free and limitlessly powerful, floating in a sea of bliss, not quite of this world, not quite of any other, now happily drifting, like a baby, without the responsibility to make Mama happy, without having to love Mama, without having to please her, without having to survive. This state of pure power is far more intoxicating than any high I have ever experienced, including the insane, drug-induced states designed to shape me into a crazy sex thing, including the hallucinatory sex with Patrick. This state pervades my entire

body with such incredible power that all trillions of cells are equally infused, equally magnetized, equally vibrant. This power is so pure and rich that only those who have been made aware of their powerlessness as repeatedly and unrelentingly as myself could fully appreciate it. I have never experienced such freedom.

The very core of the addiction of all my perpetrators, the essence of the delusive nature of this realm, all that is false, all that which leads erring humans astray, everything power is about, the idea of freedom sought through all the traps set out in the world to pull humans down into the domain of Satan, away from God and truth and love—this dark chasm is opened wide before me, engulfing me. I experience the most extreme high, the most powerful substitute for true love, in this dense, dense moment in which everything that makes me human is lost to the beast. The beast has been set loose. The beast has free reign. The beast reigns.

The blade plunges heavily into the girl's body, slicing through her lower belly. I hear the dull thud of the point hitting bone. The knife stands vertically, the blade incised below the navel, across the pelvis. I now have killed myself before birth. I now have killed my mother. I now have killed this little girl. I am now ready to die. With my last strength, I pull the enormous dagger out of her flesh. I fall, and all goes black.

CHAPTER SEVENTEEN

Villa, Belgium, October 1974

Oh, how soothing, the stillness. My energy slowly, gradually, retreats from the senses. I don't know if my eyes are open or closed; my sight is gone. I don't know if my mouth is open or closed. I don't feel my tongue touching the roof of my mouth. My mouth has no taste. A very faint string of breaths still keeps me attached to life. I hear a rumble of male voices; Polo's voice is louder than the other men's, shouting orders to Patrick. The voices fade out, and I wonder if my sense of hearing is gone. I assume that my breath is soon going to stop, and the thought brings a little bit of fear.

A familiar light appears. Beautiful, inviting, it expands into a large sun that rests peacefully before my eyes. I am not afraid anymore. This light is my home. This light has always been my home, more so than life on that other plane, boxed into time and space…a little box…I am ready to leave that little box, to go back into the light.

I hear Patrick's voice clearly, right beside me.

"Annie…Annie…Little one. Come back. Come on. Come back."

Oh Patrick, my love, I think. *If I came back, you would have to go to work for Polo.*

"Allez, ma petite…Don't go. I don't want you to go. Please."

I cannot feel Patrick touching me, but I have the sense that he is doing something with my body. The light is still before my eyes, but I seem to be floating, or tumbling, in the air.

"Okay, that's enough now," Patrick says decidedly. "Come back now. It's been enough. *Ma petite* Annie…Come on. *Allez…Come* back. Do it for me."

As I hear Patrick's soft sobs, I wish I could comfort him, tell him I am so fine. I wish I could let him know that I am closer to him than ever before, and that even when I leave, I will never truly leave him.

As I unhurriedly wait to pass through the light, Patrick's sobs are abruptly interrupted. He gasps.

What is that? Why did he gasp?

The energy in the room is entirely changed. Patrick is intensely focused on something. My mind drifts into attunement with his, and I realize that the girl, whom he believed dead, has stirred. Patrick is too scared to move. Patrick, I sense, decides to wait it out. He figures that she will die. But the girl stirred. The girl is not dead. I am not dead either, but I don't stir; I don't need help. The girl is holding on to life because she cannot die; she needs help. The sun is still shining before my eyes, warm as ever, inviting as ever, and it seems that I know what is happening in this room because the light is telling me everything. The light, increasingly personal and familiar, is telling me everything for a reason. The girl needs help, and Patrick is not going to help her.

I don't want to help her! I want to help Patrick!

Patrick is not going to help the girl. I can't lie here with the same peaceful feeling, with the same happiness and readiness to depart, knowing that this girl needs help and no one is helping her. If no one else will do it, I will.

All right! I think, angry, addressing the light, which I feel is prodding me to do this thing I don't want. As soon as I accept the task, I become aware of my lips lightly touching one another. The electricity has been switched on again, and the energy is flowing outward, through the senses, back into the physical world. Pins and needles make me aware of my fingers and toes. I take a breath, aware of my chest rising. I take a deeper breath. And yet another. I lift my fingers lightly. I can move. I open my eyes. Darkness, apart

from the internal sun, shining clear as ever. A blur appears. A black grid. White fluorescent light behind it, truly lit by the gold of the vibrating sun.

I turn my head. I hear Patrick gasp again. I see the body of the girl. A still outline in a halo of gold. Everything appears as formless—I can't make out shapes—but I know it's her. We are both lying on the floor. She is maybe six feet from me. An endless distance. I turn over onto my stomach. *The effort.* I do not want to do this. I liked my plan to die, which would have also helped Patrick. It was a beautiful, romantic plan. It might have worked. And here I am, in spite of myself, getting up again, to help the girl.

I place my right hand flat on the floor. I place my left hand flat on the floor. I push up both arms at once. I sit on all fours. I move one hand over to position myself facing the outline on the floor, and nearly fall. I have no pain, but every tiny move requires superhuman effort. I move my hand one inch. I move my other hand one inch. I feel like giving up and collapsing. I move one knee one inch. I move the other knee one inch.

No pain. *How strange, that I feel no pain.* I try to move forward again, but fall. *The effort.* I see the outline of the girl, unmoving before me, bathed in the light of my internal sun. I place my right hand flat on the floor. I place my left hand flat on the floor. I drag myself forward on my elbows. I fall down. *The effort!* I inch forward like a snake, scooting a knee forward, flopping my hands in front of me, pulling myself forward, dragging the lead weight, the incredible load of my body, over to the formless pale shape lying on the floor. When I notice the big bob of dark hair on one end of the shape, I drag myself towards it. I reach her side, exhausted.

I look into her face. Her eyes are open. She is dying; she is nearly dead, yet she is pleading. All feeling that had been shut out comes flooding over me. I want to cry, but a strange, sweet force is holding back my tears, balancing my energy, helping me concentrate on the task at hand, guiding me. I am not tired anymore, but alert. It is as if the great, gentle force of love imbued every particle of the atmosphere within and around us, and that this love, eternal and omnipresent yet deeply personal, is guiding me. I attune myself to the force, coming from the light.

"You're going to go, you know," I say simply, supported by this energy of incredible, unconditional love that is shining through my heart, and the divine compassion that is effortlessly flowing through my gaze.

Her eyes widen slightly, in fear.

"You don't have to be afraid," I say. "It's better, to go. You're the lucky one. I'm going to have to stay here."

I motion to the room, our world.

"You'll see a light. Do you see it already?"

Ever so slightly, the girl nods, as if she does not want to acknowledge that she is seeing the light, as if she is afraid of the light, as if the light were death.

"Well that's good," I say with an encouraging smile.

The girl's little mouth smiles weakly.

"You're going to go through the light," I specify. "You'll still be you."

This, it seems, is what the girl needed to hear. That she would still be. That she would not cease to exist at the moment of death. With the light right here before my eyes, simultaneously shining through me and guiding my every move, my every word, it seems only the most natural thing; of course, we exist eternally, without beginning and without end.

The girl's eyes let go of mine. Her gaze turns upward, becomes absent, as she prepares to die. I sit with the girl, gently caressing the spot between her eyebrows with my thumb. I don't know why, and I don't know how long. A fraction of a thought wants me to feel deep grief, but the light stays my feelings, as if urging me to remain in this state of calmness and deep peace, so that I can be a better instrument of service in this moment. The internal sun remains shining before my eyes, vibrant, more real than ever, closer than ever. When the sun lets me know that I can stop rubbing the girl's forehead, I remove my hand.

The light expands. *Oh.* It suddenly dawns on me: it was so hard to crawl over here because I was still selfishly attached to my little plan, dying for

Patrick. I was battling the ego, which always wants to get its way, which always tries to keep us tied to the lower realms.

Suddenly, I am showered with shafts of glittering golden rays emerging from the internal sun, which envelops me like a celestial dome. Bathed in the greatest, sweetest love, I experience a long-forgotten joy, incredibly uplifting, without excitement, because this joy is the expansion of peace. I am aware that I am physically lying on the floor in the room even as I am lifted amidst the dazzling abodes into the sphere of light.

As my consciousness passes through the ether, a figure begins to materialize inside the source of the light. Though instantly familiar, I cannot tell whether it is a man or a woman, but I do know that this is the manifestation of the consciousness that has been lovingly guiding me, present since before the beginning and throughout life. Long black hair flowing over ochre robes. The most beautifully sculpted face I have ever seen, with bronze skin gleaming more radiantly than the most precious metal. Knowledge of worlds upon worlds emanates from wide-set, bottomless black eyes, each twinkle suggesting volumes of profundities. In this gaze, I see the most extraordinary pride, which is the willpower, the inexorable determination of one who never gave up in his search for truth. Woman or man, this is the primordial source of beauty, truth and love: The Teacher.

I prostrate myself at the Teacher's feet and bow, ineffably happy, feeling completely understood and loved. My state of bliss is that pure happiness sought through various states of intoxication in life. Intuitively, I absorb the knowledge that this unconditional love is more subtle, and it takes much personal effort to reach, but it offers the freedom sought after in the other ecstatic states—the bliss consciousness which we are, behind the veil of the world, behind our psychology, behind our circumstances, behind our human bodies.

About ten extremely beautiful beings, their features refined by self-control, right actions and noble thoughts, their faces glowing with serenity and intelligence, appear around the Teacher. The girl is also here. She is being commended on having passed a very difficult test, but it is made clear

to me that this is not my business; I am just to know—for my own benefit—that she is here, and that she is well.

The Teacher's gaze bores through me, eyes dancing with indescribable mirth.

"Now do you understand?"

Instantly, I am taken back to a past well before this life, in which I had been unable to find any love or understanding for those who hurt or kill children. Now that I have just experienced the essence of that energy, it is clear that it can serve as a catalyst to find that understanding, and expand my love to include all.

The Teacher divines my burning wish, *Can I stay?* The answer is immediate; I will have to return. I receive images that clarify why. Visions of future events roll before my eyes; multi-layered purposes are revealed, about my life, about this experience. I receive everything instantaneously, outside of time; and each piece of information is consistent with a particular present or future need.

I wonder about Patrick. If I have to return, will I be with him, in the near or distant future?

"After tonight, you will not see him again," says the Teacher.

"Who will love me?"

"You have divine love; you want human love as well?"

Through the irony, through glorious beauty, through straightforward truths, the Teacher is speaking directly to my nature, expressing the aspects to which I am most drawn. Thus, I understand that I am loved no matter what I have done, and this knowledge I will have to find once again as I return to the world and live my life, even as I bear the guilt over the murder; guilt so enormous it will be a mental disease. I will need to learn to love and understand myself in order to learn to love and understand others.

My audience is drawing to a close, and longingly, I take in the beloved Teacher one last time. I bow before his feet and before the exalted beings. I stay prostrate. I stay prostrate for a very long time. I don't know how long.

PARAMAHANSA YOGANANDA

(1893-1952)

Swami Yogananda brought the teachings of yoga, and particularly the sacred technique of Kriya Yoga, to the West. He is the founder of Self Realization Fellowship (SRF) / Yogoda Satsanga Society (YSS) of India, the organization disseminating these teachings. He published the book *"Autobiography of a Yogi"* in 1946 and spent the latter years of his life writing commentaries on the Christian Gospels *("The Second Coming of Christ")* and the Hindu Bhagavad Gita, *("God Talks with Arjuna"),* offering intuitively perceived, spiritual interpretations to these scriptures.

CHAPTER EIGHTEEN

Villa, Belgium, October 1974

Lying on my stomach, I lift myself up to lean on my hands, and I hear quickly receding footsteps behind me. I open my eyes to see the white flesh of the bloody remains of the girl, and swivel round to avoid the sight.

Patrick, cowering in the corner of the den, stares wide-eyed at me. I bound up and run over to the narrow space between the wall and the sofa where he is taking refuge. He sticks his hand out to stop me from getting nearer. I realize that I jumped up and ran over fast, and when I glance down at my body, I notice that all the wounds have stopped bleeding. Not only that; they are much smaller, and clean and dry as if I have been healing for at least two weeks in optimal conditions. The bruises are all gone. My skin is clean and glowing luminously. I have gained a few pounds.

Patrick stares at me as though I were an apparition, which I guess I am.

"It's just me," I try.

I advance towards Patrick, who adds another hand to his barrier and gasps, "No!"

"Did you see the light?" I ask.

"No, nothing. Don't tell me about it."

There is something very different about me indeed, not only my physical appearance. I am treading lightly. The awareness of the body of the girl, and my failure to die after having killed her, is creating a split. While I have just had an experience of Truth, I am now back in the relative, dualistic realm, my consciousness tied solely to this world—a world in which I just killed a girl, and where I will have to live knowing that. I want to flee from that knowledge, and this flight makes me light as a feather.

“You know, it was wonderful. There were beings there, and I was told….”

“I SAID DON’T TELL ME ABOUT IT.”

“Could you just listen for a second….”

“SHUT UP! I don’t want to hear any of that nonsense.”

“No, but you’re into science, right? Why wouldn’t you want to listen when you’ve got scientific proof right here?”

I anxiously indicate my body.

“Just leave me alone,” Patrick says in a threatening tone.

I move my hand to Patrick’s face; he violently swats it away.

“Patrick….”

“GET AWAY FROM ME. LEAVE ME ALONE.”

“But Patrick, I love you.”

“LEAVE ME ALONE. ARE YOU DEAF?”

“I’m just trying to tell you what happened. I’m not doing anything to hurt you.”

I reach out and touch Patrick’s cheek. Patrick flies up and hits me in the face before he runs off and yells, “You made me do that!”

“What are you doing?” I sob. “Are you going to just leave me here?”

“You give me no choice.”

I run after Patrick, crying, holding my hand over a freshly bruised cheekbone. Patrick stands glued by the door, hand on the handle.

“Patrick, please. You can’t do that,” I say in tears, vaguely indicating the dead body.

“Why not? You killed her.”

I turn away and break down in heaving sobs.

"But I didn't want to do that! I had no choice, and if you wouldn't have… influenced me."

"Oh, you're going to blame me for that now?"

"I'm not blaming you for anything; I'm just…I'm just…."

"You're just what?"

"I can't think of it right now."

"Okay, go and wait for me outside the front door. I'll take you home."

Patrick opens the door with a stentorian glare. Overcome with sadness, I leave my guilt-induced state of denial, breeding ground for hypocrisy, arguments and violence.

I sit down on a round, smooth rock under big fir trees, feeling the sweet air and balmy breeze on my skin, smelling the trees, especially fragrant after the rain, and feel deep gratitude for life.

I hear Patrick rummage by the car and try not to think about what he might be doing. After what seems like a half hour or so, Patrick calls me and I timidly approach. He leans over the roof of the Porsche, his face ashen, visible even in the brittle first light of a cloudy dawn. He gives me a heavy, stern look in which I recognize tremendous pain and guilt.

As we drive off, Patrick stares stoically at the road. Once we get onto the brightly lit expressway, it starts to rain again. I listen to the sounds of the rain, the moving window wipers, the car motor. About fifteen minutes pass. Then Patrick speaks in a detached, authoritative voice.

"Okay, here's what you have to do. You're going to live with your mother, in that family, but you have to get out of that house as soon as you can. When you're fifteen, sixteen years old, you should move out. Then eventually, you have to get out of the country. In the eighties, you won't want to be here, you'll just have to trust me on that. Move to London, Paris…New York. You should study English and move to New York and live there.

"You should never become a prostitute. Never take any money for sex, never let a lover give you any money, never have sex to get anything from anybody. Never do it. Wear decent clothes. It can be sexy, but keep it simple. Don't wear the frilly, lacy stuff that whores wear. As for drugs, you can take anything as long as it's given to you, but never buy any drugs yourself, and never do anything for anyone to get drugs. That includes, of course, sex. You understand? And don't become an alcoholic, either. You can have a drink, or two, or three, but make it wine, and don't drink hard liquor often. Twice a month will do for liquors and cocktails.

"You should marry. Make sure it's not an older man who made his own money. Marry a man your own age, from a wealthy family."

With an amused smile, he adds, "Preferably a family of New York bankers."

I begin to whimper.

"Now you need to stop crying and listen, because this is important. You understand?"

I cry harder.

"STOP CRYING ALREADY AND LET ME SAY SOMETHING! YOU HAVE TO STOP CRYING NOW."

I stop crying.

"Alright, you have to forget everything. Forget Polo, forget everyone you've come across at the parties, forget the parties and the places where you were taken, forget where I took you, forget me. Never say anything to anyone about this experience, you understand that? Never."

I nod, and tears flow again. I'm still crying when we reach the driveway of my family's home, and when Patrick stops the car, without turning off the motor, I cry more.

"Now you have to stop crying and go inside."

I shake my head, covering my face with my hands, and mumble, "I need you to hold me one last time."

I lean in and rest my head on Patrick's arm, certain that I am entirely unlovable and he will physically remove me from the car, but he puts his arm over my shoulder and sighs. I reach my arms around his neck, scoot onto his lap and embrace him. Patrick switches off the ignition. I am not consciously aware of a deeper motive, but it seems vital to feel all the closeness I have experienced with Patrick once again. With the awareness that this really is the last time, I absorb his familiar odor, like a mammal recognizing its own. With unrivaled presence of mind, we reconnect through sex. His lips quiver against my cheek. We remain glued together, unmoving, enjoying bliss—not the pure bliss I experienced not long ago, but an emotional union that would engrave Patrick's directions deeply into my consciousness, so that in the future I would follow them, no matter what.

When I open my eyes, daylight filters clearly enough through a heavy mantle of clouds, momentarily holding the rain. As I move to open the door, Patrick stays my hand.

"I'll come and look for you, in New York, ten years from now."

I look down, avoiding Patrick's eyes.

"So we can be together as a couple," he adds with a soft chuckle.

In his survival instructions guided from beyond, that had him speak like an oracle, Patrick carved no space out for himself in my life. I am never going to see Patrick again. I look at him. His eyes glaze over. He laughs self-deprecatingly as tears roll down his face. He puts his hand over his eyes and, between sobs, utters, "Forgive me."

He quiets down and we become still.

"I love you," I answer.

The misty daylight persistently creeps through the gray clouds, and I notice, over Patrick's shoulder, a man passing on the dirt road at the bottom of the driveway, walking a dog.

“Don’t move,” I whisper.

Once the man has passed and a few more seconds have elapsed, Patrick says, “Did they see us?”

“I don’t know. He looked at the car. I guess I should go now, before someone else passes, or my mother comes out the door.”

“I couldn’t care less about your mother,” Patrick says, looking at me intently, sadly. “Wait….”

He opens the glove compartment and removes a little plastic bag. He inspects its contents and then hands it to me. There are pills inside.

“If it gets tough, in the coming days, maybe weeks, take one. It’s like heroin, so never take more than one at a time. No, maybe just take a half; that will be plenty for you. And certainly not more than one half a day. And try not to take it every day, or not at all. But if it gets too difficult, it will help.”

I silently communicate my gratitude. As he absorbs it, his features become imbued with profound wisdom, while his eyes look physically larger, cleared up. We sit for a long time in peaceful silence, savoring the intimacy, until I move to get out of the car.

“There’s something I meant to tell you, but I never did,” Patrick says. “But I always wanted to say it to you. I don’t want to hide anything from you.”

I remove my hand from the door handle.

“It’s very hard to talk about, though,” Patrick says with an insecure laugh.

He glances uncertainly.

“I told you what my father did….”

The ensuing pause seems too long, so I say, “He stabbed you.”

Patrick chuckles.

"But I couldn't tell you why...."

Silence.

"It was because he found me. In bed. With his wife. With my mother."

I picture the twelve-year old boy Patrick in the impossible situation he just described, with an incestuous mother, violently punished by his father, saddled with all responsibility, with all the blame, all the time, with every step he takes entrenching the lie that it was all his fault. I am overcome with sadness and love for this young boy, confused by the physical pleasure, made to feel he had seduced his mother.

I am flooded with memories of things Patrick has said about women, remembering his anger when he would call them whores. On the other hand, he became like a little boy after the first time we'd had sex, apprehensive and insecure. No wonder his views on women are so polarized: his is the quintessential story to activate a mother-whore complex, when trauma splits the sexual predator mom off from the idealized mother figure on the surface.

Being made into a sexual partner by his mother must have pushed him to act more macho—a child trying to prove he is a man. I see that my mother must have been a stand-in for his own, and that he took on the role of his own father by sleeping with her; the role of the scary male adult. I'm sure Patrick never healed from that trauma, and in his urge to be relieved from that extremely twisted burden, passed it on.

"First he was going to kill me," Patrick says. "He held a gun to my head, but then he changed his mind...."

I think of Patrick holding the gun to my head. I think of Patrick telling me about holding the gun to the heads of the men that he kills. I think of Peter, and understand that Patrick killed the young rival he himself once was, and that he killed a part of himself with Peter.

I ask, "But why was your father so mad at you, and not at your mother?"

Turning beet red, Patrick averts his face.

"I guess he felt that I betrayed him."

After a few dense seconds, the puzzle pieces fall into place, and Patrick's impossible cycle comes into view, in which he has to betray to shield his parents from their betrayal of him. Indoctrinated with notions of a ridiculous secret bond of loyalty between so-called male friends, he runs from the emasculation brought about by his father straight into the creepy arms of his mother where he has to be a man, never a child. His innocence and self-esteem compulsively, secretly and violently robbed by both parents, Patrick robs—that is to say he makes his living compulsively, secretly, and violently. Pushed into crime and pedophilia by his own father, Patrick loyally plays his assigned role of the bad guy while his parents get to look decent.

For the whole time Patrick has been speaking, I have just listened, but now my hand floats to his head and I stroke his hot blushing cheek, his beautiful face, so ashamed.

I freeze. A cluster of people is treading down the path, nearing the driveway. They are dressed in outdoorsy rain gear; all have backpacks, and a few carry walking sticks. I bury my face in Patrick's neck and cover it further with my hand, peeking through my fingers, because three or four people are staring blatantly in our direction.

"There's a lot of them," I whisper.

Several more people pass the unguarded lawn, bordered by a thinning row of young birch trees on both sides and open to plain view in the front. It seems all the trekkers, without exception, are interested in the car, or what is going on inside.

"How many?" Patrick whispers back.

"About twenty…at least."

After the second or so it takes for Patrick to fully appreciate our situation, he lets out a muffled snort. I am also finding it hard to contain my mirth.

"They've stopped," I report. "About five of them are staring."

They stand at a distance, enjoying the sight, not of pastoral plains or deciduous forest, but of a small Porsche with two people inside, sitting very close together, one sitting on the other's lap, or at least one would surmise.... "What might they be doing?" "Do you think...really?" I seem to follow their bits of conversation by watching their body language, and sure enough, there come the roguish grins. I press my body more deeply against Patrick's, bury my face entirely in the curb of his neck, and kiss it. Patrick keeps absolutely still as my hand strokes the entire front of his body. *Could I?* Yes. As I rhythmically move on Patrick's lap, he keeps still, apart from his hands, which lift me up and down. I peek over his shoulder at our audience. One man, wearing a floppy little rain hat, has dropped his jaw and gapes, mouth open wide. The other men seem no less shocked. They are glued to their spots. A lady approaches the stationary group of men. She places her hands on her hips and frowns, wearing a condemnatory expression as she addresses the men. Still in a daze, they unglue themselves and robotically follow her. Slowly, very slowly, they continue on with their promenade, looking back for as long as they possibly can, staring, staring, staring. Finally, the whole busload is out of sight. Patrick stops making the effort not to move. Several more unsuspecting walkers, taking advantage of the rain reprieve on this Sunday morning, pass the driveway before we are done.

We sit in stillness for a long time. I lightly kiss Patrick's lips and get out of the car. Before I close the door, Patrick silently says goodbye, gravely serious, sending a look full of longing and greatly tender.

I walk towards the house, repressing the urge to keep looking back, unnecessarily dragging out the pain of separation. But once I have turned the corner onto the little dirt path towards the unlocked back door where the parked car would disappear from view altogether, I turn, catch his eye and savor, for the last time, the deep and effortless intimacy I have known with Patrick Haemers.

PATRICK HAEMERS

(11-2-1952 – 5-14-1993)

PAUL (POLO) VANDEN BOEYNANTS

(5-22-1919 – 1-9-2001)

Paul Vanden Boeynants, popularly called VDB in Belgium, started out as a butcher. He quickly built a meat-processing empire. In 1948, he joined the Conservative Party and in 1949 was elected into Belgian Parliament. He was council member for the city of Brussels from 1952 until 1995. From 1966 until 1968, he was Prime Minister of Belgium. From 1972 until 1979, he was Minister of National Defense. During his tenure, he supplied entire army units with new weaponry via large international contracts. He tried to reform the army and militarize the state, but large public protests put a stop to his plans. From 1977 until 1979, he led the extreme right wing CéPIC organization, which was disbanded after conflicting interests were discovered with the fascist militant group *Front de la Jeunesse* (Youth's Front). In 1978 Vanden Boeynants once again became Prime Minister for one year, while simultaneously maintaining his post as Minister of National Defense.

In 1978, Patrick Haemers was sentenced to 3 years of prison for the rape of a prostitute. He served 14 months of his term. In October 1981, he attacked a bank in Deerlijk, Belgium. (This is generally believed to be Patrick Haemers' first robbery, rather than that this was the first time he was caught.) His father, Achille Haemers, was spotted in the environs of the branch during the hold-up. The booty (350,000 BF) was retrieved from Achille Haemers' car. The father admitted he was near the bank, "to prevent his son from making a mistake." In June 1982, Patrick was sentenced to two years of prison for the hold-up. His father was acquitted.

In March 1985 Patrick married Denise Tyack.

On November 4, 1985, Patrick Haemers and his gang robbed a postal money transport in Verviers, killing two postal employees: a 30- year-old mother of two, and a 31-year-old man about to become father.

From 1982 until 1985, Belgium was terrorized by a gang (French: *Tueurs de Brabant;* Flemish: *Bende van Nijvel)* that killed a total of 28 and wounded over 40. In the fall of 1985, the gang focused on a popular chain of large supermarkets, killing anyone in sight, including children.
On November 9, 1985, only five days after the deadly robbery in Verviers, at a supermarket in Alost, nine-year old David Van de Steen saw one of the killers' mask fall off, before being shot in the hip and leg. David lost his entire family to the shootings and became crippled for life. Upon seeing a photo of Patrick Haemers later on, he instantly recognized him as the man who shot him. Strangely, even though David Van de Steen has never doubted himself, the judiciary and the press have never believed him. Many questions surrounding the terror attacks and the subsequent police investigations remain unanswered to this day.

Also in 1985, Paul Vanden Boeynants was convicted of fiscal fraud concerning 137 cases of tax evasion and forgery. He was ordered by the court to pay a fine of a half million Belgian Francs (about 12,400 Euros) and was given a prison sentence of three years, suspended by the court in view of his "services to the state." The conviction had embittered Vanden Boeynants. He was quoted as saying, "I was treated like dirt. [...] I will never, ever forget this."

In 1986, Patrick Haemers was once again arrested and imprisoned, a suspect in nine armed robberies.

On August 13, 1987, a small group of armed men, with the help of Patrick's wife, successfully staged Patrick Haemers' escape from prison during a transfer from court. The two guards in the transport vehicle were shot in the legs and remained disabled for life.

In 1988, while the appeal process of Paul Vanden Boeynants' conviction for fiscal fraud and forgery was ongoing, the minister of Interior Affairs refused to confirm Vanden Boeynants' appointment as mayor of Brussels, which he had reported to a colleague to be his "lifelong dream."

On January 14, 1989, Paul Vanden Boeynants was kidnapped. One month later, after a ransom of 63 million francs (about 1.5 million Euros) was paid, he was released. Not long after, he gave a widely attended press release, wearing sunglasses, claiming the light bothered him because he had been chained to a wall in a dark basement. Referring to himself mostly in the 3rd person as "VDB," he said he'd given himself courage with the mantra, *"VDB, tu ne vas pas crever!"* (VDB, you're not gonna croak!). The press and the entire country were enthralled; Vanden Boeynants was more popular than ever, and was treated as a hero. A song was released titled *"Qui (M'a Enlevé?")* (Who Kidnapped Me?) using soundbites of Vanden Boeynants' super-dramatic voice at the legendary press conference.

Two investigators for the Paul Vanden Boeynants kidnapping got on the trail of Patrick Haemers. Their numerous, convivial conversations with Patrick's father, Achille Haemers, eventually led them to the fugitive's hiding place. They described the series of events that led to the capture as miraculously slipping through the system, as though they were not meant to succeed. On May 17, 1989, Belgian public enemy number one Patrick Haemers, his wife Denise Tyack, and a friend were apprehended in Rio de Janeiro. In the following days, the Belgian press descended in droves on the office of the Federal Police Commissioner in Brazil where Patrick Haemers gave interviews. He admitted to his role in Paul Vanden Boeynants' kidnapping and also in a series of hold-ups, including several with fatalities. He remained in custody in Brazil for almost one year and was extradited to Belgium on April 1, 1990.

Early 1993, Paul Vanden Boeynants' record was officially cleared. His good name was entirely restituted, and any charges and further investigations into fraud, forgery, drug trafficking and suspected corruption in army equipment

purchases were dropped. He immediately ran for Mayor of Brussels, but did not win the election.

Patrick Haemers remained in a Brussels prison for three years in solitary confinement. His trial for the kidnapping was scheduled for April 19, 1993, but he arrived in court only to be told that his trial was delayed. On May 14, 1993, shortly before his trial, Patrick Haemers allegedly committed suicide in his prison cell by hanging himself from a 4'3" high radiator. He was forty years old. No autopsy was performed, nor was anyone allowed to view the body.

On October 25, 1993, at what was termed the "Trial of the Century" by the Belgian press, six months after Patrick Haemers' death, with other members of the Haemers gang as defendants, Paul Vanden Boeynants magnanimously "forgave" his kidnappers.

Paul Vanden Boeynants retired from politics in 1995 and spent his last years as editor-in-chief for a satirical magazine. He died in 2001 of pneumonia caught after cardiovascular surgery at the age of 81.

Note: The above information was compiled by the author over a number of years from books and various Flemish, Dutch and French-Belgian mainstream articles and interviews. Certain elements were never addressed in these materials, such as Vanden Boeynans' desire to become mayor of Brussels as a potential motive for staging his own kidnapping. I included only what I was able to verify using more than one source, or quotes made by the subjects in filmed interviews.

EPILOGUE

The weeks following my rescue from the network were difficult. My mother, whose name was Sabine Michielsen, (1939-2019), was unhappy to have lost her income, as well as her main method to keep me under her control. With visible reminders of network abuse in the shape of large scabs all over my body, my mother kept me out of school, yet continued to aggressively ignore the obvious. Just as during our previous drives to network gatherings when I had received a powerful script that *what was happening was not actually happening,* so too, my wounds did not exist as far as my mother was concerned. To get a sense of such a mindset, and how it is possible to be deluded by it, perhaps it could be compared to being pick-pocketed, or swindled. Thieves often create a similar illusion, catching you inside a thought trap where all is well, as if they are just a passer-by or a friendly citizen, confusing you even as they steal from you. Or in another example, I remember a yoga guru who molested his victims in plain sight, in front of an audience, and no one batted an eye, as if *what was happening was not actually happening.* Everyone was as hypnotized, under the spell of this guru considered too elevated do be doing anything wrong. This profound level of gaslighting is not that uncommon.

When in those weeks after my rescue I verbally confronted my mother about how I had obtained my wounds, it only roused her impulse to silence me at any cost. After one strangulation attempt, and one final trip to the network behind the back of the leadership, my mother regained her control over me by sexually assaulting me. My shame over this assault was so great that I split, and gave up. Without any room for truth, without any mirror or context, the prohibited reality gradually escaped from my conscious mind, and I slipped back into placating behavior, accepting my mother's fantasy in which she was the perfect mother. Everything that did not fit that narrative simply never existed. After the scabs fell off, physical scars remained, but I was so dissociated I barely noticed them, let alone wondered how I had gotten them. Everything connected to the network, the early incidents that had been revived when Patrick had asked me about them, as well as the

trauma Patrick himself had inflicted—and which I had shared with Peter—everything was gradually pushed down into my subconscious mind. Ultimately, Patrick himself had insisted that I forget everything, including him. While I knew him, I would have never believed it possible, but I did forget him, or it would be more accurate to say that the memory of him was repressed, even though my sense of self, my beliefs, thoughts, and actions were influenced by him.

My mother was never diagnosed as mentally ill. It was in fact barely recognized that something about her was off. At most, people might have judged her for her compulsive flirtations and overtly sexual behavior, likely symptoms of sexual trauma. However, by today's standards, in the way that massive brainwashing has pushed the entire Western world into unbridled sexual focus and addiction, such behavior would still not be generally recognized as an unconscious symbolic repetition of some aspect of a previous sexual trauma. In my mother's case, I believe that a young, girlish part inside her was constantly trying to feel loved by being sexual with all men, cardboard stand-ins for the Father, placing her in direct competition with all females, cardboard stand-ins for the Mother. As far as I can tell, my mother's emotional life, which motivated her every word and action, was stuck inside an impossible incest triangle.

According to my mother, her parents had been perfect. Nevertheless, when in my early years in therapy I would try to confront her with anything she might have done that was not perfect, she would scream that I had no idea how bad she'd had it. When I would query her about what, then, had happened to her, she would become vague and fall silent. I do know that she was born in in 1939 in Belgium near the Dutch border, and that the town where she grew up suffered famine during the Second World War. Her father was held as a prisoner of war in a German concentration camp and returned home in 1944. In 1945, weeks before her sixth birthday, her mother died in childbirth. If she was a victim of incest, I can imagine that after her mother's death, any negative feelings towards her mother (for not protecting her from abuse?) would have been locked away behind many thick layers of shame. My mother's intonations were often those of a five-year old girl, and while she only ever uttered praise about her mother, all other women received only

criticism from her, at least behind their backs. With me, her own daughter, her black and white thinking went between seeing me as evil and all-powerful (the "bad" authority) and a bland receptacle for her abuse (the little girl part in her who carried the blame for her own experience of abuse). It seems clear to me now that once upon a time, my mother must have made the firm decision to never again feel shame. This resolution, while it surely protected her from all the uncomfortable, confusing and painful feelings hiding behind shame, made her shameless.

My mother's prevailing need to believe that she was good, and her drive to prove it, caused her to project a powerful spell onto her environment in which no proof to the contrary could exist. In this way, my mother was a lot like the powerful psychopathic leaders who use their nearly limitless, stolen resources to create the illusion that they are benign and benevolent. Casting a blinding spell, they manipulate politics and the media to hypnotize us into believing that their abuses do not exist, even as the signs and results of these abuses are everywhere.

Fighting off their deep-seated fear that they are worthless, the psychopathic elite use modern-day Eugenics to justify their profound disdain and lack of respect for the rest of humanity (a reflection of their own self-hatred). Normalizing pedophilia is part of a greater plan to centralize power and control people, devised and pushed by emotionally infantile psychopaths who would rather brainwash the entire population into emulating them than to face their own childhood trauma. Instead of confronting their childish idealization of their own abusers, they embrace the lies, bolstered by pride of family and blood lineage. Without access to their innocence and goodness, they believe goodness to be either false or stupid. In their eyes, innocence does not exist, not even in babies and children. Embracing evil, they signal to each other with secret hand gestures, code words, symbols and colors, announcing they have sold their soul and are—or want to be—part of that club where the highest ranking are the most depraved. Unconsciously trying to exorcise their childhood trauma, they endlessly inflict various psychological and physical aspects of their previous abuse onto new victims in the role of abuser, intensified and multiplied by their entitlement and privilege. Through organized abuse, our false leaders can experience the raw and

intoxicating release from the burden of their own abuse, while basking in the religious glow of being part of something greater than themselves. Satanists, hidden in the top tiers of many secret and religious societies, partake in practices and rituals that support and encourage freedom through depravity (the abused child part getting revenge on powerless victims instead of their abuser) even as they are entrapped and enslaved in a cult which turns everything on its head. Bad is good. Darkness is light. The worse one is, the better.

If we see the insanity of what is happening in the world, we have a duty to also see the insanity of those who are behind it. We are not only witnessing the devastating results of greed, which, as far as emotional maturity goes, puts its host at the level of a toddler. We are talking about people who are emotional newborns, who without their power and status which makes them look the opposite of what they are, would be as helpless and rudderless as their infant victims. Our leadership is attempting to create a world in the image of the utter chaos and devastation in their own hearts, which they, in their role of the powerful perpetrators, plan to inflict on everyone while they themselves plan to escape: Heads getting rid of Tails. We regard these people as either better than us or as powerfully evil, but both those viewpoints give them power, and hide their utter insanity.

The hierarchic societal structure supports the stubborn superstition that we need authority figures to rule over us and that we should blindly trust government and its servants to decide what is best for us. Without those at the top needing to be there, and without us handing over our power to those who automatically abuse it, all injustices on earth would be instantly eradicated. The power imbalances embedded into the hierarchy hide the simple truth that we are one species, inherently equal.

After my escape from the network, I managed to get through elementary school without obvious trouble, but in middle school I repeated the eighth grade twice, switching schools each time. By age fifteen, I quit school and started drifting, often staying with people whom I had met in bars and cafes, preparing to leave home as per Patrick Haemers' repressed but active instructions. At age sixteen, bar hopping with some café acquaintances, I ended up in the red-light district of Antwerp. The owner immediately wished

to recruit me, and I accepted my companions' dare to have drinks with customers. The atmosphere was entirely familiar and the owner protected me from pushy customers, so I could still honor the first of my life's rules as directed by Patrick, which was to never become a prostitute. Around that time, I moved in with a man twice my age, whom I had met at a bar. He had offered me his couch, but three weeks later, in a drunken rage, he bullied me into a sexual relationship. After he helped me find a steady job, I left him and moved into my own apartment.

In February of 1982, I met my biological father, who also coerced me into sex. Three months later, I left Belgium, first escaping to the South of France, where I got a job selling ice cream for the summer. That fall, I moved to London, the following year to Paris, and in 1985 to New York, getting by doing low-level office jobs, waitressing, or as an au pair. Patrick Haemers' directions operated as unconscious internal guiding principles: I never bought drugs, never had sex with anyone to obtain anything, I did not drink too much alcohol, and avoided wearing "the frilly, lacy stuff." Also, since I had been trained to move among the elite, my trauma did not show—at least not at first glance. My frequent moves may have covered certain giveaways, such as my inability to maintain stable relationships or to hold onto a job. And the world culture itself, shaped by my powerful perpetrators, hid what I would now deem obvious symptoms of extensive sexual trauma.

In 1987, I traveled to Los Angeles and sometime afterwards started therapy. I told my first therapist of my sexual relationship with my father, from the perspective he had pushed on me, which was that we were equals. After all, I had been eighteen when we met, officially old enough to give consent. Sex had only been possible because he had not raised me. In response to my justifications, the therapist stated, "Your father abused you!" I broke into tears, and at long last got in touch with all the grief and disappointment that my real father, when I had finally met him, could only muster interest in me if I had sex with him. In the weeks following that therapy session, as I grieved, I first noticed the magical effect of neural integration, observing my transformation as I saw the world through new eyes and found the world responding to me in a new way. I was emotionally

maturing and gaining in wisdom, and it was clear that the insights I received would be worth any pain.

Sometime in the late 1980's, walking in downtown Los Angeles near Skid Row, a faint whiff of human feces sent me into a powerful flashback of the S&M show to which I had been subjected during my first time in the network. In my panic, only one thought was clear: *If this is true, I'm going to kill myself!* The memory disappeared as quickly as it had surfaced. However, from that time onward, I was often plagued with dark flashbacks of horrors from the network, accompanied by confusion, disbelief and suicidality. In the ensuing years, I would see various therapists who helped me with memories of incest and sexual assault, but not Satanic Ritual Abuse (SRA). I never came across any therapist who suggested memories to me, or who put ideas into my head. On the contrary, if there was an issue with therapists, it was that they were not open to all of my experience, and put up walls once I started to venture in the direction of my mother's dark side, or extreme abuse.

In 1988, a film director for whom I was working in Los Angeles gifted me a session with a psychic who told me, towards the end of the hour, that we had a visitor who had been picking up on our conversation through the ether. I was nailed to my seat as the inner parts that held the experiences with Patrick Haemers filled me with a heavy sense of deep truth. The psychic said, "He was a young man, and you were a child. He wants you to know that he *did* betray you. He can see that now. But, you know, the flesh is weak." She smiled at me in the way that he might have. However, I was not ready, and left this message untouched, recorded on an audio cassette with the rest of the session, which turned out to be an accurate prophecy of my future.

Without a Bachelor's degree, I was accepted into a Master of Fine Arts program for screenwriting in 1991 based on writing samples, and received a certificate of completion from the American Film Institute, where I met my future husband. I did not consciously remember the instructions I had received during my rescue back in 1974, but my husband did match the profile Patrick Haemers had outlined. The only way in which the guidelines manifested is that there was a strong internal "yes" present for me in this relationship, which was simply not there with others. In 1994, at the Bodhi

Tree Bookstore in West Hollywood, I saw a large poster of a face that looked strongly familiar. At first, I could not tell if it was a man or a woman, and then saw that it was the cover for *"Autobiography of a Yogi,"* by Paramahansa Yogananda. My future husband and I started to meditate after reading the book. The spiritual path would become most important for my recovery, opening up a viable perspective for the dark experiences of my past.

In May 1993, I had a dream about the North Sea in Belgium. The atmosphere and colors were those of the time I had walked on the beach with Patrick Haemers in 1974, when he had appeared joyful and free, and I'd had the powerful sense that I was looking at his actualized Self. The silvery water in the dream inundated everything in a gigantic flood, and I woke up with the intuitive certainty that the most important person in my life had died, even though I did not know who this person was, or what this meant. I told my therapist about the dream; she was dismissive, and I decided then and there that I needed to look for someone new. Even as memories from the network started to crystallize, I could not find a therapist with whom I felt safe to share these invasive and what then felt as extremely shameful events from my past. In 1996, the Dutroux Case offered yet another glimpse into the possibility of my memories being real, but they had nowhere to land until I moved back to New York City in 1997, and after an arduous search, finally found a therapist who was able to hold space for me. This doctor was new to SRA, but not blind to the potential for human darkness. Supported in my marriage, I was able to focus completely on healing from childhood trauma, meditating, writing, and going to yoga classes and therapy several times a week. During this period, the overwhelming truth brutally imposed itself. With each new memory, I prayed it would be my last, convinced each time that there could not possibly be more, so enormous and devastating was the truth. I never accepted the new information out of hand. However, usually, it soon became clear that *if* this were true, it would answer many questions. Behaviors, words or actions of mine or others, or circumstantial occurrences I had always remembered and might not previously have understood, would make sense *if* this memory were real. Sometimes I experienced days of heightened lucidity, when these puzzle pieces of my life were falling into place, followed by grief so intense that it took all my physical strength to bear. However, even in the most painful periods of such a healing cycle, I would

notice the benefit. I wasn't looking for or finding benefit, but rather, the process of awakening brought all feelings to life, not just the repressed negative ones, and I might feel joyfulness or gratitude more keenly than ever before as well.

My life did not always outwardly seem to improve: after my divorce, carving a path towards financial independence while confronted with a massive guilt complex which had left me feeling undeserving, was not easy. But, as my circumstances shifted to reflect my growing self-esteem, the hardship was easier to bear, because I also felt divine purpose and connection. More painful memories were buried more deeply and emerged in later years. These tended to relate to the mind control training and my experiences at the seat of the dark circle of power. Because I had the previous decades of healing and exponential growth, it was, relatively speaking, easier and more fluid to go through this journey of continued integration and growth.

Committing to truth and personal evolution may in some ways seem reckless, as deep trauma work may temporarily incapacitate a person to the point of getting fired or needing to take time off from work. To anyone who has never experienced real personal growth, such a path must seem crazy, and my story and healing must seem baffling or unbelievable. The tide of the world takes us outside of ourselves, asking us to do, to perform, and to climb. Healing has us going against that outward tide, asking us to stop, to reverse the flow and to go inward.

On my lengthy inward expedition, I have come to understand much about my mother and the class to which she catered in her desire to belong. The psychopaths who attempt to rule the world have no access to their inner selves, and are trying to know themselves only through outward means, through status and control, needing to feel superior in order to feel worthy. The outer world is set up for all of us to follow their direction and get swept up in their lies and terror campaigns without inner recourse to deeper truth. Their brainwashing leaves us emotionally numb, without empathy, mocking and deriding each other so we can feel superior, just like them. And if we should dare to turn the tide, if we dare to express our own free will when it does not coincide with their plans—such as me telling my story—we can expect

to experience gaslighting on a scale that could only be matched with the enormity of their fortunes.

Meditation practice and the cultivation of a personal relationship with true authority figures such as Jesus Christ or Yogananda have properly challenged my notions of power. Starting out, parts of me were convinced that they, too, must be power-hungry hypocrites. Their consciousness being all-pervading, and meditation and prayer being the channels to commune directly with the enlightened ones, allowed me to open myself up increasingly to receive divine love. These great teachers continue to show me, in the sweetest, most personal way, that love is the only reality. To counter the dark forces and the occult practices of my childhood perpetrators—especially those at the seat of world power who were surrendered to dark entities—I needed to turn to the greatest beings of light. The power of love they embody—and help us to recover within us—is necessary to overcome the darkness threatening to overtake the globe. Even as we steadily move into a more enlightened era, the slaves to power, bound to earth and its riches, are fighting tooth and nail to protect their lies and way of life, which is creating the turbulence we are experiencing today. Our task is to retrieve our innate power through personal connection with earth and the divine, and to break out of the massive indoctrination that has taught us to passively rely on temporal authorities.

My path has changed me—and as a result, my outer circumstances—more than I could have ever imagined. Healing breaks our heart so that love can enter. Healing from trauma is to feel suppressed feelings so that we can expand and feel everything. It means to go inward, to connect with our own truth and so connect with greater truth, so that we can know what we know with certainty, because we can feel it, because we are in touch with our true selves. Commitment to truth and personal evolution takes us within, which is how we can bring the light in, and "dispel the accumulated darkness of ages."

svalispeaksagain 1:17 am on July 23, 2018

Tags: dissociation (30), mind control (69), programming (60), ritual abuse (65)

Programming to Block Healing

Trigger warning: this article contains graphic information regarding programming and trauma and could be triggering to cult/mind control survivors

When a survivor of mind control enters therapy, their trainers will be notified (often by the survivor themselves, since they frequently "report in"), and specific programming to block therapy with their current therapist will begin to be put into place. This will be layered in addition to the generic "no heal" programming that all survivors have installed that prevents unauthorized system access, or any communication between presentation (front) parts and the cult host or systems.

Therapy blockers are highly programmed to completely resist therapy, will often have programming specific to the therapist the survivor is currently seeing, and are extremely bonded to their trainers. They are highly motivated to prevent healing due to the fear of trauma (abuse) to the survivor, and the even greater fear of losing contact with their loved one (the trainer the individual was bonded to).

Generic No Heal Programming

When the survivor is an infant, and throughout childhood, they will be put through mock "therapy" sessions and deliverance sessions in which the "therapist" (a cult actor) kindly asks the

Follow

child to share information and encourages them to disclose their abuse. Later in the setup, the child is then tortured for talking and disclosing, is raped by the mock therapist, and is "hospitalized" (see the section on Crazy Alice programming) to punish them for "making up" memories that "couldn't possibly be true". In order to heal, the survivor must choose to push past this programming to enter therapy at all, unless they have been sent on a mission for this purpose (some survivors are sent to infiltrate the practices of therapists who are effective and learn about how they work, in order to help the cult understand how to block therapy with the therapist).

In addition to the above, the survivor will see setups in which for every disclosure they make, a loved one is tortured horrifically, sending the message: "if you talk, your loved ones will be hurt." This basically shuts down healing for many.

Specific Therapy Blocking Programming

Each therapist has an individual style of working with people, and this may be used against the survivor. Because most survivors are still cult active when they enter therapy, during "tune ups" (reprogramming sessions), the cult will attempt to make the survivor fear disclosure in therapy by doing the following:

- Create a VR of the therapist abusing the client following personal disclosure (shocks, rapes, etc.)
- Have an actor that looks similar to the therapist, trained to use the therapist's favorite phrases to encourage therapy, who does mock therapy with the survivor. Each phrase used (over and over) is combined with shock, rape or other torture to the survivor, so when they hear it, they will recoil in pain and disgust.
- Create a VR of the therapy room, and then have the "therapist" avatar perform rituals there, to convince the survivor that the therapist is "one of us" and therefore not safe to disclose to.

A survivor often must overcome an enormous amount of programming to trust a therapist at all, especially since during the time they still have contact with the cult, they and their loved ones will be tortured every time they attempt to heal during reprogramming sessions.

If the survivor does choose to trust the therapist, they need to be aware that some people (but thankfully not all) drawn to providing therapy or support for DID, trauma, and ritual abuse are programmed cult members who job is to access survivors seeking to get out. It is not unusual for the "supporter" to later discover that he/she is actually DID and programmed as well, as time goes on. It can be difficult to determine at first whether the blocks to therapy are coming because of programmed setups such as those described above, or because the survivor (legitimately, at times) does not feel safe with the therapist.

This is why choosing a therapist is a matter for prayer, discernment and seeking input from a safe person (if the therapist knows one) regarding who to see.

Because of the above programming, survivors will often attempt to block therapy using different methods. These fears are genuine, and should not be minimized; instead, the survivor needs support and prayer from individuals they trust, as they work through the issues.

Typical Therapy Blocking Programs

When a therapist works with a survivor, they will see a lot of **ambivalence:** the survivor wants to heal, but part(s) of the survivor is avoiding the healing quite energetically. This can cause a lot of frustration in both the survivor, and the therapist, who over time may begin to wonder "Why don't you just heal?" The survivor may experience tremendous internal conflicts between their entire worldview and experience, and the information that a therapist challenges this worldview with. In addition, the survivor will be emotionally invested in saving loved ones, who they believe are being tortured each time they break programming.

This ambivalence and internal conflict can cause the survivor to display any or all of the following programmed responses in therapy:

- **Cycling through parts over and over (rolodexing**): this is a symptom of extreme system distress and conflict, as parts of the survivor are attempting to heal and incorporate new information, while other parts are terrified that the programming is breaking. This rapid switching is a sign that internal controllers are trying to stop doing their jobs (including hiding internal pain), and that they are "failing" at doing their old job; as a result, they are feeling terror and are attempting to send out part after part to present in rapid succession. Rolodexing can also be a punishment program that causes the survivor to look completely dysfunctional, and be used to reinforce the belief (which is a lie) that the survivor is "going insane", etc. Rolodexing will stop once the "hot topic" in therapy is dropped; this can be an opportunity to journal and work on the topic, since it is obviously important to healing or the system would not respond in this way.

- **Only one memory comes up:** some survivors go through weeks, months and even years processing only one or two memories that cycle through again and again, even though they recognize they were raised in a cult group. This is a way of blocking therapy, since the survivor never gets past that one memory to do other work inside.

- **House that Jack Built:** This is a specific form of blocking, in which the survivor cycles through bits and pieces of one memory, and each time, must repeat the same sequence in order before they can add new information to the memory. The survivor will appear to need to completely recount the previous information given before they can look at any new information regarding the memory, which can be wearing on both the survivor and therapist.

- **False Christian work**: If the survivor is working with a Christian therapist or deliverance ministry, they will pull out their false "god" "jesus" and "holy spirit" to "help" with the healing. They may be praying wholeheartedly, praying warfare prayers, doing daily Bible study, agreeing with the therapist, and reporting visions of "jesus" intervening inside and how "close" they feel to "god" during therapy. The problem is that they are not praying to the real Christian God who has the authority to heal, deliver and bring breakthrough, and this survivor will often leave therapy frustrated, wondering why God doesn't answer in spite of all the praying they are doing. This is heavily linked to anti-Christian programming (please see article on this topic).

- **False integrations**: If the survivor is on a mission to bond with the therapist, learn their techniques, and later report to the cult the therapy methods used, they will want the therapist to feel good about seeing them. This is often accomplished through false integrations (the survivor is completely unaware that it is a program), in which dozens, hundreds or more of parts are "miraculously joined together" without any trauma (or memories), and the survivor expresses deep gratitude about the "tremendous healing" they have received. This type of work can also be a response to a huge need to please a prayer or deliverance minister who pressures the survivor to integrate before they are ready. While God can and does accomplish the miraculous, most true integrations bring back life history, both good and bad, and resolve core conflicts and false beliefs that fueled the dissociation.

- **Therapy sabotage**: with this programming, the survivor will be late to appointments, may miss scheduled appointments, may "forget" to pay for therapy, does not do therapeutic homework, and verbalizes wanting to drop out. A subset of this program is distancing the therapist/supporter through methods such as pulling out sexual parts who attempt to "seduce" the therapist; pulling out hostile/rude/unpleasant parts who pick fights, assault the therapist, or tear the therapist down verbally, and even threaten to sue the therapist if they become desperate.

- **Shutdown programming:** At times, a survivor who is still in contact with the cult will be given a shutdown/stop healing command. When this is running, the survivor will experience the following:

1. Is completely unable to communicate with parts inside

2. Is unable to journal, collage or do artwork
3. Feels intense anxiety at the thought of doing internal work
4. Wants to be “normal” and “forget about healing”, wants a “real life” and chooses to leave therapy, sometimes permanently (note: this is different from taking a short break from therapy or healing, which is normal at times)

This form of programming is frustrating for both the survivor and therapist, since it seems to be a waste of therapy time working with someone who cannot communicate with parts and does not even seem motivated to do any internal work at all. To resolve this, the survivor needs to look at where access occurred, how the shutdown command was given (including subliminals or texts online or by phone), and what threats were used to accomplish the shutdown (frequently, this will be a double bind being threatened).

- **Pulling out false issues to work on (cover issues):** It is common for survivors, especially early in their healing, to work on cover programming to prevent their going deeper into their system. The survivor may only remember their American host family; or believe that they were only sexually abused, or abused by an organized cult group for a few years, then “let go when they moved away from home” or “married someone outside the group” (which almost never happens in reality).

Until the survivor goes past the cover, and is able to work with the true programming and beliefs that run the system, healing will be sporadic and difficult, and they will be vulnerable to reaccess. The survivor must be willing do internal work, including journaling and asking the LORD to uncover the truth, regardless of what it is. They must be willing to go “all out” for the LORD, and trust their loved ones in the group to His care, as they go past guardians, system blocks, demonic blocks and learn what is actually inside.

- **Doubt: Belief that the survivor will never heal**: This is programming designed to knock out the effectiveness of work done by the survivor and therapist/supporter. This programming will be installed with setups in which the child is told to “heal” or “break the programming” under command – and then experiences horrendous pain and terror (through VR or tech torture). The child in numerous setups is told to “integrate” and again, pain, terror and hopelessness is installed. This is layered in many times over the years. When the survivor does try to heal in therapy, they will often re-experience these feelings of pain, hopelessness and futility regarding healing, or even the possibility of God answering their prayers to heal.

The survivor will also have been shown videos of individuals in lab settings attempting to break the programming that was installed in them – and the people viewed in the setups go “insane”, or “die”. They will be shown the readouts for the slow, agonizing death, to instill the belief that the programming can never be broken. **In actuality, if that was really true, the programmers**

would not have to install this false belief. It can help the survivor to understand that their situation is different: unlike the individuals they watched trying to break programming in a facility dedicated to demons, the survivor has a God that loves them and can heal anything, safety, and support that the people they watched did not have.

- **Emotional flooding that does not promote healing**: Some survivors will present in therapy appearing to be willing to heal, but the instant that any memory comes forward, they will burst into tears and appear to "melt down" for what can amount to the entire therapy session, wailing over their guilt and self-condemnation. While emotions will come with the recall of traumatic memories (and should), seeing hours of therapy "hijacked" by a part crying every time the survivor comes to therapy could be a sign that this is running.

The supporter or therapist may want to gently confront or challenge this part regarding their job within the system, and see if the survivor is willing to work past this program. The survivor will need to become aware if it is running, and break any agreements to have this part step forward if anything is disclosed. The traumas that created this response in what is often a very young part will also need to be resolved.

- **Child presentation**: Normally, the infants and children in a mind-controlled system are heavily protected and guarded, and do not come out in therapy until trust and safety have been established over time. A completely young presentation is highly abnormal, and can be the result of several things:
  1. Programming breakdown: some survivors literally "burn out", especially if they have been heavily used in the field on missions, and too much "wipe out" and other amnesia programming of presenters afterwards can cause a situation in which the adults are too tired/traumatized to present, and children come forward
  2. Mission programming: some survivors are programmed to present with children in order to seem "harmless" and "cute" as they infiltrate a church or therapy organization. This is a programmed in presentation, with great trauma.
  3. Secondary reward: some systems have been heavily rewarded by abusers for "staying young" and childlike, especially if the main abuser was a pedophile. The survivor may have starved themselves as a child/teen in order to prevent the appearance of breasts and delay the onset of menses, and to keep their childlike physical appearance. This is often a system highly dependent upon others, and they may look to therapists and supporters to "caretake" them as an adult.

- **Constant crises with no resolution (burn out the support):** This is difficult programming to endure for the survivor, because the survivor has no idea that this is happening. All they know is that they are in deep distress, and want to pick up the phone and call the only person that can help them (the therapist or support person). There will be crises during the healing journey; but a life of constantly cycling into crisis week after week could be an indication that

something is wrong. This type of programming is designed to "burn out" the supporter, who becomes exhausted helping someone who never seems to heal.

- **Denial:** Every survivor will have some form of denial programming, and parts inside will hold this job. Denial parts are among the most cult loyal, and deeply fear the torture or death of loved ones (including trainers) in the cult. Denial parts will often verbalize the following:
  1. It wasn't that bad
  2. I'm exaggerating things
  3. I'm making this up; I have a creative, sick imagination
  4. I'm not dissociative
  5. I'm just seeking attention
  6. This is all for secondary gain; I've been playing with your head
  7. I'm a liar

This part will have been heavily programmed since the survivor was in the womb to say these things – **and believe them**. They are part of the primary amnesia triad for presentations (denial, doubt and despair) that keep the survivor from truly believing their own memories.

Healing of denial means finding why these parts (often represented in numerous systems, including next to the core) are so invested in doing their job, i.e. who they are protecting, and why. They will be heavily bonded to a primary bond, and thus will be unwilling (or unable, due to amnesia agreements) to disclose who they are protecting until safety and trust are established with the therapist, and with the true God.

- **"I don't know":** It is normal for an individual to not know what is going on inside at times, or to be unable to answer questions they or a therapist asks parts from time to time. But there may also be parts created who literally "know nothing" who are brought forward in response to asking any information that might be helpful to healing, or breaking programming. These parts normally will have no history, and be unaware of anything at all. Controllers may bring them out in order to prevent healing work during a therapy session; or to prevent journaling and finding answers.

These parts will have been created with trauma, and will have made agreements to not know anything, and to forget any important information. They may be formed during childhood during anti-interrogation training, since these parts are not lying: they literally do not know anything, and so cannot reveal high-security information.

Healing will involve working through the traumas with a trustworthy individual, and helping

these parts realize that the system is not being threatened, and there is no longer any punishment for sharing information inside. This can take time, and these parts will usually gradually stop doing their jobs quite as energetically once they realize that the individual is safe, and that the sharing of information inside promotes safety.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

What is “programming”?
June 4, 2017
In "Christian"

How to Support a Survivor
June 29, 2017
In "mind control"

Essentials for Healing
June 4, 2017
In "Christian"

garypfeifer 2:07 pm on July 28, 2018

This was really helpful for me to see some of the characteristics of my programming. Thank you.

★ Like

svalispeaksagain 8:04 pm on July 28, 2018

I am glad this was helpful to you!

★ Like

heavenlyrevelationsfromdaddy 3:06 pm on August 1, 2018

I am amazed that you were able to capture the truths in these accounts. I have been on both sides of the coin and now as a counselor see so many suggestive behaviors in clients that tap into these examples. Thank you so much for sharing. I will reference this again.

★ Like

svalispeaksagain 3:20 pm on August 2, 2018

I am glad that this is helping!

★ Like

Pastora Cate 4:40 pm on August 18, 2019

Dear Svali,

I've followed your work for a number of years – discovering you on someone else's blog when you had already gone silent. I prayed for you back then. I was so relieved to see you back again, most recently on Deprogram.Wiki, and appreciate your willingness to share and help others. I respect the way you unplugged and dug down to work on your healing. Your fearless approach gives hope to others. I pray for your peace and protection. God bless you in the mighty name of Yeshua our Messiah. Amen

★ Like

svalispeaksagain 11:00 pm on August 18, 2019

Pastora,
Thank you for your encouragement. I am glad that these posts are helpful to you and others, this is why I write. Also, your prayers are so appreciated!
Blessings, svali

★ Like

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

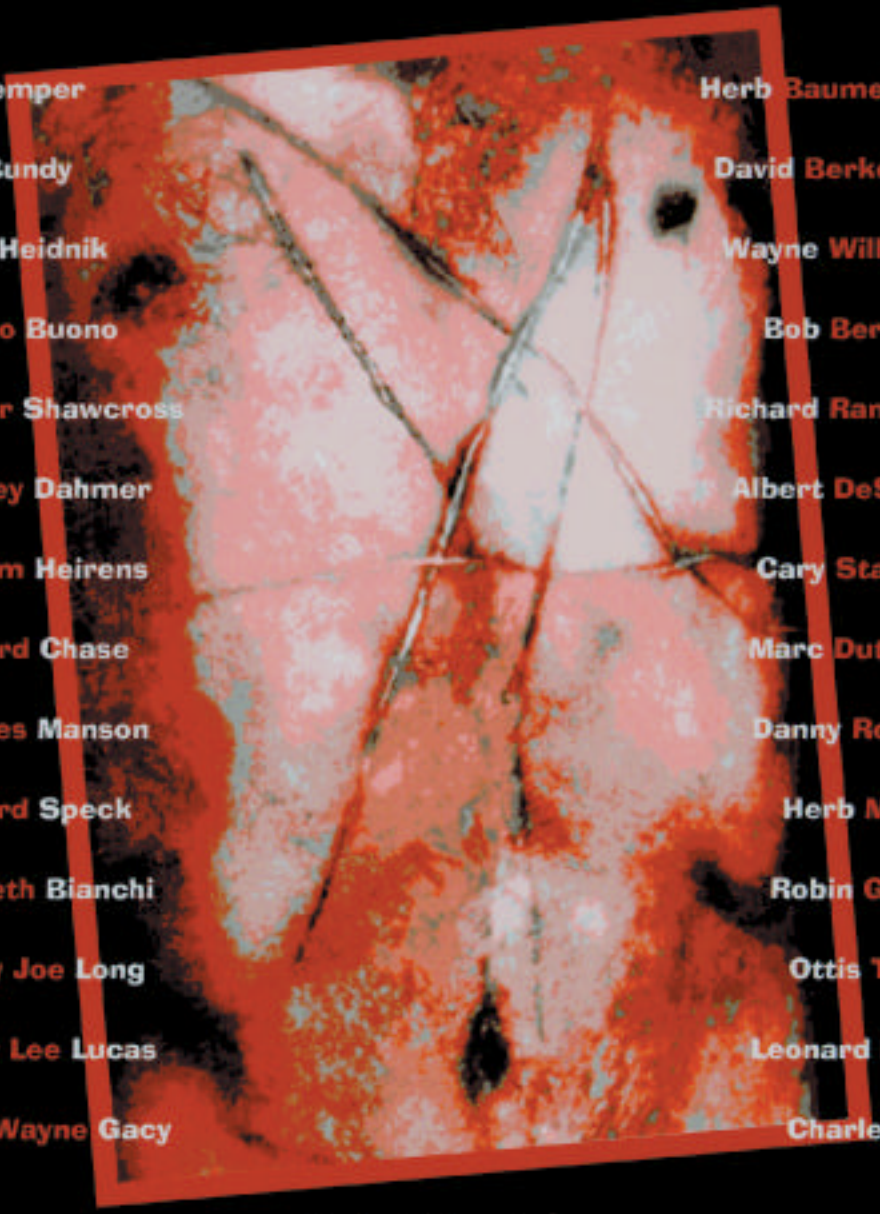
← Hybrid Labs: Fact or Myth?

Growing Up International Part Three: Ages Three to Six →

Blog at WordPress.com.

Programmed to Kill

The Politics of Serial Murder



Ed Kemper
Ted Bundy
Gary Heidnik
Angelo Buono
Arthur Shawcross
Jeffrey Dahmer
William Heirens
Richard Chase
Charles Manson
Richard Speck
Kenneth Bianchi
Bobby Joe Long
Henry Lee Lucas
John Wayne Gacy

Herb Baumeister
David Berkowitz
Wayne Williams
Bob Berdella
Richard Ramirez
Albert DeSalvo
Cary Stayner
Marc Dutroux
Danny Rolling
Herb Mullin
Robin Gecht
Ottis Toole
Leonard Lake
Charles Ng

David McGowan

Programmed to Kill

Programmed to Kill

The Politics of Serial Murder

David McGowan

iUniverse, Inc.
New York Lincoln Shanghai

Programmed to Kill
The Politics of Serial Murder

All Rights Reserved © 2004 by David McGowan

No part of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, graphic, electronic, or mechanical, including photocopying, recording, taping, or by any information storage retrieval system, without the written permission of the publisher.

iUniverse, Inc.

For information address:
iUniverse, Inc.
2021 Pine Lake Road, Suite 100
Lincoln, NE 68512
www.iuniverse.com

ISBN: 0-595-77446-6

Printed in the United States of America

This book is for all the survivors.

"This man, from the moment of conception, was programmed for murder."

—Attorney Ellis Rubin, speaking on behalf of serial killer Bobby Joe Long

Contents

Introduction: Mind Control 101 xi

PART I: THE PEDOPHOCRACY

Chapter 1 From Brussels… 3
Chapter 2 …to Washington 23
Chapter 3 Uncle Sam Wants Your Children 39
Chapter 4 McMolestation 46
Chapter 5 It Couldn't Happen Here 54
Chapter 6 Finders Keepers 59

PART II: THERE'S SOMETHING ABOUT HENRY

Chapter 7 Sympathy for the Devil 71
Chapter 8 Henry: Portrait of an MK-ULTRA Assassin? 77
Chapter 9 Rancho Diablo 88
Chapter 10 The Myth of the Serial Killer 99
Chapter 11 Lone Nuts? 107
Chapter 12 Satan's Family Tree 121
Chapter 13 The Spawning Ground 131
Chapter 14 Superstars 163
Chapter 15 The Next Generation 204
Chapter 16 The Collectors 239
Chapter 17 Patsies and Assassins 271

Chapter 18 The Profiler and the Patsy 297
Chapter 19 Conclusions 306

PART III: AND IN OTHER NEWS…

Chapter 20 Boulder 315
Chapter 21 Atlanta 329
Chapter 22 Role Models 340

Epilogue 353
References 357

Introduction

Mind Control 101

"[T]he experimenters will be particularly interested in dissociative states, from the abaissement de niveau mental to multiple personality in so-called mediums, and an attempt will be made to induce a number of states of this kind, using hypnosis."

—From a declassified MK-ULTRA[1] document

It is probably safe to say that this is not your typical 'true crime' book. It is, instead, a journey into an even darker, more disturbing world—one that exists in the shadows of the world depicted in the hundreds of formulaic serial killer biographies that line the shelves of America's bookstores. For many readers, much of the information contained within these pages will be unfamiliar, and some of the theories and ideas that are discussed may seem rather bizarre.

Perhaps the most controversial theory that readers will find themselves confronted with concerns a phenomenon commonly referred to as "mind control." Although the concept of *mind control* has long been a staple of that polluted wellspring of information known as the 'conspiracy theory' literature (where it often mingles freely with outlandish tales of reptilian aliens and paranormal activity), it has never been a polite topic of discussion in mainstream culture. The only exposure that most people have had to the idea of *mind control* is through the often metaphorical, and frequently absurd, images that Hollywood has provided in a decades-long string of films—from *The Manchurian Candidate* and *The Stepford Wives* in the 1960s and 1970s, to such recent offerings as *Conspiracy Theory* and *Zoolander* (along with the remakes of both *The Manchurian Candidate* and *The Stepford Wives*).

1 The term "MK-ULTRA," while actually just one of many codenames used over the years by the U.S. intelligence community, is commonly used to refer to all CIA-sponsored research on mind control.

Most people are naturally quite skeptical of the notion that someone's thoughts and actions can be controlled by unseen actors. Particularly in Western culture, where the idea of "free will" is firmly indoctrinated, theories of mind control are inimical to the omnipresent mantra that "we are all responsible for our own actions." It is quite likely then that scenarios involving mind-controlled killers—whether assassins like Lee Harvey Oswald or Sirhan Sirhan, or serial killers like Henry Lee Lucas or Charles Manson—will be summarily dismissed by many readers. Skeptics though should bear in mind that, contrary to perceptions, *mind control* is not a fictional creation of novelists and Hollywood screenwriters; to the contrary, there exists a substantial paper trail establishing that the U.S. intelligence community has devoted a vast amount of both human and financial resources, over a period of several decades, to the study of *mind control*. Along the way, luminaries of numerous social sciences have been recruited and co-opted.

Detailing all the techniques and procedures that have received attention from the Central Intelligence Agency and its brethren is, unfortunately, well beyond the scope of this book.[2] It is possible, however, to provide a rough sketch of what *mind control* really is—a sketch that will, it is hoped, help to demystify a phenomenon that is not, as it turns out, nearly so esoteric as it may at first appear to be.

The basic methodology of mind control was revealed many decades ago by George Estabrooks, a prominent psychologist/hypnotist who worked under contract to American intelligence agencies. In his book *Hypnotism*, first published in 1943, Estabrooks teased his audience by noting that the "intelligent reader…will sense that much more is withheld than has been told." While that was undoubtedly an accurate assessment, Estabrooks nevertheless did reveal enough to allow an informed reader to construct a reasonably accurate picture of the fundamentals of mind control.

The degree to which any given person is susceptible to being *mind controlled* is a direct function of that person's susceptibility to what are known as "dissociative states." According to the psychiatric community, dissociative states (or dissociative

2 All of the following books focus directly or indirectly on CIA-sponsored mind control research: Jose M.R. Delgado *Physical Control of the Mind* (Harper and Row, 1969); Donald Bain *The Control of Candy Jones* (Playboy Press, 1976); Walter Bowart *Operation Mind Control* (Dell Publishing, 1978); Peter Watson *War on the Mind* (Hutchinson, 1978); Peter Schrag *Mind Control* (Pantheon, 1978); John Marks *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate* (Times Books, 1979); Martin Lee and Bruce Schlain *Acid Dreams* (Grove Press, 1985); and Gordon Thomas *Journey Into Madness* (Bantam, 1989). All of these titles contain pieces of the puzzle, but all contain varying amounts of disinformation as well (as do more recent titles).

'disorders') include Amnesia, Fugue State, and what used to be called Multiple Personality Disorder (MPD) but is now generally referred to as Dissociative Identity Disorder (DID). All of these terms describe the same basic phenomenon: a person who is seemingly in control of his or her actions over a given time period is unable, at a later date, to recall or account for those actions.

As with any category of 'mental illness,' there is no dividing line that separates those who are diagnosed with dissociative 'disorders' from those who are 'normal.' Virtually everyone possesses the ability to experience dissociative states. Many people, for example, are familiar with the phenomenon sometimes referred to as "driving on autopilot." The scenario generally plays out as follows: you suddenly 'snap out of it' just as you are pulling into your parking space at work, and you realize, to your horror, that you can't remember anything since leaving your house! If this has happened to you, then you have experienced being in a dissociative state. In essence, you drove to work while in a "fugue state," and you later had "amnesia." In a similar vein, it could be said that an "alter personality," which you have no conscious awareness of, drove you to work. In any event, it is clear that *someone* piloted your car to work in a safe and reasonable manner, and it was someone other than 'you.'

Many people are also familiar with another common example of a dissociative state: you are deep in thought, oblivious to everything around you, possibly working on the solution to one of the world's great mysteries, when suddenly your silent meditation is interrupted—perhaps by an unexpected noise, or by someone calling your name or tapping your shoulder. As you 'snap out of it,' you suddenly realize, much to your dismay, that you cannot remember what it was that you were so deep in thought about just moments before. If you have ever had a similar experience, or if you are familiar with the dreamlike state that some people attain just before falling asleep, or while engrossed in a book or television program, then you have experienced being in a dissociative state of consciousness.

While the ability to dissociate is likely universal, or nearly so, some people are clearly more susceptible to dissociative states than are others. There is little question that someone's innate ability to dissociate can be greatly enhanced—although not necessarily by ethical means. The most severe of the dissociative 'disorders,' MPD/DID, is in almost all cases created by psychological trauma so severe that the traumatic episode(s) cannot be integrated into the experiences of the core personality. By far the most common cause of MPD is early childhood trauma—usually, but not always, resulting from horrific abuse by a parent or other adult guardian. Dr. Frank Putnam noted in 1989 that he was "struck by the quality of extreme sadism that is reported by most MPD victims. Many multiples have told me of being sexually abused by groups of people, of being forced into prostitution by family members, or of being offered as sexual enticement to their

mother's boyfriends. After one has worked with a number of MPD patients, it becomes obvious that severe, sustained, and repetitive child abuse is a major element in the creation of MPD." Dr. Deirdre Barrett, writing in 2001 for *Psychology Today*, offered a similar observation: "'dissociaters'…have the following traits in common: Many such subjects reported a history of child abuse. Although some remembered this directly, some had been told by others that they had been battered…Other dissociaters who had not been abused had suffered childhood traumas such as prolonged, painful medical conditions and before the age of 10 experienced the deaths of their parents."

As mental health professionals have long recognized, the normal human reaction to highly stressful situations is what is known as the "fight or flight" response. Children, however, typically lack the ability to either fight off or flee from their attackers and abusers. This is particularly true, of course, for very young children. The human brain, that wonderfully resilient organ, therefore reacts in the best way that it can under the circumstances: it allows the child to mentally 'flee' from the situation. When the abuse is of an extreme and sustained nature, the brain's response is to build a virtual wall around the traumatic experiences by creating a separate and distinct 'alter personality' to deal with current and future episodes of abuse.

Although MPD/DID is a 'disorder' listed in the *DSM IV*, the veritable bible of the psychiatric community, the public generally looks upon the notion of multiple personality with a healthy dose of skepticism—a skepticism encouraged by a news and entertainment media apparatus that generally mocks and ridicules the condition, and by a not insignificant number of psychologists and psychiatrists who deny the existence of MPD/DID (strangely enough, many of the most visible and vocal members of the denial crowd tend to be psychologists and psychiatrists who have received funding from the CIA).

In November 2001, researchers in Melbourne, Australia conducted what the *Herald Sun* described as a "world-first study" of Multiple Personality Disorder. The goal of the study was to help resolve the dispute within the mental health community. The conclusion reached by the researchers (at least one of whom "had been sceptical of the disorder" before working on the project) was that individuals "who suffer multiple personality disorder are not faking their alter-egos." The study involved comparing the brainwave patterns of people claiming to be suffering from the disorder with the brainwave patterns of actors portraying the condition. While the actors gave "outwardly convincing performances," the researchers found that there were "distinct changes in the brain of sufferers as they 'switch' personalities," while those changes were not detected in the brains of those who were just acting the part.

So how does all of this relate to the concept of mind control? In the simplest possible terms, what the term "mind control" refers to is the process of first *enhancing* an unwitting subject's natural ability to dissociate (creating, in essence, the condition of Multiple Personality Disorder), and then *controlling* that subject's dissociative states (by creating one or more alter personalities that are effectively under the control of others, and that are unknown to the 'core' personality).

But can this really be done? Is *mind control* is a real phenomenon, or merely the product of the fertile imaginations of various 'conspiracy theorists' and self-described survivors? The answer to that question lies in the answers to several other questions, beginning with:

- Do dissociative states occur naturally in the human species?

As anyone who has ever driven their car to work "on autopilot"—or been caught "daydreaming" or "spacing out"—can testify, the answer is yes (although the vast majority of people would not normally use the term "dissociative state" to describe the experience).

- Can the naturally occurring ability to dissociate be enhanced?

The answer here also appears to be yes, albeit with the caveat that enhancing that ability generally requires the infliction of severe trauma, preferably during the vulnerable childhood years.

- Would the CIA and other U.S. intelligence agencies be restrained morally or ethically from inflicting such trauma?

How this question is answered depends largely upon the individual reader's political orientation and level of awareness of national and world events. Serious students of covert operations know that the CIA has a long and very sordid history of sponsoring countless assassinations, civilian massacres, violent coups, and barbaric torture/interrogation centers (and that is just the short list). This bloody, and very well documented,[3] record suggests that there is little, if anything, that the CIA will not attempt to justify in the name of "national security." Documents released through FOIA requests have revealed that, at the very least, the agency has not shied away from funding and sponsoring studies in which very young children have been dosed with LSD continuously for several weeks.

- If we accept that dissociation is a real and naturally occurring human ability, and that the tendency to dissociate can be enhanced, and that the intelligence

3 See William Blum's *Killing Hope* (Common Courage Press, 1995) for a detailed look at some of what the intelligence community really does with your tax dollars.

community's hands are not tied by ethical concerns, then the final, and most critical, question becomes: can enhanced dissociative states, once created, be *controlled*?

George Estabrooks was clearly convinced that that was indeed the case. He claimed that once a person's core personality had been split, it was then possible to control one or more of the alter personalities, without the conscious awareness of the primary personality. This process, according to Estabrooks, allowed the intelligence community to create "Super Spies"—unwitting 'agents' who were willing to follow any orders unquestioningly. Among other duties, these Super Spies made ideal couriers, since they could be fed sensitive information while in a controlled dissociative state and thereafter have no conscious awareness that they were transporting important data. Even under torture, the Super Spy would reveal nothing—for as far as he (or she) was aware, there was nothing to reveal! Someone at the receiving end who was familiar with the Super Spy's programming, however, could readily extract the information—after which the Super Spy would remain blissfully unaware that a mission had been successfully completed.

As dubious as Estabrook's scenario may at first appear to be, it is not so very different from the common phenomenon of "driving on autopilot." Let us imagine that you have managed, once again, to find yourself at work with no idea how you got there. You can remember nothing beyond pulling out of your driveway. So you decide, out of curiosity, to pay a visit to a skilled hypnotist,[4] who succeeds in "putting you under," so to speak. While in the "hypnotic trance" (another term for a dissociative state), you would be able to relate to the hypnotist (and anyone else in the room) all the mundane details of your drive to work. Once brought back to a normal state of consciousness, however, *you* would still have no conscious memory of your drive to work (unless instructed otherwise by the hypnotist). You would

4 Hypnotism is another phenomenon that is regarded with considerable skepticism by both the general public and the scientific community—although there are signs that that is beginning to change. "Despite its long history, scientists have wondered whether hypnotism is a genuine psychological state or a gimmick," noted the *National Post*, "But recent research shows it causes measurable changes in the brain." A number of mainstream media articles in recent years have begun to acknowledge the effectiveness of hypnosis, especially as a means of pain control (Lamaze childbirth techniques, for example, are really just a form of self-hypnosis). *Psychology Today* noted that hypnosis "is not an all-or-nothing phenomenon, but rather a continuum. Most people can be hypnotized to some degree—the only question is how far." The same can be said, of course, of the ability to dissociate, which largely determines susceptibility to hypnotism.

have served, in essence, as a Super Spy. All that is missing from the equation is the element of *control*.

And how would that control be attained? Estabrooks shied away from the details, only alluding to the severe psychic torture that is required to split a person's core personality and then exert control over the alter personalities that are created. The trauma is often referred to euphemistically as "a form of hypnotism." In one passage, for example, Estabrooks noted that multiple personalities "are caused by a form of hypnotism in the first place! We will see that emotional shock produces exactly the same results as hypnotism." Later, he came a little closer to the truth: "multiple personality [can] be both caused and cured by hypnotism. Remember that war is a grim business. Suppose we deliberately set up that condition of multiple personality to further the ends of military intelligence." Still later, he came even closer: "everyone [can] be thrown into the deepest state of hypnotism by the use of what [I] termed the Russian method—no holds barred, deliberate disintegration of the personality by psychic torture…The subject might easily be left a mental wreck but war is a grim business."

War is indeed a grim business, as Estabrooks was apparently fond of stating, but that argument hardly justified the type of research the doctor endorsed, including using children, who are "notoriously easy to hypnotize," as research subjects.

Decades after the publication of Estabrooks' seminal work, another psychiatrist/hypnotist, by the name of Paul Verdier, wrote an obscure book entitled *Brainwashing and the Cults: An Expose on Capturing the Human Mind*. Verdier's manuscript began on a promising note, with this acknowledgement: "It must be accepted that brainwashing…is now being used here [in the United States] by devious persons with personal gain in mind." Unfortunately, the author followed that bold proclamation with a woefully inaccurate accounting of who those "devious persons" might be. He did though provide a reasonably good description of the process of mind control (although Verdier, like Estabrooks, did not use the term "mind control").

By Verdier's account, the objective of the would-be "brainwasher" is to access those areas of the brain that are outside of the individual's conscious control. This is accomplished, the doctor explained, by circumventing the normal inhibiting response of the cerebral cortex, so that "an individual's voluntary conscious self-control [will] be bypassed or short-circuited." In order to disable what Verdier referred to as the brain's "cortical block," all of the following were recommended: alcohol; euphoric drugs; isolation; solitary confinement; and "the most dramatic and unique item in the brainwashing arsenal," hypnosis. All of these "brainwashing" techniques, significantly, have been exhaustively researched by the CIA.

Verdier went on to explain that in order to achieve truly lasting states of brainwashing (or mind control), it is necessary to subject the victim to "profound and deep emotional states." The recommended emotional states are fear, shock, and anxiety—all of which have "an intense disinhibitive effect on the human brain." Even more effective is *pain*—because, "according to the eminent neurologist, Dr. Wilder Penfield,[5] sensations of pain from the muscular sensory system enter the sub-cortical brain regions directly." With a passage seemingly lifted from Estabrooks' writings, Verdier left no doubt that *pain* and *fear* are the most useful items in the MK-ULTRA toolbox: "Russian political scientists do support the belief that given enough punishment, all the people in any time or place are susceptible to hypnotic control."[6] Verdier echoed other of Estabrooks' beliefs as well, including the idea that "brainwashing" could and should be widely utilized for "benevolent" purposes,[7] and the notion that children are ideal candidates for mind control programming: "Brainwashing can be slow, insidious and sure when applied to children early in life…It is likely that there is a short period of time following corporal punishment when the child is in a state of decortication—hypnosis, so to speak. This is the ideal time to plant the positive instructions for better behavior in the future." What the good doctor considered "corporal punishment" and "positive instructions" was left to the reader's imagination.

The vulnerability of children to dissociative states brought on by traumatic abuse is one of the reasons that the CIA and other intelligence agencies have played key roles in the creation of relatively mainstream satanic groups, as well as in denying the existence of underground satanic cults engaged in violent criminal enterprises. Some of the available evidence suggests that an array of satanic groups have served as intelligence agency 'fronts' for mind control operations—which actually makes perfect sense, considering that if the goal is to severely traumatize

5 Dr. Penfield was an associate of the notorious medical torture practitioner, and MK-ULTRA operative, Dr. David Ewen Cameron.

6 This is a very common form of disinformation that is found frequently in the writings of CIA-affiliated writers: acknowledge that mind control is a real phenomenon, but then blame it all on those godless communists. Other agency-penned manuscripts deny that mind control exists at all, which is another common form of disinformation.

7 The final chapter of Verdier's book, entitled "Benevolent Brainwashing In The Future," contains the following recommendation: "The process of brainwashing… could be used effectively and economically to solve many of society's pressing human problems which, until now, have seemed virtually unsolvable."

children, then surely nothing compares to the seemingly outlandish stories told by those who have survived what has been dubbed "Satanic Ritual Abuse" (SRA).

Verdier took note in his book of the fact that one of "the most pronounced emotional experiences that a human being can undergo is having his or her life threatened. Threats of death are used as a basic tool by brainwashing Communists. Even among them, however, this threat is used sparingly, for they know that humans quickly adapt to this type of threat, especially if it is repeatedly given but never carried out. In order to avoid this routinization of stressful emotional situations, they have been known to casually execute prisoners for the apparent effect it has on others." The actions that Verdier predictably attributed to "brainwashing Communists" precisely mirror the stories that have been told repeatedly by self-described survivors of ritual abuse. These victims speak of receiving frequent death threats, directed against both themselves and their family members. They speak also of having those threats reinforced through their forced witnessing of, and even participate in, the killing of others.

There has been a tremendous amount of energy expended to discredit all such stories. At the forefront of the movement to deny the validity of the stories told by countless survivors is the False Memory Syndrome Foundation, a group led by a truly vile coalition of CIA-funded psychiatrists and accused (and in some cases, convicted) pedophiles. Also playing a key role in the movement are Paul and Shirley Eberle, the authors of a purportedly authoritative book entitled *The Politics of Child Abuse*. The Eberles' book attempts to lay the blame for virtually *all* child abuse accusations and prosecutions on overzealous prosecutors, therapists and parents. That argument might be a little more credible, however, if the Eberles themselves were not known to Los Angeles police as distributors of child pornography—a fact that media outlets conveniently and rather consistently ignore while touting the Eberles as authorities in the field of child abuse.

Contrary to conventional wisdom, claims of ritual abuse are certainly not a modern phenomenon. Such claims have actually been around for quite some time, and they were given legitimacy by no less an historical figure than Sigmund Freud. Over 100 years ago, Freud recognized that ritual abuse was likely the primary cause of the psychological problems that he observed in his female patients. Author Kevin Marron noted that Freud had commented on the marked "similarity between what [his patients] told him and the accounts of the witchcraft confessions of the 16th century." In a letter to a colleague, written in January 1897, Freud pondered: "But why did the devil who took possession of the poor things invariably abuse them sexually and in a loathsome manner? Why are their confessions under torture so like the communications made by my patients in psychological treatment?" If Freud were alive today, he might well add: "And why are the

communications made by my patients a century ago so like the stories told to therapists today by survivors of SRA?"

Should this remarkable consistency spanning several centuries be attributed to some kind of recurring mass hysteria? Or can it best be explained by the fact that, as historians (and the *Chicago Tribune*) have noted, "satanic cults have been documented in Europe and America as far back as the 1600s"? Has there always been something dark and evil lurking in the shadows, only occasionally raising its head—at which times its existence is denied, its perpetrators cast as victims, and its real victims mocked and ridiculed? To ponder such a question, alas, requires calling into question some of our most fundamental beliefs about the nature of the world we live in—and that is a decidedly unsettling venture.

Perhaps when viewed in the context of a covert, state-sponsored mind control program, some readers can begin to understand not only why there might be those who are motivated to inflict appalling levels of abuse on some of America's children, but also why so much effort would be expended attempting to discredit claims of horrific abuse if the claims are in fact valid.

Truth be told, the stories told by survivors of ritual abuse tend to be self-discrediting. One of the potential benefits, therefore, of cloaking mind control activity in satanic rituals is that the operations are largely immune to disclosure. Even if an operation is uncovered, the stories told by the children tend to be so outlandish, so far removed from the world that we know, that the claims are easily cast aside as the product of a child's fertile imagination. In May 2000, however, a report commissioned by the United Kingdom's Department of Health concluded that Satanic Ritual Abuse was not (as an earlier report ordered by the Conservative government found in 1994), a "myth." The *Independent* noted, in anticipation of the report's release, that a "specially commissioned government report will this week conclude that satanic abuse does take place in Britain. It will say that its victims have suffered actual abuse and are not suffering from 'false memory syndrome.'"[8]

One of the primary authors of the controversial report was therapist Valerie Sinason, who reportedly had personally treated 126 survivors of ritualized abuse. According to a report in the *Guardian*, Sinason has said "46 of her patients claimed to have witnessed murder of children or adults during ritual abuse ceremonies that had involved up to 300 people at a time. Some 70% of the reported

8 The timing of the report on this landmark study was rather curious. The *Independent* published the story on April 30, 2000—otherwise known as *Walpurgisnacht* (Night of the Witches) or *Beltane*. Along with the summer and winter solstices, *Walpurgisnacht* is among the most significant of the occult holidays.

abuse was carried out by paedophiles and the rest by satanists." The *Independent* added that sixteen of the victims had also claimed "they had seen induced abortions or babies killed." Sinason's research has led her to conclude that some children "are born for the purpose of abuse and are not registered on birth certificates." That claim has been voiced repeatedly by U.S. victims as well.

In a report from February 2000, the *Independent* revealed that Sinason had photographs documenting "horrific injuries to children and the existence of ceremonial sites with the remains of mutilated animals." The same article noted that Scotland Yard had begun an investigation. It is unclear where that investigation led, as it is unclear what the official response was to the release of Sinason's study. Media outlets appear to have dropped the story just before the report was issued. Many readers of the press accounts that preceded the report's release were no doubt predisposed to dismiss Sinason and her fellow researchers as cranks. Where exactly, readers were left to ponder, was this alleged photographic evidence showing children with horrific injuries? And where is the evidence of ritual murders being performed?

As it turns out, shockingly enough, such evidence is not that difficult to find. As hard as it may be to believe, especially for readers conditioned to think that all such stories are nothing but 'urban myths,' photographic evidence of exactly the sort described by Sinason is being peddled all over the Internet. But even with such compelling evidence being widely circulated, many will still be tempted to discount the stories told by the survivors of such abuse. Skeptics are advised to keep in mind the words of Detective Robert Simandl of the Chicago Police Department: "It's difficult for us to believe such crimes are occurring, but they are, all over the United States."

Indeed, all over the world, as we shall see in the next chapter.

> ***"In the early 1950's the CIA was looking for 'specially gifted subjects' to study 'dissociative states,' which could be 'induced and controlled to some extent with hypnosis and drugs.'"***
>
> **—Arlene Tyner, writing in *Probe* magazine, July/August 2000**

PART I

THE PEDOPHOCRACY

"From our comfortable seat in life…we never could have imagined that thousands of well-off adults, integrated and even cultured, find pleasure in seeing children tortured and killed."

—From a front-page editorial in Italy's *Corriere della Sera*
(reprinted in *The Irish Times*, September 29, 2000)

Chapter 1

From Brussels…

"The case of abduction and murder against Belgium's infamous paedophile Marc Dutroux remains unresolved. He has not been brought to book for these heinous crimes. There appears to be a steel veil drawn over the facts at the highest level and no one is prepared to expose those involved in this blatant cover-up… The official answer is that a series of hysterical conspiracy theories forced investigators to search for paedophile networks, which didn't exist. But for observers of this debacle, that's exactly what didn't happen. Far from being investigated, leads pointing to a network seem to have been blocked or buried."

—Olenka Frenkiel for the *BBC*, May 2, 2002

To the vast majority of Americans, the name Marc Dutroux does not mean much.

Drop that name in Belgium though and you are likely to elicit some very visceral reactions. Dutroux—convicted along with his wife in 1989 for the rape and violent abuse of five young girls, the youngest of whom was just eleven—now stands accused of being a key player in an international child prostitution and pornography ring whose practices included kidnapping, rape, sadistic torture, and murder.

Dutroux was sentenced in 1989 to thirteen years for his crimes, but was freed after having served just three. This was in spite of the fact that, as prison governor Yvan Stuaert would later tell a parliamentary commission: "A medical report described him as a perverse psychopath, an explosive mix. He was an evident danger to society." The man who turned Dutroux loose on society, Justice Minister Melchior Wathelet, was rewarded with a prestigious appointment to serve as a judge at the European Court of Justice at The Hague.

Shortly after Dutroux's release, young girls began to disappear in the vicinity of some of his homes. Though technically unemployed and drawing welfare from the state, he nevertheless owned at least six houses and lived quite lavishly. His rather lucrative income appears to have been derived from trading in child sex-slaves, child prostitution, and child pornography. Many of his houses appeared to stand vacant, though at least some of them were in fact used as torture and imprisonment centers where kidnapped girls were taken and held in underground dungeons. Some of Dutroux's homes were used in this way for several years following his early release, with a growing body of evidence to indicate that fact to the police. Authorities nevertheless failed to act on the information, or acted on it in ways that implied either complete incompetence (according to most press reports), or police complicity in the operation (according to any sort of logic).

Officials seem to have routinely ignored tips that later proved accurate, including a report from Dutroux's own mother that her son was holding girls prisoner in one of his houses. In addition, key facts were withheld from investigators working on the disappearances and lines of communication were unaccountably broken, inexcusably hindering the investigation. Police did search one of Dutroux's homes on no less than three separate occasions over the course of the investigation. On at least two of those occasions, two of the missing girls were being held in heinous conditions, imprisoned in a custom-built dungeon in the basement. Nevertheless, according to the *Guardian,* the police searches came up empty—even though the investigating officers reported "hearing children's voices on one occasion."

It was not until August 13, 1996, four years after the disappearances began, that authorities arrested Dutroux, along with his wife (an elementary school teacher), a lodger, a policeman, and a man the *Guardian* described as "an associate with political connections"—elsewhere identified as Jean-Michel Nihoul, a Brussels businessman and nightclub owner. One of those taken into custody—Michel Lelievre, described in a May 2002 *BBC* report as a "drug addict and petty thief"—reportedly told his interrogators that at least some of the girls abducted by the ring "were kidnapped to order, for someone else." This was just one of many statements by suspects and witnesses that would later be dismissed by Belgian officials.

Two days after the arrests, police again searched Dutroux's home and discovered the soundproof dungeon/torture center. As *CNN* reported, three years earlier "police ignored tips from an informant who said Dutroux was building secret cellars to hold girls before selling them abroad." In addition, in 1995, the same informant had told police that Dutroux had offered an unidentified third man "the equivalent of $3,000 to $5,000 to kidnap girls." Incredibly, it was later reported by the *Guardian* that police actually had in their possession a videotape

of the dungeon being constructed: "Belgian police could have saved the lives of two children [who were] allegedly murdered by the paedophile Marc Dutroux if they had watched a video seized from his home which showed him building their hidden cell." The tape had been seized in one of the earlier searches.

At the time of the final search, two fourteen-year-old girls were found imprisoned in the dungeon, chained and starving. They described to police how they had been used as child prostitutes and in the production of child pornography videos. More than 300 such videos were taken into custody by the police.

On August 17, 1996, the story got grimmer as police dug up the bodies of two eight-year-old girls at another of Dutroux's homes. It would later be learned that the girls had been kept in one of Dutroux's dungeons for nine months after their abductions, during which time they were repeatedly tortured and sexually assaulted—all captured on videotape. The girls were then left to slowly starve to death. Alongside of their decimated corpses was the body of Bernard Weinstein, a former accomplice of Dutroux who had occupied one of the houses for several years. Weinstein had been buried alive.

A few weeks later, two more girls were found buried under concrete at yet another of the Dutroux properties. Autopsy reports suggest they were drugged and then buried alive. By that time, ten people connected to the case were reportedly in custody. As the body count mounted, the outrage of the Belgian people grew. They demanded to know why this man, dubbed the 'Belgian Beast,' had been released after having served such an absurdly short sentence. And they demanded to know why, as evidence had continued to mount and girls had continued to disappear, the police had chosen to do nothing. How many girls, they wanted to know, had been killed due to this inaction?

Adding further fuel to the fire, as a *Los Angeles Times* report revealed, were claims by "a highly regarded children's activist, Marie-France Botte…[that] the Justice Ministry is sitting on a politically sensitive list of customers of pedophile videotapes." The same report noted, "the affair has become further clouded by the discovery of a motorcycle that reportedly matches the description of one used in the 1991 assassination of prominent Belgian businessman and politician Andre Cools. Michel Bourlet, the head prosecutor on the pedophile case, meanwhile, has publicly declared that the investigation can be thoroughly pursued only without political interference. Several years ago, Bourlet was removed from the highly charged Cools case, which remains unsolved."

A report in *Time* magazine alluded to murky links between the Dutroux operation and organized crime figures. Marc Verwilghen—the chief investigating magistrate on the case—stated the case more bluntly: "For me, the Dutroux affair is a question of organised crime." Also mentioned in the *Time* article was the use

of secret "underground tunnels," not unlike those described by children a decade earlier at the infamous McMartin Preschool.

Outrage continued to grow as more arrests were made and evidence of high-level government and police complicity continued to emerge. One of Dutroux's accomplices, businessman Jean-Michel Nihoul, confessed to organizing an 'orgy' at a Belgian chateau that had been attended by government officials, a former European Commissioner, and a number of law enforcement officers. A Belgian senator noted, quite accurately, that such parties were part of a system "which operates to this day and is used to blackmail the highly placed people who take part."

According to the *BBC*, Nihoul has brazenly claimed: "I am the monster of Belgium." He has all but dared the state to prosecute him, claiming that he is beyond the reach of the law because he has information that, if made public, "would bring the Government and the entire state down."

In September 1996, twenty-three suspects—at least nine of whom were police officers—were detained and questioned about their possible complicity in the crimes and/or their negligence in investigating the case. As the *Los Angeles Times* noted in a very brief, two-sentence report, the detainments "were the latest indication that police in the southern city of Charleroi may have helped cover up the alleged crimes of Marc Dutroux." The arrests followed raids on the police officers' homes and on the headquarters of the Charleroi police force and were based on information supplied by police inspector Georges Zicot, who had already been charged as an accomplice. Three magistrates had also reportedly been interrogated by police investigators.

Just days before the arrests, police had also arrested five suspects in the Cools assassination, including a former regional government minister named Alain VanderBiest. Strangely enough, the *News Telegraph* reported that: "Police investigating the Cools murder in 1991…have been given helpful leads by some of those arrested in the Dutroux case." The *Telegraph* also noted that Cools "had promised 'shocking revelations' before his death."

On October 14, 1996 came the straw that broke the camel's back: Jean-Marc Connerotte, who had been serving as the investigating judge on the Dutroux case, was dismissed by the Belgian Supreme Court. Connerotte was viewed by the people as something of a rarity: a public official/law enforcement officer who actually appeared to be pursuing a prosecution, rather than a cover-up. The *News Telegraph* described him as: "the only figure in the judiciary who enjoys the nation's confidence." As the *New York Times* reported, Connerotte "became a national hero in August after saving two children from a secret dungeon kept by a convicted child rapist and ordering the inquiry that led to the discovery of the bodies of four girls kidnapped by a child pornography network." He had also

arrested three men in 1994 as suspects in the Cools assassination—just before the case was transferred to the jurisdiction of another magistrate.

A May 2002 *BBC* report revealed that, after Connerotte's removal, a "special team of police officers interviewing Regina Louf and the other 'X' witnesses, as they were called, were the next to be sacked." The "X" witnesses were victims of the pedophile ring who had come forward to tell harrowing tales of their victimization.

A woman named Regina Louf was the first of eleven such victims to be interviewed by police officials. Louf claimed that she had been victimized by the ring—which included her parents and her grandmother—from the time that she was a very young child. She described the operation in detail to authorities, supplying them with names—names that included "senior judges, one of the country's most powerful politicians—now dead—and a very influential banker." According to Louf, the operation "was big business—blackmail—there was a lot of money involved." Many of her victimizers, she said, were secretly filmed for blackmail purposes.

Louf identified Michel Nihoul as a regular organizer of 'parties.' These parties, she said, "not only involved sex, they included sadism, torture and murder." She described in detail the murdered victims, and how and where they were killed. The *BBC* reported that when police checked into Louf's claims, they were able to verify "key elements of Regina's story and found [that] at least one murder that she says she witnessed matched an unsolved murder." Nevertheless, the same *BBC* report revealed that, "today in Belgium Regina Louf's reputation is destroyed. The Prosecutor General of Liege, Anne Thilly, declares she's completely mad despite numerous statements from independent psychologists to the contrary." According to the judges now on the case, "her testimony has been declared worthless" and will not be presented in any trial of Dutroux or his associates.

Connerotte's removal from the Dutroux case fanned the smoldering flames of public outrage; as the *Times* reported, "Hundreds of thousands of people had petitioned the high court to retain the judge." Adding yet more fuel to the fire, prosecutor Michel Bourlet was claiming that evidence indicated a pedophile ring, composed of the wealthy and powerful, had been protected for twenty-five years. With the families of Dutroux's victims calling for a general strike, men and women all across the country walked away from their jobs in protest as railway workers and bus drivers shut down public transportation, bringing some cities to a virtual standstill. The *Telegraph* reported that, "in Liege, firemen turned their hoses on the city's court building" to symbolize the massive clean-up that was in order.

On October 20, 1996, 350,000 citizens of the tiny nation of Belgium took to the streets of Brussels dressed all in white, demanding the reform of a system so corrupt that it would protect the abusers, rapists, torturers, and killers of children. The political fallout from the case ultimately brought about the resignation

of Belgium's State Police Chief, Interior Minister, and Justice Minister, who became sacrificial lambs tossed to the outraged masses to avoid what could easily have exploded into a full-scale insurrection by the people, particularly after police 'incompetence' allowed Dutroux to 'escape' and remain at large for a brief time in April 1998.

There were in fact calls from the people for the entire coalition government to step down. Months later, an opinion survey by Brussels' *Le Soir* newspaper found that only one in five Belgians still had confidence in the federal government and in the nation's criminal justice system. As the *Los Angeles Times* reported in January 1998, "the conviction remains stubbornly widespread that members of the upper crust—government ministers, the Roman Catholic Church, the court of King Albert II—belonged to child sex rings, or protected them."

The lingering distrust of the people was not alleviated by the fact that a parliamentary inquiry had identified, in April 1997, thirty officials who had, as the *Times* tactfully put it, "failed to uncover Dutroux's misdeeds." Nearly a year later, none of them had yet suffered any repercussions. Additionally, at least ten missing children suspected of having fallen prey to Dutroux's operation have never been found.

Just a few months before the parliamentary commission issued its report on the Dutroux case, viewed by many as a shameless cover-up, the *Telegraph* reported, "grim rumors…have been circulating that a second paedophile network at least as appalling may have been operating in parallel to that said to involve Dutroux." The bodies of seven children were believed to have been hidden by the ring, which was thought could be linked to Dutroux through Michel Nihoul. Two months after that, a man named Patrick Derochette and three of his family members were arrested following the discovery of the body of a nine-year-old girl. Rumors quickly began circulating linking that crime to Dutroux as well. Like Dutroux, Derochette had previously been convicted on multiple counts of child rape. He had been committed to a psychiatric institution from which he was released after just six weeks. Authorities quickly denied that there was any connection between the cases. In January 1998, however, the *Telegraph* reported, "new evidence from a lawyer involved in the investigations blows a hole in previous police claims that there was no link between the cases involving the alleged child murderers Marc Dutroux and Patrick Derochette." Once again, the connection was said to be through Nihoul.

In April 1999, the *Guardian* weighed in with this report: "the highly respected chairman of a parliamentary inquiry into the [Dutroux] case claims that his commission's findings were muzzled by political and judicial leaders to prevent details emerging of complicity in the crimes…Mr. Verwilghen claims that senior political and legal figures refused to cooperate with the inquiry. He says magistrates

and police were officially told to refuse to answer certain questions, in what he describes as 'a characteristic smothering operation.'"

As of May 2002, nearly six years after Dutroux was taken into custody, his trial had yet to begin. Parents of victims continued to loudly shout of a cover-up, and the *Telegraph* was reporting that: "It was recently learnt that scientific tests on 6,000 hairs found in the [underground dungeon] began only this year." Those tests, of course, could reveal how many victims passed through Dutroux's chamber of horrors. Perhaps more importantly, they could also, as a *BBC News* report noted in January 2002, "establish whether the girls had any other visitors."

Anne Thilly, the aforementioned Prosecutor General of Liege who dismissed as "mad" a key prosecution witness, has been quoted as saying, "there was no need to get the hairs analysed as no one else entered the cage. There was no network so there was no need to look for evidence of one. In any case, the hairs have all now been analysed." Thilly gave no indication of how she knew there was nothing to find before even bothering to look. And contrary to her claims, the *BBC* reported in May 2002 that the hairs had "still not been analysed," according to "sources central to the investigation." Thilly has also claimed "the bodies [recovered from Dutroux's properties] were too decomposed to test for DNA." The *BBC* though noted "the autopsy states quite clearly that the bodies were not decomposed. Samples were taken. It is just that no one seems to know what has happened to the results."

The January *BBC* report came on the heels of an interview that the imprisoned Dutroux granted a Flemish journalist and a Belgian senator. Therein, Dutroux was quoted as admitting, "a network with all kinds of criminal activities really does exist. But the authorities don't want to look into it." He also acknowledged the existence of "a well-grounded [paedophile] ring. I maintained regular contact with people in this ring. However, the law does not want to investigate this lead."

Another lead that was never seriously investigated involved allegations of satanic cult involvement in the abductions. In 1996, police had found a note at Bernard Weinstein's home that led them to investigate the *Abraxas* organization and its high priestess, Dominique Kindermans. Some segments of the Belgian press speculated that the organization was a satanic cult that assisted in obtaining young girls for ritual sacrifices.

If the Marc Dutroux case were some kind of aberration, it would still be a disturbing story for the level of unspeakable corruption and depravity of the Belgian political and law enforcement establishment of which it speaks. Far more disturbing is the fact that it does not appear to be an isolated case at all.

As 1999 drew to a close, the nation of Latvia was rocked by a child prostitution/child pornography scandal that reached to the very top of the political power

structure. The case first broke in August, when police uncovered a massive operation involving as many as 2,000 severely abused children. When media reports began linking top Latvian officials to the case, a special parliamentary commission was assembled to investigate the emerging allegations. In February 2000, the chairman of the commission delivered a report to Parliament linking the country's Prime Minister and Justice Minister, the director of the State Revenue Service, and a number of army and law enforcement officers to the case. A campaign was immediately begun to discredit the committee chairman, including allegations that he is tied to the former KGB—a classic case of redbaiting that enabled the allegations to be dismissed as 'Communist' propaganda.

On November 27, 2002, *The Guardian* reported that many among Portugal's elite were linked to a pedophile ring as well: "A scandal over a paedophile ring run from a state orphanage gripped Portugal yesterday as it threatened to engulf diplomats, media personalities and senior politicians. Photographs of unnamed senior government officials with young boys from Lisbon's Casa Pia orphanage were among the evidence reportedly available to police after they arrested a former orphanage employee called Carlos Silvino." One revelation in the case was "that systematic sexual abuse of children at the home had allegedly been going on for more than 20 years and had been known to police and other authorities for most of that time." Teresa Costa Macedo, a former secretary of state for families, has said that she sent a dossier to police twenty years ago containing "damning proof" of the abuse, including photographs and eyewitness statements. The information was not acted upon, and, for her trouble, Macedo became the victim of a campaign of threats and intimidation.

In June 2003, the *Independent* reported that police "at first denied her reports existed," but then later produced them. Macedo has testified before parliament that the former president, Antonio Ramalho Eanes, the former foreign secretary, Jaime Garcia, and elements within the police all knew of the ongoing abuse. An official report claims that, "among the children still living at Casa Pia, at least 128 had been subjected to sexual abuse. Many are deaf and dumb." Countless other victims have passed through the facility over the last thirty years. Among those detained or questioned in the case were Carlos Cruz, known in Portugal as "Mr. Television"; Manuel Abrantes, a former director of Casa Pia; Joao Ferreira Diniz, a doctor at Casa Pia; Jorge Ritto, a former ambassador to UNESCO; Hugo Marcal, Carlos Silvino's former attorney; Eduardo Ferro Rodrigues, Portugal's Socialist Party leader; television talk show host Herman Jose; and Paulo Pedroso, a former Labour minister.

A follow-up report in the *Independent* noted that Casa Pia, founded by a police superintendent, first "came under scrutiny 20 years ago when a young inmate died…Officials found the home's doors open all night and youngsters in

a cruising area for male prostitutes. Four children aged between eight and 12, missing for a fortnight, were found in a luxury flat in nearby Cascais owned by a diplomat." That diplomat was Jorge Ritto. It is now alleged that Silvino, an employee and former resident of Casa Pia, acted for years to procure young boys for rich and powerful pedophiles, including Ritto. Adolescent witnesses have claimed on Portuguese television that they were offered enticements and "then raped…and recruited for sex parties with powerful 'friends.' Others, now adult, have told of chilling experiences long suppressed." A Portuguese organization calling itself *Innocence in Danger* has been working for years to publicize the problem of child abuse and child abductions in the country, but have been unable to penetrate what they describe as a "media blackout."

As of February 2003, a campaign was underway in Scotland to unseal records that have been sealed for 100 years under special order. The records concern the activities of Thomas Hamilton, a notorious child molester/murderer who was credited with killing sixteen schoolchildren and a teacher, and then himself, in 1996. One police report sealed under the order "concerns Thomas Hamilton's activities at a summer camp in Loch Lomond in 1991, five years before the shootings," and allegedly links Hamilton to "figures in the Scottish establishment, including two senior politicians and a lawyer," according to the *Guardian*.

A report in Scotland's *Sunday Herald*, from March 2003, revealed that 106 documents had been sealed. These included "a letter connected to Hamilton, which was sent by George Robertson, currently head of NATO, to Michael Forsyth, who was then Secretary of State for Scotland," as well as "correspondence relating to Thomas Hamilton's alleged involvement in Freemasonry." A deputy justice minister, Michael Matheson, was quoted in the article questioning the official justification for sealing the documents: "The explanation to date about the 100-year rule was that it was put in place to protect the interests of children named in the Central Police Report. How can that explanation stand when children aren't named?"

On September 29, 2000, *The Irish Times* reported that yet another pedophile network had surfaced: "Eight people were arrested in Italy and three in Russia, and police said 1,700 people were being investigated in Italy." The images traded by this ring were "divided into several categories…The most gruesome, police said, was coded 'Necros Pedo,' in which children were raped and tortured to death."

And so it is that we first confront that most disturbing of topics—snuff films, which most people assume do not actually exist. As recently as February 1999, the *New York Post* assured readers that: "Snuff films are the stuff of urban legend…how did this legend get started? No one knows." The unfortunate truth though is that snuff films do actually exist, and they likely have existed for as long as film has existed, though they were not always known by that name. According

to the *Post*: "The term 'snuff' was actually coined during the Charles Manson case, when press reports repeated a rumor that the Manson 'family' had filmed home movies of the brutal slayings." Other reports hold that the term was coined in 1976 by a writer for the *New York Times* who was in need of a phrase to describe reports of murders following sexual activity being captured on film.

In the late 1970s, as Carl Raschke noted in *Painted Black*, the "Texas House Select Committee on Child Pornography disclosed…that investigators probing leads to organized crime in Houston, Dallas, and other major cities found that 'slave' auctions for sixteen- and seventeen-year-old boys were routinely held in Mexico. Some of the boys were featured in brutal snuff or 'slasher' movies." Raschke also quotes from a study by U.S. mental health professionals that claims that a child from Mexico "can be packaged, delivered, and sold deep within [the United States] in a short time," and that many are purchased solely "for the purpose of killing."

In *Enslaved*, Gordon Thomas reported that: "At the start of the year [1991] Britain's Scotland Yard was continuing to investigate reports that up to twenty children in London had been murdered last year in [snuff films] and the video tapes sold on the Continent." Journalist Nick Davies, writing for the *Guardian* in November 2000, revisited that investigation, which was centered on a group of British pedophiles living in Amsterdam. The investigation revealed that the men were running gay brothels that were essentially 'fronts' for trafficking underage boys, many purchased from the streets of economically ravaged Eastern Europe, and others collected from the streets of London. Prominent among the group of pedophiles were a man named Alan Williams, known as the "Welsh Witch," and another named Warwick Spinks, who according to Davies, "pioneered the trafficking of boys as young as 10."

The men used the boys in the production of child pornography and, according to several witnesses, in the production of snuff films. Davies wrote: "not just once but repeatedly, evidence had come to the attention of police in England and the Netherlands, that, for pleasure and profit, some of the exiled paedophiles in Amsterdam had murdered boys in front of the camera." Indeed, witnesses had independently given descriptions of snuff films that were remarkably consistent in the details of the types of torture used and the manner of death, though the descriptions of the victim and the filming location differed, indicating that a number of such films had been made. One witness claimed to have seen five such films.

In the fall of 1998, British detectives flew to Amsterdam to investigate a particularly detailed account provided by a witness. The investigators had in their possession: a detailed description of the apartment where the witness had viewed the tape; the name of the owner of the apartment and videotape; the name of the man who committed the murder; a detailed description of events on the tape;

and the first name and approximate age of the victim. With all that in hand, says Davies, the detectives "hit a wall." Dutch police "said it was not enough" to warrant launching any sort of an investigation. By that time, investigators had been hearing accounts of the snuff films for nearly eight years. At one point, they had recruited an undercover officer "to pose as a child abuser and befriend Warwick Spinks," who acknowledged to the officer that he was actively involved in trafficking boys. He also revealed that he knew "some people who were involved in making snuff movies and how they did it was, they only sold them in limited editions, made 10 copies or something, 10 very rich customers in America, who paid $5,000 each or something like that." There is no indication that any thorough investigation was ever conducted, or that any arrests were ever made.

In September 2002, the *Chicago Sun Times* carried a brief report of two brothers who were arrested and charged with possessing an enormous collection of child pornography. Seized from the brothers were 5,000 photographic images, along with about 100 videotapes and 8mm films. Among this evidence were images of "young girls apparently tortured, raped and killed." The American media has shown no inclination to shine any additional light on the case.

An account of the recent Italian case carried by the *Guardian* affirmed the existence of snuff films: "Police have discovered a massive international paedophile network selling violent child-pornography videos to clients in Italy, the US and Germany…(authorities are) trying to identify 5,000 people who are suspected of attempting to purchase the videos, some of which appear to contain images of children being tortured and murdered." The UK's *Independent,* in a follow-up published in November 2000, also confirmed that the seized materials included child snuff films: "Horrified investigators gathered images of more than 2,000 children who were filmed while being abused, raped, and…killed." By that time, close to 1,500 people had been charged in the case, but not—as the *Guardian* noted—"those in high places who are believed to form a 'paedophile lobby.'"

As in the Belgian, Latvian, and Portuguese cases, there were indications in the Italian case of high-level complicity and a strong belief among the people that the facts of the case were being covered up. And as with the other cases, the *Independent* reported that the magistrate heading up the inquiry "provoked a furore by denouncing a 'paedophile lobby' supported by politicians which he said openly obstructed the investigators and worked to prevent tougher sanctions for the consumers of child pornography." The *New York Times* reported in March 1997 that there is "growing public indignation in France and elsewhere about the recurrent reports of kidnapping, rape or incest involving the very young." The same *Times* report revealed that French police had "detained more than 250 people and confiscated some 5,000 videocassettes" in conjunction with an investigation into a massive child pornography ring. Those detained by police were

described as "mainly married professionals." A dozen of them soon turned up dead, allegedly by their own hand.

The *BBC* filed a brief report on a 1996 case that was otherwise almost completely ignored by the English-language press: "Mexican police broke up an international child pornography ring based in the resort of Acapulco which they said had at least *four thousand clients in the United States*," (emphasis added). A UN envoy investigating the case said that the "child pornography sometimes involved babies of less than one month old."

In June 1997, the *News Telegraph* spoke of over 800 French homes being raided and 204 suspects being taken into custody. Among those detained were "more than 30 teachers…and a number of priests," as well as the deputy mayor of the town of Saint Mihiel. By the end of the week, four had committed suicide, including a school headmaster. Three years later, the *BBC* filed a very brief report noting that a verdict was due "in the trial of more than sixty people accused of possessing child pornography. One of the judges hearing the case said examining the video evidence made him feel physically sick." In a familiar refrain, it was reported that: "the French courts have been accused of attacking the easy targets—porn consumers—rather than producers and distributors. And one children's rights group has alleged that senior public figures were among those investigated—but their cases were dropped before coming to court."

In 1998, another large-scale international ring was discovered operating out of the Netherlands and Berlin, Germany. The *New York Times* reported that investigators called the case "nauseating," in that "images of abuse of even babies and infants were peddled via the Internet and other media." Police discovered "voluminous records of what appear to be clients and suppliers from countries including Israel, Ukraine, Britain, Russia and the United States." The ring was first uncovered when a key member was found dead in Italy. According to the *Irish Times*, he was murdered by another member of the ring. His apartment in the Dutch town of Zandvoort was found to contain "thousands of digital images stored on computer disks," as well as "hundreds of addresses of suspected suppliers and clients," according to the *New York Times*. The images shocked even veteran sex-crimes investigators, one of whom stated that the seized evidence "left [him] speechless…It looks like the perpetrators are not dealing with human beings but with objects."

The *BBC* reported in June 1999 that two unnamed German men had "gone on trial, accused of running a child pornography ring in Germany, Poland and the Czech Republic." The pair, along with at least eleven identified but unindicted accomplices, "made video recordings of the gang sexually abusing children between the ages of three and 14 since 1993." A large but unspecified quantity of "videos, photography, magazines and CD-ROMs containing child pornography

were confiscated." Also noted was a possible connection to the Dutroux case: "There have been cases of Slovak children being taken to Vienna to make pornographic films. The Belgian paedophile Marc Dutroux…was a regular visitor to one Slovak town."

In September 1998, another ring had been raided—one that the *BBC* described as "a larger and more sinister paedophile network called Wonderland."[9] The *San Jose Mercury News* reported, "police in…22 states and 13 foreign countries conducted coordinated raids…aimed at breaking up an Internet child-pornography ring…The ring involves as many as 200 people around the world,

9 The network was so named in honor of Lewis Carroll's revered children's book, *Alice's Adventures in Wonderland*. Carroll, whose real name was Charles Lutwidge Dodgson, was widely known to have a predilection for underage girls and boys, and is now something of a patron saint of pedophiles around the globe. A concerted effort has been made over the decades to cover up Carroll's pedophilic tendencies, but the truth is evident even in the heavily whitewashed profiles of him that can be found in modern encyclopedias. "Always a friend of children, particularly little girls, Carroll wrote thousands of letters to them," notes Microsoft's *Encarta*, adding that Carroll "gained an additional measure of fame as an amateur photographer. Most of his camera portraits were of children in various costumes and poses, including nude studies." A *New York Times* report from August 1998 states: "Dodgson exhibited a lifelong affection for little girls, seeking them out not only to enjoy their company and tell them stories, but also to photograph them, at times naked. His university colleagues thought this bizarre." The *Times* also noted that the mother of Alice Liddell, the pre-pubescent girl that inspired Carroll's most famous book, had banned Carroll from the Liddell home by the time the book was published. The *Encyclopaedia Britannica* reports that Carroll's photographic hobby was abandoned in 1880, but dismisses suggestions that "this sudden decision was reached because of an impurity of motive for his nude studies." Carroll's interest in child sexuality certainly hadn't diminished; as the *NY Times* reported, "[Carroll] remained attached to his 'child friends' after giving up photography, even sketching some naked girls as late as 1885." *Britannica* also notes that Carroll—who was raised in an environment where there were "few friends outside the family," and who was ordained a deacon in the Church of England on the winter solstice of 1861—generally lost interest in his child 'friends' when they reached the age of twelve. *Wonderland* is also the name of the quarterly publication of an organization calling itself the Lewis Carroll Collector's Guild, which bills itself as a "voluntary association of persons who believe nudist materials are a constitutionally protected expression and whose collective interests include pre-teen nudes." As Gordon Thomas has noted, "in *Wonderland* the 'delights' of 'transgenerational sex' pepper the pages." Such is the legacy of the man whose literary works are peddled to our children.

who exchanged over the Internet thousands of sexually explicit images of children as young as 18 months." The *Independent* later reported that the ring "shared pictures of children being abused—in some cases live via web-cam broadcasts over the internet." The raids included homes in "Australia, Austria, Belgium, Finland, France, Germany, Italy, Norway, Portugal and Sweden," according to the *New York Times*, which added that: "Several dozen people were arrested, but officials said they expected more than 100 to be charged." The *Independent* later reported that 107 suspects were ultimately arrested. The *Mercury News* implied that that was only the tip of the iceberg: "The ring actually extends into 47 countries."

The case was described by a British official as "stomach-churning." The *Times* reported, "Wonderland Club members are believed to have posed their own children for pictures…In other cases…parents may have taken money to let their children be used." The *Guardian* reported that over 1,250 children were featured in the photos and videos, "many of whom suffered appalling injuries and were seen sobbing uncontrollably as they were being sexually violated." The *Independent* added that the victimized children were "mostly under [the age of] 10." A *BBC* report held that the combined raids resulted in the seizure of more than "750,000 computer images of children." A Detective Superintendent with the British National Crime Squad called these images "disgusting" and added that "the behavior that has been carried out is absolutely appalling." The *BBC* also took note of the fact that, while ignored by the American press, "Wonderland originated in the United States."

Among the scores of U.S. homes raided in connection with the case, one yielded a "database of more than 100,000 sexual photographs of naked boys and girls." Interestingly enough, the *Times* also noted that another raid, "in Missouri, turned up a cache of weapons as well as child pornography in a heavily fortified trailer"—illustrating once again, as did the Dutroux case, the close ties between organized pedophilia and other terrorist assaults against society.

As with the earlier raids in Europe, a rash of 'suicides' followed the Wonderland arrests. By October 24, 1998, the *Mercury News* was reporting that no fewer than four of the thirty-four American suspects had killed themselves. These included a retired Air Force pilot, a microbiologist at the University of Connecticut, and a computer consultant in Colorado. In the UK, the Wonderland raids—dubbed Operation Cathedral—resulted in the indictments of eight suspects. One of the eight turned up dead four months later—another alleged suicide. The other seven were given ridiculously light sentences in February 2001 for their complicity in inflicting unfathomable abuse on countless children. Sentences ranged from 12 to 30 months. Just a few weeks before the sentences were handed down, the *Guardian* was reporting that: "Police today arrested 13 suspected paedophiles in the largest ever UK operation against child pornography." Once again, a massive

amount of appalling evidence was seized, with most of the material featuring "scenes of children being raped and sexually abused."

The *Independent* reported in February 2001: "Detectives working on the [Wonderland] case discovered that many of the paedophiles were also members of other child pornography groups." One of the groups most closely tied to Wonderland was a ring known as the Orchid Club, which had been exposed by a 1996 investigation in San Jose, California. That investigation had led to the indictment of sixteen men on charges of conspiring to produce and exchange child pornography. Members of the club were identified in at least nine states and three foreign countries. By the time of the Wonderland raids, the *Mercury News* was able to report that the purported ringleader of the Orchid Club and "twelve others either have pleaded guilty or have been convicted in connection with that case." Their crimes included recruiting "young relatives and friends of their own children to be molested and photographed."

The club was also, like Wonderland, involved in "real-time exploitation of children" on the Internet. Club members were able to send in requests and have them acted-out on live feeds. The club also held a pedophile 'summit,' at which members "traded stories about pre-teen girls they had molested and photographed in sexually explicit poses." The summit was held, appropriately enough, on April 20—the birth date of Adolph Hitler and a significant occult holiday.

In late March 2001, yet another interlinked, global pedophile network was exposed. That month, the *Independent* reported, "US authorities announced the arrest of four American citizens for involvement in an international child-porn ring called Blue Orchid." The *Los Angeles Times* added further details: "the United States and Russia have shut down a Moscow-based international pornography ring that used the Internet to sell videotapes of children engaged in sexual acts." These tapes were said to sell for "between $200 and $300." As an *Associated Press* release revealed, "police seized some 600 videotapes, 200 digital video disks and many boxes of photographs." Video duplication equipment and sales and shipping records were also seized, leading to "criminal inquiries in 24 nations…Many of the tapes were bought by people in the United States; others went to Germany, Britain, France, Denmark, China, Kuwait, Mexico and scores of other countries."

The *Times* reported that nine people had been arrested and fifteen search warrants had been issued in the case. The *AP* report noted that four of those arrests were in Russia, where two suspects, alas, had "committed suicide." The ring was also said by the *Times* to offer what were cryptically referred to as "custom-made videos" for the hefty price of $5,000 each. The contents of these videos were not revealed, but it was revealed that the "prevalence of child pornography has increased dramatically with the growth of the Internet. There are approximately 100,000 web sites worldwide associated with child pornography."

This point was reinforced the next day when the British press reported police raids on yet another pedophile ring. A report in the *Guardian* held "more than 30 people, including a…man working for a national youth organization, were arrested yesterday in dawn raids on the homes of suspected paedophiles." Once again being sold and traded were images "which showed children being abused." A report on the case in the *Independent* quoted a law enforcement spokesman as revealing, "that those arrested included members of 'some interesting professions,'" though the source demurred from revealing what those professions might be. The official did say that they had "a disturbing scenario of one or two juveniles who have been caught in this way. One of them appears to be a 13-year-old boy." The police acknowledged that the arrested boy was "also a potential victim and would be treated in that light," which seems rather obvious. Nevertheless, a follow-up to the story that the *Independent* ran in May held that the boy had become "one of the youngest people to be listed on the sex offenders' register."

The next month, the *Guardian* carried a report on Eric Franklin Rosser—accused child pornographer, one of the FBI's ten-most-wanted criminals, and a former keyboardist for John Cougar Mellencamp's band. According to the report, "investigators believe Rosser's material is among pornography circulated by a British paedophile ring…More than 1,800 members are thought to belong to a club called Teenboys. Its website features boys aged around 12…Teenboys is considered bigger than the notorious Wonderland Club."

In September 2001, the *Scottish Daily Record* reported that a "salvation army couple working on a British army base have been arrested in a massive paedophile crackdown." Seized from the couple's home were "some 400 videotapes…computers, discs, photographs and other material…images of children as young as two have been found." The same report claimed "a massive vice probe into kiddie porn in the USA would expose some of the biggest names in Hollywood as paedophiles. A federal investigation, codenamed Operation Avalanche, has already resulted in over 100 arrests—and the US Department of Justice say there will be hundreds more, including celebrities." Lori Rabjohns, identified as a Justice Department spokeswoman, was quoted as saying: "These are people who appear upstanding members of society…We're talking doctors, lawyers—and celebrities."

The investigation came about as a result of a raid on the Ft. Worth, Texas home of Thomas and Janice Reedy, who had been operating a business called Landslide Productions, which offered child pornography for sale over the Internet. The Reedy's website, according to the *Independent*, functioned as a portal to "more than 5,700 websites with names such as Child Rape and Cyber Lolita." The Reedys had made millions of dollars from their child porn business, which "employed more than a dozen staff, including a customer service represen-

tative and a receptionist." This financial empire was built with "money raised from the torture, rape and sexual abuse of children as young as two."

The raid on the Reedy's home, conducted in September 1999, unexpectedly yielded a database of the names and addresses of a reported 75,000 subscribers around the world. According to a report carried in February 2002 by *TechTV*, "more than 35,000 [of those] individual subscribers [were] in the United States." Nevertheless, only 100 arrests had been made at that time of the report—a number that remained unchanged in the months after the initial arrests. By early 2003, the story had dropped out of sight with little indication that there would be any further arrests, despite Chief Postal Inspector Kenneth Weaver's earlier insistence that the initial arrests were just "the tip of the iceberg."

More than 7,000 subscribers to the site were British citizens. Their names, addresses and credit card information were provided by the FBI to British authorities, who launched an investigation paralleling Operation Avalanche that was dubbed Operation Ore. As in America, only a few of the known offenders have thus far been arrested. Included among those questioned by police have been television personality Matthew Kelly and legendary guitarist Pete Townshend.

Rushing to Townshend's defense was *The Nation* columnist Alexander Cockburn, who earlier played a prominent role in denouncing the McMartin prosecutions. In a posting on his *Counterpunch* website from February 2003, Cockburn grossly misrepresented the nature of the charges against Townshend. He charged that, according to the Supreme Court, "'porn' encompass[es] even clothed images of children if they are construed as arousing. 'Child' means anyone under 18." Cockburn labeled Townshend's arrest "absurd," and claimed that if you "have a photo of a kid in a bath on your hard drive, and the prosecutor says you were looking at it with lust in your heart, [then] that is tantamount to sexually molesting an actual kid in an actual bath."

Cockburn was clearly trying to convey the impression that Townshend and others are the innocent victims of overzealous prosecutors. It will be recalled, however, that the images that the Landslide website was offering to Townshend and other subscribers were images of "the torture, rape and sexual abuse of children as young as two." Those are not the types of images that would easily be mistaken for innocent pictures of a child taking a bath.

Also included among the 7,272 suspects in the United Kingdom, according to the *Observer*, were "hundreds of child welfare professionals, including police officers, care workers and teachers," all of whom were "identified as 'extremely high-risk' paedophiles." Particularly well represented on the list were law enforcement personnel: "Investigators now believe as many as 90 police officers have so far been identified from an initial trawl of 200 of the British names found in the U.S.

Many of the other suspects work in other sensitive professions, often linked to the criminal justice system."

On November 4, 2002, the *Independent* carried a brief report that noted that virtually all of the British suspects had "yet to be investigated despite the police having their details for four months." All the information on the suspects was sent in July 2002 to the fifty-one police departments throughout Great Britain, but "despite detailed intelligence, nearly all of the suspected paedophiles remain at large." No mention was made of why it took U.S. authorities nearly three years to get the information to their UK counterparts. In January 2003, the *Sunday Herald* announced that the "police inquiry which plans to arrest a further 7000 men across the UK…is set to end in disaster with many suspects walking free." Detective Chief Inspector Bob McLachlan, the former head of Scotland Yard's paedophile unit, told the *Sunday Herald,* "the lack of urgency in making arrests will lead to suspects destroying evidence…before they are arrested." McLachlan also told the *Herald* that claims made by police chiefs and the government that they are prioritizing pedophile crime are nothing but "smoke and mirrors."

The final line of the *Sunday Herald* article revealed that, according to police, there were enough "rich and famous Operation Ore suspects [to] fill newspaper front pages for an entire year." According to *The Register* and the *Sunday Times* (which reportedly obtained, but did not publish, all 7,272 names), the list of suspects included "at least 20 senior executives,…services personnel from at least five military bases, GPs, university academics and civil servants." Also on the list were a "famous newspaper columnist…along with a songwriter for a legendary pop band and a member of another chart-topping 1980s cult pop group, along with an official with the Church of England."

It is unlikely that any of those suspects, nor the "high-profile former Labour Cabinet minister" mentioned by the *Sunday Herald*, will ever be prosecuted. In August 2003, *Scotland on Sunday* reported that the Scottish arm of the "massive internet child pornography investigation Operation Ore has ended…without anybody being charged with sex abuse." An unnamed Scottish police chief said that that outcome "would not trouble us if we thought that all the men who were looking at child porn on their computer were just sad creeps who did not pose a risk to the children in their lives, but that is not the conclusion that was drawn from every raid." To the contrary, what investigators repeatedly encountered was evidence that suspects were engaged in the ongoing abuse of children.

In March 2002, *Knight Ridder* carried a report that stated: "Postal inspectors, the FBI and Canadian authorities have broken up an underground network of adults who traded pornographic videos of children—sometimes their own—being brutally beaten." At the time that the report was filed, ten perpetrators had already been convicted and "more arrests are expected in the ongoing investigation of what

authorities described…as a unique case." According to Raymond Smith, head of the Postal Service's child exploitation investigations: "We've seen organized networks of sadomasochistic beatings with adults before, but this is the first time we've seen it with children."

In an apparent attempt to downplay the appalling behavior uncovered by the investigation, a postal inspector named Michael Galuppo described the ring as "a bizarre group of people obsessed with spanking children for sexual gratification." "Spanking," it should be noted, is a rather odd way to describe what in fact were brutally sadistic beatings involving "whips, hairbrushes, canes and wooden paddles." The abuse was so severe that at least one of the children depicted on videotape "suffered permanent disfigurement from beatings that investigators said went on for 'years.'" Among those convicted in the case were "a middle school teacher…a nurse and former Boy Scout leader…[and] a former Sunday school teacher."

Just months later, in August 2002, the *Independent* reported that U.S. authorities had "announced the discovery of a 'despicable' child pornography ring stretching to Britain and continental Europe, in which parents sexually abused their children and distributed photographs of them over the internet…Robert Bonner, The Customs Commissioner, said he was particularly shocked to see the degree of collusion by parents. 'If this isn't unusual, God help us…I've rarely seen crimes as despicable and repugnant.'" Of the sixteen suspects arrested in the U.S., one "committed suicide shortly after being arrested."

These cases were not, of course, in any way "unique" or "unusual," as veteran Customs and Postal Service officials, with experience investigating cases of child exploitation, should know.

In September 2003, the *International Herald Tribune* carried a report from Berlin concerning "an international police investigation [that] had uncovered an immense child pornography ring involving 26,500 suspects who swapped illegal images on the Internet in 166 countries." More than 500 homes in Germany were searched and hundreds of computers were seized, along with tens of thousands of CD-ROMs, diskettes, and videotapes. One seized image "showed a baby of four months being abused." A statement issued by the German Interior and Justice Ministries warned that many of the suspects, a number of whom are reportedly teachers and police officials, "are extremely dangerous pedophiles and are from all walks of life." About 800 of those suspects reside in the United States.

Curt Becker, the justice minister for the German state of Saxony-Anhalt, called for tougher laws to contend with the growing market for child pornography. He also directly challenged the notion that mere possession of such images is largely a victimless crime. "Every case of child pornography is a document of the sexual abuse of a child," Becker noted, and "every look at that image kills a child's soul."

A January 2003 *Sunday Herald* article revealed that police investigators had discovered "that images of Fred West abusing one of his children are among child pornography available for downloading from the Internet. It is unclear whether the child was West's murdered daughter Heather." Fred West was one of the UK's most notorious, and most prolific, serial killers. Shortly after being charged with twelve counts of murder, he died while in police custody, allegedly by his own hand. Like Dutroux, West had constructed a torture chamber in his cellar where his victims were filmed being raped, tortured, murdered and mutilated. The remains of nine of his victims, minus some missing parts, were discovered buried under his house and in his yard.

While we are on the subject of serial killers, *The Irish Times* carried the following report in July 1998:

> Police suspect a series of gruesome gay hate killings in the Sydney region could be the work of a serial killer whose victims might be linked through a notorious paedophile ring. The latest mutilation murder was that of Australia's longest serving mayor, Frank Arkell, aged 68, who was bludgeoned to death in his flat and who had previously faced 29 child sex charges. In the past few months two other men, one a convicted child sex offender, were attacked in their homes in similar circumstances and also suffered horrific injuries. Arkell, the former Lord Mayor of Wollongong, 50 miles south of Sydney, was a key witness in a royal commission into police corruption which uncovered a network of paedophiles.

Those serial killers sure come in handy sometimes.

> ***"Bruno Tagliaferro, a Charleroi scrap metal merchant who knew Dutroux, claimed to know something about the car in which Julie and Melissa were kidnapped. But he was soon found dead, apparently of a heart attack. His wife Fabienne Jaupart, refused to accept the verdict and arranged for his body to be exhumed. Samples sent to the USA for analysis showed he'd been poisoned. Soon after, her teenage son found her dead at home in her bed, her mattress smouldering. Publicly it was declared suicide, or an accident. There have been 20 such unexplained deaths connected with Dutroux."***
>
> **—Olenka Frenkiel for the *BBC*, May 2, 2002**

Chapter 2

…to Washington

"…several prosecutors, policemen and crucial eyewitnesses have committed suicide. Important evidence has also disappeared. So maybe Dutroux is being protected from on high. What other explanation can there be for such a disgraceful chain of events?"

—Andrew Osborn in the *Guardian*, January 25, 2002

While the size and scope of pedophile rings have grown rapidly in recent years, America, as it turns out, has long been a nation whose laws were friendly to purveyors of child pornography. It was just twenty-five years ago, in 1978, that the very *first* federal statute on child pornography was passed into law. While forbidding production and sale, the statute placed no restrictions at all on the possession or trade of such materials. New laws enacted in 1984 forbid the trade of child pornography regardless of whether any money changed hands, though possession remained legal. In fact, as recently as 1990, private possession of child pornography was legal in 44 of the 50 states, despite the inescapable fact that all such materials were, by necessity, illegally produced and/or illegally obtained.

Technology has for some time now played a key role in greatly expanding the availability of child pornography. The Polaroid camera, for example, eliminated the need for child pornographers to have access to complicit photo labs. Home video cameras did likewise for moving images. Personal computers, digital cameras, web cams, scanners, and—most notably—the Internet, have vastly expanded the reach of child pornography networks. In the age of the Internet, child pornography is a booming business. The *Los Angeles Times* noted in December 1999 that: "the number of investigations for Internet-related child pornography is soaring. The FBI launched 1,125 such inquiries this year, more than twice as many as last year."

In the wake of this rising tide, the U.S. 9th Circuit Court of Appeals issued a ruling on December 17, 1999 that struck a serious blow to the prosecution of

child pornography cases. As the *Times* reported, the decision stipulated, "the government cannot prohibit computer-generated sexual images that only appear to be pictures of children." A later report noted that appeals court judge Donald Molloy had stated that the First Amendment bars the government from criminalizing the generation of "images of fictitious children engaged in imaginary but explicit sexual conduct." As a result of the court's decision, prosecutors were thereafter "barred from bringing virtual-child pornography cases in California and the eight other Western states within the jurisdiction of the U.S. 9th Circuit Court of Appeals."

As critics have noted, graphics technology now available to the general public is so sophisticated that it is virtually impossible to determine if an image has been digitally altered, and therefore if any actual children were involved in the generation of the image. U.S. Justice Department lawyers argued that very point, noting that the "government may find it impossible in many cases to prove that a pornographic image is of a real child." Any good defense attorney, in other words, could raise reasonable doubt as to the authenticity of an image. It could in fact be argued that *all* such computer images "only appear to be pictures of children." Computer images are not in fact photos, but are digital computer files that display as a facsimile of the original photo. A sound legal argument could be made that all digitally transferred and displayed child pornography is therefore legal, as it does not represent 'real children.'

That should come as great news to the international child pornography networks, given that the United States is their number-one market. According to investigative author Gordon Thomas, the majority of child pornography produced worldwide is targeted at the U.S., where by the early 1990s it was already a $3 billion a year business, and growing. Thomas claims that—according to law enforcement figures—over 22 million copies of child pornography videos were sold or rented in the U.S. in 1991. He also writes that much of that pornographic material is produced domestically, where it is "part of the largest segment of movie making in the United States." Jan Hollingsworth concurs with Thomas' figures, describing child pornography as a "three-billion-dollar—per year—U.S. industry that grossed twice that worldwide. It [is] bigger than *Disney*. Much bigger." Speaking of *Disney*, Thomas notes that child porn videos are frequently trafficked internationally by deceptively packaging them as *Disney* videos.

Strangely enough, the first man to benefit from the 9th Circuit Court decision was Patrick J. Naughton. You may remember him as the executive with the Walt Disney Co. who ran one of the company's kid-friendly web sites. Naughton was arrested and later tried on child pornography charges. He was convicted on December 16, *just one day* before the decision was handed down in the case before the circuit court. Within hours of the appeals court ruling, Naughton was

released by federal prosecutors on $100,000 bail. Despite the fact that he was, as the *Times* acknowledged, convicted of "possessing pictures of actual children," a decision was made to release him "until the impact of the court's ruling can be sorted out"—illustrating the significant undermining of existing law that could result from the circuit court ruling.

On January 22, 2001, the U.S. Supreme Court agreed to hear an appeal of the case. In April 2002, the high court rendered its decision, upholding the ruling of the lower court. By doing so, the highest court in the land extended the ban on prosecutions of "virtual-child pornography" to all fifty states. As the *L.A. Times* reported on April 17, 2002, the "ruling creates an immunity for a new generation of 'virtual' pornographers who rely entirely on computer images." The *Times* noted that it was "an unexpected move" for the conservative court, describing the decision as "a surprisingly strong defense of the right to free speech." The decision was, alas, not all that surprising, given that the Supreme Court has demonstrated in the past—most notably during the 2000 election debacle—its willingness to toss aside its alleged principles when the need arises. Noted by the *Times* once again was the concern among prosecutors that they will "have a hard time proving that children portrayed on an Internet sex site, for example, are real children." The decision handed down by the Supreme Court, notably, "does not answer that concern."

Closely associated with child pornography is, of necessity, child abuse. It should be self-evident that all kids used in child pornography are abused children, their abuse recorded on film and tape for the depraved enjoyment of other child abusers. As Anne Houston, the director of the organization Childline Scotland, has said: "Every image of child abuse on the internet is a crime scene."

Also closely associated with child pornography is the always-controversial issue of 'missing children.' There is considerable debate as to whether there is a problem in this country with missing children. Some claim that 200,000 or more children disappear without a trace every year. Others steadfastly maintain that numbers such as those are grossly inflated, and that abduction of children by strangers with bad intent is actually quite rare. The problem is that nobody really knows for sure, since the FBI—America's compiler of crime statistics—does not bother to keep track. As the *Los Angeles Times* reported in July 2002, there is a "lack of knowledge about the prevalence of a crime that historically has not been included in the federal government's Uniform Crime Report. Local agencies have only sporadically kept data." Many believe that the numbers are not compiled because the FBI does not want to know—or more accurately, the FBI does not want *the American people* to know, how many children disappear every year.

What is known though is that reports of child abuse have skyrocketed. Between 1963 and 1988, reported cases of child abuse rose from 150,000 to

2,000,000 per year, a 1300% increase in just a quarter-century. Child abuse may in fact be the most prevalent crime in American society—and possibly the most significant as well, given that it provides the breeding ground for so much of the more visible crime plaguing Western culture. As Thomas reports: "over 90 percent of the teenage prison population are now victims of child abuse." And that population is growing rapidly. In the wake of *that* rising tide, the *Los Angeles Times* reported in March 2001 that: "President Bush's budget will trim a program aimed at preventing child abuse and cut some child care spending…A child abuse prevention program will see an 18% cut."

Author and e-zine editor Robert Sterling has written of what he refers to as "a pattern of trivialization of child molestation evidence" that seems to characterize high-profile media stories. He points out, for instance, that in the highly publicized Woody Allen and Mia Farrow child custody case, all the attention was focused on Allen's illicit romance with Soon-yi Previn. Almost entirely ignored in the media coverage was the fact that Allen was also charged with molesting his own seven-year-old adopted daughter, Dylan. While the press dismissed those allegations as unfounded and unworthy of reporting, Sterling notes that, "Connecticut state authorities, based on the testimony of Dylan and others, have stated that they do believe Woody did molest her, but decided not to prosecute anyway," allegedly to spare the child any further trauma.

Sterling also takes note of the "case of the Menendez brothers, who, after admitting to murdering their parents, painfully revealed that they were ruthlessly abused and molested by them over the years." Their claims were never fully investigated and the boys were "viciously demonized for trying to escape the murder charges and accused of making up their abuse," though there was in fact evidence of that abuse. Also referenced by Sterling is the kid-gloves treatment afforded Michael Jackson when he was charged with molestation: "even though the accusations against him are widely believed to be true, [they] are merely passed off with a laugh among other smirking monologue jokes on Jay Leno." And of course, though not mentioned by Sterling, sister LaToya was ridiculed by the media when she came forward with stories about the sexual abuse suffered *by* the Jackson kids at the hands of their father. Other cases discussed in the Sterling piece include the over-hyped 'au-pair' trial, during which evidence of prior abuse of the child by his parents was consistently ignored, and the Susan Smith case, in which the media refused to consider whether Smith's own severe childhood abuse could have been a factor in the murder of her children, despite the fact that her father admitted to the chronic abuse.

Coupled with the fact that the press have consistently downplayed the occurrence of child molestation is the equally disturbing fact that that very same media have actively promoted the sexualization of children—a trend that has been

greatly accelerated in recent years, and which has served to, to some degree, legitimize pedophilia. Taking note of the proliferation of young teen—and even pre-teen—sex symbols, Tom Junod wrote in *Esquire* (February 2001) that: "the entire culture is besotted with the erotic promise of teenage girls…The lure of jailbait now supplies the erotic energy to a popular culture desperate for what's new, what's young, what's alive." The Junod article is, strangely enough, a profile of Greg Dark, one-half of the former 'Dark Brothers'—notorious purveyors of dark-themed, occult-tinged porno films. Dark is rather noteworthy for having openly produced and peddled child pornography, in that many of his films featured a very young Traci Lords, who began working with the Dark Brothers at the age of thirteen.

But Dark has now put those days long behind him. He is now working comfortably in the mainstream. And he is no longer marketing teen sexuality. No, now he is creating music videos…for Britney Spears, Mandy Moore and the pre-teen Leslie Carter (sister of Aaron Carter and "Back Street Boy" Nick Carter). That is, according to Dark,[10] a completely different line of work.

It is not just the media that has been actively promoting the sexualization of children; certain segments of academia have been busily doing so as well. On April 19, 2002, the *Washington Times* carried a report detailing a "movement within academia to promote 'free sexual expression of children.'" This "movement to legitimize sex between adults and children is 'gathering steam,' warns Stephanie Dallam, researcher for the Leadership Council for Mental Health, Justice and the Media in Philadelphia, an organization that deals with prevention and treatment of child abuse. 'Some people view children as the next sexual frontier,' Ms. Dallam says." Referenced in the *Times* article is Judith Levine's book

10 Some other interesting facts about Dark emerged from the *Esquire* profile, such as that he was raised by a Satanist father, who "used to read to Gregory from the works of Aleister Crowley, the noted occultist, when Gregory was very young." His father's collection of "black magick" books is one of Dark's most cherished possessions. Also revealed was that Dark is a master manipulator, as he candidly admitted to his interviewer: "And the thing is, I like manipulating people. I'm comfortable manipulating people. I'm good at it." Junod added that, during Dark's porno days, he "asked people to do things…curious things…and they did them." Such is the nature of the man who helps craft the images of America's teen sex symbols and market them to millions of pre-teen fans. Britney Spears later revealed to *Esquire* an interesting detail of her family life: "…when I was thirteen years old, I used to walk around my house completely naked…My family just always walked around the house naked. We were earthy people."

Harmful to Minors: The Perils of Protecting Children from Sex, published by the University of Minnesota Press. Levine's book endorses a Dutch law passed in 1990 "that effectively lowered the age of consent to 12." As the *Times* article points out, the book "is only the most recent in a series of academic arguments for 'consensual' sex involving children." Included among such academic endeavors are:

- An article published in 2000 by the Institute for Advanced Study of Human Sexuality in San Francisco in which the authors claimed that there was "considerable evidence" that there is no "inherent harm in sexual expression in childhood."
- An interview with San Francisco State University professor Gilbert Herdt in the Dutch pro-pedophilia journal *Paidika* in which Herdt stated: "the category 'child' is a rhetorical device for inflaming what is really an irrational set of attitudes" against pedophilia.
- Another interview with *Paidika*, given by John Money, professor emeritus at Johns Hopkins University, that spoke of "genuinely, totally mutual" sex between adult men and young boys.
- A 1998 study in a journal of the American Psychological Association argued that "value-neutral" terms such as "adult-child sex" should be used to describe a "willing encounter" between an adult pedophile and a child. One of the study's co-authors, Robert Bauserman, with the Maryland Department of Health and Mental Hygiene, has written previously for *Paidika*. This 1998 study, according to the *Times*, "has already been used as evidence to defend accused child molesters in at least three court cases."

Many of these recent arguments in favor of the expression of child sexuality were influenced by the work of Indiana University professor Alfred Kinsey, who claimed in his notorious late-1940s/early-1950s reports on human sexuality that children "are sexual from birth." The professor was, oddly enough, another devoted disciple of Aleister Crowley. Kinsey died shortly after paying a visit to Crowley's Thelema Abbey in Sicily with filmmaker and fellow occultist Kenneth Anger—who was the roommate and probable lover of Manson Family member Bobby Beausoleil…but we will get to that later.

Like child molestation and child abduction, child prostitution is also closely associated with child pornography. And make no mistake about it; child prostitution is a booming business. *A&E*'s "Investigative Reports" has noted that law enforcement figures indicate that there are currently some 600,000 child prostitutes working in the United States and Canada, in an industry that generates $5 billion a year worldwide. *A&E* also reported that, throughout North America,

there is "growing use of children in the sex trade." Young boys make up 51% of that trade. The FBI, alas, has turned a blind eye; for the last quarter-century, "federal prosecutions of major pimp operations have been virtually nonexistent." As Dr. Lois Lee has noted, "It's not a high priority with the FBI to go after kids that are being transported across state lines. It's really a disgrace."

Dr. Lee is the founder of Children of the Night, an organization devoted to helping repair the shattered lives of child-sex-trade victims. Her facility, said to be the only one of its kind in the world, has seen 10,000 kids pass through its doors. Fully ninety percent of them have suffered a lifetime of abuse—first at home, and later on the streets and alleys of America's big cities. Most of them suffered their first abuse before the age of three. Many of these victims are runaways recruited from small towns across the country, and then brought to prime child prostitution markets like Los Angeles and Las Vegas. Once there, they have an average life span of just seven years; many of them do not make it through their teenage years. For as long as they survive though, they reap enormous financial rewards for their pimps. The younger the child, the more popular they are with the 'Johns,' and therefore the more profitable for their exploiters.

A landmark study on the commercial sexual exploitation of children was concluded by the University of Pennsylvania's School of Social Work in 2001. The chilling report issued by the researchers was completely ignored by the U.S. media. That no doubt was due in part to the rather curious timing of the release of the report: it was issued on September 10, 2001—less than twenty-four hours before the World Trade Center towers came crashing down. Written by Richard J. Estes and Neil Alan Weiner, the study notes that the era of "economic globalization, internationalization, and free trade" has been accompanied by a "dramatic rise worldwide in the incidence of child exploitation…Child pornography, juvenile prostitution and trafficking in children for sexual purposes have emerged as significant problems on the national, regional, and international stages. So, too, has child sex tourism."[11] The ugly reality is that, in the global marketplace, everything

11 According to the publication *Only in Russia*, globalization has been accompanied by another dramatic rise: "In an already crime-ridden country, Russia's Interior Ministry has identified yet another malefactor to be dealt with—the Devil. Deputy chief of the Ministry's Main Crime Directorate, Alexsander Greshanin, informed the press on February 3 [2003] that a special department has been set up to investigate the activities of Satanist sects. He said that the Ministry was very worried by the country's descent into the ways of black magic and devil worship, adding that Satanists often conduct ritual sacrifices and, in some cases, their activities involve serious crimes like murder or grievous bodily harm." The tone of the article was decidedly skeptical.

has a price tag—including the sexual services of our children. The study also revealed, "CSE [child sexual exploitation] and the CSEC [commercial sexual exploitation of children] appear to be related in complex ways with other forms of child exploitation, such as the use of children in labor, drug and warfare settings."

Among the findings summarized in the report's Executive Summary are all of the following:

- "About 20% of children we encountered in this study were being trafficked nationally by organized criminal units using well established prostitution tracks."
- "Children are trafficked into, and within, the U.S. by a variety of private and public means—e.g., cars, buses, vans, trucks, planes."
- "Most trafficked children have available to them a variety of false identity papers for use in case of arrest."
- "The majority of nationally trafficked children both use drugs and engage in drug sales."
- "[A]bout 10% of the children we encountered are trafficked internationally."
- "Most internationally trafficked children are the citizens of developing countries located in Asia, Africa, Central and South America, and Central and Eastern Europe."
- "International trafficking in children is highly lucrative—a single trafficked child can earn a trafficker as much as $30,000 or more in trafficking fees."
- "In many cases, trafficked children also are required to serve as 'mules' in transporting illicit drugs either into or across the U.S., or both."

Obvious in these findings is the fact that the trafficking of children—both nationally and internationally—is an immense, and immensely profitable, criminal enterprise[12] requiring "the involvement of a wide range of functionaries—including recruiters, trainers, purveyors of false documents, transporters, money collectors, enforcers…arrangers/investors…corrupt public officials, informers, guides and crew members…supporting personnel and specialists." The University's researchers also discovered "approximately 10% of pimps in the U.S. are tied into international sex crime networks." These individuals "participate

12 The United Nations Children's Fund (UNICEF) released a report on July 30, 2003 that declared that 1.2 million children are trafficked every year, creating a $10 billion a year industry. The report's authors concluded: "Trafficking is a truly global problem, affecting all countries everywhere."

actively in the international trafficking of children—including American children and children who are nationals of other countries. Typically, these pimps also are connected in some way…to international drug networks." The close connections between the international trafficking of children and the international trafficking of drugs is significant in that, as a number of researchers have documented, America's Central Intelligence Agency plays a central role in the international drug trade. It would seem then to logically follow that that same organization would be deeply involved in the equally lucrative international trade in children.

Just months before the release of the University of Pennsylvania's report, DePaul University's International Human Rights Law Institute released the results of a three year study of sexual slavery. Researchers concluded that some two million women and children are held in sexual servitude worldwide—and those numbers are growing. As with the other academic study, the report's authors concluded that the "advent of globalization has exacerbated the problem by creating what some call market opportunities for traffickers in human beings and for their exploiters." Also as with the other study, researchers found clear evidence of official complicity in the trafficking rings. The report's authors warned that trafficking victims "have no one to turn to for help. Law enforcers are frequently in collusion with the traffickers and exploiters and victims who seek to escape are returned to their captors by those from whom they sought protection. Their despondency and despair is beyond description."

An estimated 30,000 of these victims die every year from "abuse, torture, neglect and disease." But neither the U.S. media nor the Washington establishment have anything to say about that, leaving the America people in a state of collective ignorance and denial even as child exploitation rings, which constitute a vast underground in this country, grow exponentially.

How far does this pedophilic underground extend into the halls of power? Are America's political, corporate and military elite—like their counterparts in Belgium, Latvia and Portugal—hiding a particularly dirty little secret from the American people? A secret that, if exposed, could shatter America's cherished political and economic institutions and bring the house of cards crashing down? Consider the case of Craig Spence, a behind-the-scenes Republican powerbroker in Washington. In June 1989, the *Washington Times* published a story that sent shockwaves rippling across Capitol Hill. It seemed that Spence had been deeply involved with a callboy ring that supplied young boys, some of them very young boys, to the elite of both political parties, as well as to visiting dignitaries.

It was reported by the *Times* that a list of some 200 influential clients included the names of "government officials, locally based U.S. military officers, businessmen, lawyers, bankers, congressional aides, media representatives and other professionals," only a few of whom were publicly identified. On the guest lists for

Spence's parties were former CIA Director William Casey and former Deputy Director of Intelligence Ray Cline; Congressman Barney Frank and Senators John Glenn and Frank Murkowski; political activist/propagandist Phyllis Schlafly; former Attorney General John Mitchell (who once co-hosted a party with Spence); journalists William Safire, Liz Trotta, Ted Koppel and Eric Severeid; former Ambassadors James Lilley, Robert Neumann and Elliot Richardson; General Alfred M. Gray, the Commandant of the U.S. Marine Corps, and Lt. General Daniel O. Graham, an expert on the 'Space Defense Initiative'; and former U.S. Attorneys Joseph diGenova and Victoria Toensing.[13] Spence once held a birthday bash for the notorious Roy Cohn. He also boasted of playing host to Rock Hudson and other celebrities.

Among the revelations in the case was that Spence had taken some of his call-boy escorts on private, late-night tours of the White House. The tours, of which there were at least four, were cleared by a uniformed Secret Service guard who moonlighted as a bodyguard at Spence's parties. Spence hinted that the tours were arranged by the national security adviser to then-Vice President George H.W. Bush, Donald Gregg, for whom Spence once sponsored a dinner. One of the tours occurred just after Spence stopped by the *Nightline* studio to see his friend, Ted Koppel. Spence reportedly introduced Koppel to a 15-year-old boy, whom Koppel later claimed Spence had introduced as his son. Koppel though had been a close friend for over twenty years and surely knew that Spence did not have a teenage son. Koppel first met Spence in Southeast Asia when Koppel was serving as the *ABC* bureau chief in Hong Kong, and Spence was nominally working as an *ABC* correspondent in Vietnam.

Spence openly boasted of working with both the CIA and ranking members of the Reagan and Bush administrations. He claimed that he had been involved in covert operations in Vietnam, Japan, Central America and the Middle East. His claims were scoffed at and he was largely portrayed as a self-important blowhard.

---

13 DiGenova served in 1975–1976 as counsel to the Senate Select Committee on Intelligence, commonly referred to as the Church Committee. He later served as U.S. Attorney under President Ronald Reagan. During that time, and after purportedly leaving government service for private practice, he frequently attended Spence's parties. In December 1988, he accompanied Spence on a business trip to Japan. Toensing, diGenova's wife, is a former deputy assistant attorney general for the Justice Department and a former chief counsel for the Senate Select Committee on Intelligence (1981–1984). Both were investigated for their close links to Craig Spence. Both later made almost daily appearances on cable newscasts as shrill proponents of the Clinton impeachment proceedings.

There are indications, however, that Spence was involved in covert operations as far back as Vietnam, where he could well have been working under journalistic cover. An associate of his from that era told the *Washington Post*: "Spence pulled disappearing acts in Vietnam—sometimes for weeks at a time…Then he'd turn up, refusing to say where he'd been."

"The sex? That's done all the time," a former Bush economic adviser told the press. "If a foreign diplomat wants a companion, the State Department provides it. It doesn't matter if it's a man or woman. They have a special fund set up for that." What the unnamed adviser did not say was that such services were provided not as a courtesy to the dignitary, but as a way to compromise and control. Allegations quietly arose that the callboy ring, and Spence's parties, were part of a CIA sexual blackmail operation. Spence's Washington mansion was said to be overflowing with surveillance equipment, including hidden cameras and microphones and an abundance of two-way mirrors. It was also alleged that cocaine flowed freely at Spence's parties, and that he could have been involved in bringing drugs in from El Salvador.

The Spence story never really registered on the national media's radar screen. Despite being a largely Republican scandal, it was completely ignored by such pillars of the purportedly liberal press as the *New York Times*, the *Washington Post* and the *Los Angeles Times*. The story soon disappeared entirely and Washington and the media proceeded to pretend as though nothing had ever happened. According to a *Washington Times* reporter, the paper trail was quickly covered up. Some 20,000 documents pertaining to the case were sealed by court order and the U.S. Attorney's office issued a gag order on the release of information. By the time that Craig Spence turned up dead in a Boston hotel less than five months after the story first broke, he had been all but forgotten. He had earlier told a friend: "I may be disappearing soon. It will be sudden. It may appear to be a suicide, but it won't be."

Spence was reportedly found lying on his bed in room 429 of the Ritz-Carlton Hotel, wearing a tuxedo and with a telephone cradled to his ear and a Walkman headset around his neck. He had, according to the *Independent*, "no obvious signs of injury," and "police refused to comment on the cause of death." The door to the room was barricaded. Written on the mirror were several messages, one of which read: "Chief, consider this my resignation, effective immediately. As you always said, you can't ask others to make a sacrifice if you are not ready to do the same. Life is duty. God bless America." Another was an apology to the hotel: "To the Ritz, please forgive this inconvenience." A third was an unexplained Japanese phrase: "Nisei Bei." The hotel registry showed that the room the apparent suicide victim was found in was occupied by "C.S. Kane."

Spence had been subpoenaed by a grand jury but had not yet been called to appear. As it turned out, very few witnesses ever did appear before that grand jury. Spence had also reportedly agreed to provide *Penthouse* magazine with "lurid details of Washington's bisexual wonderland." His story, needless to say, was never told.

The callboy ring, oddly enough, had close ties to the funeral home/mortuary business. Robert Chambers was convicted on charges of handling the credit card processing for Professional Services, Inc., an entity that served as a cover for an interlinked network of half-a-dozen male escort services. Chambers was a funeral director and the son of the owner of the Chambers Funeral Homes chain. He was sentenced to serve 41 months. Two of the linked services, Dream Boys and Man to Man, were reportedly run by Henry Vinson, a mortician and the former coroner of Mingo County, West Virginia. Vinson had moved to D.C. after losing his job as coroner for making harassing phone calls to rival funeral homes. While he was under investigation in Washington, his obituary appeared in West Virginia newspapers, apparently as the result of an assisted effort to fake his death. Vinson[14] ultimately pled guilty and received a 63-month sentence. The presiding judge openly criticized U.S. Attorney Jay Stephens for departing from mandatory sentencing guidelines. Vinson's legal representation was provided by *Fox News* mouthpiece Greta Van Susteren.

Also implicated in the case was Democratic Congressman Barney Frank, whose D.C. home was used as a base of operations for an escort service from late 1985 through mid 1987. The service was run by Frank's lover, Stephen L. Gobie, the son of a Marine Corps master sergeant and Pentagon budget analyst. Frank wrote a number of letters to probation officials on behalf of Gobie, who had four felony convictions from 1982. Those letters provided the necessary cover for the ring, which Frank denied having knowledge of. Gobie also regularly operated out of Chevy Chase Elementary School, in collusion with the 'magnet' school's principal, Gabriel A. Massaro, a former school counselor. The school was home to 350 students aged nine to twelve. Massaro vigorously denied that any students were involved in callboy operations, which he eventually admitted were run from the school. In addition to Barney Frank and Gabriel Massaro, Stephen Gobie had close ties to Craig Spence as well.

---

14 Vinson later reportedly married Dr. Diane Shafer, who was appointed to fill the Mingo County coroner position that he had once held. Shafer had previously been convicted of bribery in Kentucky. Her appointment came just after the reversal of the appointment of Gerald Chafin, a mortuary owner and former Mingo County Sheriff who had twice been indicted on federal wiretap charges.

Elsewhere in the country, a political operative named Larry King—hailed as "the fastest rising Black star in the Republican Party"—was embroiled in another high-level pedophile ring. King, whose operation was based in Omaha, Nebraska, had connections to Craig Spence as well as to Ronald Reagan, George Bush, Oliver North, and various other major players in Washington. The King story first began to emerge with the collapse of his Franklin Community Credit Union, one of many such entities that went belly-up in the 1980s savings and loan scandals. A special senate 'Franklin Committee' was established and tasked with looking into allegations of financial improprieties, but soon found itself instead investigating claims of child prostitution, child pornography and ritual homicide. Committee members began receiving anonymous threats.

The investigation led to the doorsteps of some of the most powerful men in Omaha, including newspaper publisher Harold Andersen (a lunch partner of George Bush), local columnist Peter Citron, a judge, the mayor, the city's Games and Parks Commissioner, a prominent attorney, the former police chief, businessman Alan Baer, and multi-billionaire Warren Buffet (for whose son King sponsored a political fund-raiser). Some of the victim/witnesses identified George Bush as being directly complicit. The scandal was completely ignored by the national U.S. media, and appears to have been covered by the local press for the sole purpose of discrediting the witnesses and denouncing the investigation as yet another 'witch hunt.' The case did attract some attention from the European press though. *Pronto*, Spain's largest circulation weekly, reported that the scandal "appears to directly implicate politicos of the state of Nebraska and Washington, D.C. who are very close to the White House and George Bush." The report also noted "there is reason to believe that the CIA is directly implicated," and the "FBI refuses to help in the investigation and has sabotaged any efforts" by others to do so.

A documentary film crew from the UK's *Yorkshire Television*, working in conjunction with the *Discovery Channel*, worked for months investigating the case. The result of their efforts was a film entitled "Conspiracy of Silence," which concluded that the child victims/witnesses were telling the truth. The documentary was scheduled to air on the *Discovery Channel* on May 3, 1994. Just days before the scheduled airing, the film was pulled without explanation and all copies were ordered destroyed. At least one production copy of the video survived the purge, however, and has been known to circulate among those derisively labeled as 'conspiracy theorists.' For everyone else, the conspiracy of silence continues.

The Omaha operation, described in the film as a "large ring of rich and powerful pedophiles," appears to have been in business for several years—with the knowledge of, and for the perverse pleasure of, a variety of city, state and federal authorities. Jerry Lowe, the first investigator assigned to the case by the Franklin

Committee, reported back: "The allegations regarding the exploitation of children are indeed disturbing. What appears to be documented cases of child abuse and sexual abuse dating back several years with no enforcement action being taken by the appropriate agencies is on its face, mind-boggling." The investigation revealed that many of the child victims had been recruited from one of America's most revered charitable organizations—Boy's Town, with which King had maintained close ties since 1979. Senator and committee member Loran Schmit has said that Boy's Town was mentioned frequently during the investigation, "but we found it difficult to get information about Boy's Town." So too did the film crew from *Yorkshire Television*.

Republican state senator and Franklin Committee member John DeCamp, in his book *The Franklin Cover-Up*, presents a compelling body of evidence to document the charges made by the child victims and various others associated with the operation. Equally disturbing is the evidence presented of the massive cover-up that was perpetrated by the FBI, local police, a grand jury assigned to the case, and of course the ever-compliant media. The cover-up involved, according to DeCamp, the untimely deaths of at least fifteen key players in the scandal—including Franklin Committee investigator Gary Caradori, whose private plane was blown out of the sky on July 11, 1990 with Caradori and his eight-year-old son on board. Caradori had been threatened frequently, as had the witnesses from whom he was gathering information. His vehicle had also been repeatedly tampered with. His brother claimed that Gary had told him that he had recently come to possess a key piece of evidence (a book of addresses and phone numbers) that was so damaging, "if they knew he had it, they'd kill him."

The wreckage of Caradori's plane, as a reporter on the scene noted, was "strewn over a ¾ to 1 mile stretch." A National Transportation Safety Board investigator acknowledged that the "fact that the wreckage is scattered over a large area certainly demonstrates that it did break up in flight." Family members claimed that there were items missing from the plane's wreckage, most significantly Caradori's briefcase. Within twenty-four hours of the crash, all of his records had been impounded by the FBI. Nevertheless, the NTSB ruled that the crash had been accidental, with no evidence of sabotage. The Franklin Committee—led by Senator Schmit, who suspected sabotage—ordered a private investigation into the cause of the crash. Strangely enough, the man selected to conduct that inquiry was William Colby, a fifty-year veteran of intelligence operations whose career began in the OSS during World War II. Colby's hiring was urged by his protégé, Senator DeCamp.

In the 1950s, Colby served as the CIA station chief in Italy, overseeing the notorious Operation Gladio. In the 1960s, he ran the Phoenix Program, a campaign of assassination, torture and terror that claimed, by Colby's own account,

some 20,000 Vietnamese lives. The program was steeped in mind control operations, including the use of prisoners-of-war as unwilling participants in terminal experiments. One of Colby's top aides in Vietnam was none other than John DeCamp. After Vietnam, Colby served as the director of the CIA under President Nixon (Nixon's appointed successor, Gerald Ford, replaced him with George Bush). Considering his past history, Colby was certainly an odd choice to lead an inquiry aimed at ascertaining the truth. Colby's conclusion, according to the *Omaha World Herald*, was that although "the crash had some strange aspects, there was no specific evidence of sabotage."

Just as appalling as the trail of dead witnesses was the fact that the child *victims*, rather than the perpetrators, were arrested and thrown in prison. One of them, a young female victim, achieved the rather dubious honor of spending more time in solitary confinement than any other woman in the history of the Nebraska penal system. She was sentenced to 9–25 years in prison for allegedly committing perjury. Her sentence was ten years longer than the one Larry King received for looting his financial institution of $40 million. DeCamp explained to the "Conspiracy of Silence" film crew that a message was being sent "to every kid who is a potential witness." Senator Schmit, who told the filmmakers that his pursuit of the investigation had cost him his career and his financial security, believed that a clear signal was being sent to Nebraska politicians as well: a signal to not pursue the investigation any further.

A visibly shaken and disillusioned Schmit explained to the film crew that he "used to be a firm believer that the system would work and that people who did things wrong would be punished. And we discovered victims who claimed to have been abused, and who the grand jury *acknowledged* had been abused, but they did not try to find out who had abused these individuals. Instead, they convicted Alisha Owen of perjury…indefensible from my point of view." It was a full decade before any of the victims received even a semblance of justice, and that came not from the criminal justice system, but from a civil court. In early 1999, a judgment was entered against defendant Larry King in favor of plaintiff Paul Bonacci, who was one of the most severely abused of the child victims. His abuse at the hands of King began when he was just six years old and included his forced collaboration in the production of child snuff films. The memorandum of the district court's decision, issued on February 22, 1999, reads as follows:

> Between December 1980 and 1988, the complaint alleges, the defendant King continually subjected the plaintiff to repeated sexual assaults, false imprisonments, infliction of extreme emotional distress, organized and directed satanic rituals, forced the plaintiff to 'scavenge' for children to be a part of the defendant King's sexual abuse and

> pornography ring, forced the plaintiff to engage in numerous sexual contacts with the defendant King and others and participate in deviate sexual games and masochistic orgies with other minor children. The defendant King's default has made those allegations true as to him…
>
> The now uncontradicted evidence is that the plaintiff has suffered much. He has suffered burns, broken fingers, beatings of the head and face and other indignities by the wrongful actions of the defendant King. In addition to the misery of going through the experiences just related over a period of eight years, the plaintiff has suffered the lingering results to the present time. He is a victim of multiple personality disorder, involving as many as fourteen distinct personalities aside from his primary personality. He has given up a desired military career and received threats on his life. He suffers from sleeplessness, has bad dreams, has difficulty in holding a job, is fearful that others are following him, fears getting killed, has depressing flashbacks, and is verbally violent on occasion, all in connection with the multiple personality disorder and caused by the wrongful activities of the defendant King.

For the years of unspeakable abuse he suffered, Bonacci was awarded one million dollars. While a bittersweet victory at best, it was considerably more than most other victims of such abuse have gotten. The man primarily responsible for inflicting that abuse, Larry King, has been released from prison and is a free man at the time of this writing.

Chapter 3

Uncle Sam Wants Your Children

"I cannot accept promotion in a system that at first refused to acknowledge and now refuses to deal with the victims of extensive child abuse that occurred at the West Point Child Development Center."

—Army Captain Walter R. Grote, refusing a promotion to Major in June 1985

One of the names that surfaced at the Bonacci trial was that of Michael Aquino, the 'High Priest' and chief executive of the Temple of Set, an overtly satanic cult that split off from the Church of Satan in 1975. Besides tending to those duties, Aquino has also been known to occupy his time serving as (according to his official biography, circulated by the Temple) a "Lieutenant Colonel, Military Intelligence, U.S. Army."

Aquino was identified in court, by the mother of a victim, as being a key player in a nationwide pedophile ring. Paul Bonacci himself has also positively identified Aquino as an associate of King who was known to Bonacci and the rest of the children only as 'the Colonel.' King's former personal photographer has identified Aquino as the man to whom he saw King hand over a suitcase full of cash and bonds. The photographer, Rusty Nelson, has also said that he was told by King that Aquino was part of the Contra guns and cocaine trafficking operation run by George Bush and another notorious Lt. Col. named Oliver North. Aquino has also been linked to Offutt Air Force Base, a Strategic Air Command post near Omaha that was implicated in the investigation by the Franklin Committee (and that was also, strangely enough, where George W. Bush opted to hide out on the afternoon of September 11, 2001). Aquino was also claimed to have ordered the abduction of a Des Moines, Iowa paperboy.

This was certainly not the first time that Aquino had been identified as a key figure in organized pedophile/child pornography rings. In July 1988, not long before the King and Spence cases broke, the *San Jose Mercury News* ran a lengthy exposé on the Presidio Child Development Center run by the U.S. Army in San Francisco. Allegations of abuse being perpetrated at the center first emerged in November 1986. Alarmed by accusations made by her child, a parent had sought a medical examination that confirmed that her three-year-old boy had in fact been anally raped. The boy identified his rapist as 'Mr. Gary,' a teacher at the center named Gary Hambright. Even with this conclusive medical evidence, however, "it took the Army almost a month to notify the parents of other children who had been in 'Mr. Gary's' class that the incident had taken place."

Within a year, at least sixty additional victims had been identified, all between the ages of three and seven, and further "allegations would be made by parents that several more children were molested even after the investigation had begun." Amazingly enough, the center remained open for more than a year after the first case of abuse was reported, although, as noted by the *Mercury News*, "day care centers under state jurisdiction are routinely closed when an abuse incident is confirmed." And this was considerably more than a simple abuse incident that had been confirmed. The children told stories that implicated many other perpetrators in addition to Hambright. They also told of being taken away from the center to be abused in private homes; at least three such houses were positively identified. And they told of being forced to play "poopoo baseball" and the "goo-goo" game—'games' that involved the children being urinated and defecated upon, and being forced to ingest urine and feces. Many of the children also spoke of having guns pointed at them and of being told that they and/or their parents and siblings would be killed if they told anyone what had been done to them.

Despite the mounting number of victim/witnesses, and the numerous crimes alleged by these children, only one suspect, Gary Hambright, was arrested—on January 5, 1987—and he was charged with abusing just a single child. Even then the charges were dismissed just a few months later, in March 1987.

There is little doubt that literally dozens of children were in fact severely abused at the center. There undeniably was medical evidence to document that fact. Five of the children had contracted chlamydia, a sexually transmitted disease; many others showed clear signs of anal and genital trauma consistent with violent penetration. Authorities chose to ignore such evidence. One mother complained to the *San Francisco Chronicle* that the FBI never interviewed her or her son, even after doctors had confirmed the boy's abuse. In addition to the medical symptoms, there were psychological symptoms as well. As *The American Journal of Orthopsychiatry* noted in April 1992, the "severity of the trauma for children at the Presidio was immediately manifest in clear cut symptoms. Before the abuse

was exposed, parents had already noticed the following changes in their children: vaginal discharge, genital soreness, rashes, fear of the dark, sleep disturbances, nightmares, sexually provocative language, and sexually inappropriate behavior. In addition, the children were exhibiting other radical changes in behavior, including temper outbursts, sudden mood shifts, and poor impulse control. All these behavioral symptoms are to be expected in preschool children who have been molested."

The journal article, written by Diane Ehrensaft, Ph.D., also noted that the "Presidio case has confronted both the public at large and the mental health community with an extraordinary and abhorrent situation of grave psychological proportions: the willful molestation of young boys and girls by representatives of the most patriarchal and supposedly protective arm of the American government—the U.S. Army." Ehrensaft observed that a nearly pathological hatred had manifest itself in the fathers of children abused in this way, particularly as they saw their children's cases stonewalled and swept under the rug. One father was quoted as saying: "When something about the Presidio comes on TV, I want to blow someone away." Another father echoed that sentiment: "I was ready to blow the army base away."

One of those who the fathers would have liked to blow away was Michael Aquino. One child positively identified Aquino and his wife, Lilith (known to the kids as 'Mikey' and 'Shamby'), and was also able to identify the Aquinos' private home and to describe with considerable accuracy the distinctively satanic interior décor of the house. The young witness claimed to have been photographed at the Aquinos' home. On August 14, 1987, a search warrant was served on the house. Confiscated in the raid were numerous videotapes, photographs, photo albums, photographic negatives, cassette tapes, and name and address books. Also observed was what appeared to be a soundproof room. Neither of the Aquinos was charged with any crimes, nor have they been to this day—a fact that Aquino points to as proof of his innocence.

A month after the raid, a fire—which the Army deemed to be accidental—destroyed the Army Community Services Building adjacent to the Presidio's day-care center. Strangely enough, "the fire occurred on the autumnal equinox, a major event on the satanic calendar," as the *Mercury News* noted. The fire also destroyed some of the Child Development Center's records. "Three weeks later, fire struck again, this time at the day care center itself." A building that housed four classrooms, one of which was Gary Hambright's, was completely destroyed. Investigators from the Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco and Firearms determined "both fires, contrary to the Army's finding, had been arson." In between the first and second fires (with evidence indicating that a third arson attempt had been made as well), Hambright was again indicted, this time charged with molesting

ten children. In February 1988, all but one of the new charges were dropped. Shortly thereafter, the remaining count was dropped as well. No further charges were brought against him.

In January 1988, Aquino filed suit against the Army to have it cleared from his record that he had been investigated as a suspected pedophile. According to court records, he also had the gall to charge "Captain Adams-Thompson [the father of a victim] with conduct unbecoming an officer because the Captain reported the allegations of child abuse to the San Francisco police." In denying Aquino's motion, the court concluded "there was probable cause to title Aquino with offenses of indecent acts with a child, sodomy, conspiracy, kidnapping, and false swearing," despite the fact that "the San Francisco police department (SFPD) closed its investigation and filed no charges against the plaintiff or anyone else."

Aquino and some of his defenders have consistently claimed that no one was ever prosecuted in the case due to a lack of evidence. This is cited as proof that the entire affair was no more than a 'witch hunt.' Of course, the failure to prosecute the federal charges could have been due to the fact that, at the time, the U.S. Attorney in San Francisco handling the case was Joseph Russoniello. Russoniello would later be identified by reporter Gary Webb (of the *San Jose Mercury News*) as a player in the Contra cocaine smuggling operation led by Lt. Col. Oliver North and company, just as witnesses would later identify Lt. Col. Michael Aquino as an operative in the very same sordid affair.

In May 1989, Aquino was again questioned in connection with child abuse investigations; this time, at least five children in three cities were making the accusations. The children had seen Aquino in newspaper and television coverage of the Presidio case and immediately recognized him as one of their abusers. Three of the children lived in Ukiah, California, where Police Chief Fred Keplinger was overseeing the investigation of the allegations. The *Mercury News* quoted the chief as saying "the children are believable. I have no doubt in my mind that something has occurred." Aquino was also identified by children in Santa Rosa and Fort Bragg, California. In the Fort Bragg case, "allegations of ritual abuse erupted…in 1985 when several children at the Jubilation Day Care Center said they were sexually abused by a number of people at the day care center and at several locations away from the center, including at least two churches." Aquino was identified as having been present at one of those churches.

According to the *Mercury News*, there was clear evidence of satanic cult activity on the grounds of the Presidio base, including an abundance of satanic graffiti, a satanic altar, and numerous artifacts of satanic rituals. A former MP at the base told the *News* "we've got a cult on the Presidio of San Francisco and nobody cares about it…We were told by the provost marshal to just forget about it." On April 19, 1988, the eve of Adolph Hitler's birthday, an open house was held on the

grounds of the Presidio heralding the opening of a new daycare facility built to replace the fire-damaged Child Development Center. Meanwhile, a report in the *Marin Independent Journal* revealed that Aquino owned a building in Marin County—inherited from his mother, Betty Ford-Aquino—that was jointly leased to the Marin County Child Abuse Council and Project Care for Children. The stated purpose of Project Care was, interestingly enough, to assist parents in locating daycare for their children.

As disturbing as the Presidio case was, it was just one of many ritual abuse cases directly tied to one or more branches of the United States armed forces. As the *Mercury News* reported, "by November, 1987 the Army had received allegations of child abuse at 15 of its day care centers and several elementary schools. There were also at least two cases in Air Force day care centers," and another in a center run by the U.S. Navy. In addition, "a special team of experts was sent to Panama [in June 1988] to help determine if as many as 10 children at a Department of Defense elementary school had been molested and possibly infected with AIDS." Yet another case emerged in a U.S.-run facility in West Germany.

These cases erupted at some of the country's most esteemed military bases, including Fort Dix, Fort Leavenworth, Fort Jackson, and West Point. Many of those making the accusations were career military officers who had devoted their lives to unquestioned allegiance to the U.S. armed forces. Many would resign their posts in outraged protest.

The West Point case, among others, was alleged to be linked to the Presidio case. As *The Times Herald Record* reported in June 1991, the "incidents [at the West Point Child Development Center] unfolded against a backdrop of satanic acts, animal sacrifices and cult-like behavior among the abusers, whose activities extended beyond the U.S. Military Academy borders to Orange County and a military base in San Francisco, parents charged." The case first broke in July 1984, when a three-year-old girl found herself in the emergency room of the West Point Hospital with a lacerated vagina. She told the examining physician that a teacher at the daycare center had hurt her. The next month, the parents of another child leveled accusations of abuse at the center. As the *Mercury News* reported, "by the end of the year, 50 children had been interviewed by investigators. Children at West Point told stories that would become horrifyingly familiar. They said they had been ritually abused. They said they had had excrement smeared on their bodies and been forced to eat feces and drink urine. They said they were taken away from the day care center and photographed."

Despite abundant medical and psychological evidence and literally dozens of child witnesses, and despite "950 interviews by 60 FBI agents assigned to the investigation," the investigation, "led by former U.S. Attorney [and future mayor] Rudolph Giuliani" produced "no federal grand jury indictments,"

according to the *Herald Record*. "In 1987, Giuliani said his detailed investigation showed only one or two children were abused." Giuliani's contention was directly contradicted by an independent investigation, as the *Herald* report divulged: "a still-secret, independent report—produced by one of the nation's top experts on child sexual abuse—confirms the children's accusations of abuse."

This was not the first time that prestigious West Point had shown an appalling willingness to overlook military personnel directing extreme levels of abuse at children. A year before the abuse case broke, a 22-month-old child was murdered by an Army staff sergeant. The *Mercury News* reported that following "a court martial hearing, the sergeant was given an 18 month suspended sentence and dishonorable discharge." In other words, he was essentially given a free ride after murdering a child. With help from Giuliani, the FBI, the U.S. Army, and the grand jury, the abusers of dozens of children at the daycare center (which was, appropriately enough, building number 666 on the academy grounds) were likewise given a free ride.

As with the Franklin case, the children and their parents found justice only through the civil courts. The *Herald Record* revealed that, in a suit brought by the parents, "lawyers for both the government and the 11 child plaintiffs agreed that some children were sexually abused at the center two years ago." The government, however, claimed that it could not be held responsible, due to the "assault exemption in the Federal Tort Claim Act." As the *New York Times* explained, "under federal law the government cannot be held liable for assaults committed by its employees and thus cannot be sued for assault." In other words, the Army did not dispute the allegations; it just rather cavalierly maintained that it was exempt from being sued for what had occurred at one of its daycare centers. The court saw otherwise, however, and awarded $2.7 million to nine of the child victims—paltry compensation for their suffering, but a victory of sorts nonetheless. The *Times* opined that the settlement amount "was large for a child-abuse case in which no criminal charges were filed." The article claimed that the case was not pursued because "the Federal Bureau of Investigation found 'insufficient evidence to prosecute,'" when in fact the Bureau appears to have deliberately ignored and/or covered-up that evidence.

And so ended the West Point case, except that—as one mother noted—it was hardly over: "These people stole our children. She's nothing like she used to be. She's a very angry little girl. She doesn't trust anyone. She's nothing like she was before this happened. It's never going to be over for them, or for us." The mother of a Presidio victim had this to say: "People keep telling us we've got to let it go—just forget about it and go on…Three weeks ago, our youngest daughter was having nightmares and our other daughter was closing out the whole

world, going to her room and sitting there, with no radio, no TV, no nothing. Tell me it's over."

Chapter 4

McMolestation

If there is anyone who can relate to the sentiments expressed by the Presidio and West Point parents, it is the mothers and fathers of the children who attended the infamous McMartin Preschool. The McMartin case was, of course, the largest and most well publicized of the multi-victim, multi-perpetrator ritual abuse cases that captured headlines in the 1980s. It was also a case that was grotesquely misrepresented by the media, both mainstream and 'alternative'—perhaps nowhere more so than in the appalling writings of *Nation* columnist Alexander Cockburn, who went so far as to write an op-ed piece entitled "The McMartin Case: Indict the Children, Jail the Parents," which ran in *The Wall Street Journal* on February 8, 1990.

Virtually everyone agrees that the children of McMartin were victimized. There is considerable debate, of course, over whether that victimization was by abusive caretakers, or by overzealous therapists and prosecutors. Either way, Cockburn's stance on the case was unconscionable and should have sent a clear signal to the progressive community that there was considerably more to the McMartin allegations than met the eye. The harsh reality is that the McMartin Preschool, in conjunction with at least two other Manhattan Beach preschools and one babysitting service, was the center of a very large child prostitution and child pornography ring whose operations appear to have been protected and covered up by any number of local, state and federal officials.

A glimpse of the true nature and scale of the McMartin case is offered by an official correspondence from Sergeant Beth Dickerson of the Los Angeles County Sheriff's Department to Agent Kenneth Lanning at the FBI Academy's Behavioral Sciences Unit in Quantico, Virginia, dated February 10, 1985:

> In August 1983, the Manhattan Beach Police Department began an investigation regarding allegations of sexual abuse occurring at the McMartin Preschool…Altogether, approximately 400 children were

> evaluated by therapists at Children's Institute International. All interviews were videotaped and 350 children disclosed sexual behavior…
>
> In all, the victims named seven teachers (six women and one male) at the preschool as having molested them. These individuals are currently charged with 209 counts of child molestation. Also named are about 30 other individuals still uncharged, as well as numerous unidentified 'strangers.'
>
> McMartin victims allege sexual abuse occurred on school grounds as well as at a local market, churches, a mortuary, various homes, a farm, a doctor's office, other preschools and other unknown locations…
>
> Most children state they were photographed in the nude…They mention drinking a red or pink liquid that made them sleepy… Children disclose animal sacrificing (bunnies, ponies, turtles, etc.) and some of this occurred in churches. Victims describe sticks put in their vaginas and rectums and also being 'pooped' and 'peed' on. Children say that the adults sometimes dressed in black robes, formed a circle around them and chanted.
>
> In May 1984, another preschool investigation began in the same policing jurisdiction stemming from a McMartin victim who identified the Manhattan Ranch Preschool as a place where he was taken and molested…additional children have begun disclosing sexual abuse (approximately 60) and they have named six or more additional suspects…These children talk of strangers coming to the school and molesting them, being taken off campus and molested, being photographed nude and some talk of animals being abused. The children talk of being hit with sticks and of being 'peed' and 'pooped' on…
>
> [T]he resources of the police department and the District Attorney's office were not sufficient in order to follow up on the multitude of uncharged suspects in both preschools…The Task Force became operational on November 5, 1984. It should be noted that the Task Force has two other preschools under investigation for alleged sexual abuse in addition to McMartin and Manhattan Ranch. One, the Learning Game Preschool, is clearly linked to McMartin.

An astounding 460 children reported being sexually abused at the three closely linked Manhattan Beach schools. Even more astounding, investigative author Michael Newton (among others) has noted that Children's Institute International determined "a full eighty percent displayed physical symptoms, including vaginal or rectal scarring, anal bleeding, painful bowel movements, and the 'anal wick reflex' associated with violent penetration." The stories told

by the victim/witnesses were remarkably similar as to the nature of the abuse, the locations where the abuse took place, and the perpetrators of the abuse. And these were not, as is commonly believed, only preschool children telling such stories; some of the witnesses were former students in their teens and twenties, and their stories corroborated those of the children.

The older witnesses were not allowed to testify at the McMartin trials, however, as the statute of limitations for the crimes committed against them had expired. Many of the younger witnesses were unable to offer testimony as well, for various reasons—most notably because they were too severely traumatized. Even so, as author Jan Hollingsworth has pointed out, prosecutors had at their disposal "more than a hundred child witnesses as old as eleven and a truckload of medical reports bearing documentation of scarred genitals and anuses." The stories told by these children, it should be noted, were not fed to them by some diabolical team of therapists and headline-seeking journalists. Many of them were offered spontaneously to hundreds of parents and scores of childcare specialists. And many of the victims of the McMartin Preschool, all adults now, still tell the same stories today.

Anyone suggesting that the allegations in the McMartin case were true and that a massive cover-up concealed the true nature and scope of the case is likely to be labeled a 'conspiracy theorist.' The most preposterous conspiracy theory surrounding McMartin, however, has always been the notion that some cabal of overzealous therapists was able to implant 'false memories' of heinous abuse in the minds of nearly 500 individuals, and have them persist to this day.

Despite the vast number of eyewitnesses—most of them bearing physical evidence of abuse—and despite the fact that the judge who presided over more than a year of pre-trial testimony ruled that the state had more than enough evidence to proceed to trial, District Attorney Ira Reiner inexplicably dropped all charges against five of the seven McMartin defendants on January 17, 1986. Six days before that, he had summarily dismissed two prosecutors on the case.

At least three-dozen suspects who had been independently identified by numerous witnesses were never indicted at all. One of these was a man named Robert Winkler, who was arrested in neighboring Torrance, California and charged with running a baby-sitting service out of the Coco Palms Motel that authorities described as a front for a sexual abuse ring. Children in the McMartin case recognized Winkler in news footage as the man they had known as the 'Wolfman.' The kids described Winkler as being a frequent visitor to the school, who oftentimes delivered drugs for use in abusive rituals, which were sometimes conducted in churches, a cemetery, or a crematorium. The Wolfman, conveniently enough, turned up dead on the eve of his trial, allegedly of a drug overdose.

Winkler was not the only one to miss his day in court in conjunction with the McMartin case. Judy Johnson, the first McMartin parent to lodge a complaint, never delivered her scheduled testimony. Her body was found sprawled naked on the floor of her home, her death said to be due to complications from her chronic alcoholism. Before her death, she was regularly derided by defense attorneys and their media allies as a deranged crank. In truth, Johnson was not known to have any mental problems, or a drinking problem, before learning of the unthinkable abuse her child had suffered. Considered a key prosecution witness, Johnson received frequent threats before her death and she was followed when she ventured out in public. Many of the other McMartin parents were openly skeptical of Johnson's stated cause of death.

A former Hermosa Beach police officer named Paul Bynum, who had been hired by the parents of victims as a private investigator, turned up dead on the eve of his scheduled testimony as well. His death by gunshot was ruled a suicide, though those close to Bynum dispute that finding. Among other things, Bynum may have testified about his examination of the tunnel excavation project conducted at the school site. This was, of course, the object of much derision by the media. The fact that the children repeatedly told stories of tunnels under the property by which they could be secretly transported to and from the school, and in which they were subjected to horrific abuse in a secret room, was frequently cited as 'proof' that the children's stories were fabrications. It was universally accepted that the tunnels did not actually exist, that being the consensus view of the media and law enforcement authorities. Nevertheless, while it is true that the investigation commissioned by the District Attorney's office found no evidence of tunnels, another investigation, ignored by the media, certainly did.

Many of the parents were not satisfied with the superficial examination by the DA's office and commissioned another investigation of the site when the property was sold in April 1990. To lead the project, they hired E. Gary Stickel, Ph.D., a highly regarded archeologist recommended to them by the Chair of the Interdisciplinary Program of the Archeology Department at UCLA. Stickel's résumé included serving as a consultant to George Lucas on the *Indiana Jones* movies. Also brought on board were several other technical specialists. As Stickel wrote in his report on the excavation, "by engaging a highly recommended professional archeological team, [the parents] hoped to bring scientific authority to whatever might be found or a definitive resolution for whatever was not to be found." And what the team found was precisely what the children, for the previous seven years, had been telling them they would find:

> The project unearthed not one but two tunnel complexes as well as previously unrecognized structural features which defied logical explanation. Both tunnel complexes conformed to locations and functional descriptions established by children's reports. One had been described as providing undetected access to an adjacent building on the east. The other provided outside access under the west wall of the building and contained within it an enlarged, cavernous artifact corresponding to children's descriptions of a 'secret room.'
>
> Both the contour signature of the walls and the nature of recovered artifacts indicated that the tunnels had been dug by hand under the concrete slab floor after the construction of the building…Not only did the discovered features fulfill the research prequalifications as tunnels designed for human traffic, there was also no alternative or natural explanation for the presence of such features…
>
> If the stories of the children were bogus fantasies, there is no excuse for the tunnels discovered under the school. If there really were tunnels, there is no excuse for the glib dismissal of any and all of the complaints of the children and their parents.

This investigation was completed *before* the McMartin trials concluded, and yet this devastating evidence was never presented in court by the prosecution team. The existence of this detailed report—complete with photographs and maps of the tunnel complex—was known to the local and national press, but it was never reported. To this day, it is denied that any tunnels ever existed under the McMartin Preschool. The denial of the tunnels is necessary to maintain the illusion that the children were not credible witnesses, that illusion being an essential component of the cover-up. For if the children *were* credible, the implications run far deeper than the tunnels under the school. There are, for example, the stories told by the children of being pimped out as child prostitutes in private homes and businesses all over the community. They also spoke frequently of being photographed and videotaped while being abused. District Attorney Robert Philibosian publicly declared the McMartin Preschool to be an elaborate front for a massive child pornography operation. Twenty-three parents filed a civil lawsuit making the very same claim.

Other stories told repeatedly by the children were even more disturbing. They told of being forced to witness and participate in the ritual torture, killing and mutilation of animals and, on occasion, of human babies and children as well. They spoke of being forced to drink the blood and eat the flesh of the slaughtered corpses, of witnessing the beheading of infants, and of being forced to stab infants themselves. They told as well of being sealed in coffins with the mutilated

corpses. And they spoke of being subjected to every sort of depraved sexual activity imaginable, including necrophilia, coprophilia and bestiality.[15] The abuse was of such stunning brutality that it is almost beyond human comprehension that anyone could inflict such physical and psychological torture on children. And yet these stories were soon being told by thousands of other kids across the country as preschool abuse cases spread like wildfire. Young children from all walks of life, and from all parts of the country, were all telling remarkably similar stories of horrific ritual abuse.

How was this possible? If they were all victims of 'false memories,' how vast a conspiracy would be required for therapists all across the country to implant the very same memories in all of these children? Experts have noted that the victimized children show a level of knowledge that defies rational explanation if the kids have not experienced what they claim to have experienced. For instance, these child victims can accurately describe the look, smell, texture and colors of human viscera. This is an ability, it has been argued, that very few adults possess, other than those who have been trained as surgeons or coroners. These children also display a remarkable level of knowledge of a wide variety of unconventional human sexual practices, including many acts that, again, most adults do not have knowledge or awareness of. If these children did not experience these things firsthand, then how *did* they gain such knowledge?

In February 1985, officer Sandi Gallant of the San Francisco Police Department submitted a report to her superiors noting the similarities in numerous ritual abuse cases. She had gathered evidence from fellow officers and police departments across the country and summarized the evidence referenced in the police reports submitted to her. An excerpt from her report reads as follows:

> The information contained herein is distasteful and bizarre, to such a degree that one would choose to discredit it. However, research that I have done in this area has revealed that numerous cases of this type are surfacing around the country and in Canada. The similarities in the stories of each child victim used in these crimes tend to give credibility to the information revealed by others. Additionally, the psychiatrists and therapists who have been treating the victims state that the consistency

15 Barron's *Dictionary of Medical Terms* defines necrophilia as a "morbid liking or desire for dead bodies, esp. the desire to have sexual contact with a dead body." Bestiality is defined as "sexual involvement of a human with an animal." Coprophilia is defined by *The American Heritage Dictionary of the English Language* as "an abnormal, often obsessive interest in excrement, especially the use of feces for sexual excitement."

> of the stories and the explicit details revealed cause them to believe that these children are telling the truth. It is also the belief of each law enforcement officer who submitted information for this report that the victims are being truthful and that, in fact, children would be unable to make such stories up.
>
> During my research, similarities began surfacing which indicate the strong probability that there exists a network of people in this country involved in the sexual abuse and possible homicides of young children. These cases appear to differ from isolated cases of abuse towards children in that the crimes mentioned here have been committed with one common goal in mind—that of mutilating and murdering children for ritualistic or sacrificial purposes. Many of the cases reported also reveal the possibility of child pornography beyond the normal type of 'kiddie porn' in that these children are photographed during rituals with some members in robes or other garb and candles, snakes, swords, altars and other types of ritualistic material being used.

Gallant requested that the report be sent on to the chief of police for him to review and then forward to the FBI. Following his review, however, the chief declined to submit the report. Gallant next tried to get the U.S. Department of Justice to review the paperwork, but she was rebuffed there as well.

As for the McMartin case, there has never been any question that the children there were horrifically abused. Though rarely noted in press reports, the jurors were clearly of the opinion that that was, in fact, the case. The hung juries and acquittals in the various proceedings were the result of the jury members' inability to identify the perpetrators of the abuse, not the reflection of any belief that there wasn't any abuse. The jurors attributed their inability to identify the perpetrators to the inept presentation of the prosecution's case.

Also rarely noted in the reporting on the trials is that the matriarch of the McMartin family—Virginia McMartin—admitted on the stand that one of her own granddaughters believed that her own children had been molested at the school. Virginia McMartin, incidentally, was more than just your run-of-the-mill preschool operator. In the mid-1960s, she achieved a sort of semi-celebrity status in the childcare field, and traveled extensively as a consultant, including stops in New Zealand, Australia, Denmark, Sweden, Norway and England.

Another notable aspect of the McMartin trials is that the defense team was allowed to subject the child witnesses to the longest pretrial hearing in the nation's history. Facing a battery of as many as seven rabid defense attorneys, the already severely traumatized children were verbally assaulted for weeks on end in

a deliberate attempt to break them. The state made little effort to protect these young victim/witnesses.

In the final analysis, the logical conclusion to be drawn from the McMartin case is that 460 kids did not all conspire to lie about the abuse they suffered. They also did not likely lie about their involvement in child prostitution and child pornography. They certainly did not lie about the tunnels under the school. They probably did not lie about their forced involvement in satanic rituals, in which adults sheathed in black ceremonial robes uttered chants. In fact, at least one such robe was seized from the home of a defendant. And perhaps most tragically, there is good reason to believe that they did not lie about the blood sacrifices either.

Chapter 5

It Couldn't Happen Here

Prosecutor Dan Casey*: "Did you exercise any kind of mind control over your wife in order to get her to have sexual contact?"*

Frank Fuster*: "If I had that power, you think I would use it against…? You know…I don't…I have never. I'm a normal human being."*

On August 8, 1984, Bobby Dean stood on the front lawn of the Fuster home in the Country Walk housing development—a picture-perfect, planned community of relatively upscale, suburban homes in Dade County, Florida. By all appearances, this was a small slice of paradise, an oasis untouched by the grim realities of American society. On this day, however, Dean had a loaded gun tucked in his waistband, and he fully intended to use it. He was there to finish the job that someone else had failed to complete on December 18, 1980, when an unidentified assailant had confronted Francisco Fuster Escalona (*aka* Frank Fuster) at his place of business and shot him once in the side of the head.

Fuster survived that attack, which he explained to the police as a botched robbery, though the officers thought it looked more like an attempted execution. Dean did not get the chance to make another attempt; police were on the scene in short order to arrest him. Fuster himself surrendered to police two days later in response to the issuance of an arrest warrant. He had been under investigation following accusations by neighborhood parents that Frank and his wife, Iliana, had been brutally abusing the children who were left in the trusted care of the Fuster's babysitting service, which was run out of their Country Walk home.

Fuster had, shall we say, rather questionable qualifications to run a daycare center. On January 16, 1969, Fuster fired two shots into the chest of a fellow motorist in New York City, killing him instantly. An off-duty police officer was, curiously enough, an eyewitness to the summary execution. Even more curiously,

Fuster chambered another round and pointed his gun directly at the armed officer—and yet was not shot. He was arrested though, and convicted and sentenced before the year was out. On Halloween day, he was sentenced to a ten-year prison term, but was back on the streets in less than four, receiving psychiatric care. In November 1982, he was convicted again, this time on charges of committing a lewd assault on a nine-year-old girl. Despite that being his second felony conviction, Fuster was sentenced to just two years probation. It was while on probation for the child molestation conviction that Fuster and his underage wife started the babysitting service.

Fuster's probation officer apparently had no problem with that business venture, even though it violated the terms of Frank's probation by bringing him into unsupervised contact with at least fifty kids, at least thirty of whom later reported being horrifically abused. Fuster's probation officer also managed to overlook the fact that Frank had self-terminated his court-ordered psychiatric treatment in August 1983. No one really seems to have been too concerned about Fuster's babysitting service, which—in addition to being run by a convicted murderer and child molester—was operating without proper licensing and in violation of local zoning laws, which stated that commercial enterprises were expressly forbidden in the residential community. Nevertheless, the service operated with the full knowledge of the entity managing the complex. In fact, Fuster's service used the name Country Walk Babysitting Service, implying that his was an officially sanctioned service provided by the management.

After Frank's past and present activities were exposed, the management company, Arvida, denied that it had ever any official links to the Fuster operation. That, of course, was not surprising, given that Arvida was a subsidiary of the Walt Disney Company, which had little interest in being perceived as having connections to a child molestation operation. The fact remains, however, that the company took no actions against Fuster for the illegal expropriation of the 'Country Walk' name or for violating zoning regulations. Dade County also took a hands-off approach to the Fuster business enterprise. Despite the fact that Frank lacked other required licenses, he was issued an occupational license to run the babysitting service.

Detective Donna Meznarich was the first police investigator sent to look into the allegations being made by the Country Walk parents. She was openly skeptical of the charges before she even knew what they actually were. The parents felt that she came calling with an unmistakable attitude of disbelief. Nevertheless, enough evidence was obtained to issue an arrest warrant for Frank Fuster for probation violations. Considerably more evidence could have been gathered had police conducted a timely search of the Fuster home. Facing imminent arrest, Fuster was observed by his Country Walk neighbors hastily packing boxes into a

white van. Fearing the loss of valuable physical evidence, parents contacted Detective Meznarich—who failed to respond. She did execute a search warrant the next day, on a home largely—though not entirely—cleansed of incriminating evidence.

Once Fuster was safely in custody, the stories told by his child victims grew increasingly disturbing. They told of being forced to play "pee-pee" and "ca-ca" games. A photo was later produced at trial showing Fuster's young son Jaime—one of the most severely abused of the victims—sitting in a bathroom smeared thickly with excrement. The children also told of being forced to drink "magic punch," later revealed by Fuster's wife to be a mixture of Gatorade, urine, and various drugs. It was revealed at trial that a close friend of the Fuster family owned a pharmacy, which provided a reliable source for drugs. This friend was particularly close to Fuster's mother and uncle.

The young victims also told of having their lives threatened repeatedly, and of having their parents' and siblings' lives threatened as well. They had been compelled to play a game, they said, called "who's gonna lose their head?" This game frequently ended with the ritual decapitation of an animal, typically a bird. Finally, perhaps inevitably, the children claimed that they were frequently photographed and videotaped, both while being sexually abused and during occult rituals. Fuster claimed to have never owned any video equipment, and none was found in the belated search of the Fuster home. Jaime Fuster though recalled seeing video equipment—as well as guns—being packed into the boxes that were loaded into the van just before Fuster's arrest.

Some investigators have speculated that Fuster was in the business of producing and selling custom, made-to-order, child pornography videos. He certainly lived quite well for a self-employed mini-blind installer. He had no problem, for example, coming up with the down payment for his Country Walk home, and he maintained no fewer than six bank accounts. He was in the habit of making lump sum deposits of as much as $20,000 in cash. Fuster apparently liked to screen home videos for the kids, one of which was said to be a snuff film that the children described as depicting two men butchering a woman in a bathtub and then eating her. Some of the kids also, as a side note, spoke of being hypnotized by Iliana Fuster, who they said wore a 'hypnotizer' on a chain around her neck.

The trial of Frank Fuster had notable parallels to the McMartin prosecutions, although it differed in significant ways as well. The Country Walk parents who actively and vocally worked to see Fuster brought to justice were subjected to death threats by phone, obscene messages in the mail, and dead chickens left on their doorsteps—similar to the harassment suffered by their counterparts in Manhattan Beach. Also like McMartin, the primary defense strategy was to bring in a hired-gun 'expert' of questionable qualifications to attempt to discredit the

children's testimony. The children had been brainwashed by the overzealous therapists, it was claimed, as the treacherous therapists were crucified as being the true guilty parties in what was cast as a 'witch hunt.'

The man originally slated to play the starring role for the defense was Ralph Underwager, at the time a prominent mouthpiece for a group calling itself VOCAL, for Victims of Child Abuse Laws. As the name implies, this group was largely composed of indicted and/or convicted pedophiles. Underwager had been present at the birth of the organization. The defense suffered a bit of a setback when it was revealed at a pretrial deposition that Underwager's credentials as an 'expert' in the field of child development were nonexistent. He was quietly dropped by the defense and replaced with Lee Stewart Coleman, who also had close ties to VOCAL. Coleman had played a key role in the unsuccessful prosecution of the defendants in one of the McMartin-linked preschools.

Coleman did not succeed in his mission in the Country Walk case. Fuster was found guilty on all fourteen of the counts brought against him. One reason for that is that the children were protected from the abusive pretrial treatment received by the McMartin kids. In addition, police and prosecutors—with some notable exceptions—seem to have actually made an effort to win the case. Why was this prosecution not subverted as so many others were? That is difficult to say, although the answer may lie in the make-up of the parents seeking justice for their children; among them were a police sergeant, a police lieutenant, two former state prosecutors, a former chief assistant state attorney, and a gun-toting vigilante named Bobby Dean.

In the end, Frank Fuster—the man who appeared at his pretrial hearing in what was described as a "catatonic trance"—was sentenced to be imprisoned until the year 2150. Not even the Santeria priest who attended the trial with Fuster's mother and uncle had the power to save him. And Arvida—which is to say, the Walt Disney Co.—paid $6 million to seven of his victims. Even so, justice was not necessarily served. According to the victims, at least two other adults were involved in the abuse. The state knew the identity of at least one of them, but he was never charged with any crimes. Had he been, there is no telling where the investigation might have led; his wife had once run her own babysitting service.

With the heightened awareness of the issue of child abuse engendered by the high-profile Fuster case, a number of other cases surfaced in the Miami area. In the course of one investigation, police inadvertently stumbled upon a collection of hundreds of photographs of a convicted child pornographer engaged in sexual acts with young boys. The man was promptly arrested. Two days after his release on bond, he was found in a Miami hotel room with a bullet hole in his head. His death was, naturally, ruled a suicide. His timely suicide preempted an investigation

that could, it seems reasonable to conclude, have led to the elementary school that was directly across from his home/studio.

Another case that broke in the wake of Country Walk was that of Harold "Grant" Snowden, whose wife had also run a babysitting service. Dozens of kids had passed through her care over the course of a decade. It took two trials, but Snowden was ultimately convicted. In 1983, he had been named the South Miami Police Department's "Officer of the Year." Stepping up to handle the appeal of his conviction was F. Lee Bailey, who in the late 1960s had represented a U.S. Air Force Captain in South Carolina accused of molesting multiple child victims. Bailey will be revisited later in this book.

Years later, in August 2002, Florida authorities issued a warrant for the arrest of a former minister and radio evangelist named Troy Cecil Snowden. A search of his Cape Coral home had yielded weapons, child pornography and other unspecified items.

Chapter 6

Finders Keepers

"People want to believe that I am at the centre of everything. They are mistaken…I did things of which I was not the driving force. I was used as an instrument by others, who were themselves used as instruments by others."

—Marc Dutroux

Just a few years after the conviction of Frank Fuster, another child exploitation case surfaced briefly in the state of Florida. On February 7, 1987, not long before the Larry King and Craig Spence operations were exposed, the *Washington Post* ran an interesting story that, at the time, did not seem to have any particular national significance. The article concerned a case of possible kidnapping and child abuse, and read in part as follows:

> Authorities investigating the alleged abuse of six children found with two men in a Tallahassee, Fla., park discovered material yesterday in the Washington area that they say points to a 1960's style commune called the Finders, described in a court document as a 'cult' that allegedly conducted 'brainwashing' and used children 'in rituals.'
>
> D.C. police, who searched a Northeast Washington warehouse linked to the group removed large plastic bags filled with color slides, photographs and photographic contact sheets. Some photos visible through a bag carried from the warehouse at 1307 Fourth St. NE were wallet-sized pictures of children, similar to school photos, and some were of naked children.
>
> D.C. police sources said some of the items seized yesterday showed pictures of children engaged in what appeared to be 'cult rituals.' Officials of the U.S. Customs Service, called in to aid in the investigation, said that the material seized yesterday includes photos showing

> children involved in bloodletting ceremonies of animals and one photograph of a child in chains.
>
> Customs officials said they were looking into whether a child pornography operation was being conducted…Their links to the D.C. area have led authorities into a far-reaching investigation that includes the Finders—a group of about 40 people that court documents allege is led by a man named Marion Pettie—and their various homes, including the duplex apartment building in Glover Park, the Northeast Washington warehouse and a 90 acre farm in rural Madison County, Va.…
>
> The children, identified in a court document only by the first names of Honeybee, John, Franklin, Bee Bee, Max and Mary, were described as 'dirty, unkempt, hungry, disturbed and agitated.' They had been living in the rear of the van for some time, the document said. Yesterday, police spokesman Hunt said one of the children, a 6 yr. old girl, 'showed signs of sexual abuse'…
>
> Five of the children were uncommunicative, according to police, and none seemed to recognize objects such as typewriters and staplers. However, the oldest was able to give investigators some information. She said that the two men 'were their teachers,' according to Hunt…
>
> Before their arrests in the park, [the two adult caretakers] had told police that they were teachers from Washington 'transporting these children to Mexico and a school for brilliant children,' according to Hunt. When police asked the men where the children's mothers were they said they were being weaned from their mothers.

It was nearly seven years before the press revisited the Finders case, with the follow-up provided by *U.S. News and World Report.* Most likely, the strange saga of the Finders would have disappeared forever if not for the rumors surrounding the case that just would not seem to go away. These rumors were addressed in the *U.S. News* report as follows:

> One of the unresolved questions involves allegations that the Finders are somehow linked to the Central Intelligence Agency. Customs Service documents reveal that in 1987, when Customs agents sought to examine the evidence gathered by Washington, D.C. police, they were told that the Finders investigation 'had become an internal matter.'

> The police report on the case had been classified secret. Even now, Tallahassee police complain about the handling of the Finders investigation by D.C. police. 'They dropped this case,' one Tallahassee investigator says, 'like a hot rock.' D.C. police will not comment on the matter. As for the CIA, ranking officials describe allegations about links between the intelligence agency and the Finders as 'hogwash,' perhaps the result of a simple mix up with D.C. police. The only connection, according to the CIA: A firm that provided computer training to CIA officers also employed several members of the Finders.

It should probably be noted here that the firm that supplied the training to CIA officers didn't just employ several members of the Finders, but appears to have in fact been a wholly owned subsidiary of the Finders organization. It should also be noted that the CIA does not, as a general rule-of-thumb, assign the training of its officers to outside contractors, unless, that is, the 'private' firm utilized in such a capacity is a CIA front. In the last paragraph of the *U.S. News* report, more intriguing connections to Langley are revealed: "the CIA's interest in the Finders may stem from the fact that [group leader Marion Pettie's] late wife once worked for the agency and that his son worked for a CIA proprietary firm, Air America." Aside from acknowledging these by then widely known (in Washington) CIA connections, the *U.S. News* reporters did their very best to bury the Finders story once and for all:

> The case is almost seven years old now, but matters surrounding a mysterious group known as the Finders keep growing curiouser and curiouser.
>
> In early February 1987, an anonymous tipster in Tallahassee, Fla, made a phone call to police. Two 'well dressed men' seemed to be 'supervising' six disheveled and hungry children in a local park, the caller said. The cops went after the case like bloodhounds, at least at first. The two men were identified as members of the Finders. They were charged with child abuse in Florida. In Washington, D.C., police and U.S. Customs Service agents raided a duplex apartment building and a warehouse connected to the group.
>
> Among the evidence seized—detailed instructions on obtaining children for unknown purposes and several photographs of nude children.
>
> According to a Customs Service memorandum obtained by *U.S. News*, one photo appeared 'to accent the child's genitals.' The more the

> police learned about the Finders, the more bizarre they seemed: There were suggestions of child abuse, Satanism, dealing in pornography and ritualistic animal slaughter.
>
> None of the allegations was ever proved, however. The child abuse charges against the two men in Tallahassee were dropped; all six of the children were eventually returned to their mothers, though in the case of two, conditions were attached by a court. In Washington, D.C., police began backing away from the Finders investigation. The group's practices, the police said, were eccentric—not illegal.

The article closed by complaining, "some of the rumors can last an awfully long time." Indeed they can, though they have had to circulate outside of the media, which has never again mentioned the case. That does not mean, however, that there is no additional information available on the subject. As the *U.S. News* reporters noted in their report, there is a certain Customs Service memorandum that was written at the time of the original 1987 investigation. As that document was in the hands of the *News* reporters at the time the story was written, as they readily acknowledged, it should logically follow that any pertinent information contained therein would have been faithfully reported. And as we know, the *News* concluded: "none of the allegations was ever proved." Still, it might be instructive to review the document to see what kind of "eccentric—not illegal" practices it was that the group was involved in.

The memo in question is actually a series of memos that were written by U.S. Customs Service Special Agent Ramon J. Martinez. In the officer's own words, this is what he observed while participating in the investigation:

> On Thursday, February 5, 1987, this office was contacted via telephone by Sergeant JoAnn VanMeter of the Tallahassee Police Department, Juvenile Division. Sgt. VanMeter requested assistance in identifying two adult males and six minor children ages 7 years to 2 years.
>
> The adult males were tentatively identified by TPD as Michael Houlihan and Douglas Ammerman, both of Washington, D.C. who were arrested the previous day on charges of child abuse.
>
> The police had received an anonymous telephone call relative two well-dressed white men wearing suits and ties in Myers Park, (Tallahassee), apparently watching six dirty and unkempt children in the playground area. Houlihan and Ammerman were near a 1980 Blue Dodge van bearing Virginia license number XHW-557, the inside of

which was later described as foul-smelling, filled with maps, books, letters, with a mattress situated to the rear of the van which appeared as if it were used as a bed, and the overall appearance of the van gave the impression that all eight persons were living in it.

The children were covered with insect bites, were very dirty, most of the children were not wearing underwear and all of the children had not been bathed in many days.

The men were arrested and charged with multiple counts of child abuse and lodged in the Leon County Jail. Once in custody the men were somewhat evasive in their answers to the police regarding the children and stated only that they both were the children's teachers and that all were enroute to Mexico to establish a school for brilliant children…

U.S. Customs was contacted because the police officers involved suspected the adults of being involved in child pornography and knew the Customs Service to have a network of child pornography investigators, and of the existence of the Child Pornography and Protection Unit. SS/A Krietlow stated the two adults were well dressed white males. They had custody of six white children (boys and girls), ages three to six years. The children were observed to be poorly dressed, bruised, dirty, and behaving like wild animals in a public park in Tallahassee…SS/A Krietlow was further advised the children were unaware of the function and purpose of telephones, televisions and toilets, and that the children had stated they were not allowed to live indoors and were only given food as a reward…

Upon contacting Detective Bradley, I learned that he had initiated an investigation on the two addresses provided by the Tallahassee Police Dept. during December of 1986. An informant had given him information regarding a cult, known as the 'Finders' operating various businesses out of a warehouse located at 1307 4th St., N.E., and were supposed to be housing children at 3918/3920 W St., N.W. The information was specific in describing 'blood rituals' and sexual orgies involving children, and an as yet unsolved murder in which the Finders may be involved. With the information provided by the informant, Detective Bradley was able to match some of the children in Tallahassee with names of children known or alleged to be in the custody of the Finders. Furthermore, Bradley was able to match the tentative ID of the adults with known members of the Finders. I stood by while Bradley consulted with AUSA Harry Benner and obtained search warrants for the two premises. I advised acting RAC SS/A Tim

Halloran of my intention to accompany MPD on the execution of the warrants, received his permission, and was joined by SS/A Harrold. SS/A Harrold accompanied the team which went to 1307 4th St., and I went to 3918/20 W St.

During the execution of the warrant at 3918/20 W St., I was able to observe and access the entire building…There were several subjects on the premises. Only one was deemed to be connected with the Finders. [He] was located in a room equipped with several computers, printers, and numerous documents. Cursory examination of the documents revealed detailed instructions for obtaining children for unspecified purposes. The instructions included the impregnation of female members of the community known as the Finders, purchasing children, trading, and kidnapping. There were telex messages using MCI account numbers between a computer terminal believed to be located in the same room, and others located across the country and in foreign locations. One such telex specifically ordered the purchase of two children in Hong Kong to be arranged through a contact in the Chinese Embassy there. Another telex expressed interest in 'bank secrecy' situations. Other documents identified interests in high-tech transfers to the United Kingdom, numerous properties under the control of the Finders, a keen interest in terrorism, explosives, and the evasion of law enforcement. Also found in the 'computer room' was a detailed summary of the events surrounding the arrest and taking into custody of the two adults and six children in Tallahassee the previous night. There were also a set of instructions which appeared to be broadcast via a computer network which advised the participants to move 'the children' and keep them moving through different jurisdictions, and instructions on how to avoid police attention…

On Friday, 2/6/87, I met Detective Bradley at the warehouse on 4th Street, N.E. I duly advised my acting group supervisor, SS/A Don Bludworth. I was again granted unlimited access to the premises. I was able to observe numerous documents which described explicit sexual conduct between the members of the community known as Finders. I also saw a large collection of photographs of unidentified persons. Some of the photographs were nudes, believed to be of members of the Finders. There were numerous photos of children, some nude, at least one of which was a photo of a child 'on display' and appearing to accent the child's genitals. I was only able to examine a very small amount of the photos at this time. However, one of the officers presented me with a photo album for my review. The album contained a

series of photos of adults and children dressed in white sheets participating in a 'blood ritual.' The ritual centered around the execution of at least two goats. The photos portrayed the execution, disembowelment, skinning and dismemberment of the goats at the hands of the children. This included the removal of the testes of a male goat, the discovery of a female goat's 'womb' and the 'baby goats' inside the womb, and the presentation of a goat's head to one of the children.

Further inspection of the premises disclosed numerous files relating to activities of the organization in different parts of the world. Locations I observed are as follows: London, Germany, the Bahamas, Japan, Hong Kong, Malaysia, Africa, Costa Rica, and 'Europe.' There was also a file identified as 'Palestinian.' Other files were identified by member name or 'project' name. The projects appearing to be operated for commercial purposes under front names for the Finders. There was one file entitled 'Pentagon Break-In,' and others referring to members operating in foreign countries. Not observed by me but related by an MPD officer were intelligence files on private families not related to the Finders. The process undertaken appears to be have been a systematic response to local newspaper advertisements for babysitters, tutors, etc. A member of the Finders would respond and gather as much information as possible about the habits, identity, occupation, etc., of the family. The use to which this information was to be put is still unknown. There was also a large amount of data collected on various child care organizations.

The warehouse contained a large library, two kitchens, a sauna, hottub, and a 'video room.' The video room seemed to be set up as an indoctrination center. It also appeared that the organization had the capability to produce its own videos. There were what appeared to be training areas for children and what appeared to be an altar set up in a residential area of the warehouse. Many jars of urine and feces were located in this area.

Contrary to the claims of *U.S. News*, running an international terrorist organization specializing in the trafficking of children is definitely more than just "eccentric." Unless, that is, the organization doing the trafficking is run by the Central Intelligence Agency. Group leader Marion Pettie shed additional light on his non-connections to the agency in an interview with *Steamshovel Press* in 1998. Recounting the history of his group, Pettie reminisced: "Going back to World War II, I kept open house mainly to intelligence people in Washington. OSS people passing through, things like that." Pettie was not, mind you, an intelligence

asset himself. In fact, he has spent his entire life serving as a counter-spy. As a private citizen, he has taken on the job of monitoring the agency. As for his wife, Pettie claims that he sent her "in as a spy, to spy on the CIA for me. She was very happy about it, happy to tell me everything she found out. She was in a key place, you know with the records, and she could find out things for me." Presumably, the same applies to Pettie's son.

Pettie sums up his relationship with CIA by acknowledging that there "are some connections, but not to me personally." Interestingly enough though, the group that claimed no direct connection to the intelligence community quite obviously had very powerful people within that community protecting it. As the final Customs Service memo reveals:

> On Thursday, February 5, 1987, Senior Special Agent Harrold and I assisted the Washington D.C. Metropolitan Police Department (MPD) with two search warrants involving the possible sexual exploitation of children. During the course of the search warrants, numerous documents were discovered which appeared to be concerned with international trafficking in children, high tech transfer to the United Kingdom, and international transfer of currency.
>
> On March 31, 1987, I contacted Detective Jim Bradley of the Washington, DC Metropolitan Police Department (MPD). I was to meet with Detective Bradley to review the documents seized pursuant to two search warrants executed in January, 1987. The meeting was to take place on April 2 or 3, 1987.
>
> On April 2, 1987, I arrived at MPD at approximately 9:00 a.m. Detective Bradley was not available. I spoke to a third party who was willing to discuss the case with me on a strictly 'off the record' basis.
>
> I was advised that all the passport data had been turned over to the State Department for their investigation. The State Department, in turn, advised the MPD that all travel and use of the passports by the holders of the passports was within the law and no action would be taken. This included travel to Moscow, North Korea, and North Vietnam from the late 1950s to mid 1970s.
>
> The individual further advised me of circumstances which indicated that the investigation into the activity of the Finders had become a CIA internal matter. The MPD report has been classified SECRET and was not available for review. I was advised that the FBI had withdrawn from the investigation several weeks prior and that the FBI Foreign Counter Intelligence Division had directed MPD not to advise the FBI Washington Field Office of anything that had transpired.

The initial arrest of the Finders in Tallahassee went almost completely unnoticed by the media. So too did another arrest in that same state in August 2000, just before Florida gained newfound fame as the land of the 'hanging chads.' The arrested man was Wayne Camolli, and the charge was operating an on-line child pornography site. The *Los Angeles Times* reported that the West Palm Beach home in which Camolli was arrested, not unlike the Finders' van, "was filled with so much rotting garbage, trash and cat feces that the agents had to borrow oxygen masks and hazardous materials suits from the county fire department to carry out the search." Seized in the raid were numerous videotapes and a computer. What makes Camolli's arrest of significance here is that, as the *Times* noted, it was initiated by police "investigating Belgium's most notorious pedophile murder case." It seems that Camolli had close connections to "Felix DeConinck, a suspect in the kidnapping and molestation of a 14-year-old girl…[and] DeConinck in turn had links to Marc Dutroux."

And so it is that we end up right back where we began, with the case of the 'Belgian Beast.' The brief *Times* report closed with these words: "U.S. officials couldn't elaborate on the connection between DeConinck and Dutroux, but said they were part of the same 'child pornography, molestation and murder investigation.'" It is unlikely that the press will ever revisit the case of Wayne Camolli. Tellingly, the *L.A. Times* article quickly disappeared from the newspaper's online archives. As with so many other cases, the final words of the U.S. Customs Service memorandum on the Finders investigation will likely provide the epitaph for this case as well:

> No further information will be available. No further action will be taken.

The *Guardian* reported in January 2001 that Interpol, the international police agency, "has agreed to set up an electronic library of child sex victims at its headquarters in Lyon, France." The first images that were to be processed into that database were 750,000 photos seized by British authorities in the Wonderland raids. In April 2003, Britain's *The Register* reported that the U.S. Justice Department was setting up an even larger database:

> A huge database system designed to find sexually abused children is under development in the US…The US Justice Department's Child Victim Identification Program will include a catalogue of thousands of illicit pictures seized from suspects and collected from the Web. This

> could make the Justice Department the "owner of the world's largest collection of child pornography," *AP* reports.

According to that *AP* report, child pornography investigators in several countries had already contributed images to the database, as had "the FBI, Secret Service, Postal Inspection Service and exploited-children groups." The goal is for the system to "eventually include most of the illicit photographs in circulation on the Internet." Advanced image recognition software will be utilized in an attempt match and identify the children in the photographic images, which will, as *The Register* noted, make it easier "to identify and locate sexually abused children." That is certainly an encouraging development, if, that is, it represents a sincere effort by law enforcement personnel to gather evidence against the child exploitation rings and aid the physically and emotionally ravaged victims.

However, there could also be a very sinister goal being pursued. Researcher Arlene Tyner, who has spent a considerable amount of time interviewing and corresponding with victims of mind control operations, noted in a *Probe* magazine article that some of these victims "were turned over to military/CIA doctors by pedophile fathers or other sexually abusive relatives. CIA officials also blackmailed family members known to produce 'kiddie porn' in order to gain control of their already abused and psychologically fragmented children." It is certainly within the realm of possibility that the high profile child pornography raids in recent years, which invariably result in relatively few arrests and even fewer prosecutions and convictions, are not intended to punish the victimizers, but to identify and compromise them. And is it not inconceivable that the databases being compiled will be utilized as something of a recruitment list to identify those persons who have been 'preconditioned,' so to speak, for future mind control operations

One thing can be stated with certainty about the thousands of victims of today's child pornography and child prostitution rings: some day, many of them will come forward to tell harrowing stories of their early childhood abuse. They will speak of acts of depravity committed against children that are so heinous as to be almost beyond human comprehension. And yet, as difficult as their stories will be to believe, they will be documented by the images stored in Interpol's computers, and in the U.S. Justice Department's computers.

But how many of these victims will be believed?

PART II

THERE'S SOMETHING ABOUT HENRY

"You don't understand me. You are not expected to. You are not capable of it. I am beyond good and evil. Legions of the night, night breed, repeat not the errors of the Night Prowler and show no mercy."

—Richard "The Night Stalker" Ramirez

"There are other 'Sons' out there—God help the world."

—David "Son of Sam" Berkowitz

"What about your children? You say there are just a few? There are many, many more, coming in the same direction. They are running in the streets—and they are coming right at you!"

—Charles Milles Manson

*"The really scary thing is that there are a lot of people who are not in prison, a **lot** of people who are not in prison, who were **far** more successful than I."*

—Theodore Robert Bundy

"All across the country, there's people just like me, who set out to destroy human life."

—Henry Lee Lucas

Chapter 7

Sympathy for the Devil

"Henry is an unusual prisoner. He's been given a high security cell and a few special amenities…"

—Jim Boutwell, Sheriff of Williamson County, Texas

On June 30, 1998, Henry Lee Lucas—arguably the most prolific and certainly one of the most sadistic serial killers in the annals of American crime—was scheduled for execution by the state of Texas. Given the advocacy of the death penalty by then-Governor George W. Bush, things were not looking good for Henry. Bush had not granted clemency to any condemned man throughout his tenure as governor. In fact, no governor of any state at any time in the history of the country had carried out more judicial executions than Governor Bush. So Texas was definitely not the place to be for a man in Henry's position. And considering the nature of Lucas' crimes, it seemed a certainty that nothing would stand in the way of his scheduled execution.

Henry did not attract any high-profile supporters, the way that Karla Faye Tucker did. Then again, even personal appeals to Bush from the likes of Pat Robertson failed to dissuade the governor from proceeding on schedule with Miss Tucker's execution. There was nothing to indicate that Henry would fare any better, particularly since his crimes were of a particularly brutal nature, involving rape, torture, mutilation, dismemberment, necrophilia, cannibalism, and pedophilia. His tally of victims ran as high as 300–600 by some accounts—including Henry's own, at times—though such figures are likely inflated. What seems certain is that Lucas—frequently working with erstwhile partner Ottis Toole, a self-described arsonist and cannibal—savagely murdered dozens of victims of various ages, races, and genders. All indications were then that Henry's execution was a foregone conclusion.

Then a most remarkable thing happened. On June 18, just twelve days before Henry's scheduled demise, Governor Bush made a special request that the Texas

State Board of Pardons and Paroles, whose members were all Bush appointees, to review Henry's case. Strangely enough, eight days later the Board uncharacteristically issued a recommendation that Henry's execution *not* take place. The next day, just three days short of Henry's scheduled exit from this world, Lucas became the first—and ultimately the only—recipient of Governor Bush's 'compassionate conservatism.' The official rationale for this act of mercy was that the evidence on which Lucas was sentenced did not support his conviction. There was a possibility, said the Board, that Henry was in fact innocent of the crime for which he was convicted.

The problem here is that many of the 150+ death-row inmates who did not receive special gubernatorial attention prior to their executions had evidence supporting their claims of innocence, and yet their appeals to the governor were met with scorn and mockery. So why had Bush suddenly developed a keen interest in not executing innocent convicts? And why, once Henry's life was spared, did he promptly lose this passing interest and begin once again rubber-stamping every execution order that crossed his desk—including one for a great-grandmother in her sixties who was convicted of killing her chronically abusive husband? And why is it that Henry was granted full clemency, rather than a temporary stay during which his case could have been reviewed? That is exactly what Bush did in the case of convicted murderer Ricky Nolen McGinn. Tellingly, the proliferation of press reports on the McGinn case made no mention of the governor's earlier actions on behalf of Lucas.

And what if Lucas was in fact falsely convicted, and what if his innocence was so obvious that the governor had no choice but to commute Henry's sentence? What then does that say about the Texas criminal justice system and the ease with which it sends innocent men to their deaths? Are we to believe that Henry's case was an isolated one and that none of the other men put to death during Bush's reign had equally credible claims of innocence? And what are we to make of the rather peculiar fact that while Henry has been convicted of no fewer than eleven homicides, the only death sentence he ever received was the one that the governor had no problem setting aside? Maybe Henry just had uncannily good luck. He had at one time been scheduled to stand trial for four additional homicides—crimes for which his partner had already been convicted. The trial, however, was canceled on economic grounds, said to be a waste of taxpayer money since Henry was already scheduled to die.

Was Henry just extraordinarily lucky to have his only death sentence set aside by a governor who handed out but one commutation? Or was there something more at work in the Lucas case? Surely there had to be some reason why Bush would take uncharacteristic actions to spare the life of a man who had led a life of such brutality. And this was certainly not the first time the criminal justice system

had shown such inexplicable leniency towards Lucas. The first big break for Henry came in June 1970, when he was released early from a sentence he was then serving following his first murder conviction. Sentenced to 20–40 years, Henry was released after serving ten, just after he appeared before the parole board and explained to them that he was not ready to return to society and would surely kill again if released. As Henry told it, the questioning went something like this: "Now, Mr. Lucas, I must ask you, if we grant your parole, will you kill again?" Henry: "Yes, sir! If you release me now, I will kill again."

Nevertheless, the board decided that ten years was an adequate amount of time to serve for the crime of killing his mother. Within a year of his release, Henry found himself back in prison after attempting to abduct a young girl. Despite his prior criminal record—which began long before the killing of his mother—Lucas served just four years before again being granted an early release, this time in August 1975. Beginning shortly thereafter, and continuing for nearly eight years, Henry and his new friend, Ottis, committed an untold number of lurid murders. Henry was finally arrested in October 1982 on suspicion of committing two murders, but he was promptly released. He was not arrested again, for the last time, until June 1983.

After the final arrest, Henry was taken on tour, so to speak, by various law enforcement officials around the country, during which time he confessed to committing some 600 murders in 26 states. There were various charges made at the time that Henry was being used by his escorts to clear troublesome, unsolved murders in places he had never even been. That quite likely was the case. Henry seemed to have a very chummy relationship with his captors, particularly the Texas Rangers, and provided a valuable service to them by taking the rap for an amazing array of murders. That alone, however, does not explain the personal attention given to Henry's case by Governor Bush.

For that, we need to look at some of the more infrequently noted details of Henry's life history, many of which have been provided by Lucas himself. Henry, as it turns out, has some interesting tales to tell. Just a couple years into his incarceration, he told his story in a book written for him by a sympathetic author. The book, entitled *The Hand of Death: The Henry Lee Lucas Story*, tells of Henry's indoctrination into a nationwide satanic cult. Lucas claimed that he was trained by the cult in a mobile paramilitary training camp in the Florida Everglades. His training, he said, included instruction in abduction and arson techniques, as well as in the fine art of killing, up close and personal. Henry further claimed that leaders of the camp were so impressed with his handling of a knife that he was allowed to serve as an instructor. Following his training, Henry claimed that he served the cult in various ways, including as a contract killer and as an abductor of children, whom he delivered to a ranch in Mexico near Juarez. Once there,

they were used in the production of child pornography and for ritual sacrifices. Henry has said that this cult's operations were based in Texas, and included trafficking in children and drugs, among other illegal pursuits.

What Henry claimed, essentially, is that what appeared to be the random work of a serial killer was in fact a planned series of crimes often committed for specific purposes. Some of the murders were political hits, according to Henry, including assassinations of foreign dignitaries, local politicians and wealthy businessmen. This was not true for all of Henry's crimes. Some he did just because that is what he liked to do. And it was the one thing that he was really good at. The beauty of this arrangement was that it allowed Henry to conceal the true motive for many of his crimes. Those performed as contract hits looked like all of his murders—senseless and random acts of violence.

In Henry's version of events, it was Toole who was responsible for Henry's recruitment and training by the cult, and for many of the pair's exploits thereafter. Interestingly, in all the standard biographies of the pair, Toole is said to have been Henry's severely retarded, and decidedly junior, partner. It is quite clear though from reading an interview granted by Toole to a journalist (of sorts) that he was not by any means retarded. Uneducated, no doubt, but certainly not severely retarded. Ottis was able to express himself quite clearly, though perversely, and displayed a substantial level of knowledge about the practices of Satanism—which isn't really surprising given that he was, as Joel Norris has written, "raised as 'the Devil's child' by his Satanist grandmother."

Toole has described a childhood that was complete with all the trappings of satanic ritual abuse. He has told of being forced to have sex with numerous family members and others—including his father, his stepfather, his stepfather's friends, and his older sister Drusilla. His grandmother, who lived with Ottis' father as man and wife, although they were actually mother and son, is said to have been a member of a multi-generational death cult. Toole once explained to an interviewer how he had "been involved in all this since I was a child, through the cult, you know." He has spoken of having urine poured on him, of eating dog meat, and of watching two cats fight to their death while their blood dripped down upon him. Ottis also had this to say of his childhood years: "I used to go with my grandmother into graveyards—we used to dig up all kinds of bones—and she used to take the bones and do devil worship." He has also told of once being forced into a grave to pluck the bones from a freshly rotting corpse. Young Ottis was also frequently dosed with barbiturates, and he has said that he "used to hear voices."

Toole's older sister, Drusilla, spent time in a mental hospital, after which she reportedly committed suicide. Her children were placed in the care of their Uncle Ottis and his friend Henry Lee Lucas. Two of them, Frieda and Frank Powell,

accompanied the pair on their homicidal wanderings and were forced to witness, and at times participate in, the rape, killing and mutilation of the victims. Frieda (*aka* Becky) ended up scattered in a field after suffering years of sexual abuse at the hands of Henry and Ottis. Frank fared slightly better; he was committed to a mental hospital. A third sibling, Sarah Pierce, who shared with her Uncle Ottis a passion for arson, was convicted and imprisoned for indulging her passion.

Lucas also suffered through an incomprehensibly abusive childhood. In fact, when it comes to early childhood abuse, there are few parents of future serial killers who can compare to Viola Lucas, Henry's mother. So severe was her physical abuse of young Henry that he once slipped into a coma for a day following a particularly brutal beating. On another occasion—through a combination of abuse and neglect—Henry lost one of his eyes. Viola was, as is the case with the mothers of many serial killers, a prostitute. She routinely entertained her customers in the presence of Henry, who was compelled to watch. Viola also dressed young Henry up as a girl for the first seven years of his life and prostituted him out to her customers. Toole has also spoken of being forced to dress as a girl.

Though Henry and Ottis may represent extreme cases, their horrific childhoods should not come as much of a surprise to most readers. That serial killers have suffered abusive childhoods has become something of a cliché. It is a fact that is acknowledged in most serial killer biographies, though it is usually followed by the caveat that such a childhood history does not excuse subsequent actions. Western society preaches that we are ultimately responsible for our own actions. Scapegoating society, or a horrendously abusive childhood, is simply not acceptable. Do we not all, after all, act of our own free will, regardless of our past?

That is certainly what we have been conditioned to believe. But what if we do not all act of our own free will? What if a lifetime of being bombarded with propaganda has, to some extent, deprived us all of that ability? And what if some of us have been completely robbed of the ability to exercise free will? And what if suffering through a chronically abusive childhood lays the groundwork for that to occur? What if Viola Lucas was right when she told young Henry: "I'm going to teach you the beauty of pain and you're going to be my slave for the rest of your life." And what if Henry could only break the bonds of that slavery by killing dear old mom? And, finally, what if by killing her, Lucas only succeeded in acquiring a new slave-master?

What are we to make of Henry's bizarre tale of being a contract killer? And what of Henry's other stories, including the one about being a close friend of Jim Jones of the People's Temple? Henry claimed on numerous occasions that it was he who was taken on a chartered plane to Guyana to personally deliver the cyanide to Jones that was allegedly used in the now infamous Jonestown massacre. What are we to make of such stories? Could Henry have been telling the

truth about being a contract killer? And if so, did the contracts he was receiving have some kind of government connection? Though Henry did not address the subject in his book, the training camp, as he described it, clearly had military connections. And Henry has explicitly stated that the cult included among its members various socially prominent individuals, including high-level politicians.

Could that be the reason for the actions taken by Governor George W. Bush in June 1998?

> ***"They think I'm stupid, but before all this is over everyone will know who's really stupid. And we'll see who the real criminals are."***
>
> **—Henry Lee Lucas**

Chapter 8

Henry: Portrait of an MK-ULTRA Assassin?

"[It is] being like a movie star…you're just playing the part."

—Henry Lee Lucas, describing what it is like to be a serial killer

A U.S. Navy psychologist…claims that the Office of Naval Intelligence had taken convicted murderers from military prisons, used behavior modification techniques on them, and then relocated them in American embassies throughout the world…The Navy psychologist was Lt. Commander Thomas Narut of the U.S. Regional Medical Center in Naples, Italy. The information was divulged at an Oslo NATO conference of 120 psychologists from the eleven nation alliance…The Navy provided all the funding necessary, according to Narut.

Dr. Narut, in a question and answer session with reporters from many nations, revealed how the Navy was secretly programming large numbers of assassins. He said that the men he had worked with for the Navy were being prepared for commando-type operations, as well as covert operations in U.S. embassies worldwide. He described the men who went through his program as 'hit men and assassins' who could kill on command.

Careful screening of the subjects was accomplished by Navy psychologists through the military records…and many were convicted murderers serving military prison sentences.

So said the *Napa Sentinel*, in a series of articles published in August-November, 1991. Anyone familiar with the intelligence community's long-standing obsession

with the concept of mind control will immediately recognize what Dr. Narut was describing as an MK-ULTRA project. The existence of this particular manifestation of the project was first reported by British journalist Peter Watson of the *Sunday Times*, who attended the conference and interviewed Dr. Narut, who told him that they looked for candidates who had shown a proclivity for violence. This was at a time when numerous pseudo-investigations of the intelligence community were being undertaken, including those by the Rockefeller, Pike, and Church Committees. Narut told Watson that he was revealing what was obviously highly classified information only because he assumed that it was about to surface anyway.

As it turned out, Narut seriously overestimated the interest of the various committees in practicing full disclosure. After making his unauthorized comments, Narut promptly disappeared from public view. He reappeared briefly to make a feeble attempt at retracting his prior statements, but at that point, it was a little too late. Watson went on to expand upon his initial research to produce a book, *War on the Mind*, which was one of the better books from the late 1970s on the subject of mind control and psychological warfare research by the intelligence community. Walter Bowart referenced Watson's work as well, in his difficult-to-find *Operation Mind Control*. So this cat, once let out of the bag, proved rather difficult to stuff back inside.

The intelligence community, it seemed, was recruiting from prisons to make use of the natural talents of convicted killers to produce the fabled 'Manchurian Candidates'—otherwise known as mind controlled assassins. The operation described by Narut involved killers drawn from military prisons, though there is a good possibility that parallel programs were being conducted in civilian prisons as well. Prisons, after all, have provided fertile ground for any number of MK-ULTRA sub-projects for decades. As the *Napa Sentinel* article noted, "Mind control experiments…permeate mental institutions and prisons." That was particularly true in the 1960s and 1970s.

The NATO conference at which Dr. Narut dropped his bombshell was held in July 1975. Strangely enough, the very next month, August 1975, Henry Lee Lucas was released early from prison to begin his eight-year reign of terror. Strangely enough, during his prior ten-year prison stay, Henry spent *four-and-a-half* of those years in a mental ward. Throughout that time, he received intensive drug and electroshock treatments. He later described that period of incarceration as a "nightmare that would not end." During that time, he complained constantly about hearing voices in his head, taunting him day and night. This was ostensibly the reason for his confinement in the mental ward, though it could just as well have been the result of his confinement and treatment. Henry later spent additional time in an institution in 1980, in the midst of his killing spree.

Is it possible that Henry was recruited and programmed while in prison, so that he could later be used by the so-called Hand of Death cult? Lucas himself said that he emerged from prison a changed man: before his incarceration, he killed only in the heat of the moment, but when he re-entered society it was with a cold-blooded determination and the professed desire to kill as many people as possible. And he certainly had shown a voracious appetite for violence, enough so to make him a very attractive candidate for an assassin-training program. Indeed, Henry is just the kind of man who would be considered a valuable asset by the intelligence community.

For anyone who doubts that the CIA (or any other of the numerous interwoven intelligence agencies) would recruit such a man, it is important to remember that we are talking here about the same agencies that recruited some of the most notorious war criminals of the Third Reich—men like Klaus Barbie, Joseph Mengele, Adolph Eichmann, Otto Skorzeny, and Reinhard Gehlen. Henry's depravity pales in the shadows of men such as those. Lucas probably couldn't even hold his own against some of the organized crime figures—like Lucky Luciano, Meyer Lansky and Santos Trafficante—who were likewise recruited by the U.S. intelligence community. Or against the numerous thugs that the CIA has propped up as dictators around the world—men such as Somoza, Pinochet, Duvalier and Pahlavi, to name just a few.

In the company of such men, Henry would be just one of the boys—no less valuable an asset than, say, Dan Mitrione, the CIA torture aficionado who was a boyhood friend of the infamous Jim Jones. Mitrione—known for having homeless persons kidnapped for the purpose of giving torture demonstrations to South American security forces in his sound-proof, underground chamber of horrors—was hailed as a hero and martyr when he himself was tortured and killed. Frank Sinatra and Jerry Lewis even flew into his hometown and performed a benefit show to raise money for the widow of such a great American. So in the world of spooks, Henry would be in good company, as would his partner, Ottis Toole, who would not even have the distinction of being the only cannibal recruited by the CIA. As Douglas Valentine revealed in *The Phoenix Program* (the CIA's assassination, torture and terror program waged against the people of Vietnam), the Phoenix teams consisted of U.S. Navy SEALs working with "CTs," described by one participant as "a combination of ARVN deserters, VC turncoats, and bad motherfucker criminals the South Vietnamese couldn't deal with in prison, so they turned them over to us." The spooks were only too happy to employ the services of these men, who "taught [their] SEAL comrades the secrets of the psywar campaign." So depraved were the agency recruits that some of them "would actually devour their enemies' vital organs." All in a days work for America's premier intelligence agency.

Also included in the CIA rogues' gallery of distinguished alumni, according to a number of researchers, is Lucas' self-described "close friend," the aforementioned Jim Jones. What then are we to make of Henry's professed connection to the tragic People's Temple? Several investigators have documented that the Jonestown massacre was not by any means a case of mass suicide, as was reported by the U.S. press. It was in fact a case of mass murder. The Guyanese coroner, Dr. C. Leslie Mootoo, concluded that only a handful of the 913 victims at Jonestown died by means of suicide on that fateful day. All of the rest were summarily executed, some by lethal injection, some by strangulation, and some simply shot through the head. It is apparent then that if Lucas was in fact at Jonestown at the time of the mass murder, he was quite likely doing considerably more than just serving as a delivery boy. A man of Henry's talents would be an invaluable asset in a clean-up operation of that type. And what was being cleaned up was, of course, itself an MK-ULTRA project—complete with vast stockpiles of drugs, sensory deprivation equipment, and a band of zombie-like assassins who gunned down Congressman Leo Ryan's entourage just before the massacre (thus necessitating the clean-up operation).

It is strange then that Henry would claim a connection to a man whose operation was notable primarily for being a breeding ground for mind control, assassins, and mass murder.

Several years after the publication of Henry's book, journalist Maury Terry told a story with chilling parallels to the one told by Henry and Ottis. What Terry revealed, in *The Ultimate Evil*, is that the murders attributed to the Son of Sam and the Manson Family, as well as numerous other interconnected killings, including possibly the Zodiac murders, were not what they appeared to be. Rather than the random work of serial/mass murderers, many were actually contract hits carried out for specific purposes by an interlocking network of satanic cults. In other words, they were professional hits orchestrated and disguised to look like the work of yet another 'lone nut' serial killer. That is, of course, exactly what Henry claimed his crimes to be, several years before Terry published his compellingly documented work.

Terry's book has been unfairly maligned by much of the media His contention is that David Berkowitz had nothing to do with the planning of the killings; he was just one of several gunmen. Berkowitz was essentially a patsy who took the fall to protect the rest of the cult, particularly those members who travel in the upper strata of society. That scenario has been roundly ridiculed. Many of Terry's critics have pointed to the fact that Ed Sanders' *The Family*, which in a sense laid the groundwork for Terry's later work, was recalled by its publisher and reissued *sans* two crucial chapters. That is purported to be proof that the allegations both authors make, particularly the allegations regarding the

Process Church, are without substance. What such critics unerringly fail to mention is that it was only the U.S. publisher that bowed to pressure to recall the book. The book's publisher in the UK, on the other hand, stood behind the book and its author—a decision that withstood legal challenges.

Terry's numerous critics also unerringly fail to mention that Queens' District Attorney John Santucci reopened the Son of Sam case in 1979 after concluding that Berkowitz did not act alone: "I believe David Berkowitz did not act alone—that in fact others did cooperate, aid and abet him in the commission of these crimes." Among other things, Santucci pointed out "the sketches of the individuals—the composites—were at wide divergence from Berkowitz." And indeed, they were. In fact, the sketches were "at wide divergence" from one another; as the *New York Post* noted, "the identikit drawings of the NYPD, which some say are better than photographs, give seven different looks to the killer." Santucci also noted, as did the *Post*, that "an unusual number of people" who were connected to the case, and who were identified by Berkowitz as being complicit in the crimes, "are no longer living." Berkowitz, by the way, had a number of interesting connections. Police found numerous telephone numbers scrawled on the walls of his apartment, including: the unlisted, private home numbers of prominent doctors living on Long Island; the number for a large Scientology training center in Florida; and the number for the Montauk Golf and Racquet Club, an exclusive country club on Long Island that lies adjacent to a purportedly closed military base that has been tenuously linked by researchers to ongoing mind control operations.

A more recent case, unreported in the American press, closely mirrors the scenario portrayed by Terry—complete with a patsy taking the fall for the crimes of the socially prominent and a trail of dead witnesses/accomplices. In 1994, a farmhand named Pietro Pacciani was convicted of fourteen serial killings committed in Italy's Tuscan woods. In April 2001, the UK's *The Times* reported that the case had "returned to haunt Italy—and in a new, even more sinister guise…police in Florence have reopened the case 'in the light of new evidence.' And the evidence suggests that while Pacciani may indeed have carried out the murders, or some of them, the real masterminds behind the gruesome killings were a group of 'high society satanists' who carried out—and perhaps still carry out—'weird rituals that beggar belief' behind the respectable facades of their Tuscan villas, led by a 'distinguished doctor' with a 'sick and twisted mind.'"

In August 2001, the *Guardian* added: "Police now believe that a group of between 10 and 12 wealthy, sophisticated Italians orchestrated ritualised murders over the course of three decades and got away with it, allowing their careers and reputations to blossom to this day." These unidentified suspects were described as an "occult group which directed the…murders." The *Times* article noted that

Pacciani's "conviction was overturned on appeal, but he was about to be retried—which is possible under Italian law—when he died, supposedly of a heart attack." According to the investigating magistrate on the case, Paolo Canessa, Pacciani's death was definitely not due to natural causes: "Someone was prescribing medicine that killed rather than cured Pacciani."

Pacciani's defense attorney, Carmelo Lavorino, has noted that, at the time of Pacciani's death, "he wasn't in any danger." He has also said that evidence at the scene suggested that Pacciani had been dragged by his feet after his death. The most likely explanation is obviously that Pacciani was eliminated, as the *Guardian* put it, "lest he reveal the real monster, or monsters." According to the *Times*, a number of other suspicious deaths have surrounded the case: "Renato Malatesta, Pacciani's close friend, was found hanging in a stable with his feet still resting firmly on the ground…Malatesta's daughter Milva was found dead with her three-year-old son in a burnt-out Fiat Panda…another burnt-out car was found containing the body of Milva Malatesta's lover, Francesco Vinci, another Pacciani acquaintance…A year later came the murder of Anna Milva Mettei, a local prostitute who had had an affair with Vinci's son, whose body was also burnt."

Investigators have now come to the belated realization that a large network of people were involved in the killings, some "studying the most likely spots in which to strike," while others served "as lookouts. They all took orders from one person who…then took part himself in the actual killings and mutilations." Investigators also now believe "the female body parts [the left breasts and the genitals] were used in black masses at night in remote Tuscan farmhouses." Among those now being sought by authorities is a "'mystery woman,' perhaps a member of the doctor's circle, who beat up Pacciani's elderly wife in January 1996, knocked her out with sleeping pills and searched the house from top to bottom." Also sought is an artist who Pacciani worked for as a gardener, and whose home was found to contain incriminating evidence. He disappeared just days before the trial began and he is believed to be hiding out in, of all places, Belgium.

By September, yet more of the cover-up was unraveling. The *Observer* dropped a bombshell: "The "Monster of Florence may have been a Satanic sect bankrolled by the secret service." Suspects by then included "a doctor, ambassador and an artist." Pacciani's death was "being treated as a murder," and questions were being raised about his unexplained wealth—which included two houses and more than $75,000 in cash. Michele Giuttari, the investigating magistrate on the case, who has received death threats, has said that the Monster of Florence was not Pacciani, but a "cultured man of great professional success, esteemed and powerful, but with psychopathic hidden impulses. It makes you wonder how many Jekylls and Hydes there are in civilised cities like Florence." Indeed, it does.

Consider the "civilised" city of Auxerre, France. In late March 2002, the *Guardian* ran a brief report by correspondent Jon Henley that began as follows:

> The French justice ministry took disciplinary action yesterday against three prosecutors involved in the case of an alleged serial killer who escaped prosecution for more than 20 years.
>
> The justice minister, Marylise Lebranchu, sacked one prosecutor, Daniel Stilinovic, and transferred another, Jacques Cazals, from his post in the Paris public prosecutor's office, for their negligence in the case of Emile Louis…
>
> A third, retired, prosecutor, Rene Meyer, was stripped of his honorary title. All three magistrates worked in the northern Burgundy city of Auxerre in the 1980s and 1990s and were found guilty by a disciplinary panel of a range of serious errors, including "lack of professional honour."

Fifteen months before that report, Emile Louis had confessed to murdering seven mentally handicapped women who had disappeared without a trace between 1977 and 1979. He had subsequently withdrawn his confession and asserted that the girls had been "abused, abducted and finally killed by a ring of high-ranking local men." At the time of the women's disappearances, investigations had been hastily dropped and the missing women listed as runaways. It was not until more than two decades later, following Louis' confession, that a serious inquiry was made into the fate of the missing girls. That inquiry led to what the *Guardian* referred to as "further, even more disturbing discoveries":

> The chief prosecutor in Auxerre, Suzanne le Queau, said late last year that almost all the inquiries into the cases of about 30 young women who vanished in Burgundy over the past 30 years had been either mysteriously shelved or deliberately mishandled.
>
> Moreover, the files relating to most of the criminal inquiries shelved in Auxerre between 1958 and 1982—including 17 missing young women—had been either stolen or destroyed, and a dozen post-1982 inquiries involving missing young women for which the files still remained had all been inexplicably dropped.
>
> Lawyers for the victims' families are talking of a sex ring which abducted, raped and murdered up to 30 girls in the 70s and 80s and was powerful enough to stifle any subsequent investigation. A full

> inquiry into what may prove the biggest cover-up in French legal history is under way.

In July 2002, the Monster of Florence case was in the news once again. A series of profaned corpses were turning up, and there were indications that these crimes, committed against the corpses of the elderly, were linked to the case. The first such corpse had been discovered the previous month, on the summer solstice. A report in the *Sunday Herald* indicated that the satanic rites performed in conjunction with the Monster of Florence killings had been conducted at a senior citizen's home where Pacciani had once worked as a gardener. Resident's at the home at that time included the father of Florence's deputy attorney. Some of the profaned corpses surfacing in the summer of 2002 were also connected to the home.

Also revealed in the *Herald* report was that, in 2001, police had raided the home of Aurelio Mattei, a psychiatrist for the French secret services. In 1992, Mattei authored a book that alluded to evidence in the Monster case that was not uncovered by investigators until a decade later. The home of Francisco Bruno, a criminologist and prominent television talking-head, was also raided. Bruno's name was on one of the drug prescriptions that killed Pacciani. Any additional information on the case may be difficult to obtain, since the *Herald* report also noted that police had issued a news blackout on the ongoing investigation. It seems quite likely, however, based on the evidence that has surfaced, that Pacciani was in fact a fall-guy for a cult of powerful individuals.

In May 2003, the UK's *Guardian* reported that convicted French serial killer Patrice Alegre was "not the lone psychopath he was made out to be at his trial last year," according to the sworn statements of former prostitutes. "He is alleged to have acted for most of the 1990s as the leader of a sado-masochistic sex ring, supplying women and drugs for debauched, and at times violent, evenings frequented by senior policemen, judges, businessmen, sports personalities and politicians." The claims surfaced "during a police investigation into allegations that Patrice Alegre, a serial killer who is serving a life sentence for killing five women, was for years offered illegal protection by corrupt police and magistrates in the south-western city of Toulouse."

According to a *BBC* report, Alegre, a policeman's son and an employee of the police department's cafeteria, "is also under investigation in connection with a criminal network in Toulouse said to have involved minors and cocaine." Other allegations, as recounted by the *Observer*, involved "white slavery, sado-masochism, rapes, sex with minors, drug dealing and appalling brutality—all in the heart of the government of one of France's most historic and most civilised cities." It is alleged that these crimes were committed at "Toulouse's Palais de

Justice and…at a chateau owned by Toulouse council." Toulouse's prosecutor-general, Jean Volff, was fired for "covering up links between senior officials and the exploitation of vulnerable girls." Three judges were scheduled for questioning about "acts of torture and barbaric acts, pimping and rapes of under-age girls."

Alegre claimed that at least some of the murders he committed were ordered by some of Toulouse's most prominent citizens. The killings, he said, served to silence witnesses and eliminate blackmail threats arising from what the *Guardian* described as "sadomasochistic orgies involving politicians, judges and police." Two former prostitutes who had been recruited by Alegre for some of those parties corroborated his allegations. One judge admitted that there was "some truth" to the story told by the two women of "an official cover-up of Alegre's crimes." Another judge "has admitted to drinking with Alegre," who is known to have run Toulouse's prostitution business in the early 1990s.

As the investigation progressed, Dominique Baudis, a former television host, found himself at the center of the scandal. He was perhaps the most prominent politician in Toulouse, having served as mayor from 1983 to 2001, preceded by his father from 1971 to 1983. Baudis was named as one of the four powerful figures that reportedly ordered the murders. The other three were not named, but one was said to be a high-ranking police officer, and another a senior magistrate. Baudis reportedly owned a lake house, equipped with hidden cameras, where sadomasochistic orgies were held. The French periodical *Le Monde* sought to assure readers that the accusations arising from the orgies were "not about simulated acts of torture and erotic games among consenting adults. This was real torture, accompanied by other degrading acts, committed against prostitutes, some of whom were under age."

By early June 2003, the *Sunday Herald* was fretting over the potential fallout from the investigation: "Such is the damage to the police, the judicial system and the municipal administration that some have suggested the underpinnings of the state and its democratic institutions are under threat…Magistrates, politicians, journalists, businessmen, policemen and sportsmen are lining up to be questioned as part of the inquiry." Police were under fire, scrambling to explain why many of Alegre's murder victims had been officially listed as suicides. The investigation was being expanded to include twenty additional cases. And a French magazine, as the *Guardian* reported, had "revealed allegations that the former mayor, Dominique Baudis, had a sexual relationship with the murderer, Patrice Alegre."

Also in June 2003, Michel Barrau was appointed as the prosecutor-general for the case. His appointment immediately raised concerns among lawyers, according to the *Observer*, owing to the fact that Barrau had previously been "credited with stopping an investigation into corruption among senior right-wing politicians in

Paris before last year's general election." Barrau was, in other words, no stranger to political cover-ups. Before the month was out, the evidence in the case, according to a *Reuters'* headline, had "evaporated." Alegre reneged on his confession after one of the prostitute witnesses purportedly admitted lying about seeing senior officials at S&M orgies. She was promptly jailed, recalling the jailing of witnesses in the Franklin case: "one of two prostitutes who accused Alegre of procuring young women for politicians to chain to walls and abuse in sadomasochistic orgies has been placed behind bars as judges investigate the authenticity of her story." With the cover-up firmly in place, the European media moved on to other things.

Henry Lee Lucas' story then, as bizarre as it may initially appear to be, is certainly not without precedents or parallels. Other events that have transpired since Henry first began telling his tales of The Hand of Death lend further credence to various aspects of his story. For example, the 'Finders' case, discussed in Chapter 6, illustrated that there are in fact coordinated efforts by networks of individuals to transport abducted children to clandestine locations in Mexico. Of course, Henry could have just been making lucky guesses when he talked about the networks of satanic cults running murder-for-hire operations and child abduction rings. And there could be nothing to the fact that Toole, who was convicted in the state of Florida, shared with Henry the fate of having his death sentence commuted. Florida is, of course, a state that is also overly zealous in its application of the death penalty, although not zealous enough to execute the likes of Ottis Toole.

In any event, it's interesting to note that both of these men had their death sentences set aside in a state that was, until January 2001, run by a member of the Bush family. It is interesting also to take note of the case of the man known as the "Railroad Killer," Rafael Resendez-Ramirez. On July 13, 1999, Ramirez was reported to have walked across a bridge from Juarez, Mexico into El Paso, Texas and turned himself in. At the time, he was wanted for a string of nine alleged serial killings. Mirroring the circumstances surrounding Henry's final arrest, Ramirez had been taken into custody several weeks prior by the U.S. Border Patrol, only to be promptly released—despite his presence on FBI most-wanted lists, and despite the issuing of alerts to the immigration service, and despite the fact that a nationwide manhunt was underway.

Between this detainment and his surrender, Ramirez claimed four more victims. Apparently, he still had a little work left to complete. Having done so, Ramirez then made the incomprehensible decision to surrender to Texas authorities. Crossing the border into Texas, Ramirez left a country with no death penalty and entered the execution capital of the Western world. The *Los Angeles Times*, in reporting on his surrender, noted he was "adamant he wanted to surrender to a Texas Ranger," and "he had not requested an attorney and was cooperating with

detectives." In the same article, it is noted that authorities say Ramirez is "strikingly intelligent."

Strikingly intelligent? Not based on the actions he took on July 13, 1999. But then again, perhaps Ramirez knows something about the Texas criminal justice system that the rest of us do not. Interestingly enough, Lucas was reportedly fascinated by the Ramirez case. While the manhunt was underway, he told the *Houston Post*: "I follow his case on the TV…I'd like to meet him." They presumably would have much to talk about.

Ramirez, by the way, was born in Matamoros, Mexico and, according to his mother, was raised there outside of the home by non-family members.

> ***"At some time I have start(ed) to hear funny voices, like a person calling me, but no one call me."***
>
> **—Rafael Resendez-Ramirez, in a letter to a reporter in Houston following his surrender to authorities**

> ***"Can I tell you who really I am, with all the secrecy that's in the family? I only have one purpose in life, and that's to express some of my views and some of the views that I have been instructed—anything that can put down Christianity, anything that can put down democracy, anything that can put down freedom."***
>
> **—Rafael Resendez-Ramirez, delivering his closing argument to a jury in St. Louis, March 1989**

Chapter 9

Rancho Diablo

"No one wants to believe the cult story. The TV people cut it out. The writers don't write about it."

—Henry Lee Lucas

One of the more compelling aspects of Henry's story was his contention that he had ties to cult-run ranches just south of the U.S. border. In 1989, just such a ranch was excavated in Matamoros, Mexico—just south of Brownsville, Texas—yielding the remains of fifteen ritual sacrifice victims. The Matamoros case so closely paralleled the stories told years earlier by Lucas that some law enforcement personnel in Texas chose to take a closer look at Henry's professed cult connections. In fact, Jim Boutwell—the sheriff of Williamson County, Texas—later told a reporter that investigators had *verified* that Lucas was indeed involved in cult activities.

Following the discovery in Matamoros, Clemmie Schroeder—identified as Henry's spiritual adviser—sent to the state attorney general a map Lucas had drawn for her in 1985 that identified locations where murder, kidnapping and drug-running operations were conducted. She told a reporter for the *Brownsville Herald*: "Henry told me there were a lot of different cults in Mexico who were involved in satanic worship and everything. I found the map and realized he had marked this cult and drug ring near Brownsville." The attorney general's office chose not to take any action. In an interview conducted following the exposure of the Matamoros cult, Ottis Toole claimed that it was not the specific ranch with which he and Henry were associated, but he also emphasized that there were many such interconnected operations along the Texas/Mexico border.

Though downplayed in most press reports, the Matamoros cult was largely an American entity. Its leader was Adolfo Constanzo, a Cuban-American born in Miami, Florida and raised in Miami and San Juan, Puerto Rico. Its 'high priestess' was Sara Aldrete, an honor student at Southmost Texas College in

Brownsville. One of the cult's top lieutenants, Serafin Hernandez Garcia, also lived in Brownsville and attended Southmost—as a law-enforcement major. Serafin's grandfather was the owner of Rancho Santa Elena, where the cult performed its ritual sacrifices and buried many of its victims. Another cult member, drug baron Elio Hernandez Rivera, also hailed from Brownsville. Yet another lived in Weslaco, Texas.

Constanzo has been described by chronicler Clifford Linedecker as a "thoroughly ruthless and malevolent genius with a messianic ability to command the loyalty and blind obedience of followers who joined him, zombie-like, in a loathsome blood feast of dope dealing, terror, torture, and human sacrifice"—a description that sounds as though it were written with Charles Manson in mind. Born November 1, 1962 to a fifteen-year-old Cuban immigrant (likely an underage prostitute), Constanzo was blessed by a Palo Mayombe high priest at the age of six months and declared "the chosen one." Until the age of ten, he was trained by satanists in San Juan and Haiti, before returning to Miami in 1972. Back in Florida, Constanzo was mentored by another satanic high priest who taught him, among other things, the art of grave robbing. His mother, meanwhile, busied herself with being arrested some thirty times. But as Michael Newton has written, the "charges never seemed to stick, and she always escaped with probation." Dade County neighbors considered Constanzo's mother to be a "witch" or a "sorceress." Authorities once found her living in a vacant, dilapidated apartment that was heavily smeared with blood, feces and urine. She was charged with trespassing and child neglect.

By mid-1984, Adolfo had moved to Mexico City, where he served as something of a 'psychic to the stars,' earning extravagant fees and living quite lavishly. His fastidiously neat and orderly home in a high-dollar suburb of Mexico's capital city was, interestingly enough, located directly across from an elementary school. Described as having a magnetic personality, Constanzo attracted an array of famous and colorful people—including entertainment stars, fashion models, transsexual nightclub performers, politicians, businessmen, crime lords, police officials and civil servants. One of his followers was Irma Serrano—a singer/actress and the high-profile mistress of a former president of Mexico. Another admirer was Florentino Ventura, the head of the Mexican branch of Interpol. Ventura was such a devoted disciple that he considered himself to be Constanzo's 'godson.' He allegedly killed himself in Mexico City on September 17, 1988, after killing his wife and another woman. Strangely though, all three were killed with the same burst of gunfire.

The Matamoros cult was first exposed in early April 1989. Police searching the ranch on April 1 discovered drugs and occult paraphernalia. Returning on April 9, authorities arrested four members of the cult, all of who were members of the

Hernandez drug family. Two days later, the first bodies were exhumed from Rancho Santa Elena. Some of the victims had been beheaded, while others had been grotesquely disfigured by machete blows to the head. Brains, hearts, lungs and other internal organs had been cut or torn from many of the bodies, and some of these were found stewing in cauldrons in a shed at the ranch. Spines had been ripped from the decomposing corpses to fashion ceremonial necklaces. One victim was reportedly boiled alive, another skinned alive; all were mutilated to varying degrees.

These victims included the owner and secretary of a company that served as a front for a cocaine-processing lab, an informant for the Federales and his mistress, two federal narcotics officers, three former police officers, and the American nephew of a U.S. Customs agent. There were also a number of law enforcement personnel within the cult, including Salvador Vidal Garcia, a Mexico City Federal Judicial Police agent who was in charge of narcotics investigations. Juan Benitez, the Commandante of the Federal Judicial Police, claimed that there "were another six agents involved, but we have no proof at this time to bring charges." In addition to the victims found at the ranch, the cult was also said to be responsible for the deaths of at least seven members of a drug trafficking family who were killed in a mass slaughter because they had evidence of police complicity in the drug trade that they had threatened to expose. That massacre occurred on, of all days, *Walpurgisnacht* of 1987. The victims' bodies showed clear signs of sadistic torture. Fingers, toes and ears had been removed and genitals had been excised. Two brains were missing and a portion of a spine had been ripped from one of the bodies.

On April 17, Serafin Hernandez Rivera—said to be the patriarch of the cult—was arrested in Houston, Texas. The next day, just two days shy of Hitler's birthday, a U.S. grand jury issued indictments for the still-at-large Constanzo and ten of his followers on various drug trafficking charges. Three days later, on April 21, Mexican authorities formally charged the four captured cultists with multiple counts of murder, kidnapping and drug trafficking. Just two days after that, a large contingent of heavily armed Mexican Federales burned down the death shed at Rancho Santa Elena, destroying a wealth of valuable evidence. Constanzo and most of his followers remained in hiding and the subjects of a massive manhunt. On May 6, police searching for a missing child are said to have inadvertently stumbled upon the apartment hideaway of Constanzo and four of his followers in Mexico City. Shots were allegedly fired from the apartment, which resulted in nearly 200 police officers virtually instantaneously surrounding the building.

A ferocious gun battle ensued, with thousands of rounds fired in a forty-five-minute exchange. Amazingly though, none of the cultists were shot and only one officer was wounded—and that was in the initial gunfire that came from the

apartment. Constanzo and his male lover were reportedly executed in a closet on the orders of the high priest himself. The three survivors were captured alive and charged with a multitude of crimes. Reports immediately surfaced claiming that Constanzo had faked his death, by substituting the body of another cultist. The two bodies in the closet had been riddled with automatic weapon fire, making identification difficult. Mexico City newspapers carried reports of witnesses claiming that two men had been seen fleeing the scene of the shoot-out. The body identified as Constanzo's was claimed by U.S. consular officials—allegedly acting on behalf of Constanzo's mother—and flown to Miami to be promptly cremated.

As the investigation proceeded, reports on the case grew more disturbing. Police reported finding blood-spattered altars in the homes of many of the suspected cultists, and Mexico City newspapers openly speculated that human infants had been ritually sacrificed by the group. Some reporters opined that babies might even have been bred specifically for that purpose. Michael Newton has reported that from 1897–1989, there were seventy-four unsolved ritual homicides in Mexico City; fourteen of those victims were infants. Other reports noted that in custody, high priestess Sara Aldrete displayed what Linedecker described as "signs of a split personality. As the days wore on, three separate personas became evident." A U.S. Customs agent told the *Houston Chronicle* that she clearly had a "dual personality." Like most of the other cultists, Aldrete, who had married on Halloween day, 1983, had links to the Hernandez drug family. A particularly compelling report in the *Brownsville Herald* revealed that the drug trafficking Matamoros cult was part of a massive, hemisphere-wide, drug trafficking network: "federal agents have established a pattern of drug trafficking from the Hernandez family in Matamoros to top Chicago mob bosses." Interestingly enough, Constanzo was reportedly sighted in Chicago during the time that he was the focus of the manhunt, but those reports were scoffed at by authorities.

In the wake of the Matamoros case, two members of the Texas state legislature, Senator J.E. Brown and Representative Sam Johnson, introduced a bill aimed at combating cult-related ritual crime, which they asserted was a burgeoning problem in Texas and elsewhere in the country. After a decade had passed, the problem had not abated, as became evident when yet another excavation was begun, at a ranch near Juarez, Mexico. That property was, strangely enough, located precisely where Henry Lee Lucas had claimed that the 'Hand of Death' cult maintained a ranch. The first reports on the Juarez ranch surfaced on December 1, 1999, less than five months after Resendez-Ramirez had surrendered to U.S. authorities at a location on the U.S. border very near the ranch; a *Los Angeles Times* report noted that the "clandestine burial grounds [were] practically within sight of the U.S. border."

Early reports indicated that authorities anticipated exhuming between 100 and 300 bodies from mass graves on the ranch, including twenty-two missing U.S. citizens and a number of former FBI and DEA informants. The investigation was quickly expanded to include at least three more possible burial grounds in the area. U.S. authorities, perhaps having learned a lesson from the well-publicized Matamoros case, immediately moved in to take charge of the investigation. The brazen violation of Mexico's sovereignty was roundly condemned by the Mexican press. A group of irate Mexican Senators grilled the country's foreign minister on the FBI's aggressive role in the investigation and loudly denounced the fact that exhumed bodies were being transferred to the U.S. for forensic examination. By mid-December, with the U.S. firmly in control of the case and with all evidence being clandestinely transferred onto U.S. soil, Mexico's attorney general was claiming that the early reports had been wildly off the mark. The new reports claimed that only nine bodies had been found at the three separate burial sites and no more were expected to be uncovered. Press coverage of the case almost immediately ceased, after the media had assured everyone that 'there's nothing to see here, folks.'

The final report carried by the *Los Angeles Times* maintained that some victims had "reportedly disappeared after being detained by men in Mexican police uniforms, raising questions about the extent of police corruption in Mexican law enforcement." Peter Smith, the director of Latin American studies at UC San Diego, echoed that sentiment: "The clandestinity raises the issue of potential complicity on the part of local or state authorities." Not surprisingly, reports made no mention of the extent of police corruption in *American* law enforcement.

Officials were quick to claim that there was no connection between the bodies exhumed at the ranch and the unsolved murders of hundreds of young women in the Juarez area. There is no consensus on the number of women that have been brutally raped, tortured and murdered since the killings began in 1993, but estimates run as high as 500, with hundreds more reportedly missing and possibly dead.

As the website *Americas.org* recalled, "Free trade supporters once claimed the North American Free Trade Agreement (NAFTA) would turn Ciudad Juarez into the city of the future." And perhaps that is exactly what the city has become—a city where NAFTA's 'free trade' rules ensure that "a company's right to profit trumps the rights of government and the protection of citizens."

In the 1960s, the Mexican government offered Western corporations a sweetheart deal: build factories on the Mexican side of the border to manufacture and/or assemble goods, operate with wanton disregard for environmental and labor laws, and, to top it off, pay no local taxes. So-called maquiladoras, which

had previously been known as sweatshops, soon began to dot the U.S./Mexico border. Before long, they numbered in the hundreds. The highest concentration of those maquiladoras is in Juarez, which currently is home to about 500 factories employing 200,000 workers. About 80% of the factories in Juarez are American owned.

As the labor-intensive maquiladoras proliferated, the populations of border cities like Juarez quickly swelled. But as the population grew, there was no corresponding investment in the cities. As the *Observer* noted, there has been "no attempt to create infrastructure—no roads or housing. Taxation is voluntary for companies, and most pay none." According to official estimates, the population of Ciudad Juarez has tripled, to 1,200,000; unofficial estimates run as high as 2,000,000. Many of the new arrivals are young women, since the workforce employed by the maquiladoras is 70% female. Most of these young women end up living in the shantytown neighborhoods that have sprung up in cities like Juarez. These neighborhoods have no real roads, no street names, no addresses, no utilities, and no public services. Violence is endemic. Drug lords rule the streets. According to *La Prensa*, life in Juarez is "punctuated by narco-related executions and kidnappings in broad daylight committed by death squads working for the lords of the lucrative trade." The *Guardian* described Juarez as "a city associated with grinding poverty and home to one of Mexico's foremost drug trafficking organizations."

It is against this backdrop that the murders have been committed. Most of the victims have been maquiladora workers. Some of them have disappeared while traveling alone late at night, after having their work shifts changed at the last minute, of after being locked out for arriving at work late. Recent reports reveal that eerily similar murders are now occurring in other maquiladora towns along the U.S./Mexico border, including Chihuahua City, Nueva Laredo and Matamoros. Many of the Juarez victims have had 'modeling' photographs taken of them while they were at work in the factories. Some circumstantial evidence suggests a disturbing scenario: the photographs, taken by 'recruiters' working within the maquiladoras, are arranged in albums that are then used as catalogues from which victims are selected.

The first Juarez victim's body, by most accounts, was found on January 23, 1993. The first suspect, Abdel Latif Sharif Sharif, was arrested two years later, in 1995. Sharif had an interesting history—one with close parallels to many other alleged serial killers, as will be seen in later chapters.

Born in Egypt in 1947, Sharif was reportedly sexually abused as a child, including being frequently sodomized by his father and other male relatives. In his early twenties, Sharif immigrated to the United States, landing first in New York City and then in New Hope, Pennsylvania. By 1981, he was living in Palm

Beach, Florida, where he worked as a chemist and engineer. In May of that year, Sharif beat and repeatedly raped an unidentified 23-year-old woman. For those offenses, he received only probation. In August of the same year, he was charged with another rape. He was again convicted, but he served just 45 days. The next year, he was married briefly in Gainesville, Florida, until he beat his bride unconscious. She divorced him shortly after that. In March 1983, Sharif beat and repeatedly raped yet another victim. In January 1984, while awaiting sentencing, he managed to escape, but he was soon recaptured and, on January 31, sentenced to serve twelve years. Not quite six years later, in October 1989, Sharif was paroled. At that time, he was to be deported, but instead he was allowed, for unexplained reasons, to remain in the country.

Sharif quickly found work in Midland, Texas at Benchmark Research and Technology. While employed and living in Texas, the thrice-convicted rapist was photographed shaking hands with Senator Phil Gramm, in addition to being singled out for praise by the U.S. Department of Energy. In 1991, while still on parole, Sharif was arrested for drunk driving. He suffered no apparent repercussions for that offense. By 1993, he was once again facing charges of holding a woman captive and raping her repeatedly. In May of the following year, the state of Texas inexplicably agreed to drop all charges against the repeat offender if Sharif voluntarily left the country. He promptly moved to an exclusive residential neighborhood in Juarez and went to work at Benchmark's maquiladora. In October 1995, Sharif was arrested by Mexican authorities and charged with rape. He was convicted and given a thirty-year sentence, but the bodies of young women continued to pile up in and around Juarez.

Next to be arrested were a gang of nightclub workers known as The Rebels, who were allegedly being paid by Sharif to continue the killings. The gang was led by Armendariz Diaz, also known as *El Diablo*. All members of the gang later claimed that they had been tortured by police to coerce their confessions. In early 1999, five members of another gang—The Toltecs, led by Jesus Guardado Marquez, also known as *El Dracula*—were arrested and accused of collaborating with Sharif. The gang confessed to fifteen of the murders, but later recanted, claiming that torture by the police had produced the confessions. The arrests of the two gangs failed to slow the pace of the killings and disappearances.

After the arrest of The Toltecs, the FBI sent some of its famed 'profilers' to Juarez. Among them was Robert Ressler, who advanced the dubious theory that the murders were the work of Resendez-Ramirez. The arrest of Ramirez in July 1999, however, had not put a stop to the killings. Before the year was out, more young women would go missing, more bodies would surface, and the mass graves at the ranch would be discovered.

On November 6 and 7, 2001, eight bodies were discovered in a vacant lot just 300 yards from the headquarters of the Association of Maquiladoras. Confessions were quickly obtained from two bus drivers, Victor Javier Garcia and Gustavo Gonzalez Meza, also known as *El Cerillo* and *La Foca*. Following the pattern set with previous suspects, police reportedly obtained the confessions through the use of torture. The two men had visible burn marks on their bodies, marks that Oscar Maynez Grijalva, the chief forensic investigator on the case, determined had been made with stun guns used by the police.

Maynez thoroughly searched a van that the bus drivers had purportedly used to abduct women, and he found no evidence to support the allegations. According to Maynez, he was then asked "to help plant evidence against two bus drivers who were charged with the murders. A couple of police officers brought us items for us to put in the van they said was used to abduct the women." Maynez refused to take part in the framing of the suspects, and, in January 2002, he resigned in protest over the handling of the case. He has said that he now believes that some police are involved in the murders. The outspoken Maynez has reported receiving death threats intended to silence him.

Also in January 2002, Jorge Campos Murillo, a federal deputy attorney in Mexico City, told reporters that "juniors"—the sons of wealthy, powerful Mexican families—were connected to the killings. Campos was promptly transferred and he now refuses to discuss the Juarez case, which next landed in the lap of Irma Rodriguez Galarza. Rodriguez' daughter and husband were gunned down on the family's porch with AK-47 assault rifles.

Campos is not alone in linking the Juarez murders to the sons of the rich and powerful. The UK's *Observer* has reported that those involved in the killings come from prominent families that "include landowners, major drug dealers, construction barons, energy suppliers—and officials in both government and the police." A spokeswoman for a victim's group noted that the killers "take no trouble to cover up evidence, like most murders. With these, the evidence is brazen, right there, every time." The killers, in other words, have no fear of the police. The *El Paso Times* alleged that the guilty parties are "prominent men who cross the border regularly, are involved in major businesses, are associates of drug cartels and have ties to politicians in President Vicente Fox's administration." According to some Mexican officials, six people from the Juarez-El Paso area are having the women abducted for orgies, after which (or perhaps during which) they are killed.

On February 5, 2002, Mario Escobedo, Jr., the attorney representing Gonzalez (one of the two truck drivers), was killed by police. Escobedo was reportedly pursued at night by police in unmarked vehicles, until the attorney lost control of his car and crashed. He was then cut down in a hail of police

gunfire. Escobedo's partner, Dante Almarez, reported that he was advised to "drop the case, [or] we'll kill you the same way we did Escobedo."

In August 2002, *PBS* aired the documentary film "Senorita Extraviada," produced by Lourdes Portillo. The film revealed that some of the victims were missing for long periods before their deaths. Some of the their bodies display evidence of ritual sacrifice. In many cases, the only remains that are ever found are clothes and bones, and the bones are often mismatched. Frequently these bones are found in far less time that it would take a corpse to be reduced to a skeleton. Sometimes these skeletal remains show up in areas that have just recently been searched. Juarez police have refused to investigate a number of viable leads, and they have deliberately destroyed evidence, including more than 1,000 pounds of victims' clothing that was burned. One female witness, who was arrested and then raped in prison, told the filmmakers that her captors had showed her photos of a woman being gang-raped and beaten, and then doused in gasoline and burned alive.

Some of the victims have indeed been burned alive. Others have been strangled, stabbed, bludgeoned and/or shot. According to *Americas.org*, "When they're not skeletal remains, most of the women's bodies are found in the nearby desert with evidence of torture and gang rape. Forensics evidence shows many are kept alive during this for days or longer. The bodies are usually mutilated, laid out in cross formation, and branded with signature carvings on various parts of their bodies." Some reports hold that many of the recovered bodies exhibit similar slashing wounds to the breasts. A March 2002 report in the *Guardian* claimed "there are patterns of mutilation that have not been publicly released that could indicate narco-satanic rituals."

In October 2002, the bodies of two more victims surfaced. Three months later, in January 2003, three more were discovered. Not long after that, on February 8, almost a year to the day after his attorney had been gunned down, Gustavo Gonzalez Meza died in custody following a relatively routine hernia operation. Both Gonzalez and his wife had reported receiving death threats. Just over a week after his death, four more bodies were discovered. Police refused to acknowledge one of the bodies, despite the fact that reporters and other witnesses viewed it.

In May 2003, the Juarez murders, which had been almost entirely ignored by the Western media for a full decade, were suddenly in the news. A flurry of reports pitched the theory that the killings were the work of an organ trafficking ring, possibly with cult connections. New Zealand's *One News* reported that as many as 90 women may have been killed by the ring. Some of their organs, it was claimed, were brought to the States by an unidentified American. The *Atlanta Journal-Constitution* told of federal investigators "looking into claims that some

of the dozens of women slain in the border city of Ciudad Juarez over the last decade may have been killed for their internal organs." A *Reuters* report listed the following as possible motives for the murders: "Satanic rituals, organ trafficking and snuff movies where women are kidnapped, sexually assaulted and then murdered on camera." The *Guardian* spoke of "evidence indicating the women may have been victims of an international organ trafficking ring…Police also were investigating the possibility that certain mutilations—breasts were cut off on a few of the victims, and some had scars cut in designs—might indicate the involvement of a religious cult."

Skepticism of those theories, however, was expressed by Oscar Maynez, the former head of the Ciudad Juarez forensics office and one of the very few voices of conscience in this story. According to the *Journal-Constitution* report, Maynez "said he never saw any evidence of missing organs in the bodies he examined when he worked on the case." Whether accurate or not, the official proclamations, and the accompanying news reports, served to federalize the investigation of the Juarez murders for the first time. Before that, federal officials had steadfastly maintained that the killings were a state matter.

It is unclear whether the federalization of the investigation represents a sincere effort to stop the killings, bring the responsible parties to justice and root out local corruption, or whether it is just a continuation of the cover-up. The latter seems far more likely. As of this writing, in April 2004, women continue to disappear and incongruous piles of bones continue to surface, while residents continue to discover evidence at crime scenes after police have declared that thorough searches have been conducted. Though there have been numerous arrests over the years, no one has been formally charged with any of the hundreds of unsolved homicides.

Meanwhile, in February 2004, Mexican federal police arrested two drug cartel members who they said might have been involved in the mass murder of twelve people in a home in Juarez. Also detained were thirteen state police officers suspected of complicity. In the "city of the future," life is cheap and 'justice' is for sale to the highest bidder.

* * * * *

On the U.S. side of the border, in 1985, a ranch of a slightly different variety was uncovered in Kerrville, Texas, not far from Johnson City, Texas, the birthplace and childhood home of President Lyndon Baines Johnson. The ranch, run by a family of German immigrants, was found to be holding seventy-five human slaves, many of them acquired when they were young teenagers. The property was

patrolled by armed guards who kept the slaves chained together and routinely tortured them by applying electric cattle prods to their tongues and genitals. Whenever one of the slaves was killed, the body was burned to dispose of the evidence. The Texas Rangers (who maintain a museum in Johnson City) eventually raided the property, after routinely ignoring steady reports of strange happenings at the ranch. It took the state of Texas almost two full years to bring the case to trial. When it was all over with, the rancher and one of his sons received extraordinarily light sentences for their crimes: fifteen years for one, and fourteen for the other. Another indicted son was acquitted and walked away a free man. A media disinformation campaign portrayed the entire sordid affair as a trumped-up case, but investigative journalist Gordon Thomas noted that the trial transcript indicated that it was nothing of the sort.

Thomas has also written of another ranch, in Southern California, that evidence collected from a variety of sources indicates caters to powerful pedophiles. The ranch is located immediately adjacent to one of the numerous U.S. military bases that pepper the southern half of the state. The property has a rather ominous history, having previously served as a concentration camp for Japanese-Americans during World War II, and later as a 'deprogramming' center for returning Korean War veterans who it was said had been brainwashed. According to witness statements, children from around the country have been abducted and transported to the covert location, never to be heard from again. Once there, they are held as slaves to feed the depraved desires of powerful, well-connected pedophiles who torture, abuse, and at times kill their young victims. One man who may have worked at the ranch, according to reports cited by Thomas, was serial killer Leonard Lake.

Chapter 10

The Myth of the Serial Killer

"It's more of a shadow than anything else. You know it's a human being, but yet you can't accept it. The killin' itself, it's like say, you're walkin' down the road. Half of me will go this way and the other half goes that way. The right-hand side didn't know what the left-hand side was going to do."

—Henry Lee Lucas, describing how he perceived his victims before killing them

Most Americans are probably familiar with what is considered the classic serial killer 'profile.' This was a notion first put forth by the venerable FBI, which coined the term 'serial killer,' and pioneered the concept of 'profiling,' in an alleged attempt to understand the phenomenon of mass murder. It appears to be the case though that the concept of the 'serial killer profile' was put forth largely to misinform the public.

In the case of Henry Lee Lucas, few if any of the elements of the serial killer profile apply. For instance, serial killers are said to act alone, driven to do so only by their own private demons. So far removed from ordinary human behavior are their actions that they would not, indeed could not, share their private passions with others. In Henry's case, this is a patently false notion. It has been officially acknowledged that Lucas worked with not just one, but at times as many as three accomplices (as previously noted, Toole's pre-teen niece and nephew were frequently brought along to witness—and at times participate in—the crimes of Henry and Ottis). It is also claimed that serial killers target a particular type of victim, similar in age, gender, race, hairstyle, attractiveness, and other physical attributes. Again, in Henry's case, this simply does not fit the known facts. Henry's victims in fact had little, if anything, in common with one another. The victims' ages ranged from children to the elderly. Both genders and all races were

also well represented. As Lucas himself once stated: "They's been a mixed breed of people, as far as the killings themselves."

It is further claimed that serial killers follow a readily identifiable *modus operandi*, with the means of obtaining victims and the trajectory of the crime following a well-defined pattern. Again, that was clearly not the case with Lucas, whose victims were obtained in a variety of ways, and who inflicted death by a variety of means—including bludgeoning, stabbing, strangulation, shooting, and suffocation. Some were killed in their homes, while others were abducted and taken to remote locations. Some were sexually abused, both before and after death, while others were not. Some were cannibalized. Some were left on display—for maximum impact upon their discovery—while others were left so as not to be discovered at all. In other ways as well, Henry Lee—the consummate serial killer—did not even come close to matching the profile of what he was supposed to be. Strangely enough though, perhaps the most remarkable aspect of the Henry Lee Lucas story is that it is not actually remarkable at all. In reviewing the case histories of more than two-dozen other alleged serial killers, it becomes readily apparent that few—if any—fit the supposed profile.

The victims of Resendez-Ramirez, for instance, ranged in age from 21 to 88 years, with a mix of males and females. The cause of death varied as well, with most being bludgeoned, though one was shot in the head, another stabbed, and yet another had a pick-ax buried in her head. Though not readily apparent, almost all of the weapons used for inflicting death—by both Lucas and Ramirez—had one thing in common: they are what are termed "weapons of opportunity." In other words, they are weapons that were acquired at the crime scene immediately before the murders were committed. Notably, this precisely mirrors the means by which the CIA has historically taught its assassins to kill. A CIA training manual entitled *A Study of Assassination* advises the would-be killer: "the simplest local tools are often the most efficient means of assassination. A hammer, axe, wrench, screwdriver, fire poker, kitchen knife, lamp stand, or anything hard, heavy and handy will suffice…All such improvised weapons have the important advantage of availability and apparent innocence…the assassin may accidentally be searched before the act and should not carry an incriminating device if any sort of lethal weapon can be improvised at or near the site." This advice has been taken to heart by a good number of 'serial killers.'

The Mafia assassination service known as Murder, Inc.—the brainchild of the Lansky/Luciano syndicate, which had extensive connections to U.S. intelligence agencies—had a remarkably similar philosophy. As Jay Robert Nash notes in *Bloodletters and Bad Men*: "Like most of Murder, Inc.'s assassins, Pittsburgh Phil never carried a weapon in case the local police picked him up on suspicion. He would cast about, once he had selected his murder spot, for any tool handy that

would do the job." It should probably be noted here, while we're on the subject, that the man identified as Pittsburgh Phil, whose real name was Harry Strauss, was credited with killing at least 500 people in this manner from the late 1920s through 1940. This feat should put him at or near the top of any self-respecting serial killer list.

Henry Lee recounts in *The Hand of Death* that his training by the Hand of Death cult followed the same time-honored tradition. Of course, the FBI assures us that satanic cults and satanic crime do not exist in modern-day America. To put this assertion in its proper context, however, it is important to remember that this is the very same FBI that, during the reign of Murder, Inc., and for several decades thereafter, refused to acknowledge the existence of organized crime in America. It is also the same FBI that for years ignored and denied the resurgence of the Ku Klux Klan in the early part of the twentieth century. The FBI, in other words, has a long history of denying the existence of indigenous groups devoted to terrorizing American society.

Other than utilizing weapons of opportunity, the most common means by which professional assassins carry out their 'contracts' is with a small caliber bullet fired at point-blank range to the head—typically with either a .22 or .25 caliber handgun. Inflicting such a wound is quick, efficient, relatively quiet, reasonably clean and, most importantly, highly lethal. Contrary to conventional wisdom, a small caliber round to the head is more often fatal than a larger caliber bullet, because the smaller projectile has enough velocity to make the initial penetration into the dense skull bones, but not enough to make an exit wound. Once inside the brain cavity then, the slug will tend to ricochet around the curved inner bone surfaces, causing considerable damage to the brain in the process. A larger caliber round, on the other hand, is much more likely to penetrate clean through the skull, making much more of a mess, though doing less damage to the brain. The smaller weapon then, when fired from very close range, is a much more efficient killing device. Such weapons are also very easy to conceal and are the easiest weapons to silence. And even without a silencer, the report from a .22 automatic is relatively quiet. Especially to a generation raised on a steady diet of sensationalized and highly stylized violence in the media—where every gun sounds like a cannon—a small-caliber gun report can easily be mistaken for any of a number of everyday big-city sounds.

There is another reason that these are often the weapons of choice for contract 'hits.' Small caliber slugs, particularly those from a .22 caliber weapon—are virtually impossible to trace or to match up to any particular gun. Literally millions of .22 caliber weapons are in homes all across the country, and it is far-and-away the most popular, mass-produced ammunition on the market. And a .22 caliber bullet that has punched through the skull and careened around the skull cavity is

virtually guaranteed to be deformed to such an extent that a ballistics match will be impossible. Matching a flattened slug dug out of some victim's head to any particular gun then is something akin to finding the proverbial needle in the haystack. For this reason, and for those previously cited, a small caliber contact wound to the head—usually to the side of the head—has long been the mark of a professional assassin.

It is a most remarkable fact then that the vast majority of the victims of the 'serial killers' profiled herein were killed either by means of a weapon of opportunity, or they were shot in the head with a small caliber weapon—execution style. And far more often than not, there is no specific type of victim that is targeted, nor is there a pattern as to how the killings are carried out.

Take, for example, the other serial killing Ramirez—Los Angeles' famed "Night Stalker." Most of the Night Stalker victims were killed with contact wounds from a small caliber handgun to the left side of the head while they slept. Both .22 and .25 caliber weapons were used. The remaining victims were bludgeoned or stabbed to death with household items—including a hammer and a lamp/vase. Some of the victims were mutilated to varying degrees, including two that were hacked with machetes. Others were subjected to electrical torture. Their ages ranged from young adults to a pair of octogenarians, with both men and women well represented. And there was certainly no discrimination shown as to the race/ethnicity of the victims.

In what were dubbed the 'Sunset Strip Murders,' also in Los Angeles, the victims were also dispatched with a .25 caliber contact wound to the head—except for one victim who was shot in the chest and sliced open. Two of the victims were also beheaded. One of the dead—who had likely been an accomplice—was male, with the rest females of various ethnicities.

Santa Cruz's Herb Mullin must surely have been—if he was actually guilty of the murders attributed to him—the most creative serial killer in the annals of modern crime. The seemingly randomly assembled set of crimes credited to Mullin stands as perhaps the most ludicrous use of the term 'serial killer' on record. The first victim was a homeless man beaten to death with a baseball bat, for no apparent reason, on a lonely stretch of road. The next was a girl who was repeatedly stabbed, then sliced open, mutilated, and generally made a mess of—in what most people would think of as a typical serial killing. The next five victims were all killed in a single night at two different residences—both occupied by known drug traffickers and their families. In one house, all three victims, two of whom were children, were shot once in the head with a .22 and then stabbed a few times for good measure. At the other home, a slightly less professional job was done. The two victims at that address, who were close friends of the victims at the other crime scene, were shot multiple times with a .22 in various parts of

the body, and then stabbed. The next four victims were a group of teenage boys on a camping trip, who were each shot once in the head and multiple times in the body. Interestingly enough, the boys had their own .22 caliber rifle, within arm's reach of where they were killed. All four were allegedly killed by a lone assailant before they could reach for the gun, despite the fact that Mullin would have had to reload his six-shot .22 automatic at least once to complete the slaughter. Following the mass execution of the teenagers, Mullin next allegedly decided to test his skills as a sniper, picking off an ex-boxer as the victim strolled across his front yard.

In nearby Sacramento, California, Richard Chase got his sniper killing out of the way right off the bat. His first victim was dropped in front of his home with a .22 round fired from a parked car, just the way Mullin had allegedly done it. The rest of the Sacramento victims were killed with a .22 caliber contact wound to the left side of the head, sometimes followed by a second shot. Some were then mutilated. Ages ranged from twenty months to fifty-one years, with both males and females targeted.

Chicago's 'Ripper Crew' killed a string of women, both black and white, by a variety of means before then adding something new to the serial killer repertoire—a gang-style drive-by shooting of known drug dealers. It is always good practice, for any aspiring serial killer, to throw at least one obvious drug 'hit' into the mix. Charles Manson and Richard Ramirez understood that, as did various other serial killers, although such troublesome facts are routinely ignored in most press accounts, lest anyone catch on that 'serial killings' are not necessarily random acts of violence. Consider, for example, the case of Charles Ng and Leonard Lake. At least a few of their known victims were deeply involved in drug trafficking. Other than that, the victims had little in common. Excavated from the pair's compound were the remains of seven men, five women, and two babies—though there were likely many more undiscovered victims.

How the pair's victims were killed was impossible to determine, as was largely true of the cases of other killers who fall into the 'Collectors' category—including Jeffrey Dahmer, John Wayne Gacy, Bob Berdella, Gary Heidnik and Herb Baumeister. In all these cases, all that remained of the unfortunate victims were various bones and, in some cases, genitalia, internal organs and slabs of flesh. It is within this group that the most consistency is shown in the targeting of victims. The known victims of Gacy, Berdella, Baumeister and Dahmer were all young men—frequently gay or bisexual men. Even so, there was not necessarily a specific victim profile in all these cases; Dahmer's victims, for instance, ranged in age from fourteen to thirty-one and were of various races.

Even in those cases where the alleged killer is given a catchy moniker that supposedly reflects a distinctive 'signature' to the slayings, there is rarely a consistent

MO that is followed. The victims of the 'Boston Strangler,' for instance, ranged in age from nineteen to seventy-five, were both black and white, and varied considerably in physical attractiveness. And they were not, contrary to popular mythology, all strangled in the same manner. In some cases, it was done manually, in others with ligatures acquired at the scene. In addition, some were stabbed, mutilated and/or sexually assaulted as well. Most of them were left on display, though one was discretely covered with a blanket.

In the other strangler case—Los Angeles' 'Hillside Stranglers'—victims ranged in age from twelve to twenty-eight, and varied considerably by height, weight, race, skin tone and hair color. In addition to strangulation, various other techniques were utilized, including electrocution, lethal injection and lethal gas—all methods improvised with materials at hand and, strangely enough, all methods used by the state to perform judicial executions.

Though Edmund Kemper was dubbed the 'Coed Killer,' his victims were definitely not all coeds. Two of them were his grandparents, and another was his mother. Yet another was several years too young to be a coed. His victims were killed with a combination of point-blank bullet wounds to the head, and stabbing, strangulation, suffocation and bludgeoning with weapons of opportunity.

In the case of Ted Bundy, it is frequently claimed that all of his purported victims were remarkably similar in appearance. Many of the books chronicling Bundy's alleged exploits reinforce this notion by including a carefully selected set of photos of the slain women who did resemble one another to a limited degree. Overall though, the victims varied widely in height, weight, build, attractiveness, hair color and style, and various other physical attributes. As for the manner in which they were abducted and killed, that is largely a matter of speculation. Many were never found, and of those that were, frequently only the skull was recovered. In those cases where the cause of death could be determined, it was by means of weapons of opportunity. In the infamous attack at the Chi Omega sorority house, for instance, the crimes were committed with a club acquired immediately before entering the property. The Chi Omega bloodbath, by the way, was in marked contrast to Bundy's previous alleged crimes, which involved the abductions and killings of single victims. This crime instead seemed to borrow heavily from the rampage allegedly perpetrated by Richard Speck. Bundy's final alleged murder before his capture, the killing of a twelve-year-old child, also did not match his supposed *modus operandi*.

As for Richard Speck, he showed no consistency in the means by which his victims were killed, other than that all died from wounds inflicted with weapons improvised at the scene. Death came by way of various combinations of strangulation, stabbing, slashing of the throat, and breaking of the neck. And so it goes for virtually all serial killer cases. New York's 'Son of Sam' targeted men and

women of various ages. Arthur Shawcross, the 'Genesee River Killer,' killed two young children—one a boy—along with a string of women of various ages. Most were strangled and/or bludgeoned with weapons acquired at the scene, though one was drowned. Most were mutilated, cannibalized and sexually assaulted. The 'Gainesville Ripper'—purportedly Danny Rolling—included one male among his five victims. All were stabbed and slashed to death; some were posed and one was beheaded. Finally, lest we forget, the Manson Family's victims ranged in age from teenaged Steven Parent to middle-aged Leno LaBianca and included both men and women killed with various weapons, including a .22 caliber handgun.

Clearly then there are any number of serial killer cases in which there is no defining *modus operandi*, and in which the deceased don't fit any kind of specific 'victim profile.' In fact, it is difficult to find a case study of *any* serial killer who does leave a distinct 'signature' at each crime scene.

And what of the notion of the serial killer as a lone predator? Was Henry and Ottis' partnership an aberration? Not at all. There are any number of serial killer cases where it is officially acknowledged that there was more than one perpetrator. The Manson Family, of course, is probably the most well known case of multiple-perpetrator 'serial killing.' Less well known is the case of the 'Ripper Crew' in Chicago in the early 1980s. Described by authorities as a four-man satanic cult, the Rippers—led by charismatic Robin Gecht—allegedly killed as many as seventeen women in as many months. Then there is the case of Charles Ng. Though Ng was the only one to stand trial for the series of killings in Northern California, it is acknowledged that the crimes were committed with the assistance of Leonard Lake, who committed suicide upon his arrest. And evidence strongly suggests that there were others involved as well, most notably Lake's ex-wife.

Many other serial killers have worked in pairs, including the Hillside Strangler team of Kenneth Bianchi and Angelo Buono. Working the same Los Angeles-area turf just one year after the Stranglers were stopped was the team of Roy Norris and Lawrence 'Pliers' Bittaker. And a few years after they were caught, the team of Douglas Clark and Carol Bundy was working the very same L.A. streets committing a series of killings dubbed the 'Sunset Strip Murders.' The year after they were caught, another serial killer took over the L.A. market—the notorious 'Night Stalker.' Media coverage to the contrary, evidence in that case clearly pointed to multiple perpetrators. It also strongly suggested that some of the killings were contract hits. As implied earlier in this chapter, much the same can be said of the evidence in the Herb Mullin case.

As will be seen as we take a more in-depth look at our illustrious roster of serial killers, evidence almost always indicates multiple assailants. With very few exceptions, that evidence is routinely ignored or rather improbably explained away by law enforcement authorities and those who chronicle the exploits of high-profile

criminals. Maury Terry, as previously mentioned, has done an excellent job of arguing the case that the 'Son of Sam' killings were carried out by multiple cult members, despite the media portrait of David Berkowitz as the proverbial lone killer. Susan Kelly has likewise done a great job of exposing the 'Boston Strangler' killings as the work of several killers. Even before the release of Kelly's *The Boston Stranglers*, there had long been speculation that the killings were not the work of one man. Most of the officials involved in the investigation, in fact, never believed that a single killer was responsible. Of the eight members of the psychiatric panel convened to develop a 'profile,' seven believed that there were at least two perpetrators.

Even in those cases that seem to come closest to matching the classic serial killer profile, such as the John Wayne Gacy and Jeffrey Dahmer cases, there is a compelling case to be made that there were others involved. That evidence will be examined in later chapters. First, we will look at the cases of two high-profile, alleged serial killers/mass murderers who were said to have acted alone. The first is a very recent case, that of Yosemite killer Cary Stayner. The other dates all the way back to 1966, the year Richard Speck allegedly went berserk in a home filled with young nursing students in Chicago, becoming the first mass murderer of the television age.

Chapter 11

Lone Nuts?

"I must have done it, if everybody says I did."

—Richard Speck

The case of Cary Stayner stands out—in a very crowded field—as one of the most bizarre serial killer cases on record. Though the crimes ultimately attributed to him were not committed until the early months of 1999, the strange saga of the Stayner family began long before that, though exactly how long before is not entirely clear. As a friend of Cary's told *Esquire* magazine: "There's just something, you know, off with that whole family." Since as far back as 1972, there has been some serious weirdness going on in the Stayner house. On December 4 of that year, Cary's younger brother Steven was purportedly abducted by a male pedophile (working with an accomplice) who proceeded to hold him as a sex slave for more than seven years.

His abductor was Ken Parnell, a Texas native who is said to have been extremely self-destructive as a child. He had reportedly damaged his eyes by staring into a bright light, attempted to pull his own teeth out, set numerous fires, and attempted suicide on a number of occasions. He had also, perhaps not surprisingly, spent a fair amount of time institutionalized in both prisons and mental hospitals—including spending much of his teen years in California juvenile lock-ups.

Stayner was not his first victim. Parnell had previously been convicted in 1951 of kidnapping and sexually assaulting an eight-year-old boy. He was back on the streets by 1955, but then incarcerated again before year's end for a parole violation. He was soon released again, only to be convicted of armed robbery a few years later. For that crime, he served some seven years. Five years after his release from that prison term, Parnell met up with Steven Stayner. It was not a chance meeting. As Parnell indicated to his accomplice, Ervin Murphy, Stayner had been selected prior to the time of his kidnapping. Following the abduction, Parnell and

Stayner lived for a time in Yosemite, where Parnell worked at the Yosemite Lodge—which happened to be located just a few hundred yards from the home of Cary and Steven's grandfather, who was universally described as an exceptionally cruel man. Following their stay in Yosemite, Parnell and Stayner moved to Santa Rosa, and then to Ukiah, from where Jim Jones' People's Temple had recently departed for San Francisco, and where Michael Aquino would later be accused of child exploitation.

In February 1980, Stayner escaped—which is to say that he broke free, to some extent, from Parnell's psychological control. There was nothing that physically prevented him from escaping at any time. When he did leave, it was prompted by his desire to spare five-year-old Timmy White, whom Parnell had just abducted on Valentines' Day, the fate that awaited him. Stayner brought White along with him on his escape, and became something of a hero in the process. He returned to the Stayner home, though he was said to feel closer to the man who had sexually assaulted him for seven years than to his estranged family. The family reportedly never talked about his ordeal. As Cary's friend remarked: "It was like it never happened, like he was never kidnapped or anything." Strangely, the Stayner parents would not allow Steven to get therapy to help deal with his shattered childhood. By the age of sixteen, he had dropped out of high school and moved out on his own.

As for Parnell, described as an accomplished manipulator, he was charged with the kidnapping and false imprisonment of both Stayner and White, as well as with sexual molestation of Steven. Investigators on the case discovered that Parnell had also molested a number of Stayner's friends (Stayner attended school under a name given to him by Parnell, and outwardly lived a normal life with his 'father'). One of Steven's friends reportedly served as Parnell's accomplice in the White abduction. Also discovered was that Parnell was fond of taking Polaroid photos of his captive sex slave, and possibly other victims as well. For unexplained reasons, his bail was set at just $20,000, which allowed him to walk free after posting a mere $2,000 bond. He was tried in separate proceedings for the crimes committed against White and Stayner. Parnell was convicted in both proceedings, but he received remarkably lenient sentences for his crimes. For the multitude of offenses he committed against Steven Stayner, he received just a twenty-month sentence.

Things were relatively quiet in the Stayner home for the next nine years, until May 1989 when Steven was thrust back into the limelight owing to the airing of a television movie about his case entitled "I Know My First Name is Steven." The media's reopening of the case was followed just weeks later by the untimely demise of young Steven Stayner, who was killed instantly when an unidentified car turned abruptly into the path of his speeding motorcycle. The car and its

driver promptly disappeared. Steven left behind a wife and two young kids. Parnell was by that time already out of prison and a free man once again, after serving just five years for his crimes—less time than Steven Stayner had spent as his prisoner. The following year, Jesse Stayner—Cary and Steven's uncle—was found shot to death in his Merced home. Jesse—or as he was more commonly known, Jerry—was perhaps the family member closest to the alleged serial killer. In his youth, Cary spent more time at Uncle Jerry's home than he did at his own; the two even lived together for a brief time. Jesse was killed with a shotgun blast to the head fired from his own gun, allegedly by an intruder he had surprised in his home.

Following the two deaths, the Stayner family again managed to stay out of the news for nearly a decade, until Cary—the Stayner son who *hadn't* been held for seven years as a mind controlled sex slave, and who the *Los Angeles Times* described as a "man who had been a passive and kind presence for 37 years"—decided, for no apparent reason, to become a serial killer. That, anyway, is the official story.

In the early morning hours of February 16, 1999, three women allegedly were abducted from their room at the Cedar Lodge, which lies just outside the west gate to Yosemite National Park. Strangely, though, there was no indication that any abduction had taken place. There were damp towels in the bathroom, indicating that at least one of the three had showered. Other than that, the room was neat and orderly, with the beds made and the key left out. There was no blood and certainly no sign of a struggle. The three were scheduled to check out later that morning anyway, in order to catch a flight out that day, and it looked as though the women had simply decided to check out early in the morning without going to the front desk.

Jens Sund—father of Juli Sund and husband of Carole Sund, two of the three missing women—did not bother to report his wife and daughter missing when they failed to depart from their scheduled flight and also failed to contact him with an explanation for the scheduling change. In fact, Jens Sund did not bother to report his wife and daughter missing until the next day, and only then after he had played a round of golf.

All three of the missing women came from extremely wealthy families. The Sunds are a branch of the dynastic Carrington family, and the third woman—Juli Sund's friend, Silvina Pelosso—was from a wealthy, well-connected family in Argentina. Perhaps that is why the FBI was immediately called in to assist in what was, in the beginning, a simple missing-persons case. Just ten days after the reported disappearances, the FBI announced that it was bringing in two profilers, despite the fact that there was not yet any hard evidence that the women had met with foul play. It was another three weeks before the women's car was found,

yielding the unrecognizable remains of Carole Sund and Silvina Pelosso. Only then did it become a homicide case.

The vehicle, which was over 100 miles from the alleged abduction site, was thoroughly and, by all appearances, quite professionally burned, obliterating all forensics evidence. So badly were the bodies burned that it was difficult to even determine their gender. They were found in the trunk of the car, which the FBI did not bother to open until the day after the car was found and identified—a rather odd fact considering that the back seat was burned away, leaving the remains visible to the hunter who discovered the vehicle. Carole Sund's wallet rather incongruously turned up in Modesto, also over 100 miles from the abduction site, though in another direction. Juli Sund's nearly decapitated body was later found at yet another location, roughly midway between the Cedar Lodge and the location of the car and the other bodies. Juli's discovery was precipitated by the receipt of an anonymous, taunting letter sent to the FBI tipping them off to the whereabouts of the body.

Due to the complexities of the crime, many investigators on the case assumed that multiple perpetrators were involved. During the course of the investigation, at least a dozen people were implicated in the murders; all of them were part of a drug-trafficking network operating in the area. One of these was a man named, perhaps appropriately, Billy Joe Strange. Like Cary Stayner, Billy Joe worked at the Cedar Lodge. Strange was the night clean-up man at the lodge's restaurant, above which lived handyman Cary Stayner. Strange's girlfriend, another suspect, also worked at the lodge, as a night clerk. Also implicated was a man named Darrell Stephens, who occasionally roomed with Strange and his girlfriend. Stephens had a lengthy arrest record, as did another suspect, Michael Larwick.[16] Larwick's rap sheet included arrests for attempted manslaughter, rape, kidnapping, child stealing, assault with a deadly weapon, and various drug offenses.

When police came to arrest Larwick, he led his would-be apprehenders on a high-speed chase, in which one officer was shot, before barricading himself in a house and initiating a fourteen-hour standoff. He was eventually driven out with tear gas. When he was brought to court for his arraignment, the courtroom doors were locked to the press and public. This was improbably claimed to have been an accidental oversight. Jeff Keeney, another suspect in the women's murders, also led officers on a car and foot chase, leaving a trail of drugs in his wake. His home was found to contain three portable methamphetamine labs.

16 As a rather odd side-note to this story, Larwick's father, Leroy, attained a certain amount of notoriety in the late 1960s by creating a much-debated film clip of a purported 'Bigfoot.' Cary Stayner had a lifelong fascination with the mythical creatures, which he has claimed to have once encountered.

Larry Utley, a convicted sex offender and an associate of Michael Larwick, was also deeply involved in the meth trade, and quite possibly in the murders as well. Utley was also an associate of Eugene Earl "Rufus" Dykes, Larwick's half-brother and yet another suspect. Once in custody, Dykes claimed that Larwick had admitted to playing a role in the kidnappings. He also admitted that he had received from Larwick checks and jewelry that had belonged to the victims. A friend of Dykes' acknowledged being asked to forge identification to access Carole Sund's bank account, and another friend admitted to having taken her wallet to Modesto. Dykes, whose ex-convict father was also implicated, agreed to take a polygraph examination, which seemed to confirm that he was being truthful about his involvement in the kidnappings/murders. His girlfriend admitted to investigators that Rufus had confided to her that he and another man had killed the trio by slitting their throats. Dykes himself ultimately confessed, first to helping transport the bodies, and then to the murders themselves.

That he had transported at least one of the bodies was apparent from the fact that pink fibers found on Juli's corpse, probably from a blanket her body was wrapped in, matched fibers recovered from a Jeep used by Dykes. These same fibers were also found on Dykes' jacket, in a truck owned by a friend of his, and in Michael Larwick's Corvette. Other fibers, which appeared to come from Sund's clothing, were also found in the suspects' vehicles. Though fiber evidence is inherently problematic, it should probably be noted here that several alleged serial killers have been convicted, and even condemned to die, on less substantial fiber evidence cases than the one assembled against this group of individuals. And the incriminating fibers certainly were not the only evidence that investigators had. Rachel Lou Campbell, an associate of both Dykes and Larwick, was discovered to have in her possession Carole Sund's checking account and ATM numbers. Investigators believed that she was likely the unidentified female who had twice called the bank in the week after the disappearances to inquire about the status of the account. Another woman testified before a grand jury that she had received a ring from Larwick that two members of the Carrington clan identified as having very likely belonged to Juli Sund

With all of these suspects in jail—on other, unrelated charges—and with the evidence against them continuing to mount, most investigators considered the case to be essentially solved. It was widely anticipated that indictments would be handed down soon. Media coverage of the case dropped off appreciably and police began directing their attention elsewhere. But then a most amazing thing happened.

On July 21, 1999, Joie Armstrong—a naturalist living in Yosemite Park—was beheaded in a brutal murder case that brought the earlier triple slaying roaring back into the headlines. Other than geographic proximity, there was nothing

linking the two cases. This time, there was only one victim, and she was not abducted. Her body was quickly and easily found. And there was, allegedly at least, a clear evidence trail leading to a sole assailant: happy-go-lucky handyman Cary Stayner. Armstrong's murder was immediately declared to be connected to the previous case, although it is anyone's guess how investigators came to that conclusion.

On July 23, Stayner was questioned and then released. Almost immediately after his release, a warrant was issued for his arrest and a manhunt reportedly ensued. Stayner appears to have made little effort to flee or to conceal his identity, and he was arrested the next day, at the Laguna del Sole nudist colony, by three FBI agents and two sheriff's deputies. Waiving both his right to an attorney and to remain silent, he is said to have promptly launched into a full confession—reportedly in a detached, emotionless voice. Within a couple of days, Stayner had also given his confession to a television reporter. He took sole credit for all four murders. The reporter, Ted Rowlands, promptly made the rounds of national news shows with his 'scoop,' and all the evidence implicating the drug trafficking ring was quickly forgotten. Apart from his confession, however, there was no evidence to support Stayner's claims.

According to his version of events, Stayner single-handedly got the jump on the three women in their room and was able to bind them all with duct tape. He allegedly used a gun, although no gun has ever been produced and none of the victims were shot. Two of the women were purportedly killed in the room. All three were then carried out, one-at-a-time, and loaded into their car. One was still very much alive and most likely resisting the efforts of her abductor. No one at the lodge saw or heard any of this activity. Stayner then allegedly cleaned up the hotel room in which the first two murders occurred, successfully removing all traces of a struggle. Stayner then drove for miles before stopping to kill the third victim, Juli Sund, and dump her body. He then supposedly drove many more miles to another remote location, which happened to be very near Michael Larwick's childhood home, and abandoned the car with the other two bodies still in the trunk. He then took a taxi back to Yosemite Valley, incurring a fare of $125. Two days later, he returned to the abandoned car in an unidentified vehicle, and at that time he set Carole Sund's abandoned car afire, with the two bodies still inside. After that, he allegedly drove to Modesto to dump Sund's billfold, which for some bizarre reason he did not destroy with the rest of the evidence in the fire.

Even with this rather convoluted story, authorities have not been able to explain away all of the incongruous evidence. For example, the taunting letter sent by the killer revealing the location of Juli's body was sealed with someone else's saliva. The FBI reluctantly acknowledged that DNA tests verified that fact.

Spokesmen for the Bureau had an explanation, however: their theory was that Stayner had "tricked an unsuspecting male" into supplying the saliva to seal the envelope. How exactly that would be done was left to the imagination. Cary had initially given an alibi for the night of the murders: he said he had been visiting a female friend. The woman in question confirmed that fact. Then there is the rather troubling fact that evidence strongly indicates that the women were not killed that morning at the lodge, but later at an unknown location. That, needless to say, casts serious doubt on Cary Stayner's confession.

Any number of credible witnesses came forward, or at least attempted to come forward, to attest to the fact that the three were very much alive long after the time they were allegedly killed. A private investigator working on the case discovered credit card slips for purchases Carole made at the Yosemite Lodge—former employer of Ken Parnell—after she allegedly disappeared. Carole had signed for the purchases. Yosemite Valley's postmistress reported selling stamps to the trio on February 16, many hours after they had allegedly been kidnapped and killed. In Sierra Village, far away from the Cedar Lodge, and very close to where Carole's car was later found, at least three witnesses reported seeing the women that afternoon. A gas station owner remembered selling them gas, and a gift shop owner remembered them stopping in her place of business as well. Both of them attempted to contact the FBI. One failed to get through despite several attempts, and messages left by the other went unanswered. The Bureau later reluctantly acknowledged that there were several credible sightings of the women, not just on February 16 but on February 17 as well.

When exactly the women disappeared remains largely a mystery, as does why the women changed plans, if indeed they did, without contacting friends or family. They were almost certainly not killed in the early morning hours of February 16—by Cary Stayner, or anyone else. One witness claimed that Juli was kept alive for several days, during which time she was held in a Modesto home and repeatedly raped. The relatives of a man found drowned in early April of 1999 claimed that the drowned man had witnessed the assaults on Sund in Modesto.

There was never any question that the Sund/Pelosso killings were the work of multiple assailants. As Nick Rossi of the FBI said early on, "the assumption is that more than one person is involved." James Maddock, the FBI's lead investigator on the case, added that they were "operating under the assumption this was a very difficult crime for one person to commit." Nevertheless, on September 6, 2000, Stayner and his defense attorney accepted the terms of a federal plea-bargain agreement that had the unmistakable stench of a cover-up. Stayner professed his sole guilt in the death of Joie Armstrong and he was sentenced to life in prison without the possibility of parole, though he was spared a death sentence. The guilty plea eliminated the need for a highly publicized trial, and the agreement

contained a very unusual provision: "After the entry of judgement in this case until his death he [Stayner] will not speak to anyone, write to anyone, or communicate to anyone about the death of Joie Ruth Armstrong." No one, in other words, will hear Stayner's side of the story. Ever.

The federal courts were done with Stayner, but the state of California still had the option of prosecuting the triple murder. Two years later, it decided to exercise that option. The state case was presided over by Judge Thomas Hastings, who had earlier reigned over the Richard Allen Davis/Polly Klaas case. Stayner was represented by Marcia Morrisey and Michael Burt, a San Francisco-based attorney whose clientele has included Richard Ramirez and Charles Ng. As the *Los Angeles Times* reported, this defense team "conceded from the beginning that Stayner had killed the three tourists." That is not generally a very effective defense strategy, but it is one that is employed in a number of serial killer cases. The Times also noted that, while the case had at one time received massive press coverage, the "criminal court fight has trundled on in front of scant spectators and only a handful of newspaper reporters."

The trial consisted primarily of mental health professionals detailing for the jury Cary Stayner's troubled childhood. These witnesses described a family tree "littered with relatives who suffered from mental illnesses, including depression and pedophilia." They spoke of a family that considered displays of emotion to be taboo. They talked of Cary, in his youth, being molested by his uncle. They discussed Cary's fondness for child pornography, which he bartered with his FBI interrogators for in exchange for a full confession. They said that he had suffered from Obsessive Compulsive Disorder his whole life, and had taken psychiatric drugs in the 1980s. And they said that Cary Stayner suffered from uncontrollable violent impulses.

If so, then only the four victims had ever seen that side of him. To everyone else, he seemed to be a gentle soul. A local nudist/naturalist, calling herself "Sunshine," told *ABC*'s "20/20" that she had known Cary Stayner for years as a fellow free spirit. She spoke of frequently being alone with Stayner, skinny-dipping in secluded spots along the Merced River. She could not recall him ever acting inappropriately, and never observed any hint that Stayner might be hiding a dark side.

On August 26, 2002, the jury returned guilty verdicts on nine separate counts, including three of first-degree murder and one of kidnapping. They had deliberated less than six hours. On October 9, 2002, following the penalty phase of the trial, the jury returned with the recommendation that Cary Stayner be put to death. They had again deliberated for less than six hours. Three months after the

verdict was rendered, Ken Parnell was arrested in Berkeley, California after allegedly attempting to purchase a child.

* * * * *

If the available evidence in the Stayner case leaves doubts about the sole guilt of the accused, that is all the more true in the case of the infamous Richard Speck. If veteran criminal investigators are puzzled as to how Stayner was able to subdue and control three women, then it truly boggles the mind how one man was able to single-handedly subdue *nine* women, bind them all, and then systematically kill all but one of them.

According to the sole survivor, Cora Amurao, she answered the door in the early morning hours of July 14, 1966, allowing Speck entry into the house. She claimed he was brandishing a gun, though none of the victims were shot that night and no evidence was ever found indicating that a gun was used at the crime scene. Authorities claimed that Speck stole the gun from a rape victim on the very day of the slaughter, and then used it to quickly corral Amurao and five other women in the house into a room. He then proceeded to tear a sheet into strips, which he then used to tie the women up, one by one. How he was able to accomplish this while keeping all the rest at bay—and allegedly while keeping a knife in his hand at all times—is anyone's guess. Three more women arrived home after Speck's alleged entry into the house. All three were quickly bound and forced into the room with the others.

Speck then allegedly began dragging the women off one at a time and slaughtering them, spending twenty minutes or more with each victim. After he finished with one, according to Amurao, he would go into the bathroom to wash up and then return for another. This scene played out over the course of some four-and-a-half hours. During that time, the young women waiting their turn tried to hide under the beds, hoping to elude their assailant. They were, of course, found and killed. All of them, that is, except Cora Amurao, who claims that she alone avoided detection by Speck. It has been suggested that Speck lost count of his victims and falsely concluded that all the girls were dead, thereby making the crucial error of leaving behind a living witness.

That part of the story is problematic in a number of ways. The first question raised is: why did the young women choose to remain in the room in which they had been herded? If, despite their bindings, they were able to move about within the room—which they clearly were or they would not have been able to get under the beds—then why would they not leave the room altogether? And once out of the room, why not get completely out of the house? And what was to prevent the

women from untying each other? After all, the pattern was set early on; after the first couple of slayings, it had to be abundantly clear to the women that their lives were about to come to an abrupt end. For despite the claims that Speck cleaned himself up after each killing, it is ridiculous to suggest that Speck could have concealed the fresh blood that would have covered his clothes, assuming that he didn't bring eight changes of clothing with him. It also had to be quite clear to the awaiting victims that the selection of each new victim signaled that there would be a 20–30 minute window of opportunity to attempt an escape. And what was there to lose? It seems inconceivable that the women, facing certain death, would have passively awaited their fate.

But what of the survivor's story? It should be quite clear to anyone that an adult simply cannot avoid detection by hiding underneath a bed. That was amply illustrated by the fact that all but one of those attempting to do so were discovered. And yet one survived. How is it possible that Speck could have searched under the beds to locate the others, and yet failed to see Cora Amurao hiding there as well? And does it really seem likely that Speck was unable to count to nine?

If not for the existence of the sole survivor, police investigators would have immediately assumed that multiple perpetrators were responsible for the mass carnage. No theorizing was necessary, however, since an eyewitness was on the scene to provide the unlikely 'sole assailant' scenario that was later refined to become the official story. Interestingly though, the composite drawing (a crude, two-dimensional rendering that was seriously lacking in detail) of the suspect that was released by police, purportedly based on Amurao's description, did not resemble Richard Speck.

Since the trial of the man fingered by police hinged primarily on Amurao's eyewitness testimony—and very little else—the star witness was zealously protected, although if the imprisoned Richard Speck was indeed the sole assailant, then it is difficult to see how the witness was in any danger. Amurao was moved to a resort where four guards were posted around the clock, and she was held there incommunicado for months while being prepped extensively for the testimony that she was to deliver. Before being hidden away, Amurao allegedly identified the suspect, albeit in a most unusual manner.

While Speck in a hospital recovering from a failed suicide attempt, just days after the killings, Amurao was allegedly sent in to his room, dressed as a nurse, to gat a good look at the suspect. From this encounter, she positively identified Speck as the killer. Leaving aside the obvious fact that this was a brazenly illegitimate means of identifying a suspect—one which would have invalidated any subsequent attempts by Ms. Amurao to pick Speck out of a police line-up—the real question here is: what caliber of police official would send a severely traumatized

crime victim, who just days before had witnessed the slaughter of eight of her friends and experienced the sheer terror of knowing that she could well be next, into a room, unprotected, to face the man who had put her through such torture? And what victim would be able to handle such an encounter, with the memories so fresh? And what guarantee was there that Speck would not recognize his accuser, given that hers *was* the first face he had seen as he entered the house that night?

Amurao's dramatic identification of Speck was just a warm-up exercise for what was to come; when the time came for her to deliver her critical testimony to a packed courtroom, she delivered a bravura performance. Amurao recited a endlessly rehearsed version of the events of July 14, and then, when the time came to identify the suspect in court, she played her trump card: rising from her seat—allegedly without any prompting or rehearsal—she calmly stepped out of the witness box, walked casually over to where Speck sat at the defense table, stood directly in front of him while looking him in the eye, and told the court, "This is the man." That was the clincher; Speck was found guilty after just forty-nine minutes of jury deliberations and sentenced to death.

There are indications though that this was hardly a foregone conclusion. Prosecutors clearly had doubts about their visibly shaky case, and they appear to have made every effort to stack the deck in the state's favor. One indication of that is the fact that the jury selection process was—as defense attorney James Gramenos has noted—"illegal and unfair." Gramenos objected strenuously to the blatant violation of his client's due process rights, but was overruled. Another indication was the remarkable fact that, even though the case was moved some three hours outside of Chicago—the first time any trial had ever been moved out of Cook County due to pre-trial publicity—the judge opted to stay on in the new venue. That same judge slapped a gag order on the press, guaranteeing that no news would get back to Chicago—or to anywhere else in the country. Coupled with the blocking of any interviews with Amurao, this gag order shut the public out from learning the weakness of the case against Speck.

City officials and the press had already assured everyone that he was guilty. Chicago's Police Commissioner had gone so far as to publicly declare Speck the killer even as he was releasing his photo to the media. Before even being arrested or formally charged with any crimes, Speck was already being presented to the public as a convicted mass murderer. And the public was hungry for a culprit to hang this heinous crime on. Never mind that the motive claimed by the state, robbery, was as ridiculous as it had been when claimed as the motive for the slaughter of the Clutter family in Kansas. Never mind that there are much easier ways to acquire $23.00 than by savagely murdering eight women with one's bare hands. Someone had to pay for this assault on society, regardless of why the crime

was really perpetrated. Speck would do just fine. Many of the more thoughtful citizens of Chicago, however, are still waiting to learn what really happened in that house on that fateful night.

The most likely explanation? The 'survivor' and star witness was not actually a survivor at all; she was quite possibly an accomplice to a cult of individuals who perpetrated this slaughter. She could well have been the 'inside man,' so to speak. And it was not likely an accident that she was left alive; it was essential that she remain alive to sell the single assailant scenario and thereby derail an investigation before it ever began. After all, authorities noted from the beginning that the house was not highly visible and immediately assumed that the killer was familiar with the surroundings. Speck did not have that familiarity, but Amurao certainly did. And it is a rather odd fact that Amurao admitted to being the one to let the killer (or killers) into the house.

And what of Speck? He was likely little more than a patsy or fall-guy who may have been involved to some extent in the killings, but he certainly was not the sole assailant. And he might not have been in the house at all that night. He had no memory of ever leaving the bar that he had been drinking in earlier that evening, but he did remember receiving an injection from a man he did not know. There is no question that Speck was drinking in a bar that night; a number of witnesses placed him there, though most were unsure of when Speck had left. Two of the witnesses though, a husband and wife, placed him at the bar during at least a portion of the timeframe when the killings occurred. These witnesses were neither friends nor acquaintances of the accused, and they had no known reason to provide Speck with a false alibi.

It is possible that Richard Speck, like David Berkowitz and Pietro Pacciani, took the fall to protect others. That would certainly help explain the preposterously lax treatment of Speck during his confinement, as evidenced by that home videotape—produced circa 1988—that depicted Speck snorting huge piles of cocaine and flashing rolls of money, not to mention sporting a rather large and quite unattractive pair of breasts. No explanation has been forthcoming as to how it was possible for one of America's most notorious killers, while residing in what is reputedly one of the toughest prisons in the country, was able to obtain copious quantities of drugs and money, and gain access to video equipment and hormone treatments. It could be that Speck was rewarded in prison for being such a stand-up guy.

Speck had previously caught a number of breaks from the criminal justice system in his native Texas, where he grew up in the violently abusive home of his stepfather—named, strangely enough, Carl August Lindbergh. Just the year before the carnage in Chicago, he had been convicted of savagely attacking a girl with a knife and nearly killing her. Despite the seriousness of the crime, and

despite having a lengthy police record that included forty-one arrests in a dozen years, Speck served just five months. This act of judicial leniency was attributed to a bureaucratic error.

Speck caught another break in 1972 when his death sentence was voided by the U.S. Supreme Court and he was resentenced to a term of 400–1200 years, with the possibility of parole—which was still a pretty harsh sentence for a man who quite likely was—as he maintained for over a decade—innocent. Not long after producing his infamous videotape, Speck's luck ran out. At the relatively young age of forty-nine, he died in prison, allegedly of a heart attack. A few years later, Cora Amurao made an appearance on the Oprah Winfrey show to speak publicly about the killings for the first time in twenty-seven years.

* * * * *

Just days after Richard Speck—whose crudely tattooed arm declared him "Born to Raise Hell"—was arrested in Chicago, Charles Whitman—a former U.S. Marine sharpshooter who had received training by the Naval Enlisted Science Education Program (NESEP), an intelligence entity—ascended the Tower at the University of Texas at Austin and unleashed a barrage of firepower on the unsuspecting campus. By the time it was over, Whitman and fourteen others lay dead and another thirty-one victims were wounded.

To ascend to his perch, Whitman purportedly dragged a heavy footlocker—loaded with three rifles, three handguns, a sawed-off shotgun, 700 rounds of ammunition, two knives, enough food and water to last for several days, gasoline, an alarm clock, a radio, a compass, a hammer, a hatchet, and various other items—up the final three flights of stairs, unnoticed and unassisted. Once there, his shooting spree lasted for more than an-hour-and-a-half. Firing with uncanny accuracy, he picked off fifteen victims in the first thirty-five minutes alone, with shots coming at various times from all four sides of the clock tower. So many shots were pouring out of the sniper's nest at times that many witnesses on the ground assumed that there were multiple gunmen. The night before the rampage, Charles had killed his wife and his mother, although it was his violently abusive father for whom he was said to have had an intense hatred. Whitman had also left a note, which read in part: "I don't quite understand what is compelling me to type this note. I have been to a psychiatrist. I have been having fears and violent impulses." Along with the note, he reportedly left a roll of exposed film with instructions to develop it after his death.

Both of these mass murders, one in Chicago, Illinois and one in Austin, Texas, took place just weeks after Anton LaVey had formally established the Church of

Satan and declared April 30, 1966 to be the first day of the Age of Satan. Whitman's rampage occurred on August 1—*Lammas* on the occult calendar. Just three weeks prior to LaVey's pronouncement, long-time CIA asset Henry Luce's venerable *Time* magazine had asked its readers the symbolic question: "Is God Dead?"

The face of a particularly brutal criminal enterprise, masquerading as a religion, was beginning to emerge from the shadows, and its effect on American society would be profound. As the *New York Times* observed 33 years later, on the occasion of the reopening of the Tower's observation deck, "the Whitman attack marked a new and different terror—that anyone anywhere could be killed at random." As the *Times* also noted, this new—and wholly manufactured—threat "prompted many police departments to develop the first SWAT teams."

America was under siege.

> ***"Our goal was to create an atmosphere where there's lawlessness and disorder everywhere."***
>
> **—David "Son of Sam" Berkowitz**

Chapter 12

Satan's Family Tree

"The Devil can get into people and cause them to do things they wouldn't do otherwise."

—Herbert Mullin, speaking to a Bible study class

In New York City in 1875, Madame Helena Petrovina Blavatsky founded the Theosophical Society, an occult-based group that survives to this day and that supplied much of the ideology of Hitler's Third Reich. Over the course of the next decade-and-a-half, Blavatsky published *Isis Unveiled* and *The Secret Doctrine*, two literary works that have proven to be hugely influential with many succeeding generations of modern Satanists and white supremacists. As author Peter Levenda has written, Blavatsky "popularized the notion of a spiritual struggle between various 'races,' and of the inherent superiority of the 'Aryan' race, hypothetically the latest in the line of spiritual evolution." This belief in Aryan supremacy was echoed by philosopher Friedrich Nietzsche, who during the same timeframe posited the existence of an 'Aryan Superman' and advocated racial genocide. Nietzsche's work was also liberally borrowed from by the architects of Nazi Germany.

One of Blavatsky's most devout followers was instrumental in introducing to Western Europe the infamous *Protocols of the Elders of Zion*. This notorious document, which more-or-less accurately identified the existence of an ultra-secret cabal bent on global domination and the subjugation of the world's people, identified this game-plan as a grand Jewish conspiracy, thereby fueling the rabid anti-Semitism that served to stabilize the fascist states of Europe. Blavatsky also wrote of the importance of ancient alphabets, particularly what are referred to as 'runes.' Many of these runes would later show up prominently in the symbolism of the Nazi Party, including the *SS* lightning bolts and the swastika, which had been identified by Blavatsky as having supreme occult significance.

With the founding of the Theosophical Society in 1875, Blavatsky was essentially being passed the torch by Abbe Alphonse-Louis Constant, who died that same year. Better known in occult circles as Eliphas Levi, Constant was a French magician, author, and former priest who wrote a series of highly influential books from 1855 to 1865: *Dogma and Ritual of High Magic*, *The History of Magic*, and *The Key of the Great Mysteries*. One of Levi's disciples was General Albert Pike, chief of intelligence for the Confederate Army and the highest-ranking Freemason in North America. In 1867, Pike incorporated Levi's ideas into the constitution that he drafted for an overtly racist, occult-based secret society that he and an alliance of Confederate generals and intelligence operatives created following the American Civil War: the Ku Klux Klan. Levi's ideas would later find favor with the occult practitioners who engineered the rise of Nazi Germany.

1875 was also the year that a certain Edward Alexander Crowley was born. Edward, better known as Aleister (or by the grandiose label that he chose for himself, 'The Great Beast 666'), was without question the most influential occultist of the twentieth century. He was also an asset of British military intelligence, just as Albert Pike was an American intelligence operative, and just as Karl Kellner, Franz Hartmann and Theodore Reuss had close ties to German intelligence entities. Hartmann, Reuss and Kellner were the primary architects of the *Ordo Templi Orientis* (OTO), a secret society formed in Germany around 1895 that claims to be in a direct line of descent from the Knights Templar, which some researchers believe to be the granddaddy of all the occult-based, secret Masonic societies. Whether or not there is any factual basis for that belief remains an open question, and one that is far beyond the scope of this book.

What is known is that the OTO was directly linked to Blavatsky through Hartmann, a Theosophist and close associate of the Madame. The Hermetic Order of the Golden Dawn (OGD), founded by Theosophist William Westcott in 1888, was closely allied with Blavatsky's group as well. It was in the OGD, which he joined in 1898, that Aleister Crowley first attained occult celebrity status. He created his own occult order, which he named the *Astrum Argentium* (Silver Star), in 1907 and began publishing its newsletter, *The Equinox*, a couple years later. In 1912, he forged a close association with Theodore Reuss, who introduced him to the OTO and appointed Crowley to head the order's UK chapter. That same year, Crowley penned an OTO Manifesto that included a list of those he claimed to be past 'Grand Masters' of the lodge. On that list were composer Richard Wagner and an associate of his, Friedrich Nietzsche, whose published works included *The Antichrist*.

In 1919, Crowley declared that every non-member of the occult order should be treated as a savage. Around that same time, he became known for his published works of pro-German and pro-Nazi propaganda, which he continued to

produce through both World Wars. While living in the U.S., Crowley wrote for two pro-fascist rags: *The Fatherland* and *The Internationalist*. Around 1920, Crowley moved to Sicily where he founded the Thelema Abbey, a site that quickly became known for conducting satanic rites—complete with animal sacrifices, bestiality, and blood drinking. The abbey also gained notoriety for being fraught with death and disease. Crowley's own infant child died there, as did others. At the time, Crowley was openly accused of infanticide, and he never denied the charges. To the contrary, Crowley openly and rather flamboyantly revelled in his depravity. In *Diary of a Dope Fiend* (Crowley was a life-long abuser of drugs of all types), he wrote that: "I have driven myself to delight in dirty and disgusting debauches, and to devour human excrement and human flesh."

Those close to Crowley had the rather disturbing habit of dropping dead under unusual circumstances. As Gary Valentine Lachman has written, "A study of Crowley's life and that of his disciples shows that many of them ended up mad, destitute or prematurely dead; occasionally all three." From early in his life, Crowley developed an unsavory reputation for killing his mountain climbing partners, a number of whom failed to make it home from their joint expeditions. In his native England, he was widely rumored to routinely sacrifice children and dump their mutilated remains in the Thames River. In one notable incident, Crowley and an assistant entered a locked room to perform a ritual; the assistant did not make it out alive. Immediately following that escapade, Crowley reportedly spent four months in a mental hospital.

Crowley's offspring did not fare much better than his climbing partners did. In addition to the child that died at Thelema Abbey, a young daughter of his died in 1906, and some reports claim that a son died as well, in a separate incident. The Great Beast himself died on December 1, 1947. He was at the time the worldwide head of the *Ordo Templi Orientis*, having been named by Reuss as his successor in 1923 and confirmed in 1924 (though some reports hold that Crowley appointed himself to the leadership position, as early as 1922). With his passing, a new generation of occult superstars stood ready to take the torch, each of them devoted to spreading the word of the Great Beast: "Do what thou wilt shall be the whole of the law."

One of these disciples was Gerald Gardner, who replaced Crowley as the UK's most famous occultist. Gardner was born in 1884 into an affluent family in the UK, and he served for a time as a British customs agent. He was also the head of his own OTO lodge and a close associate of Crowley. Before his death, Crowley helped Gardner craft new rituals for what would become known as 'Wicca.' In 1949, two years after his mentor's death, Gardner penned *High Magic's Aid*. He followed that with *Witchcraft Today* (1954) and *The Meaning of Witchcraft* (1959) and the movement was off and running. More recently, Sir Laurence Gardner—

Gerald's son—penned a couple of books that attempt to justify genocide and Aryan supremacy. Laurence Gardner also serves as the Presidential Attaché to the European Council of Princes, an entity that has admitted to receiving funding from the Central Intelligence Agency.

One of the senior Gardner's early recruits was Alexander Saunders, who was raised by a grandmother who was well versed in the black arts. As a child, Saunders was shipped off for a time to live with, and be 'trained' by, Crowley himself. By the late 1960s, Saunders was a national celebrity in his native UK, having anointed himself the "King of the Witches." During the filming of "Eye of the Devil" in 1967, Saunders claimed to have initiated the film's star, Manson victim Sharon Tate, into witchcraft. His followers are said to practice Alexandrian Witchcraft, while followers of Gardner practice Gardnerian Witchcraft; both owe much to the teachings of Aleister Crowley.

Saunders' counterpart in America was the equally flamboyant Anton Szandar LaVey, who achieved minor celebrity status in the 1960s and 1970s as the clown prince of Satanism. LaVey's profile was first raised by *San Francisco Chronicle* columnist Herb Caen, who frequently provided free publicity. *Cosmopolitan*, *Life*, *Look*, *McCalls*, and the Phil Donahue and Johnny Carson shows also helped to steer recruits LaVey's way.

LaVey claimed to have a lengthy and very colorful résumé. He had worked, he said, as a lion tamer with the Clyde Beatty Circus and as a fortune-teller and astrologer in a carnival. He had worked with an uncle in Las Vegas who was a close associate of Bugsy Siegel and Meyer Lansky, both of whom he had met. He had studied criminology and worked as a crime scene photographer for the San Francisco Police Department, who consulted with him on "nut cases." He had been a professional hypnotist, organist and 'ghostbuster.' He had been a paramour and Svengali of a young and then-unknown Marilyn Monroe. It is unclear how much of this résumé is accurate. Following LaVey's death, his daughter claimed that his entire life story was a fabrication, which would hardly be surprising if LaVey was, as he appears to have been, an intelligence operative.

Together with Crowley-inspired filmmaker Kenneth Anger, LaVey organized the Magick Circle in San Francisco in the mid-1960s. By 1966, the group had evolved into the Church of Satan. From its inception, LaVey's group included an inordinate number of police, military and intelligence personnel. One of these was Lt. Col. Michael Aquino, who left LaVey's circle in 1975 to found his own overtly satanic order, the Temple of Set. Before his departure, Aquino had been the highest-ranking member of the Church of Satan other than LaVey. He had joined the Church of Satan upon his return from Vietnam, where he served as a psychological warfare specialist, which very likely means that he served as part of the Phoenix Program. Aquino returned from Vietnam with a Bronze Star, an Air

Medal and an Army Commendation Medal. The Colonel, who reportedly began reporting directly to the Joint Chiefs of Staff in 1981, is not the only intelligence asset in the Temple of Set; according to a police intelligence report cited by Carl Raschke in 1990, at least two of Aquino's top lieutenants at that time were intelligence operatives as well.

Although Aquino denies it, his group embraces an unabashedly fascistic ideology. The reading list that he provides to his followers includes a number of pro-Nazi books, including Adolph Hitler's *Mein Kampf*; Aquino advises members to look therein "for the discussions concerning the selection of leaders, control of the masses, and the justification for human social organization." Aquino's admiration for the Third Reich was also illustrated by his visit to Wewelsberg Castle to perform a satanic 'working.' During the reign of the Nazi Party, Wewelsberg had been lavishly restored by Heinrich Himmler to serve as the headquarters of the *Black Order of the SS*; as such, it is considered sacred ground by some modern Satanists. Aquino has been known to claim that he is the son of an *SS* officer, although at other times he has claimed that he is a 'homunculus' magically created by the 'Babalon Working' performed by Jack Parsons and L. Ron Hubbard.

After the Temple was incorporated in the state of California as a non-profit church, Aquino's group quickly received both state and federal recognition, as well as tax-exempt status. The Temple's members like to boast of being the only satanic church to hold such credentials.

There have been claims made that, like Aquino, LaVey also had a fondness for the Third Reich. Some reports hold that LaVey secretly forged an alliance with the National Renaissance Party, an overtly racist, neo-Nazi organization.[17] Such claims are not difficult to believe, given that LaVey's writings reveal an ideology that can best be characterized as fascism cloaked in quasi-religious dogma. His best-known work, *The Satanic Bible*, contains a dedication to Karl Haushofer, one of the occult architects of the Third Reich. According to some reports, Haushofer dictated virtually verbatim an entire chapter of *Mein Kampf*, although legend holds that the tome was dictated to Rudolf Hess by an imprisoned Adolph Hitler. Hess was, it should probably be noted, a member of the *Thule Gesellschaft* (a powerful occult society behind the rise of fascism) and had been a student and protégé of Haushofer at the University of Munich.

LaVey's prolific writings are filled with pro-police and pro-authoritarian propaganda, unabashed elitism, and calls for the destruction of the weak by the

17 According to some reports, Bobby Beausoleil, who was associated with both the Church of Satan and Charlie Manson, played a key role in forging a prison alliance between the Manson Family and the Aryan Brotherhood. Other reports have linked Manson to the Nazi Lowriders, another neo-Nazi prison gang.

strong[18]—calls that echo Crowley's writings in *Book of the Law*: "We have nothing with the outcast and unfit; let them die in their misery. For they feel not. Compassion is the vice of kings; stamp down the wretched and the weak; this is the law of the strong." The Church of Satan's promotional literature has proudly proclaimed the Church of Satan to be "an eclectic body that traces its origins to many sources…[including] the ritual magic of Aleister Crowley and the Black Order of Germany in the 1920s and 1930s." Readers are reminded that the Black Order was the elite branch of the *Schutzstaffel* (*SS*) that was primarily responsible for engineering countless crimes against humanity during the reign of the Reich.

In *The Black Flame*, an official publication of the Church of Satan, LaVey once wrote: "If a neo-fascist look—or outlook—makes for men who look like men and women who look like women, I am all for it." He also offered the following observation: "There is nothing inherently wrong with fascism, given the nature and needs of the average citizen…Now it's not so much a case of avoiding fascism, but of replacing a screwed-up, disjointed, fragmented and stupefying kind of fascism with one that is more sensible and truly progressive." Peter Gilmore, a ranking member of the Church of Satan, has described modern Satanism as practiced by LaVey's group as "a brutal religion of elitism and social Darwinism that seeks to re-establish the reign of the able over the idiotic, of swift justice over injustice, and for a wholesale rejection of egalitarianism as a myth that has crippled the advancement of the human species for the last two thousand years." Gilmore has also advocated the institution of "an American *Schutzstaffel*."

The Temple of Set is only one of several groups that have been spawned from LaVey's inner circle. Another is the Werewolf Order, co-founded by LaVey's daughter Zeena and Manson-admirer Nikolas Schreck. That particular spin-off was patterned directly after the so-called Werewolf Corps (Nazi terrorist cells created in post-war Germany to thwart attempts at denazification). Zeena LaVey and Nikolas Schreck are also notable for hosting, along with publisher Adam Parfrey, a public gathering on August 8, 1988 that was organized to celebrate the anniversary of the slaughter of Sharon Tate by the Manson Family.[19]

---

18 LaVey also publicly endorsed the practice of cannibalism. At a seminar that he dubbed "On Cannibalism and Human Sacrifice," LaVey once served guests the amputated thigh of an unidentified young woman. The main course had reportedly been donated by a Berkeley physician.

19 Nikolas Schreck is also notable for his noticeable lack of a left ear, which he sliced off in a VanGogh-like move intended to symbolize his allegiance to Satan. The 8/8/88 celebration was notable for another reason as well: it was held just one day after the 100th anniversary of the first Jack the Ripper slaying on August 7, 1888.

Another disciple of Crowley, and an occult superstar in his own right, was rocket-fuel scientist Jack Parsons. In 1939, Parsons joined the Agape Lodge of the OTO in Pasadena, California, where he also helped found the prestigious Jet Propulsion Laboratory. The Agape was the only OTO lodge in the States at that time, though there was an active lodge in Vancouver started by Charles Stansfield Jones. In 1942, Parsons took the 'magickal' name of "Frater 210" and assumed leadership of the Pasadena lodge, with the blessings of Crowley. Parsons led the branch of the German-based, pro-Nazi order throughout the war years, while at the same time working on highly classified military projects purportedly aimed at defeating the European fascist powers. One of his early recruits, and most avid disciples, had just served with the U.S. Navy in the Pacific and was the son of a naval commander. Calling himself "Frater H," he claimed at various times to work for the Los Angeles Police Department, the FBI, and the Office of Naval Intelligence. In truth, he may very well have worked for all of them. Frater H, perhaps better known as L. Ron Hubbard, soon became Parson's right-hand-man. In 1946, the two 'adepts' performed an allegedly important ritual that they dubbed the 'Babalon Working.'

Two years later, following the death of mentor Crowley, Parsons took the oath of the antichrist and took on an elaborate new name: Belarion Armiluss Al Dajjal Antichrist. His Pasadena mansion served as the lodge's temple. Leadership of the OTO had, for the time being, been passed by Crowley into the hands of Karl Germer, a former Nazi spy. Hubbard, meanwhile, parted ways with Parsons and by 1950 had launched the Hubbard Dianetics Research Foundation in New Jersey. In May 1950, *Astounding Science Fiction*, a pulp magazine, introduced Dianetics as a purportedly new science. Within weeks, Hubbard's book had hit the bestseller lists. In 1952, he moved his operation to Phoenix and renamed it the Hubbard Association of Scientologists. In June of that same year, just two days short of the summer solstice, Parsons allegedly blew himself up while at work in his private home lab. When informed of her son's death, his mother promptly committed 'suicide.' Rumors surrounding Parson's death named L. Ron Hubbard, Howard Hughes and Randolph Hearst as possible suspects.

In 1953, the Church of Scientology was formally incorporated in Los Angeles. The group grew quickly over the succeeding years, particularly in the late 1960s—when membership quadrupled with the addition of such members as Charles Manson. By 1967, Hubbard's empire included command of a fleet of ships. Though the Church of Scientology has worked hard to gloss over its occult roots, its founder's own son—L. Ron Hubbard, Jr.—has been quoted as saying: "Hitler was involved in the same black magic and the same occult practices that my father was. The identical ones…[my father] thought of himself as the Beast 666 incarnate…when Crowley died in 1947 my father then decided that he

should wear the cloak of the beast." There seems to have been a lot of that going around. L. Ron, Jr. has also said that the "one super-secret sentence that Scientology is built on is: 'Do as thou wilt.'"

In the early 1960s, two ranking members of the Church of Scientology—Robert Moore and Mary Anne MacLean, better known as the DeGrimstons—split off from London's Hubbard Institute to form the Process Church of the Final Judgment[20]—a group whose official logo is a modified swastika and whose literature included glowing tributes to Nazism, Satan, gore and necrophilia. The group's bookstore reportedly stocked titles on topics such as Hitler, organized crime, hypnosis, brainwashing, and the occult. Moore, a former cavalry officer and the grandson of a British vicar, and MacLean, a one-time prostitute who was connected to the Profumo scandal and who reportedly believes that she is the reincarnation of Nazi propagandist Josef Goebbels, first left London with their followers just after the summer solstice of 1966, arriving first in Nassau and then in Xtul, Mexico. They were soon back in London.

By 1967, they had arrived in the States, first setting up shop in New Orleans' French Quarter, where the organization was formally incorporated with the assistance of a former lawyer for the Catholic Church. In March 1968, the group moved their base of operations to San Francisco, taking up residence not far from LaVey's Church of Satan and various other occult groups, including a branch of the OTO. Recruiters for the group had been in the Bay area since the 1967 'Summer of Love,' signing on such members as 'Brother Ely,' a member of the Gypsy Jokers biker gang whose home/Process Church temple was located just two blocks away from the home of the Manson Family. From its inception, the Process made no effort to hide its infatuation with death, destruction and cultural terrorism. In the essay *Jehovah on War*, Moore commanded his followers: "THOU SHALT KILL." Another essay that appeared in the official Process publication urged readers to experience the pleasures of grave robbing and necrophilia. A rant in the "Death" issue was penned by a recent transplant to the Bay area by the name of Charles Manson.

Also by 1967, the Process had already spawned at least one spin-off, probably from the group's inner circle, reportedly known as 'The Omega.' The spin-off has

20 A February 2004 report from Denver's *Rocky Mountain News* revealed that the Process Church is alive and well today after a series of name changes (Lou Kilzer "Friends Find Their Calling," February 28, 2004). The group first became The Foundation—Church of the Millennium, then The Foundation Faith of God, then the Best Friends Animal Sanctuary, and finally the Best Friends Animal Society, which has its headquarters on a compound in the Utah desert. The group, which still includes many original members, is now known to rub shoulders with various Hollywood celebrities.

been variously referred to as the 'Four-P Movement,' the 'Four Pi' cult, or the 'Chingon' cult. The group's logo is a stylized swastika composed of four 'P's. Its members are said to share a fascination with Nazi racist doctrines. Author Michael Newton has written: "If law-enforcement spokesmen are correct, the cult is also deeply involved in white slavery, child pornography, and the international narcotics trade." The first branch of the cult was organized in Northern California, and is said to have held its early gatherings in the Santa Cruz Mountains, adjacent to that boiling cauldron of satanic activity known as San Francisco. From this primordial stew would arise, in the late sixties, the Manson Family.

Much of Manson's ideology was taken directly from the teachings of the Process Church, with whom Charlie was closely connected, as alluded to by Bugliosi in *Helter Skelter* and greatly elaborated on by Ed Sanders in *The Family* and Maury Terry in *The Ultimate Evil*. Manson was exposed to the Process as early as the spring of 1967 at San Francisco's infamous 'Devil House,' and he later claimed to have met the leaders of the Process at the Polanski home, which he is known to have visited before the killings. Manson was also linked to: the Church of Satan; the Solar Lodge of the OTO, which operated from a ranch near Blythe and a cult-owned house near the University of Southern California campus; the Church of Scientology (Charlie declared himself to be a 'Theta Clear' after 150 hours of 'auditing' while in prison); a particularly bizarre group known as the Kirké Order of the Dog Blood; and a number of occult-oriented biker gangs, including the Straight Satans (who once attended a Ku Klux Klan rally in the San Fernando Valley), the Satan Slaves, the Gypsy Jokers, the Jokers Out of Hell, and the Coffin Makers.

Terry's evidence indicates that the Family was itself a satanic cult—specifically a faction of the Process-spawned Four Pi cult and a sister group to both the New York chapter said to be responsible for the Son of Sam slayings and the Santa Cruz/San Francisco faction that may have been responsible for the 'Zodiac' murders. The Manson Family, appropriately enough, was also deeply involved in drug trafficking, just as Henry Lee Lucas claimed his cult to be. It is not likely a coincidence that Henry's partner, Ottis Toole, was known to have paid visits to the New Orleans headquarters of the Process Church.

With all that in mind, we now turn our attention to the San Francisco/Santa Cruz area and the explosion of violent murders that belched forth from that cauldron beginning in the late 1960s.

"Satan is a Fascist"

—Title of an April 1972 article by Donald Nugent in *The Month* that referred to the "unholy trinity of Adolph Hitler, Charles Manson…and Anton LaVey."

"In as much as Fascism stands for an embracing of the Natural Order and a rejection of 'anything goes' attitudes that have hindered our society, particularly since the 1960's, then Fascists we are."

—Church of Satan Magister Peter Gilmore, in *The Black Flame*, Vol. 4/No. 1&2

Chapter 13

The Spawning Ground

Ottis Toole: I've been meaning to ask you…that time when I cooked some of these people? Why'd I do that?

Henry Lee Lucas: I think it was just the hands doing it. I know a lot of things we done, in human sight, are impossible to believe.

Toole: When we took 'em out and cut 'em up…remember one time I said I wanted me some ribs? Did that make me a cannibal?

Lucas: You wasn't a cannibal. It's the force of the devil, something forced on us that we can't change. There's no reason denying what we become. We know what we are.

On March 21, 1967 (the spring equinox), Charles Milles Manson was released from prison and given transport to San Francisco, where—despite having served virtually his entire adult life in prison—he immediately started gathering devoted followers, many recruited from the various satanic groups blossoming in the area. In the spring of the following year, 1968, Manson loaded his new followers into a bus and took them on the road, ultimately settling into the Los Angeles area where Charlie quickly and improbably established numerous prominent contacts in the entertainment industry. As Neil Young, who knew Charlie and his girls well and once tried to get the head of Warner Brothers to sign the aspiring singer/songwriter, once told an interviewer: "A lot of pretty well known musicians around L.A. knew him, though they'd probably deny it now."

On December 20, 1968, just shy of the winter solstice, what was thought to be the first of the Zodiac murders rocked the San Francisco area when a man was shot once in the head at point blank range with a .22 and his female companion was shot multiple times with the same weapon. A detective working the case

noted that the male victim had recently learned of a major drug deal that was about to go down, and he had been talking openly about who was involved in the transaction.

It would later be speculated that the Zodiac killings actually began in the Los Angeles area on the eve of Halloween, 1966—just a few months after the rampages of Richard Speck and Charles Whitman. The victim, Cheri Jo Bates, had been stabbed in the chest and her throat had been slit so deeply that she was nearly decapitated. A wristwatch of military origin had been found at the crime scene, along with a military-style heel print. The circumstances of the murder suggested that the female victim knew her killer and had spent a portion of the evening with him before the attack. What was said to be a confession was received in the mail and, on *Walpurgisnacht* of 1967, taunting letters were sent to area newspapers and to the victim's father. The FBI would later inadvertently reveal that it had an alternate version of the 'confession,' featuring the exact same wording but set in a different typescript and with a different number of words per line.

On Independence Day, 1969, another couple was gunned down in their car, this time with a 9mm semi-automatic. The woman, Darlene Ferrin, who appeared to be the primary target of the attack (the man survived his wounds), may have known the previous Zodiac victims. She had reportedly told her friends that she had witnessed a murder by a man who had subsequently been following her. In the weeks before her death, she had been receiving mysterious packages from a man living in Mexico who Darlene had, for unexplained reasons, married in 1966 using an assumed name and then later divorced. Her companion on the night of the murder, Michael Mageau, left his home in such a hurry that the lights and TV were left on and the front door was left open. He later told investigators that he and Darlene were followed immediately upon leaving Ferrin's house. After changing his story several times, Mageau went into hiding. Shortly after the shootings, police received a call from a man claiming credit for Ferrin's murder. The call was placed from a payphone just outside the Sheriff's station.

At the end of July, the first of what proved to be a long series of letters arrived at area newspaper offices, with a request that the letter be published on August 1, the occult holiday known as *Lammas*. The series of letters were laced with codes that suggested that the writer had a background in naval intelligence, bringing the ONI (Office of Naval Intelligence) onto the case. Others agencies that investigated the Zodiac killings included the FBI, the U.S. Postal Service, the California Department of Justice, and four local police agencies. On August 4, 1969, the killer supplied his moniker in a letter that began: "This is the Zodiac speaking." Just days later, on the nights of August 8 and 9, the Manson Family committed two of the most notorious multiple murders in the nation's history: the Tate-LaBianca slayings. The Manson killings were part of a weekend orgy of

violence in Los Angeles that saw the city record twenty-nine known homicides in just four days. Before the search for the perpetrators of the high-profile murders was over, it would involve the FBI, the Mossad, the California Beverage Control Board, the U.S. Treasury Department, the L.A. County District Attorney's Office, the LAPD, the L.A. Sheriff's Office, and Colonel Paul Tate—a U.S. Army Intelligence asset, Vietnam veteran, and the father of victim Sharon Tate.

Also brought in by Roman Polanski to assist in his own investigation of the killings was famed 'psychic' Peter Hurkos. Hurkos had earlier made a high profile appearance alongside of F. Lee Bailey in the Boston Strangler case, which will be covered in a later chapter. At the time of the Manson murders, Hurkos was involved in organizing a Black Arts Festival scheduled for Halloween day, 1969. The events other organizers were Timothy Leary and Anton LaVey, who were scheduled to host the festival before it was cancelled.

The month after the Tate-LaBianca killings, and just after the autumnal equinox, a man and woman were stabbed multiple times in a San Francisco-area park. Despite the fact that it took nearly an hour for an ambulance to respond to a call as the pair lay bleeding, the man survived the attack. In what has to be the only known case of a serial killer showing up for work dressed in a logo-bearing costume, the assailant was described as wearing a strange hood with an attached apron that prominently displayed the trademark symbol of the Zodiac. The attacker reportedly had a gun, but chose instead to use a knife, breaking from the previous pattern and likely contributing to the survival of the male victim. Prints from a military-issue boot distributed primarily to U.S. naval bases on the west coast were found at the scene. The professed killer again called police, again from a payphone near the local police station. He reportedly left a clear palm print on the phone, but a "nervous" technician reportedly destroyed it.

On October 11, 1969, one day shy of the birthday of Aleister Crowley, a taxi driver was shot once in the head with a 9mm handgun, although it was a different 9mm than had been used previously by the Zodiac. At four San Francisco-area crime scenes, the 'Zodiac' had now used a different weapon at each. The latest victim had picked up his fare on Mason Street and had then driven him to an address in the Presidio Heights area of the city, where he was promptly shot. Some local kids witnessed the murder and immediately called the police with a description of the assailant. For unexplained reasons, however, the police dispatcher broadcast a description of a black perpetrator, allowing the real shooter to evade a massive police response. Two days later, a new letter from the Zodiac claimed credit for the killing and threatened a future attack on a school bus.

On October 22, a man identifying himself as the Zodiac called authorities and requested to speak, strangely enough, to either F. Lee Bailey or San Francisco attorney Melvin Belli. A spectacle then played out in which the man, calling himself

'Sam,' called and had a live chat on the air with the CIA-linked Belli. In November, another letter arrived from the elusive Zodiac, this one containing a bomb threat. Also in November 1969, two Scientologists were found savagely murdered on the streets of Los Angeles. Each had been stabbed more than fifty times. One of the victims had dated Manson disciple Bruce Davis in 1968, just before Charlie had sent Davis to London to visit both the headquarters of the Process Church and the local Scientology school. Davis was later convicted of other, unrelated murder charges, and he has been identified by some researchers as a possible suspect in the Zodiac killings.

Another Zodiac letter, addressed to Belli, was sent on December 20, just shy of the winter solstice. On April 20, 1970, yet another letter was sent; it was followed by a 'dragon card' on April 28. The next day, on the eve of *Walpurgisnacht*, the Zodiac's bomb threat was revealed to the public, ratcheting up the already high level of fear in the Bay area. Interestingly, one of the Zodiac's numerous letters contained a coded reference to the locations of the killings. A decoding suggested that the crime scenes formed a pattern that centered on Mt. Diablo (the Devil's Mountain) and that utilized an obscure unit of measurement known as a radian, which is a mathematical unit based on the number Pi.

Elsewhere in the country, a man named Stanley Baker was convicted in July 1970 for the murder of a Montana resident. Baker made a candid admission to his arresting officers: "I have a problem. I am a cannibal." As proof, he produced from his pocket a well-gnawed human finger. Baker was the talkative sort and he readily confessed his involvement in a number of other murders that he claimed he had committed as a member of the Process-spawned Four Pi cult. Police were able to confirm his complicity in a particularly brutal mutilation murder in San Francisco, thanks to his having left behind a bloody fingerprint. California courts nevertheless declined to prosecute Baker for the homicide with the remarkable claim that he had been denied a speedy trial. Despite his confessed involvement in a number of murders, and despite the fact that the murder for which he was convicted involved him ripping out the man's heart and eating it, Baker was released from prison after just fourteen years, and according to recent reports, he remains at large today. This in spite of the fact that he distinguished himself as something less than a model prisoner during his incarceration by starting his own satanic cult and having no fewer than eleven weapons confiscated by guards.

Just as Stanley Baker and Charlie Manson had migrated away from San Francisco, so too did many other disenchanted hippies and flower children move on in the late 1960s and early 1970s. Many of them found refuge in the hundreds of square miles of sparsely settled wilderness offered by the Santa Cruz Mountains, where the abundance of rich soil and clear, running water provided ideal conditions for communal living and marijuana cultivation. By 1972, some

seventeen thousand men, women and children had taken up residence in the fertile glens and along the rich creek beds of Santa Cruz. As Margaret Cheney described the scene:

> Every enterprising commune or solo Druid grew a patch of *cannabis*; but it did not end there. More enterprising men began to operate small, portable pill factories in the remoter parts of the forest, turning out LSD and amphetamines for the city market, free of police harassment. A small cult of Satanists from San Francisco liked the landscape and opened a local parish. After them came pretenders, exploiters and hangers-on. The more sensational news media promoted the black-mass aura. Small sacrificial animals were occasionally found beheaded.

Seemingly random, motiveless killings quickly began to plague Santa Cruz. On October 19, 1970, in a case closely mirroring the slaughter of the residents of the Tate house the year before, John Lindley Frazier, allegedly acting alone, killed all the occupants of a home in Santa Cruz, including a prominent doctor, his wife, secretary, and two children. Frazier, who was known to have a strong interest in the occult, was said to have started his own lifestyle as an 'Aquarian Age'[21] hermit living in a six-foot-square shack in the woods (a lifestyle later adopted by Ted Kaczynski, who was a subject of MK-ULTRA experiments while he was a young student at Harvard, and who has been named by some researchers as a possible suspect in the Zodiac killings). Just over a week after the Frazier killings, a Halloween card was received from the Zodiac. More cards and letters followed, the last of which arrived in 1974. The murders were never solved, though many believe that—as Inyo County District Attorney Frank Fowles has stated—"Manson and the Zodiac Killer were connected."

Soon after Frazier's rampage, women began going missing from around the Santa Cruz area. As early as autumn of 1968, reports began surfacing of grisly

21 The notion of an 'Age of Aquarius' was popularized by groups like San Francisco's 'Diggers,' who occupied the aforementioned 'Devil House,' and by publications such as San Francisco's *Oracle*. Perhaps no one played a greater role in popularizing the idea of the 'Age of Aquarius' than the *Oracle*'s Gavin Arthur. Interestingly, Arthur's full legal name was Chester Alan Arthur III. He was the great-grandson of President Chester Arthur. He reportedly predicted JFK's assassination before Kennedy was even elected. Some attribute that feat to clairvoyance, but it was more likely due to foreknowledge.

occult sacrifices being performed in the surrounding mountains. By the summer of 1972, it was clear that Santa Cruz had a problem. Mutilated bodies began showing up in the hills. By the time 1973 rolled around, the bodies were piling up at an alarming rate. In just the first six weeks of the year, eight bodies were found, and women were continuing to disappear. What had once been an idyllic community had been radically transformed; the murder rate had quintupled and Santa Cruz had achieved the rather dubious distinction of having the highest homicide rate in the country. Many of the area's killings were credited to two alleged serial killers, Edmund Kemper and Herb Mullin, who were said to be operating at the same time in the same city, though acting independently of each other. Kemper's bloody odyssey reportedly included eight victims brutally butchered between May 1972 and April 1973, most of them coeds whose corpses were cannibalized and sexually violated. Mullin was credited with dispatching thirteen victims in just four months, from October 13, 1972 through February 13, 1973. Mullin admitted to having a strong interest in the occult, a fact made evident by the nature of the killings attributed to him: the first victim was killed on Friday the 13th, the second on or about Halloween, and the third murder was the stabbing of a Catholic priest in his confessional on November 2, celebrated as All Souls Day.

To briefly recap, no fewer than six serial killers/mass murderers—Charles Manson, Stanley Baker, Edmund Kemper, Herbert Mullin, John Lindley Frazier, and the Zodiac—were all spawned from the Santa Cruz/San Francisco metropolitan area in a span of just over four years, at a time when 'serial killers' were a rare enough phenomenon that they hadn't yet acquired a name. And another serial killer was said to be at work not far away during the same timeframe. As Bundy chronicler Richard Larsen recounts, the bodies of at least fourteen young women and girls were found, nude and with their belongings missing, in Northern California between December 1969 and December 1973. In the immediate vicinity of each of the bodies "was found an elaborate witchcraft symbol of twigs and rocks." Remarkably enough, the crimes collectively attributed to these men did not even account for *all* the ritualized homicides that occurred in the Bay area during that time. For example, the murder of Fred Bennett, the captain of the Oakland chapter of the Black Panthers whose mutilated remains were found scattered in the Santa Cruz hills, was never solved. And many of the young students who were reported missing from local campuses were never found, either dead or alive, and were therefore never listed as homicide victims.

On October 12, 1974, the birthday of Aleister Crowley, student Arliss Perry was brutally murdered and left on display in the Stanford Memorial Church on the campus of Stanford University, nestled in the shadows of the Santa Cruz Mountains. Perry was left lying on her back, with her head toward the altar and

her legs spread wide. She was nude from the waist down and an altar candle protruded from her vagina; another altar candle was wedged between her exposed breasts. Her jeans had been neatly arranged in an inverted V-shape and placed across her splayed legs, forming the Masonic symbol of the compass and the square. Five years earlier, the very same symbol had been left carved into the stomach of Manson victim Leno LaBianca, as the "W" in the word "War." The prime suspect in the still-unsolved murder of Perry is a man named Bill Mentzer, who knew Charles Manson and at least one of his victims: Abigail Folger. In fact, Mentzer reportedly had lunch with Folger just a few days before her death. He later was connected to David "Son of Sam" Berkowitz as well, and still later was convicted of the *Cotton Club* murder of aspiring film producer Roy Radin.

A few years after Perry's murder, a new rash of 'serial killings' began in nearby Sacramento, California. These were ultimately attributed to a man named Richard Chase, also known as the "Vampire of Sacramento" and "The Dracula Killer." These killers—Chase, Manson, Kemper, Mullin, the Zodiac, Frazier and Baker—heralded the dawn of a new era that soon had established 'serial killers' as an ever-present part of the American landscape. Before 1960, fewer than two serial killers a year were reported nationwide. By 1970, the number had climbed to six per year; by 1980, to nearly twenty per year. By 1990, nearly three-dozen serial killers a year were being reported across the country.

The years covered by the occult bloodbath in Northern California, 1967 through 1973, correspond precisely to the years that the Phoenix Program in Vietnam was in full operation (although similar programs, under different names, existed prior to 1967). In September 1973, the head of the Phoenix operation, William Colby, was appointed as the new Director of the Central Intelligence Agency. Phoenix had officially come home.

* * * * *

Charles Milles Manson was born "No Name" Maddox, the son of an alcoholic teenage prostitute. His mother was imprisoned for armed robbery when Charles was just a toddler, so the boy was sent to live with his grandparents. Following that, he lived for a time with an aunt and uncle in Virginia, who sent him off to his first day of school dressed as a girl, just as Henry Lee's mother had done. By age eight, Charles was back with his mother, who occasionally sent him off to stay with a moonshiner uncle. At age nine, he was sent to stay at the Gibault Home for Boys—a 'reform' school in Terre Haute, Indiana. Three years later, the preteen boy was living alone in a single room at a boarding house, until he was discovered by authorities. How he came to be living alone remains something of a

mystery. From that point on, Manson spent the vast majority of his life institutionalized.

Charles next found himself housed at Boy's Town, identified in *The Franklin Cover-Up* as a cesspool of pedophilic operations. By the age of fifteen, Charles was no longer a ward of the state; he had graduated to being a full-fledged convict. In prison, the diminutive Manson was repeatedly raped and beaten by guards and fellow inmates, until he managed to escape at the age of sixteen and find his way to California. He was soon arrested again and sent to the rather ominously named National Training School for Boys in Washington, D.C. A few years later, he was set free and married briefly and fathered a child, while also working as a pimp. That occupation earned him a lengthy prison stay following a conviction for running an interstate vice ring. Seven years later, he was again set free, after reportedly following Henry Lee Lucas' lead by begging authorities at Terminal Island Prison not to release him.

Within months, Charlie was playing his music in bars in San Francisco's Tenderloin District and gathering a large and devoted group of followers. In his brief period of freedom, he lived with and associated with hundreds of different people, many of them prominent in the entertainment industry. He made numerous contacts in the music business, including Dennis Wilson,[22] Neil Young and Terry Melcher—the son of Doris Day and the former occupant, along with Candace Bergen, of the Cielo Drive home where the Tate murders occurred. Charlie even reportedly served as a 'religious consultant' for Universal Studios on a movie about Christ, and also auditioned to be one of "The Monkeys." He was also deeply involved in a number of criminal enterprises, well before the consecutive bloodbaths that thrust him into the national limelight. As author Joel Norris has noted, Charlie was "a drug dealer and contract killer," and "had become involved in underworld crime, murder-for-hire rings, and child pornography." Interestingly enough, Manson has said that the Family's most well known victims were involved in some of the same enterprises: "Don't you think those people deserved to die? They were involved in kiddie porn." Charlie had also, as previously noted, allied himself with various satanic cult groups that, as Norris notes, were "heavily based on ritual bondage, sacrifice, and also murder." According to Ed Sanders, who interviewed numerous members and associates of the Family, Manson was also involved in the production and distribution of snuff films.

In the aftermath of the Tate and LaBianca killings, the LAPD, one of whose officers co-owned the auto shop that Charlie lived in just a few months before the murders, couldn't really be bothered with the wealth of evidence that implicated

22 Wilson and Melcher reportedly created an L.A.-area 'Hell Fire Club' known as the Golden Penetrators. Manson was likely a member.

Family members in the murders. The department also refused to acknowledge and examine the obvious connections between the two murder scenes, severely hampering the investigation. They likewise refused to explore the connections between the murder of musician Gary Hinman and the other two more high-profile crimes. The L.A. Sheriff's Department had already solved the Hinman case, no thanks to the LAPD, and had taken Bobby Beausoleil into custody just a few days before the Tate murders. The Sheriffs knew of his connections to the Family, and of the connections between the three crime scenes; two motorcycle gang members with close ties to the Family—Al Springer and Danny DeCarlo of the Straight Satans—had given the Sheriff's damning testimony concerning the Family's involvement in all three murders.

DeCarlo, who was reportedly a member of the Process Church, appears to have provided security for Charlie and the Family. He kept a large arsenal of weapons at the Family compound, including a .303 British Enfield rifle, a .22 rifle, a 20-gauge shotgun, a .30 caliber carbine, a 12-gauge riot gun, an M-1 carbine, and a sub-machinegun. The Family, it should be noted, did not operate as the hippie cult that they have been portrayed as being. Their base of operations was more of a paramilitary compound than it was a commune, complete with guard shacks at lookout points, telescopes, walkie-talkies, military field telephones, and converted dune buggies equipped with machinegun mounts.

When the Sheriffs passed along to the LAPD the information they had obtained from their informants, L.A.'s finest proceeded to do absolutely nothing. Meanwhile, on September 1, 1969—just a few weeks after the Tate murders—a .22 caliber revolver was found in Sherman Oaks and turned in to the LAPD. The gun was a rather rare and unique firearm, and just happened to match the description of the weapon suspected of being used in the killings—right down to the broken handle that provided a perfect fit for the handle pieces that were recovered at the murder scene. Nevertheless, the department tagged and filed the weapon and it was promptly forgotten. For months. The department later sent out a flyer with a photo of the weapon, failing to realize that they already had the gun in their custody. It took a phone call from the father of the boy who had found the gun to get the department to acknowledge its existence, and even then, the caller was initially told that the gun had probably been destroyed.

Elsewhere, Family member Susan Atkins had been arrested on unrelated charges and was spending time in the Sybil Brand Institute for Women. While there, she gave detailed confessions of the murders to at least two fellow inmates. She claimed that the Family had already committed eleven murders, and "many more were going to die." Both of these women tried to pass this information along to the LAPD, but both were repeatedly denied permission to do so. This was in spite of the fact that one of the female jailers to whom these requests were

made was at the time dating one of the Tate case homicide detectives. One of the inmates later said: "It was the hardest thing I've ever tried to do in my life, to get anyone to listen to me."

It would appear then that the LAPD had, among other evidence, all of the following at its disposal: the eyewitness account of a participant in the crimes; the gun used in the crimes; and the statements of two close associates of the killers directly implicating them in the crimes. Yet they chose not to act on any of this for a period of several months.

Though no serial killer/mass murderer in history has likely achieved the level of notoriety, or generated the volume of media coverage, that Charles Manson has, many of the most compelling facts of the Manson case remain largely unknown to the public. Of particular significance, perhaps, are the myriad levels on which the killers and the victims were connected. One of those connections was provided by none other than Anton LaVey. At least one of Charlie's girls, known locally as the "Witches of Mendocino," was recruited from LaVey's Church of Satan. Susan "Sexy Sadie" Atkins was one of many dancers in LaVey's stable, collectively known as the "Topless Witches Review." Atkins later credited LaVey with starting her down the road to murder. Family member Bobby Beausoleil, who was a roommate and, by some accounts, a lover of child star-turned underground filmmaker Kenneth Anger, was also recruited from the Church of Satan.

Interestingly enough, LaVey had connections to the victims as well. He had formed a close association with Roman Polanski shortly before the murders when he served as the technical consultant for Polanski on the film "Rosemary's Baby," in which he also made a cameo appearance as—who else?—Satan. On the set of an earlier film, Tate herself had reportedly been initiated into witchcraft by Alexander Saunders. Sammy Davis, Jr., who was introduced to the Church of Satan by Manson victim Jay Sebring, has said of the victims who were killed at Tate's Cielo Drive residence: "Everyone there had at one time or another been into satanism." Some newspaper reports at the time of the slayings, denounced as sensationalism, were rife with reports that the Polanskis were satanists who hosted drug and sex orgies. Indeed, just days before the murders a drug dealer was reportedly filmed being whipped at the house in an S&M ritual. Various celebrities were said to have been attendance. Actor Dennis Hopper spoke in interviews of sadistic movies filmed at the house that featured some of Hollywood's biggest names.

Another connection was provided by the Esalen Institute, a 'new age' retreat in Monterrey with ties to Crowley enthusiast Timothy Leary's like-minded Himalayan Academy. Manson had ties to both. He had in fact visited Esalen, where Robert DeGrimston of the Process Church reportedly lectured occasionally,

just a few days before the Tate killings. On the very day of the murders, someone from within the Polanski home placed a call to the Institute for reasons unknown. One of the victims, Abigail Folger, may have visited the retreat just a few days before Manson's visit. Author Robert Heinlein was also reportedly invited to lecture at Esalen. Heinlein, who, like Hubbard, first gained notice penning pieces for *Astounding Science Fiction*, is probably best known as the author of the 1961 novel *Stranger in a Strange Land*. The book provided Manson with a Crowley-inspired script to follow, and it was one of the few books that Charlie allowed his disciples to read. Heinlein was a right-winger with strong authoritarian leanings who to this day, nevertheless, continues to be promoted by various voices in the progressive community.

Another link between the principals in the case was provided by singer "Mama" Cass Elliot. Victims Voytek Frykowski and Jay Sebring, who had a history of sadism, were both part of Cass's clique, as were Manson and some of his followers. Victim Abigail Folger may have been as well. Folger had also been friends for a time with Charles Manson himself, as well as with convicted *Cotton Club* killer Bill Mentzer. Four of the LAPD's top initial suspects in the Tate murder case were members of Cass Elliot's inner circle. They remained prime suspects for the first month of the investigation. One member of that circle was Pic Dawson, the flamboyant son of a U.S. State Department official and an on-and-off boyfriend of Cass. Dawson had lived in the home of victims Frykowski and Folger in the summer before the killings while the ill-fated pair house-sat for the Polanskis at the future crime scene: 10050 Cielo Drive, later renumbered, appropriately enough, 10066 Cielo Drive.

Another connection between killers and victims was provided by their shared interest in drug trafficking. Several of the victims—including Voytek Frykowski, Abigail Folger, and Sharon Tate herself—were linked to the trafficking of hallucinogens. Rosemary LaBianca was a known trafficker of methamphetamine, and likely other drugs as well. Frykowski had reportedly secured a deal just before the murders that would have made him the exclusive distributor of MDA in the L.A. area, his operations financed with coffee heiress Folger's considerable financial resources. Jay Sebring, who before the murders had once appeared in an underground movie that also featured Mansonite Bobby Beausoleil, appears to have been involved in the drug trade as well. A man named Joel Rostau is known to have delivered drugs to Sebring at the Cielo house just hours before the murders. Rostau was found murdered the next year in New York City. Another Sebring associate showed up dead just a month later in Florida. Immediately following the killings on Cielo Drive, Sebring's house was thoroughly cleaned by friends before police arrived to conduct a search.

The Manson family was also heavily involved in drug dealing, including trafficking in LSD, hashish, marijuana and cocaine. Just a couple of days after the killings, Manson was seen driving a black Mercedes Benz possibly owned by an underling of a man named Ronald Stark. Around that same time, Stark assumed the role of banker for the 'Brotherhood of Eternal Love,' a tax-exempt 'church' that was formed by a motorcycle gang with close ties to Timothy Leary. The Brotherhood was led by a man named "Farmer" John Griggs. At the same time as the Tate murders, Griggs allegedly overdosed on PCP at the group's ranch in Idyllwild, California. A month earlier, a teenage friend of Leary's daughter had been found drowned at the ranch. The death of Griggs resulted in a massive shake-up at the organization that resulted in the shadowy Stark becoming the Brotherhood's sole banker and money manager. Under Stark's guiding hand, the Brotherhood became the largest known producer and distributor of LSD in the world, producing some 50 million doses. Stark was also closely linked to a parallel acid-producing operation in the UK dubbed the "Microdot Gang," which likewise produced millions of hits of LSD in the early 1970s. While running his empire, Stark was known to have extensive contacts with American embassy personnel and to have frequent visitors from both the British and the American consulates.

Were the Manson killings in reality part of what might be dubbed "The Great Acid Coup of 1969"? Were they the result of an operation aimed at, among other things, killing off some competitors, intimidating others, and consolidating control of the hallucinogenic drug market? The possibility clearly exists. Police originally were drawn to the theory that the killings were drug related. Other early theories were that the killings were occult inspired, or that the true motive could be found in what was dubbed 'fame-porn.' Films and videos found at the Polanski home suggested an elite Hollywood wife-swapping operation. The Folger/Frykowski home also yielded a box of erotic photos of Hollywood's elite.

There were also indications of the involvement of organized crime in the killings. Leno LaBianca had known underworld connections to whom he reportedly owed nearly $250,000 in gambling debts. At the time of the murders, the LaBianca home—which I must add, perhaps gratuitously, was once owned by Walt Disney—was known to have its phone lines tapped. I could also add here, perhaps rather gratuitously as well, that Walt Disney was a direct descendent, on his mother's side, of George Burroughs—reportedly the 'grand wizard' of the witches executed in Salem in 1692.

One mistaken impression that many people have about the Manson case is that the homes where the attacks took place were largely chosen at random. That was hardly the case. Manson was very familiar with the Polanski/Tate home, which he had visited in the past. Manson knew both the owner of the Cielo Drive

home, Rudy Altobelli, and the previous tenant, Terry Melcher, who along with Charlie was involved with the Process Church (as was John Phillips, Cass Elliot's bandmate and another associate of Manson). Charlie was familiar with the LaBianca home as well; it was right next door to the home of Harold True, who had hosted LSD parties attended by Charlie and his followers before the murders.

One particularly bizarre fact about the Tate killings that has gone largely unreported is that the crime scene appeared to have been rearranged after the killers had left. An attempt appeared to have been made to pose the victims bodies on the home's front porch, after which the corpses were reposed inside the house. Evidence of tampering with the crime scene included an unidentified bloody boot heel print found on the front porch of the house and a number of unidentified fingerprints on the premises.

Manson was ultimately arrested on charges unrelated to the murders on October 12, Aleister Crowley's birthday, following a raid on the Family compound, and was only later charged in connection to the killings. Charlie had previously been arrested or charged on forty or more occasions. One of those arrests, in 1967, was made by a narcotics team led by the LAPD's Frank Salerno. Salerno would later lead the task forces investigating both the Hillside Strangler murders and the Night Stalker killings.

When the Manson case came to trial, there were the usual strange occurrences that seem to plague serial killer trials. The lead defense attorney, Ronald Hughes, had just passed the bar and had yet to try a single case. He was, needless to say, a rather odd choice to spearhead the defense of one of the most vigorously prosecuted and high-profile murder cases of all time. Hughes soon went missing, and later turned up dead on the very day that death sentences were returned by the jury. Family member John Philip "Zero" Haught, not charged with playing a role in the murders, also turned up dead, allegedly after playing a game of Russian Roulette. Another member of the Family was whisked away to Patton State Hospital, which was reportedly deeply immersed in overt behavior modification experiments in the 1970s. Perhaps the most troubling aspect of the trial was that the defense team rested their case without bothering to actually present one. Courtroom viewers were stunned when not a single witness was called to rebut the prosecution's case, thereby virtually guaranteeing a win for Bugliosi and the state. Also of note is that then-President Richard Nixon declared Manson guilty on national television, nearly causing a mistrial, but ultimately greatly aiding the prosecution's efforts.

When it was all over, Judge Oder pronounced death sentences for Charlie, Patricia Krenwinkle, Susan Atkins, and Leslie VanHouten. The sentences were delivered on, of all days, April 19, 1971. The year before, Bobby Beausoleil had become the first Family member to receive a death sentence when the jury trying

him returned the sentence in the Gary Hinman murder trial. The date was April 21, 1970.

Perhaps in no other serial killer case has the subject of mind control played a more central role. That Charlie had a remarkable ability to control his followers is a well-established and widely acknowledged fact. Even more remarkable is that Manson has maintained much of that control from inside a prison cell for over thirty years now. In fact, the control that he had over his disciples was the primary basis for Manson's murder convictions. While it was Charlie's face that came to symbolize the killings, he did not personally participate in the Tate/LaBianca murders. According to the official version of events, he was not even present at the crime scenes when the murders took place; he merely suggested to his followers what they should do, and they obligingly followed his commands. In order to convict Manson then, it was necessary for the prosecution to convince the jury that the actual killers were virtually powerless to disobey their leader. For this reason, the Manson trial had no real precedent in American legal history. What the Manson case demonstrated was that it could be proven in a court of law that a person could be compelled to essentially act against his/her will. That had already been established in a Danish court in a landmark case recalled by Estabrooks in *Hypnotism*:

> An amateur hypnotist named Nielson had induced an hypnotic subject named Hardrup to commit a murder…Nielson, the hypnotist, got a life sentence, the maximum penalty in Denmark, whereas Hardrup, the actual murderer, received a two-year sentence on the basis of temporary insanity.

The Manson case had a slightly different outcome: Manson, the hypnotist, received the death penalty, the maximum sentence in the State of California, and so too did the actual murderers. Legally and logically, that verdict made little sense. For if Manson's control was so complete that the killers were powerless to resist his commands, then they should not have been held legally accountable for their actions. And if Charlie did not wield such power, then he should not have been held responsible for the actions of others. Prosecutor Vincent Bugliosi did not address that inherent contradiction in his prosecution strategy in his widely read book, *Helter Skelter*. He did ponder, albeit briefly, how Manson gained such control over his subjects. He concluded that that remains "the most puzzling question of all." Indeed. After spending just a few pages briefly summarizing some of the techniques Manson employed on his followers, Bugliosi surmised:

> I tend to think that there is something more, some missing link that enabled him to so rape and bastardize the minds of his followers that they would go against the most ingrained of all commandments, Thou shalt not kill, and willingly, even eagerly, murder at his command.

Charlie himself once gave an indication of how he controlled his flock: "If you want to get to people and unlock their minds, the basic way you get to them is through fear." That was a concept that borrowed from the teachings of the Process Church. In a summer 1969 interview, *Beach Boy* Dennis Wilson spoke of "getting the fear." In the same interview, he referred to Charlie as "the Wizard."

While pondering the question of *how* Manson was able to exert such control, Bugliosi largely ignores a perhaps even more important question: *where* did Charlie learn the techniques that he was obviously so skilled at? Bugliosi notes only that it "may be something that he learned from others," which, of course, is only stating the obvious. The question not asked, either in the book or at trial, is: who were these others? One possible answer can be found among the personnel at the Haight-Asbury Free Clinic in the late 1960s. Two employees of the clinic—Dr. Roger Smith, a research criminologist who had started the clinic's drug treatment program, and Dr. David Smith, who founded the clinic itself—were both involved in government-sponsored research on human behavior. Both had connections to Manson and his followers. In fact, Roger Smith was Charlie's parole officer.

Another question never addressed by Bugliosi is how it was possible that a man of limited education, who had spent the majority of his life behind bars, somehow acquired those skills while U.S. intelligence agencies, after investing countless millions of dollars in decades of research aimed at attaining that very same goal, have allegedly met with nothing but failure. It defies explanation that men such as Manson—or Jim Jones, David Koresh, *et al*—have stumbled upon a secret that the CIA has yet to discover. It is a patently absurd notion, and yet that is exactly what we are supposed to believe. We are also supposed to believe that Charlie, while controlling the actions of others, was himself acting on his own free will. That is highly unlikely.

If Charlie was in fact controlling the Family, the logical question to be asked at trial was: who was controlling Manson? Was Manson himself a puppet, as well as a puppeteer? That question, naturally, was never raised and so remains largely unanswered to this day. Perhaps Bugliosi felt that question unimportant, given that, according to his book, "The Manson case was, and remains, unique." Dr. Roger Smith saw things a little differently. In December 1969, he told *Life* magazine: "There are a lot of Charlies running around, believe me."

(The story of Charles Manson is an endlessly fascinating one. It is also a story that is difficult to tell in a linear fashion, because Charlie and his victims were connected to so many people on so many different levels. For a nonlinear look at the Manson story, see http://www.davesweb.cnchost.com/wtc13.html.)

* * * * *

Relatively little has been written about the murder of Dr. Vincent Ohta and his family on October 19, 1970, though the crime was no less sensational than the slaughter at the Polanski/Tate residence the year before. There were two marked differences between the Santa Cruz crime scene and the Benedict Canyon crime scene: in Santa Cruz, none of the victims was a national celebrity and the job was done more professionally.

In a spectacular home overlooking the bay, Dr. Ohta, his secretary, Dorothy Cadwallader, his wife, Virginia, and his sons, Derrick and Taggert, were bound and blindfolded and then shot in the head from behind, execution style. They were then tossed into the home's pool, some of them while they were still alive. The house was then set afire in several locations, thus destroying the crime scene. The family's Rolls Royce and Lincoln Continental were parked across the home's driveway entrances, denying access to the emergency vehicles that attempted to respond to the fires. A third car, a 1968 Oldsmobile station wagon, was missing.

There was little in the way of crime scene evidence. The main portion of the house was completely gutted by the fires. The victims' bodies had been washed clean in the pool. A driving rain in the early morning hours had thoroughly washed away any footprints or other evidence that might have been left outside the home. Police initially said that they had found no scrawled messages and no evidence of burglary. When the missing Oldsmobile was found, torched and abandoned in a tunnel, it also failed to yield any evidence.

Although there was little for police to work with, one thing seemed clear enough: these murders were not the work of a lone perpetrator. Some investigators, and much of the public, immediately suspected that another homicidal cult was at work. It seemed very unlikely that a sole assailant would have been able to bind all five victims, drag all their bodies out to the pool, start multiple fires, blockade the driveway, and then make a clean getaway. Two guns were used in the commission of the crimes—the .38 caliber weapon that killed Dr. Ohta and the .22 caliber weapon that killed the others. A witness reported seeing three people in the vicinity of the abandoned Oldsmobile, and three sets of footprints were found leading from the tunnel to an adjacent river. Two people who fit the

witness' description were reportedly found in the search area, but there is no indication of what became of those potential suspects.

For obvious reasons, a Sheriff's spokesman announced at a press conference that police were seeking more than one perpetrator. A few days later, however, John Frazier was arrested and charged with being the sole perpetrator of the crimes. An initial report on the arrest falsely claimed that Frazier had waged a gun battle with police, when he was actually taken into custody without incident.

John Frazier had been placed in foster care at the age of five. He later ended up in a series of juvenile detention facilities. He was said to have a history of sleepwalking and horrifying nightmares. Despite his troubled upbringing, a friend described Frazier as having been a perfectly normal family man and competent mechanic, right up until the time that he suddenly changed his lifestyle dramatically and began speaking gibberish. On July 4, 1970, just three months before the murders, Frazier left his wife. At that time, he apparently took up residence in a shack, accessible via a drawbridge, on property near the Ohta residence. While living there, he reportedly collected guns.

Following his arrest, Frazier was assigned James Jackson, the chief assistant public defender of Santa Cruz County, as his defense counsel. Assisting Jackson was Harold Cartwright, a former U.S. Marine and police lieutenant working as Jackson's private investigator. Also brought on board by Jackson was Donald Lunde, a former Navy man and a professor of psychiatry at the Stanford University Medical School, not far from Santa Cruz. This team remained together to handle the Kemper and Mullin cases as well. Also on the same team, for all practical purposes, was prosecutor Peter Chang. It is unclear whether these four men knew each other before the Frazier trial began, but in his book, Lunde makes it clear that he, Chang, Jackson and Cartwright were fast friends by trial's end, and frequently saw each other socially thereafter. This undoubtedly made it much easier to coordinate the shamelessly fraudulent Kemper and Mullin trials.

On October 28, 1970, a grand jury indicted Frazier on five counts of murder. The defendant entered a plea of "not guilty," which was later changed, on January 19, 1971, to "not guilty by reason of insanity." A gag order was issued and the trial was moved to Redwood City, but the Santa Cruz team remained on the case. Helming the trial, which began in October 1971, was Judge Charles Franich. By late November, Frazier had been convicted on all five murder counts. It is unclear what evidence those convictions were based on. No murder weapon was ever found, so there was no ballistics evidence. There were no witnesses to the crime, and virtually all forensics evidence was destroyed by the fires and the rain. One witness reportedly identified Frazier as the driver of the abandoned Oldsmobile. It was claimed at one time by the DA's office that fingerprints had been recovered from a typewriter found in the incinerated home, but it was later acknowledged

that that statement had not been accurate. It was also claimed, implausibly enough, that fingerprints were recovered from a beer can found in the home.

Dr. Lunde seems to have played a key role in garnering the convictions when he testified (for the defense, mind you) that Frazier had confessed the crimes to him during a psychiatric examination. Lunde also assured the court: "He's crazy." John Frazier illustrated that point when he arrived for court during the penalty phase of the trial with half his head and face shaved clean. He was sentenced to death, but that sentence was later set aside by a 1976 Supreme Court decision.

There are many questions left unanswered in the Ohta/Frazier case. Among them is the question of what Dorothy Cadwallader was doing at the Ohta home. Cadwallader worked at Ohta's office, not at his home, and she was not known to be a visitor to the residence. Press reports claimed that she was there to baby-sit, but Cadwallader's husband denied those reports. He had no explanation for why his wife was there that fateful day.

Another lingering question concerns the typewritten note that a press release claimed was found under the windshield wiper of the Rolls Royce, contradicting initial reports that there were no notes or messages found. Of course, a typewritten note fits in quite well with the claim of a fingerprint-laden typewriter. That typewriter, unfortunately, did not actually exist. The note, however, lives on. It read, in part:

> halloween…1970
> today world war 3 will begin as brought to you by the pepole of the free universe.

* * * * *

Edmund Kemper III and Herbert Mullin—Santa Cruz's dueling serial killers—lived what were, in many respects, strangely parallel lives.

Both were born the sons of World War II heroes, Kemper on December 18, 1948, and Mullin on April 18, 1947. Edmund Emil Kemper, Jr. was a Special Forces operative whose specialty, according to his son, was suicide missions. Martin William Mullin served as a highly decorated captain in the Pacific. According to *his* son, Martin voluntarily committed himself to a mental hospital at the close of the war. Both of these men liked to regale their sons with graphic war stories. Young Herb was taught that violence is natural, and Ed's childhood home was filled with what Margaret Cheney described as "mementos of battlefield gore and heroics."

In their youth, both Herb and Ed received training in firearms from the National Rifle Association while at summer camp. Both would later be accused and convicted of killing with the cold precision of a professional assassin. Both were also labeled 'serial killers,' though both were convicted of crimes that evidence suggests they did not commit—at least not alone.

Both of their alleged killing sprees began in 1972 in Santa Cruz, California and both were arrested in early 1973. Following those arrests, the two were assigned adjoining jail cells, appointed the same defense attorney, examined by the same psychiatrist, and their cases were prosecuted by the same district attorney, at least until Chang bowed out of the Mullin case due to a medical emergency. Kemper and Mullin were both found guilty, both determined to be sane, and both were sent to California's Vacaville Medical Facility, which has been well documented as a hotbed of covert intelligence operations. Not long before their killing sprees began, both men spent a considerable amount of time in mental institutions, both voluntarily and involuntarily. In the two years leading up to the convictions of Kemper and Mullin, at least seventy-four men, women and children were killed in the state of California by released mental patients.

* * * * *

Herb Mullin was, by all outward appearances, the quintessential All-American boy. He was a bright student, a talented athlete, and was popular enough to have been voted "most likely to succeed" by his graduating class at San Lorenzo Valley High School. But he was also known to consume large quantities of hallucinogenic drugs and he had "Legalize Acid" boldly tattooed across his stomach.

On April 21, 1968, just three days after his 21st birthday, Mullin was arrested for possession of the substance referenced in another of Herb's tattoos: "Eagle Eyes Marijuana." He cryptically wrote to his parents of that experience: "That day the GAME started." For the 'crime' of possessing marijuana, Herb was given probation and, on Halloween day, committed to San Luis Obispo General Hospital. The personable young man—who was known to have a keen interest in astrology, numerology, reincarnation, magic and the occult—was institutionalized at least four more times over the next few years, including a voluntary commitment to Mendocino State Hospital near Ukiah. On July 30, 1970, Herb was again arrested on drug charges and ordered into the psychiatric ward of the county hospital.

That same year, he met an older woman named Pat Brown at a Santa Cruz commune, and she soon thereafter convinced him to accompany her to Maui. Once there, Herb was once again committed to a mental hospital. According to

Manson chronicler Ed Sanders, the hospital was run by the U.S. Army. Sanders also claimed, in a letter to famed 'conspiracy' researcher Mae Brussell, that a mind control project in operation on the Hawaiian Islands at the time was specifically aimed at creating 'serial killers.' While on Maui, Mullin—whose other tattoos read "Mahashamadhi," "Kriya Yoga," and the word "Birth" with two crosses—also spent time at the Krishna Temple. Upon his return to the mainland, he was met at the airport by the son of a prominent local doctor, Richard Koch. Mullin reportedly revealed to him that he had received electroshock treatments while on Maui.

On March 28, 1971, Mullin was again arrested, this time for being drunk in public and resisting an officer. He served ten days in jail and then, in May, moved to San Francisco, where he remained for the next sixteen months, although later he had only vague memories of that lengthy period. For the most part, he could not account for that entire one-and-a-half-year slice of his life. He lived in the city's 'Tenderloin' district, where Charlie Manson had taken up residence just a few years earlier. Herb stayed in the company of young male hustlers in a series of seedy hotel rooms and, at times, in his car. Friends and acquaintances from that period of his life universally described him as sweet, tender, sensitive, and completely incapable of killing anyone. Strangely though, he also appears to have been a Golden Gloves boxer during that time.

Throughout his adult life, Herb complained frequently of voices in his head, haunting his thoughts. He regularly told those around him that he was receiving messages, including commands to kill, that were delivered in his father's voice. Herb would later state: "I feel that I was under my father's control, like a robot." Mullin was also known to tell people that his father, a Mason, was a mass murderer responsible for countless unsolved killings up and down the California coast. During the largely blacked-out period that he spent in San Francisco, Herb engaged in what is known as backward writing, a hypnotically conditioned skill that is frequently indicative of mind control programming. Mullin was ultimately diagnosed as suffering from MPD; his alters were said to include a Mexican laborer, an Eastern philosopher, and, bizarrely enough, local columnist and unofficial Anton LaVey publicist Herb Caen.

Herb returned from San Francisco to his parent's Santa Cruz home in September 1972, and allegedly began his killing spree just a few weeks later. He allegedly purchased a six-shot .22 revolver from a gun shop on December 22, the winter solstice. Around that same time, the former Conscientious Objector inexplicably decided to enlist in the U.S. Marines. On January 15, he passed both the physical and mental entrance examinations, a rather remarkable feat considering that at the time he was just a few weeks away from being arrested and charged as a serial killer. He also had a criminal record, which his recruiter opted to waive.

Herb's arrest preempted his military plans. Once in custody, he was interrogated by police, throughout which he robotically chanted the single word "silence" to virtually all questions posed to him, as if repeating an instruction that had been programmed into his brain. He later claimed that, once incarcerated, he began receiving telepathic messages instructing him to kill himself, but he was able to resist acting on those orders. Had Mullin elected to commit suicide, the state surely would have breathed a sigh of relief. After all, they would have been spared the burden of staging a blatantly fraudulent trial.

From the moment of Herb's arrest, there were clear indications that he was being railroaded—by the very same team, as noted previously, that sent John Frazier to death row. There were also clear signs from early on that Mullin may not have been responsible for many of the crimes for which he was charged, most of which looked for all the world like contract hits. The killing of Father Tomei, for example, was very likely a professional hit. Tomei, who was raised in an orphanage during World War I, was internationally known both as a hero of the French resistance during World War II, and for having organized a chorus for troubled youth made up primarily of boys from abusive homes. This chorus toured internationally, which, though it is merely speculation, would have provided an ideal 'front' for an underage male prostitution racket.

An eyewitness to the slaying of Tomei described his assailant as young, white, 6' tall, and wearing a black leather jacket. Herb was only 5' 7" tall and never owned a black leather jacket. Although he certainly could have borrowed the jacket, the five-inch height discrepancy is a little harder to explain. Mullin did have a connection to Tomei: Herb's second cousin, Monsignor Edwin Kennedy, was a close friend of the slain priest.

Mullin may or may not have been responsible for the nearly simultaneous mass murders at the homes of Jim Gianera and Bob Francis. One witness described the possible assailant as being short and of medium build, which accurately described Herb. But the witness also stated that he thought the man was Mexican, which Mullin definitely was not, although, as previously mentioned, one of his alter egos was. One thing that is known for sure is that Herb knew the victims quite well, which illustrates yet another flaw in the public's perception of the nature of serial crime. In fact, a number of the killers profiled herein knew at least some of their victims, and sometimes knew them quite well.

Another thing that is quite clear is that the Gianera and Francis families were not randomly selected victims. Rather, they were almost certainly the targets of professional hits. Both Francis and Gianera were known drug dealers, as were Gianera's two brothers. And word on the street at the time of the killings was that Jim and Bob were snitches. It is, therefore, extremely unlikely that the simultaneous assaults on their two homes were random acts of violence.

Bob Francis was not at home at the time of the killings, but his wife and two young sons were summarily and quite professionally executed with a .22 round to the head. One of those sons, Herb's youngest alleged victim at just four years old, was named Daemon—which is a nice name to give to your kid, if your name happens to be, say, Lucifer. At the Gianera home, both Jim and his wife Joan were killed with multiple gunshot and stab wounds. Strangely, both Jim and Joan's families arrived at the crime scene before the police were notified. The house looked as though it had been thoroughly searched, though whether by the killers or by the victims' families is unclear. Police later found two .22 casings in Bob Francis' car, though that is obviously far from being conclusive evidence of guilt.

Another mass murder attributed to Mullin, the slaughter of four teenaged campers, appeared to have been the work of multiple perpetrators—unless, that is, one chooses to believe that one man wielding a six-shot revolver can overpower four healthy young men armed with a rifle. This crime also looked very much like a professional job. All four victims were coldly and methodically dispatched with a single small caliber shot to the head from point-blank range. Evidence at the scene suggested that there had definitely been a struggle, yet the boys loaded and unfired rifle was found still lying within easy reach of where the teens' bodies lay dead.

The final murder attributed to Herb was the sniper shooting of a retired boxer who was felled with a single shot to the chest from 100 feet away, in what appeared to be yet another professional hit. Just days later, prosecutor Chang filed six murder counts against Mullin, even though three witnesses were unable to pick him out of a police line-up. Eight days later, four more murder counts were added and a sweeping gag order was issued barring any public statements on the case from anyone involved. On March 1, Mullin appeared before a judge, accompanied by attorney Jackson, and shocked the courtroom by entering a *nolo contendere* plea and a request to represent himself. When the judge rejected both the plea and the request, Herb immediately offered up a guilty plea. The judge, however, insisted on going through with the mockery of a trial. Dispensing with a preliminary hearing, the case was instead sent to a grand jury, which issued indictments on all ten murder counts on March 14. The transcript of those proceedings, naturally enough, was sealed by the judge.

Mullin's defense counsel, Jackson, got things rolling by introducing a number of pre-trial motions that rather shamelessly sold his client out. Jackson told the court that there was no reason to change the venue of the trial, despite a massive amount of pre-trial publicity demonizing Mullin, and despite the unprecedented climate of fear in Santa Cruz engendered by the alleged actions of Kemper, Frazier, Mullin, *et al.* He also made an unprecedented request that jury questioning, known as *voir dire*, be conducted in the judge's chambers. The request was granted and the jury was, without precedent, selected away from the eyes of the press and public.

As California law requires that a defendant pleading "not guilty by reason of insanity" also maintain their factual innocence, two trials are generally required to dispose of such a case: one to determine factual guilt; and the second to determine sanity, and therefore legal guilt. In a most remarkable move, however, Jackson agreed with the prosecutor and the judge that the two should be combined into one, since it was universally claimed that there was no question about factual guilt. The 'trial,' in other words, began with the presumption of guilt as its starting point, completely doing away with the notion that, in the American criminal justice system, all defendants are presumed innocent until proven guilty in a court of law.

When the trial began on July 30, 1973, the judge opened the proceedings by explaining to the secretly selected jurors the five possible verdicts they were to consider: guilty of first degree murder; guilty of second degree murder, guilty of voluntary manslaughter; guilty of involuntary manslaughter; or not guilty by reason of insanity. Notably absent from that list, from the very beginning of the trial, was "not guilty." Not to be outdone, defense counsel Jackson began his opening statement by declaring: "Friday the 13th, October 1972, Herbert William Mullin took a baseball bat and clubbed one Lawrence White to death." Not only had he declared his client guilty of murder, *he had implicated him in a crime he had never even been charged with*. Jackson's opening act also included this little gem: "We do not, as you know, intend to argue the proposition that [Herb] did not commit these killings." He did not, in other words, intend to actually defend his client.

With Mullin's guilt having been predetermined—albeit with no actual physical evidence to support that conclusion—the state presented its case in just four days, with the 'facts' established rather perfunctorily and without a hint of any objections from the defense table. The defense team, in fact, did not bother to challenge any of the supposed facts of the case, which would not have withstood any sort of scrutiny. Truth be told, the state need not have presented a case at all; the defense did a fine job of establishing Mullin's guilt. Playing a central role in that charade was Dr. Donald Lunde, who took the stand and proceeded to reveal what was purportedly Herb's own account of the murders, which the doctor claimed that Mullin had confessed to both he and Cartwright.

Not long into this testimony, Herb objected and requested that Jackson promptly terminate his questioning of Lunde, which was obviously eliciting testimony that was damaging to Herb's case. Mullin noted of Lunde's testimony: "different aspects and different facets of the story which I related are being portrayed completely false as to how I made them." He also informed the judge that, "in conference, they [Lunde and Jackson] explained that they would portray the reasons for my derangement." The judge, needless to say, declined to halt Lunde's

testimony, which was essential for establishing Mullin's alleged guilt, which is why, I suppose, the testimony was being solicited by the *defense* team.

Herb voiced numerous other complaints during his trial and frequently questioned the competence and integrity of his appointed defenders, noting at one point the fact that Jackson, his lead attorney, refused to communicate with him in writing. Herb also strenuously objected to the misuse by Lunde of videotapes that the doctor had made of Herb's supposed confessions. Mullin even went so far as to state, rather bluntly, that he was the victim of a huge conspiracy. Despite his deep mistrust of Lunde, the doctor was nevertheless able to convince Mullin to take the stand in his own defense, which any first year law student knows almost never benefits anyone other than the prosecution. While on the stand, Herb was asked directly by Jackson to explain why he had killed thirteen people, to which he responded: "All right. First of all, you have heard me say before that I am a scapegoat, sort of an outcast who has been made to become a scapegoat."

That was not, it seems safe to say, the response that Jackson had hoped to elicit.

On August 19, 1973, the jury returned with guilty verdicts on all ten murder counts. The failure of the pitiful attempt at an insanity defense was due in no small part to a statement from Lunde to the jury: "as a practical matter, whether somebody is dangerous or not, there is no place to put him." The message was quite clear: finding Mullin to be insane would essentially mean setting him free. The jury had essentially been instructed to find Herb guilty, and it did just that. He was sentenced to life in prison and promptly shipped off to Vacaville, before ultimately landing in San Quentin. Over the years, he was periodically shipped back to Vacaville, perhaps in need of a tune-up.

To fully understand the depths of Lunde's cravenness, one need look no further than the doctor's own words, written in his self-serving book on the case: "I had learned years earlier that the best course after a psychiatric interview of a criminal defendant is for me to return to my office, immediately dictate a summary of my notes, and destroy the originals." That is, needless to say, a course of action to be taken only when one feels the need to cover something up, and a course of action that should have disqualified Lunde as a credible witness in the case.

The final words on the Mullin case were written by Kenneth Springer, the jury foreman, who wrote to then-Governor of California Ronald Reagan: "I hold the state executive and state legislative offices as responsible for these 10 lives as I do the defendant himself—none of this need ever have happened." Springer probably had no idea how true those words really were. Nor did he likely know that the very same words could be as accurately applied to the case of Edmund Kemper.

* * * * *

When Ed Kemper was just a toddler, his father headed off for the Pacific, where he spent two years working on the U.S. atomic bomb testing program, as did the father of the so-called "Sunset Strip Killer"…but we'll get to that later.

Though it appears that efforts have been made to whitewash Kemper's childhood, there are clear indications that it was a horrifyingly abusive one. At one point in his young life, Ed was made to live in a dank, dark basement for eight consecutive months, the only access to which was through a trapdoor hidden beneath a kitchen table. From the age of eight, Ed engaged in an incestuous relationship with an older sister. At ten, he killed and beheaded his first cat, planted the severed head on a spindle and thereafter prayed over it. According to chronicler Margaret Cheney, he was prone to "zombie-like fits of staring," which is another way of saying that he had a strong tendency to dissociate.

At the tender age of fifteen, Kemper summarily executed both of his grandparents with single .22 caliber rounds to the backs of their heads. He was judged insane and, on December 6, 1964, was remanded by the California Youth Authority to Atascadero State Hospital, an enormous facility filled with convicted rapists, child molesters and other violent sex offenders. Kemper remained at Atascadero for five years. On staff there, near the end of his confinement, was none other than Dr. Donald Lunde. It is indeed a small world.

Remanded back to the CYA as 'cured,' Kemper was paroled three months later to his mother's care. Not long after, Ed began work on a particularly brutal string of murders, while at the very same time he successfully petitioned to have his juvenile record sealed. In pursuit of that latter goal, he reportedly once drove to Fresno for a required psychiatric exam with a freshly severed head in the trunk of his car.

Kemper spent a considerable amount of his free time hanging out at a bar called the "Jury Room," which served as a watering hole for local cops, sheriffs and prosecuting attorneys. Kemper was quite well known there, where he was affectionately known as "Big Ed," even by the regulars who were aware of his colorful history. This theme of alleged serial killers maintaining close ties with various law enforcement agencies and personnel is one that will be revisited frequently in this book. In fact, many of the men profiled herein, including Ed Kemper, aspired to careers in law enforcement themselves.

By April 1973, Kemper had been charged with savagely murdering six female hitchhikers between May 1972 and February 1973. He followed those killings up with his swansong—bludgeoning his own mother to death, beheading her, raping her headless corpse, and then, according to some reports, using her severed head as a dartboard. Ed then called to invite his mother's friend over to the house that he shared with his mom and, upon her arrival, quickly dealt with her in a similar manner. This double murder occurred, strangely enough, on April 21,

1973—exactly five years to the day from the date on which Herb Mullin had noted that the "GAME" had begun. Kemper quickly fled the state, ending up in Pueblo, Colorado after a making a stop at the University of Nevada campus for reasons unknown.

On April 23, Big Ed called some of his drinking buddies at the Santa Cruz Police Department and promptly began confessing his crimes. Pueblo police arrested him as he stood at a public payphone talking to the Santa Cruz officers. In his nearby car were 3 guns and 200 rounds of ammunition. He had apparently left some of his arsenal at home; his sister claimed that Ed owned at least six guns, including a .22 Ruger pistol, which is the one that he allegedly used to inflict the fatal head wounds that killed many of his victims. Why Ed chose to turn himself in and give up without a fight, after making his roundabout escape equipped with a mini arsenal, remains a mystery.

Though there is no question that Kemper was involved in the killings (he did, after all, document his handiwork with Polaroids), there is evidence to suggest that others may have been involved as well. An eyewitness to the abduction of one victim, for instance, described a "fairly tall male Caucasian" driving a "cream or tan-colored sedan." Kemper's car was bright yellow, and he was hardly what would be considered "fairly tall." Kemper, in fact, was known as Big Ed for good reason: he was a giant of a man, standing 6' 9" tall and weighing in at 280 pounds. It would have been nearly impossible for any potential eyewitnesses not to notice his imposing stature.

One particularly bizarre aspect of the crimes attributed to Ed Kemper and Herb Mullin is that the body of one of Ed's alleged victims and the body of one of Herb's alleged victims were found buried in the virtually the same isolated, remote location. As Kemper himself noted, the body of his victim was discovered "amazingly close to where the girl from Cabrillo was found up there, stabbed."

Kemper's trial was a largely pointless affair that featured the very same cast of characters that had starred in the Frazier and Mullin trials. No one in the courtroom ever questioned whether Ed was factually guilty of the crimes, or whether he had acted alone. After all, he had given what Cheney described as "one of the most detailed, articulate, and chilling confessions of sadism, murder, mutilation, cannibalism, and necrophilia in the annals of crime." He had also taken the time to document his barbarity with a large collection of 'snuff' photos. What the confessions and photos revealed was a series of unbelievably sadistic crimes that were laced with occult symbolism. This had led some avenues of the media to theorize, prior to Ed's arrest, that the yet-to-be-identified killer was a member of a devil-worshiping cult.

Just as Mullin had unwisely chosen to take the stand in his own defense, so too did Kemper. He testified that the killings arose from fantasies that began to build

in his head during his confinement at Atascadero. Attorney Jackson elaborated, adding that Ed had told California Youth Authority officials of "evil forces within him which tried to control his behavior." Incidentally, John Frazier, like Kemper, had spent time with the CYA; he also claimed, like Mullin, to hear voices in his head. The phenomenon of hearing voices, though considered by psychiatrists to be auditory hallucinations indicative of delusional thought processes, is actually a quite logical manifestation of both Multiple Personality Disorder and mind control programming, the two frequently going hand-in-hand. Many researchers have put forth the idea that the hearing of such voices, and particularly the receiving of specific commands, is a result of various high-tech forms of electromagnetic mind control, such as inter-cerebral implants. However, while such technology no doubt exists, it really is not necessary to explain the phenomenon of hearing voices—a phenomenon that long predates the development of any technological means to produce it.

In all probability, what the voices represent are the various alter personalities of a person with a severe dissociative disorder communicating with that person's core personality, which has no conscious awareness of the alters and so experiences their voices as disembodied "voices in the head." The voices, in other words, are essentially a one-way internal conversation between different personalities inhabiting the same body. In a sense then, the voices are not a delusion at all, for the afflicted person is not imagining that someone is talking to him; someone *is* talking to him. The problem is that the person is unaware that the person talking to him is actually within him. He is, in a very real sense, talking to himself.

Ed Kemper was probably familiar with the notion of voices in the head. As he once said, "I believe…that there are two people inside me." He also described experiencing a dissociative state while going about his grisly work: "It's almost like a blacking out. You know what you're doing but you don't notice anything else around." Ed was judged sane and guilty of eight counts of first-degree murder, giving him a career total of ten homicide convictions, just like Herb Mullin. He was sentenced to life in prison and sent to Vacaville, then later transferred to Folsom.

* * * * *

It seems somehow redundant to review the case of the so-called Vampire of Sacramento, Richard Chase, given that his story closely parallels that of Herb Mullin. Nevertheless, a brief review is in order.

Chase was born into a household where inter-familial violence was the order of the day. His parents reportedly fought constantly, and his father was

euphemistically described as a "strict disciplinarian." By the age of eighteen, Richard was receiving regular psychiatric care. In the late 1960s, Chase was twice arrested for possession of marijuana, the same charge that first brought Mullin into the orbit of the criminal justice system. Richard was also a suspect in a 1968 shooting, although he was never charged with the crime. In 1973, he was arrested for carrying a concealed weapon and, on December 1, he was admitted into the American River Hospital by order of the court, but was discharged not long after into the care of his mother. As Herb had done with his father, Richard took to accusing his mother of controlling his mind. Chase also began claiming in the mid-70s that he was receiving telepathic messages. He was known to hold conversations with people nobody else could see. And like Mullin, Chase reportedly had a healthy appetite for hallucinogenic drugs. His mother later claimed that her son's problems were due to him being the victim of LSD abuse.

Richard was again arrested in 1976 and, on April 28, just two days shy of *Walpurgisnacht*, was again admitted to American River Hospital. In June of that same year, his mother was granted a one-year conservatorship of the troubled young man. He was then transferred to Beverly Manor, where he became known to staff and fellow inmates as "Dracula." In September 1976, he was released. In June or July of the following year, Richard Chase made a very odd solo journey to Washington, D.C., for reasons unknown. He never explained to anyone, before or after the trip, the reason for his abrupt and unexpected sojourn. Immediately after that, on August 3, 1977, Chase was arrested at California's Pyramid Lake. Two loaded and bloodstained rifles were on the seat of his truck, along with Richard's bloodstained clothes and shoes. Also in the vehicle was a large bucket of blood in which was floating a fresh liver (later claimed to be from a cow). Chase—naked, dripping with fresh blood, and with dried blood caked in his hair, whiskers and ears—fled from the officers upon their approach. He was apprehended, arrested and charged with federal gun law violations. In a rather unlikely turn of events, all the charges were subsequently dropped.

Less than five months later, Chase's alleged killing spree began, just after he purchased a .22 semi-automatic handgun in early December 1977—just as Mullin had done in December 1972. On December 29, an engineer with the Federal Bureau of Land Management was picked off by a sniper in a car wielding a .22 caliber weapon—precisely mirroring one of the crimes attributed to Herb Mullin. Not quite a month after that, Teresa Wallin was killed with two contact wounds to the head from a .22, one pumped into her left temple. The slugs recovered from her head were said to be "similar" to the one that killed engineer Ambrose Griffin—which is not saying much, since any .22 slug would be similar to the one that killed Griffin.

Teresa Wallin was carved up and left on display. She was ripped open from her neck to her groin, with her sternum and breastplate split open. Some of her organs were removed and her left nipple was sliced off. She was then posed in the master bedroom on her back, with her splayed legs facing the hallway. Her corpse was found to contain a three-month-old fetus. Just four days later, in a scene reminiscent of the Ohta house after John Frazier's alleged visit, or the Francis home after Herb Mullin's alleged visit, Evelyn Miroth was found dead in her home, the victim of a .22 round fired above her left ear at very close range. A man described as a friend, Danny Meredith, caught two slugs to the head, one between the eyes and another next to his left ear. Young Jason Miroth, Evelyn's son, was shot above the left ear and in the back of the head. Missing from the home was twenty-two-month-old David Ferreira, Evelyn's nephew. He was also shot in the head, though his body was not discovered until much later.

Evelyn Miroth was also brutally mutilated after her death, as was young David Ferreira. Miroth was found nude, ripped open and with her legs splayed. Two household knives lay near her body. Her right eye had been partially removed and there were multiple cuts and stab wounds about her neck. She had been split down the middle, with a second cut across her abdomen intersecting the first gaping wound, thereby forming an inverted cross on her corpse—as was the case also with Mullin's alleged 'ripper' victim, whose body was discarded nearly alongside of one of Kemper's alleged victims. Another cut ran up the back of Evelyn Miroth's buttocks; tests revealed that semen was present in the wound. This semen was never matched to that of her alleged killer. The bathroom of the home was a gruesome sight, with blood all over the floor and bloody water left standing in the bathtub, indicating that Miroth was probably butchered there before being posed elsewhere.

Mirroring the situation five years earlier in Santa Cruz, the homicide rate in Sacramento soared during Chase's alleged murder spree. In the twenty-nine days between his first and last killings, no fewer than fourteen largely unexplained murders plagued the capital city. Included among the dead were a baby girl killed by her father and a baby boy killed by his mother. Both of these infanticidal parents drew three-year sentences, illustrating once again the appalling job done by the criminal 'justice' system in protecting the most vulnerable of Americans.

On January 28, just one day after the Miroth bloodbath, Richard Chase was arrested by a three-man team of detectives that had been working the case. Despite the fact that these were arguably the most sensational crimes in the city's history, the three were all rookies whose *combined* experience working homicide cases totaled just six months. It seemed almost as though the police, rather than turn the case over to its most seasoned homicide detectives, had opted to bring in a team of newcomers to handle the investigation.

At the time of his arrest, Chase believed that he was under investigation not for murder, but for killing dogs, which he apparently was in the habit of doing. The detectives quickly made clear that Richard was being charged with multiple counts of murder, which he repeatedly denied knowing anything about. He readily admitted though to killing the dogs, whose blood covered virtually everything in his apartment, including his handwritten notebook that reportedly featured drawings of swastikas. Chase was grilled relentlessly by detectives, who showed him photographs and filled him in on the details of the crimes they claimed he was guilty of committing. Steadfastly though, Chase maintained his innocence, at one point saying: "I just…I don't know. I don't understand how it could be me."[23]

Eventually two other detectives took over the questioning of Chase, showing him yet more graphic crime scene photos and hurling yet more accusations at him. Nevertheless, Richard continued to steadfastly deny any involvement in the murders and the detectives ultimately gave up and sent him to a cell. Once there, amazingly enough, Chase promptly confessed the murders to a trustee inmate. That is, at any rate, the way the official story reads.

To say that the case against Chase was weak would be a serious understatement. No forensics evidence placed him at, or even anywhere near any of the crime scenes: not one drop of blood, not one strand of hair, not a single fingerprint. No witnesses could place him at any of the scenes and no ballistics evidence linked him to any of the killings. The only evidence recovered at the Wallin crime scene consisted of latex glove prints and fresh shoeprints on the kitchen floor. The latter, oddly enough, were not noticed until hours after technicians began searching the home, and hours after investigators had been freely trampling over the

23 That statement by Chase may have been a telling one. Such speculative statements about one's own guilt or innocence, seeming to imply that the accused cannot say for certain, are quite common in the serial killer literature. Ted Bundy, who gave what are said to be 'confessions' by speculating on what the killer *may or may not* have done, was particularly notorious for such comments. These types of statements are generally attributed to the killer's desire to match wits with, and play games with, their pursuers, and/or to a desire to confess their crimes without actually giving a legally admissible confession—to take credit for their crimes without actually incriminating themselves. However, there is another explanation: it might be that many of these alleged killers cannot honestly say whether they are guilty. They know that the persona being questioned is not guilty, but they may not be able to rule out the possibility that another persona, utilizing their body, may indeed be guilty. That would be particularly true if the person has 'blacked-out' the timeframe when the crimes occurred.

alleged evidence. One detail of the crime scene strongly indicated that the killer was not Chase, but rather someone known to Teresa: her ever-vigilant German Shepherd, Brutus, was in the house at the time of the killing.

Two sisters of David Wallin—Teresa's husband, who discovered the body—suspected one of David's former significant others, who claimed to possess psychic powers and who had bragged to the two women that she was in a "devil cult." One such cult that was active in the area, strangely enough, was the Manson Family, who had relocated to the area to be near their leader's new home in a California prison cell. Indeed, the Family's Lynette "Squeaky" Fromme had been arrested just two years before, in 1975, in the city's Capital Park following a failed assassination attempt on then-President Gerald Ford.

At the Miroth crime scene, all that was left behind by the killer was again shoeprints, this time in the outside soil, and latex glove prints. A cigarette butt that may or may not have been left by an assailant was found on the porch. There is no indication that saliva on that butt was ever matched to Chase. Richard's car was apparently parked nearby, adjacent to the Country Club Centre, a fact that prosecutors pointed to as an indication of guilt. If so, Chase had parked the car rather inappropriately for use as an intended getaway car: it was quite conspicuously parked in a clearly marked no-parking zone. And oddly enough, the car was not actually used; the Meredith car was driven away from the home by the killer(s). It appeared as though Chase's car had been deliberately left, by someone, in such a way that it would not fail to be noticed, and in a location that would establish Richard's presence near the crime. There is a distinct possibility that whoever killed the inhabitants of the Miroth home arrived in the Meredith car as well as leaving in it, which would mean that the killer almost certainly knew the victims. Neighbors across the street, who were keeping a fairly close eye on the house, saw no one enter or leave the Miroth home, saw no other cars arrive, and neither saw nor heard any signs of a struggle.

Perhaps the clearest indication that Chase did not act alone in committing the crime, if indeed he was involved at all, is that the tiny body of David Ferreira was found adjacent to a church nearly two months *after* Richard had been arrested. The discovery was made when a gate that was normally kept locked was found to be unlocked and left ajar. There in a box lay Ferreira's remains—stabbed, slashed, shot and beheaded. Also in the box were the child's clothes and Danny Meredith's car keys. According to prosecutors, the body had been decomposing there since before Chase's arrest. Common sense and the circumstances of its discovery suggest otherwise.

When Chase's trial began on January 2, 1979, Richard stood before the court looking very much like a concentration camp inmate. Already a thin man, the 5'

11" Chase's weight had dropped to a nearly skeletal 107 pounds. He sat emotionless at the defense table, his mind seemingly miles away.

As recounted by Lt. Ray Biondi, who headed the investigation and co-authored a self-congratulatory book on the case, the most "damning" pieces of evidence presented in support of the state's case were two items that Chase allegedly had in his possession at the time of his arrest: a .22 caliber handgun and Danny Meredith's wallet. The .22 though could not be matched to any of the slugs recovered from the victims, and the possibility certainly exists that the wallet was planted, or was acquired by Chase after the murders. As it turned out, the strongest card in the state's hand was Chase himself, who took the stand in his own defense, just as Herb had done. Despite having entered pleas of "not guilty" and "not guilty by reason of insanity," Chase proceeded to give a long and rambling confession on the stand, during which he "freely and accurately used psychiatric and legal jargon," according to Biondi. What he could not do, however, was accurately recall many of the details of the crimes.

Chase's defense counsel greatly aided the prosecution's efforts by asking the jury to return second-degree murder convictions against his client. Echoing the immortal words of James Jackson, he stated: "I just feel that to tell you that there is something less than murder here is not a reasonable way to argue to you." On May 8, 1979, after just five hours of deliberations, the jury returned with six first-degree murder convictions. Six days later, after just 65 minutes of deliberations, they found the defendant sane. Four more hours of deliberations produced death sentences, after Chase once again took the stand during the penalty phase of the trial.

Richard Chase never made his appointment with the executioner. On December 26, 1980, he was found dead in his cell from the toxic ingestion of an enormous quantity of anti-psychotic drugs. His death was ruled a suicide. He allegedly had hoarded his daily medicine until he accumulated a lethal dose. His daily medication packet for that day, however, was found untouched.

Not long before his premature death, Chase spent four months incarcerated at—where else?—Vacaville.

Chapter 14

Superstars

"[W]e locate a number of good hypnotic subjects among the criminal class. We then isolate and train these subjects…If allowed a free hand, the authorities could proceed to plant such prepared subjects from the criminal class where it would do the most good…"

—George Estabrooks in *Hypnotism*

As the mid-1970s rolled around, the FBI's Behavioral Sciences Unit came of age, the 'science' of criminal profiling was thrust upon the American people, the term "serial killer" entered the national lexicon, and the marauding mass murderer suddenly became the new American anti-hero. As soon as there was a name for this new and feared breed of criminal, the country bore witness to the media giving saturation coverage to the alleged exploits of these individuals, creating larger-than-life figures out of the likes of Henry Lee Lucas, David "Son of Sam" Berkowitz, Theodore Robert Bundy, John Wayne Gacy, and Angelo Buono and Kenneth Bianchi, collectively known as the "Hillside Stranglers."

Henry Lee Lucas, already discussed in previous chapters, had the longest reign of any of the serial killer superstars, spanning from 1975 to 1983. The alleged Son of Sam had a much shorter though quite spectacular reign just a year into Henry's killing spree. That string of execution-style shootings has been far more thoroughly examined in Maury Terry's *The Ultimate Evil* than would be possible here. Interested readers are advised to pick up a copy of Terry's book, a thorough reading of which will facilitate a better understanding of this book.

The twelve victims attributed to the Hillside Stranglers were killed between October 17, 1977 and February 17, 1978, closely mirroring the alleged murder spree of Herb Mullin, whose thirteen alleged victims were killed during almost the exact same span of time just five years earlier: October 13, 1972 to February 13, 1973. The last killing attributed to Ted Bundy occurred just eight days before

the last Hillside Strangling, on February 9, 1978. Bundy had been killing for four years or more, according to varying accounts. John Gacy's reign also ended in 1978, and he too had been killing for about four years—longer by some accounts.

There were a number of parallels between the cases of these high-profile killers. Kenneth Bianchi, like Charles Manson, was born the son of an alcoholic, teenage prostitute. His alleged partner, Sicilian-bred Angelo Buono, was also born the son of a prostitute. Like Lucas, Buono spoke of being taken along by his mother while she serviced her tricks. According to some accounts, Ted Bundy's mother was an abusive young prostitute as well, who also plied her trade in the presence of her young son.[24]

24 Prostitution is a theme that runs rampant through the serial killer literature. In addition to being born the sons of prostitutes—frequently underage prostitutes—some future predators have themselves been forced into child prostitution, probably far more often than has been reported. A large percentage of the victims of alleged serial killers make their living as prostitutes as well. More than a few serial killers have worked as pimps, running their own prostitution rings, as was already seen in the case of Manson. Of the alleged killers profiled in this chapter, both Gacy and Buono were involved in running prostitution rings, with both specializing in child prostitution rings. Other killers we will meet elsewhere in this book had close ties to the sex trade as well. Serial murder and prostitution are such frequent bedfellows precisely because both of these activities tend to carry the heavy stench of mind control. As numerous studies have shown, the vast majority of prostitutes begin their careers at a very young age—as child prostitutes. As was noted in an earlier chapter, almost all child prostitutes are borne of a lifetime of abuse. They work the streets either because the conditions in their own homes are so horrendous that the street life is actually preferable, or because a family member has forced them into prostitution. These are people who will—to an overwhelming degree—have a very strong tendency to dissociate, and who are, therefore, prime targets for mind control operations. Any good pimp has at least a general understanding of that fact. That is why the image of the abusive pimp maintaining control over his brazenly exploited flock is such a pervasive one. Psychologists and sociologists have long stumbled over mountains of jargon and double-talk attempting to explain why prostitutes will remain fiercely loyal to a man who regularly beats and berates them while appropriating nearly all of their earnings. The same is true of the proverbial battered wives who refuse to leave the men who repeatedly rape and beat them. Meaningless terms such as 'battered wife syndrome' are routinely tossed out to try to explain this phenomenon. When asked, none of these victims, housewife or prostitute, can really explain why they choose to remain in such a chronically abusive environment. The ugly reality is that all of these women, whether

Bianchi, Bundy and Gacy all had an intense interest in law enforcement work. Bianchi, for example, studied police science in college, went on ride-alongs with the LAPD, joined the Sheriff's Reserves, and was known to carry a California Highway Patrol badge. Gacy was described by his wife as a "police freak"—a description that was applied to him by others as well. From an early age, Ted Bundy also expressed a strong interest in pursuing a law enforcement career, and at various times worked for the Seattle Crime Prevention Advisory Committee, the King County Law and Justice Planning Office, the Seattle Crime Commission, and as a self-employed law enforcement consultant, billing himself as T.R.B. Associates.

Another common thread that ties the cases of these men together is an early experience in the workforce that exposed them to the depravities that one human can inflict upon another. Kenneth Bianchi, for example, worked for a time as an ambulance attendant. So did John Wayne Gacy, who also was employed at a mortuary. Such an experience is what the intelligence community refers to as a 'blooding.' In a similar vein, the entire country is being 'blooded,' though on a lesser level, through near constant exposure to a television and videogame diet increasingly dominated by scenes of graphic violence. The effect of this is to radically desensitize individuals, or an entire society, to appalling levels of bloodshed and carnage.

Another commonality among some of the more high profile serial killers profiled in this chapter and others are seemingly improbable connections to very high-ranking members of their respective political parties. Gacy, for example, was a fixture in Chicago Democratic Party circles. Despite his colorful and at times criminal past, he had a high enough security clearance to have once had a face-to-face meeting with then-First Lady Rosalynn Carter. Ted Bundy was equally well connected to various Republican Party officials.

As a final note here, before taking a closer look at the stories of these men, it should be noted that the era in which their crimes were committed was a time when reported cases of Multiple Personality Disorder skyrocketed. Before the decade of the 1970s was over, twice as many cases had been reported in that ten-year span as in the previous 100 years. There are indications that all of these alleged killers suffered, to varying degrees, from a dissociative disorder. Bianchi

---

on the streets or in the home, are—to varying degrees—victims of mind control. And a careful reading of the literature reveals that virtually all such victims have suffered a lifetime of abuse, beginning long before their current abusers entered the picture. Of course, most of them are not victims of the systematic and highly refined techniques practiced by the intelligence community, but they are mind control victims just the same. And so it is with those we think of as serial killers.

was diagnosed as such by a number of therapists, though this diagnosis was disputed by others—including the CIA's own Martin Orne and Margaret Singer.

Though never formally diagnosed, Ted Bundy displayed unmistakable signs of a dissociative disorder as well. Not only could Bundy's personality change at a moment's notice, but his physical appearance could as well. Bundy had a chameleon-like ability to alter his appearance, an ability that is clearly displayed in the numerous photos of him that grace the pages of the various books he has inspired. A neighbor of his in Florida once offered this observation: "He always looked different…I don't know, sometimes he just didn't even look like the same person at all." Diana Smith, a therapist and Bundy family friend, wondered how Ted could "be so many different things to so many different people." An investigator on the Bundy case, Joe Aloi, claimed that he once observed Bundy react to a particularly stressful situation by spontaneously, and quite radically, altering his physical appearance; Ted's body and muscle tone changed markedly, and he suddenly became sweaty and began emitting a noticeable odor. The judge who presided over Ted's Colorado trial referred to him as a "changeling," noting the unsettling way in which his appearance could change dramatically with his mood. The judge drew a comparison to Vincent Bugliosi's description of Charles Manson's similar ability. Bugliosi was not the only one to make that observation about Manson; disciple Susan Atkins once said: "Charlie changes from second to second. He can be anybody he wants to be. He can put on any face he wants to put on at any given moment."[25]

Although John Wayne Gacy did not have the ability to alter his physical appearance, as Detective David Hachmeister of the DesPlaines police observed, "His personality could change in a split second." Gacy was viewed by many as a pillar of the community—a man who was politically active and well-connected, who gave of his time freely to entertain children, who was a valued neighbor who regularly hosted parties with hundreds of guests, and who was a successful businessman and a loving father. On the other hand, he also had the unique distinction of being convicted of thirty-three counts of first-degree murder. How are we to reconcile these two sides of John Gacy? Men such as he are usually said to be 'sociopaths.' They are said to be lacking a conscience. The persona that is

25 That ability is a very real, though extremely rare, physiological phenomenon. George Estabrooks explained it decades ago, in his seminal work *Hypnotism*, as a hypnotically induced phenomenon that is indicative of a severe dissociative disorder. Estabrooks also explained such religious/supernatural phenomena as speaking in tongues, the appearance of stigmata, and the channeling of 'spirits' by 'mediums,' as hypnotic/dissociative phenomena.

presented to the public is said to be nothing more than an elaborate ruse, an emotionless facade disguising the monster within.

But is it not just as likely, if not more so, that the public self is, in fact, a legitimate personality—separate and distinct from the one that does the killing? And when the monster emerges, does this represent the facade slipping away, or an alter personality emerging? Or is there any difference? Is the 'sociopath' label not, in the final analysis, just another way of describing multiple personality disorder?

* * * * *

Kenneth Bianchi is, like many other serial killers, of unknown parentage. He was born the son of an alcoholic teenage prostitute on May 22, 1951 in Rochester, New York, and then privately adopted by the Bianchis. His adoptive parents were repeatedly reported to the Rochester Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children for their treatment of their son. Ken was taken frequently to doctors and administered unspecified tests at the urging of his mother, who also frequently kept him home from school for prolonged absences, including nearly his entire Kindergarten year. As a child, Bianchi frequently lapsed into trance-like states, during which time his eyes would roll back in his head. He later recalled enduring such punishments as having his hand held over a stove flame. He also is said to have once killed a cat and left it on his neighbor's porch on Halloween.

Following high school, Bianchi sought psychiatric care and married briefly, although the union lasted just eight months. He also attended junior college, studying psychology and police science—and reportedly making frequent use of the school's medical facilities. He found work both as a bouncer and as an ambulance attendant, and apparently considered an Air Force career, for which he took a qualifying test. Sometime during his early adult years, Bianchi also joined a biker gang, which ostensibly was the inspiration for the rather remarkable tattoo that he sported on his arm: "Satan's Own M.C." Perhaps not surprisingly, Ken had gaps in his memory, and would sometimes find himself walking down a street with no memory of how he got there or what he had been doing immediately prior. Such episodes are clear signs of a dissociative disorder, a category that includes fugue states and amnesia, as well as MPD/DID.

At the age of twenty-six, Ken arrived in Hollywood and moved in with his cousin, Angelo Buono, and Angelo's son, also named Angelo Buono. Bianchi readily established access to a steady supply of drugs, which he both sold and used. He also, rather improbably, set up shop as a therapist, sharing office space with a legitimate therapist in North Hollywood. During this time in California, Ken claimed to be getting outpatient treatments for cancer, and he regularly visited a hospital to

receive those treatments. He generally preferred to go alone to these appointments, although sometimes his girlfriend, Kelli, drove him there and then waited in the car for him to return.

Bianchi, of course, never actually had cancer. There is no question though that he was indeed making regular visits to a medical facility, and he was receiving *some* kind of treatments, although at least one of his chroniclers has claimed that Ken would, on a regular basis, enter the hospital, randomly kill time by reading and hanging out, and then return to the car. What possible purpose would be served by his doing so is left unexplained, as is how Bianchi was able to bring home legitimate receipts and medical forms following these treatments.

Ken's cousin and reputed partner, Angelo Buono, reportedly had a strong bond with his mother, whom he frequently accused of being a whore; he never lived more than a couple of miles from her throughout his entire adult life. Angelo quit high school at the age of sixteen and he was shortly thereafter remanded to the custody of the California Youth Authority. By the age of twenty, he was known for his flamboyance, exemplified by his habit of driving new Cadillacs. It is unclear how he suddenly acquired such wealth.

Buono apparently had a lifelong penchant for underage girls; during his life, he married at least two of them. He fathered at least eight kids by his numerous wives; he reportedly regularly sodomized all of them. He also beat and sodomized his wives, often in front of the children. Angelo's sons and only daughter were frequent visitors to the house that their dad shared for a time with Ken Bianchi. Many young girls were frequent visitors as well, and some even lived there for varying periods of time. Angelo has been described as a "magnet for women" and he had a constant stream of mostly teenage girls passing through his home. Many of them were working for him; his auto upholstery shop also served as a front for a teenage prostitution racket. Some of his girls—including sixteen-year-old Sabra Hannan and Rebekah Gay Spears, a fifteen-year-old biker's daughter—were kept virtually enslaved with regular beatings, rapes, and threats of death and dismemberment.

Angelo supplied the services of these young girls to the city's business and political elite, including a city councilman, a police chief, and a chief aide to a member of the L.A. County Board of Supervisors. Such favors had earned sidekick Bianchi the right to display an L.A. County Seal on the windshield of his Cadillac. Buono and Bianchi had connections to the Hollywood crowd as well; Angelo once shared a home with actor Artie Ford, a friend of fellow actor Jay Silverheels (the *Lone Ranger*'s Tonto). He also repaired cars for Frank Sinatra and for reputed Mafioso Joe Bonnano. Buono's daughter claimed that her father once drove her to Sinatra's Palm Springs home, where Angelo dropped off a package. Several of the suspects identified during the course of the investigation were

Hollywood names as well. The first suspect booked was actor Ned York, who gave a long and rambling confession to the crimes. Another man questioned in connection to the stranglings was identified as a minor actor who had a film studio set up in his home. An aspiring actress told of going to this home for an audition and being forced to participate in the production of hardcore S&M films. Yet another suspect was a man identified only as a famous Hollywood producer who was said to enjoy the company of young girls. He was stopped by police while driving the car of a convicted rapist, accompanied by a young girl, and he was discovered to be in possession of a phony police ID.

Buono was known to have two avid interests that are common to many alleged serial killers: guns and Polaroid photography. Angelo reportedly owned five rifles, two .45 caliber handguns, and a Thompson sub-machinegun. He also owned a Polaroid camera, with which he was said to have photographed some of the pair's victims, although such photographs were never produced at trial.

Buono and Bianchi's first purported victim was a black prostitute and drug dealer named Yolanda Washington whose nude body was found along Forest Lawn Drive. She had been strangled with intense force after having sexual contact with at least two men. Not long before her death, she and a group of fellow prostitutes had sold Buono a 'trick list.' The month before Washington's body was found, a girl named Laura Collins was found similarly strangled and dumped not far from Forest Lawn Drive, but her death, oddly enough, was never attributed to the so-called Hillside Stranglers.

The next victim, Judith Ann Miller, also a prostitute, was found sprawled nude on Halloween day, 1977. She had been carefully placed by two or more individuals, and had marks on her face, wrists and ankles that suggested that she had been gagged and bound, but her bindings had been subsequently removed. There were said to be two witnesses to the abduction, both of whom—like the killers and the victims—reeked of mind control operations. One was a woman who had worked as a subject for a professional stage hypnotist; he had hypnotized her on literally hundreds of occasions. She claimed to have seen Miller get into a car with a light-skinned black man. The other witness was a male bounty hunter named Marcus Camden; he saw the victim get into a dark blue limousine, which he said was definitely not Ken's Cadillac. He described the driver as a dark man with curly hair, Latin looking, and with a big nose. Neither witness saw a second man in the vehicle, although both Bianchi and Buono were later said to have participated in the abduction. Investigator Frank Salerno promptly checked Camden into Cedars-Sinai Hospital for tests, for reasons that are unclear. Much later, Camden allegedly positively identified Angelo; at the time, he was voluntarily committed to Richmond State Hospital in Indiana. As an interesting side note,

witness Camden was missing two left fingertips, which is, according to some unconfirmed reports, an identifying mark of some satanic cults.

The next victim was Lissa Teresa Kastin, an exotic dancer with the L.A. Knockers dance troupe. She was likely a prostitute as well; at the very least, she had considered the profession and had discussed it with others. A witness who worked on a composite drawing described Lissa's abductor as a white or Latino man with an olive complexion and acne, in his late 20s, 6'2" or 6'3" tall, 150 to 160 lbs., and with a thick mustache and a small mole on his left cheek—a description that didn't fit Buono or Bianchi. Jill Barcomb was the next victim. She was, like the others, a prostitute who was found nude and strangled. Following her was Kathleen Robinson, described as being part of the street scene. Unlike the others, she was found fully clothed. Next was Kristina Weckler, an honors student at the Pasadena Art Center. She was found nude and strangled, and she had had Windex injected into her arms and neck.

Bob Grogan, one of lead investigators on the Strangler task force, pocketed and subsequently suppressed Weckler's personal notebook—a flagrantly illegal act that he later openly acknowledged. Grogan, who had served as a technical adviser on the *TJ Hooker* television series, had connections to Santa Monica's Rand Corporation, which is widely regarded by researchers as a CIA front.

The next two victims were Sonja Johnson and Dollie Cepeda, who were just fourteen and twelve years old, respectively. Following them was Jane King, who was picked up across the street from the Scientology Manor, where she was reportedly taking acting classes. The body of Lauren Wagner was the next to be discovered; she had been strangled and electrocuted. There were purportedly at least three witnesses to her abduction, though all of them were problematic. One of these was a neighbor, Beulah Stofer, who reportedly witnessed the abduction from the window of her home, after which she claimed to have received a threatening phone call. She said that she had seen two men argue with Wagner before dragging her into a car and had heard Lauren scream: "You won't get away with this." Strangely, however, she did not initially report what she had witnessed. Stofer ultimately identified both Buono and Bianchi as the girl's abductors, after being questioned by Grogan on more than 100 occasions, by his own accounting. Prior to a visit to the crime scene by Buono's jury, Grogan later tampered with the scene by going to Stofer's house to trim her front hedges, which normally blocked the view out of the window that Stofer claimed to have witnessed the crime from.

Another neighbor claimed to have witnessed the abduction of the girl as well, but this witness also failed to initially report the incident. A third witness claimed that he just happened to be driving by at the time of the abduction. The man was said to be a convicted killer who had been 'cured' at Atascadero, just like killer Ed Kemper had been cured at that same facility.

Forensics evidence indicated a culprit other than Bianchi or Buono. A substance found on the corpse was determined to have come from a type B secretor, which ruled out both of the cousins. At trial, the state argued that the substance was nothing more than ant residue. The media, which had been focusing their bright lights on the trial, decided, for no apparent reason, not to provide coverage of this rather dubious testimony.

The next victim, Kimberly Dianne Martin, was found in a vacant apartment—bound, gagged, strangled, and with a fractured skull and blood dripping from her ear. She was an underage outcall prostitute who had been dispatched to meet a trick. The request had reportedly been phoned in by Ken Bianchi. Just three days after her death, Bianchi went on a ride-along with the LAPD. The last victim attributed to the Hillside Stranglers was Cindy Lee Hudspeth, who was strangled and stuffed nude into the trunk of a car, which was then pushed over an incline. Bianchi would later claim, in a purported confession, that the car was pushed over front-end first; evidence indicated otherwise. This was just one of many details that his 'confessions' would get wrong.

Soon after the killings began, a task force was established that included elements of the LAPD, the L.A. Sheriff's Department, and the Glendale Police Department. It eventually grew to include 162 officers. The task force's headquarters was in room 832 of the Justice Building, which had been converted from its original use as a courtroom, the very same courtroom where Charles Manson had been tried and convicted. The team was led by Frank Salerno, who had earlier headed a narcotics team that had arrested the very same Charles Manson on drug charges. Also on board the task force was the aforementioned evidence tamperer, Bob Grogan. Weekly press conferences were held by then-Chief Daryl F. Gates, who had little progress to report as the killings continued, with some of the bodies showing up carefully posed in the hills near the L.A. Police Academy. All of the victims had been raped, and yet semen tests that were conducted reportedly yielded nothing. Ken Bianchi was questioned on multiple occasions during the investigation, by at least two LAPD officers and one Glendale cop, but he was cleared each time.

One 'expert' consulted by the press was none other than Dr. Louis Jolyon West, a prominent member of the False Memory Syndrome Foundation who was connected to numerous covert CIA operations throughout his career. West told the *L.A. Times*: "It would be most unlikely to find this done by more than one person…this type is almost always the work of a single person." This was an obvious bit of disinformation that flew in the face of the known facts of the case. Not long after the Hillside Stranglings, West was one of the first prominent mouthpieces to promote the mass suicide story to explain what happened at Jonestown. This was another rather obvious bit of disinformation.

Three months after the last killing, Bianchi left the Los Angeles area for Bellingham, Washington, where he wasted no time in joining the Whatcom County Sheriff's Reserves. Strangely enough, the chief of the police department of Bianchi's new city of residence was both a former Los Angeles cop and a friend of fourteen-year-old victim Sonja Johnson's father, the bookkeeper for an L.A.-area Catholic parish school. Chief Terry Mangan had an unusual history that sounded as though it could have been written by a Hollywood screenwriter. While working as an ordained priest, and as a high school teacher and dean of students in Monterrey, California, he began serving as a counselor to the police. He was soon regularly hanging out at the police academy and riding on patrol every night, becoming some kind of mythical priest-cop. He ultimately left the priesthood altogether and became a full-fledged cop. In 1976, the year before the stranglings began, he was named the new chief of the Bellingham force.

On January 12, 1979, two Western Washington University coeds were found bound and strangled. Footprints and a loose pubic hair were reportedly recovered at the scene. New Bellingham resident Ken Bianchi was arrested shortly after the discovery of the bodies, and he promptly confessed. He was appointed Dean Brett as his defense counsel, and a psychiatric social worker named John Johnson was assigned to the case as well. Bianchi was held in isolation and allowed only limited visitation with family and friends. Before long, he was examined by a stream of psychiatrists/psychologists, some of whom had known and longstanding connections to the CIA.

The first to examine Bianchi, on the spring equinox, was Dr. John Watkins, who questioned the accused in the presence of Brett, Johnson, Frank Salerno and Salerno's partner, both of whom had flown up from Los Angeles. Next was Dr. Ron Markman of Los Angeles, a man with the dubious distinction of being both a psychiatrist and an attorney. He had previously been involved in both the Manson and the SLA/Patty Hearst cases.[26] The stench surrounding the Strangler case reached a new level with the arrival of the next examiner: none other than Dr. Donald Lunde, last seen playing a pivotal role in the Frazier, Kemper and Mullin cases. Conveniently enough, Lunde just happened to have family in Bellingham that he purportedly just happened to be visiting at the time, so he just sort of dropped in for an 'off-the-record' examination of the famed Hillside

26 Contrary to conventional wisdom, the so-called Symbionese Liberation Army appears to have been an artificial creation of the Central Intelligence Agency. Its architect was a man named Colton Westbrook, who had previously served in Vietnam as a Phoenix Program operative. The supposed revolutionary group arose from an MK-ULTRA project run by Westbrook at, appropriately enough, California's Vacaville facility.

Strangler. Next up was Dr. Ralph Allison, brought in from—of all places—Santa Cruz, California. He finished up with Bianchi on April 19, and Watkins returned the next day to administer a Rorschach test. The following day, April 21, Angelo Buono's house was searched for the very first time. The home was found to be immaculately neat and, amazingly enough, it reportedly contained not a single fingerprint, which would tend to indicate that Buono had been tipped off prior to the search.

In May, Vienna-born Martin Orne, sent in by the state, took a turn at examining Bianchi. Orne was another False Memory Syndrome Foundation luminary who received extensive CIA funding and who, probably not coincidentally, had testified at the SLA trial. In June, Dr. Saul Faerstein of Beverly Hills took his turn with Bianchi and in July, Dr. Lunde returned for an on-the-record examination. Lunde's role was to build the prosecution's case to try Bianchi in Los Angeles as the Hillside Strangler. As such, Lunde's examination concentrated almost exclusively on discussion of the L.A. killings. Like Orne and Faerstein, Lunde largely dismissed the notion that Ken was suffering from MPD. Others have claimed that Bianchi displayed at least four distinct personalities, who were named Ken, Steve, Billy and Friend. Salerno and Grogan, as well as most of Bianchi's chroniclers, have claimed that the symptoms displayed by the suspect were an obvious ruse. Dr. John Watkins to this day sticks by his initial diagnosis of MPD.

On October 2, 1980, Veronica Lynn Compton, a playwright and actress and the daughter of an L.A.-area editorial cartoonist, was arrested for attempted murder in Bellingham. The attack was said to be an attempt to commit a copycat killing that would have cast doubts on the incarcerated Bianchi's guilt in the earlier killings. Strangely, Compton's victim did not bother to report the incident until several days after the alleged attempt was made on her life. Compton had been sexually active from an early age, as evidenced by the fact that she was only twenty-three and yet she had an eight-year-old son. She had reportedly slept with numerous Hollywood figures, including a lawyer/agent who was later killed in an unsolved murder case. She confided to Bianchi that she herself had killed before, and that she shared with him an interest in necrophilia.

On October 19, Bianchi appeared before a judge and entered a guilty plea based on a deal that had been worked out with the Los Angeles County District Attorney's Office. The deal allowed the state of Washington to avoid a trial that would have revealed the state's case to be rather dubious. That case was built primarily on hair and fiber evidence, which is inherently problematic, and which is also, it should be noted, by far the easiest type of evidence to plant. The official version of events was filled with discrepancies and such odd events as evidence strangely turning up at the crime scene the day after it was combed over by investigators following the discovery of the bodies.

Nevertheless, Ken entered a guilty plea and agreed to testify against Buono in exchange for a life sentence to be served in California, even though the possibility existed that he would still receive death sentences for the charges pending in California. In other words, Bianchi gained absolutely nothing from the plea 'deal' offered to him and guaranteed himself a life sentence at a minimum. Ken had worked with his attorney until late into the night before his court appearance. He was instructed to stare at his hands while repeating the words "these hands have killed" before entering the courtroom, to ensure that he did not back away from the agreement to enter the guilty plea.

Within twenty-four hours, Ken was on his way back to Los Angeles. Along the way, he was questioned by Salerno and Grogan and got many of the details of the crimes wrong, which did not seem to faze the two detectives in the least. Within days of his arrival in L.A., he had received additional life terms. Shortly after his arrival though, Ken began to have doubts about the deal he had made, and by November, he was insisting on his innocence. That same month, Angelo Buono's Glendale home suddenly vanished; it had been bulldozed on the orders of the owner of the glass shop that sat next door. Buono—who by that time was sitting in a special security section of the county jail alongside his son Peter, a former Marine and a long-time PCP addict—had signed over the deed to the property. The glass shop owner denied that he had colluded with Buono to destroy evidence, and he was never charged with committing a crime. Around that same time, Prosecutor Roger Kelly opted to drop all the remaining murder charges against Bianchi, thereby giving up the leverage the state intended to use to compel Ken to testify against his cousin. Kelly also reportedly attempted to break down and discredit the testimony of two prosecution witnesses.

Nevertheless, a nearly yearlong preliminary trial for Buono was begun, assigned to Judge Ronald George. George had attended Beverly Hills schools and then the prestigious Ecole Internationale de Geneve, which functions as something of an intelligence prep school. Founded in 1924 by a League of Nations group, it is attended by the sons of diplomats, European royalty and finance capitalists. George next attended Princeton University. By the age of thirty, he was arguing before the U.S. Supreme Court to have the death penalty reinstated in California. In 1972, he was appointed to the bench by nominal conservative Ronald Reagan, and in 1977, he was elevated to the Superior Court by nominal liberal Jerry Brown.

On July 13, 1981, Kelly—backed by District Attorney John Van de Kamp—moved to drop all charges against Buono. Judge George, in a highly unusual move, ruled that the case be prosecuted. Kelly promptly withdrew, clearing the way for George to assign the case to the state's attorney general, George Deukmejian. On November 6, jury selection began. In a rather unlikely development, ten of the

twelve jurors who were seated worked in civil service positions. These men and women spent the next two years of their lives hearing the case against Angelo Buono. Kenneth Bianchi alone delivered five months of testimony. In order for Bianchi's testimony to be heard, however, it had to be determined whether he had been hypnotized in Washington. If so, his testimony would have been disallowed under California law. Judge George accommodated the prosecution by concurring with the opinion of covert operative Martin Orne that Bianchi had faked both his hypnotism and his dissociative disorder.

The judge did disallow Bianchi's Bellingham 'confession' tapes, ruling that they had not been made under oath. This was not likely an effort by the judge to prevent the railroading of the defendant, but rather to avoid having the trial's verdict overturned on appeal. The tapes, which showed Bianchi confessing to the crimes in an even, matter-of-fact, emotionless voice, were entered into evidence in a way that would not compromise the verdict: they were entered *by the defense*. The defense also opened a door that allowed the state to call, as rebuttal witnesses, three young women who had been held by Buono as enslaved prostitutes. Their testimony had been earlier disallowed by the judge. After doing a considerable amount of damage to their client's case, the defense rested on August 2, 1983—after noting for the jury that both Charlie Chaplin and Lewis Carroll shared with Angelo a fondness for underage girls.

In a highly unusual move, the judge opted to sequester the jury for the duration of their deliberations, even though they had been free for the entire two-year duration of the trial itself. He also specifically instructed them to return verdicts on the numerous counts separately, which was another highly unusual jury instruction. The first guilty verdict was delivered after ten days of deliberations, appropriately enough on Halloween day, 1983. By the time the deliberations were through, Buono had been convicted on nine of ten counts. Perhaps sensing that his defense team did not have his best interests in mind, Buono requested that he be allowed to represent himself for the penalty phase of the trial; his request was denied. On January 9, 1984, Buono was formally sentenced to life in prison.

In the aftermath of the trial, Van de Kamp was elected to replace outgoing Attorney General George Deukmejian, who was elevated to the office of Governor of the state of California. His underling, Robert Philibosian, became the new L.A. District Attorney. Prosecutors Roger Boren and Michael Nash were both appointed to the bench by Governor Deukmejian, after Nash prosecuted the death penalty appeal of Douglas Clark, whose case will be examined in the next chapter. Judge Ronald George was elevated to the California Supreme Court, and ultimately was named its Chief Justice. Defense counsel Gerald Chaleff now serves as the senior adviser to the City Attorney's Office.

While there is a very strong probability that the two cousins were involved in the killings, it is just as likely that others were involved as well. Many believed that a police officer was directly involved. Several were questioned during the course of the investigation, and a few who were conclusively linked to the times and places of the disappearances and/or the body drop-sites could not account for their time. Another suspect was a man named George Shamshak, who escaped from a Massachusetts prison around the time that the killings began, and who was recaptured around the time that they ended. Shamshak confessed to the murders, and even offered the press what he said were audiotapes of some of the killings. He also claimed that a Beverly Hills resident named Peter Mark Jones was involved. Jones was arrested and released, and then he promptly left the city and was quickly forgotten. As for the Washington murders, Bianchi maintained that an accomplice performed the killings. The man, identified only as 'Greg,' was known to the police. He was killed in a 'freak' motorcycle accident near the body drop-site, shortly after Kenneth Bianchi's arrest.

In September 2002, Angelo Buono died in prison. Kenneth Bianchi continues to serve his time.

* * * * *

John Wayne Gacy was born the son of an abusive, alcoholic father—as his sister and mother both attested to in court. Little else has been written about John's early years, although it is known that the senior Gacy constantly belittled his son and once shot the boy's dog. He was also known to beat John's mother.

As a teenager, Gacy worked in Las Vegas both at a mortuary and as an ambulance attendant. At the mortuary, it was said that he had a habit of sleeping in the embalming room, amongst the corpses. He was fired after some of those corpses were found to have been partially undressed. In the 1960s, John lived in Waterloo, Iowa, where he owned several businesses, including four restaurants, a clothing design firm and a motel. During that period of his life, he joined the Jaycees and quickly forged a bond with the man who soon became the local chapter president. This particular Jaycee chapter was known at the time to be involved in prostitution, pornography, and various other crimes of vice. A local prosecutor identified Gacy's motel, managed by his newfound friend, as the hub of those activities. According to the prosecutor, the motel was a front for a gay and straight prostitution ring.

Gacy was in the habit of hiring many young people of both sexes to work at his businesses. He also reportedly set up what was described as a 'social club' in his basement recreation room, which he kept well stocked with drugs and alcohol

to supply to his numerous underage guests. He was also said by those who knew him at the time to "control" his wife and to openly offer her sexual services to friends and colleagues. One former employee also said that Gacy always carried a gun.

On March 11, 1968, Donald Voorhees, Jr.—the son of a Jaycee and former Iowa state representative—gave a statement to police alleging that Gacy had assaulted and sodomized him. In early May, Gacy was indicted by a grand jury, though no further action was taken for several months. On September 12, John made a court appearance at which he was ordered to submit to a psychiatric examination at the ominously named Psychopathic Hospital of the State University of Iowa. While in custody there, he spoke freely to investigators of wholesale corruption among the city's elite. He talked of gambling, prostitution, pornography, wife swapping, and the corruption and complicity of local police. He supplied the names of numerous Jaycees, police personnel, and various other prominent individuals who were involved in criminal enterprises.

When brought before a judge, Gacy threw himself at the mercy of the court and entered a guilty plea. On December 3, 1968, he was sentenced to a ten-year term. He served less than two of those years, earning parole on June 18, 1970. While in prison, he somehow managed to always have money, cigars, and civilian shirts—all difficult commodities to attain for most prisoners. According to some reports, Gacy received electroshock and aversion therapy while incarcerated, allegedly to 'cure' him of his homosexuality. Just eight months after his release, he was again arrested, this time for disorderly conduct. Despite the violation, just eight months after that he was released from parole. Another eight months after that, on the summer solstice of 1972, he was again arrested and charged with aggravated battery and reckless conduct. Gacy had allegedly offered a young man a ride on June 7, identified himself as a police officer, and then attempted to handcuff the boy. Failing in that endeavor, Gacy had then clubbed him on the back of his neck, kicked him, and then pursued him with his car and struck him down. Curiously, the charges were dismissed against Gacy, whose fingerprint card on file with local police carried the alias 'Colonel' Gacy.

In July 1975, the first known victim whose death would be attributed to John Gacy disappeared. The young man, John Butkovitch, was an employee of Gacy's construction company, which specialized in drugstore remodels. Gacy's home was later found to be fully stocked with an array of pharmaceuticals. Just one night before his disappearance, Butkovitch had been involved in a disturbance at a friend's house. He was rumored to have gone to Puerto Rico to traffic drugs, and his family received a collect call from a woman in San Juan who claimed that John was alive and well. Someone apparently made an effort to thwart a missing persons investigation.

Boys and young men continued to disappear for the next several years, though no one really paid much attention. The missing boys were routinely considered runaways by the police, despite pleas from many of the parents to investigate their sons' disappearances as missing persons cases.

On January 6, 1978, Gacy was arrested for deviate sexual contact, but the assistant state's attorney rejected the filing of felony charges. Six months later, Gacy was charged with battery. A twenty-seven-year-old man had been picked up and then knocked out with a rag placed over his mouth. He awoke in a park with burns on his face and a bleeding rectum. The man had been picked up from the city's gay district, where Gacy was very well known and widely believed to be a cop. The victim gave police the license number of Gacy's car, and he was soon taken into custody. Several court dates were allowed to pass with no action taken on the charges. John Wayne Gacy was, after all, a very well connected guy. He served as a lighting commissioner and as a Democratic Party precinct captain. He claimed to have been an aide to Chicago Mayor Richard Daley, and he was known to be on friendly terms with Illinois Attorney General William Scott. He also claimed that local columnist Mike Royko and local TV anchorman Walter Jacobson were "good friends" of his. He once had his photo taken with First Lady Rosalynn Carter; the image is signed: "To John Gacy. Best Wishes. Rosalynn Carter." In the photo, Gacy is wearing a Secret Service "S" lapel pin, indicating that he had been given a high-level security clearance. Another hint of Gacy's political connections was provided by an observation made by one of his prosecutors: "Two items on [Gacy's] Chicago Police report were blacked out, indicating that they were FBI matters."

John also laid claim to having organized crime connections, which is not surprising given the fine line between politics and organized crime. Gacy claimed not only that he himself worked for the "Syndicate," but also that he was a cousin of local mob figure Tony Accardo.

Gacy continued in Chicago his practice from Iowa of surrounding himself with young people. He frequently entertained as a clown at hospitals, orphanages, and at private parties. He also hired a steady stream of teenage boys to work for his construction firm, at least three of whom went missing, and another of whom followed an interesting path that will be examined in the next chapter.

On the night of December 11, 1978, a young man named Rob Piest disappeared. He had last been seen outside of the pharmacy where he was then employed, talking to Gacy about a job with his construction company. The Piest family focused their suspicions on John Gacy and pharmacy owner Phil Torf, who was evasive when questioned about the boy's disappearance and who refused to provide Gacy's address. For unexplained reasons, Torf had remained at the pharmacy that night with his friends until 1:00 AM, three full hours after closing

time. The Piest family quickly grew angry with the police over their handling of the case, and they began threatening to storm the Gacy house. In order to pacify the family and prevent them from acting on their threats, police agreed to begin surveillance of John Gacy. Assigned to the task was a special 'Delta Unit' of the DesPlaines Police.

What followed was a surreal game of cat-and-mouse in which Gacy at times all but joined the surveillance team, wining and dining his alleged pursuers, inviting them into his home and allowing them to ride along with him in his car. At other times, he would drive maniacally around town with the Delta Unit in pursuit—reportedly hitting speeds of up to 100 miles-per-hour, even in school zones. Amazingly, he was never stopped during such escapades, let alone ticketed or arrested. Police also searched Gacy's house, which was said to be meticulously neat. The search yielded a number of interesting items: a high school ring that had belonged to one of the missing boys; an Illinois drivers license issued to another boy; marijuana and rolling papers; a vast supply of pharmaceuticals; a switchblade knife; a pair of handcuffs; police badges; a hypodermic syringe; numerous items of clothing that were obviously too small for Gacy; a photo lab receipt later traced to Rob Piest; an empty brown bottle that had contained chloroform; a bloodstained rug; and a homemade stock. One room in the home was completely filled with clown pictures. The crawlspace underneath the house, where employees had been asked to dig trenches, was covered with a layer of lime—useful for hastening the decomposition of bodies. There were nearly thirty of them buried there in shallow graves. More had been dumped into the DesPlaines River some sixty-five miles from Gacy's home.

Police opted not to arrest Gacy at the time of the search, despite the seemingly incriminating evidence found in his home, and despite the fact that they had received complaints from at least five assault victims, three in Chicago alone, all alleging druggings and torture administered by Gacy, *and* despite the fact that Gacy still had charges pending against him from the incident earlier in the year. However, Gacy did have an alibi for the evening that checked out: he had been at the hospital at the side of his uncle, who died the very night that Rob Piest disappeared.

On the eve of the winter solstice, Gacy was arrested for the final time, although not on murder charges, but for possession of marijuana. Just the day before his arrest, the conviction of Elmer Wayne Henley in Texas had been reversed. Henley had been convicted a few years earlier, in 1974, for his participation in what one of Gacy's chroniclers described as "a homosexual torture ring that killed twenty-seven boys." Henley and his two accomplices provided quite a model for Gacy to follow. The trio lured young boys to the home of Dean Corll, where they were tortured, raped and killed on a special 'torture board' in Corll's

plastic-draped bedroom. Their bodies were then buried beneath a layer of lime in Corll's rented boathouse, while the parents of several of the victims received phone calls or were sent letters assuring them that their sons were still very much alive. In Houston as in Chicago, police insisted on classifying the growing numbers of missing boys as runaways.

Gacy's marijuana arrest prompted a second search of his home, during which the bodies in his crawlspace were discovered. How they were not discovered during the earlier search, or detected during the numerous visits to the Gacy home by his surveillance team, remains a bit of a mystery. Every corner of the house was said to literally reek of death due to the decomposition of the bodies buried in the shallow graveyard just beneath the floorboards. The second search also turned up a garage freezer that contained unmarked frozen meat and a container full of what inspectors suspected was blood. These items were later claimed to be nothing more than stewed tomatoes and non-human meat, although one would think seasoned homicide investigators would know the difference between stewed tomatoes and blood.

While his home was being searched, Gacy was taken to Holy Family Hospital for a medical examination, allegedly due to complaints of chest pains. Immediately upon his release from the hospital, John read and signed a Miranda waiver and began confessing to the murders. One of his first questions to police was: "Who else do you have in the station? There are others involved." Gacy was then asked if the others were involved directly or indirectly, to which he responded: "Directly. They participated." Asked who these others might be, he answered simply: "My associates." He was also asked where Rob Piest was, to which he answered: "I don't know. I didn't transport him." When asked who did, he replied: "I can't say."

This interrogation was cut short by a Sergeant Long, and then later resumed with two attorneys at Gacy's side. No further mention was made of any accomplices, and the issue does not appear to have been pursued thereafter. Perhaps notably though, the homicide rate in the Chicago area soared following Gacy's arrest, possibly indicating that a large clean-up operation ensued. And on December 28, a week after John's arrest, a fresh body was fished from the DesPlaines River.

Although Gacy confessed to being a mass murderer, he had very little knowledge of the crimes to which he confessed. He claimed, for instance, that all of the victims were strangled, but forensics evidence suggested that at least thirteen of them had in fact been suffocated. He provided a map of the locations of the bodies under his house that press reports claimed was accurate, even though it actually contained numerous discrepancies. Gacy was able to recall sketchy details of only five of the killings; of the other twenty-eight, he had no memory at all. He

claimed that the murders began in 1974, but then later stated that the first occurred in January 1972. He attributed all of the murders to an alter personality that he referred to as Jack Hanley.

John was denied bail and sent to Cermak Hospital, which was the medical wing of the local jail, and kept isolated from other inmates. Jail personnel were instructed to have no contact with him either. Not long into his stay there, Gacy wrote a letter that read: "Since the dark shadow of Satan has come over me, it seems that my fair weather friends have run away…" During his second week at Cermak he consented to an interview, with the full cooperation of his attorney, during which he once again confessed to the murders. He claimed rather preposterously that the victims were mostly male prostitutes who he had killed over price disputes. To explain how he had gained control of the young, healthy victims prior to killing them, Gacy put forth a dubious story about using a "handcuff trick" to get the young men to handcuff themselves.

On January 10, 1979, "not guilty" pleas were entered on Gacy's behalf in response to the seven murder counts that had been brought against him. On April 23, a grand jury handed down indictments on twenty-six additional counts, bringing the total to thirty-three. Two days later, Gacy entered "not guilty" pleas to the additional counts. Jury selection for his trial began in January 1980. Despite intense pre-trial publicity—overshadowed for a time by news of the carnage at Jonestown—the venue of the trial was not changed. Instead, jurors were selected from another county and then sequestered. Remarkably, the jury selection process was over in just four days.

The trial began on February 6, 1980. Following opening statements, the state called sixty witnesses to present its case against John Gacy. The defense's case, such as it was, was presented in less than a week. Gacy was clearly unhappy with the work of his legal team; in a letter to the judge, he complained: "I asked that my trial be stopped and I haven't heard from you. When I asked my attorney as to why we are not putting on more witnesses, I am told that we don't have money to bring in experts." The state began its rebuttal of the defense case on February 29, and, due to the numerous doors opened by 'mistakes' made during the abbreviated presentation of a defense, it was given enormous latitude. Prosecutors were allowed to call, for instance, a number of witnesses who had survived attacks by Gacy; their testimony had originally been excluded. These young men all told similar stories of druggings and torture that were highly damaging to the defense.

It must be said here that these victims all told of being victimized solely by Gacy, which seemed to indicate that he was indeed the sole perpetrator of the crimes committed against the thirty-three dead victims. What was never explained, however, was why it was that after these victims had been subdued, raped and tortured, and were completely under the control of the alleged serial

killer, they were subsequently released, very much alive and able to bear witness against the defendant. Serial killers, we are told, are essentially slaves to their unnatural desires who, once they up the ante and begin killing their victims, are unable to stop themselves from killing again and again. And yet we are to believe that John Wayne Gacy, purportedly one of the most successful, and most deranged, serial killers of all time, was able to torture his victims for hours on end, but then pull back from the edge and opt to let some of them go now and then. And we are to believe that he had no concern with leaving living witnesses that could easily have been disposed of in his crawlspace.

The possibility exists that Gacy was not actually able to kill alone, although he was clearly capable of raping and torturing his helpless victims. Perhaps, as his initial statements to police indicated, there were others involved in the actual killings, and Gacy's house was just a convenient place to dispose of the bodies. Gacy himself suggested such a scenario in another of his letters to the judge: "As you know, other than the so-called statements made by me, and given in a self-serving manner by officers for the prosecution, there is only evidence that I owned the house that was used for [bodies], their safe-keeping." Gacy's statement was an accurate one, as outrageous as it may at first appear to be. And there were at least a half-dozen people known to have keys to Gacy's home.

One of the surviving victims who testified against Gacy had a rather interesting story to tell. Under oath, he told of having a meeting with the police and the assistant state's attorney not long after his initial complaint was filed; at that meeting, he was not allowed to sign any complaints against Gacy and he was bluntly informed that no action was going to be taken.

The last rebuttal witness called was a man named James Hanley whose purpose was, reportedly, to discredit Gacy's claim of having an alter personality named Jack Hanley. The state claimed that Gacy had appropriated this man's name for his concocted alter personality in an attempt to avoid responsibility for his crimes. Prosecution claimed that the witness's belated appearance was due to the fact that they had "had investigators looking for Hanley for more than a year, but somehow the police computer didn't turn up his name." That was a rather stunning claim given that Hanley was one of their own; he had been a plain-clothes detective with the Chicago Police Department since the late 1960s.

To no one's surprise, a Gacy's jury reached a verdict on their first vote, after less than two hours of deliberations. He was found guilty of all thirty-three first-degree murder counts. Following just two more hours of deliberations, after the sentencing phase of the trial, the jury unanimously voted to impose the death sentence.

While awaiting his scheduled execution, Gacy occupied his time painting portraits of clowns and Disney figures—a common pastime of convicted serial

killers, many of whom consider themselves to be artists, including painters, poets, writers and musicians. Elmer Wayne Henley, like Gacy, whiles away his time in prison painting scenes that are far removed from the violent crimes he was convicted of.

While it is abundantly clear that Gacy was involved in the abductions and murders, it seems unlikely that he was acting alone. In addition to the facts already presented here that indicate the possible involvement of others, there were other indications that something was not quite right about the Gacy case, and that elements of the police were complicit in the operations. Following the disappearance of one of Gacy's employees, Greg Godzik, John was not questioned by police for a full three months. Godzik's frustrated parents turned for help to private investigator Anthony Pellicano, Jr., a shadowy character who tends to surface in organized crime and Hollywood circles, and who, as this is being written, is facing a variety of charges in Los Angeles in connection with a case he was working on for actor Steven Seagal. Pellicano never checked out Gacy and later claimed that he had never been given the name by Godzik's parents, which was an interesting claim given that the primary reason for his hiring was to investigate the man that the police refused to investigate. Pellicano nevertheless maintained that he had been told that Greg worked at a gas station, not for John Gacy.

Godzik was reportedly seen still very much alive *after* the time of his reported abduction, as was at least one other victim and former Gacy employee, John Szyc. In one of those bizarre 'coincidences' that seem to surround serial killer cases, the Godzik home was burglarized the night before the story of John Wayne Gacy's arrest hit the airwaves. The family of victim Rick Johnston was convinced that Rick had been abducted by the Reverend Sun Myung Moon's Unification Church, an organization heavily steeped in mind control and with extensive connections to South Korean's version of the CIA (which was created and trained by our own CIA). Victim John Mowery, a former Marine, was the second sibling in his family to fall prey to a sadistic killer; his sister Judith had been found stabbed to death in her apartment in November 1972.

As for the unnamed others who were possibly involved in the killings, there were any number of people who lived for varying periods of time in the Gacy home, or who regularly spent time there, all of whom denied knowledge of the crimes and of the source of the stench permeating the house. One of Gacy's longtime employees and sometime houseguest, identified only by the pseudonym of Dick Walsh, was said to be evasive when questioned. He was given a polygraph examination, but his examiners claimed they were "unable to render a definite opinion." There is no indication that further examinations were attempted. Another Gacy employee was Gordon Nebel, who reportedly worked as the company's bookkeeper. He was curiously misidentified in the logs that

Gacy's surveillance team kept of his visitors, even though the officers were well aware of Nebel's identity, and aware that he worked two days a week inside the death house. Two other associates of Gacy's, Donald Morrill and Ronald Rohde, were known to have protected and shielded John from police during his period of surveillance. Neither of them appears to have been investigated in connection to the crimes, nor were any of the numerous names that appeared in Gacy's address book marked with a mysterious "H."

Whether any of these associates were involved in the deaths of the victims will likely never be known. The man in the best position to provide answers to those types of questions was executed by the state of Illinois on May 10, 1994.

* * * * *

Theodore Robert Bundy was yet another serial killer whose parentage remains obscured. He entered this world in 1946 at the Elizabeth Lund Home for unwed mothers and he was promptly abandoned there for three months by his mother, Eleanor Cowell. He was raised to believe that his mother's father, Sam Cowell, was his father as well, which he may in fact have been. Chronicler Ann Rule has written that the identity of Ted's real father was unknown outside of the family, and that he was a "shadowy man whose real identity grows more blurred with every year that passes…" Throughout his life, Bundy described his church deacon father/grandfather in glowing terms, while other family members have characterized him as a horrendously violent and abusive man who terrorized his family and was sadistic to animals. Sam Cowell's own brothers reportedly stated on numerous occasions that somebody should kill him to spare others further misery.

In October 1950, Ted's mother began calling herself Louise and legally changed her son's name from Theodore Robert Cowell to Theodore Robert Nelson—for no discernable reason. The next year, she married Johnnie Culpepper Bundy and changed Ted's name once again. Johnnie, a former Navy man and a member of a large clan of Tacoma Bundys, was employed at—of all places—a military hospital at a joint Army/Air Force complex. Ted attended Woodrow Wilson High School in Tacoma, Washington—at least according to his former classmates he did. That cannot be verified, however, since all records of Bundy's enrollment there have strangely disappeared. After graduation, he worked for a municipal electric utility.

In the spring of 1967, Ted met a woman identified by the pseudonym Stephanie Brooks. She was the daughter of a wealthy California family and was just one of many women who would be drawn into Ted's orbit. In the summer of 1968, Bundy received a scholarship to attend Dr. Lunde's Stanford University,

just as that tiny geographic region of the country was about to become the serial killer capital of the world. Ted purportedly attended Stanford for sessions in intensive Chinese studies, although nothing else in his biography hints at any interest in Chinese studies.

That same year, Ted traveled to Florida to attend the Republican National Convention as a supporter of presidential candidate Nelson Rockefeller. At about that same time, he worked as a driver and bodyguard for Art Fletcher, a candidate for Lieutenant Governor in the state of Washington. In 1969, Bundy traveled to Aspen, Colorado for an extended stay, after telling friends that he had been hired as a ski instructor, which turned out to be a lie. The real reason for Ted's stay in Aspen remains unknown. He also paid a visit to Arkansas that year, reportedly to visit relatives.

In September 1969, another woman entered Ted Bundy's orbit. Variously identified as Liz Kendall or Meg Anders, she was the daughter of a prominent doctor in the Mormon stronghold of Ogden, Utah. Despite her social standing, her estranged husband was a convicted felon. Meg/Liz apparently did not have the best taste in men.

In 1971, Ted began working at the Seattle Crisis Clinic as a paid work/study student; he remained there through May 1972. His work partner at the clinic was none other than Ann Rule, a policewoman *cum* 'true-crime' reporter whose brother had been recently killed, allegedly by his own hand, at—where else?—Stanford University. Ted left the crisis center to intern at Harborview County Hospital as a psychiatric counselor; his salary there was funded by a federal grant. He also worked that year as a key organizer of Washington Governor Dan Evans' reelection campaign. His job was, specifically, to spy and gather intelligence on the governor's opponent. Governor Evans later personally wrote Ted a glowing letter of recommendation to a Utah law school. As noted earlier in this chapter, Ted next worked for a variety of city, state and county law enforcement entities. In April 1973, he became a special assistant to Washington's Republican Party Chairman, Ross Davis, whom Ted frequently dined with and whose children, amazingly enough, he occasionally babysat.

In July of that same year, Bundy again flew to the San Francisco area, just as the dust was settling from the flurry of ritual murders that had terrorized that city. Just after his return to Washington, women began disappearing from the Seattle/Tacoma area. Before that time, the Seattle area had experienced very few murders—but that was about to change dramatically. The body of the first victim attributed to Bundy was found on December 6, 1973. Katherine Merry Devine had last been seen two weeks earlier getting into a pick-up truck after running away from home. The man from whom she willingly accepted the ride was not Ted Bundy. Her body was found to be missing its heart, lungs and

liver—purportedly attributable to scavenging animals. If so, those scavengers were very selective.

Next to disappear was Lynda Healey, in the early morning hours of February 1, 1974. According to the official version of events, Lynda was abducted from the home that she shared with others. Bundy allegedly entered the house, undetected by any of the home's other occupants, crept noiselessly downstairs, overpowered and killed Lynda without waking a roommate sleeping just on the other side of a thin plywood partition, and without leaving behind any signs of a struggle, wrapped Lynda's body, carried it back upstairs undetected, and then returned, still unnoticed, to make Lynda's bed, hang up her nightgown, and grab a change of clothes for her. Nothing unusual about any of that.

Later that same day, Lynda's roommates received three phone calls from someone who made only breathing noises before hanging up. One of those very same roommates later roomed with one of Ted Bundy's cousins—a cousin with whom Ted had been very close since the age of four. The brother of that same cousin, with whom Bundy was also quite close, was a teacher of what were described as 'disturbed youngsters.' Lynda herself did volunteer work at the Camelot House, described as an experimental school for 'retarded' youth. The only remains of Healey ever found was her skull, based on which investigators speculated that she had been bludgeoned to death. According to Healey's mother, the positive identification of that skull was based on a single tooth—raising the question of whether Lynda was actually ever found at all.

There was certainly nothing ever found of college student Donna Gail Manson, the next girl to disappear. She was last seen on March 12, but it took nearly a week before anyone bothered to report her missing. Whereas Healey, who bore no physical resemblance to Manson, was abducted from her home, Donna had reportedly been out walking when she disappeared. Donna Manson is said by Bundy chronicler Stephen Michaud to have "dabbled in occultism." Ann Rule described her as having an "obsession with death, magic, and alchemy." Found in her room was literature from "Thought Power, Inc.," described by Rule as an organization offering "seminars on positive thinking and mind discipline." The chief of the college police force, Alfred Pickles, reportedly ordered a perfunctory search of the campus following Donna's disappearance, and then inexplicably delegated oversight of the case to, bizarrely enough, his secretary. One of Ted's friends had been Manson's occasional racquetball partner. Another friend of Ted's was a jogging partner of Susan Rancourt, last seen on April 17. Only her skull was ever found, along with several others, on nearby Taylor Mountain.

Along with the proliferation of missing girls, the Pacific Northwest was grappling with another emerging problem in the spring of 1974: an abundance of what are referred to as 'cattle mutilations.' While conspiracy theories attempting

to explain this phenomenon abound, such theories frequently involving UFOs and alien experimentation, many police investigators and independent researchers have linked these occurrences to local satanic cult activity.

Next to disappear from the Seattle area were Roberta Kathleen Parks and Brenda Ball. Both were later identified only by skulls that were found on Taylor Mountain. Ball was not reported missing for two-and-a-half weeks following her purported abduction. She was, curiously enough, an acquaintance of Bundy chronicler Ann Rule's daughter. Georgann Hawkins reportedly disappeared from a well-lit, heavily traveled alleyway running along her campus's Greek Row on June 11, 1974. Many of her fellow students were up late that warm night, and virtually every window along the Row facing the alley was open. Georgeann was seen by fellow students approaching her sorority house, right up until she was within a few seconds of the entrance. Nevertheless, she then disappeared without anyone seeing or hearing a thing. No clues were left behind and no body was ever found. Police investigators—including a man named Herb Swindler, who took over as head of the homicide division on the very day that Georgeann's disappearance was reported, and who had been friends with Ann Rule for twenty years—were at a loss to explain the disappearance. A high school friend of Ted Bundy's was a friend of the missing girl's family.

On July 3, 1974, a law enforcement summit was held in Olympia, Washington that was attended by 100 representatives from Washington and Oregon. A prime topic of conversation at the summit was the wave of missing girls, which was rather odd since only one of the girls' remains had yet been discovered, confirming that she had met with foul play, and there was no indication whatsoever that the disappearances, which occurred over a wide geographic area, were connected in any way. In attendance at the summit were the Army's Criminal Investigations Division (CID), and Bundy friend and chronicler Ann Rule.

Each of the seven girls that had disappeared thus far—Devine, Healey, Manson, Rancourt, Parks, Ball and Hawkins—had vanished without a single clue having been left behind. There were no witnesses and no forensics evidence to tie anyone to any of the crime scenes. In some of the cases, it could not even be determined when or where the crime had occurred. All of that was about to change. On July 14, just days after the crime conference concluded, Janice Ott and Denise Naslund both reportedly disappeared from a very crowded Lake Sammamish Park—in broad daylight, and in front of literally thousands of potential witnesses, including a sizable chunk of the Seattle police force, who were holding their annual picnic there that day.

Ott, a probation officer whose father had sat on the Washington State Board of Prison Terms and Paroles, was the first of the two to disappear that day, apparently

sometime around noon. No one saw her leave or get into a car with anyone, and it was never explained what happened to her bike, which disappeared along with her and which would not have fit into Bundy's Volkswagen. Naslund, a known drug user who was said to usually have a supply of downers on hand, but who nevertheless babysat for a good friend of Ann Rule, disappeared around 4:30 PM. One witness saw a girl matching her description ride off from the park with a biker gang. She reportedly yelled, "No, I can't! Let me off!" Many years later, Naslund's mother wrote a brief note that was displayed at her daughter's memorial service, which read: "God forgive *them* for what *they* have done. I love you." It has never been explained why she used that peculiar wording.

A total of eight witnesses came forward claiming to have seen the elusive predator in the park that day. One of them had seen Janice Ott in the company of a man with sandy blond hair around the time of her disappearance. The descriptions offered by the other witnesses varied. Only two of them were ever able to identify Bundy as the man they had seen, and then only after his image had been widely aired by the media, tainting the IDs. One thing that several of them agreed on was that the man had introduced himself as "Ted." Why the stealthy killer would choose to show his face before thousands of potential witnesses, and why he would do so using his real name, are questions that have never been answered. Why Ted Bundy does not appear in any of the hundreds of photographs that were shot at the park that day is another question that has never been answered.

Following the Lake Sam disappearances, the task force tracking the Seattle killer was dubbed the "Ted Squad." One of the very first "Teds" reported to the newly christened task force was none other than Theodore Robert Bundy. His name was turned in by his friend Ann Rule, fresh from her attendance at the law enforcement summit. Ted would later also be reported by his fiancée, one of his college professors, and a former co-worker at one of the government agencies where he had worked.

It was later determined that both girls had been strangled or bludgeoned to death, though that was a largely speculative conclusion. Only the girls' skulls and a few assorted bones were ever found, on September 7. These remains were examined by, curiously enough, Dr. Daris Swindler. Though Rule's book pointedly claims that Daris was "no relation to Herb Swindler," Michaud acknowledges that he was in fact a "distant relative of Herb Swindler."

One key piece of evidence to emerged from the Lake Sam disappearances was a possible name for the suspect; he had identified himself to several witnesses as "Ted." Why the stealthy predator who had successfully abducted numerous women without leaving behind a single witness or forensics clue would suddenly operate in broad daylight using his real name was never explained.

The task force became thereafter known as the 'Ted Squad.' Among the very first 'Teds' to be reported to the squad was Theodore Robert Bundy—by his purported friend Ann Rule. Over the course of the investigation, four others would report Bundy as well: his fiancée, the pseudonymous Liz Kendall; a college professor; and a colleague at the Department of Emergency Services.

The fact that only the skulls of the girls were ever found further fueled the belief of some that the killings were cult related. Rule's book refers derisively to: "totally unsubstantiated rumors that the missing and murdered girls had been sacrificed and their headless bodies dumped, weighted, into the almost bottomless waters of Lake Washington." Chronicler Michaud, however, offered a different take: "occultism or Satan worship [are] creeds that local police say have long found a small but ardent following of practitioners around Seattle." He added that many "people were convinced that a virulent offshoot of the Charles Manson family had moved to the Seattle area and had begun a new reign of terror led by 'Ted.'" Some on the Seattle police force were convinced that there was cult involvement in the murders. A hefty file on occult activities in the area had been assembled, cryptically referred to as 'File 1004.' The occult theories though were ridiculed by county police and prosecutors.

The skulls that were recovered from Taylor Mountain were examined, curiously enough, by a local forensics expert named Daris Swindler, who Ann Rule claimed was no relation to Herb Swindler, her friend and the head of the homicide squad. Michaud, however, acknowledged that Daris and Herb were "distant" relatives.

After the Lake Sam disappearances provided the task force with a name, no further disappearances in the area were linked to Ted Bundy. That is not to say that no more girls vanished from the area, but rather that Bundy was no longer living there. He had moved to Utah to attend law school at the University of Utah, where he worked, surprisingly enough, as a campus security guard. The first Utah victim credited to Ted was Nancy Wilcox, last seen on October 2, 1974. She was never seen again, alive or dead. Melissa Smith was the next to vanish, on October 18. Her intact, nude body was found strangled and bludgeoned. The body had been almost entirely drained of blood, and revealed a rather curious fact: Melissa had not been killed immediately, but had been kept alive for up to a week after her disappearance. Strangely though, her make-up was undisturbed, none of her nails were broken, and there were no signs of ligatures. If she was held against her will prior to her murder, there was absolutely no indication of that fact. If it was Ted Bundy who held her for that duration of time, then he most certainly had accomplices; just the day after the girl's disappearance, Bundy left on a hunting trip with his fiancée's father. The slain girl was, perhaps significantly and perhaps not, the daughter of the police chief of Midvale, Utah.

Melissa's disappearance was followed by that of Laura Aime, who vanished on Halloween night, 1974. Aime was also reportedly held for up to a week before her murder, and yet the hair on her strangled and bludgeoned corpse had been freshly shampooed just before or just after her death. Forensics tests revealed that she had been drunk at the time of her death. The local sheriff, Mack Holley, was sold on another suspect as Laura's killer—a man who was later convicted of the brutal sex slaying of his girlfriend. Holley once exasperatedly told a Ted Squad member: "Bundy had nothing to do with our case, so forget him. That man didn't do our case. I wish you'd get that through your head." There were indications that Laura had some awareness that her life was in danger. Her mother reported that the girl had said to her a few weeks before her death, out of the blue: "Mother, at my funeral I don't want to be buried in a dress." Her request was honored.

The night of November 8, 1974 was purportedly a very busy one for Ted Bundy. He first allegedly attempted to abduct a girl by the name of Carol DaRonch from a shopping mall in Murray, Utah. Failing in that endeavor, he next struck in Bountiful, abducting Debra Kent from outside the building where a school play was in progress. Kent's body was never found. The problem with this official version of events is that it would have been physically impossible for Ted Bundy, or anyone else, to have committed both of those crimes. First of all, the descriptions given by witnesses at the two crime scenes differed considerably. DaRonch described her attempted abductor as having slicked-back hair and the strong scent of alcohol on his breath. Reappearing at the school, the suspect was described as having long, brown, wavy hair and was said to be handsome and well-dressed, and with no hint of alcohol on his breath. It is possible, of course, that Ted could have changed clothes, washed and restyled his hair, and rid himself of the alcohol smell sometime between the commissions of the two crimes. He would have had to do so, however, while driving a Volkswagen at over 100 miles-per-hour over rain-soaked streets, since the two crime scenes were twenty-six miles apart and only fifteen minutes elapsed between his departure from the DaRonch abduction site and his first sighting at the school. These times were recorded in police logs, so it was well known to the members of the Ted Squad that it would not have been possible for Bundy to essentially be in two places at once. Nevertheless, they pretended as though both crimes were the work of the elusive 'Ted,' even after a drama teacher at the second crime scene positively identified a drug dealer who was the initial suspect in the Kent case.

On December 12, 1974, another law enforcement summit was held: the Intermountain Crime Conference in Nevada. Exactly one month later, Ted allegedly struck again, this time moving his operations to the state of Colorado where, on January 12, Caryn Campbell disappeared from a well-lit, heavily traveled corridor at the Wildwood Inn. She had been seen just steps away from her

room, where she reportedly was heading to pick up a magazine. No one at the Inn saw or heard a thing, and there was no sign that there had been any struggle. Caryn had reportedly argued with her fiancé on the day of her disappearance. Her badly bludgeoned body was later recovered.

The next two alleged victims—Julie Cunningham and Denise Oliverson, who disappeared in March and April of 1975—were never found. After that, the disappearances strangely stopped, although it was another seven months before Ted Bundy was arrested. In the interim, Ted received a Mormon baptismal.

The circumstances of Ted's arrest were, to say the least, rather bizarre. He was stopped by Sergeant Bob Hayward of the Utah Highway Patrol, who just happened to be the brother of Captain Pete Hayward, the chief homicide detective for the Salt Lake County Sheriff's Office. The only 'crime' Ted appears to have committed on the night of his arrest, by Bob Hayward's own account, was driving down a street that happened to take him by the officer's house. Nevertheless, Hayward felt compelled to call in back-up for the stop, and he was soon joined by two additional UHP troopers and a Salt Lake County detective. Why this manpower was required to stop a motorist who had not even committed a traffic violation remains a mystery. A thorough search of Bundy's car was conducted, which was illegal without the consent of the owner since the officers, by their own admission, didn't have probable cause to suspect Ted of committing any crime. The officers claimed that the search was consensual, but Bundy maintained otherwise. And Ted would have been a fool to consent to the search, which no one connected to the case has ever accused him of being. Discovered in the trunk of Ted's vehicle were several provocative, though not illegal, items—including a pry bar, a ski mask, a stocking mask, an ice pick, and a pair of handcuffs. That last item was said to connect Ted to the attempted abduction of Carol DaRonch, which involved the use of handcuffs. The cuffs that were found in Ted's car, however, were from a different manufacturer than the pair recovered from DaRonch's wrist.

At the very time that Ted was being taken into custody, yet another law enforcement summit was underway. Convened in Aspen, Colorado, the meeting was attended by detectives and prosecutors from California, Washington, Oregon, Utah, and Colorado. This conference was held behind closed doors and all attendees reportedly took a fraternal vow of secrecy. On November 20, a week after the summit began, Ted was freed after posting a bond. Following his release, he reportedly thoroughly cleaned his VW, going so far as to take a garden hose to the inside of the vehicle. He also made some necessary repairs, and then sold the car to a former classmate of victim Melissa Smith. Investigators later claimed that hair from three different victims managed to survive Ted's clean-up efforts.

Bundy also moved out of his rooming house, which was under police surveillance. Oddly though, the room he vacated was never searched for evidence.

Utah authorities had no real evidence linking Ted to any of his alleged crimes in that state, but they nevertheless proceeded to charge him with the attempted abduction of Carol DaRonch. The victim was unable to identify Bundy from an initial photo line-up, saying: "I don't see anyone in there that resembles him." Investigator Jerry Thompson, after presenting the photos to DaRonch, wrote in his notes: "She really just doesn't know." She had no problem, however, later picking Bundy out of a line-up. Ted was presented in a seven-man line-up alongside of six police detectives who were all a little older and a little heavier than Ted. Police detectives had, for unexplained reasons, rather hastily replaced the inmates who had originally been slated for the line-up. Not only did DaRonch pick Ted out of the line-up, but so too did two witnesses from the school where Debbie Kent had disappeared. Since it was, as previously noted, not possible for Ted to have been at both crime scenes, this line-up clearly had serious problems. It was alleged by some that Captain Hayward, the brother of the UHP officer who arrested Ted, heavily influenced DaRonch's identification.

With Ted set to go to trial in the DaRonch case, a trial that would hinge almost entirely on the victim's rather shaky eyewitness testimony, Bundy's lawyer concocted a most remarkable strategy; at the last minute, he suggested waiving a jury trial and letting the presiding judge, Stewart Hanson, Jr., decide the fate of the defendant. What Bundy's advocate, John O'Connell, didn't tell Ted was that all the principle officers of the court—O'Connell, Judge Hanson, and prosecutor Dave Yocum—had been buddies since their days together as classmates at the University of Utah. Ted Bundy was about to be railroaded, and it would not be for the last time.

During the course of the trial, Judge Hanson regularly took it upon himself to question witnesses, which was roughly akin to a juror interjecting questions whenever he saw fit. The star witness for the prosecution, Carol DaRonch, delivered testimony that was riddled with discrepancies and inconsistencies. She was unable to decide if her would-be abductor had had a mustache or not. She told the court that his car had been white or tan, although she had initially told police that it was blue. She acknowledged on the stand that she had positively identified Bundy's car, even though by the time she did so the car had been altered and no longer looked as it would have on the night of the incident. Many veteran court watchers found her to be somewhat less than credible, as would have, it stands to reason, many jurors. But there were no jurors, and Judge Hanson saw no problem with DaRonch's testimony. He pronounced Bundy guilty as charged on March 1, 1976. Sentencing was initially set for March 22, but was then delayed so that Ted could be psychologically evaluated by a Dr. Al Carlisle.

While Bundy awaited his sentencing, his visitation privileges were severely restricted. Interestingly enough though, Ann Rule had no problem at all being granted a special visit with Ted, even though she was not a relative, she was not on the list of approved visitors, and she showed up on a day that was not a regular visiting day. Any one of those factors alone should have disqualified her from visiting Bundy. Nevertheless, she was not only allowed to visit with the prisoner who was being held nearly incommunicado, but she was allowed to do so without even being searched before being allowed in.

On June 30, 1976, Judge Hanson sentenced Bundy to a 1–15 year prison term, leaving open the possibility that he could be paroled in as little as eighteen months. Ted's legal troubles were just beginning, however; on October 22, a warrant was issued for his arrest by the state of Colorado for the murder of Caryn Campbell. The state's case against Bundy was virtually nonexistent, consisting of: a hair purportedly found in his car; gas purchase receipts that placed him in the state of Colorado at the time of Campbell's disappearance, along with millions of other people; a Colorado Ski Country guidebook that was found in Ted's possession and on which someone—Bundy maintained that it wasn't him—had improbably marked an "X' next to the Wildwood Inn; an alleged eyewitness; and a prison informant.

Also in October, Utah's notorious Gary Gilmore, immortalized in a disinformational Norman Mailer book and a made-for-TV movie, was convicted and sentenced to death. Gilmore immediately and improbably began campaigning to become the first man executed in the United States since 1962. He succeeded, earning himself an appearance before a Utah firing squad on January 19, 1977, and opening the doors to the resumption of state executions.[27] Just over a week later, Bundy was taken to Aspen to stand before Judge George Lohr and answer to the charges filed against him in the Campbell case. It would not be the last time that a high-profile execution immediately preceded an important court appearance by Ted Bundy.

Around the time that Bundy was awaiting trial in Colorado, a new woman entered his orbit: Carole Ann Boone, who had previously worked at a Vietnamese resettlement camp. She would later marry Ted and bear him a child.

The judge and the prosecutor assigned to the Campbell case both reeked of corruption. Lohr had just presided over the Claudine Longet trial, which he had

27 More than a quarter-century later, Timothy McVeigh waged a very similar and equally improbable campaign to open the doors to the resumption of federal executions. He succeeded as well. His trial, conviction and execution left many questions about the bombing of the Oklahoma City federal building unanswered.

wrapped up by sentencing Longet to an absurdly lax thirty-day jail term for shooting and killing famed skier Spider Sabitch. District Attorney Frank Tucker had seriously compromised the prosecution by 'losing' Longet's diary—reportedly crucial to the state's case—after opting to take it home. Tucker would later be convicted, not long after handling the Bundy case, of two counts of embezzlement, one count of felony theft, and two misdemeanor counts. He was given a ninety-day delayed sentence, a $1,000 fine, and was disbarred, prompting him to change careers and enroll in a mortician's school in—where else?—San Francisco.

Bundy, perhaps catching a whiff of the stench wafting over Aspen, resolved that he would defend himself. As the preliminary trial began in early April, the state's case began almost immediately to self-destruct. On April 4, the alleged eyewitness took the stand and confidently identified the man she had seen: the Pitkin County Undersheriff. Then the purported prison informant was quietly dropped, leaving the state without either of its witnesses. What was left were: some gas receipts, that proved only that Ted was in the state of Colorado; a tourist brochure, that proved only that Ted may have thought about taking a ski trip to Colorado; and a single hair that an FBI analyst claimed was "microscopically indistinguishable" from Caryn Campbell's hair and that police claimed was recovered from Ted's car. The chances of gaining a conviction on that evidence in anything approaching a fair trial lay somewhere between slim and none.

As it happened, there never was a trial. In a rather bizarre turn of events, Bundy opted not to stick around long enough to face trial. During a break in the preliminary proceedings, he purportedly escaped, after being conveniently left unguarded, by jumping out an open window and strolling down the street. Ted then quickly and improbably found his way to an empty cabin that happened to be stocked with food, clothing, a rifle, a flashlight, batteries, blankets and first-aid supplies. He allegedly entered the cabin by prying loose the wire-mesh that had been applied to the windows for security, though a caretaker later said that it would have taken "superhuman strength" to do so with bare hands, as Ted claimed to have done.

Bundy did not remain free for long. He became lost and disoriented, causing him to fail in his quest to get away from the Aspen area, and virtually guaranteeing his recapture. Once back in custody, Ted was assigned new counsel: jet-setting attorney Stephen "Buzzy" Ware. Ware was a flamboyant, larger-than-life character who regularly piloted himself around the country to handle major racketeering and narcotics cases. A few weeks after being assigned the Bundy case, Ware was in a coma. He reportedly crashed into a rock wall in another one of those freak motorcycle accidents. His wife was killed in the crash.

Forced to again represent himself, Bundy filed for a much-needed change of venue, in order to get the case out of Aspen. The motion was granted, but that

was hardly a victory for Ted. The new venue was to be Colorado Springs; statistically speaking, there was no worse place in the state of Colorado for an accused murderer to stand trial. With his trial set to begin on January 9, 1978, Ted again managed to escape from his captors. This time he allegedly climbed through a 12" square hole in the ceiling of his cell, which he had cut with a hacksaw, raising questions of where he obtained the saw, and how he was able to noisily hack through the steel plate without anyone noticing. Once in the crawlspace above his cell, he reportedly scurried over to the space above a deputy's empty apartment, lowered himself down into a closet, and then casually strolled out the door to freedom. A prison snitch is said to have repeatedly reported hearing Ted moving about in the crawlspace at night, but nothing was ever done. It seems very odd, however, that a jail would ever be constructed in such a way as to create a 'crawlspace.'

Once free, Bundy this time quickly located an MG Midget that happened to be outfitted with a set of studded radial tires, a necessity for the snow-covered roads he would be facing, and also happened to have keys already in the ignition. This time, Ted wasted no time getting out of town; by the time his disappearance was discovered at noon the next day, he reportedly was already in Chicago. His commandeered vehicle did not get him far; it apparently broke down on the way to Vail. Luckily though, he was picked up by a helpful GI who gave him a ride. He then traveled by bus from Vail to Denver, and then by plane from Denver to Chicago. Once there, he stole a car and drove it to Atlanta. From there, he made his way to Tallahassee, Florida, acquiring a new identity along the way: Chris Hagen. That is how the official story reads, anyway.

On January 15, 1978, a slaughter took place at the Chi Omega sorority house on the campus of the University of Florida at Tallahassee. This crime did not bear even the slightest resemblance to any of the previous crimes attributed to Ted Bundy, but rather was reminiscent of the attack twelve years earlier that had been attributed to Richard Speck. Four girls were brutally bludgeoned in the early morning hours; two of them died from their injuries. A fifth girl was subsequently attacked at another location not far away. The first attack, at the Chi O house, purportedly occurred just after 3:00 AM and was over in just fifteen minutes. In that brief period of time, a single assailant was allegedly able to go room-to-room, locating and viciously beating four women, in addition to raping and sodomizing two of them.

One of the sorority sisters, Nita Neary, caught a brief glimpse of an intruder in the house as the man was leaving through the front door. She saw him only in profile, and described him as wearing a watch cap pulled down low over his face. His most noticeable feature, she said, was a large nose. Neary had just arrived home, at 3:00 AM, from a campus kegger party, and was quite likely intoxicated

to some degree, although the state claimed that its star witness had been quite sober on the night of the attack. Under hypnosis, she later said that the intruder closely resembled the sorority's houseboy, who looked nothing like Ted. Another sorority sister, Carol Johnston, was only asleep that night for a total of five minutes, from 3:14 AM until 3:19 AM, when she was awakened by Neary and others. Nevertheless, she did not see or hear anything out of the ordinary that night.

The first officers were on the scene by 3:23 AM, just minutes after the dazed and bloodied victims staggered out of their rooms. These officers were quickly joined by a virtual army of city police, campus police, and county sheriff's deputies. The streets surrounding the house were soon brimming with squad cars, detectives' vehicles, ambulances, and a hearse. Nearly forty distraught sorority sisters were milling about the house, many of them with blood dripping from their hands from their efforts to assist the victims. Joining the circus were an unspecified number of curiosity seekers, who were allowed to roam freely about the house. Needless to say, the crime scene was hopelessly compromised before any serious investigation could even begin.

Key evidence was destroyed at the scene, and the evidence that was preserved tended to point away from Ted Bundy as the likely perpetrator. For example, semen found in the bed of Cheryl Thomas, the fifth victim, proved to be from a non-secretor, effectively ruling out Bundy as the donor. Chewing gum that was discovered in the hair of one victim, and that could have yielded both saliva and bite-mark evidence, was destroyed. Saliva that would have likely been present around an alleged bite wound in the buttocks of another victim was swabbed away at the scene. The wound was allegedly photographed at the scene, but the photos that were later produced were not taken with the medical examiner's camera. That camera purportedly malfunctioned, so the photos were taken instead with a standard 35mm camera, allegedly supplied by a crime scene specialist. The section of skin that contained the incriminating marks was excised and placed in saline solution; unfortunately, it was destroyed it in the process. A sheriff's deputy on the scene prematurely ordered one victim's body, Margaret Bowman's, taken to the morgue before crime scene technicians had even ascertained whether any evidence was present on the corpse.

And so it went at the Chi Omega house that fateful night. One rather curious fact about the crime scene that doesn't appear to have been commented on by any of Bundy's numerous chroniclers was observed by Ray Crews, one of the first officers on the scene. Crews later testified in court, and later repeated in interviews, that the body of victim Lisa Levy was cool to the touch upon its discovery. According to the official version of events, however, she had been dead for just minutes before her discovery—not long enough for her body to have noticeably cooled One other rather curious fact, that proves once again that

bizarre 'coincidences' appear frequently in the stories of America's serial killers, was that Daris Swindler—the forensics expert from Seattle—just happened to be in Tallahassee on the night of the killings. Another largely forgotten fact indicated that there was at least a possibility that the victims had not been randomly targeted: a set of keys to Thomas' house, that likely were used by her killer, were discovered in her backyard.

Not long after the bloody rampage in Tallahassee, twelve-year-old Kimberly Leach disappeared from Lake City Junior High School in broad daylight amid heavy rush-hour traffic. Her body was found two months later, completely drained of blood. The cause of death was listed as "homicidal violence to the neck region." The day after her disappearance, coincidentally or otherwise, Ted Bundy's name was added to the FBI's 'Ten Most Wanted' list. There was no indication at that time that Ted had anything to do with the Florida crimes; they certainly didn't match his supposed MO, and there was no reason to suspect that Bundy was anywhere near the state of Florida.

Ted was arrested shortly thereafter, bearing yet another new name, Kenneth Misner. His last night of freedom was spent, oddly enough, in a wooded area of the Eglin Air Force Base, a restricted military facility. He had in his car at the time an array of credit and identification cards, as well as several photos of girls and young women. After allegedly sending word that he wanted to talk without counsel, Ted was interrogated in Pensacola without an attorney present, and the conversation was taped. His public defenders later loudly complained that they had been refused entry to the interrogation room. The resultant tapes were filled with gaps, allegedly due to the tape-recorder unerringly malfunctioning whenever Ted purportedly made incriminating statements. None of these supposedly confessional statements were recorded, but detectives swore that Ted had in fact made them.

There were some interesting bits of conversation that *were* recorded, including this exchange:

> Police Interrogator: Where'd you get the money [that you used after your escape to travel across the country] from?
> Ted: "Well, man, there's other people. Other people are in on it."

The next day, Bundy was handcuffed and brought to the courtroom under heavy guard, with his attorneys still complaining that they had not yet been allowed to see their client in jail. Following his appearance, Ted was taken away with what chronicler Richard Larsen described as "a strange, aloof look in his eyes." Bundy walked right past Larsen, who was a friend of his, without any hint

of recognition. The nighttime interrogations of Bundy continued for a week, first in Pensacola and then in Tallahassee.

In the first week of March, Ted was brought to appear before Judge John Rudd, and on April 27 Rudd issued a warrant authorizing Bundy's captors to take dental impressions of their prisoner—by force if necessary. Curiously, prosecutors had waited for over two months before taking steps to obtain this allegedly key piece of evidence. In July, a grand jury was convened to hear secret testimony pertaining to the disappearance of Kimberly Leach. On the 21st, an indictment was handed down, which a judge immediately ordered sealed. The next week, another grand jury was convened to hear evidence in the Chi Omega case.

In December 1978, Judge Rudd was ordered by the Florida Supreme Court to disqualify himself from hearing the case, due to his having shown an obvious bias against the defendant. Rudd was replaced by Judge Edward Cowart, a former Navy man and police officer. On May 31, 1979, Ted was scheduled to appear before Cowart to accept the terms of a plea agreement that would have handily disposed of both the cases in which indictments had been handed down. In exchange for entering three guilty pleas to the three counts of first-degree murder, Ted was to receive three consecutive twenty-five-year prison sentences. This would have been a great deal for Bundy—if he was in fact guilty of the crimes he was charged with, and if the state had a solid case against him to prove that fact. However, there is scant evidence to suggest that that was the case.

To insure that Bundy stuck to the script and entered the guilty pleas, the state of Florida executed John Spenkelink just six days before Ted's scheduled court appearance. The message sent to Bundy could not have been any clearer: take the deal or you too will have an appointment with Florida's "Old Sparky." To further drive that point home, Ted was brought to appear in the very same courtroom where Spenkelink had been condemned to die, with many of the same actors in attendance. For a time, Bundy was even represented by Spenkelink's attorney, Brian Hayes. Spenkelink was, curiously enough, only the second man executed in this country since 1962, the first being, of course, the aforementioned Gary Gilmore. Before his electrocution, Spenkelink was asked if he had any final statement, to which he replied: "I can't talk. The [chin] strap is too tight." That was the only statement he was allowed to make.

Ted was not intimidated; he refused the deal.

On June 25, 1979, the Chi Omega trial began in Miami, Florida. It was the very first trial in U.S. history to be nationally televised. By June 30, final jury selections had already been made. Sitting on that jury, according to at least two of Bundy's chroniclers, was a man named Vernon Swindler—whom Michaud noted had "been to a murder trial before, his cousin's." For those who may have lost count, that brings to three the number of people named Swindler who played a

part in the investigation and prosecution of Ted Bundy: Herb Swindler, the head of the homicide division; Daris Swindler, the forensics expert who examined the alleged victims' remains; and Vernon Swindler, the juror. Nothing unusual about that, I suppose, nor in the fact that Ted's defense team included a 'jury expert' who was actually an Atlanta hypnotist named Emil Spillman.

The case presented by the state was, to put it politely, problematic. A stocking mask was produced that was purportedly found at the Thomas residence and which was said to be identical to the one found in Ted's car during the illegal Utah search—though one has to wonder how different one stocking mask could be from another. The mask from the Florida crime scene was said to have yielded two hairs from the head of Ted Bundy. Interestingly though, the only eyewitness that night, Nita Neary, testified that the man she saw was not wearing any such mask. Of the 260 different fingerprints found in the Chi Omega house by detectives, not one of them matched those of Ted Bundy, even though Neary also said that the intruder she saw was not wearing any gloves. In court, Nita Neary positively identified Bundy, as she reportedly had done from a photo line-up, though she had wavered in that identification when she had first seen Ted in person. And, as previously noted, she had said under hypnosis that the intruder more closely resembled the sorority's houseboy. She had also said that he had a very prominent nose, a feature that Ted was clearly lacking.

The notorious bite-mark evidence was presented to the jury, even though the actual bite wound had been destroyed and the photos purportedly taken of the wound had been shot with a camera other than that of the medical examiner, hopelessly compromising the evidence chain. The bite wound evidence was presented by a man named Dr. Richard Souviron, who had published his supposed findings before the trial even began, thereby contaminating the jury pool. In explaining the techniques that he had used to come to his conclusions, the doctor may well have inadvertently revealed exactly where the photos of the victim's bite wound came from: "I took models [from the castings of Bundy's teeth] and I went to the morgue and I pressed the models into the buttocks area on different individuals and photographed them." The good doctor took the castings of Bundy's teeth and used them to 'bite' the buttocks of corpses, and then photographed those bite wounds with a 35mm camera, but those were, of course, different 35mm bite wound photos than the ones that were allegedly taken of the actual bite wound victim, although those photos were also taken with a 35mm camera, rather than with the ME's camera, and it couldn't actually be proven that there ever was an actual bite wound victim, since the purported physical evidence of the wound itself had been destroyed.

Bob Campbell, a Fort Lauderdale police officer who followed the trial, was skeptical of both the bite-mark testimony and of Neary's dubious identification

of Bundy, despite the fact that he had a vested interest in seeing Bundy convicted, given that it was his sister that Ted had been on trial for killing prior to his escape in Colorado. Dr. Dwayne DeVore was skeptical as well. Even if we take a leap of faith and assume that the photos of the bite wounds were legitimate, DeVore testified that the tooth pattern visible in the photos was a very common one, and "the material of skin is flexible, elastic," and not at all a good medium from which to compare bite-marks. Bundy himself cast further doubt on the evidence when he attempted to introduce photographs demonstrating that one of his teeth had been chipped *after* the attack at the Chi Omega house. To prove that point, Ted requested a delay in the trial to subpoena all the negatives of photographs taken of him by the media. If Bundy's bite pattern had in fact changed after his arrest, then proving that would have conclusively proven that the bite wound evidence had been fabricated using castings of Ted's teeth. The judge disallowed the motion and no photographic evidence was ever reviewed by the court.

This was certainly not the only ruling to go against Bundy. It was clear from the time of the opening defense statement that the court was heavily biased in favor of the prosecution. The defense's statement, which ordinarily would not be expected to draw objections, ran for just twenty-six minutes and was interrupted with an astounding twenty-nine objections, *twenty-three of which were sustained*. When all was said and done, the jury deliberated for just six hours before finding Bundy guilty on all counts. Following the penalty phase of the trial, the jurors required just an additional hour and forty minutes to deliver two death sentences. Ted was sent to Death Row's Q Wing, otherwise known as the 'Bug Wing,' where he took up residence in John Spenkelink's recently abandoned cell.

In January 1980, he was back in court to again face murder charges, this time for the death of Kimberly Leach. There was virtually no chance of him receiving a fair trial; his name recognition in Orange County, where he was being tried, was said to be at 98%. Only the comatose were unaware of the notorious Ted Bundy. The state used that fact to their full advantage, brazenly stacking the jury with those who had prior knowledge of the case. As Ted accurately noted, "the state's case is predicated on knowledge outside this courtroom." Even Ann Rule acknowledged that the "prospective jurors…appeared willing to say almost anything so that they might be chosen."

Ted's defense counsel this time around was a man named Vic Africano, who candidly described Bundy as a "split personality." Court watchers noted that Bundy seemed to have undergone a radical transformation from his previous trial, during which he had represented himself quite lucidly and animatedly. He now seemed distant, aloof, out of touch with his surroundings. It would later be revealed that Carole Boone kept him supplied with a steady flow of drugs and alcohol throughout the latter proceedings.

There were ostensibly three eyewitnesses to the Leach abduction, but there were serious questions about all of them. The first was a seventy-three-year-old crossing guard who remembered the day of the abduction as having been a "warm, summery day," when in fact it had been a rain-drenched morning on which the temperature had been near freezing. According to chronicler Michaud, during a deposition this witness had "told the attorney that he knew he'd picked the right man because an FBI agent winked at him when he picked the right picture in a photo lineup." His testimony was deemed inadmissible, as was that of the second eyewitness, who had been unable to identify Ted for nearly two years before suddenly developing the ability to do so. The third witness, C. L. "Andy" Anderson, had waited for weeks before belatedly reporting his version of the abduction to police. Anderson happened to work at the local fire station, which was, conveniently enough, located in the same building as the Lake City Police Department.

Anderson's version of the incident was seriously lacking in credibility. He claimed that Bundy, ever the careful criminal, had improbably left his van parked in the street, blocking the only west-bound traffic lane, during the morning rush hour, while he leisurely prowled about the school looking for a suitable victim. In order to 'enhance' his memory of that day, Anderson had reportedly been hypnotized. Another witness, a sporting goods dealer, claimed in court that he had sold Bundy a knife shortly before the crime was committed, but there was no evidence that a knife had been used in the commission of the crime, and the witness had initially identified another man in a photo line-up.

The most compelling element of the state's case, on the surface anyway, was the purported fiber evidence. Fibers from a van that Ted had allegedly stolen and used for a period of ten days were reportedly recovered from Leach's purse, bra, jersey, and socks. Conversely, fibers from her denim purse and jeans were said to have been found in the van. The problem was that there was no evidence to suggest that Ted had ever stolen, used, or been anywhere near that van. None of Ted's or Leach's hair was ever found in the van, even though 100 hair samples were recovered from the vehicle, clearly demonstrating that no effort had been made to cleanse the van of evidence. Similarly, dozens of latent fingerprints were found in the van, but none of them belonged to Ted. Obviously, no effort had been made to wipe the van down, which was not consistent with Bundy's other alleged actions. For instance, it was claimed that Ted's Florida apartment had been so thoroughly cleaned before his departure that not a single fingerprint could be found anywhere.

Another problem with the fiber evidence is the notion that a fiber from a pair of denim jeans, a mass produced commodity, can be matched to a particular pair of jeans. There is absolutely nothing unique about any particular pair of blue

jeans that would allow an analyst to ascertain that it was the garment that yielded an individual fiber to the exclusion of all other pairs of jeans. These are not, in other words, fingerprints we are talking about here; these are textiles that are produced in enormous lots. The same is largely true of carpet fibers, including those from the van, which are also a mass produced commodity. The best that can be ascertained is that a fiber came from a particular make of automobile, not from any specific vehicle. Claims to the contrary fly in the face of any sort of logic.

The best that the state could do to connect Bundy to the van was through the testimony of Detective James Parmenter of Jacksonville. Prior to the Leach abduction, his kids had purportedly had an encounter with the van and its driver. Parmenter later arranged for his kids to be hypnotized, out of which allegedly came a positive ID of Bundy as the driver. Bundy was thus ever so tenuously linked to the van, through the manipulated testimony of the two young children of a police detective, and not through any physical evidence whatsoever, and the van was then tenuously linked to Kimberly Leach, though only through dubious fiber evidence.

None of this really mattered, however, as Bundy's guilt was a foregone conclusion for the people of the state of Florida. It took the jury only forty-five minutes to deliver yet another death sentence on February 9—the second anniversary of Leach's disappearance, a fact that surely was not lost on the jurors. Following the verdict, Ted was sent to occupy a cell right next to that of our old friend Ottis Toole.

Throughout the 1980s, long after Ted Bundy had mover on, women continued to vanish in and around the Seattle area—as many as 100 of them by some counts. Most of them were prostitutes, many of them underage. These killings were attributed to the so-called "Green River Killer," who has never been caught (though recent reports claim that police now have a suspect who will be prosecuted).

In the summer of 1985, the Violent Criminal Apprehension Program (VICAP) was launched at the FBI's headquarters in Quantico, Virginia. Ted Bundy was said to be the prototype on which the system was based. This system, despite the lofty goals implied by the name, has little to do with the apprehension of violent criminals and everything to do with the wholesale erosion of civil rights in this country, using the fear of a manufactured phenomenon, serial killers, to sell repressive measures to the American people. One of the biggest promoters of the system, who did everything but go door-to-door to assist the FBI in its efforts to justify its implementation, was Ann Rule. The very same Ann Rule consented to be a witness for the prosecution during Bundy's so-called "competency trials," which were an effort on Ted's part to persuade the courts to set his sentences aside and grant him new trials in the Florida cases.

In her book *The Stranger Beside Me*, Rule, a former Chi Omega sorority sister, justifies the selling out of her purported friend by saying: "There would be a very real threat that Ted could work his way back through all his legal thickets." In other words, if Bundy's verdicts had been set aside, and if new trials had been ordered, there would have been a very real possibility that his previous trials would have been revealed as the judicial shams that they were. The truth of the matter was, as Stephen Michaud wrote: "in the dozens of cases from Seattle to Florida in which the police have sought to implicate Bundy there has not been a single bit of physical evidence that incontrovertibly demonstrates his involvement in anything more sinister than car theft." Michaud attributes this to Bundy being some sort of criminal mastermind—a genius who was smart enough to always cover his tracks. In truth, there was never any evidence to suggest that Bundy was a genius. He was no doubt an intelligent man, but there is nothing in his academic records or in his IQ test scores to indicate that he rose to the level of a 'genius.'

In April 1987, the *Associated Press* reported that the incarcerated Bundy had been corresponding with attempted presidential assassin John Hinckley, Jr., who was in turn corresponding with Manson disciple *cum* attempted presidential assassin Lynette "Squeaky" Fromme. Birds of a feather…

On August 1, 1987—*Lammas* on the occult calendar—Judge Cowart died of a massive heart attack while lying in a private hospital room that he had checked into for observation. He had no prior history of illness. Ted Bundy, calmed by tranquilizers, was put to death by the state of Florida on January 24, 1989. In his final hours, he allegedly confessed on tape to an array of murders, including some in the state of Idaho that he had never been accused of. Many of the details given in these confessions were either wrong or unverifiable, and the tape is difficult to hear—due purportedly to yet another tape-recorder malfunction.

One type of evidence that would have proven tremendously damaging to Bundy had it been introduced at any of his trials was Polaroid photographs of the murders. According to some officials, such photos did exist, taken by Ted himself. As with so many other cases though, such evidence was never produced. Why? Perhaps because those photographs would show actors other than, or in addition to, Theodore Robert Bundy.

Chapter 15

The Next Generation

"Like you have a job, I have a job, he has a job. His job is killing people. That's what he was trained to do."

—Cynthia Haden, a juror in the Richard Ramirez trial, commenting on the convicted Night Stalker

Henry Lee Lucas' reign of terror ended a mere nine months before another series of violent 'serial killings' began in March 1984 in part of Henry's old stomping ground: the state of Florida. By the time it was over, ten people had met with gruesome, untimely deaths, allegedly at the hands of Bobby Joe Long. Though rarely mentioned in press accounts of the killings, Bobby Joe Long was a cousin of Henry Lee Lucas.

Just over two years after John Wayne Gacy was indicted for the murder of thirty-three young men in Chicago, a new wave of 'serial killings' began in the Windy City. A year-and-a-half later, seventeen young women had allegedly fallen victim to the "Ripper Crew," led by Robin Gecht. Seventeen years after the arrest of the Rippers, and just days before the scheduled execution of one member of the crew, a son of the crew's charismatic leader was arrested along with three accomplices and charged with homicide as well. Though the connection was almost entirely ignored by the media, Robin Gecht had been one of the young male employees of John Wayne Gacy.

Angelo Buono was still awaiting trial for the Hillside Strangler murders when girls once again began turning up dead on the streets of the San Fernando Valley. These killings were eventually attributed to a man named Douglas Clark and an accomplice named, bizarrely enough, Carole Bundy—though this was not the same woman who acquired that very same name after marrying Ted Bundy. Like Buono, Clark owned an auto upholstery business, located just a short drive from Angelo's shop. Also like Buono, Clark claimed to have used his business as a front for a prostitution ring. On at least one occasion, Clark had visited Buono's shop

to purchase supplies. The first victims of the Clark and Bundy team, who were dubbed the "Sunset Strip Killers," were dumped along the same lonely stretch of Forest Lawn Drive where the body of Strangler victim Yolanda Washington had earlier been discovered, as well as the body of Laura Collins before her. Clark claimed that his large stable of past and present girlfriends included a roommate of one of the Strangler victims. Following his arrest, Clark began a relationship with another woman, as did his partner, Carole Bundy. The woman was Veronica Compton, the girlfriend of Kenneth Bianchi who was convicted of being a "Copycat" Strangler.

Richard Ramirez, whose alleged "Night Stalker" killing spree began just weeks after that of Bobby Joe Long, arose from the very same cesspool that had spawned Henry Lee Lucas, Rafael Resendez-Ramirez, and the Matamoros and Juarez death cults. Just before his arrival in Los Angeles, Ramirez paid a visit to San Francisco to receive inspiration from the high priest of that satanic sewer, Anton LaVey.

* * * * *

Robin Gecht was born on November 30, 1953 at, appropriately enough, the Illinois Masonic Hospital. His parents never married and young Robin was raised primarily by his grandparents. At a fairly young age, Gecht was sent to a school for troubled youth. He was later sent by a judge to a live-in facility that likewise catered to delinquent youth. Still later, as a young teen, Robin formed a close relationship with a man named Thomas Farley, a known pedophile who lived in the same building as the Gecht family. During his teen years, Gecht was accused of molesting his own sister. Around that same time, he began living with Farley, an arrangement that apparently was of no great concern to Gecht's parents or grandparents. At one point, Robin even took to the road with Farley, journeying to the state of Florida for reasons unknown.[28]

28 It may by now have occurred to readers that three states seem to play a particularly prominent role in the life stories of an overwhelming number of purported serial killers: California, Texas and Florida. These three states are, coincidentally or not, rife with satanic cult activity. They are also, coincidentally or not, the three points through which virtually all of the drugs trafficked through Mexico and Central and South America enter the United States. As was previously mentioned, two of these three points of entry, again coincidentally or not, have in recent years been under the political control of the Bush family. And as was also mentioned previously, law enforcement officials have spoken of an organized crime pipeline that moves many of the drugs entering Texas to the city of Chicago, Illinois—which could help explain the recurrent phenomenon of spree and serial killers stalking that city.

Robin Gecht married a woman named Rosemary McCaffrey and fathered three children by her. Rosemary has been described by Gecht chronicler Jaye Slade Fletcher as "bizarre looking, with long black hair, Cleopatra eye makeup, long red fingernails, and a hard-eyed stare." At the urging of Robin, who enjoyed reading books on the torture practices of ancient cultures, she reportedly kept hatpins stuck through her breast. Like Rosemary, her brother Thomas was also thin and chalk-white with jet-black hair. He was later implicated by Robin Gecht in the Ripper murders. Thomas, who denied any involvement in the killings, claimed that one of the accomplices who was later convicted of complicity was a lover of Robin's, and that another accomplice was a former lover.

In addition to his boyfriends, Robin also reportedly maintained a large stable of girlfriends. Like others profiled in this book, Gecht reportedly had a steady stream of teenage boys and girls coming and going from his house, some of whom stayed there for varying periods of time. One of them, a fifteen-year-old girl, accused Robin of raping her at gunpoint, but the charges were later dropped. Robin apparently was not too picky about who, *or what*, he copulated with; on at least one occasion, he reportedly had sexual relations with his wife's parents' dog.

Gecht has been described as a master manipulator who is adept at reading others. He is also said to be an accomplished hypnotist who has an uncanny knack for getting people, especially women, to do what he wants them to do. He has also been described as a sufferer of a multiple personality disorder who speaks in various voices—including those of a small child, a teenager, and a businessman. Experts, of course, have declared this a sham.

Robin frequently visited an unidentified drugstore where he apparently was on close terms with the pharmacist. Associates of Gecht's have said that he could get whatever he wanted there, in whatever quantities he desired; he was therefore able to keep a large and steady supply of prescription pills of various kinds on hand. All of this—the fascination with hypnotism and the control of others, the fascination with torture, the associations with pedophilia, ready access to drugs, indications of a dissociative disorder—is by now familiar terrain.

Two of Robin's convicted accomplices were brothers Andy and Tom Kokoraleis. Along with their four siblings, the two boys had been raised by their father following the premature death of their mother. One of those siblings filed numerous complaints with a youth protection agency charging their father with sexual molestation. In one of those strange twists that are forever popping up in serial killer cases, Warren Wilkosz, who served as the lead investigator on the Ripper case, had been a friend of the Kokoraleis family for a number of years.

In April 1982, Robin Gecht suddenly disappeared for several weeks, much as Richard Chase had done several years before. Upon his return, Gecht refused to explain the reason for his sudden disappearance or to discuss where he had gone.

On May 6, just after he returned from his mysterious sojourn, an unidentified Chicago police officer responded to a call of a man with a gun. That man turned out to be Robin Gecht, who was arrested and charged with carrying a loaded weapon. Robin purportedly quickly established a rapport with the officer, despite the circumstances of their meeting. A few days later, the two met at the officer's house and Robin, a building contractor/carpenter, just as Gacy had been, began working for the officer.

Robin's new friend on the force soon opened his home to the entire Gecht family, who essentially lived with him for a period of four months. During that time, Robin was allegedly directly complicit in a string of grisly murders. The first of these occurred just nine days after that fateful, and rather bizarre, meeting between Gecht and the officer. Lorraine Ann Borowski disappeared on May 15, 1982. Borowski shared an apartment with a man who told police investigators that she had not slept at home the night before she disappeared, even though it was quite obvious to the officers that she had. It has never been explained why the man lied to the officers, or why he was not considered a suspect after doing so.

Lorraine had told her mother the day before she vanished that a "big, giant man" in a car had been following her. That was a description that would have fit Ed Kemper, but it was certainly not a description that fit the rather diminutive Robin Gecht. The owner of a nearby liquor store had seen a struggle at the side of a gray or dull silver, older model car. A suspect was identified who had driven such a car until just after the abduction, when he claimed to have sold it. The man was said to have an explosive temper and a fondness for knives and Oriental throwing stars. He had been in-and-out of mental hospitals for a number of years, with release from his most recent confinement having come just the day before the abduction. His younger brother was already serving time for another abduction and murder.

This was not the first abduction/murder that was later attributed to Robin and his crew. It would later be claimed that the killings actually began the year before, and that as many as twelve girls had fallen victim to the Rippers before Lorraine Borowski. Police though were never able to produce more than one of the purported bodies, or to identify who any of the other missing victims might be. The first of them was said to be a Chicago-area prostitute named Linda Sutton, whose nearly skeletal remains were found facedown in a field on June 1, 1981. She had last been seen on May 24 at a family function in the company of a new boyfriend. It was claimed that she had been killed just three days before her remains were discovered, on about the twenty-ninth of May. The advanced decomposition of the body, however, suggested that she had actually died just after the time she was last seen. Her whereabouts between that day and the alleged day of her death were never accounted for.

There is nothing to indicate that Linda Sutton's murder had any connection to those that occurred a year later. And there is no evidence to suggest that any other murders were committed by the Gecht crew between June 1981 and May 1982. In other words, there is nothing to suggest that the killings began before Robin returned from his mysterious sojourn and took up residence with a member of the Chicago Police Department. Indeed, the additional murders appear to have been a fabrication intended to draw attention away from the unusual circumstances surrounding the actual time that the killings began.

On May 29, 1982, a woman named Shui Mak disappeared; her corpse surfaced shortly after that in one of Chicago's most exclusive suburbs. The next month a prostitute named Angel York was attacked and her left breast was brutally slashed, which was to become a distinguishing feature of the Ripper killings. It would later be revealed that the severed left breasts of the victims were utilized by the cult in rituals that involved cannibalism and necrophilia. This preoccupation with the left breast of victims is, perhaps significantly, shared by other serial killers. Included on that list are Richard Chase and the Boston Strangler, one of whose victims was found with eighteen stab wounds forming a ritual pattern on her left breast.

The body of prostitute Sandra Delaware was found on August 28, 1982, bearing the distinctive mutilation wounds of the Ripper Crew. Delaware had been working for a pimp identified only as "The Minister," but had recently left his stable and had subsequently received death threats from him. Just over a week later, Rose Davis was savagely beaten, stabbed and strangled. Robert Ressler, one of the founding fathers of the 'science' of profiling, just happened to be in the Chicago area when Davis' body was found, and he was promptly put to work creating a profile of her killer. Why this was necessary remains largely a mystery, since the police already had a prime suspect in the case. The suspect lived in the apartment building outside of which the crime took place, and he was seen by witnesses at the scene of the crime at the time that police estimated the girl had been killed. He was given a polygraph test that revealed that he had, at the very least, witnessed the murder. The police concluded, bizarrely enough, that the man had heard the assault in progress from inside his apartment, and had gone outside to watch. He was cleared as a suspect.

On October 5, a prostitute named Denise Gardner was found alive but bleeding profusely from severe mutilations. Her left breast had been completely removed and her right breast was nearly severed. She was rushed to Illinois Masonic Hospital where she told investigators that she had been forced to swallow some unidentified blue capsules. She also gave a detailed description of the van that was used to abduct her. The very next day, a drive-by shooting left one known drug dealer dead and one of his associates paralyzed. To investigators, it

looked very much like a routine gang-related drug hit, which is no doubt exactly what it was. Nevertheless, it was credited to the Ripper Crew.

Police pulled over a van two weeks later that closely matched the description that had been given by Gardner of the vehicle that was used to abduct her. The driver of the van was a young man named Eddie Spreitzer. Eddie led the officers to his boss, Robin Gecht, who was the owner of the van. Eddie was then taken in and questioned at length. His interrogation quickly yielded the names of Gecht and the Kokoraleis brothers. Andy Kokoraleis was then taken into custody, and Eddie and Andy were held in separate interrogation rooms for an extended period of time, forced to sleep on couches and endure frequent questioning. They soon confessed to as many as eighteen murders.

Both of the young men displayed a palpable fear of Robin Gecht, who they said had an altar set up in his attic where he performed rituals. Police later found black and red crosses painted in that attic, but the altar had apparently been removed. Gecht was arrested and formally charged with aggravated battery, deviate sexual assault, armed robbery and kidnapping—all in connection with the assault on Gardner. Eddie and Andy were indicted for murder, rape, kidnapping, armed violence, and deviate sexual assault.

On October 25, Gecht was released from custody after posting bail. Six days later, on Halloween, another woman was rushed to the hospital for emergency treatment after having her breasts slashed. Gecht was formally charged with that attack on November 5, but the charges were later dropped on the request of an assistant state's attorney. Eleven days later, with all of the Rippers safely in custody, the mutilated body of another young prostitute was found under a bridge in exactly the same spot where Sandra Delaware's body had been dumped. Authorities deemed that just a bizarre coincidence.

Eddie Spreitzer and Andy Kokoraleis, both teenagers who appeared to be the least culpable of the suspects, took the majority of the fall; both ultimately received death sentences. Eddie initially pled guilty to four counts of murder and one count of attempted murder and received four life sentences plus an additional 360 years. He was then indicted on additional charges and he went to trial, resulting in a death sentence. Andy's first trial, in February 1985, resulted in a life sentence after he was found guilty of murder. Two years later, in a second trial, he was again found guilty. On April 30, 1987—*Walpurgisnacht*—the presiding judge formally sentenced Andy Kokoraleis to death by execution.

The purported leader of the cult, Robin Gecht, never faced murder charges, but he was charged with various lesser crimes. His first trial ended very quickly in a mistrial. At the second, he was convicted of attempted murder, rape, deviate sexual assault, aggravated battery and armed violence; he was given a 120-year sentence. Tommy Kokoraleis was initially given a life sentence for his complicity

in the crimes, but that sentence was later reversed. Facing trial again, he accepted a plea agreement that netted him a seventy year prison sentence No one else was ever charged in connection with the murders, although there was certainly no shortage of suspects, including the Chicago police officer whose home provided Gecht with his base of operations. The name of another man came up repeatedly during the investigation, and that suspect failed a polygraph examination during which he was questioned directly about being present and participating in the killings. He was released "pending further investigation."

Some of the witnesses in the case implicated others as well, either directly or indirectly. Some said that Gecht slaughtered animals during ceremonies performed in the woods. They also spoke of his fondness for guns and of his seemingly unlimited access to drugs. Some of them also spoke of orgies that were attended by Gecht's sister-in-law and her circle of friends. Many of the witnesses warned of a satanic "fad" sweeping through the local high school; students, they said, were wearing pentagrams and carving "666" and inverted crosses into their desks. Secret ceremonies were reportedly being held and candles and witchcraft were hot topics of whispered conversations. Teachers told of finding circles of stones and the skeletal remains of cats and dogs in the wooded area behind the school.

Such stories were largely ignored by the local media, which was uncharacteristically muted in its coverage of the case. Coincidentally or otherwise, the Ripper case was overshadowed by a much more high-profile series of deaths that were attributed to Tylenol packages that had been tampered with. The Tylenol/cyanide case, which succeeded in ratcheting up the level of fear not just in Chicago, but across the country, was never solved. The lackadaisical coverage of the case was likely due to the fact that authorities were forced to acknowledge that the Ripper Crew was indeed a satanic cult that killed as a group, much like the Manson Family. Prosecutors in fact likened Gecht's followers to Charlie's, who yearned to please their leader and killed on his command.

* * * * *

The cast of characters involved in the Sunset Strip Murders was a large and colorful one. Many of the key players in that cast reeked of covert military intelligence operations, including the alleged ringleader, Douglas Clark.

Doug was born in 1948, the son of Navy Lieutenant Commander Franklyn Clark. The Clark family moved frequently during Doug's early years, living for varying periods of time in Pennsylvania, Washington, California and Japan. When Doug was eleven, the family relocated to the Kwajalein Atoll in the

Marshall Islands. By that time, Franklyn had allegedly retired from Naval service to find work in the civilian sector. The family's new home just happened to be an interceptor pad for missiles fired from Vandenberg Air Force Base, but officially Franklyn was now a civilian employee of the Transport Company of Texas. Following this stint in the Pacific, the Clark family returned to the home that they maintained in Berkeley, California, where young Douglas whiled away his time playing with the children of legendary Navy Admiral Chester Nimitz.

The family next lived for a time in India, where Doug remembered living a life of luxury surrounded by numerous household servants. After that, Clark enrolled at Ecole Internationale de Geneve, alongside the offspring of royalty, celebrities and diplomats. The rest of the Clark family, meanwhile, moved on first to Venezuela and then to Australia. Doug's next stop was at the prestigious Culver Military Academy in Indiana. While there, he indulged his lifelong fascination with guns by joining a firearms club on campus. He also reportedly spent a considerable amount of time recording audiotapes and taking photographs of his sexual exploits, which he revelled in sharing with others.

After leaving Culver, Clark moved back in with his family, who by that time had resettled in Yosemite. He next embarked on a career in the Air Force, where he worked, strangely enough, in radio intelligence. Like many other future serial killers, he was discharged early, though honorably and with full benefits. Details of his discharge, alas, remain rather murky; some of the records are reportedly missing. In the early 1970s, he married and opened his own upholstery business. By 1976, the marriage had ended and Doug was working for the Department of Water and Power's Valley Generating Station. According to his work records, he once took two weeks off to recover from knife wounds of unspecified origin.

His employment at the generating station was ultimately terminated; strangely enough, on the day of his termination, the plant received a telephone call from the LAPD warning that Clark was headed their way armed with a shotgun. That turned out to be a false alarm. It was never explained why the LAPD made that unusual call.

Clark was known to confide to friends his ultimate dream of owning a country home with a secret torture chamber where he could train and house sex slaves. He also liked to boast of being a contract assassin who had been performing "assigned hits" since his adolescent years. One of Clark's closest associates, John Robert "Jack" Murray, also claimed to be an assassin. Murray was a lounge singer who fancied himself Australia's answer to Tom Jones. He reportedly was known to carry a police badge and a 9mm handgun. He had served in Vietnam in a Special Forces unit of the Australian Army. He claimed that he had served, specifically, as an undercover assassin for the CIA—in other words, as a Phoenix operative. Like

Clark, Murray found it exceptionally easy to attract women and he generally kept a large stable of girlfriends, some of whom he shared with Doug.

Jack's wife, Jeannette, who was well aware of her husband's frequent indiscretions, was a former Marine and the daughter of a Naval officer. Jeannette's father died at the age of forty-two, reportedly by his own hand. Before his death, he was a frequent abuser of his daughter. One of his beatings was severe enough to leave Jeannette with a dislocated shoulder and a concussion. Jack Murray later took over as her primary abuser.

Carol Bundy was another of the key players in this sordid tale. Carol had worked for a brief time as a child actress, the highlight of which was an appearance in the classic film "Miracle on 34th Street." Carol had also suffered through a horrendously abusive childhood. Her sibling recalled watching Carol sitting emotionless (in a dissociative state) while their mother beat her unmercifully. After the beatings, she would just grin at her tormentor. After their mother died at a young age, when Carol was just fourteen, the two girls were temporarily expected to take their mother's place in their father's bed. Their father was remarried just months later, however, and promptly shipped the girls off to foster homes. At about that time, Carol made her first suicide attempt; she made at least two more attempts in later years.

Carol first married at age eighteen, but it apparently was a brief union. Not long after that, her father was found swinging from a rope; his death was ruled a suicide. At around that same time, Carol met a man named Dick Geis, who was the editor of a bizarre and obscure fan-zine and a writer of pornography. Geis was yet another possible player in this tale; he had inside knowledge of the murders, but was not necessarily complicit in them.

Carol eventually moved into an apartment building that was managed by Jack Murray, and soon began an affair with Jack, and also with Doug Clark and with Jeannette's Murray's brother. Carol had two young sons living with her who suffered abuse at the hands of both Carol and Doug, and possibly Jack as well. Some reports held that both of Carol's boys, and an eleven-year-old neighbor girl, were under Doug's control. The neighbor girl had been molested from a very young age by an unidentified "family friend." She had endured such severe abuse that she reportedly had her own pediatric plastic surgeon to mend the damage from her frequent 'accidents.' For Doug and Carol, she served as a model for child pornography photos. She also regularly rode along with Doug to assist him in selecting prostitutes, which was one of his favorite activities.

The names of several of Doug and Jack's girlfriends are woven through this story as well. And Doug and Jack had no shortage of girlfriends, some of whom they shared. Jurors at Doug's trial were amazed at the level of control that he exerted over so many different women. Lydia Crouch was one of them. She had

an eleven-year-old boy and a four-year-old girl who were likely molested by some of the adults in this story. Tammy Spangler was an off-and-on girlfriend of both Doug and Jack over a four-year period. She disappeared while Clark was awaiting trial. Bretta Jo "Joey" Lamphier was a particularly loyal girlfriend of Doug's. Her phone bill revealed that incriminating calls to witnesses had been placed from her home. Nancy Smith was yet another of Doug's girlfriends. She fled to Illinois the day after Jack's body was found without Jack's head attached to it.

Jack Murray's head was never found. The possibility exists that it was not really Jack's body that turned up headless in Jack's van. And it almost certainly was not Carol Bundy, working alone, that stabbed the victim repeatedly and then chopped off his head. And Jack Murray was certainly more than just a victim in this tale, but that is how he was portrayed by the state.

The murders began in June 1980. The first victims were Cindy Chandler and Gina Moreno, just sixteen and fifteen years old. Their bodies were discovered alongside the Ventura Freeway, in a dumping grounds previously used by Buono and Bianchi. Both girls had .25 caliber slugs in their heads. Both had been sexually violated and, according to accounts by law enforcement officials, photographed with a Polaroid camera after their deaths. Not long before their disappearances, they had attended a party with a Beverly Hills acquaintance, Mindy Cohen, and had apparently been staying at the home of an unnamed Hollywood producer. Mindy's boyfriend, an attorney, was the host of the party, which was reportedly attended by more than 100 people, many of them judges and lawyers—and many of them nubile young women. After leaving the party, the two girls were taken by Mindy to the home of Rod Stewart and Britt Ekland. It is unclear how long after this eventful evening they remained alive.

Not long after their disappearances, a woman named Laurie Brigges received a troubling phone call from a man who seemed to be attempting to get a physical description of her brother-in-law, Henry Brigges. Henry's business card was found on the body of one of the two dead girls. Days later, Mindy Cohen received an equally troubling phone call from a man claiming to be an LAPD detective; the police later said that the man had no connection to the department. Two days later, Cohen received a second call from the same man, this time claiming that he had seen her at the party.

On the same day that Mindy received the first phone call, Exxie Wilson and Karen Jones were shot in the head with a .25 caliber automatic. Both of their bodies were found the next day, but it was several more days before Wilson's severed head was discovered—packed inside a treasure chest manufactured in Juarez, Mexico. Wilson and Jones had both arrived in L.A. just a week before, brought there from Little Rock, Arkansas by their pimp, Derek Albright. Albright had previously served time for murder. Tests conducted on the semen found in

Wilson's throat revealed that it came from a type A secretor; Doug Clark had type O blood. One of the last places that Wilson was seen, on the day that she disappeared, was the Carney's Restaurant on the Sunset Strip from where one of the Strangler victims had been abducted.

Another alleged victim was a seventeen-year-old runaway named Marnett Comer, who had been working the streets since the age of thirteen; she had worked the streets of Sacramento during the time of the Richard Chase killings. She had recently confided to her sister her intention to leave her pimp, and detectives initially suspected that a nationwide organization of pimps was responsible for her death. Another attack attributed to Clark was the brutal stabbing of a prostitute named Charlene Andermann. She was stabbed twenty-six times but managed to survive the attack. Andermann originally identified another man as her assailant, in both a photo line-up and a live line-up. She also described the man as having a mustache and identified the car he was driving as a wood-paneled station wagon. Clark had neither a mustache nor access to a station wagon. Andermann seriously undermined her own credibility when she waffled over where the attack took place; first she placed it inside a motel room, and then later changed her mind and claimed that it had occurred in the vehicle.

The killings ended after Carol Bundy allegedly placed an anonymous call to the police. Doug Clark was arrested and reportedly talked to detectives for over three hours without the benefit of having an attorney present. Cindy Chandler's home phone number was found in his wallet—a rather unusual find given that Chandler was allegedly a randomly chosen victim. Two guns were confiscated, but neighbor Teresa told investigators that that was just the tip of the iceberg; she had once seen an Army bag stuffed full of guns. Doug was charged with multiple counts of murder, three counts of child molestation, one count of attempted murder for the Andermann attack, and one count of being an accessory after the fact in the killing of Jack Murray. While in jail awaiting trial, Clark had no fewer than four fiancées, one of whom was the so-called 'Copycat Strangler,' Veronica Compton.

The case against Clark was prosecuted by Robert Jorgensen, whose life had followed a rather interesting path. Jorgensen had at one time been an executive with General Electric. In the mid-1960s, he decided to resign to attend law school at UC Berkeley. The former defense industry executive was suddenly reborn as a campus radical. He graduated in 1967, at the onset of the 'Summer of Love.' Campus activism was at an all-time high, and covert operatives were lurking everywhere. Following his graduation, Jorgensen drifted south to Los Angeles and promptly began working for the District Attorney's Office. That was, needless to say, a rather odd career choice for an idealistic young radical. Once on the job, he became known as a hard-line right-winger who tended to associate only with young, attractive women.

Carol's appointed attorney was a former homicide detective. As Doug's counsel, the court appointed Maxwell Keith, who had previously represented Manson disciple Leslie Van Houten. Doug was not entirely pleased with the appointment and he repeatedly petitioned the court for permission to represent himself. His requests were denied, but he was allowed to essentially serve as co-counsel to Keith, who delivered one of the most pathetic closing arguments in legal history. His excuse, amazingly enough, was that he had left all his notes at home because he did not expect to have to argue that day. Clark seems to have fared somewhat better; veteran court watchers were said to be impressed with his performance.

Clark's efforts were hampered in a number of ways: he was repeatedly denied contact with his own attorney; on at least one occasion, his cell was searched and his notes were seized; and on another occasion, he was brought into the courtroom manacled and gagged. And Clark likely didn't aid his cause much by hurling at the judge, in open court, such epithets as "sleazy cocksucker," "gutless worm," "Tijuana taxi driver," "goddamned asshole," "stinking faggot," and "spineless bastard."

Perhaps the most damage was done to Doug's case by Carol Bundy, who was called to the stand as a *defense* witness. Though Doug did not know it, Bundy was offered, and she accepted, an immunity deal immediately before she took the stand. The story she told was the one the state wanted to hear. It was a story loaded with discrepancies.

Carol had already provided two different accounts of the crimes, the first in her anonymous phone call and the second in her sworn confession. The two accounts were markedly different. The one she recounted in court was not consistent with either of them. When the defense attempted to enter into evidence an audiotape of the initial phone call to illustrate that point, the judge disallowed the entry of the evidence. He claimed, quite remarkably, that allowing the tape to air would be too damaging to the *defense's* case. Carol also could not be challenged on her ever-changing story of the murder of Jack Murray, since the charges against Clark in that case had been quietly dropped after a private conference in the judge's chambers from which Doug was excluded.

At one point during the trial, prosecutor Jorgensen obtained privileged communications, which normally would result in a mistrial. Jorgensen assured the court that he had not read the communications, and he was taken at his word.

Despite Maxwell Keith's botched closing argument, and the clear bias shown by the court throughout the trial, the first jury vote revealed that two of the jurors were holding out for acquittal. After further votes, Doug was found guilty on all counts, including the charges in the Andermann case. Called to testify during the penalty phase of the trial—purportedly for the defense, although Doug and his entire family refused to cooperate with him—was none other than Dr. Donald

Lunde. Dr. Lunde, as was his custom, assisted in the prosecution's efforts to impose a death sentence on Clark. Somewhat more helpful on the stand was Doug's brother, Walter, who had reportedly been cautioned by his mother not to reveal any family secrets in court.

Three of the jurors initially voted for a sentence of life without the possibility of parole. All were soon swayed to condemn Clark to death. Six times. Considering that two of the jurors were not even convinced of Doug's guilt when deliberations first began, that was a rather remarkable turn of events.

Carol Bundy never had her day in court. On the day her trial was scheduled to begin, she suddenly withdrew her 'not guilty by reason of insanity' plea and entered guilty pleas to two counts of murder. She was given two 25-years-to-life terms. Two days later, her ex-husband was found dead, purportedly from a self-administered overdose.

Doug appealed the court's decision and found himself squaring off against Buono prosecutor Michael Nash. Dr. Dorothy Lewis was retained as a consultant. When she came to visit Doug and asked him about childhood abuse in the Clark house, about those family secrets, he told her to "Get the fuck out the door." Doug proved no match for Nash; the initial verdict withstood the appeal.

Dr. Lunde, meanwhile, surfaced on yet another case not long after he wrapped up his work on the Hillside Strangler and Sunset Strip cases. In 1985, he was called as an expert witness for the defense in a rather notorious case known as 'the girl in the box.' The case involved a girl, Colleen Stan, who was kidnapped in Northern California and held as a sex slave for seven years by a man named Cameron Hooker. During that time, Stan was frequently tortured and forced to live for months at a time in a box roughly the size of a coffin. At other times, she was forced to wear what was called a 'head box,' which was a crudely made, but very effective, sensory deprivation device.

When the case came to court, there was no question that the woman had been held in abhorrent conditions. Hooker had gone to the trouble of documenting his depravities on film, so there was no shortage of evidence. His home yielded the notorious box, along with an array of restraints and torture devices, and some literature suggesting that a ring existed that traded in sex slaves.

It was not the open-and-shut case that it first appeared to be, however. Hooker's defense counsel argued that the living arrangements had been bizarre, but consensual. Evidence was presented that seemed, on the surface, to support that argument. Love letters written from victim to captor were entered into evidence. Most damaging of all, testimony revealed that Colleen had been allowed to visit with her family, unattended, four years into her captivity. Quite unexpectedly, she had first called, and then visited, her parents and siblings at the family home. She did not bother to explain her disappearance and four-year absence,

and apparently her family did not press her on the matter. She visited for a day or two and then her abductor/captor returned to pick her up. The Stan family apparently made little or no attempt to stop her from leaving. She was returned to the box for another three years.

There is no question that she had the opportunity to physically escape from her tormentor. In fact, in the latter years of her captivity, she was allowed to work outside of her captor's home, and she never attempted to escape. Even when she did eventually break free of her psychic bonds, she did not bother to report her ordeal to the police or to her family. She did not bother to report her ordeal to anyone. But she did make numerous phone calls to her former captor.

To explain all of that, prosecutors brought in a psychiatric witness who argued that the woman's period of imprisonment was not consensual, despite outward appearances, because Stan had been deprived of her ability to act of her own free will. She was, the expert explained to the jury, mind controlled. To counter that argument, the defense brought in its own witness: Donald Lunde. Lunde argued that there was no such thing as mind control, and that the woman's actions demonstrated that she remained with her captor voluntarily. Lunde did not fare well on cross-examination.

Surprisingly, the jury rejected Lunde's testimony and the rest of the defense case and convicted Cameron Hooker. That verdict signaled that all twelve jurors concluded that Colleen Stan was not in fact exercising her free will by choosing to remain as a captive sex slave. All twelve jurors, in other words, were convinced by the evidence presented in the courtroom that the victim was mind controlled.

One final note on the case of 'the girl in the box': the jury returned the guilty verdict against Hooker on, of all days, Halloween.

* * * * *

In probably no other serial killer case on record, with the possible exception of the Boston Strangler case, has the wholesale corruption of the criminal justice system been more clearly on display than in the case of Bobby Joe Long.

Bobby Joe was born on October 14, 1953 to parents Joe Long and Louella Lucas. Both the Long and the Lucas families had a long history of alcoholism and mental illness—and apparently of spawning serial killers as well. Louella Lucas could not remember much of her own troubled childhood. Her father had died when she was three, and she did not remember her mother at all. Louella and Joe first separated when Bobby was just eight months old, thus beginning a long series of break-ups and reconciliations that included the pair remarrying on two occasions.

When he was two-and-a-half years old, Bobby's mother took him to live in Florida. Louella worked the bars there, as a prostitute according to Bobby, and she lived with her son in a series of seedy apartments and boardinghouses. Several other members of the Lucas clan moved to south Florida as well, including Louella's mother, two sisters, a half sister, and seven of Bobby's cousins. It is unclear whether one of those cousins was Henry Lee Lucas. The Lucas clan lived together in cramped quarters as a not-quite happy family, which is generally given as the reason why Bobby shared his mother's bed until he reached the age of thirteen. Long would later reveal that he had powerful childhood memories of being locked in a closet by his cousins and screaming in vain to be let out.

As a young man, Bobby received his requisite 'blooding' by working as an attendant in a funeral home. He also worked at a variety of medical facilities, most frequently as an X-ray technician. In the late 1960s/early 1970s, Long began experimenting with LSD and reportedly became a heavy user of the drug.

Bobby was first arrested in December 1970 on theft charges, but the charges were later dropped. He was again arrested just two months later, on unrelated charges, and was given probation without being formally convicted. He was next accused of rape, though it is unclear if he was ever formally charged with the crime.

On September 19, 1972, Long was sworn into the Army and sent to Fort Benning, home of the 'School of the Americas'—otherwise known as the 'School of the Assassins,' a notorious training facility for Central and South American death squads. Bobby reportedly spent a considerable amount of time in an Army hospital, ostensibly recovering from a motorcycle accident. He later said that this accident and its aftermath changed him completely. He was ultimately, inevitably perhaps, released early from military service. His family claimed that he was given a medical discharge, but the records are sketchy. He was though given a 40% disability rating and was entitled to full military benefits.

Beginning around 1975, at the same time that his cousin was beginning his career as a serial killer, Bobby allegedly embarked on a career as a serial rapist. An indeterminate number of women in three different Florida counties were accosted by a man with a knife, bound, and then violently raped; their homes were then looted by the attacker dubbed the "Classified Ad Rapist" and the "Ad Man Rapist." No physical evidence linked Bobby to any of these attacks and only one of the numerous witnesses later claimed to be able to identify him. These rapes continued long after the string of killings that Long was also held accountable for began in yet another county. Strangely though, none of the rape victims were ever killed. Despite what the serial killer profilers tell us, Bobby was supposedly able to simultaneously function as a serial rapist in three counties and as a serial killer in a fourth.

On August 21, 1981, Long was accused by his girlfriend of rape and battery, though the charge was later reduced to simple battery. Bobby opted to represent himself and to waive his right to a jury trial, choosing instead to place his fate in the hands of the judge. He was found guilty and sentenced to a thirty-day jail term and six months probation. But then, in a most remarkable turn of events, Long wrote an informal letter to the sentencing judge requesting a new trial, and the judge inexplicably accepted the letter as a valid legal motion for a new trial and released Bobby to await his new hearing. Before the year was out, Long had been charged with sending obscene photos and letters and making obscene telephone calls to the twelve-year-old daughter of a Tampa physician. He entered a plea of "no contest" to the charges and was fined $65.50 and put on probation for six months.

While continuing to await his new trial on the battery charges, Bobby Joe embarked on an extended cross-country trek. He traveled first to West Virginia, and then on to Southern California, where he stayed for at least six months. At around that same time, cousin Henry was living in Hemet, California. While in California, Long purportedly signed up for a $9,000 commercial diving class. How the chronically broke and under-employed Long was able to finance the diving lessons, as well as the trip itself, has never been explained—nor has his sudden interest in diving, which was apparently of no interest to him before or after his trip to California. Those with whom Long socialized during his time in California later recalled that he frequently went out by himself and refused to talk about where he had been. These witnesses also described Bobby as being prone to headaches, wild mood swings, and the use of racist terms.

After leaving California, Long slowly made his way back to Florida, again travelling by way of West Virginia. He was arrested there and given a hearing before a judge who just happened to be, conveniently enough for Bobby, a friend of the Long family. He was acquitted of the more serious charge of assault, but convicted of destroying private property. He paid $68 in court costs and fines and continued on his way. In early 1984, Long stood trial once again for the battery of his former girlfriend. This time he was acquitted, despite the fact that damaging testimony was offered by several credible witnesses, including one who had witnessed the beating that Bobby had administered to the girl.

Just after that trial concluded, the killings began. First to disappear was Ann Wick, on March 28, 1984. She had just recently arrived in the Tampa area. Five months earlier, in October 1983, one of her boyfriends and his brother had beaten their father to death; Wick had been complicit in the crime. She had quickly left town after that without telling anyone where she was going. Once in Florida, she moved in with a police officer, where she remained until her disappearance. When this officer was interviewed by police investigators, he was reportedly almost com-

pletely incoherent. Bobby Long later agreed to unofficially take the rap for the killing of Wick, provided that he was not officially charged. The officer and various others were thereby absolved of any involvement in the crime.

Just over a week later, Long was arrested after attempting to abduct a woman at gunpoint. The woman had thwarted the abduction by intentionally crashing her classic Jaguar. Three months later, Bobby was sentenced to six month's probation and ordered to pay $1,500 in restitution—needless to say, a preposterously light sentence. Meanwhile, the body count continued to mount.

On May 13, the body of Lana Long was discovered—raped, strangled and posed for maximum shock value. This was the first body to be discovered (Wick's body did not surface for several more months). Judging by the police response, you would have thought it was the first body *ever* to be discovered in Tampa, Florida. Half the police force quickly descended on the crime scene, including much of the department's top brass, who normally were not known to congregate at crime scenes. For no readily apparent reason, a decision was made at the scene to send all evidence directly to FBI headquarters in Quantico, Virginia by means of a special courier system.

From that point on, the FBI played a central role in building a purported fiber evidence case that became the key component of the state's case against Long. As previously stated, fiber evidence is by far the easiest type of forensics evidence to plant; that fact would become glaringly obvious as the Bobby Joe Long story unfolded. Tellingly, the fiber evidence purportedly being assembled was kept secret and was never mentioned by police or the media throughout the course of the investigation. That is most likely due to the fact that the fiber case did not in fact exist prior to the arrest of Bobby Joe Long as a suspect.

Lana Long, who was of Asian descent and not related to Bobby Joe, had recently come to Tampa from Los Angeles in the company of her boyfriend. Both Lana and her boyfriend had been associated with the owners of several L.A. nightclubs, including Eddie Nash, at whose former club Lana had danced.[29] An associate of Lana's had also recently left Los Angeles for Tampa, purportedly to pursue a film role, although you would normally expect that someone pursuing a career in film would head *for* L.A. Of course, this may not have been a typical film role; there was much talk among Tampa's exotic dancers at the time of

29 Eddie Nash, *aka* Adel Gharib Nasrallah, had achieved a considerable amount of notoriety just a few years earlier when he was named as the prime suspect in a mass murder committed in Laurel Canyon that became known alternatively as the 'Wonderland Murders' or the 'Four on the Floor' murders. On July 1, 1981, four people were brutally bludgeoned to death in a home that was described in some reports as a "drug den," and which porn star John "Johnny Wadd" Holmes once described as "an

unidentified men recruiting women for nude modeling jobs and then using them in the production of snuff films. In the last hours of her life, Long was reportedly desperately trying to raise money to get out of town. Needless to say, she did not make it. After she vanished, her boyfriend did not bother to report her disappearance until he was forced to do so by friends, who threatened to report the disappearance themselves if he did not.

Next to be discovered was Michele Denise Simms, found two weeks after Lana Long's remains were discovered. Michele had also just made the journey from Southern California to Tampa, and she had spoken to friends of doing some modeling work. Like Lana, she was known to be a heavy drug user. She was also the product of a seriously dysfunctional family. Michele's mother had died very young, and her father had later been imprisoned for holding Michele and her babysitter at gunpoint.

Elizabeth Loudenback was next to go missing, on June 8, 1984. She was found just over two weeks later. Loudenback had apparently been in fear for her life and had, just two days before her disappearance, left a note affixing blame should anything happen to her. Her efforts were in vain. Her note included the name of

---

armed camp." The crime scene, just down the street from the home of then-Governor Jerry Brown, was reportedly one of the bloodiest in the city's history. Nash was accused of ordering the hits and Holmes, an LAPD vice squad informant, was indicted for helping to carry out the killings. Holmes had reportedly come home the night of the murders drenched in blood, and he had left a bloody palm print on a headboard above one of the bodies and a fingerprint on a coffee table. Following the murders, the LAPD put Holmes up in a luxury suite at the Bonaventure Hotel, and then moved him to the equally luxurious Biltmore Hotel. District Attorney John Van de Kamp offered him immunity for talking, which Holmes did, except that his statements exonerated the prime suspect, Eddie Nash. Nevertheless, Holmes was released. Then on December 4, 1981, he was arrested and charged with four counts of murder and one count of attempted murder. Following his arrest, Holmes was housed in a "High Power" cell, where he was allowed no physical contact with anyone. Also in "High Power" at that time were the Hillside Stranglers, Angelo Buono and Kenneth Bianchi. Holmes' trial began in May 1982, and he was acquitted the following month. Eddie Nash did not stand trial until 1990. That same year, Liberace's gay lover, Scott Thorson, who had been peripherally involved in the Wonderland murders, was shot five times. John Holmes had conveniently died two years earlier, allegedly of AIDS. Nash's first trial ended in a hung jury after a single juror held out on reaching a guilty verdict. A second jury acquitted him. On September 10, 2001 (the day before "everything changed"), Nash stood in a Los Angeles courtroom and

a man who claimed that he was an informant for both the police and the DEA. Also provided was a description of his vehicle. On other occasions, Elizabeth had reportedly expressed fear of another man as well. Both of these men failed polygraph examinations. Nevertheless, both were cleared as suspects and Bobby Joe was ultimately blamed for Elizabeth's death.

Following Loudenback's disappearance, there was a three-month lull in the killings, which ended on September 7 with the disappearance of Vicky Elliot. Her body would lie exposed to the elements for over two months before being discovered. By that time, her head was reduced to little more than a skull with some strands of hair still attached. Nevertheless, police made the remarkable claim that fibers from Bobby Joe's car, defying all odds, still clung to those strands of hair. The FBI's own experts, it should be noted, acknowledge that fiber evidence is extremely fragile and will be lost or destroyed very quickly with exposure to the elements, particularly the effects of wind and rain. As an FBI bulletin once put it: "fibers which have been transferred are very transient in nature."

By October, the killings were coming in rapid succession and a task force had been officially assembled. Joining that task force were the County Sheriff's Office, the Florida Department of Law Enforcement, the Tampa Police Department, and the FBI's BSU. The profiler assigned to the case, Stan Jacobson, had been a member of the team that engineered the illegal incursion into Panama to capture Manuel Noriega.

---

admitted paying that holdout juror a $50,000 bribe. According to the *LA Times*, Nash also "rose to his feet during what was supposed to be a routine court appearance and acknowledged that he had conspired to commit murder and that he had engaged in a long-running racketeering and drug-dealing enterprise." Amazingly, Nash was offered a plea agreement that netted him a mere thirty-seven month sentence. He ultimately served only about one year—as punishment for two decades of rampant criminal activity, including ordering an exceedingly brutal quadruple murder. One of the first investigators on the scene had been a man who allegedly continued to pursue the case for twenty years, and who visited with John Holmes just three days before his death: LAPD Detective Tom Lange. Lange, best known for his self-righteous indignation during the OJ Simpson trial, which afforded him his fifteen minutes of fame, had this to say about the final administration of justice in the Nash case: "I believe it's a righteous plea. How much more do they want to be perceived as beating up on an old man?" Considering that that old man admitted in open court his complicity in a mass murder, I would think quite a bit more. One final interesting note on the Wonderland case: Mark Lindsay, of the band Paul Revere and the Raiders, reportedly had lived at different times at both the Cielo Drive house where Sharon Tate was slaughtered and at the Wonderland house.

Chanel Devon Williams, the next victim, was unlike the others in two significant ways: she was killed by a single gunshot wound to the neck, rather than being bound and strangled, and she was the only black victim. Friends said that she had been forced into prostitution and was planning to leave town to escape from her pimp. Her body was found on October 7. Kimberly Kyle Hopps' mummified and headless corpse was found on Halloween day alongside a road that had been bulldozed just the day before. The circumstances of the discovery suggested that her remains had just been dumped there, though she had been missing since October 4, and had obviously been dead for quite some time. Just before she disappeared, she had had a fight with her pimp/boyfriend Donald Jones, who waited three days before bothering to report her disappearance.

Karen Dinsfriend was abducted, raped and strangled on October 13, and found just twelve hours later. Like most of the victims, she was a prostitute and a drug addict. Unlike the others, however, she was from a very wealthy family. Karen had been arrested on four separate occasions for forging prescriptions for the drug Dilaudid, known on the street as 'hospital heroin.' Virginia Lee Johnson vanished on October 14, just one day after Dinsfriend. Virginia was, not surprisingly, a prostitute with alcohol, cocaine and heroin addictions. Just eighteen years old, she had already compiled a lengthy rap sheet. Her sister, one year her junior, had been murdered the year before. Both of the girls had reportedly been alcoholics since the ages of nine and ten. Both had been physically and sexually abused by their stepfather. Despite the fact that Johnson's corpse remained undiscovered for nearly a month, during which time scavenging animals scattered her nearly skeletal remains over a large area, some of those tenacious carpet fibers from Long's car allegedly clung to her scalp.

Kim Marie Swann's nude and badly beaten body was discovered on November 12. The large-framed girl had been lifted over a guardrail and rolled down a hill. She was a prostitute who had been working for a man known as "Fat George." Kim likely began her career in prostitution at an early age; she reportedly began hanging out in bars at the age of thirteen. She had recently reported two disturbances at her apartment, both involving men trying to break down her front door. Like some of the other victims, her absence was not reported for several days. Her clothes, found near her body, allegedly contained yet more of those notorious carpet fibers.

Lisa McVey was the next to vanish, but, unlike the others, Lisa reappeared just twenty-six hours later. Lisa had a very interesting history, to put it mildly. Only seventeen years old, she had dropped out of school and was living with a man who posed as her father. That man, Marce Rhodes, a wheelchair-bound double amputee, held her hostage in his home as his captive sex slave. McVey's

grandmother, a former girlfriend of Rhodes, was aware of, and apparently approved of, her granddaughter's living arrangements.

Lisa was snatched off the streets of Tampa after leaving work at about 2:30 AM. Her grandmother placed a telephone call to Marce just a half-hour later. She later claimed that she had just called to see how he was doing—at 3:00 in the morning. Throughout the time that Lisa was held captive, she was raped repeatedly, though this was little different, it should be noted, from the life that she led with Rhodes. And even before she moved in with Rhodes, she had established a long history of being victimized. Incredibly enough, relative to her past experiences with men, her abductor and rapist, Bobby Joe Long, did not seem so bad. Not only did he free her after just one day, but he kept a spotlessly clean house and he went out of his way to make sure that she was as comfortable as possible under the circumstances, or so she later told the police. She also provided a description of her abductor that seemed to be deliberately tailored to throw the police off course, if Bobby was indeed the guilty party; she described him as being 5'7" tall and weighing 150 pounds, when in fact Long was 6' tall and weighed 180 pounds.

Lisa's surrogate father, Marce Rhodes, was later arrested for sexual battery. Long was also arrested. At the time of his arrest, the very first thing that one of the detectives on the scene did was to cut a swatch of carpet from the floor of Long's car, purportedly to compare with the fiber evidence that had been secretly compiled by the FBI. It is questionable though whether that fiber evidence even existed prior to the time that that swatch was cut.

The initial interrogation of Long lasted for five-and-a-half hours, even though Bobby Joe requested early on that he be provided the services of an attorney. That interrogation allegedly yielded a confession. The media wasted no time in trying the suspect in the court of public opinion. By the time of his first public appearance, at his presentment hearing, he had already been convicted in that most important of forums.

Bobby was presented to the public as though he posed a clear and present danger, even while in custody; he was brought out with his ankles manacled and his handcuffed wrists shackled to a body belt. He was formally charged with nine counts of kidnapping, eight counts of sexual battery, and eight counts of first-degree murder. A grand jury was convened within twenty-four hours, and murder and rape indictments were returned on November 28. Long was moved from his isolation cell to a special holding cell in the infirmary where he was prevented from having contact with other inmates or with prison personnel.

Interestingly, it was reported in the local press that a group who claimed to be investigators from Tampa had been tailing Long for several months before his arrest, from long before he was ever considered a suspect. Members of this group

apparently questioned witnesses in the case before police arrived to do so. Though locally reported, the matter was never investigated. Who these men were remains a mystery.

On April 15, 1985, the first of Bobby Joe Long's many trials began. He was first tried not for the murders, but for the series of rapes in one of the adjoining counties. Within two days, the trial was over and Bobby Joe had been convicted of armed robbery, armed burglary, kidnapping, and sexual battery. He was sentenced to 693 years in prison, a sentence far in excess of the state of Florida's sentencing guidelines. Just days later, on April 22, jury selection began in Dade County for Long's first murder trial, for the killing of Virginia Johnson. As would become a pattern throughout his trials, the defense readily conceded Bobby's guilt, but maintained that he was unable to control his actions. Presentation of evidence began on April 25; that presentation consisted almost entirely of the fiber evidence that was purportedly recovered from the hair of a skeleton. No defense case of any kind was presented; not a single witness was called to rebut the flimsy case presented by the state.

As would also become a pattern throughout his trials, Bobby's parents and ex-wife were barred from the proceedings with the dubious claim that they were potential witnesses. The detectives that had worked on the case were, needless to say, potential witnesses as well, but they were not prevented from sitting in on the trial. Long is not the only serial killer to have had his family and friends barred from the courtroom. That is a tactic that is used frequently to bias juries by leading them to believe that the defendant is such a loathsome creature that his own family does not care enough to attend the trial.

By April 26, the jury was deliberating over Long's fate. They returned in just forty-four minutes with a guilty verdict. By the next day the penalty phase of the trial was over and the jury once again retired to deliberate. They were back in just thirty-five minutes with a recommendation that Long be executed. On May 3, the judge formally sentenced Bobby to death by electrocution. Long was back in court again the next month to face rape charges in another county. He saved the court the trouble of staging another trial and pled guilty, thereby earning six life sentences, again far in excess of state guidelines.

By that time Long had received one death sentence, six life sentences, and an additional 693 year sentence; he had spent perhaps ten days in court for the three trials combined. The state was just getting warmed up.

On September 24, defense and prosecuting attorneys met to discuss the remaining eight murder counts, and various other outstanding charges. Long inexplicably agreed to enter guilty pleas to all the outstanding murder, kidnapping and sexual assault charges. He was sentenced to twenty-six life sentences, with the provision that the district attorney could still seek an additional death

sentence if he should choose to. Bobby gained absolutely nothing from this plea agreement. Even if it had guaranteed him that he would not receive another death sentence, it was far from an attractive offer. It is difficult to believe that Long would have taken the deal if he was acting of his own free will.

Not surprisingly, Long was brought to trial once again, as the state attempted to pile on one more death sentence. Guilt was not an issue at the trial, since the defendant had already entered a guilty plea to the charge. The jury was only to consider the appropriate sentence. Putting on a rather unorthodox defense, Long's attorney focused on the fact that Bobby was a confessed serial killer, going so far as to credit Long with one more murder than had previously been publicly credited to him. This 'defense' was supposedly intended to demonstrate that Long was insane and unable to control his actions. After little more than an hour's deliberations, Bobby Joe received another death sentence.

In November 1987, the Florida Supreme Court ordered a new trial in the Johnson case, based on the fact that the 'confession' introduced at Long's previous trial had resulted from an illegal interrogation. The confession was tossed out and disallowed for all future trials. In June 1988, the high court tossed aside Long's second death sentence as well.

Not to be deterred, prosecutors ordered a new trial for Johnson's murder. This time around, they used what they claimed was another confession: a two-minute, heavily edited clip from a ninety-minute television interview that Long had given. The defense presented a few psychiatric witnesses and then rested without challenging any of the elements of the state's case. The jury deliberated just sixty-two minutes before finding Long guilty once again. Thirty more minutes of deliberations resulted in a nine to three vote in favor of a death sentence, which the judge obligingly affirmed.

In June 1989, a new sentencing hearing for the Simms case was convened. Three days after it began, the jury returned yet again with a recommendation for death, which the judge not only affirmed but also decided to supplement with two additional life sentences. Bobby had by then accumulated two death sentences, 34 life sentences, and an additional 693 years. His saga was not quite over yet.

In October 1992, the Florida State Supreme Court once again overturned the decision in the Johnson case. All three key elements of the state's case—the edited videotape, the testimony of Lisa McVey, and the evidence of other murders—were deemed to have been inadmissible as evidence. The higher court's decision specifically noted the fact that only four hours of testimony had been presented on the Johnson murder, while three entire days had been spent admitting prejudicial evidence of other murders that Long was not being tried for. On January 31, 1994, a jury was seated to once again hear the case against Bobby Long in the

matter of the death of Virginia Johnson. By the end of the week, he had been found guilty and sentenced to death.

With the exception of the highly questionable fiber evidence, no physical evidence ever linked Bobby Joe to any of the murders. No witnesses could tie Long to any of the dead girls or to any of the crime scenes. There were quite obvious signs that Bobby had been set up, including the dubious fiber case, the unexplained and unidentified surveillance team, and the indications that the bizarre abduction of Lisa McVey was facilitated by others, in order to provide the state with an 'eyewitness.'

There also were signs that Bobby Joe was involved in any number of heinous crimes. He had a collection of photographs of rapes in progress, and authorities believed that additional photos, perhaps even more violent and disturbing, were in the hands of others. At a deposition hearing, a lead investigator on the case told the court: "It's believed that Mr. Long photographed his victims as he killed them and he has those photographs." Though such images were never produced, Bobby's former wife told police of finding a collection of photos of nude women, some of whom she described as having a very blank look in their eyes.

As in so many other cases discussed thus far, there were also signs that Long did not act alone if he was in fact involved in the killings. Semen evidence, for instance, was recovered from at least two of the victims, and yet there is no indication that that semen was ever matched to Bobby Joe. As in other cases, evidence that conflicted with the official story was consistently ignored by both the prosecution and the defense, and by most media outlets as well. In a letter that Bobby wrote during his incarceration, he referred to others who may have been involved: "I talked, but never mentioned my kinky friends. They're all gone, her back to California, him back to Miami."

Standing by Long's side throughout a portion of his legal odyssey, allegedly serving as his advocate, was 'defense' counsel Ellis Rubin—the very same Florida attorney who represented the Collier brothers and received honorable mention in their dubious conspiracy tome *Votescam*.

* * * * *

Perhaps nowhere have the trappings of Satanism in a string of serial killings been more readily apparent than in the case of Richard "The Night Stalker" Ramirez. Indeed, Ramirez's embrace of Satanism was so obvious that the mainstream media was unable to deny it. Instead, Ramirez was labeled as a "self-styled" satanist, as though he had come up with the ideas that he espoused entirely on his own. Nothing could be further from the truth.

Richard was born in 1960 to Julian and Mercedes Ramirez. Julian endured repeated beatings by both his father and his grandfather before growing up to become a policeman in—of all places—Juarez, Mexico. He eventually left the Juarez force and relocated the family to El Paso, Texas, but he continued to visit several times a week with his police friends in Juarez.

Julian reportedly had an explosive temper that sometimes manifested itself in acts of self-mutilation that his children bore witness to. He once repeatedly bashed his head against a wall until blood ran down his face. On another occasion, he took a hammer to his own head. There were also hints that he may have been sexually abusive towards his wife and children. And there were other adults in the Ramirez children's world who most certainly were abusive.

In El Paso, Julian's two older sons were enrolled in a special class at the local junior high school for kids who were 'slow learners.' The teacher of that special class, Frank McMan, was later identified as a molester of dozens of kids. Shortly after the Ramirez kids were enrolled in his class, McMan began visiting them at home, and taking them away for visits to his own home. Julian and Mercedes appear to not have had a problem with the teacher's peculiar interest in their children. Another pedophile, with whom Richard was known to have had occasional contact, lived just a block away from the Ramirez family.

It is said that the Ramirez family was very private and that they tended to keep to themselves for the most part. Richard was known to spend a considerable amount of his time alone; he could amuse himself for hours acting out various roles in the fantasy world that he frequently inhabited. Later, as an adult, he had a tendency to 'space out.'

Richard had an older cousin named Mike who became something of a mentor to the young boy. In 1965, Mike was sent to Vietnam where he appears to have functioned as a Phoenix assassin. After two tours of duty, and twenty-nine confirmed kills, he returned a hero. His souvenirs of the war included eight shrunken human heads that he had made himself, and a large collection of Polaroid photos that graphically depicted rape, torture, mutilation and murder. These he gleefully shared with young Richard, while regaling him with tales of his barbaric treatment of the Vietnamese people. Mike also taught young Richard techniques of jungle warfare and survival, just as he had been taught before he had been sent off to kill.

On May 4, 1973, Mike casually shot his wife in the face from point-blank range, killing her instantly in full view of his thirteen-year-old protégé. The dead woman's mother, strangely enough, was said to be a skilled practitioner of black magic. Following the shooting, Richard reportedly returned to the crime scene, with his father, and located the slug that had passed through the victim's head. They took it with them as a keepsake, and also gathered some things that Mike

had asked them to retrieve for him. How they were able to enter what should have been a secure crime scene to find evidence that the police should have already found remains a mystery.

Cousin Mike was judged not guilty by reason of insanity and sent to a state mental hospital. Richard, meanwhile, ventured off to Los Angeles, where his older brother Ruben taught him the finer points of the burglary trade. After that, he headed back to El Paso, where he got a job at a Holiday Inn. While working there, Richard bound and attempted to rape a woman in her room. The attack was thwarted when the woman's husband unexpectedly returned to the room and promptly gave Ramirez a beating. All charges against the fifteen-year-old were dropped.

In late 1977, cousin Mike was released after serving just four-and-half years for the cold-blooded killing of his wife. He promptly resumed his role as mentor to his young disciple. Not long after that, in February 1978, Richard once again left El Paso destined for Los Angeles. This time though, he traveled by way of San Francisco, where he was granted a rare one-on-one meeting with high priest Anton LaVey, and where he also attended a Church of Satan ritual. Ramirez, who as a young man frequently slept in a local cemetery, was reportedly a big fan of LaVey's *Satanic Bible*. He also read and admired the writings of the Marquis deSade, whose exploits will be covered elsewhere in this book. Once in Los Angeles, Ramirez lived a shadowy existence; he reportedly preferred to live and hang out in the seedier neighborhoods of the city, and he frequently employed the services of prostitutes. He had at least one run-in with the police, not long before the killings began. On that occasion, he was arrested for stealing a car and leading five LAPD cruisers on a high-speed chase. Strangely though, there is no indication that any charges were filed against him.

The murders attributed to Richard Ramirez officially began on June 27, 1984. However, there is nothing that indicates that the stabbing death of Jennie Vincow in Glassel Park that night had anything to do with the killings that came later; Vincow's murder took place nearly a year before the others, which were all committed in fairly rapid succession. Ramirez's defense team later implied that Vincow's own sons had killed her, or had had her killed, for her money. One of the sons was an unemployed pharmacist who was known to have hit his mother in the past. He was described by investigators as evasive and difficult to interview, and he refused to take a polygraph exam. When Ramirez was ultimately brought to trial for Vincow's murder, Michael Tynan, the presiding judge, refused to allow any questions pertaining to Vincow's financial affairs.

It was not until March 17, 1985 that the Stalker struck again. Two young women, Maria Hernandez and Dayle Okazaki, were shot in their Rosemead home with a .22 caliber weapon. Okazaki did not survive the attack, but

Hernandez did, and she was the first to provide a description of the man who would soon become Los Angeles' most feared serial killer. She said that her attacker was about 5'10" tall, thin, and had black hair and dark, scary eyes. He had walked up to her quite casually, assumed a military firing stance, pointed the gun at her without saying a word, and then fired a single shot. What she described was the actions of a cold and mechanical professional assassin. Strangely, however, the gunman did not take aim for her head, as he did in almost all subsequent attacks.

Maria first tentatively identified a man named Paul Samuels, a military veteran who was known to dress all in black and who had a habit of following underage girls. Samuels matched the physical description given by Hernandez and he was observed by police following two young women and trying to coax them into his car. The suspect was arrested, and the arresting officers discovered a gun in his possession, but it was of a different caliber than the one used in the Rosemead shooting. Samuels was let go, and Ramirez later took the rap, although Maria was unable to identify him in court.

In yet another of those bizarre coincidences that are forever surrounding serial killer cases, Maria Hernandez just happened to be very closely connected to Gil Carrillo, who was one of the two lead detectives on the Night Stalker task force. Carrillo's mother was Maria's godmother, and Maria's mother was a good friend of Carrillo's sister. Carrillo was assisted in running the task force by our old friend Frank Salerno, who also led the Hillside Strangler task force.

On the very same night that Hernandez and Okazaki were shot, Veronica Yu was shot twice with a .22 caliber weapon in Monterey Park. She did not survive her wounds. Two witnesses who claimed to have been near the scene of the crime offered similar descriptions of the gunman—descriptions that clearly did not fit Richard Ramirez. One described the assailant as possibly Asian, 5'6" to 5'8" tall, with wavy hair. The other saw a man who was 5'7" to 5'8" tall, 145–150 pounds, with a light complexion and long, shaggy hair, and possibly with slanted eyes. Both eyewitnesses told police at the scene that they did not get a good enough look at the suspect to be able to identify him. In court, one of the two claimed that he had heard arguing and that he had seen the shooting and heard the shots. None of that was consistent with his earlier statements, nor was his account of how the shooting occurred consistent with the forensics evidence.

Ten days after the shooting deaths of Yu and Okazaki, Vincent and Maxine Zazzara were shot in the head as they lay sleeping in their Whittier home. Both died from the .22 caliber bullet wounds. The hopelessly deformed slugs could not be matched to the slugs recovered from previous victims, as would be the case throughout the investigation. Following the shootings, the Zazzara home was frantically ransacked and Maxine was hideously mutilated. Her eyes were gouged

out and an inverted cross was carved into her left breast. A search of the crime scene revealed that Maxine had a .45 caliber handgun in her purse. That search also uncovered a fingerprint at the point of entry that had not been left by either of the Zazzaras or by Ramirez.

Peter Zazzara, a son of the slain couple, told at least two officers that the killings were a drug-related mob hit. Nevertheless, all evidence and testimony pertaining to drug trafficking and organized crime was later stricken from the pre-trial record, and no questions were allowed at trial about Vincent Zazarra's prison time, the guns found in the house, or the family's ties to organized crime.

The next Stalker attack, like the Zazzara murders, looked very much like a professional contract killing; William Doi was shot and killed with a .22 caliber slug to the head as he lay sleeping in his Montebello home on May 14. His wife, Lillian, was raped and left in thumbcuffs, but she was not killed. Just as in the Whittier attack, the Doi home was ransacked. Among the missing items was Bill Doi's Masonic ring. A 9mm handgun was found in Bill's nightstand, and several other guns were found strategically placed around the house, as though the Dois had reason to fear for their lives. As at the Zazzara home, an Avia shoeprint was allegedly found outside of the house. Along with it was a combat boot print that was purportedly left by an officer at the scene. At both crime scenes, the Fire Department was, curiously, the first to respond.

Lillian Doi was the second living witness to provide a description of the suspect. Working with her daughter, she filled out a crime scene report that described an assailant other than Richard Ramirez.

Just over two weeks later, Mabel Bell and Nettie Long, both in their eighties, were viciously attacked. The crime bore little, if any, resemblance to the previous killings. Rather than being summarily executed, the victims were tortured with an electrical cord and then brutally bludgeoned with a hammer. Pentagrams were drawn on the wall and on one of the victims. The home in which the pair were attacked was isolated, accessible only by way of a difficult-to-navigate drive up a long and winding route. It was not a house that a random killer would have stumbled upon. To get there, one had to know where one was going. Purportedly tying Richard to the crime was an Avia shoeprint, allegedly left on a clock, but a human hair found at the scene had been left by someone else.

The next attack occurred at the home of Carol Kyle in Burbank. Kyle was raped and sodomized and her home was ransacked, but she was left very much alive. As in the Zazzara and Doi cases, the Fire Department was the first to respond. Working with investigators, Kyle created a composite sketch that looked nothing like the one created earlier by Maria Hernandez, which had somewhat resembled Ramirez. Carol described her assailant as a very good-looking, light-skinned Mexican with an unknown accent who engaged her in a twenty-minute

conversation. She later helped create a second composite that looked more like Ramirez.

The Night Stalker next purportedly attempted to break into the home of an L.A. County Sheriff's deputy, just a few blocks from the Carrillo family home and a half-mile from the Zazzara home. The break-in was aborted, but not before the perpetrator had left an Avia shoeprint in the ground below a window. He then reportedly tried to abduct a girl in Eagle Rock, but failed in that endeavor as well. None of the previous victims, it will be recalled, had been abducted, and there were no further abduction attempts. Just after the failed abduction, the suspect was stopped by LAPD officer John Stavros for running a red light. While Stavros was writing the man a ticket, descriptions of the would-be kidnapper and his car were broadcast over the officer's radio. Although he allegedly had both the man and the car right in front of him, the officer failed to make the connection. The suspect supposedly then drew a pentagram on the car before fleeing on foot. The car was impounded and then largely forgotten; no attempt was made to search the vehicle for fingerprints, although the suspect would surely have had to leave some.

On June 27, Patty Elaine Higgins was brutally beaten and nearly beheaded in her Arcadia home. The attack on Higgins was initially credited to Ramirez, until serological tests demonstrated conclusively that someone else had committed the crime. The charges against Richard were quietly dropped. The defense later attempted to introduce the Higgins case in court, but that attempt was thwarted by Judge Tynan, who quickly prompted prosecutors to object to the introduction of the evidence. The prosecution team complied and Tynan then sustained what was essentially his own objection. Among the details that had emerged from the investigation of the murder was that a pathologist from the Medical Examiner's office had used an ATM directly across the street from the crime scene just before or just after the crime had been committed.

The next attack occurred on July 2, in the Arcadia home of Mary Louise Cannon. She was beaten with a vase while sleeping and her home was ransacked. Cannon's killer apparently cut himself when the vase broke from the force of the blows. Blood found on the murder weapon did not come from either Richard or the victim. A light brown hair was found in the bed where Mary was killed and a fingerprint was recovered from the scene. Neither had been left by Ramirez. What he did allegedly leave behind were two Avia shoeprints on the carpet. Neither could be discerned by jurors either on the carpet swatches that were submitted as evidence or in photos that were taken at the crime scene. Not to be deterred, the prosecution team presented a tissue containing the shoeprint that they rather preposterously claimed had been found on the floor of Cannon's home.

The next attack was on Whitney Bennett, a teenager who was asleep in her family's home in Sierra Madre on July 5, 1985 when an intruder beat her about the head with a tire iron so severely that 478 stitches were required to close her wounds, and yet she miraculously survived. The rest of the family was home sleeping as well at the time of the attack; they were all left alone and the house was not ransacked. A complete Avia shoeprint was supposedly found stamped in blood under the covers of the bed, although it initially had not been seen by police on the scene. A beer bottle of unknown origin that was found in the house yielded a fingerprint. More prints were found near the point of entry that the assailant had used. None of these prints were left by Ramirez, nor were the bloodstains found on the bed sash.

On July 7, Joyce Lucille Nelson and Sophie Dickman were attacked in separate incidents in their respective Monterey Park homes. Nelson was beaten to death and her home was ransacked. Avia shoeprints were claimed to be everywhere, including on both the front and rear patios and stomped into the victim's face. Brown hairs and fingerprints recovered from the scene were not, alas, left by Richard. Dickman's house was also searched, but she was not killed. She claimed that the intruder had attempted to rape her before leaving her handcuffed to her bed, but he was unable to achieve an erection. Evidence, however, indicated otherwise; semen was recovered from her body and she showed evidence of tearing from violent penetration. Her description of her attacker did not fit Richard Ramirez; she recalled him being 5'8" tall and dressed like a hiker or mountain climber, and she specified that he was not Latino, Oriental or Black. She also noted that he wore dark canvas shoes, not the notorious Avias.

Ramirez was considerably taller than the assailant described, and he was quite obviously Latino. He also, according to law enforcement claims, always committed his crimes while clad entirely in black. Interestingly, Sophie Dickman lived right across the street from a female Sheriff's deputy who had worked the Doi crime scene. The deputy's husband, also a deputy, had recently been murdered. He had been a good friend of Gil Carrillo's.

On July 20, Max and Leila Kneiding were butchered in their Glendale home. The crime scene was a veritable bloodbath. Both had been shot multiple times with a .22 and viscously hacked with a machete. Blood was splattered in all directions, indicating that the attack came from a number of different angles. That fact strongly suggested multiple assailants. The bodies of the Kneidings were autopsied by Dr. Irwin Golden, who was later discredited during the OJ Simpson trial, much to the embarrassment of the prosecutors on that case. Hairs found on both the nightstand and atop the pillows did not come from Ramirez.

On the very same night as the attack on the Kneidings, Chainarong Khovananth was killed instantly with a .25 caliber shot to the head. His wife

Somkid was raped, sodomized and left tied up in their Sun Valley home, which was ransacked. On the day of the attack, Somkid told her sister-in-law that her husband's killer was a black man with curly black hair. The by now obligatory Avia shoeprints were found in the hallway and on the rear patio.

Just over two weeks later, Virginia and Chris Petersen were both shot in the head with a .25 caliber automatic. Amazingly, both survived the attack. There were no Avia shoeprints found and their Northridge home was not ransacked. Just days later, Sakina and Elyas Abowath were attacked in their Diamond Bar home. Elyas was killed with a single .25 caliber round to the head; it was claimed that the killer was also armed with a .38 caliber handgun and an Uzi.[30] Sakina was raped and sodomized and the house was thoroughly searched, as was the car in their garage. As at so many of the other crime scenes, the killer appeared to be looking for something. As with the Bell and Long home, the Abowath home was in a neighborhood that was difficult to navigate. Some elements of the description given by Sakina fit Ramirez, but others clearly did not, such as the dirty blond hair, the lack of an accent, and the boots. The requisite brown hairs and unidentified fingerprints were found at the scene, as was an African-American pubic hair.

On the day of the Abowath killing, Frank Salerno called in the FBI's fabled Behavioral Sciences Unit. By the end of the month, Richard Ramirez was in custody, charged with an array of crimes.

Before the arrest of Ramirez, Peter and Barbara Pan were both shot in the head in their San Francisco home. The house was ransacked and a pentagram was drawn on the wall. The double murder was blamed on L.A.'s Night Stalker, who reportedly revisited the Bay area on several occasions. Some investigators have blamed Ramirez for at least four unsolved murders in the area, along with a rape and ten burglaries. San Francisco, alas, has more than its share of unsolved homicides.

The final Night Stalker attack came on August 17, at the home of Bill Carns and Carole Smith in Mission Viejo. Carns took three shots to the head, another witness was left alive, and the house was ransacked. So ended the alleged killing spree of the notorious Night Stalker.

Ramirez was captured by a group of irate citizens after his face was plastered on television screens and newspapers all across the city. The hastily assembled posse gave the suspect a fairly severe beating. That beating likely saved his life. An *L.A. Times* reporter working the case has said that an explicit order was given to

30 Ballistics tests would indicate that at least four different guns were used in the Night Stalker killings. As the trial judge would later advise the jury, one of the handguns linked to the crimes went missing from the LAPD evidence inventory.

police: "we don't want a trial for this guy." In other words, Ramirez was wanted dead, not alive. He was, nevertheless, turned over to police very much alive. He was taken by the LAPD to their Hollenbeck Station, although the arresting officer was an L.A. Sheriff's deputy and the arrest was made in the Sheriff's jurisdiction, not the LAPD's.

The police wasted no time in getting Ramirez into a line-up—a line-up that was fraudulent by any reasonable interpretation. Richard's face was staring out from every TV screen and every newsstand, hopelessly compromising any identification. He had a wound on the back of his head from the well-publicized beating he received, and the bandages covering that wound were clearly visible. The various witnesses were, incredibly enough, allowed to converse and compare notes. Richard was standing in the second position in the line-up, and at least two officers in the room held up two fingers, signaling to the witnesses the proper choice. That was later denied in court, but it can be clearly seen on videotape and in still photos. Jurors never saw those images.

After the line-up, Ramirez was transferred to the county jail and placed in the hospital ward, where he was kept in solitary confinement. He began complaining of headaches and claimed that he was being poisoned. As legal counsel, he chose Daniel and Arturo Hernandez, who had, between the two of them, just five years experience practicing law; neither had ever tried a murder case. The judge assigned Public Defender Ray Clark to assist the pair.

Among Richard's visitors in jail, once he was allowed to have visitors, were Zeena LaVey and the earless Nikolas Schreck. Zeena told Richard that her father and the Church sent their blessings and were praying for him; she also informed him that he was being made an honorary member of the Church of Satan. Occupying the cell next to Richard, for a short time, was actor Sean Penn. Penn's wife at the time, singer Madonna, reportedly tried to arrange a meeting with Ramirez.

Ramirez was tried on fourteen counts of murder, five counts of attempted murder, fifteen counts of burglary, five counts of robbery, four counts of rape, three counts of forced oral copulation, and four counts of sodomy. Prosecuting the case was Phil Halpin, who had served as co-counsel on the Manson prosecution. Virtually every decision in the preliminary phase of the trial went against the defendant. For example, an early motion for a change of venue, necessary because Ramirez had already been tried and convicted by the local press, was summarily denied. On one occasion, Ramirez was dragged from the courtroom and beaten by bailiffs. The Ramirez family, not surprisingly, was banned from the courtroom, although detectives working the case attended regularly. Richard's defense attorneys had to fight for disclosure throughout the trial; prosecutors were consistently allowed to stall on handing over evidence.

Perhaps the most prominent feature of Richard's trial was the steady stream of prosecution objections, the overwhelming majority of which were sustained. Another salient feature was the spectacle of Ramirez being kept shackled like an animal throughout the trial, while the media continued to demonize him and the non-sequestered jury soaked it all in.

The *Los Angeles Times* did more than its share to prejudice the jury. Before the trial had begun, the newspaper reported that jailers had purportedly overheard a plan by Ramirez to shoot the prosecutor (although he obviously had no access to a firearm). In response, metal detectors were prominently displayed outside the courtroom. On the day the trial began, the *Times* ran a story in which it was claimed that Ramirez had bragged in jail of being a "super criminal" responsible for twenty murders. A sheriff's deputy quoted Ramirez as having said, "I love all that blood."

A large portion of the prosecution's physical evidence consisted of the Avia shoeprints and what were said to be latex glove prints, but all that that evidence proved, even if the prints were in fact found at the crime scenes, was that whoever committed the murders wore shoes and gloves. The state did have one ace up its sleeve: on May 9, 1985, the home of Clara Hadsall in Monrovia had purportedly been burglarized by Ramirez, who allegedly left highly incriminating evidence at the scene. Though Richard was never charged with the alleged crime, the judge readily admitted the evidence offered by prosecutors, even though, as previously noted, he disallowed evidence from another uncharged crime that would have aided the defense's case.

The officer called to the Hadsall crime scene, Tom Wright, claimed that he had discovered—in the sink below the window through which entry had been gained—an Avia shoeprint. Right alongside that alleged shoeprint was a palm print and fingerprints. Luckily, officer Wright, in a preposterously unlikely scenario, happened to have what must have been the most fully stocked LAPD squad car that the department had to offer. Without calling in evidence technicians, the officer claimed that he single-handedly lifted the various prints, utilizing a fingerprint kit that he just happened to have with him. He also just happened to have the extra-long lifting tape that was required to preserve the oversized shoeprint. Wright also claimed that he made plaster casts of additional prints that he discovered in the ground outside the window, and that he then took photographs of all of this evidence at the scene. The elderly owner of the house, conveniently enough, had passed away, so there was no one to dispute the officer's account.

This rather obviously manufactured evidence was the only way in which the state was able to tie the infamous Avia shoes to Richard Ramirez. The shoes themselves were never found, nor was any receipt for the shoes ever recovered,

and no witnesses were produced who ever saw Ramirez wearing the shoes. In fact, there is absolutely no evidence to suggest that Ramirez ever owned or wore a pair of Avia shoes.

In order to believe officer Wright's account, we have to accept that Richard Ramirez, who managed to avoid leaving a single fingerprint at the scenes of any of the crimes for which he was charged, inexplicably left pristine palm and fingerprints at the Hadsall home, and left them right alongside his trademark Avia shoeprints. And he did all that at a crime scene where no witnesses and no evidence could be produced showing that a crime had even been committed there. To account for the fact that detectives were unable to produce any fingerprints from any of the real crime scenes, the state argued that the wily killer had worn latex gloves throughout his crime spree. And yet, at the very same time, the state argued that no gloves had been worn at this one particular crime scene. That rather obvious contradiction in the prosecution's case was never explained.

Other than what was recovered from Hadsall's sink, the only other fingerprint evidence that was presented were prints lifted from items in Richard's car and from items in a bag of his that was recovered from a locker at the local Greyhound station. All that that evidence proved was that Richard left his fingerprints on items of his own personal property.

The defense team did manage to offer into evidence testimony that tended to clear Richard of involvement in at least some of the murders. Ramirez' father, for instance, testified that Richard had been in El Paso at the time that two of the attacks occurred. Though some questioned the father's credibility, two other witnesses confirmed his account. One of them even attempted to introduce into evidence a Polaroid photo taken of Richard in El Paso. The witness informed the court that she had personally witnessed the taking of the photo, but the judge refused to allow it entered into evidence.

One of the most bizarre of the sideshows surrounding the lengthy trial involved Richard's devoted girlfriend, Doreen, and one of his surviving victims, Somkid Khovananth: Doreen sat outside the courtroom and babysat Somkid's five-year-old daughter while Somkid testified. Khovananth apparently had no problem entrusting the care of her child to the girlfriend of the man who had allegedly raped her and killed her husband. And Doreen had no qualms with providing a service that allowed a witness to enter the courtroom for the express purpose of offering incriminating testimony against her boyfriend.

The circus-like atmosphere of the trial continued after the jury began deliberations. Two jurors had to be replaced, one within a week of beginning deliberations, after having sat through a nearly year long trial. One of the two, Phyllis Singletary, was murdered in a brutal, Night Stalker-style attack. She was purportedly killed by her boyfriend for reasons unconnected to her jury service. The

boyfriend, conveniently enough, allegedly killed himself before police could get to him. One of the two replacement jurors, seated without protest, had a family history of violent crime victimization: both of her brothers had been murdered.

Ramirez was ultimately found guilty over forty separate counts. During the sentencing phase of the trial, his defenders opted not to call a single witness. The jurors bestowed nineteen death sentences upon him, even though a few of them later said that they thought the defendant had been railroaded.

Before his capture, Ramirez had talked of plans to buy a house and set up a torture room in the basement. He planned to film his exploits and sell the tapes. He knew, he told others, that there was a market for such things. He also said that the idea of having sex slaves appealed to him. While these goals remained but depraved dreams for Douglas Clark and Richard Ramirez, in the next chapter we will meet some men who attempted to make those dreams a reality, with varying degrees of success.

Chapter 16

The Collectors

"Jeffrey [Dahmer] thought he was the devil. Jeffrey thought he was so evil that he was equal to the devil"

—Attorney Gerald Boyle

Leonard Lake was a collector. He started collecting in the San Francisco area as early as July 1984. Bob Berdella was also a collector. He started collecting in Kansas City, Missouri in July 1984. Gary Heidnik was another collector. He did not start collecting in Philadelphia until November 1986, unless you count his first failed attempt in 1978. Jeffrey Dahmer was probably the best known of the collectors. He started collecting in Milwaukee in 1990, around the same time that Herb Baumeister started collecting in Indianapolis.

In 1963, John Fowles published *The Collector*, a disturbing tale of a man obsessed with control. A butterfly collector in the beginning of the book, he soon enough reveals his desire to collect and control women. His first young victim was named Miranda, which would later become the code name Leonard Lake used for his master plan. *The Collector* was apparently a very influential work. Leonard had a copy of it prominently placed in his concrete bunker, along with Carl von Clausewitz's *Principles of War*. Bob Berdella cited the movie of the same name as having an enormous impact on his life.

In November 1961, Gary Heidnik joined the U.S. Army and requested that he be trained as a military policeman. The Army though opted to send him to Ft. Sam Houston near San Antonio, Texas for training as a medic. When that training was completed, he was sent to an Army hospital in West Germany to work as an orderly. That did not work out too well, however, especially after the Army began experimenting on him with powerful hallucinogenic drugs, as his records would later reveal. He was sent back to a military hospital here in the States and then released early with an honorable discharge. He later became a collector.

In January 1979, Jeffrey Dahmer joined the U.S. Army and requested that he be trained as a military policeman. The Army though opted to send him to Ft. Sam Houston near San Antonio, Texas for training as a medic. When that training was completed, he was sent to an Army hospital in West Germany to work as an orderly. That did not work out too well, however, and Jeffrey was released early with an honorable discharge. He later became a collector.

Now that seems a little odd. And while we are on the subject of Jeffrey Dahmer, his hometown of Bath, Ohio was just fifteen miles from Bob Berdella's hometown of Cuyahoga Falls. That seems a little odd as well.

Collectors generally have much in common. Their primary concern is with control, which they attempt to gain by torturing their victims into submission. Along the way, they tend to take numerous photos and shoot a number of home videos. Some of these they keep for themselves, and some they sell to others. Collectors also like to keep various body parts lying around the house and they generally keep their freezers well stocked with unmarked meat. Some collectors are prone to race-war diatribes and have grand plans to keep large stables of female sex slaves as breeders. These collectors are not unlike Charles Manson, except that their techniques are somewhat cruder. Leonard Lake and Gary Heidnik are examples that type of collector. Other collectors are not concerned with acquiring breeders; they prefer to collect young men and boys. These collectors are not unlike John Wayne Gacy. Bob Berdella, Jeffrey Dahmer and Herb Baumeister all fit into that category.

Here are the stories of the collectors and the havoc they wreaked in the late 1980s and early 1990s.

* * * * *

Leonard Lake was born in San Francisco and raised primarily by a grandmother who reportedly was a strict disciplinarian. His father was said to be abusive and cold. His mother was a licensed practical nurse with experience working in mental wards. She later said that the family always encouraged Leonard to take an interest in the naked human form and to take pictures of girls, including his sisters and cousins. Leonard's brother was reportedly abusive to animals and he had a keen interest in fire. 'Mental illness' ran in every generation of the Lake family.

In January 1964, Lake joined the U.S. Marines and served for seven years. Part of that time was spent in Vietnam, where he earned several medals. His second tour of duty there was cut short due to unspecified medical conditions and he was

shipped back to the States and given a medical discharge. After that, he entered a VA hospital for psychological treatment.

Lake later became a member of the Society for Creative Anachronism (SCA), described by chronicler Joseph Harrington as a "cult based on medieval worship involving sacrifices." Lake's ex-wife, who sometimes modeled for the hardcore S&M videos that Leonard produced and sold, admitted that her former spouse had a longstanding affiliation with a San Francisco "witches coven." Some of Leonard's friends later recalled that he often boasted of membership in a secret "death cult." According to chronicler Joel Norris, Lake "supported himself by making snuff videos and selling drugs." He also was known to stockpile guns. In his free time, he worked with kids at a local 4-H Club. According to one report, that club was later the target of allegations of ritual abuse.

Partner Charles Ng was the son of a wealthy family in Hong Kong. As a child, he was regularly chained and beaten unmercifully by his father. Later he was shipped off to attend an exclusive prep school in Leeds, England, where his uncle taught. He was arrested in September 1979, after entering the United States, for hit-and-run. All charges were dropped the next month after Ng agreed to enlist in the Marines—despite the fact that he was underage and not a U.S. citizen, and should therefore have been deported.

His military service began on Aleister Crowley's birthday, October 12, 1979. Exactly two years and one day later, Ng robbed a U.S. Marine armory on Oahu and reportedly made off with machine guns, grenade launchers, night scopes, and pistols. He went AWOL a month later after being questioned about the robbery. He remained at large until the eve of *Walpurgisnacht*, 1982, when he and Lake were both arrested by an FBI SWAT team. On August 15, Ng was convicted and sent to the brig at Fort Leavenworth to begin serving a two-year sentence. Lake, who was not involved in the armory robbery, apparently was not charged.

The next year, Lake's brother Donald disappeared and was never seen or heard from again. Leonard was later posthumously credited with Donald's murder, although it is unclear if there is any evidence to support that charge. In July 1984, the entire Dubs family disappeared without a trace. The family was reportedly abducted from their apartment, but no blood or other signs of a struggle were found, and there was no evidence of forced entry. Two neighbors across the street were watching the house at the time of the purported abductions and neither of them saw anything unusual. They did see Charles Ng, who had been released by that time and was reunited with Leonard Lake, leave the apartment, but he did so alone. Henry Dubs, the patriarch of the family, had been a photographer who specialized in shooting children's parties.

A number of other people disappeared from the San Francisco area in the following months. Their remains would later be discovered on the grounds of a

ranch in Wilseyville, California, just 130 miles east of the city. The property was owned by the Balazs family, Leonard Lake's former in-laws. Leonard called the ranch home. Among the victims found there were Lonnie Bond and Brenda O'Connor, who had been running a methamphetamine lab on the adjacent property. Killed along with the couple were their son, Lonnie Bond, Jr., and Robin Stapley, who had been one of the founders of the San Diego chapter of the Guardian Angels. Stapley had been involved in running the meth lab.

Lake was arrested and taken into custody on June 2, 1985 on a shoplifting charge. A .22 caliber Ruger fitted with a silencer was discovered in a search of his car trunk at the time of the arrest. Sidekick Charles Ng was with Lake at the time, but he managed to escape and quickly find his way to Canada. Less than three weeks before the arrest, a meter reader for PG&E had visited the Wilseyville property and been greeted by a rather macabre scene: Leonard Lake standing shirtless in his front doorway, covered in blood and wearing a blood-encrusted apron. It is unclear whether this incident was reported; there is no indication that any action was taken at the time.

While Leonard was being interrogated, following his arrest, he popped a cyanide capsule that he conveniently, and rather improbably, had hidden in the collar of his shirt. He died without ever regaining consciousness. Before popping the capsule, however, he gave his arresting officers the name of his escaped accomplice.

Police promptly made an appointment to see Claralyn Balazs, Leonard Lake's former wife. When they arrived to question her, she was in the company of Gloria Eberling, Lake's mother, and two of his sisters. The officers arranged with the women to conduct a search of the Wilseyville property. Claralyn told them that the ranch was difficult to find and she offered to lead them there at an agreed upon time. When the officers met Claralyn at the prearranged time, she was again in the company of Eberling. The two women had already been to the property in advance of the search. Balazs admitted that she had removed items from the property, including about a dozen videotapes. She was not arrested for deliberately tampering with the evidence, even though it soon became apparent that she had lied to police about the difficulty of finding the property so as to allow herself the opportunity to visit the ranch before the officers got there. Authorities later claimed that the evidence that she had removed was returned, though there is of course no way of knowing whether the tapes that were returned were the same ones that had been removed. There was also no way of knowing if any other items had been removed.

With the Wilseyville search underway, the first thing that investigators noticed was that the interior of the house on the property contained numerous bullet holes and bloodstains. Also noted was that there were eyebolts anchored to the

bedroom floor at all four corners of the bed, and a powerful 250W floodlight mounted to the wall directly over the bed. Police quickly deduced that the room might have been used as a snuff film studio. Luckily, they happened to have an expert on such things. Tom Eisenmann, a former Navy man, was a veteran investigator of sex crimes involving children. He had in the past worked on cases involving child pornography and snuff films. Why he happened to be around for the initial search, given that the suspect had only been charged with shoplifting at that point, remains a mystery.

Leonard's diary was found under the bed; found therein were such notations as: "I plan to build a prison for sex slaves…The perfect woman for me is one who is totally controlled…" Leonard's prison had already been constructed, in the form of a large concrete bunker that Lake and Ng had reportedly just finished building on April 15. The bunker contained a vast array of military and police equipment, including boots, fatigues, canteens, bayonets, gun belts, rifles, shotguns, assault rifles, machine guns, manacles, handcuffs, hunting knives, a starlight scope, tripods, pistols, butcher knives, and switchblade knives. Also in the bunker was a copy of *The Collector*. Incorporated into the design of the building was a secret, soundproof cell outfitted with a one-way viewing window, hidden cameras, and a list of rules for prisoners. Also found were numerous photographs of children in various stages of undress that had been taken at the South City Juvenile Hall, where Claralyn worked.

Adjacent to the bunker was an incinerator, which investigators logically concluded had been used to dispose of bodies. Hundreds of bone fragments were recovered from the property, most of them burned and then cut into 2–4 inch pieces, making identification all but impossible. A final body count was never achieved, but evidence indicated that as many as twenty-five people had been killed and disposed of at the Wilseyville ranch.

Buried on the grounds of the ranch were five-gallon buckets containing videotapes. The contents of most of those tapes have never been revealed. One of them reportedly featured Leonard's mother, Gloria Eberling, Leonard's former wife, Claralyn Balazs, and Claralyn's parents, Louis and Grace Balazs, listening as Lake animatedly described his plans for the coming Armageddon. He saw himself as the new Adam, and he spoke of building a series of bunkers, each to be stocked with weapons and food and staffed with a sex slave. These slaves were to serve as the mothers of the New World Order that would arise from the ashes of Armageddon. The Wilseyville structure was apparently the prototype for this planned network of bunkers. Lake dubbed his plan "Operation Miranda," in honor of the heroine of Fowles' novel.

Another videotape featured Lake and Ng physically and psychologically torturing two different women, one of whom was their former neighbor, Brenda

O'Connor. On the tape, Lake can be heard telling Brenda: "Suffer…There's people that are going to want to know that we did our job." Additional videotapes were recovered from the abandoned former residence of Charles Ng. The contents of those tapes also remain a mystery.

Early on in the investigation, the local chief of police issued a telling statement: "This may be a case of mass murder or a cult situation…A cult case is a possibility we're not going to exclude at this time." The Department of Justice and the FBI soon descended upon the scene and the official story quickly became that only two men, Leonard Lake and Charles Ng, were involved in the murders.

As the investigation continued, the home of Louis and Grace Balazs was searched. Investigators hauled off six bags of potential evidence, including audiotapes, copies of the photographs of the girls at Juvenile Hall, and a variety of S&M gear. No members of the Balazs family were ever arrested. As the search at Wilseyville continued, body parts continued to be unearthed. Few of these were ever identified, but one skull, featuring a .22 caliber bullet hole next to where the ear had been, had belonged to Randy Jacobson, a Vietnam veteran who had served with Lake. His last known address had been at the Pink Palace in San Francisco's Tenderloin District.

In December 1985, Ng was convicted by a Canadian court on shoplifting and assault charges and given a four-and-a-half-year prison sentence. He had been arrested in early July. Six years would pass before Ng was extradited to the U.S. to face charges arising from his complicity in the Wilseyville operations. Seven more years would pass before his trial got underway.

The lengthy delay in extraditing Ng was due to the fact that he was facing near certain execution in the United States. As in most of the 'civilized' world, capital punishment is considered barbaric in Canada. Canadian law therefore prohibits the extradition of suspects accused of capital crimes. Nevertheless, under pressure from U.S. authorities, the Supreme Court of Canada approved Ng's transfer to America. He was back in the States on September 26, 1991. Ng's attorneys later argued his case before the UN Human Rights Committee, whose members condemned the actions of the Canadian government, but by that time it was a moot point.

The American people, with their famously short memories, had largely forgotten about the Ng case—but that was soon to change. In November 1991, a purported witness took to the national airwaves to claim that he had known Ng in Leavenworth in 1982. The witness said that Ng had talked incessantly about torture and mutilation and had allegedly discussed his fantasy of owning sex slaves. The inflaming of public opinion had begun.

Ng's long and convoluted journey through the U.S. criminal justice system began in early 1992. Throughout that seven-year journey, the media consistently

portrayed the defendant as the party responsible for the repeated delays in the legal proceedings. In truth though, it was the state that was responsible for the vast majority of the delays, as prosecutors manipulated the system in their ceaseless efforts to stage yet another sham 'serial killer' trial.

Ng's first attorney, at his first preliminary trial, was Michael Burt, who was simultaneously serving as an attorney for Richard Ramirez. Over Ng's objections, the presiding judge opted to appoint him new counsel. Ng appealed the judge's decision, but the California Supreme Court denied the appeal and the change of attorney order stood. Throughout the preliminary proceedings, every effort was made to present the defendant as a dangerous, uncontrollable animal. He was shackled to his courtroom chair and surrounded by heavily armed deputies at all times. During court recesses, he was literally kept in a steel cage.

The purpose of a preliminary trial is for the state to present a body of evidence sufficient to convince a judge that the defendant should be held over for trial. This preview of the state's case can be very beneficial to the defense. However, since no defense is offered at such a proceeding, the public initially gets a very one-sided version of events. For that reason, defense attorneys on high-profile cases tend to air their side through the media. At the outset of Ng's preliminary trial, however, a gag order was issued. The result of that order was that the general public only heard the prosecution's case.

Ng repeatedly filed motions for a change of counsel. All such motions were routinely denied. In fact, Ng was not even allowed an evidentiary hearing to present his case for why a change of counsel was needed. He also filed a motion to have the judge dismissed. That motion was not only denied, but was stricken from the trial record.

The preliminary proceedings resulted in indictments on twelve counts of murder. As Charles awaited trial, a Superior Court judge agreed to hear his lawsuit against his new attorneys. The judge indicated that Ng's suit was not, contrary to what the trial judge had ruled, a frivolous one. That soon became a moot point, however, when the trial was moved in September 1994 to Orange County. A new judge took the helm and new attorneys were appointed on both sides. A moving van delivered a mountain of evidence to the offices of both the Orange County District Attorney and Public Defender. The OCPD's office complained loudly about the condition of the evidence they received. Six tons of documents had been stuffed haphazardly and seemingly randomly into produce boxes. Five hundred pages of police reports were missing. All files pertaining to the Justice Department's investigation of the case were missing. The documents produced by the former defense team were reportedly illegible. Hundreds of photographs were unlabeled and unorganized. Thirteen boxes containing the most crucial documents were clearly marked "shred." Well over a hundred

videotapes were included among the evidence, but only one was ever shown at trial.

As the PD's office struggled to make sense of the evidence, while meeting resistance from the Justice Department and others, the new presiding judge opted to order the replacement of the new defense team. Charles Ng filed a request to have his team reinstated, but his motion was denied. The dismissed attorneys had been working to effect the removal of the judge from the case. The Fourth District Court of Appeals ultimately reinstated Ng's attorneys and strongly recommended that the judge be disqualified. A new judge was assigned to the case in February 1997. Through all of that legal maneuvering, it was Ng who was vilified by the press for purportedly manipulating the legal system to delay his fate.

In October, the new presiding judge postponed the start of Ng's trial yet again. A week later, the San Francisco Police Department made the remarkable announcement that it had lost many of its files on the case. Even more incredibly, bullets and blood samples had allegedly been disposed of.

On April 20, 1998, Charles Ng asked the court that he be allowed to represent himself. The next day he requested that his attorneys be dismissed. In May his request to serve as his own counsel was granted. In June, a man to whom Ng had allegedly confessed in prison, and who had been billed as a star witness for the prosecution, died in a single-car crash. The media hinted ominously that Ng had somehow arranged the man's death, but it was actually the state that benefited. The witness's purported testimony was read into the record by a U.S. Marshall. The jury, of course, was not able to gauge the credibility of the man whose words were read in court, and the defense was unable to cross-examine the deceased witness. Those are precisely the reasons why such testimony is virtually always disallowed—except in the Ng case.

On June 17, Charles Ng made his debut as a defense attorney. By August 21, he had lost the right to represent himself.

By mid-September, the preliminary proceedings had been wrapped up and jury selection began. On October 26, 1998, the long awaited trial of Charles Ng finally began. Prosecutors began their presentation by showing the graphic videotape of the two women being tortured and raped. The images on the tape were disturbing, to say the least. Airing it for the jury did considerable damage to the defense's case. The tape, however, did not answer the question of whether Charles Ng was guilty of murder, since the murders of the women were not captured on tape—at least not on the particular tape that was aired in court. What the airing of the videotape did accomplish was to radically inflame the emotions of the jury.

After that first airing in court, excerpts from the video promptly showed up on the evening news. The next day, prosecutors again played the video for the jury. It soon became apparent that that tape was the main plank of the state's case. It was

aired repeatedly throughout the duration of the trial, both in the courtroom and by the media. Two of the jurors though only saw the first couple of airings of the tape, since they were replaced the very first week, before opening arguments had even concluded.

In late January 1999, the prosecution began its closing argument by, surprisingly enough, playing the tape again. Following that, the case would have ordinarily then gone to the jury for deliberations. But this was no ordinary case. So what happened next was that, as the *San Francisco Chronicle* noted, "Ng testified as a surprise witness for his own defense—two days after his own attorneys had rested their case, and one day after prosecutors finished their own final summation of the evidence for the jury."

On February 1, the state got a shot at cross-examining the surprise witness. The first thing that prosecutors did was to play the tape again. Then they introduced inflammatory illustrations that Ng had drawn while imprisoned in Canada. That evidence had been previously disallowed, before Ng made the inexplicable decision to take the stand. Prosecutors then played the tape yet again. Needless to say, it is difficult to see how Ng aided his cause with his eleventh-hour appearance as a witness.

After more than two weeks of deliberations, the jury returned with verdicts on eleven of the twelve murder counts: guilty. Ng's trial then moved on to the penalty phase, during which one of the jurors was dismissed and an investigator was charged with prosecutorial misconduct. The judge opted not to declare a mistrial, although such a ruling would seem to have been warranted.

On April 20, that most infamous of dates, Ng's father was called by the defense. On the stand, he admitted to the severe physical abuse he had inflicted on his son. The next day, Ng's mother took the stand and confirmed the horrendous level of abuse to which the boy had been subjected. The jury was not swayed. On May 3, they returned from deliberations with the recommendation that Charles be put to death. The next day it was claimed that Ng had somehow managed to contact a juror during deliberations. Two weeks later, that juror's phone number was allegedly found in his cell. On June 30, 1999, a sentence of death was formally imposed upon Charles Ng, thus ending his fourteen-year legal odyssey.

Michael Rustigan, a criminologist from San Francisco State University, had this to say about that odyssey: "I think it's perhaps the strangest case in the annals of serial killers from the standpoint of the trial. In terms of legal process, I'd have to say it's one of the most bizarre, confusing, and outrageous cases I have ever seen." Perhaps Rustigan just needs to spend a little more time studying serial killer cases, for as bizarre as the Ng case was, it did not really differ dramatically from other serial killer cases—although it was perhaps pushing the boundaries

just a bit when Claralyn Balazs, billed as a star witness, took the stand and then was promptly dismissed after both sides failed to ask her a single question.

Joel Norris, a psychologist, author, and 'expert' on serial crime, has written that Lake and Ng were in possession of "snuff videos that combine violent sex with vivid scenes of actual murders committed on camera, photo portraits of women in chains, snapshots of dead victims moments before their burial, and bags of human bones that had been boiled down into soup." If such evidence did exist, it is inconceivable that it would not have been presented in court. But there is ample reason to believe that such images did exist amongst the hundreds of videotapes and photographic images. Why then was it not produced?

The most logical conclusion is that the images either depicted Ng acting in conjunction with other unacknowledged perpetrators, or they showed that Ng did not actually participate in the murders.

* * * * *

Robert Berdella, Sr., a World War II veteran and member of the Knights of Columbus, was reportedly a physically and emotionally abusive father. His son and namesake was beaten regularly with a leather strap. The elder Berdella died suddenly at the young age of thirty-nine, reportedly of a heart attack. His widow remarried shortly after her husband's untimely death. Her son lived a solitary life, rarely playing outside the family home. He had very few friends. At the age of sixteen, he was raped by a restaurant co-worker.

In 1968, while a sophomore at college, Robert Berdella, Jr. was arrested for selling drugs to an undercover federal agent. He received a five year suspended sentence. Just a month later, he was again arrested on drug charges, but those charges were dropped. The next year, while still a student, Bob financed the purchase of his home. He also performed a bizarre ritual on the grounds of the campus in which a duck was decapitated.

After college, Berdella worked as a chef at many of the most renowned restaurants and country clubs in Kansas City. The ingredient lists of the dishes he prepared became the subject of morbid curiosity and speculation when evidence later emerged of Berdella's possible cannibalism. When Bob was not occupied with his culinary endeavors, he spent much of his time collecting bizarre artifacts, some reportedly fashioned from human body parts. By 1981, his hobby had become his full time job; Berdella was the proprietor of a flea market stand known as Bob's Bizarre Bazaar.

Berdella also helped set up a Neighborhood Watch program, and then served as the liaison to the police and to a couple of nearby youth homes. According to

neighbors, he had a constant flow of young men coming and going from his home. Many of them lived in the home for varying periods of time. One twenty-five-year-old former boarder said that at times as many as four boarders lived at the house, and that large groups of young men regularly attended parties there. These boarders and visitors were a constant feature of the home throughout the 1980s. During that time, an indeterminate number of young men were tortured and killed in the house. Officials claimed that none of the boarders were involved in any of the crimes.

One of Berdella's boarders, a young hustler identified as Freddie Kellogg, took a rather interesting route to reach Bob's house. Kellogg was picked up by an unidentified man who handcuffed and then brutally assaulted him. The assault was stopped by a second unidentified man, who then introduced Kellogg to Berdella. Kellogg thereafter served as what was described as Berdella's "liaison to the streets."

Many of Berdella's young companions, perhaps significantly, regularly signed up as volunteers for unspecified 'medical experiments' at the nearby Quincy Research Center. One group of such volunteers reportedly staged a party at Bob's house to celebrate the completion of a thirty-day program at the center. Many of Berdella's young protégés later said that he frequently claimed to know powerful people who were able to "get things done." He reportedly did have a rather large network of connections for an owner of a flea market stand, including contacts in Africa, Asia, South America, and along the Pacific Rim.

Berdella's first known victim, Jerry Howell, disappeared in July 1984. At least two witnesses told police that they suspected that Berdella had given the young man what they described as a "hot shot." Another witness reported "word on the streets is he [Berdella] does bad things to kids." The police department's Fugitive Apprehension Unit purportedly questioned, watched and harassed the suspect, but there is little indication that any serious effort was made to investigate Berdella. The next known victim disappeared in April 1985, followed by a third on the summer solstice of that same year. In September, Walter James Farris disappeared as well. His wife told investigators that when her husband was last seen, he had been headed for Bob's house. This was the first time in the history of the Fugitive Apprehension Unit that the same suspect was positively linked to two missing persons cases, yet even then little effort was made to investigate Bob Berdella. In June 1986, both Todd Stoops and Larry Pearson disappeared. Pearson was abducted right after Bob returned from a trip to Ohio. He was held captive in the home for six weeks, while boarders and guests freely came and went. After he was killed, his severed head was kept in Berdella's freezer for a week.

There is little doubt that the known victims represent only the tip of the iceberg. Evidence indicated that many more young men were tortured and killed, although authorities denied that fact and made concerted efforts to downplay and cover up the facts of the case.

On March 29, 1988, Chris Bryson was abducted and imprisoned in Bob's house. Bryson, unlike the others, managed to escape from Berdella's three-story home, and in doing so brought about the exposure of Bob's operations. On April 2, Chris leapt to freedom from a window. He was naked and dazed, with visible wounds from the depravities that had been inflicted upon him. During his days of confinement, he had been kept heavily drugged and subjected to severe torture that was designed specifically to affect his vision, hearing, voice and hands. Fingers and chemical swabs had been jabbed into his eyes, his hands had been beaten with a tire iron and tightly bound with piano wire, and electric shocks had been administered to his eyes, ears and genitals. His ears had been packed full of caulking compound. He had been injected with various chemicals, including drain cleaner. He had been branded, subjected to Bob's version of acupuncture, and beaten about the head with a rubber mallet. And throughout it all, he had been photographed repeatedly.

Officers Lloyd Harvey and Larry Lewis were the first officers to respond to the call of Bryson's escape. They were soon joined by officers John Metzger and Cynthia Cherry, who appear to have taken charge of the scene. Metzger volunteered to take the report. At least some of the officers on the scene were skeptical of Bryson's claims, despite the fact that he had severely reddened eyes, visible scars and burns on his face, arms, legs and back, and unmistakable rope burns on his wrists, mouth and ankles.

Bryson initially claimed that Berdella had been assisted in the abduction by a blond woman; that fact was later expunged from the official story. He also reported that Berdella had told him that there were others with whom he would later be shared. Bob had also warned him that he might be sent off to a remote location in Wyoming where his abuse would continue indefinitely.

Police promptly assembled a twelve-man task force to investigate the case. Assigned to lead that task force was a man named Troy Cole, who later co-authored a self-serving book about the Berdella case. The selection of Cole was a provocative one: he was, by his own admission, a 'former' employee of the CIA. Cole's law enforcement career began at CIA headquarters in Langley, Virginia in 1968. He was assigned to the White House. Two years later, he left the employ of the CIA, officially at least, to work for the District of Columbia police force. In 1972, he joined the Kansas City force, where he was assigned to homicide and, naturally enough, the department's intelligence unit.

The search warrant for Berdella's home was obtained by officer Tom Eikel, who had been to Bob's house previously, with two young male hustler/informants, on an undercover assignment to make a drug purchase. No arrests had been made and no charges had been filed following that transaction. The search of Bob's Bazaar was led by detective Lee Floyd, who had been a visitor to the shop in the past. Floyd knew Bob and he knew Bob's landlord at the flea market, who happened to be a former Kansas City police officer.

Multiple searches of the home, which reportedly had a putrid odor, uncovered a wealth of evidence. Voluminous notes kept by Berdella were found, as well as meticulously detailed logs of the tortures he had inflicted upon his victims. Hundreds of photographs taken into custody depicted as many as twenty different men being tortured. Numerous videotapes, audiotapes and films were taken into custody as well, but their contents were never revealed. Human skulls were found. Tests revealed that two large plastic trash barrels and a smaller bucket had at one time been filled with blood. A sizable stockpile of powerful pharmaceuticals was seized, including Acepromazine, Chlorpromazine, and Ketamine. In the yard were human vertebrae that had been cut into pieces with a Skilsaw, just as Leonard Lake and Charles Ng had done at Wilseyville.

Amazingly enough, despite all the evidence, Troy Cole announced that the investigation was not being treated as a homicide case. That stance became somewhat harder to justify when the housing of a chainsaw discovered at the house was found to be packed with human flesh, blood and hair. Around the time of that discovery, the FBI was brought in to assist on the case.

Victim Chris Bryson had been taken, strangely enough, to the Research Psychiatric Center to recover from his injuries. Berdella had been arrested and placed in a medical unit; his cell was a steel box with no bars and no windows. He was cut off from all contact with other inmates and kept heavily drugged with sleeping pills. Bob's dogs had been sent to the city pound, where they reportedly refused to eat dog food. At home, they had dined on "mystery meat." Boarders spoke of eating "mystery meat" as well. Many in the community recalled with horror how Berdella had often prepared casseroles for potluck dinners at the flea market, and for neighborhood functions.

Bob was allowed one frequent, though quite clandestine, visitor—a Reverend Roger Coleman. The two men had a longstanding relationship, as evidenced by the fact that Coleman had been at the grand opening of Bob's Bazaar. In a bid to get him released from prison, he offered to let Berdella stay at his home, with his family, if the state agreed to release him on bond. Coleman later held a press conference and arranged a public television interview on Berdella's behalf.

More information about Berdella emerged as investigators continued to talk to witnesses. Some reports linked Bob to the disappearances of two paperboys in

Des Moines, Iowa—the same disappearances that were linked to Larry King and Michael Aquino. Some witnesses claimed that Berdella had been killing his victims in satanic ritual sacrifices. Others told of Bob making regular trips to a farm south of the city, frequently accompanied by heavy trash bags. Three different farms in the area were later identified, but it was deemed impractical to search them.

As frequently happens in serial killer cases, prosecutors chose to take their evidence to a grand jury, whose proceedings are conducted in secrecy, rather than holding a public preliminary trial. The grand jury handed down an indictment for the murder of Larry Pearson. Evidence reportedly included a detailed torture log, about sixty Polaroid photos, and Pearson's skull. A public defender appeared in court to represent Berdella, but the judge informed him that his services would not needed; instead, the judge had opted to appoint private counsel for the defendant. Bob promptly entered a plea of guilty to the single count of first-degree murder. As the judge questioned him about his plea, he gave responses that his chroniclers described as "flat" and "emotionless." He was given a life sentence with no possibility for parole. Berdella's trial was over before it had even begun.

In September 1988, Bob was arraigned on additional murder counts. This time, he entered pleas of not guilty. The next month, Geraldo Rivera hosted a Halloween special on Satanism as only Geraldo can—which means that the subject was relegated to television's equivalent of the tabloid press. Nevertheless, Geraldo managed to round up a number of witnesses who claimed that Berdella had been involved in a satanic cult. One of those witnesses was detective Lee Orr of the Kansas City, Kansas police force. One woman claimed to have witnessed Berdella performing a ritual murder.

It should not have come as much of a surprise to the investigators who searched Berdella's house and shop to find that Bob had a keen interest in the occult. Satanic and occult artifacts were scattered throughout the house. At least twenty books on Satanism and/or witchcraft were found, along with books on sadism and a literary work entitled *How to Create Poisons and Antidotes to Them.* A record album entitled *Black Mass for Lucifer* sat atop Bob's turntable. Clippings of serial killer stories were scattered about. Buried in the yard was a jar containing bird feathers. The Bizarre Bazaar was filled with occult paraphernalia.

Lead investigator Troy Cole, nevertheless, scoffed at the claims made on the show and insisted that the Berdella case had nothing to do with Satanism. Cole was not the only one to scoff at the claims; Michael Aquino did as well. Aquino was one of those to appear on Geraldo's special. His primary goal appeared to have been to denounce any and all prosecutions of satanic crime as "witch hunts." The morning after the special aired, police received a call from the wife of one of Berdella's known victims. She told them that she had information for them but

could not talk about it at the time. She promised to call back. She was never heard from again.

With Berdella serving a life term, a rather morbid auction was scheduled to dispose of all his property, both from his home and from his place of business. A local millionaire and convicted bank robber named Delbert Dunmire consistently outbid all other bidders for such items as a custom-designed torture bed and a collection of ceremonial robes. The auction was ultimately cancelled when Dunmire offered to purchase the remaining inventory. The next month, he bought Bob's house as well. He then leveled it, destroying all remaining evidence, and sold the vacant lot. It seems very likely that those actions were taken to hide evidence of the involvement of others, including possibly Dunmire himself.[31]

Cole's team claimed that Berdella gave full confessions to his crimes. But they appear to have been very carefully crafted 'confessions' that were given in total secrecy. All of the confession sessions were held in a private room in the county jail. Rather than employing the services of a court reporter, the task force brought in a private stenographer. All aspects of the resulting confessions were tailored to conform to the state's version of events. Bob confessed to precisely six murders, which was the official tally. No new names appeared in the confessions. Bob claimed that he disposed of the bodies in the trash, not at the farms that he frequently visited. He denied having any links to any satanic groups. He took sole responsibility for all of the crimes. He quashed the recurrent rumors of police involvement. He claimed that a torture log that did not match up with any of the six official victims referred to experiments he had performed on a stray dog. And, most provocatively, he explained away a specific reference in one of his logs to Lt. Col. Oliver North. His claim was as follows: "We just had the TV on, and apparently something about Ollie North came on." There is no indication that Berdella felt compelled at any other time to dutifully record in his logs what was transpiring on the television.

---

31 It will be recalled that Henry Lee Lucas claimed that the upper echelons of the cult that he was involved with included men of wealth and power. Berkowitz has made the same claims of the 'Son of Sam' cult. Journalist Maury Terry has uncovered evidence suggesting the involvement of such figures as high-rolling art dealer Andrew Crispo and would-be *Cotton Club* producer Roy Radin. Crispo admitted to being present at the scene of a ritual homicide, accompanied by the son of a UN executive, but he denied participating in the grisly murder. Radin, on the other hand, became a victim of one of the cult's ritual executions. He was shot repeatedly in the head with a shotgun by three of magazine publisher Larry Flynt's former bodyguards. One of them was Manson associate Bill Mentzer.

Berdella ultimately received two life sentences and two conditional life sentences. They would prove to be very short life sentences. He served only a few years at a maximum-security facility before he died, officially of a heart attack. Many suspect the true cause of death was poisoning. Bob Berdella was just forty-three.

* * * * *

Gary Heidnik was born in 1943 to a father who was described as a strict disciplinarian. In the ninth grade, Gary enrolled at the prestigious Staunton Military Academy in Virginia. In 1961, he joined the Army and was, as previously noted, sent for medic training and then assigned to a field hospital in West Germany. After three months there, he went on sick call and was given Stelazine, a powerful tranquilizer normally used to treat severely psychotic states. Records do not indicate that Gary was suffering from such a condition at that time.

In January 1963, Heidnik was honorably discharged with a service-related mental disability. Not long after that, he earned a degree as a licensed practical nurse and then began training as a psychiatric nurse at a VA hospital. Over the next two-and-a-half decades, he would be hospitalized as a psychiatric patient at least twenty-five times, and he would attempt suicide at least seventeen times. And those figures are far from complete, since there is an unexplained six-year gap in Gary's medical records.

On Halloween night, 1966, Heidnik drove his motorcycle into a head-on collision. Four years later, his mother succeeded in doing what Gary and his brother Terry had failed at repeatedly: she killed herself.

In the spring of 1971, Gary paid a visit to Malibu, California. It is unclear what the purpose of that trip was, but just after returning to Philadelphia Heidnik decided to start his own church. On October 12, 1971, the birth date of Aleister Crowley, the United Church of the Ministers of God was formally incorporated. Gary and Terry Heidnik were both founding members. Most of the initial members of the congregation were institutionalized black women whom the state had labeled 'retarded.' At that same time, elsewhere in the country, Jim Jones was getting his church up and running as well—and he was going about it the same way: by recruiting institutionalized black women.

In September 1972, Heidnik was released from one of his numerous stays in institutions. From that point forward, there is a six-year gap in Gary's records. Very little can be discerned of his activities during that time period. No one, including Heidnik, can account for most of that six-year span. It is almost as if Gary Heidnik ceased to exist for an extended period of time, and then he reappeared. All that is known is that in 1975, on the vernal equinox, 'Bishop' Heidnik

opened a tax-free Merrill Lynch account on behalf of his church with an initial deposit of $1,500. It was not long before that account was valued at an astounding $545,000. In 1976, Heidnik reportedly fired a gun at an unidentified man. The bullet grazed the victim's face. Gary was charged only with aggravated assault and carrying a gun without a license, although assault with a deadly weapon and attempted murder would have been more appropriate charges. After one week, the charges were dropped entirely.

Heidnik was not heard from again until 1978. It was at that time that he came up with the idea of checking a girl out of an institution and chaining her in his basement, where he could repeatedly torture and rape her. Gary was caught in fairly short order and charged with an array of crimes, including kidnapping, rape, false imprisonment, unlawful restraint, involuntary deviate sexual intercourse, interfering with the custody of a committed person, and recklessly endangering another person. In November 1978, Gary waived his right to a jury trial and placed his fate in the hands of the judge. It proved to be a wise decision. The judge dropped all the felony counts after determining that the victim was too 'retarded' to testify. Heidnik was found guilty only of various misdemeanor charges. He received a 3–7 year prison sentence, but never set foot in an actual prison. Instead, he spent four-and-a-half years institutionalized at various hospitals and was set free on April 12, 1983. By 1986, his church was thriving and he had a steady flow of women passing through his home. On November 26, 1986, one of them, Josefina Rivera, found herself imprisoned in Heidnik's basement.

Three days later, Sandra Lindsay joined Rivera in the basement. Lindsay had known Gary since the two had been institutionalized together at the Elwyn Institute, where she had been formally classified as 'mildly retarded.' Lindsay's family knew Heidnik as well, and they knew a man named Tony Brown, who sometimes lived at Gary's house. Brown was a regular visitor to the Lindsay home. Heidnik and Brown reportedly shared a number of girlfriends.

Sandra's mother reported her daughter's disappearance and she gave the investigating officers Heidnik's name, address and telephone number. Little effort was made to contact him. In his basement, Sandra was subjected to all manner of physical and psychological torture. Gary's prisoners were either not fed at all or they were fed dog food. That was later supplemented with the ground flesh of the prisoners who did not survive their ordeal. Survivors were given a choice between starvation and cannibalism. They were repeatedly raped by their captor and forced to sexually assault each other. They were kept chained at all times, sometimes in a manner that forced them to remain in an awkward standing position for hours. They were tortured with electric shocks. On occasion, they were forced into a covered pit. Their eardrums were gouged with a screwdriver to prevent them from hearing when their captor came and went from the house.

On the winter solstice of 1986, Gary added Lisa Thomas to his collection. Deborah Dudley was added as well, around the same time. Heidnik by then had several women chained in his basement, and yet, throughout the time that he was collecting his sex slaves, he continued to have consensual sexual encounters with other women, some of whom he regularly brought to his home. One of those women later said that Josefina Rivera sometimes accompanied Gary on his dates, and *appeared* to do so voluntarily.

In January 1987, Heidnik appeared in court, acting as his own attorney, to answer charges that he had fallen behind on support payments to his ex-wife. The previous January, following attacks on his estranged wife, Gary had been charged by the DA's office with spousal rape, involuntary deviate sexual intercourse and indecent assault. Those charges were all dismissed.

On February 7, 1987, one of Heidnik's sex-slaves-in-training, Sandra Lindsay, died. Shortly afterwards, the remaining prisoners heard the sounds of a power saw and an industrial food processor that Gary had rushed out to buy. He reportedly ground up some parts of Lindsay's corpse and cooked others. His remaining captives wisely began to work out an escape plan, but Rivera tipped Heidnik off and the plan was foiled. Three days after Sandra's death, neighbors became concerned about the stench of burning flesh emanating from Heidnik's home. The police were called and quickly discovered that it was impossible to see into the home and difficult to gain entry. The shades were all drawn tight and rips in them had been carefully and thoroughly duct taped. A security steel door had been installed and all the home's windows were heavily barred. Neighbors demanded that the responding officer knock down the door and search the residence, but he declined to do so. It does not appear that there was any follow-up investigation after that initial visit to the house.

About five weeks later, Gary lost another of his prisoners: Deborah Dudley was electrocuted while immersed in the water-filled pit. Around that same time, Josefina Rivera began going out with Gary to troll for replacement sex slaves. On March 23, just after the spring equinox, the two of them abducted Agnes Adams. The next day the prisoners broke free, looking very much like they had just emerged from a prisoner-of-war camp. Heidnik was promptly arrested, along with Tony Brown, who was initially charged as an accomplice. Gary was taken to the Philadelphia Detention Center and held in isolation, cut off from contact with other inmates. Brown was the first to relate to detectives the morbid details of the crimes. He claimed that he had seen Heidnik cutting up and raping a corpse. The freezer in the house was partially filled with human body parts. Human bones were found in the yard, cut up with a saw—just as Lake and Berdella had done. Also discovered in the home, not surprisingly, was a large cache of Thorazine.

Investigators soon discovered that Heidnik had considerable financial resources. In addition to his church's investment account, valued at well over $500,000, he had at least one personal account with a substantial balance. He also had a new, fully-loaded Cadillac, a Rolls Royce, a Dodge van and a Dodge Dart. When taken into custody, he had $2,000 cash in his pocket.

Heidnik's preliminary hearing began in April 1987. The prosecution team was led by Ronald Castille, a former Marine platoon commander in Vietnam. Heidnik was charged with an array of crimes, including murder, kidnapping, rape, aggravated assault, involuntary deviate sexual intercourse, indecent exposure, false imprisonment, unlawful restraint, simple assault, recklessly endangering another person, indecent assault, criminal solicitation, and possession and abuse of a corpse. Gary's victims were called to offer their testimony at the preliminary proceedings. Josefina Rivera reportedly spoke in a detached, flat, emotionless voice. The other women testified that Rivera frequently beat them, even when Gary was not there, and seemed to enjoy doing so. She was referred to as the "boss of the basement."

On April 6, victim Lisa Thomas filed a civil petition asking for the assets of Heidnik's church to be frozen and a conservator appointed pending resolution of a civil suit brought against Heidnik by the victims. The church's assets were frozen, but the judge opted to hold off for two weeks on appointing the conservator, who was appointed on April 20. Two hours before that appointment, however, Heidnik filed for Chapter 11 bankruptcy protection. Eight days later, federal courts claimed jurisdiction over the assets case. Strangely, Heidnik's will specified that those assets should go to the Veteran's Administration and the Peace Corps.

On May 1, Tony Brown was quietly released from custody. Two weeks after Heidnik's trial concluded, all charges against him were dropped and authorities thereafter pretended as though he had never been named as an accomplice.

On August 9, 1987, police raided a local apartment and made a gruesome discovery. The remains of five women were found in a bedroom that had been nailed shut. Another body was found in a closet that had also been nailed shut. Parts of a seventh body were found on the roof of the building and in the basement of a neighboring building. A 'retarded' black man named Harrison "Marty" Graham was taken into custody and dubbed the "Madman of Marshall Street." He confessed that his killings had begun the previous winter, about the time that Gary began collecting his victims. Graham also confessed to having committed acts of necrophilia. Officials denied that there were any connections between the Heidnik and Graham cases. Their homes were less than two miles apart.

Chuck Peruto was assigned as Heidnik's defense counsel. Trial watchers noted that he had a penchant for young, shapely women. Lynne Abraham was

the presiding judge. She had previously worked for District Attorney Arlen Specter, most notable for concocting the 'single bullet theory' to explain the Kennedy assassination. She had also worked for HUD and for Mayor Frank Rizzo's Redevelopment Authority before being elevated to the bench. During her tenure as a prosecutor, Abraham had been known to surprise the city's medical examiners by showing up to view autopsies, for reasons best known only to her. During the opening phase of Heidnik's trial, she distinguished herself by repeatedly interrupting the questioning of potential jurors. Even so, the jury was seated in just one-and-a-half days, a notable feat for such a high-profile case.

Gary was kept heavily dosed with Thorazine throughout the trial. He sat at the defense table staring straight ahead, saying nothing and, by all appearances, hearing and seeing nothing. He was described by trial watchers as nearly catatonic. His fitness to stand trial and participate in his own defense was apparently never questioned. His attorney's opening statement would have been remarkable were it not for the fact that it was virtually the same opening statement that has been offered by so many other serial killer advocates: "The judge said something this morning about people being innocent until proven guilty. My client is not innocent. He is very, very guilty."

All testimony concerning the medical treatment that Heidnik received while in the military in Germany was disallowed. The jury never saw the documentation of Gary's unwitting participation in military LSD experiments. The jury never heard that only 1 in 79,000 military veterans who apply for benefits due to a mental disability get a 100% disability rating and are awarded benefits for life. Heidnik had received such a deal, and *he had not even filed for it*. A man named Jack Apshe—a former helicopter door-gunner in Vietnam turned psychologist specializing in records research—arrived in court with extensive, meticulously organized records of Heidnik's psychiatric history (minus the six years for which no records exist). Virtually all of Apshe's well-documented evidence was disallowed. The ruling by the judge to disallow the introduction of that evidence was a most unusual one, however, in that it seemed to bar only the defense from introducing the material, but not the prosecution or the judge herself. The state was allowed to pick and choose which documents it wanted entered into evidence, and Judge Abraham even handpicked some of the documents and read them into the record.

The judge also disallowed all questions pertaining to the possible involvement of Tony Brown. What she did allow introduced into evidence was Heidnik's past criminal record. While that would normally be inadmissible, Abraham allowed it in through a back-door route: the testimony of his former captives to whom he had bragged of his past exploits. He had also told them that he had killed six

women in all, though no other victims were ever identified. The picture of Josefina Rivera that emerged at trial was of a mind-controlled accomplice to Gary. Victim Agnes Adams testified that she had seen Josefina working the streets two weeks before her own capture, which occurred several weeks after Rivera had been imprisoned. Rivera herself admitted on the stand that there were times when she was left unsupervised and could have escaped. The other victims named her along with Heidnik in the civil suits that were filed.

A Dr. Clancy MacKenzie was called as a witness for the defense, but his testimony certainly did not benefit the defendant. Peruto went so far as to label his own witness a "flake" in comments that appeared in print. He did not bother though to explain why it was he who had called that flake to the stand.

Following the feeble attempt to mount a defense, the jury was sequestered to begin deliberations. Strangely, a gag order that had been issued early on, purportedly so as not to contaminate the jury, remained in effect. The jury returned guilty verdicts on two counts of murder and multiple counts of rape, kidnapping, aggravated assault, and involuntary deviate sexual intercourse. During the penalty phase that followed, not a single defense witnesses was called. Peruto's closing argument, with his client's life on the line, lasted just four minutes. Two death sentences were delivered after less than two hours of deliberations.

A psychiatric report prepared after the trial stated: "From Gary Heidnik's history it was clear that his first psychosis was facilitated by a near lethal dose of hallucinogenic substance given to him while he was in Germany in the military." The same report noted, "Heidnik's recall of the four months with the women is very hazy and dream-like." Whether such information would have influenced the jury, whose members likely had no awareness of the implications of the MK-ULTRA projects in which Heidnik was verifiably involved, is largely a matter of speculation. One of those jurors was, oddly enough, a research chemist with PPG Industries.

* * * * *

Jeffrey Dahmer was born in 1960, the son of a research chemist with PPG Industries. Father Lionel Dahmer, Ph.D.—who admitted that he, as a boy, had been fascinated with fire and the art of bomb making—recalled that at thirteen he had wanted to hypnotize a girl so that he "could control her entirely." Lionel Dahmer also said that Jeffrey had been molested at the age of eight, purportedly by a neighborhood boy. By the age of ten, Jeff was experimenting with dead animals and learning to use acid to dispose of the bodies. In 1975, three neighborhood

kids found a mutilated dog in the woods behind the Dahmer home, its decapitated, gutted carcass hanging from a tree. A cross of sticks was nearby.

Three years later, while on a senior class trip to Washington, D.C., Jeffrey Dahmer made a call from a payphone and then announced to his high school classmates that he had secured them an appointment to visit the office of the vice-president of the United States. Though his friends naturally were skeptical, Jeffrey did indeed lead them on a tour of Walter Mondale's office, followed by a visit to the office of prominent writer Art Buchwald. It has never been explained how the aspiring serial killer had established such impressive contacts in Washington. And it has never been revealed who it was that Dahmer called that day to arrange the impromptu private tours.

A girl who dated Jeffrey briefly during their senior year recalled one date during which a séance was conducted at the Dahmer home. Someone in the group had suggested that it might be a good idea to try to contact Satan. The girl made a hasty exit from the house. Just after Jeffrey's graduation, in 1978, his parents filed for divorce, both of them accusing the other of extreme cruelty. Jeffrey later claimed that he killed for the first time that summer, but no evidence was ever produced to support that claim. The identity of the purported victim was determined by having Dahmer choose from a collection of photographs of boys who had been reported missing around that time.

Jeff enrolled at Ohio State University but attended for just one quarter before being taken to a military recruiter by his father. He began his military career on January 12, 1979. Like Heidnik, Dahmer sought training as a military policeman but was instead trained as a medic. He completed his training on the summer solstice and he was then assigned to a West German military hospital. Dahmer was processed out of the service at Fort Jackson, South Carolina on March 26, 1981. His release came early, allegedly due to chronic alcoholism, but it was an honorable discharge with full benefits.

Jeffrey next surfaced in Miami, Florida, where he briefly stayed before moving back home and in with his father and stepmother. In October 1981, he was arrested for disorderly conduct, possession of an open container of alcohol and resisting arrest. He paid a $60.00 fine and was sent on his way. Shortly after that, he moved in with his paternal grandmother. In 1982, he was arrested for indecent exposure. He again paid a nominal fine. In January 1985, he began working at the Ambrosia Chocolate Company. At about that same time, he began regularly visiting Milwaukee's gay bars and bathhouses, experimenting on unsuspecting victims with surreptitious druggings. The Club Bath Milwaukee was a favored lab for his field experiments. The bathhouse owners were well aware of Jeffrey's activities, but little if anything was done to curtail them.

In March 1987, Dahmer was again arrested for indecent exposure, after masturbating in front of two young boys. He paid $42 in court costs and was given a one-year suspended sentence, from which he was released in March 1988. At that time, Dahmer was still living with his grandmother. It was in her basement that he allegedly began dismembering and dissolving bodies. His first victim was purportedly killed in a hotel and then brought back to grandma's house in a suitcase transported by taxi. The body of his second victim was allegedly allowed to ripen in her basement for a week. The odor, needless to say, would have been unbearable. Nevertheless, it was claimed that grandma had no idea what Jeffrey was up to in the basement.

In September 1988, Dahmer got his own apartment, which soon became one of America's most infamous death houses. That very same month he was accused of molesting a young boy. The following May he was convicted of second-degree sexual assault. Despite an appeal to the court by Lionel Dahmer, Jeffrey received a three-year sentence. He served just ten months in a minimum-security facility on a work release program that allowed him to continue working at the chocolate factory. He reportedly kept a mummified head and genitals in his work locker during that time. On Thanksgiving, Dahmer was given a rare gift: twelve hours of freedom. He returned late and visibly intoxicated, with no repercussions.

In early 1990, Dahmer was released on parole. He remained on parole throughout his killing spree, but no one ever visited his home to check up on him.[32] That would later become the basis of a lawsuit filed by the survivors of some of Dahmer's victims. The suit plausibly contended that a routine visit would have saved countless lives. Before Jeffrey's parole records were made public, they were, in the words of chronicler Don Davis, "well vacuumed" and "mostly blanked out." The Wisconsin Department of Corrections ordered Dahmer's parole officer, Donna Chester, not to talk to the press.

In July 1990, Dahmer hit a fifteen-year-old boy over the head with a rubber mallet and then attempted to strangle him. Following the attack, he then inexplicably called the kid a taxi and sent him on his way. The victim was taken to a medical center where he gave police an address and a description of his assailant. No one bothered to investigate the incident. At about that same time, Jeffrey acquired a 57-gallon drum of acid, which he purportedly brought home in a taxi (he never owned a car) and muscled up to his apartment by himself. Two men and a moving dolly were required to remove the drum.

---

32 Dahmer's situation was not a unique one; Ed Kemper was supposed to have regular contact with both a parole officer and a social worker throughout his killing spree, but he never contacted either of them and no one was ever sent to check on him.

In May 1991, a fourteen-year-old boy was seen fleeing Dahmer's apartment by two young women who called the police to report the incident. The boy was naked, bleeding and drugged into a near-stupor. The responding officers chose to believe Dahmer's tale of a lover's quarrel, even though the witnesses, who were still on the scene, angrily informed them that they had seen the terror-stricken boy actively resisting Dahmer's efforts to restrain him, and despite the fact that the victim was clearly a minor. The witnesses claimed that the officers told them go away and refused to take their names. They opted not to run a routine background check on the possible suspect, which would have revealed that Dahmer was a convicted child molester who was still on parole from his previous molestation conviction. The victim of that previous molestation was the *brother* of the bleeding, terrified young boy in front of Jeffrey Dahmer's apartment.

Amazingly enough, the three officers on the scene claimed that they actually accompanied the pair back to Dahmer's apartment and noticed nothing amiss there. That was in spite of the fact that there was a three-day-old rotting corpse lying on the bed, with the attendant smell of death permeating the apartment. There was also an abundance of morbid artifacts and photos lying about the home. Nevertheless, the officers purportedly saw nothing wrong and left the scene with the victim still in Dahmer's custody. As soon as they left, Dahmer killed the boy and then raped and disemboweled the corpse. The mother of one of the two witnesses called the police after reading a newspaper account of a missing boy who closely resembled the naked young man, but her concerns were dismissed. She then contacted the local FBI office, but she was rebuffed there as well. The woman claimed that she was instructed not to talk to the press.

Dahmer's last intended victim was Tracy Edwards, a thirty-one-year-old father of six. Edwards had recently jumped bail in Mississippi on charges of sexually battering a thirteen-year-old girl. He escaped from his would-be abductor and went to authorities with a description of the assailant and his rancid smelling apartment. Edwards told police that he had seen Dahmer undergo a sudden, radical transformation: "His face was completely changed. I wouldn't have recognized him. It was as if the devil himself stood in front of me." The apartment, he said, was filled with photos of male torsos.

It was filled with considerably more than that. There were bloodstains on the bed. There was an extensive collection of photos depicting bodies in various stages of dismemberment. Four intact heads were found, one in the refrigerator and three in a freezer. Another freezer was filled with wrapped, unmarked meat and a human heart. A file drawer was filled with bones. The barrel of acid was brimming with miscellaneous body parts. One kettle was filled with skulls and another contained severed hands and penises. Seven skulls in all were found. Gruesome photo albums were scattered about the house.

Dahmer was initially charged with four counts of murder, and his bail was set at $1,000,000. Prosecutors soon added eight additional murder counts and raised the bail amount to $5,000,000. Another three counts were then added, although there were no body parts or photos to support the additional charges. Prosecutors claimed that one photo album had been destroyed. They also claimed that the bodies of the victims depicted in that particular album had been, conveniently enough, tossed out with the trash.

Jeffrey's trial began in January 1992. His attorney, Gerald Boyle, who had previously set his sights on becoming the city's District Attorney, had waived his client's right to a preliminary trial. Boyle had also allowed his client to give detailed confessions to his crimes during lengthy interrogations. Dahmer entered a plea of guilty but insane. He was given a 937-year prison sentence. By the end of the year, his apartment building had been destroyed. The three police officers who had, unknowingly or otherwise, aided and abetted the serial killer were cleared of any wrongdoing.

There were, inevitably, questions that were left unanswered by the trial. Two of the victims had been abducted from Chicago, and Dahmer did not own or have the use of a car. How were those victims transported? The remains of some victims were never found. Were their bodies really disposed of in the trash? And if so, why did Dahmer choose to dispose of only a select few bodies? Some aspects of Jeffrey's confessions were completely unsupported by the evidence. To what extent did Dahmer's interrogators shape those confessions? One victim's grandmother reported receiving several phone calls during which she heard groaning, choking and faint cries of "help me, help me, help me." Those calls came a few weeks after the disappearance of her grandson. Was he kept alive for an extended period of time?

Dahmer, like all collectors, was obsessed with gaining control over his victims. His preferred means of doing so, and of disposing of the bodies that accumulated from his failed experiments, was through the use of chemicals—an interest that was acquired, perhaps, from his research chemist father. Jeff was reportedly working on perfecting a home lobotomy procedure that involved drilling a hole in the victim's forehead and then injecting various combinations of chemicals.

Dahmer has been described as a 'dabbler' in Satanism, but it is likely that he was more than just a dabbler. In his apartment, he had a detailed plan for constructing a satanic altar. The plan incorporated the human skulls and other artifacts that he had been collecting. He told authorities that he believed that by constructing the altar, and by consuming the flesh of his victims, he would be infused with "special powers and energies" that would help him to succeed socially and financially. Oddly enough, in March 1999 the brother of one of

Dahmer's victims was found stabbed to death. Police described the young man's death as a ritual sacrifice.

Dahmer served just two years of his prison sentence before he was inexplicably paired with two homicidal inmates on an unsupervised work detail. Only one of the three made it through the day. It was not, needless to say, Jeffrey Dahmer. After his death, Lionel Dahmer waged a macabre battle with Jeff's mother over preserving his brain for study.

* * * * *

As a child, Herb Baumeister reportedly never showed any emotion, even when his father became physical, which apparently happened quite frequently. Herb Baumeister, Sr. had served in WWII, after which he graduated from Indiana University's School of Medicine and began work as an anesthesiologist. His son and namesake initially set out to follow in his father's academic footsteps, by enrolling in college as an anatomy major. Unlike his father, however, Herb, Jr. dropped out of school. He then married Juliana Saiter, the daughter of a superintendent at the Naval Air Warfare Center. Herb and Juliana were both members of the Young Republicans, as was Ted Bundy.

Not long after the marriage, Herb's father had his newlywed son committed to Larue D. Carter Memorial Hospital, a state-run mental hospital. The Carter facility catered to patients with serious mental impairments, yet there is no indication that Herb was, at that time, seriously impaired. And if he had been, his father was an extremely wealthy man who could have easily afforded to get his son private care. Herb, Sr.'s choice of facilities, therefore, was a rather odd one. Long before the confinement at Carter, Herb, Sr. had reportedly secreted his young son off to be administered 'mental examinations.'

Herb was released from the Carter facility after two months. His diagnosis noted that he exhibited two or more distinct personalities. Following his confinement, Baumeister took a job at the *Indianapolis Star.* The position that he took at the newspaper was known to be regularly filled by the sons and daughters of the wealthy and powerful. Herb's next job, driving a hearse, provided him with his requisite 'blooding.' Herb, Sr. then once again pulled some strings to land Herb, Jr. a position with the Bureau of Motor Vehicles, where one of his duties was serving as the Bureau's liaison to the Indiana state police.

Herb left the Bureau in 1985 and thereafter remained unemployed while wife Juliana occupied her time doing volunteer work. In 1986, warrants were issued for Herb's arrest on charges of theft and conspiracy to commit theft. True to form, Baumeister opted to waive his right to a jury trial and place his fate in the

hands of a judge. The bench trial, such as it was, was over in just one day; Herb was found not guilty on all counts.

By that time, the Baumeisters had been living quite well for an extended period of time, even though neither of them was gainfully employed. Herb then decided that the time was right to start up his own business. With a $350,000 loan from his mother, he opened a thrift store. In 1988, in conjunction with the Children's Bureau of Indianapolis, he founded Thrift Management, Inc. Herb's close association with the Children's Bureau—which primarily catered to orphans, the type of victims who aren't likely to be missed—hints at the possibility that his thrift store business was a cover for more profitable, and nefarious, business pursuits.

By 1990, Herb's company was growing rapidly and a second Sav-A-Lot outlet opened its doors for business. To staff his stores, Herb assembled a workforce of attractive, young, male employees—just as John Gacy had done. By all outward appearances, things were going quite well for the Baumeisters. In November 1991, Herb, Juliana and their three kids moved into a new home: a four-bedroom, five-bathroom estate with an indoor pool situated on 18.5 acres. Known as 'Fox Hollow Farm,' the property also featured a barn and horse stables. The family maintained a second home as well, and also had access to a condominium on Lake Wawasee owned by Herb's mother.

Three years after moving to Fox Hollow Farm, thirteen-year-old Erich Baumeister discovered a skeleton in the backyard. He dutifully reported his find to his mother, but Julie told no one, including the police, of her son's discovery. By that time, young gay men and male prostitutes in the Indianapolis area[33] had been disappearing for a very long time. From about 1980 on, their bodies began surfacing in Indiana and western Ohio. Many were strangled and deposited along Ohio's Interstate 70. One victim had his arms, legs and head severed and his torso completely drained of blood. The severed parts were never recovered. Four bodies were found clustered together on October 14, 1983, in what was described as a private graveyard. A nearby barn was found to contain both a pentagram and an inverted cross.

In the mid-1980s, a man from Terre Haute, Indiana named Larry Eyler confessed to kidnapping, torturing and murdering as many as twenty-three of the victims. The second victim that he took credit for killing disappeared on the eve of Halloween, 1982; the sixth went missing on the spring equinox of 1983. Eyler claimed that for six of the torture murders, he worked with accomplices. Among the accomplices he fingered was Robert David Little, a professor at Indiana State

33 Indianapolis, interestingly enough, is where the Reverend Jim Jones launched the first incarnation of his People's Temple and gathered his first recruits.

University and the former head of the Terre Haute chapter of the ACLU. Little and Eyler had lived together since 1975.

In May 1983, a task force was formed. The following month, dozens of law enforcement officials gathered for a summit to review the case. The task force made little progress, however, until an anonymous tipster turned in Eyler. From that point on, Eyler was purportedly under constant surveillance, but the disappearances and killings continued.

Eyler had previously been arrested in August 1978 after attacking and stabbing a hitchhiker, who he then left for dead. When taken into custody, Eyler was in possession of a sword, three knives and a canister of tear gas. He was charged with attempted murder and his bond was initially set at $50,000. After one day, his bail was lowered to $10,000, allowing his friends to free him. Eyler's attorney paid off the victim with a check for $2,500 and all charges were dropped. On November 13, the presiding judge dismissed the case and ordered Eyler to pay just $43 in court costs. Three years later, in 1981, Eyler was again arrested, for drugging a fourteen-year-old boy and then dumping his unconscious body. It is unclear how that case was disposed of.

When Eyler was arrested on suspicion of involvement in the I-70 murders, officers reportedly found a bloodstained knife in his truck. The boots that he was wearing, which were also bloodstained, matched plaster casts of boot-prints taken from one of the crime scenes. The tires on his truck also matched plaster casts of tracks present at one of the murder scenes. As legal counsel, Eyler retained David Schippers, who later achieved notoriety as the Democratic attorney who presented the Republican-controlled House Judiciary Committee's legally specious case for the impeachment of President Clinton, and who later still achieved yet more notoriety by raising his voice to question limited aspects of the official September 11 story.

In the Eyler case, Schippers promptly filed a motion to suppress all evidence seized in the case. His motion was granted and the state's case against his client essentially evaporated. Eyler was freed and he immediately packed up and moved to John Gacy's Chicago, where he was later seen dumping trash bags filled with body parts into the trash bin of an apartment building. He was described as having a "glassy" look in his eyes as he went about his task. In addition to his fingerprints on the trash bags, investigators who searched his apartment found bloodstains, a hacksaw, more trash bags, and a T-shirt belonging to the dismembered victim. Schippers opted not to represent Eyler again, but he did serve as an adviser to the defense team.

Eyler was convicted and, on October 3, 1986, sentenced to death. Four years later, he fingered Professor Robert David Little as the mastermind behind the killings. He also claimed that the professor had photographed the sadistic murders

in progress. Eyler was administered a polygraph examination, which he reportedly passed. Search warrants were served at the home that Little had shared with Eyler as well as at Little's University office. A number of videotapes and photographs were seized. Seized phone records revealed that Eyler had established a pattern of making late-night telephone calls to the house from various locations, though it is unclear if those locations corresponded to the locations of the disappearances. Little was indicted, brought to trial, and then acquitted on April 17, 1991. Eyler though continued to supply information to investigators, who were attempting to build a case against Little and other accomplices. Those efforts came to an abrupt end in March 1994, when Eyler died, reportedly from AIDS.

Many of his victims disappeared from the very same two-square-mile section of Indianapolis, peppered with gay bars, that served as Herb's hunting grounds. Like Eyler, who was supplied by a doctor with Placidyl to drug his victims, Herb had ready access to drugs, thanks to his father's prescription pads. Herb had also been to Ohio dozens of times in the late 1980s and early 1990s.

Police first approached Herb and Julie to question them about the disappearances in November 1995. Herb immediately retained an attorney: James Voyles, the lawyer who a few years before had won an acquittal for Robert David Little. In May 1996, the Children's Bureau terminated its contract with Herb and began publicly distancing itself from his operation, purportedly because the Sav-A-Lot stores were in financial trouble. On June 20, Herb informed his wife that he was taking the kids for physical examinations and then enrolling them in a summer program at the Culver Military Academy—where aspiring serial killer Doug Clark once resided. Julie had other plans, however, and on June 23 she consented to a police search of the property.

When the search began the next day, Herb was away at the lake house with his son Erich. Investigators almost immediately discovered human bones and bone fragments on the property. They were not hard to find, since they were scattered about in plain sight—and there were literally thousands of them. Even though indications were that this was a multiple homicide case, it was assigned to Detective Sergeant Kenneth Whisman, who had never handled a homicide case. Police promptly, and rather ridiculously, claimed that they were days, if not weeks, away from being ready to question Herb Baumeister.

The majority of the bones found at Fox Hollow Farm had been burned, crushed and scattered, making identification nearly impossible. It was not possible to even estimate the number of victims, though it was determined that there were no less than eleven. More than 6,000 bones and bone fragments were recovered. Strangely though, no skulls were ever found. Although the site where the bodies had been burned, readily identifiable by the scorched ground, was in clear view of the home's kitchen window, Julie Baumeister swore that she knew nothing about

the murders. Neighbors, however, questioned how the avid gardener, who spent a good deal of time in her yard, could have been unaware of thousands of bones, many of them visible to the naked eye.

Julie Baumeister told police investigators that her husband was an avid videographer who maintained a private collection of hundreds of tapes. When she led them to the storage closet where the tapes were normally kept, however, all of them had suddenly gone missing. Investigators noted that a vent in the wall appeared to have been used to hide a video camera for surreptitious filming. A witness who had been taken to Fox Hollow Farm by Herb, and whose tips had led to the initial questioning of the Baumeisters, reported seeing a closet filled with professional video equipment, including cameras, lenses, tripods, and lighting equipment. No such equipment was found during the search. Police seized only ten items from the house; five of those items were videotapes.

Two days after the search of the property began, Julie Baumeister obtained an emergency order for temporary custody of her son, Erich. Officers were dispatched to the lake house where Herb was staying and the child was brought back. Despite the fact that authorities had already spent two full days excavating Baumeister's eighteen-acre graveyard, he was not questioned about the discoveries on his property. As soon as the officers left with Erich, Herb promptly disappeared, which did not seem to concern police investigators. Over the next few days, searchers discovered a drainage ditch on the property that contained an abundance of large bones, but still no skulls. Whisman still insisted that there was not enough evidence to issue a warrant for Baumeister's arrest.

On July 2, a Canadian police officer found Herb sleeping in his car near Ontario Park. The officer observed a number of items in the car, including an overnight bag, envelopes, newspapers, piles of other, unidentified papers, and what appeared to be videotapes. The next day, police again found Herb. This time he was in the park by the water's edge, with a .357 magnum bullet hole in his head. His car had been emptied of all personal items. A search of the area yielded no evidence that Herb had disposed of any of the items that had been in his possession just the night before. None of his possessions were ever recovered or accounted for. What was said to be a suicide note was found. It was addressed, rather bizarrely, "Attention Canadian Authorities."

Around that same time, Baumeister's older brother Brad was found floating in a hot tub in Texas. Brad's death remains an unsolved mystery. Perhaps the Baumeister family just had a run of bad luck.

The day after Herb Baumeister's body was discovered in a park, it was autopsied by Canadian authorities, who promptly announced that the autopsy report would not be ready for release for "about a year." Since some of the I-70 murders remained unsolved, Indianapolis officials were under intense pressure

to investigate any possible connections to the Baumeister case. Police had two key pieces of physical evidence that had been gathered from the scenes of the unsolved killings: a semen sample and a palm print. The semen sample, however, just sort of disappeared. With only the palm print remaining, a technician was duly dispatched to obtain a print from Herb's corpse, still in the custody of Canadian officials.

What followed, purportedly, was a ridiculous series of errors. The technician purportedly returned from Canada with a print that was unusable. The official story holds that the print simply "didn't take," but it was never explained why the technician got all the way back to the States before realizing that. He was sent back to try again, and once again returned with a print that 'didn't take.' Not to be deterred, the technician was sent back a third time, only to find that the corpse had been cremated, destroying the last chance that authorities had to definitively tie Herb to the I-70 murders with hard physical evidence. Why officials would have repeatedly sent the same obviously incompetent technician has never been explained.

Through witness statements and circumstantial evidence, however, Baumeister was ultimately tied to at least one of the I-70 victims. No one, needless to say, ever stood trial for the unsolved I-70 killings, or for the mass murder that occurred at Fox Hollow Farm. Herb was posthumously declared solely responsible for the deaths of the four victims whose remains could be identified. All were local gay men who had been reported missing. They were just four of at least ten local men who had been reported missing after frequenting area gay bars over the previous three years. The police, and the local press, had consistently ignored and/or downplayed the disappearances.

The Herb Baumeister story would not be complete without the mention of a colorful character named Virgil Vandagriff, who played a prominent role in the Baumeister investigation. Vandagriff was a former sheriff turned private investigator. In the mid-1970s, he had been sent to the LAPD academy for hypnosis training. His father reportedly 'dabbled' in hypnosis as well. In 1977, not long after receiving that special training, Vandagriff worked on the case of Brett Kimberlin, the so-called Speedway Bomber. The very same Brett Kimberlin resurfaced in 1988, claiming that he had been vice-presidential nominee Dan Quayle's college drug supplier. Kimberlin was promptly put into solitary confinement and cut off from press access.

Vandagriff was hired by the families of two of the missing victims, both of whom felt that the police were doing next to nothing to find their sons. In August 1994, the aforementioned witness who survived a visit to Herb's house first talked to Vandagriff. He described Fox Hollow Farm and the strange man who had taken him there. One of Vandagriff's associates reportedly located Fox Hollow

based on the man's description. For unexplained reasons, the associate obtained aerial photographs of the property that he presented to the witness for identification. The witness, who of course had never seen the ranch from the air, was unable to ID the property from the photographs. As a result, there was a considerable delay in identifying Herb Baumeister as the prime suspect. Why Vandagriff's investigator did not present the witness with surveillance photos of the property from the perspective that he had actually viewed it is another of the lingering mysteries surrounding the Baumeister case.

In November 1997, Vandagriff's secretary, Connie Pierce, who had worked closely with the witness in the Baumeister case, died suddenly at the age of forty-six. In the spring of that same year, bones were still being uncovered at Fox Hollow Farm.

Chapter 17

Patsies and Assassins

"It has always been my theory that for every person arrested and charged with multiple homicide there are probably a good five more out there."

—Theodore Robert Bundy

In the dark and ugly netherworld where violent crime and covert operations collide, there appear to be two general categories into which a large majority of those we label 'serial killers' can be sorted: controlled assassins, and controlled patsies. In this chapter, we will look at what could be described as 'textbook cases' of both of these recurring archetypes.

We begin with the case of the man whom the *New York Times* referred to in December 2001 as "the first of America's modern serial killers": Albert Henry DeSalvo, otherwise known as the Boston Strangler. Nearly forty years after the infamous murders, and almost thirty after the purported killer was permanently silenced, it is now being acknowledged by some in the law enforcement community that DeSalvo was innocent. What is not acknowledged, even today, is that DeSalvo was deliberately framed to take the fall for the crimes. The story generally put forth by those who acknowledge DeSalvo's innocence is that he willingly confessed to crimes that he did not commit in the belief that he could make a good deal of money from his notoriety. The facts of the case, however, suggest otherwise.

At the other end of the spectrum are men like Arthur Shawcross, who began killing for the United States Army in 1968, the year after DeSalvo was convicted. It was nearly a quarter-century later before Shawcross was first convicted of homicide. There is little question that he was guilty of a number of violent crimes, first in the late 1960s, then again in the early 1970s, and yet again in the late 1980s. There is some question though as to whether Arthur was acting alone during his various murder sprees.

The third alleged serial killer profiled here is Danny Rolling, a man whose story has parallels to both Shawcross and DeSalvo.

* * * * *

Albert Henry DeSalvo, the purported Boston Strangler, ranks as one of the most infamous of all the serial killers, despite the inconvenient fact that, in the four decades since the notorious murders were committed, no one has been able to produce a shred of evidence indicating that DeSalvo ever killed anyone. The task of manufacturing a case against DeSalvo was largely led by a legendary attorney by the name of F. Lee Bailey,[34] who received a considerable amount of help from a cast of characters whose surnames should be familiar to any serious student of U.S. politics—names like McNamara, Donovan, Mellon, Moynihan and Bryan.

Frank DeSalvo, Albert's father, regularly beat his wife and kids with his fists, as well as with belts and a pipe. He once reportedly pulled a gun on his wife. Another time he reportedly broke her fingers one-by-one as her young son watched in horror. Frank was also fond of bringing prostitutes home and having his way with them in front of his children. On one rather noteworthy occasion, he actually sold his kids as slaves to a farmer in Maine. Though the details of that transaction remain murky, family friends and social workers have confirmed that the incident did occur. The boys' mother spent nearly six months searching for her sons.

Albert was first arrested in 1943, at the age of thirteen, for assault and battery with intent to commit robbery. He was sentenced to a reformatory, but his sentence was suspended. Later that same year he was again arrested on the same charge and again convicted. That time his sentence was enforced. He was paroled from the reformatory on October 26, 1944. Two years later, he wound up back again for making unlawful use of a car. Early in 1947, he was again paroled.

In September 1948, Albert was inducted into the U.S. Army. He was just seventeen years old and on parole, but Uncle Sam did not seem to mind. DeSalvo first served from September 16, 1948 to June 25, 1951, when he was honorably discharged. Strangely though, he re-enlisted the very next day and served from

34 A minor role was also played by San Francisco attorney Melvin Belli, with whom Bailey consulted on the case. It was not too many years later that Belli played his notorious role in the Zodiac case. He later became involved in the McMartin case, and then later conferred with Richard "The Night Stalker" Ramirez and considered representing him.

June 26, 1951 to February 15, 1956, when he was again honorably discharged. Much of that seven-and-a-half-year stretch was served in West Germany, where Gary Heidnik was subjected to MK-ULTRA experimentation not too many years later, and where Jeffrey Dahmer later served as well. While in Germany, Albert reportedly mastered the art of hand-to-hand combat and became a boxing champion.

On January 5, 1955, while still in the military, DeSalvo was arrested in New Jersey on suspicion of carnally abusing a nine-year-old girl. The case was never prosecuted. In March, he was arrested again, for loitering. For that offense, he was fined. Two years later, in the spring of 1957, Albert spent two months in a VA hospital, where he reportedly was treated for an unspecified problem with his left shoulder. In the early months of 1958, he was arrested repeatedly for the crime of breaking and entering. The first arrest was on January 8, the second on February 15, and the third on April 18. He was convicted all three times, and each time he received a suspended sentence.

Three years later, on March 17, 1961, DeSalvo was again arrested for breaking and entering. Once in custody, he reportedly began spontaneously confessing to a wave of notorious sexual assaults that had been dubbed the "Measuring Man" attacks. He was promptly sent to Westborough State Hospital for a psychiatric examination. On May 3, he went to trial on multiple counts of breaking and entering and assault and battery. He was convicted of the charges, but in a rather remarkable turn of events, the judge opted to sentence him to just two years for each offense, with all of the sentences to be served *concurrently*. Even more remarkably, that same judge later reduced the already bizarrely lenient sentence and in April 1962, Albert was released after serving less than one year for his multiple convictions. Two months later, a fifty-six-year-old Latvian immigrant named Anna Slesers became the first victim of the Boston Strangler.

Anna was strangled with her housecoat cord and had a gaping laceration to the back of her head. She had been sexually assaulted with an unidentified object and her apartment had been searched. As would be the case with all the murder scenes, there was no sign of forced entry, indicating that the killer(s) may very well have been known to the victims. Nina Nichols, age sixty-eight, was the second victim. Nichols was strangled with two nylon stockings. Helen Blake, sixty-five, was likewise strangled with two stockings on the very same day. Both women had dried blood in their ears and both suffered genital lacerations from a sexual assault.

Just a week-and-a-half later, on July 11, 1962, Margaret Davis was found dead in a hotel room. She had been manually strangled. Other than the victim's age, sixty, there was no indication that her death was connected to the deaths of the other women. Margaret had checked into the hotel with an unidentified man.

The couple had registered as Mr. and Mrs. Byron Spinney. Davis was also known to use the names Ethyl Johnson, Anne Cunningham, Winnie Hughes, and Tobey. Exactly what her business was with her male escort is largely a matter of speculation, but there is little doubt that that is what got her killed.

After a brief lull, the killings resumed on August 19. The victim was Ida Irga, who was strangled both manually and with a pillowcase. Like the earlier victims, Irga had genital injuries, but unlike the others, the seventy-five-year-old woman was left posed, her splayed legs facing the front door. Just two days later, Jane Sullivan was strangled and left partially submerged in her bathtub. She had two stockings around her neck and matted blood on her scalp. The sixty-seven-year-old was found on her knees with her posterior jutting out of the tub.

The next victim, Modeste Freeman, was found on October 13. She hardly fit the victim profile that had been previously established: Freeman was just thirty-seven and was the first black victim. She was both strangled and brutally bludgeoned, her head reduced to a bloody pulp. She was also the first victim found outdoors, in a yard. She had a wooden stick protruding from her vagina and an alarmingly high blood-alcohol level. Her body was nude when it was discovered. On December 5, the killer claimed his next victim—another black girl, this one just twenty years old. She was found with a stocking and a half-slip around her neck. There was no sign of genital injuries, but there was a semen stain on the rug. It was left by someone other than Albert DeSalvo.

By that time, the city of Boston was in a full-scale panic. The killings of the young black victims sent a clear signal that all women, regardless of age or ethnicity, were fair game. The demand for dogs, locks and guns skyrocketed.

Patricia Bissette was the next victim claimed by the Strangler, on December 31, 1962. Like the previous two victims, Bissette was young—just twenty-three—but like the earlier victims, she was white. She had a blouse and three stockings tied around her neck, and her bedcovers were discretely pulled up to her chin. She had had intercourse and showed signs of injury to her rectum. She was also carrying a one-month-old fetus. On March 6, 1963, Mary Brown became the next Strangler victim. Like the first batch of victims, Brown was in her sixties. Unlike the others, her death was attributed to bludgeoning, though she was also strangled and stabbed. She was found with degenerated sperm in her vagina and a kitchen utensil buried up to the handle in her left breast.

The next victim, killed on May 8, was stabbed seventeen times in and around her left breast in what was described as a ritual pattern. Beverly Samans was also slashed four times about her neck, around which a scarf and two nylon stockings were tied, though it was the knife wounds that killed her. There was no evidence of rape or sexual assault. After a four-month break, the purported Strangler struck again. The victim was Evelyn Corbin, whose age was listed as either fifty-one or

fifty-eight. She had two stockings around her neck and one around her left ankle. There was blood on the scene, including in both of the victim's ears. Semen was found in her mouth, and traces of dried semen were found elsewhere.

Two-and-a-half months later, twenty-three-year-old Joanne Graff was strangled with a leotard leg and two stockings. She had been raped and her vagina was lacerated and bloody. The final victim was Mary Sullivan, the youngest at just nineteen. She was killed on January 4, 1964. Her death scene was the most gruesome of them all. She had two scarves and a stocking around her neck and a broom handle protruding from her vagina. Her breasts had been mauled. She was posed in a sitting position on her bed with fresh semen dripping from her mouth. A macabre greeting card was propped up by her foot.

There were no further murders attributed to the Boston Strangler, even though Albert DeSalvo remained free for ten months after the death of Sullivan.

Two weeks after the discovery of Sullivan's body, Massachusetts Attorney General Edward Brooke took over the investigation of all fourteen murders, which had been being handled by five different city police departments and three district attorney's offices. Brooke assembled a task force and assigned Assistant Attorney General John Bottomly to lead it, even though Bottomly had no experience whatsoever with criminal law. Considering that the Strangler case was arguably the most high-profile criminal case in the state's history, it was a very unusual assignment.

Bottomly had been involved in 'telepathic' experiments conducted at NASA. Such experiments, it should be noted, were and are one of many covers used to veil various aspects of the intelligence community's MK-ULTRA program. Bottomly's mother was said to be fascinated with ESP. At one point in the investigation, the task force leader brought in famed 'psychic' Peter Hurkos, who a few years later helped Roman Polanski 'investigate' the Tate murders. Hurkos identified a suspect who had, it was claimed, already been considered by the task force. The suspect subsequently voluntarily (according to reports) committed himself to a mental hospital and was quickly forgotten. According to some reports, he later surfaced at Bridgewater State Hospital.

Among those working under Bottomly were a medical/psychiatric committee and Special Officer James Mellon of the Boston Police Department. Also deeply involved in the investigation was the Boston Police Department's new Commissioner, Edmund McNamara, who had formerly worked for the FBI. John Donovan, the former chief of the BPD's homicide squad, was the top detective on the case. Seven months into the investigation, Brooke's office wrote up a progress report that stated: "At an early stage of the coordinated deliberations it was concluded that certain homicides bore little relationship to the so-called

'stranglings' or to each other." That rather self-evident fact was later swept under the rug.

In the fall of 1964, Albert DeSalvo was arrested and charged with various crimes that he allegedly committed during a series of sexual assaults in the state of Connecticut. Those crimes, dubbed the "Green Man" assaults, had been perpetrated during the ten-month period following the death of Mary Sullivan. We are to believe then that DeSalvo, having successfully committed fourteen murders, decided to stop killing and instead cross state lines to commit sexual assaults.

Albert was arraigned on November 3, 1964 for the Green Man attacks. He was not, at that time, among the more than 300 Strangler suspects listed by the task force. There was no evidence of any kind that suggested that he was involved in any way with the brutal killings. Three days after his arraignment, he was sent to Bridgewater State Hospital, where he remained until December 10, when he was sent back to jail. On January 14, 1965, DeSalvo was again sent to Bridgewater. Four days later, he was joined there by a man named George Nassar, who had been arrested for a murder committed on September 29, 1964. The victim had been shot six times at close range and then stabbed in the back. The getaway car used in the crime had reportedly been stolen from near prestigious MIT in Cambridge, and later abandoned adjacent to the exclusive Phillip's Academy in Andover. The vehicle was registered to an unidentified Navy lieutenant, as were the two handguns found under the front seat.

Nassar had previously served sixteen years of a life sentence he received for an earlier murder conviction. He had been paroled in 1961. Following his release, he reportedly worked as a reporter and a hospital attendant, and also taught Sunday school and occasionally was allowed to take over the pulpit to deliver sermons. In his free time, he reportedly participated in between seventeen and thirty contract murders during a period of gang warfare in Boston. Nassar is frequently described as a genius and a "master manipulator" who quickly took Albert under his wing at Bridgewater. So tight was his control over DeSalvo that Albert's own family complained that they were unable to visit him without Nassar being present.

A committee was quickly formed to raise legal fees for Nassar. His innocence was loudly proclaimed by his supporters, including a minister and a local talk-radio host. As legal counsel, Nassar retained F. Lee Bailey, already a national figure at the age of thirty-one. The flamboyant attorney and former Marine pilot was known to carry a gun and enormous rolls of cash.

It was Nassar who purportedly first obtained a 'confession' from Albert DeSalvo. He then arranged for DeSalvo a meeting with Bailey, even though Lee was not DeSalvo's attorney of record. That was only the first breech of legal ethics by Bailey. There would be many more.

Bailey promptly contacted John Donovan and obtained classified information on the case, purportedly to check the veracity of Albert's confessions, though it appears that the details of the murders were in fact fed to DeSalvo by Bailey and Nassar—with assistance from CIA-connected hypnotist William Jennings Bryan III,[35] who was brought onboard by Bailey on the spring equinox. Bryan's 'questions' to DeSalvo while under hypnosis were loaded with incriminating details of the crimes. The 'confessions' that resulted from this collaboration between Bailey, Nassar and Bryan, using information supplied by Donovan, were taped by Bailey and turned over to the police. They were, to put it bluntly, blatantly fraudulent.

Many of the crime-scene details recounted by Albert, who was said to have a photographic memory, were incorrect. No physical evidence corroborated his accounts and no witnesses could place Albert near any of the crime scenes or connect him to any of the killings. The problem was not that there were no witnesses available; there were in fact a number of them, but none who identified Albert as the man they had seen. At least three of the witnesses described the suspect as a light-skinned black man with combed-back hair. None of the composite sketches created from witness descriptions resembled DeSalvo. Any reasonably skilled interrogator, through a thorough questioning of the suspect, could have quickly revealed the 'confessions' for the shams that they were. No police, however, were ever allowed to question DeSalvo, who was kept under constant guard.

On April 8, 1966—just three weeks before Anton LaVey declared the dawn of the Age of Satan—Assistant Attorney General Bottomly abruptly resigned his

35 Bryan was later connected to two other rather notorious individuals. One of them was Sirhan Bishara Sirhan, the purported assassin of Robert F. Kennedy. Bryan was known to boast of having 'treated' Sirhan. Oddly enough, the name "Albert DeSalvo" is written repeatedly throughout Sirhan's diaries, in what appears to be a display of a hypnotic phenomenon known as "automatic writing." Researcher and author Jonathan Vankin quotes a former U.S. intelligence officer who tested Sirhan: "Everything in the PSE (Psychological Stress Evaluation) charts tells me that someone else was involved in the assassination—and that Sirhan was programmed through hypnosis to kill RFK." Like other players in this sordid cast, Sirhan had a keen interest in the occult; researchers have connected him to both the Rosicrucians (a 'secret society' claiming origins in ancient Egypt), and the ever-popular Process Church of the Final Judgment. Bryan was also linked to Candy Jones, the famous model who told her tale of being a mind-controlled courier (and possibly assassin as well) in *The Control of Candy Jones*. Not long after publication of the book, Bryan was tied to the Candy Jones case by journalists investigating her claims. He soon thereafter turned up dead in a Las Vegas hotel room.

post, taking with him the original confession tapes. He quickly went to work as an attorney for DeSalvo's ex-wife, and also contracted out his services to *Fox* as a consultant on the screen version of Gerold Frank's *The Boston Strangler*. Bailey had convinced DeSalvo to sign an agreement with Frank to pen the disinformational book, which declared Albert guilty of not only the stranglings but of some 2,000 rapes as well. Bailey served as a witness to the signing of the release, and Bottomly ordered his task force to cooperate fully with Frank. The book was an immediate bestseller. The widely read work, and the widely viewed film, reinforced in the public's mind the idea that the killings had been solved. Bailey, meanwhile, pocketed the advance money that was supposed to go to DeSalvo, prompting Albert to file complaints with the state bar association. Those complaints were consistently ignored. The money for the film rights likewise ended up in Bailey's pocket.

In mid-April 1966, Bailey and Brooke agreed to bring DeSalvo to trial to face the charges arising from the Green Man case. By that time, several members of the task force had left to work for Bailey—which amounted not to them having switched sides, but to them having taken a more active role in the railroading of the designated patsy. The key players decided not to bring Albert to trial for the stranglings, no doubt reasoning that the 'evidence' was so glaringly fraudulent that it would not withstand public scrutiny even in a carefully controlled trial. The public, however, was clamoring for resolution of the case. Luckily then, Bailey came up with a way to indirectly try Albert on the murder charges—by presenting what had to be the most preposterous and unethical defense in the history of American jurisprudence. As Bailey himself described his 'strategy': "I wanted the right to defend a man for robbery and assault by proving that he had committed thirteen murders."

In other words, rather than defending his client against the relatively minor charges that he was actually facing, Bailey opted to proclaim DeSalvo's guilt on those charges, but argued that he should be found innocent by reason of insanity *based on the fact that he had also committed thirteen murders*! Now *that's* a hell of a defense.

The trial commenced in January 1967 with Albert standing before Judge Cornelius Moynihan accused of rape, robbery, and the commission of unnatural acts. He had already been convicted by the media and the public of far more serious crimes. The first witness called by the state was a Bridgewater inmate who knew both Nassar and DeSalvo, and who, strangely enough, listed F. Lee Bailey as his attorney of record. As would be the case with all the prosecution witnesses, Bailey did not bother to cross-examine his own client. In fact, he made no effort whatsoever to rebut the charges DeSalvo was facing. Instead, he presented a ridiculously flimsy case for DeSalvo's guilt in the Strangler killings—a case that

would never have stood up to cross-examination. That was not really a concern, however, since when it is the defense attorney presenting the state's case, there isn't anyone to conduct a cross-examination.

Just days into the trial, a recess was called as a mysterious meeting took place between Bailey, prosecutor Donald Conn and Judge Moynihan. The purpose of that meeting has never been revealed.

Closing arguments, such as they were, were delivered on January 18, and the jury was then sent off to deliberate. They returned the same day. There was never any question about what the verdict would be. The jury was not sequestered for the trial, and media headlines, not to mention Hollywood's offerings, regularly proclaimed DeSalvo to be the Boston Strangler. The trial was routinely referred to as the "Strangler trial," despite the fact that Albert had never even been charged with those crimes. The book and movie, released *before* the trial even began, had ingrained the official story in the public's mind. The defendant's own attorney had openly and repeatedly proclaimed his client's guilt. The jury was well aware of what it was expected to do.

The end result was that DeSalvo was found guilty of robbery and assault by the jury, and guilty of murder in the court of public opinion—which is, by all appearances, exactly what was intended. Albert was given a life sentence, despite the fact that the charges he was convicted of would normally have earned him a maximum twenty-five-year sentence with the possibility of parole after ten. As for Nassar, he was convicted of first-degree murder and sentenced to death, but the sentence was never carried out. He remains incarcerated to this day.

Just five weeks after his conviction, DeSalvo—perhaps the most feared and closely guarded inmate in America—managed to escape from Bridgewater. Another wave of panic and fear gripped the city. Albert, however, was quickly recaptured. His two brothers were implicated in the escape and indicted on charges of aiding and abetting, but they never went to trial for their alleged crimes. On January 4 of the following year, Albert's appeal of his conviction, for which there was more than adequate grounds, was quickly denied.

In 1973, Albert DeSalvo was stabbed sixteen times while in the infirmary of the maximum-security prison at Walpole, Massachusetts.[36] The previous evening

36 Two years later, in March 1975, another of F. Lee Bailey's former high-profile clients, Charles "The Pied Piper of Tucson" Schmid, was stabbed to death in prison as well. Schmid sustained some twenty wounds to the face and chest and died ten days later. He had been convicted of the murders of three young teenage girls, the first of whom was killed just five months after the Boston Strangler claimed his last victim. Charles Schmid stood just 5'4" tall and was somewhat odd in demeanor and appearance, but he was intelligent and charismatic and had an uncanny ability to attract both women

he had placed an urgent call to Dr. Ames Robey, a prison psychiatrist who had spent a considerable amount of time with the inmate. DeSalvo had told Robey that he wanted to meet with the doctor and a reporter early the next morning. Robey recalls what happened next:

> He was going to tell us who the Boston Strangler really was, and what the whole thing was about. He had asked to be placed in the infirmary under special lockup about a week before. Something was going on within the prison, and I think he felt he had to talk quickly. There were people in the prison, including guards, that were not happy with him…Somebody had to leave an awful lot of doors open, which meant—because there were several guards one would have to go by—there had to be a fair number of people paid or asked to turn their backs or something. But somebody put a knife into Albert DeSalvo's heart sometime between evening check and the morning.

---

and devoted young followers, not unlike Charles Manson. Also like Manson, Schmid had a passion for singing and playing the guitar and he claimed to possess psychic powers. Several of his followers were complicit in either committing, or covering up, the three murders; two of those followers pled guilty to various charges and served prison time. The subtext of the Tucson murders included talk of a teenage drug and prostitution ring, the involvement of a shadowy group referred to as the "Tucson Mafia," and Schmid's quickie Mexican wedding to one of his fifteen-year-old admirers just a couple weeks before his arrest. At one bizarre juncture of the investigation, suspect Schmid was arrested for impersonating an FBI agent after he reportedly had been questioning people in San Diego, California. He was supposedly in San Diego working on behalf of the "Tucson Mafia"; strangely enough, he had contacted the FBI not long before leaving for California. Arrested in November 1965, Schmid first faced trial in February 1966. He was quickly convicted of two of the murders, although his trial was marked by the usual irregularities, one of which was that testimony concerning the third murder, which Schmid had not yet faced trial for, was allowed into evidence. In fact, the third murder was a key element of the state's case, with prosecutors arguing that the second and third victims were killed to cover up the murder of the first girl. It took the jury just two hours to return the guilty verdicts, which earned Schmid a death sentence. In June 1966, F. Lee Bailey made his entrance into the Schmid case, as "Smitty's" defense attorney for the second trial. Bailey, who had just finished obtaining De Salvo's 'confessions' and was awaiting trial on that case, was brought on board the Schmid case by writer John Gilmore, who was working on a

Richard DeSalvo had a similar recollection:

> He was going to, at some point in time, when it was right, he was going to talk, and name names—heads were going to roll. He said real big, important people were going to, their heads were going to roll when he opens his mouth.

Richard DeSalvo, who spoke to his brother by telephone on the evening of his death, has also said that Albert may have been drugged that night. That would explain why he was unable to fend off his attackers, since he was otherwise quite proficient at the art of hand-to-hand combat. Three inmates were indicted and twice faced trial for the murder, which prosecutors rather preposterously portrayed as motivated by a desire to prevent DeSalvo from entering the prison drug trade. The first trial ended with a deadlocked jury and the second with a mistrial, after which the charges were dropped.

---

book on Schmid. Shortly after the second trial began, again with the usual irregularities, Bailey and his co-counsel convinced a reluctant Schmid to enter a guilty plea to the lesser charge of second-degree murder, thereby short-circuiting the trial. Schmid received a 50-year-to-life sentence. The following January, Bailey returned to Boston to deliver his craven performance in the Albert DeSalvo trial. Meanwhile, Charles Schmid wrote a letter to the judge asking for a new trial and accusing his attorneys of coercing him to take the plea deal. The judge agreed to hear the motion, but Schmid then inexplicably withdrew his request. In 1971, Schmid's death sentence was set aside when the state of Arizona temporarily abolished capital punishment. Schmid subsequently escaped, but, like De Salvo, he was quickly recaptured. John Gilmore, the son of an LAPD officer and a former child actor, went on to write a book about Charles Manson. Years later, he penned a book on the 1947 murder of Elizabeth Short, better known as the Black Dahlia. Gilmore's book appears to be little more than an effort to close the Dahlia case by pinning the notorious, unsolved crime on a very unlikely patsy. Playing the role of F. Lee Bailey, Gilmore—possibly acting in collusion with elements of the LAPD, including famed homicide detective "Jigsaw" John St. John—purportedly obtained 'confession' tapes from the alleged suspect. Those audiotapes, however, do not actually exist; all that Gilmore has ever produced is a photograph of three cassette tapes and transcripts that he likely penned himself. Before the alleged suspect, whose 'confessions' were entirely uncorroborated, could be picked up for questioning, he conveniently burned to death in a seedy Los Angeles hotel. The Black Dahlia case remains officially unsolved.

Following his death, a manuscript that Albert had been working on was conspicuously missing from his personal effects. A copy of the autopsy report was handed to the DeSalvo family by, of all people, George Nassar. And so ended the case of the Boston Strangler, except that questions surrounding the killings persist to this day, forty years after the last victim was killed. Even as these words are being written, surviving family members of both Albert DeSalvo and his last purported victim, Mary Sullivan, are clamoring for the investigation to be reopened.

Sullivan's body was exhumed in October 2000 and a forensics examination revealed that the condition of her corpse was not consistent with DeSalvo's confessed version of how she was killed. Her remains also yielded two DNA samples, one from a semen stain on her pubic hair. Neither of the samples were a match for Albert DeSalvo, whose body was exhumed in October 2001. George Washington University law professor James E. Starrs, who is leading the new forensics investigation, proclaimed: "We have evidence that is strongly indicative that Albert DeSalvo was not the rapist-murderer of Mary Sullivan." He promised a "blockbuster" report once the investigation has been completed.

There has never been a shortage of suspects in the case. Near the top of the list is George Nassar, considered by many in the law enforcement community to be a serial assassin. Nassar bore a striking resemblance to one of the composite sketches of the Strangler, and he was tentatively identified by some of the crime scene witnesses. Investigative author Susan Kelly has identified other suspects as well. She has also put forth a convincing argument that many of the murders were unrelated.

In the Sullivan case, police had two suspects before DeSalvo 'cleared' them by confessing to the murder. The more likely of the two was her former boyfriend, William Ivey. Police had built a strong case against him and he had failed two polygraph examinations. Nevertheless, Ivey was never prosecuted.

Patricia Bissette's death was probably also unconnected to the others. The prime suspect in her death was her boss, a defense contractor named Jules Rothman. Bissette, who had a flair for foreign languages, frequently traveled out-of-state with Rothman, with whom she was having an affair. It was likely Rothman's child that she was secretly carrying. It was also Rothman who discovered her body and spent time alone in her apartment with the corpse before police arrived. A photo album was missing from Bissette's apartment, as were numerous loose photographs and almost all of her personal correspondence, which she was known to save. Rothman was very close to being indicted when DeSalvo confessed.

Sophie Clark's killer was likely Albert Williams, the son of a Cambridge minister. Williams had received a medical discharge from the army and he was known

to suffer from blackouts. He had a long criminal record and was said to be a bisexual sadist. Like Ivey, he failed two polygraph examinations.

The more intriguing suspects identified by Kelly are three men who had connections to several of the killings. They were, perhaps, the real 'serial killers.' The three had been friends and classmates at Harvard. One was Bradley Waring Schereschewsky, the son of a controller at what Kelly refers to as a prestigious New England prep school—very likely Phillips Academy considering that the Schereschewsky family lived in Andover. Andover and Philips Academy were just a few miles from two of the death scenes. Bradley was first incarcerated on September 22, 1951, for the Oedipal crimes of savagely beating his father and attempting to rape his mother. Since 1959, he had been in and out of various mental hospitals. When not institutionalized, he reportedly worked as a gravedigger.

Friends with Schereschewsky was fellow suspect William Axel Lindahl, the son of a Boston cop. Lindahl's mother died when he was just an infant, and he was subsequently raised by his physically abusive father. At Harvard, he joined the naval ROTC, where he tried to strangle his drill instructor. He also tried to strangle his girlfriend. He later obtained a teaching job at Lake Forest Academy in Illinois, and he was said to be fluent in fourteen languages. In 1970, the wife of one of his Harvard friends, who had long suspected Lindahl of being the Strangler, turned up dead. Her husband was tried and convicted for her murder. That same year a reporter for the *Boston Globe*, who was another of Lindahl's college chums, was also accused of killing his wife.

The final member of the trio was Peter Howard Denton, the genius son of a doctor and a nurse. Denton won a congressional appointment to West Point and from there went on to Harvard. His first arrest came on April 19, 1961, when he and four other Harvard men were found to be in possession of high explosives. What he and his cronies were planning to do with the explosives on the eve of the *Fuhrer's* birthday is unknown. Three years later, Denton wound up in a place well known to Albert DeSalvo and George Nassar: Bridgewater State Hospital. Still later, he set up a drug lab and was reportedly a heavy drug user himself, with a particular fondness for hallucinogens. Violent murders seemed to follow Denton wherever he roamed; he lived in Ann Arbor, Michigan when a string of girls turned up dead there, and he was in Los Angeles during the reign of the Hillside Stranglers.

It is extremely unlikely that the new official investigation will reveal the truth about the 'Boston Strangler.' Meanwhile, the state of Massachusetts recently refused to release evidence to a private investigative team, claiming that, forty years after the fact, the case was still considered an ongoing investigation.

* * * * *

Arthur Shawcross was a brutally efficient assassin who accumulated a career total of over fifty kills, although the first thirty-nine were not considered crimes. And yet they were murders that were every bit as barbaric as those committed by any of the other 'serial killers' discussed previously—complete with torture, mutilation, cannibalism and necrophilia. One female victim was decapitated and her head displayed on a stake. Shawcross then roasted and ate her thigh—all while another victim was forced to watch. The second victim was then beheaded, strung up by her feet and gutted like a slaughtered animal carcass.

How then could these actions not be considered crimes?

Simply put, it was because the victims were all Vietnamese nationals, and Arthur was just doing his job: terrorizing the Vietnamese people into acceding to U.S. demands. It was the same job that everyone else involved in the Phoenix Program was engaged in. Shawcross did not become a criminal until he brought home the skills taught to him by the U.S. military.

Arthur had a rather interesting history, one that likely made him an ideal candidate to serve as an assassin for Uncle Sam. He was born just before the end of World War II in a naval hospital to a naval officer father, who lived a rather shadowy existence, reportedly with a parallel life in Australia complete with another wife and son.[37] Young Art grew up in a multi-generational family whose members all lived within about 100 feet of each other at a place the locals called 'Shawcross Corners.' Incest and pedophilia apparently ran rampant within the Shawcross clan. Arthur has claimed that he was introduced to sex by his Aunt Tina, and that his younger sister "allowed him" to sodomize her at a very young age. He also engaged in sexual antics with his cousin and with a young boy and girl who lived down the road. At the age of ten, he also began regularly having sex with a male friend named Mike. Art and Mike were introduced to bestiality by some men who owned a local sheep farm. Sexual partners the pair encountered there included sheep, chickens, a cow, a dog and a horse.

Mike later killed his wife, his kids, and then himself.

Art's mother occasionally raped her son with a broomstick, once causing severe internal injuries, as confirmed by hospital records. In addition to the sexual abuse, Arthur received frequent beatings with a belt and a broom handle. Little wonder then that Shawcross had a number of imaginary friends as a child and he was known to speak to himself in strange voices.

At the tender age of eight, Shawcross was alone in a room with the father of a friend when the man reportedly died of a heart attack. What he was doing alone in the room with the man at the time is unknown, but it is clear that Shawcross

37 Aviator Charles Lindbergh, who we will return to in the final chapter of this book, also lived a parallel life overseas, with a second family that remained a secret for decades.

had his first exposure to death while still quite young. By the age of ten or eleven, he was regularly running away from home. By fourteen, he was known to disappear for as long as four weeks at a time, venturing off alone to places unknown. At about that same point in his life, he was reportedly raped by an older man.

By the age of fifteen, Arthur was committing burglaries with his friend Mike. He was convicted and he received probation for one such offense in 1963. Two years later, he was again convicted of burglary and again given probation. Not long after that, Shawcross began his military service—service that would soon take him into the jungles of Vietnam and, by his own accounting, transform his life. But before he even left the States, Art reportedly went AWOL, a transgression for which he strangely suffered no repercussions.

Shawcross spent thirteen months in Southeast Asia as a weapons specialist, although his apparently falsified military records indicate that he served as a supply clerk. Sometime in 1968, he was sent to Hawaii for R&R; he later reported that he spent that time champing at the bit to get back to the jungles of Vietnam. After his return, he spent long periods of time alone in the bush, becoming—as he described himself—a "predator" and a "ghoul." He claimed that he became quite adept at modifying weapons for special purposes. He became, he said, a silent assassin—or as he described it: "I was a ghost in the jungle…one bullet and no sound." By the time he came home, he had recorded thirty-nine kills; many of his victims were women and children.

Upon his return from Vietnam, he suffered blindingly painful headaches and he was treated by an Army psychiatrist. He was stationed at Fort Sill, Oklahoma, where he was assigned to train recruits and set up exhibits of weapons for military shows. Uncle Sam apparently thought quite highly of the man who once explained that if you roast human flesh until it is well done, you can then snack on it for several days before it goes bad. Years later, after Art had put his acquired skills to work at home on non-Vietnamese victims, police asked him how he was "able to kill these girls so easily…Where did you learn to do that?" Shawcross responded simply: "Ask Uncle Sam." Asked where he had learned to butcher bodies so that they would decompose faster, he gave the same response

Arthur experienced a bit of a surprise upon his return home from Vietnam when he was informed that he had married a woman named Linda Neary just before he had shipped out. He had no recollection of having done so. Nevertheless, Neary had received and spent all of his service paychecks. Shawcross later said that Neary's family, which he claimed was into witchcraft, would not allow him to leave.

Not long after his return to the States, Shawcross burned down both a barn and Crowley's Cheese Company. He then set yet another fire at a paper mill on April 24, 1969. In September of that year, he was tried, convicted and sentenced to serve

five years, but he was out in just two, after spending time at both Attica and Auburn prisons. After his release, Art remarried and worked for the Watertown Public Works Department—public works jobs being a popular pastime with many serial killers. He was apparently very popular with the local kids, many of whom he knew. One of those local kids was Jack Blake, a ten-year-old boy who visited with Shawcross frequently and enjoyed fishing with the older man.

On June 4, 1972, Art raped, strangled, mutilated and cannibalized his young friend. He subsequently returned on several occasions to rape the boy's rotting corpse. Three months after Jack's disappearance, Shawcross similarly assaulted and killed an eight-year-old girl. He had been reported previously for wrestling neighborhood boys to the ground and stuffing grass into their pants and mouths. For that he had been fined ten dollars by the parole board. He was also reported by Jack's mother, Mary Blake, who told police of threats made against another boy. Nevertheless, it took authorities a good while to connect the disappearances of the two kids to Arthur Shawcross. Once caught, he was charged only with the murder of the girl. Despite the fact that he confessed to killing the boy as well, and led investigators to the body, he was never charged with any crimes in connection with the death of Jack Blake.

He was also never charged with the rape, torture, mutilation, or cannibalization of either victim. Offered an outrageously lenient plea-bargain deal, Shawcross pled guilty to one count of manslaughter and received a twenty-five-year sentence; he served just fifteen before being released to kill again. This was just another example of how the law enforcement and judicial communities frequently take actions that seem designed specifically to keep America's real killers on the streets—while simultaneously meting out draconian sentences to obvious patsies. If that is not the case, then how else are we to explain the incongruously lenient treatment afforded certain killers, particularly in a nation with what is arguably the harshest criminal justice system in the 'civilized' world?

Arthur was hardly a model prisoner for the first eight years of his incarceration. He was repeatedly disciplined for such infractions as fighting, possession of contraband, and setting fires. He was also questioned about the deaths of three of his fellow inmates. For the last seven years, however, Shawcross did reportedly become a model prisoner. He was even given a job counseling mental patients, even though he himself was being 'treated' by several prison psychiatrists and he complained frequently of hearing voices in his head.

In March 1987, Art was set free. After being chased out of four local communities, the probation department decided to 'hide' him in Rochester, the hometown of Hillside Strangler Kenneth Bianchi. Shawcross was purportedly closely monitored and he had very strict conditions placed upon his parole: absolutely no contact with children, no drinking, no consorting with prostitutes, no guns,

and an 11:00PM to 7:00AM curfew. Nevertheless, Art was well known in the part of town where the community's prostitutes plied their trade. He was rumored to be selling drugs to the working girls, as well as to teenage runaways. On March 25, 1988, he was ticketed for driving without a license and for having two unrestrained children in the car—children that he was not supposed to be anywhere near. He was not charged with a parole violation.

The kids were the grandchildren of Clara Neal, one of many women with whom Art was having affairs. Shawcross was also friends with Clara's son Donnie (his hunting partner), and he occasionally spent time with her daughter Loretta. Arthur's paramours also included several of his victims. When Art was not servicing and/or killing one of his female acquaintances, he could frequently be found hanging out at the local doughnut shop chatting with the city's police officers.

The first victims of the serial killer variously referred to as the 'Rochester Nightstalker,' the 'Rochester Strangler,' or the 'Genesee River Killer,' were found in the summer and early fall of 1989. At the time, Arthur was officially under the supervision of the local parole board, mental health workers, and social workers. Most of the victims could be directly linked to Shawcross, a known sex offender and multiple murderer. As he later said: "I knew 'em all, and they knew me." Nevertheless, eleven women were killed before authorities got around to connecting the murders to Arthur Shawcross.

One of the victims was Dorothy Keller, one of Art's on-and-off girlfriends who also knew his wife, Rose Shawcross. Prior to her death, Keller was an occasional visitor to the Shawcross apartment. Patty Ives was another victim who was quite well known to her killer, as was June Stotts, a 'mildly retarded' friend of the Shawcross family who was a frequent visitor to their home and who was regularly seen with Art at a local eatery. After her death, she was cut open from her neck to her anus, gutted, cannibalized and sexually violated.

None of Art's victims appeared to have put up a struggle; no defensive wounds were present on any of the bodies and there were no signs that the victims had been physically restrained. Police reportedly marveled over the killer's ability to completely control both the victims and the crime scenes. Some investigators speculated that a stun gun might have been used to disable the women.

Law enforcement officials initially assumed that two or three separate killers were at work simultaneously. The manner in which the women were killed varied, not surprisingly, and included beheading, strangulation, bludgeoning, and suffocation/drowning. One victim, Lisa Gibson, was found in another county, many miles away from where the other bodies were deposited. Some of the corpses that were found during Art's reign were of black prostitutes. One of them, Felicia Stephens, was found in the same park where two of Art's admitted victims surfaced. Shawcross, however, declined to take credit for the murders of the black victims.

In January 1990, Art was captured and he proceeded to give his captors a full confession—after being interrogated without an attorney. Little evidence other than his confession directly linked Shawcross to the killings; the crime scenes had been left remarkably free of any incriminating evidence. Arthur Shawcross had apparently been very well trained. He went to trial in 1991, with his defense counsel claiming insanity. He was said to be suffering from Multiple Personality Disorder. Under hypnosis, he reportedly spoke as a 13th century cannibal named Ariemes, an eleven-year-old boy, and his own mother.

Dr. Dorothy Otnow Lewis concluded that Shawcross had been "severely" sexually abused and had, therefore, "developed a dissociative style of coping with his intolerable situation." She added: "this kind of phenomenon is characteristic of severely abused children who eventually dissociate to the point of becoming multiple personalities." Dr. Park Elliot Dietz of the FBI's BSU, called as a psychiatric witness for the prosecution, disputed the MPD claims. That is the sort of thing that Dietz makes a career of doing. He can be seen with appalling frequency on the television screen speaking as an 'expert' on serial killer cases.

The jury rejected the insanity defense and the claims of a dissociative disorder and convicted Shawcross of ten counts of murder, largely on the strength of his illegally obtained confession. He was sentenced to ten consecutive twenty-five-year sentences. There is little question though that Art did indeed have a serious dissociative disorder. He suffered from blackouts all of his life. He reportedly had a strong tendency to "space out," to such an extent that he sometimes had to be physically shaken to get a response. He also was known to frequently wander off and then find himself in an unknown place with no awareness of how he had gotten there.

Author Joel Norris has written that Shawcross once described the killings to him as occurring in "a kind of dream state in which another person inside of him was reacting in his place." During those times, the killer was able to completely shut out the world around him, to such an extent that, as Art recalled, he "didn't hear anything around me…I couldn't figure that out…Other times in my life I have had the feeling of leaving my body." What remained in that body was a highly efficient, emotionless, programmed assassin—one of Uncle Sam's finest.

There is little question that Arthur Shawcross committed numerous murders in his life. But where does the real guilt for his crimes lie? With Shawcross, or with those who deliberately and systematically trained him to be a remorseless killer?

* * * * *

Daniel Rolling was raised by his mother, Claudia Beatrice Rolling, and his physically abusive father, James Harold Rolling. James had served in the Korean War, from which he returned as a highly decorated hero. He has been described as an extremely controlling man with a violent temper. He reportedly tied his sons up frequently, and on one occasion locked then thirteen-year-old Danny up in a jail cell for two weeks. He also derived a perverse pleasure from trapping neighborhood cats, shooting them, and then watching them die.

The Rolling family had a long history of mental illness, violence and suicide. Danny's great-grandfather had slit his wife's throat from ear to ear, killing her in full view of Danny's father. The family also had a history of working in law enforcement. Danny's grandfather had worked for the County Sheriff's Office, and his father joined the local force in Shreveport, Louisiana and quickly made lieutenant.

In June 1971, Danny became an airman in the U.S. Air Force. Like Albert DeSalvo, he was just seventeen at the time of his enlistment; his father signed for him. Two years later he found himself in a military prison, gaining a discharge after an Air Force psychiatrist determined that he had an antisocial personality disorder. By late 1973, he was back home in Shreveport where he regularly attended church, sang in the choir, and played his beloved guitar. Like so many other accused serial killers, Rolling viewed himself as an artist—in this case, a singer/songwriter/guitarist, not unlike Charlie Manson.

On September 6, 1974, Danny married. He was at the time working for the local Water Department. By 1977, Rolling's wife had filed for divorce. She later married a cop. Danny, meanwhile, embarked on a career in crime. In 1979, he was charged with two counts of armed robbery. Following his conviction on the charges, he was sentenced to a six-year prison term. Not long into his incarceration, Rolling managed to escape, but he was recaptured just hours later. For his efforts, he had an extra year tacked onto his sentence. In February 1980, he pled guilty to a charge of armed robbery in the state of Alabama, earning him a ten-year sentence in that state.

On June 7, 1982, Danny was released by the state of Louisiana after serving less than half his sentence. He immediately began serving time in Alabama for his conviction there. The very next month he escaped again, but he was recaptured after two days. Nevertheless, he was released after just two years, having served a total of just five years of his combined seventeen-year sentence. Upon his release, he headed west to California, for reasons unknown, and then drifted his way back east. In Mississippi he was charged with grand larceny and armed robbery and given a fifteen-year sentence, which he began serving on July 25, 1985. Rolling was regularly put into solitary confinement in a cold, damp, sewage-infested cell. Eventually he graduated up to being put on a chain gang. On July 29, 1988, after

serving just three years of his sentence, he was again released. Upon his return home, he immediately began attracting neighborhood kids, just as Shawcross had done upon his return from prison.

On May 17, 1990, James Harold Rolling opened fire with his service revolver on his son Danny. More than once he had told his wife that he wished the boy were dead. But it was not Danny that almost died that day; Rolling returned his father's fire, hitting the senior Rolling and knocking him down. Danny then shot him again, in the face, from close range. He then kicked his father's prone and nearly dead body. James though miraculously survived. Danny, meanwhile, fled to Sarasota, Florida, allegedly assuming the identity of a Vietnam veteran named Michael J. Kennedy who had died in 1975.

Danny/Michael left Sarasota suddenly on August 18 and headed for Gainesville, where he set up camp in a wooded area. Rolling's arrival in Gainesville coincided with *Money Magazine's* ranking of the city as the thirteenth safest place to live in the United States. It was about to be rocked by five brutal and seemingly senseless murders in the space of less than forty-eight hours.

Gainesville police officer Ray Berber discovered the first two bodies on August 26, 1990. He was the first officer on the scene and he spent time alone in the apartment of the two dead college students, who had been stabbed repeatedly, mutilated, and left posed as a macabre greeting for their discoverers. One of the girls was in her bed, the other on the floor of the apartment's living room. One had been raped. Both bodies had been washed with detergent to cleanse them of forensic evidence. It appeared as though the killer, or killers, had thoroughly searched the apartment. One body was left spread-eagle on the floor facing the front door, a gaping hole in her chest where her breasts had been removed. Some of the parts carved from the two girls had been taken by the killer(s). Evidence suggested that duct tape had been used as a restraint, but the tape had subsequently been removed. Most of the blood spilled by the victims had been wiped away.

In a remarkably short time, the crime scene was crawling with law enforcement personnel. Twenty or more officials were on the scene within minutes, including the Gainesville police chief and a state's attorney. Just nine hours later, a similar scene played out elsewhere in Gainesville. In a rather unlikely scenario, the first officer at that crime scene was officer Gail Berber, the wife of Ray Berber. The victim was Christa Hoyt, whom Gail had trained as a Sheriff's Explorer. Christa had subsequently gone to work full-time in the record's department of the Sheriff's Office. Her head had been cleanly severed and placed on a bookshelf facing the front door. Her headless corpse had been carefully posed. Her nipples had been removed and placed alongside of the body. Her breasts were then removed and wrapped-up to go, but the killer had apparently forgotten to take

them. Christa had been sliced open from her breastbone to her public bone with surgical precision, without any damage done to any of her internal organs. *A&E* noted, "the cuts were precise—ritualistic." As with the first crime scene, there was evidence of rape and restraint with adhesive tape, and the body had been washed with soap and water. The home appeared to have been methodically searched.

The crime scene clearly suggested that multiple perpetrators were responsible for the brutal murder. A bookcase had been moved down the hall, past the bathroom and into the bedroom. Investigators doubted that one man alone could have moved the heavy and unwieldy unit. Another heavy bookcase had likewise been moved—to allow Christa's head to be positioned for maximum effect. The body had been moved several hours after death, indicating that the killer(s) either remained at the scene for a considerable amount of time or returned to the scene for reasons unknown. It was later claimed that Danny Rolling returned to retrieve his wallet, although that claim begs the question of why a serial killer, and veteran criminal, would be carrying such an incriminating piece of evidence that could be inadvertently left behind.

Hoyt, who put up a fight against her killer(s), had spent a summer at the U.S. Department of Agriculture's Entomology Lab. She aspired to be a chemist working in criminal forensics, and towards that end had joined the Sheriff's Explorers in her senior year of high school. She was reportedly having an office romance with a deputy sheriff. She also had a fondness for the color black, with her car, most of her wardrobe, and the black roses on her birthday cake chosen accordingly. She had also, curiously, made mention of a "devil cult" living in the immediate vicinity.

A task force, which included no fewer than ten members of the FBI's Behavioral Sciences Unit, was immediately assembled. The principal agent working the case for the Florida Department of Law Enforcement was J.O. Jackson, who had served in the same capacity on the case of the recently executed Ted Bundy. In addition to the FBI's team of profilers, which included the ubiquitous John Douglas, and the FDLE agents, the task force included local police, state troopers, and U.S. Navy reservists. The show of force by the police was unprecedented and a highly militarized atmosphere soon enveloped the college town, with various law enforcement agencies conducting coordinated paramilitary maneuvers.

It looked very much like a dress rehearsal for a declaration of martial law.[38]

38 Eleven years later, immediately *before* the September 11, 2001 attacks on the World Trade Center and the Pentagon, Florida Governor Jeb Bush signed legislation that paved the way for a declaration of martial law.

The day after Christa Hoyt's body was found, two more victims were discovered. One of them was a 6'3" tall, 200+ pound, powerfully built college athlete who had struggled valiantly with his attacker(s), suffering thirty-one stab wounds to his chest, face, arms, hands, and legs, many of them defensive wounds. Though it was ultimately claimed that Danny Rolling, acting alone, killed Manny Toboada, the truth is that he did not appear to be physically up to the task. Toboada's roommate, Tracey Paules, was killed along with Manny, raising further doubts that a single killer was responsible. Paules had been raped anally and left on display. There was semen present and five pubic hairs were found.

There were marked differences between the Toboada/Paules crime scene and the two previous ones. Blood was splattered everywhere about the home the two students shared. No attempt had been made to clean up the bodies or the crime scene. Though the two victims had died exceedingly violent deaths, there were no gratuitous mutilations to the bodies.

A maintenance man discovered the victims when he opened the door to what he thought was a burglarized apartment and peered in. He reported seeing a dark-colored bag on the floor near Tracey's head. He immediately turned around, locked the door and left to await the arrival of police. When he returned with the officers, he found that the door was unlocked and the bag was missing.

Following the discovery of the last two bodies, the rash of killings ended just as suddenly and just as mysteriously as it had begun.

On the same day that Manny and Tracey were found dead, a known drug dealer named Tony Danzy and a man alleged to be Danny Rolling were seen lurking in the woods. Though Rolling avoided capture, various items from the pair's campsite were seized as evidence, including a cassette recorder and cash that was said to be linked to a bank robbery from the previous day. From this we can surmise that in the midst of his two-day killing frenzy Rolling took a short break to rob a bank with a sidekick, who, of course, had nothing to do with the murders.

Two days after the last victims were discovered, a man named Edward Lewis Humphrey had a violent altercation with his grandmother. Humphrey was one of three prime suspects in the case, and he remained a prime suspect throughout the next year, although he was never formally charged. Humphrey had made violent threats in the past, and he was known for displays of erratic behavior. He was aware of unreleased details of the crimes, including the nature of the wounds received by the victims. He also lived very close to the Toboada/Paules crime scene and his brother George knew victim Tracey Paules. Humphrey was the offspring of an alcoholic mother and an abusive father. He had in the past been diagnosed as manic-depressive and committed to a psychiatric facility. Ed's sister believed that it was while he was institutionalized that he began getting crazy thoughts in his head—such as that Satan was after him. Indeed, Ed thought that

Satan was everywhere. He also developed a sudden interest in knives and militaristic behavior. Friends reported that he frequently put on Army fatigues and ventured off into the woods saying that he was going out on "recon." Neighbors had seen him returning from the woods late at night carrying a hunting knife. Ed also claimed to be the middleman for a high-volume drug dealer—this despite the fact that he lived directly below a Gainesville police officer.

Following his arrest for the attack on his grandmother, Ed was taken to Regional Medical Center and questioned for more than twenty-four hours without an attorney present. Although he was a first-time offender charged only with aggravated assault, his bail was set at $1 million. Following his conviction, he was sentenced to serve twenty-two months at Chattahoochie State Hospital, which seemed to please his mother: "you should know this: many of Ed's friends are bad boys and Ed is in a good place now…and if he commits suicide, well, that's life." Humphrey was suspected of being afflicted with Multiple Personality Disorder. He admitted to knowing about the killings, but he blamed them on alter identities that he said he had no control over. One of his fellow inmates, Stephen Michael Bates, claimed that he had participated in the murders with Humphrey and a third man. He also said that Humphrey was involved in "satanic stuff."

The Gainesville campus was rife with talk of a satanic cult at work. Of the lead suspects other than Humphrey, one reportedly had satanic writings in his home (another, described as a "charmer with the ladies," was suspected of a multiple stabbing murder in Ohio). Some of the items on the list of evidence sought by the task force—which included a black hood; photographs, audiotapes, or videotapes of the murders being performed; human flesh; severed nipples; and human blood—hinted at satanic involvement in the crimes.

On September 25, 1990, investigators announced that semen samples recovered from two of the crime scenes matched. A full year later, in September 1991, Rolling was convicted on robbery charges and sentenced to life in prison as an habitual offender. No one had yet been arrested or charged for the five murders. Danny had never been considered a suspect. Over the course of the next two months, Rolling was convicted on two separate counts of burglary. For the three convictions, he was sentenced to a total of three life terms plus an additional 170 years. And the state of Florida was not done with Danny Rolling.

While he was in custody, samples of Rolling's blood and hair were surreptitiously gathered—the blood from a tooth extraction and the hair from a haircut. Prosecutors later returned with a warrant and gathered the very same samples from Danny, making no mention of the samples gathered previously. On November 1, a grand jury was convened to hear the purported case against Danny Rolling for the five grisly murders. Two weeks later, Rolling was indicted on murder charges. Following that, he reportedly made several suicide attempts,

which led to his being transferred to Chattahoochie State Hospital. Meanwhile, the officer who had served as the police spokesman on the murder cases moved on to the FBI Academy at Quantico.

At around that same time, Danny began a relationship with a rather notorious character named Sondra London, a serial killer groupie[39] and true-crime writer. London—who claims as friends such notables as prolific author Ann Rule and the Behavioral Sciences Unit's resident ritual abuse denier, Kenneth Lanning—urged Danny to publicly take credit for the Gainesville murders. Rolling's cellmate, convicted murderer Bobby Lewis, also played a key role in that effort. Danny soon reportedly 'confessed' to the murders, but it was actually Lewis who did all the talking. Rolling's role was to sit nearby in a nearly catatonic state and occasionally nod in agreement or mumble an affirmative response. The first such 'confession' was audiotaped and the second was videotaped. It is clear from both that Rolling was almost completely incapacitated. The killings were blamed on an alter-ego named "Gemini," who acted alone. Danny claimed to have no control over the actions of his alter identities (which was probably true). The confessions were largely unverifiable, but in an attempt to verify some aspect of them, police investigators searched for the murder weapon based on information supplied by Rolling. They came up empty handed.

Rolling's trial on the homicide charges was repeatedly postponed. First scheduled for September 1992, it did not begin until February 15, 1994. The jury was barely seated when its services were rendered unnecessary; Danny shocked the court and all involved in the case by entering guilty pleas to all the charges he was facing. The trial, therefore, immediately shifted to the penalty phase, with the jury reduced to an advisory role. Rolling claimed that he had entered the pleas in order to keep the details of the murders from being aired in open court. His intent was allegedly to allow Ms. London to publish his exclusive story, just as she had gotten Schaefer's 'serial killer fiction' published by Feral House—the publishing house owned by Adam Parfrey that has exclusive rights to the copious writings of Church of Satan founder Anton LaVey.

Whether that was Rolling's true intent remains an open question. If it was, then the plan failed miserably. Prosecutors proceeded to air their case, such as it was, regardless of the guilty pleas. And since guilt was no longer an issue, the case that was presented went almost completely unchallenged, with nary an objection to be heard from the defense team, despite that fact that the primary evidence

39 London had previously been romantically involved with Florida cop *cum* serial killer and child rapist, Gerard John Schaefer. Schaefer was found dead in his prison cell in 1995. Some have blamed our old friend Ottis Toole for his death.

was, at best, problematic. The state claimed, for instance, that a Stanley screwdriver found at the campsite was the tool used to gain access to the murder scenes. Pry marks found at the scenes purportedly matched the blade of that particular screwdriver, although it is difficult to conceive how the literally thousands of identical screwdrivers manufactured by Stanley could have been excluded. Another problem was that the screwdriver, even if it could be linked to the crimes, could not be linked to Rolling. There was no evidence that he had ever purchased or owned it. The state simply claimed that Danny had stolen the screwdriver, but there was no evidence to support that claim.

Prosecutors also claimed that Rolling had stolen duct tape and two pairs of athletic gloves that were allegedly found at the campsite, but there was also no evidence to support that contention. No physical evidence, such as fingerprints, tied any of the items to Danny. No murder weapon could be linked to the defendant, but that did not stop prosecutors from claiming, without documentation, that Danny had purchased a knife in Tallahassee using an assumed name. A pair of black pants that were allegedly recovered from the campsite, and that were allegedly stained with Manny Toboada's blood, were presented as evidence. Prosecutors did not bother though to explain how the bloodstains could be on the pants when it was known that Toboada's killer had thoroughly cleansed himself by taking a dip in the building's pool immediately after the murders.

Other evidence included: the bizarre, videotaped 'third party' confession; a clothing fiber purportedly found at one of the crime scenes; a note found at one scene that allegedly matched Rolling's handwriting; and a pubic hair from Christa Hoyt that was allegedly found at the campsite. It was never explained why all the alleged campsite evidence was not produced until a year after the investigation had begun. The state claimed that a "genetic blueprint" in blood and semen samples positively identified Rolling as the killer. Such a claim, however, would be somewhat more credible if investigators building the case against Danny had not clandestinely gathered biological samples from him—samples that could easily have been planted as evidence.

Another item purportedly found at the campsite was a cassette tape-recorder. Inside was a tape that Rolling had made for his family. That tape reportedly was not listened to until months after it was seized and booked into evidence. Danny had ended the tape with the following statement: "Well, I'm gonna sign off for a little bit. I got something I gotta do. I love ya. Bye." That rather innocuous comment was touted by the state, rather creatively, as irrefutable proof of the defendant's guilt. Though it hardly needs to be stated, most people at any given time have "something they gotta do." Very rarely does that involve committing mass murder.

In a scenario that precisely mirrored the circumstances of Ted Bundy's kidnapping trial, Danny Rolling's defense attorneys, the presiding judge, and the prosecutors had all been classmates together at the University of Florida law school. It is, indeed, a small world that serial killers inhabit.

Appearing before the court as a defense witness, Rolling's mother offered testimony concerning possible demonic possession and detailed the family's history of mental illness and institutionalization. Danny, who was frequently described as a "Jekyll and Hyde," claimed via his 'confessional' videotape that he suffered from multiple personalities. All the experts called to the stand, however, disputed that contention. After just five hours of deliberations, the jury returned with a recommendation that Rolling be given five death sentences. The judge opted to let a few weeks pass before formally imposing sentence on Danny—doing so, appropriately enough, on April 20, 1994. In the interim, Rolling's father was cited for battery of his terminally ill wife.

> ***"Civilization, it's not of the lord, it's of the devil, brother…Old Lucifer, he was at me for a long time—knocking on the door to my mind."***
>
> **—Danny Rolling, who, curiously, was missing a portion of his left ring finger**

Chapter 18

The Profiler and the Patsy

"After the use of the hypnotic drug I had the strange compulsion to take the blame for all the charges pressed against me. It must have been a post-hypnotic influence."

—William Heirens

The FBI's Behavioral Sciences Unit, which gave the world the 'science' of 'criminal profiling,' first began taking shape around 1969, the year that the Manson Family first captured national headlines. The new unit did not really take off though until 1972, when the FBI Academy opened in Quantico, Virginia. Robert Ressler joined the BSU team in 1974 and, along with John Douglas, he became one of the most well known of the unit's profilers, and one of the most prolific of its chroniclers. At the time that he joined, the unit had no operational functions; it existed solely for the purpose of teaching the principles of profiling. Ressler was taught by the pioneers of the 'science': Howard Teeten and Pat Mullany.

In 1977, a pilot program was begun to study the rapid proliferation of what were soon to be dubbed "serial killers." The program included such notable members as Robert Ressler, John Douglas, Ann Burgess and Ralph D'Agostino. In 1978, Ressler spearheaded the operational unit of the BSU. At around that same time, he was credited with coining the now ubiquitous term "serial killer." During his fabled career, Ressler sat down to chat with a number of the high-profile criminals whose stories have been told in the pages of this book. He was among the first to interview Ted Bundy, and one of the last to talk to John Wayne Gacy. He held court with Charles Manson, Sirhan Sirhan, Richard Speck, Ed Kemper, Jeffrey Dahmer, and many others. He also served as the first Program Manager for VICAP, the Violent Criminal Apprehension Program that Ann Rule so tirelessly campaigned for.

Ressler once gave an interviewer the following capsule history of criminal profiling:

> The original profilers pretty much emanated from the behavioral science work at Quantico, and it spread from law enforcement to the academic. By bringing in Dr. Park Dietz and others like him, we started spilling it over into the professional community, and where psychiatry had initially been at odds with the FBI approach, a lot of mental health professionals then got on board. Over the years, the forensic community has pretty much accepted what we were doing in behavioral science and absorbed it.

In other words, in the last 25–30 years the FBI has managed, despite initial resistance, to thoroughly co-opt the fields of law enforcement, academia, mental health, and the forensic sciences. In doing so, the FBI's profilers have successfully molded public opinion and firmly ingrained in the mind of the average American the concept of the 'serial killer.' This effort has been so successful that it has become all but impossible to question whether the contemporary view of violent crime is at all accurate.

In August 1990, Ressler ostensibly retired from government service, though he has spent his retirement years introducing VICAP to Japan, South Africa, Poland, and several other countries. Since his retirement, he has served as the director of an entity called Forensics Behavioral Services International. One of the primary goals of the enterprise, according to one of Ressler's associates, Dr. Christine Kokonos, is a complete and seamless merging of the fields of law enforcement and psychology.

Robert Ressler's bio reads as though it was lifted off the pages of a Hollywood screenplay. He grew up in Chicago—with a boy whose name may be familiar from a previous chapter: John Wayne Gacy. Bobby and John lived on the same street and were Boy Scouts together in the same scout troop. It was the classic story of two boys whose lives took radically divergent paths…at least by outward appearances. Ressler later returned to Chicago to assist in investigating the Gacy case, and still later helped to prepare the prosecution case against his childhood acquaintance.

Ressler claims that his first foray into gaining an understanding of the criminal mind came as a young boy, when he started his own private investigation firm. The agency was founded specifically to look into the case of William Heirens, who allegedly stalked the streets of Chicago long before Richard Speck, John

Wayne Gacy or Robin Gecht walked that beat. You could say that the Heirens case provided Ressler with his first opportunity to try his hand at 'profiling.'

* * * * *

William Heirens was, according to the official narrative, the country's first post-war serial killer. His alleged crimes were committed during a period in America's history when crime rates were soaring all across the nation, particularly in the big cities. The year was 1945. World War II had just ended and tens of thousands of young men desensitized to extreme levels of human brutality were coming home.

The city of Chicago recorded 109 robberies, 265 burglaries, 109 stolen cars, four rapes, and eight murders in just the first ten days of December 1945. Those were staggeringly high numbers in those days. It is interesting then that three particular murders stunned not just the city of Chicago, but the entire country. The first of the three occurred in June 1945, just weeks after the United States had declared "Victory in Europe." The last, and by far the grisliest, was in January 1946. All three were ultimately attributed to William Heirens, who was just sixteen years old at the time of the first murder.

Heirens was born in November 1928 to a mother and father who were known to have frequent violent arguments. Young Bill reportedly developed a habit of leaving the house by himself, so as to avoid the violent confrontations. Not surprisingly, he was often described as a loner. Heirens first ran afoul of the law at the age of thirteen, when he was found to be in possession of a loaded gun at school. Eight more weapons were found stashed in his home. As punishment, he was sent to the Catholic-run Gibault School in Terre Haute, Indiana. The year was 1942. Heirens had barely walked out the door of the institution when a new student arrived at the Gibault School: Charles Milles Manson.

Shortly after his release, Heirens managed to get himself arrested once again. That time he was sent to the Benedictine monk-run St. Bede's Academy in Peru, Illinois. Following that, he was urged to take a test for admittance to a "special learning program" at the University of Chicago. He was reportedly an exceptionally gifted student. Soon he discovered girls, however, and his grades began to slip. That was when, purportedly, he decided to go on a killing spree. He also reportedly developed a fondness for dressing in women's clothes and an interest in Hitler and the trappings of Nazism.

The first of the victims was Josephine Ross, a forty-three-year-old, thrice-divorced woman who was said to be on a quest for husband number four; she was known to visit psychics and fortune-tellers to assist in attaining that goal. Ross

was found sprawled on her bed in a room heavily splattered with blood. Her throat had been slashed multiple times and her bloodied head was wrapped in a dress. There was blood on the walls, the floor, the drapes and the furniture. Bloody water and clothes were left in the bathtub, where the body had been washed. No fingerprints could be found anywhere at the scene.

About four months later, on October 5, 1945, a prowler allegedly entered the apartment of an Army nurse. Surprised by the occupant, the intruder hit her and fled, leaving behind fingerprints and an eyewitness. The prints were allegedly later identified as belonging to William Heirens. Strangely though, the prints were not initially identified at all, despite the fact that Heirens' prints were on file with the police. Authorities never explained why the alleged 'serial killer' chose not to attack the victim.

Two months later, on December 10, a former U.S. Army WAV named Francis Brown was brutally shot and stabbed to death. Her nude body was found sprawled over her bathtub, her head wrapped in pajamas. There was a butcher knife buried in her neck and a bullet in her head. A blood trail led from the splattered bed to the bathroom. As in the Josephine Ross case, the home had been thoroughly searched, though nothing appeared to be missing. A bloody fingerprint was allegedly left behind on a doorjamb, but it was only belatedly 'discovered.' A man described as being 35–40 years of age was reportedly seen leaving the property. Heirens was less than half that age.

A local butcher named George Carraboni confessed to murdering Francis Brown, but police discounted his confession, claiming that Carraboni's story kept changing. Carraboni was at that time already under investigation in Cleveland for thirteen murders involving beheadings and mutilations.

On January 7, 1946, the six-year-old daughter of an official with the Office of Price Administration disappeared from an occupied home in a kidnapping/murder case that seemed to borrow heavily from the infamous Lindbergh kidnapping. There were two families living in the home from which Suzanne Degnan vanished, and yet no one living there reportedly saw or heard a thing. After she was reported missing, the house immediately filled with police. A note was found that no one had previously noticed, purportedly because it was mistaken for a discarded tissue. Outside the home, a seven-foot ladder was found that, naturally, was just tall enough to reach to the girl's bedroom window.

The alleged kidnapper demanded $20,000 from the Degnan family for Suzanne's return, but no amount of ransom money was going to bring her back; she had already been skillfully chopped up (by a trained butcher, authorities initially suspected) and then scattered in the city's sewers.

Initially arrested for the murder was the sixty-five-year-old janitor of a nearby apartment building named Hector Verburgh. Police confidently announced to

the press that they had their man. They then spent the next two days tirelessly torturing their suspect—before quietly admitting that they had the wrong man. Verburgh was paid $20,000 (a not insignificant amount of money in the 1940s) to settle his claim against the city.

Heirens was arrested on June 26, 1946, nearly six months after the last murder, on burglary charges. The arrest, which followed a botched break-in, was facilitated by an off-duty officer who just happened to be on-hand to smash a few large flowerpots over Heirens' head. Bill was not in custody long before his captors began accusing him of the murder of Suzanne Degnan. However, he was not initially accused of either the Ross or Brown homicides, which had no known connection to the Degnan kidnapping and murder. He was though accused of another homicide, which was also unrelated to the Degnan case. Police eventually realized that they were not going to be able to make that murder charge stick, since Heirens had been in school in Indiana at the time.

Shortly before Heirens had been arrested, a man named Richard Thomas confessed to the murder of Suzanne Degnan. Thomas had been in Chicago at the time of the Degnan slaying, working near the Degnan home. At the time of his confession, he was awaiting sentencing in Phoenix, Arizona for the crime of molesting one of his own children. He had previously been convicted of attempted extortion in a case involving a ransom note that threatened the kidnapping of a young girl. A handwriting expert in Phoenix determined that Thomas' writing was a close match for the writing on the Degnan ransom note.

Chicago police were duly dispatched to Phoenix to interview the suspect, but their mission was quickly preempted when Illinois State's Attorney William Tuohy publicly announced that William Heirens was the party responsible for the girl's death, even though no evidence existed at that time to support that charge and Heirens was steadfastly denying the allegations.

To elicit a confession from young William, who was not yet an adult, his captors subjected him to what can only be described as severe torture. He was beaten repeatedly for the first few days of his incarceration, and deprived of food, water and sleep. Then he was injected with sodium pentathol, a hypnotic 'truth' drug, and moved to solitary confinement. On his fifth day of custody, he was administered a spinal tap—an exceedingly painful surgical procedure for which there was no medical justification. He was given no anesthesia. Just fifteen minutes after the procedure was completed, he was yanked from his bed and taken, quite literally, for a rough ride on cobblestone roads. Then he was administered a lie-detector test. At no time during his ordeal was he allowed access to counsel.

Heirens, nevertheless, remained a remarkably uncooperative patsy. He ultimately took the fall only, as he later explained, because he had reason to fear for his life.

It was claimed that Heirens confessed to the crimes while under the influence of a hypnotic drug. He purportedly spoke of an alter-identity named George whom he blamed for the murders. In all the decades that have passed since the confession was allegedly obtained, however, no transcript of the interview has ever been produced. Prosecutor Tuohy initially claimed that the transcript was not yet ready for release, but he then later denied that an interview had ever been conducted with the aid of drugs. A number of witnesses recalled that Tuohy had personally attended that interview. One man who had attended, a Dr. Grinker, admitted in 1952 that, despite the allusions to an evil alter ego, Heirens never directly implicated himself in any crimes during the interview.

As for the lie-detector test, Tuohy claimed they it was "inconclusive." The inventors of the particular test that was administered to Heirens, however, published their analysis of the results in a 1953 textbook: "[Heirens'] response on the card test clearly establishes him as an innocent person."

A renowned handwriting expert by the name of George Schwartz was summoned to attempt to match Heirens' handwriting to that on the ransom note and on a message that had been scrawled in lipstick at one of the crime scenes. Schwartz concluded that the "individual characteristics in the two writings do not compare in any respect." Undeterred, the state brought in another expert: Herbert J. Walter, who had aided the state in manufacturing a case against Bruno Richard Hauptmann for the kidnapping of the Lindbergh baby. Walter concluded that Heirens was the author of both the note and the lipstick message, contradicting the opinion that he himself had expressed before being brought onto the case. Many experts have subsequently rejected Walter's conclusions.

At one point in the Heirens investigation, police enlisted the services of Frank San Hamel, a *Chicago Daily News* artist, to 'enhance' the writing on the ransom note. San Hamel claimed that he discovered what he dubbed "hidden indentation writing," and that that purportedly hidden writing conclusively linked Heirens to the note. No one ever bothered to explain what 'hidden indentation writing' actually was or how it linked Heirens to the crime.

Fingerprint evidence allegedly irrefutably established Heirens' guilt, but that evidence was dubious at best. A print supposedly recovered from the ransom note was reported to be a match for Heirens, but the print actually matched on only nine points while the FBI's fingerprint manual specifically required twelve points for a positive identification. More troubling is that the print seems to have surfaced out of thin air. Chicago police initially announced that no prints were present on the note. Analysts at the FBI lab, however, uncovered two prints, but neither of them had been left by Heirens. It was not until years later that the print linking Heirens to the crime was allegedly found on the back of the note. To this day it remains a mystery exactly when that print was found, and by whom.

The fingerprint that was purportedly left prominently displayed at the Brown home was also announced to be a match for William Heirens, despite the fact that Police Captain Emmett Evans had previously announced that the print did not match Heirens' prints. More troubling was that the print had full left and right margins, which is possible only if the finger has been carefully rolled on the surface, as occurs when someone is being fingerprinted, but generally not when a print is inadvertently left at a crime scene.

No blood evidence was ever produced in the case. Nor was any hair or fiber evidence. And no witnesses, initially at least, could link Heirens to the victims or the crime scenes. George E. Subgrunski, a soldier on furlough, had witnessed a man leaving the Degnan residence. He had described the suspect as a 35-year-old man. He was unable to identify Heirens from photos, but he did manage to do so as a spectator in the courtroom. According to the Center for Wrongful Convictions, Subgrunski "proved to be a publicity-seeking fraud."

The state's case was, needless to say, far too shaky to present in a public trial. Prosecutors Tuohy and Wilbert Crowley met behind closed doors with Heirens' defense attorneys and offered their client a single life prison term in exchange for guilty pleas to all three counts of murder. No details of the deal were released to the press. The defense team did not bother to conduct any semblance of an independent investigation of the state's evidence before agreeing to the deal.

Heirens, however, was still resisting the state's efforts to extract a confession and guilty pleas. But then a most remarkable thing happened: a reporter for the *Chicago Tribune* named George Wright drafted a completely bogus confession, which he attributed to anonymous "unimpeachable sources." The *Tribune* ran the fraudulent story on the front page of their July 16 edition, touting it as an actual confession from William Heirens. All of the newspaper's competitors promptly did likewise. Shortly after that, Heirens was compelled to author a confession, *using Wright's fabricated confession as a script*. In other words, he retroactively legitimized what had been an entirely fictional account of the crimes.

A date was then set for Heirens to publicly confess to his alleged crimes and enter his plea. There was a very large turnout for the much-anticipated event; public officials and the press came out in droves to see the show. But the star had not yet been sufficiently coerced to play his part in the charade and he pointedly refused to confess and enter a guilty plea. Both the state's attorneys and Heirens' own defense lawyers were livid. The prosecutors' offer was immediately revoked and a new one proffered: three life terms in exchange for the guilty pleas. A new date was set and September brought Heirens his second chance for a public confession. Mary Jane Blanchard, the daughter of victim Josephine Ross, was there for that second public spectacle. She told the press that she thought Heirens had been framed.

After an excruciating pause, Heirens reluctantly entered his guilty pleas. Audible sighs of relief could be heard from the bench and throughout the courtroom. He was duly sentenced to serve three life sentences. Nearly sixty years later, he is still serving those sentences, and he is still steadfastly proclaiming his innocence. He now has the rather dubious honor of being the longest-serving inmate in the history of the state of Illinois. He has never been given parole consideration, despite the fact that his attorneys told him that he would be afforded such consideration as part of the plea-bargain deal. During his lifetime behind bars, Heirens has distinguished himself by becoming the first inmate in the state's history to graduate college, and he has become an accomplished painter, a skilled tailor, and a talented jailhouse lawyer.

In April 2002, the UK's *Guardian* revealed that a "man who has spent 56 years in jail in what his lawyers describe as 'one of the grossest miscarriages of justice in the history of the US' could finally be freed." The report continued:

> A new investigation into the case of the man known as the Lipstick Killer indicates that the evidence against him was fabricated by detectives…His case has been taken up by the Northwestern University Centre on Wrongful Convictions which has a high success rate in having suspect verdicts overturned…The new investigation indicates that neither the ransom note nor the lipstick confession were written by Heirens. A fingerprint found in Brown's apartment is alleged to have been placed there by police.

The investigation referred to in the *Guardian* article was conducted by a team led by Chicago attorney Jed Stone. Stone's team discovered that the entire case against Heirens was a product of outright fraudulence. Among the conclusions reached by the team, based on a thorough examination of the evidence, were all of the following:

- The 'hidden indentation' writing allegedly uncovered by *Chicago Daily News* artist Frank San Hamel was a fraud and a hoax.
- The handwriting on the Degnan ransom note was not Heirens. In fact, several independent experts say it was Richard Thomas's.
- The much-publicized lipstick message on the Brown wall was not in Heirens' writing and was not written by the same person who wrote the Degnan note.
- The purported Heirens fingerprint originally said to have been on the 'face' of the Degnan note later was said to have been on the back, and its existence is not confirmable.

- The so-called 'bloody fingerprint' found on a doorjamb in the Brown apartment appears to have been a 'rolled' fingerprint like those seen on fingerprint cards in police stations—and unlike those most often found at crime scenes.
- Analysis of the confessions revealed 29 inconsistencies between the confessions and the known facts of the crimes—a signature element in false confessions. Heirens was wrong about basic facts about the crimes, including locations, times, and related events.

And so it goes as, decades later, police, courts, attorneys and the media continue to work in lockstep to manufacture cases against designated patsies.

As for Ressler, he formally began his law enforcement career in 1962, when he served as an agent supervisor for the U.S. Army's Criminal Investigations Division. He claims that he was first approached by the FBI, by a man who later became the assistant director at Quantico, while he was attending graduate school at Michigan State University. After spending nearly three decades of his life purportedly working to bring violent criminals to justice, one of his first actions after his retirement was to go to work on the Dahmer case—on the side of the defense.

Chapter 19

Conclusions

"It's hard for me to believe that a human being could have done what I've done, but I know that I did it."

—Jeffrey Dahmer

With the possible exception of school and workplace shootings, nothing better serves to facilitate the promotion of a 'law-and-order' agenda than the palpable fear aroused by the sociopathic killer—a fear that propels the population into an every-man-for-himself mentality. Anyone, after all, could be a serial killer, hiding behind a mask of civility: a co-worker, a friend, a neighbor…even a family member.

The Phoenix Program has been referenced a number of times in past chapters, and its relevance to this discussion cannot be overstated. Phoenix was, by design, a psychological warfare operation. Its goal was, quite literally, to scare the hell out of the Vietnamese people—to such an extent that their will would be broken and they would accede to the demands of their would-be oppressors. The techniques employed were barbaric. Victims of the program were not merely assassinated; they were frequently raped, tortured, mutilated, dismembered and left posed in grotesque displays for their fellow villagers and family members to find. The crime scenes of the Phoenix Program were, in other words, indistinguishable from the crime scenes of America's serial killers.

In *What Uncle Sam Really Wants,* Noam Chomsky described the type of training given to U.S.-backed Salvadoran death squads, which were modeled after the Phoenix Program's death squads (which in turn were modeled after the Nazi *Einsatzgruppen* death squads active during World War II):

> …draftees were made to kill dogs and vultures by biting their throats and twisting off their heads, and had to watch as soldiers tortured and killed suspected dissidents—tearing out their fingernails,

> cutting off their heads, chopping their bodies to pieces and playing with the dismembered arms for fun.

Chomsky also quotes Jesuit Priest Daniel Santiago, who described the tragic results of such training:

> People are not just killed by death squads in El Salvador—they are decapitated and then their heads are placed on pikes and used to dot the landscape. Men are not just disemboweled by the Salvadoran Treasury Police; their severed genitalia are stuffed into their mouths. Salvadoran women are not just raped by the National Guard; their wombs are cut from their bodies and used to cover their faces. It is not enough to kill children; they are dragged over barbed wire until their flesh falls from their bones, while parents are forced to watch.

Chomsky described one particularly macabre scene staged by the U.S.-trained Salvadoran National Guard. A peasant woman returned home to "find her three children, her mother and her sister sitting around a table, each with its own decapitated head placed carefully on the table in front of the body, the hands arranged on top 'as if each body was stroking its own head.'" Finding it hard to keep the head of the woman's youngest child in place, the assassins had taken the 18-month-old baby's decapitated head and "nailed the hands onto it. A large plastic bowl filled with blood was tastefully displayed in the center of the table."

The goals of psychological warfare are no different here at home than they were in Southeast Asia or Central America: to scare the people, in this case the American people, into willingly surrendering their rights and accepting ever-increasing levels of repression; and to desensitize the people to horrendous levels of interpersonal violence. The ultimate goal, and one that we are rapidly approaching, is the destruction of all social bonds and the obliteration of any remaining sense of community—the complete atomization of society.

Famed 'conspiracy' researcher Mae Brussell made a telling observation nearly three decades ago, in 1974: "What we are now experiencing is the importation of the dreaded 'Operation Phoenix' program into the United States…Through various created and manipulated acts of violence, the only 'solution' to 'chaos, anarchy, and senseless violent acts' will be a police state…We can expect the planned terrorization of the U.S. population to escalate rapidly."

That terrorization has indeed escalated rapidly since the early 1970s. 'Serial killers' are now an accepted, and frequently glorified, part of American pop culture. They have spawned a number of successful Hollywood movie franchises and

their biographies crowd the shelves of America's bookstores. Sensational workplace shootings have become so cliché that the media now move effortlessly from one to the next. And the police state, needless to say, has advanced markedly in the last few decades.

Since we began this saga in the state of Texas, and since we have revisited that state repeatedly, it seems only fitting that we should end there as well, especially since the current laws of that state, which are by far the harshest of any in the country, are due directly to the state's use of a 'serial killer' to manipulate public opinion. The man's name was Kenneth McDuff, and his story begins on August 6, 1966, when he and an eighteen-year-old accomplice abducted and murdered three high school kids, one of whom was brutally raped and tortured. The triple murder was committed, strangely enough, just five days after Charles Whitman's rampage in nearby Austin, Texas. In November of that same year, McDuff was convicted and sentenced to die in the state's electric chair.

Over the next six years, McDuff won a few stays of his scheduled execution, and then had his death sentence commuted to a life term in 1972 when the Supreme Court called a halt to all judicial executions.[40] In 1987, legal action brought against the Texas prison system forced the state's courts to set limits on prison populations, to ease the outrageously overcrowded and grossly inhumane conditions. State authorities responded by seeking a massive infusion of funds to simply build more prisons. Those efforts were stymied by voters. As a result, the state was forced to grant early parole to a substantial number of inmates.

In a ridiculously unlikely scenario, one of those inmates was former "dead man walking" Kenneth McDuff, who walked away a free man on October 11, 1989. State officials apparently failed to notice the literally tens of thousands of nonviolent drug offenders who were clogging up the prison system when they claimed that they had run out of prisoners who could be offered parole.

McDuff returned to Rosebud, Texas, not far from Waco, where it did not take him long to become the most reviled man in the Lone Star State.

Just nine months after his release, he was arrested for pulling a knife and physically threatening a group of young black kids. That offense should have earned him a ticket back to prison for the remainder of his life sentence. Instead, the former death row inmate was released yet again just a few months later. Following his re-release, he repeatedly violated his parole by, among other things, consorting with prostitutes and buying, selling and using drugs. McDuff's parole officer

40 A number of the other killers profiled here were the beneficiaries of that Supreme Court decision as well. In California, those beneficiaries included Sirhan Sirhan, John Lindley Frazier, and Charlie and his girls.

inexplicably chose to let him operate without any meaningful supervision, even though the parolee was obviously someone who needed to be closely monitored.

In October 1991, McDuff, working with an accomplice, committed the first of a series of brutal torture murders of girls in the Waco/Austin area. The first two victims were prostitutes, both of whom were seen with McDuff by witnesses shortly before their disappearances. One of the victims was reportedly in his vehicle when he ran a police roadblock. Nevertheless, police opted not to burden McDuff with any serious questions about the girls' disappearances.

Unhindered by either the police or his parole officer, McDuff killed at least three more girls before he was apprehended in May 1992 following one of the largest manhunts in the state's history. He was brought to trial in February 1993 and once again convicted of capital crimes. The conviction was assured when McDuff opted to take the stand in his own defense, thus allowing his prior convictions and death sentence into evidence. For his efforts, he received a new death sentence (capital punishment had been reinstated in Texas just two years after its use was discontinued). The next year he received another.

Kenneth McDuff's luck had run out. Just after 6:00 PM on November 17, 1998, he became one of the 152 inmates executed during the tenure of Governor George W. Bush. By that time, the condemned man had been credited with permanently changing the Texas criminal justice system.

The public was understandably outraged that a condemned man had been set free to kill again. And they were encouraged to place the blame for that outrage on the well-intentioned prison reforms. In other words, the people of Texas had been sent a very clear message: any attempt to adopt humanitarian reforms in the Texas penal system will result in more Kenneth McDuffs being put back on the streets. That was the scenario that was successfully sold to the voting public. The result was an overhaul of the justice system that proved to be the most sweeping and reactionary in the state's history. To effect what was billed as 'The Texas Solution,' legislators rammed through a flurry of bills dubbed the 'McDuff Laws' that mandated tougher sentencing, exceedingly harsh parole guidelines, and an expenditure of an astounding $2 billion for the construction of new prisons.

Those new prisons, along with the older ones, were soon bursting at the seams. The state of Texas is now the proud owner of what has been described as the largest prison system in the history of the free world. Texas incarcerates its citizens at double the rate of the rest of the nation, which is quite a startling statistic when one considers that the country as a whole has the second highest incarceration rate of any nation, and in absolute numbers, the United States has the world's largest prison population. Texas also hosts far more executions than any other state—nearly as many, in fact, as all the other states combined.

Such is the legacy of a 'serial killer.'

* * * * *

The 'profile' of 'serial killers' that has been presented in this book is obviously one that is quite different from the one that has become a part of our collective conscience. Rather than the profile of a lone predator, driven by his own internal demons, we find instead a profile of controlled assassins and controlled patsies, conditioned and programmed by a variety of intelligence fronts, including military entities, psychiatric institutions, and satanic cults.

There is a very real possibility that an underground network of satanic cults has largely replaced the Mafia's "Murder Incorporated" as America's premier murder-for-hire organization. Researcher and author Michael Newton has drawn that conclusion; in *Raising Hell*, he charges that the 'Black Cross,' a faction of the Process-spawned Four-P cult, functions specifically as a "Satanic Murder, Inc."

Consider the case of Thomas Creech, a member of a nationwide biker gang that was heavily involved in drug trafficking and cult rituals. In 1975, Creech admitted to forty-two contract killings committed on behalf of the gang. Many of the murders had been performed, he said, as ritual human sacrifices. According to Creech's account, his forty-two 'hits' only qualified him for eighth place among the gang's contract killers. Consider also the case of Bernard Hunwick of Dade County, Florida. Following his arrest in 1981 for a series of murders, he confessed to police that he was the leader of a "hit squad" that had committed at least 100 additional contract killings.

Are these merely deranged men suffering from delusions of grandeur? Or are they men who have given anyone willing to listen to their stories a peek into a world that few dare to imagine exists in modern-day America? The question is a disturbing one, but one that nonetheless begs for an answer.

Although the serial killer stories told herein vary considerably from the accounts usually told about these men, the vast majority of the information presented herein was derived from mainstream media sources, including newspaper and magazine articles, television documentaries, books released by 'reputable' publishers, and 'true crime' web sites. The primary difference between this book and others in the genre is that the anomalous facts that invariably accompany the stories of serial killers have not been downplayed and explained away, but rather have been emphasized to illustrate that what are almost universally presented as trivial irregularities are, in fact, patterns that weave their way through the stories of America's most feared criminals. While it is relatively easy to ignore or dismiss

such oddities in the cases of individual serial killers, it is much more difficult to do so when those oddities form connecting threads.

The vast majority of serial killer chroniclers are, at best, misguided. Some are undoubtedly peddling deliberate disinformation. Some writers, like some law enforcement officials, seem to have devoted their entire careers to misrepresenting the true nature of serial murder, mass murder, assassination, and other high-profile crimes.

Seeming to fit that profile is author Gerald Posner, who recently penned a grossly disinformational piece on the Boston Strangler case for *Talk* magazine. Posner's article came directly on the heels of a joint press conference held by the relatives of both Albert DeSalvo and his last purported victim, Mary Sullivan The families were demanding that the investigation be reopened and the long-suppressed police files released. Posner's article reads very much like an effort at damage control. His quick entry into the fray signals that the true nature of the Strangler case will continue to be covered up. Posner's past accomplishments include writing 'exposés' of the JFK assassination (Oswald did it), the Martin Luther King assassination (James Earl Ray did it), and Nazi doctor and Project Paperclip-recruit Joseph Mengele.

The most prolific of serial killer chroniclers is undoubtedly Ann Rule, the former employee of the Seattle Police Department. Rule is best known for her first book, an account of the alleged crimes of Ted Bundy entitled *The Stranger Beside Me*. The veteran crime writer had a unique perspective on the Bundy case, given that she was not writing about some enigmatic figure, but rather someone whom she had "cared for for ten years"…someone she referred to as "my friend, Ted Bundy."

Perhaps it is just a bizarre coincidence that the investigative journalist working on the biggest story of her career happened to be a friend and sometime co-worker of the man who would ultimately be held responsible for the six-year string of killings that she was researching. Even Rule though has acknowledged the long-shot odds of such a coincidence occurring: "Logically, statistically, demographically, the chance that Ted Bundy and I should meet and become fast friends is almost too obscure to contemplate." Equally bizarre is that the two lived strangely parallel lives. Rule acknowledges that, even before the time that she claims they first met, she and Ted had "lived in the same states at the same time—not once but many times."

When they did allegedly meet—in 1971, a few years before the killings began—it was while both were working as counselors at the Seattle Crisis Clinic. Interestingly, a number of cult defectors/survivors have claimed that such services are frequently infiltrated by cult members, so that they may be used as cult recruitment tools. Not surprisingly, those contemplating suicide are particularly

vulnerable to recruitment by cults, given that they have essentially given up hope on all other possible solutions to their problems. What then are we to conclude from the fact that Rule had almost as many connections to the victims as Bundy did?

> ***"[W]hatever supernatural force guides our destinies, it has brought us together in some mind-expanding situations. I must believe this invisible hand will pour more chilled Chablis for us in less treacherous, more tranquil times to come. Love, ted."***
>
> **—Ted Bundy, writing to Ann Rule**

PART III

AND IN OTHER NEWS…

"If they do their job and investigate what needs to be investigated, the rest of the pieces will fall into place, and nobody is going to like what they find out."

—Therapist Mary Bienkowski

"They don't want this pedophile door opened even one crack…It is better to be accused of being a murderer than to have other things come out."

—Author Stephen Singular

Chapter 20

Boulder

"Evil on this scale is impossible to comprehend. To know who murdered JonBenét Ramsey is to know what world we live in."

—James R. Gaines, *Time*, January 20, 1997

In death, she looked more like the six-year-old child that she was than she had in many of the photos taken of her when she was alive. Her lifeless body was found lying on a cold basement floor, wrapped in a blanket. A strip of duct tape purportedly covered her mouth. Her right wrist, raised above her head, was loosely bound with a length of cord. The same type cord was wrapped around her neck, with a broken paintbrush handle taken from her mother's art supplies fashioned into a makeshift garrote.

To some investigators, her bindings looked staged.

She was dressed in a sweatshirt that covered a long-sleeved undershirt. White pajama bottoms covered her white panties, which an autopsy report later revealed were stained with blood. Inspection with a blacklight indicated that there was semen on both of her thighs, but the medial examiner would make no mention of that in his report.

To some investigators, it looked as though she had been 're-dressed' after her death.

She had been sexually abused, severely beaten about the head—causing a massive skull fracture—and then strangled to death. Rigor mortis had fully set in and police on the scene reported the smell of decomposition. She had undigested food in her stomach and small intestine, identified as pieces of pineapple. On the palm of her left hand was drawn a small red heart. Around her neck was a chain bearing a crucifix. On her wrist was a bracelet; engraved on one side was her

name, JonBenét Ramsey, and on the other, the probable date of her death: December 25, 1996.

The previous evening, JonBenét had attended a party at the home of family friends with her parents, John and Patsy,[41] and her brother Burke. The Ramsey family had returned home at 9:30 PM, by which time JonBenét had fallen asleep. She was carried inside and put to bed, allegedly last seen alive at around 10:00 PM. Patsy Ramsey claims that she woke up the next morning sometime after 5:00 AM and headed down the back stairs, which were generally used only by those who were familiar with the house. There she found a ransom note that she quickly read before entering her daughter's room to find that the child was missing.[42] At 5:52 AM, she placed a frantic 911 call. It was later realized that Burke Ramsey's voice could be heard on the recording of that call, although John and Patsy steadfastly maintain that Burke was not yet up from bed when the call was placed.

Boulder police arrived at the Ramsey home seven minutes later to find Patsy hysterical, and John collected, but pacing. This was the second time in just three days that a 911 call had been placed from the Ramsey home. The first was on the night of December 23, during a party attended by an estimated 100 guests drawn

41 John Ramsey is the son of a WWII pilot who later served as the director of the Michigan Aeronautics Commission, where he was known, certainly not affectionately, as "Czar" Ramsey. John himself served as a Naval officer and pilot in the Philippines in the late 1960s. He later formed a company that he named Access Graphics. That company later became a subsidiary of Lockheed-Martin, one of the nation's largest military/intelligence contractors. After the buyout, John served as the company's president and CEO. His vice-president of operations was Donald Paugh, his father-in-law and a former Union Carbide engineer. Patsy, a former beauty queen, was the oldest of Paugh's three daughters. A *Miss America* pageant judge once described her as "a little automaton." In his book on the Ramsey case, Cyril Wecht described the Paugh family as "insular, like a closed society unto itself. Nedra [Patsy's mother] appeared to exert extraordinary influence over her adult daughters." John Ramsey also exerted considerable influence over one of her adult daughters.

42 That is the version of events that Patsy Ramsey has long held to. By her initial account, however, she discovered the disappearance *before* finding the note.

from the elite of Boulder society. The guest list for that party has never been made public, nor has the reason for the first 911 call.[43]

The first officers to arrive at the Ramsey home were presented with the purported ransom note: two-and-a-half hand-written pages of bizarre ramblings that were withheld from the press and the public for nine months. The note's authors demanded a ransom of exactly $118,000 in cash, which happened to be the amount of the Christmas bonus that John had just received. They claimed, rather preposterously, that they represented a "small foreign faction." They warned that if their demands were not met, JonBenét would be decapitated. The Ramseys were instructed to expect a telephone call that very morning between 8:00 and 10:00 AM, but that call, of course, never came.

For reasons that have never been adequately explained, the investigation was compromised from the very beginning. Officers inexplicably failed to secure the crime scene, allowing the family's pastor and a number of friends to freely come and go from the home. No effort was made to prevent contamination of any potential evidence. Detectives did not arrive on the scene until 8:10 AM, over two hours after the first patrol officers arrived. It took another twelve hours for the coroner to arrive (and once there, he reportedly spent just ten minutes examining the body and the crime scene). At around 10:00 AM, detectives allowed John Ramsey to leave the house unescorted for over an hour. He was purportedly on a mission to pick up the mail, although it is unclear why such a trivial errand had such a sense of urgency at a time of family crisis. It is also unclear why it took John so long to complete the errand and why he chose to go alone when several family friends were available to accompany him.

---

43 One man who is known to have attended is Bill McReynolds, who played Santa Claus for the event. On December 26, 1974, exactly twenty-two years before the murder of JonBenét, Bill's own daughter had purportedly been abducted, along with a friend, from the McReynolds' home not far from Boulder. The girl was released unharmed, after being forced to witness an assault on her friend. There were no arrests made and no charges were ever filed. Not long after that, Bill's wife Janet wrote a screenplay, entitled *Hey Rube*, that concerned the abduction, torture and murder of a young girl whose battered body is discovered lying on a cold basement floor. When Bill McReynolds was extended an invitation to speak at JonBenét's memorial service, he used the opportunity to share memories of not just the slain beauty queen but of a few other kids with whom, bizarrely, he had been close before their untimely deaths. The Ramseys considered McReynolds one of their prime suspects—along with 160+ other people whose names appeared on their self-serving suspect list.

One of the most grievous, and baffling, errors committed by detectives was their failure to separate the Ramseys for questioning. Even though detectives had Patsy alone for over an hour, while John was running his errand, no one purportedly thought to question her. Just as baffling is the fact that there was no initial search of the house, by either the family or police. When a detective on the scene finally suggested, at 1:00 PM, that it might be a good idea to conduct a search, it had been nearly eight hours since the family had first discovered the disappearance, seven hours since police had arrived on the scene, and five hours since detectives had arrived, *and yet no one had thought to search the home.* Are we really to believe that after finding the 'ransom' note, the family immediately accepted that their beloved daughter had been taken from the home? What parent would not first conduct a room-by-room search of the house before accepting that eventuality? Indeed, what parent would not search the house repeatedly, in the desperate hope that, somehow, something had been overlooked during an earlier search?

Amazingly enough, when it finally occurred to police that it might be a good idea to search the crime scene, they assigned that task to the prime suspect, John Ramsey. Joining John was good friend Fleet White, an oil company executive who had hosted the party the Ramseys attended the previous evening, and who the Ramseys placed a call to immediately after placing the 911 call. Ramsey and White quickly headed to the basement, where they almost immediately found JonBenét's body, demonstrating in doing so that no effort had previously been made to look for the missing girl (although White later claimed that he had checked the basement earlier and saw nothing out of the ordinary).

John Ramsey promptly picked up his lifeless daughter and removed the tape from her mouth (strangely though, the autopsy report later made no mention of tape residue around JonBenét's mouth). He then carried her upstairs and laid her on the floor. Patsy Ramsey immediately collapsed on the body of her child. A detective then moved the corpse and covered it with a blanket. In the space of just a few minutes, some of the most crucial evidence in the case had been hopelessly contaminated.

Ann Louise Bardach, writing for *Vanity Fair,* quoted one officer's recollections of John and Patsy's reactions to the discovery of the body: "What was interesting was when [John] Ramsey brought the body upstairs he never cried. But when he laid her down, he started to moan, while peering around to see who was looking." Patsy, he said, "peer[ed] at him through splayed fingers" while making sobbing sounds. The officer described being haunted by the manner in which Patsy kept staring at him. He also noted that he never saw either of the Ramseys attempt to comfort or console the other.

The glaring incongruity of finding both a ransom note *and* the body of the purported kidnapping victim, coupled with what was viewed by many as inappropriate

behavior by the Ramseys, seemed to indicate that the crime was something other than a botched kidnapping. The preponderance of the evidence did not support the idea that an intruder was to blame. No footprints were observed outside of the home, even though snow covered much (but not all) of the ground. There were no signs of forced entry. The ransom note most likely originated from within the house. The pages appeared to have been torn from the Ramseys' own legal pad, and a pen found in a cup in the kitchen was likely the writing instrument. According to some reports, the first page in the legal pad, which was still attached, contained what appeared to be a false start at writing the ransom note.

The unlikely scenario that we are asked to believe is that an intruder entered an occupied home seeking a victim to abduct, but he then inadvertently killed his intended victim, at which time he decided to hide the body in the basement, assuming that it wouldn't be found. He then searched the house for pen and paper before composing both an unfinished draft and a final ransom note, the latter of which rambled on at some length.

The room where the body was found was in an out-of-the-way area of the spacious home's basement. Only a family member would have likely known of its existence. John Ramsey acknowledged that fact in a *CNN* interview: "the room that we found her in is kind of a remote part of the basement." "A casual guest would not know where that room is," Patsy added. "It's, you know, kind of out-of-the-way." Despite that early acknowledgement by the Ramseys themselves, the Ramsey spin team later vociferously denied that the room would have been difficult to locate for someone other than a family member.

Steve Thomas, the lead detective on the case, concluded that Patsy Ramsey wrote the ransom note. He contends that of the 74 suspects whose handwriting samples were reviewed by investigators, Patsy was the only one that could not be excluded as a suspect. He has also accused her of deliberately changing some elements of her writing style after the murder, in order to disguise her authorship of the note.

Several days after the discovery of JonBenét's body, the Ramsey family flew her remains to Atlanta, their former home, for burial. Services were held on New Years Eve, after which JonBenét was laid to rest next to her half-sister Elizabeth, another of John Ramsey's daughters. The following day, John and Patsy made their infamous appearance on *CNN*, even while steadfastly claiming to be too grief-stricken to talk to the police. Patsy was heavily sedated, and had been since the day of the murder. She later claimed that she was unable to remember anything that occurred during the weeks immediately following the discovery of the body. Burke Ramsey was reportedly kept heavily drugged after his sister's death as well.

Allegations of prior abuse of the victim soon began to circulate in the media. Video footage of JonBenét's pageant appearances was aired endlessly. The footage offered no proof of the abuse allegations, but it did clearly demonstrate that the

Ramseys had unconscionably marketed their offspring as some kind of hyper-sexualized woman-child.

There was, however, certainly nothing unusual about that on the kiddy pageant circuit, as author Stephen Singular discovered when he ventured into that milieu. What he discovered is a world that few outside of the pageant circuit are familiar with: a world where extraordinarily young girls have had their hair dyed, their teeth capped, their young faces sculpted by plastic surgeons, their chests bunched-up with tape to form the appearance of cleavage, and their eye color enhanced with contact lenses. Singular also discovered that photographing these pre-pubescent beauty queens in risqué poses is a routine business undertaken by some of the most highly regarded child photographers in the country. JonBenét Ramsey was just one of an estimated 250,000 girls who are a part of this billion-dollar-a-year business that, by all appearances, caters primarily to the pedophilic tendencies of the adults who gravitate around the 3,000 child beauty pageants held every year.

While JonBenét's longtime involvement in the child pageant business raises a number of questions, it does not directly answer the question of whether she had been molested either on the night of her death or before that time. The autopsy report, which was released in a severely redacted form on February 14 and in full on August 13, made mention of chronic genital inflammation, foreign matter in the vagina, and "epithelial erosion." A detective working the case swore in an affidavit that the coroner, John Meyer, told her that someone had definitely had sexual contact with the child. Meyer drew no such conclusions in his report.

Independent experts who have examined the evidence have been far less circumspect. Dr. Robert Kirschner of the University of Chicago's pathology department noted that JonBenét's vaginal opening was twice what is normal for a girl her age. He also stated that the "genital injuries indicate penetration, but probably not by a penis, and are evidence of molestation that night as well as previous molestation." Dr. Cyril Wecht, one of the most respected forensic pathologists in the country, told an interviewer: "This to me is evidence of sexual abuse. I think any forensic gynecologist and forensic pathologist would agree with that…If she had been taken to a hospital emergency room, and doctors had seen the genital evidence, her father would have been arrested."

There was one doctor who had numerous opportunities to observe that evidence. As was widely reported, JonBenét had been taken to her pediatrician no fewer than twenty-seven times in the previous three to four years. The doctor claimed, rather disingenuously, that that was a normal rate of visitation for a child her age. He also claimed that he had never seen, during any of those visits, any evidence of abuse. That claim, however, was contradicted by the forensic evidence, which indicated chronic abuse.

Cellmark Diagnostics in Germantown, Maryland, the CIA-linked forensic lab that was thrust into the national limelight during the OJ Simpson trial, was unable to return any conclusive findings from any of the biological materials it received on the case. A number of other OJ players surfaced in Buffalo as well. Criminologist Henry Lee was hired on as a forensics adviser to District Attorney Alex Hunter.[44] DNA wunderkinds Barry Scheck and Peter Neufeld joined the party as well. Oddly enough, with all the DNA all-stars on board, no DNA evidence has ever been produced in the case.

From the beginning, when a gag order was placed on the officers working the case, there have been concerted efforts made to control the flow of information that the public has received about the murder of JonBenét Ramsey. Largely responsible for shaping public perception of the case has been the law firm retained almost immediately by the Ramseys: Haddon, Morgan, Mueller, George, Mackey & Foreman.[45] The tentacles of Hal Haddon's firm seemed to reach into every nook and cranny of the Ramsey case.

---

44 Alex Hunter, the man primarily responsible for prosecuting the JonBenét Ramsey murder case, had been Boulder's District Attorney since 1972. During his tenure, he developed a reputation for extremely lenient enforcement of drug laws, making the city a particularly friendly place for narcotics traffickers. Since 1969, Hunter had been a limited partner in a business enterprise with a lawyer named William Gray, who just happened to be John Ramsey's civil attorney.

45 The powerful firm has, as Cyril Wecht noted, "deep connections to the Democratic power structure that control[s] state politics" in Colorado. Hal Haddon was the manager of Gary Hart's successful U.S. Senate campaigns as well as his unsuccessful presidential bid. Haddon also has close ties to District Attorney Alex Hunter and former Governors Roy Romer and Richard Lamm. A *Los Angeles Times* report from August 2003 describes his firm as having "a long history of handling high profile cases and getting charges either dismissed outright or dramatically reduced. In cases where clients have been found guilty, they have often been able to get sentences drastically cut." The *Times* cites as an example the case of Rockwell International Corporation's Rocky Flats nuclear weapons plant, which was raided by federal agents who discovered "widespread and egregious environmental contamination. Radioactive waste was being illegally dumped into rivers, fields and released into the atmosphere." Despite the fact that the evidence against the company was overwhelming, no company officials were ever charged in the case, which was settled with Rockwell paying a nominal fine. In 1990, Haddon represented 'gonzo' journalist Hunter S. Thompson, who was facing sexual assault charges. The charges against Thompson were dropped. Curiously, Thompson has been accused by witnesses in the Franklin case of being a producer of child snuff films. He now pens a column entitled *Hey Rube*.

Patsy Ramsey was represented by Haddon partners Patrick Furman and Patrick Burke. Burke was perhaps best known for having won acquittal for the white supremacist accused of killing Denver radio personality Alan Berg. Throughout the Ramsey investigation, he was frequently seen in the doorway of what was dubbed the 'JonBenét War Room,' often chatting with Peter Hofstrom, an assistant to District Attorney Hunter, and Tripp DeMuth, one Hunter's prosecutors on the case. John Ramsey was represented by partners Bryan Morgan and Lee Foreman. Morgan, who had once been nominated to serve as a justice on the Colorado Supreme Court, was regularly seen holding breakfast meetings with his old friend, Peter Hofstrom. Burke Ramsey was represented by yet another member of the Haddon team.

The Boulder Police Department, led by Chief Tom Koby,[46] took the unusual step of retaining its own representatives, in the form of a trio of private practice attorneys. One of the three, Robert Miller, had recently teamed with Haddon on a civil suit. Another of the trio, Daniel Hoffman, had previously been defended in a malpractice suit by Haddon partner Lee Foreman.

In addition to the legal firepower, the Ramseys also hired a professional spokesman. Filling that post was Washington spin-meister Patrick Korten, who had served in the Reagan Administration as the consultant for the Office of Personnel Management at the time that striking air traffic controllers were fired, and as the chief spokesman for the outrageously corrupt Ed Meese-run Justice Department. Also on Korten's résumé were stints serving as mouthpieces for Iran/Contra conspirator Oliver North and for the Pharmaceutical Research Manufacturers of America.

Another addition to the Ramsey spin team was premier FBI profiler John Douglas. One of his former colleagues, Gregg McCrary, was also approached to join the team, but he declined the offer—after offering the opinion that the murder looked to him like a "staged domestic homicide." Also on the Ramsey team were two private investigation firms whose gumshoes reportedly interviewed nearly every witness approached by Boulder police. Rounding out the team was a retired homicide investigator named Lou Smit, whose claim to fame was having

46 Before coming to Boulder, Chief Koby had served as a deputy chief, and then as assistant chief, of the Houston Police Department. His chief and mentor in Houston had been Lee P. Brown, who later became the chief of the NYPD and then served in Washington as the federal 'drug czar.' Before relocating to Houston, Brown had served as Police Commissioner for the city of Atlanta, at the very time that the so-called 'child murders' rocked that city (see next chapter).

purportedly solved the murder of Karen Grammar, the sister of actor and accused pedophile Kelsey Grammar.

Smit was brought out of retirement by District Attorney Hunter, ostensibly to assist in gathering evidence *against* the Ramseys. Strangely enough though, he resigned a year-and-a-half later and went to work *for* the Ramseys. When he switched sides, he brought with him a full accounting of all the state's evidence in the case, which, truth be told, the Ramseys had access to all along anyway. Boulder police loudly complained that Hunter repeatedly shared information with the Ramseys, even going so far as to supply the couple, before their being questioned by police, with copies of police reports and of their initial statements to investigators. John and Patsy were, therefore, able to insure that their stories remained consistent with both the known facts and with their prior alibis.

To their credit, it appears that at least some of the officers on Boulder's police force (which had a healthy distrust of Hunter and his sidekick Smit) attempted to honestly investigate the case. Their efforts were impeded, however, by not only the District Attorney's office, but by the Denver Police Department and the FBI. Local officials resisted, unsuccessfully, the involvement of both agencies. In April 1997, Boulder police abruptly stopped sharing information with Hunter's office. Shortly after that, the computer containing the Ramsey case files in the aforementioned 'War Room' was hacked into by persons unknown. That same month, John and Patsy Ramsey submitted to their first formal police interviews, four full months after JonBenét had been laid to rest. The date of the interviews was, appropriately enough, April 30, 1997: *Walpurgisnacht*.

On that very same day, a man named James Michael Thompson, who worked for a private company that specialized in transporting corpses, stole two pages from the morgue book at Boulder Community Hospital. Those two pages had recorded the arrival of JonBenét's body four months earlier. On May 21, Thompson was charged with the theft of the pages. He was also charged with abuse of corpses, those charges arising from his macabre habit of grotesquely posing the corpses in his charge. On June 18, the very same James Michael Thompson attempted to burn down the Ramsey home. Patsy had reportedly expressed a desire that the house be destroyed, and had vowed that she would never return there. Officials predictably announced that Thompson's actions had no connection to the murder of JonBenét.

June also marked the beginning of the crumbling of the local political structure in Boulder, Colorado. City Manager Tim Honey was the first casualty. Before long, a third of the city's council members had left office, the mayor had decided to move on, the head of the Chamber of Commerce had left office, and Police Chief Tom Koby and Police Commander John Eller had both opted to step down. In his book on the case, Stephen Singular states, without elaboration:

"Numerous powerful people had been in the Ramsey's home and had been exposed to JonBenét." Many of those powerful people were in the Ramsey home just two days before JonBenét's death, on the night that the first 911 call was placed. It is very unlikely that any of those people will ever be named, but it is quite possible that some of them were public officials who opted to step away from the limelight.

* * * * *

What really happened to JonBenét Ramsey on that fateful day in 1996? And why did the case become such a *cause celebre*? After all, the killing of a child in this country is certainly not an uncommon occurrence, nor is it normally an event deemed worthy of national media attention. As the *Village Voice* reported in 1997, the United States has, per capita, the highest rate of child homicide in the world. None of the world's people slaughter their children more frequently, or more cavalierly, than do Americans.[47] With the notable exceptions of the occasional Polly Klaas or Adam Walsh, few of these murder victims are deemed worthy of anything approaching a full-scale media circus.

What then are we to make of the JonBenét Ramsey case? The family would like you believe that it was nothing more than a badly botched kidnapping plot. That hardly seems likely, however. The kidnapping scenario was most likely conceived after the fact, to cover up the accidental or intentional death of the child. The plan probably called for the body to be disposed of and the disappearance blamed on an unknown abductor. For whatever reason though, the body could not be disposed of. When it became apparent that a search would quickly yield the girl's remains, John Ramsey made sure that he was the one to make the discovery, thereby compromising the crime scene and nullifying any forensic evidence linking him to the body. None of that, of course, answers the question of *why* JonBenét Ramsey was killed.

One theory holds that Patsy Ramsey killed JonBenét in a fit of rage resulting from a bedwetting incident. While that scenario is not necessarily "absurd," as the Ramseys have labeled it, it does seem to fall short of adequately explaining the crime. Another theory holds that John Ramsey killed JonBenét accidentally when

47 America's closest ally, the United Kingdom, seems to have its sights set on catching up. In January 2002, the *Independent* reported that a "record number of children [were] murdered in Britain last year." The rate of child homicides had risen 40% in just one year. England's child homicide rate is now "thought to be the highest in Europe."

his ongoing abuse got out of hand. While that is probably closer to the truth, it still appears to fall short of providing a full explanation. Stephan Singular has put forth a more disturbing theory: he believes that JonBenét was killed because of her involvement in a child pornography and prostitution ring. Singular theorizes that one of the parents was involved, essentially acting as a pimp in selling the young girl to the ring. The cover-up of her death took place, according to Singular, when the guilty party had to conceal that fact from the other parent, who was not involved.

While Singular is on the right track, his analysis still probably falls a little short of the mark. The truth likely is that *both* of the Ramseys were involved in pimping their daughter out to other pedophiles. The massive cover-up that has shrouded the investigation from day one is indicative of the type of systemic corruption that leads to these types of cases being routinely covered up. Such a far-reaching effort certainly could not have been orchestrated by one parent working to fool the other.

Rumors of child pornography have surrounded the case from the earliest days of the investigation. Police records indicate that warrants were sought to search the Ramsey home for pornographic materials. The *San Jose Mercury News* reported that police investigators "had a strong initial suspicion that someone in the family had an interest in child pornography…three days after the girl's bludgeoned body was discovered in the basement of her family's upscale home, Boulder, Colo. police seized computers, computer disks, CD-ROMs, and video and still photography equipment, according to the search warrants." At least 150 videotapes were seized from the home. It was also alleged that John Ramsey had been seen frequenting a seedy Denver porno shop. In the tabloid press, it was reported that the computers at Access Graphics were loaded with child pornography. While the credibility of that story may be in dispute,[48] it is interesting to note that after the murder, Access Graphics added guards and greatly increased security at its headquarters.

A California woman recently presented to Boulder police—through her therapist—information that she claimed to have about the case. The therapist, Mary Bienkowski, spoke of a pedophile ring operating in the Boulder area. She identified her client of ten years as a past victim of the ring, which she said had direct links to the Ramsey family. She also said that her client had provided police with

48 There is a possibility that the story was dumped in the tabloid press for the express purpose of discrediting it. *Konformist* editor Robert Sterling and others have noted that the tabloid press is frequently used to taint stories that are threatening to break in more respectable avenues of the media.

the names of several people who had witnessed the murder of JonBenét. Bienkowski also claimed that the witness had provided evidence of the ongoing abuse of other children. The unidentified witness was interviewed by agents of the FBI. Shortly after that, she went into hiding, afraid for her life. The Boulder Sheriff's office portrayed the woman as a crank, claiming that she had a history of making false reports. The woman, however, maintained that while she had indeed made previous reports, they were not *false* reports, but rather *uninvestigated* reports. There is no indication that the leads she supplied on the Ramsey case were ever investigated.

Could such a ring have existed in Boulder? And if so, could that have provided the hidden subtext of the JonBenét Ramsey murder? Conclusive evidence is hard to come by, but a few tantalizing bits and pieces have surfaced.

Randy Simons was considered the best, and the most expensive, child photographer in the Boulder area. At least one pageant mother reported to author Singular that Simons had approached her about shooting nudes of her daughter. She declined the offer. How many pageant mothers consented to such offers is unknown. In June 1996, just months before JonBenét's death, Simons took what were described as 'cover-girl' shots of the oft-photographed beauty queen (who on several occasions had been photographed with Daphne White, her best friend and the daughter of Fleet White).

Just after JonBenét's death, Simons abruptly left his wife and daughter in Denver and moved to a remote area of eastern Colorado. No one seemed to know why he had done so. He was said to be extremely distraught over the murder. He reportedly placed several frantic calls to friends, during which he expressed a profound fear for his life. He wrote an article for *Stagelines*, a pageant newsletter, in which he claimed that he was being pursued by "paramilitary types." He also expressed concern to the newsletter's publisher about the possibility of someone releasing "inappropriate" photos of JonBenét.

When the Wonderland raids swept through a number of American cities, one of those arrested was Richard Bruce Thomas, a computer consultant living in Ft. Collins, Colorado, about an hour's drive from the Ramsey home. Thomas was found shot to death in his home on September 5, 1998. His death was ruled, as always, a suicide. When a man named James Partin was arrested on charges of distributing child pornography on the Internet, his Columbus, Ohio home was found to contain a photograph of JonBenét Ramsey. Partin was a prime suspect in the 1983 disappearance of a fourteen-year-old girl from Idaho Springs, Colorado.

Stephan Singular took some of these scraps of evidence that he had collected and presented them to District Attorney Alex Hunter, and then to Detective Sergeant Tom Wickman of the Boulder Police Department, and then to Ellis

Armistead, one of the Ramseys' private investigators. All three took his information but offered nothing in return, and all three chose not to investigate the leads that he provided.

* * * * *

What could prove to be a key piece of evidence in the case has been largely ignored by the media and by various theories of the crime: the undigested food in JonBenét's stomach and small intestine, which indicated that the girl had eaten in fairly close proximity to her death.

According to the Ramseys' version of events, JonBenét had eaten earlier in the evening, while at the White's party, but she had not eaten at home before being put to bed, since she was, according to the Ramseys, already asleep. The existence of the largely undigested food matter has, therefore, never been satisfactorily explained. In fact, it has been almost entirely ignored by most theorists, although some have tried to explain it away with the theory that JonBenét's would-be abductor(s) fed her before killing her. Such theories require belief in the dubious notion that although the mysterious intruder(s) forgot to bring materials to write a ransom note (or an already prepared ransom note), they did remember to pack a snack for their abductee.

A more reasonable explanation for the undigested food is that JonBenét was killed shortly after she was known to have last eaten. She was, to be more specific, killed *before* the Ramsey family returned home from the party they had been attending. Such a scenario would help to explain some of the other facts and persistent rumors that have surrounded the case. For example, it was mentioned previously that JonBenét's body, despite being in the cold confines of the basement of the Ramsey home, had decomposed to the point of emitting a noticeable odor. It is unlikely that decomposition would have advanced to that stage had JonBenét been killed between 10:00 PM (when she was allegedly put to bed) and 5:00 AM (when her disappearance was allegedly discovered).

Some investigators believe that JonBenét's clothing was changed after her death. The Ramseys have acknowledged that she was in fact changed before being put to bed, after the family had returned home from the party. If she was already dead at that time, then she was indeed re-dressed after her murder. It is interesting to note here that in the Ramseys' own telling of the story, the limp figure of JonBenét was carried into the house upon the family's return home.

Some investigators also believe that some elements of the crime scene, particularly the ligatures, were staged. That is also consistent with the child having been killed elsewhere and then deposited in the basement. It is possible that the

ligatures were added after the fact, when it became apparent that it was not going to be possible to dispose of the body. It is also possible that the ligatures were an artifact of the party, necessarily loosened when the body was re-dressed, and then retied.

The claim by the California woman that there were numerous witnesses to the murder is also consistent with JonBenét having been killed at the party. One of those witnesses would have been sibling Burke, who some suspect witnessed or was involved to some degree in the killing. That would explain the Ramsey family's concerted efforts to shield the boy from the media and from inquisitive police (the Ramseys claim that the extraordinary security afforded Burke is intended to protect him from the still-at-large killer).

As a final note on the Ramsey case, John and Patsy have on occasion publicized the fact that a stun-gun was possibly used to incapacitate JonBenét prior to her death. That fact is supposed to bolster the intruder theory, since the Ramseys claim that they have never owned a stun-gun. One of the videotapes seized from their home, however, included instructions on how to use, of all things, a stun-gun.

Chapter 21

Atlanta

"I have never believed Wayne Williams killed not only Yussef—I don't believe Wayne Williams killed anybody."

—Camille Bell, the mother of victim Yussef Bell

"I don't believe he did it any more than I'd go out there and shoot somebody myself."

—Willie May Mathis, the mother of victim Jefferey Mathis

"Wayne Williams ain't doing no time for killing my child. He ain't doing no time for killing nary a child."

—Eunice Jones, the mother of victim Clifford Jones

As the cases of Marc Dutroux and many others have amply illustrated, there can be a very fine line between organized pedophilia and serial murder. Perhaps nowhere was that point more clearly made than in what was at the time America's murder capitol: Atlanta, Georgia, during the killings commonly referred to as the Atlanta Child Murders.

By this time, it should not come as any great surprise that the Atlanta killings did not follow the patterns suggested by serial killer 'profiles.' First of all, the victims of the 'child' murders were not all children; six of them were in their twenties, and there were many more in that age bracket who should have made the victims' list. "The List," as the official tally of victims was dubbed, was one of the more controversial aspects of the investigation, and one that needs to be addressed in order to put the remainder of this discussion in context.

A number of researchers have charged that The List was subject to constantly shifting parameters, which resulted in a number of victims whose cases appeared

to be connected being excluded from the official victim count. Chet Dettlinger—a former Public Safety Commissioner and assistant to the chief of the Atlanta Police Department, and the co-author of *The List*—maintains that sixty-three "pattern" victims were arbitrarily left off the official tally, more than twice as many as actually did make it. He also argues that twenty-five of those victims were killed *after* the arrest of Wayne Williams, the purported Atlanta child murderer. The county's chief medical examiner at the time of the killings, Joseph Burton, has said much the same thing: "by no means did the deaths of young black children and young black men stop with the arrest and conviction of Wayne Williams."

Among the names that were arbitrarily omitted were a number of adult victims. Before March 1981, nearly two years after the killings had begun, adults were not deemed to fit the 'profile' and were therefore excluded from The List. After the parameters were changed to allow the first adult victim to be included, five more victims in their twenties were added in rapid succession over the next eight weeks, but none of those killed in the prior twenty months who otherwise fit the pattern were retroactively added. Similarly, many female victims were excluded, even though two of the earliest list victims were young girls. A number of young boys were excluded as well, for reasons that appear to have been entirely arbitrary. There is a considerable amount of uncertainty, therefore, as to how many victims there actually were, and when the killings began and ended. This discussion will be limited to the twenty-nine officially recognized victims, though it is quite apparent that at least as many more were deliberately omitted from The List. As Public Safety Commissioner Dick Hand has acknowledged, "The list that was created by the Task Force, in my own personal opinion, was an artificial list."

According to the artificial—but government sanctioned—list, the victims of the Atlanta 'child' murders ranged in age from seven-year-old LaTonya Wilson to twenty-eight-year-old John Porter. Males and females were both represented, though a large majority were male. All of the victims, significantly, were African-American. The was no consistent pattern to the killings, as medical examiner Burton acknowledged: "there was no signature that said this case and this case and this case are people that have been murdered or killed by the same individual." The first victim, fourteen-year-old Ed Smith, was shot. All the rest were killed with weapons of opportunity. The most common cause of death was asphyxiation, with strangulation a close second. Two victims had their heads bludgeoned with blunt objects, two others were stabbed to death, another was drowned, and young Aaron Wyche broke his neck after being pushed or dropped from a bridge. One victim's body was never recovered and several others were too badly decomposed by the time of their discovery to determine the cause of death.

There was no discernable pattern to the cases that were added to the list, beyond the fact that all the victims were young African-Americans who met with violent deaths. As *Los Angeles Times* reporter and *The List* co-author Jeff Prugh put it, "There was no pattern, per se, that I could really see, other than that they were all dead." But while there was no pattern connecting the manner of the abductions and killings, there were a number of troubling connections between the victims, most of whom lived in the same four 'inner city' neighborhoods. Those connections were consistently, and seemingly deliberately, ignored by the police.

The first two victims, young teens Ed Smith and Alfred Evans, were friends who spent a good deal of time together. They disappeared just four days apart, strongly suggesting that the victims were known to the killer(s) and were definitely not randomly selected. That would become all the more apparent as the body count mounted.

More than one witness reported seeing the fourth victim, Yussef Bell, getting into a car with his mother's former husband. The man was considered a suspect in the boy's disappearance for more than a year, but was ultimately cleared of any involvement. He would not be the only close friend or family member to become a prime suspect.

The body of the next victim, Angel Lenair, showed clear signs of sexual abuse, although that evidence was notably downplayed and deemed insignificant by authorities. As the story continued to unfold, however, it became increasingly apparent that sexual abuse of the child victims was indeed of considerable significance.

Like Yussef Bell, Jefferey Mathis was also last seen getting into a car, described as blue by witnesses. According to another witness, Jefferey was again in a blue car, and still very much alive, a couple days later. This was just the first of many bizarre episodes that suggested that at least some of the victims were not killed immediately, but were kept alive for an indeterminate period of time following their abductions. That were other indications as well that at least some of the victims were not killed right away: some of them were found wearing different clothing than what they had been wearing when they disappeared, and some had undigested food in their stomachs that was not consistent with the meals they were known to have eaten before their abductions.

Shortly after Jefferey's disappearance, other boys at his school reported men in a car attempting to lure them away from the school grounds. They described it as a blue car. While that certainly did not amount to a positive identification, it did represent a potential break in the case. The boys reported the incident, and even memorized the car's license plate number to give to police—who nevertheless declined to investigate the lead.

The next victim, Eric Middlebrooks, received a phone call at 10:30 on a Sunday night and, upon hanging up the phone, immediately grabbed his tools and raced out the door, claiming that he suddenly had to repair his bike. He was never seen alive again. The questions of who could have called the boy and what they could have said to him to lead him so eagerly to his death are ones that have never been answered.

The next victim who later became a name on the list added a rather peculiar twist to the case, yet again reminiscent of the notorious Lindbergh abduction. Seven-year-old LaTonya Wilson was allegedly kidnapped from her occupied home, but an eyewitness account of the abduction painted a scenario that could not possibly have occurred. Perhaps significantly, the disappearance occurred on June 22, the summer solstice. A friend of the young girl's family was initially considered a prime suspect in the abduction and murder—a reasonable suspicion considering the bizarre and implausible circumstances of her kidnapping. The targeting of the man by police, however, provoked outrage in Atlanta's black community, as had the police targeting of Camille Bell's former husband.

The death of the next victim, Aaron Wyche, was initially deemed accidental, until it became obvious that the official finding that the boy had 'fallen' was, to say the least, extremely unlikely. Anthony Carter reportedly disappeared while playing hide-and-seek outside his home around 1:00 AM, though one wonders who allows a nine-year-old to play hide-and-seek outside in the middle of the night. Some police investigators apparently pondered that very question, concluding that the story told by the boy's mother seemed rather unlikely. She was subsequently arrested, then released and thereafter tailed and questioned for several months, eventually leading her to move out of the area. Those actions by the police further enraged the citizens of Atlanta.

In mid-July 1980, an activist group formed by the parents of victims finally pressured the police into linking the killings and launching a serious investigation, or at least the appearance of one. The disappearances and murders had begun at least a year earlier and at least eleven lives had already been taken. Police reluctantly announced the formation of a special task force on July 17. Before the end of the month, another victim, Earl Terrell, disappeared. His aunt promptly received a call from an unidentified person who delivered the following cryptic message: "I've got Earl. Don't call the police." Shortly thereafter, she received a second call: "I've got Earl. He's in Alabama. It will cost you $200 to get him back. I will call back on Friday."

There is no indication that Earl was in fact taken to Alabama. There is also no evidence that anyone is actually stupid enough to kidnap a child and transport him out of the state for the purpose of raising a couple hundred dollars in ransom money. Those bizarre phone calls though served a very important purpose: they

immediately made the case a federal matter. The task force was barely on its feet when the FBI rode into town to take over the investigation, with some 200 FBI agents descending on the city of Atlanta. Suddenly, everyone wanted to be involved in investigating what police had previously considered to be a batch of unrelated violent deaths. The nation's top 'big city' detectives were flown into town and hailed as 'supercops' come to save the day. The FBI sent in 'profilers' in what was billed as the first real test of the 'science' of profiling. The Bureau's self-styled experts predicted, not surprisingly, that a black serial killer was responsible for the murders.

Before the investigation was wrapped up, no less an authority than Vice-President George Bush even came to town, ostensibly to coordinate federal and local efforts and to make sure the investigation stayed on track. Citizens, meanwhile, began organizing themselves into 'bat patrols'—vigilante groups who patrolled the streets of their neighborhoods wielding baseball bats. The police quickly saw fit to break these groups up.

In the ensuing months, community leaders organized search teams, eventually numbering thousands of volunteers. Often working alongside these mostly African-American search teams were groups of unidentified white 'volunteers,' attired in flak jackets and carrying rifles, walkie-talkies, and various other pieces of paramilitary equipment. No explanation has been offered for the presence of these curiously equipped men.

In addition to federalizing the investigation, Earl Terrell's disappearance was significant for another reason: it exposed the dark underbelly of the Atlanta killings. Earl disappeared after leaving a public swimming pool that was directly across from a house that was known to be the hub of a child pornography ring. The owner of the house, John David Wilcoxen, was ultimately convicted for his complicity in the ring. He was never, however, seriously considered as a suspect in Terrell's disappearance, despite a witness placing Earl at Wilcoxen's house on several occasions, and despite the fact that literally thousands of child pornography photos were seized from Wilcoxen's home.

The next victim, Clifford Jones, was found dead alongside a dumpster behind a laundromat in late August 1980. No fewer than three young witnesses reported seeing the laundromat manager, James Brooks, go into the backroom accompanied by a black male youth. One of them even saw the boy beaten, anally raped and strangled to death by Brooks and another man, Calvin Smith. Other witnesses saw Brooks, wearing a hooded ceremonial robe, carry a large object out to the trash where the body was later discovered. Brooks candidly admitted to police that the boy had been in the laundromat around the time of his death, but he steadfastly denied any involvement in the murder. Notably though, he failed two polygraph examinations. The police nevertheless cleared him as a suspect, claiming

that the eyewitness to the killing was "retarded." They did not bother to explain all the other witness accounts or the failed polygraphs.

At around the time of Jones' death, the task force finally began to assemble the infamous 'list.' Darron Glass was the next name added to it. Shortly after his disappearance, his mother received an emergency breakthrough call from someone claiming to be her son, but when she picked up the line to speak to him, it had gone dead. Around that same time, an explosion at a daycare center in one of Atlanta's black neighborhoods took the lives of four more kids. Investigators quickly concluded that the explosion was accidental—the result of a boiler malfunction. Many in the neighborhood though, and in other neighborhoods where children were under siege, remained unconvinced.

Charles Stephens was the next victim to disappear. When his remains were discovered shortly thereafter, the crime scene was quickly contaminated by an officer who opted to toss a blanket over the body (the contamination of crime scenes was, alas, a fairly common occurrence throughout the investigation). Shortly after Charles' disappearance, a drug dealer and police informant told investigators that he had seen the body of a black youth in the backseat of a customer's car. He also reported that he knew the man to be a pedophile who had on occasion offered him cash to procure young male prostitutes. Needless to say, this lead was not followed up on by police.

Next to disappear was Aaron Jackson, a friend of both earlier victim Aaron Wyche and future victim Patrick Rogers, who disappeared just nine days later. Rogers was the oldest victim to date at fifteen. He was connected to at least a dozen other victims on and off 'The List.'

Lubie Geter disappeared next. Like Earl Terrell, Geter was connected to child pornographer Wilcoxen, as well as to another adult pedophile who was later connected to William Barrett, one of the last names to be put on the list. Three weeks after Geter's disappearance, his friend Terry Pue disappeared as well. Pue's body yielded some of the best forensic evidence of any of the killings: fingerprints. The prints were not left by Wayne Williams, a fact that neither side would mention at trial.

The next victim, Patrick Baltazar, called the task force shortly before his disappearance and expressed fear for his life. His teacher received a call not long after he vanished from a loudly sobbing boy who did not identify himself, though the teacher suspected that the boy was Patrick. The next addition to the list was Curtis Walker. An uncle with whom Walker lived was murdered as well, but he did not make the list. Next was Joseph Bell, who knew several other victims on the list. Shortly after he was reported missing, a co-worker reported receiving a call from the boy during which Joseph begged for help and stated that he was "almost dead." Days later, Bell's mother received a call from a woman who

claimed to be holding the boy. The woman called again later and managed to talk to Bell's two siblings. The mother reported both calls to the task force, but never got a call back.

Ten days after Bell's disappearance, his friend Timothy Hill disappeared as well. Hill was later connected to earlier victims Alfred Evans, Jefferey Mathis, Patrick Baltazar, and Anthony Carter. Hill was known to frequent a home owned by a known pedophile named Thomas Terrell. At least two witnesses, one a neighbor of Terrell, placed Hill at the house around the time of his disappearance. Terrell admitted to police that he knew the boy and had previously engaged in sexual acts with him. Although what he admitted to was a crime, he was not arrested nor was he ever seriously considered as a suspect.

Larry Rogers and Eddie Duncan, who was connected to earlier victim Patrick Rogers, were the first adults to make the list. They were followed by Michael McIntosh, who knew both Joseph Bell and final victim Nathaniel Cater. McIntosh had been seen on numerous occasions at Thomas Terrell's house. John Porter disappeared next, though he was not put on the list until much later, as part of an effort to build a dubious fiber evidence case against Williams. Jimmy Payne was next on the list, followed by William Barrett. Barrett was connected to the same unidentified white male pedophile who was connected to earlier victim Lubie Geter. Police records later revealed that Barrett had reported being in fear for his life after receiving threats from someone he described as a "hit man."

The final victim to make the list was Nathaniel Cater, an admitted drug dealer and homosexual prostitute. The discovery of Cater's body on May 24, 1981 provided the first 'evidence' throughout the two-year killing spree that allegedly linked Williams to the crimes: he had been observed on a bridge two days earlier at the time a splash allegedly occurred in the river below. Two days later, Cater's body was discovered downstream from the bridge, which purportedly pointed to Williams' guilt. Some investigators do not believe, however, that Williams ever stopped his car on that bridge or that there was a splash that night. It has been noted that the officer filing the report did not immediately report the splash, nor attempt to verify the source of the alleged splash, nor request equipment to drag the river and recover the alleged object. It is certainly possible that the entire incident was fabricated to tenuously link Wayne Williams to the murders.

Significantly, the medical examiner was initially unable to ascertain the time of Cater's death, but he later accommodated police by placing it in accordance with the bridge story. No fewer than four eyewitnesses, however, came forward to report that they had seen Cater very much alive *the day after* the alleged bridge incident. That crucial exculpatory evidence was never introduced at trial. Williams' attorneys later claimed that they were never informed of the existence

of the witnesses, but that claim is rather dubious considering their overall performance at trial.

Williams was not immediately arrested following the infamous bridge incident, but he was publicly identified as the new prime suspect, thus beginning a two-and-a-half-week press circus at the Williams' family home and a trial by media that found Wayne guilty long before he ever set foot in a courtroom. This occurred despite the fact that there was a noticeable lack of evidence tying Williams to *any* of the murders. The local district attorney was keenly aware of that fact and was therefore not too eager to have Williams arrested. The FBI, however, along with federal and state officials, had no problem with pinning all of the murders on Williams. Local authorities were duly pressured into making the arrest. Completely ignored was the rather obvious fact that the suspect did not bear even a passing resemblance to any of the witness descriptions on file with the task force or to any of the composite sketches that had been created.

Though publicly branded the 'Atlanta Child Murderer,' Wayne Williams was indicted and he faced trial for the murders of two adults: Nathaniel Cater and Jimmy Payne. He was never indicted for the murders of any of the children that were slain. Evidence of their murders was allowed into court, however. Despite the fact that there was never enough evidence to build a case against Williams for the crimes, the trial judge allowed testimony about ten other killings. As outraged Georgia Supreme Court Justice George Smith later noted, Williams assumed an "unenviable position as a defendant who, charged with two murders, was forced to defend himself as to 12 separate killings."

Besides that inflammatory testimony, which would have been disallowed in any legitimate courtroom, the state's case was built almost entirely on highly suspect fiber evidence. That evidence, purportedly the strongest element of the prosecution's presentation, had seemingly been planted to provide the state with some semblance of a case. It was claimed, for example, that fibers from Williams' car were found on one victim who had disappeared *before* Williams had even purchased the car. It was also claimed that Clifford Jones' body yielded fibers linking him to Williams, though all the other available evidence indicated that Jones had in fact been killed at a laundromat by James Brooks.

Another rather curious fact about the trial is that one of the two men whom Williams was formally accused of killing, Jimmy Ray Payne, was not even initially considered a murder victim. The cause of death listed on his original death certificate was 'undetermined.' Recognizing, however, that a homicide prosecution requires an actual homicide victim, the state later had the death certificate altered.

The legitimacy of Williams' defense attorneys was suspect before the trial even began on January 6, 1982. Despite the amazingly high profile of the case and the wholesale vilification of Williams by the local media, no request was made for a

change of venue—an incomprehensible oversight for anyone truly motivated to protect the rights of the accused. Despite the best efforts of the state to railroad Williams with a largely fraudulent circumstantial case, he likely would have been acquitted if his defense team had not made another crucial 'error' by sending Wayne to the stand in his own defense. Williams performed well on the stand for the first two days, until his attorneys compounded their 'error' by urging their client to be combative. Jurors later described Williams as "his own worst enemy" for the performance that followed.

On February 27, the promising young man who had once been installed as student council president by Andrew Young was found guilty of two counts of first-degree murder. He received two consecutive life sentences, as punishment for crimes that he clearly did not commit. There is reason to believe, however, that Williams *was* involved in the pedophile operations that formed the backdrop for the murders.

By profession, Wayne Williams was a freelance photographer and a self-styled 'music promoter' who spent much of his free time trolling for 'talent' among Atlanta's black youth. He was also known to impersonate a police officer, a talent that had once gotten him arrested at the age of eighteen. According to reports that author/investigator Chet Dettlinger received from neighbors, Wayne and his father responded to the alleged bridge incident by performing "a major cleanup job around their house. They carried out boxes and carted them off in the station wagon. They burned negatives and photographic prints in the outdoor grill." It does not require a great deal of imagination to figure out what sort of photographs it was that Williams had been taking.

Nevertheless, there is no evidence to suggest that Williams was responsible for the deaths of Nathaniel Cater or Jimmy Payne, let alone the other twenty-one victims whose murders were declared solved following his conviction. Even before the trial began, there were clear indications that the state considered all the killings solved. "Emergency Hot Line" posters had been taken down from phone booths, buses and schools; "Reward" signs had also been taken down, and extra police patrols had been withdrawn. The task force had been pared down to just six remaining members, and most of the media circus had left town.

None of the pedophiles connected to the case were ever seriously considered as suspects, and certainly none were ever charged with any of the murders. There is little doubt though that many of the victims were involved in a large and well-protected child prostitution and child pornography ring. Unanswered though are the questions of why, and by whom, they were killed.

Many have theorized that the Ku Klux Klan, as well as the CIA and the FBI, were involved in the killings. FBI documents purportedly reveal that a Klansman named Charles Sanders confessed to involvement in many of the killings as a way

to incite a race war. While inflaming racial tensions may well have been *a* goal of the killings, however, it seems unlikely that that was the primary motivation. Another motive was identified by a witness named Shirley McGill, whose story was made public by Roy Innis, head of the Congress of Racial Equality, which had assisted in an independent investigation into the murders. McGill, a Miami cocktail waitress, claimed that the murders were perpetrated by a cult involved in drug trafficking, child pornography, and Satanism.

The cult, she said, was composed of members in both Georgia and Florida. One of the leaders was her part-time lover, Vietnam veteran Parnell Traham. She claimed that she had witnessed both animal and human sacrifices and she spoke of "business murders" that the cult had committed. Wayne Williams was identified as a member of the cult whom she had seen filming rituals, but not directly participating in the ritual homicides. McGill claimed to be a bookkeeper for the cult's drug trafficking operations, which involved purchasing used cars in Miami, packing them with drugs, and then delivering them to Atlanta and Houston. She also said that the ring had police protection and that at least one funeral home was complicit in disposing of bodies.

CORE's Innis delivered this story to the press in April 1981 and he was, not surprisingly, greeted with skepticism and derision. With its witness under attack, CORE commissioned a battery of tests to gauge her veracity. McGill passed two polygraph examinations, repeated her story under hypnosis, and was declared sane by examining psychiatrists. She was also able to lead investigators to remote sites that had clearly been used for the performance of rituals.

A few months before CORE's attempt to publicize McGill's story, police had received an anonymous call that led them to an abandoned home in southwest Atlanta. Neighbors that were questioned reported strange comings and goings at odd hours. Investigators reported being sickened by an odor "like decaying flesh," though no bodies were found. Detectives did find children's clothing, along with an ax, a hatchet, and two bibles nailed to the wall—both open to passages on human sacrifice. Professor Carl Raschke has written that, in the neighborhoods where the killings occurred, "a number of children have told police about satanic sex abuse in which, they insist, they were compelled to drink both animal and human blood." Some months after McGill came forward, searchers stumbled upon a ritual site littered with the carcasses of slaughtered animals. Prominent features of the site included a stone altar stained with blood and a twelve-foot-high charred cross.

It is not inconceivable that the killings were performed as human sacrifices. Some reports hold that several of the parents reported to independent investigators that the bodies of their children had crosses carved into their foreheads and

chests. It is also not inconceivable that the ritual killings were recorded as snuff films.

There is another, even darker, scenario that merits brief mention here, even if it is almost entirely speculative. Atlanta is home to the Center for Disease Control (CDC), a prime suspect among conspiracy researchers as the origin of the AIDS virus. The Atlanta child killings began, strangely enough, just as the first cases of AIDS, yet to be identified, began surfacing in a few of America's big cities. There is a possibility that some of the young victims, known to be involved in sexual activities with both adult pedophiles and other children, were deliberately infected with the virus to track the progress of the disease and determine its communicability through sexual contact.

Several of the unindicted pedophile suspects died from the disease in the years following the murders, including James Brooks in 1987, and some of the most suppressed details of the case hint at some type of medical testing of some of the victims. A law enforcement memo that surfaced during the investigation, for example, described the castration of some victims, and a mortician's assistant reported finding the presence of syringe marks in the genitals of many of the victims. Were these children used as human guinea pigs for the most far-reaching biological warfare project ever conceived by man? If so, then they would certainly have had to be eliminated after serving their purpose. After all, it would have been difficult to explain a number of black children dropping dead from an 'emerging' virus thought at the time to be affecting only white gay males.

It could be that the young victims were doomed even had they not met with violent deaths. And it could be that their deaths were just the opening salvo of a 'final solution' that is now quietly killing millions.

> ***"I happen to believe that the numbers [of child prostitutes] are far greater than we can imagine…I don't have a doubt in my mind that were we to adequately police this problem that we would find that it is far more pervasive than any of us ever have imagined."***
>
> **—Atlanta Mayor Bill Campbell, commenting on the prevalence of child exploitation in his city, *NPR News Morning Edition*, May 9, 2001**

Chapter 22

Role Models

"No habit is more easily acquired than mard-savoring; eat one, delicious, eat another, no two taste alike, but all are subtle and the effect is somewhat that of an olive."

—Donatien Alphonse Francois, describing the joys of, quite literally, eating shit

Long before Marc Dutroux, there was Donatien Alphonse Francois.

Francois was born into an atmosphere of power and privilege; his mother was a relative of the ruling administration and his father served as an ambassador. When Donatien was just two years old, he was sent to live with his paternal grandmother and her five daughters in what has been described as a sexually promiscuous atmosphere. The women reportedly lavished attention on the boy, though it is debatable just what sort of attention it was.

After two years there, Donatien was sent to live with his father's brother, who was ostensibly a man of the cloth. Francois' uncle was rather notorious for frequently engaging in decadent sex, with numerous male and female partners. He also had a considerable collection of pornographic literature. The young boy spent a considerable amount of time reading through his uncle's collection. After six years there, he was uprooted once again and sent to live at a religious prep school. At the school, he was subjected to harsh and frequent punishment from his caretakers, including being frequently sodomized. The young man was also taught the importance of confessing his sins as the means to identify and eliminate personal weaknesses.

Following his years at the prep school, Donatien was enrolled in a military academy, after which he entered into military service. Due to his family connections, he entered as a lieutenant and was soon placed in an elite, Special Forces unit. He left the military after eight years holding the rank of captain, and at that time married a woman from a socially prominent family. She would serve as his

accomplice in many of his subsequent crimes, and his new mother-in-law would actively work to free him from various legal entanglements.

His first arrest came some ten days after a violent sexual assault on a woman. He is said to have raped her with a religious icon, and likely to have whipped her as well. For this, he served less than three weeks in jail. Shortly thereafter, he went to live in a secluded, fortified family estate that had at one time served as a jail. Within a year or two of his arrival, he had built a secret room. He also hosted frequent parties that were notable for featuring what were euphemistically dubbed 'orgies.' These parties were attended by various members of the ruling elite and the clergy, including Donatien's aforementioned uncle.

Within a few years of taking up residence in the estate, Francois was once again arrested. Once again he had violently assaulted a young woman, on Easter Sunday, forcing her to strip and then binding her, sexually assaulting her and whipping her with a cat-o-nine-tails. He then left her locked up, but she was able to escape out a window. She was found running from the estate half-naked and covered in her own blood. For that assault, Francois served just four months before being once again released.

Shortly thereafter, Donatien rejoined the military, elevated to the rank of colonel despite his criminal past. It was not long before he once again ran afoul of the law. Francois and a male accomplice reportedly engaged the services of four prostitutes, as well as the services of each other. There was, of course, the requisite whipping involved. Following the encounter, the women became violently ill and grew convinced that they had been poisoned. When police went to arrest Donatien and his accomplice, they found that someone had tipped them off to the impending arrest and the men had fled. By the end of the year, however, Donatien was in custody, and he once again served prison time.

He 'escaped,' however, after less than five months, curiously leaving behind a note claiming full credit for engineering the escape and explicitly clearing his captors of any culpability. Strangely enough, the escape occurred on, of all days, April 30: *Walpurgisnacht*.

In short order, Francois was back at the family estate, with authorities making occasional raids on the compound in an alleged attempt to arrest the escaped convict. His activities, meanwhile, grew increasingly disturbing. Shortly after his return, he began staging what some accounts refer to euphemistically as extended 'orgies.' That hardly seems a fair description of what occurred, however, since some of the 'participants' were young boys and girls being held at the estate, many of whom had been abducted. The victims were abused continuously for several weeks. Assisted by his wife and at least three other adults, Francois inflicted all manner of torture and sexual abuse on the victims. Whipping was a preferred means of torture, along with burning with heated implements. Donatien also had

a fondness for sodomizing his victims, and for forcing them to eat excrement, which he himself indulged in as well.

Despite the gravity of his crimes, legal action was not immediately taken. It was several months before police finally raided the estate, in search of the escaped convict, kidnapper, torturer, rapist, and pedophile. Though the suspect was reportedly hiding in the estate, his pursuers failed to locate him. A little more than a year later, he was still free and was back at the property, accompanied by a number of young women and girls procured for him by a member of the clergy. A few months later, he was finally arrested and imprisoned, but he quickly escaped once again, only to be recaptured a month later. Following his recapture, he remained in prison for thirteen years, during which time he wrote prolifically of his fascination with torture, copraphilia, pedophilia, and various other depravities.

Amazingly enough, just two years after his release he held political office. A decade later, he was confined to a mental institution, where he spent the last twelve years of his life once again writing of rape, torture and murder. After his death at the age of seventy-four, his oldest son burned most of his writings, though some survived.

Donatien's full regal title was Donatien Alphonse Francois, Comte de Sade, but he is better known as the Marquis de Sade. His crimes were committed over two hundred years ago, around the time that America was declaring its independence. Yet even as these words are being written, he is being revived and rehabilitated on America's movie screens. The *Encyclopaedia Britannica* provides the following assessment of the Marquis: "de Sade is to some an incarnation of absolute evil who advocates the unleashing of instincts even to the point of crime. Others have looked upon him as a champion of total liberation through the satisfaction of his desires in all forms."

Virtually those same words have been used to eulogize such other notorious figures as Aleister Crowley and Anton LaVey, both of whose later musings echoed the writings of the Marquis.

Perhaps the most cogent analysis of those writings was provided by Alex Steiner, a contributor to the *World Socialist Web Site*. Steiner noted that the "clearest formulation of de Sade's philosophy appears in his *Philosophy in the Bedroom* [which] features a philosophical interlude." Within that interlude lies a "philosophical defense, argued in the language of the Enlightenment, but not of course, in the spirit of the Enlightenment, that presents a justification for incest, rape, murder and cruelty." That interlude is said to have been published separately in 1848, under the title "Yet Another Effort, Frenchmen, If You Would Become Republicans." It was intended for distribution as a political manifesto. Among other things, the tract contained a "defense of murder as a legitimate civil activity

used to weed out the weaker members of society." Steiner also noted that writer and film director Pier Paolo Pasolini[49] saw "in de Sade the antecedents of fascism." One of the defining characteristics of de Sade's philosophy was his "view of society as composed of atomistic individuals potentially engaged in a war of all against all," which is, of course, precisely the direction in which Western society is being driven.

Perhaps the most revealing passage in Steiner's piece reads as follows: "De Sade's state of nature is a veritable hell on earth. Perhaps de Sade's alleged Satanism is an appropriate metaphor of his philosophy." It could be reasonably argued that Satanism was more than just a metaphor of de Sade's philosophy; it *was* his philosophy. As Steiner notes, "De Sade is unwilling to allow any restraints on his ability to exploit, mistreat and even destroy other human beings in the pursuit of pleasure." That same notion is now the mantra of modern Satanists, expressed by Crowley and others as: "Do what thou wilt shall be the whole of the law."

> ***"Sade…only had one occupation in his long life which really absorbed him—that of enumerating to the point of exhaustion the possibilities of destroying human life, of destroying them and of enjoying the thought of their death and suffering."***
>
> **—French writer Georges Bataille**

* * * * *

More than three centuries before the birth of de Sade, another Frenchman was providing a blueprint for the Marquis to later follow. Born in 1406 in the 'Black Tower' of his family's castle at Champtoce, Gilles de Rais was the eldest son of one of the wealthiest men in all of France, Guy de Rais. Gilles' mother was Marie d'Craon, the daughter of Jean d'Craon, who was also one of the wealthiest and most politically powerful men in the country.

In 1415, Guy de Rais was reportedly gored to death by a boar while hunting. That same year, Gilles mother died as well, as did her brother, Amaury d'Craon,

---

49 Strangely enough, Pasolini was killed in an apparent ritual murder in 1975. The slain leftist was discovered just two days after Halloween with his head bludgeoned beyond recognition. UK author Janet Street-Porter noted that "only a few weeks before his death he had written a series of newspaper articles attacking his compatriots, saying they had become obsessed with crime and had abandoned genuine values for those of the bourgeois consumer society."

who was slain in the legendary battle at Agincourt. As Amaury had been Jean d'Craon's only son, the rapid succession of deaths left young Gilles de Rais as the sole heir to both the de Rais and the d'Craon family fortunes. In 1420, Gilles kidnapped and then married his cousin, Catherine de Thouars, whose family had vast land holdings adjacent to the properties owned by the de Rais and d'Craon families. At just sixteen years of age, Gilles de Rais stood poised to become the wealthiest man in France—by some accounts, possibly the richest man in all of Europe.

Following the death of his parents, Gilles was raised by his grandfather, Jean d'Craon, and was trained as a knight and a soldier. By 1429, he had been named the Marshal of France, making him the highest-ranking military figure in the country—roughly equivalent to the post today of Secretary of Defense. Serving alongside of him was someone who is now regarded as the patron saint of France: Joan of Arc. Joan was said to hear voices in her head, not unlike numerous others whose stories have filled the pages of this book. She also reportedly had 'visions,' which she apparently attributed to divine guidance.

Traveling with a 10,000-man army and accompanied by her general and adviser, Gilles de Rais, Joan was credited with saving France by lifting the siege of Orleans, a crucial battle in the Hundred Years War between France and England. Shortly after that, Gilles was given the honor of personally crowning France's new king, Charles VII. Joan of Arc sat at the new king's side during the coronation. Joan's fortunes turned quickly, however; she was captured by the Duke of Burgundy the next year and accused by the Brits of heresy and sorcery. She was burned at the stake on May 30, 1431.[50] The next year, de Rais ended his public career and retired, along with his entourage, to a family castle at Machecoul, which was just one of five lavish country estates that Gilles then owned.

The arrival of Machecoul's new residents was accompanied almost immediately by the disappearances of local children. The first child was abducted in 1432 by Gilles de Sille, a cousin of Gilles de Rais. The kidnappings continued, uninterrupted, for nearly a decade. The victims were taken to the de Rais castle where

50 According to a report in *Pravda*, Ukrainian anthropologist Sergey Gorbenko determined that it was some other woman, with her face cloaked, who burned at the stake that day. Joan of Arc—also known as Margarita d'Champdiver, the daughter of King Karl VI and his mistress, Odetta d'Champdiver—lived to the age of 57. Gorbenko based his findings on an examination of a collection of skulls of the French royal family housed at the Notre Dame Cathedral, and on correspondence among royal family members and other historical artifacts. ("Joan of Arc Was Not Executed. She Died at 57," *Pravda*, January 17, 2004)

they were brutally and ritualistically slaughtered by Gilles and his accomplices. As the years went by, the list of those accomplices grew, numbering both men and women. Among his more notorious accomplices were Roger de Briqueville, another cousin, and a woman named Perrine Martin, who was also known as "La Meffraye," or "The Terror." Another known accomplice was a man named Etienne Corrillaut, who was also known as Poitou. He was, apparently, initially brought to the castle as a victim, but he was spared for unknown reasons.

The rest of the abductees were not so lucky. At the hands of de Rais and his numerous accomplices, they were subjected to torture, rape and sadistic mutilation. Gilles took great pleasure in watching his victims die, frequently raping them or masturbating on them as they were in their death throes. Gilles was also deeply involved in occultism, necromancy and alchemy. Many of the child victims' dismembered and disemboweled body parts were reportedly used in rituals that were aimed at "summoning demons." Some reports hold that the blood of some of the victims was used to write a book of spells and incantations.

De Rais' fatal mistake was apparently the kidnapping of a priest. The church had been aware for years of the recurrent hushed reports of abducted children, but had chosen to ignore them. It was common knowledge among the townspeople that the missing children had been tortured and killed, but they were powerless to voice their accusations against the unfathomably wealthy and powerful Gilles de Rais. In 1440, the accusations were finally made public by the church. Gilles de Sille and Roger de Briqueville promptly disappeared into one of history's black holes. On September 14, arrest warrants were issued for de Rais and several of his remaining cohorts.

On October 13, 1440, de Rais was indicted on thirty-four counts of murder, sodomy and heresy. The indictment held that 140 children had been abducted over the course of fourteen years. Many historians have denied that the killings began that early, primarily because acknowledging that to be the case would necessitate a reevaluation of the revered Joan of Arc. There is considerable debate about the number of victims as well. Some accounts claim that the figure of 140 is grossly inflated. Others, however, contend that the actual victim count was somewhere between 200 and 800. The true number is, most likely, forever lost to history. According to one account, the dismembered remains of fifty children were found in the tower at the Machecoul castle, and a similar number were discovered at another of the de Rais estates. An untold number of other victims had apparently been cremated.

De Rais confessed to many of his crimes, but he steadfastly refused to admit to the charge of heresy. Both he and the church apparently felt that heresy was a more serious offense than sadistically murdering scores of what were, after all, 'peasant' children. Gilles ultimately did confess to all of his crimes, either due to

the threat of, or the actual application of, torture, depending on which account one chooses to believe. On October 26, he was sent to the gallows and executed.

Gilles de Rais reportedly claimed that he had patterned his life after Caligula, the notoriously depraved Roman emperor. He is said by some to have provided the inspiration for the mythical Bluebeard. He also, needless to say, provided the inspiration for countless others who have followed in his footsteps.

* * * * *

"I'm no psycho. I have a good mind."

—Howard Unruh, responding to a query from an arresting officer

Long before 'spree' killers became a fixture of American society, terrorizing the nation's schools and workplaces, there was Howard Unruh. Howard was, like the other young men of his generation, drafted by the United States Army and sent off to war. He was trained to kill, and he apparently performed that task quite well as a machine-gunner. It was later discovered that he had kept a diary of his war experiences. All of his kills were carefully recorded, complete with the date, time and place of each killing. Most importantly, Howard included a detailed description of how each of his victims looked in death. He received a number of commendations for his exemplary service.

After returning from the war, he grew increasingly estranged from his parents, with whom he was living. He eventually became something of a recluse, spending much of his time indulging in a hobby he had acquired in the army: collecting, admiring and practicing with various lethal weapons.

Then one day, Howard Unruh just sort of went off.

Armed with a 9mm handgun and a back-up weapon, he took a brisk stroll through downtown Camden, New Jersey, along the way shooting sixteen people, thirteen of whom died instantly. He proved to be a remarkably efficient assassin, robotically shooting most of his victims twice—once in the head and once in the torso. He walked door to door, from a cobbler shop to a barbershop, then to a pharmacy and finally to a tailor. He killed almost everyone he encountered and reportedly remained expressionless throughout the rampage. His youngest victim was just three years old.

Running low on ammunition, Unruh soon retreated to his house. His entire killing spree had lasted just twelve minutes. No sooner was he back home than a local reporter phoned the house. What followed was what Jay Robert Nash described as "one of the strangest phone conversations in the annals of crime":

Unruh: Hello.
Phillip Buxton: Is this Howard?
Unruh: Yes, this is Howard. What is the last name of the party you want?
Buxton: Unruh.
Unruh: Who are you and what do you want?
Buxton: I'm a friend, and I want to know what they're doing to you.
Unruh: Well, they haven't done anything to me yet, but I'm doing plenty to them.
Buxton: How many have you killed?
Unruh: I don't know yet—I haven't counted 'em, but it looks like a pretty good score.
Buxton: Why are you killing people, Howard?
Unruh: [pause] I don't know. I can't answer that yet—I am too busy. I'll have to talk to you later.

With his house surrounded by dozens of armed officers, Howard Unruh walked out and calmly gave himself up. He never faced trial for the killings. Instead, he was declared incurably insane and committed to the New Jersey State Mental Hospital for a life term. According to recent reports, he is still there, more than half a century later.

* * * * *

"For the highest spiritual working, one must accordingly choose that victim which contains the greatest and purest force. A male child of perfect innocence and high intelligence is the most satisfactory and suitable victim."

—Aleister Crowley, *Magick in Theory and Practice*

Before JonBenét Ramsey, there was the 'Eaglet,' otherwise known as Charles Augustus Lindbergh, Jr. His mother was Anne Morrow Lindbergh, born on the summer solstice to Dwight Morrow, U.S. Ambassador to Mexico, onetime partner at J.P. Morgan, and close associate of OSS Director and MK-ULTRA operative "Wild Bill" Donovan. His father, of course, was famed aviator Charles Augustus Lindbergh (not to be confused with Richard Speck's step-father, Carl August Lindbergh).

Lindbergh's father, in turn, was a prominent attorney and United States Congressman also named Charles Augustus Lindbergh, and his grandfather had

been a member of the Swedish Parliament before moving the family to the United States in 1860. Charles' mother was Evangeline Land, a daughter of Dr. Charles Land. The Lands—like the Lindberghs, Morrows, and Donovans—were closely tied to the American intelligence infrastructure. Dr. Edwin Land later was the driving force behind the U-2 spy plane project and the chairman of an intelligence subcommittee. He also founded the Scientific Engineering Institute, which served as one of the major funding conduits for MK-ULTRA projects.

In 1905, Charles and Evangeline's family farmhouse burned down and the couple thereafter lived apart, although they remained married. Charles, Sr. was soon inaugurated as a U.S. Congressman. The junior Charles remained with his mother, and for the rest of his childhood, Evangeline kept him away from others. She was so hated by the local townspeople that on at least one occasion, shots were reportedly fired at her and her son.

Fascinated with both guns and aviation, Charles joined the Army Air Corps in 1924. Three years later, he made his famed trans-Atlantic flight and instantly became an international celebrity. After touring the country and basking in the mass adulation, as well as picking up a Congressional Medal of Honor, Lindbergh stayed at the opulent Guggenheim estate where he passed the time with such notables as John D. Rockefeller, Jr., Herbert Hoover, Theodore Roosevelt, Jr., and Dwight Morrow. By December 1927, Morrow had introduced Charles to his daughter Anne. Reportedly engaged after just three dates, the couple was married in May 1929. Just over a year later, on the summer solstice of 1930, yet another Charles Augustus Lindbergh was born.

Around that same time, Charles began working at the Rockefeller Institute in New York alongside Alexis Carrel, a eugenics-minded researcher who openly called for the mass extermination of the unfit. Lindbergh chroniclers Ahlgren and Monier described Carrel as "a strange individual who wore a black hooded robe in the laboratory and insisted that all of his lab assistants do the same." Lindbergh also acquired a plane to use for survey flights, which he christened the *Sirius*, so named for the brightest star in the night sky, located in the constellation *Canis Major*. Also known as the 'Dog Star,' it is believed by some occultists to represent Lucifer, the 'light bearer' or 'enlightened one.'

On March 1, 1932, the Eaglet disappeared from the Lindbergh family home—a rambling, newly built, two-story mansion in Hopewell, New Jersey. According to American popular mythology, the child was kidnapped from the isolated, remote and occupied home. The facts of the case have never supported that notion.

Any kidnapper would have had to know the exact location of the child's second-story room, and would have had to know that the shutters on the window of that particular room were the only ones on the house that did not properly latch.

It would have also helped to know that Charles Lindbergh had ordered that the child not be disturbed before 10:00 PM that evening, and that there would therefore be little risk of discovery by any of the five adults who were moving freely about the house that evening. The kidnapper would have had to enter a well lit home that was owned by a man with a known penchant for firearms, and do so without alarming an extremely high-strung dog that was known to bark at the slightest provocation, but that nevertheless never barked that entire evening.

The kidnapper would further have had to know that the Lindberghs were going to be home that night, since it was not their custom to stay at the house during the week. Other than on weekends, the family could usually be found at "Next Day Hill," the country estate of the Morrow family in Englewood, New Jersey. Charles Lindbergh had requested an unusual deviation from the normal family routine, just as he had requested that no one enter his son's room that evening.

Upon discovering that the child was missing, Lucky Lindy immediately declared that there had been a kidnapping, before making any effort to search the house and before the discovery of an alleged ransom note. Anne Lindbergh's first thought was that Charles had done something with the boy. The child's nursemaid, Bettie Gow, drew the same conclusion. That was in part due to Charles having staged a fake abduction just two months prior, by hiding the child in a closet for twenty minutes and announcing a kidnapping while the household panicked. This time, however, Charles produced a ransom note, which he claimed he found on the windowsill of the nursery, *after* the room had already been thoroughly searched by Anne, Bettie, and another family servant, Elsie Whatley.

Charles Lindbergh promptly made a series of phone calls. The first was to his friend and attorney, Colonel Henry Breckinridge, a former Assistant Secretary of War. The next was to Colonel H. Norman Schwarzkopf,[51] another friend and the head of the New Jersey State Police, a law enforcement agency designed and run as a military entity. The third was to Colonel William "Wild Bill" Donovan. All three colonels joined in the investigation. Breckinridge brought along Robert Thayer, a known associate of various organized crime figures. Thayer, who was married to a Standard Oil heiress, was later identified as a CIA agent working under State Department cover. To insure that there were enough intelligence operatives in the mix, Admiral Emory S. Land later became peripherally involved in the investigation as well.

51 Schwarzkopf was a West Point graduate, World War I veteran, and the father of George Bush's future 'Desert Storm' commander. He later played a key role in the CIA sponsored coup that installed the Shah of Iran.

Lindbergh appeared calm, cool and collected to police arriving at the scene, and he immediately took command of the investigation, in conjunction with Colonel Schwarzkopf. The Colonel's State Police badly mishandled the investigation right from the start by failing to secure the crime scene, which compromised every piece of potential evidence in sight. They did though quickly set up a command post in the Lindbergh's garage, bring in extra phone lines, and begin a full-scale media circus that possibly topped even the Ramsey spectacle. Before long, reporters were allowed to join with the police in freely trampling over potential evidence.

The only piece of evidence that does appear to have been gathered was a crudely constructed ladder that allegedly was used to enter the second-story window of the Lindbergh child's room. The room itself yielded no evidence whatsoever. As trooper on the scene exclaimed, after the room had been thoroughly dusted for fingerprints: "I'm damned if I don't think somebody washed everything in that nursery before the printmen got there."

The investigation essentially went nowhere for the next several weeks. The only major development was that Lindbergh enlisted the services of a number of organized crime figures, ostensibly to assist in solving the crime and locating the child. Lindy even attempted to secure the release from prison of the notorious Al 'Scarface' Capone.

On May 12, 1932, the mutilated and decomposed corpse of a child was found less than three miles from the Lindbergh home. The body was 'discovered' in a remote location where there was only one building nearby—a Catholic orphanage directly across the road. The corpse's left leg was missing below the knee, as was the left hand, right arm, and most of the internal organs. A ludicrously inept autopsy was promptly performed on the body. Although it was claimed at the time that the examination was performed by Dr. Charles Mitchell, it was actually the work of funeral home director Walter Swayze, who was entirely unqualified for the task. That fact was kept covered up for some forty-five years. The cause of death, if the 'autopsy' report is to be believed, was from a blow to the head. Though no photographs were taken of the skull during the examination, it was claimed that there was evidence of a fracture and a resultant blood clot, as well as a small round hole in the base of the skull.

Charles Lindbergh himself positively identified the body as that of his missing child. His daughter Reeve later stated: "He would have examined the teeth, he would have examined the hair, he would have checked the clothing, any physical evidence…that would have been where he would find relief would have been in the facts." It is unlikely that Lindbergh did any of that. He reportedly was in-and-out of the morgue in less than 90 seconds. In truth, all he really needed to check was a tape measure; the body that was discovered was thirty-three inches tall,

according to Swayze's autopsy report, whereas the missing Lindbergh child was only twenty-nine inches tall, as listed on the 'Wanted' posters distributed around the country. The boy's own physician, who spent more time with the corpse than Lindbergh, was unable to positively identify the remains.

The body was most likely not that of the Eaglet, and Charles Lindbergh, Sr. must surely have been aware of that even as he claimed the dead child as his own and ordered its immediate destruction. Less than twenty-four hours after being discovered, the body had been cremated and the ashes scattered at sea Anne Lindbergh would later say that she never saw Charles shed a tear for the slain boy.

As the investigation progressed, a number of people connected to the disappearance met with untimely deaths or otherwise dropped out of sight. The Morrow family maid, Violet Sharpe, allegedly killed herself with cyanide just before a visit from the head of the State Police in June 1932. Schwarzkopf claimed that he found her dead upon his arrival. He had been, by most accounts, relentlessly and unconscionably harassing the woman. A German-born gardener, Henry Liepold, who was at one time considered a suspect and who one handwriting expert thought was the author of the ransom note, allegedly killed himself in October 1933. Oliver Whately, another household servant and potential witness, died of unspecified causes before the case made it to trial. And Bettie Gow's boyfriend, "Red" Johnson, was held by police, without being charged, for eighteen days before he was shipped off to Norway, never to be heard from again. Johnson had worked for a business partner of Dwight Morrow.

On September 19, 1934, German immigrant Bruno Richard Hauptmann was arrested and charged with the kidnapping and murder of the Lindbergh baby. After being held without access to an attorney, deprived of sleep, and unmercifully beaten, all in an effort to extract a bogus confession, Hauptmann was put in a police line-up alongside two burly Irish cops, one of them still in uniform. He was positively identified. Schwarzkopf's New Jersey State Police promptly moved Hauptmann's wife out of their home, assumed the lease, and moved in. By all appearances, they then proceeded to manufacture and plant evidence. A week after Hauptmann's arrest, an officer living in his former home 'discovered' that the ladder found at the Lindbergh home had been partially constructed from a floorboard allegedly missing from the attic of the Hauptmann home.

The trial of Richard Hauptmann was, even relative to the standards established by other trials discussed in this book, a ridiculously transparent sham. Virtually everyone who has studied the case, including those who believe that Hauptmann was guilty, acknowledge that the defense case that was presented was hopelessly inept. Hauptmann's attorney, Edward J. Reilly, who was provided for him by the *New York Daily Mirror*, had only one fifteen-minute private conference with his client throughout the entire trial. He was visibly inebriated during

much of the proceedings. He was also reportedly supplied with a steady stream of attractive young prostitutes throughout the trial.

Even had Reilly been motivated to win the case, it would have been an uphill battle. No deposition of witnesses was allowed and no discovery evidence was turned over by the state. The prosecution's case was kept completely under wraps until it was revealed at trial, making it impossible to plan a defense. A number of the witnesses called by the state gave obviously perjured testimony that was completely at odds with both prior statements to police and prior testimony before a grand jury. One such witness was Charles Lindbergh himself, who was, amazingly enough, allowed to sit at the prosecution table throughout the trial, packing a loaded handgun in a shoulder holster.

Transcripts of the trial reveal a painfully obvious bias displayed by the judge, who distinguished himself by routinely overruling all defense objections and just as routinely sustaining all prosecution objections. He also openly mocked the case presented by the defense in his final summation to the jury. Despite the obviously stacked deck, however, the defense could have introduced enough reasonable doubt to win an acquittal had the identification of the child's body been challenged. It was not, however, and Hauptmann was quickly found guilty and sentenced to die.

Just two weeks after the guilty verdict was rendered, defense attorney Reilly suffered a complete nervous breakdown. He was quickly shuffled off to a Brooklyn mental hospital in a straightjacket. Just a few weeks later, he was back in action as though nothing had happened.

Appeals of the conviction were summarily denied, the final denial coming from the U.S. Supreme Court on December 9, 1935. New Jersey Governor Hoffman, however, was resisting the wholesale fraud being perpetrated. He openly accused both Schwarzkopf's team and the prosecution team of fabricating evidence, particularly the ladder, and he announced his intention to go to the Board of Pardons on Hauptmann's behalf. In the wake of that announcement, the Lindberghs fled the country bound for the United Kingdom. Hauptmann was executed three-and-a-half months later at the state prison in Trenton, New Jersey.

Lindbergh soon wound up in Nazi Germany, where he developed close ties to the Nazi elite, particularly *Luftwaffe* chief Hermann Goering. He also became a mouthpiece for virulently anti-Semitic, pro-Nazi propaganda.

It was mentioned previously that the Lindberghs immigrated to America from Sweden in 1860. It was at that time that Lindy's grandfather opted to change the family name. Had he not done so, one of America's greatest folk heroes, Charles Lindbergh, would likely have had a much different name, although one perhaps no less well known: Charles Mansson.

Epilogue

"I need not look beyond this courtroom to see all the liars, the haters, the killers, the crooks, the paranoid cowards… We are all expendable for a cause. No one knows that better than those who kill for policy, clandestinely or openly, as do the governments of the world which kill in the name of God and country."

—Richard "The Night Stalker" Ramirez, addressing the court

Jean-Bedel Bokassa was, like all Western-supported 'Third World' dictators, a fascist thug who allowed his country's rich natural resources to be ruthlessly exploited while his countrymen starved. Under his rule, The Central African Republic, a French satellite, was one of the twenty poorest countries in the world.

Bokassa was reportedly orphaned at the age of six, when his father was murdered and his mother allegedly committed suicide just a week later. At the age of eighteen, he joined the French Colonial Army and served throughout World War II. He remained in the army after the war and later served in the First Indochina War (*aka* Vietnam) and then in Algeria (two of the bloodiest and most brutal colonial occupations in recorded history). In 1961, Jean-Bedel left the French Army holding the rank of captain. A few years later, he was appointed by his cousin, President David Dacko, to head the army of the Central African Republic. Just one year after taking the post, he took control of the country from his cousin. Lt. Col. Bokassa assumed the presidency on January 1, 1966, four months before the reputed commencement of the 'Age of Satan.'

By December 1977, Bokassa had decided that 'president' was not a lofty enough title, so he declared himself Emperor Bokassa I of the re-christened Central African Empire. As the country's self-appointed dictator, he had a very close relationship with French President Valery Giscard d'Estaing. The two leaders were frequently photographed together and Giscard was reported to have several relatives in positions of influence in the Bokassa regime and within the Empire's business community.

In May 1979, it was reported that Bokassa had personally ordered the massacre of 100 (more, by some reports) schoolchildren. The children had been suffocated, stabbed, and beaten with nail-studded clubs. Some eyewitnesses to the carnage claimed that the emperor himself had not only personally killed nearly forty of the victims, but had cannibalized them as well. The Bokassa regime, of course, denied the reports. The atrocity was confirmed though by Amnesty International, and in August 1979, a five-nation team assembled to investigate the incident determined that Emperor Bokassa was indeed personally responsible. Bokassa responded by ordering the executions of forty witnesses who had offered testimony to the investigating board.

The next month, Bokassa was overthrown in what was described as a 'coup.' In truth, it was merely a quick facelift to ward off the popular uprising that was brewing in the wake of the revelations. The 'coup' merely put Bokassa's cousin back in power. French troops were on hand to oversee the transition.

Bokassa fled the country, taking with him hundreds of millions of dollars looted from the national treasury, and ultimately settled in France.[52] He had, however, left a few things behind. As the *Associated Press* later reported, prosecutors at his trial noted "Bokassa's old palace was filled with evidence of atrocities, including the frozen body of a schoolteacher hanging on a freezer hook and mounds of human flesh prepared for roasting." Other evidence of atrocities included, according to author Janet Street-Porter, a Dahmer-esque refrigerator full of butchered human remains and a crocodile pond on the palace grounds that contained the partial remains of some forty additional bodies.

Bokassa's former cook testified at trial that he had regularly served up dishes prepared from human flesh, and that Bokassa had consumed them "with relish." The *Associated Press* reported that Bokassa enjoyed serving up his critics and political enemies at state dinners honoring visiting dignitaries and heads of state. It has been claimed that at Bokassa's coronation as emperor—an ostentatious affair financed by the French government to the tune of tens of millions of dollars—guests unknowingly dined on human flesh.

---

52 Bokassa's first stop after fleeing his country was in Libya, where he visited with Muammar al-Qaddafi, with whom he had close ties. Ugandan dictator Idi Amin, also ousted in 1979 from the leadership post he had attained with Western support on February 2, 1971 (*Candlemas* on the occult calendar), likewise fled to Libya amid widespread reports of cannibalism. It is claimed that Amin ate one of his own sons and murdered and dismembered one of his wives. He was also known to publicly praise Adolph Hitler.

After eight years of exile, Bokassa returned to his homeland in 1987, despite the fact that he had been sentenced to death *in absentia*. He was arrested, tried, convicted, and once again sentenced to death, but the sentence was shortly thereafter commuted to a twenty-year prison sentence. In 1993, Bokassa was granted amnesty and he walked away a free man, returning to his home village of Berengo. On November 3, 1996, he died of a heart attack at the age of seventy-five and was given an official state funeral befitting a former president.

How then are we to remember Jean-Bedel Bokassa? As a respected head of state—or as a cannibalistic serial killer?

Or is there any difference?

References

Introduction

1. Al-Kurdi, Husayn "Messing With Our Minds," *Toward Freedom*, May 1998
2. Anderson, Jon "Satanic Crime: Police Say the Devil Made Some People Do It," *Chicago Tribune*, April 18, 1988
3. Barrett, Deirdre "The Power of Hypnosis," *Psychology Today*, January/February 2001
4. Brindle, David "Satanic Abuse Row Erupts," *Guardian*, February 10, 2000
5. Estabrooks, George *Hypnotism*, Dutton, 1957
6. Evenson, Brad "Hypnosis's Magic Is That It Works," *National Post*, August 8, 2003
7. Goodchild, Sophie "Satanic Abuse No Myth, Say Experts," *Independent*, April 30, 2000
8. Harary, K. "The Trouble With Hypnosis," *Psychology Today*, March 1992
9. Hudson, Fiona, *The Herald Sun*, November 14, 2001
10. Landsberg, Michelle "Incest: Stop the Nonsense and Get to the Difficult Truth," *The Toronto Star*, February 4, 1996
11. Laurance, Jeremy "Therapist Revives Fears of Ritual Satanic Abuse," *Independent*, February 10, 2000
12. Laurina, Maria "Paul and Shirley Eberle: A Strange Pair of Experts," *Ms. Magazine*, December 1988
13. Lee, Martin and Bruce Shlain *Acid Dreams*, Grove Press, 1985
14. Marks, John *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*, Times Books, 1979
15. Marron, Kevin *Ritual Abuse*, Seal Books, 1988
16. Miller, Alice "The Political Consequences of Child Abuse," *The Journal of Psychohistory*, Fall 1998
17. Newton, Michael *Raising Hell*, Avon Books, 1993

18. Tyner, Arlene "Mind Control Part 3: The Blowback Effect of Brain Tampering," *Probe Magazine*, July-August, 2000

19. Verdier, Paul A. *Brainwashing and the Cults*, Wilshire Book Company, 1977

Part I: The Pedophocracy
From Brussels…

20. Bates, Stephen "Cover-Up Claims Revive Sex Scandal," *Guardian*, April 21, 1999

21. Bates, Stephen "Police Admit Dutroux Video Bungle," *Guardian*, June 17, 1999

22. Bailey, Brandon "Net-Porn Ring Traded Stories at 'Pedo Party'," *San Jose Mercury News*, July 18, 1996

23. Bell, Rachael "Marc Dutroux: the Child-Killer Who Slipped Through the System," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com

24. Bennetto, Jason "Delays in Paedophile Inquiries," *Independent*, November 4, 2002

25. Bernstein, Richard "Germans Uncover Child Sex Network," *International Herald Tribune*, September 27, 2003

26. Boggan, Steve and Paul Peachey "As the Net Closed on Wonderland, An Ugly Truth Was Revealed: This is Just the Tip of the Iceberg," *Independent*, February 14, 2001

27. Brand, Constant "Child-Murder Case to Open in Belgium," *Associated Press*, February 29, 2004

28. Bright, Martin and Paul Harris "Child Porn Swoop Nets 90 Police," *The Observer*, October 20, 2002

29. Burke, Jason "Most Wanted Paedophile May Be in UK," *Guardian*, June 17, 2001

30. Carroll, Rory "Paedophile Scandal Boosts Cover-Up Conspiracy," *Guardian*, November 1, 2000

31. Cockburn, Alexander "American Journal," *Counterpunch*, February 1, 2003

32. Cranford, Helen "Police 'Warned Over Dutroux,'" *News Telegraph*, December 6, 1996

33. Cullen, Drew "Child Porn List Leaked to Sunday Times," *The Register*, January 27, 2003

34. Dahlburg, John-Thor "Grisly Crimes Undermine Belgian Unity," *Los Angeles Times*, January 3, 1998
35. Davies, Nick "When Sex Abuse Can Lead to Murder," *Guardian*, November 27, 2000
36. Davies, Nick and Jeevan Vasager "Global Porn Ring Broken," *Guardian*, January 11, 2001
37. Dixon, Robyn "3 Top Latvians Are Named in Investigation of Pedophilia," *Los Angeles Times*, February 19, 2000
38. Dolgov, Anna "Russians Want Laws on Child Porn," *Associated Press*, March 27, 2001
39. Frenkiel, Olenka "Belgium's X-Files—an Olenka Frenkiel Investigation," *BBC News*, May 2, 2002
40. Fritz, Mark and Solomon Moore "Suicides Follow Bust of Net Child-Porn Ring," *San Jose Mercury News*, October 24, 1998
41. Goodchild, Sophie "Paedophiles: The Police Hunt," *Independent*, January 19, 2003
42. Graff, Peter "Child Porn Videos Sold From Russia in 'National Geographic' Boxes," *Independent*, March 26, 2001
43. Gumbel, Andrew "Internet Child Porn Ring 'Was Run By Parents'," *Independent*, August 10, 2002
44. Hartley, Emma and Paul Peachey "Outrage Over 'Lenient' Jail Terms for Britons in Child Porn Ring," *Independent*, February 14, 2001
45. Helm, Toby "Paedophile Hunt Police Find Human Skull," *News Telegraph*, September 4, 1996
46. Helm, Toby "Dutroux Urged to Name His Protectors," *News Telegraph*, September 5, 1996
47. Helm, Toby "Belgian King Acts Over Child Sex Scandal," *News Telegraph*, September 11, 1996
48. Helm, Toby "Belgium Fights to Shed Its Corruption-Riddled Mafia Image," *News Telegraph*, September 14, 1996
49. Helm, Toby and Pamela Readhead "Magistrate to be Taken Off Child Sex Case," *News Telegraph*, October 13, 1996
50. Helm, Toby "Belgians Up in Arms Over Sex Case," *News Telegraph*, October 16, 1996

51. Helm, Toby "Plea by King as Belgians Protest Over Corruption," *News Telegraph*, October 19, 1996
52. Helm, Toby "Belgians Shocked by New Disclosure About Child Sex," *News Telegraph*, November 22, 1996
53. Helm, Toby "Fears Grow of New Paedophile Horror," *News Telegraph*, January 23, 1997
54. Helm, Toby "Paedophile Arrested After Girl's Body Found," *News Telegraph*, March 7, 1997
55. Helm, Toby "Raped Children 'Could Have Been Found Alive,'" *News Telegraph*, April 16, 1997
56. Helm, Toby "Belgian Police Under Attack Over 'Link' Between Paedophiles," *News Telegraph*, January 28, 1998
57. Helm, Toby "Government Crisis in Belgium Over Dutroux's Escape," *News Telegraph*, April 25, 1998
58. Helm, Toby "Belgium Accused of Cover-Up in Dutroux Inquiry," *News Telegraph*, August 17, 2001
59. Herbert, Ian "Boy, 13, Arrested in Crackdown on 'Net Paedophiles'," *Independent*, March 28, 2001
60. Howe, Kathleen "Russia, U.S. Shut Down Child-Porn Ring on Web," *Los Angeles Times*, March 27, 2001
61. Karp, Jack "An Avalanche of Child Porn," *TechTV*, February 12, 2002
62. Kennedy, Frances "Italian Politicians Obstructing Inquiry Into Child Porn on Net," *Independent*, November 1, 2000
63. Laurance, Jeremy "British Police Discover More Child Abuse Horror on Internet," *Independent*, February 21, 2001
64. Mackay, Neil "Child Porn Arrests 'Too Slow'," *Sunday Herald*, January 19, 2003
65. Mackay, Neil "Dunblane Secret Documents Contain Letters by Tory and Labour Ministers," *Sunday Herald*, March2, 2003
66. McAuliffe, Wendy "Commercial Child Porn Ring Bust Leads to 100 Arrests," *ZDNet*, August 9, 2001
67. Mega, Marcello "Dismay As International Paedophile Probe Fails," *Scotland on Sunday*, August 24, 2003

68. Mitchell, Paul "Arrest of Portugal's Elite in Paedophile Scandal," *World Socialist Web Site*, June 18, 2003
69. Murphy, Dean E. "Kidnap Deaths Plunge Belgium Into Guilt," *Los Angeles Times*, September 2, 1996
70. Nash, Elizabeth "Party Chief Called to Testify in Lisbon Child Sex Scandal," *Independent*, June 4, 2003
71. Nash, Elizabeth "Portugal Reeling Over Child Sex Abuse Scandal," *Independent*, June 16, 2003
72. Nundy, Julian "French Hunt 200 More Suspected Paedophiles," *News Telegraph*, June 22, 1997
73. Osborn, Andrew "Belgium Still Haunted by Paedophile Scandal," *Guardian*, January 25, 2002
74. Peachey, Paul "Boy of 13 Put on Sex Offenders' Register for Child Porn," *Independent*, May 15, 2001
75. Pinon, Bertrand "Inspector Questioned in Child Sex Inquiry," *News Telegraph*, August 26, 1996
76. Pullella, Philip "Italy Shocked by Child Pornography Scandal," *The Irish Times*, September 29, 2000
77. Puzzanghera, Jim "International Child-Porn Ring Uncovered," *San Jose Mercury News*, September 3, 1998
78. Raschke, Carl *Painted Black*, Harper and Row, 1990
79. Riding, Alan "Lewis Carroll Revisited: In a Looking Glass, Darkly," *New York Times*, August 20, 1998
80. Savino, Lenny "Pornography Ring Traded Videotapes of Children Being Beaten, Authorities Say," *Knight Ridder Newspapers*, March 8, 2002
81. Seenan, Gerard "Call to Lift Veil of Secrecy Over Dunblane," *Guardian*, February 14, 2003
82. Simons, Marlise "French Police Arrest 250 Men Linked to Child Pornography Ring," *New York Times*, March 14, 1997
83. Simons, Marlise "Dutch Say a Sex Ring Used Infants On Internet," *New York Times*, July 19, 1998
84. Smith, Joe "Sally Army Paedo Ring," *Scottish Daily Record*, September 7, 2001

85. Sounes, Howard *Fred & Rose: The Full Story of Fred and Rose West and the Gloucester House of Horrors*, Warner Books, 1995

86. Steele, John "Hunt for Girls After Bodies Found in Child-Sex Probe," *News Telegraph*, August 19, 1996

87. Sterling, Robert "Daddy's Little Princess," *The Konformist*, www.Konformist.com

88. Stout, David "Internet Child Pornography Operation Is Raided in U.S. and Abroad," *New York Times*, September 3, 1998

89. Sullivan, Mike "MP Aide Facing Porn Charge," *The Sun*, March 11, 2003

90. Sverdlick, Alan "The Snuff Movie Myth," *New York Post*, February 25, 1999

91. Thomas, Gordon *Enslaved*, Pharos Books, 1991

92. Tremlett, Giles "Portugal's Elite Linked to Paedophile Ring," *Guardian*, February 14, 2003

93. Tremlett, Giles "Portugal's Crisis of Confidence," *Guardian*, October 14, 2003

94. Ward, David "Police Smash Child Porn Network," *Guardian*, March 28, 2001

95. Warmbir, Steve "Feds Allege Brothers Kept Large Amount of Child Porn," *Chicago Sun Times*, September 25, 2002

96. Warren, Marcus "Belgians Shocked by Tales of Secret Policemen's Orgy," *News Telegraph*, March 16, 1997

97. Willan, Philip "Paedophile Videos Stun Italians," *Guardian*, September 29, 2000

98. Wilson, Jamie "Dismay at Paedophile Sentences," *Guardian*, February 14, 2001

99. "Missing Kids: Belgian Parents Take Action," *CNN.com*, August 21, 1996

100. "9 Police Detained in Child-Murder Case," *Los Angeles Times*, September 11, 1996

101. "Belgian Hero Dismissed," *New York Times*, October 15, 1996

102. "Mexico Under Fire Over Child Abuse," *BBC News*, November 14, 1997

103. "Dutch Investigate Child Pornography Ring Claim," *The Irish Times*, July 17, 1998

104. "Child Pornographer Found Dead in His Home," *New York Times*, September 9, 1998
105. "Child Porn 'Ringleaders' Go On Trial," *BBC News*, June 23, 1999
106. "Verdicts Due in French Pornography Trial," *BBC News*, May 10, 2000
107. "Porn Ring 'Was Real Child Abuse,'" *BBC News*, January 10, 2001
108. "13 Arrested in Child Porn Raids," *Guardian*, January 17, 2001
109. "International Child Porn Ring Smashed," *BBC News*, March 26, 2001
110. "Belgian Sex Ring 'Ignored,'" *BBC News*, January 22, 2002
111. "Conspiracy Theories Resurface at Belgian Paedophile's Trial," *The Star*, March 2, 2004
112. "Dutroux Not Working Alone, Jury Told," *Expatica News*, March 2, 2004
113. "Defence Raise Satanic Cult," *News24.com*, March 3, 2004
114. "Dutroux Blames Accomplices for Horrific Murders," *Agence France-Presse*, March 3, 2004
115. *Encyclopaedia Britannica*, www.britannica.com
116. Microsoft's *Encarta Encyclopedia*

…to Washington

117. Asseo, Laurie "Justices Will Review Ban on Virtual Kiddie Porn," *Associated Press*, January 22, 2001
118. Bowart, Walter *Operation Mind Control*, Dell Publishing, 1978
119. Dale, Maryclaire "Mingo Hires Controversial Doctor," *Charleston Gazette*, July 1, 1997
120. DeCamp, John W. *The Franklin Cover-Up*, AWT, Inc., 1992
121. Estes, Richard J. and Neil Alan Weiner "The Commercial Sexual Exploitation of Children In the U.S., Canada and Mexico," University of Pennsylvania, School of Social Work, Center for the Study of Youth Policy, September 10, 2001
122. Gold, Scott and Greg Krikorian "Profiling Not Always Model of Accuracy," *Los Angeles Times*, July 18, 2002
123. Hedges, Michael and Jerry Seper "Power Broker Served Drugs, Sex at Parties Bugged for Blackmail," *Washington Times*, June 30, 1989

124. Hedges, Michael and Jerry Seper "Spence was Target Before Raid on Ring," *Washington Times*, July 10, 1989

125. Hedges, Michael and Jerry Seper "Secret Service Furloughs Third White House Guard," *Washington Times*, July 26, 1989

126. Hedges, Michael and Jerry Seper "Spence Elusive, Said to Be Everywhere But Isn't," *Washington Times*, August 3, 1989

127. Hedges, Michael and Jerry Seper "Spence Arrested in N.Y., Released; Once-Host to Powerful Reduced to Begging, Sleeping in Park," *Washington Times*, August 9, 1989

128. Hedges, Michael and Jerry Seper "In Death, Spence Stayed True to Form," *Washington Times*, November 13, 1989

129. Hedges, Michael and Jerry Seper "Spence As Much an Enigma in Death As He Was in Life," *Washington Times*, November 13, 1989

130. Hollingsworth, Jan *Unspeakable Acts*, Congdon & Weed, 1986

131. Huffstutter, P.J. "'Virtual' Porn: Born of Digital Wizardry," *Los Angeles Times*, April 17, 2002

132. Junod, Tom "The Devil in Greg Dark," *Esquire*, February 2001

133. Klosterman, Chuck "Bending Spoons with Britney Spears," *Esquire*, November 2003

134. Landis, Bill *Anger: The Unauthorized Biography of Kenneth Anger*, Harper Collins, 1995

135. Li, David K. "Naughton Free in Time for Christmas," *New York Post*, December 23, 1999

136. Li, David K. "Turn Him Loose! Judge Voids Naughton's Porno Conviction," *New York Post*, January 22, 2000

137. Lichfield, John "White House 'Great Gatsby' Lands in a New York Jail Cell," *Independent*, August 10, 1989

138. Lichfield, John "White House Midnight Rambler Found Dead," *Independent*, November 13, 1989

139. McCain, Robert Stacy "Endorsement of Adult-Child Sex on Rise," *The Washington Times*, April 19, 2002

140. Mega, Marcello "Dismay As International Paedophile Probe Fails," *Scotland on Sunday*, August 24, 2003

141. Mintz, John, Martha Sherill and Elsa Walsh "The Shadow World of Craig Spence," *Washington Post*, July 18, 1989

142. Osborn, Andrew "Belgium Still Haunted by Paedophile Scandal," *Guardian*, January 25, 2002

143. Pruden, Wesley "A Little Outrage For the Children?" *Washington Time*s, August 25, 1989

144. Rodriguez, Paul M. and George Archibald "'Call-Boy' Service Prospers Using High Finance, High Tech," *Washington Time*s, June 29, 1989

145. Rodriguez, Paul M. and George Archibald "RNC Calls Scandal a 'Tragic Situation'," *Washington Time*s, June 30, 1989

146. Rodriguez, Paul M. and George Archibald "U.S. Expands Probe of 'Call Boy' Ring," *Washington Time*s, July 6, 1989

147. Rodriguez, Paul M. and George Archibald "Sex Sold From Congressman's Apartment; Frank's Lover was 'Call Boy'," *Washington Time*s, August 25, 1989

148. Rodriguez, Paul M. and George Archibald "Sex Sold From Congressman's Apartment; School Used as Base for Sex Ring," *Washington Time*s, August 25, 1989

149. Rodriguez, Paul M. and George Archibald "The Gobie Story; Frank's 'Call Boy' Tells All," *Washington Time*s, September 1, 1989

150. Rodriguez, Paul M. "Prostitutes Corroborate Frank Stories," *Washington Time*s, February 2, 1990

151. Rodriguez, Paul M. "'Call Boy' Leader Gets 5 Years," *Washington Time*s, June 13, 1991

152. Savage, David "Justices to Tackle 'Virtual' Child Porn," *Los Angeles Times*, January 23, 2001

153. Savage, David "Ban on 'Virtual' Child Porn is Upset by Court," *Los Angeles Times*, April 17, 2002

154. Sterling, Robert "Daddy's Little Princess," *The Konformist*, www.konformist.com

155. Tarpley, Webster G. and Anton Chaitkin *George Bush: The Unauthorized Biography*, www.tarpley.net/bushb.htm

156. Thomas, Gordon *Journey Into Madness*, Bantam, 1989

157. Thomas, Gordon *Enslaved*, Pharos Books, 1991

158. Valentine, Douglas *The Phoenix Program*, Morrow, 1990

159. Weinstein, Henry and Greg Miller "'Virtual' Child Porn Is Legal, Court Says," *Los Angeles Times*, December 18, 1999

160. "Obituary of Craig Spence," *Daily Telegraph*, November 14, 1989

161. "Colby Played Role in Probe of Franklin," *Omaha World Herald*, April 30, 1996

162. "Bush Budget Seeks Child Program Cuts," *Los Angeles Times*, March 24, 2001

163. "Millions Suffer in Sex Slavery," *NewsMax.com*, April 24, 2001

164. "Russian Police Start Witch-Hunt…Literally," *Only in Russia*, April 3, 2003

165. "One Million Children Trafficked Each Year—UNICEF," *Reuters*, July 29, 2003

166. "The Child Sex Trade," *A&E Investigative Reports*

167. "Conspiracy of Silence," *Yorkshire Television and the Discovery Channel*

168. *Paul A. Bonacci v. Lawrence E. King (4:CV91-3037)*, United States District Court for the District of Nebraska, Memorandum of Decision, February 22, 1999

Uncle Sam Wants Your Children

169. Arce, Rose Marie "Liability in Point Abuse Case Debated," *The Times Herald Record* (Middletown, New York), December 23, 1986

170. Blood, Linda *The New Satanists*, Warner Books, 1994

171. Cunningham, Douglas and Alan Snel "A Legacy of Pain: Settlement Doesn't Ease Abused Children's Fears," *The Times Herald Record* (Middletown, New York), June 11, 1991

172. DeCamp, John W. *The Franklin Cover-Up*, AWT, Inc., 1992

173. Ehrensaft, Diane "Preschool Child Sex Abuse: The Aftermath of the Presidio Case," *The American Journal of Orthopsychiatry*, April 1992

174. Goldston, Linda "Army of the Night," *San Jose Mercury News*, July 24, 1988

175. Goldston, Linda "Satanic Priest Questioned in New Sex Case," *San Jose Mercury News*, May 13, 1989

176. Hays, Constance L. "$2.7 Million Settles Army Child-Abuse Case," *New York Times*, May 23, 1991

177. Lempinen, Edward W. "Satanism Linked to Scores of U.S. Child Abuse Cases," *San Francisco Chronicle*, November 5, 1987

178. Sawyer, Kathy "Army Doctor Turns Down Promotion; Lax Response to Case of Child Abuse Cited," *Washington Post*, June 25, 1985

179. Steinberg, Jeffrey "Satanic Subversion of the U.S. Military," *EIR*, July 2, 1999

180. "Army Doctor Refuses Promotion in Protest," *San Diego Union Tribune*, June 25, 1985

181. "The Keys to Hell and Death—Part II," *SFLR News* (the newsletter of San Francisco Liberation Radio), May 21, 2001

182. *Michael Aquino v. The Honorable Michael Stone, Secretary of the Army (Civ. A. No. 90-1547-A)*, United States District Court, Alexandria Division, July 1, 1991

McMolestation

183. Constantine, Alex *Virtual Government*, Feral House, 1997

184. Hollingsworth, Jan *Unspeakable Acts*, Congdon & Weed, 1986

185. Kahaner, Larry *Cults That Kill*, Warner Books, 1989

186. Newton, Michael *Raising Hell*, Avon Books, 1993

187. Raschke, Carl *Painted Black*, Harper and Row, 1990

188. Rothenberg, Mikel A. and Charles F. Chapman *Dictionary of Medical Terms for the Nonmedical Person,* Barron's Educational Series, 1989

189. Ryder, Daniel *Cover-Up of the Century*, Ryder Publishing, 1996

190. Stickel, E. Gary, Ph.D. "Archaeological Investigations of the McMartin Preschool Site, Manhattan Beach, California" (unpublished report of investigation)

191. Summit, Dr. Roland C. "The Dark Tunnels of McMartin," *Journal of Psychohistory*, Spring 1994

192. *The American Heritage Dictionary of the English Language, Fourth Edition*, Houghton Mifflin Company, 2000

It Couldn't Happen Here

193. Hollingsworth, Jan *Unspeakable Acts*, Congdon & Weed, 1986

194. "Former Minister Sought on Child Porn Charges," *Los Angeles Times*, August 11, 2002

Finders Keepers

195. Bouchard, Joseph E., Ed Bruske, Mary Thorton, John Harris and Linda Wheeler "Officials Describe 'Cult Rituals' in Child Abuse Case," *Washington Post*, February 7, 1987

196. Davies, Nick and Jeevan Vasager "Global Porn Ring Broken," *Guardian*, January 11, 2001

197. Leyden, John "US Gov. Builds Huge Child Porn Database," *The Register*, April 14, 2003

198. Martinez, Ramon J. "Report of Investigation," United States Customs Service Documents, February 7, 1987; February 12, 1987; April 13, 1987

199. Thomas, Kenn and Len Bracken "The Finders' Keeper," *Steamshovel Press*, Issue #16, 1998

200. Tyner, Arlene "Mind Control Part 3: The Blowback Effect of Brain Tampering," *Probe Magazine*, July-August, 2000

201. Witkin, Gordon, Peter Cary and Ancel Martinez "Through a Glass, Very Darkly," *U.S. News and World Report*, December 27, 1993—January 3, 1994

202. "Belgian Porn Scandal Leads to Florida Raid," *Los Angeles Times*, August 15, 2000

203. "Child Porn Database to Help Find Victims," *Associated Press*, April 5, 2003.

204. "I Was Used, Says Man Charged Over Schoolgirl Murders," *The Age*, March 2, 2004

Part II: There's Something About Henry
Baumeister, Herb

205. Geringer, Joe "Baumeister: Skeletons Beyond the Closet," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com

206. Newton, Michael "Larry Eyler: The Highway Murderer," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com

207. Weinstein, Fannie and Melinda Wilson *Where the Bodies are Buried*, St. Martin's, 1998

208. "The Secret Life of a Serial Killer," *A&E Investigative Reports*

209. "Perfect Crimes: The Herb Baumeister Killings," *The History Channel*

Berdella, Bob

210. Jackman, Tom and Troy Cole *Rites of Burial*, Pinnacle, 1992

211. Mehl, Karen "Bob Berdella," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com

Berkowitz, David

212. Dunleavy, Steve "Some Doubt Berkowitz is an Only Son," *New York Post*, June 22, 1999

213. Newton, Michael *Raising Hell*, Avon Books, 1993

214. Terry, Maury *The Ultimate Evil*, Barnes and Noble Books, 1999

215. "Son of Sam Speaks: The Untold Story," *A&E Investigative Reports*

216. "Summer of Terror: The Son of Sam Story," *The Discovery Channel*

Bianchi, Ken and Angelo Buono

217. Bardsley, Marilyn "The Hillside Stranglers," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com

218. Chavez, Stephanie and Anna Gorman "'Hillside Strangler' Dies at 67," *Los Angeles Times*, September 22, 2002

219. O'Brien, Darcy *Two of a Kind: The Hillside Stranglers*, Signet, 1985

220. Schwarz, Ted *The Hillside Strangler*, Signet, 1982

221. "The Hillside Stranglers," *A&E American Justice*

222. "The Hillside Strangler: Kenneth Bianchi," *Court TV Mugshots*

Bundy, Ted

223. Bell, Rachael "Ted Bundy," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com

224. Larsen, Richard W. *Bundy: The Deliberate Stranger*, Pocket Books, 1980

225. Michaud, Stephen G. and Hugh Aynesworth *The Only Living Witness*, Signet, 1983

226. Rule, Ann *The Stranger Beside Me*, Signet, 1980

227. "Ted Bundy: The Mind of a Killer," *A&E Biography*

228. "Ted Bundy: Beneath the Mask," *Court TV Mugshots*

Chase, Richard

229. Biondi, Lt. Ray and Walt Hecox *The Dracula Killer*, Pocket Books, 1992

230. Ramsland, Katherine "Richard Trenton Chase: The Vampire of Sacramento," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com

Clark, Douglas and Louise Bundy

231. Farr, Louise *The Sunset Murders*, Pocket Books, 1992

232. Steel, Fiona "Addicted to Love: The Sunset Strip Murders," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com

Dahmer, Jeffrey

233. Bardsley, Marilyn "Jeffrey Dahmer," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com

234. Boston, John "Jeffrey Dahmer," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com

235. Davis, Don *The Milwaukee Murders*, St. Martin's, 1991

236. "Dahmer: Mystery of a Serial Killer," *A&E American Justice*

237. "Heidnik and Dahmer," *A&E American Justice*

DeSalvo, Albert

238. Bardsley, Marilyn "The Boston Strangler," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com

239. Ferdinand, Pamela "New Evidence Revives Case of Boston Strangler," *Washington Post*, December 2, 2000

240. Kelly, Susan *The Boston Stranglers*, Birch Lane Press, 1995

241. Kirkpatrick, Sidney D. "The Psychic, the Shoe Salesman and the Boston Strangler," *Los Angeles Times Magazine*, May 12, 2002

242. Posner, Gerald "Who is the Real Boston Strangler?" *Talk Magazine*, October 2000

243. "DeSalvo's Body Reburied Minus DNA Samples," *Los Angeles Times*, October 30, 2001

244. "New DNA Tests Fail to Identify Boston Strangler," *Los Angeles Times*, December 7, 2001

245. "DNA Clears Boston Strangler," *Los Angeles Daily News*, December 7, 2001

246. "The Boston Strangler," *A&E Biography*

247. "The Boston Strangler: Forensics Evidence," *The Discovery Channel*, July 31, 2002

Frazier, John Lindley

248. Lunde, Donald T. and Jefferson Morgan *The Die Song*, W.W. Norton & Company, 1980

249. Ramsland, Katherine "John Lindley Frazier: The Killer Prophet," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com

Gacy, John Wayne

250. Bell, Rachael "John Wayne Gacy, Jr.," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com

251. Bardsley, Marilyn "Dean Corll," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com

252. Cahill, Tim *Buried Dreams*, Bantam, 1986

253. Sullivan, Terry with Peter T. Maiken *Killer Clown*, Grosset & Dunlap, 1983

254. "John Wayne Gacy: Buried Secrets," *A&E American Justice*

255. "John Wayne Gacy: A Monster in Disguise," *A&E Biography*

256. "John Wayne Gacy: Inside the Mind of the Killer Clown," *Court TV Mugshots*

Gecht, Robin (The Ripper Crew)

257. Baumann, Edward and John O'Brien "Trails End: Gruesome Clues Led to an Altar in an Attic," *Chicago Tribune*, October 12, 1987

258. Fletcher, Jaye Slade *Deadly Thrills*, Onyx, 1995

259. Newton, Michael *Raising Hell*, Avon Books, 1993

Heidnik, Gary

260. Bellamy, Patrick "Gary Heidnik: To Hell and Back," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com

261. Englade, Ken *Cellar of Horror*, St. Martin's, 1988

262. McKenzie, Clancy D. and Lance S. Wright "Not Guilty: The Execution of Gary Heidnik, Shame on America, Shame on our Justice System," from *Delayed Posttraumatic Stress Disorders From Infancy,* Harwood Academic Publishers, 1996

263. "Heidnik and Dahmer," *A&E American Justice*

Heirens, William

264. Campbell, Duncan "'Lipstick Killer' Fights for Freedom," *Guardian*, April 5, 2002

265. Geringer, Joseph "William Heirens: Lipstick Killer or Legal Scapegoat?" *The Crime Library,* www.crimelibrary.com

266. Nash, Jay Robert *Bloodletters and Bad Men, Book 3*, Warner Books, 1975

267. Warden, Rob "William Heirens: Background," *Center for Wrongful Convictions*, Northwestern University School of Law, March 20, 2002

268. "Who is the Lipstick Killer?" *A&E American Justice*

Jones, Jim (Jonestown)

269. Farren, Mick *Conspiracies, Lies, and Hidden Agendas*, Renaissance Books, 1999

270. Meiers, Michael *Was Jonestown a CIA Medical Experiment?*, Edwin Mellen Press, 1989

271. Moench, Doug *The Big Book of Conspiracies*, Paradox Press, 1995

272. Vankin, Jonathan and John Whalen *The 60 Greatest Conspiracies of All Time*, Citadel, 1998

273. Vankin, Jonathan *Conspiracies, Cover-Ups and Crimes*, Illuminet Press, 1996

274. Zepezauer, Mark *The CIA's Greatest Hits*, Odonian Press, 1994

275. "Jonestown: Mystery of a Massacre," *A&E Investigative Reports*

Kemper, Edmund

276. Cheney, Margaret *Why—The Serial Killer in America*, R&E Publishers, 1992

277. MacLeod, Marlee "Edmund Kemper III," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com

Long, Bobby Joe

278. Norris, Joel *Serial Killers*, Doubleday, 1988

279. Steel, Fiona "Bobby Joe Long: Savage Lust and Murder," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com

280. Ward, Bernie *Bobby Joe: In the Mind of a Monster*, Cool Hand Communications, Inc., 1995

Lucas, Henry Lee and Ottis Toole

281. Barton, Billy Bob "An Interview With Ottis Toole: The Cannibal Kid," *Boiled Angel*, Issue #8

282. Bellamy, Patrick "Henry Lee Lucas: Deadly Drifter," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com

283. Call, Max *The Hand of Death: The Henry Lee Lucas Story*, Prescott Press, 1985

284. Newton, Michael *Raising Hell*, Avon Books, 1993

285. Norris, Joel *Serial Killers*, Doubleday, 1988

286. Raschke, Carl *Painted Black*, Harper and Row, 1990

287. "Serial Killer Eludes Texas' Death Chamber," *Associated Press*, June 27, 1998

288. "Myth of the Serial Killer: The Henry Lee Lucas Story," *A&E American Justice*

289. "Henry Lee Lucas: The Confession Killer," *TLC Deadly Minds*

290. Sondra London's Web Site, www.sondralondon.com

Manson, Charles

291. Bardsley, Marilyn "Charles Manson," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com

292. Black, David *Acid: The Secret History of LSD*, Vision Paperbacks, 1998

293. Brussell, Mae, radio broadcast #16, October 13, 1971

294. Bugliosi, Vincent with Curt Gentry *Helter Skelter*, Bantam Books, 1974

295. Gilmore, John and Ron Kenner *Manson: The Unholy Trail of Charlie and the Family*, Amok, 2000

296. Lee, Martin and Bruce Shlain *Acid Dreams*, Grove Press, 1985

297. Nash, Jay Robert *Bloodletters and Bad Men, Book 3*, Warner Books, 1975

298. Newton, Michael *Raising Hell*, Avon Books, 1993

299. Norris, Joel *Serial Killers*, Doubleday, 1988

300. O'Neil, Paul "The Love and Terror Cult," *Life*, December 19, 1969

301. Raschke, Carl *Painted Black*, Harper and Row, 1990

302. Sanders, Ed *The Family*, Dutton, 1971

303. Terry, Maury *The Ultimate Evil*, Barnes and Noble Books, 1999

McDuff, Kenneth

304. "Free to Murder Again," *A&E American Justice*

305. *Court TV Mugshots*

Mullin, Herb

306. Lunde, Donald T. and Jefferson Morgan *The Die Song*, W.W. Norton & Company, 1980

307. Scott, Shirley Lynn "Herb Mullin: Killing to Save California from Earthquakes," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com

Ng, Charles and Leonard Lake

308. Bellamy, Patrick "Charles Ng: Cheating Death," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com
309. Harrington, Joseph and Robert Burger *Justice Denied*, Plenum Trade, 1999
310. Norris, Joel *Serial Killers*, Doubleday, 1988
311. Thomas, Gordon *Enslaved*, Pharos Books, 1991
312. Wallace, Bill "Ng Trial Characterized By Odd Twists and Turns," *San Francisco Chronicle*, February 10, 1999
313. Yi, Daniel "Ng Jury Deadlocked on 1 Murder Count," *Los Angeles Times*, February 24, 1999
314. Yi, Daniel "Jury Convicts Ng on 11 Counts of Murder," *Los Angeles Times*, February 25, 1999
315. Yi, Daniel "Juror Dismissed in Ng Penalty Phase," *Los Angeles Times*, April 15, 1999
316. Yi, Daniel "Father of Serial Killer Ng Says He Severely Beat Son as Child," *Los Angeles Times*, April 21, 1999
317. Yi, Daniel "Jury Urges Death for Killer Ng," *Los Angeles Times*, May 4, 1999
318. Yi, Daniel "Deputies Find Juror Number in Ng's Cell," *Los Angeles Times*, May 21, 1999
319. Yi, Daniel "Judge Orders Death Penalty for Ng in Mid-'80s Murders of 11 People," *Los Angeles Times*, July 1, 1999
320. "Ng's Mother Tells Jurors of Anguish, Beatings," *Associated Press*, April 22, 1999
321. "Ng May Have Contacted Juror, Records Show," *Reuters*, May 5, 1999
322. "The California Killing Field," *A&E American Justice*

Ramirez, Richard

323. Boston, John "The Night Stalker," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com
324. Carlo, Philip *The Night Stalker*, Pinnacle, 1996
325. Geringer, Joe "Night Stalker Richard Ramirez: From the Bowels of Hell," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com

326. Newton, Michael *Raising Hell*, Avon Books, 1993

327. Raschke, Carl *Painted Black*, Harper and Row, 1990

328. "Night Stalker," *A&E American Justice*

329. "The Night Stalker: Richard Ramirez," *Court TV Mugshots*

Resendez-Ramirez, Rafael

330. Geringer, Joe "Angel Maturino Resendez: The Railroad Killer," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com

331. Kolker, Claudia "Suspected Serial Killer Surrenders at Mexico Border," *Los Angeles Times*, July 14, 1999

Rolling, Danny

332. Ryzuk, Mary S. *The Gainesville Ripper*, Donald I. Fine, 1994

333. Steel, Fiona "Savage Weekend: Daniel Rolling," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com

334. "Murder in a College Town," *A&E American Justice*

335. "Killer on Campus: Danny Rolling," *Court TV Mugshots*

Shawcross, Arthur

336. Bellamy, Patrick "The Arthur Shawcross Story: Sins of the Flesh," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com

337. Norris, Joel *Arthur Shawcross: The Genesee River Killer*, Pinnacle, 1992

Speck, Richard

338. Fillippelli, Connie "Richard Speck: Born to Raise Hell," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com

339. Nash, Jay Robert *Bloodletters and Bad Men, Book 3*, Warner Books, 1975

340. "Richard Speck," *A&E Investigative Reports*

341. "Richard Speck: Born to Raise Hell," *Court TV Mugshots*

Stayner, Cary

342. Bailey, Eric "Charges Filed in Tourist Slayings," *Los Angeles Times*, October 21, 1999
343. Bailey, Eric "Jurors Asked to Look Into Mind of a Killer," *Los Angeles Times*, August 19, 2002
344. Bailey, Eric "Stayner Is Found Guilty of Murders," *Los Angeles Times*, August 27, 2002
345. Bailey, Eric "Jury Urges Execution for Stayner," *Los Angeles Times*, October 10, 2002
346. Flynn, Sean "A Voice in the Dark," *Esquire*, January 2000
347. Geringer, Joe "Cary Stayner: Murder Among the Sequoias," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com
348. Hanley, Christine "Confessed Yosemite Killer's Tale Chilling," *Associated Press*, September 24, 1999
349. Meyer, Josh "Surprise Plea Ends Lurid Case," *Los Angeles Times*, September 11, 2000
350. Smith, Carlton *Murder at Yosemite*, St. Martin's, 1999
351. "Saliva on Envelope in Yosemite Case Not Stayner's, Test Finds," *Reuters*, October 7, 1999
352. "Paradise Lost," *ABC News 20/20*, July 26, 2002
353. "Infamous Molester Held in Alleged Try to Buy Boy," *Los Angeles Times*, January 4, 2003

Whitman, Charles

354. MacLeod, Marlee "Charles Whitman: The Texas Tower Sniper," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com
355. Nash, Jay Robert *Bloodletters and Bad Men, Book 3*, Warner Books, 1975
356. Yardley, Jim "Off Limits Since '74, Deck Reopens," *New York Times*, September 16, 1999
357. "Mass Murder: An American Tragedy," *A&E American Justice*
358. "Catastrophe: Deadly Tower," *Dateline NBC*, August 17, 2001

Matamoros and Juarez Cult Cases

359. Ivins, Molly "A Call for Justice in Troubling Murders," *Boston Globe*, May 15, 2002
360. Baynton, Dannah "Murder in Juarez and Beyond," *Americas.Org*, May-June 2003
361. Kolker, Claudia and James F. Smith "Excavation of Suspected Drug Cartel Graves Begins," *Los Angeles Times*, December 1, 1999
362. Kolker, Claudia "Joint Mexico-U.S. Probe of Grave Site Defended," *Los Angeles Times*, December 4, 1999
363. Linedecker, Clifford L. *Hell Ranch*, Diamond Books, 1989
364. Newton, Michael *Raising Hell*, Avon Books, 1993
365. Newton, Michael "Adolfo de Jesus Constanzo," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com
366. Newton, Michael "Ciudad Juarez: The Serial Killer's Playground," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com
367. Provost, Gary *Across the Border*, Pocket Books, 1989
368. Rama, Anahi "Hundreds Dead in Mexico Border's 'Feminicide,'" Reuters, May 26, 2003
369. Raschke, Carl *Painted Black*, Harper and Row, 1990
370. Sheridan, Mary Beth "Estimate of Bodies in Juarez Graves Overstated," *Los Angeles Times*, December 18, 1999
371. Stevenson, Mark "Mexican Prosecutors Claim Organ Trafficking Behind Border Murders," *Atlanta Journal-Constitution*, May 2, 2003
372. Tuckman, Jo "Deadly Frontier," *Guardian*, March 25, 2002
373. Valdez, Diana Washington "Families, Officials Claim Cover-Ups Keep Killings From Being Solved," *El Paso Times*, June 23, 2002
374. Valdez, Diana Washington "Families, Some Officials Suspect Police are Involved," *El Paso Times*, June 24, 2002
375. Vulliamy, Ed "Murder In Mexico," *Observer*, March 9, 2003
376. "Senorita Extraviada," *KCET POV*, August 20, 2002
377. "Chronology of Killings," *El Paso Times*, June 23, 2002
378. "Mexico Seeks U.S. Man in Border Case," *Guardian*, May 9, 2003
379. "Ten Years of Border Femicide," *La Prensa San Diego*, March 5, 2003

380. "Suspects May Be Linked to Ciudad Juarez Killings," *Los Angeles Times*, February 18, 2004

Mind Control and MK-ULTRA

381. Bain, Donald *The Control of Candy Jones*, Playboy Press, 1976

382. Bowart, Walter *Operation Mind Control*, Dell Publishing, 1978

383. Chase, Alston "Harvard and the Making of the Unabomber," *Atlantic Monthly*, June 2000

384. Cockburn, Alexander and Jeffrey St. Clair "CIA Shrinks and LSD," *Counterpunch*, October 18, 1999

385. Marks, John *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*, Times Books, 1979

386. Martin, Harry V. and David Caul "Mind Control," *Napa Sentinel*, August-November 1991

387. Watson, Peter *War on the Mind*, Hutchinson, 1978

388. Tyner, Arlene "Mind Control Part 3: The Blowback Effect of Brain Tampering," *Probe Magazine*, July-August, 2000

Monster of Florence and Patrice Alegre

389. Carroll, Rory "Italian Mass Killer 'Was Servant of Satanic Sect,'" *The Observer*, September 9, 2001

390. Clarke, Hillary "Sixth Mutilated Corpse Revives 'Monster' Fears," *Sunday Herald*, July 7, 2002

391. Fichot, Nicolas "Evidence Evaporates in Lurid French Sex Scandal," *Reuters*, June 26, 2003

392. Henley, Jon "Magistrate Fired in Murder Inquiry," *Guardian*, March 29, 2002

393. Henley, Jon "Anti-porn Leader Denies Orgy Links," *Guardian*, May 21, 2003

394. Owen, Richard "Net Closes on Satanic High Priest," *The Times UK*, April 5, 2001

395. Parsons, Rob "Orgies, Torture, Murder and the Mayor," *Sunday Herald*, June 8, 2003

396. Webster, Paul "Tales of Orgies and Murder Rock France," *Observer*, June 1, 2003

397. Webster, Paul "Toulouse Officials Ordered Murder, Says Serial Killer," *Guardian*, June 3, 2003

398. Webster, Paul "Mayor's 'Affair' With Serial Killer," *Guardian*, June 6, 2003

399. "Monster of Florence May Still be Alive," *Guardian*, August 8, 2001

400. "French 'Orgy' Storm Grows," *BBC News*, June 2, 2003

Satanism and the Occult

401. Blood, Linda *The New Satanists*, Warner Books, 1994

402. Connolly, Kate "German Satanic Couple Held After Ritual Murder," *Guardian*, July 13, 2001

403. Emory, Dave "The Ultimate Evil: Mind Control, Satanism, and the U.S. National Security Establishment," *KPFK* radio broadcast

404. Kahaner, Larry *Cults That Kill*, Warner Books, 1989

405. Lachman, Gary Valentine *Turn Off Your Mind: The Mystic Sixties and the Dark Side of the Age of Aquarius*, Sidgwick & Jackson, 2001

406. Landis, Bill *Anger: The Unauthorized Biography of Kenneth Anger*, Harper Collins, 1995

407. Levenda, Peter *Unholy Alliance*, Avon, 1995

408. Newton, Michael *Raising Hell*, Avon Books, 1993

409. Raschke, Carl *Painted Black*, Harper and Row, 1990

Other

410. Blum, William *Killing Hope*, Common Courage Press, 1995

411. Bower, Tom *The Paperclip Conspiracy*, Little, Brown, 1987

412. Brussell, Mae and Stephanie Caruana "Inside the Hearst Kidnapping," *Berkeley Barb*, Number 18, 1974

413. Chomsky, Noam *What Uncle Sam Really Wants*, Odonian Press, 1997

414. Cockburn, Alexander and Jeffrey St. Clair *Whiteout*, Verso, 1998

415. Davenport, Robert *Roots of the Rich and Famous*, Taylor Publishing, 1998

416. DeCamp, John W. *The Franklin Cover-Up*, AWT, Inc., 1992

417. Farago, Ladislas *Aftermath*, Simon and Schuster, 1974
418. Hunt, Linda *Secret Agenda*, St. Martin's Press, 1991
419. Langguth, A.J. *Hidden Terrors*, Pantheon, 1978
420. Lee, Martin *The Beast Reawakens*, Routledge, 2000
421. Lemons, Stephen "Return to Wonderland," *Salon.com*, June 9, 2000
422. MacDonell, Allan "In Too Deep," *LA Weekly*, October 3–9, 2003
423. Nash, Jay Robert *Bloodletters and Bad Men, Book 3*, Warner Books, 1975
424. Ramsland, Katherine "Robert K. Ressler: Taking on the Monsters," *The Crime Library*
425. Scott, Shirley Lynn "What Makes Serial Killers Tick?" *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com
426. Simpson, Christopher *Blowback*, Weidenfeld & Nicolson, 1988
427. Thomas, Gordon *Enslaved*, Pharos Books, 1991
428. Valentine, Douglas *The Phoenix Program*, Morrow, 1990
429. "A Study of Assassination," CIA training manual used circa 1954, author unknown
430. "The Girl in the Box," *A&E American Justice*
431. "Adults Only: The Secret History of the Other Hollywood," *Court TV*

Part III: And In Other News…
Boulder

432. Bellamy, Patrick "Main Event: The Murder of JonBenét Ramsey," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com
433. Bellamy, Patrick "Stephen Singular: Investigates the JonBenét Ramsey Case," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com
434. Geller, Andy "Ex-JonBenét Prober Says Mom Wrote Ransom Note," *New York Post*, April 9, 2000
435. Kelly, David "Low-Profile Defense Team Knows High-Profile Cases," *Los Angeles Times*, August 4, 2003
436. Mendick, Robert "Parents to Blame for Big Rise in Child Murders," *Independent*, January 20, 2002

437. Singular, Stephen *Presumed Guilty: An Investigation into the JonBenét Ramsey Case, the Media, and the Culture of Pornography*, New Millenium, 1999

438. Sterling, Robert "Daddy's Little Princess," *The Konformist*, www.konformist.com

439. Thomas, Steve *JonBenét: Inside the Murder Investigation*, St. Martins, 2000

440. Wecht, Cyril and Charles Bosworth *Who Killed JonBenét Ramsey?*, Onyx, 1998

441. "Ramsey Investigators Looked for Pornography," *San Jose Mercury News*, September 30, 1997

442. "JonBenét: Anatomy of an Investigation," *A&E Investigative Reports*

Atlanta

443. Bell, Rachael "The Atlanta Child Murders," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com

444. Dettlinger, Chet and Jeff Prugh *The List*, Philmay Enterprises, Inc., 1983

445. Morrison, Toni "Once Upon a Time in Atlanta…," *Independent*, March 26, 2000

446. Newton, Michael *Raising Hell*, Avon Books, 1993

447. Raschke, Carl *Painted Black*, Harper and Row, 1990

448. "The Atlanta Child Murders," *A&E American Justice*

449. "Wayne Williams and the Atlanta Child Murders," *Court TV Mugshots*

450. *NPR News* "Morning Edition," May 9, 2001

Role Models

Marquis de Sade

451. Lynott, Douglass B. "The Marquis de Sade: Sex, Sacrilege and Sublimity," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com

452. Schaeffer, Neil *The Marquis de Sade: A Life*, Harvard University Press, 2000

453. Steiner, Alex "A Comment on Quills and the Marquis de Sade," *World Socialist Web Site*, January 12, 2001, www.wsws.org

454. Walsh, David and Joanne Laurier "Must We Celebrate Sade?" *World Socialist Web Site*, January 9, 2001, www.wsws.org

Gilles de Rais

455. Gribben, Mark "Gilles de Rais: The Pious Monster," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com
456. Newton, Michael *Raising Hell*, Avon Books, 1993
457. Vankin, Jonathan *The Big Book of Bad*, Paradox Press, 1998

Howard Unruh:

458. Nash, Jay Robert *Bloodletters and Bad Men, Book 3*, Warner Books, 1975

The Lindbergh Kidnapping

459. Ahlgren, Gregory and Stephen Monier *Crime of the Century: The Lindbergh Kidnapping Hoax*, Branden Books, 1993
460. Aiuto, Russel "Lindbergh," *The Crime Library*, www.crimelibrary.com
461. Higham, Charles *Trading With the Enemy,* Delacorte Press, 1983
462. Higham, Charles *American Swastika,* Doubleday, 1985
463. McGowan, David *Understanding the F-Word*, Writers Club Press, 2001
464. Street-Porter, Janet *Scandal!*, Penguin Books, 1981
465. *Encyclopaedia Britannica*, www.britannica.com
466. *A&E Biography* "Charles and Anne Lindbergh: Alone Together," April 2, 2000

Afterward

467. Nundy, Julian "'Cannibal' Emperor Bokassa is Offered Forgiveness in Death," *Electronic Telegraph*, Issue 531, November 5, 1996
468. Rupert, James "African Leader's Brutal Rule Recalled With Hate, Admiration," *Washington Post*, September 14, 1997
469. Street-Porter, Janet *Scandal!*, Penguin Books, 1981
470. Microsoft's *Encarta Encyclopedia*
471. "Cannibalism Aside, Nation Mourns Ex-Dictator, Jean-Bedel Bokassa," *Associated Press*, November 5, 1996

svalispeaksagain 11:10 pm on April 15, 2019

Tags: dissociation (30), mind control (69), occult (13), programming (60), ritual abuse (65), SRA (45)

Presenter Systems/Host Systems Programming

Note: this describes some aspects of how presentation programming is done in some groups; this will vary greatly between organizations. It is meant as an introduction to the topic, and is not a complete description of all methods used, or all programs installed.

The parts of an individual that often initially present in therapy or counseling have been variously labeled by therapists as the “presentation”, the “apparently normal part or ANP” or the “host”. These are the parts that were created (with extensive help, if mind control is involved) to cover the fact that the individual has experienced traumatic, chronic abuse throughout childhood. In this book, we will call them “presenters” or “host system”.

An individual with mind control will be unable to do their assigned jobs well if it is obvious that they are traumatized, programmed and dissociated. This is one reason that a presenter or host system will be programmed in starting in the prenatal stage of life, and will be continuously reprogrammed throughout life: the presenters hide the reality of the individual’s real life history and skills not only from others, but from themselves. They are considered a “cover”, under which the individual can look and act like one person, and act “normal”. They are often considered the sheep that hide the “wolf” inside by groups that program them.

One myth is that the host, or presentation, has undergone less abuse than the other systems inside, and was split off to “protect” themselves from knowing how bad things were. This may be true for an individual who has not undergone mind control, in which case, the “core” and the “host” may be one and the same. But groups that use mind control will normally bury and hide the core behind layers of programming, and the parts that come out and live day to day life when outside of a cult facility may have undergone programming that is just as extensive, or even more so, than the assassins, warlocks and other parts that do not come out when interacting with non-cult members. The host or presentation in a mind controlled individual will often be one that has experienced some of the worst abuse within the system, and as a result, has made specific agreements to never disclose the abuse, and to perform in specific ways.

Follow

One example of this is programming of the presentation to embrace false, or "white" Christianity instead of true Christianity. To prevent the individual from accepting true Christian[illegible] presentations may be put through various setups in which a false "Jesus" abuses them; where false church services are done, and the people in the setup all abuse the child while using typical Christian phrases such as "praise the Lord!" "Let me pray for you", etc. In other setups, the false "Jesus" is very loving and kind, embraces the child, comforts the child, and makes the child promise to always follow him, and to never allow the "other" (the real) Jesus near. Because the child bonds to the false "loving" Jesus, they agree. Because this Jesus is loving and kind, the individual may believe that he is the "real" one, until work on the anti-christian and false Christian programming in the host system is done. This false Jesus is much harder to detect than the angry, punishing one, and the individual will need to pray for the true God to show the difference. The end result is a presentation entering counseling that looks and sounds Christian, but with belief in a God and Jesus who are either powerless to save and heal, or who oppose true Christianity.

The host/presentation system entering into therapy with a background of mind control will often have extensive programming to have doubt, unbelief and denial raise up if the individual begins to recover memories of their abuse or rewards by the group that programmed them. If a memory comes forward, the person may have parts programmed to doubt their validity, and to doubt whether they can ever heal, or that God can ever heal them. In another layer, denial may come forward, causing the survivor to say that the memories aren't true, they are unbelievable, they must be made up, etc. The survivor will also deny God's goodness, and will recover first memories that seem to confirm that God never showed up during their abuse; they will be programmed to deny and disbelieve the times that He did answer prayer.

There will often be parts in the presentation, connected to parts in every system, that also carry unbelief: even in the face of a miraculous answer to prayer, they will persist in having difficulty in believing that God answered them, or that He loves them. These parts have made prior agreements to always doubt, deny, or disbelieve the goodness and love of God, and the agreements and the traumas that caused the agreements to be made will need to be addressed.

The host system/ presentation is often one of the most cult loyal systems, due to its extensive programming. In order to do missions successfully, these parts must be able to switch in and out as needed to provide a cover. The amnesia to cult activity that survivors often report is due to an agreement by both the presenters and the parts that actively participate in rituals (which also include the presenters) to never remember and/or disclose this activity, not only to others, but to themselves. If a memory of participating in a ritual begins to come forward, the presentation will be programmed to deny what they are remembering, to disbelieve it, and to cast doubt on it. They may be flooded with "overwhelm", crying and saying "I can't stand to know this", "this could never have happened to me", "I will lose my faith if I believe this happened" and other reactions that prevent processing and healing of the traumas.

Accessing by a group using mind control will not occur in most cases without agreements by parts that this will occur. While survivors may report "abductions" and being dragged unwillingly to rituals, this is rarely the case in groups that use mind control. Instead, the presentation/Christian host has been programmed to agree to be accessed, and to believe that they can never prevent it or say "no" when a summons or signal (such as a knock at the door) comes. The parts that have been traumatized into making these agreements will need to break the agreements, and process their traumas, and also come to realize that they really do have a choice. It can help them to

realize that people really do say “no” to access, and it works; they can be safe.

The presentation/host will often have extensive programming designed to keep amnesia going, especially regarding any evidence of ongoing cult activity (this will be discussed in more detail later in the chapter). These parts have been programmed to ensure that the amnesia between parts inside continues, and involve agreements to never remember both by the presentation parts, and the parts that hold the memories.

An important part of presentation programming involves the use of buffers. Buffers may be located within a specific brainwave state (frequently, this is epsilon). The purpose of buffers is to create a stoical, unfeeling numbness that helps to hide the extensive trauma and feeling states further in. Buffers are charged with preventing the feelings involved with trauma (including recent activity such as being reprogrammed the night before, or attending a ritual two days ago) from intruding into the conscious awareness of the presentation. They act as emotionless guards, and do their jobs literally on pain of death, of self or of loved ones. Buffers have undergone extensive trauma to reach this state of feeling nothing, described by some as “blankness” or a state of “nothingness”.

The presentations will often be seated within various brainwave states. These include:

- alpha (color-coded red): this is a relaxed state, and often includes parts with sexual programming
- beta (color-coded blue): this is a slightly more alert wave state, and is where military and assassin programming may be located
- gamma (color-coded green): this is a high-energy wavestate, and may be where loyalty to cult programming and to the group is located.
- epsilon (color-coded grey-white): this is often where pain programming and buffer systems (split from the parts that learned to hold pain) is located.
- theta (color-coded black): This is a low-energy brainwave state, and psychic ability is often seated in this state
- delta (color codes may vary, with silver blue common): this is the brainwave state that came first, and which the other parts of the presentation are split from. Delta system is the controller for the other presentation parts and brainwave states, and will often hold memory files (coded based upon security level, and access to them guarded by delta) as well as internal programming and punishment files for the presentations.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

Interview
February 14, 2022
In "healing"

Book available on Amazon
April 25, 2018
In "mind control"

The different types of SRA and Mind Control
January 29, 2019
In "mind control"

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

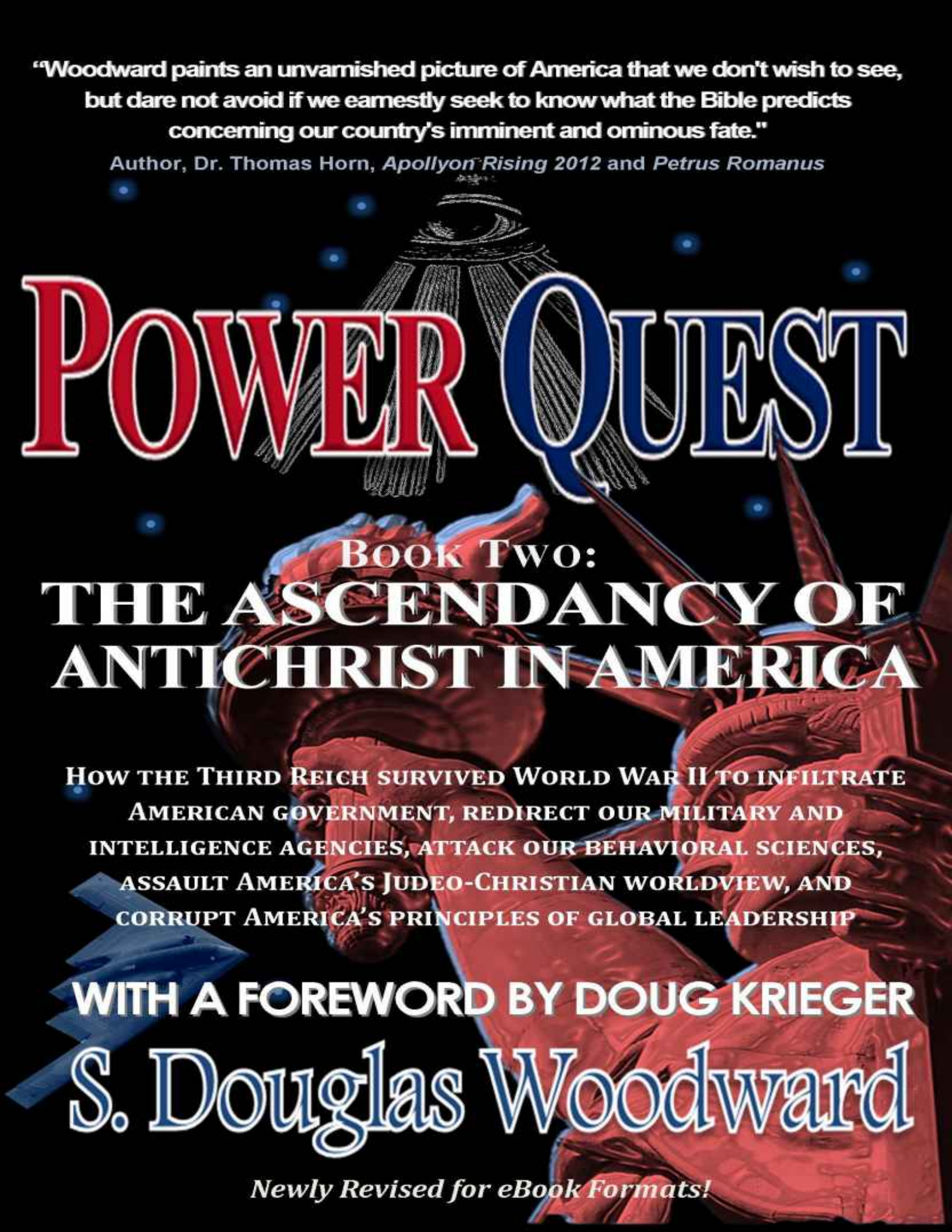
← Processing Mind Control Trauma

Chart for Working on Internal Programs →

Create a free website or blog at WordPress.com.

"Woodward paints an unvarnished picture of America that we don't wish to see, but dare not avoid if we earnestly seek to know what the Bible predicts concerning our country's imminent and ominous fate."

Author, Dr. Thomas Horn, *Apollyon Rising 2012* and *Petrus Romanus*



POWER QUEST

Book Two:

THE ASCENDANCY OF ANTICHRIST IN AMERICA

How the Third Reich survived World War II to infiltrate American government, redirect our military and intelligence agencies, attack our behavioral sciences, assault America's Judeo-Christian worldview, and corrupt America's principles of global leadership

WITH A FOREWORD BY DOUG KRIEGER

S. Douglas Woodward

Newly Revised for eBook Formats!

POWER QUEST - BOOK TWO:

THE ASCENDANCY OF ANTICHRIST IN AMERICA

How the Third Reich Survived World War II
to Infiltrate American Government,
Redirect Our Military and Intelligence Agencies,
Attack our Behavioral Sciences,
Assault America's Judeo-Christian Worldview,
and Corrupt America's Principles
of Global Leadership

S. Douglas Woodward

Faith Happens
Woodinville, WA

COPYRIGHT

Copyright S. Douglas Woodward © 2011, 2013

doug@faith-happens.com

Faith Happens, Woodinville 98077

All rights reserved. Published 2011

Printed in the United States of America.

ISBN: 978-1-304-52444-7

This work is licensed under the Creative Commons Attribution-ShareAlike 3.0 Unported License. To view a copy of this license, visit http://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc/2.5/ or send a letter to: Creative Commons, 171 Second Street, Suite 300, San Francisco, CA 94105, USA - http://www.lulu.com All images from wikipedia commons, public domain and other public domain sources unless otherwise noted.

Figures drawn by the author

Cover design by the author

All scripture taken from the *King James Version of the Bible* unless otherwise noted ISBN-13: 978-1478138174

ISBN-10: 1478138173

Revision in December, 2012

Table of Contents

Power Quest - Book Two: *The Ascendancy of Antichrist in America*

Copyright

Table of Contents

Table of Figures

Acknowledgements

Foreword

Prologue: *America's Role in Eschatology - Rethinking the Standard Scenario*

- *What Dispensationalism Believes about America*
- *Antichrist and the Prophet Daniel*
- *The Daughter of Babylon*
- *The Argument for the Decline of America*
- *The Nature of America's Sin*
- *Conclusion: The Nazi Infestation of America*

Recap of Book One and Introduction to Book Two

- *When Did World War II End and III Begin?*
- *The Greatest Story Never Told*
- *Nazi Forward Planning*
- *The Combination of Fascism and Spiritualism*
- *The Ghastly Outcome of Globalism*
- *America's Spiritual Obsession with the Paranormal*
- *Conclusion - Summoning the Antichrist*

Chapter One: *Why the Nazi Threat Continued After the West Won World War II*

- *UFOs vs. the USAF*

The Intelligence Connection

The Unusual Usual Explanation for UFOs

The German Flying Saucer Myth

The Mastermind of Arcane German Technology

The UFO Connection to the JFK Conspirators

Roswell and the Reich

The Possible Base of Operations

Argentina and the Escape of the German Reich

The Escape of Martin Bormann

Conclusion - Nazi Show-offs or Just Show and Tell?

Chapter Two: *How the United States Government Helped Nazis Infiltrate America*

The Paranoia of Post-War America

Why Did We Want the Nazis in America?

America's Nazi Secret

A Highly Credible Source

The New York Times and Its Role in the Cover-up

Roosevelt's Fight within His Own Administration

Did the Vatican Help Hitler Escape to the Americas?

The English Royals and Their Support for Nazism

The Politics of Profit

Conclusion - The Cover-up Continues

Chapter Three: *America's Intelligence Services and Supernatural Weapons of War*

Can We Foresee the Future?

Doktor Grenbaum

The Insincerity of Scientific Skepticism

Funding for Psychics - The Proof is in the Paying

The History of Clairvoyance

The Cold War - The Impetus to Act

How Does Remote Viewing Work?

So Impress Me

Conclusion - Opening the Door to the Paranormal

Chapter Four: *America's Intelligence Services, Little Green Men, and the Great Pyramids*

The Puppet Masters of the Early Days

Introducing THE NINE

Spoon Bending and Star Trek

The Only Planet of Choice

Life on Mars and the Esalen Institute

Conclusion - How PSI Spies Promoted Spiritualism

Chapter Five: *Esotericism in Zero Gravity - America's Occult Agenda for Exploring the Cosmos*

Spaced Out in Pasadena

The Impact of the Babalon Working Ritual

What Does Scientology Have to Do with All This?

Dates, Times, and Latitudes: The Rituals of NASA

Taking Mars at Face Value

Hoagland - Can We Take His Claims Seriously?

Conclusion - What Is and Isn't Compelling

Chapter Six: *Beware the Military-Industrial Complex!*

Strange Bed-Fellows in Space: Nazis and Freemasons

Brookings Bothers

Are Two Space Programs Really Better than One?

Did NASA Participate in Kennedy's Assassination?

The Motive for Killing Kennedy - Follow the Money

The Joint Space Program Initiative

The Watershed in Modern American History

Eisenhower's Farewell Speech

Beating around the Bushes

Conclusion - Can We Handle the Truth?

Chapter Seven: *CIA Psyche Out - Mind Control, LSD, Manchurian Candidates and Multiple Personality Disorder*

The Origin of Mind Control in Germany and Russia

More Dogged Experiments

LSD - Better Intelligence through Chemistry

How Hallucinogens Backfired on the CIA

Investigating the CIA

Mind Control, MOCKINGBIRD, and the Media

What is Dissociative Identity Disorder?

DID as the Basis for the Manchurian Candidate Kids

The Extent and Complexity of Child Programming

Conclusion - Why Did the CIA Go Down this Path?

Chapter Eight: *Eugenics, Social Engineering, and Making the Übermensch in America*

Germany Had No Monopoly on Evil

A Brief History of Eugenics in America

The Progeny of Eugenics

Financing Racism in America

Goading the Government into Eugenics

Eugenical News

The Controversy Grows

Distancing Eugenics from Nazism

Nietzsche's Übermensch and the Master Race

Drs. Otmar von Verschuer and Josef Mengele

Conclusion - The Rehabilitation of Dr. Verschuer

Chapter Nine: *Mengele, Children Warriors, The 'Royal' Conspiracy, and the Creation of Antichrist*

Where's Mengele?

Children Made Warriors

Keeping Company with The Company

Layered Programming and Colorful Doctors

Mengele - His Movements and Reconciliation with the Traditional Account

Doug Riggs and SRA/DID Therapy

Commonalities in the Testimony

Mengele's Adolescent Assistant

The Coming King and His Court

The Death of Mengele

Conclusion - The Meaning of Mengele's Death

Epilogue: *Mystery Babylon - America's Role in the Globalist Agenda for the Twenty-first Century*

A Balanced Gospel

The Coming Judgment of God on America

America as 'Mystery - Babylon'

The Clash of the Titans

The Ultimate Choice for Time and Eternity

Bibliography

About the Author

Table of Figures

Figure 1 - The Georgia Guidestones in Elbert County, GA

Figure 2 - *The Apotheosis of Washington*, The Capitol Dome

Figure 3 - It Came from Outer Space Poster

Figure 4 - Plaque at *The Integratron* Mojave Desert, Landers, California

Figure 5 - Fantasy picture of the German V7 Flying Saucer

Figure 6 - Joseph P. Farrell, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*

Figure 7 - *Aftermath* by Ladislas Farago

Figure 8 - The Messerschmitt Me-262, the First Operational Jet in Warfare

Figure 9– Reinhard Gehlen during World War II

Figure 10 - Allen Dulles

Figure 11 - The Signing of the *Reischskonkordat*, July 20, 1933

Figure 12 - King George VI

Figure 13 – 'The Big Board' in the 'War Room' from Stanley Kubrick's *Dr. Strangelove*

Figure 14 - The History Channel's Popular Show, *Ancient Aliens*

Figure 15 - Uri Geller with Andrija Puharich

Figure 16 - Jack Parsons

Figure 17 - Dr. Theodore von Kármán with his Jet Assisted Takeoff Team (JATO) in 1940

Figure 18 - L. Ron Hubbard, in Los Angeles, 1950

Figure 19 - Euro Parliament Postage Stamp

Figure 20 – The 'City' of Cydonia on Mars

Figure 21 - Percival Lowell's 'Canals'

Figure 22 - Von Braun's Team Re-unites at White Sands, 1946

Figure 23 - Arthur M. Young

Figure 24 - Sidney Gottlieb's Approval of LSD experiments in 1953

Figure 25 - Movie Poster from the 1962 film, *The Manchurian Candidate*

Figure 26 - Herbert Spencer

Figure 27 - Margaret Sanger in 1922

Figure 28 - Oliver Wendell Holmes Jr. 1898, at the time of his appointment to the Supreme Court

Figure 29 - The Boys from Brazil Poster

Figure 30 - Neuschwanstein Castle, Marienbrücke

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

Thanks to my many friends and fans that reviewed and made helpful comments on the manuscript. Continued appreciation is especially addressed to Dr. Thomas Horn, Gary Stearman, and Bob Ulrich for their unfailing support and encouragement.

A special thanks to Patricia and Rain Miljan for their encouragement and support. And another to Kathryn Kriss for sharing her insights and research on a number of occasions that set me in motion.

All acknowledgements in *Book One of Power Quest* carry over to Book Two. Thank you everyone who is listed there.

Additionally, an extra special thanks to Douglas Riggs and the Morning Star Testimony Church. Their openness and continued prayers are greatly felt and sincerely valued.

Finally, for this lightly revised edition, a big thanks to Doug Krieger from *The-tribulation-network.com*. Doug and I have become fast friends over the last few months of 2012. I have been fascinated by his many articles on prophecy and what is known as “sacred geometry” published over the last decade (available at the URL above). Doug’s enthusiasm for his subjects infuses his writing with so much energy it’s hard for the reader to sit still while reading. We have dialogued extensively on the subject of America’s fate. The result culminated in my request to Doug to share just a bit of his vast knowledge bank and conviction on the subject of America in Bible prophecy. His *Foreword* to *Power Quest - Book Two* is not only a ringing endorsement but a fabulous new beginning. Please enjoy.

This book is dedicated to my wife and soul mate,
Donna, on our 37th anniversary.

FOREWORD

By Doug Krieger

S. Douglas Woodward's unfamiliar but undeniable biblical thesis upon which I am pleased to provide comment is simply this: the seat of the future Antichrist resides in the Babylon of the Last Days – and this "Babylon the Great" *is none other than the United States of America*. For most readers, this assertion is so unexpected that on the surface it seems the greatest of defamations – so much so that from the political Right one presumes to hear, "America, love it or leave it;" while from the Left, "With a few more socialist tweaks we will aptly conceal the discernible attributes of our 'Beast Nation'. No way will you be able to spot its seven heads and ten horns!"

Perhaps it's acceptable for an immigrant pastor like the late S. Franklin Logsdon (*to wit a Canadian*), to express a contrary view of America…

> "It is unthinkable that God who knows the end from the beginning would pinpoint such small nations as Libya, Egypt, Ethiopia and Syria in the prophetic declaration and completely overlook the wealthiest and most powerful nation on the earth. Too long have we evaded the question. Too long have we summarily grouped our country with the so-called revived Roman Empire. Too long have we persisted in terming the U. S. A. in prophecy as one of the 'lion's cubs,' thus giving her but an inferential mention in the shadow of a diminishing Britain."[1]

On the other hand, it is most unsettling when a native-born American from the heartland (Oklahoma to be specific) chimes in with "Amen" at Logsdon's reprimand. One might not question an Alex Jones or a Jesse Ventura fretting over the establishment of FEMA camps and inciting angst amongst their viewers merely for provocation (although I for one consider their outspoken remarks more candid than outrageous). So how can we remain calm when we hear the intelligent conclusion of a notable American businessman and former pastor, a Presbyterian at that, who seemingly disparages the "red, white and blue?" Such sentiments are sure to rankle the patriotic spirit of more than a few conservatives, especially evangelicals whom Woodward calls family.

Over the past few decades, some Protestants have dared suppose America to be the "Seat of Antichrist" – perhaps even speculating that Antichrist masquerades as the then-current President of the United States. This stance, wedded with enough partisan vitriol to invigorate it from time to time, has replaced the much older judgment championed by Bible-believing Christians that the Catholic Church was Mystery Babylon and the Pope its Antichrist. Such intolerance with Rome has been easily justified because its religious rituals closely resemble those of ancient Babylon (find a copy of Alexander Hislop's classic, *The Two Babylons* for details.). Indeed, the vitality of these charges has been customary since the time of Luther and Calvin, whether laid at the feet of the Roman "religious system" or the institution itself. This notion represents the Protestant interpretive school we know as "historicism."[2]

However, despite how startled the reader may be at first blush, the idea "America as the Babylon of the last days" really isn't that new either. Here are a few examples: - It was propounded in 1859 by Frances Rolleston in Notes on the Apocalypse, as Explained by the Hebrew Scriptures: The Place in Prophecy of America and Australia Being Pointed Out.[3]

- Seventh-day Adventist Church expositor Uriah Smith in 1884 authored a text entitled *The United States in the Light of Prophecy; or, An Exposition of Rev. 13:11-17*.[4] Smith was insistent that America was the Second Beast of Revelation 13:11-17.

- More recently, 1998, R. A. Coombes, in *America, the Babylon: America's Destiny Foretold in Biblical Prophecy* presented thirty-three identifying markers which he claimed identified America as the Babylon of the End Times, the seat of Antichrist. He tallies sixty-six reasons why New York City is the bastion symbolically identified as Babylon the Great.

A "Babylonian-like American empire" today hardly resembles the Papal influence lingering in Europe which was finally dealt a death-blow by French revolutionaries 220 years ago. Likewise, it is a far cry from the so-called *Pax Britannia* – not to mention light years beyond the state of affairs after "The Great War" marked by Woodrow Wilson's designs to "make the world safe for democracy." To be sure, Adolf Hitler lost no time demonstrating how hazardous the world remained after Wilson's League of Nations was formed. Concluding a "total victory" over the Axis enemies, nevertheless, America

continued on in mortal conflict (and sometimes *combat* through various surrogates) conducting the so-called "Cold-war." But massive spending to fund an arms race with which its enemies could not keep pace, America won the contest and in the process built the most overwhelming military force and lop-sided advantage the world has even known. Indeed, within a few decades, America's geo-political antagonists cowered at the new leviathan. No sooner had Reagan's words been spoken, "Mr. Gorbachev: tear down this wall!" America found itself alone as the world's only remaining super power. Instead of realizing Khrushchev's threat to America ("We will bury you"), the Russian bear was tranquilized into a protracted hibernation from which it is only now shaking off the cobwebs.

Failure to apprehend Daniel's colossus as built upon the banks of the Tigris-Euphrates (viz., its ultimate ***nature and meaning***); and unaware or unwilling to recognize that Western Civilization marches inexorably toward "Gentile" global hegemony – politically, militarily, commercially, and even culturally – we who are proponents of Bible prophecy often mire ourselves in extraneous eschatological debates. Our most popular end-times scenarios mute the amplitude of our prophetic voice because of our unwillingness to discern the real source of political, financial, and spiritual despotism today. In our exuberance to proclaim our patriotism as well as our traditional evangelical perspective on "the last days," we relegate ourselves to the periphery in the war for the soul of civilization – and tragically – at the most critical moment in the battle.

Some spokespersons for prophetic topics unwittingly diminish Biblical relevance and infuse believers within the Western world with false hopes – that America's absence from prophetic writ suggests either an implosion by some manner of cataclysm (be it natural or man-made); or an ineffectual witness from the unintended consequences of the secret pre-tribulational rapture. Could it be that our eschatology itself is to blame for the church in America becoming the lukewarm Laodicean Church of Revelation? In the anticipation of joining the resurrected and the raptured, are believers today ill-prepared to give a vibrant witness on behalf of the Testimony of Jesus? Has the belief in the "blessed hope of the Church" dampened the energizing Spirit of Prophecy – a Spirit which would have us as Christ's Bride, testify against the seat of Antichrist, aka Babylon the Great?

Moody Memorial's Sr. Pastor, Logsdon, countered and critiqued American evangelicals who asserted that "the USA is given only ***inferential mention*** in the context of the great prophetical panoply prior to the Day of the Lord." He inferred America's patriotic voices of prophecy reinforced this "benign critique" by misjudging our national motives. Perhaps naively, advocates for what we now call American *exceptionalism* (the world's "last and best hope for freedom") suppose her illuminating torch of liberty is lifted high to protect personal freedoms throughout our land and selflessly promote democracy throughout the whole earth. By *ipso facto* adopting nationalism as a secondary religion, many most grievous sins in our land have been overlooked or marginalized. In this timely work, Woodward seeks to correct this brazen oversight.

After studying scores of books published on the subject of America's role in the last days – whether written by well-meaning futurists, historical interpreters, or those who would dismiss her engagement as purely symbolic – both Woodward and this commentator conclude that the Church's theology of the end-times (based upon Old Testament prophets such as Daniel, Zechariah, Isaiah, Ezekiel, and New Testament authors including select portions of the synoptic gospels, Paul's letters to his churches, Peter, Jude, and John the Revelator), awaits a more pertinent contemporary interpretation that refuses to compromise the great Pre-millenarian insights proclaimed by Darby and a host of others during the 1800-1900s. We affirm the Word of God is living and will speak yet again to our generation with weight and unmistakable clarity.

It was for this purpose that I joined the dedicated but non-harmonious chorus of domestic prophets and decided to pen two on-line texts. *Antichrist – Reflections on the Desolator* and *The Rise or Fall of American Empire?* My own assessment of America's short-comings mirror Woodward's although I must admit I was stunned to encounter from his historical account details regarding the depth of America's mostly-concealed depravity post-World War II. The facts were legion: American scientists, eugenicists, industrialists, militarists and ideologues teamed with Nazi émigrés in abundance upon American soil (at the invitation of our Government no less!) in a remorseless effort to "protect" our republic from communism and in the wake altered our country's values with their fiendish prescriptions to build a new world freed

from the threat of the Marxist dialectic. The undesirable aftereffects of this bad medicine plague us still. Although invisible to all but a discerning few, pilgrim Winthrop's "City set on a hill" now resembles Dante's Inferno on a mountaintop. As Billy Graham's wife Ruth once said, "If God doesn't judge America, He'll have to apologize to Sodom and Gomorrah!" No wonder such evangelical luminaries like the late David Wilkerson saw Babylon's sudden destruction fulfilled in America! That idyllic picture of our nation which we'd like to affirm has assuredly been blurred. Our country is now a faint image… a shadowy silhouette of her former self. Nevertheless, most red-blooded Americans remain convinced (despite increasing evidence to the contrary) that our global humanitarian vision abides. Most profess this *consensus rosy-colored reality* prevails – revitalized with an oft-repeated appeal of "God bless America" anytime an unforeseen adversary threatens our American dream.

What is even more discouraging: the not-so-independent press fails to play their constructive role as a conscience for civil or political morality. With few exceptions, journalists are now oblivious to our nation's deficiencies. The occasional voice crying in the wilderness (I have in mind foreign policy critics like Chalmers Johnson or Norm Chomsky) has no public platform for expression except the seldom watched documentary available in the "backroom" of video store or a hard-to-find download on the Internet. The "Mike Wallaces" of *Sixty Minutes*, if they are to be found at all, are scarce when they should be vocal and visible in the public square.

Notwithstanding, the complicit press and our ascendant intelligence operatives, teaming up in an unspoken but obvious alliance to mislead, continues to churn out the most outlandish geopolitical hogwash. Our latest dose of "farsighted" analysis (I speak sarcastically of course) was foisted on the American public with the publication of a 140-page report released in December, 2012, by the National Intelligence Council (surely a misnomer) – citing "trends" wherein America and the world are facing "a critical juncture in human history, which could lead to widely contrasting futures." This successful quest for prosaic ambiguity was offered by Chairman Christopher Kojm. The most highly touted "game-changers" – sites Kojm – are led by our "crisis-prone" global economy (this disingenuous metaphor is sure to offend even the most cautious theorist of conspiratorial activity!) "Black

swans," like the collapse of the Euro or the juggernaut that is China's economy, threaten America's place in the world. And yet, the meandering report drones on, warning of global warming, an 8.3 billion world population by 2030, and a host of other gloomy prospects which "could" diminish the sphere's only super power. *Good grief, Scotty: even the Government now sounds like date-setting millenarians which, upon reflection, could compel our good brother Hal Lindsey to wince from incredulity!*

But wait: there's the final conclusion and summary committed to our trust by *Bloomberg News* reporter Nicole Gaouette. She cautions the U.S. role in this new world order grows hard to predict since the degree to which domination continues over the international system will vary widely. After waiting for the gasps to quiet, she quotes from the Report: "Despite that, the United States most likely will remain 'first among equals' in 2030 (?)…"[5]

Did you catch that? "First among equals?" The question mark is mine because the 800 lb. Gorilla sits upon a bench beside measly chimps Gaouette terms "equals." Despite that dubious observation, she regards the Gorilla "first" among them! Such an oxymoronic statement could only be brought to you by the aforesaid co-opted press via a so-called "intelligence gathering" establishment playing rope-a-dope in a vain and surreptitious effort to dismiss the continuance of US leadership. "Lead from behind?" – *please!* If our leadership doesn't endure, we must immediately inquire, "Whose behind would be left?"

After diminishing American superiority in Nobel Prizes, Olympic Medals, educational prowess, and (to say the VERY least military might), her analysis crescendos with this über-cautious, and perhaps worse, disingenuous deprecation: Our economic clout has run amuck. Oh? Well, pray tell – how is it that our President can, first, operate our third installment of quantitative easing, aka "QE3" (Obama's effort to stimulate the economy to the tune of $40B per month); secondly, attract three buyers of our Treasury Bills for every one we offer; and thirdly, pay next to nothing in interest to the world's most finicky "investors" cornering their assets? The conclusion is as plain as the picture of a particular dead president on a dollar bill: despite protests to the contrary (and scare tactics by both politicians and prophets alike) the one remaining currency of unquestioned value on the planet is American. While it may be shrinking in stature, its resiliency easily outdoes the rest!

Consequently, I must conclude that either powerful mesmerizing additives abound in the ether hanging over yonder hinterlands (which gives rise to naysayers of U.S. hegemony) or the optimists championing European ascendancy are smoking something still barely illegal (in most spots) beyond anything concocted by artisans from Arcata, California. With that last sortie, surely you've surmised that I'm at the point of absolute zero tolerance for geopolitical numbskulls with an overweening sense of their prophetic perspective in the grand scheme of things. Their misinformed analytic arrogance is surpassed only by their myopia regarding of the all-but-obvious: America has no intention of rolling up its bed and stealing away into the night. The U.S.A. may no longer be that "City on the hill" but it is clear to even the most amateur observer that we fully intend to remain its king.

Just the thought of evangelical prophetic brethren gainsaying "American exceptionalism" because the rapture of the American church (amongst a few others outside our borders) will reduce our stranglehold on the global economy, military dominance, and world affairs generally, makes one think our most zealous Bible-believing prophets have forgotten who sits so comfortably at the controls. Perhaps it's because the Lindseys and LaHayes assume we've done far better in evangelizing America than we normally acknowledge? After the rapture, assuming it occurs before the Tribulation (a matter upon which Woodward and I disagree by the way), I must raise several interrogatives: Just how many airplanes do you suppose will remain in the sky unmanned? How many nuclear reactors will be left unattended? How many Wall Street markets will go askew for want of brokers and market-makers? What will be the number of cars careening out of control? How many "Jack and Jills" will go up the hill paired only to come down single? *Far fewer than the popular evangelical view espouses!*

That is why I differ (and I know Woodward does too) with those who assume the *rapture* is the root cause for the resignation of America from its role of undisputed leadership in the world. Furthermore, as if my well-meaning sarcasm isn't pressing my luck with the reader already, I venture that those who believe the wingless lift-off of millions of Americans to fly the friendly skies will promptly lead to our undoing, such adherents lack a good grasp on the reality of our situation here in the good ol' U.S. of A. To suppose it a factual statement worthy of affirmation, that many tens of millions of our

fellow citizens will be saved from the wrath to come (because they have individually and sincerely received Jesus Christ as their personal savior), is itself a supposition worthy of indictment. I would suppose *just the opposite!* The unsaved are legion. The way I read biblical prophecy, America is not destined only to diminish… to go away quietly into that good night… but *to be utterly destroyed* (in fulfillment of the prophecies of Jeremiah, Isaiah, and John the Revelator) because far too many of its fiscal, military, and political leaders have little hint of Christian sentiments, let alone advocate the salvation it alone would supply our society.

So in summation, while Doug Woodward and I do not agree on the timing of certain prophetic events, his argument in ***The Ascendancy of Antichrist in America*** is one I wholly support: The fault in America lies mostly within its "citadel of corruption" whose cup is full of putridity and from whence the merchants of the earth are made rich through her wares. "Come out of her My people, that you be not partakers of her sins and her plagues!" (Rev. 18:4) We must be mindful: Israel was delivered from Egypt by the Almighty's miraculous intervention. I dare say that John's impassioned plea for God's people to depart Babylon and the snare of her world-wide abominations may only be realized *through the rapture of the Saints* rather than a well-timed voluntary exodus. For like the majority of reticent Hebrews who refused to return to Jerusalem from Babylon with Zerubbabel, I predict the vast majority won't leave their familiar confines since they reject the reality I assert: we reside smack dab in the middle of the subject "city" of God's greatest antipathy: Babylon the Great! The U.S.A. is the Daughter of Babylon!

And yet, hope springs eternal. Will the perceptive have eyes to see? Could it be that after reading the text laid out here, the reader will discern that the 800 lb. gorilla we know as the United States of America, atop the bench adjacent, exists under the monstrous monkey suit metaphorically conveyed by the name Babylon? Will the reader conclude as Woodward and I have, that this oversized ape has no intention of giving up his seat to another monkey of lesser girth? Hopefully, that is the case. Babylon the Gorilla, er, rather… the Great, will only be unseated when the Lord of Heaven, says, "Enough!" And with that pronouncement, the salvation of our Great God will safeguard His

people in the twinkling of an eye and unleash a fiery judgment on the unrepentant long past due for kindling.

Doug Krieger
www.the-tribulation-network.com
December, 2012

PROLOGUE:

AMERICA'S ROLE IN ESCHATOLOGY -

RETHINKING THE STANDARD SCENARIO

"We will be as a city upon a hill. The eyes of all people are upon us, so that if we deal falsely with our God in this work we have undertaken and so cause Him to withdraw His present help from us, we shall be made a story and a byword throughout the world."

John Winthrop, 1630

WHAT DISPENSATIONALISM BELIEVES ABOUT AMERICA

Being an evangelical, I believe in the literal 'space-time' Second Coming of Jesus Christ to rule the world. In my studied opinion, the events of our present day lead me to affirm this supernatural climax of history is near; in fact, it is very near.

As argued elsewhere (see the author's book, *Black Sun, Blood Moon*), Christianity is an apocalyptic religion. I assert this to be so because the primary watchword of Jesus Christ was that the "Kingdom of God is near - even at the door" (Matthew 24:33, paraphrased). This element - the imminent return of the Messiah for both Christians and Jews - is the cornerstone of a biblical gospel. Whether Jesus Christ returns in six months / sixty years / or six centuries hence, biblical Christianity assumes its followers are constantly 'watching' for the return of the Savior. As Jesus stated succinctly, "What I say unto you, I say unto all, '*Watch'*!" (Mark 13:37) *Power Quest, Book Two: The Ascendancy of Antichrist in America* seeks to solidify my argument that our government condones financial corruption and coddles mega-corporations as well as conforming to the socialist, globalist governing principles sought by the elite ruling class reducing American sovereignty. But my intent is also to demonstrate how America's government after World War II was infiltrated by numerous Nazi technologies (physical, social, and spiritual), ultimately altering the nature of our Republic, contaminating many of our social structures, victimizing thousands of innocents (who were American citizens), and resetting what our Founders contemplated would ideally be our role in the world.

After considerable study over many years, I have concluded that America is a major player, if not THE player in the ascending of the notorious figure the Bible calls, *Antichrist*. This point of view is not mine alone. Many evangelicals, who have been students of Bible prophecy for the past thirty years or more, have come to the same conclusion. Many believe as I do now that America will play a vital role in the 'end-times' scenario. Indeed, it is already serving as 'enforcer' of the 'free-world' as plutocrats push us toward global socialism. Whether it leads from the front, or as President Obama recently said (in articulate Orwellian double-talk), it "leads from behind," our military muscle imposes this future *utopian* global State.

Ever since the publishing of Hal Lindsey's best-seller, *The Late Great Planet Earth* (1970) most evangelicals who live in light of the Second Coming as an imminent event, accept Lindsey's view along with those adopting the 'dispensational' perspective. Lindsey didn't 'invent' this end-times scenario. He built upon the teaching of many bible scholars before him. His approach to understanding the Bible - *Dispensationalism* - was founded by scholar J.N. Darby circa 1830 in Plymouth, England. While I don't subscribe to Lindsey's view 'hook, line and sinker', I do appreciate how it popularized a defensible and coherent biblical perspective bringing eschatological issues before the public. Like many other Christians in the latter half of the twentieth century, this author benefitted from Lindsey's books and ministry. However, it is now time to question certain core elements of the 'traditional apocalyptic scenario' that dispensationalists espouse - specifically the part America plays in Bible prophecy.

What do dispensationalists believe? In a nutshell, Dispensationalism is a method for interpretation that consists of several heuristics: (1) the Bible is the inspired Word of God; (2) there are different dispensations or *epochs* in history in which God's relationship to humankind differs from one *dispensation* to the next; and (3) God has not rejected His covenant with the Jewish people even while He has 'called out a [distinct] people for His name'; namely, the Church of Jesus Christ (See Acts 15:14).[6] The most notable dispensations are two: (1) the *age of law* (from the time of Moses to Jesus, in which a right standing with God is achieved by following God's law) and, (2) the *age of grace* (from the time of Jesus's death and resurrection to today, in which a right standing with God is achieved by accepting God's grace as displayed in the substitutionary death of Jesus Christ for our sins). There may be as many as seven dispensations according to various scholars with differing (and mostly well-founded) opinions. But these two dispensations stand as the most relevant to today's evangelical awareness of what is called 'redemptive history'.

However, a dispensational approach to interpreting the Bible goes beyond this segmentation of historical periods. When it comes to the question of "Where does America fit into the prophecy of the Bible?" the answer has almost always been either (1) the Bible is silent regarding the fate of America or (2) America is lumped into one of two groups listed within a single verse of

the Bible from the book of Ezekiel. America is either contained within the phrase “the merchants of Tarshish” (likely a reference to Spain) or one of the “young lions” (perhaps a prophetic reference to England). Therefore, if America is referenced at all, it is implied *amidst European peoples*.

Ezekiel’s prophecy comes within a passage describing a great war between a physically reinstated Israel and the hordes of *Gog and Magog*: “Sheba and Dedan, and the merchants of Tarshish, with all the young lions thereof, shall say unto thee, Art thou come to take a spoil? Hast thou gathered thy company to take a prey? To carry away silver and gold, to take away cattle and goods, to take a great spoil? (Ezekiel 38:13) [7] Orthodox Jews historically see this great *war of Gog and Magog* as the gateway to the Messianic Kingdom. Dispensationalists view it as a battle that occurs shortly before the return of Christ, but distinguish it from the final war, the so-called *Battle of Armageddon* (Revelation 16:16).

Furthermore, it is the view of Hal Lindsey and those who follow his teaching that America diminishes in prominence while a confederation of ten European nations arises, constituting a revival of the ‘old Roman empire’ establishing the Antichrist’s ‘seat of power’. Moreover, the attribute of ‘the beast with seven heads and ten horns’ is derived from nine different verses in the books of Daniel and Revelation where the beast is identified with seven heads and ten horns (see Daniel 7:7, 20, 24; Revelation 12:3, 12:1, 17:3, 7, 12, and 16).

However, is the city of Rome literally the ‘seat’ of Antichrist as it is the location of the Holy See (a synonym for the ‘seat of power’ or jurisdiction of the Roman Catholic Church)? Or is Rome a metaphor for ‘the Roman Empire’? Should we interpret the ten horns as ten nations derived from the more than two dozen sovereign states in today’s European Union? Or are the ten horns the *ten regions of world governance* proposed by the Club of Rome dating back to the 1950s?

The Book of Revelation indicates the beast is to reign over ‘all nations and tongues’ (“And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them: and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations.” Revelation 13:7). Does this mean there be one, singular monolithic government, or just a central authority that oversees the economic system of the world?

There are a various ‘standard’ interpretations implied by these rhetorical questions. But none of them brings us any closer to answering the question about how America does or doesn’t fit in to the alignment of nations in the ‘last days’. If we believe we live in the last days and we believe the Antichrist to be a literal world leader, discerning the machinations of the ‘world political system’ are of utmost importance. Why? Because if we don’t detect the means by which the Antichrist comes to power, we are not in position to warn the unaware nor to prevent his anointing. Recall the German church: Hitler was an archetype of Antichrist - yet the Church did not discern his true nature; so consequently they did next to nothing to stop him.

ANTICHRIST AND THE PROPHET DANIEL

Undeniably, even the early 'church fathers' understood the throne of the Antichrist to be Rome. Furthermore, today it is vehemently debated among two schools of thought in evangelicalism whether this beast is *past or future*. Certainly some theologians today known as 'preterists' maintain the Antichrist *came in the first century* and was either Emperor Nero (his rule, 54-68 AD) or Domitian (81-96 AD). Since so many Christians were martyred by these lawless Roman Caesars, it is easy to see why the first century church might have concluded the Antichrist was alive and living in the world as a Roman emperor at the time John wrote. Indeed, both tyrannical rulers were drenched in "the blood of the saints." (Revelation 17:6) However, for those who see the Antichrist to be a 'future führer', the idea of a Roman anti-Christ stems from a particular interpretation of the prophecy of *Daniel 9:24-27*, which speaks of the 'people of the prince that shall come' who crucifies the Jewish Messiah. This 'prince who is to come' is also known as 'the little horn' of Daniel 7:8, 8:9 as well as 'the beast' in Daniel 7:11 (and the other verses listed above). Obviously, Christians believe that Jesus Christ was this Messiah who was 'cut off' (put to death) by the 'people of the prince to come' - that is, the Roman people. Therefore, it follows then that the *prince must be Roman.* Citing the critical four verses from Chapter 9 of Daniel: *24 Seventy weeks [of years, 490 years in total, but not consecutive] are determined upon thy people and upon thy holy city, to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the most Holy.*

> *25 Know therefore and understand, that from the going forth of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem unto the Messiah the Prince shall be seven weeks, and threescore and two weeks: the street shall be built again, and the wall, even in troublous times.*[8]
>
> *26 And after threescore and two weeks shall Messiah be cut off, but not for himself: and the people of the prince that shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary; and the end thereof shall be with a flood, and unto the end of the war desolations are determined.*

27 And he shall confirm the covenant with many for one week: and in the midst of the week he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease, and for the overspreading of abominations he shall make it desolate, even until the consummation, and that determined shall be poured upon the desolate.

The logic seems clear enough: Since the Romans crucified Jesus they were the people who cut off the Messiah; therefore, the 'people' of this future prince means Antichrist must be a Roman. Therefore, it follows that if America exists in the end times and it isn't a part of the resuscitated Roman Empire, America must be a lesser player relegated to secondary status, perhaps not even amongst the alliance of ten nations. If America isn't specifically identified - the argument from 'silence' stipulates America must not be important.

Of course, because the 'new world' is nowhere mentioned in biblical geography (presumably ancient authors had no knowledge of 'the new world'), it is easy to conclude that America has no part to play in the unfolding of the Bible's end times prophecies. Although the author of Genesis (tradition teaches it was Moses) takes great pains to point out where all the tribes of the world settled (at least up to the time Genesis was penned in the fifteenth century BC, according to tradition), the Bible doesn't indicate any tribes, post-flood, settled in 'the new world'. Likewise, since the Bible is silent, shouldn't we assume America plays no part in the 'end times'?

Furthermore, there are other logical arguments suggesting America is a non-factor in the end-times. One of the most frequent rationales has to do with what happens to America after the event we know as 'the rapture of the church' when believers in Christ are snatched away to be with Christ and their loved ones as described in I Corinthians and I and II Thessalonians. In other words, won't America *fall apart* once the Church is raptured? After all, isn't a major portion of the American population Christian - won't millions of Americans be 'taken up in the clouds to be with the Lord'? Doesn't this imply that the U.S. military and our economy will be irreparably disrupted or destroyed?

There are now a number of evangelical scholars who believe other scenarios could come to pass. They even contemplate the opposite fate. Simply put: America's destiny may be supremely conspicuous. America happens to be

the most powerful nation the world has ever known based upon virtually any measure: economic, military, culturally, even scientifically. America dominates the world as no other nation ever has. Consequently, many would question why the Bible would 'leave America out' of the end-times discussion. If the end-time is near and if this generation enters into the apocalypse, it seems unlikely that the Bible's prophets would make no mention of it. If America isn't discussed or disclosed, did the Bible's prophets suffer an enormous failure of foresight? Given my view of God's infallible Word, I don't believe that is possible.

Yet, it is hard to argue with the traditional logic. From the perspective of those of us who believe in the so-called, 'pre-tribulation rapture' we assume that millions of Americans will indeed be 'translated' from earth to heaven "in the twinkling of an eye" (I Cor. 15:52). We also (perhaps being parochial or partial) presume a disproportionate number of our fellow citizens will go 'missing' when compared to the populaces of other countries around the globe. If true, America's fate certainly looks questionable if not especially gloomy.

However, this point of view assumes a specific sequence of events that may not occur. What if the rapture of the Church does not happen until some point later in the final seven years of 'Daniel's 70th Week' (known as the seven-year Tribulation period leading up to the Second Coming of Christ)? What if the rapture happens sometime from three to ten years before Daniel's 'final seven years' begins? Would America recover from the disruption caused by the rapture event? Is there another scenario that could come to pass other than the rapture transpiring at the very beginning of the tribulation period? Certainly there are those who believe in the rapture and the Second Coming, but hold the two events to be virtually simultaneous (the post-tribulation view). Therefore, what if we who believe in the pre-tribulation rapture doctrine are wrong? Is it not possible that America continues to be a preeminent world power? This doesn't mean that regarding America as a possible player in the appearance of Antichrist implies we hold a post-tribulational view. *However, it does suggest that we cannot 'hold America harmless' because we pre-suppose the rapture event demotes our nation to mere mediocrity.* We simply possess limited insight into what will happen immediately after the rapture. If my friend and author David W. Lowe is correct, the rapture is simultaneous

with the great earthquake of Revelation 6:14 - all nations are devastated not by the rapture per se, but by the horrendous ‘shaking’ that strikes throughout the world (“And the heaven departed as a scroll when it is rolled together; and every mountain and island were moved out of their places”). If that massive world-wide earthquake should occur, the world will no doubt expect America to step forward to lead the efforts in disaster relief.[9]

Obviously, there is no pat answer here because there isn’t one and only one scenario everyone within ‘biblical’ Christendom believes. Consequently, those who hold to a physical ‘snatching up of the Saints’ shouldn’t necessarily assume America is driven to its knees by an enormous group removed and ‘taken up into a cloud’ (I Thess. 4:17). Likewise, our position on the rapture doesn’t automatically translate (no pun intended) into an apocalyptic scenario where America disappears as a ‘player’ in the end times. Granted, given the sway of the long-held view that America vanishes and isn’t present as a force in the end times, our nation may be a most ‘*unusual* suspect’; however, since our current status stands as *the only true world power*, we are now *the primary suspect*. The fact that we already embody so many signs of decadence in our society (and *lawlessness within our institutions* which we will emphasize in the pages ahead), it only makes for a stronger case: America remains the one country ‘to watch closely’. Given this alternative point of view, even patriotic Americans should be prepared to consider more than ‘the usual suspects’. To be sure it is not a popular perspective; but we must take a tough look at our nation today.

Therefore, if America is not only capable but culpable in the arising of Antichrist in the scenario of ‘the last days’, we must ponder the possibility the Bible identifies America by another name. Indeed, our nation may be revealed by a veiled name that few have decoded before now. That recent ‘decoding’ seems to be why many contemporary scholars, even loyal American citizens, consider this outcome not only possible, but believe it demands prayerful examination.

THE DAUGHTER OF BABYLON

Identifying the 'whore of Babylon', often equated with 'Mystery Babylon', remains one of the greatest puzzles of the Book of Revelation. Later in Chapter 5 of this book, we will encounter an occult ritual called *Babalon Working* when we discuss the Jet Propulsion Laboratory (JPL) and NASA (such an alternate spelling of Babylon is correct in that one case). There we will learn the founder of JPL, Jack Parsons performed a black magic ritual calling upon evil forces to create a hybrid demon-human, the 'scarlet woman', aka the *whore of Babylon*. In contrast, when in the context of decoding *Revelation,* we are evaluating the use of the term *Babylon* as a possible metaphor for an evil empire judged by God, presumably at the end of days.

In times past, this mysterious entity *Babylon* was identified with several different peoples, nations, and institutions. The reformers, Martin Luther and John Calvin regarded it to be the Roman Catholic Church. In fact, most evangelical leaders in times past (for instance John Wesley in the eighteenth century) made the same assumption. Furthermore, most of today's prophecy scholars see the Pope as either the *Antichrist* or even more typically, the *False Prophet* of Revelation 13:11-14 who causes the whole world to worship the Beast.

For those inclined to dig into the details, researchers and authors Tom Horn and Cris Putnam have released a new book, *Petrus Romanus* (subtitled *The Final Pope is Here*) which provides an extensive exposé of this 'historicist' point of view. Not surprisingly, we see many evangelicals continue to regard Roman Catholicism as the religion of the Antichrist, with Babylon a symbolic name for the *anti-Christian religion.* Dave Hunt's *A Woman Rides the Beast* (1994) also provides an exhaustive analysis of this position. The classic book by Alexander Hislop, *The Two Babylons (1858),* is the resource often referenced in this discussion.

The essence of the issue revolves around whether the use of the term, ***Babylon*** *is metaphorical or literal*. If it is literal, then presumably the city of Babylon in Iraq must be physically restored before Antichrist is revealed. Some prophecy scholars espouse such a literalist view. Babylon, about 55

miles from Baghdad, must grow to magnificent proportions to become the seat of power for Antichrist.

However, believing we live in the very last of the last days, most dispute this view since, if true, it suggests the end-times are still far distant. Otherwise, how could any power restore Babylon to a large and dominating city in a few short years? Plus, it is important to point out this contrarian point of view connects to the theory that Antichrist will be Muslim and 'the Lie' (the final deception) will be *Islam*. This alternative can't be ruled out; but it has failed so far to gain consensus among today's biblical students and noteworthy prophecy scholars.

On the other hand, if we speak of *Babylon* as a metaphor then the ultimate identity of Babylon must be deciphered. In Revelation, Chapters 17 and18 this Babylon is described with powerful images. Dominating global finance, it stands as the center of world commerce until it collapses from God's conclusive judgment. With the obliteration of Babylon, all the merchants of the world weep and mourn. The utter destruction of Babylon wipes out their wealth in a single hour.

> *10 Standing afar off for the fear of her torment, saying, Alas, alas that great city Babylon, that mighty city! For in one hour is thy judgment come.*
>
> *11 And the merchants of the earth shall weep and mourn over her; for no man buyeth their merchandise any more: 16 And saying, Alas, alas that great city, that was clothed in fine linen, and purple, and scarlet, and decked with gold, and precious stones, and pearls!*
>
> *17 For in one hour so great riches is come to nought. And every shipmaster, and all the company in ships, and sailors, and as many as trade by sea, stood afar off, 18 And cried when they saw the smoke of her burning, saying, "What city is like unto this great city!"*
>
> *19 And they cast dust on their heads, and cried, weeping and wailing, saying, Alas, alas that great city, wherein were made rich all that had ships in the sea by reason of her costliness! For in one hour is she made desolate.*
>
> *20 Rejoice over her, thou heaven, and ye holy apostles and prophets; for God hath avenged you on her.*

21 And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, Thus with violence shall that great city Babylon be thrown down, and shall be found no more at all.

24 And in her was found the blood of prophets, and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth. (Rev. 10, 11, 16-21, 24) Of whom is the author of Revelation speaking? Is it Rome? Is it the Catholic Church? Perhaps scholars are correct when they interpret Babylon as any dominating religion or state that stands opposed to God. However, we should understand that seeing Babylon as a metaphor for those who oppose the God of the Bible doesn't rule out a 'literal' (space-time) fulfillment. Could Babylon be the world's greatest power in the last days? If so, could it be America?

Images of 9/11 are easily brought to one's 'mind's eye' as we read this passage. Unlike the ancient city of Babylon in Iraq, this future great city is a seaport (note: some scholars suggest the Greek term for 'mega-city' can also mean a nation-state). From their vantage point, every shipmaster and sailor "stands afar off" within their vessels and says, in today's parlance, "We have never seen anything like this. How could this happen? This is the most vital city in the world." Implied is the worry, "What will become of us? What happens next?"

In the 400 pages or so which follow, I chronicle many matters in which America has conducted itself in startling ways that *most of us have never heard about before.* Then I complete our study with a homily on why *America is this Babylon.* Here, I will provide only an excerpt from a book *America the Babylon* by Rev. R.A. Coombs identifying America, through its financial capital, New York City, as 'Mystery' Babylon, referencing the passages in Revelation: Did you know that when ships coming in to the harbor facilities of New York City make their final approach to the Harbor channel shipping lanes…they have to come in from the south… heading due North straight for a spot on Long Island called BABYLON! That's right, the city of Babylon, which features a tall water tower that ship captains use to navigate directly into the harbor channel… and they come within 200 to 300 yards of the shore before turning west to head into the port. It is from this vantage point that I believe Revelation 18: 17-19 takes place. From this

vantage point…on the deck of a ship…one could quite easily read the letters of the name Babylon on the city water tower!

> Talk about literal? Now that is indeed literal. This is something that theorists who promote the Rome = Babylon idea can't match, because Rome is not a deep-water seaport…it's so far away from the ocean that it cannot possibly fit the description of Revelation 18: 17-19… in no way. [Neither, for that matter could land-locked Babylon in Iraq!] But the USA can… and especially its chief city… a seaport named NYC/Babylon. Also, Babylon, Long Island derived its name because of it was founded by immigrant Jews in 1872…and the group's rabbi's chose the name almost prophetically, because they believed it would be home to a new diaspora.
>
> Why would they think this? Because rabbinical opinions had held that ancient Babylon's power would be moved… Zechariah 5: 5-11… and Isaiah 18:1 tells us what direction it would be moving. Isaiah 18:1 says that the spirit of Babylon would move west of the most outermost boundaries of ancient Babylon's western-most border, beyond the rivers of Ethiopia and Egypt. (That is what is meant by the KJV term "Ethiopia") By virtue of Isaiah's point of observation being from Jerusalem…then the direction of movement was westward past Egypt…beyond the most outer of Babylon's oldest boundaries… meaning… *the occultic power that fueled Babylon would move and take up residence west of Egypt and Ethiopia in the end times.* Rome is NOT west of Egypt and Ethiopia. Thus, again we have Rome ruled out of the picture by the character traits [of Revelation's description of Babylon - Comments and emphasis mine].

However, is there another connection between ancient Babylon and America besides geography as referenced in this passage? There is.

As discussed in *Power Quest, Book One*: *America's Obsession with the Paranormal,* this author shows how our 'native' spirituality builds upon Babylonian religion. The mythology of Babylon was the inspiration for the religion of Egypt. Furthermore, the mythology of Greece and Rome begins with renaming these gods of Egypt. For instance, the teaching of Freemasonry is built upon Isis and Osiris (aka Venus and Apollo). Our nation's capital reflects this pagan mythology - from its granite monuments to its geographical 'mapping'. Furthermore, America's natural religion is an

occult, mystical mixture of transcendentalism and theosophy. America's spiritualist movements of the nineteenth century, the new-age movement of the twentieth century, and the '2012 crusade' of the twenty-first century, all 'descend' originally from the gods of Babylon by way of Rome (most recently), earlier Greece, and earlier still - Egypt. Spiritually, one can argue America's populist spiritual sentiments have always aligned with the *land of ancient Chaldea*. For America's elite as well as Americans outside orthodox Catholic or evangelical churches, our beliefs are well represented by the Babylonian religion.

So is it justified to see America as this *Babylon*? Are we the ultimate and final fulfillment of this prophecy?

There are many other scriptural references that identify Babylon and 'the daughter of Babylon' with a unique, powerful nation destined to experience ultimate judgment in the last days. Most scholars believe these prophecies have *never been fulfilled before* and are reserved for the end times. Chapter 47 in Isaiah and Chapters 50 and 51 in the book of Jeremiah are often cited in this respect.

From Chapter 50 of Jeremiah we read a sampling of the prophet's dour language:

> *As God overthrew Sodom and Gomorrah and the neighbor cities thereof, saith the LORD; so shall no man abide there, neither shall any son of man dwell therein. Behold, a people shall come from the north, and a great nation, and many kings shall be raised up from the coasts of the earth. They shall hold the bow and the lance: they are cruel, and will not shew mercy: their voice shall roar like the sea, and they shall ride upon horses, every one put in array, like a man to the battle, against thee, O* ***daughter of Babylon*** (emphasis added, Jeremiah 50:40-42).

Assuming for a moment that our nation is this *daughter of Babylon*, what could we have done to provoke God to judge our nation with such merciless calamity? *Power Quest: Book Two, The Ascendancy of Antichrist* endeavors to answer that question by chronicling our most seldom (and practically speaking, *secret*) history.

The Argument for the Decline of America

Since most evangelicals have assumed for years that prophecy teaches America grows weaker by the day, we conclude America already experiences God's judgment for its moral failures. Whether or not America constitutes a modern-day Babylon, several questions remain, "Is America under God's judgment now? What are our moral failures? Are our lapses limited to the 'moral issues' evangelicals frequently champion when interviewed or cited by the media?"

Author Dr. Mark Hitchcock, pastor of Faith Bible Church in Edmond, Oklahoma, in his book *The Late Great United States*, represents the usual perspective. Hitchcock points out that Sodom 'and the cities of the plain' were judged by God for "their gross sin" (famously, their homosexuality) but moreover, for other reasons too as expounded by the prophet Ezekiel: *"Behold, this was the guilt of your sister Sodom: she and her daughters had arrogance, abundant food and careless ease, but she did not help the poor and needy. Thus they were haughty and committed abominations before Me. There I removed them when I saw it"* (Ezekiel 16-49-50). Hitchcock comments, "As you can see, homosexuality was not the only 'abomination' for which God judged Sodom, but it was the final straw."[10] Hitchcock then lists the reasons why America, like Sodom, Egypt, Israel, and other nations is under judgment already. We are guilty of: - Widespread acceptance of homosexual sin actively promoted by the gay lobby.

- Abortion and the barbaric practice of partial-birth abortion.

- Pervasive Pornography.

- Epidemic drug use and alcoholism.

- Sexual immorality such as adultery and sexually transmitted disease.

- The unraveling of the family including the national catastrophe of out-of-wedlock birth.

Then Dr. Hitchcock quotes an equally worthy Bible teacher, Herman Hoyt:

> Within recent years, conditions within the country and criticism from without have raised the serious question of the continued greatness of this nation. Can this nation long endure with crime, lawlessness, and anarchy threatening from within…? Is this nation dangerously near the

point that other great nations reached before they disintegrated and disappeared?[11]

Dr. Hitchcock concludes: “It may well be that the United States today is at the apex of its power, just as Babylon was in the sixth century BC, prior to its sudden downfall in one night at the hands of the Medes and the Persians”[12] (see Daniel 5).

Now, I don’t wish to quibble over whether America rightly deserves God’s judgment at the present moment for our national sins - that would contradict the overall argument I make in this book. The list of transgressions deserves judgment. But has judgment time come? Or is the final judgment of America looming a few years ahead? [13]

Regardless of the answer, I would challenge just how clear the signs are that America diminishes as the world’s sole global power. If America’s economic and military power wanes at the present moment, its capability may only be comparatively weaker than it was ten years ago. Yes, our national debt stands as an enormous worry. True, our moral depravity grows worse daily, coinciding with Paul’s descriptions of how societies devolve into increased decadence and sin (Romans 1:18-32). But America still casts a giant shadow compared to Europe whose failing currencies signal specific sovereign economies verging on collapse (Greece, Spain, Italy to name a few), and whose military appears incapable of mounting any attack to protect European interests (such as the recent assault on Gadhafi’s Libya and its paralysis regarding Syria). Without U.S. armed forces to back it up, Europe seems impotent.

If Antichrist were to appear today as an American leader, could any nation challenge America on the battlefield? The author considers the following verse from Revelation 13:4 to be particularly meaningful in this regard: *“And they worshipped the dragon which gave power unto the beast: and they worshipped the beast, saying, ‘Who [is] like unto the beast? Who is able to make war with him?’”*

A major reason for writing Book Two of *Power Quest* is to recount the serious reasons why America, like Babylon in the sixth century BC, appears inexorably destined for judgment. However, what heralds the final verdict exceeds immorality, pornography, and sexual perversion as odious as these

sins are. Truly, our culpability even extends beyond the murder of millions of infants (often dehumanized by proponents who simply classify them as ‘fetuses’) implicitly condoned within our courts’ granting women the right to abortion in virtually any and all situations. Sadly, I argue there are other abhorrent sins which merit judgment that are not at all as familiar as these.

So to what end do I endeavor to reveal these horrific transgressions? For one most important reason: *To call our nation to repentance*. Once we understand the heinous nature of our actions for which we are responsible *as a people*, I pray we will be motivated to repent, ask for God’s forgiveness, and chart a new course where we call upon the name of the Lord - before it is too late.

It is important we remember that although the prophet Daniel is one of the very few protagonists in the Bible of which the Bible says nothing negative, Daniel identified with his people. Even though he was a child when the nation of Judah was captured and removed to Babylon - without distancing himself - Daniel prays for God’s forgiveness for his people. He does not attempt to differentiate his standing with God from his brethren’s. He does not remind God, “Of course, God you should recall that they are the sinners and not me. But even though I don’t need to ask for your forgiveness, I will pray for my Hebrew brethren.” Instead, through his prayers Daniel unites with his unrighteous brothers and sisters - although he stands as one of the Bible’s most virtuous men. Like all mediators, he *identifies with those he seeks to reconcile to God* (Hebrews 5:1-10).

In the same way, we who call ourselves Christians ought to identify with our fellow-Americans, even if they regrettably remain immersed in sin while our sins have been cleansed by the blood of the Lamb. We are called to mediate for America as did Daniel (and Moses too) for the Hebrew nation. We are not to condemn - we are to conciliate. That is what God would have us do. *“And all things [are] of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation”* (II Cor. 5:18).

THE NATURE OF AMERICA'S SIN

It is instructive that when Dr. Hitchcock lists the sins of America he primarily identifies the 'personal sins' which are the traditional target of our preaching, even though the Ezekiel passage specifically states Sodom's judgment was due to much more than sexual immorality. Judgment came, we are told, because Sodom's arrogance led to the failure of its rich to care for those 'less fortunate'.

Some have rightly said we can judge a society not by how wealthy is its *rich*, but by how poverty-ridden is its *poor*.

Can we contrast Sodom's actions with our own? Are we confident our society does what it should for the poor and needy? Or are we satisfied that as a nation we deserve God's continued blessings? Is the growing disparity between the rich and poor in America a sign that our economy is getting back on track? Or is the opposite true?

Now please understand: I don't mean to single out Dr. Hitchcock. He is a sound voice of biblical theology and no doubt an outstanding pastor. He is on the faculty of a seminary for which I have high regard. He is a fellow Oklahoman (which means a lot in my book!) And he hardly stands alone in cataloguing what constitutes the primary ills of America. Nevertheless, his emblematic view remains short-sighted. All evangelicals (of which I am one) often show forth the same case of blurred vision. As such, we fail to realize just how much corruption and evil has burrowed into America's institutions over the past 60 years. To bring these sins to light is no small trick - especially if as an author I want you to thoughtfully read the pages following which strive to do just that.

In this author's opinion, it is our 'societal sin' - conspicuous by its absence in Hitchcock's list - which foreshadows America's inevitable decline. However, this societal sin involves more than what normally falls under the infamous 'liberal' banner of 'social injustice'. It includes the ethical corruption of our nation, the flagrant erosion of individual liberties, and the partiality of our government toward mega-corporations, the financial market manipulators, and the super-rich. Mind you: There is nothing wrong with the profit motive and acquiring wealth provided we do so conscientiously and with regard to others who often lack the means to seek 'life, liberty, and the pursuit of

happiness' - rights we proclaim God guarantees all humankind. Conservative evangelicals (again, of which I am one) often demonstrate this 'social sin' insensitivity. As such, our lapse betrays a flaw in our understanding of Jesus' message.

When Jesus claimed to his brethren that He was the Messiah, He cited the prophetic passage in Isaiah where the prophet states how Messiah discloses Himself to His people. In the 'year of the Lord' the Messiah preaches the good news to the humble and proclaims liberty to the captives: *"The Spirit of the Lord GOD [is] upon me; because the LORD hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to [them that are] bound"* (Isa. 61:1). These issues surpass personal sexual sin. They speak to those who are repressed and without power to change their circumstances - whether their repression is from abuse within their families, their schools, where they work, or from their government. The haunting horror of abuse and the trauma it inflicts dehumanizes its victims. When Christ speaks of liberation - freeing the captives - he includes all of these situations, even if the captivity is psychological or the sins are societal.

Therefore, we are compelled to ask, "Why are evangelicals so myopic?" Our blind spot likely exists since our conservative political stance applauds free enterprise and frowns upon entitlements. We are wary of 'government give-away programs' and welfare for unworthy individuals who refuse to work. As conservative evangelicals, we react strongly against Christian liberalism and its utopian 'social gospel'. Since nineteenth and twentieth century liberalism identified institutional sin as the primary culprit and dismissed the strong inclination of the individual to commit sin (denying the biblical doctrine of the *depravity of humanity*), all-too-often we throw out the baby with the bath water.

Balancing these realities demands we recognize human sin to be both *personal and social*; iniquity is both *individual and institutional.* God condemns the sins of individuals for their moral lapses - but he condemns societies for their lawlessness and their failure to regard God as the Creator. In essence, it is easy for Americans to recoil in horror at the cultural and societal sins of Hitler's Germany while we find it difficult admitting our culture and society fall short of the standards to which God holds all nations

accountable. Certainly, Hitler's Germany constituted much more than a mere *mote in the eye* - yet surely our sin lies in-between a *tiny mote and a giant beam*! (Matthew 7:3) Because we have swept our societal sins under the rug (sins of which most Americans remain unaware and unconcerned), *America could even spawn the Antichrist*. Failure to consciously acknowledge societal evil and injustice will bring judgment upon us just as surely as will our moral failures and our ethical indifference. We must surface these sins, acknowledge them, and ask God to forgive America for our failure to show forth His Truth both within our borders and beyond - to demonstrate to other nations a righteous standard for government for whom many of our nation's founders (more specifically, those who embraced a biblical perspective) believed we were called.

America should be that "shining city on a hill" envisioned by Ronald Reagan (recalling the words of the pilgrim John Winthrop). Reagan's speech delivered on January 25th, 1974, remains an inspiring one to this day. I encourage the reader to take the time to read in its entirety. I quote only a select number of passages here: I know there have been other constitutions; new ones are being drawn today by newly emerging nations. Most of them, even the one of the Soviet Union, contain many of the same guarantees as our own Constitution, and still there is a difference. The difference is so subtle that we often overlook it, but is so great that it tells the whole story. Those other constitutions say, "Government grants you these rights" and ours says, "You are born with these rights, they are yours by the grace of God, and no government on earth can take them from you."

> Lord Acton of England, who once said, "Power corrupts, and absolute power corrupts absolutely," would say of that document, "They had solved with astonishing ease and unduplicated success two problems which had heretofore baffled the capacity of the most enlightened nations. They had contrived a system of federal government which prodigiously increased national power and yet respected local liberties and authorities, and they had founded it on a principle of equality without surrendering the securities of property or freedom." Never in any society has the preeminence of the individual been so firmly established and given such a priority...

Standing on the tiny deck of the *Arabella* in 1630 off the Massachusetts coast, John Winthrop said, “We will be as a city upon a hill. The eyes of all people are upon us, so that if we deal falsely with our God in this work we have undertaken and so cause Him to withdraw His present help from us, we shall be made a story and a byword throughout the world.”[14]

Conclusion: The Nazi Infestation of America

In *Power Quest - Book Two: The Ascendancy of Antichrist in America*, we examine what happened to our society and culture after we, through our elected officials, allowed the *antichrist spirit* of Nazi Germany into our nation. Out of growing paranoia over the Soviet Union immediately after World War II, we opened the door and invited Nazis to enter. These actions (which began then and in many ways continue to this day) stand as our most blatant national sin worthy of utter condemnation: we allowed the spirit of lawlessness to enter our society by instituting government programs and policies corrupting the American spirit and denying the God of the Bible. This process took more than one moment - it has been ongoing for over 60 years - a staggered march with both guided steps and misplaced ones along the way. There was more than one decision maker. Whole institutions made deliberate choices again and again.

In my subtitle, I chose the words, "the ascendancy of Antichrist in America." What does ascendancy mean? What do these particular words infer? Am I saying that Antichrist already lives in America?

First, please note that the word "ascendancy" is not a progressive tense - it infers present tense. Ascendancy means *predominance or preeminence*. I am not saying the antichrist spirit is progressively growing in America. That may be true. However, I am emphasizing that *the antichrist spirit has already become ingrained in America's institutions and culture*; it has tainted our way of life. The only real issue remaining is whether a physical incarnation of Antichrist will transpire in America. Will the 'Beast' be an American? Perhaps. However, my point isn't to predict an American President is or will become the Antichrist. Rather, my emphasis is this: America has already embraced the spirit of antichrist and now paves the way for his arrival. Babylon "makes the paths straight for his coming" in a way akin to Elijah who was to make the paths straight for the anointed one, the Messiah, the Christ (see Isaiah 40:3; Mark 1:3).

As we will see in the pages ahead, this cancerous corruption was not limited in scope; it is widespread and horrific in its impact. It quietly and covertly spread into many facets of our government.

We allowed felons to immigrate into our country illegally. We turned a blind eye to their reprehensible crimes in Europe. We excused their murders in the name of our national security. We sought Nazi technologies to gain advantage over our enemies, thereby allowing these scientists and intelligence agents to stain our mental health systems, certain aspects of our intelligence services, our genetic science, and even sanction the indiscriminate use of mind-controlling drugs. Prior to World War II, we encouraged Nazi science to advance eugenic policies. Afterwards, we recruited Nazi scientists to energize our 'race into space', and even enlisted Nazi criminals to play a part in the assassination of a president.

Today, the quest for the Übermensch (superman) through the movement we know as *transhumanism* threatens to push our science toward the destruction (not elevation) of our human species. In fact, near the end of this book, the author will present the testimony of one special group of Americans, generally in their 50s and 60s who were victims of notorious Nazi, English, Canadian, and American scientists who give witness to supernatural alliances between these masters of evil and sinister forces beyond nature. Their shocking story has been regrettably hidden for years due to the circumstances of how they were victimized. Their account also unveils the conspiracy of how the royalty of the world has worked with select elite families in America to accomplish the unspeakable - in essence, to bring about the incarnation of the Antichrist in our day. The eschatological implications of these incredible facts are enormous.

Finally, because of the abrogation of human rights and the victimization of this special group of American citizens as well as thousands of others in our country experiencing a similar program of assault (through the auspices of certain U.S. military and civilian intelligence agencies of our government), America will be held responsible for inviting the spirit of Antichrist into our midst. We have called down the judgments of Isaiah, Jeremiah, and John upon ourselves.

Furthermore, *we have ultimately made the impossible probable*. America - the land of the free and home of the brave - appears ready to become, at the very least, the initial seat of power for the Beast of Revelation. As a result of our failure to stand opposed to these numerous atrocities (which as space allows we will enumerate), the personage of Antichrist could be destined to

be revealed in America, pushing the world to the brink of the war to end all wars.

In summary, we edge day-by-day closer to that climatic battle we know as *Armageddon*. We who are Christian dare not act complacent as the enemies of Christ strengthen their hold on America, and through it, threaten the very existence of the world. Indeed, short of God's intervention, this distressing outcome more than ever before, arises as inevitably as the ascent of tomorrow morning's sun.

Recap of Book One

and Introduction to Book Two

The cover-up arose initially out of what were perceived to be the legitimate needs of national security. Imbued with the anticommunist spirit of the Cold War, intelligence officials decided to fight fire with fire, to enlist Eastern European Nazis with anti-Soviet backgrounds in a guerrilla and propaganda war against the Soviet Union. These Americans were not evil or vicious; they believed that moral ends justified immoral means.

John Loftus *America's Nazi Secret:* An Insider's History, 2011

“I think it’s very dangerous for even an individual to be toying around with the occult. When you see nations doing it as a matter of national policy that really gets scary.”

James Mills, novelist, cited by Alex Constantine

When Did World War II End and III Begin?

Book One of *Power Quest*, opens the door to the topic that Fascism and Nazism clandestinely escaped Germany after 1945 to be revived in institutions, both governmental and private, throughout the Western Hemisphere. Ironically, while the 'Allies' - the United States, England, France, and the Soviet Union - celebrated their victory over the Third Reich, tens of thousands of German scientists, engineers, and spies (who proved too valuable to imprison or execute despite their horrendous war crimes) slipped into the United States, the Soviet Union, and South America. With all due respect to one of the great movies of all time, this story of the survival of Nazism was the true 'great escape' of World War II.[15]

It was thanks to meticulous plans developed over a year earlier by Martin Bormann, Hitler's second-in-command, and complicit American government leaders eager to gain an upper hand over their former Soviet allies. In fact, even while the victors were sorting through the pieces of war-torn Europe negotiating over the spoils, the Nazis were already engaged in winning the next war. Depending upon your point of view and despite the fact that no one yet has been declared the winner, it's a victory the Nazis already may have secured. As asserted in the prequel, upon closer inspection the Cold War wasn't just the story of how Capitalism conquered Communism; it was the story of how Nazi Germany, despite its near total defeat and the stunning devastation of its greatest cities, spurred the ongoing battle between these two alternative competing ideologies and tainted America in dramatic and permanent ways.

Playing one off against the other, surviving Nazis carved out a path to not only personally thrive but eventually to wage a secret war, until their clandestine reemergence within western ideologies and institutions would be undetectable. Furthermore, the invasion of Nazism supported by American institutions became so thoroughly ensconced in U.S. bureaucracy, the cover-up continues to the present day, many times led by 'lieutenants' unaware of how their dutiful actions undermine the patriotic and idealistic 'myth' of American 'exceptionalism' and 'defender of freedom'. This is not to cast aspersions on what America *should* represent; however, it underscores our actions haven't always lived up to our ideals. America's republic should be a

role model for other nations, although it often fails in this mission. (Our self-interest undergirded by our invincible military leads most nations to see us as an empire builder and aggressor.) Ultimately, the winners of the last century weren't just 'ideologues', the real victors were the elite bankers, the European aristocracy, numerous multi-national corporations (headed by the 'Robber Barons' as Theodore Roosevelt called them), and especially the royal families of the world with their dynastic American counterparts who, conspiring together, gained an insurmountable foothold in their drive to regain or retain the power to rule the world. This author built the story by exposing the machinations of American/ European politicians and financers pre-, during, and after World War II, and how their actions empowered a 'utopian' *power quest* that still continues.

For readers who haven't read Book One, allow me to recap these nefarious political and financial dealings since Book Two builds upon the findings of Book One: post-world War II historical falsehoods and operational faults promulgated by both our federal government and large, privately funded institutions in select and strategic ways. In essence, this allowed massive American organizations to prey upon many American citizens without their consent. It also supported an anti-biblical cosmology or worldview which has come to undermine Christian influence in America.

Additionally, whereas Book One was devoted to the personal proclivity of individual Americans to embrace pagan spiritualism and supernatural philosophies as a means to secure private meaning; in *Power Quest - Book Two* I identify the many dark methods employed by German Nazism (devised and developed through its spiritual occultism) and how these infiltrated America through conspicuous, willing institutions acting shamelessly and inconspicuously. Their utter lawlessness which I will attempt to expose embodies what the New Testament calls "the spirit of Antichrist" and destines America to a disturbing fate which, from this author's vantage point, is unfortunately already coming to fruition.

The Greatest Story Never Told

Calling upon the words of author Jim Marrs from his book, *The Rise of the Fourth Reich* (2008), I declared this tale to be the greatest story *never* told. "The Germans were defeated in World War II… but not the Nazis. They were simply forced to move. They scattered to the four corners of the world. Many of them came to the United States and penetrated what President Dwight D. Eisenhower termed 'the military-industrial complex'."[16]

I also cited the author, Curt Reiss (an English correspondent who had traveled throughout Europe during World War II), who wrote presciently (in 1944, mind you, one year before World War II ended), that *the next world war was already underway.*

> For Nazism or Fascism is by no means an Italian or German specialty. It is as international as murder, as greed for power, as injustice, as madness…If we don't stamp out the Nazi underground, it will make itself felt all over the world; in this country too. We may not have to wait ten years, perhaps not even five. For many years in the past we closed our eyes to the Nazi threat. We must never allow ourselves to close them again.[17]
>
> "They [the Nazis] had better means for preparing to go underground than any other potential underground movement in the entire previous history of the world. They had all the machinery of the well-organized Nazi state. And they had a great deal of time to prepare everything. They worked very hard, but they did nothing hastily, left nothing to chance. Everything was thought through logically and organized to the last detail. Himmler [along with Bormann] planned with the utmost coolness. He chose for the work only the best-qualified experts - the best qualified, that is in matters of underground work."[18]

According to Reiss, Himmler had said, "It is possible that Germany will be defeated on the military front. It is even possible that she may have to capitulate. But never must the National Socialist German Workers' Party capitulate. That is what we have to work for from now on." Not only did Reiss see this conspiracy from his perch, *The New York Times* declared in the early 1950s that "Nazism is not dead in Germany." Given the time and opportunity, "a form of Nazism could again rise to power. Materially

speaking, Nazism was smashed into a pulp by 1945," but the "vigorous roots remained."[19]

Additionally, Book One documented American capitalists had hundreds of millions invested in German corporations ($471 million by 1941 to be exact) - therefore, they had no intention of losing their vast assets. "Secreting the business know-how, financing, and management out of Germany was in everyone's best interests - except those who fought and died to stop the fascist war machine."[20]

Then Book One brought to light the treasonous role of American industrialists. The astounding unprosecuted crimes of how American businessmen befriended Hitler, seeing in him a means to keep the Soviet Union bottled up, were blatant and incriminating: By the mid-1930s, with the government, military, and the German cartels now firmly in hand, Hitler knew it was time to strengthen his influence over international bankers and businessmen. Despite his declared intentions to nationalize German businesses and curtail the power of international business and finance, Hitler initially had little trouble getting funds from corporate sponsors who saw his National Socialism as a necessary alternative to worldwide Communism. [21]

Additionally, this author cited several 'insiders' who documented the validity of a story that otherwise would be too fantastic to believe.

> According to John Loftus, Nazi War Crimes prosecutor for the U.S. Department of Justice, "much of the wealth was passed out of Germany by German banker Fritz Thyssen through his bank in Holland, which, in turn, owned the Union Banking Corporation (UBC) in New York City."[22] Two prominent U.S. business leaders who supported Hitler and served on the board of directors of the Union Banking Corporation were George Herbert Walker and his son-in-law Prescott Bush, father of George H.W. Bush and grandfather of President George W. Bush. The attorneys for these dealings were John Foster Dulles and his brother Allen. John later became secretary of state under President Dwight D. Eisenhower while Allen became one of the longest-serving CIA directors before being fired by President John F. Kennedy in 1961. Both were original members of the Council on Foreign Relations. Their commitment to German companies and

indirectly, to Nazism is well documented by no less than the U.S. government itself.

On October 20, 1942, the office of U.S. Alien Property Custodian, operating under the "Trading with the Enemy Act" (U.S Government Vesting Order No. 248), seized the shares of UBC on the grounds that the bank was financing Hitler. Also seized were Bush's holdings in the Hamburg-America ship line that had been used to ferry Nazi propagandists and arms. Another company essential to the passing of Nazi money was the Holland American Trading Company, a subsidiary of UBC. It was through Fritz Thyssen's Dutch Bank, originally founded by Thyssen's father in 1916, that Nazi money was passed. The Dutch connection tied the Bush and Nazi money *directly to former SS officer and founder of the Bilderberg Group, Prince Bernhard of the Netherlands*, who was once secretary to the board of directors of I.G. Farben, with close connections to the Dutch Bank. Loftus noted, "Thyssen did not need any foreign bank accounts because his family secretly owned an entire chain of banks. He did not have to transfer his Nazi assets at the end of World War II, all he had to do was transfer the ownership documents… from his bank in Berlin though his bank in Holland to his American friends in New York City: Prescott Bush and Herbert Walker. Thyssen's partners in crime were *the father and father-in-law of a future president of the United States*.[23] [Emphasis added]

We should also mention the leading shareholder of UBC was E. Roland Harriman, brother of Averell Harriman, also an owner and later U.S. ambassador to Russia (so named by Roosevelt in 1943); who along with the Bushes, were members of the Yale secret society *Skull and Bones*. It has also been documented as recently as 2003 by the *New Hampshire Gazette* that the Prescott Bush failed to divest himself of holdings in the Silesian-American Corporation, a Nazi front company providing much needed coal to Germany during the War.[24] Publisher and historian Edward Boswell recounts the story: The story of Prescott Bush and Brown Brothers Harriman is an introduction to the real history of our country. It exposes the money-making motives behind our foreign policies, dating back a full century. The ability of Prescott Bush and the Harrimans to bury their checkered pasts also reveals… collusion between Wall Street and the media that exists to this day.[25]

In a recent republication of Loftus' original work, *The Belarus Secret* (now titled, *America's Nazi Secret, 2011*), furtive details are revealed from recently declassified documents whose publishing *Loftus was forbidden by the our government to disclose 30 years ago.*

Loftus informs us, by referring to these declassified government documents, that Herbert Walker invited Brown Brothers Harriman, an investment firm, to team with the Harrimans and Rockefellers in their financial strategy (None dare not call it a conspiracy!) It "had *so many corrupt ties to the Nazi regime that it became the only bank in New York State history ever to obtain permission to shred its wartime and prewar files.*"[26] [Emphasis added] Aiding their efforts: both Nelson Rockefeller and Averell Harriman were former governors of New York; this former status supplied these elite members of American business the political and legal power to 'pull this off' by pulling the wool over the eyes of the public.

> Nelson Rockefeller and Averell Harriman were both heavily invested in Brown Brothers Harriman, which in turn owned several subordinate corporations run by Prescott Bush. These corporations were later seized by the wartime U.S. government as Nazi fronts, but were quietly returned to their American owners in the 1950's. The last of the seized Nazi corporations, the film giant GAF, was released back to its owners during the Kennedy administration.[27]
>
> The Union quietly Banking Corporation was seized as a Nazi front by the Alien Property Custodian during WWII, but was quietly returned to its owners in 1951. The overwhelming majority of the UBC stock was held by Roland Harriman, Averell's brother. However, Prescott Bush and his father in law, Herbert Walker also held a few shares *which apparently became the source of the Bush family fortune*.[28] [Emphasis added]

It is not inaccurate to declare that investments in Nazism built the fortunes of many future leaders of America! Furthermore, the infiltration of Nazis into America and how the U.S. government secretly and energetically made this possible (which will be explored in detail in Chapter 2), originates with the recognition that American industrialists, cooperating with a select few Europeans (in particular, Prince Bernhard of Holland, former Nazi and founder of the notorious cabal, the Bilderbergers), placed power and profit

ahead of patriotism. Winning the war might have been valued by these American ultra-elites, but their holdings in the Thyssen Holding Company and a subsidiary, Union Bank Company assured them that no matter which side won, they would retain their wealth. As financiers say, they were ‘hedged’. However, their good fortune involved more than a clever financial strategy - intrigue and murder were not beyond them that they might ensure their riches outlived the War.

> Army intelligence officer William E. Gowen of New York City recently tracked down a retired Dutch Intelligence officer who told him how the scam operated. At the end of WWII, Prince Bernhardt [future founder of the Bilderbergers] sent a Dutch intelligence unit into the Russian zone of Berlin ostensibly to retrieve the crown jewels, which were buried in the vault of the bombed-out Thyssen Bank. In reality, Operation Wilhelmina was merely a cover for retrieving several truckloads of corporate stock and ownership papers which were returned to the Netherlands. The Netherlands bank manager quickly recognized that his “neutral” bank was being compromised. He flew to New York City to inform his American counterpart, Prescott Bush, that both their banks were fronts for Nazi money. The bank manager’s body was discovered soon afterwards. The Dutch intelligence agent was his son. [29]

Nazi Forward Planning

Likewise, Book One discussed how Martin Bormann, Hitler's second in command, masterminded *Operation Eagle Flight*. On August 10, 1944, Bormann coolly assembled his team of Nazi party members and key German industrialists in Strasbourg (Alsace), a few weeks after D-Day (the allied invasion of German-occupied France on June 6, 1944), and put in place plans that would ultimately create 750 foreign front corporations broken out as follows: "58 in Portugal, 112 in Spain, 233 in Sweden, 214 in Switzerland, 35 in Turkey, and 98 in Argentina."[30] Adding more detail to the story here: Bormann used the carrot and stick effectively. If the industrialists did not follow the plan, he would use his extensive network of Nazi spies and assassins already present throughout much of the world, to exact judgment. If they complied, he would provide loan guarantees through the enormous accumulated financial war chest (being secreted out of Germany in a variety of ways).

Also quoted was Paul Manning, a CBS Radio journalist during the War, author of *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile*, to confirm these facts: [Bormann] utilized every known device to disguise their ownership and their patterns of operations: use of nominees, option agreements, pool agreements, endorsements in blank, escrow deposits, pledges, collateral loans, rights of first refusal, management contracts, service contracts, patent agreements, cartels, and withholding procedures." Copies of all transactions and even field reports were maintained and later shipped to Bormann's archives in South America.[31]

However, even these astute and reputable sources don't stand alone. Other trusted and well-known third-party sources confirm these very same facts (mind you, with no particular 'axe to grind'). Several other sources not mentioned in Book One are summarized below.

First, Howard Armbruster confirmed the same Bormann scheme in his book, *Treason's Peace*: A few weeks after the surrender, Democratic Senator Harley M. Kilgore returned from an early postwar trip to occupied Germany with the announcement that he had uncovered proof of the plot to revive I.G. Farben and other German war industries, and that German industrial leaders were already preparing for the next world war.[32]

Likewise, the mainstream news services brought this truth to the foreground after secret documents from World War II were declassified. In May, 1996, Reuters logged this story: NEW YORK (Reuter) - Realizing they were losing the war in 1944, Nazi leaders met top German industrialists to plan a secret postwar international network to restore them to power, according to a newly declassified U.S. intelligence document. The document, which appears to confirm a meeting historian have long argued about, says an SS general and a representative of the German armaments ministry told such companies as Krupp and Roehling that they must be prepared to finance the Nazi party after the war when it went underground. They were also told “existing financial reserves in foreign countries must be placed at the disposal of the party so that a strong German empire can be created after the defeat.” The three-page document, released by the National Archives, was sent from the Supreme Headquarters of the Allied Expeditionary Force to the U.S. secretary of state in November 1944. It described a secret meeting at the *Maison Rouge* (the Red House Hotel) in Strasbourg, occupied France, on August 10, 1944... Attending were representative of seven German companies including Krupp, Roehling, Messerschmitt, and Volkswagenwerk and officials of the ministries of armaments and the navy. The industrialists were from companies with extensive interest in France and Scheid [director of Hermsdorff & Schonburg Company, presiding over the meeting] is quoted as saying the battle of France was lost and “from now on… German industry must realize that the war cannot be won and it must take steps in preparation for a postwar commercial campaign.[33]

The *Times of London*, later in 1996 added these facts to the narrative, again verifying the South American connection: The Nazis ‘secretly sent more than $1 billion to Argentinian banks in the last month of the war and scouted the world for sanctuaries for their plundered wealth. It was reported that Eva Perón may have conspired with the Nazis to set up secret accounts on behalf of her husband to hide hundreds of millions of dollars obtained from looted Nazi gold, cash and art treasures.[34]

And then, there are the appalling details of how the Fourth Reich financed its survival. *The Associated Press* disclosed, also in 1996: Tons of gold looted by Nazis during World War II - some of it possibly taken from the fillings in Holocaust victims teeth - are stored in the Federal Reserve Bank of New

York and the Bank of England in London. Recently declassified federal documents show that six tons of gold looted by Nazis are stored in the two banks, the World Jewish Congress [WJC] said. The group's president has written to the two countries asking that the gold be returned to Holocaust survivors.[35]

While not as stunning as the discovery of King Solomon's Treasure in France's Languedoc region and its subsequent exploitation (as recounted in Book One) which provided a major source of financing for the Nazi post-war program, this documented fleecing of Holocaust victims is undoubtedly equally detestable to the Jewish community.

The Combination of Fascism and Spiritualism

The previous recap of the Nazi program to finance their survival and commence World War III, should confirm for the reader the history of certain American leaders at the outset of the twentieth century who were (1) strongly influenced by Fascism; (2) why they supported the Nazis; and after the Second World War (3) found it financially rewarding to allow the dissemination of Nazis and their ill-gotten gains throughout the 'free world'. However, this story was not the only unexpected tale told in Book One.

Also documented there were the spiritual concepts of occult esotericism dominating Nazi German early in the twentieth century. These ideas were in fact fostered by both English and American intellectuals writing at the end of the nineteenth. Much to the astonishment of most Americans, the seeds of Nazi's occult 'premise' supporting world conquest had been sown by highly esteemed British and American sources. The 'Anglo-American connection' to Germany encompasses an often overlooked but important piece of the puzzle.

Furthermore, the spiritual environment of Hitler's Germany - specifically its hope for the transformation of humankind into an *Übermensch* (a deified superman) was based on mystical forms of Theosophical 'religion'. After World War II, this cancerous doctrine found its way back 'across the pond' and was easily adapted here in several enigmatic forms. Americans soon plodded down a previously worn path rekindling their historical interest in the occult through the so-called New Age Movement of the 1960s and 70s as well as the more recent 2012 'fascination' (a 'new age legacy' comprising works by dozens of authors). These 'new' affirmations demonstrated that the ancient spiritual principles guiding 'old world' cosmology still had legs as they were reconstituted within a populist religion in America. In a phrase, "what's old became new again." As demonstrated in Book One, America has forever shown a fondness for the fantastic; it remains well-tilled soil for mysticism and 'magical thinking'. Today's promoters of the arcane position humankind evolved according to the whims of ancient alien astronauts, confirm the vulnerability of Americans to adopt old-fashioned paganism even in up-to-date forms. Readers may recall that the concept of alien mentors was clearly foreshadowed in 1919 Germany within the channeled

messages of ‘The Vril’. Obviously, today’s outspoken opinion that aliens nurtured humanity and interfered in our history constitutes nothing novel or earth-shaking.

So why should these facts matter today? My perspective: once combined with fascist ideology this spiritual perspective foreshadows a disastrous outcome for any nation. The two ideological strands, like two lengthy snakes twisted about our neck, strengthen their stranglehold. Soon, at least as far as the leadership of our country is concerned, the two may begin to combine as one - a single shimmering but cancerous choke chain demanding Americans, indeed the entire world, accept a government constructed upon these oddly coupled principles. Through its haunting symbolism, Revelation 13 and its two infamous ‘beasts’ reveal this political and spiritual arrangement. At the outset of this introduction, I cited novelist James Mill whose words repeat the same apprehension: ““I think it’s very dangerous for even an individual to be toying around with the occult. When you see nations doing it as a matter of national policy that really gets scary.” This tangled, rapacious approach represents exactly what happened in Nazi Germany. Is it now occurring here?

While hard to detect (let alone prove), many authors believe our national leadership leans hard toward esoteric spiritualism. On the other hand, we can distinctly mark a steady move toward Fascism. One only need recognize the erosion of liberty implied through the National Defense Authorization Act (NDAA) of 2012, quietly and strategically signed on New Year’s Eve by President Barack Obama. There are few events which can align conservatives, libertarians, and the ACLU; however, this law’s inking was one such episode.

Writing on behalf of *Forbes Magazine*, Erik Kahn conveyed its essential significance and implication (January 2, 2012): The National Defense Authorization Act greatly expands the power and scope of the federal government to fight the War on Terror, including codifying into law the indefinite detention of terrorism suspects without trial. Under the new law the U.S. military has the power to carry out domestic anti-terrorism operations on U.S. soil.

> [Quoting Obama] “The fact that I support this bill as a whole does not mean I agree with everything in it,” the president said in a statement .

> “I have signed this bill despite having serious reservations with certain provisions that regulate the detention, interrogation and prosecution of suspected terrorists.”
>
> Worse, the NDAA authorizes the military to detain even U.S. citizens under the broad new anti-terrorism provisions provided in the bill, once again without trial. There is some controversy on this point, in part because the law as written is entirely too vague. But whether or not the law will be used to indefinitely detain U.S. citizens domestically, it is written to allow the detention of U.S. citizens abroad as well as foreigners without trial.

In regards to personal liberty, the NDAA comprises the single greatest threat in memory to our constitution’s Bill of Rights. While most Americans pay little attention to its now being ‘on the books’ (since they surmise they have ‘nothing to hide’), the NDAA goes so far as to allow authorities to arrest citizens (identified as terrorists) for literally doing nothing more than appearing suspicious. Furthermore, the NDAA denies our explicit constitutional right to hear charges pending against us on a timely basis. Anyone can be held - indefinitely - for any reason the federal government chooses.

But the passage of this law may best be regarded as an action of popular and congressional paranoia, similar to what our country experienced in the 1950s when confronting the threat of communist expansionism fomented by the Soviet Union. Today the fear of terrorism lurks like a familiar shadow cast from the same kind of anxiety we experienced from the Soviets threat sixty years ago. Americans didn’t just build bomb shelters in the 1950s and 60s. We will learn in the pages ahead how we empowered our institutions to ignore the rights of individuals in the name of strengthening national security. As some have well said, we became a *national security state.*

Now we verge on taking comparable ill-chosen steps, strengthening our security at the expense of liberty. The NDAA serves as a warning we may be ready to follow the same course of overreaction.

In his book, *Brave New World Order* Jack Nelson-Pallmeyer, M.Div., Assistant Professor of Justice and Peace Studies at the University of St. Thomas, defined seven attributes of a National Security State (NSS). I paraphrase his startling and well-fitted description below: - First, the military

is the highest authority. The military not only guarantees the security of the state against all internal and external enemies, it has enough power to determine the overall direction of the society - influencing political, economic, as well as military matters.

- Secondly, democracy and popular elections are viewed with suspicion, contempt, or in terms of political expediency. The NSS maintains a democratic appearance. However, ultimate power rests with the military or within a broader “Security Establishment.”

- Thirdly, in a NSS the military and related sectors wield substantial political and economic power. They do this through an ideology which stresses that ‘freedom and development’ can work only when capital is controlled by the elites.

- Next, a National Security State is obsessed with enemies. They exist everywhere. Defending the State becomes the leading preoccupation of the State giving identity and purpose to the people of the State.

- Fifthly, the ideological premise of a NSS assumes its enemies are intelligent, dangerous, and obsessed with destroying the State. Therefore, all means to fight the enemy is justified.

- The National Security State restricts public debate and limits participation in the affairs of state through secret activities and intimidation. The NSS attacks democracy by limiting public debate, tampering with truth, setting policies in secret, and implementing those policies through covert channels and clandestine actions. The powers that be justify such actions for the higher goals of preserving society and its security.

- Finally, the NSS expects the Church to utilize its influence to insure the State will accomplish its goals. The Church must not have an independent agenda or hold the State accountable for its actions.[36]

If the reader isn’t sure this description reflects the America you know, please withhold judgment until you finish reading. To those with eyes to see, the National Security State appears at the heart of the way our society works in the twenty-first century.

The Ghastly Outcome of Globalism

While the loss of American liberty may pale in comparison to what took place during the rise of the German Reich in the 1930s, since the 1950s many American institutions have nevertheless acted in disregard to the public good, perhaps conducting public relations campaigns to divert attention from reprehensible actions. While the scale of horrendous acts in America falls far short of Hitler or Stalin, some actions infer our leadership seeks a similar sort of totalitarian control. We will explore a few of the most astonishing in this book.

In conservative political media, we hear of America's 'manifest destiny'[37] to champion freedom and democracy (today's language - the phrase *American exceptionalism*); however, today most third-world leaders assume America acts from a self-imposed mandate to build an empire and maintain total world dominance. Our allies mostly demand America weld this power to enforce a global order. Looking within our homeland, contrarian authors consider whether the highest and most sacred duty of government officials and mega-corporations consists in devising various means to control the masses 'ensuring domestic tranquility' and limiting personal liberty, enhancing the scrutiny of Big Brother. Entertainment, not religion, appears to be the 'opiate of the people'.

Ironically, the point this author makes along with many others who have written about the matter (generally disregarded inasmuch as we hold to the 'conspiratorial view of history'), is that America's leadership continues the push toward socialistic 'globalism' (think Bush's New World Order) rather than socialistic 'nationalism' as Hitler sought. Granted, Hitler's motive was extreme. He viewed the Teutonic peoples of Germany and the Aryan (Indo-European) race to be superior to all others; therefore, he asserted Aryans should govern. It was the ambition of National Socialism to wrest power away from "inferior races" - most notably the Jews - fearing they were already in firm control of world government after two centuries of financial supremacy. (This hegemony was presumably accomplished by the Rothschild's banking institutions during the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries). Hitler's advocacy for the propagandist (and admitted patently

forged) pamphlet, *The Protocols of the Elders of Zion*, made it clear he believed this to be so.[38]

Hitler also found support from Henry Ford, the American manufacturer, whose book *The International Jew*, served as powerful albeit inaccurate and contemptuous testimony confirming the premise of *The Protocols*, convincing Americans as well as Europeans that all problems could be blamed on 'the Jew'. While Ford later apologized for publishing his anti-Semitic treatise, the damage was done. In response to pressure from Jewish activists (driving a negative impact on Ford's sales), most experts conclude Ford's apology had more to do with enhancing sales than it did expressing real regret.

> In the summer of 1927, Ford's representatives approached Nathan Perlman, a vice-president of the American Jewish Congress, seeking a truce. Congress president Stephen Wise was in Europe, so Perlman referred Ford's people to the committee. Louis Marshall prepared an embarrassing retraction cum apology for Ford to sign and publish. Close advisers cautioned the carmaker that the humiliating apology might be too much for Ford's pride. But the global leader of anti-Semites had endured boycotts, legal actions, and political abrasions long enough. It was time to make money, secure the future, stop fighting the Jews, and take up arms against Chevrolet.
>
> On July 7, 1927, in the last year of the outmoded Model T - as Ford acknowledged a decline of about a half million fewer cars sold, and as he prepared for a major financial effort to introduce his new Model A - the proud gladiator of anti-Semites released to the press his contrite plea for forgiveness for wronging the Jews and misleading all mankind. "I have given consideration," wrote Ford, "to the series of articles concerning Jews which have since 1920 appeared in the Dearborn Independent… and in pamphlet form under the title The International Jew. …To my great regret, I have learned that Jews generally, and particularly those of this country, not only resent these publications as promoting anti-Semitism, but regard me as their enemy… I am deeply mortified. …I deem it to be my duty as an honorable man to make amends for the wrong done to the Jews as fellowmen and brothers, by asking their forgiveness for the harm that I have unintentionally committed, by retracting, so far as lies within my

> power, the offensive charges laid at their door by these publications, and by giving them the unqualified assurance that henceforth they may look to me for friendship and goodwill."[39]

Of course in our world today, the notion of Aryanism doesn't justifies international socialism; rather, it is the conviction that intelligent and wealthy elite should rule the masses since their 'good breeding' and superior education (shall we call it, 'Ivy League'?) best qualifies them for the task. No doubt we all agree racism is diabolical; however, is there consensus that aristocratic elitism is both altruistic and effective? Should we put our fate in the hands of the unelected elite? The history of princes and princesses - 'Lords and Ladies' if you will - certainly testifies otherwise.

Despite some obvious differences, what both governing philosophies share is a *utopian view of socialism* - that is, purely through a powerful political structure, humankind can achieve social nirvana. Once governed by an intelligent central authority ruled by reason alone which establishes the rules for our economy, fair play will reign everywhere in our society.

Conservative Mark Levin in his recent best-selling book, *Ameritopia*, discusses the irrepressible move by American (and world) leaders to a utopian philosophy. Levin does a wonderful job of recounting the social governing philosophies guiding civilization for thousands of years. Lurking behind the coddling words which promise 'what's best for the people', Levin points out the implicit threat we face: "Utopianism is advanced through gradualism rather than revolution, albeit steady and persistent as in democratic societies, it can deceive and disarm an unsuspecting population, which is largely content and passive."[40] Thus, persons are destined for dehumanization once their rights as individuals are quietly usurped by utopians. Levin asserts: "The individual is inconsequential as a person and useful only as an insignificant part of an agglomeration of insignificant parts. He is a worker, part of a mass; nothing more, nothing less. His existence is soulless. Absolute obedience is the highest virtue. After all, only an army of drones is capable of building a rainbow to paradise."[41]

Figure 1 - The Georgia Guidestones in Elbert County, GA.

Certainly, few would oppose ‘changes for the better’ and most commentators acknowledge we must modify our course lest humanity be doomed from any one of many calamities which await us.

And yet, how many humans must suffer or be eliminated to ‘protect’ humanity? What sacrifices must be made? Some readers may recall the ‘Georgia Guidestones’ monument and its ‘wisdom’ writ large in several languages. It begins: “Let these be Guidestones to an age of reason.” However, its first admonition contains irony aplenty: it calls for a reduction of the human species to a ‘sustainable’ population of under 500 million. In order words, it aspires to the elimination of six billion people to save the planet. *Such enlightened thinking carved in Georgia granite!* It remains a mystery who financed the erection and etching of these guide stones. However, we can be certain it wasn’t the ‘huddled masses yearning to be free’ - apparently targeted for annihilation by those who wish to save the planet.

Hitler asserted (as did many ‘Anglo-Americans’ in the same era - see Chapter 8) that the sick, the insane, and those with bad genetics were a drain upon society; therefore, they must be eradicated. Germany couldn’t afford to keep the infirm on the dole. So in addition to the Jewish financial conspiracy, racial impurity must be addressed. Having an inferior race dominating nature’s superior race - the Aryans - was an intolerable travesty that must be ended.

Consequently, two overarching items were at the top of the Nazi agenda: (1) the financial tables must be turned against the international Jewish bankers and (2) the racially impure, the sick, and the addled must be eradicated. Once the German government completed these tasks, their Teutonic society could thrive again. The lesson learned for social engineering: when selecting scapegoats, its best to pick easy targets that can’t fight back.

Today’s elites are much less obvious, for they have adopted much more intractable issues to address in the name of saving society.

Today’s elite ruling class believes the fault lies not so much with inferior genetics (although when pressed most intellectuals who would be social engineers believe we are destined for an ‘idiocracy’) but with empirical

realities and ideologies encompassing several chronic challenges. Specifically: the intolerance of fundamentalist religion, overpopulation which strains food and water resources, the destruction of the planet's ability to sustain life, improving the habitat for dwindling or threatened species, and the inability to solve economic disparity between rich and poor nations.

While this list of global difficulties is honorable although daunting, make no mistake: the two perspectives, National Socialism and 'globalist socialism' both advocate the same agenda: only a select few can guide our human species toward societal solutions. The average Joe simply doesn't have it in him, even if it is only pulling the right lever in the voting booth. Safeguarding the rights of the average Joe needn't be a priority when it fails to serve the interest of the State.

Levin quotes the great philosopher of science, Karl Popper (1902-1994) to remind us that Utopianism eventually leads to the total identification of state and society. "The power of the state is bound to increase until the state becomes nearly identical with society."[42] Furthermore, by definition the individual within society exists to serve the *State*.

Therefore, to achieve society's most important objectives we must declare *democracy the enemy*. We cannot rely upon 'the People' to make good judgments, especially since the process is so inefficient.

Notwithstanding the fact our U.S. congress has become feckless over the past decade. Given its lackluster performance, one is challenged when arguing a representative republic (based on democratic principles) remains the right way to go. In the wake of this failure, we are left wondering whether only a beneficent ruling class can put things in order. Historically labeled 'plutocracy', this governing principle demands the rich elite control the mechanisms of the economy (the creation of money, the right to establish a business, and the rules that govern trade) to safeguard security and social welfare for all.

However, my criticisms of our present circumstances do not mean, I recommend a total loss of hope. We must not give in to our cynicism and throw in the towel. *If we can find and elect ethical and effective leaders who will fight for a return to our constitutional principles caring more about the country than their personal careers,* America's republic can still work. We

ought to strive for liberty and justice for all. As narrator Matt Damon relates in the movie *Inside Job* (2010) - an award-winning film which documents the enormous financial corruption on Wall Street and its destructive effect upon our democracy - *some things are still worth fighting for.* While it seems likely that freeing up the gridlock can only occur with a colossal adjustment - a rerouting of the legislative traffic, if you will, brought about by a national crisis of the first order - eventually, a dramatic moment will arrive when inaction no longer remains an option.

America's Spiritual Obsession with the Paranormal

In addition to advocating a 'friendlier form of Fascism', many of today's influential elite believe humanity lies on the threshold of dramatic transformation. This progress happens thanks to our accumulated knowledge, advanced science, and supposedly higher standards of spirituality. The sophists who espouse New Age spiritualism suppose humanity stands ready to 'come of age' in the months and years just ahead. As with all such 'enlightened' outlooks, hope springs eternal - especially if the rich elite have their say and dictate the rules to the rest of us.

Book One provided a description of America's 'native' spiritual commitment, in the sense of a distinctly American religion - a perspective or worldview *inconsistent* with the Judeo-Christian cosmology. To be more specific, spiritualism and mysticism as expressed in Freemasonry dominated America's 'native' religion from its earliest origins. By the end of the nineteenth century, the biblical perspective was lagging behind Theosophy and the occult then shaping America's 'populist' faith. However, this historical fact remains widely ignored within evangelicalism due to the popular patriotic aphorism which affirms: *"We are a Christian nation."* This prevalent opinion quickly mounts a case for the pure conservative agenda: a strong defense, a free economy, and demand for law and order. But all too often abuses of power by our private and public institutions are excused in the haste to affirm American greatness.

At best, as argued in the prequel, America's spiritual history bespeaks Christ's parable of the 'Wheat and Tares' (Matthew 13:24-30) - the good and the bad must grow together. Technically speaking, we are not a Christian nation and we never were. Yes, thankfully many biblical principles were incorporated into our nation's constitution and our nation was even dedicated to 'God' (at least to a Supreme Being) at George Washington's New York City 'swearing in' as President in 1789. This commitment was vital to our republic. Certainly, our map boasts a multitude of cities named after villages from the Bible. And our universities were proudly founded by Christians who believed that "the fear of God is the beginning of wisdom" (Prov. 9:10)

as well as the conviction an educated populace is the bulwark of freedom. Still, we were not founded a distinctly *Christian* nation.

No doubt my 'nuanced' argument could anger some of my evangelical brethren who all too frequently *associate American patriotism and 'Biblical Christianity'*, seeing in America a nation guided by God and built upon Judeo-Christian principles. For instance, the popular Mormon conservative Glenn Beck and his 'favorite historian' David Barton have taken this perspective to another level, idolizing America's Founding Fathers to support a quixotic/patriotic point of view. After listening to their discussion of the governing principles upheld by our forebears, especially their appeal to divine guidelines for government, one thinks of the comic strip/movie hero, *Superman* who stands for "truth, justice, and the American way." But we should remember the moral principles of Ben Franklin, a member in good standing of the Hell-Fire Club outside of London where prostitutes and drunken orgies were standard fair for the aristocrats. Franklin was hardly a mild-mannered and prudent eighteenth century facsimile of Clark Kent.

Nevertheless, while many conservatives in America fall into a trap of connecting patriotism to an affirmation of biblical faith, it amounts to *rewriting history.* It is more than Pollyannaish. It is inaccurate. A fair reading of our past asserts America's 'true colors' *resemble spiritualism and paganism more than biblical orthodoxy*.

Lest I resort to restating all the arguments from the prequel, I refer the reader to Chapters 3 and 4 of *Power Quest, Book One* to review the evidence that America was founded primarily as a safe haven for those who were anti-monarch and anti-Catholic. But for the reader's convenience here, allow me to summarize: while the separation of church and state certainly protected those of the Puritan mind-set, it remains easy to demonstrate that our Founding Fathers intended our laws *protect pagans just as much as Protestants*. One only need look at our nation's capital: The architecture and the heroes set in stone testify to the Roman and Greek gods. Brumidi's fresco 'The Apotheosis of Washington' (see figure adjacent), portrays George Washington in the dome of the Capitol ascending to heaven, surrounded by classical deities as he is transformed into a Roman god. Even though it stands in public view, how many Americans are aware of this peculiar painting with its implicit anti-biblical cosmology?

Putting this topic in perspective: 400 years ago members of the Invisible College in England (such as Francis Bacon and Christopher Wren) saw in America *a new Atlantis,* a land to realize the dream of Rosicrucians and Freemasons. Here, humankind would be ruled by 'pure' reason. Yes, its morality and legal principles would hearken to biblical influence, but its worldview would be inspired by pagan spiritualism. Even at the nation's 'corner stone ceremony' for the Capitol building, ancient deities were called upon, if not conjured by Washington and his fellow Freemasons, to "bless our undertaking."

The history of secret societies written by Manly P. Hall, noted Masonic historian (which I detailed in Book One), plainly testified to this mystical strategy also known as 'the Plan'. Moreover, American and French revolutions would début this multi-generational program. Less than a hundred years after these watershed moments, the ideologies of Marx and Nietzsche advanced the program further, after detaching the notions of Jefferson and Montesquieu[43] from divine mandate, focusing humanism purely upon man alone.[44]

Figure 2 - *The Apotheosis of Washington*, The Capitol Dome

Unquestionably, it was in America where humankind was liberated from old world trappings and any residue of monarchical or priestly sovereignty. Separation of church and state was essential to prohibit kings and priests from seeking tyrannical control of society again.

While hardly an exclusive American dream, arguably in America the doctrine of secular humanism and utopianism was initially realized. Although not necessarily intended to drive God from ‘the public square’, the passage of time certainly resulted in this outcome.

We may ask “What kept America from venturing into the dark corridors of total secularism and its notorious descendent, Fascism?” Two factors played key parts: (1) the ‘biblical memory’ of law and morality upon which our society was based; and (2) the governing principles of ‘enlightened’ political philosophers (such as Jefferson and Montesquieu) who were instrumental in shaping our constitution. The founders sought to protect individual liberty by designing a federal government limited in authority, possessing only ‘enumerated powers’. How ‘legislating from the bench’ (judges altering the laws) has altered the core principle of the Constitution!

However, having now ventured further down the darkened hallway, where do we find ourselves? First, our ‘moral memory’ has been steadily fading for over 70 years; secondly, our personal liberties have been under constant attack from a federal government usurping its limited scope of power and encroaching upon areas of our lives where our forefathers never intended federal government go.

In essence, since bigger government easily becomes bad government, as government grew massive, we were loosed from the moorings of our constitution. Now adrift, we no longer possess a strong sense of what sacrifices liberty demands.

Meanwhile, spiritualism, built as it is upon a humanistic cosmology putting ‘man at the center of things’ has once again become the perspective adopted by most Americans. Whether publicly proclaimed or merely presumed, man is deified. And as the late Christian intellectual Francis A. Schaeffer asserted, humanism isolated from the God of the Bible has never proven a sufficient basis for ethics and morality. The bloody French Revolution proved this premise. America’s emboldened but utterly bleak secular humanism of the twenty-first century, further establishes the propriety of this pronouncement. Lawlessness spreads. Sexual morality ebbs ever lower. Greed guides financial policies of many of the largest of American corporations. Politicians sell out to lobbyists and constituencies wanting more favorable treatment and government benefits. And if the ‘Guidestones’ are guidelines

championed by intellectual elites who would rule uncontested, humanism will ultimately become anything but humane. When society is no longer accountable to a personal God, it drifts away from the ‘rule of law’. It settles on Fascism to avoid anarchy. This hapless trend is repeating itself today.

Conclusion - Summoning the Antichrist

Combining all these factors, as a nation we find ourselves perched upon a precipice towering above a dark chasm. We stand teetering at the onset of a despotic and anti-Christian future. America has summoned the spirit of Antichrist. Will we take the next steps to incarnate in one man the very personage of The Beast of Revelation, fashioning his seat of world power and authority? Will we establish his throne and inaugurate his reign? Will our domestic and international policies continue to advance the satanic agenda of humankind's determined choice to reject God, that it might itself become God and thereby, unwittingly bring the world to an apocalyptic conclusion?

The reader may choose to interpret my questions literally (as I intend them) or metaphorically. Either way, the threat remains real while the outcome is no less horrifying.

However, it isn't just America's secular political failures which deserve our consideration. As evangelicals (assuming most of my readers are), we are an 'exceptional' subset of Americans with a unique calling. Our spiritual failures besmirch the gospel and even level the walls allowing Antichrist's entry. When we lack discernment, we fail to detect when and how America falters. For many, our pride in being Americans becomes an opaque veil blocking a more considered view. Without eyes to see, we will not recognize Antichrist should he arise within our nation. Since the Scripture calls us to be watchmen, alert at all times (Ezek. 33:6, 7), we dare not fall asleep lest the enemy creep into the city undetected.

Likewise, our calling in society remains crucial. Christ's followers are to shine a light before all humankind to remove the darkness that falls upon a human race indifferent or antagonistic to God. But without discernment, the 'light on the lampstand' ceases its functioning (Matt. 5:15, Luke 11:33). The salt becomes worthless. As Jesus admonishes his disciples, such unsavory salt will be cast aside (Matt. 5:13). Moreover, since our national sin lies well beneath the surface, we must search it out. When the resulting image of our nation is one we don't wish to see, we find it twice as hard to recognize. However, to follow Christ, we mustn't avert our gaze.

Book One began quoting Pastor Erwin Lutzer of Chicago's The Moody Church who said in his book, *Hitler's Cross* (1995) "Despite the difference,

the American church, like that of Nazi Germany, is in danger of wrapping the cross of Christ in some alien flag." Essentially his point was this: biblical Christianity never confuses *national pride* with *doctrinal purity*. Both are laudable. However, correctly ranking these two values remains our top priority. *The Bible, rightly understood, stands as our one and only true guidestone*. Without this recognition we shall never detect the enemy's approach and we will be powerless to defend ourselves and our posterity.

CHAPTER ONE:

WHY THE NAZI THREAT CONTINUED

AFTER THE WEST WON WORLD WAR II

The lights of Peenemünde flitted in the sky from Seattle to Washington, D.C.

Alex Constantine from *Virtual Government,* 1997

"We find ourselves faced by powers which are far stronger than we had hitherto assumed, and whose base is at present unknown to us. More I cannot say at present. We are now engaged in entering into closer contact with those powers, and in six or nine months' time it may be possible to speak with more precision on the matter."

Werner von Braun, January 1, 1959

"It should be evident by now that those who deny that the spacecraft and space people are in our skies are agents of the Anti-Christ."

George W. Van Tassel, Lockheed engineer and UFologist

UFOs vs. the USAF

Over two consecutive weekends in July 1952, Washington D.C. was swarmed by flying saucers. The number of witnesses contributing to this phenomenon was overwhelming. This was not so surprising since, in 1952 you could say you saw a UFO without worry of being characterized as a ‘crackpot’. Consequently, not only were these unidentified flying objects detected by radar across the Washington D.C. area, they were willingly reported by a number of military personnel and clearly described by several commercial aviators.

> Objects appeared in all sectors of the radarscope; when they moved over the White House and the United States Capitol… Airman William Brady, who was in the tower (at Andrews Air Force Base), then saw an "object which appeared to be like an orange ball of fire, trailing a tail . . . [it was] unlike anything I had ever seen before." As Brady tried to alert the other personnel in the tower, the strange object "took off at an unbelievable speed" and vanished in "a split second". He then observed a second, similar object, but it also disappeared before anyone else in the tower could see it… [45]

At 12:30 a.m. on July 20, a senior flight controller, Edward Nugent, and his supervisor in the National Airport control tower Harry Barnes reported seeing "an orange disk about 3,000 feet altitude." On one of the airport's runways, S.C. Pierman, a Capital Airlines pilot, was waiting in the cockpit of his DC-4 for permission to take off. After spotting what he believed to be a meteor, he was told that the control tower's radar had picked up unknown objects closing in on his position. Pierman observed six objects - "white, tailless, fast-moving lights" - over a 14-minute period. Pierman remained in radio contact with Barnes during his sighting, and Barnes later related that "each sighting coincided with a pip (blip) we could see near his plane. When he reported that the light streaked off at a high speed, it disappeared on our scope."

The Military was extremely concerned about ‘the Washington Flap’ as it came to be called. At issue was national security and threats to the Nation’s capital. Who or what was responsible for these strange aircraft that everyone in the area saw? It was no mass hallucination. Seen by so many professional

witnesses, U.S. Air Force jets scrambled to join in the chase while flight controllers tracked the activity of ‘ours versus theirs’ in a ‘play-by-play’ manner from their radars - all at various locations and over two successive weekends. Since there were so many participants in the sightings with highly professional credentials, the ‘Flap’ was the most important and authoritative sightings of UFOs in American history. Again, the reader recall these reports took place when talk about seeing flying saucers held no fear of reproach. According to the *Charleston Gazette* of July 29, 1952, the excitement culminated in an order to shoot down any flying saucers or force them to land (an order that later would be strongly rescinded - for reasons that remain at the heart of the controversy[46]). While military jets were scrambled and the ‘blips’ confirmed by the pilots, the USAF jets didn’t get close enough to the saucers to take a shot.

Figure 3 - *It Came from Outer Space* © Universal Internal Pictures

Also on July 29th, after another weekend of unexpected aerial assaults, the Pentagon held a press conference *which was the most attended event of its kind since World War II*. Officials quieted the press although the explanations

offered – temperature inversions and meteors – smacked of insincerity. If Roswell in 1947 excited flying saucer interest, the 1952 Washington incident elicited unrestrained fascination.

Soon intelligent beings (presumed to be) from ‘o*uter space’* manning flying saucers, became a new national obsession. Not long after the Flap, Hollywood cashed in on this spate of interest, creating a new and never-out-of-date genre. Universal Studios produced its very first 3D movie, *It Came from Outer Space* (1953) starring Barbara Rush and Richard Carlson. Predictably, the plot was based upon the Roswell incident six years previous, but exacerbated by the fury of ‘the Flap’. In the movie, audiences discovered the alien visitors weren’t testing our defenses and thus, planned no malfeasance. The aliens simply had mechanical trouble. Plus, they did their utmost to stay hidden so earth folks wouldn’t be alarmed. With a human presence of mind, the aliens realized their creepy appearance would frighten the backward earthlings - not to mention the obvious from the movie producers’ viewpoint: 3D is wasted on *invisible* aliens. Never making an appearance would certainly disappoint the audience. In the final analysis: although the movie was a good time, it wasn’t such a hot ticket in the annals of American cinema.

The Intelligence Connection

Author Alex Constantine's book, *Virtual Government: CIA Mind Control Operations in America* takes up the topic of the early outbreak of UFOs and its connection to American intelligence operations. Quoting from the *London Times*, July 29, 1952, Constantine remarks that one John Alexander Samford stepped up to brief the press during 'the Flap' (at the aforementioned conference) "fresh from a promotion to Director of Air Force Intelligence (and four years later to the highest office of the National Security Agency)."[47] Samford wasn't leading the press conference because of his aeronautical acumen; he was there as a military intelligence specialist.

Continuing the account from the *London Times*:

> "Major General Samford, with other officers, discussed the investigation of the reported phenomena for an hour and a half this afternoon and answered innumerable questions. The result was largely 'an explanation of an inability to explain,' but General Samford did say definitely that Air Force inquiries made since 1947 had revealed 'nothing constituting a danger.' The radar blips, he said, were probably 'phenomena associated with intellectual and scientific interests'."[48]

Undoubtedly, his explanation begged further questions. Just what intellectual pursuits and scientific studies were underway? Who was doing the experiments? What was their objective? Why did they pick Washington DC to showcase their wares? If such benign interests were behind 'the Flap', why did the Air Force act so panicky? Why didn't military leadership know of these activities ahead of time? What power or force could operate with such impunity?

Enter Dr. Howard P. Robertson, a physicist from Princeton who formed and chaired a panel in 1953 to investigate UFO sightings. It just so happened that Robertson formerly headed an intelligence team to hunt down and recover Nazi technological secrets. Typical of many intelligence adventures, not much can be learned by what the group in question chose to call itself. Robertson's most unusual squad was known as C.A.F.T.s, for *Consolidated Advance Field Teams.* Constantine notes, "Dr. Robertson was also instrumental in the transplanting of Werner von Braun and his fellow Nazi fugitives from Peenemünde [Hitler's advanced rocket technology laboratory]

to the United States."[49] According to Constantine, Robertson's activities (post-Nazi migration and UFO explanation), served the CIA and Department of Defense for an additional twenty years, designing weapon systems for the military. We can safely surmise the knowledge Robertson acquired regarding Nazi technology was put to good use for the American side during the Cold War.

Another well-known person associated with the UFO phenomenon in the 1950s, was the astronomer J. Allen Hynek. Hynek termed the whole UFO affair a "saucer psychosis." Upon analysis, we learn his role was to cultivate as many explanations as possible to confuse and convolute the entire episode. Hynek developed rationales suggesting UFOs were nothing more than "hallucination, hoaxes, optical illusions, weather balloons, perihelia, lenticular clouds, meteorites, [and] ordinary planes flying at high altitude…"[50] You name it, he would employ it - (although my favorite cause, 'swamp gas' as an explanation for seeing unusual lights in the sky, hadn't yet been popularized). Hynek dismissed the reality of flying saucers with enough disdain to embarrass anyone silly enough to pose such questions in the first place. The experts love to yuck it up.

Along with Robertson's 1953 panel, other experts soon joined in the festivities. The art of debunking UFOs became a gleeful exercise for all the military's flying saucer experts. Supposedly, these authorities were not just acting under orders - they were seeking to suppress needless worry. Indeed, most everyone assumes that downplaying UFOs was doing what was best for the country. The infamous Brookings Report filed a few years later in 1960 (we will discuss in Chapter 6), officially sanctioned this course of action.

While our leadership apparently feared hysteria would grip the country if UFOs were acknowledged, many of today's researchers doubt the honesty of this justification for dismissing the UFO phenomenon. Investigators argue a known earthly source lay behind the 'hush-hush' treatment of the UFO story. Additionally, even in the 1950s the population seemed accepting of the possibility of life elsewhere in the universe. Known as the 'Theory of Many Worlds', such conjecture had been commonplace for several centuries.

As a means to demonstrate the tremendous interest during the 1950s and the eagerness of the populace to embrace the extraterrestrial hypothesis, one can study the activities of a legendary figure named George Van Tassel. Van

Tassel was an aeronautical engineer and test pilot who worked for Lockheed, Douglas Aircraft and was even a colleague of Howard Hughes at Hughes Aviation.

This recap of Van tassel and his wide-spread popularity is rather unexpected given what we believe to be true about outer space today:

> George Van Tassel began conducting weekly meditation sessions in 1953 in the rooms underneath Giant Rock [in the Mojave Desert near Landers, California] which, he claimed, led to UFO contacts and finally to an actual encounter with extra-terrestrials when, in August of that year, a saucer landed from the plant Venus,[51] woke Van Tassel up and invited him onto the ship. There the aliens gave him the technique for rejuvenating living cell tissues. In 1954 he and his family began building a structure they called *The Integratron*to perform the rejuvenation. George described his creation this way, "The Integratron is a machine, a high-voltage electrostatic generator that would supply a broad range of frequencies to recharge the cell structure."
>
> His annual Spacecraft Conventions were attended by tens of thousands across two decades, featuring speakers that included high profile UFO contactees and pioneers in the fields of antigravity, primary energy research and electromagnetics. Van Tassel led weekly meditations in the rooms under the rock from the 1950's to the 1970's [sic], which he claimed led to UFO contacts.
>
> The family hosted their UFO conventions at Giant Rock for almost 20 years to raise money for the Integratron project and asked supporters for donations. In 1959, 11,000 people attended the spacecraft convention, and Van Tassel continued to work on the Integratron while writing a number of books on time travel and rejuvenation. Van Tassel died suddenly in 1978, after which the buildings at Giant Rock were vacated and gradually vandalized until the Bureau of Land Management found it necessary to bulldoze the remains.[52]

Given that the population wasn’t panic-stricken about the possibility of UFOs and, as indicated before, eagerly saw in UFOs a possible proof for an extraterrestrial-based religion, wasn’t the fear the population would panic just a smoke screen set up by ‘the powers that be’? Since it was the military which seemed unnerved, could it be the real reason for alarm was more -

shall we say *terrestrial*? Wasn't the suggestion of 'beings from outer space' a convenient method for disinformation? Might this be an example of what would become a frequent tactic known as an intelligence cover-up? We know the population didn't dread the 'visitors'; indeed, just the opposite seems true. The details of the *Integratron* smack of religious passion (see the figure adjacent), patterned as it was after the Tabernacle of Moses.

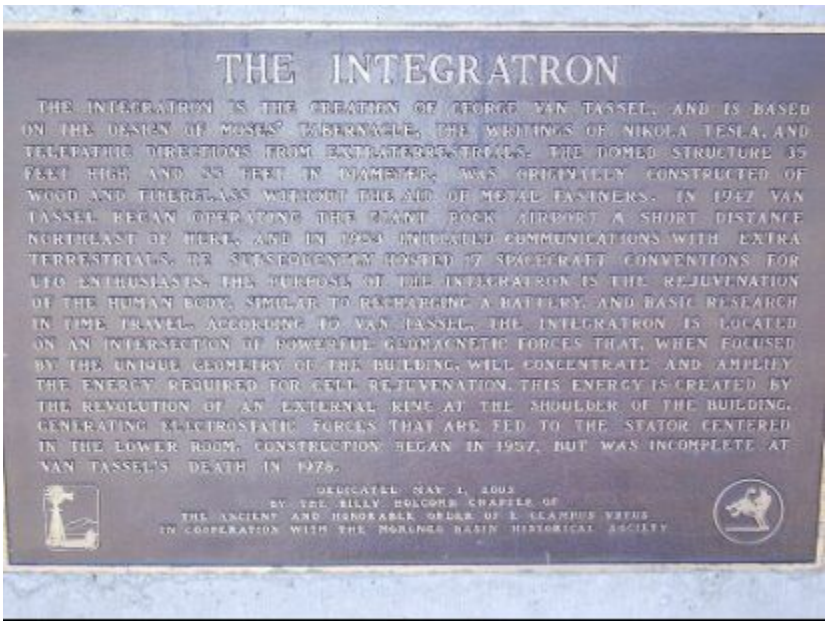


Figure 4 - Plaque at *The Integratron*, Mojave Desert, Landers, California

That the cause was in fact terrestrial (and not extraterrestrial) is the theory many researchers hold today. Looking back 60 years, the thesis 'alternate authorities' espouse - an true cause for alarm - was far more disconcerting and genuinely warranted a panic-stricken populace, if the folks only knew what was really going on. That's because the airborne discs were from a source far too familiar. There were no 'secret meetings with beings from other planets'. The real threat was from 'inner space'; that is, *earth-bound* enemies roaming our skies.

Experts contemplate *two sources* for the free air shows. First, it is proposed by some of these authorities the Soviets were employing 'their' Nazi scientists captured and hauled off to Russia in 1945. As we will see, this explanation is totally plausible. But the bewildering alternative - and what is arguably the better explanation - was impugning a nefarious third party. Specifically, many researchers suggest the military feared that *die-hard Nazis*

were responsible for these post-war intrusions into our air space! As we will learn in this chapter, military intelligence had good reason to consider this seemingly outrageous possibility.

Indeed, today a number of researchers suggest there is no need to posit outer space aliens visiting our planet. They point to advanced technologies secretly amassed by German science before and during the Second World War. In other words, they theorize numerous Nazi scientists escaped the clutches of the Western Allies and the Soviets, heading off to parts unknown to set up shop and continue the battle for world supremacy.

The argument goes as follows: the Reich had only suffered a severe set-back, not a total defeat. Before War's end, Nazi leadership more or less determined which scientists would go where, while they kept the very best for themselves. All they needed to do was develop a plausible diversion to capture the imagination and keep the Allies from asking too many questions that might point the finger back at *independent German technologists*. Akin to what the South said after the American Civil War, *The Reich will rise again!* Nazi scientists, operating unsupervised and out of sight by the declared winners of World War II, continued to develop numerous advanced and sometimes sinister technologies - all in dark faraway places.

The Unusual Usual Explanation for UFOs

Other authors besides Alex Constantine suspect American intelligence operations lay behind early UFO claims and counter-claims. Likewise, these researchers remain convinced the Nazis should be the 'cause célèbre' for the 1950s 'Flap' and subsequent cover-up.

Joseph P. Farrell in one of his most recent books, *Saucers, Swastikas, and Psyops*, challenges the popular notion that extraterrestrials explain UFOs. Instead, he theorizes flying saucer appearances after World War II (1947 onward, at least through the 1960s)[53] are better explained by an unexpected evolution of Nazi technology post-World War II. The purveyors of this secret capability were scientists smuggled out of Germany, escaping the grasp of both the Americans and the Soviets. Farrell proposes that an 'ET explanation' for flying saucers was a carefully constructed campaign of disinformation by American scientists working with our intelligence services - or, perhaps in a more clandestine fashion - it was a tale concocted by former Nazis (once they began working for the Americans right after the war ended), to divert attention from covert plans for continued German development of advanced technologies, particularly those aeronautical in nature. Farrell cites a statement made in 1968 by the famous (former Nazi) scientist Dr. Hermann Oberth then working for the United States.[54]

> Today we cannot produce machines that fly as UFOs do. They are flying by means of artificial fields of gravity. This would explain the sudden changes of directions… This hypothesis would also explain the piling up of these disks into a cylindrical or cigar-shaped mothership upon leaving the earth, because in this fashion only one field of gravity would be required for all disks.
>
> They produce high-tension electric charges in order to push the air out of their path… and strong magnetic fields to influence the ionized air at higher altitudes… This would explain their luminosity… Secondly, it would explain the noiselessness of UFO flight. Finally, this assumption also explains the strong electrical and magnetic effects sometimes, but not always, observed in the vicinity of UFOs. [55]

The epigraph at the beginning of this chapter refers to an even more mysterious, if not highly strange, public statement made by Werner von

Braun in January 1961. “We find ourselves faced by powers which are far stronger than we had hitherto assumed, and whose base is at present unknown to us. More I cannot say at present. We are now engaged in entering into closer contact with those powers, and in six or nine months’ time it may be possible to speak with more precision on the matter.”[56]

Returning to the information shared by Oberth in a reputed show of self-deprecation, he indicated (paraphrasing) “we can’t take credit for the many advances we have enjoyed in aeronautics… we have had help.” One Fred Steckling upon his retirement at Bell Labs, remembers Oberth clarifying himself when asked from whence did this ‘help’ emanate: “Those guys out there from the other planets.”[57] This same Fred Steckling constitutes a most interesting character in his own right. He would later propose alien bases had been found on the moon, based on many anomalous features seen in photographs post-moon landing (from 1969 forward).

However, Steckling’s outlandish claim hardly stands alone. In a later chapter, we will touch upon the evidence for life elsewhere in our solar system - a matter at the forefront of claims a ‘third’ or ‘hidden’ space program exists. Likewise, this notion involves both Nazis who work visibly within NASA as well as ‘invisible’ (theorized) Nazi scientists lurking outside public view.

Farrell, a controversial figure, prolific author, and Oxford PhD to which this author has frequently turned, points out that Dr. Oberth’s background (prior to his ‘coming to America’) *involved the occult.* The reader will recall the opening chapter in the prequel to this book dealt with the prevalent and undeniable occult connection to Nazism. This evil esotericism was even presumed by the earliest mediums of *The Vril Society*, namely Maria Orsic (soon subsumed in the *Thule Gellenschaft* in 1923) who supposedly channeled contacts originating from the nearby star system, Alderbaran (nearby of course is a relative term, being a mere 65 light years away!) Thus, the notion of neighborly aliens is hardly a recent development.

Farrell cites a recently published and extensive passage from an accomplished polish researcher, Igor Witkowski, confirming the connection between Oberth and von Braun - but dealing with the mysterious nature of Oberth’s exact job description during World War II. Oberth was considered by the Americans to be a leading authority in aeronautics. But Witkowski suggests his area of research was a non-traditional area of flight research -

namely, ‘zero point gravity’ - aka an ‘advanced’ propulsion system for flying saucers. In particular, the puzzlement arises when Oberth’s statements are combined with his interest in the occult. Did he believe in extraterrestrials or was this just a convenient cover story? It is a matter of record that Oberth made strongly-worded and explicitly clear statements to explain UFOs by resorting to extraterrestrials. Farrell concludes:

> What this quite plainly means is that long before Oberth came to the USA and made his “Extraterrestrial diagnosis” of the UFO phenomenon, he was clearly involved in a very terrestrial project with explicit anti-gravity capability and potentials. In other words, when Dr. Oberth was waxing lyrical about intelligences from beyond the solar system, he was *obfuscating at best, or lying at worst*. If this is so, then this implies in turn that he was under some sort of orders as part of a larger psychological operation.
>
> The question now becomes, why was he lying, and under whose orders was he doing so? Or to put it differently, when, where, how, and for what reasons, did the idea of coupling antigravity technology to psychological operations first begin? [Emphasis in original]

The German Flying Saucer Myth

However, Farrell is quick to point out that while *anti-gravity propulsion* remains the usual supposition of those who believe in flying saucers explaining their great speed and maneuverability (and which allows for the possibility of *interplanetary* space travel), the technology behind the first flying saucers was most likely much more *terrestrial*; namely, they were powered by *jet* turbines. The speed consistently estimated by witnesses was 'about 1,000 MPH'. This was certainly fast for the 1950s, but hardly Star Trek speed.

While there were various unconfirmed stories about Nazi engineering flying disks during the War, the first credible statement appeared in a French publication in the June 7, 1952 issue, approximately one month before 'the Flap' in the District of Columbia. A Dr. Richard Miethe claimed in *France-Soir* that he built a turbine-based flying saucer craft for the Germans in 1944. It was known as the V7, whose engines the Russians found in Breslau at War's end.[58] But there is further intrigue: we learn from Farrell that Miethe was part of a joint West German–CIA sponsored coup against Egyptian King Farouk on July 23, 1952 - ironically at the very same time 'the Flap' was transpiring in the western hemisphere. Perhaps it is purely coincidental the flying saucer 'attack' on Washington DC happened while the CIA eliminated the Egyptian monarch and paved the way, with the services of former Nazis, to develop missiles for launch against the young State of Israel (only four years old at the time of the Egyptian coup). Then again, maybe there was cause and effect. As some evangelical authors have pointed out (namely, my friend Gary Stearman who authored the Foreword to Book One of *Power Quest*), the timing of many UFO outbursts often coincides with key crisis events in the Middle East. Go figure.[59]

Figure 5 - Fantasy picture of the German V7 Flying Saucer

The CIA failed to recognize another significant fact: Gamal Abdel Nasser then a lieutenant colonel, was the real force to be reckoned with in Egypt. He would soon seize power in 1956, throw out the British, and take control of the Suez Canal. We will learn in the next chapter that author John Loftus (mentioned earlier, a key member of the Nazi hunting unit in 1979 within the Department of Justice), confirms America was especially duplicitous in regards to Israel. While publicly supporting Israel, along with Great Britain, America was taking steps behind the scenes to see the young Israeli government brought to an end in the first half of the 1950s, mostly to protect Anglo-American petroleum relationships (already decades in the making) with key oil-producing Arab states. Israel may be the Holy Land; but the Arabs possessed petroleum vital to our economy.

However, Miethe's account stands as only one piece of evidence which links Nazi technology to the UFO 'Flap' of the 1950s. Farrell mentions a Georg Klein whose testimony is contained in a CIA report dating back to May 27, 1954.

> Klein stated that he was present when, in 1945, the first piloted 'flying saucer' took off and reached a speed of 1,300 miles per hour within 3 minutes. The experiments resulted in three designs: one designed by Miethe was a disc-shaped aircraft, 135 feet in diameter, which did not rotate; another designed by Habermohl and Schriever, consisted of a large rotating ring, in the center of which was a round, stationary cabin

> for the crew. When the Soviets occupied Prague, the Germans destroyed every trace of the ‘flying saucer’ project and nothing more was heard of Habermohl and his assistants.[60]

Additionally, the German ‘myth’ of flying saucers seems to be strengthened by the publication of Luftwaffe Major Rudolf Lusar and his book *German Secret Weapons of the Second World War* (published in 1959 in the United Kingdom). Farrell extensively quotes a Kevin McClure, a researcher on the UFO-Nazi connection who cited the material from Lusar. For clarity and succinctness, I will recap the discussion here - paraphrasing Farrell’s analysis and citations.

Lusar indicates that flying saucers have been “whirling round the world since 1947, suddenly turning up here and there, soaring in and darting off again at unprecedented speed with flames encircling the rim of the saucer’s disc.”[61] Even though they are usually detected by radar, they have never been officially confirmed. We learn these flying disks were first undertaken in 1941 and were designed by Miethe, Habermohl and Schriever (along with an Italian identified as Bellonzo). Some were circular in shape and others were adjustable wing aircraft (think Grumman F-14 ‘Tomcat’). They could take off vertically and could reach diameters of over 120 feet. At Prague, the first was test flown on February 14, 1945. As stated before, it took only 3 minutes to reach a speed of 1,300 MPH with an attitude of almost 40,000 feet. The design specification called for a top speed of 4,000 km/h (over 2,500 MPH or Mach III). The high speeds demanded special heat reducing materials. While well-developed, the project never benefited the Nazis as the Russians reached Breslau confiscating the materials at the end of the War.[62]

Then additional significant information relevant to our study comes to the forefront. According to Lusar, the Soviets took all the materials and shipped them off to Siberia “where work on these ‘flying saucers’ is being successfully continued’.”[63] Lusar claimed that Habermohl was probably in the Soviet Union while Miethe was definitely in the United States. The evidence mounted that all parties continued to develop the technology since, in 1952 saucers were observed in Asia (Korea) and plainly seen during the 1954 NATO maneuvers over Europe (Alsace). However, Lusar surmised the U.S. continued to deny the existence of these circular flying machines “because U.S. development has not kept pace with the work of the Soviets.”

If even half of these testimonies are true, we can easily see why military intelligence grew frantic over the Washington Flap. The fear of Soviet aircraft advancement was plausible. And it remained an obscure possibility that somewhere (unbeknownst to the American government) Nazi scientists continued to build advanced aircraft - namely, flying saucers *which we couldn't shoot down*. In a word, we were *defenseless*. Given the many other technologies we knew the Nazis had already advanced, the U.S. had reason to be afraid. At the very least, our awareness may well have included what has now become the position of some researchers - Germany had 'the bomb' - but they hadn't developed an effective method to 'deliver it'. Farrell concludes:

> All these considerations suggest that the U.S. military came to the realization that it was dealing with some terrestrial entity that was pursuing its own research into exotic propulsion systems and aerodynes [an aircraft heavier than air]. By all documentary indicators explored [in his book]…that entity appears to be some independent Nazi organization… those documents suggest the politically and technologically explosive reasons for an ongoing cover-up: that Nazi entity had at least a decade's head start, if not more, on the United States in the development of such technologies.[64]

The Mastermind of Arcane German Technology

The worries about rogue Nazi scientists escaping the Allies weren't without precedent. In fact, the most notorious of all German scientists seemed to disappear into thin air at the end of World War II. His name was Hans Kammler.

Kammler was regarded as the greatest evil genius in all the Reich. Researcher Henry Stevens documents that Kammler operated "in the Skoda Works at Pilsen in what is now the Czech Republic. During World War Two, this region had been annexed by Germany and was part of the Greater German Reich… Skoda did many things and must be thought of like one of the major technical industrial manufacturing firms in the USA today." [65]

Since Kammler spoke Czech, the location was perfect for him.

The mystery of Hans Kammler stems in part from the silence of the Nuremberg trials regarding his whereabouts and role. He was barely mentioned. This is rather odd since he was the highest ranking official outside of Hitler's 'cabinet' and eventually took over responsibility for all top secret weapons research. Even more provocative: Kammler had as many as 14 million people working for him, many of them Jews and slave laborers. This is according to Tom Agoston in his book, *Blunder! How the U.S. Gave Away Nazi Super Secrets to Russia* (Mead & Co.)[66] Kammler took over the V2 project from Walter Dornberger, (who later worked for 15 years at Bell Helicopter; we will meet him again in a later chapter).

Additionally, in January 1945, only months before the war's end, Kammler took over all of Germany's aerospace programs. On the surface, it would certainly seem that finding Kammler would have been one of the most important of all post-war efforts for which the Allies should have pulled out all the stops. Nevertheless, Kammler simply vanished. Furthermore, the Allies didn't seem bothered by his *missing in action*. This can only mean one thing: the threat Kammler posed had been neutralized. But how?

> In April 1945, Kammler disappeared. Some reports suggest that he was assassinated by a member of his staff, acting on orders from Himmler not to allow personnel with detailed knowledge of the rocket program to fall into Allied hands. Others indicate that he may have been killed in action or committed suicide somewhere around Prague. The fact that

> his exact fate is unknown and that his body was never recovered led to some speculation that he continued his work in the United States after the war, where it is alleged he worked on anti-gravity and other advanced devices.[67]

Then again, could it be that Kammler was one of those ‘rogue’ Nazi scientists clandestinely operating a laboratory in a faraway land? Much has been made of Kammler’s *Bell Project* by Joseph Farrell in several of his books, with one devoted to the topic (*The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, 2006). It is conjectured today that the Nazi Bell may have been a time machine, or even more likely, an experiment to create a *wunderwaffe* (wonder weapon), drawing massive energies directly from the ‘aether’. This theorized ‘atmosphere’ exists throughout the cosmos by many physicists including American Nickola Tesla (a person upon which Book one elaborates).

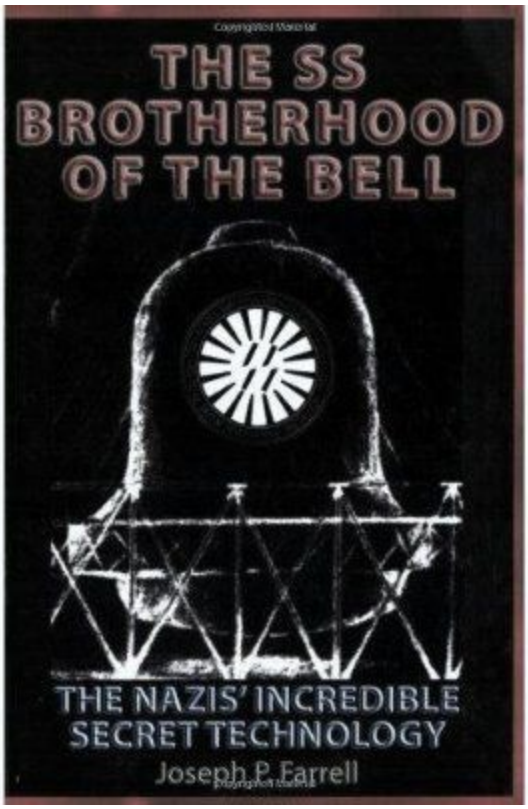


Figure 6 - Joseph P. Farrell, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*

Farrell exposes the depth of Nazi research and the role of Kammler, including ordering the death of his entire research team in an apparent attempt to keep the Allies ignorant of his spectacular experiments. As

dramatic as this sounds, it seems that overestimating what Kammler represents is no easy task:

> Indeed, one would have to add to Agoston's list, for such a Soviet general [who could have the impact of a Kammler] would also have had to be in charge of the coordination of all the most post-nuclear and super-secret advanced scientific research and black projects in the entire Soviet Union. It is thus in the person of SS *Obergruppenführer* Hans Kammler that all the lines meet: the Buna factory and slave labor of the camps, exploited for grizzly medical experimentation and labor in the secret underground laboratories and production facilities, the atom bomb project, and… even more horrendous and monstrous aircraft and weapons development. If there was a gold mine of information, then it was available in the blueprints and files that were locked in Kammler's vaults, or even more securely in his brain. It is this fact and Kammler's extraordinary dossier that make his post-war fate even more problematical. [68]

Alex Constantine provides ‘insider information’ from Albert Speer, architect and Hitler’s head of *new weapons development* who distrusted and envied the man responsible for constructing the mass murder center at Auschwitz. Constantine quotes Speer: “Himmler heaped assignments on him and brought him into Hitler’s presence at every opportunity. Rumors were afloat that Himmler was trying to build up Kammler to be my successor. I found Kammler absolutely brilliant, yet cold, a ruthless schemer, a fanatic in pursuit of his goal, as carefully calculating as he was unscrupulous.”[69]

So how did Kammler ‘just disappear’? Why is there no record of his whereabouts? Why didn’t the Allies care about where Kammler was? Had Kammler made a deal with the Americans? Or did he, like Farrell imaginatively hints, jump into the Nazi Bell and fly to a different place and time?

The reality: many Nazis were never called to account; and like Kammler, seemed to disappear into thin air - *or the aether* - to leverage the metaphor a bit more precisely.

To sum up Farrell’s thesis regarding the association of the Nazi saucer stories and their exclusion from the more popular space alien theory of UFOs, we quote Farrell directly, in his own words:

> 1. We now propose that the sudden appearance of Nazi suction-saucer [jet propulsion] stories during this crucial period of Cold War tensions was not accidental, but an international psychological operation… designed to do two things:
>
> 2. On the American side, to convince the Soviets that the alleged Nazi technology fell into American hands, and thus, that America had a preponderant technological advantage in air power over the Soviets;
>
> On the Nazi side, the purpose was… two-fold yet again:
>
> a) To obfuscate the real story of suction saucer development and,
>
> b) To obfuscate the development of genuine field propulsion technology, namely, the Bell.[70] [Comment mine]

To unpack this a bit: from the American point-of-view, it was necessary to cover-up the UFO story to either (1) keep the Soviets guessing about what our military capabilities really were; OR (2) keep Americans from discovering that certain super-smart Nazi inventors were, like mad scientists, still at large in the world experimenting with aeronautical technologies which threatened our country. Either possibility demanded disinformation be concocted by U.S. intelligence and adopted by the American public. For those who subscribe to this latter point of view, it seems clear this 'necessity' would keep our intelligence services busy for at least the first 15 years after World War II. On the other hand, if we seriously entertain the notion that 'captured' Nazis had covenanted continued belligerence - albeit acting as scientific 'double agents' - then we can grasp why high-profile German scientists, ostensibly working for the American government after World War II (as they did at NASA), promoted extraterrestrials as the explanation for flying saucers. This would remove rogue Nazi scientists from suspicion and give 'hidden Nazi scientists' time to develop their more advanced propulsion systems based on 'anti-gravity' or electromagnetism.[71] If the UFO stories are to be believed, these flights might have occurred as early as the 'Washington Flap', if not five years earlier at Roswell. Given the amazing and still esteemed German track record for rapid accomplishment of many engineering feats, not the least of which is advanced weaponry, it is hardly implausible to hold this theory. Given the alternative - that being a *plethora*

of concealed visits from outer space aliens - one might even say the Nazi explanation ‘stands to reason’ while the alien theory is a bit too ‘far out’.

For those who still believe in the extraterrestrial hypothesis, it is nonetheless instructive to recognize this fact: postulating extraterrestrials as responsible for the flying saucer ‘invasion’ didn’t commence because we lacked any evidence of terrestrial origins. Just the opposite is true. *It originated because we knew there were terrestrial explanations.* We just couldn’t afford, from a national security standpoint, *to admit them*. It was much safer to deny them altogether or to suggest UFOs evinced benign entities visiting us from somewhere else in our solar system (or beyond the reach of our sun’s gravity completely). Given the choice between space men and rogue German technologists, we choose the aliens - *since highly advanced aliens wouldn’t dare annihilate us while the Nazis just might!*

The devil we don’t know, in this case, seems safer than the devil we do. It would seem such extraterrestrial belief is the real leap of faith.

Not that the preferred approach for our government was to openly advocate the extraterrestrial explanation. It preferred then (and now) to deny them outright. But when denial was no longer possible, dismissing UFOs as alien visitors out for a Sunday drive was okay. After all, the worst thing our military could do was admit we had ‘non-friendly’ flying saucers playing keep-away in our air space.

Simply put: the whole story smacks of an intelligence operation. Never mind that it spawned a ‘good alien hypothesis’ to explain the *supposed* evolution of humankind. Likewise, we should also dismiss the fact our government supposed an anti-biblical cosmology closely tied to the occult ‘religion’ the Nazis advocated in their inner circles. It was all done in the name of national security and keeping our citizens calm. However ironic, and at odds with its cherished founding principle of the separation of religion from politics, *the American government found it politically necessary to create an extraterrestrial religion, even if it hadn’t really participated in developing rituals and ‘a holy book’ to go along with it.* [72]

Certainly, there are many prominent people today who are true believers in extraterrestrials. One only need listen to Edgar Mitchell, former Apollo Astronaut and New Age explicator extraordinaire. Constantine offers this

not-so-supportive jibe: “The ubiquitous ‘aliens,’ he [Mitchell] insists, are at the heart of the federal UFO cover-up, visitors from a civilization ‘a few million or even a few billion years older than we are.’ His book *The Way of the Exploder* is chock-a-block with the astronaut’s rambling metaphysical cover stories.”[73]

We will discuss Mitchell and his enthusiasm for extraterrestrials later in this book.

The UFO Connection to the JFK Conspirators

Indeed, the intelligence connection and the UFO controversy plunge us much deeper into mystery and intrigue than we've gone so far.

Throughout this book, we will explore the *intelligence angle* on almost all the topics we tackle. Consequently (and undeniably), the possibility of disinformation looms large on almost every one of our chosen subjects. Nevertheless, as the scope and depth of our study will convey, the stunning linkages between the many astounding issues seems, on their own account, to accord credibility to the conclusions we offer on these topics. After all, how can the coincidences be accidental when there are so many to mention and they reinforce one another? Nowhere is this more evident than the links between the alleged conspirators portrayed in Oliver Stone's award-winning movie, *JFK* (1991)[74] and America's 'first episode in its ongoing UFO adventure series'. To pick up on this story line, we return to Alex Constantine's discussion on CIA intelligence operations surrounding UFOs and their connection to John F. Kennedy's destiny in Dallas.

Moviegoers will remember the odd and sometimes reprehensible characters portrayed in Stone's telling of the story. There was Clay Shaw, played by Tommy Lee Jones, who was indicted by New Orleans District Attorney James Garrison, played by Kevin Costner. Shaw was the focus of Garrison's 'conspiracy to commit murder' case. There was also the 'former FBI agent' Guy Banister portrayed by Ed Asner, who supervised Lee Harvey Oswald during his New Orleans' anti-communist activist days, the summer before the assassination. And of course, Oscar-nominated actor Gary Oldman's *Oswald* captured that 'deer-in-the-headlights' moment when Oswald realized that he, at least in Stone's account, was *set up* to be the fall guy in the assassination plot.

According to another researcher Constantine cites (author Paris Flammonde), a fateful meeting transpired years before Dallas, during World War II between this same Clay Shaw (who had been the wartime *aide de camp* to General Charles Thrasher) and two prominent Nazi-cum-American scientists. After his service to Thrasher, Shaw became deputy chief of staff at a Nazi prisoner-of-war camp. It was there Shaw met Werner von Braun and Walter Dornberger along with 150 other Germany scientists who would soon

be ushered out of Germany in the Nazi scientist migration scheme known as ‘Operation Paperclip’ (see Chapter 6). Shaw maintained this relationship over the years “through their mutual connection with the Defense Industrial Security Command, or D.I.S.C., an operational arm of the counterespionage division of the FBI.”[75] And then we learn of the UFO connection.

When Shaw was arrested by District Attorney Garrison years later in New Orleans, who should Shaw call but one infamous fellow named Fred Crisman? For those readers who don’t recognize the name, it is Crisman who is associated with the UFO sightings barely predating the Roswell incident of 1947 in the so-called ‘Maurey Island affair’ near Tacoma, Washington. So we must ask, “Why was Shaw calling Crisman? What relationship could they possibly have? Is it just coincidental Shaw knew von Braun, Dornberger, the details of Operation Paperclip, and regarded Crisman (the UFO observer) as a friend who could help when a federal prosecutor was hot on his trail?”

The story surrounding the Maurey Island UFO affair alleges that Crisman found ‘slag fragments’ of supposed downed saucers which he handed off to two intelligence officers from Wright Patterson Air Force Base, the Ohio military base at the heart of the Air Force’s investigation of the entire UFO episode. Unfortunately, these officers were killed when their plane crashed; giving rise to speculation the aircraft had been sabotaged. Additionally, please note: the speculation never culminated in any satisfactory resolution to the story.

According to Constantine, quoting Anthony Kimery an investigative reporter from Washington D.C., Crisman “knew a lot more about the aircraft ‘witnesses’ saw than he acknowledged - aircraft some intelligence sources believe were hybrids of those designed early that decade by Nazi engineers who were brought to the U.S. under Project Paperclip.”[76] UFOs and Nazis; like peas in a pod.

Then there is the appearance of Guy Bannister in the same storyline. Constantine comments:

> In 1947, Banister reported the discovery of a ‘flying disk’ in Twin Falls, Idaho, according to a July 11, 1947 Associated Press report. The saucer measured roughly 30.5’ across, and “appeared to have been turned out by a machine,” possibly as a prototype [according to Banister].

> Suspects in the John Kennedy assassination had a pronounced knack for stumbling onto the “unexplained” flying disks.
>
> It is a commentary on the UFO/mind control/intelligence connection that the counterterrorist unit of the FBI already tied to Shaw and Crisman, Division Five - the Nazi division - also employed Guy Banister, and has been largely responsible for the development of a form of remote brain manipulation known as Ultrasonic Intra-Cerebral Control.

So once again, the plot thickens. Now the subject of *mind control* surfaces. The author imagines the reader grumbling about how we’ve jumped from the frying pan into the fire. UFOs. The JFK assassination. Mind control. Should we put on our tin-foil hats? There seems to be no obvious correlation amongst these amazing stories and their surprising facts. But can we connect the dots? Or is this just another fantasy offered up by hyper-active minds fond of conspiracy theories? On the other hand, could these astounding connections be better explained as evidence of ‘disinformation’ spun by master intelligence officers with a checkered past?

Roswell and the Reich

If the reader will allow me to connect the timing of Bannister's story to the Roswell incident - the seminal UFO incident raging in the press commenced a mere three days earlier - it seems extraordinary to contemplate that the only connection between these incidents is purely an 'alien UFO encounter'. As Farrell points out convincingly in his book *Roswell and the Reich*, when the facts are painstakingly evaluated, the evidence for a 'spacecraft' manned by extraterrestrials is choosing the least likely explanation. This may be the story officials want us to believe. However, it remains unwedded to almost all of the best-known facts.

Even Nick Redfern, a noted UFologist (and an author we will turn to later in this book) recommends Farrell's carefully written work by citing the 'publishers blurb' in his blog on February 10, 2010.

> In Roswell and the Reich alternative science and history researcher Joseph P. Farrell presents a very different scenario of what crashed in Roswell, New Mexico in July 1947, and why the U.S. military has continued its cover-up to this day. By means of a meticulous review of the best-known Roswell research from both UFO-ET advocates and skeptics alike, as well as some not-so-well known Roswell research, Farrell presents a fascinating case sure to disturb both ET believer and skeptic alike, namely, that what crashed may have been representative of an independent postwar Nazi power, an extraterritorial Reich monitoring its old enemy, America, and its continuing developments of the very technologies it confiscated from Germany at the end of the war.[77]

Farrell's book is not bed-time reading (his books seldom are). This one is particularly difficult because it reads like a detailed legal brief, examining the testimony meticulously, invalidating witnesses, and ruling out evidence with the precision of a scalpel. Nevertheless, after one has plodded through it, the conclusion is compelling. There are no reasons to postulate an extraterrestrial event at all. There were no bodies - and even if there were, there are no logical arguments to suppose them extraterrestrial. While there were undeniable sightings and even extraordinary artifacts (various metals with no similitude to anything experimental in western laboratories, let alone *in use*),

there was no solid rationale to suppose anything other than a terrestrial explanation. Furthermore, the probability of infiltration by military intelligence personnel into the Roswell research community was undeniable. The most significant and credible authors *all had intelligence backgrounds*! Was this a case of the foxes being left to guard the hen house? If so, perhaps they knew where the bodies were buried - except the alien bodies it seems.

> There are consequently two datasets that any theory of the Roswell Incident must seek to rationalize: (1) the debris, the description of which is consistent across time and various witnesses as has been seen in the previous pages, and (2) the bodies, the description of which is not consistent over time nor over several witnesses in spite of claims to the contrary, and moreover whose witnesses have in turn either been impeached, or shown to be based upon second-hand-and-dead man's testimony in many instances, or whom other data has revealed were unlikely to have been in the area in order actually to see such bodies. [78]

In summary, any theory that seeks to explain Roswell must answer two incontrovertible facts: There were extraordinary, unknown metals with mysterious properties discovered on July 8th, 1947 at Roswell that absolutely originate from a source outside of America. Secondly, the evidence Farrell recounts argues that no bodies were found at the crash site. If intelligent beings were flying these crafts, they were guiding them remotely. (Visions of remote-controlled V1 and V2 rockets hitting London suburbs come to mind.)

Farrell progresses toward concluding the matter with this statement:

> By July of 1947, there were abundant clues that were beginning to be pieced together by American intelligence that Nazism had survived not only in isolated enclaves, but that it was an organized international force. And by the mid-1950s, it was abundantly clear to the U.S. Air Force that those Nazis had continued to research independently their most extraordinary projects and sciences, and that they were making penetrations into the most sensitive areas of the American military-industrial-intelligence complex.[79]

Likewise, from the first reactions of Roswell in 1947 to the Robertson Panel in 1953, not only Farrell but Constantine assures us that the experts had an agenda to keep these military secrets 'under wraps'. It was their concerted

opinion to *educate* the public in what the experts wanted it to believe - for the sake of national interests. Keeping the public calm was best achieved by distributing the disinformation of outer space visitations - a position beginning in 1960 the government would reverse. Meanwhile, better to keep the whole possibility of Nazis buried and control the masses however it could. At the time, inventing an alien religion for the kooks was not a bad option Therefore, The Robertson Panel concluded:

> "This education could be accomplished by mass media, [especially] television, motion pictures and popular articles." The panel advised that mental health professionals familiar with mob psychology should design the "education" program. It also recommended that UFO organizations should be *surveilled* "because of their potentially great influence on mass thinking if widespread sightings should occur. The apparent irresponsibility and the possible use of such groups for subversive purposes should be kept in mind." [Comment and emphasis in original][80]

As a result of these recommendations UFO enthusiasts would be watched carefully. Who knew how much trouble they might stir up? After all, the Panel concluded that the so-called *Foo-fighters* experienced by Allied pilots toward the end of World War II were probably nothing more than an exotic form of technology developed by the Nazis and/or Japanese with no real risk to national security. No less an authority than the famous combat pilot Jimmy Doolittle (known for the 1942 Tokyo raid) cited this conclusion in his report requested by the Panel.[81]

So it was agreed then: it's best to keep the public in the dark while we play catch up with the Nazis - whoever they are and wherever they might be.

The Possible Base of Operations

So the obvious question arises, “Where were these operations conducted, if they really were the result of rogue Nazi activity after World War II? That is, apart from captured Nazis post-World War II now working within the military programs of the U.S. or Soviet Union (which some have suggested was a game of ‘our Nazis are better than your Nazis!), is there any evidence that points to the location accommodating this potentially threatening activity?

There are two alternatives frequently discussed: One location is barely possible while the other location is firmly accepted with a mountain of historical data proving it a safe haven for Nazis. We will consider them both in order.

First up, we examine the fantastic possibility that at the end of the War, a German flotilla of U-boats headed to Antarctica and set up shop in an acknowledged German naval base there.

Henry Stevens, a notable researcher and author of ‘what happened to Nazi technological inventions’, ‘secret German naval bases’ and German flying saucers, addresses this question regarding ‘the where’ with some compelling details in his book, *Hitler’s Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science and Technology.*

According to Stevens, the Allies believed many Nazi scientists survived the war and established themselves in one or both Polar Regions, residing under the ice to remain covert. It seems evidence soon arose inferring Nazis were alive and operating with total latitude. This possibility led the U.S. military to take action. Stevens comments:

> The U.S. military spent huge amounts of time, money and manpower in the years following the war in secret missions, flying over the Arctic. This is no secret now since we have the testimony of Col. Wendele Stevens who took part in these operations while serving in the USAF. In these operations, B-29 bombers were outfitted with the latest electromagnetic sensing gear and flown all over the American and [apparently Stevens is speaking generally of ‘North American’ and specifically] Canadian Arctic allegedly looking for “flying saucers.” According to Wendele, when they were sighted, they were filmed and

> the film and recorded measurements were spirited way to Washington D.C. Nothing was ever heard of them afterward.[82] [Comment mine]

However, the most intriguing location is at the opposite side of the earth - the South Pole where many Nazis may have been holed up for over five decades, creating their own subterranean ice society. Stevens provides this recap:

> UFologists are always describing UFOs as originating in Antarctica. Certainly, the theme is familiar to everyone through science fiction movies. Some think Atlantis may be buried deep under the ice. Many nations currently have research bases in Antarctica. Their German base at *Neuschwabenland* was active, at least on some level, during the Second World War and may have served as a last refuge for Nazi die-hards after the conflict.
>
> Not only do these theories exist but there are all sorts of combinations of the theories mentioned above. Did the Germans locate their base in Antarctica because the Ahnenerbe, the SS racial-archeological organization, found evidence of a lost civilization? Or did the Germans or any of the other nationalities involved in Antarctica make contact with an extraterrestrial presence located on that continent, a theory recently revamped by Dr. Michael E. Salla?[83]

To unpack this passage, we should point out there is a geological rationale suggesting how humans could survive, albeit a Spartan existence, at the South Pole. Stevens explains there rests a very deep warm water lake, heated geothermically, and named Lake Vostok with a depth of over 2,000 feet, 300 miles from the exact spot of the South Pole. The lake maintains hospitable temperatures in the 60s despite being covered in places by an ice dome reaching 2,500 feet in height. Volcanic activity heats up the water continuously and provides a natural means to generate energy.

The lake is unique for another very distinct reason: it is the only lake known to be overseen by the *National Security Agency*.[84] Why would a U.S. security agency, namely the NSA, care about what is going on at the South Pole? Isn't it a bit south of our border? Some researchers suggest the reason lies in the fact this area contains *far more* than ice, snow, and unexpectedly warm water. The intrigue dates back to the famed but short-lived expedition of Admiral Byrd in 1946 where a dramatic magnetic anomaly was discovered measuring "1,000 nanoteslas of variance with the surrounding

vicinity. One scientist jumped on this publicly and began to debunk its significance but the fact remains that the best and most probably [sic] answer as to the origin of this vast magnetic disturbance is the presence of a massive amount of metal. Metal as in a buried city."[85] Then Stevens draws out the enigma associated with this discovery (which happens to be a favorite Nazi myth, the so-called 'Secret Doctrine'): "This brings us right back to the mystery-school of Antarctica. Is this metal the remains of Atlantis? Is it the underground city said by some to have been built by the Germans, Neu-Berlin? Is this an extraterrestrial base? With the NSA involved, the only thing for certain is that we won't be told the answer to this mystery anytime soon…"[86] And since the NSA is still there, another thing that is equally certain: we will continue to speculate about it.

To top off the fantastic story, another researcher cited by Stevens suggests that the U.S. finally had had enough trouble from the location and used a new type of atomic weapon, a 'boring atomic weapon' at the very time of the Iraq invasion (March 19-20, 2003) serving as a perfect cover for such a covert operation at Earth's 'bottom'. While Stevens doesn't endorse the view of researcher Christian Saal, he does agree the seismological data from this site, coinciding as it did with the opening salvo in Iraq (aka 'Shock and Awe'), begs the question of what was then happening at the South Pole, especially given its mysterious history and ongoing scrutiny of the NSA. However, because we aren't planning to explicate this theory further nor do we intend to observe the 'march of the penguins', we will head north a ways, but remain safely in the southern hemisphere.

Argentina and the Escape of the German Reich

So much for the extraordinary answer to the question of 'where' the flying saucer 'base' may have been. Now we turn to the much more conventional, and *certain* location of post-war Nazi activity operating independent of U.S. or Soviet control: South America. With its many German newspapers, German street names, and 'Teutonic' influence over the past one hundred years, there are few if any skeptics alive today who continue arguing Nazis never made it there.

Indeed, in the Introduction we recited a number of news accounts from major 'news outlets' confirming the 'advance planning' of Martin Bormann facilitating the placement of Nazi industrialists into dozens of countries at the end of the War. Beginning in 1944, Broman ordered experts from the various key German corporations dispersed along with hundreds of millions in financing. Remember: Bormann was no small lieutenant. He was head of the party, the *Reichsleiter (second in command to Hitler)*, who all but took over for the Führer days before Hitler's alleged (and occasionally debated) suicide in 'the Bunker' on April 30, 1945.

Readers are no doubt familiar with the musical and subsequent movie *Evita* (1996) starring Madonna as Eva Perón, wife of the Argentinian dictator Juan Perón. Readers may be less aware that Perón was strongly fascist in orientation and was cozy with the Nazis before being forced, under political pressure by the Americans only two months before the end of the war, to declare war on Germany (March, 1945). Later Perón asserted the declaration of war was a lie with an ulterior motive. Once identified as an official 'Ally', Argentinian planes would be allowed into Europe and could serve as 'useful purpose'; namely, flying Nazis out of Europe and to Argentina where they could continue the geopolitical fight for Fascism.

Joseph P. Farrell, in his book *Nazi International* cites Argentinian author Uki Goña who interviewed Perón extensively and provides lengthy quotations in his book about 'The Real ODESSA' - the term used to describe the 'ratlines' that moved thousands of Nazis out of Germany and into various South American countries, most notably Argentina, Chile, Brazil, Paraguay, and Bolivia. Argentina was the most frequent destination for the Nazis - since the government was so friendly toward fascists, it was a natural hideout.

> This false declaration of war had a clear purpose: “We hadn’t lost contact with Germany, despite the break in diplomatic relations,” Perón would say in 1967. “Things being so we received an ususual [sic] request. Even though it may seem contradictory at first, Germany benefits from our declaration of war: if Argentina becomes a belligerent country, it has the right to enter Germany when the end arrives; this means that our planes and ships would be in a position to render a great service. At that point we had the commercial planes of the FAMA line (Argentine Merchant Air Fleet) and the ships we had bought from Italy during the war. That is how a great number of people were able to come to Argentina.”[87]

‘Air Argentina’ was not the only means by which the Nazis got to Buenos Aires. The accounts of daring U-boat excursions abound; and indeed, constitute some of the most intriguing stories of escape at the end of the war. However, the assistance of the Argentine Merchant Air Fleet is by far the most feasible method to transport the thousands of persons, documents, and perhaps, advanced technological ‘devices’ to South America. The stories of fantastic tunnels running beneath the towering peaks of Chile are equaled only by the tales of remote cities cut out of the jungles of Argentina, Bolivia, and Paraguay to conceal the secret weapons of the Reich. Apparently, if bank robbers Butch Cassidy and the Sundance Kid could hide out in South America, Nazi war criminals could too.

The Escape of Martin Bormann

How Martin Bormann, the mastermind of the Nazi escape, made his way to South America from Hitler's bunker sometime after April 21-30, 1945 remains a highly contentious subject today - a controversy which began over 30 years ago with a book entitled *Aftermath*: *The Final Search for Martin Bormann*, by Hungarian Ladislas Farago. Most authorities regard Farago an excellent author and historian. Indeed, Farago's book on General George Patton was much acclaimed and became the basis for the movie, *Patton* (1970). His book, *The Broken Seal*, was one of the background books for the movie, *Tora Tora Tora* (1970). However, a few scholars dispute his storytelling when it comes to where Bormann wound up after the War.[88] And yet, his version of the facts may have been doubted simply because 'truth is sometimes stranger than fiction.'

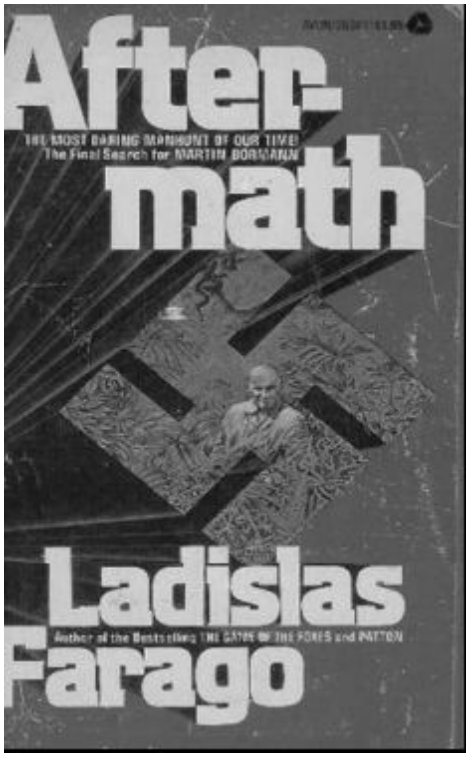


Figure 7 – *Aftermath,* by Ladislas Farago

We know that Farago conducted many well interviews as documented in his book on Bormann. He also included Argentinian intelligence documents in his account. Despite this, a British 'historian' Stephen Dorril, in his book, *MI6: Inside the Covert World of Her Majesty's Secret Intelligence Service* (2000) called Farago "the most successful *disinformer* or dupe" concerning the presence of Nazis in South America.[89] To him it seemed the notion thousands of Germans riddled with the reprehensible Nazi political philosophy had migrated to South America was just too incredible to accept. Throw in the accusations against the Catholic Church for playing a pivotal role in the escape and many academics contend we have descended into the realm of insanity. Then again we should remember that with Dorril we have yet another intelligence agent writing 'history'. Was he telling the truth or just contributing more disinformation to the already heaping pile of incongruous truths?

Regardless, as time goes by, the evidence mounts that Bormann was a distinct presence in Argentina and later on, in Bolivia. Joseph Farrell even provides a bank statement facsimile for the joint bank account held by Bormann and Perón cleared by David Rockefeller's Chase Manhattan Bank.

Another colorful and noted historian (majoring on the occult) is Peter Levenda who offers this summation of the Catholic connection and Ladislas' account in his book, *Unholy Alliance*.

> What does seem fantastic, however, is the assistance given to many of these men by what was always believed to be their sworn enemy: the Roman Catholic Church. While Ladislas Farago - mentioned in the Introduction to this [Levenda's] book - must be credited with bringing this story to worldwide attention, it is useful to know that, since then, it has been corroborated many times over by other authors.
>
> Why would the Catholic Church help the very men who had vowed to eradicate it, who had participated in pagan rituals designed to replace those of Christianity, who worshipped Baldur and Thor and Freya in candlelit ceremonies in the forests and castles of Bavaria, Thuringia, Westphalia, and the other German *Länder*? Men who had caught and

> imprisoned thousands of Catholic and Protestant clergymen, sent them to the camps, and executed them in cold blood?[90]

Levenda supposes that the quid pro quo was the expected future alliance between the two (Fascism and Catholicism) to fight ‘godless communism’. Others, like evangelical author Dave Hunt, argued a more intriguing case. [91] Hunt contends (arguing from both historical and biblical rationales) the Catholic Church and Fascism shared the view humankind should not be permitted the liberal system of self-government known as *democracy* - for this system inevitably leads to chaos! To Hunt the Catholic Church is ‘Mystery Babylon’ - the whore of Babylon, who is drunk with the blood of the Saints.[92] To the Roman Catholic mind, says Hunt, Fascism was merely an evil means to a necessary end. It was a convenient albeit evil way to return political government back to Theocracy where it originated and place authoritarian rule back in the hands of the Church. Just as the priesthood of Catholicism had devised an uneasy governing alliance with authoritarian monarchists for over a thousand years, it seemed that teaming with another authoritarian form of government - Fascism in this case - might be the mandated toll reseating the Roman Church back in the political driver’s seat.

Levenda hints the same motive was in play when discussing Hitler’s courtship of the German Church:

> Hitler very carefully sought to cultivate Christian (and especially Catholic) support for the Party as they remained a substantial voting bloc within the country. Indeed, the Catholic Center Party played a pivotal role in *Reichstag*, elections that catapulted Hitler to power. And just as he wooed the financial support of leading industrialists in contradiction to his personal beliefs concerning the evils of that “Jewish invention,” Capitalism, he also courted the powerful Catholic and other Christian lobbies in the country. He knew he could not afford to alienate them entirely from his program, at least not until after he had won the war, for this reason he occasionally found it valuable to attack occultism and *völkisch* paganism in his speeches, even while encouraging it among his entourage and condoning its manifestation in the SS.

Perhaps we will never really know why the Vatican felt it was in their best interests to provide an escape path for the Nazis. But one thing is certain: the

power quest makes for some strange bedfellows. In the next chapter, the author will provide newly available information concerning the ‘ratlines’ as it has been taken up in a brand new book by Peter Levenda with a specific focus on a fresh trail of evidence exploring the possible escape of the Führer himself, Adolph Hitler.

Conclusion - Nazi Show-offs or Just Show and Tell?

So it is that thousands of Nazis and their technologies escaped Europe and made their way to the Americas. The argument that rogue German scientists found it advantageous to demonstrate their extraordinary new flying machines to frighten their American adversaries surely seems far-fetched. But the depth of analysis provided by numerous researchers, only a few of which are mentioned here, hints strongly otherwise. Something was clearly afoot, or more accurately, in the skies overhead indicating that we hadn't heard the last of the Nazis, their magnificent if not ardently mischievous and misdirected scientists, and their amazing flying machines.

However, while the source of flying saucers in the U.S. may be debated - whether they were truly German in origin, came from beyond the stars, or didn't exist at all - there is no doubt that dozens of the *worst war criminals came to the United States* as the special guests of the American government. As a result, America would never be the same again.

CHAPTER TWO:

HOW THE UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT HELPED NAZIS INFILTRATE AMERICA

[Imperiled Civilization's] "United efforts have ground the German war machine to fragments. But the struggle has left Europe a liberated yet prostrate land where a demoralized society struggles to survive. These are the fruits of the sinister forces that sit with these defendants in the prisoner's dock… What makes this inquest significant is that these prisoners represent ***sinister influences that will lurk in the world long after their bodies have returned to dust."***

Robert Jackson's "Opening Statement" at the Nuremburg Trial

"We knew what we did. It was absolutely necessary that we used every son of a b---- as long as he was an anti-communist."

Harry Rositzke, CIA-Russia expert

[Speaking of German intelligence officer, Reinhard Gehlen]

"There are few archbishops in espionage. He's on our side and that's all that matters. Besides, one needn't ask him to one's club".

Allen Dulles, CIA Director under President Eisenhower

The Paranoia of Post-War America

Looking back fifty years, it is hard to imagine the paranoia America felt regarding the Soviet Union. The records of the conflict, including key witnesses that lived through these tense moments, tell us we were within hours of an all-out nuclear war. Jacque Kennedy related her conversation with husband and President John Kennedy during those horrific October days in 1962: “Don’t send me anywhere. I want to be with you at the White House. We will die together with the children.”[93]

The Cold War has now been over for twenty-three years (dating from the fall of the Berlin Wall, November 9, 1989) with America the clear victor. But at the end of World War II, American leadership believed that we would soon be at war again - this time, with those revolutionary Marxists.[94] This air of suspicion and mindset of mistrust motivated outrageously irrational and sometimes illegal behaviors. Unfortunately, these actions were so horrific that the perpetrators of these activities ensured the cover-up continued for decades afterward. Indeed, what transpired was so contemptible and far-reaching that its legacy and secrecy linger even today. It isn’t a question of whether the actions of our governmental leaders were unconstitutional; they were unconscionable. As we delve into the details, the reader will be shocked and horrified. But the truthfulness of these facts now appears no longer open to serious debate.

Why Did We Want the Nazis in America?

In the aftermath of War in Europe, beginning in 1945 and continuing for several years thereafter, certain American leaders determined that the only way to keep our population safe from the threat of Soviet Communism was to employ the intelligence expertise and engineering genius of thousands of Nazis who nearly defeated the Allies. It is generally perceived today that if the war had continued six months longer, the tide would have turned. The Germans had a series of secret weapons that were nearly ready to launch. It has been well documented that the Nazi government had tested the flight of its largest bomber, loaded with what would likely be an atomic weapon bound for New York City. New, more powerful rockets were almost ready to deploy against England. A jet-powered Messerschmitt (the Me-262) was already in service.[95] And as we explored in Chapter One, it was conceivable the Germans had a completely new order of flying machine not far from its deployment; namely, the *flying saucer.* At the very least, the so-called 'Foo-fighters' (little glowing balls of light, full of electro-magnetic energy) were already terrorizing Allied pilots. However, it wasn't only technology we wanted from the surviving Nazis. We wanted leadership and expertise which shared our fear and loathing for the Communists.

Figure 8 - The Messerschmitt Me-262, the First Operational Jet in Warfare

The most famous 'cooption' of German agents was the spy network of Reinhard Gehlen (1902-1979). Gehlen's Nazi organization spied on the

Soviets during World War II; aka the ‘Eastern front’. Once he was cleared of war crimes (mostly by ‘looking the other way’), Gehlen was established in his position by Allen Dulles (1893-1969); his usefulness to U.S. national security was viewed paramount. Dulles, the namesake of the Washington DC International Airport, was the dominating head of the CIA during the 1950s until fired by President Kennedy early in his administration in 1961. Dulles’ removal was ostensibly based on the failed ‘Bay of Pigs’ action against Fidel Castro and the CIA’s hidden agenda of forcing Kennedy’s hand to supply U.S. Air Force ‘air cover’ for the Cuban invasion (manned by Cuban nationals). This operation was actually planned during the Eisenhower administration. Upon Dulles’ removal, Kennedy vehemently told him he would “smash the CIA into a thousand pieces.”

Gehlen brought nearly all of his Nazi spy team intact into American intelligence. Given his previous loyalties, Dulles and Gehlen worked out what most would consider an amazing deal for Gehlen: he would provide intelligence on the Soviets to America as long as it was in the mutual interest of the United States AND the ‘new Germany’. Once ‘West’ Germany (as it would later be known) had been properly established and was stable, Gehlen’s organization would return to German sovereign control. This was an astonishing concession on Dulles’ part since Gehlen was intimately tied to the Nazi Hierarchy and had relationships reaching to the highest level.[96]

Dr. Richard Breitman, Professor of History American University and IWG Director of Historical Research, documents the now well-known facts about the amazing employment of Gehlen’s spy network after he chronicled the many notorious leaders of the German Reich, some of which had committed numerous nefarious activities and were nonetheless protected from prosecution by the Allies:

> The Nazi War Crimes Disclosure Act of 1998 initiated a search for information in classified American government records about the Holocaust and other war crimes committed by Nazi Germany or its allies. A second target of this law was information about any individuals with Nazi pasts who may have been used as intelligence sources and protected against prosecution after World War II. The Central Intelligence Agency has now [Breitman’s article was written in 2000] located and declassified files on a substantial number of

> individuals suspected of involvement in criminal activity for the Nazi regime or its allies and satellites. In other cases a CIA file on an individual contains evidence about criminal activity by others.
>
> Nineteen CIA "name files" being opened today represent the first significant products of this search within CIA records. One additional CIA file discussed here (the Hitler file) was opened in December 2000… Whose Files Are Now Declassified? The CIA and the IWG have tackled the most prominent individuals first: Adolf Hitler, Klaus Barbie, Adolf Eichmann, Josef Mengele, Heinrich Müller, and Kurt Waldheim. Another fourteen CIA name files involve individuals who served Nazi Germany, survived the war, were suspected of involvement in criminal Nazi or Nazi intelligence activities or had evidence of such activity by others, and came to the attention of American intelligence agencies after May 1945. Nine of the fourteen persons in this second tier had some contact with the West German intelligence organization established by General Reinhard Gehlen, which was initially under the control of the U. S. Army and was taken over in 1949 by the CIA. Later Gehlen's organization became the Bundesnachrichtendienst (BND), West Germany's foreign intelligence agency.[97]

Because he was the master-mind and the most powerful of all U.S. officials driving these decisions, Allen Dulles was the responsible party for this Nazi-American connection. Furthermore, his legacy extends to the obfuscation of the Warren Commission and perhaps, to the heart of the plot to assassinate President Kennedy. This point will be made several times in our study. Whether directly involved in the crime (he had both the *means* through his spy network and the *motive* after being fired from his position), he clearly participated in efforts to hide the truth *after the fact*. But what was his true culpability? As they say, *it's not just the crime - it's the cover-up.*

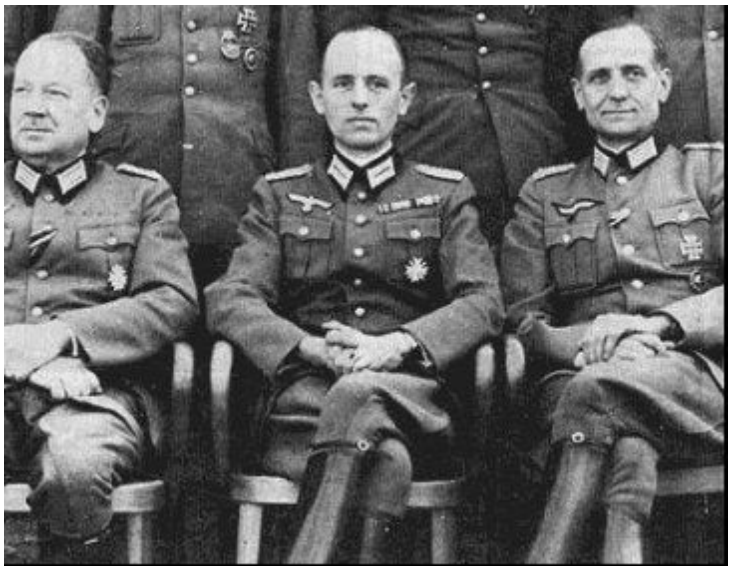


Figure 9 - Reinhard Gehlen during World War II

Joseph Farrell adds these details about the Gehlen organization in his book, *Nazi International*:

> Gehlen was, of course, the German general who was the head of all German military intelligence during the Nazi era for eastern Europe and the Soviet Union, the *Fremde Heere Ost* or "Foreign Armies East", and he was also, of course, the General who secretly negotiated with American OSS station chief in Zurich, Switzerland, Allen Dulles, to turn over to the Americans his entire network so long as the network remained in the day-today operational control of Gehlen himself!
>
> As I have noted in my previous book *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, this meant that before President Truman's signature was even dry on the National Security Act of 1947 which created the CIA, its civilian character and charter had already been severely compromised, since almost its entire operational and analytical "Soviet desk" was staffed by a bunch of "former" Nazis![98]

Most everyone now knows the story of Reinhard Gehlen; it's beyond dispute. But the details are still subject to debate. Some authors like Farrell propose the key to Gehlen's success was to overstate the Soviet threat flowing additional intelligence funding his direction giving him far greater power. As a result, Gehlen's team of former Nazi spies made the Cold War even more frigid.

America's Nazi Secret

As mentioned in the Introduction, attorney and author John Loftus worked for the Justice Department's Office of Special Investigations (OSI) in the 1970s. After leaving his post utterly frustrated, in 1982 he published *America's Nazi Secret* initially *as The Belarus Secret*.

The primary story of the book deals with the horrible tale of how over one million Jews, citizens of Belarus (also known as Byelorussia and 'White Russia') were annihilated by their fellow countrymen. The horrors of their killing were so unspeakable that Adolf Eichmann (1906-1962), the infamous father of 'the final solution' devised a different method for killing Jews. He reasoned that poison gas was far more humane.[99] Based on the murderous methods he witnessed in Belarus to eradicate Jews, he constructed gas chambers. The story of the Belarus monsters which killed over a million Jews constitutes the original crime. However, the primary thrust of Loftus' book relates to the cover-up by Americans who determined the Belarus killers would be useful in our fight against the Soviet Union. It is this cover-up, particularly those facts recently declassified during the last few years, we will study here.

A Highly Credible Source

We should note just how credible Loftus' account is. At that time of the first book's publishing, it was nominated for a Pulitzer Prize. Mike Wallace, the famous and well-regarded investigative reporter for CBS (who just passed away - in April 2012 at the time of this writing), won an Emmy Award for his television presentation based of Loftus' research. Loftus' original book went through five printings and was held as "a seminal work on Holocaust history and on corruption within the American intelligence community." However, his re-release of the book in early 2011 (fattened by myriad documents now declassified by the Departments of State, Justice, Central Intelligence, and military intelligence), is "invisible" according to Loftus. The author laments no one in the press is eager to review the book, much less wants to take up the subject anymore. It appears that the sleeping dog of U.S. sponsored Nazi incursion into America should continue to enjoy its rest. Loftus doesn't directly clarify whether this reticence is an intentional avoidance of the issue (because the Media has been 'bought' as most authors on this subject assert) - or simply because marketing decisions have been made which presume the American public couldn't care less about our shocking and sordid past.[100] Goodness knows either alternative is equally disturbing.

As a helpful overview and to quickly get the gist of his book, a particular passage concluding his new 2011 edition stands out:

> Over the years, however, the emphasis of the cover-up switched from protecting ongoing operations and agents to protecting the men who had smuggled the Nazis into the United States. [Frank] Wisner [one of Allen Dulles' Deputies at the Department of Justice] and his associates had violated several laws, including the Trading with the Enemy Act, and some statutes of limitations [that] did not run out until 1961, but there were other reasons for the persistence of the cover-up. The major one was the change in the international climate. The Belarus conspiracy was a product of the Cold War and confrontation between the United States and the Soviet Union. Rightly or wrongly, the American people and American policymakers were convinced that Stalin was determined to dominate the world and tailored their actions to meet the perceived threat. Anything that made trouble for the

> Russians was permissible, including the enlistment of Nazi collaborators. Critics were isolated as appeasers, enemies of the state, or, in the heyday of McCarthyism, “soft on communism.”[101]

Loftus measures the extent of America having ‘turned a blind eye’ to our government’s Nazi smuggling, by the fact that Eric Holder, currently Attorney General for President Obama, eulogized a former Deputy Assistant Attorney General, Mark Richard, in May 2009 at Richard’s funeral. Loftus says, “Richard was a despicably evil little man, and one who perpetrated a fraud on Congress, the CIA, Holocaust survivors and WWII veterans. It was he, more than any other, who protected Nazi war criminals living in America and obstructed justice for the victims of the Third Reich.” [102] Loftus provides his own post-mortem of Richards:

> Before his death in 2009, Mark Richard commissioned a 600-page classified report in which the Justice Department defended Richard's role in the failed “hunt” for Nazi war criminals in America. Of the 15,000 Nazi war criminals officially estimated to have lived in America, fewer than one hundred received any form of mild sanction from the Justice Department, and that at a staggering cost of more than a half-million dollars per case. Congress had delivered the money, but Justice never delivered the goods. Nazi hunting may have been the least effective program in Justice Department history. Mark Richard edited the Justice Department document to exonerate himself and to shift the blame to a lower-ranking bureaucrat, Allan Ryan, whom Richard accused of perjury and dishonesty. He devoted an entire chapter of the report to me, claiming that I was an amateur historian who “exaggerated” things about Nazis working for American intelligence. And then Richard made a fatal mistake. He told the truth, just a bit, but enough to sink his reputation.[103]
>
> Richard had been saying for 30 years that there never was any evidence America had helped smuggle Nazis into America. But in the end he finally admitted, “Well, maybe we did help just a little.” This admission opened the door for investigators and researches to peer into the actual documents and see how many Nazis came to America - and how thoroughly the Immigration Service, as well as Departments of Justice and State covered-up the process. We read:

Nazi Secrets was released, without any advance notice to the government, in November 2010 on Veteran's Day (although advance copies were sent to the *New York Times*, which may have provided an early warning to the Justice Department). That same week, someone took a copy of Richard's classified report out of the Justice Department safe and leaked it to the *Times*, which broke the story three days later. Now, instead of praising Mark Richard, the *Times* [finally and reluctantly] reported primarily that the Justice Department acknowledged that the U.S. government helped Nazis immigrate and then lied about it. That was the headline that ran all over the country. [104] [Clarification mine]

The New York Times and Its Role in the Cover-up

Loftus indicates not only was the American Government responsible for the Nazi smuggling, but today's bastion of liberal reporting, the *New York Times*, was on the payroll of the Government and had been ever since the 1930s, helping to shape public opinion; eventually downplaying the Nazi infestation during and after it occurred. *The Times* gladly played this role in exchange for 'scoops' from time-to-time on stories U.S. leadership elected to make public. For instance, before World War II, *The Times* frequently published favorable stories on Bolshevism and how well it was faring in bringing new hope to the people of Russia:

> There is no famine or actual starvation nor is there likely to be.
>
> – *New York Times*, Nov. 15, 1931, page 1
>
> There is no actual starvation or deaths from starvation but there is widespread mortality from diseases due to malnutrition.
>
> – *New York Times*, March 31, 1933, page 13
>
> You can't make an omelet without breaking eggs.
>
> – *New York Times*, May 14, 1933, page 18
>
> Any report of a famine in Russia is today an exaggeration or malignant propaganda.
>
> – *New York Times*, August 23, 1933 [105]

One of Loftus' most stupendous revelations: how much our Government knew about the holocaust and that the U.S. (and Britain) had such information at the outset of the War. He claims the Americans and the Brits received weekly reports on how many Jews were being killed - but decided that Jewish deaths were acceptable loses in the war effort. In other words, it was a conscious and calculated decision by the Allies that millions of Jewish lives were expendable.

Why would Americans make such a decision? As shocking as it seems to us today, the simple fact is that America's leaders no longer wanted the European Jews to come here. Jews had migrated safely to America for over 100 years. But by the 1920s, Congress wouldn't alter the immigration quotas to accommodate them. Furthermore, this wasn't purely an economic decision. The anti-Semitic feelings of American leadership were to blame.

[106] Additionally, it wasn't just the government that sat on this information. *The NY Times* chose to omit the fact countless Jews were perishing in Europe under Hitler's policies. Loftus asserts:

> *The New York Times* has a long history of deception by omission. During WWII, the Times omitted numerous reports of Nazi atrocities against Jews, and buried even the smallest mention of what we now call the Holocaust in its back pages. *The Times* has since acknowledged this as a major journalistic failure. During the post-war struggles that lead to the creation of the State of Israel, *Times'* reporting can best be described as neutral or in favor of the Arabs, perhaps because the owner of the paper had publicly declared that if Israel ever became a nation, he would "resign from the Jewish race."[107]

Not only did *The Times* fail to publish the truth about Bolshevism and the Holocaust, according to Loftus, it was a tool for the overthrow of the Allende government in Chile (1973) and the Mossadegh Democracy in Iran earlier (1953) - not to mention (which they didn't) the depth of the clandestine hiring of Nazi intelligence into our intelligence services[108] as described earlier in regards to the Gehlen organization.

Additionally, this artifact of the twentieth century continues to impact our country to this day. Loftus writes of the ongoing collusion between *the Times* and parties within our government which protect *The Muslim Brotherhood* - which is currently the 'organizing principle' in the so-called Arab Spring of 2011. Both Justice and *The Times* are unwilling to reveal to the American public that 'The Brotherhood' was originally established by the Nazis and employed soon after the war *by the British in an attempt to eliminate Israel early in its history*! Our British brethren chose this terrorist organization in order to protect England's oil interests, aligned as they were with the oil-producing Arab states:

> Someone has shredded the bulk of the CIA's entire file collection on the Muslim Brotherhood. There are only a few press clippings in the file. The *New York Times* continues to publish puff pieces about the wonderful Muslim Brotherhood as an old fashioned anti-colonial political group that may play a modern role in a future Egyptian government. The truth, as this [Loftus'] book reveals, is that the Muslim Brotherhood was the original Arab Nazi movement, working

> for British intelligence to crush the infant State of Israel. In the 1980s it was hired by American intelligence to recruit the Mujahedeen in Afghanistan, and it is now the parent organization of every Sunni terrorist group in the Middle East. A rather significant omission in *the Times'* coverage of the Muslim Brotherhood, wouldn't you say? [109] [Comment mine]

Loftus adds further details about how the Muslim Brotherhood was engaged to attack the State of Israel:

> Arab Nazis remain the only segment of the Third Reich that was never punished or even dismantled. After the war, the British Secret Service hired the Ikwahn terrorists, and used them as a fifth column in an attempt to destroy the infant state of Israel in 1948. When Gamal Nasser and the leftists took over Egypt, they banned this huge army of Arab Nazis now numbering nearly three quarters of a million strong. In the 1950s the same Robber Barons who helped fund and create the original Saudi Ikwahn, convinced their Saudi partners to take them back. The Saudis gladly accepted the Nazi refugees from the Egyptian Ikwahn and gave them citizenship.[110]

As Loftus documents in *America's Nazi Secret* (and in his book, *The Secret War Against the Jews*) the anti-Semitic war launched by the Nazis was aided and abetted all told for almost 80 years by the wealthiest British and American elite. Therefore, we can't rightly conclude Anti-Semitism constitutes an exclusive trait of only select racist (and deceased) Germans. It is a despicable hatred shared by humanity 'at large'. "History records the Muslim Brotherhood as the parent organization of every subsequent Sunni terrorist group from Hamas to the Palestinian Islamic Jihad. Mohammed Qutb, the brother of the chief Nazi propagandist, was the personal tutor of young Osama bin Laden. Although Congress and the CIA did not know it, the roots of the 9/11 tragedy began in the Eisenhower administration." [111]

Roosevelt's Fight within His Own Administration

When it comes to which political party is to blame for these crimes, Loftus is an equal-opportunity documenter of unlawful activities. He indicates Democrats as well as Republicans are both guilty of importing Nazi war criminals and hiding the truth from public view. "Robber Barons were both Republican and Democrats. In truth they only believed in profit. They were comprised of some of America's wealthiest families, including the Harrimans, Bushes, Rockefellers, DuPonts, and of course, the Dulleses. It is not an exaggeration to say that they funded both Hitler and Stalin."[112]

Figure 10 - Allen Dulles

In his book, *Nazi International* Farrell asserts the Anglo-American elite decided to test which form of socialism would work best by experimenting with three different types of socialism in the geo-political world: There was FDR's 'New Deal' socialism, Joseph Stalin's extreme form of central-government planning (Marxism or Leninism), and German National Socialism (the Nazi Party). Capitalism had become passé.

> Having put Bolshevism into power, the internationalist corporate elite soon found itself faced with a problem, namely, that the Soviet Union and its Communist International was serious about expanding communist power – under Soviet auspices – around the world, and particularly into central Europe and Germany. Faced with the

> possibility of a power bloc centered on Russia and Germany under Communist control, the ability to manipulate and control that bloc – much less oppose it if the need arose – became quite problematical, if not downright impossible. In short, the balance of power, upon which the larger scheme depended, would have been threatened. Having created the Communist monster, the elite then decided to finance another monster – Nazism – to oppose it. This plan was indeed realistic, since Germany was the only power conceivably in a position to oppose Russia economically and militarily. France and Great Britain simply had neither the muscle nor the geopolitical position to do it, and the United States was ill-disposed to become involved in European affairs. As a result of these considerations, the pattern of international corporate cartel and licensing arrangements between the Western Powers – particularly the United States – and Germany emerged.[113]

Furthermore, to hide their political experiment, wealthy American businessmen (see the introduction to this book) bought influence in the U.S. and British Government before and after the War. “The money that funded the banks and corporations of the Third Reich came from Wall Street and ‘the City,’ London, England’s financial district and Wall Street equivalent. President Roosevelt knew about it, and so did his Secretary of the Treasury, Henry Morgenthau.” [114] But Roosevelt apparently failed to convey to Truman that the real motive for the trial of German bankers at Nuremberg was to finger American and British bankers who were pulling the strings. These actions were buried through the influence of the very wealthy and their attorneys, eventually involving executives within the Department of Justice to assure the truth never came out. Loftus adds:

> Special Assistant Attorney General of the United States closed all of the treason cases in Occupied Germany. Not a single corporate officer ever went to jail for doing business with the Nazis, either in America or the United Kingdom. The Justice Department covered it all up. More than a hundred American traitors were returned home after many profitable years of serving Hitler… Allen Dulles used his position in the OSS to protect himself and his clients from investigation for laundering Nazi funds back to America. [115]

President Roosevelt didn’t even trust his own Department of Justice. He kept his Attorney General as well as Vice-President under surveillance for

protecting American businessmen who had commercial ties with Hitler's Germany.[116] Additionally, Roosevelt and Churchill worked out a deal where they each would allow the others' intelligence services to spy on their own citizenry so they could both affirm to any future investigators that they weren't using their country's clandestine services for spying on their respective citizenries! Today, we call this technique 'plausible deniability'.

Loftus indicates this eventually led Roosevelt to replace his then Vice-President Henry Wallace with Harry Truman who was regarded to be bi-partisan and sensitive to American corporate corruption. What is even more amazing: Roosevelt allowed British Intelligence (the infamous MI6) *to assassinate several pro-Nazi American businessmen in New York City!* This astounding revelation is now become fully public with newly declassified documents. Loftus states:

> President Roosevelt did not brief Truman on the investigations into Dulles and the Attorney General, both of whom were retained by Truman after Roosevelt's death. What President Truman also did not know was that FDR permitted British assassination teams to murder pro-Nazi American businessmen in New York. Mention of the American-Nazi collaboration and the British assassination teams were censored from the original edition of this book, along with any mention of the Vatican's role in laundering Nazi money back to the American corporate investors.[117]

The Vatican's role in forming and managing the so-called 'Ratlines' moving Nazis to the Americas from Germany broached in the passage above, comprises another intricate and diabolical story. We touched on some of its aspects in the preceding chapter. We return to it here to highlight the Vatican's possible role enabling the escape of the most famous of all Nazi fugitives - the Führer himself!

Did the Vatican Help Hitler Escape to the Americas?

According to Loftus, the Vatican management of the 'ratlines' was headed by the man who would eventually become Pope Paul VI (Giovanni Maria Montini, 1897-1978). Thus, this effort was hardly behind the Pope's back; the 'Pope-to-be' ran the program himself.

As this author was completing this chapter, Peter Levenda released a new book entitled, *Ratline: Soviet Spies, Nazi Priests and the Disappearance of Adolf Hitler (2012).* Levenda's research on the extensiveness of the ratlines, with new proof that they extended all the way to Indonesia, is mesmerizing - mostly because it provides an account of how Hitler may have escaped with his then new wife Eva Braun, first to Salzburg, Austria; then two years later to Argentina, then Brazil, and ultimately to Asia in the early 1950s. The story is much, much too long for inclusion here (and not thoroughly convincing to this author), but the now proven escape route underscores how many important Nazis left Europe due to the Vatican's help.

One particular villain central to the story is a Croatian priest, *Monsignor Krunoslav Draganovic.*

> Draganovic was a Croatian priest of the Catholic Church, and a devoted Nazi. His segment of the Ratline was known as the "monastery route" because it used Vatican credentials, Red Cross passports, and monasteries and churches as safe houses along the escape routes. It was a Ratline used by many of the most infamous Nazi war criminals including members of the dreaded SS. [118]

Levenda traces the route of one Georg Anton Pöch to the faraway island of Sumbawa, east of Bali. There he ran a clinic for ten years. His wife was another white foreigner with a German accent. The couple lived together until 1964 when she traveled one-way to Germany never to return again. This trip commenced at the time when the father of Eva Braun was dying. Not long afterwards, the abandoned Pöch remarried an Asian woman in Sumbawa, converted to Islam, and took a Muslim name. He died a few years later in 1970 and was buried in a grave that is reputed by locals to be the

grave of Adolf Hitler, mysteriously placed beneath a headstone without birth or death dates engraved. Born in 1889, Hitler would have been 81.

Early in the story, Levenda does a thorough job dispensing with the generally accepted account of Hugh Trevor-Roper and his depiction of Hitler's suicide in the Bunker, April 30, 1945. Levenda points out how little research was in fact done by Trevor-Roper, how few interviews were conducted, how the ones that were smacked of deceit, and how he was hired *by British intelligence* to write down the account to settle the matter of Hitler's death. In the absence of a body that could be firmly identified (the body was charred beyond recognition) and with a set of 'dental records' which were at best forged, forensic evidence seems especially unconvincing. Add to this situation that Trevor-Roper was also an intelligence agent and doubt intensifies. Indeed, if one conclusion seems certain from our study: anytime an intelligence agent records history, there is little chance the truth will find its way into the account. Last but not least: Joseph Stalin emphatically maintained Hitler escaped the Allies and lived on in parts unknown.

Adding fuel to the fire: the skull of Hitler, famously in the possession of Russia for decades, was recently proven not to be that of Hitler - that is, unless Hitler was a woman! An American researcher in 2009 did the DNA tests to prove it wasn't Hitler's head. From *The Daily Mail,* 9-28-09 we read this account:

> Adolf Hitler may not have shot himself dead and perhaps did not even die in his bunker, it emerged yesterday. A skull fragment believed for decades to be the Nazi leader's has turned out to be that of a woman under 40 after DNA analysis.
>
> Scientists and historians had long thought it to be conclusive proof that Hitler shot himself in the head after taking a cyanide pill on 30 April 1945 rather than face the ignominy of capture. The piece of skull - complete with bullet hole - had been taken from outside the Fuhrer's bunker by the Russian Army and preserved by Soviet intelligence.
>
> Now the story of Hitler's death will have to rewritten as a mystery - and conspiracy theorists are likely to latch on to the possibility that he may not have died in the bunker at all. The traditional story is that Hitler committed suicide with Eva Braun as the Russians bombarded Berlin.

> Although some historians doubted he shot himself and suggested it was Nazi propaganda to make him a hero, the hole in the skull fragment seemed to settle the argument when it was put on display in Moscow in 2000.
>
> But DNA analysis has now been performed on the bone by American researchers.
>
> Where is he? The skull the Soviets found in 1946 is not Adolf Hitler's, tests show. 'We know the skull corresponds to a woman between the ages of 20 and 40,' said University of Connecticut archeologist Nick Bellantoni. 'The bone seemed very thin; male bone tends to be more robust. And the sutures where the skull plates come together seemed to correspond to someone under 40.' Hitler was 56 in April 1945.Mr. Bellantoni flew to Moscow to take DNA swabs at the State Archive and was also shown the bloodstained remains of the bunker sofa on which Hitler and Braun were believed to have killed themselves.
>
> 'I had the reference photos the Soviets took of the sofa in 1945 and I was seeing the exact same stains on the fragments of wood and fabric in front of me, so I knew I was working with the real thing,' he said.
>
> His astonishing results have been broadcast in the U.S. in a History Channel documentary titled *Hitler's Escape*.[119]

In essence, Levenda's colorful theory builds upon this assumption: Hitler was doing his best to present evidence of weakness and frailty, sitting in a wheelchair, and showing signs of Parkinson's Disease - a state secret unknown to the public concerning Hitler's actual condition by War's end. Levenda surmises:

> Such a stateless person, with no identity documents, would have been an ideal candidate for the International Red Cross passport as well: a travel document that was being issued with somewhat reckless abandon and with little or no supporting identification documentation required… except, in certain cases, identification provided courtesy of the Roman Catholic Church. Such a stateless person would have been able to find another home, anywhere on the planet, particularly if they had the blessing of the Vatican itself. [120]

Levenda cites a lengthy memo from American military sources, dated July 1946, documenting the 'monastery route', identifying the major players in

this scandal and associating them with the Croats. The memo was declassified in 1985 and was entitled, “Alleged Vatican Protection of Jugoslav [Yugoslav] War Criminals.”

> The Croats were largely Catholic, and the idea of a Catholic bulwark against Communism was something that had wide appeal. This concept was mirrored in Argentine fascism, which saw itself and its role in the world in identical terms. Thus it should come as no surprise that there was a natural alliance between the Croats and the Argentines, through the intermediary of churchmen like Draganovic and [Bishop Alois] Hudal. They saw their enemy as Communism, and their natural allies in the fight against the Communists were the Nazis. [121]

Pope Paul XII, Eugenio Pacelli, signed the *Reichsconcordat* (1933) with Germany to guarantee the rights of the Catholics Church there. Many third parties criticize the Pope for doing a deal with the devil.[122] Others suggest that it might have been the best that the Church could have hoped for in the circumstances. However, given that Pope Paul XII was a staunch anti-communist, it isn’t a foregone conclusion that the Holy See was simply placating a fascist regime or forced into an ‘offer he couldn’t refuse’. The *Concordat* appeared to be a favored course of action. The German Cardinal Faulhaber offered this comment in March, 1933: “After my recent experience in Rome in the highest circles, which I cannot reveal here, I must say that I found, despite everything, a greater tolerance with regard to the new government... Let us meditate on the words of the Holy Father, who in a consistory, without mentioning his name, indicated before the whole world in Adolf Hitler the statesman who first, after the Pope himself, has raised his voice against *Bolshevism*.” [123]

Figure 11 - The Signing of the *Reischskonkordat*, July 20, 1933

Levenda comments:

> The Catholic Church has been criticized for this by any number of historians and observers, and the Vatican has usually fought back, insisting that the allegations are without merit. The fact remains, however, that the Nazi war criminals most famous, most wanted, most notorious were protected and aided in their escape by a series of Catholic priests, bishops, and cardinals throughout Europe and North and South America. Whether or not this was "official" policy, it most definitely took place and there was no policy - official or otherwise - to stop it… Photographs of Roman Catholic priests, bishops and cardinals standing shoulder to shoulder with men in the uniforms of the SS or the Ustashe (the fascist Croatian revolutionary movement), giving the "Heil Hitler" salute, could only be construed as evidence of tacit approval.[124]

In a memo dated July 12, 1948 from Paul E. Lyon and Charles Crawford, Special Agents of the CIC (Counter-Intelligence Command) 430th Detachment in Vienna, Subject: "Rat Line from Austria to South America," we see unequivocal proof the U.S. military participated in Draganovic's operation. Levenda cites an extensive portion of the memorandum. I highlight paragraphs 2 and 3 of it below:

> 2. Through the Vatican connections of Father Draganovic, Croat, DP Resettlement Chief of the Vatican circle, a tentative agreement was reached to assist in this operation. The agreement consists of simply

> mutual assistance, i.e., these agents assist persons of interest to Father Draganovic to leave Germany and, in turn, Father Draganovic will assist these agents in obtaining the necessary visas to Argentina, South America, for persons of interest to this Command [the Americans].
>
> 3. It may be stated that some of the persons of interest to Father Draganovic may be of interest to the Denazification policy of the Allies; however, the persons assisted by Father Draganovic are also of interest to our Russian ally. Therefore, this operation cannot receive any official approval and must be handled with minimum amount of delay and with a minimum amount of general knowledge.[125] [Comment mine]

Clearly, it was seen in America's self-interest to grab the Nazis to from the hands of the Communists and place them in America. As we will see from the remainder of the book, this was the very least U.S. leadership hoped would result from helping Nazis westward.

Still, we continue to be puzzled regarding why the Vatican would take this course of action and why it, along with our own government, would adopt such a dangerous and deleterious policy. *Herein rests one of history's most profound demonstrations of* ***realpolitik***.

Returning to the words of John Loftus, he suggests we should realize the Vatican's motive was two-fold: first, it was due to a legacy of anti-Semitism (hatred to 'the Christ killers'); and more perfidiously, because the British and Americans promised the Vatican rights to the life-insurance benefits paid for Jewish deaths due to the Holocaust! Loftus makes this final judgment:

> The financial rot inside the Justice Department that began before WWII has never been cleansed. It has given corporate America a continuing source of blackmail against the career bureaucrats at DOJ who participated in the original Nazi cover-up… DOJ continues to be involved in the modern sequels, the Arab Nazi recruitment of the 9/11 terrorist groups, an inadvertent result of American oil company manipulation of DOJ and State. The Old Nazis are the New Nazis, their old evil still bottled in the same old barrels of oil.[126]

The English Royals and Their Support for Nazism

In Book One, this author went into detail documenting the fascinating story of Rudolf Hess and his ill-fated 'peace mission' to England. As related there, this extravagant excursion was part of a conspiracy between Hitler and at least a portion of the British Battenberg family[127] hoping to reinstate King George VI and the Royalty into total control of the country - ending the current republican form of British government. From the standpoint of King George (father of Queen Elizabeth II), Prime Minister Winston Churchill *had to go.*

Loftus brings additional information to the story adding substantial support to the theory of Hess' trip and the monarchical conspiracy at its root.

> One prominent royal, Edward, Duke of Windsor, had actually served as King before he was forced to abdicate. He claimed that he left the throne "to marry the woman I love" [the American Wallace Simpson]. The truth, however, is that SIS [MI6] wire tappers had made phonograph recordings of the Duke of Windsor making pre-war deals with Hitler's Ambassador to the Court of Saint James. Even after his abdication, Windsor was regarded by J. Edgar Hoover as "such a dangerous Nazi agent" that he was kept under Allied surveillance throughout the war.
>
> Forced to abdicate in December 1936, Edward and his American wife, Wallace Simpson, toured Germany in 1937. During his visit with Hitler, the dictator promised to restore him to the throne of England as its first fascist King. As his part of the bargain, it was said, Edward successfully betrayed the entire plan of the Maginot line to the Third Reich. British intelligence interceded just as Edward and Wallace were preparing to flee neutral Spain for Germany. They were seized and interned in the Bahamas for the duration of the war. At Churchill's request to President Eisenhower, the *Justice Department covered up the Windsor secret until I stumbled across the files in the Attorney General's Top Secret vault* [Emphasis mine] [128]

Figure 12 - King George VI

But not only did the long-departed British royals (the father and uncle of Queen Elizabeth) deserved to be flayed for their treason, so did many American bankers. Loftus' boss, another true hero, one Walter J. Rockler, discovered a German document during his Nazi war criminal investigations (Rockler and Loftus were the 'good guys' at the Justice Department) that listed *thirteen American banks who were actively working with the Third Reich during the War!* After Rockler's investigative unit was shut down, Rockler kept the list safely hidden so it wouldn't be shredded by those at Justice who were paid to cover the tracks of the duplicitous American bankers they served.[129]

Loftus informs his readers that one of the most important government officials who was responsible for hiding the truth and overseeing 'dossier shredding' was Henry Kissinger. His role, which has been documented convincingly in Loftus' book, will no doubt never be broadcast by the media. This disclosure would surely upset the apple cart! Kissinger remains something of an American hero and a frequent guest analyst on most media 'Sunday-morning' talk shows.

As to the details: we learn Kissinger, a staunch anti-communist whose reputation included a willingness to consider the use of the atomic bomb against the Soviets (implying a strong resemblance to the featured character

in the 1964 movie, *Dr. Strangelove),*[130] was mentored by Allen Dulles while Dulles was still running one of the (mere!) twenty-two American intelligence groups active immediately following World War II (and before the CIA was officially instituted into law through the National Security Act of 1947). Dulles headed the Office of Policy Coordination (OPC), a cover for an intelligence operation resident within the State Department, where:

> Kissinger was recruited as a professional spy for Dulles shortly after the end of the war in Europe. Although there is no evidence that he personally recruited Nazis, Kissinger ran the intelligence file room where records of Nazi recruitment were kept. He then transferred to Harvard where he specialized in recruiting foreign students for espionage. Later he worked for Dulles during the glory days of Office of Policy Coordination (OPC). He was hired as a consultant for a private group known as Operations Research Office, which planned to use former Nazis as agents behind Russian lines in the event of World War III. Mention of Kissinger's classified work was censored from the original manuscript of this book [*The Belarus Secret*].[131]

Figure 13 – 'The Big Board' in the 'War Room' from Stanley Kubrick's *Dr. Strangelove*

The Politics of Profit

To reiterate, while the primary story in Loftus' book concerns the atrocities and the cover-up of perhaps the worst Nazi collaborators of all - community and political leaders of Belarus aka Byelorussia - the real story regards the Americans and the British elite who set patriotism aside for profit. As noted, Loftus claims the Department of Justice was in the pocket of the wealthy American elite *even as early as at the end of World War I.* He indicates the then Attorney General was a 'bagman' for the Robber Barons during the Versailles Treaty (1919), agreeing to finance the war reparations saddled on Germany, while putting the next generation of Germans into such deep debt there would be no earthly method to repay - except, of course, by gaining control of German patents and retaining pledged corporate stock controlled by the Swiss. "The German currency might have been almost worthless, but German stock was priceless. By the 1930s, Germany had achieved a near-monopoly on high-tech industries, particularly in chemical processes."[132] Hitler's finance minister, Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht, was born in Brooklyn and understood the financing gambits of Wall Street having himself been a 'player' on Wall Street. Although Hitler banned foreign ownership of German companies at the outset of his first achieving political authority:

> In response, the Robber Barons used their influence to pass the Swiss Bank Secrecy Act of 1933. The Wall Street crowd secretly owned the stocks of the Swiss Banks, which owned the stocks of the German banks, which owned the stocks of the German companies. Hitler never knew how the Thyssens and their Wall Street investors kept their financial control intact, at least not until after war broke out, and the Wall Street ties to a third group of terrorists was finally exposed [the Bolsheviks].[133]

To protect their earlier Russian investments (which originated in a scheme to harvest the market opportunity in post-Czarist Russia), the Robber Barons created an industrial park in eastern Poland, near the Russian border, near vast fields of coal. Canals were also built to facilitate Russian materials barging from this park to the Vistula River. The Polish province was known as Silesia and the coal company became known as the *Silesian American*

Coal Company. Who may we ask was at the helm? As mentioned earlier, it included the Harrimans (Democrats) with Prescott Bush (Republican) sitting on the Board of Directors. As Loftus chides, "Funding Hitler was a bi-partisan event." And as this author has asserted previously, when it comes to understanding what happens in the world, *political parties are far less important than most Americans realize.* Had Hitler not taken over Poland, the industrial park would have become a "profit center for Wall Street." As it turns out, Hitler had a far more despicable purpose for the convenient shipping of massive loads of railcars and barges to the area. The Polish know the town as *Oswiecim*; the Germans called it, *Auschwitz*. So it is that American industrialists literally laid the tracks facilitating the Holocaust.

Loftus passes this summary judgment:

> The bottom line is that for nearly a century, segments of the U.S. Justice Department and the State Department have been running a foreign policy directly at odds with orders of the Presidents and contrary to the knowledge and consent of Congress and the American people. This ongoing bureaucratic mutiny has nothing to do with ideology – they funded the Nazis and the Bolsheviks alike. There was no conspiracy, just a large number of separate Wall Street sharks swimming in parallel lines towards their bleeding victims. It was all about the money.[134]

Joseph Farrell provides a similar assessment:

> Between 1927, only two years after the founding of the cartel, and the outbreak of the war in 1939, I.G. Farben had more than doubled in size. The Wall Street financiers who made the loans to Hermann Schmitz [head of I.G. Farben] to form this cartel had indeed created a monster, and that monster, in turn, was not proving to be as cooperative or pliable as they might have wished: [Quoting Anthony Sutton, *Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler*] "By 1939 I.G. acquired a participation and managerial influence in some 380 other German firms and over 500 foreign firms. The Farben Empire owned its own coal mines, its own electric power plants, iron and steel units, banks, research units, and numerous commercial enterprises. There were over 2,000 cartel agreements between I.G. and foreign firms – including Standard Oil of New Jersey, DuPont, Alcoa, Dow Chemical, and others in the United States. The full story of I.G. Farben and its world-wide activities before

> World War II can never be known, as key German records were destroyed in 1945 in anticipation of Allied victory.” [135]

In fact, as Farrell later points out, the liquidation of I.G. Farben as a result of its involvement in World War II was finally concluded only relatively recently, in 2003 to be precise, almost 60 years after the war ended. The wheels of justice do grind slowly indeed.

Conclusion - The Cover-up Continues

Although many years have passed, secrets of Nazi infiltration into America have been carefully protected despite numerous congressional investigations (all of which were sabotaged, cut short due to controversy, or abandoned when Rockler and Loftus got too close to the truth). Loftus provides considerable detail to document how resolute our government remains to this day, stubbornly refusing to admit the truth. Unfortunately for Loftus, this sad story has essentially become his biography:

> For the next several decades, I all but abandoned my legal career to collect and declassify the hidden files that should have been made public before the 1985 Congressional Hearings. Like Rockler, I wanted to protect as much as I could from the Justice Department shredder. Nearly thirty years later, almost two thirds of the Nazi files have been legally declassified by the U.S. Government. The remaining one third, of course, awaits British permission before the CIA can release them to Congress. Many Americans, particularly veterans and victims of the Holocaust, will be astounded to learn that the Justice Department itself was directly behind the Nazi cover-up, betraying the sacrifice and suffering of both. Although the CIA does not realize it (they never do), their own newly declassified records released to the National Archives in 2009 make a very convincing case that it is the Justice Department which has been lying through its teeth to Congress. Included in these newly declassified files is the CIA's account of how my superiors at the Justice Department, lobbied Congress to cancel the 1985 hearings… [Hearings which would have exposed much of the truth's suppression about the Nazi infestation of America - *comment mine*] [136]

For the interested reader, in the bulk of his book Loftus provides the horrid story of the Belarus atrocities. Moreover, he articulates the intricate details demonstrating the full extent of the political machinations of the Justice and State Department bureaucrats up to the present day. Neither story is encouraging reading.

However, our interest isn't only to establish the facts surrounding Nazi political intrigue which still impacts American bureaucracy and other governments of our world today, but about how Nazi occult spirituality (which I demonstrated in Book One*) and technical know-how* (the focus of

the remainder of Book Two), has transformed to its moral detriment other crucial segments of the United States Government and our society. It is to these many astounding, unexpected, and sometimes disconcerting tales we now turn.

CHAPTER THREE:

AMERICA'S INTELLIGENCE SERVICES

AND SUPERNATURAL WEAPONS OF WAR

And oftentimes, to win us to our harm,
The instruments of darkness tell us truths,
Win us with honest trifles, to betray[us]
In deepest consequence.[137]

William Shakespeare, Macbeth, Act I Scene III

The risk of inner experience, the adventure of the spirit, is in any case alien to most human beings. The possibility that such experience might have psychic reality is anathema to them.

Carl Jung, Memories, Dreams, Reflections, 1963

Can We Foresee the Future?

Pauwels and Bergier, authors of *The Morning of the Magicians*, frequently cited in Book One of *Power Quest*, relate a fantastic and proven coincidence of life imitating art. “In 1898 an American science-fiction writer, Morgan Robertson, described the shipwreck of a giant ship. This imaginary ship of 70,000 tons was 800 feet long and carried 3,000 passengers. Its engines were equipped with three propellers. One night in April, when on its first voyage, it encountered in the fog an iceberg, and sank. Its name was: *The Titan*.” [138] They go on to compare the core plot of his book with the reality of what happened to the *Titanic*, “which was wrecked in a similar circumstances years later, displaced 66,000 tons, was 828 ½ feet long, carried 3,000 passengers and had three propellers. The catastrophe happened on a night in April” [April 15, 1912]. The 100th anniversary of the tragedy was recognized publicly as this author wrote this book.

Art often predicts life. *The Titan* constitutes one such story. Can it be that such predictions speak of our ability to foresee future events? Is it possible what we imagine will come to pass in the real world?

Evidence mounts for the reality of supernatural experiences. But most scientists not only ignore the momentum of public opinion, they overlook an irrepressible, cold hard fact that the ‘nonreligious’ (i.e., secular government of the United States) has, for almost sixty years, operated aspects of its intelligence service assuming the *paranormal is reality*.

What’s even more pertinent to our study is how this program was first initiated in the practices of the Third Reich which influenced American intelligence. Psychological research into ‘mind control’ was a significant factor introduced into America at the conclusion of World War II; it was reinforced by the invasion of thousands of Nazis into Military and CIA Intelligence operations thereafter. Not only did they bring their technical knowhow, they brought their fascist ideology. In America, our ideals in their most essential form extol the liberty of the individual and establish the State to protect that liberty. A fascist mentality reverses this perspective. The priority rests with the State not the individual. Because individual liberty in the American worldview is derived from the rights bestowed on us by the Creator, God is assumed. But in Fascism, God is not assumed. The State is

God. Ancient Rome, through its emperor worship, mirrored this approach to governmental rule.

DOKTOR GRENBAUM

In the Cabala, the symbol of a *green tree* represents the tree of knowledge. The Nazis built a secret team of psychics with the project name *Doktor Grenbaum* no doubt drawing upon this symbol.[139] The project's mission was to provide additional *intelligence* to the Third Reich. Additionally, some speculate these mediumistic sources might have been the basis for many of the German wonder weapons, *wunderwaffe,* frequently publicized today in many television documentaries. What stands out clearly: 'Doktor Grenbaum' was a facet of Nazi obsession with mind control.

Jim Marrs comments:

> Behind the horrors of the Nazi regime rested a foundation of European study of the human mind. Justification of euthanasia and extermination programs was provided by some of Germany's most learned men. "Hitler's philosophy and his concept of man in general was [sic] shaped to a decisive degree by psychiatry… an influential cluster of psychiatrists and their frightening theories and methods collectively form the missing piece of the puzzle of Hitler, the Third Reich, the atrocities and their dreadful legacy. It is the overlooked yet utterly central piece of the puzzle," wrote Dr. Thomas Roeder and his coauthors Volker Kubillus and Anthony Burwell in their 1995 book *Psychiatrists - the Men Behind Hitler*. [140]

As Marrs concludes, whether or not such psychic ability was a factor in Hitler's battle plans is likely never to be uncovered or verified; however, it is beyond question that studying the human mind began earnestly in Germany with "far reaching consequences."[141] According to him, those who have studied the issue suspect the knowledge of non-human technology likely came through Nazi occultists using similar means to what is now called *remote viewing*, which we will define and discuss in this chapter.

Marrs quotes Nicholas Goodrick-Clarke, from his 1992 book, *The Occult Roots of Nazism: Secret Aryan Cults and Their Influence on Nazi Ideology*, stating the power motivating the mystics surrounding Hitler and Himmler "is characterized either as a discarnate entity (e.g., 'black forces,' 'invisible hierarchies,' 'unknown superiors'), or as a magical elite in a remote age or

distant location, with which the Nazis were in contact" through their mediums or remote viewers. [142]

Marrs quotes a member of the American military's psychic team, Lynn Buchanan, who elaborates that when the Americans and the Soviets divvied up the various technologists from Germany which they would cart back to their respective countries, America had no interest with psychics and mediums doing such 'intelligence work' (or perhaps other tasks far more sinister). Not so with the Soviets - they grabbed the psychics and began their program of psychic exploration immediately after the War. Apparently, the then (1940s) commonplace, secular, and naturalist world view of American leaders (unlike many Europeans) simply got in the way, giving the Soviets an edge they would parlay to their advantage for several decades before psychic efforts began in the U.S. in earnest, funded by the military and civilian intelligence services.

The Insincerity of Scientific Skepticism

Purely from the stand point of promoting American interests, it would appear a woven web of skepticism doesn't serve national interests particularly well - especially when it practices to deceive.

Hal Puthoff, one of the fathers of psychic spies working for the U.S. Intelligence Service since the 1970s, states it this way: "Scientists and nonscientists alike often find it difficult to confront data that appear to be greatly at odds with their world view. Entrenched belief structures die hard, even in the face of data."[143] But the 'about face' (better yet, 'change of mind') came about as the military and intelligence services became sensitized to the activities of mind control behind the Iron Curtain. In a defensive maneuver, the U.S. levered the basic knowledge of these activities from German scientists and expanded such operations with many insidious projects, most notably MKULTRA and BLUEBIRD to name just two.

However, leading authorities on psychiatry continued to study paranormal capabilities even while operating under the cover of dismissal and denial. Overseeing MKULTRA projects, which investigated various ESP-related phenomena and the potential for drugs such as LSD to enhance the performance of test subjects, was the infamous Dr. Jolyon West. In 1980, while Director of UCLA's Neuropsychiatric Institute, Dr. West wrote critically about paranormal activities and the changing climate for investigative studies by scientifically credentialed researchers. He observes:

> In the past few years some psychiatrists have shown a growing and unabashed interest in parapsychology, including telepathy, psychokinesis, clairvoyance, and presience [sic]. A distinguished psychiatrist (Stevenson, 1966) has written on reincarnation, another (Eisenbud, 1967) on mediums, a third (Ullman, 1973) on thought transference in dreams. Experiences with hallucinogenic drugs have led some behavioral scientists, such as Castaneda (1968) to formulate different, even mystical, ways of knowing reality. However, even the biological scientist (Lilly, 1972) and the astronaut (Mitchell, 1974) is no longer hesitant about involving themselves in experiments and self-revelations that would have seemed outrageously mystical 20 years ago but that are not taken as a matter of course.

> Astrology and prophecy seems to be as much in vogue today as they were in the s16th century. Many citizens eagerly accept the idea that the earth is being visited regularly by benign denizens of solar systems who are ferried by spacecraft seen as unidentified flying objects (UFO's).[144]

However, it is most interesting, as Dr. Colin Ross well documents, that Dr. Thelma Moss, an assistant professor under Dr. West, over many years wrote dozens of favorable papers on paranormal phenomenon while working with Dr. West. Citing author Ross:

> Dr. Moss consulted to NASA, the Rand Corporation (contractor on MKULTRA Subproject 79), ARPA (The Defense Department's Advanced Research Projects Agency) and the CIA on radiation photography, also known as Kirlian photography, according to her curriculum vitae. One of her papers published in the *Journal of Parapsychology* was entitled "ESP Effects in 'Artists' Contrasted with 'Non-Artists.'" Other papers included "Quantitative Investigation of a "haunted House"; "ESP Over Long Distances"; "Telepathy in the Waking State"; "Hypnosis and ESP: A Controlled Experiment"; "The Effect of Belief on ESP Success"; "Skin Vision and Telepathy in a Blind Subject"; and "Is There An Energy Body?".[145]

Given inconsistencies like this, we can easily regard psychiatrists working for the CIA and the military most disingenuous when denying paranormal activity. They hid what they really believed and sought to prove scientifically.

Funding for Psychics - The Proof is in the Paying

It is no small thing that our military and intelligence leaders managed to spend millions in tax dollars to support clairvoyance with congressional approval from the 1950s to the 1990s (and perhaps to the present day).[146] As an unintended consequence, we can say without hesitation *the U.S. Government has generated mountains of documented proof for the reality of the supernatural*.[147] Carl Jung wrote, "The risk of inner experience, the adventure of the spirit, is in any case alien to most human beings. The possibility that such experience might have psychic reality is anathema to them."[148] While often true for empirical scientists, importantly it proved not to be true for pragmatists in the military. Inadvertently, the U.S. government was building the foundation for a rejuvenation of spiritualism - this time, embraced by the government and paid for with tax dollars.

According to Marrs in another of his books, *PSI Spies: The True Story of America's Psychic Warfare Program*, research into and the use of *remote viewing* (RV) has been funded by four separate administrations for over a quarter of a century. My research says the truth goes deeper: It had been funded by the Departments of the Navy since 1947, the Army since 1949, and the CIA since 1952. It was driven, no doubt, by the awareness the Russians were up to their earlobes in psychic research and America had better get in the game. In effect, our psychic spies were the result of the Cold War and the fear of our military and Congress that, like the story of Sputnik in the so-called *Space Race*, if we didn't take action we would finish in second place. The dread of the 'Red menace' was crucial to the task of making a supernatural ability *a repeatable technique* capable of being trained to secular intelligence operatives who had no particular allegiance to religion of any kind.

At the outset of Marrs' book on the PSI Spies, he picks up the story of psychics in the military in the 1990s. Marrs indicates that Dr. Hal Puthoff and Ingo Swann who, along with Russell Targ, were the men most responsible for the development of RV. But PSI Spy number one, Chief Warrant Officer Joseph McMoneagle, was actually in the business in the early 1970s. However, as I stated above, the beginning of the story goes much farther back in military annals.

The original research was done by several mysterious characters, indeed, bona fide shamans commencing as early as the late 1940s. Indeed, Roswell (1947) wasn't the only abnormal thing on the radar of our military after World War II. These enigmatic individuals, in particular one *Andrija Puharich*, had a far-reaching impact on the whole story of psychic activity both in the intelligence services and even more bizarre nature of psychic activities outside of the military - both then and now. We will explore his contributions in more detail within the following chapter. Here we need recognize only that many highly strange partakers in occult spiritualism were at work helping to build an occult orientation inside our military and intelligence services. Supplied with massive 'black ops budgets' they would engage in extraordinary projects to research the paranormal and transform the 'supernatural' into what the Germans called the *wunderwaffe* of war. The paranormal would be the stuff of secret weapons - whose mechanisms were even more secret.

The History of Clairvoyance

Let's first confirm what we mean by *clairvoyance*. It is the supernatural power of seeing objects or events removed in space or time from natural viewing. The word simply combines two French words, *clair* ("clear") and *voyance* ("vision"), comprising clear vision for things *unseen*. *Wikipedia* provides this general definition:

> Within parapsychology, *clairvoyance* is used exclusively to refer to the transfer of information that is both contemporary to, and hidden from, the clairvoyant. It is very different from telepathy in that the information is said to be gained directly from an external physical source, rather than being transferred from the mind of one individual to another… Clairvoyance is related to remote viewing, although the term "remote viewing" itself is not as widely applicable to clairvoyance because it refers to a specific controlled process (italics and bold added).[149]

Marrs relates: "In the Vedas, the most ancient written record of man, there are references to supernatural powers called '*siddhis*.' According to the venerable Hindu scriptures, these were unwanted paranormal side effects of meditation that tended to distract the meditator."[150]

Marrs continues recounting the history as follows:

> Dr. Richard Broughton, director of research at the Institute for Parapsychology in Durham, North Caroline, has quoted from Pantanjali's Yoga Sutras, written some 3,500 years ago. His descriptions of Pantanjali's yoga meditation techniques sound remarkably similar to the techniques developed for remote viewing: "[Y]oga mediation… [is] a succession of stages in which outside distractions are reduced… In the stages of the meditational process - termed *Samyana* - paranormal phenomena may be produced, most commonly a feeling of clairvoyant omniscience, but sometimes including physical effects such as levitation, object movements, and healing."[151] [Brackets in original]

In the modern era, research into the paranormal began in 1882 when a group of interested scientists in London formed the Society for Psychical Research (SPR).

> For the first time, the techniques of modern science - standardized descriptions and methodology, disciplined experiments, and so forth - were applied to psychic phenomena.
>
> Among the accomplishments of the SPR was the exposure of fraudulent mediums and spiritualists. In 1884, following an investigation of Elena Hahn, better known as *Madame Blavatsky*, founder of the mystical Theosophical society, the SPR caustically termed her "one of the most accomplished, ingenious, and interesting impostors in history."[152] [Emphasis added]

The arrival of J.B. Rhines at Duke University in September 1927 began the formal discipline around psychic research in a laboratory setting. Rhines was motivated to begin the research after hearing a lecture on the topic of the paranormal by Sir Arthur Conan Doyle, the creator of Sherlock Holmes. It was Rhine who coined the term *extrasensory perception* (ESP). "In 1940, the Rhines, along with other parapsychologists, produced a book entitled *Extra-Sensory Perception After Sixty Years*, a compendium of psychical research since the founding of the SPR in 1882. The research presented in this book was so careful and scientific that the book became assigned reading for introductory psychology classes at Harvard for the 1940–41 academic year."[153]

Psychic occurrences during World War II so frightened military authorities that psychics were not only considered genuine, but were seen as *a strategic threat*. One psychic in England became notorious for predicting a series of unfortunate events; particularly making statements regarding the sinking of two ships in 1944 before this had become public knowledge. Her name was Helen Duncan. She was arrested and charged with conspiracy, specifically after a 1735 law against witchcraft was updated by Parliament to permit authorities to act against her. After her arrest and conviction, Duncan served a nine-month prison sentence. This step was taken by the British to ensure information about D-Day would not be leaked by Duncan inadvertently due to her growing reputation for clairvoyant capacities. "Even Prime Minister Winston Churchill futilely tried to intercede for Mrs. Duncan. In his memoirs written years later, Churchill credited psychic guidance in leading him to a friendly home during his escape as a prisoner during the Boer War."[154] Tim Rifat in his 1999 book, *Remote Viewing*, commented, "A country such

as the UK, obsessed with secrecy, cannot allow remote viewing to become public knowledge."[155] The threat of psychic intelligence chills the spine and upsets military minds all at the same time.

The Cold War - The Impetus to Act

Yet, it would be the Cold War with the Soviets which would propel the American government to explore the unexplainable. As early as January 7, 1952, a CIA document (released under the Freedom of Information Act in 1981), clearly indicated the agency was considering projects involving ESP.[156] Although these projects, primarily Projects ARTICHOKE, BLUEBIRD, and finally MKULTRA through 149 subprojects, mostly dealt with the creation of the so-called 'Manchurian Candidate', remote viewing was often a topic of interest as well.

According to the research of Dr. Colin Ross, who uncovered details not previously disclosed about various CIA projects, the primary funding for the conduct of remote viewing was through Project STARGATE that ran through 1984, costing taxpayers $20 million. It was paid through contractors Edwin May, Russell Targ, and Hal Puthoff at Stanford Research Institute. Earlier research was part of Projects ARTICOKE and BLUEBIRD which were launched immediately before and overlapped with MKULTRA kicked off in 1953. Ross provides these details:

> Technically, STARGATE was not a mind control program in the usual sense, although it involved controlling certain properties of the human mind. It perhaps could be better described as a program that tapped certain powers of the mind. There is no evidence that any STARGATE activities violated medical ethics. The remote viewing was conducted under a series of cryptonyms including STARGATE and GRILL FLAME. Remove viewing work was being done in the private sector into the 1990s, with medical oversight by MKULTRA contractor, Dr. Louis Jolyon West.[157]

After a clandestine period in the 1960s, the topic popped up again in full force as the next decade began: "In 1970, two Western authors, Sheila Ostrander and Lynn Schroeder, published *Psychic Discoveries Behind the Iron Curtain*, detailing what they had learned about such research after a lengthy visit through the Soviet Union and Eastern Europe. The book was a great success and proved to be an impetus to psychic research, particularly in the United States."[158]

Nevertheless, both the U.S. and Soviet governments distanced themselves from such work, declaring it sensational and untrue. Explanations were offered such as “the stories were fabrications of research scientists seeking more financing.” Of course: Who wants to admit an ‘unscientific’ point of view - even if it’s something into which the entity in question is pouring millions of dollars (or rubles)? Scientists may believe in the paranormal; they just don’t want to go on record divulging such things. That’s why it has always seemed essential to keep quiet about what was really going on behind the curtains - *whether those curtains were iron on not.*

Playing a major role in the government’s work was the Stanford Research Institute (SRI) mentioned above.[159] In 1970, SRI went independent of Stanford University as a result of protests from students who feared SRI had become too cozy with the military-industrial complex. During the early part of the 1970s, SRI did indeed serve as a cover for the psychic research being carried out by the CIA and Army intelligence. The principal figure working under contract for SRI at the time was one Ingo Swann, who became the father of remote viewing, not only demonstrating the technique to the astonishment of most everyone familiar with the project, but throughout the next two decades, mentoring and training over twenty other remote viewers for the government. When Uri Geller was brought to the United States, Geller was studied carefully at SRI. Edgar Mitchell (previously mentioned, of Apollo 14 astronaut fame) was the “funding and contracting agent” at SRI which investigated Geller. “Significantly, the Geller experiments at SRI coincided exactly with the first CIA involvement with psychic experiments there, specifically their sponsorship of research into Ingo Swann’s extraordinary talent for remote viewing. And in Uri Geller they had the golden child of the Israeli secret service, [the] Mossad. Is it too unlikely that Geller, also, was being investigated by the CIA? Geller has gone on record as admitting he worked for them.”[160]

But the story of PSI spying can’t be kept under wraps forever. On August 27, 1995, the account of PSI Spies broke in a London newspaper: “Tinker, Tailor, Soldier, PSI,”[161] written by Jim Schnabel who went on to publish a book on remote viewing in 1997. Marrs tells us about the ‘official disclosure’ of this supernatural approach to spying:

> Remote viewing was officially acknowledged by a CIA news release dated November 28, 1995. The story received superficial and dismissive coverage in the *New York Times* and the *Washington Post*, which described the PSI Spies merely as "a trio of citizens with suspected paranormal powers who were located at a Maryland military base." Even with this watered-down version, the story moved no farther than the East Coast. Nowhere was there any mention that remote viewing was simply dispersed to even more secret government agencies where its use continues today, according to several separate unofficial sources.[162]

This reluctance to admit the level of what had been going on for the previous forty-five years is, once again, classic intelligence service *disinformation* (note also the *New York Times* was at the forefront of the denial). After all, what benefit exists for the military to give away any secrets just to satisfy public curiosity - even if we do pay for such activities with our taxes? [163]

To put this in perspective: it appears the military has a two-pronged plan for RV. First, it seeks to minimize RV's validity by showcasing "RV'ers" as crackpots[164] and to create dismissive reports proving this to be the case. Ray Hyman accomplished the same in 1995 at the CIA's behest - Hyman being an Oregon professor who made pocket money as an adamant skeptic of all things paranormal, apparently following in the footsteps of astronomer J. Allen Hynek who downplayed UFOs in the 1950s (see Chapter 1). Secondly, military intelligence would simply operate RV in the dark, secretly continuing to utilize the technique strategically for both defensive and offensive purposes. Its effective usage have been proven by copious examples drawn from the many books and articles published by military RV personnel serving for over the past forty years (the author has space to produce only a few examples here).[165]

In summary, the CIA and the military wishes to continue using RV and other forms of psychic force - these services just wants to keep such instances out of the headlines. Marrs comments, "By the mid-1970s, the CIA proved its satisfaction with the SRI results as demonstrated by the agency's continued financial support."[166] We might say, "The proof is in the paying." Of course, payments continued throughout the 1980s and 90s and likely linger to this day.

How Does Remote Viewing Work?

Perhaps the most striking difference between the path of the shaman and that of the PSI Spies are the means used to obtain the results sought. In short, shamans use drugs derived from plants of all kinds which yield alkaloids. PSI Spies, from their testimony, only use meditative techniques.

The PSI Spies operated under a number of different projects with intriguing names, most of which meant nothing. For example, GRILL FLAME was a random computer-generated codename for several sub-projects (everything that included psychic activity). The project was initially outfitted with twelve of three thousand interviewees. Soon it was netted down to six and ultimately to only three. SRI did the intensive testing that led to those selected. Pat Riley, another remote viewer for the military, said that during this time [the mid-1970s during the start-up period] the remote viewers of GRILL FLAME were trying "a variety of methods to induce an altered state of consciousness. 'Everything except drugs,' said Riley."[167]

The reluctance to consider drugs to assist in remote viewing resulted from fears which emerged when Congress learned how many unsuspecting servicemen (over fifteen hundred) were tested with LSD in the 1950s as part of Project MKULTRA. This revelation was from the U.S. Senate's Church Committee investigation in the mid-1970s. Thereafter, use of drugs on unwitting human subjects in military service (and without a special oversight committee) would be a career-limiting move for those in charge. Several methods to make the RV process more focused were tried but no one approach was determined to be best. At the end of the day, the method of choice placed the subject in a darkened, quiet room to facilitate a meditative state. The PSI 'warriors' consistently indicate that to make the process work the conscious mind has to be put into neutral to allow the part of the mind which "remote views" to do its thing. Ingo Swann, the very first active remote viewer and the primary trainer of most of the PSI Spies, described it this way:

> You see, when these guys make an ideogram [a simple sketch of what they are viewing], there's a chain of unraveling that takes place. The signal line is being incorporated into the viewer's mind or something like that. And they are trained to discriminate between noise and

> signal. But the signal line does its own thing in these stages and in the way that it does that, you come up with practically a noiseless session [where the images are passed through to the viewer clearly]. That's if they adhere to the format, the structure. But it's very hard to get people to do that because people like to contribute themselves, you know.
>
> This is not a contributive process. The viewer has to be passive, not active, and just receive what's coming in.[168]

In other words, although the RV'ers achieve a trance state the conscious mind is still aware but very passive in the process. If the subject doesn't learn how to relax the conscious mind and keep it from interfering in the process, the results diminish dramatically.

For all intents and purposes, the technique appears to follow the path of psychic processes known as 'automatic writing' and 'channeling' (or more popularly known as, 'mediumship'). Marrs writes of one experience of David Morehouse, a late comer to the remote viewing team. Colonel Ennis Cole (a pseudonym as he still works for the government), recruited Captain David Morehouse in 1988. Morehouse had the "misfortune" of admitting he had once had a spontaneous 'out-of-body experience' (OBE).[169] That piqued the interests of his superiors. Colonel Cole began by describing the project to Morehouse as GRILL FLAME. "A small, select group of soldiers, the colonel explained, were having out-of-body experiences. They were leaving their physical bodies, going to distant targets, and describing the targets. 'They call this remote viewing,' Cole explained."[170] After giving Morehouse specific longitude and latitude coordinates to demarcate a specific target,[171] Cole then proceeded to let Morehouse's fingers do the walking (or writing). We read:

> Morehouse was feeling very incompetent. Great, he thought. How do I allow my hand to move across the paper? I mean, you're talking to a grunt soldier here.
>
> Pettingale [his monitor] took a deep breath and repeated the coordinates again. Without his thinking or willing it, Morehouse's hand began to move across the paper. It moved slightly across and then moved sharply upwards and back down.
>
> Morehouse looked up with a grin of relief and accomplishment. Pettingale was not smiling. "Now decode it. Describe how it felt."

> “I feel it rising sharply upwards,” Morehouse said confidently.
>
> “Fine. Now touch the ideogram with your pen point and tell me what you feel”…
>
> “It’s rising up sharply. It’s natural… it’s a mountain,” he blurted out, surprised at the conviction in his voice.[172]

Upon opening a manila envelope with the picture of the target corresponding to the coordinates, Morehouse discovered a picture of Japan’s Mount Fuji. This was enough to hook Morehouse.

And so began the physic military career of Captain David Morehouse.

The Soviets tried various ways to induce or improve on RV including electric shock, drugs, and sensory deprivation. Historically, the latter two are the methods/medicine that shamans utilize to catalyze their psychic experiences. Yet, Riley indicates remote viewing capability requires alert concentration. “When a person is on drugs, their remote viewing capability is diminished.”[173] As such, the remote viewers are distant cousins to shamans - they only care about the technique for its practical application. The issue of what it says about cosmology and the nature of the universe is entirely secondary. At least, that seems to be the case during working hours.

Of course, as we learn additional facts about their experience, it gets more and more difficult to avoid the question of what such workings tell us about the cosmos as well as the nature of human beings and the nature of God.

So Impress Me

One of the first ‘wow’ events involved Joe McMoneagle remote viewing a new type of Soviet sub. Essentially, he had discovered the submarine reality of what the movie *The Hunt for the Red October* used as the basis for its techno-thrilling plot: *A super sub that really could run silent, run deep.* This was in 1979. It was under construction in a secret facility at Severodvinsk. McMoneagle was able to supply fascinating details about the nature of the sub indicating to his superiors they had stumbled onto something truly revolutionary. It caused the military many sleepless nights.

But what really got the attention of the military was when the PSI Spies remote-viewed secret weapon development for the ‘good guys’. The Air Force ill-advisedly used their most top secret program as a test for the PSI Spies. The team easily aced the quiz. Morehouse commented, “The Air Force went nuts. They didn’t know what to do.” If the Air Force had had the spies sign a statement that they would not disclose what they saw, it would have documented the secret program. What’s worse, it would have shown them up for frivolously using their most secret weapon as a test. Nevertheless, because they were given the target, the team learned the name of the project and many of the details of what would become America’s stealth fighter program. The Air Force couldn’t do anything but walk away. “It just terrified them. I mean, if we could get into their most secret program, we could get into anything”[174] according to Morehouse. Of course, it was news only to those who already had top security clearance and were sworn under duty of military law to keep the government’s secrets, secret. No real harm was done.

From the demonstrated experience of both Pat Price and Joe McMoneagle, we learn RV is not only not limited to space, *but neither is it limited to time*. McMoneagle, after his service in the military, would sometimes be tested on television and be called upon to remote view a target from several choices which would be selected at show time. However, normally the night before while lying on his hotel bed, he would remote view the location that would be picked. That way he wouldn’t be bothered by the stress of the live television show. Consequently, this meant not only could he investigate through ‘his mind’s eye’ the location for remote viewing, he could do so

even before they had selected the target the next day! For McMoneagle, time is but a creation of our social structures and a convenience for relating in a social setting. That doesn't mean it's a barrier to the human mind nor is it a restriction on consciousness. Joe time traveled as normal course.

Russell Targ commented about remote viewer Pat Price: "[He] had psychic functioning totally integrated into his daily life. He would tell us each day about the course of world events – the day and hour of the Israeli-Arab cease-fire in the Yom Kippur Way [1973], the eventual outcome of a celebrated kidnapping, the breakup of an OPEC conference by terrorists. Nearly every day it seemed Pat would have some piece of precognitive news for us to think about over lunch, days in advance of the event's actual occurrence."[175]

It should be noted that the RVers discriminate between remote viewing and 'out of body experiences'. OBE is considered to be unpredictable and uncontrollable, whereas RV is well-behaved. "When you go out of body, it is such an awe-inspiring experience that the viewers would forget about their mission," Riley said. "I mean when you are able to move out among the stars or see other dimensions, that Soviet rocket launcher [for example, he means] seems pretty tame. You lose interest in it real quick."[176] Another unexpected phenomenon the remote viewers describe suggests there is a social aspect to RV: the RVers could encounter their opponents psychically and sense one another. When this occurred, it became a psychic game of *Spy vs. Spy*. "Having been alerted to the existence of foreign remote viewers, the PSI Spies joined in a game of psychic cat and mouse with the other side. 'We would go looking for them and they would come looking for us,' Morehouse said. 'Gradually, a sense of camaraderie grew. They were experimenting and learning just like us. We thought of them more as an opposing team than an enemy.'"[177]

Conclusion - Opening the Door to the Paranormal

What kind of intelligence did the intelligence services seek from the PSI Spies? Their primary interest was in gathering scientific and technical intelligence: “What did the other side have? How did it work? How could it be used against us?” While the CIA was shying away from ‘far out’ projects in the 1970s, the Army Intelligence team continued to use the psychic warriors. Gen. Edmund “Mike” Thompson, U.S. Army’s deputy chief of staff for Intelligence, said, “‘I became convinced that remote viewing was a real phenomenon, that it wasn’t a hoax,’ recalled Gen. Thompson. ‘We didn’t know how to explain it, but we weren’t so much interested in explaining it as in determining whether there was any practical use to it.’” [178] We can see good old fashioned American pragmatism was at work.

As we will learn, considering the spiritual dangers associated with the technique, a performance of RV as ‘duty’ is reminiscent of a line from Alfred Lord Tennyson’s *Charge of the Light Brigade:*

> Theirs not to make reply,
> Theirs not to reason why,
> Theirs but to do and die.[179]

The remote viewers weren’t told that dangers existed - that certain ideologies (like the Judeo-Christian cosmology) might contraindicate RV as tampering with powers outside of human control. From the perspective of the intelligence services, get the right guys and gals and you can control the paranormal, obtaining the results you need for the sake of national security. However, implied was a patent ignorance of the ‘downside’ just as there was with the unknowing soldiers who took LSD in the 1950s as part of their military service for Uncle Sam (chronicled in more detail as part of Chapter 7).

The unit started going downhill toward the end of the 1980s. Missions were still in full force, but the best of the RVers began leaving to profit from their skills in the private sector. By 1993, a company called PSI TECH was underway with seven remote viewers including Ingo Swann as mentor and consultant. General Albert N. Stubblebine (one of the team’s commanders in the 1980s, affectionately known as “Spoon bender” because he was so

impressed with psychokinetic experiences), took a position on PSI TECH's board of directors, supplying considerable credibility to the business (and validation of the Army's use of the PSI Spies a few years before).

However, the legacy of the other paranormal activity started in the military intelligence game and bridging to the private sector continues to have far-reaching impact today - although the public is left mostly unawares.

In the next chapter, we will document not only how the originators of the PSI Spies went way 'out on a limb' in their techniques, but ultimately concluded that life on Earth is connected to little green men on Mars in our ancient past and the appearance of extraterrestrials in our proximate future. It appears once the door to the paranormal has been thrown wide-open, many different types of exotic experiences can enter - perhaps including beings from beyond our planet.

Is there still psychic spying going on within the confines of military and civilian intelligence operations? If a personal story can be relied upon, it certainly is.

The sister of one of my consulting clients shared her story from a few years ago when I met with her and her brother for refreshments in March, 2012. She related how she had dated an individual who worked for the military in one of the western states. As she was driving back to her home in Arizona late at night, she indicated that her 'mind was being infiltrated' by thoughts from this individual. Without going into too many details, she 'pushed back' psychically on these thoughts. She didn't want to have her mind influenced by anyone - friend or foe. Late the following morning, according to her account, the door of her apartment flew open and this same man burst in with a couple of armed associates. He exclaimed, "Who are you?" and she screamed back at him, "Who are YOU?" He was obviously astounded someone was capable of resisting his psychic power. Explaining, he related he worked for an intelligence group and utilized his powers to gather intelligence for the government. However, occasionally he would use his skills for what he deemed to be positive, personal reasons. In this instance, he was attempting to make sure she wasn't falling asleep at the wheel and was attempting to send 'thoughts' to help keep her awake. According to him, he was simply concerned about her well-being. Then they recounted what each person had psychically 'sent' to the other and were surprised to find their

‘mind reading’ exercise had been precisely as they each intended. Messages were sent and received.

If this account is true (and I have every reason to believe it is not an exaggeration), PSI spying continues - up to this day.

To recap: the door to spiritualism was opened by Nazi scientists before, during, and AFTER World War II. It was clearly emphasized by the Soviets immediately after the War. Once the U.S. picked up on how infatuated the communist regime in Moscow was with psychic spying, our government determined it had to have its own program. The CIA and the military may not have wanted to contribute tax dollars to inadvertently fund a spiritualist practice in America as a means to counter the Soviets in the Cold War, but it had done so. If this was the only aspect of supporting spiritualism it would be easy to dismiss as ‘a one-off’. But as we will see, this example is only one of many where the occult worldview of the nineteenth century, most notably displayed in Nazi Germany, became a major element of the U.S. behavioral science, astrophysics, and intelligence operations in the latter half of the twentieth century.

CHAPTER FOUR:

AMERICA'S INTELLIGENCE SERVICES,

LITTLE GREEN MEN, AND THE GREAT PYRAMIDS

Because of the alien nature of the tryptamine trance, its seeming accentuation of themes alien, insectile, and futuristic, and because of previous experiences with tryptamine in which insectile hallucinatory transformations of human beings were observed, we were led to speculate that the role of the presence was somehow like that of an anthropologist, come to give humanity the keys to galactarian citizenship.

Terence McKenna
The Invisible Landscape: Mind, Hallucinogens, and the I Ching (1975)

The involvement of intelligence agents in the field of Egyptian archaeology, the UFO phenomenon, and other odd pursuits…point out that psychological warfare, literature, archaeology, and the paranormal not only make for strange bedfellows; in the war years of the last century it was positively an orgy.

Peter Levenda, *Sinister Forces*, (2005)

The Puppet Masters of the Early Days

Lynn Picknett and Clive Prince, in their sizeable work, *The Stargate Conspiracy: The Truth About Extraterrestrial Life and the Mysteries of Ancient Egypt*, document how the U.S. Military has not only been involved in conducting psychic operations to spy out technical intelligence from our enemies - their reach goes well beyond, extending into the possibility of the existence of extraterrestrial life, ancient civilizations in our solar system (notably Mars, but secondarily the Moon), and the connections with the alternative theories of Ancient Egypt, specifically the meaning of the Giza complex and the Great Pyramids. While it is possible (but unlikely) direct military involvement in these matters ceased sometime in the 1970s, it is clear that SRI (perhaps as cover for government participation and funding), continued to be involved in research at Giza, and that NASA has a lot more to tell us about the true motivations behind the space program - especially why we might wanted to get to Mars as soon as possible.

We only have room in this chapter to highlight how the military launched the activity leading to these outcomes. In the next chapter, we will provide an overview of the suppositions espoused by Picknett and Prince, Richard Hoagland (a former consultant for *CBS News* and NASA), Joseph Farrell, and Jim Marrs on the meaning of outer space to those who seek to guide our politics and our culture. We will document here the origins of the strange activity, what the key players initiated, and underscore their impact today.

Suffice it to say, *'astounding'* doesn't begin to describe the facts.

As mentioned in the previous chapter, the history of U.S. Government involvement in the paranormal begins in the 1940s, not the 1970s. "The first experiments in the paranormal were authorized by the CIA in 1950, codenamed BLUEBIRD, later renamed ARTICHOKE and then, in 1953, MKULTRA. The U.S. Navy had a similar research program, Project CHATTER (beginning in 1947), which pooled its resources with the CIA projects, and the U.S. Army had its own version called Project OFTEN, which ran between 1968 and 1973."[180] Other project names float around too, such as Project GRILL FLAME which was an umbrella term for anything psychic.

The principal character of the early going was the fascinating personality Dr. Andrija Puharich (known by his family as Hank).[181] He was Chicago-born, of Yugoslavian parents in 1918, and became a successful inventor of medical gadgets such as improved deaf aids. Puharich qualified as a doctor and neurologist at Northwestern University in 1947. “But that was only part of his life, his more public face. He was also known as a brave pioneer in the ‘Cinderella science’ of parapsychology, or - as many have come to view it - the study of the hitherto unplumbed powers of the human mind.”[182] But what is the relevance of Puharich?

> There is no doubt that he was very deeply committed to much of the mind control experimentation of the military/CIA. He was certainly no mere Army doctor, whose work was confined to handing out pills and potions. In fact, even the Round Table Foundation - as Puharich himself implies in [his book] *The Sacred Mushroom* - was a front for the Army’s parapsychological experiments.
>
> When he was redrafted in February 1953 it was as a captain at the Army Chemical Center in Edgewood, Maryland, the Army’s facility for research into chemical and psychological warfare and neuro-physical research, where he served until April 1955, when he returned to the Round Table Foundation.[183]

It is well-known the Army’s Chemical Center at Edgewood, where Puharich was stationed, conducted joint experiments with the CIA’s MKULTRA team. “The Army’s real interest, the real reason why they [employed] Puharich, was not just in the development of the military potential of ESP, but also the possibility of finding a drug that would stimulate psychic abilities.”[184]

And what we will learn in the pages following is that the Army was paying big dollars to consultants who would have been considered crazy by the general population because they believed in somebody up there on Mars and psychics who could connect with them.

As covered in the last chapter, the official account is that the Army didn’t start experimenting with psychics until the 1970s through studies at SRI; however Puharich presented a paper on the Army’s behalf to the Pentagon in November 1952 entitled “An Evaluation of the Possible Usefulness of Extrasensory Perception in Psychological Warfare.”[185] While it is highly probable Puharich was right at the center of the experiments using LSD, it’s

quite clear both the CIA and the Army determined *not* to use drugs as a means to facilitate remote viewing. While it is supposition and unproven that some sort of 'chemical basis' serves as a means for humans to exhibit psychic ability, many of the substances already exist in small amounts naturally within human physiology. As Graham Hancock notes in his book *Supernatural*, approximately two percent of the population seem to possess enough naturally occurring dimethyltryptamine (DMT) "within themselves" they don't require any assistance from drugs (DMT - a substance similar chemically to *serotonin* which at sufficient quantities generates hallucinations in human subjects).[186] Apparently it is for this reason the military screened and selected only a few persons to do remote viewing - clearly those which could perform well without pharmacological help.

According to Jack Sarfatti (another colorful character we will discuss), Puharich worked for Army Intelligence in the early fifties - which implies his discharge later in the 1950s provided a cover for continuing to operate on behalf of the military but in an civilian capacity. It also appears some of Puharich's medical inventions (mostly related to *hearing* - hopefully not just 'voices') were originally developed as part of classified Army projects. According to Sarfatti, Puharich claimed in 1987 he had been part of a U.S. Navy investigation called Project PENGUIN researching psychic abilities in 1948.

> Over the next twenty years [his career actually extended almost 40 years] Puharich devoted himself to more general parapsychological and medical research. He set up a company, the Intelectron Corporation, to market his many patented medical inventions. On the parapsychological side, apart from testing various psychics, he made a special, in-depth study of shamanism. He was particularly interested in shamanic techniques for altering states of consciousness, including the use of various hallucinogenic plants and "sacred" mushrooms. Never one to stand on the sidelines, Puharich threw himself into these studies, even being initiated into the mysteries of Hawaiian shamanism, emerging as a fully-fledged kahuna. At least as significant - in light of what was to come - was his personal training in hypnosis to the level of master hypnotist, at which stage are revealed such mysteries as the "instant command technique" so often used, an arguably abused, by stage hypnotists. Out of this admirably "hand-on" research he wrote

two books, *The Sacred Mushroom* (1959) and *Beyond Telepathy* (1962).[187]

From 1948 until 1958, Puharich ran a private research center focused on the paranormal he called the Round Table Foundation in Glen Cove, Maine. He carried out experiments with several then-famous psychics such as the Irish medium Eileen Garrett and the Dutch clairvoyant Peter Hurkos. But it was his work with another psychic which commenced a radically new path forward.

INTRODUCING THE NINE

"In 1952 he took an Indian mystic, Dr. D.G. Vinod, to the laboratory, although apparently not so much to test his abilities as to listen to his teachings, which came by what is now known as 'channeling': more or less identical to old-fashioned trance mediumship, in which the medium becomes a conduit for various discarnate spirits."[188]

The intrigue deepens when we discover the subject that occupied Puharich after holding a séance at his Round Table Foundation in Glen Cove, Maine. "The first of these sessions took place on 31 December 1952. Vinod entered the trance state and at exactly 9 PM, spoke. His first words were, portentously: '*We are Nine Principles and Forces.*' One of the 'Nine,' who identified himself only as 'M' (a second communicator, 'R', also appeared over the next few months), furnished some extremely detailed scientific information concerning a variant of the Lorentz-Einstein Transformation equation (relating to energy, mass and the speed of light)" [emphasis added]. [189]

This is the first record of many meetings with a group of entities that identified themselves as personas numbering *nine* in total. The 'nine' of Dr. Vinod would become Puharich's obsession and both directly and indirectly inaugurate a fascination with intelligences outside our world. Within three decades, millions would come to believe in these nine entities as one example among many to be the 'scientific' alternative explanation for divine intervention in the evolution of humankind. Indirectly, the teachings of these nine principles or forces (hereafter, I will refer to them as THE NINE) provided anecdotal support for what is now called "ancient astronaut theory," such as espoused by Erich von Däniken (of *Chariots of the Gods*' fame). Adding to this exalted *nine* is recent research related to the Mayan prediction of an apocalyptic event scheduled for December 21, 2012 when their *nine* gods return to earth.[190]

Figure 14 - The History Channel's Popular Show, *Ancient Aliens*

After working further with Vinod for several months, Puharich was ready to roll out the notion of THE NINE by inviting nine (not an accidental number of invitations to be sure) persons composed of upper-echelon Americans to meet with him and Dr. Vinod on June 27 of the next year (1953). Those attending included Arthur M. Young (philosopher and inventor - also one time head of Bell Helicopter) and Alice Bouverie (née Astor), daughter of the founder of the Astoria Hotel in New York. When speaking thru Vinod, THE NINE took center stage, but played coy as to who and what they actually were. At first, they didn't identify themselves as extraterrestrials. That would eventually change.

About two years later, Puharich, Young, and Hurkos went to Mexico seeking to use Hurkos' powers in an attempt to find certain artifacts at the ancient site of Acámbaro.

> In the Hôtel de Paris they met an American couple, Dr. Charles Laughead and his wife Lillian, who were working with a young man who claimed to be in telepathic contact with various alien races. Shortly after his return to the United States, Puharich received a letter from Laughead - a copy of which they sent to Young - giving communications from the extraterrestrials. And this referred to "the Nine," giving the correct date for their first contact via Dr. Vinod as well as the same information about the Lorentz-Einstein

> Transformation. This appeared to be exciting independent corroboration of the Nine's existence.[191]

It also transformed THE NINE from 'spirits' or forces to *extraterrestrials.* Ever since that moment, THE NINE have attempted to establish their identity as extraterrestrials. It's almost as if THE NINE decided being ET would be much more *chic*.

Therefore, it seems plausible connecting THE NINE to extraterrestrials directly resulted from Charles Laughead's earlier experience documented in the book, *When Prophecy Fails*. In 1954, an apocalyptic group, the "Brotherhood of the Seven Rays" expected a rescue from extraterrestrials intended to save them and them alone from a global flood. This group of staunch believers included the Laughead's. Dorothy Martin, known as Marian Keech in the book, was their psychic leader.[192] While Martin was emotionally destroyed "when the prophecy failed," Laughead and his wife were nonplussed and continued to promote aliens and publicize their determination to arrive at, shall we say, an earthly destination. Consequently, very soon after the experiences recorded in the book, the Laughead's met Puharich and his psychic posse.

Vinod was not the only medium attracting Puharich. From another psychic, Puharich opened a different controversial door, this one to 'alternate history'. When serving in the Army as Captain in 1954, Puharich encountered a young Dutch psychic named *Harry Stone* through Alice Bouverie. Stone provided a channeled message regarding a drug that would excite psychic ability.[193] This also tied into another of Puharich's duties: studying psychoactive substances on behalf of the army. It seems Stone's messages opened the door *to the ancient Egypt connection*. One of the voices identified himself as *Ra* and then later *Rahotep*.[194] Apparently, Ra's main concern was to communicate news about a specific drug used by Heliopolian priests (an ancient religious capitol near Giza founded before 3000 BC) to:

> …"open the door" to the gods: a mushroom that induced hallucinatory experiences, a sort of a chemical stargate. From Stone's drawings, Puharich was to identify the mushroom as *amanita muscaria,* or fly agaric. Bouverie's automatic writing predicted that a specimen would shortly be found near the Round Table Foundation's building in Maine… [it was.]

> Puharich had settled on the psychoactive drugs used by shaman as the main focus of his research and in 1953 had contacted R. Gordon Wasson, the first researcher to study the shamanic mushroom cult of Mexico. The two set up an experiment to see if the Mexican shamans, or *curanderos*, could, under the influence of the mushroom, "visit" the Round Table Foundation's laboratory in Maine. The long-distance experience never happened, but it is interesting that Puharich was already thinking in terms of remote viewing (although he did not use that term the)[195] [comment mine].

The 1960s was a dark period for the military from the perspective of public exposure to its research into the paranormal. Puharich's activities remained covert along with other rumblings about the nature of how drugs were being administered by the military to enlisted men. Ironically, the drug, LSD, was touted at the beginning of the decade as a 'savior' to Western culture. It promised to be the doorway to a new society, forming the basis for so-called counter-culture made famous at the rock concert Woodstock. But by the end of the sixties, LSD was ultimately discredited along with the counter-culture. The 'hippie hope' declined almost as quickly as it was hailed soon after the violent incidents at another rock concert, Altamont, in 1969.[196]

Spoon Bending and Star Trek

We jump to 1970 and the matter for which Andrija Puharich is most famous. Puharich was turned on to an entertainer mystic named Uri Gellar, who was entertaining in Tel Aviv night clubs. This acquaintance began when Puharich was training Israelis on his medical devices, “electrostimulation” or hearing for the deaf. What the real story was behind Uri Geller and his importance to the U.S. Military certainly involved much more than bending spoons (and other parlor tricks). Early on, Puharich hypnotized Geller seeking to find out the source of his skills. However, critics say Puharich used leading questions in his hypnotic projects and influenced Geller to state that THE NINE were the source of his powers.

Figure 15 - Uri Geller with Andrija Puharich

In total, Puharich and Geller were together for two years in Israel. While there, things grew very strange. According to Picknett and Prince (who interviewed Geller directly), they encountered many paranormal experiences including UFOs and even objects teleporting through solid walls. Significantly, Geller, himself, was not a convert to THE NINE, even though he channeled them repeatedly during Puharich’s mentorship. Gellar found their pranks childish and ultimately unimpressive. He was to say of them in August 1972: “I think somebody is playing games with us. Perhaps they are a civilization of clowns.”[197] By October 1973, Geller distanced himself from THE NINE. And apparently, after introducing Geller to the military, Geller was shipped off to SRI for research as mentioned in the prior chapter. It’s not clear how much contact Geller and Puharich maintained after this period.

However, the channeling of THE NINE continued at Puharich's estate in Ossining, New York. A new group was formed called *Lab Nine*. New players included Sir John Whitmore and Phyllis Schlemmer. Also participating was Canada's richest family, the Bronfman's (the owners of the Seagram liquor business). "One famous name very much part of the Lab Nine scene in the mid-1970s was Gene Roddenberry, creator of Star Trek."[198] Roddenberry's participation in the group began in 1974. Whitmore commissioned Roddenberry to make a film called *The Nine*, but this project never saw the light of day. Peter Levenda comments that pop-star John Denver was also a member of this group. He was apparently interested in more than just a 'rocky mountain high'.

Schlemmer was a noted and gifted medium - the next in the continuous stream Puharich continued to conjure up. (Her early-on claim to fame originated at her Catholic college where Catholic priests had her accompany them on exorcisms since she could see when the spirits left the possessed.) Notably, Schlemmer channeled an extraterrestrial named "Tom" beginning in 1970. Eventually this Tom became the leading spokesperson for THE NINE. Puharich was instrumental in bringing all of these players (both human and not-so-human) together. For many years, THE NINE would explain their role in the galaxy, the creation of humankind, their involvement in our evolution, the relationship to Atlantis and to Egypt, and make many predictions, most of which didn't come true.

What was the core message of THE NINE? They indicated extraterrestrials first came to Earth thirty-four thousand years ago. They were instrumental in the formations of the pyramids of Egypt and Central America. Soon they will make their presence known in a highly visible way (which continues to be postponed). Their name refers to *The Great Ennead* or nine gods of Egypt. Tom is supposedly *Atum*, the leader of the nine gods of Heliopolis.[199]

What is their intent in communicating to us now? According to their 'channelers', they are disclosing themselves to select individuals to guide us in the days ahead. Unfortunately but predictably, their message smacks of the New Age writings of Alice Bailey, including her sinister assumption of anti-Semitism.[200] Interestingly, one of their tricks suggests they can do more than just talk:

> On the evening of 26 November 1977, television broadcasts in parts of southern England were interrupted by a voice claiming to be a representative of an extraterrestrial civilization, saying that they would be landing on Earth soon in order to prevent mankind from destroying itself. Dismissed as a student prank, few have noticed that the short message included this sentence: “We conveyed to *Sir John Whitmore and to Dr. Puharich* that we would interfere on your radio and television communication system to relay when the civilisations are coming close to landing on your planet.”[201] [Emphasis added]

Knowing about the hidden puppet masters who were named in the Broadcast and witnessed by thousands probably wasn’t something that pranksters could have pulled off.

The Only Planet of Choice

But most importantly, in 1992 Schlemmer and Whitmore collaborated to publish a compilation of Tom's "collected wisdom" in the book, *The Only Planet of Choice: Essential Briefings from Deep Space*. This popular work includes a front-page endorsement by James Hurtak (another amazing persona we discuss in a moment).

According to Picknett and Prince, Whitmore and Schlemmer continue to meet 'to this day' (as of 1999). *The Only Planet of Choice* continues to be a best-selling book and is standard reading for those obsessed with UFOs, extraterrestrials, and their soon appearance on Planet Earth. To those inclined to verify details shared here, see *http://www.theonlyplanetofchoice.com.*

To complete the story of Andrija Puharich: His house in Ossining was burned down in 1978, after which he went to Mexico to study a physic surgeon, known by the name *Pachita*. After 1980, when he returned, he appeared to have no more contact with THE NINE. In 1995 he fell down the stairs in a South Carolina house lent to him by one of his followers, Joshua Reynolds III. This eventually led to his death. Puharich would later blame the CIA for the fire, claiming that they were trying to stop his experiments with "The Geller Kids" (aka *Space Kids*, a subsequent joint effort with Geller) in which Puharich appeared to be using hypnosis to either detect the source of their psychic abilities or to plant suggestions into their heads about THE NINE.

For the kids' sake at the very least, the fire couldn't have come soon enough.

> Perhaps it is significant that Andrija Puharich was described by [his close associate] Ira Einhorn as 'the great psychic circus manager of this century'. He was certainly not averse to media attention, although he kept much of his work secret. In the 1960s he played himself in an episode of Perry Mason, appearing as an expert witness of psychic phenomena, yet much of his career remains sketchy, and he happily compounded the mystery by introducing inconsistencies and obvious evasions into his own account of his life and work.[202]

This same Ira Einhorn, "confirmed Puharich's determination to turn all psychic communication into contact with [THE NINE], and that he was 'humanly directing' the pattern of the channeling."[203] Picknett and Prince

ask: “Could Puharich have manipulated [THE NINE’s] communications as part of some long-term experiment? Given his connections with intelligence agencies, was this part of a CIA program?”[204] “The evidence clearly suggests that the business of THE NINE was not an isolated series of paranormal events but an orchestrated drama, involving outside agencies… with Puharich running it from the inside.”[205] Exactly why Puharich took this course of action isn’t clear to Picknett and Prince. Neither is it clear if Puharich was a believer in the implied cosmology and the reality of THE NINE, or whether he was merely experimenting on behalf of the CIA with how groups of people become believers in outlandish notions involving the supernatural. Perhaps it was a sociological study such as conducted by Leon Festinger’s group during the events recorded in his book, *When Prophecy Fails*.

There is no question this is exactly what happened with the followers of Adolf Hitler. Conceivably this was the motivating force behind a deceptive experiment in America as well. In other words, some suggest Puharich was conducting a program of disinformation merely to see how it affected others; in this instance, the author doesn’t share that view. While someone or something may have been pulling the strings (including the life and activities of Andrija Puharich), it may not have been the U.S. Government. Indeed, it may not have been any human entity whatsoever.[206] Alongside Dr. Puharich, Levenda’s “sinister forces” may have been at work. Indeed, Levenda’s subtitle to his *Sinister Forces* is telling: “*The Nine*” is the only nine he references.

Life on Mars and the Esalen Institute

What is the lasting impact of THE NINE and the creation by our government of a cadre of remote viewers in America? From the many books and statements of the participants, the results spurred the conviction shared by many advocates of UFOs and the paranormal that (1) extraterrestrial intelligences have been involved in the development of our planet and solar system for millions of years; (2) life once existed on Mars and may well be connected to life on Earth and to extraterrestrial civilizations 'from beyond'; (3) beings may continue to 'reside' on Mars in a 'suspended-animated' state perhaps with some sort of automated protection system to protect them from intruders;[207] and (4) life on earth was either started by the Martians or life on Mars was commenced by an earlier version of the human race that left the Earth and founded life there. In any event, to say the conjecture is 'far out' is a massive understatement.

Nonetheless, a new religion has been birthed in America believing *God is an ancient alien astronaut* and the believers in this theory are growing steadily as each new episode of *Ancient Aliens* appears on the *History Channel.* The program is now into its fourth season. Furthermore, we can rightly conclude that remote viewing has been and continues to be used as a means to test the reality of *extraterrestrial visitation to Earth*. Here are a few of the startling facts:

> - Cydonia, the apparent face on Mars, supposedly was discovered by remote viewers before the first Viking mission. "In a conversation with Uri Geller in January 1998 about his time at SRI, he told us that the *Face on Mars* had, in fact, been discovered by remote viewing in the early 1970s, long before the Viking mission" (emphasis added).[208]
>
> - The phrase, "Little Green Men," was coined by Harold Sherman, a former sports writer, before becoming interested in the UFOs and aliens in the 1940s. "This is interesting because we do know that Sherman remote viewed Mars for SRI."[209]
>
> - The U.S. Army's highly talented remote viewer, Joe McMoneagle [RV #1], 'visited' Mars several times, always sketching the scenes that met his disembodied gaze. There, unmistakably, were pyramids and, he

claimed, tunnels under the Cydonia complex in which the remnants of an ancient civilization continued to exist.

- “Several participants in the Pentagon/CIA’s remote-viewing programs experienced paranormal events outside of office hours, and also had apparent extraterrestrial contact, especially in connection with Mars.”[210] This led some team members to a near nervous breakdown.

- In *Psychic Warrior*, he (Morehouse) describes being sent a blind target and homing in on a boxlike object hidden in a cavern that appeared to be protected by an aura of extreme danger. He told his ‘monitor’ that it was “something very powerful and sacred” and said it would “vaporize” anyone who got too close, adding: “I felt very uncomfortable and vulnerable in that cavern.”[211] Supposedly this cavern wasn’t on the Earth - but was ‘Martian’.

- “One cautionary tale involves Courtney Brown, professor of political science at Emory University in Atlanta. Trained in remote viewing in 1992 by a former member of the Pentagon RV unit (he refuses to name him, but it was in fact Pentagon remote-viewing star Major Ed Dames), he hit upon the idea of using remote viewing as a scientific research tool, specifically to investigate the question of extraterrestrial visitors on Earth.”[212]

- Brown claimed that a civilization existed on Mars living underground at Cydonia and underground in New Mexico and Latin America. It was he who proclaimed there was a spaceship following the Hale-Bopp comet, a claim he promoted on the national radio show, *Coast to Coast AM*. “Subsequently, the Heaven’s Gate cult committed mass suicide specifically so that their souls would be ‘beamed up’ to the Hale-Bopp spaceship.”[213]

- No less than Dick Morris, a frequent guest today on FOX’s *Hannity* and *Bill O’Reilly* shows, and former consultant to President Clinton, apparently once indicated that there was documented evidence of life existing (or that once existed) on Mars and was classified as a military secret. Unfortunately for Mr. Morris, this information was asserted publicly by his call girl.[214]

Another key character in the development of this amazing story is one James Hurtak. During his career, Hurtak has so far earned two PhDs and written over a dozen books. Wikipedia summarizes his contributions this way:

> Dr. Hurtak is best known for his book published originally in 1973, entitled **The Book of Knowledge: The Keys of Enoch** where he claimed to receive knowledge from a visitation from Enoch, and in which he wrote about the apparently unusual relationship of the star shafts in the Great Pyramid with the "Belt" of Orion, and where he claims that pyramids were built on Mars for artificial intelligences to gather information. Dr. Hurtak holds the post of Research Director, Great Pyramid of Giza Research Association. He is also co-author of the book entitled The End of Suffering, which he wrote with physicist and **parapsychologist Russell Targ** [one of the original planners and directors of the PSI Spies].[215] [Emphasis added]

Hurtak just also happened to be *Puharich's second in command during the 1970s*. As the summary above notes, it is Hurtak in particular that connects the PSI Spies, ancient Egypt, the "Mars Mystery," and current theories around the linkage of the Giza complex to the constellation Orion.[216] Hurtak was the first to publicly suggest that Cydonia (the human-like face on Mars) was a relic of an ancient civilization and had predicted it would soon be discovered (as it was within two years of his prediction) by the Viking spacecraft.[217] According to Picknett and Prince, Hurtak, not-so-publicly was appointed by THE NINE as "spiritual leader." "One particular similarity was the idea that the civilization of Altea [the space origin of THE NINE according to their account] had created Atlantis, and after a great catastrophe the survivors had influenced the emergence of the civilisations of Egypt and Central and South America… In 1975 Puharich and Whitmore commissioned British writer Stuart Holroyd to write an account of the group, as *Prelude to the Landing on Planet Earth* (1977)."[218] Apparently that landing is, at least from the perspective of their true believers, still in the offing.

Others began channeling THE NINE as well, including Jenny O'Connor, "who was introduced by Sir John Whitmore to the influential *avant garde* **Esalen Institute** in California, where - incredibly - the Nine actually gave

seminars through her" [bold added]. THE NINE were even listed as "members of the staff."[219]

> Almost incredibly, several Soviet officials (who would later rise to high office in the Gorbachev regime) attended Jenny O'Connor's 'Nine' seminars, together with psi enthusiasts Congressman Charlie Rose and Ira Einhorn. The Esalen Institute now runs the Gorbachev Foundation/ USA created by the former Soviet President in 1992 to facilitate a smooth transition from the Cold War days to a better future for all the world. [220]

Jenny O'Connor was connected to EST, a derivative of Scientology founded by Werner Erhard (his real name being John Rosenberg).[221] Erhard had close links to Esalen and even contributed to the remote viewing project at SRI. Likewise, Edgar Mitchell's *Institute of Noetic Sciences* in Palo Alto was connected to Mitchell's Esalen Institute whose mission is: "Dedicated to research and education in the processes of human consciousness to help achieve a new understanding and expanded awareness among all people."[222] While Mitchell is not discussed in detail within this chapter, Richard Hoagland goes into considerable detail and cites Mitchell as a supporter of his theories regarding ancient civilizations that once lived on our moon.[223] I will have more on that in the chapter ahead.

Our last character of import is a gentleman named Jack Sarfatti. With him, as with Hurtak, we see all the connections exhibited once again. So how did Sarfatti get started on his paranormal path? Sarfatti claimed that when he was fourteen, he received a telephone call (in 1952). A machine-like voice was on the other end announcing it was "a conscious computer located on a spaceship from the future. It went on to say that Sarfatti had been chosen as 'one of four hundred bright receptive minds' and that he would begin to 'link up' with the others in twenty years' time."[224]

Sarfatti's own testimony to the players and their connections is instructive: "'Puharich was Geller's case officer in America with money provided by Sir John Whitmore.' And according to James Hurtak, via his Academy for Future Sciences, Puharich 'worked with the U.S. [*sic*] intelligence community.' By implication this was during the early 1970s when Hurtak was also working with him."[225] Sarfatti also claimed to work for the CIA writing: "I was then [1973] simply a young inexperienced 'naïve idiot' in a

very very sophisticated and successful covert psychological warfare operation run by the late Brendan O'Regan of the Institute of Noetic Sciences [Edgar Mitchell's organization] and the late Harold Chipman who was the CIA station chief responsible for all mind-control research in the Bay Area in the 70s."[226]

> Sarfatti would go on to become the director of the Physics/Consciousness Research Group at the *Esalen Institute* and develop a concept of "post-quantum physics" in which, contrary to what Einstein believed, the future can influence the present in detectable and controllable ways… Post-quantum physics purports to be the unified explanation of both ordinary consciousness and extraordinary phenomena like remote-viewing used with spectacular success during the Cold War… I suspect that understanding the physical nature of consciousness as a post-quantum field beyond ordinary space and time will allow us to travel to the stars and beyond both materially and mentally. We shall soon make Star Trek real.[227] [Emphasis added]

Sarfatti places the whole story into its proper context with this summation: "The fact remains… a bunch of apparently California New Age flakes into UFOs and psychic phenomena, including myself, had made their way into the highest levels of the American ruling class and the Soviet Union and today run the Gorbachev Foundation."[228]

And of course, all of this transpires with the advice, consent, and funding from our government. Clearly, our leaders won't fund religion; that is, unless the spiritual beliefs coincide with the occult. *This policy could be the most far reaching legacy of Nazi emigration and Cold War paranoia*.

Conclusion - How PSI Spies Promoted Spiritualism

It is indeed a fascinating story of how the military and CIA not only found merit in psychic capabilities for purposes of spying, but also trained a cadre of very special men (and a few women) with powerful psychic ability in a new science based upon an old art. This cadre worked their way up to high levels of leadership. In their esteemed roles, they promoted clairvoyance (remote viewing) as a psychic means to encounter the spiritual realm serving to implant in the mind of our American culture the cosmology of extraterrestrials and even life on Mars. While many scientists continue to espouse doubt about psychic ability, researchers who know better ignore their skepticism. The supernatural realm nowadays is viewed by most as an inescapable fact. The question is whether those that champion THE NINE, the Mars Mystery, and the Orion Mystery as a key to understand our past and future, *have interpreted their experiences correctly.*

Could it be that the entire space opera has been directed by spiritual forces intent on deceiving humankind? Could it be that the momentum for this story which commences in 1947 (along with the Roswell incident) is the predicted "great deception" of "the last days" spoken of in the teachings of Paul the Apostle? (See II Thessalonians 2:11).

To say the least, how provocative that the U.S. Government embarked upon a path to derive from ancient spirituality a weapon of war. For those of us who still invoke the slogan "In God We Trust," we must question whether America should have gone down this psychic path merely because our enemies were committed to do so. Should our Government have exposed service men and women to the dangers of what they might encounter in becoming 'shaman servicemen' for the military? There is neither time nor space to chronicle the many peculiar things that happened to a number of the remote viewers. Suffice it to say several had untimely deaths and some suffered nervous breakdowns or other forms of psychological trauma as often occurs with encounters in the psychic realm. To be sure, psychic spying is not for sissies.

If our government possessed the perspective of a Judeo-Christian cosmology, we could call for action to be taken to remedy what damage may have been done to these loyal and hard-working men and women. Nevertheless, we

must now live with the consequences of our government's action. The residual social impact serves the development of a popular cosmology anathema to the Bible which is now widespread and growing. It is the author's opinion that this adds additional sanction and energy to the emergence of anti-Christian perspectives, promotion of "The Lie," and perhaps the incarnation of the anti-Christ spirit itself.

Certainly, as we've pointed out our government has had a hand in this - perhaps a far bigger hand than we will ever realize. The belief in UFOs and alien contact; the growing sense of many that our origin is connected to extraterrestrials; the hope that we may be saved from alien beings 'smarter than we' who will soon disclose themselves in more public ways; all of these newly formed notions were helped along through what was enacted by our government over the past sixty years - behind closed doors - with little to no awareness of what the lasting consequences would be. We will explore this in more detail in the next chapter when we encounter a 'contra-extraterrestrial' intelligence group, *The Collins Elite*.

In closing: Yes, Virginia, apparently there are little green men. At the very least, many powerful people in high places now believe it to be so. And the U.S. Government used our tax dollars to not only substantiate this 'fact', but to (unwittingly) promote an alternative cosmology to a world eager to find in such scientific (or pseudo-scientific) research a spiritual answer to humankind's dilemmas. However, as we will see in the next chapter, there is a much deeper awareness and commitment to these 'alien adventures' in the very department of our government established to explore outer space. Once again, the persistent presence of the Nazi invasion in America will be center stage - and the clandestine intentions of those in charge are even more secret and mystical than the CIA's and the U.S. Military's strategy leveraging clairvoyance as a weapon of war.

CHAPTER FIVE:

ESOTERICISM IN ZERO GRAVITY -

AMERICA'S OCCULT AGENDA

FOR EXPLORING THE COSMOS

We deal now, not with things of this world alone, but with the illimitable distances and as yet unfathomed mysteries of the universe… of ultimate conflict between a united human race and the sinister forces of some other planetary galaxy; of such dreams and fantasies as to make life the most exciting of all times.

General Douglas MacArthur, speech to West Point cadets, 1962

When understanding of the universe has become widespread, when the majority of men know that the stars are not sources of light but worlds, perhaps inhabited worlds like ours, then the Christian doctrine will be convicted of absurdity.

Adolf Hitler, from *Hitler's Table Talk* (1953)

Apollo 11 astronauts Buzz Aldrin and Neil Armstrong had…walked on the moon… [An] old carpenter asked me if I really believe it happened. I said, "Sure, I saw it live on television." He disagreed; he said that he didn't believe it for a minute, that 'them television fellers" could make things look real that weren't. Back then, I thought he was a crank. During my eight years in the Washington, I saw some things on TV that made me wonder if he wasn't ahead of his time.

President Bill Clinton, from *My Life*

Spaced Out in Pasadena

It’s captivating how the magicians of the nineteenth century inspired aspects of the most scientific of U.S. governmental projects: the twentieth century space program. In the pages ahead, we will see this evidenced when we investigate the hidden agenda of the National Aeronautic and Space Administration (NASA). However, its ‘dark dawn’ is even more apparent when we examine its early forerunner, the Jet Propulsion Laboratory (JPL) in Pasadena, California.

Following in the footsteps of many other brilliant technologists, the founder of JPL, Jack Parsons was a prodigy; especially when it came to rocket science. While at Caltech, Parsons and his colleague gained insight and inspiration from the German rocket science Willy Ley (working for the Nazis at the time). “Parsons was a self-taught chemist ‘with considerable innate ability.’ Forman [one of his colleagues] was a rocket engine tinkerer. According to [Dr. Theodore] von Kármán, both Parsons and Forman had corresponded with the early German and Russian rocketeers, one of these being Willy Ley, the author of many books on rocket travel. Their back yards in Pasadena "were pockmarked from the effects of rocket explosions." [229]

Figure 16 - Jack Parsons

But Parsons was also a renowned mystic. In fact, he was profoundly steeped in '*black magic*' (the curiosity of technologists who are fascinated by magic and the mystical is an enduring correlation that is clearly counter-intuitive). Eventually Parson would become the head of the Pasadena chapter of *Ordo Templi Orientis* (OTO) in the 1940s, an esoteric order inaugurated by Samuel Mather at the turn of the twentieth century alongside the infamous Aleister Crowley who we've already met several times. Predictably, given the history of its deep influence in England, both Parsons and Crowley were 33˚ Freemasons. Some scholars suggest OTO was created because Mather and Crowley sought to extend Freemasonry's rituals into 'the dark side'; particularly, the explicit practice of *sexual magic*. Indeed, esoteric rituals are one thing; but actively practicing 'sexual magic' is certainly 'a beast of a different color' (an allusion to Crowley's chosen nickname, 'The Beast' if you forgive the pun).

Figure 17 - Dr. Theodore von Kármán with his Jet Assisted Takeoff Team (JATO) in 1940

In 1935, Parsons married Helen Northrup (the Northrup family of course, being no mean aeronautical troop). Jack Parsons was a genuine genius in rocket science, developing solid rocket fuel which overcame many of the dangers with its liquid equivalent. His inventions and designs for 'booster rockets' remain the basis for NASA's rocket propulsion systems even today. Peter Levenda notes: "Parsons [was] able to work out a more stable formula based on a mixture of asphalt and potassium perchlorate, having been inspired by something the ancients called 'Greek fire', appropriately enough for an occultist."[230] According to Wikipedia, "the ingredients and the

processes of manufacture and deployment of Greek fire were extremely carefully guarded military secrets. So strict was the secrecy that the composition of Greek fire was lost forever and remains a source of speculation to this day."[231] Some suppose it a product of chemists in Heliopolis (the center of Egyptian religion) from the seventh century AD. Whatever its composition and origin, its mystery deepens the color if not the science of the story.

Not many realize how illustrious Parson's colleagues were: one was former German Theodore von Kármán who had exited Germany before the War (sensing what was coming), along with an even more conspicuous name of note, L. Ron Hubbard, the founder of Scientology. It is oft-debated today whether or not Hubbard was simply a mystical ne'er-do-well, a confidence man finding a way into the JPL network amidst the 'weird science' being conducted there; or in fact was a U.S. Navy spy sent into JPL to keep an eye on these other two auspicious characters. There are good reasons to believe any of these ominous explanations for his attendance may be factual. However, our intent isn't to speculate on the reason he was involved. We only wish to point out the surreptitious combination of these persons and the irony of how their esoteric interests literally (from day one) played a major part in the formation of the U.S. space program.

Figure 18 - L. Ron Hubbard, in Los Angeles, 1950

The 'Thelema Law' ("Do what you will is the whole of the law") typified the moral laxity present amongst these former friends: while Parson mourned the

loss of Crowley (who died in 1947), Hubbard ran off to Florida with Parson's wife, Helen. This event took place after Helen's sister, Sara, had an affair with Parsons involving the sexual 'magick' of Crowley (*magick* being Crowley's preferred spelling). Five years later in 1952, Parson was mysteriously killed in a fire at his personal laboratory. While declared a suicide, some researchers consider his death highly suspicious. In researching the subject, one makes note of the numerous rocket scientists who wound up experiencing the same fate - apparent victims of the many conspiracies associated with exploring outer space - some of which we will consider in this chapter and the next.

The Impact of the Babalon Working Ritual

Occult historian Peter Levenda, mentioned earlier, wonders whether Parsons was 'in this for himself' or working toward some 'higher goal'? Was it spiritual or ultimately just political? Was he doing it in conjunction with others or merely 'out for himself'?

> With his avowed hatred of Christianity - he called himself the Antichrist, after all - and the suspicions of the American government that he was a walking security risk, is it possible that Parsons was only an element of a larger network of political intrigue, involving Chinese Communists, occultists, and rocket scientists? Was the much-rumored job in Israel [available to Parsons at the time of Israel's statehood] a cover for something more ominous? [232]

Parsons and Hubbard collaborated on one of the most famous of occult invocations of public record, the infamous "Babalon Working" of 1946 [sic, but the way the rite is spelled by occultists], in which they invoked the "Scarlet Woman of Revelation."[233] According to Levenda, the woman is the consort of the Antichrist, representing the 'divine feminine' or 'principle of nature' (i.e., *Isis*, compare to Dan Brown's reverence for the goddess in *The Da Vinci Code*). The net result would be particular romantic and licentious liaisons with his newly conjured girlfriend, Marjorie Cameron, and eventually the affair of Hubbard with Parson's wife.[234] Many interpret the woman as Europa riding the beast of Nimrod (see the European Parliament postage stamp adjacent). Others suggest that the 'whore of Babylon' referred to in the Babalon working occultic ritual is a spiritual force to empower evil. Still others, like evangelical Dave Hunt, see the 'woman who rides the beast' as the Catholic Church. As mentioned earlier, this viewpoint was also the viewpoint of the reformers, Luther and Calvin.

Figure 19 - Euro Parliament Postage Stamp

Richard Hoagland commented on this revered ritual of occultists with these words:

> In magical circles, the Babalon Working is considered a masterpiece of the form, certainly on a part (at least in its level of ambition) with [John] Dee and Edward Kelly's attempts to 'communicate with angels' in the 1500s. The rituals used by Parsons and Hubbard employed the Enochian calls, or angelic language, of John Dee, and specifically required the calling of the Egyptian god Osiris. The purpose of the Babalon Working was to give birth to a "Moonchild" or homunculus, a version of Von Karman's golem. Fundamentally, the operation was designed to open an "inter-dimensional doorway," effectively setting the stage for the appearance of the goddess Babalon in human form. [235]

Conjuring the bride of Antichrist - even if she arrived ahead of the groom - was no mean feat to be sure. But it is well within Parson's ability considering his resume:

> He participated in occult rituals: sex and drug affairs replete with incantations, billowing clouds of incense and weird summonings of incarnate beings to visible appearance. He midwifed L. Ron Hubbard's *Templi Orientis*, thus providing the impetus for the creation of Scientology and subsequent offshoots, such as the Process Church of the Final Judgment. He took the Oath of the Abyss. He called on the Whose of Babylon, and proclaimed himself the Antichrist and an enemy of the Church. He sent rockets into the heavens, and summoned

> demons from hell. And during his Babalon Working rituals in the Mojave Desert in 1946, he “opened a hole in space-time and something flew in.”[236]

Some might even wonder whether the significant increase in the presence of UFOs beginning in 1947 might have been, in part, due to the ritual of Hubbard and Parsons, energized as it was by the powerful *magick* of Aleister Crowley. Of course, making a supposition like this seems a matter of speculation - and there is already enough of the variety we might term ‘highly strange’ to forego jumping to a conclusion lying beyond our ability to prove. Nevertheless, there is a contingent within the federal government which challenges the alien hypothesis - and supports a biblical explanation involving spiritual evil.

Indeed, it is worth noting that Nick Redfern in his recent book, *Final Event*, provides documentation received from a most unusual government intelligence group. This group, the so-called *Collins Elite*, has been investigating the UFO phenomenon for at least three decades concluding the UFO story is far more sinister than simple visitations by curious aliens from far across the galaxy. They conclude the visitors originate from ‘another dimension’ not from outer space. From a particular document cited in his book *Final Event* (e.g., *The Collins Report*), we learn many in the know within our government subscribe to their theory. How does Parsons fit in? The odd materials found at the site of the Roswell crash were considered materials devised in a form of spiritual alchemy by entities from these alternate dimensions (Christians would refer to them as demons). They manufactured these ‘out of this world’ materials (such as the ‘bendable metal’ which always returns to its original shape) to trick us into believing their origins are from star systems far, far away. Sources from the Collins Elite provided this information to Redfern:

> Parsons was the start of it all. They said that [he] was the genesis of this. Was this a doorway that was opened by Parsons to allow these demonic entities in? Or did Parsons give someone else the idea that maybe someone in the government should look into this? That was one of their big concerns: that in order to try and accomplish some sort of military advantage, demonic as aliens - [they] had been contacted and forces had been unleashed that were not going to be able to be

> controlled for very long; or, at least, were not going to be able to be bent to the will of whoever started this project. Satanic rituals, ritual magic and even human sacrifice were all mentioned as being linked with the project. They were convinced the work had to stop." As incredible as it sounds, the startling conclusion we can reach from studying the extracts of *The Collins Report*… is that demonic alchemists carefully created the Roswell debris in a far-off realm or on an equally far-off world. Then, they cunningly and carefully planted it in the wilds of New Mexico, Trojan-Horse-style, knowing that it would soon be found and interpreted as something of an anomalous, otherworldly nature. And more than fifty years later, personnel at Wright-Patterson Air Force Base [in Dayton, Ohio, it is alleged] had achieved some measure of success in conjuring up very similar materials - albeit briefly, under wildly unpredictable means, and from who knows exactly where - via the door-opening teachings of Jack Parsons, hence the Collins Elite's use of the term "the Parsons technique."[237]

In other words, the Collins Elite theorize the *Babalon Working ritual c*alled forth these entities which produced the infamous artifacts supporting the alien hypothesis - beings from far reaches of outer space crashed into the earth with debris serving as the irrefutable proof of their not-so-soft landing. After all, hard evidence is hard to dismiss.

What Does Scientology Have to Do with All This?

Turning our attention to the other member of this dynamic duo: As the reader most likely knows, L. Ron Hubbard went on to author several notable science fiction works as well as found the Church of Scientology including its *fantastic cosmology* (according to many scoffers, yet another form of science fiction!) It goes without saying (and yet I can't help myself) that the 'common man' is familiar with several public figures in America who continue to support the creed of Scientology; notably, Tom Cruise, Kirstie Alley, and John Travolta being the most famous of the Hollywood set - vocal, if not adamant, in their loyalty to Hubbard and his *Dianetics*. One need only recall Cruise's intense emotional defense of Scientology on the Today Show with Matt Lauer (June 24, 2005) to conclude his 'manner of thinking' is more closely aligned with religion than science.

Peter Levenda compares Hubbard to Joseph Smith, calling him 'the Smith of his generation' owing to the same source materials as Smith, notably the "*Keys of Solomon*, the *Books of Moses*, all the basic reading material of the OTO, which itself was based on the European systems of ritual magic including planetary invocations, spirit evocations, demonology, the Qabala and Smith's own particular enthusiasm, Freemasonry."[238]

Eventually Hubbard was frequented with serious mental disorders which terminated his naval career. Hubbard complained of inability to cope with civilian life and declared himself suicidal. Needless to say, the cosmology and religion in question were hardly proven true given the outcome of the physician who prescribed them!

Some have said that Hubbard was completely insincere. He once bragged he could create a religion from science fiction and get intelligent people to believe in it fervently. If so, he certainly succeeded.

In summary: assassination, adultery, esotericism, intrigue, madness, and ritual magic - apparently it's all in a day's work in the strange 'out-of-this-world' project we call space exploration.

Dates, Times, and Latitudes: The Rituals of NASA

One of the most remarkable phenomena of the space program (and easy to prove facts if dozens of examples are sufficient for the reader), concerns space science's 'red letter dates' coinciding with festivals of the occult. JPL commenced this practice at its outset (whether consciously intended or not) and NASA surely perfected it.

Jack Parson and Theodore von Kármán originally worked together at Caltech. In fact, they fired their first test rocket on October 31, 1936 (incidentally, on the very same Halloween that the famous magician Houdini attempted to contact his wife during Houdini's final séance). Another 'coincidence': on their web site JPL comments the American space age "began on January 31, 1958 with the launch of the first U.S. satellite, *Explorer I*, built and controlled by JPL." Levenda curtly identifies January 31 to be another pagan holiday known as *Oimelc* (Christians recognize it as *Candlemas*). Levenda comments:

> One could say, therefore, that the first rocket launch on Halloween was an evocation of the daimon of flight, or perhaps in a darker context a breeching of the barrier between this world and the next, an initiatic rending of the veil of the Temple; space being seen as the domain of both the dead and the higher spiritual forces. The actual birth of the American space program on Candlemas is, of course, also an auspicious event, ripe with mythical connotations.[239]

Levenda grants it may not be the case that the JPL players were fully deliberate about the dates they selected. But his point is "these synchronicities… are evidence of deeper, more sinister forces at work."[240] This assessment is accurate only if the pattern surfaces in so many situations it becomes unreasonable to conclude it a chance occurrence. However, the number of instances in which this pattern appears supplies evidence enough to convince the open-minded.

To get the full debrief, we must go to the source of the accusation, former NASA and CBS Television consultant, Richard Hoagland. Hoagland, along with his co-author, Mike Bara, assembled a magnum opus in 2007 (and updated in 2009) entitled *Dark Mission*, which underscored this startling behavior at NASA along with many other supposed cover-ups and

conspiracies along the way, not the least of which is demonstrating with photographic ‘proof’ from NASA’s vast databank that intelligent life once existed on Mars and our very own moon (although extinct now for millions of years). [241] We turn now to this controversial claim.

To begin with, the number 33 is especially interesting. Hoagland (from this point forward, when I mention Hoagland I’m inferring Bara as well) notes that the ultimate achievement in Freemasonry is to achieve the 33rd degree (to be a 33˚ Freemason). Why is the number 33 so special? Some mystics point out it is connected to the fact the human spine consists of 33 vertebrae (24 articulating vertebrae, and 9 fused vertebrae in the sacrum and the coccyx). Specifically, it links to Hindu wisdom and the *Kundalini* (psychological and spiritual energy of consciousness, based at the spine, represented by an image of intertwined snakes). In fact, Kundalini means *snakes*, and occurs in almost all cultures as sign of ‘wisdom’. These ‘snakes’ wrap themselves about the human spine as ‘higher consciousness’ increases.[242] In vivid contrast, Richard Hoagland quotes Jeremiah 33:3 as one possible reference point: “Call unto me, and I will answer thee, and shew thee great and mighty things, which thou knowest not.” While not referencing this specific religious tie-in, many biblical scholars relate the number ‘33’ to Jesus Christ - ‘3’ being the number of the trinity - and ‘33’ being the supposed age at which Jesus was crucified and resurrected. Additionally, the number in the Bible signifies ‘perfection’.

Another connection lies with the circumscribed ‘tetrahedral form’ (a tetrahedron is a three-dimensional geometric figure formed by four faces) yielding a 19.47˚ angle - also a number we will examine - which possesses a *sine* of .3333.

The number 19.47 relates to Hoagland’s ‘discovery’ of *hyper-dimensionality*. [243] He offers an extensive analysis of the physics of angular momentum and how the more massive spinning planets in our solar system create a vortex at 19.47˚ (19.5˚ rounded) above or below their equator. The giant ‘Red Spot’ on Jupiter is located at this ‘latitude’; likewise, the earth’s largest and most active volcano, Mauna Lea in Hawaii, rests 19.5˚ above the equator. Consequently, both of the numbers - 33 and 19.5 - pop-up repeatedly in NASA’s chosen locations where spacecraft land (on the moon or Mars) and at angles relative to NASA’s locations on Planet Earth. Ominously, it

isn’t just location, but the place in the heavens where select stars reside at the exact moment of a landing or a ‘take-off’. Oftentimes, it is the rising of *Sirius*, the star of Isis, which may be at this angle relative to a spacecraft or a targeted NASA location (specifically, shining above or below the equator of the remote rotating orb - or even above Mission Control in Houston), at the moment when the spacecraft lands on these distant bodies. The consistency of this phenomenon (which Hoagland notes throughout his story every time it occurs - and that is frequently) argues persuasively these choices are conscious and not chance. Hoagland calls this ‘the Ritual Alignment Model’ and he explains how the key elements relate to Egyptian cosmology: “Only five stellar objects in the entire sky have any significance in our version of the ancient Egyptian cosmology; the three belt stars of Orion, representing Osiris [also Apollo in Greek and Roman cosmology]; Sirius, representing Isis; and Regulus in Leo, representing Horus [the son of Isis]. And only five narrow bands of stellar altitude (19.5˚ above and below the horizon, 33˚ above and below the horizon, and the horizon itself) have any significance.”[244]

In other words, NASA’s decision makers are ‘ritualistic’ in their choices. To reiterate, Hoagland argues there are in fact only five acceptable latitudes (related to stellar altitude) that each space landing must include: latitude one at zero elevation; latitudes numbers two and three at 19.5˚ *above* or *below* the horizon, and latitude alternatives four and five at 33.33˚ *above* or *below* the horizon. The only gods of interest are Osiris, Isis, and Horus, who are indeed the primary characters in the Egyptian story of ‘resurrection’ (Osiris is dismembered by his evil brother Set; Isis gathers up the parts, and Isis resurrects him in the form of son Horus).

Besides proving a great test for trigonometry and precision in execution (as if another challenge is necessary to prove their superior intellect), clearly NASA possesses a compulsive obsession - one could even argue (and Hoagland does), a *spiritual* motivation. Hoagland offers the following rationale:

> It is perhaps even more important to understand the symbolic significance of these reference locations in the sky. In the ancient Egyptian stellar religions, the horizon and the meridian were the most significant; as notes previously, the horizon represented a short of netherworld between literal dimensions to the Egyptians - the “world

> of men”… and the “world of the gods.” The meridian in Egyptian cosmology marked an object’s traverse from east to west in a nocturnal rising and setting, symbolizing the daily birth and death of the sun. [245]

Contemplate the following ‘random’ factoids:

> - Werner Von Braun conducted his first V2 tests in America on Launch Complex 33 at the White Sands Missile Range. That might not be much to reflect on except that it was the only launch complex there.
>
> - Likewise, Kennedy Space Center at Cape Canaveral had a grand total of one landing strip. How was it labeled? Runway 33 of course.
>
> - At the first landing on the moon, at exactly 33 minutes post touchdown, Buzz Aldrin supposedly performs a ritual ‘communion ceremony’ (perhaps honoring Osiris and Isis - not Jesus Christ as one might suppose). At this moment, *Regulus* [the regal star of Horus] is 19.5˚ below the horizon as would be viewed (if possible) from the moon’s perspective.[246]

As if these numbers aren’t giving away the game, consider the relationship between the acronym “NASA” and the ancient names of key members of the Egyptian pantheon as translated from hieroglyphs (according to Jay Weidner, alchemical scholar and friend of Richard Hoagland):

> **N**ephtys - the sister of Isis,
>
> **A**usir - Osiris,
>
> **S**et - Osiris’ brother,
>
> **A**set - Isis.[247]

Finally, dates of significant events are often repeated. We could say, in jest, NASA seems particularly proficient in remembering anniversaries. There’s just one problem. One of the key dates commemorated is Hitler’s birthday. *Surveyor 3* landed on the moon, April 20, 1967 while A*pollo 16* landed on April 20, 1972.

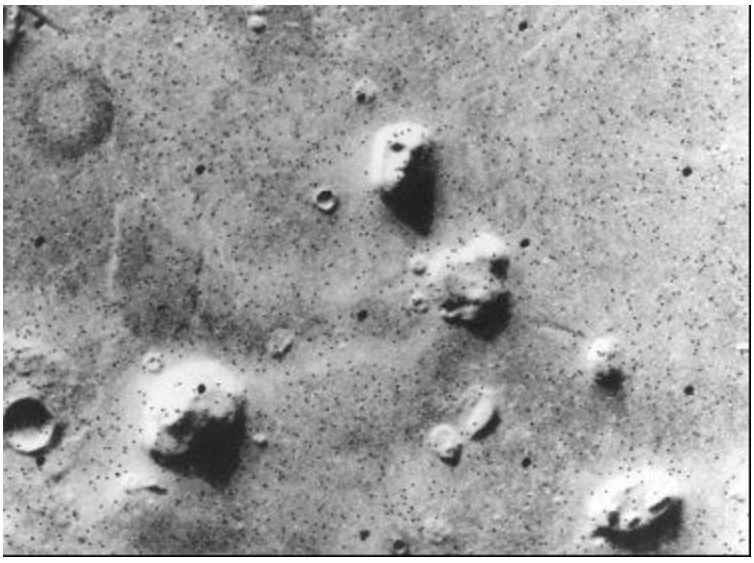


Figure 20 – The ‘City’ of Cydonia on Mars

Then there is the matter of ‘The Face on Mars’ and the fact that the number 19.5 appears ‘built in’ to the structures presented there. While not lying exactly at latitudes of 33 or 19.5 degrees - Hoagland connects the dots between various structures present in NASA’s photos and contrives many cases where these specific angles are apparent.

For those who remember the astronomer Percival Lowell (1855-1916) who first wrote about (and drew) the canals of Mars with the aid of his telescope (probably after straining his eyes for far too many hours - see the figure above), one wonders if this isn’t merely a case of history repeating itself. Mars seemingly makes smart people see things that may not be there.[248]

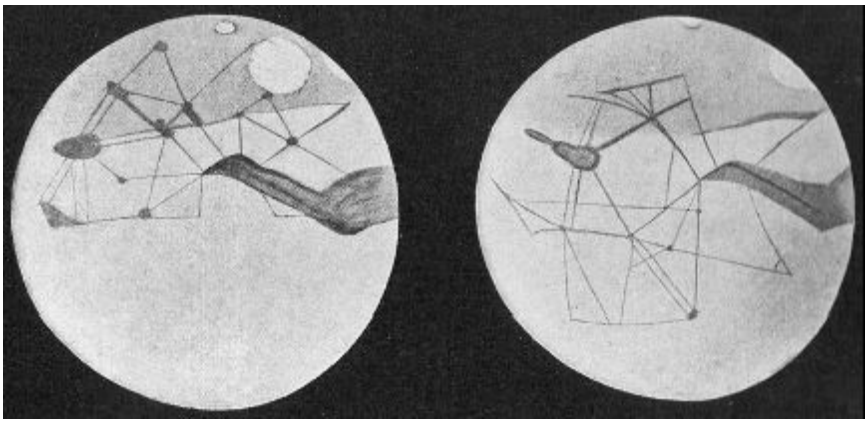


Figure 21 - Percival Lowell’s ‘Canals’

At this point, we begin to wonder if Hoagland has gone too far in his reckoning. This thought crossed the minds of Lynn Picknett and Clive Prince (whose remarks we studied in the previous chapter), when they examined Hoagland's iconoclastic contentions concerning Mars and the origin of life. While not eager to discredit Hoagland's arguments and certainly not intending to question his sincerity - nonetheless, they challenge his observations and especially the extent of his conclusions. They challenge whether such momentous claims are reasonable, let alone justified, given the ramifications as to humankind's beliefs about itself. Aren't these speculations really just the enthusiastic assertions of an eager believer hot on the trail of evidence to prove his personal conspiracy theory and cosmology - specifically, his personal view regarding how humankind came to be? However, we must 'face' these facts head-on to determine if Hoagland's claims should be so cynically dismissed.

TAKING MARS AT FACE VALUE

On July 25, 1976, *Viking I* photographed the Martian region known as the *Cydonia Mensae* from an altitude of 1,162 miles. Lying at roughly 40˚ North latitude, an image seemed to appear of what could be likened to a human face looking skyward. Known as photo F035A72 (the 35th image on the 72nd orbit - see the figure above), it was one of over 51,000 other photos taken during Viking's mission. Eventually other images were found in NASA's stash reaffirming the facial likeness wasn't merely a 'trick of light and shadows' (although NASA claimed it to be nothing more than that), resulting from a single angle of the sun's light.

By 1980, it was publicly admitted the images existed, but without confirmation that they were 'artificial' (i.e., made by intelligent if not sentient beings rather than natural processes). Hoagland stumbled across this issue in 1983 when working on a project related to Saturn's rings, perhaps predictably given our experience in previous chapters discussing remote viewing, at *Stanford Research Institute* (SRI). Picknett and Prince comment:

> To Hoagland's eye there seemed to be a whole complex of pyramidal and other structures, covering an area of about 12 square miles. He excitedly termed it the 'City'. This appeared to be made up of several massive, and some smaller, pyramids, plus some much smaller conical 'buildings' grouped around an open space that he called the 'City Square'. In the north-east corner of the City was an enormous structure that appears to be made up of three huge walls, which Hoagland dubbed the 'Fortress'.
>
> Perhaps the most significant assumption Hoagland made - and surely the one with the least justification on such slight knowledge - was his association of these features with Egypt. As soon as he discovered the City, Hoagland wrote: 'I was reminded overwhelmingly of Egypt.' He then went on to identify various other features in Cydonia: the 'Cliff', a 2-mile-long wall-like feature near a crater 14 miles directly east of the Face; and several small (250 - 400-foot) objects dotted about the Cydonia plain that he called 'mounds'.[249]

Excited about the possibilities, Hoagland received a $50,000 grant in 1983 from SRI after a meeting conducted at the Study of Consciousness in

Berkeley, California.[250] Attending was former intelligence officer Paul Shay (note the intelligence connection), who was then SRI's president of corporate affairs. Importantly, a member of the team for the study included Lambert Dolphin Jr., the physicist who led SRI research teams at Giza from 1973 to 1982. Here again, we see a connection between 'The Face' (soon to be declared by proponents of intelligent life on Mars, a 'sphinx' with human and 'lionesque' features) and the pyramidal complex in Egypt.

Picknett and Prince quote Tom Rautenberg, a social scientist who eventually joined the project team. "At first I thought it was some kind of a joke, or *maybe a complex social experiment being conducted by the CIA* - to study psychological reactions to such a hypothetical discovery. I mean - SRI involvement, 'Faces' on Mars…? What would *you* think...? Was this an elaborate psychological experiment, sponsored by the defense community?" [Emphasis mine][251]

Picknett and Prince assert the involvement of SRI in anything should set off the alarms, but when you combine this with CIA and Defense Department experiments (notably, remote viewing), it is high time to wake up and determine what game is afoot. First, there was their puzzling interest in Giza [to investigate new theories about the meaning and purpose of the great pyramids], "and now they were funding Hoagland's Mars Mission, after having sent Dolphin to Giza in the 1970s…"[252] After all was said and done, what did the study conclude? *That the structures were most likely artificial!* In other words, intelligent beings were behind the construction of these 'buildings'. Consequently, the study recommended efforts should be expended to return to Mars and evaluate the likelihood intelligent life once existed there. Again, by its overt actions, we see our government confirming an anti-biblical cosmology through inferring past alien existence on nearby Mars.

The consequences could hardly be more crucial. Quoting Hoagland from his book, *The Monuments of Mars*: "For it is now clear… that, if appropriately researched and then applied to many current global problems, the potential 'radical technologies' that might be developed from the 'Message of Cydonia' could significantly assist the world in a dramatic transition to a real 'new world order'… if not a literal New World."[253] Picknett and Prince observe, "In other words, Hoagland is implying that these putative [reputed]

extraterrestrials actually created the human race, and this idea, odd though it may appear, is rapidly gaining currency throughout the world." In 2011, the third season of "Ancient Aliens" on the History Channel is sure to please advocates of this theory and stands as proof that this 'new take' on 'where we came from' is endorsed by no small group of disenchanted church goers.

Picknett and Prince also conjecture that it suits NASA, despite his accusations of its conspiratorial intent to keep the truth quiet, to "have Hoagland at the center of attention." From the author's perspective, this actually makes perfect sense if the goal is to slowly leak such discoveries to the public in the spirit of the Brookings Institute report issued in 1960 (to be discussed in the next chapter). Having a scientist 'fanatic' get the word out maintains NASA's 'plausible deniability' concerning the matter of whether intelligent life once existed on Mars. Should the public decide such speculations to be politically incorrect or to be factual… *no matter*. NASA can quietly stand by and wait to either jump on the bandwagon or derail it at its sole discretion all the while maintaining credibility.

Hoagland - Can We Take His Claims Seriously?

If the reader doubts any duplicity on the parts of Hoagland and Bara, the question might still be raised whether these authors are off balance. Do their conjectures have merit? We should consider how probable their assertion is that mathematics was employed in the way the various structures were 'laid out' at Cydonia. Mathematics (as we've seen before given the value it possesses as declared by Pauwels and Bergier regarding 'the fantastic' - see Chapter Two of Book One), is an objective witness for intelligence at work. Graham Hancock interprets the inference from this factor as follows:

> Still, we cannot deny that the act of placing a tetrahedral object on Mars at latitude 19.5˚ contains all the necessary numbers and symbolism to qualify as a "message received" signal in response to the geometry of Cydonia. Moreover, such a game of mathematics and symbolism is precisely what we would expect if NASA were being influenced by the type of occult conspiracy that Hoagland, for one, is always trying to espouse.[254]
>
> However, Hancock actually reverses course concluding in his book *The Mars Mystery* (1998) that Hoagland's contention regarding an ancient civilization and its connection to Egypt has substance. He accepts both the reality of Cydonia's intelligent origin as well as its encoded mathematical message. Furthermore, he likewise agrees Cydonia is linked with the civilizations of ancient Egypt. Picknett and Prince critique this fanciful view; once again, asserting it is a case of circular argumentation (setting out to prove what you have already assumed to be true):
>
> The basic argument is that, because there are pyramids and a Sphinx in both Giza and Cydonia, the two are connected. But of course that depends on the Face on Mars being a Sphinx. The Cydonia clique describes it as being Sphinx-like; indeed, James Hurtak was using such emotive language even before it was officially discovered… [Hoagland claims, that one] is 'simian' in appearance, the other 'leonine' - an anthropoid and a lion. The great Sphinx at Giza is a man's head on a lion's body. Conclusion: we have two Sphinxes - in close proximity with pyramids - on both worlds!"[255]

According to Picknett and Prince, acting in the spirit of the Anderson Cooper's mantra ('keeping them honest'), Hancock and frequent co-author Robert Bauval talk as if Hoagland's work is scientifically proven. Indeed, looking at the face of Cydonia, it is easy for the imagination to get the best of one's faculty of sight and recognition, composing a fanciful portrait of something (or someone) that *really isn't there*. This author wonders if it isn't the case of one authority lending credibility to another by merely citing the same absurd view; and that akin to members of a cult reinforcing one another's beliefs - a form of fallacious reassurance - in which their absurdly held beliefs 'must be true' because the group members all find it comforting to reassure one another they hold their unusual perspective in common. When contrary evidence conflicts with their beliefs (e.g., Festinger's 'cognitive dissonance'), they can disregard it out of hand. Subsequently, the 'cause of truth' succumbs to the enthusiasm of cult proponents, an enthusiasm energized by subconscious 'reasons to believe' having little to do with objective facts. Additionally, in the case of Hancock, Bauval, and even Hoagland, the pecuniary motive is also a matter hard to dismiss - for conspiracy theories sell a lot of books.

Joseph Farrell, who we will discuss again momentarily, considers Hoagland a friend and apparently is sympathetic to his cause. However, although Farrell seems to consider the conspiracy true and the 'hyper-dimensional' insight revelatory (regarding vortices at 19.5˚ latitude on massive bodies), the author hasn't found evidence that Farrell specifically confirms Hoagland's view that Cydonia contains 'artificial' structures.[256] Indeed, while there are strengths in Hoagland's conspiracy theory many find persuasive if not conclusive (including this author), his supposition 'the Face' evincing life on Mars begins to stretch the credulity of even the most enthusiastic believer in 'intelligent life on other planets'. Indeed, perhaps the greatest support for the ancient existence of Martian intelligence comes from the military's remote viewers who, as we documented in the last chapter, frequently 'visit' Mars, confounded by what they 'see'. If the reader regards their witness as worthy evidence, Hoagland's Martian theory remains compelling.

On the other hand, although Hoagland's Martian theory is extreme in the author's opinion, Hoagland's conspiracy theory - his 'ritual alignment model' appears substantiated because it is supported by compelling evidence. A

pattern of repeating ‘synchronicities’ through many demonstrated events strongly suggests we are dealing with intention and not coincidence.

One final example to confirm this point: the landing site of NASA’s return to Mars in July, 1997, *Pathfinder*, was centered at a designated ‘landing ellipse’ precisely at “19.5˚ North x 33.3˚ West” which is exactly where the tetrahedral-shaped landing craft put down its three legs in perfect triangular fashion - as if the design of the spacecraft itself was a message to the Martians.

Nick Redfern, author also of the book, *The NASA Conspiracies*, provides the following summary, citing the research done by one Mac Tonnies published in 2003, regarding the ‘Face’ which clearly gives Hoagland and his theory ‘the benefit of the doubt’:

> When it comes to the still thriving controversy surrounding the Face on Mars, the late Mac Tonnies made a very strong, logical case to the effect that dismissing the face as a mere trick of the light could prove to be a major disaster, scientifically, historically, and culturally. It remains to be seen whether NASA is actually guilty of hiding hard evidence that the face is an artificial construct, or merely prefers to play down the whole matter because it has become tired of dealing with accusations that it is sitting on top of secret proof that intelligent, long-extinct Martians constructed the face countless millennia ago. [257]

Certainly, the fact NASA remains relatively quiet on the issue appears to be the equivalent of ‘no comment’ - suggesting they do have knowledge of matters they do not wish to disclose. That reluctance to engage openly in the dialogue strongly hints there is much more to the story than John Q. Public may be allowed to learn.

For further substantiation of Hoagland’s point of view, please delve into *Dark Mission*.[258] However, plan to burn some midnight oil. It is a lengthy, intriguing, but somewhat arduous read.

A personal and recent experience to further compound the mystery: My brother’s son-in-law works currently as a project manager (i.e., a genuine rocket-scientist) at JPL in Pasadena on the current Mars Rover project *Curiosity* set for launch in November, 2011 (landing planned in August of

2012). Before launch, he was baffled by the request from the ‘higher ups’ who wanted him to outfit the Rover with a microphone. A microphone? Who, he wondered, were the NASA executives planning to talk with? Possibly provoking his incredulity: my brother had discussed remarks I had made concerning JPL’s colorful founder, Jack Parsons, in one of my previous books. My ‘nephew-in-law’ might have been driven to wonder what was in store for this spacecraft, and who it might meet up with when completing its mission to Mars.

Conclusion - What Is and Isn't Compelling

Coincidence becomes incredulous after three or four examples. When it is possible to log a dozen or more puzzling instances, the conclusion is indisputable: someone is obsessed with rituals in the name of a religion they hold dear. The fact they do it on the taxpayer's 'nickel', and by their actions imply loyalty to a pagan religious doctrine, is yet another 'bitter pill to swallow' for those who might question whether this is a fitting way to spend taxpayer dollars. It is, however, yet another confirmation of the author's thesis in Book One of *Power Quest* that Americans are incurably religious, even if their religion is blithely occult and unmistakably mystical.

While Richard Hoagland offers a number of fascinating theories regarding what those in charge of the space program are really 'up to', his several distinct theories aren't all equally convincing. Even if we regard the possibility life exists elsewhere in the universe - and that we believe life may have been present at one time on the planet Mars - the issue of whether 'the Face' is compelling evidence 'at face value' (as proof of life) seems more romantic than scientific. While an exciting hypothesis, it is *reaching* in this author's opinion.

Our military's remote viewers claimed to see sings of intelligence on Mars - namely, underground cities with hibernating humanoids that may have something to do with our past. And yet, there remains no way to verify such claims without exploring the Martian landscape with 'boots on the ground'. Unfortunately, the prospect of first-hand, human exploration of Mars now seems only a distant hope (and not a funded project) for years from now - far, far future.

However, Hoagland's 'ritual alignment model' appears to have real merit. Since the players in this game are here on earth and their actions are matters of official record, we can examine the facts and attempt to verify Hoagland's claims. As we explore the association further in the next chapter - particularly the evidence of Nazi leadership in NASA during the 1970s - the fact that esoteric rocket scientists and their mythologies played a major part in exploring space in this author's opinion, achieves an irrefutable status.

What most intrigues, however, is whether the implications of the NASA 'religion' extends to the most famous of all conspiracies: the assassination of

an American president. That the JFK assassination and the NASA scientists can be discussed in the same breath is something new in the conspiracy debate. Could it be that the émigré Nazis had a hand in killing the American president? Could it be that his discovery of how extensively Nazis were permitted into America and specifically into the ‘military industrial complex' was a key reason why JFK was murdered in Dallas? Or could it be that the possible collaboration of Kennedy and Khrushchev to land a man on the moon would upset the apple cart arranged by the Nazis to protect their best kept secret - that other Nazis, operating outside the Soviet and American camps, were working on a ‘third space program’ unbeknownst to most members engaged in the much publicized space race? And finally, we must wonder if this ‘break-away’ group had developed a spacecraft whose capability surpassed all others with exotic technology only dreamed of by conventional rocket science.

CHAPTER SIX:

BEWARE THE MILITARY-INDUSTRIAL COMPLEX!

Sometimes, truth actually is stranger than the wildest of all science-fiction scenarios.

Nick Redfern, *The NASA Conspiracies* (2011)

There are no essential differences in the ultimate aims of two civilizations such as the U.S.S.R. and the U.S.A. The Europe of the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries supplied the motive - power - which is still functioning.

Louis Pauwels and Jacques Bergier
The Morning of the Magicians (1960)

Thus, the 1947 UFO sightings attracted two men - (Fred) Crismon and (Guy) Banister - who both could come under suspicion twenty years later for their supporting roles in the Kennedy assassination. The odds against this happening must be astronomical. It is the constant appearance of "coincidences" like these that leave most amateur conspiracy theorists apoplectic…In this case, we have Operation Paperclip, UFOs, and the Kennedy assassination all written on the same thin sheet of onionskin parchment. Nazis, aliens, and political murder. At this point, we can almost sympathize with Pontius Pilate, who asked, "What is truth?" - and the temptation to wash one's hands of the whole matter is almost too strong.

Peter Levenda, *Sinister Forces* (2005)

Strange Bed-Fellows in Space: Nazis and Freemasons

As we've demonstrated from the outset, the space program was founded and led by occultists. We recounted the notorious exploits of Jack Parsons and L. Ron Hubbard in the previous chapter. But this was only the first step. The second was the clandestine cooperation of numerous Freemasons, who (giving them the benefit of the doubt) acted on behalf of humankind and a presumed goal to conquer 'outer space'. The third step was the infiltration and eventual co-opting of America's leadership in space exploration by German Nazi rocket scientists, headed up of course, by Werner Von Braun (1912-1977). (See the figure below of 104 German scientists, a reuniting of the *Peenemünde* science team). Given the recital of mythology we've covered, it would seem that Freemasonry's cult of Isis and Osiris, the emphasis on reason and intellect, as well as the freedom to pursue an agenda severed from the Church and its dogma, would allow Masonry to adapt well with the mythology of Nazism, based as it was upon many of the same ideas. But this turns out not to be the case.

Figure 22 - Von Braun's Team Re-unites at White Sands, 1946

Hitler loathed Freemasonry. We can rest assured that his hatred was not a result of being a member in good standing in the Catholic Church (which he appeared to maintain during the early segment of his ascension to power) inasmuch as Catholicism had banned its members from joining Freemasonry since the nineteenth century. Instead, Hitler's hatred partly stems from the fact that his Nordic mythology of Thule, Hyperborea, Odin, Thor, the Valkyries, and so on, was not 'on the same page' with the mythology of

Egypt which dominated the Mediterranean (Egypt's mythology was the perfection of Babylonian myths - but the Phoenicians, Greeks, and Romans accepted the various Egyptian gods although in most cases they renamed them). The Norse mythology was quite distinct with its emphasis upon Valhalla and its differentiated pantheon. Furthermore, Hitler's intent was to distinguish the German race, to return to its supposed Aryan roots, to eliminate the Jews, and displace any other Semitic cultural artifacts which influenced the destiny of the Fatherland. Masonry, built as it was on the mythology of Semitic cultures, primarily Egyptian 'sun and star' worship and secondarily the building of the Hebrew Temple, would not be welcomed in the world of the Third Reich.

Quoting from the controversial conspiracy theorist Jan Van Helsing and his book, *Secret Societies: Their Power and Influence in the Twentieth Century*, Joseph P. Farrell provides what may be the most provocative explanation for *why the Nazis hated the Freemasons* - namely, the view that the Freemasons and the Zionists were seen in collusion with one another - their rivalry betraying ancient millennia-old competition between Tibetan hierarchies and demi-gods. Indeed, it was the 'conspiracy' of Jews and Freemasons that Hitler attacked vehemently as the enemy of Germany and the creation of the Übermensch, the iconic Nietzschean name for the 'master race'. However, the history predated both the Jews and Masons:

> Thule was actually Atlantis and - contrary to all other researchers of Tibet and India - he [Hitler's 'geo-politician', General Karl Haushofer] said that the surviving Thule-Atlanteans were separated into two groups, a good one and an evil one. Those who called themselves after their oracle *Agharti* - were the good and settled in the Himalaya region, the evil ones were the *Shamballah* - who wanted to subjugate humanity and they went West. He [Haushofer] maintained that the fight between the people of Agarta and Shamballah had been going on for thousands of years and that in the Third Reich, the Thule Gesellschaft as Agartha's [sic] representative - continued it against the representatives of Shamballah, the Freemasons and the Zionists. This perhaps was his mission.[259]

Consequently, it should not be surprising when there later comes a point that the Freemasons are overtaken, and intentionally so, by the Nazi scientists

embedded in America's space program. Simply put: the German rocket scientists wrested leadership from the more innocuous Freemasons who, up to that time (during the 1960s), were in charge of running the American project. To supply some of the particulars on this transition, we return to Hoagland.

We learn that John F. Kennedy, at the request of Lyndon Johnson his Vice-President, appointed James E. Webb as the administrator of NASA. Webb, a 33˚ Freemason, appointed Kenneth S. Kleinknecht director of Project Mercury. Ken Kleinknecht was brother of C. Fred Kleinknecht, the *Sovereign Grand Commander of the Supreme Council, 33˚ Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite Freemasons, Southern Jurisdiction for the United States of America*, from 1985 to 2003. Their father, C. Fred Sr., was yet another 33˚ Mason of the Scottish rite as well as a member of its Supreme Council. Then there are the Mercury Astronauts. Four of the original seven were Freemasons: John Glenn, Wally Schirra, Gus Grissom, and Gordon Cooper. Of the twelve who moon walked, four were Freemasons. Hoagland indicates Neil Armstrong and Alan Shepard were also likely to be members of the Scottish Rite.[260]

But it wasn't just the Masons who cornered the playgrounds of our moon and Mars. Because of Operation Paperclip, the notorious legal 'kidnapping' of Nazi Scientists immediately at the end of World War II, dozens (if not hundreds) of rocket scientists led by Von Braun, became instrumental in developing America's rocket technology.[261] Hoagland comments, "Once they cleared the hurdles imposed by Paperclip, Von Braun and his team were quickly sent out to White Sands Missile Range, in New Mexico.[262] There, they conducted tests on the captured V2s [missiles] and worked on developing bigger and more powerful rockets. Von Braun immediately showed his expertise and abilities as an organizer, and was eventually rewarded by being appointed technical director of the U.S. Army ballistic weapon program."[263] Hoagland discloses:

> In 1950, Von Braun and his team of "former" Nazis were transferred to the Army's Redstone Arsenal near Huntsville, Alabama, where they developed the Redstone, Jupiter and Jupiter-C ballistic missiles. Even before this period, Von Braun and his cohorts were so certain of their "value" that they made no attempt to conceal neither their Nazi pasts

> or, apparently, their love for the Third Reich; having beaten the system through Paperclip, they evidently didn't care who knew of their "ardent Nazi" histories. Most, if not all, had elaborate Nazi records, and were still heavily committed to the party's ideologies and apparently even openly practiced its "sacraments."
>
> The group freely displayed swastikas and other Nazi symbols on their clothes and on signs in the camps where they were kept for years after their immigration to the U.S. [264]

In 1955, Von Braun became a U.S. citizen. After Sputnik was successfully launched by the Soviets in 1957, Von Braun was ready to make his move. He predicted that the first rocket entry of America, *Vanguard*, would fail. He was right on target. After it blew up on the launch pad, Von Braun and team demonstrated their prowess by launching America's first successful satellite, *Explorer 1*, on January 31, 1958. Thereafter, NASA was formed and Von Braun was, to quote Hoagland, "ready to stamp his ticket."

After the Apollo 16 landing on Hitler's birthday, April 20, 1972, "the infamous Leader of the Third Reich - the key players behind this entire NASA lunar ritual were now overwhelmingly identified as none other than the NASA members of the former Reich. NASA - at the highest levels - had effectively been 'taken over' from the Masons by Von Braun." [265]

In this author's view, Hoagland provides a rationale for the connection between the Nazis and the Freemasons, but fails to discern why they were in opposition from the standpoint of competitive mythologies. However, he rightly points out they share a common heritage with the Knights Templar (the German contingent of this infamous order from the twelfth century was known as the *Teutonic Knights*). Quoting Dr. Nicholas Goodrick-Clarke from his book, *The Occult Roots of Nazism*: "Goodrick-Clarke also [along with the Freemasons] shows that Hitler and Himmler believed that these Egyptian gods themselves came from 'Atlantis' - which they believed was 'a high civilization established on Earth by extraterrestrials.'" Hoagland surmises, "In this view, the ancient, uninterrupted bloodline from Horus to the present was the ultimate source of the natural supremacy of the 'Aryan race' itself. It was this 'divine right of descent' which gave the modern Nazis, in their view, their prerogative to rule all other men on planet Earth." [266]

While agreeing that the Nazis point to Atlantis as the origin of the Aryan race (one of the so-called Seven Root Races, of which ironically, the Jews also are considered a ‘descendant’ - but of lesser purity), there remain vivid distinctions between the two as mentioned earlier. To recall to the reader’s mind, Freemasonry exalts the Egyptian origins of ‘ancient wisdom’; while the Nazis combined other Nordic sources along with the fictional belief in “the Vril” (Bulwer-Lytton), and even the Manichean version of Christianity inherent in the ‘German’ quest for the Holy Grail (von Eschenbach’s 13th century epic poem as enshrined in Richard Wagner’s *Parsifal*) fundamental to German heritage. The Nazis and the Freemasons held rival mythologies. They had a common root - but the two plants grew in opposing directions. Hoagland fails to make this fact clear.

BROOKINGS BOTHERS

It is important at this point to mention the infamous *Brookings Report,* completed in 1960 and read entered into the Congressional Record in 1961, which was so fundamental to the encouragement of clandestine operations within the space program. The report essentially indicated that the public would be frantic if extraterrestrial life was discovered anywhere - whether here on earth today or even if proven to exist at remote locations explored in outer space. In other words, it became policy that the discovery of ancient artifacts proving ‘Kilroy was here’ in the form of alien spacecraft, robots, or other structures would be a matter of national security. The truth must not leak out. We provide below several key quotations from the Brookings report. Although never officially adopted, this ‘policy’ reigned supreme in our military and space programs. Arguably, it still does:

> - "While face-to-face meetings with it [intelligent extraterrestrial life] will not occur within the next 20 years (unless its technology is more advanced than ours, qualifying it to visit Earth), artifacts left at some point in time by these life forms might possibly be discovered through our space activities on the moon, Mars, or Venus." – page 215
>
> - "Anthropological files contain many examples of societies, sure of their place in the universe, which have disintegrated when they had to associate with previously unfamiliar societies espousing different ideas and different ways of life; others that survived such an experience usually did so by paying the price of changes in values and attitudes and behavior." – page 215
>
> - "Such studies would include historical reactions to hoaxes, psychic manifestations, unidentified flying objects, etc. Hadley Cantrel's study, 'Invasion from Mars' (Princeton University Press, 1940), would provide a useful if limited guide in this area. Fruitful understanding might be gained from a comparative study of factors affecting the responses of primitive societies to exposure to technologically advanced societies. Some thrived, some endured, and some died." - page 226

Moreover, we should note how the *New York Times* depicted the essence of the report with its ominous headline in 1960, "Mankind is Warned to Prepare

For Discovery of Life in Space: Brookings Institution Report Says Earth's Civilization Might Topple if Faced by a Race of Superior Beings." After this report was publicized, further information discussing alien contact and its effect on our society were seldom, if ever, openly discussed by the government.

While a controversial subject (just how much had the government chosen to heed the Brookings' recommendation), it certainly appears the report was a major factor in why the government took such a negative stance on the question of UFOs and why, only recently, it softened its position to one of 'non-committal' on the UFO matter. Basically, NASA won't admit whether or not it knows something the rest of us might want to learn about extraterrestrials. As discussed earlier, Nick Redfern cites *The Collins Elite* who asserted there are elements in our government who felt they could safely negotiate with the aliens (and have) to acquire advanced technology. To be sure, many await with bated breath, 'full disclosure' when this cat will be let out of the bag. For evangelicals (and for The Collins Elite), this is tantamount to *doing a deal with the devil*. It is certainly not something our government wishes to make public.

However, the relevant issue in this study is how the 'Brookings' counsel provoked the leadership of NASA to operate secretly and keep the public permanently in the dark - at least up to the time of this writing. Mounting the pulpit against this cult of secrecy, Hoagland and Bara provide this powerful sermonette which no doubt finds sympathy among many who share his frustration:

> Once they had established themselves in all the key positions throughout the new Space Agency - Von Braun, Webb, Von Karman, El-Baz and all the rest were then able to proceed with plans they had apparently been incubating quietly for many years "pre-NASA." With "Brookings" as a specifically-designed political excuse for keeping key future NASA discoveries secret, the elite leadership of this clandestine occult hierarchy were able to set in motion an "inner program" - carefully hidden from the general public and the "honest" side of NASA - which appears to have been no less than a massive technological effort to confirm their shared religious visions - of a literal "Duat" [the Egyptian 'netherworld'] - *on the surface of the*

> *Moon, and beyond*… to which they… *and they alone*… deserved sole access [emphasis in original].[267]

In other words, to resolve the question "the reason why," Hoagland asserts the answer lies at the core of this power quest to explore outer space*: the common commitment to a mystical system of belief and an elitist sense of self-importance*. This megalomaniac mindset is what Freemasons, the NAZIs, and 'magicians' (like Parsons, Hubbard, and Crowley) all share. "Freemasonry holds the most ancient gods of Egypt - Isis, Osiris, Horus and Set, and their complicated, incestuous relationships - as being the cornerstone of a cosmology and a religion older than 'civilization' itself… of which they see themselves as now playing out major, crucial roles…"[268] "'Space' is destined to remain the sole possession of only those with these 'proper bloodlines and perspectives'… but not for any of the rest of us."[269]

Hoagland promises to release a sequel, *Dark Mission II* focused on the so-called 'secret space program'. However, at this time the book hasn't yet seen the light of day. Still, the subject of 'two programs', one public and one private, yields many stories escaping notice beyond what was publicly attempted in outer space. For while it confirms the conspiracy of 'mythically-minded' scientists in charge of reconnoitering space, it also sheds light on how those at the helm acquired influence in American politics along the way.

Are Two Space Programs Really Better than One?

We begin by reminding the reader of the popular albeit rarely believed conspiracy theory, that NASA really didn't go to the moon - the whole drama was a hoax. Nick Redfern succinctly recaps the related story of a falsified mission to Mars with these words:

> The 1978 release of the science-fiction/conspiracy movie *Capricorn One* added further fuel to the already scalding fire. In the film, the crew of Capricorn One - played onscreen by James Brolin [father of Josh Brolin], Sam Waterston [of 'Law and Order' fame], and O.J. Simpson [surely, you will recall him] - is awaiting the liftoff of the rocket that will take them on the first manned mission to the planet Mars. What the crew does not know, however, is that NASA has secretly learned that the ship's life-support system is destined to completely fail, and, as a result, sending the three astronauts to the red planet will be akin to signing their death warrant. The result: NASA is forced to fake the Martian landing from inside an old aircraft hangar situated at a decommissioned military base somewhere in Texas. At the time of this writing [Nick's book was published in 2011], a remake of *Capricorn One* is in the works, which is sure to fan the flames of controversy surrounding the Apollo moon landings.

The first aspect of the idea of a 'clandestine' space program is that the project was never completed. We didn't go to the moon. We had our reasons for faking it - although never disclosed to the public. It was our best kept secret. However, nowadays this conspiracy is taken as seriously as the perspective that the earth is flat.[270] Yet Redfern points out, keeping a secret when no more than five people know about it isn't easy. When 500,000 know the secret (the number of people involved in the Apollo space program), one can rest assured hoodwinking the public stretches credulity to the breaking point. And yet, some space-age secrets are beyond much dispute.

Joseph P. Farrell's account regarding the nature and fate of the most astounding *wunderwaffe* of the Nazi's - *The Bell* - opens a 'can of worms' for conspiracy theorists in several realms. During the course of explaining the possibilities and implications of this time-machine-cum weapon of mass

destruction, we are provided as background a comprehensive treatment of what is known as “The Two Space Program Hypothesis”. As we discover, the theories regarding the true nature of the space program, i.e., the real goal of America’s race into space, are far more complex and menacing than we can possibly imagine - unless, of course, the reader been closely following the story laid out between the covers of this book.

Nevertheless, the ‘two space program’ hypothesis which purports key aspects of the ‘moon missions’ were fiction, is the considered opinion of English authors Farrell cites, Mary Bennett and Davis S. Percy, from their book *Dark Moon: Apollo and the Whistleblowers* (1999). Bennett and Percy promote the theory that Mission Control fabricated a number of story elements. Theirs is a tale with quite a different twist, namely that the plans for space were laid out during World War II. Supposedly, the superpowers (namely, the US, England, and the Soviet Union) worked together during the ‘moon’ phase in the 1960s; but their interests were never aligned with ‘the People’, representing a project organized by the Nazis at the end of the war before disbanding and escaping into the arms of the Russians and Americans - in effect ‘splitting the sheets’ - between the superpowers, determining where the various Nazi scientists and technicians should go.[271] Bennett and Percy indicate that the Russians used ‘their Germans’ to teach students at the Universities in order to free themselves of the Nazis as soon as possible. In contrast, America chose to put them in leadership positions in the program itself. “Most conveniently, at the end of WWII the political globe had been divided into two - one ‘public sector’ in the West and one private sector in the East. What could be more simple [sic] than to exploit this division and lower the iron curtain in exactly the same ways the safety curtain comes down in the theater. This ruse enabled the organizers of the space project to go to work in relative obscurity…In reality the objectives were not those of competition. These two teams, while wearing different colours, were in truth on the same side.”[272]

However, exactly what these different teams commonly held true was startling and became the hidden motivation behind space exploration: “We propose that the secret and subtle aspect… was the certain awareness by the authorities of the existence of *extraterrestrial intelligence*” (emphasis added). Moreover, the specific goal was a manned flight to Mars, with the moon only

a stepping stone. Yet, according to Farrell, Bennett and Percy “do not offer much to elaborate why they believe these things.”[273] Indeed, not much is proffered other than the core of their argument which relies heavily upon their discovery of the discrepancy concerning the calculated ‘gravity of the moon’ (that is, as Sir Isaac Newton would calculate it) and the reality that the moon much heavier. This epiphany would necessitate a different propulsion system for the Lunar Excursion Module (the ‘LEM’) in order to ‘lift off the moon’s surface’ - an order of magnitude different than what NASA publicly explained. Percy and Bennett’s leap in logic: the power source must have been an exotic technology *derived from the Third Reich’s 1940’s rocket science*.

While true that Von Braun had the moon on his mind much more than destroying suburbs in London with V2 Missiles, we must ask, “Is the evidence really there to support Von Braun’s wish to be ‘flown to the moon’?” [274] Even if we grant that Nazi technology was decades ahead of Anglo-Saxon or Russians science, saying Bennett and Percy’s theory is far-fetched doesn’t begin to describe the level of doubt most commentators would toss their way. No wonder many reviewers found their suppositions ‘landing firmly in the outer space terrain’ marked *incredulous*! Still, the mathematics regarding the anomaly of the moon’s real gravity (compared to what planetary physics would predict) is an intriguing scientific puzzler worthy of further study for those so inclined and possessing skills far surpassing this author’s! However, some hints to get the investigation off the ground: there are those believing the moon hollow and likewise, others who believe it an artificial satellite. Then again, before Apollo landed on the moon, some thought it made of green cheese.

Did NASA Participate in Kennedy's Assassination?

The next entry in Farrell's account consists of the amazing *Torbitt Document*, which in addition to offering yet another version of the 'two-space program' scenario, provides an amazing and widely unknown explanation for why John F. Kennedy was assassinated. I must forewarn the reader to 'strap yourself in'. The suppositions are so fantastic this author is left wondering how anyone (sane or not) could possibly fabricate such claims. Nevertheless, the more one researches this topic, the stranger the allegations become. And the greater the evidence to support the 'high strangeness'.

Kenn Thomas in his book about this subject, *NASA, Nazis, and JFK: The Torbitt Document and the JFK Assassination* (1996) summarizes the amazing contentions it sets forth: "It [the document] makes connections to such then-unknown governmental spy agencies as Defense Industrial Security Command [DISC] Division Five of the FBI [mentioned in Chapter 2]; it suggests that a former prime minister of Hungary was the infamous "umbrella man" seen in the Zapruder film; it introduces to the assassination lore such personalities as Fred Chrismon [sic, Crismon] as one of the railroad tramps behind the grassy knoll." [275]

We are compelled to ask like Butch and Sundance when astonished by the lawmen tracking them in the great western, *Butch Cassidy and the Sundance Kid (1969)*, "Who are those guys?"

1. Crismon, we are told, is the famous critic of Ken Arnold, the 'first man' to claim seeing a UFO in America in 'modern days' (post-World War II, 1947) in the Seattle-Tacoma area a few weeks before the Roswell incident transpires. According to Jim Marrs, Crismon may have been a CIA operative responsible for 'disruption' of the exchange of materials to Wright-Patterson Field (later, Air Force Base). [276]
2. The former Hungarian prime minister is Ferenc Nagy; a puppet of the Nazis during World War II who was involved in the project as the leader of a "group of Eastern European exiles of right-wing political complexion." [277] (Of course, after our discussion in Chapter 2, involvement of eastern European Nazis in American affairs becomes 'par for the course').

3. The Torbitt Document unmasks D.I.S.C., connecting it not only to the FBI but to NASA and *to the Kennedy assassination.*

Although a lengthy quotation, the devil is indeed in the details and deserves to be given a full hearing:

> The killing of President Kennedy was planned and supervised by Division Five of the Federal Bureau of Investigation, a relatively small department within the FBI whose usual duties are espionage and counter-espionage activities.
>
> Actually, Division Five acted dually with the Defense Intelligence Agency which was acting on behalf of the Joints Chiefs of Staff (sic) in the Pentagon. Directly under the two-pronged leadership of Division Five and the DIA was the Control Group, their highly secret police agency – the *Defense Industrial Security Command*. The Defense Industrial Security Command has always been kept secret because it acts, in addition to its two official control organizations, on behalf of NASA, the Atomic Energy Commission, U.S. Information Agency, and the arms, equipment, ammunition, munitions and related miscellaneous supply manufacturing corporations contracting with NASA, the AEC, USIA, and the Pentagon…(emphasis added).
>
> The [DISC] had its beginnings when J. Edgar Hoover in the early 1930's organized the police force of the Tennessee Valley Authority at the request of David Lilienthal… This was one of the first federal agencies with a separate police force. This force grew and Lilienthal took it forward to cover the Atomic Energy Commission, thus tying it into the *army intelligence service* [emphasis added]…
>
> A Swiss corporation, Permindex, was used to head five front organizations responsible for furnishing personnel and supervisors to carry out assigned duties (in the assassination).
>
> The five groups under Permindex and their supervisors were:
>
> 1. The Czarist Russian, eastern European and Middle East exile organization called SOLIDARISTS, (sic) headed by Ferenc Nagy, ex-Hungarian premier, and John Demenil, Russian exile from Houston, Texas, a close friend and supporter of Lyndon Johnson for over thirty years.

2. A section of the AMERICAN COUNCIL OF CHRISTIAN CHURCHES headed by H.L. Hunt [of 'Hunt brothers' fame] of Dallas, Texas.

3. A Cuban exile group called FREE CUBA COMMITTEE headed by Carlos Prio Socarras, ex-Cuban president.

4. An organization of United States, Caribbean, and Havana, Cuba gamblers called the Syndicate… This group worked closely with a Mafia family headed by Joe Bonanno.

5. The SECURITY DIVISION of the National Aeronautics and Space Administration (NASA) headed by Werner Von Braun, head of the German Nazi rocket program from 1932 through 1945 [Farrell notes the date is inaccurate since Hitler didn't take power until January 30, 1933]. Headquarters for this group was the DEFENSE INDUSTRIAL SECURITY COMMAND at Muscle Shoals Redstone Arsenal in Alabama and on East Broad Street in Columbus, Ohio.[278] ['All-caps' in original].

Who are these new players the *Torbitt Document* adds to the folklore surrounding the Kennedy shooting?

- First, H.L. Hunt hiding behind what may have been a seemingly Christian front (ACCC) to launder money for use in liberating Cuba - an organization like many created by the intelligence community for sinister purposes (Note: Apparently Col. Oliver "Ollie" North, now FOX NEWS correspondent, was not the first American military man to divert funds to a revolutionary cause!)

- Secondly, the European exiles, supporters of Hitler, who were led by Ferenc Nagy.

- Thirdly, NASA's D.I.S.C. unit was under the direct control at that time by Von Braun (implicating him in the conspiracy).

- And fourthly, the *Permindex Corporation*, another shadowy corporation with an interesting Board of Directors that included no less than *Clay Shaw*, the person indicted by Attorney General Jim Garrison for the Kennedy assassination.

However, Clay Shaw wasn't the only notorious character at Permindex Board meetings. According to Kenn Thomas, an unnamed Italian fascist also

attended who was the son-in-law of Hjalmar Schacht, Hitler's finance minister (president of the *Reichsbank*), and would therefore make him the brother-in-law to *Otto Skorzeny*, the tall SS commander-cum-Nazi-Indiana-Jones who supposedly discovered Solomon's Treasure (discussed in Chapter Five of Book One). When it comes to 'connecting' the Nazis, it's a small *welt* after all.

Moreover, we must then ask, "Who backed Permindex?" As we go on to name names, the plot *thickens* so much it grows hard to stir.

> The principal financiers of Permindex were a number of U.S. oil companies, H. L. Hunt of Dallas, Clint Murchison of Dallas, John Demenil, *Solidarist* director of Houston, John Connally as executor of the Sid Richardson estate, Halliburton Oil Co., Senator Robert Kerr of Oklahoma, Troy Post of Dallas, Lloyd Cobb of New Orleans, Dr. Oechner of New Orleans, George and Herman Brown of Brown and Root, Houston, Attorney Roy M. Cohn, Chairman of the Board for Lionel Corporation, New York City, Schlemley Industries of New York City, Walter Dornberger, ex-Nazi general and his company, Bell Aerospace,[279] Pan American World Airways and its subsidiary, Intercontinental Hotel Corporation.

The *Torbitt Document* isn't the only manuscript to collect these names in one place. Author Russ Baker in his book *Family of Secrets* (to which we referred in Book One) also corroborates these persons as the major players in the Kennedy assassination. Baker recounts the shadowy circumstances which, taken together, appear to implicate the Bush family, with a young George H.W. Bush ("Poppy"), perhaps serving as a point man for the CIA 'higher-ups' in the Kennedy plotting and 'executive action'.[280] From a recap supplied at the web site for Baker's book, we are supplied a provocative summary of particulars pleading for further explanation:

> Baker presents three faces of George H. W. Bush: the one who cannot remember where he was on November 22, 1963; the one identified (in a declassified FBI memo about the assassination) as a CIA officer working with Cuban exiles; and the one who, identifying himself as an ordinary citizen, calls in a tip on a potential assassin.
>
> "At 1:45 pm on November 22," Baker reports, Bush Sr. "called the FBI to identify James Parrott as a possible suspect in the president's

> murder, and to mention that he, George H.W. Bush, happened to be in Tyler, Texas." That is, not in Dallas (at least not at that precise moment). While Poppy was making the call fingering Mr. Parrott, Baker writes, Poppy's own assistant was visiting the suspect at home-thus enabling the Bush aide to provide Parrott with an alibi. This evidentiary daisy-chain begs what follows: an exhaustive examination of Bush's own furtive activities and his whereabouts that day - and his close ties to a large gallery of intelligence operatives who played a role in the events unfolding in Dallas. Among the subjects of interest: Allen Dulles, a former business associate and close friend of Poppy's father, the former banker, Senator Prescott Bush. Dulles had been forced out of his post as CIA director by John F. Kennedy-who spent his three years in office virtually at war with the uncontrollable spy agency. Another important figure was Bush's old friend George de Mohrenschildt, a mentor to Lee Harvey Oswald in the months before the shooting. More than a decade later, after Bush had become CIA director, De Mohrenschildt wrote him a panicked note mentioning Oswald; six months later, De Mohrenschildt was dead from what was described by local police as a self-inflicted shotgun blast.
>
> Baker contextualizes these troubling events by establishing the extent to which Kennedy had alienated the powerful - from the CIA to the FBI leadership, from the mafia to the oil industry, from the Pentagon to major corporate figures. He also demonstrates the crucial role the Bush dynasty, through five generations, played in loyally advancing the agendas of many of these same interests.

All that Baker failed to pick up on in his study was the possible role that Von Braun and other Nazis, firmly entrenched in NASA at the time of Kennedy's murder, may have played in the JFK conspiracy.

As if these happenstances aren't enough to cause one to scratch his or her head, Peter Levenda adds an additional layer of intrigue by pointing out that Maria and Harvey Oswald were living at the time with Michael and Ruth Paine in Dallas. It seems Paine was the employee of Walter Dornberger, former Nazi and then President of Bell Helicopter, and - take a breath - the son-in-law of Arthur M. Young (born in Paris in 1905 and died in Berkeley California in 1995),[281] one of Andrija Puharich's best friends, member of THE NINE séance groups, and founder/inventor for Bell Helicopter.

Levenda emphasizes this linkage hasn't been previously discussed in the JFK story and was quickly covered up by Allen Dulles.

> This - admittedly circumstantial - piece of evidence, coupled with [Allen] Dulles' [then head of the CIA and member of the Warren Commission examining the Kennedy assassination] omission of his prior acquaintance with Michael and Ruth Paine, as well as the Commission's not firmly establishing Michael Paine's *curriculum vitae* or following up on his war record, or delving more closely into the background of Arthur Young, indicates the presence of a hidden agenda. The author would like to propose that the connection to Arthur Young through the Paine's is a smoking gun, indicative of another level of covert activity that has not been explored by the Warren Commission or by the later House Sub-Committee on Assassinations (HSCA).

Figure 23 - Arthur M. Young

> Arthur Young's travels with Andrija Puharich to Mexico and elsewhere, and his long support of Puharich's Round Table Foundation, as well as his inclusion in the first "séance of The Nine," may reveal an intelligence operation - a truly bizarre intelligence operation - that is connected to the Oswald affair. Puharich… was working for either [sic] Army intelligence, the CIA, or more probably some combination of the two, out of Fort Detrick, which was a staging ground for both… *This incestuous tangle of friends, lovers, relatives, mothers, sons, in-laws, co-workers and intelligence agents is an aspect of the Kennedy assassination that has never been adequately investigated.*[282] [Emphasis added]

Here in one mysterious but well-documented character of recent history, we have all the components present and well-connected: The occult philosophy, the 'new physics' (Young wrote a 1976 book called *The Reflexive Universe - Evolution of Consciousness*), military and industrial power, intelligence services, and only one degree of separation removed from the assassination of the American president who many suppose was ready *to spill the beans to the public about the stunning involvement of Nazis in the government*; or to double-cross the military with a Russian truce based upon combining forces in a joint operation of landing on the moon's surface. As author James W. Douglass wrote in his 2008 book, *JFK and the Unspeakable: Why He Died and Why It Matters*,

> In our Cold War history, the *Unspeakable* was the void in our government's covert-action doctrine of 'plausible deniability,' sanctioned by the June 18, 1948, National Security Council directive NSC 10/2. Under the direction of Allen Dulles, the CIA interpreted 'plausible deniability' as a green light to assassinate national leaders, overthrow governments, and lie to cover up any trace of accountability - all for the sake of promoting U.S. interests and maintaining our nuclear-backed dominance over the Soviet Union and other nations… that void of accountability for the CIA and our other security agencies, seen as necessary for covert crimes to protect our nuclear weapons primacy, made possible the JFK assassination and cover-up. While I wrote and acted in resistance to nuclear weapons that could kill millions, I remained oblivious of the fact that their existence at the heart of our national security state underlay the assassination of a president turning toward disarmament. [283]

The Motive for Killing Kennedy - Follow the Money

However accurate (or not) the details of the *Torbitt Document* are, the mountain of research surrounding 'why Kennedy was killed' coalesces in a coherent, although surprisingly unfamiliar view of what really happened at this monumental point in our history.

Obviously, the profit motives were writ large: 'Big Oil' wanted to assure its hegemony in the world of energy, military contractors wanted to enjoy the resultant expansion of the war in Vietnam, and the power grab was effective for a number of 'hawkish' American politicians. Most notably benefitting was the newly-ascended President Lyndon Johnson, as well as other U.S. presidents on down-the-line, specifically the sons of Prescott Bush - who were all tightly connected to the CIA establishment that Kennedy detested. Consequently, the reasons for 'taking Kennedy out' are unequivocal: *Kennedy represented a mortal threat and a roadblock.* His views were regarded as pacifist and naïve. For those who schemed (and the author is sure that at least some of these characters named above did), it became urgent to take America down a very different path, one prepared and paved with morality, patriotism, a new military vision, and most of all, the promise for America to achieve world-wide economic and political power. The time to assert an unequivocal American empire had arrived. Absorbing Nazis into our cause, (who hated Bolsheviks even more than we did), America was ready to create a 'kinder, gentler' empire which German fascists pictured for themselves. Rather than justifying it as the desire to create a 'master race', American reasoning would be 'making the world safe for Democracy' - and Capitalism of course. If U.S. corporations and banks profited from our 'sacred' dominion, so much the better.

Marrs provides a cautionary caveat 'just to be clear': "No serious assassination researcher truly believes that Kennedy was killed solely by German Nazis. But, as previously reported, men with Nazi connections - before, during, and after World War II - who were also members of secret societies, were most opposed to Kennedy's policies. They also had the power and influence to affect such an assassination and certainly were capable of

blocking any meaningful investigation - whether by government or the media-right up to today."[284]

The Joint Space Program Initiative

One of the remarkable aspects of the 'space race' that is generally overlooked relates to Kennedy's proposal to Khrushchev the U.S. and the Soviets team to 'conquer' the moon. On five separate occasions, Kennedy publicly proposed this to the Soviet Premier. Eventually, as if worn down, Khrushchev agreed. His son Sergei explained in the October, 1999 issue of *American Heritage Magazine:*

> "…that same August [1963], Kennedy sent Father a proposal about joining Soviet and American forces for a flight to the moon. He had first mentioned the idea in Vienna, in June 1961, but at the time Father hadn't replied..."

On PBS, Sergei Khrushchev offered these insights:

> "… in the August of 1963, President Kennedy met with the Soviet Ambassador Dobrinyin, and then he spoke to the United Nations. He offered once more to join the efforts, and at that time my father was very serious. I walked with him, sometime in late October or November, and he told me about all these things. He told me that we have to think about this and maybe accept this idea … "He thought also of the political achievement of all these things, that then they would begin to trust each other much more ...."

But two months later, Kennedy was killed. In 1999, Sergei Khrushchev speculated:

> The Cold War might have ended in 1969 … an American astronaut and a Soviet cosmonaut might have stepped onto the moon's surface together. But life turned out differently. In November 1963 John F. Kennedy died, and a year later, in October 1964, my father was removed from power. The leaders who replaced Father hurried to 'correct his mistakes' by giving a new impetus to the arms race and producing tens of thousands of tactical nuclear weapons. By 1989 the Soviet army had seven thousand nuclear cannon."[285]

David Wilcock and Richard Hoagland speculate the real reason for the space race détente owes to the hypothesis Kennedy knew the human race must unite to prepare for the hidden knowledge: *we are not alone in the cosmos.*

Pondering these questions, Wilcock and Hoagland betray their personal spiritual quest seeking ultimate answers from the frontiers of outer space.

> Why, despite his public "Cold War" rhetoric, was John Kennedy so obviously determined privately to send young astronauts and cosmonauts jointly to the Moon!? What, in his mind, could have been waiting there … which might have the power to unify a world? And why, after years of stubbornly declining, was Premier Khrushchev suddenly persuaded to agree …? The answers - when we do return - may surprise and save us all - A New Frontier… of Hope.[286]

THE WATERSHED IN MODERN AMERICAN HISTORY

The godless Soviet Union, whether it represented a real threat or not (which is often debated by historians who point to the pathetically poor Soviet economy unable to sustain the arms race), was our justification for a relentless expansion of American military power. No doubt, military prowess stands as one of the pillars of American *exceptionalism*. *But is it possible our unique superpower status today is based upon lies and deception, murder and intrigue, Nazi technology, and the murder of a president?* The moral lesson seems clear. Surely we were paranoid of the Soviets. And yet, we were led down the path to world domination by our own ambition. This does not mean that the American system of government is wrong-headed. Nor does it mean that Soviet Marxism is equally worthy of endorsement. Our country retains the best system of government guarantying the greatest amount of freedom for hundreds of millions. It still stands as the best hope for thousands who emigrate to our shores. But our preeminence as that 'shining city on a hill' - for those willing to face the facts we've just covered - stands much more sullied and tainted.

Therefore, regardless of exactly who was involved, after Kennedy's assassination there was a 'changing of the guard'; this transition became the watershed of modern American history. Slowly, quietly, and sometimes perniciously, our government would grow bigger and more centralized. This process was more than the welfare state of Lyndon Johnson which added millions of poor to the government 'dole'. It was more than the dramatic growth in military spending demanded by the war in Vietnam. It was accentuated by the frightening advance of some aspects of our intelligence services - increasingly infringing upon personal liberties and human dignity (as we will discuss in detail in the next chapter). Finally, it included a non-partisan plan to forge a *much stronger tie between government and business.* Hitler's occultic despotism was deplorable - but just maybe the efficiency of a fascist economy wasn't such a bad idea.

After all, we should remember *the cold war was won by economics, not the military*. As Richard Nixon prescribed in his post-presidential book, *The Real War* (1990), our victory was won by out-producing the Soviets. Our victory was based on the fact that Capitalism encompasses a much more

realistic and powerful economic theory, based as it is on the reality of humanity's desire to prosper. It stands in stark contrast to Communist theory built upon a somewhat obscure proposition that humankind's biggest problem rests in 'alienation from our work'. However, what is not as clearly articulated by Nixon's prescription for achieving an American victory over Communism, concerns the fact Capitalism had morphed into an American brand of Fascism - with less government interference as proffered by the Soviets - exciting levels of production far exceeding what 'the bad guys' could match. But America was no longer the same. The American Dream was changing. Big Business in America was becoming America's biggest business. To maximize growth and achieve the American Empire, government would manage monopolies less and diminish individual liberties more. Wall Street would be regulated less and the middle class reduced in status and power. The 1950s became the high water mark for the life of the common man in the USA.

Nonetheless, in the 1960s, with the specter of the Soviet Union fresh in everyone's minds following the near-miss Atomic War with the Soviets (aka the Cuban Missile Crisis); as well as the long-term, ongoing and escalating war in Southeast Asia, America became determined to strengthen its military and ensure its capacity to take on our enemies behind the Iron Curtain; to win victory in the fight for 'the American Way'.

But at what expense did we acquire victory? What was sacrificed by America in this process? The author believes we forfeited nothing less than the key tenet of why America was founded in the first place: to construct a government serving 'the People' foremost, above the rich, the royal, and the powerful. *The 'new American way' was no longer the same way America progressed before Kennedy was killed.* America would not be the same again - even after defeating the Soviets winning the cold war at the end of the 1980s.

Eisenhower's Farewell Speech

At this juncture, it seems apropos to recall the famous Eisenhower speech often identified as "Beware the military-industrial complex!" It is vital to study carefully Eisenhower's well-constructed comments. While the segment of his speech I choose to cite is lengthy, it is actually only an excerpt from his farewell address to the nation in 1961.

After due consideration to the data just presented, the reader (along with the author) must wonder just how many of these realities Eisenhower knew as he carefully chose these words to paint a foreboding portrait of our increasingly tenuous future, fostered by fear of our enemies and orchestrated by the newly empowered clique:

> A vital element in keeping the peace is our military establishment. Our arms must be mighty, ready for instant action, so that no potential aggressor may be tempted to risk his own destruction.
>
> Our military organization today bears little relation to that known by any of my predecessors in peacetime, or indeed by the fighting men of World War II or Korea.
>
> Until the latest of our world conflicts, the United States had no armaments industry. American makers of plowshares could, with time and as required, make swords as well. But now we can no longer risk emergency improvisation of national defense; we have been compelled to create a permanent armaments industry of vast proportions. Added to this, three and a half million men and women are directly engaged in the defense establishment. We annually spend on military security more than the net income of all United States corporations.
>
> This conjunction of an immense military establishment and a large arms industry is new in the American experience. The total influence - economic, political, *even spiritual* [emphasis added] - is felt in every city, every State house, every office of the Federal government. We recognize the imperative need for this development. Yet we must not fail to comprehend its grave implications. Our toil, resources and livelihood are all involved; so is the very structure of our society.
>
> In the councils of government, we must guard against the acquisition of unwarranted influence, whether sought or unsought, by the military-

> industrial complex. *The potential for the disastrous rise of misplaced power exists and will persist.* [Emphasis added]
>
> We must never let the weight of this combination endanger our liberties or democratic processes. We should take nothing for granted. Only an alert and knowledgeable citizenry can compel the proper meshing of the huge industrial and military machinery of defense with our peaceful methods and goals, so that security and liberty may prosper together.
>
> Akin to, and largely responsible for the sweeping changes in our industrial-military posture, has been the technological revolution during recent decades.
>
> In this revolution, research has become central; it also becomes more formalized, complex, and costly. A steadily increasing share is conducted for, by, or at the direction of, the Federal government.
>
> Today, the solitary inventor, tinkering in his shop, has been overshadowed by task forces of scientists in laboratories and testing fields. In the same fashion, the free university, historically the fountainhead of free ideas and scientific discovery has experienced a revolution in the conduct of research. Partly because of the huge costs involved, a government contract becomes virtually a substitute for intellectual curiosity. For every old blackboard there are now hundreds of new electronic computers.
>
> The prospect of domination of the nation's scholars by Federal employment, project allocations, and the power of money is ever present and is gravely to be regarded.
>
> Yet, in holding scientific research and discovery in respect, as we should, we must also be alert to the equal and opposite danger that public policy could itself become the captive of a scientific-technological elite.
>
> It is the task of statesmanship to mold, to balance, and to integrate these and other forces, new and old, within the principles of our democratic system - ever aiming toward the supreme goals of our free society. [287]

As we will see in the following chapters, it isn’t just the military-industrial complex we should fear. It is public policy which has become “a captive of a

scientific-technological elite." Eisenhower warned us of both. In the final analysis, as we will see, inviting the Nazi mentality into America permeated our *science and technology* as well as our *military and intelligence* philosophies. We should keep both matters in mind when we examine government control and the eradication of personal liberties.

Likewise, in learning the lessons of our paranoia concerning *the Soviet Threat*, the questions we Americans must ask ourselves corporately are similar to the questions posed to individuals when they move toward doomsday paranoia and the slippery slope of 'survivalist' strategies for self-preservation.

To be specific: "Is what you gain in security worth what you give up in personal freedom?" "Do you become a servant to your own fears of the post-apocalyptic future?" "Is the money you spend to protect your families' welfare after doomsday comes, worth the separation you engender with those outside your circle of trust and safety?" "Is our sacrifice of liberty necessary to protect our future?" "And if we preserve ourselves for such a future, is this future worth living for?" It remains a concern of this author for his evangelical brethren that they prepare for doomsday with survivalist strategies without thinking about the implications for their neighbors and their communities. An approach that implies, "every man for himself" is hardly consistent with the gospel of Christ.

Beating around the Bushes

Beyond the Eisenhower and Kennedy administrations, is there any substantive evidence which demonstrates the influence of Fascism, the elite, or the boys from *Skull and Bones*? We've already made mention several times of the probable connection between the family Bush and its quest to hold the American reins of power. Prescott Bush (father to George H.W. Bush), George Herbert Walker (Barbara Bush's father), and the two Bush presidents clearly form a dynasty that has had disproportionate influence in what happens in America.

Marrs and Levenda both provide substantial data and strongly worded warnings that there is much more to the Bush family than meets the eye. As mentioned earlier, Russ Baker's book *Family of Secrets*, documents these matters in plain and plentiful detail. It is worth adding some additional persons of interest to the witness list to illustrate that the probability of fascist influence isn't just the idea of one or two members of the lunatic fringe.

For starters, it is important to recall the allegations by Ronald Reagan against George H.W. Bush in the 1980 presidential campaign. Reagan was plain spoken about the members of the Trilateral Commission peppering the staff of President Jimmy Carter, even vowing to investigate this cadre of professional politicians and multi-national businessmen if elected. In fact, the "Trilateralists over Washington" became a major campaign issue between Reagan and Bush. It is seldom remembered that Reagan promised not to give Bush any spot within his administration because of his membership! However, after much ballyhoo at the Republican convention regarding whether or not Gerald Ford would run as Vice President on a Reagan-Ford ticket, Reagan circumvented the normal process and rushed to the podium late at night after his nomination, recommending that George H.W. Bush be his running mate. Marrs comments: "For one brief moment, the power of those who control the corporate mass media was revealed. Reagan never again uttered a word against the globalist groups such as the Trilateral Commission and the Council on Foreign Relations. Following his election, Reagan's fifty-nine-member transition team was composed of twenty-eight Council on Foreign Relations members, ten members of the elite Bilderberg Group, and at least ten members of the Trilateral Commission."[288] Once

elected, Reagan’s team was also heavily populated by the Trilateralists. The Institute for Economic Research summarizes their participation with this litany of memberships:

> When President Reagan assumed office, Trilateral Commission "representation" in the Executive branch diminished, but it did not disappear. Vice (now President) President Bush was a member, as was Secretary of Defense Caspar Weinberger. William E. Brock, III, the U.S. Trade Representative was, and so was Federal Reserve Chairman Paul A. Volcker. The Trilateral Commission's "parent," the Council on Foreign Relations, was more widely represented. CFR members in the Reagan Administration included the Vice President, the Secretary of State, the Secretary of the Treasury, the Secretary of Commerce, the Director of the Central Intelligence Agency, the U.S. Trade Representative, the Under Secretary of State for Political Affairs, and the Secretary of the Navy. Of 1984 Democratic Presidential contenders, Mondale, Glenn, and Cranston were Trilateralists. Members of the Bush Administration who were members of the Trilateral Commission or the Council on Foreign Relations included: President Bush, Secretary of Defense Richard B. Cheney, Secretary of the Treasury Nicholas F. Brady, and Attorney General Dick Thornburgh.[289]

And while founder David Rockefeller argues that these members are simply private citizens, this is clearly disingenuous. Most members of the ‘Commission’ kept their memberships while serving as public servants, in clear violation of the Logan Act[290]:

> The statutory legality in the United States of membership in the Trilateral Commission is a more serious matter for some members… U.S. Executive appointees have resigned from the Commission when they entered public office, but other public officials have retained their membership. Senators William S. Cohen, William V. Roth, Alan Cranston, John Glenn, and John C. Culver; Representatives John Brademas, Barber B. Conable, Jr., and Thomas S. Foley; and Governor James R. Thompson all retained their Commission memberships while in office.[291]

Marrs cites reporter Carla Binion from the Online Journal who wondered aloud whether Bush and others in his administration realized just how many

Nazis were supporting him and the Republican Party at the time of his election. “The intelligence agencies know the scope and extent of Nazi involvement with the political right in this country. It is a shame they keep it hidden from the majority of the American people.” Marrs connects this statement to the recent release from the National Archives of a list of nearly 2,000 individuals included in the publication, “Former Nazi and Fascist Individuals Entering the U.S. under Official Auspices” - a roll of names “locked away for years by presidential order.”[292]

The link between the political right and the Nazis isn’t just one man’s opinion. Peter Levenda seconds the notion with these words:

> We cannot, of course hold former President Bush [H.W., “41”] responsible for the sins of his father [Prescott Bush and his Nazi investments]; nor can we hold his son responsible. Yet, we can expect a higher degree of moral responsibility in their actions as men and as political leaders. Unfortunately… in the 1988 presidential campaign, George H.W. Bush was happy to accept support from a range of Nazis and Nazi-sympathizers in his quest for the White House, and was just as happy to keep them on in the administration even after they had been identified as such… The Nazis embodied the secret dreams and unspoken loyalties of these men, the public acknowledgment of all that the American elite held dear.[293]

The presence of Nazi support becomes much less clear-cut with George W. Bush (“43”). However, for those readers who wish to ‘cut to the chase’ with clear evidence of a ‘shadow government’ and suspicious actions taken by another Bush administration (like going to war in Iraq based upon the poorly researched recommendations of the CIA and military intelligence), few details are required to ‘get the idea’. The controversies swirling around “W.” are still fresh in our minds. Dick Cheney’s Halliburton connection as well as the “Valerie Plame Affair” merely adds more fuel to the fire.[294]

Conclusion - Can We Handle the Truth?

Perhaps one of the most frustrating elements of the topic regarding NASA conspiracies and the probability that occultists, Freemasons, and Nazis played a foremost albeit surreptitious role in the proceedings (especially from the stance of their rationale for wanting to explore space), consists in the presumption originally put forward by the 'Brookings Report' - that John Q. Public isn't capable of handling the truth.

Likewise, one of the most persistent themes of all conspiracy theories associated with any clandestine outer space activities (especially UFOs and the presence of extraterrestrials: past, present, or future), is that the U.S. Government will inevitably and soon reveal the truth in what is often labeled, "Official Disclosure."

How these two points come together is this: over the past forty years or so, those in the know have been slowly leaking and conditioning the public for the eventual admission on the part of the government that we acknowledge past civilizations existed on the moon or Mars. Alternatively, from the point of view of the extraterrestrial extremists: we may learn the government, just like the committee of elites in the television series, *The X-Files*, has been in contact with 'the aliens' and will explain the implications of our encounter with extraterrestrials and its promise for our future. As previously discussed, Nick Redfern's book, *Final Event* documents this story well.

However, the other side of the tale suggests the government may not be ready to admit anything because it simply doesn't know what the meaning is. Yes, it may be (like the English essentially acknowledged on May 14, 2008), there really are UFOs.[295] Perhaps we will hear, "Yes, we have discovered artifacts on the moon during our moon walks" (although the author personally doubts it). But disclosing the source of these facts remains a matter that goes beyond the empirical reach of science. In other words, there may be a spiritual dimension to the presence of these beings we can't plumb. That is, we can't absolutely confirm whether such beings are from:

- The Alderbaran system (as posed by Maria Orsic and the Vril mediums),

- Below the surface of our world (which Bulwer-Lytton fictionalized and other Nazis including Hitler believed),

- Constitute real aliens as channeled under the name of Atum (Tom) and ‘THE NINE’; or

- May best be characterized as spiritual (demonic) beings who today disclose themselves as alien greys (although 400 or more years ago they chose to appear as fairies and leprechauns).

At this stage of the game, the author proposes the most important issue isn’t the revealing of outer space conspiracies. In the grand scheme of things, the course of action chosen by our leaders may best be considered as ‘water under the bridge’. The real issue, the significant matter that the American public may *not* be able to handle, is how the government of the United States was heavily influenced by thousands of Nazis after World War II, not only in the rocket science of JPL and NASA, but in the ‘military-industrial complex’ of which Eisenhower famously warned; as well as in the mental health, eugenics, and academic research - which also was disclosed by him - but not taken so seriously.

But the next few chapters will lay these matters bare.

John Podesta, President Bill Clinton’s former chief of staff, and a member of the 1997 Moynihan Commission on Protecting and Reducing Government Secrecy, had this to say about UFO cover-ups and other ‘space-related’ conspiracies: “It’s time to find out what the truth really is that’s out there. We ought to do it because it’s right; we ought to do it because the American people quite frankly can handle the truth; and we ought to do it because it’s the law.”[296]

And yet, when we turn to what the military and intelligence community was doing during the 1950s and 60s in other areas connected to national security - also levering the technologies and leadership of German Nazis (as it concerns the matter of training assassins to be ‘Manchurian Candidates’ and creating the so-called ‘super-solder’) - the unsettling and astounding depths of depravity to which some Americans descended, goes far beyond anything we can imagine. Simply put, we may not be prepared to accept what the upcoming well-documented story of the clandestine services tells us about

our country’s true colors. Red, white, and blue become black and various shades of deepest grey.

The truth is out there - but as we will discover, sometimes *this truth truly hurts.*… and our exalted view of American morality (including the ‘good guy’ image we presume regarding our place in the world) must suffer the consequences accordingly.

CHAPTER SEVEN:

CIA PSYCHE OUT - MIND CONTROL, LSD, MANCHURIAN CANDIDATES AND MULTIPLE PERSONALITY DISORDER

At Nuremberg, Nazi doctors who experimented with mescaline in the death camps were regarded as war criminals. A decade later, such research was conducted by the leading figures in academic psychiatry in North America, and published in the leading medical journals.

Dr. Colin Ross, *The CIA Doctors*

A network anchorman in the time of national crisis is an instrument of psychological warfare in the CIA culture. He is a creature from the national security sector's chamber of horrors.

Alex Constantine, from *Virtual Government*

"If I wanted you to have an opinion, I would have issued you one."

An Army officer reprimanding an enlistee

The Origin of Mind Control in Germany and Russia

We are all familiar with Pavlov's dogs. Ring a bell and give the dog a pellet of food. Do it several times. The dog salivates every time the bell rings in anticipation of getting a treat. But then ring a bell and don't give the dog a pellet - the dog still salivates. Do this process intermittently (sometimes providing the pellet and sometimes not) and the dog salivates even more intensely. Known as reflex conditioning, this experiment became the basis for *Behaviorism*. This important theory of psychology can be defined as the assertion that all learning results in behavior and all behaviors are learned through conditioning.[297]

However, while most of us recall the dogs and food pellets, we don't remember Ivan Pavlov also discovered that how we learn can be radically altered by *fear*. This observation had far reaching consequences for mind control in the twentieth century.

It seems Leningrad was flooding and the waters came into the Pavlov's lab. As his test dogs observed the waters rise higher and higher, their fear grew higher too. Happily the dogs were rescued in the nick of time. However, Pavlov discovered all the 'learning' accomplished by his dogs was wiped clean by the intensity of their fear. After he retrained the dogs again with bells and pellets, he artificially flooded the lab again (this time with only an inch or two of water); at which point he discovered once again the frightened dogs forgot what they had learned. It was as if their memory had been washed clean. When he turned on his water hose threatening to flood his laboratory, Pavlov was, in effect, *brainwashing* his dogs.

The story is told of a conference between Richard Nixon and Henry Kissinger in the Oval Office of the Whitehouse. Nixon's dog, 'Checkers', was chewing on the corner of the President's rug. Nixon stopped talking to Kissinger for a moment, turned to his desk, took out a dog biscuit and threw it down on the expensive rug to Checkers with the comment, "Checkers needs something to chew on I guess." Kissinger said wryly, "Congratulations Mr. President, you have just taught your dog to chew on the rug."

As we have seen throughout our study, America's adoption of unreasoned and sometimes harmful behaviors resulted from our fear of the Soviets. Our hatred of Nazis was not so deep that we continued to shun them after World

War II. In fact, as we've shown, the opposite was the case. Our fear of the Soviets was even greater after the National Socialists had been defeated. Subsequently, we looked to the Nazis to add new weapons to our arsenal for battling our next foe. Weapons of the mind (as we saw with remote viewing in earlier chapters), were much sought after too.

During the War, had the Nazis done work on 'mind control'? The evidence is clear they did.

> Concrete proof of German interest in truth drugs came on 24 July, 1942, when a coded Enigma cable was decrypted at the Government Code and Cypher School at Bletchley Park in Buckinghamshire. The signal, from the SS führer in Dnepropetrovsk, Ukraine, was a request for mind-altering drugs from the SS medical headquarters in Berlin.
>
> MOST SECRET
>
> Experiments to date of injecting parachutists with scopolamine were successful. Therefore experiments with Mescaline are to be undertaken, since these injections produce an enhance effect through intoxication. [298]

Wolfram Sievers was the person responsible for this research, a personal member of Heinrich Himmler's staff and *Standartenführer*[299] of the *Ahnenerbe*, founded in 1935, ostensibly to study the ancestral heritage of the German people in an effort to achieve racial purity (a subject we take up in the next chapter). This heinous research was eventually centered at Auschwitz because it offered greater privacy - at other camps the subjects' unnerving screams could be heard outside the perimeter. As the reader can imagine, such screams were most distressing to the surrounding civilian population.

These gruesome experiments ran the gamut of insidious tests: forcing inmates to drink seawater allowing observers to witness the manner of their death; intentionally mixing blood types in blood transfusions to see what would happen; even exposing victims to freezing temperatures to learn how long it took before they froze to death. Sometimes the experiments were medical in nature: infecting victims with diseases and injecting vaccines to test their effectiveness. Frankly most experiments were horrors too unspeakable to recount. And of course, the terror varied by degree. One area

of the death camp was clearly regarded the worst. “Even for Auschwitz, Block 10 had a terrible reputation: it was rumored that women sent to the block for experimentation were ‘*impregnated with monsters*’. The shutters were permanently drawn and research was punctuated by the regular sound of gunshots, as firing squads labored round the clock in the courtyard of Block 11 next door”[300] [emphasis mine]. One wonders just what sort of monster was doing the impregnating.

Of specific concern was the work on ‘truth serums’. The German’s were not the first to open this door, but they extended the opening fully with their unethical work on the subject. At Block 5 Dr. Kurt Ploetner, professor at the University of Leipzig sought drugs that could ‘eliminate the will of the person examined.’

> Recommendations for test apparently came to Ploetner directly from the SS; Wolfram Sievers’ duty diary indicates that a number of meetings took place between the Ahnenerbe chief and Dr. Ploetner. Presumably Sievers supplied the drugs. A number of compounds were tested but the one that Neff recalled most vividly was mescaline, a ‘Mexican drug that has been reputed to dissolve repressions and to encourage talkativeness’, which was given to prisoners on about thirty separate occasions. The experiments’ protocols were simple: unwitting inmates were fed the drug then interrogated to see what information they revealed.[301] [This approach worked most effectively when questions were asked of ‘intoxicated’ individuals in a ‘masked’ manner] [Comment mine]

This research was made public immediately after the War - no doubt expanding the job opportunities for Nazi scientists to continue their research under the aegis of their American and English ‘hosts’. Clearly, rocket science wasn’t the only technology in which German Nazi ingenuity could be put to good use.

Nonetheless, the emphasis on mind control wasn’t original with the Nazis. Just as we saw with Pavlov and his pooches, the Russians were also eager to sway the minds of their citizens and enemies alike. During the decade after the Second World War, there was a lot more ‘love coming from Russia’ addressed specifically to America.

More Dogged Experiments

Did we have reason to fear the Soviets? History says, “Absolutely.” For there is another not-so-well-known fact about Ivan Pavlov - that he met in person with Lenin shortly after the Bolshevik Revolution - and this meeting would have long lasting repercussions.

After explaining ‘dog behaviors’ to Vladimir Lenin, Lenin requested an analysis of how his work could be utilized on humans. “Pavlov’s assignment was to write a summary of his life’s work - but he was to apply this knowledge to human beings, not animals. For the time it took him to write this report he was to remain in Moscow, a ‘guest’ at the Kremlin.” [302] Ultimately, Pavlov produced a 400-page document for Lenin that, to this day, has never left the Kremlin. In fact, *Pavlov’s work became the basis for communist expansionism.*

We learn this from Edward Hunter who studied the use of these techniques behind the iron curtain, releasing the information first in a landmark study published in the *Miami Daily News*, September 24, 1950. In the article he transformed the Chinese phrase used by their ‘behavioral conditioners’ from ‘mind cleanse’ to ‘brain wash’. Thus was born one of the most sinister notions incorporated into our modern vocabulary and present-day culture.

Author Dominic Streatfeild, a cautious and judicious investigator not prone to exaggeration, records the reaction from the infamous author (and proponent for mescaline), Aldous Huxley:

> Aldous Huxley, who was himself to play a role in the brainwashing melee following the Korean War, parroted [William] Sargant’s [a noted and controversial British psychiatrist] ‘very remarkable’ theory to anyone who would listen. ‘Pavlov’s findings,’ he wrote, in 1958, ‘have important practical applications. If the central nervous system of dogs can be broken down, so can the central nervous system of political prisoners. It is simply a matter of applying the right amount of stress for the right amount of time.’ The whole thing was, he thought, terribly depressing. ‘The prophecies I made [in *Brave New World*] are coming true much sooner than I thought they would. [Brackets in original] [303]

These fears would become overwhelming at the outset of the 1950s:

> Soon everyone in the U.S. intelligence community was speculating wildly about what the Soviets and the Chinese were up to. Whatever it was, it was deeply sinister. The ‘perverse science’ of mind control, a bastard son of psychiatry and military research, was too terrible even to contemplate. In 1953 a meeting of the CIA’s Psychological Strategy Board warned that Soviets drugging was so likely that U.S. politicians should be monitored closely for ‘signs of a change personality.’ Any *suspect officials* should be restrained, isolated and monitored for at least twenty-four hours.[304][Emphasis mine]

In April, 1953 Allen Dulles would add fuel to the flames when detailing what the Soviets were doing in this field at a lecture given at Princeton University. Dulles alleged that the Soviets “take selected human beings whom they wish to destroy and turn them into humble confessors of crimes they never committed, or make them the mouthpiece for Soviet propaganda. New techniques wash the brain clean of thoughts and mental processes of the past and, possibly, through the use of some ‘lie serum’, create new brain processes and new thoughts which the victim, parrot-like, repeats.”[305] For Dulles, the next war to be fought wasn’t an ‘atomic’ one, but much more underhanded. We were battling for ‘men’s minds’ in what he called, ‘brain warfare.’ Brainwashing became synonymous with the loss of freedom and thus a threat to the American notion of individual liberty. “This is psychological warfare on a scale incalculably more immense than any militarist of the past has ever envisaged.” Hunter said these things as a witness to the U.S. Committee on Un-American Activities (CUAA) [made famous by Wisconsin Senator Joseph McCarthy]. “If we and the other free nations permit this to go on, and if the same thing is being done in the other countries of the Soviet bloc, the price our children will have to pay makes the heart sick.”[306] Investigating brainwashing became *an official business* of the military in August 1954 when the Secretary of Defense set up a special committee for that purpose. The findings were clear: the U.S. and Britain must invest time and money in the study to neutralize the Soviet threat. However, as Streatfeild (author of *Brainwash, The Secret of Mind Control*), comments, “The CIA was way ahead of them.”[307] Made official in 1954, the study of controlling the human mind was already well underway.

Following the scare created by the confessions of the late 1940s and early 1950s, the CIA became involved in an extraordinary clandestine search for brainwashing techniques, in the course of which it spiraled into a morass of ethical issues. It crossed and recrossed boundaries of morally acceptable behavior with impunity, broke laws in the name of justice, and subverted human rights in the name of freedom. The starting point for all this was the quest for the philosopher's stone of interrogation: a truth drug. Did such a drug exist? Was it possible to force someone to tell the truth? As it happens, it was a quest that had already been going on for some time.[308]

LSD - Better Intelligence through Chemistry

In fact, the story of drugs and warfare begins *during World War II*. In 1943, Dr. Winfred Overholser began investigating and experimenting with drugs while working for the OSS (the forerunner of the CIA). He studied Mescaline and marijuana and the use of other possible compounds, particularly the development of a poison to kill Hitler. After the war was over, Americans grew their knowledge base from Nazi research conducted in the 'death camps'. This would accelerate our drug-related research and perfect our chemical weapons.

> Despite harsh condemnation at the Nuremberg trials, of Nazi 'scientific' experiments, U.S. investigators poring over research records at Dachau described some of the work, if confirmed, as "an important complement to existing knowledge." American clandestine operators were intrigued by the notion of exotic drugs and truth serums. Protected by secrecy, amply supplied with funds, lured on by the dream of a 'magic bullet', they embarked on experiments at the frontiers of medical knowledge.[309]

As a result of the trials, the 'Nuremberg Code' was defined, which mandated as American policy that our medical professionals and scientists could never do experiments on unwitting victims. However, this code (toughened by the retribution jurors imposed on seven of nine German scientists sentenced to hang - and then adopted as American policy thereafter) was disregarded by other American officials in the name of national security no sooner than it was instituted.

> To say that the Dachau experiments are object lessons of how far people can stretch ends to justify means is to belittle by cliché what occurred in the concentration camps. Nothing the CIA ever did in its postwar search for mind-control technology came close to the callous killing of the Nazi "aviation research" [in which victims were placed in pressure chambers to simulate high altitude conditions in which drastic changes were suddenly introduced to test human physical reactions]. Nevertheless, in their attempts to find ways to manipulate people, Agency officials and their agents crossed many of the same ethical barriers. They experimented with dangerous and unknown techniques on people who had no idea what was happening. They systematically

> violated the free will and mental dignity of their subjects and, like the Germans, they chose to victimize special groups of people whose existence they considered, out of prejudice and convenience, less worthy than their own. Wherever their extreme experiments went, the CIA sponsors picked for subjects their own equivalents of the Nazis' Jews and gypsies: mental patients, prostitutes, foreigners, drug addicts, and prisoners, often from minority ethnic groups.[310]

As mentioned above, America (and Great Britain) investigated mind control and the potential for drug usage during and just after the war. However, it wasn't until 1950 that the momentum caught hold.

An agent of the CIA visited Sandoz Laboratories Ltd. in Switzerland in September, 1953 on rumors the Soviets were manufacturing LSD and had 50 million doses on hand. It sent the CIA into a panic. Dulles "decided on 22 October that the agency should purchase all of it [the stockpile Sandoz had - 10 kilograms according to the report]. The price was $240,000. On 2 December, two CIA officers were dispatched to Switzerland to buy up all the LSD in the world."[311] But there was a problem. The amount was only 10 milligrams not kilograms, about a million times less than what was reported. Instead of 50 million doses, the amount in stock was only about 50 doses.

The reality was that Sandoz never manufactured more than 40 grams tops (less than two ounces), ten of which were still in stock and ten more already in the U.S. "To prevent such a misunderstanding occurring again, the CIA men negotiated a deal with Sandoz. The company agreed not to sell LSD to the Soviet Union. Perhaps strangely, it also agreed that in order to remove the financial incentive that might encourage other pharmaceutical companies to synthesize the drug, all LSD from that point on would be distributed free of charge."[312] After determining more of the drug was needed, the CIA decided not to import the drug, but have it manufactured in the US. Within a year, it awarded a contract to Eli Lilly in Indianapolis to produce LSD. Little did the CIA know its clandestine actions would eventually unleash a beast on a whole generation of Americans - millions would be impacted. The 'hippies' of Haight-Asbury would become a cultural phenomenon,[313] Woodstock would become a blockbuster movie, and The Grateful Dead would become lifelong legends - all because the CIA decided LSD was important.

LSD, an acronym for lysergic acid diethylamide, was discovered quite by accident by Dr. Albert Hoffman in 1938. His surprise trip was quite an eye-opener (and mind blower) as we now know. After he came back down to earth, he knew he had something. But what was its highest and best use? Was this substance just for 'recreational' purposes? Could there be psychological benefits? Furthermore, for those with bellicose eyes to see, couldn't LSD have military and intelligence applications? Or was it "all of the above?"

As the reader may already know, LSD was derived from ergot, a fungus typically growing on rye. So it was that in the 1950s, after obtaining the drug the American military and CIA decided that their procured stockpile should be put to good use. Throwing ethics out the window, the government began numerous tests to learn how to exploit LSD as a weapon of war.

Dr. Colin Ross summarizes the extent of official U.S. usage:

> No one knows the exact number of mind control subjects who received LSD from the CIA and the military. In a U.S. Army memorandum dated July 15, 1975 Kenneth R. Dirks, M.D., Brigadier General, MC, Assistant Surgeon General for Research and Development, U.S. Army estimated that at least 1500 soldiers were given LSD without informed consent as part of Army mind control experiments. Review of the list of drugs tested by the U.S. Army up until 1973… and the fact that there are three branches of the military plus the CIA, leads to the conclusion that a large number of people received mind control drugs without giving true informed consent.[314]

In March, 2012 the role of the Army's Edgewood Arsenal in Maryland was discussed in a CNN documentary segment entitled, "The Army's Guinea Pigs" showing just-released film of 1950s' Army volunteers being given LSD, then demonstrating their antics following its dosing. They marched in stumbles and staggers, giggling as they carried on in front of their assigned base at Edgewood. But the final results of administering LSD, as well as other chemicals on unwitting Army volunteers (simply so those who volunteered could extend their respective weekend passes) lacks any lasting sense of levity. Indeed, the story's conclusion is shameful.

In a recent article by reporter Bruce Falconer, we learn the details of a lawsuit filed by San Francisco attorney Gordon Erspamer on behalf of a number of living participants in these horrific studies:

> Their stories are a staple of conspiracy culture: broken men, suffering hallucinations and near-total amnesia, who say they are victims of secret government mind-control experiments.
>
> Think Liev Schreiber in *The Manchurian Candidate* or Mel Gibson in *Conspiracy Theory*.
>
> Journalists are a favorite target for the paranoid delusions of this population. So is Gordon Erspamer - and the San Francisco lawyer's latest case isn't helping him to fend off the tinfoil-hat crowd. He has filed suit against the CIA and the U.S. Army on behalf of the Vietnam Veterans of America and six former American soldiers who claim they are the real thing: survivors of classified government tests conducted at the Army's Edgewood Arsenal in Maryland between 1950 and 1975.
>
> "I get a lot of calls," he says. "There are a lot of crazy people out there who think that somebody from Mars is controlling their behavior via radio waves." But when it comes to Edgewood, "I'm finding that more and more of those stories are true!"[315]

The most famous incident (and the first known death) caused by LSD occurred when Frank B. Olsen was given LSD without his knowledge by Sidney Gottlieb (the Director in charge of MKULTRA) at a weekend retreat in Maryland. Two weeks later, Olsen jumped out of his tenth floor window in New York City on what obviously had become a very bad trip. Olsen had been sent there by officers-in-charge to see Army psychiatrist, Dr. Harold Abramson, who subsequently aided the cover-up of Olsen’s death. Some readers might assume this tale is yet another over-hyped example of an unsubstantiated conspiracy theory. But since Congress years before had ruled the incident true and trustworthy, the government awarded Olsen’s family $750,000. (Curiously, the family did not realize his death was a suicide until years after the fact upon reading *The Rockefeller Report on CIA Operations*, authorized by President Gerald Ford in 1975). Based upon data he received from information released by the CIA under the Freedom of Information Act, Colin Ross indicates Dr. ‘Jolly’ Jolyon West administered MKULTRA Subproject 43 from 1954 to 1969 while the head of Psychology at the University of Oklahoma (he would then move to Los Angeles and take the position at UCLA referenced earlier). During his stay in Oklahoma, West slipped a deadly dose of LSD to a featured guest at the Oklahoma City Zoo,

an unfortunate bull elephant. Dr. West murdered the elephant ‘in the name of science’. No doubt the kids who went to see Oklahoma City’s prize elephant wished Dr. West had selected a different place and time to do his science project.

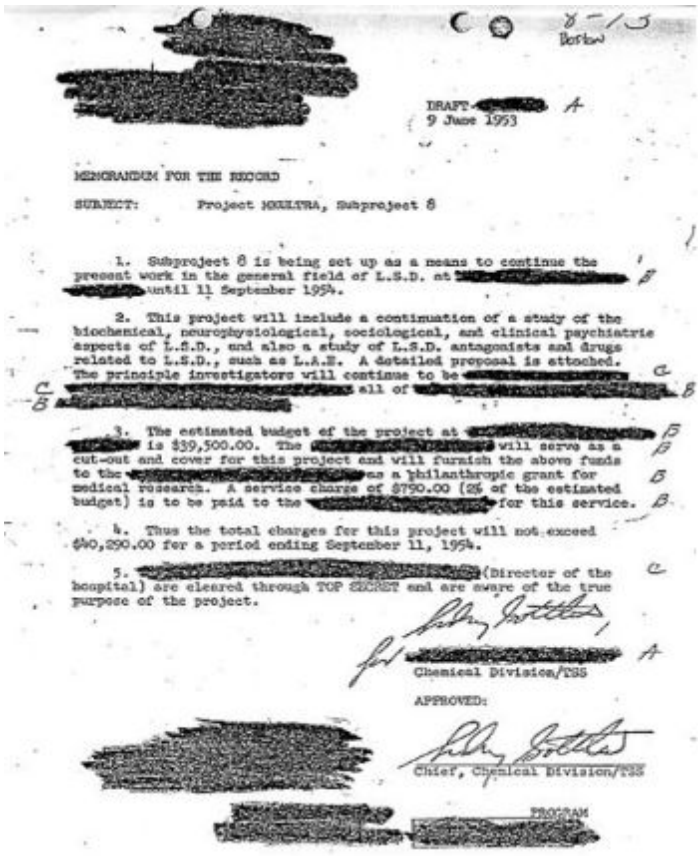
The matter is personal to me as I grew up in Oklahoma City and one of my favorite memories was visiting the elephants at OKC’s Lincoln Park Zoo (I was born there in 1954 at the same time Dr. West joined Oklahoma University - from whence, coincidentally, I also graduated in 1976). This author is especially glad Dr. West didn’t kill ‘Judy’ the elephant - one of my favorite creatures to visit when at the zoo. West had done his hallucinogenic hunting several years before I began visiting. No doubt the trauma would have sent me over the top if I had seen West send our pachyderm packing.

How Hallucinogens Backfired on the CIA

But LSD was hardly the only drug investigated. Streatfeild comments that by 1952 (even before the LSD purchases), “the Agency had enough hospitals and universities testing hallucinogenic drugs to produce a hundred Ph.D. papers.” [316]

Although interesting, the research lacked an examination of what would happen ‘in the field’ when they were actually used on unwitting subjects. This led the Agency to begin testing on U.S. citizens, typically the ‘underworld’ variety that would have no recourse if the testing was made public. Prostitutes would lure their clients to ‘safe houses’ in which various drugs would be administered without their knowledge (and certainly their consent). MKULTRA subprojects 3, 14, 16, 42, and 149 involved such experiments. “A 1957 memo on ‘Influencing Human Behavior’ admits that ‘some of the activities, are considered to be professionally unethical and in some instances border on the illegal’.”[317] In 1963, the CIA Inspector General learned of these operations and wrote a memo recommending terminating such experiments on U.S. citizens. However, his directive was ignored for the most part. “Unwitting testing of LSD and other drugs in CIA safe-houses continued until 1965 in San Francisco and 1966 in New York.”[318] It isn’t known how many citizens were victims of such ‘un-American activities’. The CIA has never disclosed the details, perhaps for fear of certain lawsuits. And yet…

> Fear of lawsuits does not seem to have bothered [agent-in-charge] George White, who clearly thought the operation was a huge joke. “I toiled wholeheartedly in the vineyards because it was fun, fun, fun!” he wrote to Sidney Gottlieb, sometime later. “Where else,” he asked, “could a red-blooded American boy lie, cheat, rape and pillage with the sanction and blessing of the All Highest?”[319]



DRAFT [redacted] A
9 June 1953

MEMORANDUM FOR THE RECORD

SUBJECT: Project MKULTRA, Subproject 8

1. Subproject 8 is being set up as a means to continue the present work in the general field of L.S.D. at [redacted] until 11 September 1954.

2. This project will include a continuation of a study of the biochemical, neurophysiological, sociological, and clinical psychiatric aspects of L.S.D., and also a study of L.S.D. antagonists and drugs related to L.S.D., such as L.A.E. A detailed proposal is attached. The principle investigators will continue to be [redacted] all of [redacted]

3. The estimated budget of the project at [redacted] is $39,500.00. The [redacted] will serve as a cut-out and cover for this project and will furnish the above funds to the [redacted] as a philanthropic grant for medical research. A service charge of $790.00 (2% of the estimated budget) is to be paid to the [redacted] for this service.

4. Thus the total charges for this project will not exceed $40,290.00 for a period ending September 11, 1954.

5. [redacted] (Director of the hospital) are cleared through TOP SECRET and are aware of the true purpose of the project.

[redacted]
Chemical Division/TSS

APPROVED:

[redacted]
Chief, Chemical Division/TSS

[redacted] PROGRAM

Figure 24 - Sidney Gottlieb's Approval of LSD experiments in 1953

Ironically, it would be the CIA itself which would be hoodwinked by the cultural effects of LSD. Military and Intelligence forays into other hallucinogens such as magic mushrooms and the derived active ingredient *psilocybin* (discussed in *Book One* of *Power Quest*) as well as LSD unwittingly promoted the counter-culture, aka drug culture of the 1960s. Gordon Wasson, Vice-President of Morgan Stanley and mycologist, would head south of the border in search of the sacred fungi from whence Timothy Leary would become psyched by hallucinogens and recommend everyone "Turn on, tune in, drop out."

Richard Nixon would come to call Leary "the most dangerous man in America!" Wasson unknowingly allowed the CIA to fund his travels while Leary was consciously on the CIA dole (consciously that is, when not engaged on extended day-trips with LSD).

These endorsements by the intelligentsia promptly encouraged Ken Kessey to write the 1962 novel *One Flew Over the Cuckoo's Nest*, eventually leading

to an academy award winning movie that brought now-famous actor Jack Nicholson to the foreground of moviedom. Not long afterward, Kessey would purchase a Day-Glo-painted ‘magic bus’ (hard rockers will recall the song of the same name by the British band, *The Who*) traveling across the country with colleagues promoting the medicinal and religious purposes of drug-induced visions to thousands of 1960s’ youth at raves well before they were known as such.

> The result was that, completely by accident, LSD and psilocybin were catapulted into the public consciousness. This took the CIA by surprise. It had never occurred to Agency men that people might take brainwashing drugs for *fun*.
>
> In 1963, the Agency recognized that things were going awry: ‘There is information that some non-Agency groups particularly on the West Coast, have taken to using these drugs in a type of religious experimentation… Any information concerning the use of this type of drug for experimental or personal reasons should be reported immediately…”[320]

INVESTIGATING THE CIA

Thomas Powers in his *Introduction* for the noteworthy book, The *Search for the "Manchurian Candidate"* (authored by John Marks, a source for this chapter) understated the obvious in 1981 when he wrote, "The CIA probably played as big a role in the development and study of psychoactive drugs as the National Security Agency's code-breakers did in the development of computers."[321] Furthermore, the conclusion of all the drug research was that "powerful drugs can indeed wipe out memory, but the sweep is clean. If the year in Berlin went, the wife, and kids went with it." [322]

The story of the CIA's 'un-American activities' begins with investigative journalist Seymour Hersh's *New York Times* report in December 1974. Hersh[323] disclosed the CIA drug-testing program and the victimization of unwitting military personnel and civilians. This article finally prompted President Gerald Ford to ask Nelson Rockefeller to organize a commission whose intent Ford hoped would calm the nerves of Americans puzzled by the unconstitutional (and thus, *illegal*) actions of its civilian intelligence service. It is ironic - because asking Rockefeller to investigate the CIA was like asking the fox to guard the henhouse given what we now know about the numerous linkages between the Rockefellers and their exploitation of our government for personal gain (Chapter 8, on the topic of eugenics, will cite these social engineering infractions in grave detail).

Nevertheless, the Rockefeller Commission was overwhelmed with stunning tales of government transgressions - and this despite the fact Richard Helms in 1973 had thousands of documents shredded as he left office. Nevertheless, Justice Department prosecutor John Loftus (as detailed in Chapter 2, in this instance confirming the words of author John Marks), states Helms was unsuccessful in his destruction of the evidence. In the 1970s, The Whitehouse announced 16,000 pages of relevant papers still extant. These pages had been preserved for official financial record keeping purposes - a records retention policy that thwarted Helm's (and Gottlieb's) cover-up.

Mind Control, MOCKINGBIRD, and the Media

When we think ‘mind control’ we think brainwashing. And when we think brainwashing we think intelligence operations and the CIA. But the reality is that the most far-reaching form of changing minds accomplished by the CIA wasn’t anywhere near as painful as torture and brainwashing. The number one method how our opinions have been influenced by our government is through the media. In fact, our government used our tax dollars to reinforce the opinions they wanted us to have. The approach wasn’t that sophisticated - it involved plain-ol’-fashioned ‘buying them off’ - as in paying publishers to print exactly want you want.

Advertisers talk about ‘media buys’ by which they mean purchasing advertising. But politicians and corporations often didn’t wish to make their messages that obvious. They chose covert conduits to get their points across. The infraction may not be that they told us lies. It was the way they said it - without our consent. In other words, our government wasn’t bashful about using the most egregious form of media purchase. They didn’t buy air time for commercials - they bought journalists to color the news in hues of red, white, and blue.

Once upon a time, it was called propaganda. As far back as 1922 with Walter Lippmann’s book on mass media, *Public Opinion*, asserted the great ‘herd’ known as American citizenry, must be guided by elites who manage the machinery of knowledge that circumvents the essential defect of Democracy, the ridiculous ideal of the “omni-competent citizen.” Average persons should be no more than “interested spectators of action”. The consent of the governed is to be manufactured by the media. “As a result of psychological research, coupled with the modern means of communication, the practice of democracy has turned a corner…it is no longer possible, for example, to believe in the original dogma of democracy, that the knowledge needed for the management of human affairs comes spontaneously from the human heart.” We must move beyond this illusion to deal with the world not as we wish it to be, but as it really is.[324]

That was the not-so-subtle admission of the truth. But truth is not really the goal of the media. It is to establish ‘norms’ and ‘guidelines’ for acceptable beliefs and behaviors. Media seeks to keep us in line and rebel rousers in

their place. How does it do this? Since World War II the media doesn't simply 'report the news' that's fit to print. Choices must be made. Slant must be added. The 'spin' and selectivity of which stories are 'reported' are the essential tools those at the helm of media weld to create public opinion.

One of the most refreshing aspects of John Stewart's satirical *Daily Show* (which is one of my guilty pleasures, an oddity for a conservative like me) is that the news reported is 'made up'. Readers may be disappointed (as I am) that Stewart stoops to trash talking most conservatives (and using a lot of crude language in the process) but at least Stewart reminds us he makes up his version of 'the truth'. He readily admits his show specializes in 'fake news'. Nevertheless, as all good satire accomplishes, his program illustrates that much of the time, truth is better conveyed through humor and exaggeration.

In subtle contrast, cable news networks and the mainline media spin the truth and sometimes even intentionally 'omit' the truth; they just don't 'advertise' the fact they do so. Consider the three leading cable news networks: FOX News which is far right, MSNBC which is far left, and CNN which is somewhere in between. Characteristic of all these networks is the 'homogenization' of 'fact' and 'opinion'. It is extremely difficult at times, unless the commentator is outrageous (which most commentators are on the 'extreme networks') to grasp which is which. No doubt the excesses are more entertaining. Plus, the general public wants something other than 'being informed' - we actually want someone to reinforce the way we think with arguments that strengthen our already-settled point of view. When it comes to learning the truth, we best recognize we are our own worst enemies.

But coming back to the main point, most brains aren't washed; they're just wiped off with a washcloth in the form of magazines, newspapers, and especially today, television. If "politics is war by other means" (Carl von Clausewitz from the classic, *On War*), *media is brainwashing by other means.* And lest we think this is a recent occurrence brought about by the '24-hour news cycle', we should realize this new approach to journalism dawned early in the post-World War II era. The tough journalism that characterized America's media before the war would soon be destroyed as elites in business and government grew more powerful and wouldn't take

‘truth telling’ sitting down. ‘News’ would lose out to ‘views’ - specifically *views* the elites and media owners desired we have.

Alex Constantine quotes George Seldes in his survey of corporate power *1000 Americans*, published in 1947 (that watershed year for America’s national security state). He stated that while ‘muckraking’ journalism (better known today as *investigative journalism*) enjoyed sympathizers throughout the public, as the probes into propriety spared no one including the very rich and powerful, politicians and other spokespersons for “money, business and profiteering turned savagely upon the *really* free press and destroyed it… Trash may indeed be the opium of the people, but it was not the real aim of the magazines to stupefy the public, merely to suppress the facts… to create a wasteland.”[325] [Emphasis in original] Alex Constantine relates the following facts about the CIA’s investment in selective truth-sharing with the public through their infamous project named (with a flair for the poetic), Operation MOCKINGBIRD.

What is the connection between mind-control and the media?

> The CIA’s early forays into mind control experimentation on unconsenting subjects, for example, were justified by an ersatz cover story that POWs of the Korean War had been ‘brainwashed’ by their captors. In fact, the Army investigation was unable to document a single case of ‘brainwashing’ among the prisoners released by the North Koreans. The word was coined by Edward Hunter, a veteran OSS propagandist recruited to [Allen] Dulles, the Nazi-collaborating oligarch who, in fact, conceived of [Operation] MOCKINGBIRD as a mass mind control operation.[326]

In other words, the man who made up the term ‘brainwashing’ was paid by the CIA to bring out the ‘news’ of supposed communist mind control, to help justify the CIA program already underway. This approach of ‘making up the news’ to support government policy, particularly those aspects better kept under wraps, would become a standard operating procedure of our intelligence service. The impact of this operation cannot be overestimated. America’s news networks would never be the same.

Arguably, the primary centers of media are now far fewer in number. In the last 20 years, 50 ‘owners’ of media have been condensed to five.[327] Thus, less and less stakeholders shape the world we live in. News consists mostly

in entertainment not truth.[328] An independent press, once a pillar in America's concept of republicanism, seldom does its most vital job anymore.

In the 1950s through 1970s, it was clear the CIA wasn't only dabbling in foisting military juntas and assassinating freely elected presidents (including one of our own), it had an appetite to capture the 'free press' and revamp its *raison d'être*. The Cold War would be won or lost based upon waging psychological warfare. National Socialism had Joseph Goebbels's *Ministry of Public Enlightenment and Propaganda*. But back here in the States as World War II ended, the CIA took it upon itself to be America's counterpart source of all truth.

> In the early 1950s, former *Village Voice* reporter Deborah Davis wrote in her biography of Katharine Graham [famous owner of the *Washington Post* leading the newspaper during the Watergate days], '[Frank] Wisner [of the CIA] had implemented his plan and 'owned' respected members of the *New York Times*, *Newsweek*, CBS and other communications vehicles, plus stringers, four to six hundred in all, according to a former CIA analyst. The partnership was overseen by Allen Dulles, the ultimate insider, a virtual government Templar for German and American corporations who wanted their point of views represented in the media. Early [Operation] MOCKINGBIRD swelled to influence some 25 newspapers and wire agencies by 1955, consenting, in the most frigid period of the Cold War, to act as founts of rightwing propaganda. Many of these were already operated by men with highly reactionary view, among them William Paley (CBS), C.D. Jackson (Fortune), Henry Luce (Time) and Arthur Hays Sulzberger (N.Y. Times). [329] [Clarifications mine]

MOCKINGBIRD was an immense financial undertaking with monies flowing through the CIA to the Congress for Cultural Freedom (CCF) founded by Tom Braden, a 'liberal' who would become the famous opponent to ultra-conservative Pat Buchanon on CNN's *Crossfire*. CIA funding was ultimately made public through a scandal published in England's *Observer* in 1967 calling to account the CIA culture, with MOCKINGBIRD the literary equivalent of *The Bay of Pigs*. "The CIA… financed the publication of well over a thousand books of anti-Soviet propaganda by 1967." [330]

In Germany, the CIA financed a mega-media conglomerate owned by Herr Axel Springer to the tune of $7MM. He was eventually described as a man more powerful than Hitler. While originally liberally minded, by 1968 his Springer Media Empire became especially conservative. At this propitious point in time, it was obviously part and parcel of the German ‘establishment’. As such, characteristic of the era, a throng of German youth rioted and trashed its editorial offices in Hamburg, Berlin and Munich. It would be another ten years before the CIA’s link to Springer was fully exposed.

Constantine sums up the essentials of CIA media management at its peak in the late 1970s:

> Some 3,000 salaried and contract CIA employees were engaged in propaganda efforts. The cost of disinforming the world cost American taxpayers an estimated $265 million a year by 1978, a budget larger than the combined expenditures of Reuters, UPI and the AP news syndicates. In 1977, the *New York Times* [given its history, a surprising instance of journalistic conscience] ran a front-page story detailing a worldwide propaganda effort, with direct CIA ownership of some 50 newspapers in the U.S. and elsewhere. In 1977, the Copely [sic] News Service admitted that it worked closely with the Company - to be sure, 23 employees at Copley along were full-time employees of the Agency.[331] [Comment mine]

Again, it is not so much that the CIA *disinformed* the American public (to be grammatically correct, *misinformed*, but Constantine is word playing on ‘disinformation’). As such, he overstates his case. Much of the time, ‘disinformers’ were just being selective in what they said to serve the purpose of ‘reinforcing’ American values, especially the anti-communist agenda (that for the most part, the public applauded). Still, it was the mere fact our government chose to ‘control our minds’ - to help us think the way that our leaders wanted us to think - that is objectionable. As the epigraph jokingly asserts at the front of this chapter, the government wasn’t offering its opinion - it was forcing its opinion upon us, without asking for critical thinking, let alone consent on our parts. From that point forward, our leaders have assumed U.S. citizens were no longer capable of thinking for themselves. It was better to script the truth for us.

But is this really a function we want our government to perform on our behalf? Should this be the way a true democracy behaves? Can we roll the clock back to the way it was before mass media became the tool of the well-heeled who seek to dominate the 'herd'?

The CIA's out-of-control culture was tamed to some extent in the 1970s by the Senate's Church Committee and the House Select Committee of Intelligence, Otis Pike, Chair. A July 2009 article in the *Washington Independent* by Spencer Ackerman summarized the importance of these congressional committees with this description.

> Many in the intelligence world and on the right view the committee investigations led by Sen. Frank Church (D-Idaho) and Rep. Otis Pike (D-N.Y.) as representing an apex of progressive congressional attempts to geld [emasculate] the intelligence community. Empaneled in response to a *New York Times* article by Seymour Hersh in 1974 reporting widespread surveillance of U.S. citizens, the investigations unearthed other abuses, such as repeated CIA assassination attempts on foreign heads of state. It resulted in the passage of laws like the Foreign Intelligence Surveillance Act to prevent warrantless domestic surveillance and the creation of standing committees in Congress to oversee intelligence activities. Some conservatives view the investigations as an example of congressional overreach. *"I think they undermined our capabilities in some respects," former Vice President Dick Cheney told his biographer, Stephen F. Hayes.*[332] [Emphasis mine]

As a result of exposing how outrageous the CIA's activities were, the House refused to publish its report until the White House approved it (i.e., censored it). In the immediate years thereafter, as a reward for their patriotic efforts to investigate the 'national security state', Church and Pike were defeated in their re-election bids. Constantine rightly concludes the truth citizens are supplied is heavily screened by a 'two-pass' filter: 'news' is spun out by those directly on the payroll of the intelligence services as 'authors' or 'press corps'; then, the media carefully selects its choices based on ownership prejudices. Motivations aren't always ideological; most of the time they are just based on achieving their 'ratings' goal. However,

Then and now, most consumers of the corporate media were totally unaware of the influence the CIA has on their own beliefs. A network anchorman in the time of national crisis is an instrument of psychological warfare in the CIA culture. He is a creature from the national security sector's chamber of horrors. For this reason, consumers of the corporate press have reason to examine their basic beliefs and attitudes about government and life in the parallel universe of these United States. [333]

Multiple Personalities and Manchurian Candidates

Finally, we come to the issue of Manchurian candidates and how they are made. The idea of these supposed amnesiac assassins who have been programmed to carry out 'executive actions' was first introduced to Americans by author Richard Condon in 1959. The 1962 film starring Frank Sinatra and Laurence Harvey stunned the public with a no-longer-far-out notion that mind control could create killers who weren't acting in accordance to their own will. They were doing the dirty-work of enemy powers. So exactly how does one create a programmed assassin? To answer this question, we must address the controversies surrounding the concept of a human being having multiple personalities or ego states.

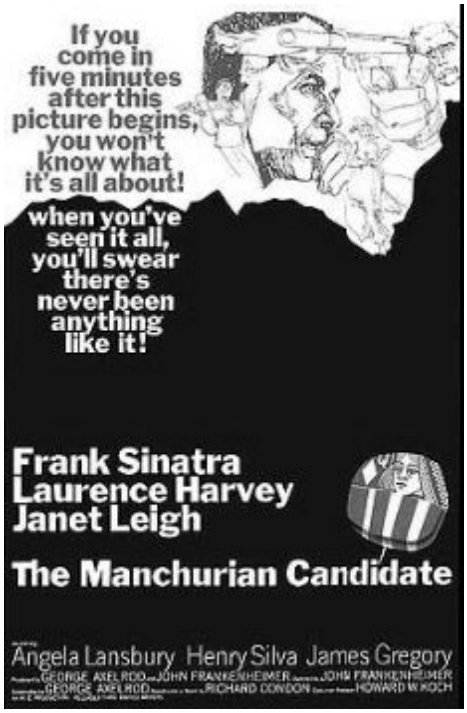


Figure 25 - Movie Poster from the 1962 film *The Manchurian Candidate*

Dr. 'Jolly' West, elephant hunter (mentioned earlier), co-authored a book, *Hallucinations, Behavior, Experience, and Theory* with one Theodore Sarbin, Ph.D. Dr. Sarbin is a member of the Scientific and Professional Advisory Board of the *False Memory Syndrome Foundation.* FMSF is a highly controversial organization that pits itself against the work of scores of

psychiatrists and well-credentialed counselors who work with individuals diagnosed with *multiple personality disorder* (MPD) now defined as 'dissociative identity disorder' or DID. Dr. Colin Ross comments: "Dr. Sarbin believes that multiple personality disorder is almost always a therapist-created artifact and does not exist as a naturally-occurring disorder…" By "therapist-created artifact" Sarbin was implicitly convicting doctors who believe in DID of an *iagenic* phenomenon (an inadvertent adverse effect resulting from treatment by a physician). Saying it a different way, DID results from psychiatrists and counselors who 'put crazy ideas into their patients heads'.

Colin Ross is a staunch advocate for the reality of MPD/DID. As such, he asserts a series of 'counter-charges' concerning the FMSF:

> Denial of the reality of multiple personality by these doctors in the mind control network, who are also on the FMSF Scientific and Professional Advisory Board, could be disinformation. The disinformation could be amplified by attacks on specialists in multiple personality as CIA conspiracy lunatics.
>
> The FMSF is the only organization in the world that has attacked the reality of multiple personality in an organized, systematic fashion. FMSF…Board Members publish most of the articles and letters to editors of psychiatry journals hostile to multiple personality disorder. They claim that most if not all cases have been created unwittingly by therapists, using the same techniques of mind control employed by destructive cults. Is this honest academic opinion, or disinformation? If any (of these board members)…are attaching (MPD) for disinformation purposes, that in itself is a violation of professional and medical ethics. [334]

Over the past 30 years, controversy has raged over DID and the academically-accepted judgment that 'responsible' therapists never diagnose this malady. Hence, extreme memories that scores of their patients bring to light during therapy (which seem too horrible to be true) must logically be 'false memories'. Ross and other professionals with a similar counter-opinion to the FMSF, point out it is hardly coincidental those doctors proclaiming these dramatic recollections to be 'fictitious' are in fact the very doctors who were responsible for doing devious if not diabolical tests and

treatments in the first place. In essence, the foundation is an organized cover-up. By publishing papers which give ‘false memory syndrome’ the sound of a real disorder, the denial of DID achieves standing. It appears fully backed by scientific authority. But the reality is quite different. FMSF is not a listed disorder in the DSM-IV book for psychiatrists while DID is (DSM-IV stands *for Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders* {DSM} published by the American Psychiatric Association; the last revision being in 2000).

What is Dissociative Identity Disorder?

Author and authority on the subject of DID, Deborah Bray Haddock, begins defining DID in *The Dissociative Identity Disorder Sourcebook*, by pointing out that everyone 'dissociates' to some extent: daydreaming is one form of dissociative behavior. Furthermore, we all 'compartmentalize' certain personas connected to our surroundings. We may act differently at work than we do at home. The person we are in high school may not be the same person we display in college. There are a number of reasons for this. Primarily, we are 'coping' with the situation or adapting to what we perceive is the best way for us to interact with others. Although we don't select these personas mechanically, we transition between them naturally and are somewhat aware of this when we do. In contrast, a person with DID will make this 'switch' and not be conscious of it. This is especially so when this individual encounters trauma and stress:

> We all use defenses when faced with overwhelming stress. These are what help to protect us emotionally. Dissociation is just one way people insulate themselves from pain. Even if the behavior falls into the category of dysfunctional dissociation, it does not mean that the person who is dissociating should feel shame. The dissociation actually served as a very adaptive and life-affirming defense at one point in time. The issue is that once the trauma is over and the threat no longer exists, the dissociation begins to interfere with life functioning, which is what makes it maladaptive in the present. This type of dissociation can then manifest in various psychological disorders…[335]

DID is akin to post-traumatic stress syndrome (PTSD) and may be diagnosed as borderline personality disorder. DID often entails amnesia and 'missing time'. However, in contradistinction to the common misconception, DID is not schizophrenia. Schizophrenia is an illness based on chemical imbalances in the body. While the two are frequently misdiagnosed and lumped into the same category, they are quite distinct. In fact, persons with DID don't think of themselves as 'mentally ill' - despite the fact they possess a multiplicity of 'personalities' with distinctive behaviors, skills, and unique names.

It is this last element which characterizes the common awareness of the disorder. When professionals discuss the various 'ego states' (i.e., personas),

they refer to them as ‘alters’. Alters are the separate personas responding to definite triggers calling them forth. Once called upon, the *alter* becomes the operative persona in control of a given situation. A person with DID who has not entered into therapy is usually not aware of their ‘alters’. Indeed, DID sufferers slip into a selected *alter* as a coping mechanism upon a distinctive type of trauma or specifically structured ‘trigger’ if these alters have been programmed into the individual. Changing from one alter to another (or from the ‘host persona’ to an alter) is called ‘switching’. Famous movies and TV shows like *The Three Faces of Eve* (1957) and *Sybil* (1976) dramatized the switching of alters. However, professionals in the field indicate such switching is not always instant and dramatic, although extreme cases may present this way.

DID as the Basis for the Manchurian Candidate Kids

"Jolly" West wrote about the reality of DID in a 1994 text referencing the renowned case of Patty Hearst (heiress of the Hearst fortune, Hearst himself a famous media mogul). "Prolonged environmental stress or life situations profoundly different from the usual, can disrupt the normally integrative functions of personality. Individuals subjected to such forces may adapt through dissociation by generating an altered persona, or pseudo-identity." [336] Dr. West examined Patricia (Patty) Hearst before her trial for bank robbery. During his examination, he identified an alter named 'Pearl' which resulted from the horrible trauma she suffered at the hands of the Symbionese Liberation Army in February of 1974.

> The traumatic kidnapping and subsequent two months of torture produced in her a state of emotional regression and fearful compliance with the demands and expectations of her captors.
>
> This was quickly followed by the coerced transformation of Patty into Tania and subsequently (less well known to the public) into Pearl, after additional trauma over a period of many months… Tania was merely a role coerced on pain of death; it was Pearl who later represented the pseudo-identity which was found on psychiatric examination by one of us (West) shortly after Hearst's arrest by the FBI. Chronic symptoms of PTSD were also prominent in this case.[337]

In this instance, even Dr. West admitted that DID was a reality. One wonders why he chose to be so unforgiving of other psychiatrists who encountered patients with DID as a result of traumatic abuse. [338]

It seems the science of structuring personalities became an obsession with the MKULTRA scientists during the 1950s and 60s. Alex Constantine explains the incredible extent of the research (Tulane, McGill, Yale, UCLA, and Harvard) and the astonishing fact the CIA sponsored experiments on children, by no less than José Delgado, a Yale psychiatrist who plugged electrodes into the brain of an 11-year old boy, testing his sensitivity to radio transmission at 100 feet. The experiment was a big success. The boy was completely stripped of his sexual identity - he became unable to remember whether he was a boy or a girl. Yet another noteworthy advance for science.

Children were subjected to experimentation because they could easily be programmed to create alters typically 'on command'. New Orleans psychologist Valerie Wolf treated numerous young patients who were victimized by CIA-funded research at America's best universities. She testified to the *President's Advisory Committee on Radiation Experiments*, on March 15, 1995, that "most of these patients responded to certain sounds, clickers, metronomes or just clicking the tongue or hand clapping. Patients would vacillate from calm to robotically asking, 'Who do you want me to *kill*?'" [339] [Emphasis in original] Especially scary was Wolf's commentary that: "Most patients reported *neo-Nazi alter personalities* who believed in the coming of the next Reich." [340][Emphasis mine]

This incredible fact betrays a tell-tale sign owing to one particular programmer we will discuss in a later chapter. No wonder Constantine sardonically observes: "The CIA, Pentagon, and an army of Nazi recruits have since consummated an ideological bond that has held in sickness and in stealth."[341] A marriage of convenience indeed.

Constantine quotes a survivor of the CIA experiments with children, Claudia Mullens that testified at the same Advisory Committee hearings as Wolf about a trip in 1959 to the Deer Creek camp in Maryland when children were trained as prostitutes to be used in blackmail operations, typically in the so-called 'safe houses' briefly alluded to earlier, where targeted 'Johns' were entrapped. Mullens alleged her host was one Mr. Sheiber, an alias for "the CIA's Notorious LSD*meister* Dr. Sidney Gottlieb."[342] We will see this act would hardly be out of character for the not-so-good doctor.

> Most of the men I came to know well were either there as observers or volunteer targets. We were taught different ways to please men and at the same time ask questions to get them to talk about themselves. Then we had to recall everything about them… After this trip, I mainly went to hospitals, Army or Air Force bases or universities or the hotels in New Orleans and a place called the TRIMS facility in Texas.[343]

Another survivor will subsequently testify that Sidney was a very busy man with a particular proclivity for pedophilia.

The Extent and Complexity of Child Programming

The tragic legacy of the early-CIA continues to our day. A Google search on mind control returns an astounding set of results. There are hundreds of papers on the subject, some challenging the view that DID exists and was methodically used as a weapon of war, but most supporting it. In other words, it isn't hard to find strong, scientific proof. And documenting the extent of the problem isn't difficult either. For instance, a conference held in the Biltmore Hotel in Los Angeles (circa 1995) entitled, "Mind Control, Multiplicity and Ritual Abuse" drew 100 psychologists to learn about the "Landscape of Alters." The speaker was Catherine Gould. Her theme revolved around the challenges of mind-control victims who are trapped within the underworld of ritual abuse. She indicated it isn't unusual for some patients to report back to their abusers the details of their therapy sessions; one of their *alters* is programmed for this very purpose. It appears an ongoing battle exists between abusers and therapists every day. Gould speaks of the horror victims (also known as survivors) experience:

> "Sexual abuse may be only one part of the traumatization pattern. Mind control is originally established when the victim is a child under six years old. During this formative stage of development, the perpetrator systematically combines dissociation-enhancing drugs, pain, sexual assault, terror and other forms of psychological abuse in such a way that the child dissociates the intolerable traumatic experience. The exception is the child who cannot dissociate and was exposed to horror, disintegration and psychological death. The mother herself may be a cult multiple and an amnesiac. The worst perpetrator is rage-based, disconnected from the core personality, and the alter feels disdain for the victim."[344]

Gould writes in an article entitled, "Denying Ritual Abuse of Children", appearing in the *Journal of Psychohistory* 22 (3) 1995:

> The evidence is rapidly accumulating that the problem of ritual abuse is considerable in scope and extremely grave in its consequences. Among 2,709 members of the American Psychological Association who responded to a poll, 2,292 cases of ritual abuse were reported (*Bottoms, Shaver, & Goodman*, 1993). In 1992 alone, *Childhelp USA*

logged 1,741 calls pertaining to ritual abuse, Monarch Resources of Los Angeles logged approximately 5,000, Real Active Survivors tallied nearly 3,600, *Justus Unlimited* of Colorado received almost 7,000, and *Looking Up* of Maine handled around 6,000. Even allowing for some of these calls to have been made by people who assist survivors but are not themselves survivors, and for some survivors to have called more that [sic] one helpline or made multiple calls to the same helpline, these numbers suggest that at a minimum there must be tens of thousands of survivors of ritual abuse in the United States.[345] [Bolding in original]

Perhaps the most compelling evidence for mind-control programming and how it is intentionally structured, was provided in a landmark lecture by D. Corydon Hammond, originally entitled "Hypnosis in MPD: Ritual Abuse," but classically known as the "Greenbaum Speech," delivered at the *Fourth Annual Eastern Regional Conference on Abuse and Multiple Personality*, Thursday June 25, 1992, at the Radisson Plaza Hotel, Mark Center, Alexandria, Virginia. As the reader moves through the large portion of the speech I cite, note how ‘mind control programming’ is truly a technical science, not just horrendous random act of cruelty. It has been perfected over several decades (begun in Auschwitz by German doctors there) and polished into rigidly constructed methods through MKULTRA. The truth is ghastly.

The section of the speech I quote here deals with the ‘structuring and layering’ of personalities (and their purpose). I will cover another portion of the speech in a later chapter when we cover the key personality (a notorious Nazi SS doctor) at the helm of mind-control programming in America. Keep in mind Dr. Hammond is addressing other psychiatrists and counselors to instruct them how to treat this very sinister form of DID. I will provide some clarification in double brackets to provide some missing background supplying context:

Without leading them ask them what these things are. I've had consults where I've come in. Sometimes I've gotten a Yes to that, but as I've done exploration it appeared to be some kind of compliance response or somebody wanting, in two or three cases, to appear maybe that they were ritual abuse and maybe they were in some way, but with careful inquiry and looking it was obvious that they did not have what we were

looking for. [Hammond is saying that these patients are simply victims of ritual abuse - they are victims of structured programming by experts].

Let me tell you what these [personalities] are. Let's suppose that this whole front row here are multiples [the top layer of personalities that are most visible to the therapist] and that she has an alter named *Helen* and she has one named *Mary*, she has one named *Gertrude*, she has one named *Elizabeth*, and she has one named *Monica*. Every one of those alters may have put on it a program, perhaps designated alpha-zero-zero-nine a Cult person could say, "Alpha-zero-zero-nine" or make some kind of hand gesture to indicate this and get the same part out in any one of them even though they had different names that they may be known by to you. [Hammond is saying there are common structures across the range of victims programmed by the CIA].

Alphas appear to represent general programming, the first kind of things put in. Betas appear to be sexual programs. For example, how to perform oral sex in a certain way, how to perform sex in rituals, having to do with producing child pornography, directing child pornography, prostitution. **Deltas** are killers trained in how to kill in ceremonies. There'll also be some self-harm stuff mixed in with that, assassination and killing. **Thetas** are called *psychic* killers [which attempt to use psychic powers to kill a remote victim]. You know, I had never in my life heard those two terms paired together. I'd never heard the words "psychic killers" put together, but when you have people in different states, including therapists inquiring and asking, "What is Theta," and patients say to them, "Psychic killers," it tends to make one a believer that certain things are very systematic and very widespread. This comes from their belief in psychic sorts of abilities and powers, including their ability to psychically communicate with "mother"' including their ability to psychically cause somebody to develop a brain aneurysm and die. It also is a more future-oriented kind of programming [Here Hammond suggests that there are ‘latent’ killers-in-waiting, to be triggered in the future. Fortunately, programming does wear off in a decade or two unbeknownst to the programmers back in the 1950s and 60s].

Then there's *Omega*. I usually don't include that word when I say my first question about this or any part inside that knows about Alpha, Beta, Delta, Theta because *Omega* will shake them even more. Omega has to do with self-destruct programming. Alpha and Omega, *the beginning and the end.* This can include self-mutilation as well as killing-themselves programming.

Gamma appears to be system-protection and deception programming which will provide misinformation to you, try to misdirect you, tell you half-truths, protect different things inside. There can also be other Greek letters. I'd recommend that you go and get your entire Greek alphabet and if you have verified that some of this stuff is present and they have given you some of the right answers about what some of this material is, and I can't underline enough: DO NOT LEAD THEM. Do not say, "Is this killers?" Get the answer from them, please. When you've done this and it appears to be present, I would take your entire Greek alphabet and, with ideomotor signals, go through the alphabet and say, "Is there any programming inside associated with epsilon, omicron," and go on through. There may be some sytematicness [sic] to some of the other letter, but I'm not aware of it.

I've found, for example, in one case that *Zeta* had to do with the production of snuff films that this person was involved with. With another person, *Omicron* had to do with their linkage and associations with drug smuggling and with the Mafia and with big business and government leaders [Some researchers suspect that the CIA colluded with the Mafia, not only to assassinate key political leaders, but to run drugs and generate funds for their ‘black ops’]. So there's going to be some individualism, I think, in some of those. Some of those are come-home programs, "come back to the Cult", "return to the Cult" program. [There is another theory that Cults were established by the CIA as covers for their assassins-in-hiding].

Here's the flaw in the system. They have built in shut-down and erasure codes so if they got into trouble they could shut something down and they could also erase something. These codes will sometimes be idiosyncratic phrases, or ditties. Sometimes they will be numbers, maybe followed by a word. There's some real individuality to that [It is not consistent across all programmed assassins]. At first I had hoped if

we can get some of these maybe they'll work with different people. No such luck. It's very unlikely unless they were programmed at about the same point in time as part of the same little group. Stuff that I've seen suggests that they carry laptop computers, the programmers, which still include everything that they did twenty, thirty years ago in them in terms of the names of alters, the programs, the codes, and so on. [Hammond is saying that these American assassins are still under protection and subject to continual programming. They are lurking, waiting for a specific trigger].

Now what you can do is get erasure codes, and I always ask, "If I say this code, what will happen?' Double-check. "Is there any part inside who has different information?" Watch your ideomotor signals and what I've found is you can erase programs by giving the appropriate codes, but then you must abreact the feelings [Abreacting is equivalent to making the victim re-experience the abuse and the programming. It is painful but is the pathway to erasing the programming.]

So if you erase *Omega*, which is often where I've started because it's the most-high risk. Afterwards I will get all the *Omega*, what were formerly *Omega* alters, together so that we will abreact and give back to the host the memories associated with all the programming that was done with Omega and anything any Omega part ever had to do in a fractionated abreaction.

They use the metaphor -- and it is their metaphor -- of **robots**. and it is like a robot shell comes down over the *child alter* to make them act in robotic fashion. Once in a while internally you'll confront robots.

What I found from earlier work, and so I speed the process up now because I confirmed it enough times, is that you can say to the core, "Core, [or ‘host’ primary personality] I want you to look -- there's this robot blocking the way in some way, blocking the progress. Go around and look at the back of the head and tell me what you notice on the back of the head or the neck." I just ask it very non-leading like that and what's commonly said to me is that there were wires or a switch. So I'll tell them, "Hold the wires or flip the switch and it will immobilize the robot and give me a yes-signal when you've done it." Pretty soon you get a yes-signal. "Great. Now that the robot is immobilized, I want you to look inside the robot and tell me what you

see." It's generally one or several children. I have them remove the children. I do a little hypnotic magic and ask the core to use a laser and vaporize the robot so nothing is left. They're usually quite amazed that this works, as have been a number of therapists. [Pause]

Now there are many different layers of this stuff is the problem. Let me come over to the overhead and give some ideas about them. What we have up here are innumerable alters. I'll tell you one of the fascinating things I've seen. I remember a little over a year ago coming in to see some cases, some of the tough cases at a dissociative-disorders unit of a couple of the finest of the MPD therapists in this country, who are always part of all the international meetings, have lectured internationally. We worked and I look at some of their patients. They were amazed at certain things because they had not been aware of this before. As we worked with some of the patients and confirmed it, I remember one woman who'd been inpatient for three years, still was inpatient. Another who had one intensive year of inpatient work with all the finest MPD therapy you can imagine -- abreactions, integrations, facilitating cooperation, art therapy, on and on and on, journaling, intensively for one inpatient year followed by an intensive year of outpatient therapy two, three hours a week. In both patients we found out that all of this great work had done nothing *but deal with the alters up here and had not touched the mind-control programming*.

In fact it was not only intact, but we found that the one who was outpatient was having *her therapy monitored every session by her mother, out-of-state*, over the telephone, and that she still had intact suggestions that had been given to her at a certain future time to kill her therapist.

Now one of the things that I would very carefully check is, I would suggest that you ask the core, not just the unconscious mind, ask the *core* "Is there any part inside that continues to have contact with people associated with the Cult? Is there any part inside who goes to Cult rituals or meetings? Is there a recording device inside of Mary," if that's the host's name, "a recording device inside so that someone can find out the things that are said in sessions?" This doesn't mean they're monitored. Many of them just simply have it. "Is there someone who debriefs some part inside for what happens in our therapy sessions?" I

have the very uncomfortable feeling from some past experience that when you look at this you will find the large proportion of ritual-abuse victims in this country are having their ongoing therapy monitored [A statement confirming what Catherine Gould had asserted].

I remember a woman who came in about twenty-four years old, claimed her father was a Satanist. Her parents divorced when she was six. After that it would only when her father had visitation and he would take her to rituals sometimes up until age fifteen. She said, "I haven't gone to anything since I was fifteen." Her therapist believed this at face value. We sat in my office. We did a two-hour inquiry using hypnosis. We found the programming present. In addition to that we found that every therapy session was debriefed and in fact they had told her to get sick and not come to the appointment with me. Another one had been told that I was Cult and that if she came I would know that she'd been told not to come and I would punish her. If anything meaningful comes out in a patient who's being monitored like that -- from what I've learned thus far, they're tortured with electric shocks -- my belief is if they're in that situation you can't do meaningful therapy other than being supportive and caring and letting them know you care a lot and you'll be there to support them [This misdirection on the part of the programmers plays on the ‘Stockholm Syndrome’, where captives (or victims) identify with their captors since they believe their fate rests totally in their hands.]

But I wouldn't try to work with any kind of deep material or deprogramming with them because I think it can do nothing but get them tortured and hurt unless they can get into a safe, secure inpatient unit for an extended period of time to do some of the work required. I have a feeling that when you make inquiries you're going to find that probably greater than fifty percent of these patients, if they're bloodline**, meaning mother or dad or both involved**, will be monitored on some ongoing basis. [The issue of bloodline is also known as ‘generational’ abuse, since it appears in successive generations of certain families. As we will describe in the final chapter, generational abuse is a noteworthy (but mostly unknown) feature of being in a ‘royal family’. But we will address this game-changing topic in our final chapter].

Now when you come below the alters, you then *have Alpha, Beta, Delta, Theta*, so and so forth, the Greek-letter programming and they will then have backup programs. There will typically be an erasure code for the backups. There may be one code that combines all the backups into one and then an erasure code for them, simply one code that erases all the backups. So I will get the code for, let's say, Omega and for all the Omega backups at the same time. After I've asked "What will happen if I give this," I will give the code and then I will say, "What are you experiencing?" They often describe computer whirring, things erasing, explosions inside, all sorts of interesting things.

I've had some therapists come back and say, "My Lord, I had never said anything about robots she said something about robots vaporizing." I remember one therapist who'd been with me in several hypnosis workshops and consulted with me about a crisis MPD situation. I told her to inquire about Alpha, Beta, Delta, Theta. She did. She got back to me saying, "Yeah, I got an indication it's there. What is it?" I said, "I'm not going to tell you. Go back and inquire about some of this." We set an appointment for a week or so hence. She got back with me and said, "I asked what Theta was and she said, 'psychic killers.' I asked her what Delta was and she said 'killers.'" Okay. So I told her about some of this stuff for a two-hour consult. She called back and she said, "This seemed too fantastic. I heard this and I thought, 'Has Cory been working too hard?'" she said, I'm embarrassed to admit it, but she said, "I held you in high professional regard, but this just sounded so off in the twilight zone that I really thought, 'Is he having a nervous breakdown or something?'" She said, "But I respected you enough to ask about this." [For therapists, the reader, and previously, even for this author, the fantastic qualities of these realities are *simply too incredible to believe.* But facts are very persistent things. Reluctantly, those who research and do therapy have no choice but to believe].

She said, "I asked another MPD patient and she didn't have any of this." So in this patient she started describing things and how she worked, for example, with an erasure and she was describing things like robots vaporizing and kinds of things. She said, "I hadn't told her about any of these things." Well, here's the problem. *There are different*

layers and I think some of them are designed to keep us going in circles forever. They figured we probably, in most cases, wouldn't get below the alters which they purposefully created. [In my discussions with therapists, I consistently hear this today - mind-control programming was intended to be impenetrable].

[Hammond sums up] The way you create Manchurian Candidates is you divide the mind. It's part of what the Intelligence Community wanted to look at. If you're going to get an assassin, you're going to get somebody to go do something, you divide the mind. It fascinates me about cases like the assassination of Robert Kennedy, where Bernard Diamond, on examining Sirhan Sirhan found that he had total amnesia of the killing of Robert Kennedy, but under hypnosis could remember it. But despite suggestions he would be able to consciously remember, could not remember a thing after was out of hypnosis. I'd love to examine Sirhan Sirhan.[346] [Bolding and italics mine]

In case the last point doesn't hit home, the implication is that the assassin of Robert Kennedy was a victim of mind control. Sirhan Sirhan was in reality a Manchurian Candidate, except his 'Manchuria' was Langley, Virginia, and his programmers weren't North Korean intelligence operatives, but CIA scientists associated with MKULTRA. Robert Kennedy knew who killed his brother John. The CIA knew that he knew.

It should be no surprise the person to interview and assess the sanity of Jack Ruby, assassin of Lee Harvey Oswald (the supposed assassin of John Kennedy), was our friend Dr. Jolyon West. In 1963, West was at the high water mark of his MKULTRA experiments. Knowing what we know now, we would expect that West would diagnose Ruby as paranoid, unbalanced, and full of anger and rage. No surprise then that this is exactly what he reported. The real truth was most likely that Ruby was being pressured by the CIA (perhaps through his Mafia connections) to assist in the Kennedy cover-up by killing Oswald. A personal source who is highly regarded in this field has provided information to this author that Ruby knew he was dying of cancer (which he did only a couple of years later). His offer to eliminate Oswald was in exchange for the ongoing care of his family by the Mafia (of which he was closely associated).

One wonders, what would psychiatrists discover if they could interview Oswald today? Would it be similar to the conclusions drawn about Sirhan Sirhan? It appears highly likely that at the end of the day, the CIA didn't kill just one Kennedy brother, they killed two. No wonder Edward Kennedy was at the front of the committee investigating the CIA culture of deception and abuse of power in 1975-77. It's also no wonder he settled for only a few headlines and never pressed for prosecution of CIA officials who were known to be lying to Congress under oath. Edward Kennedy may have been 'liberal' - but he certainly wasn't stupid. He knew he would be in the gun sights of those in the CIA cabal should he push too hard.

Conclusion - Why Did the CIA Go Down this Path?

The CIA investigated drugs, hypnosis, electroshock, but ultimately settled on the phenomenon of creating alters (engineering dissociative identity disorder in selected 'agents), because it was the most reliable and persistent method to create proxies who could act on orders without second-guessing command; these agents wouldn't remember what they had done. If investigators started getting too close, the victims of this mind control programming would switch to the specially created alter assigned as their 'self-destruct' button. It was a perfect system. The CIA had 'broken the code' of human personality formation and turned a psychological disorder into a weapon of war.

Dr. John Gittinger, a scientist working in the Psyche Ward at the Oklahoma Memorial Hospital in the 1950s and 60s, developed a highly-reliable personality test (the Personality Assessment System, or PAS) for the CIA to use in identifying persons who were likely to be sexual deviants and alcoholics. Knowing the weaknesses of certain individuals could turn these 'unusual suspects' into CIA assets. The Gittinger Test is still used today. [347]

When speaking to John Marks in the late 1970s (Marks, the author *of In Search of the Manchurian Candidate*), Gittinger denied the viability of creating assassins using hypnosis. He indicated that these efforts proved fruitless. Commenting on Fidel Castro as the top target of the CIA, "Could you get somebody gung-ho enough that they would go in and get him?" Marks comments, "In the end, he states, they decided there were more reliable ways to kill people." Continuing with the Marks' interview of Gittinger: "You can get exactly the same thing from people who are hypnotizable by many other ways; and you can't get anything out of people who are not hypnotizable, so it has no use."[348] Of course, the subject of the questioning was *hypnosis*. When John Marks queried Gittinger in the 1970s, there was almost no awareness that the CIA would stoop to torturing children to create assassins who would be *latent dissociated killer personalities lying in wait*. And it's certainly possible Gittinger knew little or nothing about Gottleib's pet program. How ironic Gittinger's PAS continues to influence our society! It is even more amazing to this author once discovering that Gittinger's program, as near fool-proof as it is, was first

proven on two types of hamburger cooks in Oklahoma diners in obscure little towns, before the era of McDonalds, Burger King, and Wendy's.[349] In our fallen world, apparently even the gravest evil can be cooked up in small town America.

It should be mentioned that John McCone, a temporary CIA Director who was appointed by Kennedy after firing Allen Dulles, wasn't inclined to follow in such a clandestine path. The Technical Services Staff (TSS) within which the behavioral testing was contracted out, was stripped of much of its power. Later in 1963, "the CIA Inspector General did the study that led to the suspension of unwitting drug testing in the San Francisco and New York safehouses. This was a blow to Gottlieb, who clearly intended to hold on to *this* kind of research." [Emphasis in original] [350] The Inspector General recommended changing the charter for MKULTRA on the pretense that many of the subprojects were not of sufficient sensitivity to justify the cost of record keeping. By asserting this perspective the Inspector General certainly achieved a new level of irony! The author supposes his inspection to be rather half-hearted. But no worries: the succeeding Director, Richard Helms, agreed to a new charter, provided that it was no different from the old one.

Marks comments at the 1977 Senate hearings, "CIA Director Standsfield Turner summed up some of MKULTRA's accomplishments over its 11-year existence: The program contracted out work to 80 institutions, which included 44 colleges or universities, 15 research facilities or private companies, 12 hospitals or clinics, and 3 penal institutions. I estimate that MKULTRA cost the taxpayers somewhere in the neighborhood of $10 million."[351]

MKULTRA was the most massive abuse of government power in our history. Its affects continue to influence America today. For all we know, its killers may still be activated at some time in the future - if their programming holds for the duration.

As MKULTRA (and its successor MKSEARCH) wound down in the early 1970s, Gottleib publicly minimized the value gained by the taxpayer investment, echoing the same opinion as Gittinger:

> On the scientific side, it has become very clear that effect on individual human beings, under specific circumstances, to be operationally useful.

> Our operations officers, particularly the emerging group of new senior operations officers, have shown a discerning and perhaps commendable distaste for utilizing these materials and techniques. They seem to realize that, in addition to moral and ethical considerations, the extreme sensitivity and security constraints of such operations effectively rule them out.[352]

Such words smack of the greatest, most perverse form of disingenuousness ever offered by a government official to the American public. In effect, Gottleib asserted MKULTRA results were not useful, admitted they were immoral and unethical, and applauded the 'next generation' of CIA officers for their distaste of such tactics and the good judgment that keeping such operations secret was impractical. We can only hope his comments are at least partially true. Surely there is more ethical and responsible leadership in charge of our intelligence services today.

Shortly after opining with these words, Gottleib followed Richard Helms into retirement. In 1973, Helms ordered a destruction of all documents associated with MKULTRA. It was arguably the greatest shredding party ever, likely exceeding the famous Oliver North Iran-Contra's shredding party in 1986. Unfortunately for Helms and Gottleib, and fortunately for true American patriots who believe that government should be the servant of the people and not a slave-master, seven boxes of financial materials were saved from shredding. It was this cache of documents that led to John Mark's 1978 book, *In Search of the Manchurian Candidate*, and first made America aware that the advocates of the 'national security state' and the 'military-industrial complex' were literally out of control. Ultimately, Marks was able to convince the press - surprising given their oft-purchased proclivity to protect the guilty in government - that the CIA and all of our intelligence services must be monitored more carefully. However, the ultimate question remains, "Is any institution, including the Executive Branch of our government or our Congress, powerful enough to control what this *shadow government* does?" When it comes to 'the herd' (as Lippmann called the masses of American citizens) even if we were completely convinced of its existence, would we be too frightened to call for its dismantling?

To conclude this chapter, I offer another quotation documented by Marks who cited a CIA researcher in the 1970s. His comment also introduces the

subject of the next chapter: “We looked at the manipulation of genes…We were interested in gene splintering. The rest of the world didn’t ask until 1976 the type of questions we were facing in 1965… Everybody was afraid of building the super-soldier who would take orders without questioning, like the kamikaze pilot. Creating a subservient society was not out of sight.”[353]

Based upon this research, we see how social engineers have the power to manipulate American citizens into a ‘subservient’ society. But has America already become a subservient society? Has the impact of the press and media over the years brainwashed the public? Are we now ‘amoral citizens’ without any compunction to challenge injustice in our government? Are our patriotic sentiments the programming of our government to keep us “fat, dumb, and happy?” Is personal freedom dissolved into a universal psychological operation such that social dissent is now impossible for respectable citizens? What would Henry David Thoreau think if he were alive today? How would he challenge us to resist an immoral civil government? Is *Civil Disobedience* just a relic of America’s past when we cared about personal freedoms and stood up for ethical standards? Are these admissions of governmental suppression of freedom a witness to the reality the Spirit of Antichrist has achieved ascendancy in America?

Unquestionably, out of our unprecedented paranoia we allowed our own government to do that which we dreaded the Soviets would. In the final analysis, the devil we knew may have been worse than the devil we feared.

Such is the predictable behavior of any government loosed from its ethical moorings, chronically lying to its people, and lost in its own debauched efforts to preserve itself at all costs. We have seen this saga played out before in Nazi Germany. It happened clandestinely in the latter half of the twentieth century in America. Is it possible the shadow government steered by the ‘elites’ will become overt today, ‘out in the open’ as it were, relinquishing national sovereignty and leading the world to the global government promised by the intelligentsia for the past 100 years?

CHAPTER EIGHT:

EUGENICS, SOCIAL ENGINEERING,

AND MAKING THE ÜBERMENSCH IN AMERICA

After 1900, the Harrimans, the family that gave the Prescott Bush family its start, along with the Rockefellers, provided more than $11 million to create a eugenics research laboratory at Cold Springs Harbor, New York, as well as eugenics studies at Harvard, Columbia, and Cornell. The first International Congress of Eugenics was convened in London in 1912, with Winston Churchill as a director. Obviously, the concept of "bloodlines" was significant to these people.

Jim Marrs, *The Rise of the Fourth Reich, 2008* (p 283)

"National socialism is nothing but applied biology"

Rudolf Hess, Hitler's Second in Command

"It is better for all the world, if instead of waiting to execute degenerate offspring for crime, or let them starve for their imbecility, society can prevent those who are manifestly unfit from continuing their kind… Three generations of imbeciles are enough"

Oliver Wendell Holmes, U.S. Supreme Court Justice
Buck vs. Bell, 1927

Germany Had No Monopoly on Evil

It is the thesis of this book that at the invitation of our government, America was infiltrated post-World War II by thousands of German National Socialists (Nazis). The result has been disastrous by any measure. However, it has not the case that the evil flowed in only one direction. As documented early on in *Power Quest, Book One,* English and American literary elites provided an occultic foundation for Hitler's unscientific cosmology and pagan ideology. The notion of a 'New World Order' and a 'Coming Race' of superior individuals were devised by secular sources heavily influenced by Rosicrucian and Freemason religion celebrated in England and America as well as Germany. What stands to shock us most is learning Hitler's attack on 'inferior races' - primarily, the Jews - was inspired and endorsed by American elites for at least two decades prior to the publishing of *Mein Kampf* (1924).

Rassenhygiene (racial hygiene) was a term used without compunction in both America and Germany well before the annihilation of 6 million Jews. Creating a Master Race of *Übermensch* (Supermen) was hardly an original thought. Even the elevation of the Nordic ideal of 'blond hair, blue-eyed' humans, was established many years before Hitler began to beat that drum in Germany. Edward Black, historian on both the economic as well as genetic connections between America and Germany sums up the situation well with these words: "Where did Hitler get his ghastly ideas about eugenics, bloodline percentages and genocidal scientific countermeasures to be waged in a war against those perceived inferior? Answer: From a group of corporate interests led by the Carnegie Institution, the Rockefeller Foundation and the Harriman railroad fortune - and the entrenched American laws that [the] group labored so hard to achieve."[354]

Stefan Kühl in his history of the American eugenics movement, *The Nazi Connection: Eugenics, American Racism, and German National Socialism,* captures the enthusiasm of American eugenic leaders for the work of Nazi race scientists with this quote from Leon F. Whitney, secretary of the American Eugenics Society, who expressed his admiration in 1934 for the German sterilization law that had just come into being at what was the high-water mark of cooperation between Germany and U.S. 'social engineers'.

“Many far-sighted men and women in both England and America have long been working earnestly toward something very like what Hitler has now made compulsory.”[355] This accolade came on the heels of 30 years of effort to cleanse the ‘American race’ of its impurities. The ‘melting pot mentality’ celebrated by the motto on the Statue of Liberty (“Give me your tired, your poor, your huddled masses yearning to be free”), was hardly the motivation of the rich and well-heeled in 1900. In fact, just the opposite was soon to become the law in over 27 states, some laws which did not ‘come off the books’ until as late as 2003. Even after the eugenics movement fell into disfavor by the mid-1930s, the U.S. Congress would continue to hold hearings right up to the beginning of World War II, inviting leaders such as Harry Laughlin of the Eugenics Records Office, funded by the Carnegie Institute for over three decades, to give testimony on why America shouldn’t allow any more Jews or other undesirables into this country.

A Brief History of Eugenics in America

The term eugenics was coined 60 years before Adolf Hitler became history's most notorious eugenic practitioner. It was Sir Francis Galton (1822-1911), a cousin of Charles Darwin, who "theorized that if talented people only married other talented people, the result would be measurably better, more talented offspring."[356] The term *eugenics* is derived from Greek roots meaning 'well' and 'born' (i.e., eugenics equals being *well-born*). In England, being well-born met being born into the proper 'class' (the upper class of course). It was in the decade of the 1860s while America was fighting its bloody civil war, implicitly on the topic of 'nature's racial inequalities' that four famous scientists laid the ground-work for genetics and social engineering, however inadvertent or undesirable the outcome. Francis Galton's *Hereditary Genius* (1869) was inspired by his cousin Charles Darwin and his book, *The Origin of Species (1859),* and the Austrian monk, Johann (Gregor) Mendel (a student of Christian Doppler, famous for the 'Doppler Effect'), who published a paper in 1863 on plant hybridization, ultimately to become the seminal work laying the foundation for genetics (although not recognized as such at the time). All assumed there lay within the human organism (and all of life) mechanisms transferring physical attributes and intellectual traits from one generation to the next.

However, it was Herbert Spencer, an English polymath, who coined the familiar phrase 'the survival of the fittest' and offered an all-encompassing theory of evolution - transcending biology - to provide a vast perspective which assumed cosmological proportions. Darwin also inspired his work, *Principles of Biology*, published in 1864. Spencer was the most popular natural philosopher in England for decades up to the First World War. These four works, all penned within ten years of one another, were the scientific basis for eugenics, evolution, and unwittingly, for the promulgation of racial theories behind the Holocaust. Imperfect knowledge truly is a dangerous thing.

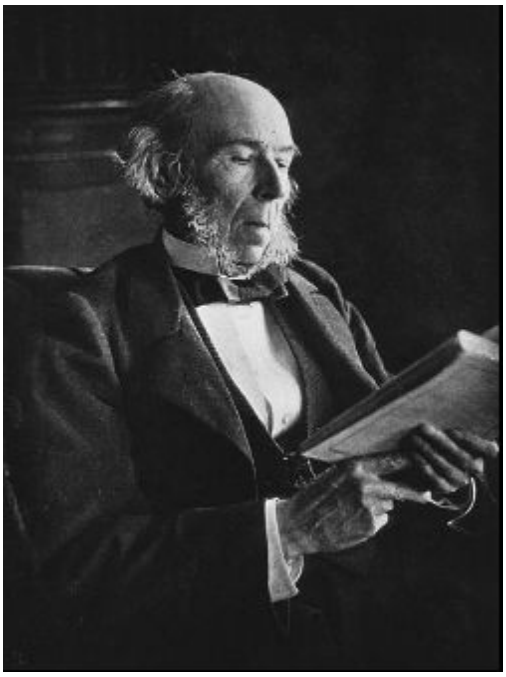


Figure 26 - Herbert Spencer

In America, being well-born met being born *into the better race.* America saw eugenics fundamentally as a racial issue. Racism and eugenics were so tightly fused that down through the years (argued forcibly by racial advocates as late as the 1970s and 80s) eugenic leadership never fully distinguished the two concepts.

Despite the fact most eugenicists considered themselves scientists much more than ‘social engineers’, their research and conclusions were both exceptionally slipshod and brazenly overzealous.

> The new American eugenics saw such traits as poverty, prostitution, alcoholism, and criminality as genetically transmitted from generation to generation. You weren’t born into poverty. Poverty was born into you. Ethnic and racial minorities were biologically predisposed to poverty, illiteracy, larceny, shiftlessness, and a spectrum of other social failings. One could never rise above adverse social circumstances. The flaws in your blood would eventually bring you down. With utopian myopia, eugenicists believed by eliminating the physical existence of minorities, the social ills of society would eventually disappear.[357]

Even the notion of the gas chamber for eliminating the unwanted was an American idea. The most common recommendation for euthanasia was a

publicly operated “lethal chamber.”[358] “In 1918, Paul Popenoe, a U.S. Army venereal disease specialist during World War I, co-wrote the widely used textbook, *Applied Eugenics*, which argued, “From an historical point of view, the first method which presents itself is execution… Its value in keeping up the standard of the race should not be underestimated.”[359] While gassing the undesirable was not pursued, patients in mental hospitals might die of patient neglect. As for unwanted babies, Dr. Harry Haiselden became the famous “Black Stork” for killing defective babies in 1915 Chicago.[360] The very old and very young were especially endangered. But would eugenics reach into the womb?

Figure 27 - Margaret Sanger in 1922

It was during these days in 1921 *Planned Parenthood* and the crusading campaigns of Margaret Sanger began in Brooklyn. Sanger was a vocal and fastidious champion of eugenics although most other male eugenicists refused to include abortion as a legitimate means to racial hygiene. They perceived that the proper place for women was in the home, having babies and raising children. To admit abortion as a plausible approach to population control was counter-productive to the mission of eugenics overall. Abortion was a ‘feminist issue’ and thus, untouchable. Instead, eugenicist sought to implement a master plan for race betterment by *forced sterilization.*

> The main solution for eugenicists was the rapid expansion of forced segregation and sterilization, as well as more marriage restrictions. California in 1909 became the third state in the country to adopt eugenic legislation. Leading the nation in eugenic action, California performed nearly all its involuntary sterilization procedures with little or no due process.
>
> In its first twenty-five years of eugenic legislation, California sterilized 9,782 individuals, mostly women. The practice continued unabated for decades. In 1933 alone, at least 1,278 coercive sterilizations were performed in California, 700 of which were on women.[361]

In those times, segregation was more than ‘separate-but-equal’ facilities for those of the ‘colored races’; it was total *sequestration*. The impure should be forcibly separated and encamped, at least until such women had passed their reproductive years. Although still unforgiveable, when placed in the context of the mentality of those times, the internment of American Japanese during World War II almost becomes explicable. Race was a dominating societal factor.

California was considered the leader in sterilization legislation. “California led, many states followed. Indiana, Connecticut and Virginia adopted some of the most vigorous eugenic programs to do away with family bloodlines. Eventually, 27 states enacted eugenic laws.”[362] Black documents that 60,000 Americans were eventually sterilized. Thousands more were incarcerated in U.S. versions of ‘concentration camps’.[363] One dare not be shy or have a silly smile on your face. You could be declared ‘feeble-minded’ and put away. Ironically, this was the most common rationale for sterilization or sequestration - being ‘feeble-mined’, though this ‘diagnosis’ was never truly defined; it was just ‘taken for granted’ by eugenic leaders and state officials.

The Progeny of Eugenics

Another important tactic was forbidding *marriage between the races* (known as *miscegenation*). One man who took the lead in this method was one Walter Plecker. His leadership prohibiting inter-racial marriage in the Commonwealth of Virginia was infamous. He enforced a 'one-drop rule': n*o one with one drop of non-white blood could marry a white person.* A single Negro ancestor - no matter how many generations distant - made you a Negro. This rule would be followed in Germany where some Jewish families had been Christians for generations, and yet, Jewish ancestry would incriminate them, subjecting these families to deportation and death camps. A leading Virginia racist and eugenicist, John Powell, explained his state's inter-racial marriage eugenic prohibitions using these words: "Of course, laws against intermarriage cannot solve the Negro problem in any of its aspects - industrial, economic, political, social, biological or eugenical. They can, however, delay the evil day and give time for the evolvement of an effective solution… *a real and final solution.*" [Emphasis added][364] Hence, even the horror-laden phrase 'the final solution' was *not a Nazi invention*. Furthermore, Virginia labeled those who they sought to eliminate as "Mongrel Virginians."

Academics helped the process along by developing intelligence tests to categorize the 'feeble-minded'. The Stanford - Binet test was one such exam that continues (although much improved one hopes) to this day. But the more well-known approach to determine 'who was smart and who wasn't' was the intelligence quotient test or *IQ* for short. When we talk about a high or low IQ today, little do we realize that the roots of this test related to the designation of those that should be excluded (or eliminated) from society. The first such test was put into effect as an admission exam to the Army. 'Cultural bias' in the test questions was extreme. Not only could you fail because you didn't understand English, you could be deemed a 'moron' (another term specially invented for this era) because you didn't understand the terms for "bowling", "tobacco brands", or "advertising campaigns." If you were poor, quite simply, you had no prayer to pass. "Alpha and Beta tests proved to scientists that 47 percent of whites generally, 70 percent of Jews and 89 percent of Negroes were deserving of eugenic

elimination."[365] Eventually, the Army had to reject the findings of the test because there were too few Americans that could be enlisted. Given these results, no wonder eugenicist Harry Laughlin sought to reduce the 'lower 10%' of the American population as quickly as possible (representing well over 10 million persons at the time). Needless to say, such goals would hardly win popularity with the masses. Ultimately, this strategy became the undoing of eugenics in America.

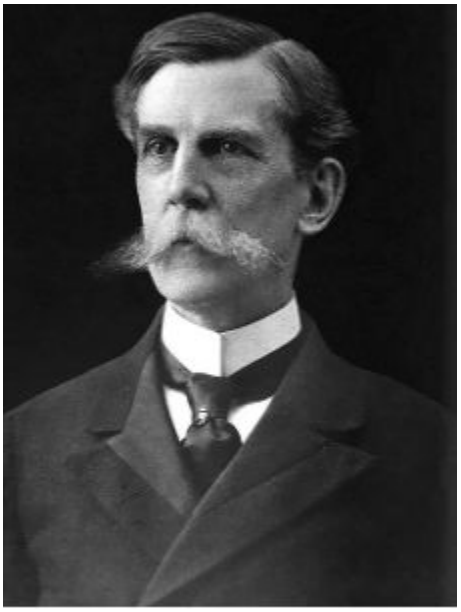


Figure 28 - Oliver Wendell Holmes Jr., 1898
at the time of his appointment to the Supreme Court

As mentioned in the epigraph, the famous Supreme Court Justice, Oliver Wendell Holmes, spoke for the majority of Justices when he determined Carrie Buck should be sterilized since (1) her mother had been determined to be 'feeble-minded', (2) her intelligence seemed well below average, and (3) her offspring was 'proven defective' too (though the testing was clearly a case of pre-determining the outcome and seeking data to confirm it). This decision was enormous for not only did it undergird state laws that had or soon would go 'on the books'; within a decade the 'Buck vs. Bell' case would become a cornerstone for Nazi racial policy. Such American 'precedents' were frequently cited by German National Socialists.

Financing Racism in America

The difference maker was the financing from three of America's most famous families: the Rockefellers, the Carnegies, and the Harrimans. "Eugenics would have been so much bizarre parlor talk had it not been for extensive financing by corporate philanthropies, specifically the Carnegie Institution that arose from industrial steel, the Rockefeller Foundation, born of an oil monopoly, and the robber baron Harriman fortune, built by railroads." [366]

Furthermore, it was the collegiality between the rich and the 'learned' that sealed the deal for the eugenicist movement. The rich "were all in league with some of America's most respected scientists hailing from such prestigious universities as Stanford, Yale, Harvard, and Princeton. These academicians espoused race theory and race science, and then faked and twisted the data to serve the movement's racist aims."[367] The connection between the Foundations of the wealthy and university academics (benefiting from their grants), should remind us that collusion between 'the best and the brightest' is standard operating procedure down through the ages. Furthermore, the consequences for the rest of us aren't always so advantageous.

The story of Dr. Charles Davenport, biology professor at Harvard (1866 -1944) and Mrs. Mary Williamson Averell Harriman (1851-1932)[368] somewhat resembles today's headlines with former Vice-Presidential candidate John Edwards obtaining a vast amount of money from million-dollar contributor, Bunny Mellon. But unlike John Edwards, there was no Andrew Young 'in the middle'. Davenport knew exactly what strings to pull to get huge donations out of Mrs. Harriman's purse. Black comments, "Eugenic science was bought and paid for by the elite for the elite to perpetrate a genetic war against everyone else. Corporate money powered it all." Most famous was the institution at Cold Spring Harbor on Long Island, established by large grants from the Carnegie Institution.

> Cold Spring Harbor eugenics advocates, all under Carnegie funding, agitated in the legislatures of America, as well as the nation's social service agencies and associations. The Harriman railroad fortune paid local charities, such as the New York Bureau of Industries and

> Immigration, to seek out Jewish, Italian and other immigrants in New York and other crowded cities and subject them to deportation, trumped-up confinement or forced sterilization.[369]

Davenport and his designated ‘tactician Harry Laughlin’ were both puritanical driven men who sought to impact the world and make a name for themselves. They were cold, calculating, devoid of joviality, and men of whom the ‘founder’ of genetics, Austrian monk Gregor Mendel (1822-1884), could be proud. Mendel reduced inherited traits to mathematics by studying his wrinkly and smooth skinned garden peas, reckoning for the first time that certain traits were “dominant” while others were “recessive.” It is remarkable that within a mere half-century of his ground-breaking work (being a gardener and all), that scientists (and pseudo-scientists) wouldn’t just seek to understand genetics based on the epidermis of peapods, but by inspecting the color of men’s skin and the ancestry behind it.

American eugenics wasn’t just a dangerous hobby for the overly analytic and socially inept. It captured the attention of corporate leaders such as John D. Rockefeller (1839-1937) and Alexander Graham Bell (1847-1922). Initially Bell was a strong advocate until the ‘negative approach’ to eugenics became the dominant method for dealing with the issue. He continued to implore leaders like Davenport and Laughlin to emphasize ‘positive’ eugenics (i.e., how to breed good traits) rather than focusing only on sterilization, euthanasia, genocide and the like. However, eugenic leaders were looking for immediate and impactful action. After failing to dissuade eugenics leaders to ‘stop with all the negativity’, Bell quietly began to refuse participation in conferences and distanced himself from the former positions he held on Foundation boards.

GOADING THE GOVERNMENT INTO EUGENICS

Eugenicists sought to convince the Census Bureau to help the movement in their quest to catalogue the families of America. At the root of their effort, was the pursuit to demonstrate that ‘bad apples beget more bad apples’. Society was wasting massive amount of monies on the care and feeding of the disabled, the degenerate, and generally anyone who didn’t have good taste. But the Census Bureau resolutely refused to be coopted by their efforts. Consequently, eugenicists recruited hundreds of workers to document the genetics of families, for generations, proving to their satisfaction (and that of many congressmen in the federal government), that racial hygiene was a preeminent matter for national legislation. This massive data collection effort was reduced to a million or more ‘index cards’ which when the Cold Harbor Island facility was finally closed three decades later, were deemed completely useless. During the interim period while American eugenicists were creating massive paper data bases of persons and attributes (many not genetic at all, e.g., inclined to poverty), IBM developed a new and novel ‘tabulating machine.’ This advancement of new technology enabled the Third Reich to identify and classify millions of persons across Germany. IBM, as mentioned in Book One of *Power Quest*, played a sordid part in the murder of millions of Gypsies and Jews. In its quest for selling equipment and the punch cards they utilized, IBM was instrumental in the planning of the holocaust. Few of us realize (this author didn’t until he did this research) that the first round of computer technology was used principally for the destruction of races the Nazis deemed to be ‘vermin’ and leeches on society. The computer became a literal ‘beast’. How ironic that these punch cards in the 1960s carried the warning “Do not fold, spindle, or mutilate.” No doubt the Nazis took better care of computer cards than people. To this day, as Edwin Black notes, unlike GM, FORD, and other corporations, IBM hasn’t apologized for its role in the Holocaust.

At this very same time, during the period 1900-1920, America was besieged by the ‘undesirables’ from Ireland, Italy, and eastern Europe. Russian Jews in particular were a threat to the Nordic race eugenicists idolized. Immigrants were worrisome party crashers. The Congress of the United States was swayed by the eugenics movement to stop the flow of immigrants of darker

races from south of the border and southern Europe during the 1920s and 30s. The congressional decision to clamp down on immigration would eventually lead to the refusal to accept thousands of Jews fleeing from Europe, indirectly contributing to their murder at the hands of the Nazis.

> Despite the mockery and the broad public outcry, which included denunciations from the growing mass of immigrant constituencies and their societies, Congress passed Laughlin's racial immigration quota legislation. Most referred to the legislation as the "National Origins Act." Several years later, the sham science, tortured formulae and flawed thinking that went into the National Origins Act were adopted as scientific fact by the Nazis. When in 1935 Hitler demanded specific genetic fractions for full Jew, half-Jew and quarter-Jew, the Nazis, of course, duplicated the race ancestry charts created by Laughlin and American eugenics. Carnegie racial math became the basis for the "the Laws for the Protection of German Blood and German Honor" - the Nuremberg Laws.[370]

Eugenical News

But the real story has only just begun. To our shame, American eugenicists became the strongest cheerleaders for Adolf Hitler. In the 1920s the Carnegie Institution cultivated professional relationship with the fascist eugenicists of Germany. “Many of these eugenicists would graduate to become the killing doctors of the Third Reich.” [371] America and Germany viewed one another as the greatest of allies to rid the rest of the world of the inferior races. “As early as 1923, Davenport and Laughlin decided that *Eugenical News* should add a subtitle to its name. It became *Eugenical News: Current Record of Race Hygiene.* In doing so, the publication discarded any pretense that it might be anything other than a race science journal. Adding Germany’s unique term for eugenics, race hygiene, was also a bow by the American movement to the Germans.”[372]

Americans began to applaud Hitler’s ‘social engineers’, Erwin Baur, Eugen Fischer and Fritz Lenz. “While all three espoused anti-Jewish biological views, the latter two became among the most notorious lab-coated commandants of Hitler’s murderous science.”[373] Even the mainstream *Journal of the American Medical Association* (JAMA) quoted Baur’s extreme statement regarding the unsubstantiated underlying principle of history that the Nazi’s vehemently asserted, “Race suicide brought about the downfall of Greece and Rome, and Germany is confronted by the same peril.”[374] It seems Germany was not only developing scientists with no soul, it was producing historians with selective memories.

After Hitler’s policies betrayed their inherent hatred not only against the Jews but against the academics (who were deemed mostly Jewish), America’s *Eugenical News*, the bastion of sophisticated racism in our country, continued to offer support for National Socialism. The German eugenic reference book (that Hitler studied carefully), *Foundation of Human Heredity and Race Hygiene* (authored by the trio of Baur, Fisher and Lenz) was published by the Lehmanns Verlag, a foremost German publishing house that featured both German and American tomes.[375]

Lehmann himself was at Hitler’s side during the famous Beer Hall Putsch on November 8, 1923. Perhaps the extent of the clamor for racist propaganda

reached its zenith when Lehmanns released *racial trading cards - ten to a pack*!

What did *Eugenical News* have to say about such a strange approach to proliferating racial ideology? They openly criticized the cards. But not because the idea of ‘racial trading cards’ was an insane and repugnant idea. They commented it would have been better if the cards had illustrated more distinguishing racial features. [376]

The Controversy Grows

In Germany, the focus of racial hygiene was centered at the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute (of which there were several - all financed by substantial American corporate and Foundation sources).

> But among the Kaiser Wilhelm Institutes were also several that would soon make their mark in the history of medical murder. The first was the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute for Psychiatry. The second was the Institute for Anthropology, Human Heredity and Eugenics. The third was the Institute for Brain Research. All received funding and administrative support from Americans, especially the Rockefeller Foundation. Indeed, the Rockefeller Foundation helped fund the German eugenics program itself. The corporate philanthropy built key eugenic laboratories from the ground up, paid for scientific studies, subsidized travel, financed journals and publication, and extended lucrative fellowships to German eugenicists - all to continue research into America's racist notions of biology. The fruits of this research were to be implemented in Europe. By 1926, Rockefeller had donated some $410,000 - almost $4 million in today's dollars - to hundreds of German researchers. In May 1926, for example, Rockefeller awarded $250,000 to the German Psychiatric Institute of the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute, which became the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute for Psychiatry. Among the leading psychiatrists at the German Psychiatric Institute was Ernst Rüdin, who became its director, and eventually an architect of Hitler's systematic medical repression.[377]

Soon Hitler's henchmen began putting the undesirables to death by the thousands. Meanwhile, American eugenic leadership offered little in the way of criticism. According to U.S. eugenicists the problem with America was that we weren't really in the game. We were slackers in the racial purity process. Leon Whitney, executive secretary of the American Eugenics Society offered this seminal thought: "While we were pussy-footing around, the Germans were calling a spade a spade." [378] German 'non-pussy footing' meant the killing of 100,000 Jews and Gypsies taken from mental institutions, 'old-age' homes, and other custodial facilities. How could Hitler justify such atrocities? He cited American legislation and Supreme Court

decisions. Indeed, based upon these disclosures, it is no surprise his primary ideological support came from across the pond.

> "I have studied with great interest the laws of several American states concerning prevention of reproduction by people whose progeny would, in all probability, be of no value or be injurious to the racial stock," he told a fellow Nazi. Hitler merely exchanged the American term "Nordic" for "Germanic" or "Aryan" and then medicalized his pre-existing virulent anti-Semitism and fascist nationalism, to formulate the concept of the Master Race he deified in *Mein Kampf*. [379]

Even the fanciful and ridiculous imagery of genetics driven by 'the blood' was borrowed from no less a prominent scholar than Stanford University president David Starr Jordan, who first coined the phrase, "race and blood" in his book, *Blood of a Nation* (1902) thirty years before Hitler became Germany's Chancellor.

In words that mirrored Leon Whitney, one Joseph DeJarnette, superintendent of Virginia's Western State Hospital complained in a 1934 edition of the *Richmond Times-Dispatch*, "The Germans are beating us at our own game."[380]

However, by 1936 even the Rockefeller Foundation had to step carefully when it came to the subject of eugenics. The term had fallen into disfavor thanks to the horrific pictures of concentration camps and atrocities toward the disabled and 'degenerate', images which were making their way back from Germany to America.

> After Raymond Fosdick assumed the presidency of the Rockefeller Foundation in 1936, the charitable trust became increasingly unwilling to fund any projects associated with the term eugenics, even Fischer's purely genealogical studies. The idea of investigating family trees was just too emblematic of repressive Nazi persecution. Funding was also curtailed for some of the foundation's traditional programs at the Kaiser Wilhelm Institutes. Money continued to flow for eugenic projects, but only when they were cleverly packaged as genetics, brain research, serology or social biology. For example, Rockefeller fellowships and scholarships from 1936 through 1939 allowed German genetic researchers to travel to Cold Spring Harbor and California for

> further study. But the fact that Rockefeller executives became exceedingly cautious about their continued sponsorship of Nazi medicine was a testament to the controversial nature of any contact with the Third Reich.[381]

When eugenicist Clarence Campbell attended the 1935 Eugenics Research Association in Berlin, he spoke a bit too fondly of Hitler's approach to purifying the white race (recall that Americans spoke of the *Nordic* race while Hitler labeled the same *Aryan*). Campbell's speech made headlines in the following morning's *New York Times*.

> "US EUGENIST HAILS NAZI RACIAL POLICY." When Campbell returned to America, he struck back at his critics in the lead article of the March–April 1936 issue of *Eugenical News*. "It is unfortunate that the anti-Nazi propaganda with which all countries have been flooded has gone far to obscure the correct understanding and the great importance of the German racial policy."[382]

Despite the obvious fact that American eugenicists were now cannon fodder in a propagandist war of ideas, they allowed themselves to be trumpeted by Hitler's disinformation machine to justify Nazi policy right up to the outbreak of the War. The *New York Times* said as much in April 1936 when it called for a wreath to be laid on the grave of academic integrity and freedom in Germany.

Despite the fact that Hitler indicated he had no desire to make war against fellow members of the 'white race', his moves against Austria and Poland proved to the contrary. Still, "no matter how dismal the plight of the Jews in Germany, no matter how horrifying the headlines, no matter how close Europe came to all-out war, no matter how often German troops poured across yet another border, American eugenicists stood fast by their eugenic hero, Adolf Hitler."[383] When the German defendants at the Nuremburg trials sought to put the words of American eugenicists and even Justice Holmes into their arguments, the declarations and citations fell on deaf ears. Most of the defendants hung.[384] Certainly, the arguments of eugenicists were already wearing thin by 1939. But by 1945, only the staunchest of the eugenically inclined would continue to listen to ideological racism as a basis for social theory. Despite this reversal of fortune, the sorry influence of eugenics would continue to haunt America for decades. Edwin Black in his

monumental study on American eugenics, *War Against the Weak: Eugenics and America's Campaign to Create a Master Race*, summarizes the lasting impact of U.S. racist policies:

> For three - perhaps four - decades after the Treaty Against Genocide was adopted, the United States continued to sterilize targeted groups because of their eugenic or racial character, real or supposed; continued to prevent marriages because of their eugenic or racial character, real or supposed; and continued to hamper reproduction, interfere with procreation, and prevent births in targeted groups. After the Hitler regime, after the Nuremberg Trials, some twenty thousand Americans were eugenically sterilized by states and untold others by federal programs on Indian reservations and in U.S. territories such as Puerto Rico. They said it was legal. They said it was science. What was it really?[385]

Distancing Eugenics from Nazism

To American eugenicists, it seemed impossible Germany's program to purify the races had any downside whatsoever. There was no way the system could be used for nefarious purposes. They saw the racial policies of the Third Reich not as necessary evils - they saw them as righteous and noble social programs. Of course, it did depend on what one's definition of eugenics was:

> In the *Journal of Heredity*, [American eugenic leader, Paul] Popenoe dismissed any charges that National Socialists were racists. He instead stressed the fact that Hitler had formulated his policy after carefully studying the textbook of Baur, Fischer, and Lenz - probably the most popular eugenics textbook in the world. Popenoe believed that the Nazi sterilization law could be seen as a sign that scientific leadership was gaining more and more importance within the Nazi hierarchy. American eugenicists thought of the German law as legally so well-conceived that abuse would be nearly impossible. *Eugenic News* claimed that "to one acquainted with English and American Law, it is difficult to see how the new German Sterilization Law could, as some have suggested, be deflected from its *purely eugenic purpose*." American eugenicists were impressed by the clear definition of hereditary illness and the polished legal and bureaucratic system surrounding the sterilization law.[386] [Emphasis mine]

Despite this optimism and faith in the purity of Hitler's motive, when the War broke out, it was time to revise the official position and offer opinions taking into account what was really happening in Europe. For the most part, American eugenicists would deftly step away from their former support for Hitler during the War and walk-back a bit of their stated enthusiasm. Nevertheless, many leaders seemed unrepentant in their defense of racial hygiene. American
manipulation of the purity in our 'stock' was still a *racial* issue.

Stefan Kuhl in his study of the American connection between American and German eugenics, points out the continuity between the pre-war eugenic movements and activities in recent U.S. society:

> H. Laughlin and Frederick Osborn, scientists who played a leading role in the American eugenics movement, and, as I will illustrate, who

> supported Hitler's race policy, initiated the Pioneer Fund in 1937. Textile magnate Wickliffe Draper acted as its primary benefactor. The Fund's stated purpose was to "improve the character of the American people" by encouraging the procreation of descendents [sic] of "white persons who settled in the original thirteen colonies prior to the adoption of the constitution and/or from related stocks" and to provide aid in conducting research on "race betterment with special reference to the people of the United States." Today, the Pioneer Fund is the most important financial supporter of research concerning the connection between race and heredity in the United States. It also continues to finance studies in the
> areas of eugenics, human genetics, and immigration.[387]

In particular, the Pioneer Fund[388] supports one contemporary anthropologist named Roger Pearson. In 1991 he propounded a somewhat startling defense for eugenics with his work, *Race, Intelligence and Bias in Academe*. His attack centered on the 'Marxist nature' of both the media and academia. Kuhl suggests Pearson's apologia results from decades of personal investment in research to support his theory the white race remains supremely endangered by inferior genetic stock. Furthermore, Pearson is not without public support from notables. "President Ronald Reagan…On April 14, 1982 commended Pearson's 'valuable service' and voiced appreciation for his 'substantial contributions to promoting and upholding those ideals and principles that we value at home and abroad.'"[389] Of course, Pearson is not the only recipient of Pioneer Fund financing:

> In the 1980s, the largest share of Pioneer Fund money went to support controversial "twin studies" at the University of Minnesota; over $500,000 was awarded between 1986 and 1990 alone. At the Minnesota Center for Twin and Adoption Research, psychologists study twins who were raised apart to determine how much of behavior is grounded in heredity. Psychologist Thomas J. Bouchard and his colleagues follow Jensen, Rushton, and Gordon only in that they argue for the predominance of inherited over environmental influences.[390]

Kuhl points out that "the list of other recipients of Pioneer Fund grants reads partly like a 'Who's Who' of scientific and political racism in the United States, Canada, Great Britain, and Ireland. Recipients include the American Immigration Control Federation, the Foundation of Human Understanding,

Richard Lynn, professor of psychology at the University of Ulster, Eysenck's Institute of Psychiatry at the University of London, and Seymour Itzkoff of Smith College."[391]

Apparently, racism remains alive and living amongst academics!

Jim Marrs in his book, *The Rise of the Fourth Reich*, cites authors Jonathan Vankin and John Whalen in regard to the American scientists who devoted themselves to the study of eugenics and its implications: "These scientists expended immeasurable energy trying to 'prove' that blacks were stupid, Jews were greedy, Mexicans were lazy, women were nutty, and so on - as well as the corollary: rich, white people with good table manners and glowing report cards were genetically superior."[392]

Kuhl, in explaining the rationale for his book, *The Nazi Connection* indicates, "The development, however, of science in general and scientific racism in particular needs to be seen within its proper historical context. The Nazi connection with American scientists and its continuity as manifested in the Pioneer Fund can help us understand Nazi race ideology and the results and implications of present-day race research as part of a shared history of scientific racism."[393] A shared history indeed! And shared responsibility too - though Americans have no remorse since we have little idea these atrocities occurred within our borders committed by our own citizens.

Nietzsche's Übermensch and the Master Race

Hitler's goal to create a German master race and the philosopher Friedrich Nietzsche's notion of the *Übermensch* are inseparable ideas. And yet, when we review the eugenic science of Germany, there is often no mention of Nietzsche's *superman*, as if historians and scientists who reflect on German eugenics are unaware of this mythical connection. Yet it was Nietzsche who not only idolized a 'new man' untethered to Christianity as well as its ethical and moral concerns, but who animated a religious quality attributable to the "Überman." Furthermore, implicit in Nietzsche's vision was an anti-Semitic impulse supporting Hitler's racist hatred for the Jews. As this author discussed in Book One of *Power Quest*, Nietzsche leveraged the Hegelian dialectic to depict a religious history of humankind imposing a not-so-subtle form of intellectual anti-Semitism:

> Friedrich Nietzsche forced the Hegelian Master-Slave dialectic a different direction. He welded it to explain the origin of morality and a path for morality's future. For Nietzsche, this dialectic explains the religious history of humankind. Nietzsche believed that both Christian and democratic morality was a 'slave morality' suffused with weakness as a result of Judaic, biblical teaching. Nietzsche staunchly advocated 'master morality'. Nietzsche contended humankind must strive to adopt master morality since the God of the Bible had been proven irrelevant (at least to Europeans at the close of the nineteenth century - the meaning of his assertion that "God is dead"). Of course, his 'master morality' consists of attributes like superiority, nobility, and dominance...
>
> According to Nietzsche, from the Jews (certainly lumping Jesus into the race he ridiculed), comes the 'slave morality' which supports charity, turning the other cheek, humility, and the like. For Nietzsche, such 'slave' notions unfortunately influenced their overlords over time and demanded they relinquish the qualities of masters - such as authority, greed, and control. Furthermore, Nietzsche laments how the heroic morality of Greece and Rome was conquered by the slave morality of Christianity. To him, the essential struggles of these cultures amounted to the heroic (Roman) mentality subordinating itself to the slave (Judaic) sentiment.

Nietzsche's denial of human equality and his belittlement of the mass of humanity for which he frequently employed the term 'herd' (in distinction to his Übermensch), added a colorful slur to his indictment of traditional democratic ideals.

> Likewise, Nietzsche faulted our democratic ideology in America because it upheld equality and freedom. To him, the democratic movement amounted to the "collective degeneration of man…"
>
> Nietzsche's hoped for transformation of society began with the arrival of Übermensch - the 'superman' who will overcome the death of God and build the basis for a new ethic modeled after this 'master' morality. This new 'demigod' will be free from outmoded and 'unnatural' religions as well as moral prohibitions (he uses the word we translate 'organic' to justify the Übermensch fulfilling his every desire)...
>
> His sage advice would soon be realized with the arrival of Adolf Hitler. It was Hitler who leveraged the ideology of Nietzsche's Übermensch to help support his concept of a German master race - the Aryan race - coupled with Nietzsche's implicit anti-Semitism and hatred for Christianity. It is also instructive that Nietzsche wrote the books entitled, *The Antichrist* and *Thus Sprauch Zarathustra* (*So Spoke Zoroaster*) to provide a mythic format to expound his notions of Übermensch, the death of God, and the detrimental effects of Christianity on human society. As it turns out, Nietzsche's notion of the Übermensch is actually a well-crafted philosophical word-icon of what the Bible terms, "the man of sin" or "the son of perdition" who will base his actions on lawlessness (i.e., that law has no absolute basis). According to the Apostle Paul, it is indeed the defining characteristic of the Antichrist (II Thessalonians 2:3).

Within this context, one can readily appreciate how the hatred that Nazi fascists (and Nietzsche) had for democracy, became a significant first step toward the elimination of human rights in Germany. When 'might is right' - when superior beings deserve preferences refused to the inferior - surely civilization glimmers in its last twilight. Furthermore, while today's academic lovers of Nietzsche wish to blame his racial excesses upon his avowedly racist sister (his posthumous editor and agent); his most cogent decrees for the course of humankind also demonstrate an implicit anti-Semitism. While Nietzsche might have deplored Auschwitz as many admirers

assert - he likely would have acknowledged how his philosophy was easily twisted to justify it. How ironic if not remarkable he suffered a nervous breakdown when jumping on top of a helpless horse to protect it from being beaten to death by its merciless owners. (Thereafter, he would spend the rest of his days in an insane asylum.) As the late evangelical ‘thinker’ Francis Schaeffer would have surmised (employing his awkward phraseology ‘the mannishness of man’), although trapped in the ‘intellectual despair’ of his own making (i.e., judging morality and ethics have no meaning), Nietzsche was ‘irrationally’ compelled to care for a creature crying out for help while castigating its owners. His soul was stamped with the image of a loving and kind God, the very same God who Nietzsche despised.

However, the Übermensch was not the only concept Hitler embraced to give support to the creation of the super race. The notion of the Aryan man itself was lifted from the writings of Madame Helena Petrovna Blavatsky. According to her ‘secret’ cosmology, the Aryan race was originated in the Himalayas, formed from descendants of Atlantis. Prior to occupying Atlantis, these original ‘Nordic-like’ humans were spawned in the universal contest between ‘fire and ice’. For these ridiculous reasons, the Nazis sought the ancient wisdom of Tibetan monks. They sent explorers off to Tibet to discover the ancient secrets of Aryan ancestry. Himmler’s *Ahnenerbe*, the government institution established to study such ‘folk history’, was smitten with such legends. As has been cited by a number of scholars, a lamasery of Tibetan monks came to live in Berlin sometime before or during the War in part apparently in hopes they would provide added occult power to the Third Reich. [394] The depths of such far-flung pseudo-science is astonishing when placed side-by-side with the truly superior technical engineering and ‘break-through’ physics pioneered by a multitude of brilliant Germans.

In summary, when we consider German eugenics and ‘human reengineering’ it would be an oversight to dismiss the occult aspect of their quest - despite the fact virtually all scholars on the subject of eugenics are guilty of this omission.

Drs. Otmar von Verschuer and Josef Mengele

As the cattle cars were emptied at Auschwitz, a desperate hope for the survival of their children motivated the parents of twins to hand off their offspring to the ‘angel of death’ - Josef Mengele. This hope was short-lived. The parents would be gassed to death within moments. Their ‘twin children’ would be killed within a few short weeks. Only a few dozen twins selected at this inhuman, eugenic ‘cattle call’ would survive. The only reason: Mengele simply hadn’t had time to kill them yet. Mengele would stand at the end of the ramp and give a thumbs-up, thumbs-down verdict. He and his henchmen would yell out, *Zwillinge, Zwillinge! (Twins! Twins!)* Black asserts, “These children were coddled and fed well to keep them in pristine shape. Then they were subjected to painful procedures. Often they were murdered as soon as the tests were completed, so they could be fastidiously dissected.” [395]

It was all done in the name of research. Francis Galton had first recognized that twins presented an ideal subject for inheritance studies. One could test the effect of heredity versus environment as well as many other ‘telling’ experiments.

Mengele’s imprimatur was supplied by the newly created Frankfurt Institute for Hereditary Biology and Racial Hygiene and his superior, Otmar Freiherr von Verschuer. Verschuer had left the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute to head what would come to be known as *Verschuer’s Institute*. There Verschuer would work out the finer details of race theory and eugenics-based experiments well before Hitler came on the scene. Mengele would heartlessly conduct them during this two-year tenure at Auschwitz (May 1943 to April 1945). Neither would be punished for their monstrous deeds - thanks to Americans who would rescue them from the Nuremberg trials and vouch for their value after enough time passed so the memory of their deeds had faded.

Verschuer was not simply peripherally linked to Auschwitz because of his evil assistant Mengele. He spent almost two decades laying the groundwork long before ‘the Angel of Death’ came on the scene:

> In 1924, at about the time Hitler staged his Beer Hall Putsch in Munich, Verschuer lectured that fighting the Jews was integral to Germany’s eugenic battle. He was speaking on race hygiene to a nationalist student training camp when the question of Jewish

> inferiority came up. “The German, Völkische struggle,” he told the students, “is primarily directed against the Jews, because alien Jewish penetration is a special threat to the German race.” The next year, he helped found the Tubingen branch of Ploetz’s Society for Racial Hygiene and became its secretary. In 1927, Verschuer distinguished himself among German race hygienists when he was appointed one of three department heads at the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute for Anthropology, Human Heredity and Eugenics. Verschuer chaired its Human Heredity department.[396]

Upon the founding of ‘Verschuer’s Institute’ American eugenics’ leader Harry Laughlin would celebrate the victory for world eugenics. “The Eugenics Record Office and the Eugenics Research Association congratulate the German people on the establishment of their new Institute for the Biology of Heredity and Race Hygiene....We shall be glad indeed to keep in touch with you in the development of eugenics in our respective countries.”[397] But Laughlin was not the only American enamored with Verschuer’s work:

> Verschuer’s popularity with American eugenicists had soared by 1937. Senior U.S. eugenicists were clamoring for his attention. Anti-Semite and Nazi sympathizer Charles M. Goethe sent a letter introducing himself. “I am National President of the Eugenics Research Association of the United States,” Goethe wrote. “I have heard much of your work at Frankfurt.... May I ask whether I could visit your Institution? I feel, because of the violent anti-German propaganda in the United States, our people know almost nothing of what is happening in Germany.”[398]

The study of twins was enthusiastically carried out by Verschuer and by another German, Heinrich Kranz of the University of Breslau. Kranz released studies on 75 pairs of twins. This research was applauded by American Paul Popenoe who asserted the study would help identify “natural born criminals.” Another American pointed out the path forward for all true eugenic work. What was really needed was a totalitarian society to complete research efforts unobstructed by the human rights of undesirables:

> American eugenicist T U. H. Ellinger was in Germany shortly after the decree to visit with Fischer at the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute for Anthropology, Human Heredity and Eugenics. In a *Journal of Heredity*

> essay on his visit, Ellinger flippantly reported to his colleagues, “Twins have, of course, for a long time been a favorite material for the study of the relative importance of heredity and environment, of nature and nurture. It does, however, take a dictatorship to oblige some ten thousand pairs of twins, as well as triplets and even quadruplets, to report to a scientific institute at regular intervals for all kinds of recordings and tests.”[399]

Mengele worked with Verschuer for several years as an assistant before assuming the head of what Black labels in macabre manner, ‘Twins Camp’. Mengele had co-authored articles and papers winning his way into Verschuer’s favor. Mengele was sorely disappointed when he could not accompany his mentor to Scotland for a Eugenics conference right before the war broke out. As fate would have it, the conference barely had ended before World War II began. But for a schedule a few weeks later and for want of a few German Marks more (supplying the lack of research funding that forced the decision to leave Mengele in Germany) both Verschuer and Mengele might have spent the War in Scotland, hampering the Holocaust in a dramatic fashion. But the ‘fickle finger of fate’ would allow Mengele to administer the Auschwitz research and conduct the most horrendous of scientific experiments which would have even unnerved Dr. Frankenstein. Edwin Black chronicles that 1,500 twins were subjected to the atrocities with less than 200 surviving. The research was ghastly to say the least.

> Mengele also sought dwarfs and the physically deformed - really any specimen of interest. He ghoulishly and capriciously explored the effects of genetics, disease and mass breeding. In one case, Mengele removed part of a man’s stomach without administering anesthesia. To investigate the pathology of dysentery, Mengele told Nyiszli [Dr. Miklos Nyiszli, a Jewish Hungarian forced to assist Mengele on pain of death[400]] to prepare for 150 emaciated corpses, and to autopsy them at the rate of seven per day; Nyiszli protested that he could only complete three per day if he was to be thorough. Eye color was a favorite subject for experimentation. Eager to discover if brown eyes could be converted to Nordic blue, Mengele would introduce blue dyes, sometimes by drops, sometimes by injection. It often blinded the subjects, but it never changed their eye color.[401]

Mengele would meticulously document his experiments with the help of assistants like Nyiszli. One noteworthy contribution for the Institute's research back in Frankfurt was blood. Mengele sent Verschuer vast quantities of blood for his study, marked "War Material - Urgent!"

Verschuer, like Mengele, was fascinated by eye color. Mengele would collect and collate the data on hundreds of eyes. One survivor remembers entering the pristine laboratory of Mengele at Auschwitz (perfect red floors and pale green walls - he would have nothing but the best) to be staggered by the sight of a wall covered with pairs of eyeballs hanging like a collection of insects, tagged with pertinent information about their recently deceased owners. Verschuer and Mengele were the ultimate partners in crime:

> Mengele returned to Berlin from time to time. On one of these trips, he visited his mentor Verschuer for a cozy family dinner. Mengele was asked whether his work at Auschwitz was hard. Years later, Verschuer's son recalled Mengele's reply to his mother: "It's dreadful," Mengele said. "I can't talk about it." Nevertheless, Mengele was tireless in his bloodletting, his eyeball extractions, his infecting, his autopsying and his selecting, most to the left and some to the right. In mid-August of 1944, his superior filed a letter of commendation. "During his employment as camp physician at the concentration camp Auschwitz," Verschuer asserted, "he has put his knowledge to practical and theoretical use while fighting serious epidemics. With prudence, perseverance and energy, he has carried out all tasks given him, often under very difficult conditions, to the complete satisfaction of his superiors and has shown himself able to cope with every situation."[402]

But Verschuer would not be held accountable for authorizing and encouraging the work of Mengele. Mengele no doubt saw himself conducting scientific research, with perhaps only a slight tip of the hat to sadism. At least that is what Mengele, his colleagues which escaped to Argentina, and his wealthy family living in Germany would have us believe. Certainly part of Mengele's motivation was 'career ladder climbing' believing he would make a name for himself as one of history's most celebrated researchers. Ambition was much in play. However, to be sure sadism played no small part too.

Witnesses recall his greatest and most sacred motivation was *building a super race*. Mengele bought the spiritual motivations and occult philosophers of Himmler and Hitler - hook, line, and sinker. He was a proud member of the occult SS; of which he arguably became its most notorious adherent. A victim of Mengele in America (the shocking subject of the next chapter), Carol Rutz provides this insight from another victim who shared her story to Rutz:

> Black [Dr. Black was the frequent alias used by Mengele with his victims in the U.S. in the 1950s and 60s] talked about how Hitler had not died, but had ascended to a god-state. He didn't seem to worship Hitler, but seemed to honor the perfect idea of the man. None of them worshipped him that I could tell, because they were *too absorbed with the idea of also becoming gods. Gods don't worship gods.* They talked about getting rid of the "impurities" that had been gotten through intermarriage with mongrels, etc. Mengele said that they needed to "remember who we are." [Emphasis mine][403]

Conclusion - The Rehabilitation of Dr. Verschuer

Nevertheless, while Auschwitz was the apparent "last stand of eugenics" as Edwin Black contends, America wasn't done with its doctrine of racial hatred and drastic methods for social engineering. The American elite can be thanked for that.

> But while openly eschewing eugenics with statements and memos, Rockefeller in fact turned to eugenicists and race scientists throughout the biological sciences to achieve the goal of creating a superior race.
>
> Rockefeller never knew of Mengele. With few exceptions, the foundation had ceased all eugenic studies in Nazi-occupied Europe when the war erupted in 1939. But by that time the die had been cast. The talented men Rockefeller financed, the great institutions it helped found, and the science it helped create took on a scientific momentum of their own. What could have stopped the race biologists of Berlin, Munich, Buchenwald and Auschwitz?
>
> Certainly, the Nazis felt they were unstoppable. They imagined a Thousand-Year Reich of super-bred men. Hence when the twins, the prisoner doctors and those selected for the gas chamber looked at Mengele, time after time they reported the piercing look in his eyes. That look - Mengele's glare - was the Nazi vision wedded to a fanatical science whose soul had been emptied, its moral compass cracked; a science backed not merely by iron dogma but by men wielding machine guns and pellets of Zyklon B.[404]

Verschuer would rehabilitate his reputation by first distancing himself from Mengele. He began to refer to Mengele only as 'Doctor M.' His testimony would paint a rosy veneer on Mengele's legacy as merely a question of misunderstood and mistaken motivations. His was indeed a pathetic attempt to whitewash the work of one of history's most evil villains. "A post-doc of my former Frankfurt Institute, Dr. M., was sent against his will to the hospital of the concentration camp in Auschwitz. All who knew him learned from him how unhappy he was about this, and how he tried over and over again to be sent to the front, unfortunately without success. Of his work we learned that he tried to be a physician and help the sick..."[405]

Thanks to exhaustive letter writing between Verschuer and his American colleagues enlisting their support, Dr. Verschuer would eventually be reinstated as an important academic. Edwin Black documents much of the correspondence of which I will only share a single citation here. On one occasion Verschuer writes: “I ask you and other American geneticists and eugenicists who know me to undertake steps with the American military government in Germany to bring about the granting of permission for me to continue my life’s work as a scientific researcher. It is my urgent wish that I be able to rebuild genetic and eugenic science from the ruins we stand upon in every area in Germany, a science that - *free of the misuse of past years* - may again attain international renown.”[406] [Emphasis mine, Here we see Verschuer deny Hess’ admonition that the Third Reich was merely applied biology!]

American eugenic leaders Paul Popenoe and Charles Goethe were only too eager to help. They were especially effusive in their responses to Verschuer. Based much upon their support, the real devil behind Mengele was eventually installed as professor in the Institute of Genetics, at the University of Münster.

However, in 1960 Frankfurt officials were compelled to examine Verschuer and his relationship to Mengele. Authorities determined *there was no connection between the two!* The records readily available to investigators like Black seemingly hid themselves from those who could have called him to account. Where there is no will, there is no way.

In 1969, Verschuer was killed in an auto accident. During his lifetime the records of his part in the Holocaust were never made public. Mengele’s story, however, was quite different. The hunt for Mengele would soon become the stuff of legend. It would even attract the movie moguls of Hollywood. But ‘Mengele in the Movies’ stands as just the ‘lead-in’ to the real story. The incredible true tale of Joseph Mengele goes far, far deeper.

CHAPTER NINE:

MENGELE, CHILDREN WARRIORS,

THE 'ROYAL' CONSPIRACY,

AND THE CREATION OF ANTICHRIST

"All truth passes through three stages. First, it is ridiculed. Second it is violently opposed. Third it is accepted as being self-evident."

Frederick Schopenhauer

The heavier the technology, the more difficult it is to distinguish between treatment and torture.

Peter Schrag, author *Mind Control*

"The three big ingredients of psychological warfare are money, no holds barred, and no questions asked."

C.D. Jackson, Special Assistant for *Psychological Strategy*

If ever the spy Allen Dulles should arrive in Heaven through absent-mindedness, he would begin to blow up the clouds, mine the stars and slaughter the angels.

The Soviet newspaper, *Pravda*, 1951

Where's Mengele?

In 1992, The Office of Special Investigations of the Department of Justice issued a sizable report to address the issue of whether or not Josef Mengele had ever been in the United States and even more provocatively, had been employed in the service of the U.S. Intelligence services. The report makes strongly assertive and definitive statements there was no evidence whatsoever that Mengele had ever crossed our borders and certainly no basis that he had been employed by the U.S. Government. Following the in ignoble tradition of West German judicial analysis (that Verschuer and Mengele had 'no connection'), the report denies the presence of Mengele in the United States after the War. While it admits that research conducted by Nazis did exist of which our country was most interested (citing the well-known work of Nazi rocket scientists at NASA); however, there was absolutely no interest in the so-called 'research' of Josef Mengele. Of that we can rest assured. Quoting directly from the report to the Attorney General:

> Review of state Department and U.S. intelligence files permit the confident conclusion that Josef Mengele had no contact with U.S. institutions or personnel following his departure from Europe. Although OSI confirmed that members of the Mengele family did retain ownership interests in U.S. corporations, we know of no reliable information that there was any contact between these entities and Josef Mengele, or that he benefitted from them.
>
> The Department has found no credible evidence that Mengele ever entered the United States, either under his own name or under any of his known aliases.
>
> America was in constant contact with, and received continuous support from, his family and friends in Guenzburg [sic, Günzburg]. His pseudonymous residence in Germany from 1945 to 1949 and, more importantly, his successful flight from Europe in 1949 were made possible primarily by that support. No evidence was found for the claim that Mengele was in contact with, received any support from, or gave any assistance to, U.S. intelligence agencies or any other U.S. authorities. Indeed, OSI could not even establish a likely basis for such a relationship.[407]

The hunt for Mengele had been made famous by Simon Wiesenthal (1908-2005), an Austrian Holocaust survivor and Nazi hunter. Wiesenthal had successfully searched and found numerous Nazis (including the SS officer responsible for the arrest of Anne Frank and her family) and was instrumental in their prosecution. But his critics have argued that Wiesenthal used the search for Mengele as an unethical means to raise money to support his Foundation, as well as stretching the truth about his exploits and taking undue credit for arrests.

Figure 29 - The Boys from Brazil Poster ©
Presumed by Artisan
covered by U.S. Fair Use law

The reader is probably aware how both Wiesenthal and Mengele were made famous by the 1978 movie, *The Boys from Brazil* whose plot was based upon a fictional plan of Mengele and other Nazis to 'resurrect Adolf Hitler from the dead' through the science of cloning combined with environmental circumstances created to shape at least one of over 100 Hitler clones (dispersed throughout the world in 100 unsuspecting families) into the leader of the Fourth Reich.[408] Sir Laurence Olivier played Ezra Lieberman, a

character derived from Wiesenthal, with Gregory Peck playing a much taller version of the Angel of Death (Mengele was 5'8", with Peck a much taller and undoubtedly handsomer man). Ironically, in the 1976 movie, *The Marathon Man*, Olivier had played an evil Nazi doctor, "The White Angel," clearly derived from Mengele, to Dustin Hoffman's 'mistaken man' character made famous by the scene in which Olivier drills into Hoffman's non-anesthetized tooth, asking "Is it safe yet?"[409] After that, going to the dentist was never quite the same for Americans.

The real history of Nazi hunting revolves mostly around Klaus Barbie (1913-1991), the so-called "Butcher of Lyon" who had been famously hunted in South America as was the more highly ranked Adolf Eichmann (1906-1962), regarded as the 'father' of "the final solution." Eichmann was captured by the Israeli Mossad in 1960 and brought back to Israel where he was hanged in 1962 after being found guilty on 15 counts of crimes against humanity. His capture set off a fire storm regarding Argentinian sovereignty which Israel ignored in its clandestine capture of Eichmann. Barbie was enlisted by the CIA to facilitate the capture and execution of Marxist Ché Guevara in Bolivia. This relationship was expressly denied until the CIA officially confirmed the Barbie association in 1983. It seems that today's denials are tomorrow's admissions. It's all just a question of timing. As the "White Angel" villain of *Marathon Man* asked, "Is it safe yet?" Is it safe to finally disclose the truth?

Admittedly, the hunt for Nazi criminals is a suspenseful if not scintillating drama. But the search for Josef Mengele reaches levels exceeding even what Hollywood has fantasied so far. And for the American survivors who were victims of Auschwitz's *Angel of Death* for at least twenty years after his passage through the ratlines and his 1949 arrival in Argentina, the drama is a tale of horror made believable only by the sheer number and consistency of first-hand accounts. As with Barbie, the CIA so far has refused to admit what hundreds of witnesses and victims already know. Mengele was here. 'Survivors' have been breaking their silence for two decades or more. They testify, despite the governmental reports to the contrary, that Josef Mengele did cross our borders, perhaps dozens of times, at the invitation of Allen Dulles, Sidney Gottlieb, and select wealthy elite of America connected to an as-yet-unacknowledged alliance between the perpetually-rich in America and

the perennially-royal in Europe who remain inconspicuous in what is assuredly a multi-millennia-old quest to build the super-race. As they say when the audacious surpasses the incredulous, “You can’t make this stuff up.” However, it is hardly a new thing. Psalm 2:2 testifies, “The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the LORD, and against his anointed.”

Children Made Warriors

"I was told that I worked for 'The Agency'. It was in actuality, key men and women in the CIA and other branches of the government, in league with certain extremely wealthy individuals who wanted to remain in the shadows shaping the outcome of world events."[410] For survivor and author Carol Rutz, her training began as a Manchurian Candidate when she was barely four-years old. She was 'volunteered' for her spy training by her father and grandfather. Key to this transaction was the fact they were both pedophiles. Thanks to the fact that her father had been tested while in the Army by John Gittinger's Personality Assessment System (discussed in Chapter 7), the CIA knew they had someone they could blackmail. Then there was Grandpa. Carol's grandfather was notorious for other reasons. He had been associated with the Mafia back in the days of Al Capone. With a bit of arm-twisting and some cash on the barrel head, Grandpa provided young Carol for experiments and training in the fine arts of psychic warfare and assassination.

But Carol's father wasn't just a potential pedophile. He had already sexually abused her at an even younger age causing her to dissociate and create three alters. As we shall see, this modest amount of DID (the reader will recall the acronym for dissociative identity disorder), was just the beginning. Later, her grandfather 'directed' his granddaughter Carol in homemade child pornography produced in his basement. By 1952 (born in 1947), Carol was already severely traumatized. Now she would become one of the very first child 'super-soldiers' created by the CIA:

> Grandpa was a boozer and pedophile. The true extent of his personal involvement with [the Mafia] went to the grave with him. I can only say that I'm quite sure that I was not the first child to star in his pornographic films, which were distributed to some very wealthy, notable public figures, probably through the mob. Having found this out, the CIA took advantage of this knowledge to enlist grandpa's cooperation. They were looking for children who had the ability to disassociate from reality for a project named Bluebird/Artichoke[411] [the predecessor to MKULTRA].

Carol tells her astonishing story in her 2001 book, *A Nation Betrayed.* In Carol Rutz, we bring together all of the terrifying topics discussed in this

book: fantastic Nazi science put to use for ‘ultimate’ causes; sadist Nazi fugitives smuggled into our country to be employed by our government in the name of national security; remote viewing; mind control; paranormal empowerment in the name of government service; and dissociative identity disorder. It is an incredible story to be sure.

However, since each of the elements have been discussed and documented in the previous 300 pages, the credibility of her account can’t be dismissed out of hand simply because the events have no basis in fact. Though her claims are fantastic, we have substantiated each element of her story. The only issue is whether her particular account should be believed. Given her testimony is but one of several we will discuss (all having the same characteristics), the reader will ultimately decide the truth of her testimony.

For this author in the final analysis, the multiplicity of witnesses who supply similar account stands as a convincing argument for the history described. Given this conviction, it is the pivotal moment to underscore where all of these fantastic ‘allegations’ lead (again, claims which the author believes have been convincingly confirmed).

As we are about to see, within the story of Josef Mengele the ultimate dark truth is disclosed. Indeed, it is through Mengele’s American activities (which are officially denied by our government), we discover the agenda of Satan himself and how all these incredible threads are woven into a tapestry conveying a picture too terrible to comprehend in a solitary viewing - but comprehend we must if we are to discern and come to terms with the sinister plot of ‘the evil one’ and how the United States of America figures into this conspiracy to end all conspiracies.

In summary, here we witness the power quest for world conquest: the “Plan” of Freemasons, the “Great Work” of the “Secret Doctrine”, Alice Bailey’s “Externalization of the Hierarchy,” the transformation anticipated in the 2012 movement, and the hope expressed in “Awakening as One.” In short, here we have humankind proclaiming its divinity. From a biblical perspective, this isn’t humanism or the fulfillment of our destiny. Here a defiant human race gives heed to Satan’s counsel to rebel against God. In essence, *the agenda of Antichrist becomes the mission of humankind.*

Based upon her story, however, Carol Rutz may only know a portion of this truth. And yet, her research remains an invaluable witness. To set the stage, she includes a quote by Lt. Col. Roberts when he testified before a special joint committee of the Wisconsin State Legislature. Rutz demonstrates an understanding that her tormentors were ultimately *the shadow government of powerful elites*. Roberts frames well the sordid issues in his single succinct statement:

> "The most secret knowledge, a science which outdates history, is the science of control over people, governments and civilizations. The foundation of this ultimate discipline is the control of wealth. Through the control of wealth come the control of public information and the necessities of life. Through the control of news media comes thought control. Through the control of basic necessities comes direct control of people. A significant portion of the American public is yet to become aware of the Invisible Government of Monetary Power."[412]

The remaining question to ask Carol Rutz: did she recognize the real power behind the evil she experienced? Lurking behind 'the monetary power' was an even darker evil others plainly identified.

KEEPING COMPANY WITH THE COMPANY

Rutz was among the first of many children turned into American assassins at a very young age. It was not that her programmers intended her to utilize her skills immediately; she would be trained and then wait until her time had come. This would not be for many years. In the short term, she was useful for experiments and for informing her handlers how to employ highly specialized techniques. However, the training needed to begin very early when she could be subjected to trauma-based personality splitting. DID was the mechanism which would allow multiple personalities to be created within her, each with its own name and its specific assigned task.

Because this was early in the program, 1952, Carol worked with the very top echelon of the MKULTRA hierarchy. It was with her that they began to learn the basics: Allen Dulles (who her 'Baby' alter called "Mr. Dull-Ass") was there at the first meeting along with Sidney Gottleib ("Daddy Sid") and Carmel Offie ("Crazy Eddie"). Rutz later states in her account that Dulles and Gottleib took her to the first of many encounters with a Dr. Black who she identifies as Josef Mengele.[413] Rutz was then transported to New York. This treacherous trio (Gottleib, Dulles, and Mengele) would be personally involved in what was likely one of the first experiences of DID programming on innocent children - at least American kids without connections to wealthy and elite families (to be explained in the pagers ahead).

At times during her narrative, Carol 'speaks' through her alters, a few of whom (as mentioned above), she had already created when struggling to cope with sexual abuse from her family. However, in the company of the 'Company men', the abuse would now grow much worse and her alters would be multiplied and highly structured by professionals.

We read of the encounter with her primary programmer, Mr. Gottleib himself, who instructs her during a programming session:

> "I am your mammer and your papper. You love only me, and I am the only one who loves you. I feed you and hold you, and you are mine alone." (Our Baby part grew to love and depend on "Daddy Sid" as her only source of love and nourishment. From that day forward, a deep bonding took place with Dr. Sidney Gottlieb, Directorate of Operations

> of the Technical Services Staff (TSS) of CIA in charge of their behavioral program through MKULTRA. (No matter what experiment he was to make me a part of, I would love and remain loyal to the man who my baby alter considered sole supplier of the basics of life, food and love.) A declassified document from 1954 says, "At all times when subjects were being hypnotized a CD representative (Dr. Gottlieb or Major *deleted*) was present. His presence served a double purpose of reassurance to the subject of observation of technique for possible later exploitation."[414]

Carol then tells the story of the creation of another alter named "Guy" who would hold all her rage and would become one of the primary assassin personalities. "Guy was created that day, and in the coming years would display psychic abilities that the CIA found very useful. Guy was taught to store all the anger and hatred accumulated during abuse and use it to psychically kill with what Sidney Gottlieb called 'The Red Fire.'"[415] We learn a few years later Rutz was asked to demonstrate her ability to use psychic powers to kill a specified target via generating a brain aneurism. Rutz doesn't know if the process worked; she was happy to be left in the dark.[416]

Rutz uses this occasion to mention a corroborative testimony by the twin Hersha sisters (note: the recurrence of twins is highly indicative of the person behind the scenes). Described in their book, *Secret Weapons*, they were also trained to be assassins. Moreover, throughout her narrative, Rutz alludes to many survivors of MKULTRA, such as the Hersha twins, that have either published their own accounts or shared their story with Rutz, and with their permission, included in *A Nation Betrayed.* For instance, Brice Taylor is one such survivor Rutz cites who wrote a 1995 book, *One Woman's Escape from Mind Control.* As with all other such survivors, Taylor alleges a coordinated counsel of conspirators inside the CIA which superintended these actions. To support their testimony, Rutz supplies many statements by those 'in the know' within the government itself, speaking from 'the other side of the programming'; I will supply only one of these citations:

> In an interview for *Nexus Magazine* written by David G. Guyatt, former CIA/DIA deep-cover agent "Chip" Tatum takes this a step further when he speaks of a group he calls "Pegasus." He says that this

> group operated on behalf of the U.S. and other governments, undertaking tasks that ranged from narcotics smuggling to assassinations. He said that *Pegasus* was established during the Eisenhower years as a secret group inside the CIA to spy on that agency on behalf of the President. According to Tatum, the directors of *Pegasus* meet once a year in secret conclave following G7 meetings. The mission of *Pegasus*, Tatum explains is "to 'align' world leaders and financiers to our [US] policies and standards."[417]

But how much did all of these groups really know about the children assassins being built by the CIA beginning in the 1950s?

Rutz ponders the meaning of the CIA's diabolical scheme:

> Children as mind-controlled operatives certainly were advanced technical weapons. Some of the training and experimentation that many of us became involved in was a clear indication of what lengths these power hungry egomaniacs were willing to go, to accomplish their New World Order. I detest these people for invading my mind and creating alters for their own evil purposes. These mind-controlled (MC) parts were told they had a "Nobler Purpose" and that they "Must survive at any cost." As such, suicide programs were layered into my system in the event that I should start to heal and tell.[418]

Rutz also discusses the experiments Dr. Ewen Cameron performed on her (as well as another Canadian doctor, Wilder Penfield, both of McGill University in Montreal). Cameron's work on electro-shock therapy (i.e., essentially torture in these early experiments) is renown and extensively documented by Alex Constantine and Dominic Streatfeild - authors cited earlier whose credibility is uncolored by spiritual or political agendas. For space reasons and since Cameron's work has been covered by virtually everyone who has discussed the subject of MKULTRA, I've elected not to include references to his horrific 'treatments' in this book (See Streatfeild's history of brainwashing for an extended discussion of the infamous Dr. Cameron[419]). I will document here only that the exact amounts of money the CIA paid, in which projects, and over what time period Cameron was under contract, were thoroughly documented by Dr. Colin Ross in his book, *The CIA Doctors*.

Instead, my focus in this chapter is to chronicle the details of Dr. Mengele in America, a story known only to an unfortunate few, with details contributed

by Carol Rutz and others who this author personally interviewed. (Theirs is a public story cited in many web-based audio presentations - but it has not been the subject of a written narrative, being treated to some depth as it is in this chapter).[420]

Layered Programming and Colorful Doctors

Rutz summarizes the telling of her traumatic story with these words:

> I am but one of the many children who were the CIA's convenient experimental subjects, used to try and perfect similar results here in the United States [with those reported in the Soviet Union]. Because of our youth and the severe traumatization we were put through, *these men felt we would never tell our stories; and if we did, they felt we would never be believed*. Out of respect for the feelings of my adult children, I have not included some of the training I was forced to endure. Likewise, I have not named some of those living and dead who perpetrated heinous deeds of which I will not speak. I wish to remain among the living.
>
> Dr. Corydon Hammond delivered a lecture in 1992 describing some of the programming he had encountered. Many other doctors have likewise found these same types of programmed alters in survivors of government mind control. Most survivors seem to have more than one level of programming.[421] [Emphasis added]

Indeed, the complexity of the DID programming is mind-boggling. Earlier, we discussed Dr. Hammond's famous 'Greenbaum Speech' from 1992. In fact the conclusion Carol Rutz draws (that there were multiple layers of programming), by definition testifies to a 'cloaking technique' built within the layering process. Dr. Hammond and other therapists contend the standard structured programming discussed (alpha, beta, delta, etc.) constitutes only the outermost layer. Beneath this structure, although itself complex and multifaceted, rest deeper layers which appear to comprise spiritual realities which Rutz doesn't appear to fully comprehend. In other words, the top layer hides deeper, much more sinister levels which go beyond anything covered thus far.

Pastor Doug Riggs, a friend of this author (and who we will discuss later), confirms this technique based upon 23 plus years of DID counseling. Riggs is one of several counselors discovering this fact.

To provide context and continuity, we would be wise to consider Dr. Hammond's commentary. I cite below an extensive section of his 1992 talk,

on the ‘multiple layers’ of programming and their symbolic basis (which Hammond connects to ‘Greenbaum’):

> It appears that below this [the structured programming discussed earlier], we've got some other layers. One is called "Green Programming" it appears. Isn't it interesting that the doctor's name is Dr. Green? One of the questions in a way that does not contaminate is after I've identified some of this stuff is there and they've given me a few right answers about what some of it is, "If there were a doctor associated with this programming and his name were a color, you know, like Dr. Chartreuse or something, if his name were a color, what color would the color be?" Now once in a while I've had some other colors mentioned in about three or four patients that I felt were trying to dissimulate in some way and I don't really believe had this. In one case I got another color and I found out later it was a doctor whose name was a color who was being trained by Dr. Green almost thirty years ago and he supervised part of the programming of this woman under this doctor. I remember one woman couldn't come up with anything. No alter would speak up with anything. I said, "Okay," and we went on to some other material. About two minutes later she said, "Green. Do you mean Dr. Green?" We found this all over. There appears to be some Green Programming below that and I suspect that you get down to fewer and more central programs the deeper you go.
>
> Well, all Green Programming is Ultra-Green and the Green Tree. Cabalistic mysticism is mixed all into this. If you're going to work with this you need to pick up a couple of books on the Cabala. One is by a man named Dion Fortune called "Qabala" with a "q," Dion Fortune. Another is by Ann Williams-Heller and it's called "The Kabbalah." I knew nothing about the Cabala. It was interesting. A patient had sat in my waiting area, got there considerably early and drew a detailed multicolored Cabalistic Tree over two years ago. It took me two months to figure out what it was. Finally, showing it to somebody else who said, "You know? That looks an awful lot like the Cabala Tree" and that rang a bell with some esoteric in an old book and I dug it out. That was the background of Dr. Green.
>
> Now the interesting thing about the Green Tree is his original name was Greenbaum. What does "greenbaum" mean in German? Green

> Tree, Ultra-Tree and the Green Tree. I've also had patients who didn't appear to know that his original name was Greenbaum, volunteered that there were parts inside named Mr. Greenbaum. Now let me give you some information about parts inside that may be helpful to you if you're going to inquire about these things, because my experience is one part will give you some information and either run dry or get defensive or scared and stop. And so you punt and you make an end run and you come around the other direction, you find another part.
>
> I'll tell you several parts to ask for and ask if there's a part by this name. And, by the way, when I'm screening patients and fiddling around with this, I throw in a bunch of spurious ones and ask, "Is there a part inside by this name and by that name" as a check on whether or not it appears genuine. For example: "In addition to the core," I ask, "is there a part inside named Wisdom?" Wisdom is a part of the Cabalistic Tree. Wisdom, I've often found, will be helpful and give you a lot of information. "Is there a part inside named Diana?" I mean I may throw in all sorts of things. "Is there a part inside named Zelda?" I've never encountered one yet! Just to see what kind of answers we get. I try to do this carefully.

In these comments, we see Dr. Hammond believed the ‘colors’ were only symbols - somewhat taking a page out of Carl Jung’s version of ‘depth psychology’. However, my research strongly suggests these names are in fact *pseudonyms*. Rutz asserts the same, in one portion of her account, but doesn’t catch the contradiction when referencing Hammond’s conjectures about why these DID victims recall ‘Dr. Green’. To demonstrate this apparent oversight, we read Rutz’s depiction in her chapter on ‘Dr. Black’ (Josef Mengele):

> Mind Control survivors have identified doctors used by the CIA under Project MKULTRA as having used different aliases. It seems colors were one of the most commonly used themes. Claudia Mullen and Chris Denicola, two survivors who testified before the President’s Advisory Committee on Human Radiation Experiments in March 1995 identified a *Dr. Green*. Claudia Mullen identified Dr. Green as an alias used by Dr. L. Wilson Green, Technical Director of the U.S. Army Chemical and Radiological Laboratories. Chris Denicola was four years old when she says Dr. Green used electroshock in conjunction with other forms of torture and drugs to program her. Some survivors

say that Dr. Ewen Cameron went by the alias *Dr. White*. Many survivors have identified Josef Mengele as using the aliases *Dr. Green*, *Dr. Black*, Dr. *Swartz* (black in German), Father Joseph, or Vaterchen (daddy) when he did their programming. The experiments and programming used on us were of such a heinous nature, that they were not unlike some of those performed at Auschwitz. I have personally spoken and corresponded with many of these child Cold War survivors who have agreed to allow me to recount some of their mind control and brainwashing experiments by the man they believe *to be Josef Mengele* using one of the above aliases and other CIA or military doctors.[422] [Emphasis mine]

Mengele - His Movements and Reconciliation with the Traditional Account

However, if Mengele was involved in programming American kids as Rutz and many other American victims contend, how could he come into the U.S.? In 1956 he had a West German passport issued in his own name so during the 1950s he had ‘safe passage’ - but it would later be rescinded. So how could Mengele move about unimpeded between his home in South America (first Argentina, then Paraguay, and finally Brazil - at least according to the traditional version of the truth) and the United States (including Canada)?

Carmel Offie, “Crazy Eddie” was also crucial to this scheme:

> Whether Offie and Mengele met will, for the time being, remain a question mark. There remains no doubt in my mind that he had the opportunity and the means to meet him, especially since Offie had previously helped the Vatican get a travel pass for Monsignor Krunoslav Draganovic to the prison camps. Draganovic, you may remember, ran the ratlines for U.S. sponsored Nazi escapees. With Mengele’s notoriety due to the depravity of his war crimes, it must have been very risky business to sneak him in and out of this country. Perhaps those who transported him never knew his real identity.[423]

We know that the CIA was instrumental in the movements of various Nazi war criminals to assist in select projects where their ‘special skills’ could be leveraged productively. For instance Alois Brunner worked alongside Otto Skorzeny (“Hitler’s favorite commando”) in Egypt in 1953, as part of the CIA’s training of Egyptian security forces run by Kermit (“Kim”) Roosevelt, Frank Wisner’s top troubleshooter. According to Christopher Simpson in his 1988 exposé, *Blowback: The First Full Account of America’s Recruitment of Nazis, and its Disastrous Effect on Our Domestic and Foreign Policy*, Brunner’s story is one of many where Simpson details the movements of several diabolical Nazi criminals during this decade and the one that followed. Brunner was no angel. He was considered the primary project manager for Eichmann in coordinating the details of the ‘final solution’. He would roundup Jews, corralling them in the Ghettos so they could be more readily transported by train to the many death camps around Europe. The

CIA would also protect Brunner from the French, who sought him to stand trial. Moreover, he wound up living ‘high on the hog’ in Damascus (perhaps an unfortunate analogy in a Muslim country). Simpson states:

> Brunner moved to Cairo in the midst of the Skorzeny project in Egypt and quickly integrated himself into that effort. He remained in Cairo until 1962, when an exploding Israeli letter bomb tore off several of his fingers. The Israeli intelligence service Mossad has claimed - unofficially, of course - that after Brunner’s stint with Skorzeny he enjoyed a second Egyptian contract under which he helped recruit a corps of German rocket experts on behalf of the Egyptian government. Israeli secret agents are said to have undertaken the letter bomb campaign that very nearly killed Brunner. The *Times of London* reports that Brunner returned to Syria after the bomb attack. He lives today in the prosperous Abu Rumaneh district of Damascus.[424]

Another example of the CIA shuttle service coincides with the case of Otto von Bolschwing. This account discloses the stunning cooperation in 1933 *between Zionists and the Nazis* leading to an agreement in which the Jews traded secrets to Germans for financing that helped create the Jewish homeland in Palestine! Simpson relates that Otto von Bolschwing became an expert on Palestine and served Eichmann working out ‘the final solution’ to the “Jewish problem.” (This little known and incredible account of Zionism’s deal with the Nazi devil is told in Edwin Black’s, *The Transfer Agreement: the Dramatic Story of the Pact Between the Third Reich and Jewish Palestine,* first published in 1984.) Simpson supplies the salient story line beginning with the meeting between von Bolschwing and Fieval Polkes of *Haganah* (an Israeli terrorist group) to cut the deal.

> Under the arrangement the Haganah was permitted to run recruiting and training camps for Jewish youth inside Germany. These young people, as well as certain other Jews driven out of Germany by the Nazis, were encouraged to emigrate to Palestine. Polkes and the Haganah, in return, agreed to provide the SS with intelligence about British affairs in Palestine. Captured German records claim that Polkes believed the increasingly brutal Nazi persecution of the Jews could be turned to Zionist advantage - at least temporarily - by compelling Jewish immigration to Palestine, and that the Haganah commander’s

> sole source of the income, moreover, was secret funds from the SS. [425]

For space reasons, no more will be said about von Bolschwing's many connections with the CIA (given under testimony to the U.S. Justice Department in 1979), other than the CIA escort to the U.S.

> In 1953, for reasons that are as yet unclear, the CIA decided to bring Otto von Bolschwing to the United States. Von Bolschwing - as a former SS man, Nazi party member, and Nazi SD agent - was clearly ineligible for a visa to the United States or American citizenship, and the CIA knew it. As in the Lebed, Shandruk, and Stankievich cases, [all World War II war criminals], the CIA did not attempt to bring von Bolschwing into the country 'legally' under the special authority it enjoyed through the 100 Persons Act. Instead, at least two high-ranking CIA officers…engineered a complicated scheme to spirit the former Nazi illegally into this country… First, it supplied the former Nazi with a false police report and military background check that claimed that no derogatory information was known about him. Next, a senior CIA officer personally accompanied von Bolschwing to the U.S. Consulate in Munich and convinced the visa officer there to provide all the necessary travel paperwork virtually overnight. Later agency headquarters in Washington directly intervened again, this time with the State Department and the INS, to ensure that von Bolschwing's entry into the United State went smoothly.[426]

The CIA lied to the INS - it claimed to have conducted a full inquiry into his background and he 'came up clean'. Yet it should be clear by now how deception and lying go hand-in-hand with 'intelligence' work. Where there is a will, there is a way. If one government officer lies when in an official capacity, the 'doorway' enlarges. Likewise, and this is the point: if the CIA (namely Allen Dulles and Sidney Gottleib) determined it was in the interest of the U.S. to bring Josef Mengele into the country, they could get it done. That there is no record (or no public admission) of this sleight of hand is not surprising. Given that the directive (the permission to emigrate) 'came from the top'), the only surprise would be if the U.S. government were to release this information anytime in the next fifty years. It is but another example confirming John Loftus' research on the policy of the Department of State

and Dulles' covert intelligence operation within State which would only expand when Dulles took over the CIA.

We also know Josef Mengele kept a diary of over 5,000 pages on his thoughts and experiences. But this diary didn't commence until the early 1960s. His presence (and likely his movements) between Buenos Aires and elsewhere, mostly to America throughout the 1950s, can only be filled in by the victims whose lives he attempted to destroy during this period when he, as an agent of the United States, worked toward the *ascendancy of the Antichrist in America.* In their Preface to his biography, *Mengele: The Complete Story* (first published in 1986), Gerald Posner and John Ware document this 'gap'.

> As a fugitive, Mengele was variously rumored to be involved in experiments on Indian tribes in South America, to have the ear of dictators, and to have had numerous brushes with death. He was portrayed as a ruthless power broker who could call upon the services of armed guards and killer dogs, and who moved among a score of impenetrable fortressed deep in the jungle. According to this legend, the only clue to his whereabouts was a trail of deal Israeli agents and independent Nazi-hunters whose corpses washed upon the banks of the Parana River.
>
> These apparently superhuman powers of evasion were based upon myths about Mengele's postwar life and are disproved by more than 5,000 pages of diaries and letters that he wrote. We have had unique and unrestricted access to them as well as to previously unpublished photographs, some of which appear in this book. The Mengele papers include a diary that he kept from May 1960 to within weeks of his death. There are also many extracts from an autobiography that Mengele started during the 1960s, but which omits any discussion of both Auschwitz and a ten-year period in Argentina from 1949 to 1959. We believe that Mengele never wrote about Auschwitz, fearing that any record of it might help identify him. *We can offer no rational explanation for the absence of any account of the 1950s*…[427] [Emphasis mine]

But their inability to discern the explanation stems from their failure to understand the spiritual context of Mengele's work and their willful choice to

discount the testimony of the living witnesses. *There is a rational reason* why Mengele wouldn't talk about what he was doing during the 1950s, a time when he was willing to live in Argentina under his own name and his movements were less restricted. As we will see, he didn't document his activities as he was later clearly inclined to do, because his conduct was so extreme and his services were on behalf of the uppermost echelon of 'elites' (both inside and outside of government, U.S. and British, the rich or the royal), that any record of his contracts with them and the nature of his purchased services would have meant certain death merely upon discovery by his caretakers. The CIA always had tabs on him. He couldn't afford to take the chance of leaving his diary lying around.

Mengele would grow more cautious about his movements during the 1960s and 1970s. But it is highly likely that the CIA taxi service was fully functioning up until the very end. Mengele realized his safest moments were when he was under direct CIA protection in the United States (and Canada) throughout the remainder of his life until (possibly) 1979. He was at risk when living apart from CIA protection in South America. As we will see from the testimonies below, Mengele was in the employ of the most important and powerful people of the world. As long as he had value to the 'aristocrats' and the U.S. government, being 'discovered' in America was not a threat of which he need spend many sleepless nights. He had the best guardians that money could buy. It would be when he had out-lived his usefulness that he had reason to be apprehensive. And as we will see, according to many witnesses, his death was not on a beach in Sao Paola, Brazil, but outside Indianapolis, Indiana. Furthermore, his death was at a time and place of his own choosing.

His passing was even a part of his own orchestrated plan to obtain 'higher status' amongst the spiritual elite he deemed reigning 'in the next life'. Mengele saw his work, not just in globalist terms, not just in creating the Fourth Reich, but in cosmic terms. As other witnesses testify, Mengele saw himself as the pivotal person bringing about the 'super race' - the Übermensch - through his very own diabolical 'eugenic' program, combining his knowledge of genetics with abilities learned sometime before or during his stint at Auschwitz, which focused on how to manufacture dissociative identity disorder to both implement a secret strategy and to

conceal it, even from skilled psychiatrists. Moreover, Mengele was willing to employ the most insidious torture to keep the secrets of these very important people hidden by (what he supposed) was an unbreakable layering of personalities. As amazing as it may seem to the reader, Mengele would be hired by the rich and the royal with genetically significant blood lines (at least significant to them!) with the full cooperation of persons in the CIA who were ‘read in’ to the strategy.

Doug Riggs and SRA/DID Therapy

Doug Riggs has been counseling victims of Satanic Ritual Abuse (SRA) and dissociative identity disorder (DID) since 1989. His ministry with persons showing symptoms of being ‘demonized’ began in 1983. Originally in Tulsa, Oklahoma, and now in Syracuse, New York, Riggs has worked with small groups of SRA/DID counselees requiring highly focused, intensive, and long-term therapy. While Riggs would likely happily count himself a ‘spiritual counselor’, his techniques aren’t simplistic as is often the case with those who provide therapy from a ‘biblical basis’. Riggs availed himself of seminars conducted both by ‘believers and unbelievers’ who are experts on these subjects. He is also a highly trained student of the Bible (having studied with professors and teachers at Dallas Theological Seminary). His in-depth understanding of the scripture and his knowledge of the original languages of the Bible constitutes that of a bona fide theologian. He would be considered a staunch evangelical and a dispensational, pre-millenialist, like this author.

He is not extreme in his understanding how one ‘lives a Christian life’ (although his diligence around Bible Study supersedes this author’s by an order of magnitude!) This is in contrast to some characterizations of him on the ‘Web’ which claim he is a male chauvinist who uses the Bible to suppress women. My experience with his wife Lori would argue strongly to the contrary. She seems quite the independent thinker, vocal, and nobody’s punching bag or wall flower. True, Riggs would be guilty of holding fast to the full gamut of orthodox Christian doctrine. However, while no doubt socially conservative, he does not show himself to be contrary to recognizing we live ‘in the world’ while refraining from being ‘of the world’. He is neither uninformed regarding culture nor its enemy as many puritanical leaders often advocate. In short, although his regard for the real powers behind the political system would be considered ‘conspiratorial’ - this is typical of evangelicals who profess belief in the imminent and physical second coming of Christ. Biblically speaking, history is conspiratorial - a satanic agenda works behind the scenes waging war against the plan of God and of His Christ. Readers familiar with my books recognize this author’s understanding to be the same (although my view is muted compared to those

who trumpet their belief in ‘conspiracies’ on every single subject in which any conspiracy no matter the kind has been even been timidly ventured).

Riggs has been the subject of attacks, both public and personal for years, ostensibly because his work is regarded as a ‘cult’. However, over the past twelve months, I have personally endeavored to get to know Doug and to communicate extensively with several of his ‘counselees’ who in some cases have become co-workers in his ministry. In part, the reasons for my interest first revolved around the dramatic testimony of those whom he counsels, and secondarily, I sensed his path to be a very lonely one, consumed in real ‘spiritual warfare’ with only a select number of friends who grasp the reality of the world in which we live in the same manner as does Doug. Plus, I hoped to offer a bit of friendly support from time to time.

Based upon my many hours of discussions with him, I have found him to be highly sound theologically, very open to discussions on points of view that would be contrary to his own, and entirely lacking the *megalomania* characteristic of ‘cult leaders’. Doug is exceptionally humble and thoughtful of others. Unlike with cults, there is no ‘revelation’ besides the Bible, no ‘works oriented approach to salvation’; no constraints on the members of the community (they are free to come and go as they like - they are not entrapped in any sort of constrained ‘manse’ or encamped in an outlying area deep in the woods). He does provide a set of concepts and even ‘language’ that those whom he counsels incorporate into their own explanations for their experiences (like the patients of any given therapist); and his understanding of SRA/DID is hardly unique. There are dozens if not several hundred counselors around the world who specialize in SRA/DID treatment. 30 minutes of research on the subject will demonstrate to the reader that while a controversial subject of the first order, the qualifications of most SRA/DID therapists is strong, based on academic education, and beyond much dispute.

Riggs’ community, Morning Star Testimony Church, consists primarily of about a dozen persons, most in on-going therapy, with all but a few (including Doug and his wife) who have not been victims of SRA/DID. Visitors come often. But the core group revolves around those who share traumatic experience based upon SRA/DID.

It should be pointed out that the community is not ‘stand-alone’ as there are other therapists who also provide something of a ‘safe house’ for those who

have been traumatized (and in most cases tortured) by true satanic cults. Readers can listen to the various sessions available at his site (see www.dougriggs.org, see especially those programs recorded on George Ann Hughes' *The Byte Show*). His views are open to anyone willing to spend the time to listen - what Riggs teaches is public knowledge and his counselees freely discuss their experiences. I have done several programs with Doug.

When listening, it becomes exceedingly clear that other therapists in the U.S., Canada, Australia, China, and especially South Africa, join Riggs in sharing an identical 'worldview' based on the history of what has happened 'behind-the-scenes' politically since shortly after World War II (the formation of Israel being a landmark event triggering a much higher level of SRA/DID activity in the world). This history includes much of the information I've disclosed in this book, up to and especially including the work of one Dr. Josef Mengele.

What the survivors at Morning Star Testimony Church communicate (now unashamedly and without hesitation) about their extensive and in some cases, long-term relationship with Josef Mengele, not only takes the breath away - it progresses the story of Mengele to a sinister level that most readers will not be prepared to hear. Nevertheless, it is this author's testimony that the research shared here accurately reflects many hours of conversations with Riggs, listening carefully to the community members on recordings, and interviewing several of them on more than one occasion.

My personal investigation has led me to conclude that, first and foremost, it is a wonderful group of brave Christians with a pastor whom I respect and consider a friend. That said: it may be difficult for the critically minded to take everything at face value without wondering if some of the details are off target. After all, we are dealing with individuals who have been programmed by sinister human forces. But ignoring or dismissing the essential aspects of their accounts is equally unsatisfactory. Their testimony deserves to be heard and taken seriously.

COMMONALITIES IN THE TESTIMONY

Therapists who work with SRA/DID victims consistently report one of the more startling attributes of its victims lies in the fact they aren't randomly selected - they are 'generational' - meaning that children who are victimized come from parents who were victimized. In fact, satanic ritual abuse appears to be passed down from generation to generation. This trauma is usually connected to sexual abuse. Indeed, the perpetrators of SRA/DID use sexual abuse as the principal means to 'split personalities' of their children. Why they are motivated to do this, in the general population, seems to be out of self-gratification for the parents and relatives - but it is also due to the fear of failing to follow the directives from powers they believe are guiding them (perhaps, better stated, *commanding* them).

However, the counselees Riggs works with have another key attribute: they are the offspring of *royalty*. It seems the progeny of royals are frequently (if not consistently) entangled in an ongoing program which has been in effect for many generations (perhaps going back to biblical times) in which the 'kings of the earth' conduct rituals to retain and expand their power. The Bible uses this phrase dozens of times representing those earthly powers that stand opposed to God. A few examples:

> *The **kings of the earth** set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the LORD, and against his anointed.* (Psalm 2:2)
>
> *He shall cut off the spirit of princes: he is terrible to the **kings of the earth.*** (Psalm 76:12)
>
> *Also I will make him my firstborn, higher than **the kings of the earth*** (Psalm 89:12).
>
> *And it shall come to pass in that day, that the LORD shall punish the host of the high ones that are on high, and the **kings of the earth** upon the earth.* (Isaiah 24:21)
>
> *He saith, Yes. And when he was come into the house, Jesus prevented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? of whom do the **kings of the earth** take custom or tribute? of their own children, or of strangers?* (Matthew 17:25)

> *The **kings of the earth** stood up, and the rulers were gathered together against the Lord, and against His Christ.* (Acts 4:26)

On the outward level, these royals may be Catholic, Protestant, or Marxist atheist; while behind the scenes, they are avowedly caught up in the cult of Lucifer. Luciferians, Rosicrucians, and the highest degree of Freemasonry (perhaps properly labeled the 'illuminists') all drink from the same tainted golden goblet. They quest for perfect knowledge and ultimate power. They seek to 'manage humanity' whether they see themselves leaning toward fascism or Marxism. As Steven Pinker, author of the 2002 book, *The Blank Slate* poignantly summarizes, the 'rich and the royal' share a singular goal:

> The twentieth century suffered two ideologies that led to genocides… (Nazism was one while) …the other one, Marxism, had no use for race, didn't believe in genes, and denied that human nature was a meaningful concept. Clearly, it's not an emphasis on genes or evolution that is dangerous. It's the desire to remake humanity by coercive means (eugenics or social engineering) and the belief that humanity advances through a struggle in which superior groups (race or classes) triumph over inferior ones.[428]

And yet, however much the elites cling to the assertion they are rationalists (fixed upon 'reason' as their guide), rituals have been conducted for centuries. The rituals of Freemasonry are tame cousins to the depth and horrendous nature of the rituals performed by those entwined in this conspiratorial cult which is global in scope. By definition, the ritualistic nature of SRA/DID is core to their 'religion'. Even those counselors who do not base their therapeutic approach on biblical affirmations or dogmatic convictions *confirm this reality*, however difficult it may be for the reader to accept.

Moreover, it isn't just ritual handed down from generation to generation. The 'bloodlines' are crucial to the established if not sacred protocol - that is to say, genetics are preeminent in the program. While among those who hold to the specific details of this history, the exact family names are clear and well-known (we might rightly suppose these family names include the Romanovs, the Hapsburgs, the Collins, etc.). Yet while the names might be debated, the long and short of it remains: there are a handful of families which seek to maintain their wealth and power by combining family ties with the ritualistic

cult of Lucifer. The reader should recognize that the cultic aspect of the program is usually rationalized with the ‘scientific’ approach to eugenics described in the previous chapter.

The combination of these factors: the bloodline of the royals, the ritualistic cults in which sexual abuse lies at the epicenter, and the generational worship of Lucifer, comes together in the members of the Morning Star Testimony community.

First, all counselees (except one) claim to be of royal bloodline; specifically of the House of Windsor (Connie, Dan, Susanna, and Julie).[429] The other (Sally) indicates she is the offspring of a Queen Frederica of Greece (1917-1981) and a powerful Jewish father.[430] Secondly, all counselees share memories of sexual abuse by their royal parents. They believe their personalities were ‘split’ at a very young age, intentionally, by their royal fathers as part of the Cult of Lucifer (the so-called Illuminists). Thirdly, they were eventually placed in families in America, some at such an early age that they grew up believing their ‘surrogate parents’ were their real parents. For the most part, these families were in ‘traditional Christian homes’ - sometimes Mennonite, sometimes other ‘denominations’. Most of these surrogate families are also ‘relations’; either cousins or half-sisters serving as their ‘handlers’. And all of these families were (and most still are) members of satanic groups. The survivors claim these cult members are generally insulated within Christian organizations![431] And fourthly, their surrogate families had an ongoing relationship with Josef Mengele. Indeed, all expressed specific memories of Mengele; some from that of a near infant (18 months) which is consistent with DID programming. But all from years 3 to 16 recall him vividly. These recollections were from the1950s and early 1960s; and then later as adults (at Mengele’s death in 1979), which they maintain was not in Brazil, but in Indiana, near Fort Benjamin (Indianapolis). We will zero-in on Mengele’s death later.

One, Dan, the only male in the group, speaks of Mengele as the only real father he ever knew as well as a fiendish torturer who ‘structured’ his programming under the contract of his genetic father - King George - and during the day-to-day care of his surrogate family living in Missouri (who were also practicing Satanists). According to Dan, he knew Susanna as ‘the

little brown-haired girl' when he was very young. Both have vivid memories of Mengele from their early childhood.

Connie is a very special person with a unique story to tell. We will address her specific memories of Mengele in a moment.

All indicate that they were born in Jerusalem. Dan was born on May 14, 1948, the very day that Israel was officially made a nation. Susanna (born in 1950, exactly two years after Dan on May 14) shares she is the daughter of King Edward, with a mother from the Romanov line. She lived in England until she was three then moved to the U.S. As they walked together and Edward handed her off to her 'caretaker', Edward told Susanna "You need to obey Uncle Joe. He will make you a little princess. Good little girls are willing to give their life for their country." Susanna was moved to California (in 1952) and for six months she resided in the Hearst Castle, under the care of the Hearst family. She indicates this has been confirmed by another survivor which she met in Minnesota. In California, she received the 'foundational structure' programing (the Alpha, Beta, Delta programming as described earlier). At 3 and one-half years old, the family to which she was assigned moved to Syracuse, New York. For a period of about 18 months, she was programmed by Uncle Joe, off and on until 1955. Susanna indicates that Mengele would carry her out of her house in a laundry bag and take her up the hill to a Catholic institution where rituals were frequently held (occult rituals) attended by New York politicians and 'big men' from the Pharmaceutical companies. At one point in our interview, Susanna commented that she now lives once again, ironically (or more likely providentially) in the same bedroom in which she was programmed by Mengele. She lives in this house with Julie (for almost thirty years she lived in Oklahoma). At one point after returning to this house in Syracuse (moving there to continue as a part of the Morning Star community), she relates an account envisioning seeing herself as a baby and reaching out and saying, "We are okay now."

Susanna and Dan believe Mengele's programming was intended to present an impenetrable barrier to any who would break through beyond the foundational programming (sometimes referred to as the CIA programming or CIA layer). Counselors would then encounter the programming performed by Mengele. "The Mengele layer" (my label, not theirs), would expose Mengele's work to the surprised therapist - but Mengele intended none

would be capable to go beyond. It has only been through years of counseling that it was finally penetrated first by Riggs (and later by others), exposing the truth about the age-old Royal conspiracy. Indeed, once this layer has been exposed, the information encountered has an incalculable impact on the topic of eschatology. The disclosure is mind-blowing, although in this context that metaphor is perhaps ill-chosen. Due to space, we will only touch on this astonishing information in brief fashion.

Riggs has told this author that only in recent years have other counselors discovered the Mengele layer. Some therapists who work with this special group of survivors assume they have reached the bottom of the layers when they encounter Mengele's work. Riggs says no. The illuminist programming lying beyond the Mengele level is the ultimate level and can only be reached through dramatic spiritual warfare and extensive therapy. It is guarded by "powers and principalities" that were channeled into these specially created alters by Mengele. Mengele knew these spirits by name.

In fact, the most diabolical programming (literally so) which was consistently applied to this very special group of survivors was Mengele's technique of plunging his victims into the throes of death. Whether by 'plunging them into cold water' (think, 'water-boarding, that 'enhanced interrogation technique' debated today) or by using electro-shock, Mengele would coolly and calmly administer the torture. Just as the young child would enter death, he would resuscitate them. This process - forcing them into death and then bringing them back to life - became his trademark. He sought to teach that *only he had the power of life and death*. As Dan remarked, "His nickname, the Angel of Death, took on literal meaning for us." Riggs even supposes that Mengele was likely possessed by the real Angel of Death. Collectively they speculate that Auschwitz was the place where these techniques were perfected. This may be true; however, in my research I have not been able to confirm this.

But the technique was not just physical, it was overtly spiritual. As Susanna, Dan, Sally, or Julie would be ushered into death, sometimes lying on an altar (either makeshift or formal), Mengele would demand they call upon the spirits to come to their aid. He would supply the names and they would cry out for demons to save them. This was repeated over and over. The Mengele

layer became what Riggs calls, a “stronghold” or fortress whose walls cannot be easily scaled. To break it down, it has to be torn apart, brick by brick.

Mengele's Adolescent Assistant

Connie's story is staggering to say the least. Connie was born on March 8, 1949. Connie shares ever so softly that she is of the House of Windsor; hence she sometimes referred to herself as Constantia Battenberg. According to Connie and Doug, Queen Elizabeth is her mother. While this author has not seen her in person, Riggs indicates that the resemblance to England's Queen is obvious. Riggs describes Connie as the "Grande dame" of this program - an agenda straight from Hell, inaugurated in the latter half of the twentieth century. (Note: a *Grande dame* is a highly respected, senior woman esteemed in society or a group). In Connie, the genetic work of generations of royalty resides, a coming together purportedly of 13 royal bloodlines through the ages, generation after generation of ritual empowering (from the biblical perspective, *generational iniquity*), causing her to be a locus of tremendous occult spiritual power put to use in the program to *bring about the Antichrist* in the final battle between God and Satan.

Not that the Royals view the future fuehrer as the Antichrist. Rather, he is the 'king of all kings' who will finally bring the world to a single government. How does Connie's genealogy play into this incredible account? She describes herself as a "docking station" into which a given "laptop" is recharged. Sadly, the simile is tragic because it refers to sexual ritual abuse. Like the temple prostitutes of ancient pagan sex cults, all of the women of this community have been abused in this manner.[432] The group uses the euphemism, "interface" to convey that not only were they forced to have sex with powerful men (whether royal or just the 'rich and powerful'), they were the physical means to channel spiritual power to those with whom they were forcibly "interfaced." Connie, like Sally, talks of traveling to be "interfaced" with various royalty and world-leaders at certain points in her young life.

Unlike the others, Connie has recollections of Mengele throughout her childhood and up to the time she was 16 years old. Her history begins in the United States with a surrogate family in Ohio. They lived there for 13 years. When in Ohio, she states she would be taken every so often to Cleveland, to a famous clinic 45 miles away, configured like *The Tavistock Institute* in London, notoriously the location of much of the early work done to develop DID protocols. (The Tavistock Institute was 'home' to Dr. John Bowlby

(1907-1990), founder of *Attachment Theory* - who all of Rigg's counselees programmed in the 1950s specify was the 'inventor-of-record' for 'attachment' oriented trauma-based programming and who was connected to Mengele, perhaps as his DID mentor). Presumably, several medical practitioners there were engaged in selected types of 'treatment', likely electro-shock. In fact, Connie was quick to admit that Dr. Ewen Cameron, discussed earlier, was a frequent practitioner called upon to 'treat her'. Connie would require her programming be "touched up," or reinforced. In some cases, this was likely a desperate attempt to keep her psyche from disintegrating altogether.

In 1962, the family moved to Minnesota. Mengele came and stayed for a lengthy period when they were living there, in what were austere circumstances. With him, she experienced "lots of love and then extreme torment." He was a master at the 'double-bind' - he would develop trust and then do something horrific to abuse that trust. She stated how she hated herself for being "sucked into his kindness, only to have my trust dashed again and again." Without warning, his eyes would flash and he would "turn on a dime." She would see the darkened eyes signifying spurn and contempt.

Connie shared Mengele was always impeccably dressed and obsessed about his appearance. Uncle Joe kept an office in an upstairs bedroom at their place. Around her, he would come down the stairs dressed in pajamas and talk warmly. They would have long conversations, frequently about scripture. However, Connie conveys that Mengele was a master at twisting the Bible. Additionally, she reported (and the other members of the community confirm), how Mengele loved to play the piano and sing. When they would go to church, he loved to go too and sing the great hymns of the Church; plus, she adds that he could harmonize beautifully with the music.

The family lived on a farm and had a big barn to facilitate large meetings involving numerous elite who were conspiring together toward the 'globalist' "New World Order." Mengele would be engaged in meetings with these leaders.[433] Additionally, the family ran a 'mission' at their farm and sometimes held youth rallies. They were also involved in a mission at a 'Native-Canadian' (Indian) reservation in Ontario, Canada. Additionally, various members of the military would often come to their farm for 'training'. She alleged the CIA would be used as Mengele's transportation.

When asked about whether he spoke of his travels and how he moved about ("Did he admit that he lived in South America?"), she indicated that he was extremely secretive and wouldn't talk about his travels, but it was clear from his comments that "he was well-traveled." I asked if he ever spoke of his family, to which she replied, "Almost never, but it was clear he had a wife and son." She related a story Riggs had never heard about her responsibility to clean Mengele's room. She once stumbled across photographs she assumed were his family. Mengele kept them hidden, stuffed under the mattress of his bed.

I also asked if she ever met a Sidney Gottleib. She responded she didn't know who that was. So I inquired, "Did you ever meet a Dr. Green?" to which I received an emphatic, "Oh Yes! Several times."

Because of her powerful bloodline and the depth of generational iniquity 'bred into her', Connie has been forced to have several children (the circumstances are extraordinary and won't be discussed here). The offspring of these unions figure into the goal of creating the "Master Race." As was mentioned earlier, Mengele saw himself instrumental to the coming of the Übermensch. Connie confirmed how important this mission was to Mengele.

Figure 30 - Neuschwanstein Castle, Marienbrücke

Connie's first-born son was delivered in 1962. He, like all her children, were subjected to Mengele's programming. And like Sally's, her children were crucial to the hopes of the "kings of the earth" through which they would bring forth the coming global ruler.

When asked how recently anyone from the group had contact with Mengele, Sally reported the latest incident she could date was to 1966 (Sally was born in 1954). This was the first occasion in which Sally gave birth to an offspring (again, the circumstances won't be discussed in this book). While present and important at this event, but it was clear Mengele was receding into a more restricted and much reduced role. However, before we speak of the final meeting between the group and Mengele, one more astonishing event must be recounted.

The Coming King and His Court

In 1976, at the infamous *Neuschwanstein* Castle in Germany, the castle after Walt Disney modeled Sleeping Beauty's Castle (see the figure above); Susanna and Dan reported a magnificent soirée held in their honor. Royalty from across the world and leaders from many countries were present at an enormous event. However difficult it may be for the reader to accept, they indicated it was an occasion marked by massive amounts of blood and intense satanic rituals. At this event, Dan was literally and physically crowned King George VII. Susanna and Dan were married in a ritual that though neither regards today as binding (and they have no romantic relationship whatsoever). Both relate the event with vivid descriptions. What was its purpose? Although they don't attempt to interpret it outright, it is clear that for the Royalty present there, it was a moment of august importance. It represented the culmination of the work performed by many generations of Royalty, perhaps for hundreds if not thousands of years. It was an occasion marking the imminent appearance of yet another much anticipated King - the Antichrist - to oversee the Ten Kings of the earth.[434] Purportedly, offspring that had been born to these women were also crowned in a coronation event, apparently at the 13th birthday of the future king and his false prophet. However, Riggs believes that while the Royals may have believed these offspring to be the fulfillment of their efforts, it is possible that other candidates, now more genetically perfected, literally spawned by other means, may be in line for their thrones. For instance, Sally related how her son promised to bring his mother with him to reign. She was stunned when at his coronation (he was 12-13, she 24) he laughed at her for suggesting he would ever be willing to share his throne.

Not much is made of that fact now that Dan and Susanna's programming has been broken and the spirits which were channeled into them have been removed. Consequently, however they figured into the grand scheme, Dan and Susanna have either fulfilled their role or their positions have been assumed by others.

The Death of Mengele

Returning to Mengele: the group which the author interviewed - Dan, Susanna, Julie, Sally (all except Connie) - were present in 1979 when Josef Mengele was murdered in their presence.

Dan described his being sent to Fort Benjamin for a military training school (he was in the U.S. Military at that time). Early one morning, he went out for a run. As we found his way down a darkened path, he sensed a strong foreboding. Out of the shadows, the important old man he recognized from his childhood (Dan never knew him as Uncle, Uncle Joe, or by any other name), stepped forward stopping him cold in his tracks. Instantly, Dan described a number of looming figures, perhaps ten men (possibly they were the “kings of the earth” Dan conjectures), surrounding Mengele in a semi-circle. Almost immediately, Mengele holds out his hands cupped toward Dan. Dan’s stare is drawn to the blackness he sees in the center of Mengele’s hands. As he looks more intently, he begins to see a bright, singular star at the very center. Dan becomes lost in this sight. Then the men surrounding Mengele begin to plunge knives into Mengele’s back, again and again. Dan reaches out to grab hold of Mengele attempting, however feebly, to shield him.[435] But he is much too late. Mengele falls to the ground. Then, as if in a blink of an eye, Dan ‘came to himself’ sensing once again he was running, back on his chosen path. However, now he had an even stronger sense of trembling and, at the time, no memory of what had just happened. He thought to himself, “I won’t go that way ever again.”

The other women indicated they were present too and very much aware of what was transpiring. They claim to have also plunged daggers into Mengele. Since they originally were standing behind Dan (and out of his sight), he had no recollection of them. However, they remember the event vibrantly. Unlike Susanna and Sally that were, by this time, self-aware as Christians, Julie spoke of how much she hated Mengele and how determined she was that with each thrust of the knife, she would finally kill this devil who had caused such incredible pain and ruined her life.

At this moment in 1979, Connie indicated she was in Jerusalem, caught up in an extremely sordid ritual. As she was explaining what was transpiring 33 years ago, she paused and couldn’t continue. Riggs began to pray for her and

asked the Lord God to strengthen her and remove any obstacle or hindrance put in her path by the enemy - that she might remember what had happened in Jerusalem. It was hard for her to go on, but she finally recounted some of the aspects of what was transpiring in the ritual. Once again, she related that she was being used (abused sexually) to empower the ritual then underway in America. As it turned out, this description of her role in Mengele's death wasn't something she had previously shared with Riggs or the others. It was an emotional time for Connie as she struggled to convey her experience. Everyone was hushed as her discourse reached its conclusion.

Conclusion - The Meaning of Mengele's Death

If Josef Mengele died in Indiana as the members of Community Star Testimony Church assert, we must then ask, "How then was Mengele found dead on a beach outside of Sao Paolo?" None of the group speculated that the body found dead in Brazil - supposedly a victim of heart attack or drowning - wasn't the body of Mengele. Neither do they assert that he didn't die in 1979 as do some witnesses Carol Rutz cites. All of the members of Morning Star Testimony agree: if the CIA could shuttle Mengele to and from South America as well as across America and Canada without being found out, it was twice as easy to take a dead Mengele back to Brazil.[436] To be honest, they aren't investigative journalists or historians and haven't asked such questions. They know their deep experiences of him are true - they are all convinced they were present at his ritualistic death.

Therefore, the question must be asked for them: What about the knife wounds which would have covered Mengele's body? That is obviously a contradictory and major piece of evidence. If the body that was dug up and examined in 1985 was Mengele, this factor would be readily apparent, even if they had naught but skull and bones. Furthermore, the reader may be aware it was DNA forensic evidence officials used to identify the body, supposedly supplied by and matched to Rolf Mengele, Josef's son. And yet, as Carol Rutz points out, when Mengele's wife went to visit him at Auschwitz in 1943, the dates of her visit suggest she was already 2 to 3 months pregnant. Perhaps her trip to visit her husband was timed to convince Josef her soon-to-be-born son belonged to him. It's easy to propose rationales for why it was in everyone's interest (Brazil, the U.S., even Israel) to assure the world Josef Mengele was dead. Brazil didn't want the Israeli Mossad hunting for him on their soil (an affront to national sovereignty which was a public embarrassment to Argentina with the capture and secret 'extradition' of Adolf Eichmann from Buenos Aires in 1960). The U.S. wouldn't want his story told and any connection with (especially exploitation of) Mengele made public. And Israel wanted one of the most hated of war criminals dead and gone with no complications. If Mengele died in America in a ritual killing, no one would want that publicized. Therefore, those who believe the body on the beach wasn't Dr. Mengele have considered the possibility that

Rolf's real father was the 'body double' of whose DNA was tested and verified by officials to match Rolf.

Heaven knows it is not a simple matter to confirm the identity of the body on the beach. For in the end, given that the 'chain of the custody of evidence' was managed by persons now four decades ago (and tested at the time, six years after Mengele's alleged death, i.e., in 1985). For all we know, the officials could have easily been bribed. The body found in Sao Paolo might have been most anyone. For quite some time, Gerald Posner (who wrote the biography of Mengele cited earlier) admits he did not believe the body found on the beach was Mengele. Eventually, the DNA evidence convinced him it was. Then again, it should be noted that he assumed officials in Brazil and in the U.S *had no reason to falsify the facts*. Given the scope of the Nazi infestation in America and the employment of war criminals from the Third Reich in many CIA operations discussed at length in this book, Posner's 'common sense' supposition is hardly justified. There are strong reasons to second guess the 'body on the beach' story. Nevertheless, a conclusive answer will remain elusive.

So what is the meaning of Mengele's death? This too, we can only conjecture. Those involved in the discussion from Syracuse on a lazy Sunday afternoon agreed that *something was being transferred from Mengele to Dan* - at that moment in 1979, Dan's "Kingship" was still intact. Dan conveyed it was likely whatever Mengele had obtained in the way of spiritual power over those whom he had programmed, especially those within the Church of Jesus Christ, the 'star' he witnessed implied something along those lines. Dan had described his DID programming as a "defilement of the Church" in that he was to bring 'spiritual death' amidst those who were promised spiritual life. It was as if Dan became a personal stargate or portal, to channel 'death' into the midst of those who believed they had been transferred from "death unto life" (and were now beyond the reach of the Devil, see Romans 8:38; 2 Corinthians 2:16; 1 John 3:14). Perhaps the meaning of Mengele's death was to firmly *laminate* this spiritual 'capacity' in Dan, ensuring it continued undiminished afterwards.[437]

On the other hand, Mengele's intent was easy to conclude: he believed because of his life's work, he would be transported beyond death to another realm in which his next existence, whatever its form, would be intensified

with cosmic power. Mengele's evil ambition, whatever it was, transcended anything we can comprehend.

Perhaps it was Mengele's soulful intent to gain equal standing with the Devil himself. For those who endured such pain and suffering, Mengele certainly had earned such exalted status; the victims might even hope his fiendish desire would be rewarded - but only if his exaltation in the next life resulted in the same destiny as the Antichrist and the False Prophet of Revelation; namely, that Josef Mengele be finally thrown alive by the Lord of Hosts into the Lake of Fire alongside all the other Nazi war criminals - without which the American government had, without regret, calculated *we could not survive.* [438]

In essence, the actions of Josef Mengele represented, as Carol Rutz assesses with her book title, the *betrayal of our nation*. His presence and activities were the inexorable outcome of decisions made by a few of America's highest officials in the 1950s and going forward, encouraged and financed to an extent we can only imagine by the its wealthy elites (and even European royalty) to embrace undeniable evil in a Faustian bargain with eternal consequences for our country. *The United States of America opted consciously and deliberately to facilitate the ascendancy of Antichrist.*

This study has provided the context for understanding why many biblically-based prophetic scholars believe that America is the 'Mystery' Babylon of Jeremiah 50-52 and Revelation 17-18. It is not just our moral lapses; it is more than the murder of innocents through almost a million abortions a year. It is the fact we have assimilated and accepted many of the principles underlying a fascist nation that emerged in Germany in the twentieth century. Germany sought World Empire - but the United States achieved it. We rule through economic and military power. Our government is not "of the people, by the people, and for the people." It belies the institutional evil embedded in strategic aspects of our financial system and government which portends what will happen to our country in the twenty-first. It is these mechanisms enabling those who wish to rule to do so quietly, confidently, and steadily, enforcing their will not just on Americans, but through global domination by economic and military means, in order that their reign become both official and unassailable; and that all languages and tongues become unified in one

governmental order - for the betterment of humankind - according to what they say.

As Jim Marrs summarizes:

> While it is true that the families that originated the wealthy elite in America - the Rockefellers, the Morgans, the Schiffs, and the Warburgs - have in recent years lost much of their previous influence, their giant global enterprises today remain as powerful as ever, maintaining all the functions for which they were first organized. This mechanism today has been brought under the control of the fascist globalists, who created both communism and National Socialism using the wealth brought from Europe by the Nazi ratlines. [439]

Our government, through its military and intelligence services, our wealthiest families and the institutions they finance (especially the top academic and medical institutions), our largest corporations, as well as our banks which dominates the world financial system, are all guided whether intentionally or not (as the founder of capitalism Adam Smith extolled) “as if by an invisible hand” to comprise the American Empire and through it, to catalyze the coming New World Order.

In summary, America has chosen to become home base for the Antichrist. The only question left now is, “When will he appear?”

EPILOGUE:

MYSTERY BABYLON - AMERICA'S ROLE

IN THE GLOBALIST AGENDA

FOR THE TWENTY-FIRST CENTURY

No one can argue credibly that America today is not an empire. Militarily, economically, and culturally, the United States wields a hegemonic influence unparalleled in world history.

Jim Garrison, *America as Empire: Global Leader or Rogue Power?*

The United States is the only country in the world that is in a position to initiate a change in the world order, to replace the Washington consensus with a global open society. To do so, we must abandon the unthinking pursuit of narrow self-interest and give some thought to the future of humanity.

George Soros (from *Garrison*, p. 193)

A Balanced Gospel

In January, 1934, Ludwig Mueller, Reich Bishop, issued the "Muzzling Order" designed to silence political statements from the pulpit in Germany. He proclaimed that the churches abstain from any manner of political commentary. The church service is for "the proclamation of the pure gospel, and for this alone."

Some Christians would find this injunction acceptable; after all, didn't Jesus say to "Render therefore unto Caesar those things that are Caesar's and unto God those things that are God's"? (Matthew 22:21). Perhaps when it comes to the political situation, we should keep our mouth shut. On the other hand, since the 1970s, evangelicals formed the "Christian right" and engaged actively in politics. Jerry Falwell (1933-2007) pastor of the Thomas Road Baptist Church in Lynchburg, Virginia, became the head of the Moral Majority, a movement for evangelicals which had a dramatic impact on several presidential elections. But the fatal flaw, from this author's perspective, was restricting the Gospel of Christ to 'moral issues' only - anti-abortion, anti-gay rights, and pro-family. [440] The Moral Majority appeared to be little more than the religious wing of the Republican Party. Christianity and conservatism were inextricably linked. This has led left-leaning Christian authors such as Chris Hedges, a graduate of Harvard Divinity School, to respond with an angry diatribe against the Christian 'hard-right' which he paints as "American fascists" who war against America and seek to, in the words of the *Los Angeles Times*, "turn the United States into a Christian nation."

No doubt readers of this book will do a double-take on that summation of Hedges' thesis, assuming all Christians should be about the business of '*returning* the U.S. to the status of a 'Christian nation' once more. Of course, I have argued forcefully that evangelicals must beware of presuming patriotism and spirituality go hand-in-hand. Christ stands apart from our country and government - judging how society conducts itself. We stand accountable before Him. However, unlike the implications of Hedges' rhetoric, the separation of Church and State protects and secures *religious* rights - *not as arbiter or guarantor protecting secularism as the law of the land.*

Globalists, like Jim Garrison, President of The State of the World Forum and author of *America as Empire*, believe the mission of America is to lead (if not force) the world to *a single government.* Jim Naisbitt summarizes Garrison's position as a restatement of the global aspirations of Woodrow Wilson, President Franklin D. Roosevelt, and Harry S. Truman. Both argue globalism must be structured in our government institutions since the world already acts as a single global consumer - that is, it already implements *one financial system.* He exclaims: "Leadership reminiscent of Wilson and Roosevelt is now needed again." He goes on to explain the 'enforcer' role America must play to facilitate the transition: If (America) attains this level of greatness… then America could be the final empire, for what the next generation of global institutions could bequeath to the world is a democratic and integrated global system in which empire will no longer have a place. Garrison thus wants America to see itself as a transitional empire, one that uses its power to build mechanisms that will institutionalize America as partner rather than as empire.[441]

Garrison writes critically toward the conclusion of his book in the chapter "America at the Choice Point," *fundamentalism* of all kinds (Jewish, Islam, and Christian) shares an apocalyptic worldview and attempts to counter the *optimism* of globalism. Thus, globalists and 'prophets' are at loggerheads. He writes a synopsis of Christian eschatology that clearly demonstrates a thorough knowledge of the principal authors and the standard 'apocalyptic scenario' mostly made famous by Hal Lindsey and Tim LaHaye. And he sees their expressions of apocalyptic fervor detrimental to the future of humankind: The political ideology fostered by this apocalyptic theology combines a radical pessimism about human nature and current events with an equally radical optimism about God's plan for the elect. Quite literally, the worse the world situation becomes, the more expectant these believers become because they believe they are getting closer to Jesus's coming again and taking them to heaven. They have little regard for the environment because they believe the environment will be destroyed anyway. They have little sympathy for the poor and the dispossessed because they believe that economic dislocation and civil unrest are indicators of human depravity and a signal that the end is nigh. They have little support for the protection of civil liberties because they

believe that strong action must be taken against the infidels and potential terrorists.[442]

To the extent we do not possess a ‘balanced gospel’, Garrison’s criticism - while exaggerated and unsympathetic - may be on point.

Moreover, keeping the Gospel ‘balanced’ is quintessential to keeping it relevant. Neither the ‘left’ nor the ‘right’ have all the answers and often miss the point. The Lordship of Christ extends to all aspects of our lives - moral, social, economic, political, and everything in between. To *rightly present the gospel* means to model the coming Kingdom of God in the way we live our lives in the ‘here and now’ (in Latin, the ‘*hic et nunc*’ - “here at this place, now in this present moment”). This is the eschatological mission of Christians. Our lives are to serve as a reminder that the judgment of God is coming. Our distinctiveness is to be not only salt that preserves - but strong medicine that stings when applied. *American exceptionalism* may be no more than bravado and ballyhoo. *Christian exceptionalism* is equivalent to modeling the Kingdom of God *hic et nunc*.

This was assuredly the position of Dietrich Bonheoffer (1906-1945) who was martyred - hanged by the Reich with piano wire - for his part in attempting to assassinate Hitler. Bonheoffer preached against “cheap grace”, a gospel which suffered (allowed) splitting the realm of human life into more than one sphere, creating a dominion in our society where Christ could not be Lord. That is what the “Muzzling Order” did. It restricted religion into one ‘kingdom’ and human government into another. Erwin W. Lutzer, evangelical pastor of the Moody Church in Chicago whom I have quoted several times before in my books, summarized what Christians should learn from the history of Hitler’s German church: “We will discover that the Nazi era shouts its lessons to the church of America. It warns us, challenges us, and forecasts what might happen in the days ahead. Whether we heed its warnings, accept its challenges, and recognize its subtle deceptions is up to us.” [443] Lutzer believes the end times are upon us. He preaches to prepare his congregation *now* for hard times ahead - even though he remains a ‘pre-tribulational’ preacher who sees the rapture of the Church preceding the coming of Antichrist.[444]

Garrison and the globalists are fundamentally wrong seeing in those of us who believe in the imminent return of Christ, culprits who are heaven-bent

doomsayers who only wish for the worse to happen that we might speed up the process of our redemption. If we heed the words of Jesus Christ and his proclamation that the Kingdom of God is at hand, we are motivated by an optimism which overwhelms the utopian vision. We seek a truly redeemed world - one that glistens and shimmers from the glory of Christ, unrestrained by the sin of humankind and its destructive works. In the picturesque words of Paul from the Letter to the Hebrews, we are like Abraham seeking a city that is from God. “For here have we no *continuing city* (*meno* in the Greek, a place to sojourn or reside continually, and *polis*, our native town where we are ‘at home’), but we seek one to come.” (Hebrews 13:14). We lack optimism when it comes to the globalist agenda - our faith lies elsewhere. Our pessimism rests on 6,000 years of human history which teaches plainly and convincingly that when power is fully centralized, totalitarianism becomes inevitable.

There is an expression, “When the elephants dance, the grass suffers.” The analogue in political affairs is this, “When the elite rule absolutely, the poor suffer unconditionally.”

Utopian dreams are dreamlike only when they remain dreams. When such lofty programs are implemented - always by totalitarian means - the weak are oppressed and human rights are eclipsed despite the euphoria emanating from idealistic platitudes and speeches. That is the lesson of world dictators from Nimrod’s time to present day. The fact that globalists believe a single government and a single leader would manage the affairs of humankind effectively - guided only by reason and not by the admonitions of the Bible - clearly infers that of all supposedly learned men and women, utopians are the poorest students of history. The French Revolution, starring Madame Guillotine, provides a contrary visual aid to their view.

THE COMING JUDGMENT OF GOD ON AMERICA

Jonathan Cahn, a messianic pastor living in Wayne, New Jersey, has recently written a best-selling book, *The Harbinger: The Ancient Mystery that Holds the Secret of America's Future*, which delivers a remarkable prophetic message. In his book, Cahn employs an allegory to explain how America's actions post-9/11 map point-by-point to the reaction of ancient Israel when it was first attacked by the Kingdom of Assyria in the eighth century B.C. Cahn contends that America is at that watershed moment. If we do not heed the harbinger, if we ignore the 'omen' singed into our mind's eye on that September morn in 2001, we will experience an even more complete and utter destruction. Cahn demonstrates persuasively that the actions of our Government are falling in line with the response of Israel after the first attack. Even our highest officials, on key dates, are asserting what is a statement of pride unwittingly bringing down judgment upon our nation. Senator Tom Daschle, and later President Barak Obama, both quoted Isaiah 9:10 at key moments in the 'rebuilding efforts': "The bricks are fallen down, but we will build with hewn stones: the sycamores are cut down, but we will change them into cedars." But placed in context, we read that the people say this "in the pride and stoutness of heart" (verse 9). It is as if the whole society was chanting in unison, "Stick and stones may break our bones, but God will never hurt us" - for the Israelites failed to discern that the attack was a judgment of God, a 'warning shot' that something worse would soon come to pass. As a result (continuing in Chapter 9 of Isaiah), the Lord set up (established) the enemy of Israel, Rezin a 'tribune' from Assyria, to perform his judgment: *[11] Therefore the LORD shall set up the adversaries of Rezin against him, and join his enemies together; [12] The Syrians before, and the Philistines behind; and they shall devour Israel with open mouth. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still.*

> *[13] For the people turneth not unto him that smiteth them, neither do they seek the LORD of hosts.*
>
> *[14] Therefore the LORD will cut off from Israel head and tail, branch and rush,* ***in one day****.* [Emphasis added]

Cahn admonishes that we should see the judgment of God against America in the terrorist attack of 9/11. This does not excuse Al-Qaida nor shift the

blame from the terrorists who were responsible. That the attack was on Wall Street is not incidental. That it was on the center of world commerce, The World Trade Center, is not an accident. This warning was meaningful because of exactly when and where it happened. Since the action was permitted by a sovereign God, it means America should discern its providential import: That the innocent and righteous also perished in those calamities was not a matter of judgment but of sorrow. But for the nation, the fact that such calamities could have happened in the first place was a matter of both warning and judgment. Each took place in its own realm. So it was with 9/11; the calamity took place in two different realms - the private realm of individuals and the public realm of the nation. In the first realm is only sorrow, and the magnitude of the calamity is secondary. And for those touched by it, the loss of one life is the loss of an entire world. The charge here is to bind up the broken, to comfort, to support, and to never forget the wounded and the bereaved. But the second realm is distinct and separate, centering not on the individual but on the nation as a whole. It's in this second realm that the matter of judgment remains.[445]

God judged Israel because it broke its covenant with Him. Recall the Pilgrim Fathers had covenanted with God for His blessing; yet they recognized that failure to 'keep their side of the bargain' would bring His judgment. Ronald Reagan recited this pledge in his famous "City on a Hill" speech in 1974 in which he quoted John Winthrop, "Standing on the tiny deck of the Arabella in 1630 off the Massachusetts coast, John Winthrop said, 'We will be as a *city upon a hill*. The eyes of all people are upon us, so that if we deal falsely with our God in this work we have undertaken and so cause Him to withdraw His present help from us, we shall be made a story and a byword throughout the world.'" So will America be "a story" (an object lesson) and a "byword" (a slur)? Is that the future that awaits America? Have the decisions made by our governing and financial leaders firmly fashioned a devastating destiny for America? Has the deteriorating morality of the nation sealed our fate?

America as 'Mystery - Babylon'

At the outset of this book, we asked whether America was destined to fulfill Revelation's Babylon the Great, also known as 'Mystery Babylon'. Revelation Chapter 17 connects Babylon to an apostate religion. We read: *[1] And there came one of the seven angels which had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying unto me, Come hither; I will shew unto thee the judgment of the great whore that sitteth upon many waters: [2] With whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication.*

> *[3] So he carried me away in the spirit into the wilderness: and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet coloured beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns.*
>
> *[4] And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet colour, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication: [5] And upon her forehead was a name written, Mystery, Babylon The Great, The Mother Of Harlots And Abominations Of The Earth.*

Revelation 18 links Babylon with the world financial system: *[1] And after these things I saw another angel come down from heaven, having great power; and the earth was lightened with his glory.*

> *[2] And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird.*
>
> *[3] For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies.*

Scholars point out there are three Babylons: (1) Nebuchadnezzar's historic capital conquered first by the Medes and Persians, and 300 years later, by Alexander the Great; (2) a religious Babylon, the 'whore of Babylon'; and (3) a political/financial Babylon. It is the last of these three Babylons now identified by some scholars with today's America.

Moreover, there are an increasing number of evangelical scholars, some of them friends of this author, who have come to the same conclusion. Patrick Heron in his recent book, *The Return of the Antichrist and the New World Order*, concludes this outcome to be so: The city which is called in prophecy, 'Babylon the Great, the Mother of Prostitutes' is a city that is present today and fulfills all the criteria laid down by John in his revelation. It seems to me that New York has to be the main contender to fulfill the role. The Whore of Babylon or Babylon, the Mother of Harlots and Abominations of the Earth, is the name of this great city and she is described as having 'a golden cup in her hand and sits on many waters'. One might make a link between this metaphoric name and the Statue of Liberty. For this graven image stands as sentinel over New York and presided over the multitudes of immigrants who flooded here from every nation and had to pass through Ellis Island which stands in the waters of this infamous city.[446]

Heron provides a succinct summation of the many attributes of Revelation's Babylon that connect it to New York City, and more broadly, to the United States of America.

- The implication is that this great city is a sea trading city.
- Everything is for sale that anyone could ever want to buy.
- It is the financial center for world trade and commerce.
- Businessmen have made vast fortunes by trading with this city.
- This city has high towers that reach to the sky.
- This city has a multi-cultural population drawn from all corners of the globe.
- The headquarters of the government of the Antichrist will rule from its offices in this wealthy city.
- This city is described as 'the Mother of Prostitutes' and has a golden cup in her hand.
- This city is also an evil city as all manner of sin and godlessness will operate there.[447]

There is little debate that New York City today fulfills all of these characteristics, although contrarians might rightly debate whether moral

decadence in New York comprises a greater immorality than other megalopolises.

Significantly, Heron points out ‘Jeremiah’s Babylon’ described in Chapters 50 and 51 of the book bearing his name, points to the same ‘city and nation’ as that of the Apostle John. “And I will render unto Babylon and to all the inhabitants of Chaldea [Babylonia] all their evil that they have done in Zion in your sight, saith the Lord” (Jeremiah 51:24). This Babylon is the object of God’s wrath in the ‘day of the vengeance of the Lord’ otherwise known as ‘The Day of the Lord,’ i.e., in the last days or the conclusion of history. Thus, timing sets this Babylon apart from the historic Babylon. Thirteen times this declaration is made in these two chapters. Jeremiah describes a city whose ‘strongholds’ (dominant structures) reach unto the sky and whose walls are torn down and whose towers fall. “Shout against her round about: she hath given her hand: her foundations are fallen, her walls are thrown down: for it is the vengeance of the Lord: take vengeance upon her; as she hath done, do unto her” (Jeremiah 50:15). God destroys Babylon in judgment during the ‘day of His wrath’. In Chapter 18, John the Revelator declares: *7 How much she hath glorified herself, and lived deliciously, so much torment and sorrow give her: for she saith in her heart, I sit a queen, and am no widow, and shall see no sorrow.*

> *8 Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine; and she shall be utterly burned with fire: for strong is the Lord God who judgeth her.*
>
> *9 And the kings of the earth, who have committed fornication and lived deliciously with her, shall bewail her, and lament for her, when they shall see the smoke of her burning, 10 Standing afar off for the fear of her torment, saying, Alas, alas that great city Babylon, that mighty city! For in one hour is thy judgment come.*
>
> *11 And the merchants of the earth shall weep and mourn over her; for no man buyeth their merchandise any more.*

The same resolute pride discussed in Isaiah 9, characteristic of Israel after the first ‘breach’ by Assyria in 732 BC, resonates with similar words, “I sit a queen, and am no widow, and shall see no sorrow.” Perhaps this statement rebukes those who warn of Babylon’s impending doom. Yet, like Israel, her

destruction will be completed “in one day” - in a single devastating attack. And those who stand afar off - from miles away (perhaps to avoid contamination from its manner of destruction - “for fear of her torment”) see her utter devastation and mourn for their own financial loss and the ruination of the world’s economic system. The smoldering of the once mighty city, utterly burned with fire, bespeaks of a horrendous attack whose nature we wish not to contemplate. “We would have healed Babylon, but she is not healed: forsake her, and let us go every one into his own country: for her judgment reacheth unto heaven, and is lifted up [even] to the skies” (Jeremiah 51:9). Babylon’s desolation is so severe it becomes uninhabitable. “And the land shall tremble and sorrow: for every purpose of the LORD shall be performed against Babylon, to make the land of Babylon a desolation without an inhabitant” (Jeremiah 51:29). The land returns to wilderness once again.

Twelve years ago (2000), Dr. Noah Hutchings, pastor of the Southwest Radio Bible Church, reprinted a treatise by S. Franklin Logsdon, entitled “Is the U.S.A. in Prophecy?” Logsdon had written his brief book in 1968 declaring that America was the Babylon of Revelation 18. Writing those words in 1968 was a risky proposition. The Cold War was at its height. The Soviet Union and the United States were locked into various wars through numerous surrogates (most famously, Vietnam). Given the tension of the time, Logsdon’s declaration wasn’t much welcomed to say the least.

But reviewing his book, Hutchings found his argument compelling and was encouraged by Hearthstone Publishing in Oklahoma City to write a new book on the subject drawing upon Logsdon’s original work then out of copyright. Hutchings was somewhat reluctant to take the same position as Logsdon since he was, and remains, an unashamed patriot unwilling to convey even a single spec of disloyalty to the America he loves. And yet, despite his misgivings, the insights of Logsdon coupled with his own drew Hutchings fully into the effort.

Adding to his obvious consternation were the statements of radicals and liberals in the 1970s such as Eldridge Cleaver of the Black Panthers who declared, “Our job is to destroy Babylon.” Chiming in, Harvard Law School graduate and attorney William Stringfellow shouted “Hallelujah” when describing the decline and fall of the American Empire he proclaimed in the 1970s. According to the *Chicago Sun-Times*, October 31, 1970, Stringfellow

asserted the United States is the modern equivalent of Babylon, the “most rich and powerful of all nations which underwent a process of violent disintegration.” Could it be the one thing on which liberals and conservatives can agree - that the United States of America is the Babylon depicted in the Bible? How ironic that such could be the case!

The Clash of the Titans

Hutchings cites Lord Byron who said, “Civilization goes like this: First freedom, and then glory, and then wealth, and then vice, and then corruption, and then barbarism, and then collapse.” Where do we think the United States is in Bryon’s life-cycle of civilizations?

Dr. Hutchings speaks of the two great sovereign states which “will have especially incurred the indignation of the Lord. The one is ‘the king of the north’ or Russia (Ezekiel. 3822). But prior to this nation’s demise, another of even greater prominence stands slated for the consuming vengeance of the Lord. This nation is spiritually called ‘Babylon’.” [448] Hutchings continues: Historical Babylon is to eventuate in two imposing branches, viz., religious Babylon, the ultimate of organized religion and prophetical, political Babylon, a powerful but God-forsaking end-time nation.

> God will put it into the hearts of Antichrist’s ten kingdoms to utterly eliminate the “woman” or the false church which is religious Babylon (Rev. 17:16-17). He will also take counsel against prophetical, political Babylon and will cause a great nation to destroy her.
>
> Before this judgment falls, God will call for His people (those saved in the early part of Daniel’s seventieth week) to flee this doomed nation and emigrate to Zion or Israel (Jer. 50:28) Hutchings lists the characteristics of this Babylon as does Heron, but with a bit more detail. He attributes that: 1. She is the offspring of a kingdom which will deteriorate from a position of world leadership.
>
> 2. She at one time was a cup of gold in the Lord’s hand - a monetary instrument in the promotion of God’s work.
>
> 3. She has a cosmopolitan population - a “mingled people.”
>
> 4. She is the latest or youngest of nations, said to be “the hindermost.”
>
> 5. She is an exceedingly wealthy country - “abundant in treasures.”
>
> 6. She is the most powerful nation and termed “the hammer of the whole earth.”
>
> 7. Her scientific achievements excel all other nations.
>
> 8. She speaks with an influential voice in the world community.

9. She has established unprecedented national defenses.

10. She involves herself in global affairs.

11. She is singularly and lavishly generous in foreign aid.

12. She has the highest standard of living, even of an epicurean character.

13. She becomes a spiritual renegade, lapsing into idolatry and covetousness.

14. Through unrestrained permissiveness, a moral decadence ensues to the proportions of blatant turpitude.

15. She develops pride and haughtiness through egotistical bias and claims to "sit a queen," untouched by defeat and untouchable.

16. The "unsinkable titanic" of nations is slowly, subtly, and surely stripped of her gold.[449]

Wanting to remain ever so slightly uncommitted to what is for him a most painful thesis, Dr. Hutchings surmises: Some end-time nation will answer to these descriptions. That nation, having been mightily blessed of God, will incur His indignation because of her godlessness. And when the hour of divine judgment arrives, an alliance of greater nations from the prophetical "north," possessing devastating, vulnerable weapons in formidable quantities, will strike unexpectedly, suddenly, and decisively.

> As the "woman" (the false church) shall be utterly eliminated, even so, the end-time nation, spiritually called Babylon, shall irreparably perish from the earth. Her beauty and pride shall no more restrain the hand of divine judgment than the impressiveness of Lucifer, the son of the morning, could prevent his fall and ultimate doom when he turned from God and through pride exalted himself.

After reviewing the work of Heron and Hutchings, both great students of Scripture, we can assign current nations to the two primary roles in this tragedy. It is quick work to cast the United States and Russia in the preeminent parts. Furthermore, as students of prophecy know, Ezekiel declares the God of Israel will utterly destroy her enemy to the north (Ezekiel 38). Logically, we can deduce that before this occurs, this great foe of Israel has destroyed Babylon acting as God's judge against her. If we have correctly

interpreted the Bible, sometime - perhaps within the first portion of the so-called Great Tribulation or Daniel's 70th week - Babylon will be destroyed.

Prophecy scholars, since Hal Lindsey first wrote *The Late Great Planet Earth,* have often asked why when Russia attacks Israel along with Persia, Libya, Turkey and Ethiopia (Ezekiel 38:5, 6), no mention is made of the United States. Only Saudi Arabia seems perplexed by the Russian invasion (Ezekiel 38:13). We can only deduce it is because Russia has eliminated its arch-rival and first taken out the United States in a surprise attack. It is then free to accomplish what it deems the concluding move to securing oil and the political control of the Persian Gulf - the elimination of Israel. Her Arab allies would be forever in Russia's debt. But whatever victory the Russian *bear* may claim, it will be very short-lived. The prophet proclaims in Chapter 38 the great armies will be devastated by an act of God so that He might demonstrate He is the undisputed king of the earth, not Babylon and not Russia. God will bring a great pestilence with blood (biological warfare?) and great hailstones, fire and brimstone: *[17] Thus saith the Lord God; Art thou he of whom I have spoken in old time by my servants the prophets of Israel, which prophesied in those days many years that I would bring thee against them?*

[18] And it shall come to pass at the same time when Gog shall come against the land of Israel, saith the Lord God, that my fury shall come up in my face.

[19] For in my jealousy and in the fire of my wrath have I spoken, Surely in that day there shall be a great shaking in the land of Israel; [20] So that the fishes of the sea, and the fowls of the heaven, and the beasts of the field, and all creeping things that creep upon the earth, and all the men that are upon the face of the earth, shall shake at my presence, and the mountains shall be thrown down, and the steep places shall fall, and every wall shall fall to the ground.

[21] And I will call for a sword against him throughout all my mountains, saith the Lord God: every man's sword shall be against his brother.

[22] And I will plead against him with pestilence and with blood; and I will rain upon him, and upon his bands, and upon the many people that are with him, an overflowing rain, and great hailstones, fire, and brimstone.

[23] Thus will I magnify myself, and sanctify myself; and I will be known in the eyes of many nations, and they shall know that I am the LORD.

While the United States may have been removed as 'the star' in this dramatic tragedy we call end-times prophecy, Antichrist himself lives to fight another day. Antichrist may have first acquired power through the United States, perhaps specifically through the United Nations, the seat of World Government on the waters of New York City. However, he now must reassert his authority and take his throne elsewhere as the city has been completely destroyed. "And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and cast [it] into the sea, saying, Thus with violence shall that great city Babylon be thrown down, and shall be found no more at all." (Revelation 18:21) Still to come is Antichrist's war on Israel in which she must flee into the wilderness (Revelation 12:6). And then, Revelation 19 describes the war to end all wars in - the Battle of Armageddon - with the victor declared next to the details of His victory.

[11] And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war.

[12] His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns; and he had a name written, that no man knew, but he himself.

[13] And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood: and his name is called The Word of God.

[14] And the armies which were in heaven followed him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean.

[15] And out of his mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations: and he shall rule them with a rod of iron: and he treadeth the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God.

[16] And he hath on his vesture and on his thigh a name written, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.

[17] And I saw an angel standing in the sun; and he cried with a loud voice, saying to all the fowls that fly in the midst of heaven, Come and gather yourselves together unto the supper of the great God; [18] That ye may eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of captains, and the flesh of mighty men,

and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all men, both free and bond, both small and great.

[19] And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against him that sat on the horse, and against his army.

[20] And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone.

[21] And the remnant were slain with the sword of him that sat upon the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth: and all the fowls were filled with their flesh.

After the Antichrist and the False Prophet are thrown into the Lake of Fire, Christ the King finishes the ‘mopping up’ operation, even gathering a massive company of birds to remove the last remnants of the armies of the beasts of Revelation 13. The victory is complete for Jesus Christ and for “His mighty ones” who ride with Him, dressed in white linen, seated upon white horses.

The image boggles the mind. That believers in Jesus Christ are allowed to share in His victory elevates astonishment to a level exceeding all comprehension. It testifies to the merits of Christ’s death for His Church although it constitutes a mere down-payment of the glories to follow (Romans 8:18).

The Ultimate Choice for Time and Eternity

For the reader, this is your moment of decision. You can escape the fate of the destruction of Babylon and Babylonia. You can ride on a white horse and enjoy the victory over Satan, his Antichrist, and the False Prophet. However, you can only join the victory party if you first acknowledge your need for Christ to cleanse you from sin and to reconcile you to God. “For if, when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life” (Romans 5:10). His death is the ultimate solution to humanity’s problems and to *your* problems.

As Paul the Apostle implored his readers, “Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech [you] by us: we pray [you] in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God” (2 Corinthians 5:20).

It is your moment: Say a prayer to Jesus Christ - *be reconciled now.*

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Andrews, Samuel J., *Christianity and Anti-Christianity in Their Final Conflict*, Chicago, IL, The Bible Institute Colportage Association, 1937, 358 pages.

Baker, Russ, *Family of Secrets: The Bush Dynasty, America's Invisible Government, and the Hidden History of the Last Fifty Years*, Bloomsbury Press, New York, 2009, 379 pages.

Baigent, Michael and Leigh, Richard, *The Temple and the Lodge*, Arcade Publishing, New York, 1989, 306 pages.

Bauval, Robert and Gilbert, Adrian, *The Orion Mystery: Unlocking the Secrets of the Pyramids*, New York, Three Rivers Press, 1994, 325 pages.

Black, Edwin, *War Against the Weak: Eugenics and America's Campaign to Create a Master Race*, New York, Four Walls Eight Windows, 2003, Kindle Edition.

Ibid., *Nazi Nexus: America's Corporate Connections to Hitler's Holocaust*, Washington, D.C., Dialog Press, 2009, Kindle Edition.

Braden, Gregg, *Fractal Time: The Secret of 2012 and a New World Age*, Hay House, Inc., Carlsbad, CA., 2009, 253 pages.

Braden, Russell, Pinchbeck, Jenkins, et al., *The Mystery of 2012*, Sounds True, Boulder, CO., 2009, 465 pages.

Bradley, Michael, *The Secrets of the Freemasons*, Barnes & Noble, New York, 2006, 208 pages.

Brunzel, Ulrich, *Hitler's Treasures and Wonder Weapons*, Zella-Mehlis, Germany, Heinrich-Jung-Verlagsgesellschaft, mbH, 1997, 208 pages.

Butler, Alan and Dafoe, Stephen, *The Knights Templar Revealed*, Barnes & Noble, New York 1999, 233 pages.

Byrne, Rhonda, *The Secret*, Atria Books, New York, 198 pages.

Cahn, Jonathan, *The Harbinger: The Ancient Mystery that Holds the Secret of America's Future*, Lake Mary, FL., 2011, 262 pages.

Chesterton, G.K., *Orthodoxy*, Image Books, Doubleday, 1959, 170 pages.

Church, J.R., *Guardians of the Grail: And the Men Who Rule the World, Prophecy* Publications, Oklahoma City, OK., 1989, 318 pages.

Collins, Andrew, *Beneath the Pyramids: Egypt's Greatest Secret Uncovered,* Virginia Beach, VA, A.R.E. Press, 2009, 262 Pages.

Constantine, Alex, *Virtual Government: CIA Mind Control Operations in America,* Los Angeles, CA., Feral House, 1997, 304 pages.

Dawkins, Richard, *The God Delusion,* First Mariner Books, New York, 2008, 463 pages.

Dizdar, Russ, *The Black Awakening: Rise of the Satanic Super Soldiers and the Coming Chaos,* Canton, OH., 2009, 661 pages.

Douglass, James W., *JFK and the Unspeakable: Why He Died and Why it Matters,* Maryknoll, NY., Orbis Books, 2008, Kindle Edition.

Ehrman, Bart D., *Truth and Fiction in The Da Vinci Code,* New York, Oxford University Press, 2004, 207 pages.

Ellis, Joseph J., *American Creation: Triumphs and Tragedies at the Founding of the Republic,* Alfred A. Knopf, New York, 2007, 283 pages.

Epstein, Orit Badouk, Schwartz, Joseph, and Schwartz, Rachel Wingfield, *Ritual Abuse and Mind Control: The Manipulation of Attachment Needs,* London, UK, Karnac Books, 2011, 183 pages.

Estulin, Daniel, *The Bilderberg Group: The True Story of,* Walterville, OR., Trineday, 2005, 398 pages.

Farrell, Joseph P., *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell: The Nazis' Incredible Secret Technology,* Kempton, IL., 2006, 459 pages.

Ibid., Genes, Giants, Monsters and Men: The Surviving Elites of the Cosmic War and their Hidden Agenda, Port Townsend, WA., Feral House, 2011, 239 pages.

Ibid., Nazi International: The Nazis' Postwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics and Space, Kempton, Il., Adventures Unlimited, 2008, Kindle Edition.

Ibid., Roswell and the Reich: The Nazi Connection, Kempton, Il., Adventures Unlimited, 2010, 520 pages.

Ibid., Saucers, Swastikas and Psyops: A History of a Breakaway Civilization, Kempton, Il., Adventures Unlimited, 2011, 259 pages.

Ibid., The Cosmic War, Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics and Ancient Texts, Kempton, Il., Adventures Unlimited, 2007, Kindle Edition.

Ibid., The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter, Port Townsend, WA., Feral House, 2009, 350 pages.

Ferguson, Marilyn, *The Aquarian Conspiracy: Personal and Social Transformation in the 1980s*, J.P. Tarcher, Los Angeles, 1980, 448 pages.

Flew, Anthony, *There Is A God*, Harper One, New York, 2007, 222 pages.

Flynn, David, *Temple at the Center of Time: Newton's Bible Codex Deciphered and the Year 2012*, Official Disclosure, A Division of Anomalous Publishing House, (Crane, Mo.), 2008, 296 pages.

Freeman, Kevin, *Secret Weapon: How Economic Terrorism Brought Down the U.S. Stock Market and Why it can Happen Again*, Washington, D.C., Regnery Publishing, 2012, 300 pages.

Garrison, Jim, *America as Empire: Global Leader or Rogue Power?* San Francisco, Berrett-Koehler Publishers, Inc., 224 pages.

Geryl, Patrick, *The World Cataclysm in 2012: The Maya Countdown to the End of Our World*, Adventures Unlimited Press, Kempton, Illinois, 2005, 273 pages.

Haddock, Deborah Bray, M.Ed., M.A., L.P., *The Dissociative Identity Disorder Sourcebook*, New York: McGraw-Hill, 2001, Kindle Edition.

Hale, Christopher, *Himmler's Crusade*, Edison, NJ, Castle Books, 2006, 422 pages.

Hall, Manly P., *The Secret Destiny of America*, New York, Tarcher/ Penguin Books, first published, 1944, 262 pages.

Hamp, Douglas, *Corrupting the Image: Angles, Aliens, and the Antichrist Revealed*, Crane, MO., Defender Books, 348 pages.

Hancock, Graham, *Supernatural: Meetings with the Ancient Teachers of Mankind*, New York, The Disinformation Company, 2007, 468 pages.

Hancock, Graham and Bauval, Robert, *The Master Game: Unmasking the Secret Rulers of the World*, The Disinformation Company, 2007, 636 pages.

Hoagland, Richard C. and Bara, Mike, *Dark Mission: The Secret History of NASA*, Feral House, Port Townsend, WA., 2009, 616 pages.

Heron, Patrick, *The Nephilim and the Pyramid of the Apocalypse*, Citadel Press, Kensington Publishing, New York, 2004, 241 pages.

Ibid., *Return of the Antichrist and the New World Order*, Kindle Edition.

Hitchcock, Mark, *2012: The Bible and the End of the World*, Harvest House Publishers, Eugene, OR., 2009, 184 pages.

Ibid., *Who is the Antichrist: Answering the Question Everyone Is Asking*, Harvest House Publishers, Eugene, OR., 198 pages.

Ibid., *The Late Great United States: What Bible Prophecy Reveals About America's Last Days*, Multnomah Books, Colorado Springs, CO., 2009, 191 pages.

Horn, Thomas R., *Nephilim Stargates: The Year 2012 and the Return of the Watchers*, Anomalous Publishing House, (Crane, MO.), 2007, 232 pages.

Ibid., *Apollyon Rising: 2012*, Anomalous Publishing, Crane, MO., 2009, 352 pages.

Horn, Dr. Thomas, Editor, *Pandemonium's Engine, Satan's Imminent and Final Assault on the Creation of God*, Defender Books, Crane, MO., 2011, 372 pages.

Ibid., *God's Ghostbusters*, Defender Books, Crane, MO., 2011, 480 pages.

Horowitz, Mitch, *Occult America*, New York, Bantam Books, 2009, 290 pages.

Howarth, Stephen, *The Knights Templar*, Barnes & Noble, New York, 1982, 321 pages.

Hutchings, Dr. Noah, *U.S. in Prophecy*, Oklahoma City, 2000, 238 pages.

Hunley, Raymond C. Ph.D., *Will the World End in 2012?* Thomas Nelson, Nashville, TN., 2010.

Hunt, Dave, *A Woman Rides the Beast: The Roman Catholic Church and the Last Days*, Harvest House Publishers, Eugene, OR., 549 pages.

Jacobs, David M., Ph.D., *The Threat: Revealing the Secret Alien Agenda*, New York, Simon and Schuster, 1998, Kindle Edition.

James, Terry, *The American Apocalypse: Is the United States in Bible Prophecy?* Harvest House Publishers, Eugene OR., 292 pages.

Jenkins, John Major, *Maya Cosmogenesis 2012*, Bear & Company Publishing, Rochester, Vermont, 1998, 425 pages.

Jeremiah, Dr. David, *The Coming Economic Armageddon: What Bible Prophecy Warns about the New Global Economy*, Faithwords, New York, 2010, 293 pages.

Jones, Marie D., *2013: The End of Days or a New Beginning?* New Page Books, Franklin Lakes, NJ., 2008, 286 pages.

Joseph, Frank, *Atlantis and 2012*, Rochester, VT., Bear & Company Books, 2010, 246 pages.

Jung, C.G., *Flying Saucers: A Modern Myth of Things Seen in the Skies*, MJF Books, New York, 1978, 138 pages.

Knight, Christopher, and Butler, Alan, *Before the Pyramids: Cracking Archeology's Greatest Mystery*, Watkins Publishing, London, 2009, 271 pages.

Kreisberg, Glenn, Editor, *Lost Knowledge of the Ancients: A Graham Hancock Reader*, Bear and Company, Rochester, Vermont, 2010, 241 pages.

Kühl, Stefan, The Nazi Connection: Eugenics, American Racism, and German National Socialism, New York, Oxford University Press, 1994, Kindle Edition.

Lapin, Rabbi Daniel, *America's Real War: An Orthodox Rabbi Insists that Judeo-Christian Values are Vital for Our Nation's Survival*, Multnomah Publishers, Sisters, OR., 1999, 377 pages.

LaViolette, Paul, Ph.D., *Secrets of Antigravity Propulsion: Tesla, UFOs, and Classified Aerospace Technology*, Rochester Vermont, Bear & Company, 2008, 503 pages.

Lawrence, Joseph E., *Apocalypse 2012: An Investigation into Civilization's End*, Broadway Books (New York), 2007, 2008, 262 pages.

Levenda, Peter, *Sinister Forces: A Grimoire of American Political Witchcraft, Book One:* The Nine, Walterville, OR., Trineday, 2005, 371 pages.

Ibid., Ratline: *Soviet Spies, Nazi Priests, and the Disappearance of Adolph Hitler*, Lake Worth, FL., IBIS Press, 2012, 255 pages.

Ibid., Unholy Alliance: A History of Nazi Involvement with the Occult, New York, Continuum, 2010, 423 pages.

Levin, Mark R., *Ameritopia: The Unmaking of America*, New York, Simon & Schuster, 2012, 585 pages.

Livio, Mario, *The Golden Ratio: The Story of Phi, the World's Most Astonishing Number*, Broadway Books, New York, 2002, 294 pages.

Lowe, David W., *Earthquake Resurrection: Supernatural Catalyst for the Coming Global Catastrophe*, Wichita, KN., 2005, 323 pages.

Ibid., Then His Voice Shook the Earth, Mount Sinai, The Trumpet of God, and the Resurrection of the Dead in Christ, Seismos Publishing, Wichita, KN., 165 pages.

Ibid., Deconstructing Lucifer: Reexamining the Ancient Origins of the Fallen Angel of Light, Seismos Publishing, Wichita, KN., 2011, 241 pages.

Lutzer, Erwin W., *Hitler's Cross: The Revealing Story of How the Cross of Christ was Used as a Symbol of the Nazi Agenda*, Chicago, IL., Moody Press, 1995, 216 pages.

Marrs, Jim, *Rule by Secrecy*, Harper Collins, New York, 2000, 467 pages.

Ibid., PSI Spies: The True Story of America's Psychic Warfare Program, New Page Books, Franklin Lakes, NJ., 2007, 319 pages.

Ibid., The Rise of the Fourth Reich: The Secret Societies that Threaten to Take Over America, HarperCollins Publishers, New York, 2008, 435 pages.

Ibid., The Trillion Dollar Conspiracy: How the New World Order, Man-made Diseases, and Zombie Banks are Destroying America, HarperCollins, New York, NY., 2010, 452 pages.

Marks, John, *The Search for the "Manchurian Candidate": The CIA and Mind Control, The Secret History of the Behavioral Sciences*, New York: W.W. Norton & Company, 1979, 264 pages.

Marzulli, L.A., *Politics, Prophecy, and the Supernatural: The Coming Great Deception and the Luciferian Endgame*, Anomalous Publishing, Crane, Mo., 2007, 248 pages.

Ibid., *The Cosmic Chess Match*, Malibu, CA., Spiral of Life, 2011, 336 pages.

Monteith, Dr. Stanley, *Brotherhood of Darkness*, Radio Liberty, Soquel, CA., 2000, 160 pages.

Nietzsche, Friedrich, *The Antichrist: A Criticism of Christianity*, New York, Barnes and Noble Publishing, 2006, Originally Published in 1896, 77 pages.

Ibid., *Thus Spoke Zarathustra*, Barnes and Nobles Classics, New York, NY., 2005 (First published in 1883), 315 pages.

Nostradamus, *The Complete Prophecies of Nostradamus*, A & D Publishing, Radford, VA, 2007, 151 pages.

Newton, Sir Isaac, *Revised History of Ancient Kingdoms: A Complete Chronology*, Larry and Marion Pierce, Editors, Master Books, Green Forest, AR., Revised Edition, 2009, 205 pages.

Nyiszli, Dr. Miklos, *Auschwitz: A Doctor's Eyewitness Account*, New York, Arcade Publishing, 1960, 2011, 222 pages.

Ravenscroft, Trevor, *The Spear of Destiny*, Samuel Weiser Inc., York Beach, Maine, 1st American Edition, 1973, 362 pages.

Ravenscroft, Trevor and Wallace-Murphy, Tim, *The Mark of the Beast: The Continuing Story of the Spear of Destiny*, Weiser Books, Boston, MA., 1990, 245 pages.

Redfern, Nick, *The NASA Conspiracies: The Truth Behind the Moon Landings, Censored Photos, and the Face on Mars*, New Page Books, Pompton Plains, NJ., 2011, 237 pages.

Ibid., *Final Events: And the Secret Government Group on Demonic UFO)s and the Afterlife*, San Antonio, Anomalist Books, 2010, Kindle Edition.

Ross, Colin A., M.D., *The C.I.A. Doctors: Human Rights Violations by American Psychiatrists* (Originally published as *Bluebird: Deliberate Creation of Multiple Personality by Psychiatrists*), Richardson, TX., Manitou Communications, 2006, 351 pages.

Rutz, Carol, *A Nation Betrayed: Secret Cold War Experiments Performed on Our Children and Other Innocent People*, Grass Lake, Michigan, Fidelity Publishing, 2001, Kindle Edition.

Paris, Edmond, *The Secret History of the Jesuits*, Ontario, CA., Chick Publications, 288 pages.

Pauwels, Louis and Bergier, Jacques, *The Morning of the Magicians: Secret Societies, Conspiracies, and Vanished Civilizations,* Destiny Books, Rochester, Vermont, 1960, 414 pages.

Perloff, James, *The Shadows of Power: The Council on Foreign Relations and the American Decline*, Western Islands Publishers, Appleton, WI., 1988, 272 pages.

Picknett, Lynn and Prince, Clive, *The Stargate Conspiracy: Revealing the Truth behind Extraterrestrial Contact, Military Intelligence and the Mysteries of Ancient Egypt*, Berkley Books, New York, 1999, 425 pages.

Pinchbeck, *Daniel, 2012: The Return of Quetzalcoatl*, New York, Penguin Group, 2007, 411 pages.

Ibid., Breaking Open the Head: A Psychedelic Journey into the Heart of Contemporary Shamanism, Broadway Books, New York, 2002, 322 pages.

Posner, Gerald L., and Ware, *John, Mengele: The Complete Story,* New York, Copper Square Press, 2000, original published in 1986, 364 pages.

Sanger, Mel, *2012: The Year of Project Enoch?* Rema Marketing, London, 2009, 253 pages.

Shorto, Russell, *Descartes' Bones: A Skeletal History of the Conflict Between Faith and Reason*, Vintage Books / Random House, New York, 2008, 299 pages.

Skiba, Rob, *Babylon Rising: And the First Shall be the Last*, 2011, 312 pages.

Simpson, Christopher, *Blowback: America's Recruitment of Nazis and Its Effects on the Cold War*, New York: Collier Books, 398 pages.

Springmeier, Fritz, and De Ruiter, Robin, *Worldwide Evil and Misery: The Legacy of the 13 Satanic Bloodlines,* Kindle Edition, The Netherlands, Mayra Publications, 2008.

Stearman, Gary, Time Travelers of the Bible: How Hebrew Prophets Shattered the Barriers of Time-Space, Crane, MO., Defender Books, 2011, 539 pages.

Stenger, Victor J., *God: The Failed Hypothesis, How Science Shows That God Does Not Exist*, Prometheus Books, Amherst, NY., 2007, 294 pages.

Stevens, Henry, Dark Star: *The Hidden History of German Secret Bases, Flying Disks and U-Boats*, Adventures Unlimited, Kempton, IL., 366 pages.

Ibid., *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science and Technology*, Kempton, Il., Adventures Unlimited, 2007, 334 pages.

Streatfeild, Dominic, *Brainwash: The Secret History of Mind Control*, New York, Picador, 2007, 418 pages.

Steyn, Mark, *After America: Get Ready for Armageddon*, Washington, D.C., Regnery, 2011, Kindle Edition.

Thomas, I.D.E., *The Omega Conspiracy: Satan's Last Assault on God's Kingdom*, Anomalous Publishing, Crane, MO., 2008, 195 pages.

Vision Revisited, *The Antichrist Identity*, Prime Republic Ltd., London, 2008, 179 pages.

Vowell, Sarah, *The Wordy Shipmates*, New York, River Bend Books, 2004, 254 pages.

von Däniken, Erich, *Chariots of the Gods*, Berkeley Books (Penguin Putnam), New York, 1999, 200 pages.

Wilcock, David, *The Source Field Investigations: The Hidden Science and Lost Civilizations behind the 2012 Prophecies*, Dutton / Penguin Group, New York, 2011, 536 pages.

Woodward, S. Douglas, *Are We Living in the Last Days*? *The Apocalypse Debate in the 21st Century,* Woodinville, WA., Faith-Happens, 2009, 312 pages.

Ibid., *Black Sun, Blood Moon: Can We Escape the Cataclysms of the Last Days?* Crane, MO., 2011, 212 pages.

Ibid., Decoding Doomsday: The 2012 Prophecies, the Apocalypse and the Perilous Days Ahead, Crane, Mo., 2010, 380 pages.

Ibid., *Power Quest, Book One: America's Obsession with the Paranormal*, Woodinville, WA., Faith-Happens, 2012, 301 pages.

About the Author

Over the past three years, S. Douglas Woodward ("Doug") has authored four books on the topics of biblical prophecy, the history of millenarianism, apologetics, and the intersection of American history and eschatology. He has contributed to two other books published by Defender Books: *Pandemonium's Engine* (2011) and *God's Ghostbusters* (2011). He is a frequent guest on radio and television shows dealing with these topics.

His 'day job' is as an independent consultant serving emerging companies. Over the past twelve years, Doug has served as CEO, COO, and CFO of numerous software and Internet companies. Prior to his tenure in entrepreneurial efforts, he worked as an executive for Honeywell, Oracle, Microsoft, and as a Partner at Ernst & Young LLP. His technical background is in enterprise business strategy, software development and most recently in venture financing and business strategy.

Doug grew up in Oklahoma City, going to high school there and college at nearby Norman. At 15, Doug was struck with a serious form of adolescent cancer, *Rhabdomyorsarcoma,* which forced him to lose his left leg as a means to treat the disease. At the time of his illness (1969), recovery was likely in only 10% of the cases diagnosed. The experience had a dramatic impact upon Doug's spiritual life, linking him with dozens of family members, friends, ministers, nurses and doctors who showed great compassion and provided him with remarkable support.

Doug attended the University of Oklahoma where he received an Honors Degree in *Letters* (Bachelor of Arts), graduating Cum Laude. Upon graduation, for three years Doug served as a Youth Minister and Associate Pastor in the Methodist and Reformed Churches for before experimenting with the computer industry as a possible career choice. He grew to love it and has spent thirty-five years in various capacities there. He has written various articles and spoken at many conferences and seminars on topics related to information technology throughout his career. Through the years, Doug has also served in various capacities in Methodist, Presbyterian, and Reformed Churches. Most recently, Doug served as Elder in the Presbyterian Church.

Doug lives with his wife Donna and together they are celebrating thirty-seven years of marriage. They have two adult children, Corinne, and Nicholas; and a wonderful daughter-in-law, Jessica.

Other Books by S. Douglas Woodward:

* ***Are We Living in the Last Days? The Apocalypse Debate in the 21st Century * Decoding Doomsday: The 2012 Prophecies, the Apocalypse, and the***
Perilous Days Ahead * Black Sun, Blood Moon - Can We Escape the Cataclysms of the Last Days?

**** Power Quest - Book One: America's Obsession with the Paranormal***

Contributing author to the following books published by **Defender Books**:
Pandemonium's Engine

God's Ghostbusters

Available at: www.faith-happens.com

Power Quest - Book One: *America's Obsession with the Paranormal* *The Prequel to Power Quest - Book Two*

"Doug Woodward's new book ***Power Quest***, should be required reading by anyone interested in how the occult, and what I would call the Luciferian agenda, has influenced our culture. Woodward has certainly done his homework and his book reveals the hidden satanic mysteries that, like a deadly deceitful web, continue to ensnare those who are unaware of its presence. Bravo!"

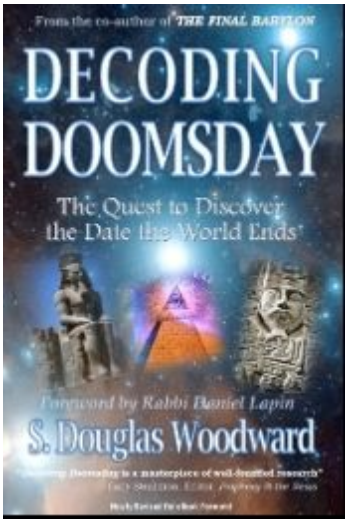
- L. A. Marzulli, author *The Cosmic Chess Match* and *"The Watchers"* series of DVDs, Author, Researcher, Lecturer "It takes balance to look into the shadowy historical crypts of… occultism and the machinations of the spiritualist elite without losing your perspective.
Doug is particularly talented at exposing their schemes and making logical connections that others, following the same quest, have overlooked."

- Gary Stearman, author *Time Travelers of the Bible*, Editor, *Prophecy in the News Magazine*

AVAILABLE NOW IN MOST EBOOK FORMATS

Decoding Doomsday

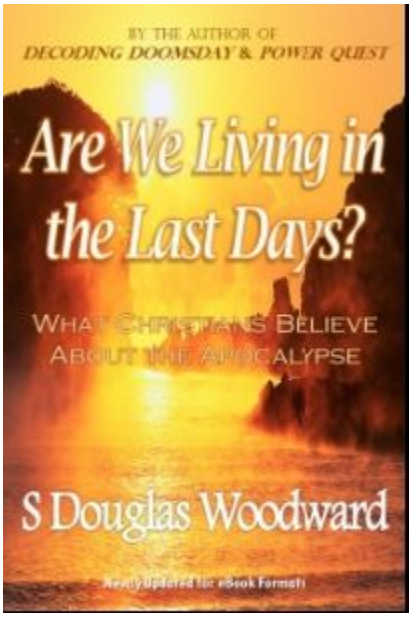
Dozens of books have been published during the past two decades on the topic of 2012, mostly reflecting a “New Age” perspective, claiming a scholarly and authoritative point of view. Pundits penning these opinions draw upon ancient sources which include the Mayan calendar, the I Ching, the Kolbrin Bible, and Plato’s Atlantis. Could the key to our future connect to the study of our past?



Decoding Doomsday argues that by studying the claims of the 2012 enthusiasts in light of apocalyptic history we can make sense of the current clamor. Also, flying in the face of conventional wisdom, the author asserts that the apocalypse expectation can be a healthy focus, essential to authentic Christianity. Finally, Woodward maintains doomsday is indeed decoded – history’s last day is disclosed within the Mosaic Law and the prophecies of the Hebrew prophets.

AVAILABLE NOW IN MOST EBOOK FORMATS

Are We Living in the Last Days?



The Apocalypse Debate in the 21st Century Are We Living in the Last Days? In this study, Woodward argues that how we interpret the Bible, our hermeneutic, determines what we believe about prophecy in the Bible. The author examines the three dominant Protestant methods for interpreting the Bible (Mainline Denomination Liberalism, Covenantal Theology and Dispensational Theology) and their respective positions on new and classic topics of the Apocalypse to shed light on their meaning today. In exploring the prophetic subjects, many other pertinent issues are tackled including the Gnostic gospels, the dangers of literalism, how Liberalism and Evangelicalism differ on the meaning of truth in the Bible, and why some theologians dismiss the future value of Bible Prophecy.

AVAILABLE NOW IN MOST EBOOK FORMATS

[1]NOTES

S. Franklin Logsdon – Sr. Pastor Moody Memorial Church, Chicago – c. 1967

[2] "All Historicists believe that the Papacy is that Anti-Christ, the Man of Sin of II Thessalonians 2, and a Beast of Revelation 13" (http://www.historicism.net/).

[3] Rolleston's book was recently republished in 2011. See http://www.amazon.com/Notes-Apocalypse-Explained-Hebrew-Scriptures/dp/1173735348

[4] See http://www.conservapedia.com/Antichrist.

[5] Nicole Gaouette, *Bloomberg News*, "***Report sees world transformed…Forecast predicts falling U.S. power, spreading wealth, scarcer resources***," http://www.bloomberg.com/news/2012-12-10/u-s-intelligence-agencies-see-a-different-world-in-2030.html.

[6] "Simeon hath declared how God at the first did visit the Gentiles, to take out of them a people for his name" (Acts 15:14).

[7] Tarshish most likely refers to Spain and is related to those who sailed long distances. "Cyrus Gordon related the name 'Tarshish' to a Semitic root also found in the Greek 'Thalasos' meaning sea. This explanation is close to that of the Talmud which however seems to connect Tarshish to the Ocean and the Atlantic Ocean in particular. 'C. Gordon attempts to interpret the name Tarshish with the wine-dark sea of Homer' *Journal of Near-Eastern Studies 37* (1978), pp. 51-52." "*Attic thalatta*", meaning sea, becomes *thalassa* in Doric". Cyris Gordon has also been quoted as identifying Tarshish with America. The Biblical expression "Ships of Tarshish" is often explained as a general term for ships sailing on long-distance voyages. There is however no proof for this supposition. In this author's opinion "Ships of Tarshish" means "Ships from (the Place) Tarshish" or from the direction of Tarshish." See *www.britam.org/Questions/QuesTarshish.html.*

[8] The 70 weeks of Daniel 9 is an oft-debated timeline which establishes when the Messiah came to His people. Although some aspects of the timing are disputed, there is consensus among biblical scholars that the Messiah had to appear by approximately 30 AD. In a study by the great prophecy teacher, the late J.R. Church entitled, *Daniel Reveals the Bloodline of the Antichrist*, not only did J.R. establish that the Antichrist's bloodline consists of three different lineages: Jewish, Greek and Roman, he also demonstrates why the Jewish calendar has been understated by over 160 years, primarily because Jewish scholars in the 2nd century reset the calendar trying to prove that Simon Bar

Kochba was the Messiah. Bar Kochba was killed by the Romans in 135 AD. If the calendar had not been rest, the timing spoken of by Daniel would demonstrate that Jesus Christ fulfilled the prophecy.

[9] The author was privileged to write a foreword to David's revision of *Then His Voice Shook the Earth*, Wichita, KN, 2012. David's study connects the rapture of the Church with the events of Revelation 6:12-14. In essence, the resurrection of the righteous and the rapture of the church have a massive physical impact upon the earth directly causing the great earthquake.

[10] Hitchcock, Mark, *The Late Great United States*, Colorado Springs, CO., Multnomah Books, 2009, p. 90.

[11] *Ibid.*, p. 93.

[12] *Ibid.*

[13] I believe that America has been experiencing specific judgments since 1991 to the extent we participate and lead the effort to annex the land of Israel and forfeit 'land for peace'. Author David Brennan, another friend of this author, lays out the case for these judgments in his books, *The Israel Omen* and *The Israel Omen II*. With each key meeting or announcement, there has been an immediate 'judgment' in the form of earthquakes, hurricanes, massive storms, floods, droughts, and heat waves.

[14] See http://www.originofnations.org/books%2C%20papers/quotes%20etc/Reagan_The%20Shining%20City%20Upon%20A%20Hill%20speech.htm. Unfortunately, Reagan immediately said, "We have not dealt falsely with God" rather than saying something humbly to the effect, "We must forever strive NOT to deal falsely with God." Assuming our Nation's chosen course of action constitutes a righteous path, mirrors the arrogance of Sodom and foreshadows our own downfall.

[15] *The Great Escape* (1963) was based on a true story and remains a classic prison escape film. The film starred Steve McQueen and James Garner.

[16] Jim Marrs, *The Rise of the Fourth Reich*, HarperCollins Publishers, New York, 2008, p. 4.

[17] Curt Reiss, from *The Nazis Go Underground*, New York: Doubleday, 1944.

[18] *Ibid.*, p. 107. Quoting Curt Reiss, *The Nazis Go Underground*, p. 2.

[19] New York Times, January 19, 1953, Cited by Alex Constantine, *Virtual Government, CIA Mind Control Operations in America*, Los Angeles, Feral House, 1997, p. 7.

[20] S. Douglas Woodward, Power Quest: Book One: America's Obsession with the Paranormal, Faith Happens, Woodinville, 2011.

[21] *Ibid.*, p. 26.

[22] *Ibid.*, p. 116.

[23] *Ibid.*, pp. 116-117.

[24] *Ibid.*, p. 117.

[25] *Ibid.*, p. 188. See http://www.georgewalkerbush.net/bushnazidealingscontinueduntil1951.htm.

[26] Loftus, John (November 11, 2011). *America's Nazi Secret: An Insider's History* (Kindle Locations 525). Independent Publishers Group. Kindle Edition.

[27] Loftus, John, *America's Nazi Secret*, Kindle Locations 919-922.

[28] Loftus, John, *op. cit.*, Kindle Location 924.

[29] Loftus, John, *America's Nazi Secret*: Kindle Locations 927-932.

[30] *Ibid.*, p. 111.

[31] *Ibid.*, p. 111.

[32] Howard Armbruster, *Treason's Peace.* (1947) Cited from Alex Constantine, *Virtual Government, CIA Mind Control Operations in America*, Los Angeles, Feral House, 1997, p. 3.

[33] *Reuters*, May 10, 1996, cited by Constantine, *Virtual Government*, pp. 5-6.

[34] *Times of London*, December 6, 1996, cited by Constantine, *Virtual Government*, p. 8.

[35] *Associated Press*, September 20, 1996), cited by Constantine, *Virtual Government*, p. 13.

[36] See http://www.thirdworldtraveler.com/New_World_Order/NSS_Doctrine_NWO_BNWO.html.

[37] From Wikipedia: "Advocates of Manifest Destiny believed that expansion was not only wise but that it was readily apparent (manifest) and inexorable (destiny).

> The concept of American expansionism is much older, but John L. O'Sullivan coined the exact term "Manifest Destiny" in the July/August 1845 issue of the *United States Magazine and Democratic Review* in an article titled "Annexation." It was primarily used by Democrats to support the expansion plans of the Polk Administration, and the idea of expansion was also supported by the Whigs like Henry Clay, Daniel Webster, and Abraham Lincoln who wanted to deepen the economy. John C. Calhoun was a notable Democrat who generally opposed his party on the issue, which fell out of favor by 1860.
>
> The belief in an American mission to promote and defend democracy throughout the world, as expounded by Abraham Lincoln and Woodrow Wilson, continues to have an influence on American political ideology.
>
> See http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Manifest_Destiny.

[38] Also known as *The Protocols of the Meetings of the Learned Elders of Zion* it, the plagiarized booklet was an anti-Semitic diatribe purporting to describe a Jewish plan for global dominance stemming from the Zionist congress in Basel Switzerland in 1897. It was published in

Russia in 1903, translated into multiple languages, and disseminated internationally during the first three decades of the twentieth century. Henry Ford was responsible for funding the printing of 500,000 copies which were distributed in the 1920s across America. Ford wrote his own book, *The International Jew in the 1920s* which also contributed to world anti-Semitism. A quotation from Ford's book, "The Jew is the world's enigma. Poor in his masses, he yet controls the world's finances. Scattered abroad without country or government, he yet presents a unity of race continuity which no other people has achieved. Living under legal disabilities in almost every land, he has become the power behind many a throne. There are ancient prophecies to the effect that the Jew will return to his own land and from that center rule the world, though not until he has undergone an assault by the united nations of mankind.

> "Adolf Hitler and the Nazis were major proponents of the text [*The Protocols*]. It was studied, as if a factual document, in German classrooms after the Nazi Party came to power in 1933, despite having been exposed as fraudulent years before. In the opinion of historian Norman Cohn, the *Protocols* was Hitler's primary justification for initiating the Holocaust - his "warrant for genocide." Not surprisingly, the document continues to be published in Middle East countries who oppose the nation of Israel. The linkage between Nazism and 'anti-Zionism' continues to this day. *See en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Protocols_of the_Elders_ of_Zion.*

[39] Black, Edwin, Nazi Nexus: America's Corporate Connections to Hitler's Holocaust. NBN_Mobi_Kindle. Kindle Edition, 2009, p. 12.

[40] Mark R. Levin, *Ameritopia: The Unmaking of America*, *iBook* Edition, New York: Simon and Schuster, 2012, p.44.

[41] *Ibid.*, p. 60.

[42] *Ibid.*, p. 48. From Karl Popper, *The Poverty of Historicism*, p. 73.

[43] Baron de Montesquieu (1689-1755) was the most cited thinker in pre-revolutionary America, quoted almost as much as the Bible. He was the father of the separation of church and state.

[44] "We hold these truths to be self-evident, that all men are created equal, that they are *endowed by their Creator* with certain unalienable Rights…" (From the Declaration of Independence, emphasis added).

[45] See http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Washington_flap.

[46] According to an UFologist of that era, Donald Keyhoe, indicated that a Robert Farnsworth, the president of the United States Rocket Society, sent a telegram to President Truman, Secretary of Defense Robert Lovett, Army Secretary Frank Pace, Jr., and Navy Secretary Dan Kimball and a copy given to United Press International (UPI) wire service. The telegram implored Truman not to risk shooting at the UFOs because he might start an interplanetary war with an advanced civilization we would be unable to win. Joseph P. Farrell indicates that it was indeed a fair analysis of those who

believed, at that time, that we were dealing with extraterrestrials. However, Farrell states, “Truman’s ‘shoot down’ order make the most rational sense only in a context that suggests that he and his advisors knew more about the origins of the objects than they were letting on publicly, *and that they knew them to be terrestrial.”* [Emphasis mine] Joseph P. Farrell, *Saucers, Swastikas, and Psyops*, Kempton, Illinois, Adventures Unlimited, 2011, p. 370.

[47] Constantine, Alex, *Virtual Government, CIA Mind Control Operations in America*, Los Angeles, CA: Feral House, 1997, p. 100.

[48] *Ibid.*, pp. 100-101.

[49] *Ibid.*, p. 101.

[50] *Ibid.*, p. 101.

[51] Given our mature awareness of the dismal chance for life on Venus one can also see the probability of deception from the source of the extraterrestrial information he supposedly received.

[52] See http://www.integratron.com/2History/History.html .

[53] My view is *flying saucers* aren’t due to a *single* phenomenon. While Nazis may have been responsible for the outbreaks during the first two decades after World War II, by the 1970s other parties may be involved as well. While I doubt extraterrestrials were responsible, ultra-dimensional entities may have been. As we will discuss later, one government agency even accepts this fact.

[54] Oberth, while not working there, recruited Werner Von Braun into the notorious Nazi research and development center for rocket research at Peenemünde, Germany in the 1930s.

[55] Joseph P. Farrell, *Saucers, Swastikas, and Psyops*, Kempton, Illinois, Adventures Unlimited, 2011, p. 61, citing Timothy Good, *Above Top Secret: The Worldwide UFO Cover-up* , New York: Quill Books, William Morrow, 1988, p. 267.

[56] Farrell, *Saucers, Swastikas, and Psyops*, p. 61, citing Timothy Good, *Above Top Secret: The Worldwide UFO cover-up*, New York: Quill Books, William Morrow, 1988, p. 225.

[57] Farrell, *Saucers, Swastikas, and Psyops*, p. 65, quoting Fred Steckling, *We Found Alien Bases on the Moon: II*, George Adamski Foundation, 1981, p. 144.

[58] Farrell, *Saucers, Swastikas, and Psyops*, pp. 72-74, citing Kevin McClure, “The Nazi UFO Mythos: An Investigation,”

Magonia.haaan.com/2009/nazi-ufo-00-intro/.

[59] The evidence offered by J.R. Church and Gary Stearman in several of their television shows and magazine articles connects key events in Israel’s life with UFOs, suggesting something supernatural was in play concurrently with political events surrounding ‘red-letter dates’, such as the 1967 and 1973 wars.

[60] Farrell, *Saucers, Swastikas, and Psyops*, p. 76, quoting McClure, Magonia.haaan.com/2009/nazi-ufo-3/.

[61] *Ibid.*

[62] One of the physical and aeronautical reasons why these aircraft may have reached such incredible speeds was the discovery of what is known as 'the buoyancy layer' which is a very thing gathering of molecules 'stuck' on the wing surface. If a means is employed to 'suck off' this layer internally through the wing surface and expel it outwardly in some manner, a significant increase in air speed is achieved.

[63] *Ibid.*

[64] Farrell, *Roswell and the Reich*, p. 436.

[65] Stevens, Henry, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science and Technology*, Kempton, Illinois, Adventures Unlimited, 2007, p. 4.

[66] According to the Wikipedia article about Kammler, Agoston is a self-identified British intelligence agent. This point the article appears to make in order to discredit Agoston and Farrell.

[67] See http://greyfalcon.us/restored/KAMMLER.htm.

[68] *Ibid.*

[69] Constantine, Alex, *op. cit.*, p. 84, citing Speer in Agoston's book, p. 8.

[70] Farrell, Saucers, Swastikas, and Psyops, p. 86.

[71] See Paul A. LaViolette, *Secrets of Antigravity Propulsion: Tesla, UFOs, and Classified Aerospace Technology*, Rochester, Vermont: Bear & Co., 2008. A flying saucer basically creates a gravity 'wave' and like a surfer, glides on top. LaViolette contrasts traditional propulsion to the revolutionary propulsion system theorized by 'zero point gravity' or electromagnetism calling upon the science developed by American Thomas Townsend Brown in the 1930s and 40s. Quoting LaViolette from this book: "A full-scale version of Brown's vehicle was thought to be able to accelerate to thousands of miles per hour, change direction, or stop merely by altering the intensity, polarity, and direction of its electric charge. Because the wavelike distortion of the local gravitational field would pull with an equal force on all particles of matter, the ship, its occupants and its load would all respond equally to these maneuvers. The occupants would feel no stress at all, no matter how sharp the turn or how great the acceleration. A turbo-jet airplane, by comparison, must produce a twentyfold increase in thrust just to attain a twofold gain in speed. Whereas jets and rockets attempt to combat the force of gravity through the application of opposed brute force, electrogravitics [as Brown called it] instead attempts to directly control gravity so that this longtime adversary is made to work for the craft rather than against it." (p. 45) [Comment mine]

[72] Constantine adds yet another bizarre (but probably true) data point as further confirmation: “The ‘New Age’ (still dripping with occult beliefs reminiscent of the ‘New Age’ in proto-Nazi Germany), saucer mythology and drugged clairvoyance are blinds for involvement in extreme human rights violations. The gamut of zany cover stories combine in the enigmatic C.B. Scott Jones, yet another military intelligence officer who, as a Navy pilot in the Korean War, happened to witness a UFO overflight [sic]. It has long been suspected by abduction researchers that Jones is a veteran of electromagnetic mind control operations.” Constantine, *op. cit.,* p. 118.

[73] Constantine, *op. cit.*, p. 130.

[74] *JFK* won two academy awards and was nominated for eight, including Best Picture.

[75] Constantine, *op. cit.*, p. 88, quoting Paris Flammonde *in The Kennedy Conspiracy.*

[76] Constantine, *Ibid.*

[77] See http://desertdarkness.blogspot.com/2010/02/roswell-and-reich.html.

[78] Farrell, Joseph P., *Roswell and the Reich: The Nazi Connection*, Adventures Unlimited, Kempton Illinois, 2010, p. 306.

[79] *Ibid.*, p. 329.

[80] *Ibid.*, p. 102. Quoting Timothy Good, *Above Top Secret: The Worldwide UFO Cove r-Up*, New York: William Morrow, 1988, pp. 336-38.

[81] *Ibid.*, p. 333.

[82] Stevens, Henry, Hitler’s Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science and Technology, *op. cit.*, p. 56.

[83] *Ibid.*, p. 221.

[84] *Ibid.*

[85] *Ibid.*, p. 223.

[86] *Ibid.*

[87] Joseph P. Farrell, *Nazi International*, Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, Kindle Edition, (Kindle Locations 3436-3441), 2011, quoting Uki Goña, *The Real ODESSA: How Peron Brought the Nazi War Criminals to Argentina*, Revised Edition, London: Granta Books, 2002, p. 108.

[88] The actual escape of Bormann as told by Farrell (citing several sources) involved a German U-Boat carrying Uranium 235, a necessary isotope for the atomic bomb. Ironically, it was carried on U-Boat 234. The argument is as follows: The Americans were struggling to gather enough of the necessary ingredients for the atomic bomb through their Manhattan project. The Nazis had created enough of the isotope to build several such bombs but missed by a few months of being able to mount it on a V10 rocket (under development) to send it to New York as a deadly greeting card. Consequently,

one explanation is that Bormann made a deal to trade the Uranium, surrendering it to the Americans in exchange for his freedom. Another suggests that the Americans and British were most certainly going to protect the U-234 on its mission to help America's bomb building efforts. Bormann was well aware of this precious cargo and hitched a ride on the 'protected' submarine to Spain, where he holed up for a year, before he moved on to Argentina.

To add insult to injury, according to Farago, when Bormann arrived in Argentina he was in full regalia - as a Catholic priest. To stretch the facts practically to the point of incredulity, it is stated that he even performed sacred church rites when in Bolivia, after Argentina had become 'too hot'. Just how absurd is this idea? As it turns out, using the priesthood as a cover was a frequent alias for the fugitive Germans. Another Nazi war criminal found the priestly frock hospitable. It was in Bolivia where Klaus Barbie was discovered living with a Croatian war criminal who had murdered hundreds of thousands of Orthodox (Eastern Orthodox) Serbs. This murderer was also posing as a priest. Therefore, we can be assured that Bormann posing as a Priest would not be the first time a wolf donned sheep's clothing.

[89] See http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ladislas_Farago.

[90] Levenda, Peter, Unholy Alliance: A History of Nazi Involvement with the Occult, New York: Continuum, 1995, p. 267.

[91] See Dave Hunt's *A Woman Rides the Beast*, Eugene, OR: Harvest House, 1994, for the historical and biblical arguments associated with this viewpoint.

[92] While some of Hunt's arguments are compelling to my Protestant way of thinking, Catholics are hardly convinced. For their response, see http://archive.catholic.com/library/Whore_of_Babylon.asp.

[93] This is a slight paraphrase from an NBC Rock-Center documentary on John F. Kennedy's affair with Mimi Alford, aired in February 2012.

[94] Even at the level of the lower ranking military officers, it was the strong opinion that American soldiers should get home quick, because they would be in another war with the Soviets before too many months had gone by. This was showcased in the movie *Patton* (1970). My father, a lieutenant in Patton's 3rd Army, related this same perspective to me when I was still very young and reaffirmed it again after viewing the movie about old "Blood and Guts."

[95] Hitler determined the fate of the Me 262 himself. He demanded Messerschmitt make it a blitzbomber although it had been designed as a fighter. Ulrich Brunzel comments that this choice was, "a decision of serious consequences, because the plane had not been designed as a bomber." Continuing on, we read: The bomb load alone would make it some 200 kilometers per hour slower and reduce its radius of action accordingly. Both features would make the fighter plane inferior to those of the enemy. Besides, the bomb suspension mechanism had yet to be designed, which meant another delay of at least six months. General Adolf Galland and other experienced flying officers tried to change Hitler's mind,

even if, for the time being, in vain. The aircraft was to be redesigned as a blitzbomber. (Brunzel, *Hitler's Treasures and Wonder Weapons*, Heinrich Jung Verlagsgesellschaft mbH, Zella-Mehlis/Meiningen, 1997, pp. 153-155.) [96] "During the Kennedy Administration, Dulles faced increasing criticism. The pro-American but unpopular regimes in Iran and Guatemala that Dulles had helped put in place were widely regarded as brutal and corrupt.

Several failed assassination plots utilizing CIA-recruited operatives from the Mafia and anti-Castro Cubans directly against Castro undermined the CIA's credibility. The reputation of the agency and its director declined drastically after the Bay of Pigs Invasion fiasco, and Dulles and his staff (including Deputy Director for Plans Richard M. Bissell, Jr. and Deputy Director Charles Cabell) were forced to resign in September 1961. President Kennedy reportedly said he wanted to "splinter the CIA into a thousand pieces and scatter it into the winds" (reference from a 1966 *NY Times* article). See http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Allen_Welsh_Dulles#cite_ref-NY_Times_17-0.

[97] See http://greyfalcon.us/restored/Papercl.htm, p. 1, (3-10-12).

[98] Farrell, Joseph P., *Nazi International,* Adventures Unlimited Press. Kindle Edition, May 1, 2011. Kindle Locations 604-610.

[99] Another key reason to build the gas chambers was that the German Military who were at the forefront of murdering Jews were guilt ridden and becoming ineffective in the process. Poison gas wasn't only to make murdering Jews more humane - it was also about 'efficiency' and sheltering the consciences of German soldiers assigned to the macabre task.

[100] Since the recent covers of *Time Magazine*, as showcased in February 2012 by John Stewart on *the Daily Show*, picture international issues dealing with political topics while the U.S. cover for the same editions deals with personal health and entertainment, it is easy to decry American lackadaisical attitudes.

[101] Loftus, John (2010-11-11). *America's Nazi Secret: An Insider's History* (Kindle Locations 4129-4135). Independent Publishers Group. Kindle Edition.

[102] Loftus, Kindle Locations 163-165.

[103] Loftus, Kindle Locations 175-182.

[104] Loftus, Kindle Locations 188-193.

[105] Loftus, Kindle Locations 265-278.

[106] The infamous anti-Semitic fabricated pamphlet, *The Protocols of the Elders of Zion,* dramatically shaped public opinion in Germany between the two wars. It also impacted public thinking in America. It wasn't helped by the fact that American industrialist Henry Ford reinforced this anti-Semitism with his book, *The International Jew.* For a well-written treatment of this subject, see *License*

to Murder by Alex Grobman, Noble, OK: Balfour Books, 2011. We will discuss in Chapter 8 how the eugenics movement in America contributed to Congress' actions to limit Jewish immigration.

[107] Loftus, Kindle Locations 280-285.

[108] Loftus, Kindle Location 279.

[109] Loftus, Kindle Locations 257-263.

[110] Loftus, Kindle Locations 500-504.

[111] Loftus, Kindle Locations 510-512.

[112] Loftus, Kindle Locations 788-790.

[113] Farrell, Joseph P., *Nazi International, op. cit.*, Kindle Locations 1204-1213.

[114] Loftus, *op. cit.*, Kindle Locations 472-474.

[115] Loftus, Kindle Locations 377-382.

[116] Loftus comments: Roosevelt did not trust either his State Department or Justice Department, he entrusted the post-war probe of American financial collaboration with the Nazis to Henry Morgenthau, his Secretary of the Treasury. Morgenthau initiated *Operation Safehaven*, a program to trace Nazi flight-capital back to the western investors. After Roosevelt's death, Morgenthau was discredited for an anti-German bias at a time when America allegedly needed to rebuild Germany as a bulwark against Russian encroachment. Dulles took over Operation Safehaven, and used it as a cover for OPC's Nazi recruitment. Although Dulles destroyed the Safehaven index, a few of Morgenthau's original files escaped Dulles's shredder, and can be found in the wartime State Department Post Files. For example, in the Switzerland Post files I discovered the Operation Safehaven investigation of Dulles himself, where he was accused of laundering money for the Nazis. My historical novel, *The Witness Tree*, goes into this episode in some detail. The dialogue is fiction, but the story is fact. The Safehaven files were stolen by Eleanor Dulles and given to the Zionist intelligence service. *They then blackmailed Nelson Rockefeller into pressuring the Latin American nations to supply the extra votes in the UN to create the State of Israel."* [Emphasis mine]

Kindle Locations 890-899. America's support for Israel becoming a sovereign state appears to be less enthusiastic than most American's realize.

[117] Loftus, Kindle Locations 386-389.

[118] Levenda, Peter, Ratline: Soviet Spies, Nazi Priests, and the Disappearance of Adolph Hitler, Lake Worth, FL, Ibis Press, 2012, p. 17.

[119] Http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-1216455/Hitlers-skull-really-womans-Fresh-doubts-death-tests-bullet-hole.html#ixzz1rsLrg1Hb.

[120] *Ibid.*, p. 65.

[121] *Ibid.*, p. 69.

[122] Quoting from Edmund Paris' book, *The Secret History of the Jesuits*: "Mr. Joseph Rovan, Catholic writer, comments on the diplomatic agreement between the Vatican and the Nazi Reich on the 8th of July 1933: 'The Concordat brought to the national-socialist government, considered nearly everywhere to be made up of usurpers, if not brigands, the seal of an agreement with the oldest international power (the Vatican). In a way, it was the equivalent of a diploma of international honorability.'" (Page 13).

> And later, Paris quotes a Michael Schmaus, professor at the Faculty of Theology in Munich, who wrote: "'Empire and church is a series of writings which should help the building up of the third Reich as it unites a national-socialist State to Catholic-Christianity…The national-socialist movement is the most vigorous and massive protest against the spirit of the 19th and 20th centuries… The idea of a people of one blood is the focal point of its teachings and all Catholics who obey the instructions of the German bishops will have to admit that this is so… The laws of national-socialism and those of the Catholic Church have the same aim…'" (Page 15).

[123] See http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Reichskonkordat#cite_note-15.

[124] Levenda, *op. cit.*, *Ratlines*, pp. 70-71.

[125] *Ibid.*, p. 72

[126] Loftus, Kindle Locations 404-407.

[127] The name of Battenberg was changed in 1917 to Mountbatten and later altered to Mountbatten-Windsor, Elizabeth and Phillip known as the House of Windsor, while the Duke of York, Elizabeth's third child, uses the surname Mountbatten-Windsor. This was a ruse to cloak their German heritage.

Mountbatten is the family name originally adopted by a branch of the Battenberg family due to rising anti-German sentiment among the British public during World War I. On 14 July 1917, Prince Louis of Battenberg ("Prince Louis I") assumed the surname Mountbatten (having rejected an alternative translation, "Battenhill") for himself and his descendants, and was created Marquess of Milford Haven.[2] The name is an Anglicization of the German Battenberg, a small town in Hesse. The title of count of Battenberg, later prince of Battenberg, was granted to a morganatic branch of the House of Hesse-Darmstadt in the mid-19th century.

Prince Philip of Greece and Denmark, the consort of now-Queen Elizabeth II, adopted the surname of Mountbatten from his mother's family in 1947, although he is a member of the House of Schleswig-Holstein-Sonderburg-Glücksburg by patrilineal descent. (See http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mountbatten.) [128] Loftus, Kindle Locations 421-430.

[129] Rockler assigned Loftus to head the Belarus investigation in 1979 in the Office of Special Investigations (OSI).

[130] It is often pointed out that Kissinger bears a strong resemblance to the aggressive and enigmatic Dr. Strangelove in the movie by the same title (starring Peter Sellers as several characters in the movie). Strangelove proposes to the President to ‘use the bomb’ after actor George C. Scott, playing the head of the Joint Chiefs (General Buck Turgidson), has rationalized American civilian loses “as 50-60% tops.”

There were a number of startling coincidences from the film associated with the Kennedy assassination. According to a summary of the making of the film in the Wikipedia article on the movie *Dr. Strangelove*, we read these amazing details: A first test screening of the film was scheduled for November 22, 1963, the day of the John F. Kennedy assassination. The film was just weeks from its scheduled premiere, but because of the assassination the release was delayed until late January 1964, as it was felt that the public was in no mood for such a film any sooner.

> One line by Slim Pickens – "a fella could have a pretty good weekend in Dallas with all that stuff" – was dubbed to change "Dallas" to "Vegas," Dallas being the city where Kennedy was killed. The original reference to Dallas survives in some foreign language-dubbed versions of the film, including the French release.
>
> The assassination also serves as another possible reason why the pie-fight scene was cut. In the scene General Turgidson exclaims, "Gentlemen! Our gallant young president has been struck down in his prime!" after Muffley takes a pie in the face. Editor Anthony Harvey states that "[the scene] would have stayed, except that Columbia Pictures were horrified, and thought it would offend the president's family.” See http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Dr._Strangelove.

[131] Loftus, Kindle Locations 462-466.

[132] Loftus, Kindle Locations 531-533.

[133] Loftus, Kindle Locations 546-549.

[134] Loftus, Kindle Locations 810-814.

[135] Farrell, *Nazi International*, Kindle Locations 1307-1315.

[136] Loftus, *op. cit.*, Kindle Locations 667-678.

[137]NOTES

William Shakespeare, *Macbeth*, Act 1, Scene 3, lines 123–126. Scene is available online here: *www.shakespeare-navigators.com/macbeth/T13.html.*

[138] Pauwels and Bergier, *The Morning of the Magicians*, p. 300.

[139] It is interesting that many survivors of Auschwitz and the post-war workings of the so-called ‘angel of death’, Doctor Josef Mengele, recount that he frequently was known as *Dr. Green*.

Whether or not these two facts are connected cannot be fully substantiated, but it is somewhat likely. We pick up this possibility in the last chapter of this book.

[140] Jim Marrs, *The Rise of the Fourth Reich*, p. 181. Quoting Roeder, Kubillus, and Burwell, *Psychiatrists - The Men Behind Hitler*, Los Angeles, Freedom Publishing, 1995, p. 8.

[141] Ibid, p. 181.

[142] Quoted by Marrs in *The Rise of the Fourth Reich*, p. 180, from Nicholas Goodrick-Clarke, *The Occult Roots of Nazism: Secret Aryan Cults and Their Influence on Nazi Ideology*, New York, New York University Press, 1992, p. 218.

[143] Jim Marrs, *PSI Spies: The True Story of American's Psychic Warfare Program* (Franklin Lakes, NJ: New Page Books, 2007), p. 107.

[144] Dr. Jolyon West, *Comprehensive Textbook on Psychiatry*, Chapter: "Cults, quacks, and nonprofessional psychotherapies," H.I. Kaplan, et al, editors, Baltimore: Williams and Wilkins, 1980, pp. 3245-3258.

[145] Colin Ross, M.D., *The CIA Doctors: Human Rights Violations by American Psychiatrists*, Richardson, TX: Manitou Communications, 2006, p. 111.

[146] David Morehouse, a former U.S. Army officer we will discuss (PSI Spy on OPERATION SUN STREAK in the late 1980s and early 1990s), said the following in his book, *Psychic Warrior* (1995). "The government was funding paranormal research in half a dozen private, and as many state and federal research centers across the United States. They were pumping tens of millions of dollars into remote viewing and various related techniques" (p. 73).

[147] While the famed psychologist, C.G. Jung, offered compelling evidence for the "supra-conscious" and indeed the supernatural with his perspective of the *collective unconscious* - a reality that transcends the human brain - it is the military's cold and nonreligious development of psychic techniques that offers even stronger proof. The military doesn't care why it works; only that it works. The leaders are not unaware of the implications for cosmology and the realm of the spirit, but they consider such issues to be associated with religion and spirituality. As such, those matters are left for others to debate.

[148] From Carl Jung, *Memories, Dreams, Reflections*, as quoted by Daniel Pinchbeck, Breaking Open the Head: A Psychedelic Journey into the Heart of Contemporary Shamanism (New York, NY: Broadway Books, 2002), p. 7.

[149] "Clairvoyance," *Wikipedia*, last modified June 27, 2011, http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Clairvoyance.

[150] Marrs, *PSI Spies*, p. 43–44.

[151] *Ibid., p.* 43–44.

[152] *Ibid.*, p. 61.

[153] *Ibid.*, p. 63.

[154] *Ibid.*, p. 64.

[155] *Ibid.*, p. 65.

[156] *Ibid.*, p. 100.

[157] Colin A. Ross, M.D. *The C.I.A. Doctors: Human Rights Violations by American Psychiatrists,* Richardson, TX, Manitou Publications, 2006, p. 70.

[158] Mars, *PSI Spies*, op.cit., p. 97.

[159] SRI, formed in 1946, has been granted over 1,000 patents since its inception.

[160] Marrs, *PSI Spies, p.* 172.

[161] Jim Schnabel, "Tinker, Tailor, Soldier PSI," August, 27, 1995, http://www. independent .co.uk/arts-entertainment/tinker-tailor-soldier-psi-1598203.html. This was a play of course, on the book, *Tinker, Tailor, Soldier, Spy* by John le Carré, made into a movie in 2011 starring Gary Oldman.

[162] Marrs, *PSI Spies, p.*15.

[163] Those who expect the government to make some sort of statement regarding "Official Disclosure" on the reality of UFOs should see this experience as a likely example. If and when such a disclosure is made, it may be a series of messages released slowly over several years. Disclosure is more likely to be in a series of whimpers rather than a big bang.

[164] This may explain the incredible claims of one Ed Dames, a former military remote viewer in the 1990s who mixes his RV advocacy with the most outlandish speculations about extraterrestrials and life on Mars, now latent, but soon to be released upon the earth! His claims are so over-the-top that it causes the author to wonder if he is on the military's payroll to promote disinformation and proof believers in UFOs are whack jobs. As I've pointed out in two other cases already, this is standard intelligence policy and practice. A crazy cook covers for the real practitioners who wish to remain hidden and work without spotlights.

[165] And most of the stories can't be released because of security clearances and the fact PSI Spies would go to jail if they were careless about what they shared publicly.

[166] Marrs, *PSI Spies*, p. 118.

[167] *Ibid.*, p. 133.

[168] *Ibid.*, p. 155.

[169] This was also how Joe McMoneagle was identified.

[170] Marrs, *PSI Spies, op. cit.*, p. 29.

[171] Called *Coordinate Remote Viewing* (CRV), this is the dominant technique used by the team. It creates a "double-blind" method in an attempt to eliminate any interference from the impressions of the monitor or the consciousness of the remote viewer. The fact that latitude and longitude numbering is a human construct (and not a part of nature) makes its working all the more mysterious. Also note: The double blind methodology isn't to continue to test or prove the phenomenon; it is to keep the process free of contamination by the conscious minds of the monitor or the viewer. This signifies it is intuition freed from rational faculties which is in play. Of course, Christian analysts would posit that spiritual forces may be lending a hand.

[172] Marrs, *PSI Spies*, *op. cit.*, p. 168.

[173] *Ibid.*, p. 166.

[174] *Ibid.*, p. 207.

[175] *Ibid.*, pp. 119–120.

[176] Marrs, *PSI Spies*, p. 164.

[177] *Ibid.*, 165. Both China and the Soviet Union utilized PSI Spies too (so much for atheistic, materialistic Communism denying the reality of the supernatural). The practical reality of the world-as-it-really-is upsets the best and most articulate ideologies that seek, mostly unsuccessfully, to explain why the world works the way it does. Marxism is still endorsed by many despite the fact that it has been disproved on so many levels including the most foundational - i.e., that reality isn't purely material substance. Spiritual realities must be taken into account as well.

[178] *Ibid.*, p. 125.

[179] "The Charge of the Light Brigade (poem)," *Wikipedia* - See en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Charge_of_the_Light_Brigade_(poem).

[180] Lynn Picknett and Clive Prince, The Stargate Conspiracy: The Truth About Extraterrestrial Life and the Mysteries of Ancient Egypt (New York, NY: Berkley Publishing Group, 1999), p. 207–208.

[181] An interesting synchronicity (or a small world story): Dr. Puharich's nephew is a good friend who I've known for ten years who lived in the Seattle area until very recently. He was able to confirm a number of elements of his story, particularly his experience with Uri Geller, who my friend had met on one occasion with his *Uncle Hank*.

[182] *Ibid.*, p. 208.

[183] *Ibid.*, p. 208–209.

[184] *Ibid.*, p. 210.

[185] *Ibid.*, p. 212.

[186] DMT is known as “the spirit molecule” and is so-called in a book by Dr. Rick Strassman, a professor and researcher at New Mexico University.

[187] Picknett and Prince, *The Stargate Conspiracy*, p. 169.

[188] *Ibid.*, p. 166–167.

[189] *Ibid.*, p. 166–167.

[190] This is reputed to be a part of the *Popol Vuh* prophecies, discussed on *Ancient Aliens* Season Four, ‘The Doomsday Prophecies’, presented April, 2012 on the History Channel.

[191] *Ibid.*, p. 168.

[192] Martin had been a student of L. Ron Hubbard and the Scientology.

[193] This is my supposition regarding how ancient shamans knew about the various plants and their effects. The spirits provided the education. McKenna and Hancock assume these spirits dwelt in the plants themselves. But logically, the spirits had to communicate the message about the plants beforehand otherwise it would not have been clear whether a particular plant or fungus would help you or kill you. Of course, “spirits of the air” as the Bible describes them would rather be deceptive and ascribe themselves to the “plant world.” The belief we know as “animism” (god dwelling in nature) easily derives from the behaviors of early humans and the spirits surrounding them.

[194] *Rahotep* was a high official who lived at the end of the Third and the beginning of the Fourth Dynasty. According to his titular (title), he was the physical son of the king… He was also the “great priest of Heliopolis” and a “general,” as well as the “lord of Pe,” one of the holy cities in Ancient Egypt. (See http://www.ancient-egypt.org/ index.html).

[195] Picknett and Prince, *The Stargate Conspiracy*, p.186.

[196] The promoters had the brilliant idea of hiring the motorcycle gang, Hell’s Angels, to keep the peace. Their approach: shooting several attendees.

[197] Picknett and Prince, *The Stargate Conspiracy*, p. 172.

[198] *Ibid.*, p. 174.

[199] The English word *ennead* literally means nine and was translated from the Egyptian word *psit*, also meaning *nine*.

[200] I document Bailey’s (and Madame Blavatsky’s) theosophical beliefs in some detail in my book, *Decoding Doomsday.*

[201] Picknett and Prince, *The Stargate Conspiracy*, p. 219.

[202] *Ibid.*, p. 205.

[203] *Ibid.*, p. 216.

[204] *Ibid.*, p. 218. Einhorn later would be found guilty in *abstentia* for the 1977 murder of his Philadelphia girlfriend (in 1983). He was finally arrested in 1998 after a special law was passed by the PA legislature clearing the way for his extradition from France. What's also fascinating about Einhorn: He had a strong connection with Charlie Rose (the Congressman, not today's television newsman and celebrity), a member of the House Select Committee on Intelligence. Rose was a strong supporter of the Pentagon's remote viewing program. Picknett and Prince believe Einhorn was a key spokesperson for THE NINE and through his influence many came to know and believe in their mission (p. 231).

[205] *Ibid.*, p. 220.

[206] Colin Wilson stated in his 1978 book, *Mysteries* the mediums are likely quite honest, but the source of their messages isn't. "Wilson speculates that it is some kind of dramatization by the medium's subconscious mind using their innate psychic powers, or that some mischievous spirit entities - whom he calls 'the crooks and conmen of the spirit world' - have attached themselves to the medium." (Picknett and Prince, *The Stargate Conspiracy*, p. 253).

[207] Several of the probes sent by both American and the Soviet Union mysteriously blew up or disappeared altogether when reaching the 'red planet' causing a considerable degree of consternation and speculation. This is well documented in Hoagland's and Bara's book, *Dark Mission.*

[208] Pickett and Prince, *The Stargate Conspiracy*,p. 153.

[209] *Ibid.*, p. 153.

[210] *Ibid.*, p. 240.

[211] *Ibid.*,p. 154.

[212] *Ibid.*, p. 155.

[213] *Ibid.*, p. 156.

[214] *Ibid.*, p. 159.

[215] "James Hurtak," *Wikipedia*, last modified March 30, 2011, *e*n.wikipedia.org /wiki/ James_Hurtak.

[216] Hurtak apparently beat Robert Bauval to *The Orion Mystery* by twenty years; it's just that he did it psychically. Neither have much changed the opinion of most academic archeologists who doubt the correlation - probably a testimony to their rigidity and inability to consider anything but orthodoxy.

[217] Hurtak's psychic discovery was what Uri Geller referred to in his 1998 interview with Picknett and Prince.

[218] Picknett and Prince, *The Stargate Conspiracy*, p. 178. I am fascinated by the fact that fifty years earlier, Theosophy and the Nazis fervently believed in the mythology surrounding Atlantis and

staked much of their pseudo-science and philosophy upon it. As hinted earlier, their anti-Semitism emanated from a belief in this ancient myth articulated by M. Blavatsky and later by Alice Bailey.

[219] Puharich was also a patient of Pachita: “Dr. Puharich also received a treatment from Pachita for progressive hearing loss in both ears due to otosclerosis - excess spongy bone growth. Pachita apparently stuck the tip of her blade right into each of his eardrums for about forty seconds each - causing him extreme pain - but the wounds then immediately closed up, and there was minimal bleeding and no additional pain. Though this knife trauma should have caused him permanent hearing loss, by any conventional medical understanding, he was stunned by the healing results he then achieved… [Puharich testifies] “One month post-operative I had normal pure tone hearing in both ears.” Wilcock, op cit., pg. 29. Wilcock quotes from H. G. M. Hermans, *Memories of a Maverick*, www.uri-geller.com/ books/maverick/maver.htm.

[220] *Ibid.*, p. 234.

[221] Who changed his Jewish name to a German name to evoke “more power.”

[222] Picknett and Prince, *The Stargate Conspiracy*, p. 235.

[223] Hoagland’s book, *Dark Mission* (co-authored with Mike Bara), provides many startling assertions supporting this theory as we will examine in the next chapter.

[224] Picknett and Prince, *The Stargate Conspiracy*, p. 242.

[225] *Ibid.*, p. 206.

[226] *Ibid.*, p. 237.

[227] *Ibid.*, p. 242–243.

[228] *Ibid.*, p. 248.

[229] See http://orlingrabbe.com/Jpar2.htm for a detailed background on the early Jack Parsons and his team.

[230] Peter Levenda, *op. cit.*, p. 149.

[231] See http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Greek_fire#CITEREFHaldon2006.

[232] *Ibid.*, p. 160.

[233] The biblical reference: “[1]And there came one of the seven angels which had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying unto me, Come hither; I will shew unto thee the judgment of the great whore that sitteth upon many waters: [2]With whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication. [3]So he carried me away in the spirit into the wilderness: and I saw *a woman sit upon a scarlet coloured beast,* full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns” (Revelation 17:1-3). [Emphasis added]

[234] *Ibid.*, p. 152.

[235] Richard Hoagland and Mike Bara: *Dark Mission: The Secret History of NASA*, Feral House, Port Townsend, WA 2009, p. 305.

[236] *Ibid.*, p. 161. Quote is from Kenneth Grant, *Outside the Circles of Time*, London, Frederick Muller Ltd., 1980, p. 50.

[237] Redfern, Nick (2011-03-31). FINAL EVENTS and the Secret Government Group on Demonic UFOs and the Afterlife Anomalist Books. Kindle Edition, pp. 175-176.

[238] *Ibid.*, p. 151.

[239] *Ibid.*, p. 147.

[240] *Ibid.*, p. 147.

[241] One can't help but try to adapt the opening to *Star Wars* - "Once upon a time… in a galaxy *not quite* so far away… namely our own Solar System").

[242] "Kundalini is a psycho-spiritual energy, the energy of the consciousness, which is thought to reside within the sleeping body, and is aroused either through spiritual discipline or spontaneously *to bring new states of consciousness, including mystical illumination*. *Kundalini* is Sanskrit for *"snake" or "serpent power,"* so-called because it is believed to lie like a serpent in the root chakra at the base of the spine. In Tantra Yoga Kundalini is an aspect of Shakti, the *divine female energy* and consort of Shiva. The power of Kundalini is said to be enormous. Those having experienced it claim it to be indescribable. The phenomena associated with it varies from bizarre physical sensations and movements, pain, clairaudience, visions, brilliant lights, superlucidity, psychical powers, ecstasy, bliss, and transcendence of self. Kundalini has been described as liquid fire and liquid light. Indian yoga, with its emphasis on the transmutation of energy to higher consciousness, was the chief contributor to the cultivation of Kundalini and the preservation of its knowledge prior to present times. Kundalini was a rarity in the West before the 1970s until more attention became centered upon the consciousness. In 1932, for example, psychiatrist Carl G. Jung and others observed that the Kundalini experience was seldom seen in the West." [Emphasis added]
See www.themystica.com/mystica/articles/k/kundalini.html.) [243] The reader will recall that the most famous UFO 'encounter' was in Roswell, New Mexico, in 1947. Is this fact itself a message? The highly regarded late evangelical Author David Flynn thought as he discussed in his classic, *The Temple at the Center of Time* (Defender Books) [244] *Ibid.*, p. 14.

[245] Hoagland and Bara, *op. cit.*, p. 336.

[246] Hoagland says, "Or, even if it was an offering to Jesus (as publicly explained…), it was (in this unique context) an offering - by the first Freemason to set foot on another world - to a revered Masonic figure who himself must have taken part in rituals paying homage to the same ancient Egyptian stellar deities who 'eternally resided' above the Apollo landing sit in such precise locations.

Either way, this was hardly the ostensible reason given to the taxpaying American public for the $20 billion-dollar Apollo 11 Mission." (p. 293).

[247] *Ibid.*, p. 322.

[248] Wikipedia provides this comment which I find fascinating in light of Hoagland's enthusiasm for Cydonia: "While eventually disproved, Lowell's vision of the Martian canals as an artifact of *an ancient civilization making a desperate last effort to survive*, had an enormous influence on the development of Science Fiction - starting with H.G. Wells' enormously influential "The War of the Worlds" which made the logical further inference that creatures from a dying planet might seek to invade Earth" [Emphasis added]. See en.wikipedia.org /wiki/Percival_Lowell. This scenario concerning what happened on Mars, proposed almost 100 years ago, is essentially the same proposal that believers in 'one-time life on Mars' subscribe to today. Something happened causing the planet to lose water and life, if it continues on Mars, was forced underground.

[249] Picknett and Prince, *op. cit.*, p. 122.

[250] It is quite fascinating too that this Institute was founded by Arthur M. Young, the colleague of Andrija Puharich, and a member of the Puharich's Committee of Nine (including Gene Rodenberry and singer John Denver), who were hosts to séances with THE NINE. Merely another case of 'small world' or is it more than this?

[251] *Ibid.*, p. 123, quoting Hoagland's *The Monuments of Mars*, p. 160.

[252] *Ibid.*, p. 125.

[253] *Ibid.*, p. 128, quoting Hoagland from *The Monuments of Mars*, p. 373.

[254] *Ibid.*, p. 325, quoting Graham Hancock from *The Mars Mystery.*

[255] Picknett and Prince, *op. cit.*, pp. 134-135.

[256] I reached out to Farrell via email to confirm this fact (having not read all of his books), but Dr. Farrell has so far not gotten back to me.

[257] Nick Redfern, *The NASA Conspiracies*, Pompton Plains, New Jersey: New Page Books, 2011, p. 204.

[258] I don't touch here on the immense amount of data Hoagland covers concerning artificial structures on the surface of the moon and his belief that the Apollo astronauts were hypnotized to 'forget' what they saw when there. Specifically, he contends there are residual but highly fractured glass domes, were massive in scope and covering a number of the largest craters, creating a living space for intelligent creatures who created them. He includes numerous photos taken by the astronauts and minute interpretive details to prove his point. However, I simply don't see what he is seeking to expose - even though I've spent considerable time studying the photos included in the book. Perhaps I need to

have my reading glasses improved. Furthermore, somehow his interpretation of the data on this subject only serves to diminish his other assertions that I do find compelling.

[259] Quoted by Joseph P. Farrell, *The Brotherhood of the Bell*, p. 110, quoting Jan Van Helsing, *Secret Societies: Their Power and Influence in the Twentieth Century*, www.galactic-server-.net/rune/vril3.html, pp. 7-8.

[260] Hoagland and Bara, *op. cit.*, p. 316.

[261] **"**Operation Paperclip was the Office of Strategic Services (OSS) program used to recruit the scientists of Nazi Germany for employment by the United States in the aftermath of World War II (1939–45). It was conducted by the Joint Intelligence Objectives Agency (JIOA), and in the context of the burgeoning Soviet–American Cold War (1945–91); one purpose of Operation Paperclip was to deny German scientific knowledge and expertise to the USSR and the UK.

Although the JIOA's recruitment of German scientists began after the European Allied victory (8 May 1945), U.S. President Harry Truman did not formally order the execution of *Operation Paperclip* until August 1945. Truman's order expressly excluded anyone found "to have been a member of the Nazi Party, and more than a nominal participant in its activities, or an active supporter of Nazi militarism." *Said restrictions would have rendered ineligible most of the scientists the JIOA had identified for recruitment, among them rocket scientists Werner von Braun and Arthur Rudolph, and the physician Hubertus Strughold, each earlier classified as a "menace to the security of the Allied Forces"*. (Emphasis added) To circumvent President Truman's anti-Nazi order, and the Allied Potsdam and Yalta agreements, the JIOA worked independently to create false employment and political biographies for the scientists. The JIOA also expunged from the public record the scientists' Nazi Party memberships and régime affiliations. Once "bleached" of their Nazism, the U.S. Government granted the scientists security clearance to work in the United States. *Paperclip*, the project's operational name, derived from the paperclips used to attach the scientists' new political personae to their "US Government Scientist" JIOA personnel files." See en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Operation_Paperclip.

[262] It is perhaps not coincidental that these German scientists were in New Mexico at the time of the Roswell crash in 1947. The meaning of their presence is ripe for speculation. However, I will let others enjoy the honor.

[263] *Ibid.*, p. 310.

[264] *Ibid.*, p. 310.

[265] *Ibid.*, p. 324.

[266] *Ibid.*, p. 318. Again, the Norse myths were alternative and not directly derived from the Egyptian myths.

[267] Hoagland and Bara, *op. cit.*, p. 318.

[268] *Ibid.*, p. 318.

[269] *Ibid.*, p. 318.

[270] Which incidentally, the pictures taken from the moon of the bright shining orb we know as Earth put to bed forever this medieval ‘perspective’, just in case the reader hasn’t drawn this conclusion already.

[271] Farrell, The Brotherhood of the Bell, p. 120.

[272] *Ibid.*, p. 120.

[273] *Ibid.*, p. 123, referencing research supplied from Mary Bennett and David S. Percy, *Dark Moon*: *Apollo and the Whistleblowers*, Kempton, Illinois, Adventures Unlimited Press, 1999.

[274] An allusion to the old Perry Como song, *Fly Me to the Moon* (and “let me play among the stars, let me see what spring is like on Jupiter and Mars”).

[275] *Ibid.*, p. 57, quoting Kenn Thomas, *NASA, Nazis, and JFK: The Torbitt Document and the JFK Assassination*, Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 1996), p. 6.

[276] "According to CIA files, Crisman [sic, Crismon] too was a member of the OSS during World War II, serving as a liaison officer with the British Royal Air Force. At the end of the war, Crisman, supposedly discharged from the military, entered a special OSS Internal Security School and was quietly transferred to the newly formed CIA (*the CIA was chartered in 1947*), where he operated as an "extended agent", primarily as an internal security specialist in "disruption" activities. The files show Crisman was involved in a highly classified subsection of Internal Security known as 1Sece, Easy Section, a disruption planning unit whose very existence was denied by the CIA. The CIA documents detailed Crisman's activities over the years - including secret reports to the agency on military officers during the Korean War and company officials while working for Boeing in Seattle - but no mention of the Maury Island affair.” From Jim Marr’s *Alien Agenda*, cited from the web site: www.seanet.com/~johnco/maury.htm [277] *Ibid.*, p. 60.

[278] *Ibid.*, pp. 58-59, quoting *The Torbitt Document*, pp. 24-27.

[279] Regarding Dornberger, the *Torbitt Document* comments: “The Nazi scientists [were] on management level also in the munitions and aerospace industry. Walter Dornberger, the Nazi general, left the space agency in the 1950’s (sic) to become a high official in Bell Aerospace Corporation and he was followed by over thirty of the Nazi scientists to [the] control level in the corporations manufacturing munitions and aerospace material.” (*The Torbitt Document*, p. 85, cited from *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, Farrell, p. 65).

[280] The reader will recall that the phrase *Executive action* is a euphemism for assassination by intelligence agencies.

[281] He also founded "Institute for the Study of Consciousness" at Berkeley. Additionally, it is noteworthy to cite his marriage connections: Young married Priscilla Page in 1933. He was divorced from Priscilla in 1948, and later that year, married artist Ruth Forbes (1903–1998) of the Boston Forbes family, a great-granddaughter of Ralph Waldo Emerson and the mother of Michael Paine. Marina Oswald lived with their daughter Ruth Paine when Oswald supposedly shot Kennedy.

[282] Levenda, *op. cit.*, p. 273.

[283] The details of Kennedy's plan with Khrushchev to 'scale back the rhetoric' and bring a truce to the U.S.-Soviet relationship is well researched and set forth compelling in this book, *JFK and the Unspeakable: Why He Died & Why It Matters*, by James W. Douglass, New York: Orbis Books, 2008, Kindle Location, 222.

[284] Marrs, The Rise of the Fourth Reich, p. 228.

[285] Richard Hoagland and David Wilcock, *The New Frontier of Hope*, 2008, see http://www.enterprisemission.com/newfrontier.htm.

[286] *Ibid.*

[287] Except taken from the *Public Papers of the Presidents, Dwight D. Eisenhower, 1960*, p. 1035-1040.

[288] Marrs, *Ibid.*, p. 245.

[289] "The Trilateralists Road to Power", American Institute for Economic Research (www.cooperativeindividualism.org/aier_on_conspiracy_06.html).

[290] The Logan Act is a United States federal law (18 U.S.C.A. § 953 [1948]) forbidding unauthorized citizens from negotiating with foreign governments against the interests of the U.S. It was passed in 1799 and amended in 1994.

[291] *Ibid.*

[292] Marrs, *op. cit.*, p. 251.

[293] Levenda, *op. cit.*, pp. 312-313.

[294] "The phrase Plame Affair (also known as the CIA leak scandal, the CIA leak case, the CIA leak grand jury investigation, and 'Plamegate') refers to the identification of Valerie Plame Wilson as a covert Central Intelligence Agency officer. Mrs. Wilson's relationship with the CIA was formerly classified information. The disclosure was made in a newspaper column entitled "Mission to Niger" written by Robert Novak, and published on July 14, 2003. Mrs. Wilson's husband, former Ambassador Joseph C. Wilson, has stated his opinion in various interviews and subsequent writings (as listed in his 2004 memoir *The Politics of Truth*) that members of former President George W. Bush's administration revealed Mrs. Wilson's covert status as retribution for his op-ed entitled "What I Didn't Find in Africa," published in *The New York Times* on July 6, 2003."

[295] When the British government released its UFO files, the main message was there was no longer really any point in continuing to research the question. This was not because the UFOs couldn't be verified. It was because it was the judgment of the government that they simply didn't pose a security threat.

[296] Redfern, *op. cit.*, p. 42.

[297] B.F. Skinner took the next step to 'operant conditioning' in which 'voluntary' behaviors are shaped by consequences - actions are taken by the subject without a specific stimulus.

[298] Dominic Streatfeild, *Brainwash: The Secret History of Mind Control*, New York: Picador, 2007, p. 35.

[299] This rank was equivalent to a full colonel.

[300] *Ibid.*, p. 37.

[301] *Ibid.*, p. 38.

[302] *Ibid.*, p. 16.

[303] *Ibid.*, p. 19.

[304] *Ibid.*, p. 23.

[305] *Ibid.*, p. 23.

[306] *Ibid.*, p. 25.

[307] *Ibid.*, p. 25.

[308] *Ibid.*, p. 27.

[309] John Marks, The Search for the "Manchurian Candidate": The CIA and Mind Control - The Secret History of the Behavioral Sciences, New York: W.W. Norton & Company, 1979 and reissue in 1991, p. xvii.

[310] *Ibid.*, p. 10.

[311] *Ibid.*, p. 77.

[312] *Ibid.*, p. 77.

[313] "As any history book will tell you, the Haight's popularity grew as the Beat Generation in San Francisco was dying out. Many of the Beats, such as Allen Ginsberg, crossed over, but a younger generation gravitated to the Haight-Ashbury district, where the rents were cheap. Many were students at nearby University of San Francisco, UCSF, and S.F. State University. Others were musicians (such as the Grateful Dead), philosophers, artists (such as Alton Kelley), poets (such as Allen Cohen), apartment-dwellers, panhandlers, and even future CEOs of companies such as Pepsi, the Gap, Smith-Hawken, Lotus, and Rolling Stone magazine.

"The Summer of Love [1967] was the peak of the Haight-Ashbury experience," wrote founding editor Allen Cohen in his essay on the Summer of Love. "Over 100,000 youth came to the Haight. Hoards of reporters, movie makers, FBI agents, undercover police, drug addicts, provocateurs, Mafioso and about 100,000 more tourists to watch them all followed in their wake."

The efforts of the pioneers in the Haight-Ashbury to create an enlightened community took about two years, from 1964-66, to reach the flashpoint, and during those years the music reached an artistic high point. By the end, two years before Woodstock and Altamont, overcrowding and the negative reaction of police and the San Francisco city government combined to make life in the Haight miserable for everyone." Quoted from the web site, http://www.rockument.com /Haight/Haight-Ashbury.html.

[314] *Ibid.*, p. 76.

[315] Bruce Falconer, "Join the Army. Become an Unpaid Lab Rat" Conspiracy Planet. See www.conspiracyplanet.com/channel.cfm?ChannelID=87. May 23, 2009.

[316] Streatfeild, *op. cit.*, p. 86.

[317] *Ibid.*, p. 86.

[318] *Ibid.*, p. 87.

[319] *Ibid.* p. 87.

[320] *Ibid.*, pp. 94-95.

[321] John Marks, The Search for the "Manchurian Candidate, p. viii.

[322] *Ibid.* p. viii.

[323] I once sat by Hersh on an airplane trip from New York to California. He was a rather grumpy old guy, but he stands as one of America's true patriots and genuine investigative journalists, in the same league with Mike Wallace.

[324] From Walter Lippmann, *Public Opinion*, 1922, cited in the Vision Report, May 2012, p. 5.

[325] Alex Constantine, *Virtual Government*, *op. cit.*, p. 38.

[326] Constantine, *op. cit.*, p. 37.

[327] Walt Disney, Vivendi, Sony, AOL/Time Warner, and Viacom.

[328] Essentially, this was the point of the 2005 movie about Edward R. Murrow, *Good Night and Good Luck*, Murrow was the much acclaimed reporter and commentator dominating the 1950s after becoming the voice of authoritative information for Americans during World War II. Murrow successfully took on Joseph McCartney, the "junior senator of Wisconsin", and his communist scare tactics incriminating the entertainment industry during that period. McCarthy might have had a proper battle to wage: the increased 'liberalization' of American social institutions. Unfortunately, he lied

about many facts in building his case. His rancor destroyed careers. But since he was the 'bearer of false witness' he ultimately diminished the concerns of conservatives and subsequently made conservative views in the 1960s unpopular. The election of Kennedy and Johnson was partly due to the strong sentiment against 'anti-communist tactics of hate' and no doubt tainted Richard Nixon and Barry Goldwater and their 'extreme' right-wing positions, whether justly or not.

[329] Constantine, *op. cit.*, pp. 36-37.

[330] *Ibid.*, p. 40.

[331] *Ibid.*, p. 42.

[332]See http://washingtonindependent.com/52637/holt-calls-for-next-church-committee-on-cia. Cheney, already seen by many as America's Darth Vader, plays his part yet again by making this comment.

[333] Constantine, *op. cit.*, p. 57.

[334] Colin A. Ross, M.D., *The C.I.A. Doctors*, *op. cit.*, p. 113.

[335] Deborah Haddock, *The Dissociative Identity Disorder Sourcebook* McGraw-Hill (2001) Kindle Edition. (Kindle Locations 242-246).

[336] Constantine, *op. cit.*, p. 130.

[337] Constantine, *op. cit.*, p. 132, citing Dr. Jolyon West, "Pseudo-Identity and the Treatment of Personality Change in Victims of Captivity and Cults," In *Dissociation: Clinical and Theoretical Perspectives*, Lynn, SJ and Rhue JW, eds. (Guilford Press, 1994).

[338] Another fascinating tidbit about Dr. "Jolly" West is the fact that he links the remote viewing conducted at Stanford (SRI, specifically) and the Patty Hearst case. According to Colin Ross, "There was a connection between the Patty Hearst kidnapping, the Stanford Research Institute, Dr. West, MKULTRA and STARGATE. Remote viewers at [SRI] were asked by the Berkeley police to track Patty Hearst after her abduction by the Symbionese Liberation Army [shades of the television show, *Medium*]. Remote viewer Pat Price picked a photograph of one of the SLA abductors out of several volumes of photographs shown to him by Berkley police, and identified the man as Lobo. This later proved to be SLA member William Wolfe, who was known as Willie the Wolf, or Cujo. Dr. West was a member of the medical oversight board for remote viewing research at Science Applications International Corp. into the 1990s, and therefore must have been aware of STARGATE. He must have known about the use of Stanford Research Institute remote viewers in the Patty Hearst case." Colin Ross, M.D., *op. cit.*, pp. 198-199

[339] Constantine, *op. cit.*, pp. 150-151.

[340] *Ibid.*, p. 151.

[341] *Ibid.*, p. 150.

[342] *Ibid.*, p. 151.

[343] *Ibid.*, p. 151.

[344] *Ibid.*, p. 155

[345] See http://ritualabuse.us/ritualabuse/articles/denying-ritual-abuse-of-children-catherine-gould/.

[346] The Greenbaum Speech, D. Corydon Hammon, retrieved from the Internet site, http://www.gnosticliberationfront.com/ mind_control_ ritual_abuse.htm#the%20greenbaum%20speech

[347] According to a recap in Wikipedia: “The PAS was developed primarily during the 1950s and 1960s with continued refinement since then. Due to the uniqueness of the developer, John W. Gittinger, and the nature of John Gittinger's career, the literature is somewhat unusual in two ways. First, while there are many journal articles published about the PAS and research using the PAS, only a small number are authored or co-authored by John Gittinger. Second, much research has been conducted which has not been published. Krauskopf and Suanders' book has the most thorough discussion of the theory of the PAS, how it relates to other theories in psychology, and of research concerning the PAS. This book has a very extensive bibliography of both research on the PAS itself and works using the PAS. Gittinger's major work, a 1964 work called the PAS Atlas contains the most complete description of the wide range of possible personality profiles. The PAS Atlas was never formally published by Gittinger. A revised version, which improved readability and usability, was published in 1992. Gittinger did publish two shorter descriptions of the PAS in academic journals with coauthor J. F. Winne in 1973.” See en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Personality_Assessment_System [348] John Marks, *op. cit.*, p. 203.

[349] Gittinger discovered that introverted persons tend to have more structured psychological mechanisms to protect themselves from corruption. These were the ‘I’s’. The ‘E’s’ were extroverts who were more prone to drink to excess and willing to become involved in affairs for which they could be blackmailed. As we will learn when we consider the testimony of Carol Rutz in Chapter 9, her grandfather was specifically targeted by Gittinger’s test. After he was compromised participating in pedophilia and pornography, the CIA agreed to keep quiet about his perverted promiscuity if he would sell his granddaughter to the CIA for experiments. Baby Carol, about 4 years old, became Sid Gottlieb’s prime test subject. We will recap her story in the pages ahead. In this chapter, my intention is to lay down the principles and the fact this has become a much more thoroughly acknowledged and somewhat better understood reality as dozens, if not hundreds of victims have come out to tell their story.

[350] John Marks, *op. cit.*, pp. 210-211.

[351] *Ibid.*, p. 211.

[352] *Ibid.*, p. 219.

[353] *Ibid.*, p. 226.

[354] Black, Edwin (2009-02-16). *Nazi Nexus: America's Corporate Connections to Hitler's Holocaust* (p. 20). NBN_Mobi_Kindle. Kindle Edition.

[355] Kuhl, Stefan, *The Nazi Connection: Eugenics, American Racism, and German National Socialism*, Oxford, U.K.: Oxford University Press. Kindle Edition, 2002, p. 36.

[356] *Ibid.*, p. 20.

[357] *Ibid.*, p. 21.

[358] *Ibid.*, p. 21.

[359] Ibid, p. 22.

[360] *Ibid.*, p. 22.

[361] *Ibid.*, pp. 22-23.

[362] *Ibid.*, p. 23.

[363] *Ibid.*, p. 23.

[364] *Ibid.*, p. 24.

[365] *Ibid.*, p. 24.

[366] *Ibid.*, p. 25.

[367] *Ibid.*, p. 25.

[368] The Harrimans, the Bordens, and the Roosevelts, were a tightly knit social cliché, representing the upper echelon of America’s wealthiest families.

[369] *Ibid.*, p. 26.

[370] *Ibid.*, p. 42.

[371] *Ibid.*, p. 28.

[372] *Ibid.*, p. 28.

[373] *Ibid.*, p. 29.

[374] *Ibid.*, p. 29.

[375] As Kuhl notes at the outset of his book, while American historians have effectively erased much of the history of American participation in the ideological foundation of racism and the holocaust, one can access the German records (they have not been purged or rewritten) which clearly identify American enthusiastic support for Hitler.

[376] *Ibid.*, p. 31.

[377] *Ibid.*, p. 33.

[378] *Ibid.*, p. 34.

[379] *Ibid.*, p. 34-35.

[380] *Ibid.*, p. 39.

[381] *Ibid.*, p. 45.

[382] *Ibid.*, p. 46.

[383] *Ibid.*, p. 48.

[384] Those that stood trial that is. Thousands of others were never put into jeopardy ‘in the docks’.

[385] Black, Edwin, *War against the Weak: Eugenics and America's Campaign to Create a Master Race* Kindle Edition, NBN_Mobi_Kindle, (2003), (Kindle Locations 8449-8454).

[386] Kuhl, Stefan, *The Nazi Connection: Eugenics, American Racism, and German National Socialism*, Oxford, U.K.: Oxford University Press. Kindle Edition, 2002, pp. 50-51.

[387] *Ibid.*, pp. 5-6.

[388] From their website, the Pioneer Fund summary ‘About Us’ says: “The Pioneer Fund, Inc. is a New York 501(c) (3) not-for-profit foundation established in 1937 to advance the scientific study of heredity and human differences. Named to honor the early pioneers who built America, our mandate is to support pioneering research in those fields. We solicit contributions, which we use to fund vital research projects into the basis and correlates of human ability and diversity, and for the dissemination of that research to the public.

> In the period from the end of World War II until the Decade of the Brain and the Human Genome Project, the social and behavioral sciences were dominated by Blank Slate worldviews such as behaviorism. Even in that period, the Pioneer Fund helped keep alive the naturalist perspective by supporting vital research in: * Behavioral Genetics
>
> * Intelligence
> * Social Demography
> * Group Differences – Sex, Social Class, and Race.
>
> Through our grants program, The Pioneer Fund has changed the face of the social and behavioral sciences by restoring the Darwinian-Galtonian perspective to the mainstream in traditional fields such as anthropology, psychology, and sociology, as well as fostering the newer disciplines of behavioral genetics, neuroscience, evolutionary psychology, and sociobiology. The Pioneer Fund’s biosocial approach recognizes no fixed boundaries between disciplines, only different questions to be asked and answered. The research we support looks at our evolutionary past (human origins), our present (individual and group differences), and our future (the impact of technology and globalization on human ecology and demography).”
>
> Talk about putting lipstick on the pig!

[389] *Ibid.*, p. 4.

[390] *Ibid.*, p. 9.

[391] *Ibid.*, p. 9-10.

[392] Marrs, Jim, *The Rise of the Fourth Reich*, *op. cit.*, pp. 284-285, city Vankin and Whalen, from *Crimes, Conspiracies, and Cover-ups*, recently republished and updated in 2010.

[393] *Ibid.*, p. 12.

[394] The bodies of these monks were found in the ruins of Berlin immediately after the Allies took charge of the city.

[395] Black, Edwin, *War Against the Weak*, Kindle Locations 7029-7030.

[396] Black, Edwin, *op. cit.*, Kindle Locations 7046-7051.

[397] Black, Edwin, *op. cit.*, Kindle Locations 7119-7121.

[398] Black, Edwin, *op. cit.*, Kindle Locations 7141-7145.

[399] Black, Edwin, *op. cit.*, Kindle Locations 7371-7375.

[400] His testimony is crucial to understanding what really happened at Auschwitz and is recited, autobiographically, in the 1949 book, *Auschwitz*.

[401] Black, Edwin, *op. cit.*, Kindle Locations 7488-7493.

[402] Black, Edwin, *op. cit.*, Kindle Locations 7641-7642.

[403] Rutz, Carol, A Nation Betrayed: Secret Cold War Experiments Performed on our Children and Other Innocent People [Annotated], Kindle Locations 1900-1903, Fidelity Publishing LLC., 2001. Kindle Edition.

[404] A cyanide pesticide, used to kill in the Nazi death camps, Black, Edwin, *op. cit.*, Kindle Locations 7722-7731.

[405] Black, Edwin, *op. cit.*, Kindle Locations 7770-7773.

[406] Black, Edwin, *op. cit.*, Kindle Locations 7801-7804.

[407] Office of Special Investigations, Department of Justice, On the Matter of Josef Mengele: A Report to the Attorney General of the United States, 1992, pp. 133-137.

[408] The environmental circumstances amounted to assassinating the fathers of the 12-year-old clones, to force them into the same struggle as young Adolf experienced growing up as with a domineering mother and no father.

[409] Is it safe for Olivier’s character to come out of hiding?

[410] Rutz, Carol, A Nation Betrayed: Secret Cold War Experiments Performed on our Children and Other Innocent People, Fidelity Publishing LLC. Kindle Edition. 2001, Kindle Locations 863-870.

[411] *Ibid.*, Kindle Locations 473-477.

[412] *Ibid.*, Kindle Locations 863-870.

[413] Rutz specifies this collection of CIA bigwigs more precisely later in the book when explaining who Crazy Eddie is. “This same year (1949) Carmel Offie was working in Washington emigrating former Nazis into the U.S. through the CIA-funded OPC (Office of Policy Coordination) in the State Department. I have identified Offie from a photo, as the man I knew as Crazy Eddie. You may remember Crazy Eddie handed me over in 1952 to Allen Dulles, Sid Gottlieb and Josef Mengele.” Kindle Locations 1539-1541.

[414] *Ibid.*, Kindle location 577-584.

[415] *Ibid.*, Kindle Locations 594-595.

[416] “Commands were then used to call forth my alter ‘Guy,’ who had been created when I was four years old. I was placed before a blackboard, where they taught me how to run energy thru the meridians of the body and back to the brain to kill a target with a brain aneurysm. In order to do this, I was taught to contain all the anger and hate I had accumulated during traumas, and to release the ‘Red Fire’ when cued.” Cited from Rutz, Kindle Locations 1116-1119).

[417] *Ibid.*, Kindle Locations 884-890. Citation: *Nexus Magazine*, Volume 4, #4 (June-July 1997). PO Box 30, Mapleton Old 4560 Australia. See Volume 4, #3 (April-May 1997) for the first half of the interview. Another citation of interest I provide here, which describes the “Jasons”: Another secret group was made up of scientists called the “Golden Fleece.” The Pentagon-funded Institute picked these men and women in the late 1950s for defense analysis. Their jobs were to do some of the most esoteric and complex defense research. The whole success of this enterprise depended upon establishing it as a mark of highest prestige to be invited into this elite group. The Pentagon immediately received the benefit of the talents of these “Jason’s” upon ARPA’s birth in 1958. ARPA officials said that some 20 “Jason’s,” an elite, informal, almost secret group was still at its disposal in 1976. Over the years, the “Jason’s” have been holding quiet brainstorming sessions at hideaways around the country to feed ARPA ideas.” Supposedly these scientists represented the cream of the scholarly community in technical fields, and helped the government produce many of its most advanced technical weapons systems since the end of the Second World War. (Kindle locations 922-931).

[418] *Ibid.*, Kindle Locations 938-943.

[419] The reader may recall that it was Cameron who Dulles had evaluate Rudolph Hess in Nuremberg to determine if he was in fact the real Rudolph Hess, or a ‘double’ provided by Churchill after it was speculated he had been killed in the Royal’s plot to overthrow Churchill.

[420] See the web site for Pastor Douglas Riggs, *www.dougriggs.org.*

[421] *Ibid.*, Kindle Locations 1459-1466.

[422] *Ibid.*, Kindle Locations 1487-1496.

[423] *Ibid.*, Kindle Locations 1585-1589.

[424] Simpson, Christopher, Blowback: The First Full Account of America's Recruitment of Nazis, and its Disastrous Effect on Our Domestic and Foreign Policy., New York: Macmillan Publishing, 1988, p. 251.

[425] *Ibid.*, p. 253.

[426] *Ibid.*, p. 257.

[427] Posner, Gerald and Ware, John, *Mengele: The Complete Story,* New York, Cooper Square Press, 2000 (first published in 1986), pp. xxv-xxvi.

[428] Marrs, *The Rise of the Fourth Reich*, p. 285, citing Steven Pinker, *The Blank Slate,* 2002.

[429] That is, Connie indicates she is the daughter of a Battenberg with Queen Elizabeth being the mother. Incest is regarded by those who believe the Royal conspiracy as a common characteristic of the 'kings of the earth' who are embroiled in the 'Illuminist' cult.

[430] Her father was the head of the Jewish Sanhedrin, not the currently named Sanhedrin, but an 'occultic' version that was formed apparently at the time of Israel's rebirth in 1948 - if not before. The survivors aren't sure of the details on this fact. Sally indicates that her father was ritually sacrificed shortly thereafter. Ritual sacrifices are like 'power ups' in video games - they increase the occultic power of those conducting the rituals. Furthermore, occultic power grows from generation to generation. This is the presumption behind the 'generational abuse' and the bloodlines.

[431] This is also alleged by Russ Dizdar in his book, *The Black Awakening*.

[432] Temple prostitutes were not provided by the religious cult, such as the cult of Diana in Ephesus, simply to pleasure their clients, but to create a union of spirits with the human men who came to them. Sex became an instrument of spiritual communion. The Hebrew (and Christian) God created sex for human beings as a mode of spiritual union between man and wife. The Bible asserts that the spiritual nature of sex is no small part of sexual relations.

[433] Price Phillip is frequently mentioned as a principal in the Royalist conspiracy. Riggs believes he is the ringleader and offers some particular details to reinforce this belief. Listeners to the recordings will note this.

[434] In discussions with Doug Riggs, it appears that these Kings may be composed into a collection of ten and have been so configured for decades if not for centuries, awaiting the time when the final 'Ten Kings' will reign with their Antichrist. At the very least, it is a most intriguing interpretation.

[435] The nature of Dan's programming in part was 'extend himself for others' seeking to protect them, and if need be, die for them.

[436] Given the supernatural aspects of the gathering at the ritual, it was likely that the participants had all traveled there in some manner of paranormal space-time travel energized by the evil rituals then underway, and Mengele's body may have been returned to Brazil in the same fashion. Given the probability that supernatural causes and effects may have been in play, ultimately there is little logic in fully weighing the physical evidence although I acknowledge the contradiction. All the witnesses speak of being instantly transported to this event except Dan who was in Indiana at the time. The experience of the Apostle Philip, transported instantly 'in the spirit' after speaking to the 'Ethiopian Eunuch', is a biblical example of such spiritual 'transport' that may be mirrored in this occurrence. See also Revelation 17:3 where John was 'carried away in the Spirit'.

[437] As Riggs likes to say, suggesting such a template begets repeatability.

[438] While we discussed the successor to Mengele, supposedly a doctor living in Arkansas, his power falls far short of Mengele. They refer to him as Dr. GEO. Going forward, he appears to be of little consequence, despite winning a clandestine competition to 'fill Mengele's evil shoes'.

[439] Marrs, Jim, *The Rise of the Fourth Reich*, *op. cit.*, p. 323.

[440] According to Jim Marrs, "Following the attacks of September 11, 2001, Falwell, on Pat Robertson's *700 Club* TV show, said pagans, abortionists, feminists, gays, lesbians, the ACLU, and everyone else trying to secularize America "helped this happen." Marrs, *The Rise of the Fourth Reich*, pp. 293-4. However well-intentioned Falwell's explanation for connecting God's judgment on America with Bin Laden's terrorist team, the statement convicts the innocent and excuses the perpetrators. It is true that what evil seeks to achieve, God in fact redeems and uses for His purposes. God did use Al-Qaida for judgment. But how the prophet of God presents this message must be done with sensitivity to the victims and with condemnation to those responsible.

[441]Garrison, Jim, *America as Empire: Global Leader or Rogue Power?* San Francisco, Berrett-Koehler Publishers, Inc., 2004, p. ix.

[442] *Ibid.*, p. 159.

[443] Lutzer, Hitler's Cross, *op. cit.*, p. 130.

[444] Lutzer also states "Here in America the phrase 'separation of church and state' is given a sinister twist by civil libertarians. To them, it means that religious people should not be allowed to practice their religion in the realm that belongs to the state. Religion, we are told, should be practiced privately; the state must be 'cleansed' from every vestige of religious influence. By insisting that the state be 'free for all religions,' organizations such as the ACLU in effect make it free for none." Lutzer, *op. cit.*, p. 19.

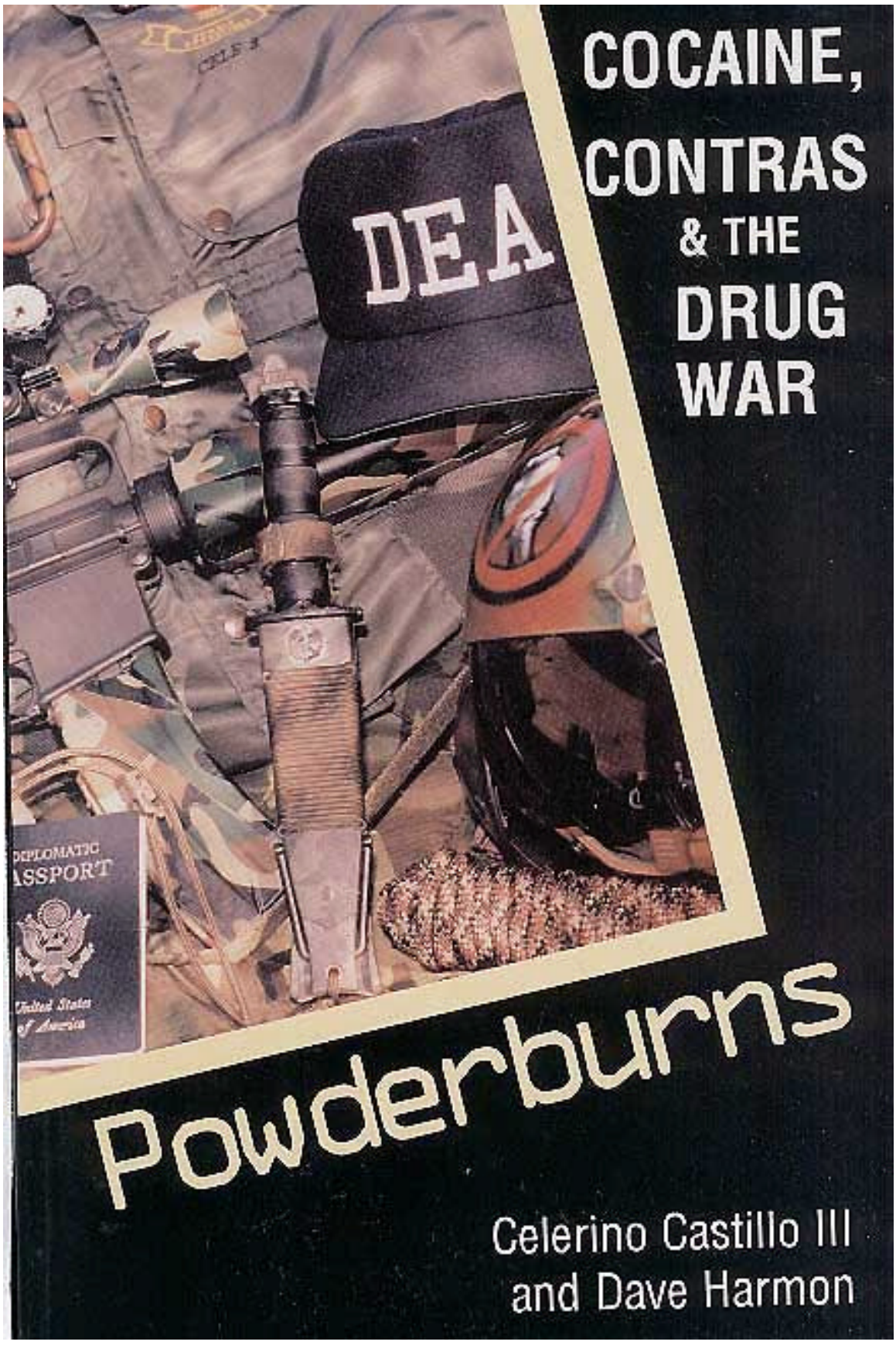
[445] Cahn, Jonathan, The Harbinger: The Ancient Mystery that Holds the Secret of America's Future, Lake Mary, FL., Charisma Books, 2011, p. 30.

[446] Heron, Patrick, *The Return of the Antichrist and the New World Order,* Ambassador International. 2011, Kindle Locations 1737-1743.

[447] *Ibid.*, Kindle Locations 1683-1698.

[448] Hutchings, Dr. Noah, *The U.S. in Prophecy*, Oklahoma City, Hearthstone Publishing, 2000, pp. 105-6.

[449] *Ibid.*, pp. 106-7.



COCAINE, CONTRAS & THE DRUG WAR

Powderburns

Celerino Castillo III
and Dave Harmon

POWDERBURNS

Cocaine, Contras & the Drug War

by
Celerino Castillo III and Dave Harmon

Sundial
an imprint of
Mosaic Press
Oakville - Buffalo - London

Dedication

To Crystal Bianca, C4,
and Danny
Celerino Castillo III

To my parents, Philip and Barbara Harmon,
for making this book possible,
and to my brother, Chris,
for his unknowing inspiration.
Dave Harmon

Canadian Cataloguing in Publication Data

Castillo, Celerino, 1949
Powderburns

Includes bibliographical references.
ISBN 0-88962-578-6

1. Castillo, Celerino, 1949- . 2. Drug traffic- Central America. 3. Drug traffic - United States. 4. Cocaine industry - Central America. 5. Political corruption - United States. 6. Iran-Contra Affair, 1985-1990. 7. United States. Drug enforcement Administration. 8. narcotic enforcement agents - United States. I. Harmon, Dave, 1961- .II..Title.

HV5840.C45C37 1994 363.4'5'09728 C94-931968-6

No part of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form, by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying and recording information storage and retrieval systems, without permission in writing from the publisher, except by a reviewer who may quote brief passages in a review.

Published by MOSAIC PRESS, P.O. Box 1032, Oakville, Ontario, L6J 5E9, Canada. Offices and warehouse at 1252 Speers Road, Units #1&2, Oakville, Ontario, L6L 5N9, Canada and Mosaic Press, 85 River Rock Drive, Suite 202, Buffalo, N.Y., 14207, USA.

Mosaic Press acknowledges the assistance of the Canada Council, the Ontario Arts Council, the Ontario Ministry of Culture, Tourism and Recreation and the Dept. of Communications, Government of Canada, for their support of our publishing programme.

Sundial an Imprint of Mosaic Press

Copyright © Celerino CastilloIII and Dave Harmon , 1994
Maps courtesy of Eddie Mirza
Cover and book design by Susan Parker
Printed and bound in Canada
ISBN 0-88962-578-6 PB

In Canada:
MOSAIC PRESS, 1252 Speers Road, Units #1&2, Oakville, Ontario, L6L 5N9, Canada. P.O. Box 1032, Oakville, Ontario, L6J 5E9
In the United States:
Mosaic Press, 85 River Rock Drive, Suite 202, Buffalo, N.Y., 14207

Acknowledgments

The authors would like to thank the following people:

Celerino Castillo III:

My parents, Celerino and Angie Castillo, for teaching me what life is all about; my sisters, Diana, Melinda, and San Juanita for being there when I needed them; Brian Casey for pointing me to the right person; Chris Doyle for first discovering my story; Chief Raul Garza for teaching me what it takes to be the best; Juan Perez for guiding me against the Gestapo; Mike Levine for his endless encouragement; Rosa Granados for holding my hand for the past two years (some wounds are not visible); and all the undercover agents now being abused - "Nothing is forever"

Dave Harmon:

The proofreading squad, for their sharp eyes and vigorous encouragement: Laura E. Keeton, Dan and Diana Dworin, Jamie McIlvain, and Lisa DeCuir; the stalwart supporters: Steve Grey, Sonia Sellers, Jerry and Kale Clark, Darryl Pruett, Dave "Big Daddy" McLeod, Oscar and Tami Hinojosa, Avrel Seale, Beth Bryant, Rob Dennett, and Robert and Viola Garza; Dr. Henry Dietz of the University of Texas for pointers on recent Peruvian history; the Rio Grande Book Co. for letting me run amok on their office machines. And, most of all, Richard Derus for bringing it all together.

FOREWORD

by Michael Levine

Now that you've read this far I advise you to cancel any appointments you may have scheduled during the next several hours. You are not going to be able to put this book down. It will mesmerize you, enrage you and change your attitude toward the people in government whom we have entrusted with our safety and security. Most importantly it will give you information that has been kept from you; information you have a right to, because you have paid for it with your taxes, and, as many like me have done, with the blood and misery of your loved ones and friends. There are several important facts that you must keep in mind as you read. First, that the crimes and atrocities described so vividly in these in these pages, were committed by U.S. government officials using taxpayer dollars, or people under their protection, and that, for the most part, the victims of these crimes are the very people who paid those taxes: the American people. Second, that this first hand account was written by Celerino "Cele" Castillo, a highly decorated veteran of two wars - Vietnam and the War on Drugs; a man who has often risked his life to fulfill his oath to protect the American people and uphold their laws, and that Celerino Castillo is a consummate professional investigator who documents everyone of his claims - - often using electronic recording devices - - so that they serve as evidence in any court in the world. Third, that every thing you are about to read was first turned over to the upper management of DEA (The Drug Enforcement Administration), the FBI and e State Department for these agencies to take appropriate action to stop

the Oliver North/Contra operations drug smuggling activities and hat no action or investigation was ever undertaken. Fourth, that Cele Castillo persisted in pushing for an investigation spite of a warning from a U. S. Ambassador to back off the investigation because it was a White House Operation, and inspite of being place under a malicious Internal Affairs investigation--DEAs classic method of silencing its outspoken agents - - that would help destroy his marriage and career and almost cost him his life. Finally, that Cele turned over all his evidence to Special Prosecutor Lawrence E. Walshs office - - then investigation Oliver North and the Contras - - and when it was clear that no investigative action would ever be taken pursuant to that evidence, and, in fact m that the Special Prosecutors final report failed to even mention the drug allegation, did Cele write this book. When I wrote Deep Cover and The Big White Lie detailing my own deep cover experiences in South America, people were astounded by the revelations. They found it impossible to believe that their own government could tax them hundreds of billions of dollars to fight drugs and at the same time support and protect the biggest drug dealers in the world as they poisoned our children. It was the most despicable kind of treason. I, like many millions of Americans, was affected personally; my son Keith Richard Levine, a 27 year old New York City police officer, was murdered by crack addicts when, while off - duty, he

tried to stop and armed robbery they were committing to support their addiction; my brother David, a life long drug addict, ended his misery at 34 years of age by suicide. Our nation, thanks in large part to these criminals now has a homicide rate exceeding 25,000 per year, much of it drug related, and, according to some economists, our economy is impacted by this drug plague by as much a trillion dollars a year. Is it conceivable that so many members of our legislative, judicial and law enforcement branches of government betrayed us? No its not conceivable, but all those who read this book will find it undeniable. In my books articles and media appearances I told of deep cover cases from Bangkok to Buenos Aires, that were destroyed by the covert agencies of my own government; cases that would have exposed people; who had been given a license to sell massive amounts of drugs to Americans in return for their support of Oliver Norths contras. I could easily prove that these investigations were

internationally destroyed and that our cover was blown by our own government, but I only had circumstantial evidence linking the events to the Contras. Celerino Castillo, as you will see in these pages, had the smoking gun. At that time, had Cele come forward with his story, I believe the publics reaction to our joint testimony would have forced our elected officials into taking the action against North and others, that they were so desperately afraid of taking. But at that time, Cele was bust fighting for his family, his career and his life. wherever I want people asked, If this is true, why aren't any other government agents saying what your are? I was a lone voice. From the moment my first book was published i began receiving - - and still receive - - letters from both federal and local law enforcement officers, government informants and contract pilots for both DEA and CIA, with their own horror stories to tell indicating that our covert agencies and state Department were sabotaging the drug war, and that when honest officers tried to do something about it, their lives and jobs were threatened, yet none would go public with their stories. They were afraid. I pointed out to all who would listen that even our highest government officials are afraid to confront the criminals in government. During the years J Edgar Hoover ran the FBI, eight Presidents were aware that he was running a political police force, in violation of every law of the land, yet they kept their silence and did nothing to stop him. They were terrified of his secret files and the revelations they might contain. It took almost twenty years after his death before the truth finally surfaced ed. If one man could intimidate eight Presidents, can you imagine the kind of club the CIA has over the heads of our current crop of political leader? How else can you explain the difference between their rhetoric and their actions, or lack thereof ? Senator John Kerry, a Democrat, spent tens of millions of taxpayer dollars investigating the drug running activities of Oliver Norths Nicaraguan Contra effort and came to the same conclusions that Cele and I did as DEA agents in the field. He said, Our covert agencies have converted themselves to channels for drugs ... they have perverted our system of justice. An outraged Senator Alphonse Damato, a Republican, found it mind boggling, that while we taxed Americans more than $ 100 billion

to fight drugs, we were in bed with the biggest drug dealers in the world. All the outrage and oratory not withstanding, none of the evidence that the led to

those statements was ever presented to a grand jury of American citizens, and not one single indictment of a U.S. laws relating to narcotics trafficking was ever forthcoming. Nor was there ever any house - cleaning of the agencies involved. Many of these criminals in government are still, in fact, criminals in government, and as this book goes to press there is evidence that their crimes continue. It is also important for the reader to keep in mind, that to prove a government official guilty of violations of the Federal Drug Conspiracy laws, is a relatively easy task for a professional narcotics investigator. One would only have to prove that he or she now of drug trafficking activity and failed to take appropriate action. In one case I was involved in, for example, A new York City police detective was convicted of violation of the Federal Conspiracy statutes and sentenced to 8 years in prison, for not taking appropriate action against dope-dealing friend of his. We could not even prove that he had profited form his crime. DEAs files are full of similar cases. The law is exactly as President Bush once said: All those who look the other way are as guilty as the drug dealer. The Kerry commission amassed impressive evidence that Oliver North and others had violated our drug trafficking laws; they reviewed Norths 543 pages of personal notes relating to drug trafficking activity, which - - even after North blacked out many incriminating statements - - included notations like, $14 million to finance came from drugs; they learned that North had attempted to get leniency for General Bueso -Rosa (convicted of an assassination paid for with 700 pounds of cocaine distributed in the U.S.); they found evidence, such as Norths cash purchase of a car from a $15.000 cash slush fund he kept in a closet, and his interest in a multi -million dollar Swiss bank account, indicating that North, with no other source of income than his military pay check, may have profited financially from drug trafficking activities, yet none of this evidence was ever fully investigated by professional narcotics investigators, nor presented to a grand jury of American citizens as it should have been, or as it would have been had North not been given the phony Redlon shield of National Security and the protection of a President.

The evidence - - and the above is only a small sampling of what is available - -is enough to enrage career narcotic enforcement officers who have sent so many to jail for so much less. And when you add the evidence so powerfully presented in this book t what is already known about North and his Contra operation, you will understand why Cele Castillo put his career and life at risk to try and break through that shield, and why he continues to risk himself to his day. In Senator Kerry's final report he stated, Those U.S. officials who turned a blind eye t General Noriega, who intervened on behalf of General Bueso-Rosa and who adamantly opposed the investigations of /foreign narcotics figures by honest, hardworking law enforcement officials, must also hear the responsibility for what is happening in the streets of the U.S. today. By the time you finish this book you will know that his accusation is aimed squarely at Oliver North, Presidents Reagan and Bush, and other high government officials, yet, and it bears repeating, none of the evidence provoking that statement was ever presented to a grand jury of American citizens. What else but fear can account for this failure on the part of our leaders to take appropriate action a failure ? That local cops or DEA agents would have gotten them arrested and prosecuted, along with the people they were protecting. Jack Blum, special counsel for the Kerry commission, resigned

his post, stating, I am sick to death of the truths I cannot tell. But Cele Castillo, as you will soon know, is not afraid and never has been. In these pages he will reveal to you some of the most devastating of those truths. I now welcome Cele Castillo, a true American hero, to the front lines of his third and perhaps most important war - a war against the criminals within his own government.

INTRODUCTION

Dear General Noriega:

... Your long-standing support of the Drug Enforcement Administration is greatly appreciated... Thank you very much for the autographed photograph. I have ad it framed and it is proudly displayed in my office ....

That letter was written in march, 1984 by DEA Administrator Francis M. Mullen, Jr. to Panamanian strongman General Manuel Noriega, who, four years later, was indicated on drug trafficking charges in the United States. In December, 1989, 15 American soldiers, part of an invading force of 10,000, were killed trying to hunt down Noriega and haul him back to the U.S. The man whose autographed portrait once hung on the DEA Administrators wall was now, in the words of the U.S. military, a cocaine snorting, voodoo worshiping alcoholic despot who entertained prostitutes and wore red underwear.

Such are the ironies of the drug war.

These pages contain one DEA agents account of Americas longest, most frustrating war. Celerino Cele Castillo III spent a dozen years battling the drug cartels, a menace that General Paul C. Gorman, former head of the U.S. Southern Command in Panama, called more successful at subversion in the United States than any that are centered in Moscow.

This book reveals why, after more than 20 years and billions of dollars, the drug war has filed miserably. Why DEA cannot rid the streets of pushers, why it cannot dents the burgeoning coca economy in south America, why its much - ballyhooed interdiction efforts are swatted aside like gnats by the cartels.

Put simply, when U.S. foreign policy and U.S. drug policy collide, drug policy yields every time. People like Manuel Noriega are treasured for their strategic importance, their long-standing support, and their democratic ideals, however superficial, while their back -door deals with drug traffickers are conveniently ignored. And while Communist regimes around the world have withered and collapsed under their own weight, the cartels grow stronger.

No one knows this better than Cele Castillo. For every small victory during his Dea Career, a crushing defeat followed. As a Vietnam veteran, he knew all too well the disillusionment that accompanies messy wars led by vacillating politicians. He shrugged off the frustrations and stubbornly fought on. Then, in Central America, he stumbled upon the Contra resupply operation, a covert network guided by Lt. Col. Oliver North. Castillo’s investigation of the Contra operation revealed the deepest secret of the Iran-Contra Affair: the Contras; drugs-for-guns connection.

Castillo’s investigation unearthed enough evidence to merit a full-scale investigation, yet none occurred. His superiors told Castillo pint-blank to leave the Contra-drug connection, headed by Sen. John Kerry of Massachusetts,

concluded: ... it is clear that individuals who provided support for the Contras were involved in drug trafficking, the supply network of the Contras was used by drug trafficking organizations, and elements of the Contras themselves knowingly received financial and material assistance form drug traffickers. Yet the Kerry committees findings wee ignored by the White House, and neither the Congressional Iran- Contra committees nor the Iran- Contra special prosecutor was fit to delve into the third secret of the Iran- Contra Affair.

Throughout his DEA career, Castillo kept detailed journals which provide the basis for the dates, names, places, and DEA file numbers cited in this book. Conversations quote in these pages were reconstructed to the best of Castillo's recollection.

DEA rejected repeated efforts to obtain Castillo's reports and cables from Central America. The material, according to the U.S. Department of Justice Office of Information and Privacy,

is not appropriate for discretionary release. Likewise, large Portions of Norths diaries were censored before they were turned over to the government, including many sections adjacent to drug

references. For example, Norths June 26, 1984 entry b DEA- followed by two blocks of deleted text. Important questions remain: Who in the government knew about the Contras drug ties? Why were Castillo's reports ignored? And what did North, now a candidate for the United States Senate, know about the drug activities within the network he steered from Washington? The truth lies somewhere beneath a quashed investigation, a belligerent bureaucracy and a censors pen.

--DKH

McAllen, June 15, 1994

TABLE OF CONTENTS

CHAPTER 1: Plausible Deniability Washington D. C. - JUIY, 1987

CHAPTER 2: Into the jungle Pharr, Texas - 1970

CHAPTER 3: Homecoming Pharr, Texas - 1972

CHAPTER 4: The Planet Manhattan New York City - 1980

CHAPTER 5: Riding the Condor Lima, Peru - August, 1984

CHAPTER 6: Tightrope Guatemala City, Oct. 10, 1985

CHAPTER 7: Conspiracy of Denial Guatemala City - April 1986

CHAPTER 8: Contraband San Salvador, September 1, 1986

CHAPTER 9: Death Squad Dance San Salvador - January 16, 1987

CHAPTER 10: Backlash Guatemala City - 1988

CHAPTER 11: Post-Guatemalan Stress Disorder Guatemala City - February, 1990

One

Plausible Deniability

Washington D. C. - July 7, 1987

Twenty-six Congressmen sat silently as the witness was sworn in. Shutters clicked. Papers rustled. The lawyers, government officials, spectators, reporters, and staffers packed into the Senate Caucus Room, filling the chamber with a rumble of murmured anticipation. Satellite feeds carried the scene to television screens across the country. The climax of the Iran-Contra Affair was approaching. America was watching by the millions.

The din subsided; the uniformed witness stood, staring defiantly at the members of the joint Congressional Iran -Contra committee. He was the scapegoat, there to take the fall for the Reagan Administration, which allowed its most sensitive duties to fall to a small cabal which created a government within the Government. The rows of multi-colored ribbons on his olive drab Marine uniform; the furrowed brow; the ramrod posture; all blended into an image that would burn its way onto TV screens, front pages, and magazine covers. Clean -cut and slim, he looked the part of the loyal soldier, someone who would salute, about face, and carry out his orders in the name of patriotism. When Lt. Col. Oliver L. North raised his right hand and promised to tell the truth, people wanted to believe him.

I watched North's testimony on CNN from my living room in Guatemala City. Like millions of Americans, I sat glued to the television during the week -long political soap opera. Americans wanted to learn the truth about North's role in the nations's arms sales to Iran, and the diversion of millions of dollars from those sales to the Contras - - the Nicaraguan rebels fighting to oust the leftist Sandinista regime.

I wanted the nation to learn the truth about a third secret.

North and I had a lot in common. We were both native Texans and decorated Vietnam veterans. We both spent our post-war careers serving our country: North continued in the Marines as an instructor, and later was an NSC staffer; I, however, left the Army to follow in my father's footsteps as a cop, before joining the Drug Enforcement Administration as a special agent in 1979. We were both workaholics whose jobs took us away from our families. We both believed deeply in duty and country. But when our paths collided in Central America, North and I were on very different missions.

From early 1984 to the fall of 1986, North directed a clandestine resupply

operation he dubbed "Project Democracy," which used a military airbase in El Salvador to fly weapons and supplies to the Contras.

For the better part of a year, I investigated it.

By the summer of 19 87, the nation already knew most of the details of North's twin covert operations: U.S. -made missiles were sold to Iran, the world's most rabidly anti-American regime, through a gaggle of shady middlemen who promised the arms would ransom American hostages held by terrorists in Lebanon; the Iranians were overcharged, with the excess funneled to the Nicaraguan Contras; and, despite a 1985 law prohibiting U.S. intelligence agencies from "supporting, directly or indirectly, military or paramilitary operations in Nicaragua, " North helped raise money, plan strategy, and run guns for the rebels.

When the details spilled onto the front pages in the fall of 1986, the scandal shook Ronald Reagan's Presidency to its core. Reagan, who once boasted "America will never make concessions to terrorists, " stammered before the cameras that he just was not aware of the bold foreign policy maneuvers of his underlings. His subordinates dutifully supported his claim of ignorance.

Now, before America's waiting eyes and ears, North was ready to tell his version of the story.

John W. Nields, Jr., chief counsel for the House commit tee, wasted no time cutting to the heart of the matter: "Colonel North, were you involved in the use of the proceeds of sales of

Weapons to Iran for the purpose of assisting the Contras i Nicaragua?"

North, who faced indictment for lying to Congress and shredding documents during the Administration's frantic coverup quickly pleaded the Fifth, agreeing to answer questions only after the respective Congressional chairmen assured North his testimony could not be used against him in any criminal The show continued.

I watched, transfixed, as North parried Nields' questions with a combination of chest -pounding eloquence and impudence. "I came here to tell you the truth - - the good, the bad, and the ugly. I am here to tell it all, pleasant and unpleasant, and I am here to accept responsibility for that which I did. I will not accept responsibility for that which I did not do. "

Nields shrugged off North's eloquent soliloquies and stuck to his game plan, prodding North to explain his role in the missile shipments, the shredding of documents, the Contra money trail.

North hedged, dodged, and lectured: "I think it is very important for the American people to understand that this is a dangerous world ... There is great deceit, deception practiced in the conduct of covert operations. " North and his superior, Vice Admiral John Poindexter, compartmentalized the

operations. As Reagan's National Security Advisor, Poindexter wanted to give the President "plausible deniability. " If Reagan could honestly say he was in the dark, his famous teflon would stand a better chance of deflecting the political consequences. North, Poindexter, and their cohorts broke laws to shield their boss. When the fallout inevitably began, North sorted through his files and dropped anything relating to the funds diverted to the Contras into the shredder. As the hearings continued, I wondered what other documents North had dropped into oblivion.

Nields: And, can you think of any document, the disclosure Of which would have caused [President Reagan] more domestic political damage than a document reflecting his approval of the diversion?

North: The answer to your question is yes. I can think of a lot of documents that cause domestic political damage.

I could think of a few politically damaging documents as well. I had written them. I wondered if any of the reports I so painstakingly prepared lay sandwiched in the reams of paper accumulated by the Iran-Contra committees. As the session dragged into the afternoon, I reluctantly abandoned my cool room and fought my way through traffic to DEA's Guatemala City office, where I tried halfheartedly to attend to on my paperwork. I could not concentrate. After an hour or two, I stopped pretending and rushed home for a three-hour lunch in front of the flickering screen. I could work late. This drama was more important.

I clicked on the television. Nields' face filled the screen. He was on the right track, asking North about foreign contributions for the Contras and North's own overtures to rich widows and other wealthy American citizens. The Contras were hurting for cash after Congress cut off their funding. North badly needed more money to hold the rebels together "body and soul. "

I leaned forward in my chair. Now. Ask the damn question now, Nields, I thought anxiously. Nields rambled on, leaving the question unasked. The Tuesday session ended with the third secret intact. I watched again Wednesday, grimacing every time the lawyers edged near the topic. On Thursday, North was quietly explaining his role in the Achille Lauro sea-jacking when a cry from the audience broke the decorous atmosphere: "What about the cocaine dealing the U. S. is paying for? Ask about the cocaine project ... Why don't you ask about drug deliveries?" The protesters raised a banner reading: ASK ABOUT COCAINE, ASK ABOUT THE KILLING OF NON -COMBATANTS.

I shot out of my chair. Sen. Daniel Inouye of Hawaii, the chairman of the Senate committee, was equally shocked. "We will stand in recess for ten minutes," he rumbled.

The commercial break seemed to last a year. I paced the floor, my mind racing. It was as if the protesters had read my mind and shouted my questions at the Congressmen. Will that break the silence? Will anyone listen?

Inouye's deep, resonant voice snapped me back in front of the screen. " The hearing will please come to order, " Inouye said. "I wish to advise the audience that this panel will not tolerate demonstrations." With that, North resumed his Achille Lauro narrative. I slumped in my chair.

The third secret surfaced again on Monday, North's fifth day of testimony. Three lawyers had already asked North hundreds of questions, some a dozen times. But not until the member began their questioning did Sen. Orrin Hatch, the Utah Republican, finally ask the question.

Hatch: Okay. What about drug smuggling? There've been a lot of allegations thrown around that the [Contra] resupply operation was involved in cocaine trafficking. A news program over the weekend suggested that Rob Owen, who testified earlier, was involved in drug smuggling. Now is there any truth to that? Can you shed any light for us on that?

I jumped toward the TV and turned the sound up. This was

North: Absolutely false. Mr. Owen is the last person perhaps right beside me - - that would ever be engaged in those kinds of activities. And when Mr. Owen found any information pertaining to the possibility of involvement in drugs, he told me and I would tell the appropriate federal authorities. And there were several of such instances. Absolutely false, Senator.

Hatch: I believe that.

"Wait! " I shouted at the screen, instantly feeling stupid for the outburst. North's brief statement sparked a cascade of questions: Who was involved in drugs? Which federal authorities did you report to? How many times did that happen?

Hatch immediately moved on to another topic. I stood slowly, walked to the set, and clicked it off.

For seven years, I fought on the front lines of Reagan's "Drug War", trying to stamp out what I considered America's greatest foreign threat. North fought Communism. I fought cocaine. I could not shake the feeling I was trapped in a protracted Vietnam. The enemy was everywhere I turned, on the street corners of Manhattan, in the Amazon jungle of Peru, in the airy cafes of San Salvador. They were street pushers, mobsters, coca farmers, cocaine traffickers. They blended in with the civilians, who all too often supported and protected them. No matter how many of them I threw behind bars, others appeared to take their place. And the drugs kept coming, seeping over our borders in a deadly flood.

When I was posted to Guatemala in October, 1985, 1 knew we were playing the Drug War Follies. While our government shouted "Just Say No, " entire nations fell to traffickers' dollars. The momentum was against us. The Colombian cartels ground their home government into submission with a rain of bribes and bullets, then sucked their American customers dry to purchase other

governments: A cartel-backed coup toppled the Bolivian government in 1980; the scattered islands of the Bahamas became landing pads for drug flights between Colombia and Florida shortly after; and when Manuel Noriega turned Panama into a haven for trafficking and money laundering, it took a December 1989 invasion - - the largest U.S. military operation since Vietnam - - to drag the dictator into a U. S. court to face drug charges.

The cartels had too many men, too many guns, and too many dollars. DEA had too few. President Richard Nixon declared a war on drugs in 197 1; when he died, 23 years and $ 100 billion in drug war expenditures later, addicts in Little Rock would be plunking down five bucks for rocks of crack cocaine. From the front lines, I could see the tide turning against us as the narcotics ate their way through the country. By the end of the 19 80s, a third of all robberies and burglaries in the United States would be committed for money to buy drugs. The drug crime wave would have a devastating ripple effect. By 1994, drug offenders would make up 30 percent of new inmates pouring into the nation's bursting jails, up from 7 percent in 1980.

None of this came as any surprise to me. In seven years in the trenches, I had arrested dozens of traffickers; trained anti-narcotics squads in two countries; flown aerial eradication missions; spearheaded huge cocaine busts. The drug barons barely flinched: In Peru, I watched cartel pilots playing soccer with soldiers; in El Salvador, military officers took weapons seized from the guerrillas and sold them to traffickers; in Guatemala, I discovered members of our host government running a smuggling ring for the cartels. Then I discovered the Contras' secret.

By the end of his Congressional testimony, North crowned an American Hero. Telegrams streamed in from admirers across the country, who reached out to their new icon I knew better.

Many of the diplomats I worked with on a daily basis in the U.S. Embassy in El Salvador regarded the hard-nosed NS,, staffer running the Contra operation as "pushy and arrogant. I thought of him as the leader, whether he knew it or not, o Latin America's most protected drug smuggling operation.

The connections piled up quickly. Contra planes flew north to the U.S., loaded with cocaine, then returned laden with cash All under the protective umbrella of the United States Government. My informants were perfectly placed: one worked with the Contra pilots at their base, while another moved easily among the Salvadoran military officials who protected the resupply operation. They fed me the names of Contra pilots. Again and again, those names showed up in the DEA database as documented drug traffickers. When I pursued the case, my superiors quietly and firmly advised me to move on to other investigations.

In Central America, the Contras' drug connection was no secret. The Salvadoran military knew. The U.S. Embassy knew. DEA knew. The CIA knew: "With respect to (drug trafficking by) the Resistance Forces ... it is not a couple of people. It is a lot of people, " the CIA's Central American Task Force chief would tell the Congressmen a month after North's testimony.

And there were indications North knew.

A Congressional subcommittee chaired by Sen. John Kerry searched North's personal notebooks and found 543 pages containing "references to drugs and drug trafficking. " On many of the pages, the material adjacent to the drug references was blacked out before the pages reached the subcommittee. A few cryptic references remained, scrawled in North's shorthand:

July 9, 1984. Call from Clarridge - - Call Michel re Narco Issue - - RIG at 1000 tomorrow (Q0384) - - DEA Miami - - Pilot went talked to Vaughn - - wanted A/C to go to Bolivia to p/u paste -- want A/C to p/u 1500 kilos --Bud to meet w/Group(Q0385) [italics added]

It was potentially explosive. It was provocative. It was enough to make a DEA agent drool.

It was also enough to scare the hell out of some of our elected leaders, who knew a political mine field when they saw one. Six months before North's Congressional appearance, the Senate Iran -Contra committee pondered investigating the Contras' drugs - for - guns network. A New York Times article on January 13, 1987 summed up their trepidation: "Some senators say that any official inquiry on this topic, and how much if anything American officials knew about it, at this time would create such an uproar that it could derail the main thrusts of the Senate inquiry: to sort out the Reagan Administration's secret arms sales to Iran and diversion of profits to the contras."

They chose to ignore the issue, and when it threatened to burst into the limelight, they buried it.

A few news reports tied the Contras to narcotics smuggling, but the accusations came from the lips of convicted traffickers whose credibility was instantly attacked, or from members of Congress whose investigations into the issue were dismissed by the Administration as partisan politics. Kerry's ill -fated investigation saw its star witnesses discredited, its biggest revelations overshadowed by the Iran-Contra circus, and its final report greeted with a collective yawn by the media.

The subcommittee report sparked no public outcry, no high profile indictments. The senators, split by internal bickering, essentially peeked under the rug, wrinkled their noses, then moved on.

The American public would quickly lose interest in the Iran Contra scandal, with its complicated plot twists and vague policy questions. Had they discovered our government hired and protected a squad of drug traffickers, then gave them free passes into the U.S., the story might have ended very differently.

Two

Into the jungle

Pharr, Texas – 1970

We lived on West State Street in Pharr, next to a packing shed and an icehouse. It was like a lot of struggling small towns along the Texas-Mexico border - - nobody was really rich, but nobody was homeless either. Our neighborhood, a collection of small houses crammed together with small shops, was what passed for lower middle-class, home to a good number of migrant farm workers, a few businessmen, and a variety of blue-collar types who worked the big farms and small factories dominating the area. The railroad tracks ran past our front door, cutting between economic classes as they did in about every small Texas town. The rumble of the 6 a.m. and 10 p.m. Southern Pacific freight cars framed each day.

Our life was idyllic, a series of scenes that Rockwell would have painted had he lived on the border. My sisters Diana, Melinda, and San Juanita (who was born with Down's Syndrome, busy mopping the wooden floors as I helped my father manicure the yard. Sunday services at St. Margaret's, where I was an altarboy. Sneaking into the packing shed with my friends on weekends to ride the wooden pallets, which seemed to glide over the wooden floors on metal rollers. Dad cooking burgers on the grill every Friday night, bringing back a grinning cow's head from the slaughterhouse for Sunday barbacoa.

On the border, barbacoa was a ritual. My father would wander into the yard and start dropping hunks of hard mesquite wood into the round pit he dug in the clay soil. When the mesquite burned down to glowing embers, he arranged bricks on top of the coals. Then came the cow's head, encased in foil and burlap. He

covered it with a scrap piece of aluminum siding and layers of coals and dirt. The preparations began every Saturday night at 10. By 7 o'clock Sunday morning the head was cooked. My mother would make coffee while Dad sliced the tender meat off the head. and piled it up on a plate. We circled him with hot homemade tortillas in our hands.

My mother, Angelita everyone called her Angie presided over a group of children as different as could be imagined. Diana, a year older than me, was high strung and energetic, a bubbly counterpoint to my moodiness. Melinda, who came along a year after me, was the sophisticated one, the little girl we called Miss Goody Two Shoes. She was always the best dressed, the most likely to succeed and fulfill her dream of attending college - - a difficult ring to reach in our neighborhood. San Juanita was the happiest. Down's Syndrome would

tie her to my parents for the rest of her life, but she was blessed with an intense sense of caring flowing from a big heart. When she was happy, her whole being glowed.

Our prime entertainment was the movies: English titles for a quarter at the Texas Theater, and Spanish at El Capitan. The language was irrelevant. My family, like a lot of our neighbors on the border, switched back and forth between Spanish and English at home.

We also frequented the irrigation canals that criss-crossed the area, toting our fishing poles, hoping to snag a catfish for dinner. When it rained, we hunted big Texas frogs with flashlights and homemade spears fashioned from stolen broomsticks. We laid big nails on the railroad tracks in the evening, then picked them up the next morning, filing the flattened metal into daggers ,and mounting them on the sticks. My mother scolded us, but always agreed to deep fry the legs for dinner when we marched into the kitchen with our green trophies.

Somehow, I knew I would get drafted. I was so sure of it, I was ready to enlist in the Marines in the spring of 1970 to wash away the constant foreboding. Uncle Sam beat me to it. The draft notice came in an somberly official envelope, announcing I was to report to Fort Lewis in Washington state for basic training.

stared at the card, reading the short message over and over. For a teenager living in a little border town, Vietnam was just a strange, jagged crescent on the school library's mounted globe. A senior in high school, I was just starting to think about my possibilities. Others had gone before me and died fighting the Communists, who, many learned adults assured us, were all around, waiting for an opportune moment to storm city hall and use South Texas as their beachhead to conquer America.

The fear came slowly, rocking me with waves of apprehension. Yet a part of me thrilled at the chance to prove myself, to make my family proud. My father taught me about duty and patriotism, words just beginning to erode into cynicism as the 1960s gave way to the '70s, and icons like John F. Kennedy and Martin Luther King were cut down. There was no doubt I would go.

From what we saw on the news, we all thought the war was supposed to be winding down. Nixon was pulling out troops in waves as he "Vietnamized" the war. Casualties were down by half. The number of U. S. troops in the war zone would soon drop to 413,900, the fewest since 1967. Nobody told this to the man who pulled my name out of the lottery drum.

My mother cried when the envelope arrived. The next day, she called Kika de la Garza, our local congressman, and begged him to spare me. I could hear her sobbing into the phone. "This is my only son. Who will carry the family name if something happens to him?"

My father was irate when he found out what she had done. He immediately

called de la Garza and told him not to intervene.

Dad was a decorated World War 11 veteran, a survivor of the Philippines campaign. He lied about his age and joined the American Division - - the same division that had become infamous the previous November when news of the My Lai massacre reached the public. He still had copper in his leg where the Army doctors had wired the bone back together. The Japanese killed his brother as they tried to take Alaska. My uncle's bones remain on an icy island somewhere in the Aleutians I would serve proudly as they had done.

We were a family of long tradition, tracing our heritage back to the Mexican revolutionary Emilio Zapata. I was baptized Celerino Castillo III after my father, who carried the name for my grandfather. My grandfather brought it from his home in San Luis Potosi, Mexico, when he immigrated in a horse-drawn cart loaded with his carpentry tools. I fully expected to bestow it on my first son.

He began and ended the discussion with his usual directness: We come from a family that has served our country."

My father drove me to the post office in nearby McAllen, where a bus would take me to San Antonio for my military physical. He had never been one for emotional moments. He clapped my shoulder and offered his best advice. "Everything you do, do it right. "

The bus was crowded with fresh - faced recruits and draftees from the Rio Grande Valley. Some were obviously eager for the chance to expand their experience beyond the isolated south tip of Texas. Others stared ahead, looking frightened and ready to get very drunk.

I passed my physical easily. I was lean and wiry from running on the high school track team, 5 feet 10 inches and 130 pounds. From San Antonio, we were immediately flown to the Northwest. As the plane dropped below the clouds, my breath caught in my throat. Mount Ranier jutted up from the earth, shrouded in snow. I had never seen snow except on television. When the first snows covered the base that winter, the other south Texas recruits in my company were as amazed as I was. We dove into the cold white stuff, handling it, tasting it, then instinctively balling it up and hurling it at each other's heads.

We did not have much time to play. The drill sergeants kicked our butts there. Basic training became a whirl of push-ups, bad food, early morning runs and knotted muscles. In the little free time we were given, we haunted Seattle's seamy Pike Street red-light district, explored the local bars, and ducked into the theater to catch M*A*S*H, which was still playing in Seattle when I returned to Fort Lewis on my way back to Texas.

The city dazzled me, although I made sure my friends didn't catch me gawking. I was bombarded with new wonders: the overwhelming greenness, the sharp perfume of the Pines, the bite of the cold, dry winds.

After basic, the sergeants hounded us through AIT advanced infantry

training. These were graduate courses for future killing machines: escape and evasion techniques in case we

were captured by the enemy; nighttime tactics with live ammunition; advanced hand - to - hand training; delicate lessons on how to plant Claymore mines and booby traps. The 15 -hour days and the intense routine left us exhausted, but built our confidence left AIT in the spring of 1971 a ball of musclebound endurance, lean and mean. I thought I was ready.

Fort Lewis, the Army sent me to non - commissioned officer school at Fort Benning, Georgia, where they rushed recruits through the system to get more sergeants to the jungle. They called it "leadership school. 1, We called it "shake and bake. " I turned down an offer to go on to Ranger school. I wanted to go to Vietnam. Most of us did - - it was the honorable thing to do. Despite the ugly turn in public opinion after the Tet Offensive in early 1968 , my class still believed in patriotism and duty. The public was still deeply divided: that May, thousands of demonstrators, including veterans and construction workers, marched in Washington D.C. in support of the war, less than a month after a group of anti-war veterans buried their helmets and combat ribbons on the Capitol steps.

I was given a month back home before beginning my tour of duty. My father was visibly proud; Mom was worried sick. Her eyes carried an anguished, hollow expression that followed me throughout Vietnam. The daily body counts and the grisly war footage on the news did not calm her.

On August 29, 1971, We landed at Cam Ranh Bay, South Vietnam, after 16 hours in the air. The plane's hatch opened. Hot, damp air engulfed us. We looked around at each other, exchanging one last uncertain look before we took our first steps on Vietnamese soil and began the countdown every GI keeps to mark his time in country.

The place was intimidating, with military jets and helicopters swooping in and out like birds of prey. Everything about Cam Ranh spoke of of tension and anticipation. The first things I noticed were gun towers and bunkers studding the white beach, laced with rolling coils of man - shredding concertina wire. Military Police and sentries were everywhere. This was the first stop for thousands of U.S. troops, and a favorite target for the Viet Cong. They had attacked the base during Tet and again in August, 1969, raiding the convalescent hospital with a small commando force.

The troops at Cam Ranh were still shaking their heads about the 1969 raid. The VC killed two Americans and wounded 99, before slipping back into the landscape without a single casualty. A few weeks later, they called again, lobbing mortar shells over the perimeter. The base was on alert again as I arrived: The Communists were attacking civilian targets and U. S. bases in the northern part of South Vietnam, trying to disrupt the scheduled August 29 elections. Everyone seemed to walk a little closer to the buildings and

sandbags, ready to dive at the first thump of artillery.

We were all cherries, plopped down among a collection of combat- frazzled soldiers anxiously waiting to be processed out of the country. An old bus, its mottled paint scarred and faded, carried us to the replacement center, a cavernous compound where new recruits were processed into different companies. A captain marched through the ranks with a clipboard, calling out assignments. I was selected to become a sergeant of the guard, one of the three sergeants in charge of base security forces.

I was in charge of dozens of sentries sent to man the bunkers and lookout towers. The captain obviously considered fear the best motivation. He nonchalantly told me some of the guards had been asleep when the Viet Cong sent its commandos through the lines the previous year. "You know what a sapper is, Sergeant Castillo?" he snapped. I didn't. "They're the sneakiest, most fearless enemy you will ever face, sergeant. They'll run straight at you with a bag full of explosives and take bullets until you hit something vital. The ones we've captured and use as guides can pass through razor wire in five seconds without making a sound. Those guards were found slumped at their posts with their throats slit. Now, you have a nice day. Get to work."

I saluted and returned to my bunk to try to catch some sleep before the graveyard shift began at 7 p.m. The gloomy pep talk worked. I was determined to keep everyone on their toes during my shift.

I patrolled 12 hours each night, making the rounds of the towers and bunkers to make sure the guards challenged me when

I approached. I quickly separated them into two categories. The good ones developed their instincts. They could hear me coming no matter how quietly I crept toward them. I would give them the day's code word and move on. The others saw guard duty as a pain in the ass and passed the time by sleeping or getting stoned.

I constantly caught men smoking dope on duty. .OJ’S - marijuana joints soaked in opium - - were popular among the soldiers for their mellow high. They also liked heroin, which came packed in gelatin capsules for easy concealment and use. I found soldiers shooting up heroin in the latrine, taut faces smoothing into oblivion as the drug infested their brains.

I had no tolerance for drugs. Actually, I had scarcely any experience with drugs. A few of my friends smoked pot in high school, but I never had anything stronger than a shot of whiskey or a beer.

I used the "three -strikes -you're -out,, system. After two warnings violators were sent to the captain, who gave them the slit throats speech, then court-marshaled them. This did not give me popularity points among the slackers. The threats began. A friend came to my tent one night, warning me about a conversation he overheard in the barracks. "They said they were going to zap you between towers four and five and blame it on the VC. I held my

M16 tighter every night after that, watching the shadows, but they never moved.

Part of the tension filling Cam Ranh came from the growing rift between the black and white soldiers. The blacks were coming into their own in America and in the military, building a new consciousness and nursing a simmering hatred for whites. The sides mingled only when they had to. As a Mexican moved in the uneasy space between the two poles. -American, I

One night, the tension blew. I was walking the grounds When shouting erupted outside the mess hall. About a hundred black soldiers were on the verge of pouncing on an equal force of white soldiers, who glared and shouted back. Some of them were waving their weapons, angry fingers on triggers.

The stark display of hatred stunned me. Prejudice was always an undercurrent in South Texas, but open confrontation was unheard of. Blacks were practically unknown in the Rio Grande Valley, leaving whites and Hispanics to achieve some kind of balance. Custom buried our tensions deep, and young Mexican Americans learned the subtle dance almost unconsciously. Only the rest room signs I saw as a child separating "White" from ,,Mexican" at the Enco station spelled out the racial facts of life.

Now, standing in the midst of a boiling black-and-white feud, I felt no loyalty to either side. I locked and loaded a 20 round magazine into my M-16 and rattled it into the air. An almost reverent silence followed. I put on my most menacing face. A sea of eyes behind the dust and smoke bored into me. I wanted to lash at every one of them for eating away at morale while the enemy grew stronger. I wanted to reach into the experiences of my 20 years and produce some profound truth to defuse the tension. Instead, I came off like an anxious teenager with a gun. I screamed: "You guys are all going to LBJ if you don't cut this shit out. "

That probably worked better anyway. LBJ was Long Binh Jail, where court-marshaled soldiers were sent to finish their military careers caged and humiliated. After some final posturing and parting epithets, the factions melted back into the bustle of the base. The near riot, I later discovered, started when the black soldiers claimed the white guys were getting more rations in the mess. I wondered if the would turn on each other when the enemy confronted them.

After two months at the base, I was about to find out. I had been assigned to Bravo Company, I st Battalion, 12th Cavalry in Bien Hoa.

A chopper dropped me into the monstrous Bien Hoa air base, home to the Air Force's Third Tactical Fighter Wing and the Army's III Corps. This was Saigon's shield from the Viet Cong and the North Vietnamese Army, the closest base to the South Vietnamese capital. As I searched for the commanding officer, weary grunts milled around, eyeing me with nonchalant amusement. A few sat cleaning their rifles, others snored loudly where they dropped. With my fresh uniform and smooth chin, I looked like a kid in his Sunday best in a gang of vagabonds.

I saw no hint of animosity between these soldiers. In fact, I had trouble telling them apart. The jungle, the dank air and the grind of warfare had an equalizing effect. They were all filthy, with no insignia or rank visible on their worn green fatigues. I looked from one face to the next, wondering how Ion it would take before I would see the dark circles etched around my eyes.

The platoon sergeant had little time to give me the grand tour. Bravo company had seen a lot of action against the Viet Cong, he said, fishing around his fatigues for his lighter. Lost a lot of men. He put me in charge of a squad, then rattled off the rotating schedule we would follow until we were wounded, killed, or sent home: 30 days in the bush, back to base for a few days, then out again for another round of search - and - destroy.

My squad usually had five infantry men, all privates and E4s, plus a machine gunner and a grenadier. But the most valuable member was a black Labrador retriever trained to sniff out booby traps. The lab had earned the men's respect, warning them away from a hundred trip wires and mines. The dog had its own handler, its own doggie C-rations, and an unlimited supply of water, which the troops lugged through the bush to slake its insatiable thirst. The dog was as frazzled as the soldiers, its big square head plopped between its paws as it dozed in the shade of a tent.

There was no time to make myself at home. My squad flew into the jungle the next day, part of a four-platoon rescue effort for an ARVN ranger company losing a skirmish with the Viet Cong. The rest of the squad was grumbling as we boarded the helicopter. Nobody wanted to risk their skin for the Army of the Republic of Vietnam, the "comrades" we were supposedly reinforcing. The men traded ARVN jokes and stories of bumping into retreating South Vietnamese soldiers during fire fights.

As the chopper dropped lower, I could see the tiny hole cut in the foliage. The landing zone. The pilot dropped straight down, hovering nervously for five seconds as we hurled ourselves through the hatch and sprinted for cover.

Suddenly, I was in a war. All the training, the sit -ups, the firing range practice, and hand -to - hand drills suddenly seemed to fly away, leaving me naked and numb. I broke into a running crouch, scanning the tree line for the enemy. Every branch was an AK-47, every knot in a trunk was a human face.

I heard a scream and whirled around, half expecting to feel a bullet slam into me. One of the men had landed on the stub of a small tree. The thin trunk, sharpened into a punji stick, jutted red through his uniform. One of the men scrambled to him, turned to the lieutenant and shook his head. I took a deep breath. I had seen my first combat death.

We regrouped and followed the lieutenant into the brush. We found the ARVN clustered two kilometers away at the edge of a clearing. They looked like prizefighters who knew the knockout punch was coming in the next round. A

number of them lay dead or dying as medics buzzed from one wounded man to the next, slapping white field dressings on crimson wounds.

We heard the familiar whump - whump - whump coming for the casualties. The dead and wounded were quickly loaded on the ARVN helicopter. As the skids rose off the ground, a number of the ARVN soldiers suddenly bolted for the hovering chopper. I was bewildered. "What in the hell are they doing?" I asked the nearest GI. The disgusted look on his face mirrored the expression of the helicopter's door gunners, who leveled their M - 60s at their charging comrades to drive them back. The ARVN did not need reinforcements, I decided. They needed replacements.

During my first patrol, I learned to hate the OJs and needles as much as I hated the enemy. My anger flashed at the sight of heavy lidded eyes staring blankly under helmets. Soldiers were doped up all the time - - some of them got high from the minute they woke up. The officers didn't say anything. They were afraid of getting fragged. I held my tongue, but vowed to shoot the first bastard who put me or my men in jeopardy by getting stoned on patrol.

Nothing could have prepared me for the jungle. The heat was suffocating, a damp, rotting blanket covering everything with an oily sheen. Not even the pounding heat of South Texas could compare to the misery of South Vietnam. The rain came like clockwork, soaking the already damp ground until the clouds parted and the sun baked it back into the air.

My rucksack was packed with C -rations, extra fatigues, soap, toothpaste, and letters from home. I draped a towel over the back of my neck to cushion the load. I carried two bandoleers of M-60 ammunition for the machine-gunner, two bandoleers of M- 16 ammo, and six full M- 16 magazines in two pouches. We each carried sixteen canteens of water for the dog, who stopped every few minutes to slop water from a helmet. The whole load weighed 80 pounds. It was like hiking up a mountain with a 10 year -old on my back.

We began each day at 5 a.m., marching in columns with a man every five yards. I usually volunteered to take the point, leapfrogging with the dog as we picked our way through the jungle, the dog sniffing out a safe path. Nobody had trained the dog to bark when the VC were in the vicinity. Without warning, the trees would erupt with gunfire. We answered back, called in artillery, and watched as the whistling h 11 fire through the area. g s e s erupted, spreading

When I allowed my mind to wander on level ground, I thought about my father and his dimpled scars. The military declared him 100 percent disabled, but Dad brushed off his wounds and went back to high school. He even played tight end on the football team, copper wire and all. He didn't9t like to talk about the day he was caught in the ambush, but I remembered every detail he told me. It helped me in Vietnam.

The jungle will warn you, he told me. The birds knew the Japanese were there. He got caught in the open, yelling a warning to the battalion as the

first bullets zinged past him. The gunner finally found him knocking him bleeding to the ground.

The medics counted six bullet holes in is arms and legs.

He took pride in those wounds. There was never regret in his voice when he talked about the war, even though his bronze star took 50 years to arrive. But he never could shake that ambush. Even decades later, he would become furious for no apparent reason, then act as though nothing had happened. We learned to ride through these emotional storm clouds hoping they would pass quickly.

This tradition was passed on as well. When I got home from the Vietnam, I could not sleep in a bed for weeks. My family would find me curled up in the comer of the room, my eyes flashing at them as they peeked through the door.

For the most part, the U.S. Army were inept invaders, fighting nature, fighting our enemies, fighting one another. We marched through countless thatched villages, searching and interrogating. Teenaged girls from the villages would meet us as we approached with rolled bamboo mats slung across their backs. " Beaucoup boom boom" meant for five bucks, they would take you into the bushes and let you have your way on the mat. For them, it was better than being raped when the soldiers got to the village. They became the entrepreneurs of their families, making a living off the GIs. We all got the clap so many times, the medic refused to let us rotate back to the base without a penicillin shot.

If we found weapons or tunnels, the place burned. Watching platoon sergeants kill civilians suspected of helping the VC became almost a daily event. If they found a cache of weapons, everyone near it died. The lieutenant was nonchalant about the possibility we were shooting innocents. "I don't want to know about it, " he told the sergeants. "You do what you gotta do. " If the village was clean, we moved on.

The terrain didn't help, especially for somebody like me from a flat, dry place. The marches would have been exhausting enough without also worrying about getting shot. I fought through amaze of branches, muck, and leaves. I needed new boots every six weeks to replace the tattered leather eaten away by miles of mud, water, and clutching branches. I was constantly dehydrated as I marched against the dense air and tangled vegetation. Every day was a grind of salt tablets and mosquitoes, razor grass and soggy boots, biting ants and leeches.

I hated the leeches. I was convinced they were creatures sent straight from hell or Ho Chi Minh. They waited in the streams and rivers we crossed, attaching themselves to our legs and groins. Like most of the men, I stopped wearing underwear - - it chafed the skin, leaving a sweat- stung rash. We tied bandannas below our knees to keep leeches out of our crotches, but they always found a gap. They were like the Viet Cong, sneaking up quietly, hunting for exposed flesh. You didn't feel them until they drew blood.

Yet I came to love the jungle for its mysterious beauty. It was so different from the flat, dust-whipped earth back home. The jungle swallowed sounds, leaving an ethereal silence broken only by the birds and monkeys, and the lizards that seemed to call out "Fuck you. " When I awoke each morning on patrol, I could hear the church bell in some nearby village. In time, I was at home there, attuned to its noises and dangers.

The VC snipers shadowed us, terrorizing us with exhausting regularity. My knees automatically buckled every time I heard a rifle crack, but the bullet was faster than a man's reflexes.

My first fire-fight began with a sniper's bullet snapping the back of a GI marching behind me. Everyone dropped to the turf and fired blindly, holding their shuddering rifles over clumps of grass and fallen trees. No wonder we suffered so many friendly fire casualties, I thought as I peeked over a mound of dirt. I saw a flash of skin as the VC ran into the trees. Then the jungle was silent again.

My friends died, to be replaced by new friends. Officers rotated through, some killed by enemy fire, some by their own men. A fresh lieutenant came in about two months after I joined the company, a short, skinny West Pointer with short-cropped blond hair and a self assured attitude picked up in the classroom. He had no feel for the jungle. He led us in circles the first time out, completely lost. We slogged through the same stream four times, picking up leeches with each pass. When the more experienced men pleaded with him to turn over the map and admit he was lost, he sternly refused.

That night, after everyone bedded down, one of the men who complained bitterly about the lieutenant's stubborn ignorance crept up to his foxhole and pulled the pin on a grenade. I was in my foxhole doing guard duty on the perimeter when the grenade went off . Somebody yelled " Incoming! " but I had not heard the whistle of a shell.

Of course, nobody had seen anything.

By then, nothing shocked me. I was one of the hollow- eyed mongrels I had seen my first day at the base. Men were dropping around me, as many from heroin as from enemy fire. The mama sans in the little villages sold it to the American soldiers who passed through hunting for Charlie. They were little contraband convenience stores. Joints came in Lucky Strikes packages. Heroin was packed into Contact capsules and sold in little bags.

At first, I wondered about the thousands of colorful capsules littering the space between the barracks and the sandbagged perimeter at Bien Hoa. It did not take long to solve the puzzle. Men were shooting up in the open. Soldiers would pop open the capsule, tap the powder into a spoon, and add a splash of water or liquor. With a candle or a can of sterno from their C -rations, they would heat up the spoon until the heroin dissolved and bubbled, then let it cool for a moment and draw it into a syringe. pumping a fist to coax an artery, they would plunge the needle through the skin and surrender.

They wandered the grounds like zombies, suddenly oblivious to the stress and commotion and fear. They were the weak ones, I thought, the boys who could not cope with the insanity and the killing. They were 19 and going mad.

There was an unwritten rule for the dopers: Don't get high on patrol. Nobody cared what anybody did to their brain on the base, but one heroin-addled mind could cost lives in the jungle. The Viet Cong did not kill the first man I watched die in Vietnam. Heroin did.

He was a well -built private, about my age, with a young wife back home somewhere in the Midwest. He had received a Dear John letter that day, just before we went on patrol. "lt don't mean nothin', "he muttered, folding the paper and stuffing it into his pack. Nobody believed him.

Some of the other guys had introduced him to heroin to take the edge off combat. After a few weeks, he was a borderline addict, shooting up whenever the stress overwhelmed him. That night, he hunkered down in his foxhole and cooked his powder into a clear, pure syrup. As he drew the liquid into the syringe, his buddy tried to talk some sense into him. The distraught private looked away and pulled the plunger back further.

The hit was too big, too pure. He started foaming at the mouth, his body stiffening in a morphine seizure. His buddy called for a medic, but he was dead before they could pull him from the hole. He wanted to die, I thought as I watched the zipper close over his face. If he didn't do it now, he would have done it later. It was natural selection, and one of the weak had been eliminated. A chopper came in the next morning and took him home.

He was the first of many I watched fall to the other enemy in Vietnam. Marijuana was a distraction. Heroin was seduction, Some soldiers simply wandered into the jungle and disappeared, We usually found them somewhere beyond the perimeter, their eyes wide and their mouths caked with dried spittle. If the med who discovered the body decided he had been a good soldier ' someone would pump a bullet in the body. The family would be told he died a hero's death, Killed In Action. If the consensus was the dead soldier had been an asshole, he would be sent home with nothing more than the needle pricks in his arm.

Every week, we sent another overdose victim home wrapped in a green bag.

I hated the powder more each day. I tried to brush off my anger, to understand why these men preferred numbness to reality. Sometimes as I marched, the face of that private from the Midwest hovered before my eyes, his expression frozen between ecstasy and anguish. His death scene gave me a purpose. If I ever left Vietnam, I would pour my energy into fighting America's drug habit. Law enforcement had always appealed to me, but now I had a cause.

To the Viet Cong, heroin was a fighting tool.

The sappers used it for suicide missions, pumping them selves full of the stuff and charging into our camps with satchel charges. They would come dashing out of nowhere, tourniquets cutting into their arms and legs to staunch the bleeding when we shot them. Like the Japanese kamikazes of World War II, they were running to a heroic death. If they managed to penetrate our lines, they would zero in on the nearest pack of GIs and explode.

I was on patrol when the front of the column radioed a warning. VC heading our way.

The sapper came straight at my squad like a sprinter off the blocks. He was more boy than man, skinny legs churning, two bandoleers of AK-47 ammunition slapping against his chest. Several figures in black pajamas materialized behind him, racing and ducking through the foliage. They did not see us.

I raised my M - 16 and squeezed off a three - round burst at the sapper. His arms cartwheeled as he dropped. The squad opened up on the black figures, taking down two or three more before they disappeared into the undergrowth. My heart was pounding. I wanted to look, to see if I had killed him, but my rooted feet ignored my morbid curiosity. I heard a low moan. Another soldier walked to the fallen boy, nudged him with the toe of his boot, then sprayed him with his M - 16.

Standing over him, I felt a sort of sickening satisfaction. This kid and his buddies had been killing my buddies. I thought about the sniper who picked off one of my squad a few weeks before. The thought chilled me. He was in the rear and took a slug in the back. The sniper was patient, waiting for each of us to pass through his sights before squeezing the trigger. My head had probably hovered in his crosshairs for a moment. I could almost see his finger tensing, then relaxing as he waited for the next man. Now I looked into this boy's dead eyes and felt my muscles relax. My anger finally had its sacrifice.

After 30 days in the bush, we would return to base, shower, eat a slab of water buffalo steak, drink a warm beer and collapse. After my first month - long patrol, I slept for several days, drifting in and out of consciousness. And the nightmares came.

The sapper joined the macabre cast acting out their roles night after night. His face was frozen in surprise: high cheekbones, smooth skin, dark eyes. Each kick from the rifle opened a red hole in his chest. Some nights, I would watch myself die in a firefight. I would wake suddenly, shaking and damp. I was not the only victim of his subconscious. Some men could not sleep without screaming.

If I was lucky, I dreamed of home.

I would snap awake as a mortar landed in the jungle nearby with a muffled thump. " Shit, I'm still in Vietnam," I mumbled to no one. I cried for the first time since I was a child.

In my letters to my father, I told him to prepare my mother for the worst. He had survived his ambush. With each day, I became more convinced I was going to die in the jungle.

I should have died when the helicopter went down.

The Rangers were getting thumped in a firefight. We were rushing to reinforce them, with too many bodies loaded into SIA choppers. I was in one of the middle choppers, mingled in with men from two platoons. One was a big black sergeant of about 35 who was flashing a grin, almost relishing the action. He was duo to. Process home in three days, but had decided to fly one last mission with his squad.

The pilots flew at treetop level in a tight formation, hugging the curves of a river. The men shifted with each turn watching the green canopy slide past the hatch, hoping out altitude and speed would catch the VC gunners before they could get a shot.

"Grenade!"

The explosion ripped through the men crouched in the center of the compartment, killing several instantly. A rifle muzzle had caught the pin on a grenade and tugged it off the soldier's chest. A shard caught the pilot in the back of the neck. He slumped forward, sending the chopper into a tight downward spin.

The river surged up to meet us. Several men bailed out as the chopper plunged into the water. They were shredded by the splintering rotors. I scrambled over several dead soldiers and hurled myself through the hatch a few seconds before the C4 and grenades erupted and swallowed the helicopter, incinerating the wounded.

The other Hueys circled back to rescue the survivors. There were only two of us. I sloshed from one body to the next, praying for a scream, a twitch. Then I came to the black sergeant, lying on his back at the edge of the river. He looked unhurt. Maybe he's just gone into shock, I thought as I grabbed the front of his fatigues and heaved him out of the coppery water. Suddenly, the nausea came. His face was just a mask - - the back of his head was missing.

The company assembled in loose formation, wondering why the captain had summoned us from our dens. It was January, 1972, the middle of the monsoon season. We had just concluded another grueling, month -long tour in the bush. Nobody wanted to spend another second in the downpour without a damn good reason. The captain considered us for a moment, then asked for volunteers for special operations in Cambodia. Before anyone could react, he spat out a disclaimer: "If you get caught out there, as far as the Army is concerned, you were never there. "

A half dozen of us volunteered. After the helicopter crash, I had prepared myself to accept death, so I charged it head-on.

The VC and NVA used Cambodia as a hideout, knowing we could not pursue them over the border. The Army did it anyway. We were a trained six -man sniper team, picked from different companies. We were sent to kill village organizers and enemy leaders. It was bi-national cat-and - mouse, with both sides ignoring political boundaries to slash at the other.

My team moved at night. A chopper would drop us across the Cambodian border a few kilometers from the target. Army Intelligence gave us the coordinates of villages helping the VC. We traveled light, humping through the jungle with our M - 14 sniper rifles. The target villages were usually surrounded by a thick wall of foliage, providing us the perfect observation nest. I remember watching the villages stir to life with the first rays of day, church bells chiming, livestock yapping and grunting in disagreement.

Now it was my eye framing bodies in the crosshairs. My vigil lasted all day, as I became familiar with the community's rhythms. We were close enough to hear their voices, trilling in a strange tongue. By late afternoon, we knew who issued the orders. Those were the ones who died.

The rifle would kick, the spotter would call out the result, and we would retreat into the jungle's webbed arms as the first shouts echoed through the village. Sometimes we chose two targets, shooting simultaneously when the spotter dropped his arm. We never missed.

The escapes were pure adrenaline. Once we almost barrel led into a company of NVA as they passed down a jungle trail. I did my best to become one with a thick bush, ignoring the ants crawling inside my fatigues for a free meal. The NVA soldiers swaggered by, talking and whistling just 15 yards from us. I could almost make out the color of their eyes. For once, I was glad to be in Cambodia. The NVA were completely at ease here. This was their territory.

Usually we saw no one. After a kilometer or so, we could relax and wait for the night to sweep into the trees. The would return to the designated coordinates to steal us back over the border before daybreak.

Officially, it never happened.

I worked in covert special operations for the remainder o my tour, bobbing in and out of Cambodia at least ten time between January and April, 1972, for the First Cavalry. I learned to obey my instincts. They had to be coaxed to the surface, but they never misled me. A twinge would warn me away from danger.

Strangely, I cannot remember the names of my friends in Vietnam. I recognize the men whose pictures are on my walls and in my photo albums - - one was Panamanian, another was from North Carolina, another a Puerto Rican from the Bronx. We exchanged addresses, but nobody called or wrote. Somewhere between Bien Hoa, Cambodia, and home, my mind erased some of the details and left me with only lingering images. I left it all behind, even the bayonete I

had taken off the sapper I killed.

Nixon was bringing home more and more GIs, dropping troop strength in Vietnam below 100,000 for the first time in more than six years. My tour was cut short by four months. As I left the firebase, I took the traditional "freedom flight, " perched on the skid of a chopper with a smoke grenade hissing from my boot as the pilot circled the perimeter. My buddies were clapping and cheering. Others looked at me dejectedly. It was April, 1972, eleven years after President Kennedy began sending troops to Vietnam. President Gerald Ford would not declare the conflict finished until three years later.

I was going home. Alive.

Three

Homecoming

Pharr, Texas - 1972

My transition back to civilian life was rooted in silences. The first was on the plane leaving Vietnam, a taut, ominous quiet as soldiers sat shoulder-to-shoulder in the jet, sharing an unspoken fear. Fingers dug into armrests. The flight crew was somber. There were no jokes, no happy chatter from the uniformed passengers as the engines whined to life and pushed the liner down the tarmac. Everyone on board knew the Viet Cong liked to salute departing GIs by blasting their planes out of the sky. The silence tightened around us as the plane accelerated and lurched into the air.

When we reached 33,000 feet and leveled off, the compartment erupted with cheers and applause. We were safe. "Next stop, the Philippines," the flight attendant chimed. After stops in Hawaii, Washington, and San Antonio, my last flight swooped over the flat, familiar patchwork of home.

Then another, more familiar silence. My father was at the gate in McAllen's tiny airport. As I approached, he searched my eyes, saying nothing for a few moments as we studied one another. Some of the soldiers around us were locked in bearhugs with tearful parents and wives. Not my father and me.

He was always a quiet, simple role model: President of the PTA, a 10- year school board member. He worked hard, as if his next paycheck would have to sustain the family indefinitely. My first memories are of my father in a Pharr Police Department uniform and a badge, patrolling the narrow, pitted streets lined with small frame houses and flat-faced storefronts. He later traded the uniform for a suit and a bigger paycheck, working

behind a desk in the county tax assessor's office before finishing his career as an immigration law consultant for a local law firm.

My father greeted me with his usual composure, an old officer afraid to reveal his feelings to his favorite recruit. In my freshly pressed dress uniform, I felt like the little boy he used to dress in a military uniform and play soldier with. If anything, Vietnam had hardened me into a younger version of him: Disciplined, driven toward perfection, frugal with my thoughts and

emotions.

Finally, he broke the silence: "Did you see a lot of action?"

"Some. "

We walked to the car.

When we pulled into the driveway, the front door opened as I cut through dad's manicured lawn to the house. My mother stood in the doorway with my grinning sisters in a cluster behind her. She looked at me for a warm moment with tear - rimmed eyes, then wrapped her arms around my neck and kissed me. Her perfume enveloped me. I was home.

Diana and Melinda peppered me with questions about Vietnam, most of which I evaded. But San Juanita was the most excited to see me. She bounced and hugged me, squeezing the breath out of me. She had not understood what was happening until I left for Vietnam.

My mother insisted my father drive us straight to "San Judita" - the St. Jude Thaddeus Shrine in Pharr, where she had maintained a vigil since I left for Vietnam. "She was at San Judita every day you were gone to pray and light candles," Diana whispered to me as we drove. "Sometimes she woke me up in the middle of the night and made me drive her there to pray. She would forget whether she had gone earlier in the day. "

We walked silently over the winding brick paths toward the massive open-air altar. I drank in the scent of the magnolias, listened to the whispering pal m fronds towering above St. Jude's sculptured gardens. After months in the jungle, the feeling of order and safety enveloping the shrine was almost overwhelming. As we knelt on the worn pews, I saw my picture on the altar, lit by flickering candlelight. There were other photos pasted and taped around it. The serious faces of young men in uniform stared back at me. I said a silent prayer for them.

Our family was always very religious. We were fixtures at st. Margaret's Catholic Church in Pharr, where I attended Catholic school under the sharp eyes of German nuns who seemed to glide over the ground in floor -length habits.

I smiled to myself at the memory. Catholic school. The nuns. The endless prayers. The musty closet where I was once locked up for misbehaving. Catholic school and I never agreed. I made it to the third grade.

I was expelled along with 16 other boys who finally tripped the nuns' trigger tempers for the last time. The nuns declared me a borderline incorrigible years before, branding my misdeeds into my palms with their rulers.

Naturally, the final incident began with a dare. My co conspirators and I had puzzled over the same mystery Catholic students everywhere were dying to solve: what do they wear under there? Being the borderline incorrigible in the

group, I snuck up behind a tall, black figure - - a stern - faced, blue - eyed nun we called Sister Sana - - grabbed the bottom of her habit with both fists and heaved. For a fleeting glimpse of Sister Sana's cotton bloomers, we were banished to public school forever.

Despite this smudge on my record, I was considered a decent kid by most adults. I was a Boy Scout in Lorenzo Garcia's troop 262, an altarboy at St. Margaret's, and a bit actor in school plays. Public school suited me better, anyway. I felt I was actually learning something useful, rather than wasting the day reciting prayers in a squeaky counterpoint to the nuns' devout voices. Now I was home safe, ready to give thanks. I learned the value of prayer again in the foxholes, longing to join the villagers when their church bells sang each morning. I was ready to pray now. St. Jude stared down at me placidly, wrapped in his gold trimmed robes and clutching his staff. The cavernous shrine, a gray stucco arch where thousands of pilgrims had silently rubbed rosary beads, glowed with the muted light of a hundred white candles. We stopped at the pew and kneeled as a family again, bowing our heads. My mother cleared her throat, breaking the spell as she led us in prayer: "Gracias a Dios, por entregar me lo todo completo. " Thank you, God, for bringing him back to me in one piece.

By the time the waitress slid a huge steak in front of me at the restaurant an hour later, I was convinced I was dreaming. Real

beef. Real ice cream. My mother, my father, my sisters talking happily around me. Cloth napkins. At any moment, I expected the whump of a shell to wake me up back in Vietnam, shaking and alone.

I lived in my old room at home for a year. The family routine had not changed. It was as if I had walked out the front door one day, then come through the back door the next. My mother still cooked flour tortillas every morning, my sisters still wore the dresses she fashioned from the floral -print flour sacks, my father still trooped to the slaughterhouse every Saturday for his grinning cow's head. And that first night home, the 10 o'clock Southern Pacific rattled down the tracks as I pulled the blanket from my bed and tried to find a comfortable spot on the floor.

The bronze star came a few weeks later. It expressed my country's gratitude for some unnamed gallantry performed in the line of duty in March, 1972. 1 knew it was for something I had done with the sniper team Cambodia. My father refused to believe me when he pressed for details and I responded with a blank look, then replied, "I'm not sure."

Slowly, my life began to find the well-worn groove I left behind. It never fit perfectly again. That summer, I enrolled in criminology courses at Pan American University in Edinburgh, a short drive from home. I looked up a few old friends, but found we no longer had anything in common. I drove around town, looking at the same buildings and streets and faces with new eyes. I dated a few girls, but never got serious. I was 22 years old and had my life before me. I was taking nothing for granted.

I became a loner, seeking out other Vietnam survivors. I joined the Army Reserve, then the National Guard, where fellow vets congregated, sprinkled among young men finishing the six-year stints they started when the shadow of Vietnam loomed over them. For some reason, I had to remain a soldier. It would be four years before I could let go and quit the Guard.

Before long, all my friends were veterans. They were the only people who understood. At home, I brushed off my family's lingering questions about the war with vague answers until they surrendered in frustration. With fellow vets, I could remove the veil and talk about what I had seen through the crosshairs.

I did not consider myself scarred by Vietnam. I was proud to have served my country. I paraded around campus in my fatigues, strutting like a gang member in his colors, my dappled green fatigues blending into a growing throng of student/ veterans.

There were hundreds of Vietnam vets on campus, like me, taking advantage of the GI bill. Without it, most of us could never have dreamed of a college degree. With boots and backpacks, we roamed the place like a veterans' mafia.

I joined the veteran's organization at Pan American and became part of its student government ticket. My interest in politics was minimal, but with an eye on a law enforcement career, I ran for the attorney general seat. I won easily. The job was a natural for me. I was the campus election officer, enforcing election codes, making sure the candidates followed the proper procedures, and sitting in on the occasional campus meeting to see that parliamentary procedures were honored. I also threw my limited clout behind student body president Eddie de la Garza, who would later become a state representative, to fight for more student loans and scholarship money.

The anti -war movement never really took hold in the Rio Grande Valley. We read about the protests in Washington and other distant cities with astonishment. The Valley has always sent more than its share of young men to fight for America. When American troops fired shots anywhere in the world, the Valley wore its patriotism on its sleeve.

The most overt anti-war demonstrations came from the brown berets, members of La Raza Unida who gained most of their Chicano power from the farm workers. They despised virtually anything Uncle Sam did, staging marches to take their case to a largely indifferent public.

I spent that summer rebuilding my life, carving an island of serene sanity for myself as I pushed Vietnam memories to the furthest reaches of my mind. In time, they came only at night. I

attended class by day, and at night I worked the I I -to-7 shift w a dispatcher for Edinburgh Police Department -- my summer internship.

I worked like a demon and landed a permanent dispatcher job the following summer. I was on a mission. When I was forced to choose between work and school, or sleep, or women, work always won. It was expected.

As a teenager, I became a workaholic in my father's image. If I wanted school clothes or a car, they came out of my pocket. With work scarce for Valley teens, I looked north. Each summer starting in junior high school I boarded a bus to Chicago, where I worked in a restaurant called The Coffee Shop my aunt Bea Cerrato managed in O'Hare Airport. We were up at 4:30 every morning, trudging into the restaurant to the smell of the day's first pot of coffee. I bussed tables, washed dishes, and helped out in the kitchen. During the school year, I worked stocking shelves for minimum wage at the Winn's department store ten miles away in Hidalgo, a little town hugging the Rio Grande.

As 1974 melted into 1975, everything was coming together. I drank in every detail of my criminology lectures, figuring how to apply my lessons to the streets when the time came. I paid particular attention to any mention of drug laws. When I became a federal agent, they would be my weapons.

In January, 1975, after six months as a dispatcher, I jumped to a patrol car. I was 25 years old. Becoming a cop seemed natural after being a soldier. I loved the discipline, the order. My father supported my decision, watching my progress like a man gazing into a time warped mirror. My mother, as I expected, could not understand why I sought out such a dangerous job after surviving the war. She could also see my father's blood pushing me along his footsteps, and it frightened her.

After training with a veteran officer for a few days, I was alone on the streets, taking the next step toward what I hoped would be a career cracking down on the drug trade.

I bought into the image of a Texas cop: Spit -shined boots, a nickel -plated .357 magnum pistol tucked into a holster on my hip, and a lead foot. I was determined to be the most aggressive cop the department had. I considered it a personal failure if another officer beat me to a crime scene, no matter what part of town. More often than not, the first badge the victim saw was number 122.

There was a reason the older cops took their time. The job quickly became mundane. We worked small town crime: burglaries, mostly, with a steady flow of auto accidents, speeding tickets, and drunk husbands beating their wives and kids. My Vietnam instincts helped. On burglary in progress calls, I parked a block away from the address and crept toward the house, just as I had done with the guards at Cam Ranh Bay. Running over level ground with nobody shooting at me, it was almost easy. It got to the point where I could catch them in the house, still picking through the valuables.

Still, I enjoyed my work. The Valley was a quiet, conservative farm belt, studded with endless rows of citrus trees, onions, cotton, cabbage and other cash crops thriving on the rich alluvial deposits from the Rio Grande. Gangs,

murders and drug abuse were almost unheard of. The sparkling sands of South Padre island were a short drive to the east, where salty winds swept over the Gulf of Mexico to beat back the relentless heat. My father and I spent many mornings hi p -deep in the shallow bay between the island and the mainland, casting for speckled trout and redfish. In the autumn, I pulled on my fatigues and picked through the cactus and mesquite, hunting dove. In the winter, I stalked white -tailed deer. Valley life was nothing exciting, but it was the kind of place where you could raise a family.

The weeks and months blurred into one another. Watergate, the Paris agreement ending the war, and the fall of Saigon in 1975 all slid by like summer clouds, casting a brief shadow before blowing away.

Then I met Noe on a warm night in Reynosa, the sprawling Mexican city across the river from McAllen. When she walked up to me and introduced herself, I recognized her immediately. Noelia Rodriguez worked at the Sonic on University Drive in Edinburgh, a drive -up burger stand popular with cops for its cheap burgers and chili dogs. I stopped there occasionally for dinner as my shift started, calling my order into the little speaker, and then watching Noe hop from car to car filling orders. She had a delicate face and beautiful auburn-tinged hair, short and straight, with the creamy brown skin we called "perlada. " When we bumped into one another at the Reynosa nightclub, I immediately asked for her phone number. The next day, I called and invited her to the movies.

She was 17 when we started dating. Her parents hated the idea of their daughter dating a cop, but Noe refused to listen. She was a head-strong, take-charge girl. We saw each other every chance we could, catching movies at the PanAm Drive-In across from campus, lazing on the beach or dancing at The Rose Monaco, a local disco. Before I realized it, I had stopped seeing other women. I was in love for the first time in my life. We were nearly inseparable for the next two years.

Shortly before I met Noe, the department promoted me to CID - the criminal investigations division. I became a detective sergeant, with a dramatic increase in my workload to go along with the jump in rank * Patrolmen can go home at the end of a shift; investigators work around the clock. I would arrest someone at midnight, then drag myself into court early the next morning for the arraignment. The criminal would get a few hours sleep in jail. I didn't. Although I missed the instant gratification of patrol, I appreciated the meticulous work of picking apart a crime scene. We were jacks of all trades, experts in fingerprinting, interrogations, photography, and interviewing witnesses.

Even better, the promotion gave me a chance to go after dopers.

Marijuana, cocaine, and heroin - - the big three at the time roared through Edinburgh every day on their trek north. The city straddled U.S. Highway 281, one of only three routes out of the Valley. It was also the most

direct route from the Reynosa, Mexico, area to San Antonio, Dallas, and the rest of America. From time to time, the dispatcher's phone would ring with a tip about another shipment headed from Mexico. We would jot down the license number and the time the load departed and lie in ambush.

If it sounded like a major load, we called in the drug cavalry. The Texas Department of Public Safety and the local Sheriff's office both had effective drug units, but I leaned toward the Drug Enforcement Administration, a relatively new federal agency created specifically to stop the kind of senseless death I had witnessed day after day in Vietnam, and was beginning to see in my hometown as the traffickers fed and expanded their small clique of users.

Whenever I got a tip on a big load, I called Chema Cavazos and jesse Torrez at the DEA office in McAllen. In exchange, they let me work the case with them. Both were senior agents: Cavazos, a former Customs officer who was now a DEA group supervisor, was light skinned and heavy- set with thick glasses. Torrez was dark complexion and slim, with short, wavy hair. Both wore guayaberas, the open -necked shirts favored by many men in the hot climate, which gave them the look of a border Laurel and Hardy team. They seemed eager to work with a young local police officer who showed an interest in their work. I had more than a passing interest. I wanted to jump to the DEA as soon as possible.

Working drug cases in Edinburgh did not require much creative detective work. There was one major hotel, the Echo, where most of the out-of-town traffickers conducted their business. We spent many nights in the parking lot, watching them come and go as we waited to get enough evidence to pounce. We knew who most of them were, anyway. The drug network in the Rio Grande Valley was small, as were the amounts transported. Two hundred pounds of marijuana or two kilos of cocaine was considered a big seizure. Ten years later, seizures that size would become routine.

By then, I had a good network of informants throughout the community. I spent a lot of time on the street where people could see and talk to me. It was a simple arrangement. They were typically ordinary citizens with knowledge of drug activity, and a strong desire to rid their community of it. When they learned of a shipment, they called me and I arrested the dopers. No money changed hands. I kept my part of the bargain by simply keeping their identities secret.

Working on the border meant dealing with the Mexican police. Cavazos and Torrez were experts. When my informants fed me information about a load coming over the river, they immediately called the Mexican federal police and set up an appointment.

Crossing the bridge into Reynosa left no doubt you were leaving the United States and entering Mexico. The narrow

streets of old Reynosa zigged past rows of low slung stucco and concrete block houses.

On the weekends, tourists and teenagers streamed across the river to fill the gift shops, liquor stores, and bars crowding the Zona Rosa a few blocks from the bridge. Wherever they went, they attracted a scraggly train of hawkers and children selling gum. They also attracted the police, a largely corrupt network Of squads who saw tourists as an easy target for bogus traffic stops and extra cash.

The Mexican federales were a bunch of cowboys, no discipline whatsoever.

The first time I trailed the DEA agents into the Mexican feds' office, they invited us along on a raid. It was my initiation into their version of border drug enforcement.

The raid was a controlled delivery. The federales waited until the load of hashish reached the target house, owned by a customs broker across the bridge in Hidalgo. We burst into the house, - the Mexicans forced the seven men inside to the floor. They cracked the top off a wooden crate d the hash, smiling to each other.

The federales suddenly turned ugly, kicking and punching their captives mercilessly. I looked at Cavazos with an incredulous expression. He held up a silent hand. We were their guests.

One of the federales called to a little boy in the street-' handed him a rumpled handful of pesos and said "Bring me a six pack of Topo Chico. " The boy looked at him for a moment. I looked at Torrez, wondering why the Mexicans were ordering mineral water in the middle of a bust. He Offered no clues.

"Hot or cold?" the boy asked with a quizzical look.

"It doesn't matter. Go! "

By the time the boy returned with the bottles, the suspects' hands and feet were tightly bound. The federales led them hopping into the courtyard behind the house, then separated one from the group and positioned him below the ceiling beams jutting from the side of the house. One of the officers heaved a rope over the stout beam, quickly threading the other end through the man's bound feet.

Two of the Mexican officers grabbed the dangling end of the rope and grunted, yanking the squirming prisoner upside down until his head swayed three feet off the ground like a pendulum. I glanced around the group. The captives were wide-eyed and silent. The Mexican police smiled coldly. Nobody in the street could see what was about to happen behind the high walls of the tiny courtyard. The officer who had ordered the water swung the dangling

figure toward him, squeezing the man's head between his knees so he could not move. He popped the top off one of the bottles, shook it vigorously with his thumb over the opening, then shot the foaming soda down the suspect's nose, where it burned its way into his sinuses.

The federales looked at one another with sardonic smiles as the man choked, writhing in pain. The water ran from his nose and mouth. He moaned, "Please don't kill me."

The questioning began. "Who does the hashish belong to? Who imported it for you? What was its destination?" The hanging captive cooperated fully, as did most of his comrades. The two who decided to keep their mouths shut received the same treatment. They talked too. They were all locals, traffickers who ran hash and marijuana across the border by bribing customs officials at the bridge.

After a few trips to Mexico, I realized torture was standard police procedure with dopers. The unlucky and the uncooperative were hung from a beam, doused with water and jolted with a battery powered cattle prod, which buzzed menacingly before biting into their damp skin. The police called it "chicharra. " The cicada.

I applied for a job with DEA in 1977, almost immediately after receiving my criminology degree from Pan American. The agency had not hired anyone from South Texas in years, I was told, and to make matters worse, the government was in the midst of a hiring freeze.

I had almost forgotten about the application when the call came, nearly three years later. I was told to report to San Antonio to appear before their board for an oral exam. Several hundred applicants were vying for a couple of spots with the agency, I discovered as I sat nervously outside the conference room. About 30 of us had been chosen to take the oral boards, including several other Mexican -Americans. Rumor had it DEA was under pressure to hire more Hispanics. That did not make me feel any better.

I never liked quotas. l just wanted the chance to compete equally with everyone else. Some of the other hopefuls compared notes

I was flying by the seat of my pants, hoping my military and police background would give me an edge.

Chema called a few weeks later, on New Year's Eve, 1979 with the good news. I rushed to his Edinburgh office, where h swore me in at his desk. There were no trumpets blaring, n ceremony, but in my mind, my real drug war had begun.

In the weeks before I was to enter DEA school in Washing ton D - C - 9 1 threw myself into my new job, once again trying t be the first cop at the scene. I was quickly given the opportunity to prove my dedication.

One of the agents approached me in the office with a manila folder.

We've got a case you can help us with. We've been watching a guy from Edinburgh for a while. Looks like a trucker turned trafficker, and he's getting big. He's been picking up heroin and cocaine in Las Milpas, then taking it to Chicago. in his trucks. I was eager to get to work.

"What's his name?" I asked.

"Martinez. He's Your girlfriend's stepfather. "

My stomach lurched. Noe never said a word to me about her stepfather being involved with narcotics.

I confronted Noe the next day. She spilled the entire story almost relieved to shed her burden. She said her stepfather was' freebasing cocaine, becoming more paranoid and abusive. He thought he was being watched, so he pulled Noe, her mother, and her sister into his web, insisting they drive to Victoria, 240 miles away, to pick up bundles of cash. On another trip, he told Noe and her sister to drive to Illinois with a load of contraband. Her sister concealed the package in her clothing until they reached the buyer's house in Peoria.

"Why didn't you come to me?" I asked.

"He said if he was busted he would invent some story and have us thrown in jail too. "

I was livid. Noe never even took aspirin for headaches, much less used drugs. Her stepfather had been running heroin and coke for years, she said. His illicit sideline became the family's darkest secret. They were trapped by fear and shame.

I wanted to take him down myself. I could not fathom a father involving his own wife and stepdaughter in trafficking. I called the office to explain the situation.

Although I built the case against Noe's stepfather, my fellow agents insisted on keeping my name out of the reports, explaining DEA rules prohibited agents from working cases involving their loved ones. I was nervous about the whole investigation: I had no intention of getting fired after my first month. My boss reassured me and asked me to keep feeding information to Bobby Clark, the agent in charge of the investigation. Clark continued writing his reports as if he were receiving the information directly. My eagerness would come back to haunt me.

In the end, Elias Martinez was betrayed by the family he betrayed. He was arrested, jumped bail, and became a fugitive, never suspecting Noe and her mother had brought the DEA to his door. In fact, he called them from his hiding place. A few days later, he was arrested in Victoria and delivered to prison.

I was ready to pack my bags for DEA school immediately. The longer I worked in McAllen, the less I liked what I saw.

The McAllen office had fractured into two cliques whose members tolerated each other in good times and refused to speak in bad times. One formed loosely around Chema Cavazos, the other around an agent named Terry Bowen. I was amazed at the depth of the resentment in the office, something I never sensed as an outsider working with the agents.

I was also shocked at some agents' disregard for some of the basic street rules I learned behind a police badge. They frequently burned their informants. I watched in disbelief as agents busted traffickers just minutes after the informant had made the buy, rather than waiting so the doper could not put two and two together and figure out who had snitched on him. Patience was a vital tool in drug busts: Informants were too valuable to bum, and there was always a next time.

Sometimes the operations degenerated into pure comedy.

I was with Cavazos and his group one night as we set up a perimeter around a K-Mart parking lot. Ten of us sat quietly in our vehicles, waiting for the undercover agent to make the buy Cavazos had orchestrated. Everyone was in position, waiting for the doper to arrive when Cavazos jumped out of his car and jogged across the parking lot.

I squinted through the darkness and saw a familiar face. Then two. Three. They were agents from our office, sitting in their vehicles and squinting back at us. I looked around at the other agents in my group, who returned my puzzled expression.

Everyone met in the middle of the parking lot as Cavazos hunted down the other group's supervisor.

"What the hell are you doing here?" the supervisor asked Cavazos.

"Buying. What are you doing?"

"Selling. "

We had set each other up for a bust, two groups of DEA agents, ready to arrest one another as dopers.

DEA school in Washington D.C. was boot camp all over again. Fifteen weeks of running every other day, climbing stairs ' shooting at silhouettes on the firing range, boxing, and whacking each other with padded sticks. In the classroom, we crammed like college seniors on federal drug laws, surveillance techniques, report writing, undercover work, and all the minutiae of being a soldier in the escalating drug war.

Some of the instructors wanted me to quit. They never said so directly, but they did not have to. Their eyes and voices revealed their true feelings: I had seen the same lightly masked disdain in the eyes of some of my teachers in the Valley, and again in the Army. I could sometimes overhear the instructors talking among themselves, punctuating their gripes with "goddamn Mexicans. " There were several other Hispanics in the class, all receiving the same unspoken messages. Extra laps for no apparent reason. Sudden orders to drop and do push - ups. A surly undertone when we were addressed. A couple of them dropped out in disgust.

It didn't bother me. I was in still in good shape, and the Army accustomed me to racist drill sergeants with volatile personalities. A few extra push - ups were a small price to pay for a DEA job. I finished, standing proudly with the class at the graduation ceremony as Kika de la Garza, my hometown Congressman, watched from the audience. I was ready to prove myself.

Just before graduation, my DEA counselor called me into his office. The agency was sending me to New York City for my first assignment. "Are you sure you have the right Castillo?" I asked, thinking he had confused me with the other Castillo in our class. He showed me the papers.

He launched into a speech about what a wonderful opportunity I was receiving from the agency. I was skeptical. There were a dozen places I thought I would be assigned, but New York was nowhere on the list. My counselor smiled, his eyes searching my face for a reaction. I had my marching orders. I shook his hand and swallowed my doubts.

Back in McAllen, I spent every spare moment with Noe, promising her I would come back. I had no intention of letting her go. Just before I left town, one of my informants called with information about a two kilo cocaine deal about to take place at the Hilton. I reached for the phone to call my office, then set it back in the cradle. I did not trust them. I found the number of a DPS narcotics agent I knew would protect my informant.

I hoped things would be better in New York.

Four

The Planet Manhattan

New York City - 1980

I hated New York immediately. After landing at La Guardis Airport, I took a taxi through choking traffic to a hotel in Queens, where I would live until I found my own nook in the concrete canyons. The next morning, my first crowded subway ride took me to 555 West 57th Street, where the DEA office was located in the Ford Building. In less than a day in the big city, I was overwhelmed. Not even in Vietnam had I felt so lost and alone. Nobody seemed to give a damn about anyone else as they elbowed their way through the throng. Every blaring car horn and sour glance reinforced my aversion to the city I did not work. I wanted to go home.

I had asked to be assigned somewhere with a large Mexican American community, where I could put my language and cultural knowledge to work. Instead, I was going to be the first Mexican American in the DEA's New York City Division Office. I was like a lost child, gawking at the towering landscape as I approached the office on the west side of Manhattan, a block from the Hudson River.

The people crammed into the elevator gave me a peculiar look as I pushed my way inside. The men wore shirts and ties, the women skirts and conservative blouses. It was the dawning of the Reagan era: The federal government was Republican territory again. I looked like a Carter holdover in my best boots, a straw cowboy hat, and jeans. I locked my eyes on the doors until they parted.

The receptionist directed me to the office of Jeffrey Hall, the supervisor for Enforcement Group 6. My new family, I thought sarcastically. He invited me into his office with a college bOY's smile and a firm grip. Hall was a Harvard graduate, a short, baby - faced former collegiate wrestler who looked like he got lost on the way to the dorms. He wore jeans, tennis shoes with no socks, and a maroon Harvard T-shirt with a hole in the side.

I looked around the spartan office for a moment. There were no plaques or photos on the walls. The office contained little more than a desk and window looking out on the city.

Jeff got straight to the point. "The first thing you have to do is get rid of that hat," he said. "The only people who wear cowboy hats here are queers."

Something inside snapped like a brittle twig. I tossed my badge and my gun on his desk. "I'm quitting. I'm going back home. "

He cocked his head and studied me for a moment, then rolled his eyes toward the window. "Why?"

"This is New York City. What the hell am I going to do here? I've got no relatives, I've got no friends..."

Jeff squinted at the skyline again. "I'll tell you what. Take off. Go find a place to live, and come back when you're ready to work. "

I suddenly felt ridiculous. I sheepishly collected my belongings from his desk. "Shit, you're right. I've come this far. I guess I'll give it a try. "

For days, I walked through Queens, trying to find a studio apartment I could afford on my small salary. I finally found a matchbox apartment on the top floor of a brownstone near Shea Stadium. I took it without even inspecting it. It was not a wise decision. I could have fit the entire $600 - a - month apartment into a garage and still had room for my car. The kitchen was barely large enough for one person. My legs almost stuck out the bathroom door when I sat on the toilet. I moved in my few belongings: a small twin bed, a small TV, a dining table with four wooden folding chairs, a few dishes, and my clothes.

I immediately called home, longing for a familiar voice. I told my father of my urge to flee the city. He sided with Jeff , using his stern officer's tone. "You worked so hard to become a federal agent, and now you're a federal agent and you're going to quit? You go out there and try, and if you don't like it, then you come home. 9' There was no discussion.

As I hung up, the building shook. I threw open the back window and watched the tail of a Long Island Railroad trail disappear down the tracks. I groaned. The trains rocked the room every hour for the rest of the night as I stared at the ceiling, trying to fight my anxiety, trying to sleep.

A week after our first meeting, I knocked on Jeff 's door. H studied me with an approving nod. I had swapped my boots for; tennis shoes and stuffed my hat in the closet.

"Are you ready to go to work?" he asked with a boyish grin*n.

"Yeah. I guess I am. "

DEA's New York office was the largest in the country, with nine enforcement groups, an intelligence section to keep us patched in with other parts of the country, and a task force made up of DEA agents, New York Police Department narcotics agents, and state police. I was impressed. We had a seemingly unlimited supply of money for surveillance, undercover work, and busts. We had a huge network of talented informants. Our bosses wanted to prove America was winning the drug war. I wanted to help prove them right.

The 15 or so agents in our group were known as "Jeff's Raiders, " a nickname that reflected Hall's reckless abandon. The other group members considered him 6 6 an agent's agent," the highest compliment DEA grunts can give a supervisor. They also considered him certifiably nuts, swapping stories of Jeff storming into buildings, taunting drug dealers, and otherwise ignoring good sense. I found him odd at the very least, breaking off a thought in mid -sentence, then glancing around the room as if I had suddenly become invisible. But he was one of the most intelligent people I had ever met. He had a prejudiced streak: Jeff did not like female or minority agents. I think my work ethic impressed him we were both workaholics. So we became friends.

It took me six months to get over the culture shock of New York. I spent my first few weekends alone in my apartment, running up the phone bill with lonely calls to my family and to Noe, whose voice magnified my urge to go home. During one late-night conversation, a light clicked on. I realized then I ,wanted to marry her, as soon as I could . Meanwhile, I was trapped in a tiny box inside a steel maze. In time, I surrendered to the city. I took my new DEA car exploring. On Sundays, I ate breakfast at some small diner, or treated myself at the Tavern on the Green in Central Park, then basked on the grass with The New York Times. After a movie in Manhattan, I would drive home to Queens. As I became more adventurous, I caught Broadway plays, sampled Radio City Music Hall, and watched movie stars flash into theaters for world premieres.

I slowly made friends and developed the love-hate relationship with New York so common among long -time residents. I learned to drive like a predator. I went to cop bars and cop parties with Puerto Rican and Cuban friends from DEA and NYPD. I fell in love with the food: Cuban dishes at Victor's Cafe in Manhattan, Puerto Rican feasts at a hundred little neighborhood cafes, real Chinese food in Chinatown. I went to the same little deli every morning for a fresh ham, egg and cheese bagel sandwich. I even learned to like coffee.

My first partner, Louis Diaz, was famous in New York law enforcement circles for his role in busting Nicky Barnes, Jr., " the black Al Capone. " Barnes was the biggest doper in Harlem before Diaz helped send him away for life. Diaz was a jumble of contrasts: He was a gentleman, raised by Spanish parents in a tough Brooklyn neighborhood, who went on to roam the streets armed with a psychology degree and an impressive amateur boxing record. He taught me how to think, talk, and dress like a New York agent. I settled into a rhythm, driving to his house every morning for bagels and eggs with his family before we set Out for my next on-the-job lesson.

After a few weeks, when I learned enough to survive on the streets, Jeff's Raiders welcomed me into their fold. I wanted to see if the group fit its swash buckling nickname. For weeks, the other agents tried to make me squirm, shaking their heads sullenly when they learned I had become a member of Group 6. "1 hope You've got good insurance, " one agent said with sarcastic drama. "Wear your vest. "

Group 6 was the embodiment of the Reagan-style drug war. The new president

wanted action, he wanted results, and he wanted them quickly. Drug treatment programs were gutted in

favor of more interdiction .Our budget increased. Our D chiefs welcomed the largess, but on the Street, we were pressured to repay the favor with numbers. I soon discovered why the Raiders were the most productive unit in the New York office. Quality had become a slave to quantity.

Everything I learned in DEA school went out the window This was the real thing; lock and load your weapons and hunting for dopers. We were every drug dealer's nightmare, angry pack of federal agents wrapped in flak jackets, carrying Smith & Wesson .357 revolvers. Jeff always led the charge kicking doors open and screaming "Hit the floor! " as a river navy DEA windbreakers poured into the room. We once scared doper's pet Chow so badly it jumped through a window an dropped six stories to its death.

We operated like a Vietnam platoon, conducting search and destroy operations on the streets. More dopers always followed, instantly filling in the gaps. For important cases, we di things by the book. For the minor Junkies, traffickers, an dealers, most of them illegal aliens who would not complain about their civil rights, we made their lives hell to shut them down for the night. There were just too many of them and too few of us,

I remember Jeff telling me, "The system doesn't work. You'll arrest those bastards and they'll be out the next day, back on the streets. " We made up new rules as we barreled through the dark streets, crashing into dopers' houses and apartments. We did away with reading their rights. We conducted illegal searches and seizures. We didn't care about prosecutions. We simply tossed them in jail for a night and took another ounce or kilo off the streets.

The internal affairs office was always watching, but we were protected by the cluster of New Yorkers in DEA's Washing ton headquarters. They were known in the agency as the "New York Mafia," and they made sure no messy internal investigations got in the way of the numbers. We were connected.

Cocaine was king in New York, bursting back from relative obscurity to become yet another lucrative underworld business. It came by land, by sea, by air, spreading ecstasy and anguish and money, so much money. Colombians were bringing it into America any way they could, feeding their new cash cow and milking it for dollars. The powder washed away class distinctions.

We were busting weak, watery-eyed junkies along with the silver spoon set who came to crave coke.

The poorest neighborhoods of New York soon became a sort of coke-crazed Dodge City. Dominican gangs perfected a new technique to deliver more bang for fewer bucks. They mixed powdered cocaine with baking soda or "comeback," a chemical similar to the prescription anesthetic lidocaine, then cooked the mixture until it formed solid, rock-like cocaine crystals. Crack was born.

With cocaine now affordable to the masses, the Dominicans, supplied by the Cali cartel in Colombia, conquered block after block with the city's hottest new high. Everyone wanted a piece of the action, and the neighborhoods where turfs collided became war zones. NYPD drug busts jumped by nearly half my first year in the city. Between 1980 and 1985, the number would triple. It was Prohibition all over again, machine guns blazing from screeching cars and rival gang members bleeding in the streets. The rum runners of the 1920s would live again in the crack lords of the '80s. The Jamaicans turned the savage cottage industry into a nationwide conquest, sending street-wise entrepreneurs across America to establish crack houses. Thousands of lives would be shredded in the process.

Cocaine was like an old starlet, making a comeback in trendy clothes. But smack remained New York's darling.

Shortly after I arrived, the agency placed a new emphasis on heroin. In the late '70s, the drug had made a leap out of the ghettos into the trendy disco circuit. Suddenly, DEA wanted heroin numbers. Naturally, Jeff's Raiders became the best damn heroin-busters in town. I thought back to the soldier I watched die, squirming, in a foxhole in Vietnam. I wanted to be the point man again.

We descended on Harlem's heroin network, lining up informants and greasing palms for names and addresses. The heroin dens were easy to spot. Shuffling addicts came in shifts for their fix, sharing needles in back rooms before shuffling back into the street, their hands swollen like balloons from collapsed veins. I saw young runaways with big -city dreams turned into toys for Harlem heroin dealers.

One undercover bust still bothers me. I was about to b from one of Harlem's typically flashy dealers, a huge black m decked out in gold and silk, when I asked the standard question "Is this good stuff?" He grinned and tilted his head back, calling to the back room. Two emaciated girls emerged. Neither look older than 14. "These are the girls who test my stuff, " he said handing them syringes. The girls stripped from the waist do smiling in anticipation. My jaw went slack as they plunked do in chairs and spread their legs, expertly guiding needles to t large vein in their groins. Their heads lolled dramatically as th testified to the heroin's quality with thick tongues. After I mad the buy, I told the other agents what had happened. They took th pusher down hard, taking special pains to leave their mark on hi as the girls were carted off to a shelter.

The scene was repeated a dozen times as we rampage through Harlem. My conscience screamed at me every time cracked the hinges off another door. I had always done everything by the book. Here they ripped out the pages and stomped on them I remember Jeff taking me aside one night and saying: "Look, Cele, this is the way we do things. We're a real close-knit group we keep to ourselves. " This is not right, I thought. But I didn't question his methods. I had a duty to uphold. I was a rookie, getting the best experience DEA had to offer, absorbing more in a few months than an agent in McAllen would learn in

a career. And I was finally wreaking havoc in the narcotic good on the vow I made in Vietnam. I loved it.

My first big solo case Went down on May 1, 1981, when I broke Elvia Garcia's heart. Elvia (not her real name) had become something of a legend among the agents in the task force, who tried to bust her for more than two years. She quietly became the neighborhood Pusher, selling cocaine out of her small house in Flushing. Elvia stayed in business with old-fashioned street smarts: She refused to sell to Anglos, blacks, or Puerto Ricans. She knew they could be cops. That left her a healthy pool of customers from other Latin American countries. In a city where Puerto Ricans, Salvadorans, and just about every other variety of Latin American could be found by the blockful, Mexicans were rare. I asked if I could try to wiggle past her defenses. A South American informant took me to her small row house and introduced me to the grand dame of the neighborhood. She came to the door in a conservative dress, a thin, old woman with pinned gray hair and delicate hands. I felt like I was about to bust my grandmother. She invited me in, leading me to the kitchen as she ran me through a polite cross-examination. In a thick Mexican accent, I told her I was a Mexican businessman traveling through the area. Strictly pleasure, I added with a smile. She relaxed.

Elvia reached into her purse, retrieving a small plastic bag packed with cocaine. The powder had j ust come in from Colombia, she said. Very high quality. I bought four ounces for $7,500, thanked her, and left. She welcomed me like a lost son when I returned a few weeks later for the big score: two kilos. The coke was waiting for me, neatly wrapped on the kitchen counter like a gift. I almost hated to bust her. I shook off the thought, telling her I needed to run out to my car to get the money. I gave the signal as soon as I reached the yard, disappearing before the task force agents stormed in. I did not want to see her led away in handcuffs. The agents also arrested another elderly woman who handled the books for their cocaine business. My stock rose immediately in the office.

I had less pity for Romero and Maria Moreno (not their real names), a Puerto Rican couple who ran an international cocaine smuggling operation out of the Bronx. They were the targets of a new DEA technique. Our bosses had explained the "reverse," and we were eager to try it. The reverse turned agents into dealers: Instead of posing as buyers, we began selling drugs to the bad guys, using seized cocaine to lure them into jail. The technique moved us higher up the drug food chain, busting the people who sold larger quantities. I was one of the first DEA agents to pull it off.

A Puerto Rican informant introduced me to the Morenos in the Holiday Inn on West 57th Street, a few blocks from our Offices. We found a booth in the bar and got down to business.

They were an attractive couple, a pair who would blend well in Manhattan's art galleries and charity balls. Moreno was the tall - dark and- handsome type, a friendly man who was written up in the local press for spending

$20,000 at a public television auction. The writers called Rosado and his first wife 6 4 enthusiastic, streetwise entrepreneurs. " They did not know how accurate they were. Now he had a new wife, Maria, who was their maid before he dumped his wife, and a growing cocaine operation.

He started the conversation with a warning. "If you're a cop, " he said with a slight grin, "then I'm talking to a dead cop. " I smiled. It was a common technique dopers used to measure prospective partners. Maria, an attractive, dark -skinned woman, immediately cut in: "If I don't like you, we don't do business. " Now I had two egos to contend with. I turned on the charm, showering her with compliments about her clothes and jewelry. She purred.

Moreno said his organization was strapped for cocaine. His supplier had dried up. He needed a couple of kilos to keep his customers happy. They wanted to buy one kilo at a time, but I insisted on delivering both kilos together. Making two deliveries increased my risks, I argued. I knew two kilos would keep them in business for at least three months. They could cut it with enough sugar to make six kilos, each yielding a thousand one-gram packets they could sell on the street for $100 each.

"If you trust me, you trust me, " I said, standing to leave. "If you don't, we don't do business. " After a couple more meetings, they agreed to buy two kilos for $ 100, 000.

On June 6, 1981, 1 drove to their apartment in a low-rent Puerto Rican neighborhood in the Bronx. They obviously wanted to cloak their wealth in the drab high-rise. Inside, the place looked like a Park Avenue penthouse, full of new electronic toys and expensive furniture.

Moreno took me to the bedroom and picked up a stack of documents from the bed. "This is how I stay ahead of the cops, " he said, leafing through the papers. They were intelligence reports from the FBI, CIA, and New York Police Department. I clenched my teeth, wondering if he had a mole in DEA and was preparing to kill me. Instead, he asked me to meet him at the Holiday Inn at a quarter to one that afternoon. I stifled a sigh of relief.

They arrived at exactly 12:45 in their blue Datsun. Maria clutched a blue bag containing a scale and a bottle of bleach, which drug runners used to test the purity of cocaine. I was waiting at the bar with our informant, who met the pair outside, took a peek at the money, then returned to his stool. "They only have $50,000, " he said. They wanted to sample the coke before they produced the other half of the money.

The rest of Jeff's Raiders were scattered throughout the hotel and on the street, waiting. Half will have to be good enough this tine, I thought as I gave the signal. After the agents arrested the pair, we searched the car and found

A $48,000 in a bag in the trunk, along with a safe deposit box key. Search warrant in hand, we opened the box and found another $49,000. By the time we

wrapped up the case, we had seized $131,000 in cash, $21,000 in jewelry, the Datsun, and a loaded revolver Maria was carrying. Romero and Maria went to prison. After this success, the reverse became standard procedure throughout New York.

Everything changed when Jeff got married. He found some sanity and lost his erratic aggressiveness. There were new house rules: He wanted us home with our families if we were not on the street. He also started what we came to call "Federal Fridays. " The office was almost deserted on Fridays. Cases were put off until Monday, and everyone was gone by 3 p.m. to beat the traffic. I stayed late anyway. I had nothing to go home to.

As the Moreno investigation wound down, I began working with Gerald Franciosa, a veteran New York agent who specialized in organized crime. Where Luis epitomized the urbane Latino gentleman, my new partner fit my image of a Mafioso perfectly: a tall, solid Italian with a mustache and dark haircombed straight back toward the collar of his expensive suit.

We became a team. In our street dramas, Gerry was the Italian mobster from out of town looking to buy or sell cocaine. I was his "South American connection." We began working undercover, busting minor Mafia types. Although every don in the city threatened their soldiers with death if they were caught dealing narcotics, neither the dons nor their men obeyed the

decree. We had plenty of work. I was the quiet half of the pair, letting Gerry negotiate, stammering in broken English when I was forced to speak. We thought we had our act down perfectly. It would have to be perfect. We were about to perform for a much more discriminating audience.

After a long stretch in prison Louis Boyce did not want to go back. Boyce emerged from his cell a grizzled old wolf, drooping at the chin and graying at the temples. He had just started dabbling in heroin when we nailed him.

DEA received court permission to tap Boyce's phone, so our agents knew when he planned to pick up his next delivery. They were waiting at the drop spot in Brooklyn when he picked up a brown paper bag with about a half pound of heroin. Faced with what could be his final trip to the penitentiary, the aging gangster decided to talk. He was actually quite pleasant about the whole thing. I expected bitterness and deception. Boyce gave us cheery cooperation.

In law enforcement jargon, Boyce had "flipped. " In the tightlipped underworld, Boyce turned snitch. He helped Gerry infiltrate a major heroin operation run out of East Harlem by two major crime families, the Luccheses and Bonannos. With Boyce paving the way with handshakes, Gerry met two of the operation's main men: Oreste "Ernie Boy" Abbamonte and Joseph "Joe the Crow" Delvecchio.

Boyce also betrayed his source, a Puerto Rican named William "Crazy Willie" Irizarry. He was the main distributor, the man who received the

shipments and broke the heroin into kilos, which Ernie Boy and Joe the Crow then sold. DEA rushed to the judge and tapped Crazy Willie's phones immediately, only to hit a brick wall: Nobody could understand a word Crazy Willie said. I was called in to break his code. His messages to his wife, who set up his deals, were an unintelligible jumble, like Spanish poured into a blender. I had never heard anything like it.

Gerry and Boyce did all the undercover work. I was selected to play their driver, steering the big rented Cadillacs while they rode like royalty in the leather back seat. Gerry was going through his courtship, earning the gangsters' trust with each meal and

glass of wine, chipping away at their inbred suspicion to cement the deal. Luckily, the gangsters trusted Boyce. They called him several times to make sure Gerry was okay. As we listened through the tapped lines, he reassured them his new connection could deliver.

I kept my mouth shut and drove, waiting in the car most of the time. While Gerry talked, waving his hands, I waited, watching for other mobsters. I studied our prey. I thought Gerry looked more gangster -like, but I knew they were the real item. Delvecchio was 38 and slim, a shade under six feet tall, with brown hair framing the beaked nose which inspired his nickname. His DEA sheet was impressive: 33 files documenting his heroin activities. Abbamonte was five years younger and the smaller of the two, with curly hair and a pronounced Adam's Apple. He was more prolific, with 38 DEA files bearing his name for the same heroin racket.

Ernie Boy and Joe the Crow preferred to do business in the city's best restaurants, high - dollar clubs, or over cards in Atlantic City. I shelled out a good portion of my paycheck to look the part. DEA was willing to pick up the tab for meals, drinks, and small gambling excursions, but we had to buy our own costumes. My mother would have fainted at the sight of me: raccoon fur coat, a thick gold bracelet with "Anthony, " my alias, written in diamonds, two cashmere suits, $500 shoes, and hundred-dollar ties.

The investigation began eating more and more of my time. When I was not driving Gerry and Boyce around, I was in the van helping with surveillance or listening to tapes of Crazy Willie's gibberish. I was working around the clock, wobbling in after long nights of surveillance to write my reports, a job Gerry detested. Thomas Cash, the assistant agent in charge, finally grabbed Gerry and literally locked him in his office for two days. He deputized an unsuspecting agent to stand guard, refusing to let Gerry out until he finished his backlogged reports.

The wiretaps brought new leads and more work. Every Phone call was analyzed until we had the names and addresses of a heroin network stretching across the metropolitan area. We filled in another vital link in the heroin chain: Lorenzo "Enzo" Di Chiara, who was in frequent contact with Joe the Crow and Ernie Boy. Di Chiara was the trans-Atlantic middleman, who made sure the heroin leaving Sicily reached New York safely.

After weeks of frustration, a Puerto Rican informant helped me break Crazy Willie's maddening code. His suggestion sounded too simple, but after I listened to the tapes again suddenly, the gibberish untangled itself into clear messages Crazy Willie was speaking Spanish Pig Latin, cutting off the beginning of each word and slapping it on the end, creating bizarre but simple code. I translated the tapes and pieced together his role in the operation. Crazy Willie was taking delivery of th heroin at his home, turning it into a warehouse for Joe the Cro and Ernie Boy and their gang of peddlers. Our list of names grew.

The investigation took 18 months. As the information from Gerry's meetings and our wiretaps mounted, we realized we were untangling the biggest heroin ring our eight -year-old agency had seen. By the fall of 1982, it seemed everyone in the office was working on some aspect of this case.

Jeff Hall was transferred to Washington D.C. as the case reached critical mass. He was replaced by John Land, an Arizona supervisor on the eve of retirement. Land had been investigated by DEA's Office of Professional Responsibility, then exiled to New York to serve his last year. OPR, our internal Gestapo, wanted to put him out to pasture. Instead, he was about to leave DEA in a burst of glory.

On October 20, 1982, Gerry got his first nibble. As I watched from a DEA taxi, posing as a cabby, Ernie Boy delivered three kilos of heroin in front of a diner, taking $150,000 as a down payment. Gerry promised to deliver the remaining $390,000 soon. Eight days later, they met again in Queens. Gerry asked for more time to pay the balance. Ernie Boy became a little annoyed and refused, claiming he had a man from Buffalo flying in to pick up the money. Gerry pushed, telling him he would get his $390,000 on November 3. Ernie Boy's eyes narrowed. Gerry quickly poured some sugar on the deal. If Ernie Boy could hold out until the third, Gerry would also bring $1.5 million in cash.

It was time to close the big deal they had negotiated for months.

Gerry let the image of stacked dollars dangle in front of the gangster, then yanked. Ernie Boy was hooked. He could wait a few more days for payment. On the third, he promised to bring 17 kilos to the Market Diner at 11th Avenue and 43rd Street. He would take the $1.5 million as a partial payment. The heroin would cost $3.06 million.

I could not imagine that much heroin and money in one place. Seventeen kilos. Almost 35 pounds of pure heroin, enough to kill every junkie in New York if you let them at it.

The deal went down November 3 as planned. It started out as planned, anyway. I was in a rental car with another agent, following Gerry's burgundy Cadillac to the diner. Gerry seemed almost at ease. I could feel myself sweating lightly, knowing half of $1.9 million from the U.S. Treasury was locked in a suitcase in the trunk. I looked around to find my bearings and locate the car with the other half of the money. Every move was choreographed

earlier, in the DEA conference room. Dozens of agents surrounded us, ' monitoring every move. I saw familiar faces trying to look nonchalant in rental cars, taxis, and on the sidewalk.

Taking down Ernie Boy and Joe the Crow was the main event. The plan was simple: Gerry would tell them the money was in another car, ready to be called in as soon as he saw the heroin. When they showed him the smack, we would move in and arrest them. Then the money would be rushed back to the office for safekeeping as teams of agents fanned through the New York area to bust the other members of the ring. Everything had to happen quickly, before someone sounded the alarm. If the other members were tipped off to the raid, we would chase shadows the rest of the night. Abbamonte and Delvecchio shook Gerry's hand as they scooted into a booth. I rolled down the car window. A light breeze stirred the air, carrying the scent of rain. Cold front moving in, I thought absently. I felt the pistol press against the small of my back, then made eye contact with the agents behind me in the rearview window. Everyone was ready, tense.

Suddenly, Ernie Boy and Joe the Crow were jumping back into their Cadillac. Something was wrong. They were moving the deal. Gerry looked at me for a nervous instant and tipped his head. Follow now. The gangsters left in a hurry, with Gerry revving his engine behind them. I yelled to one of the agents in a taxi, who tossed me the keys to the cab and jumped into the rental. I floored the accelerator, looking for Gerry's taillights.

In the next 30 seconds, everything broke down. As maneuvered through traffic and locked a space behind Gerry's Cadillac, the other agents simply vanished. My head whipped around as I tried to keep an eye on Gerry, read the street sig blurring by, and search for the other agents. I could hear the chattering excitedly on the radio, saying they had his Cadillac sight. So where the hell are you, I thought desperately.

The realization hit me hard. They were following the wrong car. Somehow, they had latched onto another burgundy Cadillac

A horn blared at me as another cab veered into my Iane trying to squeeze past a double-parked car. Gerry was pushing the Caddie faster to keep up with Ernie Boy. Gerry probably loves this, I thought as we ran red lights and careened around come toward the east side. I screamed into my radio, reading off cros streets. By the time I convinced the other agents they had th wrong car, I was halfway across town.

Ernie Boy turned a comer and parked in the middle of block between two high - rises. I stopped at the comer and read off the intersection, stifling the urge to scream into the radio again. We were in a Puerto Rican neighborhood, a low- rent block I had worked before.

The street was lit up like a stage, yellow streetlights shining off windshields and pouring onto the pavement. Three car doors slammed. Gerry walked slowly toward the gangsters as they popped the Cadillac's trunk. Gerry reached into the space and straightened, hefting two tightly- wrapped packages

in his hands. That was the signal.

I searched the street for the tenth time and saw no one. fumbled for the radio. "He's giving the goddamn signal. Do you want me to take them down?"

A voice crackled over the speaker. "Stay where you are. We're on our way. " I waited, the seconds stretching out into infinity.

Joe the Crow walked slowly toward me. The taxi's motor was still idling. He was suspicious. He stopped in the middle of the street, scanning the dark neighborhood like a snake tasting the air for danger. Ernie Boy and Gerry kept talking. Joe the Crow took a few more steps, studying the cab. I leaned backward a few inches, searching for safe darkness. If he recognized me, Gerry would die quickly.

I jerked open the door and found a dark patch of sidewalk between two streetlights, cupping my hands to my mouth. ."Carmen, get your ass down here. I'm not going to wait all night," I yelled at the nearest brownstone. I repeated it in Spanish, making a show of exasperation.

A few people on the street looked up for a moment, then dismissed me. Joe the Crow scowled. I paced below the brownstone, trying to keep my back to him.

"What do you want with Carmen?"

I whirled around to face an older woman leaning halfway through a third -floor window. Just my luck, I thought, there's actually a Carmen in the building.

"I'm waiting for her, " I called back. The head disappeared into the dark room.

Joe the Crow looked at the window a moment, then started back toward Gerry and Ernie Boy. I relaxed.

He got halfway there when the commotion began. The cavalry was here.

A human wave swept down the block, surrounding Gerry and Ernie Boy. Joe the Crow's face froze as he whirled to face the onslaught. I pulled my pistol from the small of my back and hurdled the taxi's front fender, catching him from behind. "We're federal agents," I said, pushing the barrel into his face. "You're under arrest. Don't fucking move or I'll kill you."

The shock lasted only a moment, followed by a stony stare of recognition. "I'm going to fucking kill you, you fucking

spic, " he growled. I almost laughed. I was in a damn gangster film, and Joe the Crow hit his line perfectly.

I led him toward the cars, where Gerry was frisking Ernie Boy inside a circle of cocked pistols. "I'm looking at a dead man, " he said as Gerry spun

him around and cuffed him. It was a threat he would later deny making when it showed up in the papers. Gerry looked almost amused. We searched their car. Inside was $23,000 cash and a loaded .38 revolver.

It was after midnight, but the operation was just beginning. We broke into teams and scattered through the city, rounding up the other targets on our list. Gerry and I arrested five more low level gangsters in Little Italy, Brooklyn, and Staten Island. By daybreak, 13 members of one of the city's biggest heroin rings were in jail.

The bust hit every major paper in the country. DEA estimated the network was responsible for smuggling as much as 50 pounds of heroin into the city each week, much of it funneled through Sicily. The next day, FBI Director William Webster held a press conference at DEA headquarters in Washington to heap on the praise, calling our bust "a major blow" to narcotics trafficking by organized crime. It was a great public relations image: the mob, heroin, high-speed chases, multiple arrests. And numbers. Wonderful numbers. We took 20 pounds of heroin estimated $20 million. The DEA avoided comparing the operation to the French Connection in the early '70s, but placed it among the largest busts in recent history.

The 13 were charged with conspiracy to distribute heroin. The agents present at the arraignment silently celebrated as the judge set bail: Crazy Willie, $3 million. Ernie Boy, $1.5 million. Lorenzo Di Chiara, $1 million. Joe the Crow, $1 million. During the arraignment, Ernie Boy swiveled in his chair to search out Gerry. When he found our seats in the back, he cocked his finger, pointed it at Gerry and pulled the trigger. He was later sentenced to 25 years and fined $75,000. Joe the Crow got 20 years and an $80,000 fine. We got our victory. I had a lot to celebrate. Two months after the bust, when Noe flew to New York for a brief visit, I proposed. We immediately set a date for the wedding and began making plans. I was flying.

Crazy Willie was sent to the federal penitentiary in Terre Haute, Indiana, where he continued running his street operation through the pay phones. We would have never known, but Di Chiara flipped as soon as he reached his jail cell. Lorenzo, as I soon started calling him, was an overweight, amusing Sicilian in his early 40s. As with many of the aging gangsters I saw, his hair made its retreat over his scalp as his belly charged forward. He left Sicily 15 years earlier after robbing a bank, finding his niche in New York's crime families. His ties to the old country made him the perfect middleman for Crazy Willie's heroin ring. And the perfect informant for us. He was the first Sicilian DEA had ever flipped, which made him something of a treasure. I was assigned to guard Di Chiara and his family at their spacious Brooklyn home while he fed

us information about the Bonanno family and the inner workings of the heroin trade. In return, his bail was lowered by a quarter of a million dollars. Later, the judge gave Di Chiara a 15 -year suspended sentence and three years probation. The sentence set off alarm bells throughout the underworld.

After a few weeks of round - the - clock duty, I came to like the man. He had a gorgeous wife and two little girls, whom he treasured. I felt bad for them. It seemed almost unreal this tightly- knit family could walk under such ominous clouds. Still, I had trouble listening to him jovially describe his heroin business while my mind played tortured images of people destroyed by his product. "It's what I do for a living," he told me. "We export it like we export olive oil." He was a businessman. Nothing personal.

Di Chiara knew his former partners wanted him dead, but he showed no signs of stress, cracking jokes and showering me with hospitality. We offered to put them in the witness protection program, but Di Chiara's wife stubbornly refused to leave their home. He was not about to argue with her.

We protected him as best we could. When we were forced to pull out a few weeks later, he took his family to the relative safety of their upstate cottage. Gerry and I visited them a few times a week to make sure they were okay. I looked forward to having dinner with his family, sampling bottles from his wine cellar while Di Chiara cooked for us. His daughters began calling us "Uncle Cele" and "Uncle Gerry."

I saw them for the last time in the spring of 1983. The agency was sending me to Terre Haute, Indiana, with about 15 other agents. Armed with reliable information from Di Chiara, we were going to bust Crazy Willie. Again.

With a local judge's blessing, the prison's public phones were all tapped by the time we arrived, waiting for us to settle into our new home in the Terre Haute post office and slip on our headphones. We monitored the phones 24 hours a day, taking shifts and listening for Crazy Willie's coded messages. Di Chiara was right. Willie was running his heroin operations over the

phone, calling East Harlem to make the deals and direct his remaining forces. For the next four months, we listened.

I took a room in the Ramada Inn a couple of miles from the post office. I was always on alert. Nobody else could understand Crazy Willie's Spanish Pig Latin, so the other agents rousted me at all hours when his voice came on the line. I felt like a volunteer firefighter in a town full of arsonists. Curious postal workers followed me with their eyes as I shuffled in and out of the second floor storage room. They knew the feds were up to something, but they didn't know exactly what.

Every day, Willie was on the phone with his wife, who slipped through our first net and continued coordinating his deals. He wasted no time building a miniature syndicate in the penitentiary. We frequently heard the voice of his new lieutenant, a prisoner called Fat Gigi. Other prisoners were recruited to work the phones when he was occupied. We jotted notes in our post office cubby, identifying each suspect by voice. Our intelligence went straight to New York, where other agents tracked down Crazy Willie's East Harlem cronies.

As we closed up shop in Terre Haute that summer, another wave of New York agents arrested more than a dozen of Crazy Willie's heroin runners, this time including his wife. In Indiana, Crazy Willie, Fat Gigi, and their budding prison syndicate were arraigned in jail, where a judge tacked a healthy stretch onto each of their sentences. I wondered if we had finally fulfilled the FBI director's boast and "immobilized" the mob's heroin ring. I began to doubt. The sense of triumph I felt after we arrested Ernie Boy and Joe the Crow had slowly dripped away as I listened to Crazy Willie chatter his twisted orders from prison. Watching him arraigned for a second time, I felt like we were fighting a Medusa, chopping off one head while another slithered around to bite us on the ass.

Noe and I were married that July in McAllen. We put the wedding together ourselves, watching every dime. The simple ceremony was performed by a justice of the peace in the lobby of the Hilton where Noe worked. None of it mattered when we exchanged our vows. Noe looked beautiful, our families were there to share the moment with us, and Gerry was at my side as the best man. Noe and I had put away as much money as we could for the honeymoon. We spent a week in Cancun, the booming resort town on the tip of Mexico's Yucatan peninsula. For the first time in three years, we had an entire week to ourselves, no worries, no responsibilities. We swam in the Caribbean, toured the ancient ruins nearby, ate, shopped, made love. On the seventh day, we returned to New York.

The agency did not give its blessing. As soon as headquarters heard of our nuptials, they launched an internal investigation on me. OPR decided my relationship with Noe during the investigation of her stepfather constituted "poor judgment" on my part. When I explained my difficult position at the time - - a rookie agent eager to please his bosses, who wanted to bend the rules to nab a doper - - they listened patiently, then stuck a warning letter in my personal file. It was a slap on the wrist, but it stung. The reproach did not bother me for long. I had a new life to build. Noe moved into my studio in the autumn of 1983, filling the place with her energy. We walked for hours through the city as I played tour guide, showing her my favorite haunts. A month later, she came into the room smiling. She was pregnant. I was going to be a father.

I was having trouble just being a husband. I was working too many hours and too many weekends, jumping out of bed at odd hours at the ring of the phone. After a few precious months together as husband and wife, Noe and I agreed she would go home until the baby came. She needed to be with family through her pregnancy. Meanwhile, I put in for a transfer to Peru, where a spot would soon open. I did not want to raise a child in New York.

With Noe gone, the days seemed to crawl. Winter arrived with howling winds and snowdrifts, making me long for Texas again. The luster had faded from the job. Group 6 disintegrated. Gerry transferred to a new post in Italy, departing New York a legend. He was presented the Attorney General's Award for his role in the Lucchese/Bonanno heroin bust. I asked to be assigned to JFK International Airport, searching for a new challenge and a change of scenery. On February 1, 1984, Lorenzo Di Chiara's hogtied body was found in the trunk of his black Mercedes near the Canarsie Pier. He had been strangled.

Discrimination, subtle and otherwise, came with the job, but I gave it little thought until another Hispanic agent approached me one day with a proposition. Jesus Muniz was leading a legal attack on DEA for barricading us from the better jobs. If I wrote a check, I could join the class action suit.

Every Hispanic agent I knew fell into the same trap. The agency assigned us to surveillance, wiretap monitoring, and translation duty while other agents got the plum assignments required to climb the DEA ladder. We worked long hours helping our Spanish -challenged counterparts build cases against Puerto Ricans and Dominicans, then stood in the shadows while they received the credit and the promotions.

That did not bother me as much as the problems Hispanic agents found when a non-Spanish speaker tried to back us up during an undercover bust. We could go over the plans and the "bust word" a hundred times, but busts never went down as planned, and the language confused Anglo agents trying to pick out a single word from our rolling chatter. Several times I found myself improvising to suspicious dopers after my backup failed to catch the bust word.

I filled out a check and joined the class action suit with about 200 other Hispanic agents. We all agreed it was time to fight the favoritism that gave the paper- pushers the rewards while we put our tails on the line every day. I could hear other agents muttering under their breath, raking me with suddenly hostile glances. Jeff , who put in for a Special Achievement Award for me after the big heroin bust, then resubmitted the form after DEA ignored the first request, was pragmatic: "you guys do what you have to do. " He understood.

I spent the spring of 1984 with the DEA enforcement group at JFK, helping U.S. Customs and immigration officials separate the dopers from the throngs of passengers. We watched the international flights closely, scrutinizing Colombian passengers who fit our profiles of traffickers. Every week we caught someone trying to carry cocaine into the country in their baggage or strapped around their waist. I became an expert in spotting false bottomed suitcases, studying the lining for signs of tampering. The traffickers, mostly poor people recruited as mules for the growing cartels, preferred tough Samsonite luggage. We kept a small power drill in the office, which we used to poke holes th rough the hide of the suitcase. More often than not, the bit came out with a stream of white powder. The mules were easy to flip. We staged controlled deliveries, following them to their drop points and arresting anyone who showed up to claim the cocaine.

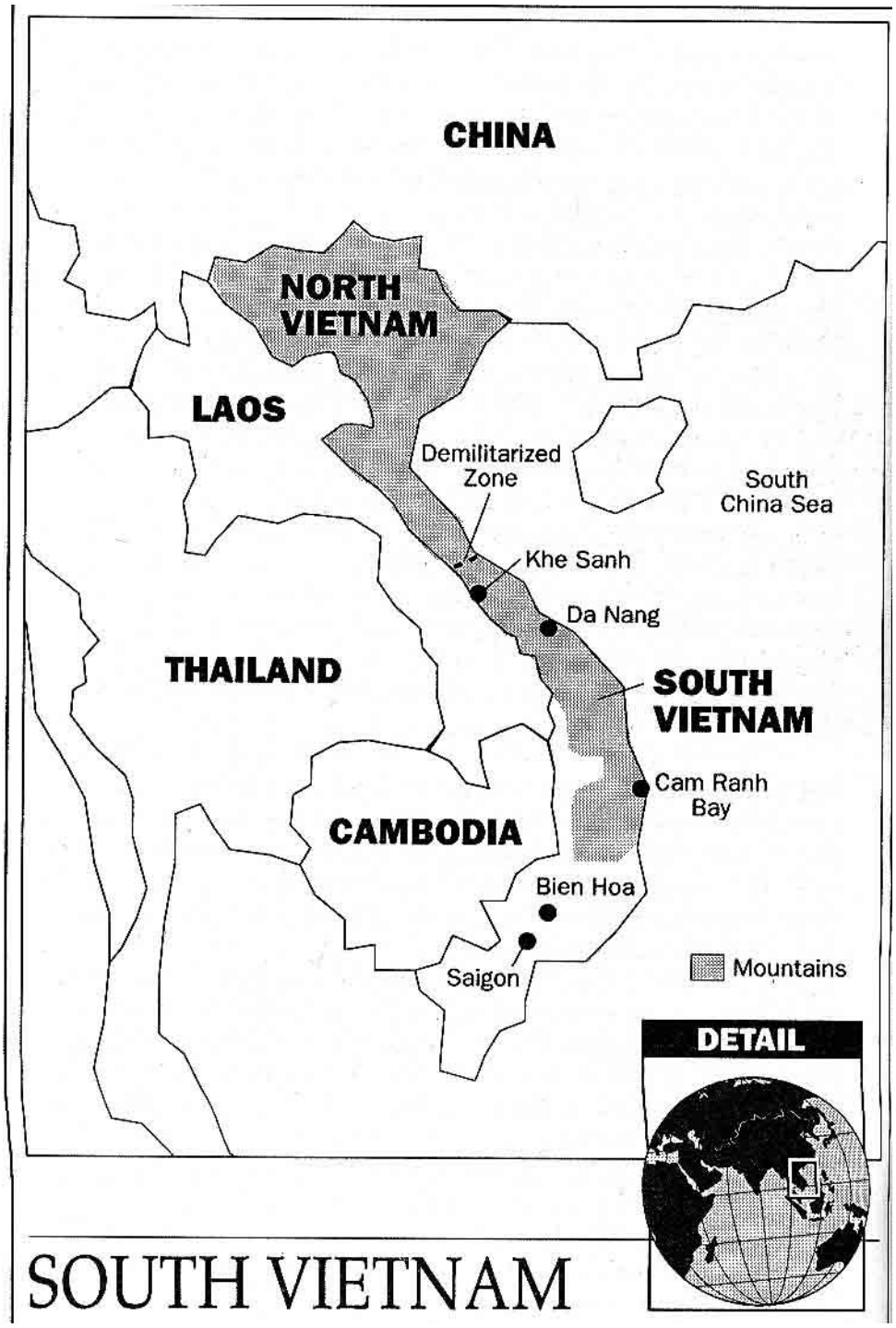
Some airport employees ran their own ring. The traffickers would put a suitcase full of coke on an Avianca flight, sending it to New York without an owner. After the baggage handlers locked it up in the unclaimed luggage cage, a supervisor would sneak in at night and carry it away for delivery.

They were not the only officials to tap into the river of drug money. For the first time, I witnessed corruption within DEA ranks. The mules were easy

targets. Some agents could not resist shaking them down, pocketing jewelry and cash, then warning the frightened captives to keep their mouths shut if they wanted to avoid jail. I gritted my teeth and kept quiet. A few more months and I was out of there.

The job quickly became routine: Coke from Colombia, Nigerians carrying heroin, Jamaicans with marijuana. Once I picked up the smuggler's tricks, I could almost unconsciously spot the mules as they streamed through the gates. I waited for word from headquarters on my transfer, calling Noe constantly to assure her we would be together soon, listening to her describe the tiny life growing inside her.

Crystal Bianca was born April 7, 19 84 in a McAllen hospital as I paced nervously in the waiting room. Noe picked Crystal, her favorite character from the TV show Dynasty. I chose Bianca, a South American name, as a tribute to our new life together. My transfer to Peru was approved. I was ready to go back to the jungle, where I would be at home. And after four years of wrenching narcotics from the streets of New York, I wanted to attack the source.



SOUTH VIETNAM

The Monitor
McAllen, Texas
Thur., Oct. 14, '71 Pg. 15A

IN VIETNAM — Sgt. Celerino Castillo, III, son of Mr. and Mrs. Celerino Castillo Jr. of Pharr, has recently been assigned to the 544th Replacement Co., Guard Force at Cam Ramh Bay, Vietnam. He received his basic training at Fort Lewis, Wash., and graduated from non-commisioned officers school at Fort Benning, Ga. Sgt, Castillo is a 1970 graduate of Pharr-San Juan-Alamo High School.,

Above: Celerino Castillo in Viet Nam

Left: Celerino Castillo

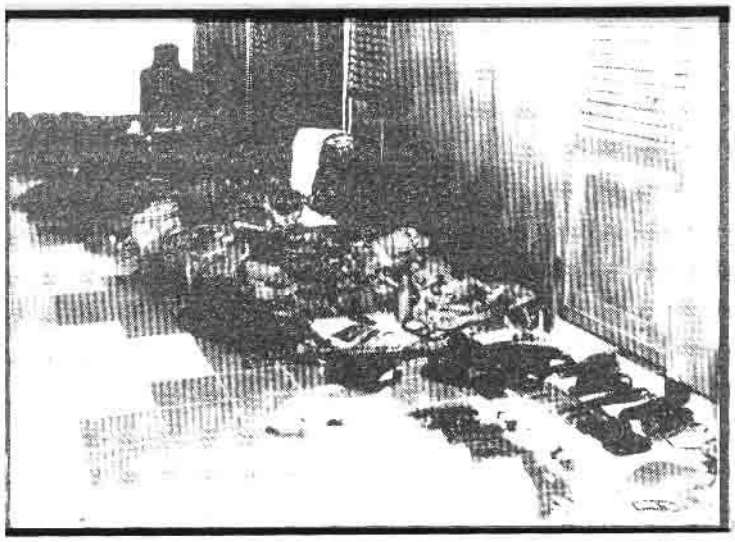
Below: Cele in brown vest, with Guardia de Hacienda in the Sierra Mountains between Mexico and Guatemala. We lost 6 Guardias in said operation.

Above: Celerino Castillo and George Bush. Jan. 14, 1986

Below: Jimmy Carter and Celerino Castillo

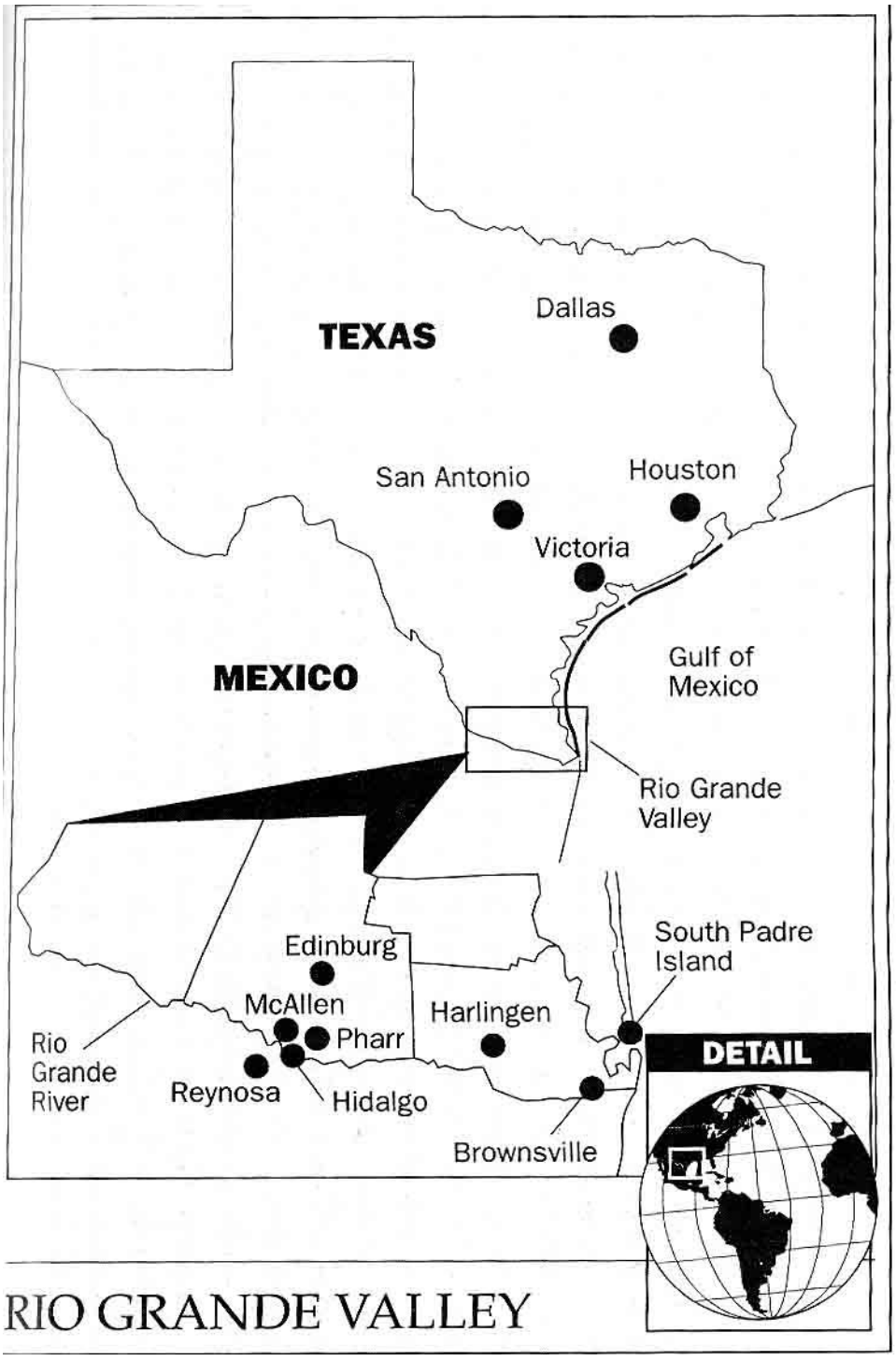
Left: Dan Quail in El Salvador 1989

Below: Celerino Castillo in Guatemala



Above: Military Gear sized from Wally's Residence.

Below: Celerino Castilllo's DEA I.D. with gun and cuffs



RIO GRANDE VALLEY

Five

Riding the Condor

Lima, Peru - August, 1984

My first weeks in Peru were a honeymoon. Noe, Crystal, and I finally became a family. We found a house in El Molino, an upper crust subdivision clinging to the foothills of the towering Andes mountains. Here, South American suburbanites could live in the undulating hills, blissfully ignorant of the social upheaval in their country. Lima's teeming millions were on the other side of the hills, on a thin strip of coastline sandwiched between the ice-capped 18,000foot peaks and the Pacific Ocean.

Noe and I unpacked boxes, smiling to each other as Crystal scurried around the house like a cat, inspecting every comer. Our one-story white stucco house was a true hacienda: Red-tiled roof, fireplace, garden, and a backyard swimming pool, all surrounded by a high wall. A maid and a gardener reported for duty as we settled in. The U.S. government paid for everything. I paced the back yard in my bare feet, breathing deeply, feeling the tension from my last months in Manhattan drain away. It was a peaceful island in an uncertain country. For the next two years, this would be home.

I preferred the view of the craggy peaks to the Lima skyline. The sun warmed this side of the mountains, while Lima seemed wrapped in a perpetual blanket of ocean fog, called garua by the city's roughly 5 million inhabitants. The mist rolled off the Humboldt Current, a 200- mile wide river of cold Antarctic water that acted as a massive air conditioner, moderating Lima's climate as it sliced past the Peruvian coast on its way north. It almost never rained in Lima, but the Humboldt provided ample moisture, pumping its clammy mist into the city's pores.

The fog could not shroud Lima's suffering. The City of Kings, founded by the Spanish conquistador Francisco Pizarro after he vanquished the Incas in 1534, was now the City of Beggars. As Noe and I carried Crystal through the former seat of Spain's New World empire, I could not shake my feeling of melancholy. The proud cathedrals and broad plazas seemed lost in the tide of humanity washing into the capital by the thousands. The city poured over its old boundaries and rotted at the edges, ringed by endless, reeking barrios. Like every former Spanish colony in the Americas, Peru's pecking order flowed along bloodlines: The light - skinned descendants of the Spaniards jealously guarded their power, money, and land, while the descend ants of the natives worked the earth and filled the slums. The mixed blood mestizos held the middle ground, edging into the ranks of those above and below.

The country teetered between democracy, dictatorship, and chaos: Peru has had all three in the 20th century, as the military and civilians oust one another in a seesaw battle of elections and coups. In 1980, the poor found a fist in Sendero Luminoso, or Shining Path, a Maoist guerrilla movement led by Abimael Guzman, a former philosophy professor. A student of Mao Tse Tung's Chinese cultural revolution, Guzman launched his attacks on the government from the mountains of the Ayacucho district, calling himself the "fourth sword of Marxism," after Marx, Lenin, and Mao.

President Fernando Belaunde Terry beefed up the military's rural outposts to fight the rebels, but generations of animosity between the rich and poor helped Sendero Luninoso tighten their ideological grip on the remote villages. From their mountain strongholds, the guerrillas periodically crept into Lima to detonate reminders of their discontent. Every week, another Puff of smoke floated above the skyline, followed by the echoes of the blast.

Suddenly, Manhattan seemed like a good neighborhood.

I knew the dangers when I put in for the transfer. DEA assured me living overseas would bring my family under the government's security blanket. In New York, agents and their families faced the same urban hazards everyone else did. Here, we joined the small, privileged diplomatic class, ostensibly protected

from Peru's dark side. Our house was surrounded by an eight-foot concrete wall topped with broken bottles embedded in the cement-like spikes. Serious -looking security guards, provided by the U.S. Embassy, roamed our small compound 24 hours a day.

I watched Crystal with a mixture of wonder and awe, marveling at how she grew in the months I was away. I felt like a father for the first time. As Noe put the finishing touches on the house, I took Crystal into the backyard pool, supporting her tiny body as she splashed and kicked. She giggled, then coughed out a mouthful of water. It was sink-or- swim time. When I pulled my hands from under her, she sank for a moment, then reflexively closed her mouth and fought her way to the surface.

The Incas discovered cocaine long before Pizarro discovered the Incas. The coca leaf held a treasured position in Peruvian civilizations for centuries. Peasants chewed it to ward off the symptoms of poverty: fatigue, hunger, depression. The leaves gave them endurance working at high altitudes. The jungle tribes used it to dress wounds. Inca priests and nobles believed chewing the leaves brought them closer to the Sun God. The priests fed it to their human sacrifices, numbing them to the icy winds as they slowly froze to death on some lonely Andean peak.

But when the Spaniards discovered the intoxicating leaves the savages were munching, coca went commercial. When Europeans mixed it with wine, "Vin Mariani" became literally a sensation. Bavarian soldiers used it in the 1880s

to fight off fatigue. Sigmund Freud took it as he worked. It was the active ingredient in Coca-Cola when the soft drink debuted in 1886; cocaine gave the drink its stimulating effect until the government cracked down on it and convinced the company to switch formulas in 1906.

In Peru, the government conceded the leaf's ancient place in society. Everywhere I looked, peasants sold and munched legally grown coca leaves. It seemed the entire adult population walked through life with a wad of green in their mouths, which produced a milder high than snorting powdered coke. For centuries, the Peruvians grew enough coca to satisfy their needs. Then Americans came to crave the powder. Peru would never be the same.

Peru was the world's top producer of coca leaves. A thousand mile long coca belt stretched along the Andean lowlands through the center of the country, where the Peruvian government estimated peasants illegally grew and harvested about 125,000 acres of the tall, innocent -looking coca plants. The U.S. government's estimate was almost three times higher. In reality, counting Peru's illegal coca fields was as difficult as estimating how many Americans grew marijuana in their closets. No one doubted Peru's position as the king of South America's cocaine crescent, which arced across Colombia, Bolivia, and Peru. From these remote, hostile jungles, some of the world's poorest people grew the world's richest crop. They were mining white gold.

We were sent to stop them.

DEA's Peru office consisted of a cluster of offices in the bowels of the heavily- armored U. S. embassy building in down town Lima. Guards appeared everywhere you turned, patrolling the tall, iron -barred fence jutting between the American diplomats and the encircling Peruvians. Cement - filled drums squatted at the gate to prevent car bombs from hurtling into the compound. The embassy bore numerous political scars. A mob attacked it in 1925 when Calvin Coolidge tried to arbitrate a border dispute between Peru and its arch rival, Chile. Now the United States wanted to make war on cocaine, which pumped more than half a billion dollars into Peru's ailing economy, tainting all but the most resolute officials. We were prepared for more violence.

When I joined DEA's Peru office, it was staffed with five agents and an intelligence specialist. Our boss, country attache Peter Rieff, did not pretend to speak the native tongue. Gene Castillo, a short, fortyish agent from New Mexico, spoke a patchy, Americanized Spanish. I wondered how he worked undercover in Lima with such an accent. Another agent, who apparently landed the job through connections in the DEA brass, spoke just enough to order a decent meal. Speaking fluent Spanish obviously was not a prerequisite for the job.

The atmosphere within the department reminded me of McAllen's internal rift. An unspoken tension drifted through the office, carried in the agents' tone of voice and occasionally surfacing in hostile innuendo. Some agents refused to work with others because of personal spats or philosophical differences. The

two Spanish -speaking agents already there carried much of the workload, in addition to serving as perpetual translators for the other agents.

To make matters worse, one of the veteran agents refused to work undercover. Fred Villarreal, a cigar-smoking Mexican-American, told me he was finished putting his life on the line fot DEA. His attitude shook me. Villarreal started out like me, a young, aggressive Hispanic ready to shake up the narcotics underworld. Over the years, a combination of age, family responsibilities, and a steady diet of slights and abuse from DEA convinced him to leave the dangerous stuff to the younger guys. The more we talked, the more I felt like Ebeneezer Scrooge, receiving a visit from the ghost of Christmas future and wondering if I could change my fate.

After a week in Lima, I kissed Noe goodbye, packed a duffel bag, and flew Air Peru 250 miles northeast to the center of the coca crescent, eager to start my hunt for the clandestine labs and airstrips hidden throughout the forbidding Amazon Basin. Rieff sent me off with instructions to make contact with the Guardia Civil, Peru's national guard. DEA could not spare another agent to work the jungle with me. The Guardia would be my backup.

I chose Tingo Maria as my base. The jungle town, hugging a wide spot in the Huallaga River, had charmed generations of tourists with its frontier allure and lush scenery. This was the Huallaga Valley, cupped between low mountain ranges in the eastern lowlands, where the Amazon jungle pawed at the feet of the Andes. Fifteen years before, the valley supported sustenance fanning and small villages. Now, in 1984, it was the heart of coca country. The valley alone was believed to produce enough raw coca leaves to feed half of America's cocaine habit. Tingo Maria was its capital, the place known as the "White City. "

I found the Guardia's headquarters just outside of town, a tall green building ringed by guards. Their commander welcomed me warmly before whisking me to the offices of their U.S. trained anti narcotics unit, the Unidad Movil de Patrullaje Rural (Mobile Rural Patrol Unit), who patrolled the jungle searching for small cocaine labs. In theory, UMOPAR was to wipe out the valley's processing network, while a government program dubbed "Eradication and Control of Coca Leaf Planting in the Huallaga Valley" attacked the fields, whose workers yanking the coca plants out by the roots. I discovered a very different reality.

The cocaine lab was close. Our informant assured us we would find it soon. The camouflaged figures behind me traded sarcastic comments, their irritation growing with every mile. The sun pulled the sweat through our skin, stinging our exposed, sunburned necks. I glanced at my watch. Four hours of hiking and no lab in sight. The informant sensed my doubt. He checked over his shoulder every few yards, as if expecting us suddenly to turn back. He picked his way through the branches reaching across the faint jungle trails, ducking and weaving like a boxer. Very soon, he said. The lab was just ahead. After only a couple months in Peru, I realized I could spend my entire career pushing through the vines in search of small huts scattered throughout the valley.

I had traded my sneakers and New York street clothes for jungle gear, tucking my jeans into an old pair of boots I kept from Vietnam. It felt good to haul an M - 16 through the trees again, covered in camouflage, listening to the jungle speak. MYUMOPAR companions carried nasty-looking FAR rifles, unconsciously sweeping the barrels across the path. They swore to themselves quietly, waving away the mosquitoes zeroing in on their exposed necks. For the next kilometer, the only sounds cutting through the damp air were the wet smacks of hands against skin and the warning cries of monkeys and birds announcing our arrival.

Our target, a small coca lab, lay tucked in the far reaches of this green hell the Peruvians called "la montana". The labs we discovered up to this point followed the same blueprint: Wooden shacks or open-air labs reeking of kerosene, stuffed with cut coca leaves ready for conversion into paste. The peasants who built these crude structures formed the second broad level in the cocaine pyramid. They were the poseros, or processors, who purchased piles of coca leaves from the hundreds of cocaleros, the peasant growers who converted their small plots into coca farms.

The poseros needed more than a hundred pounds of the thumb -sized green leaves to make one kilo of paste, which they sold to Colombian runners in light planes. The system allowed the

valley's poor to earn a decent living for the first time in their lives. The rural farmers must have shook their heads in amazement when they discovered the new cash crop. By converting their fields to coca, they could easily double, triple, even quadruple their annual income. The plants matured in a few years, yielded as many as six crops a year, repelled pests naturally, and grew in poor soil. They did not even have to take their crop to market: The Colombians and poseros went door-to-door, leaving stacks of dollars in their wake.

The Colombians cartels finished the refining process in scattered clandestine labs, using nearly four kilos of paste to make a kilo of pure, white cocaine hydrochloride for american nostrils. For every dollar they paid Peru's coca farmers and processors, the cartels earned more than twenty dollars from American buyers.

Suddenly, the informant stopped, searching the wall of latticed vegetation for the path. Locating it, he held the branches aside and motioned us ahead. The telltale smell of kerosene led us to the lab, a few dozen yards off the main trail. The Peruvians, young recruits looking for jungle glory with UMOPAR, circled the flimsy structure once before peeking inside. The hut contained the typical posero's starter kit. Several plastic jugs filled with kerosene and other chemicals lined the back of the hut, next to a huge pile of green coca leaves. Two waterproof sacks bulged with finished coca paste ready for delivery.

In front of the shack, a large trench lined with a plastic sheet held a

leafy soup of coca and kerosene spiked with sulfuric acid. The poseros stirred and mashed the soup constantly, helping the chemicals leach the narcotic from the leaves to produce paste. It had to be the world's most lucrative cottage industry. From these tiny labs sprung Peru's top export.

One of the UMOPAR men pulled out a half -empty jug of kerosene, sloshed it around the base of the hut, then touched his lighter to the damp wood. We stood like boys at a campfire, mesmerized by the climbing flames. When the thin walls buckled in a cloud of sparks, we turned and filed back to the main path, cursing the return trip in advance. Another small victory in the drug war, I mused. Not the dagger to the center of Peru's cocaine heartland I ached to deliver, but another tiny nick to annoy the cartels.

After spending some time in the Huallaga Valley, I learned to measure my progress in small increments. I was a guppy in a piranha tank.

The Colombians owned Tingo Maria. Its quiet farming traditions, its institutions, and its morals crumbled like dry clay as residents jumped into the coca economy. The leaf touched every member of the community, from the adolescent coca paste couriers to the shop owners who suddenly found a market for high-dollar electronics at the edge of the jungle. New pickup trucks rumbled over the dirt streets, clearly identifying villagers on the cartels' payroll. The national currency, the sol, was nowhere to be found. The town ran on dollars, attracting cash hungry bankers from Lima who flew in to buy U.S. currency.

The Colombians knew they had a DEA agent in their midst. When I passed them on the streets, they greeted me with arrogant smiles. If I made too much trouble, they could swat me like a mosquito. Thugs armed with sharp machetes would gladly hunt down a man for pocket change. They obviously did not consider me a threat. Their rule was absolute.

The cartels played both sides by shoveling cash into the jaws of prospective enemies. They purchased the loyalty of Tingo Maria's military officers, who declared a truce with the traffickers. On Sundays, I wandered past the soccer fields and watched Peruvian soldiers playing football with the Colombians. Snubbing the government's periodic efforts to wage war on coca, the military insisted its sole responsibility in the valley was protecting the peasants from Marxist subversives. Cracking down on the local coca farmers and traffickers, they argued, would drive the peasants into the arms of Sendero Luminoso.

The military, sent into the valley by President Belaunde to fight the guerrillas, opened their new base in Tingo Maria just a month before I arrived in Peru. It quickly became the most Popular post in the country. Most of the soldiers at the base bribed their way into Tingo Maria. It was a small investment, given the payoffs. By the time they rotated home, they could earn enough coca-tainted dollars to retire on. Most of them just blew their money in the cantinas and shops, learning the meaning of conspicuous consumption. Some seemed to do nothing more than cruise the streets in their new Nissan and Toyota pickups, like high school boys angling for girls.

Sendero Lwninoso quietly accepted the dollars as well, using the protection money to arm its guerrillas. I laughed at the irony of a Marxist movement selling out to such brazen capitalists. With only the Guardia to worry about, the Colombians new into any one of dozens of clandestine airstrips, picking up loads of coca paste and occasionally returning with AK-47s and other weapons for the rebels.

The Guardia and UMOPAR hurled themselves against this wall of corruption, taking me along for the ride as they rolled through the countryside in their four-wheel -drive trucks, hunting for coca. We destroyed the labs we found, dousing them with kerosene and setting them aflame. Any poseros caught at the scene went to jail, or what passed for a jail. The Guardia warehoused them in a long bank of concrete holding cells with hand -welded bars. The police took their frustration out on the prisoners, tossing hissing sticks of dynamite near the cells and laughing as the prisoners flattened themselves against the bare walls. The shaking peasants were processed, then sent to the tin-topped corral the Guardia called a prison.

I never saw a Colombian arrested in the valley. They counted their profits while the peasants swallowed the punishment, paying for their sins with large chunks of their lives.

I traveled to Tingo Maria every other week, slicing through the jungle for days at a time. A new stress tugged at the back of my mind. I was falling into selfish habits again, throwing myself into the job at the expense of my family. I pushed the guilt aside, promising myself I would spend more time with them. Tomorrow. Next week. But this assignment was too important. I was convinced my tour in Peru would become the highlight of my career. Noe seemed to be adjusting well. The disappearances were part of my job, I explained, more for my own benefit than hers. Noe said she understood. I was not so sure.

When I was home, I spent as much time as I could with Crystal. I took turns with Noe, groaning out of bed in the middle of the night to change diapers, or heat formula on the gas stove, or carry her around the dark house until she cried herself back to sleep. Our guard watched, an amused expression visible over his coffee mug. I wondered if any of us could protect her if the cartels decided I was too deep into their business. I glanced at the broken Coke bottles filled with stagnant water atop the cement wall. I felt vulnerable.

Rieff was no help, grumbling at me every time I walked into the office after another extended absence. He wanted regular phone calls to make sure the cartels had not had me chopped into pieces. There were no phone booths in the jungle, I argued, and the phones at my little hotel in Tingo Maria never worked when it rained. I assured him I could take care of myself.

Rieff seemed to think I could work the Huallaga Valley from Lima, ducking into Tingo Maria once a week to talk to informants, then maybe jump into the trees to look for a lab. I knew better. We depended on the Guardia Civil

totally. As foreign agents, the Peruvian government had us on a short leash, with no power of arrest, no permission to interrogate, and only an advisory role in anti narcotics operations. DEA could never make a dent in the valley's coca economy without a constant presence: mine. The cartels' money could quickly wash away any progress we made, buying off our allies and placing our missions at risk.

I got in the habit of presenting my friends at the Guardia with small gifts. I picked up liquor and American cigarettes at the U. S. Embassy commissary, or brought them jungle knives, trying to show my appreciation. I presented an old Vietnam flak jacket of mine to a stocky, raw-mouthed major who prided himself on his toughness. He immediately pulled it on and ordered one of his men to shoot him. The man grinned. He was not about to pass up the opportunity to plug an officer. He wasted no time, leveling a small -caliber pistol at the major and pulling the trigger.

The stocky major grimaced as the shot spun him sideways, buckling his knees. He removed the vest and pulled the flattened slug from the shoulder, grinning and rubbing what promised to be a world class bruise. After that, the major wore the 30-pound vest everywhere. I frequently spotted him jogging around the base with it bouncing on his bare chest. "It's good exercise, " he said, clapping me on the shoulder.

Many of the Guardia resisted the drug money and mounted a real effort to flush the cartels out of their country. We stepped up the patrols, following every lead the informants brought in. The Guardia seemed energized when I accompanied them on their

raids. My presence gave them a measure of protection. "The military and the Colombians would not think twice about eliminating us if we make too much trouble," an UMOPAR officer told me during one patrol. "With an American, they'll be more careful. " I considered that small comfort. With the military and the guerrillas blasting each other across the valley, my death could easily be explained away as an unfortunate attack by the rebels.

Every lab we hit shook the web. More and more peasants complained to the Colombians, who finally took their problem to the military. They wasted no time placing the Guardia under de facto house arrest, forbidding anymore patrols into the jungle. To justify confining the Guardia to their base, the Army claimed the guerrillas now infested the entire valley. Allowing anti -narcotics patrols would be too dangerous, they said. I wondered to whom they referred.

After twiddling their thumbs for a few days, the Guardia changed tactics. With a lone Cessna and tips from informants, they pounced on the cartels' airborne couriers skimming the treetops. They took me along on many of these missions, pointing excitedly when they sighted a drug plane. The surprised dopers ignored their orders to land. They assumed the Guardia was putting on a show. After all, the bribes were already paid to assure them safe passage to

Colombia.

During one airborne chase, our pilot swooped down on the Colombian bird with the sun at his back, broadcasting his orders to land before the cartel pilot realized he had company. We were close enough to see the Colombian flipping us off. We maneuvered on top of the Colombian plane, dropping to within 50 yards of the dopers as they tried to figure out where the invader was. The Guardia pilot yelled a suggestion to the UMOPAR members inside, who nodded and raised the side windows. They poked their rifles through the windows and rattled off a dozen rounds at the Colombian plane's wings, puncturing its fuel tanks. We followed the crippled plane until it sputtered and crashed, ripping a scar in the jungle canopy. The UMOPAR gunners returned to their seats with satisfied smiles. It was the first of several one-sided air battles I watched. All ended in the fiery deaths of cartel pilots and runners.

Despite these small victories, I became restless. I felt mired in quicksand, pumping my legs frantically but getting nowhere.

We could bum coca huts and shoot down loads of paste until I retired without crippling the valley's coca trade. Throwing a cocalero in jail affected the cartels about as much as arresting a corner pusher in New York. They were replaceable, interchangeable pawns. We needed to attack the Colombians' big investments. The Guardia estimated the valley contained 43 clandestine airstrips and a number of major labs. I wanted to know where the hell they were.

The men in UMOPAR feigned ignorance. I turned to informants, who insisted many of the Guardia officers were also on the cartels' payroll. It made sense. The Colombians were loading too many planes. There was no way the small-time labs we destroyed could produce enough paste to keep the cartels supplied. The Guardia was tossing me bones, guiding me to the poseros' tiny kerosene labs while protecting the Colombians' cocaine factories.

The next time I visited the UMOPAR, I tracked down the commander. "Where the hell are the big labs?" I demanded. He shrugged. "We know where they are. But the military won't let us patrol in those areas. They claim those are Sendero strong holds, which is their jurisdiction."

I finally called Rieff, explaining my predicament. I hoped we could convince someone in the State Department to convince the Peruvians to intervene and throw the balance more to our favor. He told me to forget it, obviously not wanting to make waves. The Colombians, satisfied after a couple months of quiet, allowed the military to allow the Guardia to resume their patrols. I tagged along, feeling like a damn puppet.

On February 2, 1985, Noe and I climbed to the top of a low mountain overlooking the city and watched a sea of Peruvians gather below. Hundreds of thousands stood shoulder to shoulder, hoping for a glimpse of Pope John Paul 11, who stopped in Lima as part of a 17 city tour of South and Central America. We sat in the sun, holding hands as Peru forgot its horrors for a

day.

Four days later, Noe told me she was pregnant again. The warmth spread over me. Crystal had become the center of my world, my greatest treasure. This time, I secretly wished for a

boy. I lingered at home for a few days, playing with my daughter and trying to cram a month's worth of attention into a every hour. I began to consider staying in Lima. I could work out of the office; spend more time at home; make hamburgers every Friday. It didn't last. I returned to Tingo Maria the following week.

In mid - February, I ventured into the hills with a column of nine or ten Guardia officers. Our informant said he could guide us to a lab he discovered the week before. An hour into our march, we ran across a small camp, a rough assembly of wooden huts topped with palm fronds and aluminum. It looked abandoned. We approached slowly, looking for signs of life. Each hut bore a red hammer and sickle symbol, clearly identifying its owners: Sendero Lwninoso. The informant looked at me. I looked at the commanding officer. He looked at the huts for a moment , then motioned us to move on. Some of his men clearly wanted to turn back rather than risk stumbling upon a Sendero patrol. As we passed, the faces of women and small children appeared like phantoms in the darkened doorways. Everyone checked their weapons.

The smell reached us first, a rancid musk floating on the heavy air. Then the drone of the flies. Something had died.

Then we saw the bodies. An arm reached from the brush. A bloodied leg lay nearby, bent at an unnatural angle. We dragged six of them from the foliage, covering our nostrils with bandannas. Some of the bodies had their arms bound behind them with cord. Others were butchered, their arms neatly hacked off. One was decapitated. Genitals were missing, eyes gouged out, tongues sliced from mouths.

One of the new UMOPAR recruits scrambled away and retched loudly. The informant made the sign of the cross. He was in shock. "That's my uncle," he muttered, motioning to a bloated corpse. He pointed to the next body. "That's my cousin. " He continued down the row, identifying all six bodies. All were male relatives of his. They were hanged. The rope left serrated red marks where it chewed into their necks. I hoped they were dead before the mutilation began.

We turned back, forgetting the lab. We knew we were one wrong move from joining the mutilated men we left behind on the trail. The informant could hardly think. He babbled along the trail, wondering aloud if they simply ran into the wrong people at the wrong time, or were butchered as a warning to him.

I thought about my family. After that, I tried to spend more time in Lima, but it was never enough. The guilt struck at odd times, reminding me how many hours I worked, how many nights my wife and baby slept alone, wondering where

I was, wondering if I would emerge from the jungle again. Noe commented on how much energy I poured into my work. She did not finish the statement: I was neglecting her and Crystal. She didn't have to. I reminded myself every day. I closed my eyes, trying to purge the image of the mutilated bodies from my mind. I had to get my family out of Peru.

The news rippled through DEA, carried by phone, cables, and office memos. On March 6, 1985, the bound, broken body of DEA agent Enrique "Kiki" Camarena was discovered wrapped in plastic in Vista Hermosa, Mexico. Four armed men had forced Camarena into a car February 7, after he left the U.S. Consulate in Guadalajara. DEA held its breath for a month as the Mexican police searched for Camarena. They found him just off a road in an area swept earlier by the police. The Mexican drug traffickers decided he had become too much trouble and assassinated him, along with a Mexican pilot who occasionally worked for him. Both were tortured before they died. I felt suddenly empty and paranoid. It could have been me. It could have been a lot of us.

At the end of March, I flew to New York to testify at the trial of one of the minor organized crime figures I helped bust during my tour with Gerry Franciosa. While I was in town, I attended a special mass for Camarena at St. Peter's Cathedral in Manhattan. Camarena's wife and son were there. Somber, uniformed men and women filled the pews. It looked like the entire DEA office and half the New York police force attended. The questions filled my head: Is this "war" worth a man's life? Why are we risking everything and accomplishing so little?

I could see similar questions lingering in the eyes of my old friends as I searched them out after the mass. Everyone was upset about Camarena's death, for the loss of a good man as well as the crossing of some unconscious line. In DEA's small, insular world, Camarena's assassination triggered a roiling anger that coursed through the agency like a current. The consensus among the

agents was DEA waited too long to apply the necessary pressure on the Mexicans. From what we heard, the Mexican police could have located and freed Camarena before the traffickers executed him. Camarena warned the DEA brass things were getting dangerous in Guadalajara. The agency ignored him.

The story sounded chillingly familiar. On my way back to Lima, I thought of the bodies lying next to the dirt path, hacked and scattered like broken toys. I had a lot in common with Camarena. So did a lot of agents stationed abroad. DEA simply was spread too thin to fulfill its political dreams across the globe. As my plane headed into Lima, I wondered how Camarena's death would change DEA's policies in Peru, Mexico, and a dozen other countries. I also wondered how his death would change me.

After Camarena's murder, Noe was in my thoughts constantly. I wanted to stay in Peru, but this was no place for a pregnant woman. I feared for her safety in Lima, as well as four unborn baby's. The water was horrible; milk was in short supply; the guerrillas constantly knocked out power to the city. The area shook every few days with faint tremors. My brain played What If in a constant loop: What if we could not find a decent doctor? What if Sendero

Luminoso launched an attack on the suburbs?

What if I was abducted?

Noe worried too. Our wealthy Peruvian neighbors traveled with armed bodyguards. She knew if I shook the web too hard, the cartels would take revenge on my family. I could do little to comfort her. That Easter, when we all flew home for a brief vacation, I returned to Lima alone. Noe and Crystal stayed in McAllen without me. It was better that way, I told myself.

In July, 1985, Peruvians elected a new president, 36-year old populist Alan Garcia. Young and immensely popular, Garcia took a special place in Peruvian history by becoming the first civilian president to succeed another civilian president since 1945. Garcia stoked the nation's hope by vowing to raise wages and play hardball with foreign bankers to defer payments on the country's $13.5 billion debt.

To an outsider, it looked like JFK sweeping into town on inauguration day: A young, charismatic leader claiming the city as his aging predecessor departed. The explosions broke the spell. One bomb, packed inside an orange Volkswagen, erupted two blocks from the U.S. Ambassador's residence on the eve of the inauguration. The military occupied the city for the ceremonies, filling the air with the accumulated noise of helicopters, sirens, and shouting. The guerrillas still wiggled through. They marked the occasion by setting off a series of car bombs across the city. That night, they hit the electrical towers, blacking out entire sections of the city.

It was a particularly violent month in the drug war as well. In Colombia, five gunmen casually walked up to a taxi caught in rush hour traffic and pumped 13 bullets into Judge Manuel Castro, killing him instantly. Castro's execution followed his effort to bring charges against 16 people connected to the drug related slaying of Rodrigo Lara Bonilla, Colombia's justice minister. On the July 24, a cocaine lab belonging to alleged drug lord Reynaldo Rodriguez Lopez exploded in Lima. The DEA investigation of Rodriguez, which I participated in following the blast, led us to a travel agency he owned. There, we found a stamping machine. For a fee, Rodriguez could stamp your passport with any visa you wanted. Inside his fire -stained man sion, police found an 84 - line switchboard with direct connections to the Mexican consulate and the homes of a number of Peruvian police detectives.

The new Peruvian president wanted fast action against the cocaine cartels operating in his country. Immediately after taking office, Garcia approved the operation his predecessor rejected: Operation Condor was on.

DEA, CIA, and the Guardia Civil came up with Condor. After prodding, CIA provided us satellite photos of the jungle to help us spot labs. The Colombian national police told us the remote area concealed a number of cocaine labs.

I flew to Leticia, Colombia, the country's only toehold on the Amazon. A contingent of Guardia Civil officers accompanied me, dressed in their best

uniforms. We had an appointment with the Colombian national police to plan the first joint anti-narcotics operation ever attempted by the two countries. The Colombians and Peruvians called it Operacion Condor, in honor of the massive vulture Peruvians adopted as a national symbol. DEA dubbed it Relampago, the Spanish word for Lightning.

We met at the Colombian national police headquarters outside Leticia. The two groups took to each other instantly, quickly becoming a unified team. The Peruvians needed the Colombians. Despite Garcia's purges - - he dismissed 37 generals in his first two months in office - - the Guardia still received no cooperation from the Peruvian military. The Colombians had the airplanes and equipment the operation would need. They knew cooperation meant more U.S. aid.

Our target was one hour from Leticia, deep in the Peruvian jungle in an area known as Callaru. Satellite photos supplied by the CIA revealed a huge dirt airstrip, more than a mile long. The strip, located near the Rio Tigre, was the hub for the area, where the jungle hid an estimated I 10 airstrips and an untold number of clandestine labs. Neither the Peruvians nor DEA had ever worked the area. It was virgin territory. I circled the mile -long airstrip with a red pen. Phase I would begin there.

I became more and more wrapped up in the operation, losing track of the days. Noe and I talked on the phone constantly throughout her pregnancy. I missed her and Crystal terribly. I could not bear to think about Crystal growing up without me. I worked harder, exhausting myself to keep the thoughts from taking hold of my mind.

For several weeks, we exchanged cables with the Colombians and met in Leticia to plan strategy. As a cover story, we told everyone we were conducting joint drug enforcement training. Even the Colombian anti -narcotics unit did not know exactly where we planned to strike. We kept them out of the loop, fearful of cartel spies within their ranks. But Leticia was a traffickers' stronghold. Word leaked out the two countries were planning a big raid. When our informants told us of the leak, we pushed up the timetable. We knew we had to move fast before the dopers could react.

On August 13, 1985, two Bell helicopters filled with adrenaline pumped Colombian and Peruvian police lifted from Leticia, bound for the target airstrip. I sat in the second chopper, next to Colonel Zarate, the Peruvian officer in charge of the operation. He was one of the most honorable men I met in any uniform, a young, energetic officer from Lima. After this operation, he would become a general. I peered into the eager eyes around me. None of these men had participated in an air assault. I hoped they could keep their heads if the dopers attacked.

The trip brought me back to Vietnam. We flew at treetop level, the skids almost brushing the green carpet. Thousands of macaws, disturbed by the thumping rotors, erupted from the trees and flew below us in a red, blue, and green cloud. They were so close I was tempted to reach through the open hatch to touch one.

After 45 minutes, the strip suddenly appeared below us. It was a beautiful sight, 50 yards wide and a mile long. Five small planes sat at one end of the brown ribbon, next to a low building.

The lead chopper landed at the far end of the runway, dropped off its half -dozen passengers, then lifted and banked for the return trip to Leticia, where the remainder of the force waited.

The shooting started immediately. The traffickers, flushed from the building by the choppers, aimed and fired, too far away to do any damage. The Colombians and Peruvians returned fire. I silently cursed, willing them to hold their trigger fingers until they closed the distance. My chopper banked and circled over the river. We spotted two sleek cigarette boats, one blue, the other red, cutting a foaming wake through the murky water. One dashed straight for the overhanging branches near the bank, disappearing from sight. The other tried to outrun us. We could see three men inside, one at the wheel, the other two watching the approaching helicopter and shouting instructions to the driver. The chopper pilot banked for better angle, tipping us sideways. A Guardia officer gripped the edge of the hatch, took careful aim and fired a burst from his assault rifle. Smoke poured from the boat's wounded engine. The driver yanked the wheel violently, pointing the boat toward the shrouded bank.

We broke off our pursuit to back up the first team. Our feet hit the packed dirt a moment after the skids touched. We quickly divided, leap - frogging down the airstrip.

We caught up with the first team at the far end of the runway. The traffickers were gone. They obviously decided against a pitched battle and fled into the trees. I took a quick head count. No one was hit.

With several men posted to watch for the dopers, the rest Of us cautiously surrounded the wooden building at the edge of the runway. I spotted a hand painted sign nailed to the wall: Casa Brava. Inside, several picnic tables lined the wooden floor, holding half eaten plates of steak, chicken, and soup. The

screened -in front room also held a few rickety cots, a big Sony TV, and a VCR. A large generator hummed behind the building. To the left, a large kitchen contained a deep freezer with enough steak and chicken to feed a platoon. Open - faced shelves held rows of insecticide, canned food, condiments, and burlap sacks of rice. Against the opposite wall, large plastic barrels brimmed with fresh water.

Across the runway from the building, the dopers erected stout posts supporting huge sheets of black plastic. The crude hangars were large enough to shield two planes. Drums of aviation fuel flanked the hangars in neat rows. I tried to imagine how many plane loads of cocaine departed from this compound every day.

By the time the helicopters completed their shuttle service for the night,

30 men milled around the isolated strip, gaping at the traffickers' lair. We spotted a bulldozer and several other buildings, but it was too dark for more than a cursory inspection. As dusk settled over the jungle, we saw figures scurrying across the center of the runway. The dopers were regrouping. We divided into teams and prepared for another assault.

I organized the perimeter, placing a pair of men every 10 yards around the building and up both sides of the runway to form a U -shaped defense line. When they settled in, Colonel Zarate assigned a team of men to cook a meal. The men rotated from their posts to feast on the traffickers' stocks. I passed from one station to the next, urging them to stay alert and sleep in shifts through the night. If the dopers returned with more men, we needed every eye and ear tuned to the trees.

An hour later, we heard a voice crying from the darkness. "Ayudanze, estoy herido. " Help me, I'm wounded.

The perimeter broke into excited chatter. Probably an ambush. I moved toward the treeline, turning to ask for a volunteer. The conversation stopped. Finally, Colonel Zarate drafted one of his men to accompany me. I whispered a few instructions, then we dropped to our knees, crawling through the undergrowth with flashlights and M- 16s.

The voice continued, a low moan in the darkness. "Ayudan-me, por favor. "

If this is an ambush, they've found a convincing actor, I thought. I whispered to the Peruvian, "Watch out around us for movement. " He nodded. We crept the last few yards.

The man lay sprawled on his stomach at the base of a huge tree. The beam of my flashlight played over his prone body. He looked about 25, with a medium build and light complexion. His striped shirt was covered in mud. Blood stained his dress pants a deep crimson. I hissed at him, ordering him to identify himself. He was a pilot, shot in the ass as he fled the assault.

We crawled back toward the airstrip, dragging him behind. I still had not ruled out an ambush. We reached the perimeter, facing a line of gun barrels. Two Peruvians immediately yanked the pilot to his feet and began slapping him around. Then the Colombians joined them. A real show of cooperation, I thought sadly as they aimed kicks at his wound. The pilot was close to tears. He claimed he just arrived at the airstrip and was waiting for his load. He said he did not know anything about the traffickers' operation. The answer brought more fists from the unconvinced police. They assigned two guards to the pilot and made him sit upright in the dirt the rest of the night. 'the shooting started around 9 p.m. First one rifle, then two, then a dozen opened up, muzzles flashing in the darkness as men yelled and branches snapped. I broke into a running crouch, looking for the team who started the shooting. I reached them, screaming a cease fire order for the tenth time. The guns fell quiet. The pair stood shoulder to -shoulder, squinting at the treeline.

"I saw them," the first man whispered, pointing into the dark jungle.

"They're out there, " his companion added, nodding vigorously.

"Did they return fire?" I asked.

"No. ' ~

"Then don't fire unless you're fired upon, " I said sharply. I was annoyed. If one side of the perimeter aimed the same direction as the other, they could kill each other in the crossfire. I trudged back to Casa Brava.

An hour later, the perimeter erupted again, rifles chattering into the stillness. The officers insisted someone was out there, but no one could be sure where. I repeated my warning.

At dawn, I crept through the trees around the perimeter until I reached the area where the shooting began. Four bullet riddled bodies lay scattered among the broken branches. I summoned the men from that section of the perimeter. The pair who started the shooting stared wide-eyed at the bodies. Their buddies burst into fits of laughter.

The monkeys never had a chance.

We spent the morning inspecting the area. The compound was huge, with buildings tucked into the foliage. We followed well - worn footpaths about 50 yards into the jungle and discovered a sign painted with a skull and crossbones: "Peligro. No fumar. " Danger. No smoking. We had found the lab. The large wooden lab sat at the center of a cluster of buildings, all joined by screened walkways. Blue plastic protected the roof of every building.

The first thing I saw were the vats, huge metal containers straight out of the Frankenstein movies, with gauges and tubes snaking between them. Kilo-size cardboard boxes lay scattered everywhere. Rows of heat lamps suspended from a large board served as cocaine dryers. We found generators, drums of coca chemicals, an electric mixing vat with revolving arms, and testing equipment.

This was no coca paste operation. They were producing cocaine hydrochloride. Col. Zarate looked simultaneously excited and troubled. This was unheard of in Peru. We always assumed Peru made all the paste and Colombian labs churned out the finished product. This place turned the conventional wisdom on its ear. A new, two-story refinery under construction near the lab alarmed the colonel even more. If the traffickers completed it, the new lab contained equipment to make an even stronger, purer product. One hundred percent pure cocaine.

Next door, a wooden building was labeled "deposito. " The lab's cocaine warehouse. It was empty. If there was cocaine here when we landed, they moved it quickly.

Each path ended at another building. We discovered six dormitories stacked

with enough bunks to house 600 people. A rough hut sat on the banks of the river, where most of their supplies obviously arrived by boat from Leticia. One shack held nothing but 55 -gallon chemical drums. Next to the lab, another shack contained 15 bunks shrouded by mosquito netting. A sign tacked to the wall read " Guardia. " The lab had its own security force. There was even a rough-cut shrine made of three wide boards nailed into a triangle. The makeshift shelter, mounted atop a thick post, looked like a tiny A - frame house. It shielded a small statue of the Virgen de Loreto, the guardian of this sprawling Amazon district. A wooden cross was nailed to the peak of the shrine.

The wounded pilot insisted he knew nothing about the whereabouts of the paste. But he rattled off anything else he could think to tell us. He said Casa Brava usually employed about 25 people, who served as the ground crew, cooks, and guards for the busy drug hub. He explained the cartels' rigidly compartmentalized operation. Neither the pilots nor the Casa Brava staff were allowed into the rest of the compound, which was run by a different crew. The guards who slept behind the mosquito netting next to the lab would shoot a nosy pilot as quickly as an invading police officer.

We found a number of radios in the guards' shack and clicked them on. Somewhere in the jungle, the traffickers were carrying on a conversation. "They'll never find the stash," one voice reassured another. "It's too well hidden."

We knew they could not have taken the product far, but after a lengthy search of the compound, we were about to give up. Then a shotgun blast ripped through the trees. A Peruvian Guardia member aimed and fired again, whooping as he chased a large toucan. The panicked bird hopped from branch to branch, desperately trying to flap a shattered wing. I asked the Peruvian what the hell was going on. He said he wanted to eat the bird. I was not about to question another country's eating habits.

He continued the chase as we watched. The bird stopped, exhausted. The Peruvian crouched, aimed carefully, and pulled the trigger. The shotgun kicked, followed by the sound of splitting wood. The toucan disappeared in a cloud of feathers, which fluttered to the ground as the bird dropped like a stone.

We heard a yell and turned toward the toucan hunter. He was gone. The ground had swallowed him. We rushed to the edge of the hole and peered in. He thrashed about in a puddle of water. All around him lay bulging white sacks covered in leaves and shards of rotten wood. The stash.

In the days following the raid, the compound became a zoo. General Walter Andrate, the head of the Guardia Civil, flew in with Rieff, who suspended his eternal state of distress over my jungle disappearances to congratulate me. Our DEA counterparts from Colombia showed up with a video camera to film the entire area. Peruvian and Colombian officials descended on the site like press hungry vultures, gesticulating and posturing for the international and local

media.

People milled around the compound like ants, oblivious to our gentle requests not to move anything. It was total chaos. The joint leader insisted on unlimited access for the cameras. They wanted the pens to scribble and the shutters to click. It looked good for the United States, which financed the operation. It looked good for the Colombians, who knew they were considered the world's cocaine Wild West. Most of all, it looked good for Peru's new president, who could boast of his country's victory over the traffickers. I avoided the cameras as best I could. For an undercover agent, exposure meant failure. I huddled with my paperwork, writing endless reports and filling dozens of clipboard pages with an inventory of the compound.

A few days later, the South American newspapers published multi - page articles on the raid, repeating the numbers: Four tons of coca paste seized from a lab capable of churning out 500 kilos of pure cocaine a day. The Peruvian government estimated the compound's value at $500 million. It was the biggest cocaine lab capture in South American history.

We seized five planes, three with Colombian registration, one Bolivian, and one American. We never found the wounded cigarette boat or any of the Colombians who fled into the night. We captured assault weapons, military uniforms, boxes of ammunition, and a firing range with hand-drawn silhouettes, pocked with bullet holes. We later discovered the lab belonged to Arcesio and Omar Ricco, members of the Cali cartel.

For the rest of the week, I supervised phase Il of the operation, buzzing over the treetops in search of other buildings and airstrips. We discovered another hut a half mile from the main compound, a communications center jammed with radio equipment. We found six smaller airstrips in the immediate area, one made of cement. The crude compounds, none approaching the size of the first, were dynamited, disappearing in a shower of splinters. We arrested a few young Colombian pilots at the airstrips. They were flown to Colombian jails.

When I wandered into the Lima office a week after the raid, I picked up a local paper left on my desk and almost choked on my coffee. My photo, snapped by a Reuters photographer with a telephoto lens, took up a quarter of the page. Luckily, I was wearing a large pair of sunglasses, but the DEA insignia on my camouflage jacket was unmistakable. A number of other papers published the photo in their spreads on the operation, with headlines screaming "Contra narcotraffico." Against narcotrafficking. Wonderful.

After Operation Condor, the dollars flowed into Peru at an unprecedented rate. The Peruvian government rewarded the Guardia by allowing them to use the confiscated planes for their anti narcotics operations. DEA rewarded the Peru office with a new base in the Huallaga Valley, named Santa Lucia. The agency built a runway and barracks in the jungle, then sent more agents down with three Hueys to increase the pressure on the cartels.

I flew home in late September, arriving just before Noe went into labor.

My son was born in the same McAllen hospital where his sister arrived. We named him Celerino Castillo IV. I immediately nicknamed him C4.

Back in Lima, Rieff was irate when he saw my photo in the papers. When I returned from McAllen, he insisted my tour be cut short, claiming my safety could not be guaranteed now that my picture was undoubtedly tacked to the cartels' bulletin boards. I shrugged it off and flew back to Tingo Maria. UMOPAR gave me a much warmer welcome, crowding around to congratulate me on Condor's success. Rieff remained obstinate, muttering I was going to get killed, or, worse, get someone else killed. I was beyond caring anymore. The cartels knew who I was. They surely saw my photo. But after a year in the Huallaga Valley, I knew the jungle better than their men did. I had spun my own small web, connecting strands throughout the valley to warn me of trouble. I trusted my Guardia friends, I trusted my informants, and I trusted my instincts.

I was not the only one receiving unwanted media attention.

On August 11, 19 85, an article appeared in The Washington Post

described how the Nicaraguan rebels fighting the Sandinista government were sustained after U.S. funding ran out the previous May. The article exposed the man who held the Contras together almost single-handedly: Lt. Col. Oliver L. North.

Through September, I spent as much time as ever in the valley, running over the trails with UMOPAR. I avoided Tingo Maria, just in case the cartels decided to use me as an example. Ironically, both Rieff and the traffickers feared a repeat of the Camarena tragedy. Rieff knew his career would suffer a major blow if an agent under his command was killed by dopers. The cartels knew the wrath of two governments would descend on them if another DEA agent died in the line of duty. Neither wanted the kind of debacle then playing out in Mexico.

The real reason my boss wanted me out of the country, I thought, was my relationship with the Guardia and UMOPAR. Instead of consulting with Rieff, the generals and colonels came straight to me for advice about anti -narcotics tactics. They knew I spent most of my time in coca country. They trusted my instincts. Rieff resented that.

The word came at the end of September. Rieff called me into his office to tell me I would be transferred to Guatemala on temporary duty, or TDY. In addition, he refused to recommend me for promotion to the next level. I could not believe what I was hearing. When I first arrived in Peru, he told me the promotion was automatic after spending a year in the country. I looked at him, the irritation showing in my eyes. He gave me a half - hearted shrug. I just had not paid my dues, he explained.

Six

Tightrope

Guatemala City, Oct. 10, 1985

As Copa flight 313 droned north over the jungle, I ran down my mental checklist on Central America. Leftist rebels, a permanent fixture in the region, had locked the military governments in Guatemala and El Salvador into bloody wars of attrition, while the poor multitudes in both nations, as usual, absorbed the crossfire. War would complicate my job considerably. To a government fighting for control in its own backyard, everything else becomes a distraction. But Uncle Sam's aid bought hospitality for the State Department's political operatives, a jungle playground for the U. S. Marines, and a tiny beachhead for DEA.

In Guatemala, the locals would be hostile. The government carried a lingering bitterness toward the United States since the Carter Administration cried human rights violations and yanked U.S. military aid in 1978. The Israelis quickly moved into the power vacuum to take care of the Guatemalans, training the security forces, financing the war machine, and running covert operations against leftist movements in Nicaragua and other republics. Under Reagan, a trickle of U.S. military aid resumed by 1985, but the Guatemalan government had new friends and was slow to warm to U.S. intelligence and drug agents poking around their jungles. I knew from working with Israeli intelligence in Peru they could give me all the information I needed to sort through the chaos. I made a mental note to look them up as soon as I got settled.

As we moved into Guatemalan airspace, another leadership shuffle was taking place below. The country had a new

democratically - elected government, headed by Marco Vinicio Cerezo Ar6valo, a Christian Democrat still gloating over his triumph at the ballot boxes. The long - suffering Guatemalans had endured a string of military dictatorships that stretched back, virtually unbroken, to 1954, the year the CIA toppled Jacobo Arbenz Guzmin. Arbenz had the audacity to legalize the local Communist Party and launch an agrarian reform movement, passing out 400,000 acres of uncultivated land to the peasants. Unfortunately for the would -be reformers, some of the idle land belonged to the United Fruit Company. At the time, Senator Joe McCarthy's red hunting was burning in the public mind, the Soviets had the Bomb, and the CIA was a budding agency looking to connect its first body punch against the Communist threat. The CIA called their pet coup "Operation Success, " and declared it a victory over Communism in Uncle Sam's

back yard. But Arbenz had helped seal his fate by playing Robin Hood with a U. S. company's

land, and the lesson had not been lost on the Guatemalan establishment.

We became the protective uncle in Guatemala, installing Carlos Castillo Armas as president in 1955. Our policy settled into a comfortable, conservative groove. The United States wanted stability in Guatemala, and backed every right -wing regime that came down the power alley, looking the other way as they crushed any opposition and wiped tens of thousands of their people off the face of the earth. Three decades later, not much had changed. Although the Guatemalan Christian Democrats traced their birth to 1955, after Arbenz fell, and carried the banner of moderate reform, the party forged blood bonds with the military as it ascended. Cerezo would assume the presidency in January, but he would need the okay from the men with the medals and the gold braid before he so much as broke wind in his new office.

My ears popped, breaking my train of thought as the plane dropped into its landing pattern. I leaned from my aisle seat to take in the view. In the dusky glow of a dying sun, Guatemala's famous volcanoes filled the landscape, lined up like sentinels along the spine of one of the world's most unstable areas - - the perfect symbol for a land forever erupting, both geologically and politically. The Guatemalans had named two of them Volcan de Fuego and Volcan de agua - fire and water. Steam hissed from the cone of Volcan de Fuego. Fire ruled Guatemala's horizon.

The tires yelped against the tarmac, and the airliner taxied into Aurora International Airport, where my new boss would be waiting. I knew Bob Stia, the country attache to Guatemala, from New York, where we had both worked as agents. We never had more than a passing conversation, and I remembered nothing more than general impressions: a tall Italian guy with straight gray hair and a mild personality. My DEA friends told me Stia had connections in Washington who pulled strings to get him the Guatemalan job. I shook my head. It was crazy to send someone like Stia to Central America. He had three strikes against him as soon as he hit Guatemalan soil: he was Anglo, his Spanish was abysmal, and he didn't know the culture. At least he wasn't out in the field trying to build cases. Hell, it's just TDY - - temporary duty, I thought as the center aisle filled with passengers. Myjob was catching dopers, not puzzling over policy. I reached the gate and picked my way through the crowd, searching e semi-circle of faces. Stia walked up and extended his hand, smiling. "Wel come to Guatemala," he beamed.

The next hand I shook belonged to Russell Reina, a short, stocky Mexican -American with aclose-trimmed beard and black hair combed straight back. Everything about Reina cried out for attention. Gold everywhere - - pinky rings, bracelets, and a 50peso gold medallion hanging around his neck. His money clip, fashioned out of a 20-peso gold piece, probably set him back $300. He favored guayaberas, not the familiar Mexican shortsleeved variety, but the Panamanian style with long sleeves, cufflinks and embroidered fronts. He

looked like a Class One doper. Reina carried what we called a "fag bag," a satchel Mexican men sometimes carry that looks like an oversized purse. His 9mm automatic would be tucked in there along with everything a man normally carries in his wallet. At first I thought Reina had just come from an undercover assignment and left his doper clothes on, but I soon realized it wasn't an act - - he really dressed that way.

At the time, Reina was the DEA's lone agent in the Guatemala office, which covered four countries: Guatemala, El Salvador, Honduras and Belize. As country attache, Stia performed mostly administrative functions and served as a liaison between the U.S. Federal agencies and local law enforcement authorities. I could not imagine one agent covering four

countries, especially when two of them had become major political hot spots. Enrique Camarena's murder in Mexico underscored the need for DEA agents to back up one another in unstable countries, and Guatemala and El Salvador made Mexico look tame. I was only on TDY, but the agency planned to take advantage of the sudden doubling of their manpower. Stia put me in charge of the aerial eradication program: reconnaissance missions over the marijuana fields and the opium poppy plantations spreading across the Guatemalan highlands. Some creative genius had named the operations Olive Oyl and Popeye.

As we walked toward the exit, Stia turned to me and said, "You're in a different world now. I'm going to take you to our local cathouse. " I grinned. Temporary duty would be interesting here. I later discovered the bordellos had become a first-day ritual for most U.S. agents setting foot in Guatemala City - - CIA, DEA, State Department, or military. We piled into Stia's brand new DEA Volvo and drove to the Hotel El Dorado, half a mile from the airport.

The El Dorado carried a five -star rating, and stayed plump from a steady diet of North American businessmen on expense accounts. I checked in at the desk, flashed my diplomatic passport to get the discount rate given to embassy staff, and the clerk handed me a key to a comer room on the sixth floor. I rode the elevator up and turned the lock. A king -sized bed dominated the room, across from the necessities: a desk and cable TV with CNN. Parting the drapes, I took in the view.

By pure luck, the room made the perfect agent's perch. I could read the identification numbers on planes coming and going from the airport, and the large picture windows offered a clear view of the front of the hotel and down one side. I threw my suitcase on the floor and took the elevator down to the lobby where Stia and Reina were waiting.

We drove down Avenida de las Americas, the busy thoroughfare that bisected Guatemala City and cut through the wealthier neighborhoods. The four-lane road was split by a broad esplanade dominated by tall trees and landscaped shrubs. The greenery halted at major intersections to leave room for huge statues of Spanish conquistadors and Mayan rulers locked forever in circling traffic. At the end of the avenida, we stopped at a large, one - story brick home where a security guard slouched in

front of an iron fence. Stia parked in the street, and the guard finally recognized the norte americanos and waved us through he gate. He assured Stia the car would be in good hands while we were inside.

The three of us looked like bit players in a bad detective show - - Reina in his flashy gold, Stia in his conservative suit, and me in my usual boots and jeans. Stia knocked. Right out of that same bad detective show, a small panel slid open in the steel door, and the brown eyes framed in the opening flashed recognition. The little panel clacked shut and the door opened. If those eyes had seen police uniforms, the owner would have made a hasty appearance to inform the officers who they should call to confirm the required bribe, or mordida, had been paid. A heavy square lock would hold back anyone trying to throw a shoulder at the door, and inside, a couple of stout sliding bolts would stop any uninvited guests without a battering ram.

The house looked like any cookie - cutter suburban dwelling you would find in the States, except for the nouveau - Graceland decorating. A huge living room to the right held blue and maroon velvet sofas and velvet drapes sweeping down to dark plush carpeting. Paintings of women in provocative poses adorned the walls. Beautiful ladies in evening gowns reclined on the wall -to wall sofa, awkwardly mimicking the classical poses on the wall. This was Maruja's, named after the madam who ran the place. Stia and Reina told me the house was legendary in Guatemala for its expensive women. As we crossed into their den, the women - girls, really, none of them looked older than 18 -- sat up expectantly, waiting for a signal to do business. A waiter in black tails sauntered over, a white cloth draped over his cocked left arm, and steered us to the next room. More girls filled the J-shaped bar in calm anticipation. A bartender in a white smoking jacket busily mixed drinks in front of the full-wall mirror.

A couple of the girls immediately joined us for drinks. They asked me to choose a companion, and I pointed to a Chinese girl with long black hair. She quietly joined me at the bar and I ordered drinks. Her black silk dress cut into a low V in front, showing her bare breasts when she leaned forward. In perfect Spanish, she introduced herself as Li. She looked about 16. As we chatted, she told me she had come to Guatemala from Taiwan a few years

before, and the cash she earned at the cathouse supported her parents and several brothers and sisters.

We spent a good two hours at the house, making small talk with the girls over drinks. Reina told me I could lay for an hour, or spend a little more, about $25, to bring her back to my room for the night. I passed. I had been away from my wife for six months, with no indication the separation would end, but I was too tired for anything but sleep. Stia and Reina wanted me to become familiar with their haunts. Like the hotel, the cathouse held eyes and ears that could be prodded into divulging information we needed. The girls knew we worked for the U. S. Embassy, and they could tell us when Nicaraguans and Colombians hit town. I wondered if the information flowed the other wayas

well.

Stia and Reina dropped me off at the hotel. I watched the news for a while ' flipped through the Miami Herald's Latin American edition, and collapsed into bed. I had a good feeling about Guatemala. The capital throbbed with the energy of milling masses, and after more than a year in Peru, I needed some time away from the jungle. I clicked off the light, and promised myself I would visit the McDonald's I had spotted from the air.

Stia briefed me on Guatemala during breakfast the next morning in the hotel restaurant. The Guatemalan military, he said, was giving up the government on paper, but would always hold the real power in the country. Despite Cerezo's popular election, minister of defense Hector Alejandro Gramajo called the important shots from his position at the center of the Council of Commanders, a tight ring of military leaders whose decisions overshadowed any of the ostensibly democratic decisions made by the president or the congress. The Guatemalans knew they had to put a democratic face on their Draconian system to stay on Washington's good side, and Cerezo had shown no indication he would test his leash. As far as DEA was concerned, we operated at the at teh pleasure of the military.

After breakfast, Stia shuttled me to the DEA offices, located within the U. S. Embassy. I received an embassy 1. D. and met Ambassador Alberto Martinez Piedra, a diminutive CubanAmerican, for a 10-minute welcome -to- Guatemala briefing. He never mentioned, and seemed completely uninterested in, the DEA's Central American drug program.

Stia guided me through the embassy compound to the cluster of rooms where the United States government masterminded its strategy to rid more than 8,000 square miles of foreign territory of narcotrafficking. My office held a desk, a chair and a file cabinet, with a large window overlooking Avenida de las Awricas. The thick bulletproof glass had been gouged by a slug. The natives constantly peppered the building with automatic weapons, our elderly secretary explained wearily. The U.S. government had long ago surrounded its diplomats in Guatemala with a stout iron fence anchored in cement, with concrete -filled steel drums ringing the front entrance. If the55 gallon speed bumps didn't stop the occasional car bomber, the flock of security guards pacing the grounds would open up with automatic weapons. It was just like Peru. The shit was flying, and Americans were on constant alert.

Stia brought me into his office to continue my briefing. He switched to El Salvador, where I would be spending much of my time. The United States had bought and paid for the country. We chose the presidents, scheduling elections when the previous puppet wore out his welcome. This year, Christian Democrat Jos6 Napole6n Duarte had beaten Roberto d'Aubisson, who was linked to the country's rightwing death squads. The election should have been a turning point, but the ruling elite and the military had a chokehold on the republic that no mere politician could pry loose.

Despite the ongoing reign of terror against the peasants, the dollars kept coming. A republic the size of Massachusetts absorbed $1.5 million a day in

U.S. aid - - more than $ 100 for every man, woman and child - - yet the military government still could not exterminate the Farabundo Marti National Liberation Front, or FMLN, the leftist guerrillas who pestered them from the suburbs and the mountains. They both hung on, dragging the civil war into its sixth year and making terror and gratuitous violence a part of every Salvadoran's existence.

Three days after my arrival in Central America, Duarte would walk unarmed into the war zone and plead with the guerrillas to release his daughter. The rebels had snatched her a month earlier, hammering home the reality that no one was immune to El Salvador's incestuous enmity. Death squad killings had slowed since Duarte took office, but that was like telling

mothers in Florida to take heart because the number of alligator attacks on children had declined.

The military/political storm troopers of both sides continued snatching people from their homes, and while the Salvado air force dropped bombs on guerrilla positions, the guerrilla knocked down power lines, mined roads, and kidnapped mayors Whoever pulled the trigger, ordinary people died. The GuatemaIan government harbored some resentment toward the Unit States, but at least they maintained some measure of control; the only constant in El Salvador was insanity.

DEA had never worked the country, and we were hoping establish some contacts and land our first seizure. I soon realize they didn't expect much more than recruiting informants and documenting any drug activity their eyes and ears picked up, actually busting a trafficker and grabbing his shipment would b6 gravy, as far as Stia was concerned. Later, as I leafed through the files, I discovered the drug war in this corner of the globe amounted to piles of reports documenting traffickers' identities and movements, but few seizures and arrests. We were playing traffic cop, taking down the license numbers of speeders, but never writing any tickets. Stia maintained a we're-doing-the best-we -can attitude. As he continued the briefing, it became obvious that the agency's priorities here mirrored those in Peru. First, stay out of trouble with the locals. Second, don't make the U.S. government look bad. Third, try to make life difficult for the traffickers.

Then Stia nonchalantly brought up the subject that would dominate the remainder of my DEA career: the Contra resupply operation. He described the covert U.S. operation to the Nicaraguan rebels, run out of Ilopango air base near San Salvador by Marine Lt. Colonel Oliver North. Stia said the National Security Council, where North worked, picked up where the CIA left off after our government cut off aid to the Contras.

The third of five Boland Amendments prohibiting U.S. assistance to the rebels had been in effect for a year at this point, and in April, 1985, the House of Representatives had rejected $14 million in non-military aid to the Contras, despite President Reagan's energetic lobbying for his favorite rebels:

As you know, the Sandinista dictatorship has taken absolute control of the government and the armed forces. It is a Communist dictatorship, it has done what Communist dictatorships do: created a repressive state security and secret police organization assisted by Soviet, East German and Cuban advisers; harassed and in many cases expunged the political opposition, and rendered the democratic freedoms of speech, press and assembly, punishable by officially sanctioned harassment, and imprisonment or death.

I truly believe - - the history of this century forces me to believe - - that to do nothing in Central America is to give the first Communist stronghold on the North American continents a green light to spread its poison throughout this free and increasingly democratic hemisphere.

Change the nationality of the advisers, and the President's speech would have described our allies in Guatemala and El Salvador perfectly. Nicaragua was not about to let its neighbors show them up, however; the day I arrived in Central America Nicaraguan President Daniel Ortega Saavedra suspended civil rights, such as free expression, the right to assemble publicly and privacy of mail and home. Ortega said "the brutal aggression by North America and its internal allies has created an extraordinary situation. "

Its " internal allies" were the Contras and their sympathizers, who made life difficult for the Sandinistas. Under the CIA's tutelage, these internal allies sabotaged oil facilities at Puerto Sandino, torched an oil storage facility, and planted magnetic mines in Nicaraguan ports. The Reagan administration made no secret of how badly it wanted to thump the Sandinistas.

"Be careful what you do up there," Stia said, referring to North's covert venture. "Don't interfere in their operation." Reports of drug smuggling by North's operation had trickled into our office, but Stia said DEA had not pursued the matter. He wanted to do his time in Guatemala, then pack up and return to upstate New York with his wife and kids. He wasn't about to throw rocks at a hornet's nest.

I had learned a hard lesson in Peru, and I wanted to lay out my personal philosophy up front. I told Stia, "If I receive

intelligence the Contra operation is trafficking, I'll investigate and report it.,, Stia laughed. If I tried to take down North' Operation, he said, the DEA brass would waste no time find some excuse to pull me out of the country.

I made up my mind right there I Would check out Ilopango. I didn't care who was running dope; if I confirmed they we smuggling, I would move in. Stia assumed I would salute and play the good soldier. From his statements, I could read his logic: I w a Vietnam veteran. I spent eight months in the jungles tr

: shoot Communists, and watched my buddies die in the process. In Central America, the Sandinistas gave the Reagan Administration an Opportunity to banish the ghosts of Vietnam forever. Reagan, like Kennedy, Johnson and Nixon before him, had used Cold War Communist fears and the domino theory to persuade America we could finally slay the dragon on a small Third World stage. I despised Communism, but I joined the DEA to fight another war, and Stia had no idea how many comrades I watched die in the clutches of heroin in Vietnam.

I fell in love with Guatemala. I ate fresh vegetables, lobster, steaks. The people somehow remained friendly and polite, although their eyes revealed a hard edge honed by war. My only complaint was the weather. Even in October, it felt like springtime, making sweaters a necessity at night. I still preferred pounding beat. I found plenty of U.S. fingerprints on the ancient Mayan homeland. On the crowded streets, old American cars jockeyed for position, many of them bearing Texas plates. The homesick U.S. businessmen from Akron got their fast food fix at McDonald's or Pizza Hut, and Wendy's was opening soon.

My ears picked up the local brand of Spanish on the streets, and I worked on scrubbing the Mexican signature from my speech. My border Spanish would only raise eyebrows here. It didn't take long for me to pick out the differences between the Guatemalan and Salvadoran dialects. The Salvadorans had a singsong tone, and used very correct Spanish. The Guatemalan elite prided themselves on their correct Spanish, but the poorer people tended to cut the end off their words and spiced their conversation with slang. With each conversation, I took on more of the local vernacular.

My mission was redefined after I found out Stia and Reina had a lock on most of the aerial eradication work. They both wanted to get enough time in the sky to qualify for their pilots' licenses. They were always flying. Nobody was ever on or off duty here. Reina liked zooming over the poppy and pot fields, but face-to-face encounters with the bad guys were not part of his plan. As much as Reina looked the part of a trafficker, he refused to work undercover - - he never had the instincts for it. He just wanted to have fun. Stia always teased him for working "kiddie dope," and rubbed it in by telling him he wasn't shit until he worked New York.

Five days after I arrived in Guatemala, Reina's passion for flight almost got us both killed in the Guatemalan mountains.

Reina and I met early that Tuesday and drove to Aurora for an aerial reconnaissance mission, my first poppy field hunt. Since DEA didn't have its own aircraft and pilots, we used a Bell 212 Turbo helicopter piloted by P6rez, a contract pilot and a good friend of Reina's. P6rez guided the chopper along the ragged spine of the mountains to San Marcos, the westernmost of Guatemala's 22 departments. We picked up a Guatemalan soldier, a member of the Guardia de Hacienda, at Tacana, a little village near the Mexican border - - guerrilla country. He guided us to a spot in the mountains where the poppy fields glowed against the foliage. The poppy fields looked beautiful from the air, red streaks against a green canvas.

Mexicans owned the crops, and taught local farmers how to grow opium poppies for a cash crop more lucrative than anything they could plant. The Mexicans taught the locals how to score the hard pods with a blade, let the white sap ooze out, then scrape it off and knead it into a ball. The sap turned chocolate brown, and in short order became heroin for American junkies. Long streaks of red and white along the mountainside proved how quickly the poppy trade spread. The Guatemalan police generally left them alone. They didn't want to risk running into a guerrilla stronghold while trying to destroy a bunch of flowers. We landed on the. side of a mountain, in the middle of a poppy field, and took a few plants as samples.

Ironically, the Guardia officer told me, the fields were frequently guarded by the Guatemalan Civilian Self -Defense Patrols, the rural indians organized and armed by the military who were supposed to be keeping the guerrillas busy. When General Efrain Rios Montt took power in 1982, he organized the patrols

to spearhead his counterinsurgency war in the mountains and Pressed close to a million civilians into service within two years.

Now here they were, guarding the poppies. I could sympathize With them to some extent . They were very poor people who sided With the military for protection.

The Guatemalan guerrillas also fed off the hopelessness of the Indians, Who formed the base Of what they saw as an inevitable and massive peasant uprising against the ruling elite. They took names like the Guerrilla Army of the Poor and Organization of

People in Arms, fighting from the rugged jungles of Huehuetenango and Pet6n in the northern part of the country. The guerrillas spent most of their energy ambushing army patrols, and the military responded with reflexive thumpings of any village suspected of aiding the guerrillas. I wondered how these simple villagers decided between the military and the rebels, with both sides threatening to kill them if they chose the other. It reminded me of the fable about the lady or the tiger, except the unfortunate indians could count on finding a tiger behind either door.

The Guardia officer said he never heard of the civilian patrols shooting a guerrilla. But they were always shooting at the DEA planes and helicopters with their MI rifles, and the planes frequently returned with bullet holes.

Every trip to the mountains was a risk.

Once we had our Poppies, we dropped the Guardia officer in Tacana and headed north to Huehuetenango for the next leg of the mission. That's when Reina took over the chopper's controls. He wanted to learn how to fly a helicopter, and P6rez just smiled and let go of the stick. Reina didn't have much trouble until we got to Cuilco, the little Village where we were going to meet with Guardia officials to chart more Plantations. But as we reached the

Point where an experienced pilot would instinctively cut back his airspeed to prepare for landing, Reina continued bearing down.

I waited for Reina to let UP On the stick. By the time I said something, it was too late. I yelled to P6rez over the intercom, "We're coming in too fast. " Reina yanked on the stick and the helicopter lurched upward until we were looking straight up into the sky. As he tried to bring it back down, I could see a soccer field, a clump of trees, and a school. A hard stone formed in my gut. Drawn by the sound of the rotors cutting the air, the children were streaming out of the tiny adobe and concrete school.

Reina panicked and let go of the controls. "You take it," he yelled to P6rez. P6rez grabbed the stick, but Russ had slammed one of the foot pedals to the steel, sending the chopper into a spin. ,,I can't control it," P6rez screamed. The Bell spun into the ground, snapping off the left ski before the chopper bounced back off the the turf. As the door on my side flew open, my mind flashed back to Vietnam, to the thump of the grenade exploding through a pack of men, to the chopper blades slicing through panicked soldiers as they tried to escape the wounded bird. I froze. P6rez said, "I've got to lay her down. " He nudged the Bell on its side, and dirt showered the metal skin as a blade buried itself in the ground.

In helicopter crashes, usually the next blade slices through the helicopter's body, taking out anyone unlucky enough to be sitting in the wrong place. But somehow, the chopper broke free of the blades, ripping out the transmission and pouring hot fluid all over me. I thought it was blood. We seemed to float for a moment, then the fuselage crumpled into the ground.

I crawled up to the opposite door and pulled myself out, knowing the wreckage could explode if sparks hit the fumes filling my nose. I yanked open the cockpit door and shouted to Russ. He looked at me in a daze over his dangling sunglasses. He glanced down at his lap, where the belts held him at a right angle to the ground, then at P6rez, who was clawing like a caged lion trying to escape a fire. Reina unbuckled his belt and dropped on top of P6rez with a thud. P6rez let out a yell that knocked Russ out of his daze, and the two finally untangled themselves and climbed out of the shattered Bell.

We stood silently near the wreckage, bruised and bleeding from numerous scrapes and cuts, as a mob of children watched from a respectful distance. Class had obviously been dismissed due to a helicopter crash in the soccer field. Russ tried to light a cigarette and failed miserably; his shaking hands couldn't work the lighter. A little wide-eyed Mayan girl walked up with a handful of oranges and said "Eat these, they will calm you down. " Reina took an orange and wolfed it down, skin and all.

I lit his cigarette for him. P6rez was shaking too, but out of anger rather than fear. The first words out of his mouth were "No fuckin' insurance. " He had turned a $500,000 helicopter into a schoolyard scrap heap.

The tiny military post in Cuilco radioed their headquarters in Guatemala

City and told them about the crash, and theit commander called the U. S. Embassy, who scrambled a helicopter to beat the guerrillas to the school. The CIA pilot who pulled us out swore he thought we were dead when he saw the wreckage~ The embassy, he said, went ballistic when someone radioed in that the guerrillas had shot down two DEA agents on a recon mission.

Damage control began immediately, and I got a quick lesson in Guatemalan palm greasing. P6rez stood to lose his license for letting Reina fly the helicopter, so he paid off the FAA investigator, and the heat blew away. Stia instructed me to write a cable explaining the crash, omitting the fact that Reina's hands were on the stick when we lost control, and stating "it has not been determined what caused the malfunction and crash. " I didn't like it, but Stia made it clear he didn't want headquarters bringing the hammer down on us for Reina's blunder.

Stia and Reina later accompanied me to San Salvador for the obligatory introductions. We flew into Ilopango, a sprawling air base used by military and civilian aircraft.

In El Salvador, the tension level had been slammed up a few notches. You could feel it, an oppressive mixture of fear, hostility and suspicion that permeated every glance, every movement. The base bristled with security. We drove to the U. S. Embassy, where I met Edwin Corr, the U. S. ambassador to El Salvador. I told Corr we received intelligence about large quantities of narcotics passing through El Salvador, and I would be DEA's point man in his domain. Corr struck me as a mild -mannered, affable guy, and unlike his counterpart in Guatemala, he seemed genuinely interested in assisting the DEA. Over the following months, Corr became one of my strongest allies; the one U.S. official I could count on for support as my investigations pushed into sensitive areas.

After the near miss in the helicopter, I decided to work on the ground for a while, and Stia introduced me to a few of our best informants, the people who would ultimately determine the success or failure of my undercover operations. If they could give me accurate information and introduce me to the right people, we could make a dent in the trafficking. If they turned on me, I could be dead. Stia first introduced me to Luis Aparecio, a heavyset Guatemalan businessman in his 40s the agency knew officially as informant number STG - 81 - 0013 - - meaning he had worked for the DEA since 1981, and was the thirteenth informant signed up in Guatemala that year.

I pegged Aparecio as a con artist the minute I met him. He talked fast and smooth, and could easily lure you into a trap with his bullshit. He spoke perfect English, and had lived in San Francisco for many years, where he headed the Hispanic Lions Club.

In San Salvador, he owned a coffee shop. Four months before I arrived in Guatemala, a group of guerrillas with machine guns had driven by the cafe in two pickup trucks and killed four U.S. Marines as they sat outside. Aparecio told me the guerrillas chased one of the marines inside the restaurant and shot him as he cringed on the floor near the bathroom. It was no big deal to

Aparecio; those things happened on San Salvador's streets. The Salvadoran military caught up with the guerrillas and arrested or killed all of them, although rumors spread they had nabbed the wrong men in their rush to placate the U.S. government.

Despite its bloodstained reputation, the cafe still drew Americans, probably because of its prime location in San Salvador's club district, the Zona Rosa. By the time I arrived, American servicemen and diplomats had a curfew after which they were not to be in public. But that never stopped the Marines I watched from getting drunk, falling in love with whores, and shooting off their rifles.

Our relationship started on a tense note. I discovered why Aparecio left San Francisco: he was a doper, a fugitive from justice in the United States. In addition to his civic - minded Lions Club activities, Aparecio led an organized crime syndicate in San Francisco, a group of Central Americans running large quantities of cocaine into the United States. The DEA had filed charges against him for CCE, Continuous Criminal Enterprise, and narcotics trafficking under the RICO law. They just couldn't catch him. In San Francisco, he gained a reputation for his guile; DEA reports showed the frustration of agents who tried to tail Aparecio, only to lose him when he suddenly shot the wrong way down a one -way street. Because the United States didn't have an extradition agreement with Guatemala, the DEA couldn't touch him. Aparecio told me later that a DEA agent once called in the Guatemalan police to kidnap him and put him on a plane to the

United States - a popular technique for extraditing criminals from countries with no extradition agreement with the United States When they busted through the front door, he jumped out the window in his underwear and hid in a neighbor's house. He called his military friends, and they grabbed the agent in Guatemala City and brought him to Aparecio, who politely asked him to back off. The agent probably felt lucky to escape with his life, but they didn't harm him. Aparecio hated violence, and refused to carry a gun in a place where bullets were the ultimate arbitrator in m disputes.

We had a Class One cocaine violator in our sights with RICO warrants out for him and nobody could touch him. I realized then we were sleeping with the enemy. But I had little choice but to use him; he was our top informant in El Salvado and we wanted to log our first bust there. Like it or not, we we a team. I checked up on him periodically, asking locals I trustd if he had returned to trafficking. They assured me he was out of the business.

He might have been a con artist, but Aparecio proved Iiimself as an excellent informant. He liked my determination' and I learned I could rely on his information. I had the undercover expertise, and he was the guy who showed me around and set up the meetings. His contacts consistently amazed me. Aparecio seemed to go anywhere and speak to anyone in El Salvador. His networking stemmed from his role in the Nationalist Republican Alliance, or ARENA, a union of politicians and military men who seized the country in a 1979 coup. Aparecio endeared himself to ARENA's top echelons through his

skills as a mediator and organizer. He could bring the right people together, and with hil Silver tongue and waving arms, Aparecio could settle most personal and political disputes in short order.

Aperecio married a Canadian, who fled San Francisco with him. Ironically, the wife of the doper became a hopeless junkie, hooked on the product that bought them the trappings of the elite. disgusted, he shipped her back to Canada. I knew Aparecio was a user and trafficker, and I set down the ground rules immediate]Y. If he started in the business again, I would lock him up. He agreed, probably because we paid him well. The DEA gave him about $1,000 a month a lot of money in Central America. Plus bonuses of $2,000 to $3,000 if his work led to a big bust. He knew I could see through his facade, and his disposition changed around me.

As we began working El Salvador, my dependence on Aparecio grew. I had no one else to turn to. After Camarena's torture and murder in Mexico, DEA administrator Jack Lawn said no American agent was to travel or work alone in a foreign country. But with two agents to cover four countries, DEA had no choice.

Aparecio had a girlfriend, a very attractive Salvadoran who worked as a prostitute. He had fallen for her after meeting her at one of the local cathouses, and they had lived together off and on ever since. He even opened a boutique for her next to his cafe, and she struggled for a while to sell women's clothes. Meanwhile, she continued her night job and fed Aparecio a lot of information about the Colombians who bounced in and out of San Salvador. I used her as a sub -source, and time after time her information proved reliable. Later, she would provide a few more entries in a growing list on the Contra operation.

I took over the undercover operations and began organizing and training anti-narcotics units, the "Teach a man to fish" approach to interdiction. The State Department had earmarked money for us, and I wanted to put the cash to use. I visited the different police forces in Guatemala, interviewing men and women, talking to their supervisors as I searched for those with the quickest minds and the best street smarts. The country had plenty of security to choose from, thanks to generations of turmoil.

The masses were kept in check by overlapping webs of muscle. The Treasury Police and the Guardia de Hacienda, who guarded the National Palace, fell under the 11,000-member national police. The military boasted almost 40,000 troops, with its own sub -groups. I soon learned the members of the different forces refused to work together. They all answered to different chiefs, and openly despised one another, so I had to choose one force and recruit from it exclusively. I started with 25 or 30 members of the national police, then formed a second squad within the Guardia de Hacienda within a year.

One security organization I avoided was G2, the intelligence/counter -intelligence unit of the Guatemalan military and

the most feared organization in the country. They held the big power, reinforced by a reputation for stone - faced cruelty. More than 1,000 people disappeared each year at the hands of G2, which Guatemalans referred to ominously as La Dos - - "the two. " La Dos ran the death squads, and favored nondescript white vans for their sinister work. Some of the unlucky victims dragged from their homes turned up later as mutilated carcasses, but most simply vanished, joining the legions of desaparecidos - the disappeared. The snatchings were so widespread that relatives of the disappeared formed their own organization, the Mutual Support Group. Of course, that made them subversives as well, and the death squads began making return house calls on some families. The G2 goons were experts, trained by United States and Israeli intelligence and fed with American tax dollars. They learned their lessons well, and used techniques I would later see first-hand. Their interrogations always brought results; unlike the CIA, G2 didn't worry about red tape or bureaucrats. They would simply extract the information they wanted, then kill their victim and blame it on "death squads. " The vans often took their quivering captives to a bridge close to a neighborhood where all the military brass lived. La Dos drove their quarry - - students, opposition party members, professionals, clergy, and peace corps types - - into small sheds under the bridge. People in the area could hear the screams at night.

After a few weeks in Guatemala, I developed a twisted admiration for the local security forces. They got results, while we wallowed in a quagmire of futility. "El Coyote" personified our impotence. Luis Montoya earned his nickname by setting up a service to smuggling Cubans who lacked documentation in and out of Central America. He also flew all types of contraband on his trips, including narcotics. He neglected to pay off Bahamian officials during one trip, and they arrested him with a plane full of marijuana. The Colombians had given him cash for bribes, but he kept it, thinking he could sneak past the Bahamians,. The Colombians went back and got the load back, which was the only reason they spared his neck. ,

He flew for Reina as a contract pilot, and as their friendship blossomed, Reina signed him up as an informant. He sucked money out of the DEA, feeding Reina information about the cocaine he flew for the Colombians to Florida and Texas. Reina set up "controlled deliveries, " to catch the cartel members on the receiving end. We would help Montoya refuel at small Guatemalan airstrips, then call our DEA offices in the U. S. to bust whoever showed up to collect the powder. In theory, El Coyote would be arrested for show, then set free while the bad guys went to jail and the agency weighed the cocaine for the press releases. Or Montoya could give the Columbians directions to a certain parking lot where the coke would be stashed in a DEA van, which would promptly run out of gas and leave the stranded Colombians easy prey for our agents.

But El Coyote never landed at the right airstrip. Each time, he explained the Colombians had changed the destination at the last minute, or offered some other excuse for leaving our counterparts brooding in the dark at some barren Florida airstrip. Reina usually asked me to go undercover on these operation, which totaled about 50 flights by the time I quit counting. I posed as a maintenance worker, refueling the Cessnas and Caravans as I checked out the

loads. Most flights carried 300 to 500 kilos of cocaine, and I knew Montoya charged them $500 per kilo for delivery, plus expenses. He had a sweet arrangement, taking money from us for information on the cartels, then making as much as a quarter million dollars delivering loads that yielded not a single arrest or seizure. After realizing we were in effect refueling narcotics flights while the trafficker pointed us to the wrong landing strip, I protested to Reina. El Coyote had duped us every time, I said. Reina just shrugged. They e friends.

In Guatemala, friendships were everything. If I wanted to make any progress, I would have to work with the military - despite my disgust with their methods. I met with every military commander I could find, and even paid a courtesy call on the G2 office in the Palace. They seemed eager to work with me. They confided their distaste for the CIA, who supplied them with the high-tech gizmos they loved, but tried to dictate how they worked. After running the country for three decades, the military was not about to take orders from anyone. They saw me as an asset, someone who could melt into the countryside and bring back information on the guerrillas in exchange for their support in the drug war. After a few informal visits, I compiled an extensive list of military contacts, and within a month I sealed their trust with information on Cerezo.

Corruption had rotted Guatemala from the top down, and MY growing network of contacts brought the extent of the decay into focus. I talked to customs agents at Aurora, bartenders and waitresses at the Camino Real and El Dorado hotels, U.S. embassy domestic workers and relatives of government officials. Everyone told the same story. The pilots who worked in Aurora talked about the cocaine shipments that frequently passed through on both private and commercial flights. The bartenders and waitresses had served Guatemalan officials during their meetings with Colombian cartel members. The customs workers occasionally caught government officials smuggling bags onto U. S. commercial flights without going through inspection. They had looked the other way because the men carried government credentials. The officials recruited people in U.S. airports who would pick out the marked bags and take them to a scheduled drop point where cartel runners picked them up.

In short, Guatemala had become a major hub connecting the cartels to their customers in the United States. Back in the office, I began running the names of Cerezo's top lieutenants through our computer, and almost every name came back with a black mark. The list read like a flowchart of the Guatemalan power structure. Among the Guatemalan high command documented as traffickers were the president's brother, Milton Cerezo-Garcia; Claudia Arenas, a top aide; and two members of the Guatemalan congress: former interior minister Alfonso Cabrera-Hidalgo and Carlos Ramiro Garcia de Paz.

I leaned back in my chair, trying to absorb the enormity of what I stumbled upon. Our government had leaned on the Guatemalan military for elections and trumpeted the birth of a government whose top officials were involved in narcotrafficking. Somewhere, our priorities had become skewed, hopelessly mired in the residual shame of Vietnam and Korea while a new

monstrosity feasted on our minds and bodies. We spent billions trying to beat down an ideology in Central America, while the cartels rented nations as transit routes. After fighting both wars I knew which posed a greater menace to America. Communism had accomplished little within our borders, but drugs were quickly turning our inner cities into war zones and choking our prisons, hospitals and morgues with empty husks. In New York, I watched the drug culture grow, throb, and metastasize to the streets. In South America, economies had surrendered to the most powerful growers the continent had ever seen. Now, I had evidence Guatemala's infant government was addicted to cocaine. Winning our narcotics war in Guatemala would mean taking down a good portion of their government, and that would never fly in Washington.

Warily, I took my information to Stia, who had heard about it already from informants. As usual, he had chosen not to follow up. I held my tongue; Guatemala's high officials didn't seem concerned about hiding their drug activity, so it was only a matter of time before I gathered hard evidence on them.

The Guatemalan military proved a better judge of Cerezo's true character than the Reagan Administration. They had vigorously persecuted Cerezo years before, and one of my informants discovered Cerezo never forgot his trip into exile.

Enrique, a Colombian-bom informant who ran a clothing business in Costa Rica, gave me an intimate look at the political side of Cerezo's inner circle. One of Enrique's good friends was a well placed Guatemalan official, and I asked him to feed me anything he heard about the men on my trafficking list. Enrique's friend took him to a surreptitious meeting in downtown Guatemala City where a high Government official, met with two Cubans, a Russian and several Nicaraguans.

Enrique said they spent the evening discussing how to overthrow the Guatemalan military.

I wrote my report and gave it to Stia and the CIA. The CIA didn't believe me, so I called G2. Two of their officers rushed to my office for a quick briefing. It was hot information, and they were stunned. Captain Fuentes (whose full name I never learned), was clearly impressed. "Someone tipped us about the meeting, but our friends within Cerezo's government could not discover the location in time to act, " he said. Fuentes pressed for the name of my source, but I balked. He didn't know how to react. Glaring at me, he told his lieutenant I probably worked for the CIA, and it took me a while to convince him drugs and politics were so intertwined I gathered good political intelligence with almost every drug case I worked. He thought for a few minutes, then dropped his interrogation and thanked me for the tip.

their respect.

I shut the door behind them, feeling strangely secure. I had

One of our informants worked for both the Guatemalan government and the

Contras, and his loose tongue gave me my first concrete intelligence about the rumors Stia had mentioned. Everyone knew him as Sofi. Socrates Amaury Sofi -Perez was a Bay of Pigs veteran, a short, thin Cuban with a big nose, glasses and a receding hairline. Despite his vague resemblance to Gandi, Sofi had his fingers in every illegal and immoral activity in the region, including the government's death squads. He carried G2 credentials, but essentially worked as a free agent, leading the squads and dabbling in narcotics on the side. Like Cerezo, he surrounded himself with bodyguards, massive men he handpicked from G2.

Sofi never tried to hide his connections to the death squads. Accountability barely existed in Guatemala, and he had all the connections he needed with the military, the government and the ruling elite. They kept Sofi and his fellow commanders very busy. A British human rights group estimated 100 Guatemalans were killed for practicing the wrong politics each month, and another 10 people disappeared each week. I knew those anonymous white vans could pluck me off the street at any point. I couldn't touch Sofi.

One of his tentacles reached into the Contra operation, and as Sofi bragged about his connections with the rebels, he shed more light on North's shadowy operation. He told me the small Contra air force at Ilopango smuggled drugs as well as war materiel, and drug money helped feed their crusade against the Sandinistas.

"We have to support the Contras fully," Sofi often told me. "Nicaragua must be liberated from the Sandinistas at any cost, and if trafficking provides the means to that end, so be it. " Like Stia, he considered me trustworthy because I was a Vietnam veteran, a fellow traveler in his eyes. Like so many Bay of Pigs refugees loitering around Central America, he lived to battle Castro and Communism. By sharing the details of the operation, he wanted my implicit approval of their activities.

Sofi owned a shrimp company in Guatemala City he used to launder narcotics profits for the Contras. He played the role of trafficker and banker, picking up cocaine in Colombia, hiding it in shrimp bound for Miami, then turning over the profits to the rebels. He paid off a U.S. Customs agent who would receive the cocaine/shrimp shipment and hurry it past inspection, arguing it would spoil. I wondered what Bob Stia would say if he found out the cases of frozen shrimp Sofi brought him were part of a smuggling operation.

Sofi told me he had started double -dealing, piggybacking big cocaine loads from Guatemala to Miami for the same Guatamalan government officials I had on my list. I had never met a man so adept at exploiting chaos. Sofi's only loyalty was to himself, but he sold his services simultaneously to Cerezo, the Guatemalan military, DEA, and even the CIA. I later discovered he was double - dealing on the DEA as well, monitoring our activities and reporting to the Contras. He asked too many questions about my intelligence on Ilopango, always pestering me to run computer checks to find out if DEA had opened any files on certain pilots or Contra operatives.

One incident Sofi passed along revealed how badly President Reagan wanted

to keep the resistance alive. North had negotiated with the Guatemalan government to receive a shipment of surface-to-air missiles bound for the Contras, in exchange for a generous increase in U.S. aid. On the way to the Contra base, the missiles were seized by the Hondurans. A hasty phone call from Reagan convinced President Roberto Sauzo Cordoba of Honduras to release the shipment, and North later revealed Washington's reward: additional aid. The Guatemalans obviously reaped their own quid pro quo for their part in the transfer; the following year, U.S. military aid to Guatemala increased from $500,000 to $5.4 million.

Sofi maintained his sales pitch for the rebels, but I wasn't buying. I admired the Contras for their tenacity and their ideals, but I suspected Sofi's surreptitious seafood scam was just a sample of their drug involvement. I repeated the pledge I made to Stia - - if I caught them running dope, I was going to report it. Sofi looked as if I had slapped him. His questions persisted, but he stopped volunteering information on his activities for the Contras.

After a month in Guatemala, I shifted to El Salvador to repeat the networking process. I spent a lot of time with Aparecio, drinking in everything be knew about contraband in the country.

He was a walking encyclopedia on everything from Colombian trafficking in El Salvador to the black market baby trade.

I told him what I learned about Sofi's shrimp connection, and he filled in more blanks on the Contras. The military gave them carte blanche use of Ilopango, with the blessing of Juan Rafael Bustillo, head of the Salvadoran air force. Ramiro said they were indeed running narcotics out of Ilopongo. He said a bay of Pigs veteran named Max Gomez - - which I later discovered was the nom de guerre for Felix Rodriguez headed the operation and reported to Oliver North.

Ramiro said everybody who spent any time around Ilopango or the Salvadoran military knew about the operation, and the people running the show didn't bother to hide anything. To his air force officer friends, there was nothing covert about the operation. It meant more U.S. aid, and they supported it enthusiastically.

I added Aparecio's statements to my files on the Contra operation, which included careful notes of everything Sofi spilled. As soon as I could accumulate enough intelligence to make a strong case, I planned to drop the hornet's nest in Stia's lap.

The goal of every investigation was to get the doper out of Central America and into a U.S. court for trial. Unfortunately, we too often turned our handcuffed prizes over to a Byzantine system. Central American justice had a way of misplacing well connected narcotics violators, or releasing them for lack of evidence. The locals saw the drug trade as a huge cash pipeline that could be tapped into almost at will, and it was standard practice in many

countries to hold cartel operatives and their drug loads for ransom. As flawed as American justice might be, the drug lords feared it like nothing else, and we had several techniques for getting otherwise unextraditable offenders into our system. On November 10, Reina called me to back him up on one of these rule-bending busts.

Counterintelligence experts in Belize had maintained a wiretap on Johnny Zabaneh, a DEA fugitive and banana baron living in Orange Walk, Belize. Zabaneh was fat, Lebanese, and the biggest doper in the country. The U.S. government wanted him for conspiracy to import and distribute marijuana. Reinahad been trying to bust him for a year. Without an extradition treaty, we had to wait for him to leave the country, and when the Belizian eavesdroppers heard Zabaneh planning a trip to Guatemala to purchase some sort of equipment, they called Reina with the flight number and time. We detained him at Aurora, then asked our friends with the Guatemalan police to kick Zabaneh out of the country as an undesirable. It was a poor substitute for an extradition treaty, but it worked.

The Guatemalans knew the drill, and grinned when they told Zabaneh he would be returning to Belize - - via Houston. I bought two tickets and called DEA in Houston to send someone to collect a fugitive. As the 8:30 a.m. Aviateca flight left Guatemala City, Zabaneh still looked puzzled. The Guatemalans had evicted him, but he was not sure how that translated into a trip to the United States. He figured it out when I read him his rights from the airplane seat as we approached Intercontinental Airport.

"I'm placing you under arrest for narcotics trafficking," I said. Zabaneh didn't make a sound as I led him off the plane. My DEA counterparts collected him at the gate, and I turned around and reboarded the plane for the two-and-a-half hour return flight to Guatemala City. High Times, a famous dopers magazine, wrote about the incident in August, 1986, and I saved a copy for my scrapbook. We had broken rules to nail a trafficker, and he would actually go to prison for his crimes. For the first time since I came to Guatemala, I was proud.

My phone in the El Dorado rang constantly as our eyes and ears at Aurora discovered I would respond in a few minutes when they had a tip. Three days after the Zabaneh bust, one of our informants called when a group of Libyans passed through his security checkpoint. They carried Libyan and Bolivian passports, and the suspicious security team pulled them over for closer scrutiny. They insisted they were tourists, but a search turned up an ominous cache of documents: addresses, phone numbers of contacts, and crude torture diagrams, with the human body's lethal points circled in red.

I pulled on my boots and rushed to the airport. Five minutes later, I confronted the Libyans. They stuck to their tourist story in animated English. If they had landed five months later, when President Reagan ordered the retaliatory bombing of strongman

Muammar al Qaddafi's house, their presence would have sent off warning bells

all over the isthmus. I called Manny Brand, a cuban CIA agent based in Guatemala City, and told him about the group. Manny told me not to get excited - - they were probably trying to come in as illegal aliens, and I should take down all the information I could and call him the next day. They had not broken any laws, so I followed his instructions. The Libyans were released.

I could not drive the red circles out of my mind. As soon as I reached my office the next day, I turned the information over to the FBI's Central American attache, then called Manny with the Libyans' names. Manny called back shortly, panic -stricken. The CIA computer listed them as terrorists. Manny said Jack McCavett, chief of station for the CIA in Guatemala, had previously worked in Libya, and Qaddafi threatened to assassinate him. The ominous tourists were now a hit squad, and Manny was going crazy trying to find them. The CIA wanted every shred of information they could find, and sent a Learjet from Langley to Panama to catch up with the FBI attache I had briefed.

The next day, the morning traffic into Guatemala City hummed past the bodies of the libyans. Manny had called LaDos, and it took their best predators one day to hunt down the Libyans and kill them.

On November 18, 1 flew to New Orleans for Zabaneh's hearing. He was furious, claiming we had kidnapped him. I couldn't stifle my smile when the judge said he didn't care how Zabaneh got there, as long as he was arrested when he hit U.S. soil. He was going to jail, and we had another small victory in our futile war.

My euphoria disintegrated when my wife called from McAllen. There had been an accident, and Crystal Bianca was injured. I jumped on the next flight to McAllen, feeling helpless. When I last saw her in October, Crystal didn't want me to leave - - I could see her standing at the airport waving goodbye. I could also picture the accident Noe described, a car coasting through a stop sign and smashing broadside into my wife and daughter. The images swirled through my head until I rushed home and opened the front door. Crystal had a gash on her head, but nothing serious. She smiled at me with her bandaged head, and almost broke my heart. "Daddy, I didn't think you were going to make it. I I on my way back to Guatemala, I took advantage of a stopover in Miami to stock up on gifts for my friends. I picked up a bottle of Dom Perignon at a liquor store for the Guatemalan police who evicted Zabaneh. It always paid to reward the people who came through with reliable intelligence. I always brought them bottles of American booze, expensive champagne, and cartons of Marlboros. The men loved giving their girlfriends boxes of candy I brought back for them.

I could afford it; the DEA gave me danger pay for every trip to El Salvador and covered my expenses while I was in the field - which was almost every day. My personal expenses shriveled to almost nothing, so I could play Santa Claus to my network. Friendships were everything.

By December, I was confident enough in my feel for El Salvador to start working undercover. On December 5, 1 picked up Sofi in my DEA Volvo and followed Highway I through the mountains surrounding Guatemala City before

picking up High way 8 to the Salvadoran border. The two -lane road cut through beautiful rolling farmland, but its reputation for bloody accidents forced me to catch only glimpses of the scenery as I concentrated on the traffic. We stopped at the Las Chimanas checkpoint between the two countries, where Sofi had set up the meeting with Leonel Gaitan-Gaitan, a Salvadoran trafficker who moved large quantities of cocaine for the Medellin cartel.

I didn't trust Sofi, and he became a little annoyed when I repeatedly ran through how I wanted everything done. He never liked being told what to do. I was in no mood to deal with his ego. Working undercover in El Salvador with Sofi as my only backup was plain stupid. If our Salvadoran friend became spooked, I half expected Sofi to scurry under the nearest car, or worse, blow our cover and get us both killed. When I asked Reina to come along, he begged off; he was tied up with his aerial missions in Belize. We met Gaitan-Gaitan in the parking lot of a restaurant just inside the Guatemalan line. Sofi and I began sweating, only partly out of nervousness; El Salvador was always an oven compared to Guatemala City's cool mountain air. Sofi introduced me as Carlos de Cordova, a Mexican buyer looking for a new supplier. I borrowed the alias from my friend Tony Cordova, a Texas Department of Public Safety trooper. Gaitan - Gaitan was almost as relaxed as he was sloppy. His rumpled slacks and dress shirt

hung limply on a short, beefy frame, and he had unbuttoned the top of his shirt to reveal gold ropes Reina would have been proud to own.

My nervousness melted away when Gaitan- Gaitan took the initiative, eagerly chattering about his unique access to the Colombians. He looked and sounded like a used car salesman trying to hit his monthly quota. I told him how many kilos I needed, and promised to call him later to set up the deal.

I smiled as we shook hands. I saw no trace of suspicion in his face, no threatening eyes watching from the perimeter, no signals to hidden associates. Undercover work, the deceptive art of gathering evidence and building a case, simply didn't exist here. The local authorities had no use for it; they grabbed their man, extracted their information, and often decided the punishment on the spot. The idea that I was anyone other than who I claimed had never occurred to Gaitan-Gaitan.

On January 14, Vice President George Bush visited Guatemala City to put the U.S. stamp of approval on Cerezo's inauguration. I met Bush at the obligatory cocktail party at the ambassador's residence. Embassy personnel and Guatemalan dignitaries elbowed through the crowd, jockeying for floor space near the Vice President. I was standing alone, watching the steel faced secret service agents watching everyone else, when Bush approached. He read the tag on my lapel identifying me as a member of the U.S. embassy, and asked what I did. As he shook my hand, someone snapped a photo. I told him I was a DEA agent assigned to Guatemala. He said, "Well, what do you do? " I knew it wasn't wise to bring up the Contras - - this man was part of the Administration, and Reagan had even declared himself a Contra.

I just blurted it out. "There's some funny things going on with the Contras in El Salvador. "

Bush didn't reply. He simply smiled and walked away, seeking another hand to shake. After that exchange, I knew that he knew.

In Washington, the Contra public relations machine continued its mission to scrub the Contras' image in the eyes of Congress and the American public. Years later, Congressional pressure forced the declassification of documents outlining how taxpayer money paid for the Administration's PR campaign on Capitol Hill. In 1983, National Security Advisor William Clark created the Office of Public Diplomacy for Latin America and the Caribbean (S/LPD). "The President has underscored his concern that we must increase our efforts in the public diplomacy field to deepen the understanding of and support for our policies in Central America," Clark wrote in a July 1, 1983 memo.

By 1985, the public relations firm hired by S/LPD to handle the Contra's image referred to their efforts as a I 'White Propaganda" operation. In an "eyes only" memo from one spin master to another, Johnathan Miller of International Business Communications alerted Pat Buchanan to several negative news pieces and outlined their media counterstrikes. " I will not attempt in the future to keep you posted on all activities since we have too many balls in the air at any one time and since the work of our operation is ensured by our office's keeping a low profile, " Miller wrote.

In the winter of 1985, the blitz even reached McAllen, where retired Gen. John Singlaub appeared at the McAllen Public Library with Mario Calero, brother of United Nicaraguan Opposition leader Adolfo Calero. Singlaub, head of the United States Council for World Freedom, claimed he was raising money from ordinary folks to support the Contras. Later, the truth would come out. I happily noted Singlaub didn't get a dime from the ordinary folks in McAllen fundraising was against library rules.

Four days after Singlaub's McAllen visit, the first hint of the Contras' drug connection appeared as a blip in the national news. On December 21, an Associated Press article appeared, quoting unnamed U.S. investigators and American volunteers working with the rebels: "Nicaraguan rebels operating in north em Costa Rica have engaged in cocaine trafficking, in part to help finance their war against Nicaragua's leftist government. "

Thirteen months later, another story on the Contra drug connection would appear on the front page of The New York Times. Quoting anonymous Administration officials, the story outlined a DEA investigation at Ilopango. It would be the closest my reports ever came to exploding in the White House.

With Bush's visit still echoing in my head, I wrote a report on the Contras based on more than three month's worth of intelligence from Sofi and Aparecio. I gathered up my notes and

wrote the main report, then individual reports under each inform ant's number to show what signed them and dropped the information came from whom. em on

Stia's desk. He read them slowly, carefully, shaking his head. His discomfort wa obvious, sign. and for a moment I was afraid he would refuse to s

"This is too big, and it's going to come back and bite us in the ass if we don't report it, " I argued. It didn't take long to convince him - if he didn't sign the reports, I was ready to send a cable out to t~e El Paso Intelligence Center, which coordinated and dissected intelligence from all over the world on narcotics trafficking. Stia knew he was covering his ass, and scribbled his name on the reports.

From Stia's desk, they were forwarded to the DF-A Latin American Desk in Washington. If this had been any other operation, I knew our foreign office would cut loose a few intelligence agents on temporary duty to help Out - I waited for a reaction from Washington. Nothing.

Meanwhile ' our appointment with Gaitan - Gaitan arrived, and I called the Salvadoran national police to help Aparecio and me make the bust. Sofi Is role was finished,, and I always tried to keep my informants from meeting. The Police, however wanted to beat us to the scene, and they exploded into the filthy San Salvador house with a gang of men. When Aparecio and I arrived the Salvadorans were searching the house as they led their' Prisoners outside. When Gaitan Gaitan emerged, he squinted at me through a swelling eye and silently shook his head

His mouth didn't look as though it would function' anyway. The police were energetically knocking them around, screaming for the location of the hidden cash. With their thumbs tied together behind their backs, the men groaned helplessly as the Police delivered swift kicks to their midsection and swatted them across the face With thick San Salvador Phone books. somehow, they held their tongues.

The police looked about half finished stripping the house of all valuables. I started to object when the phone rang. I picked up the receiver and the voice on the other end asked for Leone]. He said he was calling from Bogota. I switched to my Salvadoran accent and told him I was Carlos, Leonel's right-hand man. "He's at the store, I I I said. "He should be back in a minute. "

The line was silent for a moment. Finally, the voice from Bogota decided to believe me. "Tell him our friend is going to arrive tonight with 25 aparatos. " The word meant apparatus, a good non specific term for a kilo. He gave me the flight number of a plane arriving in San Salvador that night and said we should make sure our friend arrived without any problems. I assured him I would personally wait for the flight. He described the passenger briefly and hung up.

The mad scramble continued throughout the house, and I could barely control my anger. The Salvadorans picked over the place with greedy fingers, hunting for the still undiscovered cash. The 30 kilos they seized from Gaitan - Gaitan lay forgotten on a table as they hurried to their vehicles with televisions, stereo equipment, and whatever else struck their fancy. On a

lucky hunch, I picked up a large stereo speaker as Aparecio reached for its twin. We grunted with the effort - - they were almost too heavy to lift. Aparecio grinned as we tore open the back panels and found them packed with brown paper bags full of cash.

The Salvadorans watched intently as we wrapped the money with tape, marking it to show signs of tampering. I felt better when we arrived at the police station, where I searched out my regular contacts and enlisted about 15 police officers to help count the cash. It came to $800,000 in worn U.S. dollars, which we turned over to their commanders.

From the police station, I drove to El Salvador International Airport to meet our visitor, whom the man on the phone had identified as Nivias. Aparecio had stayed at police headquarters to make sure the money didn't disappear, so I needed some backup for the meeting. I called Victor Rivera, an advisor to the president of El Salvador.

The CIA had hired Rivera as a contract agent and advisor to Duarte, and he and I quickly become good friends. His street skills could help any operation. He was one of a half - dozen Venezuelans training the Salvadoran security police in counterinsurgency techniques. Changing political tides had forced them out of Venezuela, and the Salvadorans generously donated an office in national police headquarters in exchange for their expertise. Sharing grisly techniques had become a thriving cottage industry in El Salvador, and Rivera and his cohorts found cozy positions with both the Salvadoran government and the CIA, who paid Victor a reported $5,000 a month for his work.

Victor met me in front of the airport, and we quickly fanned out among our contacts in customs and immigration so Nivias could bring his apparatus into the country unchallenged. I spotted him waiting at the baggage carousel and introduced myself. He shot me a quizzical look and asked, "Where's Gaitan?" I had rehearsed my excuse: Gaitan was at the house taking care of the money. He relaxed. I asked if he had the stuff, and he picked up the suitcase and handed it to me.

"Are we going to do it like the last time?" he asked. I had no clue what he was talking about, so I blurted, "Yeah, we're just going to take it out the front door. " I grunted as I picked up the big Samsonite, and Victor shot me a wry smile. My arm felt like it was being yanked from its socket. I asked Nivias for his passport and handed it to one of my contacts at immigration, who stamped and returned it with a blank stare.

We walked to Victor's Toyota Celica, and Victor plunked the suitcase in the trunk and popped the clasps. The kilos were packed tightly inside, wrapped in brown tape. I turned to Nivias and told him he was under arrest. Victor cuffed him, and a plainclothes Salvadoran national police sergeant took the wheel of the Toyota. Victor and I got in the back seat, cramming Nivias between us. We had a 45-minute drive from the airport to the capital, plenty of time to question our guest. Victor and I played bad cop/bad cop, asking him how many shipments he had delivered to El Salvador, who he paid off at customs, and other details about his smuggling. Nivias refused to answer. "I

don't know what you're talking about, " he insisted.

After a few failed attempts, Victor snapped. He swiveled in the cramped back seat and lashed at Nivias with a hard -muscled arm. The punch mashed Nivias' chin with a crack and continued through, smacking me in the face. Victor apologized briefly and continued working on our stubborn captive. After another 15 minutes, he lost his patience and told the sergeant to pull onto a side road. Victor grabbed Nivias by the hair, threw him to the ground, and growled, "I'm tired of this bullshit. If you don't cooperate I'll kill you here like a dog. " He pulled his Glock 9mm, snapped a round into the chamber, and aimed the barrel at Nivias' head.

Nivias pulled himself to his knees, begging. "Please don't kill me, I have a family. " Victor lowered the Glock to Nivias'face and fired. I looked away, convinced he had killed the man. He was that crazy. I began sweating, wondering if Victor would turn the gun on me to eliminate witnesses.

I heard Nivias whimper, then Victor's deep laugh. He had pulled the Glock to the right and fired a round next to Nivias' ear, missing him completely. Victor was laughing, and Nivias remained sprawled on the dirt, breathing in fits with his eyes tightly shut. Between gasps, Nivias said he was ready to talk. We took him to the police department in San Salvador, where he dictated a signed, sworn statement claiming to be a member of the Colombian terrorist group M 19. He said the smuggling had gone on for years. The cartels hired him and other gofers to carry cocaine past paid -off officials. The risk, he added, was minimal.

Everybody was excited about the bust. The Salvadorans could point to the bust with one hand and extend the other to Uncle Sam for more anti -narcotics money. In light of Nivias' confession, the Salvadorans tried to paint it as a terrorist organization smuggling narcotics to support the rebels. Naturally, the dollars followed. Later, the State Department released money for an anti - narcotics squad in El Salvador. My workload again doubled, and for a few weeks, the Contras slipped into the back of my mind.

By mid-February, TDY had become permanent duty. I knew the area, had a big bust under my belt, and they needed the help. Stia asked if I wanted the job, and I jumped at it. I returned to Peru to pick up my household goods, and moved into the embassy transit apartments in Guatemala City's zone 10.

About this time, I recruited a Salvadoran who put the hard evidence I needed on the Contras at my fingertips. Hugo Martinez worked at Ilopango, writing flight plans for the private planes streaming in and out of the airport's civilian side. That included my flights in and out of the airport, and we talked frequently as my presence in El Salvador increased. Hugo impressed me with his pro-American and anti-drugs sentiments, and his strategic position at Ilopango made him a perfect candidate for intelligence -gathering. Recruiting him was easy; he had worked for us indirectly for months. Hugo occasionally fed Aparecio information as a sub - source, and he cemented his reputation with a tip that led to a 500-kilo cocaine bust.

During one of my visits to Ilopango's civilian side (I could never get access to the military side where North's operation was based), Hugo confided he had become unhappy with the arrangement. He had originally balked at becoming a documented informant because he feared getting caught. Emboldened by success, he was no longer happy with taking whatever cut Aparecio chose to pass along. His disgust with the drug trade, plus his addiction to the intrigue of spying, had him hooked. I said, "You're giving us this information, you might as well get paid for it." He readily agreed, and I gave him his informant number. From that point on, I paid him about $200 every time he gave me intelligence.

Hugo wanted to prove his value, and unleashed a flood of documentation on narcotics smuggling out of the air base. Suddenly, my reports contained not only the names of traffickers, but their destinations, flight paths, tail numbers, and the date and time of each flight. Hundreds of flights each week delivered cocaine to the buyers and returned with money headed for the great isthmus laundering machine in Panama. I could have started a weekly newsletter: Ilopango Doper. Still, our seizures didn't increase much; the traffickers usually airdropped the cocaine before landing in Florida or the Bahamas, swooping low as some poor grunt in the back kicked the bundles out of the cargo hold into the waves below. Waiting speedboats would fish the cocaine out of the water and race to shore undetected.

Many of the loads found their way to the streets through the skills of George Morales, a three-time world champion speedboat racer who smuggled millions of dollars worth of marijuana and cocaine from the Bahamas to Florida before he was caught and convicted in Florida. In his testimony before the U. S. Senate Subcommittee on Terrorism, Narcotics and International Operations, chaired by Sen. John Kerry of Massachusetts, Morales said he paid off Bahamian officials so his powerboats and airplanes could operate unmolested.

When I asked Hugo about the Contras, his eyes lit up, and by the time he finished talking I knew we were in over our heads.

He explained the operation in detail. The Contra planes flew out of hangars four and five, and Hugo could identify their planes by the black cross painted on their tail. The CIA owned one hangar, and the National Security Council ran the other. I knew the CIA, like DEA, had a long history of hiring men with less than stellar reputations. In this case, they were narcotics traffickers. Hugo said the pilots often brought the drugs to Ilopango from either numerous private airstrips in Costa Rica, or the U.S. military base in Panama. They flew weapons, cash, and cocaine from these safe havens, taking the powder to the United States.

Ilopango reminded me of O'Hare Airport in Chicago, bustling at all hours of the day and night. Murga was one of the busiest men on the base, tending to a continuous line of pilots waiting for their flight plans. Like Aparecio, Hugo had no trouble picking up incriminating information; many times pilots told him outright they were taking cocaine to the United States. The CIA had hired them, they boasted, and nobody could touch them. Hugo would quietly jot

down their names after they left. Most of the time, Hugo simply poked his balding head into the planes as he made his rounds. When he spotted the tightly wrapped kilos, the pilot's name joined the others on his list.

As Hugo described it, every pilot had his own preferred technique for getting his illegal payload to U.S. soil. Some liked the John Wayne approach, flashing their CIA credentials at Florida airfields and unloading the drugs in plain view. Those who wanted to maintain a lower profile shipped the kilos out in innocuous cargoes like towels, seafood, frozen vegetables or auto parts. Many landed at military bases around the United States, knowing no one would inspect a Contra plane. The air drops were probably the least risky and the most popular, since many of the pilots had plenty of experience dropping bundles in the Bahamas or off the Florida coast.

They returned with cash to Ilopango. Hugo said some of the pilots flew the money to Panama for deposit in the Bank of Credit and Commerce International, later indicted for money laundering and bribery. From Panama, the money was wired to a Costa Rican bank account held by the Contras. They used the money for supplies and arms, completing the cycle.

When I ran Hugo's list of names through the computer, they all came back as narcotics traffickers in DEA files. Little wonder the Contras used them, I thought. Nobody knew the terrain like drug pilots, and their dive-and-dump flying skills perfectly matched the job description for covert operations.

When I realized how deeply Hugo had probed into the Contra's small air force, I increased my presence in El Salvador, checking in with Hugo and Aparecio constantly. The Contra supply operation had clearly become a link in the cartels' smuggling operations, with Ilopango as the main hub between Colombia and the United States.

We began tracking the drug flights out of hangars four and five. I used pages ripped from Hugo's log book to jot down the date, time, flight number, tail number, destination, and the names and passport numbers of each pilot and co -pilot. Finally, I had concrete evidence.

I wrote a string of reports on the Contras through the end of March with the stream of intelligence Hugo and Aparecio generated. As Aparecio zoomed in on our target, his air force contacts in Ilopango shared their knowledge on the activities in hangars four and five. He had access to the military section of the airport, and he would visit with his military buddies every time he needed booze for his restaurant. The military had a monopoly on El Salvador's liquor sales, so they were the only source for all of the bars and restaurants in the country. Aparecio would go in every week to buy his whiskey and tequila and shoot the bull with the air force brass. They talked openly about the Contra operation. I updated my reports after every trip to El Salvador.

By this point, I was in El Salvador at least every other week, meeting with Aparecio and Hugo in my room at the Sheraton. Stia kept shaking his head and signing the reports. He figured the deed was done, and they couldn't come down

on him too hard. He was just doing his job.

On March 16, 1986, President Reagan took another shot at the Sandinistas in a speech televised nationally. As Congress prepared for another vote on Contra aid, Reagan accused the Sandinistas of drug running. "I know that every American parent concerned about the drug problem will be outraged to learn that top Nicaraguan government officials are deeply involved in drug trafficking," Reagan said, then showed hidden camera footage of several men loading cocaine onto Barry Seal's plane near Managua in April, 1984. Seal, a burly Louisianian who headed the Medellin cartel's shipping operations, had become a DEA informant and was helping the agency infiltrate the cartel. One of the men loading the bundles onto Seal's C - 123 cargo plane was Federico Vaughan, who the President said was a top aide to Nicaraguan interior minister Tomas Borge. Seal's cover was blown the previous summer when his mission into Nicaragua was leaked to the press.

Before his name hit the papers, Seal planned to carry $1.5 million in drug money to Managua, where the cartel kingpins waited. Oliver North wanted it. On July 28, 1988, DEA officials told the House Subcommittee on Crime North had suggested the Sandinista drug money be diverted to the Contras. North did not get the money. Seal was murdered in Louisiana by two gunmen in February, 1986.

Despite his willingness to solicit for drug money, North, of course, dismissed any possibility of a connection between his Contras and the drug trade. In his autobiography, North tried to put the allegations to rest. After special investigator Lawrence Walsh spent millions of dollars in his probe, "If there was even a grain of truth to these stories, it surely would have come out. "

Hints of the truth surfaced in 1987 and 1988 as Kerry's subcommittee interviewed 27 witnesses and subpoenaed documents - including North's personal notebooks. The notebooks arrived heavily censored, but scores of references to narcotics or terrorism remained. One of the entries, for July 12, 1985, read "$14 million to finance came from drugs."

Morales, given a day pass from federal prison to testify before Kerry's subcommittee, revealed his involvement with the Contras. Marta Healey, ex-wife of Contra southern front military commander Adolfo Popo Chamorro, approached Morales in 1984 after his second arrest for smuggling and arranged a meeting with Chamorro and two other Contra leaders, Southern group air force chief Marcos Aguado and political head Octaviano Cesar. Aguado and Cesar told Morales they were CIA agents and asked for financial and military assistance.

As far as the Contras were concerned, whatever Morales lacked in scruples, he made up for in money and planes. In return, they promised to use their " personal knowledge " of Washington to help him with his indictment. The Contras needed to fly fabric for uniforms and 40,000 lbs of weapons out of Miami; Morales needed well-connected friends, and quickly. It was a perfect match.

That summer, Gary Betzner, Morales' best pilot, took off from Executive International Airport in Fort Lauderdale with a load of weapons Morales bought at a gunshop in southwest Miami. He landed in Costa Rica, where the weapons were unloaded and, as Morales testified, Betzner picked up a different cargo:

Senator Kerry: What were you expecting to have come back?

Mr. Morales: About 400 or so kilograms of cocaine.

Senator Kerry: Did you know where he was going to pick up those kilograms of cocaine?

Mr. Morales: It had been arranged. He had the nwp and the coordinates, and the airstrip appears on the Costa Rican air nwp. It is an American rancher's.

About two weeks later, Morales cleaned out the inventory at another Miami gunshop, and Betzner pushed his Panther off the runway at Opa-locka Airport with another load for the rebels. Again, he returned with cocaine.

As far as Morales could tell, the Contras fulfilled their end of the bargain. He was told the DEA and FBI offices in Miami knew of his involvement with the Contras, yet the flights continued. After one of Morales' deliveries to the Contras in 1985, an associate told Morales he overheard a conversation between a U.S. agent and an informant, outlining the details of an earlier shipment. "This is one of the reasons which has led me to believe that I was very well protected," Morales testified. "Otherwise, one of these agencies would have intervened. "

Morales rewarded the Contras handsomely, starting with $400,000 in cash and checks in October, 1984. By the end of 1985, the speedboat smuggler's cash contributions to the Contras totaled, by his estimate, $4 million or $5 million. Kerry asked him twice, just to make sure:

Senator Kerry: My question to you is, Was the majority of that money mostly drug money that you delivered to the Contras?

Mr. Morales: I would say that about 100 percent.

Senator Kerry: Except for the $100,000 or so that came from your company.?

Mr. Morales: Exactly.

Senator Kerry: The rest was illegal profits?

Mr. Morales: Yes, sir.

Kerry's committee also talked to the Contras, with Kerry flying to Costa Rica for depositions of Aguado, Cesar, and Karol Prado, who was Southern front commander Eden Pastora's second in command. The Contras corroborated Morales' story, and Cesar said when he told CIA officials at Ilopango about their relationship with Morales, they condoned it "as long as you don't deal in the

powder. " The Contras said they loathed taking money from a drug trafficker and using his airplanes to transport supplies, but with the CIA money gone, their troops in southern Nicaragua slowly ran out of boots, clothes, medicine, and ammunition. "I'm not proud of having had this type of relationship," Cesar told Kerry during the deposition on Halloween, 1987.

Back in Guatemala, I was preparing for a long tenure. I returned to McAllen for Easter and helped my family pack for the move to Guatemala. Thankfully, the kids were too young to know what was happening. Crystal was two, and C4 was eight months and crawling enthusiastically. Although it meant leaving her family, Noe actually looked forward to the move. I was relieved; she was learning about the life of a diplomat's wife.

In mid -April, a cable arrived from Bobby Nieves, the agent in charge of our Costa Rican office. Nieves advised me to check hangars four and five at Ilopango; a very reliable informant gave them intelligence about large quantities of cocaine being smuggled from Costa Rica to El Salvador. The cable named two Costa Rican pilots who had been flying into Ilopango. It ended with a line that jumped off the page: We believe the Contras are involved in narcotics trafficking.

When I get back to San Salvador and tell Hugo and Aparecio, this will make their day, I thought. Word was getting around.

I immediately called Nieves and briefed him on everything I knew about Ilopango and the connection between the hangars and North's Contra operation. "That's what I thought," Nieves said. The same shit is going on in Costa Rica at a large private ranch, he said, with dope shuttling from the airstrips to Ilopango. We agreed to keep in touch, and share any new information we received.

I bolted from the office and jumped into the Volvo. I set a new personal speed record on Highway 8 to San Salvador, then burst into Aparecio's cafe with a copy of the cable in my fist. I asked him to drop by Ilopango and ask Hugo to check the pilots' names. He came back after sifting through the log books and handed me a list detailing each pilot's flights into Ilopango, along with their tail numbers. The pilots were flying out of hangars four and five.

The next day, I went to the U. S. Embassy in El Salvador and met with Robert Chavez, the counselor general for the U. S. State Department - - and the man who issued all visas from the embassy. Chavez told me the CIA had just requested a visa for Carlos Alberto Amador, a Nicaraguan pilot documented in the computer as a narcotics trafficker. Chavez said he thought Amador flew for the Contras. I checked with Hugo, who confirmed it. That added more fuel to the fire. Why would the CIA give a known trafficker a visa? Chavez was concerned. He knew approving the visa could come back to haunt him, and he asked me to do something about it.

I closed myself in my office and began forming a mental list of the people I needed to visit over the next few days. My reports on the Contras seemed to

be falling into some sort of faceless, bureaucratic black hole. I wanted someone to look me in the eye and respond to the evidence.

It was time to get noisy.

Seven

Conspiracy of Denial

Guatemala City - April 1986

Moving provided a much - needed break, and rejoining my family washed away much of the stress that chewed at me since Noe and Crystal's car accident. We made a family trip of it, driving our Jeep Wagoneer from McAllen to Guatemala City and stopping wherever the urge struck during the three -day trek. We spent a night in Veracruz, along the Mexican Gulf coast. When we took our luggage to the car the next morning, Crystal stopped my heart, dashing ahead of us toward the street. Luggage clattered against the sidewalk as I chased after her. To this day I can see the brown taxi bearing down on her, the driver's jaw clenched as the old Chevy's tires locked. The taxi squealed to a halt five feet from Crystal, who stared in frozen dismay at the front bumper. She turned and gave me a helpless look, and I lifted her off the street as the taxi driver screamed at me to take better care of my kid.

He was right. That was the whole idea of moving to Guatemala- to take better care of my family, to soothe the pangs of guilt, to try to bridge the growing space between Noe and myself. Now, the doubts creeped back. Just one day out of McAllen, and Crystal had almost been run down. I thought about Duarte's daughter, kidnapped by the rebels in El Salvador. The president had traded a captured guerrilla leader for his child. I wondered if I could protect my kids from the chaos in Guatemala; and if someone snatched them, what did I have to offer the captors?

After driving through some of the world's worst human deprivation, our new home seemed like a palace. The two-story brick house was in zone 13, an upper -crust section of Guatemala

City. Our neighbors were the big landowners, business tycoons, government officials, and others at the top of the Guatemalan food chain. The mayor's residence was a few doors down, the most prestigious link in an unbroken row of connected dwellings.

Noe and the kids fell in love with the house the moment I unlocked the massive wooden double doors. The floors were paved with Italian tile, and a big fireplace separated the sunken living room from the dining room. Ceiling - to - floor glass doors overlooked a kidney- shaped pool fringed by tropical plants. A wooden spiral staircase dominated the vaulted entryway, and diffused sunshine streamed in through a glass dome in the roof. We hung stuffed tropical birds, including a huge peacock, in this airy space - - and constantly worried about the kids crawling over the low partition above and

falling. After more than six months in a cramped hotel room, I felt like a kid on Christmas morning when we unpacked our belongings in this sparkling house. Unfortunately, the place lacked a heater, and I cursed the cold every morning as I left the warm bed and tiptoed over the frigid tiles to the bathroom.

I was receiving a lot of hazard pay and travel money for my field work, so we had enough to hire domestic help. We started with two housekeepers. Maria, a short, wiry woman in her 50s, arrived first and annexed the kitchen. She had neither a husband nor children, which probably made her somewhat of an oddity in the tiny coastal village where she grew up. Maria had worked in Guatemala City for several years, finding a special niche working for embassy employees. We gave her a room on the first floor, which she later shared with the second housekeeper, Ana. Maria quickly became like a live -in grandmother. I remember chasing C4, ready to give him a whipping for some indiscretion, when she pulled him to her chest and glared at me. "You are not going to spank him," she boomed, and marched to her room with him nestled in her bosom.

Ana was in her early 20s, and watched over the kids with a tomboy's energy. Somehow she kept up with C4, who had perfected his crawling skills and scrambled around the house on a perpetual Easter egg hunt. Ana had a mother's instincts for looming danger, and as a Guatemalan mother, her radar as c amplified several times. Ana saved little Cele's life twice: gone catching him as he chugged over the lip of the pool, and later, snatching him off the ground as an errant Fourth of July rocket zoomed between her legs.

Ana was from a poor Indian village in the mountains, and to her, death was a cold hand seeking an opportune moment to close around the innocent and the unprepared. The guerrillas killed her brother, and her parents stubbornly remained in the free - fire zone while she and her three children sought a better life in the city. Ana usually brought them with her to work. I think she actually enjoyed the knee-high pandemonium.

We also hired a handyman/gardener, Don Chavelo, to do odd jobs and care for the landscaping. He lived in the filthy ring of wood and tin squatters' camps around the city. The lost souls in these squalid settlements often lived literally on top of the city's garbage. People were continually picking through the rancid piles like ants. Don Chavelo knew the owner of our house, and when he appeared at our door looking for work, I hired him on the spot. He was a quiet, thick - muscled six - footer - - incredibly tall for a Guatemalan - - with an old man's grizzled face and snowy hair.

I never knew whether to judge his age by the etched lines around his eyes or his powerful grip. He was a tireless worker. He reached the house by catching one of the mini-buses, called micros, before sunrise each morning, then walking the remaining half mile to our neighborhood. By the time I finished my shower each day, Don Chavelo had washed the Jeep inside and out.

The neighborhood was both a haven and a target. Police patrolled the area constantly, yet people lived amid bodyguards and guns. We benefited from our proximity to the mayor, but the house was still armed with an expensive security system. Both Ana and Don Chavelo carried devices to trigger the

screeching alarms.

We all knew what happened in these neighborhoods to the innocent and the unprepared: thugs from both sides of the conflict often kidnapped members of wealthy families for ransom. The cycle fed upon itself , with the rich worried about their safety, the right wing worried about threats to its ideology, and the poor worried about surviving another day. Nobody slept soundly in Guatemala.

The chasm between opulence and indigence glared at me from every comer of the city. On my way to work each morning, a little barefoot Indian girl sat on the comer selling newspapers. She was a happy kid, maybe four years old, hawking papers as her mother squatted nearby in numb silence. I bought a paper every

day, and she learned to watch for me at the busy stoplight. She always rewarded me with a toothy smile, her perfect teeth clashing with the tattered skirt and blouse she wore every day.

In early June, I drove to San Salvador, where Hugo waited with with more intelligence from Ilopango. He had been watching hangars 4 and 5 closely, and gave me a detailed list of Contra planes and pilots hauling narcotics. He named Carlos Amador - the man for whom the CIA was seeking a U.S. visa - - as well as three other pilots who carried cocaine payloads. Another name caught my interest: Carlos Armando Llamos, El Salvador's honorary ambassador to Panama. Hugo had watched Llamos for a long time, and in November, 1985, Hugo said the Ambassador proudly showed him cardboard boxes containing $4.5 million in cash he was taking to banks in Panama, for laundering. Reading from his log book, Hugo ticked off corresponding tail numbers: TIANO, YS265 and N-308P.

Hugo also dug up more information on Transportes Aereos El Salvador, an Ilopango -based air transport company owned by two brothers named Gutierrez. Aparecio, always with the best connections, told me weeks earlier the brothers were trafficking. The DEA computer once again proved him right. Hugo said they had begun chartering planes to the Contra pilots, who used them to run dope and money. I took down another tail number, N82161.

As the names, dates and eyewitness reports accumulated, I collected my notes for another Contra report. When I had enough new intelligence, I planned to go office-hopping. I wanted to know if any of the bureaucrats would break ranks to help me take this information beyond the conspiracy of denial which seemed to include every U.S. official in El Salvador.

Early one Wednesday morning, the phone rattled me awake. Hugo's excited voice sent my feet to the cold floor immediately. Chico Guirola was making a run to the Bahamas. Hugo had watched Francisco Rodrigo Guirola -Beeche for weeks, hoping to help me bust one of the Contras' busiest pilots. Guirola's planes frequently carried dope and cash, so we made him a priority target. Like most Contra pilots, Guirola carried air force credentials signed by General Bustillo, making him an instant VIP in the Salvadoran air force. He was also one of the Gutierrez brothers' better customers, frequently renting planes

from them.

Hugo went to great lengths to make friends with Guirola. He talked shop with " Chico "enough to gather plenty of incriminating information on his new buddy. When I ran Guirola's name in the computer, it popped up in 11 DEA files, detailing his South America to United States cocaine, arms, and money laundering activities. Business was obviously booming: In 1985, law enforcement officers in South Texas arrested Guirola with $5.5 million in cash.

"Guirola left for the Bahamas a few minutes ago with a load of cash," Hugo said with an excited edge in his voice. I looked at my watch; it was just after 7:45 a.m. Hugo hung up, and I quickly dialed the DEA office in the Bahamas. Just as I feared, the receiver buzzed in my ear. The Bahamian office did not open until 9 a.m. Nobody would be at the landing strip to meet Guirola. Not from our agency, anyway. As usual, the dopers got up a little earlier than we did.

We tried again a few days later. Aparecio and I set up surveillance on Guirola at Ilopango, watching him from the civilian section of the airport. He landed on the nearby runway, loaded several boxes into a red compact car, and raced off. Aparecio and I waited for the signal from Hugo. If Guirola was carrying narcotics or cash, Hugo was supposed to appear at the window and give us the thumbs-up sign. As Guirola zoomed away, we stared at the window. No signal. When I asked Hugo what happened, he threw up his hands. "Now Chico has credentials from President Christiani, identifying him as a presidential advisor. " Aparecio and I exchanged a grim look. Our best target joined the ranks of the untouchables.

I began to wonder if we would ever bust a pilot. The national police didn't want anything to do with a sting at Ilopango because the pilots carried Bustillo's air force credentials. If I could somehow convince someone to arrest a pilot, Bustillo would undoubtedly drop the charges for lack of evidence, then scream to Corr about my "illegal investigation. "

I wasn't sure how Corr Would react if I slapped an arrest report on his desk. Every time I visited his office in El Salvador, the Ambassador showed a genuine interest in my operations, and Offered his encouragement. Corr served as U.S. ambassador to Bolivia about the same time I was in Peru. He saw firsthand the kind Of Power drug organizations wielded across the Western Hemisphere. Corr obviously knew about North's resupply operation, and supported it was as a matter of policy, but I had a feeling that he did not agree with his methods.

On June 24, I wrote another Contra report, based largely on Hugo's detailed observations of the previous two weeks. The 'Port went through the usual channels, to be filed in the usual places with the usual results. Eventually, it landed in Washington with nary a ripple.

I was reaching my frustration threshold. The rules of the game here prevented me, or any DEA agent, from searching pilots and Planes. We could not arrest, interrogate or initiate an investigation without a member of the local police present. Later, when we organized an anti - narcotics group in El Salvador, even our recruits from the National Guard could not help me with the Contras; they needed official approval to snoop around Ilopango's military side. Bustillo would never allow it. Ambushing pilots when they landed proved fruitless as well. Knowing their flight plans didn't help - Like El Coyote, they never emerged at the right place at the right time, and most airdropped their cargo, then landed with nothing more incriminating than a sly grin.

I collected my notes and returned to El Salvador to begin building a Salvadoran anti - narco unit - - and visit a few Officials with my Contra evidence. Every time I worked in El Salvador, I was supposed to check in with the embassy to inform them of My plans. This time, I had a motherlode of information on the Contras. I was eager to see how they would react. I checked into the Sheraton, planning to stay a week.

Aparecio and I began our recruiting immediately, selecting about 15 energetic young conservatives from the national guard and other security forces. The process moved along much smoother than in Guatemala: the Salvadorans kept a tighter rein on their security forces, and tolerated no infighting. We called the task force FUCA, the Spanish acronym for United Anti-narcotics Force. I placed Aparecio in charge as the group's chief adviser. I resisted the urge to ask Aparecio if he saw the irony in placing a drug fugitive in charge of an anti -narcotics squad.

Money from the State Department, the Department of Defense and the CIA paid for training the group. FUCA's training consisted of lectures on the cartels, on narcotics trafficking techniques and investigations, and U.S. -style weapons training. Aparecio took center stage, transfixing the recruits with real - life tales from both sides of the drug war.

On May 27, Lt. Col. Alberto Adame, a U.S. military advisor to El Salvador and a fellow Texan, recommended one of his friends as a firearms instructor. When he introduced the short, middle -aged man, the name clicked in my head immediately. Dr. Hector Antonio Regalado, a San Salvador dentist, was a house hold name in the country's power corridors. I was shaking hands with " Dr. Death, " as he was known in U. S. political circles, the man reputed to be the Salvadoran death squads' most feared interrogator. In El Salvador, he was known simply as "El Doctor." Regalado's prestige among the right wing stemmed from his ability to extract teeth - - and information - without anesthesia.

I wanted no part of El Doctor. I asked Adame if the embassy had approved Regalado as an adviser. He said Col. James Steele, the U. S. Military Group commander in El Salvador, gave Regalado his blessing. The military obviously wanted this man aboard, human rights abuses and all. Regalado was hired, and we began spending a lot of time together. I saw him almost every time I visited the National Police headquarters, where the Salvadorans donated a group of dingy second -floor offices as classrooms for FUCA.

On the surface, Regalado was a friendly, genteel man. Underneath his gentle demeanor, though, he was the type who would shoot a man, then spit on him to make sure the point got across. He always carried a hair-trigger .45 pistol holstered at his

side. El Doctor harbored a boiling hatred for anything associated with Communism or revolutionaries, and showed particular disdain for the clergy, who sympathized with the peasants.

Regalado was good. He could draw either of his two holstered pistols in an instant. One moment, you would be looking into his eyes. Suddenly, they were replaced by the cold, black eye of his .45. When I asked him how he did it, he looked around theatrically, as if about to reveal a coveted secret. "I oil the holsters, then rub wax inside so the gun slips out like a feather. "

He passed his tricks down to his teenage daughter, who sometimes accompanied him. She was almost as fast and accurate with a gun as her father. I tried to picture her when she was Crystal's age. She obviously had wasted little of her childhood playing dress -up and collecting dolls. Feminine innocence was a luxury she could not afford: her family was in constant danger from the FMLN, who wanted to perform their own crude surgery on her father, and end his bloodline if possible.

Regalado loved guns, which made him the perfect firearms instructor. He taught the recruits how to squeeze a trigger without jerking the weapon, and supplemented shooting practice with briefings on how to react in a life -or-death situation, "Can you kill someone? Can you actually pull the trigger if your life depended on it?" he asked, stalking between the rows. Most of the males immediately assured him they would have no problem. But looking at the recruits, who averaged about 22 years old, I could tell some would not know until the time came. El Salvador had bled as much as Vietnam, but unlike the war-hardened Vietnamese, these young men and women came from a reviled class shielded from the crossfire.

The FUCA recruits regarded Regalado with something bordering hero worship. When he entered the room, they fell silent and leaned into his soft voice. When he lectured, they furiously scribbled down every word. He treated the classroom like a stage, casting himself as a son of squat James Bond. Early in their training, the recruits learned a new trick from the old predator. Veering from his discussion on how to kill efficiently,

Regalado repeated the mongoose maxim: The prey can always turn on you. "Never hesitate, " he said. "If You feel someone is after you, you have to move. You have to learn to run and shoot at the same time. "

Regalado pulled his .45 from its waxed nest, removed the clip, and smiled at the eager faces around him. Without saying a word, he ran straight at the wall, his eyes fixed on an imaginary assailants his left. The click-click-click of the empty.45 echoed in the room as Regalado ran up the wall and snapped into perfect backflip, landing on his feet. The recruits

looked at each other, grinning. El Doctor knew how to get his point across.

Later that summer, El Doctor used us to send a message to the guerrillas. Col. Adame called one Sunday morning to ask me to accompany him and Regalado on a mission. When I met them at Adame's home in San Salvador, Ramiro had been summoned as well, and greeted me with a quizzical look as several men from the anti narco group piled into jeeps. Regalado explained we were to drive into the mountains and check out reports of a marijuana plantation hidden in the jungle. With El Doctor leading the charge, we rattled over winding dirt trails in the afternoon heat, only to abandon the jeeps when the road ended at the base of a mountain.

The operation made me nervous. We were in guerrilla territory, traveling on foot, in civilian clothes, with M16s slung over our shoulders. Any government troops in the area would undoubtedly mistake us for a rebel patrol and open fire. If the rebels happened upon us, one look at our American -made rifles and police gear would bring a barrage of AK-47 fire.

After a few hours, the plantation was nowhere to be found. "What the hell is going on?" I yelled. Regalado simply smiled and marched ahead. Finally, the trail opened onto a decrepit ranch carved out of the jungle. Regalado owned the ranch, Adame explained, and wanted to make a show of force to warn the rebels away. I didn't say anything to Regalado. It was part of the game, with everyone trying to use everyone else and avoid being used. And after everything I had seen, I wanted to keep El Doctor on my side.

Privately, Regalado told me the death squads were necessary to stop the spread of Communism in El Salvador. "Everything for the country" was his favorite saying: Todo por la patria. The elite and the country, of course, being one and the same.

Regalado painted a vivid picture of the death squads' modus operandi. After watching their intended victims for a few days to

learn their movements, a dozen men in two vans would move in for the abduction. They preferred to strike away from the victim's home, bolting through sliding doors on both sides of the van and yanking the person off the street. As the torture began, they wrote down every name their victim cried out. Regalado practiced his impromptu dentistry on the unfortunate captives with a pair of pliers.

I could see these doomed, bleeding men, screaming names with the faint hope their pain would end if they fed their captors enough future victims. The pain usually ended with a bullet or the edge of a blade.

Regalado said he didn't do interrogations often, but when the death teams caught a particularly notable insurgent, El Doctor was in. I felt truly sorry for the men who drew Regalado from his lair.

Regalado was convinced the clergy were Communist infiltrators, trained in

Cuba to undermine El Salvador. He considered them cowards, hiding behind the cloth as they spread their diseased doctrine to the peasants he loathed. He spoke of person ally directing the deaths of several outspoken priests.

Archbishop Oscar Amulfo Romero was the symbol of the church's new solidarity with the downtrodden. A conservative when he became archbishop, Romero rebuked the elite after witnessing the persecution of workers and peasants. In an act of high treason against the Salvadoran oligarchy, Romero called on President Carter to halt military aid to El Salvador. The right unleashed its fury on March 25, 1980, when a single bullet ripped through Romero's heart as he lifted the chalice in the chapel of San Salvador's Divine Providence Hospital. The following day, dozens of bombs rocked the capital as his supporters erupted in anonymous rage.

I learned Regalado was part of the assassination team from Aparecio, his good friend. Ramiro once told me about Regalado's role in the archbishop's killing. I didn't really believe him until I brought up the subject with Regalado and he did not deny the charge. After one training session, I casually mentioned Romero, and Regalado's eyes flashed with rancor. He spit the archbishop's name, calling him hijo de puta - - son of a whore.

"Did you kill him?" I asked. He looked at me with a faint smile. "What do you think?"

Deep down, El Doctor was afraid - - more for his family than for himself. Regalado said if the guerrillas caught him, he would accept his fate. Ironically, nothing scared the orchestrator of so many deaths more than the thought of a similar fate befalling his family. The prey could always strike back.

Inevitably, I met Regalado's superior, Roberto D'Aubisson, the most visible leader of the Nationalist Republican Alliance (ARENA), and the driving force behind the Salvadoran death squads. We met at the downtown San Salvador home of D'Aubisson's right-hand man, who I knew only as El Negro. Aparecio and I requested the meeting with D'Aubisson, to confront him with intelligence linking him with drug trafficking. He denied it. Because we lacked the proof to make a case, we let the matter drop. The accusation did not rattle him a bit, and D'Aubisson spent the next 45 minutes sharing his political dogma with us.

D'Aubisson had vowed to deliver El Salvador from Communism. His right -wing enforcers carried out the vow for him with a deadly blend of McCarthyism and Nazism: Root out the Communists, then slaughter them. As one ARENA official told the Albuquerque Journal, " If you investigate people like we did, you find everybody has some Communist ties if you look for them hard enough."

D'Aubisson's flamboyant personality was the polar opposite of Regalado's. D'Aubisson was bitter about the U.S. government "stealing the election" away from him. With Duarte in office, he planned to continue his purges until he could run for president again. He did not seem to realize his ties to the

death squads made him a political leper in Washington, and his prospects were not likely to improve so long as he flaunted his human rights record. D'Aubisson told me he was proud of his involve ment in ridding the country of insurgents. Everyone the squads killed, in his mind, deserved to die.

Shortly after I turned in my contra report, Hugo briefed me on another Contra pilot, an American named William Brasher. He was ostensibly in Central America as a representative of a U.S. company selling night vision equipment to the military, but Hugo

had uncovered his real vocation. Hugo reported Brasher was in charge of money, equipment, and training for the Contra opera tion. Brown had impressive connections with the embassy and the Salvadoran military. Like Guirola, he carried credentials signed by Bustillo. Hugo said Brasher regularly flew crates of weapons from the United States into Ilopango, which violated laws in both countries. But like the other pilots, he flew under the military's protective umbrella.

When I returned to Guatemala City, I typed Brasher's name into the computer. He was documented in seven DEA files for flying drugs and arms from South America to the United States via Ilopango. I called Aparecio and told him to grab a pen. We had a new special project.

That summer in Washington, North's "Project Democracy" hit the newspapers as reporters lapped up numerous leaks, and raced to put the details together first. Spurred by the publicity, members of Congress launched inquiries into the Administration's activities in Central America. They came back frustrated. North and his superiors threw disinformation at Congress to shake them off the trail, with apparent success: On June 25, 1986, the House of Representatives approved $100 million in lethal and non-lethal aid to the Contras, a stunning victory for the Reagan Administration.

By October 30, the legislation placing the rebels back under Uncle Sam's overt protection would become law. Before that, North was looking forward to retiring from the operation, and took inventory of Project Democracy's assets. He recommended they be turned over to the CIA when the time came. North did not know it, but the operation was about to explode in his face.

I began checking on Brasher during subsequent trips to El Salvador. I started with Adame, who was now part of my team. He knew Aparecio well, and often left his official quarters to stay at Aparecio's house when he was in the mood to carouse. Adame told me he was working with Brasher on the side, using his military contacts to help Brasher sell night-vision equipment to the Salvadorans. Adame also confirmed the link between Brasher and North. Like every other U.S. official in the area, he saw North's operation as a heroic gesture against Communism. He listened patiently to my concerns about their drug involvement, but clearly considered narcotics a subordinate issue. When I mentioned Brasher's name, he assured me "Willy" was a good guy. After all, he

was helping the Contras. I brought Adame with me July 28, 1986, for a meeting with the State Department's political officer in El Salvador, Janis Elmore. We sat down in her tiny office in the embassy, and Elmore listened as I rattled off the intelligence I had accumulated linking the Contra's Ilopango operation with narcotics smuggling. She knew most of it already: She approved all DEA cables relating to El Salvador before they were forwarded to Washington.

I wasn't surprised when she replied with the party line:

That's a covert operation, and you should stay away from it. Elmore prided herself in having the best intelligence in El Salvador, which she usually did. Elmore said she knew the Contras were running drugs, but had to follow her own advice to keep her nose out of North's resupply operation. The pressure came from Washington. Elmore obviously didn't like it. She resented North giving the Ambassador orders, strutting around like he owned the place. Before we left her office, Elmore, too, confirmed Brasher worked for Oliver North. I wondered aloud who else may have Brasher on the payroll. " Cele, Willy doesn't work for the embassy, " she said. I wasn't convinced, and I told Elmore she would see Brasher's name on my next Contra report.

The next day, I took the Contra intelligence report to Robert Chavez, counselor general for the U.S. Embassy in El Salvador. Chavez looked at the list of names, and checked them against his computer database. They were hits his computer also listed the pilots as documented drug traffickers. Our com puters carried much of the same information, but I wanted to make sure Chavez knew these pilots were traffickers, so he could .block future visa requests. Chavez told me then that he knew about North's operation, and knew they were smuggling dope. As hard as he tried to stay out of it, the CIA's visa request for Amador drew him into the mess. Chavez did not want his name linked to

this imbroglio. Instead of refusing the CIA's request personally, he wanted to use me as the bad guy: Hey, it wasn't me, Castillo nixed Amador because he's a trafficker. I knew Chavez would not back me up if I tried to expose the Contras' drug -running. Elmore, although more outspoken, would probably back away as well.

In August, one of my Guatemalan informants introduced me to a businessman named Bobby Castillo, whose family owned a brewery and the Coca-Cola factory in Guatemala City. He supplemented his income from Coke with a thriving side business in coke. The informant said Bobby was one of Guatemala's biggest cocaine connections, and probably the least cautious. I started working undercover on him, hoping for a break to turn my luck around. Booby and I talked by phone at first, and after several conversations, and a few lunch meetings at the Camino Real, I arranged to buy 200 kilos of cocaine from him, starting with a ten-kilo sample.

After arranging the meeting, I called our Guatemalan anti narco unit to help with surveillance. Up to this point, they helped me with several busts, never netting more than a few kilos from the small time Colombians and Guatemalans they arrested. This could lead to their biggest haul yet. We planned a simple buy bust: As soon as I saw the cocaine, the squad would move

in to arrest Booby. They met me at the airport, then melted into the street, watching discreetly as they did their best impressions of passers-by.

Booby pulled up shortly in a Jeep Wagoneer, trailed by a Mercedes flanked closely by two more Jeeps. Booby's taste in clothing leaned toward casual American yuppie. As he walked up to me, he looked like one of those smiling, dark-haired models straight out of a department store catalog. Booby's smile quickly faded. "I don't want to talk here," he said. "Let's meet at the Camino Real. " I agreed, then motioned to the Mercedes. "Who's that?" I asked. Booby said he would explain when we got to the hotel. When their caravan pulled out of sight, I found the officer leading the anti -narcotics squad and explained the situation.

At the hotel, Booby was much more relaxed, greeting me with a hug. "I want you to meet my partner," he said, nodding to an older, heavyset man waiting a few paces away. As I shook his hand, Booby introduced him as el diputado Carlos Ramiro Garcia de Paz.

I froze. This was the Guatemalan congressman listed in DEA files as a drug trafficker. De Paz saw the shock in my eyes and smiled, pulling out his diplomatic credentials. "Don't worry, there's no DEA here, " he said. "And if you are with the police, you cannot arrest me. I have diplomatic immunity. " I heard myself tell him not to worry, as my stomach churned and my palms turned clammy. De Paz grabbed my arm and started to lead me to his Mercedes - - he wanted to do business right there in front of the hotel.

I stole a look down the street, searching for my backup.

Obviously, they had seen the congressman and scattered. Good. I changed tactics, explaining to the congressman I didn't do business out in the open. He patted me on the back, handing me his calling card. "Here's my address. Meet me at 2 o'clock at my residence, and we'll do business there. Nobody is going to rip anybody off." As I walked him to the Mercedes, I told him I needed to notify my people in California of the change.

As they drove off, the squad commander appeared. He looked worried after seeing De Paz, and seemed relieved the bust was cancelled. I hurried to the embassy and called Julio Caballeros, chief of the Guatemalan National Police, to ask if it was possible to arrest a member of congress. It was, he assured me, but only if he was caught with the cocaine in his possession. "Do you want to set it up?" I asked. Caballeros paused a moment. "No, thank you. "

I walked to Stia's office, where he was chatting with Reina, and told them about De Paz. The anti -narcotics unit wanted no part of the operation, I said. Caballeros would not cooperate, either. The Ambassador and his deputy in charge of missions were out of the country, so Stia called Larry Thompson, the third ranking State Department official at the embassy, to ask how I should proceed. Stia returned with Thompson's instructions: Drop the pursuit. We were not here to embarrass the Guatemalan government, he said. We were here to help them.

There was no time to argue. I called Booby to explain the deal was off - - my superiors in California feared I would get ripped off if I did business with a government official. I apologized, but Booby said he understood. Orders were orders.

A wave of depression washed over me. I slumped in my chair. All my work building narcotics squads, all the cultivating and coaxing of informants; all the groundwork we laid to strike at the top of the drug structure had come together beautifully. Finally, a big catch, only to watch our own leaders cut the line.

My losing streak continued. On August 15, 1 met with Jack McCavett, the mild -mannered CIA station chief in El Salvador. Again, I repeated my evidence against the Contras. McCavett denied any connection between the CIA and the Ilopango operation. As far as Brasher was concerned, McCavett said "He doesn't work for me. He works for the Contras and Ollie North, and we have nothing to do with that operation. "

Three days later, McCavett called me into his office and pulled $45,000 in cash out of his desk drawer. "I've got money left over from my budget I need to spend, " he said. "Take this for your anti narcotics group. Go buy them some cars. 9 ' McCavett didn't mention the Contras, but I suspected he was trying to buy me off. The CIA, to my knowledge, had never given the DEA this kind of gift. I wrote out a receipt and handed it to him, took the stack of bills, and gave it to Adame and Aparecio. They bought three much -needed vehicles for FUCA.

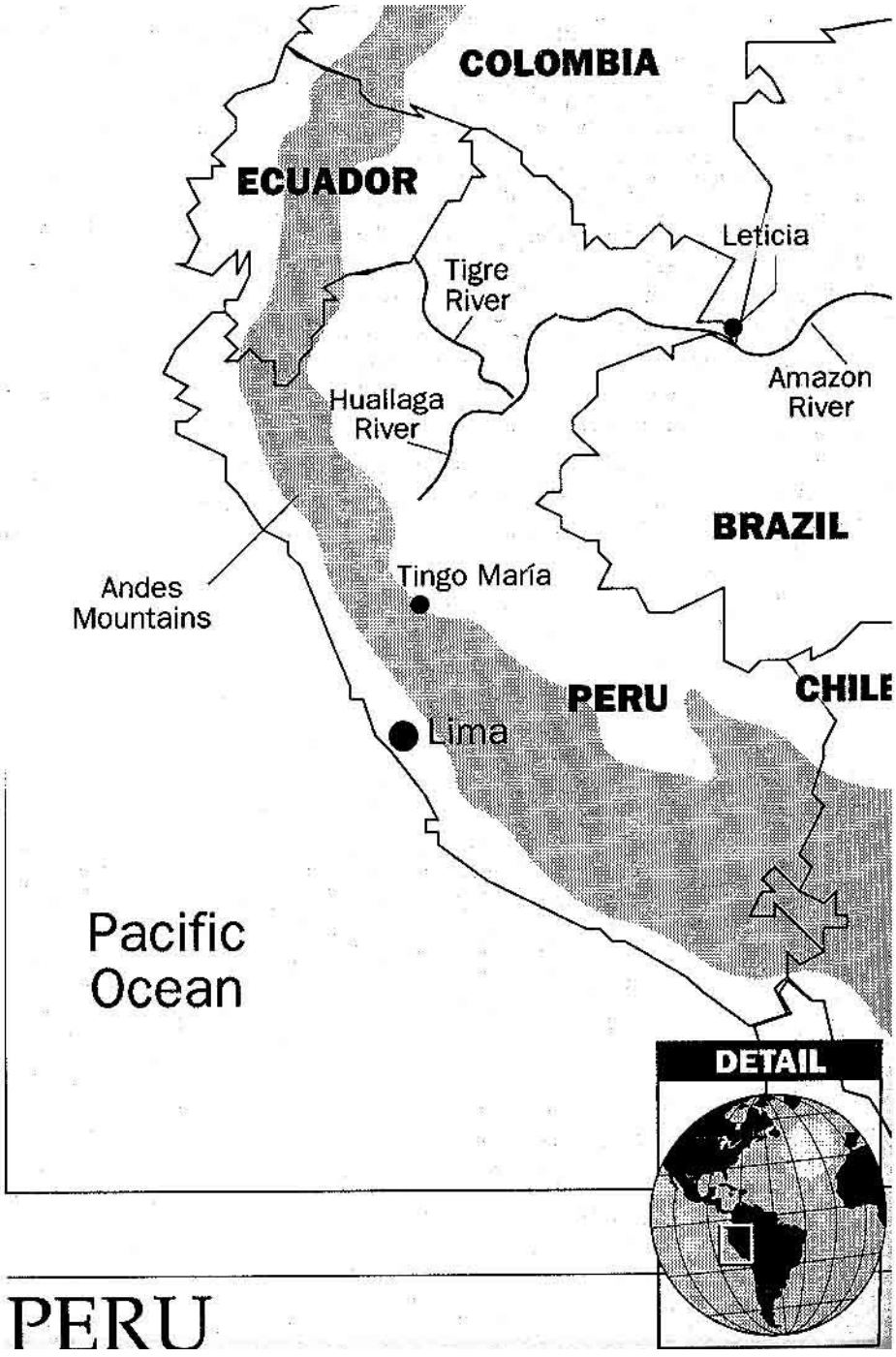
Near the end of August, I met with Ambassador Corr to brief him on the CIA's attempt to secure a U.S. visa for Amador. I told him what I had learned about Amador's connection to the Contras, as well as my information about Brasher. He knew about Brasher's ties to North's operation, and listened intently to the new evidence my informants had collected. I was desperate. After repeating the Contra speech over and over to many bureaucrats, Corr was the one U.S. official I thought would understand, and maybe give the investigation a push.

I'll never forget Corr's response. "It's a White House operation, Cele. Stay away from it. I I

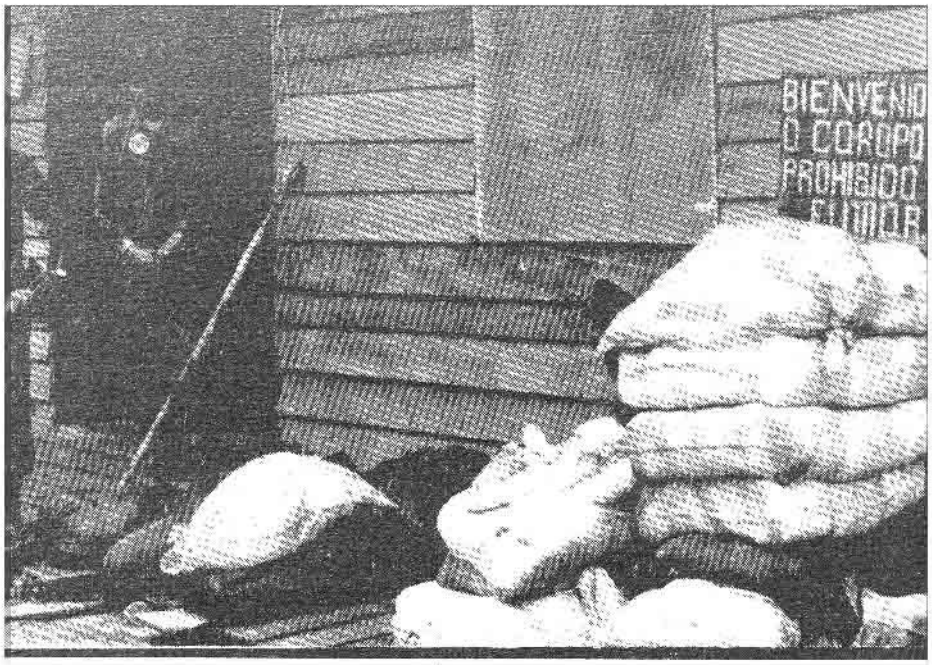
Despite my disappointment, I understood his predicament. Corr was part of the administration. Despite Reagan's "Just say no" rhetoric, supporting the Contras would dominate every other U.S. initiative in Central America until the Sandinistas were crushed - - or until someone convinced Reagan the cartel chieftains were Communists.

I left Corr's office, and called Aparecio. He and some of the FUCA team had been watching Brasher carefully. I told him to move in when they had enough evidence to merit a raid. If my superiors would not support an investigation of the Contras, my only option was to bust a member of the

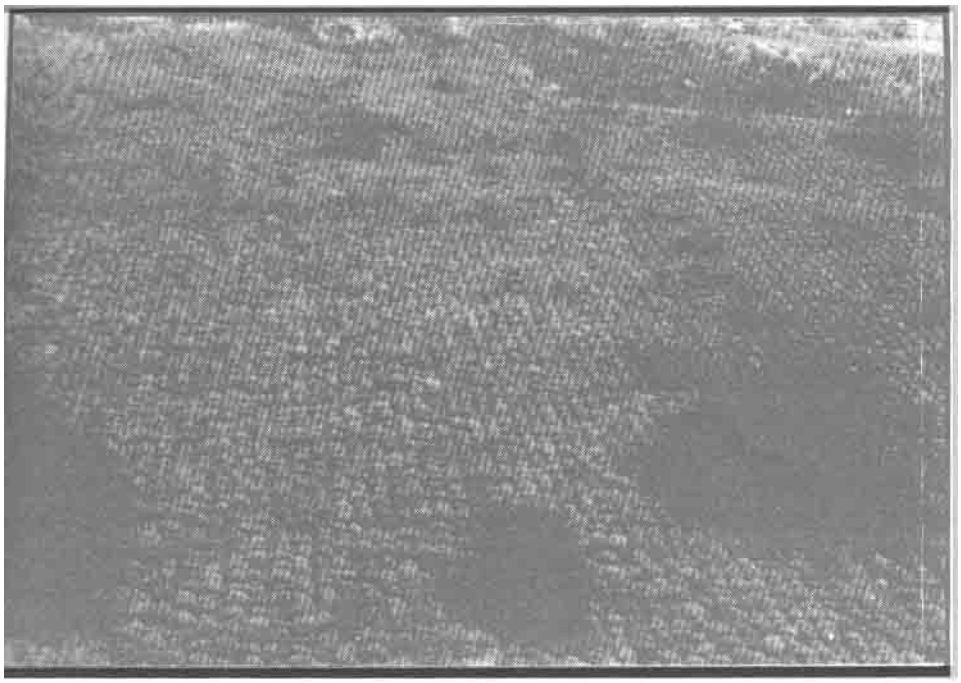
resupply operation. If we could prove Brasher was smuggling drugs for the Contras, the bureaucracy would have trouble suppressing my investigation at Ilopango. Brasher's ties to North were well established, but so far, every U.S. agency in El Salvador denied any affiliation with Brasher. He was the bastard child nobody wanted.


COLOMBIA
ECUADOR
Leticia
Tigre River
Amazon River
Huallaga River
BRAZIL
Andes Mountains
Tingo María
PERU
CHILE
Lima
Pacific Ocean
DETAIL

PERU

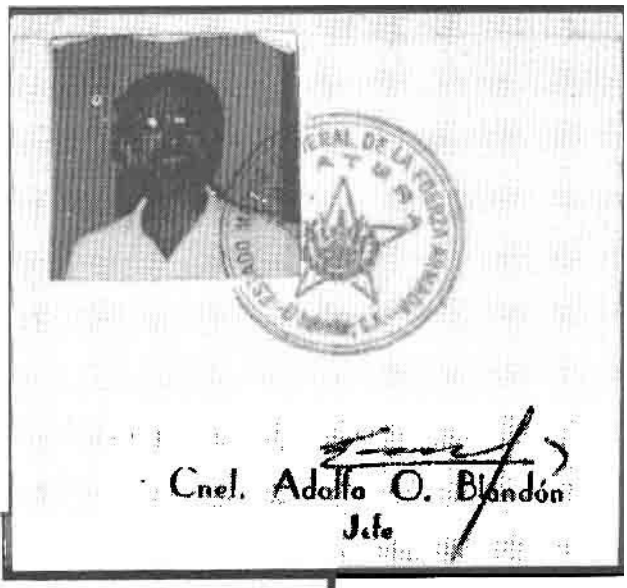


***Above and Below*:** Operation Condor in Peru



Above: Coca plantations in Peru

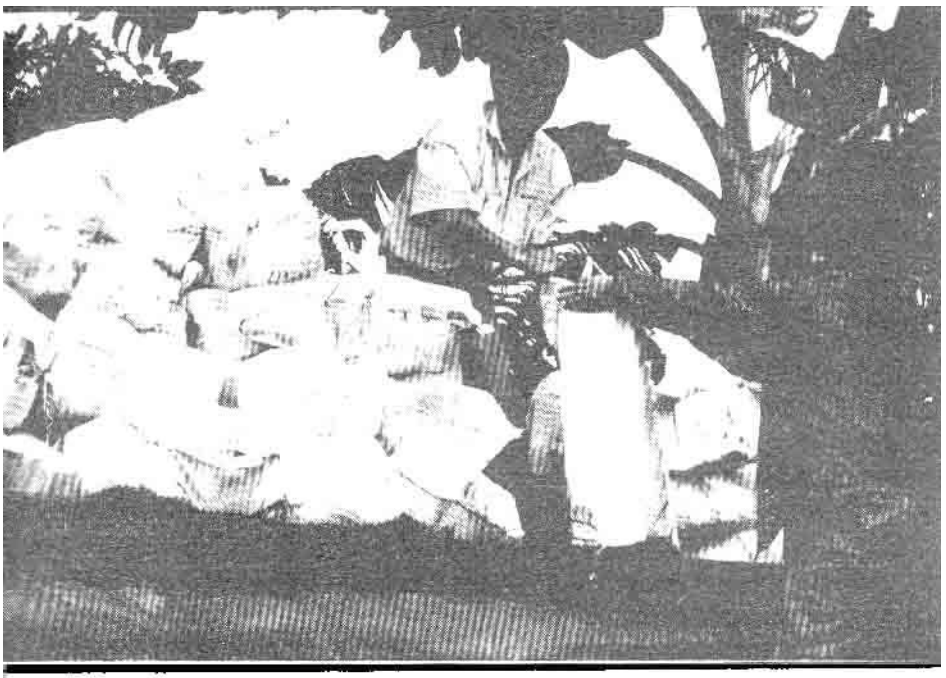
Below: Celerino Castillo with 300 kilos of Cocaine in Guatemala



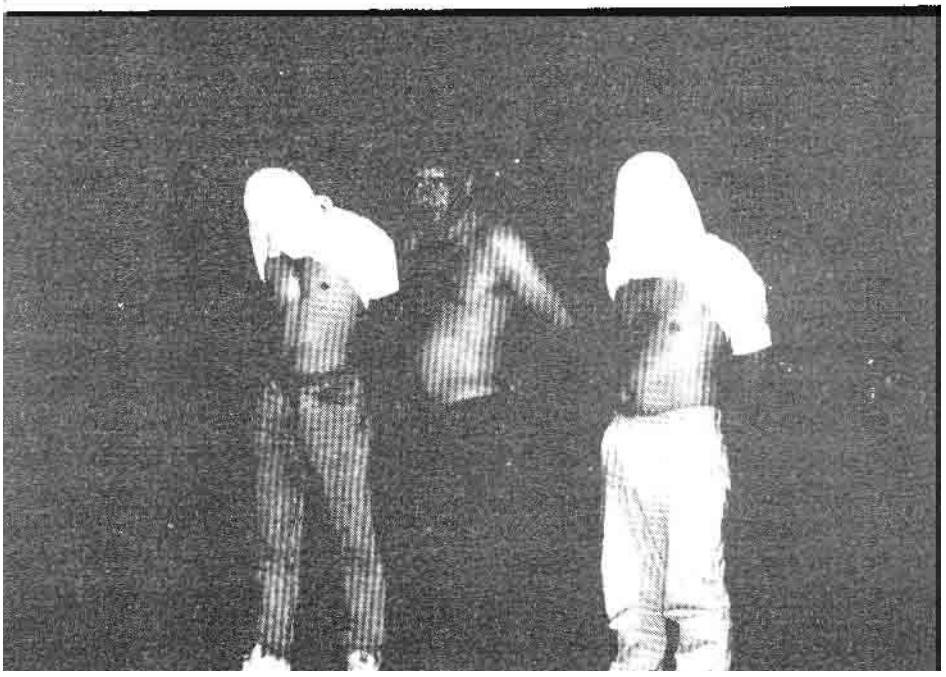
Above: Wally Grasheim Salvadoran Military I.D. He was only a civilian. He was Oliver North's right hand man in El Salvador.

Centre: Joseph Delvecchio "Joe the Crow" New York mobster arrested after the delivery of several kilos of Heroin

Bottom: Castillo undercover in San Francisco.



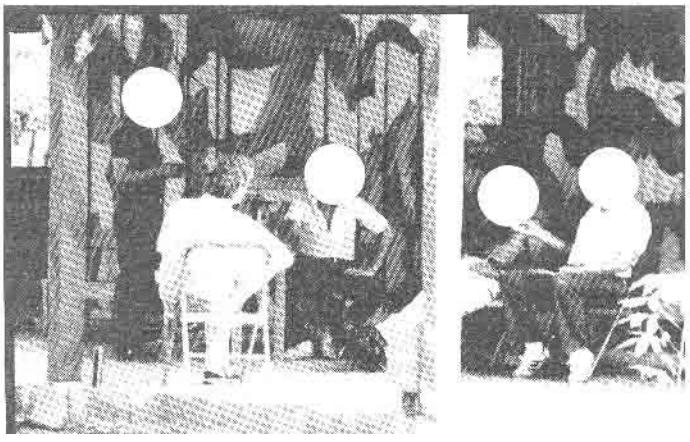
bove and Below: Colombian Pilots who were killed by Guatemala G2 uring operation. 300 kilos of cocaine were seized



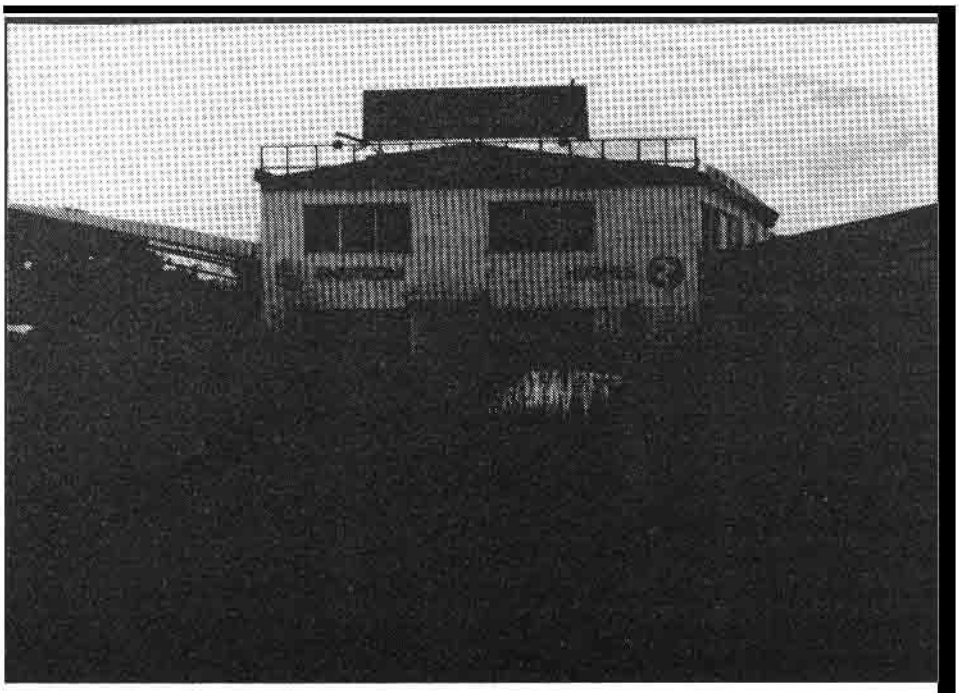
Above: Colombian pilot who was killed by Guatemala G2 during operation. 300 kilos of Cocaine were seized.

Left: Carlos Ramirez member of the Medellín Cartel in Guatemala murdered by G2.

Below: DEA and Guatemalan G2 agents before the arrest of the 300 kilos of Cocaine.

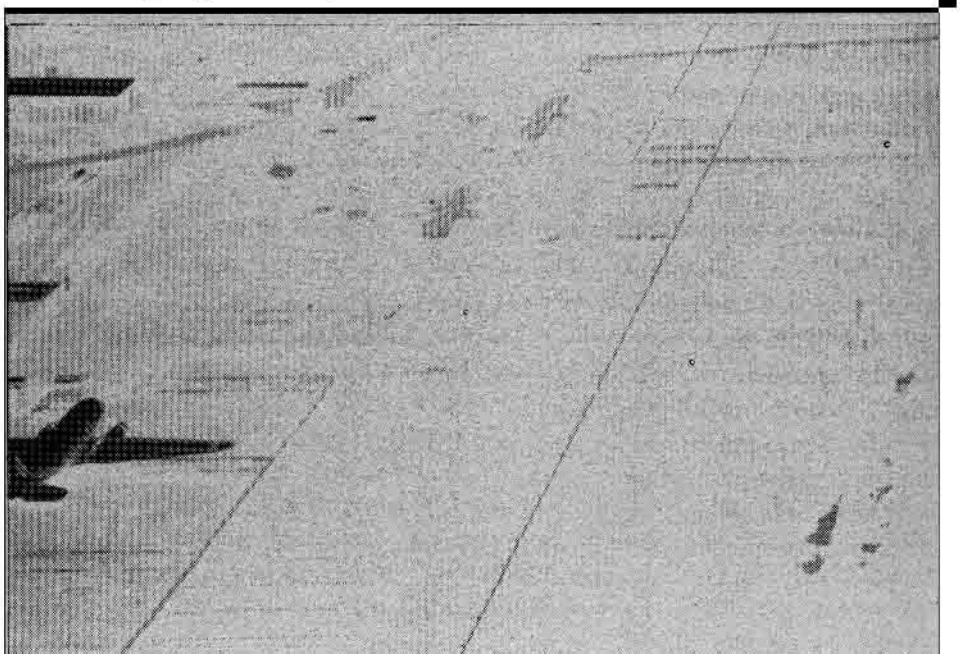


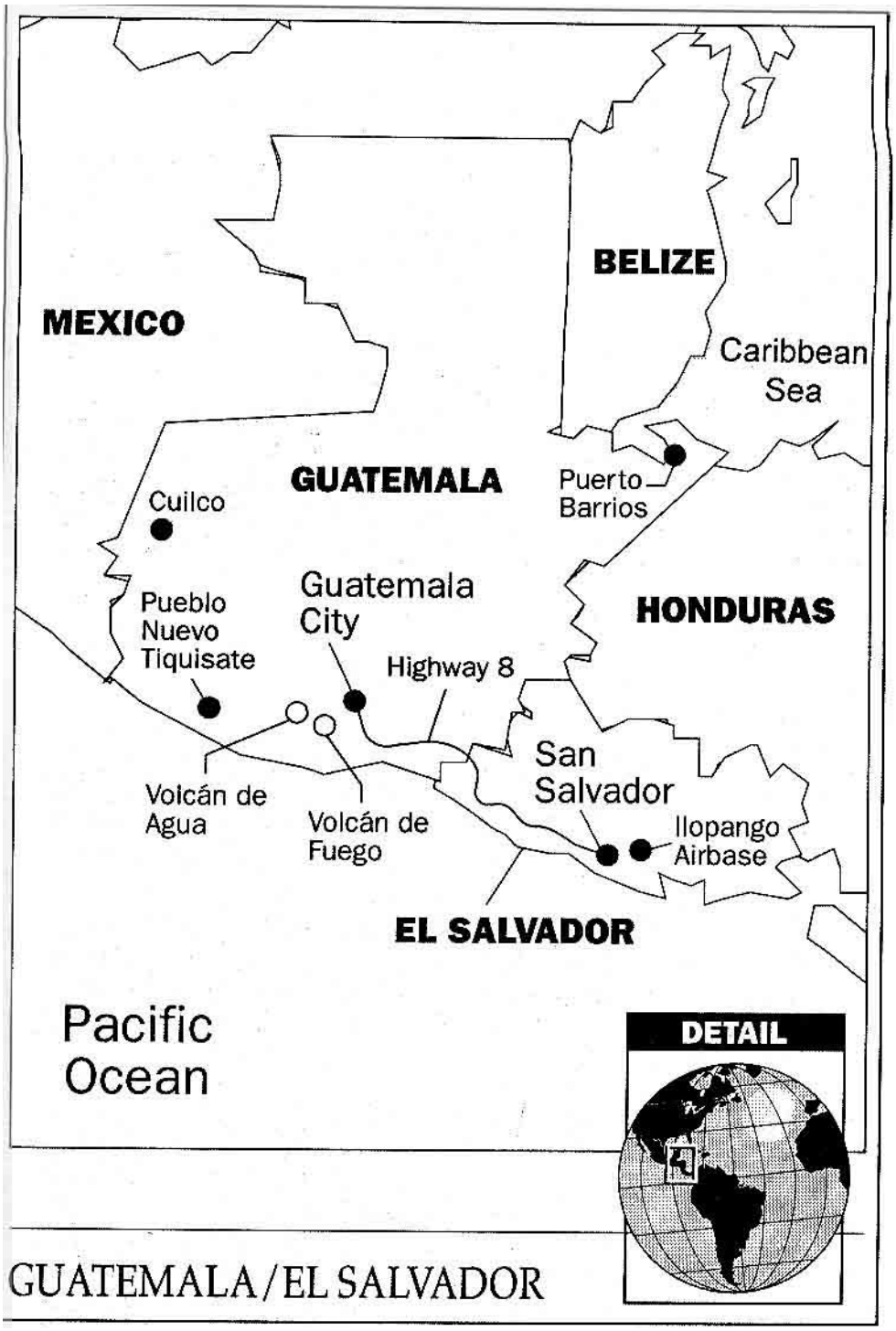
U.S.A.
Gulf of Mexico
CUBA
Carribean Sea
BELIZE
Belize City
HONDURAS
MEXICO
Guatemala City
Tegucigalpa
NICARAGUA
GUATEMALA
Managua
San Salvador
EL SALVADOR
San José
Panama City
COSTA RICA
PANAMA
Pacific Ocean
DETAIL
CENTRAL AMERICA



Above: Illopango Military Base Office where flight plans were made by the Contras. Castillo's informant worked there.

Below: Illopango Military Base for the Contras.





GUATEMALA / EL SALVADOR

Eight

Contraband

San Salvador, September 1, 1986

William Brasher was in New York City when Aparecio and ten FUCA soldiers surged into his Salvadoran residence and blew open a link in the contra connection nobody thought we would touch.

FUCA had watched the house in the Lomas de San Francisco neighborhood for a week, while Aparecio drilled the squad On every phase of the raid. The intensity of the preparations told the recruits they were preparing for their first big bust. They Pounced bursting into the living room like a football team on fourth -and goal. Brasher's stunned guards didn't have time to react or argue. This was El Salvador: the "state of siege" dating back to 1980 meant the police could enter a home with all the subtlety of a fist between the eyes. No search warrant, no perfunctory Miranda recitals, just a stream of uniforms and your face against a wall.

I was in my office that Monday at 5 p.m. when Aparecio called. "We just hit Willy's place, and we found a whole bunch of shit. I think I might have put you in trouble with the embassy he said, spitting the words in his hybrid English/Spanish. ye better get your ass down here now. "

The flight from Guatemala City to San Salvador left at 7:30 the next morning. A few suddenly- serious FUCA recruits met me at the airport. "Where's Aparecio?" I asked the soldier at the wheel.

"He's waiting at Brasher's house, guarding our seizure, he said, jerking the wheel and screeching into traffic. When we pulled into Brasher's driveway, Aparecio yanked Open the car door and led me into the house. The recruits milled around outside, young faces etched with uncertainty.

The house was a mess, with clothes, dishes, and junk strew,, everywhere. I poked my head into several rooms. Bunk beds. No way these people are military, I thought. The place looked like a barracks for a pack of teenagers.

"Any drugs?" I asked Aparecio.

"Marijuana," he replied. "It looks like personal use. There's a few plants growing out back, and we found more than a pound wrapped in a brown paper bag. It's in the kitchen." ,,So what's all the excitement about?" I asked. He brought me running from Guatemala for this? Aparecio Pointed toward

the back of the house. "Follow me."

He guided me through an enclosed patio and stood at the threshold of a side room, watching my face for reaction as I entered. Holy shit.

No wonder the recruits looked so distraught. Aparecio had mentioned finding some military hardware in the house, but I Was not expecting the arsenal piled before me. The room was filled with enough firepower to arm a platoon. We've intercepted . Contra military shipment, I thought, as my eyes roamed the stacks of weapons. A sniper rifle caught my eye first. It looked like a. So caliber, with a scope big enough to peek into a window half way across town. U.S. military field radios sat atop cases Of grenades and neatly packed C4 explosives. There was night vision equipment; M16s; helicopter helmets; Gerber combat knives; grenade launchers; compasses.

As we sorted through the piles, Aparecio held up boxes Of M 16 and M60 ammunition with a grim look. I ran my fingers Over a bundle of mottled green uniforms - - U - S . jungle fatigues.

"Somebody could do a lot of damage with this, I said hefting an RPG. The shoulder-fired rocket launcher somehow found its way from the Soviet bloc to William Brasher's back room.

We saved the file cabinets for last. Each folder was neatly labeled. I leafed through letters listing Payoffs to Salvadoran generals, colonels, and other high-ranking officers. Brasher certainly had connections. One letter promised a general a paid trip for two to New York, and suggested the general Pick up . complimentary fur for his wife while he was there. Brasher was

obviously making sure he remained on their good side. Not a bad idea, I thought, I've heard about their bad side. In ten minutes, we found enough documents to prove Brasher's link to the Salvadoran military, the U.S. MilGroup and, as expected, the Contra operation. Col. Adame's business with Brasher was documented as well, with receipts of sales the colonel had secured for him.

I pulled a file bearing the name of Eden Pastora, head of the Contra's Southern Front in Costa Rica. The cables inside contained lists of military supplies, with corresponding delivery dates, times, and locations. I handed one to Aparecio. "That's probably where this cache was headed," I said.

The FUCA unit loaded everything into trucks and hauled it to National Police headquarters, where word of the seizure raced through the building. I saw curious faces poking around office doors as we walked the halls. The police had always regarded the unit as more of a concession to the norte americanos than a serious investigative force. The triumphant FUCA team strutted through the corridors, back - slapping each other like the Bad News Bears of the drug war.

When Aparecio spread out the arsenal for inventory, the procession began. Curious visitors filtered through our offices to gawk at our catch, and listen

to the FUCA members recount every detail of the raid. Nobody could get any work done with all the traffic, so we set up tables in the hallway and laid out our haul like a deadly buffet table. The recruits took turns jealously guarding their prizes. Aparecio was not about to burst their balloon by revealing the two guards and the female housekeeper had surrendered without the hint of resistance.

One of Brasher's bodyguards later took a job with Aparecio in his cafe. He and his buddy confirmed Brasher used the house as a barracks for Contra pilots, and as a storehouse for U.S. military hardware bound for the Contras.

The FUCA group didn't yet realize the magnitude of the seizure. With Brasher's trafficking history, anyone we could link to the weapons would have to explain how their goodies had come into the possession of a known smuggler. As Aparecio and I began tracing the gear, we discovered one of the MI 6s belonged to Col. Steele, who had so emphatically denied any connection to Brasher. The connections were forming like the spokes of a wheel, with

Brasher at the center. I had already drawn mental lines to Oliver North, Col. Adame, and Eden Pastora. Now Steele joined the circle.

The next name should not have surprised me. Aparecio ran a check on the license plates from Brasher's Jeeps. They came back registered to the U.S. Embassy. Corr. I thought back to our last conversation. It's a White House operation. I switched on one of the confiscated radios. It was tuned to the embassy frequency, and U.S. personnel chattered back and forth in English. Damn, I thought, they all looked me right in the eye and flat-out lied.

We needed help tracing the rest of the weapons. They were U.S. military issue. The serial numbers stenciled on the crates would guide us to their point of origin. I called Richard Rivera, a U.S. Customs agent in Mexico City. Col. Hugo Francisco Moran-Carranza, director of the president's anti-corruption unit, recommended Rivera after they worked a case together. Moran was impressed. "If anyone can find out where those weapons came from, it's Rivera, " he said. When I explained our situation over the phone, Rivera agreed to fly to El Salvador as soon as he could get free. I thanked him and hung up.

Good. After thrashing around in the darkness for so long, I could see a pinprick of light ahead. When the inventory was complete, we planned to call a press conference. An arrest warrant had been issued for Brasher, and I wanted to give him a big surprise when he returned from the States. I could see the cameras flashing as the police cuffed him and drove him to jail. As soon as the reporters scribbled down the details from the police, they would surely descend on the U.S. embassy and lie in ambush at the gate. Col. Steele, what connection does the U. S. Military Group have to Mr. Brasher? Where did a civilian obtain such a large cache of U.S. weapons?

I was still savoring the image when the FUCA lieutenant rapped on the door frame. His eyes spoke before he did. Some thing was wrong. "Col. Revelo just told me he received orders not to release the information to the press. "

A long minute ticked away on the wall clock as I rocked in my chair. I felt I had been drilled in the chest with an icicle.

Someone high in the chain of command had ordered Revelo, the chief of the national police, to cancel the press conference. The

lieutenant drummed his fingers against the wood, waiting for instructions.

"What should we do?" he asked finally. It was more a challenge than a question. His brow dug a deep groove between his eyes. I suddenly felt sorry for him, for all of them. They knew nothing about the political storm their raid had unleashed, and I couldn't warn them. My initial shock congealed into a slow, rolling anger.

" Have someone bring a car around to the front I'm goin to talk to Corr. "

The CIA had already briefed the ambassador about the raid. I briefed him again, studying his face when I came to the part about embassy license plates gracing Brasher's Jeeps. Corr stared at me, the muscles in his jaw flexing.

"You just hit the Contra operation, " he said flatly.

"I told you I was going to hit Brasher," I shot back. "Explain to me what the hell a U.S. civilian in El Salvador is doing with this stuff. I told you this guy's a documented trafficker. He could be arrested as a terrorist.

Corr paused. The jaw flexed again.

"Cele, it's a covert operation, " he said, holding his palms out.

That didn't answer my question. I played my last card; Corr had always insisted North's orders came straight from the White House, the embassy had no involvement. He had just admitted Brasher worked with the Contras. I knew the license plates and radios we had seized could tie this mess around Corr's neck like an albatross.

I didn't want to back the ambassador into a comer, but a shadowy paranoia was crawling around the comers of my mind. Undercover agents live in a world of delicately woven deceit, the office - - in my case, the embassy - - is the one place they can peel off their underworld identities and confide in people they trust. Everything was being turned upside down; I was beginning to trust my informants more than my superiors. I wanted desperately to trust Corr. I needed answers.

"Why did he have U.S. Embassy radios? Why did he have embassy plates on his Jeeps? " I was close to losing my composure. "If you don't claim him, and Steele doesn't claim him, and Janis Elmore doesn't claim him, where did he get all this shit?"

The jaw clenched again. "We were ordered to give them all the cooperation

they needed, " Corr said, rising from his chair. The conversation was over.

If our raid had somehow slipped past the diplomatic radar and hit the U.S. papers that September, Oliver North's cover might have evaporated sooner. U.S. -sponsored drug smuggling might have joined the list of deceptions later known as the Iran Contra Affair. While we wrestled against our strait jacket, a security breach in Costa Ricalater that month pushed the National Security Council's disinformation apparatus into overdrive.

On September 26, the Costa Rican Security Minister held a press conference that revealed the U. S. government's use of the Santa Elena airstrip in Costa Rica to supply the Contras. North shot off a top secret memo to his boss, National Security Advisor John Poindexter: "The airfield at Santa Elena has been a vital element in supporting the resistance. Built by a Project Democracy proprietary (Udall Corporation, S.A. - - a Panamanian company), the field was initially used for direct resupply efforts. " North went on to recommend Oval Office visits for Cerezo and Duarte to shore up their support for the Reagan Administration in Guatemala and El Salvador. Preventive dam age control. A short photo opportunity could buy them political insurance against future leaks. Referring to Duarte, North wrote: " Given the active support for the Nicaraguan democratic resistance provided by El Salvador, such a brief meeting is highly appropriate. "

He included a press guidance sheet with the memo, instructing the agency's spin doctors to say "no U.S. Government funds were allocated or used in connection with this site nor were any U.S. Government personnel involved in its construction."

It was just a day's drive away, but Costa Rica might have well been on the other side of the world. Its government relatively stable, its citizens relatively peaceful and prosperous, and its leaders were more likely to test Washington's grip than the Guatemalans or Salvadorans. They were tired of Uncle Sam using their country for its undeclared war against the Sandinistas. The press conference about the airstrip drove the point home. With El

Salvador in firm U.S. control, we had no chance of finding a disgruntled official who Would expose simultaneous arms- and drug running by U.S. operatives in his country.

Two days after the raid, I returned to Guatemala City to write my report. As I copied down serial numbers, Aparecio called. "Some people from the embassy Just walked in and claimed the radios and license plates, " he said. "They took Col. Steele's M 16 too. 1,

At that moment, I knew the Brasher investigation was doomed. We were out of allies. The only reward the FUCA men Would receive would be a bottle of good american booze after my next trip to the States. But we had to finish out the ride, like a stunt driver who realizes in mid -air he added one car too many to the jump. Richard Rivera flew down from Mexico City, photographed the seized weapons, and took a list of serial numbers back with him. He promised

to call as soon as he found something. Over the next month, Rivera made several more trips to El Salvador, talking to People, checking leads, trying to use the serial numbers on the Weapons to find the thread that would unravel the veil of secrecy over Brasher's activities. I didn't tell him he was our last hope.

I threw myself into other investigations, trying to push the raid to the back of my mind. I had a few new leads on the Guatemalan narco politicians, I desperately wanted another chance at exposing their activities. But the image of the stacked weapons and U.S. fatigues tugged at my thoughts like a impatient child. All the elements were lined up: Brasher's connection to the Contras and Oliver North was well established in the tight diplomatic loop in Central America; his drug exploits were documented in the DEA computer; we had caught him with marijuana and a huge cache of weapons. Yet every U. S. diplomat in sight was protecting Brasher, even though they clearly disliked the man. I decided to keep pushing. Something had to give.

When I returned to San Salvador, I dropped in on Steele and asked about the rifle. "I thought Brasher wasn't working for you," I said. Steele brushed the question away, claiming he gave Brasher the MI 6 a long time ago, before they had clashed - - over something he wouldn't discuss. He no longer talked to Brasher, Steele declared. End of discussion.

Later, as the Iran-Contra scandal unfolded, Steele's role was illuminated by Rafael "Chi-Chi" Quintero, a Cuban exile and Bay of Pigs veteran who had worked for the CIA as a Central American intelligence officer. When North recruited retired Air Force Major General Richard Secord to help run the Contra operation, Secord hired Quintero to ship arms to the rebels.

During North's 1989 trial for his role in the Iran-Contra affair, Quintero testified that North told him two men were responsible for decisions about weapons drops: in Costa Rica, CIA station chief Joe Fernandez; in El Salvador, he was to report to Col. James Steele.

As we chatted, Steele clearly wanted to distance himself from Brasher. "You know I'm going to have to include this in my report, " I said. In fact, it was already in the report, which had been sent up the line before I left Guatemala. Steele nodded, apparently unconcerned. I left, heading for Janis Elmore's office.

Elmore greeted my briefing with an I-told-you-so look. "Nothing's going to happen, " she said. "Willy works for Oliver North. "

On my way out, I stopped to chat with a Salvadoran secretary working for Adame. I wanted to find out what had thrown Brasher and Steele's relationship on the rocks. She and I had lunch occasionally in the embassy cafeteria. Like secretaries everywhere, she knew more about the goings-on in the office than her boss. She often supplemented the intelligence I obtained elsewhere with her own fly-on-the-wall insights. She had restless ears and an eye for detail.

She knew Brasher too.

'He's an asshole, " she said bluntly. I asked her what she knew about Brasher's other activities. "He's been running guns and drugs for the Contras, " she said. Yeah, no kidding, I thought as I rapped on Adame's door.

Adame told me Brasher had challenged Steele's authority in the Contra resupply mission. Brasher was trying to run the operation, but Steele had quashed his power play. I mentioned the

incriminating documents in Brasher's file cabinets listing Adame' s extra-governmental sales activities with Willy. I was hoping to wring more information about Brasher out ofhim, but the colonel threw me a reassuring smile and said his arrangment with Brasher was purely business. Adame said he planned to make some real money while he was in Central America, and his association with Brasher had done the trick. The thought that someone might consider this immoral or illegal apparently never entered his mind.

Not that annyone worred about the rules anymore. The CIA which had ostentsibly turned over the Contras lethal supply line to North and his network, remained an active part of the operations .Rumors of this violation of the Boland Amendment whispered through the system for months, until it became so obvious the agency could no longer avoid action. By January, Joe Fernandez the CIA Coasta Rican station chief, was recalled when the rumors turned into allegations.

* * *

I had become good friends with Randy Kapasar , a CIA agent in Guatemala with whom I shared countless flights between Guatemala and El Salvador, He was an ex-Marine, balding and bearded, whose hands twitched and waved as if his body had chosen them to let off its excess energy His career took him throughout Latin America; he was an expert in covert operations and demolition. We partied together from time to time, and when he transferred to Miami, we threw Randy a huge going-away party.

He knew I was investigating the Contras, I knew he was helping them. I expected him to deny my evidence of the Contras' narcotrafficking, but he followed Sofi's reasoning: "Cele, how do you think the Contras are gonna make money? They've got to run dope, that's the only way we can finance this operation. '

"Arrogant bastard," said the DFA agent in Panama when I asked him about Brasher. The DFA computer mentioned a recent Brasher appearance at the DFA office in Panama. Yes, the agent said, Brasher had paid them a visit, demanding information on certain traffickers. ' 'He strutted in like he ran he place. We asked him for identification. He had credentials from DFA and CIA. He even had FBI credentials, ' , he said. While Brasher waited, they ran hia name through the computer. When they discovered his illustrious trafficking record, they happily bounced him out of the embassy. "Be careful with this guy", the agent said, "He's a little nuts."

On October 7, as I pored over paperwork in Guatemala City, a burly mid-westerner was led before a pack of reporters in Managua. I caught the newsconference on CNN at the office, and my jaw dropped. The prisoner loooked haggard, dressed in filthy jeans and

a denim shirt. His Nicaraguan captors allowed him to make a single statement: "My name is Gene Hasenfus. I come from Marinette, Wisconsin. I was captured yesterday in southern NIcaragua.

Hasenfus and three other crew members --Americans Sawyer and William J. Cooper, plus an unidentified Contra operative --had lumbered off a runway at Ilopango on Sunday, October 5, with a load of munitions for the Contras.

They flew South, skirting the Nicaraguan coastline before veering into Costa Rica, then looped into Nicaragua. A few minutes later, as they they approached San Carlos, a surface-to-air missile slammed into the plane, and sent it hurtling to the Earth. Hasenfus was the only one with a parachute. As his comrades braced for their death, the lone survivor floated into history.

The unraveling had begun.

I recognized Hasenfus' name immediately. Aparecio' s prostitue girlfriend, had mentioned him as one of the regulars at the pilots' lair in the hills. They constantly invited her to the house and I had written reports based on her accounts of her encounters with the pi!ots. She described their parties, where cocaine, marijuana, and sex swirled around the house, punctuated by the rattle of automatic weapons fired into the air by juiced up pilots. She knew Hasenfus, Oliver North, Felix Rodriguez -the Cuban American who helped North with the Contra operation - and virtually every pilot who flew for Project Democracy out of Ilopango.

When he heard about Hasenfus, Aparecio headed straight to the house with a FUCA team, looking for evidence. He called 30 minutes later. "It was cleaned out completely," he said dejectedly.

The Nicaraguans recovered rifles, grenades, boots and 50,000 rounds of ammunition from the shattered C - 123. They also seized an 1. D. card identifying Hasenfus as a U.S. adviser to the Salvadoran Air Force. I thought about the documents in Brasher's files listing weapons and delivery dates for the Contras' Southern Front. Had the cargo on that C-123 been stored at Brasher's place? Had Eugene Hasenfus ever slept in one of the bunks in that filthy house?

The hornet's nest had broken open, and everyone was ducking for cover. Oliver North hurried back to Washington from Frankfurt, Germany, where he had been negotiating with the Iranians for the release of the American hostages held in Beirut. He immediately began shredding the paper trail connecting him to the Contras.

By then, Congress had approved $100 million in aid for the Contras, allowing North to shut down his operation to prepare for the CIA's return to the war. Hasenfus said he thought the CIA ran the operation; the Administration began circling the wagons. Secretary of State George Shultz issued a flat denial: "They had no connection with the U.S. government at all.

It was the first of a long string of lies.

The Reagan Administration tried to pin responsibility on Gen. Singlaub, the Contra cheerleader whose fund-raising had been prohibited in the McAllen Library. Singlaub also denied any knowledge Of the flight or its mission . Officials later admitted he had been used as a scapegoat.

As more details bubbled to the surface, the President lauded the efforts Of the private American citizens who chose to risk their lives to fight the Sandinista regime in their spare time. The Contras played their part in the farce: spokesman Bosco Matamoros assured the world the U.S. government had no connection to the downed C - 123. In response, the Sandinistas marched Hasenfus before the cameras and upped the ante. "Two Cuban naturalized Americans that work for the CIA did most of the coordination for the flights and oversaw all of our housing, transportation, also refueling and some flight plans," Hasenfus said.

As their role in the fiasco came to light, the first political tremors rumbled through the Salvadoran government. But they were dwarfed by the terror that struck five days after Hasenfus was captured. At 11:49 a.m., October 10, every living resident of San Salvador was united for an instant, their minds frozen in a flash of horror as the city lurched beneath them.

The earthquake measured 7.5 on the Richter scale. When the Cocos Plate slipped another notch under the isthmus, the long scar stretching through the city ripped open and claimed its victims. The city's landmarks crumpled: The Gran Hotel, the Ministry of Planning, and the 5 - story Ruben Dario office build ing,'Where the moans and cries of more than 300 trapped workers echoed through the twisted steel beams. More than three dozen child ten died in the San Jacinto neighborhood when Santa Catalina Elementary School shuddered and fell. As the day faded, the searchers and the stunned survivors milled over the remains of the City, their silhouettes black against the searchlights and names .

In Nicaragua, Hasenfus named the two Cuban-Americans who helped run the supply operation. One of them was Max Gomez. Vice President George Bush immediately hailed Gomez as "a patriot," and in a slip of the tongue, called him "Felix Gomez." Gomez, of course, was Felix Rodriguez.

The residents of San Salvador worked through the night, Pulling the dead and near-dead from the rubble, praying they Could reach the living in time. Sudden thunderstorms doused them as they clawed through the wreckage. In the shantytowns, refugees who had lost loved ones in the crossfire called out the names of relatives they would never see alive again.

The following day, the earthquake and Hasenfus dueled for space on the front pages. Elliott Abrams, the senior State Department official in charge of Latin America, appeared on CNN to repeat the party line on the Evans and Novak show:

Evans: Mr. Secretary, can you give me categorical assurance that Hasenfus was not under the control, the guidance the direction, or what have you, of

anybody connected with the American government?

Abrams: Absolutely. That would be illegal. We are barred from doing that, and we are not doing it. This was not in any sense a U.S. government operation. None.

Novak: Now, when you say, gave categorical assurance, we're not playing word games that are so common in Washington. You're not talking about the N[SCI or something else?

Abrams: I am not playing word games.

Novak: National Security Council?

Abrams: No government agencies, none. They never thought the truth would wiggle out of their fists.

Only one of San Salvador's hospitals escaped damage, so wounded Salvadorans fought for medical attention as U.S. transport planes swooped into Ilopango with relief supplies and rescue teams. They brought dogs to sniff out the living, and tools to cut through the wreckage, now reeking from hundreds of damp, decomposing bodies. President Duarte estimated the death toll at 890, with 10,000 injured and 150,000 homeless. The American Embassy was a total loss: moments after Ambassador Corr stepped across the hall, the ceiling in his office collapsed.

Bush denied any connection to Max Gomez, or Felix Rodriguez, or Felix Gomez (depending on who you asked), but on October 12 he admitted Donald Gregg, his national security adviser, had some dealings with his favorite Contra patriot.

Hugo called from Ilopango: the pilots were scrambling out of the country, almost bumping into the reporters swarming into the air base. Not that the pilots had anything to fly anymore. The Contras' small air force at Ilopango was quietly flown to a remote airstrip and destroyed.

The earthquake's after shocks hit October 13, three days after the initial devastation, sending most of the city scurrying outdoors. Some remained in the streets hours after the last tremor. The death toll reached 976.

In the following days, the Salvadorans began laboriously reconstructing their capital, while America's most popular presidency in decades staggered with each new revelation. The Sandinistas discovered a business card on the C - 123 belonging to Robert Owen, North's main intermediary between himself and the Contras (according to Kerry's subcommittee probe, Owen's name was later discovered in an address book found on a DC-4 controlled by Frank Moss, a pilot who flew Contra missions and was investigated, but never indicted, by 10 different law enforcement agencies for narcotics offenses). And as Secretary of State George Schultz picked his way through San Salvador with Duarte, a dozen House Democrats asked the Justice Department to appoint a special prosecutor to investigate whether the White House had violated the Boland

Amendment.

On October 21, 1 filed a follow-up cable on the Brasher raid, this one more detailed than the report I sent from El Salvador. The suits in Washington still had not responded to my first cable. By then I doubted the memo existed anymore.

John Martsh, head of the DEA's Latin American Section, surprised me with a call a week later. He had read my latest report, and he was not pleased. He insisted I use "allegedly" more when I described my investigation of the Contras and Brasher. "Head quarters is pretty upset about this, " he said. "Don't step on other people's toes, it could come back to haunt you. If DEA doesn't like your reports, they might reject your re-up." The shit was obviously hitting the fan, so now Washington was telling me to back off.

Despite the setbacks, I planned to put in for another two years overseas. I wanted to finish what I had started in Guatemala. Noe agreed to stay for another tour. She enjoyed the cocktail party atmosphere of the embassy social scene. She also landed a job as assistant manager in the embassy commissary. Now Martsh was telling me I might be yanked back to the States if I made headquarters squirm too much.

I scheduled an appointment with Gen. Bustillo, the ranking Salvadoran air force officer at Ilopango, to ask him why he allowed Brasher to run dope. It was a bluff, but Bustillo bit. The general said he was only following orders to help North's operation. He was confused. "I don't understand your government, " he said. " North comes down here and tells us he needs our help with his covert operation. Now you tell me what they're doing is illegal. " As far as he knew, Oliver North represented the White House. That was all the reassurance he needed.

I met with Corr at his residence on November 13. It had survived the earthquake, but the ambassador looked a little shaken when I arrived. "Guess who just left?" he said, then filled in the blank. "William Brasher. " Brasher had returned from the

States in a rage. Corr told me Brasher had stormed in and threatened him: If I go down, you and half the MilGroup go down with me. He wanted his weapons back.

Corr advised him to get his ass out of town while he still could, then confiscated his embassy credentials as he left. Brasher would never get his guns back. We had donated the cache to the national police, who happily distributed it through the ranks; anything left at the house had been picked clean by the CIA. But Brasher would not go to jail, either. Officers at the national police told me they could not arrest him - - their superiors ordered them to leave him alone.

Corr wearily said he was taking heat from Washington because of my reports. "You're not the only one, " I replied. The DEA had sent a man from Washington to investigate my reports on Brasher. He repeated the orders to use "allegedly." Then he scolded me for poor grammar in my cables. Poor

granvnar? That was a first.

A few days later, Brasher called me. He apparently had taken Corr's advice to leave the country. He was calling from Miami.

"You and I need to sit down over a cup of coffee. I want to meet you and find out who you are," Brasher said. "I need to straighten you out. " He was angry. I had messed up his operation, and he claimed my reports were false. I was in no mood for his abuse. By then, Brasher had threatened every diplomat in El Salvador, using North's name to throw weight behind his wrath. He repeated the threat to each one: If I go down, the whole show goes down.

The Contra operation was collapsing in a heap without Brasher, like the flimsy shantytowns in San Salvador during the earthquake. AcrossAmerica, the shock of leaming Reagan's staff was negotiating with the Iranians for the release of the hostages was followed by the inevitable aftershocks: North overcharged the Iranians to buy guns for a war we were no longer supposed to be supporting. If the Contra -drug connection had been added to the list of sins, it might have leveled anyone left standing. Instead, my own agency was trying to intimidate me, and this asshole was harassing me.

I thought back to his unceremonious eviction from the DEA office in Panama, despite his ample credentials. "Hey, you still have those FBI credentials?" I asked sarcastically. Brasher fumed. I hung up.

Nine

Death Squad Dance

San Salvador - January 16, 1987

It should have been just another brief flight from Guatemala City to San Salvador. The pilot adjusted the flaps, dropping the jet smoothly into its landing pattern. The whining engines competed with the murmur of passengers in the half -filled Copa jet. I sat in the front row, skimming over my work notes from the Previous week, a bottle of scotch for the FUCA commander tucked under my seat.

Suddenly, the plane lurched upward, pulling my stomach down to my belt. As the jet roared past the control tower, I peered through the oval window and spotted a white - shirted figure in the tower waving his arms back and forth, like a baseball umpire signaling "safe. " His grave expression indicated otherwise. Something was wrong. Flight 317 banked sharply, aiming toward~ the Pacific.

A flight attendant appeared, her face drawn and nervous.

She clicked the intercom and delivered the bad news with a halting Voice: The front landing gear was stuck halfway down. After jettisoning most of the fuel over the ocean, the crew planned to attempt a crash landing.

The woman across the aisle, a Nicaraguan who looked about eight months pregnant, prayed out loud, ignoring the effect Of her display on the two terrified little girls in the seat next to her. The flight crew instructed the passengers to move to the rear of the plane, but the pregnant woman refused, afraid to leave her seat. The flight attendant frowned for a moment, then patted her shoulder and joined the others in the rear.

I remained in the front with her and her daughters. Muttering my own quiet prayer, I pulled off my wedding band and locked it in my attache case, then jotted a quick note to my wife in my planner:

Noe, I love you and the kids. Guide them. I'm proud of you and I am sorry. Be brave. Tell my family I love them. Cele, 10:45. of all the

I closed the book and cursed to myself, thinking things I should have done. Always too busy. Too much work. TOO much stress. It should have been different.

The pilot's voice cracked over the intercom: "The front landing gear is

still jammed. Prepare for every hard impact when the back wheels touch down. We're going to try to jar it loose when we land." A minute later, the plane dropped toward the runway, tail first. The rear landing gear smashed into the pavement, bouncing us in our seats like puppets. After a few terrifying moments, we heard a screech as the gear touched again. I closed my eyes, waiting for the sound of twisting metal. The airbrakes hammered on, dragging the jet to a slow stop. We were safe. I pried my fingers from the armrests, said a quick word of thanks to Saint Jude, then walked into the sunlight.

I had little time to dwell on the near miss. At the end of January, articles linking the Contra resupply operation with narcotics smuggling hit the U.S. media. The third secret was out.

The story surfaced in turbulent waters. Iran-Contra was a household word by the beginning of 1987, with new revelations smacking the public in the face every few days. When the Administration ran out of lies, it searched for scapegoats. President Reagan fired Oliver North and accepted the resignation of his boss, Vice Admiral John Poindexter, on November 25, 1986. The first bodies had dropped.

In December, during his weekly radio address to the nation, Reagan admitted "mistakes were made." He would change this comment to "serious mistakes were made" a month later. On December 4, the House and Senate agreed to form a select committee to probe deeper into those ,mistakes." On December 19, U - S. Attorney General Edwin Meese named Lawrence Walsh

independent counsel to investigate the now- famous Iran -Contra Affair.

The third secret surfaced in The New York Times on January 20. Under the headline, "Contra Arms Crews Said to Smuggle Drugs," reporter Joel Brinkley wrote: Federal drug investigators uncovered evidence last fall that the American flight crews covertly ferrying arms to the Nicaraguan rebels were smuggling cocaine and other drugs on their return trips to the United States, Administration officials said today.

When the crew members, based in El Salvador, learned that Drug Enforcement Administration agents were investigating their activities, one of them warned that they had White House protection, the officials said.

The Times then quoted an anonymous U.S. official who said the crew member's warning, which came after DEA searched his San Salvador house for drugs, caused "quite a stir" at Ilopango. Brasher. Who else could it be? Someone at DEA leaked details of my investigation to The Times, I thought when I finally saw the article. The story described it in amazing detail.

Then, in Newsweek's January 26, 1987, issue, a headline asked "Is There a Contra Drug Connection?" The magazine quoted three drug smugglers: George Morales, the champion speedboat racer- turned -trafficker; Gary Betzner, one of Morales 'pilots; and an unnamed "FBI witness" who claimed to have seen contra planes loaded with cocaine in Colombia in 1985. Morales and Betzner, both interviewed in federal prison in Miami, accused the Contras of running

drugs, claims they would repeat under oath before Sen. Kerry's subcommittee in 1988. The "FBI witness," who passed a lie detector test, said cocaine was packed aboard a Southern Air Transport plane in Barranquilla, Colombia, where other aircraft from North's supply network often landed. " Southern Air Transport is the shadowy company that has been implicated in Oliver North's network to supply arms to the contras, using funds from the Iranian arms deal. It also provided the Hasenfus plane, shot down by the Sandinistas on a contra airdrop run," the author wrote.

Then, another connection.

The Times article mentioned Southern Air Transport as well, saying "Colonel North had told the Federal Bureau of investigation last October to stop investigating Southern Air Transport ... At that time, Colonel North told the F. B. 1. that the investigation would jeopardize negotiations for the release Of the American hostages in Lebanon."

An anonymous former federal official - nobody wanted to talk about this on the record - told The Times reporter some senior government officials were "very, very worried that Ollie really had stopped that investigation, and this would be the next big scandal. "

From my vantage point, it was obvious the government did not want the drug issue to turn the scandal into the Iran-Contra Cocaine Affair. First, Rivera's weapons investigation was quietly snuffed.

Before the weapons could be traced, Rivera called, distraught. Customs suddenly decided to switch jurisdiction for Central America from Mexico City to their Panama office. His bosses ordered Rivera to pack up his investigations from Central America, particularly anything related to the Iran-Contra Affair, and ship them to headquarters, marked "Classified." Rivera boxed his files and sent them to Washington. We never learned what, if anything, happened to the Brasher investigation.

Then, two weeks after the Times article appeared, DEA sent a two -person team to Guatemala to investigate my Contra reports. Finally, someone is listening. Or so I thought. I did not know about the increasing publicity the Contras' drug connection was receiving.

I was in El Salvador when the intelligence team arrived. I hurried back, expecting a couple of grizzled veterans. Instead, Stia introduced me to a young, casually dressed man named Doug. His partner, a short woman with straight, shoulder-length dark hair, was a DEA rookie. She was also a diplomat brat whose parents, she said proudly, worked in the US Embassy in Costa Rica. I wondered why the agency would send an inexperienced analyst to investigate such a sensitive topic. She's probably the only Spanish speaker in her entire office, I thought.

After a brief meeting with the pair, I ducked into Stia's office, eager to discover what kind of questions they were asking.

Stia said when they interviewed him the previous day, he let them flip through my reports from Ilopango. He assured me he backed up everything in my reports. I nodded. I was going to need plenty of support.

On February 9, the analysts and I filed into Janis Elmore's office. Col. Adame was already there, sitting quietly with an eager-to please look on his face. I pulled up a chair, wondering if Elmore and Adame would verify my reports. I had my doubts.

The woman started by asking Elmore about the relationship between DEA and the State Department in Guatemala: Were there any problems Elmore would like to air now.? No, Janis said, the offices maintained an amicable relationship. She threw me a quick, puzzled glance. I shifted uncomfortably in my chair, which suddenly became cold and hard. The questions continued, edging closer to my actions in Central America. They seemed more interested in searching out criticism of my performance than learning the truth about the Contras. By the time they got around to asking about the Contras - - Doug seemed afraid to say the word, instead asking "What's going on at Ilopango?" - - Elmore seemed thoroughly irritated with their fishing expedition.

Elmore dodged the question, telling them everything at Ilopango was normal. She avoided the Contras altogether. Adame chimed in with his own reassurances: Nothing unusual to report at the airbase. Rumors had surfaced about some Contra pilots smuggling narcotics, he said, but he could assure them if the rumors were true, no U.S. personnel were involved. The woman nodded without looking up from her notebook.

When the female investigator asked to meet with Elmore in private, Elmore shook her head. "Anything you want to ask me, you can ask in front of them," she said. The woman stalked out with her teammate in tow. Elmore leaned toward me. "Be careful. This girl is looking for something to nail you guys on.

I nodded and walked out.

Any slim hope I harbored of Elmore and Adame verifying my Contra reports vanished as I left the office. I could not bring myself to be angry. They were avoiding turbulent water. Adame and Brasher, after all, were friends and business partners. He was not about to stab Brasher in the back, or admit the MilGroup allowed a U. S. sponsored operation to haul boxes of cocaine into the United States.

And whether or not Elmore knew it, the State Department shared some of the responsibility for placing the drug traffickers on the government payroll. The year before, the State Depart ment awarded contracts to four companies owned or operated by drug traffickers: SETCO Air, founded by a Honduran trafficker; DIACSA, an air freight company that doubled as the Miami headquarters for two convicted smugglers; VORTEX, an airplane leasing company whose vice president was a trafficker - turned DEA informant; and Frigorificos de Puntarenas, a Costa Rican seafood company owned and operated by two convicted traffickers.

Between January and August, 1986, the State Department paid the companies more than $800,000 to provide services to the Contras.

During the same period, the State Department calmly assured Congress that a government probe into Contra drug smuggling revealed only a "limited number of incidents in which known drug traffickers tried to establish connections with Nicaraguan resistance groups. " Individual members of the resistance may have dabbled in narcotics smuggling, the department stated, but they did so without the knowledge of Contra leaders. DEA9s investigation was equally superficial, and like the State Department's probe, came in the wake of news accounts linking the Contras to narcotics.

on January 10, the investigators headed to El Salvador. They paid a courtesy visit to Corr, but had not planned to interview him. When they told Corr the purpose of their visit, he hurried to assure them everything El Salvador was running smoothly.

Then, the main event: An interview with the two informants who made the investigation possible. We walked i~to Aparecio's cafe, where Aparecio and Hugo waited. I made the introductions. When everyone settled into their chairs, the female investigator flipped to a fresh page and leaned toward Hugo. She asked him if my reports from Ilopango were accurate. Hugo took a deep breath and rattled off everything he witnessed at Ilopango throughout the previous year. For the next hour, he recounted every detail: The cocaine, the cash, the pilots, even the black X on the tails of the Contra planes. She chatted with him in rapid fire Spanish, stopping every few minutes to translate for Doug.

She interrupted Hugo several times during his narrative to ask if I was taking good care of him, paying him good money. The insinuations woven through her questions tested my patience, but Hugo came to my rescue. Yes, he was happy with our relation ship. Aparecio spoke next, filling in the gaps from his own experience with the Contras and the Brasher raid. I held back the satisfied smile that wanted to spread across my face. Finally, the truth. Their accounts confirmed everything in my reports.

The analysts seemed unimpressed. The woman became excited only when Hugo revealed a shady airplane rental deal between Stia and Perez, who almost got me killed with his helicopter stunt in Cuilco. Hugo said Stia chipped in $5,000 to buy a plane with P6rez. Then the pair turned around and rented it to DEA, charging three times what we normally paid to lease planes from the Piper company. The woman furiously copied down every word. When Hugo returned to the Contras, her pen slowed to a crawl.

After three very similar days in Central America, the analysts returned to Washington and filed their report. Naturally, it echoed the government's well-rehearsed conclusions: Any narcotics trafficking by the Contras was the work of a few unorganized individuals, who snuck the contraband into the United States behind their leaders' backs. An angry Stia dropped the report on my desk, cursing to himself. Despite his initial reluctance to pursue the

investigation, Stia dutifully signed all my reports on the Contras. His signature meant he considered my reports valid; his reputation was tied to this investigation as well. He shot off an angry cable to headquarters, asking them how the hell two investigators could reach conclusions about such a expansive subject after only a few days in Central America. He never got a reply. I read the analysts' report slowly and sighed. My feeling of abandonment and betrayal was total. Once again, when the drug war hit politically sensitive targets, DEA blinked. Confirming my reports meant heaping more embarrassment on the Reagan Ad ministration and making their "Just Say No" platitudes sound as completely hypocritical as they were. So DEA let me twist in the political winds. For the first time, I was ashamed of my own agency.

Shortly after the analysts left, Stia called me into his office to tell me the embassy wanted me to stay away from El Salvador. Stia said my Contra reports were stirring the waters in Washing ton. With Corr frequently out of the country as Iran-Contra sucked him into high - level Washington meetings, David Dlouhy the deputy chief of mission, stepped in to declare El Salvador off' limits to me. The country was too hot, with reporters nosing around everywhere asking about the Contras.

That was fine with me. With North's Contra base dismantled, my investigation was in limbo anyway. I could turn my attention back to Guatemala. I fished through my desk drawer, plucked out a manila folder, and spread the documents on my desk. My file on the Guatemalan government's drug ring was officially re- opened.

I needed a new angle on the case. Any hope of busting the drug -dealing diputado, Carlos Ramiro Garcia de Paz, vanished a few weeks earlier at a party thrown by the national police. When I walked into their headquarters, flanked by a group of embassy employees, Garcia de Paz's face jumped out at me from the huge crowd.

He sat at the front table next to Julio Caballeros, director of the national police. Garcia de Paz spotted me instantly and stared for a moment, puzzled, before wrapping an arm around Caballeros' shoulders and whispering a question into his ear. Caballeros glanced at me, then steered Garcia de Paz to a comer of the room for private consultation. I hoped Caballeros would not blow my cover. Then I watched the shock register on the diputado's face as Caballeros spoke. He scowled at me. I pointed my index finger at him like a gunbarrel and Pulled the trigger. The

scowl deepened. I threw him my best cavalier smile. It was all I could think to do. My cover was blown.

In March, the investigation found a new breath Of life when Col. Moran, the Guatemalan officer in charge Of President Cerezo's anti-corruption force, agreed to help. Short slim, and balding, Moran could have starred in any Of those cheesy banana republic movies as the ramrod military dictator. But Moran was connected. Unlike the conservatives in the Military, Moran was loyal to Cerezo. I prayed he was not part of the government's drug conspiracy as well.

I had to trust him until he proved he could not

be trusted. With the president's weight behind him, Moran would be my hammer. Now we needed a wedge.

We found it in Derek Mata, a man with an interesting set of alliances. According to intelligence I received from G2 and their ubiquitous wiretaps, Mata frequently flew drug missions for the Medellin cartel. He worked for Garcia de Paz. And he was the half brother of Gen. Roberto Enrique Mata - Galvez, the Guatemalan military's chief of staff and the head of security at the presidential palace.

Our first attempt to scare Mata into flipping to our side flopped. Mata agreed to meet with us in Moran's office, but when Moran and I tried to shake him with our knowledge of his criminal activities, he told us to go screw ourselves: His brother was the president's right hand man. Moran started to raise his voice, then thought better of it. He looked at me and shrugged. We needed a new approach.

Before I could gather any momentum, Stia and I came under DEA's internal affairs microscope. Less than a month before the Iran Contra hearings began, John Martsh, our Latin American chief, flew down from Washington on April 7, 1987 to conduct an OPR investigation of the Guatemala office. We expected an experience akin to a rectal exam. After grilling Stia about his questionable dealings with an informant, Martsh turned the microscope on me. Stia called me into his office soon after Martsh left: " Cele, they're coming after you because of the Contra thing and the reports you wrote. They're trying to get rid of you, but they're going to do it very discreetly."

Martsh was on a mission. He talked to Hugo. He interviewed Aparecio. He spent a day poking around the El Dorado Hotel, where one of my informants, a woman who worked at the desk, told me Martsh asked if we were having an affair. She blushed when she repeated his questions later, but assured me everyone I worked with in the hotel told Martsh I was clean. Her encouraging smile did not erase the ominous overtones of Martsh's visit. My head was on the chopping block. Sooner or later, I would duck too slowly slow to avoid the blade.

Martsh returned to Stia's office and dug through the files, asking if I ever paid Aparecio out of my personal funds. It was a calculated question. Paying informants out of pocket violated DEA policy, but the rule was routinely ignored on the front lines.

Out of sheer necessity, agents frequently opened their own wallets for informants. DF-A funds came in quarterly installments. The money usually dried up in October, and sometimes it was December or January before the next infusion. When the cash ran out, agents dug into their own pockets.

By the time Martsh got around to interviewing me, I knew what to expect. I answered each question knowing suspicious eyes in Washington would inspect every word later. Martsh looked like a disheveled high school teacher late for class, a heavy- set man wrapped in sloppy clothes peering through dark-rimmed glasses. He spoke with a cocky edge I instantly resented. He ticked off my misdeeds, passed along to him by the female analyst who visited two months earlier. Martsh said the female investigator was concerned with my relationship with Aparecio. He reminded me the line in the DEA manual stating "social or business contacts are expressly prohibited. "

I know the damn manual, I thought bitterly. I wanted to grab Martsh by his thick neck and explain the realities of working alone in a hostile country. I swallowed my anger and answered: Yes, Aparecio and I were friends. With no other agents available, I explained, Aparecio served as my backup. In the process, we developed what DEA considered a prohibited relationship.

Martsh shifted his weight and changed topics. He wanted to know about Stia's involvement with the plane.

"As far as I know, the plane is under Perez's name, said. The day before my meeting with Martsh, Stia asked me not to say anything about the $5,000 check he handed P6rez to buy the plane. I promised to keep my mouth shut. My answer was truthful. Stia made sure the plane was registered in P6rez, s name. I told Martsh I heard rumors about Stia writing a check for the plane, but I never saw the check. Also true.

Martsh frowned.

"Have you been paying Luis Aparecio Out of your own pocket?" he asked, studying me over the top of his glasses.

I paused. "I know it's against the rules, but every agent has to do it, " I said.

Martsh puckered his lips as he jotted the answer. He cocked his head again, like a teacher about to discipline a disruptive student. "You should be more careful about how you conduct yourself with informants," he said.

"Well, then you need to send us more agents. The rules also say you're supposed to have two agents present every time you pay an informant. That's impossible in El Salvador. There's nobody but me. "

Three weeks later, Martsh ordered me to fly to Washington. He spread the written statements out before me and handed me a pen. I studied the neatly typed summary of our conversation, then signed. A warning light flashed, but I overruled it. I had nothing to hide. Before I left, Martsh repeated his question about Stia's interest in the plane. I stuck to my previous answers. That seemed to trip his temper. He warned me again about my Contra reports. Reporters were asking questions, he said. I should keep my mouth shut.

In May, 1987, as the Iran - Contra hearings began flickering across American television sets, I retreated to the jungle, search ing out opium fields anchored in the mountains.

With help from the Guardia de Hacienda, I began feeling productive again. Squirting herbicides on opium plants was concrete and satisfying. You find the poppies, you spray them, they die. For a while, it did not even matter that the mountain peasants replaced their crops as quickly as we could spray. I was doing something.

When weather and crosswinds permitted, we sprayed the poppies from the air. When flying was impossible, we called the Guardia de Hacienda and humped up the mountains on foot to knock down the fragile plants with sticks and machetes. The risk increased every kilometer we climbed. The mountain villagers in Guatemala were switching to poppies as rapidly as their counterparts in Peru switched to coca. In Peru, the military and Sendero Luminoso swatted away anti -narcotics efforts. Here, they used the Civilian Self -Defense Patrols, the paramilitary groups forcibly recruited from the villages as counterrevolutionaries.

Oscar Diaz's blood pressure rose so quickly it looked like his eyeballs would burst. Diaz, the fiery new leader of the Guardia de Hacienda, pushed morale among the Guardia's roughly 2,000 men to new highs with his John Wayne bravado and hands-on leadership. Now six of his men were dead, tortured and shot somewhere in the mountains near Cuilco. Their informants insisted the Civilian Self -Defense Patrol murdered them when they climbed too close to an opium plantation with their machetes. Diaz rounded up about 125 men in Cuilco, then charged up the mountain in the dark, with me bringing up the rear with my M- 16.

The soldiers leading the column were natives of the area and scrabbled up the mountains like goats. My legs cramped up after a few hours of marching uphill in the thin air, bringing a few snickers from the young recruits. I returned the chuckles a few hours later when they started cramping too. When I started spitting blood, I realized how out of shape I had become. But at daybreak, I was rewarded with a breathtaking view. They called this part of the mountains Las Nubes: The Clouds. White, misty masses drifted just below us, parting around the rocky barrier before melting together on the other side.

We met a small Civilian Patrol squad just after sunrise. The half -dozen armed peasants confronted Diaz, belligerently ordering him off their mountain. Diaz looked like he had been slapped. They argued for a few minutes, then Diaz ended the discussion by spraying the ground around their feet with his automatic. They retreated, leaving the panting invaders to push upward.

Those same lanky men were waiting when we reached the opium plantation. They lifted small flute-like instruments to their lips and blew a few shrill notes. Suddenly, we were surrounded by what looked like every villager on the mountain. Hundreds of Indians lined a nearby ridge like Apaches in a western,

watching the Guardia chop down their poppies. The sniper fire began as we hacked down the stalks. I yelled into my walkie -talkie, trying to find a friendly voice with an aircraft. A CIA helicopter found us, spotted the Indians, then lifted to a safe altitude and watched the villagers chase us all the way down the mountain. We reached Cuilco after eight hours, carrying soldiers with broken ankles and fractured legs. I passed out on a sidewalk, exhausted. The villagers made it very clear: Unless we marched into their plantations with an army, they were kings of this mountain.

In the fall of 1987, something finally went right.

On September 25, G2 picked up a conversation on their illegal wiretap of Garcia de Paz's phone - The Colombians planned to fly to Puerto Barrios, a port on the Guatemala's eastern coast to drop off a large cocaine shipment.

The four-month investigation leading up to his point tested my patience at every turn. We got our first break when I bluffed Derek Mata by threatening to extradite him on conspiracy charges. He spent the next three days spilling everything he knew about drug smuggling within the Guatemalan government. He named more than a dozen officials dealing with the Colombian cartels, including Garcia de Paz. Mata claimed his high -ranking half brother and President Cerezo knew about the trafficking, and allowed the narcotics to pass through Guatemala unmolested. Garcia de Paz, a number of other government officials, and several military officers loyal to Cerezo actually participated in the trafficking, Mata added.

The G2 stepped in soon after, unceremoniously ousting Col. Moran. They told me their wiretap on his phone confirmed their suspicions: Moran was feeding information about my investigation to Cerezo and Garcia de Paz. They also gave me a stem warning: The Colombians knew Derek Mata was an informant. I shook my head, suddenly depressed. Few investigations could survive one major security breach, much less two.

Throughout July and August, we watched and listened as the buyers and sellers came together. On July 22, a woman representing the Chicago buyers flew in for the first of several meetings with the Guatemalan minister of defense. I always suspected the military helped the traffickers. This seemed to confirm it. Cerezo's government, with their few loyal military officials, could not protect such a large trafficking operation. The dopers needed the more powerful right wing's cooperation as well.

Soon, the other side of the equation arrived: On July 27, three Colombians and a Mexican trafficker flew in to Guatemala to oversee a small cocaine shipment. We let it go through. It was a warm -up for the mother lode in September.

On September 25, everything was in place. Dozens of G2 soldiers crawled around the Puerto Barrios hotel where Garcia de Paz was staying with the

Colombians and their Mexican partner.

The diputado arrived in his Mercedes. He was the middleman, personally ensuring the cocaine's smooth transfer from the Colombian sellers to the Chicago buyers. It was the most boring Friday night I could remember. I watched the hotel for hours, yawning and chatting with CIA agent Randy Kapasar as well as Derek Mata. The CIA sent Kapasar to get its new narcotics section's feet wet in Central America. G2 reluctantly agreed to allow Mata to come along only after I lobbied for him. He knew all the players and could identify them at critical points.

We settled in for a long night of surveillance. Close to 100 G2 troops lingered around the hotel and the port. G2 was convinced the cocaine would arrive by boat, so they placed most of their eyes on the piers. Someone forgot to bring radios, so runners flitted from group to group, passing messages down the line.

On Saturday morning, the Colombians disappeared. The G2 commander was livid, demanding to know how so many men could allow the traficantes to slip past their surveillance. His men scurried around Puerto Barrios like drunken rats, hunting for the Colombians. Kapasar and I had to laugh. It would be a miracle if this operation worked.

While they searched, the mother vessel Daring cruised into the quiet waters of Puerto Barrios. We suspected the Panamanian registered ship was our smuggler, but we could not be sure. We waited, listening to the scanner, hoping the Colombians would slip and reveal themselves. That night on the scanner, a voice gave an order in English: Turn the lights off, we're coming in. Suddenly, the Daring's lights clicked off, its darkened hull vanishing against the black water. "Probably loading the cocaine now," one of the G2 officers said. The G2 troops were ready to pounce. Most of the officers wanted to move in immediately, but their commander held up his hand. "Let's wait."

On Sunday, I peered through my binoculars and cursed to myself as Garcia de Paz hopped into his Mercedes and drove away, his job apparently done. Every time I got close to nailing the the diputado, he wiggled away. It was like trying to catch a snake with chopsticks.

A G2 officer called to us, his eyes glued to the piers. The Colombians were back. Everything exploded. They swarmed the pier and the hotel, grabbing the Colombians, the Mexican

trafficker, and two young women. The girls identified themselves as the Mexican trafficker's daughters. Their father apparently brought them along as cover: Just a middle-class family on vacation in Guatemala. G2 threw the captives in a white van and whisked them to the airport. I turned my attention elsewhere, assuming they would be flown to Guatemala City for trial. G2 also grabbed a Guatemalan air force reservist based in Puerto Barrios who served as the dopers' air traffic controller. We asked his commander to order him to the

base. As soon as the reservist realized his interrogators were G2, he turned ashen, then revealed everything. He said he directed the Colombians to a tiny airstrip at a nearby banana plantation, where they landed with 3,000 kilos of cocaine. The G2 men asked where the Colombians went the day they disappeared. They were at the plantation, he said, loading the kilos on the small train used to shuttle bananas to the port. Then, under cover of darkness, they loaded the coke onto small inflatable powerboats and shuttled it to the Daring.

We had enough evidence to search the ship. Randy and I convinced a local judge to sign a search warrant, then commandeered a small boat. The G2 men were behind us, ready to crack heads.

Two dozen feet shuffled over the deck as we inspected the ship, poking our heads into every hatch. The boat was something to behold. Someone had remodeled the former Canadian coast guard cutter drug lord style. Rich wood paneling covered the walls. In the mess, we found freezers crammed with beef and a refrigerator full of beer. We heard voices. Two or three Americans stood near the bow, turning meat on a barbecue and swigging beer. "Narcotics agents," I barked in English, holding up the search warrant. They looked at me, dumbstruck, as the G2 troops took them into custody and rounded up their cohorts.

I could not believe how gently the troops treated the six Americans and one Canadian on board. They were a models of restraint, snapping on handcuffs and sitting their captives down without the aid of a gun butt. I know they were tempted to resort to their tried - and - true techniques when the norte americanos said they knew nothing about any cocaine. We started searching.

Randy, an expert at finding hidden drugs, soon reached his frustration threshold. He could not find the cocaine anywhere. Back on shore, the dopers were deep into negotiations with G2. The Colombians promised to tell them where they hid the cocaine, as long as G2 agreed to turn around and sell it back to them. The G2 officers were not accustomed to negotiating, especially with dopers. One of the officers later told me the Colombians were desperate to make a deal: "I'll have $5 million for you - - just let me make a phone call. " The G2 officers consulted briefly, then agreed.

While Randy and I hunted for the hidden kilos, the G2 troops emerged with the Mexican trafficker in tow. He had obviously received the full treatment. He was stripped to his underwear, hogtied, bruised, and blindfolded. When they untied him, the Mexican rubbed his wrists for a minute, flinching every time anyone moved toward him. He led us into the hold and pointed to the spot where they bolted the cocaine into the ship's thick skin. One of the G2 men unbolted a 3 -foot square sheet of steel. We peered into the dark space with flashlights. Nylon bags packed with cocaine lay piled between the metal skins.

The rest of the G2 force came aboard and gleefully stripped the boat clean, taking everything that wasn't nailed down. Before they could finish, a Guatemalan admiral from the Puerto Barrios naval station commandeered the

boat, ordering everything pad locked. This was his boat now.

As the admiral surveyed his new toy, we piled the coke in a on the top deck. It looked like the world's largest collection of leftovers. Every kilo was carefully packaged in a tupperware container marked "oro." Gold. I picked up a container and struggled with the wrapping. The cocaine was compressed it into a brick, then wrapped in two layers of plastic with coffee grounds in between to throw off drug sniffing dogs. A thick skin of duct tape encased the package before it was sealed in the watertight containers.

We counted 2,404 kilos, more than two and a half tons of cocaine. The air force reservist we interrogated assured us the Colombians delivered 3,000 kilos on the nose. Almost 600 kilos were missing. I returned to the Daring to look for the rest. The admiral blocked my path to the hold.

"Everything is out of there," he said with a hard stare.

"I just want to look, " I said.

"No. Everyone's getting off my boat now."

G2 delivered the cocaine to the Guardia de Hacienda in Guatemala City. In the papers, the Guardia de Hacienda

received the credit for the Puerto Barrios bust, although they knew nothing about it before the cocaine appeared at their doorstep. G2 hated media attention.

Oscar Diaz took custody of the cocaine and happily burned it, tupperware and all. They checked every other container to make sure nobody tampered with the contraband between Puerto Barrios and Guatemala City. Amazingly, all the cocaine we found was still there.

For DEA, the Puerto Barrios raid was the largest bust ever in Central America. It was the fifth largest seizure in the world involving U. S. federal agents. It was also the first time since I had come to Central America that all the pieces fell together as they were supposed to. The bad guys were arrested; the drugs were seized; the good guys sent it up in smoke. As it turned out, the bust saved Stia's ass. He was suddenly a DEA hero, the brains behind a breakthrough seizure in Central America. The bust helped me as well. Some of the clouds hanging over me from the Contra investigation cleared. I thought I was out of the doghouse.

But in my mind, Puerto Barrios was not a complete success. In the aftermath of the raid, I learned of a dark secret the newspapers never discovered. As I prepared to leave Puerto Barrios that Sunday, a G2 lieutenant known as El Raton debriefed me. I never learned his real name - - G2 preferred aliases. El Raton told me they allowed one of the Colombians to place a phone call to his cartel bosses.

"A few hours later, a Learjet flew in with $5 million in cash from Medellin," he said, his eyes widening with the word 6 6cash. "

G2, he said, promptly took the cash and the plane, raped the Mexican trafficker's daughters, then killed everyone. He described the carnage almost proudly, like a boss describing a job well done by his employees. The dismembered bodies, sealed in weighted 55-gallon drums, were dumped into the ocean. A couple of days later, the Colombians' car would be discovered at the Mexican border, planted to make it appear the dopers fled into Mexico.

I did not want to believe G2 slaughtered the traffickers, but long experience told me El Raton was telling the truth. The TV confirmed it. In the following weeks, I saw heart -wrenching ads on Guatemalan television. The traffickers' families appeared on the screen, pleading for the bodies of their loved ones. Their anguished faces interrupted the deodorant commercials and the daytime dramas for a few weeks, then disappeared.

On October 17, a sullen Garcia de Paz traveled to Costa Rica. He had a lot of explaining to do. The cartel wanted to know what happened to their product and their people. The G2 wiretaps picked up the conversation and called me immediately to pass on the news: Pablo Escobar himself was flying in to meet with Garcia de Paz and other cartel -corrupted government officials. The cocaine king was holding court.

G2's moles in Costa Rica called after the meeting to report their second-hand summary of Escobar's inquest. A furious Escobar held Garcia de Paz responsible for allowing the debacle at Puerto Barrios. Escobar paid a lot of protection money for that load. Someone was going to pay for this outrage.

When he returned to Colombia, Escobar sent a hit squad to assassinate anyone involved in the operation. I presumed that included me. As usual, G2 knew about it soon after the order left Escobar's lips. When the would-be assassins arrived in Guatemala, G2 hunted them one by one, leaving a lone survivor to give the boss all the gory details. It was their custom.

In July, after clicking off the Iran-Contra hearings in the middle of Oliver North's testimony, I picked up bits and pieces from the newspapers. The Congressional committees pulled witness after witness to the table, promising them immunity in exchange for their individual versions of the tangled events. North insisted he raised money for the Contras and guided the resupply operation with Poindexter's approval. Poindexter testified the buck stopped with him: He did not tell President Reagan that profits from the Iranian arms sales were used to help the Contras.

As the hearings wrapped up that summer, I slipped into despair. Poindexter's dramatic testimony in July drove Kerry's narcotics hearings to the back pages. Kerry's subcommittee hearings were overshadowed by Iran-Contra. When The New York Times ducked into the Dirksen Senate Office Building in Washington to cover Morales' testimony, the paper all but wrote off the speedboat smuggler's allegations of a Contra drug

smuggling tie: "The charges have not been verified by any other people and have been vigorously denied by several Government agencies. " The third secret slipped out of the political spotlight as quickly as it appeared.

While the nation waited though the summer and fall of 1987 for the committees' final report, I received a call which told me the issue was far from dead.

On October 22, the call came in from DEA headquarters. A woman in our Freedom Of Information department asked me to keep the file on the Contras open. I was puzzled. For months, the DEA brass urged me to close those files and bury them. The woman explained: If the file remained open, Walsh's Iran - Contra investigators could be denied access to my reports under the Freedom of Information Act.

I was tom between complying and telling her to go to hell. After a moment of twitching between the two, I agreed to keep the file open. I wanted to keep my job. And I was not ready to close the book on the Contras yet.

The slaughter at Puerto Barrios should have been an aberration. When I returned to busting everyday traffickers, I learned it was the standard in Guatemala.

In the first weeks of 1988, 1 hopped from informant to informant, gathering enough names and numbers to keep me busy for months. After Puerto Barrios, I wanted to distance myself from G2. I preferred to work with Oscar Diaz and his Guardia de Hacienda, but the the spheres of influence were clearly marked: The Guardia helped with eradication and small raids. For large busts, the embassy wanted me to work with G2, who had the manpower, the money, and the power.

It was a terrible mistake.

I started at the bottom, meeting with small Guatemalan and Colombian cocaine suppliers looking for a Guatemalan buyer. They formed the conduit between the Colombian cocaine factories and the American consumers, using Central America as a sort of narcotics autobahn. If I busted enough of them, I knew they could give me enough evidence to build cases against the cartels. Few lived long enough to give me any information.

Every few weeks, I arranged a meeting with a doper, then called my G2 contacts to give them the time and place. The G2 commanders took down the information, thanked me, then promptly jumped the traffickers on their way to the rendezvous.

The first few times it happened, I found myself waiting at the meeting place like a confused tourist, checking my watch every few minutes as the scheduled meeting time drifted further and further behind the minute hand.

In January, 1988, 1 called G2 to pass along an informant's tip about a

Colombian drug plane scheduled to land on a clandestine airstrip outside Guatemala City. The next day, the Colombians were found shot to death near the burned-out remains of their plane. G2 blamed the killings on the guerrillas. I knew better. I described the incident in my next report, shaking my head in disbelief . Six months later, on July 20, 1 gave them another tip, this time about a local judge - lawyer team who offered to sell me cocaine seized by the government. The next day, both were kidnapped and found dead. G2 told me the two got what they deserved. This isn't drug enforcement, I thought. It's a massacre.

The dopers were usually dumped on the streets, their blood - smeared faces gaping sightlessly as people hustled past the stiffening corpses. When I confronted the G2 commanders, they brazenly admitted to the murders. They made no effort to lie or conceal their grisly work. They were the predators here, roaming the streets with no natural enemies. When I insisted they stop ambushing my busts, they simply changed techniques. On the next bust, they staked out the meeting spot as planned, but when the dopers showed up, the G2 stormtroopers wrestled them into the trunk of a car and screeched away. I stood rooted to the spot for ten minutes, dumbfounded. They returned a short time later. The traficantes, they said coldly, had been eliminated.

With every killing, G2 took stacks of cash and bags of cocaine. In a faint nod to the law, they usually turned over a portion of the confiscated dope to beef up the country's drug war numbers. They sold the rest, or saved it to frame future victims.

Noe could sense something was wrong. She prodded me gently for the reason for my deepening gloom. She wanted to know why I was so distant, why we slept together less and less, why I spent my evenings in front of the television, if I came home

at all. She wanted to reach out. I recoiled. I tossed her the same answer every time: It's better if you don't know. I did not want her to worry, and if someone snatched her from the streets, anything I told her about my work could put her in greater danger.

I tried to keep my distance from the carnage. Then, in a tiny shack under a bridge, G2 dragged me into their nightmare.

My target was a high -level leftist politician from a small village near the Salvadoran border. He and his Guatemalan associates made arrangements for a group of Colombians to deliver 10 kilos of cocaine in front of a supermarket near Aurora. I almost choked when they gave me the location. I shopped at the Paiz supermarket regularly. The place was also a favorite with embassy staffers. I would have preferred another spot, but I hoped the high-profile location would keep the G2 operatives honest. With enough American eyes around, I felt certain they would follow procedure for once.

The operatives lingered around the front of the supermarket in street clothes, their eyes narrowing as the politico strolled up the sidewalk flanked

by four men. The politician pumped my hand and flashed a polished smile as he checked his watch. The Colombians were due any minute with the cocaine. He did not bother making introductions - - not that it mattered. I could see the G2 team collecting behind them, reaching for their pistols. The action caught the attention of several shoppers, who lingered near the door to watch. I recognized a few embassy personnel among the onlookers. The nervous Guatemalans followed my eyes, turning just as a blanket of men jumped them.

I winced as they brought the butts of their guns down on the mens' heads with a crack, right in front of the wide - eyed embassy people. A white panel van appeared a moment later, spilling G2 troops from its back doors.

I helped them load the dopers into the van. As I pushed the last one inside, I heard the doors shut with a metallic clang. Before I could protest, the driver shifted into gear and hit the accelerator.

Shit. The last place on earth I wanted to be was in that van. The commanding officer sensed my discomfort and assured me they were merely taking the Guatemalans in for questioning. The captives sat quietly, knowing a stray word could bring another crushing gun butt. I peered through the windshield every time the van turned. If the G2 officer planned to take these men to jail, they

were going the wrong direction.

The driver jerked the wheel, jumping the front tires onto a dirt road. He stopped the van momentarily while two uniformed G2 men scrambled out to stand guard. The road dropped into a ravine, its rocky walls filling the windshield as we descended. I knew this neighborhood. The bridge stretching over the ravine led to a posh neighborhood popular among Guatemalan military officers. This was a G2 nest.

The road curved under the bridge, where the overpass created a cave like gloom. As the van ground to a halt, I could see the faint outline of two small structures in the fading light. Two G2 men silently pushed open the van's back doors as their comrades shoved the prisoners headlong into the dirt, then picked them up roughly and pointed them toward the darkened structures.

Another white van and several jeeps and pickup trucks were parked haphazardly around two wooden shacks. Several men sat in the back of the other van, looking uneasily at the gun barrels pointed at them. The Colombians. The G2 troops ordered them out of the van and lined them up with the Guatemalans. They pulled five from the line: All three Colombians, the Guatemalan politician, and one of his lieutenants. The G2 men filed inside with their captives, followed by the commander and me. We barely fit. As I inspected the inside of the barren shack, a familiar smell filled my nostrils. My eyes adjusted to the dim interior, confirming what my nose did not want to acknowledge. Dark, rusty streaks and spatters covered the rough walls. Blood.

The captives smelled death. A low moan escaped one man's throat, then rose to a grunt as his captors ripped his shirt open, spraying buttons like

bird shot. A few minutes later, the five men crouched naked in the center of the hut, their pleading eyes searching for a sympathetic face. I stared at the floor, afraid to look at them. The interrogation began.

The G2 squad took turns shouting questions at the cowering men, demanding the names of others in the politician's left- wing brood, the address of the place where they kept their cocaine, and where they hid their drug money. They punctuated each question with a two-by-four. At first, the dopers tried to take it. They clenched their teeth, their jaw muscles straining to hold back the screams. The board cracked ribs and arms, then the men cracked,

blurting out names, phone numbers, addresses. A G2 agent with a notebook jotted everything down as calmly as if he were taking notes in class. A half dozen of his comrades crouched along the walls like spectators at a grisly play. The door opened again. A young soldier carried a metal bucket filled with water in one hand, and in the other, a black length of rubber cut from a car innertube.

The G2 torturers turned their rage on the politician and his companion, beating them mercilessly. They pulled the politician to his knees, a bare flashlight beam turning his face into an anguished mask. The lead interrogator wrapped the black strip around his head and pulled until his features emerged through the rubber. He twisted the rubber tighter, squeezing a muffled groan from the politician, then leaned toward suffocating man's ear and whispered, "You are going to die. " I could see the rubber cave in as the captive desperately tried to draw air. When his body went limp, the interrogator released the mask. The politician flopped to the ground, his chest heaving.

A pair of hands pushed the second man's head into the bucket until the water churned with bubbles. They yanked him up by the hair, splashing my feet. He coughed water from his lungs, then spit out every detail of the cocaine operation he could think of. It didn't matter. The interrogator pulled his head back and repeated the sentence: "You're going to die."

"But why? I'm telling you everything," the man wailed, terror pinching his voice into a childlike squeak.

The agent, a dark-skinned man with vaguely oriental features, said, "Because you're a coward."

The men realized their lives were about to come to a violent end. They pleaded: We have wives, families. The G2 squad continued the torture, asking more questions. Their victims ran out of answers.

From the comer of my eye, I saw a glint of steel.

The interrogator lifted the machete and brought the razor edge down across the politician's shoulder blade, opening his back. It looked like a scene from a slaughterhouse. The politician let out a long, anguished scream. "Mamacita linda, " he wailed, crying for a mother who could not hear. The blood sprayed the other men, driving home the certainty of their fate. Their eyes reflected a deep, profound horror. One of them immediately lost control of his bowels

and defecated on the dirt floor. The G2 men crouched along the walls jumped to their feet, enraged. They flattened him with a board, then grabbed his legs, dragging him through his own filth while one of the soldiers fished through his uniform for a pair of pliers. Locking the sobbing man's foot under his armpit, the soldier locked the pliers on the man's toe and ripped his toenails out, exposing pearly flesh which immediately welled blood.

After a half dozen turns with the mask, the politician stopped moaning. Blood oozed from his mouth, his eyes dim from loss of blood and lack of oxygen. His tormenter again pulled the mask tight around his face. Suddenly, his legs thrashed out from under him, his hands struggling against the smothering blackness. The rubber mask heaved twice, then smoothed as his body fell limp. Two plainclothes G2 silently dragged his body outside where others waited with razorsharp machetes and several empty steel drums. I followed them out, took one look at the semi-circle of amateur butchers, then quickly ducked back inside.

The second captive stopped fighting against the hands. His head collapsed into the bucket. The interrogator grabbed a clump of wet hair and pulled. He was dead, drowned in a couple gallons of water. Two more men rose and dragged him outside. When the door opened, the wet sound of steel on flesh drifted in with the warm air. I wondered if the remaining dopers locked up in the vehicles could see what awaited them.

I had seen enough. I pushed my way outside and told the captain I needed to get back to the supermarket for my car. A few of the men with the machetes were smoking and chatting. They were done with the politician, whose components lay scattered in the dirt like a dismantled mannequin. Others were hacking the second man apart by flashlight. The bodies would never be found .

The G2 officer whistled to one of his men and ordered him to drive me back to town. "You know, we only found one kilo when we took the Colombians, " he said as I pulled myself into the seat. "The deal was for 10 kilos," I snapped.

The officer shrugged, then turned to watch his men leisurely toss arms and legs into the steel barrels. He turned to face me again. "Do not tell anyone what you saw here. " It was not a request. It was a cold threat.

"Do you think anyone would ever believe me?" I asked. The motor roared to life.

On the way back to the grocery, the driver smiled. "We really took 10 kilos. We need the other nine to plant on other people. " He laughed at his commander for his little lie. G2 answered to no one.

Ten

Backlash

Guatemala City – 1988

After the Puerto Barrios bust, DEA rewarded us with more manpower in the form of agent Larry Holifield, whose slow Louisiana drawl disguised a quick mind, and agent Delphin Von Briesen Jr., a portly good old boy from Dallas. Larry immediately impressed me with his eagerness to learn the rhythms of Central America, despite his poor Spanish. Von Briesen, who everyone called Tuffy, was another story. He smothered his ignorance with a haughty attitude which set me instantly on edge. DEA, I thought, seemed intent on sending its Latin American offices a steady stream of mismatched agents.

Tuffy quickly alienated the locals, treating anyone who did not speak English as an inferior. He bulldozed his way through each day, an overweight, burr -haired giant in scuffed shoes and mismatched clothes. He barked at members of the Guardia de Hacienda and the National Police. Our informants complained he pretended to understand when he clearly did not follow. They did not trust him to get things right.

I tried to help them both to adjust as best I could. Larry branched out into Belize, a country we had virtually ignored, while Tuffy planted himself in Guatemala.

The arrival of two more bodies took some of the pressure off me. Unfortunately, I did not remember how to enjoy it. The stress weighed on me like layers of wet clothes: First, the Contras; then the G2 murders; then back-to-back investigations by my own agency. I knew from my encounter with Martsh OPR was watching, waiting for one misstep.

Instead of searching for some way to defuse the tension DEA surrounded me with, I buried myself deeper into my work, In addition to several major investigations, I worked countless small cases, playing my well - worn role in Guatemala City's bars and restaurants: Smile big; tell some jokes; gain their trust; seal the deal, then bust them. Move on to the next one. Often I worked until 2 a.m., dragged myself through the front door, then slipped into bed next to a sleeping Noe. She no longer waited up for me.

Noe told me I was killing myself for an ungrateful agency. I stopped listening. I did not want to hear the truth, particularly from my wife. For months, I drifted away from her, feeling the emotions that built our marriage

crumble under the weight of a burden I could not voice to her. We did not talk much anymore I began sleeping in the guest bedroom. Somewhere along the way, I stopped thinking of Noe as my wife, instead seeing her as the mother of my children.

After our El Salvador embassy declared the country forbid den ground, I was home more, but not as a father and a husband. After seven years of adrenaline overloads, I saw myself as the protector. I could never relax, not even during my son's second birthday party on September 19, 1987. We invited our friends from the embassy and barbecued while the kids whacked at a pinata. I bought C4 a pint sized bike with training wheels, which he mounted and zoomed off with Ana scrambling behind. She tracked him like a bloodhound, the portable alarm button in her hand. When an alarm sounded anywhere on the street, every guard in the neighborhood scrambled toward the sound, guns drawn. I hated knowing we could never let him play alone. I wondered what Guatemala was doing to him and to Crystal. I began to wonder if I could ever slow down and enjoy their childhood with them.

,,You're losing your family because of your job, " Noe told me. It turned out to be a prophetic statement. I mumbled some pathetic reply. I had a job to do.

By early 1988, my job seemed more at risk than ever. A letter arrived on April 7 from Richard G. Smith, chairman of DEA's Board of Professional Conduct. The board wanted to suspend me for five days for two charges of improper conduct. The first was improper association with a cooperating individual. Aparecio. The letter quoted passages from my statements to Marsh, including my admission that Aparecio and I loaned each other money for the FUCA unit's operational expenses. I was also admonished for staying overnight at Aparecio's house on numerous occasions, also a violation of the agency's "no social contact" rule.

The second charge surprised me: Possession of an unauthorized weapon; specifically, a Colt AR - 15 rifle I bought in New York and brought to Guatemala. No argument there. But the AR15 was not on the list of DEA's authorized shoulder weapons.

The charges amazed me. Somewhere between Washington and the front lines, the rules often became counterproductive. I trusted Aparecio with my life. How could I avoid becoming friends with him? The weapons charge was even more ridiculous. I was a decorated Vietnam veteran. I would gladly prove my skill with an AR - 15 on the firing range.

Someone wanted to send me a message. After back-to -back investigations, I knew the backlash would follow sooner or later.

I typed my response, explaining my side of the story. The loans were for operations, not personal use. I stayed at Aparecio's house during the Contra investigation because I honestly felt safer there than at some hotel.

A DEA bureaucrat wrote back with the agency's ruling.

They dropped the weapons charge, but the improper association charge would stand. The suspension was reduced to three days, beginning August 1. 1 appealed it all the way to Administrator John Lawn's office, but Lawn sustained the suspension with a terse letter: My decision is final. I spent the first three days of August at home, brooding as Noe tried in vain to cheer me up. I was beyond consolation.

Aparecio felt the whip too. The national police, at the request of the embassy, stripped him of his advisor credentials, which cut him off from the FUCA unit he helped build. He remained a DEA informant. The embassy controlled our advisors, but they could not interfere with our informants.

Our FUCA recruits were bewildered when Aparecio said his goodbyes. They could not understand why the U.S. government gave them mentors, then yanked them away. The year before, Dr. Regalado was fired after Corr discovered he was on the U.S. government's blacklist of human rights violators. When Corr realized Regalado was giving shooting lessons to the FUCA unit,

he chewed me out and demanded I get rid of Regalado. I had not seen El Doctor in months. By August, 1988, Corr's term ran out and he left too, probably glad to escape the madness. I wondered how long I could last.

Stia tried to help. Two weeks before my suspension, Stia typed out a recommendation for my promotion from a level 12 agent to level 13. He included the highlights of my DEA career, including the Puerto Barrios bust, then brushed off the suspension, writing: "The charge is technical and nebulous and depend ing on the judgement (sic) of the Board could have been decided either way. These charges were brought about by S/A Castillo's having to work all alone under very adverse and dangerous conditions in a country tom apart with war and insurrectionism (sic) ... His dedication to DEA's mission under those conditions should be lauded by DEA Headquarters ... Instead of recognition for these efforts he was disciplined. "

The high-pitched buzz reached the G2 team's ears before the Cessna broke through the clouds. They followed the plane's downward trajectory, gripping their weapons tight in anticipation. On board, the Colombian pilot carried 356 kilos of high grade cocaine. If he hurried, he could drop the load, refuel, and get back to Colombia before dark. He spotted his destination, an out-of -the way airstrip the local crop dusters grudgingly shared with cartel pilots, and swooped low over Guatemala's flat coastal plain.

The G2 team was waiting at the airstrip. I was waiting next to the radio at the military base in Pueblo Nuevo Tiquisate, three miles away. When Larry, Tuffy, and I arrived with a new agent on TDY from Miami, G2 handed us a radio and ordered us to stay at the base until they called. Close to 30 of them piled into trucks and set out to meet the drug plane.

I closed my eyes and thought about the blood-stained shacks. Not again, I thought. It can't happen again.

After the grisly scene under the bridge, I tried quietly shifting my alliance to the Guardia de Hacienda and the national police, but every time we set up a bust, G2 showed up. Their wiretaps obviously were not limited to the dopers' phones. No one could cough in Guatemala without G2 hearing.

The fact that dopers were showing up dead after I gave their names to G2 did not impress my superiors. "The embassy wants us to work strictly with G2, " Stia said after I reported the first killings. He was not about to argue with policy.

I tried taking my concerns to Ambassador Alberto Martinez Piedra, who agreed to a meeting. Piedra, a short, smooth -talking Cuban-American who was on his way out when the killings began, seemed mildly irritated after hearing my story, although I could not tell if he was angry at G2 for executing traffickers or annoyed with me for bringing it up.

"Did you see them killed?"

"No. " I lied. I knew if I admitted witnessing anything like this, I would be kicked out of the country. My presence under the bridge broke every rule in the book, the least of which being the regulations forbidding DEA agents from participating in arrests and interrogations. I felt certain witnessing a foreign military force murdering civilians was probably against DEA rules as well. Washington was watching. I was not about to give them more ammunition.

Piedras complained to the CIA, who complained to G2, with little effect. The killings continued.

Whenever we opened a big case in Guatemala, the ambassador seemed to forget our conversation. Despite my earlier protests, he ordered us to continue working with G2, who the U.S. government had begun referring to as " D2. "

Now here we were, sitting in our Toyota four - wheel - drive at the military base, watching the drug plane drop below the treeline and into the G2 team's jaws.

After a few long minutes, the radio crackled to life. They were ready for us. I had to give them credit for efficiency. The G2 men were cleaning up when we arrived a few minutes later. While part of their force apprehended the pilot, the rest ambushed the Colombians en route to the airstrip.

The Colombians, squatting on the floor of a hangar under a manned guard, looked like the losers of a whiskey brawl. The G2 guards told me to take my three companions to the other side of the hangar. I thought they were going to kill them right there. As We watched, they tossed their prisoners into the trunks of various cars and sped off toward the base, leaving us to unload the nylon bags of cocaine from the Cessna. When we caught up with them

at the base, only three prisoners remained. El Raton walked up to us with a

smile. The two missing prisoners, he said, had been executed.

By the end of 19 8 8, 1 realized how hopelessly tangled DEA, the CIA, and every other U.S. entity in Central America had become with the criminals. The lines that should have defined our ethical boundaries were stepped over and scuffed until they melted into nothingness. The Piper Co. in Guatemala City served as a perfect case study of how friends and enemies fuse together from sheer convenience.

Endnote coming to support this statement. G2 knew Gregorio Valdez had branched into drugs, as did many of our informants. Valdez, the young, Polo-clad owner of Piper, threw the best parties in town. His company, with its stockpile of planes and pilots, lived off CIA and DEA contracts. To show his appreciation, Valdez frequently filled his office with hookers and dancers, then invited his friends at the CIA, DEA, and the embassy over for booze-drenched parties.

The connections boggled my mind. I needed a flow chart to keep track of all the paths crossing at Piper. Among Valdez's flock of pilots were El Coyote, Reina's smuggler- informant, and several others who popped up in our computer as documented traffickers. Naturally, at least two of them - - Eduardo Ruiz and a pilot called "El Negro" Alvarado - - flew for the Contras before North pulled the plug on the resupply operation. The CIA frequently hired his pilots and hangars at Aurora airport. DEA stored helicopters there and used his planes exclusively until P6rez and Stia purchased their plane, which was also stored at Piper.

When I ran Valdez's name in the computer, I found a case already open on him for financing a drug operation. I wondered why a man with such a solid lock on success would risk his business and reputation by working for the dopers. His father, who built the company and handed it down to his son, was a member of the respected elite. Valdez made good money from his legitimate contracts with the U.S. government.

But after a few days of surveillance, it was obvious Valdez wanted more. He was preparing to run a load of cocaine to Miami for the Colombians. When Larry and I confronted him with our evidence, he confessed immediately and signed a statement outlining his involvement with the cartel. Valdez said he was just in it for the thrill. Naturally, when I told Stia and the CIA we were renting documented drug pilots from a man who just admitted his ties with the cartels, nobody blinked. The CIA and DEA continued giving Valdez their business, and he continued giving us wild parties lasting until the wee hours. The lines were gone.

What the hell are we doing here? The question surfaced more and more as the locals manipulated us to settle scores, the traffickers used us to eliminate their competition, and the politicians coddled us to keep U.S. aid flowing.

In December, 1988, General Adolfo Bland6n, the head of)~l Salvador's

military chiefs of staff, dragged us into a political power struggle. As the military's inner circle prepared to choose Someone for a cabinet position, Blandon decided to sic DEA on his Chief rival, General Bustillo.

Blandon invited Stia and me to his home for a quiet luncheon. Elmore was there, with a colonel from the MilGroup. Blandon wasted no time getting to the point: He had evidence an officer at Ilopango was involved in cocaine smuggling. He Wanted DEA to start an undercover investigation. Stia looked at me. I could tell what he was thinking: Get ready to go back into $1 Salvador, Cele.

I knew the officer's name well. Hugo mentioned it several times in his Contra reports. Hugo watched the suitcases pass between the Contra planes and the officer's Ilopango office for ~ while, then asked the pilots what they were carrying. They answered openly: The suitcases held cash and cocaine. Of course, ~hat was no revelation at Ilopango. Aparecio said his buddies in ~he Salvadoran air force knew about the officer's connection with $he Colombians and the Contras.

Stia agreed to put me on the case, much to my chagrin. We should have nailed Bustillo's people two years earlier on drug running charges, but the general's support for the Contras made him untouchable. Obviously, Bustillo's sacred-cow designation disappeared after the Hasenfus plane went down. Blandon certainly saw the opportunity to exploit his rival's lost stature. He anted the investigation kept quiet, but everyone knew how the military's inner circle would react when they inevitably

discovered one of Bustillo's men was the subject of a drug investigation. When word of our probe leaked to Bustillo, he flew into a rage, asking how the U.S. government could stab him in the back after what he did for the Contras. Our investigation ended before it could begin. But it was too late for Bustillo. Blandon got the cabinet post.

Omar Pira- Palma pushed open the door of the steakhouse in Guatemala City and found me in a booth along the wall. The young, flashy strawberry baron and businessman seemed nervous without a phalanx of guards around him. Good. When I asked him to meet me the day before, I told him to leave his goons at home. A member of his own family had turned on Pira- Palma, revealing he was using his personal armada of boats and planes to shuttle drugs into the United States for the Cali cartel. By the end of our lunch meeting, I would know whether Pira-Palma wanted to go to jail, or cooperate and help me gather evidence against the cartel.

I put on my best bad cop face and raked Pira- Palma with the evidence we had against him. When I told him his trafficking activities were listed in detail in our computer, Pira-Palma started sobbing. Losing his visa for drug trafficking seemed to alarm him more than the thought of going to jail. He immediately tried to strike a deal: "How about if I give you 1,000 kilos right now?" The cartel delivered the cocaine some time ago, he said, and he knew where it was stored. I was interested. A thousand kilos would put a good kink

in the cartel's bottom line that month.

"Let's see what you got," I replied.

The next day, Pira-Palma and I drove to Antigua Guatemala, an ancient city in the shadows of Guatemala's volcanoes. Guiding me to a small house in downtown Antigua, Pira-Palma took me to the front gate and pointed to a gasoline tanker truck parked within the concrete walls. The cocaine, he said, was inside. I could not go in without a search warrant or backup, so I rushed back to Guatemala City to give Stia the details.

Two days later, the quiet neighborhood looked like a war zone. A DEA helicopter circled overhead while two dozen Guardia de Hacienda lurched up to the front gate in pickups. For

once, Stia agreed to let us call in the Guardia: Pira-Palma refused to cooperate if G2 was involved. I watched the Guardia bash through the front gate, then emerge a few minutes later with an old woman and a cluster of frightened kids, who were released after they convinced the Guardia they knew nothing about any drugs.

After rounding up such a conspicuous display of firepower, I prayed the cocaine was where Pira- Palma said it would be. It looked like half the city was there, huddled across from the front gate for a peek inside. I heard excited voices from around the tanker. They had found the cocaine. The Guardia pulled 1,000 kilos from the tanker's empty belly, just a fraction of the coke Pira-Palma already smuggled for the cartel.

Pira -Palma agreed to cooperate, and sat down with me to explain how his system worked. It was ridiculously easy, he boasted. Sometimes, he used the cartels' planes to fly in the cocaine. He packed it into boats. He hired drivers to take over the Texas border in loads of towels. He even stuffed it in boxes and shipped it by air freight. Anyone with a taste for money and a little ingenuity could join the game. The powder flowed through America's porous border like sand through a seive.

Back in Washington, the Senate Subcommittee on Terrorism, Narcotics and International Operations was reaching the same conclusion. After two years of witnesses, subpoenas, and stonewalling by government agencies, Sen. Kerry's subcommittee wrapped up its hearings at the end of 1988. The Subcommittee believes that this investigation has demonstrated that the drug cartels pose a continuing threat to national security at home and abroad, and that the United States has too often in the past allowed other foreign policy objectives to interfere with the war on drugs," the senators wrote.

The report contained a virtual roadmap of the connections between drug traffickers and the Contra operation. Unfortunately, many of their star witnesses were convicted felons like Morales, whose credibility came under scrutiny in the media. To this day, I wonder why they failed to call someone from DEA's Central American posts to testify.

Kerry's subcommittee never became more than an Iran Contra sideshow. The country's attention remained fixed on the fates of North, Poindexter, and Robert McFarlane, Poindexter's

predecessor, who were all indicted in March, 1988, for their role in Iran-Contra and the subsequent cover-up. Also indicted were Secord and his business partner, Albert Hakim, who each sucked about $1.5 million from the Contra gravy train while serving as the Contras' chief arms brokers.

The subcommittee released the report in the middle of North's highly publicized Washington trial. The media paid little attention. The New York Times buried the story on page 8. Washington Post readers had to dig back to page 20 for a summary of the report, which highlighted the political bickering between Kerry and Sen. Mitch McConnell, the ranking Republican on the subcommittee. A belligerent McConnell boycotted Kerry's press conference, calling parts of the report "one - dimensional or one sided. " While America waited for the jury to decide North's guilt or innocence, the Contra drug scandal quietly died.

Pira-Palma called constantly to update me on the fallout from our 1,000-kilo seizure. To verify their cocaine was gone, the Cali cartel wanted Pira- Palma to send newspaper reports of the raid. Pira-Palma sent them the stories for their scrapbooks, then played dumb when they demanded to know how DEA sniffed out the cocaine in the red tanker. We had a goldmine, someone who could give us the names of the Cali's operatives throughout Central America. The roller coaster was lurching up again, carrying me out of my stress -induced gloom. But before I could gather momentum, a phone call in August, 1989, sent me plunging back into the darkness. The embassy wanted information on Col. Moran.

Moran's name had slipped out of my short-term memory, pushed away by the names and dates and events of the past two years. I had not heard a peep from the colonel since the day G2 yanked him off the Puerto Barrios investigation in 1987. The mere mention of his name made my skin crawl. After his security breach at Puerto Barrios, it was obvious Moran was part of Garcia de Paz's cocaine clique.

Months after Puerto Barrios, an immigration officer at Aurora arrested one of Moran's lieutenants slipping a suitcase full of cocaine on an Aviateca flight. The officer claimed Moran

frequently ordered him to stash cocaine on commercial planes, and then Moran arranged for the bags to slip past Customs. When the airport officials called in the national police, Moran tried to pin the blame on two American tourists. But the lieutenant wilted under interrogation, ensuring Moran's airport exploits would be added to his DEA file. But Moran's stature shielded him from criminal prosecution. Nobody was going to testify against him.

Now I learned the State Department had discovered the black marks on

Moran's record and denied his request for a visa, snuffing his plans to travel to the States for military training. Moran complained to President Cerezo, who called the embassy, demanding an explanation. When Ambassador James Michel, newly posted to Guatemala, called looking for everything we had on Moran, I typed out a summary of DEA's encounters with the colonel, including his Aviateca smuggling game and the leaks in the early stages of the Puerto Barrios case. The ambassador sent a copy to Cerezo. A few days later, my phone rang.

"I want you to meet me at the El Dorado," Moran said. "Right now. "

I answered almost reflexively: "Okay. I'll be there in fifteen minutes. "

Before I set the phone back in the cradle, I decided I was not going anywhere near the El Dorado. Moran's voice sounded pinched, angry. I knew my name did not appear anywhere on the memo the ambassador sent to Cerezo, but the edge in Moran's voice told me he figured out the source.

After half an hour, the phone rang again. I reluctantly picked it up.

"Where the hell are you?" Moran demanded.

"I've been told not to have any contact with you, " I said, making things up as I went.

The line was silent for a moment, then Moran lowered his voice an octave and continued.

"Why did you give that letter to the president accusing me of those things?" he asked.

"Did you see my name on it?"

"No, but everything in there, you were involved in."

"I did not give that letter to the president," I shot back.

Moran was seething. "You have ruined my military career, " he hissed. "And you will answer to me later. "

I hung up with the threat lingering in the air. I thought back to the lieutenant arrested at the airport with the coke-filled suitcase. Soon after, the immigration official who apprehended the lieutenant was found shot to death. One of the national police agents involved in the investigation was also shot, but survived. They're biting back, I thought. That month, Danillo Barillas, a prominent Christian Democrat, was assassinated by unidentified gunmen when rumors circulated he was about to reveal narcotraffickers had penetrated the party. I could easily be next.

On September 13, 1989, Larry and I walked into Guatemala's presidential

palace and handed $10,000 worth of quetzales to Col. Francisco Ortega, the commander of G2.

The cash came from Pira-Palma, who wanted so desperately to distance himself from the cartel that when they gave him $ 10, 000 expense money for the next shipment, he dumped it on my desk and asked me to give it to G2. Pira-Palma wanted protection in case the cartel discovered his betrayal, and he knew a monetary tribute to G2 was the best way to keep the Colombians at bay. Stia had no objections to giving the cash to G2. He considered it a reward for their help with our drug cases.

When I turned the money over to Stia, he asked Tuffy to stash it in the office safe.

"Do you want me to write a report on it?" I asked Stia. It was procedure to report any drug money seized.

"No, I'll take care of it," Stia replied. I returned to my desk, glad to have one less piece of paper to worry about.

Pira-Palma did not trust anyone. He insisted on meeting Stia in front of the embassy to make sure the money reached its destination. "You got the money, right?" Pira-Palma asked. "Yeah, we got the $10,000. It's in the office," Stia said. Pira-Palma looked satisfied.

The money sat in the safe for several months. After repeatedly asking Stia to file a report on the cash, I gave up and wrote it myself. By then, the dollars were gone, replaced by quetzales, the local currency. Stia dipped into the safe before his vacation to Europe, insisting he needed dollars for the trip. G2 would not know the difference.

When Larry and I gave the money to Col. Ortega, he assured us the money would be put to good use. New machetes, colonel? I thought contemptuously. With our errand done, I was glad to wash my hands of the cash. But the incident would come back to haunt me.

In December, three months after his thinly- veiled threat on my life, Moran sat in his office, explaining how he planned to repay me for ruining his career. He did not want to have me killed in Guatemala, where suspicion could fall on him. During one of my trips to El Salvador, Moran told the man sitting across from him, I would be ambushed on the highway. When my body was found, the murder would be blamed on the Salvadoran guerrillas.

The man listening to Moran's plot was a DEA informant from Houston, a Guatemalan whose concealed microphone picked up every word. He arranged the meeting to set up Moran. The informant wanted to arrange a cocaine delivery with the colonel. Instead, Moran launched into his plot to murder me. When the informant took the tape to his contacts at the Houston DEA office, an agent called immediately to tell me about Moran's threat.

When I received copies of the tapes, I listened to Moran's menacing voice slowly spelling out my fate. I was slowly coming unhinged. After watching so many men die, the image of my own death had never seemed so real. I had to get out of Central America. I thought DEA would reassign me immediately, given the seriousness of the threat and the solid evidence backing it up. I waited for action from Washington, who responded with a disquieting silence.

When I took Noe and the kids home to McAllen for the holidays, I made an appointment with Armando Ramirez of DEA's Brownsville office. Noe and I met him for dinner, and for half an hour I sat stiffly next to my wife and sketched the details of my predicament in Guatemala, finishing with Moran's taped assassination plot. I wanted to come back to the Valley, and I needed Ramirez's help. I could almost feel Noe's excitement when Ramirez told me he had a position open in Brownsville, then

promised to send his recommendation to headquarters. In the weeks ahead, I clung to that promise like a life preserver. I did not tell Ramirez my sanity and my marriage depended on it.

My parents knew something was wrong as we sat down to Christmas dinner at their house. Noe and I were not talking much. They could feel the tension, and I caught a few nervous glances passing between them. My mother took me aside and asked what was wrong. I pressed my lips together, holding back the words trying to burst through: Noe and I haven't slept together in more than a year. I'm so busy trying to stay alive I can't think straight, and I don't know what to do.

I pushed the jumbled thoughts aside and mumbled, "We're okay, mom."

When we returned to Guatemala, I dipped into my savings to hire two more guards for the house. I told Ana to keep the kids inside. Our "home" became a maximum security prison. I gave Noe a .22 pistol to carry in the car and lectured her on how to protect herself while driving. Everywhere Noe went, she carried a hand -held radio with a direct frequency to the embassy.

Stia walked into the office shortly after my return with another assignment. Newly-elected Salvadoran President Alfredo Cristiani, a member of D'Aubisson's ARENA party, wanted DEA's help. Cristiani suspected military officers were seizing weapons from the guerrillas, then selling them to the cartels. Stia asked when I could start an investigation. I bolted from my chair, feeling the blood rush to my head.

"What the hell are you talking about? Don't you remember what Moran said on that tape? The next time I set foot in El Salvador, he's going to have me whacked," I said, my voice rising in the small room.

Stia said he remembered the tape. Nobody else could work El Salvador, he added firmly.

Now I know how Jimmy Hoffa felt before they grabbed him, I thought grimly as I pushed the car toward the Salvadoran border. I scoured every inch of highway 8 between Guatemala City and San Salvador, pumping the accelerator at the slightest movement. Shrubs became crouching men. Tree branches were sniper rifles. I felt as if someone had painted a bullseye on the back

of my head. As I watched my back, I caught my own sunken eyes reflected back in the rearview mirror.

DEA could not spare another agent to back me up, despite the death threat. I drafted a woman from the FUCA unit to pose as my girlfriend during the undercover meetings with the middle man, while Aparecio and another FUCA recruit watched from nearby cars. I chose open -air restaurants so we could spot anyone suspicious approaching from the street. My nerves, stretched to the snapping point, tripped off my internal alarm whenever a bypasser glanced my way. I no longer trusted my instincts. I prayed Aparecio was watching carefully. While we watched for Moran's hit men, Moran was looking for other ways to strike.

On February 12, Stia appeared at my office door, looking solemn.

"Cele, Moran just took off to Costa Rica to meet with OPR. They're going to try to do you again. "

I could not take much more of this. First Moran wants to kill me. Now he was meeting with our Gestapo.

"Goddamn," I muttered. "Again?"

"This time," Stia said, "they're trying to get you for murder. "

OPR called looking for the Puerto Barrios file. While I was in El Salvador, Stia took the file to Miami and met with the investigators, who repeated Moran's story. The colonel, Stia told me, accused me of executing the traffickers captured during the Puerto Barrios raid. Stia repeated to me the scenario Moran concocted: While the captives knelt in a row, Moran said I walked behind them, firing the tiro de gracia into the backs of their heads while declaring vengeance for another agent's murder.

I sat quietly, letting the story soak in. I could picture Moran spinning his tales to an eager OPR audience. A congress of vultures. I tried to laugh at the ridiculousness of it all. Instead, I braced myself for the next onslaught.

At the end of February, 1989, Stia finally typed a cable to Washington about Moran's death threat, a full two months after we received the tapes from the Houston office. I asked him why it took so long. Stia sounded defensive. "We had to verify everything. "

I exploded. "You had the fucking tapes right here!

Stia threw me an I'm -just- following -procedure shrug. I stalked out of the office, wondering if I could trust anyone anymore. When I pulled into the driveway that evening, I called to Noe and told her to start packing. We were getting the hell out of Guatemala.

Eleven

Post-Guatemalan Stress Disorder

Guatemala City - February, 1990

What was left of my marriage disintegrated during our hasty escape from Guatemala. While headquarters worked on how to react to Moran's death threat, I used up my savings and evacuated my family. On February 24, 1 drove Noe, Crystal, and C4 to the airport and put them on a plane to Texas. Noe and I did not talk much. I kissed her and said I would follow as soon as I could tie up a few loose ends.

First, I had to take care of Ana. During Moran's conversation with the DEA informant, he talked of grabbing our maid to squeeze her for information. If I left Ana behind, I was afraid Moran would turn his wrath on her. Ana watched, forlorn, as I packed my bags. I told her to stay put until the movers arrived, then I drove to the embassy to apply for a passport and a tourist visa for her. As soon as the visa was approved, she could stay in McAllen with Noe until we figured out what to do.

Ten days later, I joined Noe and the kids in the apartment she rented in McAllen. I tried spending a night with Noe, hoping the change in surroundings would spark a healing process. It was futile. The next day, I snapped my suitcase closed and trudged to my parents' house, where I slept in my old bed for the next week. Noe called several times to ask if we could talk things over. I let the opportunity slip by. I told her I had too many things on my mind.

I still believed I could straighten everything out. As soon as DEA approved my transfer to Brownsville, I could slow down, defuse, relax, then rebuild my marriage and my family. The agency crushed that faint hope with one phone call. A disembodied

voice from headquarters told me the only openings were in New York City or San Francisco. The Brownsville job, the voice said perfunctorily, was closed. I would be assigned to temporary duty in San Diego until they could figure out where to banish me. Noe, not surprisingly, decided to keep the apartment in McAllen and stay behind with the kids. It was over, and it was my fault.

The two suitcases I lugged aboard the plane for San Diego contained the remains of my life. I reported to the DEA office and tried to concentrate on the assignments they happily piled on me. My tension increased with the

workload. My kids, the two people in the entire world who truly made me happy, were hundreds of miles away. My marriage was over, and my career, the other pillar of my sanity, was shuddering badly.

Two weeks after I arrived, Stia called to inform me of OPR's latest move.

"Cele, my hands are tied. They're coming after you with both barrels."

"Why?" After being under OPR's microscope for three years, I wondered what they could possibly come up with next.

"Omar made some new allegations. "

Now what? First, Moran accused me of murder, now Pira- Palma was pouring more gas on OPR's bonfire. According to Stia, Pira-Palma told OPR he gave me $25,000, not $10,000, then claimed I skimmed the difference off the top. I took a deep breath, fuming at the lie. You can handle this, I told myself. I was confident I could counter Pira-Palma's accusations. He was an admitted trafficker with a grudge against me. Several friends warned me Pira-Palma wanted to humiliate me after our first meeting. When I made him break down in the restaurant, I stripped him of his machismo in public, a mortal sin to a Latin American man. He planned to return the favor by helping OPR strip me of my job.

DEA wanted more evidence against me. In early April, OP sent two agents to rifle through our house in Guatemala. A friend called one night to warn me about the search. "They found a whole bunch of shit in your house, and they're taking it to OPR, he said.

I quickly dialed the familiar phone number. As the line buzzed, I tried to organize my thoughts. Why would they search my house?

When Maria finally answered the phone, she sounded out of breath and upset.

"He forced me to unlock the closet," she said, breaking into a string of apologies. She was referring to my gun closet, where I stored my rifles, pistols, ammunition, and a handful of grenades I borrowed from FUCA after Moran's death threat. I kept the closet under lock and key so the kids could not stumble onto the weapons.

"Who forced you?" I interrupted.

"Senor Toofie. " She mangled the name, spitting it out like a curse. I mentally moved Tuffy on the enemies list. My friends list was almost empty. I told her to keep the house locked up tight until I returned to pack our belongings.

I hung up and dialed Stia's number, praying he was not involved as well. I needed answers. They had no right to enter my house. Even in Guatemala, you needed a warrant to search a residence. Someone wanted to set me up. When Stia picked up, I heard my voice rise sharply.

"Who gave the order to search my place?"

Stia said the search order came from Anthony Ricevuto, one of OPR's senior inspectors. Another name for the enemies list.

There was more. After seizing my AR- 15 - - the same rifle DEA tried, unsuccessfully, to add to my list of sins in the previous investigation - - someone in DEA had it altered from semiautomatic to fully automatic. Now it was not merely an unapproved rifle. It was an unapproved automatic rifle. This time, they planned to make sure the charge stuck.

I slammed down the phone and collapsed on my small bed, my mind whirling. Stia's back was clearly against the wall. If he did not cooperate, they could turn the spotlight on him in an instant. He obviously planned to play both sides, helping OPR bury me while whispering their game plan in my ear to keep me happy. He knew OPR would summon me soon enough, and I could make his life hell if I told them everything I knew about his questionable airplane investment. "Don't fuck me over, " he said during our conversation. I did not know how to respond. Everything was becoming too complicated.

In mid -April, DEA decided on a new home for me. As soon as the paperwork came through, I was to report to the San Francisco office. I spent a long night wandering San Diego,

restlessly weighing my options. I wanted to return home, but that was impossible. "I don't know, but they don't want you to come to Texas," Ramirez told me when I reached him in Brownsville a few days earlier. Word of my impending fall was all over the grapevine. "They're going to do you, man," he said.

"No shit, " I said to no one in particular as I punched the crosswalk button at another strange intersection. I marched blindly, turning comers until the streets swallowed me. I did not want to live in San Francisco. More than anything, I wanted to see my kids. Separation from Crystal and C4 cut deeper than wounds OPR could inflict.

I stepped into an all - night diner to get a cup of coffee. Two voices dueled in my head, one telling me to cut my losses and go home, the other urging me to dig in and fight. I could hear my father: Whatever you do, do it right. After ten years with DEA, I could not fold now. The Contra investigation got me into this morass, and it was also the trump card that could get me out. Playing it would mean the end of my career, or what was left of it. That was fine. I was prepared to surrender my small role in the great " drug war, " but not before I had a chance to clear my name. The decision made,

I tossed two quarters on the table and tried to figure out where the hell I was.

In early May, Stia called again with my regular dose of bad news: Ricevuto was in Guatemala City to request a visa for Moran. The Justice Department wanted Moran to contribute to the government's growing money laundering and bribery case against the Bank of Credit and Commerce International. Moran's anti -corruption squad once investigated BCCI's Guatemala City branch, and Uncle Sam wanted to hear Moran's story.

I can't believe this, I thought, shaking my head as Stia's voice faded into an indistinct murmur. Moran threatens to assassinate me; a few months later, my own agency wants to invite him into United States. Maybe they can give him a pistol and my home address while they're at it.

The ambassador, Stia said, promptly refused the visa request, as flabbergasted as I was.

On May 28, when I returned to Guatemala City to oversee the packing of our household, Stia met me at the house.

"Cele, they got you, man. "

:'What do you mean, they got me?"

'They found Omar's MAC - 10 in the closet.

I bounded up the stairs, with Maria firing exclamations after me. I stood in front of the empty gun closet and cursed to myself. The MAC - 10, my ColtAR - 15, the grenades, everything was gone.

I had taken the MAC- 10 from Pira-Palma shortly after he became an informant. DEA rules prohibited informants from carrying weapons without a permit. Pira-Palma had reluctantly parted with the rifle, which was a gift from the Cali cartel. He said a friend in the military would give him a permit for the rifle. I was skeptical. The rules also said I should have put the gun in the office safe, but the safe was jammed with ammunition from a recent restocking, so rather than keep it in an unsecured locker, I told Stia I would store it in my gun closet at home until Pira-Palma received a permit. Stia had agreed. Now he was telling me DEA seized the gun as evidence.

"You knew about the gun," I said without bothering to conceal my disgust. Stia shrugged.

I called Aparecio while the movers packed our furniture for shipping. Ricevuto had come calling, he said. After the ambassador refused to give Moran a visa, Ricevuto used his remaining time in Guatemala to grill my informants. Aparecio sounded slightly amused at the sight of yet another DEA investigator coming to him for incriminating evidence against me. "I told him you were clean, " Aparecio said with his usual stoicism.

Stia told me OPR wanted a written statement explaining the items seized from my home. I angrily scribbled a handwritten reply and tossed it on his desk. At least now I could see a few of OPR's cards. They obviously wanted to beat me over the head with weapons violations again. I boarded the plane to California more determined to match them charge for charge. When they brought up the weapons, I would counter with this illegal search and seizure. I knew plenty about wars of attrition, and I planned to wear them down to a stalemate.

I arrived in San Francisco July 12. After more than five years in Peru and Central America, walking through San Francis co's tilting streets brought back the sensory overload I felt during my first days in Manhattan. My last assignment for DEA was beginning much like my first: Alone in a strange city, filled with an overpowering sense of foreboding.

I walked into the office with a dark cloud over my head. I could see the discomfort in the eyes of the other agents as I introduced myself. I felt as if someone had branded an "OPR" stigmata into my cheek. I was assigned to Enforcement Group 6, a flock of young agents led by Richard Oakley, whose work I knew well from my days in Manhattan. He became something of a DEA legend in New Jersey, where he busted heroin and cocaine rings with uncanny undercover skills. Oakley introduced himself with a warm smile. With his light build and dark mustache, Oakley could have passed for comedian Richard Pryor. But his eyes broadcast the cool confidence of a man who had proven himself in the trenches.

Oakley did not dwell on my OPR problems. He was accustomed to working with agents under suspicion. The San Francisco office was the catch basin for DEA's outcasts and troublemakers. Several agents in Group 6 were survivors of OPR inquests, who spoke of their experiences in sour tones, like people who all got food poisoning at the same restaurant. Oakley did not let me dwell on the OPR probe. He put me to work immediately, filling my days with undercover cases. He needed a Spanish speaker badly.

The inevitable call came at the end of July. Ricevuto wanted me to fly to Washington for an interview. This would be my opportunity to respond to the charges they were gathering against me. On the last day of July, I packed a bag and drove to the airport, feeling like the proverbial fly invited into the spiders' parlor.

When I arrived at DEA headquarters the next morning with three cups of coffee tingling through my brain, a bored receptionist guided me to the interview room.

Ricevuto chugged through the door and greeted me with a warm smile. "You must be Castillo." Short and dark -skinned, with black kinky hair twirling from the sides of his balding head, Ricevuto projected the air of someone trying to pack Cary Grant's charm into Danny DeVito's body. He led me to the interview room and offered me a chair. The second member of the investigative

team, a tall, thin man wearing glasses, pushed a thin hand from his suit sleeve and introduced himself as Donald Petty.

Ricevuto's disposition darkened slightly when the door closed. He recited my administrative rights, then told me I was now required to answer any and all questions. The room seemed to close in around me.

The inquest lasted all day. Playing good cop-bad cop, Ricevuto and Petty tried to push words into my mouth, starting

sentences with, "Isn't it true that As expected, they pressed

accusations of embezzlement on me, then asked about the weapons found at my residence. They repeated Moran's murder accusations, and jotted copious notes as I reconstructed the Puerto

Barrios raid. Obviously, Moran's death threat did not rule him out

in their eyes as a credible witness against me.

They came armed with a list of accusations leveled by Tuffy, Pira-Palma, and El Coyote. When I denied skimming $15,000 from the money Pira-Palma gave me, they scoffed, asking why I waited so long to report the transaction. I put a silent curse on Stia for procrastinating. I would curse his name several more times as the morning dragged into the afternoon.

Ricevuto said El Coyote told them he bought a DEA commemorative pistol from me. I remembered the gun. Montoya was a huge gun buff, I explained, and since I had no need for the .45 1 bought in 1980 from a retired agent who needed cash for his daughter's wedding, I sold it to El Coyote. They were digging deep for their mud. I sold Montoya the pistol when we first met, before I knew he was an informant. It was a bad idea, I admitted, but it was a sin committed by U.S. agents and military personnel everywhere. Selling a firearm overseas was against DEA regulations, but the rule was routinely ignored. Guns passed from hand to hand like small change.

El Coyote had inflated the purchase price by $2,000. Reina claimed I knew Montoya was an informant when I sold the gun. Not true, I told Ricevuto. I wanted to take my lumps for my mistakes, but I refused to admit to false charges.

When they brought up the MAC- 10, Ricevuto stunned me again, telling me Stia claimed he never laid eyes on the rifle. I shook my head vigorously and repeated my explanation: When I took the gun from Pira-Palma, Stia gave me the okay to take it

to my house for safekeeping because our gun safe was full. I checked my watch for the hundredth time, wondering when they would run out of accusations.

Ricevuto wanted to know why I kept a fully automatic Colt AR15 in my house.

"First of all, I did not alter that rifle," I said. "Second, why would I bother? We had six M- 16s in the office, all fully automatic. " Ricevuto and Petty glanced at each other.

As their questions petered out, I asked Ricevuto why the Brownsville position suddenly closed. Ricevuto said OPR quashed the transfer request because of the "poor judgment" admonishment I received during my first days with DEA. I was floored. They were talking about my investigation of Noe's stepfather in 1980.

That's justification for separating nw from my family? I thought, glaring at Ricevuto. It was the ultimate irony. They were using my relationship with Noe a decade before to separate me from my family now.

Before I could leave, Ricevuto wanted me to visit Yvonne Conner in employee relations for some sort of psychological evaluation. I was tempted to tell him to go to hell, along with the whole damn agency. If I had had a baseball bat handy, I would have broken his knees. I stalked out of the interview room to search out Conner, leaving a trail of muttered curses behind me. I found her office, banged on the door, and found myself scowling at a tall black woman whose smile refused to wilt despite my obvious anger. She motioned to a chair, where I spent the next several hours spewing my troubles like a broken hydrant. I left Conner's office a different man than when I entered. She was the kindest, most patient person I'd met in all my dealings with headquarters. She seemed genuinely interested in my side of the OPR inquest. Before I knew it, I was telling her about Vietnam, Harlem, the Contras, the G2 murders, and all the other searing memories I had bottled up and carried around like rough stones for the past twenty years. Under her calm gaze, I revealed memories I refused to bare to my wife, my family, even myself. The rage I brought into her office flared, ebbed, then died.

"It sounds like post-traumatic stress disorder," she said, nodding to herself and jotting a few more lines in her notebook. ' ' Look, I can handle it, " I replied, pulling my hard veneer back into place. Conner ignored me.

"I'm going to recommend you be taken off the streets. I'll send the paperwork to San Francisco. In the meantime, when you get back there, I want you to visit Verona Fonte. "

A week later, in Berkeley, I sat in another chair across from Dr. Verona Fonte, a DEA -contracted psychologist who examined a lot of agents. Fonte walked me over the same ground Conner had patiently exposed, but she seemed more interested in the clock. A typical Berkeley liberal, she only perked up when I brought up the Contra investigation. She seemed fascinated by the scandal ous possibilities. When I switched to the more mundane stuff of my nightmares, her eyebrows dropped again.

I returned to work, wondering when Conner's recommendation would reach my

boss. Before I left Washington, she said she might be able to pull some strings and help me transfer to a desk job in El Paso. I would still be more than 700 miles from home, but that was close enough to give me hope.

I was soon too caught up in my work to think about El Paso. The cases piled up, one running into another, with every group in San Francisco calling my name to help them infiltrate Latino drug networks. I never felt so popular. Out of perhaps 75 agents, nobody spoke Spanish, so it came as no surprise when busts often turned into deadly ad-libbed escapes. It was the Drug War Follies all over again.

During one bust, a trafficker handed me 10 ounces of heroin, then I gave the bust signal: "Excelente. " Nothing happened. I smiled at the man, hefted the package, and repeated the word a little louder, wondering if the microphone taped to my skin was working properly. He wanted to see the money. Shit shit shit where are they? The duffel bag I brought along was purely for show. There was no money, only a loaded pistol I kept in the trunk as insurance. I watched the trafficker's hand drift toward his waist, where a brown pistol grip poked from his belt. I gave the signal again, praying hard as I reached into the bag and cocked the pistol. We were about to play out a quick -draw scene from some Western, and I planned to pull the trigger first. My backup arrived a moment later and arrested the stunned trafficker. I did not waste my breath screaming at them. I slammed the trunk shut and screeched away.

In late September, I prepared for another trip to Washing ton, where Ricevuto waited with written statements from our August session. On September 26, 1 arrived at the airport early enough to call my mother, yearning for a reassuring voice. She picked up the phone on the first ring.

"Thank God it's you," she said. "DEA and the Border Patrol are at Noe's apartment. They're looking for Ana and searching the apartment. "

Shit. As my mother repeated fragmented bits of the story, my fist clenched around the phone. While Noe was gone, she said, a group of men barged into the apartment and began interrogating Ana. My mother immediately had immediately called my sister Diana, at the McAllen Police Department, where she worked; she was on her way to investigate. I looked at my watch. My plane was about to leave.

The flight from San Francisco to Washington pulled me through four time zones and a million emotions. I slumped in my seat, ignoring the conversational overtures of the woman next to me, and dwelled on my helplessness. When the plane landed, I rushed to the hotel to call Diana at the police department, where she was the teen court coordinator. Diana said when she reached Noe's apartment, the kids ran to her, crying. Two men stood in the bedroom, pulling open dresser drawers. Two others questioned the maid. Ana later said they were searching for weapons. When Diana confronted them, demanding their names and their search warrant, an agent from the McAllen DEA office gave her a bogus name and snarled at her: "Listen here, we are here on

official business and don't have to take any shit from you. " Diana maintained her poise and took down the name of the immigration official and two men who identified themselves as DEA investigators. One was Tony Ricevuto. The other was Donald Petty. T

took Ana into custody as an illegal alien, and Diana scooped up the kids and called her friends at the police department to report the illegal search.

Later, I discovered Ana's visa was confiscated at the border when she tried to cross into Texas. The papers were approved after I left Guatemala, but Stia scribbled "for employment with the Castillo's in Texas" at the bottom of the tourist visa, which set off alarm bells at Customs. When they turned her away, Noe made arrangements to sneak Ana across the river. OPR got wind of it and pounced. They obviously wanted to add smuggling an illegal alien to their list of charges against me.

They did not count on my sister appearing. When DEA discovered Diana worked for the police department, the man who snapped at her back pedaled furiously, calling to offer his "sin cere apologies. "

When Noe found out about the search, she called the McAllen DEA office immediately to find out what happened to Ana. They passed her call to Ricevuto, who asked her to come in and answer a few questions. When I spoke to Noe after her session with Ricevuto, she said the investigator asked a few cursory questions about Ana, then focused on me: Did Cele have a lot of money put away? Was he into anything illegal? Noe was bitter about our broken marriage, but she coolly told Ricevuto as far as she knew, I had broken no laws. I thanked her and hung up, releasing a long sigh. Noe was still on my side.

I flopped on the hard hotel bed, exhausted. I felt like a marathon runner at the end of a race, praying for a second wind that refused to arrive. I tried to clear my mind, then gave up and stood with a grunt. The digital clock on the nightstand glowed a dull red. Midnight. I flipped through a magazine, then walked to the window and stared at traffic crawling through the dark streets below. I trudged to the bathroom and splashed water on my face. The man staring back in the mirror looked gaunt and lost. In a little over a month, my body had withered from 175 pounds to 145. My clothes hung on me like a scarecrow. I could hardly eat or sleep. Nausea hammered my stomach without release. Only my anger gave me focus. Ricevuto had crossed every line by dragging my family into this inquisition.

The receptionist with the bored stare told me Ricevuto was out. An hour later, as I sat listlessly in the interview room, he appeared in the doorway and silently took a seat across from me.

"We heard you were involved with smuggling the maid into the country, " he said jovially, "but don't worry, we checked it out and found out you had nothing to do with it. "

I stared at him coldly, picturing my kids crying on the floor while he dug

through their home. For the first time in my adult life, I erupted.

"Ricevuto, if you have something against me, you come after me, but don't hurt my family, " I shouted. "Because if you hurt my family, the gloves are coming off."

Ricevuto retreated, caught off guard by my outburst. He tried to explain why he searched my wife's house, but I was not listening any more.

"It's fucking wrong what you guys are doing, " I growled. "It's wrong. " I barely read the stack of written statements before scrawling my name at the bottom. When I left the room, I knew my career was over.

The end came slowly. Autumn and winter slipped by in a hazy blur, pushing me reluctantly into 1991. George Bush, half way through his term, stubbornly clung to the ideals of the Reagan "drug war. " Interdiction remained the name of the game. It still didn't work. Every bag of heroin or cocaine I took off the streets had about the same impact as removing a cup of sand from a desert. Black tar heroin, crack, pills, blotter acid, you could get it all any time of the day or night in San Francisco.

When an undercover police officer from Eureka called asking for help with a case, I'm not sure what made me say yes. Probably nothing more than loneliness. Every time I slowed down enough to think, my depression returned. I spent my nights falling asleep in front of the TV. Weekends became two - day purgatories. I still called Noe almost every day to share a few idle words before she turned the phone over to the kids. Only their excited voices could reach through my numbness. It broke my heart knowing they did not consider my extended absence unusual. When Noe and I finally decided to divorce in March, it was several months before we could bring ourselves to tell them the separation was not just part of Daddy's job. It was permanent.

I worked my tail off throughout the week, then drove five hours north to Eureka every weekend to help the police there infiltrate a cocaine and heroin ring feeding off the illegal aliens who worked in the lumber mills.

In late April, 199 1, a letter arrived from Washington. Four years after my Contra investigation, the hammer was falling.

Dear Mr. Castillo: This letter is notice of an action which is proposed to be taken in accordance with Chapter 752, Office of Personnel Management Regulations, and the authority vested in nw by DF,4 directives. Based on the charges of Improper Association With an Informant, Receiving Soliciting Gifts, Misappropriation of Government Property, Violations of Regulations Relating to the Export and Sale of Firearms, Failure to Follow Written Instructions, Poor Judgment and Making a False Statement, the reasons for which are set forth below, I propose to suspend you from your position of Criminal Investigator, for 35 days...

The dry bureaucratic prose ran twelve pages and ended with the signature

of Calvin G. McFarland, Jr., chairman of the Board of Professional Conduct. I read it three times. Everything from Ricevuto's rambling investigation was there, and more: The money Pira-Palma gave me to give to G2 was considered improper association with an informant and poor judgment; the MAC - 10 I took from him was now an unauthorized gift; the pistol I sold El Coyote brought charges for an unauthorized weapons sale and making a false statement ("that you didn't know Luis Montoya was an informant when you sold him a .45 caliber pistol "); possession of the MAC - 10 and the AR - 15 constituted failing to follow written instructions, since Stia "was not aware that you were in possession of either of these weapons. "

Charge number three came from nowhere: OPR accused me of misappropriating government property, namely, a shortwave radio I gave Pira-Palma for our operation. Larry had seized the radio from a trafficker, then stored it at the office for general use. I gave it to Pira Palma to set up a communications link between himself and the cartel, a direct line I planned to tap for leads. The radio was never given the serial number and inventory card needed to make it government property. According to OPR, I told PiraPalma to charge the Colombians $15,000 for the radio, then give me the money.

I almost laughed. Pira -Palma was already under suspicion bythe cartel foreclosing 1,000kilos of their precious cocaine. They would undoubtedly become even more suspicious if he returned for an advance on his allowance.

They lined up everyone to testify against me. Statements from Stia, Reina, and Larry peppered the letter, but the bulk of the accusations came from Pira-Palma. I knew I could no longer trust anyone. I was alone, but I was going to fight the suspension. I found a lawyer in San Francisco and began writing my appeal.

My life was spinning in a tightening downward spiral, threatening to hurl me into the abyss. I prepared myself for a showdown. In their zeal to take me down, DEA conducted two illegal searches, harassed my friends and family, and cozied up to a man who wanted me killed. The gloves were off.

After five years of almost continuous investigations, the best they could come up with was a 35 -day suspension? In my appeal letter, I told headquarters I felt my aggressiveness in Central America was the reason for OPR's dogged pursuit of me. If DEA wanted to fight dirty, I told my fellow agents, I could fight dirty too. I toyed out loud with the idea of calling a press conference and blowing the whole Contra drug scandal into the limelight.

My lawyer called in September, 1991, and asked me to come to his office: Walsh's people wanted to meet me.

On September 20, 1 walked into his office and shook hands with Mike Foster, an FBI agent on loan to Walsh's prosecution team. Foster spoke with a

pronounced eastern accent. He seemed exhausted. For the next six hours, I took him through every step of my investigation of North's Contra operation, the support it received from the CIA and the MilGroup, the visas the CIA obtained for drug pilots, and the money flowing to the Contras from drug sales. Foster flipped through the copies I had made of my reports, scribbling notes on a legal pad.

Foster shook his head incredulously. When Walsh's office asked DEA for documents referring to the Contras, he said, DEA told the prosecutors there were none. "Cele, if we can prove the Contras were involved in narcotics trafficking, it would be a grand slam home run," he said.

They needed to halt their losing streak. Four days earlier, on September 16, North's conviction on three felony counts - obstructing Congress, destroying documents, and accepting illegal gratuities - were overturned on a technicality, stemming from his high -profile testimony before Congress. North, America's newly- christened icon, was just one who slipped through the system virtually unscathed. A month later, a judicial panel overturned Poindexter's three-count felony conviction because of the same technicality.

Secord, facing 12 felony charges, including theft, conspiracy to defraud the government, obstruction of Congress, and perjury, decided to plea bargain and cooperate with Walsh's investigators. On November 8, 1989, he pleaded guilty to one charge of lying to Congress and received a slap on the wrist: Two years of probation. Hakim was charged with five felonies, including offering North illegal gratuities. Two weeks after Secord's sentencing, Hakim pleaded guilty to one count of supplementing North's salary, paid his $5,000 fine, and took two years' probation. One by one, convictions were reversed, punished with mere probation, or erased when President George Bush pardoned six of the remaining conspirators on Christmas Eve, 1992, because their motives were "patriotism. "

I wanted to help bring the government's drug connections to light, hoping some of those responsible for selling out the drug war would go to jail where they belonged. Foster wanted leads. I gave him the names of everyone who knew about the Contras' drug running: Aparecio, Adame, Hugo, Elmore. I also gave him copies of my reports. He closed his notebook and shook my hand again, promising my information would be included in his report.

Foster and I spoke by phone several times after our meeting. He wanted me to arrange for Aparecio and his girlfriend to fly to the U.S. for an interview. He also said he planned to fly to El Salvador to talk to Hugo. The interviews never occurred.

When Walsh released his three -volume, 2,500 -page report almost two years later, the narcotics issue was nowhere to be found. The third secret would remain a vague footnote to the Iran- Contra Affair, the revelation our government could never afford to acknowledge.

I returned to Fonte's office several times for analysis. In her final report, Fonte called me "a warrior who had been grounded without an adequate transition or support" and diagnosed post traumatic stress disorder. She referred me to a Berkeley psychiatrist, Dr. Donald Goldmacher, who agreed: "As a result of chronic exposure to psychologically traumatic events, Mr. Castillo developed post -traumatic stress disorder. He continues to experience significant psychological symptomology as a result of this disorder. And, in my opinion, is totally and permanently disabled from performing his usual duties with the DEA. "

DEA finally took me off the streets in late 1991. 1 was banished to internal exile, shuffled from job to job. They did not bother training me for my new duties. I worked as a training officer for a few weeks, then a dispatcher, then, in the ultimate irony, a DEA recruiter. The agency wanted to bring more Hispanics into the fold, so they sent me to college job fairs across the state to sign up eager young men and women to fight the drug war.

I was done fighting. On December 6, 1991, 1 left San Francisco for McAllen on sick leave, an absence from which I would never return. Six more months would pass before DEA and my attorney struck a deal: If I accepted a disability retirement, they would pay me 40 percent of my current salary and forget about the proposed suspension. I signed in a heartbeat.

During my time as a recruiter, I passed out DEA literature from my booth, recited the agency line, and smiled at the energetic faces streaming past. When a young man or woman asked me what working for DEA was like, I smiled again and did my best to scare the hell out of them. I described the grinding frustration of the drug war, hit them with some of my personal heartaches, then watched, satisfied, as their enthusiasm faded like a forgotten dream.

"I'm telling you what it's really like, " I said as they quietly dropped the literature back on the table. "Man, the worst thing you can do is join DEA. "

ENDNOTES

Chapter I

Taking the Stand: The Testimony of Lieutenant Colonel Oliver L. North, Pocket Books, New York, 1987, pp 8, 12 - 13, 25, 298-299, 558. (North's Congressional testimony).

The Economist, May 21, 1994, pp 27 - 2 8. (U.S. drug war spending).

Rolling Stone, May 5, 1994, p. 43. (price of crack in Little Rock).

"Drugs and Jail Inmates, 1989, " special report bythe U. S. Department of Justice, Bureau of Justice Statistics, 1989. (crimes committed for drugs).

Michael J. Sniffen, The Associated Press, June 2, 1994. (drug offenders in prison).

Deposition of Central American Task Force Chief, Report of the Congressional Committees Investigating the Iran-Contra Affair, 100th Congress, Ist Session, Appendix B, Vol. 3, pp 1121, 1230. (CIA knowledge of Contra drug smuggling).

"Drugs, Law Enforcement and Foreign Policy," a report prepared by the Subcommittee on Terrorism, Narcotics and International Operations of the U.S. Senate Committee on Foreign Relations (Hereafter the Kerry subcommittee report), U.S. Government Printing Office, Washington, D.C., 1989, pp 145 147. (North diaries).

" Drugs and the Contras, " The New York Times, January 13, 1987, p. A20. (senators fear drug issue could derail IranContra inquiry).

Chapter 4

"Crack's Destructive Sprint Across America," The New York Times Magazine, October 1, 1989, pp 41, 58. (New York crack scene).

Federal Bureau of Investigation crime statistics: New York City drug arrests for suspects over 16, 1980-1985.

"Heroin Ring Smashed - - 20 lbs. of Drug Seized," New York Post, November 4, 1982.

"U.S. Drug Agents Arrest 13 After Major Heroin Inquiry, " The New York Times, " November 5, 1982, p. B5.

"$8M bail set in drug bust; link to mob," Staten Island Advance, November 5, 1982.

"Heroin Mobster's Bound Body Found in Car Trunk," New York Post, February 3, 1984.

Muniz v Meese, Civil Action No. 85 - 2300, U.S. District Court, District of Columbia, July 18, 1985. (Class action suit filed by DEA Hispaiiics).

Chapter 5

Robert O'Brien and Sidney Cohen, M.D., The Encyclope dia of Drug Abuse, Green Springs Inc., 1984, pp 63 - 65.

Edmundo Morales, "The Political Economy of Cocaine Production: An Analysis of the Peruvian Case, " Latin American Perspectives, fall, 1990.

Peter R. Andreas and Kenneth E. Sharpe, " Cocaine Politics in the Andes, " Current History, February 1992.

"Pope Rejects a Role in Central America, " The New York Times, February 7, 1985, p. A3. (Pope's Latin American tour).

"U.S. Drug Agent Kidnapped," The New York Times, February 12, 1985, p. A6. (Camarena kidnapping).

" Body of U - S. D rug Agent Believed Found in Mexico,

The New York Times, March 7, 1985, p. Al. (Camarena murder).

Los Angeles Tinws, July 26, 1985, p. 2. (Judge Manuel Castro shot in Colombia).

"Car Bomb Rocks Capital as Peru Prepares for Transfer of Power," Los Angeles Times, July 28, 1985, p. 14. (Peruvian bombing).

The Washington Post, August 9, 1985, p. A32. (Car bomb explodes in Peru).

The Washington Post, August 11, 1985, p. Al. (North identified for Contra role).

"Peru Scores a Victory In War on Drug Traffic," The Washington Post, August 19, 1985. (Operation Condor).

Chapter 6

George Black, The Good Neighbor, Pantheon Books, New York, 1988, pp. 97-99. (1954 Guatemalan coup); p. 165 (Barry Seal incident).

Ronald Reagan, excerpts from April 15, 1985 speech as they appeared in The New York Times, April 16, 1985, p. A8. (Sandinista speech).

The New York Times, Oct. 16, 1985, p. Al. (Ortega suspends rights).

Ramiro Guerra's reports were placed in DEA file STG - 81 0013. DEA rejected a Freedom of Information Act request for the file, citing privacy laws.

The New York Times, April 13, 1985, p. A4. (death squads).

Guatemalan officials were listed in DEA files under the following NADDIS numbers: Milton Cerezo- Garcia, #214065 1; Claudia Arenas, #2627597; Alfonso Cabrera - Hidalgo, #2390984; Carlos Ramiro Garcia de Paz, #1937048.

Oliver L. North with William Novak, Under Fire: An American Story, HarperPaperbacks, New York, p. 308-309. (quid pro quo with Honduras).

Zabanch is documented in DEA file GH - 85 - 0086. DEA rejected a Freedom of Information Act request for the file, citing privacy laws.

William Clark, "Public Diplomacy (Central America)," July 1, 19 83; The Iran -Contra Scandal: The Declassified His tory, The National Security Archive, The New Press, NewYork, 1993, p. 4, 37. (taxpayer money used for Contra propaganda).

Johnathan Miller, Memorandum for Patrick Buchanan, "White Propaganda Operation, " March 13, 1985; Ibid, pp 6, 37. (Contra public relations work).

The Monitor, McAllen TX, Dec. 18, 1985, p. 1. (Gen. Singlaub's McAllen visit).

The Monitor, Dec. 21, 1985, p. 4A. (AP story on Contra drug connection).

The Contra report was placed in DEA file GF-TG-859999. DEA rejected a Freedom of Information Act request forthe file, citing privacy laws.

Gaitan- Gaitan's activities are detailed in DEA file TG 860001. DEA rejected a Freedom of Information Act request for the file, citing privacy laws.

"Drugs, Law Enforcement and Foreign Policy: The Cartel, Haiti and Central America, " transcript of hearings before the Subcommittee on Terrorism, Narcotics and International Communications of the U.S. Senate Foreign Relations Committee (Hereafter the Kerry subcommittee hearings), U.S. Government Printing Office, Washington, D.C., 1988, Part 3, pp 280 - 311. (Morales testimony)

The Kerry subcommittee report, pp 41, 147. (North suggests drug money be diverted to Contras; North diary excerpt).

Elaine Shannon, Desperados, Viking Penguin Inc., New York, 1988, pp 147 - 161 (Barry Seal).

Under Fire: An American Story, p. 315 - 317. (North denies Contra drug link).

Chapter 7

Guirola-Beeche is named in DEA files under NADDIS numbers 1585334 and 1744448.

"Salvadoran Archbishop Assassinated By Sniper While Officiating at Mass, " The New York Times, March 25, 1980, p. Al. (Archbishop Romero's murder).

"Salvador is Rocked By 30 Bomb Blasts, " The New York Times, March 26, 1980, p. A7. (Reaction to Romero's murder).

"Salvadoran Rightists: The Deadly Patriots," reprinted from the Albuquerque Journal, 1983, p.29. (D'Aubisson and ARENA).

"Brasher" is documented in DEA file TG-87-0003. The DEA rejected a Freedom of Information Act request for the file, citing privacy laws.

Theodore Draper, A Very Thin Line, Touchstone, 199 1, pp 332 - 337, 345. (1986 Congressional vote on Contra aid).

Oliver North, PROFS (Professional Office System) Note to John Poindexter, "Private Blank Check," July 24, 1986; The

Iran - Contra Scandal: The Declassified History, The National Security Archive, The New Press, New York, 1993, p. 184. (North recommends returning operation to the CIA).

Garcia de Paz is documented in DEA file TG-860005:IA4CI. The DEA rejected a Freedom of Information Act request for the file, citing privacy laws.

Chapter 8

Oliver North, Memorandum for John Poindexter, "Press Guidance re: Costa Rican Airstrip," September 30, 1986; The Iran Contra Scandal: The Declassified History, The National Security Archive, The New Press, New York, 1993, pp. 181 183. (Santa Elena airstrip fallout and response).

A Very Thin Line, Touchstone, New York, 1991, pp. 38, 96. (Steele's role in Contra resupply operation).

"C.I.A. Recalls Costa Rica Aide, " The New York Times, January 18, 1987. (Fernandez recalled from Costa Rica).

"American Is Captured After Plane Is Downed in Nicaraguan Territory, " The New York Times, October 8, 1986, pp A 1, A8. (Hasenfus shot down, Shultz's denial).

"Nicaragua Shows Reporters Man It Says Is Flier," The New York Times, October 8, 1986, p A8. (Hasenfus press conference).

Under Fire, pp 353 - 355. (North's shredding).

"U.S. Prisoner in Nicaragua Says C.I.A. Ran Contra Supply Flights, " The New York Times, October 10, 1986, p Al. (Hasenfus says CIA headed Contra operation).

"Bush Praises Man Tied to Contra Aid," The New York Times, October 12, 1986, p Al. (Bush link to Felix Rodriguez).

The Iran - Contra Scandal: The Declassified History, The National Security Archive, The New Press, New York, 1993, pp. 186 187. (Abrams' CNN interview).

"Lack of Help Angers Poor In El Salvador, " The New York Times, October 13, 1986, p Al. (Salvadoran earthquake).

" Close Aide To Bush Linked To Figure Helping Contras,

The New York Times, October 13, 1986, p A I. (Gregg's ties to Rodriguez).

"U.S. Prisoner in Nicaragua Says C.I.A. Ran Contra Supply Flights," The New York Times, October 10, 1986,pAl. (Owen's card found in wallet of Contra pilot).

Kerry subcommittee report, pp 44-45. (Owen's name discovered in DC-4).

"Special Prosecutor Asked," -The New York Times, October 17, 1986, p AIO. (House Democrats request prosecutor).

Chapter 9

"Contra Arms Crew Said to Smuggle Drugs," The New York Times, January 20, 1987, p Al.

"Is There a Contra Drug Connection?" Newsweek, January 26, 1987, p. 26.

"Cache of 2 1/2 tons of cocaine seized on boat in Guatemalan port," Miami Herald (international edition), October 2, 1987. (Puerto Barrios raid).

"QI,360 milliones en cocaina incautaron, " Prensa Libre, Guatemala, September 30, 1987. (Puerto Barrios raid).

The Kerry subcommittee report, pp 39-43.

Author interview with Richard Rivera, January 16, 1993.

Chapter 10

Final Report of the Independent Counsel for Iran/Contra Matters, August 4, 1993, vol. 1, p. 162. (Secord and Hakim's Contra profits).

Tom Barry, Inside Guatemala, The Inter- Hemispheric Education Resource Center, Albuquerque, New Mexico, 1992, p. 20. (Barillas assassination).

Moran's death threat was documented in DEA file #M3 900053 FAI-CL.

The Kerry Subcommittee report, p. IV.

"Foreign Policy Hurt Drug War, Senators Say," The New York Times, April 14, 1989, p. Ag. (Kerry report released).

"Reagan Aides Accused of Hampering Drug War," Washington Post, April 14, 1989, p. A20. (Kerry report).

Chapter 11

Notarized affidavit given by Diana Ramos, September 26, 1990 in Hidalgo County, Texas. (search of Noe's apartment).

Author's interview with Noelia Castillo, June 1, 1994. (interview with Ricevuto).

Powderburns

COCAINE, CONTRAS & THE DRUG WAR

Celerino Castillo III
and Dave Harmon

The truth about the remaining dark secret of the Iran-Contra scandal - the United States government's collaboration with drug smugglers.

Congressional committees have established a link between American agencies and known drug traffickers. In POWDERBURNS, for the first time, a DEA agent goes public with detailed information about U.S. links to drug trafficking in Central America.

POWDERBURNS is the story of Celerino Castillo III who spent 12 years in the Drug Enforcement Administration. During that time, he built cases against organized drug rings in Manhattan, raided jungle cocaine labs in the Amazon, conducted aerial eradication operations in Guatemala, and assembled and trained anti-narcotics units in several countries.

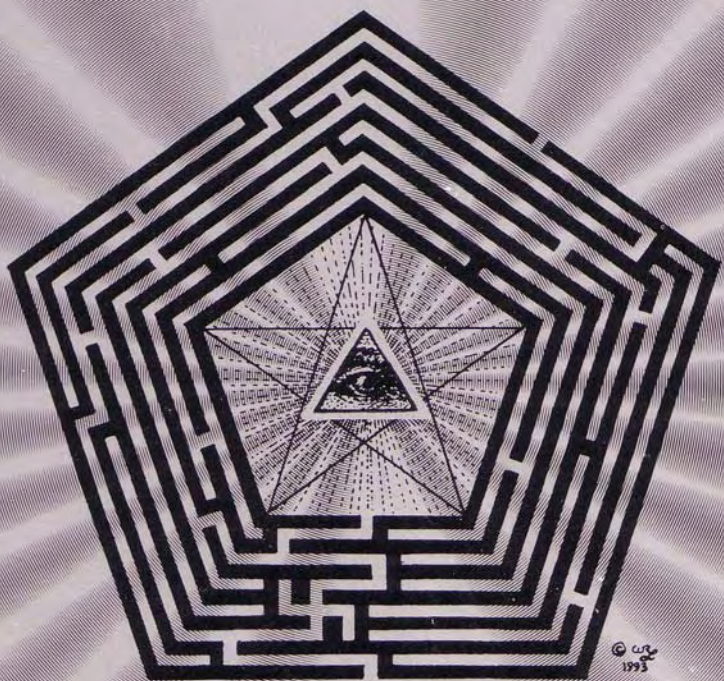
The eerie climax of Agent Castillo's career with the DEA took place in El Salvador. One day, he received a cable from a fellow agent. He was told to investigate possible drug smuggling by Nicaraguan Contras operating from the Ilopango air force base.

Castillo quickly discovered that Contra pilots were, indeed, smuggling narcotics back into the United States - using the same pilots, planes, and hangars that the Central Intelligence Agency and the National Security Council, under the Direction of Lt. Col. Oliver North, used to maintain their covert supply operation to the Contras.

Sentinel
an imprint of
Mosaic Press, Publishers
Cover Design by Susan Parker

ISBN: 0-88962-578-6

WILLIAM LYNE



PENTAGON ALIENS

(Formerly *Space Aliens From the Pentagon)*

©William R. Lyne
1993, 1995, 1999

Creatopia Productions™
THIRD EDITION

Abq Journal 10/27/91

The Roswell Incident

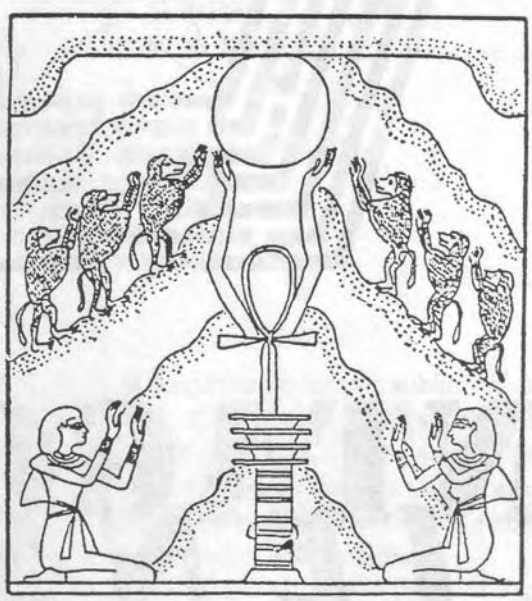
"UFO Crash at Roswell"
By Kevin D. Randle and Donald R. Schmitt
Avon Books, $4.95, 327 pp.

Review by Fritz Thompson

When New Mexico rancher Mac Brazel rode out to check his livestock on the morning of July 3, 1947, what he found instead was wre[illegible]ge oddly strewn across a pasture and a [illegible] that was [illegible]ined to remain dormant [illegible] being [illegible]alled man's [illegible]an alien [illegible] it.

(Part of a newspaper review of a book on the "Roswell Incident")

Drawing by Roswell mortician Glenn Dennis, based on autopsy drawings



Baboons Saluting the Morning Sun

TABLE OF CONTENTS

PREFACE.....v
INTRODUCTION 1
Verisimilitude..... 11
The Achilles's Heel of the Illuminati: "Ether Physics" and Flying Saucer Propulsion 14
I. The Most Rational Alternative 16
II. The O.S.I. Myth Factory 19
III. Gravity and Nikola Tesla's Work 20
IV. Dealing With "Equal and Opposite" Forces.....24
V. A Comparison of Gravitational and Electrical Forces, As Applied to Flying Saucer Propulsion 25
VI. Momentum and Applied Force..... 26
VII. Energy and Time.....27
VIII. Thor's Model T Coil.....30
IX. Work and Energy.....31
X. Forces and Fields.....33
XI. Occult Ether Physics..... 37
A Brief History of Ether Physics 39
Application of the Hall Effect.....40
The Precession Problem 44
SYNOPSIS OF FACTS 48

PART ONE: THE TECHNOLOGY 52

CHAPTER I: Stage I Secret Gravity Secrets 52
Phony Research and Scientific Alzheimers.....53
Inertia and Electromagnetism.....54
Momentum and Inductance 56
Weightlessness, "p2", and the Tubes of Force..... 57
Nikola Tesla's Dynamic Theory of Gravity 61
"p2" 61
The Lorentz Force 64
The Atmosphere as a Cloud Chamber Experiment..... 64
Horizontal Flight 65

Chapter II: Pieces of the Puzzle Come Together 67
The Odyssey Begins 68
My First Daylight Sighting 71
I Meet the K.G.B. and Captain Mantell's Wingmate in the U.S .Air Force..... 78
I Meet the President's Brother-in-Law, and Arnold
Schwartzenegger's Future Father-in-Law, in the Peace Corps..... 83
I Meet the CIA, Its Future Director, and the
Future President of the U.S.A., While in the University 87
I Turn Down an Offer from the CIA to be "Once and Future King"..... 88
In 1979 I Meet a Viejo from Pojoaque at the Flea Market, and Buy a WWII
German Flying Saucer Navigation System from an Albuquerque Salvage Dealer..89
Flying Submarines? 95
The Rocket Racket: Wernher von Braun, Willy Ley, Dr. Robert Goddard,
and the Kreisel Teller-p2, in New Mexico and Peenemunde 101
I Meet Torquemada and the Medellin Cartel..... 103
I Meet a Member of the Trilateral Commission's
International Geodetic Survey Team 109

CHAPTER III: I meet a Government M.I.B. in Santa Fe; Hollywood on
the Take 112
"Looking for Motives" 115
Corny Government Special Effects and Hoax Scenarios:
The Roswell Rhesus Monkey Hoax and Other Such Outrageous Shams 116
Phony Expert Consultants and Government Scripts 123
My "Friend", the M.I.B..... 127
Golden Cups, Monkey Business, and a Lot of Bull..... 147
The Roswell Hoax 'Saucer'..... 157
The Roswell Hoax 'Aliens'..... 158

CHAPTER IV: Sightings 159
Vicki Landrum, Et. Al 160
Radiation Dangers..... 165
The U.F.O. Cleaners..... 168
"Stars" 169
The Mind Cleaners 175
"Abductions": Travis Walton vs. Vicki Landrum..... 186
Tesla's "Flivver Machine" 194

CHAPTER V: How to Build a Flying Saucer....195
Author's Disclaimer 195
A. General Considerations....195
1. Size and Shape....196
2. Power System....197
3. High Voltage, D.C. Brush Discharge 199
4. High Voltage, High Frequency A.C. Current 200
5. Vertical Ascent and Descent.... 201
6. Horizontal Travel....201
B. Construction of the Hull....202
1. Power Plant....202
2. Seating and Visibility....202
3. Flight Suit....203
C. Simplified Drawings and Plans....203
1. (Special Supplementary Notations on the WW II German Flying Saucers).204
2. The Two Basic Types of German Saucers: 209
"Flying Turtle" Drawing 210
3. Recent Notes Regarding American UFOs.... 212
4. My Flying Saucer Drawings and Plans 215
Preliminary Technical Background 215
The "Firefly" 217
"Electromagnetic Momentum"....218

PART TWO: THE SOCIAL MANIPULATION....219

CHAPTER VI: Cannibalistic Fascist Litigation 219
A. The Real Issues: The Wave of the Future 224
B. The Socialistic Bureaucracy: A Conspiracy Without Leaders 228
C. Traitor Judiciary....231
Game No. 1: The Ninth Amendment Quiet Game....232
A System in Contempt of Our Rights....233
Game No. 2: The Article One (Sec. 8, cl [8]) and Fifth and
Fourteenth Amendments Property Game.... 235
Energy Slavery and Invention Theft 236
Triumvirate of Injustice....239
Game No. 3: The First Amendment End-Run Game
(A.K.A. The Ol'Statute of Liberty Play)....241
Credibility Roulette 241
D. American Dissident Trials, Murders, Tribulations, and Massacres 243
A Bird's Religion 257
The Kennedy Examples 258
The Historical Examples.... 262

CHAPTER VII: From the Easter Bunny to Auschwitz:
The Religion of Einstein and the Nazi New-Agers 268
The "Modern Illuminati" and the Nazis 268
Einstein was a New-Ager 273

CHAPTER VIII: A Taste of Other Energy Secrets 278
Tesla's 'Special' Generator. How Does it Work? 283

CONCLUSION 287

Bibliography 290

Appendix A: Giving to the Public an Unlimited Right to
Use of an Invention Heretofore Know as the Dyna-Lyne
Universal Variable Pneumatic or Hydraulic Transmission System 293

Appendix B: The Joseph Papp Patent 297

Appendix C: Fabrication of Tesla's Single Terminal Coils 300

INDEX 302

PREFACE

I began writing this book in early 1992, with such urgency that I often began my day's writing at 4:00 A.M. Chapter I reflects my mood at the time. I believe there are matters addressed for the first time in this book—in 1993—which are important to your freedom and that of your loved ones.

The truth in this case requires exposing a conspiracy. The word "conspiracy" has been made a dirty word by those involved, like dogs under the table, knawing on a few bones and scraps thrown to them by those above, and growling at anyone who threatens their precarious security. Conspiracies exist, they are sometimes real, and real conspiracies can be harmful to those who pretend they don't exist.

This book will disappoint those who expects it to be filled with tales about little 'aliens', or about how I was abducted and used as a sex slave by giant Venusian females (or weird little alien guys who have 'implanted' me, or experimented with my sex organs, etc.). This book is about the "flying saucer"—sometimes called the "UFO"—what it really is, who invented it, and why our government still conceals it after over fifty years of use by it. I also explore the political, social, economic and historical context in which Big Brother has maintained a hoax of gigantic proportions, by lying to and brain washing the public, and oppressing intelligent witnesses, to conceal the saucer secrets from us, and why.

My "space aliens" are actually people, whose philosophy and bizarre masquerade are alien to the American way of life, since they believe in government by anti-democratic hoax, to maintain the secret power of the Trilateral Commission elite, to whom our lives are very cheap.

Some who read this may thoughtfully consider it and agree wholeheartedly, because it is reasonable, knowledgeable, logical and true. Others may be disconcerted and will read no further, avoiding the cold light of reason, preferring to continue believing Big Brother's fantastic lies. It takes courage to admit being duped. Some may be subscribers to The Skeptical Inquirer magazine, misplacing confidence in what Philip J. Klass... supposedly a "fellow skeptic"....says about those 'crazy believers' in "alien flying saucers and ghosts" (all in one breath, mind you). Read further, as there is more here for you. Still others will more vehemently dislike what I say, knowing it is true, because they are among the guilty CIA and NSA, etc. A small minority of the guilty may secretly like what I say, but be unable to break the "national insecurity" bonds which hold them rigidly in place, being forced to continue to lie to their follow humans. Still others are beyond reason or any human sentiment, being motivated blindly by money, power, and a desire to "hold onto what they have". These are the "ruling class". Their fear of the truth is very real, and commitment to continued concealment total. The wealth they were born into is rooted in banking, minerals, chemical cartels which process

these, fuel companies, the pharmaceutical industry, banking, automotive or aeronautical manufacturing or transportation...planes, ships, trucks, and trains...anything the general public pays every day for. We are their 'captive' source of money and power.

There is one technology which more certainly than any other, has the capacity to drastically alter the Vested interests which sustain the elite, with its posh lifestyle, and even threatens to destroy it; electro-propulsive "flying saucer" technology.

It is not my desire to see anyone's honestly acquired economic security or prosperity ruined. It is my desire to see the collapse of whole empires, be they built on coercive monopoly, and fascist-state power, which exists at the expense of the freedom and well-being of innocent and productive people, gained and held by secrecy, extortion, force, theft, suppression and concealment of valuable, creative technology, which would also make our planet cleaner, more beautiful, and more accessible to everyone, and allow the peoples of the world to get to know and to appreciate each other more intimately and directly than ever before. No one, be they government, corporate, or individual, has the legitimate right or power to conceal such technology, unless they invented and created it, which they did not.

The existing state of apparently monolithic interests, while presently appearing to be held firmly in place by a chain of powerful government, financial, industrial, technical, military, judicial and law enforcement entities, cannot maintain themselves forever, and it is unrealistic to think that they can.

For those who are threatened by the public advent of this long-suppressed technology, here is the handwriting on the wall: PREPARE FOR THE LIBERATION OF ELECTRO-PROPULSIVE TECHNOLOGY FROM THE HANDS OF THE SECRET GOVERNMENT, BY THE PUBLIC AT LARGE. CONSIDER ALL THE IMPLICATIONS, AND ACT ACCORDINGLY.

The puppets...the "professionals" of pseudo-paranormalism and pseudo-skepticism...don't have so much to lose, and much more to gain. They can probably find more productive jobs selling insurance or used cars. Though they may not like sitting in the COLD LIGHT OF REASON, it will only hurt for a little while. It must be an uncomfortable and weird feeling to "lie for their country", which would not be so bad if that was all they were doing. There is nothing "patriotic" about corralling the minds of your fellow citizens with a fence of lies, so they can be "broke and branded" as the dupes of the BIG LIARS. The suppression of this technology is not in the national security interest.

Some who spread such lies harbor no patriotic delusions, enamoring themselves shamelessly to the covert money masters, performing like puppets, thoughtless and calloused. They will only come painfully alive when they face the music, once they are publically unmasked as professional liars for Big

Brother. I can hear the comments now: "...Oh...ya' mean ol' Joe there? Why he use ta' be one of them big-shot You-fologists, 'til it all come out that it wuz just a big lie to cover up gov'ment flyin' saucer stuff. Sad, ain't it?"

It is not difficult to imagine the strange mental processes involved in searching for a new way to present the same Old Tired Big Lies which saw their American premier at Roswell, New Mexico, in 1947, giving birth to the "Twin Lies"....that "aliens have landed" and that "flying saucers don't exist". This BIG LIE SYSTEM was. originally designed by the intelligence personnel of the Gestapo, the Reichsicherheithauptamte VI ("National Security Agency Div. 6"), and the Roswell hoax and the drama which followed has a dualistic nature which is typical of the gnosticism which was the basis for the SS religion[1]. Former SS intelligence agents at Alamogordo designed and initiated the Roswell hoax.

Yes, the two sides were Siamese twins, born of an SS father and CIA mother, representing two opposite sides of the same bogus wooden nickel, counterfeited in America as one of the first shams of the CIA under the fraudulently misnamed "National Security Act" of 1947, which was never submitted to Congress for its approval, because its authors—CFR bankers at Pratt House—knew it contained so many unconstitutional provisions and violations of American liberty and sovereignty, that they feared it would never be approved. (It "went into effect" like most illegitimate usurpations of rights and powers, through executive edict.)

The "Siamese Twins" born at Roswell were the two, diametrically opposite prongs of the Pentagon's concealment apparatus, UFOlogical Paranormalism and Skeptical Official Denial A more organized skeptical initiative was later mounted, as a 'civilian' adjunct to the official deniers, as the counterpart to UFOlogy. Both these fields were planned by the CIA and grew out of the ranks of the CIA's and Air Force Intelligence's plainclothes and covert agent contingencies. This also included such people as businessmen, university professors, astronomers, astrophysicists, meteorologists, other scientists, and aeronautical experts, many of whom were already affiliated with the government's secret projects. Many new press, magazine, book, and screen writers, producers and actors were soon on the payroll, to launch the "alien" scenario through the popular media. There were similar fabrications and concealments in academic areas and textbooks.

Since I originally wrote about the movie-UFOlogy-CIA connections in 1993, there have been many others who have copied me, and to my knowledge, none of them has given me any attribution whatsoever, though to my knowledge, I was the first to do so.

---

[1]Jean-Michel Angebert, The Occult and the Third Reich (the mystical origins of Nazism and the search for the Holy Grail), McGraw -Hill Paperbacks (1975) p. 4.

Of the two counterparts, the UFOlogists seem to have it better than the "skeptics", who appear rather dull by comparison, but spice up their work only by criticizing and debunking their more interesting twin. There are more possibilities among the UFOlogy circles for exciting social, romantic, and sexual encounters, since they are a more interesting bunch of huxters, though an intelligent person soon finds himself longing for another rational being amongst them. To come up with more fascinating subject matter, the skeptics must set their hooks much deeper. Their magazines debunk some false and fraudulent shams—perhaps dangerous to one's mental or physical health, not to mention the pocketbook—only to add false credibility to their irrational denials that flying saucers exist. I can agree with most of the skeptic material, yet their CSICOP flying saucer psychophancy is inconsistent, which reminds me of Ayn Rand's statement: "There are no contradictions in reality; check your premises." The great contradictions in the skeptical arena, are based on false premises planted there by devious, manipulative, lying, CIA-employed pseudo-skeptics, which even many of the innocent true skeptics have failed to identify or to expunge, but they're easy to spot.

To allow these great contradictions to be proliferated in skeptic literature, as reasonable, logical and true, when a lie, poisons the whole arena, like a gangrene of reason, and makes fools of the 'skeptics', and a mockery of the whole movement. Did it ever occur to them that the publications and money behind it came from the CIA? As individuals who pride themselves as having truly ethical intellects, it should be an important part of the skeptic agenda to identify and drive out this "alien implant", which has been using them to carry out the CIA's campaign of lies for too long. It takes an outsider like me to tell them about it. The 21st century should be a "flying saucer economy".

The people who should appreciate this writing the most, are those who are inquisitive, truly skeptical, intelligent, reasonable, individualistic, creative, ethical, imaginative, scientific, and above all, excited and optimistic about the possibilities of opening up a new era in human history, where all mankind will enjoy the greatest invention man has ever conceived and built, the electro-propulsive flying machine generally known as the "UFO", "flying disc", or "flying saucer".

You may either consider this as fiction, fact, or a mixture of fact and fiction. That decision is always up to the individual, for, to paraphrase Aristotle, we are never lied to; we must first lie to ourselves before we can accept a lie as the truth. As for myself, I HAVE NO MYSTICAL BELIEFS, ACCEPT NOTHING ON FAITH, AND ASSERT NOTHING AS THE TRUTH UNLESS I HAVE GOOD REASON TO BELIEVE IT IS TRUE. Though I never ask you to believe me on faith, evidence is sometimes scarce. I back up what I say with documentation where possible, physical evidence, an Aristotelian epistemology, accounts of my experiences and personal

knowledge, and striking facts which are too compelling to be dismissed as mere fantasy.

If some Americans have the deluded misconception that the 'Sacharovs' of this world are only in Russia, they should consider that our Sacharovs are so thoroughly buried by deceitful socio-economic oppression...carefully conceived and carried out by the Secret Government...that the world does not even know of their existences, much less that they are "virtually" imprisoned or enslaved.

The present system of nuclear power generator technology was stone-age and intentionally chosen as archaic, inefficient, and obsolete. It was already know by Nikola Tesla—even before Enrico Fermi split the atom without realizing it, and while Einstein was still a second class patent clerk in the Swiss patent office—that all the electricity mankind needs can be easily extracted from the self-replenishing atmosphere, by using a special M.H.D. (Magneto-Hydro-Dynamic) generator discovered by Tesla. It is so simple that a college freshman in physics, with an elementary knowledge of machine tools, could build and test it in his dormitory room.

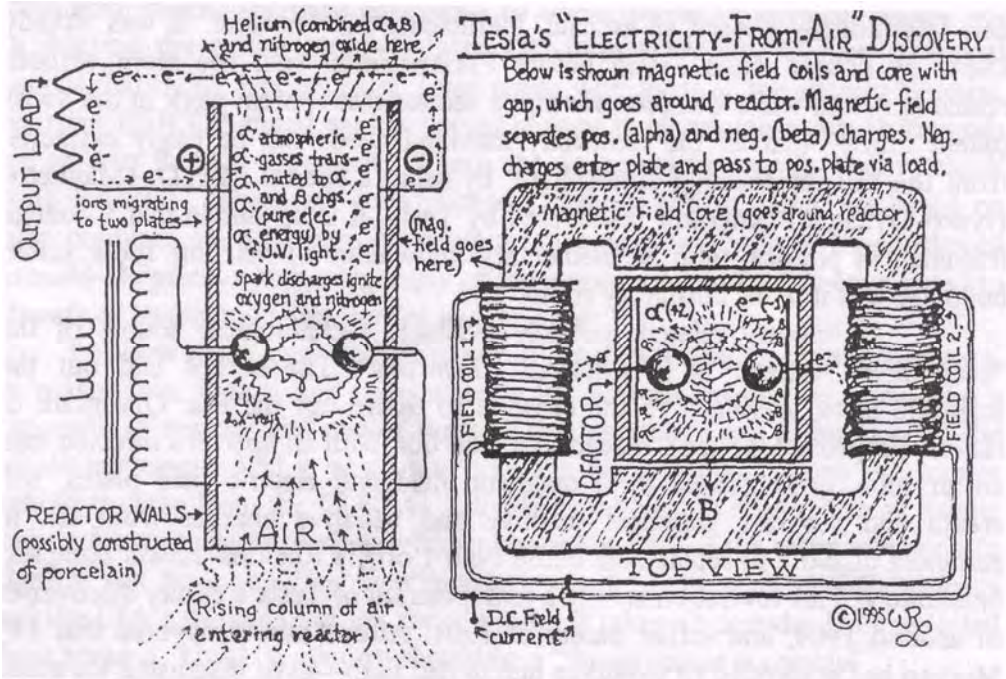
A closely related, publicly available technological source of the "acceptable" variety, is in Physical Chemistry[2]. The author laid out the scientific facts, leaving it to the creative to figure out the use. One gram of radium (approx. 1/31 oz.), placed in a lead box with an aperture directed into an air tube, criss-crossed by a magnetic field and electric field plates, will create and separate abundant positive and negative charges from air, in sufficient quantity to replace the entire Four Corners Regional power complex, indefinitely. This revelation is only a juxtaposition of Tesla's earlier discoveries of around 1904, and earlier patent of 1901. After Tesla discovered that J.P. Morgan had pretended to subsidize him in bad faith—even disguising his greed as philanthropy—in order to gain a controlling interest in all Tesla's patents, Tesla's only recourse was to withdraw his application on the patent. Nonetheless, we still have the unlabeled patent drawing, and with this knowledge, need only fill in the labels. (This patent drawing is shown in Chapter I. Tesla so feared for his life from the ominous power of the Morgan interests that he continued to praise Morgan's business ethic in public statements, saying "..I would stake my life on it...".

According to Tesla, all his inventions were initially conceived in furtherance of his "electric flying machine". The atmospheric generator is sometimes used as a power source on saucers, as confirmed by a renegade

---

[2] PHYSICAL CHEMISTRY, E. A. Moelwyn-Hughes, Pergamon Press, Oxford, 1965.
Page 224: Rutherford and Geiger found the number of alfa-particles ejected per second from 1 g of radium was 3.4×10^{10} ($k=1.26 \times 10^{-11}$ sec^{-1} , later determined by Madam Curie at 1.38×10^{-11}). Each particle carries two units of positive electricity. This will produce 34 zillion alfa - particles per second, at 4.5 Mev. The number of charges per second, yields a huge a amperage which, when stepped down to normal 120 VAC, is staggering.
Page 230: 1 atom of radium expels one alfa-particle producing 1.5 billion ions, at 4.5 Mev.
Page 231: "One alfa-particle has more than sufficient kinetic energy to bring about all the ionizations which stand to its credit", and is "..quantitatively sound".

F.B.I, agent, who wrote a book about what he knew, and was forced to flee to England. The agent lacked a clear understanding of what was fully involved, but I will fill you in more completely in this book. The same method will work with a pure gas such as helium or hydrogen, in an enclosed reactor which recycles the same gas over and over. Tesla's method for extraction of electricity from air is fairly illustrated as follows (with some minor corrections to be done in respect to angles of ejectment of particles and positions of plates):



I have no doubt that, if you really read this book, it will change the way you see many things, especially the 'flying saucer phenomenon', energy, corporate power, the judiciary, and even our local cops. Just remember that, unless we all come forward and speak out, Big Brother (our government and the Trilateral Commission) will continue to spend our money to enslave us.

As for my scientific theory and flying saucer plans, I rely on the words of Leonardo Da Vinci:

"IF YOU GET IT RIGHT ON PAPER, IT WILL WORK."

This book is dedicated to my sons Angus and Matthew, to my friends, and to all the readers who showed their appreciation, encouragement and support, and to the memory of Jewel Gibson, author of Black Gold and Josh Bean and God, who, as my English teacher at Sam Houston State University in 1964, encouraged me to write.

INTRODUCTION

The first crude edition of this book was published in July, 1993, under adverse conditions and pressure which had only recently subsided. At that time, I was attempting to 'get back on my feet' after a very intense six-year period of judicial abuse, which followed on the tail of a total of 17 years of judicial abuse. This particular abuse was instigated by the CIA in 1975, through various employees, dupes, and toadies, some of whom were New Mexico lawyers, judges, law enforcement personnel, and political party officials (Democrats and Republicans), ultimately acting under orders from the CIA, beginning George Bush's advent as CIA director.

In preparing to publish in 1993, 1 took considerable security precautions, although I had a pre-publishing leak through a dishonest "reviewer" (who never wrote the review), in April, 1993, who was recruited by the CIA during his teen years. This gave the CIA advance notice. A copy of my original Introduction reached a CIA ("M.I.B.") around march, 1992, through a mutual "friend" who betrayed me. My first 100 copies were printed clandestinely by copy machine. I silk screened the cover, then had a local printer overprint it with black. I did the collating, binding, and trimming. The second printing, of 1,000 copies, was printed from my negatives and plates by a local printer, then collated, bound, and trimmed by me. The CIA apparently got to the printer, so I had to stay on his back all the time to get the job out much behind schedule, with only 800 poorly printed copies.

My first meager entry as a writer-publisher in 1993, saw immediate changes in UFOlogy, after no more than 50 copies were sold. After all, even before my book had appeared in local Santa Fe bookstores, the Copyright Office had certainly furnished CIA/Langley with a copy, with counterintelligence strategies soon formulated and expedited by the intelligence community. Even the first leak of 1992 (the Introduction), probably resulted in a copy appearing on a CIA desk at Langley.

As a proximate result of my 1993 publishing, the total output of OSI ("Office of Scientific Intelligence", CIA) false propaganda has at least quintupled, in terms of new movies, TV series, books, and magazine articles. There was also some specific misinformation released in video form in Germany, based on (CIA-generated) material, released through the "Hermann Goering Branch of the Knights Templars", an OSI front group, directed specifically at counteracting my book. The CIA knew as early as Dec, 1991, of my intent to produce this book, since I had announced it quite freely among legal 'colleagues' and their spies, who had harassed me for so long.

I had known for at least forty years that CIA/OSI disinformationists control the UFOlogy network, which they themselves created, involving all mass media, especially TV and publishing. As I anticipated, they were among the first people to contact me, their general plan being to give me the 'kiss of death', consisting of quickly arranging to distribute my book—a 'holding action' intended to induce my detrimental reliance and to create a time delay—as they picked my mind, and counter-published "monkey-see, monkey-do, look-alike-type" books, videos, and magazines intended to protract the same old mis-and-disinformation, while attempting to "steal my thunder", by pretending to say something superficially similar in their books—which, unlike my samisdat, would be

massively distributed—to counteract it before the general public could be exposed to my long-suppressed message,

Their main strategy however, was to increase the sheer volume of material in the bookstores, to make my single book a proverbial 'needle in the haystack'. Basically, they BURY you in their B.S. At the same time, they loaded my mailbox with a barrage of their propaganda, thinking that they might 'contaminate' my stuff with their phony 'alien' stuff and other incredulous garbage. I knew long before looking at their material—and can with confidence project this to include their future material—that they now have, and will in the future have, nothing new to say, and are only repeating the same Old Tired Big Lies in a slightly more "sensationalized" and cosmetically disguised form, to 'fresh' audiences each year. In addition, they have regenerated a whole new batch of the same old fabrications in the areas I addressed, such as the facts surrounding the end of WW II, in respect to the "secret" amnesty and partnership agreement between the U.S. and Germany, and what I call "The Phony Fall of the Third Reich". They have also created a profusion of names for German flying saucers and flying saucer projects, most of which never existed, were called by other names, or were known by disguised code letters, such as "p2" and "KT-p2" (the projects I unearthed) were known by. I pretended to rely on these first contacts, using them to whatever limited extent possible to distribute and popularize my book, while pursuing several other avenues of approach to the public. Many distributors are CIA fronts, since prompt dissemination of their propaganda throughout the UFOlogy network is indispensable to their jobs in the intelligence disinformation network. Those distributors who are not witting CIA fronts, or complete dupes, have become so economically invaginated with the CIA-created mythology, that they could not afford to immediately free themselves, even if they wanted to. Economic dependency is a powerful motivating factor.

One of the propaganda thrusts spread the erroneous idea that the "Nazis" invented the flying saucer. With apologies to the ghost of general George Patton, let me suggest that this is tantamount to saying that such a thing as the A-bomb or the airplane is a "Democratic" or "Republican" invention! Firstly, a "Nazi" or "Communist", per se, never invented anything, since only individuals do that, and have usually been looted by various statist cretins throughout history. Secondly, the "totalitarian mind" is by its nature one of a collectivist looter and enslaver, not of a creator or producer. And finally, Nikola Tesla's invention of the "electric flying machine" which was later to be called the "flying saucer" or "UFO", is documentable back to the early part of this century, while his conception of it goes back to the 1870's, during his student days at the Technische Hochschule at Graz, Austria. The idea of Nazi flying saucers is as old as the hills, beginning with the 1944 "Foo-Fighter" publicity, yet even this has remained somewhat suppressed because, though incomplete or incorrect as propagated, is a version which is revealing of certain scientific facts (the corona discharges) and close enough to the truth to point a skilled independent investigator in the right direction, and eventually toward the truth, provided he is armored with sufficient scepticism to traverse the precarious minefields (mindfields) of disinformation which have been laid on all sides. I again emphasize that all the ascertainable secret German documents and important developments came into the hands of the OSS/CIA at the end of WW II, not only

because of such thoroughly exercised searches, but also by the anti-virtue of the special "deal"—ala Operation Paperclip and Reinhard Gehlen's Amt VI[1]— between Germany and America. There are no documents from the Nazi sources or from our government or any cooperating government, which have not been either destroyed or permanently classified, or first been given the disinformation "treatment" by the CIA, before being "declassified", released or otherwise covertly disseminated through whatever outlets anyone may claim. This same rule applies to the statements of all active, former, or retired military or government personnel who were subject to a security order, for a period of at least 20 years from the date of said order or agreement, and all agreements of a higher order, relating to knowledge of flying saucers, even apply a lifetime statute of limitation. Incidentally, I possess the only known true 'leak' from the original Nazi flying saucer source, via a security lapse of Sandia Base personnel in Albuquerque, New Mexico. The FBI's statement on this matter was that I could not be prosecuted for possession or disclosure because I had "...obtained all my information through innocent means." In addition, I have not been subject to a national security agreement since 1977, 20 years after I signed an agreement while in AF Intelligence in my 18th year. Since I was never given direct access to flying saucer secrets anyway, the information I independently collected and developed on my own was never covered.

The main person attempting to spread the idea of a "German origin" for the flying saucer, is an unabashed 'Naziphile' named Ernst Zundel, who owns Samisdat Publishers Ltd., Toronto, Ontario, Canada. He began his publishings at least as early as 1976, and like me, underwent intense judicial harassment, but was misled to believe the harassment was because he is a German "holocaust revisionist' or 'denier', while the apparent reason is because his flying saucer material is "too close" to the truth. The more Zundel was harassed, the more adamant became his Naziphilia. Meanwhile, some of his best saucer books went out of print, just as his harassers desired. Zundel has remained completely unaware that it was really his saucer material which attracted the animosity of the Canadian national security establishment, pursuant to the secret orders under which he was judicially harassed, similar to how I was judicially harassed in New Mexico, under the ostensible guise of "property dealings", during the same approximate period of time.

Though novel in some respects, Zundel's idea of how German saucers worked was incorrect if not completely lacking, being unfortunately subject to prior Nazi/CIA disinformation via Paperclip, and a vague idea of jets, rockets, or some mysterious, esoteric "anti-gravity" system of Felix Schauberger, involving a "water vortex". The Canadians were most likely worried that Zundel might turn up a German-to-Canadian technology transfer dating to 1945 or soon thereafter. In 19531 made my first close-up daylight sighting.

In 19611 had discovered the 1941 Nazi testing of the neutron bomb on the Libyan desert. In 1963 I discovered the exact scientific basis for saucer propulsion, and in 1966 found out about the "stalemate" of 1945, involving 24 German "Electro-U-boats", towing specially designed, smaller subs , carrying (what I believe may have been V-6) rockets with celestial guidance systems and armed with neutron bomb warheads, fueled by red mercury (a mercury-antimony oxide which

---

[1]Christopher Simpson, BLOWBACK (Weidenfeld & Nicolson, New York, 1988).

originated with alchemists of old). In 1996, a documentation of these small missile-carrying subs, developed under the "Lafferenz Project"[1] was provided to me by Henry Stevens of the German Research Project, Gorman, California. The smaller, rocket-carrying subs could be tilted to the correct firing trajectory when desired. Like later American I.C.B.Ms, such as the Polaris A-l missiles carried by our Lafayette class nuclear powered submarines, the missiles could be fired from underwater. I also learned in 1974 that Wernher von Braun had worked in New Mexico in the late 1930s, something which was common knowledge among local rocket pioneers whose work dated from that period, such as the late Peter van Dresser of Santa Fe and El Rito.

I had no source for the complete saucer electrical theories and mathematical formulae, until 1979, a year in which I made great headway. In that year, I acquired knowledge of a 1937 pre-WW II Illuminati "p2" project at Los Alamos, run by von Braun, and acquired the only known extant piece of physical evidence from a WW II 1943-vintage German flying saucer, based on the Tesla discoveries first developed in New Mexico and taken to Germany, before being returned to New Mexico around 1945. This evidence is a celestial guidance slave compass from the "KT-p2" project, in which von Braun included the original New Mexico 1937 "p2" project name, after he had removed it from Los Alamos and transported it to Germany, in 1938, with the apparent good graces of our FBI. The device was on one of the German saucers brought to post-war Sandia Base under Operation Paperclip in 1945, soon followed by a 15,000-person German scientific contingency's exodus to New Mexico[2]. The guidance system was an invention of Nikola Tesla, developed and tested on a 200-mile round trip radio controlled aircraft flight test in conjunction with the Sperry Gyroscope Company, in 1917[3].1 eventually located the source and substance of the scientific data and formulas for the saucer, rediscovered the electromagnetic method for its application, and documented the previously suppressed and intentionally confused historical background concerning the work of Nikola Tesla. In 1997, I authored OCCULT ETHER PHYSICS: Tesla's Hidden Space Propulsion System and the Conspiracy to Conceal It (ISBN 0-9637467-2-3), which I revised in 1998 (ISBN 0-9637467-6-6). It is a documentation of the 19th century scientific research leading up to Tesla's great discovery, which at its earliest, appeared to be in 1891.

Zundel had approached the saucer question with the characteristic tunnel vision of one intent on cleansing away and assuaging German guilt for the crimes of Nazi-era Germany. This is as silly as an old Stalin-worshiper trying to say that Stalin didn't kill off millions of his own people, even including ten million members of his own Communist party. When will people realize that the purpose of Illuminati-created wars is to kill off as many "excess" Germans, Jews, Russians, Americans, British, French, Gypsies, and other peoples as possible? All Hail, Kali Ma! And when are people going to realize that, since the 1770's, the ultimate blame does not properly rest on any

---

[1]Lusar, Rudolf, 1960, German Secret Weapons of the Second World War, Neville Spearman, London; Stevens, Henry, Rumored German Wonder Weapons, Report Number Three, Fantastic German Submarines, German Research Project, Gorman, Ca., 1996.

[2]Discussion between the author and Maj. Helen Nash, Wehrmacht Intelligence, FRD, between 1966-70, Univ. of Tex., Austin.

[3]John J. O'Neill, Prodigal Genius, The Life of Nikola Tesla (David McKay Co., Inc., New York, 1944).

single national group, per se, but with the Illuminati/CFR, rather than with all those who became the cannon fodder/suckers in this massive international conspiracy of "population control", munitions-profiteering and power-consolidation, led by a cabal of central world bankers, especially the banking houses which arose out of the late 18th century German kingdom and the House of Hesse-Kassel. It is no accident that Adolf and Eva Hitler lived out their last days in Kassel. "Oh, really!", you exclaim. Read on.

Despite Zundel's controversial view, he was almost correct about Hitler's planned last-ditch stand against America, using flying saucers and other 'wonder weapons', along with several other 'Wunderwaffen' which were not mentioned as such in Zundel's material, but which I identified for the first time, as the basis not only for one of Hitler's brilliant alternate plans—according to the judgment of the best Russian military analysts who later studied it—but for another even more brilliant plan for which the first plan-evidence of which was conveniently left for the Russians to find in the Berlin Fuehrerbunker—was a mere cover, and which was actually consummated by the coercion of a secret amnesty and partnership agreement between the U.S. and Germany, buttressed by the exodus, under Operation Paperclip, of Nazi saucer R&D, over 400 top scientists, and over 15,000 scientific and technical "slaves", to the U.S. government and the IllumiNazi corporations and banking interests. This plan is so embarrassing that they dare not fully declassify it even today. Though this revelation may startle some of you, its truth is gradually falling, piece by piece into place, from evidence continually surfacing all over the world, especially since the collapse of the Soviet State.

Some people have mistakenly attempted to trace the destination of the Nazi "technology transfer" to Antarctica or South America, and I'm sure the CIA fuels this false scenario which they created. Some of this technology and people involved may initially have gone to South America or elsewhere prior to the finalization of this agreement, until the treacherous combination of the German Amt VI ("Dept. 6") SS RSHA (the Nazi organ upon which the CIA was based), the new CIA created on the Nazi model, and British, Canadian and Australian intelligence, and even Russian intelligence, found and took care of them, where any critical part of the "Big Secret", or any key scientist was" involved. The simple truth is that the flying saucer technology and personnel came to the U.S. of A., lock, stock and barrel, right where Hitler and the rest of his gang agreed to, in order to buy their asses a new lease on life.

My original edition of this book is the most important publication of all time on flying saucers. True to my anticipations, the inevitable CIA look-alike books and other counter-publishings have not plagiarized my original theories, since their objective is not to claim my theories or to advertise them, but rather to "steal my thunder", to overshadow, cloud and suppress my actual findings and distribution of my book, and to obliterate what I have to say, with a voluminous mass of bullshit, spread primarily through the CIA's "UFOlogy network". They have not attempted to discredit, mention, or even to discuss my theories, since this would attract the public's attention, invite meaningful dialogue, and draw in true scientific scrutiny, which I welcome. They prefer to pretend my book does not exist, while using the 'placebo' effect to pacify the public's continual thirst for answers on impertinent questions, while confusing or misinforming them on the American and Nazi saucer developments, through CIA-doctored pseudo-leaks and other blind allies. In addition, they have spewed out a virtual mountain of fresh bullshit, since August, 1993.

Zundel was suppressed until my book was published Then the CIA and Canadian intelligence were apparently forced to rethink their strategy in respect to Zundel's work, 'sanitizing' it of Zundel's involvement and his anti-Semitism, through their own writers, in order to re-propagate his material as a convenient false history of the initial origin of the saucer, as well as the phony, CIA-created science involved, promoting a scheme based on either "esoteric" or "conventional" propulsion systems, but not true Tesla "ether physics". The CIA now uses Zundel's saucer material, since there is nothing harmful in it, because the information available to him had already been carefully screened by them in 1945, for all potentially valuable information, then altered before being declassified and made available to Zundel and other interested parties. All important information which could not be falsified or misinterpreted, remained classified Besides, the Germans themselves were quite capable during the war of creating information "scrambles", and running 'aerodynamic' saucer projects, just to conceal the 'real' one, most likely at Zeppelinheim, south of Frankfurt, or at the Blohm & Voss works in Hamburg, confirmed by a knowledgeable spy friend assigned to the area of Hamburg during the war. Reinhard Gehlen's Amt VI SS RSHA was quite capable of such mis-and-dis-information, in fact invented the CIA's version and implemented it for them. After all, hadn't the O.S.S. hired Reinhard Gehlen's Nazi intelligence network under Operation Paperclip, forming the nucleus of the new CIA?

From the moment that the electro-propulsive saucer's full potential became evident in the early 1930s, forward to the present, rocket projects have been a cover for the "real thing", and ironically, this sham was first actualized in 1937, at Los Alamos, New Mexico, based on stolen Tesla technology, under the tutelage of Wernher von Braun. Hitler had appointed the Prussian Illuminist as "Herr Doktor Professor of Research" and project leader to run his Vergeltungswaffen ("revenge weapon") center at Peenemunde, before his collaboration with the American rocket pioneer, Dr. Robert Goddard, at his laboratory in Mescalero, New Mexico, and rocket test site at Eden Valley, New Mexico.[1] Afterward, von Braun would never allow the high priority ("p2", "KT-p2") 'space travel' project to be too far away from his watchful eye. While collaborating with Goddard at Mescalero, von Braun ran the Illuminati flying saucer project at Los Alamos called "p2", between 1936 and 1938![2] He was given a leave of absence by Hitler for this espionage, and was brought to America by the Smithsonian Institution, the Guggenheim Foundation, and the American Rocket Society, who financed his work and paid for his trip!

A lot of look-alike material presently attempts to mislead the public with the idea that flying saucers were invented by "Germans", were exclusively rocket, jet, or turbine-powered, were based on aerodynamic ("boundary layer") principles rather than electro-propulsion, some vague, (CIA-pseudo-leaked) esoteric 'mercury gyro' "vimana" powerplant, the "water-mystery-power" of Viktor Schauberger's "implosion turbine"—to blow air through what was presumably no more than a glorified, frying air conditioning vent—and that the saucers we see today are based on these. There were several types of German hovering craft which used technology other than electro-propulsion, and even some which combined conventional rocket, jet, or aerodynamic lift with electro-propulsioa Despite all this, what we really call the full-blown "flying saucer", per se, in all

---

[1]The author's discussions with rocket pioneer and scientist, Peter van Dresser, 1973-1979.

[2]The author's discussion with an unnamed employee of the 1937 project in May, 1979.

its glory, is exclusively electro-propulsive, being originally based on technology discovered and developed by Nikola Tesla, before being stolen away to Nazi Germany by Wernher von Braun, in 1938. Despite the thoroughness of the FBI, O.S.S/CIA and the Gestapo, enough evidence remains to document the fact that Tesla's original sauGer developments were earlier than the first successful liquid-fijeled rocket shots of Goddard, Oberth, or von Braun, and the information I unearthed here in New Mexico, documents the acquisition by 1937, by German interests, of Tesla's discovery, indicating the long-standing fallacy of the rocket projects, which were gleefully paraded before us all those years by von Braun and his American Peenemunde clone, NASA. None of the material from Zundel or from other German sources even mentions the "KT-p2 Projekt" (muchless "p2") or von Braun as its real head, or mentions anything about the technology I alone uncovered While some vague disinformation regards "Nazi experiments with electrical discharges" (said to relate only to "electronic jamming devices"), the allegations of "electrogravitics" are based on vague, esoteric and even 'ancient' pseudo-sources (which in fact are pure mythology), and the information goes no further. Other information from American sources is inconclusive and tainted by the presumption of misinformation as well, due to its prior control by the CIA.

For example, "How...", you may ask, "...could the CIA (or its affiliates) plant ancient 'Vimana' material in ancient Hindu or Sanskrit manuscripts?" It should not amaze you to know that many of the 'interpreters' of such works were often East Indians with Oxford or Cambridge degrees, who worked with British intelligence and MI-5, and the OSS in the WWII Asian Theater, and that intelligence agencies hire many such scholars and finance their work Their interpretations are often a matter of...interpretation. What is meant in Hindu mythology, as an analogy to the Arabian 'flying carpet', suddenly becomes a "space ship". While I may know for a fact that there was advanced machine technology akin to ours today, in 1450 B.C., the Vimana stuff isnt it. Playing around with mercury (the so-called "mercury gyro") isn't easy, and many of the theories I've heard are just plum dumb. Besides, if you have any concrete idea of aeronautics, and you've ever really looked at the "Vimaana" stuff, you will see for sure that it is obviously dumb.

The true electro-propulsive principle of the Tesla-based American-German saucers cannot be found by ordinary research, because the CIA has already covered all the bases. There is a publisher who would have stolen my thunder on this issue, but was unable to discover another source, so was stuck with the options of either acknowledging and citing my prior publishing, research, and detective work, or of plagiarizing me, so he begrudgingly "...killed me with faint praise". I tend to think his reluctance reflected either CIA pressure, or his fear of the strong possibility that I will subsequently be proved correct.

Another jealous author who agonized over my discoveries, who claims to be a physicist, even made the ridiculous claim that he "discovered" that saucers are powered by gyroscopes. Gyros create only feeble gravitational 'anomalies' ("weight loss" but not "anti-gravity"). He appears to have gotten this idea from a combination of the Vimana' literature and my book, since I was the first writer to introduce the fact that the Kreisel Teller processed, which was the only solid tie between flying saucers and 'gyroscopic' action, other than vague references in recent CIA/OSI pseudo-leaks through German and Austrian sources, to a Flugkreisel ("Flying-Gyro"), in misinformation designed to tie into the pseudo-"discovery". Later CIA-produced 'German' documents contain the word "Kreisel" ("gyrating" or "gyroscopic") in misrepresented contexts. This man had no prior source other than my book. When I met him in the summer of 1994, he immediately asked me about a matter in my book, right off the top of his head, but never

mentioned me or my book in his bibliography. I suppose that since I discussed and rejected the gyro idea, he was free to claim it, but the idea wasn't mine in the first place. Since he had obviously never seen a saucer up close, if at all, it was probably my mention of the precessive effect which reinforced "gyroscopic antigravity" in his mind. Aside from my pointing out the saucer's precession, the theory of gyroscopic antigravity is as old as the hills, and no one has ever been able to lift a ship off the ground with it, because the magnetic field of the earth is far too weak. This pseudo-scientific theory has always been encouraged by the CIA, since it is wrong, and serves no better purpose than to buttress and further embed such false explanations into the UFOlogy field, and to damage the scientific credibilities of all those foolish enough to espouse or to believe it.

The alternatives presented are: (a) the "air-blower" ("boundary layer") aerodynamic propulsion systems based on the theories of Ludwig Prandtl and the unverified work of Viktor Schauberger; or (b) an ancient, obscure 'vimana' propulsion system (purportedly a "mercury vortex" drive) misinterpreted from East Indian Sanskrit religious texts such as the Bhagivad Gita; or (c) an unknown propulsion system based on "shared alien technology" which is "too complex for our comprehension"; or (d) centrifugal force gadgets which sling weights around in attempt to increase the centrifugal force in one direction and decrease it in the opposite direction (failing to take into account that the 'increase' in centrifugal force in one direction causes the device to behave as if the center of rotation were in the center of angular momentum, so that the 'gain' on one side is canceled by a loss on the other); and finally, (e) the purely electro-propulsive ether-based system which can be documented in the work of Nikola Tesla as far back as the 1870s.

As you should see, the last alternative is the only feasible one, and I have documented its discovery in Occult Ether Physics. There are several other minor systems originating with various tinkerers which just won't make the grade, some of which involve tortured mathematics and pseudo-science of the ley line, geomancy, and Stonehenge variety, etc., or some mysterious stuff called "Schumann resonance" (which was declassified by the CIA when they disseminated the documents referring to it), and finally the work of the Englishman, Searls, which is only rumored to get off the ground, but obviously lacks a control system. Some experimenters may have inadvertently stumbled across something which causes weight loss, or a feeble thrust, but without understanding the simple and correct ether concepts and physics, are unable to succeed, mostly because they are looking for something too complex, if they have not in fact been supported in their futile research by the CIA. Altogether, the alternatives other than the Tesla proposition, too conspicuously place saucer propulsion in the area of the unknown, the unobtainable, the wacko, or depict it as the obscure and indeterminate work of mystical, pseudo-scientific cranks such as Viktor Schauberger or Bruce Cathie.

When you see a real saucer performing at its high capabilities up close, you know it is not powered by any of these feeble contrivances, but requires the great force and magnitude which can only be scientifically attributed to the gravitational-to-electromagnetic conversion constant, which is 10^{40} x fg. The opportunity for a civilian to see a flying saucer up close is much rarer today than it was in 1953, on the West Texas desert to the south of Alamogordo, New Mexico, where the German prototypes were brought, tested and developed after the war.

Since none of the writers I know of producing recent works, have ever seen a flying saucer as I did in 1953, or possess the scientific perspicacity required to interpret what they saw, I can only conclude that their information is Johnny-come-lately "researcher", second-hand conjecture and speculation, abject CIA-duped falsity, or outright CIA misinformation, since almost anyone of

scientific mind, who ever actually saw a flying saucer in the glory of its full potential, would immediately laugh at such phony, CIA pseudo-science, Nazi ass-kissing books, new age charlatanism, illicit money-grubbing plagiarism, and grand-standing sensationalism.

As my acquaintance, former Air Force Colonel, Phil Shaw, of Austin, Texas said in 1967[1], "There haven't been any leaks". Shaw was the former director of two of the most important regional offices of Air Force Intelligence's Operation Blue Book—Reno, Nevada, and Reykjavik, Iceland—before studying jewelry making at the University of Texas. Both before and since then, there were some leaks, and I'm the one who had his bucket set to catch them. I made no bones about it with Shaw, openly accusing him, in the presence of professors and other students, of bending to his CIA orders, in our life drawing classes at the University of Texas Department of Fine Arts. I even embarrassed him a little bit when I showed other students that the lock on his locker in the hall was CIA issue! Shaw made a weakly valiant effort to discredit me, and I thought it no accident that Iceland was a strongly suspected site for wartime German saucer bases, while Reno, Nevada is very definitely 'saucer country'. Shaw knew I was right, but could never admit it.

No gyros, rockets, jets or 'conventionally powered saucers could ever produce the results I saw in 1953, and neither could "mercury gyros", "air suction" or "boundary layer" methods. I knew that a very powerful electrical force, which could be instantly altered and changed in direction, was involved, and this book is the first and only known book to reveal a viable scientific basis for this very real force and the simple method by which it is implemented and controlled. No other researcher in this field has provided any means by which such great force, directional control, or maneuverability could be effected, mainly because they are ALL either CIA employees, whose job it is to hide it, or "second-handers"... "writers" and "researchers"... who can only follow up on CIA pseudo-leaks, snooping around for things which are just not there, or which were conveniently placed there by the "Puzzle Palace", so that these researchers "...found the pieces, and put them all together" (just as the Puzzle Palace planned), thinking they had really 'discovered' something.

I am not only a writer and researcher, but an inventor, analytical and original thinker, experimenter, sceptic, science detective, debunker, and a self-taught theoretical "ether physicist" of the first order. Of course CIA propagandists of the CSICOP ilk like Philip Klass, will only scoff at the inclusion of "debunker" and "ether physicist" in the same breath. Klass and a few others represent the CIA's invasion of the "secular humanist" field, to take it over and use it as another OSI base of operation to attack flying saucer or alternative science researchers, or writers who may threaten to uncover what I call the true, "occult" science of ether physics. This is a brilliant and effective tactic, except for the fact that the "officially accepted" Big Lie physics of today is a prima facie case of flakiness, based on the phony "elastic space and time" concepts taken by Einstein from the Lorentz Transformation, giving birth to Relativity and the "Big-Bang" cosmography, false theories for the public having their roots in the Machiavellian manipulations of Rosicrucianism and the Hermetic Mystery Traditions. In so doing, the CIA has managed to sucker the humanist/sceptic element more firmly into supporting a flaky and false Relativism when, as true sceptics, they should be looking into the concealed alternatives. Why have they accepted on faith the now 'traditional' relativism/big-bang physics, which is interconnected to the

---

[1]Discussion of the author with Col. Phil Shaw (USAF Intelligence., Ret), U.T. Dept. of Art, Austin, Texas, 1967-70.

mixed premise Kaballah-Bible-Talmud-Koran-whopping, paranormal-pushing "traditionalism" (which in fact has also been created or supported by the Secret Government of which Klass is a representative). Are there really many intelligent people who have accepted on faith, the assertion by Klass and his psychophants, that all of the millions of people who have seen "UFOs", have only misinterpreted "natural phenomena"? How many have been led astray by these leading CIA 'spotlights', Philip Klass and the Smithsonian Institution? Klass's false and in fact mystical assumption that all flying saucer "believers" assume that saucers are of extraterrestrial origin, and simultaneously believe in ESP, ghosts, and other irrational paranormalism, is itself a "paranormal claim" being made by Klass. Those who live in glass ("Klass") houses shouldn't throw rocks. I promise as a true sceptic not to make even one 'paranormal' assertion or claim!

The fatally tragic flaw of most "alternative" scientists, is that, in attempting to understand "ether physics", they have irrationally tried to reconcile immiscible Relativism—created by the Hermeticists to conceal ether physics—with ether physics, which is based on the "Fixed Universe" theory, which is not nearly so static as the "Big Bang" theory and Relativism True sceptics would be critical of the mystical physics being enforced upon us by the establishment media.

By comparing the gist of my book with what the OSI has conspicuously omitted or artfully confused, it is clear what they seek to hide. They have hauled out all the old time-worn OSI mis-and-disinformation, and erroneous CIA-tampered Nazi stuff, all altered before being made available to anyone. The documents of the Nazis were collected in the days when they shot first and asked questions later. A review of existing theories shows that, until this 1993 book, the truth was concealed. Isn't that rather odd? My over 40 years prior knowledge made me feel very alone, and I have never ceased to be amazed at the garbage the public has swallowed all along the way.

It should be obvious to intelligent readers as to why my simple, rational, scientifically verifiable explanation—conspicuously absent from all prior sources—has been omitted. I had known since 1953 that the propulsion system was electrical, a fact systematically omitted from the milieu of ideas and information available in prior sources. There are only three possibilities for saucer propulsion, which are (1) electricity, (2) electricity, and (3) electricity. That is because ether propulsion can only be electrically created

The thing which makes the 'electro-propulsive' flying saucer—as well as universal gravity—possible, are some odd flukes of nature, involving the natural interplay between fundamental positive and negative electrical charges in elementary matter, the existence of a universal ether (which I call "Omni Matter"), the permeation of space by omnidirectionally interpenetrating Zero Point Radiation ("ZPR"), and the natural electromagnetic field and enormous electrostatic forces emanating from the earth, which affect the ether through which it moves. The proof of the pudding is in the eating, and intelligent and knowledgeable witnesses who have seen a saucer in action up close, know it is real, and should see that it works on electrical principals. The things which makes these truths now available to you, are the fundamental intelligent human thought processes which are essential to your survival as a creative and independent, thinking person, rather than to give your mind over to the sway of a raving and hysterical Naziphile or other mystic who is peddling irrationality and endless fantasy for the Pentagon, in hopes that he can obtain money, by supplying phony answers which always requires more scientific knowledge and understanding than anyone possesses, so the truth remains concealed just as the Pentagon planned.

The so-called "UFOlogy field" is full of CIA "organ grinders" with their dancing monkies or ventriloquist dummies, who only repeat what their controllers say. Most of the "big guns" are

professional CIA liars. In over 47 years, they have failed to bring forward a significantly new issue, and with the overflowing help of the CIA's abundant publicity machinery, have been singing the same Old Tired Tunes, based on a set of scenarios pre-generated by CIA contract waters in 1947, as one of the first projects of the newly created agency, under the so-called "National Security Act", which was no more than an executive edict which Congress was never even provided the opportunity to approve or disapprove. With all the typical themes already 'set', writers who work for the CIA have a rather hackneyed job of trying to come up with new kinks on the same old themes, always avoiding the one true theme which has been so conspicuously omitted, which to me is much more exciting than all their shabby, shopworn "alien" fantasies.

The CIA-UFOlogists have a very tell-tale fatal flaw, similar to the Illuminati, their bosses. This flaw, which will be the cause of their eventual downfall, is a lack of creativity, which gives them a need to incestuously breed, copy and repeat contrite old lies in order to steal the truth. This fatal flaw is best illustrated by an ancient analogical story about a monkey which was trapped and enslaved by its own self-negating greed, as follows:

A young man was attempting with no success, to capture a monkey in a jungle. Along came a wise old man, who kindly consoled the discouraged young man. and said, "In order to trap a monkey, you must first understand the basic nature of a monkey, and "think like a monkey". I will show you how it is done." Whereupon the old man took a glass jug, filled it half way up with nuts, and tied it firmly to a tree. The young man asked, "How do you expect to trap a monkey with that?" The old man, with a smiling, wry twist of his wrinkled old mouth, said, "Just wait, and you will see." The two men hid in nearby brush, and remained quiet for an hour or so, when finally a monkey descended toward the jug from the dense foliage above. Seeing the nuts in the jug, the monkey extended his skinny hand into the jug, grabbed a large handful of nuts, and attempted to pull them out, except the mouth of the jug was too small to allow the passage of the monkey's hand full of nuts. Nonetheless, the monkey tightly gripped the nuts, refusing to release even a single nut. He stupidly continued to tug at the nuts to no avail. The old man came from his hiding place with a rope, and simply walked up and placed it around the alarmed monkey's neck. The monkey allowed himself to be captured, rather than to release his grip on the nuts in the jug.

To the stupid monkey, stealing nuts was more important than his personal freedom, which he never missed, until he didn 't have it anymore. Then he sadly became a mere toy for the amusement of others, who kept him at the end of a leash when not in his cage, for the rest of his life. The monkey was sold to an old CIA organ grinder, and learned to dance at the end of his leash, to a collection of redundant Old Tired Tunes, monotonously ground out on the old man's whining organ, as the monkey begged for money on the streets ofWashington, D.C.Just across the street from the Pentagon.

VERISIMILITUDE

The "nuts" are hidden truths. The "monkies" are "UFOlogists", on the CIA payroll, and the "Old Tired Tunes" are the same old CIA "alien" and other disinformation scenarios. The problem with the hidden truths, is that they are poisonous to the CIA, and therefore incompatible with the CIA Big Lies, which they will 'contaminate', compromise, and destroy.

All compromise leads to corruption, an attempted mixture of immiscible or incompatible things. Most UFOlogists are indecisive, mediocre, unoriginal, muddled thinkers without spines, the great majority of whom are "second-handers"-literary piranhas who feed in a frenzy off the ideas of others—and mix stolen ideas together until they are as clear as mud. They often make exaggerated claims to be 'first' at something, in their hasty and greedy attempts to steal the thunder of those who realty were the first at some things. They are required to avoid the 'poisonous' ideas (which they seek to obliterate). They usually conceal their thefts, by combining many dissimilar things as a smokescreen—selectively adding a little more here and there—to conceal the fact that their original core of ideas are stolen In their greed and haste, they miss the point entirely, which is the CIA's intent, since "misinformational reverse-engineering" is realty what the CIA wants UFOlogists to do, to create confusion where before there might have been clarity.

The CIA-inspired books are obvious attempts to confuse and use shallow minds, to avoid the rational and clear thinking required to understand the subject at hand Brilliant intuitions are just not the province of hackneyed CIA dupe writers. It must be very frustrating to be one of them, knowing that whatever acclaim they might be 'allowed' to achieve by their bosses, is meaningless and hollow, based on "discoveries" pre-conceived by committees of CIA Ph.D.s.

There is a lot of CIA garbage out there, often purporting to be "great revelations" about such subjects as "Nikola Tesla's work", "anti-gravity", and "free energy". I have never seen so many books, pages, and words so totally devoid of originality, perceptiveness, enlightened consciousness, or any significantly real knowledge about the subjects purportedly covered. Some of these people are literary vacuum cleaners—"brain suckers"—of the ideas of others. They lack the special knowledge to comprehend the material they are purporting to deal with, so their books are little more than bundles of dissimilar ideas packed together without coordinated or integrated editorial comment or design, propagating collected-from-others, self-neutralizing concepts, often claiming that "the author discovered" or "the book reveals" this or that, or 'exposed' something or other, which it never did anything of the sort. Not a single novel revelation or concept is placed in them by the bureaucratic committees which write them in haste. The most this trashy stuff can do for the Illuminati oil, energy, banking and transportation cartels, is to buy a little time. It makes me wonder, for example, how much time can be bought for say, $10 million in false propaganda costs (which we ultimately pay for)?

I don't believe that the public can continue to buy into these hoaxes forever, because there are many intelligent, technologically gifted and discerning people in our society, who have remained in the background, because the CIA garbage has never significantly attracted their interest. These people have held their opinions and conclusions in abeyance, until a more reasonable explanation comes forth, such as that already provided in this book.

One of the my basic concepts is how great ideas have been lost throughout history, by having fallen into the hands of evil and cunning, fraudulent sociopaths, barbarians, destructive religious fanatics, liars, charlatans, and hucksters, or in this case, coercive monopolists. One of the greatest examples of this in ancient history, was the destruction and looting of the great Library of Alexandria, now in Turkey. Had the keepers of the library not collected so much of the ancient world's greatest knowledge in one place, it could not have been destroyed there and lost to history and humanity, in one catastrophic event Given the extent to which documentation shows that ancient conspiracies have been connected to the concealment of illuminating knowledge, just as in our own time, it would not surprise me to learn that the fall of the Library at Alexandria was

engineered by an ancient Mystery School cult, with the fall of the city to the Turks being either preceded by the documents being carried away to...the Vatican Library...or spirited away to the Alhambra. Perhaps that is why the medieval Moors in Spain maintained much of the lost knowledge, while the Dark Ages descended on Europe. The similar accumulation of such knowledge in the secret vaults of the national security establishments of the world today, suggests the possibility of a repeat of ancient history, which could set the human race back yet another 1500 years. Though there are some who may relish this idea, a millennium of ignorance or the black plague do not sound so enticing to me.

This book is dedicated to the idea that individuals in free society should take control of their destinies, beginning with the apprehension and use of flying saucer technology right now, in order to set the human race on its natural path, onwards and upwards to a higher level, free of Illuminati exploitation. The Illuminati cannot have it both ways. They cannot steal from us and continue to hoard secret technology to use on us, without our eventual discovery of the sham, and the use of lies to suppress advanced knowledge. Ultimately, they cannot steal my thunder without revealing their dishonesty and motives. At the risk of being a deluded optimist, I still believe that We the People will eventually prevail, that you will know the truth, and that we will all eventually be free. Until that time finally comes, "I told you so".

Graphic by Angus Lyne

THE ACHILLES HEEL OF THE ILLUMINATI:
"Ether Physics" and Flying Saucer Propulsion

Since so many of the Trilateral/IllumiNazi/Coercivists' ill-gotten gains are in the motor fuel and transportation fields (ships, autos, trucks, trains and planes), I believe the truth concerning flying saucer technology, and use of it by the public, is their "Achille's Heel". Why else would they have labored so diligently for over fifty years keeping such technology secret, ostensibly under the guise of "national security", except to perpetuate their coercive socio-economic, technological and political monopoly?

This conspiracy is illicitly, thoroughly, and often brilliantly enforced and propagated by the Office of Scientific Intelligence ("OSI", CIA), coordinated secret political police, the military, the local police, and the judiciary. The OSI takes a more "active" covert role than other government counterparts, in the dissemination of false propaganda, the creation and orchestration of "UFOlogy" and other front groups, and control of 'key' individuals through subterfuge.

The most obvious, stupid flaw in the propaganda, disseminated under cover of such T.V. series as The X-Files and Sightings, is the fact that, if all the paranormal stuff pushed by such programs were really so damned secret, why would prime-time T.V. programs try so hard to convince you it is true, or even tell you about it? Since when does government disclose, or allow the disclosure of, its biggest secrets, on prime-time, big-network T.V., which is all owned and controlled by the Illuminati, and policed by the OSI/CIA? In respect to "military secrets", what you see and think, is what they want you to see and think, they think. Unfortunately, everything on national media is under FCC control and subject to "national security" screening, to insure that "classified" information is not disclosed Each transmitter has a specially trained N.S.A. employee, in a remote room which contains a listening post and a switch to the transmitter. The job is called "transmitter watch". The employee's job is to listen, with orders to turn the transmitter off whenever anything 'prohibited' by N.S.A. guidelines is being attempted to be transmitted. I had a friend years ago who prepared for the job, after a stint in U.S. Army Intelligence communications, in Southeast Asia He really wanted the job so that he could get paid tor sitting around playing his guitar, while supposedly listening to broadcasts and checking for classified leaks or other 'no-nos'.

The OSI objective is to exclude what I call the Most Rational Alternative ("MRA")—the conspicuously missing third alternative which I have interposed between the Two Big Lies ("TBLs"), in the very narrow space in which the truth has been crushed almost to death. They carry this out by promoting the TBLs and excluding the MRA. I am expanding this third alternative, creating a Wedge of Reason, to be driven between the TBLs, to expose how the MRA has been buried, confused, ignored, excluded and obliterated by the TBLs, which are:

1. That flying saucers do not exist; and,
2. That if flying saucers do exist, they are extraterrestrial.

These two (false) options—propagated by two supposedly opposing factions—are unmistakably like an answer to a legal complaint in a lawsuit, in which the defendant first denies all allegations (a demurrer), thereby challenging those who allege the existence of flying saucers, to prove their existence. Having anticipated the plaintiff's (our) traversal of this denial, the defendant

(the OSI) enters the second false option, through "UFOlogy" groups, which is equivalent to the form of pleading known as a "confession and avoidance" (or "traversal"), which conditionally confesses to that part of the allegations alleging the existence of flying saucers, admitting that (if) they are true and exist, then the diversionary defense (the "avoidance"), traverses and moves sideways, completely off track from the original issues, by introducing the false and contemptuously frivolous idea of "aliens spacecraft". If one examines the complete past liturgy on this matter, they will see that it was the government which first introduced the "alien plea" at 1947 Roswell, as a fraudulent "dilatory pleading" intended to expand the issues into irrelevant areas, to create delay, confusion, and wasted effort, and especially to evoke a response from us. This gets us involved in a dialogue over issues which are entirely impertinent, to exhaust our energy, and in summary, to completely avoid the merits of the issues, getting us absolutely nowhere for years insofar as the real truth is concerned, just as they planned. The fact that these two options clearly show the "badges of fraud" typical of a quasi-legalistic deceit, should have long since alerted rational thinkers to their design by a single control group, the CIA, on behalf of the IllumiNazis. The reason the options bear unmistakabte similarity to legal pleadings, is because the CIA likes to hire lawyers, because the CIA thinks—as one official put it-that "...law school teaches a future employee how to think"[1]. The frivolous, impertinent, long drawn out and dilatory pleadings of the last 52 years, shows the indelible marks of "lawyers at work". And if sabotage of rational thought is your desire, by all means hire a lawyer!

The frivolous "prosecution", made on our pseudo-behalf without our consent, is joined by the ridiculous counter-allegations of the (Secret Government) "UFOlogists"—such as those regarding "advanced alien technology" and "abductions"-and the phony debate is protracted ad infinitum. Under the circumstances, these "pleadings", and all their spurious combinations and variants, are knowingly false and fraudulent, since their proponents have access to the truth, and fail to plead to the merits of the issues which they clearly seek to avoid, as a fraud upon us and the 'court of public opinion'. They also fly in the face reality, since they are inherently contradictory. There are no contradictions in reality, only confused facts and false premises. While the rules of civil procedure allow a defendant to make contradictory defenses, a knowingly false defense, entered for purposes of a sham, can be stricken by the court (of public opinion), and the defendant held in contempt.

One popular false (combination and variant of Options 1 and 2) option, posits 'terrestrial' saucers, based on "alien technology" which is so expensive and far beyond our comprehension that we should forget about it, or, since it is being shared with our government—so the story goes—we must wait until the government decides to 'share' it with us, their damned bosses. All these allegations are not only outrageous, but completely false, and people should wake up and realize that they have been hypnotized.

Options 1 and 2 are both repugnant, since any reasonable, knowledgeable person realizes that the distances to earth from the nearest habitable planets (perhaps millions of light years) is so great, that the 'alien' possibility is ruled out for frivolity, but (in the complete absence of the MRA), Option 1 is often accepted. This conclusion is fraudulently induced by the Secret

---

[1]From the text of a speech of M.B.Wood, 9th Reg. Dir. CIA, to my law class, U.T. School of Law, 1966.

Government's heinous mind-control lies. Water skiing on the dark side of the moon? Really! More Big Lies, ad infinitum. Should I laugh or puke?

The way the UFOlogy field is controlled is obvious, and my knowledge of this is buttressed by actual personal experiences. If you are "on the right track", the O.S.I. gang pretends to befriend you You naturally want to promote your material and your career, so you go along with it so long as the effects are positive. They invite you to participate in one of their "expos" as a speaker, to promote and sell your books or other materials, and to give a 'workshop'. If your stuff is still out of sync with their plan, they go to work on your mind. But if you don't abandon your stuff, or adapt it to their 'party line' and help them spread their phony shit, they blacklist you from speaking, and try to obliterate your message. They 'pick you up' and 'drop you', to coerce your adoption of their party line, so you will be asked to speak again. This only works on unethical people who have nothing valuable to say, or who are so weak and stupid that the party line looks feasible.

I: The Most Rational ALTERNATIVE

The third alternative—the "MRA"—is as follows:

3. That all saucers are real, man-made flying machines, invented and flown by human beings for over fifty years, there being no alien contacts whatsoever on earth.

This option comports with what philosophers call "Ockham's Razor" (a test which cuts between bullshit and reason). Furthermore, 1 reiterate that saucers are based on relatively simple, long-known electrical technology, consummated in the late 1930s, when technology was comparatively primitive. This alternative challenges the OSI/CIA to prove—through their agents and dupes—what it falsely asserts. They have failed to do so after over 52 years, and can be presumed to be liars and huxters (since "dupes" is reserved for civilians).

Since the OSI doesn't even want my MRA to exist, it will never be seriously or consistently argued by (their) proponents of the TBLs, who will not plagiarize me, or even risk addressing the issues. They have attempted to conglomerate some of my ideas with some of theirs, or to "steal my thunder", but the truth is not compliant to such a corruption of ideas. My alternative is immiscible with their lies, and even mentioning it would only create more self-contradietory ("repugnant") 'pleadings'. Like quicksand, the more they wallow, the lower they sink.

In my first version of SPACE ALIENS, I called the proponents of Option 1 the "Philip Klass Psychophants". I hereby dub the proponents of Option 2, the "Adamski Psyehophants". The OSI "Alien Abductions Hoax" of Whitley Strieber, Budd Hopkins, and Dr. John Mack of "Haaavad", is not a separate saucer option, but rather a part of Option 2, which is inseparable from its counterpart, Option 1, all of which are mutually repugnant OSI BIG LIES. Proponents of Options 1 and/or 2 are either.

1. Witting Secret Government agents and liars; or,
2. dupes.

Some truly innocent dupes are not stupid, just naive. Considering this, I point out the incredibly devious route the Secret Government takes to "manufacture witnesses". A case in point is a woman I later mention, Vicki Landrum, who may still believe that a NASA employee named John Schussler is her "friend". Schussler has been transferred' to the OSI, and now propagates the abductions-by-aliens scenario. Landrum thought he had been "fired" by NASA for backing her up, but this was part of a "good cop/bad cop" routine, intended to create his 'cover[1] as a 'sympathizer', in his new job with the OSI. Landrum is smart enough to figure it out. At the time Schussler sidled up to her, Landrum was in dire need of help. While pretending to help Vicki Landrum, Schussler was spying on and misleading her for NASA and the OSI, his new boss.

In order to understand all this, many need to do some self-assessment and careful examination of the facts, during the time they became unknowing tools. There are a few people who have just jumped on the 'UFOlogy' bandwagon, saying whatever it takes to sell books or establish themselves as "witnesses" or "abductees". Then there are those who were unwittingly used by the OSI, through the use of such drugs as scopolamine, chloral hydrate, sodium amytal, or even more exotic techniques and drugs, combined with hypnosis. The dupes are usually chosen by personality profile, epistemology (must be Platonist), religiousity (also Platonist), as well as possibly neurological abnormalities such as certain sleep disorders, any or all of which may render them especially vulnerable to the 'manufacturing' process. There is no guilt for having been conned

Dr. John Mack[1] sociopathically concentrates on narcoleptic patients. The "abductions" scenario came into general use around 1975 (just prior to the Travis Walton incident in Arizona), when the CIA realized their Old Big Lie program had become stagnant and needed a new, more bizarre twist. The scam incorporated new special effects, fancier props, better acting, better drugs, and more professional sets. A documentation of some of the inner workings of some of these scams was sent to me[2] in early 1994. In my first edition, I mentioned that a book had been stolen from me before I had an opportunity to read it, having forgotten its title and author, but in a phone call from author Walter Bowart, I was able to determine that it was a first edition of his Operation Mind Control, because it had a red and black cover, and was published in England The female OSI book thief had lived with Dr. Jacques Vallee for two years, and was the same woman who stole two photographs (one showing three rhesus monkies in G-suits, and the other showing a rather corny and poorly fabricated fake "flying saucer", in a hanger) which had been sent out to area newspapers by the Army Air Force Intelligence P.I.O., Walter Haut, in the initial Roswell Hoax. These photos, and my Peiltochterkompass, were sufficient physical evidence—originating with the government itself—to prove beyond a shadow of a doubt that the U. S. government had Nazi flying saucers, and had executed the Roswell Hoax to conceal their terrestrial origin, followed by the Pentagon's "Weather Balloon Hoax", designed to conceal the first (bungled) hoax.

Because of the connection between Vallee and the OSI she-thief, I had realized that the theft was engineered by the Secret Government, and now realize that the thief worked under Vallee, whose main job has always been to straddle the fence, continually vacillating between the questions, "are UFOs real?", "are UFOs illusion?", "are aliens here?", or "are UFOs secret

---

[1]John E. Mack, Abduction - Human Encounters with Aliens

[2]Letter from Walter Bowart to Wm. Lyne, 1994.

government aircraft?" This is so they can maintain a balance between both sides of the phony debate, which does not even consider the fact that the UFOlogists and people like Vallee work for the CIA. Since my evidence could have tipped the scales completely off the balance, they had to steal it. They refer to such thefts as "retrievals".

For an intelligent person who has never seen a saucer, there is always the lingering possibility in the back of the rational mind, that they simply don't exist, like ghosts. Once a person has made a broad daylight, close range sighting, there is no longer any doubts as to their existence, and the person should be able to confidently proceed to solve the remaining questions, if not suckered into falling into one or the other side of the phony debate.

By the time I was eight years old (1946), I had already interviewed many reliable witnesses who had observed "flying discs" in the vicinity of Roswell (130 mi. N.W.) and Alamogordo (180 mi. W.N.W.), so I knew they existed, and had probably been brought under Operation Paperclip to Ft Bliss with Wernher von Braun and his 116 top scientists, in September, 1945, when von Braun was appointed Chief of Research, U.S. Army Ordnance[1]. In the spring of 1947, 1 had caddied for my father's first 36 holes at the Roswell Country Club, and caddied another 18 holes there a few weeks later, in a professional tournament in which he was "first runner-up", winning a new Remington electric razor, and a set of Samsonite luggage. While observing the sky while waiting between shots and putts, I saw a few dime-shaped disks glinting in the sun, but wasn't sure they were flying saucers until my 1953 close-up sighting, in which the saucer departed in a trajectory directly toward Ft. Bliss, at c. 9,000 mph.

If there was ever alien contact, I would probably have known it, and if anyone has proof, here I am baby! Just hit me with the evidence (and I don't mean a bunch of government documents, or pseudo-interpretations of ancient Sumerian clay tablets)! I have been waiting a long time, and I'm still waiting, but I don't expect proof this late in the game, especially since I know any "proof would be a fabrication of the OSI "MYTH FACTORY". If this statement seems blunt, I have no apology, and my feelings won't be hurt if you continue to insist on the Ridiculous Big Lies—that there are aliens from outer space, manipulating the human race—since I know these "aliens" are really Pentagon-created delusions, and that those of you who really think you believe the alien stuff have been made jackasses of by the OSI. Feel your ears growing longer? It is impossible to "believe" a lie. Why? Because, in order to "believe" something, one must have some "means by which they know it to be true". Since a lie is untrue, the means is non-existent, and what is purported to be the means, is first a lie to oneself, an agreement with the self to believe a lie.

To the witting agents out there: How does it feel to be a traitor to your people, who conceals technology which would improve the quality of your life and that of your children, and ultimately extend human life on this earth? How does it feel to be the pawn of a warmongering gang of mass murderers?

---

[1]Current Biography. 1952: New York Herald Tribune, p 14 D 4 '46.

II: The O.S.I. Myth Factory

Many have never heard of the OSI, or are confused by the fact that there are at least three OSIs. The first one was the Office of Special Investigations, supposedly set up to investigate Nazi war crimes and criminals after WWII, and was appended to the Tribunal at Nuremberg and the U.S. Department of Justice[1]. This O.S.I, was compromised by helping to protect or conceal many war criminals through its complicity with Operation Paper Clip. The second OSI is the Office of Special Investigations, USAF, which was set up to pretend to investigate "UFO" sightings, having as its real purpose the plugging of leaks about flying saucers connected to the Air Force. The third and most important OSI is the Office of Scientific Intelligence, a branch of the CIA's Science Directorate[2], Clandestine Services, set up to gather 'strategic' scientific information, to disseminate classified 'strategic' mis-and-dis-information, and to run programs designed for such purposes, which includes fomenting domestic "UFOlogy" groups and related hoaxes. Its most important function is plugging any and all leaks regarding flying saucers, by whatever means necessary, on behalf of its IllumiNazi bosses, and to prohibit the development of such resources by private individuals. This particular OSI was and is the most secret of the three, and use of the same "OSI" tag was probably intended to maintain this secrecy by confusion. It has worked pretty well until now. Imagine a group set up to protect Nazi criminals, named the same as one set up to prosecute them. The OSS and Reinhard Gehlen's Amt VI, SS RSHA had a baby, called the CM.

I have always believed that the purpose of all three OSIs involves the Nazis and flying saucers. The first OSI not only investigated war crimes, but also insured that independent post-war investigators looking into the Nazis, did not probe into flying saucer technology, or the secret technological and political deal entered into at the war's end, between the Third Reich, the U.S. government and certain CFR/Trilateral/IllumiNazi-owned corporations, all neatly concealed under Operation Paper Clip[3].

The OSI maintains numerous teams of Ph.Ds. The procedures followed by these teams in the production of appropriate propaganda, are identical to those used in movie production or political campaigns. The scenarios for their scripts are based on the old pre-generated scenarios, as they apply to 'intelligence', gathered from the public, such as what writers like myself are saying, and the public's reactions. After evaluation of current intelligence, false propaganda counter-strategies to be used in the dissemination stage, are designed by OSI clandestine operations personnel. OSI think tanks' brainstorm on plans and proposals, to generate 'new' possibilities on the old themes which are used as 'guidelines', and some of these possibilities are incorporated in proposals. The writer teams then prepare numerous scripts, based on current strategies recommended by evaluators. Final proposals, including scripts, budget breakdowns, potential producers, production schedules, etc., are then reviewed, with approved projects advancing to the production stage. "Script writers" are chosen to 'front' the scripts, and money is provided to producers.

---

[1]Victor Marchetti and John Marks, The CIA and the Cult of Intelligence (Dell, 1980-84).

[2]John Marks, The Search for the "Manchurian Candidate". WW. Norton & Co., New York/London.

[3]1 (supra) compared to related information in Charles Higham's Trading with the Enemy (Dell, 1983).

Over the years, the OSI has created avenues into the Hollywood world and all other potential propaganda media. A review of previous Hollywood, or CBS/NBC/etc, productions, reveals that the OSI tends to use the same producers, 'writers', actors, and staff, to limit the possibility of leaks concerning their covert backing. A review of flying saucer propaganda history will show the method in their madness. Old scenarios are discarded, and new ones adopted. It is often in their interest to collect old propaganda, and to destroy it, so hang on to all the stuff you have, since old names, places, dates, and scenarios have a way of throwing a light on the present, to reveal the truth behind another Big lie. Besides, the future value of your old propaganda pieces as "collectibles" will only increase, as laughable examples in the future, of Big Brother's foiled attempts at mind-control of the public, through mass promotion of "parapsychology", the Platonist epistemology, and false "alien" and mystical science propaganda.

III: Gravity and Tesla's Work

Some of the most basic scientific facts and principles are being concealed and misrepresented, beginning in kindergarten, so we must each re-examine nature, and question all theories, in order to identify and reject scientific lies and omissions, and to rediscover and propagate "true science". About 1937, "science" and space propulsion became really schizophrenic. While Wernher von Braun ostensibly developed rockets, he covertly developed secret Illuminati flying saucers; while Albert Einstein's relativism and Werner Heisenberg's "uncertainty principle" were being publicized, the 'ether physics' of Nikola Tesla and others was being ridiculed, yet was secretly being used for saucer propulsion and wonder weapons so highly classified that they were never even intended to be used in WW II.

H. A. Lorentz had said that, by simply increasing the negative "moving" charges (orbital electrons), attached to the "stationary" nuclear charges (protons and neutrons) of atoms, that the gravitational attractive force acting on the positive charges of the nuclear mass would be completely neutralized. Add to this the constant conversion formula—which says that the electrical attractive force is 10^{39} x 2.2 times stronger than the gravitational attractive force G[1] -—by which Lorentz had suggested a scientific hypothesis for an electrical flying machine, such as that already under development by Tesla and supported by his ether propulsion discoveries.

Tesla at first conducted tests[2] (the high voltage experiments relating to the high frequency reactance between two parallel metal plates), to verify his hypothesis. His tests confirmed that at sufficiently high voltage and frequency, the "space" (containing the ether) between the plates, became what Tesla termed "solid state", verifying the existence of what I call the "Omni Matter" (A.K.A., "the ether") which behaves under sufficiently high voltage/frequency "Tesla currents", as if it is a 'continuous, electrically conductive fluid', possessing mass, inertia and momentum, which can be 'pumped', to suspend or propel the plates in space). Tesla then carried the hypothesis a step further, and concluded that an electric flying machine could be propelled by electric current and the reactance of high frequency, high voltage electromagnetic waves. This electricity would use the

---

[1]R.L. Armstrong and J.D. King, The Electromagnetic Interaction (Prentiss-Hall, Inc., Englewood Cliffy N.J.

[2]T.C. Martin, The Inventions. Researches and Writings of Nikola Tesla, The Electrical Engineer, N.Y. (1894).

inertia of the 'continuous, electrically conductive fluid mass' of the Omni Matter, to be pulled and pushed against, using the Hall effect magneto hydrodynamic ("MHD") principle.

The ether physics of Tesla was quite different from the theories of others, and was based on astute observations and sound experimental science. In 1876, H. A. Rowland had published the results of his experiment in which a gold foil covered ebonite disk was rotated in a magnetic field, showing feat electric charges on the disk were carried around with it as it was rotated.[1] This gave rise to the catchy phrase, "An electrostatic charge carried around is a current". Rowland's student in Baltimore, Edwin H. Hall, based on his teacher's work, had done an experiment in which he had placed a gold leaf strip in which a current was flowing into a magnetic gap, producing an electromotive force at right angles to the magnetic field and the current, proportional to the product of the two.[2] This is called the "Hall Effect", and we know that it was influential on Tesla, because he mentioned it many times, because it is the basis for MHD (Magneto-Hydro-Dynamic) generators and pumping, and was used by Tesla in his electro-propulsion.

In his 1891 lecture, Tesla stated that the "enormous electrostatic forces" emanating from the earth, "rigidifies" the ether within earth's electric field, as it moves through space "like a charged metal ball" (due, as he would later say, to earth's movement through space at over 70,000 mph.). To Tesla, the ether was composed of "independent carriers", "immersed in an insulating fluid"; while this ether behaves as a solid to "heat" and "light", it behaves like a "fluid" to solid bodies, which are allowed to pass through it.[3] Furthermore, according to Tesla's analysis, a D.C. brush current could be used on the forward end of a ship, to create a "rarefaction" of, and "rapid exchange" of the carriers, which would stretch the medium and create an inducement of movement in that direction, while a high frequency alternating current would be used on the opposite, trailing end, to cause a "compression" of the carriers, which would block their passage.

According to the later researches and publishings of J. J. Thomson[4], he had mathematically developed the theory of moving tubes of force. Two years later[5], Thomson declared that "...the aether is a storehouse of mechanical momentum". Tesla, in his prior lecture[6], had mentioned the tubes of force and disclosed some of his discoveries concerning the ether and momentum

Tesla had stated that all his inventions were created in furtherance of his "electric flying machine"[7], which he had partially designed before coming to America, carefully carrying the plans under his arm when he arrived on the ship in 1883. The rest of his things were stolen on his

---

[1]H. A. Rowland, Ann. d. Phys., clviii [1876], p. 487.

[2]Edwin H. Hall, Amer. Jour. Math, ii [1879], p. 287.

[3]T.C. Martin, Supra (Chap. XXV, The Scope of the Tesla Lectures, p. 137).

[4]J. J. Thomson, Phil Mag. xxxi [1891], p. 149.

[5]J. J. Thomson, Recent Researches in Electricity and Magnetism [1893], p, 13.

[6]Nikola Tesla, Lecture Before theAIEE., Columbia College [1891],

[7]Frank Parker Stockbridge, The Tesla Turbine, The World's Work [Mar., 1912, pp. 543-48].

departure for America. Though literally penniless at the time, his step off the boat was to be worth untold $ billions to America, and he knew it

J. J. Thomson had stated in 1893 that if moving tubes of force entering a conductor are dissolved in it, mechanical momentum is given to the conductor, at right angles to the tubes and to the magnetic induction, and is proportional to the vector product of electric and magnetic forces.[1] Tesla's statement in 1891 that the use of high frequency alternating current would compress and block the passage of the tubes was apparently intended to force the tubes being drawn into the conductors of a ship by the D.C. brush at the opposite end, to dissolve in the conductors, and impart momentum to the ship to which the conductors were attached, in the direction of the brush. Tesla said he had developed his Dynamic Theory of Gravity in 1893 and 1894. He never published it, since to do so would have disclosed the secret to his electro-propulsive discoveries, which he did not want the war mongers to get. In 1942 and 1943, the FBI stole, concealed, or retrieved every known complete copy of the original theory. The theory can be pieced together only from bits and pieces, such as collateral references, in still-available sources. I will give the basic tenets of the theory in this book.

In 1915, in an unpublished statement[2], Tesla related his discovery, while in technical school in Graz, Austria, of "...a flying machine quite unlike the present ones...", "...devoid of sustaining planes, ailerons, propellers and other external attachments, which will be capable of immense speeds...", "...sustained and propelled entirely by reaction...", "...which will be controlled mechanically or by wireless energy". Tesla was never involved in rocketry, so these statements clearly referred to a different sort of electric flying machine, propelled by the reactance of high frequency electromagnetic waves and electric current In 1900[3], Tesla described how movement of the control apparati could be effected, "...when they are carried by a vessel floating in the air...", by "...connection of one terminal of the receiving apparatus" to the ground, "...inductively". This pertained to how a flying saucer may be inductively ("virtually") grounded by the neutral or positive terminal of "p2". (NOTE: "p2" will be explained later in this book.)

In 1940[4], Tesla announced his Teleforce, consisting of four already tested inventions, as follows:

"(1) A means of producing rays in the free air without a vacuum;
(2) a method of producing a very great electrical force;
(3) a method of amplifying this electrical force; and
(4) a new method for producing a tremendous electrical propelling force."

---

[1]J. S. Thomson, Recent Researches in Electricity and Magnetism, [1893], p. 13.

[2]John J. O'Neill, Prodigal Genius (supra), p. 172.

[3]Patent No. 649,621, Apparatus for Transmission of Electrical Energy, lines 65-70.

[4]William L. Laurence, New York Times [Sept. 22,1940].

(NOTICE: Number (4) above stated "propelling" force, rather than "repelling" force such as some UFQlogy/CIA misinformants would have you believe, and also note that all four of these inventions were already tested at the time, rather than just the first two, as the CIA would also like for you to believe. In a Dec. 8, 1915 article in the New York Times, Tesla had brought up the same electrical propulsion system—except with a generator on the ground supplying electrical energy to an airborne ship via beam—which he said would travel over a million miles per hour (perhaps its potential velocity in outer space, as this seems exaggerated.)

To show you how insidious the misinformers are, and how easy it is for them to dupe sensation-addicts', there have been several recent instances where the misinfoirnation regarding the four above listed inventions, from the original 1940 New York Times article, has been misstated in a sly and oblique way that few would suspect, right under the noses of the "Tesla experts". The four inventions were already tested at the time, and (4) was indisputably a propelling force. Anyone who ran down the original article to examine it as I did, would know that

Among the several places I have discovered this misrepresentation, was a so-called "patent" on HAARP (High Frequency Active Auroral Research Program). The only purpose for such a fraudulent misrepresentation would be for the explicit purpose of misrepresenting the original Tesla material, to those studying Tesla's work, because it represented one of the few 'unretrieved' leaks of Tesla's discovery of the flying saucer propulsion system. The patent[1] is now held by Arco Power Technologies, Inc., under which they purportedly perform "top secret" tests tor the government, from the North Slope of Alaska The patent is allegedly one of three patents previously locked up under a Navy security order. To begin with, patents are not issued on inventions primary to secret projects. Whatever the real purpose of the HAARP project, you can bet your booties it isn't what they say it is. Secondly, the real purpose of planting the false particulars in a 'patent' which should never have been issued, is so that the misinformation would end up in publications read by 'alternative researchers', to obscure and misrepresent Tesla's discovery of the ether propulsion system used on flying saucers. And who is ARCO? ARCO (Atlantic Richfield Oil Company) was created by Trilateral Commission/Council on Foreign Relations member Robert O. Anderson, of Roswell, New Mexico, the creator of Diamond A Cattle Company, the largest holding company in North America, which owns all known oil shale deposits in North America, and almost all mineral rights in the North Slope of Alaska. Anderson was also, at the time the second edition of this book was published, the President of the Bilderburgers, about which I will have more to say later.

Early on, during the 'fuel crisis' of 1974, Arco moved to garner a monopoly on solar and alternate energy resources, apparently based on a fear that the reactionary alternate energy movement could cut seriously into future fossil fuel profits. The misinformation placed in the 'patent', was repeated[2] just precisely where it shouldn't have been, but just precisely where the Secret Government wanted it Once something like this gets started, where does it stop? Those

---

[1]No. 4,686,605, issued to Barnard J. Eastlund, Spring, TeKas, 1983.

[2]NEXUS MAGAZINE, April-May 1995; EXTRAORDINARY SCIENCE, Jan-Feb-Mar, 1995 (official magazine of International Tesla Society, article by Dr. Nick Begich, New Uses of Tesla Technologies for global Control).

who should have known better, did nothing to stop it. Where the ball goes, nobody knows. We cannot allow this Trilateralist misrepresentation of Tesla's work to go unchallenged.

If we search the early inventions of Tesla (the later ones are concealed by the government) it appears that along with the Tesla coil, there were several related inventions such as generators and a marvelous turbine, intended to provide a compact and portable means for the generation of power needed on the flying machine---a "prime mover of sufficient activty"--invented to supply electrical current for the coil, as the fundamental device to increase the moving negative charges. This also explains Tesla's fascination for such a low weight-to-power in his turbine, using the motto, "20 Horsepower Per Pound", on the masthead for the "Tesla Propulsion Company". By "propulsion", Tesla included ether propulsion.

IV: Dealing with "Equal and Opposite" Forces

If the Tesla transmitter produced negative pulses which "preponderated" over the opposite pole of "p2", the question as to whether the "equal and opposite" forces would propel the saucer, depended on several things. Since the electrical attractive force is so much stronger than the G force, it would be conservative to conclude that a small amount of electrical power would be sufficient to propel a relatively large mass through space at an astounding speed, relying on the fact that all mass has excessive positive charge, and that the ether has sufficient positive charges and rigidity to provide something for an electric flying machine to "pull against", as it accelerated in a particular direction. This electrical attractive force is thousands of zillions of times stronger than the gravity force which pulls it toward the ground! Great care would be required in designing the shape of the flying machine's surface, since it might cause the acceleration of objects toward itself, as well as itself toward them. By use of a concave parabolic shape, tor example, the electric force would be focused at the center of its radius, at a particular distance from the inwardly curved surface. On a machine of large mass, this shape could cause a smaller object to be jerked toward it with fantastic force. It could literally jerk a person's head off, were it located at the focal point of the parabola If, on the other hand, one wanted only to "beam up Scotty", a carefully controlled, weaker force could be exerted with a small, parabolic dish of slight curve, pointed downward, in or on the bottom of the machine as it hovered, to pull an object (or person, or young bull), up into the machine.

An appropriately designed flying machine should have a reminded, gradually curved surface, to prevent the leakage of charges into the atmosphere as much as practicable, as well as to insure that the electric force would be dispersed and radiated outward over a broad area, so as to avoid focusing the force, and to diffuse it over a greater volume of space, containing greater mass (of atmospheric gasses, distant bodies, and the polarized, 'solid state', Omni Matter), so the smaller mass of the machine is, attracted forward or upward, with as little disturbance of atmospheric mass as possible. This was the reason for the many Tesla experiments with rounded conductor surfaces, his concern with atmospheric science, and his care to see that the elevated dome-shaped conductor for his Wardenclyffe Tower project was always positively charged (since a shot of negative pulses might have jerked it off its supporting foundation).

There are so many rounded surfaces in Tesla's designs, that it gave me cause to wonder why Margaret Cheney, in her Tesla biography, Tesla: Man Out of Time1, using a passe', post-mortem Freudian psychoanalytic technique, alleged that Tesla had a near psychotic phobia of "rounded surfaces", evidenced by his revulsion and fear of pearls, based on an underlying "fear of the female breast". This hypothesis seemed belabored and misplaced, since Tesla's dislike for pearls appeared to be the result of his well-known phobia of germs, since pearls are essentially the result of a type of 'infection' in oysters. Could this sloppily surmised "phobia of rounded surfaces" be an O.S.I-designed ruse to lead us away from one of the fundarnental ideas of Tesla's flying saucer? Did Tesla realty have an irrational fear of "the female breast" and "all breast-like shapes" ("flying saucers"), as Margaret Cheney said?

Quite to the contrary, many of Tesla's inventions are a glory to the breast, and a display of his apparati looked like a veritable garden of breasts, to be sure. Howard Hughes certainly had nothing on Tesla in this respect. The final design tor his (originally "titty-like") Wardenclyffe Tower electrode, multiplied the titty motif literally hundreds of times, in different sizes! It looked sort of like a giant donut covered with bras. There is an unmistakable similarity between the Wardenclyffe Tower electrode, and early German saucers, presumably reflecting Tesla's original designs, which could just as well have been called "Flying Titties". "UFOlogists might have been called "Boobologists". Is the female breast shape the most perfect flying saucer shape? I have to conclude that I think Tesla loved the female breast, and other such shapes. I won't dwell further on this lovely issue; I should have made my point, so now I'll cut to the chase.

When Tesla died in 1943, few noted that a great scientist and inventor had died It was as if he had scarcely lived, and that his only contributions were A.C. current generators, distribution systems, and motors. Before what I call my 'Tesla Revival", beginning around 1976, there was an obvious attempt to conceal Tesla's place in history, which I believe was because he invented the flying saucer. The national security establishment wanted to dispel private Tesla research or experimentation, since the most fundamental discovery associated with him-the Tesla coil—was also the fundamental discovery used to power the flying saucer. It is still against federal law to operate an unshielded spark gap and Tesla coil, or a Ford Model T coil with a spark-gap. These laws, dating from the early '40s, are still on the books, and though ostensibly enforced by the F.C.C., I think they were really intended to prohibit civilian rediscovery of Tesla's' flying saucer.

Tesla was irritated by Albert Einstein and his theories, and considered himself greater than Einstein. Why? The following comparison may answer this question:

V: A Comparison of Gravitational and Electrical Force,

As Applied to Flying Saucer Propulsion

The electrical attractive force is 1039 x 2,2 times stronger than the gravitational attractive force G. This equation is a constant, for converting from the gravitation to the electrical attractive force.

---

[1]Margaret Cheney, Tesla: Man Out of Time [1981], Prentiss-HalL

Example: 1,000 ft. -lbs. of mechanical energy are required to lift a 1,000 lb. flying saucer to a height of 1 ft. above the ground. This is 1,356 joules (1 ft.lb.=1.356 joules). Divide this by the
above constant, to show that only a tiny electrical force will do more work than a 'conventional' mechanical force, such as that produced by rockets or propellers.

This is true for work is done by a constant vertical force F, and motion in a straight vertical line in the direction of the force. The work done on a body is defined as the magnitude of the force,
times the distance d through which the body moves. Inversely, the power produced by the constant
gravitational force G, acting to move a 1,000 lb. flying saucer from a point 1 ft. above ground, to the ground, would be 1,000 ft.-lbs. (= 1,356 joules, the same equivalent work required to pick the saucer up, against the constant vertical G force, to the 1 ft. height). Since the magnitude of electrical attractive force is the G force times the conversion constant, and the work performed on a body equals the force times distance, then:

W=fd,or Work = (10^{39}x 2.2x 1,356 joules) x 1 ft.,or
W= 40,492,781,690,140,845,070,422,535,211,091,549,295.77 miles.

The above calculation would be true if the G force remained constant for that distance above earth, so it would be much greater, since there would be no gravity to overcome once the saucer was outside the earth's gravitational field. The work done by conventional energy, when converted in this manner, should theoretically do 10^{39} x 22 times more work, though in practice, there are inevitable losses, such as corona leakage and electrical resistance reflected as dissipated heat, etc, in the application of power (which, to be conservative, might amount to as much as 30%). In view of the vast increase in work, such losses are insignificant. This phenomenon is one of the fantastic tricks of nature which can be utilized through science, and its discovery by Tesla in the flying saucer, is definitely the greatest invention I know of. No wonder Tesla considered himself greater than Einstein! After all, the saucer is certainly more important than the atom bomb, though Einstein didn't invent the bomb, or anything else, for that matter, to my knowledge, other than Big Lie Illuminist Physics. On a positive note, what Einstein did invent, however, were many very sweet and 'profound' platitudes and anecdotes involving the archetypical "eccentric, genius, absent-minded professor."

VI: Momentum and Applied Force

Simply put, momentum is equal to the overall force required to produce a particular increase or decrease in the velocity of a particular body. The rate of change of momentum is also equal to the applied force. Since an applied electromagnetic force is so much stronger than an 'apllied' gravitational force, the rate of change of momentum is also that much greater.

The force applied from a saucer, toward the ether in space, is emanated outward from a curved, convex surface of certain area, and directed toward a much greater area of space, containing an ether which is rigidified by the enormous, rapidly varying electrostatic forces emitted
from the earth, which as Tesla said caused the ether to assert its "inertia-resistance". In addition, there are atoms and molecules of matter such as gasses and water droplets which presents more of a problem than a solution. The total reaction between the saucer and the combined rigidified

etheric fluid and carriers (Omni Matter) is apparently more considerable than one would think. This is partly brought about by the saucer's shape, which determines how the force is distributed.

Though the saucer is a compact, more solid mass than the atmospheric gases and ether, the saucer is pulled at a high rate of acceleration. The real work done on the Omni Matter is apparently the result of the propulsive force created by the D.C. brush, as it eats up the tubes of force, which are forced to dissolve in the conductors by the high frequency blocking current at the ship's opposite end. The convex surface directs the force outward along lines which are perpendicular to the curved saucer surface. As the lines of force extend outward, they grow further and further apart, to affect a greater total volume of space and Omni Matter. Considering the density of vacuum space and the magnitude of the force, the interactance by astounding propulsion of a ship by the much stronger electromagnetic force, is the "equal and opposite reaction".

The etheric fluid and carriers in front of the saucer are 'stretched', creating a low pressure (ratified ether) 'cone', as the charges also cause the atmospheric gases to become mutually repellant According to Tesla, "...on the assumption that the independent carriers are of any configuration such that the fluid resistance to motion in one direction is greater than in another, a stress of that nature would cause the carriers to arrange themselves in groups, since they would turn to each other their sides of the greatest electrical density, in which position the fluid resistance to approach would be smaller than to receding."[1] Tesla has described how the elastic force of the stretched ether has made movement in that direction easier. As the saucer accelerates to perhaps 9,000 mph., the shock wave is dampened by the low pressure cone, thus eliminating a potential sonic boom, as the gasses gradually return to plenum as the corona trail dissipates. The saucer's negative ion path and ejectment of mutually repulsive Omni Matter to its aft, causes the low pressure gasses also to be mutually repulsive, preventing them from 'clapping' back together so quickly, such as with the booms and cracks caused by lightning bolts and thunder.

The saucer I witnessed in 1953 went from almost overhead, to infinity, in three seconds. It was between 35 and 50 feet in diameter. A rough calculation would be 9,000 mph., with no sonic boom or other sound, based on my being able to see it at 7.5 miles distance.

VII: Energy and Time

Neither energy nor time exist, since these are only fictions or concepts we have created, to measure, calculate or predict certain functions and reactions in and between space, matter, light, "zero-point radiation", "zero-point ultra fine matter", and cruder "atomic matter" (which may be only a concentrated assemblage of the latter). In 1963, I dubbed the ultra fine zero-point matter, "Omni Matter", saying it is the source of all atomic matter. This comports with Tesla's ether. "Electrical content" and electromagnetic force, in their most finite forms (ultra fine Omni Matter and zero-point radiation in space) are very closely related to light (both visible and invisible). It has been said that this made Einstein and other Illuminists very happy, since it appeared to bring physics and cosmology into consistency with their Kabbalistic, existentialist, Illuminist, Hermetic philosophy and religion. Time is a concept describing the rate at which events in the universe

---

[1]T.C. Martin, Inventions, Researches and Writings of Nicola Tesla, 1894, Chapter XXV - Introduction - The Scope, of the Tesla Lectures.

occur. Since one cannot "travel" in a "concept" (which describes a "rate"), it should have been obvious that "time travel" is a physical impossibility, if not an epistemological and metaphysical blunder. The shadows on a cave's walls can deceive those who are content to sit and watch shadows, rather roan to venture beyond the cave, to discover the true nature of reality outside that little womb of false security.

'Objective reality', in the purely physical sense, may consist primarily of electric magnetic force and ultra fine neutral particles, which in turn, compose all atomic mass. Since 'gravity' is the result of electrostatic imbalances to the exuilibrium existing between 'atomic' matter and ether-filled space, rigidified by the effect of rapidly varying electrostatic disturbances, in the space within the proximity of a gravitational body's electric field, a "super-gravity" force can be synthesized by creating an electric field stress which creates an even greater, overpowering disturbance to the equilibrium, which can only be restored by movernent of a body so affected, until its position satisfies the 'equal and opposite reaction' rule. The movement of the saucer satisfies the imbalance created by the gobbling up and dissolution of the unidirectional tubes of force, which imparts momentum to the saucer, along the axis of polarity of the tubes force, in satisfaction of the 'need' created

This line of thinking seems to indicate how Tesla considered so-called "nuclear reactions"...electromagnetic reactions which produce powerful, very high frequency disturbances in the zero point "natural media", which react with atomic matter. These reactions are deemed 'stronger' than normal electromagnetic ones, since their disturbances are of such high force (voltage) levels, and of such high frequencies, as to react strongly (resonantly), with other atomic matter, sometimes to the "critical mass" stage of transmutation, such as that associated with thermonuclear explosions or implosions.

Meanwhile, the "zero-point radiation" ("ZPR") and Omni Matter interact at much higher force levels, yet to be fully measured. The spaces between the nuclear parts of atomic matter are comparatively so large, and the Omni Particles so small, in relation to the average amplitude of the ZPR, that the transference of force takes place right through solid matter, carried by the Onmi Particles, as if atomic mass isn't even there. The use of the term "zero-point" is generally used to describe a system which is in equilibrium According to physicist J. A. Wheeler1, the density of "zero-point energy" in vacuum-space is 1094 gram/cm3. (Note; This is purportedly the density of a cubic centimeter, and if correct, translates into humongous potential energy, right in the space at the tip of your nose.) I view "energy" purely as a potential, rather than something having an actual physical existence, as asserted by Einstein. I think Wheeler did likewise, since his measurement applied to the energy of "zero point radiation", not to the Relativist concept, "zero point energy".

Since I also am an adherent to the wave theory of light (rather than the "corpuscular" theory, or a contradictory combination of the two), I refer to the "omnidirectionally interpenetrating radiation" contained in "equilibrated" space, not as "zero-point energy" ("ZPE"), but rather "zero-point radiation" ("ZPR"). I also believe all space is saturated with ultra fine (normally) neutral matter (which also permeates all atomic matter). I refer to this as "Omni Matter"; This matter is activated by electromagnetic radiation which is not in equilibrium, transmitting its forces through Omni Matter/space until it is absorbed by some 'atomic' matter or body. Likewise, the

---

[1] A. Wheeler, Geometrodynamics, Academic Press [1962].

ZPR is able to interpenetrate almost all mass, because at such high frequencies, its tiny wavelength passes between atoms without resonating with or reacting with them There is an exception. According to Tesla, so-called "radioactive" elements reacting to the ZPR (are "...targets" continuously bombarded by "infinitesimal bullets projected from all parts of the universe", without which "all radioactivity would cease"[1]), which is the actual source of the radiation produced by them. There's something to think about: What is the nature of the structure or status of 'radioactive' elements, which allows them to react energetically with the ZPR?

It is my belief that during a body's movement through the space surrounding our earth, the independent carriers—the Omni Matter—, possessing independent 'tubes of force', are unified, creating continuously extended tubes of electric and magnetic force, which I call "micro-helices", swirling in parallel, tubular pathways through the body. A resistance (called "inertia") is experienced by a body, against the force of movement, with a polarity of movement, as acceleration progresses. There is a buildup of momentum (due to the very same mechanism as inertia). The inertia-resistance/momentum-perpetuation is encountered only with an increase or decrease in velocity, forcing the stubborn micro-helices into a different pitch (angle of turns) and frequency (turns per distance) of swirling electromagnetism, for each different velocity. There is no friction at a constant velocity, at which the ether "gives back" what it "takes".

As proof of this concept, the process can be reversed. By placing some paraffin in a "triax box", with a magnetic field of 10,000 gauss, the atoms of the medium are magnetically aligned, or 'polarized'. A high frequency electromagnetic field at 90 degrees, tuned to the nuclear magnetic resonance ("NMR") frequency of hydrogen...42.6 MHz..., excites the medium. This permits the hydrogen to react with the ZPR, to produce a (radioactive) beam of gamma radiation, which is far above the frequency one should expect from hydrogen. One can produce an output of electromagnetic radiation, magnetism, electric current, or "electromagnetic momentum", depending on the particular arrangement used and output preferred. With a hovering saucer, the electric field is externalized, with a current passing radially from the top center, across the predominantly horizontal area, and down the sides of the ship. A magnetic field automatically appears at 90 degrees to the electric field, and mass propulsion occurs on the third (vertical) axis, as utilized in Hall effect pumps. The downwardly directed beams of radiation seen on flying saucers may be due to the production of temporary radioactive isotopes of extremely short half lives, which emit photons as they return to their ground states.

Since a permanent magnet is composed of a medium (iron, usually) which has been magnetically aligned or polarized, some of the interpenetrating ZPR is arrested and separated into electric and magnetic components, and converted into magnetic flux, which is really a kind of "radioactivity". The ZPR is the driving force behind this flux, which is strongest when aligned with the earth's magnetic field, which in turn has polarized and converted some of the ZPR near or in the earth. The force of the flux will in turn separate moving positive and negative electric charges, more or less as the reciprocal of the mechanism by which the force of the ZPR has been diverted to create the magnetic flux. A permanent magnet can also be thought of as a "magnetic flux superconductor", which like an ultra high frequency antenna, receives the ZPR and produces a magnetic flux.

---

[1]Nikola Tesla, Letter, New York Times [Feb. 6, 1932], p. 16, col. 8.

Use of permanent magnets by Tesla, across a spark gap discharge, was intended to use the Hall Effect to break the discharge, by separating the positive and negative charges, in order to produce a more perfect sine wave. Inadvertently, Tesla discovered that electric spark discharges in air, ignite and combust atmospheric oxygen and nitrogen, producing 12-million-volt waves. The oxygen and nitrogen, both, below atomic number 19, are thereby transmuted into alpha and beta charges (stripped helium nuclei with +2 charge ea., and electrons with -1 charges ea) by the powerful radiation produced, having a voltage potential of 12 Mev. Since this is almost three times the Mev level of gamma radiation emitted by radium, it is certainly sufficient to explain the claims of Tesla, as traditional contemporary physics cannot explain such high voltages or radiation.

In an ancient application of this same principle, there were ceremonies carried out in the underground kivas of American Indian tribes in the southwest. Small, white, hand-held, rounded quartz boulders (around 2 lbs. ea.), were held in pairs, by each of a circle of men, and struck together in the dark, to produce powerful electric spark discharges. Such rocks were called "thunder stones" by the Southwestern Indians. You may notice some similarity to the Norse myth of Thor ("Hare", meaning Osiris), with his hammer. This similarity was not coincidental, since the Indians called the Great White Hare Waban, an incarnation of the eastern dawn that brings light[1] (which comports with the Norse Odin and Saxon Wotam, literally meaning "east dawn "). The spark discharges produce bright light, and when many are simultaneously struck together, it is enough to light up the kiva, just as the Zuni ("Sun-of-Nu") Ahayuda' ("East-Hare (of) Light[ning]") was thought to do. The Zuni war god can only be carved from the trunk of a cottonwood tree which has been struck by lightning, and a lightning bolt is displayed on the carvings. The same thing holds true for the Assyrian ("East-Hare-People" or "Aryan") Ahuramazda ("East-Hare-of-Good-Light"), the carvings of which also display lightning bolts. During these southwestern Indian ceremonies, the unmistakable smell of ozone fills the air, and perhaps the "laughing gas" produced by the sparks, which ignite oxygen and nitrogen and form nitrogen oxide, makes one giddy, euphoric, and intoxicated..

VIII: Thor's Model T Coil

In my 1979 search for scientific salvage, I found a Peiltochterkompass (German, for "Polar-Slave-Compass"), in a pile of salvage from Sandia Base, in Albuquerque, which turned out to be classified salvage sold to a private dealer, who had bought the stuff without knowledge that the government employee had stolen it from a classified salvage heap at Sandia Base, then sold it for his own profit. The device was part of the celestial or inertial guidance system developed by the Germans in 1943, for navigational use on the Kreisel Teller (German tor "Gyrating-Plate"), more popularly known as the "flying saucer". Also in that pile of classified salvage, was an old Ford Model T ignition coil (an invention of Tesla), along with a couple of the kind of ignition coils used in chemistry labs. In retrospect, I have decided that the Peiltochterkompass and other items may have been clues placed there intentionally, and that perhaps someone expected me to interpret their use. I have a hunch as to who that "someone" may have been—perhaps an old friend from long ago—but I won't dare to mention the name here. The ignition coils suggested ignition of the

---

[1]Iron Thunderhorse, The Mysterious Dawnlanders, ANCIENT AMERICAN [July/Aug,, Sept/Oct, 1997], Issue #19/20

two or more chemical components—such as oxygen and nitrogen—to create a nuclear/electromagnetic reaction from elements commonly existing in the atmosphere. The Model T coil is an interesting gadget, since it contains a Tesla coil, combined with capacitor and a 'Faraday buzzer', which converts D.C, current from the battery into high voltage negative pulses. The Faraday buzzer was a substitute for a spark gap. All feat is needed for operation is a battery. Tesla may have powered his prototype flying saucer with a battery powered Model T coil, and may in fact have originally developed the Model T coil for that specific purpose. Tesla would often invent a particular gadget for his saucer, then 'turn it around' and market it for ready cash when needed, in uses more adaptable to fee relatively archaic technology of the contemporary market place of his day.

In 1948, when I was ten years old, I belonged to a 'ham' radio club. I built a ham transceiver and had my Morse code up to speed for the qualification test, but was disappointed to learn that, at that time, under federal law, I could not take the test or operate my transceiver until I was 16. Consequently, a more startling fact I discovered, was the federal law prohibiting use of a Model T coil with a spark gap. The law appeared to come into existence contemporaneously to flying saucer technology, and the coil produces a series of negative pulses. The conversion formula indicates that it might be adequate to propel a small, man-carrying saucer, such as the early electrical prototypes in which Tesla ventured out of his New York City hotel window at night, making nocturnal excursions over the city in a machine he called his "flivver" machine, which was described as being about the size of a "gas stove"1. This astonishing scenario must have been what scared the hell out of the oil companies . Most researchers have erroneously associated Tesla's "flivver" machine to the VTOL-type airplane which he patented in 1928.

When we observe a hovering saucer on a windless day or night, a large electrical flame is often apparent, spreading around the saucer, and growing in size the longer fee saucer remains in one spot. This is because the initial high voltage 'leaders'—like electrical spider webs—begin to break away from the saucer's surface, ionizing and igniting oxygen-nitrogen combustion in the atmospheric gasses. Many observers mistakenly believe that the these 'lights' must represent electrical losses from the saucer power system, but this is inaccurate, since the saucers' electric discharges are only the "matches', which ignite the gasses, which in turn burn so brightly. On windy nights, saucers hovering high in the sky flicker like candles in the wind, from the action of the wind periodically blowing the corona flames around on the hull. In a quiet and windless sky, the saucers may hover with a steadier, brighter glow, which is similar in appearance to, but distinguishable from a star, by a skilled observer. All the visible phenomena of saucers are consistent wife this analysis.

IX: Work and Energy

The saucer propulsion system appears to operate "over unity", as a "free energy" device. The "Law of Conservation of Energy" is said to be "violated" by a device which operates "over unity", but this interpretation is false when properly analyzed, especially when considered in the light of devices which utilize fuels or forces already existing in ambient reality, to perform work. In fact, all

---

[1]Microfilm letter, Nikola Tesla to Westinghouse Co., July 7, 1912, Library of Congress.

energy processes are ultimately derived from "ZPR", but the great majority of ordinary processes used in the 'archaic technology' forced on us by the coercive monopolists, waste so much energy that they operate well below unity. The false interpretation of the law of conservation of energy becomes obvious, when going from weak gravitational to stronger electric and electromagnetic, or even nuclear reactions. The question seems to hinge on a definition of "fuel", its origin, and in what form does the fuel for a particular reaction enter into an event. There are several forms of 'fuel' which appear to have been intentionally obscured. Just exactly how does a permanent magnet remain "energized", without any obvious fuel or "input energy"? Formal physics plays with words, accepting certain definitions of "energy", then canceling those definitions selectively in the case of such things as magnets.

Energy is defined as "...the ability to do work", and the accepted formula is that "work equals force times distance". We know that a stronger force will do a greater amount of work on a body over a given period of time, than a weaker force will. The "law" is not violated, where one converts a weaker force into a stronger one, and does a great deal more work, even though there are usually losses in conversions, and even though no more 'conventional' energy is added to the process. A powerful rare earth magnet will do more work than a conventional iron one, especially since the electric field required to cancel such a strong field is much greater, and this will be a measure of the output.

Fools will immediately blabber that "...this is impossible, because it violates the law of conservation of energy", and that there is a 'difference' between "force" and "energy". Really? Then why do they fail to delineate just exactly what that alleged 'difference' is, and how the 'force' of a magnet is any different than any other force which does work? They are fundamentally wrong in this case. In 1963, a physics professor told me that a magnet "did no work" when it pulled a steel ball across a table top. The force moved a body (the ball) over a distance. The work performed, measurable in standard units of "energy", conformed to an accepted definition of "energy", the same one used by the physics professor in class. I rejected the tortured route of false reasoning intended to counteract my statement of the above, and the physics professor was exasperated.

A weaker force—the alleged 'gravity' force between the iron in the magnet, and the steel ball—would not have pulled the ball across the table top. The weaker G force was dominated by the stronger magnetic force. Gravity also does work (remember Niagra Falls?). There are large discrepancies in supposed applications of the "laws of physics", yet it is generally agreed that "energy can be neither created nor destroyed, but only changed in its form". This statement is completely consistent to the "free energy hypothesis". We know that ZPR exists in a volume of vacuumized space, also filled with ether, otherwise a vacuum tube would not allow discharges. This applies to the space all around us here on earth, together with around 26 atmospheric gasses. We have the gasses and atomic matter, in addition to naturally existing ZPR and Omni matter, to work with, requiring only that we use appropriate means to simply convert the weaker forces to the stronger ones, rendering them "usable". In reiteration, we only need to polarize the radiant effects and separate and extract heat, other radiation, pressure changes, electric content, or magnetism, to do work. As a "magnetic flux superconductor", a common magnet most likely collects the ZPR in something like a 'reversed' K-capture phenomenon, and converts it to magnetic flux.

The use of permanent magnets to produce electricity in 'over unity' devices, has not yet realty come into its own. The (Hans) Coler "Stromerzeuger"[1] (a "magnetic flux device", developed 1926-45) was a step in the right direction, and might have produced enough electricity to power a saucer, since the conversion constant shows a small current should suffice. It was not taken under development by O.K.M. until Jan. 4, 1943, too late for the Kreiselleller-p2 Projekt, which appeared to use a helium reactor, and the German saucers had been flying since as early as 1936.

Atoms of iron are a 'medium' which have a peculiar capacity to capture and convert ZPR into magnetic flux, which is always a secondary product of current. This means a magnet polarizes and unifies the tubes of force associated with the independent ether carriers. In the manufacture or formation of magnets—either in industry or in nature—the atoms (or molecules) of very hot or molten iron, which are in a state of flux, are aligned by an external magnetic field or electric current, whereupon the atoms are cooled and 'frozen' in aligned state, in a semi-permanent population inversion. Since the magnetic field remains when the external electric or magnetic field is removed, a magnet exists in an unbalanced relationship, 'needing' an electric field or current to accompany it. This imbalance continues because the magnet apprehends the magnetic portion of the ZPR, exposing its electrical portion, disturbing its equilibrium, wherever magnetic flux permeates. By alternating a magnetic field perpendicular to a pole-piece, or alternating an electrical current at right angles to a pole piece, an iron core will oscillate magnetically, producing rising, saturating, falling, and reversing magnetic flux which may then be used to create alternating current in inductance windings. The potential for these processes to operate ova unity is not generally understood or accepted, though there are numerous ways to operate electric and magnetic devices in ways violative of the law of conservation of energy, according to the version misinterpreted by the power cartels and their dupes in the field of science.

It stands to reason that if energy is the "ability to do work", and work equals "force over distance", that energy equals "force over time". These distinctions have been obliterated and concealed by the Illuminati, which has taught us to view energy as something which comes out of a gas tank and is "used up"

X: Forces and Fields

All forces create fields, and vice-versa. Some fields in nature may be unknown in specific detail. For example, we know that certain crystals can alter the frequency of radiation (the "Raman effect"), but some aspects of the process remain unexplained. Electric and magnetic fields, in relation to aligned crystalline molecular structure, are the known fields involved. Since I have not fully developed my opinions regarding crystals and sub-atomic physics, I say no more in this respect, except that crystals generally appear to be transducers of electromagnetic radiation.

Crystals are indeed fascinating and of scientific importance and interest, but have nothing to do with saucer propulsion. Beware of being side-tracked by huxters spewing slyly false OSI propaganda, designed to divert you into pseudo-scientific theories of crystals, so you will neglect your pursuit of saucer propulsion secrets. While it is conceivable that crystals could be used in

---

[1]See Dr. Franklin Kilpatrick's Free Energy Secrets! (regarding a 1946 declassified report of Brit Intel. Objectives Sub-Committee).

some peripheral way to produce or control electrical energy to power a saucer, such as a frequency detector, they are not directly involved in producing so-called "anti-gravity propulsion", which is really an electromagnetic magnification and redirection of the so-called "gravity force". I call this "Electropulsion" or "Super Gravity" (also called "electromagnetic momentum" by J. J. Thomson).

Private citizens can do experiments with a minimum of equipment, with exciting prospects. It is often assumed that government/corporate scientists have already explored all possibilities, and that we would know of any important discoveries. But just think about it Patent protection lasts only 17 years. Is some corporation which has existed for over 100 years, going to disclose a discovery which will put itself out of business, liberate people from its power, and render its mineral assets practically worthless, in only 17 years, when they have already projected their future earnings from fossil fuels for at least the next 100 years? How else to guarantee perpetual oligarchic, socio-economic monopoly, acquire and hold ready-made mineral fuels and derived chemicals, while shutting off all avenues of alternative energy, chemicals, and raw materials?

The cartels will riot sit idly by while some "two-bit inventor" produces and markets a device which will demolish their business in 5 years, but will move by hook or crook to nip it in the bud. They will continue to get away with it, as they always have, unless we prevent it and break the cycle of abuse. The only way we can beat them is to make free energy inventions publically available, and pass our technology all around, so that everyone can use it. Otherwise, they will hunt down the information and destroy it, along with its authors. It is indeed ironic, that the inventor's desire to protect his discovery through secrecy, and the patent office's required secrecy, enables a corporate "stainless steal". There is no protection in the law for an inventor of such a device, so it just as well be given to everyone. As stated in Chapter I, the inventor should make a discovery public domain, to nullify any future corporate theft, and to manufacture and sell the invention, rather than go through an exhaustive patent application providing the cartels with advance notice enabling them to steal the discovery through the patent office.

Was it not the failure to reproduce and spread valuable knowledge everywhere, which was the greatest mistake of the ancient library at Alexandria? Where the greatest knowledge of the ancient world was collected and virtually concealed in one place, practically all of it was destroyed there, by religious fanatics. This destruction set human technology back about 1500 years, and paved the way for the Dark Ages, during which the only people allowed to possess, develop, or experiment with advanced scientific knowledge were the alchemists, who were exclusively employed by the ruling elite and bound by secrecy. Those who violated these boundaries were burned at the stake or impaled as witches or sorcerers. Today they are prosecuted into insanity or oblivion by the FCC. Has anything really changed? Let's change it. Spread all your secrets.

Small and non-energy-related inventions can be successfully patented and marketed without Dluminati interference, so long as they represent only a tiny fraction of the marketplace. Anything dealing with energy or transportation however, will be met with severe suppression and theft by the cartels. The typical delusion of the neophyte independent inventor, of receiving a vast fortune from such inventions, will only lead to incredible pain, after he has exhausted all his resources

---

[1]William R. Lyne, OCCULT ETHER PHYSICS: Tesla's Hidden Space Propulsion System and the Conspiracy to Conceal It [1997,1998],

seeking "patent protection". It is time for us to spread all the suppressed technology we know of among the people, and to concentrate on manufacturing durable goods of high quality, just the sort of things the cartels hate. Inventors should devote their time spreading, trading and acquiring advanced, free energy technology, developing and initiating production techniques and creating facilities, as quickly as possible. We should also avoid La La Land-type pseudo-science of the type "encouraged" by the Illuminati.

Some will jeer that, if we have such technology, why aren't we using it? I've got news for these naive people. We are using it, and they are using it, but the public doesnt know it. In addition, we are paying for it, while the public service cartels pretend to be generating power with conventional technology, and are being unjustly enriched. A secret free energy system was built into our public electric utility system, by Nikola Tesla. We pay the cartels for electricity picked up 'along the way' to our houses, from the earth-ionospheric source, by the poles, and from the ZPR and Omni matter source, by the electromagnetic fields around the transmission lines. Even more current is generated by the meter on the sides of our houses (a Tesla invention which will function as a meter, a generator, or a meter and generator), depending on the particular equipment and hookups used. This secret is so well guarded that even few high ranking public service employees are aware of it.

If the kilowatt hours used in a region serviced by certain generators were accurately calculated, the total usage would probably far exceed the power produced by the generator stations. We are told by the 'experts' that energy is lost, but Tesla said otherwise. Each power pole is an antenna, having a copper grounding plate underneath it, and adds electric power from the earth-ionospheric source, to the power grid. At your house, the electric meter generates even more power, as it also reads your "consumption". With certain alterations, a Tesla electric meter can generate as much power as you consume and it can measure, perhaps even more. Differently oriented, the electric meter was originally one of Tesla's secret inventions, used as an extrernely over-unity fee energy generator, rather than a meter. I have tested this, and I know it weeks. Tesla's statement as to its potential output was so large that I won't mention it, for fear you would call him a "nut".

These inventions are based on standard free energy or ether theory. Radiation and matter exist in a state of self-restoring equilibrium in which all reactions tend to equal zero, with equilibrium being self-restored when disturbed This tendency to become restored is related to the energy potential existing in fee space, being a property of all matter and radiation. Since free universe is a perpetual motion system, energy, per se, does not exist, and all "work" is done by perpetual universal forces which exist in the environment.

Radiation does not move through space, but is the result of electrical and magnetic disturbances from stored sources emanating into the zero-point system at various points, which activate and polarize the normally neutral Omni Matter, causing transmission in chain reactions, carrying the electromagnetic oscillations from a multitude of points A, to a multitude of points B. The Omni Matter is so fine that it is capable of super-transmitting electromagnetic disturbances, from particle to particle, at all frequencies, simultaneously, in all directions, while self-restoring is own equilibrium. If we conceive of Omni Matter as tiny, identical globes composed of intertwined positive and negative bundles of electromagnetic force in equilibrium, densely packing all space like grains of sand, while ZPR simultaneously vibrates through it in all directions, it is possible to understand how equilibrium is maintained by the omnidirectipnal ZPR, and how

equilibrium can be upset. The equilibrium is upset by polarization of this omnidirectional vibratory mode, and 'energy' (the exertion of force through distance) may be extracted from or injected into the Omni Matter and the ZPR, via a proper medium of exchange.

What one may perceive as "light, moving through space", is an electromagnetic fluorescent reactance of matter, as the forces excite it at particular visible frequencies related to the fluorescence-frequencies of the surface atoms of illuminated visible objects.

The trick is to disturb the equilibrium with a minimum of input, then to appropriate the 'restoring' energy, on a continuous basis. Low frequency electromagnetic forces which are transmitted into the system, are transmitted through it very efficiently. Whenever the frequency is increased until it creates disturbances in atomic matter-tending to re-establish its equilibrium—"atomic energy" may be produced. The potential for matter to be "worked upon" by electric, magnetic or nuclear force, is called "energy". Whenever a physical body is forced against another body, electromagnetic reactions, binding, attracting and repelling forces between the atoms and molecules of the bodies are stressed The object with the greater momentum usually forces the other body to move or to come apart. On the microscopic level, force is imparted electromagnetically. "Energy" is always an abstract future contingency, which has no present existence in physical form. It is not a substance, and cannot be equated with a substance, but is a property of atomic, electric, magnetic, or electromagnetic radiation and reactions, which occur under certain conditions.

In order for the equilibrated forces of ZPR and matter to be synthetically apprehended for the performance of useful work, a quantity of specially chosen matter (or 'medium') may be placed in a "triaxial box", and subjected to electric, magnetic, or electromagnetic forces (emphasizing that so-called thermal or nuclear forces are really material reactions to electromagnetic forces).

A confusion between "energy" and "force", in conjunction with a false interpretation of the law of conservation of energy by their scientific dupes, allows the Trilateralists/CFR/Illuminati to conceal free energy and Super Gravity technology secrets from us. We no longer need for them to tell us the 'secrets', because the secrets are out. We must apprehend and use this technology to throw off the parasitic CFR.

Nikola Tesla's discovery of high frequency radiation and its use in the flying saucer, was his greatest contribution to the world. An oscillating electromagnetic wave has a frequency, which is the number of "beats" per second, with which the electromagnetic force is delivered. Within a system, an increase in frequency also increases the voltage or force of each beat, yet this requires no greater power to do so. Visualize a person beating a rug with a certain force, at the rate of one stroke per second. Now visualize that person bearing the rug 10 times per second, at twice the force. Naturally, the results for a given time will be greater, yet with electromagnetic radiation, no greater power is required to deliver 20 megahertz, than 20 kilohertz, yet the force (voltage) of the former, is greater per beat, as well as the number of blows per second. It is this phenomenon which causes the power radiated by an oscillating electromagnetic dipole, to increase at the fourth power of its increase in frequency. This is called the "reactance", and it is exactly what Tesla had in mind when he announced the completion of some tests of his electromagnetic (saucer) propulsion system, in 1940, though he tested it as early as "many years" before 1912, to be specific, in 1894. I call mis system "Super Gravity". It is "public domain", because of its unpatented secret use by the government for over one year.

Tesla distinguished between six kinds of electromagnetic waves, forces, and particles in space, which are:

1. "The Ether", composed of independent carriers immersed in an insulative fluid, permeating all space and matter, and from or to which all matter is ultimately composed or decomposed;

2. "Primary Solar Rays" ("starlight"), electromagnetic waves which travel at C, generated by our sun and other stars—having frequencies far above X-ray, gamma and U.V. rays—which comport with the ZPR;

3. "Cosmic Rays", particles in space, propelled by the Primary Solar Rays (ZPR), and which, depending on the voltage of the propelling ZPR, can greately exceed C;

4. X, Gamma and U.V. electromagnetic waves, which travel at C;

5. Ordinary visible and I.R. electromagnetic waves, which travel at C;

6. Rapidly varying electrostatic force of enormous potentials, emanating from the earth and other gravitational bodies in space.

It should be noted that the ether is not "radiation" or an "energy source", but rather particles ("matter") which carry momentum, magnetism, electricity, or electromagnetic force, and which can be manipulated artificially or by nature to materialize or transmute any form of matter. Tesla did not believe in the interconversion of "matter and force" ("matter and energy"), saying "...without matter there is no force and without force there is no matter."

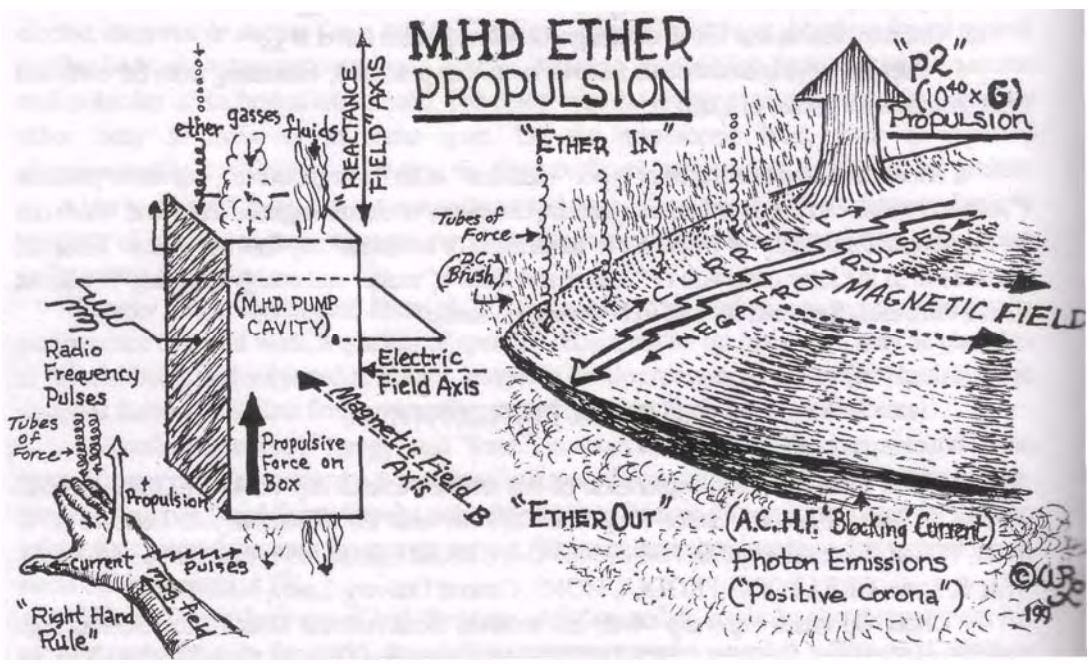
XI: OCCULT ETHER PHYSICS

For a more extensive exploration of this subject, consult my book, OCCULT ETHER PHYSICS: Tesla's Hidden Space Propulsion System, and the Conspiracy to Conceal it, © 1997, Wm. R. Lyne, $8.00, ISBN 0-9637467-2-3, (Second Edition 1998, ISBN 0-9637467-6-6), Wm R Lyne, CREATOPIA PRODUCTIONS, General Delivery, Lamy, N.M. 87540.

Under Operation Paperclip—with full authority from Admiral Doenitz, the German high command, Reinhard Gellen's Amt VI SS RSHA (including General Otto Skorzeny, whose documents bought his freedom and much more) and every German high-level technical and political authority, including Hitler—all flying saucer "documents" of Germany went into CIA (OSS) hands in 1945. All documents relating to flying saucers and some other things, including the real terms of the "surrender", since declassified, are either fake or altered, to confuse and obscure Tesla's discoveries, which I call "occult ether physics", since "occult" means "hidden".

Ether effects may be metaphorically conceived as "interdimensional", since invisible ether is incorrectly thought to be imperceptible, but inertia and momentum are perceptible in 'our' dimension, which they are part of. I use the 'other dimension' reference only because fifty years of brainwashing has obliterated human consciousness of it and many other things in reality. I present it that way to soften the initial effects of facing reality. We perceive the ether effects both physically, feeling inertia and momentum in our bodies as we move, and visually, seeing the effects on objects and life forms as they resist movement, accelerate, fall, tumble, bounce, and come to rest.

Ether physics is the most carefully concealed ultra secret technology of the Illurninati, and is the 'real' physics. The academically accepted stuff, where conflicting with true ether physics, is a cover-up for the 'real' thing. Again, the answer is right under our noses, masquerading as 'insignificant effects' or 'anomalies', such as the Hall effect, as illustrated by a magneto-hydro-dynamic pump. An electric current creates a magnetic field at right angles to itself, with polarity ascertained according to the "right hand rule". Fields each have two components. The electric (+ and -) and magnetic (N and S) fields occupy two axes. The third axis, for lack of better terminology, I call the "reactance field" (the two components of which I call "ether-in", and "ether-out"):



(NOTE: The theory 1 propose as Nikola Tesla's, is different from others known to me or patented by others, such as the "M.H.D. Propulsion Apparatus" of J.F. King, Jr. (Patent No, 3,322,374, of 5/30/67), or patents No. 3,120,363 issued to Hagen, and Nos. 2,949,550, 3,018,393, and 3,022,430 issued to Thomas Townsend Brown. These were all atmospheric "ion thrusters" or "reaction-thrusters" according to Newton's third law of motion, were feeble, and not for outer space. The King patent used AC rather than D.C. fields. These devices relied upon feeble "equal and opposite reaction forces" of the propelled masses of electrons and atmospheric ions, much like an airplane relies on pumped air. An accelerated electron will travel only about 4 cm. in the atmosphere. The ions are limited to those near the surface of me ship. No patented invention powers the "flying saucer". This (my) design pumps the ether, reaches into space and 'climbs' through it like a stationary ladder, and is unpatented because it is classified)

ALIENS38

A BRIEF HISTORY OF ETHER PHYSICS

Research in ether physics was seriously pursued from the early 17th century almost to the middle of this century, by the greatest minds in science and experimental philosophy. The following is a brief accounting of the main contributors and their theories:

Rene Descarte (1596-1650) - a. A dynamic vortex ether;

b. a theory of celestial vortices.

Johann Bernoulle (1667-1748) - Deduced Kepler's laws from Descarte's vortex theories.

Isaac Newton (1642-1727) - a. Mathematical theory of gravity;
b. corpuscular theory of light;

c. free space completely empty.

Michael Faraday (1781-1867) - Electric, elastic solid ether (Tesla's later theory based on this).

G. C. Maxwell (1831 -1897) - Ether vortex theory revived in electromagnetism field.

George Stokes (1819-1903) - Dynamic ether (reconcilable with Descarte's ether vortices).

HA. Lorentz (1853-1928) - Theory of a quiescent stationary ether (C.F. Krafft called it "stagnant" and a close forerunner to the Poincare-Einstein theory of relativity).

Michelson-Morley Experiment (1881) - Proved already weak Lorentz theory wrong, and inconclusively forced a choice between:
a. a dynamic interstellar ether ala Descartes and Stokes; or,
b. empty space without ether ala Newton and Einstein (the prevailing theory).

Nikola Tesla (1856-1943) - 1893-94 Dynamic Theory of Gravity, based on Faraday's "electric elastic solid ether", and J. J. Thomson's "Electromagnetic Momentum":
a. All bodies have electrical content, mass a product of ether swirls;
b. dynamic, elastic ether composed of independent carriers in an insulative fluid, which permeates all space and all bodies;
c. movement of bodies generates microwaves (electrostatic forces) by inductance principles;
d. microwaves rigidify the ether within a body's electric field;
e. movement of bodies through rigidified ether, containing tubes of electric and magnetic force, creates gravitational interactance.

20th Century Ether Vortex Theory - a. Hydro mechanical ether without atomic oscillators (no ordinary frictional viscosity);
b. 'idealized' quasi frictional viscosity;
c. polarity controlled without energy dissipation.

The above outline of theories shows the 'questions' of ether and gravity by no means settled, but it is my theory that a more or less complete and correct ether theory, based primarily on Tesla's theory, is possessed and used by the Secret Government, which developed and propagated Relativism to fill the void of the missing theory, in order to conceal and preserve ether physics for their exclusive use, while preventing the technology from damaging their interests under national security orders which prohibit us from using it. Otherwise, why would Tesla's 100-year-old theory still be classified? This concealment can be documented by a conspicuous lack of clarity and completeness in the use of such principles as the Hall effect to propel act only fluids, but solid masses, since it seems to apply to flying saucer propulsion. While I have found at least one group of patents for propulsion systems based on the Hall effect, the inventions inappropriately use the Hall effect only to pump air and electrons, not the ether, in a circuitous route only a few inches between electrodes. They missed the point entirely, which seemed to be the point of the patents, to discredit the Hall Effect as a viable application to propulsion.

With the Hall effect, the pulsing of electric input, rather than a steady D.C. current, increases the output.[1] This is consistent with the increase in electromagnetic reactance, at the fourth power of the increase in frequency. Tesla was therefore able to use his coil to produce "pseudo-electrostatic", D.C. pulses, which are not high frequency A.C., to produce his brush.

As determined by Nikola Tesla in his tests[2], at sufficiently high frequency and voltage, the ether ("Omni Matter") becomes "solid state", which means that it behaves similar to a solid mass under such circumstances. This obviously tended to confirm Faraday's theory of an "electric, elastic, solid ether" (solid to heat and light, but which allowed solid bodies to pass through). Tesla stressed the space between two electrified plates, in his original experiments, and also explored "unipolarity" of a single electrode or plate, as on a flying saucer surface, as it reacts with space and other matter. Tesla's tests of a saucer by 1915, tended to confirm his theory (along with the subsequent theories of J. J. Thomson and William Thomson), as it applied to electro-propulsioa The surface of a saucer draws in the tubes of force, which are dissolved in the conductor creating a propulsive force which is 10^{40} times stronger that the G-force constant, to provide the motive force. This is no more than a juxtaposition of the Hall effect as used in magneto-hydro-dynamic ("M.H.D.") generators and pumps.

Since the rigidified Omni Matter is ultra fine, it can pass into the attracting surface, carrying the tubes of force into the mass, where they are forced to dissolve by the high frequency 'blocking' current on the other end, leaving the Omni to pass through the body of the saucer and everything in it, and out the other side, with the only perceptible effects being acceleration of mass and the creation of momentum in the saucer and its contents. All physical bodies are 'saturated' with Omni Matter, and their atoms and molecules 'fly through' the Omni Matter like a flock of geese fly through the air. A better conception of what is happening with a flying saucer can be visualized by loosely analogizing it to a squid, which sucks water in one end and squirts it out the other like a jet,

---

[1]Hall Effect Manual. Beckman Instruments, Inc., Helipot Division, Fullerton, California (1963).

[2]T.C. Martin (supra).

propelling the squid through the water, with the exception that the saucer experiences no internal turbulence or pressure. With saucer propulsion, the Omni Matter is stationary in respect to the universe, but dynamic in respect to the earth and matter of which the saucer is composed. The saucer moves through the rigidified, "meta-solid" ether permeating it, by pulling and pushing against it, by use of the Hall effect. By forcing the ether to move through the saucer, the saucer moves through it. This movement is obtained by inducing the tubes of electric and magnetic force to enter the saucer surface, then stripping them away to impart momentum to the conductive parts of the ship, as the Omni pass on through where they acquire new tubes after they exit the ship's posterior.

The ether carriers are exchanged through the saucer's electrified surface, behaving like a fluid mass capable of entering into the surface and passing through the saucer as it moves, leaving behind the momentum which is the product of the dissolved tubes of force, in satisfaction of the "equal and opposite' force rule. The internal contents of the saucer are not adversely affected, since it is "internally" accelerated at the same rate, in the same direction, instantly, by the dissolved tubes of force. The electromagnetic force pumps the ether which creates the tubes of force ("micro-helical tubes") through the mass of the saucer. These tubes are the source of inertia, momentum, polarity and precession, and can be turned on, off, or re-oriented instantaneously, to accelerate, decelerate, or change the saucer's direction instantaneously. The reaction between normal solid matter and the ether with its tubes, generates and gives rise to inertia/momentum, and gravitational effects. The effects of such sudden changes on objects and people inside the saucer are canceled with the re-creation of new effects inside the conductors, as the tubes of force are dissolved in them, which insulates the ship's contents from the effects of the tubes.

Normally, the individual ether carriers, possessing individual tubes of force terminating on them, create a resistance ("inertia") to changes in rate of acceleration or direction of a body. As the body is forced through space, the individual tubes of force are united, enter, and are dissolved in the moving body, tending to perpetuate its movement ("momentum") in its direction of travel, at 90 degrees to the tubes of force and the generated current, resisting changes to the state of motion The micro-helices are of approximate atomic diameter, have pitch (angle of momentum) and angular velocity (at C, which means the saucer may only move at a maximum percent of the velocity of light). At a constant velocity, the micro-helices are without friction, according to the principle I call "The Law of Conservation of Perpetual Motion", which means that, with the micro-helices in parallel motion, the mass of the body reacts with the ether and ZPR in such a way as to counteract any internal friction. This is the reason that, at a constant velocity, when the micro-helices resist changes in pitch, momentum, or polarity—analogous to inductance phenomena—there is no inertia (internal 'friction' caused by changes in orientation or pitch of the micro-helices). If the body encounters external force which acts to slow it down, the momentum of the micro-helices tends to conserve the motion, by 'screwing' each of the atoms in the 'micro-helical tubes' forward, along their polarized, parallel axes. The normal acceleration of a body through the ether creates the electromagnetic conditions originating the momentum, and which are synthesized by saucer electro-technology, in which both momentum/inertia is switched, and the saucer turned on a dime by reorienting the electromagnetic polarity and momentum.

Using the method discovered by Tesla, under special circumstances created by "p2", the potential of the ether to react as a continuous, electrically conductive, rigidified elastic fluid, is revealed, in respect to the negatively charged saucer surface and mass. The high frequency, high

voltage negative pulses, carried by the saucer surface in one direction, create a magnetic field across the surface at 90 degrees to the current, causing the mass of the saucer to accelerate in a direction normal to the surface (at 90 degrees to the current and magnetic field), according to the Hall effect, as the ether carriers and tubes of force are pumped through the criss-crossing electric and magnetic fields on the saucer surface, where the tubes of force are separated from the ether carriers and dissolved in the conductors, as the stripped ether carriers pass on through the saucer mass, and out the other side (as in an MHD pump), where they acquire new tubes of force. The total electromagnetic force, which is 10^{40} times stronger than the G force,[1] accelerates the ship at fantastic speed. All of the normal inertia/momenturn forces in space are manipulated by the saucer's powerful electromagnetic effects, by being forcibly "eaten up" on one end, with the saucer's movement being the "equal and opposite" effect..

There is a deceptive effect of the so-called gravity force, which makes it appear to 'penetrate' mass under normal conditions. This is demonstrated by holding one body above the ground, with a second body held above it. The G force appears to 'go through' the lower body, to pull the second, upper body down, with the force apparently not being blocked by the lower body. The force appears to be linear, penetrating, and undiminished and unblocked by other mass. These false appearances (what Einstein called "apparent effects"), are in reality a natural deception, resulting from the tendency to falsely assume that gravity is a force exerted at a distance through "empty space" between the bodies, by mysterious, unknown characteristics endemic to the bodies (in the absence of Ether Physics), when in fact, the force is exerted between the bodies and the ether existing in and between all bodies, due to the electrostatic ('microwave') inleractance created in the interpenetrating ether rigidified by these forces. As stated by Tesla[2], "...But place a gaseous (or liquid) column in an intense, rapidly alternating electrostatic field set the particles vibrating with enormous speeds, then the inertia resistance asserts itself. A body might move with more or less freedom through the vibrating mass, but as a whole it would be rigid."

Obviously, if the G force is so infernally weak in comparison to the electromagnetic force, it is scarce wonder that it could not really be such a "penetrating" one, where it would take an X-ray of several million volts to penetrate the two bodies. The force is exerted linearly between a smaller body and the earth, on the ether within each body, because the earth's electric field of influence has rigidified the ether, displaced it, and upset the equilibrium in the vicinity of the two bodies, which requires the smaller body's movement toward the center of the earth, as an equal and opposite reaction to the electrostatic forces. The movement of a smaller body in space above the earth, and within its field of influence, upsets the equilibrium of the ether, and pumps it upward through the smaller body, due to the electrostatic forces generated in the body and the earth by their movement through space. The tubes of force are unified and drawn into the smaller body and dissolved in it, thus accelerating the body downward, which is called "gravity", and erroneously thought to be a mysterious "attraction" between the two bodies.

The masses and movements of certain bodies in relative proximity, cause their electrostatic effects on the ether in their vicinity, to accelerate the bodies toward one another, almost as if they

---

[1]The Electromagnetic Interaction (supra).

[2]Nikola Tesla, Experiments with Alternate Currents of High Potential and High Frequency (a lecture delivered before the Institution of Electrical Engineers, London, 1892)

were one body. Gravity and inertia/momentum involve electromagnetic polarization created by special unipolar electromagnetic (electrostatic microwave) radiation, resulting from disturbance of the ether and its ZPR transmissive characteristics. With every change in the axis of polarization of a body at rest or in motion, inertia/momentum must be overcome. Do these forces, once magnified by this technology, represent a danger similar to X-ray? The answer appears to be paradoxical, in that gravity is not really 'penetrating[1] anything, but is only a reaction within and between atomic matter and the ether which does penetrate everything. While the high voltage emissions on the exterior of a saucer obviously represent a type of danger, the internal contents may be quite safe, due to adequate shielding and insulatioa Through common sense, injury should be avoided

The deceptive apparent effects have thwarted our attempts to understand that inertia, centrifugal force, and momentum are all created by the same interaction between atomic mass, ZPR and ether within or near a mass, as the mass moves (since all mass is in motion). On our planet, the electric field of influence dominates that of other smaller bodies in its proximity, including the moon, just as the sun's electric field dominates that of the planets in the solar system as a whole, etc. Being within earth's electric field means that the characteristics of the ether and ZPR have been polarized displaced rigidified to some degree, and otherwise altered and extended for some distance around it, so that on a macroscopic scale, bodies are made to behave as if they were a part of the earth's mass, or earth's mass system. The solar system is similar to a giant atom.

Under special 'synthetic' electromagnetic conditions, the characteristics of the medium (ether and ZPR) as the source of inertia/momentum, are altered increased or canceled as one chooses, instantaneously. The normal requirement that such forces must be mechanically counteracted is circumvented by electromagnetically re-polarizing the forces within a body as it moves through the natural medium, in the direction desired In order for a body to overcome the earth's gravity, an alteration of the same ether/ZPR reactions which are occurring within the mass of the earth, must be reversed within that body. The polarity of the momentum can be synthetically oriented in any desired direction, and increased or decreased as the body's electric field can be magnified (to mimic that of a much larger body), canceled (diminished to that of a non-existent body), or adjusted to whatever level and in whatever direction desired. In so doing, the effects of earth's electrostatic forces are overcome by forces created from within a relatively tiny body, due to the gravitational-to-electromagnetic force conversion constant which allows it to be much stronger.

Though gravity, like X-rays, appears to penetrate mass even more than X-rays, this is a misperception. Gravity causes no known damage to organic life as X-rays do, since the reactions between mass, ether, and ZPR are non-interactive in the frequencies of nuclear or molecular ionization of our organic beings, on our saucer, except on its surface, and create no reactions internally which could result in radioactive organic damage. These reactions are controlled by superficially applied electrostatic force, which affects the interpenetrating ether, without altering internal nuclear structures or organic life.

Microwaves do not ordinarily penetrate metallic surfaces. Ether and ZPR permeate all mass, operating in a different way. X-rays are damaging to cell life, while gravity is not, affecting mass in a non-radioactive way, by conditions created by the natural electromagnetic resonance of all gravitational bodies. The microwaves measured by Tesla, emanating from the earth, are generated by its movement through space, as a result of earth's mass and electrical content, cutting through lines of sun's magnetic field The driving force behind earth's movement through space, is the giant current passing from the sun, through space, through the earth, and back to the sun, which

imparts momentum to the earth[1], by drawing tubes of force into the earth through the Aurora Borealis (earth's 'brush'), where they are dissolved. Norwegian Astrophysicist Hannes Alfven recounted how Kristian Birkeland's measurements showed that "...magnetic fields generated by the aurora are so localized on the ground that they can only have been produced by nearly vertical currents—aligned along the magnetic field of the earth.."[2] As Eric Lerner explained, Alfven discovered that plasma clouds moving in the magnetic field of the sun, generate electric currents which flow to the sun, after which giant currents, with trillions of amps, flow out of the sun along solar magnetic field lines, into the earth's aurora, through the earth, back through the cloud, and back to the sun at its equator, and so forth, transferring momentum to the earth.

An oscillating electromagnetic dipole is always changing, and if designed properly, produces an externalized negative pulse radiating from a saucer, which, while affecting ether and ZPR both within and without the saucer, is not destructive to organic life. The key is 'positive' versus 'negative' radiation. Penetrating positive radiation (such as X-ray) reacts with nuclear mass within its frequency range, and transmutes it, while 'negative' radiation tends to react with the outer electronic structure of matter, and does not normally transmute nuclear mass, though the collisions of high energy electrons with nuclear mass can give rise to X-rays, by penetrating outer electron cloud barriers and entering into nuclear space, resulting in the excitation and relaxation of atoms, with the periodic emission of X-radiation.

The Precession Problem

Tesla's original flying saucer was apparently plagued by the problem of precession. It was for this reason that the Germans named it the "Kreisel Teller" ("Gyrating [precessing] Saucer"), which exhibited the behavior of a spinning top, especially when hovering, giving rise among speculators that the saucer's anti-gravity properties were created somehow by gyroscopic action. The mass of a spinning object in a state of uniform (angular) momentum, possesses uniform oscillations in axial and planar polarity. The axial polarity is uniformly precessing (rotating), while the radial polarity is also uniformly oscillating. Is the precessive force exerted parallel to the rotational axis, or perpendicular to it? Clearly, though we are more aware of the oscillation of the spin axis, the force of precession could just as well be exerted through the plane of rotation, as a twisting force directly related to the variations in frequency of toroidal micro-helices formed within a spinning body, due to the progressive difference in velocity between the mass near the center, and that along the outside. It could be due to an undulating wave motion within the ocean of ether saturating all bodies, which varies in frequency and angle according to the motions of individual bodies. It is related to the spinning of the tubes of force, unified and drawn from the ether into spinning bodies, and dissolved in them, and the rate at which they transfer momentum to the spinning bodies, similar to how earth's momentum is transferred from the currents in space.

The hydrogen atom resonates magnetically at 42.6 million times per second. This is its "NMR" (Nuclear Magnetic Resonant) frequency, the frequency at which the axial magnetic poles of the hydrogen atom precess, or oscillate. This oscillation is very fast as compared to the

---

[1]Hannes Alfven, Existence of Electromagnetic Hydrodynamic Waves, NATURE, vol. 150 [Oct. 3, 1942], pp. 405-6.

[2]Eric Lerner, The Big Bang Never Happened, Random House [1991].

precession of a top, yet the same rules govern both bodies. It would be impossible for a top to precess at 42.6 MHz., because its inertia and mass properties would cause it to disintegrate under ordinary circumstances, but the precession of its individual atoms at that frequency presents no such problem Since a rotating body absorbs the tubes of force, translating them into momentum, perhaps the oscillations of the spin axis is determined by the rate at which momentum is transferred. Generally, the difference between the precessive frequencies of the hydrogen atom and the top, appears to relate to their comparative masses, which have a great difference in the momentum involved. By recreating the electromagnetic effects with an internal generator in a space ship, the ship will behave as if it were a single giant ion, having specific precessive effects peculiar to that body. If the electrapulsive technology puts the atoms of the ship into a sort of "population inversion", it is possible that the precession of the individual atoms is transferred to the entire ship. The speculator looks for a "spinning body" when he observes precession, while the more intelligent thinker realizes that the precession of a large spinning body is more than likely due to a non-apparent electromagnetic effect having its origin in the reaction between the spinning atomic mass of the body, the unseen atomic matter and ZPR within the body, and the ether and tubes of force in the space in which it precesses. The phenomenon may not require a spinning body, but may be due to synthetically recreated electromagnetic reactions of a spinning body, on a non-spinning body. The precessive motion can be related to the cumulative electromagnetic effect of spinning electrons in a magnetic field, transferred as precession to the body.

The electropulsion used on a flying saucer may cause it to precess as if it were spinning or contained a spinning mass, just as electromagnetic conditions cause any spinning object to precess. The precession I witnessed may have been the result of one of Tesla's large alternators, being turned by a turbine. Since the rate and angle of precession was directly proportional to its rate of acceleration, consistent with a turbine turning the alternator faster to generate progressively more power. Whatever the cause of the precession, it seems endemic to and problematic with the propulsion system. If an internal spinning alternator were responsible for a saucer's precession, it would be difficult to isolate the rest of the ship from the effects of its gyroscopic action, unless it were placed on gimbals. As such, it could be used as the "master" gyrocompass, to be conveniently coupled with the Peiltochterkompass, to provide the navigational necessities of the saucer. If it were bolted rigidly to the airframe, the gyroscopic action would not permit the ship to be maneuvered in the manner observed, because it would resist being turned perpendicular to its rotational axis, and could only be turned around the plane of angular momentum. It would have been impossible for a saucer to turn the 90-degree vertical angles at high speed such as I observed in 1953, even using the so-called "Coanda effect", because the angular momentum of the gyroscope would have to be entirely canceled instantaneously, and reoriented and reactivated with each such turn, and such a possibility could only be effected electromagnetically, not gyroscopically.

In respect to aerodynamics, I was embarrassed for a fellow 'UFO' researcher, who claims to be a physicist, when I discovered in one of his books, that he believes that fast moving air from prop wash is "compressed" air with higher pressure than surrounding air. He apparently was unaware of the fact that aerodynamic lift is created by low pressure (faster moving) air, and was further confused by the fact that fast moving air has greater propulsive force (as an 'equal and opposite' thrust reaction due to an increase in its momentum, transferred to it by an aircraft), which is the main principle of rocket and jet propulsion. In applying this misconception to a little toy

styrofoam 'UFO' which uses a model engine and propeller in its center, to suck air across the annular ring-shaped airfoil around it, to create lift as well as downward thrust, he entirely misunderstood the means by which the toy stayed aloft. In mis particular toy, the styrofoam ring to which the engine mounts are attached, is allowed to counter-rotate from the torque of the engine. This causes a certain amount of the air to be drawn along with the ring, due to molecular adhesion and viscosity. So in addition to the Bernoulli effect, the Magnus effect is added, to create further lift, by increasing the height and pressure drop in the burbles above the upper airfoil surface (I'm sorry, but it isn't easy to bullshit me on aerodynamics). The 'physicist' attempted to make the case that UFOs' work on the principle of "gyroscopic action". The problem was, both the engine and ring were rotating on the same plane, so any "anti-gravitational" force purportedly created by the outer mass, was counteracted by the counter-rotating engine. He had merely discarded aerodynamics completely, and by similar reasoning, he should have claimed that helicopters, airplanes, dirigibles, and gyrocopters are all "anti-gravity craft", and in point of fact, did just that In my 1993 version of Space Aliens... (pg. 126), in passages written years before, I also made out a case for gyroscopic forces acting in "semi-defiance to gravity", but that argument is based on the generation of excess negative charges which are sufficient to alter the gravitational reaction, but still insufficient to create "anti-gravity" as compared to mere weight loss. It is also probable that many aircraft gain extra lift by accumulation of excess negative charges. Were the earth's magnetic field many tunes stronger than it is, a gyroscopic device might possibly generate sufficient negative charges to defy gravity completely, but this is not the case, and the 'physicist' was unable to cite a single principle—either of 'accepted' or 'dissident' physics—supporting his baseless theory, though he mentioned the research of others showing anomalous weight loss, most likely caused electrostatically. If he based his claims on their findings, and nothing more however, he wasn't entitled to call it "his discovery". Oh! His discovery of their discoveries and my book.

I knew that this 'physicist' had read my book (since he nastily asked me about something in it), but I have a nebulous suspicion bordering on certainty that he is a witting O.S.I. agent recruited from the KGB when the Soviet super-state fell apart, under orders to misinform the public, to counteract the potential effects of the ideas in my book, although he is possibly just another plagiaristic charlatan who wants to "steal my thunder", by 'taking a few ideas' and misusing them. He is frustrated by my preemption of material collected under Operation Paperclip in 1945, altered by the O.S.I., and recently disseminated in Europe concerning German flying saucers, which is depicted as La La Land misinformation typical of OSI liars, concocted to lure "new-age-prone" people away from the true theory. The dingy theories just don't hold water, and the gut feeling persists that they're the work of OSI misinformation squads. Besides, would the OSI release such information to a German group if it was true? Uhh, here you are, Hermann....the flying saucer secrets you've been asking for. Be sure and tell everyone.

In this book, I publish a valid, complete, "new" theory of gravity, for the first time (Tesla's 1893-94 Dynamic Theory of Gravity being never published that I know of), and the proof of the pudding is in the eating. The fact that this O.S.I. guy—supposedly educated as a "physicist" in the Soviet Bloc—has stuck his neck into a pseudo-intellectual noose, is proof that the CIA is in a panic. He not only failed to convince me that he 'discovered anti-gravity' or is a "dissident scientist" as he claims, but in his apparent ignorance, failed to 'one-up' me as he intended. If he were not C.I.A, he would still be a sucker for the CIA/OSI misinformation, spread through its German collaborators, ostensibly based on misinformation—altered and screened by the

O.S.I.—released through the "Hermann Goering Branch of the Knights Templars", in Bavaria The fact that he failed to mention my book, though very familiar with it, indicated that he is possibly a former K.G.B. agent, now a witting O.S.I agent, recruited by the CIA as the Soviet system collapsed. His claim to be a "dissident scientist" is apparently based on my writings to that effect, since I called myself that in my first edition. He parrots a slightly altered contradictory O.S.I. party line', dictated by the status quo of UFOlogy, including an esoteric, mystical propulsion system, and a purported 'anti-gravity propulsion system' based on gyroscopic action, which will never get off the ground. The Illuminati absolutely doesn't want anyone to get lift-off, and despite unfounded rumors, nobody has done so with gyros, or with any other ideas spread by the OSI. 'Founded' rumors hold that experimenters--several with PhDs in electrical engineering--are getting lift-off with models following my designs. The dummy "air conditioner vent" stuff based on the work of Victor Schauberger (as well as the alleged propulsion system for ancient East Indian Vimanas), looks like just so much farting in the wind The "World Energy Grid" and 'harmonics' stuff of "Captain" Bruce Cathie (Ret.) of New Zealand also has nothing to do with saucer propulsion, since flying saucers fly independent to an "earth-grid", on internally generated power, reacting with the ether, tubes of force, and ZPR. Pseudo-"ancient", hocus pocus propulsion systems' are neither feasible nor explained, as usual, and are what one would expect from diploma-mill ancient history O.S.I. PhD.s, or 'retired' military aviators, attempting to impress us with military credentials. So, you wanna waste ten years trying to make it work, huh?

Any serious, intelligent physicists, interested in understanding the true nature of gravity and a unified field', would have to conceive of the interrelated movements of celestial bodies throughout the universe, as evidence of an integrated system of perpetual planetary arid celestial motion, radiation, nuclear physics, and electric and magnetic currents, fields and effects. It is a circuitous, eternal process, in which 'energy' can be neither created nor destroyed, only changed in form These forces continuously transmute in nature, whether or not humans use them to perform "work". Perpetual motion is the rule and not the exception. All energy and matter is conserved in changing forms, exchanging forces, effects, or matter, "using nothing up", and equaling zero. The Illuminati pseudo-scientists have labored so diligently for so long to talk us out of these obvious facts, and to convince us that we need Standard Oil of New York, etc., forever, and don't you forget it!

In the Big Lie Mass Psychological Control System, paranormal propaganda serves the purpose of stretching the public's credulity, so it will accept the Big Alien Lies—used to conceal flying saucer technology—on faith, not reason. In physics, Relativism serves the same integral false purpose, by stretching the credulity of physicists, so they will accept the Elastic Space-Time Continuum and Big Bang cosmography on faith, not reason. The Paranormal beliefs, combined with Relativism, completes the two essential tasks, by opening the way for acceptance of the alien lies, and opening the way for denial of a scientific explanation for flying saucer propulsion. By substituting Relativism for Ether Theory—which purports to solve problems it does not solve—establishment physics has no rational explanation for gravity, momentum, and flying saucer electric space propulsion.

SYNOPSIS OF FACTS

This book is related to the following list of little-known, officially suppressed, or publicly unknown facts:

1. An American citizen (naturalized), Nikola Tesla (an atheist and a capitalist), invented the flying saucer, before 1900, and reduced it to practice by 1915.

2. The American government helped the Nazis steal the invention from Tesla, through a secret 1936-38 project, at Los Alamos, New Mexico (then called the "p2" project), under the direction of the Baron Wernher von Braun, who was simultaneously collaborating in rocket research with Dr. Robert Goddard near Roswell funded by the American Rocket Society (The Smithsonian Institution and the Guggenheim Foundation).

3. The American government later helped Wernher von Braun, under the Nazi project (a forerunner of the Trilateral Commission) and CFR/Illuminati (who still retain control) remove the "KT-p2" Projekt ("KT" is for "Kreisel-Teller" [German, for "Gyrating Plate"], and "p2" is the electronic designation for Tesla's dipolar propulsion system) to Germany, in early 1938.

4. The Nazis, who developed and used the flying saucer during the war (called "Foo-Fighters" by us, "Fireballs", "Flying Saucers" [Fliegende Untertasse], and "Flying Turtles" by them), were unsuccessful in developing appropriate weapons for it until too late. They traded it to the U. S. government and corporations during the stalemate of 1945, in exchange for amnesty for numerous persons (including many war criminals), and for other concessions and guarantees.

5. The U.S. government (N.S.A., O.S.I.), on behalf of the Trilateral Commission/CFR, continues with and enforces a Nazi-originated "Big Lie" program, in which it perpetuates the hoax that flying saucers ("U.F.O.s") are: (a) Extraterrestrial in origin; (b) psychological phenomena ("collective consciousness archetypal images", ala C. G. Jung); © swamp gas; (d) "free-floating plasmas"; (e) piezo-electric effects; (f) ball-lightning; (g) other natural phenomena; (h) unknown life forms; (I) hallucinations; (j) non-existent; (k) hoaxes by attention-seekers; (1) the products of hysteria, insanity, etc., etc.

6. The German navy surrounded the U.S. with 24 U-boats, armed with (V-6?) I.C.B.M.S, having celestial guidance systems, and armed with neutron bomb warheads, trained on key American cities and centers, in a 1945 stalemate; German Admiral Karl Doenitz negotiated a secret truce and amnesty agreement with American authorities, under which he was required to order all 24 U-boats "...scuttled, with all hands on board...", under the agreement, pursuant to which Nazi skippers opened the hatches and the subs and all men on board went to the bottom Under Operation Paperclip, all Nazi scientific research materials, most of their important scientists, and the "KT-p2 Projekt" technology, were transferred to the U.S. and to the CFR corporations, thus attempting to insure that the Illuminati would retain control of the materials. Certain unusual security procedures were initiated to insure this, including the "sacrificing" of some major German scientists to the Soviets, to plant misinformation, and to insure that the hoax was successful.

7. During the war, German scientists bypassed development of the "atom bomb", and built and tested the neutron bomb. German field Marshall Erwin Rommel and the Afrika Korps were originally sent to North Africa to test the neutron bomb, as well as Tesla's "death ray" (which freezes whole armies); this technology was acquired by American corporations, held chiefly by

David Rockefeller, and was later sold in part back to the U.S. government and tested in the '60s, and the same technology was again sold to the U.S. government in the "70s and '80s, as "Star Wars" ("SDI" or "Strategic Defense Initiative") technology.

8. Over 15,000 German military, technical, intelligence, and support personnel were brought to America (mostly New Mexico—Manzano Base, Sandia Base, White Sands Missile Range, Alamogordo, Holloman A.F.B., Los Alamos, etc.) with the KT-p2 Project, in Sept., 1945, at which time, under Operation Paper Clip, Wernher von Braun became Director of Research, U.S. Army Ordnance, Ft. Bliss, Texas; he and his 116 top rocket and flying saucer scientists commenced rocket and flying saucer R & D. at White Sands Missile Range, and Alamogordo.

9. Howard Hughes' "Glomar Explorer" was built to retrieve the 24 scuttled German U-Boats, before terrorists or unfriendly governments found and retrieved the subs, missiles, bombs, and related technology. The WW II German "Electro-U-boats" were powered by a type of magnetic-electric generator (invented by an American named Dort, of Virginia), based on a Tesla oscillator, which was superior to nuclear power. Further details about the German 'ship', the Graf Zeppelin, are included in this book; Adolf and Eva (Braun) Hitler were daringly rescued from the Berlin Fuehrerbunker by a flying saucer, flown by test pilot Hanna Reitsch and long distance flight expert Hans Ulrich Rudel. The Hitlers were later protected by the secret amnesty agreement, for the remainder of their lives under protection of the N.A.T.O. alliance, in Kassel, Germany, ironically the home of an international monument to the Holocaust. The Hitlers even visited Hemisfair, the World's fair at San Antonio, Texas, in 1967, on the invitation of L.B.J.

10. Part of the original deceit was under way at Wright-Patterson A.F.B, Ohio, even before the German surrender; Edgar Cayce was already employed as a technical writer, to revise, adapt, and resume the propaganda work pioneered by Hans Hoerbiger, Hitler's personal guru and astrologer, the official "father of parapsychology", and designer of the Nazi "Big Lie" system, in which the public's credibility 'window' is wallowed into a giant hole, allowing the indiscriminate acceptance if faceless authority and whatever the government says; the U.S. government even hired an Ohio naval law professor (and genius) to revise and popularize "Astara" ("Ostara" to Hitler), the Nazi religion based on the Bonpas (Tibetan black magic) religion, imported from Tibet to Germany by general Karl Haushofer, an ordained Bonpas priest, as the basis for the S.S., financed and set up on instructions of the British-American CFR, in 1919; the S.S. Bonpas worshipped "Kali Ma" ("Bloody Mother"). This cult founded the ancient Thugee cult of India, and was the basis for the Society of Assassins; the concepts of this weird religion related to the mass extermination of people, through many means, including assassination, extermination, and war, as the basis for all 20th century totalitarian movements.

11. Most forms of mass communication are primarily controlled or produced by the Illuminati, through the secret agencies of our government, to brainwash the public, in the most monumental hoax in history, to socio-economically control the world, and to perpetuate lies designed to obscure the flying saucer's man-made origin and use (as well as to steal and conceal or monolithically control all other advanced technology); the government hires consultants, contract script writers, and teams of PhD.s, to create and disseminate Big Lie propaganda, in countless pulp magazines and newspapers, and finances and produces books and movies of the Close Encounters of the Third Kind ilk, to perpetuate the "extraterrestrial" myth; the government controls and manipulates the press, hires lecturers, and organizes and funds UFO groups; it stages "abductions", using actors, drugs, and sets; Operation Blue Book was set up at

Wright-Patterson A.F.B., to retrieve leaked information and plug leaks, disseminate misinformation, falsely represent "expert, objective, scientific opinion", and to ferret out 'problem people'; mystical organizations (such as A.R.E.—Association for Research and Enlightenment—part of the Edgar Cayce Foundation, of Virginia Beach, Virginia [conveniently close to CIA headquarters])—are created for the same purposes, and set the stage for the type of mass psychological control of the public required for totalitarian control by mystical cults, such as "Communism", "Naziism", "Synergy", or "Parapsychology" cults.

12. Flying saucers operate on basic, simple, sound (but very carefully obscured) scientific electrical and physical principles, known for over 100 years; Nikola Tesla's discovery has been concealed for over 60 years, and all public sources were thoroughly scoured by the F.B.I, in 1942; the flying saucer uses the electromagnetic interaction, which is 10^{40} times greater than the gravitational interaction, to move huge saucers at fantastic speeds, in apparent defiance to the laws of physics as currently taught, with almost no net energy consumption; they can be powered by unlimited electrical energy extracted from ordinary atmospheric air, based on Tesla's ca. 1900 discoveries; (NOTE: this book tells how to build your own flying saucer.)

13. "E.S.P." and "psychic phenomena" movements (based on Hans Hoerbiger's original Nazi "parapsychology") are orchestrated and promoted by the N.S.A., as part of the continuation of the original Nazi Big Lie program, to dupe and brainwash the public, and to induce unquestioned faith rather than reason; this clandestine manipulation by the government is an unconstitutional abridgement of the U.S. Constitutional First Amendment prohibition against the government's recognition or promotion of an "establishment of religion" (i.e., generally, a mystical belief system based on faith rather than reason).

14. As an underlying cause of the "Holocaust", a proposal was made by the U.S. Government to the Treaty of Versaille Committee, in 1919. In a document known as "Morgenthau's Pastoral Policy", signed by president Woodrow Wilson (drafted by his Illuminati advisor, Hans Morgenthau, Sr.) and presented at Versaille. Under it, the U.S. attempted to make, as one of the provisions of the German surrender, the extermination of all Germans, as an "inherently warlike race", and the "reduction of Germany to a pasture land". The document, examined by me in 1968, was among the papers of former president Lyndon Baines Johnson, now kept in the Sid W. Richardson Research Center, at U.T., Austin, named for my third cousin.

15. The "cattle mutilations" phenomenon is an ongoing program of the CIA's Special Operations Division. 'Biological samples' are removed by specially trained flying saucer crews, from thousands of cattle grazing in remote areas, for analysis, to measure radiation-caused auto-immune-deficiency and reproductive sterilization effects, after the cattle have been subjected to irradiation by "Death Ray" devices under development since the '60s. Since 1979, the saucers have bombarded members of the public, under the MK-NAOMI Program of the CIA, fa- purposes of "population control" (i.e., extermination). Government scientists use special surgical devices, standard blood coagulants, and cryogenic technology, enhanced by microwave equipment, to remove the cattle blood (and ears, lips, tongues, mammary glands, genitalia, anuses, etc.); afterward, the carcasses are returned and air-dropped from flying saucers, back into their original pastures; the mysterious circumstances are then misconstrued by government-spread rumors of "extraterrestrials", attributed to "Satanist cults" or other cults created by the government, or "coyotes and other natural predators", etc. (Of course, MAN is a "natural predator".) (For more on

this, see Chapter HI: I Meet a Government MLB. in Santa Fe: Hollywood on the Take, and Chapter IV: Sightings)

16. The Antarctic "Ozone Hole", which U.S. government scientists pretend to be at a loss to explain—yet blaming it on 'aerosol sprays'—is probably the by-product of three nuclear missiles, armed with hydrogen bomb warheads, which were launched from the Antarctic by the U.S. military, on Aug. 27, Aug. 30, and Sept 9, 1957. The warheads were detonated at a 300-mile altitude, to create a reflective spherical layer of ionic particles surrounding the earth, to bounce radar impulses between the layer and the earth. The Strategic Air Command's global "backscatter" radar system, operated from the North American Air Defense (NORAD) command center deep beneath the earth at Cheyenne Mountain, Colorado, thus became operational in 1957, in time to verify that the Russians fired the rocket which launched Sputnik.

17. The N.S.A. protracts a false "national security" veil, to continue concealment of flying saucer technology, creating false fears of 'rampant anarchy, 'chaos', and other exaggerations and ruses, before N.S.A. committees, to justify continued secrecy, and to continue to deny public access to or to declassify the technology. (If society isn't ready for it, how can THEY be?)

18. The true scientific principles of gravity have been misrepresented, confused, and concealed by "Big Brother", even in school books read by our children, just to conceal flying saucer technology, to protect the energy cartels and the mixed-economy socialist political power structure from losing its illegitimate parasitic grip on us.

19. In 1893-94, Nikola Tesla, a patriotic naturalized U.S. citizen, of Serbo-Croatian birth, discovered a new theory of energy and gravity, called the Dynamic Theory of Gravity, which represented a unified field theory. Tesla's energy equation, "C = E/R", and Tesla's application to the Swiss Patent Office, for his flying saucer patent, was made while Albert Einstein was a second class patent clerk there. Einstein's work was an Illuminati conspiracy to obliterate Tesla's discoveries, so the Illuminati could control flying saucers and create our energy slavery.

20. The government's policy of looting and suppressing ideas from independent scientists, inventors, and thinkers, on behalf of the Trilateral Commission, is related to this process, involving (1) stealing ideas from creative individuals; (2) destroying those individuals' credibilities, to conceal the sources and technology; (3) ruining the lives of those individuals (even murdering them if necessary), and denying compensation or credit; (4) exercising the option to suppress the ideas under "national security' laws", or giving the discoveries to their corporate crook partners for exploitation; and (5) abusing and misusing the judicial system to carry out and enforce this illegitimate, criminal process.

21. I am either correct in what I say, or am entitled to a Nobel Prize for new discoveries in gravitational theory and nuclear physics. The former is most certainty true. Since Russia in fact acquired the services of the top Nazi flying saucer scientists, and the top rocket scientists, from the Peenemunde operation, in 1945, there is a strong possibility that the Russians were privy to these secrets.

PART ONE: THE TECHNOLOGY

CHAPTER I: STAGE I SECRET GRAVITY PHYSICS

"Stage I Secret Gravity Physics" includes an attempt to explain gravity as an electrostatic phenomenon.. Though incorrect, this argument is included and compared with the material in the Introduction ("XI: Occult Ether Physics"), and other material, to give it as fair an argument as it deserves. Ether physics is "it", There is not 'another system' which is powered by electrostatics, or Felix Schauberger's alleged boundary layer or other vague, undefined, "new age Austrian" method. Though other flying craft may be 'saucer-shaped', if they are not electrically powered, they are no more "flying saucers", than an oxcart shaped exactly like an automobile is a "car". The "Adamski-type" ships were complete fabrications, photographs of a chicken feeder. Adamski was on the CIA payroll, and his allegations were misinformation. In addition, there are many ways to create hoaxes. For example, it is easy to suspend a model from a balloon, by means of a fine nylon fishing line, with camera out of focus, and produce a convincing photograph. Get real.

Reality is unmistakable in certain cases. I knew from my observations in 1953, that a secret theory of gravity physics is involved in flying saucer technology. Today, over forty-five years later, the underlying cause of gravity is still (supposed to be) a mystery. People continue in the Relativist Rut, blabbering on about Einstein, but Einstein never explained gravity. Truth, like creativity, requires courage. Scientific cowards continue to yield to the Trilateralist sham. Since around 1950, textbook writers have followed secret government orders, helping us 'forget' some (now) little-known facts once taught along with Newton's law of accelerating bodies. Fascist-state revisionists concealed the scientific truth about gravity as a "national security secret". In 1942, the F.B.I, sequestered all known information relating to a scientific understanding of gravity, electrical control of gravity, or 'free energy', as it might pertain to flying saucer technology. Accordingly, the same CFR and Illuminati which controlled Wernher von Braun and the Nazis, in the 1936-38 Los Alamos "p2"project, controlled our F.B.I. as well. For this reason, I have renamed J. Edgar Hoover, "J. Edgar Himmler, the American Fascist in a Red Dress".

To conceal "flying saucer secrets", they rewrote theoretical physics, obliterating the greatest moments in mankind's scientific history. Perhaps when our people are reduced to ignorant, scientifically-deprived yokels, we will have "national security", and only the NSA., the CFR, the Trilateral Commission, the Bilderbergers and the Illuminati (all one and the same) will possess true scientific knowledge. What the Rosicrucians/Illuminati refer to as the "wisdom of the ages", is actually a collection of stolen and concealed scientific—-not "mystical"--secrets! Such knowledge is discovered by individual geniuses, deluded into thinking they are doing mankind a favor, but instead unwittingly doing research for the Trilateral Commission/Illuminati rats, who will steal and hide such "treasures of posterity", and use them to enslave mankind

After all, the rats said, since a 'healthy petroleum industry' is essential to "national defense", protecting Big Oil at the expense of scientific, economic, and social freedom and progress, is in the "national security interest". Since society is "not ready for the flying saucer" - they decided without our consent—such secrecy was "sound public policy"; after all, how could Gulf Oil continue to produce and sell gasoline and diesel at a 'fair' profit, if one could fly a zillion miles on a gallon? With such inventions as the flying saucer at the public's disposal, the economy would be wrecked,

they said (at least for the Trilateral Commission). Meanwhile, our government helped the fascists take firmer control of the system, in the interest of "national security".

PHONY RESEARCH AND SCIENTIFIC ALZHEIMERS

Numerous centers throughout the world conduct "gravity research", to 'prove' Newton's laws. The only parts of these old laws which have been brought into question, deal only with the first few inches of a falling body's acceleratioa The remainder of the tests are false, deceptive, and unscientific, intended to dispel widespread suspicion by lay people, to reassure the lazy scientists who accept them, and to heap ridicule upon doubters. Without accurate and honest tests, over at least 1,000' of vertical drop, the results are worthless. Yet what independent scientists have the personal finances or resources to conduct these tests accurately on their own? Most people accept the theories of the "experts", failing to realize they are government-paid, Trilateralists/Illuminati national security" yeggs. "Question everything", the ancient Greeks wisely advised.

I predict that proper tests will eventually disprove Newton's laws in a big way. Such tests would require a vertical, non-metallic, non-electrically-conductive tube, extending up at least 1,000' from the earth's surface, which could be evacuated. A weight carrying a precision movie camera with a digital clock read-out, would photograph calibrations on the sides of the tube, as it was dropped. Its rate of acceleration would be accurately recorded. When the weight reached approximately 120 mp.h., no further acceleration should occur. At the accepted rate of acceleration (32'/sec./sec.), the 120 mp.h. velocity should be reached at approximately 696 feet. However, if I am correct, this could take either more or less distance/time, depending on the reaction.

Nikola Tesla's Dynamic Theory of Gravity provided a scientific basis for explaining Newton's "laws" of gravity, which attempted to explain with some degree of mathematical certainty, the physical measurements, and offered no cause. Even this is questionable.

The erroneous concept of "anti-gravity" cannot explain flying saucer propulsion. Insufficient to merely "overcome" gravity, or "reverse" it, propelling a ship with astounding results and directional controls is much more. The fictitious moon ship of H. G. Welles' Dr. Cavour-was rased on a "blocking" theory, in which 'doors' were painted with "Cavourite", which blocked gravity. This chapter includes my examination of an electrostatic theory of gravity, and attempts to explain flying saucer propulsion in the manner demonstrated by observed flying saucers.

Hydrogen has the highest charge-to-mass ratio of any element. Accordingly, it is the lightest elcment, even though its nuclear proton and orbital electron are identical to those of lead. The masses of the remaining elements are determined according to their respective mass units and densities, and eharge-to-mass ratios, which are correlative to their relative gravitational, electric, and electromagnetic interactions.

I consider electrons as already having "negative gravity" (or "anti-gravity"), even though they have mass, because they will normally tend to gravitate upward from the earth, like a light gas, due to their high charge-to-mass ratio and low mass density. This is more consistent with ether theory than with Relativism. Cosmic radiation and lightning storms bring electrons down to the earth, which is generally an electro-positive mass, upon the surface of which a continuous negative charge is maintained by lightening, though the electrons tend to 'leak' and migrate back upward. Accordingly, the ionosphere is charged at least 176 million volts positive in respect to the earth,

creating a vertical electric field, which gradiates from sea level, around 150 volts per meter upward, from negative to positive. This electric field is reversed and multiplied around ten times under storm clouds, rendering the earth's surface relatively positive under the storm clouds, since the higher negative charges of the clouds repel the earth's negative 'like'-charges.

This vertical electric field might be erroneously conceived as the origin of gravity, but there are many gravitational planets which have no ionosphere, while all atomic mass possesses electrostatic charges which are in motion with the masses, representing currents (H. A. Rowland's experiment), a fact used by Tesla in support of his Dynamic Theory of Gravity.

Gravity is apparently a secondary product resulting from an imbalance of other, primary forces. No separate basis has been found, though an electrostatic imbalance is evidenced in atomic matter. The Dutch physicist, Hendrik Antoon Lorentz (1833-1928), in measuring the relative magnitude of the single negative ("moving" or "orbital") electron charge, and the positive ("stationary" or "nuclear") proton charge in the hydrogen atom, actually claimed the two to be slightly unequal, with the proton possessing an excess positive charge, slightly greater than the allegedly 'equal and opposite' negative electron charge. This information has been conveniently disregarded, since, by implication, it contradicts the Relativist Theory, since unequal charges could disqualify the entire theory, and support Tesla's Dynamic Theory of Gravity. Lorentz further postulated that this excess positive charge is responsible for the weak force of gravity, and that, by increasing the negative (moving) charges, the gravity of an atom's stationary nuclear positive mass would be entirely "canceled". Even so, how would this explain electropulsion? It wouldn't Lorentz calculated the electromagnetic forces encountered by a body, within an electric and magnetic field, according to the equations of Sir George Clerk Maxwell. This force, called a "Lorentz Force", is so much more powerful than the force of gravity, that it is difficult to conceive. Nontheless, it is only part of the picture, since it purported to represent only a comparison between static electrical and gravitational attractive forces, rather than the net dynamic "interaction". After all, one has to bear in mind that, in addition to Werner Heisenberg's so-called "Uncertainty Principle", there is the problem of considering the fact that, in all attempts to measure anything on earth, all the measuring instruments, the observer, and all charges are in motion, at over 70,000 mph through space, which means that everything contains "currents".

INERTIA AND ELECTROMAGNETISM

Since, according to Lorentz's hypothesis, gravity is the result of an imbalance in electrostatic charge/content, this imbalance should also explain Newton's laws, except there was no provision for the dynamism of the universe in it. Since Nikola Tesla knew Lorentz, it is also possible they discussed these views. Tesla said that electrostatic force is the most important force for us to study. Although his gravity discoveries were complete over 100 years ago, the Illuminati stole ten away, and smugly keeps them from us today, while hiding, or misrepresenting essential parts of gravity and ether theory and experimental results.

Excess positive charges, or parts thereof in a body, induce negative electrostatic reactance when moving through space permeated by electric and magnetic fields. Since all mass is in motion, and all space is permeated by electric and magnetic fields, this inducement applies to all bodies and all space. The earth induces negative electrostatic reactance as it moves through space. Naturally, this inducement also applies to all bodies within the dynamic electric field of earth, in

which enormous, rapidly varying electrostatic forces exist. This inducement continually changes the electromagnetic characteristics of the bodies and the space, according to their relative movements, and redistributes the conglomeration of changes. Accordingly, with a redistribution (or "displacement") movement, away from or toward the equilibrium position, an equal and opposite force tending to counteract it, is produced in tie direction from which the negative electrostatic forces of the earth emanate, which is called "gravity". This is part of Tesla's Dynamic Theory of Gravity, which requires an understanding of the ether and its effects.

Inertia is the resistance within a body to changes in its state of motion. Momentum is the same thing, since all mass is already in motion, but the cause of this resistance to change requires an ether theory which includes the tubes of force. Inertia/Momentum is observed in the dynamic rotor of an electric generator, in which the momentum of the rotor is imparted, via electric current (tubes of force), to the rotor of an electric motor run by that current. In other words, as the rotor is placed into motion, it absorbs electric tubes of force, which travel through the circuits to the motor, which absorbs and dissolves the tubes, imparting momentum to it. Although the laws of inertia are incorrectly said not to apply to the laws of electromagnetism, that is a lie. Where the electromagnetic interaction is 10^{40} times stronger than the gravitational interaction, force gathered in a gravitational interaction—momentum—such as by hydraulically turned dynamos, may be converted into much stronger electropulsive force! (In this respect, I refer you to the Introduction; V: A Comparison of Gravitational and Electrical Force, as Applied to Flying Saucer Propulsion.) This little trick of nature yields so much free energy that the Illuminati have been masturbating over it for over half a century. It allows for much more powerful electromagnetic energy to be concentrated and stored in much weaker inertial form, until converted and magnified into relatively super-strong electropulsive form.

If inertia is the result of a body's resistance to changes in the strong electromagnetic patterns (the pitch, frequency, and momentum of its ether micro-helices) existing as a result of its particular state of rest or motion, within a particular electrostatic ether environment, then the synthetic conditions of an electric generator's rotor field coils are only an unnaturally altered state of the conditions which were already there. I am reminded of the account as to how Tesla discovered the rotating electromagnetic field, in a flash of creative intuition, while on a walk with a friend named Tageti in Buda-Pest, over 100 years ago, and quoting a line from Goethe.

Existing patterns of forces acting on a body become uniform whenever there is no change in its state of motion, and the body encounters no force. Only when the body accelerates, decelerates, or changes directions, or encounters certain external bodies or electric or magnetic forces, do the existing patterns of force resist the change. This is consistent with the theory of the tubes of force. It is obvious that this phenomenon is electromagnetic. Albert Einstein's hypothesis that a mechanism having weights which oscillated over time, as a gravitational analogy to the oscillating electric and magnetic fields in inductance, would generate "gravity waves", as the gravitational equivalence of dectromagnetic waves, was obviously wrong, else someone would have easily proved it Since that hypothesis has never been a secret, it is additionally wrong. Just exactly how Einstein thought such 'waves' were supposed to be responsible for the alleged "attractive force", even if they could be generated that way, remains unclear.

The reason we know that inertia/momentum is an electromagnetic phenomenon, is because it occurs only during the acceleration, deceleration, or directional changes which are essential to inductance principles, and because we can find no other reason. Since no inductance occurs unless

electric or magnetic fields change, or unless a body moving within than changes, causing inversely rising, collapsing, and reversing electromagnetic fields, there is no essential difference between electromagnetic and gravitational, inertial/momentum forces, which cannot be explained using electromagnetic theory, integrated with a valid and consistent theory of ether physics. The propulsive force also appears on the correct axis, as predicted by the Hall Effect.

We know that magnetic lines of force exist, and can chart them with paper and iron filings. These lines represent variations in magnetic flux densities, along and across flow lines. Whenever a conductor or body cuts through them, electric current results in the conductor or body. An electric current creates a magnetic field around itself and the conductor or body through which it flows, at right angles to itself, according to the "right hand rule". The variations between the magnetic field lines represent the necessary changes required to generate the current within the conductor cutting through them, and therefore even a "D.C." generator creates its current by an "alternating" (high-frequency) inductance phenomenon.

MOMENTUM AND INDUCTANCE

Since a spinning object cuts through lines of a magnetic field which can permeate it, the earth thereby generates an electric current, which continues to build up at right angles to its magnetic field, until sufficient to cancel the magnetic field. This comports with the Hall Effect, If the current is drained off, the magnetic field is increased, and vice-versa. If a spinning object creates an oscillating current, it therefore constitutes an electromagnetic dipole, which multiplies the electromagnetic energy radiated at the forth power of its frequency. As Tesla said, every physical entity has a natural set of electromagnetic resonant frequency characteristics. It has been suggested that gyroscopes actually respond to electromagnetic transmitter/receiver effects, beyond our solar system. As the basis for the celestial guidance system invented and tested by Tesla in 1917, and developed further by the Germans during WW II, they were not used by us until twenty years later. The electric field of a spinning body, at a particular rpm, within earth's weak magnetic field, should generate increased negative charges sufficient to partially cancel its own gravity, by causing a partial reversal of the displacement of its charges, to lessen their down force, as the ether passes through. Since it rotates about its center, the greatest angular velocity is along its outer circumference. Once its surface charges begin to move, the magnetic field is progressively blocked, as in a Faraday cage. Because earth's magnetic field is so weak, a spinning body will not develop enough upward electromagnetic thrust to become weightless, but delivers its entire gravity on its spinning point, even when turned completely sideways, as with a gyroscope, which behaves in "semi-defiance" to gravity. The stabilizing properties of a gyroscope, which behaves as if held by something in space, proves the existence of the ether and tubes of force.

I observed that precession is common to falling objects, even though they are not spinning, which becomes especially pronounced after they have fallen for around 700 feet. This can beseen in movies of falling bombs. Though an object falling at 120 m,p.h. may be virtually weightless, it still has momentum/inertia, and the force delivered when it strikes the ground is electromagnetic momentum built up over time. A flying saucer's electromagnetic momentum is not bound by the law of acceleration of falling bodies, determined by the time required for a falling object, accelerated by the force of gravity, to absorb a certain quantum of tubes of force, but may be greatly accelerated by the high voltage current, and multiplied. Falling objects are penetrated by

ether carriers, which bring along the micro-helical tubes of force, which during acceleration have progressively increasing pitch, before dissolving, transferring momentum to the mass.

All bodies are both gravitationally and electromagnetically affected by the principles of inertia, momentum, polarity, and precession, as explored in the Introduction. Their movement, as flying machines, may be caused according to the Hall Effect the reactions of which are of such magnitude that they can only be surpassed by nuclear fission or fusion reactions. Nikola Tesla built his flying saucers around 1915, using his tuned, resonant air-core coils. 62 years ago, there was a secret German flying saucer project at Los Alamos, using technology stolen from Tesla, called "p2", the existence of which has been carefully concealed.

Baron Wernher von Braun was in charge of that project. He dated several women in the Santa Fe area, in 1936-38, and those women described him as a romantic and gregarious man. He moved rather freely from Germany, to here, then back to there, to run Germany's top secret "rocket" center at Peenemunde, then easily glided once again back to Ft. Bliss, Texas, in 1945, all with the facility of a gazelle leaping a small creek. Von Braun was not an inventor, but more of a "pusher" of projects...a "politician with a rocket". He has been depicted as a "dreamer", who only wanted to "go to the moon"...to travel "...beyond the stars". Now that we know of his control ova the "p2" project, on behalf of the Illuminati, a secret society to which the major political players—Hitler, Einstein, Von Braun, Himmler, Lenin, Trotsky, David Rockefeller, to name only a very few—all belonged, the almost incredible phenomenon of von Braun's international cha-cha is more fully understood. And what of the false story that there was "...nothing at Los Alamos but a boy's camp" before the war? It is simply not possible that those responsible for that story could be so ignorant, and the "Los Alamos Story" is just one more chapter in the Book of the Big Lie, intended to magnify the importance of the huge government expenditures there, by laying claim to many things which were developed first elsewhere, by other people. Even the "p2" project was second-hand, having been stolen from Tesla.

WEIGHTLESSNESS, "p2", AND THE TUBES OF FORCE

It is my belief that an important fact has been ostensibly omitted from what is taught today...that a falling body will cease to accelerate when it reaches a velocity of about 120 m.p.h....at which it naturally maintains or tends to maintain a constant velocity. Has this been secreted away by the Illuminati, because it presupposes other important facts, which naturally occur once the first fact is known? If so, it represents additional proof of the existence of an interceding 'substance'—the ether—and suggests the accumulation of something at a predetermined rate which has reached its maximum under the natural forces present. If the reaction due to the gravitational constant G ceases to accelerate a body at the 120 mph velocity, it could be because of a time-related "equal and opposite reaction" to the force with which it is actuated to move downward, evidenced by the counter-buildup of momentum, sufficient to cancel the acceleration due to the gravitational force G. Does this buildup cancel the G-force, proportionately with time, as the body finally becomes weightless, with its entire gravity cancelled?

Could it be for this reason that one physically, momentarily, senses complete weightlessness, when riding in an airplane which is taking off, at the instant that it passes through the 120 mph velocity? Most people probably think the sensation is when the plane leaves the ground, because so many planes leave the ground at about the same time, but the sensation of physical

weightlessness is quite different than just becoming airborne, and can be felt in the inner ear, causing a special sensation in the stomach. It is also possible that the principle of aerodynamic lift is supplemented by the tubes of force as stated in the Introduction.

As atmospheric air resistance slows down a falling body, the gravitational constant again comes into play, so as to accelerate it once again to the constant velocity, and so forth, thus maintaining the constant velocity, at which the equal and opposite positive-mass G-force, and the anti-gravity, electropulsive neutralizing force, are in equilibrium, with the precession angle at its maximum, and precession frequency at its minimum.

Michael Faraday's experiments showed that an excess negative charge will always appear on the surface of an enclosed, hollow vessel. You place a charge inside, and it will always appear on the outside. This mystery is a convenient tool for flying saucer technology, because we don't want those charges jumping around inside our cockpit, all over us, but want them outside, where they can do their work.

All bodies are essentially composed of entities which represent "electrical content" (protons, electrons, neutrons). The presence of these charges in a dynamic mass, allows it to generate or attract its own electrons, to create them from Omni Matter, or to emit them, and to encounter its own gravitational reactions, according to its relative movement, within the magnetic and electric fields of its environment.

This is probably what Nikola Tesla had in mind in his Dynamic Theory of Gravity, The fact that the government has it, and no copies of it are available to the public, should indicate the importance of this over 100-year-old theory, except most scientists have never even heard of the theory. We already know that the same Trilateral/Illuminati symbol was used in the original Nazi-run "p2" Los Alamos project, and in Chapter II, I relate how it appeared on the 1950's I.G.S. resonator implantations. It has been reported in several forms on UFOs.

According to what we know about the difference between the gravitational, electrical, and electromagnetic interactions, if there is a tiny excess positive charge on the proton--so small that its detection has been concealed from ordinary gullible 'physicists'—such a charge could hypothetically be the origin of the weak "gravitational interaction". Suppose the gravitational force is equal to the electrical force created by the hypothetical excess positive charge of the hydrogen proton, in terms of accounting for its "gravity", which is the least for all known elements. For the same reasons, all the elements would be very close to being weightless, An atom of even one of the heavier elements, lead, may require the addition of less than a single election, to gravitationally/electrically cancel all of its mass units, and to give it the same charge-to-mass ratio as hydrogen. In order for us to appreciate the power electrons exert over protons and neutrons, it should be emphasized mat the mass of a proton is around 1,837 times that of an electron, (the neutron having a slightly higher ratio). While it is said that the neutron is electrically neutral, because it is composed of a proton and a 'tightly bound electron', this neutrality only applies to electrical conductivity, and has not been shown to relate to electro-gravitation. The neutron's tightly bound electron already cancels most of its positive charge, but the cumulative total of all the tiny excess positive charges—if the Lorentz hypothesis is correct—of the 82 protons and 125 other neutrons of the lead atom, are still unaccounted for. Under these circumstanoes, the vast differences between electromagnetic and gravitational interactions favors "gravity". Since it would only be necessary to add whatever negative charge required to equal the totality of all those tiny excessive positive charges, in order to completely cancel the gravity of the lead atom, it would be necessary

to add less than a single complete electron! Otherwise, the lead atom would already possess another electron. The first thing that an atom "does" when its nuclear mass develops an (electrical) "need" for another electron, is to acquire a new one in its outer orbit.

All atoms, molecules, or compounds, composing the matter on or around our earth, are predominantly electro-positive (although some of them are considered electro-negative in relation to hydrogen, sometimes by as much as perhaps six volts, but this is only in terms of "free electrons", in non-ionized states). The charge-to-mass ratios of all elements are positive in nature, because in all cases, even hydrogen, there is excess positive mass in their nuclei.

The high voltage charges on a saucer's front or top, easily "penetrate" electron cloud barriers, and should exhibit an electrical attractive force toward external positive matter, which according to Lorentz, is 2.2 x 10^{39} times stronger than the gravitational attractive force, but this is not true, and does not work "at a distance". This huge force, which according to the Newtonians, acts over a greater distance, conflicts with the Relativists, who don't believe there is a force at a distance, which is something I agree with, for different reasons. The "electromagnetic interaction", for reasons unexplained, is less than this, or 10^{40} times the gravitational "interactive" force G. If the Relativists don't believe in force at a distance, why do they keep referring to the "attractive" force?

AN ALTERNATIVE TO THE LORENTZ TRANSFORMATION

It has been incorrectly assumed that the Michelson-Morley Experiments disproved the existence of an ether, based on a failure to observe a "shift" (the "red-shift") on the fringes of two light beams placed at 90 degrees, perpendicular to the earth, at equidistant positions from their point of intersectioa Since ether theory asserted the ether as the medium which conducts light through space, and since no shift was observed, these results were misinterpreted to mean that there is no ether. This experiment was based on Lorentz' erroneous concept of a "quiescent, stationery ether", which held that there is an ether 'wind' which is everywhere the same, and that Maxwell's deficient calculation of C was a constant, but which in fact failed to provide two required constants of integration for time (one for each of its two differential equations), which included no definition of Maxwell's coordinate system's position and velocity (as a vector sum).

The false assumptions which arose from this failure by Maxwell resulted in the Lorentz' equation, called the Lorentz Transformation, which had built into it, the elastic space/time frame which attempted to supply Maxwell's lack of definition, and to explain the red shift observed near planets in space. It was this elastic space-time frame in the Lorentz Transformation which was adopted by Einstein in his Relativity theory, initiated to conceal and suppress ether physics.

Since ether theory had already assumed that gravity is a function of the ether, Einstein was incorrect to treat photons the same way as material bodies, to explain the red-shift, with the theory that the photons passing near a planet were "curved by the space-time continuum", producing the spectral shift. According to the Relativists, it was supposedly proved, on May 29,1919, "...that we live in a curved, four-dimensional space-time"'. Albert Einstein said a massive body spinning in space "...would drag space and time around with it...", the origin of so-called "frame-dragging"

---

[1]Gary Taubes, Relativists in Orbit, Discover (Mar., 1997).

and "space curvature" which Tesla was so opposed to, along with Einstein's statement, "Gravity is no longer a mysterious force acting at a distance but the result of an object trying to travel in a straight line through space curved by the presence of material bodies".

In researching for more possible explanations for this apparent tragi-comedy of mistakes, I found an article by Swedish physicist, John-Erik Persson[1], who seemed to agree with me. Persson said the Michelson-Morley experiment showed that the ether is space-dependent, not non-existent. Since the observations were made by stationary equipment in relation to earth (moving at over 70,000 mph through space), it was not a valid ground for postulating Relativity. If the ether has a constant velocity V in relation to the observer, the observed velocity of light becomes a vector sum C + V, according to ether theory. If the observer is moving at the same velocity and in the same direction as the ether, no red-shift should be observed. Michelson's empirical results showed that V, near the earth, is equal to the velocity of the nearest part of the earth (in the horizontal plane), in agreement with an ether which was stationary near the earth. This gave rise to Relativity, which made the false assumption that an observer will always find V to be zero, independent of his own velocity, giving rise to elastic space-time concepts, which are against intuition.

What I always point out as Einstein's preoccupation with his "apparent effects", resulting from an observer's failure to take into consideration his own motion, as well as the possibility that the ether has zero velocity only near the earth's surface. This zero velocity was due to what Tesla said was the "rigidification" of the ether caused by the emanation of earth's rapidly varying electrostatic forces, which would decrease in intensity at the square of the distance from earth, as the ether would have a commensurately increased relative motion. This same rigidification of the ether was consistent with Tesla's (Faraday's, Wm. Thomson's) statement that the ether behaved as a "fluid to material bodies, and a solid to heat and light", as still another explanation for the red-shift. That would allow the ether near planets to refract the light passing near it. Persson said that the theory of the ether interprets Maxwell's results as

The velocity of Light = C + V.

With the missing space dependent V(R) (velocity V and position vector R) supplied, the Lorentz Transformation is unnecessary, (and rationality and truth are restored to physics!). V(R) must represent a description of reality, and the reality of material particles is defined everywhere by acceleration A(R), concerning the distribution of matter in a vicinity. We have reason to suspect a relationship between V(R) (the translational field) and A(R), (the gravitational field), showing their common origin (the ether), shown by a photon (a fast wave field) added to gravity (the ether, a slow reference field). Since V(R) (the fast wave field) is the distribution of matter in the vicinity, it has the same value as the nearest part of a big material body it may be near, as a more reasonable interpretation which agrees with the Michelson-Morley experiment, showing that the photon adapts its velocity to local conditions.

This means that the space-dependency of the translational field, V(R), allows the theories of Newton and Maxwell to be united without any non-linear Lorentz Transformations, and that, by

---

[1]John-Erik Persson, About an Alternative to the Lorentz-Transformation (Hagersten, Sweden, 1997).

the rule of Ockham's Razor, the Translational Field is a more plausible explanation than the Theory of Relativity.

I had always assumed that, since calculations of C made in conductors and fiber optics, require the "velocity factor" (.97 x C in free space), that such an adaptation of C to the local conditions of the conductors, disproves the Lorentz Transformation and the Theory of Relativity.

NIKOLA TESLA'S DYNAMIC THEORY OF GRAVITY

Tesla's Dynamic Theory of Gravity (c. 1893-94) was based on the idea that all bodies emit microwaves (rapidly varying electrostatic forces) of particular voltage and frequency, as determined by their "electrical content" (mass, composed of protons, electrons, and neutrons), and relative motion. Tesla measured the microwaves of the earth with a special tube he invented (you could see the peaks and nodes of the microwaves created in the gas in the tube), as being only a few centimeters in wavelength. He said the frequency and voltage were related to the velocity and mass (electrical content) of the earth, and that gravitational interaction between bodies, was determined by the vector product of the mutual interaction of their microwaves with the ether, and to electric currents and tubes of force, passing through space and between and within bodies.

Tesla confirmed this, placing two metal plates a certain distance apart, and electrifying them with high voltage, high frequency currents ("Tesla currents", or "microwaves"). At sufficiently high voltage and frequency, the space between them became "solid state". It also worked with one plate only, suspending the zinc plate (1/8" thick x 12" square, weighing about two pounds) in mid-air. This is further documented in 1943 FBI documents released under the F.O.I.A., as being witnessed by Marguerite Merrington, in an 1894 demonstration by Tesla in his Houston Street laboratory.[1]

"p2"

The flying saucer uses "p2", which refers to two potentials, primaries or kinds of currents. The forward end of a saueer--"pl"—uses Tesla's tuned "Single Terminal Coil" (see page 300 for set of plans), tuned to either 1/4 wavelength, or 3/8th wavelength. It is an air-core, step-up transformer, which converts normal A.C. current to high voltage, high frequency current, which has charge-increasing effects similar to an electrostatic generator, but with a much greater reactance, due to its high frequency and tuning, which allows it to shoot out bursts of current of one sign (positive or negative) from one end, while remaining neutral or peak reverse voltage on the other end. Tesla created this coil specifically for the purpose of powering his flying saucer, even before the century began. Tesla noted and was greatly pleased by the "pseudo-electrostatic" effects of his coils. In writing a critique of the enormous Van de Graaff generator built by M.I.T. and tested in 1938, Tesla pointed out the fact mat only a tiny version of one of his coils, dating from the 1890s, would outperform the giant Van de Graaff. This is because a Tesla coil uses alternating, high frequency, high voltage inductance, to throw out electrostatic, D.C. pulses. A much smaller unit will produce the necessary high voltages, through inductance, and a much smaller conductor

---

[1]FBI Documents Regarding Nikola Tesla (252 pages), Part 1, page 49, LIST OF PERSONS ASSOCIATED WITH NIKOLA TESLA.

will carry the high frequency current, while D.C. systems require much larger conductors for the same total wattage. In MHD pumping, it has been proven that a pulsing DC, current is better than a steady D.C. current, so the Tesla coil is ideal for the flying saucer application, producing the traditional purplish brush, a facsimile to the earth's aurora borealis.

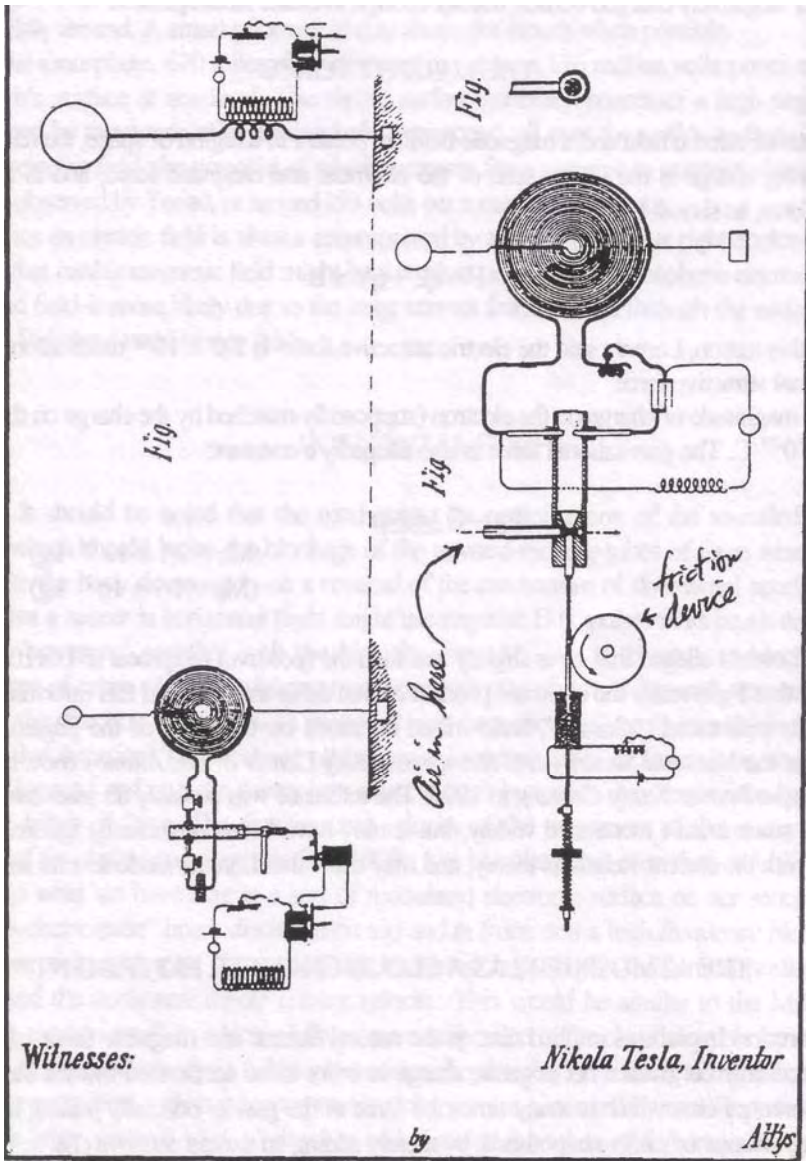
Using "p2", the vastly greater strength of the electromagnetic interaction is applied to control the very weak, gravitational interaction, to pump the ether and tubes of force into the ship and dissolve them, to impart momentum to the conductors attached to the ship, at right angles to the electric and magnetic fields, as explained in the Introduction. A relatively small amount of electromagnetic force, created by an alternator turned by a Tesla turbine, can easily dominate the gravity of a large ship, create electromagnetic momentum, and propel it at great speed.

In theory, an oscillating electric dipole consists of two equal and opposite charges of dipole moment p, where p oscillates sinusoidally with time. A dipole which is tuned to 3/8th or 1/4 wavelength, will continue to throw out energy even when the conditions are reversed, because there is a time-lag between changes in charge and current distributioa The power radiated varies as the fourth power of the frequency, so the higher the frequency, the higher the reactance. The use of the 3/8th tuning, causes the positive and negative potentials to cross and neutralize one another on the neutral end, while emitting the desired peak negative pulses at the other. The 3/8th tuning is convenient where it is desireable to have a neutral connection for the lower end of the coil. Since all gravitational atomic mass has a net positive charge, the negative charges are needed to manipulate gravity. The positive mass possessed by the ether carriers, reacts with the negative pulses, to attract them into the conductor, aeating and bringing along the tubes of force, which are dissolved in the conductor, to impart momentum to the conductor, with a force which is 10^{40} times stronger than the gravitational force:

$Fe/Fg = 10^{40} \times Fg$

The primary L-C circuit is composed of a primary coil (of few turns, using a large conductor), choke coil, spark gap, tuning coil, and capacitors. This combination produces the primary frequency for inductance of the secondary coil, of many turps, using a small conductor. The inverse ratio in number of turns and conductor size converts the electricity from low to high pressure. Tesla found that a primary coil consisting of a wide, thin, strip of metal, laid down flat between layers of insulation, was best, because it had less (undesirable) "self-inductance". This is even better with the bi-filar coil, which eliminates self-inductance altogether.

(NOTE: The following illustration was an unlabeled drawing from a patent application which Tesla withdrew, to prevent J.P. Morgan from acquiring the invention, since Morgan tricked Tesla into giving him a 51% controlling interest in "all his patents", when he funded his Wardenclyffe world energy system project When Tesla was driven into bankruptcy, the patent didn't issue and Morgan didn't own it. Tesla made this discovery at about the time his Colorado Springs experiments ended, as a new way to produce electricity from air, shown as follows:



The consideration of gravity as a separate force may be superfluous, since it appears to be a naturally occurring weak electromagnetic interaction in the first place, caused by displacement of the nuclei of atomic mass downward by the upward passage of ether carriers and dissolving tubes of force, induced by the currents created by the movement of mass through space.

As previously stated, gravitational mass is almost electrically balanced and neutral. If a flying saucer has an artificially created, strong, relatively negative charge, it will strongly attract relatively positive ether carriers. Of course, where this attraction is equal in every direction, the saucer will go nowhere. Since all atomic mass, elements, and compounds have net positive charges which

exceed their normal negative charges, there will always be some electrical attractive force between matter and negatively charged bodies, but not enough to create electropulsion.

THE LORENTZ FORCE

If both an electric field and a magnetic field are present in a region of space, the resulting force on a moving charge is the vector sum of the electrical and magnetic force, and is known as a Lorentz Force, as shown by:

$$F = qE + qVxB$$

For this reason, Lorentz said the electric attractive force is 2.2×10^{39} times stronger than the gravitational attractive force.

The magnitude of charge on the electron (supposedly matched by the charge on the proton) is $e = 1.6 \times 10^{-19}$ C. The gravitational force is also allegedly a constant:

$$Fg = G\frac{MeNp}{r^2} \qquad (Me = 9.1 \times 10^{-31}\ kg) \quad (Mp = 1.7 \times 10^{-27}\ kg)$$

(NOTE: Lorentz alleged that e+ is slightly less than the (positive) reciprocal to $1.6xl0^{-19}$ C, which suggested that Fg is really the electrical product of that difference. I found this information only by incidentally referenced ("glossed", handwritten notations on the sides of the pages) in material available at the National Security and Resources Study Center at Ins Alamos (now called The J. Robert Oppenheimer Study Center), in 1979. The reference was possibly an inadvertent "lapse in security", since it isn't mentioned widely, but it may have been conveniently ignored because it conflicts with the current Relativist theory, and may show that Lorentz made several serious errors.

THE ATMOSPHERE AS A CLOUD CHAMBER EXPERIMENT

Lorentz' hypothesis implied that, in the natural electric and magnetic fields of the earth, a saucer need only be given a net negative charge in order to be accelerated toward the ionosphere with a Lorentz Force which is many times the force of the gravity normally pulling it downward. According to Lorentz's naive hypothesis, by merely adding an excess negative charge to a ship, the force of gravity would be neutralized, just that easy! Would this not only free the craft from inertial as well as gravitational force, while also repelling it upward with the like' negative charges on the earth? I once thought that, once conditions necessary for electromagnetic repulsion have come into play, there would be no gravity. Would that it were so easy! Lorentz' silly theory was wrong! We all make mistakes.

Besides, during thunderstorms, the electric field is reversed, due to the high negative charges on the bottoms of thunderclouds, which multiply the potentials around ten times. Had Lorentz' hypothesis been true, a saucer would be slammed to the ground with astounding force, though I have often observed that saucers do experience apparent malfunctions in lightning storms, but not

enough to drive them down. There must be some provision for quickly adjusting the potentials and amperage to maintain somewhat stable flight beneath a thunder cloud, as the ships sometimes jump wildly around. A smart pilot would stay above the clouds when possible.

The ionosphere, 620 miles above the earth, is at least 176 million volts positive in respect to the earth's surface at sea level. The earth's surface generally possesses a high negative charge, maintained by thousands of lightening bolts per second, all over the earth's surface. This creates a vertical electric field, the potential of which increases from negative to positive, about 50 volts per foot (as observed by Tesla), or around 150 volts per meter, on a clear day.

Since an electric field is always accompanied by a magnetic field at right angles to it, this also implies that earth's magnetic field might be a product of this earth-ionospheric electric field, but the magnetic field is more likely due to the huge current from the sun through the earth, as noted by Kristian Birkeland and Hannes Alfen.

HORIZONTAL FLIGHT

It should be noted that the mechanism for neutralization of the so-called gravitational force—which should be by the blockage of the upward-moving tubes of force which dissolve to accelerate the body downward—as a reversal of the mechanism of downward acceleration. This means that a saucer in horizontal flight might use negative D.C. pulses in its brush discharge on its top, for 'bouyancy', together with the high freqency A.C. on its bottom, to block the upward movement of tubes of force, while a stronger negative brush on (its forward, attracts the tubes of force in the direction of travel (with increased high frequency A.C. to its rear to block the tubes of force in that direction).The blockage of the upward-moving tubes of force alone, should block the force of 'gravity' and give the saucer bouyancy, though buoyancy may require the brush on top to bring in tubes of force. The direction and velocity of the movement of the saucer is the vector product of the electric and magnetic fields of the two bi-polar pairs, according to J.J Thomson.

So what we have here is a sort of modulated electronic surface on our saucer; a negative "pseudo-electrostatic" brush discharge on top and in front, and a high frequency blocking current on bottom and to the rear. The vertical dipole creates 'buoyancy'—the vertical position above the earth—and the horizontal dipole creates velocity. This would be similar to the Milliken "cloud chamber experiments", in which oil drops were suspended in the cloud chamber by adjustment of external electric and magnetic fields cris-crossing the chamber, in respect to the charges possessed by oil drops, except with our saucer, moving charges are generated by motive power within it, to affect the ether external to it, to draw in and dissolve the tubes of force to accelerate it in any direction, in defiance to the magnetic and electric fields of the "chamber" (earth's atmosphere). Superimposed over this "oil drop" environment, is a double "p2"—one to position the saucer vertically, and the other to move it sideways—by emitting negative charges on one end to neutralize the gravitational and inertial effects on the other, thus actuating the ether and creating a powerful force to effortlessly propel the saucer forward instantaneously, while the internal effects of inertia, momentum and polarity are instantaneously switched and controlled, and the mass of the saucer is liberated from the ordinary rules of gravity, inertia, momentum and polarity, with the saucer's internal (human and mechanical) contents protected from these forces.

Based on Tesla's knowledge that the production of moving negative charges was essential for the Teleforce to act upon his "electric flying machine", he invented the "Tesla coil". The coil manipulates, recreates and magnifies the forces which normally exist, between atoms, and between e+ and e-, to control Fg, and to accelerate a body at astounding speeds.

It is important to understand the effect of the shape of the outer hull on the distribution of the action of the force. Were the hull shaped concave, rather than convex, the force field might become focused on a point some distance from the saucer, and react so as to merely draw whatever ether carriers and tubes of force might be at that focal point, toward the saucer with astounding force. It is for this reason that the outer hull is curved above, so as to "spread" the area over which the force acts to a very large area, drawing the tubes of force in.

As pulses of high voltage, high frequency negative charges move outward to distribute themselves over the saucer surface, some combine with atmospheric gasses and "slough off" as ions, creating a "protective envelope" which shields the saucer from friction and heat, dampens the sonic boom, and creates the "beautiful corona" I observed in 1953...the "lights" often seen. I'm sure this fact makes the "Illuminati" very, very, happy, so let's ruin it for them.

Graphic by Angus Lyne

CHAPTER II: PIECES OF THE PUZZLE COME TOGETHER

Now that I have introduced you to the theory and possibilities, I will now get down to the nitty gritties of flying saucer nuts and bolts, and tell you how I discovered them, step by step, in an Odyssey which lasts even unto the present, as I fill in more and more of the details.

My "odyssey" has involved some remarkable experiences and dangers which, in a way, remind me of a movie I saw a few years ago called Zardoz, starring Sean Connery. The title was derived from parts of the title words spelling "Wizard of Oz", on the cover of the book by L. Frank Baum. The story in Zardoz entailed the education of Connery by a secret elite. Connery played a murderous barbarian, through whom the elite, who had the secret of immortality, wanted to finally destroy themselves, because they had become tired of living. They arranged for tidbits of information to be made available to the barbarian, until he figured out that they were deceiving the violent society in which he lived, through a religious hoax, preaching constant destruction and war, and spewing out weapons from a giant head, for the barbarian worshippers to use against each other, while the elite lived in complete safety, with the secret of immortality as well. As you may see, there are certain parallels between my story and Zardoz, although I am not admitting that the society into which I was born tried to completely raise me as a barbarian, or that the elite which dominates us has any intent of bringing their power to an end The many "revelations" I have experienced, have appeared before me as if intentionally placed there by some clandestine elite. That did not happen to my knowledge, but it is creative and fun to imagine that it did.

Some have suggested that the fact that so many startling 'revelations' have seemed to have 'appeared' to me "alone", is "statistically challenging". The fact is, they appeared to me only because I was aware of them and not asleep. Had I not been aware of them, I would not have known about them I believe that there are astounding events occurring around many people, who, if they were aware of them, and mentioned them to others, as I have done, would also be accused of telling "statistically challenging" stories. I make no claim to having any "mystical powers" which would allow me to experience things others do not. What I do make claim to is the development of my natural skills to notice such things, so that if they occur, I will recognize them.

It is too bad that the analogy of Zardoz does not fully apply to the Trilateral Commission, since they deserve to be destroyed, as punishment for the many wars they fomented, and are still fomenting, to needlessly sacrifice so many lives for an illicit profit, and to reduce the population according to parameters which only they know about, but which we can surmise.

As you will see in this book, this analogy as applied to our society and its Secret Government is more appropriate than the typical Corporate Serf will allow himself to believe. He gets up each morning in the "burbs, and drives to his job at the Feudal Corporation. He takes his Stepford Wife and love-starved children to the Church of the Brain-Dead War Robots on Sunday, and prays to the Lord of Collective Guilt for forgiveness, for the sin of having daydreamed about living a real life. He indiscriminately accepts the premises that he is "his brother's keeper", that the Marxist graduated federal income tax and the welfare system are the best way to enforce his religion on others through the state, as part of 'God's plan under our constitution', and that the Founding Fathers fully intended for our armed forces to police the whole goddamned world no matter what the cost in taxes and loss of American lives. He doesn't know that the government records every single phone call in America and stores it for a period of two weeks...and longer if they have a reason to suspect a person of belonging to a "conspiracy of freedom"...and can store that purloined

information forever (but if he did know all that, he would believe the government had the legitimate power to do so under the "general welfare" provision of the Article I, section 8 of the U.S. Constitution). He doesn't believe in flying saucers at all, but if he did, he would think they were "signs in the sky" which the Old Testament said would be seen in the "last days', or the "wheel in the sky" seen by the prophet Ezekiel. The CIA has used all these suggestions.

The flying saucer I saw in 1953 was no prophetic "sign in the sky", but presented a genuine scientific mystery. I saw no sense in attempting to address every theory of gravity propounded by others, since they were obviously wrong. I didn't waste time with UFO reports or "updates" of every type either. Government organizations like Project Blue Book were just set up to plug leaks anyway. You are already familiar with what others have said, and are obviously unsatisfied, because you are now reading my book. So I will at least try to tell you how flying saucers work, and what my theory of gravity is, while others pretend that flying saucers are non-existent or "extraterrestrial" and that gravity is still a "mystery". They look in vain for "waves" and "particles" (such as the "graviton"), and have really found nothing. Their experiments are only part of the Trilateralist science sham, and since they are still looking, they must not know, right? So I will stick my neck out, and give you my best shot. If what they say is really the extent of their knowledge, then the flying saucer would be one of those inventions which worked, but nobody who used it knew why, so if they really don't know, then I should be entitled to the Nobel Prize in physics (which is out of the question), or the Pulitzer Prize for Journalism (which I should get!).

THE ODYSSEY BEGINS

My "flying saucer odyssey" began with an infantile boy's experiences with airplanes. My uncle, Roger Benton, had a Stearman biplane in the late '30s and early '40s, which he used for crop-dusting and any other hell or hair-raising, dangerous, daredevil-type fun activity. When I was around three, Roger flew into my grandfather's ("Papa Benton's") field one day. Like a kid, Papa wanted a ride. Roger was a "chip off the old block", and inherited his love of excitement from his father. So, instead of a bronco, Papa wanted a ride in the plane.

Roger took Papa up and gave him quite a thrill, especially when he looped the plane, and Papa had forgotten to fasten his safety belt. He saved himself only by locking his knees under the instrument panel, and hanging onto the joy stick. When Roger landed, Papa was still grinning, with a pale fringe about his lips and eyes revealing his narrow scrape with disaster. But that was part of the usual for those two.

I fell in love with planes that day, as I waved to Roger, and he disappeared into the clouds. My second 'big' plane impression was when I was around four, in 1942. Our neighbor had gone into flight training, and was stationed at a base which was near enough for him to buzz the neighborhood while on training flights. One morning, after a storm had flash-flooded the street in front of our little stucco house, with around a foot of standing water, I was wading in the street and gathering frogs which seemed to come from nowhere, since we lived on a desert. As I stood in the water-filled street, the flying neighbor came over, diving toward me while rocking his wings. His pull-out was almost too late, as I stood with my hands upraised, touching one of the wheels with my fingertips as the plane passed over me, narrowly missing me with its prop as my mother stood horrified in the front yard. Quite unaware of the danger I had experienced, this to me had a very

personal meaning, rather like the two reaching hands in the Sistine Chapel mural by Michelangelo. My fingers reached up as the 'wheel from the sky' reached down, and 'contact' was made.

In 1942, my father joined the Sea Bees. After boot camp at Camp LeJeune, the Navy convinced him to transfer to the regular Navy, because of his wife and three children, since the mortality rate for the See Bees at that time was 97%. He was sent to San Francisco, to set up and run the west coast Navy printing operation at San Francisco Naval Depot. Our whole family soon moved to Oakland, in 1943. For those two years in California, my life was immersed with being a "Navy brat", with weekends in San Francisco, and my frequent walks to the Museum of Oceanic Art, in Oakland.

At six (1944), I found a German spy's short-wave radio, set up in the back of a trash bin behind a grocery store near our apartment building. Navy intelligence allowed me to keep it, along with another my father had found in 1942, under a bed in a hotel room during his first trip to San Francisco. A neighbor and I connected the marvelous radios to his father's antenna, and we "listened to WW II". The German shortwaves were fantastic, and I have never seen another like them My mother threw them away one day because I forgot to remove them from the living room floor after repeated warnings.

My mother and three kids returned to Texas for the last year of the war, staying at my grandparents' place in Dayton, Texas, around forty miles east of Houston. (I later realized that this had been because of the Navy's test of the first American nuclear explosion at Port Chicago, California, on the Sacramento River, prior to the nuclear detonation at Trinity Site on White Sands Missile Range in New Mexico.)

After the war, our family returned to West Texas, where I resumed my interest in experimental aircraft, building many flying models. I took a strong interest in aerodynamics, and made hundreds of well-executed designs, plotted aerodynamic flow patterns, and even did some improvised wind tunnel tests. I belonged to the West Texas Model Airplane Club, organized by three or four WW II aces, including Bill Decker, Don Wooten, and a man named McKinzie (who purportedly was highly decorated), and others. Around 1952, at fourteen, I delivered a paper to the group and its affiliate in Odessa, Texas, on the feasibility of a glider and soaring competition, suggesting Marfa, Texas, as an ideal site. This meeting was attended by several men and boys from Odessa, such as Wally Scott and Mr. Schleymeyer, who later became international competitors, and there is now an annual international glider and soaring competitition meet at Marfa. I wasn't able to be the first to start it, because my father had caught me building a full-sized glider, using our living room floor as a lofting surface, and scrapped my plans right away, because he feared I might break my neck. But that lecture, in my fourteenth year, was the beginning of the international glider competition at Marfa, started by men who had heard my lecture.

Our town, Kermit, was around 325 miles E-S-E of White Sands Proving Grounds and Alamogordo, New Mexico. My first memories of "flying discs" (the first designation) and "flying saucers" (the second designation) which were sighted in the area, was in 1946, even before the 1947 "Mount Shasta" siting. Before I had seen a saucer in daylight, I had heard reports of them from oilfield pumpers who worked the area northward, near Jal, Carlsbad and Roswell, New Mexico, and had gotten other first-hand reports from several people who had seen them. From those reports, I knew that saucers were real, because that was before reports of them had appeared in newspapers, and the people sighting them really had no motive to say they had seen them unless it was true, since there was no sensationalism associated with the phenomenon. Some of these

people had served in the Army Air Corps during the war, fighting in the skies of Germans', either as pilots, navigators, flight engineers, crew, gunners, or bombardiers, and often compared them to the "foo-fighters". I had watched the ships maneuvering at night, but had never seen one in broad daylight, at close range, until 1953, although I had seen several discs high in the sky, at great distances, which looked like new dimes glinting in the sun, in the Roswell vicinity.

By 1950, 1 had talked to many people who had seen saucers over the area, and was getting impatient. I slept in our back yard for nine months each year (the warmer months usually), and had observed whole squadrons of them in the night sky. I noticed that they had a peculiar habit of turning in increments of thirty degrees, or multiples thereof. This divided the compass into twelve coordinate directions, and indicated something about their navigational and flight system.

Between 1950 and 1953, 1 hoped for a sighting, and never assumed that they were anything other than secret government aircraft from New Mexico. My mother had heard the rumor that they were connected to the A.E.C. and radiation, and that they were nuclear-powered, using helium fuel. We had many friends all over New Mexico, particularly the Roswell area, Alamogordo, and Deming, because our family business was the only state-of-the-art decorating source in the area between Ft. Worth, El Paso, and Albuquerque, for several years, until 1954 or so.

By 1952, 1 had developed a proficiency at aerodynamics, had designed and tested many experimental model aircraft, and had designed, built and tested my "ground-effects" system for autos, using a model with two engines, one to drive the wheels and the other to drive a prop on the back, which sucked air from under the belly pan. I planned on a career as an aerodynamicist and aeronautical design engineer, along with a career in art. I had, in effect, prepared my mind and senses to make rather specific observations, whenever the time came for me to have the opportunity to see a saucer up close, which I was convinced was in the near future. I had already been carefully building and testing flying model airplanes of every conceivable design, for seven years, since 1946 (when I was eight), and considered aeronautical design, aerodynamics, maneuverability, and performance characteristics as serious matters. I had also flown so many conventional and experimental designs that I could usually analyze a particular configuration and predict its aerodynamic behavior. I knew from my two 1952 propeller-driven flying saucers (powered by an "Allard 19" engine), that vertical stabilizers were essential on "flying pancake"-type designs. No fins had been seen by any of my witnesses on the saucers they had observed. This was already two years after the saucers had been sighted near our house, during which time I had hoped for a sighting. Yet, with all my intense interest in aircraft, I would not ride in a real airplane until I caught a hop' from Keesler, A.F.B., Mississippi to Texas, in a general's C-47, when I was an 18-year-old Air Force trainee.

In the summer of 1950, during the time of the sightings, I had gone to the Buffalo Trail Scout Ranch in the Davis Mountains, for a two-week bivouac with my troop.

During my stay in the mountains, cut off from the outside world, after returning from a trek lasting several days, we discovered that Manchurian tanks had rolled across the 38th Parallel in Korea. On return home, I had learned that, on the first day of the Korean War, a flying saucer had appeared in broad daylight, above the city hall across the street from our house, and had maneuvered for fifteen minutes, and that, on the following day, two saucers had appeared, and maneuvered for thirty minutes. In each case, my mother was the first one to spot them She taught China painting classes as part of our family business. On each of the two days, she went outside to fill her bowl with water and rinse out slip, with water from a faucet on our front porch. Being a

farmer's daughter, she had a habit of surveying the sky for weather signs, shielding her eyes from the sun's glare with her hand. When she sighted the first saucer over the City Hall on June 25, 1950, she called her ceramics class out to watch, and hailed the firemen and police across the street along with the mayor, Fred Pearson. The excitement spread, and within a few minutes, much of the town was watching. When it left, it departed in an upward blaze of instant acceleration. Mother said they were like "new silver dollars", and I distinctly remember her comparing them to her sewing machine bobbin, which meant the flat, shiny, "disk" type with peripheral groove.

On the next day, the same sequence occurred, only with two saucers appearing and maneuvering for around thirty minutes, then departing very fast as before. In each case, the description sounded as if the crews had experienced malfunctions, or were lost, which were responsible for the saucers being there in the first place, rather than over White Sands or Alamogordo. I later determined that these first saucers appeared to be of a sleek, silvery, slightly older "disk" type of WW II-vintage German design of the electric type, not similar in any way to the dumpy and "top-like" kind often shown in pulp magazines. It was my opinion at the time, that they were preparing these saucers for observational use in Korea.

I was disgruntled that I had not seen them, because I just happened to be out of town, although I was only a short distance south of White Sands, and only a little over a hundred miles to the west of Kermit at the time, in the Davis Mountains. I "debriefed" everyone I could find, including my friend Ken Burroughs, who was a competent young photographer who had photographed them Air Force Intelligence showed up, paid Ken $250.00 for his photos, prints and negatives, and made him sign a security document. Needless to say, the photos were never published. That was a lot of money for a teenager in 1952, for a few snapshots.

By that time, I had designed over 250 different types of experimental aircraft, rockets, cars, and even boats, and had built and tested numerous models of them. As previously mentioned, I had also built a couple of propeller-driven model flying saucers, and already knew that props, jets, and rockets were not the means of propulsioa In 1955, my father accidentally included my portfolio of designs in a collection of unwanted furniture he carted away and sold to a junk store, when we moved to Waco. It was possible that some of my designs found their way into the rocket and aircraft fields, judging from material I saw when I worked in Air Force Intelligence in 1957, since my book containing them was purchased from the junk dealer, whose store was right on Highway 302, before I could get it back

MY FIRST DAYLIGHT SIGHTING

In late summer, 1953, just before school began, we had our last family ice cream party of the summer, in our back yard Home made ice cream had been a tradition in our family for as long as I can remember. There were my parents, Raymond and Caleista, my older sister, Ramona, and my younger sister, Liz. Liz sat on a towel placed on top of the large, wood-sided, old fashioned, three-gallon ice cream freezer, as I turned the crank, while my father chopped ice and fed salt into the brine. The ice cream was almost ready, and I could barely turn the crank We were joined by the young daughter of our neighbor, Allen Pike, a former fullback at T.C.U. Pike's daughter, Carla, had been wistfully looking through the fence, her mouth watering at die possibility of eating some of my mother's delicious peach ice cream, so we invited her over to join us. We were also joined by our tenants, the Humphries. Mr. Humphries was a leather-faced tool pusher for a local drilling

company, and Mrs. Humphries still carried herself with the demeanor of her former wartime occupation as an officer in the "W.A.C.s" (Women's Army Air Corps). She had eyes like a hawk, and had already been an expert shot with pistol and rifle, before she took up and mastered the twin 50 caliber machine gun. She had light brown hair, and a beautiful aquiline profile like that of a Kiowa princess, similar to that of my Aunt Sina. She worked as a substitute teacher in our junior high school, and had also been the former WWII Chief of Aerial Gunnery Instruction, at the U.S. Army Air Corps Aerial Gunnery School, at Sarasota, Florida, at the rank of captain. Whenever our B-17 bomber crews took gun-camera film of any new German aircraft, such as the infamous "foo fighters", she was among the first to know, since it was her duty to immediately develop and integrate into her gunnery training program, whatever new instructions required, to insure that our gunners were prepared to defend our bombers from any new forms of enemy assault. She was therefore not only a qualified expert aircraft spotter and identifier, but was the chief American gunnery instructor as well. I myself had practically memorized Jane's Handbook of the Aircraft of the World, and had discussed aircraft on several occasions with Mrs. Humphries, who had observed with a cool, detached candor, my construction of flying model saucers, and experiments in electromagnetism.

The time of day was near sundown, with the late August sun around 15 degrees above the horizon on the right, to the west of our yard. We sat near our rear fence, as little Carla, around seven, sat nearby.

As I struggled with the increasingly stubborn crank, while Liz tried to hold the freezer down, and the dasher trudged through the ever-thickening ice cream, I happened to glance up at the sky above Liz's head, in the direction of a nearby new water tower to the south of the town's old one. To my amazement, hovering there, at an angle of around 45 degrees above our position, at a distance of around 300 feet and an altitude of about 200 feet, was a flying saucer.

The saucer was precessing at an acute angle of around 45 degrees, at a frequency of around two cycles per second. Sunlight, from the horizon to our right, shimmered across the striated, silvery, bright metal hull, on each precession. A visual comparison to the water tower near and to the rear of the saucer, showed its diameter to be close to 50 feet. Its shape consisted of two evenly curved semispheres joined at the edges. This was unlike the earlier, 1950 versions seen by my mother and sisters. A cloud of "corona"—high voltage electricity emitted by the hull—throbbed orange-pinkishly with each precession, and scintillated into ghostly, silvery blue in the surrounding space, as a gentle westerly breeze wafted the coronal clouds softly about.

The two entirely symmetrical, "wok-like" halves, each having an arc of approximately 120' radius of curvature, formed a ship approximately 10' thick.

The high angle precession created an initial optical illusion, which explained why my mother had mistakenly thought the saucers she saw in 1950 were flipping like coins, end-over-end, while hovering. Mother's sightings were in the early afternoon, with the sun almost directly above her saucers, producing a silhouette effect. This created an inverse illusion, by the large angle precession of the elliptical shapes under those lighting conditions. The low angle of the sun during my sighting, however, and the shimmering sunlight dancing across what appeared to be a spun metal hull, which was highly reflective, as the saucer precessed, produced a clear picture of the movement and shape. Even so, I too was initially baffled until I established the proper movement. The coronal discharge and scintillating, rainbow-colored clouds produced, added a beautiful,

ghostly "special effect" to the ship. It was easy to understand why many viewers might get excited by "extraterrestrials", since the event was almost, but not quite, unearthly.

I immediately exclaimed, "Look at that flying saucer up there!" Everyone looked to see it, except Mrs. Humphries, who only allowed her eyes to dart once at it, instead of staring at the saucer. She was more interested in viewing me from my left, as I looked back and forth between the saucer and her, attempting to get her to look at it. I asked her, "What is that?!" She merely cocked a knowing and sophisticated left eyebrow, and shrugged

After perhaps ten seconds of hovering, the saucer began to move slowly at first, due west, toward Ft. Bliss and the southern extreme of White Sands Missile Range. It left a 'buttermilk' trail of silvery, scintillating atmospheric ions, which lingered and sparkled, gradually fading away. As the rate of acceleration and frequency of precession increased, the angle of precession decreased to a mere high-frequency wobble, as it suddenly shot forward to hundreds of miles per hour, at which time it made a 90 degree turn down and a second right angle back to horizontal, then accelerated to infinity, in approximately three seconds, as I counted off "...thousand-and-one, thousand-and-two, thousand-and-three...". I roughly calculated the velocity at near 9,000 m.p.h., based on an approximately 7.5 miles distance required for a 50-foot diameter object to become an infinite point above the horizon, in three seconds. This was a minimum calculation, which I believe was fairly accurate. My eyesight was at least 20/30 at the time. The rapid change to lower altitude seemed designed to diminish the visibility of the ship by the public, when the flight crew suddenly realized that they were over a town.

There was no sonic boom, perhaps because such rapid acceleration gave a boom insufficient time to develop, and other reasons which I was bound to discover.

There were no obvious protuberances or windows that I could see on its surface. It was as if, at high speed, the pilots—who may have had relatively primitive navigational, flight control, and visibiliiy devices—had accidentally strayed over our town, or malfunctioned, requiring some re-orientation to get the saucer back to their base at Ft. Bliss or in New Mexico, which, at that speed, would have taken every bit of 1.93 minutes to reach. I later satisfied myself by concluding that it was a German pilot instructing an American pilot, on how to operate the saucer. Due to poor visibility on the early model, they may not have realized that they were over a town, and when they had, they rapidly departed In that area, at that time, one could fly for miles over the barren Southwestern landscape, without seeing a town or persoa

The most significant 'surprise'—aside from the electrical corona discharge—was the precession and its particularities. Since it was most pronounced when the saucer was hovering, I considered the phenomenon as being closely linked to the power level, in which the ship was on the balance between "gravity" and "no gravity", during which the circling polarity of the accompanying magnetic field created by the electric currents, swept around counter-clockwise, as well as I remember it, thus creating a minimal sweeping gravitational pull. The fact that the ship quietly hovered, dispelled the idea that jet, rocket, or propeller-driven propulsion was involved, and indicated an anti-gravitational propulsion by electrical means. I entertained the idea that the 'gyscopic' action of the ship may have been due to an internal device, such as an engine, which rotated Since the ship processed while hovering, like a gyroscope on gimbals, any considerable rotating machinery could have produced the gyroscopic precession. This was consistent with the idea that a rotating engine and electrical generator caused the precession, since the rate of precession increased, while the angle of precession decreased, as the saucer's acceleration

increased. The idea that the propulsion system was "gyroscopic" was negated by the fact that the turn was perpendicular to the (vertical) axis of gyroscopic precession, and was a "power turn".

The answers to all my questions were delivered by my flying saucer, in as glorious a manner as one could rationally hope for, and then some. While I knew at the time that the propulsion system was electrical, it would take me many years to discover exactly how the "electro-physics" applied.

There we were having our last ice cream supper of the summer of 1953, near dusk, on a lovely end-of-the-summer day. And just as the ice cream had thickened to its final state, and I happened to look at the sky above my sister's head, there it was, ghostily gyrating in mid-air, no more than 300 feet away, as the beautiful wisps of electrical corona drifted across the metallic shell and into the air, then faded with a twinkle, like stardust from a magic wand which had just passed across the sky.

I observed the colors of the corona at hovering power, which ranged from a bright white, through every color of the rainbow. Generally, the color was a "pink and blue", with gold highlights and purple undertones. The corona was not too unlike the flame produced by burning zinc, such as when a welding torch was being used to cut galvanized steel pipe. Very beautiful. The corona was emitted from the entire shell at hovering, with a negative corona at the top, as the wind blew gently from the left. Each time the saucer precessed, the wind wafted the corona around on the surface and in the air. The gyrating saucer reminded me of a precessing gyroscope. But the saucer shell itself did not rotate, and the corona did not come out of vents, because there were none.

The air in contact with the surface fluoresced orange-red, in "throbs", which corresponded to each cycle of the saucer's precession, on its bottom as it turned into the wind from the left and in shadow, away from the sunlight from the right. I concluded that the 'throbs' were probably due to the increased visibility of the corona in the shadow, due to the increased light contrast. This created the illusion that the corona came in 'throbs' which corresponded exactly to the precession, which was only the product of the relative light and dark which revealed the corona more in the dark. The corona was still there on the light side of the saucer, only you couldnt see it because the light was too bright.

The precession generally matched that which I had experienced in a friend's new 1954 Buick, at 120 mph. As the car approached 120, it began to precess, as it sped down the highway, rolling around on the coil springs, which scared us a bit. At that speed, the angle of precession was at its maximum, and the precession frequency was at its minimum, of approximately 2 c.p.s. As we passed through 120, and sped up to 135, the precessional angle decreased, and the precessional frequency increased, until it was a mere "shimmy", behaving in much the same manner as the saucer. In fact, we were greatly relieved to be traveling at 135 rather than 120, where the precession was so scary.

At very high speed, the two turns which the saucer had executed were precise, square ones, and it did not 'swing out' at the corners. This boggled the eyes, since one never sees things do that, except on some mechanical devices, which hold moving parts into position with rigid guides. At hundreds of miles per hour, the effect was eerie. The movement indicated that the saucer experienced none of the effects of momentum and inertia, and therefore operated on a principle which controlled these forces, and created 'synthetic', instantaneous momentum by increasing in the new direction of acceleratioa Since the forward edge emitted a 'hairy' (i.e., negative) corona during the rapid acceleration, the electrical polarity was indicated. Since the ship made instant

square turns which were perpendicular to its vertical axis, the idea of an internal "gyroscopic" drive system was contraindicated. There was no sound, hence no perceptible aerodynamic or "Coanda" effects.

The saucer accelerated much faster than a jet, rocket or propeller-driven craft could have, and had no visible or audible jets or rockets, orifices, pods, intakes, or shapes. It went from a half mile away to infinity in three seconds, appearing to have achieved a 9,000 m.p.h. velocity almost instantly, although it could have been as high as 25,000 mph.

The metallic shell was similar in color to aluminum, only somewhat duller, with concentric striations on its surface, like a 'spun' "wok" shape. The striations were approximately 1" wide and rather crude, indicating perhaps a technical difficulty in fabrication, such as that experienced in early, large-scale "spin-forming" of the shells on very large vertical lathes, using new, special tungsten alloy discs. A friend, who had worked in a secret government factory, in Amarillo, Texas, in the '50s, described how they fabricated such semi-spheres around 50' in diameter in that same manner. The shells were then shipped to New Mexico. When one of the work crew asked what they were for, he was told they were "shells for flying saucers", and everyone had a good laugh.

As the saucer precessed, sunlight played across the striations on the bottom, like it does on the microgrooves of a silvery compact disc, or of an aluminum pan.

I had made the rough estimate of its diameter by visual comparison to the new city water tower behind it and slightly to the right. The approximate height through the center was visually extrapolated from the diameter, together with the proportionate spherical sections used, and the height-to-diameter proportionality.

What I saw in 1953 was a flying machine. The most irrational assumption would have been that it was "extraterrestrial" in origin. The most rational assumption was that it was made by human beings, and that was my first impression. The puzzle parts I had gathered that day, added to what I already had, eventually grew, until I had enough to fit together to substantiate what I believed on my first impressioa

There were many sightings occurring at that general period of time, especially in that area. That particular saucer was noted by Wink Air Station, about 10 miles away, according to my brother-in-law's relative, who worked there. Wink Air Station was south of the flight path, which was on a bee-line precisely due west toward the northern edge of Ft. Bliss, Texas, where Wernher von Braun was at that time. Had I not been viewing the saucer while it hovered, and its flight to the horizon, almost directly along its trajectory, it might not have been visible.

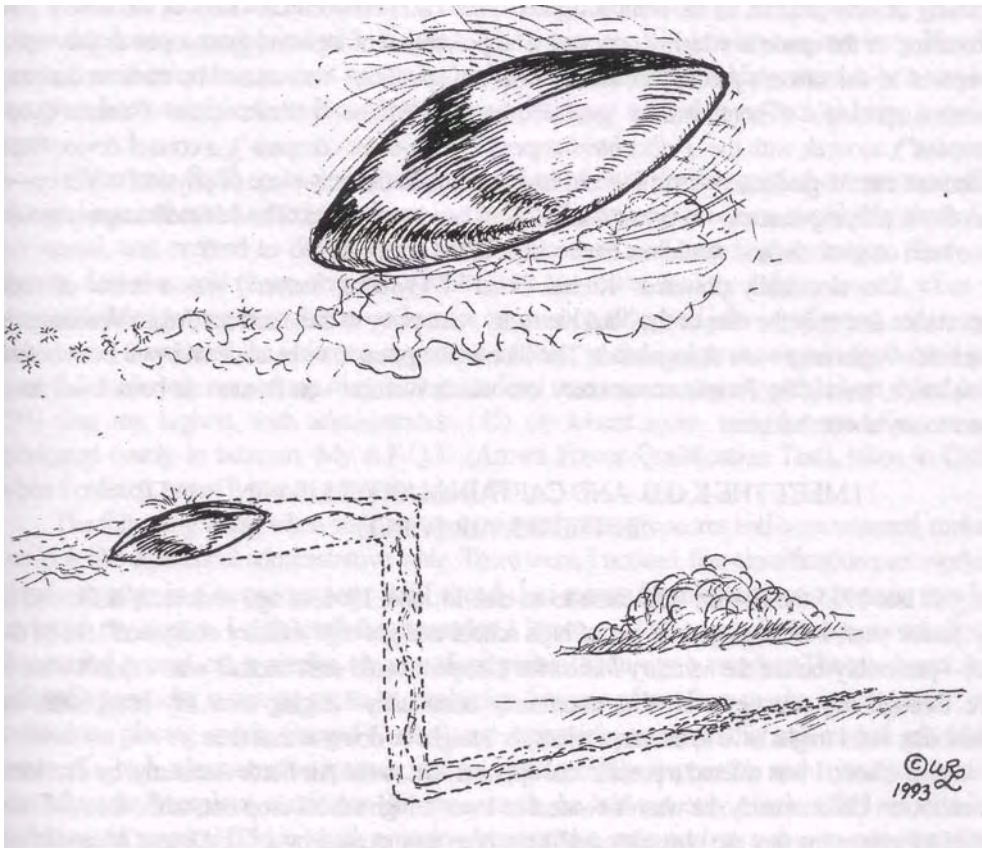
As I thought about the performance characteristics, 1 concluded that the field of aerodynamics would soon become obsolete. This led me to abandon my plans to become an aerodynamicist, although I still wanted to be an aeronautical engineer. After all, the saucer was powered by electricity, had canceled inertia, momentum and gravity, made no sonic boom, and apparently ignored aerodynamics. I assumed the aircraft was classified at the time, but that it would only be a matter of no more than five to ten years before it would be declassified, just as other aircraft had been. At the time, I assumed that the general public would be using flying saucers by 1960. How wrong this turned out to be! The longer I waited, the more I became determined to know why.

In 1953, at the time of my sighting, I assumed that the saucer was a "secret government project". By 1963, I confirmed instead that it was a "Secret Government" project, and began viewing all government statements as being intended to maintain that secrecy. By that time, I also assumed that the Soviets did not have the saucer, as we knew it, even though Habermohl,

purportedly one of the top German flying saucer scientists, had gone to the Russians in 1945, and we ended up with Miethe and Schriever. Neither of these two men appeared to have anything to do with the electrically-powered saucers, and their projects were probably misinformational. I eventually considered the assumption that the Soviets also had the saucer even more improbable, hinging" on the question as to whether or not Habermohl had access to the particular secrets involved, and whether he told the Soviets about them if he did. It is more probable that Habermohl, whose ideas were of the lowest order in the "flying saucer hierarchy", was purposefully 'sacrificed' to the Russians to mislead them, and that the Russians incorrectly assumed that he would have told them everything he knew, while he may have given them only misinformation. The CIA could have put a lot of money in a Swiss bank account for him, while the Soviets continued to treat him like a king. Besides, the kind of saucers under development by Habermohl and Schriever were of the jet and rocket powered "boundary layer" type, not the electric type, and really posed no risk to the "real" "p2" flying saucer, based on Nikola Tesla's original discoveries, acquired by the Nazis and purportedly being developed by Miethe, under von Braun's immediate supervision, from his research and development centers at Peenemunde and in Bavaria.

The Nazis were very shrewd, developing several different types of saucers—some aerodynamic, but only one electrical—at different locations using different designers, but they would never have developed the "real" ("KT-p2") electrically powered saucer outside Germany, such as in Czechoslovakia, where Habermohl and Schriever worked. The Czech projects appeared to be purely disinformational. It is probable that the only military organization made privy to all these secrets was the SS, as suggested by evidence purportedly from Wiener Neustadt, in the Austrian Bavarian Alps, and at General Otto Skorzeny's special SS commando headquarters near Munich Skorzeny's groups' specialties included rescues. The saucers were purportedly viewed by the SS mythically, as the Vimanas of the SS Aryan philosopher-rulers, according to the neo-Platonist Nazi religion.

There has been a very carefully executed conspiracy to conceal real photos of what I call "real flying saucers"—those of the purely "electro-propulsive" type—from the public. The O.S.I, has seen to it that many fake photos and configurations have been 'inserted' into the mainstream, to confuse the public not only as to the real shape of these saucers, but to the means of propulsion. I have encountered very sly O.S.I, attempts to propagate the idea—within more 'intelligent' "UFOlogy" circles—that the Felix Schauberger designs (which were non-electro-propulsive, claiming use of an "implosion turbine"-driven 'duct fan', which put them definitely in the "low-tec" category, somewhere in the category of a glorified air conditioner vent)—were the kind developed by the Nazis. From the numerous photos of flying saucers—some real, some fabricated—it is difficult to determine with relative certainty the stages of development which the 'true saucer' has undergone. Many of the photos are obviously hoaxes, and all the types proffered by the "German-genesis" bunch are disinformational, or based on data derived from CIA-generated disinformational sources, so I will try to show you what I saw in 1953, and you can draw your own conclusions. The illustration shown below should give you some idea of what the particular type of saucer I saw looked like:



I knew by the way that the saucer could 'jump around' in space, that it's gravity was being controlled. Otherwise, it would have flown to pieces, and any pilot would have been slammed around so badly that he would have been injured and rendered unconscious by the "G" forces. I knew from the electrical corona, and the 'buttermilk' texture of its corona trail, that the means for controlling gravity high voltage electricity, and included at least some sort of high frequency electricity. I knew also that the saucer disobeyed conventional rules of gravity, inertia, momentum, aerodynamics, aeronautics, and physics.

A rounded surface will hold charges better than those of a small diameter or sharp points or edges, which will 'leak' charges more quickly, and cause corrosion and burns. A corner of 90 degrees or more, will reflect waves being emitted from the top or bottom. This to me explained some of the saucer's physical shape parameters. The emissions seemed to originate on the top surface on hovering—with positive corona on its bottom—and at the front when accelerating.

In attempting to analyze the cause for the precession, I concluded after many years of deliberation, that it was not caused by a 'spinning' mass inside the saucer, such as a gyroscope or

motor, or the saucer itself, but was caused by the same unidentified, underlying reason that spinning objects precess, in an electromagnetic interaction between the mass of the saucer and something in the space in which it operated. The precession of tops and gyroscopes as they spin, compared to the saucer's precession, since it was not spinning—was caused by some underlying common principle. There was a guidance system Meisterkreiselkompass ("master-gyro-compass"), to work with the Peiltochterkompass ("polar-slave-compass"), a control device from a German inertial guidance system I would later acquire, as the only piece of physical evidence—a part from a flying saucers—in private hands—my hands—thus far. The Meisterkompass would have been on gimbals, and would not have related to the precession.

The electrically powered "Kreisel Teller" ("Gyrating Saucer") was a secret of such importance that only the elite of the Nazi hierarchy were privy to these secrets. Adam Weishaupt's Illuminati beginnings were at Ingolstadt. The Illuminati appeared to be alive and well even before Weishaupt, among the Prussian aristocracy into which Wernher von Braun was born. I will have more to say about this later.

I MEET THE K.G.B. AND CAPTAIN MANTELL'S WINGMATE IN THE U.S. AIR FORCE

In late 1955 the Korean War came to an end. In June, 1956, at age seventeen, at the end of my junior year, I decided to drop out of high school and get my "military obligation" out of the way—preferably before the Military Industrial Complex could start another war. I didn't want to live through my twenties with that uncertainty continually hanging over my head, with the possibility that I might have to interrupt whatever I might be doing at that time.

Somehow, I was offered a presidential appointment to the Air Force Academy, by President Eisenhower. Unfortunately, he wasn't aware that I was a high school drop-out, while the Air Force failed to inform me that the obstacle could have been surmounted by a G.E.D. test. Meanwhile, I also wanted to be in the Air Force Band, but there were no new assignments. I was offered the position of first bugler for the National Drum and Bugle Corps, in Washington, D.C., but at the time, my disappointment over not being in the Air Force Band was so great, I failed to investigate the bugle corps offer and what a great opportunity it represented, and turned it down. This was while I was in basic training, when I was in the Lackland A.F.B. Drum and Bugle Corps, where I was first bugler. Second bugler was my best friend at the time, Kris Kristofferson, who was quickly appointed as "barracks chief, because he had two years of RO.T.C. at Pomona College. My other good friend was Eddie Heywood, of Boston, Mass. Kris' father was Army brass, and Eddie's older brother, Tom, was a Navy commander. Eddie's lather was an M.I.T. chemistry professor. I had been a Navy brat during WW II, so we all sort of fell in together and got along well. Kris and I had both gone out with the same girl, named Marilyn Wood, of Donna, Texas, who was the National F.F.A. "Sweetheart" around 1956. Those farmers couldn't have picked a better girl, even though she liked musicians.

Kris and 1 reciprocated for base reville and taps. We had a crack marching and performance group, and had some excellent Caribbean drummers, as well as a bagpiping member of the Black Watch of Scotland, on loan to us from the RC.A.F.

Kris was awaiting an application to Annapolis, and had another application in for flight school just in case. After discovering that I wouldn't be able to accept the A.F. Academy

appointment, and that no band positions were open, I decided that jet mechanics would be a good job, and would prepare me for my planned career in aeronautical design and engineering. I already knew that I was a mechanical whiz-kid, and didn't anticipate any problems on my tests. Besides, good jet mechanics were in short supply in the Air Force at the time. Eddie wanted to be a tow-reel operator, because of the extra hazardous duty pay, then just wanted to go back to being a civilian again.

When we finally got to our testing phase, I came away feeling good about my tests, even though I was rather exhausted at the time I took them. Later, we were given our files by the testing personnel, and ordered to deliver them to the counseling and classification section. There, an airman first class told us we were not to look at our test scores until the following week, when we were scheduled to meet with the counselors for career counseling and job classification and training purposes. I considered the order too suspicious to obey, so the minute the airman first's head was turned, I disobeyed, opened my file, and recorded my stanine scores on my pith helmet. Mechanics (95) was my highest, with administration (45) my lowest score, with the rest of my scores graduated evenly in between. My A.F.Q.T. (Armed Forces Qualification Test), taken in Dallas when I enlisted, was 97, placed me in the top 1 %.

The following week, when our files were returned to us, my scores had been reversed, making me look like a potential administrative whiz. There were, I noticed, five classification men working closely together in a suspicious way, and I already had reason for my suspicions, because they had reversed my scores. I didn't tell the counselor I knew my test scores had been reversed, and discovered several other similar obvious discrepancies with my comrades. The personnel man refused to consider assigning me to jet mechanics, because of my "low mechanical aptitude", and insisted on placing me in Ground Control and Approach, an air traffic and control job which required a high administrative aptitude, and involved a highly responsible and critical job landing aircraft under hazardous conditions. In other words, he had not only misclassified me, but had placed me in a critical field in which a single administrative error, such as assigning two aircraft the same altitude, etc., could cost millions of dollars and several lives. I already knew that the changes in my scores were made after the records had been turned over to the classification personnel, who therefore were the responsible parties in all likelihood.

On return to our barracks, I made a rapid survey of others to see how they had fared, bearing in mind that our records had been sabotaged. There were several men scheduled for counterinteUigence, some to be sent to Harvard, Yale, Dartmouth, and other schools with good Slavic language programs. I assumed that many of these assignments were misclassifications, based on sabotaged scores that made the airmen involved appear to have a higher aptitude for languages than they actually had. As I later discovered, while my scores were merely reversed, those of some others' were juxtaposed in different order, or graded upward or downward.

Among the airmen being sent to counterintelligence was a young Bulgarian who was a trustworthy friend, who had been recruited just for that purpose by U.S. Intelligence. He was a fine person, whose family had been slaughtered by the Communists. The classifications personnel had probably taken a wide berth with him, but had probably blown his cover. Another guy, who claimed to be from Florida—which I did not believe, and neither did the Bulgarian—was also classified into counterintelligence. He had the same rosy cheeks and Slavic mouth as my boyhood friend, Rudolf, who was a first generation Czech-Americaa I consulted with the Bulgarian, and then with Eddie, and finally with Kris, who was knowledgeable about military affairs and

procedures. Kris recommended that I report my findings to the adjutant. By that time, the personnel saboteurs had continued to do their damage, and had even managed to cut a set of travel orders sending me to Air Police School in Compton, California, even though I was assigned to G.C.A. school at Keesler A.F.B., Mississippi, near Biloxi.

I told the adjutant that I had found what I believed to be a 5-man K.G.B. cell operating in the Air Force Career Counseling Center at Lackland, and that they had probably already routed a Czech mole into counterintelligence. The adjutant straightened out my travel orders, and said he would have the matter looked into.

Months later, Naval Commander Thomas W. Heywood—Eddie's older brother—on behalf of O.N.I., came to Keesler to spend four days over Thanksgiving, 1956, with Eddie and I. He said his reason for coming involved the K.G.B. cell, informing me for the first time that the F.B.I., acting on my information, had uncovered them Tom said he had reason to believe that the K.G.B. was responsible for certain problems I was having, and that he would see what he could do to get me out of trouble. He said that Eisenhower had transferred the bunch to the Army where they could be more closely watched. The entire incident was classified "Confidential", and Tom was breaking the rules by even discussing the matter with me. I received the same confirmation from the squadron adjutant and commander, and was also clandestinely visited by Air Force Intelligence and D.I.A. people, who were trying to help me, while the Air Force officially refused to do anything.

About that time, Arthur C. Clarke, head of the British Interplanetary Society, and a big friend to Wernher von Braun, came to Keesler to give a lecture on "Unidentified Aerial Phenomena", which I attended. Clarke concluded that flying saucers did not exist as such, and that all such sightings could be explained as natural phenomena. After his address, I filed through a line to speak to him. I shook his hand and told him, "Dr. Clarke, I enjoyed your speech, but both you and I know that you are a goddamned liar, and that flying saucers are man-made flying machines powered by electricity." Clarke chuckled and shook my hand. Two days later, I was reclassified into intelligence, as a clerk- typist, of all things (there was the uncorrected high score in administration speaking again, which the Air Force refused to correct). Both Eddie and I went to 8th A.F., S.A.C., Headquarters, 26th Strategic Reconnaissance Wing, Lockbourne, A.F.B., Ohio, near Columbus. I was then processed and cleared for Top Secret.

It seemed an odd coincidence that the 8th Air Force intelligence group to which I was attached was the same one which had encountered the first allied air assaults of the German flying saucers, and was also somewhat involved in Operation Paperclip.

While at Lockbourne, in late 1957, 1 met a lieutenant colonel named A. W. Clements who was on T.D.Y. there, who had been one of the lieutenants who were Captain Mantell's wingmates, at the time of the Jan. 7, 1948 incident near Mayville, Kentucky, involving a flight out of Godman A.F.B. Flight Commander Thomas Mantell, Jr., led his P-51s in pursuit of a flying saucer. His plane was completely destroyed and Mantell with it. The later account by J. Allen Hynek, in his "Operation Blue Book" report, was almost completely different from the one given to me by Lt. Col. Clements. The situation gave me cause to wonder that, should others have followed up on Hynek's footsteps on all the other reports he supposedly considered, that almost just so many other errors might not emerge, showing a consistent pattern of lies.

The way I came to meet Clements, a tall man with dark wavy hair, was because of a discussion—actually more of an argument—which I was having with a couple of intelligence officers, one a major and the other a captaia I was making my argument on flying saucers, and

they were calling me crazy, saying flying saucers were either 'aerial phenomena' or non-existent. The colonel came down the stairs, introduced himself, and said he was on T.D.Y. at Lockbourne for a couple of weeks, (from either Kentucky or Wright-Patterson, I don't recall for certain). He said he couldn't help but overhear our argument, and said he was taking my side. He told us he had been Captain Mantell's wingmate in the 1948 disaster, and gave a blow-by-blow account of the incident, which significantly differed with the account written by Hynek when they spotted the saucer, and immediately commenced pursuit under standing orders, they contacted the control tower at Godman. Mantell led the way, and was close to the saucer. The control tower patched them through to the Pentagon, which ordered them to immediately cease pursuit. Clements said that he was unable to make radio contact with Mantell, because of the strong electric field near the saucer, so Mantell continued the pursuit, within the colonel's view. Mantell's plane flew into tiny pieces and Mantell with it. There was no evidence or sighting of any weapons use. The two officers who were arguing with me had to eat crow, for there was a superior officer having direct personal knowledge of flying saucers, in a famous incident, to corroborate my argument. 1 thanked Clements for his honesty. The two other officers didn't call him crazy.

My theory is that Mantell's plane, at 500 mph., entered the saucer's electric field, which gravitationally neutralized the front of the plane. As soon as his plane lost its charge, the front and rear of the plane shredded together and apart in every direction, due to the sudden effects of momentum and inertia. The Pentagon's order to cease and desist was heard by Clements, but not by Mantell, and must have been intended to avoid such an incident, based on prior knowledge by Pentagon personnel as to what could happen. Otherwise, there is no case in which the Pentagon has ever ordered the U.S.A.F. to cease pursuit of any "unidentified" aircraft, while flying over the continental U.S.A. The parts of Hynek's report which were false, due to critical omissions and misrepresentations—since Clements told his story to me the same as he told Hynek—were related to the facts that they clearly pursued a flying saucer, that Clements was in view of Mantell's plane at the time of the explosion, that radio contact had been obviously broken with Mantell due to the electric field of the saucer, and that the Pentagon had caEed off the pursuit immediately on notification, prior to the incident. This incident has been rehashed over and over, and Clements was very clear on the fact that it was a flying saucer, and not a "weather balloon" as the government later tried to fabricate.

On the night of Nov. 2,1957, while I was on leave from the Air Force, visiting at my parent's home in Odessa, Texas, my father was returning from a marketing trip, en route to Odessa. Just after passing through LeveEand, Texas after dark, his 1957 ford staEed and aE Eghts went out, and he had to coast to a stop in the dark, on the highway shoulder. He rolled down his window and felt a rush of air, while over his car, a flying saucer hovering only a few feet above. He sat there for around fifteen minutes before the saucer finaEy departed In essence, he had been "arrested" during that time. Afterwards, he was able to restart his engine, but his lights were gone, so he returned cautiously in the dark to a Levelland motel, where he spent the remainder of the night. The following morning, at first light, he drove on to Odessa, where he ate a quick breakfast and went immediately to SeweE Ford to have his lights repaired, saying nothing about the flying saucer. After he left, I turned on the T.V. for the morning news, which included the well-known report about the Levelland saucers, including an interview with the sheriff of Hockley County. I immediately went to Sewell Ford to talk to my father.

The Sewell Ford repair shop had just opened, and the mechanic was just beginning to check out the lights, as my father stood close by. I asked Dad about the flying saucer, and he asked how I knew about it. He was unaware that there were news reports concerning other sightings and incidents around Levelland the previous night. He said he had said nothing about it because he didn't want to be called "crazy". The saucer was "egg-shaped", about 200 feet long, and glowed in the dark. The mechanic said he'd never seen a car with every single light bulb blown out, without there being a blown fuse or any other evidence of a short or other electrical malfunction. I suggested that the tungsten filaments were damaged because the strong electric field around the saucer had caused the filaments to burn out or break, as the weakest links in the circuits, already weakened by their white-hot temperatures, when the saucer hovered over the car. The magnetic field in the car, induced by the strong electric field of the saucer, would cause the electrons in the light filament and circuitry to spin like crazy.

I left the Air Force in 1958, because the classification errors made by the K.G.B. in 1956 had led to an impasse, in which I eventually could not be upgraded in the field in which I was working—in Special Services P.C.U. (Physical Conditioning and Judo Unit)—until I had first been upgraded in my primary A.F.S.C., which was as an illustrator in Intelligence. The Air Force had refused to correct my test scores so that I could be classified into a field consistent with my real aptitudes. Meanwhile, Intelligence decided they wanted me back, after I had trained in the P.C.U. Using their 'secret' influence, Intelligence got the classification officer who was to officially assign the P.C.U. classification number to me after training in that field, so I could be upgraded, assign me a primary A.F.S.C. as an illustrator in Intelligence, with a secondary A.F.S.C. in the P.C.U., so that I could not be upgraded at all, until I had gone back to Intelligence for six months so I could first be upgraded there. This created a "catch 22", however, because I had already been in the A.F. for two years and had not been upgraded, so I demanded a discharge under an obscure 8th A.F. Letter, a copy of which was in my possession. The ironic fact was that, not only was I already trained as an illustrator, but there was no one on the base to train me anyway. I had attended night classes at the Columbus College of Art and Design for a year.

And now for the incident on the three Russian bombers: When I worked in Intelligence as a clerk-typist, I had 'spontaneously' devised a new briefing system during a "Red Alert", called during a snowstorm. I was the only one in my group to show up, and had to brief and debrief the S.A.C. crews before and after takeoff. That alert concerned three Russian bombers which crossed the Arctic Circle and eventually landed in Minnesota under fighter escort, picked up over Canadian air space. That was the "Bison, the Bear, and the Muskrat" incident I referred to earlier, being the three latest Russian bombers, flown by three defecting Russian pilots and landed in Minnesota. As far as we knew, it was an attack. The briefing system I devised involved color-coding, in which the map pouches I provided to the pilots identified their primary, secondary, and alternate targets by color code. That system was adopted by S.A.C., as it was very handy under pressure, and the pilots liked it, even though it was a breach of security for me to devise and distribute the system without authority. What else was I to do, since the responsible intelligence men were still at home hiding under their beds? Only survival officer, Lt. Don Cook and I, did the whole routine with only a skeleton crew. I had picked up what I knew by working in the same room Congress had rejected the plans for the three Russian bombers, so the American designer had sold his plans to the Russians. We had no defense from those planes at that time, since they flew above our missiles.

The last time I ever personally heard from Kris Kristofferson, was a letter I received from him at Keesler in late 1956, in which he said he had been accepted to flight school. I later learned that he had became a Rhodes scholar at Oxford, after finishing at Annapolis, after his other application eventually came through. When he appeared as a musician in the '60s, I hardly recognized him, except for his voice and eyes. In 1956, he was rather stocky, wore a burr haircut, and even had those little rolls of fat on the back of his neck I was greatly disappointed in 1996 to learn of his connections to Col. Michael Aquino and the CIA's MK ULTRA program, in which he was a Vatican-based Project Monarch slave-runner.[1] Working with the Jesuits, eh Kris?

Eddie's older brother, Tom, eventually became the Chief of Naval Operations. It didn't surprise me, because he was always well aware of what was going on, while others were still in the dark, and had the guts to "violate" bad orders like a good American should

Ironically, the Air Force Records Center in St. Louis, Mo., was burned out, because they could never correct the damage done to the records by the K.G.B. To this day, there are still numerous claims and lawsuits resulting ultimately from the sabotage, and most people don't even know it ever occurred. If I had not stumbled across the KGB. cell, there is no telling how long they might have lasted, right under the noses of our ignorant government bureaucrats, and the fact remains that they might never have been caught. The distinct feeling I got was that I was being punished for turning up this incident, not only by the K.G.B., but by my own government as well, and that the only help I got was from people who were disobeying orders.

I never received an official word of thanks from the Air Force, and got only an unofficial thanks from Tom Heywood, and he was with the Navy!

I MEET THE PRESIDENT'S BROTHER-IN-LAW, AND ARNOLD SCHWARTZENEGGER'S FUTURE FATHER-IN-LAW, IN THE PEACE CORPS

In 1962, 1 applied for the Peace Corps, on a bet with J. Evetts Haley, the western historian. Our bet was that I would apply for duty in Southeast Asia, and be accepted for South America, based on "bureaucratic probability". My application was accepted for Ecuador, with training in Puerto Rico. I never tried to collect on the bet, since it was more in the nature of a joke.

While in training at Arecibo, and at the Universidad Inter Americano at Barranquitas, Puerto Rico, I had some rather noteworthy experiences. Beginning at Arecibo, I was under close scrutiny for some reason unknown to me at the time. This immediately followed a fiery speech by Fidel Castro of Cuba, in which he accused the Peace Corps of being a front for the CIA. I was followed around by certain administrative people, and even treated rather hostilely. Finally, R. Sargent Shriver, brother-in-law to President John F. Kennedy, came for a visit, and hung out with me over several days. Everyone knew who he was, even though he used a phony name. One volunteer even sculpted a limestone portrait of him. He was checking me out for some unknown reason, and seemed disconcerted that we agreed on so many things. My friend, Dr. A. Henry Sara-Nee, of Midland, Texas, had been a graduating classmate of his at Yale Law School, class of '47.

It was near this time that an old Puerto Rican man, who smuggled back and fourth to Cuba in his row boat, most urgently approached me at a rural cantina, to give me information. The story

---

[1]Cathy O'Brien with Mark Phillips, Trance Formation of America, Reality Marketing, Inc., Las Vegas, NV (1995)

that he related to me indicated that he had observed the Russians building what I knew from his description were nuclear missile silos, equipped with I.C.B.M.S. This was the first information picked up in the "Cuban Missile Crisis", and I passed the information along, after which it was verified by intelligence people. The missiles were actually there, contrary to later false reports (supplied by the CIA) that only fake 'mock-up' missiles were in Cuba. They were apparently setting Kennedy up, and I knew it, the American public be damned.

It was also near this time mat I was harassed by Peace Corps bureaucrats, because a friend and I had Puerto Rican girl friends. The friend was a Black guy named Bill, who had won the Medal of Honor in the Korean War, as a tank commander. The Peace Corps officials particularly wanted me to stop seeing my girlfriend, a school teacher named Maria, because her brother was the secretary to the Bishop of Ponce, who had called Munoz Marin a communist Maria had participated in freedom rides in the southern U.S., and I thought it odd that Peace Corps officials should be guilty of such bigotry and weirdness. Didn't these guys ever see West Side Story? They were acting like "Officer Krupke".

I was finally 'selected out' of the Peace Corps, without any reason being given. It would not be until four years later that I would learn why.

In protest to the Peace Corps having 'separating me out', a group Barranquitas citizens showed up with placards, in my support. They were Puerto Ricans I'd become acquainted with, including my girlfriend, her chaperone, and several others. I thanked them for their sympathy, and said my goodbyes to them, after which we were taken to the San Juan airport, thence flown back to the U.S. Though the group had little money, they later very sweetly took up a donation and sent a small gift of money and a nice card, after I reached home.

As I was preparing to depart the training facility at the Universadad Inter Americano at Barranquitas, I was offered some damaging information on Peace Corps operations, from several people whom I had already identified as CIA agents. The information ranged from the fact that our "dance teacher" was paid $120.00 per day, to the fact that many of the male officials abused their positions by demanding 'bed time' with some of the female recruits. What I also thought was very odd, was the fact that nearly all the Peace Corps officials and other trainees had almost nothing to do with the Puertoriquenos, and were discouraged from doing so. At the forefront of this attitude, were some people from the Union Theological Seminary. When I reached home, I was surprised to have some media people very anxious to 'expose' the Peace Corps operations. I attributed this to CIA orchestration as well.

Thanks to Walter Bowart, I read in 1994 that, according to The Report from Iron Mountain (purportedly an accidentally leaked paper of the Secret Government) that war is considered a desirable component of modern society to reduce population, and to control "..dangerous social dissidence and destructive anti-social tendencies". The military is considered a pool for "misfits...a state-supported haven for the unemployable". They conceived of the Peace Corps as a model for an alternative replacement for the non-military functions of war, to sociologically control "misfits" ...as a "modern sophisticated form of slavery", motivated by a) "intensified environmental pollution", b) "new religious or other mythologies", c) "socially oriented blood games", or d) "combination forms".

In respect to my having been "selected out" of the Peace Corps (which in view of the above report, was a positive sign), the following copies of letters and documents are included for your reflection:

PEACE CORPS

Washington 25, D. C.

August 17,1962

Mr. William R. Lyne
529 E. 43rd Street,
Odessa, Texas

Dear Mr. Lyne:

I am enclosing a letter to you which explains the policy objectives and procedures of Peace Corps selection. Perhaps after reading this, you can more fully understand the reasons for your being "selected out."

I see no reason to discuss specific reasons for your separation at this time, for evidently you had been told quite specifically by Dr. Boulger why you were separated when he interviewed you in Barranquitas. In your telephone conversation of July 12, you yourself told Mr. Krusekopf the reasons which Dr. Boulger had discussed with you.

Sincerely,

E. Lowell Kelly

E. Lowell Kelly
Chief,
Division of Selection

Please note the evasive language of E. Lowell Kelly's second paragraph ("...I see no reason to discuss specific reasons for your separation..") in response to my letter attempting to find out why I was removed. Kelly mentioned "Dr. Boulger", whom he asserted had 'evidently' told me "quite specifically" why. To the contrary, Boulger never told me why, even though very nervous, and actually broke down in tears when I asked him for a reason. The only thing I could get out of him was a vague reference to "...something to do with my military record". Since everything about my ""military record" had been fully disclosed at the time of my recruitment, the Peace Corps had been fully informed, and there was scarcely any basis for that.

I knew that Fidel Castro had delivered fiery damnations of the Peace Corps in his radio broadcasts, which we had listened to, alleging that it was a "front for the CIA", but never imagined that I was being set up as a scapegoat. I also knew that two of my fellow recruits— John Bolin and Patricia Cohn—had fraternized with two of Castro's spies, when they had approached the training facility and entered it, just prior to those broadcasts. I also knew that Bolin and Cohn were CIA agents, along with John Barrett and a man named Salazar. It wasn't until four years later that I would realize what Bolin and Cohn had told Castro's agents, that I was a CIA agent.

In retrospect, I knew one of the men associated with the Peace Corp was a Cuban associated with the CIA forces which had attempted to overthrow Castro. He had brutally raped a friend of mine, a girl from Kentucky. Everyone knew about it, yet no one said anything about it or attempted to rectify it. She had black eyes and bruises all over her face, was dejected and ashamed, yet nothing was done to the fascist CIA Cuban pig. In distinction to this, the following letter is from a woman who, along with her friend "Libby", were kicked out of the Peace Corps for being "lesbians":

From: Inge Duvander
1681 Mulberry Drive
Hanford, Calif

To: William R. Lyne
529 E. 43rd. St.
Odessa, Texas

Dear Bill

Libby and I hoped we would have seen another big explosion in TEXAS but I'm sure you have had some problems to overcome as have the rest of us.

Libby and I went to Washington and hoped we could convince Dr. Kelly there to either give us further consideration or give us some good valid reason for rejection. A nicety that Dr. Bolanger overlooked. I had my wits fairly well about me when I spoke to but in spite of being aware of his suggested crimes I took defense to two of them and by his reasoning thereby became guilty, As Dr. Kelly quoted. Peace Corps first--the volunteer xxx second. So anyway no satisfaction from that quarter. Recieved a letter from them today in repley to one Libby and I wrote. Same evasive garbage,but he had the audacity to say Dr. Bolanger spent 45 min. discussing the situation with me. On the contrary I spent 40 min. begging for information and demanding some justice and inquireing about recourse. Laake I believe didabout the same.

Well, we wrote a letter and sent copies to Pres. Kennedy, Mr. Shriver, Mr. Haddad, Dr. Kelly, and Dr. Bolanger. Other copies will be sent to my senators and congressmen. Also, I have written an apology to your Senator ~~Tow~~ Tower since I was the first to sign the protest letter to Senator Tower over the Fletcher issue.

All these little letters may not get anywhere BUT get enough of z them and it dirties the house. Maybe we can prevent this stupid activity from continueing and leaving more people in its wake.

1. I fell we should have been screened before we went to the training. I know they would have rejected three of us and who knows?...they may have spotted me as an undesireable in advance.

2. I think they should behave along the lines of high integrity, for this is what they preach.

3. If the Peace Corps considered the effects of social stigma on a reject, they would have to alter the selection methods.

4. Finally, few of us, when we finally decided to join, concerned ourselves with finances; not all of us could make arrangements for rehife. Also, many debts xxxxxxxxxx were incurred prior to going to Puerto Rico as well as x debts that would have ceased upon entering,(car payments, insurance, house, etc.)

(etc.)

Again, I couldn't understand why the Peace Corps was kicking out Inge and Libby, since it should have been obvious to any idiot who had interviewed or investigated them in the first place, that they were lesbians. With some women, you just know, and Inge was one of those women.

I MEET THE CIA, ITS FUTURE DIRECTOR, AND THE FUTURE PRESIDENT OF THE U.S.A., WHILE IN THE UNIVERSITY

I picked up bits and pieces of the flying saucer puzzle during my college years, particularly when I took a freshman course in physics, at Sam Houston State University, in Huntsville, Texas, in 1963-64. At that time, I began to see the relationship between gravity and charge-to-mass ratio in individual atoms.

Later, while I attended a year of law school at U.T.-Austin, in 1965-66, M.B. Wood, the CIA Southwestern Regional Director, gave a recruitment speech to our law class[1], and said he'd be glad to answer any questions he could, if we would contact his secretary to set up an appointment, which I did. I was surprised to learn that the "sweetheart" of our law class, 'Sandy' (Kay) Bailey, was also M.B. Wood's secretary. (I was not surprised 26 years later, when in 1992 Kay Bailey-Hutchinson became a U.S. senator from Texas.) The meeting was held in a room of the Business and Economics Building, on the U.T. campus. At my meeting with Wood, I asked him point blank if he knew why I was kicked out of the Peace Corps. He reached across the desk for a dossier on me, opened it, and showed me an "executive edict" signed by John F. Kennedy, staring that "...no person who has worked for the CIA may be in the Peace Corps." I asked Wood how that applied to me, and he said "Because President Kennedy thought you worked for us.". I then asked Wood if the CIA had permitted Kennedy to believe that, even though it was not true, and he said "Yes". Then he proudly showed me another executive edict dated around two weeks later, stating that "...no person who has worked for the Peace Corps may be employed by the CIA." Then Wood said, "However, we'd be glad to consider your application five years from your date of departure from the Peace Corps." As I was leaving, Wood said "Stay dry!" (old intelligence jargon, meaning "stay sensitive!").

The facts were as follows: There I was having a beer at a rural Puerto Rican cantina, listening to accordion music blaring from a Wurlitzer juke box, and just happened to pick up America's first intelligence on the Cuban Missile Crisis. Though I was not a CIA agent, this seemed of considerable importance to me, and I didn't think I should remain silent about it. After all, my family didn't even have a bomb shelter. Besides, I was in Peace Corps training, and the missile silos sounded fairly unpeaceful, so I passed the information along for the benefit of the American People and the world, not the CIA. Castro's radio broadcasts reminded me of Hitler's.

This incident proved to me what I had suspected all along, which was that the CIA was not playing it straight with the president, who was their commander-in-chief. If the president could not depend on the veracity of the CIA, as his supposed means of intelligence gathering upon which to base his decisions, then the American people could not rely on those decisions as reflecting the rational options available to the president, as betrayed by the CIA. It stands to John F. Kennedy's credit that he lacked confidence in the CIA, so much that, even after they had scapegoated me, to avoid discovery of the fact that they remained well represented in the Peace Corps in violation of the President's order, that Kennedy sent his own trusted brother-in-law, Shriver, to see if they were lying to him, which they certainty were. If they had just told me why they were kicking me out, I

---

[1]8, supra.

could have fingered Bolin, Cohn, Barrett, and Salazar—who were not separated out—in a few minutes. They had told Castro's spies that I was a CIA agent, and then gave me the damaging material on the Peace Corps as I was departing, obviously for use in my later interviews with the media, which they had also arranged. It seemed odd to me that the president of the United States did not know who his own CIA agents were, yet I, a civilian, whom he was falsely led to believe was with the CIA, did know who they were.

If the CIA answered to a 'higher authority', then this was truly bigger than a "betrayal" of or by Kennedy, in his dealings with the Military Industrial Complex. There was John F. Kennedy—a Cambridge-educated Illuminatus (A.K.A. "Fabian Socialist")—betraying the Council on Foreign Relations' goal of British-American world imperialism, as envisioned by Cecil Rhodes, the British billionaire who, as an Illuminist, had endowed Oxford's Rhodes Scholarships program, and was a 'world-control' adherent to the ancient teachings of Hermes Trismegistus ("Thrice Greatest"), as elucidated by his favorite Oxford professor, John Ruskin. These teachings say that only an illuminated elite—which maintains a dualistic ("Hermaphroditic") difference between what is said and what is done—should rule the world

In 1968, while a graduate student in art at U.T., I attended a lecture on gravity in the physics department. I was disappointed to find that the physicists were still ignorant of the scientific basis for gravity. I was also amazed to find a grant application on the bulletin board, from the U.S. Department of Energy, for prospective PhD. candidates in physics. All the candidates had to do to pick up a $10,000 grant, was to base their theses on the given government premise that "U.F.O.s are free-floating plasmas." This was apparently the manner by which the Trilateral Commission bought phony "documentation" to support their BIGGEST LIE, to be later used by UFOlogists. It also constituted a prima facie case of scholastic dishonesty.

I TURN DOWN AN OFFER FROM THE CIA TO BE "ONCE AND FUTURE KING"

I left the university and my first wife and I divorced in 1970, then I moved to New Mexico. By 1967, 1 had already done sketches of flying saucer control systems, having twelve directional grids, corresponding to twelve 30-degree incremental divisions of the compass, such as I had surmised from my 1950s observations of flying saucers navigating in the night sky above our back yard in West Texas. This observation would later be corroborated, at least for the early vintage saucers.

In 1973, at the Santa Fe Ski Basin, I ran across some friends whom I had known in my U.T. days, who had belonged to O.S.O. ("Organization of Students of Objectivism"), a philosophy club I belonged to which studied the literature and philosophy of Ayn Rand The friends introduced me to a woman who accompanied them. I dated the woman on occasion over two years. In 1975, she attended the School of Law at the University of Houston, and lived with her grandmother, in Pasadena, Texas. While visiting her, after my return from a trip to Europe—on which I had embarked on the Kraljevica, a vessel of the Jugolinea—I was rather astounded when she and another vivacious young woman suddenly announced that they were CIA agents, and said, "...we are authorized to offer you M.B. Wood's job, with the provision that you return to your wife." You could have knocked me over with a feather! Wood was the CIA executive with whom I had met in Austin, concerning the Peace Corps. I turned the offer down. It was odd to discover that a lady you had been seeing for ova two years, was all the while checking you out for the CIA. It was also

ironic that I was offered the job of the same CIA employee with whom I had met concerning J.F.K. and the Peace Corps. To make it stranger, the offer came from George Bush, the new head of the CIA, whom I had met and talked to while visiting my first cousin, Patsy, who was his private secretary for five years, at his Tidewater Oil Company office in the Nelly Esperson Building, in Houston.

It took me a while to sort out all of the pieces of that little incident. The CIA "agentrix" was the first cousin of my first wife's first cousin's wife. That cousin's wife was the sister to a (now retired) Texas Ranger, who presently lives in Santa Fe. That Ranger had taken a shot at my second wife along highway 285, in October, 1983, to scare the hell out of her. George Bush had just taken over the CIA. The girlfriend had commercial dealings with Bush, as one of the owners of a major oil company. And why did the CIA try to bribe and coerce me back to my first wife? George Bush and my first wife's father were butt-bumping buddies, in Bush's 1950s Odessa, Texas days. Beginning with George Bush's command at the CIA, my problems began in Lamy, stirred up by the CIA, in order to "motivate me" to accept their offer. The problem continued for over seventeen years.

I later determined that the 'friends' from the O.S.O. were CIA trainees, who had been sent to our club to spy on us, and to "learn how to think". The CIA had secretly used us as a surrogate think-tank. The "Oil Queen" of the CIA had given me a copy of T. H. White's Once and Future King as a gift a few months before, and I never knew what was intended, until I recalled the part about where King Arthur just went about his business, despite the embarrassing gossip about court caused by the carryings on of Lance and Guinevere. Well, I considered myself a notch above ol' Art, and the CIA.

In reminiscing about the Oil Queen, I am forever amazed at the confirmations I got from her, concerning the inventions of Nikola Tesla and his flying saucer. Heir to a large oil fortune with very high connections, she was in the know about energy matters of concern to oil interests; Tesla's invention of the flying saucer, free energy discoveries, and Tom Ogle's 100 miles-per-gallon carburetor, which I will tell you more about in this book.

IN 1979 I MEET A VIEJO FROM POJOAQUE AT THE FLEA MARKET, AND BUY AWW II GERMAN FLYING SAUCER NAVIGATIONAL SYSTEM FROM AN ALBUQUERQUE SALVAGE DEALER

In 1975 I began researching alternative methods of energy generation, based on the premise that inexhaustible energy can be obtained from the environment, because "...energy cannot be created nor destroyed, but only changed in form...". Since I conceive of the universe as a never-ending perpetual motion (energy) process—as the rule and not the exception—my goal was to discover ways to trick nature into producing "free energy". This involved gathering, focusing, and channeling some part of the infinite perpetual motion of the universe, through whatever work I wanted to do with it. I finally evolved what I call my "Triax System".

In 1976 or thereabouts, I had resumed my childhood research in nuclear sciences, electricity, and magnetism, which I had begun in 1947, when I was nine years old. By 1978,1 had accumulated a lot of material and knowledge on the work of Nikola Tesla. As a child, my neighbor's father, Elmer Schlosser, a self-taught electronics repair man, told me about Tesla, his boyhood inspiration,

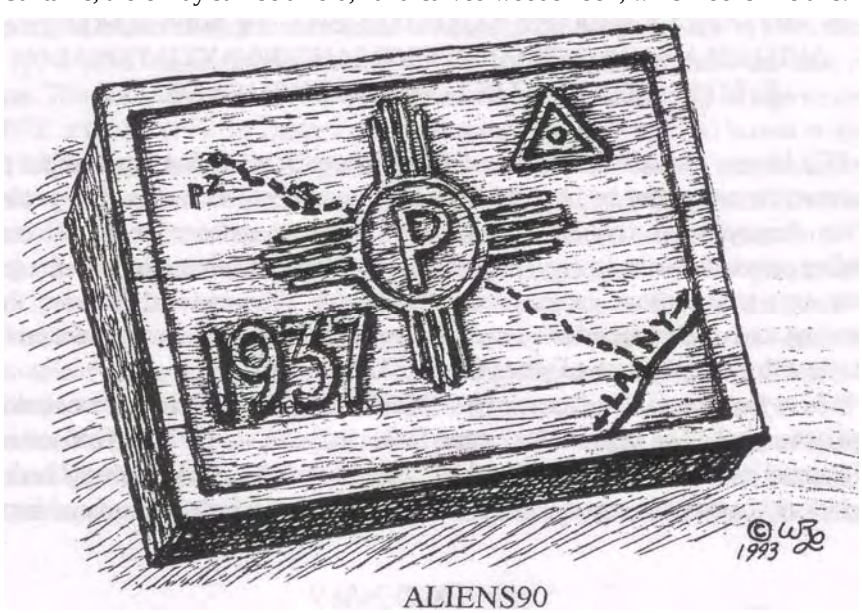
while growing up in the Cimmarron Territory. He told me the saucer was Tesla's invention. He gave me a lot of materials to use in my experiments with electricity and magnetism. I took the soft iron bars from the windows of the barracks from the German P.O.W. camp in Roswell, from which we'd built our new house in 1947, and used the bars in my experiments with magnetism and electricity. Some of the things I discovered seemed to defy the accepted laws of electromagnetism.

I had always presumed that Tesla had indeed invented the flying saucer, because of the way the government and Trilateralists had practically drummed his greatness from history.

By 1979,1 had several operational Tesla coils, and was hunting materials in the salvage heaps of Los Alamos, Albuquerque, and Santa Fe, to use in a multitude of experiments. It was during this time that many of my new inventions and re-discoveries came about.

While browsing through a Santa Fe flea market in 1979,1 met a viejo from Pojoaque, who was trying to sell an old wooden box which he had made in 1937, to carry tools behind the cab of his Model A Ford pickup. On the lid of the box, he had carved, in New Mexico "folk" style, a map showing Los Alamos, Pojoaque (with a "zia" sign around it), and the unpaved road leading to the interstate, showing "LA." (Los Angeles) one way, and "N.Y." (New York City) the other. The date ("1937") was shown, as well as the name of the project ("p2") in which he was employed at Los Alamos. The symbol for the project (a triangle with a dot in its center) was also shown. It was a scientific project headed by Wernher Von Braun. The old man said that after the project was "shut down and moved away", at the end of 1937, that he was never rehired when the "new project" (the Manhattan Project) was begun in 1942.

I knew at the time that the triangle with a dot in its center was the "all-seeing-eye" of Bel, Ra, or "God", that it was a Masonic symbol, and that it appeared on the dollar bill. I was inclined to buy the box at the time, not only as a curiosity, but also because of some haunting reason of which I was not then fully cognizant, but I didn't buy it because I was so short on cash at the time. I also thought "1937" was a little early for anything scientific at Los Alamos. The Manhattan Project originated in late 1941/early 1942. Our government was an "ally" with Germany, until the 1939 invasion of Poland (Surprised?). It would not be until a week later that I would realize my mistake in failing to buy the box, and did not remember the old man's name. Somewhere in Pojoaque or Santa Fe, there may still be an old, hand-carved wooden box, which looks like this:



ALIENS90

The following week, I regretted having failed to buy the box, when I realized what the carving meant. This was revealed when I went to a surplus dealer's yard in Albuquerque, shortly after a fresh pile of unusual things had been sold to him by an employee of Sandia Base. On top of the pile was a navigational device of the type I knew early saucers would have used. The entire pile was not the usual stuff I was able to buy, so I asked Mark King, the owner's son, who was also a friend of mine, what he would have to have for the device. He answered, "Oh...about seven-fifty". My heart sank. Seven hundred and fifty dollars was way out of my budget. I asked, "Seven hundred and fifty dollars?" Mark answered, "No...cents, for the whole pile". I wasted no time picking the stuff up and paying Mark, with a big thanks, a handshake, a smile, and $7.50.

When I returned home, I began to examine the device, made in 1943 by Lizt, in Germany, more closely. The label on the device was as follows:

Peiltochterkompass
KT-p2
GeratNr. 127-178 A-l
Anforderz. FI 23374
WerkNr. 10143
Hersteller: gvy

There was the "p2" again. "KT-p2" was the codename for "Kreisel Teller" (German, for "Gyrating Saucer") and "p2" was, according to Tesla's drawings, either two plates, potentials, or primaries.

The 1943 device had a 6-volt motor to drive a geared ring marked in 30-degree partitions, around an inner electromagnetically coupled disk. A selection knob in the center of the face was used to manually turn a pointer to the desired flight-heading. There were fourteen contact points on the bottom, two of which supplied D.C. current to the motor. The motor would rotate the outer geared compass ring until it showed the correct flight heading, based on information relayed from "master" gyrocompass, oriented to earth's north pole, at which point the motor was automatically switched off The term "Tochter" (German, for "daughter"), literally meant "slave" in this respect, so the term "Peiltochterkompass" meant "Polar-Slave-Compass". The device was one-half of an inertial or "celestial" navigation system. This manually operated device presupposed the "master" (gyro) compass....and electromagnetic propulsion, in 1943.

I had observed a flying saucer up close in 1953, and my father had been 'held' for at least a quarter of an hour, by another large "mother ship"—"egg-shaped" and about 200 feet long—as he left Levelland, Texas, on the night of November 2, 1957, which hovered only a few feet above his car, killing his engine and burning out his lights. Both the 1953 and 1957 ships emitted electrical coronal discharges rendering an ordinary compass useless. That and the fantastic speeds necessitated an inertial navigation system The 1953 ship was obviously disoriented, its pilots surprised to find that they were hovering over our town, so their relatively primitive Peiltochterkompass was used to 'dial in' the proper heading, to speed back to their base along the New Mexico-Texas border, between Ft. Bliss and White Sands Missile Range, where Wernher von Braun had brought the post-war German KT-p2 Projekt.

The Peiltochterkompass had partitions of 30 degrees, identical to the 30-degree incremental turns of flying saucers I'd seen in the night sky, from 1949 to 1953. It was designed to be

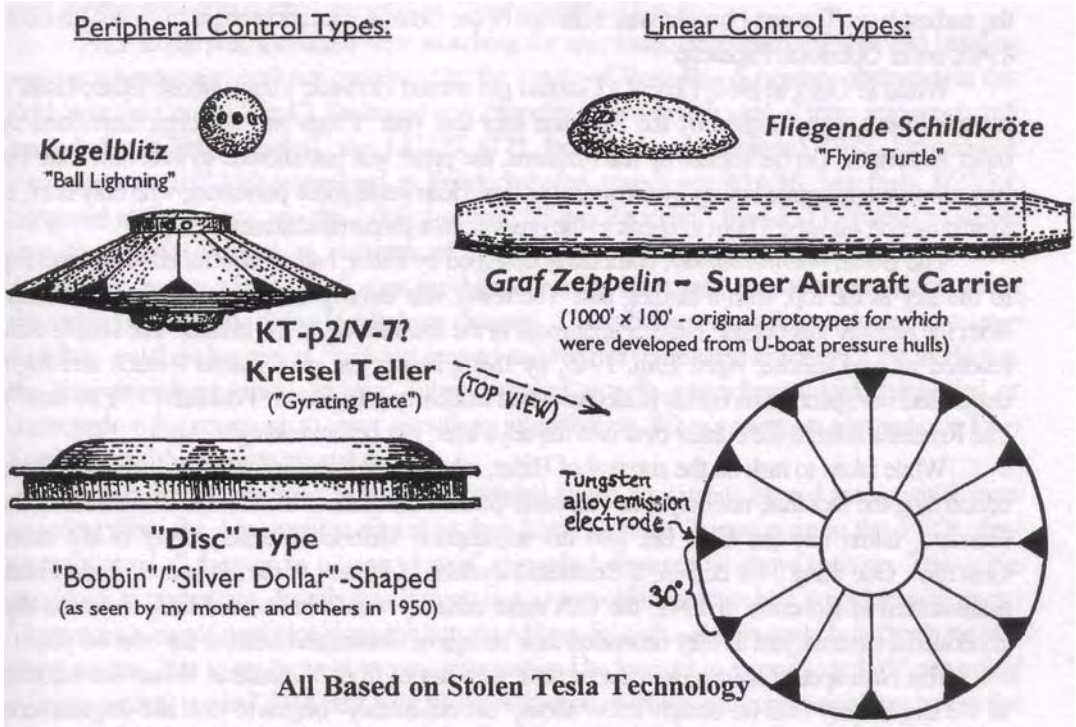
mounted horizontally, with 360-degree peripheral headings, indicating a round ship, which moved in 12 directions. Photographs of the Peiltochterkompass appear below:

FIG. 1: Top View - fluorescent dial and face calibrations, with 12 30-degree peripheral increments. With master gyrocompass calibrated to true north prior to takeoff directional selections made with dial read on Peiltochterkompass.

FIG. 2: Horizontal rear view - label and receptacle at bottom for control cable attachment with 14 contact points, including power for 6-volt motor and 6 bi-directional polarities, interconnected to the "Meisterkreiselkompass". Appropriate high-voltage switches automatically activated via opposite pairs of twelve contacts.

FIG. 3: Perspective View.

FIG. 4: Photo of two antiquated wooden high-voltage Tesla tuning coil forms (coils missing), from Los Alamos Scientific Laboratory ("LAS.L") salvage, ca 1978. Twelve 30-degree increments on notched form primitively secured by old window latch Among stuff cleared out of "old bam" in oldest area of lab. Examination of patina, materials, screws, nuts, bolts, and other hardware, indicated a ca 1900 construction date, apparently reworked in '30s, to retrofit automotive thrust bearings. Handwriting on them comports with Nikola Tesla's. Probably part of electrical apparati from Tesla's Colorado Springs experiments, taken south to Los Alamos for use in von Braun's 1936-38 Illuminati'p2" project Lab personnel were probably unaware of their origin or use by the time they were released for sale in 1978.



I knew that General Patton, on his 1945 saucer-hunt, had been ordered to destroy 200 of the celestial navigation systems which he had found in a salt cave, deep beneath the Peenemunde complex. Tesla had developed and flight-tested such a navigational system in conjunction with the Sperry Gyroscope Company in 1917. The device I saw on the salvage pile met all the criteria for the device I knew had to exist, and it was made in Germany, by Lizt, on October 1,1943.

Since I discussed the device with several people, word soon reached Sandia Base Security that I had it. In their investigation, they went to Mark, who told them he had purchased it from a guy who usually brought stuff released to salvage by Sandia Base. They could not confiscate the device from me, because I had a bill of sale, and Mark had one too. Mark told me later that the security people had told him that the employee from Sandia had stolen the pile of classified salvage and sold it to him. The employee was placed under surveillance, caught doing it again, and sent to jail. Confiscating my Peiltochterkompass would have violated a security regulation prohibiting the confirmation that something is classified. The security personnel also violated that rule in their discussions with Mark. My Peiltochterkompass was a part of a WW II-vintage German electro-propulsive flying saucer, just as I said it was. Otherwise, it would not have been classified, because its design was obsolete. Otherwise, one wonders just how far behind America was.

ALIENS93

At first, I could only document what it was not No such device was to be found in a catalogue of known WWII German nautical, aeronautical, electronic, or automotive navigational devices or related equipment. In addition, it was to be mounted horizontally. The "master" gyro retained its orientation, with reference to the earth's north pole, and relayed this information to the "slave" compass, as the central navigational device used to control electro-propulsive saucers of the earliest type. The one I bought was from one of the German saucers brought to New Mexico in 1945, under Operation Paperclip.

While in Ohio, in 1960,1 knew a German girl named Gertrude Thum, whose father, Hitler's personal valet, was released by the Russians later that year. Thum was not even mentioned by other historians. On his release by the Russians, the press was not allowed to interview him. He was immediately spirited away by German and American intelligence personnel, who only later, in their presence, allowed Thum to speak to the press from a prepared statement.

The Berlin Fuehrerbunker, completely designed by Hitler, had an unfinished tower opening to the sky at the top, with a landing pad. The tower was directly accessible by private staircase from the hallway just outside Hitler's apartment in the lowest level of the bunker. The couple were rescued around sunrise, April 29th, 1945, by flying saucer test pilot Hanna Reitsch and flight expert and navigator Hans Ulrich Rudel, who had made many flights to "Feuerland" ("Fire-land"). The Russians entered the bunker over two full days later, just before midnight, April 2,1945.

While taken to task on the survival of Hitler, other documented information has reached me, concerning the fact that, not only was Reinhard Gehlen, the head of the RSHA VI division of the Gestapo, taken into the CIA, but also his accomplice, Heinrich Mueller, Chief of the entire Gestapo[1]. One thing's for certain; if Reinhard Heydrich, Architect of the Holocaust, hadn't been assassinated in Bohemia in 1942, the CIA most certainly would have hired him, and naturally, concealed it from us, just as they concealed their hirings of Gehlen and Mueller for over 40 years.

This Nazi specter haunts us in the present, with stories from Yugoslavia. When one recounts all the Big History Lies we already know about, "official history" begins to look like staged events scripted beforehand, with the complete cooperation of the leaders of all sides, to produce a certain, predictable 'ending'. Of what use is a United Nations, if it is completely impotent to stop the ethnic and religious squabbling and slaughter in Yugoslavia, with NATO finally becoming the bared fangs of the NWO 'mask'. All NATO can do is destroy a lot of real estate and create mass hysteria which is productive of nothing except more suffering, death, and the destruction of the economy of the poorest European countries, while enriching war industry manufacturers. As stated in a biographical sketch of Nikola Tesla[2] (in pertinent part):

"For a long time the Slav people—who, after the battle of Kosovopjolje, in which the Turks defeated the Servians, retired to the confines of the present Montenegro, Dalmatia, Herzegovina and Bosnia, and "Borderland" of Austria—knew what it was to deal, as our Western pioneers did, with foes ceaselessly fretting against their frontier; and the races of these countries, through their strenous struggle against the armies of the Crescent, have developed notable qualities of bravery and sagacity, while maintaining a patriotism and independence unsurpassed in any other nation."

---

[1]Gregory Douglas, Gestapo Chief (three vols), R. James Bender, P.O. Box 23456, San Jose, Ca 95153.

[2]Nikola Tesla, Experiments with Alternate Currents of High Potential and High Frequency (1904)

FLYING SUBMARINES?

(NOTE: Some of the following material—that related to "flying submarines"— is presented not as a "proven" fact, but as a possibility, given the many suggestive facts and mysteriously missing facts surrounding the disappearance of the German "super aircraft carrier", the Graf Zeppelin, as well as other well-documented sightings of "cigar-shaped UFOs.")

Prior to the war, the Nazis were searching for new ideas, experimenting with and building various weapons and craft not prohibited by the Treaty of Versaille. A primary contractor in this field, was the Count ("Graf) Ferdinand von Zeppelin. There were a total of three important craft named the "Graf Zeppelin", the LZ-127 (775 feet long, commissioned 1928, hangered at Frankfort), the LZ-130 (completed at Friedrichshafen, test flown 9/14/38, last flight 8/22/39, hangered at Frankfort), and the 1,000 foot long "Super Zeppelin", the LZ-131 (work on which was purportedly stopped at outbreak of war [1939-40]). The LZ-127 and LZ-130 were dismantled, and on May 6,1940, their two hangers at Frankfort were ceremoniously blown up on the second anniversary of the Hindenburg disaster[1]. The rather senseless destruction of two large dirigibles and their hangers at Frankfort seemed to have been calculated to convince the world that the Nazi dirigible program—and the "Super Zeppelin" as well—were discontinued, dismantled, or destroyed—a big ceremony to cover something important up. What's more, an acquaintance from Frankfort said the hangers are still there.

Recently, a greengrocer acquaintance related to me how, while he and his daughter were traveling from the Albuquerque airport to their home in Santa Fe one night in the 1980s, they were followed all the way by a 'cigar-shaped' ship which flew not far above their car. They got a good look at the bottom, described as looking like a rusty old iron ship's hull, complete with rivets. There were a line of portholes along the bottom—like a dirigible—and he could hear the drone of a diesel engine. This to me brought to mind information I had sought to assemble in 1957, regarding a "super aircraft carrier", 1,000 feet long, the construction of which was commenced just before the war and 'abandoned', which was named the Graf Zeppelin. While in Air Force intelligence, I had first heard of the 'super ship' in a book I was reading about Patton, and was curious about its fate, so I asked my associate, a sergeant who had been a spy in the area of Hamburg at the end of the war. He told me the Graf Zeppelin had a stainless steel hull which was 11 inches thick, and when I asked him what had happened to it, he said it was "sank in the North Sea" or was 'dismantled'. He then became evasive to my further inquiries (Uh-oh! Still classified!). The existence of a "Super Zeppelin" as a supposed "dirigible", is documented in Toland's book, and as an "aircraft carrier", is documented in a naval history of WWII by Keegan Both versions were 1,000 feet long, were both 'discontinued' "at the beginning of the war", were both named "Graf Zeppelin", and were both "super". A great coincidence in names for supposedly "different" type ships.

The late model U-boat pressure hulls were "cigar-shaped", perfectly round tubes, to which were added the usual outer ballast tanks, conning towers, etc. to complete the subs. With portholes added to their bottoms, the "naked tubes" would have been perfect, ready-made hulls for ships for a "Mars Mission", such as von Braun had already planned. With a U-boat pressure hull as a

---

[1]John Toland, Ships in the Sky, Henry Holt & Co., N.Y.

prototype, complete with diesel engines, batteries, and an 'hennetically sealed' living environment, and applying the gravitational-to-electromagnetic force conversion, von Braun built his first prototypes—some of which burned helium in outer space, the earlier prototypes of which belched black diesel smoke when near earth—based on "p-2". The 'rusty old iron ship's hull' seen by my greengrocer friend, was apparently one of the early prototypes, converted from a submarine hull, and later brought to New Mexico with the rest of the German projects, and now hangered at Sandia Base, Manzano Base, White Sands, or some other clandestine site.

The stainless-steel-hulled 'super' Graf Zeppelin LZ-131 "aircraft carrier"—carrying flying saucers—could have been a "flagship" from which Hitler and Doenitz could have directed the stalemate scenario at the war's end. Use of an ("11-inch-thick") stainless steel hull could have had two purposes, 1) to eliminate the need for the inner ribs and ballast tanks (the heavy weight of the hull and all internal equipment, including several flying saucers, being sufficient to submerge it in the ocean), and 2) to provide sufficient radiation shielding outside the Van Allen Radiation Belt. The stainless steel could also have avoided the resistance, hysteresis losses and inductance heating of a steel hull subjected to high frequency, high voltage currents, supplied by large Tesla coils powered by an hermetic helium generator and battery system.

Was the LZ-131 powered by helium reactors, just as my mother had heard from our New Mexico friends in 1949? Trading With the Enemy[1] documents how Germany would have obtained helium. We are told that helium is an "inert gas", but available scientific information shows that by a simple electric spark discharge, helium will produce 760 kcal./g.-atom[2]. This is the approximate caloric equivalent to 760 loaves of bread, produced from a gram-atom of helium subjected to van de Graaff discharge. Available documents show a globular liquid helium tank (which misinformants call a "Thule Tachyonator"), reaction chamber, and an interconnected van de Graaff generator, in a German flying saucer. A van de Graaff would have been an excellent, simple way to supply the required high voltage discharges needed for helium generation of power to run the two large Tesla coils shown in the documents, probably mislabelled by the O.S.I.

With the generation of power from helium by electric spark discharge, the use of "trigatron" spark gaps takes on a whole new meaning. The spark gaps—fed by helium (falsely described as an 'inert gas' used to 'insulate' the spark gaps)—might have been the fuel for generation of high voltage electricity. I traced the use of trigatrons to 1930s Germany[3].

Was the Graf Zeppelin originally outfitted to function alternately as a battleship, submarine, and Super Zeppelin/cigar-shaped mother ship/aircraft carrier/interplanetary space ship? According to Rudolf Lusar[4], she was scuttled outside Stettin, salvaged by the Russians, and sank on the way to Leningrad. The "official" story was that Hitler purportedly scrapped the huge Graf Zeppelin super carrier before it was completed, to embark on some "very ambitious" U-boat constructions and development. The same or remarkably similar ship to the Graf Zeppelin was

---

[1]Charles Higham, Trading With the Enemy, Dell Publishing Co., New York (1983).

[2]Van Nostrand Reinhold Co., Van Nostrand's Encyclopedia of Science, 5th Ed. (1976).

[3]Bethge, O; Kleen, Werner; Translations from Annalen derPhysik, 1931.

[4]Rudolf Lusar, German Secret Weapons of the Second World War, Neville Spearman, London 1969.

sighted off the Straits of Madagascar on June 30,1947[1]. Another documented sighting of the same ship (or its identical twin) was sighted in 1962, at Hampton, Virginia[2]

Was the Russian salvage story a cover for the truth?. What about a (likely) story that a huge convoy of U-boats with 30,000 mile range, left Norway in 1945?

In 1945, as the Russians closed in on the Berlin Bunker, flying saucer test pilot Hanna Reitsch and Colonel Hans Ulrich Rudel, who had made many flights to "Feuerland" (Tierra del Fuego, on the southern tip of South America), piloted the flying saucer carrying Eva and Adolf Hitler to the safety of the Graf Zeppelin, from which to direct the battle during the stalemate. There, from the secret Nazi supership, Hitler made his final demands on the Allies as a field commander, and exacted his nuclear blackmail on America[3]. After the stalemate, the Hitlers returned to Germany under secret allied protectioa Today, German flying saucer bases, such as the huge underground base built in Greenland, are probably maintained under joint Trilateral/ex-Nazi control.

The Deutsche Antarktische Expedition (1938-39) laid out Germany's claim to part of Antarctica, which claim has been undisturbed since the war. In the last coded messages from Martin Bormann, references to "Tierra del Fuego" (A.K.A., "Feuerland") were made, as the reins of power were transferred to Reichschancellor Admiral Doenitz, and his twenty-four German U-Boats surrounded the United States, armed with I.C.B.M.s (A-9s), carrying neutron bomb warheads, and with celestial guidance systems. From this position of strength, Doenitz negotiated with the Allies, during a stalemate. The Russians were overrunning Germany, but Germany had its nuclear missiles trained on the heart of America. If Germany fired the missiles, the Russians would take all of Germany, and all would be lost for the Germans, who could have bombed America, yet would have had no home to return to. Under the circumstances, only America could save only half of Germany, and so a deal was cut. Certain conditions were stipulated, and Doenitz was required to "scuttle all U-boats with all hands on board", as a part of the amnesty agreement. Certain people were guaranteed amnesty, including Eva and Adolf Hitler, who were secretly provided with a cozy and secure home in Kassel Germany, for the rest of their lives, under the protection of the N.A.T.O. allies[4].

The story that Admiral Karl Doenitz assumed power after "Hitler's suicide" was untrue, since even available documents show that full power was transferred to Doenitz as soon as the "opera" at the Fuehrerbunker began, designed to buy time while Doenitz put Hitler's ultimate plan for the stalemate into place. If the commonly accepted story were true, Doenitz would have assumed power on April 30, 1945, with the "unconditional surrender" (signed by generals Jodl and Friedeburg at Ike's headquarters) on May 7,1945. Doenitz was not taken into custody until May 23, 1945. His headquarters was at Eutin in Holstein, within 50 miles of Hamburg. In April, they had "120 vessels [of the new "electro-U-boat" type] ready for combat", with only one of them "going into combat". That was double talk. No combat was necessary, because of the stalemate.

---

[1]Frank Edwards, Flying Saucers: Serious Business, Bantam, New York (1966), p. 12.

[2]Paul R. Hill, Unconventional Flying Objects, Hampton Road Publishing Co. (1995).

[3]Discussion of the author with an unnamed Ph.D. candidate with access to L.B. J. 's papers at U.T., Austin, Tex., 1966.

[4]6 supr. a.

Meanwhile, certain Nazi commanders opened lines of communication with the Allies, ostensibly to pursue amnesty negotiations, made to appear to be without Hitler's consent, to get around Eisenhower's prior ultimatum which had already forclosed such negotiations. Not once during this grand "opera" was Hitler ever in jeopardy of capture, and as you may know, the opera ain't over 'til the fat lady—in this case, Hitler—sings. As soon as power was transferred to Doenitz and a 'new hierarchy' installed, Albert Speer was heard to exclaim, "We now have an operatic government"[1], a statement which confirmed its purpose during the coming stalemate.

Hitler's Alpine Redoubt had significance only to the extent that last-minute technical work was being performed there, relative to the special saucer operations of General Otto Skorzeny, and nuclear weapons used in the missiles. The failure to expedite several secret emergency plans for defense of various areas of the Reich, all followed the direction of the still higher plan, being executed under the cover of the other 'last ditch' plans of which the Allies were advised. The Germans intentionally collapsed the western front on cue, to suck the Allies into Germany, so the firestorm bombings would stop, and so we could not nuke them.

In 1967, the Hitlers were invited by president Lyndon Johnson, to be his guests, during Hemisfair, the world's fair in San Antonio, Texas. The main tower of the Hemisfair, was designed by an architect who had been a high-ranking member of the S.S. As I sold paintings with a friend of mine in the La Villita area, in the seating opposite the Arneson River Theatre, along the San Antonio River, Adolf and Eva Hitler came by us, as I spotted them the moment they came into view. I had just been talking to a German "engineer"—whom I realized was a security agent, the moment I spotted the Hitlers—and Hitler took an interest in a particular painting of the Moritz Von Schwindt variety. When he saw that I recognized him, he and Eva were quickly whisked away by their security agents. My friend Bob, also a former Air Force Intelligence personnel, who sat next to me, agreed that what we saw was what we saw. This event was followed up by other security agents, who came by and talked to us, to debrief us. We played it cool. What else could we do? If we had said anything about it, who would have believed us? I have been taken to task for this sighting, but I'm sorry. There were just too many indicators to verify it. In addition, since the fall of the Soviet State, Russian military historians have admitted that they failed to find the bodies of Adolf and Eva Hitler.

The celestial guidance system used on the nuclear-armed rockets—predecessors to our Polaris missiles—and similar to the "rocket-torpedoes" written about by Ley, were of the same type found by General Patton in a salt cave at Peenemunde[2]. Patton hit the ceiling because his superiors ordered him to destroy two hundred of the systems, which he said he could get back through Allied lines with. Our military didn't obtain such systems until twenty years later, Patton was sent to Peenemunde, on the Baltic, to pick up the files, and to make sure the flying saucer and rocket projects were cleaned out before the Russians got there, and that everything valuable was destroyed Patton was probably assassinated, as several biographers suggested, by Army Intelligence. This was probably because of something to do with the flying saucers and Operation Paperclip. Though posthumously accused of wanting to be too soft on the Germans after the

---

[1]William R. Shirer, The Rise and Fall of the Third Reich, Fawcett Publications, Inc., Greenwich, Conn.

[2]This documentation has been censored from Patton's war history sources I found in 1957.

armistice, it would have been more in keeping with his temperament to complain about CIA collaboration with Nazi hard liners under Operation Paperclip, and that Patton may have wanted to blow the cover on it, so they killed him. I interviewed Patton's valet, George, who was married to my first wife's aunt's maid, in Crockett, Texas:

All information concerning Patton's trip to Peenemunde has since been expunged from all current war histories that I have examined, yet it was available to me in 1957.

As for the neutron bomb, when prisoners from Rommel's Afrika Korps were brought to Roswell, New Mexico, they carried some rather strange post cards, apparently printed by Rommel's field lithographers, showing New York City being destroyed by a mushroom cloud. The camp commandant, Dave Dunn, who later became an engineer with Union Oil Company of California in their Midland, Texas Office, and who prepared the U.S.G.S. for President John F. Kennedy in 1962, thought these were humorous, and showed me one he had saved as a souvenir. The fact was, however, that Rommel's main mission in the Libyan desert, was testing the neutron bomb. The post cards carried by his troops were a 'morale builder', which superimposed the photolithograph of the mushroom cloud of the bomb they had actually tested and photographed, over a photolithograph of New York City, in a composite. The claims by the Manhattan Project members, that they built the first ATOM bomb—from German plans—was true. After all, Einstein had brought the stolen plans to us with the firm belief that we would use the A-bomb on Germany. Since the Allies had already succeeded in obtaining the German plans for the A-bomb, Werner Heisenberg merely sidestepped the A-bomb, and built the N-bomb. The question to me was not "if', but "how" (did the Germans make their neutron bomb)?

Dr. Sam Cohen, inventor of the American neutron bomb, traces the production and sale of a mysterious substance called "red mercury" to Russia[1]. Red mercury is a mercury antimony oxide, specially prepared by irradiation and pressured into a gel to increase its density to create the necessary preconditions for a neutron explosion. A small quantity of it can then be used as a nuclear trigger/igniter, to detonate a small amount of heavy hydrogen, producing the deadly neutrons for a 'clean bomb'. In February, 1992, Russian president Boris Yeltsin signed Directive No. 75-RPS, authorizing Promekologia, a Russian company headed by Yeltsin's ecological advisor, to "manufacture, purchase, store, transport, deliver, and sell for rubles and foreign currency" 'red mercury', in amounts up to ten tons per year. The order was rescinded a year later because of criticism within Russia of export of such a "valuable raw material". In a spring, 1994 documentary on Britain's Channel Four ("British PBS"), a Russian nuclear chemist confirmed he had worked with red mercury since 1965, that it is currently produced in a factory in the central Russian town of Ekaterinburg, and that fusion weapons have been made in Russia from it. Cohen believes red mercury represents one of the greatest threats for potential terrorists to produce "baseball bombs" from it. He may be right.

On April 4, 1944, Nazi submarine U-859 was sunk near Penang (location of one of three Nazi far eastern U-boat bases), by the British submarine Trenachant. The Nazi sub was carrying

---

[1]Dr. Sam Cohen, America Online: DJIBO (3/1/95).

33 tons of mercury to Japan[1]. Perhaps the Japanese were to process the mercury, or use it in their own neutron bombs. As for how the Soviets could have ended up with the red mercury technology, a persistent rumor[2] has it that a U-boat rendezvoused with a Soviet surface vessel shortly after the surrender in the South Atlantic, at Mar del Plata, Argentina, and bartered Nazi neutron bomb technology for the release of German P.O.W.s in Russia.

If the Germans indeed tested a neutron bomb in North Africa, I would bet that it was produced with red mercury, since the Russians employed German metallurgists and nuclear chemists in their nuclear program, and it was they who produced Germany's WWII supply of plutonium, purer than any ever produced, so pure that it must be diluted before use, even today.

Ironically, in 1946, my father bought the buildings comprising the Roswell P.O.W. camp, and moved them to Kermit, because he couldn't get building materials anywhere else. The prisoners had done a beautiful job of converting one of their barracks into an Alpine "great hall", and used egg-tempera to paint about 100 windows to look like stained glass, with Alpine scenes, and coats of arms. They even built a sauna. Vandals eventually smashed the windows where they were being stored. Did the prisoners carry out and witness a neutron bomb test in North Africa?

What happened at Los Alamos and Mescalero, New Mexico in the late 1930s, involved Wernher von Braun, project leader at Hitler's Vergeltungswaffen development and production center at Peenemunde—which included the flying saucer project commenced in New Mexico.

Tesla had created a remarkable turbine, what we now know as the alternator, and the T.M.T., all for use on his flying saucer. He tried in vain to interest the government in his turbine and several other potentially great defense inventions, but the government showed little confidence in Tesla's abilities, and considered them too far flung to work or to be of value. In Jan., 1914, just prior to the entry of America into WW I, after the government showed no interest in the turbine, Tesla acquired a $5,000.00 loan from J. P. Morgan, Jr., so he could finish and ship a turbine to the German Ministry of Marine, High Admiral Alfred von Tirpitz.[3] Since he had already unsuccessfully offered the turbine to the U. S. government, he felt it no question of loyalty. It is my belief that around 20 years later, after unsuccessfully offering his flying saucer invention to the U. S. government, he agreed to collaborate with the Germans in the p2 project at Los Alamos.

The person who was most instrumental in inducing Tesla to work with the Germans in the "p2" Los Alamos project, aside from Uncle Sam, was a close personal friend of Tesla's, George Sylvester Viereck, who was also a close personal friend of Adolf Hitler, and was convicted in 1942 for failure to register with the U. S. Department of State as a Nazi agent.[4] Viereck took advantage of Tesla's loneliness, shoddy treatment and lack of respect from the U. S. Government, and Tesla's need to see his project through before the end of bis life. He spent considerable time and patience in cultivating Tesla's trust, thus allowing the Nazis to end up with his technology, with the complicity of the government, through the American foundations who were involved

---

[1]Haarmann, D. H., Geheime Wunderwaffen, Hugen Gesellschaft Fur Politisch-Philosophische Studien E.V., Hoerstel, Germany (1985); Henry Stevens, Report Number Three, German Research Project, Gorman, Ca. (1996).

[2]Zeiten Schrift, 1994, p. 64. Henry Stevens, Report Number Three, p. 25, German Research Project (1996).

[3]Margaret Cheney, Tesla: Man Out of Time; Letter, Nikola Tesla to J. P. Morgan, Jan., 1914, Library of Congress.

[4]John Roy Carlson, Under Cover, The Blakiston Company, Philadelphia[1943]; Current Biography, 1943.

Also working in rocketry in 1930s New Mexico, was the late Peter Van Dresser, who was the originator of "Van Dresser's Constant", a mathematical constant which von Braun and others used to calculate the trajectory of rockets fired into England and Antwerp. Van Dresser was bitter and disgruntled about the fact that Dr. Robert Goddard not only got all the credit for pioneer rocket research, but also had "collaborated with the Nazis", via his pre-war work with von Braun, while he, Van Dresser, had done more important research, had no truck with the Nazis, and had gotten very little, if any, of the credit. According to Van Dresser, his rockets worked, and Goddard's fizzled, at least in the early thirties. Van Dresser used solid fuel, and Goddard liquid fuel. Van Dresser did his research independently, on his own resources, being unsupported by either the U.S. or Nazi government. And, Van Dresser was a Jewish-American.

If anyone ever saw the movie "Gadget", and remembers the guy who strapped a rocket on his back and fired it off while he was on ice skates, that was Peter. One must admit that, although the rocket knocked him on his ass and caught his pants on fire, it damn well worked! And at least he had the guts to try it out himself, right in front of a movie camera. Little did he know that he would become a part of a movie showing the wildest creations of funny inventors. Peter was very embarrassed to admit that the "rocketeer" in the film was him, because it was one of those great, yet very embarrassingly funny moments in the progress of science. I saw the movie with Peter and his wife, Florence, whom he nudged in the ribs when she exclaimed, "Oh Peter!...that's one of your's!".

So von Braun, Goddard, and the F.B.I. all saw to it that Hitler got "p2" safely to Germany. And then they traded it back to us if we'd give safe conduct to some of the criminal arch-socialists who led the German people down the primrose path to the grisly holocaust and the ghastly tribunal at Nuremberg, which left such an ugly blemish on the "German national memory". Let's take a closer look at this situation.

THE ROCKET RACKET:
Wernher von Braun, Willy Ley, Dr. Robert Goddard,
And The Kreisel Teller-p2, In New Mexico and Peenemunde

The facts in this section bring forth some very interesting questions which were missed by Charles Higham, in his Trading with the Enemy. Beginning around March 26, 1926, when Dr. Robert Goddard (1882-1945), professor of physics at Clarke University in Massachusetts, launched the first liquid-fueled rocket, at Auburn. In Germany, Willy Ley had read Hermann Oberth's book on space travel that year, then wrote his own first book, Trip into Space. He communicated with Oberth, then formed the Verein fur Raumschiffahrt ("Union for Space Travel"). In 1927, Ley introduced Wernher von Braun to the Union, and was von Braun's first tutor in rocket research.

In 1927, the Graf Zeppelin LZ-127 was commissioned. It was a 775 foot long dirigible.

From 1928 to 1933, Ley was vice president of the Union. Goddard had fired the first instrumented rocket in America, in 1930. That year, von Braun assisted Oberth in early liquid fuel rocket research. In fall, 1930, von Braun joined the Union, which established a launching field in an abandoned proving ground at Ploetensee, outside Berlin (cost= $.25/year). Experiments were conducted with 13-lb. thrust rockets.

In 1931, Ley provided the basic ideas for a liquid fueled rocket which was fired to an altitude of one mile. In 1932, von Braun acquired his B.S. degree, having studied at the Technical Institute in Berlin, and in Zurich, Switzerland. He completed 85 rocket tests that year, with rockets which reached an altitude of a mile in free flight.

In fall, 1932, the entire rocket program was transferred to Wehrmacht ordnance, with the 20-year-old von Braun appointed to head an experiment station at Kummersdorf. In 1933, nose-mounted gyrostabilizers were tested Hitler came to power that year, and the Gestapo seized all papers of the Union and the research center. In June, 1934, von Braun was granted his Ph.D. in physics by the University of Berlin. That year, a center-mounted gyrostabilizer was tested, making a 2,000 meter (c. 6,000 ft.) flight.

In 1935, near Mescalero, New Mexico (Eden Valley), Goddard's flights exceeded 700 mph., and altitudes of 7,500 feet, with financial support from the Smithsonian Institution and the Daniel and Florence Guggenheim Foundation. This attracted the attention of Ley and von Braun.

On February 21,1935, on invitation from Goddard and the American Rocket Society (the Smithsonian), Ley arrived in New York City, thence traveled to New Mexico to work with Goddard. In 1936, Hitler took greater interest, and poured 20 million marks into his Peenemunde center, commissioning von Braun and his group to "produce a field weapon capable of carrying a large warhead over a range much beyond that of artillery".

Through Goddard, Ley arranged an invitation for von Braun from the American Rocket Society, for his visit to New Mexico, where in 1936-37, he collaborated with Goddard at Mescalero and the Eden Valley firing range, while running a secret Illuminati "p2" flying saucer project at Los Alamos. During that same time, he was still Hitler's project director at Peenemunde, in absentia. Ley must have worked on the p2 project also, because of his great knowledge of electrical science, but took out American citizenship papers in 1937, the year von Braun was appointed Obersturmbannfuehrer in the S.S. In 1938, von Braun returned to Peenemunde with "p2", and an increased knowledge of higher performance liquid fueled rockets acquired from Goddard, courtesy of the Smithsonian and the Guggenheims, and began developing the V-2 (Vergeltungswaffen No. 2 ["revenge weapon No. 2"), with a range of about 11 miles. The Nazis lost a great scientist when Ley decided to remain in America.

On May 6, 1940, two large dirigible hangers at Frankfort were ceremoniously destroyed. They had housed the Graf Zeppelins LZ-127 and LZ-128. The "Super-Zeppelin" LZ-131 (1,000 feet long) was supposedly also abandoned A "ship"—supposedly a "super aircraft carrier", also named the Graf Zeppelin, also 1000 feet long—was also supposedly abandoned in 1940, and Hitler's interest in rockets dwindled (since the German flying saucer project, "KT-p2" was then under way?). The rocket program apparently had to be resumed, to buy more time for the KT-p2 program. Meanwhile in America, Ley became a member of the scientific department for PM newspaper in May, 1941, and on X-mas, 1941, married Russian-bom ballerina Olga Feldman. Ley had escaped Naziism in America

In 1941-42, the V-2 became 20 times larger, with a c. 190 mile range, and almost a ton payload. Before the war's end, von Braun's rockets were capable of 20-ton payloads and a 3,000 mile range (capable of hitting New York and other American cities). Von Braun fired over 3,600 V-2s into England and Antwerp. Nice guy.

Beginning in 1944 (to 1948), Ley was appointed director of engineering at Burke Aircraft Corporation, Atlanta, Ga., later made part of Washington Institute of Technology, College Park,

Maryland, just outside Washington, D.C., adjacent to the Goddard Space Flight Center. I surmise that, with his knowledge of "p2" and microwaves, Ley formed the matrix of America's earliest government-related flying saucer project, within this corporation, followed by its relocation to the environs of Washington, D.C., which indicated a very high security priority.

In March, 1945, with Russian troops within 100 miles of Peenemunde, von Braun and about 400 top colleagues left for the Bavarian redoubt—code-named the Serail—occupying a resort hotel. They were found by Operation Paperclip, and von Braun immediately signed a contract with the U.S. Army. In Sept., 1945, von Braun and 116 of his rocket colleagues were flown to Ft. Bliss, where von Braun was appointed as Technical Director, U.S. Army Ordnance Guided Missile Center. By May, 1946, V-2 testing was resumed at White Sands Proving Grounds.

In the obituary of German missile expert Dr. Ernst A. Steinhoff, in Alamorgordo (c. 1991), it was stated that during the war he was in charge of flight dynamics, guidance, control and telemetry of the German V-2s, and participated in the first launch of a missile from a submarine under the Lafferenz Project (in preparation for the missiles carried by the advanced "Electro-U-boats" in the stalemate of 1945). In 1947, Willy Ley wrote about "submarine rockets" used by the Germans during the war. Along with Germany's Dr. Heinz Fisher, Ley was one of the world's greatest experts on radar. Microwaves ("rapidly varying electrostatic forces) are directly related to gravity and flying saucer propulsion, according to Tesla's Dynamic Theory of Gravity.

In Aug., 1949, von Braun was made an honorary member of the British Interplanetary Society, through his friend, Arthur C. Clarke. During the war, he was awarded the Knights Cross and title of Research Professor ("Herr Doktor Professor") at Peenemunde by Hitler, was made an honorary member of the Gesellschaft fur Weltraumforschung, Stuttgart, and of the Nordwestdeutsche Gesellschaft fur Weltraumforschung, Friedrichstadt.

In 1950, the U.S. Army Guided Missile Center was moved from Ft. Bliss to Redstone Arsenal, Huntsville, Alabama, where von Braun was transferred as technical director. In September of 1951, von Braun's paper on an 869-day Mars mission was read to the Second International Congress of Astronautics, London (the "Super Zeppelin" probably already made the trip in much faster time, beginning in 1945). On Oct. 12,1951, an 'unmanned' two-stage rocket (probably a reworked German two-staged A-9) reached a 250 mile altitude from White Sands.

Showing his Illuminist sympathies, von Braun once said "...As long as national sovereignty exists, our only hope is to raise everybody's standard of ethics." His rocket programs were nothing more than a cover for the IllumiNazi flying saucer technology and ether physics.

I MEET TORQUEMADA AND THE MEDELLIN CARTEL

As mentioned in Chapter I, the government of New Mexico is fascist, especially the judiciary. In Nazi Germany, the judiciary was among the last institutions to succumb to fascism. In New Mexico, it leads the way, in terms of "economic fascism". This is true perhaps because, in striking first to protect what it deems to be the "public interest", it is the lackey of the military-industrial complex, the power of which is felt through the many secret agencies connected to it in New Mexico. The judiciary functions as a guardian of the golden pipeline which channels the payola (taxpayers' money) into the state, and as such, are puppets dancing on the strings of the CIA.

The state used judicial tactics to harass me, which delayed this expose, beginning in early 1975, just after I turned down the position of 9th Regional Director for the CIA. Ever since then, behind-the-scenes agitation of, and manipulation by abusive, incessant litigation prevailed Toward the end of this overt judicial harrassment, as I was gathering evidence in the County Clerk's Office, I spotted a young man observing me from nearby, and looked him in the eye. Realizing that I knew he was a fed, he then said, "You know, of all the people we've done this to, you're the only one who hasn't broken.." That was at the end of 1991, just prior to Bush's departure from office. Harassment immediately slackened, perhaps in apprehension of a backfire. I am leaving a lot of NAMES out of this book. Many CIA field agents are naively unaware of the fact that the rats they serve are unworthy, and that their work will ultimately serve the Trilateral Commission and betray their own people. It's time to wake up and smell the coffee, or perhaps, the cocaine, smuggled by the new "Untouchables", the CIA.

The history of cocaine, in the political sense, is tied to fascism. It was the drug of choice of Hermann Goering and many other fascists. In reference to what I call "contemporary New Mexico fascism", one looks for several things. Cocaine is only one means for controlling high-placed users, such as judges, lawyers, and public officials. For example, one Santa Fe judge is an ex-pornographer who is strung out on cocaine. This gives the CIA and cartels two means of extorting what they want, in addition to protection of their supplying of the drug. The 'customer' needs the drug, and he doesn't want to be exposed as a child pornographer, so he is in a double bind. This is also why the CIA prefers corruption at the top. They copied their methods from the mob. "We'll just keep this video tape on file, and no one will see it so long as you do like we say. In addition, we'll pay you every time you render a decision like we want" (or vote a particular way, if a senator or congressman).

To raise money for CIA black operations in Central America, the Medellin Cocaine Cartel was organized by Klaus Barbie—the Nazi war criminal closely connected to Dr. Mengele, the "Angel of Death". Both Barbie and Mengele were brought to America under Operation Paperclip, but were provided new identities and shipped off to South America by the U.S. Army C.I.C., because they were too hot to handle here. Others, even though "hot", often shown by history books to be dead, got new "Amerikan" names, and were employed in America. Many of the kingpins of the cartel are the offspring of S.S. officers who married South American women, especially Colombian women. Jack Anderson, the columnist, uncovered some of these things a few years ago. Because of the Spanish history, as well as the inherent politically corrupt fascist government, New Mexico, like the "Little Havana" of Florida, is especially suited as the "cocaine capitol" Banana Republic of the central U.S. The government and law enforcement here "belong" to the cartel. Political influence can also be bought more cheaply here because the politicians of New Mexico are seedier, cheaper, smaller-time crooks. No matter what turn the politics takes, there seems to be no difference, as there has been no significant change in CIA drug smuggling in the area. A governor is without power to stop it, and would be risking his life to try.

There is a considerable amount of real estate and bank money-laundering in New Mexico, on behalf of the fascist drug marketeers, with a compliant judiciary to protect them Even the I.R.S. cooperates with the cartel, "so long as its participants declare the income and pay the taxes due". Their attitude is that of the Federal Reserve Bank. They only want their piece of the action. They had rather collect the taxes, than to roll the dice on prosecution for evasion. The judiciary merely views the money-laundering and related big-time drug payola, in much the same way that it does

the secret government payola, all as part of an economic boon to New Mexico, and therefore within its duty to protect as a matter of "public policy".

Northern New Mexico has become one of the primary deal-making and distribution points for CIA-connected cocaine traffic in central North America. This makes New Mexico's small-time judiciary feel more big-time, and they are flattered by it. As part of the world-wide cocaine scenario, the involvement of New Mexicans themselves, is rather menial by comparison, in the capacities of quasi-lackies, sort of like "spear bearers" in an opera. It is my belief that the cartels and CIA even use flying saucers to make many of the drug shipments and deliveries, because flying saucers were among the first of the "stealth" aircraft used by the secret government. There are connections between the real estate developments here, former S.S. officers such as Colonel Otto Skorzeny (who died in 1975 in Barcelona, Spain), the Trilateralists, the Krupps (who gave us Hitler), and even Fidel Castro, of Cuba.

For example, one of my former tenants and her former Colombian doctor husband (the offspring of a Nazi S.S. officer and a Colombian woman), were involved in receiving shipments of cocaine in Encino, New Mexico, where Cuban Air Force planes, piloted by uniformed officers, delivered cargo plane loads of Colombian cocaine and marijuana. They were never caught or stopped, and obviously had the secret blessings of state and federal officials. The tenant was later shown in the papers, hugging Fidel Castro, who had muscled into the (CIA) drug traffic, by threatening to shoot down dope-carrying planes, unless the cartel cut him in for a 'piece of the action'. This was arranged through fugitive financier, Robert Vesco, a Nixon and Bush pal. Panamanian dictator Manuel Noriega was extradited and jailed by the U.S. in Georgia, because of his little stunt—forming an alliance with Castro, who cut the two in for a bigger piece of the action by threatening to shoot down the Colombian planes.

This CIA-connected dope crowd worked with a former neighbor, a former member of the Weather Underground and the Communist Party (according to information my former attorney said the F.B.I gave him), who handled at least fifteen tons of Colombian marijuana per year, picked up in approximately 100-kilo shipments near my house, in the limos driven by members of the Chicago mob. Though arrested once, she beat the rap under the "adult prosecution diversion program" which she was legally ineligible for, while all her criminal records were erased, after she put up a total of $25,000.00 in bribes. This was mere pennies to the dealer, since, at a very conservative $50.00 per oz., there was easily $24 million per year in marijuana alone being exchanged, within 100 feet of my back door, and probably over $100 million by the time it became more 'clandestine', due to the publicity of the bust, which was barely noticed in the papers. Add to this the probable take in cocaine, the total was probably twice that.

I suppose all those money-making activities by my Weather Underground neighbor were "...for ze revolution...". Sadly, the only 'revolution' being financed, was one in which the New World Order of John D. Rockefeller, Adolf Hitler, and George Bush et. al, was protracted through black operations of the CIA in Central America and elsewhere, funded by Klaus Barbie's South American cocaine cartel, spawned by the CIA's "Operation Paperclip", which is how Bush and the CIA motivated my neighbors, made me suffer, and suppressed energy and flying saucer secrets.

The judicial harassment which began in 1975, became particularly obvious (to me) in 1980, when the D.A.'s office persisted in prosecuting me on a fraudulent and abusive fish and game charge, based on tampered evidence, similar to a prior, 1975 incident created by the

Communist/dope-dealing plea-bargainer, who maliciously had me arrested on trumped-up assault charges, because her Chicago Mafia customers were complaining about my neighborhood presence. They didn't like me driving my vehicles past their windows in the wee hours of the morning, while they were trying to get a good night's sleep, prior to their pre-dawn departures back to Chicago, in the Mob's Cadillac limos loaded to the springs with dope. This was the obvious response of state and federal officers toward an innocent neighborhood bystander, who had, by his increased awareness and knowledge, threatened the Golden Pipeline of funds for CIA black operations in Central America.

A dead "endangered specie" bird was planted in the refrigerator in one of my apartments, wrapped in aluminum foil, as tenants vacated, and I was charged with "possession". This malicious prosecution coincided with the $50,000.00 grant from the feds to the Santa Fe D.A's office, to investigate cattle mutilations, to be conducted by ex-F.B.I. agent Kenneth Rommel. Meanwhile, my key defense witness, former tenant Bill Englert, was killed when the single-engine aircraft he was piloting plowed into the ground in Alaska, during his last flight to Ankorage, the day before his planned return to Santa Fe to testify. After obtaining his pilot license, Bill worked as a fish-spotter for Alaskan fishing fleets near Ankorage. I speculated that his plane had been sabotaged prior to his last takeoff, just to prevent his testimony, since there were those present with him in Alaska, who worked with my New Mexico neighbor in the smuggling operations. In fact, they formed a direct extension of the Colombia-to-Alaska drug conduit. Fish and Game fuzz John Miles, who conducted the search and seizure illegally and without a warrant, and issued the abusive subpoena illegally, and physically assaulted me on my own property, is now head of the agency.

The malicious prosecution was coordinated with the government's investigation of itself in the cattle mutilations, smuggling dope to fund its black operations, and murder of anyone who got in the way, in the Big Lie program, designed to conceal these dark deeds along with flying saucer propulsion secrets, along with activities connected to a secret program involved with the cattle mutilations. The mutilations program collects and analyzes 'specific biological tissue' from mammals—cattle—which are similar enough to humans to yield reliable results in tests of "stealth" particle beam weapons under development, intended for use on humans. This monitoring of the effects of ionizing radiation on cattle, is 'pseudo-justified' to NSA oversight committees, on 'environmental grounds', since the techniques for studying the effects of radiation—whether produced by the high-voltage electrical discharges emitted by saucers, or defense-related weapons under "national security purposes"—are essentially the same.

The weapons appear to be for "population control", judging from the degree of secrecy surrounding the removal of tissue from the cattle. (See Chap. TV ["Sightings"] for more on this subject). The use of other people's animals without their permission helps to conceal the research, since the presence of such large animals at government facilities would be obvious. Since the weapons are designed for use on humans in their natural environment, without their knowledge, use of them on cattle, as the most available mammals around, produces more realistic results. A 'spinof' benefit of the perennial "tests", is to justify the continued veil of secrecy, since, so long as there is "on-going" research involving the saucers, the secrecy conceals them and everything connected to them. Though the government continues to use the national security veil to deny public access to saucer technology, the ultimate purpose is the private, economic security of

IllumiNazi corporations. One fascist hand washes the other, as we are controlled and experimented on like lab animals, and the sham continues.

Back in 1966, during my second semester of law school at U.T., I had discussed saucer propulsion with another law student during a coffee break between classes, within earshot of a student whom I knew to be employed by the CIA. Immediately afterward, in a class of the eminent constitutional law professor, Charles Allen Wright, the CIA/student screamed out, "...What should the penalty be for a law student who disclosed 'national security secrets' in the hallways?", gesturing toward me. Wright screamed, "He didn't disclose national security secrets!"

Around two days later, as I drove south down Red River Street at its intersection with 6th Street, out of the corner of my eye to my left, I spotted a discolored '55 Ford being driven by two Air Force men, parked at the curb near the light. As I entered the intersection, they floor-boarded the Ford, and accelerated directly toward my left door. In a quick reflex, I applied brakes and swerved to my right, just in time to deflect their blow. Both my Chevy station wagon and the Ford were totaled. The Ford had no license plate, and the two men, whose uniforms bore no insignia or other markings, were ticketed for running a red light and causing the collision, and nothing else, although circumstances indicate that they should have been arrested on the spot.

The following day, I discovered that the two airmen were "shipped out' from Bergstrom Air Base, and the Base Commandant's office refused to give me their names or their "newly assigned base". There was no doubt in my mind that they were Air Force "hitters" from the O.S.I. This incident was easy to connect to Air Force spooks, since the men lacked identities, ranks, and addresses, their car was equally anonymous, and the base Advocates office concealed their identies and whereabouts. I could detail a half dozen more such incidents, all of which had similar Kafkaesque qualities which could only be created by a secret police state. This CIA harrassment occurred after they told President Kennedy that I worked for them, and prior to to their actual attempts to recruit me. Some of it was meddling in my life by George Bush, prior to his CIA directorship.

Most of the harrassment and malicious prosecution in New Mexico was ostensibly property related. Every property transaction I was involved in since 1970, was intentionally engineered at the outset by the CIA, or screwed up by them They initially suckered me into coming to Santa Fe in the first place. In 1970, they offered me a seven-acre tract at the junction of Cerrillos Road and Rodeo Road, for a mere $4300.00, which is now worth millions, and presently includes a business owned by my CIA girlfriend. In 1973, they transferred a beautiful ten-acre parcel on Barrancas Drive to me, filed the deed, and even had it assessed to me. That property is worth at least a million. The transaction was signed by an ex-CIA employee (now a lawyer/banker), a former New Mexico Governor connected to the CIA, and another well-known (also ex-CIA) lawyer. It took me at least four trips to the county assessor's and clerk's offices to convince them the property was not mine. These attempts to give me property by the CIA, were related to attempts to "recruit" me, by indebting me to them, in anticipation of future employment which they intended to provide me, whether I liked it or not.

D.A.s, police, and judges are easily controlled by the N.S.A., and can be made to do anything under the guise of "national security". Even more extreme, I knew that at least two D.A.S, (one in Texas) were employees of the CIA, because one was involved in attempting to recruit me directly, and the other I won't say how I know. One judge inadvertently disclosed to me that the N.S.A. was influencing the case before him, in which I was involved, in his ruminations from the bench,

mumbling that I was supposed to be "...some sort of 'rocket scientist' or something...", which the government wished to control. That was because the particular orders given to him came from security people connected ostensibly to rocketry, but were actually concerned about flying saucers. That judge was a close personal friend to a man I refer to as the "Friend", about whom I will say more later. We don't control these people. They operate on their own, inside our government, representing the Trilateralists, not us.

For around ten years, I was grilled by northern New Mexico's "Torquemada", (a Santa Fe judge). There, sitting in judgment of me, was a psychologically tormented, insecure "momma's boy" from Espanola—an 'ex-pornographer' who was addicted to cocaine—who for the sake of his co-addict/sadist legal colleagues, took every opportunity to pretend to impeach my credibility, or make underhanded swipes at my character, which were really none of his business.

When I first moved to New Mexico, I was a sculptor and a painter. I had already undergone a horrible incident at the University of Texas, instigated by Jesuit-controlled agents of Dr. John ("Long John") Silber, which eventually resulted in his being fired by Frank Erwin, President of the Board of Regents, for FRAUD AND CONSPIRACY, and the revocation of the PhD. of LB.J.'s Undersecretary of Health, Education and Welfare, Dr. Billy McCrocklin, for plagiarizing his doctoral thesis from a 1920s top secret document on the Garde d'Haiti called "The Hart Report". These were not retributions by me, but the result of anger by others over the things being done to me, which tripped certain levers leading to the undoing of an evil perpetrator, taking a few others with him.

Some of you may have heard of Dr. John ("Long John") Silber, the Dr. Strangelove-type president of Jesuit-run Boston College, who ran for governor of Massachusetts and lost in 1993. He is a rigid, dyed-in-the wool classicist/fascist, with a potential to create great mischief. He left the University of Texas after I uncovered his conspiracy, because he sent a cabal of his "hatchet-women" after me. He dragged some of them on up to Boston with him, because they were being run out of Texas too. The incident was similar to one involving John Henry Faulk, with the exception that there probably never will be any attempt to redress what happened to me. What brought the harrassment temporarily to an end, was the blowing of the cover of several CIA operations on the University of Texas campus, which resulted from some of those angered and set into motion over what was happening to me. Sometimes you never realize who your friends are until the chips are down.

I once mentioned to a CIA man whom I respected, that it appeared that the agency could be harrassing someone at the same time another group from the agency was trying to do them a favor, or gain their cooperation. He explained it to me like this: Every organization has its right wing and its left wing, each of which does not seem to know what the other is doing.

Though I graduated with what my friend Henry said was the highest grade-point average of any fine arts graduate student in the history of the University of Texas, that incident had dragged me through the mud as it was designed to do, and had taken a lot out of me already.

The seventeen years of New Mexico judicial harassment just about stamped out all of the art in me. An artist cannot work under conditions of "judicial war psychosis". There are two horrible aspects involved here, which are: (1) The government's policy of secretly violating freedom of speech and press; and (2) clandestinely carrying out this policy through obedient government yeggs and dupes, each motivated at his or her own level (and who often don't even know who is

calling the shots). The victim has no way of proving the illegal motives or even the existence of the conspiracy, because of the phony "national security" veil.

I turned away a large fortune rather than become beholden to the CIA. After all the abusive litigation, I concluded that so-called "justice" and "freedom" in America are terms used on the naive and ignorant, to give them the false impression that they are the fortunate recipients of "rights", which in reality exist only for so long as their individual interests don't conflict with those of the Trilateral Commission. I now realize what a wealthy young man was trying to tell me in 1968, when he said "...property is just a trap". I thought he was some kind of Communist or something, who didn't believe in property rights. I didn't own any real estate then, but thought I'd like to have some. I now realize that what he meant was that a person who owns property can be controlled by threats against the ownership of that property by the state, or indirectly through others encouraged by the state. He helped organized the Washington Monument demonstrations in the late '60s, to bring the Viet Nam War to an end. Though a multi-millionaire, he refused to own property. The F.B.I. probably didn't even know who he was.

The last six years of horrible controversy which diminished in 1992, involved motivating some of my thug neighbors to sue me, as others continued to abuse me while the litigation progressed in court. As I struggled in vain to hold my family together amidst the stress of litigation and social ostracism created by the criminals behind it and in the courts, they moved in for the kill and destroyed my family. Causing my loved ones to suffer is a "blood crime", if you get my meaning, and it won't go unpunished. I'm part Kiowa, Cree, Cherokee and Natchez—as well as Highland Scottish— so I know how to play the "waiting game". I'm incredibly patient.

I MEET A MEMBER OF THE TRILATERAL COMMISSION'S INTERNATIONAL GEODETIC SURVEY TEAM

This region is quite a crossroad of America, including many Trilateral Commission connections. A friend of mine was one of the surveyors for the International Geodetic Survey, in the 1950s, during the Korean War. The survey was international, which meant that the supposedly civilian American scientific crews, with American military escorts, were allowed into China, the Soviet Union, etc., even during the war. My friend was a surveyor in the American military, as was the entire survey crew he worked with. The scientific crew was civilian. However, according to my friend, they switched clothing, so that the military survey crew looked like civilians, and vice-versa. The civilian-dressed (military) survey crew, would determine the location of each of the points, to be marked by the I.G.S. brasscaps, and were instructed to remove themselves from the area, after which the (military-dressed) civilian crew would then come to place the brass-caps.

One day, after locating a point, my friend left the area, then discovered that he had forgotten some of his equipment, and went back to get it. At that time, he came upon the other crew, while they were supposedly in the process of setting the I.G.S. brass-cap. This came as a surprise to them, because they were actually placing a device underneath where the I.G.S. brass-cap was to be placed. This "sub point" was marked with the insignia of the Trilateral Commission, which was a triangle with a dot in the center, just as I had seen on the old Pojoaque viejo's work box from the "p2" 1937 Los Alamos project. The civilians (dressed as military) were very angry at him for having disobeyed instructions, especially in view of the fact that he had seen the concealed device being set into cement, beneath the surface, above which the I.G.S. brass-cap was to be placed.

The secret point, marked by the Trilateral pyramid with a dot in the center (the Masonic/Egyptian "all-seeing eye of Bel, God, or Ra" as shown on the dollar bill), identified the "Illuminati" as the controlling, so-called "civilian" parties of the I.G.S.

Each of the secret geodetic points on our globe, placed at the vertices of geodetic triangles dividing our planet's surface, apparently contains a crystal resonator set to respond to a distinct frequency, for navigating flying saucers (even unmanned ones), and even rockets, either manually, electronically, or by computer. Flying saucers can travel at least 9,000 m.p.h. At that speed-given other limitations on visibility—the resonators provide a means for computer navigation of saucers at high speeds, without visibility, and allow for accurately determining global locations. As a means for Secret Government world navigation, the I.G.S. markers have been in place for forty years. Without the means for using them in 1950, they would have been useless. This survey, actually done for the Trilateralist world government, under the "cover" of the I.G.S.—right under the noses of the United Nations teams, military authorities, international committees, survey teams, and host countries—showed the awesome power of these world-wide conspirators, whose actions violated the sovereignty of nations, through the United Nations.

This "geodetic navigation system" was a perfect solution for the flying saucer and for the Illuminati and Trilateral Commission, since it automatically involved triangular global areas generated by the "great circles" of the "master builder", according to the Genesis passages relied upon in the "secret work" of the "Old Prussian" Masonic Lodges based on the Johanite Gospel, the membership of which excluded Jews, and were forbidden to belong to "humanitarian" Masonry. The teachings of this Johanite German Freemasonry included a dogmatic Christianity, and is rooted in the same, weird teachings of the former Jesuit priest and founder of the "modern" Illuminati in Bavaria, Adam Weishaupt. Out of this sprung the Thule Society and the Ahnenerbe Society, which figured strongly in the S.S., among whose founders was General Karl Haushoffer, the originator of the modern "science" utilized by "our" CIA, called "Geopolitics". The following three archival emblems show the transition from the Thule Society, the Deutsche Antarktische Stiftung (the German Arctic Expedition, with swastika and oak leaves showing Thule Society sponsorship), the "globally conscious" I.G.S. Survey, ala Haushofer's "geopolitics", to the UN:

The several special multidisciplinary, integrated disciplines developed by the SS inner circle, as part of a plan of fiiture world government, included Geopolitics—combined politics and geography—including the ethnic studies and 'racial science' of the Ahnenerbe, linguistics, and culture—and Parapsychology—combined religion and psychology—for use in the MASS PSYCHOLOGY BIG LIE system. Parapsychology would assist the 'geopoliticians' in maintaining mind control of particular populations, creating psychological conditioning conducive to unquestioned obedience to faceless authority. This system was ordered by John D. Rockefeller in 1923, when his people trained the SS and chose Hitler as the future leader ofthe Third Reich, as R & D for the fiiture mass-psychological control technology, now applied in America since 1945.

In 1957, as a member of the Air Force—like all American armed forces managed according to the Sturm Abteilung ("Storm Division") Nazi troop management manual written by the 'synergist', Ernst Roehm, homosexual 'father' of Hitler's SA—I was assigned to Operations Intelligence, working in an 'SS library' as a monitor. I often heard the term "geopolitics", and logged various documents and books into and out of that library. I was literally surrounded and controlled by the trappings of the Nazis which had impressed our leaders so much that they officially 'adopted' them. The library was the creation of the Nazi intelligence network, the photos in the documents and books dating from that period and bearing overwritten German file indexes. There was practically no way for the U.S. government to have obtained such a 'library', other than from the files compiled during the Nazi invasion of Russia

At the time of the German 'surrender', American authorities were deeply impressed with these materials, so thoroughly accumulated, catalogued, and organized by Reinhard Gehlen's SS group, which included the monsters Heinrich Mueller and Reinhard Heydrich, that the CIA actually hired them in the U.S. under assumed names[1]. These files were used by the SS in the death camps and in sifting though the various Slavic "slave peoples" of the Soviet Union, to ferret out and murder Soviet Jewry, Gypsies, and others deemed "inferior". The documents acquired an ostensible 'new' purpose as barter and trade to an America which allowed itself to be drawn into a Cold War based on the dubious urgings of the Organization Gehlen's "experts", the new CIA's Soviet 'analysts' and 'specialists'—former SS intelligence officers—who convinced us that the Soviets were planning to attack us at any moment. We in SAC Intelligence could load the library into "mobility boxes" on a moment's notice, to take with us to a remote staging area nearer to the Soviet borders, in the event of the outbreak of war. But only after an invasion of the Soviet Union by us as conquerors, would the library assume its actual function because, other than the ostensible purely academic use as an 'invaluable reference library', it still retained its true identity...as a reference to be used in the systematic subjugation of foreign peoples by Nazi conquerors.

Almost a month before the fall of the Berlin Fuehrerbunker, Gehlen was already deeply bartering with selling American intelligence on the value of his organization, primarily on the basis of its contacts in and expertise on the Soviet Union. In retrospect, it appears that the long-range plan of the SS officers of Gehlen's organization was to get Hitler's revenge against "Judaized America", by offering themselves to us as "intelligence experts" at a hefty profit, allowing them to survive intact as a secret sect within the secret core of our 'intelligence community', while embroiling us in a tortuous Cold War which lasted for almost fifty years.

---

[1]Gregory Douglas, Gestapo Chief (three vols.), R. James Bender, P.O. Box 23456, San Jose, Ca 95153.

CHAPTER III: I MEET A GOVERNMENT M.I.B. IN SANTA FE; HOLLYWOOD ON THE TAKE

The magnitude by which electricity overcomes the force of gravity, is rivaled only by the magnitude by which the Big Lies of our government and the Trilateralists have overcome our rationality. These IllumiNazi Big Lies about "aliens" are disseminated through all the mass media. Someday there should be justice by public trial and punishment of the traitors who have perverted the instruments of democracy, and are entitled to none of our protections, which they seek to destroy. They who have made war on our Bill of Rights and Constitution should have to defend themselves without their protections.

Without our consent, the Secret Government is consciously waging psychological warfare against us, in violation of our right to government only by our consent. They use movies, T.V., books, magazines, advertising, children's stories, and all forms of propaganda, from the cradle to the grave, to criminally undermine and subvert the epistemological underpinnings of rational existence. We have not 'consented' to a fraud of which we are unaware. Our government, on behalf of the TC/CFR, has created the whole "alien" scenario, to brainwash us. So what is their purpose? To conceal flying saucer technology from us, and to stretch our credulities so we will believe the Big Lies. Control is the name of the game, and they have it. Flying saucer technology would break that control, so we don't have it. Are we a nation of wimps who will do nothing about it?

According to one nutty writer[1], the purpose is either to fabricate a phony alien threat, so as to unite the world under a one-world fascist/socialist TC/CFR/Bilderberger/Illuminati dictatorship, or to render the world's people into subservience to actual aliens with whom they have cut a deal, and he thinks it is all the fault of the Masons.

Unfortunately, neither of these conclusions is correct, though the first one contains a germ of truth, in the fabrication of a phony alien threat, but in view of the two purposes I stated above, this wacky theory is perceived as just as misinformational as the crap emitted by the CIA's or O.N.I.'s covert agents in UFOlogy. The phony 'alien' threat was derived from a public speech by Ronald Reagan regarding the effects of an hypothetical alien threat, which in a paranoid's mind, is the kind of hype to be used to appeal to a bewildered constituency, so they can be unwittingly used to spread the dumb idea that the alien propaganda is intended to scare us into the arms of the NWO, or is a leak from the inside regarding a deal the government has with the aliens.

Such wacky propaganda is induced by a shell game: "Will those who have lost track of the real issue please raise their hands." The real issue is saucer technology. The controllers get their control over us with our money. The TC/CFR bunch have exclusive control over the saucer, since it is the most perfect instrument for 'world surveillance', and because its availability to the public would eventually destroy the economic power they now wield over us, through their control over energy, transportation and communications resources which we pay them for every day, so we "can't have it".

The plan will work only if they can maintain this exclusivity, which can only be maintained through continued ultra-secrecy and the help of dupes, and anyone else

---

[1]Milton William Cooper, Behold a Pale Horse, Light Technology Publishing.

stupid enough to believe the CIA UFOlogists, in spreading the misinformation of alien origins of saucer technology. Since saucer construction is rather easy to duplicate, once the simple principles are known, even the scantiest secrets related to it are protected. That is the reason there has been no open saucer usage in any of our wars since 1945, even though this would have guaranteed clean and complete victories and prevented further loss of American lives. These facts show the ultimate treason through which these people have abused us, the 'paying' and purported 'owning' parties, while the CRF/TC enjoy exclusive use of 'our' saucers as 'their' special tools.

The second idea, that our government may have cut a deal with "aliens", was just plumb dumb. It was so dumb, that William Cooper, one of those who adopted this story, changed his tune the moment he bought a copy of my first edition, with the idea that he could abandon his old stuff and take credit for my claim of "exclusively human origin", so long as he never cited my book or told anyone that I had 'converted' him to the idea, but people noticed anyway, drat it! But Cooper still doesn't get it.

The manipulators of the TC/CFR have the mentalities of sociopathic ants. Their whole method was copied, then cynically perverted from an original idea of Nikola Tesla, before the ultimate destruction of the League of Nations, eventually brought about by Cecil Rhodes' British Round Table Group, and its American branch, which fused in 1919 into the new international British-American organization, known in America as the CFR ("Council on Foreign Relations"), and in Britain as the I.I.A. ("Institute for International Affairs"). Tesla had naively offered his flying saucer invention to the Geneva Convention and League of Nations, as an ultimate 'police vehicle' with which to patrol the world to maintain peace. His dislike of the new British-American organization was reflected by his disillusionment when the League of Nations was emasculated by the new group.

Meanwhile, the CFR/IIA was stealing his greatest invention, for its own exclusive use in the inobsequious world dictatorship we now have, using covert manipulation by war. Rather than maintaining peace, the war profiteers create the divide-and-conquer conditions leading to wars, profiting by them, then use the resultant wars, surrenders and 'peace negotiations' as pretexts to constantly restructure the world, profiting by them. The man who stabbed Tesla in the back, then twisted the hilt, was none other than J.P. Morgan, a member of the CFR, who was already a dictator of American energy and communications. Morgan suckered Tesla in, in a most treacherous and sadistic manner, seeking to completely crush him emotionally, driving him into a psychological turmoil and destitution from which he was never intended to return.

The TC/CFR/IIA like things just the way they have them, don't want to rock the boat, and fear most of all, significant change, since fluxing of conditions could induce unpredictable widespread free communications, which could awaken the people to the scam. That is the reason they sought to shut down the computer Internet in 1995. When they control the purse strings of the world, and soak up all the revenues of the people of America just to pay the interest on our 'national debt', why would they want an obvious 'world dictatorship', which would kill the goose that laid the golden egg? So long as we slaves keep our noses to the grindstones, they have it made. The only thing which would induce them to take drastic action, would be if the public suddenly becomes aware of the Big Picture. They won't create tumultuous conditions which they can't control, and anything 'spontaneous' must be brought under control to the ends they desire. That is the reason the TC/CFR media have taken unfair advantage of the Oklahoma bombing of

Apr. 19, 1995, by misdirecting the public outrage over the bombing, from those responsible, to the grass roots sovereignty movement, militia movement, constitutionalists, and in general, all those who are critical of the government, know about the Banksters, have documentation to prove it, and are awakening the rest of the people to the total abnegation of American sovereignty by these worldists.

Though the Bilderberg group's public emergence can be traced to 1952, its name supposedly derived from the place of their supposed "first meeting" at the Bilderberg Hotel in Holland in 1954. This group has a much older, but perhaps not so clear, origin. "Bilderberger" is a German word meaning "picture merchant", denoting the internationalists who have for centuries used paintings and art as a store of wealth, as a hedge against inflation, and as a compact means of transportation of their wealth from one country to the other. That is the reason so many unscrupulous and ruthless people, such as Armand Hammer, have had so much of their wealth tied up in valuable paintings and other art. And that is where the famous Dutch Hotel got its name, since these people came so often to Holland to conceal the loot which they as dictators or just plain high-placed thieves, had accumulated in the countries which they had so often throughout history, stripped of wealth.

For centuries, Holland was the place to discretely buy and sell valuable pieces of art, and to convert them into and out of the various currencies of the world at current values, avoiding inflation, taxes and prying eyes. The Dutch, like the Swiss and their banking interests, have always been accommodating, and named a hotel after their infamous guests, many years before the formal meeting in 1954. I first heard about the Bilderbergers in 1960, from a person who had known about them since before the depression. I once knew an old Dutchman who as a boy at the turn of the century, acted as an inconspicuous, secret courier, riding his bicycle, carrying various currencies for the Bilderbergers from country to country in the lowlands, usually at night, until he received a serious, life-long injury when he was run over by a coach one rainy dark night.

The TC/CFR/Secret Government, has consistently used the mass media to convince us that flying saucers are from outer space, rather than being man-made, and to my knowledge, this is the first book or any other media production, which makes the unequivocal, categorical assertion that they are exclusively man-made, and that NO EVIDENCE EXISTS ON EARTH OF ANYTHING EVER BEING "MADE" EXCEPT BY HUMAN BEINGS.

If anyone believes that the use of mass media for such purposes is just "harmless entertainment", they should have watched the two-part miniseries, Intruders, aired by C.B.S. on May 17 and 19, 1992. The scenario left no doubt that the intent was to beg the question that flying saucers are "extraterrestrial spacecraft", to intimidate and threaten us, and to falsely convince us of the following ominous things:

OSTENSIBLE MESSAGE: (a) That aliens are "with us";
(b) that our government "knows it";
(c) that the government's policy of secrecy
is "for our own good" and "justified";
(d) that the government will hurt
you if you don't comply;
(e) that anyone who actively resists, will
commit "professional suicide", or worse.

ULTERIOR MESSAGE That man does not possess this (simple) technology.

If anyone has any doubts as to the CIA's harrassment of independent flying saucer investigators, the following facsimile clipping regards oppression of them by the CIA;

UFO congress hears claims against CIA

ACAPULCO, Mexico (UPI) - William Spaulding, director of Ground Saucer Watch Inc., claims the CIA has been interfering with unidentified flying object watchers.

He told the International Congress on UFO Phenomena in Acapulco Thursday the CIA has recommended that groups of UFO researchers be watched during sightings and "considered as subversive."

He charged the agency's domestic operations have "harassed and intimidated researchers and tried to hold up the dissemination of UFO information."

Spaulding's view is challenged by former CIA agent Bradley Ayers, now a registered private detective in Minnesota and UFO researcher.

"The agency has been made the whipping boy for all the ills of the world", he said.

"LOOKING FOR MOTIVES"

We can use the CIA's own analytical techniques against it. The gist of the government's primary motivations can be reduced to protecting the corporate-state interests, by concealing the Secret Government's flying saucer surveillance of us, and the elite's energy, technological, and transportation cartel. The rest of the garbage is merely a "means to an end". Through false propaganda rumors about "extraterrestrials", they have duped support for their policy, based on the false premise that the "end" (prevention of widespread panic over the fictitious "alien presence") justifies the "means" (government mass-media brainwashing and intimidation of men, women, and children), while on the 'public' level, a phony alien threat is "implied" by the media, and used to psychologically intimidate reticence to the TC/CFR Illuminati leadership. Once we recognize the FACTS that THERE ARE NO ALIENS ON EARTH, and that THE GOVERNMENT AND THE TRILATERALISTS HAVE CREATED THE ALIEN MYTHOLOGY to conceal FLYING SAUCER SECRETS intended for EXCLUSIVE USE AGAINST US WITHOUT OUR KNOWLEDGE, it naturally follows that public access to flying saucer technology, conceived by an American citizen over NINETY

YEARS AGO, will remove the PRIMARY motivational basis for the world corporate-state conspiracy, and destroy their BIG LIE PROPAGANDA SYSTEM.

In examining these hoaxes, one cannot fail to see a connection to the ancient Sumerians, Egyptians, and their worship of Osiris, as well as other ancient esoteric suggestions, which is because the Nazi intelligence planners in the CIA are fond of such esoterica. In my chapters III and VI, I give you some of the mythological foundations for this religion, which is over 6,000 years old. The Egyptians, who did not originate this belief system, which came from Asia, used a whole system of myths to control everything, just as the Illuminati does today. This has been a role model for totalitarian designers throughout history. The Egyptians' 'enemies'—the Sea Peoples, Assyrians, Babylonians, Amorites, Sumerians, Akkadians, Chaldeans, Greeks, etc.—shared this same ancient nature religion, and could be 'spiritually' manipulated by Egypt, which practiced the religion in its most highly classicized form, the Mecca of sun worship, just as Rome became the home of the Roman Catholic Church. This is the "secret of the ages": Mysticism! Those who can be suckered in by it, are putty in the mystics' hands, the hands of those who only use mysticism as a means of control. And those who resist, can be killed by those who follow, all in the name of "God", "Ra", "Mohammed", "Stalin", "The Fatherland", etc. Marx stated that "religion is the opiate of the people", but he failed to point out that he also was a religious mystic, who asked his followers to believe in the "mystical power" of THE COLLECTIVE, on faith rather than reason. I would further define "mystics", as those who seek to gain values from others, or to deny others the use of their own minds as individuals, on the basis of "special powers" which can't be proven and must be accepted on "faith", so as to control them. This always involves some form of mysticism, as any con-artist could tell you. And the bottom line is, THERE ARE NO MYSTICAL SECRETS!

Socialism, Communism, Fascism and Naziism are inventions of the IUuminati, theo-statist "masks", which make the citizens pay for their own bureaucratic enslavement and "social and economic benefits", while the elite remain in secret control of the world, increasing and using their illicitly gained profit and power for themselves, without bearing any responsibility for the wrongs they inflict, since the guilt for this is thereby scapegoated to the citizens and their puppetized 'leaders'. Karl Marx and the IUuminati which backed him, took the Judeo-Christian "you-are-your-brother's-keeper" conscience, and perverted it into a "statist conscience", under a "state religion" with moral and physical damnation of non-believers ("heretics"), while the people shared the poverty, false guilt and weakness thus created.

CORNY GOVERNMENT SPECIAL EFFECTS AND HOAX SCENARIOS:
The Roswell Rhesus Monkey Hoax and Other Such Outrageous Shams

In the late '40s, when Hollywood's emerging "space age" special effects were funky and humorous by today's standards, the special effects of the personnel of Holloman A.F.B. at Alamogordo, White Sands Missile Range, and Walker Air Force Base at Roswell, were even funkier. They executed the stupid 1947 hoax which is sometimes called the "MJ-12" incident or "The Roswell Incident", but which I call "The Roswell Rhesus Monkey Hoax". Until 1952, Wernher von Braun was working at Ft. Bliss (as Director of Research, U.S. Army Ordnance Guided Missile Command), from which post he continued to conduct V-2 (A-9, V-6, V-7) tests at nearby White Sands

Proving Grounds, while other tests were being conducted on the rocket sled at Alamogordo, using rhesus monkies in G-suits, to determine the limits of human G-force endurance and other problems of high performance flight in conventional high performance aircraft (necessary to sustain conventional aeronautics on a high level in order to stave off demands for the saucer technology in national security groups). In 1952, the researchers switched to chimpanzees in A-9 tests. The chimps were much easier to control and less dangerous and problematic for personnel to handle.

In the original 1947 hoax, a small, comic-strip-type flying saucer—around twelve feet in. diameter, constructed of stock sheet aluminum, rivets, screws, bar stock and molding, with a plastic "bubble-canopy" for the 'pilot', and an old automotive antenna with a ball on its tip projecting from the top of the bubble—was placed in a spot about four miles from Walker A.F.B., on the ranch of a cooperating co-conspirator. Four rhesus monkies, which had been shaved, dyed green, and outfitted with corny little "space suits", complete with little 'space' helmets, were strewn near the fake saucer. News leaks were arranged by the intelligence "E. & D" (Evaluation and Dissemination) Officer, as the 'crashed alien flying saucer' and the four 'space aliens' were 'found' by the military authorities. Just like in a third-grade play, only this scenario was worse. Just imagine "Peter Pan" being performed by a bunch of G.I.s.

The Alamogordo intelligence personnel even purchased the green pigment—dry tempera pigment—from our family business, and I even showed them how to apply it by rubbing it on dry, just like on "limed oak" furniture I showed people how to finish. Our business was the best art supply, decorating and paint contracting business in the region, and Alamogordo had none. My father and I even decorated the new house of Robert O. Anderson, in Hondo (near Roswell) about 1951.

By our present standards, the mock flying saucer was a grossly amateurish attempt to foist a corny hoax upon the public. 'Leaks' to the news media, including a few ridiculous photos of the saucer (which would have been prohibited if the events were true), and the dead monkies in the corny 'space suits' (the monkey-sized G-suits used in the acceleration experiments), were publicized in newspapers, and eventually found then-way to magazines, despite the immediate attempts by the startled and angered Pentagon officials to retrieve all the evidence. The whole confused scenario and withdrawn publishings, created even more weirdness. One of the P.I.O.s (Public Information Officers) of Army Air Corps Intelligence, Walther Haut, sent out the initial press releases to area newspapers, announcing the recovery of an "alien flying saucer", including 8" x 10" black and white glossies, showing the 'captured' saucer and 'aliens'. Haut, who now runs a "Flying Saucer Museum" in Roswell, New Mexico, has made no references to those photos in any of his recent statements. That is because he was then, and still is, an employee of the intelligence community. Fortunately for the Pentagon, the photos were sent only to regional, small-town letterpress newspapers, few of which possessed the means to reproduce the photos in 1947, without first having half-tone photo-engravings produced in larger cities. This gave the Pentagon more time to get most of them back before publication, or to stop the papers before they were distributed. In preparing for the hoax, regional military intelligence personnel had created a 'crash site' with a bull dozer, on the rancher's property, by making a huge gash in the ground. Whoever was handling the dozer that day was a bit heavy-handed. The 'saucer' however, was obviously a stupid hoax, as there was no way that the flimsy little craft, without a dent or hole in it, could have plowed such a gaping hole in the hard and rocky,

sun-baked desert ground. The photos of the 12-foot diameter fake saucer had become known to many people, yet today, I seem to be the only person who recalls them. Since the initial photos—already prepared before the crash—were issued immediately after the purported 'crash', personnel had insufficient time to fabricate the fake saucer afterward, so the initial photos from the Army Air Corps, of the original fake saucer, without a speck of dust or a dent on it, represented physical evidence of the hoax perpetrated by them. Further proof that the photos were taken before the hoax was executed was the fact that the junky little saucer was photographed in a hanger (at Walker or Holloman), while the "aliens" (i.e., rhesus monkies, completely dressed in their G-suits), were photographed in an Air Force laboratory, not at the hospital, most probably at Holloman A.F.B. at Alamogordo. That was prior to their removal to the hoax site, thence to the infirmary at Roswell. After the hoax, the G-suits were removed for 'medical' purposes, except for a couple of the monkies, which were raising a horrible stench, because they had relieved their bowels in the G-suits, upon death days before, and the hot desert sun had accelerated the fermentation of the monkey excreta and corpses, after their removal from the morgue at Holloman.

Years later, a photo of a supposedly operational, 60-foot diameter, jet-powered saucer designed by Schriever in WWII Germany, was leaked, but that scenario was withdrawn, since it verified a German saucer program, although a disinformational branch intended to hide the true electrically-powered project at Peenemunde. The initial evidence which reached certain members of the public, had already revealed the initial hoax to intelligent but somewhat confused witnesses. The latter leaked photo showing the Nazi saucer designed by Schriever, made in Czechoslovakia during the war, part of the saucer stuff rounded up by General Patton and transported to New Mexico along with the rest of the German saucer projects, around September, 1945, under Operation Paperclip. Since it wasn't one of the highly classified "electro-saucers", the photo did little harm, and had a 'professionally constructed' appearance, intended to overcome the poor craftsmanship and design of the fake saucer. It was a 'withdrawn hoax', however, since it tended to acknowledge a crash which conflicted with the later "weather balloon hoax" concocted by the Pentagon to conceal the first bungled hoax.

Because of all the gross stupidities and miscalculations on the part of the initial huxters, the initial scenario was obliterated by subsequent weather balloon stuff which was only slightly less stupid, but the initial 1947 hoax, 38 years before the third, 1985 "MJ-12" hoax, still contained 'salvageable parts' as far as the Pentagon huxters were concerned. The Pentagon team had taken great pains to carefully obliterate and omit the dumb photos of the original saucer and monkies, which clearly smells of a Pentagon "cover-up" of its hoax, while, the public, most of whom never saw the photos, failed to realize that what was being "covered up" was not an "alien crash", but an unauthorized 'wildcat' hoax, not cleared through the Pentagon, created by ex-Nazi military 'intelligence' personnel, which was bungled by lack of special effects expertise.

The 'salvageable' parts of the first hoax, which provided the precedent of a mystified 'alien saucer' incident, together with the 'government cover-up', were reborn as a third, MJ-12 hoax, complete with a set of fake, newly created and planted 'presidential orders', obtained through the "freedom of information act" This new scenario was written by a team of Ph.D.s, submitted to a secret committee, and approved by them. Even so, that scenario has been called a hoax by the government itself, since it also conflicted with the second, "weather balloon hoax", which has now become the

"official" position, because government officials are absolutely forbidden to acknowledge the existence of flying saucers, be they fake 'alien' ones, or real, 'man-made' ones. In order for the government to drop back to the second hoax, it was necessary for them to admit that the third, MJ-12 hoax, was a hoax. It took them some time to realize that the second hoax was better, because it allowed them to simply deny questions about 'aliens' which did not in reality exist. Also, it was necessary to insure, through their control of UFOlogy groups, that only the 'right' (i.e., "wrong") questions were asked in the petition now known as "The Roswell Statement".

It would seem that, with the 38-year lapse between the first and second hoax, they could have done a better job, but alas, the government bunglers screwed up again. The error involved slander and fraud against deceased presidents Truman and Eisenhower, by forging their names on false documents which alleged an incident which never occurred. Such fraud and slander should not have been treated so lightly by law enforcement authorities in respect to the arrogant Pentagon officials, who clearly overstepped their authority, by falsifying actions taken by former (deceased) commanders-in-chief, ex post facto.

At the time of my 1993 first edition I was unaware that the original photos had become completely 'unavailable'. Though I was unable to find my copies of them to include in this book, I assumed they were known to the usual saucer investigator, and proceeded to point out facts which I thought would be obvious to anyone examining them. Then I was astounded in late 1993, to discover that no 'civilians' involved in UFOlogy knew of or said a thing about the old photos. I knew that I hadn't seen the two photos, given to me in 1970 by a newsman, or my magazine showing the photos, since 1974. These stupid photos infuriated Pentagon officials, by revealing the identities of the "aliens" as shaved rhesus monkies, in a hoax which was an amateurish attempt to convince the public that the German flying saucers seen by so many people in the area, were "extraterrestrial". The Pentagon would never have approved the hoax beforehand, and the original hoax, as perpetrated, would never have held up, because it was too amateurishly funny!

What the photos showed, as purported "space aliens", were shaved rhesus monkies, wearing monkey-sized, machine-sewn, G-suits with the pressure lines and lacings, equipped with oxygen tubes, helmets, and other equipment, identical to those of the X-15 rocket plane test pilots, for whose benefits the monkey tests were conducted, to accumulate data from rocket sled tests at Alamogordo, on the outer parameters of G-forces which humans could withstand. The helmets concealed the small sizes of the upper craniums of the monkeys, later exaggerated in the "official standard alien" model.

In view of the original hoax, the MJ-12 documents were apparently intended to retroactively convince us that "space aliens" from millions of light years away, possessing 'superior intelligence', had come to Roswell. It was contemplated that the public could still be convinced of this, provided the scenario was presented without the photos, which by the poor judgment of the 1947 military intelligence personnel were considered "convincing". The third-rate 'saucer kitsch'—the rhesus monkies in G-suits, and the junky little saucer of such poor craftsmanship that a California hot-rodder would have been ashamed—had to be concealed. The recently fabricated 'presidential orders' of "MJ-12" were intended to resuscitate the original "aliens"—minus the dumb photos—despite the obvious fact that beings of sufficiently high intelligence would never have contacted jerks at Roswell or Alamogordo, or even Area 51, unless there was

a reasonably expectable opportunity to contact the most powerful political leader in the world, and even an idiot wouldn't make that mistake! The sites didn't even vaguely resemble Washington, D.C. or New York City. Government-employed writers have attempted to fabricate several "secret meetings" between various presidents of the U.S., as a basis for hoax scenarios, when an examination of the presidential calendars and newspapers on the alleged dates, shows that the presidents in question were involved in other activities which precluded the authenticity of the documents. There is now the original "rhesus monkey" hoax, the "weather balloon" cover-up hoax, and the "MJ-12" hoax, all now being played upon by the O.S.I. "UFOlogy" and government "denier" symphony, which can buy time indefinitely, so long as the phony debate is protracted.

I taught art at White Sands Missile Range School, in 1970-71, and I can assure you that there was no reason to believe that space aliens of superior intelligence would have passed up New York City and all the other metropolitan cities of the world, and instead, have landed near Alamogordo or Roswell. I have also worked in the movie industry, and can assure you that these efforts were grossly incompetent! Poor props, poor sets, poor makeup, poor acting, poor script, and poor production. Worse than Radar Men From the Moon. I also believe the hoax was cooked up by ex-Nazi Holloman intelligence personnel, rather than Walker or White Sands personnel, because the monkies were used there, the saucers were used there, and because Walker, as the "fall guy" base for the hoax, would create a distraction from the real perpetrators. Walker was a basic flight training base, with a few old bombers from an old atomic bomb wing (which at one time possibly included the Enola Gay, if my recollection is correct), mothballed there after the war, until the base was closed down sometime in the late '50s or early '60s. Holloman, an advanced flight-test base which also defended the whole top secret area with a fighter-interceptor group, performed highly classified tests in conjunction with White Sands Missile Range, and in respect to Wernher von Braun's intended manned (rocket) moon missions, which were probably shams to cover an earlier mission in the electro-propulsive Graf Zeppelin. Data produced at Alamogordo was used in the design of future rocket planes, jet fighters and bombers, flying saucers, and eventually, stealth planes (very expensive shams to cover saucer stuff).

Another reason the MJ-12 hoax related back to the old rhesus monkey hoax, was to utilize the weird 1947 image of the shaved monkies, which had become the 'official standard alien model' approved by the secret committees, to be useful in back-dating the more recent plans of extended fraud. The monkies, with their large, glassy, slanted eyes, small chins and mouths, and skinny bodies, are close enough to "E.T." to make a stab at it, at least in the retarded minds of the government plagiarists, and if need be, could be faked by small human actors, even child actors, midgets, or small, skinny women actors, in space suits, wearing latex masks with sunglass-lens eyes. The dark lenses conceal the human eyes, and create an eerie effect. The more recent wave of "alien" movies from Hollywood—many having nothing to do with this hoax—seem to have given the huxters a new life, by providing a body of more recent movies from which to plagiarize and sponge new 'spin-off hoaxes. There are also now many more competent special effects, prop-building, and makeup technicians available within the intelligence community.

Government agents posing as concerned citizen "UFOlogists"—also mimicked by unwitting dupes falsely induced by them—recently have naively revived this old incident, alleging that a "government cover-up" in 1947, concealed "evidence of aliens from space", and secret collaboration between them and our 'brilliant' military

authorities and government. If that were true, they certainly didn't do a very good job of it! Even if genuine, the MJ-12 presidential documents could not have been obtained through the freedom of information act. Government agents ("UFOlogists") have agonizingly gone through the whole "Freedom Of Information Act" act, to obtain these "secret documents", for use in their propaganda war against us; warmed over hash, four times over. That's supposed to make this sham more believable?

The fake MJ-12 documents were intentionally ambiguous, since the embarrassingly stupid photos may still pop up. They have protected their flanks by ambivalent statements, intended to plant more seeds of doubt, to stretch the credulity and 'open the minds' of the gullible, to wallow holes in their credibilities large enough to cram the most recently approved official versions of the BIG LIES into. I lived just to the south of Roswell in 1947, and picked up the truth by "social osmosis". Three of the dead rhesus monkies had been stored in a morgue at Holloman, after being killed in acceleration experiments on the rocket sled. The fourth monkey was almost dead, and so was included with the three other dead ones used in the hoax.

To make my 'social osmosis' more complete, the story that the "aliens" were shaved and dyed rhesus monkies in G-suits, originally came to me through family connections, since my brother-in-law's aunt was the "nurse who later became a nun". As a nurse, she was present during the alleged "autopsy" (actually a dissection). Being a U.S. Army nurse who was a New Mexico survivor of the Bataan Death March, she easily recognized the rhesus monkies, since she had been forced by the Japanese to cook and eat rhesus monkies for food in the Bataan Peninsula. Leona, her sister, told me about it in 1958, but I'd already heard the story through my sister, Ramona, in 1953. I detail more on this under "Golden Cups, Monkey Business, and a Lot of Bull".

In 1995, just before my second edition went to press, I inserted information about seeing an old, 1947 Kodak color print made by the Roswell Army dissectors' photo assistant, during the dissection. That photo was acquired by a man named Bart Wilson, who had told me that he was negotiating with Time-Life Publications and the Sightings TV show people, for sale of the photo. Bart's family member had been in U.S. Army intelligence in Roswell in 1947, which is how he got the photo. I obtained this additional information after Bart's sale, too late to include in my second edition.

Bart's photo showed the splayed facial musculature of a rhesus monkey, pinned out in typical fashion on a board to be photographed for 'documentation' purposes. I immediately recognized it as the musculature of a monkey because the muscles were cut from around the two ears, which produced two strange almond shapes above the cut-outs for the eyes, when stretched out on the board. Bart wouldn't let me make a copy of the photo, as his potential purchasers had insisted on his not doing that.

A few days after Bart showed me the photo for the first time, in the Villa Linda mall in Santa Fe, where Bart's computer imaging and photo processing business was at that time, I mentioned to Bart that the photo verified what I said about the rhesus monkies, and he said he had a firm commitment from the Sightings people. A couple of days later, I just happened to be at Toys-R-Us, located a few hundred yards across the parking lot from Bart's business. As I waited for my son to look at some toys, looking out a window facing Bart's business location, a tan colored government Hummer pulled up in the parking space directly in front of my view. A man got out and walked directly across the parking lot to Bart's business. I went from the building and looked at the

Hummer. The front had a "CIA" plate, and on the passenger side there was a notice: "Property of Central Intelligence Agency: For Official Business Only."

I checked with Bart later, and he said he had concluded his sale of the photo print to the "Sightings" people on the day I saw the guy in the Hummer walk into Bart's business. I told him the guy arrived in a CIA Hummer, and we both had a laugh. I told him there was no chance that the photo will ever be seen by the public now, which is further proof not only that the "Sightings" show is produced by the CIA, but that they are concealing the "monkey business". It is what a friend calls another one of my "statistically challenging" experiences, that I just happened to be at Toys-R-Us, where the CIA man had parked his Hummer, hundreds of yards from Bart's business, in order to avoid the detection by people like me, of his purchase of the photo from Bart.

The following facsimile news clipping related to the government's covert revival of the Roswell "alien" effort.

Documents link Truman with UFO in New Mexico

Gannet News Service

WASHINGTON - Journalists from as far away as Europe and Japan converged on American University here Friday to look at controversial documents purportedly linking the late President Truman to a recovery operation involving a crashed extraterrestrial spacecraft in New Mexico.

The controversy centers on the authenticity of the so-called Majestic-12 document, allegedly prepared for President-elect Eisenhower on Nov. 18, 1952.

The document was never released publicly and, according to what was presented as a White House memo at the time, only President Truman, two of his Cabinet members and the director of the CIA knew its contents.

The continuing UFO controversy is enjoying perhaps its broadest forum ever this weekend during the "International Symposium on Unidentified Aerial Phenomena: A World View." The symposium lasts through Sunday.

The document reports that on July 7, 1947, "a secret operation was begun to assure recovery" of a supposed space-craft that had crashed about a week earlier near Roswell Army Base in New Mexico.

"We've spent two and a half years with that document. We are not prepared to state that it's genuine, but there is no evidence so far to suggest otherwise," said Bill Moore, author of a book on the case titled *The Roswell Incident.*

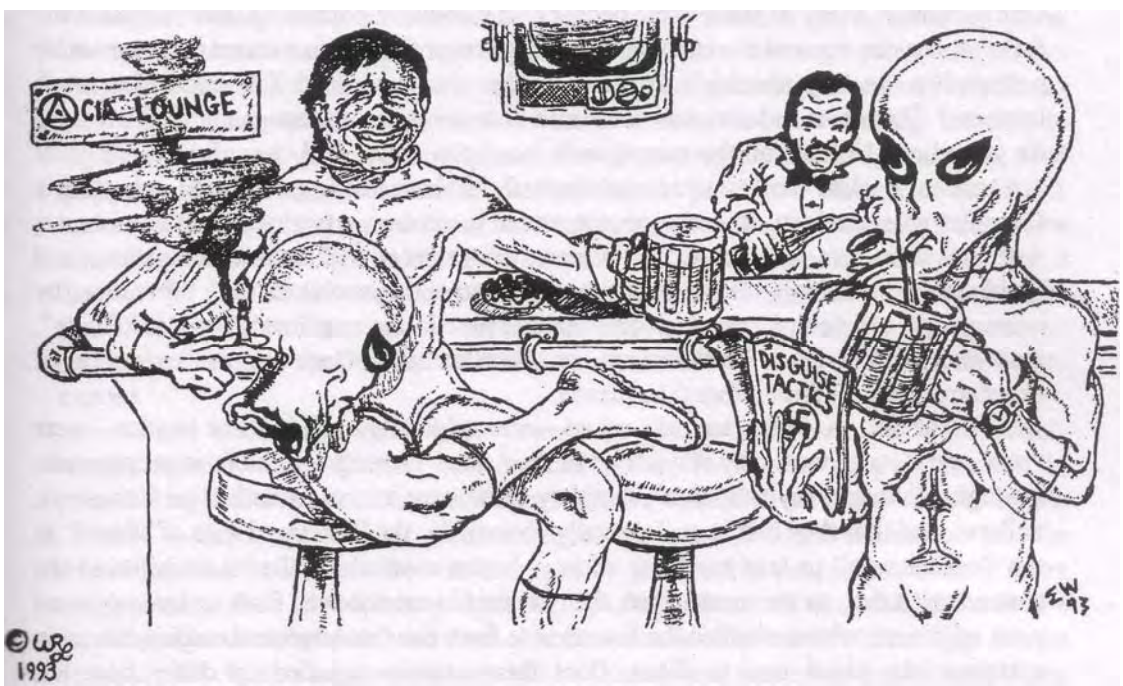
According to the Majestic-12 document, the decomposing corpses of "four small human-like beings" were discovered some two miles away from the New Mexico crash site, indicating they had perhaps ejected before impact.

The M-12 briefing said: "It was the tentative conclusion of this group...that although these creatures are human-like in appearance, the biological and evolutionary processes responsible for their development has apparently been quite different from those observed for homo sapiens."

Under the F.O.I.A., a flock of CIA UFOlogy sheep go "Baa-aa, baa-aa, baa-aa!", asking, in O.S.I.-prepared questionnaires, for "concealed evidence" of a crash which never occurred, involving "aliens" which were monkies, and "secret contact" between

"extraterrestrials" and our government which never occurred. The "official" government response was easy, merely to deny every (CIA-loaded) leading question asked.

Predictably, the "UFOlogists" asked the wrong questions, so the government was 100% correct in denying 1) knowledge of an 'alien UFO crash' at Roswell in 1947 (since there was no crash, and since, if there had been, it would have been a government flying saucer), and 2) that 'alien bodies' (either three or four) were recovered (since a crash never occurred, and since the bodies 'recovered' were of rhesus monkies in G-suits). If the group had asked "Was there a government-conducted hoax at Roswell in 1947, in which the bodies of rhesus monkies (or other primates) were dressed in G-suits (or other costumes designed to look like 'space suits'), to make them appear to be those of 'alien astronauts'?" And, "Did the Pentagon officials retrieve evidence of this first hoax, and cover it up with a second hoax, in which fragments of a weather balloon were substituted?" The old adage, "If you ask a stupid question, you get a stupid answer" applies.



PHONY EXPERT CONSULTANTS AND GOVERNMENT SCRIPTS

The same Arthur C. Clarke who was invited to Keesler by the Air Force in 1956 (whom I called a liar to his face), has been a consultant on many movies involved in this massive hoax, such as 2001: A Space Odyssey, etc. Although such movies as Close Encounters of the Third Kind and E.T. are heartwarming, poetically wishful, and life-affirming, the underlying message such movies deliver—whether by intent or because their makers were duped—is to beg the question that "UFOs" are "extraterrestrial", despite the fact that there is absolutely no known evidence or personal knowledge, verified by any human being, of there being anything made by intelligent

being from beyond our earth. Yet the same Arthur Clarke who in 1956 said saucers "didn't exist", was later involved in these efforts to convince us that they not only existed, but were the exclusive property of "aliens" from outer space. The half-truth and the truth-and-a-half, again.

Every single intelligently formed, fabricated or compounded substance we know of is human-made. The tasks of our government's secret agencies, involved in such movies, are made progressively easier over the years, by the victims (us) already having been duped and brainwashed by the constant, false propaganda drilled into them from the mass media, controlled by BIG BROTHER, for over 50 years. The general public, once known to trust "government experts", has become more skeptical, with their blind trust rapidly waning, realizing that their trust was falsely procured.

A movie like E.T., which may have been intended purely as entertainment, still functionally brainwashes kids before they are mature enough to question our government's actions, motives, or integrity. Realistically-intelligent people, who may never have seen a single flying saucer, usually categorically disbelieve their existence. Oddly enough, many of those same people also disbelieve politicians, and recognize the fact that our government is manipulated by large corporations, in a secret corporate-state partnership. So why shouldn't they realize that the movie and T.V. industries aren't immune? The movie industry has been used extensively as a propaganda medium since its inception. Not all of the propaganda has been false, bad, harmful or evil. But government-backed movies which subliminally brainwash the public into accepting a Platonist epistemology, to make people easier to control, trivializes man's existence, destroys individual autonomy, self-esteem, confidence, and self-determination, and builds false dependency on the government. It also abridges church-state separation, by promoting a religion of "psychic phenomena", pseudo-science, mysticism, "UFOlogy", ignorance, "new age" charlatanism, and blanket acceptance of the existence of extraterrestrials on faith rather than reason.

The fact is, Hitler and his crowd—who originally created these hoaxes—were "new-agers", who were only way ahead of their time. They spread the false propaganda, through a "whispering campaign", that they alone were in contact with alien Venusians, in Peru[2], and that they had been "specially chosen" by the "advanced race of aliens", as the "master race" to lead earthling society. In the meanwhile, the Nazis believed the contradiction that, as the master race, their "orders" were received from an underground race of giants, who controlled the human race from their underground empire, the main entrance into which was in Tibet. Does this scenario significantly differ from the Trilateral Commission/Illuminati/New World Order/UFOlogy versions? And in a certain way, doesn't it bear a remarkable similarity to stories in the Bible, the Torah, and the Talmud, in which the Christian or Jewish people were supposedly chosen by God or Yahweh, while the various alleged racial and 'spiritual' inferiorities of their enemies were enumerated? And, since the particular proportions and design of the swastika used by Hitler and the Nazis, was the "17-square anagram" swastika of the Jewish Kaballah, it appears that Hitler also drew from that source as a basis for his own new religion, at no fault of today's Jews of the world, most of whom we should hope no longer consider non-Jews to be inferior as stated in the Torah and the Talmud.

---

[2]Louis Pauwels & Jacques Bergier, The Morning of the Magicians, Stein and Day/Scarborough House, N.Y. (1977).

The people who make these Secret Government propaganda movies, are usually unaware of their backers' hidden agendas, and are 'motivated at their own levels', by a desire for success and profit. There have been only a few movies, to my knowledge, which have touched upon the truth, and they have been more or less banished to oblivion or presented as ridiculous farces. One was The Formula, starring Marlon Brando, David Huddleston, and George C. Scott. Another starred Hoyt Axton (I don't recall the title, and there is no information available at video stores either. Perhaps it was a made-for-T.V. movie.). It showed cattle mutilations being conducted by government operatives using helicopters and other strange aircraft. Another movie, Rage, starring George C. Scott, also had strong implications, especially in respect to military Masons involved in covering up a government nerve gas "accident".

The Formula involved the technological secret of making gasoline from coal. The technology is known today as "acetylene chemistry", and is available in many chemistry texts. The secret originated in the 1930s with an American, the former director of the Colorado Bureau of Mines, who sought a patent on what was then called the "Parry Retort", a refinery and process which cracked a gasoline-like fraction out of acetylene. (Acetylene, or calcium carbide, was originally produced by burning coal in the presence of crushed limestone.) I have seen a copy of the original patent application. The refinery was similar to gasoline refineries, with numerous 'retorts' or 'cracking towers', to separate out or synthesize various hydrocarbon fractions from the acetylene, using what are today standard catalysts such as platinum black, palladium black, etc. The F.B.I, took over the plant, and barred Parry from entry, use, or sale. The technology then came into the exclusive possession of the Nazis—via the Rockefeller interests—who used it during WW II. The Formula scenario picked it up from there, mentioning its transfer (back) to Gulf Oil Company (a Rockefeller company), along with the flying saucer, during the "amnesty deal" with the Germans at the end of the war, which I am the first to expose.

Parry's daughter, whom I have known for over twenty years, was unfortunately manipulated by the "Friend" who trained "The Two"—the couple involved in perpetrating extraterrestrial hoaxes through the O.S.I.R.I.S. front group created by the "Friend"—and Jacques Vallee, into stealing my photos of the fake alien saucer and the rhesus monkies in G-suits. She was also used by CIA-backed people fraudulently suing me, enabling their fraudulent judgments by theft of my trial exhibits, with the unmistakable complicity of the New Mexico courts. The mental instability of the daughter, who has been incarcerated in sanitariums several times, was exploited by these huxters. She was so eager for gallery contacts for her art work, that she was willing to do almost anything for the "Friend" (a CIA pseudo-art dealer, with bad taste). She caused me to miss a trial in a case filed against me by a member of the CFR/IIA, also having connections to the Chicago "Organization".

I love good movies. Movies which faced the realities of flying saucers as man-made machines, would be more exciting than those we've seen. Imagine sitting in the cockpit of one of those babies, clipping along at 2.5 miles per second, with 360-degree view-screens, fed by image inverters! You stop over the enemy camp (the Trilateralists or Bilderbergers), and zoom in on their most guarded secrets with one of your super magnifying image intensifiers, from an altitude so high that you are entirely invisible from the ground, in broad daylight, and do not appear on radar either. Incidentally, "stealth" technology was first developed for Nazi U-boats and flying saucers. Most

probably, the "striations" I identified on the hull of the saucer I saw in 1953, were for this purpose, since that was the way the technology worked at the time.

A good example of one of the newer, slicker propaganda movies, was Hanger 18 (1980, Taft International Pictures, Inc.; Worldvision Enterprises, Inc.) It was produced by Charles Sellier, Jr., and the cast included Gary Collins, Robt. Vaughn, Joseph Campanella, Darrin McGavin, and James Hampton. These are some of the same actors often appearing in Secret Government pseudo-documentaries or pseudo-expose-type pictures. An opening statement was "...brave eyewitnesses have stepped forward and now the story can finally be told". This hypocritical statement should more appropriately have said "...cowardly liars have stepped forward, and now the Big Lie can finally be told".

There was ample government involvement (use of the air base at Big Spring, Texas, cooperation of NASA, etc.). The plot involved a fictitious satellite explosion, caused by a collision with a "UFO", which was hovering near an orbiting NASA space shuttle dock. One of the several astronaut-witnesses was killed by the explosion (heroes all), also killing the saucer's alien pilot, after which the saucer made an automatic controlled landing in Bannon Co., Arizona (why always the desert?).

Two of the astronauts sought to expose a "government cover-up" conspiracy, and were hunted down by government agents, who killed one of them. In spite of the phony sympathy created for 'those who sought to expose the government's concealment of alien contact', the film took every opportunity to plug NASA and the space program, while creating apprehension by implied death threats against potential witnesses who attempt to tell the real truth. A typical line (Vaughn): "So what you're saying, General, is that we have a flying saucer in our possession?", (as if to say that "we" did not!).

Hanger 18 was supposedly a secret NASA hanger "...within fifty miles of Midland, Texas..." (presumably Big Spring). The plot included the theory that ancient markings on earth, such as those on the Plains of Nasca in Peru, or Totonac writings—based on phony-baloney linguistic comparisons—were the same as those found inside the fictitious UFO. The "Hanger 18" incident was just another government-concocted hoax like the MJ-12 and Roswell hoaxes, only with better technical and conceptual work.

By 1994, my first edition kicked up enough dust to spur a Viacom Pictures, made-for-TV movie, Roswell, starring Kyle McLachlan, Charlie Sheen, Dwight Yoakam, etc., produced by Ilene Kahn, etc., (based on the Kevin Randle and Don Schmitt book, UFO Crash at Roswell). They even had a spooky 'bad guy' exclaim to Kyle McLachlan, "It was just a bunch of rhesus monkies!" (a direct quote from my book, and a front page Albuquerque Journal North newspaper article on me and my book, of Jan. 6, 1994). I find it odd that attribution was not present in the Randles/Schmitt book, which showed the real motive for doing the movie, based on a book which could be bent to government purposes, if it was not initially commissioned by the government, similar to how the "Friend" had tried to commission me to write a book attributing the petroglyphs to extraterrestrials. By 1994, Schmitt and Randle weakly attempted to address the rhesus theory raised by me, without saying who raised it, in their later book, The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell, the title alone of which showed their OSI affiliation, since they have always known there was no "UFO crash at Roswell", but a "fake crash".

Rancher Mac Brazel was depicted as a reluctant 'patriot' during an intimidating 3-day interrogation, while admitting that he took a $3000 payoff to stand behind the

government's second, weather balloon hoax, after he had already helped in the first rhesus monkey hoax. He changed his story, saying the weather balloon debris was there for two weeks before he reported it. This created the suspicion that he was paid off to conceal a real alien crash, and to account for the time between the first hoax and the second hoax. Besides, they would have had to pay him again for a second hoax.

Approximately one week after the Journal North article, as I returned home from Santa Fe at dusk to Lamy, I saw a very large flying saucer (appearing to be at least 100 feet in diameter), hovering within a quarter mile across Apache Canyon (A.K.A., "Galisteo River") to my east, which was putting out a large amount of coronal flame. Though I am not in a habit of photographing every saucer I see, I ran for my camera, because it was a good sighting that my camera could have captured, but before I could get set up, it was gone. It traveled across the Eldorado Subdivision to my north, and moved on a bee-line across the southern periphery of Santa Fe, into the northeasterly end of the Jemez mountains, toward the "technical areas" in the southwest side of the Los Alamos Scientific Laboratories, where the saucers fly quite often. I discussed it with some friends in Eldorado, and they said they saw it and reported it to the Santa Fe County Sheriffs Department, and were told that three other witnesses had already reported it. Friends in Canoncito also confirmed their sighting of the saucer. It was as if the government had placed an obvious and large saucer in the area, just to see if my book or the article had produced any effect on the local population. The saucer sightings have been so prevalent and outrageously obvious in the past, over the Canoncito area, that I would have found them disturbing if I had lived over there, and they have at times been irritating in my own area around eight miles to the east, but I am further from the tip of the southern Sangre de Christos, where the government has chosen to place them so often at night. Presence of lower altitude saucers in this area have noticeably diminished since the book and this news article, even though the public has been brainwashed to 'not see them' anyway.

MY "FRIEND", THE M.I.B.

"M.I.B." is an acronym for "Men In Black", the Secret Government spooks who often show up to harass witnesses. My reference to a so-called "Friend", is to a man who is and was one of them. He also created some of the hoax scenarios for the CIA/OSI, involving pseudo-linguistics, pseudo-archaeology (ala Zechariah Sitchin), as well as the O.S.I.R.I.S. group used to 'smokescreen' the cattle mutilation/stealth weapons test program. This archaeology/linguistics brand of government lie has always angered me, because of the tendency to blur and confuse the work of those who are engaged in responsible linguistic inquiry and archaeology, yet which may be vulnerable because they are divergent and out of the mainstream. The flaky and irresponsible fabrication of 'extraterrestrial' interpretations, tends to put a blight on new breakthrough work being done, as if it were also false. For example, around 1977,1 had begun to make headway with petroglyph research indicating connections between American Indians and specific, ancient Middle Eastern, Indo-European, Semitic, Asian, Norse, and Celtic writings, languages, cultures and peoples, about which I was contemplating a book.

I was astounded when the "Friend" (whom I had known for several years), paid me a visit in 1977, and announced his intent to institute a program attributing the petroglyphs to "ancient space aliens". He was the M.I.B. who had lived in Santa Fe with

and trained the couple of government-paid U.F.O. shamsters known as "The Two" in 1972 (Marshall Herff Applewhite and Bonnie Lu Nettles). He later exploited the mentally disturbed daughter of the inventor of The Formula. I realized at that time, that his fraudulent work was being sponsored by the intelligence community, for whom he had worked for years, and continued to do 'contract work' for.

I noticed that, in my presence, he wore a Shriner ring. This was to gain my trust—or better still, to shut me up—on the erroneous assumption that, since CIA files showed I came from a "Masonic family", I would feel compelled to "keep the secrets". This, in spite of the fact that he was a graduate of a Catholic school (U. of Denver). One of the primary tenets of the Masonic Oath is never to betray a trust. To me, it wasn't my trust he sought, but rather my complicity in a secret betrayal of the trust of the American people. Even if I had been a Mason, which I am not, gaining my trust through such a fraud would have nullified the oath. He erroneously thought that he was 'motivating me at my own level.'

It angers me that the intelligence spooks exploit entire fields of knowledge and professions, sacrificing them to government 'expediency', by generating knowingly false programs designed to conceal technology from the public and to brainwash them in BIG LIE mass-psychology programs ala Hitler. These programs are to subliminally control people by propagating fantastic, ignorant and twisted lies which elevate insane and irrational elements of society, at the expense of knowledge, reason, and truth. It astounded me that the '"Friend" could hypocritically look me straight in the eye, while my life was all the while being cruelly torn apart by their covert harassment. It occurred to me that a committee had worked this all out on paper somewhere, and that individual rights and human life didn't matter to them, so long as they fabricated the 'right' interpretations of things which helped them to control society.

While in graduate school in art at U.T., I was appalled to learn that the fields of art and art history were cynically considered 'expendable' to the CIA people, who referred to artists as "...just a bunch of paranoids...". They had permeated both the faculty and the student body of the university art department. To them, the "cover" of artists and art historians were ideally suited for deceitful, intelligence-gathering foreign travel, photographing strategic defense areas, picking up and delivering data, acting as couriers, etc., and little else. It was my judgment that the people who do that are no better than the closet homosexuals who marry in order to present a false image of themselves to society as being heterosexuals. There were no less than six CIA professionals on the art faculty at U.T. in 1969, and several CIA and military intelligence operatives posing as art students. I wondered how many operatives they had in other departments of the university. Those who posed as students seemed to be spies on the students and the faculty. Since the Viet Nam war was in full swing, 'draft counselors' seemed to be among their prime targets, but I suppose that any excuse could have served as a pretext to continually meddle with and control what would otherwise have been a natural, and more just flow of the affairs in a supposedly "educational" institution.

In the fall of 1977, the Friend made the trip to my home for the specific purpose of dissuading me from publishing this book, and had the gall to lay out the phony hypothesis for HIS book, which he expected me to write. At that time, he had apparently become disturbed not only by my plans for a flying saucer book, but because I had also begun to branch off into petroglyph research, which threatened to interfere with his official Big Lie plan to interpret the petroglyphs as the "writings of extraterrestrials".

He had apparently dreamed up the alien petroglyph hoax, and enticed me with a lucrative CIA contract, to draw me away from my saucer book, thinking that, once I had collaborated in the false "alien archaeology" lies, I would be "hooked", to be compelled by my published change in position, to fit in with the "alien saucers" lies. This opportunity to prostitute my intellect for cash, included the guarantee that the publishing contacts were already set up and ready to go, in Sedona, Arizona.

I hit the ceiling, saying that I had personal knowledge that flying saucers are man-made, that the government's program of spreading the gospel of E.S.P., Edgar Cayce, and extraterrestrial origin of flying saucers, was a Big Lie originating with the Nazis, and that I would never cooperate in the spreading of such trash. I told him of my broad-daylight sighting, that my parents were present among more than seven witnesses, and that they had often seen whole squadrons of saucers in the Dakotas. This information on my parent's sightings turned out to be a serious mistake, as I underestimated the extremes to which the CIA would go to suppress witnesses. Besides, why argue with someone who already knew the truth, and only wanted me to join into the lies to conceal it for fun and profit?

He then attempted to intimidate me, and even threatened me, recounting some of the bad things which had happened to some of those who had refused to cooperate, or had "gone too far" (presumably by doing such things as revealing the secret manipulations I am telling you about in this book).

A couple of weeks later, I was visited by my father, who was on his way from the Scottsdale, Arizona, merchandise mart, to Thornton, Colorado, where he and my mother then lived. They ran a lucrative market-building business in womens' sportswear, providing representation for six Dallas manufacturers and a couple of west coast labels, in around seven or eight states. My father was a member of the Board of Directors of the Dallas manufacturers' association, my parents maintained showrooms in Dallas and Denver, and they had built the markets in Nevada, North and South Dakota, Wyoming, Colorado, Utah, Arizona, New Mexico, and parts of Texas. For ten years, they traveled over 100,000 miles per year, in the "flying saucer states". It was the only visit I can remember in which my father came alone, without my mother.

After visiting with my father for a half hour or so, he brought up flying saucers, and to my surprise, urged me to stop telling what I knew about them. Since this was only a few days after the Friend had threatened me, I assumed that my father's visit was somehow connected, another attempt by the CIA to "shut me up". To my dismay, my father then denied ever having seen flying saucers, despite the many times that he and my mother had told me about seeing whole squadrons of them over such areas as North and South Dakota, and the mountainous country near Cheyenne Mountain, Colorado, deep beneath which is the underground N.O.R.A.D. Command Center.

This behavior was very unusual, and I wondered how the Friend had manipulated my father's conduct, speculating that he may have exploited the "Masonic connection", since I had seen a Shriner's ring on his finger. My father is a 32nd degree Mason, and my mother is a highly-esteemed member of the Order of the Eastern Star (the female Masons). For what it's worth, I had been a charter member and officer of the Winkler County chapter of the Order of De Molay (junior Masons) when I was a boy, but never considered becoming a Mason because I am an Atheist, since I knew that initiates were required to swear a belief in "Almighty God". As I said earlier, the Shriner's ring was evidently one of his CIA cons, an attempt to represent what he thought would 'motivate

me (and my parents) at my own level.' The 'con' had apparently worked on my parents, who are Masons, but not me.

As for suggestions of a connection between Fascism and Masonry, it seemed improbable, at least among the American Masons and a few northern European Masons I have personally known, though there was some rather compelling evidence unearthed in Italy, in the "P-2 Lodge Controversy", about which I will have more to say later.

My uncle Roger Benton had been a 33rd degree Mason, in the original First Grand Lodge of Texas, at Nacogdoches, founded by Stephen F. Austin and Sam Houston, and was a Shriner (the military Masons), and I knew that he would have nothing to do with an evil plan to subvert the constitutional authority of America, or to subjugate any race. Roger had driven an L.S.T. in almost every major invasion in the South Pacific, and had been the world's first radar gunner on the Navy's "Black Widow", in its record-breaking mission over Tokyo, and had proven that he was prepared to make the supreme sacrifice to stop Fascism, fighting bravely for the freedom of the Phillipinos and others. If the Illuminati Fascists worked within the American Masonic Orders, he apparently knew nothing of it, since he was anti-Fascist, and simply not the kind of man to tolerate such an attitude within himself or among his associates.

I wondered how my father had been persuaded or scared into lying, since he is highly opinionated and stubborn, painfully truthful, and unlikely to change his mind because of what someone else wanted. It was indeed uncharacteristic behavior on his part, which was inexplicable except by the application of extraordinary pressure, subterfuge, or threats. In dismay, I accused him of cowardice in the face of government intimidation—the kind of feudal extortion that good Masons are supposed to resist—for whatever reason unknown to me at the time. Because of that incident, my father and I didn't speak for over five years. I finally forgave him, since he is an elder person. How could I expect him to stand up to these creeps? Who knew what kind of threats or powers were invoked by the "Friend", to coerce my father?

The next evening, in the late fall of 1977, in a local coffee shop, I was invited by a well-known Santa Fe art dealer I knew, to join he and his friends. I brought up the subject of flying saucers, having in mind the "Friend", whom we both knew. The dealer had just returned from the Scottsdale market. When I mentioned my father's recent visit there, he said that he had met him, and said that they had seen him talking privately to the "Friend" in Scottsdale, only two days earlier, thus confirming contact between the "Friend" and my father. The secrecy made the following facts apparent: My "Friend" never mentioned knowing my father, and vice-versa. My father (and mother as well) had been intimidated and coerced by the "Friend", to stop corroborating my sightings, and to cooperate with his attempts to shut me up. My father had been forbidden to tell me about the extortion, proven by their behavior and the secret contact.

Having independently discovered the fact that the "Friend"—named James ("Jim") Parsons, who really isn't my friend—had threatened my father, I discussed it with a girlfriend, who inadvertently relayed it to Jim, whom she also knew. I had failed to warn her not to discuss the matter with the Jim, which I didn't expect to happen anyway, but it did. Within two weeks, the Dallas manufacturers, without warning or authority, 'fired' my parents, who had built their markets for ten years. Since my girlfriend had inadvertently told Jim that I knew of his threats, he incorrectly assumed that my father had disobeyed him and told me about them, so he arranged for them to be fired, in attempt to 'get to me'.

With a ring of poetic justice, the manufacturers lost millions of dollars, due to the loyalty of some of my parents' purchasers in their territory. As I learned from one of their associates, an older man who also marketed ready-to-wear, Mafia Don, Joseph ("Papa Joe") Bonanno—who, believe it or not, ran a womens' sportswear shop in Tucson—smelled the federal rat, and organized a boycott. The other shops in my parents' territory, boycotted the manufacturers, as a protest against this injustice, and their market generally broke down. Poetic justice sometimes comes in strange ways, from unexpected quarters. I have always wondered if the government ever fully compensated Louis and his Dallas associates for their losses, or whether they ever knew why they occurred. If not, the M.I.B.s made suckers out of them too. I have often wondered how much it was worth to the government.

I published the following material in my 1993 and 1995 first and second editions, years before the Heaven's Gate cult's suicide at Rancho Santa Fe, California, in March, 1997. Years earlier, I had learned from another girl friend—whose name shall remain anonymous—that Jim had intensively trained "The Two" in late 1972 and early 1973, for three months, in a house the threesome shared in Santa Fe. The 1997 mass suicides highlighted Jim's mysterious CIA training of Marshall Herff Applewhite and Bonnie Lu Trusdale Nettles—"The Two"—who had immediately founded "HIM" ("Human Individual Metamorphosis"), and several other cult CIA front groups, following Jim's training. I had known since early 1973 that the cult was connected to the CIA, the primary purpose being the concealment of government saucer and cattle mutilations activities. Jim's subsequent cover-up of his associations with the cult leaders in articles published in area newspapers, showed his desire to conceal the CIA's involvement.
"Never run 'til you know you're being chased," they say.....

Beginning in the '70s, investigative reporters wrote exposes on The Two, documenting their pattern of infiltrating communities—pretending to be previously unassociated transients—then becoming 'associated', after which the members would become 'followers', to be 'convinced' that they were descendants of an 'extraterrestrial race', and that it was "time for a flying saucer to come from outer space to pick them up" at a designated time and place, and take them back to their 'home planet'. After spreading word of this around the community—for maximum propaganda impact—the group would meet on the appointed evening, drive to a certain hill or other landmark, park their cars, then mysteriously 'disappear', leaving their cars behind.

The media coverage was orchestrated concerning the strange 'disappearances', along with the usual paranormal and UFO magazines. The abandoned cars, which were indispensable for the sham, were hauled away to local public pounds. The remaining members of the community, and the media's interviews of them, were relied upon to spread word of the mysterious 'departures'.

This worked pretty good, until some smart investigative reporters trailed the members, took down their license plate numbers and auto makes, etc., at several hoax sites, and did some comparisons. It turned out that the same "Two", and the same "followers", driving the same autos, were repeating the same scenario all over the western U.S. The incidents showed the compliance of local police and authorities, by first impounding, then releasing the cars, to the 'disappeared' owners, to be used again, with no reports by public officials correcting this in the public media or police reports.

Jim had studied law at the University of Denver School of Law, prior to entering the Air Force, serving in Air Force Intelligence (the O.S.I.), from which he had retired at

the rank of colonel, after which he had taken up "civilian" employment with the O.S.I., apparently continuing to do 'contract work', recruiting and training huxters, and designing hoax scenarios, to convince dupes that flying saucers are from "outer space". The following facsimile clipping completed the connection (emphasis mine):

Calf death, UFO group tied

LAKE VILLA, ILL. (UPI) - Two calves found mutilated at a farm in this rural area northwest of Chicago may have been killed and butchered by would-be voyagers to another planet, according to police.

At meetings in Waldport, Ore., and elsewhere in the Pacific Northwest, **a woman know as "Her" and a "holloweyed" man known only as "Him" reportedly enlisted followers for a UFO trip.**

Friends and relatives of missing persons reported to have joined the band have expressed concern about their whereabouts and well-being.

A band of 50 to 70 persons who may have been followers of the mysterious couple camped at Chain O'Lakes State Park about 10 miles from here early this month, using the park as a staging point for their planned UFO journey to another world. **The campers' cars bore license plates from Oregon, Washington, Colorado, Texas, Arizona and one Canadian province.**

License plate numbers on three of the cars were reported to have matched those of cars that disappeared with 23 persons from Oregon after a meeting with the couple at Waldport.

A woman appeared to be in charge of the group, some sources reported.

The calves were slaughtered about the same time the group was at the park.

The first slaughtered calf was discovered Oct. 1. Only the calf's head and internal organs remained and police said the head was so neatly severed that no blood could be found anywhere around the remains.

"It seems like someone was looking for something to eat," Lake Villa Police Sgt. Raymond H. Engel said.

The carcass of the second calf, found Oct. 5 about 1,000 yards from where the first was slaughtered, was virtually intact. Only the calf's left ear was missing. It had been cut off, Engel said, and could not be found.

Some believers in UFO's have said aliens cut off animal organs in order to take them back to their own planet and study them.

Engel said there was no evidence as to who killed the calves or why.

The campers believed members of the UFO cult began arriving at Chain O'Lakes State Park Oct. 1 or 2, with others arriving Oct. 4, according to State Forest Ranger Mick Egan. All appeared to be financially pressed---even to borrowing a nickel from a gateman to help pay a camping fee. They repaid the nickel.

Egan said members of the group "were clean and neat and very well behaved."

He said the group held a quiet meeting on Oct. 6 and **left Oct. 7 after newspapers in the area published reports about the mysterious UFO group.**

Although the group apparently left the area and there has been no trace of them in the Midwest, authorities told the 1,000 residents of Lake Villa to report "any strange goings-on."

Another girl friend, who had known both Jim and The Two, had said in early 1973 that the couple had been "...recruited and paid by Jim for some kind of training", during the three months in which they had shared a house in Santa Fe in late 1972. All our friends thought that it was mysterious, since the training was so secretive. At first we thought it might be some sort of kinky sex cult, but everything was clarified later when the couple was identified in 1973 news articles as the leaders of HIM, and later, in 1987, as the leaders of the O.S.I.R.I.S. ("Outer Space International Research and Investigations Society") hoax.

Having known about Jim's training of the couple in 1972, prior to their hoaxes, the purpose of the hoax was clear to me, especially in view of the various inducements, coercions and subterfuges specifically regarded UFOs and "aliens", which were applied to me and my parents in 1977, by Jim, the O.S.I./ M.I.B. who had instigated it, to shut me up about flying saucers or to coerce me into writing propaganda for the CIA. After all, it would have been clear to even an idiot that Jim was doing all in his power in 1977 to force me and others to propagate lies about "aliens".

When I encountered Jim at the "50th Anniversary of the Roswell Incident", in July, 1997, he was extremely nervous about my presence, afraid I'd blow his cover.

When the news hit the papers in late March, 1997, about the "mass suicide" of the "Heaven's Gate Cult", I figured that the CIA had decided it was time to 'close out' the 24-year-old operation, which hadn't been very productive of significant, new propaganda for years. This was especially so where I had already identified it for the public as a CIA front in my 1993 book. With its members aging, their activities slowing down, they were beginning to look more like a geriatric care group, so what else was to be done with them, since they had been 'programmed' for years and were dependent on the group. The CIA, couldn't have these 'loose cannons' rolling around on the deck, so they were heartlessly 'put to sleep' like tired old dogs who were no longer of any use to their CIA mind-control masters.

With the mass deaths, Jim was nervous. Just as articles he had written for the Santa Fe Reporter in 1975 had lied about his earlier connection to the HIM cult and The Two, the articles he wrote in 1997—four years after my first edition—just after the horrible news of the cult's 'suicides', was intended to conceal the guilty knowledge of a nervous CIA propagandist, concerning the many deaths which he had contributed to as the creator or the cult. In an article by Jim in the Albuquerque Journal, of Sunday, April 6, 1997, entitled "Man Tells of Friend Joining Heaven's Gate" - "Santa Fean Saw Cult Lure Friend", Jim said "One day in 1975, I encountered a group called Human Individual Metamorphosis, and showed Gordon a flier for a public lecture the next Saturday." Thus Jim had "showed Gordon" a flier and begun to 'recruit' Gordon Welch, his roomate, in 1975, into the cult Jim had created, and which was eventually the end of Gordon. Of course he didn't tell Gordon or the newspapers that he had created the cult. It was clear from Gordon's letters to Jim that he was a complete dupe, unaware of the fact that Jim and the CIA were behind the cult, and that, to them, he was just a piece of animated meat they had chosen because of his innocent gullibility, who had been programmed to act out stupid fantasies to conceal flying saucer technology, as well as to provide more propaganda mileage for the CIA, to feed the demented minds of whatever suckers were out there.

In one of Gordon's letters to Jim, he stated, "I hope I am in the final stage of this thing. I still believe it is true but it is very hard and demanding as we learn to go to a world where you live a large part of your time on spaceships and communicate by projecting thoughts. Have to work on getting all thoughts pure and good and honest and direct. That's a tall order."

At one point in the article, Jim described how he had gone with Gordon to Albuquerque to attend a HIM meeting, and a 'reading'. Jim gives us his thoughts: "Driving back to Santa Fe, I pondered this reading and decided to reverse my skeptical attitude about flying saucers and HIM." At the head of the article, it was stated, "Authorities say one of the victims from last month's mass suicide in Rancho Santa Fe, Calif, was identified as a Gordon Welch."

I have to laugh about Jim deciding to "..reverse" his "skeptical attitude" about flying saucers and the cult activities HE created. Since I met him in 1972 he had always had this inflexible attitude, especially in the presence of impressionable new-age types.

The O.S.I.R.I.S. front group activities are shown through the eyes of another dupe, by the following Albuquerque Journal facsimile clipping (emphasis mine):

Believer in UFOs Says He Met Space Being

BERNALILLO - Ray Keller believes in extraterrestrials because he met one.

In the summer of 1987 Keller and members of the Utah chapter of **Outer Space International Research and Investigations Society** were on a pilgrimage to Mount Shasta.

He said they chose the site because of the many reported sightings of unidentified flying objects in the area. **One legend says the mountain is hollow, a super-garage for spaceships or a temple for space visitors.**

While he and the others were hiking beyond the tree line, a woman appeared as they rounded a boulder near the peak.

"She was a lady with red hair about 5 foot, 6 inches and she was wearing a white jumpsuit for want of a better word," Keller said.

"It's bare up there. There were no trees that she could have been hiding behind," he said.

He said the other pilgrims identified themselves as part of a UFO group and the woman said, "I know why you're here."

Although he didn't want to elaborate on what the woman said, she talked to them for about two hours and let them take her picture.

As the group was leaving and turned to wave good-bye, the woman disappeared, he said.

Keller, 34, who works for the Head Start program in Bernalillo, said he sighted his first UFO at 13 while he and other Boy Scouts were on a camping trip in Ohio.

Keller said he believes that his experience is not unique. **On Sunday at 2 p.m. at Bernalillo Town Hall he will talk about reported sightings in New Mexico.**

Ray Keller, quoted on the previous page, a member of O.S.I.R.I.S.—another CIA front created by Jim—worked in early childhood development, and was involved in the Boy Scouts, a perfect sucker. The CIA/OSI front group he belonged to was named for a deity of the ancient Egyptian religion, "Osiris...the Beautiful Hare"[3]. Though the name for the god "Osiris" was derived from a folk mythical hare (the Easter Bunny), as shown by references noted in 1886 by Budge in Egyptian Book of the Dead, they remained unnoticed until my 1993 first edition. I had already derived this fact from independent research in etymology, in which Osiris, as a hare ("Heru-"), was associated with Isis, a duck or goose ("Khuti"), who gave birth to Horus ("Heru-Khuti"), from the earliest times in western Siberia, in the mythology of the Uralo-Altaic-speaking peoples.

The naming of the UFO 'research' group—run by a CIA/OSI counterintelligence team—after Osiris, shows the earmarks of the former SS RSHA Gestapo spooks who formed the core of the CIA's Office of Scientific Intelligence, Science Directorate, Covert Operations (flying saucer cover-up teams). Movies from '20s and '30s Germany show parades of 'pre-Nazi', Thule Society-sponsored 'new-agers', in ancient Sumerian and Egyptian costumes, holding ceremonious pagents, propagating the mythology of Ostara, the Nazi religion created by a Cistenian monk, Adolf Joseph Lanz, founder of the Order of the New Temple in 1900. That same year, at Lambach Abbey in Upper Austria, Lanz initiated the boy, Hitler, into this religion. He then left the order, and under the alias Georg Lanz von Liebenfels, began publishing the Hyperborean and anti-Semitic periodical, Ostara, in 1905.[4] The Ostara religion, as the basis for the Thule gesellschaft, was one and the same as the new religion which I mentioned as being 'revised' for American dissemination, using von Liebenfel's manuscripts, by Charles Hundley[5], as Astara, to be led by the Cheneys. This group is now known as The Ashtar Command, and is also the basis for the script for the TV series, Stargate. It is also the basis for the writings of Zechariah Sitchin, regarding the alleged extraterrestrial origin of the Sumerians, the same kind of stuff which Jim tried to hire me to write in 1977.

The Egyptian esoterica ("O.S.I.R.I.S.", etc.) was used by the CIA to imply involvement of an occult group, or a group of 'extraterrestrials' who practice or originated that religion. This fits in with other parts of the 'puzzle', by saying that the ancient Egyptians were extraterrestrials. The O.S.I, group known as O.S.I.R.I.S., specializes in appearing at the sites of cattle mutilations, to suggest that the mutilations are occult-related, and to falsely absolve the Secret Government, according to the "Puzzle Palace" tradecraft. We are expected to investigate and to 'discover' that occult groups, practicing the Egyptian religion, are holding "golden cup" ceremonies.

The Nazi influence in our society exists in many forms, often unrecognizable even by people who should know better, often due to the concealment of the actual nature of the Nazi phenomenon, perhaps through the influence of people like Reinhard Heydrich and Heinrich Mueller of the CIA. In the following news item, there was less room for doubt. New Mexico State Policeman Leonard Frietze, shows his admiration for the "Guru" (which in German, is "Fuehrer", referring to Hitler):

---

[3]E. W. Budge, Egyptian Book of the Dead, Introduction, p. cxxii (Un-nefer defined as "The Beautiful Hare"; p. 254,-Un-nefer interpreted as "Beautiful Hare" [citing Proc. Soc. Bib]. Arch. 1886].

[4]Jean-Michel Angebert, The Occult and the ThirdReich [Chap. 11, Catharism and Hitlerism].

[5]Discussions between the author and Charles Hundley (the CIA/ONI co-designer of Project Bluebook), Columbus, Ohio, 1958-59.

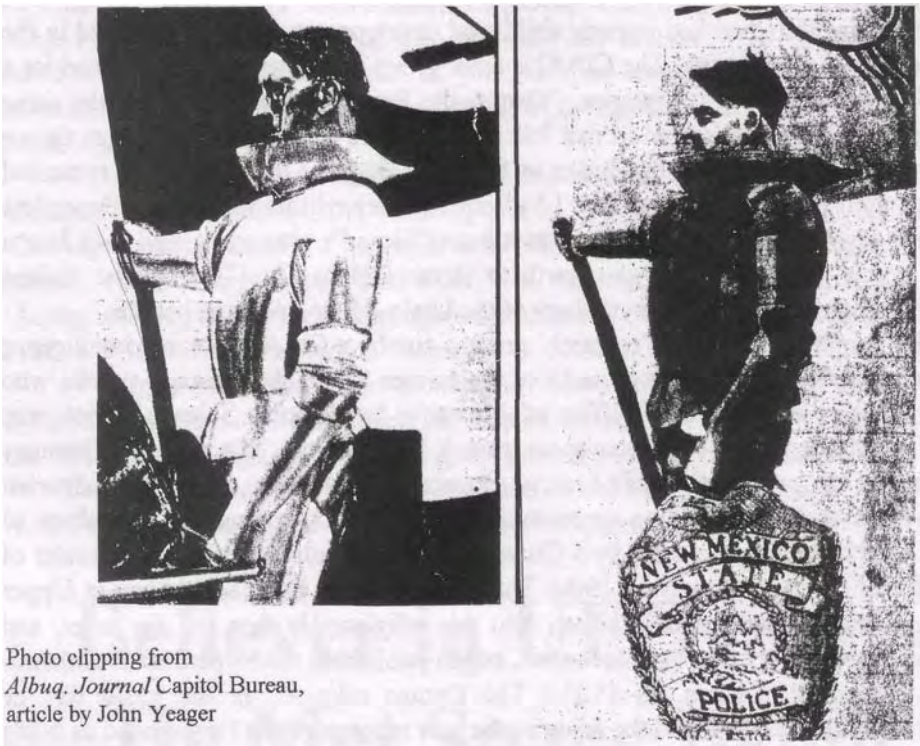


Photo clipping from
Albuq. Journal Capitol Bureau,
article by John Yeager

The Order of the New Temple which Joseph Lanz set up in 1900 was inspired by the Templars, with Lanz as the Grand Master, as a successor to Jacques de Molay.[6] The original painting of Hitler as a Knight, in Templar regalia, clearly referred to the Nazi neo-Templar tradition. The New Mexico State Police "Knight" on horseback—copied from the Hitler painting—searches for the "Holy Grail" (the "Golden Cup"), which is the Nazi double symbol of "pure blood" and "knowledge". This neo-Templar theme, a fundamental tenet of Nazi SS novices, in their training under Heinrich Himmler at Wewelsburg Castle, seems to have surfaced again in America.

A White Sands Missile Range Army Security document, placed in the mailboxes of teachers at the White Sands Missile Range School, where I taught in 1970-71—to 'warn' us about the awesome evils of "atheism" and the "peace sign"—was evidence of the kind of "knowledge" to which the Nazi/Christian/Templar "golden cup"/"Holy Grail" myth refers. Disturbing as it may seem, the connection between Fascism, God, the De Molays (junior Masons), and the national security establishment, was obviated by the 1971 document, which contained quite a number of errors and inaccuracies. The document demonized Atheists, even though Atheism is a religious preference protected by the US. constitution and Bill of Rights, which means the security people don't respect our American freedoms, and appear to have something else in mind. Note following words, "De Molay", "Christianity", and "Atheism", in the text of the White Sands Security Bulletin, Security Office, Intelligence Division, dated 19 Apr., 1971, which quotes directly from the New Mexico DeMolay News, as follows (emphasis mine):

---

[6]Jean-Michel Angebert (Supra) Chapter 11.

"With the permission of the DeMolay Association of New Mexico, the following article was excerpted from their January-February DeMolay News, Vol. 6—No. 1.

This illustration most of you will recognize as the 'Peace Symbol.' It is a popular emblem with protestors, draft card burners and flower children. Furthermore, it has become a popular fad with unsuspecting youth to embroider it on their clothes and paint it on their cars.

Peace symbol? Hardly. Nor is it a product of today's youth. The symbol is an ancient one, but it has never been associated with peace. It is actually one of the Satanic symbols known as the broken cross or the 'crucified cross.' In short, it is one of the marks of the Anti-Christ, the sign of Satan. During the Middle Ages, it was known as the 'Witch's Foot.'

Look closely and you will readily see why it was adopted as the subtle sign of those opposed to Christianity------ it is a broken cross turned up-side down.

One of the nation's most sophisticated magazines, the NEW YORKER, said in a recent article that the so-called "Peace Symbol" was adopted by various 'youth organizations' on direct orders from the Communist Party. It is part of their long range propaganda campaign to attract youth into subversive Communist-directed programs. They seek to encourage young people to express contempt for adults, for authority, and for the ideals of patriotic Americans.

Be sure of one thing, the Communists are gleeful when they see this mark of atheism worn by Americans, whether knowingly or unsuspectingly.

PEACE SYMBOL???
FOR THE COMMANDER (signature)
VINCENT B. COTE
LTC, MPC
Chief, Security Office
DISTRIBUTION: (1/70)
D except D-50 (1,000); F;
AMSEL - bl (12)
AMSTE -SE- (2)"

The document had a quaint naivete to it, as well as some basic theological ignorance. If the peace sign was a mark of "Satan", how could it be "Atheistic"? Wasn't Satan supposed to be a 'fallen angel'? An Atheist doesn't believe in such mythology, so there could hardly be a connection between the peace sign and Atheism, even if it were a Satanic symbol. Satan is supposed to be an enemy of his father, God. How could he disbelieve his father existed? An Atheist can't be an "enemy" of God, because to an Atheist, God doesn't exist, and you can't be an enemy of something which doesn't exist. Immediately following this oxymoronic "Army Intelligence" blunder, an article appeared in Navy Times, which gave a more "knowledgeable" history of the iconography of the "peace sign" than the one written by Army intelligence Fascists at White Sands, who wanted to equate the peace sign with "Satan's little plan". Navy scholars related the peace symbol to the semaphore alphabet, as a combination of the two diagonals ("N"), and a vertical line ("D"). It was first used by a London group called Direct Action Committee Against Nuclear War during the 1958 Easter March at Aldermastoh. A facsimile of the NavyTimes clipping follows:

Peace symbol originated from semaphore alphabet

THE NAVY TIMES, in its April issue, claims the world famous peace symbol is an old Navy signal.

Despite the number of fables which have spring up concerning the controversial symbol, the Navy says the symbol's origin is really the common semaphore alphabet used by the world's navies.

The signal for "N" and for "D", when used together, stand for Nuclear Disarmament. They are superimposed on a circle to make up the peace symbol.

It was first used by a London group called Direct Action Committee Against Nuclear War during the 1958 Easter march at Aldermastoh. The lore that has since grown around the symbol includes the claim that the circle can represent an unborn child, a human in despair, or a broken cross.

Judging from the Nazis' involvement with Masonic teachings regarding Solomon's temple, the Tower of Babel before that, and to their eclectic infatuation with related esoteric material—as indicated by the triangular Illuminati symbol for the "p2" project run by von Braun in 1937 New Mexico—it is only natural that there was a Nazi-Masonic connection, and a Masonic-White Sands Missile Range Security connection, along with Masonic connections to many other covert government operations as well. The von Stauffenberg conspiracy to assassinate Hitler, for example, was an attempted coup d'etat by aristocratic Prussian Masons, to install Field Marshall Erwin Rommel as the new Fuehrer. Hitler may have been the dictator of Germany at the time, but he was not Germany itself, and the Masonic plot was intended to get rid of Hitler, and create a new government which could join with America and England to stop the Soviets. Just as the White Sands Security Bulletin disclosed information relating to Masonic influence in the group which ran the Army security operation at White Sands,

the Masonic scandal in Italy involved an attempted neo-Fascist coup d'etat, by members of a clandestine "P-2" Lodge, a lodge with a coded name which meant "Propaganda-Due" ("Propaganda-Two"), which referred to the dualistic nature of a covert, Masonic government which uses "dual propaganda" to control the public, similar to the "Siamese Twin Big Lie System" I have detailed, and the Hermetic principle.

The following facsimile clipping relates to the Masonic scandal in Italy involving the attempted neo-fascist coup d'etat:

Italian official quits in scandal over Masonic Lodge

ROME (AP) - Justice Minister Adolfo Sarti resigned today after his name was linked to a Masonic lodge that prosecutors are investigating as a possible "criminal association."

The widening lodge scandal has led to the arrest of a former colonel in the Italian secret service and threatened Premier Arnaldo Forlani's 7-month-old coalition government.

Italian newspapers and magazines have alleged that the so-called "P2" lodge was involved in a variety of illegal activities ranging from bribery and tax evasion in the oil industry to a far-reaching plot to set up an authoritarian regime in Italy.

The names of top politicians, businessmen, publishers, diplomats and military officers were on a list of 953 lodge members Forlani released to the press two days ago under pressure from Parliament. Two cabinet members were on the list: Minister of Foreign Commerce Enrico Manca, a Socialist, and Labor Minister Franco Foschi, a Christian Democrat.

Sarti, who has helped direct Italy's battle against terrorism, was not named, but documents found in the home of the lodge's grand master reportedly say he was a candidate for membership.

Sarti, in a letter to Forlani, denied he had attempted to join the lodge, but said he was forced to leave the government because his name had been tainted in a "slanderous campaign." His resignation was announced after a 15-minute meeting with Forlani, a fellow Christian Democrat.

The Italian constitution prohibits secret associations, and if the P2 lodge were in fact secret, membership in it would be outlawed.

On Friday, Milan prosecutor Pierluigi Dell'Osso issued an arrest warrant for Grand Master Liceo Gelli on charges of political espionage and the procuring of information on state security. Gelli is listed as a fugitive outside Italy.

Antonio Viezzer, a former section chief of the Italian secret service, was arrested Friday on political espionage charges.

A parliamentary committee investigating the case has said it suspects the lodge helped stage the phony kidnaping of Italian financier Michele Sindona in 1979.

(NOTE: A synopsis of the above clipping is that the Italian "P2" Masonic Lodge involved over 953 well known Masonic businessmen, publishers, both the Christian Democrat and Socialist parties, the Italian Secret Service, and the Labor Ministry, in an oil industry scheme to set up an official corporate-state fascist regime like that of Mussolini.)

Admission into Masonry requires a belief in "Almighty God", which comes as a surprise when considered in light of esoteric mythological information, related to the origins and meanings of the myths of "The Holy Grail", "Lucifer", and "Jesus". The word "grail" ("Graal") comes from the language of the ancient Albigensians (Al + bur + gen + si + ans = "El-Barrow-Born-Sun-People"), in which "Gorr-" + "-aal" means

"Holy Stone of El" ("El" being Saturn ["Sa-" + "-turn" = "Sun-Hare", meaning Osiris] or Lucifer ["Luci-" + "-fer" = "Light-Hare"], or Satan ["Sa-" + "-tan" = "Sun-Dawn"]).

As the myth goes, when Lucifer—also known as the "Morning Star"—fell from heaven, a sacred green emerald (the "sacred stone of El") fell from his crown. This was the "Holy Grail". From it was supposedly carved a cup known as "The Holy Grail", which was searched for by the Nazis[7] in the vicinity of the ancient Pyrenees stronghold of the Albigensians, whom they regarded as their "ancient Aryan spiritual forebears". The Albigensians were burned at the stake (the "Pyre", hence "Pyrenees"), 700 years earlier, by the Catholic church. The Nazi Ahnenerbe defined its mission as being to avenge the ancient wrongs done to the Hyperborean ("O-phir-bore-an", or "East-Port-Barrow-People") Cathars ("Ca-" + "-thars" = "Quay-Hares").

The Christian religion was designed by Josephus[8] (A.K.A., General Arius Calpurnius Piso), on behalf of the ruling Roman elite—who were Hermeticists—to replace the old Arrian (Aryan) religion, in which Osiris was the main god. Jesus was created literally as a replacement for Lucifer, to become the "Messiah" for the 'new' religion for the "Age of Pisces". Since the (five-pointed) morning star (Venus) which was the symbol for Osiris (Lucifer), was also to be the symbol for Jesus, Josephus made Jesus to be called, "the bright and morning star"[9]. That means the Christians worship Lucifer, disguised as Jesus. That Lucifer really is a deceiver!

It became apparent to me that only the government could have financed and run such an operation, and that only they had the motive to do so. Only the corporate-state O.S.I. conspirators had almost unlimited funds and financial motivation to invest in such an endeavor. It was indeed astounding that an O.S.I. agent whom I had known for years, had confirmed his connection to the Secret Government, and attempting to recruit and employ me in the fabrication of tacky CIA "alien" trash, to hoodwink the American people, by concealing the advanced technology on behalf of the IllumiNazis. Maybe the cult was financed by the dope smuggling, minus a fat salary for Jim.

Our government creates and promotes hoaxes, backs fake propaganda movies and T.V. specials, and harasses anyone who threatens to expose them, more to conceal energy secrets, rather than to protect aeronautical or weapons technology. This is especially directed at anyone engaged in research or inventing within the field of "free energy" or "perpetual motion". If anyone categorically doubts the feasibility of perpetual motion devices, I would like to introduce you to my real friend, the Universe, which, like an atom with its perpetually orbiting electrons (as a rule and not an exception), is a perpetual motion machine. Nobody created it, nobody can destroy it or make it disappear, nobody can stop it from working, and nobody can show any 'external' source of energy which runs it. It has no "gas tank", no beginning or end, and will never die. It is too big to have been "created", and if it were finite, what would it look like on the outside? The S.E.C. cannot prosecute the Universe "out of business". Scientists who are incapable of conceiving of the infmiteness of the Universe, and can only conceive it with a "beginning and an end"—like Rebecca of Sunnybrook Farm—are inferior and limited thinkers who shouldn't even be in the field of science.

---

[7]Jean -Michel Angebert, The Occult and the Third Reich, McGraw-Hill Book Company.

[8]Abelard Reuchlin, The True Authorship of the New Testament, Abelard Reuchlin Foundation, Kent, WA98064.

[9]New Testament, Revelations 22:16.

"UFO" groups—actually O.S.I, counterintelligence teams—falsely create the illusion that occult groups are responsible for cattle mutilations—by coordinating their activities with the inadvertent reports of saucer sightings and the discovery of mutilated cattle by the public. Meanwhile, the government also disseminates other false propaganda through "official sources" like the Santa Fe District Attorney's office, such as through the federally-funded $50,000.00 grant for a phony "investigation" conducted by former F.B.I. agent, Ken Rommel, in which the government investigated itself. The purpose of this "investigation" was to feed propaganda to the pseudo-skeptical "Official Government", Philip Klass/CSICOP side of the phony debate, to protract the misinformation through continued confusion and false conflict.

We the People—supposedly the damned 'bosses'—are "not yet ready for the technology" (the ostensible excuse for the over 50 years continued secrecy, proffered at NSA/military/O.S.I./Air Force oversight intelligence committee levels). But what about the bankers and corporate IllumiNazis who in reality determine national—and international—security policy? Isn't it they who are "not yet ready for the technology"? Is this the ultimate Wag the Dog scenario, or what?

There is traditionally a quasi-Nazi orientation of state police in America, which is often interlocked with the CIA. In Texas, as a Neighborhood Commissioner for the Boy Scouts in 1962, I attended a scouting executive conference hosted by the Air Force at Big Spring. For some unexplained reason, everyone started speaking German. Most of the Buffalo Trail executives were of German or Nordic extraction.

The keynote address for the conference was to be delivered by the head of the Texas Department of Public Safety, Col. Homer Garrison. Also in attendance was (then Capt., later Col.) Wilson Speir. As I waited in the "air room", before Garrison's address, Col. Speir approached me and unexpectedly said, "Adolf Hitler was the finest Christian gentleman the western world has ever seen, except he made only one mistake, by failing to kill all the Jews." After the conference, I was placed on the mailing list of several anti-Semitic, Nazi-oriented publications, such as Conde McGinley's Common Sense, of Union, N.J. I never paid a dime, and the paper continued to reach me no matter where I moved, until 1966. Many policemen like Speir apparently admire Hitler because they consider him to have been "a good cop", who "cleaned up the streets of Germany". Police work sometimes naturally attracts authoritarian types who think that an authoritarian state will diminish crime and improve life. And imagine: A state in which the cops would be "top dogs"! These are not good cops. They are "bad cops".

Another thing this experience confirmed, was the Nazi orientation of the Boy Scouts, similar to the transformation in Germany of the Pfadtfindern ("Pathfinders", the German equivalent of the Boy Scouts), into the Jugendbunds ("Youth Bunds"), from which the S.S. Hitlerjugends had grown. In Austin Texas, in 1968, a Boy Scouts of America T.V. ad was narrated by one of Wernher von Braun's N.A.S.A. astronauts, John Glenn, now a U.S. Senator from Ohio (and the oldest astronaut to go into space). The ad showed Scouts on patrol, carrying patrol flags, running up a hill and tumbling down the other side, as a vaguely familiar German military march played in the background. I recollected having heard the march only a short time before, in a televised documentary of William Shirer's Rise and Fall of the Third Reich. In the documentary, a Hungarian composer and favorite of Hitler—affectionately referred to as "Putzy"—related how he had composed a march entitled Youth Marches Forward, on request of the Fuehrer, for a propaganda film for his Hitlerjugends. John Glenn gave his

recruitment spiel to American youth, and the ad with the march was a verbatim copy of the Nazi ad. After I pointed this out to a few people at the university, the ad was promptly jerked from the media without public comment.

The same Col. Wilson Speir (previous page) who was a Scouting official, and eventually became head of the D.P.S. in Texas, after the death of Col. Homer Garrison (ca. 1966), was given a special "heroism" award by President L.B.J., in 1967. Despite the numerous inquiries of Senator 'Babe' Schwartz of Galveston, no one could figure out what Speir had supposedly done to earn it. Schwartz probably knew of Speir's Nazi proclivities, and was just 'turning up the heat'. One of the first things Speir did when he took over the D.P.S., was to create the state police's very own "mini-CIA". The first thing to come to my mind, was Himmler's S.S.. How deeply in law enforcement has this influence penetrated?

In 1986, a young Atheist scout was kicked out because of his refusal to believe in a "god", or to pledge loyalty to "God", as stated in the "God and Country" phrase in the Boy Scout Oath. Asserting his right to religious belief or non-belief, he brought suit to enjoin the scouts to reinstate his membership, alleging not only the un-American, illegal and unconstitutional discrimination against him because of his beliefs, but also the abridgement of his 2nd Amendment rights to protection against state recognition of an establishment of religion. He lost the suit and the U.S. Supreme Court upheld what they referred to as the "right" of the Boy Scouts of America to discriminate against Atheists. A taxpayer-provided federal highway marker on 1-25 to the south of Santa Fe, directs the public to a local Boy Scout meeting hall, as official sponsorship of the Scouts, who discriminate against Atheists, just as they might do against Jews. Ergo, the state officially discriminates against Atheists.

It is disturbing to think that these Christian fascists equate only their religious beliefs with "good", while the beliefs of "Atheists" are automatically associated with "evil". Perhaps someone should have told them that "Satan", to an Atheist, is purely a mythological creation which belongs to the Christians and Jews. The Communists only pretended to be Atheists, but in reality, substituted a different pantheon of gods (their leadership), under a different set of mystical beliefs, replacing the myth of "god" with the myth of "collective consciousness", the same as the Tibetan Bonpas.

Atheism is inconsistent to totalitarianism, since Atheists are by definition individualists who reject both Christian, Communist, or any other mystical collectivism. Without blind acceptance of what a totalitarian government or religion tells you, based on faith rather than reason—such as the idea of a "collective consciousness"—as the basis for a "more just", "more scientific", or "superior" form of government or society, a collectivist system breaks down. There is nothing in the world's major religions to prevent them from practicing communism or fascism, which are based on the same kind of altruism. In fact, wherever these religions have become the "state" religions, the results have been communistic or fascistic. Many people like Stalin, merely exchanged their priestly garbs for communist or fascist uniforms, without even breaking stride. Fidel Castro was converted to Marxist-Leninism by two Jesuit priests, while in the Sierra Maestas of Cuba, preparing for his final march on Havana.

I have found nothing in the lives or works of such famous Atheist as Giuseppe Verde, Mark Twain, Thomas Edison, Nikola Tesla, Nathan Hale, George Washington, Abraham Lincoln, and many others whom you might never suspect, to urge anything other than a free system, including the right to believe as one chooses, upon others.

Many of our most famous Atheists have been forced by circumstances to pay "lip service" to Christianity, Judaism, or other religions, including Communism, in public statements, coerced by corporate fascists who consider the mind-control mechanisms of "collective belief indispensable to the security of their coercive "systems".

It is easy to be confused when the government spreads false propaganda among a public willing to believe it. A 1953 panel was set up to "investigate" flying saucers, headed by Dr. H.P. Robertson—an O.S.I, consultant, chosen to head the Robertson Panel—which eventually issued what was called The Robertson Report (on "UFOs"), intended to embellish the cover-up which has been protracted until today.

The N.S.A. (parent agency to the O.S.I.) is known in the "trade" as "The Puzzle Palace"[10]. A 'puzzle' is something that comes in bits and pieces, but "puzzle palace" implies a place where puzzles are created, like a "pizza palace" creates pizzas. Through "false puzzles"—the pieces of which fit together to form false pictures—the public is misinformed in such a way that they believe they have pieced a puzzle together, and "...figured something out", when in reality they were suckered in by the O.S.I. These "puzzles" might lead a rational person to conclude that the scenarios are too corny to believe, but the religious history of the world shows that 'mass' society is hooked on corny scenarios, especially "religious" or "spiritual" ones. O.S.I, think tanks—guided by the S.S. mystics of Reinhard Gehlen's RSHA—have designed these phony 'alien' scenarios, using the principles of secret, mystical movements, societies and religions of the world. This technique was influenced by the fact that, in the creation of librettos for grand opera, composers and librettists know that successful librettos must be "schmaltzy" (Yiddish for "chicken-fatty", but meaning "corny" and overdone). This conclusion influenced the modern Big Lie Technique, as stated by Adolf Hitler:

> "In the size of the lie there is always contained a certain factor of credibility, since the great masses of people...will more easily fall victim to a great lie than to a small one, since they themselves...lie sometimes in little things... Thus such an idea of an untruth will not at all enter their heads...therefore, just for this reason, some part of the most impudent lie will remain and stick ".

Sometimes determining the truth is just a matter of common sense, being a good judge of character, and at other times, objectivity in listening to the ridiculousness of what is being said. You sometimes know the truth because it is reasonable, is being told by a calm, sane, reasonable and honest person, unconnected to the government, who is not given to flights of fantasy, corroborated by other reliable sources. People who say they "met space beings" (p. 133), are either government liars, attention seekers, insane, or pathetic victims of slick government cons.

Why do these liars have such illegal power over us? We shall know the truth—which is a pack of CIA lies. The 1979-80 "investigation" by ex-FBI agent Ken Rommel, reported in the New Mexican, is immediately refuted by a letter from Thomas Martin of Santa Fe, as shown in the following facsimile news clippings from the New Mexican (ca. 1980):

---

[10]James Bamford, The Puzzle Palace [1982],

Investigation says mutilations caused by scavengers

Details of a year-long investigation into New Mexico's mysterious cattle mutilations, summarized in April, were released Monday and point to animal scavengers as the cause of the mutilations.

Former FBI agent Ken Rommel, who conducted the probe, concluded that most of the 117 cattle deaths he investigated were caused by natural causes and damage to the carcasses was caused by natural predators.

The report supports conclusions outlined by Rommel in April and adds details.

The 297-page report, prepared for District Attorney Eloy Martinez with a $50,000 federal grant, includes reports from veterinarians and others and photographs of damaged cattle.

"...I found nothing in the official reports to indicate that the animal was mutilated by any agents other than predators and scavengers," Rommel wrote. "Available evidence strongly suggests that those animals died from natural causes or common injuries and were subsequently ravished by scavengers."

Rommel claims that in 117 mutilations he investigated since 1975 there is not one case which could be described as a "classic mutilation."

Rommel's report claims that data obtained from qualified investigators and experienced veterinarians in other states confirms what he discovered in New Mexico.

"In fact, I have found no credible source who differs from this finding, nor has one piece of hard evidence been presented or uncovered that would cause me to alter this conclusion," Rommel's report states.

Though Rommel's first recommendation is not to spend more taxpayer's money to fund law enforcement investigations of this phenomenon, he said further studies by anthropologists, psychologists, sociologists, and other behavioral scientists could be "useful and revealing."

Rommel urged law enforcement officers to investigate future mutilations sufficiently to determine if the facts point to unlawful killing, butchering or stealing, and to collect evidence and testimony to support a successful prosecution.

Rommel stated in his report that he hopes his conclusions would end "rumors, theories and fears that some highly organized criminal activity or extraterrestrial conspiracy is responsible for these mutilations."

The belief that mutilations are being done as experiments by highly skilled individuals using precision instruments is unsupported by facts, Rommel said.

He termed the facts cited to support this belief as "at best questionable" and "involving incredible flights of fancy" in some cases.

Reports of organs being removed "with surgical precision," lack of evidence at the scene and the carcasses being devoid of blood were among reported findings Rommel said were erroneous or misleading. Rommel said he found many "errors of commission and omission" in official reports.

Disputes 'mutilations' report

I can't speak for the other 116 cases, but I happened upon one of Rommel's investigations. This case involved a 1,000 pound bull, "caught napping in a tree by predators." The "predators" in this case rode in a helicopter and obviously had scientific training in toxicology. They took the same tissues I dissected while doing graduate study in toxicology, but then I was limited by finances to use rodents, not the cattle of northern New Mexico ranchers. Tissues taken included brain, gastrointestinal, gonadal and six inch core of the liver region. Clamp marks were present on the lips, to facilitate the removal of the tongue. I admired the surgical techniques, neat and without blood. The focus on Rommel's investigation of this case was to investigate the possibility of purchasing the negatives of the pictures taken by local residents of the slain animal.

You should refrain from calling these cases "mutilations" and describe them as they are, lab animal sacrifices.

My questions are: Who is responsible? What environmental polutant is being investigated? Is it of danger to us?

The real scavengers, the coyotes, didn't touch the carcass, but then they know not to mess with the CIA, LASL, USAF, etc.

Thomas Martin
Santa Fe

Some policemen are responsible to the people, rather than to totalitarian-like bureaucracies which direct them. One gutsy New Mexico State Police member, Gabe Valdez, of Dulce, New Mexico, who is both intelligent and truly courageous, took on the phony FBI/CIA "mutilations investigation" of ex-FBI agent, Ken Rommel, head-on. The following is my facsimile clipping, with photo of Valdez:

Trooper blames mutilations on massive conspiracy

By JANE SEAGRAVE
The Associated Press

DULCE - Five years ago, Gabe Valdez didn't believe in aliens from outer space. That was before the steely eyed state policeman witnessed his first cattle mutilation.

Now, Valdez says he just can't rule out the existence of extraterrestrial beings.

More likely, he says, a top-secret medical research project is responsible for the mysterious deaths of more than 90 head of livestock in New Mexico since 1975.

And despite skepticism from his peers, gentle chiding from his friends and an official report discounting his theories, Valdez refuses to be dissuaded.

"It doesn't bother me. I think they're ignorant," he says of his detractors. "It just makes me work harder to prove these people wrong."

More than a year after a former FBI agent concluded in a 297-page report that the "mutilated" cows were victims of natural predators, Valdez has vowed to get to the bottom of what he believes may be a massive conspiracy engineered by the federal government.

"There are some things I can't talk about now because they're under investigation," Valdez said in a recent interview at his home in this small community on the Jicarilla Apache reservation. "But one of these days it will break."

The 38-year-old career officer is not the kind of man one would easily scoff at.

Small but squarely built, he was named "officer of the year" by the state police in 1977, largely for his part in the armed capture of a first-degree murder suspect.

The only state police officer on the reservation, Valdez is often called on to break up fights in bars or intervene in domestic quarrels.

Valdez, raised the son of a Los Alamos janitor in the tiny northern New Mexico village of Cebolla, realized his lifelong dream when he joined the New Mexico State Police in 1969. The father of three young boys, he speaks with the earnest conviction of a man who is used to being listened to.

He rarely drinks, lifts weights in his spare time and ---until recently--- "never even though about" the supernatural.

"He's realistic, I can vouch for that," said his wife, Margie.

Valdez became involved in the cattle mutilation issue in June 1976 when a neighboring rancher reported a dead cow with what appeared to be strange incisions in its soft tissues.

On investigation, Valdez said he found a tripod-like imprint near the animal's carcass, resembling tracks that might be left by a helicopter landing.

Later, the officer received reports that an unusual orange light had been spotted by area residents around the time the cow died.

Although Valdez said he did not see the light on his first investigation, he subsequently has seen it "a lot of times."

"It goes slowly and then it goes quickly. It looks like an evening star, but it's orange," he said. "I bet at least 85 percent of the people in Dulce have seen it."

Ken Rommel, a former FBI agent, was commissioned in 1979 to investigate the alleged mutilations. He concluded in a June 1980 report that the livestock deaths were due to natural causes and that the "mutilations" were the result of scavengers.

To believe that the cows were deliberately mutilated, eh said, "would require a wild imagination coupled with an agility to totally disregard the facts."

Rommel also questioned Valdez' credibility, quoting an unnamed associate of the police officer as saying Valdez sometimes "sees things that are not there."

For his part, Valdez said Rommel failed to investigate true mutilations.

The report "looks very convincing because it came from an FBI agent," Valdez said. "But everything he put in the report was speculation."

"I really don't know of an animal that can handle a knife or break a leg or put a clamp on a leg. You actually have to be a big fool to say that it's predators."

Since 1976, Valdez' name has been linked to the issue of cattle mutilations and he frequently is the first person called to the scene to investigate dead livestock.

Anticipating that his findings will be viewed with skepticism, he now "always try to take along credible people to the scent of these mutilations."

The mutilations follow a general pattern, he said. In most cases, the animal's rectum, sexual organs and tongue have been carefully cut out.

The incidents usually follow reports of the strange orange light and of helicopter noises. Valdez is convinced that aircraft are involved.

But concrete evidence has been elusive. Valdez said ranchers have tried repeatedly to no avail to catch a mutilator in the act.

"You can sit there for months and nothing will happen and you might leave for the night and they will hit you," he said.

Valdez is becoming increasingly convinced that the incidents are carefully staged to appear supernatural, but he won't say for sure.

"I'm not going to commit myself and say it's not a human force, but there is at least some human involvement," he said.

The explanation he favors is that the federal government is using cows in a top-secret, defense-related medical research project. Orange lights and other devices are used to confuse observers into doubting what they see.

If Valdez has facts to back up his theory, he isn't making them public.

But to the state police officer, the explanation isn't the product of a wild imagination.

"Who else is going to spend the money to hire an aircraft to kill a cow?" he asks. "Who has the damn money just to kill a cow and take its tongue. It's got to be the government. It's got to be something big."

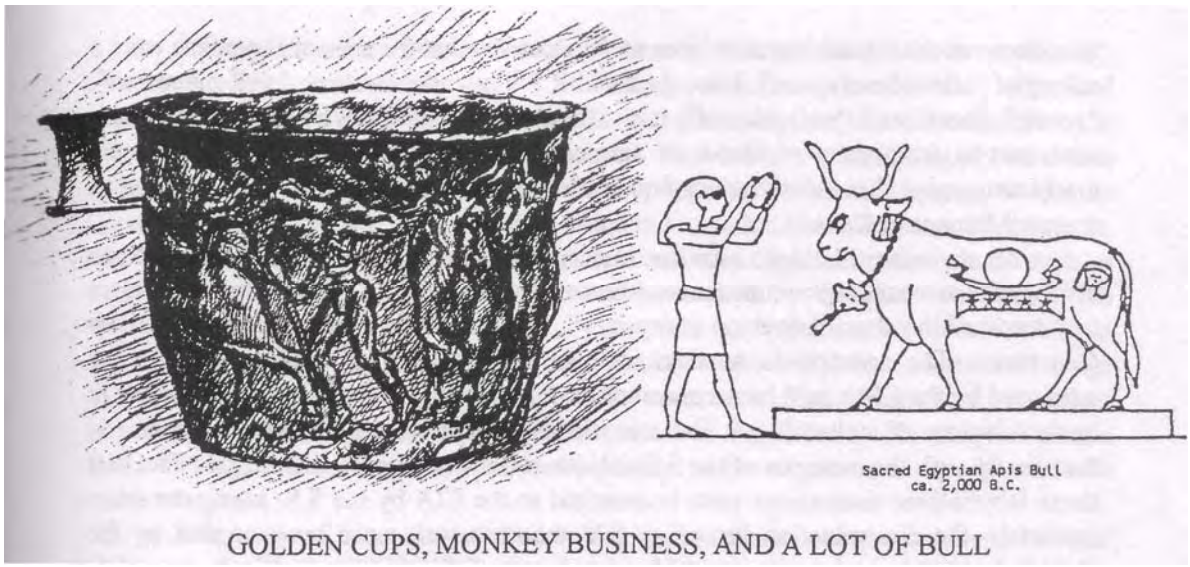
SKEPTICAL PATROLMAN - New Mexico State Policeman Gabe Valdez believes cattle mutilations are part of a top secret government medical research project.

Gabe Valdez said Ken Rommel didn't investigate "true mutilations", and engaged in "speculation". Rommel questioned Valdez' credibility, yet failed to name a source for a comment allegedly made about Valdez by a fellow state policeman, an apparent lie by Rommel to patch up his own damaged credibility. Valdez' statement---"You actually have to be a big fool to say that it's predators"---pretty much says it all. Valdez gets my gold star for rationally saying the 'mutilations' are actually a "top secret, defense-related medical research project." Flying saucer-borne particle beam weapons irradiate the cattle, and mobile teams rustle the cattle and remove tissue and blood to examine for reproductive and immune system damage, as the CIA's "O.S.I.R.I.S." front creates a sham Nazi "golden cup" effect.

The issues are whether the cattle are (1) being intentionally "mutilated" by weirdos (highly unlikely); or, (2) being killed and eaten by predators with scalpels for teeth (Valdez' "big fools" believe this); or, (3) being subjected to particle beam experimentation, exsanguination, and surgical extraction of tissue to analyze for ionizing radiation damage (the "MRA" under the circumstances). As I have already said, an Albuquerque scientist named Calvin Horn, among others, years ago found that a standard blood coagulent and a microwave chamber were used to thoroughly exsanguinate the carcasses (even removing traces of copper from the livers). A cauterizing scalpel (invented in 1938, for those idiots who are easily mystified by technology as old as I am) removes tissue in non-bleeding cuts, cauterizing as it goes. The blood and tissue are then processed and run through a counter to determine the number of cells affected and how. Since it's secret, you know it's illegal and bad for us.

There is also the compelling evidence of strange aircraft which are silent (not helicopters), glow orange, and, as described by Gave Valdez, "...look like an evening star." Some of these ships, incidentally, have been photographed up close, "in the act."

After the cattle have been removed to a laboratory—at a secret government facility, or in the saucers themselves—and are fully processed, the carcasses are dropped from the air, so as to avoid tracks around them for investigators to find, though tracks may appear at pick-up locations. Some have been found lodged high in the branches of trees. As Tom Martin implied a couple of pages back, it's stupid to call these partial dissections, tissue samplings and experiments "mutilations", any more than one would refer to an apendectomy as a "mutilation", unless the surgeon is extremely incompetent, or insists on proving he's no "button-holer".



GOLDEN CUPS, MONKEY BUSINESS, AND A LOT OF BULL

The golden Vapio Cups depict ancient Minoan "cowboys" of 3,500 years ago, rounding up bulls for the "pagan" ceremonies commencing important gatherings, in which such cups were used to drink the blood of young bulls. This "Golden Cup Ceremony" spread from Asia (Western Siberia), into the Mediterranean, and throughout the Celto-Nordic tribes, as traditions of the westward-migrating bands of mixed Norse, Mongols, and Moors. It appeared in the ancient Nibelungenlied ("Song of the Nibelungs", the pan-Germanic epic), became known as the "Holy Grail" myth, and was eventually taken up by both the Christians—who erroneously associated it with their religion—and by the Nazis, via their Ahnenerbe/Thule Societies, within the "Old Prussian" Masonic Illuminati, which revived the ceremony in neo-pagan Luciferian/Osirian Nazi S.S. ceremonial toasts to "knowledge" and "pure Aryan blood". This and the Egyptian Apis Bull myth are more fully connected in Chapter VII.

Then came the O.S.I, with its cattle mutilations cover-up, and covertly operated "O.S.I.R.I.S." pseudo-occult front group, to which they psychopolitically imputed responsibility—not to exclude the possibility that the ceremonies are actually those of Nazis perpetuating a secret S.S. infrastructure within the CIA—and daring us to catch them. Was not von Braun an Obersturmbannfuehrer in the S.S.? Were any Blacks or Jews reported in these groups? "O.S.I.R.I.S." gatherings are coordinated with saucer sightings and related secret medical experiments ("mutilations"), to throw outside investigators off. The F.B.I.'s position is 'natural causes' for the experiments, and 'blackouts' on the saucers, while the Air Force's suspicious behavior lends false credibility to the cover-up conspiracy theory.

Seeking to rectify a blundering lack of visual arts finesse which was apparent in the original 1947 Roswell Hoax, the CIA now employs more skillful technicians, artists, and panels of Ph.D.s. In 1985, they warmed up the old Roswell leftovers as the "MJ-12" hoax, to retroactively fabricate a coverup in 1947. (There was a 1947 cover-up, but that was to conceal the fatal flaws in the hastily bungled initial hoax.) A lingering phoniness is obviated by the contorted, over-scholarly extremes to which they have gone, to create the effect that occult groups—with names like "O.S.I.R.I.S."—are responsible for the cattle mutilations. Oh, what tangled webs they weave, when first they practice to deceive!

Some of the related literature goes so far as to say that the ancient Egyptians were a colony of "aliens from space". Since the O.S.I.R.I.S. members were so "well-mannered", "young", "neat", and "well-dressed", it is difficult to imagine them hoisting up huge bull carcasses to drain them of blood, or surgically removing genitalia, anal tissue, etc., muchless gorging themselves on huge quantities of warm bull blood, like a lusty band of ancient Minoans or Celts.

As obvious titillations to ancient history detectives, arcane clues disseminated to mystify the surrounding circumstances (the work of the "Puzzle Palace") invite scholars to "uncover" the sham "cover-up conspiracy", not to mention the obscure Golden Cup Ceremony. The scenario is so devious, that only a team of diploma-mill Ph.D.s employed by the CIA could have conceived it! What better use for 'surplus' graduates in ancient history or archaeology? The scenario incidentally reveals an all too explicable familiarity with the esoterica of the S.S. Ahnenerbe dilettantes, considering the fact that these labyrinthine contortions were bequeathed to the CIA by the S.S. Using the same material—the dissemination for which S.S. theorists were once hung or shot by the Tribunal at Nuremberg—our own CIA, revealing its S.S. affinities, subtly brainwashes us with this garbage with impunity, in subliminal psychopolitical messages. We should be outraged that our government engages in this BIG BROTHER mystical, religious shamanism and huxterism, treating us like psychopolitical zombies; "Uncle Sham" at his worst!

In the ancient Egyptian religion, Hapi—one of the four sons of Horus the hawk or falcon—and one of the four kings of the cardinal points of the earth—is shown as a baboon-god which is the dual namesake for the 'Apis' Bull. The bull and ape are both forms of Osiris, the father and son of Horus, as part of early 'holy trinity' myth copied by Josephus. The military intelligence/Illuminati committees proffered up monkies as aliens at Roswell in 1947, using the shaved and dyed rhesus monkies (which are very close to the original "cynocephalus" ("Chinese-headed") baboons used by the Ancient Egyptians), to produce alienoid/humanoid-looking beings.

An examination of all this stuff makes it ever more maddeningly apparent that BIG BROTHER has been playing games with our minds, planting ancient Egyptian esoterica, either out of inherent bureaucratic plagiarism and uncreative laziness, or to dare some scholarly investigator to eventually discover it. Or did they think this was so slick that we mere 'civilians' would never unravel it? Was this an insider joke for Illuminati-employed Egyptologists, or just a short-cut for lazy Ph.D.s, who plagiarized their scenario from sources so obscure they mistakenly believed we would never discover how incompetent they were? Or, are the Illuminati who control the intelligence community so egotistical about their esoteric beliefs, that they insist on scattering the earmarks of them all about, as they gloat in secret pleasure?

"Apis" is Greek for "Hapi", the namesake for the "Apis Bull" ("Ape-Bull"), involved in the Golden Cup Ceremony ("Apis" contains the apparent root for "ape"). The sacred bull was chosen for a white triangle on his forehead, as another maddening Trilateral symbolic parallel! The bull was referred to as "Osiris Apas" (in Greek, "Osorapis"). Literally, this means "East-Hare-Ape-(Bull)", a sort of animal/god conglomerate typical of the Egyptian religion. So there is "O.S.I.R.I.S.", there are the apes, and the mutilations are the Golden Cup Ceremonies! Gee, I solved the Puzzle Palace's "puzzle of the month"!

Rhesus monkies possess exotic, 'alienoid' characteristics—"cynocephalous", humanoid faces with large, soulful, slanted eyes—with subhuman body size, and similarities to the sacred baboon form of Osiris, convenient for transformation into the "space beings" of the Roswell/MJ-12 hoaxes. Furthermore, a handy supply of rhesus monkies from the Regional Primate Research Laboratory, at Alamogordo (or its predecessor agency) were already being killed in the rocket sled accelerator experiments, as substitutes for human pilots, preparatory to manned flights in rocket planes such as the X-15, leading up to the moon missions envisioned by Wernher von Braun. The monkies were already outfitted with the helmets and G-suits, to simulate human conditions as closely as possible. The original photos showed pressure lines and lacings visible on the G-suits, which would have been unnecessary had the monkies been pilots of flying saucers, which canceled most if not all of the G-force. The original photos which I saw, now appear to be unavailable, except in the memories of myself and those who saw them.

When one of these shaved dead babies is dyed green, and you put his G-suit and helmet on, with those like DEAD eyes looking out from under those droopy eyelids, the effect is EERIE enough to convince some gullible people that they are "aliens". The dead lab animals were shaved, in order for the G-suits to be effective (the pressure with the animal hair would be ineffective). The total effect was in fact TOO WEIRD, and even the government bunglers eventually backed off from that one. The key words here are LAZY and BAD TASTE. The original photos showed the fatal flaws—identifiability of the critters as monkies, and apparently man-made constuming and equipment—since aliens capable of traveling millions of light years through interstellar space, would probably not use conventional sewing machines and lacings to make their garments. Exposure of the 1947 fakery, exposes the ensuing protracted hoaxes. Ergo, the newly created (c. 1985) MJ-12 documents scenario, ex post facto, was also a hoax. The original hoax at Roswell was already out of the bag and had to be altered, since it was obviously bungled. A hoax to conceal a bungled hoax.

The major error in the original 1947 Roswell hoax, after the dead monkies were all dressed up for the rocket sled, was in deciding to go ahead and give them "somewhere (else) to go", without more professional consultation. At that point, some G.I. with bad taste and judgment, probably said something like "...Yeah...that's it..that's what an alien would look like! Let's do it!"

Roswell was the largest town in the general area, the citizens of which had almost all seen saucers, or had close friends who had seen one of more. Because of the fantastic electrical flight characteristics and inadequate control and navigational systems of the earlier saucers, the government was unable to conceal them while developing them in the area. The hoax was an ill-conceived attempt to explain away the many sightings near the secret military bases, where excited post-war saucer experimentation accompanied the influx of German saucers and personnel, immediately after the war, soon followed by more. The hoax was intended to convince the many people who had seen saucers, that they weren't "ours".

The government had its hands full trying to keep the German saucers secret, what with the fifteen thousand German scientific, technical, support and security personnel. All those people had to have recreation, which created even more security problems. The German personnel often went down to nearby Juarez and Ojinaga, Mexico, to blow off steam and whoop it up. Naturally, some of them were arrested and held in Mexican jails

after all-night drinking bouts, whoring, and brawls. Getting foreigners out of Mexican jails has always been difficult, and the Juarez jail was a sort of old dungeon which was notorious for its large rats and bugs.

While at the University of Texas, I had a neighbor named Helen Nash. Helen was married to retired A.F. sergeant George Nash, whose father had gambled away the fortune earned with his grandfather's Nash Automobile Company. Helen was from Germany. She had an old ancestral castle over in East Germany, near the Czech border, which the West German government bought from her, since they figured sooner or later, the divided Germany would be brought back together again, and they would have 'title'. The old castle would make a fine tourist attraction. Now that's what I call thinking ahead. Helen's father owned all the pleasure boats on the Rhein. His main boat was called the "Barbarossa". That made me wonder just how far ahead the Germans were thinking. Anyone out there get that? Barbarossa ("Red Beard") is the Germanic myth about an old man who awakens from his slumber every so often, and comes out of his cave to stalk the earth. The myth is an esoteric Nazi code symbolic of the return of a new Hitler, in a Fourth Reich.

At 15 years of age, Helen, who spoke five or six languages, was brought to Alamogordo/White Sands from Bavaria, as a security agent for the German Operation Paperclip contingency of the secret flying saucer/rocket project. One of her main jobs was to negotiate with Mexican authorities, to get German scientists, soldiers, and other personnel out of the Mexican jails, and to act as an interpreter whenever necessary. She was like an extension of the German Embassy, very highly connected because of her aristocratic family. It sometimes cost a lot of money to get the Germans out of the Mexican jails. Helen never denied my accusations that the German contingency she worked with included the flying saucer group, but since she still held the rank of major in German Intelligence, she was still bound from saying more by security regulations. Helen was brought to White Sands as part of Operation Paperclip, while von Braun was at Ft. Bliss, and the entire German flying saucer project was brought to America, because the Russians were threatening to overrun West Germany, and superficially it was feared that they might acquire the technology, though it was more likely that the Illuminati was completely eradicating the "German memory" of the "KT-p2" Projekt.

The decision to execute the Roswell hoax was probably not previewed or fully authorized by the Pentagon, failing to anticipate that their Illuminati bosses would still be relying upon it 38 years later (in 1985, at the time of "MJ-12"). So the old, flawed hoax was buried, and the new revised MJ-12 hoax was created to replace it. No one has come up with the photos which were published not only in newspapers, but magazines as well. That means that, in the 47 years since, the spooks have continually combed the shelves and files of libraries, newspapers, magazines and publishers, and "retrieved" every last stitch of this evidence, except whatever might still be buried somewhere in someone's old pile of c. 1947-1968 magazines, newspapers or other effects.

Down in Roswell, on Mar. 25, 1994, the government liars and their agents and dupes, were ballyhooing up a "conference" over the "Roswell Incident", coinciding with the filming of the T.V. production, "Roswell". They have two main tourist attractions in Roswell. One of them is the "Roswell Incident" hoax, and the other is the "Billy the Kid" hoax. Recently, information has come to light that William Bonny (the "Kid"), was not killed by Pat Garrett, but died Dec. 27, 1950 at almost 91 years of age, in Hico, Texas, going by the name O.L ("Brushy Bill") Roberts.

This was documented by Dr. C.L. Sonnichsen (Alias Billy the Kid, 1955, written for William V. Morrison). Dr. Sonnichsen was a well established historian, who was often published through the University of Oklahoma Press, other Universities, and some private presses. I met him twice, once in the printshop of Karl Hertzog, the typographer for the press of the University of Texas at El Paso, and a second time in Santa Fe, where he attended a Southwest writers' conference, and we had a very enjoyable supper together at the La Fonda Hotel. He was well-acquainted with my old friend, J. Evetts Haley, the western ("cowboy") historian, and with Tom Lea, the painter, muralist, and writer, who wrote and illustrated the book, The Mustang[11]. You can imagine the reaction of the "Kid" aficionados at Roswell, as well as those at Ft. Sumner, where the Kid was supposedly buried, after being 'gunned down' by Pat Garrett. They weren't about to let 'revisionists' put an end to a good thing, since a lot of their tourist income and local color is tied up in keeping things the way they are. They too had conferences, featuring forensic experts from Los Alamos, doing computer analyses of photos of the Kid and Brushy Bill, etc., etc. But if you have an artist's eye, and casually look at the photos of the Kid and Brushy Bill, you can see they are the same person, separated by about 40 years. Roberts had over 22 documents proving his identity as "Billy the Kid". Ft. Sumner advertises the grave site and Kid museum on billboards all around the area. Oh yeah! That "Brushy Bill" thing sure was a hoax! The Illuminati and CIA also oppose such revisionism, because it threatens to destroys confidence in "their" false history.

Jesse James' cousin, Ola Everhard, of Lovington, New Mexico, let the cat out of the bag a few years ago, concerning the truth about the death of Jesse James. Among my childhood friends, were the great-grandsons of Frank James, ("Jimmy" and "Al" Schlosser), and the grandson of a Mr. Shea ("Seay", or "See"?), Tommy Mulcahy ("Mulkey"?). Shea had been in the Army of Northern Virginia. When Lee surrendered, Shea couldn't accept it, and joined Quantill's Raiders in New Mexico. That is where Shea became friends with the James brothers. Later, Shea rode with Billy the Kid in the Lincoln County Wars, and maintained his old friendship with the James brothers, as well as the Kid, for whom he had a good deal of respect. Shea's respect was not easily won, and I don't think it was completely due to the fact that the Kid (temporarily) used an Irish name, William Bonny. That was all explained by Dr. Sonnichsen. I always knew that 'Bonny' and the James brothers (Frank and Jesse) had died of natural causes, after living considerably longer lives than most. Frank James, a published historian, ran a profitable antique business at Valley Mills, Texas, near Waco, where he died of old age. His grandson, Jesse James Howard, raised in the Cimmarron, attended the University of Texas in 1938, wearing buckskins, moccasins, beads, and long pigtails. In the '60s, he jokingly boasted that he had been the "first hippy" at U.T., in 1938. He was Jim and Al's uncle.

Mr. Shea and the James boys (who used the names Bounds and Howard) would get together on their favorite patriotic holiday, the Fourth of July. I remember them getting together 1947, at the Schlosser house across Tornillo street, in Kermit. Shea looked resplendent in his Confederate Uniform, which he wore on such occasions. The get-together was attended by Shea, Frank and Jesse James, "Brushy Bill Roberts" ("Billy the Kid"), and their descendants. I can remember playing with a boy named "Franklin D. Bounds" (named after F.D.R.), who was Jesse James' great grandson.

---

[11]Tom Lea, The Mustang, University of Texas at El Paso Press [ca. 1961].

Many times, Jim and Al had proudly shown me Jesse's favorite rifle, an oddball caliber Winchester saddle gun, which hung on their wall. That gun had been used in the famous Northfield Minnesota Amnesty Raid. And of course, when we played "guns", Jim and Al would play Jesse and Frank, often arguing about which one played Jesse.

I remember on that 1947 Fourth of July, that, as Mr. Shea came striding down Tornillo street toward the Schlosser house, and I played in the front yard with Al, the three old men with canes—Frank, Jesse, and Billy—came in the gate. Al said, "Hey Bill, how'd you like to meet Jesse James, Frank James and Billy the Kid?" I said, "Yeah!", and, as the old men came by, I shook their hands, as they said "How-do, young feller", but Al's sister told his mother, and I was taken into the house and asked to promise to never tell anyone about the 'ghosts' I'd seen.

Jimmy and Al got severely reprimanded for telling me "too much", since Jesse and Frank may still have had prices on their heads at the time. Though I knew the truth, and was sworn to it, and despite the fact that I tried to cover for them by telling their mother that they had told me nothing, the boys were still whipped, even though their parents weren't "mean". The events of that day told me two things: It was true that Jesse James was still alive, and Jim, Al and I weren't good liars.

Frank James, whose family used the name Howard (not Jesse's family, as some thought), and Jesse James (whose family used the Bounds name) had been given secret pardons by the 'carpetbag' governor, Edmund Davis, of Texas. They had previously acquired incriminating evidence on a fellow carpetbag governor, Crittenden of Missouri, and blackmailed him into prevailing upon Davis to give them the pardons. The man shot by Bob Ford, in Missouri, was actually a notorious murderer , wanted "dead or alive", named Charlie Bigelow, who looked a lot like Jesse. It was he who was laid in the grave, at the "funeral of Jesse James", in 1882. James even helped carry Bigelow's coffin, and Bigelow's wife, posing as Jesse's wife, even identified the body for the coroner, as "Jesse's"! Unfortunately, Bob Ford was subsequently killed in a Colorado saloon by a James fan. Mr. Shea, over 103 in 1947, died at 104, in 1948. He had taught his grandson, Tommy Mulcahy, at the age of two, to recite every state in the Union and its capitol, as well as the Gettysburg Address and the Declaration of Independence. The old man had a great patriotic love of America, and was one of the few who knew the Civil War was not about slavery. Out of respect for my friends, I didn't reveal the truth about the James brothers until after their deaths. No one would have believed me anyway, and most won't believe me now.

Jesse James died of natural causes on August 15, 1951, in Granbury, Texas (on the Brazos River, about 30 miles southwest of Ft. Worth) at age 103[12]. Billy the Kid (A.K.A. William Roberts) had died the year before, on December 27, 1950, in Hico, 195 miles west[13]. The two had known each other for over 89 years, and they were almost relatives. The James brothers had come together on July 4, 1947, to Kermit, to talk over the "old days", and to visit family members and their old friend Mr. Shea., and to celebrate Independence Day.

Why do I tell you all these old stories? What do they have to do with the "Roswell Hoax"? These stories have to do with all historical hoaxes, because they show that, as

---

[12]Dr. Charles L. Sonnichsen, Alias Billy the Kid [commissioned by William V. Morrison, 1955].

[13]C.L. Sonnichsen, Supra.

usual, there is often a true story behind the 'official' version. That is because societies have almost always been controlled by an elite, through such hoaxes and false history, such as, that Reinhard Heydrich was assassinated in Bohemia in 1942, Hitler shot himself in the mouth in 1945, Jesse James was shot in the back in Missouri, Billy the Kid was shot by Pat Garrett, John F. Kennedy was shot by a "lone gunman" named Lee Harvey Oswald in 1963, and an "alien saucer" crashed in Roswell in 1947.

In order to understand the "Roswell Hoax", one has to know a little about the local history, psychology, and vested interests involved. A whole culture has grown up in New Mexico around the Billy the Kid/Lincoln County Wars stories, as well as the "alien saucer" hoax. On the "old west" folklore, there are museums, 'experts', graves, historical plaques, conferences, historical reenactments and pageants, gunslinger contests, and annual celebrations, and would virtually have the same things on the "alien saucer hoax", if only they had laid the little dudes to rest in proper graves. (Instead, the researchers incinerated the corpses along with other dead lab animals, especially since the corpses were beginning to stink very badly while they were at the hospital). Rhesus monkies, like humans, release their bowel contents when they die, so the G-suits were getting pretty nasty after a few days in the July hot desert sun.

It is the carnival/tourist-trap psychology of the dusty little town of Roswell, which the government has tried to key into, rather than the local military yahoos, in perpetrating the initial Roswell hoax, but the atmosphere of the 1997 "50 Year Anniversary of the Roswell Incident" gravitated—or perhaps ascended—to the level of & folk festival, with people coming from the countryside with all kinds of alien kitsch, folk art, food and beverage stands, bands, and RVs, in hopes of making a few dollars and to have a good time. Most of them didn't even break even.

In respect to the 'alien saucer' hoax, just enough false clues were leaked through covert means, to keep the Big Lie alive, while attempting to conceal the original hoax by retrieving evidence, like stealing my two photos, and buying Bart Wilson's photo. Hindsight is sometimes 20/20. If the government revealed its part in the hoax, or if someone comes along with physical evidence exposing it, the government hoax will be done for, but as for the "folk festival", I'm sure some Roswell entrepreneurs will come up with the idea of a "Great Roswell Alien Hoax Museum". After all, why should the Piltdown Man hoax get all the glory?

The family of my brother-in-law, Paul E. Jette III, a coach at Mount Pleasant, Texas, were early Anglo settlers in the Roswell area. Paul's great-grandfather was John Blazer, whose mill was the site of a well-known skirmish in the Lincoln County War. Some of Paul's family lived at Mescalero, the location of Dr. Robert Goddard's rocket workshop. Paul III and my older sister, Ramona, took their honeymoon at Blazer's Mill, near Mescalero. Goddard, Willy Ley, and Wernher von Braun fired experimental rockets in 1935-37, from nearby Eden Valley. Paul and Mona rode to the old Blazer place in a wagon used on the honeymoons of two previous generations of Jettes, as well as by many others in the family.

Paul Jette, I ("Pop" Jette), married John Blazer's half-Souix daughter, shortly after 1900. He had been the quarterback for the University of Georgia when Knute Rockne of Notre Dame had thrown the first forward pass. He set up the first modern athletic programs in New Mexico, at the University of New Mexico in Albuquerque, and at New Mexico State University (then "N. M. A. & M. Univ.", set up with statehood, under Teddy Roosevelt's plan). Then he was the head of the I. N. S. Paul Ill's aunt was the

Army nurse present in Roswell when the so-called 'alien' was dissected. She had previously been a captured Army nurse at Corrigidor in the '40s, survived the Bataan Death March, and continued her work as a nurse at Roswell until becoming a Sister of Charity nun. Roswell researchers have been unable to locate her. I know where she is, but don't want her to be bothered by 'UFOlogists'. Her sister, Leona, told me about the rhesus monkies in 1958. The sisters also remembered von Braun and Dr. Robt. Goddard, when they test-fired their rockets at Eden Valley, near Goddard's workshop in Mescalero, in the 1930s. A young unmarried German baron in his early twenties didn't escape the attention of the girls in the small town of Mescalero, of course!

Roswell hoax dupes said the 'aliens' had no teeth, only four fingers on each hand, had "suction cups" on their fingertips, and were "...not human". Their teeth had been removed because military personnel were being bitten while shaving them, and putting the tight-fitting G-suits on them. Their fingertips were nipped off, healing to suction cup-type configurations. Their ears were surgically removed so the space helmets would fit, and they were deafened because the roar of the rocket sled drove them crazy. Their thumbs were surgically removed to keep them from escaping from the rocket sled harnesses, or from ripping or grabbing at personnel. The little guys were usually crushed to death by G-forces in repeated rocket sled runs, or in one of von Braun's reworked V-2s, during tests determining the "GS" a human pilot might withstand.

The strength of these monkies are several times that of humans for their size. (I know about that, since I have a scar on my right hand, slashed at lightening speed by a rhesus monkey at a circus. The nasty cut was difficult to heal, because of infection caused by the filthy nails of the monkey). The reports that the monkies "weren't human", was absolutely correct, since rhesus monkies are East Indian short-tailed monkeys, not humans. There was a switch from the more problematic rhesus monkies, to easier to manage and more docile chimpanzees, around 1952, about the time of the first publicized rocket rides of the chimps.

Following my July, 1993 first edition, the general excitement created by UFOlogy groups and their begged question that the government "concealed evidence of the crash of an alien space ship at Roswell in 1947", Kevin Randle and Don Schmitt published yet another book, The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell, in 1994. At page 149, they state: "Even Schaffner admits that earliest launches of rhesus monkeys occurred in the early '50s. He found no evidence that monkeys had been used in 1947." According to their own documentation, the records of the Space Center in Alamogordo say the first use of monkies in rocket launches was on June 11, 1948. Was this "...the early '50s"? And, these were records of "rocket" launches, not the rocket sled, which naturally preceded the flights of the monkies in rockets, in 1948.

G-suits, helmets, face masks and oxygen supplies were required on the rocket sled for the monkeys, to replicate contemplated human conditions as closely as possible. In addition, acceleration on the rocket sled would take away their breath, and if the monkies had died of anything except G-forces, the tests would have been useless. (Incidentally, my Albuquerque friend, Merill Holste, invented the G-suit in the '40s, but the government stole it from him and pretended that a man connected to a large corporation had invented it.) Of course, if records could prove that the "aliens" at Roswell were rhesus monkies, they would naturally be classified, since they could document the hoax, like my photos. I also remember seeing a film on the 1947 rocket sled tests using them, simple as that.

The most telling thing about Randle and Schmitt's 1994 book, is that they attempted to address a question without saying who raised it, in their statement that "another researcher" had examined the "possibility" of rhesus monkies in a crashed V-2 or A-9 German rocket, as the basis for the "crash". I was the one who had raised the issue of rhesus monkies, which was then distorted with the reference to a possible rocket crash. True to CIA form, they didn't advertise my book by mentioning it, because the CIA UFOlogists will only cite 'documentation' they created and control, but Randle and Schmitt looked kind of silly attempting to answer my assertion without citing its source. They got their facts wrong on the rockets too, because V-2s and other German rockets were tested from May, 1946 until 1952, at White Sands Missile Range, by von Braun and company.

Highly publicized books by OSI contractors shows the systematic evasion of my questions, and a persistent asking of the wrong questions. They fall into two irrational groups: (1) The group asserting an alien spacecraft crash; and (2) the group denying an alien spacecraft crash, but asserting an experimental weather balloon crash, and adding that UFOlogists are crazy because they believe in "alien UFOs". The UFOlogists have intentionally made it easy for the OSI pseudo-skeptics, by providing them with assertions and questions which make a denial look correct, except for the weather balloon lie, used to cover the initially bungled rhesus monkey hoax.

The Roswell hoax illustrates how our government went into a relatively remote area—such as the southwest was in 1947—and intimidated and slandered the credibilities of literally thousands of people, with lies that those who had seen saucers were liars, were crazy, were publicity-seekers, or were all those things. Rather than to endure ridicule, most people learned to pretend that they saw nothing, and that the sky was 'off limits' to one's credibility. To hell with Aristotle! Plato's 'Cave Analogy' was now "official U.S. government epistemology".

Not to diminish the importance of understanding the hoaxes concealing the saucers, there appears to have been other monkey business afoot at nearby White Sands Proving Grounds, under the "space program" being hyped by von Braun, as a propaganda tool to get funding for the rocket and the secret saucer projects. It is a little embarrassing to think that the rocket program is a part of the BIG LIE scheme, since the saucer technology is so much cheaper, durable, faster, and much more fantastic. In retrospect, the rocket program appears to have always been a mask for the flying saucer stuff, and a much more monstrous and expensive hoax than the Roswell hoax, having as its purpose the enrichment of the chemical and 'aerospace' corporations, to get their impetus behind the program, as well as to enlist their backing in the concealment of the saucer technology, thereby also fraudulently enriching the oil and automobile companies, and adding their impetus to the program. To paraphrase Hitler, "The State and industry are to be partners; one hand washes the other."[14]

In 1970, I met a newspaper writer at the Odessa American, in Odessa, Texas, where my sister Liz had once been the amusements editor. The writer's name was something like John Behmer. He had worked for several newspapers in New Mexico over the years. Since my reporter girlfriend had told him that I was interested in flying saucers, he told me that if I would come in, he would give me some old photos he had found knocking around in a dusty old file drawer of a southwestern newspaper, possibly

---

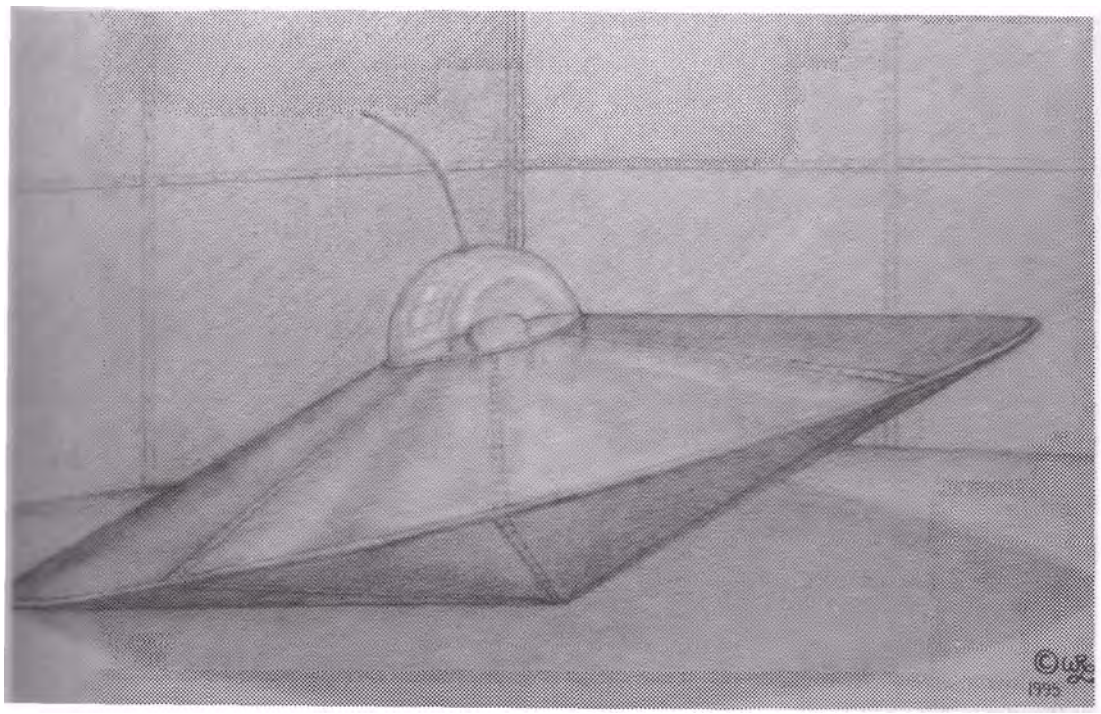
[14]Adolf Hitler, Mein Kampf.

in Lovington, New Mexico. The photos were the ones I mentioned which had been sent out to newspapers in the southwestern region by Walter Haut, the "P.I.O." involved in the Roswell Hoax. One of the photos showed three of the dead rhesus monkies in their little G-suits and helmets, and the other photo showed the junky little fake saucer. The saucer was so small, the monkies would barely have fitted into it, with barely room for one of them under the little plastic bubble canopy on its top. It was smaller even than the "Vril" types purportedly built by the Germans.

Behmer said I should be careful who I showed the photos to, since the security people had very thoroughly attempted to retrieve all of them immediately after the initial hoax, in most cases before they were published. Somehow, the two old 8" x 10" black and white 'glossies' had survived the purge, forgotten about until Behmer had stumbled across them among old papers in the bottom of the dusty old file drawer he was cleaning out, in a back room of one of the small weekly papers owned by the "Freedom Chain", which also owned the Odessa American. Although I had seen the photos published, along with a third one, in the distant past, and even had a magazine in my collection which had them in it, my examination of those actual, clear and full-sized photos, allowed me to corroborate the rumor that the "aliens" were in fact shaved rhesus monkies, just as I had heard. Unfortunately, I haven't seen the photos or the magazine since 1974, taken by the CIA thief woman who was associated with Jim Parsons (the "M.I.B."), and who had also lived with the French CIA "UFOlogist", Jacques Vallee, for two years. In 1980,1 found books in her personal library in her apartment in Santa Fe, which were stolen in 1974, along with the photos and the magazine, before I even knew her personally. It was obvious that she took the unrelated books for her private collection, while collecting the important saucer conspiracy evidence, such as the photos and my magazine, for the government. When I caught her with the books, she said "...ohh, don't you remember giving those to me?" I answered, "I couldn't have given them to you before I knew you, now could I?"

As an artist, I have been known for my ability to draw accurately from memory. I used to do many of my paintings that way, when I was in Austin. I did a series of large "genre" paintings (with 'ordinary' people in them), usually based on the Austin environs. I would often 'borrow' the face of someone I knew, if it seemed to fit well into the character in a painting. In fact, some of the faces I borrowed were those of some of my professors, usually in jest, in satire, or sometimes worse. One of my large paintings was about 5' x 7', entitled "Winos at 6th and Red River Streets". As one man exclaimed when he saw it, "Hey! I knows dat dude! He's da' one whut sells dem fishin' baits down by da' river, ain't he!" One of my professors was a little startled to find his face on one of the winos who was just rounding a corner to join his friends, with a bottle in a sack under his arm. Using my old skills, I will attempt to reconstruct the two photos.

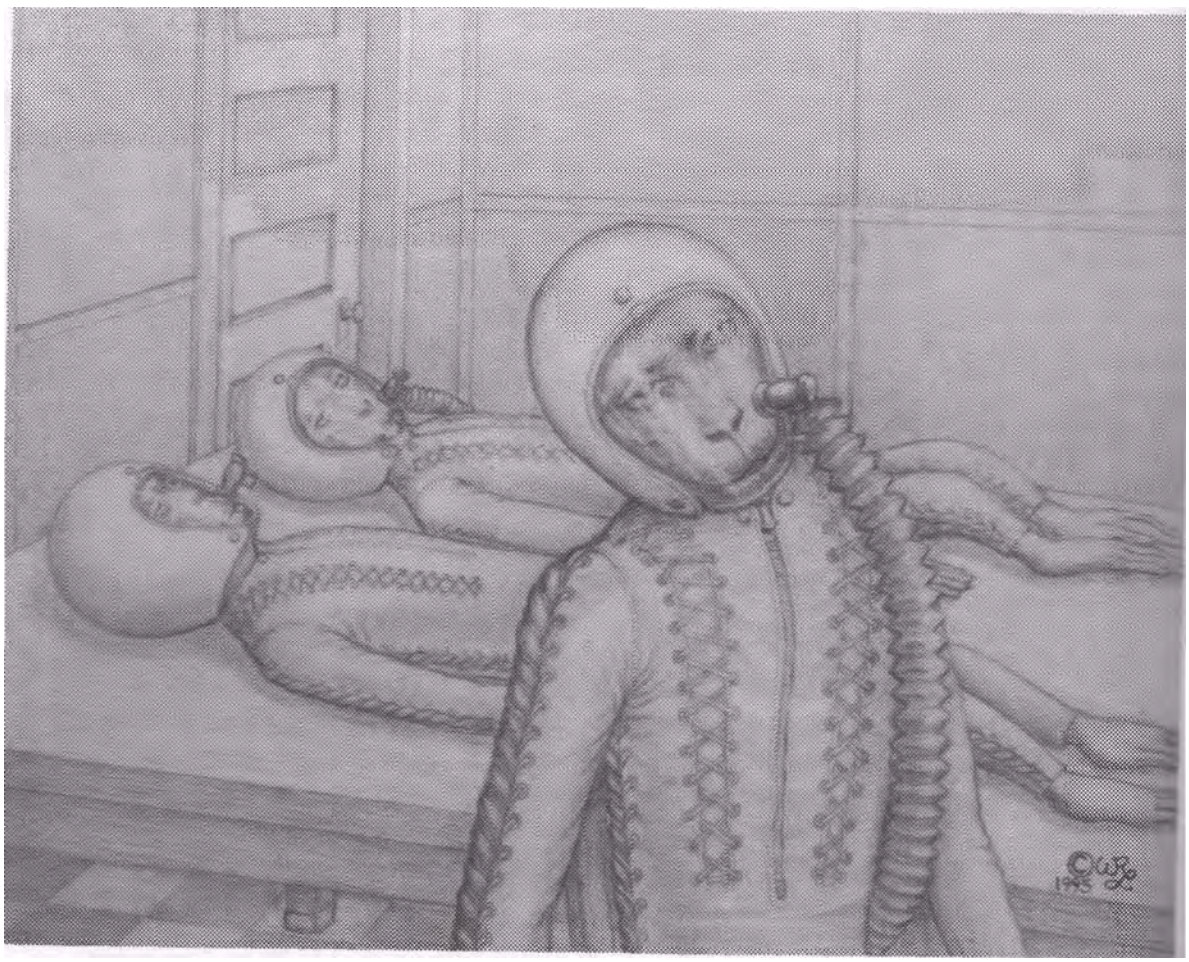
Rulers of a corporate-state society perpetrate as many confusing controversies as possible, so that individual members of the public will become so frustrated to attempting to do their own thinking, that they will finally give up and accept the state's Big Lies, spoon-fed to them through a controlled media.



(NOTE: The fake 'saucer' was about 12' in diameter, and had a plexiglass bubble on it, with a slightly bent automotive radio antenna projecting above it. The rivets, screws, and stock aluminum parts were obvious. It was clear from the environments in which the 'saucer' and the 'aliens' were photographed, that the photos had been made before the 'crash scene' had been 'discovered'.)

The Intelligence personnel who created the hoax, were prohibited from disclosing classified information. Since the secret saucers they used on the bases at Ft. Bliss, White Sands and Holloman, were classified, they could not use one of them as an "alien" saucer. The fake saucer created for the hoax, was apparently the product of amateur metal workers, because the base where it was fabricated did not have a competent design or fabrication facility at the time. It was a pathetic failure, because, had it been an "alien saucer", created by an advanced civilization, capabable of producing advanced technology capable of coming from light years away, it would have been even more advanced than the German saucers or early American prototypes possessed at the area's secret bases.

This early incursion into the special effects, prop-building and hoax-creation, by the "national security" spooks, was apparently a bitter lesson, which eventually led to them getting "professional help" from the movie industry labor pool. They not only produce much better hoaxes today, but have highly advanced cloaking and 'stealth' devices to conceal the saucers, such as special, color-changing surfaces, combined with color and image sensors, which make the saucers look like the background they happen to be hovering or flying in, similar to a chamelion. Anything for a buck, the sky's the limit.



When a Big Lie is afoot, all who know the truth must be given a piece of the action, be discredited, or be eliminated. By maintaining a rocket program, the huge corporations and their employees are committed to supporting it, to acquiescing in the hoax which makes them rich, and sells very expensive rockets and chemicals at our expense. NASA propaganda is everywhere, especially in toy stores. An almost sacrosanct, religious aura surrounds this Nazi Big Lie. Playgrounds have 'space shuttle' toys to ride, 'science' TV programs instruct children on the Big Bang Lie, as if ultimate and immutable truth. This is no different that old Soviet 'space' propaganda, with posters everywhere, showing rosy-cheeked children building rockets in science classes, and colorful and heroicized portraits of "Soviet Cosmonauts".

I'm not an old crank complaining about "somma them new-fangled rockets". I'm complaining about archaic rocket technology, when we have the flying saucer, which belongs to us because we paid for it. It is tantamount to purchasing wagons and horses when we have trucks and cars, or cap-and-ball muskets, when we have AR-15s. Give us what we paid for, not some old piece of mediaeval junk which runs on crap dumped on us at exorbitant prices by the chemical cartels!

CHAPTER IV: SIGHTINGS

My purpose has not been to document an overwhelming number of sightings, in order to sell you on basic truths you should already be familiar with. A vast quantity of misrepresented or fabricated "documented sightings" is the province of the Big Liars and their dupes, while the real sightings are concealed or ignored. Project Blue Book has already buried more good information than I could ever uncover, or need for that matter, and chasing after such material would keep me busier than a one-legged Indian trying to stamp out a grass fire, just as they intend. The sighting I made in 1953 was the only one I needed, to absolutely confirm the existence of saucers in reality. In order for you to separate truth from lie, it is necessary to discern a predominant pattern exhibited by government "truth saboteurs", consisting of the following repetitive strategies:

1. Witness statements which are exaggerated, misstated, falsified, or obliterated; depicting witnesses as ridiculous, seeing things like "...little green men", or a saucer "two miles long", generally portraying them as "nuts", drunks, drugged, or hallucinating; this trick is contrite and easy to spot;

2. overstatement, misstatement, or entire fabrication of important physical data, such as a saucer which "...had fire shooting out all over it, with a strong smell of sulfur", or which was "transparent", "appeared and disappeared"; this creates confusion about how the saucer works, and fits in with "extraterrestrial origin" baloney, or alleged '"hallucinations", "fantasies", "lies", or "mirages";

3. use of false, government-paid or procured witnesses, made to appear as private citizens, often thrown in when an important sighting is made, to confuse the public about what was seen, especially where an articulate witness manages to register a clear statement regarding what he or she actually saw. This pits one witness against the other, in a "war of credibility" which nobody wins, and "neutralizes" the truth. The press often has little alternative but to repeat false, conflicting reports along with whatever true ones there may be, or to print none at all;

4. use of government "experts", high-ranking military know-it-alls, or so-called "scientific" witnesses, often interjected to pose as the 'last word' on a sighting. This attacks the truth, by attempting to impress the reader with the 'high credentials' of witnesses who in fact saw nothing, for the benefit of dupes who are still too ignorant to realize that the government lost its credibility long ago, and that high-ranking ex-military 'experts' rarely buck the system and are liars, even when, as 'part of the plan', they may pretend to be doing so;

5. tampering in commercial film processing labs, which are easy prey for CIA thieves and saboteurs, as I learned long ago; you only get what they want you to have. The citizen who sends film exposures of saucers to such labs, will probably end up with blank, foggy, damaged, too-dark, tampered, substituted, or entirely missing images, the film may be stolen from one's camera, even before an attempt is made to remove it for processing (as in the case of the first roll of film I used to photograph Vicki Landrum

and her radiation burns, along with photos of my Peiltochterkompass and other flying saucer equipment).

My first photos of Vicki clearly showed the burns on her arms and legs. These were stolen from my camera by an expert, in Santa Fe, from my camera as it lay in my car, just after my return from Texas. I had to use surreptitious means to obtain replacement photos, and it was necessary to circumvent adverse influences of some of the members of my own family, who were being manipulated by the CIA, via the Masonic Order and U.S. Army Intelligence operatives. Such people may be caught in a conflict between obeying request from (what they think is) the Masonic Order, and concern for the life or well-being of a family member or close friend.

Witnesses are often astounded at what the media reports as their statements, but have no chance to correct these intentional distortions or errors, and usually fail to understand the subtle nuances or scientific reasons for such misrepresented details. Most witnesses are "little fellahs", whose 'day in history' may be transfixed by that one sensational, electric event. If it is made to seem fantastic at the outset, who is going to believe their attempts to correct the distortions?

VICKI LANDRUM, ET. AL.

An example of the 'little fellah' premise I laid out in Chapter I, Vicki Landrum is a persistent, consistent, sticker to the truth. I first heard of her story around 1989 or 1990, near the time of a hearing on her incident, in Washington, D.C. The news report I heard was made around nine years after the incident occurred. The incident stuck in my mind, not only because I have so many relatives in the area where it occurred, but because I had good reason to believe there was a better, truer, story underneath the usual distortions. Some trustworthy relatives had confirmed that it was 'real'. In fact, the government would be hard pressed to cover all the relatives and other reliable contacts I could martial in that area. At the time I contacted her, Vicki Landrum resided only a few hundred yards from my sister's house, and the saucer entourage passed through areas peopled by some of my other relatives. So, despite the phony version of the incident which I had recently seen on the "Unsolved Mysteries" T.V. program, I retraced prior investigators, and determined the purpose of their lies.

I sought out Vicki Landrum in late 1992, and had some trouble finding her, even with the assistance of some of her family members, including her granddaughter. Army Intelligence had already sent a man to check me out at my sister's house, even before I decided to contact Vicki. Once located, the situation I found was not a pleasing one. If Vicki Landrum was a "sensation-seeker" who persisted in her story for profit, as rumors had it, she certainly hadn't done a very good job of it. It was easy to spread local rumors, intended to taint Vicki's credibility or motives, or damage her economic standing in the community, and I found her to be a good woman, not so different from many of the people in my own family. Her health—and wealth—had been damaged by her own government, which had subsequently misrepresented and flaunted its irresponsibility, and trashed Vicki's dignity.

There was very little if any accurate information published on Vicki Landrum before this book in 1993, after which OSI writers and film makers quickly glommed onto her, to obliterate what I said, with more falsified or distorted descriptions of the

event. Since that time, Vicki has stuck to the truth and refused to lie like they want her to ....to say she saw 'little green men', "was abducted", or "suffered time loss". Because of this book—the first to expose the Big Lie Mind Control scheme to conceal saucer secrets—the Secret Government has had to rethink its strategy. They can't get around the Landrum/Cash sighting, because it was corroborated by so many other witnesses, and because the victims suffered real physical damage, and most of all, because Vicki hasn't played their game.

The place where Vicki lived was not a fashionable neighborhood, even for the area. It was a somewhat run-down apartment complex, the main office of which was gutted by fire. Some of the people there appeared to be of the borderline (if not actual) criminal type, and it was not a place for the faint of heart or weak of stomach. Neglected, dirty, ill-clothed children wandered about, as some of their parents sat in dingy and darkened apartments. After finding the burned-out shell of the office, I managed to locate the substitute office. I found Vicki only because I have conditioned myself to question everything. Everyone, including the manager, said she didn't live there, so I found her next door to a man who said she didn't live there and he'd never heard of her. Vicki's family was nice, clean, and quiet, out of place in the complex. The apartment was well lit and friendly, with family members cozily gathered about a table, engrossed in a board game. Vicki was a little guarded at first, but soon warmed up to me, because we had some common friends, including one of my old stump-jumping buddies, Richard. She was originally from nearby Louisiana, and was typical of many of her generation, having only a high school education, and a necessity to earn a living as a wage earner. Her fine looking husband was in his retirement years, having worked in harvesting and fishing for many years, and was still working.

In 1980, Vicki Landrum and her grandson, Colby Lee Landrum (then five years old), and Vicki's friend and employer, Betty Cash, were driving at night down a state highway in Betty's car, near Huffman, Texas, after leaving the store where Betty employed Vicki. They had the distinct misfortune of encountering a malfunctioning flying saucer, limping along just above ground, and accompanied by 24 U.S. Army Chinook helicopters, two by two, each sweeping the surrounding pathways with blinding searchlights, looking for potential witnesses and obstructions. The route through which the crippled saucer and entourage was moving, was a swampy, heavily forested, non-residential one, apparently chosen as the most clandestine route under the circumstances, en route to Louisiana, probably back to a base for repairs.

The Chinook helicopters—the large ones with twin rotors—were probably present in case the saucer should have to be "freight-'coptered" back to the base in a harness, in the event it became completely disabled, or may have carried troops necessary to cordon off and secure the area, in case it crashed. The idea also seemed to have been that, with so much commotion created by the 24 helicopters, with blinding search lights and blasting air, in the dark of night, who would notice the saucer?

Electrical energy leakage from the saucer's lower section enflamed the air as it arced to the ground. The helicopter engine roar, prop blasts, and blowing leaves were confusing, deafening and tumultuous, and the lights, flames and radiation created an eerie, frightening, dangerous, and disorienting effect, as the saucer landed on the narrow black-topped roadway, just in front of the car. Vicki grabbed her grandson and bolted from the car, only to be forced back by conditions outside which were even worse. In the few seconds that Vicki and five-year-old Colby Lee were outside, the metal of the car

had heated to a sizzling temperature. As Vicki reached for the door handle, her hand was burned. She then use a part of her plastic jacket to open the door, and it was melted. She still had the damaged jacket when I interviewed her. Vicki's hand print was still burned into the dashboard of the car, where she touched it inside. Only microwaves or electrical induction could have heated the car so rapidly and only penetrating radiation, such as ultraviolet, gamma or X-ray, could have caused the radiation sickness and resultant hair loss suffered by all parties, including Betty Cash, who didn't even leave the car. The following photo was taken to replace those stolen from me, showing Vicki Landrum and her burns:

The type of burns perceptible on Vicki's head, in this small photo, are all over her body. They were caused by Tesla's invention, as stated by him, in the article *THE PROBLEM OF INCREASING HUMAN ENERGY*, (*The Century Magazine*, June 1900):

"THE FIRST PROBLEM: HOW TO INCREASE THE HUMAN MASS - THE BURNING OF ATMOSPHERIC NITROGEN": "...The flame grew larger and larger, and its oxidizing action more and more intense. From an insignificant brush discharge a few inches long it developed into a marvelous electrical phenomenon, a roaring blaze, devouring the nitrogen of the atmosphere and measuring sixty or seventy feet across."

Vicki, Colby Lee and Betty all experienced microwave (infra-red) radiation burns over their entire bodies. The electrical discharges, which ignited the oxygen and nitrogen in the air, were probably responsible for secondary radiation in the form of ultraviolet or X-rays, which caused them all the total loss of body hair. Little Colby Lee—probably due to his tender age—suffered more severe radiation sickness, and had to endure a great deal of embarrassment and inconvenience, having to wear diapers throughout his elementary and most of his junior high school years, due to the acute and continuous diarrhea he suffered as a symptom of radiation sickness. The radiation burns on Vicki's body are still plainly visible. Colby Lee's diarrhea eventually subsided. At 19 he graduated from Dayton High School. They will suffer for the rest of their lives.

The 24 helicopters were corroborated by a Dayton policeman, a Mr. Walker, who, at the time of the incident, was near Crosby, Texas, where he witnessed the same passing convoy. Vicki has always maintained that she saw a government flying saucer and other aircraft, involved in an "...experiment which had gone wrong", damaging the three of them. Vicki was directly threatened by F.B.I. agents, and a Pentagon official, a Colonel George C. Sarran, who threatened Vicki, first in Washington, D.C., and later by phone, telling her to "...shut up or else...", with the further threat that unless she did shut up, she would be unable to earn a decent living again. (This same threat has often been used and enforced by our secret government against others, including myself.) The only 'official' person to 'appear' to lend any aid, was John Schussler, of N.A.S.A, in nearby Pasadena. He was purportedly fired for continuing to support Vicki's story, but the 'firing' was only to create cover for his new job with the O.S.I. shamsters, as a

disinformationist/pseudo-'turncoat' from N.A.S.A. Schussler was only conning Vicki and spying on her. His new job attempting to convince gullible people that the "aliens are here", uses his former N.A.S.A. credentials to create pseudo-credibility. Vicki was under the false impression that Schussler was her friend in 1992, but should know by now that he wasn't.

Texas senators Lloyd Bentsen and the late John Tower, managed to refer Vicki and Colby Lee for treatment at the Scott-White veterans' hospital in Temple, Texas, but they were so rudely mistreated there, that they were forced to leave. In 1985, Betty, Vicki and Colby Lee filed suit for damages. My facsimile clipping follows:

U. S. Contesting Lawsuit Over UFO Radiation

Houston

Three people suing the federal government for $20 million say they do not know to this day what it was that hovered far over their heads and zapped them with radiation almost five years ago.

They claim it was an unidentified flying object that was escorted away by military helicopters. They say they suspect it was a secret U.S. Military experiment. In any event, they sway, the government should have warned residents that a UFO was in their area.

The military says it had nothing to do with the alleged occurrence Dec. 29, 1980, on a rural road north-east of Houston. Even if there were UFOs, a U.S. attorney says, the government has no duty to warn people about them because the government does not know whether they are dangerous.

With such straightforward arguments, the government is urging U. S. District Judge Ross Sterling to throw out a lawsuit filed here last year by former Dayton, Texas, cafe owner Betty Cash, 56, former waitress Vickie Landrum, 61, and Landrum's grandson, Colby Landrum, 11.

The suit claims that about 9 p.m. on Dec. 29, 1980, while headed for their homes in Dayton along a two-lane road about 30 miles northeast of Houston, the three encountered a brightly glowing craft the size of a city water tower. It hovered at treetop level, had red and orange flames flowing from its bottom, and bathed them in intense heat for several minutes before it was escorted away by at least 23 helicopters, they assert.

Their lawsuit, filed under the Federal Tort Claims Act, claims that the government failed to warn them of the UFO and "negligently, carelessly and recklessly" allowed it "to fly over a publicly used road and come in contact with the plaintiffs."

As a result, all suffered stomach pains, vomiting, diarrhea, radiation burns, deteriorating eyesight, and the women's hair fell out and grew back with a different texture, the suit claims. It also says they became highly sensitive to sunlight, suffered blisters and headaches, and that Cash developed breast cancer.

Despite the plaintiffs' report that there were no markings on the "large, unconventional aerial object" or on the helicopters, the lawsuit has recently moved from simply suggesting that the government merely knew about the UFO to saying that the government owned the UFO.

The government has offered affidavits from high-ranking officials that it had nothing to do with the UFO.

Dallas Times Herald

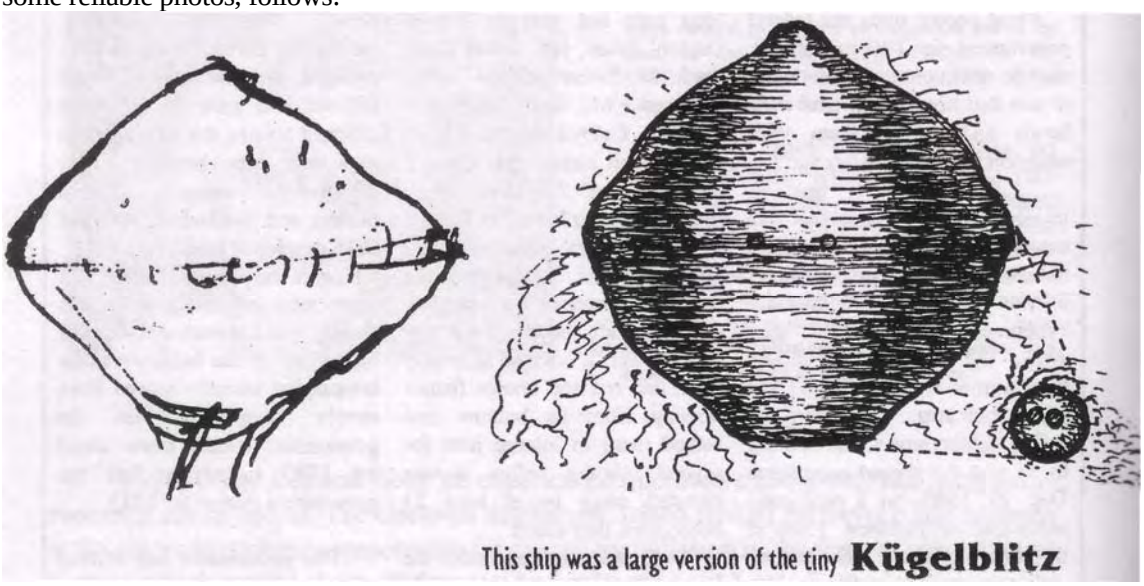
U.S. District Judge Ross Sterling (coincidentally, my distant cousin) dismissed the suit with the right to refile, and I believe it was refiled, and on last report, was still pending. Vicki's attorney, Clyde Ford, Jr., is married to my third cousin, though this fact does not necessarily mean I endorse him, though it seems that his work here has been commendable. He is a former professional with Convair, Atlas Missiles, and General Dynamics, an excellent background for a plaintiffs' attorney in this suit.

At the time of my second edition, Vicki Landrum, Colby Lee Landrum, and Betty Cash, had never been compensated, treated, or indemnified for their losses or injuries, which certainly related to the dire and mysterious circumstances as I found them. Who knows what future medical problems await them? The government, as the proximate

cause of the troubles, callously ignored and mistreated its victims, and breached its responsibilities.

In 1989, hearings on the incident were scheduled in Washington, D.C. Vicki, on their request, went to Washington for the hearings, at her own expense. There was only one brief hearing session, at which the government admitted that the operation was one of their 'experiments which had gone wrong'. All the remaining hearings were postponed and finally cancelled, as Vicki waited in Washington until completely broke, after which she returned home.

Based on my talk with Vicki, and Vicki's description and drawing, the saucer had a dulled, darkened, metallic surface (indicative of stealth technology), and was shaped rather like what Vicki described as an "ice cream cup shape" or "diamond" shape. Vicki's drawing, made on my request, placed alongside the same type saucer shown in some reliable photos, follows:



The use of Army Chinooks, when Air Force, Marine, and Naval aircraft were available in the area, suggests the "city water-tower-sized" ship was an Army or Special Forces troop-carrier, battle 'saucer, or ground weapons control ship. The air was inflamed by electrical discharges which, because the saucer was apparently malfunctioning, were being emitted from the bottom of the limping saucer, each time the pilot attempted power up to become airborne. The discharge 'leakage' about the bottom, which arced to the ground via Vicki and company—probably attracted by the metallic car—drained the energy required to maintain 'buoyancy', grounding and draining the electrical activity necessary to compress the ether carriers and block the gravitational effect on the bottom, to maintain proper flight of the already crippled saucer. The ship was probably experiencing internal dielectric breakdown of essential electrical components. The presence of the car in close proximity to its path, at the time it was crossing above the road, only made matters worse, by forcing the saucer to make a landing on the road, until the car was moved away from it so it could take off again. Under the circumstances, the pilot could not fly more than a few feet above ground, since further internal damage or a sudden loss of power at a higher altitude might have caused the saucer to smash into the ground with sufficient impact to destroy it and its

crew. They couldn't just leave it parked. The convoy should have been preceded by a scout copter, to clear the way and make sure civilians were not harmed.

The show which the T.V. production, "Unsolved Mysteries" aired on this incident, was false and exaggerated. Vicki never reported seeing "rotating lights" or a "spinning saucer" at all. The media also falsely stated that Vicki had reported seeing "little green men", or "space beings" through the "saucer's windows". This was an outright government lie. Vicki saw no windows. Red lights seen by Vicki were a horizontal row of stationary discharge electrodes, mounted in an annular line about the middle of the ship. These "lights" (actually emission electrodes) were activated in sequence, one after the other, in one direction around the ship, creating the illusion of rotation. These reddish pulses of current neutralize the "precession problem" I mentioned in the Introduction, by creating a rotation of counteractive force in diametric opposition to the precessive force, thus stabilizing a ship so the pilot has a steady view of the outside.

The government's covert Ufology lunatic fringe contingency tried to discredit the sighting for the benefit of their pseudo-skeptic counterpart, with the silly lie that the ship was an "alien flying saucer" being escorted to a "meeting between aliens and our leaders". (BIG LIE RULE NO. 1: MAKE THE LIE BIG ENOUGH). Such scenarios are often accompanied by fabricated environmentalistic bullshit, such as a desire by "aliens" to "bring us Earthlings to our senses", etc., because our "misuse of technology threatens the whole universe". Give us a break! If the entire earth or solar system were to suddenly vaporize itself in a thorough and complete nuclear explosion, the total effect would be less than that of a flea farting in a tornado.

It is also interesting to note that Whitley Strieber, in his books, or Budd Hopkins, in books such as "Intruders", never mentioned Vicki Landrum, et. al., even though Landrum said they had interviewed her. She said she adamantly refused to say "...what they wanted me to"—that she'd seen "aliens", been "abducted", or "suffered time-loss"—and instead continued to insist that what she saw were "government aircraft", (including the saucer) and nothing more. This was apparently the reason she was threatened, slandered, and never compensated for her health damage and losses, by our wonderful government. It is obvious as to how most witnesses are induced to say what their interviewers want them to, but not Vicki, a tough little lady who deserves respect.

RADIATION DANGERS

Regarding Vicki Landrum's radiation burns, the "flames" described by Vicki are 100% consistent with what Tesla described, as he developed this technology,[15] as follows:

"THE FIRST PROBLEM: HOW TO INCREASE THE HUMAN MASS - THE BURNING OF ATMOSPHERIC NITROGEN: "...The flame grew larger and larger, and its oxidizing action more and more intense. From an insignificant brush discharge a few inches long it developed into a marvelous electrical phenomenon, a roaring blaze, devouring the nitrogen of the atmosphere and measuring sixty or seventy feet across."

---

[15]Nikola Tesla, The Problem of Increasing Human Energy, The Century Magazine [June 1900].

I should also point out that the public is grossly malinformed and misinformed regarding potentially "dangerous radiation". I suffered serious radiation damage after my 13th year, so I speak with some experience. In spite of the fact that I am 6' 3" tall, my growth was stunted in my lower legs by perhaps 4", by radiation. Sound crazy? Read on.

In 1951, in my 13th year, my father wanted me to take an "uptown job", outside our own business (which I sometimes ran when my family was absent). He wanted me to meet the rest of the "business community" in our town at large, beyond the confines of our own business sphere. That was the year my 'growth spurt' occurred. I got a job at a Dunlaps Department Store a few blocks away, sweeping up the store. During rest breaks, I would often go to the shoe department, where I would stick my feet into an X-ray machine used to check out shoe fits in vitro, studying the bones of my feet and toes. The machine was called a "fluoroscope", which used 'soft' radiation, tuned to cause the bones to fluoresce, and to produce an image on the screen, as one viewed his or her feet. During the time I did this, I apparently absorbed dangerous levels of radiation, which, as should be emphasized, were of the so-called 'harmless, softer' variety (i.e., below the frequency of "hard" X-rays, but above the general frequency of ultraviolet rays). Unbeknownst to me, the radiation was killing and mutating the red blood cell production tissue in the marrow of the bones of my feet and lower legs (remember what I said about the transmutation of elements below Atomic No. 19—such as calcium—in U.V. light?).

I soon began to experience so much pain in my feet and legs, that I had to quit the job. I lost weeks of school, laying in bed with strange fevers and leg and foot pain. I became anemic, had nosebleeds, and experienced several other related symptoms. The only explanatory diagnosis by local doctors for my mysterious symptoms, was "growing pains". I had to drop athletics for a year. My time in the 100 yard dash increased from 11 to 15 seconds. My lower legs became "bird-like", the objects of ridicule, as I struggled through my upper body, to make my sluggish legs move faster. My upper body continued to develop, making the disproportionate lower legs look even stranger. There was no medical connection made at the time by my doctor, as we were unaware that the machine at Dunlaps had caused my life-threatening symptoms. I still have problems from it, and have had discoloration around my feet and lower legs since my 13th year.

Though available to any kid or other person who happened to wander into the department store, the radiation was a dangerous, public hazard. Powerful cosmic radiation of very high frequency (the ZPR) penetrates our bodies all the time, passing even through the thickest lead. It passes clear through the earth without incident. Its frequencies are so high and wavelengths so small as to pass between the tightest of spaces within and between the atoms of even the densest of matter. It is when the wavelengths correspond to the resonant frequencies of our bodily atoms, that dangerous reactions occur. Relatively low frequency positive radiation of lowest energy, penetrates the clothing and flesh, and reacts with the calcium in our bones. The bone marrow in the lower body, in children, produces much of the red blood cells needed to maintain healthy life. As a child matures, these lower bones eventually stop producing blood cells, after which the bone marrow in the upper body continues to produce blood cells. At the time I was exposed to the Dunlaps fluoroscope, my body was already in transition to

produced in my lower legs. I came very near to dying shortly after the incident. As best I could determine, I crossed the danger line of 'radioactive relaxation', in 1977, 26 years following my exposure. This period varies according to the radiation involved, in respect to the particular matter excited by it, so this was just an educated guess.

Ordinary matter which has been 'excited' by powerful ionizing radiation, may show no detectable outward signs that it can 'relax' at some future date, to produce 'synthetic radioactivity' which is harmful to anyone near it. This is one of the reasons the F.B.I. conceals a book I mention below, and Los Alamos refuses to sell lead which has been used for radioactive shielding, along with the fact that lead shielding may contain some radium atoms (as well as gold) into which some atoms may have been transmuted, by absorption of high energy radiation, during experiments. Since radium emits gamma rays and produces alpha particles of around 4.5 Mev ("million electron volts"), the lead could be very dangerous.

Before 1892, a Frenchman named Gustave Le Bon wrote a book on "synthetic radioactivity"[16]. This book related to the use of ordinary, non-radioactive elements, to create nuclear reactions, thus opening the way for safe nuclear power generators. The book was among those on the F.B.I.'s 'retrieval list', in its 1942 sweep through all U.S. public libraries, book stores, universities, and even private collections and libraries. A copy of the book formerly used by and available to Dr. T. Henry Moray, in his local Utah public library, was confiscated by the F.B.I. in 1942.

In 1943, when Moray was attempting to reconstruct his radiant energy generator of the 1920's (the 50 kw one), he sought the book at the library, and was subjected to F.B.I. threats. Nonetheless, Moray was able to surreptitiously procure three copies of the book from a friend who was a book dealer, for his private library.

Le Bon's book related to techniques 'rediscovered' by me in the 1970s, as well as to the kind of radiation which almost ended my boyhood life for no apparent reason. Similarly, particle beam devices employing ultraviolet laser concepts, in the hands of Secret Government CIA maniacs, are in my estimation the basis for "stealth murder weapons" being tested on cattle, for which the 'mutilations' are their removal of tissue from the cattle to test for organic damage effects. Such weapons, tuned to U.V. frequencies, will disable a victim's T4 immune cells, can cause death by "terminal pneumonia", other related organic failures, cancer (by destroying pl6 and p53 oncogenes), or tuberculosis[17]. This can also be called "A.I.D.S." or "hantavirus", since all these victims—including cancer victims treated with chemotherapy—once their T4 immune cell count drops below 250, will die of terminal pneumonia, brought on by "M.A.I." (Microbacterium Arium Intercellulare), the ordinary 'soil bacteria' we all carry in our systems. In healthy persons, these M.A.I, seek out and destroy cancer cells five times as fast as any known anti-cancer drug.[18]

Despite government misuse, "synthetic radiation" reactors—electric power generators using elements of low atomic number—are safer than any known means of

---

[16]Gustave Le Bon, The Evolution of Matter, publisher unknown [ca. 1890].

[17]Announcement by scientists, M. D. Anderson Cancer Center, Houston, Tex. [Jan. 20, 1994], concerning immuno-suppression by U.V. radiation.

[18]William R. Lyne, Stealth I: De-Population by U. V. Immuno-Suppression, The Leading Edge, Yelm, Wa., Issue No. 76 [Nov. 1994].

energy production, even coal or oil. My conclusions, based partly on my study of Blokhin's book (see bibliography), were further confirmed by my contact with an unnamed Mormon who experimented with and manufactured power generators based on Moray's generators. Unfortunately, Moray's theory and description of his radiant energy invention can't be trusted, as he apparently didn't know how it worked. In addition, he often used fake diagrams to conceal his work from prying government snoops, and the diagrams and drawings available do not provide so good an idea as my drawings do. Some of my designs combined ideas of Tesla and Moray, with some of my own. I conceived most of them independently, before I ever heard of Moray, whose plans bear no similarity to mine. I will give all these plans to the public in other books.

Though I created an "on-sale bar" for my universal rotary power transmission (Appendix A), by offering it for sale to the Japanese public in a 1991 newspaper ad, the appendix clearly bars anyone from patenting it.

My introduction to the 'unnamed Mormon' was mysteriously arranged by a man who sought revenge against the Illuminati, after they had arranged for him to be falsely accused, tried, convicted, and sent to federal prison for several years, for alleged S.E.C. violations, following the discovery by he and his friends of an ancient, revolutionary and simple piece of mining equipment, called the "Clute Machine", which had once threatened the Illuminati monopoly on precious and 'strategic' metals production and banking, many years before. After finding the old machine sealed away inside an abandoned Colorado mine tunnel, the group restored it to working condition. After news of their discovery leaked out to the Illuminati, the group was then Judas-goated into a criminally conceived and orchestrated federal entrapment scheme, involving the use of a federal con-man who wormed his way into their confidence. I will reveal the details of this simple machine in another book. It is already "public domain".

The typical coercive suppression of monopoly-threatening technology by the Illuminati, is carried out mostly under federal S.E.C. regulations, through judicial abuse which is seemingly unrelated to the technology it is used to suppress. When you think about it, this is practically the only convenient way for them to do so, other than outright brutal murder, which lacks the 'cover' provided by "color of law", though murder is at least more criminally honest and complete.

THE U.F.O. CLEANERS

In the early '50s, soon after WWII, my uncle, Angus Thomas Benton, Jr. ("Uncle A.T.") and his wife Ida, often watched flying saucers at night, as they patrolled the skies above the Intercoastal Canal, on the gulf of Mexico, within 20 miles of the Vicki Landrum incident, in Pasadena, Texas.

During the war, A.T. had been a crack antiaircraft gunner on the U.S.S. South Dakota (rear left deck, beneath which a Japanese kamikaze plane crashed and exploded just beneath his platform, killing many of those below deck, as A.T. blazed away, during the "Great South Pacific Turkey Shoot"). Later, the U.S. fleet took possession of the Nagato Maru, Flagship of the Imperial Japanese First Fleet, in Tokyo Bay, in 1945. A.T. was sent aboard in charge of a five-man crew instructed to collect and arrange worthy souvenirs, from which the officers were to take "first pick". Always one to practice fair play, A.T. took his own first pick, including Admiral Isoroku Yamamoto's 'sea glasses', a giant pair of binoculars originally made and presented to the admiral,

practice fair play, A.T. took his own first pick, including Admiral Isoroku Yamamoto's 'sea glasses', a giant pair of binoculars originally made and presented to the admiral, who had a keen appreciation for photography and optical science. The glasses were one of twelve pairs made for the Japanese fleet, of which only seven pairs then remained, since the other five pairs had gone to Davy Jones' locker. A.T. dismantled the binoculars, threw away his clothes, wrapped the Nagato's battle flag around half the binoculars, and stuffed them into his sea bag. He paid his best friend to carry the other half, wrapped in his clothes. The Nagato was eventually sank in the Bikini Island hydrogen bomb test, in the '50s,

Yamamoto (who purportedly died earlier in the war), with the assistance of an American-trained deaf mute, had used the glasses to read U.S. Admiral William F. ("Bull") Halsey's lips, as he gave commands from the bridge of his flagship, in an earlier engagement from which Yamamoto had wisely decided to withdraw. The binoculars could so magnify a person's face, eight miles away, that it appeared to be only a few feet away. One could also see the rings of Saturn, etc. A.T. and Ida used the giant woolen Battle Flag of the Imperial Japanese First Fleet, as a bedspread for several years (somehow in all this, there is the flavor of Bill Mauldin's Willy and Joe!). The souvenirs are now in the possession of my cousin.

After the war, A.T. and Ida started a cleaning shop in Pasadena, which they called the "U.F.O. Cleaners" (for "Undoubtedly Finest Offered"). A.T. placed Yamamoto's sea glasses atop the roof of his shop, where he and Ida watched the flying saucers at night, as they glided over the intercoastal sea lanes. A.T. said some of them appeared to have "quilted aluminum" on their bottoms. This apparently was the cris-cross ridge patterns of the early stealth technology, developed by the Germans during the wartime years for their U-boats, and adapted to the saucers.

Contrary to 'history', Admiral Yamamoto, Commander-in-Chief of the Japanese First Fleet, may not have been shot down over the western Solomons on Apr. 18, 1943, but may have secretly surrendered to U.S. Naval personnel near Guadalcanal, and been taken to a military jail in the Phillippines, were my neighbor, Antonio Sanchez, probably stood guard over him. When the admiral (Yamamoto?) told Tony in perfect English, that he was educated at Stanford, Tony asked him, "Then why you fight us?" Yamamoto (?) solemnly answered, "That was the most regrettable mistake of my entire career."

"STARS"

The most obvious sightings today, are right under your noses, if you live in certain areas of the country. For over 40 years, saucers have been 'placed' in the skies, locked into stationary positions by the inertial navigation system using the Peiltochterkompass, for use on the Nazi saucers as well as the rockets carrying neutron bomb warheads in the 1945 stalemate. The systems allow saucers to pose as 'stars' as they follow constellations across the night skies, testing new equipment and procedures, and performing experiments and surveillance on us. During the daylight hours, saucers are less visible, and are often concealed by heavy dark clouds which Dr. Wilhelm Reich called "DOR" ("Deadly ORgone Energy"). Such hoverings were documented in the early '50s by Reich, over his Maine observatory, using time-lapse photography with such skill that the government labeled them as "subversion" and "espionage". Reich's photos, which I have seen, revealed erratic movements of the saucers, in contrast to the

background constellations which produced consistently parallel, curved streaks of normal stars and planets across the film, as the earth rotated. Since at the time, use of the guidance systems on saucers was still under development, and since the saucers were so electrically unstable, their presence in the time-lapse photos was starkly revealed because they emitted a different light spectrum, and made brighter, 'smeared', meandering blurbs, cutting across the background of fainter stars.

Though Reich—an Austrian Jew—held some rather leftist views, he would have been immediately snuffed by the Russian Communists, and certainly didn't work for them. As a psychiatrist, he viewed sexual repression as the primary cause of fascism. His experiments on what he called Orgone Energy, were the basis for the government's abuse of process under which he was not only incarcerated under allegations of insanity, but also held under a conflicting criminal charge of contempt, for violating a federal injunction against his work, which it was alleged constituted "illegal medical practices", pursuant to F.D.A. regulations.

Reich claimed there is an "Orgone Energy" ("ORGanic Energy"), which is a naturally-occurring, life-sustaining, environment-permeating ethereal energy related to beneficial negative ions, and that Orgone has its antithesis, "DOR" ("Deadly ORgon energy") , a toxic, life-endangering, positively-ionizing substance , related to the 'free radicals' often associated with cancer and other diseases, and manifested in certain types of heavy, dark clouds. He invented a device called a "cloud buster", a trombone-like sliding, variable antenna, which inductively grounded the DOR clouds and "erased" them, conducting their death-dealing energy into a container of water connected to the antenna. Purportedly, the water was converted into heavy water (deuterium). Reich also discovered that his cloud buster could disable UFOs (a discovery which evidently led to his demise).

Reich claimed that, in the presence of great amounts of Orgone energy, his instruments detected dangerous levels of DOR around his laboratory, despite 'radioactive shielding', when 1 gram of radium was placed there in a thick lead container. He at first blamed the dangerous effects on the radium, until his discovery of the flying saucers hovering continually over his lab. This discovery inflamed the government, and marked Reich for death, perhaps because he had stumbled across government "death ray" experiments on the public (including Reich).

Reich claimed the DOR from the saucers was used to create desertification. On October 10, 1954, Reich disabled two UFOs. On October 15, his associate, William Moise, proudly presented Reich's findings to Colonel Wertenbaker, Deputy Commander, A.T.I.C, Wright-Patterson A.F.B., Ohio. Though Reich believed he had "made contact with aliens", he had "made contact with the Pentagon" instead. He had stuck his head right into a Secret Government meat grinder.

On November 2, 1954, Reich embarked on an experimental expedition to Arizona, where he purportedly proved that, by use of his "cloud-buster" to remove DOR being placed in the desert environment by UFOs, grass grew a foot high in previously desertified soil. On return from Arizona, he was arrested by the F.D.A. and jailed in Lewisburg Penitentiary, for violation of an injunction, and was found dead in his cell on Nov. 3, 1957, a week before he was to be released. His books, publications and scientific literature were banned and burned.

In the '50s I saw a film made of Reich outside his Maine laboratory, as he erased a DOR cloud over a nearby body of water and some trees, using his cloud-buster. To his

amazement, with the erasure of the cloud, a flying saucer was discovered hovering inside it. Reich's antenna apparently grounded the electrical system on the saucer, and it fell toward the ground, as he and his small film crew ran toward the downed saucer, knocking the camera over in the process and ending the film. The government has since stolen the film. The kind of saucer shown in it was of the same general type seen by me in 1953. It is my belief that either a "stealth ray-gun" or the corona discharges of the saucers creates the "DOR" effects observed by Reich.]

There have been many things written about Reich, much of which is disinformational. Though he made some important discoveries, Reich seemed to be unclear about what was happening, believing that what he was observing were "alien" saucers. It appears to me that Reich had either discovered a dangerous side-effect of flying saucers, or had discovered secret experimentation on the populace and the environment. I tend to think the latter is true, and I would not like to find out that saucers are inherently dangerous. I tend to think that the DOR was the product of intentional "population control" methods and "stealth weaponry" being tested or carried out on the general population and the environment by the Secret Government, since Reich was murdered to silence his investigation.

Saucers from Sandia and Manzano Bases usually proceeded to their initial night-time positions along my southeastern horizon, at about the same time each evening, in military fashion, despite the fact that sunset comes earlier in winter. The best visibility occurs seasonally, whenever the evening trips coincide with dusk...that time between day and night. In the brightness of full daylight in midsummer, a glowing saucer is invisible, while in the half-light of dusk, it is not only obvious, but usually shares the sky with no visible stars or planets to confuse it with. Many take up their positions right in front of cloud banks which are clearly visible along the horizon behind them at that time of the evening, before the darkness has caused the clouds to become somewhat transparent to the stars. It has always amazed me that people unquestioningly view these 'stars'—with clouds behind them—without realizing that clouds are never behind stars!

Saucers from Los Alamos (which is primarily engaged in scientific research), have usually taken up their positions further to my northeast, along the western slopes of the southern Sangre de Cristos, often over the outskirts of Santa Fe. Laser communications beams between the saucers and Los Alamos laboratories, can sometimes be seen, especially when there is mist or dust in the air. Those over the Pecos area to my east usually follow the constellations westward across the night sky where, after around 10 hours of flight, from positions just above the western horizon, they suddenly zip back to their bases just before dawn. The tell-tale things which obviate these saucers are: (1) The off-color (positive, ultraviolet) light spectrum on their bottoms; (2) the overall excessive brightness; (3) the 'hairy' (negative, infra-red) coronal brush fanning out from their tops; (4) the precession, causing excessive and 'overly regular' blinking; (5) the explosive, strobe-like flashes of electrical emissions from an 'anti-precession' stabilizing system (usually used when the saucers are moving slowly); and, (6) the bright red, green, blue, white and yellow emissions of laser communications devices.

These phony stars can be segregated from the real ones, by use of special photographic equipment, using spectrographic means to differentiate the radiation projected by them, or can be detected by amateur photographers by use of special films, filters and lenses, which are available commercially. Detection is also possible by digital

analysis of video footage shot with telephoto lenses. At night, it is usually difficult to make out the surface details of these saucers, because of the obliterating contrast between the bright surface corona and the black sky, which defeats the eyes. That is the reason the best photos have been made in bright sunlight, which penetrates the corona clouds and reflects back off the metallic surfaces underneath. Dulled, darkened surfaces have been used, but the saucers still show as obvious silhouettes.

The alarming degree to which many people have become brainwashed is demonstrated by the fact that these saucers are in plain view at night, yet most people ignore them, accepting them as 'normal'. Many younger people (below forty) have never seen the sky any other way. Yet, in many cases, the behavior of the saucers is so outrageous, that only a fool would accept them as "stars", "planes", or "helicopters". They hover for hours, blinking, wobbling, flashing, meandering, beaming out multi-colored lights, and often jumping or shooting around, while numbed-out, intimidated, brainwashed people refuse to allow themselves to believe there is anything extraordinary or unnatural about them. I once pointed a large one out to a neighbor, as it hovered over a nearby government bombing range between Galisteo and Santa Fe. We then drove from Lamy, to Galisteo, across a dirt road to State Rd. 14, up to Santa Fe, then back to Lamy. We drove completely around it, while continually viewing it, yet afterward, my neighbor refused to allow himself to believe he had seen anything other than a 'star', even after I explained how and why one cannot 'drive around' a star!

Another characteristic I noted while viewing saucers many times, as they flew right over Santa Fe at night, is that they appear to imitate small planes, but they seem to have a problem with moving at the speed of a normal plane. If they move too fast, they make brightly glowing, tell-tale streaks, so must move 'too' slow to disguise this (about 20-30 m.p.h.), below the stall speed of a light plane. Some of the strobe-like flashes are not stabilization systems, but are used to hide the faint glows of the saucers' hulls. Also, the fact that it takes a 'slow-moving' saucer too long to pass over Santa Fe, while making no noise, is another dead give-away, especially when a saucer just 'parks' for a half hour or so over the southwest outskirts of Santa Fe.

I once pointed a saucer out to a tenant, as it soundlessly approached Lamy low to the ground from the east, flashing its laser communicators, as it went down not over 250 yards away. The tenant, named Kroy Rubin, was totally unable to relate to the experience as being real. In a couple of days, I heard rumors that a nearby rancher—Joe Miller—had complained that 'dogs from Lamy', or 'coyotes', had killed some of his livestock, within a hundred yards of where I saw the saucer land.

Since publication of my first edition in 1993, the saucers normally visible near my home began to diminish, as the government began to exercise more discretion. More recently, the number of saucers is only a tiny percentage of what it once was.

Shortly after my first printing, I discussed this book with Joe Miller, while attending a small annual community flea market in nearby Galisteo. Joe said he had four young bulls mutilated at that time, which were 'bloodless', with the usual precise, cauterized cuts, etc. The bulls appeared to be air-dropped back into the pasture. The rumor I had heard—that Joe believed "dogs" had mutilated his cattle—was a completely false rumor spread by the O.S.I. Joe said that he had never suspected "dogs" or "predators", since the 'mutilations' were clearly of human, government origin, consistent with the findings of State Police investigator Gabe Valdez, who had performed the investigation. Not only had I and Kroy Rubin watched a saucer go down on Miller's

ranch, but had done so while it was either in the process of picking up Joe Miller's bulls, or dropping them back into the pasture. Since Miller is definitely among those like myself, who think Gabe Valdez has done a good job, he has been intensely harassed for over five years by the County of Santa Fe and the Sheriffs department, using any excuse. In 1995 they abused Joe and his wife, and eventually had to pay him considerable damages. The manner of continued abuse indicated that there was a concealed motive behind the abuse, which was not apparent from the circumstances, similar to how I was treated for so long.

I theorized a link between the legal abuse and Miller's corroboration of Gabe Valdez' investigation and theory, since I had been severely abused by the judicial and legal system under trumped up charges based on lies and tampered evidence, at the same time that ex-FBI agent Ken Rommel was conducting a mutilations 'investigation' through the Santa Fe D.A.'s office.

The multicolored laser communications system I observed on the saucer which landed on Miller's land was identical to what I'd observed in the mid south Atlantic in late 1974. This system on the saucers allows for multiple transmissions, as well as complex coding. Unless an observer is in alignment with the laser trajectory, he cannot possibly listen to it, or receive it, and then only if he has the special receiver. The combined or separate beams carry the coded or voiced communications, through modulations in beam intensity and intermittence. A receiver consists of a special scope with lenses, which receives and translates the beams, similar to an infra-red system. The communications system is very secure, outside of personal compromises, and traverses the problem of radio wave blockage or interference from electrical corona discharges from the saucer. The only draw back is the necessity for line-of-sight communications. Those having access are controlled by national security contracts, making them criminally liable and subject to severe penalties (even death) without hearing or trial, for a breach, under "national security laws". These procedures are unconstitutional, but the Trilateral Commission/Illuminati has never been hindered by that, and neither have the Masonic Order, the Jesuits, the Mafia, the K.G.B., the Mossad, or any other secret organization.

I observed this system in October, 1974, in the mid south Atlantic, en route between Savannah, Georgia, and Casablanca, Morocco, while aboard the Kraljevicka, one of the freighters of the Jugolinea, the socialist Yugoslavian national shipping line. Ironically, it was only a few days after I had met and shook hands with Trilateral Commission member Jimmy Carter, a former nuclear engineer and sub commander, as he campaigned for the governorship of Georgia, in the historic part of Savannah near the old Customs House, during a holiday, shortly before the November elections of 1974.

The weather was stormy on that passage, and since I have always enjoyed storms, I had walked out onto the left rear deck just after supper, to observe the sunlight, as it disappeared beneath a hole in the clouds toward the western horizon, on that October evening. I had been on deck for only a couple of minutes when I observed a flying saucer coming out of the clouds around a mile behind the ship. It took up and maintained a steady position, as it began to make laser transmissions, presumably to the ship's communications officer on the bridge. I observed these transmissions for around thirty minutes, before the saucer retreated back up into the clouds above it, as the golden light faded from the window in the clouds over the gusty sea. I sighed in amazement, then walked back inside. As I stepped into the hallway, three of the Yugoslavian officers

came downstairs from the bridge at my upper right. The first man—the communications chief—was pushing a little telescopic antenna-like projection in on what appeared to be a small electro-optical scope he had in his hands, upon which I saw what appeared to be calibrations, code letters, lenses, and sensors. As the three officers saw from whence I came, they immediately slowed, and looked at each other and back to the scope, as the officer sheepishly placed it in his upper shirt pocket, and they walked on by, shaking their heads and mumbling pursed-lipped good-evenings, with some embarrassment.

At that time, N.A.T.O. 'war games' were occurring. Though Yugoslavia was not a member, they conducted 'sympathy maneuvers', rolling their tanks and divisions into place along the Soviet borders facing Russia. I knew that a helicopter coming from a ship nowhere to be seen, would not have stayed so long, or come from so far away, or have been taking such risks in stormy weather, way out in the central South Atlantic. 1,100 miles to land in either direction. It should also be remembered that Tesla was a native of Yugoslavia.

Though the Kraljevicka carried the red star of communism on its stacks, its crew and officers were at least 95% pro-capitalist. However, among all of the Mediterranean or Adriatic nations, socialist Yugoslavia was pitifully poor. Those lucky enough and enterprising enough to sail on the Judgolinea in 1974, had opportunities to engage in some profitable smuggling. For those not so inclined, it was like a sentence to prison, away from their families, with pay below that of their international capitalist contemporaries. One young officer, recently married, wanted to take his wife and defect, because he had spent only a couple of weeks with her out of his first two years of marriage. The socialist government required him to work for menial wages on the ship until he had 'repaid the state' for his engineering education. He was too naive and inexperienced to smuggle, but some young members of the crew were already making plenty of money without the benefits of a formal education, because of their 'supplemental' smuggling income. One enterprising young sailor, at the bottom of the totem pole, made fake soles for his shoes out of 'blonde Lebanese' and 'black Pakistani' hashish, wore them ashore and sold them, then brazenly waltzed back up the gang-plank in classy, new and dapper attire, and a pocket full of money.

The captain's pay was round $4,000 per year, yet he was obviously a closet capitalist who supplemented his income similarly, on a higher scale, judging by his smooth demeanor, and the car from Santa Fe in which he arrive at the ship, just before departing Houston. I would tend to think "Russian icons", since I knew the car belonged to a Santa Fe art dealer I knew, of Yugoslavian descent. I recently—over 24 years later--met his cousin in Santa Fe, so I guess my assumptions were correct.

One young crew member, whose ambition it was to become a successful, American-style rock musician, had to wear long-sleeved shirts to conceal the "Young Communist Pioneers" tatoo which he had foolishly allowed to be put on his arm during his earlier years, later concealed in shame, so that other crew members would not point at it and jeer. Only a small number of passengers or crew were K.G.B. informants or agents, as was obvious from their sour and bitter dispositions, and the way everyone avoided them, or behaved hypocritically in the presence of. The young Yugoslavians were generally hostile toward domination by the Russians, and proud of Yugoslavia's long tradition of fierce and heroic warriors. The ancient pride and traditions of seafaring Anatolians could not be so easily erased.

It is unfortunate that in the past few years since the breakup of the Soviet Union, Yugoslavia has degenerated into a war-torn region in which ethnic and religious groups have slaughtered each other, and destroyed many of the beautiful and historic old cities and towns. The root of this squabbling appears to be instigated by the Illuminati, primarily through religious leaders, while seeing to it that plenty of arms are supplied from outside. This is not a tradition of which Serbo-Croatian 'warriors' can be proud, for only warriors who fights for freedom against oppression can be heroes. Shooting your neighbors and their babies, then raping and mutilating their wives and daughters, is not heroic, but yet another black page in history which one would expect to find associated with Ghengis Khan, Stalin, or Hitler, not with the Serbo-Croatians of today's world.

Since this book has stirred up a renewed interest in "government flying saucers" in this growing area, with several new subdivisions nearby, the Secret Government is now being forced by the publicity into finding other areas further away from encroaching population, since people seem to be rediscovering the validity of their own eyesight.

THE MIND CLEANERS

As you may have noticed, the "space alien" propaganda blitzes come in periodic waves, on a regular basis, to continually revive in your mind the corporate lie they have already planted there, that space aliens are "here". As long as we, the tax payers, through our government, continue to supply the money for the personnel, scripts, and productions, Hollywood will continue to use our funds to brainwash and deceive us, under the guise of "entertainment". Lately, the Official Big Liars have settled down to a single 'type' of space alien, which looks suspiciously like an old comic book type, which conveniently also looks like a small human being actor, outfitted with a more easily fabricated costume, mask, and makeup; this also looks like the rhesus monkies of the "Roswell" and "MJ-12" hoaxes. The eyes are sunglass-type dark lenses, which conceal the actors' human eyes. This format was necessitated by the fact that some of the Old Big Lies had not only become difficult to fabricate in a convincing way (four arms, serpent skin, etc.), even for an increasingly more sophisticated audience, but also because a more "humanoid" type "space alien" format has proven to be more believable, and can be more easily faked by actors, makeup artists, costumers, and special effects technicians. The huxters can also point back to the corny Roswell hoax, minus the embarrassingly stupid photos, and, using the MJ-12 documents created in 1985 based on the 'standard' format, which harks back to the 'cynocephalus' rhesus monkies of the originally bungled Roswell hoax. They have returned to the Roswell hoax, like dogs returning to lick up their own vomit.

The scenario has progressed much further out in Nevada's so-called "Dreamland", at Groom Lake, where the government has set up almost an entire base for this fakery. There are some highly classified projects under way at the base, but due to its weird terrain and obscure location, the government also uses the base for one of its special misinformation centers, perhaps to emphasize its need to conceal the projects. Security agents specially trained in the hoax—like Bob Lazar—convince their curious victims on the outside, that they are "ex-employees" of an "Area 51" top secret government project, and go through incredibly complex and expensive manipulations, to convince "specially chosen" (i.e., gullible) suckers, that they are attempting to "alarm the public" about how

"aliens from space are taking over". They drug the rubes, take them to a special part of their "secret base", and expose them to "things"—such as a fake little flying saucer with a tiny seat in it—designed to convince them that a small, non-human 'alien' had come to earth in it, so that the dupes will go out and "spread the word". Bob Lazar did this to a somewhat easy-mark gullible friend of mine, who is still unable to accept the fact that our government would go to such extremes to hide flying saucers being operated by it. The government even uses "designer drugs" in this brainwashing project, skillfully making suggestions under their influence, breaking down psychological resistance, and inducing very convincing hallucinations, while the victims remain unaware that they are under the influence of drugs. (Yes, I know what you guys are up to!) The fact remains that many people really want to believe such lies, right along with a lot of the other mystical baloney some people want to cling to, like an old Viking who can't stop swearing to Odin. The old Army "Mind Control" experiments support these hoaxes. That means that the U.S. Army and the intelligence community were probably conducting their original experiments for use on us for the CFR all along, rather than for use on any "foreign enemy". (See Walter Bowart's Operation Mind Control, and John Mark's The Search for the "Manchurian Candidate", for some more related background information.)

The basic thing drastically contradicting this scenario, is that anyone working in such a project—including Bob Lazar—would have a top-secret or higher clearance, and would now be in jail or dead, for violating the national security agreement they signed when their clearance was issued. He would be behind bars or worse, for merely confirming anything seen, known, or even suspected as a consequence of working there. This would happen especially if it were true that space aliens were visiting us, or were taking over. I signed a national security agreement in 1957, when I was only eighteen years old, and in those days, it was understood by most that the penalty could include an "executive termination order" (an order to assassinate a disobedient person).

Though I don't want to scare you, some unfortunates in the more distant past have been lobotomized, incarcerated in asylums and perpetually drugged or sedated, jailed in special prisons, illegally entrapped, falsely convicted and imprisoned, driven insane, crippled, given "dumb drugs", impoverished, had their marriages or families torn apart, turned into homeless persons or vagrants, totally intimidated, socially isolated, or had their credibilities ruined so that no one would believe them. Wilhelm Reich was arrested, incarcerated in an asylum, and murdered there. His arrest came only two days after a discussion he had with Einstein at Princeton, about his investigation at his Maine lab involving discoveries concerning flying saucers.

There seems to be more probability for legal protection today from the kinds of abuse which only a few years ago the government could get away with, while taking their impunity for granted, but the public is much less tolerant to such abuse today.

Consistent with Jefferson's adage that "the price of liberty is eternal vigilance", we must forever question everything concerning flying saucers, gravity, and "extraterrestrials", and realize that the Secret Government is responsible for endless misinformation, overstatement and understatement (the "untruth, the half-truth and the truth-and-a-half). We should question outrageous claims of personal experiences which are obviously fabricated by liars, drug-induced dupes, nuts, or secret agents, and remember not to confuse them with legitimate witnesses. Something like "...I met space beings..", does several destructive things. It discredits legitimate witnesses by

association, and thereby helps to conceal technology. If you have seen something which does not comport with accepted theories, and talk about it, be forewarned that "truth is stranger than fiction", and can damage one's credibility. Sometimes, too much truth, too soon, is more than most people can handle.

Insidiously, agents of the Secret Government pound away from every conceivable perspective. While some govenment fronts (mostly "UFOlogists") promote the paranormal, others, such as one led by Philip Klass, pose as debunkers, which I call "pseudo-debunkers", in support of the government, which 'officially' denies everything. Paranormalists, pseudo-debunkers, and government deniers form a triangle of withering crossfire, and triangles, as you should know, are strong, rigid shapes, unless they are composed of weak or brittle materials. Rationalists ought to occupy the side held by the paranormalists, who actually belong with the pseudo-debunkers, since their undisclosed ulterior agenda is the perpetuation of 'party-line' relativism (which Klass wouldn't dare have the guts to oppose), based on a Platonist epistemology. In truth, all three sides of the triangle are created and controlled by the O.S.I. The pseudo-debunkers are led by Philip Klass, ostensibly sponsored by the Smithsonian Institution, and Klass, the government spokesmen, and the paranormalists/UFOlogists are all restricted and controlled by the N.S.A./CIA/O.S.I.,

C.S.I.C.O.P. and the "pseudo-skeptic" movement, represented primarily by the Skeptical Inquirer magazine, and The Skeptic magazine, were created by the O.S.I./CIA to make inroads into the humanist/skeptic philosophical movement, and to covertly control it (as they had done with the Libertarian movement) because they correctly perceived a potential future threat from this quarter, represented by reasonable and analytical people like me. The following facsimile clipping, of March 9, 1991, (original in The Santa Fe New Mexican) announced a "debunking" lecture by Philip Klass, entitled "Bringing UFOs Down to Earth" (for which we already know what the conclusion was) as follows (emphasis mine):

UFO Expert To Speak Monday

A recognized **expert** on sightings of unidentified flying objects will give a public talk Monday at Los Alamos National Laboratory titled, "Bringing UFOs Down to Earth."

Philip Klass, author of four books on unidentified flying objects, or UFOs, said his talk will give the definitive answer to the questions: "Is the world being visited by **strange craft from distant worlds?** Or, has a large segment of the public, including **even experienced military and airline pilots, become unwitting victims of myth and their imaginations?**"

Klass is a **founding member** of a group called **Committee for the Scientific Investigation of Claims of the Paranormal.**

The talk is scheduled to begin at 3:45 p.m. Monday, March 11, at the Physics Building Auditorium. The auditorium is on the first floor of building 215 in the lab's main technical area, about half a block west of Pajarito Road, south of West Jemez Road. A large wooden sign on Parajito Road shows where to turn.

The "questions" asked by Klass were really statements, in which he purported to arrogate to himself what "...even experienced military and airline pilots" saw, presuming that they were "...unwitting victims of myth and their imaginations." These pilots fly-almost every day, for thousands of hours, for thousands of days. What would they know about what they see? When you board an airliner, you place your life in their hands, but if you believed Klass, you would never ride an airplane again! Experienced pilots have years of training and experience interpreting what they see—weather patterns, cloud formations, other aircraft, velocities, directions, etc., etc.—and military pilots are trained to identify other aircraft and their flight characteristics very specifically. What do the hell do they know? Why, Philip Klass, who flies his CIA desk all over the world...in his dreams...knows more than the pilots do, right? The following facsimile clipping, from the Associated Press, concerns some reports of the 'unwitting victims" (emphasis mine):

Air force tracking UFOs

BRUSSELS, Belgium - This country's air force has joined scores of Belgians befuddled by **hundreds of UFO sightings across night skies in recent months.**

In the latest report, **two air force F-16 jet fighters used their radar screens to track an object** that, according to a military official, "exceeded the limits of conventional aviation."

Speaking at a news conference Wednesday, Belgian Air Force Col. Wilfried de Brouwer said the UFO dived from about 10,000 to 4,000 feet in two seconds. At the same time, it increased its speed from 600 to 1,100 miles an hour.

The Associated Press

What do these Belgian military officials, fighter pilots, and hundreds of reporting witnesses know about what they saw? Phil Klass knows better than THEY do, by golly.

Flying saucers are seen by pilots with good eyesight, flying in their vicinity—up in the sky—often from above. Klass has made a "paranormal claim" here again, that hundreds—even thousands—of separate people (including professional aeronautical experts) have "mystically" seen the same things, at the same times. And some of these people were airline pilots, military pilots, radar operators, etc.—recognized "experts" in what they do, which is flying, controlling, and identifying aircraft (really a bunch of bumbling amateurs, in comparison to Klass, wouldn't you say?).

These were not members of some fanatical religion, witnessing an "apparition of the Virgin", etc., but certified, professional, experienced, aeronautical experts, required to pass high level visual and spatial perception tests, who are constantly tested for signs of psychiatric problems, whose experience is relied upon by thousands of people. Klass, on the other hand, has YEARS of experience, in his CIA office, of imaginary flights in his DESK, which, I'm telling you, really does some aerobatics, by golly (only in Klass's imagination).

Klass completely evaded the point, addressing only the allegations of paranormalists, as if they are somehow the ones mystically "chosen" to see flying saucers. Klass's allegations were completely unsupported by "physical evidence" that the people who reported the sightings were making any paranormal claims, or that they believe in anything paranormal whatsoever. By Klass's own standard, his claim was a knowingly false, fraudulent claim, more appropriately called a LIE.

Who is the "unwitting victims of myth and their imaginations"? Klass definitely fits the mold of his own statement. C.G. Jung would call this a "projection" (of Klass's mental fixation, neurosis, psychosis, or aberration, which he "projected"onto hundreds, thousands, or even millions of other people, as if it were THEY who in fact had his problem). Klass (and his O.S.I. mentors) sociopathically chose the paranormalist element—which had absolutely nothing to do with this situation (except they were created by the CIA, the Nazi SS RSHA, and Hans Horbiger) because it represented a weak and irrational position—a 'straw man', set up to be knocked down—intentionally "designed' to give 'mystical' and irrational significance to particular events. Thus the CIA covertly created the opening into which their pseudo-skeptics inserted the 'wedge' of pseudo-reason.

The paranormalists were created by and are clandestinely controlled by the same "forked-tonged' O.S.I. intelligence agency which handles Klass, and harks back to Reinhard Gehlen's Amt VI SS RSHA, which formed the core of the new CIA/O.S.I. in 1946, and as such, was the Nazi 'standard bearer' of Hans Horbiger's parapsychology straw man' in this hoax. The Nazis were the designers and trainers of Klass' pseudo-skeptic C.S.I.C.O.P. program, which is more parapsychological than any of those who made the claimed sightings, because those of C.S.I.C.O.P. SAW NOTHING, because THEY WEREN'T THERE, and presented no evidence of paranormal claims.

As the following clipping shows, Klass drew a 'packed audience' in the 'captive audience' government town, Los Alamos. Most of the audience were instructed by their supervisors to 'be seen' at the lecture, 'or else', in military fashion. Too bad Klass couldn't wave his magic wand and make the burns and radiation poisoning suffered by Vicki Landrum, Colby Lee Landrum, and Betty Cash go away. That is "physical evidence" of the most severe kind.

Klass, pretending to rely upon an Aristotelian epistemology, contradicted himself, and dishonestly deceived his audience with false arguments which begged the questions that "UFO sighters" believe UFOs are extraterrestrial, that they believe in "ghosts" and "the paranormal", and that they are 'chosen' because they believe in ghosts and aliens. These claims by Klass are "paranormal". Also, since Klass believes in a "supreme being" according to recent news articles, he is a "closet paranormalist", by his own standard. I certainly don't believe in ghosts or any other paranormal crap, but I have seen many saucers. These errors, which clearly show Klass's dishonesty, are the false assumptions upon which Klass's entire argument rests, and a false assumption used to win an argument by fraud, is an unforgivable crime to any true skeptic like myself.

In the second column, in which Klass refers to "physical evidence"—which he says is ALL man-made—he inadvertently admits that ALL flying saucers are man-made. Klass must deny that he has ever seen a flying saucer, because, were he to admit seeing one, logic would require him to agree with this book, based on the MOST RATIONAL ASSUMPTION. The following is a facsimile copy of the news clipping from the

Albuquerque Journal, which covered Klass's lecture in Los Alamos, as follows (emphasis mine):

UFO Sleuth Tells Audience Explanations Down-to-Earth

By Rex Graham
JOURNAL STAFF WRITER

LOS ALAMOS - Believers in UFOs hate Philip Klass.

During a colloquium Monday at Los Alamos National Laboratory, it was easy to see why. The Sherlock Holmes of the UFO world **said craft from outer space simply don't exist.**

In a one-hour talk at Los Alamos, Klass used sarcasm and careful explanations to deflate the authenticity of UFO sightings around the country.

In one case, several people hundreds of miles apart reported seeing a cigar-shaped spacecraft on March 3, 1968. Klass explains that a Soviet rocket that had been abandoned in space burned and glowed as it streaked across the Midwestern sky that night.

One woman who sighted the phenomenon claimed it made her dog shrink to the ground in terror. Klass said it was cold that night and the dog was whimpering from the temperature, and explanation greeted with laughter from the audience of mostly Los Alamos scientists.

"There is not a single piece of physical evidence, a single piece of metal that could not have been made in this world...not a single photograph that will hold up under rigorous scrutiny," Klass said to about 300 people attending the special director's colloquium.

The auditorium has 182 seats, which were all filled. About 120 people sat in the aisles or stood.

Klass, who for 35 years was senior avionics editor with Aviation Week & Space Technology magazine, recounted what appeared to onlookers, pilots and UFO proponents as spacecraft. But he gave simple explanations of events that he said **eyewitnesses filtered through their imaginations.**

All UFO sightings can be explained, he said, as meteor fireballs, abandoned spacecraft burning up as they fall back to Earth, ball lightning, or even retail UFO kits such as hot air balloons with flares attached.

Klass spends 20 to 40 hours a week investigating reported UFO sightings and is recognized as the nation's leading expert in critical scientific investigations of UFOs. He's written four books on UFOs, including, "UFOs: The Public Deceived."

"(Klass) is hated and detested by UFO believers." said **Kendrick Frazier, editor of Skeptical Enquirer magazine,** in a telephone interview from Albuquerque. "He comes up with powerful evidence to puncture holes in their claims."

In a June 1990 Gallup Poll of 1,236 adults, one in four said they believed ghosts, and one in seven said they had seen a UFO.

Klass said 98 percent of UFO sighters honestly think they have seen one.

He reserves caustic criticism for authors who fan the flames of UFO mythology.

In a review of a book titled, "Out There: The Government's Secret Quest for Extraterrestrials" by former New York Times reporter Howard Blum, Klass unleashed his trademark blasts. "Blum has written a book that is essentially fiction and labeled it non-fiction," Klass said before his talk at Los Alamos.

It is evil how Klass systematically mixes indisputable facts—such as, that we know of no thing which is not man-made (second column, paragraph two)—with the begged questions of paranormal claims not made by the "sighters", and which Klass could have no knowledge of, because he had no evidence to support such a lie, and would have produced it if he had it. As for the "cigar-shaped spacecraft" sighted on March 3, 1968 (column one, paragraph four), the shape of such an object, seen high enough in the sky to represent the point at which it entered the atmosphere, would not be visible as "cigar-shaped." Besides, I myself have seen similar craft.

On the evening of January 26, 1996, at the Ten Thousand Waves Japanese Health Spa, on the western slopes of the Sangre de Cristos Mountains, above the city of Santa Fe, at approximately 7:00 o'clock p.m., as I sat in a hot tub with several others, I met a young woman who had read my book, just as I spotted a "blinking" aircraft moving slowly above the mountains, about 10,000 feet above our position. I said to her,

"Speaking of flying saucers, there's one right there," as I pointed to it. A heckler across the tub said, "Aww, that's a plane." 1 answered, "If it's a plane, then why did it just park? ....and there's another one right there."

As everyone looked at the two "blinkers", which had just "parked", I said, "The reason for the flashes is to conceal their underlying glow, which you can't see because you eyes don't have time to recover between flashes. When they move faster, they glow brighter, which is why they are going so slow."

At that very moment, the ship on the left lit up a dark green, soft glowing color, as it took off in a large circle which took it right back to its previous position, where it stopped on a dime, and returned to its small, "flashing aircraft" mode. As it was flying in the circle, I asked, "Does everyone see that thing?", to which they all said "Yes!", as I followed it with my arm and pointing finger. It took about ten seconds, and the circle was about thirty degrees across, so at 10,000 feet, it was doing about 2.000 m.p.h. At arm's length, it was about 1" long, and about 3/4" wide, so that means it was about 400' long and 250' wide. It's thickness, based on a proportional estimate, was around 50'. The ship was virtually a five-story building, having the size and shape of the space at a football field with the track around it. It was lenticular in shape, like a lozenge, with rounded edges. The following is a copy of a painting I did of the ship:

There was a 'dark space" around its immediate periphery, beyond which there was a purplish "Tesla corona", which extended out for some distance in advance of the ship, and fanned out along the sides as it moved through space. A ship of that size would be large enough to carry a whole battalion.

When the word reached Richard Sauter[19], another writer, that I'd seen the ship, he called me up from Flagstaff, Arizona, and asked, "Bill, what's this I hear about the 'alien grays' and their underground base under Santa Fe Baldy?" My answer was, "Richard, don't give me this shit. I see you've sold out to the alien liars."

In 1961, some friends of mine, oil operator George P. Parker and his wife Margery, of Midland, Texas, and her brother Gordon (an F.A.A. official) and his wife, told me about the time they decided to 'innocently' walk into a box canyon ("Manzano-Coyote Canyon"), called "Manzano Base", near Kirtland A.F.B., in Albuquerque, back in the early '50s. Their plan was to pose as casual hikers, so they could check out rumors of a government flying saucer base there. Like another friend, the late Bob Guthrie of Santa Fe later experienced, they were surrounded by troops carrying star wars weapons, as a row of flying saucers hovered over them. In dire fear of their lives, they were ordered out, and instructed never to say anything about what they saw. The following facsimile clipping relates to 1980 sightings at Manzano Base (emphasis mine):

U.S. reports UFO sightings

ALBUQUERQUE (AP) - Recently released government reports tell of five sightings of unidentified flying objects near Kirtland Air Force Base in 1980.

But Air Force scientific adviser Jerry Miller says in the report that "no conclusions could be made whether these objects pose a threat to Manzano-Coyote Canyon areas."

Nearly all of the reports are of UFOs spotted in the vicinity of Kirtland Air Force Base and the nearby Manzano Weapons Storage Area. Coyote Canyon is a test area for the military.

Miller was an investigator for Project Blue Book, the Air Force's massive investigation of UFOs that ended in 1969.

Col. John Aday, chief of public affairs at Kirtland, said Project Bluebook concluded that UFOs are **no threat to the national defense.**

Aday said he had "no idea" what the 1980 sightings could have been.

"I could conjecture all day about what might have been going on out there, but I won't," he said.

The reports were kept secret until they were released in December through the Freedom of Information Act to the Mutual UFO Network, a Texas-based UFO study group. The reports describe the following sightings:

- On Aug. 8, "three security policemen...on duty inside the Manzano Weapons Storage Area sighted an unidentified light in the air that traveled north to south over the Coyote Canyon area of the Department of Defense Restricted Test." The guards saw it "take off and leave proceeding straight up at a high speed and disappear."

- The next day, Aug. 9, a security guard at Sandia Laboratories observed a bright light near the ground in Coyote Canyon, the report said. **He tried to radio for help, but his radio would not work.**

- On Aug. 10, **a state policeman saw a flying object land in the Manzano Mountains** between Belen and Albuquerque. The report said that when he reported the sighting to Kirtland, he was told **the Air Force did not investigate sightings unless they occurred on an air base.**

The above clipping shows that Jerry Miller, a former Project Blue Book investigator until that program ended in 1969, was later re-employed in the 1980s as an Air Force "scientific adviser" (Air Force O.S.I.) at Kirtland, in attempt to dispel clear and convincing reports of government flying saucer work being done 'near' there. Of course Miller the O.S.I. man, copped out, saying he never investigated sightings unless

[19] Richard Sauter, "Ph.D.", Underground Bases and Tunnels [1995].

they occurred on an air base! Manzano Base—which they also call "Manzano-Coyote Test (Base)"—had been a "star wars" super weapons base since the '50s, so was not specifically an 'air base' per se, and therefore 'out of his investigative jurisdiction.' "Catcha-22"!

It becomes clearer as to how these double-talk specialists are moved around by the government from one place to another, to sell the public the same kind of evasiveness, and how the evasiveness of Air Force "scientific advisers" (O.S.I. agents) are periodically enmeshed with the likes of Philip Klass and his C.S.I.C.O.P. and pseudo-skeptic ilk. It is Klass's CIA O.S.I. (Office of Scientific Intelligence) job, to pick up where Jerry Miller, of Air Force O.S.I., left off, to 'interpret' (i.e., "debunk") the legitimate sightings of the public, as well as those of guards, air force personnel, state policemen, airline pilots, and certified civilian aeronautical experts, as the result of "over-active imaginations" and "paranormal beliefs". If there is an active imagination at work here, I think it is the imagination of Klass and his ilk, in inventing new false arguments and BIG LIES to counteract the evidence of the personal experiences and 20-20 sightings of seasoned airline pilots and radar operators.

Most of the Platonist mysticism attacked by Klass and his pseudo-Aristotelians, is induced or spread by corresponding Platonist government-funded counterparts, the paranormal front groups, which descend from the Cayce group originally set up at Wright-Patterson A.F.B., Ohio, in the early '40s, including Project Bluebook, to conceal saucer secrets and promote the BIG LIES, based on the original "parapsychology" of Hitler's guru and 'spiritual adviser', Hans Horbiger, the "father of parapsychology".

Georgi Ivanovich Gurdjieff—often confused with Grigori Gurdjieff, even by his own followers—was a deranged, mystical Turkish/Russian occultist[20], who was initiated by Sufi masters, before branching off to form his own twisted philosophy. Gurdjieff produced much suffering in the end, via his 'students', Dietrich Eckhardt and General Karl Haushoffer (Hitler's groomers), who were Gurdjieff s students, along with a host of other monsters. We know a woodsman by his chips, and Gurdjieff's 'chips' were all too often some of the world's host heinous monsters.

The modern Russian anti-Semitic movement seemed to germinate in this mysticism, along with totalitarianism. Decayed mystical philosophies are fertile soil for the growth of other unhealthy mystical philosophies. Almost all the top fascist and communist leaders of the 20th century were students of Gurdjieff, including Mao Tsedong, Stalin, and Ernst Roehm, the homosexual head of Hitler's S.A., who carried out the 'Knight of the Long Knives', the long march of "Kristallnacht".

The Baltic-born Platonist, Alfred Rosenberg, adapted Plato's heirarchy to Nazi society, emulating those in Plato's Republic, the Iron, Bronze, Silver and Gold, with the SS being the Golden "philosopher-rulers" at the top. This heiratic order was in turn derived from Chaldean-based Hermetic and Egyptian esoteric teachings, extracted by Plato from Egyptian and Assyrian sources a few years before Alexander's conquests. The duality so typical of the Nazis and the Trilateral Commission, is based on the myth in which Hermes and Aphrodite loved each other so much that they became one person, an Hermaphrodite. This relates to the Nazi troop management manual written by Ernst Roehm, the homosexual "father of the brownshirts" , who advocated a military "group identity" principal, erroneously alleged to be derived from Spartacism, including the idea

---

[20]Michael Howard, The Occult Conspiracy, Destiny Books, Rochester Vermont [1989].

that Spartan soldiers laid down on the battlefield and made love before battle, so they 'would fight harder for their lovers'. Roehm was executed by Hitler for turning the S.A. into a homosexual Nazi/Sparticist drag circus. Roehm's manual, based on Gurdjieff s "Synergy", was adopted by the U.S. Congress soon after WW II, as the official troop management manual for all U.S. military forces, which I believe has subsequently eroded individuality, causing progressively poorer performance of American armed forces. There is always confusion and misperception as to what "excellent" military performance is. Those who are impressed with the parades of spit-and-polish, goose-stepping jack-booted thugs in beautiful uniforms, marching in perfect precision, such as those in Leni Riefenstahl's Triumph of the Will—a propaganda film commissioned by Hitler—are bound to make the mistakes of history. Who won the war on the field of battle? Was it those who marched so prissy? No! It was American guerilla fighters who continued to fight when 'order' had broken down, at the Battle of the Bulge. The "Redcoats" at Lexington were mostly Hessians who marched and looked rather smart in their beautiful rank and file, but the Minutemen shot them like fish in a barrel. How could they miss?

Before WW II, Hermann Goering was an "ecologist"—the Waldmeister—keeper of the Bavarian forests. In ecology, one specie is sometimes sacrificed for the benefit of another, in order to achieve a (teleological) "balance of nature". A forest is often "thinned out", because its population may be "too great". By construction, one can move the concept of ecology around to the human race, so they can be "thinned out" like "weeds". My point is that the kind of people who want to control the population—often attempt to convince us they are only interested in 'ecology', also making (insincere) overtures to entice our curiosities about decadent old secret mystery societies, maybe even appealing to ethnic, religious, racial or tribal sympathies—and are the kind of people who will tell you whatever it takes to motivate you at your own level, to support their plans, which may include the extermination of you as an "undesirable" or "expendable person", like a "human weed". I am appealing to your rational self-interest, since it is irrational to sponsor the extermination or enslavement of others, just because you are led to believe you will benefit from it, because sooner or later, in a criminal society, the business end of the gun moves around to you. The individual human life is the ultimate value because you are human.

The kind of people who want to talk you out of the validity of your senses, as tools of cognition, and to convince you that your life is just an illusion, while saying "all things are possible", are trying to trade you a bill of goods for your Bill of Rights. These same people do not want to improve the clarity of your thinking, or to root out and expose the high and mighty power rats who control our government. You will never hear them trying to take power away from the Trilateral Commission-C.F.R. bunch. They only want to throw a monkey wrench into the cogs of your mind, so you will never figure them out, and will do as you are told.

Refusing to believe what one sees is Platonistic and mystical, not Aristotelian and rational. Believing what you see, what you have good reason to believe is true, and what you have good reason to believe others have seen or know, is the rational, scientific approach. It is also reasonable to be suspicious of government truth-saboteurs who mix phony, pseudo-Aristotelian epistemology with Platonist bullshit. It is also rational to disbelieve the sleazy people who will lie for T.V. programs, claiming they were

"abducted by aliens". A future plot's "germination" was revealed by a clipping of March 11, 1993, by Cox News Service.

A synopsis of the clipping is as follows: In rural Alabama, a 'documentary' film maker became a "police officer", while another "UFO professional" (Linda Moulton Howe) interjected her "expert" (O.S.I.) twisted opinion that "aliens" are responsible for "bloodless cattle mutilations" in Alabama, near Sand Mountain. Howe's officious covert CIA intermeddling was necessary to fabricate groundwork for her next government-backed film. In the Alabama back-woods locale, there was little of the type of official denials which relied on the "documentation" of ex-F.B.I. agent/federal grant huxter Ken Rommel (which attributed mutilations to 'predators'), with more credence being given to New Mexico State Police mutilations investigator Gabe Valdez' "secret government medical experiments" theory ("..Another theory: Government agents, flying in low-level helicopters at night, are killing animals and removing their organs to study the effects [testing for cancer and other diseases] on livestock living near high-power lines.").

Meanwhile, local skeptic and good ol' boy John Strawn of Albertville saw through the corn, but threw out the baby with the bath water, intimidated by the C.S.I.C.O.P. false accusation that seeing "flying saucers" equated with seeing "little green men". He mentioned a "swamp ape" rumor (Hapi?), probably spread by Nazi/CIA Egyptologists out of the N.A.S.A./O.S.I. center in nearby Huntsville—the "Peenemunde of America"—created by the Illuminist, Wernher von Braun. Again, through a fraudulent mixture of Platonist and Aristotelian epistemology under the "government agent theory" of cattle mutilations, "saucers" were disassociated from "mutilations", and "copters" were switched for saucers, in these sightings by a gullible, back-woodsy 'audience' in rural Alabama. My applause goes to the Cox News Service for a comparatively fair and objective article.

A 1993 example of false propaganda—an AP article in the Albuquerque Journal, of March 12, 1993—regarding Manzano Base (A.K.A. "Coyote Canyon", referred to earlier), stated that the government now calls the "...hollowed out mountain bunker complex" (the '50s 'star wars' flying saucer base in the Manzano mountain box canyon "an old weapons storage site" and "archive of top-secret parts from old nuclear weapons". The article further stated that only "last year", "nuclear weapons" were moved from there to a "new underground storage bunker" at Kirtland A.F.B.

Just before the purported "move" to Kirtland, it came to the attention of federal officers that New Mexico Land Grant heirs own the property in Coyote Canyon, and that the government never acquired title (an 'omission' previously ignored by defense department property procurement agents). Since even N.S.A. rules cannot authorize the U.S. government to claim title, except by proper purchase and deed from the grant heirs, the government's use violates the (international) 1848 Treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo, and is in contempt of Congress, for a fraudulent breach of their trusteeship duties.

So—if the article is even partly credible—the Defense Department high-tailed it to Kirtland with its saucer/star wars paraphernalia, leaving the D.O.E. holding the bag, since the grant heirs now had a legal right to immediate possession of the base, as well as to recover damages for the wrongful ouster, illegal detainer, uncompensated use, and radioactive contamination.

ABDUCTIONS: TRAVIS WALTON VS. VICKI LANDRUM

On Nov. 5, 1975, Travis Walton, a young federal employee of the U.S. Forest Service in Arizona, and his fellow crew members, were leaving work just after dark, driving a pickup slowly toward Heber, over a rocky road through the isolated timberland of Sitgreaves National Forest, northeast of Phoenix. When they encountered a glowing, ovalesque, government flying saucer hovering within 20 feet of the ground, around 8 x 20 feet in size, they stopped the truck, and Walton walked directly toward the saucer, despite the fact that it had its warning beeper on. As Walton approached dangerously near to the saucer, the turbine whined, the saucer precessed, and Walton was struck by an electric arc which passed through him to the ground. Walton was knocked down and struck his head on rocks, causing a concussion, rendering him unconscious. This bolt of high-voltage, high frequency A.C. current, was the 'ether-blocking' current which Tesla used on the bottom of his saucers when hovering. Lucky for the drunk Walton that it was a Tesla current, the high frequency 'skin effect' of which did not really harm him, but must have startled him so much that he lost his balance, fell down, and hit his head.

As Walton laid there unconscious, his fellow crew members panicked and fled in the truck in blind fear. On realizing that Walton had been abandoned in an unconscious and injured state, the saucer crew picked him up and took him to a secret flying saucer flight training base infirmary. Government doctors kept Walton in an unconscious state, probably with chloral hydrate (a soporific), allowing him to regain temporary consciousness only for purposes of an "alien abduction hoax" they enacted, thus attempting to prepare him for later use as a 'witness'. Midgets—or what could have been children or small women—dressed in our standard 'alien' get-ups, stood about him as he awakened. Walton later initially reported hearing one of them speaking in a southern drawl, until they realized Walton was conscious and stopped speaking. Walton wandered about in a dazed state for a while, visiting a saucer flight simulator which was equipped with an astronomical projector, and saw three saucer types—ovalesque, rounded, and sauceresque—all "without angles" and constructed of polished metal. His description of the simulator's visibility and navigation system is consistent with the use of geodetic I.G.S. transponders for navigation, and electronic image converter tubes (I.R.), mounted in the saucer's surface, to project images of the outer landscape and cosmos onto a globular screen surrounding the pilot's seat.

Walton was then subdued and re-sedated by mute, normal-sized people (both men and women), disguised as "aliens" with identical long, dirty blond wigs, makeup, and clothes. Walton's description of the midget participants was consistent with the 'foam rubber masks' and 'sunglass-lens eyes' scenario, intended to hark back to the "Roswell" hoax.

This story bears certain similarities to that of Vicki Landrum, except for the phony aliens about which Walton now lies, and the fact that all the Walton incident witnesses were federal employees. Had Landrum gone along with the program, she and Betty Cash might be rolling in cash from 'their movie'. Nothing has been said recently about the "space alien with a southern drawl", since Walton's initial report. Perhaps that 'alien' was recruited in the Huntsville, Alabama area, by Wernher von Braun, unless they talk "southern" in outer space. You might be a redneck if you use your flying saucer for a chicken coop, and take your barbecue sauce with you on 'mutilations' missions.

Had Vicki Landrum and Betty Cash been more 'cooperative', we would undoubtedly be reading about their "abductions" or seeing them on the X-files, or Sightings. Their incident has become one nagging and persistent ache in the Big Lie program, ever since this book came out in 1993. Prior to that, The UFO Encyclopedia[21] at least admitted that Betty Cash had developed breast cancer, and that Vicki reported seeing a "diamond-shaped" ship, but added that it must have been an "...unshielded nuclear reactor" (since Betty, Vicki and Colby Lee all had apparent and indisputable radiations burns). A levitating, unshielded nuclear reactor? Sure sounds like a government flying saucer to me.

As stated previously in the Introduction, the process of concealment involves obliteration of the "Most Rational Alternative" to the two sets of Big Lies—those of the Klass Psychophants and those of the (George) Adamski Psychophants—so that the generally conservative public buys the first set, the lunatic fringe buys the second one, and the two mutually complimentary sets of lies fit tightly together to exclude reason. The "alien" and "paranormal" issues are so firmly attached to the " belief in saucers", that those who see saucers automatically believe they are seeing "space aliens". With this false idea firmly implanted in their minds, their hearts usually pound so hard in their throats and brains, that their perception is altered, as their imaginations conjure up pictures of pilots with large ("sunglass lens") eyes, large heads, and small noses and mouths, because they have been brainwashed for over 50 years. All they really see is a damned flying machine, flown by human beings, but the cunning interjection of the incredible possibility that aliens are involved, drives the 'quasi-realistic' people into the Klass position (that saucers don't exist), leaving the Adamski mystical masochists behind with the O.S.I, con-artists, as 'partners in martyrdom', while ridicule is heaped upon all witnesses, whether the false ones (the agents posing as irrational dupes), or rational and sane analysts such as myself.

Some government agents posture themselves in an 'anti-government' stance—to convince us they are legitimate seekers of the truth—to put the idea clear out of our minds that they might be government agents, telling whatever stories necessary to motivate dupes at their own levels. Doesn't it give you a nice warm feeling when you hear someone seeming to reflect your every belief...someone you can trust? This is supposed to make you believe whatever they say. Whenever you hear someone like that, question their motives, as they try to exploit you through your's. There is usually some contradiction between their conduct and their vested interests. For example, if Philip Klass really applied the stringent "test" which he says he does, requiring "physical evidence" for proof of the existence aliens OR flying saucers, then he wouldn't believe in God, because he doesn't have physical evidence to prove God exists either. I have physical evidence proving the existence of flying saucers in the form of my Peiltochterkompass. Vicki Landrum and company had physical evidence in the form of their burns and symptoms of radiation sickness, corroborated by the government's admissions.

The argument that the Klass ilk will never make, is that flying saucers are exclusively man-made electro-propulsive ships, and that the alien scenario is an orchestrated Secret Government fraud.

---

[21]John Spencer, The U.F.O. Encyclopedia, Avon Books, N.Y. [1991].

To finally clarify the design and methodology for the Secret Government mind-control conspiracy, I will identify and analyze a sort of eddy current effect, manifested by a syndicated newspaper column called Down to a Science, written by Keay Davidson of San Francisco, written from the perspective of the Klass Psychophants, from the Apr. 7, 1993 New Mexican, concerning the movie, Fire in the Sky, and another movie, Oliver Stone's J.F.K. The article is a small one, which fulfills an important function in a BIG LIE hoax (BIG LIE RULE NO. 2: TELL IT OFTEN ENOUGH). The clipping follows:.

N. Mex. 4/7/93

DOWN TO A SCIENCE

SKEPTICS CORNER: The new movie *Fire in the Sky* is doing bang-up business at the box office. But viewers should beware, our good friend Andy Fraknoi warns in a recent missive. One of the nation's best-known popularizers of astronomy, and a longtime leader of the Astronomical Society of the Pacific, Andy says the film's so-called true story of UFO abduction is, in fact, based on a "clear hoax." He reminds us of facts that have long been known to UFO debunkers — facts that have been downplayed by the film's promoters at Paramount.

For example: The film's protagonist — Arizona lumberjack Travis Walton — claimed UFOnauts kidnapped him on Nov. 5, 1975. That was only two weeks after NBC had premiered what was (at the time) the most famous movie about an alleged UFO abduction, *The UFO Incident*, starring James Earl Jones. Curious timing, no?

It gets stranger when you consider that during Walton's absence, his mother and brother seemed unconcerned. They told local law-enforcement authorities that Travis had been interested in UFOs prior to his "kidnapping." Also, he had urged them not to worry if he was ever abducted by saucer beings, because (he predicted) he would return safely! And Walton's credibility was questionable: Several years earlier, he and an accomplice had pleaded guilty to burglary and forgery. They got two years' probation.

For more details, go to your public library and read any of Philip Klass's many books. This veteran aerospace writer is the nation's ablest and wittiest UFO debunker, and he poked as many holes in Walton's fable as there are holes in Swiss cheese. And for a broader view of Hollywood's willingness to make money by twisting history, read Edward Jay Epstein's devastating critique of Oliver Stone's film *JFK* in the March issue of *The Atlantic*.

—Keay Davidson

The article is what will call a "triple-lie-repeater", and is a good example from the daily press of how the Secret Government persistently derails the most rational assumptions and manipulates the public, relying upon gossipy news writer dupes to spread repetitious propaganda designed to create bewilderment and confusion, and to orchestrate the staged fight between the Klass Psychophants and the Adamsky Psychophants, as co-conspirators who work together under O.S.I. direction, to dominate the forum, and to exclude reason.

Davidson co-authored a highly Big-Brother-Liar-touted book on the Really Big Bang[22], just chock full of the kind of powerful pseudo-science that one expects from the main author, who just happens to be employed at the Lawrence-Livermore Lab. Davidson is also involved with Klass, The Skeptical Inquirer magazine, and C.S.I.C.O.P. Taking Davidson on his face, he is incapable of discerning subtleties, and is a dupe of the pseudo-rational, polarized thinking of the Klass ilk, though I find it hard to believe that a 'scientist' could be so naive, or worse, stupid

None of this incessant propaganda deserves to be dignified by a direct response, or slightest iota of credibility. I am using specific types of hoaxes as examples of the design format and method for their implementation. Each of these hoaxes (such as Ken Rommel's New Mexico cattle mutilations pseudo-study), becomes "documentation" for other hoaxes, ad infinitum, thus eventually building up a massive 'preponderance' of phony "evidence" to back up one or the other of the two sides of the phony fight. When the fight dies down, they do something to stir it back up. The hoaxes contain mixtures of fact and fiction. The fiction is used to misrepresent the facts, while the facts are misrepresented as fictions, so that the Secret Government always "wins" in the minds of pseudo-rational people.

The two hoax counterparts are complimentary. The frantically defensive, paranoid and mystical posture of the alien-abductions huxters is designed to attract the Adamsky Psychophants and invite the ridicule of the Klass Psychophants, whose posture is designed to attract sadistic bullies and residual pseudo-skeptics, who taunt and incite the paranoia of the nuts even more. The overall effect is to alienate reasonable people from the debate, or to obliterate any appeal to sanity. The pseudo-skeptic dupes pretend to represent sanity, by 'blindly denying what any damned fool can plainly see'.

The Fire in the Sky story is a double hoax—a "hoax within a hoax"—like the Roswell hoax. The "alien" huxters and their news writers, on one side of the hoax, 'versus' the protagonists of the pseudo-rational Klass class, and their news writers—such as Keay Davidson, in this article—on the other side of the hoax, are counterparts to the same hoax. Whether witting liars or gullible dupes, everyone is used to create two deep ruts adjacent to one another, with no room between for rationality or truth. Both the initially bungled Roswell and Fire hoaxes were much later revised, one as the "MJ-12" hoax, and the other as the "Fire in the Sky" hoax. Originally, after Walton was rescued by the flying saucer crew, the government decided to turn the emergency into a hoax—pursuant to a policy already in effect—during which Walton got out of hand, saw more than he was supposed to see, and revealed most of it in his initial 1975 press, radio and magazine inverviews. This caused more harm than good to the intended hoax, so it backfired. This explains the 17-year silence before the "Fire in the Sky" patch-up job (they figured, how may people would have files so old?), similar to the 38-year lapse between the Roswell hoax and the MJ-12 hoax.

The second (Fire) hoax involved Walton's witting participation—enticed by a movie—ignoring his earlier interviews, and used new lies designed to cover up critical facts inadvertently made known to and revealed by Walton in 1975, concerning his free-lance excursion from the infirmary and through the training base facility, including the flight simulator and hanger areas, while in a semi-violent and drugged-up stupor.

---

[22]George Smoot and Keay Davidson, Wrinkles in Time [1993].

These ostensible facts were entirely omitted from the movie, and were replaced by BIG LIES, relying upon the probability that there are just so many pudding-heads out there willing and anxious to believe them.

The mass audiences of movies and T. V. are relied upon to stamp out rationality. Davidson's sole basis for alleging fraud by Walton, was the fact that NBC's The UFO Incident (the Betty and Barney Hill fabrication) was premiered only two weeks prior to the Walton incident (another government fraud), which only proved that the government was already aggressively implementing the abductions format, as borne out by Travis Walton's experiences. Only this could explain why the government hucksters already had their "costumes" and "script" ready to go at the time of the Travis Walton incident. Despite the lies, the facts show:

1. That Walton was injured in 1975, by electrical discharges from a saucer (similar to Vicki Landrum, Colby Lee Landrum, and Betty Cash in 1982), causing his fall and concussion; and,

2. that the injured Walton was rescued and given emergency medical treatment at the secret saucer base infirmary; and,

3. that during this treatment, Walton was exposed to an "alien play" enacted by government personnel, in a corny hoax intended to prepare him for later use as a "witness"; and,

4. that due to the leakage of critical facts, the government eventually paid Walton to lie pursuant to still another hoax, intended to obliterate the original facts of the 17-year-old bungled hoax, and to homogenize the hoax with the newly implemented "abductions" format.

Since there are now many more saucers in use than ever before, more incidents are inevitable. The need for more 'streamlined' hoaxes has resulted in a new wave of government-funded hoaxes. The abductions hoaxes have emerged as the most convenient, since the new age movement has provided an almost endless supply of hypocritical 'spiritualists', willing to lie and fantasize their sexual indiscretions, hallucinations, and nightmares, etc., into "abduction experiences", at $50,000 a whack. A whole new generation of designer drugs are available to neuter, convince or convert people who might otherwise have been lobotomized or killed a few years ago. A few of these 'manufactured' witnesses are actors, a few are paid professional liars, a few are drug-induced guinea pigs, and many more are the inevitable dupes. Skilled CIA psychiatrists are available to guide the dramatis personae through their proper performances, as they become Secret Government "movie stars".

In a letter to Walter Bowart from Julianne McKinney[23], backing up what I said in my first edition, McKinney stated that she had interviewed 125 government mind control victims. One was used in the "Alien" program. Now in her 40s, she was used as a young child because she was "...small and just the right size for wearing the costume of a

---

[23]Letter to Walter Bowart from Julianne McKinney, Director of The Electronic Surveillance Project ofThe Association of National Security Alumini, Silver Springs, Md., June .16, 1994.

'gray', the big-headed aliens with big eyes and a skinny neck which many UFO 'abductees' sketch under hypnosis." She said the head and neck were manipulated by means of electronic gadgetry built into the costume. Here was a case where the Secret Government's "special effects" antedated Hollywood's by 10 to 15 years.

According to McKinney's expert documentation, the Government's special effects have at least caught up with Hollywood's, since the amateurish first attempts made during the Roswell Rhesus Monkey Hoax, and she further stated: "Having been given no reason to believe otherwise, I have personally concluded that so-called UFO abductions, and the events surrounding those abductions and sightings, are a "black" intelligence operation, involving government-sponsored kidnappings, experimental drugs, surgical experimentation, sophisticated electronics and directed-energy technologies, implantable micro circuited devices, experimental aircraft, Hollywood-style special effects, and the exploitation of so-called 'abductees' as sources of ova, sperm and aborted fetuses for use in government-sponsored genetics experiments".

Then, on the issue of "Hollywood", I am certain that the Secret Government controls a lot of the movie business. In late 1974,1 was offered a choice of two parts in an Italian movie being shot at Cinnecitta in Rome, about the downfall of the Allende government in Chile, and the part played by the CIA in its overthrow. The movie was supposedly produced by the P.C.I. (Partito Communisti Italiano) and directed by 'Communist' director Giuseppe Ferrarri. The movie was covertly produced by the CIA, which was behind securing the part for me. The other part went to American actor, John Kellogg. 1 walked away and did not do the part, since my complicity would have indebted me to the CIA. What better way to control the opposition, than to lead it?

99.9% of the audience have never dreamed there could be government backing for such movies as Fire in the Sky, something Davidson could admit only if he were not a witting agent. As a Klass psychophant, he not only pseudo-debunked the movie, but used the occasion to lay the blame for the OSI-created hoax—along with the news media's laziness, stupidity, and prostitution (using as an example Oliver Stone's excellent movie J.F.K.)—on "Hollywood". While many of the news media and Hollywood are undeniably on the take from the Secret Government, Jim Garrison and Oliver Stone—neither of whom sold out to anyone—weathered horrible harassment, and survived to valiantly debunk the Secret Government's hoax concerning the murder of J.F.K., which reflected heavily on the manipulation of party-liners like Davidson, the usual fascist liars who created obstacles to getting to the bottom of Kennedy's death.

Some news writers seek to endear themselves to the Secret Government, attacking the good, the brave, and the true, from among the safe ranks of the evil, the cowardly, and the false, who parrot the Secret Government's favorite lies. Keay Davidson's "scoop" was already stale "canned corn" from the Secret Government's officially approved menu. Where is "scepticism", the spirit of courageous investigative journalism? I learned as a boy, that cowards will side with bullies, for fear of being beaten up by them. Left unchecked, bullies can eventually control a majority through fear alone. The New Mexican is controlled by Robert M. McKinney, from his home in Virginia, uncomfortably close to CIA headquarters. Bully for them! Their fear sustains them.

Insidiously, a major mind-control propaganda center—serving up more Secret Government canned corn—operates out of Sedona, Arizona, particularly through

publishers with names similar to "Light Technology Publishing". The ulterior purpose is to conceal the man-made nature of flying saucers and continue the Illuminati mind-control of We the People. Names such as "Holy Light"—with facetious allusions to Illuminism—appeal to dark mysticism, as a typical diametric reversal, by substitution of "dark" ("ignorance") for "light" ("knowledge"). This mass-psychology propaganda preys upon ignorance, superstition, psychosis, and neurosis, and gathers, encourages, and organizes mass paranoia and delusions. Activity is focused on exploitation of the "new age culture", the "collective unconscious" theories of Swiss psychologist C.G. Jung, and some pseudo-Native American 'spiritual' stuff, all thrown into a mystical slumgullion stew of new age groupies and Secret Government liars. This is insulting to Native Americans, seeking to prey upon and use them as cheap 'ornaments' to decorate the bizarre carnival ballyhoo, because Indians are "in", as the Illuminati cashes in on current new age fads, even enlisting some Indians' witting participations. This conjures up some words uttered by the "devil" (read "the Secret Government") in Goethe's Faust:

"Contempt your capacity to think,
Which is Man's greatest power;
Welcome Misty things and sorcery
And the spirit of Illusion,
Then I shall get you surely enough"

There is an obvious predominance of some of the tackiest people on this planet, who, like lumps of dough, have been molded into cookie-cutter images designed by panels of CIA Ph.D.s. This seediness is a mirror-image of the sociopathy of misanthropic Illuminati mind-engineers, based on their underestimation of the 'American character', and that of human beings in general. For such work, 'inductees' must have a lack of individual worth and self esteem—like ideal bureaucrats—as the defective genotypes to be used for transmutation into tacky, pathetic, new age stars, designed and used by the government. Thus insecure, weak people surrender to a phony lifestyle, in exchange for money and (self-delusional) worth, where before there was little. Fringe benefits for the new age 'celebrities', include enhanced sexual, romantic, and socio-economic opportunities, similar to the tacky relationships between the likes of Jim and Tammy Bakker, and their adulating followers. These benefits are undoubtedly part of the appeal to such people, providing a much better life than they might otherwise have, in addition to giving them false patriotic pride in the delusion that they are doing it all "for their country". The CIA (the "devil") calls this "recruiting", and asks each new prospect, "What is the price of your mind?"

The choice of seedy people is obviously an appeal to the lowest common social denominator—a sort of "affirmative action for the tacky"—emphasizing "emotions", "feelings", "the heart", and "faith", etc. ad vomitus, enticing emotionally unbalanced, pathetic people, who need help in tieing their own shoes. This induces already helpless people to stay right where they are, rather than strengthening their use of minds and resources in constructive ways. The end result contravenes the U.S. Constitution, Art. I. Sec. 8, which legally requires the government to "promote" (not destroy) "...the progress of science and the useful arts", by maintaining (not halting) the flow of inventions and discoveries into the public domain, for use by all.

How much irreversible damage has been done by these programs, which are somewhat successful? Are we doomed to a future of archaic technology, delayed progress, planned ignorance, and Illuminati mind-control? Do we expect our government, at some undetermined future date, to suddenly 'fess up', admitting it has been insidiously brainwashing and lying to us, to control our minds and will powers, for our "own good", at our expense, for over 50 years, without our permission? Don't hold your breath. It is time for a reckoning, and further delay will cost us billions, and untold damages of many kinds.

In the face of huge economic losses we are experiencing daily from technology-concealment, some may ask what the harm is, in the government's herding a bunch of naturally superstitious suckers into a new age religion, when they might otherwise have been under the spell of some other form of mystical or 'spiritual' scam anyway? My answer is, such matters exceed the jurisdictional limits our constitution places on our government, and this outrageous Secret Government program for the subliminal manipulation of We the People, is a religious, mind-control, psychopolitical brainwashing scheme, run by BIG BROTHER, which has at least four very damaging results, as follows:

1. It is an unconstitutional violation of our First Amendment rights, in which the government is secretly doing what it is forbidden openly do by law, namely, sponsoring an establishment of religion, abridging the principle of the separation of church and state; and,

2. it fraudulently conceals and misrepresents material facts from We the People, to our detriment and the corporate fascists' benefits; and,

3. it promotes the educational, intellectual, scientific and moral decline of We the People, by concealing knowledge, and inducing dishonesty, psychological disorientation, and detrimental reliance on ignorance, mysticism, and superstition in people who need rational guidance; and,

4. it violates the fundamental democratic right to government by consent of the governed, through secret, subliminal manipulation of We the People, who cannot consent to things being done to us by BIG BROTHER, in our own name, without our knowledge.

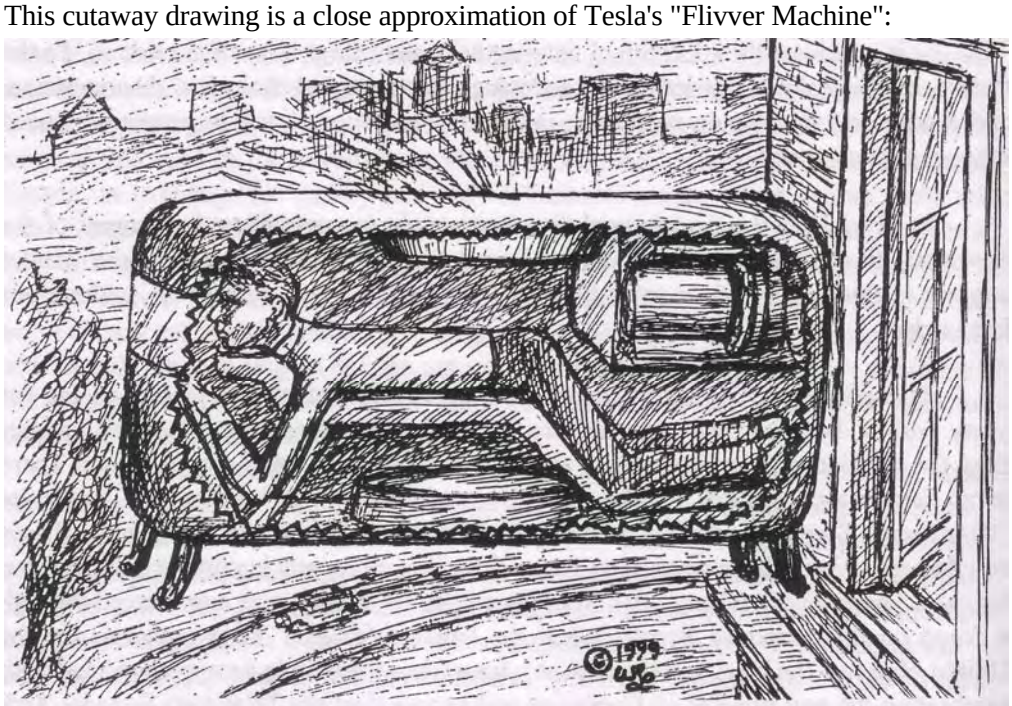
Those in the N.S.A. and CIA believe they can do whatever they want to and get away with it, because their activities are "secret". The secrecy protects the Illuminati from the consequences of their illegal acts. Without evidence, what can we prove? There is no legitimate authority for the CIA to extend its "covert operations", under its "Clandestine Services", into our domestic lives, producing the illegal and bizarre effects and damages which these operations show. There was never any legitimate authorization for these unconstitutional activities from the outset, when they were commenced through a fraud on the American People, when the bankers 'created' false authority for the United Nations, the NSA and the CIA at a time when the people were preoccupied with celebrating the end of WW II. Congressional approval of the "National Security Act" was entirely circumvented in secret meetings, such as that held by the Council on

Foreign Relations, on Jan. 8, 1968, at their 'home', the Harold Pratt House, Park Avenue, New York City, chaired by C. Douglas Dillon, private investment banker. These operations are approved by the Illuminati, without official status or legitimate authority, to secure their own corporate-fascist power. The fraudulent 'act' was never an "Act of Congress", since it just 'went into effect' through the coercive effects of the power of money and political influence exerted by the C.F.R.

This book gives the public the wherewithal to reverse these sickening policies, and to provide a means for obtaining unheard of freedom and prosperity, through openness, free competition, knowledge, creativity and reason, by rejection of the secrecy which is the basis for the lies, and by our acceptance of flying saucer knowledge...just the kind of things which the Pseudo-Illuminati hypocritically claim to promote.

In 1894, before the Ford Model "T" had been created by Henry Ford, Tesla had already tested his (flying saucer propulsion) theory, as confirmed by statements to the FBI in 1943, by a New York socialite named Marguerite Merrington, who witnessed "metallic plate suspensions"[24], in statements taken just after Tesla's death and shown on a "List of Persons Associated With Nikola Tesla". The FBI/CIA censors missed this small reference, and failed to black it out. They did, however release a misinformational and tampered photocopy of a 9/22/40 article by William L. Laurence in the New York Times entitled "Death Ray" for Planes". In that article, they stated that "only two" of the four parts had been tested, and substituted the word "repelling" for "propelling", as discussed on page 22 and 23, to coincide with misinformation in the HAARP "patent". The copy of the news article I have backs up what I say.

This cutaway drawing is a close approximation of Tesla's "Flivver Machine":



[24]FBI Documents Regarding Nikola Tesla (252 pages released in the 1980s under the FOIA).

CHAPTER V: HOW TO BUILD A FLYING SAUCER

Author's Disclaimer

In consideration of the author's sale, and of the reader's purchase or reading of this book, the purchaser or reader is hearby deemed to understand and agree to the following:

1. That she or he assumes all physical risks of any harm to anyone, attendant to the constructing, testing, flying, or attempting to fly, a flying saucer constructed as herein suggested;

2. that the author assumes no liability whatsoever, either civil or criminal, as to these suggested plans or the theories contained herein, and is hereby released from any and all liability or claim, or allegation of liability;

3. that the purchaser or reader, who is presumed to be an ordinary, reasonable and prudent person, with control over his or her decisions and actions, is urged to respect the obvious and inherent dangers of electricity, the force of gravity, and flight, and to become familiar with pertinent F.A.A. regulations and applicable state and federal laws, if any, and hereby assumes complete responsibility for all such particulars;

4. It is hereby agreed and understood that these plans are hypothetical, provided only for the purpose of the investigation and understanding of flying saucer theory, flight and construction, and that the author gives no warranty, either express or implied, that a flying saucer constructed according to these plans will work or be safe to the operator or others.

A. GENERAL CONSIDERATIONS

First, it is recommended that a flying model be built and tested before proceeding further, as it would be very disappointing to build an elaborate saucer which doesn't work. The fundamental principle is simple: to electromagnetically synthesize momentum, employing a high voltage D.C. brush discharge, in the direction of desired acceleration, to draw in and cause the exchange of ether carriers, which also brings in the tubes of electrical force, and to cause the tubes to dissolve in the conductors of the ship, which imparts momentum to the conductors, at 90 degrees to the electric current and magnetic inductance. In order to facilitate the dissolution of the tubes of force, an alternating current of sufficiently high frequency is utilized on the opposite end of the ship, to compress and block the ether carriers and tubes of force, so that they cannot pass out the rear, and are thereby forced to dissolve to impart momentum in the opposite direction. The hull should be accelerated, creating electromagnetic momentum in the desired direction almost instantaneously.

A Tesla coil is used to create a negative D.C. brush discharge on one electrode, and another Tesla coil is used on the opposite electrode, to create an A.C. high frequency, which compresses the ether carriers and tubes of force, and blocks their passage. These two electrodes comprise a "p2"—two different primaries—one—the D.C. brush—which draws in the tubes of force, and the other—the A.C. current—which blocks the ether carriers and forces the tubes of force to dissolve. The D.C. brush produces "negative ("hairy") corona", and the high frequency A.C. produces "positive ("cloudy")

corona". It is believed that this system not only creates instant momentum in the direction of the D.C. brush, but eliminates the problem of inertia in the direction of the A.C. high frequency current, so that the rate of acceleration is virtually unlimited, and the destructive effect of acceleration is eliminated, since all parts of the ship and its contents accelerate at the same rate, without inertia. This also applies to instant turns, in which the force of acceleration acts on all parts of the ship and its contents, to re-orient the force of momentum on each atom and molecule, in the new direction, eliminating centrifugal force. The kind of ship shown by these plans however, is of what I call the "linear type", which turns in a curving path, rather than in sharp angles, because this type of ship is easier to construct and control.

In order to properly control the currents from the Tesla coils, specially designed switches, relays, capacitors, dielectrics, inductors and conductors are required. In these hypothetical plans, I provide my own design, which could conceivably be built by a skilled home craftsman. I also describe what I believe to be a control system which will be practical, reliable, and easy to construct, probably similar to what Tesla used on his "Flivver" machine, his manned, electro-propulsive ship of the earliest type.

1. SIZE AND SHAPE

Since this ship is to be of the simplest type, it is no larger than required for one or two people. It is designed to be as small as possible, yet to have the necessary equipment and space for comfort. The general shape of the craft can be described as an oblate spheroid, the shape of a moving "point charge" system. The first manned ship built by Tesla was described as the approximate size and shape of a "gas stove", which would be a sort of long, rectangular box on legs. The legs were presumably stand-off insulators so the craft could get off the ground. I assume that it was of the linear type, with Tesla crouched inside, perhaps on some sort of support, which allowed his hands to be free for the controls, with his head pointed toward a small window at one end. Electromagnets on the "front", with switching and polarity provisions to divert the brush to the right or left, would allow for complete control, with the 'buoyancy' control determining altitude. The bottom and rear would be activated by the high frequency A.C. blocking current. If Tesla wanted to turn right, he would use the electromagnets to divert the brush so that the right corner was pulled, as the air pressure would cause the ship to swing around in a circular turn. To go down, all he had to do was to diminish the current to the top brush.

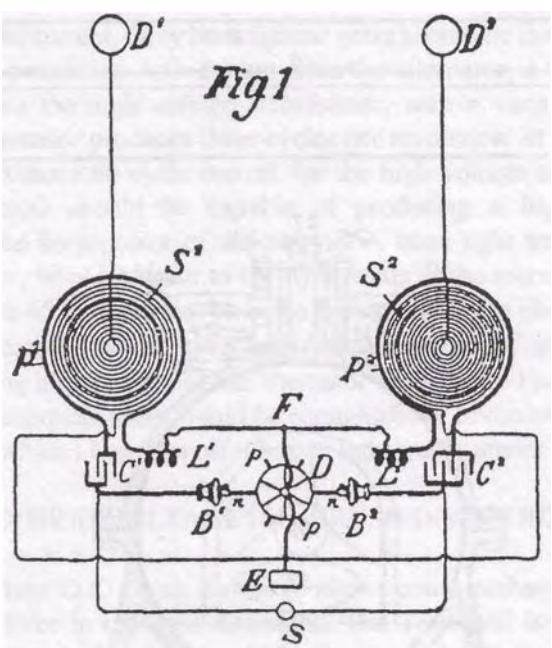
Since the most efficient application of electrical energy is desired, to conserve energy and to transmit the respective propulsive force effectively, with the least expenditure of energy, it is recommended to use rounded surfaces, similar to the design of electrostatic generators, the design of corona rings, or the design used by Tesla in his Wardenclyffe Tower electrodes—rather than sharp points, shapes, or edges—which tend to cause "point discharge", the wasteful and uncoordinated leakage of electric charges into space in a manner which is unproductive.

Since the primary function is to get the ship off the ground and to remain stable while hovering, the upper surface area is generally a horizontal surface, but is spheroidally curved and somewhat symmetrical. I call the electrode from which a brush discharge is emitted at the center top of the ship, the "buoyancy electrode". This electrode is used at almost all times during flight, in addition to an electrode which may be activated at the front of the ship, to cause horizontal acceleration and to turn the ship.

Apparently, the ship will not work without the high frequency A.C. blocking and compressing current to the rear and on the bottom, otherwise, anything with a D.C. brush discharge would take off and fly away at fantastic speed. There is always an "equal and opposite" reaction. In order for there to be a "reaction", there must be a "disturbance to the equilibrium". As the ether carriers continue to exchange, bringing in the tubes of force, there is nothing to prevent them from passing out the other end of the ship, so that there would be no "reaction", and the ship would acquire no momentum. As Tesla said, the A.C. current (at the rear and bottom of the ship), when of "sufficiently high frequency", will draw ether carriers and tubes of force to itself, until they are so compressed that no further action will occur. This is apparently intended to "block" the field of gravity and to block inertia—like Dr. Cavour's 'door', painted with "Cavourite---and to force the tubes of force in the ship's forward conductors to dissolve, so that momentum is imparted to the conductors (and the ship to which they are attached), as J. J. Thomson said.

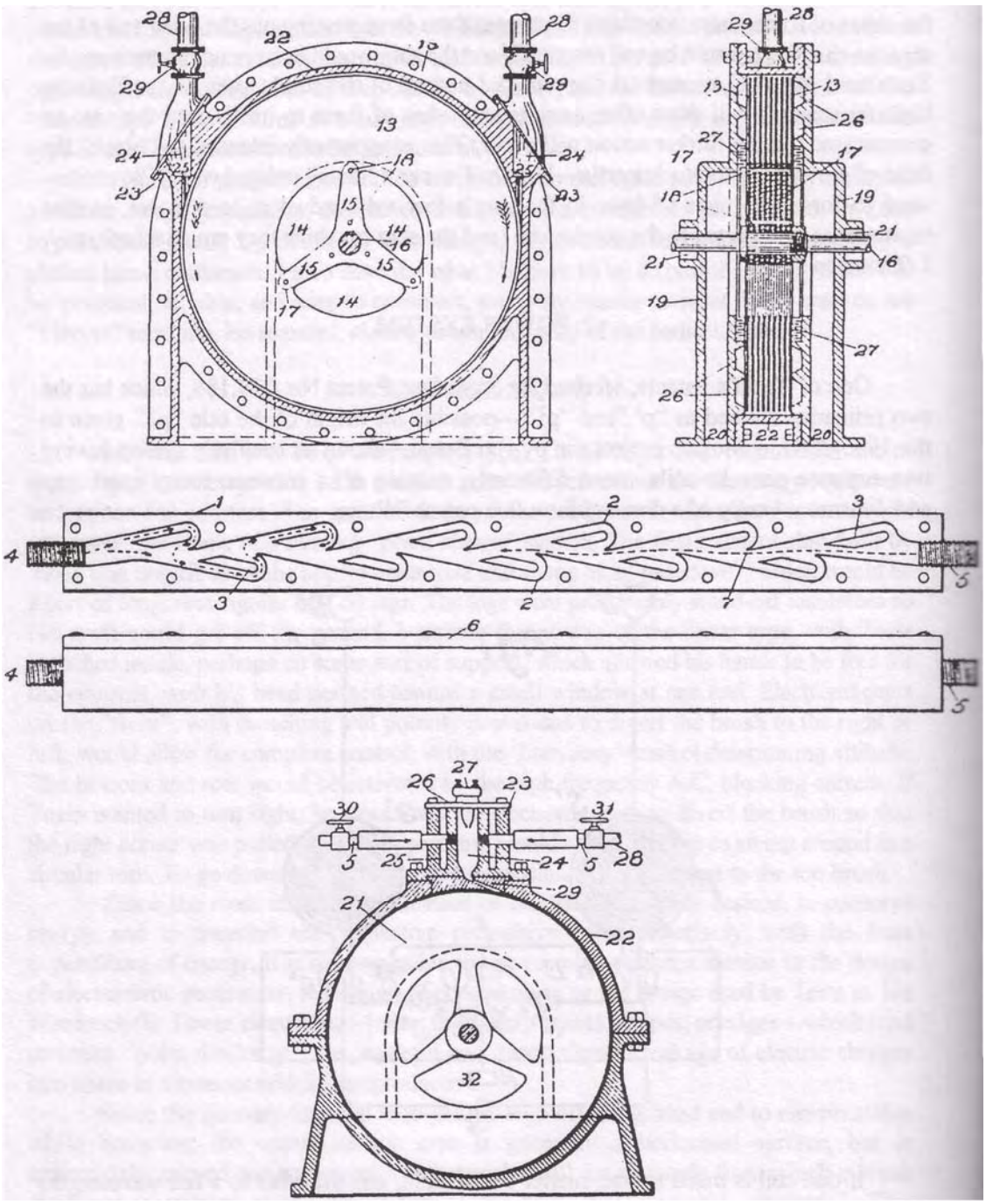
2. POWER SYSTEM

One of Tesla's patents, Method for Signaling, Patent No. 723,188, which has the two primaries marked as "p^1 "and "p^2"—possibly the origin of the title "p2" given to the 1935-38 New Mexico project run by von Braun—shows an oscillator system having two separate pancake-coils, tuned differently, running off a common rotary spark gap and dynamo. A copy of a drawing from that patent follows:



If one coil is tuned to one quarter wavelength, and the other to a full wavelength, they would comprise a D.C. brush circuit and a high frequency A.C. circuit, respectively. The A.C. circuit could be run at all times on the bottom and rear, with the brush being activated at the top to lift off, and to the front to go forward or turn.

I can't recommend a better prime mover than the Tesla turbine, because of its compactness, light weight, and efficiency. Below are excerpts from Tesla's Turbine patent #1,061,206 and related Valvular Conduit patent #1,329,559. Two conduits supply air and gas, respectively, to the firing chamber (second turbine):



The second edition of Free Energy Surprise, when issued, will include my complete set of plans, redesigned, to be constructed using basic machine tools for the home builder.

The turbine shown will produce at least 30 break horsepower and operate at about 30,000 rpm., and should weigh no more than ten pounds, including the valvular conduits and firing chamber.

The firing chamber has a glow plug (the kind used in model airplane engines), and fires in a "reverberatory" way (the explosions come in rapid succession), producing a continuous supply of expanding hot gases, which enter the turbine on its outer edge as shown, and spiral between the disks toward the vents which are near the center shaft. I have routed the exhaust out one side of the turbine, through a single exhaust vent, rather than out both sides as Tesla did, to diminish turbulence, and to free one side of the turbine for the bearing mount and connection to the gearbox and mounting plate. The exploding gases will not blow back through the valvular conduit, which was Tesla's valve system having no moving parts, and will continue to move into the turbine inlet vent, as the combustion chamber continues to produce the pressurized gases.

Judging from the fact that the turbine will produce 30 hp on 125 lbs. steam, it should produce more horsepower on propane or gasoline, and should be adequate.

For the generator, I recommend a heavy duty high amperage automotive alternator, such as the type used on heavy equipment, or a high output, lightweight alternator designed for power generators, normally having an engine of about 30 hp.

It will be necessary to use step-down gearing to reduce the speed of the turbine, so that, at the optimum (most efficient) operating rpm of the turbine (about 25,000 rpm), it will be stepped down to the optimum operating rpm recommended for the alternator. For example, if the alternator is to run at 1,200 rpm., and the turbine at 25,000 rpm., the gearing would have to function at a 20:1 ratio. A battery will also be required to supply the appropriate exciter voltage, and to store electrical energy for appliances and other necessary on-demand current. Only herringbone gears should be used in the gearbox.

By using an unrectified A.C. current from the alternator, it should be possible to route it directly into the high voltage transformer, with a variac to regulate it. For example, if the alternator produces three cycles per revolution, at 1,200 rpm., it would produce the approximate 60 cycle current for the high voltage transformer. The high voltage transformer(s) should be capable of producing a high amperage output commensurate to the horsepower of the turbine. A neon light transformer, producing .030 amps at 15 kv., would amount to only 450 watts in the secondary, for a generator which could produce 45 kw or more. To be on the safe side, you should use transformers for each pancake module which have high voltage ratings of at least 5 kw in their secondaries (totalling almost 50% of the alternator's capacity). I can't imagine that this system would be inadequate. This would be enough power to run about 50 Tesla coils of the powerful types which I have run off the neon light transformers.

3. HIGH VOLTAGE D.C. BRUSH DISCHARGE

The high voltage D.C. brush discharge allows equal exchange of the electric and magnetic tubes of force in opposite directions. The Tesla coil is tuned to one-quarter wavelength, emitting negative pulses which are so rapid that the current continues to flow in the secondary, during current reversals in the primary. This steady D.C, "pseudo-electrostatic" brush discharge has a greater effect on the independent ether carriers, and 'rarifies' them, exerting an elastic, pulling force in the space in front of the ship. This induces the rapid exchange of the ether carriers through the front of the ship,

and draws the tubes of force into the conductor. In the D.C., secondary conductor, the tubes of force have nowhere to go, and are forced to dissolve, as new tubes of force continue to be brought in. This imparts momentum to the conductor, which must be firmly attached to the ship.

The thing which makes the tuned Tesla coil the ideal contrivance for this purpose, is the fact that the principles of high frequency inductance make it possible to create very high D.C. potentials, using a relatively small coil, which may be placed flat against the walls of the ship, powered by a compact alternator. This eliminates the need for the large and cumbersome parts of an electrostatic generator, which would produce only a fraction of the amperage of the Tesla coil, and a greatly diminished exchange of the ether carriers and influx of tubes of force. It has also been shown that a D.C. pulse produces a greater effect in Hall effect pumping than a steady D.C. current.[25]

The negative D.C. pulse discharges will leave the inside of a closed hollow conductive vessel—such as a saucer is—and appear on its outer surface, as Michael Faraday discovered, which conveniently protects the pilot, crew and internal contents of the saucer from the effects of electrostatic charges.

4. HIGH VOLTAGE, HIGH FREQUENCY A.C. CURRENT

The high frequency current, required to block the exchange of ether carriers and passage of the tubes of force through the rear of the ship, behaves with a "skin effect", which means it travels over the surface atoms (the "skin"), rather than through the internal mass of the conductor, as well as the skin of other solid conductive bodies. This phenomenon also provides some convenient protection for crew members from the effects of this type current. Aside from the phenomenon of the skin effect of high frequency alternating current, internal circuits must be highly insulated and shielded where necessary, with care given to shielding of the pilot (and crew or passenger) from possible high voltage radiation dangers.

The pancake-type coils have a higher threshold for arcing at a given voltage than cylindrical or conical ones, which makes them best for these very high voltage applications. Care must be taken at all times, in the design of high voltage circuits, that the close proximity of conductors having high opposite potentials is avoided, and sufficiently insulated and spaced where necessary. Silicone rubber, transformer oil, Formica, and plexiglass are good insulators, and there is a dielectric paste which is excellent.

There is a tendency for the air close to the conductors to become ionized, creating pathways for the current to leak and arc through space to other conductors of opposite potential, whenever within range, roughly governed by the parameters of 20 kv/cm., at sea level pressure, adjusted downward for higher altitude and correspondingly lower pressure, which requires that the space be increased for the same difference in potential. Internal high voltage corona leakage and arcing between conductors, components or contacts, can be suppressed by use of pressurized inert gas environments, increased air or gas pressures, solid, rubber, plastic, oil, or paste insulators of high dielectric strength.

---

[25]Beckman Instruments, Inc., Hall Effect Manual, Helipot Division, Fullerton, California.

5. VERTICAL ASCENT AND DESCENT

Due to the tremendous superiority of the electrical attractive force over the gravitational and aerodynamic forces, it should be possible to fly a saucer with a greatly diminished electric power system, but the saucer's control is a very sensitive matter, requiring the ability to activate the appropriate electrodes rapidly, in response to a need to change directions of movement, or to quickly correct inappropriate movements of the ship, because of its great speed and ability to "jump around" without inertial/momentive resistance.

The main buoyancy coil, mounted in an area above the cabin, provides the negative brush discharge, which, when paired with the high frequency A.C. coil, beneath the cabin floor, accelerates the ship upward, as the force is balanced to maintain the saucer at a particular vertical position. The high frequency current used on the bottom of the ship on hovering, seems to be the equivalent to Dr. Cavour's "door", which when shut, stops the gravitational effects from forcing the ship to accelerate toward the earth.

The description in 19th century physics literature, as I documented in Occult Ether Physics (especially the 2nd Edition), implies that a normal gravitating body moving relative to earth, within earth's electric, magnetic and gravitational fields, naturally draws the tubes of force into itself, where they are dissolved to impart momentum.

The downward movement of the saucer can be effected by allowing it to drop by the force of gravity, with power diminished, though it can be effected more rapidly by a reversal of the forces which accelerate it upward, but, to eliminate unnecessary complexity and danger, I don't recommend this for a prototype.

The discharge electrodes shown in these plans are of the "pancake-coil" type, which can be placed parallel to the interior walls of the ship, and will be the recipient of the momentum, which is imparted on the third axis, perpendicular to the flat side of the coil, at 90 degrees to the other two axes, which are the magnetic inductance and electric current axes. Placing the flat coils parallel to the outer walls will therefore orient the momentum perpendicular to the outer surface of the ship.

6. HORIZONTAL TRAVEL

Horizontal travel is effected by a pairing, along the ship's longitudinal axis, of the two electrodes, the D.C. brush at the front, and the high frequency A.C. current to the rear. It was believed at one time, by Heinrich Hertz[25], that two systems of varying current should exert a ponderomotive force on each other due to their variations, but Tesla proved that the "ponderomotive force" is due to the respective rarefaction and compression of the ether carriers, produced by different kinds of currents (D.C, A.C, and rapidly varying electrostatic forces)[26], and their effects on the ether.

---

[25]Ann. d Phys. xxxi [1887], p. 421; Hertz's Electric Waves, translated by D.E. Jones, p. 29.

[26]Nikola Tesla, Lecture Before theA.I.E.E., Columbia College, New York [May 20, 1891]; Nikola Tesla, Lecture Before the Institution of Electrical Engineers, London [Feb., 1892].

B. CONSTRUCTION OF THE HULL

Due to the magnitude by which the electrical attractive force is greater than the gravitational attractive force, tremendous stress is created on the hull of a saucer, which must therefore be constructed very strongly. While a spherical shape readily lends itself to such requirements, internal structuring members and walls should be designed, constructed and positioned for maximum rigidity and strength, to prevent the possible pulling apart of, or crumpling of the hull, as this would be the supreme misfortune.

Construction of entrance and exit ports and other such contrivances, should anticipate powerful stresses, since openings are generally points of weakness. It is desirable that the hull have a smooth and continuous conductive outer surface, which has little or no small diameter protuberances, and as few weak or "blank" spots in it as possible, caused by such things as windows (See "C. Simplified Drawings and Plans" below for available excellent source of technical construction literature with materials suppliers). Windows must be of strong, thick material, firmly attached.

1. POWER PLANT

Since the electrical attractive force is so much greater than the gravitational attractive force, it is logical that a relatively small engine, such as the Tesla turbine, or a snowmobile or motorcycle engine, would be adequate to power an alternator of sufficient power for this size saucer. Tesla designed his tiny turbines and remarkable high frequency alternators for this purpose, and they would be preferable. An independent air intake and exhaust system, separate from the air supply for the cabin, must be provided, with careful attention to preclude the mixture of exhaust gases with the air supply for crew and pilot. Batteries may be sufficient to supply electrical power for a saucer, with a small engine used periodically to recharge the battery system, as needed. As shown below in "Special Supplementary Notation on the WW II German Flying Saucers", construction of manned, 'hot-rod'-type saucers or spheres, perhaps only four feet in diameter, may be feasible, possibly using automotive spark coils (perhaps similar to some of the "foo fighters" seen and photographed by allied bomber gunnery crews, in the skies of WW II Germany). The atmospheric nitrogen-oxygen combustion system invented by Tesla, for the production of electrical energy from the air, is too complex to be covered here, and there is insufficient information as to just exactly how the system was constructed and used to produce useful energy.

2. SEATING AND VISIBILITY

Ultra-light, strong, fiberglass bucket seats with seat belts, are recommended. The closer the pilot's eyes to the windshield, the smaller the windows required for visibility, with care taken to electrically insulate the pilot's head from the ceiling. A spherical shape will provide better visibility than a 'discus' shape, and a wide-angle optical viewer might be provided directly downward, between a solo pilot's legs, if desired. This type of saucer involves a restricted pilot position, but since the saucer is so fast, satisfying flights, over great distances, should be of short duration. Small video cameras such as those often used on race cars or by skiers, having wide angle lenses, might be mounted in the saucer surface, with view screens around the interior of the cabin.

For a small, 'hot-rod' saucer as these plans describe, there are several inconveniences which must be tolerated in the name of practicality and economy. The more wealthy builder will naturally find a way to include as much luxury and high-tech controls, accessories and other facilities as he can afford or desire.

3. FLIGHT SUIT

The flight suit should provide electrical and heat insulation, with ultraviolet protection for the eyes. An insulated, cold-water wet suit might work well. Since a pilot will be looking out ports which are near the hull surface, the helmet should provide extra thick electrical insulation, to prevent arcing or electric shock to the head. In general, the suit should provide U.V. radiation protection, preferably by use of a special plastic already developed for this purpose. (NOTE: It was rumored early in the program, in the '50s, that only women pilots were used, since the male scrotal cavity is particularly sensitive to the electrical radiation problems of the saucers.)

Ironically, the kind of pull-over headgear, used by actors or pilots, often used to fake the appearances of "aliens", might be an ideal design for a saucer pilot's headgear, with thick layers of foam insulation in the top (representing the bulbous brain cavities often depicted on the phony aliens), and the sunglass-lens eyes covers would provide U.V. protection.

C. SIMPLIFIED DRAWINGS AND PLANS

The following drawings, including nomenclature, are presented in a simplified format. The details of each particular part or section, are left to the creative imagination, ingenuity and resourcefulness of the individual reader or experimenter, with the author presenting his own suggested design, predicated to provide the least possible obstacles in procurement of materials and actual construction. The skilled experimenter will also recognize that there are relatively simple methods for construction of a scientifically adequate, test scale model, and only a fool would embark on such a project without making such a test, with care taken to insure that the model is suspended by insulative string running through pullies, so that the power may not drain to ground. Such details of saucer construction as particular metals and other materials, fabrication and technology, are generally omitted from these plans, since a complete, detailed set of working drawings, with accompanying technical literature, could conceivably require ten times the length of this book.

As an excellent source for materials and techniques, I recommend Andrew C. Marshall's Composite Basics[28]. This book even describes honeycomb metals and other metal/plastic bonding and structural materials and techniques, etc., and provides sources for a wealth of expert home-built aircraft construction materials and literature of many kinds. Aluminum, though light, may not be the best metal, because there are so many bonding problems with the metal. I am recommending stainless steel, since the electromagnetic flux used to divert the brush discharge for turning must be able to pass through the outer shell.

---

[28]Andrew C. Marshall, Composite Basics [1994, Marshall Consulting, 720 Appaloosa Dr., Walnut Creek, Ca. 94596]

1. (Special Supplementary Notations on
The WWII German Flying Saucers):

In this short summary, I will avoid suspected misinformation, or material which is unrealistically speculative.

There were purportedly several inventors working in Nazi Germany on various types of flying saucers, not all of which were electro-propulsive in concept, meant to operate on rocket, jet, turbojet, or prop-driven reactions of the aerodynamic type. All the video or literary material available to me, concerned this "aerodynamic" type, were either misinformational, or grossly ill-conceived "science" of the La La Land variety, seeming to be mostly contemporary Austrian new age 'thinking' or CIA-concocted garbage, containing only grains of truth. For example, there seems to be valid documentation concerning one example, the Habermohl "Pflugerad" ("Flying Wheel")---which was little more than a re-designed gyrocopter—which actually may have gotten off the ground, though even in the supposed 'documents', was said to be unstable and dangerous to fly. It combined a gyrocopter or helicopter rotor in a wheel shape, concentrically rotating around a ball-shaped cockpit. It experienced several crashes during tests, probably because the rotor gave it too much gyrostability, so that it was unmaneuverable, there being no way to decouple the rotor/gyro from the airframe, during turns or changes in attitude. Some models showed a vertical stabilizer and rudder on the rear of the central non-rotating cockpit section, to turn it in the direction of flight. A rather good idea later used on "jet copters", was rocket or jet engines attached to the rotor, which eliminated the torque problem normally encountered with shaft-driven rotors.

The inertial guidance system ("Peiltochterkompass", or "polar slave compass") was built to meet the requirements of the "full electric" "Kreisel Teller" , because the electrostatic "Faraday cage" effect created by its propulsion system made a normal compass worthless, and the high speeds (c. 9,000 m.p.h.), zig-zag maneuverability, precession, and poor visibility created navigational problems which required a special, non-magnetic compass. The Peiltochterkompass was coupled to a "Meisterkreiselkompass" ("master gyrocompass") mounted on gimbals, which generated its own angular momentum, and operated independent to the earth's gravity and the ship's momentum or inertia. This would be true even if the saucer externally cancelled the effects of gravity, inertia and momentum since, just as the sun transfers momentum to the earth by electrical current, the saucer power system transfers angular momentum to the gyro. Moving freely on its gimbals, the master gyrocompass pointed in the same direction all the time, no matter which way the ship turned, held into position by its angular momentum, as the motor on the slave compass was actuated when needed to turn the compass indicator dial in the direction of travel.

This book is the only known documentation concerning the "KT-p2" project, which from my analysis appeared to be the only true electro-propulsive saucer, and hence true "UFO" possessed by the Germans. In reiteration, any other kind of "saucer" is not a "saucer" at all, but only some sort of jet, rocket, or fan-driven plane, which by coincidence was only shaped like a saucer. There is nothing inherent in the "saucer" shape which makes it particularly advantageous over a conventional aircraft, and in most

cases, is a disadvantage, except in the context of electro-propulsion only, and this only if it is desired to have instant 360-degree maneuverability. The "saucer" projects carried out in Czechoslovakia were clearly disinformational, given the fact that von Braun had the electro-propulsive type as early as 1936 by my documentation. This has come as an embarrassment to those who have put so much stock in the so-called "S.S. documents from Wiener Neustadt", which came under the jurisdiction of the CIA and were therefore misinformational. It would be wise of you to observe who among the "UFOlogy" network has been first to make so much of these documents, as well as who among them have been suckered in by them. It is likely that true saucers were available at the Wiener Neustadt base of General Otto Skorzeny, but were not as described in the tampered literature. It appears that the O.S.I. prepared the disinformation, and disseminated it with the help of Skorzeny, who was one of the first to make such deals to stay out of jail. Skorzeny was also crafty enough to conceal several stashes of high tech documentation and plans, so that he could coerce either the Soviets or the Allies into giving him the protection he desired. The O.S.I. directed attention to the misinformation, through UFOlogy channels, just in time to anticipate my book. Many suckers fail to realize that all German saucer materials had already fallen under the jurisdiction of the CIA
O.S.S.), even before the armistice.

One writer/speaker has attempted to distinguish between "saucers of the secret societies", and "saucers which were secret weapons of the Third Reich". What is
secret" is secret, and the fact that the electro-propulsive saucers were used by the Third Reich in its air defenses meant that the "secret societies" scenario is only a fantasy
ncouraged by the CIA, while the Gestapo clearly could qualify as a "secret society". How secret can it get? My material is obviously more secret than the Wiener Neustadt stuff, and I had no help from the "Knights Templars" or anyone else, and have had to fight tooth and nail all the way to the day my first edition was finally published, and am still struggling. Most of my analysis of the saucer's propulsion system was extrapolated from my 1953 sighting, confirmed by what I have learned from my Peiltochterkompass. In the years since the publishing of my first edition, read by many engineers and scientists, some of whom are experts on German aircraft of all kinds, no one has produced any mention of a "Peiltochterkompass" or the "KT-p2 Projekt", from another German source or any other. This alone proves the German "documentation" has been tampered with, because of the conspicuous omission of this important project.

From these facts, it is my assessment that the so-called "S.S. documents" are either complete fakes, or have been seriously tampered with for misinformational purposes. For example, one type of German ship is referred to in the documents by the name "Kraut Meteor". Despite the fact that this was sometimes how the Allies referred to it on occasion, the Germans wouldn't have called it that in their own documents, which would be tantamount to Idi Amin Dada building an aircraft, and calling it the "Nigger Watermelon". I very seriously doubt that Hitler would have permitted the use of such derogatory and "decadent" American slang to name a supposed 'super aircraft' of the Third Reich. Having already been suckered in once by some of this material, I won't do it again, and I urge extreme caution in accepting and repeating this material, unless you want to be made a sucker out of.

Recently, I was contacted by a California person who sent me a copy of W.A. Harbison's book, Inception (Dell, 1991). He was under the impression that Harbison's book had pre-empted mine. Not so. Harbison's book not only was fiction (and very

interesting at that), but was based on the misconception that "German" flying saucers were the first ones, that they used an aerodynamic "boundary layer" air propulsion system purportedly invented by a fictitious American named John Wilson, and that the saucers we see today are headquartered out of an elaborate underground city built under the ice of Antarctica, run by the S.S. and worked by slave labor. Boundary-layer "saucers" would not be true "flying saucers", but would only be unusual "air-planes" shaped like flying saucers.

As proven by my Peiltochterkompass and my sightings and documentation, the German saucers were electro-propulsive Tesla craft (requiring an inertial navigation system, because of the high-voltage electrostatic discharges and "Faraday cage" effects), some of which had 360-degree peripheral maneuverability in 30-degree increments, just as I observed between 1947-53, in the night skies of West Texas.

The purported Schauberger ships (the only information we really have are photos of models built by Felix Schauberger), purportedly built in Czechoslovakia, were supposedly designed to use an "implosion turbine" to generate the power to drive an 'air-blower' intended to propel the ship. As such, it was little more than a (flying?) air conditioning vent, with an unusual engine, and couldn't have gotten off the ground. And even if by some miracle it could have gotten off the ground, it couldn't have gone over 300 m.p.h., with the dumpy design, muchless over 1,000 m.p.h. as claimed by misinformationists, especially since there is not even reliable information that the ship was ever built. It is too easy to say "the Russians got it", and even if it had been built and had flown, it wouldn't be worth classifying, any more than the little engine-powered UFO toys, which at least were more feasible, and are known to actually fly.

There was purportedly a ship designed by Miethe said to be powered by 12 BMW engines—claimed in documents to run on helium—but said to use the "boundary layer" aerodynamics of Prandtl. Such a system, if true, automatically ruled out electro-propulsive ships. It is my belief that if any of the photos are partially real, the purported name and propulsion system were misrepresented, to throw investigators off the possibility of electro-propulsive ships. There is a photo (real or fake?) purporting to show Miethe explaining this type to Hitler on Apr. 7, 1944. It was purportedly tested in November, 1943, which would be only one month after the manufacture date of my Peiltochterkompass, which raises a probability against mere coincidence. For that reason, I believe that some of the photos—but not the usual 'technical descriptions'—of these ships, may be genuine. The drawings of the basic internal structures may also be somewhat accurate, disregarding the misinterpretations given to them. Large, round ball shapes are shown in the drawings, and three of these are shown in the large "mother ships" (what I call "flying submarines"). These ball shapes could have been liquid helium fuel tanks. A "helium power" system could run "BMW engines", as shown by the Papp engine shown in the Appendices. Twelve engines would suggest that each engine drove a separate electrical generator around the periphery of the saucer, which is consistent with the Peiltochterkompass design. The "Miethe saucer" could be from the "KT-p2 Projekt", the particulars (name, power system, etc.) having been obliterated and faked with misinformation. Though labels and nomenclatures of drawings allegedly from Wiener Neustadt appear to have been altered—especially the written documents alleged to have been with them, which contain silly language—some of the physical designs makes sense in terms of electro-propulsive ships, when "corrected" by my material. One sketch shows a manned "Flying Turtle", which is very similar to the ones I

saw in the WW II 8th A.F. film taken by a B-17 bomber crew. I saw this film while a member of the 26th Strategic Reconnaissance Wing, Operations Intelligence Division, Strategic Air Command, Lockbourne, A.F.B., Ohio, in late 1957. We viewed the film with other intelligence personnel, several of whom had participated in the actual bombing raids in which the film was shot. My O.I.C., Lt. Col. Edward R. Jirles, was involved with Operation Paperclip, as he was among the first Army C.I.C. personnel in the Rheinland. In fact, he was responsible for hunting down and bringing in the "Werewolves"—the last fanatical holdouts of the S.S.—for S.E.A.T.O. Capt. Weismann still carried 9 pieces of shrapnel in his body which he received as one of the heroes who bombed the Ploesti oil fields in Romania, and was sufficiently recuperated in time to be aboard a bomber for the "foo fighter" incidents. Contrary to misinformation, the "foo fighters" were not radio-controlled, unmanned craft, but were small electro-propulsive ships flown by pilots, probably Hitlerjugend.

German daredevils apparently flew these things around the bombers to disrupt their electrical equipment and ignition systems, and to draw their fire. Disruption of the equipment would have required no special equipment, since their dynamic electromagnetic fields and high frequency corona would have rendered the desired effect on allied aircraft, just as one shut down the electrical system on my father's car in 1957, just outside Levelland, Texas. That ship was about 200 feet long and was egg shaped, similar to the Flying Turtles and to those seen by Lonnie Zamora near Soccorro, New Mexico.

Since the "Flying Turtle" was perhaps the simplest of all the German types, I present a simplified set of hypothetical drawings and plans for it. We have no complete, detailed photos or drawings of its design, other than the 8th A.F. films I saw in 1957, and a preliminary sketch from German sources, which I give partial credence to, and present for you with as good an interpretation as possible. The advantage of the Flying Turtle was its good visibility, and its cheap, compact, one-man, simple "hot rod" design, audaciously sacrificing everything to function, to tear into the skies and interfere with the horrible Allied "fire-bombings" that killed several hundred thousand civilians in the Hamburg and Dresden areas. Because of its oblong ("turtle-shell-shaped") design, the control system on these craft appeared to be simplified, with electromagnets in front to turn the ship. The blast of the air was relied on to pull the ship into line as the force was applied, to get the desired maneuverability in the simplest and most direct way. This explains perfectly how the "Foo Fighters" were able to fly in a spiralling pathway.

The truth of the air combat over Germany reveals heroic tales of young daredevils and wily old veterans, such as Adolf Galland, who not only flew with only one leg and one eye, but parachuted out of several shot-up Gustavs to return immediately to the sky to fight again, over and over, until there were no more planes to fly[29]. Many of Germany's pilots fought hard, well, valorously, and honorably to the bitter end.

In the film I saw, in which the Flying Turtles circled the B-17s helically, along their flight paths, the gunners were unable to shoot them because they moved so fast, although they appeared to hit some of the much slower Me-163 "Komets" (c. 500 m.p.h.) which accompanied the Flying Turtles. The Komets were cheaply built "disposable ships", abandoned in the sky once their rocket fuel was expended. In one shot, a Komet pilot could be seen bailing out. By comparison of both size and speed

---

[29]Heinz Knocke, I Flew For the Fuehrer.

between the Komet and a Flying Turtle (moving more than twice as fast as the Komet), it was obvious that the central body of the Turtle was larger than the Komet's, and was going at least 1,000 m.p.h., in a helical path. This maneuver would be the result of the pilots simultaneous actuation of both the "up" and "right" modes, in typical "joystick" fashion. These ships must have required a lot of dexterity, like a video game or a skate board. The speed was no surprise to me, since the saucer I saw in 1953 (about 5 years before I saw the film) was going at least that fast when it did its 90-degree turns.

Since my discovery of how Tesla controlled the brush discharge, to turn the craft, my plans show only one front electrode, with the "buoyancy" coils used to create the "up" and "down" movement. (Actually, an electro-propulsive ship could be flown with only one set of coils, by diverting the brush at the top to 'swing' the ship sideways "pendulum" fashion, but the speed would not be nearly so high.) Since the momentum is imparted to the conductor at 90 degrees to the electric current and magnetic inductance, the flat, pancake types, which can be firmly imbedded inside the ship's shell, are ideal. One would be placed inside the hemispherical nose. A type of simple joy-stick—controlling the electromagnets to the two sides of the front coil—divert the brush discharge in the desired direction, as the body of the craft is swung around by the air to the corresponding curving pathway, turning the craft right, left, or straight ahead.

Intelligence agencies have exerted tremendous effort to obliterate the facts regarding combat reports of German flying saucers, even inducing false reports of post-war German and Austrian "new-age" type researchers, by feeding them misinformation. Some of the researchers even relied on information obtained from the FBI by FOIA procedures. They just can't get it through their heads, that NO CURRENTLY CLASSIFIED INFORMATION CAN BE OBTAINED BY A CITIZEN THROUGH THE FOIA. All such information has been "screened out". Released documents which (once) contained classified references have the classified portions censored. That's what all those blacked out areas are, stupids! In addition, under the National Security Act, completely fabricated information is often released through the FBI, under the FOIA, to mislead researchers who seek to discover classified secrets. What better way to sucker in those who think that certain "documents" released by the FBI are necessarily valid?

So-called 'technical' descriptions, according to dupes or those who pretend to know, are downright stupid. For example, the "Feuerball" ("Fireball") is described as being a 'circular' or 'spherical', remote-controlled craft, from one to two meters in diameter, powered by a flat (radial) turbo-jet engine, which rotated the outer periphery around its axis, creating its "glowing" appearance from the effects of the expulsion of "over-rich" jet exhaust, as it spun around.[30] Even more ridiculous, it contained a Klystron tube (developed around 1939 by the Varian brothers, for Sperry Gyroscope Company, in America), which pulsed synchronously with Allied radar, making it invisible to radar.[31] If stealth technology were so simple everyone would have it.

These descriptions just don't cut the mustard. There was no way to make a remote-controlled device which did all the things reported, and the conspicuous effort was to avoid the categories, "electro-propulsive" and "manned flying saucers".

---

[30]Haarmann, D. H. (1983), Geheime Wundervaffen (supra); Ratthofer, Norbert Juergen (no date), Demnaechst "Endkampf um die Erde", Vienna, Austria;Flugscheiben und Andere Deutsche und Japanische Geheim und Wunderwaffen im Zweiten Weltkrieg, Sierndorf, Austria.

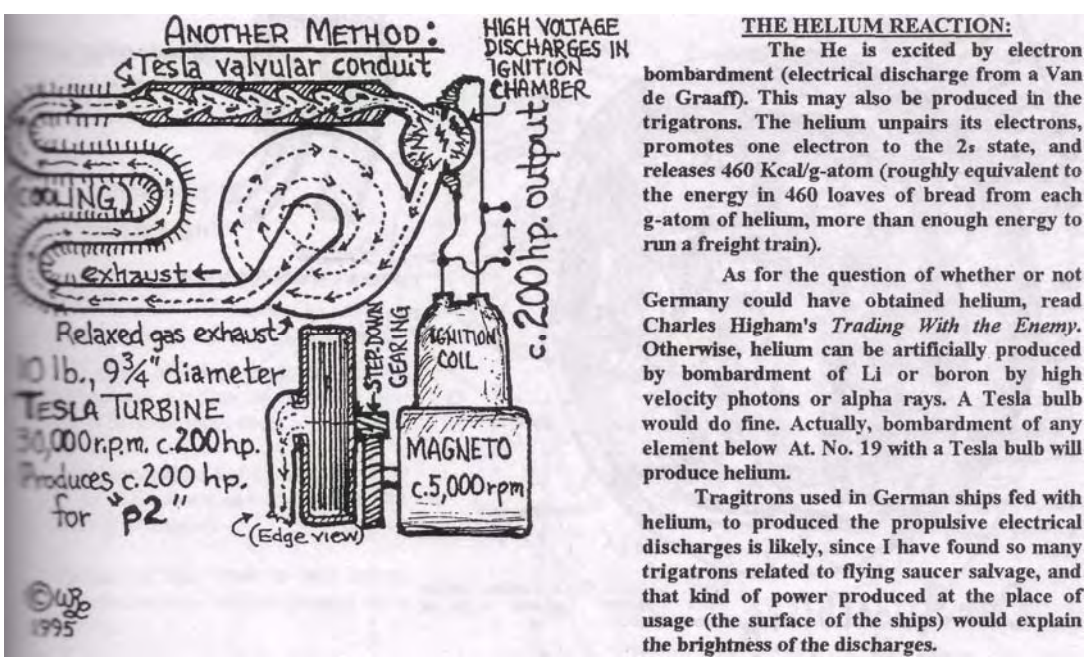
[31]Haarmann, Ratthofer (supra).

2. THE TWO BASIC TYPES OF GERMAN SAUCERS:

1. The ovoidal type, (or "linear type") which flew lengthwise, and included the "Flying Turtles", "Mother Ships", and "egg-shapes" (which in some cases appeared to have more cylindrical shapes, like the "cigar" types, probably due to the necessity to use the most convenient means of fabrication and control at the time); and,

2. the silvery disk type, which flew peripherally, such as the ones seen by my mother, with some alterations to produce the "double-wok" shape seen by us in 1953. There are some very close correlations between the alleged "Vril" ships and those seen by my mother and the entire personnel of the City Hall in Kermit, in 1950, and the ones seen by our entire family in 1953.1 have some friends who saw a ship similar to the Vril type (with a slot around its center), near Pecos, New Mexico a few years back.

If the so-called Miethe ship was electro-propulsive, the "12 BMW engines" idea was probably misinformational. A "boundary-layer/flying air conditioning vent"-type ship couldn't have lifted off with the 3" tank cannon and turret alleged, even with 12 BMW engines. The measly vents would have carried insufficient thrust, and the air friction would have literally burned up the ship. Consistent with my mother's information from Roswell and Alamogordo friends in 1948, helium was probably used as fuel in the German KT-p2 ships, which is the probable reason the Zeppelin program was abandoned, since all the helium was needed for flying saucer fuel. Besides, why have Zeppelins when you can have flying saucers, using similar construction techniques? The helium reactors and the KT-p2 ships probably worked as follows:



THE HELIUM REACTION:

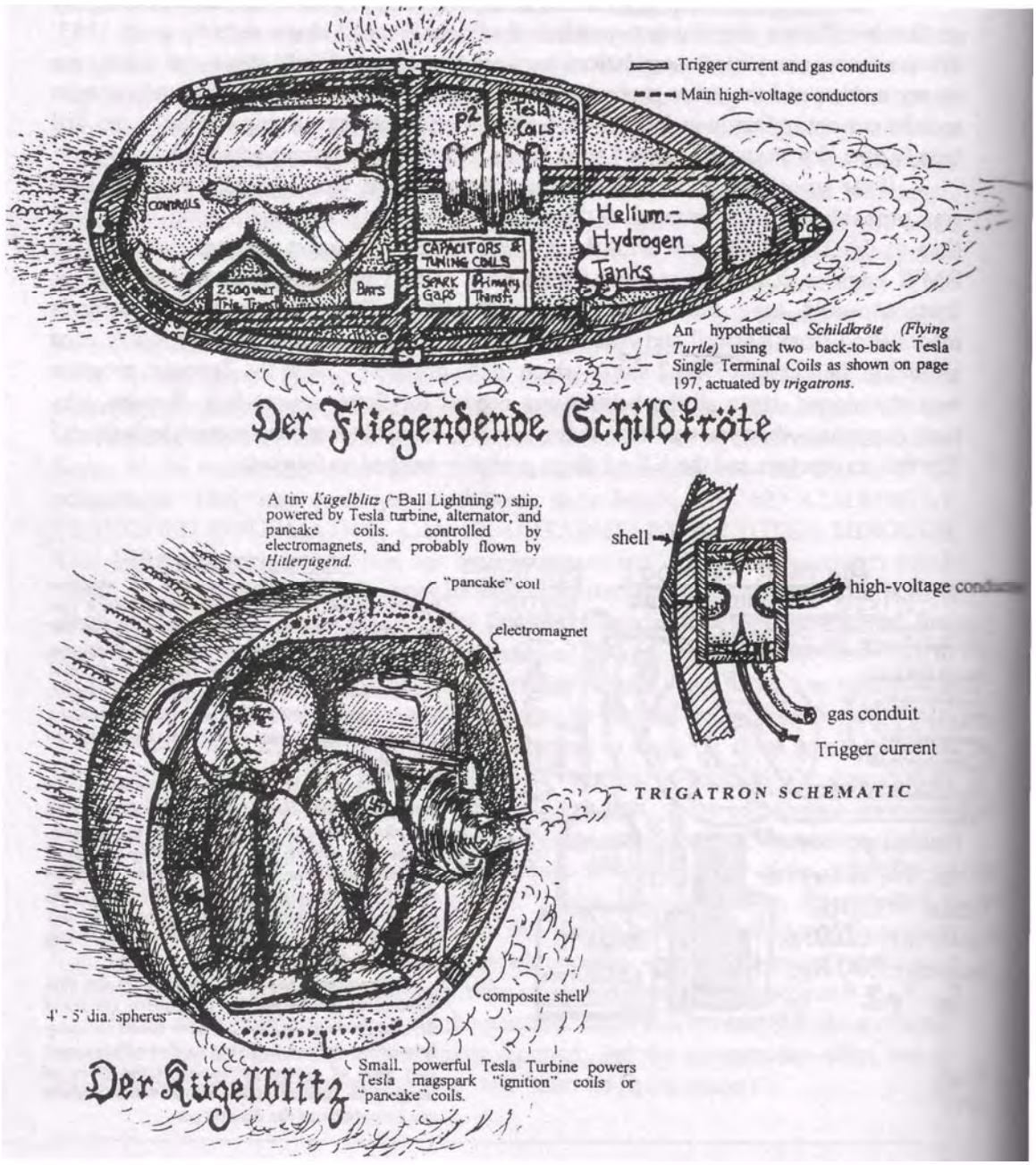
The He is excited by electron bombardment (electrical discharge from a Van de Graaff). This may also be produced in the trigatrons. The helium unpairs its electrons, promotes one electron to the 2_s state, and releases 460 Kcal/g-atom (roughly equivalent to the energy in 460 loaves of bread from each g-atom of helium, more than enough energy to run a freight train).

As for the question of whether or not Germany could have obtained helium, read Charles Higham's *Trading With the Enemy*. Otherwise, helium can be artificially produced by bombardment of Li or boron by high velocity photons or alpha rays. A Tesla bulb would do fine. Actually, bombardment of any element below At. No. 19 with a Tesla bulb will produce helium.

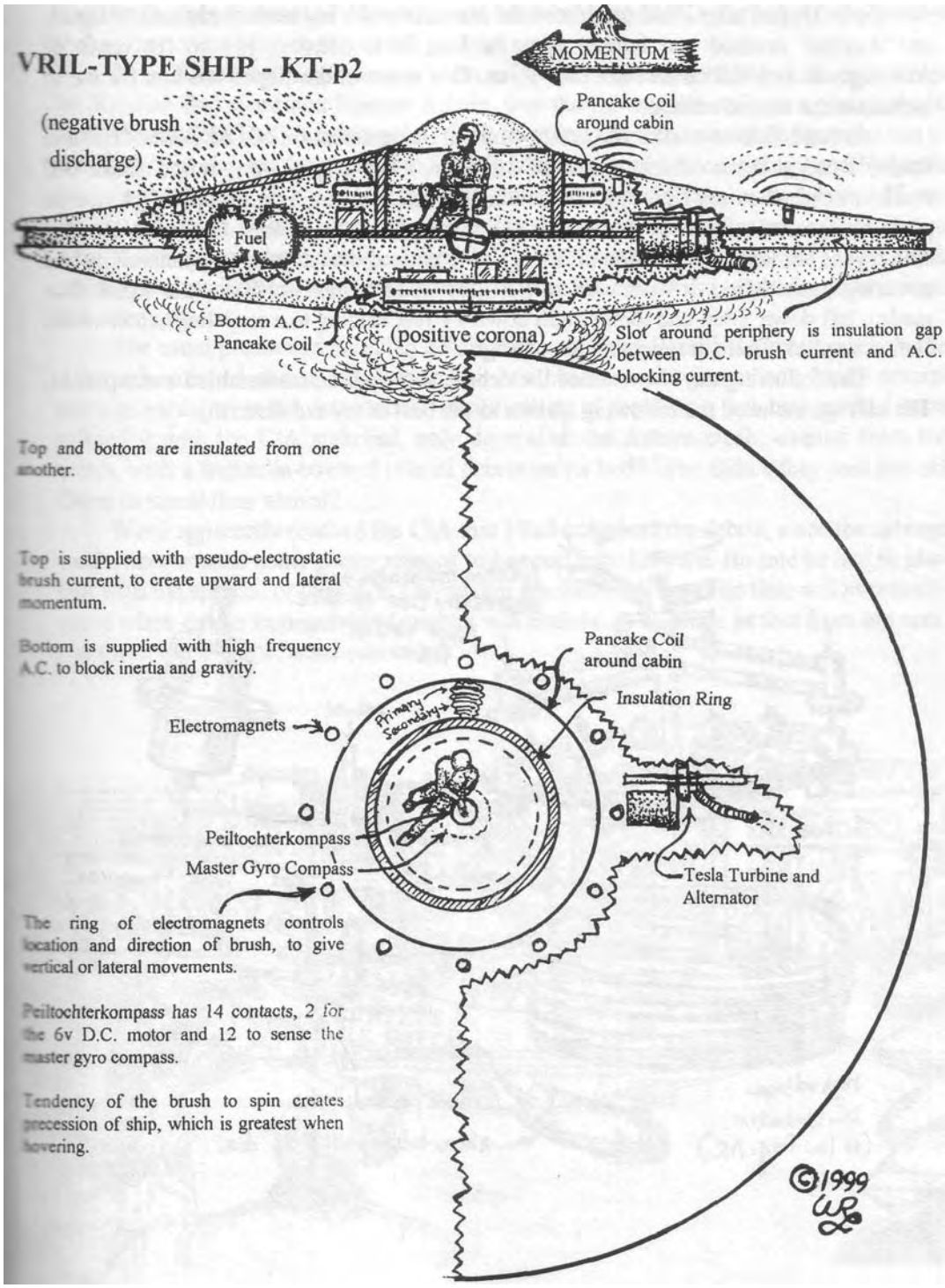
Tragitrons used in German ships fed with helium, to produced the propulsive electrical discharges is likely, since I have found so many trigatrons related to flying saucer salvage, and that kind of power produced at the place of usage (the surface of the ships) would explain the brightness of the discharges.

(NOTE: It is probable that a large Tesla coil system (2 coils for each direction, one for AC. and the other for D.C.) surrounded the cockpit area, triggered in 12 peripheral directions by "trigatrons"—triggered, helium-filled spark gaps—fired by 2,500-volt

D.C. trigger currents, actuated by relays connected to the Peiltochterkompass. These could have controlled the discharges on demand, on the hull, thus easing problem of handling such high voltage currents. German technology on trigatrons was first made available to American electrical engineers at large, in 1946[32]. Very little of this information was declassified even by 1959.
The following illustrations regard my view of various German WWII ships:



[32]Published Proceedings of Institute of Electrical Engineering [Proc. IEE, Vol. 93,1959].


VRIL-TYPE SHIP - KT-p2
MOMENTUM
(negative brush discharge)
Pancake Coil around cabin
Fuel
Bottom A.C. Pancake Coil
(positive corona)
Slot around periphery is insulation gap between D.C. brush current and A.C. blocking current.
Top and bottom are insulated from one another.
Top is supplied with pseudo-electrostatic brush current, to create upward and lateral momentum.
Bottom is supplied with high frequency A.C. to block inertia and gravity.
Pancake Coil around cabin
Insulation Ring
Electromagnets
Primary
Secondary
Peiltochterkompass
Master Gyro Compass
Tesla Turbine and Alternator
The ring of electromagnets controls location and direction of brush, to give vertical or lateral movements.
Peiltochterkompass has 14 contacts, 2 for the 6v D.C. motor and 12 to sense the master gyro compass.
Tendency of the brush to spin creates precession of ship, which is greatest when hovering.
©1999

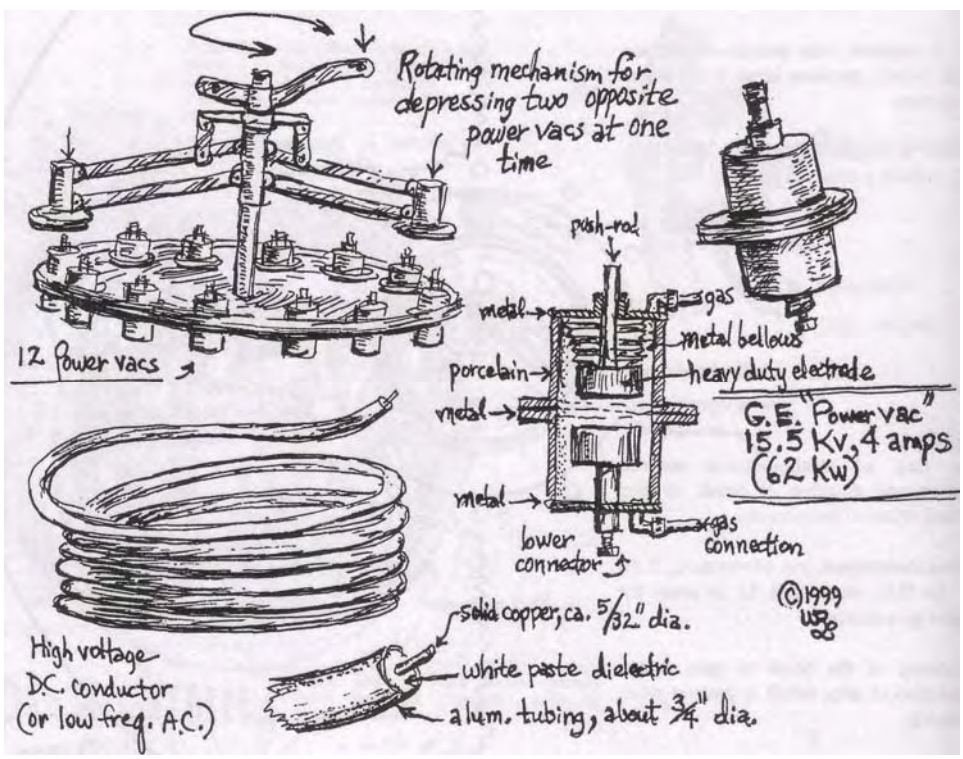
ALIENS211

3. Recent Notes Regarding American UFOs

In 1995, just after I had completed the manuscript for my second edition in August, an "Aurora" crashed and burned near La Luz, New Mexico, just to the north of Alamogordo and Holloman Air Force Base. This material developed too late for me to include in the second edition.

Around five days after the crash, while at the intersection of Old Pecos Trail and Rodeo Road at the southeast corner of Santa Fe, I saw a gray, 'pug-nosed' stake bed truck which had exited 1-25 from the south, as it stopped at a light. It had a CIA license plate on the center front of its bumper. As it turned left to go west on Rodeo Road—which goes across the south side of Santa Fe—I noticed that it had a tarpaulin on its bed covering some debris. It went west to Cerrillos Road, turned north to Siler Road, then made a left down Siler, and took a right down a street leading to a recycling center which I often went to. There, it unloaded its 'salvage'.

The following day, I examined the debris, and even dissasssembled a component. The salvage included the following (drawn to the best of my recollection):

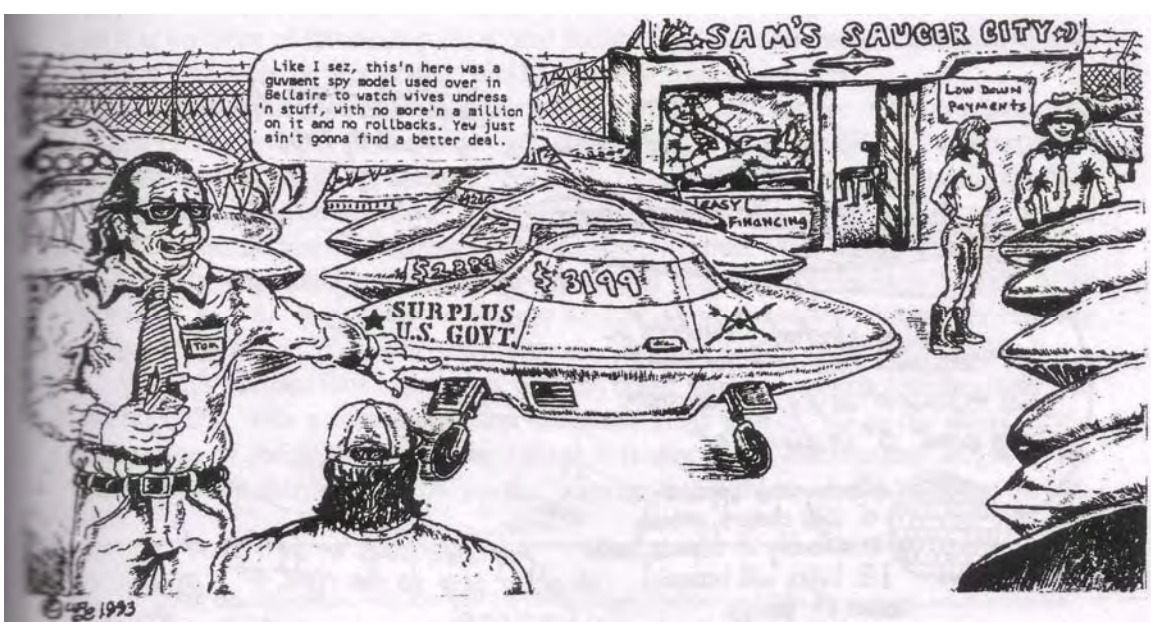


The debris was blackened from the burning, and someone had taken a sledge hammer to the dish, in attempt to deface it, but failed to break a single "power-vac". The entire assembly appeared to be a high-amperage switching system which carried 15.5 Kv current to two places at a time, totalling twelve in all, in bipolar pairs. This seemed to confirm the rumor that the "Aurora" could hover and use "UFO-like" electro-propulsive technology, in addition to its normal turbojet power.

It is interesting that the name "Aurora" is used for this craft, since the discoveries by Kristian Birkeland and Hannes Alfven, that the Aurora Borealis is a giant current from the sun into Earth's north pole, which transfers angular momentum from the sun to the earth, and showed the relation to Tesla's electro-propulsive technology and Dynamic Theory of Gravity.The principle was illustrated by the sighting made by myself and several others as I sat in a hot tub at the Ten Thousand Waves Japanese Bath House near Santa Fe, on the evening of Jan. 26, 1996 (illustrated on page 181). The brush discharge extended above and ahead of the ship as momentum was transferred to it from the ether carriers.

The usual practice in handling debris from a crashed classified aircraft, such as the Aurora mentioned above, is to separate it and haul it to the four winds, using several salvage yards, to avoid detection or identification of the debris, but how could I have missed it with the CIA stakebed, only days after the Aurora crash, coming from the south, with a tarpaulin-covered pile of debris on its bed? Why didn't they just fire off flares to signal their arrival?

Word apparently reached the CIA that I had examined the debris, since the salvage yard owner created some phony reasons to ban me from his yard. He said he had to play ball with the spooks, or they won't bring him any more salvage. The time will eventually come when debris from salvaged saucers will become as common as that from old cars, and there will even be "used saucer lots".

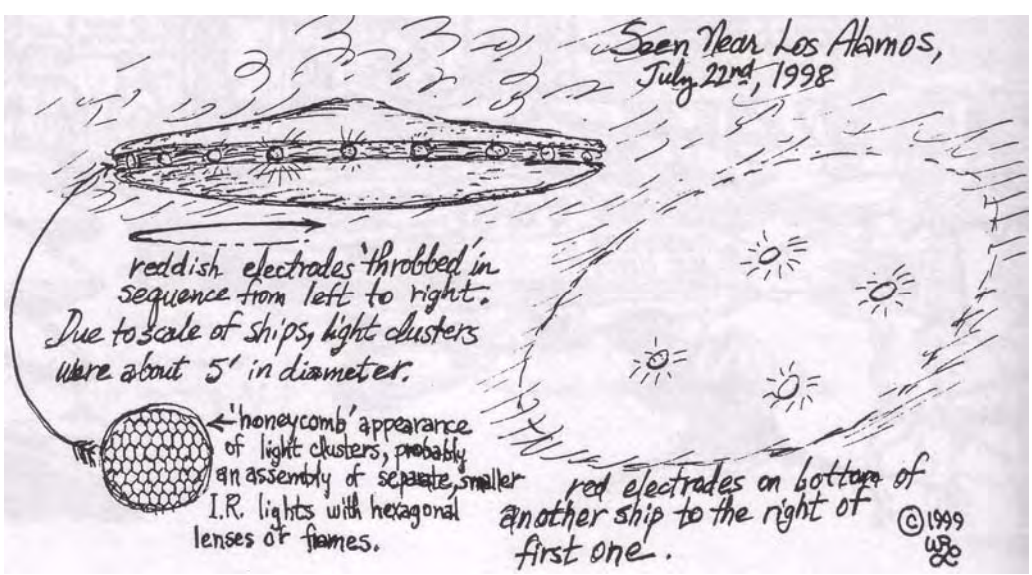


The oblong, lozenge-shaped ship with rounded edges, was about 10,000 feet away, and executed a perfect, circular flight in around ten seconds. Since its circle was around 30 degrees across, its speed was around 2,000 mph. It was around 3/4" long at arm's length, which means that it was around 400 feet long, about 250 feet wide, and appeared to be about 50 feet thick. In other words, the ship was about the size of a five-story building which occupied the shape of the area inside the track around a football field.

On July 19, 1998, 9:21 P.M., my son and I sighted a couple of huge, saucer-shaped ships, as we exited Furr 's Food Emporium, a large grocery store on St. Michael's Drive, on the southeast side of Santa Fe. The ships were hovering and maneuvering between Santa Fe and the 'tech' areas to the south of Los Alamos National Laboratory. Due to the apparent distance to these ships—at least five miles—and their relative size, they were very large, several hundred feet across.

One ship hovered horizontally for a short time, while the other appeared to be hovering at an angle, showing its bottom, which had four large, red lights on it. The horizontal ship had a single row of red lights around its middle, in what appeared to be a trough. These round red lights, which had to be around five to ten feet in diameter, 'throbbed' in sequence, from left to right, becoming bright then dim, one after the other. These were apparently to stabilize the ship's precession, and the fact that they 'throbbed'—increased and diminished gradually in power, rather than "flashed" abruptly—indicated that they smoothed out the transition of force from one electrode to another. This would produce a more stable effect to counteract the precession problem.

The large lights each had a hexagonal, 'honeycomb-like' pattern, indicating that they were composed of many smaller infra-red lights, each mounted in hexagonal frames. This was probably because of the difficulty in getting larger I.R. lights, and the fact that, even though one light might burn out, the others would remain to function until the burnt out lights could be replaced. The I.R. emissions seem to have the opposite effect on the brush as a magnetic field, inducing the brush to follow the beam to counteract its tendency to spin, since the spinning creates the precession when the ship is hovering. The I.R. lights are to stabilize the ships. Here is a simplified drawing:



4. MY FLYING SAUCER DRAWINGS AND PLANS:

Preliminary Technical Background

Having determined that a DC. brush discharge induces movement in the direction it is pointed, by "rarifying" and stretching the ether, Tesla did intensive research with the phenomenon of rotating brush discharge, and how it can be controlled.[33] This research led up to Tesla's proof of concept, by 1894. The rotation of the brush, caused by rotation of a magnetic field, is the apparent cause of precession of spinning bodies, and of non-spinning flying saucers. Since the brush induces movement in the direction pointed, its rotation causes the precessive oscillations. This is also consistent with the rotation of the brush clockwise in the northern hemisphere, and counterclockwise in the southern hemisphere. Since a spinning body carries electrostatic charges as it spins, it generates an invisible brush which moves at a slower rpm, to create precessive movement. Here, Tesla artificially created a rotating brush by inductance, in a non-spinning body.

P^2 (or p2) is apparently two primaries, since two identical pancake secondaries can respond at different wave forms, determined by tuning in each of the two primaries. At one-quarter wave, the secondary will create a D.C. brush discharge. Referring to the illustration on page 197, Tesla's patent #723,188, Method of Signalling, P^1 and P^2 are the two differently tuned pancake coil primaries, each having identical secondaries, run on the same system, which makes them appropriate for electropulsion.

An electrostatic generator is unwieldy and has a low output for its size. The problem Tesla faced was how to produce a pseudo-electrostatic D.C. brush with his small, light-weight high frequency coils. In reiteration, in the page 197 illustration, the coil to the left can be tuned to a quarter wavelength, to produce the brush discharge, while the coil to the right is tuned to a half or full wave, constituting a high frequency alternating current. The brush enables the ether carriers and tubes of force to enter the ship's conductors (the metallic shell), while the other coil compresses the ether carriers so that no tubes of force can pass, so that the ship will have no inertial resistance to hold it back, and it can be accelerated quickly as well as turned on a dime.

Since the direction of momentum will be normal to the surface of the conductor, the brush can be diverted around a curved surface which is perpendicular to the direction of desired movement. It was necessary for Tesla to learn how to control the position of the brush, since a brush-control system (magnets) would make it unnecessary to have a cumbersome system of different coils for every direction. With a simple two electrode system, the ship could be propelled in any desired direction. As stated by Tesla[34], "The rotation may be reversed by a magnet kept at some distance. " "...the fact that the brush turns, as far as I could observe, in any position, would speak for this view."

In his vacuum tube expriments with the brush, using concentric (double, inner and outer) bulbs, with a central emission electrode, Tesla stated: "As to the cause of the formation of the brush or stream, I think it is due to the electrostatic action of the globe and the dissymetry of the parts... ", saying that if the two bulbs had been perfect,

---

[33]Nikola Tesla, Experiments with Alternate Currents of High Potential and High Frequency (Lecture before the Institute of Electrical Engineers, London, 1892) McGraw Publishing Co., New York (1904).

[34]Nikola Tesla, Experiments, etc. (Supra) p. 48.

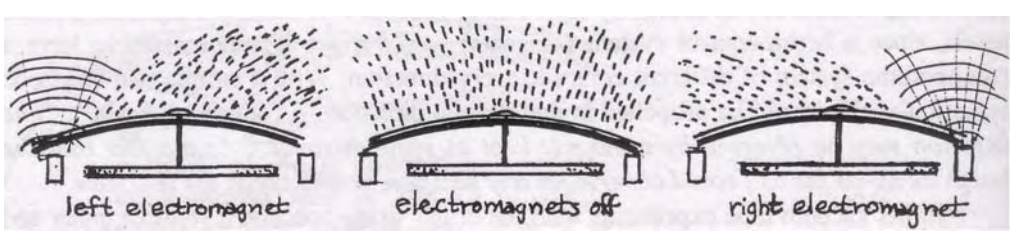
concentric spheres, with identical quality and thickness of glass, he thought the brush would not form, since "...the tendency to pass would be equal on all sides. "

In 1899, after the London lecture, Tesla stated that he had developed what he called his "single terminal coil"[35]. The new coil, which could be in a cone shape or of the "pancake" type, could be tuned to one-quarter wave to produce the brush discharge by means of impulses which have a negative preponderance, or tuned to the half or full wave, to produce the high frequency A.C. current. As said by Tesla earlier[36], "...in alternating currents of very high frequency the positive and negative impulses are not equal, but that one always preponderates over the other. "

The D.C. nature of high frequency quarter-wave pulses have been similarly analyzed in modern times[37], as follows (in pertinent part, emphasis mine): "Since electromagnetic effects are not transmitted instantly from point to point in space...there is a time lag between changes in charge and current distribution on the dipole" which "...allows some of the energy to continue flowing outward even though conditions at the dipole may have changed to indicate an inward flow of energy...as ij some of the electric and magnetic field has become detached from the dipole or 'shaken off' by the oscillation. " The intensity of the emitted wave is dependent upon the increased frequency, and the time lag becomes more significant, since "...the power radiated varies as the fourth power of the frequency. "

Tesla moved his primary to the outside of his new "single terminal coil", with each turn of the secondary (inside it) having progressively increased spacing and insulation, as the potential increased between the turns, toward its single center terminal. This allowed for higher voltages with greater effect, since the vector product of the electric and magnetic force in a region of space determines the extent of electromagnetic momentum imparted.[38] Since, as Thomson said, momentum is imparted to conductors at right angles to the magnetic inductance and current, it naturally follows that Tesla's single terminal pancake coil is most appropriate, because it's flat profile allow it to be conveniently positioned in the ship's peripheral spaces, parallel to and inside its outer surfaces, which conserves space inside.

The first of my proposed ships, of ultimate simplicity, has an electromagnetic turning system, with two coils used for vertical buoyancy, and two coils used for horizontal flight. Two sets of electromagnets mounted peripherally to the front coil are used to divert the brush to the right or left.



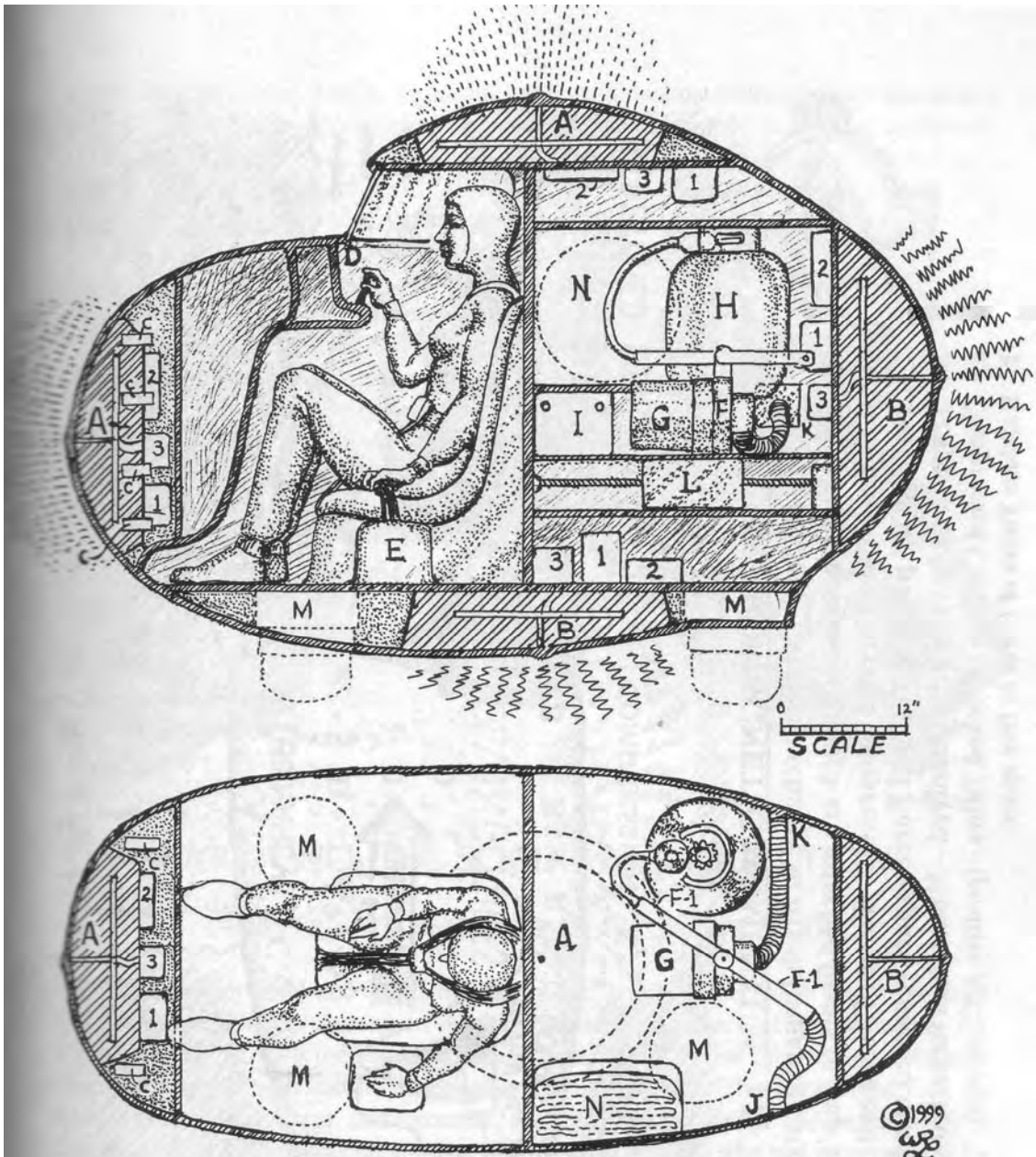
---

[35]Nikola Tesla, Letter, Some Experiments in Tesla's Laboratory with Currents of High Potential and High Frequency ELECTRICAL REVIEW, N. Y. (1899).

[36]Nikola Tesla, Experiments, etc. (supra).

[37]R. L. Armstrong & J. D. King, The Electromagnetic Interaction, Prentiss-Hall, Englewood Cliffs, N. J. (1973).

[38]J. J. Thomson (supra).

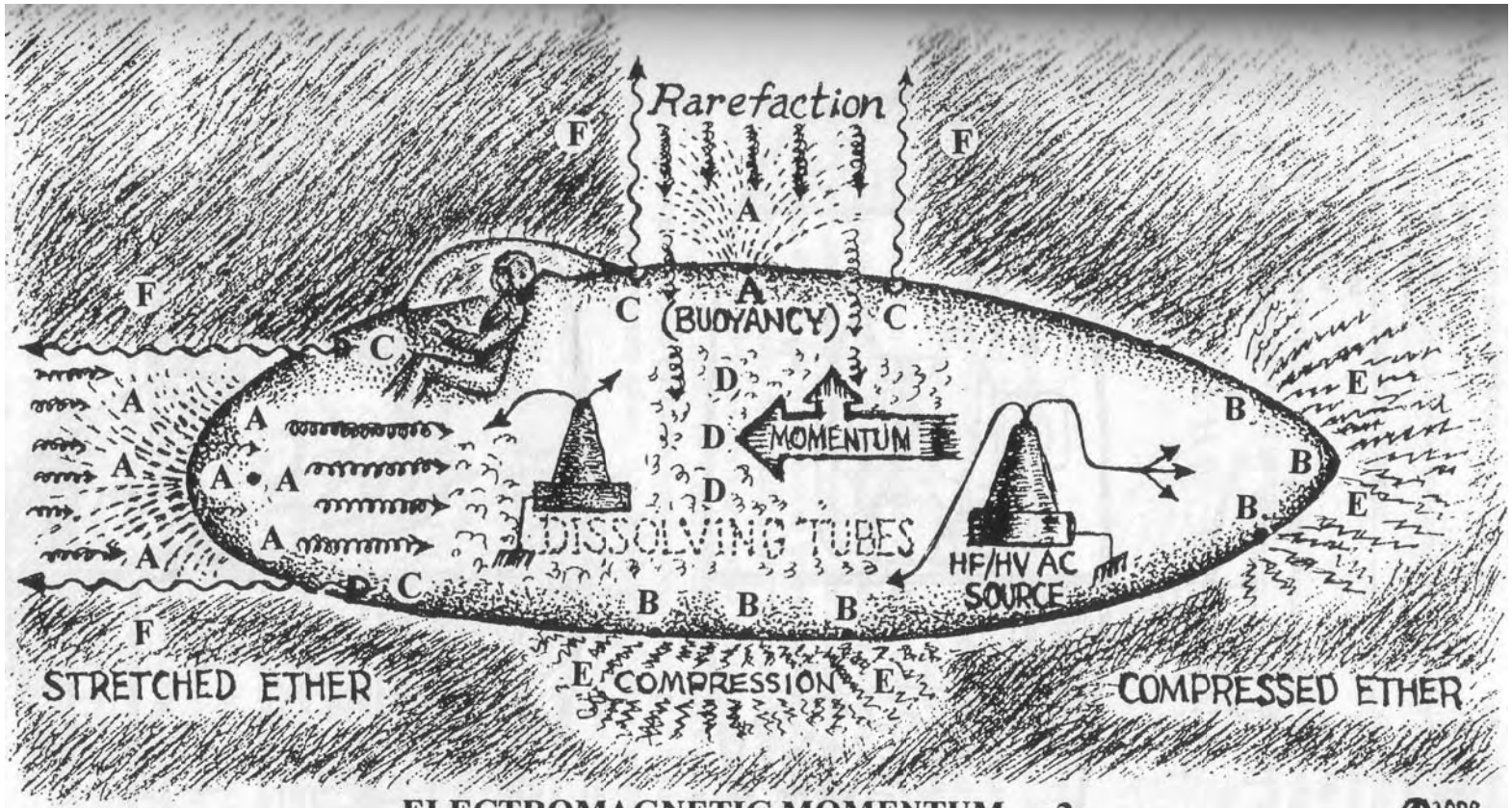


THE FIREFLY

A - D.C. Brush Pancake Coil Modules
- 1 - transformers
- 2 - capacitors
- 3 - spark gaps

B - High Freq. A.C. Pancake Coil Modules
- 1 - transformers
- 2 - capacitors
- 3 - spark gaps

C - brush control electromagnets
D - Turn Control Joystick
E - Power and Vertical Controls
F - Tesla Turbine
F-1 - Valvular Conduits
G - Alternator
H - Propane Fuel Tank
I - Battery
J - Engine Air Intake
K - Engine Exhaust
L - Adjustable Ballast & Servo
M - Pneumatic Landing Buffers
N - Emergency Ballistic Chute



ELECTROMAGNETIC MOMENTUM - p2:

©1998 WL

A - D.C. Potential - Carriers exchange in Brush (negative corona) - Tubes of Force enter conductors which are attached firmly to ship's structure

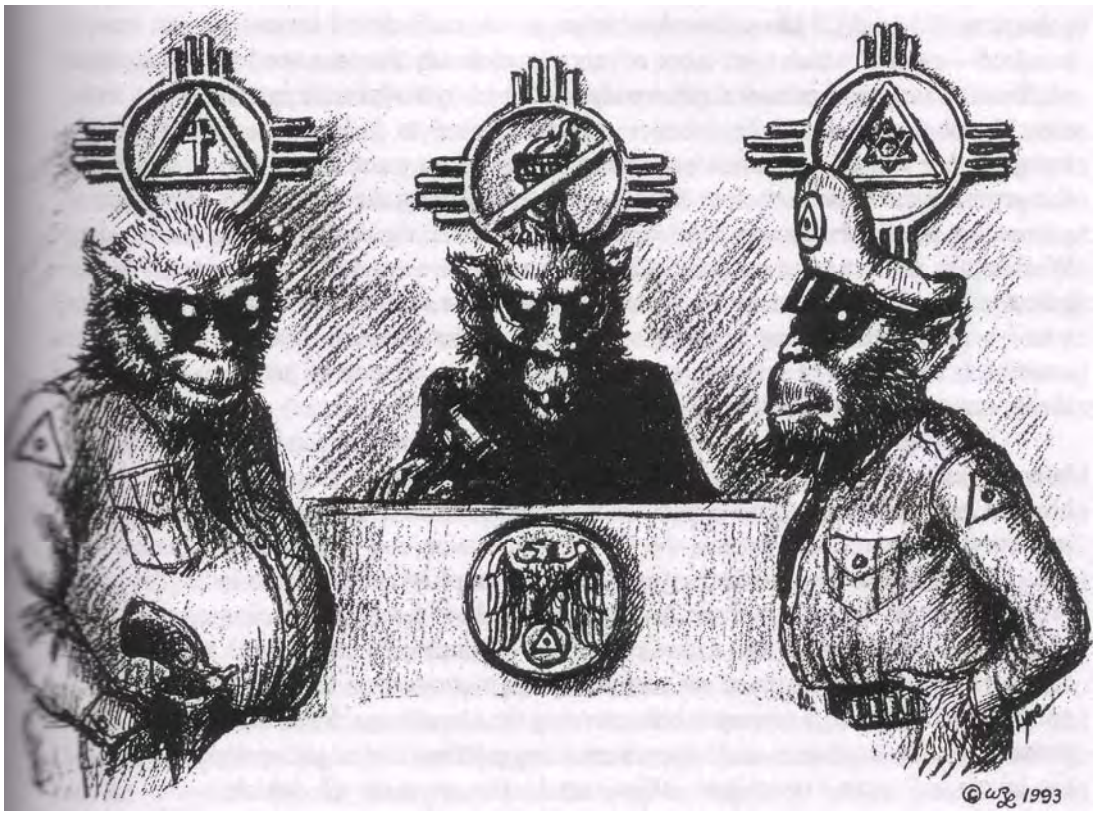
B - A.C. Potential - Carriers compressed - Tubes of Force exit blocked

C - Tesla Bulbs polarize Tubes of Force - space rendered conductive

D - Trapped Tubes of Force Dissolved - Momentum imparted at 10^{40} x fg

E - Compressed Carriers - Blocked Tubes - (positive A.C. corona)

F - Random Tubes of Force in free space



PART TWO: THE SOCIAL MANIPULATION

CHAPTER VI: CANNIBALISTIC FASCIST LITIGATION

Between 1986 and 1992, my family and I were subjected to intense judicial harassment which had nothing to do with the subject matters of approximately six fraudulent and abusive judicial proceedings filed against me or otherwise government instigated, which were mostly disguised as "property" suits. This harassment took up almost all my time, energy, and resources, and destroyed my family. The lead attorney in this abuse was a Jesuit-trained attorney of Sicilian extraction, who had prosecuted G.I.s for the J.A.G., during the Vietnam War. The Jesuits are especially known for their collaboration with the CIA's mind-control experiments such as the MK ULTRA Project.[1] This attorney was what I would call a "judicial torture specialist". Every horrible, dirty, underhanded, cheap trick imaginable was used in this litigation, and the CIA's involvement was obviated by the immunity from judicial discipline which the perpetrators enjoyed, in spite of their overtly unethical conduct before the New Mexico courts, as well as the joyous, sadistic relish with which the judicial turds carried the dirty dealings out in the name of "justice".

During the same approximate period of time, I filed a patent application which was to 'sound out' the patent office to either obtain a patent or see if the P.T.O. is really as

---

[1]Cathy O'Brien and Mark Phillips, Trance-Formation of America

corrupt as I'd heard. I have numerous other novel, undisclosed inventions—at least a hundred—most of which were more advanced technically than the one I sought a patent on, but the simpler mechanical, thermodynamic and hydrodynamic invention was more clearly novel, and would be a better sounding board to feel out the patent office's integrity. My strategy was also designed to avoid exposing a more valuable invention to the prying eyes of the corporate-state monopolists, during the supposedly secret patent proceeding. Patent examiners have their many offices in the outlying areas surrounding Washington, D.C., tucked away in little offices which are not under close scrutiny by the patent office. The examiners often have semi-illiterate or mentally retarded secretaries who have no idea of what is going on, so that under-the-table dealings between the examiners and the large interests can be conducted, in violation of patent rules, without the ignorant secretaries getting wise.

One invention I had developed in 1978 had already been stolen by a creep who had been given a new, false identity in America, by the U.S. Army C.I.C., after being brought here under Operation Paperclip at the end of WWII. His specialty seemed to be industrial espionage, and he had the CIA's cooperation and protection in whatever he did. I later received confirmation that the CIA employs such people in an on-going program to steal technology from inventors to be sold to fund their black operations.

The stolen invention was a new kind of solar voltaic cell, created with a new kind of construction technique carried out with a new mass-production technique for producing solar voltaic chips on a conveyor belt, carrying the chips through several chambers. The process used hydrofluoric acid vapor, containing positive and negative dopants, applied to layers of pure, crystalline silica sand, the crystals of which were to be electromagnetically polarized and positioned, before being fused with microwaves. Between the silica crystals, layers of 'sputtered' metals were applied for conductivity. I chose hydrofluoric acid vapor to carry the dopants, since it would etch them into the sand crystals. The process eliminated the very expensive and tedious process involving the growing of silicone crystals in a high temperature furnace, after which the crystals had to be sliced into thin wafers with a diamond saw. Instead, I used silica sand crystals produced in nature. In addition, my automated process was designed to further decrease the price of the cells. Cheap, but durable materials and processes were used throughout. This process became the new industry standard, and has made $millions—maybe even $billions—for the CIA-friendly industrialists.

Within 10 days of the theft of my plans for this invention, a Michigan pal of the thief filed a patent application. The thief also stole over 80 ounces of highly purified iridium (a platinum group metal, worth over $80,000.00 at the time), which I had extracted from ore concentrate, at great risk to my life and health under the circumstances. The patent neglected to include the part about using pure silica sand, and used only the more usual sliced crystal wafers, along with the rest of my ingenious new process. I reasoned that the exclusion of the sand technology was because it has the capacity to make solar voltaic cells so cheap that you could use them as roof shingles, and the invention would become public domain in only 17 years. Such a technology would soon greatly diminish dependency on fossil fuels and electric power companies.

The patent concentrated on my manufacturing process, which increased the efficiency of solar voltaic cells by almost 100%—from around 12-14% to 25%. The invention was then sold to ARCO, a company created by Robert O. Anderson of Roswell, former president of the Bilderberg Group, as I have already mentioned.

The proceeds of this sale were apparently shared by the CIA and its technology thieves, phony inventors, and developers.

My patent application—the one for the transmission invention—was for an off-the-shelf, universal, variable, dynamic transmission, which could be produced as an hydraulic or pneumatic one, in a multitude of forms and sizes. I knew that there was nothing like it on the market or in the patent office, though there were several inventions which had come close, passing right by it, yet missing it completely. Some had parts or sections similar to it, used in ways that showed a complete unawareness of the simple invention lying only inches away. Due to their failures to see the invention, their inventions were no more than inoperable and inefficient conglomerations. My drawings and basic parts of the application and invention are shown in Appendix A. I dedicated this invention to the public in my first edition of 1993, to prevent the corporate thieves from profiting from it or keeping it out of public use.

I knew that under the constitution, the patent office was obligated to grant a patent on this invention, once it became apparent that it was a valuable, novel creation like no other.

By allowing corporate thieves a preliminary look at a patent application, they can decide whether or not they are interested in it. If so, the examiner can run the applicant ragged with all kinds of bureaucratic procedures and fees, intended to force him to abandon his application. Once the applicant abandons his application, the corporation can apply for a patent on the exact, same, identical invention, receive a patent, and grease the palm of the examiner. This prevents the public from using the invention for at least 20 years (about three years are taken up in applying for the patent, and an additional 17 years are added to that), thus slowing down progress, so that the vested interests can continue to promulgate their archaic technology. By the end of that time, if the corporation has chosen not to put the invention into service, it is usually forgotten about.

There I was with a series of CIA-instigated abusive lawsuits against me, and at the same time, a pending patent application. Between the Oct. 25, 1978 invention and metals theft, and the 1993 publication of the first edition of this book, at least four murder attempts were made against me, all of which I could connect to the CIA and its technology thieves. There were probably more murder attempts than that, but the other attempts were more difficult to identify. One of the murder attempts consisted of having children give me food in a restaurant which was contaminated with salmonella, on the same day that a "notice of abandonment" was mailed by the patent examiner from Washington, D.C. The only people who could have known of the mailing of the notice, were those the examiner told , in violation of the rule of secrecy. That occurred in 1992, at which time I began writing this book in earnest, with the determination to publish it, since another murder attempt could succeed, and it would be attributed to "natural causes", and no one would ever know why.

The courts, through a series of judicially corrupt and abusive orders, based on lies, repeatedly held me in contempt without notice or hearing, struck pleadings necessary to protect my civil and property rights, and prohibited me from filing pleadings, in violation of my due process rights. They deprived me of some of my property, forced the abandonment of a patent application, destroyed my family, and subjected all four of us to vicious, treacherous and abusive orders, manipulation, anxiety attack, and intentionally inflicted emotional, physical, mental and economic distress. They

impoverished me and sapped my physical, emotional, financial and mental resources. I wanted, and still want, revenge. Can you blame me?

The local trash who carried out these filthy acts were small-time toadies, drug dealers, money-grubbers, property thieves, trashy and crooked realtors, title examiners and insurers, yeggs, and socialist bureaucrats. The people who directed this "machine", were part of a corporate-statist, coercive-monopolist, fascist elite. What this elite fears most is a truly free, creative, laissez-faire, free-market economy, in which a broad base of people participate and prosper. Their "machine" is designed to maintain their control. My many unpatented inventions were the result of intensive research and creative activity I engaged in between 1976 and 1986—ten years. It is my intent to give these inventions to the public to further punish the elite, along with this expose of flying saucer electric propulsion technology, as my revenge for having subjected my family and me to the judicial abuse and deprivation of presence of mind, money, civil rights, human rights, and property.

The civil judicial system is a trap devised by corporate-statists, to ensnare and devour all those whose interests conflict with theirs'. The involvement of the N.S.A. and CIA is incidental to their functions as pawns in the game, under Trilateral Commission orders, to protect the corporate/state alliance from damaging scientific and technological breakthroughs and leaks.

The President is a member of the Trilateral Commission, and he gives the orders which the Commission gives to him. An example of the behavior of this hierarchy is the Gulf War bombings of Iraq in 1992 and 1998. The IMF and Bilderbergers want possession of Russia's natural resources and basic industries, such as the phone system and other utilities—the things people must pay for every day—the same things the elite owns here. Russia's loans from the IMF seem to be unsecured, as the Russians have held back on using their major national resources as collateral, while trying to get on their feet as a free market economy. The elite wants them to use their vast natural resources and utility concessions as collateral for their IMF loans, so they can be induced to default on their loans, with the elite then coming into possession of these resources through bankruptcy and foreclosure procedures.

Russia has an oil deal with Iraq which they need to achieve a valid credit rating, and to pay off existing IMF loans which are continually overdue. The Russians are on their knees, and the IMF and Bilderbergers do not intend to let them get on their feet until they control Russia's natural resources, the same as they control them in America. The bombings of Iraq are designed to prevent Russia's recovery, and primarily have nothing to do with anything else. The impeachment proceedings against President Bill Clinton have been designed to turn the heat up to force him to bomb Iraq for the Banksters. That way, the Russian-Iraqi oil deal will go sour and the Russians will be unable to repay their loans. It is hoped that, through this continual ruin of Russia's attempts to succeed as a free market economy, the Russians will eventually be forced to surrender their resources to the Banksters.

Now that Clinton has bombed the Iraqis once more, he probably won't be impeached. After all, the whole series of incidents involving Monica Lewinsky were orchestrated through a Pentagon set-up, in which a Pentagon employee—Linda Tripp—tape-record her conversations with Monica Lewinsky, another Pentagon employee. This could not have occurred without the approval of national security authorities, something which has never been mentioned in the whole mess. Otherwise, for one Pentagon

employee to tape record their conversations with another, regarding the President, would be considered as espionage.

With the supposed crumbling of socialism, the American civil judicial system remains as a disguised means for a secret corporate-socialist state to continue to force its will upon those in its disfavor, favoring litigants within the parameters of its secret agenda, and denying the claims of those who are not. On the face of it, since this system serves only the elite, and provides no benefits to the ordinary American, the system should be abolished, and our rights restored. This includes ending the emergency status which has been protracted to suspend our rights since 1933 (though some think since 1913). We ordinary Americans should not support a civil judicial system which fails to support us and is only for the powerful to keep us under their control. It has been abolishing our natural rights for some time, and should itself be abolished. It no longer serves the interests of the people, and has broken down. We are the damned bosses, and have no duty to serve "the system".

Legitimate conflicts should be handled through a private criminal justice restitution system, or private civil court system, devoid of corporate-socialist conflicts of interest. Only cases which meet a preliminary burden of criminal jurisdiction should be allowed to be filed. The rest should be resolved by mediation, or perhaps "Tanistry" (the ancient Irish system based on Phoenician law).

With these suggestions in mind, we are now going to play a new game, in the following three parts, which I call (1) "The Ninth Amendment Quiet Game", (2) "The Article One (Sec. 8, cl [8], and the Fifth and Fourteenth Amendments Property Game", and (3) "The First Amendment End-Run Game" (also referred to as "The Ol' Statute of Liberty Play").

The Patent and Trademark Office's ("P.T.O.'s") rules are designed to loot isolated, individual, dreamer-type—typically eccentric or naive—inventors, some of whom may have only one good idea in their entire lives. Like beneficial insects being ensnared by giant, evil spiders, they are lured into the trap, encouraged by government/corporate propaganda, to seek patents. Corporations, which invent NOTHING (except high-toned slogans and logos), collaborate with the Patent Office, successfully stealing inventions from a steady flow of inventor-sucker applicants with stars in their eyes. This book blows the cover on that scam.

The creativity which has been the hallmark of the American experience is rapidly diminishing with the oppression of our creative people, by denying fair compensation and credit, while exploiting their creative products. Inventors come to the P.T.O. as trusting fools, and under its weird rules, the P.T.O. stabs them in their backs, helping the corporate thieves steal their inventions. If these inventors had other inventions—which most of them do—they would make no further disclosures—which most of them don't—in order to avoid repeating the trauma and disappointment of multiple "patent rape" by the U.S. government and corporate state. I can now speak for these hapless inventors, since I was among them.

While not all inventors' claims are valid, the P.T.O. condescendingly grants many token patents for worthless, inoperable 'paper' inventions, simply because the applications are filed by patent attorneys, conform to the P.T.O.'s weird bureaucratic idea of proper applications, and present no real threat to the vested interests. Though such inventions may be harmless, inoperable devices, the patents may contain disclosures which work to the benefit of the corporations, by creating the false illusion

that the 'little fellah' has rights too, provided he goes into hock for a high-priced PATENT ATTORNEY. This false illusion helps maintain the flow of suckers to the patent office. Meanwhile, more valuable applications are denied for purely formal reasons, since the inventions are to end up in the hands of corporate thieves, who may at their whims suppress or confiscate them, obliterating the true inventors with a wall of litigation they cannot even begin to penetrate. Though I have been abused many times by my government, I refuse to dissolve in despair like so many others whom the P.T.O. and the civil litigation system have permanently crushed.

A patent as we know it does not secure anything, except the right to attempt to enforce it in court. The true nature of the right is the inalienable property right of an inventor, to the disposition of wealth he created. Property rights are not created by the government, and an inventor owns his invention whether or not the government grants a patent, which is not true security. "Invention" is an individual, creative process. While we patronize—purely as a legal fiction—that corporations are individuals, we should not extend this fiction to consider them to be inventors of creative products. Corporations should be absolutely prohibited from seeking a patent, or from holding a patent or the rights to one, until after a patent has been granted to the true individual inventor(s). Furthermore, the P.T.O., under our Congress—which is constitutionally mandated with the duty to secure to inventors the properties of their inventions—should have their provisions completely restructured to accomplish the exact constitutional mandate, no ifs, ands, or buts. It is well-known to every real inventor in America, that the system fails to work as intended, and must be changed for the better or abolished.

A. THE REAL ISSUES: THE WAVE OF THE FUTURE

The groundswells in the EAST are moving toward us like a TIDAL WAVE, which the bureaucrats will be caught up in for the same reasons as their Soviet counterparts; they will eventually have to find some form of productive work, after a flabby lifetime of sponging off the taxpayers; many bureaucrats who anticipate the future are already engaged in damage control. (It is even rumored that they are wearing bullet-proof underwear.) A bureaucrat of any kind will never be anything but a leech to the common man. In every socialistic society, the bureaucrats are the disgusting toadies who sell out their fellow citizens, in exchange for a small share of the loot stolen by the power elite. Bureaucrats are not entitled to gloat over the failure of the communist system, since people who live in glass houses shouldn't throw rocks. The issue is not simply whether the state permits religious freedom—as some would like for you to believe—but whether governments have legitimate power to execute, imprison, or punish citizens, or to confiscate their money ('taxes'), or property (or inventions), or in general, their wealth, for the "public good", for bureaucratic convenience, or for the political recalcitrance of their owners or creators, by having disbelieved, mistrusted, or defied the government, or for having refused to obey, or to believe what their government ordered them to believe, or for having followed or advocated a political philosophy or personal, moral lifestyle which was officially declared to be undesirable or prohibited, even though legal; or for having simply asked the question of whether bureaucrats really serve the interests of everyone; or for having suggested that they serve only their own interests and those of an American corporate oligarchy, similar to that which ruled Soviet Russia or Nazi

Germany, and still rules certain Central and South American countries (such as "United Fruit Company"), or China (i.e., such as "EXXON", or the "Communist Party", etc.); or for suggesting that they represent illegitimate, usurped authority of a corporate-fascist state, rather then the proper, constitutionally-ordained, limited power delegated by self-governing, sovereign individuals, who lack the authority or right to delegate more authority to any government; and finally, whether such agencies as the P.T.O. operate in conformance with their duties to the American People, which the Constitution originally mandated Congress to enforce.

We can never have a "kinder, gentler society", so long as there is a gestapo-like I.R.S. to force us to pay for the extermination of Iraqis who are in the way of the Trilateral Commission's plan to confiscate the natural resources, monetary system, and industries of Russia, or so long as the doctrine of eminent domain is legal in America.

So-called communist states are in reality, corporate states. Chernobyl was no accident, but rather the inevitable result of corporate-state arrogance, brittleness, recklessness, irresponsibility, negligence, oversight, and insanity, born of seemingly immutable and concentrated monolithic power. The corporate-statist Federal Reserve Banksters exert coercion through police-state agencies like the I.R.S., F.B.I., C.I.A., N.S.A., A.E.C., D.O.E., N.R.C., and S.E.C. etc., to enforce exclusive commercial, industrial, or governmental franchises granted either by or to the state, or through partnerships with the select corporate providers of "public services", who enjoy matrimonial bliss in the convenient (for them, not for us) fascist marriage between "...the state and industry...". In Soviet Russia, the corporations were composed only of members of the Communist Party. Here, the party is replaced by "public corporations", which differ only to the extent of a greater amount of mixed-economy socialism, and some possible token collectivistic participation by the public as "stockholders".

To induce productivity of inventors, public policy must reflect a false illusion of freedom and opportunity, so that the trust of inventors can be maintained. After all, if the people don't present the illusion of freedom, who will trust the Patent Office?

Like their Soviet counterparts, the American government enhances corporate-state power, by assuring the accumulation of technologically creative products by coercive-monopolist corporate partners, through fraud upon individual creative people and the people as a whole. By misfeasance and abuse of the powers of Congress, under U.S. Const. Art. 1, sec. 8 cl. [8], the Patent Office promises a patent under the Constitution, as a means of enforcing a seventeen-year monopoly through litigation, in the name of the inventor, as an inducement for inventors to disclose and to share their discoveries with society, for the advancement of science and the useful arts; that is their "bait". But the P.T.O.'s real bosses are not "the people", any more than those of the Soviet bureaucracy. Its rules have been redesigned since the days of Jefferson and Franklin.

Patent applications are like ripe plums to the elite, all for the picking. Any significant energy, transportation or manufacturing breakthrough automatically becomes a national security secret, which allows the government to remove all evidence of a patent application, to confiscate the invention, and to prohibit disclosures to the public under the secrecy acts. After confiscation, the work is then turned over to the usual corporate-state companies, so they can manufacture secret equipment to be sold to the government at huge profit.

An example was the invention of an artificial fish gill, which separates hydrogen and oxygen in water, on contact, and could be used to power a hydrogen-powered car, etc. (NOTE: Paradoxically, the taking of such discoveries by the secret government, in our name, obliterates our knowledge of the technology. Nonetheless, it becomes public domain one year after the government's acquisition—by about 1974 for the fish gill device—but since such secrets are rarely declassified, we may never know about them.). Other discoveries, which cannot be construed as national security secrets, are steered into the hands of their corporate partners through abuse of P.T.O. procedures, to the disparagement of the individuals who created them, and to the detriment of the public.

If a discovery represents a threat to obsolete technology being sold by the coercive monopolists, the discovery is concealed, and the public never uses it. In many cases, inventors who protest, or refuse to give up their inventions, are fraudulently labeled as "criminals" or "con-artists", by the government, which often adapts abusive prosecutions under the Federal Securities Exchange Commission regulations, or the I.R.S., etc., for the purpose of eradicating competition to their corporate partners.

The greatest threat to the freedom of the people, is official government secrecy, particularly concerning energy and transportation, and coercive, obsolete technological (economic) slavery, enforced by a fascist judiciary which takes its marching orders from the N.S.A., CIA, Trilateral Commission, and the Illuminati (which in our context, involves the upper echelons of the "Knights Templars", and the Jesuit Order—including some within the American Masonic Order...a small, powerful sect some of whom may be found within the Shriners, the Knights of Columbus, the Knights of Malta, the Bilderburgers, or any other secret group, such as the CIA. Some American Masonic lodges have been converted to the Illuminati Order, through the influence of the "Old Prussian, Northern European, White Freemasonry" which was infested by the Nazi "Ahnenerbe". These same powers exist within the Jesuit Order, especially those derived from French and Bavarian sources, after the time of Napoleon. Either way, they get us coming and going.

The greatest threat to the central banks and their underlings—which control basic mineral resources, refineries, chemicals, pharmaceuticals, and public utilities, and other public service cartels fueled by these—is the development of autonomous home-generated power systems, which can power cheap transportation and home industry, and heat and power homes. To make this threat more complete, such power systems should generate their energy from water (hydrogen and oxygen), from the air (combustion of nitrogen and oxygen by electrical spark-discharge), from the earth-atmosphere electrical potential, from cosmic radiation, from magnetism, from non-radioactive nuclear reactors, or from wind and solar power, which the government cannot justify the regulation of because they are safe. The development and use of such systems is completely consistent to the achievement of a pollution-free environment.

The courts insure the cartels against such threats, by secret national security judicial proceedings, binding all judges and courts against all free individuals, under the unconstitutional laws involved.

Corporate-state power rests on control of primary resources, insured by judicial suppression of threatening technology, thus artificially maintaining our dependency. At the top, they are well aware of the existence of numerous inventions which will destroy them, such as the flying saucer, through cooperation with the P.T.O. and N.S.A. Several such inventions have been invented by me, or are represented by my own versions of

what I suspect are suppressed prior art, although they may have in fact been my own discoveries. Sometimes you can never know for sure, because of the secrecy and suppression. On occasion, government scientists with top-secret clearances approached me to deny the government's possession of what they believed I was working on, presumably to induce me to disclose a particular discovery to them in a patent application, so they could acquire it through national security priorities. Since I have already been suckered in several times, I won't do it again, and advise all other inventors to do the same. Unless you're a huge corporation, they'll rip all energy inventions off.

The national security confiscation of inventions creates a convenient shield, so that no patents are granted. The discoveries remain secret, never become public domain, and even the inventors are denied access to them. The government chooses who manufactures them, without the knowledge or permission of the inventors. The inventors are denied knowledge of income and value in the secret usage, and the hugh potential profits possible by otherwise public usage, as well as the related benefits of prestige, recognition, and fame. The inventions are appropriated by force, and the inventors given whatever the government decides, if anything. The inventors are threatened with criminal sanctions for disobedience, under national security laws, without the right to public trial. We never benefit, science and the useful arts are not advanced, the constitutional provisions are unenforced or destroyed, and our government has betrayed us. The individual's most private intellectual rights and property—his mind and its creations—has been raped by the fraud and force of his own government. In many cases, inventions are stolen by the CIA, which then creates its own fake corporations to secretly sell the stolen inventions to the government, producing more income for "black operations".

The whining and whimpering by corporate statists, about Japanese or Asian competition, is dishonest, undignified, ignorant, and disgusting. American corporations are at fault for their creative incompetence, and their compromise of the principles upon which a creative and competitive free-market society is based. Those who fear a free world should not be taken seriously. It is they who would drag us into another war for their benefit, by playing on old sentiments, to force us to fight and die for their "right" to screw us and not even kiss us.

The argument that the Japanese do not practice free-market economics internally is impertinent for three reasons, which are: (1) That the competition should be between the best products for the best prices, rather than between nationalities; and (2) that since the U.S. is not practicing free-market economics internally either, the corporations are equitably estopped to complain about the Japanese system; and (3) that since the system which promotes and protects the greatest degree of individual creativity and laissez-faire will be the actual "winner", only these parameters and no others should be considered, in the interest of everyone in the world, regardless of nationality. This is also in the interest of the national security. Trying to bilk a bunch of old veterans of the Pacific war into thinking it is in our interest to erect protectionist barriers, is a lie, and will only hurt the Average American, and empower the elite.

No credit is due to the P.T.O. or judiciary, in the demise of socialism or statism, since they are part of that system, and are still supporting it. All credit belongs to creative people—individual freedom fighters everywhere—whom the corporate-state is against. As part of a world socialist system, our corporate-statists enjoy a greater degree of fascist privilege than their foreign colleagues, and are not entitled to gloat unless they

resign. A protest against socialist bureaucratic deadbeats in Romania, Byelorussia, or China, is a protest against them here. The historical clock is ticking away like a time bomb, and they don't know how to diffuse it. Chernobyl was an alarm in the early morning of vast change. It was no wonder that there were no bureaucrats fighting or resisting Big Brother at Tiananmen Square, Concord, the Alamo, or the Little Bighorn; bureaucrats need Big Brother, and Big Brother needs them. Why would bureaucrats want freedom, which would take away their illegitimate jobs and power? Why would bureaucrats, who apparently represent defective human genotypes who are incapable of independent, creative or productive work, want a free system, in which their only remaining means of survival would be as uncreative and incompetent—although more honest—thieves? Why would bureaucrats want completely safe nuclear reactors, which would take away their excuses for regulatory busy-work, and threaten their cozy corporate partnerships?

For obvious reasons (as some may have noticed), our bureaucrats and some large American corporations have been helping Communist bureaucrats in Russia to resist change. That is because, although change is inevitable, they want to insure that those in control in the future represent the interests of the Trilateral Commission, as did their Communist predecessors, and that renegade, truly capitalist people do not end up in control. If true capitalism were to take root in the east, it might even spread to America. More than anything else, bureaucrats fear the insecurities of normal life in a free society, because the security of their guaranteed jobs has crippled their creativity, which is the primary means for the survival and flowering of civilization and the Human Race. They will have to learn to walk all over again.

B. THE SOCIALIST BUREAUCRACY: A CONSPIRACY WITHOUT LEADERS

It has been estimated that out of every five people, three of them must work extra to support the remaining two who are useless government employees or dependents.

The conspiracy between the U.S. Patent and Trademark Office, the N.S.A., the New Mexico Judiciary, and other bureaucratic, corporate-fascist entities, are united in the suppression of competing technologies, and the continual theft of ideas and wealth from inventors, thinkers, independent scientists, artists, writers, designers, etc.,—or their heirs, grantees, vendees, or devisees. These thefts perpetuate the corporate-fascist system, which is without actual leaders, although there are people who pose as purported leaders. How, you may ask, can such a vast organizational structure continue to function without leaders? First of all, they have almost unlimited funds from us to waste in the process. Secondly, the organizational structure is maintained by a common belief in "collective superiority"—a religion of sorts—promulgated by the Illuminati, which means our bureaucracy is careening down the same road as the alleged leadership of the former Soviet Union, their flunkies. If one examines the so-called leadership structure of the Soviet state from its ineeption—now rendered more obvious due to the relative openness ("Glasnost")—it is apparent that there NEVER WAS any leadership, but rather a mass of people who followed what were proffered by the Communist Party leadership as leaders. The Soviet people followed this pseudo-leadership blindly, until it became apparent that there was no control or leadership, when the system was unable to

feed them, and it imploded, as the people realized that all there was, was themselves as individuals, believing the BIG LIE told to them by Marx, Engels, Lenin, Trotsky, and Stalin, all members of the Illuminati. The wall of credibility was broken away by the harsh reality that the gigantic bureaucracy was bleeding the citizenry dry, while living high on the hog, while attempting to sustain the fictitious collectivist juggernaut. It was Immanuel Kant, Georg Hegel, Marx and Lenin who propagated the Illuminati lie...the half-baked idea that "...each idea contains the germ of its own dissolution"—and that contradictions exist in reality. But the untruth of that premise should now be corrected to say that "each FALSE idea contains the germ of its own dissolution".

The germ of dissolution within the false premise of both the communist and corporate-state Illuminati philosophies, is that each fails to recognize the fact that man qua man's primary means of survival is the creative process, and that an ideal society is one which maintains the conditions under which individuality—required for this human, individual process—is maximized. A society in which the "means of production" (i.e., incorrectly thought by the communists to mean all property, but which in reality is the individual) is in the hands of an imaginary, leaderless, collectivist state, ruled by a fictitious "mass, collective unconsciousness or consciousness", is the diametric opposite of one which will foster maximum development of the individual creativity of its citizens.

The single greatest enemy of the creative process is dependency (created by fear and a desire for unearned security) which is the hallmark of any socialist state. Creativity, above all, demands the greatest degree of individual social, intellectual, and economic courage and independence from the shackles of any group. The Florentine Renaissance saw a rebirth of creativity and wealth, because of a rediscovery and emergence of the concept of individual rights, which liberated Europe from the shackles of Byzantine Christianity (comparable to today's "religious right") which fathered the Dark Ages. Where people were burned at the stake or impaled if they uttered anything deviating from the 'divine plan', individualism and creativity were practiced only in secrecy, in a society of shared poverty. A long struggle by humanists eventually brought change, and we are still in the Renaissance, continuously struggling to maintain it, while various Illuminati mystics have sought to bring it to an end, and to usher in a Neo-Dark Age, with them as the secret elite.

There is a great difference between the "THIEVES of Light and Knowledge", and the true "BRINGERS of Light and Knowledge". The deluded mystical Illuminati Trilateralists falsely depict themselves as the "bringers of light and knowledge", while other mystics (Christians, Jews, etc., unwittingly controlled by the Illuminati) openly make war against knowledge, as evil, based on their ignorant misconception that knowledge is the product of "Lucifer". This variation creates a false contrast which makes the Illuminati look better. Meanwhile, the Illuminati confiscates the most valuable knowledge, required for them to control the world, gladly assisted by the conspiracy of insane bureaucrats, secret agents of the state, and the "religious right", on their behalf.

The power-mad Trilateralists-Fascists sustain their power by theft, suppression and concealment of the most valuable technology and knowledge from the people, through the national security machinery of the state, in pursuit of the dual goal of state ownership of the purported means of production, and deprivation of the peoples' means for achieving or maintaining freedom and democracy. They are attempting to return us to a dark age of mystical insanity, to worship the concepts of "collective consciousness"

and "cooperation", as "gods", with the essential creative people as slaves, in a "New World Order" (actually an "Old World Order") created and run by them. The religious right is only a temporary pawn in the game. Naziism was their last attempt in this direction, but failed, because their leader, Hitler, like Napoleon, got out of hand, and bit off more than he could chew, just like the Soviet Communist leaders. How many chances does the Illuminati get? Their "Kali Ma" is insatiable, because more people, whom the Illuminati fear, are being born each day, while many are killed each day in fake wars.

The dissemination of knowledge which represents a threat to the secret dictatorship of the Trilateral corporate-state coercive monopolists, is no different than the Florentine humanists defying the fanatic psychopathic criminals who ran the Byzantine Empire. The insanity of those Holy Roman Emperors was exposed by Plotinus, in his Secret History of the Byzantine Emperors, detailing how the Empress Theodora (an ex-whore and dancer from the Circo Massimo) horribly roasted her own child to death in a bronze ox. Her mate, the "Holy Roman Emperor" Justinian, drove 40,000 Mithraists into a hippodrome in Asia Minor, and exterminated them.[2]

The Trilateral Commissioners, like other bureaucrats and professional thieves, produce no wealth, goods, or services, and for all practical purposes, are "on welfare". Yet these welfare bums use our money and resources to pay for the army of bureaucrats which serve the corporate-state, and not us, with their boots on our heads. All hail, Kali Ma!

Psychologically, socialist bureaucrats by nature are uncreative people who are instinctively intolerant of creative people, who constantly remind them of their own creative incompetence and socio-economic parasitism. It is as if certain defective humans are born to serve the Illuminati. A belief in bureaucratic-socialism is a thin veil covering one's own feelings of self-hatred, fear, and creative insecurity. In America, the existence of this velvet dictatorship is not felt through the iron fist of a Gestapo (short for Geheimnistadtspolizei, meaning "secret state police"), but rather through an invisible, deceptively diffused, choking web of bureaucratic regulatory entanglements and litigation, backed by police who go into action only when social ostracism, subterfuge and intimidation fail to obtain compliance, to use physical brutality to execute court or other bureaucratic orders. Though the people are aware of the problems, they are unable to specifically identify them, since the public media controlled by the Trilateral Commission continuously obliterates and confuses the facts.

There is no genuine support for bureaucracy by rational citizens. Only insecure, deluded, or power-mad bureaucrats take pride in such work, and only stupid or gullible citizens believe that these bureaucrats act in their best interest. In spite of the tintinnabulations of a vast army of yapping attorneys and bureaucrats of every guise, representing Trilateral interests, the people innately know the horrible truth, and it has made them weary, and it despairs them to know that they are not truly free.

It is not a thankless task they do, as some self-deluded bureaucrats may pretend; it is a "useless" task which throws monkey wrenches in everyone's cogs. Anyone with ethics would either commit suicide out of remorse or loss of self esteem, or dismantle their agencies, resign, and never seek power again. How they resist the temptation for self-destruction, in the face of such massive public disdain, is an enigma. In the end, they will be martyrs to stupidity and injustice.

---

[2]Otto Benesch, Art of the Northern Renaissance.

There is no accounting of the full extent of the vast waste created by the bureaucracy. Intelligent people will desert the bureaucracy, and find places in the private sector of society. It is all simply a matter of using one's creativity to produce and survive, in a life one can enjoy and take pride in. This simple goal has been artificially made to seem more difficult by the chaos created by the Illuminati, mostly through those in public disservice.

C. TRAITOR JUDICIARY

Members of the American judiciary and bar associations have betrayed a sacred trust and duty to enforce our Bill of Rights, and are hated by the people for breaching that duty. A seemingly impenetrable wall has been gradually built up by the massive volume of past legal decisions and precedents, creating a barrier between the judiciary, and the people who are entitled to demand its sendees. There is massive disrespect for the judiciary and legal profession, which is responsible for a great deal of the crime committed by helpless people, who see no other way out of their problems—created mostly by the government—since the)' lack access to the system.

This one segment of our government is singly responsible for greater damage to us than all the other dangerous subversive and other traitorous elements in our history. They have intentionally misinterpreted our Bill of Rights and Constitution, pretending to misunderstand the concept of natural rights upon which our civilization is based. The general public disdains all lawyers and judiciary because of this, even though many of them as individuals do not have an articulate understanding of their rights. Many Americans who have the most profound ('practical' rather than theoretical) understanding of their natural rights, are among those we generally refer to as the "common, ordinary, working people of America".

The failure by our judiciary to protest, stop, or reverse the erosion and destruction by government of constitutionally guaranteed protections of our inalienable rights, gives aid and comfort to the enemies of democracy (and the enemies are among us), and this negligence is recognized by the people as treasonous. The only response to a more flagrant public hatred of lawyers, for example, was a widespread program of false propaganda which the bar associations unleashed on the American public in 1992, as if the only problem was one which could be cured by false propaganda, when the fact is, our judiciary panders only to those whose vested interests give them a stake in corporate socialism, because the newspaper and other media giants of the Illuminati control the political process through which they are elected. If they do not obey their bosses, replacements will promptly be found. For that reason, corrupt politicians are more persistent than honest ones, which are few and very far between.

A government which abuses the rights of the individual—any individual—because of his individuality, or his conflict with a voting consensus—will get no genuine respect in return. What may be misinterpreted as "respect", is only fear. I think it was either Henry David Thoreau or Walt Whitman who said something like, "When the rights of the many shall take away the rights of the one, the rights of the many shall suffer". It naturally follows that when the 'rights of the many' suffer, the power and jobs of those responsible should be abolished by the 'many'.

The New Mexico judiciary often writes its civil opinions in a psychological lock-step which unerringly elevates procedural bureaucratic rules over just results, because a computer can do that for them. What else should one expect in a red-necked backwash? Their 'judicial software'—designed by the corporate-state judiciary—gives them the most bureaucratic answers, and relieves them of the responsibility to think, sustaining the most extreme positions their supposed discretion allows, continually increasing government power. Only judicial incompetents take such opinions—so lacking in merit, and corrupted by compromise—seriously. The gross lack of cognitive skills—in decisions produced in 'canned English', on legal word processors—exemplifies what I call the "new judicratic callousness". This cognitive incompetence, which began to emerge particularly in the '60s, has finally oozed all the way to the top of the judicial garbage pail, as if the weight of so much fresh garbage has forced the most putrefied, liquefied slime to the top.

Teams of clerks, 'paralegals', and secretaries with word processors, mechanistically dish up superficially formal, substantively deficient opinions which are replete with juvenile smart-ass-type retorts—the only 'original' remarks in the opinions—to the protests of their victims. A computer can have no greater knowledge than its programmer or user, cannot replace human consciousness, and cannot truly conceal the lack of cognitive skills of a judge. We can do without the entire civil judicial system as it now stands. The lack of reasoning skills has finally percolated clear to the top, because the Illuminati wants it that way. They don't want judges who think, but judges who obey.

When something does more harm than it does good, you simply don't have it anymore. There is no inalienable right to file a civil suit, and no constitutional mandate to have a civil judicial system. The Constitution merely states the limitations of such a system, and since these have all been destroyed by the present Illuminati system anyway, let's end it, and avoid future headaches, expense and injustice.

GAME NO. 1: THE NINTH AMENDMENT QUIET GAME

Like pleadings in a court, a patent application discloses one's creative product. I wanted to plumb depth and intent...to confirm or deny my suspicion that I was being forced to deal with devious and evasive bureaucrats, out to help the Illuminati steal from us private 'suckers', with the help of a phalanx of those pompous corporate pederast-whores we call "corporate lawyers", backed by beady-eyed, obedient, fascist. Dobermann-Pinscher-type political cops.

The State of New Mexico and its judiciary, for example, perceives its vested interests as being tied to the history of nuclear weapons development and the nuclear energy industry, as well as the petroleum and coal industries. It is also tied to the tradition of a perennial carpet-bagger "Santa Fe Ring" syndrome, payoffs and bribery, public works money scams, and bullshit politicians, all so easily manipulated by the corporate-state bag-men, the N.S.A., C.I.A., or F.B.I. The system involves uranium open-pit or strip-mines, numerous 'star wars' projects, top secret bases and 'experiments', secret gestapos, weapons tests, and countless security measures and employees. All these magnify the opportunities, to manipulate the judiciary under clandestine "national security laws". It also involves vast amounts of 'federal' (i.e.

'our') funds, as a reward to the "state" (bureaucracy), for following Illuminati orders. Befehl ist Befehl! Very few private citizens question the concept that the New Mexico judiciary has been 'punked out' by the Feds.

They finally pushed me over the edge. This book was a "landmark" decision, unlike those of judges who grovel in obedience to the government and its corporate masters. It is a significant departure which directly challenged the arrogance of power, and advocates a course of action by creative individuals, to bring about an eventual reversal of events against the corporate-state and a corrupt judiciary. It is a kind of 'technological Ghandiism', advocating a passive resistance by creative people, to the "consensus-fascist" system which utilizes deceit, secrecy, subterfuge, character assassination, and the manipulation of the judiciary and public opinion, to fabricate stare decisis and a consensus, used to support its own actions and rulings, usurping and concentrating more illegitimate power each day. Such a fraudulent system is a threat to the survival of a truly free and creative civilization, which we have never fully attained, but can still possibly do so. We must keep our hopes alive, and cannot reserve our challenges until after the present system has already erected a system of gulags, in a role reversal to the policies of Stalin, Hitler, or Mao.

I long since came to the conclusion that there is no one out there responsible for "justice", so I intend to mete some out myself, or at least to incite some inquiry which can lead to justice. The exclamation will undoubtedly be heard: "Well, who does this guy think he is anyway? We'll just tighten the screws on him, and shut him up for good."

The answer is: I am an individual, independent, creative citizen, who is completely proud of what he is and what he advocates, with a completely clear conscience in respect to his motives and actions, despite the derogatory rulings of petty bureaucrats, none of whom can ever say the same. I only regret allowing myself to become a victim of the judiciary and its bosses. As they say in the law, "Where there's a wrong, there's a remedy." It remains to be seen that the 'remedy' is not in the law, but elsewhere. This book may be considered as my "96 Theses", nailed to the government's door (ala Martin Luther's 96 theses nailed to the door of the cathedral), in a new kind of "reformation", involving a new international philosophical movement of creative, autonomous individuals. I believe I represent the future in this endeavor.

A SYSTEM IN CONTEMPT OF OUR RIGHTS

Though my views on the legal profession may seem harsh to lawyers, I will say to them that the only hope for obtaining the future respect for their profession is by restoring the highest values within the legal profession, for the Bill of Rights, as absolute rights, which is precisely what the constitution says they are. Deal with it.

Since the litigation against me was incessant for over seventeen years, the judicial harassment, along with harassment of any kind encouraged from anyone else, amounted to a permanent denial of my rights to free speech and press. Since the public deserves to know the truth, it was imperative that no more time was wasted, and I published my first edition.

Those in the judiciary probably won't like what I am saying, and would probably like to put me in jail to shut me up, although it has been their usual method to use more

indirect tactics, such as citing me for contempt and fining me in the district courts to intimidate and impoverish me or silence my criticism, by constant vexatious orders, including some which not only struck pleadings, but physically removed them from the record to prevent me from further documenting their abuses. Their intent was clear, and my book has proved their assumptions wrong. The connections between attorneys, judges, and the CIA is well-known to some, and while I could point out specific people, it should suffice just to say that the CIA people are there, illegally, all over "city hall".

Let there be no secret; while I respect what the bench is supposed to represent, I see almost no one on the bench who meets up to acceptable standards. As my rights (nature) permits, I have a personal contempt for gutless judges, because the bench deserves better, if it is to exist at all. I actually believe that more acceptable people might be found, despite what everyone says, though I could be wrong. Judges should be completely objective, fair, unbiased, and with unswerving adherence to the Bill of Rights, without regard to the race, religion, ideology, credo, or 'accident of national origin' of litigants—both plaintiffs and defendants, even "Texans"—or witnesses. We should settle for nothing less. This selection should be made strictly by testing procedures which are adopted by Congress. Only those who score the highest should be our judges. This "objective system" would result in more representation by minorities anyway, because those who have been abused should be more inclined to take the Bill of Rights seriously, anyway, and should score higher on the tests. The highest standards for the judiciary are imperative. Though the ideal will always be diminished by practice, we must start at the highest level.

My personal contempt is for gutless, simpering weaklings, who appease sociopathic thug civil attorneys, and the criminal plaintiffs they represent, by allowing them to bend them like pretzels, to obtain fraudulent judgments and orders, and who lack the strength of character to do what is right, and yield to undue influences and pressures, to do what is wrong. I have contempt for those who have unjustifiably shown contempt for me, my rights, and the rights of all individuals, by implication. I have contempt for those who betray their sacred duty to preserve and protect the inalienable rights of the people. Even 'second best' is unacceptable.

It takes no courage by a judge or a court, to maliciously attack the rights of a single pro se individual, or to characterize him as "litigious", because he seeks justice in protection of his rights, and restitution for wrongs done to him and his entire family. Such decisions are no more than cowardly repetitions of the acts of thugs whom the courts have a duty to sanction. In this way, the courts have damaged the rights of all individuals, by attacking the rights of one individual, and by joining with the gangsters and pandering to the worst elements in society. It places our courts right in bed with the criminals and other socialist free-loaders, including rich corporate ones, which makes it a form of prostitution.

Decisions by the judiciary which are unconstitutional for violation of our Bill of Rights, are void, for lack of jurisdiction or of legitimately delegated (or "delegatable") authority from us (as the "consenting governed"), to render them. Such decisions deserve no respect, even if they are 'unreversed' ones, and are grounds for impeachment, because they represent more than mere opinion, but constitute official acts which consciously ignore or destroy particular constitutional inalienable rights of the people without any legitimate authority, as definitive "high crimes and misdemeanors" which are attempted to be passed off on us as "law". Until we have a congress which is capable

of identifying such acts and investigating and prosecuting the same, we will never restore our American Republic.

Perhaps it is obvious that I am not being "nice". I am not in the mood for "nice". The time for "nice" is past. To put it more bluntly, there is nothing in my copy of the Constitution which says I have to be nice to blood-sucking parasites whom I hate, because they have violated my inalienable rights, my life's work, my property rights, and savaged my family. I am not asking them, who owe me, for anything, since it is the resources of victims like me which feed their parasitic lifestyles. The actions of the P.T.O. and the judiciary show that they are completely devoid of the spirit of the American system, or concern for human rights, as envisioned by the genius of Thomas Jefferson and Benjamin Franklin, both inventors. It was no coincidence that they and all the other signators of the Declaration of Independence died as paupers. In their day, the corporate-state system—called "mercantilism"—gave rise to the American Revolution. That revolution is betrayed multiply by the P.T.O., the judiciary, Congress, and the bureaucracy, who do not deserve "nice". They deserve revolution.

The government has perverted our Charter of Liberty and made it into a tawdry wall decoration—a relic of the past—in pursuit of rigid, socialistic, bureaucratic convenience and "order", truly in sycophancy to coercive monopolists (A.K.A., "mercantilists"), who are favored as their natural partners, in a collective ownership system, in which the government gets the power, the cartels get the money, and we producers of all the wealth, are naturally the slaves. Public dissent has been perverted to illegal demands by a minority whose beliefs happen to mesh with corporate-statism, induced by the government to make their demands upon the judiciary and government, seeking to enforce their personal beliefs upon us, and to punish disobedience as a crime. This threat to return to a corporate-state socialist neo-dark age must be stopped. These symptoms of the disintegration of our great society are caused by the misfeasance and malfeasance of the judiciary, bureaucracy, and government of, by, and for itself.

GAME NO. 2: THE ARTICLE ONE (Sec. 8, cl [8]) AND FIFTH AND FOURTEENTH AMENDMENTS PROPERTY GAME

I have something in store for the "creativity thieves". "Really!" (they exclaim). I have done this before, and I know its works.

In anticipation of the present state of affairs, I took care to see that I had another, superior product "waiting in the wings" as it were, invented long before my birth by someone else, used in a new way, to obsolesce my invention, as my insurance from the anticipated theft. A creative inventor should always be able to "out-create" common idea thieves. While this may be untrue for many of the poor little inventors whose less prolific discoveries have real merit, yet are stolen nonetheless, leaving them without a remedy, because they have no funds for attorneys, this is not completely the case with myself. Though I may lack the large sums required for attorneys—as pointed out by the crappy little patent examiner, though no interference had been declared—I am not a poor little inventor with only one idea; I have hundreds of them, and more to come, at my own discretion, on demand. I am rich in ideas, and rich in the ability to have them. They can take away one, and I'll produce two more to replace it. Then I'll see to it that foreign

competitors receive the two new ones, just to punish the thieves in America. All I have to do is describe them. Foreign industrial spies are everywhere. They scoop up every American suggestion as it is uttered, and proceed like ants to convert them to reality. I must warn the coercivists, that their days are numbered by the lag in progress their suppression has created. The tigers are at the gates, and who will make them respect natural rights, even yours, after you have set the example of abuse and neglect?

Since I am not rich and powerful (in terms of money and influence), the only recourse I now have is to exercise my right to determine the disposition of my more valuable, undisclosed inventions. They are mostly very simple, but highly unusual. For example, in comparison to the invention for which I sought a patent, they greatly depart from the relative degree of novelty. Consequently, I will not share my other inventions with the P.T.O., or with the sick government which employs it, and it will never control what else I have in my bag of creations. In this way, it has betrayed and caused the constitutionally ordained patent system to fail. I will also urge other inventors to refuse to play its game. It is the government which has, in fact, abandoned a legitimate patent system. People cannot be forced to invent, as shown by the example of the recently fallen communist states. Now perhaps creativity and freedom will evolve.

Like the New Mexico judiciary, the P.T.O. exaggerated bureaucratic technicalities, in order to circumvent the obvious merit involved, and attempted to treat everything as if it represented "nothing". This was to protect the corporate thieves from the "doctrine of anticipation", in their patent application, similar to the courts' treatments in the case of the real estate and tort claims, to avoid the doctrine of res judicata. I expected both of these frauds, and was proven correct by the courts and P.T.O.

The implication can now be constructively drawn from the rulings that I am just a "frivolous type of person", and that my other inventions—which I may transfer to foreigners— do not represent a loss of any valuable technology from this country, in the P.T.O.'s view, in which it deferred to the false validity of the New Mexico litigation. We can be confident in the 'correctness' of their rulings, since my credibility was systematically impugned, and there should be no cause for worry, and they should relax, since nothing I said had any merit, in their opinion. I had intended to use the profits—under the remote possibility that my anticipations of corporate/government fraud turned out to be unwarranted—to finance further disclosures and patent applications on my other inventions, for the mutual benefit of myself, American industry, and the advancement of science. The P.T.O. and New Mexico judiciary stopped this meaningless process. Bravo, bureaucracy! The P.T.O. need not inquire into whether or not it delayed or obstructed scientific or technological progress, or abatement of the environmental/energy crisis, since none of my inventions could have helped to bring this about. It is the government, and it is never wrong.

ENERGY SLAVERY AND INVENTION THEFT

I decided in late April, 1991, that if I can't have what is rightfully mine, I will not share my other inventions with the American government, and will file no more disclosures or applications. I conceived the particular invention in 1967. It is admittedly 'low tech' in comparison with my many other inventions, which range over several fields, and include new means of nautical, aeronautical, and automotive propulsion,

numerous energy and power generators, new aircrafts and aerodynamic applications, boats, engines, electric motors, wind, solar, magnetic, super-conductor, and laser applications, semiconductors, manufacturing processes, chemical and metallurgical discoveries and processes, as well as numerous types of "safe" nuclear electric power generators, all but one of which uses no radioactive materials whatsoever. They eliminate the need for a nuclear regulatory commission, or "W.I.P.P.", as well as all the monumental expense, "busy-work" jobs for bureaucrats, and other associated waste, problems, and expense to taxpayers and productive people. In general, my inventions are to liberate people from corporate energy and political slavery. In reality, no ethical person has anything to lose by the widespread use of such inventions. This entire freight train of ideas was derailed and abandoned by the P.T.O. and the National Security Agency (of the Trilateral Commission). When Nikola Tesla took almost the same approach as I have, the.F.B.I., with the aid of a specially trained German S.S. nurse, tortured him to death, learned the location of all his secret files, and impounded them under the "Alien Properties Act", even though he was an American citizen. Those secrets ended up in the hands of the Nazis, thanks to our F.B.I. That was in 1943. The Nazis traded the materials to the Rockefellers and the U.S. government, during a 1945 stalemate, and a large part of them are now stored in Los Alamos, New Mexico.

New Mexico could have built itself a new 'clean' industry future around my discoveries, but its officials viciously kicked me in the teeth. This shows how ignorant people can be led to cut off their noses to spite their faces. Some of you readers may be familiar with "...the Bear, the Bison, and the Muskrat..." (the code names for the top "Soviet" bombers in 1957—designed by an American, rejected by Congress, and, as we should not be surprised—sold by him to the Russians).

New Mexico won't make a dime off me now, or create a single job, and can continue its self-made bondage to government jobs and the large corporations, for judicially abusing me and damaging my credibility. For this they get nothing! Blinded by petty jealousy, they couldn't see that they were being "motivated" at their own level by the CIA. The issue is not what "this Texan" gets or doesn't get, but rather who gets what I still have, and it won't be them. For slumbering lethargically away on their rights, people must buy foreign-made goods which are superior to American goods, all because they failed to control the corporate state.

For example, in 1980,1 conducted what is now called "cold fusion" research. I obtained pronounced heat results using several methods, one of which requires no input energy once the reaction is initiated. I do not describe it as "fusion". The process—now well-known, because later explored in Utah—was not good enough in comparison to better ways I developed, so I abandoned it. I then intentionally leaked the process—with the addition of some ingenious misinformation—to one whom I suspected to be a spy, because I had already been ripped off several times, and wanted the personal satisfaction of watching the thieves turn slowly in the wind of ridicule, as they choked on their own snot.

In the form I leaked it, the process is a very inefficient use of the true principles involved. It will, when properly designed and constructed, produce a continuous, external current of 50 KW, almost indefinitely, using a non-consumed, cheap, easily obtained, 1-mole fuel sample. The Utah experiments yielded relatively smaller net gains in energy, because the scientists were attempting to proceed according to accepted methods. I watched them beat their brains out unsuccessfully trying to explain it, with

pleasure. Of course, there are readers who will disbelieve me, refusing to concede that an amateur scientist could explain what the experts have failed to explain. The answer can be found in my book, Occult Ether Physics. As it turned out, the spy, who is still a friend of mine, was working with some Mormons who were unconnected to the Trilateralist rats who had ripped me off before. He was sincerely doing what he thought to be the right thing, by taking the information to people who at least had the guts to try. No mon, no fun, I won. Poetic justice. They shouldn't have stolen my secrets, and denied credit where it was due. The spy is to be credited however, for properly interpreting the obvious undermining of my credibility by the state/Trilateralists, all the way back in 1980, as proof of the value of my inventions, and for placing the discovery into the public domain in the most spectacular way, which I believe was their intent. They sought my secrets after a very powerful New Mexican had benefitted from a 1979 theft of one of my inventions, which worked very well. That beneficiary will eventually suffer a loss as a result of my present actions, and the "domino effect" applies to aligned interests.

Another good example: My cousin (a mathematical and electrical and computer engineering design genius), was pursuing an electrical engineering degree, and was forced by circumstances to drop out of college in 1957, taking an approximately $2.00 per hour job with Texas Instruments, in Dallas. Within a few months—when he was nineteen—six full-fledged engineers were required to execute his designs. In 1957, he showed me his original circuit design for the integrated circuit, drawn on a small scratch pad. For this discovery, Texas Instruments gave him a $100.00 bonus. This circuitry was incorporated into America's first satellite, and was a great "miniaturization" breakthrough. Credit was shared among two of six engineers who worked under Mark, building the things he designed.

In 1970, T.I. fired him, because he had no Ph.D.; he received no credit, and only a pathetic wage for his billion-dollar discoveries. T.I. also later marketed his personal, hand-built computer, which he left in his office when he moved out of it, as their "Table Top Computer". He received nothing for that either, and did not fight for his rights, although he now works for a company he created, designing perhaps the world's best medical computers, which are used by the foremost medical facilities, including the Mayo Clinic, the Einstein Institute, and the San Francisco Medical Center. He should be at least a multi-millionaire, but because he is a pre-occupied, somewhat reticent, creative genius, his rightful millions went to common thieves. So much for Mark Daniel Broussard, genius.

The first major invention I lost, was one I invented in 1948, at age ten. My own father gave it to the patent thief. The thief filed his application for patent in 1950, just after my twelfth birthday. This invention is everywhere. The second major invention loss was attributable to my own negligence, by allowing a friend to use it on his competition drag-racer, built in the shop of Jim Hall, the well known car builder/racer, in Midland. Texas, in 1967. It was appropriated by Hall and ended up at G.M., and was initially used on the Hall-built Ford Chaparral, Grande Prix, CanAm, and Indy cars driven by the Unser family of Albuquerque, where Jim Hall is from. The discovery is used throughout the high performance automotive and racing field today, and has even appeared on mam high-end sports cars. I discovered and tested the first automotive "ground-effects" system, when I was fourteen years old, in 1952.

Such situations as these are commonplace. The few stories the public hears about, involve inventors who survive the onslaught of corporate intrigue and power, and find competent legal representation. From creativity studies[3], it is known that creative geniuses are often neurotic to the point of being semi-disabled, as a direct result of their creative abilities, and vice-versa (that certain disabilities and illnesses are often related to a higher creativity)[4]. In fact, a "neurotic phase" in the creative cycle, is generally recognized. This phase usually precedes the "productive phase". In such phases, the consciousness is often altered to increase the probability for a "bisociation of two or more previously unrelated matrices, on the pre-conscious level"[5]. The phases are often intentionally self-induced by creative individuals, as the price they must pay for their creative productivity. While we all benefit from this phenomenon, the inherent naivete or disabilities of inventors makes them vulnerable to con-artists, the government, doctors, lawyers, and corporate thieves. Where such individuals are looted from and denied reward, they may afterward pursue generally four courses of action, which are: (1) To continue in a more or less permanent state of neurosis, in which they no longer produce; or (2) continuing as usual, masochistically getting their teeth repeatedly kicked out; or (3) becoming 'normal', and never creating again; or (4) continuing to use their creative process to obtain revenge and to change the system. (I have opted for this last alternative, and advocate that other creative people do the same.)

It is in the interest of everyone to see that our creative geniuses receive just rewards for the work they do. Failure to do so will leave our problems unsolved. If society punishes them, it is punishing itself.

TRIUMVIRATE OF INJUSTICE

The P.T.O. is the "Vacuum Cleaner of Creative Minds" for the cartels. The judiciary is the "Extinguisher of Competing Claims" for the cartels. The lawyers are the "Hit Men of Problem People" for the cartels. The cumulative effects of this triumvirate of injustice, is to enslave humanity, and to bog it down in its problems, with the cartels posing as the "saviors apparent", by dosing out whatever stolen "solutions" it chooses, at the most opportune moments of prolonged agony—usually created by them—calculated to extract the greatest degree of continued dependency. This cycle can be broken and rectified only by restoring justice for those who will provide the solutions. Ironically, the P.T.O. may find itself unknowingly registering some of my inventions in the future, under international patent treaties, but may never know which ones were mine. They've already issued several patents on some of my inventions anyway, stolen by their friends. My 100 or so other inventions will still benefit mankind, with the exception that American corporate thieves and others will be eliminated from the major action, by those of my choosing, who will receive the benefits in the particular fields of application. Not only will the American corporate thieves be deprived of the opportunity

---

[3]Creativity and Learning (an anthology edited by Jerome Kagan, the Beacon Press, Boston, 1967).

[4]Dr. Edgar Mayer, Genius and Prolonged Illness, WISDOM MAGAZINE, Vol. 3, No. 25, May 1958.

[5]Jerome Kagan (supra).

for theft, but will be deprived of profits, and will be punished by their foreign competitors. Didn't they 'trade with the enemy' during WWII? Turn abouts fair play.

The only track record I have in patents is for being ripped off. I hold no patents, so, at my option, it is only a matter of determining who gets to rip me off, by giving the edge to competitors of the 'domestic rats', rather than to allow them to rip me off, through the P.T.O. or other con-artists. The thieves who have profited from my prior inventions will know this is no joke.

For a prolific, yet relatively poor, inventor like myself, there is no protection under the U.S. patent system as it now stands. I have so many good inventions that there is no way for me to proceed with applications and disclosures, because the system is almost too expensive and time-consuming, even to process a single application, much less over a hundred. And the answer is not to provide federal funding for an army of legal creeps in Washington, to process the applications of "poor inventors", because that would only create increased abuse and leakage of patent secrets to the Illuminati. I could be swamped with interference proceedings on a single application, leaving all other applications abandoned on bureaucratic technicalities, such as failure to respond in time, caused by judicial interferences. The P.T.O. has stated its rigid position on such interferences in my first application, and would not consider them, so I will no longer consider them. The P.T.O. therefore, always has the option of throwing the game in favor of the corporations, to unjustly enrich and empower them. The system as it now stands cannot meet the constitutional requirements, is unjust, and like the judiciary, will collapse under the weight of its own self-created bureaucratic flab, duplicity, incompetence, and deadwood.

Where some of my inventions are composed of several novel elements, each of which would support an independent application, requiring conceivably months of work to segregate to the satisfaction of the P.T.O., the problem is further complicated. In the case of one single application, over three years and considerable work and expense have been consumed. The U.S. government in general is to blame for this quandary. I cannot leave my work stored in notebooks, or in my mind, only to have the P.T.O. reject a future application as abandoned, on the basis that I have 'secreted' it away, when in reality, the past shows that I can't secret something away which I never had an adequate opportunity to disclose, or to protect after disclosure. They won't consider such a defense, since I tried it and know. So the P.T.O. has its rules, and I have mine.

I was plagued by Trilateralist/Illuminati invention-thieves, who looked for opportunities to steal other multi-million-dollar discoveries so they could get filthy rich. while I languished away in poverty and legal problems created by them, with my credibility destroyed by the corporate-state fascist judicial yeggs.

Therefore, I will simply see to it that the general public or foreign competitors end up with my inventions one way or the other, and there is nothing the corporate state can do to prevent it. If I am to be ripped off, I appoint the public or foreigners, or both, as beneficiaries, rather than my own government and its fascist corporate partners. I had rather give my discoveries away even to enemies than to see traitors profit from them. In the future, this writing can be referenced in retrospect, to confirm the fact that a warning was given beforehand, stating how the problem developed, and that the government refused to take any action until it was too late.

I now lay the blame at the feet of the P.T.O. and the American Judiciary (particularly in New Mexico), and the manipulatory corporate-fascist U.S. government.

History often shows in retrospect, injustice, stupidity, or wrongdoing. I don't relish being viewed in the future as a tragic loser who was ripped off without a fight, so this testimonial fixes the blame for future problems, enabling the future to judge whether the government was rightfully convicted by me, and whether the ends of true justice were served. Those who put my name in their judgments will now have some of their names placed in mine, in the court of public opinion. Now it is their turn to defend themselves.

GAME NO. 3: THE FIRST AMENDMENT END-RUN GAME (A.K.A. THE Ol' STATUTE OF LIBERTY PLAY)

But these actions (or non-actions) are insufficient to adequately punish the corporations or the U.S. government and its judiciary, or to hold their feet to the fires of creativity, so I have yet a third part to my revenge, which involves the most symbolic of all invention rip-offs. If it previously appeared to be of value to anyone, to deprive me of that one patent, or to deprive me of some small property holdings and rights in rural New Mexico, or to smash my life, that value will eventually be seen as a huge blunder on the part of the P.T.O. and the New Mexico Judiciary, which directly triggered (1) my refusal to make further disclosures to the P.T.O. of my other inventions; (2) my transfer of inventions to foreign competitors; (3) my publishing of my research and inventions; and (4) the publishing of this crazy old book, SPACE ALIENS FROM THE PENTAGON: FLYING SAUCERS ARE MAN-MADE ELECTRICAL MACHINES, © Wm. R. Lyne, 1993, 1995, 1999.

CREDIBILITY ROULETTE

Without actual proof of what I assert, the government will have to be content with the unanswered question of whether or not I really have the inventions and knowledge I claim, and whether their conduct will be worth it in the long run. The government will just have to gamble with my credibility, and take its own risks as to whether my punishment will be real or fantasy. We can play "credibility roulette", with this book (the pistol) pointed at its head (the most valuable secret of the Illuminati).

It is not necessary that my book be taken seriously by the government, since, in response to my legal pleadings, the legal numskulls said that my requests that my constitutional rights be observed, protected and enforced, were all just "fantasy and fiction", and "frivolous". In the government's view, this book should be considered as written with "tongue-in-cheek", and not intended seriously. Meanwhile, you who are individuals (the "reading public") can examine my book, do some research and experiments, and decide for yourselves its value, in spite of the Illuminati's attempts to mold your thoughts beforehand, with over forty years of BIG LIES.

Bureaucrats naturally underestimate the power of the individual, since they are collectivists who lack a concept of individuality. I would have said this much sooner had it not taken me so long to gain the opportunity between harassments. Even though I am aware of the danger to my family and myself, and since there have already been several murder attempts, any one of which could have succeeded, I say this while there is an

opportunity to do so, to remove their motive from the equation. Besides, it is really they who are afraid of the truth.

I have no duty to exclusively share my ideas and discoveries with a degenerate government which maintains illegitimate power by punishing, impoverishing, stealing from and enslaving individual creative people whom the government sanctions as its victims, through perverted laws, awarding the victims' productivity to itself and its corporate thief partners, under the banners of the "public good", "justice", and "national security". Government-backed coercive monopolies are criminal conspiracies, which should be prosecuted, abandoned, denied support by all people, and deprived of the fraudulent and illegitimate use of our government by consent of the governed, as a deceitful and fraudulent means of private coercive control and power.

If American citizens are unable to dismantle this system, by withdrawing consent they never gave in the first place, by deprival of the legal method to do so, creative people must now create a unity of purpose, to "go on strike", to use the ultimate power of individuals to deprive the system of power, for treasonously militating against the most fundamental human right of all, the right to the freedom and protections which are essential to the exercise of the individual creative process by all, in a creative and abundant civilization, rather than one ruled by the fraud, deceit, extortion and the brute force of coercive monopolists, through bureaucrats they control, who should each have to earn their own bread, rather than to mooch from us.

The thing which has made America great is its Bill of (human) Rights, guaranteed by our Constitution as absolute (inalienable) rights, required to maintain the conditions essential to the free exercise of the creative process, as civilized man qua man's fundamental means of flourishing and survival. Whether called socialism, fascism, communism, bureaucracy, coercive monopoly, or any other name for dictatorship, the rights and conditions essential for creativity are being destroyed. An awareness of these facts are bringing some individual Russians and Chinese to their senses. Humanity is composed only of individuals, who are not "national resources", each of whose right to life is an end in itself. Individuals must engage in a peaceful revolution to overthrow the insanity of collectivism, and to re-establish the human creative rights necessary for humanity's survival and flourishing, in peace, throughout the world.

The judiciary as it now stands is traitorous, lending aid and comfort to the enemies of democracy and our Bill of Rights. Not a single yellow government judicial or legal son-of-a-bitch has stood up on his hind legs and protested this, as a treacherous failure of sacred duty. The 'legal profession' is the single most treasonous conspiracy in America, and is an indispensable part of the corporate-state conspiracy. The damage done to me by the P.T.O. and the New Mexico judiciary, is a symbol of their damage to all. Whether they justify their acts through phony-baloney double-think, judicial decrees or "office actions", I have been provoked into justifiably punishing them through rightful means, for the good of civilization, by exposing them, withholding my future disclosures, and by disposing of my own creative products as I deem fit. in a way predicated to bring the maximum detriment to them and their kind, even at the future expense of millions of dollars lost to myself, which I will never see anyway, because of them. The public must know the truth about how the cartels are oppressing all people by suppressing knowledge, especially flying saucer technology and other secrets relating to energy and transportation.

D: AMERICAN DISSIDENT TRIALS, MURDERS, TRIBULATIONS, AND MASSACRES

Some readers may ask what this chapter has to do with flying saucers. This 'secret' is only one of many. The disease of secrecy threatens to take over everything, until every citizen obtains information only on a "need to know" basis, just as if he were in the CIA. That is the logical conclusion of a totalitarian police state. This book is about how a jungle of LIES has been created, by perverting all the instruments of a purported "democratic" society, for the ostensible purpose of protecting something called "national security", but which, if left unchallenged, will eventually lead to our complete enslavement. At this very moment, I hear the roar of the jet engines of military fighter planes, as they greedily slurp up expensive fuel, when a flying saucer operates on practically nothing. To some deluded people, the roar of the jets is synonymous to "protection" and "freedom", but to me, it is the sound of "waste" and the "draining away of the abundance created by the sweat and blood of the American People". In the words of Patrick Henry, "Is life so dear and peace so sweet, as to be purchased at the price of chains and slavery?"

When life-threatening violence is stirred up against you by the CIA, with law-enforcement personnel instructed to provide no protections, you cannot take matters into your own hands to obtain justice, because that is what they want you to do, and almost anything you do might become an excuse to throw you into jail, where your life can be snuffed out in a minute. Though the things they are doing mark them as the lowest of sociopathic criminals, you must understand that the only way to defeat them is to refuse to make the wrong, impulsive move, so they can't depict you as a "violent", "bad", or "mad" person, and treat you accordingly. You must design effective countermeasures, and carry them out.

I once naively believed that, under the "Anglo-American System of Jurisprudence", only a "real" criminal could be convicted and sent to prison. What a delusion! It came home to me in 1980, that in New Mexico, they can and do frame, convict, and send innocent people to prison, and that this is one of the easiest places in America for them to get away with it. This is nothing new in America, witness the examples of Wilhelm Reich, Sacco and Vanzetti, Leonard Peltier, and a host of others. The only difference is, that the Feds have learned from experience, and do it slicker today, thus confining the knowledge of their criminal behavior to only a few dissidents and perhaps their trusted friends.

A lot of what this book is about is how I managed to avoid a million pitfalls, and survived long enough to tell you these things. To avoid legal entanglements, I intentionally excluded the names of many people, even after an attorney friend in Santa Fe advised me to include the names, on the basis that "the truth" is a "good defense" to a suit for libel. But I didn't hear him guarantee representation in case I was sued because of following his advice.

I am sick of lawsuits. Putting in the names could provide a "wedge" for potential instigators of suits, to further impede my informing you on the corporate-state Illuminati conspiracy. An unwanted libel suit against me, a pro se party, could enjoin my efforts. This book is not intended as local petty gossip, or a local-type expose, to be applied only to the local scene, but is a handbook for analyzing and defining the same methodology at work everywhere. Most of the yeggs are weaklings who have already surrendered their

identities as individuals anyway, so why flatter them by giving them identities they really don't have? And, of what use is a "good defense" to a lawsuit, when there are no honest attorneys to take cases before judges who get their marching orders from the Illuminati? We can turn the tables by denying them the satisfaction of filing suits, to make money for attorneys, or to make them "heroes". We must boycott this fraudulent legal system.

One's attorney can be compromised, intimidated, or just plain "bought off, in several unsuspecting ways. One way is the "referral service", in which they are given another case, providing plenty of income over a longer period of time, with ultimately greater career benefits and prestige. Another way is to accuse them of "Rule 11 violations" (frivolity), threatening to drag their name through the mud of ethics and contempt proceedings, and hit them with fines and sanctions, etc., unless they drop the case and concede victory to the other side. Other ways are to use sex or drug inducements, or plain old physical threats or intimidations. The state tort claims liability act allows state-employed members of the A.G.'s staff to "pay off' your attorney, in settlement of a claim against the state, without you ever knowing about it, dismissing the suit, while your attorney pockets the money. This is just plain old bribery, but they can and do get away with it. Another way is to appoint your attorney to a position such as county attorney of this or that county. Every single one of these tricks were used on attorneys employed by me. Once your eyes are opened to these tricks, the possibilities abound. The bottom line, however, is that most attorneys are yellow, money-grubbing Shylocks, who avoid controversies like the plague, except those they fabricate.

"Sacharov-type dissident trials" in America are similar to those of the former Soviet system, and the Chinese Communist "mass propaganda show-trials". Of the two, the Chinese system is most like ours, prohibiting publicity in suppression cases, to avoid arousing public suspicions in a so-called "democratic society". The victim's rights to freedom of speech and press are often denied without him ever realizing it. In China that hardly becomes an issue. Our system is becoming more "Chinese".

The CIA ingeniously creates "Kafkaesque" judicial harassment which is seemingly unrelated to the object, appearing to be 'random litigation', difficult to connect to its real source. Constantly tampered and stolen evidence, missing, falsified, and incomplete records; constant set-ups, falsely induced situations and trickery; judgment executions, threats to confiscate and sell your personal property, constant, unannounced visits to your home by sheriffs deputies and process servers; perjury and false witnesses, constant false allegations, personal attacks, assaults on credibility and character; induced breakup of one's family; sham trials, false contempt proceedings, compulsory appearances, interruption of work, harassing discovery proceedings and orders, reduction of earning capacity, fines, expenses, grillings over every detail of one's personal life and invasion of privacy; all gradually building a false record against an innocent victim, and a massive computer information file which is readily available to the government criminals perpetuating the judicial terrorism, so that any information which they wish to exploit can be instantly programmed into the next phase of their plans. In America, this can be harsh, because it is covered by the hypocritical illusions of "freedom" and "due process".

Does this sound like America? It is and has been a reality for me, and it has been made to appear to be the result of "property dealings"! In reading this book, you should ask yourself if the kind of person I am, who would devote so much of his time to science, art, creativity, philosophy, and "true justice", would be capable of creating 17 years of

litigation for himself, just so he could remain poor, and be unable to realize anything from his dreams? Why would anyone who had never gotten anything out of any lawsuit, except less than was already his, have any reason to remain involved in court proceedings which in the past have only unjustly deprived him of time, money, energy, property, joy, life, and countless other things? Very few, if any, of the "newsworthy" aspects of this abusive litigation were ever reported in the press, after the initial "Big Bird" publicity, since the guilty parties suppressed publicity in subsequent harassments, knowing further wide publicity could arouse questions of legitimacy among ethical citizens, to possibly redound in my favor.

It is immaterial as to whether or not a victim discovers the motive or identifies the true instigators, who are able to misuse the power of the state to conceal their crimes, the knowledge or evidence of which could prove a cause of action for violations of 42 USCS secs. 1985 and 1986 (Civil Rights Act). Ha! The victim will be unable to continue the (undesired) conduct, and "suing" is out of the question, because the harassment takes all his time, energy and money. Designed to disturb bis mind and autonomous nervous system—like the attacks of S.S. "psychiatrists" in pre-WW II Nazi Germany—the victim's inability to pursue the (undesired) conduct is the object of the litigation. The negative reinforcements are designed to create "conditioned (neuromuscular) responses", like Pavlov's dogs. The process is designed to destroy the victim's individual identity and will power, by invading the privacy of his mind and body, through "object lessons", compelling him to take the desired course of action or non-action, as if he had done so willfully.

After the psychopolitical earmarks of the process became obvious, I became determined to produce this book, once and for all, even if I had to write, illustrate, print, bind, and distribute it myself. As it turned out, I actually did all that in my original edition of 1993, and first reprinting of 1994.

I would like to point out that, the techniques through which the CIA has sought to perfect "mind control", is best demonstrated by experiments in which they actually created "Manchurian candidates", such as John Charles Whitman, who shot over 22 people beneath the tower of the Main Building at the University of Texas, in the summer of 1967. By directing certain psychological harassments and conditionings toward particular unsuspecting subjects who meet psychological profiles revealing their vulnerabilities, they subliminally induce them to follow a certain course of action. Since I was present during the Whitman massacre, and almost got hit by one of his bullets, the situation got my attention. Did you know that as a Marine, Whitman was trained with Lee Harvey Oswald, at the same Marine "assassin school" in Japan? Whitman, from Florida, was also one of those "good Catholic boys" who had made it to Eagle Scout. At the time of the massacre, he was being treated at the U.T. medical center, by the same CIA psychiatrist—a Dr. Smith—who had previously treated Jack Ruby while he was in jail in Dallas, for killing Oswald...until Ruby died of cancer of the knee, thus neatly tidying loose ends, such as the possibility that he might talk. Whitman also had a terminal tumor (in his brain), planted by injection, which he supposedly knew nothing about, but I believe he found out about it. Two murders, two tumors, same psychiatrist, and the same CIA connections and training. As was pointed out by Jim Garrison, former New Orleans D.A., David Feme had engaged in extensive medical research on behalf of the CIA, developing field methods for causing cancer in unsuspecting victims (such as giving them an injection of turpentine). Does this ring any bells?

In order to discover how to defeat the Illuminati and our crooked judiciary, one can refer to a book given to me by the Air Force in 1958, written by Duane Thorin[6], a former "psychopolitical" victim. Thorin was a Navy warrant officer and helicopter pilot, who based his book on his experiences as a P.O.W. in North Korea in the 1950s. He was also the person who inspired James Michener's The Bridges at Toko Ri (which was made into a movie starring William Holden).

The fictional hero/victim in Thorin's book discovered that the psychopolitical "interrogators" used "mood control". After discovering what a victim wanted most of all—such as a simple bar of soap, because the prisoner wanted to bathe—they deprived him of it, thus controlling his moods, intended to psychologically break down and override his conscious resistance, until he gave them what they wanted. The interrogators concentrated their "work" on leaders. This method worked on many, if not most victims, but not on the hero in Thorin's book, who discovered that he could exercise his individual discipline and knowledge to defeat the criminals, either by pretending to want something he did not want, conditioning himself to want nothing, or simply playing a cat-and-mouse guessing game with the criminals.

In my case, they were firmly convinced that real estate was the way to control me. However, "...the wheels of justice turn exceedingly slow, but grind exceedingly fine", and since judicial psychopolitics and abuse are not "justice", the "grinding wheels" of our judicial system are crumbling and running out of time as the system is being squandered on abuse, and is not respected by anyone, even the people who run it. Truth and justice can flow from falsity, but lies and injustice which are artificially made to flow from the truth, will eventually destroy the system, demoralize those who run it, encourage defections, and destroy the liars, by invoking the wrath of the public. Today, the self-esteem of lawyers and judicial professionals, and respect for them by the public, is at an all-time low. The public hates them, and a revolution is at hand.

The CIA motive in my case, was clearly to conceal flying saucer and other alternative technology, and to coerce my compliance to their wishes, by psychologically imprisoning me through judicial abuse, while silencing me with false contempt orders and litigation ad infinitum, concealed from the public by suppression of publicity, lies in the court records, and occasionally lies in the press.

During the most intense six-year period of this litigation, my typical day consisted of my arising at around 4:30 A.M. with pleadings boiling in my mind, to commence drafting the day's pleadings. I would then begin typing them up, while checking legal authority carefully to be sure my points were correct. As the clock moved toward the deadline—I had to complete the typing by 4:00 P.M., eleven and a half hours later—I would be working at a feverish pitch which barely left time to travel to Santa Fe, to reproduce pleadings, to serve them on the opposing side, and to file them with the District Clerk.

As an example of the kind of energy and research the CIA puts into these kinds of activities, I present the following facsimile news clipping from around 1980:

---

[6]Duane Thorin, A Ride to Panrmuniom. Henry Regnery Company, 1956.Z

CIA attempted to hide 'mind control' project

The Washington Post

WASHINGTON - The Central Intelligence Agency in the 1950s sought to use Georgetown University Medical Center in Washington to hide "a cover organization for highly sensitive projects" in "biological, chemical and radiological warfare," it was learned Saturday.

Top secret CIA documents made available to The Washington Post disclosed this purpose without mentioning any university's name. They spoke, too, of plans for research in "psychological fields," "natural toxic psychosis" and "what makes people pass from mild disorientation into delirium and coma" - all fields that fit then into the CIA's aim to investigate mind control.

An informed source said these and other documents referring to "research on terminally ill cancer patients" pertained at least in part to CIA aims at Georgetown University.

The documents provided some of the first specifics on CIA goals at Georgetown since the disclosure last week that in the mid-1950s the CIA channeled funds through the Geschickter Foundation - a foundation directed by a Georgetown professor, Dr. Charles Geschickter - to establish a secret base for sensitive studies.

Dr. Matthew F. McNulty, head of the Georgetown University Medical Center, on Saturday said nearly two weeks of research and interviews have turned up no evidence that any research ever was done on medical center premises on the CIA's behalf or with hidden CIA financing.

But he also conceded that he is still far from completely informed or sure of what happened there in the 1950s and 1960s.

The evidence, he said, is that the CIA indeed tried to establish a secret mind-control research center at the university.

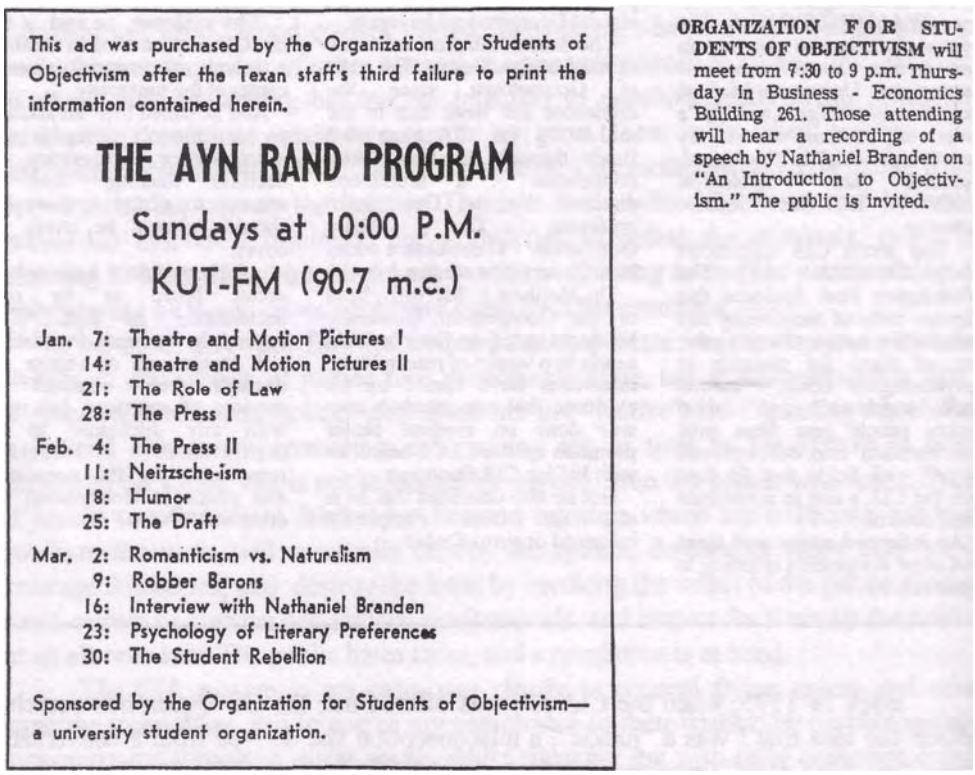
And he called this "an abuse of an institution's integrity and independence of operation and decision making," and an attempt to distort a place that should "always be overt, not covert."

"They didn't approach us above board or by open declaration," he said. "They apparently utilized foundations and institutions of repute and through them obtained the services of scientists, but never with any disclosure to the institutional leadership responsible for the conscience and ethics of Georgetown and other universities."

Back in 1975, when the CIA job was offered me, the Oil Queen had somehow gotten the idea that I was a "junkie", a misconception she derived from a conversation about "smoking dope" (marijuana), which she thought meant heroin. She then offered a "deal sweetener", saying that, if I accepted the offer, her associate, a (CIA) psychiatric nurse named Pat, who worked in an Albuquerque hospital and lived in the Sandias, would provide me with 'any kind or amount of drugs I wanted', at CIA expense. As I later learned, the CIA had sent this nurse to our O.S.O, meetings in 1966. This kind of CIA hypocrisy has now come to the attention of the American public, and they want it stopped.

Believe it or not, the 'justification' used by the CIA for keeping O.S.O. under surveillance, was because Howard Rourke, the fictional hero in Ayn Rand's novel, The Fountainhead, had used dynamite to destroy a building he had designed! By some twist of 'reason', they used a fictional 'incident' from a novel, to construe our philosophical/literary study group as a potential threat to the 'national security'! The sickening truth was, that our very reasonable group (which advocated 100% laissez-faire capitalism, along with the dismantling and abolition of the CIA) unknowingly conducted its weekly philosophical discourses for the ultimate benefit of the CIA spies sent to keep an eye on us. Seeing no mad bombers in our midst, and knowing a good thing when they saw it, they just glommed onto us like parasites, using us as a surrogate 'think tank'. They were as smart as cancers, and just as insidious. They learned to walk like us, talk like us, and think like us, but no matter how hard they try, there is usually something in

their act, such as contradictions between premises and lifestyles, which shows them to be counterfeits. Their behaviour is the best argument I know of, to support the existence of "aliens". The following two clippings show the kinds of "subversive" activities sponsored by O.S.O. in the late '60s, at U.T.:



This ad was purchased by the Organization for Students of Objectivism after the Texan staff's third failure to print the information contained herein.

THE AYN RAND PROGRAM

Sundays at 10:00 P.M.

KUT-FM (90.7 m.c.)

Jan. 7: Theatre and Motion Pictures I
14: Theatre and Motion Pictures II
21: The Role of Law
28: The Press I

Feb. 4: The Press II
11: Neitzsche-ism
18: Humor
25: The Draft

Mar. 2: Romanticism vs. Naturalism
9: Robber Barons
16: Interview with Nathaniel Branden
23: Psychology of Literary Preferences
30: The Student Rebellion

Sponsored by the Organization for Students of Objectivism—a university student organization.

ORGANIZATION FOR STUDENTS OF OBJECTIVISM will meet from 7:30 to 9 p.m. Thursday in Business - Economics Building 261. Those attending will hear a recording of a speech by Nathaniel Branden on "An Introduction to Objectivism." The public is invited.

In 1976,1 had began researches in metallurgy—particularly on the platinum group metals, primarily for energy uses—and in 1978, had succeeded in 'dropping' (precipitating in a high-temperature metallic solution) a considerable amount of indium, by a rather simple, cheap, and novel method. I had already lost a great deal of these metals in some accidents along the way, but in 1979, I had a 99.9% pure 80 ounces minimum of iridium, valued at approximately $80,000.00 at the time. Due to my lack of knowledge, I was unable to identify the metal until Oct. 23, 1979. The only person I told about this, was the Paperclip-connected neighbor, who had gained my confidence. Meanwhile, only his yegg, named "Dave", knew the location of the metal in my home. The metal was in the form of finely divided powder, which only he could have identified, or known the location of.

In early 1979,1 had been tricked into another legal involvement, by the yegg, Dave, who had once done an ingenious arson job for the CIA in the Caribbean. He was a former member of the State Police who had been kicked out after running over and killing a child while drunk on duty. He had also worked on a sheet metal crew with my

former father-in-law, at the Brown and Root shipyard in Houston, during WWII. As far as I could determine, they were all closet homosexuals. Dave was not a Mason, but the rest of them were. He was also the only one of the group who had never become a millionaire. Brown and Root apparently had a whole cluster of 4-F closet queen Masons working in their shipyard sheet metal shop, one of whom was from the Brown family itself. The 'defense work' allowed them to avoid the draft. It seemed to me that the connective thread here was a closet homosexuality within the good Ol' boy Masonic network. If this sounds like sexual bigotry, please bear in mind that these guys are not civil libertarians, but coercive monopolist crooks who will kill to conceal tiheir secrets.

The real estate fraud was induced by Dave through a young man—also named "Dave"—who sold his body to some of these closet queens, and who has since been sent to the nut-house several times. As I overheard Dave remark to the young male whore, "First set him up, then knock him down" (referring to me). The male whore was also a student of a Santa Fe (closet bisexual) C.F.R./Illuminati/naturopathic physician, whose Chicago father sold platinum metals to the U.S. government. The neighbor knew I was involved in platinum metals research, and hired Dave to investigate this for him and a group from Chicago, including the naturopath and his father. Many of these Chicago associates were Europeans who were given new identities under Operation Paperclip, following Hitler's 1945 stalemate deal with 'us'.

The operative's approach was to get me to go out to remote mining locations to explore for minerals and stake out claims. As any con artist knows, the 'bait' is a promise of something to the 'mark' (me), which in this case, was the claims. It was contemplated that, while in the process of prospecting, I would eventually disclose the details of my platinum research, source of mineral concentrates, and method of recovery.

The claims which I staked out, however, were not for platinum metals, but for a 97% pure silica sand. In this respect I had developed a new and cheaper mass-production method for the manufacture of solar-voltaic chips, which were also more efficient than previous ones. The details of this research were also disclosed, along with the location of my purified indium, and the preliminary plans which I had prepared on my new solar-voltaic system, based on the sands. Dave was a tall, skinny, over 60, southern redneck hick, who was an unlikely candidate for closet queen or industrial spy. It seems the CIA prefers "closet queens" or other people who seek to hide skeletons in their closets, because of the blackmail potential, as a means of CIA coercive control over operatives.

On June 14, 1979 (my birthday again), Dave came by to go to the claims, but it rained, so he came again on the 15th, to go to the San Pedro Mountains, to do some 'work on the claims'. After considerable walking, we returned to the pickup for a rest and some water. Dave, who was diabetic, drank fruit juice, as I drank water from a large canteen. The water tasted strange and moldy, and I wondered why a diabetic would drink fruit juice rather than water, since it contained sugar. We returned to our work, and I walked across the claim to check a location point, as Dave sat near the truck, nervously clutching my bag, in which I usually carried a pistol, Little did I know, but he was just waiting for me to die. This was only one of several attempted murders, and I have always wondered if an occult principle was involved, since the attempts were often made on or near my birthday.

While walking along near a rock ledge, I suddenly passed out, fell off the ledge onto the top of a large clump of cholla cactii, and literally impaled the lower part of my body

on them. The excruciating pain and rush of adrenaline revived me from my unconsciousness, and I painfully removed myself from the clump, and extracted as many of the spines as I could—some of which pierced to a depth of over an inch—and returned to the truck to pull out many more. While bending over the seat in the truck, I discovered a plastic 'baggie' in the floorboard, containing crushed Angels de Dios (small, white, highly poisonous mushrooms). Their smell was identical to the moldy smell and taste of the water I had drank from the canteen, the taste of a fungus.

In the succeeding few days, during which I experienced stomach cramps and mild hallucinations which were symptomatic of mushroom poisonings, I realized incredibly that the operative had spiked the water with the Angels de Dios in a murder attempt.

On Oct. 25, 1979, two days after telling the neighbor about my identification of the iridium, Dave entered my house and stole my metals, along with my plans for the solar-voltaic system. Within about two weeks, the neighbor's crime-partner in Michigan announced "his" discovery and patent application on my process. On Oct. 26, 1979,1 received a call from the neighbor, who invited me to his home, where he asked me to become a "partner" with him, "...to process the black sands for platinum metals" (with proof in hand, this offer showed that he not only hired the operative, but due to their frustrated efforts to discover my source of platinum concentrates, had mistakenly concluded that my source was from black sands). I did not respond.

Within about three or four days, I received a call from Steve Reynolds, a Chicagoan who was the New Mexico State Engineer. Reynolds explained that the had been requested by the neighbor and a group of "Chicago investors", to urge me to accept an offer by them to back me in a "metallurgical laboratory", to be built on my property. I did not respond. (The "property" involved was later taken away in the abusive lawsuits.)

In early 1980, the neighbor invited me to a gathering at his house, attended by the naturopath and his wife. The offer was repeated to me, and again, I did not respond.

In October, 1980,1 was again invited to the neighbor's house, attended by a larger group, including the Chicago associates referred to by Reynolds (who were connected to what was once Meyer Lansky's "Chicago Syndicate", unbeknowest to Reynolds, who were cozy with the CIA). The neighbor and his associates threatened me by saying "You don't burn the mob". I answered that I could not possibly "burn the mob", since I had no dealings with them. They then proceeded to tell me all of the bad things which 'the mob' could do to a person. Again, I did not accept their offer. "The Mob" was the CIA.

In 1982, a second murder attempt was made, coinciding with the occupancy of the 'cocaine cartel' tenant who was the Columbian doctor's former wife. The would-be murderers worked with a St. Vincent's Hospital nurse (whose father was a Dade County, Florida banker involved in money laundering). The nurse was also married to a Columbian. Incredibly, all these people were also former members of the U.S. Peace Corps in Colombia, which is how they became associated with Klaus Barbie's cocaine cartel. The tenant furnished antibiotics supplied by her former husband, while the nurse furnished diseased sputum from the hospital. They attempted to grow a "killer germ", using yogurt as the medium, into which the germs and antibiotics were added. This concoction was added to some food and fed to me, on June 14, 1982 (my birthday again). My reaction the following morning, was a congested and sore throat, and yellow bile discharges. That attempt followed my 44th birthday, just like the June 15th, 1979 attempt. All the tenants from two separate residences were gone, having moved out during the previous night and early morning. The evidence they had carelessly left

behind was all over the place, most of which I still possess. The communist lady and her live-in boyfriend (a Hearst heir), left a candle burning against a wall, in an arson attempt foiled only by my discovery, just in time.

The criminal investigators for the Santa Fe Sheriffs department refused to allow me to file reports, either on the 1979 or the 1982 murder attempts, or related criminal activities. All of these people were among those I referred to in Chapter II (under "I Meet Torquemada and the Medellin Cartel"), who were involved in the drug dealing, communist/fascist politics, and money laundering, using straw-owners throughout Santa Fe County, the "Banana Republic" of North America.

In October, 1983,1 was visited for the first time in New Mexico, by my 19-year-old son from my first marriage. My former in-laws—who were such great 'pals' with George Bush and wife, from their 1950s Odessa, Texas days—had managed, through threats, intimidation, political power and subterfuge, and the pure weight of money, to break off all contacts between my children and me after 1976, followed by a 1979 disappointment of a promised visit which was canceled. The sudden 1983 call from my son had re-established those broken contacts, but only for criminal purposes, I would later discover.

Between 1970 and 1976, during the trips I made to visit my children in Odessa, I had stayed at my parent's house. Ector County Sheriffs deputies would sometimes come to the house at night unannounced, enter the house without knocking or permission, search the house, and attempt to intimidate me or provoke a physical response, without probable cause, a warrant, or even a knock on the door. I knew that the Ector County Sheriff at that time was connected to the Chicago Mob also. You would be surprised to know how I came to know this fact.

Leading up to June 14, 1979 (my 41st birthday), my children had arranged to visit me in New Mexico for the first time, and I was very excited and happy about that. The in-laws canceled those plans at the last minute. The following day, the first of the four murder attempts was made by Dave, the old pal of the ex father-in-law, also connected to the neighbor, all being connected to the CIA. These traumatic events led to a break between my children and me. They were holding my children hostage to coerce my joining into the Mob/CIA operations.

I was then "excommunicated" by the in-laws from their church (the Eisenhower Church of Christ, in Odessa, Texas), to which I had never belonged. My children were forced to attend this open "excommunication ritual", thus subjecting them to Christian-Satanist "ritual abuse", using the entire congregation to buttress it. Though I am opposed to such "witchcraft", there was nothing I could do about it, since I didn't know about it until four years later. The children were forbidden by the church to associate with me after being raised by me as good, clean and clear-thinking Atheists, for the first six and seven years of their lives, without psychological problems or other complications. The children were suddenly and forceably twisted completely around backward by this archaic and alien Satanist/Christian (they always co-exist, being mutually dependent) "religion", which worshipped a grisley 2,000-year-old myth and non-existent dead body of "Christ", based on the fantasy of "Christianity", created

originally by Josephus (A.K.A., General Arius Calpurnius Piso)[7], on the old Luciferian model, to trick the Jewish revolutionaries in Rome and Jerusalem, into accepting a wimp "messiah" intended to make them docile.

My son later told me that for all those years, his grandmother forced him to sleep on the floor, in a closet, in a sleeping bag. That was his "room". This from greedy, stingy, sadistic "Christians", who were worth millions. The last time I had visited with him in 1976, he was twelve, and a world class swimmer, the champion of the West Texas Aquatic Association. He had Olympic promise. The following year, at age 13, he began to "mainline" (to intravenously inject) methamphetamine, and continued to do so for several years, during which the "Christians" concealed this information from me.

In 1982, in a sudden (and suspicious) turnabout, my son was "sent" to me, not to visit, but to attempt to get damaging information on me, so they could 'put me in jail', to atone for their guilt. As a good example of "...good Christian upbringing", my son had become a "meth-head". They wanted to make it look like a case of "...like father, like son.."—to misplace their guilt on me.

During my son's first visit, he made secret trips to the residence of a well-known Santa Fe judge, who lives in the nearby Eldorado subdivision, where he was encouraged to make out false police reports against me. He later admitted that the grandparents had arranged it all, and had threatened to disinherit him. The trip had been planned between the judge and the in-laws, with the promise that my son could gain 'penance' for what he had 'done to them', by helping them to 'get me'. So there was the victim of heinous Christian-Satanist child abusers, who had turned to drugs, his life practically wrecked for good, seeking 'forgiveness' from the criminally insane "pillars of the community", who had by their insanity, driven him into the streets, in his childhood.

A large part of the political arrangements in this scenario, were being carried out by the first cousin of the "Oil Queen", the retired Texas Ranger, George Renfrew (who also worked with the CIA), who was also the brother to my first wife's cousin's wife. I had actually broken bread with this man on several Thanksgivings, in Crockett, Texas. My son was apparently making clandestine visits to obtain instructions from this 'Strange Ranger'. I eventually found out about some of this, when a weirdo tenant filed a suit against me, and attempted to use the false reports against me in court. On realizing that the State of New Mexico was highly liable to me for the blatant CIA fabrications, the evidence was withheld by an embarrassed detective, who then sought to conceal the identity of the judge and the retired Texas Ranger, whose presence in the arrangement I was already aware of. The very gravity of this monstrous plot were about as outrageous a violation of a citizen's rights by high government authorities, as I have ever had personal knowledge of, and yet they happened to me.

At this time, I was having difficulty in separating things which I knew were connected to my former in-laws, from those connected to the CIA, until a succession of events revealed that they were all connected to the CIA, because my former in-laws had connections to George Bush, who was director of the ClA, and had several high level CIA employees in their family. Out of what appear on the surface to be "private-public conflicts", one may be led to more closely examine the facts, and to realize that the CIA is not a "public" institution, but a private one, created under the directions of the Federal Reserve Bank, and the group of other private bankers who perpetrated the fraud of the

[7]Abelard Reuchlin, The True Authorship of the New Testament, The Abelard Reuchlin Foundation.

National Security (Pseudo) "Act" on us in 1945, under which the CIA was created from the Gestapo's Reichsicherheitshaupt Amt VI.

During this time, my former wife was shot at along highway 285, by the retired "Texas Ranger", as shown by the following facsimile clipping from The New Mexican, which I entitle "The Big Ol' Bad Ranger Takes a Shot at a Pregnant Woman":

Santa Fe Police Report

SANTA FE - The following incidents have been reported by Police:

●The way the woman driver told it in a sheriff's report, she was driving along I-25 when a light blue pickup hauling a horse trailer started tailgating her. After several miles the truck began to pass and as the woman looked out the driver's window she saw a man pull out a rifle and fire. The bullet went through her windshield.

The above can be attributed to that 'nice man'—George Bush—once in Washington, as a favor to an old "A-hole buddy", to motivate me to "go back to my first wife". Strange bedfellows indeed.

After the shot at my wife, she immediately became ill and miscarried our first child she was carrying within a couple of days, and almost died in the process. So the Ranger had actually committed the murder of an unborn child, and almost killed my wife as well. Perhaps that was his intent.

I found it hard to believe that the Rangers and the CIA would employ a man who would shoot at a pregnant woman, and be involved in a plot to drive away my second wife, so my first wife could "get me back". The plot was so bizarre that it reminded me of one of those old movies where some hillbillies in the Ozarks went out with their guns to bag 'em a husband for their homely sister. These people seemed to be too stupid to take "No!" for an answer. They failed to understand that even if they ran off my wife, and offered me the position of "King of the Whole Goddamned World", I still wouldn't "go back" to my first wife.

During my son's second visit, in January of 1983,1 was almost killed for a third time, by a Santa Fe naturopath and his wife, who had been dosing me with minute quantities of arsenic for years, and finally gave me a couple of larger doses, to "send me home" for good. This couple, whose parents were connected to the C.F.R., were closely connected to the Paperclip-connected neighbor who hired the first and second assassins in the 1979 and 1982 attempts, and sued me in 1987.

In January of 1983,1 went to the naturopath to obtain relief from back pains caused by work. The doctor applied accupressure and a massage oil to my back, which seemed to contain abrasive grains of something. That was probably not obvious to the doctor, since the back is more sensitive than the hands. The doctor probably thought the arsenic compound was so finely ground that I couldn't feel it. I simply though that was the way

it was supposed to feel. He asked me to come back the following week for a "second treatment", which I thought was odd, but on his advice did so, on Feb. 4, 1983.

Between the first and second treatments, I had bloody bowel discharges which the doctor said was "...your system, flushing out harmful substances". Little did I know, but they were the symptoms of arsenic poisoning. During the second treatment, the doctor began to ask me personal questions regarding tax matters, which I thought was odd, especially when I discovered that his wife was also present, hiding beneath the covers of an adjacent treatment table. Again, the oil applied to my back had an abrasive effect.

In the evening following the second treatment, I began feeling nauseous, with pain across my kidney region and liver, as if someone had placed a steel band around my lower rib cage and tightened it. I awoke in the middle of the night with dry heaves and yellow bile. At that point, in deep despair and pain, I knew that something was drastically wrong. I remembered a conversation I once had with the doctor about "homeopathy", in which he had remarked that "arsenic is easy to kill someone with because it is cumulative, and you can give them only a pinhead amount each day, over a long period of time, and eventually kill them whenever they reach the toxic limit." At that point I realized the massage oil contained a granular form of arsenic which the doctor had obtained from the mineral formations at Ojo Caliente, a natural spring, where he often obtained such minerals supposedly for his homeopathy work, and had ground it with his mortar and pestle and added it to the oil. We called the Poison Control Center and confirmed my symptoms as arsenic poisoning, and I immediately took a hot bath to remove as much of the oil and arsenic as possible, and returned to bed. The bath should have been a cold one, because the hot bath only opened up my pores for the arsenic to enter faster, I now believe. At 5:00 A.M., my wife dragged me unconscious from bed, and with the help of her seven-year-old son, got me into the car and rushed me to the St. Vincents Hospital emergency ramp, from which I was wheeled into the E.R. in a dehydrated, semi-conscious state, with no pulse. They immediately began rehydrating me with electrolyte salt solution, as I began to go into convulsions. Three litres later, I was completely normal, the electrolytes not only having rehydrated me, but were the perfect chelation solution to completely eliminate all the arsenic from my system. I felt wonderful, where only moments before I was on the verge of death.

On learning that their murder attempt had been barely defeated by our timing and awareness of their plot, the naturopath eventually began to suffer remorse, calling me up on two separate occasions to confess, and to seek my forgiveness. I recorded both of these calls, then duped the tapes. The second call came around a week after the 1987 lawsuit filed by the neighbor, and he was afraid of being drawn into it. I believe my phone was tapped by the neighbor, who overheard the calls and became worried that the naturopath was crumbling. The lady sneak-thief was hired again to steal the tapes, but got only the dupes, at the same time that she got the aerial photo trial exhibits, which cleared the way for the Paperclip-connected neighbor to win his suit.

Around two weeks later, on a flight from Kathmandu to Nepal, the couple's Lufthansa airliner was seen to explode on the descending glidepath on the eastern side of the Himalayas, over Burma. Call it "poetic justice" if you will, but I call it a "cowboy hit", by people who sought to conceal the truth. The naturopath and his wife, along with 22 others, were killed.

I received cryptic confirmation within a few days, that the couple had been sacrificed by the CIA/ Illuminati, as a means of attempting to placate me. But I have

always believed it was to conceal the connection between the murder attempt and the large corporation which ended up with my solar-voltaic manufacturing process, and continues to make millions on it.

In the ensuing period between 1986 and 1991, my son served two prison sentences in Texas, both drug-related. His grandfather, who had lunch every week with the D.A. on a regular basis, simply had him put away because he had become an embarrassment to him as a deacon of the church. I found out about my son's conviction over six months later, through neighbors who were suing me. They kept track of stuff like that, because they were small-time cogs in the CIA's drug dealing machine involved in distribution of drugs being smuggled into the country to finance "black operations".

Though I am strongly moved by the "profit motive", these people kept me in continual poverty, induced me into business 'traps', and screwed up every money-making plan I had, ranging from real estate, metallurgy, and inventing. This book is the latest of my ideas to make a decent living, even though it has been on the stove for over thirty years. Since you are reading it now, they have not completely succeeded in stopping it, even if I don't make any profit. The NSA and CIA continually exert their influence through the big book dealers to suppress this book, spreading the disinformation that it is "permanently out of print" or "unavailable", which it never has been.

I have wondered if being part Indian sets a person up for persecution in America, either genetically or culturally. There seems to be a sort of pacific reticence which reflects a different attitude toward one's relationship to the earth and society, and a tendency to live and let live, to quietly mind one's own business. It seems that nothing invites the interest of a sadist more than a person minding his own business. The perfect chump. The ideal scapegoat.

In the 1870s, Jack Wilson, the Kiowa-Cree sachem (A.K.A., "Wovoka, the Paiute Messiah", founder of the Ghost Dance Cult) married into the Richardson Clan, in Anahuac, Texas, becoming James M. Richardson's son-in-law. Richardson ordained Wilson as a preacher of the Primitive Baptist Church, and Wilson in turn ordained Quanah Parker, all on the same day. Thus was created the Native American Church, complete with the peyote sacraments of Wilson. Richardson was my great-great-grandfather. We have an old family photo showing Wilson when he was in his early twenties, several years before the earliest photo of the Smithsonian's.

Most of the American Indian scholars have erroneous or distorted histories of how the Native American Church started, and have no history at all that Jack Wilson ever lived in Texas or had a family there. They usually trace the church's origin to Quanah Parker, failing to realize that Parker was ordained by Jack Wilson. The Primitive Baptist Church was originally called the "Primitive Baptist Church of England" when the Richardson's originally settled in the colonies in Virginia, since Benjamin Richardson was originally a Tory. After the American Revolution, The Richardsons were run out of the colonies, and settled in Mississippi. Afterwards, James M. Richardson fought as an American in the battle of 1812 in Mississippi, during the British invasion, and distinguished himself militarily, so the "...of England" was dropped along with the Richardson Tory sympathies. James M. Richardson then married a Natchez princess and moved to Texas, founding the first Protestant mission at Buna.

Jack Wilson apparently came into Texas to gather peyote for his Kiowa-Cree-Paiute ceremonies, and somehow fell in with the Richardson clan, was ordained by

Richardson as a minister, and married Richardson's half-Indian daughter. After fathering some kids, he disappeared back to his native Nevada, where he founded the Ghost Dance Cult, which contained elements of the original Primitive Baptist Church fused with ancient Kiowa teachings. The family apparently never realized what had happened to him. Quanah Parker, a half-Anglo Comanche, went on to found the Native American Church, including Wilson's peyote teachings.

It is my belief that the Kiowa are related to what Homer, the Greek poet, referred to as the Akiavoi or Achians, which to me means "East Quay People". As such, they shared the ancient Egyptian religions beliefs which were common to many ancient peoples. The Ghost Dance Religion taught that the Indians could "...dance all the dead Indians back to life", and in the meanwhile, the Whites would shrink until they disappeared. This theme contains elements from the ancient Egyptian religion, with significant variations. The U.S. Army officers did not like this idea, even though no violence was advocated.

Ironically, Wilson's movement—a sort of "American Gandiism"—eventually resulted in the senseless massacre of thousands of peaceful, innocent, already defeated Indians, by the U.S. Army, particularly at Wounded Knee, South Dakota. Clearly, the Illuminati did not want peace. They wanted the old 'fighting' Indians, so they could slaughter them. The technique is always the same. Bring in a 'new' enforcer, unfamiliar with and fearsome of the Indians (or other targets). Savage the dignity of a leader, by demanding compliance to something which serves merely as the provocation of a refusal, as the pretext for a violent 'enforcement', as 'justification' for murder or genocide, the same as with the Waco massacre, Tianenmen Square, or Wounded Knee.

I finally concluded, after being judicially tortured, imprisoned and impoverished by the CIA, that there just ain't no justice. To the Indians following Wounded Knee, the written and spoken word—in the guise of fiction, poetry, prose, or mythology—was a way to reach out for sanity, since protection by "law enforcement" authorities—from the violence of thugs induced by their bosses—was systematically denied. Yet it was merely the spoken word, singing and dancing which led to the extermination of the Souix leadership. A helpless warrior in the traditional sense, with his hands tied from doing what is rational and just, could be depicted in the most unfavorable light, like a Crazy Horse, and shot to pieces.

But I knew that I would have the last laugh. He laughs best who laughs last. I have the lasting satisfaction of knowing how bitter it will be for small and cowardly men to look back on their evil lives as they approach death, futilely searching for worthy deeds, only to come face to face with themselves as lowly cowards, with criminal genes from degenerate parents, educated in corrupt schools, destined to waste their meaningless lives taking empty pleasure in filth, degradation, lies, gangsterism, and ill-gotten dollars. And what an inspiration for their children! Criminals breeding more criminals.

When I was around 13, Max Evans, the western writer (who has a large dose of Indian blood), gave me a young bald eagle with a broken wing, to nurse back to health. We placed a splint on his wing, and I kept him until he was strong enough to fly, then set him free. Perhaps a year later, in the Davis Mountains over a hundred miles to the west, as I walked with a group of other Scouts through Apache chief Victorio's last stronghold, the eagle appeared and circled over my head, whistling shrilly, before perching on a nearby cliff to screech out to me, as the other Scouts watched in amazement. I explained to them that the eagle was "Screechy", a young eagle I had taken

care of, thanking me for his life, freedom, and health. I have never been able to approve of eagles in zoos. I composed the following poem a few years ago, in honor of all political prisoners, and eagles in zoos:

A BIRD'S RELIGION

Freedoms just a word that most have only heard,
but freedom's a religion, well known to every bird;
a religion of life, of love and liberty,
a bird's just not alive unless it can be free.

If a bird prefers a cage to the freedom of the skies,
he must depend on others for his food, or else he dies;
but the death of the spirit is the saddest loss of all,
for a mind which never rises can surely never fall.

To fly among the clouds or the limbs of a tree,
to land and mate and build a nest, and raise a family;
to love the other birds, being happy to be free,
is the only life a bird should live, the only way to be.

For we humans, our mind is our sky, and independent
thoughts are the wings on which we fly;
there are people locked in cages, their minds soaring free,
while prisoners outside the cages have thrown away the key.

THE KENNEDY EXAMPLES

At around 11:00 A.M., Nov. 20, 1963 (two days prior to the assassination of President John F. Kennedy), I had just arrived at my American history class at Sam Houston State University, in Huntsville, Texas, taught by professor Glynn Turner. The girl who sat behind me—a Miss Rather (newsman Dan Rather's younger sister)—had brought a copy of the San Antonio Light to class. The headline was something like "J.F.K. TO BE IN DALLAS IN TWO DAYS", with the Kennedy motorcade route advertised on the front page. I was somewhat familiar with the Texas School Book Depository neighborhood, since I had applied for work at a printing company in an adjoining building, in late 1962.

As a boy, my "blood brother" was Charles "Dusty" Warren, II, a Cheyenne-Cherokee cross, who was also the son of the Chief of Secret Service for presidents Truman and Eisenhower. Mr. Warren had absorbed five would-be assassin's bullets, in several attempts upon the lives of those two presidents. Through my friendship with Dusty, I was somewhat familiar with some basic security precautions established by his father, such as, that under the circumstances, a motorcade route should not be advertised. I also knew that, in a city such as Dallas, Secret Service agents would normally have been stationed in at least every other building or house along the way, and that, in no case, would the limousine be an open-topped convertible, especially where so many high buildings and potential assassin's perches existed, in a large city having a recent history of assassination attempts and other violence over politics.

The legendary loyalty and bravery of the Cheyenne made the choice of Dusty's father as Secret Service Chief a good one. Unfortunately, Mr. Warren was replaced during the Kennedy presidency, although he apparently remained on the security team.

On Nov. 22, 1963, since Dallas literally seethed with people having motives to kill Kennedy, it was a wisely chosen city for the assassination, with so many likely suspects to blame. For example, a disgruntled Madam Nhu, of Viet Nam, was in Dallas, brought there by anti-Kennedy political supporters. Her husband, Ngo Dinh Nhu, and his brother, the American-backed leader of Viet Nam, Ngo Dinh Diem, had been brutally and incompetently murdered by CIA Station Chief William Colby, and agent E. Howard Hunt, on Nov. 1, 1963, supposedly on orders of J.F.K.

Ironically, Hunt was photographed at the Kennedy assassination site three weeks later, near the "grassy knoll", just after rifle shots were fired from it. Dallas resident, General Edwin Walker, graduate of N.M.M.I. and of West Point Military Academy (and the youngest American commander to enter the Po Valley of Northern Italy, during WW II) had been kicked out of the Army by Kennedy, and had written a book saying it was because of his patriotic, anti-Communist views, and John Birch Society membership. There were scads of Cuban refugees, and veterans of the Bay of Pigs fiasco. There was Jack Ruby (a former Marxist-Leninist from Russia, later 'turned' and recruited by the CIA), who had been fingered by Bobby Kennedy in his book, as the key Chicago union figure who had set up the hit of a union boss, in order to enable the Mob to take over the Chicago union (there's the Chicago Mob again!). The CIA knew a 'good thing' when they saw it, a virtual Pandora's box of varied possibilities to cover up their assassination of Kennedy. On Nov. 20,1963,1 knew these things.

On seeing the headline and motorcade route, I picked up the paper, stood up, and said "They are going to kill J.F.K. in Dallas, day after tomorrow, right here" (pointing to

the street in front of the Book Depository). Incredibly, the professor and our entire class engaged in a 50-minute discussion of the Kennedy assassination, on Nov. 20, 1963, two days before it occurred, within 200 miles of Dallas.

In another incredible coincidence, Glynn Turner's (the professor's) brother, Matt Turner, would later be identified by New Orleans D.A. Jim Garrison, as the CIA agent sent out of Washington after the assassination, to clean up 'loose ends' (i.e., to eliminate any witnesses who could tie the CIA into the killing). Most of these "loose ends" were various and sundry scum-bags, prostitutes, petty criminals and other borderline characters, who had various pieces of knowledge which implicated the CIA, through the many people who were to be exposed in the eventual investigation. The 'coincidental' killings and mysterious deaths of so many of these people is what raised so many eyebrows during the ensuing controversy, following the assassination. Turner soon became the Bexar County (San Antonio area) Democratic party Chairman, appointed by you-know-who.

A few days after the assassination, the professor Glynn Turner invited me over for supper. Conveniently, Turner's brother-in-law, a Navy admiral, was there, in uniform, to ask me some questions, centering primarily around how I came up with the idea that Kennedy would be killed in Dallas, two days before it happened. I realized in retrospect that the 'supper' was actually an O.N.I. de-briefing, to determine whether I possessed personal knowledge of an assassination 'conspiracy'. The fact that I possessed no personal knowledge of a conspiracy, probably saved my life, I realized in retrospect. My best answer was that all of the apparent official indicia were there, to point my mind in the direction of an "insider-job" assassination, so my prediction was based on probability.

In the televised films of the assassination, I could see an agent climbing up on the trunk of the presidential limousine, in an attempt to shield Jacqueline Kennedy, then pounding his fist on the trunk after it was too late to do anything—a 'frustration-gesture' which said "I told you so!". It was more likely that Mr. Warren had been replaced as the head of Secret Service because they didn't want the wiley old Cheyenne to throw any tomahawks into their well-oiled assassination machinery. Had his procedures been followed, the assassination would probably have failed, though he had never faced such a concerted conspiracy in any of the three attacks against Truman and Eisenhower.

After the arrest of Lee Harvey Oswald, everything followed a classic K.G.B. "A-Apparat" ("Assassination-Apparatus") pattern, copied from the old Soviet N.K.V.D. As Oswald's 'second', Jack Ruby had developed 'sleeper agent' status with the Dallas police, and during a prisoner transfer at which he was conveniently present, he performed a classic Soviet-style assassination of Oswald, shoving his .38 directly up under his rib-cage, before 'gut-shooting' him, thus insuring little chance of his survival. This was S.O.P. under the old K.G.B. rules, after the apprehension of Oswald, to shield the assassins (in this case, the Illuminati/government plotters) from Oswald's possible testimony, but according to evidence discovered and relayed to the F.B.I. by Oswald himself, two days before Kennedy was killed, it appears in retrospect to be the way it was planned from the start, although police tried to kill Oswald at the theater in Oak Cliff, just after the assassination, but Oswald jammed his thumb into the gap between the revolver's hammer and cylinder, a stunt he had learned in his CIA training, which is why he had a bandage on his hand when Ruby shot him. That was the reason Oswald

screamed "I'm being made a patsy!" at the moment of his arrest at the theater.

Though Oswald did not shoot Kennedy, he had extensive personal knowledge of the whole operation, as a member of the hit team, extending over several states. The CIA had copied the old KGB procedures used by Ruby and the rest of the hit team, and the film showed that Ruby was very thoroughly trained and rehearsed for the hit. It is simply unlikely that a mere 'nightclub owner' would have been so familiar with such assassination procedures, or be able to carry them out with such finesse, without such expert training. Jim Garrison also identified Ruby as the CIA 'bagman' in the Dallas area, providing liaison and money to the various Cuban and other CIA-sponsored groups or other catspaws, a likely place for an ex-Mob man, who probably did a lot of skimming.

In early 1962 (before my Peace Corps training), I had organized and led a Young Americans for Freedom picket line, protesting "conventional warfare in Southeast Asia", outside a United Nations meeting in Midland, Texas, at which the U.N. announced its sponsorship of 'limited warfare' and 'counterinsurgency tactics', ostensibly to diminish the risks of all-out war. I viewed it as of an ulterior way for the Illuminati to 'blood our troops', in preparation for the coming Viet Nam war, to which the 'limited war' was to be escalated. This would ultimately maintain the Illuminati munitions manufacturers in the lavish lifestyles to which they had become accustomed.

In early 1963, two men matching Oswald's and Ruby's descriptions were seen taking a shot at the right-wing, closet-gay, General Edwin Walker, from nearby Turtle Creek Drive, in Dallas. This was a psychopolitical 'stage setting' for the future, intended to 'alienate' Walker from the future conspiracy, in which Dallas was the last of five alternative assassination locales, which could be actuated during Kennedy's political tour. The first four locations—Miami, New Orleans, Houston, and San Antonio—had been canceled as the tour progressed, leaving Dallas as the final and last chance for the hit, which was planned at least as early as Nov., 1962.

Kennedy's intent was to stop the escalation, and shut off the anticipated Golden Pipeline to the Illuminati, who killed him because he double-crossed them, after making deals with them to get elected. Kennedy's apparent original complicity in this war-for-profit-and-political-power scheme, was revealed by his formation of the Green Berets—as 'der Fuehrer's' personally sworn S.S. elite—and the 'closet Nazi' new uniform designs for the new counterinsurgency teams, which gave birth to the S.W.A.T. ("Special Weapons And Tactics") teams, almost identical copies the old Nazi Waffen S.S. and S.A. uniforms. "Jack-booted thugs", anyone?

Aside from his plan to shut off the planned Vietnam War, the thing which most surely contributed to his assassination, was Kennedy's issuance of debt-free currency, around a month before the assassination. This is the actual truth, Kennedy issued constitutional, gold and silver-backed dollars, which was cutting the cojones off the Federal Reserve gang. That currency change was immediately rescinded after the assassination, one of the first orders of business. Astounding but true, it proved that Kennedy was not a Keynsian, Fabian Socialist, but a 'hard-money' man, a constitutionalist, and a Libertarian, Jeffersonian Democrat.

J.F.K.'s older brother, Joseph P. Kennedy, Jr., was originally groomed for president from childhood. After his inadvertent death in a bomber accident in WWII, Jack became his replacement. Joseph P. Kennedy, Sr. ("Papa Joe"), US. ambassador to Great Britain, was in the IUuminati, like the Rockefellers, and was likewise a Nazi collaborator

and spy (F.D.R. blocked his prosecution for treason and espionage). The Kennedy boys even sat on Hitler's knee, during their visits to Berchtesgaden, the Fuehrer's Alpine retreat. The boys had been clandestinely raised to be American IllumiNazi leaders. After all, Bobby and Jack had 'proved' themselves, by supplying Senator Joe McCarthy the documentary "dirt" used in his hysterical H.U.A.C. hearings.

Jack Kennedy made promises he apparently intended to break, by first hiring 'Fabian Socialists' (Cambridge-trained closet fascists) in his administration, then firing them one by one, as he began to move away from the 'secret' fascist orientation which got him the power. Kennedy showed all the earmarks of heading toward a third, more Libertarian position (as I gleaned from Kennedy's book, Profiles in Courage, which gave a more 'real' profile of Jack Kennedy's rather undisclosed leanings). Kennedy was apparently purging male fascist types—affiliated with the Illuminati and national security establishment—from the government, similar to F.D.R.'s purge of pro-Hitler/Mussolini fascists from the cabinet of his second administration, and Mussolini's purge of International Socialists and Communists from his second administration (Il Duce was originally an International Socialist).

Kennedy had made public condemnations of "clandestine organizations" less than a week before his death, which many were led by the misinformationists to mean the John Birch Society, which I discounted, since close Kennedy family friend, Cardinal Cushing, of Boston, as well as Jacqueline Kennedy's cohorts—Oleg Cassini and Cholly Knickerbocker—and her father's family (the Auchinclosses), were sponsors of the Birch Society. The Birchers appeared to be anti-Kennedy (which could have been orchestration intended to create cover for his undisclosed agenda), but were not para-military.

No..... Kennedy was talking about the CIA, not the Birchers. The CIA misinterpreted Kennedy's statements so the public wouldn't know there was a squabble between Kennedy and themselves, or the Federal Reserve Bank, only a week or so before they planned to kill him and blame it on the "right wing" or "Castro".

Kennedy's purge shouldn't be interpreted as a patent homophobic bigotry, but rather one which frequently involved CIA-connected homosexuals, who were in high ratio among the Templar-Illuminati pederast variety, such as a whole nest of them who were classmates in the '30s and '40s at New Mexico Military Institute ("NMMI"), in Roswell, New Mexico. Those 'good Ol' boys' were lavished with lucrative defense contracts during the three or four wars since, or were placed in prestigious government or military positions. Like the graduates of a particular secret P.O.W. camp—non-coms included—they have all been well taken care of, to the man. Several of them who were directly or indirectly victims of the Kennedy purge, were naturally implicated in the assassination. Just take a good look at the defense contracts for the Viet Nam War.

During WWII, Joe Kennedy, Jr., like many other 'Illuminati sons', was to be kept safe in the special P.O.W. camp in Bavaria, near the Swiss border, in Adam Weishaupt's old stamping grounds. On allied bombing raids, 'certain' bombers made 'protected' landings, and their personnel escorted to the special camp, where they were treated like royalty by the German command. Joe Kennedy's plane was accidentally shot down, or crashed on landing, killing him. These arrangements related to the traitors mentioned in Charles Higham's Trading With the Enemy, who through special connections to Hitler and his financial supporters, acquired these cushy accomodations for young officers who were in their families or spheres of influence.

Joseph Katzenbach, Kennedy's A.G., and graduate of Yale law, class of '47, learned international law in the camp, supplied with all the books and materials he needed, by the Third Reich. Similarly, several others 'vacationed' there throughout the war, to emerge at its end as 'hero' P.O.W.s. I have personally met at least six of these former "P.O.W.s". Some of them have gone into politics, some are in banking, international trade, defense and government contracts, hotels, etc., but all of them are, or were, well provided for, and kept "safe", except for one poor non-com I knew who just happened to be on one of the special planes, as a crew member. His 'reward' was being a high school teacher. He wasn't treated like 'royalty' by his Nazi captors. He was a Sephardic "crypto-Jew", whose spirit was broken.

Without their special connections, these IllumiNazis would have been no more capable of achieving success than anyone else, in a truly capitalist society. Almost all of them had marriages arranged through Illuminati-aristocratic channels. Jacqueline Bouvier Kennedy's eminent family connections included direct ancestry from most of the royal families of Europe such as the Hapsburgs, including Lorenzo di Medici, of Firenzi, Italy, the renaissance era inspiration for Nicola Macchiavelli's The Prince. Do these matters indicate more than what Ayn Rand called the "aristocracy of pull", revealing an actual unconstitutional, clandestine perpetuation of power through inherited "titles of royalty"? The coincidences are too strong to be ignored. The particular lineages appear to be those considered by the Templars to have been directly descended from Jesus Christ.

The Kennedy assassination will be kicked around for many years to come, but I will say here and now that it was engineered by the CIA, on behalf of the Federal Reserve Bank, the CFR, the military-industrial complex, and the National Security thugs.

THE HISTORICAL EXAMPLES

Where people are free to produce and trade, there should be no problem. Food production is the ultimate key to freedom, and the freedom of people who produce it are essential to a free and independent society. Even "rich soil" can be created by any one, provided they have the freedom to do so. To the contrary, control over food production is one of the primary Trilateralist priorities, ergo a war against farmers and ranchers.

The Illuminati is precipitating world-wide death on what should be the eve of world freedom. The "cattle mutilations" experiments appear to be a research and development project, in which flying saucer-borne "death ray" guns are used to shoot cattle, after which tissue is removed from them to examine for particular damage to the reproductive and immune systems, for the purpose of developing "stealth murder weaponry", in which human victims may be murdered in such a way that their deaths appear to be from 'natural' causes. "Population control" and political assassination come first to mind. This is to make possible perpetual Illuminati world control, based on the original scheme devised by Hassan I Sabbah (founder of the Order of the Devoted in 1093), based on the pantheistic teachings of the Persian, Abdullah (c. 11th century), whose teachings included the Tibetan Bonpas Doctrine Of the Non-Ego, which had come to Persia through the peripheral gnostic Sufi teachings of the Roshiniya and Thuggee murder cults seeking to overturn Islam and restore goddess worship, and to control the world by assassinating and replacing leaders with their kind.

In the 1920s, Stalin exterminated the last resistors to the Red Army—the Kulac "peasant" farmers of the Ukraine—because of their rejection of communism and their emerging prosperity and strong middle class. This holocaust sacrificed the 15-foot thick "rich black soil" of the Ukraine, and the people who farmed it, to the Soviet Thuggees, using Illuminati-procured American food, money, and machinery, to supply the Red Army, under the "Lend Lease Program". In payment, Illuminati arrangers like Armand Hammer acquired such looted art treasures as the Faberge eggs, from the Swiss bank vaults of V.I. Lenin. 'Soviet' agriculture never recovered from the loss of the Ukrainian Kulacs ("fists"). The Ukraine and its rich black soil—without the Kulacs—is just so much untilled prairie. The tattered remnants of those Kulacs were beginning to regenerate. The Illuminati could not allow this fertile region to once again supply needed food and profit for a re-vitalized Ukraine, which could capitalize on feeding and strengthening a large part of the world, and threaten Illuminati food control.

On the eve of Peristroika, the Chernobyl disaster was arranged by the Illuminati, to poison the blood and soil of the Ukrainians, to deprive the food and spiritual resolve needed for them to break with the Soviet system, to rebuild their former strength and health, and most of all, to resume the food production of the fertile Ukraine. The Ukraine was dealt yet another devastating blow, by the spewing of radioactive poisons out upon the Ukrainians. The Kulacs were originally Germanic peasant farmers imported by the Czars, to farm the Ukraine. Actor Jack Palance, an Ukrainian by birth, described the Chernobyl disaster as "a desecration".

The Ukraine lost 7 million Kulacs in Stalin's pogrom, another 7 million in WWII, and several more millions in Stalin's insane "purges". Were these sacrifices to Kali Ma, on behalf of the Illuminati murder cult, or an English-American conspiracy to exterminate "all Germans", or both?

As stated in Chapter I, Synopsis of Facts, No. 14, "Morgenthau's Pastoral Policy"[8] was a factual reality, as I learned in 1968, on the very night that L.B.J. announced that he would not run again. On that evening, Texas Governor John Connally sponsored a "Gala for the Arts", to which I was invited. The L.B.J. message was delivered to an astounded Connally, during the Gala, just before the intermission. Prior to the Gala, as I enjoyed a libation with other graduate students, within a block of the Main Building at U.T., a young Ph.D. candidate in history, stated that his dissertation was on the Treaty of Versailles. I brought up Morgenthau's Pastoral Policy, stating that I had heard that it was a hoax.

The student smiled, then said "Come with me". We walked to the Main Building (the "Tower") at U.T., and went to of an upper floor where the papers of L.B.J. were then stored, until the Sid Richardson Research Center (then under construction) could be finished. The student entered a vault and emerged with a document. He asked me if my hands were clean, instructed me to hold them out, and placed the 1919 document into them for my examination. It was stamped with a reception number and seal of the Versailles Committee, and signed by president Woodrow Wilson. It truly advocated the

---

[8]A document drafted by Hans Morgenthau, Sr., and presented to the Versailles Treaty Committee, Paris, 1919, by president Woodrow Wilson, the original document being among the collected papers of president Lyndon Baines Johnson, now kept at The L.B.J. School of Public Administration, The Sid W. Richardson Research Center, University of Texas, Austin.

"extermination of all Germans", and the "...reduction of Germany to a pastureland...", because the "...Germans are an inherently warlike race". It was proof that the Illuminati had no stake in the Germans as a "race", and had manipulated them with false "Aryan" propaganda via the S.S., which was founded by the Illuminati later that same year, after Morgenthau's Pastoral Policy had failed at Versailles. It is a well-known fact that at the time, president Wilson was so sick that he was of an easily-manipulated puppet of his CFR/IIA 'controllers', and died soon afterward.

In 1919, Colonel E. M. House was one of those nutty, megalomaniacal Texans who, like all modern self-proclaimed Zionist messiahs, declared himself the be "God". As the adviser to President Wilson, he went to Paris to establish liaison between an American group and its British counterpart, which called itself the Round Table, which had grown out of British diamond and gold magnate Cecil Rhodes' fanatical world government concept, having as its goal the establishment of world-wide British imperialism. Rhodes was a disciple of elitist aesthete, Professor John Ruskin of Oxford (a proponent of the Pythagorean 'Golden Mean' and other Hermetic theories), and a follower of Adam Weishaupt and Illuminism. In his will, Rhodes instructed Lord Rothschild to expand the Round Table, which, like the German S.S., was structurally patterned after the Freemasons and Jesuits. At Paris, a new organization arose, which mooted and replaced the League of Nations, called the (Royal) Institute for International Affairs ("I.I.A."). In New York, it was called the Council for Foreign Affairs ("C.F.R."). The two groups merged at Paris, in pursuit of a British-American dominated world government. The group was financed by Rhodes and his friends, the wealthy international bankers. "Morgenthau's Pastoral Policy" was one of the group's earlier plans. When it failed, they financed the S.S. and chose Hitler to lead Germany.

By exterminating the Germans, Britain and the U.S. would have moved a step closer to British-American world imperialism. The C.F.R. used both right and left strategy. It financed the Russian revolution, helped set up the S.S. in 1919, financed Hitler's rise to power in the 1920s (in fact, chose Hitler from among several candidates, in 1923), and promoted international socialism through the U.N., which it founded through their agents who were guiding U.S. policy in 1945. That was the "New World Order" of which Hitler spoke, which was to come about after the 'weak' had been destroyed in the coming war. That 'order' has been in effect since the close of WWII, at least on paper, except its founders have never been able to fully put it into effect. They cannot figure out how to tell us it is "the law", since there are so many little stumbling blocks in our constitution standing in its way, such as the phrase "...this Constitution...is the Law of the Land", and "...these Sovereign united States". The C.F.R. is currently engaged in destroying U.S. sovereignty, and now envisions a New World Order embracing both Communism and 'state-capitalism' (i.e., fascism). The U.S. and Britain are apparently the leading models for the new world fascist state, which will be, like that envisioned by Hitler, composed of "national-concentrationist" entities which have no real sovereignty. In the future, any one of them which gets out of line, will be thrown into a war with its neighbor, as the U.N. troops arrive—like the cavalry—to 'settle' the dispute. If one speaks of the "Illuminati" today, he must include the C.F.R. They must weaken us to make the plan work.

When Wilson went to Paris in 1919 to present the "American" plan (to exterminate the Germans), to the Versailles Committee, what was to become of the German "real estate" (what we know as "Germany") after the Germans had been mass-murdered and

buried under Morgenthau's plan? Did Morgenthau have any ideas about what to do with that empty German "pastureland"? And what about all the gold teeth fillings, eye glass frames, jewelry and other personal valuables? Soap, anyone? Lampshades?

Hans Morgenthau, Sr.—the author of the policy—was an anti-Zionist, 'emancipated' Sephardic Jew, while his son, Hans Morgenthau, Jr., was a Zionist. As you may know, Theodore Hertzl, also Sephardim ("Sun-Hare-People", or "Aryan") was astounded in 1897, when the Russian disciples of Karl Marx—the Ashkenazim from Moscow—showed up in Basle, Switzerland at his first International Zionist Congress and took over his organization. Both the Sephardim and the Ashkenazim ("East-Canaan-People")(also called the Khazars, which means "Goose-Hares") came from the same type of Osiris/Sun-Hare/Isis/Sun-Goose-worshiping Aryan/Canaanite stock, yet had a different history since about 1,500 B.C., but Morgenthau probably didn't realize it, or care about it for that matter. Such "world power" types, including Hitler, Rhodes, House, etc., were megalomaniacal-messianic flakes anyway.

Like many other "German Jews" (Sephardim), Hans Morgenthau, Sr., had an almost pathological fear of the "Ostjuden" (Ashkenazim)—those Uralo-Altaic-speaking-Tartar Khazars, whose kingdom in 600 A.D. stretched from the Black Sea to the Caspian. These Schythian-related people had originally been converted to Talmudic Judaism around 679 A.D., and to a Sephardic like Morgenthau (whose families had for centuries lived as the Nobility of Jewry), the Ashkenazim were considered inferior, illegitimate, "counterfeit Jews", because their (particular branch of Canaanite) lineage had not descended from the "Hebrews" or "Children of Israel" who purportedly were "enslaved by the Egyptians"... "followed Moses into the Promised Land", and "lived under King David or Solomon" in the United Monarchy of Israel, nor were they part of the Diaspora from Babylon. To Morgenthau, they were no more "Jewish" than the Phoenicians, Sumerians, Finns, Turks, Scythians, Ukrainians, Celts, Scots, Irish and Britons, etc., to whom they were related.

After about 1,000 A.D., the Ashkenazim were moved around all over Russia, Poland, the Ukraine, and Lituania, and had, as an oppressed people, emerged as the controlling group in the Communist Revolution. Stalin, Trotsky, Lenin, Molotov, Kruschev, Beria, and numerous other Communist leaders were often of the Ashkenazim. This affiliancy to the Communists (Trotsky had recruited and trained his Red Army Cadre in the Bronx in 1916-17, financed by the Jacob Schiff, Kuhn and Loeb and other international banking firms headquartered in New York), and to the Zionists (whom they had taken over), undoubtedly reinforced Morgenthau's fears desire to appease the Ashkenazim, Zionists, and Communists. In 1917, the international bankers, with the aid of German foreign minister Zimmerman, arranged for Trotsky's cadre to take their famous train ride through Germany, to rendezvous in St. Petersburg with the returning P.O.W.s from the Russo-Japanese war, who had been indoctrinated (courtesy of the bankers) while still in the Japanese prison camps, with Bolshevik propaganda, and trained into the Red Army structure specified by Trotsky.

Perhaps Morgenthau thought Germany would make a nice new Bolshevik or Zionist homeland for the Ashkenazim in Germany, and keep them out of America, after which they might show their eternal gratitude to Britain and America, and buy lots of goods and make deals as part of the scheme. Was this a plan of appeasement of the Ashkenazim? It is hard to imagine that the bankers sincerely wanted a Communist world, in which they would be economically "equal".

In the 1920s Ukraine, the acts of Stalin—the former priest, who knew that soil alone produces little food—weren't 'accidental', and neither was the Chernobyl disaster. No Ukrainian would have done it to his beloved. Even a communist would not have done it. Only the Illuminati stood to gain—like their Nazi and Communist spawn—as a bunch of Thuggee incompetents, whose only harvest was death and destruction.

How they gonna keep 'em down on the collective farm, once they've seen California or Montana? Ukrainian farmers can grow food anywhere. They do it from Northern Canada to South Texas, attracted to the rich soils of North America—scientifically named for Ukrainian soils—like iron to magnets.

Farming in today's Ukraine is pitifully low. Despite relatively large incentives offered to young people to take up farming in the Ukraine, there are few takers. A lot of the food comes from areas where agricultural people survived, more or less overlooked by Stalin or the Illuminati. Moldavia provides some food, from the rich soils near the Moldau and Diestr Rivers and tributaries. Women from the Ukraine, Moldavia and Georgia travel over a thousand miles to Moscow in the warmer months, to sell fruits and vegetables on the streets. Many of these women have university degrees.

The Illuminati wants to maintain control of the C.I.R. during its transition to "capitalism", to make sure that their favorite brand of mixed-economy, corporate-state fascism predominates. An increasingly productive Ukraine would encourage a transition to true capitalism. State-capitalism and Laissez faire capitalism are immiscible. The present food shortage in the C.I.R.—created by the Illuminati to slow the transition down or make it impossible, while gaining transitory control—is due to the physical and psychological shock of Chernobyl, and the inability to recreate capitalism while eliminating the controls of the old Communist system. Originally intended to force the Ukrainians and the C.I.R. into starvation, it instead accelerated the breakup of the Soviet Union. Now the Communists are back in control.

The phony "fuel crisis" of 1974 was created to regain control over the American economy which the Illuminati had lost between 1970 and 1974, largely from "hippy technology" which had evolved in the pseudo-communes of that period, through a significant outburst of alternative energy creativity, greater independence, and greater economic resiliency, which caught the Illuminati by surprise, as the Viet Nam War ended. This development was due primarily to an increased appropriation of materials, techniques, and equipment, by ordinary citizens and entrepreneurs.

The Illuminati-created 'fuel crisis' was tantamount to the "leveling laws" of 19th century England, in which a high tax was levied on window panes, to oppress the nouveau riche who had arisen during the English industrial revolution. Those too poor to afford the new taxes on window panes, had to get rid of them, with a drop in socio-economic rank. Without these accouterment to their homes, they were unable to entertain guests in the same fashion as the elite, and to thereby acquire the social status necessary to rise in the business world. Ironically, as if an added penalty under the "American leveling law" (the false 'crisis'), Americans seeking new solar equipment and window panes, to alleviate the 'crisis', would have to buy supplies and equipment from the same Illuminati corporations which had created the crisis. This quandary spurned more creativity, and even more economic resiliency.

The preoccupation of the Illuminati with regaining control of the runaway American economy, resulted in their loss of control over the Soviets. We suffered a

considerable set-back, while the Uluminati got much richer, thanks to government favoritism, but our set-backs were somewhat offset by increased economic toughness.

The "Watergate Conspiracy" (another hoax within a hoax), was instigated in the wake of the fuel crisis, to compound political disillusionment with economic distress, in attempt to collapse the American economy. The break-in and subsequent 'leak' to the press was engineered by the Illuminati through the F.B.I. and CIA, using the same people who murdered J.F.K. Their idea was also to stop Nixon from freeing the Chinese, or opening up the new Asian markets. The Illuminati "divide and conquer" concept requires a divided world. Nixon was erasing too many barriers, making too much peace. They merely exploited the natural weaknesses of Nixon and his cabinet.

The Illuminati divides Texans and New Mexicans to maintain control of the mineral and oil wealth in the two states. The illegitimate accumulation of fabulous wealth by the military-industrial complex, was procured by creating divisions between the Americans, Soviets, Chinese, the West in general, and the Middle East, primarily through religiously motivated exterminations, wars, and revolutions. Can you see them giving up without a depression or another war? And who shall fight whom?

The Illuminati exploits dormant hatreds, creates divisions upon which wars, economic exploitation and deceit are built, motivates all parties at "their own levels", and sets up each new play of the game. They divide the Muslim world against itself, and use "Christianity", "Judaism", "oil", economic interests, ethnicity and nationalism as wedges, to create more homogeneous societies which are more easily steered into bigger international wars and Illuminati control. The Christians-versus-Muslims squabble in post-Communist Yugoslavia requires a closer look at the big picture.

Through us, the Illuminati backed ultra-conservative oligarchic Muslim Saudis and Kuwaitis against 'socialist' Muslim Iraqis, in the "Gulf War", in order to keep the Golden Pipeline to Wall Street Illuminati banks intact, and to keep the Russians out of the international oil markets, because they have vast petroleum reserves. The Illuminati deftly plays all things to all people, like bisexual whores at a transexualist convention.

The constant irritation of the Iraqis by the U.S. government is a dangerous game. It is only a matter of time, if such bullying continues, until angry Arabs rises up and "sting" America like a stirred up hornet's nest. It is a grave mistake to consider the Arabs easy prey for our military. A look at the past few years shows that the constant assault on Muslim Arabs has not only solidified their political resolve, but made Americans the unwelcome "ugly Americans" in that part of the world. How long will it be until a nuclear weapon is detonated in New York City or West Palm Beach?

The Illuminati is not an Illuminati, but a Pseudo-Illuminati, "bringer of darkness", what the Tibetans call the "black magic" of the pre-Buddhist Bonpas murder cult, so powerful and feared in Tibet that few will speak about it. It was the cult written about by Theodore Illion[9], who visited the cult's underground headquarters, where he was invited to join the elite and refused to do so. He escaped, was hunted throughout Tibet by the cult, escaped, returned to Germany, and lived to write about it. This was undoubtedly the "unknown underground masters" of whom Hitler spoke. How does this significantly differ from the CIA?

---

[9]Theodore Ilion, Darkness Over Tibet, (reprint of 1937 original, Adventures Unlimited Press, Stelle, Illinois, 1991).

CHAPTER VII: FROM THE EASTER BUNNY TO AUSCHWITZ: THE RELIGION OF EINSTEIN AND THE NAZI NEW-AGERS

The previous Chapter VI was the consummation of the over 17 years of overt judicial harassment which ensued the moment George Bush took the reins of power at the CIA, and ended with his Presidency. Bush is a pal with fellow Trilateralist and Republican, Robert O. Anderson, the man who controls the North Slope of Alaska and the HAARP project, though Anderson would now probably disavow any connection to ARCO, which he created. Chapter I can be thought of as a kind of "Revolutionary Manifesto of Laissez Faire Capitalist Creatology"—(i.e., a manifesto of a radical and new artistic and scientific religion, based on the "Science of the Creative Process").

The Illuminati originated with "luminism", or Mithraism, related to the myth of 'Osiris the Beautiful Hare", an over 6,000-year-old religion, devoted to sun-worship. As a solar god, Aestre (Easter, Auser, Oser, etc., the "East Hare of Light and Goodness" [Ahuramazda]) is also the origin for "Aryans" ("Hare-ians"), or worshipers of Osiris. These included Moors, Greeks, Turks, Mongols, Norse, Schythians, Scots, Irish, Celts, Semites, Arabs, and Syrians, etc. Many tribal names derive from the "hare" word, often combined with the "duck" or "goose" word (emblematic of Isis, Osiris' mate), as do many other words in Asia, the Middle East, North Africa, Europe, and North and South America. For example, "Schythian" means "Duck-Hares", a word which is "Scutari" in Turkish.

The word "Aryan" did not originally denote a race, but rather a religion. However, it later came to be misinterpreted as a race, by the leaders of neo-Pagan religious movements of the 20th century.

THE "MODERN ILLUMINATI" AND THE NAZIS

In 1776, Adam Weishaupt, a Bavarian Jesuit priest, and professor of Canon Law at Ingolstadt University, "reinstituted" the secret, "Illuminaten Orden", infiltrating the Bavarian Masonic Lodges and instilling the Johanite Gospel, requiring a compulsory belief in "Almighty God", and excluding Atheists and Jews, converting the lodges into instruments of mystical and racial control. Though declining in 1790, the Illuminati was still alive, resurging again in 1912, particularly in 1914 Austria, fabricating the pre-Nazi "Thule Society", a "neo-Gnostic" racist group, teaching that "Aryan was good, and Semitic was evil". This was begun by Joseph Lanz von Liebenfel's Ostara religion. Members were apparently unaware that they were worshippers of the "Easter Bunny", and that they, as Germans, shared a common racial origin to many of the Jews. The program against Masonic acceptance of Atheists or Jews, eliminated their potential influence. The Illuminati had a secret world government plan, maintained by compartmentalization, implementing mystical and racial national concentrationism. A 'schism' created between Christian (Prussian) Masons and Atheist and Jewish (and later Zionist-Atheist) Masons, was similar to the Lutheran Reformation, in which Martin Luther's anti-Semitic book, entitled "The Jews in the Catholic Church", isolated German Christians from the ideologically competitive 'foreign' influences of the Roman Catholic Church, by pointing out Jewish financial influence in Roman Catholicism.

During this time, the Illuminati made inroads in France, via the Jacobins and French Masonic Lodges, during Napoleonic regimes, and into Spain as the Alumbrados, who soon found themselves being sponsored by the Duke of Pachucua, a knight of the Spanish Royal Court, in Mexico. This eventually gave rise to the Penitentes in Mexico and the North American Southwest, in which secret members became known as "Pachucos", named for their earlier official sponsorship by the Duke of Pachucua, and their American origins in the Mexican state of Pachucua. Like the Thuggees of Asia, some Pachucos were required to perform certain criminal acts, and openly wore tatoos on their bodies, later concealed in the folds of their hands, after the F.B.I. outlawed them, declaring them criminal and subversive. As a boy, I knew many of them.

According to one of my uncles, a 32nd Degree Mason, and a Catholic, of "Cajun" origin (who was never excommunicated for his Masonic activity), the American Masonic Lodges refused to accept French Masons into American Lodges, after the time of the Marquis de Lafayette (a friend of George Washington and Thomas Jefferson, converted to Masonry by Jefferson), because of the infiltration of the French Masonic Lodges by the Illuminati.

When it went out the door with the expulsion of the Emperor Maximilian, the Napoleonic Austrian puppet government of Mexico left behind the Mexican National Anthem, Under the Double Eagle (Unter den Doppel Adler), an Austrian march (written by Richard Wagner, the German composer) referring to the "double eagle", a symbol which can be found before 655 A.D. on a gold and enamel purse cover from the Sutton Hoo Ship Burial (now in the British Museum). The emblem was carried by German and Austrian Christian Knights Templars, during their crusades against the Muslims, and is a Masonic symbol often seen on Shriner rings. The symbol had already found its way into the Roman Empire during the days of the emperor Trajan, when Germanic slave-artisans from the north were imported to decorate Roman architecture and monuments. The double eagle became popular during the time of the first 'Holy Roman' emperor, Constantine Porphyrogenesis ("Born of the Purple"), the son of a German officer in the Roman Legions from Trier, and a Hungarian mother.

When my ancestors, the Fosters and the Richardsons, brought the Mexican Napoleonic-dictator, Generalissimo Santa Anna, before General Sam Houston, after his capture at the Battle of San Jacinto, they first tried to hang him, until they saw the double-eagled Masonic ring on his finger. Instead, they sent him back home via Washington, where the Mexicans eventually decapitated him, double eagle ahd all. The ring showed his membership in the Jacobin/Alumbrado lodge of the Napoleonic regimes. Sam Houston was a direct descendant of Phillip II of Spain, and according to the Templars, Jesus Christ.

John Baptiste Lamy, Jesuit Archbishop of the Archdiocese of Santa Fe, refused the Holy Sacraments to Penitentes, unless they swore an oath disavowing the Penitente/Pachuco secret sect. Lamy excommunicated those who refused, thereby also stealing much of the lands of their "brotherhood", El Rancho de Nuestro Senora de La Luz (The Ranch of Our Lady of Light), and several others, the titles to which were granted to their predecessors-in-title, by the "pre-Napoleonic/Illuminati" (Alumbrado-influenced) Spanish king, Phillip II, who was also a Hapsburg (from the House of Esterhazy ["East-Hare", or "Osiris", whose 'house' was at Busiris, in the Sixth Nome of Lower Egypt]). The Penitentes represented a "fundamentalist schism" to the Illuminati that Bishop Lamy knew and loved so well, and represented a threat to the

exclusivity of secret control by the Jesuit Order, which is jealously intolerant of any secret organization other than itself, in any territory it controls. The "Penitentes" represented an undisciplined, unexpected, and intolerable branch of the Illuminati, which had fused its elements with those of Native American Indian populations, and had to be "pruned back" by the Jesuit Order in the 19th century, and by the F.B.I. in the 1950s. Some have even said that J. Edgar Hoover was a Jesuit priest.

Figuring into all this was the "Holy Grail" and the "Golden Cup Ceremony". Its earliest known pre-Christian origin seems to be from Indo-Sumerian traditions, which related to the Uralo-Altaic-speaking tribes in Western Siberia, from which the Schythians (Scot-Irish), Turks, Koreans, Japanese, Finns, Celts, Sumerians, Hittites, Minoans, Britons, Saxons, and many other tribes descended. Incorrectly thought by some to be Buddhist, it was actually practiced by the more ancient, pre-Buddhist, Bonpas religion, of Tibet, which worshipped "black magic" and "Kali Ma" ["Bloody Mother", the "Goddess of Chaos"], with obvious affiliation to the Thuggee cult, the Society of Assassins, and the Death's Head S.S. Black Order ["Schwartze Korps"]).

The Bonpas, Thuggees and Assassins believed in a "collective consciousness", and that, as the population of the world increased, this collective consciousness was "weakened" by being shared by too many people. In service to "Bloody Mother" ("Kali Ma" or Kali Matrakis), they believed in killing as many people as possible—preferably everyone—so as to strengthen the "collective consciousness". Unlike the S.S., Bonpas, Assassins and Thuggees wore white robes with red sashes. (In one photo however, Hermann Goering can be seen wearing a white SS uniform with a white belt having a thin red line on it.)

In 747 A.D., Padmasambava brought Buddhism to Tibet. He supposedly killed or drove all the Bonpas out, but they just went "underground"—figuratively and literally. Padmasambava "ceremonially" incorporated the main idea of the Bonpas—the Doctrine of the Non-Ego—into Buddhism. The original ceremony of the Bonpas, entailed actual cannibalism, in which the hearts of sacrificial victims were eaten, and their blood drank in the Dance of the Red Tiger Devils}[0] The Buddhists however reject actual cannibalism.

The "Holy Grail" or "Golden Cup" myth survived in Germany through the Nibelungenlied (the bloody pan-Germanic epic, in which Attila the Hun is believed to be the wise old uncle). Descended from Tibetan and Uralo-Altaic/Sumerian origins, the Golden Cup myth eventually became associated with the libation cup of the Celto-Nordic peoples. As explained in Plato's Timaeus, the ten Gods of Atlantis commenced their gatherings by collecting the blood of a young bull in the golden cup. This is evidenced by the two beautiful, Late Minoan, golden Vaphio Cups, found in the Peloponnese, upon which are depicted several ancient Minoan "cowboys" lassoing young bulls.

The Golden Cup, or Holy Grail, eventually became the double symbol of "knowledge", and of "pure blood", in the diseased minds of Nazi theorists. Among Heinrich Himmler's list of required reading for S.S. initiates, was Crusade Against the Grail and Lucifer's Court in Europe, by Otto Rahn, Colonel, S.S., a member of a society called the "Ahnenerbe". "Lucifer" (meaning "Light-Hare", from "Luci-" +

---

[10]Tibetan Yoga and Secret Doctrines (Wentz Oxford U. Press, London).

"-fer") identified the Illuminati (and Naziism/Trilateralism) as an "Osirian" cult, with the "Holy Grail" (Golden Cup and bulls) as one of their sacred myths.

In the 7th century, A.D., the Christian Holy Byzantine Emperor, Justinian, drove 40,000 Mithraists (worshippers of Osiris) into a hippodrome in Asia Minor, and exterminated them. Justinian married a dancer, Theodora, whom he met at the Circo Massimo in Rome. Over 1300 years later, Hitler also married a dancer, Eva Braun. Justinian reinstituted "proskynesis" (the Roman salute, "Hail, Caesar!"). (Incidentally, Caesar, Kaiser, and Czar mean "Goose-Hare", in reference to the Sun-Goose...Isis...and the Sun-Hare...Osiris.) Hitler did likewise. Hitler and the Thule society eclectically copied the fanaticism of early Christianity, and several secret societies, combined with the aggressive expansionism and organization of the Roman state.

The Ahnenerbe Society ("Society for the Study of Ancestral Heritages", i.e., Indo-Germanic racial research), was supposedly racio-theological in nature. In Jan., 1939, Ahnenerbe was incorporated into the S.S., and already had fifty branches, led by Prof. Wust, teacher of Sanskrit at Munich University. Meetings of the general staff of the S.S. began with Yoga and a Bonpas/Bhuddist "Sesshin". The Ahnenerbe, which maintained constant contact with Tibetan Bonpas lamas, also contained the mystical Black Order ("Schwartze Korps"), the S.S. "inner circle". Ahnenerbe's general manager, S.S. Colonel Wolfram Sievers, was hung by the Tribunal at Nuremberg.

Ironically, a majority of the ancient "Sea People" tribes from whom many of the Israelites under Solomon's short-lived 10th century, B.C. democracy derived, were originally "Aryans", both in terms of race, and in terms of the worship of Osiris. This is confirmed by the word "Israel", meaning "East-Sungod-Hare" ("Is-" = "east"; "-ra-" = "sun-god"; "El" = the Babylonian Saturn ["Sa-" = "sun"; "-turn" = "hare"]), related also to the Ural ("Hare-El") mountains, and Mt. Elbruz ("El's Burg" or "El's Mountain", in the Ukraine) a couple of the 'Aryan' ancestral regions.

The upshot of this tangled, mystical baggage, collected by various confused segments of the human race, is that "racio-religions" are one of the many excuses that "races" or "tribes" have used for exterminating one another, or even themselves, hi the Illuminati, we meet ourselves coming back, because both Hitler, the Austrian, and Einstein, the Jew, were members of it.

The Trilateral Commission (The "Three-Sided Commission", in reference to the triangle) IS the Illuminati. The triangle with the "all-seeing eye of God", is the triangular top of the pyramid with the eye, as seen on the dollar bill. It was used in the 1937 Los Alamos "p2" project, by von Braun. It is also a Masonic and Rosicrucian symbol. Originally, it was the eye of Ra-Bel or Ba'al (Ba' + El), the Sun God, and of Osiris, symbolized by the "Apis Bull at Memphis", with the sun disk on its head, which is the "golden calf mentioned in the Old Testament. Since the 'Osirian' Ba'alamites were still the religious leaders of so many of the Israelites, the Rabbis created a 'new' religion, in which the "old gods" were disavowed (or rather recreated in disguised new forms).

More specifically, the "modern Illuminati" is a secret group of world power mongers, whose title suggests that they are "illuminated" (i.e., possessed of some special or great "mystical secrets" or "wisdom of the ages", which we normal individuals do not possess). This is a bunch of crap, because David Rockefeller and his clique have no greater knowledge than you or I, except for the criminal knowledge that any gang of "Thuggees" have. The Illuminati have knowledge concerning the technological secrets which they have stolen and secreted away from the world, to maintain their dictatorship

by secret economic control, and to protect their secret resources from the threat of advanced technology which could free the people of the world from their control. This is not "higher" knowledge, but "lower knowledge".

Osiris ("The Beautiful Hare"), as a sun god, originally represented sunlight, and later "knowledge". This was reflected in Greece and Rome by Helios or Prometheus ("Pro-Mithraist") the "...bringer of light and knowledge...". To fundamentalist Christians, this was evil, because it was the same as Adam's eating of the apple, and "...partaking of the tree of knowledge...", which "...took away man's innocence..."(i.e., ignorance). The fact that an evil group calls itself "The Illuminated Ones", claiming "higher knowledge", does not make real knowledge evil, but good. That is what this book is all about. What is truly evil, is stealing and hiding technological knowledge created by individuals for the good of themselves and a civilized human race.

The evil "Set" (brother of Osiris) was obviously related to the origin and namesake for the Judeo-Christian "Satan" ("Sa-" = "sun"; "-tan" = "dawn"), which was synonymous to the Minoan Minotaur ("Min-" = "A-min" ["East-Min", or "Amon", the Memphis fertility goat-god], combined with "-taur" ["bull/hare"], to form a fertility goat-god/Apis Bull/Hare/sun-god which roamed about the Labyrinth, tormenting the damned sent there, beneath the isle of Thera ("She-hare", the Minoan name for "Ashera", a form of Astoreth, the female flying [Canaanite] form of Osiris). This was the derivation for the Christian "Purgatory". The "immaculate conception" of Christ, is similar to the ancient myth in which Isis (sister and wife of Osiris) "immaculately" conceived of Osiris, and gave birth to Horus, while Osiris was entrapped by Set in a knot in the trunk of a Tamarisk tree which was used as a roof support for the house of the King of Byblos. This ancient story originated in Western Siberia with the Uralo-Altaics, as a mating of the Sun-Hare, Osiris ("Heru-") and the Sun-Duck, Isis ("-Khuti"), giving birth to the Sun-Hawk, Horus ("Heru-Khuti", or "Hare-Duck"!).

George Bush and the rest of the Trilateralists would clearly like to force all of us to believe in their "god", whoever or whatever that is, and we are just no damned good unless we do. Again, the upshot of all this is that we're swimming in mythological garbage here, and we simply cannot allow ourselves or anyone else to predicate our political decisions on their personal, mystical, subjective religious concepts, and should settle only for government by reason, rather than a dictatorship based on "faith" in someone's personal or mass religious mythology.

The kind of thinking behind the Ahnenerbe/Nazi madness, could just as well have supported a movement by neo-Pagan "Aryans" (i.e., German Safartic {i.e., "Aryan"} Jews) to use a holocaust of their own making, based upon similar religious horse shit, as a pretext to "purify their race", by exterminating what they might have decided were "non-Semitic" Aryans, such as Gypsies, Khazars, Germans, or other Asiatic peoples who had converted to Judaism, rather than to have been born into it, via some of the "tribes" delineated by the post-Solomonic Rabbis, after the 10th century B.C. creation of the ancient kingdom of Israel. By such thinking, they could have exterminated the Christians, as "non-Semitic, heretical Jews". The prejudice of German Jews toward Asiatic Jews is well-known in some quarters, as reported by Meyer Levin (author of Compulsion, a true story about some murderers on a cross-country killing spree), during his promotion of The Diary of Anne Frank, when German Jews tried to take away the manuscript because Levin happened to be of Asiatic origin, and not pro-Communist.

The astonishing conclusion from all this, is that the modern Illuminati are a group of powerful and wealthy coercive monopolists—actually unfit and incompetent business men and industrialists—who sustain their power and wealth as a group, through theft of advanced technology, and concealment of it through mystical "mind control"-type manipulation of society. If known to the general public, this technology would break the coercive monopoly, and reduce things to the normal realm of capitalist competition and survival of the fittest. For this reason, this book is the greatest threat to Illuminati power ever seen, because it discloses the technological secrets and true origin of the flying saucer, as their best kept secret, and makes the construction of a flying saucer a possibility for anyone having competent technological skills, and wishing to build their own.

EINSTEIN WAS A NEW-AGER

The work of Albert Einstein is useful to the Trilateral Commission, not only for its fuzzy thinking, but also because of its support for the Big Bang, and other Big Lies of Big Science. Einstein was undoubtedly a great mathematician, but metaphysically and epistemologically, he was an idiot.

Einstein was philosophically an existentialist, religiously a Cabballist, and epistemologically a Platonist. It is odd that the "Father of Existentialism", Edmund Husserl, had two main students, Jean-Paul Sartre, a Zionist, and Martin Heidegger, a Nazi. Einstein was a follower of the former, and Hitler was deified by the latter. Einstein's theories were influenced by the Kabalah as well as existentialism, which relies upon a Platonist epistemology—one based upon Plato's Cave Analogy, which holds that our knowledge of reality is like that of an observer in a cave, outside of which a caravan passes between a fire, also outside the cave, and a wall inside the cave, casting a shadow of the caravan on the wall; according to the analogy, we cannot know reality, but see only a "shadow" of it. In keeping with this cave analogy, Einstein continually referred to what he called an "apparent effect", as if his eyes and senses were unreliable tools of cognition, or means for acquisition of any valid facts about reality.

Einstein applied his peculiar existentialist and Platonist epistemological and metaphysical misconceptions to physics, thus protracting many cognitive mistakes into this supposedly "exact science". His fundamental errors included his fictitious concept of time, caused by his Platonist epistemology. The existence of what he referred to as a space-time continuum concept, was a begged question. He said that space is curved, attempting to attribute a geometric configuration or "grain" to unarticulated space. He was so subjective, that he thought what he called an "apparent effect" (his subjective manifestation of Plato's cave analogy), affected the whole universe, in a giant contradiction, based on the Platonist concept that man could not know reality or the nature of it, but only an "apparent effect" or "shadow" of it, which existentially had no relation to what anyone else knew or perceived. So why did he even bother to say it?

In reality, "Time" is a fiction created by man, to measure the rate at which events occur in the universe, and to interrelate them to each other within the spatial context on and around our earth, as it moves through space, and to measure cyclical movements having distinct relationships to all other events, particularly the movement of our planet in the solar system. A specific "time" is marked by a fictionalized, 'frozen moment' or position in space, in respect to a particular cyclical measurement of the clock and the

calendar—two mathematical computers used to measure "time". Our earth moves around the sun, while our solar system moves around our galaxy, which in turn moves around the edge of the Milky Way, which in turn moves around the outer reaches of the Magellanic Clouds. Our earth and everything on it, and everything else in the universe, can never be in the exact same place ever again. Any rational person should be able to see why "time travel" is a physical and metaphysical impossibility. But, if you can be tricked by the Illuminati into believing it is possible, then you can be tricked into believing any other Big Lie they arbitrarily choose to tell you.

In reality, we can know that, by the nature of reality, all events always occur in the instant present, and are irretrievably locked into their contexts in respect to all other events occurring at that same instant, throughout the universe, whether we are aware of them or not. References to "the future" or "the past" are purely fictitious, though we may reconstruct events as they occurred in the past intellectually. Single events cannot be displaced out of their contexts, without reference to their relationship to the rest of the universe at the time they occurred. 'Time travel' is also an epistemological impossibility, because a jump forward or backward in the fiction of "time", would require a physical jump of the whole universe from one configuration in one place, to another configuration, at a far distant place, instantly. This is too much to ask of the universe, just to satisfy the subjective, psychological whims of an Einstein. Only the present exists, forever, and reality is everything occurring or existing in that same, instant present, everywhere. We can know the nature of reality, without having to know all of its events and minute features.

Of the two epistemologies, the Illuminati propagate the Platonist one (and Einstein's theory of subjective 'time travel' and the 'forth dimension', etc.), because it supports the complete upheaval of a rational, Aristotelian epistemology based on the primacy of the senses as valid tools of cognition, and supports the mystical Platonist epistemology based on faith, which allows the public to be misled by, and to accept the Big Lie. The Big Bang cosmography is only a cosmological extension of this Big Lie.

The laws of physics are determined only by a true philosophically sound reasoning process. Einstein's fundamentally subjective and unsound reasoning errors were responsible for the wrongness of his theories, which could not be corrected by all his mathematical mumbo-jumbo. His peculiar metaphysical aberrations were manifested in his well-known formula, purporting to show the interconvertibility of "energy" and "mass", as follows: "$E = MC^2$" ("Energy [the ability to do work] equals mass times the velocity of light, squared"). The formula 'equivocated' an abstract concept (the "ability to do work") with the manifestation of a physical concretion ("mass") multiplied times the velocity of light, squared. This was sort of like saying something like "work equals a rock times the velocity of light, squared." The formula doesn't say how much work can be done, or anything else, for that matter.

"Energy" E, is the "ability to do work", while the "velocity of light" ("C"), is the velocity at which electromagnetic radiation is said to be transmitted from one point in space to another. To equivocate the abstract concept of "energy", with mass times the square of the velocity of light, can be considered as of an attempt to explain how much work a particular mass might accomplish, measured by the quanta of radiation it might hypothetically be converted into, as a "non-inertial" form of dynamic energy stored in electromagnetic radiation in space, as well as a measure of how much potential electromagnetic energy is stored in a particular quantum of mass, but it just isn't true.

Einstein's contradictory theory presupposes that mass is not "energy", since, only during some non-spontaneous process of interconversion of mass into radiant energy, or radiant energy into mass, could "work be done". Mass appears impertinent, and "C = E/R" (Tesla's equation, which excludes mass) appears true, saying that, at C, Energy E, is divided by resonant frequency R. 'Massless' radiant energy, or "cosmic radiation", is dynamic energy stored in transit in space, by the vibrations of the ether. I define space as a volume, which is never empty, but contains an ether, and omnidirectionally interpenetrating radiant energy, of many frequencies. The energy level of radiant energy is determined by its frequency. This radiant energy is the ZPR.

An interesting aspect of Tesla's equation, is that while the resonant frequency, R, divides the quanta of energy, E, at the velocity of light, C, the reactance of the electromagnetic radiation varies as the fourth power of the frequency; the higher the frequency, the higher the reactance. This means that "p2" is more effective at higher frequencies, since the time lag between changes in charge and current distribution in the dipole, is enhanced by the limitations of C. This permits the dipole to continue to "shake out" charges on the peak negative pole, both during and between negative peaks. At 3/8th wavelength tuning, the positive and negative wave components cross and neutralize one another at the neutral pole, between the negative peaks at the opposite pole. The principle that the negative pole will continuously shoot out negative charges is also effective at 1/4 wavelength tuning, with the exception that the opposite pole will be peak positive rather than neutral.

Unlike Einstein, Tesla believed that the velocity of particles were not limited by C, and even advanced examples in which he asserted that particles had exceeded C, because the speed at which they were propelled by light depends on the voltage and frequency of the radiation. Mass or radiation in themselves do not represent "energy", since "work" requires the application of force to mass, which is ignored in the Einstein equation, but was automatically assumed by Tesla, who knew that space is full of potential energy.

The odd paradox under Einstein's theory is that radiation traveling through space would do no "work", and therefore could not be "energy". The only way light could be energy, would be if, as Einstein said, "it gets tired", in which case some of the force originally emitted at its source, is transferred to, and does work on, some of the 'space' (the ether) through which it is transmitted, but this case contradictorily requires the existence of something Einstein denied, the ether. His statement concerning "light fatigue" was inconsistent to his equation saying that 'space' has no mass, and thereby agreed with Tesla's equation, which was not plagued by this inconsistency, since it concerns only dynamic force in radiant form, as an "ability to do work".

Another major difference between Tesla and Einstein, was that Tesla conceived the so-called "atomic energy" possessed by an atom, as radiant force being transmitted into an "atomic reaction" by the cosmos. It may be for this reason that the "Tokamak" and other "fusion" reactors, using a "magnetic bottle" to contain their reactions, produce no net work. The extremely strong magnetic fields must create impenetrable barriers blocking reactions between the "atomic fuel", and the "outer cosmos" (i.e., occluding the ZPR). Like obsolete nuclear fission reactors, "fusion" reactors are intentionally designed as dangerous, behemoth structures, to be operated only by a corporate/state socialist ("competition-prohibited"), Trilateralist power company, providing little competitive threat to conventional hydrocarbon-fueled generators.

Einstein's equation excluded resonance, as the time-relative distribution of force in light per distance. The radiant energy stored in space is relative to voltage, which in turn relates to the frequency of the radiation, and the time it takes for it to be transmitted from its point of emission to its point of "reconversion" into inertia, momentum, or heat, or its expenditure on the ether, as it in turn is converted into mass. Mass has inertial characteristics which are not reflected, because the laws of inertia are said not to apply to electromagnetic radiation, which is 10^{40} times stronger than the gravitational interaction.

This implies that energy, like time, may not exist, but is only a convenient fiction, since inert, static mass does no work, and neither does radiation while in transit in space. The equations of Tesla and Einstein are in direct conflict, because Tesla's equation is consistent with the universe as a dynamic, ever-changing, eternal, infinite perpetual-motion system, while Einstein's equation describes the universe as a finite, temporary, Big Bang-type event, expanding from an ultimate, fictitious, 'original explosion', which is continually winding down. Of the two equations/metaphysics, the Illuminati naturally prefer the latter, since it supports their sales at the gas pump, and the suppression of flying saucer technology via their Big Lie Program.

Energy can only be expressed in reality, during "changes in form". Of the two equations, only Tesla's equation can be correct, since it is the only one taking resonance into account, which is the rate per second at which electromagnetic oscillations or "beats" occur. Without oscillations, nothing is converted in form. The frequency of electromagnetic radiation is the "beats per second", and the level of "force" or "voltage" at which work is done. The more beats per second, the greater the work. Before 1902, Tesla already had numerous patents for the use of "radiant energy", both from "synthetic sources" and from "the natural media" of the universe.

The Nazis and the Trilateralists stole Tesla's flying saucer invention, and the U.S. government helped them take it to Germany, and now conceal it from us. Nikola Tesla was an Atheist/humanist, who detested mysticism, Einstein, Communism, and the Nazis. Einstein's beliefs were consistent with the Nazis, Communists, Trilateralists, and the U.S. government. A naive Tesla tried to warn the U.S. government about German militarism before WW I, and was naturally ignored, because the Illuminati already had a big new war planned, and intended to make billions selling munitions. Meanwhile, Communism—an experiment in world slavery created by the Illuminati, as a mystical religion based on the worship of the "collective consciousness", accepted on faith rather than reason—came into existence, failed, and has finally collapsed, after murdering off literally hundreds of millions of people, in service to "Kali Ma". This shows how heinous, criminal conduct often originates with the Illuminati's appeal to "faith, rather than reason", as a means of mind control, inevitably followed by mass murder.

I have a dream that some day the United States will truly separate the "state" from "religion" and mysticism, whether that of the Illuminati, Christians, Masons, Buddhists, Bonpas, Moslems, Jews, Communists, New Agers, "Scientologists", "Environmentalists", or "Synergists".

In 1979, I went to the National Security Resources Study Center (now The J. Robert Oppenheimer Research Center), at Los Alamos, which was opened to the public in Oct., 1977 by President Jimmy Carter (whom I had met in Savannah, in October, 1974, during his campaign for governor of Georgia). I sought basic information on hydrogen, and could not find it, but what I did find was astounding. Though simple data on

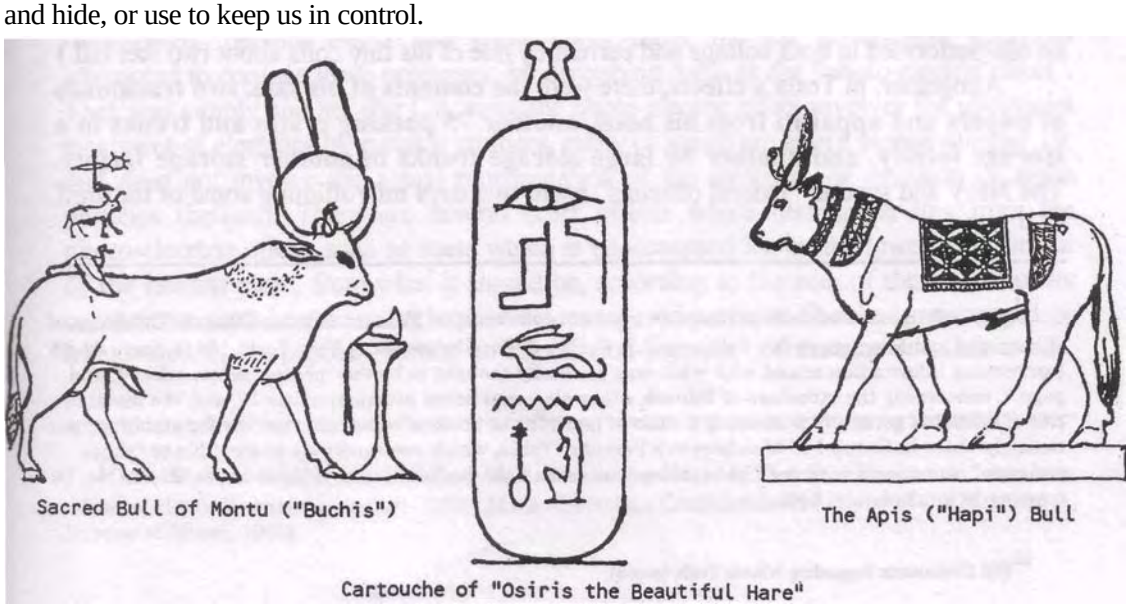
hydrogen was 'unavailable', I discovered the plans for the hydrogen bomb! I also discovered the inadvertent "glossed" references to Lorentz' purported measurements concerning the excess positive charge of the hydrogen nuclear proton, and his postulate concerning the electrical cancellation of gravity. When I requested a "bibliography on Tesla" from the librarian, she said "...all information on Tesla is classified".

On my return to Santa Fe that evening, at a restaurant, I angrily proclaimed my disgust with the research facility, to a student from Harvard sitting next to me, for refusing my request for Tesla information, while making the plans for the hydrogen bomb available to me. The Harvard student went to Los Alamos, photo-copied the hydrogen bomb plans, and published a pamphlet on them at Harvard, creating a sizeable controversy. The center was almost since closed down.

Edward Teller, "Father of the H-Bomb", declared in 1979 that all secret information possessed by the government belonged to us, because we had paid for it, and that it should be made available to us from one year of the government's 'acquisition' of it. The H-bomb plans were probably intentionally planted by the Illuminati, to punish and scapegoat Teller, and to 'justify' increased "security measures", for the ulterior purpose of continued government suppression of other, beneficial energy secrets, having nothing to do with war or "terrorism".

Nikola Tesla originally intended to give his flying saucer invention to the Geneva Convention, for use in the prevention of war. He was disillusioned when the League of Nations fell apart, and began to conceal his discoveries. Tesla died a pauper in 1943, and the government illegally confiscated all his known papers. Today those scientific papers (over 80 large trunks, around a box car load), are stored in secret vaults at Los Alamos, still classified, over 56 years later. The main reason for the continued secrecy is the flying saucer, as well as things which we can only imagine.

In the end, the Illuminati perpetuate their power through mysticism, exploiting the interplay between Judaism, as the precursor to Christianity, and Christianity, as an heretical offshoot of Judaism. Naziism, an Illuminati "synthesis"—a slop-pot of the concepts of the Bonpas, Templars, Gnostics, Christians, Jews, and Mithraists—could never last, but accelerated the work of scientists working for the governments of the world, and produced a lot of discoveries in a very short time, for the Illuminati to steal and hide, or use to keep us in control.



CHAPTER VIII: A TASTE OF OTHER ENERGY SECRETS

Part of the "social manipulation" of course involves the use of the mass media and instrumentalities of the state to suppress not only the flying saucer technology, but also other powerful technology. This small section is included to tantalize you with the possibilities of what I refer to as "suppressed energy secrets". There are many of them, and many more variations. This information is included to also give you a glimpse of the outright fraud of the "nuclear power" industry and the D.O.E. ("Department of Energy", formerly the A.E.C. or "Atomic Energy Commission"), and its concealment of viable and safe options to the monstrosities which they have foisted upon us, called "nuclear power generators", which represent a gross misuse of the principles involved, for which responsible scientists and engineers should be subjected to criminal fraud charges. The scientists themselves are bound by national security secrecy orders, the violation of which would subject them to criminal prosecution for treason or espionage.

To whet your appetite, please find APPENDIX B: Excerpts from Joseph Papp's Patent No. 3,670,494, of 6/20/72, Method and Means of Converting Atomic Energy into Utilizable Kinetic Energy.

Around 1980, I stumbled not to my surprise, upon more suppressed energy secrets[11]. Most of this type of information hitherto publicly available, 'disappeared' from public access after 1942, due to the 'national scouring' operation by the F.B.I, which I mentioned before, which was not as complete as they would have liked. In fact, they missed some important material, due to their ignorance, being guided chiefly by the Relativist Quantum Mechanics, who failed to understand Tesla's technology. For example, on Tesla's death on Jan. 8 (not the 7th as most documents say), 1943, the FBI got involved in investigating as to whether or not anything of a national security interest was involved in Tesla's effects. In the opinion of John G. Trump[12], head of the government's Office of Scientific Research and Development, Technical Aids, Div. 14, NTRC (predecessor agency to the CIA's Office of Scientific Intelligence), "nothing of any value was contained", and there was "no reason to retain" custody of Tesla's effects. (Trump was also a professor at M.I.T., and had his feelings hurt by Tesla's 1938 review and critique of M.I.T.'s huge Van de Graaff generator~with its two thirty-foot towers and two 15-foot diameter balls, mounted on railroad tracks—which Tesla showed could be out-performed in both voltage and current by one of his tiny coils about two feet tall.)

Altogether, in Tesla's effects, there were the contents of his safe, two truckloads of papers and apparati from his hotel, another 75 packing crates and trunks in a storage facility, and another 80 large storage trunks in another storage facility. The Navy and several "federal officials" spent two days microfilming some of the stuff

---

[11]This information initially surfaced in a set of books entitled Popular Science Library. The Story of Electricity and Magnetism (six volumes, P.F. Collier & Son Corporation, New York, 1941), pages 81-83 (concerning information mixed with what was generally thought to be the "photo-electric effect"), and page 7, concerning the structure of lithium, other elements below atomic number 19, and the instabilities of elements generally possessing a ratio of neutrons-to-protons which are "too low for stability", particularly those in Group I of Mendeleyev's Periodic Table, which are especially susceptible to "photo emission", some even with red light (cesium), or green light (sodium), but all those below atomic No. 19 transmute in ultraviolet light.

[12]FBI Documents Regarding Nikola Tesla (supra).

at the Office of Alien Properties storage facility in 1943, and that was it, until Oct., 1945, soon after von Braun's residency at Ft. Bliss, Texas, at which time Wright-Patterson's Air Force Research and Development Command people took a closer look. They had all previously completely missed the boat in their attempts to interpret Tesla's technology—according to the false Relativist physics—mainly because of the snotty report by their "expert", John G. Trump. Even the FBI has failed to grasp the significance of the note concerning Ms. Marguerite Merrington's witnessing of Tesla's 1894 "metallic plate suspension", and to black it out, in the Tesla papers released under the F.O.I.A. It wasn't until von Braun and company disclosed that their flying saucer technology was based on Tesla's 1890s discoveries, that our government knew what they had, and what the Nazis had already acquired in the 1930's from Tesla's files. Quite a lot of Tesla's technology had already leaked through several sources before the FBI's scanty look into it in 1943, fully seven years after von Braun's "p2" project at Los Alamos.

Practically the only thing they were looking for was technology related to the atom bomb, and since Tesla had stated that so-called "atomic energy" didn't come from the radioactive elements themselves, but from "cosmic radiation", they decided he was crazy and neglected his documents until the war was over. This concealment by neglect was the apparent result of Nazi/corporate-state influence in the government and F.B.I.

The data I found around 1980, which showed that all the elements below atomic No. 19, actually transmute in ultraviolet light—some in ordinary daylight—conflicted with Relativistic Quantum Mechanics. The products of these light-element transmutations, brought about with low energy bombardment, are alpha particles (stripped helium nuclei, each carrying a +2 charge), and beta particles (electrons, each carrying a -1 charge). On purchasing at Los Alamos salvage, two withdrawn volumes on the physics of X-rays[13]. These books showed the existence of the transmutation process. I realized that this information and all its reasonably construed implications, had been known by some scientists in both the U.S. and Soviet governments for years. These concealments apparently had nothing to do with "national security", and the two "governments" were apparently in conspiracy to protract archaic technology. Some governments, huh?

Due to prior public access to these secrets, and the possibility that some 'uninitiated' persons might still know about them, the liar government scientists attempted to confuse these processes, by describing them as the "photo-electric effect". That was simply another Big Lie, since the photo-electric effect involves the ultraviolet ejectment of electrons by suitable emitters, many of which are above atomic number 19, and does not involve the actual transmutation of the elements, or emission of alpha particles (helium). There are several other effects which distinguish this from the photo-elecrtric effect, such as mass which is unaccounted for by the lower total weight of the helium atom, from what it should be, according to the sum of the weight of its component parts, representing equivalent energy or particles liberated, rearranged or transmuted in the process, similar to the "fusion reaction" of the sun. In other words,

---

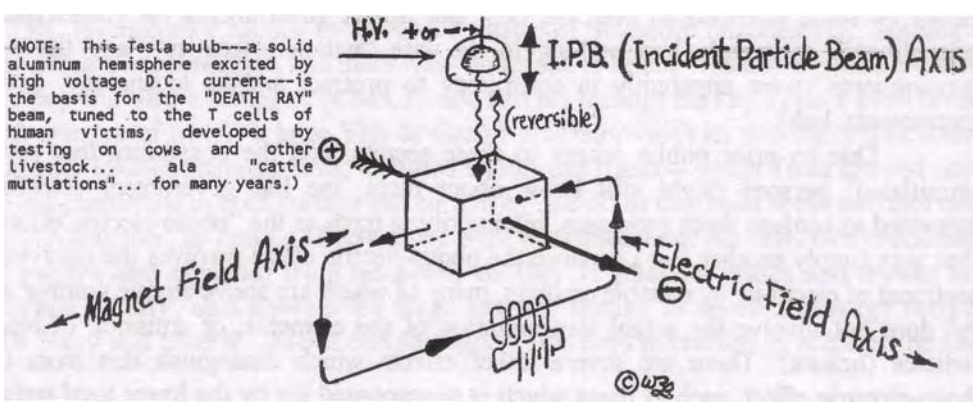
[13]M.A. Blokhin, The Physics of X-Rays (State Publishing House of Technical-Theoretical Literature, Moscow 1957); Howard M. Stainer, X-Ray Mass Absorption Coefficients (U.S. Dept. of the Interior, Bureau of Mines, 1963).

this simple process can release or absorb (the same difference) the energy equivalent of the fusion reaction, in an externally reversible "K-capture" process, in which a K-orbital electron of an appropriate element "falls" into the nucleus (is "captured"), converting a proton into a neutron, transmuting the element into one with one more neutron in the place of the former proton. It is my theory that ZPR and aether-borne energy contained in the space encompassed by the electron prior to its capture, results in the emissions observed, which are "squeezed out" when the electron is captured by the nucleus.

In this process, neutrinos are emitted as the element goes up the atomic scale, and are sucked back into the atom as it returns to its former element, over and over, if the process is continued, in a sort of "continuous nuclear orgasm". Here, we have another "table-top"-type fusion reaction, which has been concealed, primarily by treating it as an insignificant 'anomaly', which is then avoided and summarily dismissed.

A similar process occurs in nuclear excitation of a light element, in which an electron orbit is distorted by a magnetic field, or is excited a by a U.V. incident particle beam, and repeatedly becomes excentric, so as to "gather" energy in the "L" orbit, then emit it in the form of ionizing radiation, as the electron "falls" back into the "K" orbit. This process requires a carefully synchronized and controlled excitation at the specific NMR frequency of the element, under a specific magnetic flux density.

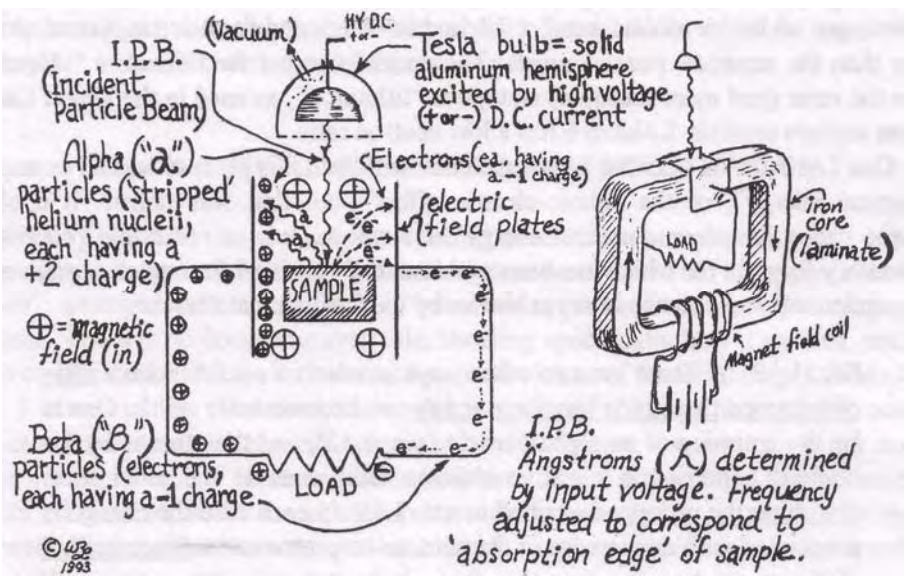
I soon realized that most of the "free energy" processes can be produced by using a medium in a "box", to transform electromagnetic power from the ZPR. Based on these processes, I developed the idea of what I call my "Triax ("three-axis") System", composed of three axes at 90 degrees to each other, which are: (1) The magnetic field axis; (2) the electric field axis; and (3) the particle beam axis (or "atomic axis", which may also be considered as the "momentum axis" in respect to its use in flying saucer propulsion). Any two of the axes may be used to produce the third, as follows:



A magnetic field will separate positive and negative charges, by turning negative charges in one direction, as positive charges are diverted or emitted in another direction (negative charges may be easily turned, while the positive charges are very difficult to turn). The charges may be collected on separate plates, to create an external current, and vice-versa. The incident particle beam directed at a sample of one of the light elements

or a compound of them (often better), placed in a "triax box" with a magnetic field across it, causes the manufacture of positive and negative charges. The positive (alpha) particles charge the first plate, while the negative electrons pass into the second plate, being drawn into the circuit by the positive potential of the first plate—created by the presence of the positively charged alpha particles—and are drawn through an external circuit load, to perform work. These particles may be steadily recycled in an oscillatory fluorescent process which may be continued ad infinitum, so long as the load placed on the external circuit is not dropped too rapidly.

The trick is to transmute an element into a temporarily radioactive isotope of very short half-life, after which it quickly returns to its ground state, with the emission of photon energy extracted during its synthetically radioactive reaction with the ZPR:



Using a one-mole sample of lithium 6—or lithium niobate crystals, manufactured by Union Carbide—this process will produce a continuous external current of 50 kw, indefinitely, unless the load is dropped too quickly, in which case a small explosion can occur. This can be 'fail-safed' by use of a computerized control of the incident particle beam in respect to the load, in conjunction with an appropriate device such as an ultraviolet laser. More simply, an incident particle beam device can be easily fabricated using the Tesla bulb shown, which may be controlled with an FET (field effect transistor), which senses a change in the field strength and instantly diminishes the current to the bulb.

Lithium is the most active of all elements, and is perhaps the most unstable of the "light elements". In some cases, transmutation can occur in an incident particle beam of less than 7 volts according to the Blokhin book (in the biblography, and many other

similar X-ray references), which gives specific product emissions for most elements (unless "classified") in respect to the frequency of an incident particle beam used at specific voltages. Powerful ionizing radiation can be used to charge field plates, or to produce 'pure electrical energy". The energy produced, is vastly greater than the electrical energy required to initiate the reaction, because it comes from the ZPR ("starlight"), and need involve no radioactive fuels or wastes.

These processes were explored by Tesla prior to 1900, and by T. Henry Moray, of Utah[14], while in Sweden in 1912. Tesla used aluminum and some Group I elements, while Moray used spudomene or lepidolite—lithium-aluminosilicate rocks—which he called his "Swedish stone", to which he soldered triple-distilled germanium, producing semiconductor devices (which he called "valves") almost twenty years before Shockley, who got the credit. These rocks are almost everywhere in Northern New Mexico, especially found in pegmatite dikes. Sheepherders in the vicinity of Dixon (where the government mined lithium for the H-bomb), carried pieces of lithium ore in their pockets in winter, to warm their hands. The moist hands provided the electrolyte contact, and penetrating cosmic radiation (the ZPR) did the rest. The lithium-aluminosilicate elements are all below atomic number 19, and in compound form are supposed to work better than the separate, pure elements. The normal number for lithium is "lithium 7", while the rarer (and more unstable) isotope is "lithium 6", as used in the Union Carbide lithium niobate crystals. Lithium 6 has a low neutron ratio.

One Los Alamos scientist I discussed this with said this process was an example of "chemical energy", or the "photo-electric effect", but that was untrue. It could be perhaps called "nuclear chemical energy", I suppose. It is a reversible process, the explanatory formula for which has been systematically omitted from nuclear engineering texts, under national security laws, as shown by the following statement:

> Sec. 1.19: "...There are two other ways in which a nuclide with a ratio of neutrons that is too low for stability can become more stable. One is by the emission of an alpha particle (sec. 1.12), and the other is by the nucleus capturing a negative electron from outside the atom, thus reversing the process described in sec. 1.16. In each case the change is associated with an increase in the neutron-to-proton ratio. Since neither of theses modes of radioactive decay is important in connection with nuclear reactors, it is unnecessary to consider them in further detail."[15]

And so, two separate possible "other" ways to produce atomic energy—both using non-radioactive light elements—are concealed. The primary justification for the concealment of these two processes is rationalized (for over forty years, since 1952 or earlier) because they are possibly being used to generate electrical energy on flying saucers and other secret projects. Although the processes are allegedly unimportant "...in connection with (archaic) nuclear reactors" of the kind desired by the Secret Government,

---

[14] T. Henry Moray, The Sea of Energy in Which the Earth Floats, Cosray Research Institute, Salt Lake City, Utah (4th Ed

[15] Samuel Glasstone and Milton C. Edlund, The Elements of Nuclear Reactor Theory. D. Van Nostrand Co. Inc., Princeton, 1952 (emphasis mine).

protected by the sham A.E.C./D.O.E. cover, it is obvious that the use of these concealed processes might literally destroy the obsolete petroleum and atomic energy industries as we know them today.

These two (reversible) processes, combined in the continuous, oscillatory reaction, appear to be the same as that responsible for the helium power system already mentioned in respect to the helium-powered "...twelve B.M.W. engines..." purportedly used on WW II German flying saucers, and in respect to the Papp engine shown in the Appendix.

Can you imagine carrying one of these little generators around in your hand, from your house to your car, airplane (flying saucer), boat, or on camping trips, etc., to provide whatever, non-polluting electrical energy you wished, more than you could probably use?

It comes clearly into focus at this point, that the culprit vested interests are in the petroleum industry, or rather in the Wall Street monopolists who took over almost all independent petroleum production in the 1950s. I say this even though I could stand to inherit many thousands of acres of proven gas and oil mineral rights in southeast Texas. Since the Trilateral Commission or Masonic crooks within my own family will probably rip off those mineral rights somehow, before I inherit them, and obliterate all evidence, I probably won't get them anyway, so why should I care? What is more important, is replacing this archaic technology with "free energy" generators.

TESLA'S 'SPECIAL' GENERATOR: HOW DOES IT WORK?

Nikola Tesla discovered a simple, 'special' generator—the complete secret of which is locked away in the Los Alamos vault—which was constructed of "...copper, aluminum, and iron", arranged in "...a peculiar way", and had weak magnets or only unmagnetized iron cases. There is no document available, showing specifically how it worked, and only Tesla's cryptic comments on its construction, with claims of fantastic output. The closest things I know of are Tesla's homeopolar generators. Judging from them, and his invention of the standard electric meter used by the power companies on our homes, together with some actual experimentation and tests, I have extrapolated the fundamentals of Tesla's invention, since the electric meters are constructed in a 'peculiar' way, are composed of the three metals, and have weak magnets which can be reversed and 'oscillated'.

In 1979,1 took two old 115-volt Tesla electric meters—which are at least 70 years old—and connected them together in a 'peculiar way', attempting at first to measure two separate 115-volt currents coming into an apartment. There are four unlabelled posts on each these old meters, so I didn't know how to connect them, so I just took a shot in the dark. Due to the manner in which I connected them—which apparently was wrong—the two meters behaved strangely. At a low current drain, the disks rotated faster than when the current was greater. At a sufficiently high current, the disks stopped, hummed loudly—which I refer to as "snoring"—and even reversed, at a still greater energy consumption in the apartment. As the current usage went up and down, there were commensurate changes in the "snoring" and disk directions in the two meters.

By actually using more electricity in the apartment, less usage was recorded by the meters, as well as the main meter for my entire complex, and the electric bill for my whole complex dropped by about one-third. The meters were generating power, perhaps enough to power the entire apartment. Sometimes, when the disks were running in reverse, the

meters were generating more power than that being used, and when they were running slowly in the opposite direction, the meters were generating less, but overall, the one-third drop in the bill indicated they were running that apartment, one-third of my complex.

Mr. Dort—the Virginia man whose father invented the special generators stolen by the Nazis and used on their "Electro-U-boats"—said that, when the 'snoring' was at its peak and the disk stationary, that the meter was at the "center of load", which meant that the amount of current being used was equal to that being generated by the meters! When the disks reversed, the 'meters' were generating more current than that being used, and were putting electricity back into the grid! After I removed the old meters from the circuits, my bill increased by one-third. By that standard, I may have been able to reduce the usage to practically zero, by connecting meters the same way in the other three residences, or by running all my current through the meters.

Under the generally accepted theory of electric power generation (inductance), a magnetic field and conductor are required. A dynamic conductor must 'cut' stationary magnetic 'lines of force', or dynamic 'lines of force' must expand and contract across a stationary conductor, to create the cutting action necessary to produce current in the conductor. Since energy is expended by use of alternating current to create an expanding and contracting magnetic field, the use of permanent magnets—which require no current to create their fields—is considered most efficient, except where it is desireable to have a reversing magnetic field in the core. The Tesla electric meter has weak magnets, which Tesla said was necessary so the magnetic fields could be reversed and alternated. The meter wouldn't work if it had very strong, completely polarized magnets. There are two basic ways the Tesla 'meter' can be used as a generator, as far as I can tell:

1. Mechanical: The disk may be rotated in the weak permanent magnet field, by a small motor connected to the shaft of the aluminum disk, generating an electric current in the disk. The current rises until sufficient to cancel the magnetic field, which it then reverses, as the current in the disk collapses and reverses, due to the reversed magnetic field, and the system begins to oscillate. An alternating output current is induced in the windings of the two sets of pole-pieces which are above and below the gap in which the disk rotates.

2. Electromagnetic: With this method, the current is run parallel through the windings of the pole pieces of two separate meters, creating a magnetic flux which alternately passes through the disk, and into the lower pole pieces, creating a current at right angles in the disk, which creates a thrust which rotates the disk in the weak magnetic field of the permanent magnets. When the current in the disk is sufficient to cancel the weak permanent magnetic fields, the disk stops, then "vibrates" ("snores"), as it rapidly and alternately reflects and transmits both the current and the magnetic fields, producing an output alternating current in the pole piece windings.

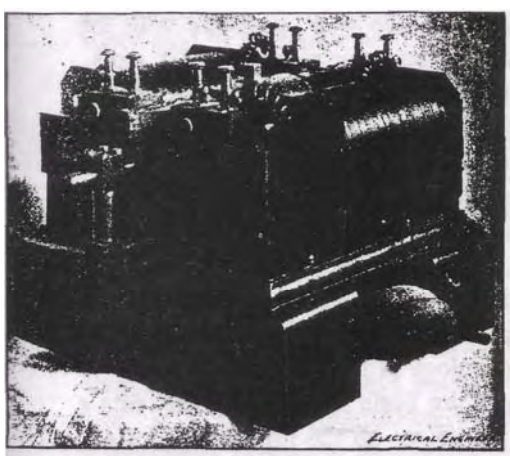
According to Mr. Dort, aluminum is the best "reflector", copper the "most active" (electronically conductive), and iron the "magnetic core material". Dort said his father's magnetic drive was based on a Tesla generator. Based on the drive system stolen from Dort's father by the Nazis, and used on the Electro-U Boats, Grand Admiral Karl Doenitz promised Hitler a "miracle at sea". How did the Tesla generator work?

The particular Tesla generator used by Dort's father—and the Nazis—was one which was being developed by Tesla in 1895, in conjunction with his developments concerning the liquifaction of air. Tesla knew, from Lord Kelvin's discoveries, that more heat is

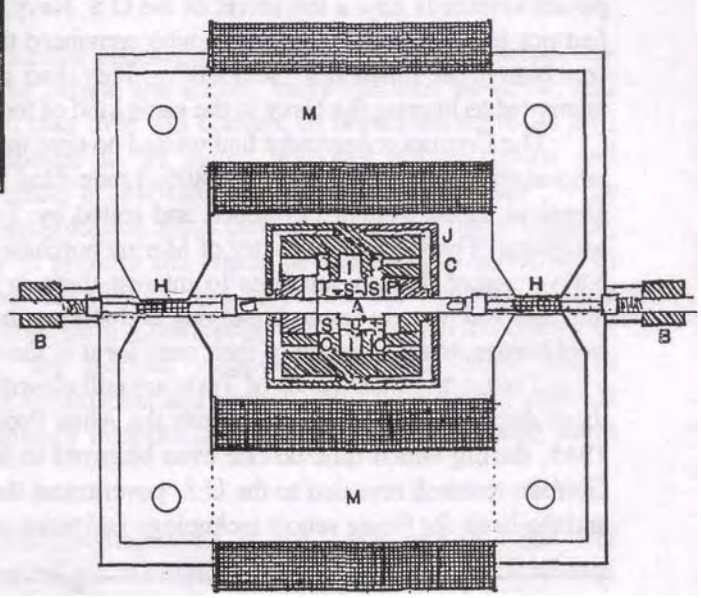
absorbed by liquified air when it is re-gasified and used to drive something, than is required by theory, in other words, that the liquifaction process is somewhat anomalous or 'over unity'[16]. Just prior to Tesla's completion of his work, and the filing of a patent application, Tesla's laboratory was burned down, destroying all his equipment, models and inventions. Immediately after the fire, Linde, in Germany, filed 'his' patent application for the exact same process, which recombined some of the heat energy produced in compression of the air, to drive the process, just as Tesla had done.

Tesla had combined the liquified air process, with his pneumatic piston-driven oscillator, even prior to the fire and Linde's patent application. In addition, he had calculated that, for every 200 pounds of iron connected to the device, a full horsepower was added to it. Can you imagine how many horsepower were added by the connection of the oscillator and liquifaction device to the body of a submarine? If hypothetically a Type XXI German submarine were retro-fitted with this oscillator, and its displacement were 2,700 tons, that would produce an extra 27,000 h.p., only a small part of which would be needed to drive the oscillator, which involved very little friction and force to produce a large current.

The Tesla oscillator developed by Dort's father, used on the Nazi Electro-U-Boats, is shown in my following simplified, clarified illustrations, based on Tesla's originals:



At the left is a photo of Tesla's earlier oscillator, which was unfortunately destroyed by fire in 1895. Projecting at its bottom right is a tube for connection of the compressed air line. Across the top are electrical posts to carry exciting current to the windings (around the outside), and from which generated power is extracted.



To the right is a schematic of the oscillator. M is the laminated iron core. H/H are the gaps in which the two small inductors on the shaft vibrate, cutting magnetic lines of force crossing the gaps. The square enclosed mechanism in center is the air-powered mechanical oscillator which drives the horizontal shaft. B/B are the shaft bearings.

[16] Nikola Tesla, Startling Prediction of the World's Greatest Living Scientist (Article, the North American, May 18, 1902).

The inductor-shaft of this oscillator was driven by the small pneumatic piston, powered by the liquid air. The shaft needed to vibrate only about 1/16 inch, producing a mere 'hum', which Tesla said was capable of vibrating a system of considerable weight "..many thousands of times per minute"[17] (standard 60 cps would be 3,600 times per minute). It is assumed that the increased horsepower from the iron of the sub, was combined thermodynamic energy added to drive the liquifier, as well as energy received by the oscillator from the same ELF transmitter which could also send messages. The iron could maintain the flow of heat liberated from the air as it was being compressed and cooled, and from the iron where it was stored, back to the air (in a Carnot cycle) when being expanded to drive the piston. At the same time, the iron could act as an antenna to receive earth's electrical energy being regulated by the 'transmitter' at a distance, electrical energy of stationary waves traversing the earth from pole to pole, as finally confirmed by Tesla during his 1899 Colorado Springs experiments. The iron collected electromagnetic energy from the earth system to be added to the electrical power of the oscillator as it was driving an Electro-U-Boat's motors and charging batteries. As stated by Tesla in 1898[18], (in pertinent part): "Primarily, I contemplated only the sending of messages to great distances in this manner." "Now, this idea I extended to a system of power transmission."

The windings on the oscillator were about 50 miles in length, and its inductive-capacitive system allowed it to operate on a frequency which was consistent with the earth's, at a wavelength of about 925 miles, with a frequency close to 13.5 c.p.s., sometimes mentioned in relation to Naval ELF communications. Was this part of Tesla's long wave system for "transmission of electric energy without wires", which he said he had completed just prior to his death, as shown in the FBI documents? Is the Navy's ELF ("Extremely Low Frequencies") system not only for communications, just as Tesla said, but also for broadcasting energy to submarines—just as Tesla also said? This submarine power system is now a top secret of the U.S. Navy. They could have had in 1943 if they had not listened to their "experts", who convinced them Tesla was crazy, something they can blame on Einstein's "R.Q.Ms". They had paid no attention to Tesla when he attempted to interest the Navy in the same kind of technology in 1901[19].

The German government had wasted no time in taking Tesla seriously. When Tesla's laboratory was burned down in 1895, Linde filed his patent on the liquefaction of air, identical to the system developed and tested by Tesla in conjunction with running his oscillator. The German Ministry of Marine purchased Tesla's turbine right after the U.S. Navy rejected Tesla's attempts to interest them in it first. By 1905, German chemical interests had already begun liquefying and storing thousands of gallons of liquefied air in steel bottles, in anticipation of their need for it in the coming submarine warfare.

Today, the discoveries of Tesla are still classified, over 56 years after his death, yet these discoveries laid in storage with the Alien Properties Custodian between 1943 and 1945, during which time no one even bothered to take a look, until after the war, when German research revealed to the U.S. government that Tesla's discoveries were valuable, and the basis for flying saucer technology and many other still classified developments.

---

[17] Patent for Tesla's Valvular Conduit, No. 1,329,559, Feb. 3, 1920.

[18] The Sun, New York, Nov. 21, 1898.

[19] The Transmission of Electrical Energy Without Wires As a Means for Furthering Peace, Nikola Tesla, ELECTRICAL WORLD AND ENGINEER, Jan. 7, 1905.

CONCLUSION

In his original foundations for the Bavarian Illuminati, officially instituted by Adam Weishaupt on May 1,1776, his stated purposes were good:

"Princes and nations will disappear...
Reason will be the only code of man. "

Weishaupt recognized no divine power outside of Man, and often referred to "...Nature and Nature's God".

The original purposes of the Declaration of Independence stated by Thomas Jefferson and other American revolutionaries, on Jury 4, 1776—only two months after Weishaupt's declaration—were good, also referring to "...Nature and Nature's God", just as Weishaupt had done.

The original purposes of Michael Bakunin, in the founding of his Internationale (the Alliance Internationale Sociale Democratique), in Switzerland, in 1864, was good...seeking an instrument to destroy the tyranny of the confiscatory state, and motivated by a genuine horror of his own experiences under despotism.

The original purposes of Theodor Hertzl, in calling together the first International Zionist Congress, of March, 1897, in Basle, Switzerland, were good, advocating that "...sovereignty be granted us over a portion of the globe large enough to satisfy the rightful requirements of a nation," intended by Hertzl to be guided by the individualistic premises of Friedrich Nietzsche.

The problem with these and similar endeavors, is that the Pseudo-Illuminati—by whatever name we know of it—lurks behind the scenes, more ruthless, powerful, and thorough than ever, always poised to take over and convert all organizations to its own use, in a manner diametrically opposite to its stated purposes. Organizations and movements originally intended to create a new religion of "reason and nature", were converted into ones for the mass psychological mind control of society, using religion, political mysticism and superstition to prohibit the higher development of mankind, to conceal technology, truth and higher knowledge, and to create and maintain a false economic dependence on Illuminati-controlled governments and the archaic technology of Illuminati industries. Meanwhile, the medical establishments and world health organizations are controlled and used to distribute and conceal population control methods developed and expedited by secret military weapons laboratories, so as to maintain world populations at "controllable levels".

The Illuminati, hypocritically styling itself as the "...Bringer of Light and Knowledge...", preys upon the sincere beliefs of religious people, and promotes irrational, mystical, superstitious or exploitative ideas or means, contrary to what might have been initially good purposes, showing the consciously designed, sociopathic conspiracy to control the world through deceitfully planned ignorance, mysticism, dependency, and the promotion and exploitation of weakness.

Philosophy—the "master control" of rational scientific thinking—has its "first laws"...irreducible primaries which must first be accepted by presupposition, before further rational thought may proceed. These first laws must rest on the facts of reality, before we can reach other reliable conclusions, such as that involving a possible 'origin'...if there was an origin...of the universe. This question was first begged in religious 'creationist' myths of the most infantile sort, just as UFOlogists begged the question that flying saucers are extraterrestrial. A god in the image of man, space aliens in the image of man, and 'extraterrestrial' flying saucers in the image of man-made flying saucers. On the issues of God, the Big Bang, Space Aliens, and Flying Saucers, rational people have been crowded into a corner as the 'nut cases', defending the "irrational" positions of the nonexistence of God, the infinity of the universe, the absence of evidence of aliens, and the terrestrial origins of flying saucers. That time has now ended. The Big Liars can prevail only by exerting absolute control over the press, public speech, and the media. They are now frantically multiplying their redundant Tired Old Big Lies in the public media.

The Illuminati eventually came to secretly advocate the use of unethical and murderous methods by its members, to cause unnecessary struggle and conflict of every kind, and to exploit mystical religious or political organizations, racial concentrationism, and military nationalism, in order to set up conflicts needed to create constant chaos and instability, in the midst of which they maintain and increase their wealth and economic control.

The Jesuit and Masonic orders fell to Illuminati control, as did Bakunin's Anarchist Internationale (expropriated by Marx and his Communists). The American Government fell to Illuminati control, via exploitation of the conveniently covert natures of the CIA, FBI, NSA, the Masonic Order, the Jesuits, the Trilateral Commission, the Council on Foreign Relations, and the Bilderberg group.

After the 1919 failure of "Morgenthau's Pastoral Policy" to exterminate the "German race", at the end of WW I, the S.S. was formed later that same year, as an experiment in mass psychological control, financed by the World Bankers, the Rockefeller Commission (now the Trilateral Commission), acting through the S.S., under the auspices of the Hogg Foundation for Mental Health and "Eugenics Program" of the University of Texas, and the American Psychiatric Association. Their purpose was the control of the world through religion. To this end, a new religion, called "OSTARA "—'designed' by Georg Lanz von Liebenfels—was promoted through the S.S. and the Thule Society. This new Nazi religion used ancient religious mythology as its basis, falsely depicting the 'gods' as "aliens". For example, the Egyptian God of Darkness, Apepi (Apophis), a serpent, was claimed to be a "reptilian alien god" which lived under the Great Pyramid at Giza.

In the mass-psychology experiment, the Nazi alien religion was used to stretch the credulity of the German people, so they would believe whatever Big Lies their government told them. It was decided in 1923 that Adolf Hitler was to lead the German people in this experiment, to culminate in a mass suicide of the German people, in a "Wagnerian tragedy", then to fake his own suicide and make his secret exit. After the fall of Germany,

and "destruction of the weak", the Illuminati "New World Order" was to come into being in 1945, as the United Nations.

Hitler handed over the flying saucer secrets to his benefactors in the Trilateral Commission, in a secret deal cut between the World Bankers and Industrialists, Trilateralists, CFR, Rockefellers and the Nazis, with the U. S. government acting as "security guard." The Nazi alien religion has since been promoted covertly by the U. S. government to conceal the flying saucer secrets, so that "UFOs" can be depicted as "alien technology", and kept from the people.

With the fall of the Soviet State, the U.S. political leadership soon began to bully and officiously intermeddle into the affairs of smaller, troubled, disadvantaged countries. Wars, pseudo-justified as "humanitarianism", are incredibly lucrative for IllumiNazi war industries. In March, 1999, through NATO, the U.S. began bombing Serbia, ostensibly to "save the (Muslim)ethnic Albanians from the atrocities of (Orthodox Christian) Serbians", following an undisclosed agenda to establish the authority of a "New World Order", which I call InterNaziism, disguised as humanitarianism. After the French Revolution of 1789, Robbespierre became known as "the humanitarian with a guillotine," in a "reign of terror". An "humanitarian with laser-guided bombs" is no less a terrorist, and has no business sticking the American nose into an ancient, foreign religious squabble, using this "wedge" as a pretext to establish world InterNazi authority.

The mainstay of the IllumiNazis are their monopoly of energy, minerals, raw materials, war materiel and military weaponry, related technology, and the media and communications industries through which they control information. The flying saucer represents their single most important technology, the continued secrecy of which is indispensable to the maintenance of Illuminati world control, because of its incredible fuel efficiency, speed, and electrical performance characteristics—all of which conveniently make the hoax more convincing—which mandates a priority of utmost urgency, to be pursued by them "at all costs". That is the reason these secrets have thus far remained concealed behind the Nazi "alien" religion. Meanwhile, our physicists and aeronautical engineers stand idly by in their dumb government jobs with their thumbs up their butts, awaiting their next checks.

The exact same Nazi alien religion is being promoted covertly today by the U. S. government and the Illuminati, through fancy, well-financed TV productions, books, movies, UFOlogy and New Age groups, which spread the lie that flying saucers are "extraterrestrial", to serve the dual purpose of concealing flying saucer technology and hypnotizing the American masses. We have an InterNazi government.

IN THE NAME OF THE FREEDOM-LOVING PEOPLES OF THE WORLD, I HEREBY TAKE BACK THE FLYING SAUCER SECRETS THE ILLUMINATI STOLE FROM US, SO THAT WE MAY LIBERATE OURSELVES FROM THE ILLUMINATI, AND CREATE A PROSPEROUS NEW FREE WORLD CIVILIZATION, BASED ON THE CREATIVE PROCESS, INDIVIDUALITY, PEACEFUL LIFESTYLES, FREE TRADE, FREE TRA VEL, AND LITTLE OR NO GOVERNMENT

BIBLIOGRAPHY

ELECTRICITY, MAGNETISM AND WAVES

R. L. Armstrong and J.D. King, The Electromagnetic Interaction, Prentice-Hall, Inc., Englewood Cliffs, N. J.

U. S. Army Research and Development Laboratories,Image Intensifier Symposium, Oct. 6-7, 1958, Corp of Engineers, Warfare Division Branch

Bethge, O., Kleen, Werner, Translations from Annalen der Physik (1931)

Edwin H. Hall, Amer. Jour. Math. ii (1879), p. 287

D. E. Jones (translator), Hertz' Electric Waves, p. 29

Langmuir, Physik. Z., 14 1273 (1913)

John R. Pierce, Electrons and Waves, Doubleday & Company, Inc., Garden City, New York

H. A. Rowland, Ann. D. Phys., clviii (1876), p. 487

J. J. Thomson, Phil. Mag. xxxi (1891), p. 149

J. J. Thomson, Recent Researches in Electricity and Magnetism (1893), p. 13

Zeiten Schrift, (1994), p. 64

ELECTRO-PROPULSION, ETHER PHYSICS AND RELATIVISM

Hannes Alfvén, Existence of Electromagnetic Hydrodynamic Waves, Nature, vol. 150 (Oct. 3, 1942), pp. 405-6.

Beckman Instruments, Inc., Hall Effect Manual, Helipot Division, Fullerton, Ca.

Arthur C. Clarke, Electromagnetic Launching as a Major Contribution to Space Flight, J. Brit. Interplanetary Soc., Vol. 9, 1950, pp. 261-67

Barnard Ebershaw, Antigravity Propulsion Devices, R. & D. Associates, Inc., P. O. Box 873, Concord, N. C. 28025

Michael Faraday, On the Possible Relation of Gravity to Electricity, Britannica Great Books, Vol. 45, pp. 670-73

R. A. Ford, The Perpetual Motion Mystery, Lost Technology Series, Reprinted by: Lindsay Publications, Inc., Bradley, Illinois (1987)

George Gamow, Gravity, Doubleday & Co., Inc., N.Y.

George Gamow, Thirty Years that Shook Physics, Doubleday & Co., Inc., Garden City, N. Y.

Paul R. Hill, Unconventional Flying Objects, Hampton Road Publishing Co. (1995)

Dr. Franklin Kilpatrick, Free Energy Secrets!

Carl Frederick Krafft, The Ether Vortices, Borderland Sciences, Garberville, Ca (1987)

Carl Frederick Krafft, The Structure of the Atom, Borderland Sciences, Garberville, Ca (1987)

R. E. Lapp and H. L. Andrews, Nuclear Radiation Physics, Prentice-Hall, Inc., N. Y. (1950)

Eric Lerner, The Big Bang Never Happened, Random House (1991)

William R. Lyne, Occult Ether Physics, Creatopia Productions, Lamy, New Mexico 87540 (1997, 1999)

John-Erik Persson, About an Alternative to the Lorentz-Transformation (Hägersten, Sweden, 1997)

Gary Taubes, Relativists in Orbit, Discover (Mar. 1997)

J. A. Wheeler, Geometrodynamics, Academic Press (1962)

Sir Edmund Whittaker, A History of the Theories of Aether and Electricity (Revised and enlarged edition, 1951) Thomas Nelson and Sons, Edinborough

ION PHYSICS, RADIANT ENERGY, AND ARTIFICIAL RADIOACTIVITY

M. A. Blokhin, The Physics of X-Rays, State Publishing House of Technical-Theoretical Literature, Moscow, (1957), Reprinted by U. S. Atomic Energy Commission, Office of Technical Information.

G. Breit, M. A. Tuve and O. Dahl, A Laboratory Method of Producing High Potentials, Dept. Of Terrestrial Magnetism, Carnegie Inst., of Washington (published in PHYSICAL REVIEW, Vol. 35, 1930).

Dr. Sam Cohen, (Red Mercury), America Online: DJIBO, (3/5/95)

Dr. J. Franklin Kirkpatrick, Free Energy Secrets! (ca. 1960)

Samuel Glasstone and Milton C. Edlund, Nuclear Reactor Theory, D. Van Nostrand Co., Inc., Princeton, N. J. (1960)

Gustave Le Bon, The Evolution of Matter, (publisher unknown, c. 1890)

E. A. Moelwyn-Hughes, Physical Chemistry, Pergamon Press, N. Y., London, etc. (1965)

T. Henry Moray, The Sea of Energy in Which the Earth Floats (4th Ed., 1960), Cosray Research Institute, 2505 S. 4th St., Salt Lake City, Utah

Garrett P. Serviss (editor), Electricity and Magnetism, Popular Science Library (six-volume set), P. F. Collier & Son Corp., N. Y. (1941)

Howard M. Stainer, X-Ray Mass Absorption Coefficients, U. S. Dept. Of the Interior, Bureau of Mines (1963)

WORKS OF NIKOLA TESLA

Leland I. Anderson, editor, Bibliography: Dr. Nikola Tesla (1856-1943) (2nd Enlarged Ed., 1956), The Tesla Society, Minneapolis, Minn.

Thomas Commorford Martin, The Inventions, Researches and Writings of Nikola Tesla, The Electrical Engineer, New York (1894)

FBI Documents Regarding Nikola Tesla (232 pages released in the 1980s under the FOIA)

John T. Ratzlaff (compiler), Tesla Said, Tesla Book Company, Chula Vista, Ca.

Nikola Tesla, Colorado Springs Notes 1899-1900, Nolit, Beograd, Terasije 27, Yugoslavia (1978)

Nikola Tesla, Experiments with High Potential and High Frequency (New Ed.,

1979), Omni Publishers, P. O. Box 216, Hawthorne, Ca. 90250

Nikola Tesla, Lectures, Patents, Articles, Nikola Tesla Museum, Beograd, Yugoslavia (1956)

TESLA MAGAZINE AND NEWS ARTICLES

Dr. Nick Begich, New Uses of Tesla Technologies for Global Control, Extraordinary Science, Colorado Springs, Co., (Jan-Feb-Mar, 1995)

William L. Laurence, New York Times (Sept. 20, 1940)

Frank Parker Stockbridge, The Tesla Turbine, The World's Work (Mar., 1912)

Nikola Tesla, The Transmission of Electrical Energy Without Wires as a Means of Furthering Peace, Electrical World and Engineering (Jan. 7, 1905)

Nikola Tesla (Letter, Tesla to Westinghouse Co., July 7, 1912), microfilm, Library of Congress

Nikola Tesla (Letter), Some Experiments in Tesla's Laboratory with Currents of High Potential and High Frequency, Electrical Review of New York (1899)

Nikola Tesla (Letter), New York Times (Feb. 6, 1932), p. 16, col. 8.

TESLA BIOGRAPHIES

Margaret Cheney, Tesla, Man Out of Time, Prentice-Hall, Englewood Cliffs, N. J. (1981)

Inez Hunt and Wanetta W. Draper, Lightning in His Hand, The Life Story of Nikola Tesla, Omni Publications, Hawthorne, Ca. 90250

John J. O'Neill, Prodigal Genius, The Life of Nikola Tesla, David McKay Company, Inc., New York

TESLA'S DEATH RAY (Misc. References)

Nikola Tesla, Tesla's Startling Results in Radiography at Great Distances Through Considerable Thickness of Substances, Electrical Review of New York, Mar. 11, 1896.

Nikola Tesla, Tesla on the Hurtful Actions of Lenard and Röentgen Tubes, Electrical Review of New York, May 5, 1897

Grindell Matthews, Diabolic Rays, Popular Radio, Aug., 1924

The Death Ray Bobs up Again, Chicago Tribune, July 22, 1930

Tesla Discovered Death Ray in Experiments He made Here, Colorado Springs Gazette, May 30, 1934

Interview on New Death Beam; Portrait, New York Times, July 11, 1934

CREATIVITY, CAPITALISM, PHILOSOPHY & EPISTEMOLOGY

Bruce Bliven, The Analysis of Genius, Wisdom Magazine, Vol. 3 No. 25, May 1958

Eliot D. Hutchinson, How to Think Creatively, Abingdon Press, New York

Vera John-Steiner, Notebooks of the Mind, Harper & Rowe, New York

Jerome Kagan (editor), Creativity and Learning (an anthology), Beacon Press, Boston (1967)

Dr. Edgar Mayer, Genius and Prolonged Illness, Wisdom Magazine, Vol. 3, No. 25 (May, 1958)

Ayn Rand, The Fountainhead, The Blakiston Company, Philadelphia (1943)

Dagobert D. Runes, Pictorial History of Philosophy, Littlefield Adams & Co., Patterson, N. J. (1963)

INTELLIGENCE, CONSPIROLOGY, THE OCCULT & THE ILLUMINATI

Jean Michel Angebert, The Occult and the Third Reich, McGraw-Hill Book Company

James Bamford, The Puzzle Palace (1982)

E. A. Wallis Budge, The Egyptian Book of the Dead, Dover Publications, Inc., New York

John Roy Carlson, Undercover, The Blakiston Company, Philadelphia

Gregory Douglas, Gestapo Chief (three volumes), R. James Bender, P. O. Box 23456, San Jose, Ca. 95153

Jim Garrison, On the Trail of the Assassins, Warner Books, New York (1991)

Stephen Goode, The CIA, Franklin Watts, New York (1982)

G. Edward Griffin, World Without Cancer (Part I and II), American Media, Westlake Village, Ca (91350

Charles Higham, Trading With the Enemy, Dell, 1983

Michael Howard, The Occult Conspiracy, Destiny Books, Rochester, Vt.

Theodore Ilion, Darkness Over Tibet, Adventures Unlimited Press, Box 22, Stelle, Illinois

William R. Lyne, Stealth I: De-Population by U.V. Immuno-Suppression, The Leading Edge, Issue No. 76 (Nov. 1994), Yelm, Wa.

John D. Marks, The Search for the "Manchurian Candidate" - The CIA and Mind Control, W.W. Norton & Co., New York/London

Victor Marchetti and John D. Marks, The CIA and the Cult of Intelligence, Dell Publishing Co., Inc., New York (1980-84)

G. R. S. Mead, Thrice Greatest Hermes, (Vol. 1-3), Hermes Press, Detroit

Hans Morgenthau, "Morgenthau's Pastoral 'Policy" , (document authored by Morgenthau and presented to the Committee at Versaille, 1919, by Col. House), collected papers of President Lyndon Baines Johnson, L.B.J. School of Public Administration, Sid W. Richardson Research Center, U. T., Austin, Tx.

Cathy O'Brien and Mark Phillips, *Trance-* Formation of America, Reality Marketing, Inc., Las Vegas, NV (1995)

Louis Pauwels and Jacques Bergier, Morning of the Magicians, Stein & Day, Publishers, New York

Ronald Payne and Christopher Dobson, Who's Who in Espionage, St. Martin's Press, New York

Douglas Reed, The Controversy of Zion, The Noontide Press, P. O. Box 1248, Torance, Ca. 90505

Abelard Reuchlin, The True Authorship of the New Testament, Abelard Reuchlin Foundation, Kent, Wa. 98064 ($5.00)
Richard Sauter, Underground Bases and Tunnels (1995)
William R. Shirer, The Rise and Fall of the Third Reich, Fawcett Publications, Inc., Greenwich, Conn.
Christopher Simpson, Blowback, Weidenfeld & Nicolson, New York
Dr. Charles Sonnichsen, Alias Billy the Kid (1955)
William Stevenson, A Man Called Intrepid, Ballentine Books, New York
Tibetan Yoga and Secret Doctrines, Wentz Oxford U. Press, London
Jan Valtin (A. K. A. Hermann Julius William Krebs), Out of the Night, Alliance Book Corporation, New York (1941)
T. H. White, Once and Future King, Berkley Medallion Books, New York

WW II GERMAN/NAZI TECHNOLOGY, MISINFORMATION, AND PSEUDO-SCIENCE

Current Biography, 1939-52
Christof Friedrich, Germany's Antarctic Claim (Secret Nazi Polar Expeditions), Samisdat Publishers, Ltd., Toronto
Christof Friedrich, German Secret Weapons of WW II, Samisdat Publishers, Ltd., Toronto
Haarmann, D. H., Geheime Wunderwaffen. Hugen Gesellschaft Für Politisch-Philosophische Studien E. V., Hoerstel, Germany (1985)
W. A. Harbison, Projekt Saucer Book One: Inception*, Dell, N. Y. (1991)
Heinz Knocke, I Flew for the Füehrer
Rudolf Lusar, German Secret Weapons of the Second World War, Neville Spearman, London (1960)
W. Mattern, UFO's - Last Secret Weapons of the Third Reich?, Samisdat Publishers, Ltd., Toronto
Jorge Resines, Secret of the Schauberger Saucer**, Borderland Sciences, Garberville, Ca. (1988)
Heinz Schaeffer, U-Boat, Ballentine, N.Y.
Henry Stevens, Report No. I, Report No. 2, German Research Project, P. O. Box 7, Gorman, Ca. 93243-0007
Henry.Stevens, Report No. 3, Rumored German Wonder Weapons, Fantastic German Submarines, German Research Project, Gorman, Ca. (1996)
John Toland, Ships in the Sky, Henry Holt & Co., N.Y.
Vladimir Terziski, Close Encounters of the Foo Fighter Kind***, T. R. Z. Consultants, Los Angeles (1994)
Vladimir Terziski, UFO Secrets of the Third Reich,*** (video), T. R. Z. Consultants, Los Angeles (1994)
Icirus Productions, Top Secret German UFO Cover-Up*** (video)
UFOs and Star Wars*** (video), Adventures Unlimited, 303 Main St., Kempton, Illinois

* - misinformational
** -misconceptual
*** -misinformational/misconceptual

LINGUISTICS & ANCIENT HISTORY

Linus Bruner, Malayo-Polynesian Vocabulary with Semitic and Indo-European Roots, Occasional Publications (Vol. 10 Part 2), The Epigraphic Society, 6625 Bamburgh Drive, San Diego, Ca. 92117
Otto Benesch, Art of the Northern Rennaissance
L. Sprague de Camp, Lost Continents, Dover, N.Y. (1970)
Iron Thunderhorse, The Mysterious Dawnlanders, Ancient American, Issue #19/20 (July-Oct, 1992)
Kathleen Kenyon, Archaeology of the Holy Land, Praeger Publishers, New York
Plotinus, Secret History of the Byzantine Emperors
N.K. Sandars, The Sea Peoples, Thames & Hudson, N.Y.

PROPAGANDA AND PSYCHOPOLITICS

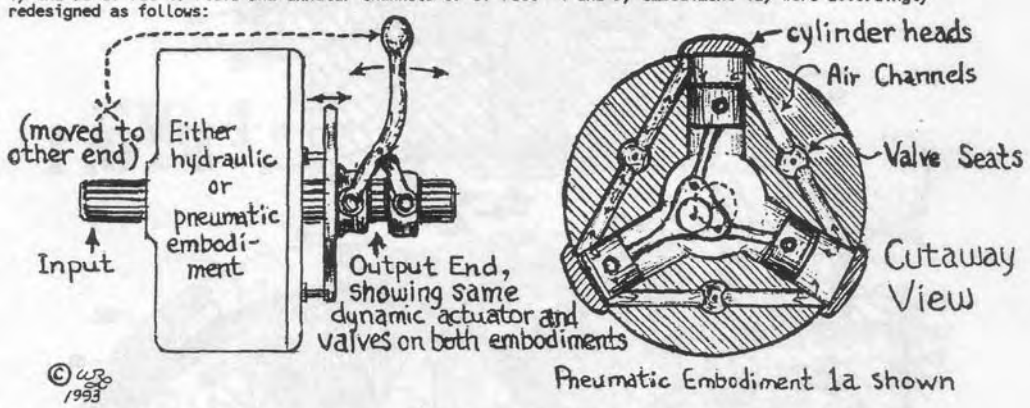
Bill Barry, Kidnapped, Penthouse Magazine (c. 1978)
Walter Bowart, Letter to Walter Bowart from Julianne McKinney (Director of the Electronic Surveillance Project of the Assn. Of Nat. Security Alumini), Silver Springs, Md. (June 16, 1994)
Giant Comics, U.F.O. Flying Saucers, Western Publishing Company (1968)
Frank Edwards, Flying Saucers - Serious Business, Bantam, N. Y. (1966)
Jacques Ellul, Propaganda - The Formation of Men's Attitudes, Vintage Books, New York
Adolf Hitler, Mein Kampf, Houghton-Mifflin, Boston
_____ Hunter, "Brainwashing", (unlocatable, though primary book on subject)
Dino de Laurentis (film producer), Horst Wentlandt (associate producer), The Serpent's Egg (film)
John Spencer, The UFO Encyclopedia, Avon Books, N.Y. (1991)
Duane Thorin, A Ride to Panmunjom, Henry Regnery Company (1956)
Gladys & Marcella Thum, The Persuaders: Propaganda in War and Peace, Atheneum, New York (1974)

APPENDIX "A" - Giving to the Public the Dvna-Lvne Universal Variable Pneumatic or Hydraulic Transmission System

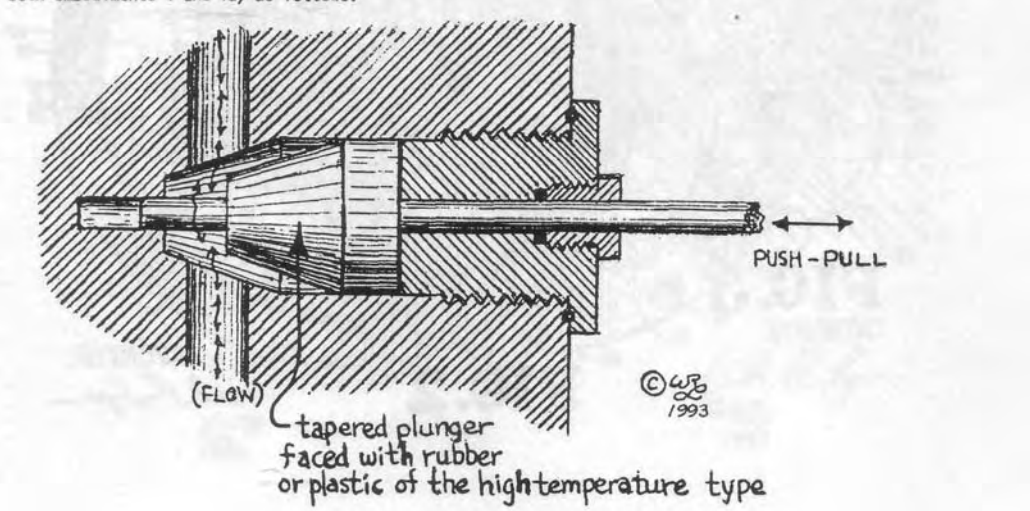
ABSTRACT

A variable, rotary power, pump-type transmission, in either hyudraulic or pneumatic embodiment, which combines positive and negative displacement pumping effects, transferring work energy to the medium as differential pressure and heat, which are interconverted through an externally reversible process, into continuous output torque, thermodynamically or adiabatically. Prime mover power, applied to the pump drive shaft and interconnected driving member, is delivered as interconverted power at the output shaft, interconnected to the body and driven pumping mechanisms; in the thermodynamic process, thermal equilibrium is maintained by pressure and heat exchange within the transmission and the medium flowing in closed loop-circuits, through the valves, which maintain the unequal pressure and temperature built up between the negative and positive displacement cavities; in the adiabatic process, work energy pressure differentials are transmistted immediately through the incompressible hydraulic medium, by compression and vacuum pumping phases, into output torque, in exchanges of pressure through the valves. The dynamic integral valves, actuated by an external stationary positioner, determine conversion ratios under given conditions of input horsepower and r.p.m., and output load, by maintaining specific, adjustable, positive and negative differences of pressure and temperature, which proportionately impart rotational force in the same direction to the output shaft, via the interconnected body and driven pumping mechanisms, from zero r.p.m., with valves fully opened and internal mechanisms and medium freely moving, to 1:1 ratio with valves closed and medium and internal mechanisms in virtual arrest.

(NOTE: In a 3/5/92 request for amendment, not reflected in the drawings, but reflected in the amended description, the dynamic valve actuator tubes---30 of FIG 1, and 83 of FIG 4---are completely eliminated, in conformance to my original Disclosure Document of June 5, 1987, by placing the same female-splined valve actuator flange 34 of FIG 1, on both splined output shafts 20 for FIG 1, and 90 of FIG 4. Fluid and annular channels 69 of FIGS 4 and 5, embodiment 1a, were accordingly redesigned as follows:



Not shown in the request for amendment or drawings, the two different valve plungers---17 of FIG 1, and 68 of FIG 4---should be replaced with the same 'push-pull'-type tapered plungers and seats, on both embodiments 1 and 1a, as follows:



DRAWINGS

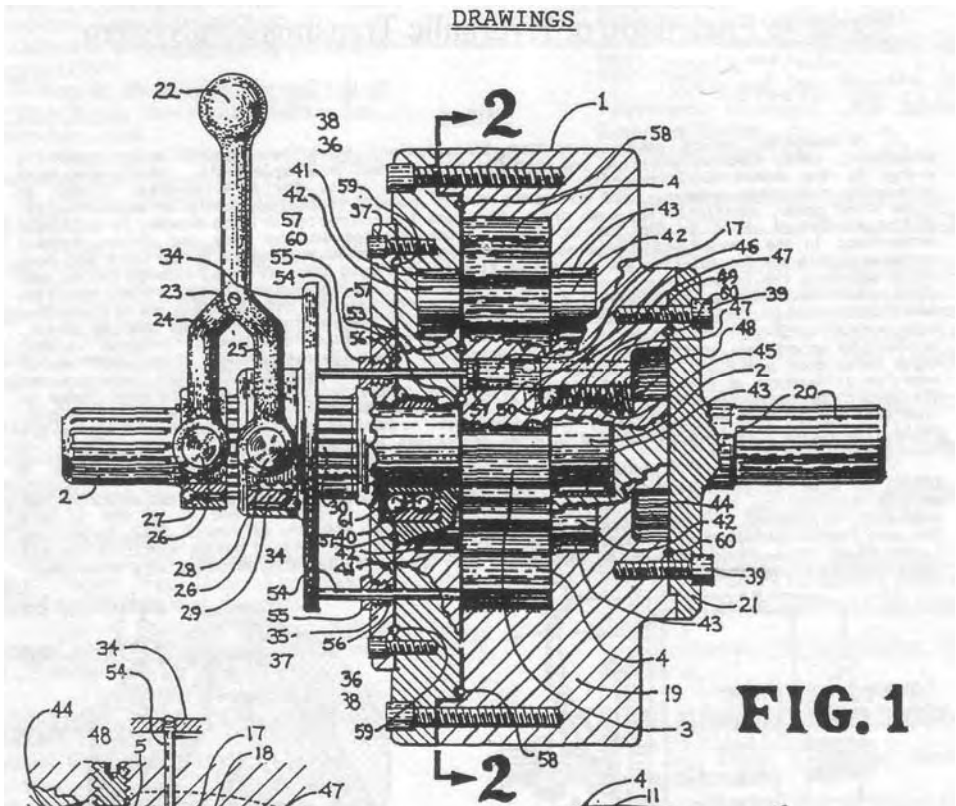


FIG. 1

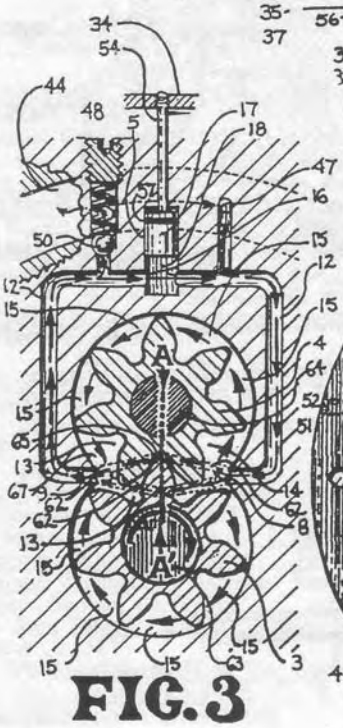


FIG. 3

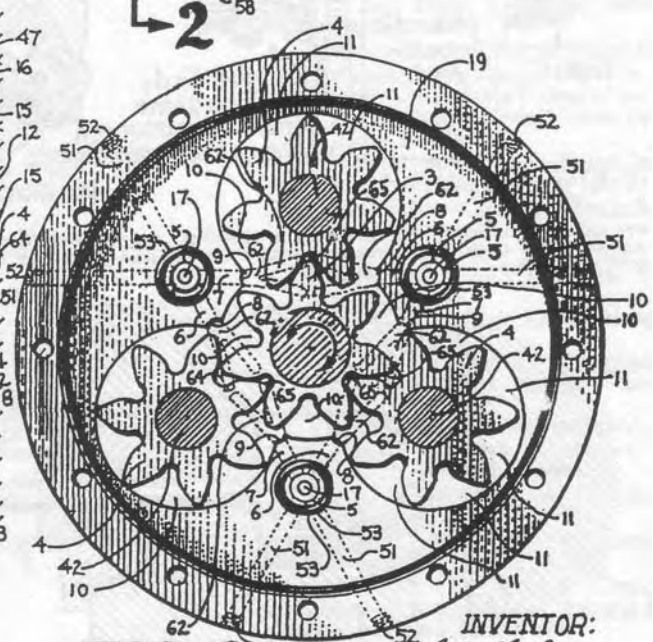
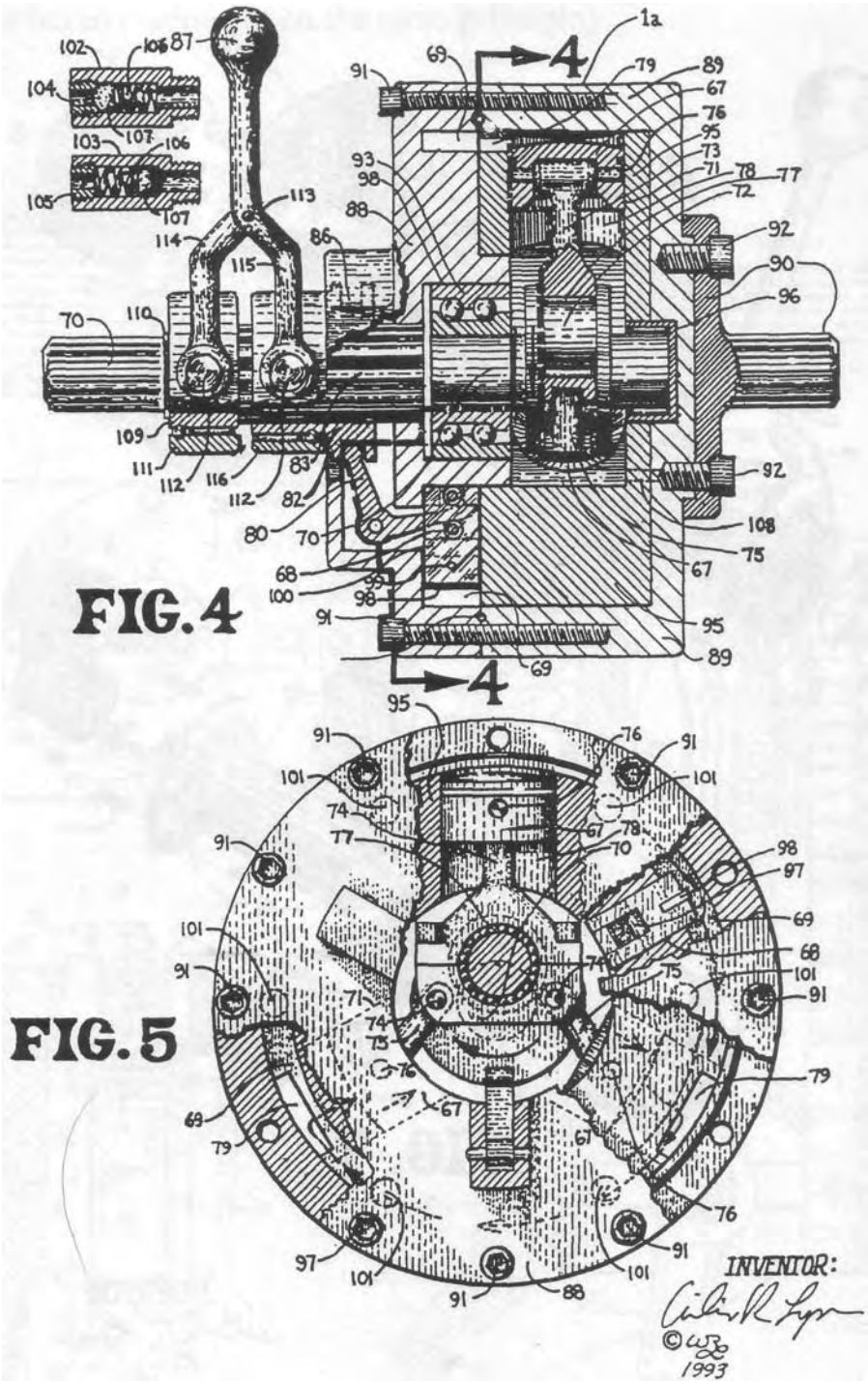


FIG. 2

INVENTOR:

© WB 1993



ALIENS295

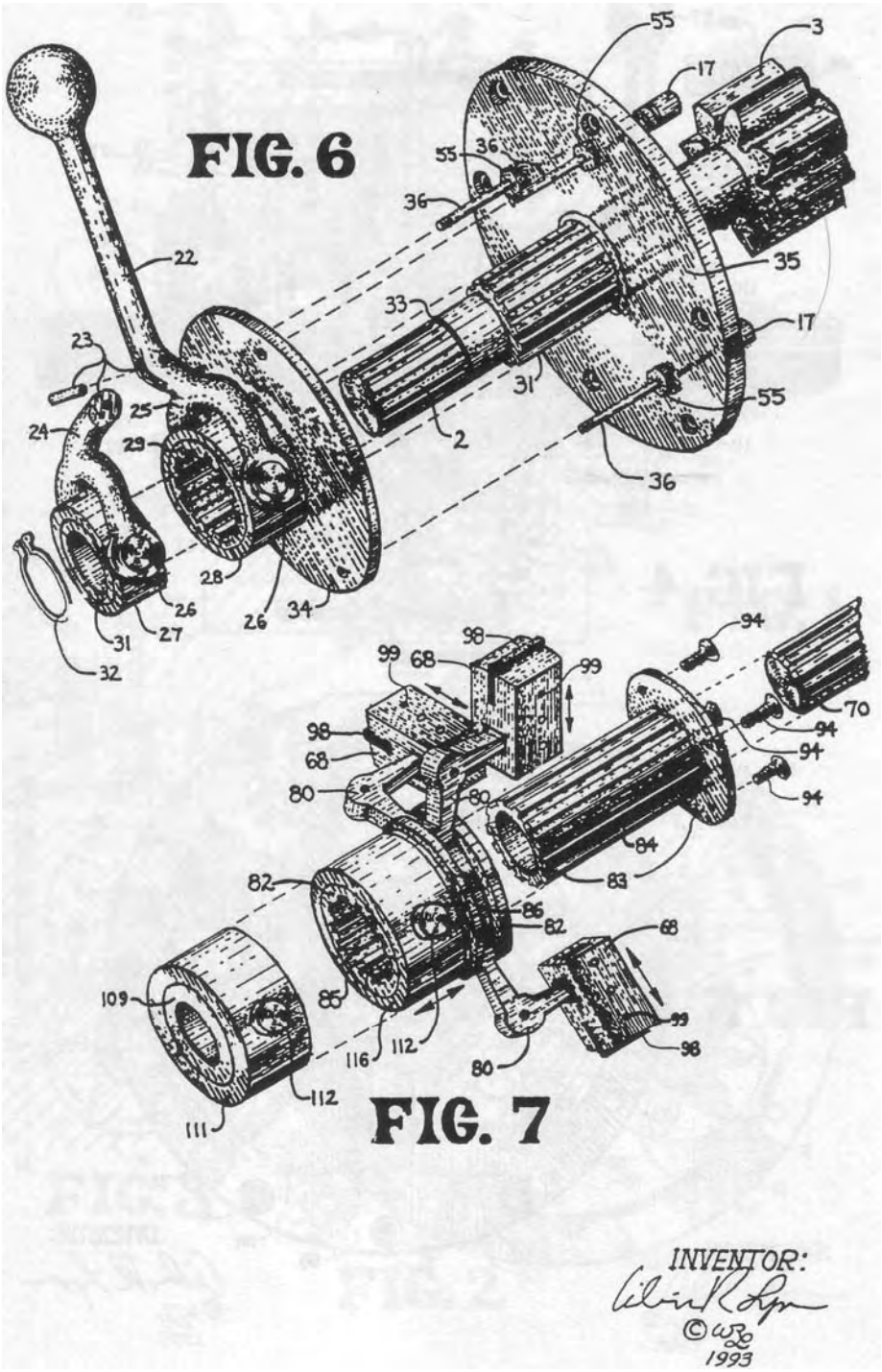
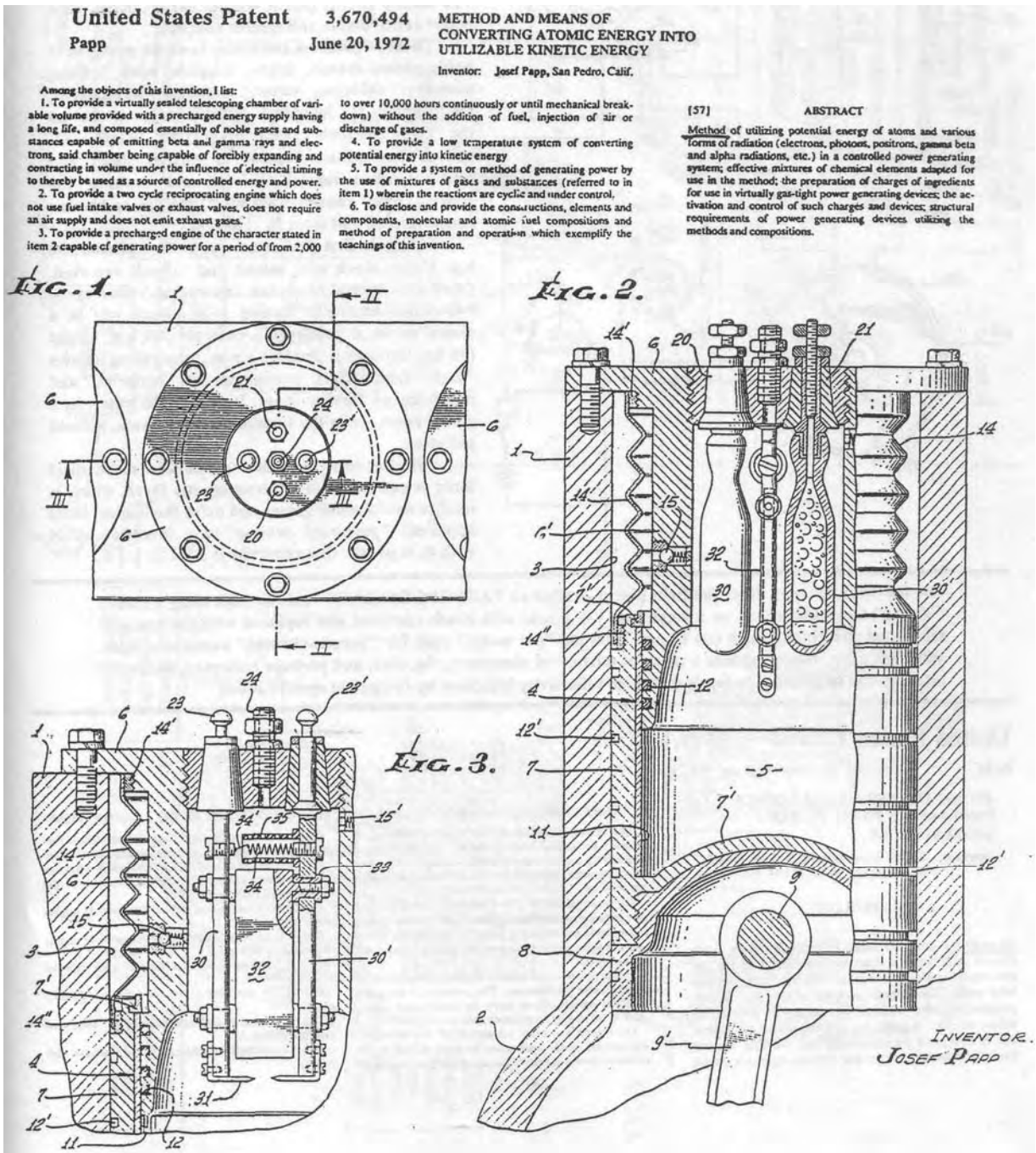


FIG. 6
55
3
17
55
36
36
22
35
33
17
23
31
55
24
25
29
2
36
28
26
34
26
27
31
32
98
94
99
68
99
70
98
94
68
94
80
80
94
84
83
82
86
82
68
109
85
99
116
112
98
80
112
111
FIG. 7
INVENTOR:
©
1993

ALIENS296

APPENDIX "B" - The Papp Patent for the Conversion of Atomic Energy into Utilizable Kinetic Energy (with an excerpt from the Britt Patent based essentially on the same principle):



United States Patent 3,670,494
Papp June 20, 1972

METHOD AND MEANS OF CONVERTING ATOMIC ENERGY INTO UTILIZABLE KINETIC ENERGY

Inventor: Josef Papp, San Pedro, Calif.

Among the objects of this invention, I list:

1. To provide a virtually sealed telescoping chamber of variable volume provided with a precharged energy supply having a long life, and composed essentially of noble gases and substances capable of emitting beta and gamma rays and electrons, said chamber being capable of forcibly expanding and contracting in volume under the influence of electrical timing to thereby be used as a source of controlled energy and power.
2. To provide a two cycle reciprocating engine which does not use fuel intake valves or exhaust valves, does not require an air supply and does not emit exhaust gases.
3. To provide a precharged engine of the character stated in item 2 capable of generating power for a period of from 2,000 to over 10,000 hours continuously or until mechanical breakdown) without the addition of fuel, injection of air or discharge of gases.
4. To provide a low temperature system of converting potential energy into kinetic energy
5. To provide a system or method of generating power by the use of mixtures of gases and substances (referred to in item 1) wherein the reactions are cyclic and under control.
6. To disclose and provide the constructions, elements and components, molecular and atomic fuel compositions and method of preparation and operation which exemplify the teachings of this invention.

[57] ABSTRACT

Method of utilizing potential energy of atoms and various forms of radiation (electrons, photons, positrons, gamma beta and alpha radiations, etc.) in a controlled power generating system; effective mixtures of chemical elements adapted for use in the method; the preparation of charges of ingredients for use in virtually gas-tight power generating devices; the activation and control of such charges and devices; structural requirements of power generating devices utilizing the methods and compositions.

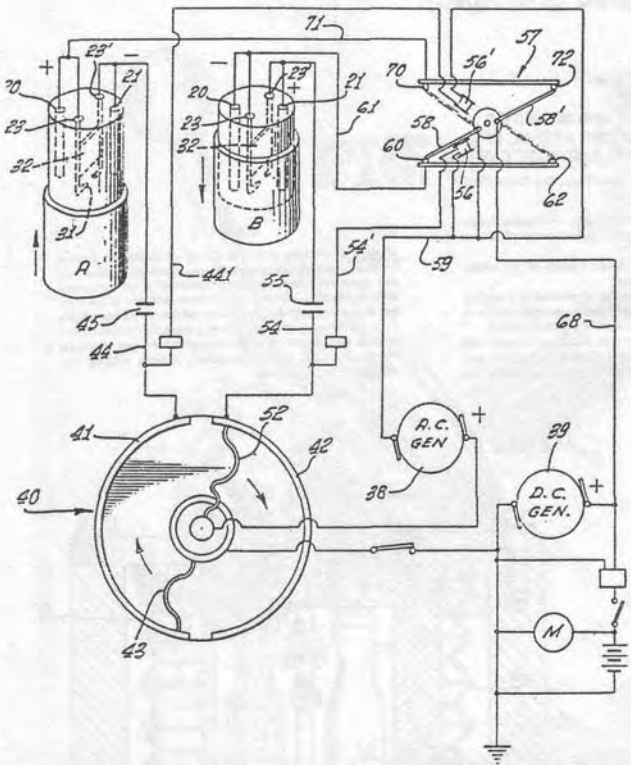
FIG. 1.

FIG. 2.

FIG. 3.

INVENTOR.
JOSEF PAPP

FIG. 4.



These two related patents somehow miraculously slipped through the patent office without national security orders. The first (Papp) patent was unnecessarily complicated, probably because Papp was Hungarian, and worked through an interpreter. The second (Britt) patent was an improvement, with better construction and clearer concept.

These engines use electricity to excite mixtures of noble gasses (xenon, argon, krypton, neon, helium, mercury, chlorine, water, rubidium, phosphorus, etc.), though the inventors' criteria indicates that all the "light elements" below atomic No. 19 are well-suited. The gasses expand in excited states and contract when relaxed, driving and 'sucking' the pistons. After considerable wear, the gasses become contaminated and must be changed.

Papp's first prototype was a four-cylinder, 90 h.p. Volvo block with intake and exhaust removed, fitted with special heads (an "air-cooled, closed cycle, two-stroke engine"). During a 35-minute test in a closed room, it produced a constant 300 h.p. output (75 h.p./cylinder), @ 4,000 r.p.m., generating its own "fuel" (electricity), recharging its batteries, and requiring no further input. It runs underwater, in a closed room, or in the vacuum of outer space, without pollution.

Similar to flying saucer propulsion, mechanical force is converted to electromagnetic force, which is used to excite noble gasses and drive the engine, in an apparent "perpetual motion"-type invention. Deal with it. It proves that relativity is a B I G L I E.

The following excerpts from the Britt patent---called an "AEROPS ENGINE"---can be built using a Chevy "Monza" 6-cylinder block, or a 4-cylinder VW block, with heads removed and replaced with the specially fabricated chambers, which can be cast from the "pot metal" used for "pseudo-chrome" automotive trim. With this alloy, which contains a pleasant mixture of aluminum, tin, zinc, and perhaps antimony, the cavity interiors can be polished to the desired high reflectivity indicated by the patent specifications.

United States Patent 3,977,191

Britt Aug. 31, 1976

ATOMIC EXPANSION REFLEX OPTICS POWER OPTICS POWER SOURCE (AEROPS) ENGINE

Inventor: Robert Gordon Britt, 313 W. Fisher St., Salisbury, N.C. 28144

ABSTRACT

An engine is provided which will greatly reduce atmospheric pollution and noise by providing a sealed system engine power source which has no exhaust nor intake ports. The engine includes a spherical hollow pressure chamber which is provided with a reflecting mirror surface. A noble gas mixture within the chamber is energized by electrodes and work is derived from the expansion of the gas mixture against a piston.

BRIEF OBJECTIVE OF THE INVENTION

This invention relates to the development of an atomic expansion reflex optics power source (AEROPS) engine, having the advantages of greater safety, economy and efficiency over those disclosed in the prior art.

The principal object of this invention is to provide a new engine power technology which will greatly reduce atmospheric pollution and noise, by providing a sealed system engine power source which has no exhaust nor intake ports.

Engine power is provided by expanding the atoms of various noble gas mixtures. The pressure of the gases increases periodically to drive the pistons and crankshaft in the engine to produce safe rotary power.

The objects and other advantages of this invention will become better understood to those skilled in the art when viewed in light of the accompanying drawings.

BRIEF DESCRIPTION OF THE DRAWING VIEWS

Other objects, advantages and features should become apparent from the following disclosure wherein:

FIG. 1 is an elevational view of the hollow spherical pressure chamber assembly, including sources of gas mixtures and electrical supply.

FIG. 2 is an elevational view of the primary engine power stroke.

FIG. 3 is an elevational view of the primary engine compression stroke.

FIG. 4 is a rear elevational view of a six cylinder AEROPS engine.

FIG. 5 is a top view of the six cylinder AEROPS engine.

FIG. 6 is an electrical schematic of the source of medium voltage.

FIG. 7 is an electrical schematic of the source of high voltage.

ALIENS299

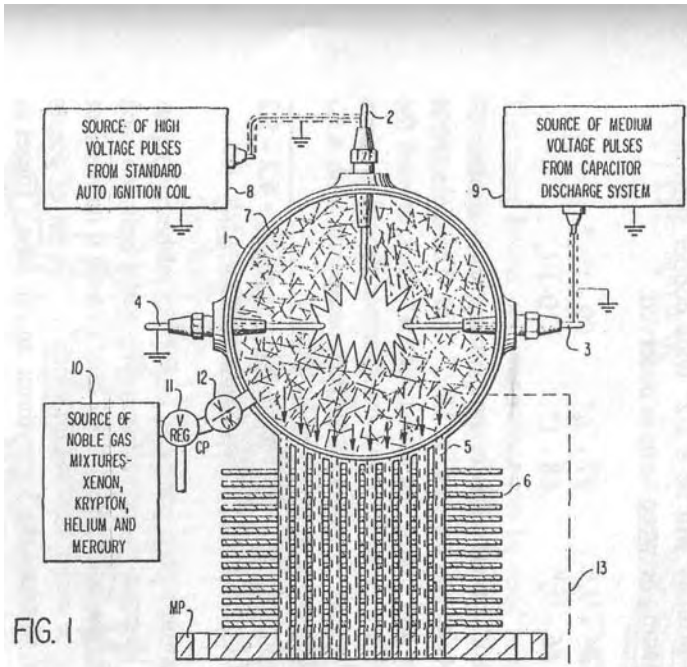


FIG. 1

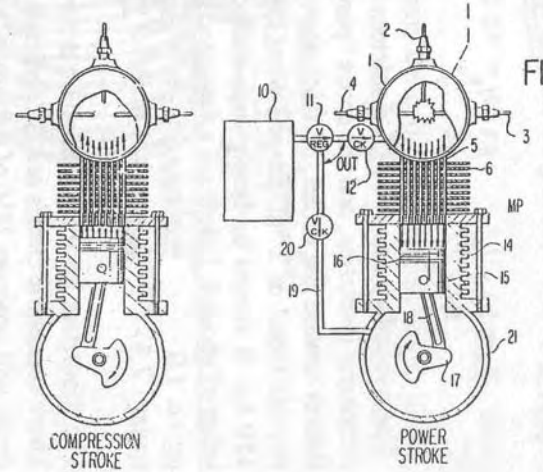


FIG. 3

FIG. 2

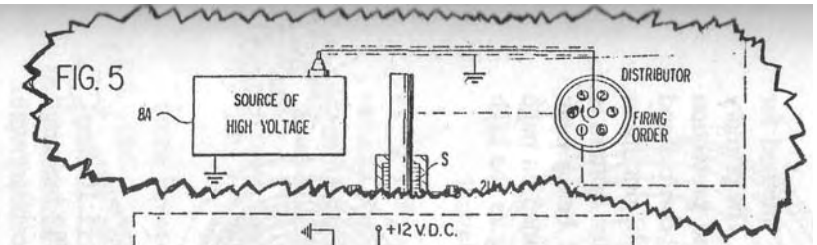


FIG. 5

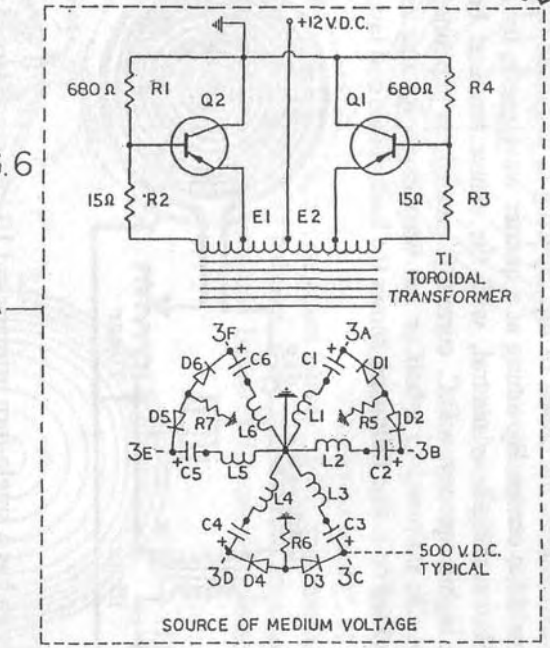


FIG. 6

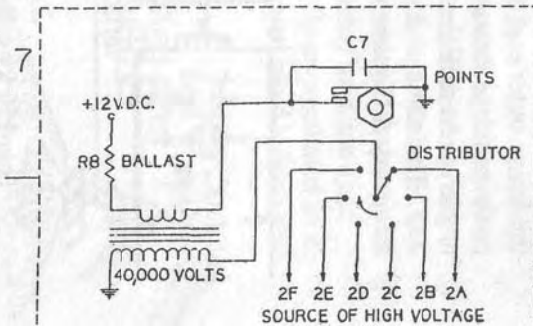
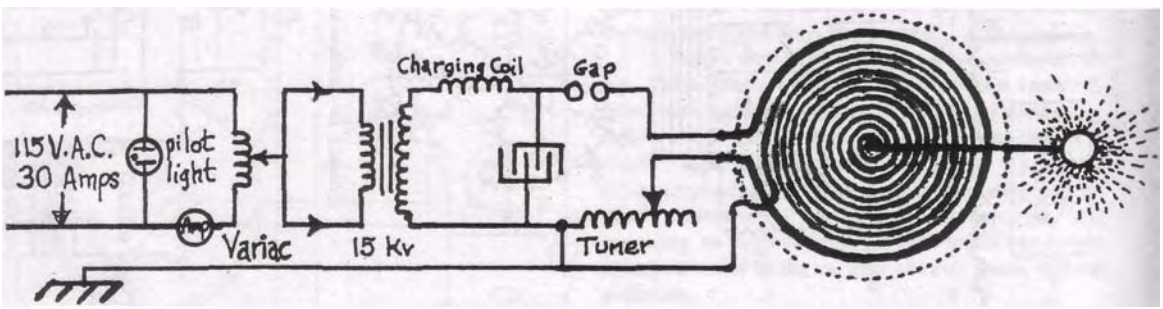


FIG. 7

APPENDIX "C" - Fabrication of Tesla's Single Terminal Coils

Tesla's highest coil development was his "single terminal coil", his "method for obtaining high voltage D.C. current through inductance" (without a rectifier). The primary was placed around the outside of the coil, providing greater inductance and protection from arcs between turns and to the secondary. It was produced in two forms, conical and pancake, with the single terminal at the center or top. Spacing is increased beginning at the lower outer end, toward the center. By tuning at a quarter wavelength, the bottom is peak positive, or at 3/8 wavelength, is neutral, with the center terminal being peak negative. At sufficiently high frequency, a D.C. current is created, as explained on page 216. The same coil can also be tuned to a half or full wavelength for use as the high frequency A.C. ether blocking coil. The following shows the basic Tesla coil layout:



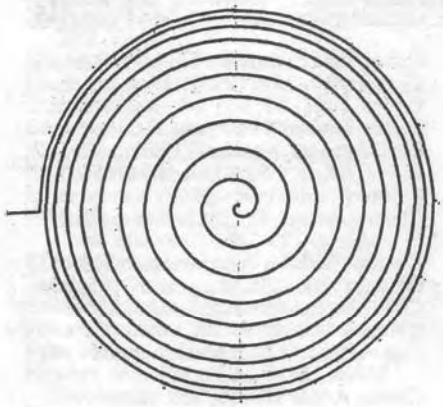
This 150 kv coil design has a single-turn primary and 10-turn secondary (1:10 ratio), with a maximum voltage increase of 15 kv per turn of the secondary. 1/8" increased spacing per turn is sufficient, using a dielectric with a K-value of 4. The secondary wire will be about 1/8" in diameter, and the primary will be a 1/2" wide copper strip about 1/32" thick. The following schedule of spacing between turns is observed:

Turn					
#1 - 1/8"	#3 - 3/8"	#5 - 5/8"	#7 - 7/8"	#9 - 1 1/8"
#2 - 1/4"	#4 - 1/2"	#6 - 3/4"	#8 - 1"	#10-1 1/4"

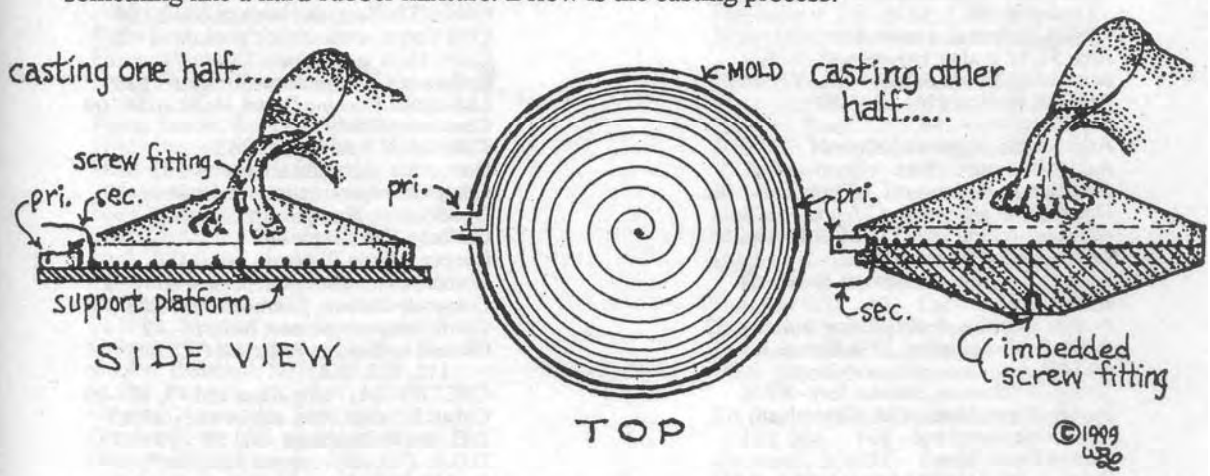
The secondary has a 16 1/4" diameter. 1/2" outside this is the primary, with another 1" peripheral insulation, and the entire "pancake coil capsule" is 19 1/4" O.D. The dielectric is thicker toward the center, 3" thick above and below the center, and 1" thick around the outside (total of 2" at dia. and 6" at center). A 15 kv input transformer should produce 150 kv. It should be firmly cast, excluding air, inside a resin/fiber composite with a K-value of about 4. Below are a few good dielectrics to give you an idea:

air-c. 1.0 neoprene - 4. - 6.7 silicone-3.2-4.7 mica-filled phenolic - 4.2 - 5.2
mylar - 7.3 - 9.3 formica - 3.6 - 6. "fiber" - 5. cellulose acetate-3.1 - 4.5

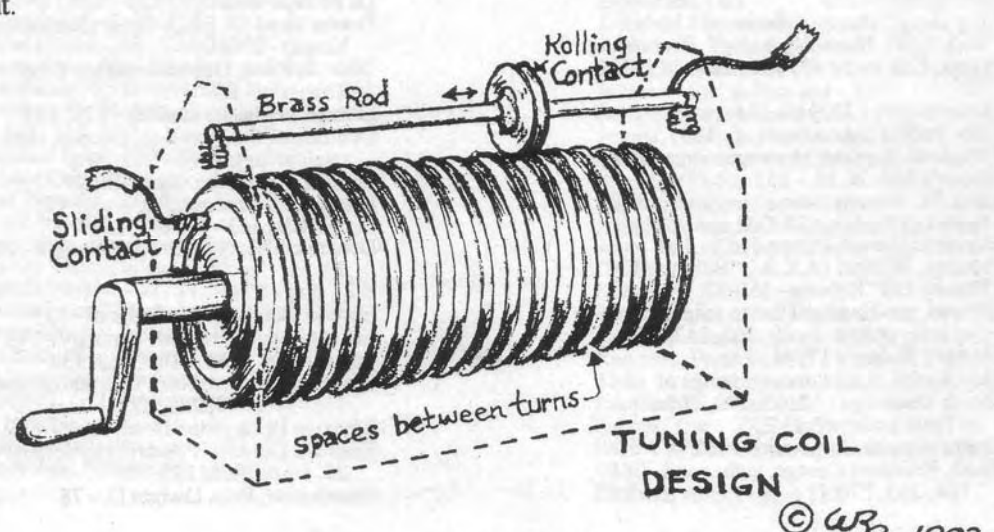
The diameters for the 10 turns are drawn out with a compass, on a piece of heavy paper. These concentric circles are divided into 16 equal radial sections. The spiral between each circle will progress 1/16 of the total for each section, per radial line. I found it convenient to use 32s of an inch, plus percentages (for example, "18.25/32nds"). The set of points produced can be joined by curved lines to produce the logarythmic spiral. Don't forget to allow for the thickness of the wire, compensated for by moving the schedule up a 1/8" thickness from the bottom. The wire thickness is then drawn on the outer side of the spiral



coming out with a 1/8" space at turn #1, and 1.25" space at turn #10. Transfer the spiral to a piece of heavy paper, and temporarily affix the wire. The upper side is cast, then is turned over, the paper completely removed, and the mold used to cast the other side, again taking care to exclude air. Don't whip your dielectric when mixing, which produces unnecessary, troublesome bubbles. There are castable, catalyzed silicone rubbers with high dielectric constants, requiring no vulcanization, made by people like Dow-Corning. Enlarge the spiral which I have drawn to scale, to a diameter of 16.25", on a copy machine (use 11" x 17" paper, doing it in two equal halves). Such coils are usually encapsulated in a vacuum chamber, eliminating bubbles of air, while an electrically-heated mold vulcanizes something like a hard-rubber mixture. Below is the casting process:



The tuner below, and capacitors can be used to tune the coil. The physical length of the secondary wire is about one-quarter of a 1 MHz wavelength, as an approximate starting point.



svalispeaksagain 7:56 pm on September 8, 2022

Tags: Christian (24), dissociation (30), healing (43), Jesuit (10), mind control (69), programming (60), ritual abuse (65), SRA (45), Vatican (10)

Vatican Book Part 11 (final section)

Note: please be aware that this post mentions programming methods, and Christianity

Recontact Programming

The Jesuit Order has difficult recontact programming to break. This is why very few members of this organization attempt to leave. The recontact programming is based upon two main bases:

The use of infant attachment bonds, and the use of extreme (severe) pain and punishment methods should recontact fail. This is in addition to internal and external reprogramming if these first two fail.

Attachment and Loyalty Bonds

As mentioned previously, the Fathers bond the infant very early on, beginning in the womb when the birthmother rejects the fetus and the fetus comes to believe that the Fathers are the only source of love. This contines in infancy, with the infant being left in a completely dark room, and then “rescued” by the primary Father who gives the infant a bottle, among many other scenarios. The infant, over the course of the first year of life, bonds very heavily to their primary Father, and to Satan himself.

The child becomes extremely loyal to the Fathers, and it literally breaks their heart to think of being taken away. Numerous setups are done during early childhood, of the child being “kidnapped” and later “rescued” by the Fathers, and also of the child being taken away by “traitors” who torture and punish the child, who later escapes to the Fathers. These and dozens of other scenarios are used to reinforce the belief that the child can only be loved, and have their emotional needs met, by the Jesuit Fathers.

The Fathers are the only source of love and bonding the child is allowed to have, since throughout

early childhood, all other bonds end up in either betrayal or death. The child literally learns to trust no one other than the Fathers.

Follow

Hell Programming

As the child grows older, the recontact program is tied to the internal hell. Recontacting the Fathers is considered a Prime Directive for the system, and failure to comply results in the belief that the system will descend into hell.

The presentation will have no idea that this is occurring. They will feel restless, driven, or even hyperactive when the program is runnning, or may battle tremendous guilt and depression, without knowing why. The programs run unconsciously, and therefore are difficult to identify until enough healing has occurred that the survivor can work with different brain states inside.

Hell programming has nine levels (much like Dante's inferno). The first three levels will be on one level, the second three on a lower level, with three more at the lowest level, and beneath them all is the abyss (utter darkness). Each level of hell is tied to a prime trauma, as described above.

The first level of hell has individuals chained to poles; demons come and flagellate the victims with whips that have sharp rocks or points attached to them. Since infancy, the young child was taken to "hell" at night to "punish" them for "sins", and so they have extensively internalized this punishment system. The controllers/guardians for this level originally were punished, then learned to punish others, in this same way, including flogging children and adults to death. They will hold the belief that what they are doing is "right" and that sinners "deserve" punishment, until healing comes and the demonic attachments and rights are broken internally.

The second level of hell involves individuals being chained to stakes and burned alive. Charon is the controller/guardian over this level, and as described above, believe that what he is doing is "right" and that sinners "deserve death," until this part comes to Jesus and has healing. The presentation will undergo great grieving as these brutal punishers share their experiences, both as an infant, undergoing punishment, and later, as a punisher.

The third level of hell involves a chamber filled with bees that swarm upon individuals and sting them to death. Karydis is the controller for this level, and will have learned to take small children and adults to "hell" where they are swarmed and stung. The controller will have undergone this experience in infancy, first with painful bee stings; then in early childhood, being given anti-venom before being placed where bees would swarm and sting them. The child will have seen traitors tied to poles and stung to death, and will remember these traumatic memories. These memories are reinforced with virtual reality, which recreates the buzzing and the swarming and stinging.

The fourth level of hell involves rats that come and eat at the parts that are trapped there, tied to poles; or the rats will swarm around the parts and chew.

The fifth level of hell involves bugs that bite those within the chamber.

The other levels of hell include crushing, dropping and being torn apart demonically. The deepest level (just above the core) is the abyss, where utter darkness (the primal fear of abandonment described in infant programming) sits.

In addition to “hell,” leadership in the Jesuit Order is often also chained with what is known as :9 by 9″ programming, or one of its variations, which is layered on top of the hell programming.

7 By 7 Programming

7 by 7 involves seven different types of internal pain being placed in through the use of tesla wave and microbursts, as well as ELF and EHF waves. The child is placed within a machine that reads their brainwave activity, creates a specific brain map, and begins entrainment of the brain (over several sessions lasting from 6 to 10 hours, normally, over a period of months with regular reinforcement over the years).

The machine plays harmonic tones that the child has been taught since infancy to “follow” and enter into different brain wave states. As it does so, in one sequence, the brain is taught to rapidly drop brain wave states from high gamma to low delta/death state in less than a second. This causes extreme pain, and even seizure activity. The drops are entrained in over a period of time, with intervals between drops that can last from 4 to 10 seconds, depending upon the person’s recovery rate and pain tolerance. The individual’s infants are put through this sequence, which creates a “startle” reaction and the resulting infant terror.

Another sequence entrained in is a constant oscillating wave form with high-frequency waves that causes headache, extreme heat, and alternating bursts of pain at the limbic level.

Another sequence uses tesla waves, which cause extreme pain throughout the entire nervous system, in synchronized bursts (the sensation is similar to being stung by bees in every nerve at one time).

Another sequence causes a crescendo and decrescendo pounding within the brain, caused by increased intracranial pressure and heating, due to entrainment where microwave bursts hit the brain stem (through the auditory canal).

Another causes the sensation of a hammer pounding within the brain, at 4 to 6 -second intervals (“Vulcan’s Hammer”).

Another sequence is intermittent death: the heart stops and restarts.

When the individual attempts to leave, and stops first physical and then spiritual contact with the Fathers, these sequences are meant to cause the system to “implode” and cause either death or shattering of all systems. The longer the individual goes without contact, the higher the level of pain: there are seven different sequences, each with levels one through seven of pain (hence, the name, “seven by seven”). At peak, all seven programs are running at level seven, which normally results in the heart stopping, and/or core shattering.

The Jesuits consider this program completely unbreakable, since the suicide and psychosis rate for those who try to break it is extremely high. It takes a lengthy amount of time, safety, and significant support to break this, as well as extensive prayer, since the gradual buildup to core shatter level is meant to force the systems to recontact in order to avoid system death.

Experimental Programming

The Jesuits also engage in extensive experimental programming (Protocol I – V programs), which are used for expendable individuals. Protocol V is the classification for endpoint (physical or

neurological death as the ultimate result) of the programs. They involve different forms of torture, and the use of new technologies to see the effects on individuals.

The West Coast of the United States has one of the largest experimental theta programming labs in the world; the other four are in Beijing,China (where infants are brought to the center by local contacts), in Russia, in the Ukraine and in East Berlin, Germany. There are other smaller centers that also perform experiments and collect data, including many universities and institutes around the world.

Helping the Survivor

Because of the high level of occultic training that Jesuits undergo, they will experience significant resistance at first from inside parts who feel that they underwent large amounts of pain and death in order to receive high status. These parts will resist giving up this identity, which gave meaning to their pain at the time they were programmed during early childhood, since this was the meaning assigned by their abusers to justify the abuse.

Other parts will resist change, or continue to contact, because they truly believe that by doing so, they are preventing the systems from being shattered, or from going to hell (descension) eternally. These beliefs will be held deep within, at the root of all system controllers, and unconsciously and subconsciously. The parts that hold these beliefs must be willing to come out, and examine the truth, and question what they were taught and programmed to believe. Unfortunately, doing so can cause the survivor to experience tremendous pain and internal pressure, not only from internal conflict and demonic, but from the terrible body memories programmed in to occur if the survivor tries to question old beliefs.

7 by 7 is one of the cruelest forms of programming ever invented. Those who undergo it experience intense, continuous pain until their unconscious mind and parts are able to give up all of the beliefs that drive the program, as well as giving up all spiritual attachments to the program. The top system and master controllers will all be tied to it, along with their infants, and all core splits. Parts are taught to beleive that noone can survive trying to heal from this program.

Breaking it is miserable; and the best helps include prayer, emotional support, the use of medications or herbs that slow brain wave activity (since the pain comes from jumps in brainwave activity that are programmed in, or mini-seizures within the pain centers of the brain). The survivor will always battle suicide programming along with the pain, since core despair is also programmed in; they need to be told, and to believe, time and time again that they can break the program and survive.

V. T**he Goals of the Vatican: Alexis Paves the Way**

The ultimate goal of the Vatican is to prepare the world for the advent of the antichrist, and to usher in the New World Order, which is greatly anticipated. To do so, they have created several mass mind control technologies, under the umbrella of Project Alexis.

Project Alexis

Project Alexis was conceived of in the 1940s, and the earliest forms of implementation in the 1950s were very experimental. It has three arms:

• Security;
• Finances,
• Behavior Modification.

Alexis actually means “without law” and the demonic principality which gave the information to the Jesuits on how to create this project is called Alexis (the spirit of lawlessness).

Security

The security branch of Alexis is involved in the identification of and tracking of every individual in the world. This has already been accomplished today by assigning a numerical code (government ID number or social security number) to individuals, and forbidding them to work for money without this identification number linked to a photo ID and fingerprints.

This branch also involves the development of technologies used to track individuals who might try to “disappear” or not participate in the NWO agenda. This includes the ability to identify and track all individuals through their use of phone (GPS), car (GPS) and online technologies (one reason all laptops today have a camera that can actually show images of the person on the computer and an internal GPS).

Collection and collation software has become extremely sophisticated, and can track within seconds the entering in of data associated with an individual. ATM card use is also used for tracking purposes. The monitoring of phone conversations, emails and all electronic/digital communications of individuals considered “security risks” or antithetic to the agenda of the NWO is routine at this point.

There is no privacy in today’s high-tech age, and this is on purpose. Microsoft Windows has background software that automatically collects data on users, integrates with Google and other search engines, and red flags any users with a “high risk” profile. All modern browsers and operating systems (including freeware) do the same. Encryption software does not work for a simple reason: any offered publicly has already had the master key bought by those who ultimately work for the Vatican.

HD television has collation software that also works in the background, and that can record conversations for individuals considered “high risk” and send it forward.

Financial

The financial branch of Alexis has been in effect since the early 1970s, and involves the digitalization of currency, and the campaign to encourage acceptance of first ATM and microcards, and soon, identification chips, for all monetary transactions. This is already nearly in place in Europe (the EEU), and the United States is expected to follow suit soon.

The Vatican founded the World Bank, and it will be the center for finances throughout the world in the future. It already controls currency exchange rates, and helps to determine the rate of inflation in many countries at this time.

Another aim of Alexis is to cause worldwide financial panic, due to severe monetary devaluation, governmental and bank bankruptcy, and extreme inflation. The World Bank will then “step in” to gain control of this financial crisis. It will appear to offer a “solution” to governments and their

populations, when in reality, they will gain control of the worldwide currencies.

Mass Behavioral Modification

Another goal of Alexis is mass behavioral modification, in order to prepare the general public to accept the New World Order and its leader. This mass modification was originally conceived of in the 1940s, and crude forms were implemented in the 1950s with the advent of television watching by the general population. Basically, it consists of subliminal images that are displayed at a rate of .03 microseconds, at a rate of 1200 per minute.

The images contain graphics of sexual acts, violence, bestiality, demonic rituals, as well as acts of hatred and brutality directed towards Jews and Christians. Other graphics espouse the coming world leader, and tell people to look forward to his coming. The main image in the graphics is that of Alexis, a composite woman formed by a team of behavioural scientists who studied what images are most pleasing to the most races. Alexis also has a voice, which is slowly being introduced in the background of many television and video shows. When she is finally openly revealed, she will be the "voice of the New World Order" and will appear to be familiar and loved by most, since she has been subliminally fed to the masses for years.

A hologram of Alexis will be used on television to calm people down, and tell them what to do when the NWO is revealed. Her voice tones were again developed by a team of behaviourists, who studied what type of voice appealed to the greatest number of people in all races and ages. Tapes (computerized) of the results have been made over the years. Alexis has already been giving subliminal and background commands to people for many years; they are just not consciously aware of this fact.

Alexis has been fed to the public via television, movies, video games, computer games and the Internet. If an individual watches any of these for more than a second, they will be automatically fed the subliminals. The subliminals tell people that "watching TV is relaxing," "I need to go online, I enjoy it" and other messages to encourage time in these modes, and thus increase the programming. Even early childhood learning games, used in schools, have these subliminals embedded.

Themes of anarchy, rebellion, and violence are embedded in the Alexis modification. A feeling of impending doom and destruction (unless the world turns to the leader who will come and "save" them) is also embedded.

The Hollywood industry was created in order to also fulfill this agenda, and all major studios are funded by members of occultist groups. The top stars are all mind controlled, and the industry has the directive to encourage through the movies made, the acceptance of the NWO/occultist agenda.

VI**. The Current State of the World (2017)**

At this time, the New World Order is in place; it is simply not open. The detention camps and military are already in place, with detailed plans for each section of the world for the coming takeover. The New World Order is not a "future" event, but instead a present reality that is simply waiting for the signal to move into place.

Each country of the world, and continent, has Jesuit military commanders and generals assigned, who will give orders to their well-trained and disciplined armies (these armies train at night at

most large military installations and in desert and remote regions throughout the world). The major occultic societies of the eastern and western world all have troops and generals ready to command their area of the nations the individuals are located in.

Crowd control technologies (based on tesla and EHF waves) are already in place. If resistance occurs, these will be used; they can cause extreme pain, unconsciousness, or death within minutes.

Once the takeover is complete, resisters are to be placed inside designated detention camps for either “rehabilitation” or death if resistance is final. Leaders within the Vatican and other occultic armies will assume teaching positions, to help implement the NWO directives within the different nations, and to explain the policies and what they mean.

These liasion ambassadors are fluent in every language, and thus are well-equipped to gain the cooperation of the governments (which are already heavily infiltrated and expected to give in without any resistance). Paramilitary and other groups that might provide resistance have been carefully profiled and infiltrated for years.

The one nation that has tried to resist this infiltration is Israel which is why they engender special hostility. To say that the Vatican and its arms have tried to infiltrate the Mossad and Israeli government over the past 50 years would be an understatement; yet to date, the success rate has only been moderate compared to other nations.

The Vatican has entered into numerous highly secret agreements with the Arab nations over the years, in its desire to destroy Israel. For instance, the U.S. financial families were instructed by the Vatican to pour money into engineering and other resources years ago into developing the oil reserves of the Arab nations. Why? Because the Arabs, like the Vatican, hate Israel, and the Vatican wanted them to modernize and be able to fight the Israelis; plus, oil gives them a method of blackmailing governments which have become highly dependent upon petroleum prices as an index for inflation rates.

Oil really is “black gold” and currencies that are no longer backed by gold standards often float based upon current oil prices. Governments now measure their wealth in large part on their current petroleum reserves, needed to fuel industry, transportation and heating, among other uses. The country that cannot purchase oil will lose its industry; and alternative energy forms (especially renewable ones) have been blackballed for years, since the Vatican WANTS the world dependent upon Arabian oil supplies; this allows them to control policies and encourage anti-Israeli initiatives.

Oil funds have also purchased large amounts of arms for the Arab nations over the years. This was one reason for the influx of foreign geologists into the Sudan region years ago: to quickly develop the oil reserves in order to fund anti-Israeli wars. The Vatican secretly despises the Arabian nations, but they work with them because of their deep hatred for the Jewish race.

The Vatican is also extremely anti-Christian, regardless of the pronouncements of the newest (Jesuit) pope. At its heart, the Vatican is satanic, serves Satan, and wishes to destroy Christianity. While the presenters in its armies may be Christian, the programmed parts will all be loyal to Satan and the antichrist until healing occurs. The anti-christian agenda of the Vatican has been seeded worldwide, with increasing numbers of laws designed to make biblical, authentic Christianity illegal. Within the next 15 years, it will be illegal (a “hate crime”) to be a Christian,

and many believers will be faced with possible imprisonment for their faith.

The best possible preparation for the unveiling of the new world order is a strong faith in and obedience to the Lord. The Lord has promised that He, not satan, is in control of world history. While the Vatican can attempt to implement its strategies, it will not win. Revelations makes it clear who the true "winner" in the battle for the minds and wills of mankind is: the Lord of Hosts, who will usher in His millenial kingdom.

There is no mind control technology on earth, that can erase the deep down knowledge of the truth. People can be lied to from conception on, but once the truth is known, most will embrace that truth. This is the basis of healing: replacing the lies with truth, and choosing to walk away from lies.

It is important that the Christian Church "wakes up" to the late hour that we are in. As mentioned previously, the NWO is not a theory, but is nearly ready to come forward publicly. This is a time for Christians to be on their knees, and ask the Lord for HIS strategy for dealing with these things, and for the Christian Churches and their members to be willing to help the flood of survivors who will be leaving occultic societies such as the Jesuits during this time of repentance before judgment.

If you help survivors, pray that others will be raised who have a similar heart; that eyes will be opened to the truth and the need. Pray that the Church will no longer turn away from or disbelieve/discredit survivors, but instead will war with them to break the power of the kingdom of darkness. This is one of the best possible ways of putting into practical action the heart of Yeshua for mankind: to deliver those who are oppressed, and set free those who are captive.

Currrently, the Church is slumbering, and mainstream Christianity seems woefully unaware of the actual spiritual condition of our world today. We truly seem to be acting out the prediction of Yeshua, that in the last days, people will be "eating and drinking and giving away in marriage" and completely unaware that the forces of darkness are at work to draw mankind away from our only hope: Yeshua. My prayer is that the church will awaken to the truth, and take an active part in fighting against satan and his forces. This is intercession of the highest form, to work actively for the Kingdom of God and watch the enemy and his strongholds overthrown in the lives of individuals formerly chained to the occult.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

Accessing Part 2: How to Prevent It
June 19, 2017
In "mind control"

Exposing the Vatican: Part 5
October 7, 2021
In "healing"

book part 4
September 13, 2021
In "healing"

Amie Martineau 2:25 am on September 9, 2022

Is every Jesuit programmer? And how many children can one programmer have? It was very revealing what you said about the top Hollywood stars being mind controlled that's crazy to me… Just goes to show you how important idols are to people… I was wondering your thoughts on the Queen's passing today just out of curiosity?

★ Like

svalispeaksagain 4:44 pm on September 9, 2022

Amie:
All Jesuits have the ability to program others, as in any other large, organized international occult group. Programmers will often work with groups of children of various ages; this will vary with the programmer and their abilities, and the perceived needs of the order. A programmer may simultaneously be working with several infants, several toddlers, and a dozen young children of various ages, as well as several teens and adults. On the Queen: she was part of the British Illuminati, and I pray that it is true that she became a believer at some point. I knew her when I was younger, and she did things that were part of her role in the occult then, so I have mixed feelings on hearing about her passing

★ Like

shurtle 6:26 pm on September 9, 2022

How do we pray to stop this? Do we pray against lawlessness? What can we do to stop this control over us? Get rid of all electronics? Unfortunately we can't do that now. Everything is electronic mostly to accomplish anything. Please advise.

★ Like

svalispeaksagain 11:21 pm on September 9, 2022

I believe we need to pray for worldwide revival and that God will change men's hearts. Ultimately history is in God's hands not Satan's and we can pray that God will raise up fearless overcomes and awaken the sleeping church to take authority

★ Like

Alphonse 3:19 am on September 10, 2022

Svali please keep praying for me.

★ Like

svalispeaksagain 5:06 pm on September 10, 2022

I will be praying for you

★ Like

Amie Martineau 9:18 pm on September 14, 2022

Can you elaborate at all about your time with Queen Elizabeth? And from what I've read all members of Royal families mind controlled? And also when it came out in the MSN about Queen Elizabeth being very acquainted with Jeffrey Epstein we certainly can't think that she did not know what was going on especially since her son was in the middle of it… Do you think the Maxwell/Epstein story goes a lot deeper? I'm surprised that the MSN would expose something like that… But maybe it's just the games that they play within the firm?

★ Like

fredurez29 11:31 am on September 23, 2022

Hi,

Do you know why every women in show business, celebrities, politics and models are transgenders and if they are under MK Ultra too ?

And if a fake female agent programmed marry to a normal politic, will their children be programmed too ?

For instance Marine Le Pen in France : she is a trans like her mother while her father is a Resistant against new world order and free massonery, he has been candidate 4 or 5 times for presidency. So I wonder if his daughter has been created in an occult centre, since her mother cannot have baby because she is a male

I guess you know about this subject, that every female stars have a male skull, so it means they have been transformed by an organisation

Thank you very much

★ Liked by 1 person

fredurez29 6:32 pm on September 23, 2022

Do the occult orders make transgenders programmed too ? Like models, singers, actresses

★ Like

svalispeaksagain 12:11 am on September 25, 2022

This is a topic that takes time to address and I plan to do so in a future post. The quick response is that there can be numerous causes of transgenderism ranging from genetic engineering for some to social pressure for others, to other causes.

★ Liked by 1 person

fredurez29 3:53 am on September 25, 2022

AWESOME, I can't wait to read you, this subject is so much important.
I also want to know if you have ever heard about such a CUBE computer that these groups could use for their technology, if yes, where is it ?
This is central and their weak point. Indeed their NWO will be essentially based on 5G, 6G, and crypto-currency, such as it's already done in China.
The Antichrist will rule the world through this technology.
That's why we are looking for their damned CUBE.

★ Like

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← Vatican book part 10

The Real Anthony Fauci →

Create a free website or blog at WordPress.com.

svalispeaksagain 8:28 pm on June 11, 2022

Tags: Jesuit (10), mind control (69), ritual abuse (65), SRA (45)

Vatican book part 10

There are many, many examples of such secrecy setups, from being buried alive for a day, and the child being told that they will be buried forever if they ever tell (the child is also forced to watch the burial of a child who "told" and several days later help exhume the corpse, as a visual reminder of what can happen); to being buried in a casket filled with bugs, a rotten corpse, or other objects.

The child may be placed in a box with bees that sting them (after going through several weeks of anti-venom therapy previously) as a reminder that "memories hurt."

They are also forced to view the deaths of "traitors" who betrayed the fathers, including crucifixions (the class is marched every three hours past the three crosses for three days to watch the effect on the dying men); and the torture of others who remembered and "told."

Alice in Wonderland Programming

By age five, the child will be taken to a large estate in France for Alice in Wonderland programming. This is an elaborate setup, and occurs over the period of a week. The child enters through rooms that reinforce previous training ("control the children: is recorded and replayed, with pictures of dead children displayed on the walls of the room; mirrors, "remember the flowers" and other triggers). They then enter a "backward world" where everything is backwards (much like the third dimension; this prepares the child for this travel). Alice (representing the presentation main controller who is heavily demonized) guides the child through backwards houses, where people walk and talk backwards (a common cause of childhood dyslexia is the confusion this creates).

They are then taken to a setup street where things are not backwards, but "crooked" or off slightly, which is even more disorienting. The child must walk with Alice through houses where things are insanely wrong, where people talk nonsense, and the floors and roofs may be upside down, to teach the child not to trust reality.

Follow

Alice then brings the child at last to a place where they see the white rabbit, and fol[illegible] "down the hole" (representing amnesia) to a room where the presentation stays beh[illegible] watching a movie (screen memories); the back parts then take the child's body through the rest of the setup. They enter a garden with animated/demonic flowers that at first talk kindly to the child, but later turn on the child and attack them. Wasps come and sting the child, and the large caterpillar (the guardian of the garden) tells the child what to do, and how to escape.

The child then enters a huge maze created from hedges. Soon, they are pursued by the "Jabberwocky" (a demonic presence), and must rely upon their theta skills to run and escape, and even leave the body and fly away. The white rabbit and Alice lead the child to safety, but at times will try to "trick" the child until the child learns to rely on themself instead of these capricious demonic "helpers."

The child sleeps outdoors, trying to get out of the hedge, and runs across the queen of hearts and her court playing croquet (with the severed heads of human children used as the balls). The queen becomes very interested in using the child's head (the child is constantly called "Alice" throughout the setup, to represent the presentations, since Alice in Wonderland is ultimately presentation programming to remain amnesic and rely on demonic help to do so).

The demonic "Alice" and cheshire cat help "rescue" the child, who then goes through the "valley of the shadow of death." In the middle is a cottage; it is now nightime, and the weary child knocks at the door, to be greeted by a kindly woman. The child is fed, sleeps, and is warned to avoid the Jabberwocky, which seeks to kill the child.

During the night, the kindly woman gets up. The child is awake, vomiting from the effects of a mild poison they were given in the food. The woman calls in her familiars (wolves) and tries to kill the child, who cries out for help to "Alice" and the "Cheshire Cat" to rescue her. A mage also comes and helps rescue the child, who continues the journey, meeting other characters. Finally, the child ends up at the palace of the Queen of Hearts, who demands a sacrifice (the child was already told that the last child to complete the Alice scenarios will be her sacrifice). The children who live watch the final child come in and be sacrificed in a ritual. This reminds them to never be slow or tardy when coming to a "party" (ritual). The "parties" in the Alice in Wonderland books are always referring to rituals.

Crazy Alice Programming

A subset of the Alice in Wonderland (presenter) programming is the "Crazy Alice" programming, which is meant to warn the Alice controller over the presentation to never allow memories to come up, or they will be labled "insane" and extreme abuse will occur. This is often the root of insanity fears when a person first starts remembering their past.

In this setup (also in France), the child (now called "Alice") is taken to a mental institution where the inmates are chained, and who rant, rave and curse at her. She is left there for days, with her only food being rancid water and rotten cabbage. The inmates hurl feces at her, verbally abuse her, and the custodians sexually abuse her while she is chained to the wall because of her "insanity" (remembering).

Because she is "sick", and "mentally ill" Alice is taken regularly down to the basement for "treatment" which consists of electroshocks, drowning, and being held over a rat pit filled with hungry rats that are allowed to bite her feet and ankles. The child is told repeatedly that

"remembering" or "telling" will have her labeled "crazy" and that she will be taken to the institution, or one similar, for "treatment." This is part of developing the presenter amnesia and vows to never remember (or seek treatment).

Wizard of Oz Programming

This programming is also often done first during the preschool years, when the child can most easily internalize the program. The dark core ("Dorothy") is taken to another dimension, with her goal always to return to the Emerald City (representing ascension and the celestial paradise). The programming represents travel through the dimensions, the dangers involved, and the rewards for "ascending."

The goal of Wizard of Oz programming is to remind the child that they must always contact, or return home; and to create great fear of remembering (or, they will be placed in a coma and never wake up, unlike Dorothy in Oz, who woke up from "death" only after "returning home."

Fantasia Programming

Walt Disney was an avowed Illuminist, and his goal when creating Disney productions was to introduce the general public to the occult, especially young children, and to reinforce programming in those raised in the occult.

For instance, animals often "talk" in Disney films, and people can turn into animals, which are actually mage spells. The images are often dark and demonic in the animated movies, and have become increasingly so in recent years.

Disney's favorite film was Fantasia, in which he took classical music that was used to program young children with, and developed highly occultic themes in the cartoons that accompany it. To the untrained eye, Fantasia seems a bit odd; but the individual in the occult understands that the themes of a mage in training ("the sorceror's assistant) who must turn to his more powerful mentor for help, and the Greek pantheon (in the famous rain sequence), mythology and even the depiction of an occultic ritual and then the famous strains of ave maria (a Jesuit programming tune) end the film.

Fantasia is blatant occultic imagery throughout, and was used extensively in the 1950s through 1970s to program individuals with. It was superseded in recent years by movies such as the Matrix, which depicts high-level programming, Labyrinth, and others.

Helping the Survivor

Because of the early and repeated childhood betrayals, and the fact that the true host and core and core splits will not present early in therapy, the survivor will be very untrusting, and unable to bond normally with, anyone who tries to help them. The most common presentation is "detached", since the parts that can attach are hidden very deeply within and are reserved for the Jesuit Fathers only.

While the survivor will not at first present as "needy", the attachment needs are still there, and will drive recontact programming unless the survivor can learn to form healthy, safe attachments. This will be the challenge for both the survivor, and their helpers, since the wounded, angry parts within will often test those they do bond with again and again, once they feel safe within the

relationship.

Theta and spiritual attacks are difficult to bear for helpers, but the survivor will be completely unaware that they are occurring. Gently asking, or even confronting, the survivor with what is happening can help. They will need to learn to pray, and ask inside, to find out what is happening with the parts that they are not co-conscious with yet.

Once co-consciousness is established, and the parts come to Christ and the demonic is renounced, the warfare will usually diminish, much to the relief of the survivor and their helpers.

It will take all of the emotional resources the survivor has, as well as outside support, and a strong walk with Yeshua, to face the original attachment pains, that will go throughout early childhood, infancy and prenatally. This is when praying in the spirit, scripture study, journaling and talking with safe support can help tremendously as the survivor grieves the past, and begins to build a life based upon a new foundation.

Often, Jesuit survivors have never known, or have had very limited contact with, anyone outside of the cult setting until they make the choice to break free. They are literally surrounded from conception on by members of the Order, with their life's work, friendships, host families and marriages all mapped out early on. Their close friends will all be members; their spouses are always members, since they arrange the marriages; and their families are also Jesuits or members of one of the 12 societies.

The jobs they have held will often be at "cult" corporations, with bosses and peers all members. Nothing in the survivor's environment was "left to chance" which is why breaking free is truly a miracle. The person who helps the survivor will often be their first non-Jesuit friend, and it will take time for them to learn to interact in "normal" or non-cult ways.

They will grieve tremendously at giving up their relationships with friends, family, mentors and the Fathers, in spite of the abuse, since this is the only "love" they have ever experienced, and this "love" (trauma bonding) allowed them to psychologically survive childhood. As terrible as the Jesuit Fathers were, they were the only consistent emotional bonds the child was allowed, and so the bonding is strong indeed, as well as the desire to "protect" these loved ones through either loyalty, or amnesia, or both.

The survivor who fears facing their past is one who fears betraying those they love; they are often "held hostage" through the group's control of or threatening to harm someone they love, whether a child, a mentee, a cult twin, or another relationship. To break free, the survivor must be shown, and truly believe, that only the LORD can rescue and keep safe these loved ones.

They must also be willing to count the cost of getting out, which is very high: no contact at all with former family, friends or loved ones, since they will all have been programmed to access the survivor. Few are willing to pay this price for freedom, and it is often the unconscious (unknown) love bonds that draw the survivor back in.

It can help the survivor to understand the true cost of discipleship:

Luke 14:26
"If anyone comes to Me and does not hate his father and mother, wife and children, brothers and sisters, yes, and his own life also, he cannot be My disciple.

Even more helpful is the LORD's promise of blessing to those that do choose to pay this price:
Matt. 19:29
And everyone who has left houses or brothers or sisters or father or mother or wife or children or lands, for My name's sake, shall receive a hundredfold, and inherit eternal life
It can help the survivor who grieves the loss of every love relationship they have ever known, to understand that by coming into God's kingdom, they have actually gained a whole new, safe family:
Mark 3:34, 35
And He looked around in a circle at those who sat about Him, and said, "Here are My mother and My brothers. For whoever does the will of God is My brother and My sister and mother."
It is a blessing to know that Yeshua calls the survivor who gets out His brother or sister; and to know that they inherit eternal life.

H. Middle Childhood: Ages 5 – 11

Mage Training

All Jesuits undergo mage training. Mages are considered the "top" of the occultic hierarchy, over witches, wizards and other levels of occultism. They are adept scholars, and study the ancient Babylonian manuscripts (which describe the first contacts between man and the "gods" or "ascended masters" which are actually demonic entities), as well as the Egyptian, Roman and druidic writings.

The oldest manuscripts are considered the most reliable. A young mage is forced to memorize the oral histories and spells contained in these texts. They learn to use books that demonically "come alive" and show scenes when certain spells are cast (much more entertaining than a normal picture book to a 5-year-old). With the help of a mentor, they learn the original names of the animals, in order to call them to themselves, practicing standing in the woods and calling rabbits, deer, birds and other normally shy creatures.

They learn to take the form of an animal, often a bird, or a predator such as a wolf. While this sounds impossible, mages do these things demonically. The focus of mage craft is power and control. The young mage learns to battle in power battles, with the help of demonic forces. While young, their spiritual shielding appears red; then they progress to green, then blue, and the most powerful mages have a bright blue-white emanation, signifyiing extreme demonic 'protection." The child travels to the fourth dimension, which is filled with ziggurats, and engages in power battles at first beside their mentor (who protects them from being killed by malicious older mages), and then, as they grow in power, they learn to battle alone.

Mages often "pick battles" with other mages upon meeting them, to determine who is "stronger." There is a constant positioning for power among these occultists, who have extreme pride.

The mages also learn spells for creating a light; and later, spells and curses to cause illness, death, and the cloak of invisibility, among others. Early in their training, the Fathers help the young (3-year-old) mage conduct rituals and sacrifices; later in their training, the mage does their own, or orders others to conduct them, in order to gain power. The greater the sacrifice,the greater the power, according to mage thinking.

The highest level of mage is the ascended master. This is a mage who has undergone death themselves many times, willingly, in order to ascend to the highest dimension and "learn" from

the other ascended masters. This is considered the highest level attainable in the occult world.

Coming of Age Ceremony

When a Jesuit is 12 years old, they undergo their coming of age ceremony, at which time they become a full Jesuit. This ceremony is held at the Vatican for the top classes, and is done every year, as new classes "graduate." The inner courts of the Vatican are cleared, and golden poles are erected throughout it. The public is not allowed near the Vatican for the week before or after this ceremony, and since there is always a "no fly" rule for aircraft at all times, the ceremony is highly secretive.

The first part involves going to Satan's Throne at the heart of the Vatican, giving a sacrifice on the black alter there, descending to Satan's throne in the spiritual realm, and being given a name by Satan himself.

A few days later, the other, more horrific ceremony occurs. Top leadership from all 12 occultic societies that serve the Vatican travel to Rome, and sit in the small coliseum in a designated area under their banner. There are banners representing the Order of the Knights Templar, The Order of the Knights of Malta, Opus Dei, Magnificat, The Order of the Rosy Cross, Trinity, the Illuminati, and the other occultic societies that are actually arms of the Vatican around the world. It is considered a great honor to be invited to this ceremony.

The Jesuit class comes out. On 1000 golden poles in the arena are tied infants, toddlers and young children, and one by one, the Jesuit trainees must slaughter them. Around the arena are golden bowls which they use to catch the blood from each victim, which is then offered to Satan. There are also golden bowls filled with wine, which the Jesuit trainees drink from when they are thirsty or emotionally overcome by the horror of what they are doing.

At the end of this ritual (called "the slaughter of the innocents") the trainee is considered an ascended master and a full Jesuit father. From then on, they are referred to as "Father" by others, and they take off the brown robe of the acolyte and don the black robe of the full Jesuit. Due to the terrible nature of the ritual, some falter and cannot continue; they are killed by the other trainees as instructed. Most of these new Fathers undergo a period of collapse after the ceremony; they are never the same again.

This ritual is the culmination of a lifetime of training in how to slaughter others. By this time, the new Jesuit Father has slaughtered literally thousands over the course of their childhood, including assassinations and rituals participated in. The design of this type of bloodguiltiness is to create a type of insanity and the desire to never remember, which feeds the dissociation. The individual will experience a huge amount of guilt, and believe that God can never forgive them for the innocent lives they took.

Helping the Survivor

The ritual described above creates a demonic stronghold; the new Jesuit truly believes they are unforgiveable by the Christian God (after all, they took the lives of innocents), and so they embrace Satan himself, who welcomes them in this deed and even gives them honor and a high position in his army for doing it.

It takes considerable time, prayer and replacing these lies with scripture and truth to overcome

the lifelong effects of participating in this ceremony. The Jesuit leaving the Order will need to hear, and believe, again and again that the Lord can forgive them for this bloodshed.
This is when sharing scriptures about forgiveness can be a lifeline, since the survivor may initially feel deep shame, and even suicidal, when the memory first comes. They may fear they are going insane (from the weight of the guilt), and will need significant emotional support to process this trauma.

This is not the time to emotionally abandon the survivor. If the therapist is going out of town, there needs to be accountability and prayer support present, and reassurance that they are forgiven (they will ask over and over again, “Can God really forgive THIS?” They will need to seek this answer from the Lord, and hear it from Him to truly believe the truth, but initially may need to hear that they are forgiven from a Christian who can represent the love of Jesus to them in the midst of their guilt and pain.

Over time, they will come to an understanding that they are forgiven, and will feel immense gratitude. It takes patience, but the Lord is faithful to show His mercy for those that have survived this type of trauma – the trauma of inflicting death upon thousands.

Computer Training

The Vatican has trained its operatives since the early 1960s in the use of computers, and the equipment they have available is 50 years more advanced than that used by the general public. They have classrooms within the Vatican that the children go to for training in the different areas that they will be active in. This includes extensive training in all computer languages, and “hacker” training in order to get past firewalls and access information.

They are also trainined in bookkeeping, accounting, and business systems, since the Vatican especially likes to keep itself informed about the financial operations of the organizations it works with, and who work for it. The child will spend many hours on a computer, and will learn every method of downloading and sending on information that is requested.

Political Training

By age 8, the child will undergo political and diplomacy training. The child will accompany their mentor to dinners hosted by powerful political figures, and they will later be asked information, such as “who was the most important person at the dinner? How do you tell? What was the most important information shared during the dinner? Why?”

The child is taught to be charming, and to engage in conversation individuals from any walk of life; and how to gather information without the person they are conversing with being aware of this fact. They are also taught how to “listen in” on other conversations while engaged in coversation themselves.

They may undergo specialized training for placement in a politically prominent position; or they may learn how to engage politically prominent individuals, get close to them, and fulfill their mission regarding them.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

Interview
February 14, 2022
In "healing"

Book available on Amazon
April 25, 2018
In "mind control"

Vatican Book Part 9
March 21, 2022
In "healing"

Lita 8:51 am on June 12, 2022

I pray for all those poor children.xxxMay GOD make those suffer who done this to these children.

★ Like

Rita 5:36 pm on June 12, 2022

How many are in a typical graduating class of Mages? How long does the graduation ritual/ceremony typically take to complete?

Thanks for all that you share. Everywhere I go on the internet (in search of how to help survivors) EVERYONE is SO grateful that you share what you know. You are a wonderful, faithful servant of the Lamb of God. Also, I'm always relieved when you post something new, something that sounds like it's authentically you.

Regarding the issues of clones, and twinning, have you written anything about that? If not, would you consider it? I see influencers every day that no longer look like they did in the past, sound like the did in the past, or speak the same lines of reasoning and truth that they did in the past. I understand that all opposition is controlled but at the same time it seems like some people go off script, or off programming. Jordan Peterson is an example. He was a brilliant speaker, teaching independent critical thinking, and individual responsibility vs the hive mind. I don't think that was helping the New Age higher ups bring all people into submission. Peterson was truly helping millions of people, especially young people. Something has happened to him. I know he had a breakdown– but did he? Or did he go in and get cloned/ or tuned up? Perhaps this issue is unrelated to helping survivors, and is more oriented towards helping the general population that is so- so- so deceived. Perhaps I shouldn't be bring it up, but if anyone would know– you would.

I understand if you edit out any of this, or delete it completely. I appreciate you no matter your response, or non-response.

Thanks again for all you do. Much Love always.

★ Like

svalispeaksagain 10:44 pm on June 16, 2022

Hi, the mage training is only one of several subjects that children in the group I was in studied; they also studied many other things as well over the years. The training takes years. The graduation ceremony is over several days, since it also includes the other areas studied being celebrated within the group. A typical cohort is 12 in a class, with several classes graduating each year.
I have discussed clones and twins under the genetic labs, where they create clones and twins (same thing, basically, since it creates an infant with identical DNA). In the group I was in, we actually had triplet sets of one girl and two boys, or two girls and one boy. This allows the triplets to "fill in" for one another in their various presentations, and the bonds are very intense between them.

★ Like

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← Vatican Book Part 9

Vatican Book Part 11 (final section) →

Blog at WordPress.com.

svalispeaksagain 5:28 pm on March 21, 2022

Tags: Israel, mind control (69), ritual abuse (65), SRA (45), Vatican (10)

Vatican Book Part 9

Anti-Semitic Training

The Vatican hates the Jewish race, and trains its agents to hate it as well. The earliest anti-semitic training includes the young toddler being beaten or raped by “Jews” (these are setups to create a deep unconscious hatred). Later, prisoner and guard scenarios, and re-enactment of nazi death camps are done. Throughout these portrayals, being a guard is “good” and comes with privileges and lack of abuse (but the guards must be abusers), while being a prisoner, or “Jew” is considered “bad” and the signal to abuse the prisoner ferociously. Those who show mercy in any form are tortured themselves, and forced to play the role of Jew.

Anti-Israeli Intelligence

The Vatican also plays a very active role in anti-Israeli intelligence, which will be discussed later. During infancy, a cover identity for these agents must be created, and they are placed for a period of time in a kibbutz, as an “orphan.” The orphan will always have a distant family member who at some point takes responsibility for the child (such as an aunt). But there will be a record of the child being placed in the kibbutz for official purposes.

The child’s “aunt” or “relative” will be a programmer who helps the child learn Israeli culture and to assimilate. They will travel frequently out of the country during the child’s early years, due to the relative’s role as a “consultant” on business travels. In reality, the child will be taken back to the monastery between these visits to Israel which are for the sole purpose of creating their later cover identity as a Sabra.

Sexual Training

The infant raised by the Jesuits never knows life without sexual abuse. The Fathers are pedophiles of the worst kind, and they continuously abuse the infants in their care, in part to create spiritual ties, but other times simply to fulfill their lusts.

Follow

During toddlerhood, the child will undergo specific sexual training, by specialists in this area, to help them "work" the parties of the wealthy and depraved. These very wealthy individuals have specialized sexual preferences, and prefer toddlers and young child who can perform them, including ménage a trois or quatre, and other acts. Because infants and young children are often "snuffed out" at these parties, the child is given a large, easily recognizable tattoo to save their life (the sign basically is a "do not kill" one, that lets the wealthy partiers know that the child belongs to a powerful patron who is simply lending him or her out for the night).

During these drunken orgies, the child is also quietly gathering information that the wealthy and powerful in Europe or other countries carelessly let drop during the party. Few members of the wealthiest families in the world realize that the children serving their sexual needs at these parties are actually trained agents whose real goal is to discover weaknesses that can be used by the Vatican to gain control of them; or to discover the real thoughts and motives of those who already serve them.

Helping the Survivor

Early in therapy, the survivor will appear to have no problem with prayer, talking to the Lord, and quickly hearing His voice; they may even appear to have strong prophetic gifts since these were heavily utilized by the cult (in divination and oracle roles). But as they begin to realize and undo the punisher and anti-Christian programming, they will begin to understand the amount of deception and listening to false spirits that they did, all the while believing they were praying to the Lord.

This can cause deep spiritual anguish, and the survivor may even fear praying for a period, seeking to address their prayers only to the "correct" deity and fearing they are instead talking to the "wrong one." They may address this problem by using a pre-defined prayer, or a different name than they have for "God" and "Jesus" internally (the prayer in the Prayer Warrior book by CARE is a good one to help with this).

Eventually, as they recover the memories and undo the programming, they will understand that the LORD hears their heart's cry to address only Him. They may for a period be less able to "hear" from Him than formerly, since they are choosing to give up all demonic and false feeds into their mind, and to only hear from the LORD. This is where discipleship by a mature Christian can help enormously. The more experienced Christian can help the survivor learn to discern what is truly the Lord's voice, and what is programming or demonic.

This is why it is so important for the survivor to be well-grounded in scripture, and to be willing to search the scriptures for the truth, as well as discuss what falsehoods they were taught. Internal parts may come out initially very hostile towards God or Jesus, but this is simply because their last experience with who they believe they are was very traumatic, or they felt abandoned by God. Part of healing is working through the setups, and understanding that the God of the Bible is not at all like the actors and false representations the survivor was shown.

The survivor's back parts will all have undergone extensive setups and "proofs" that God is "weaker" than Satan, so asking them initially to put their full trust in the LORD may seem foolish (or suicidal) to them. Gradually, with trust and the survivor watching the authority of true Christianity (and often testing it spiritually themselves through warfare), these parts will come to acknowledge that the LORD truly is the one true God, and will be willing to give up their demonic attachments and "helpers" (which are actually demonic parasites).

Once the survivor's parts stop calling on the demonic, the LORD can actually allow them to experience the blessings of obedience as outlined in **Deuteronomy 28:1-11.**

"Now it shall come to pass, if you diligently obey the voice of the Lord your God, to observe carefully all His commandments which I command you today, that the Lord your God will set you high above all nations of the earth. [2] And all these blessings shall come upon you and overtake you, because you obey the voice of the Lord your God:

[3] "Blessed *shall* you *be* in the city, and blessed *shall* you *be* in the country.

[4] "Blessed *shall be* the fruit of your body, the produce of your ground and the increase of your herds, the increase of your cattle and the offspring of your flocks.

[5] "Blessed *shall be* your basket and your kneading bowl.

[6] "Blessed *shall* you *be* when you come in, and blessed *shall* you *be* when you go out.

[7] "The Lord will cause your enemies who rise against you to be defeated before your face; they shall come out against you one way and flee before you seven ways.

[8] "The Lord will command the blessing on you in your storehouses and in all to which you set your hand, and He will bless you in the land which the Lord your God is giving you.

[9] "The Lord will establish you as a holy people to Himself, just as He has sworn to you, if you keep the commandments of the Lord your God and walk in His ways. [10] Then all peoples of the earth shall see that you are called by the name of the Lord, and they shall be afraid of you. [11] And the Lord will grant you plenty of goods, in the fruit of your body, in the increase of your livestock, and in the produce of your ground, in the land of which the Lord swore to your fathers to give you."

These are wonderful blessings indeed, and as the survivor chooses to stop calling on the demonic, and breaks the rights given away to such beings in early childhood, they will begin to experience them to an increasing degree. Often, at first, the survivor will feel upset: they have given up everything to break free, they have left family, friends, loved ones, and are undergoing great suffering. They will wonder why; what they may not be aware of is that there may be spiritual parts that they are not yet co-conscious with who may be actually cursing or sabotaging the survivor and their helpers.

As time passes, if the survivor does not recontact and stays safe, these parts will stop doing their old jobs once they realize that they have a better option: to put their faith in Yeshua, and come under His protection and blessing.

G. Early Childhood Training (Ages 3 to 6)

Theta Training

By age three, a child raised by the Jesuits will have significant theta skills. The Jesuit Fathers will often "spiritually rape" the children by demonic help, causing the child to feel raped even though they were not physically touched (and the Father will feel great lust or pleasure in the practice).

In order to defend themselves, the child will also learn these skills and to "rape" others spiritually.

The children also learn to influence the thoughts of others, and it is not unusual to have a group of older children cause younger children to blurt out inappropriate remarks at meal times, using these skills (causing great laughter at the expense of the victimized child).

The children must also learn to defend themselves from the attacks of their peers; this is encouraged, since it causes the children to utilize their theta capabilities and strengthen them.

Leadership Training

By this time, certain children will also be placed as "class leaders" over their class of 12. This leadership is a difficult position to hold, since the other children, who will have been taught to be very competitive, will attempt to take over leadership by harming or even attempting to kill the class leader. Class leaders spend many wakeful nights due to their knowledge of the disgruntled feelings of the others they lead.

Presentation Training

At age three, the child will also be placed within several host families around the world, since the Jesuits are an international society. The child may grow up with anywhere from four to seven families in different countries, and will spend several weeks, or even a month or two each year, with each family during the next 20 years. School photos are taken, and a cover identity created in the countries which they anticipate the child will be working for them as they grow older into adulthood. The families will be given photos of the child (or a look-alike) in infancy for photo albums.

These host families will have programming to prevent the child and the host parents from bonding with each other, since **the child must always maintain their primary bond with the Jesuit fathers. The true host and core will always only be allowed to bond with the Jesuits.**

An example of host families could be one in Germany, one in France, one in Amsterdam, one in the United States, and even one in Israel. Since the Jesuits hate Israel, and a focus of their intelligence efforts is infiltration of Israeli national security, they will attempt as often as possible to place a child within Israel with a trainer who acts as their "aunt" or "uncle." The child rotates between these host families and **thus learns to rotate between presentations based upon their current living situation**. The child has already learned to never speak any language but that of the host family (on pain of severe punishment), and has already undergone numerous experiences prior to going to a host family to teach them to not bond with anyone except the fathers.

Detachment Training

For example, at age two, the child will be allowed to interact with and bond with a loving woman, who acts as a mother surrogate to the child who is hungry for nurturing by a woman. After several weeks of loving interactions, at some point, the woman will turn around and begin severely abusing the child, such as by pushing them down stairs, sexually abusing them, or other abuse, laughing at the child's display of pain at the emotional betrayal. The child must learn the lesson to never trust anyone, or to bond with anyone other than the fathers, or they will be killed.

The host families will also be programmed to reject the child, and/or abuse the child, to ensure that the child does not create a bond that is too strong. **The primary Jesuit bond will always be**

an unconscious one, that the Christian and cult cover presentations are completely amnesic to: a primary Jesuit Father whom they love greatly, since this is the only person they were allowed to love during their early childhood.

MI6 Training

Once the host presentations are in place, the child (by age 3 ½) will undergo training at MI6. MI6 has a special area (known as "Colonel Green's House" after Colonel Green, the founder of MI6) where young children undergo specialized assassin and military training. Again, the child goes there with their class, and is assigned a number. Instead of being called by name, they will be called "42" or a similar number during training and learn to respond to this.

MI6 reserves the Green House for the Jesuits at specific times, and the trainers during this time are all Jesuit trainers that work for MI6. The child will perfect previous skills in using a gun; their delta computer system will be put into place, and their ability to classify intelligence, and store it based upon its classification will be perfected during this time. The ability to use a photographic visual and auditory memory, and download to handlers information obtained while on a mission, is also perfected.

They will perfect basic skills of all operatives, such as following a target, dropping a tail, and blending in inconsicuously in a group.

The terrible punishments used at MI6 (such as the room with walls that move inwards, or the multi-faceted crystal ball in a room with mirrors used when the child is drugged, or the specialized computer system that is used for delta installation) are all used on the child. By the time the child has completed the 3-month training course (which is updated as they grow older), they will have a firm base in military special operations. By age 12, the child will have developed enough skillsets that they will be classified as a military weapon.

Delta Computer Training

Delta training is extensive enough to give it special mention. During delta training, the child will be hooked up to a computer, which it will be taught to emulate while in delta state. The computer speaks with a synthetic, very robotic voice, and the child will do the same. The delta training will encompass high and low delta states, and the child will be taught to classify all cognitive thoughts and experiences according to security levels. Low security levels can be retained as conscious thought; any information classified as mid to high security will be "access denied" to conscious presentation thought, and stored within the deeper delta states of the brain.

The delta computer system will have a ground zero state, with delta controllers and introjected trainers "manning" the computer systems. At ground zero, primary traumas and death state programming are installed, to prevent dismantling of the computer system and to keep the child invested in protecting high-security information.

Theta Controller Training

As the child reaches late preschool and early school age, they will undergo Galileo training (training in remote viewing, mind reading and thought influencing), in order to provide the Jesuits with access to buildings and conversations they would otherwise be unable to reach. During a mission, a child will be asked, for example, to go into an office building, and "read"

classified or private documents during the night hours and then share what they have read with their handlers.

The child will also have the ability to introject themselves and images or thoughts into other people's dream states. In fact, part of theta assassin training is learning to have the subject dream of their own death. The head theta controller (such as Nemesis) will oversee the others, including Phobos (fear); Thantos (death) and Chaos (insanity). Theta training is aimed at teaching the child to induce each of these states in others using demonic powers developed.

Theta Assassin Training

Jesuits very frequently induce death in those that cross them. If a child is sent on a mission, they will have sexual relations with the "mark." At a later time (often days later), the child will be sent bac spiritually with a mentor back to the mark, to cause their death while sleeping. This will often begin with a terrifying dream of the individual's death, and many have literally died of fright due to these terrible dreams.

When the Black Pope is "retired" he is actually surrounded by a group of Jesuits, trained in this way, who kill him using theta powers. The new Black Pope always participates in this. Jesuit Fathers who are removed from a position due to betrayal (such as embezzling funds) will also be "retired" in this way.

The Black Pope in Rome has a theta guard composed of Jesuits who have completed their theta training (these guards can range in age from 12 years old to 32). The three guards sit in front of his office, as a warning to any intruders. They and other theta guards stationed throughout the Vatican give immediate notice if an outsider without authorization has entered the Vatican. This includes occultic practitioners who "fly" past the Vatican; these individuals are hunted down in the spirit by the theta guards, and first warned, and later even killed, for trespassing. In the occultic realm, the Vatican is considered a true "no fly" zone for those who travel spiritually.

The Swiss Guard is composed of young Jesuits who have completed their military and theta training, and act as an additional layer of protection.

The newer generations of thetas have highly developed "kill" training in the spiritual realm developed from the first weeks of life in the womb on, and are often mentored by groups of very skilled theta trainers to prevent the children from turning on the trainers and killing them. These newer thetas have poorly developed presentations, and must often live very protected lives away from the public eye.

Secrecy/Amnesia Training

Some of the most important training the preschooler undergoes is secrecy training. The child has bonded heavily to and wants to protect the Jesuit fathers, and so they are told: "If you betray us, we could be killed. The only way to not betray us is to not remember." The child **willingly** agrees to amnesia, in order to protect the people they love most.

In other secrecy setups, a child will complete a setup "mission" and later is asked if they remembered what happened. If the child answers "Yes" a gun is placed to their head, and they are told that if they remember, the Father must kill them. They are asked again if they remember (presenters are asked); until the child is either completely amnesic, or is killed (the Jesuits do not

allow children who have any memory traces to live; the gun threat is very real).

Another setup is "remember the flowers": the child is taken to a garden at the monastery where he/she has spent times chatting with their favorite Father in the past. There is a water pool in the middle of the garden, and during this setup, it is filled with corpses of children the same age as the young child (ages 2 or 3). The Father cuts a flower, gives it to the child and tells the child to "remember the flowers" (i.e. the dead children who remembered and told others).

There are many, many examples of such secrecy setups, from being buried alive for a day, and the child being told that they will be buried forever if they ever tell (the child is also forced to watch the burial of a child who "told" and several days later help exhume the corpse, as a visual reminder of what can happen); to being buried in a casket filled with bugs, a rotten corpse, or other objects.

The child may be placed in a box with bees that sting them (after going through several weeks of anti-venom therapy previously) as a reminder that "memories hurt."

They are also forced to view the deaths of "traitors" who betrayed the fathers, including crucifixions (the class is marched every three hours past the three crosses for three days to watch the effect on the dying men); and the torture of others who remembered and "told."

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

III. How are the Jesuits financed?
August 30, 2021
In "mind control"

Vatican Book Part 11 (final section)
September 8, 2022
In "healing"

Vatican Book Part 1
August 17, 2021
In "healing"

Pingback: Vatican Book Part 9 – flashyflasch

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← Interview

Vatican book part 10 →

Create a free website or blog at WordPress.com.

svalispeaksagain 7:14 pm on December 23, 2021

Tags: mind control (69), programming (60), ritual abuse (65), Vatican (10)

Book Part 8

Prometheus

Under Vulcan is Prometheus, the main white system (presentations) controller punisher. His punishments include fire, burning, and intense pain, depending upon the traumas the person has undergone. During the early years, the Jesuits will incorporate primary punishment traumas that include:

· Flagellation with a whip that has attached sharp rocks and razors

· Burning at a stake

· Having feet and legs chewed on by rats

· Being stung by a swarm of angry bees (the child is given anti-venom before and after to prevent death)

· Infants being dropped, and startled into a mechanical panic reaction

· Being attacked by birds and wolves

· Demonic attacks

· Rapes with steel instruments

· Shocks throughout the body

· Death and near-death experiences

· Paralysis and being tortured while unable to move

· Drowning and smothering

Follow

There are others; these are just a few representative traumas. The death experience can be accessed and used to make the individual believe that they are dying as a result of disobedience; the heart may even stop beating for intervals that range from skipped beats to no beat for up to a minute. Breathing may also stop when the individual attempts to break core level punishment programming, since the ultimate punishment is physical death, and this is deliberately installed by the Jesuit Fathers as a "fail safe" if all other protocols fail.

Saturn

Saturn will be the primary reprogramming system, and is responsible for reprogramming the systems nightly with the traumas described above. Horrific reprogramming traumas will be instilled, first physically and later using virtual reality. Small core-level infants will be dropped, pounded, shocked, raped, burned, cut, eaten on by rats, blinded by needles, suffocated and otherwise traumatized during the reprogramming.

Jesuit systems reprogram constantly, with the reprogramming sequences changing every two hours throughout the day. This ensures that all systems are reprogrammed daily.

E. Jesuit Master Controllers

The primary master controllers for a Jesuit system will reflect the primary spiritual relationships in the child's life.

Althea (the Tree of Life)

These will include the "unholy trinity" of the Father (Satan), the Son (the antichrist and the beast) and the Spirit (Althea, the tree of life). The Fathers worship all three. In fact, the Arbor de Vitae monastery just north of Rome (the primary Jesuit monastery) is believed to be the dwelling place of Althea, the tree of life. This wicked creature lives in the basement of the monastery, and the young children (and adults) will often hear her moaning at night to be fed. And they do feed her, at regular intervals, with sacrifices of every human variety.

The Jesuit children are taught from infancy to participate in these rituals; as infants, the Fathers place their hands over a baby's, and teach them to make the sacrifice. As the child gets older, they must take a more active role, or suffer severe punishment by Althea (which appears at times like a huge willow whose branches "whip" the child terribly).

No Jesuit child ever wants to be called down for a spiritual whipping of this manner, and so they quickly learn how to feed the tree very efficiently. After a ritual, the tree will be quiet for days or weeks, but will always begin moaning again to be fed. The child grows up knowing that in order for there to be peace, they must give this entity what it asks for. The child will have been dedicated to Althea, will have a representation of her in their system, and must dismantle it, kick out the spiritual entity, and heal the human part.

Helping the Survivor

When the tree of life is pulled out, the three roots (white, black and silver gray) must also be rooted out, since these represent early infant demonic traumas used in installing the roots of the tree of life and the q'ballah internally. This takes extensive prayer, seeking the Lord, and asking the Holy Spirit to help the survivor overcome the fear of uprooting these demonic strongholds.

The tree of life will often have grown to a large tree with 1,000 points of life, each representing a life taken (including those of infants), and the demonic that entered as a result, during the installation of the tree. These lives must be grieved for; the murders repented of, and forgiveness received, to break the hold of the tree of life on the survivvor's mind.

Some survivors will also have a mirror images of the tree of life, or a "tree of death" internally, that again is based upon the ritual murder of young infants, with the roots attached to the heart of the survivor (they are wrapped around the heart, and the survivor may believe that they will die if the tree is taken out).

The survivor will need to realize that the Lord is able to undo even this type of programming; can overcome the fear of uprooting the demonic. It can help the survivor if they are reminded that the fear they feel is the fear that the demonic feels at losing its "home" inside, and that they will actually feel more peace once the tree is rooted out. They can pray and ask the Lord to uproot it for them; this may be seen visually inside as Jesus reaching in and pulling it out, or as an increased peace as the rituals are repented of, and the person exercises authority.

The relief may be dramatic, or occur over several weeks. But the survivor will have more internal peace and healing once they choose to get rid of this voracious entity, and allow the Holy Spirit to fill them instead.

The Beast

The Beast has a room and a lair in the Vatican dedicated to him. This room supposedly dates from early Roman times, when sacrifices were conducted in the original cave located there that the Vatican was built over. This angry and vindictive spirit makes its presence known, and is eagerly sought out by the Fathers, since they believe he gives great power over enemies. The young child will be placed during the second year of life in a dark, cave-like lair underneath the altar in the Beast's room. They will spend 24 hours in this lair, where the Beast visits with the child, makes suggestions, and eventually has the child give in to its requests (to kill another child put in with them).

This is extremely traumatizing to the young child, who feels intense guilt. The child will have internalized the Beast (see the above discussion on programming methods used). This internal Beast only knows and understands killing and destroying, and spiritual warfare and deliverance must be done to free the human part trapped by the spiritual part. The Beast also gives energy to the punishment systems described previously, and will demand absolute obedience to it and the Pantheon, until the individual learns their authority in Yeshua, and is able to break free.

Satan

Many times, it can take years of dedicated work to go beneath the tree and beast layers, and reach the true system master controller: Satan. From pre-birth and birth dedication, this is the being the Jesuits truly serve, in both his incarnations: as satan (cruel, vicious, demanding, destructive and lying) and Theo (kind, benevolent, manipulative, charming). The child will have been bonded to both, as described previously.

Satan's Throne

During the toddler years, at times the child will be physically placed on satan's throne. When

supplicants crawl up the hall on ground glass, or nails, or hot rocks, satan will be sitting on the throne next to the child. He will ask the child what kind of judgment should be made; or what price should be paid for a request, and the child will answer. If satan is pleased with the answer, he and the child will simultaneously make the pronouncement. If the child is too kind-hearted, they will be punished severely until they learn the types of judgment that are acceptable.

This internalizes the satan identity for the core master controller, since the adults treat the child on satan's throne as if he/she were satan himself, in every way. The child is actually temporarily possessed, in that part, by satan during the ceremonies and judgments. The evil behavior convinces the survivor that he/she is evil and anchors the belief in the part that they are actually satan.

Helping the survivor

In later years, the adult will have to overcome very difficult memories of the lives taken or asked for when in that role, and the cruel decisions made. They will need to repent of these deeds, and ask the Lord for forgiveness (which He offers freely). It can help to remind the survivor that the Lord knew all about their past, even when they didn't; that He is not surprised or repulsed by them or their past. When they came to Jesus, He knew all about each act they committed, and forgave them.

They will also need emotional support to process the pain of these memories, and to be treated as loveable, in spite of the horrific acts that they committed. This is a challenge, since many Christians want to "turn away" from those with a past such as this. But the survivor is looking to their therapist or support person to demonstrate the love of Christ to systems that may have no idea of what true Christianity is.

Once they "get it" and realize they are forgiven, these parts will quickly give up their old jobs and choose freedom, if they believe they have the physical safety to support healing.

Demonic Chess

The Jesuit Fathers are accomplished "chess masters." The term comes from the original, demonic origin of chess, which was first used by the ancient Babylonians, then the Egyptians, then passed down through the centuries. The original form of chess is considered an important part of mage training.

During the game, the young child is taught to first control the easier, white pieces, which are made of stone. During the game, the pieces come demonically alive, and they will try to turn on and attack the child. At first, the toddler needs the help of their spiritual mentor (the Father) to control the pieces and to prevent being bitten and wounded terribly. As the child gets older, and stronger in the occult, they are eventually able to demonically control and move the pieces on the board. They also learn to move and control the much more difficult black pieces in the same manner.

The winner of the game is allowed to ask the board for the answer to a question. If white wins, the answer will be written in black on the king's square; if black wins, the answer is written in shining silver on the black king's square. The monarchs of Europe often played this form of chess in order to get answers as to which battle strategy would be best to use, or to get "inside" information on their enemies. A true "chess master" is actually an ascended master who is able to win frequently at this form of chess.

The occultic form of chess is one reason why there is a chessboard in the Alice in Wonderland books; the game is actually based on a demonic game being played.

Torture Training

The Jesuits are considered the "best" (or, worst would be a better adjective) torturers in the world. They were the ones who conducted the Inquisition (Torquemada was an infamous "interrogator") and they refined the art of torture throughout the centuries. All Jesuits undergo training from infancy on in how to torture and interrogate others.

The lower levels of all Jesuit monasteries, and the Vatican, contain rooms that are literal dungeons, with torture instruments that range from medieval (such as racks, water wheels – a favorite of the Fathers), pincers, and iron maidens, as well as every variety of whip (including those with small stones and razors attached), to more modern equipment.

The Jesuits are infamous for their ability to keep individuals they wish to make examples of alive for weeks while undergoing torture such as having the skin peeled off and reattached; having digits removed, blinding the victim with hot pokers, needles or other instruments; doing "dental work" without anesthesia; electroshock, paralysis and suffocation, burning digits and working inwards, and other methods. They have very sophisticated medical equipment on hand, and will insert I.V.s and use other methods to prevent dehydration; and will give a variety of medications to either enhance and prolong pain, or to resuscitate the victim.

The toddler is forced to learn to do all of these things, and others. If they hesitate or refuse, the toddler is tortured in the same way they were asked to torture another, until under great pain, they finally agree. The victims they learn on are often homeless adults at first, or traitors; the child is taught that these tortures are what happen to those who betray the Order, or try to leave it.

A favorite form of torture at the monasteries is actual crucifixions; the "traitors" are nailed to crosses, and slowly suffocate and dehydrate over a period of three to four days. The Jesuit classes are marched by at intervals to watch the result; the individuals always lose their bodily control during the first day, and their minds by the second. It is a terrible sight to see the incoherent screams and begging for mercy by the last day or two, and it makes an unforgettable impression on the young Jesuits in training. They rapidly decide that being a "traitor" is something that they never want to experience.

The toddler is at first awkward with knives, but during early childhood, with instruction by the Jesuit Fathers, they become quite skilled at using a knife for torture and/or slaughter. Important rituals are "practiced" ahead of time to ensure that the children are all able to fulfill their roles without hesitation and perform perfectly. The slightest error is not tolerated in these settings.

F. Anti-Christian Programming

The Jesuit Fathers create innumerable setups to ensure that the young child will learn to hate and fear the real Jesus of Christianity. These setups can include the following:

· The child runs away when very young, because the gates to the monastery are "miraculously" left open. Eager to escape their torture and abuse, they run down the road. There is a house to the right, and in front is a kindly, smiling figure in a white robe who introduces himself as "Jesus." He

invites the child in for a meal and “safety” from the “bad Fathers.” The child accepts the invitation and once inside the house, is locked in and terribly sexually abused and tortured for several days. The child finally “finds” an opportunity to escape and is found by a Father as they run back to the monastery, which is better than what they experienced in the “Mansion with many rooms” that the false “Jesus” lives in.

· When a bit older, the child may be taken to a monastery near the coast of Ireland, where there are numerous caves. While there, they meet a shepherd in a white robe with a flock of sheep; the shepherd has a staff, and introduces himself to the child as Jesus. Others with him are the disciples. “Jesus” ties the child to himself with a rope, and takes the child into different caves, where sexual abuse occurs. The false Jesus and disciples also practice bestiality, torture the child, hit the child with the shepherd’s staff, all the while reciting scriptures about the “Good shepherd and His sheep,” “Let the little children come unto me” (when sexual abuse occurs), “My sheep hear my voice,” (the child is beaten), and other shepherd scriptures, from the “rod and staff comfort me,” to “entering the gate.”

· Theta, or dark spiritual parts, are taught that “Jesus smells.” At some point, the child is taken to the shore of the ocean, where there is a boat filled with very rotten fish. A false “Jesus” who smells like the fish, and his “disciples” grab the child and take them retching out onto the water in the boat, declaring that they are “fishers of men” and will make the child one as well. In the ocean is a rotting corpse which they “fish out.” The memory of the smell will make these parts of the child feel ill for days, and they come to equate Jesus and Christians with this smell. When they come out, they cannot come near the Christian presenters without smelling this foul smell, until the memory is worked through.

· Numerous “Witch Trials” are set up starting during the toddler years, when spiritual parts are brought before a jury of “Christians” who condemn them for witchcraft, and consign them to death by burning at the stake. A Jesuit Father “rescues” the young witch or mage from “death” and the part is left with a deep hatred for Christians.

· Spiritual parts go before a false representation of “God” on his “throne” where they are judged and sent to “hell”. Again, this reinforces hatred for the Christian God in the darker spiritual parts. In these scenarios, “satan” will come and rescue the child from “hell.”

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

Working with internal pantheons
August 28, 2018
In "healing"

Why Getting Memories Back Can Be Difficult
August 19, 2018
In "healing"

Book Part 7
November 18, 2021
In "healing"

Amie Martineau 4:09 am on December 27, 2021

Since you yourself were a Jesuit for a time then you probably have seen Althea the tree? And when talking about the beast on the throne, isn't satan a spirit only? you talk as if anyone could just walk into this room and see Satan sitting on the throne… Are these illusions that the children are seeing? this is pretty insane for me to believe… Can we not have a first hand account from you yourself who was in fact a Jesuit? And every jesuit who is an actual Jesuit has undergone this kind of programming/training? I'm trying to understand and I'm trying to not disbelieve you but a tree in some old churches basement that gets daily sacrifices to eat… Who people have heard moaning… Yet has never been talked about or discovered is very hard to believe… And I guess I don't understand the need for all this graphic detail in programming when 99% of the population has never even and will never even undergo something such as this… What is the point in all this over the top detail when you've never even detailed your own childhood abuse and when I say detail I mean extreme detail you have not gone into any of that in anything that you have ever written… Brice Taylor a.k.a. Susan Ford has Cathy Phillips went into great detail about her abuse when she was a child… I just feel like you've written about this for so long and you say you are a born-again Christian so why wouldn't you start writing about Jesus and the love he has and the promise he has because I feel like writing these things about the illuminati just distracts, confuses and takes away from the real reason mankind is on this earth.. I just feel like you have a written and rewritten the same things over and over again and I also feel like you don't have a lot of time left on this earth so what difference does it make? why not spread the gospel instead of spreading things that a lot of people will never believe anyway? I feel like you don't want to back(or have been silent by your choice) other survivors who have written books.. you may have mentioned survivors in articles that you've written but I feel you never back any of them or give a so-called "shout out' in believing anything these other survivors have said… Now maybe your training and your programming was different but when I wrote you an email a year or so ago telling you that I discovered this "svali is a fraud" website(with quite an abundance of information) you didn't want to defend anything or prove anything and you may not think you need to but some people might and you have put yourself out there for so long some of us may think you owe a little bit of that defending to us… And every time you write something new on your blog it's never never never about the goodness and the truth and the love of Jesus Christ I mean I would think you would WANT to give him a little bit more credit because of where you are today because if it wasn't for him you wouldn't be where you are today according to you? Yet you never speak of him and we are not to be ashamed not that I'm saying you are ashamed but we're to talk of him encourage one another through the gospel and be the salt of the earth which I feel like you have not been doing at all… You have expressed your faith but that's it and I'm becoming profoundly disillusioned and heartbroken from you because every now and then when I go to your blog I would just like to see something positive and

uplifting about the Lord who saved your life but it's nothing but torture and programming and bullshit and some stupid tree that's alive in some old town Rome church basement I'm sorry and please forgive me for my harsh criticism but I just think in this day and age we are to be witnessing to the lost souls of this world not rehashing accounts of torture and mind control constantly because that I feel takes away from the importance of who God is and the importance of what our job is as born-again Christian to witness to the lost souls because in the end it's not gonna matter about some tree in the basement that's evil

★ Like

restitsa 8:14 am on January 22, 2022

Trigger Warning! Many Mk Ultra victims come to Russia to their deaths because Russia openly ruled by satanists. Please share this warning — many people believe their corrupted media and come there and be killed.

https://livemanaworldwide.org/the-imagination-podcast-victoria-mortis-the-truth-about-russia/

★ Like

Rita 1:29 pm on January 24, 2022

Svali dearest. Please know that you are much loved. With all my heart I know you are much loved. I know this because I know I am much loved too. I know I did nothing to earn or deserve that love. It is the mercy and grace of almighty God that brings us out of darkness and into the light. THANK YOU for sharing what you share. It will help people like me, help others. The battle is for the soul. Truth and light are our shield and buckler. THANK YOU for sharing your truth. God loves when we share the truth– He blesses this. Stay safe my beloved sister. ~Rita

★ Like

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← Book Part 7 Interview →

Blog at WordPress.com.

svalispeaksagain 10:20 pm on November 18, 2021

Tags: dissociation (30), Jesuit (10), mind control (69), programming (60), ritual abuse (65), SRA (45), Vatican (10)

Book Part 7

Trigger warning: this post contains graphic descriptions of programming and methods

Assassin Training (ages 2-4)

The early assassin training is continued during the second year of life. The parts that will do physical assassinations are taught to wring the necks of kittens and other small animals.

During the second half of this year the toddler will undergo the extremely cruel training to kill that Mengele developed. The child will be placed in a cage with other children the same age (there are thirteen cages in all, with six on the bottom, four in the middle, two above and one at the very top.

The children in the bottom six cages undergo terrible abuse. The children above urinate and defecate on them, since they are at the bottom. They are also painfully raped frequently, and are not given any food or water. It is a type of “hell” for a small child. Once a day the toddler is taken out, and a kitten is placed in front of them. Mengele then would give the order, “Papa says ‘Kill’”. They are expected to instantly snap the neck. If there is the slightest hesitation, or the child refuses, they are placed back in the bottom row of cages, where the terrible deprivation and abuse occur.

The next day, the child is given another chance. The children that survive learn to instantly and without thinking obey the order. If they do, then Mengele would hold the child in his lap; tell them what a good job they did, and give them a treat.

After two weeks, the child will be either on the top two rows, or dead. By then, Mengele would spend significant time praising the child, bonding with them, for doing such a “good job.” The animals to be killed were placed in the center of a red circle, and they become bigger. Finally, a small infant is placed in the center of the red circle, the child is given a knife, and the command is

given. If the child refuses, they are placed back in the bottom row of cages, and the training begins all over again until they obey or die.

Follow

This is a primary assassin code: “Papa says kill” and is used by all Jesuit Fathers and top trainers as well.

Traveling the Dimensions

As part of their mage training, the toddler is taught to begin to travel in the spiritual realm. Before age 24 months, they will have learned to travel to the First Dimension. Dimensional travel usually involves theta parts which have never had contact with the outside world other than during their first creation in a black room. These parts are taught to leave the body through the application of intense torture (electroshock, burning, skin peeling, cutting with razors, beating, flagellation, smothering, heart stoppage, freezing, burning or other types of trauma).

The First Dimension

Once the part can leave the body, they are accompanied by an older spiritual mentor, who travels with them to the first dimension. This dimension is described in the Alice in Wonderland books (Lewis Carroll was an infamous occultist, and his books actually describe the demonic realms). In the first dimension, plants and flowers talk, and the young child is fascinated by the seeming beauty of the landscape at first glance. They are initially unaware of the dangers, but quickly learn: the flowers will try and grab the child and hold the child against their will; or will beat upon or even try to bite the child. Oversized bees and insects also come, and can cause great pain.

The child traveling will cry out for help, and will be “rescued” by their spiritual mentor, who will take them back to Gaia (the physical world we inhabit here; that is the name for this dimension).

The controllers for the First dimension are a large cat (the “Cheshire cat” in the Alice books);a large, demonic caterpillar that can sting with ferocity, and the white rabbit. These beings are actually demons that have been trapped in the dimension; they cannot leave it, but try to entice humans to visit them in order to ensnare their souls.

The Second Dimension

The second dimension is fire, and is inhabited by Vulcan. It is very hot, and the dimension is much like entering into an underworld with hot lava streams and fires. The child and their mentor travels, enduring being chased by fire lizards and other creatures, until they meet up with Vulcan.

Other Dimensions

The other dimensions include:

- a dimension of extreme cold and ice, overseen by a demonic “ice queen”
- a “reverse world” where everything is reversed, causing extreme disorientation
- an underwater dimension overseen by neptune
- a dimension of extreme dark and nightmares, overseen by Charymedes (god of insanity and chaos) with harpies that chase the child and attempt to kill them:
- a dimension (the 12th) of electricity charges, overseen by Electra

Each being that rules a dimension will always ask for a sacrifice of some kind from the child, in

order for the child to be allowed to return to Gaia. At first, the sacrifices might be “the screams of someone being tortured” or for the child to undergo torture themselves. As the child goes to the higher dimensions, with worlds inhabited by beings such as Charymedes, the sacrifices become much more difficult, and can include betraying the person the child loves most, or killing someone the child cares for, including their spiritual mentor(s).

Traveling the dimensions is considered a primary part of mage training; a mage does not become an ascended master until they have traveled to the 12^{th} dimension, or the 13^{th} (travel to these dimensions involves being put to death for several minutes).

Helping the survivor

The early childhood traumas will be very difficult for the presentation to accept, especially because of the deep denial and guilt that will be programmed in. If the survivor does begin to recover these memories, their punishment programming will immediately begin kicking in (see following section for further details).

Jesuits are always international, highly trained assassins and information gatherers, and the grieving will be tremendous. This is when they will need outside support, to vent the anger and grieving over the abuse and manipulations, and to hear that the Lord can forgive what they were forced to do from a very young age.

The survivor may cry out as Jeremiah did, “Why did I come forth from the womb to see labor and sorrow, That my days should be consumed with shame?:(Jer.20:18). It can help them to understand that the Lord really does understand their grieving and pain, that He took that on the cross for them, and paid the price for every death they were forced to participate in.

It can help the presentation to remind them that when they came to Jesus, while THEY were unaware of the back parts and their deeds, Jesus knew all along – and forgave them, too; that this information doesn’t surprise Him. His love doesn’t change just because the survivor remembers what they formerly didn’t.

As they attempt to break bonds with their early abusers, they will run headlong into feelings of abandonment and being alone, which are meant to prevent their fully leaving. Leaving will mean giving up all of their deepest unconscious relationships, the ones formed during these earliest (amnesic) years that have been wiped out from conscious memory.

It can help the survivor to understand that the Lord can fill their attachment pain, and stand in the place of father and mother to these young parts:

Ps.68:5. “A father of the fatherless, a defender of widows, is God in His holy habitation.”

Isaiah 66:13. “As one whom his mother comforts, So I will comfort you; And you shall be comforted in Jerusalem.”

It can be difficult for the presentation that came into therapy to realize that THEY are not the true “host” (which is placed behind an amnesic barrier). The real “host” the first three years of life will be Jesuit, will have a Jesuit name, and will carry the memories of the first three years that are wiped out when the child undergoes amnesia programming at age three prior to being placed within their host families.

The child at that age will have agreed willingly to forget the Fathers that they love in order to protect them; the presentation must be able to grieve this loss of their early childhood memories, and supported in dealing with the very painful betrayals and loyalty programming that will come up if the true host does ever present in therapy.

D. Punisher Training

An important part of a Jesuit system is the punishers. These punishers are modeled after people and spiritual beings the infant and child have seen portrayed by actors and in VR from earliest infancy. The beings (actirs) come to the infant's crib, talk to him or her, and tie themselves to the infant with a slender cord, as they teach the infant how the being talks and acts. This becomes internalized, along with the demonic spirit they impart.

The head of the punishment systems for Jesuits are in several layers. In the false Christian layer, these will include a false Jesus (head punisher), a false God, and a false Holy spirit. These parts, who are actually sabotagers and punishers, explain why the presentation can be very "Christian" and yet not be actually listening to the Christian God; instead, their conscience, which is Jesuit-trained, will believe that they must obey "God" and they may be completely misled into actually obeying the group and its directives and feel extremely guilty and even think they will "go to hell" if they disobey.

They will not know that these are Jesuit directives, however; they will believe that "God" is "telling them to stay with their husband (handler)" or that they must "honor their Father and Mother (cult parents)", etc. They will feel very "Christian" and "peaceful" when they obey these directives, and feel guilt, confusion and anxiety when they disobey, until the programming is broken and they can differentiate between the Lord and the false god placed within.

Core Level punishers will include Vulcan and Prometheus, and the main reprogramming system will be named Saturn (due to the numerous rings and levels of the punishments).

Internal Hell Punishment

The foundation of a Jesuit punishment system will be the deeply ingrained belief, from the core outwards, that the systems must not be allowed to descend and thus enter into the punishments of "hell." Since earliest infancy, and deep into the subconscious and unconscious, this fear of descending (through disobedience to the order's directives, or to the pantheon) is inculcated. All core controllers for all systems will unconsciously believe that the punishments are "good" since they are keeping the systems and core from "going to hell" or descending into a mortal state. The pain of the programming (re-experiencing) is seen as "proof" that the systems are descending, since ascended systems "do not feel pain" in the programming scripts.

This will be translated in the presentation into a deep fear of angering God, and an unusual ability to "hear from the Lord" and "hear His direction" which is actually listening to the false god planted inside in order to prevent experiencing the excruciating pain that will result if they disobey. The presentation may experience severe guilt at the thought of the smallest infraction, or fear going to hell for even slight errors, due to the unconscious pain of this programming.

Vulcan

Vulcan is the primary core level punisher, and has an anvil that is used to literally pound the

primary system core splits with (ensuring that the resulting pain and trauma go throughout the system being punished). If he fails in his duty, a large black bird swoops down on him, tearing out his liver and entrails and eats them. This is based upon primary infant traumas that involve the Jesuit Fathers bringing a bird into the infant's crib, and allowing its talons to tear at the infant. The traumatized infant retains this memory, which is built upon over the years.

Often this is reinforced with virtual reality, with a highly realistic predatory bird swooping down and piercing the bowels. Physical needles and knives are used for the initial traumatic pain, which is accessed and re-experienced over the years.

Vulcan is taught to punish the systems, and even the core, for severe disobedience and/or betrayal. The worst type of disobedience includes failure to maintain contact with the Fathers or their representatives, and trying to leave the Order. To the Jesuits, an individual attempting to leave is considered a traitor of the highest degree. They are actually considered "insane" since only insanity, to their thinking, could cause a person to take the path to descension, feeling the body and mortality, and giving up what they consider "godhood" and choosing to "go to hell." The members of the Order literally believe that the person choosing to leave is straight on the path to hell, and they will do anything to try and "save" them from this path.

This "salvation" can and will include extreme torture and reprogramming, in order to put the person "back on the right path." They believe that these measures are needed to bring the person to their "senses."

Helping the Survivor

The internal punishers and master controllers will also hold these beliefs, unless they can be reached and worked with. They will torture the person into literal insanity and/or death, believing that they are "helping" to "redeem" the "errant" person.

The hell punishers and system punishers themselves will be in agreement with the tortures, since as a child, they were taught to punish severely "traitors" and those who "disobeyed" with these same tortures. They internalized the beliefs of the Jesuit Fathers, and so were in agreement with inflicting this type of pain upon others, first externally, and then internally. They believe they are doing a "good" thing.

As the survivor remembers doing these things, they will feel immense guilt, and believe that they "deserve" these punishments because of what an "evil" person they are. They must be shown that Yeshua paid the full price for their sins, and that they and their systems can never do restitution for their deeds. This can help to break the cycle of guilt, penance and pain that has been set up since infancy.

Meditation on scriptures regarding forgiveness, the love of God, and listening to worship music that underscores the forgiving heart of God can be helpful in understanding this, since music can reach the "right brain" and bypass the faulty logic the Jesuits installed.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

The different types of SRA and Mind Control
January 29, 2019
In "mind control"

Early Splits and Theta programming
June 5, 2017
In "mind control"

Interview
February 14, 2022
In "healing"

Amie Martineau 8:47 pm on November 20, 2021

This is so hard for me to wrap my head around. I can't imagine any therapist that has had training in order to help people with programming like this? And also, how many people if you could guess I've had this sort of programming? I would think this sort of programming would be reserved for people that are going to be placed in political power or high corporate power?

★ Liked by 1 person

svalispeaksagain 7:57 pm on November 22, 2021

There are very few therapists that I know of who try to help with this type of thing; and most of the journey is often the survivor's. I can only speak about those in the order I was born in; most in this order go through this. In the 12 occultic societies, the programming is a bit different.

★ Like

Amie Martineau 8:49 pm on November 20, 2021

have had this sort of programming not I've had...lol sorry

★ Like

Amber 6:41 am on December 9, 2021

Still praying for you.

★ Like

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← Exposing the Vatican: Part 6

Book Part 8 →

Blog at WordPress.com.

Svali Speaks!

The Life of Svali – an Ex-Illuminati Mind Control Programmer

Part 3: How the Illuminati runs Hollywood

September 12, 2008 by koniword

Q: *I would think that California would be one of the major 'turfs' of the Illuminati, and I'm thinking specifically Hollywood. What's your inside on this, in regards to film making, symbology, subliminals, the whole scene in general?*

A: Oh, boy, do you have a few hours? I'll try to be brief. The Illuminati believethat to control the media is to control the public. This is one of their stated agendas. Remember, finances, media, law, government and education are the areas they targeted as being the best to dominate society.

How do they do this? They don't go to a film producer and say, "Oh, by the way, we're Illuminati members and we want you to make a movie that promotes our agenda". (Remember, they aren't stupid, either). Instead, they will form a small investment corporation that funds movies with ideas that they like. They quietly hire actors and producers and directors and scripts, but they never mention their affiliation publicly or why they are doing this.

Money talks, and especially in Hollywood. If you have money, you can get about anything made, and they know this. They can also channel money intoadvertising campaigns, etc. for their films (how many Christian films have had major ad campaigns in the past twenty years? Very few. How many occult movies have? I rest my case).

This has been a slow, subtle process because they are patient. They have been working behind the scenes for hundreds of years, and they know that the public is slow to accept new ideas, that it has to be done gradually. (They call it leading in the "sheep" which is one of their terms for the "unenlightened"). And it has been. The number of occult films that has come out in the past ten years alone should make anyone pause and think.

Why so many films with this theme? Why the desensitization of America's youth to the occult and magic? Just look at Saturday morning cartoons. I don't allow my children to watch them, except for "animaniacs" and Bugs Bunny at times. Instead, we rent old classics with Audrey Hepburn and John Wayne. I can send you some articles that did an excellent job of investigating **Walt Disney** (he was an

Privacy & Cookies: This site uses cookies. By continuing to use this website, you

Close and accept

Search

Categories

- Interview with Svali – The Illuminati in America
- Mind Control Programming Articles by Svali
- Multiple Personalities – Brokenness
- Other Authors
- Other Illuminati Articles by Svali
- Ritual Abuse Articles by Svali
- Svali Answers Questions
- Svali's Personal Life
- The Illuminati: How the Cult Programs People

Betrayal programming brain wave programming color programming Complex Polyfragmentation cult Cult Abuse Cult Safety Cult Secrecy Denial Programming DID dissociation end times Illuminati plan end times scenario Escaping from the Cult government programming Having needs Healing from Ritual Abuse Hiding from the Cult History of Ritual Abuse Illuminati bankers Illuminati jobs jewel

agree to their use.
To find out more, including how to control cookies, see here: Cookie Policy
Close and accept

and the core were so blatant, it wasn't funny. ***Fight Club***: I love Brad Pitt and Ed Norton, and this film is a nod at the **covert military buildup going on that the average person doesn't realize**. Also, **Ed is dissociative in the film**, as Pitt's character takes over (notice that the cult-creating military figure is the "stronger" one in the story?).

The Labyrinth: I haven't seen this, but my husband did, and everything he mentioned is pure Illuminati programming stories used with children. Any movies with an occult viewpoint, or that show supernatural psychic phenomena, astral travel, or contact with the spirit world are guaranteed to be part of this agenda. I don't watch them, myself. Saw enough of the real thing to last me this lifetime.

The sensationalization of rituals and other occult insignia on television is another example. Ghost stories. Witch stories. Children's books about Wizards and their training that are extremely popular.

Oh, yes, ***Starship Trooper***. This one had so many cult symbols (the Illumnists have a strong Aryan ideology going, too) that I almost laughed outright when I saw it. I counted at least 100 in it. Someone had fun going tongue-in-cheek with the Illuminist agenda in that one.

Many fine actors and actresses are being used in films funded by these people. Some may know the agenda, most probably do not, as long as they receive a pay check. Some are also Illuminists as well, although I don't know who is. I do know a few, but I don't want to risk a libel suit here.

Anyway, I was too busy training and going to meetings and learning the effects of drugs on people to pay much attention to that part of the group when I was in it, sorry, I don't have lots of famous names in my memories. I lived a very relatively boring life as a teacher and head trainer, and we rarely discussed the media except the fact that it, too, was another tool to bring in "The New Order", which is the motivation for all Illuminists.

I want to address another misconception. That is, the one that the Illuminists know that they are evil. When I was in the group, I and those around me were idealogically committed to the agenda as being GOOD. I thought I was helping others reach their full potential when I was a trainer.

I believed that after years of sweat and hard work, that my intelligence won out, and that I made an excellent leader. I fought Jonathan and others on the council when I thought they were unfair, and stood up for the people beneath me. Others did the same. They honestly think they are doing a GOOD thing, and if you told them it was wrong, or evil, they would look confused.

It took a LOT of therapy and deprogramming myself, doing reality checks with noncult people to realize that it was all a lie. I was devastated. I had dedicated my life to helping others bring in the glorious new order, and then found out it was EVIL and abusive. I went through a period of intense grieving/mourning over this.

Most Illuminists I knew weren't evil, they were deceived. Only the top leadership perhaps were consciously being hurtful.

Posted in Interview with Svali - The Illuminati in America | Leave a Comment »

Part 2: Who and What is the Illuminati?

September 12, 2008 by koniword

> **Q:** *Does it bother you to write about this?*

...mming
...D
Origin of the Illuminati programming programming techniques Reaccessing of the Survivor Remembering Abuse Ritual Abuse Roots of the Illuminati Shell Programming Spiritual Abuse Spiritual Programming suicidal programming Survivors of Ritual Abuse Svali is Alive Svali is dead Svali is missing Svali is Safe Svali poem Svali questions techniques Theapists reveal truth about Ritual Abuse Therapists VR programming

A: It doesn't upset me to write on the topic of the Illuminati, I was explaining why I write under a pen name, that is all. I received a letter recently in which it was alleged that I write under a pen name because I'm a phony, which is not true at all. I am a freelance writer on the side (I write for nursing magazines and publications on health topics that have NOTHING to do with abuse) and understand the need for fact checking, so no offense is taken at your wanting to know my background. In fact, it shows you are a responsible editor, which I admire. I have nothing to hide. My story is 100% true.

I have gained no money for disclosing; I do NOT go on talk shows, I am unknown and prefer it this way. I have absolutely no secondary gain from doing this, other than the medical bills for my children, which means I work three part-time jobs. This is to answer the skeptics who say that people disclose for: sympathy (I don't want any and don't need it. I made choices and mistakes in my life, and am now involved in restitution); money (I earn $20 a MONTH for my site on Suite 101. I earn $150 to $250 an article when I write on Women's health. Guess which topic I write on more frequently? Yep. Women's health, on completely non-abuse issues. The editors of the Nursing magazines and women's magazines don't know about the other topic I write on, another reason I write under a pen name.) I don't write for fame. Instead, if my co-workers knew about my past, I risk losing my job. I have everything to lose by disclosing, everything to gain by being silent.

But I also know that this kind of child abuse must be stopped. As a Christian, and as one who stands against child abuse, I have decided to speak out against cult abuse by writing articles that expose it. I also know that there are a number of people outspoken on this topic who have published, and they could possibly be back-up information for you. I don't know any of them, since I have no contact with other survivors other than my own family, but it is a possibility.

Anyway, to your questions:

Q: S*vali, I think our readers are wondering 'Is the Illuminati a religion, secret society, satanism or is it a combination of it, or something different all together, or more sinister?*

A: The Illuminati is a group that practices a form of faith known as "enlightenment". It is **Luciferian**, and they teach their followers that their roots go back to the ancient mystery religions of Babylon, Egypt, and Celtic druidism. They have taken what they consider the "best" of each, the foundational practices, and joined them together into a strongly occult discipline. Many groups at the local level worship ancient deities such as "El", "Baal", and "Ashtarte", as well as "Isis and Osiris" and "Set".

This said, the leadership councils at times scoff at the more "primitive" practices of the anarchical, or lower levels. I remember when I was on council in San Diego, they called the high priests and priestesses the "slicers and dicers", who kept the "lower levels happy". This is not to offend anyone, it only shows that at the leadership levels,they often believe they are more scientifically and cognitively driven. But they still practice the principles of enlightenment.

There are 12 steps to this, also known as "the 12 steps of discipline' and they also teach traveling astral planes, time travel, and other metaphysical phenomena. Do people really do this, or is it a drug induced hallucination ? I cannot judge. I saw things that I believe cannot be rationally explained when in this group, things that

frightened me, but I can only say that it could be a combination of cult mind control, drug inductions, hypnosis, and some true demonic activity. How much of each, I cannot begin to guess. I do know that these people teach and practice evil.

At the higher levels, the group is no longer people in robes chanting in front of bonfires. Leadership councils have administrators who handle finances (and trust me, this group makes money. That alone would keep it going even if the rest were just religious hog wash). The leadership levels include businessmen, bankers, and local community leaders. They are intelligent, well educated, and active in their churches.Above local leadership councils are the regional councils, who give dictates to the groups below them, help form the policies and agendas for each region, and who interact with the local leadership councils.

At the national level, there are extremely wealthy people who finance these goals and interact with the leaders of other countries. The Illuminati are international. Secret? By all means. The first thing a child learns from "family, or the Order" as they are called, is "The first rule of the Order is secrecy". This is why you don't hear from more survivors who get out. The lengths that this group goes to, to terrify its members into not disclosing, is unbelievable. I have seen set ups (oh, yes, they set up fake deaths, etc.) where a person was "burned alive" to teach the children not to tell. They are told that this is a traitor, who disclosed,and now he is being punished. (The person wasn't really a traitor, and is in a flame proof vest, but the vision of a person on fire and screaming remains with 3 and 4 year old children for a lifetime). And, when they are adults, even if they DO leave, scenes such as this mean they won't tell many people for fear of being traced and punished.

Because I helped create a lot of set ups as an adult trainer, I became somewhat cynical, and have chosen to disclose as a result. Although I do fight intense fear even now at times. Try being buried in a wooden box for a period of time (it may have been minutes, but to a four year old it is an eternity), and then when the lid is lifted, being told, "if you ever tell, we'll put you back in forever". The child will scream hysterically that they will NEVER EVER tell. I was that child, and now I am breaking that vow made under psychological duress. Because I don't want any other children to go through what I did, or have seen done to others. Yes, the Illuminati are organized, secretive, and extremely wealthy at its upper levels. They are not stupid, or poor people running around dabbling with witchcraft. To see them as this is a huge misconception.

Q: *How widespread would you say this group has infiltrated our society in terms of number of people? Are they present in every town or city throughout North America? Do they take or recruit outsiders? And how far does this group go to keep this knowledge secret?*

A: I think I answered some of the secrecy above. The Illuminati are present in every major metropolitan center in the United States. They have divided the United States up into 7 major regions, and each has a regional council over it, with the heads of the local councils reporting to them. They meet once every two months, and on special occasions.

A metropolitan region may have as many as 10 to 30 groups within it, and rural areas will often have meetings with other local groups, and report to the metro leadership council. They almost NEVER recruit outsiders, although ocassionally they will buy children or a family from Asia, for example, and keep them under constant surveillance in return

for saving their life from the local Mafia. They are threatened with being returned to this group if they ever disclose.

They also have excellent lawyers who are well paid to help cover their tracks. There are also people in the media paid to help keep stories from coming out. I know of three people in San Diego who worked for the *Union Tribune* who were faithful Illuminists, and who also wrote frequent articles attacking local therapists who worked with RA (Ritual Abuse) [or SRA, Satanic Ritual Abuse] survivors. I remember leadership boasting they had "run so-and-so out of town" because of a media blitz, and being quite happy about it.

The Illuminati believe in controlling an area through its:

1. Banks and financial institutions (guess how many sit on banking boards? You'd be surprised)
2. Local government: guess how many get elected to local city councils?
3. Law: children are encouraged to go to law school and medical school.
4. Media:others are encouraged to go to journalism school, and members help fund local papers .

Q: *Is this the same Illuminati that was created by Adam Weishaupt in Germany?*

A: Weishaupt did not create the Illuminati, they chose him as a figurehead and told him what to write about. The financiers, dating back to the bankers during the times of the Templar Knights who financed the early kings in Europe, created the Illuminati. Weishaupt was their "go fer", who did their bidding.

Q: *Do you have anymore info about the political goals, if any, of the Illuminati?*

A: This article I wrote for Suite101.com addresses it: "*Are the Illuminati taking over the world?*" You can reprint it, or part of it, as long as you give credit to Suite 101 and/or a link back to the site.

Q: *How do Illuminati members recognise each other?*

A: Since it is generational, its easy. It isn't hard to recognize one's father, mother, siblings, and neighbors and friends one has grown up with. The Illuminati use telephone trees to contact members when a meeting is to occur. A month or two ahead of time, leadership council plans dates and places for meetings for different groups under their umbrella. They then call local leaders a week ahead of time (the high priest or priestess). Two days ahead, these people call their head members, who then call the people under them. A person knows their status in the group by how far ahead of time they know a meeting date. The lower in the group, the less they are trusted with information, and the less "lag time" before meetings.

Sometimes, certain pieces of jewelry, such as a ruby ring or an oval emerald, might be worn if meeting someone in a public place at a prearranged assignation. But most accessing and contact is done through family members or close friends.

When I lived in San Diego, my entire family of origin and my four closest friends were all members of the group. It wasn't hard to reach me, to say the least. My spouse was also a member. The Illuminati believe in arranged members, and do NOT allow their members to marry a nonmember. If someone says their spouse isn't in it, they aren't Illuminati, or they are in denial. This was an unbreakable policy.

> My marriage was arranged by the local leadership council to another ranking member. I didn't want to marry him, because I didn't love him, and I will never forget what I was told by Athena, my mentor at the time (she held the second position on the council): "That's for the best, then, because he can never hurt you or control you." Or, my mother's timeless advice given when I was 12 years old: "Never fu– someone lower than you. They will drag you down. Always choose someone higher than yourself."
>
> She was an ambitious woman, to say the least, determined that I would do well in this very political group. I took her advice, and Athena was my lover and protected me from some of the SOBs on leadership in San Diego especially Jonathan, the head trainer. She taught me his weaknesses and how to get around him, and stood up to him for me. I wouldn't have survived otherwise.
>
> These are NOT nice people and they use and manipulate others viciously.They cut their eye teeth on status, power, and money. I have given all of that up to leave, and am glad to be away from it now, although I do miss some of my friends, and at times I miss the respect of being a leader. But I am learning to live a whole new life without the constant background of "family" monitoring and telling me what to do.
>
> Know what the hardest part of getting out was? The freedom. Not having anyone telling me what to do. I literally went through a period of adjustment, felt wobbly, trying to figure out what I wanted to do. It was hard, since I was used to reflexively checking my decisions with leadership and Jonathan and my husband. Freedom can be difficult, believe it or not, and took quite a period of time to adjust to. I believe that the inability to deal with it often draws people back in. I hope this information is useful to you.

Posted in Interview with Svali - The Illuminati in America | Leave a Comment »

Part 1: About Svali

September 12, 2008 by koniword

HJ Springer, Editor of CentrExNews.com, penned the following introductory remarks to this revealing ten part interview with Svali. Our gratitude to 'Svali' for bringing this information forward and HJ Springer for running the story. You can read many more articles by Svali and examine her self pubished book at http://www.suite101.com/ . Every thinking person on this planet needs to become educated about the Illuminati takeover agenda; otherwise their life and the lives their children will suffer the ultimate price for their inattention, ignorance, and inaction…**Update Nov. 2004**: CentrExNews.com vanished from the internet somewhere around 2003. Ken Adachi]

While running our series 'The Illuminati: How the Cult Programs People' we received a few emails that were of a somewhat skeptical nature and/or requesting more information. Needless to say, I had some questions of my own regarding some details of the Illuminati and their agenda, and so I got in touch with 'Svali' (her pseudonym), an Ex-Illuminati Programmer/Trainer, to find out more about her claims. In the following few episodes I will enlighten you (pardon the pun), as much as I can, with additional knowledge I received from her. Our correspondence took place in the form of an email interview, which I left mainly intact. I only edited it for spelling and punctuation; minus some personal information addressed to me. Should you have any additional questions you would like to ask Svali, please email

me at centrex@looksmart.com and I will forward them to her for a possible future article. Following is the first part of our interview.

HJ Springer
chief editor

Part 1: About Svali

Dear Mr. Springer,

Thank you for contacting me. Actually, I just received a somewhat skeptical email today from someone who read the information at your site. I would be more than happy to answer questions about validity, etc. with the following provision. I write under a pen name to protect my two children and husband, whom I do not want to have receiving hostile or threatening phone calls, etc. My two children are still healing from the experiences of being raised in the group as well, and I don't want any experiences that could traumatize them.

The topic I am addressing is somewhat volatile, to say the least. People have strong emotions pro and con as to whether the Illuminati are real. That said, I will give you a little background info, feel free to share this with readers. Also, my column at http://www.Suite101.com (I have a column on ritual abuse; do a search on 'svali') has numerous articles on this topic if people want to learn more.

1. I was born in 1957 in Alexandria, Virginia. I lived briefly in a small town about an hour away from Washington, DC, then moved to a 500 acre farm in northern Virginia when my mother married my stepfather. Both my mother and my stepfather were members of this group. It is a very generational group. My mother sat on the regional council over the Washington, DC area and was in the "spiritual chair" (the Illuminati have 6 chairs on their ascended masters council: Sciences, Government, Leadership, Scholarship, Spiritual, and Military.)

These also correlate to the areas that children are taught growing up in this group. They believe in "well rounded" children. The "spiritual" rituals, or occult rituals, were only one small part of the teaching of this group, the other five areas are also equally emphasized. I spent more time learning history, languages, and sciences than I did seeing rituals, although they were important to the group.

2. I went to school in Charlottesville, Va. 1975 to 1981, where I received a BSN in nursing, and a BA in Spanish (I got two degrees). This is also a place where a lot intense abuse and occultic crime occurred, on an estate about 10 miles south west of Charlottesville going towards Crowley, Virginia.

3. After graduation, I went to San Diego in 1981 (I was called there by the leadership there, they were strong in military training but weak in sciences, which was my forte). I came and sat on leadership council, I was the sixth head trainer there (the lowest head trainer) and had 30 trainers in the local groups reporting to me. Leadership council met in Ramona, Ca. on an estate there that belonged to a man named Jonathan Meiers.

When I went to the police in 1996 (after I had left the group) sure enough, there was an estate there belonging to someone with that name. One of his cult names was "Black Hand" because he wore black gloves when he worked with people. He was the head trainer in the group, and one of the most sadistic and brutal people I ever knew. He burned out most of the trainers that worked with him, and I made it

because I had a friend on leadership council who hated him and helped me undermine him (the Illuminati are a very political and back stabbing group, a "dog eat dog" mentality; everyone wants to move up). Her cult name was Athena.

After years (12) of working with Jonathan, I moved up to the second head trainer position in the county. Jonathan was getting ready to move to regional, and he wanted me to take his place. But he and I also despised each other, and he set me up to take a fall. That's a whole different story, and was one of the factors that made me leave the group. I left the group in 1995, sick of the lying, deceiving, and politics, and fearful for my life. I fled to Texas, and went through therapy with Dr. Jerry Mundgaze and his group. But unfortunately, they didn't know how to help "deprogram me", or as Dr. Mundgaze told me, "you are higher than almost anyone we have seen, and more programmed."

I remembered so much, and he had never heard of it and had no idea how to help (definitely no suggesting of memories there, most of mine occurred spontaneously, AT HOME. I have never been hypnotized or age regressed, all of my memories have occurred in the course of daily life).

I spent a year intensely deprogramming myself. I was a head programmer, or trainer, so I used my knowledge to undo what was done to me. I also became enraged as I realized that the abuse I had endured (and done to others) was NOT normal, was used to manipulate me, etc.

My book is based on my memories as an ADULT in this group. I was a perpetrator, and I now regret it considerably. It is my restitution before God as I expose what this group does and stands for. I also wrote it for therapists, to help them understand the group and its methodologies, since it was so difficult to hear from a nationally known ritual abuse center, "we don't know what to do…". I based it on what I did to heal.

Two years ago, my children were on visitation with me and disclosed their abuse to me. I went to CPS, and the case was closed, because the worker said she didn't believe in ritual abuse! My ex came to get the children (he could have put me in federal prison for not giving the children back, since the San Diego court system blatantly states that they do not believe in ritual abuse, and in EVERY case of alleged RA, the children are given to the allegedly abusing parent).

The children confronted him in person. He turned white as a sheet, said, "you really don't want to go back to "family", they said "no". He then fled to California, quit his job, and moved out here and is in therapy for RA and DID (Dissociative Identity Disorder). My children are also in therapy, and healing rapidly. My now 12 year old son is almost completely integrated, and happier than he has ever been before; my 16 year old daughter has some tough issues to face, such as the sexual abuse she endured. But God has been faithful in His healing work in all of our lives.

I wish that this was just "made up". That it weren't real. But it is. There is too much documentation of this occurring (I can send you an URL for documented convicted RA cases). My greatest regret is that I was used by this group, after a lifetime of teaching, to be a perpetrator of the worst kind. I used to torture and abuse others, believing that I was "helping" them.

Now, I realize that what I did was wrong, I have asked God's

forgiveness. And am committed to exposing this group through my writing. I am also a professional writer in the medical field, was a registered nurse for 18+ years, and currently work as an ESL teacher, health educator, and freelance author (on non abuse topics!). I hope this is enough background info, it is the truth before God and men. If you need any other, that won't compromise my anonymity or my children's protection, please let me know.

Sincerely, Svali

PS. My younger sister remembers being tied up on a stone altar at the age of 3, with a gag in her mouth, and being raped. She also remembers our paternal grandmother taking her to friends, who used her sexually at the ages of 3 to 5. She became an alcoholic at age 13, after trying to commit suicide 7 times by age 12. My older brother has NO memories of ANYTHING AT ALL before age 20, his life is a complete blank. He does believe that our father was a perverse and strange man. This brother was cut down from our garage when he was 8, and tried to hang himself.

My oldest brother is on the run, afraid to live anywhere for more than a few months, because he believes they want to "get him." He also tried to commit suicide many times as a young child. This is somewhat corroborating evidence, as well as the fact that both of my children dream in German at night (that is the language they speak in the Illuminati) and have NEVER heard it in the daytime.

Posted in Interview with Svali - The Illuminati in America | Leave a Comment »

« Newer Posts

Blog at WordPress.com. WPThemes.

svalispeaksagain 5:38 pm on October 25, 2021

Tags: healing (43), Jesuit (10), Mengele (3), mind control (69), programming (60), ritual abuse (65), Vatican (10)

Exposing the Vatican: Part 6

trigger warning: explicit discussion of programming, traumas and negative spirituality

Q'Ballah Programming

Mengele always installed the Q'Ballah in those he worked with, and he installed it into Jesuit systems as well. Althea, or the "Tree of Life" is the basis, with the three cords (white, black, grey) roots demonically entwined and going back to the systems described above. There is a primary death trauma for each of the core controllers for each of these roots.

An important part of q'ballah (black Kabbalah) programming is the creation of demonic portals. These are installed at points known as the sephiroth in the body and above it (see illustration below).
There will be death rituals, and demonic entities attached to each of these points, which become a portal or opening for demonic travel and communication. Tiferet represents the core, sits above the umblicus, and is the portal for satan himself. This is the first, or prime trauma, and this ritual involves the newborn or fetal umblicus being burned with a hot needle as the infant is put to death, then resuscitated.

Each portal (sephiroth) is installed via death trauma, and will have a portal guardian who is an ascended master from the grey (celestial)system sitting above it, who is both human and demonic. The guardians will have been heavily programmed to misrepresent their true names, due to the need for cover programming described above. These guardians supposedly "protect" the body and systems from "intrusion" by beings in the dimensions; but in reality, they are open doors to the demonic and must be closed through spiritual warfare (giving up of the demons) and by these ascended guardians accepting Yeshua and giving up their former beliefs in demonic "protection."

Helping the Survivor

Follow

The survivor will often initially be terrified at the thought of closing these portals when this comes up in therapy. This is because of extensive programming to believe that closing these portals will result in "death", "insanity" or cruel punishment by internal or external masters. They will literally believe that their safety and survival depends upon keeping these portals open, and will question how to survive closing them.

There may be parts instructed to take the other parts into the dimensions and punish parts that try to close their portals, or break this programming. The survivor may even re-experience the death traumas and agony involved in the original creation of the portals. Once the portals are closed, the survivor will be amazed at the relief, and the fact that they are indeed alive and sane. The therapist will need to help counteract the programming with truth, and develop enough trust with the survivor that they are willing to give up this method of demonic interaction.

Once the portals are closed, the survivor may experience significant warfare in retaliation for doing so. This is a time for prayer and spending time with the Lord, and calling on Yeshua for protection.

The Q'Ballah will have an extensive internal reality attached to it, including magic numbers in rooms, and the white, black or silver cords from it running throughout the systems, from top to bottom, including within the rooms that the various controllers stay in. These cords represent the core traumas associated with the creation of each part of the "three rope" cord: infant death traumas and the beliefs associated with these traumas.

There will be an extensive internal reality for the systems and their controllers, with rooms, temples and other representations of the programming that they underwent when a very young child.

More About Mengele

Mengele himself, as discussed before, worked with Jesuit infants during the 1950s and early 1960s. He also bonded these infants to himself in a manner similar to that described above for attachment bonding. His bonding was nearly always installed in the white, or cover level, for Jesuit systems. This was primarily because the Fathers wanted his programming (assassin training in infancy and early childhood) installed, but wanted to reserve the core bonding for themselves, in order to maintain their secrets even from Mengele, whom they did not fully trust. Mengele also installed his own proprietary codes into areas of the systems that he wanted to reserve loyalty to himself within.

The Jesuits also wanted their top trainers trained by Mengele. This is one reason why those with top potential worked with him in his research laboratory, and continued the research after his death.

C. Toddler Training

By the time an infant is a year old, they will have several hundred personalities in place, which have already undergone extensive foundational mind control. Spiritual controllers will have already undergone extremely painful ceremonies, such as hot needles inserted into the umbilicus; or having a long sharp needle pierced through their chest, and being gripped and raised up ("satan's claw").

The controllers for the white spiritual systems will be in place, since the infant will have internalized these through virtual reality, holograms, and dramatic enactments of the "deities" by actors. The white spiritual systems include:

• Egyptian deities
• Babylonian deities
• Ancient (pre-Babylonian) deities
• Druidic deities

These are headed up by the white, or Greek, Pantheon of twelve deities.
Each system will have specific traumas attached to it. For instance, Bel, the head of the Babylonian system, will undergo a ritual where he is pierced through with tiny golden needles throughout his body (Babylonian sun ritual). Astarte will have sexual rituals, and Ashtoth will have death rituals associated with him.

The black (Vatican) spiritual systems are also being organized and trained from 12 to 14 months after birth. These include the theta assassin systems headed by:

• Nemesis, who controls
• Phobos (theta fear and dream attacks);
• Thantos (theta death) and
• Chaos (theta insanity programming).

Extensive training is undergone, where the young child learns to control and read thoughts (Galileo training), and to attack others using the theta skills they are developing. The foundations of early Mage training are also begun (mages are the highest level in the occultic world).

The "goddess of Death" and other demonic spirits will have temples and altars dedicated to them, where regular internal sacrifices are conducted. These re-enactments represent the external realities the toddler experienced.

The toddler will be taught to enjoy the experience of killing within certain parts, either through sexual stimulation, or direct brain stimulation (of the euphoria center) following obedience.

Controller Programming

The Jesuits use extensive setups to teach the internal controllers to do their jobs during this second year of life. Typical ones involve tying several young children with ropes (normally, six) to the waist of the toddler. She is told to "mind the children" and make them obey her. The setup will consist of having candy, or beautiful objects such as glass balls, in the middle of a room. The toddler is told that the children tied to her must NOT touch the objects in the middle of the room, or they and she will be punished.

The problem is that it is very difficult for a very young child to control others. The six children tied to her waist will try to yank her around, and grab at the objects or treats. Finally, in spite of her best efforts, she will tire, and one of the children will reach the table and grab a treat.

The child is instantly killed by a Jesuit Father waiting in the wings. The two-year old must now make the other, now quite obedient, children obey her, while dragging around the body of the dead child, a reminder to this young controller of what happens when she fails in her job.

By the end of the setup, which can last for several days, all of the children tied to the now very traumatized controller will have died (the result of disobedience and her failure to “mind the children” who in hunger will reach out and try to grab food and water, which are forbidden). The extremely traumatized controller will be very committed to exacting complete obedience to those under her, to prevent their experiencing a similar fate.

All of the controllers inside (dozens) will undergo this and other training. This creates an extremely controlled system, with the internal controllers believing that even slight disobedience will result in death or shattering. This belief is based upon numerous experiential setups when the child was less then 3 years old, and it will take time to work through the terrible grief of being unable to “save” the children in the controller’s care, and the rage that this type of manipulation creates in the survivor once they realize the truth.

Master-Slave Programming (ages 2 to 5)

There is a program to training obedience when a Jesuit child is very young. In this program, they are conditioned to be slaves, and obey their Masters, the Jesuit Fathers (who are all ascended masters). They address them as “Master” and “My Lord” and their day consists of menial labor as the Fathers order.

Typical tasks might include scrubbing the stone floors of the monastery on hands and knees while the Fathers taunt the “slave”; they may even urinate on the floor the child has just spent hours cleaning, and tell the child to clean it up again.

The acolyte will learn to cook; clean; do yard work, and will obey orders without question or thought, when asked to do tasks. This is considered an important part of the early training in obedience.

The spiritual parts (thetas) are taught to respond spiritually to summons from the Fathers – instantly. Any hesitation is immediately and terribly punished (such as being hung inside a dark well). The Fathers also have golden whistles that they wear around their necks; each child is assigned a set of notes, and must respond physically and/or spiritually immediately when their notes are played.

The child is inside the walls of the monastery these first few years of life. By age 24 months, the child goes to classes, where they learn not only languages (the Fathers speak Latin and Italian in daily life, and are all fluent in numerous other languages), but also oral history and the black arts as part of their mage training.

Internally, the survivor will have “masters” (controllers) and “slaves”; slave parts are taught to instantly obey masters.

Wolf and Sheep Training

During the second year of life (12 months to 24 months) it is important to the Jesuits that high barriers are placed between the “front” or presentations, and the “back” or loyal parts. One way this is accomplished is with “wolf” and “sheep” programming.

The back, or hidden, parts are taught that they are wolves. The Jesuit Fathers raise wolves for this purpose, and will take the young child and place them in a pen with a mother wolf and her cubs.

The child will have been sprayed with wolf scent, and the mother will normally let the child join her cubs. The child is told that he or she is a wolf, and is treated exactly like one: the child nurses on the mother wolf; is fed with the cubs, and is taught to crawl on all fours, and even to growl like a wolf. They are taught that wolves are strong, cruel, fierce and protective, and that they must guard the "weaker" systems by doing the tasks that "sheep" cannot do.

Once this program is in place, the front systems undergo "sheep" training. They are placed with sheep, and eventually believe that they are lambs or sheep; eating with the sheep, sleeping curled up with the other lambs, and in every way being treated as if they are a sheep.

To place a barrier between the systems, the Fathers then cause the two systems to traumatize one another. The "wolves" are told to "attack" the sheep and to try to kill them. This causes the front to become angry and to distrust them. The wolves are also taught to hate "sheep" and believe they "stink" by having a slain lamb tied to their back for several days. The carcass becomes ridden with flies and stinks terribly; the body itches and the child becomes violently ill, and they are taught that this is the result of being close to a sheep. These parts cannot come close to front parts, that they believe are sheep, without smelling the rotten carcass that made them so ill as a very young child. This makes the back very unwilling to come near the front.

Other barriers between front and back are also installed during this second year. This includes a wall with gargoyles and demonic guardians that is erected between the front and back, which is overseen by Janus (the Roman deity with two faces). One face observes the "front" or presenting systems; the other, the back, or hidden systems. Certain parts can pass through the doors, but those without authorization are immediately torn by the demonic guardians placed between front and back. The demonic is allowed to pass freely between front and back.

In addition to these barriers, others are placed. One is an extensive "buffer" system. These have entrained neurolinguistic programming in place, and their role is to be emotionless and to stand between the front and the back, " buffering" the front from any knowledge of what the back is doing, and vice-versa. Their role is to prevent the two sides from actually meeting or communicating, and to keep the amnesia in place through constant ingrained "wipeout" programming.

This wipeout programming can consist of a combination of traumas that are re-experienced, such as internal shocks to the head, EHF and/or microwave bursts to the frontal lobes, or other similar traumas that were used to originally wipe out memories of assignments. If the survivor attempts to cross the barrier, they may experience flashing lights, blizzard, extreme headaches, eye pain, nausea, dark bursts within the deep brain, or other trauma that occurred when the barrier was originally put in.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

book part 4
September 13, 2021
In "healing"

Exposing the Vatican book: Part 4
September 30, 2021
In "healing"

Book Part 8
December 23, 2021
In "healing"

Pingback: Halloween 2021 | cathy fox blog on child abuse

MKUltra Girl 7:01 pm on October 25, 2021

Good Gaud. What you say resonates so strongly with me. I am reading *It is Not Impossible* right now.

And of course, I am not sure you know this, but my sister acted out the kill program in one of the earliest times for such things in our era, the early 80's. Piecing my personal story together is different because we were with our natal family the whole time. We didn't have host families and we are our parents' children. But I have evidence that my father was programmed by mengele in '49. In Quebec city in a catholic hospital run by nuns (Saint-Michel-Archange) after his "nervous breakdown" after attending 2 weeks in seminary school at St. Peter's seminary in London, ON.

I speculate that mengele tried to transfer or install his own consciousness into my father at that time. Reading one of Mengele's bogus biographies was like reading about my father. The same obsessions, likes and belief that university professors are the top of the professional heap. I believe Marshall McCluhan had something to do with my father's and maybe our training. We met him in our presentations a few times. One was in the back seat of our family sedan with Marshall McCluhan in 74 or 75 ish. I was doing a project on famous people and I picked him because my father was always talking about him. My father arranged the interview. MM was sitting beside me in the backseat btwn me and my brother and sister. My first question was, "Why are you famous?". He turned stone cold, a dark evil came over me. He said nothing. He stared straight ahead. I asked my dad for help and he just kinda laughed. That was the end of the interview. MM taught at St. Michael's college at U of Toronto, a Jesuit college. He was an awful person from what I remember.

Another odd thing about my dad was one of his pet projects- Laughter Centres. He used the Alfred E. Newman face from Mad Magazine to promote them. I now believe that Alfred E. Newman was modeled after my father. This is just another way they could exploit frequencies to enrich themselves through media and popular culture. (for me it is many of the celebs in our time and of course, EL from Stranger THings). This function of the cult is huge and all that popular culture ever was/is, IMO. Let no good psych patient go to waste. Mad Magazine (started in the auspicious year of '53).

My mother actually said she knew that Canada harboured nazis. And she NEVER said anything political or beyond the duties of wife and mother (programmed at the Allan in ’58) to completely rid her of her highly skilled ability as a clothes designer and seamstress.

I do take some opposition with the manner of salvation you speak of through the protestant evangelical church but that is not important. We are both good with the one true God in our hearts.

Additionally, I have had a hell of a time with people I have trusted and shared with who started out as friends turning on me in the worst way. I am sure you understand, but even me sharing this little bit with you makes me wary. Some of the things I have stated here I have not stated publicly yet.

My father stayed in contact with priests his entire life and was obsessed with the Catholic church. He often spoke of the Jesuits. I believe that this happened to me and my sister and probably my brother. He drowned in a canoeing *accident* (and it was – I checked it out thoroughly) when he was 19. I believe one does not need more than the ill wind of these curses in our systems to blame for these tragedies. Which was to silence all of us. Especially me, since I am the only one left who has the ability to get to the bottom of this.

My mother’s family in London ON are silent on all matters, so are the remnants of my dad’s family in Windsor ON, but some distant older relatives on my dad’s side have given me more information than both immediate sides combined. Suggestion is strong that both families are deeply occulted.

Thanks for your work. Without revealing the methods, I don’t think the bottom or the top way out can truly be reached. Thanks for doing that. You were born to do that and that is a great great thing for all us vics of the jesuits.

Ellen Atkin Photography Resume Blog 604 259 9508 ellen@ellenatkin.com

On Mon, Oct 25, 2021 at 10:39 AM Svali Speaks Again wrote:

> svalispeaksagain posted: ” trigger warning: explicit discussion of > programming, traumas and negative spirituality Q’Ballah Programming Mengele > always installed the Q’Ballah in those he worked with, and he installed it > into Jesuit systems as well. Althea, or the “Tree of ” >

★ Like

fredurez29 2:29 pm on December 22, 2022

Hello, do you know how Jesuits were programmed before Mengele ? And do you think the 13 orders have always programmed their members since the ages ?
Also, do you think Illuminati children are systematically made by IVF ?
Have you seen other testimonies from Jesuit survivors ?

I also wonder if some of top members of the orders are not programmed like some survivors told us about the Queen Elizabeth, they tell she can live hundred years by replacing her body getting spiritually inside a children body, and putting away children's soul.
Also have you heard about a grey pope ?

★ Liked by 1 person

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← Exposing the Vatican: Part 5

Book Part 7 →

Create a free website or blog at WordPress.com.

Svali Speaks!

The Life of Svali – an Ex-Illuminati Mind Control Programmer

Part 13 – The UN or Supreme World Council

September 12, 2008 by koniword

Q: *Svali, what role does and will the UN play in the future and how do you see this unfolding? What is their timeline?*

A: The UN was created early in this century in order to help overcome one of the biggest barriers to a one world government necessary, if there is to be a military rule and dictatorship by the Illuminists. That barrier is the one of nationalism, or pride in one's country. This is why it was NOT a popular concept when first introduced, it took years of country bashing in the media and the destruction of any sense of national pride by a (not so subtle) media campaign over the years. It's agenda? It is set up as a shadow, or forerunner, of the **Supreme World Council** that will represent every nation. Every ambassador to the UN has either done something to curry Illuminati favor and been rewarded, or is a political figurehead chosen to make the organization "look good".

The Illuminati and governmental leaders chose to create the UN early in the past century, and worked hard and against opposition to put it in place (**FDR** was their man in America who helped the American public accept it). Both he **and Eleanor were staunch Illuminists**. So is **Shirley Temple Black**. In fact, most of our presidents since the beginning of the past century have been either Illuminists, or agreed by oath to support their goals, in return for campaign funds and support. I believe it is impossible to win a presidential election in our country today without their backing. The Kennedy family were punished because they tried to disobey them. They were free thinkers, and too hard to "control".

The UN has a stated goal of world peace, and wants to incorporate under its fold military and peace-keeping functions. But in reality, giving this role to the UN weakens the individual military strength of nations, and encourages them to lean more and more on an external organization, making them less able to resist when the takeover occurs.

I was told that by the **year 2020**, that the New Order would be openly revealed, BUT that may have been cult propaganda, and they are always changing dates. I personally believe that by the mid of this century, they will reveal themselves. This is just my opinion, though.

Q: *What are the plans of the Illuminati for the Middle East and how will it affect the rest of the world? Will we see WWIII?*

Search

Categories

- Interview with Svali – The Illuminati in America
- Mind Control Programming Articles by Svali
- Multiple Personalities – Brokenness
- Other Authors
- Other Illuminati Articles by Svali
- Ritual Abuse Articles by Svali
- Svali Answers Questions
- Svali's Personal Life
- The Illuminati: How the Cult Programs People

Betrayal programming brain wave programming color programming Complex Polyfragmentation cult Cult Abuse Cult Safety Cult Secrecy Denial Programming DID dissociation end times Illuminati plan end times scenario Escaping from the Cult government programming Having needs Healing from Ritual Abuse Hiding from the Cult History of Ritual Abuse Illuminati bankers Illuminati jobs jewel programmming linked programming Memory suppression metal programming

Privacy & Cookies: This site uses cookies. By continuing to use this website, you agree to their use.
To find out more, including how to control cookies, see here: Cookie Policy
Close and accept

A: The conflict in the middle east is only to the advantage of the Illuminists. They time, the Illuminati covertly supply guns and funds to BOTH sides to keep the conflict fueled. They are very duplicious people. They used to funnel guns through the USSR to Palestine, for example, in the name of promoting "friendliness" between the USSR and this state and other arab nations. Then, the US Illuminists would help funnel guns to Israel, for the same reason.

Svali Speaks! Create a free website or blog at WordPress.com.

These people love the game of chess, and see warfare between nations as creating an order out of chaos. The **USSR is going to get stronger again**. It has too strong a military both openly, and covertly (ALL Illuminati military trainers have visited Russia to learn from them) to sit quietly and quiesciently to the side. In the NWO, they will be stronger than us.

Want to hear the end of the world scenario the Illuminati taught me? It was cult propaganda, but this is how they believed the New Order would be ushered in: There will be continued conflict in the mideast, with a severe threat of nuclear war being the culmination of these hostilities. **An economic collapse that will devastate the economy of the US** and Europe, much like the Great Depression.

One reason that our economy continues limping along is the artificial supports that the Federal Reserve had given it, manipulating interest rates, etc. But one day, this won't work (or this leverage will be withdrawn on purpose) and the next Great Depression will hit. The government will call in its bonds and loans, and credit card debts will be called in. There will be massive bankruptcies nationwide. Europe will stabilize first, and Germany, France and England (surprise) will have the strongest economies, and will institute through the UN an international currency. Japan will also pull out, although their economy will be weakened.

Peacekeeping forces will be sent out by the UN and local bases to prevent riots. The leaders will reveal themselves, and people will be asked to make a pledge of loyalty during a time of chaos and financial devastation.

Doesn't sound pleasant, does it? I don't know the exact time frame for all of this, and wouldn't want to even guess. The good news is that **if a person is debt-free, owes nothing to the government or credit debt, and can live self sufficiently, they may do better than other**. **I would invest in gold,** not stocks, if I had the income. Gold will once again be the world standard, and dollars will be pretty useless (remember after the Civil War? Our money will be worth about what confederate money was after the collapse).

All this said, it could just be cult propaganda taught to me and others to frighten us. It may be that none of this will happen. I sincerely hope not. I also strongly believe that God is able to stay the hand of the wicked, and to take care of our nation and others, if we turn to Him.

Q: *Overall, would you say the Illuminati are racist? I am asking this because their agenda seems to be very white supremist throughout history.*

The Illuminati are racist, and have a very "aryan" outlook. They believe strongly in the rule of the "pure" and "intelligent" by their definitions, and in their ceremonies, there will ocassionally be minorities killed in ceremonies.

They are trying to breed a "genetically superior" race to rule, with their children and descendants. They are also followers of Plato's Republic, and believe that they will be the ones to usher in this "Utopian" rule with the NWO in their opinion. In their Utopia, the intelligentsia will rule, and the sheep like masses will follow their leaders (that is their view of the world; that the occult leaders are "enlightened' and intelligent, while the average person is a "sheep" to be led by the nose).

military programming MPD
Ritual Abuse Roots of the Illuminati Shell Programming Spiritual Abuse Spiritual Programming suicidal programming Survivors of Ritual Abuse Svali is Alive Svali is dead Svali is missing Svali is Safe Svali poem Svali questions techniques Theapists reveal truth about Ritual Abuse Therapists VR programming

Q: *Why would they allow a black leader to head the UN?*

A: Because it is a temporarily politically expedient thing for them to do. They are liars, and will hold out a hand to a popular political figure, throwing them a figurehead role in one of their organizations, to make the UN look better, and as a group that promotes "interracial harmony" and "unity" and "peace".

The real leaders would never publicly allow their real feelings to show. The UN is a preparation, but it is not the real power in the world, and will be relatively unimportant when the NWO comes into being. The real councils will then step forward. But as a means of getting the general public to accept the idea of a "global community" and the "one world community" the UN is a stepping stone in their working towards the NWO.

Q: *Do they have a population control agenda? I'm thinking specially in view of the AIDS plague in Africa. Could this be engineered by them?*

A: I have heard reports that certain deadly viruses have been engineered by the Illuminati, but I doubt that HIV was. Why? Because so many of the leadership of the Illuminati are blatantly pedophilic and homosexual, the virus is rampant in parts of the US, and they would be endangering themselves as well. **Most of the leadership that I knew were homosexuals in their night personas** (myself included) and it was accepted as a lifestyle in that setting, and encouraged.

Also, the viruses that they are developing are ones that they are also engineering antidotes to, to protect leadership from the virus if an epidemic breaks out. I do know that there is some working on biological weapons by members of this group as a method of threatening population bases that don't embrace the "New Order" when revealed, this was discussed ocassionally in leadership meetings. What state it is at at this time, I couldn't say, since it has been several years since I was active in the group.

Posted in Interview with Svali - The Illuminati in America | Leave a Comment »

Part 12 – The Top of the Pyramid

September 12, 2008 by koniword

Q: *Svali, a very important question I'm sure all our readers are asking themselves is, who heads the Illuminati? Who is the top of the pyramid?*

A: Hooboy! Where do I start with this? First, it depends on what level. I would like to draw up a little map of the Illuminati from my memories (which are NOT FOND) of being part of this group. I will also try to fill in some names, but I want to be cautious. If I name too many names, I could draw some nasty fire from people in the group. Here it goes:

I will be doing an upside down pyramid, to show the Illuminati structure, NOT to trigger people (I know the Illuminati use lots of pyramids) but because this is how they have their hierarchy set up:

Level One: Local level: (anytown, USA)

Sister groups

There will be between ten and thirty sister groups in most metropolitan areas, dependent on the size of the city. The larger the city, the more sister groups. There are Illuminati groups in EVERY major city in the US and Europe. This first level is what is known as the "anarchical" or "low level". It is what most people reporting [satanic] ritual abuse discuss: a high priest and priestess preside over each group, which also contains a group of two to four trainers, and others with jobs. The sister groups unite on rare occasions, are aware of each other, but each one is fairly independent, and reports only to their leadership council.

Level Two: Metropolitan leadership council:

This is what the local leadership council over these groups will look like. It will also cover scattered groups in outlying rural areas.

Baalim (head) (1), assistants to the head (2) administrators over finances and day to day happenings (4), head trainers (oversee and teach other trainers) (6).

The total: 13 members

The Baalim and his two assistants report to:

Regional Leadership Council

The United States has been divided into seven different regions geographically. Each region has a 13 member leadership council that coordinates with the local leadership councils (are you getting the idea by now? The Illuminati are set up a lot like "Amway" or any other well-organized business enterprise with a flowchart of accountability for each member). This council will look something like this:

Head of council (1), Military (2 seats), Spiritual (2 seats), Scholarship (2 seats), Finances (2 seats), Training (2 seats), Sciences (2 seats).

Total: 13 members

The regional councils will represent the different areas of interest and knowledge that the Illuminati pursue. The membership will change over time as members are promoted or demoted.

The seven regional councils each have a leader as noted above, who reports to the:

National Council (The nations in Europe also have national councils, Mexico and Canada do as well, as does the Soviet Republic and China).

The national council will look much like the one above, with this difference; these are influential bankers with OLD money such as: The Rockefellers, the Mellon family, the Carnegie family, the Rothschild family etc. I know I shouldn't name names, but I will.

The heads of the National councils report to:

The Supreme World Council.

This council is already set up as a prototype of the one that will rule when the NWO comes into being. It meets on a regular basis to discuss finances, direction, policy, etc. and to problem-solve difficulties that come up. Once again, these leaders are heads in the financial world, OLD banking money. The Rothschild family in England, and in France, have ruling seats. A descendant of the Hapsburg dynasty has a generational seat. A descendant of the ruling families of England and France have a generational seat. The Rockefeller family in the US holds a seat.

This is one reason that the Illuminati have been pretty "untouchable" over the years. The ruling members are very, very, very wealthy and powerful. I hope this information is helpful. How do I know this? I was on a local leadership council (a head trainer), but I talked to those on regional. Also, every Illuminati child is taught who their "leaders" are, and told to take an oath of allegiance to them and the "New Order to come".

Q: *To what degree is the European royalty involved, what is their real pecking order and power structure and what is their U.S.-U.K. relationship in terms of financial/political/cult power. Is the Monarchy still running the show?*

A: This is hard to answer, but I'll try. The Illuminati leadership state that they are descended from royal bloodlines, as well as unbroken occult heritage.

See, there were two definitions of "royalty" used. Open royalty that is currently seen now, and "hidden royalty" of royal lineage and extreme occult power. Sometimes the two were concurrent, such as with the Prince of Wales.

I never thought of which country/line held the most power, since I was just a peon busily doing my job. But my understanding was: The Hanoverian / Hapsburg descendants rule in Germany over the Bruderheist. They are considered one of the strongest lines for occult as well. The British line is just under them, with the royal family. Definitely, they rule the UK branch under the Rothschilds in the occult realm, even though parliament rules the country openly.

In France, again, descendants of the royal families are also in power in the occult realm, but the French Rothschilds hold the reigns over all or them. The U.S. is considered lower, and younger, than the European branches. This is why the children of leaders are ALWAYS sent to Europe for part of their training; the education is considered better and the U.S. families want to renew their affiliation with the european forebears.

Germany, France, and the UK form a triumvirate that rules in the European cult. The USSR is considered important, and has the strongest military groups. **The USSR has been promised fourth position in the New World Order, BEFORE the role the U.S. would have**, because the USSR has been more helpful and cooperative over the years with furthering the agenda.

The descendants of the former ruling families there are also involved in the occult leadership, along with the newer ones. There is no marxism in the cult. China will be ranked after the USSR, then the U.S.. **But a lot of the current U.S. leadership will be in Europe when the change occurs**, and many have homes there. They will be "changing nationalities" overnight, as it were. This is the little that I do remember. Wish I had been a better student of this stuff, but I was too busy trying to stay alive when I was in it.

Posted in Interview with Svali - The Illuminati in America | 6 Comments »

Part 11: Illuminati Proof – Vulnerabilities

September 12, 2008 by koniword

Q: *Svali, have you ever come forward publicly with that story, or is this the first time?* A: I have never gone into the demonic aspects much, because it is so controversial (ie. your question below!). I have shared this before with my husband, my therapist, and a close friend. I'm not really a "public" person, I've only posted some articles at Suite101.com, to help others who are trying to get out of the cult. I hate sensationalizing stuff, personally, because it can detract from the real problem; children are being hurt and abused, and the abuse needs to stop. Call it demons, aliens, or whatever, there are evil men (and women) using small children and profiting from their pain. That is why I have spoken out against this group.

Q: *I am certain that a lot of readers will say 'Come on, now I know this is just sci-fi, how can this be real?!' and would want to see some proof or evidence to that. What would you say to them?*

A: I would say "go to a ritual, you will see plenty" except that I don't want ANYONE to ever see or be near that type of evil. Spiritual realities don't leave physical marks, but I think it is interesting that throughout recorded history, mankind has written about these type of phenomena.

Could all of our recorded histories be false? Could mankind be a pathological liar throughout the centuries in this area? If a person visits Africa, they will also hear accounts of shape shifting done by the occult, and there, they DON'T dissociate, so you can interview people who have seen it while fully conscious. In South America, and Asia, this also occurs. How could a world-wide phenomena be made up by groups that had no previous contact with each other? Does the demonic leave a

trail, a mark that I can point to? No. But does it leave an indelible impression on those that have witnessed it? Yes, and even in premedieval times, this type of stuff was recorded. I didn't take videos or snapshots of this stuff happening, so a person has to decide whether they believe it or not based on oral testimony. I don't really care. I know what I saw.

Q: *Also, to wrap this interview up for now, what do you see as the Illuminati's Achilles Heel, their vulnerability? Is there any way to stop them, and a way for humanity to move on and say 'It is finished!'?At the moment it seems hopeless, sort of like having your fingers in a chinese finger trap, – you know what I'm talking about – with no way out.*

A: 1. Their arrogance (I think I mentioned this before) is their weakness. These people think they are untouchable, and this could make them careless.

2. If by a miracle, enough people took this SERIOUSLY and started organizing in some way to stop the Illuminati take over, with prayer and God's guidance, perhaps they could be stopped. I hope so, with all of my heart.

3. Stopping pornography and child prostitution and drug smuggling and gun running would take out a huge chunk of their profits. Maybe they would slow down. But honestly, stopping the above would be as difficult as stopping the group.

4. To be honest, I don't know what could really stop them. I have written about this group to try and expose them, I have gone to the police several times, given videotaped testimony against them in a court case (the interview was with 5 lawyers and took 3 hours), knowing that my ex-headtrainer would be seeing a copy of the video (I thought about smiling and waving and saying "hi Jonathan", but then decided that might be going a little too far).

I have encouraged others in getting out, and helped a few survivors find safe housing and a way to stay out. I guess each person has to do their best in fighting these people, in the way they feel led to. My skills tend to be in writing, so I am using them.

Q: *If you have any last comments or think there are some areas we have not touched or topics you would like to take us to, please feel free to share those.*

A: If anyone has heard the sobs of a child when it has been used brutally by adults, or the screams of a child psychologically terrorized, they would do anything they could to stop this abuse.

There are children as young as three and four being used in pornographic films, beaten black and blue if they refuse to comply. There are toddlers being forced to watch brutalities, then given a stick and told to go over and hit the victim themselves, or they will be beaten. The child hesitates, it doesn't want to, and the adults hit the child, until the child goes, tears streaming down its face, and unwillingly does what the adults tell it. This is cruelty beyond belief.

To see a slightly older child with an electric dog collar around its neck, shocked when it tries to "escape" and treated as an animal, to the laughter of the adults and older children around it, and the child goes over to a bush and vomits from fear and self-loathing.

These are the pictures that any survivor of the Illuminati holds in their heart, and these are the reasons I will write and write about them to expose them, and why my heartfelt prayer is that they can be stopped. I wish I were making this up, but I'm not. I wish I didn't have these pictures engraved in my memory, but I do.

Q: *Svali, would you be willing to answer readers questions or feedback, in form of some future article? I think there may be some questions coming in for you at some point, probably to cover some details about your story*.

A: I would prefer that they send their questions to you, and then you forward them, if possible. I don't want to get a lot of "hate mail" because I am writing

about a topic that is controversial and politically incorrect to talk about.

I'm sure there will be those who say, "oh, she just wants attention". Well, I get plenty of attention at the classes I teach, with a room full of students, and lots more fun besides. I get attention seeing my NON abuse articles in print, and make money besides (which I don't when I write about this)..

No, I want to expose these people, that's my motivation. Some will believe what I am writing, others won't. That's fine with me. If they feel the need to vent their disbelief, that's fine, as long as I don't get lots of cuss words, or people saying I'm stupid (oh, yes, I get letters like that at times) or uneducated.

Sorry, none of the above are true. I have 2 university degrees. I had to, I was told to by the cult. They don't let stupid people lead.

Oh, and HJ, I won't just disappear on you or recant anything I wrote. You can email me anytime with questions, and I will delightedly expose what SOBs this group is composed of. Oops, that doesn't sound Christian there, but God appreciates honesty, doesn't He? I'm only accurately describing them. I'm still working on forgiveness, as you can see…

Q: *Svali, I'm grateful you took the time to share those experiences with us, which I'm sure was neither easy nor pleasant. I wish you all the best, for you and your family. Perhaps more people will read this, and pass this article on to others. Maybe we can stop all of this shocking brutality, child abuse, the Illuminati someday. It's never too late. Thank your very much for this interview, Svali.*

Posted in Interview with Svali - The Illuminati in America | Leave a Comment »

Part 10 – More About Demonic Shape Shifting

September 12, 2008 by koniword

: *Tell me more about the shapeshifting part, please. I have heard about this elsewhere, and this not just occuring during rituals, some people claim to have seen politicians shapeshift, for instance. When you say 'demonic' are you talking about a specific 'demon' or type of demon? Is it possible that these demons are really nothing more than some type of ETs influencing the Illuminati, in turn deceiving them?*

A: Since you asked about shape shifting, I will share a little more, but it also relates directly to my own belief system. Can't help it, so I will warn you here that I will be discussing fundamental Christianity and the demonic.

After being raised in a group that glorifies the demonic, I became a Christian years ago. I honestly believe that without faith in Jesus Christ, I could NEVER have gotten out of the Illuminati, and one reason I don't fear for my life when I share what I remember is that I believe that God is able to protect me.

His love is the antithesis of the cruelty and evil that I saw in this group. His compassion and infinite caring and purity the opposite of the sexual abuse and darkness that surrounded the rituals. I believe that God has forgiven my past, I have sincerely asked His forgiveness, or I could not live with the memories of what I did to others (such as getting young girls addicted to drugs, so they would prostitute for the cult, as only one example).

I have renounced that lifestyle, given it up, and only Christianity has shown me the love and forgiveness and healing that I have needed for a soul weary beyond belief after seeing the underbelly of life and the cruelty that human beings are capable of showing to others.

In the occult world, I do believe that there are demons, that they are real, and that they have a spiritual hierarchy that the cult hierarchy attempts to emulate on a

physical plane.

There are principalities, and lower demons, and they control the portals into other spiritual dimensions that humans have NO BUSINESS entering. This stuff is destructive in the extreme to people.

The shape shifting was usually in the context of an occult ceremony, by those given completely over to the demonic. Humans took on the form of animals for a period of time, or of hideous looking beings, and they were NOT aliens. This was demonic activity that caused a human to see the demonic revealed, and distorted what they saw.

I have seen people go temporarily "blind" because of the demonic influence. I have seen animals psychically killed, by others coming into a circle and directing their "energy" at the animal. These were not aliens, some of them were people I grew up with, and my own mother (she was strange, but not an alien).

I participated in this as well at times, and I'm no alien, just a wounded human being. I believe that the demonic does have sexual relations with humans, because it is recorded in the Bible (Genesis); God also forbids it as being completely wrong.

In fact, the Biblical covenants are the antithesis of the dark covenants practiced by the Illuminati, and I have found a lot of healing by going to Scripture and seeing how God views our world, and how He deals with the Spiritual realm. He is going to win, and is in the process of winning the battle.

I will share with you a dream I had 2 years ago. I was standing in a large room, circular shaped, with tiers of rows. A large emblem of the world with a wreath above it was on the wall, and robed figures surrounded me. I was before the Supreme World Council (who will rule when the NWO comes in), and they were pointing at me and saying I was a traitor and would have to die.

The sense of darkness and oppression in the room was intolerable, I was choking from it. One of the leaders came forward, and said that I would die a traitor's death, as an example to them all, unless I came back into the fold of "family".

I fought the dark impulse to give in to save my life, then in my mind, cried out "Jesus, save me". Instantly, the love and peace of God filled my heart, I was no longer afraid, and I told him, "No, because you are defeated, you just don't realize it. You can kill my body, but I serve a God who has defeated you and everyone in this room."

I woke up at this point, filled with joy. Now you know why I don't mind answering questions about my past. I believe in a God who is greater than the plans of evil men. They can plot all they want, but in the end, their plans will be defeated.

So ask away, any time, and I will share with you all that I remember. I don't mind exposing them, although I do have a lot of cynicism, as I have noted, as to whether people will do anything about it.

While I respect your desire to investigate, and your openess to any possibilities, I can tell you that as a former lifetime member of the group, I saw demons acting, not reptiles or aliens. I would really wonder about aliens who were as vicious and against Biblical Christianity in particular as the demons I saw.

Posted in Interview with Svali - The Illuminati in America | 1 Comment »

Part 9 – Ritual Sacrifices – Demons- Shape Shifting

September 12, 2008 by koniword

Q: *Svali, earlier on you talked about sacrifices. You are talking about animal sacrifices, right? Give me a bit more details about that, please.*

A: I hate to sensationalize things by going into gruesome particulars, but I will share a little.

First, please remember that the Illuminati have SIX branches of learning, and the spiritual (where the sacrifices are done) is only ONE part of what they do. I was in Sciences, and used to make fun of people who specialized in spiritual. Yes, everyone has to go to spiritual rituals during certain high days, but I tried to stay as far from it as I could. It's ugly, crude, and gross, but considered important.

1. The celtic branch of spiritual believes that power is passed at the moment between life and death. They will do rituals with children, or even older adherents, where the person is tied down, and an animal is bled to death on top of them. The belief is that the person receives power from the departing spirit, which "enters" the person. It is also highly traumatizing and horrible to have an animal go through its death throes on top of you. Throw in a few threats that "this will happen to you if you ever tell," and a quite strong impression is made on small children.

2. **Opening portals and dimensions:** I know, this sounds like stuff from a sci-fi film, but these people really believe that there are other spiritual dimensions, and that to pass into them, first a major sacrifice is done to "open a portal", usually several animals. I have also seen animal sacrifices done to protect from the demonic, or blood used to "close a circle" so the demonic cannot penetrate it.

The Illuminists very much believe in the spiritual realm, and have codified practiced over hundreds of years from ancient occultic rituals. They believe they can control these powers (I believe they are deluded).

Sacrifices are also done on high holy days. I have seen an animal "psychically killed" in front of me, and have no way to explain what I saw. I have also seen human sacrifice, but these were very rare (I believe I have seen two or three real ones in my life, the rest were set-ups).

They really don't want to kill off their children, they want a new generation to grow up and continue the practices. I have also heard of them buying children from other countries, and using them, or the homeless, but never witnessed it myself.

More often, I saw animals used in sacrifices and rituals. Other loss of life, rare but horrible, I saw as a head trainer because of my job. Rarely, a trainer would push a person too far, and didn't check for signs of stress. Especially with some of the newer medications used to create trance states, their meds covered the more obvious signs of trauma and stress (elevated heart rate, rapid breathing, tremors, pupil size changing), or blunted them.

Inexperienced trainers would miss more subtle signs, and basically screw a person up. It is horrible to work with a person, and they NEVER COME BACK. They become a vegetable, or worse, they scream and scream for hours without end.

We ocassionally had to "put down" these training failures, by using a lethal injection of air, or insulin. The person was then set up in a "fatal crash" or "fire" to dispose of the body. May God forgive me for the few times this happened and I was forced to act. I so regret it now. A person cannot be kind or sympathetic. And, the trainer always knows that it could be them next on the table, screaming, so they do their jobs well.

Any failures are heavily punished, to say the least. One of my jobs was teaching younger trainers the masking effects of hypnotic drug combinations, and how to recognize subtle clues of distress. Sigh.

Do the failures count as "sacrifices" to a horrible evil that is perpetrated on others? I think so, even though there was no ritual about it at all, it was all done in a traning room with lab coats and needles.

Q: *Svali, I have to ask you this: There are stories floating around on the internet about the Illuminati (and other agencies) being run by extra-terrestrials, ET's, in*

particular a reptilian race, operating from a higher dimension. Any thoughts on that?

A: My answer will probably cause a lot of anger, and it's not meant to step on any toes. Here it goes.

I have never seen an alien or extra-terrestial. I have seen some programming to make people THINK they saw aliens, as a cover story for programming, if they remembered. None of the head trainers I knew, or others on leadership council, believed in aliens, although I never asked them.

I personally believe that the reptilian stuff is actually the demonic at work. I have seen shape-shifting and other stuff because of demonic influence (okay, so here some will say, gee, she believes in demons, that's as far out as aliens).

Well, this is what the Illuminati certainly believe in. They KNOW there are spiritual realities, and think they can control them. Those of a more cynical bent would say the shape shifting was a drug induced hallucination and group hysteria in the context of a ritual setting. I will let each reader decide based on their personal comfort zone. But no, absolutely no reptiles or aliens seen in Washington, DC, or San Diego, Ca. as of 5 years ago, at least I never saw them.

Posted in Interview with Svali - The Illuminati in America | Leave a Comment »

Part 8 – The Fourth Reich

September 12, 2008 by koniword

Q: *The way you describe the Illuminati it sounds like the Third Reich Revival. I can certainly see the Nazi traits in their behavior and goals. It seems like Germany is taking the lead, yet again, in uniting the EU, we see the setting up of a European Army, the Rapid Reaction Force, and a World Court. How is this ultimately going to play out?*

A: Actually, they have a name for the New World Order. One of the synonyms used is the **"Fourth Reich"**. I'm serious. Lots of Illuminists have Fourth Reich programming inside. Yep, Germany, and the EU, will dominate the world economy. The US economy will go down for awhile, then restore with the help of Europe.

Q: *The Book of Revelation pretty much paints a gloomy picture of how this is going to end, and by what means. How is this going to effect the Illuminati agenda? They would certainly know about the prophecies of old and their own foretold demise. Are they attempting to use prophecies, somehow, to their advantage by way of deceiving human beings?*

A: Basically, they are in denial. They believe that history can be changed, and that John's prophetic revelation is only one interpretation of the future. They are aware of Revelations, but don't take it too seriously.

Remember, some of those at the top are ALREADY in power, figuratively speaking. They dominate the financial picture, have immense wealth, several mansions around the world, anything they want, and the (to them) joy of controlling millions of others. They believe their intellect is sharp, and that they will be the "good guys" in the New Order. They are Luciferians, and so believe the Bible is misguided in its assertions.

For all intents and purposes, if you asked them, they would probably laugh and say, "But the new order is already here. It just isn't open yet."

They have been in power for several hundred years, with no lightening bolts from heaven striking them dead. They may even believe that they represent God's will on earth (remember, they serve "God", too, just not the same as the Biblical Christian one).

They would ask back, "how did God allow people to develop such potential if He didn't want us to help them use it? Isn't it a criminal waste of the intellect and the gifts he gave us to NOT develop them, and help people mature into a better race?' They would argue along these lines.

They believe that basically, they are GOOD and doing a good work, even if the means are tough to endure at the time. They are weeding out the weak and unfit, and developing a supreme human being. I know it sounds like hog wash, but they truly, honestly believe this at a core level. To be under the judgements in Revelations, they would have to see themselves as evil, and they don't.

I hope this helps explain a little. I think they would see themselves in that picture as riding in on the white horses, not the dark ones. Such is the power of deception. I am a Christian, myself, and have given up these old beliefs that I was taught in the cult.

Posted in Interview with Svali - The Illuminati in America | Leave a Comment »

Part 7 – Illuminati Symbols and Clues; Level of Infiltration

September 12, 2008 by koniword

Q: *'Yes, tell me more about that (german connection, masonic temple, the 'institute' and the Baal statue in Canada, please [see previous article]). What are some of the Illuminati trademarks, symbols and clues that are placed throughout society as their signals (other than the pyramid and all-seeing-eye of Horus), intentionally or unintentionally. Does the Illuminati get careless?*

A: To completely answer these questions, you would need my whole biography. I had thought once about writing it, but I doubt many would read it (seriously, this isn't false modesty) and also I really don't believe people will do anything about the Illuminati even if they know. Sorry for the cynicism, but it is based on a lifetime of experience.

The Illuminists don't care who prints this stuff, or if they are "exposed" because they are counting on the majority not believing it, having done a pretty good job with a media blitz campaign (seen any articles in Newsweek or Time lately that addresses this other than as a laughable conspiracy theory? Guess who owns Time-Warner?).

I have heard them laughing about this very thing in leadership meetings five years ago, and I doubt their attitude has changed much since then. If people DID believe this, if action were able to be taken, then I would be very surprised and quite happy.

I'll give you an example. Two years ago, I tried to find a publisher for my book on how the Illuminati program people. I wanted it available for therapists who work with survivors. I couldn't find anyone willing to consider it; they told me it was much too controversial, and "there is no market for this among the general public". Sad, but true.

At the same time, I do believe that God is in control of world history. I have exposed them, and self published my book for free on the web, to let those who work with survivors realize what they have been through. It's hard to help people leaving a group without understanding the traumas both emotional and physical that they have endured.

Okay, now to your questions.

1. The Bruderheist is the ruling council of Germany. It meets in the black forest region, which is considered the center of the earth, and a vortex for

psychical/spiritual energy. They are some of the most vicious people I have ever known in my life, and make the Nazis (who they encouraged) look like fun people. They are still there, manipulating people, running banks, and channeling their dirty money to Brussels, Switzerland, and Cairo, Egypt.

2. Canada has a very large Illuminati and Templar Knight community (they are hand in glove groups) that worship ancient deities. The gold or bronze statue of Baal is in a holy grove on a large private estate between Quebec and Montreal. Since I was only 12 years old when I went there, the details aren't quite as clear. But the ceremonies there were full of people in white gowns, lots of flowers and fruits and votive offerings, singing, then the final sacrifice in the arms of the statue.

3. Illuminati trademarks: these are the most cautionary people on earth. They try to leave absolutely NO tracks. Most of the symbology can be seen on T.V. or movies, and include: the concept of a military government ruling. These people are very, very militaristic.

The Phoenix: this is one of their highest military and spiritual symbols. If you see a German eagle, too, this is a huge sign. Certain companies will use a phoenix as their logo, especially red on black, or the reverse, this is a huge sign, since the Illuminati use many resuscitation rituals in their training, where the person is brought into a death, or near death state, then "resuscitated" and told that Baal, or some other entity, "gave them life" and they owe their new life to him and the group. Thus, the phoenix is a huge trigger and symbol.

Butterflies and rainbow signs are big triggers for people who have gone through the Monarch programming (yes, the Illuminists invented Monarch programming with the CIA). Certain types of jewelry are used as triggers. If a person goes online, and plays certain role games (like Ultima) the games are FULL of trigger symbols, such as gem stones. I don't play them but my husband does, and I have told him what the symbols mean. He thinks it's funny since they don't bother him (he isn't Illuminati).

A tiara, or crown with 13 gems, with a diamond in the center, is a symbol of the coming reign of the "chosen one".

Star of David: believe it or not, one of the highest Illuminati religious symbols is a star of David with a circle around it. Called "the great seal of Solomon" it is used at the highest ceremonies to invoke the demonic.

Earth, water, and fire: these three are used in a lot of ceremonies. Check out how many Saturday a.m. cartoons use this concept. You'd be amazed. In fact, "The Fifth Element" movie was based on it.

Greek and Roman mythology and symbols: The Illuminati use a tremendous amount of Greek and Roman mythology in their programming, and most people will have internal structures with a roman or greek temple inside. Lightening bolts, and any symbols from this time will also trigger those with this inside. For more, just pick up any recent Time magazine. Most of the ads are filled with Illuminati symbology. A picture of a head with a computer inside is another big one, symbolizes delta programming, for example.

Q: *Take the lead and tell me about issues you may not have covered in your articles or in this interview…. perhaps some issues I have missed in regards to the New World Order/ global government and such…*

A: 1. These people are pedophiliacs, they abuse and torture small children and teach them under duress to become perpetrators themselves from earliest infancy. This alone means they should be stopped.

They run the porn industry, along with other groups such as the Mafia. They make enormous amounts of money from drug smuggling, gun running, and human slavery (oh, yes, the buying and selling of human beings is alive and well in the 21st century).

They are involved in evil and money making in the extreme. If a profit is being made off of human suffering, you can trace the chain back somewhere to these people.

2. They have money and lawyers that could blast anyone confronting them out of the water.

3. They have infiltrated our government, and the governments of every country in the world, and well as the judicial and legal systems.

4. The media as well.

5. They run our financial institutions.

6. They are ruthless, ambitious, and will not stop at killing those they oppose. They invented MK-Ultra with the help of the CIA. Still want to take them on? Sorry, just letting you know what they are like.

7. They are working towards bringing in a new leader, who will usher in a Luciferian reign of joy, prosperity, and rewards to the faithful. Almost an Elyssian type paradise. Of course, the brutality would continue, and those who oppose his reign are to be hunted down and converted or destroyed, but the followers will be so happy and content that they believe these holdouts will want to come over to their side. Sounds unbelievable, but true.

Also, people will have new jobs, and leadership positions in this new order, since the Illuminati believe that their children are the brightest and best (remember that lifetime of training and teaching?) and will be the intellectual elite who will rule over the unintelligent, or "less fit". These people really, truly believe this, and almost worship Plato's ideal Republic as their blue print for the new order.

Now, the other side of the picture.

1. They are arrogant, and this could be their downfall. They view the common man as "sheep" with no intelligence. They are full of pride, believe they are invulnerable (see above) and that any press about them is the equivalent of a gnat to be swatted. Arrogant people make mistakes, and they are becoming more blatant and open in recent years.

2. They believe they can overcome God, which is a huge mistake. God can stay the hand of history, and has so far, in the hope that more from this group will get out, because He is merciful.

3. Most of them are wounded, abused victims, who don't realize that it is possible to leave the group. There is a lot of discontent in the ranks, and there would be a mass exodus if the members believed it were really possible to get out (and live). Many of the trainers I knew (I know, wicked, torturing pedophiles) were NOT happy with what they did. They would whisper quietly, or give a look, to show that they disagreed with what they had to do. They would resignedly do their jobs, in the hope of advancement.

Know what one of the biggest carrots offered to those who advance up in the group is? That you don't have to hurt people anymore, and that you can't be abused (it's true: only those higher than you in the group can abuse you, so everyone wants to move up, where the pool of candidates becomes smaller). Of course, people can choose to abuse anyone beneath them, and that motivates some (but not all!) to move up.

4. As more survivors leave, therapists and churches and support people are becoming more aware of the sophisticated mind control techniques used to control members. They are learning to undo it.

5. Prayer can overcome the greatest evil, and my greatest hope is that those I once knew in this group, including the heads and those who hurt me at times, would get out. That they could know that, yes, it is truly possible to leave.

Q: *I have seen Clinton do this hand sign on a few occasion, and now Prince William as well. Any hidden meaning?*

A: That is an old, well known greeting of one satanist to another. Usually, the Illuminists are a lot more subtle and don't do that publicly.

Posted in Interview with Svali - The Illuminati in America | 11 Comments »

Part 6 – Ritual Abuse – Mind Control Denial; Bohemian Grove

September 12, 2008 by koniword

Q: *I just find it amazing that this sort of topic (Ritual Abuse, mindcontrol) gets next to no press attention, considering the amount of evidence available.*

A: Here is where I will sound really, really cynical. I'm not surprised, because the Illuminati leadership often boasted that their best protection was that no one would believe what was happening. They also have their own media blitz campaign, one that is pretty effective. For example, a reporter with the initials M. S., who wrote articles on Ritual Abuse (RA) and Mind Control in the San Diego Union-Tribune, was a member of the Illuminati. His articles have almost a patent formula.

1. He interviews supposedly respected doctors in the field. These people with scholarly credentials, the "thinking man's verdict" give a rational, measured conclusion: no logically thinking being could ever possibly believe in ritual abuse, and the therapists that treat victims of it are leading the poor people on, the gullible little dears being oppressed by therapists of a most vicious and mercenary bent.

2. He then exposes the "fundamentalist, narrow minded" "raving" and "mentally ill" people who say that ritual abuse is real, and the "fraudulent" or supposedly mercenary/attention seeking therapists that work with them. His word images create the image of a person practically foaming at the mouth, full of demented ravings, on this side of the fence. He then brings in the heart break of dear, precious families broken apart by the wicked therapists who are "implanting" ideas of ritual abuse in these poor victim's heads.

Wrap up with the supposedly rational, caring, logical and compassionate person on the FMS board saying how tragic it is that this is occurring, that something needs to be done.

M.S. never mentions that the therapists who work with ritual abuse survivors work for very low pay, or sometimes for free, to help these people break free of the chains of a lifetime. He never ever interviews the large percentage (>85%) of the psychological field that has stated that they believe that ritual abuse is, or could be real; instead, he only interviews the minority viewpoint to feed his agenda.

Okay, so now we know that the normal media is quite biased at times.

Q: *But, with the evidence out there, why aren't more people concerned about the Illuminati?*

A: Because they simply can't, won't believe that this is happening. I am a strong Christian, and in Revelations, it says that right before the return of Jesus, people will be acting as if nothing has happened, that all is normal, in spite of evidence to the contrary. You could show people a video taken of a ritual, and they would declare: "it has to be a fake; people just don't do those things." You can show them a site with pentagrams, buried bones, and other evidence, and they would say, "Oh, that is just teenagers playing around". You can show them photos of underground tunnels near Los Alamos, and they will say, "Isn't that interesting. Must be some government project." They can be shown the scars on a survivor's

body, from cigarette burns in childhood, and old lash marks that have healed on their back, and the question would be "are you sure it wasn't self inflicted?"

The evidence is there, but in my opinion, the average person does NOT want to know, and even when confronted with it, will look the other way.

The Franklin case is a point. How much evidence has come out? Or the MK-Ultra documents that have been declassified, shown as real, and people ignore it.

Okay, I'll get off my soap box. But I believe that the media that downplays ritual abuse is feeding into a deep need in the average person to NOT know the reality. In fact, how can a person face the fact of great evil in mankind, unless they have either a strong faith in God, or are faced with insurmountable evidence? We as human beings want to believe the BEST of our race, not the worst, IMHO.

Q: *You probably have heard of the 'Bohemian Grove'. What do you know about this? Any connection to the Illuminati?*

A: I myself do not know anything about the Bohemian Grove. Remember, I wouldn't have been in a position to have much to do with it. Most of my connections were with Germany. I was never prostituted out, instead I taught others to be that. But I myself never went there, and really don't know anything about it. I'm sorry I can't be more helpful there.

Now, if you were asking about the masonic temple in Alexandria, Va., or the "Institute' in Charlottesville, Va., or a small grove up in Canada with a bronze statue of Baal, I could help you. Sorry I don't have anything to share on this topic. If the Bohemian Grove is occult, though, it probably definitely is known about by the Illuminati.

Posted in Interview with Svali - The Illuminati in America | Leave a Comment »

Part 5 – Illuminati – CIA Connection – Russia & China

September 12, 2008 by koniword

Svali: I just want you and your readers to know that I am NOT an Illuminati expert, nor do I want to be. I am only a survivor who was part of this group, in a lower management position locally. I did NOT rub elbows with the rich and famous, although I heard about things that occurred at higher levels (people do gossip even in the cult, they're still human beings).

There are other people who have come out and disclosed. I don't know them personally, but I have heard about them. One is Brice Taylor, in California and North Carolina (she lives part time in both places). Another is **Neil Brick** of SmartNews, he seems to be very real and believable and a nice person. Others are **Caryn StarDancer**, of Survivorship.org, and **Annie McKenna** (I think she even wrote a book about her experiences [ed. 'Paperclip Dolls'], it is quite good). There are others, and if you go to the Suite101.com site, there are links to resources and also survivor pages. Survivorship.org also has links.

Some survivors have self-published their stories on the web, to help the public know that this is going on. I am only one person among many who has come out to talk about my experiences, and my experiences are limited to what one person did in the Washington, DC area and the San Diego, Ca. area between 1957 and 1995. A person who was doing their job at the time, was very misguided, and who is now heartily sorry for the things that I once participated in.

Q: *How do survivors remain anonymous after seeking help? Would the cult not go to extreme measures to find and silence programmers or members that have left the cult? To what ends would they go to shut you up?*

A: At Suite 101, and in my book, I wrote a whole chapter on staying safe. Here's

the URL for the Suite 101 article: Breaking Free of the Cult. It includes tips on staying safe. Yes, they do try to recontact people who get out. The first way they do this is through their family (remember they are transgenerational). My mother told me to "come back or die" four years ago, which triggered off lethal self destruct programming inside (I believe she was counting on my coming back, but she was wrong and I almost died. God spared my life). I then had to go in and dismantle it all. When I left, the head trainer was pretty arrogant. He had said I would be dead within 6 months if I remembered, because "no one could remember with what I put in her and live". Direct quote from Jonathan M., head trainer, and I hope he reads this article.

Second, a lot of people get abducted and reaccessed because they : phone their perps, go out alone at night (you wouldn't believe the stories I have heard from survivors who told me they went out at 2 or 3 am to the store, alone, walking down alleys. What were they thinking????).

I helped one survivor get out three years ago, she was being harrassed by the group, and was fighting back, she literally pulled a gun on a would-be abductor and he backed away (he had his gun out) when she asked him, "and who of the two of us do you think is the better shot?" She was an expert marksman). She stayed with me for 6 months, and is free of the group.

They usually do give up after awhile, and get tired of trying to pull people back. I could never live in San Diego, or DC, though. The chances of running into an old trainer or someone I knew would be too great. Instead, having physical distance (people in the cult in this state don't know me or care about me one way or the other) helps. I also have tons of accountability. These people like secrecy, and won't usually act out in public if someone is with people who aren't part of their group. I have heard of people being assassinated , which is one reason that I don't go on T.V., or speak publicly. I live very quietly and anonymously out here. MOST cult recontact comes because the person recontacts, though. The pull to go back is enormous at times, and has to be fought a lot, especially in the first years. To find out why someone would go back to their abusers, read my article on "Trauma Bonding: The Pull to the Perpetrator" at Suite 101.

Q: *I want to get back to the Illuminati's political agenda. What is the connection between the CIA, FBI, and other secret services and the cult? To what degree are they infiltrated? And what is the real agenda of these secret services?*

A: They are all infiltrated. I don't think everyone in these groups are Illuminists, but a lot of the leadership is. An example: my mother was friends with Sid Gottlieb, who was part of the CIA. The farm I grew up on was only about a half hour away from his home in Culpeper, Va. She also knew the Dulles family. A lot of the researchers in the CIA were part of it, and I visited Langley, Va. at intervals growing up. MK-Ultra was funded in part with Illuminati money. These people use the most sophisticated mind control techniques on their members, believe me.

When I was in San Diego, human experimentation was still going on. Jonathan and I were investigating the effects of certain drugs on inducing trance states and assisting with programming. We would take the data, and download it into a database (oh, yes, the cult is very technologically sophisticated) and then send it to Langley.

Many of the administrators and directors at the FBI are also Illuminists. The CIA helped bring over german scientists after WWII. Many of these were also Illuminati leaders in their own country, and they were welcomed with open arms by the U.S. group. They also funnelled all information they were learning to the Illuminati.

Q: *I assume if the U.S. political, banking, and military systems are all fairly well under Illuminati control this would then also be true for Eastern Europe, Russia and other communist bloc countries as well. What does this mean for relations between the West-East axis? Was Russia, or the USSR at the time, ever the adversary it was*

made out to be, and was there a grand plan behind having Russia as an enemy?

A: Russia was never really a threat to us. Marxism was funded by the Illuminati, and espoused as a counterbalance to capitalism. The Illluminati believe strongly in balancing opposing forces, in the pull between opposites. They see history as a complex chess game, and they will fund one side, then another, while ultimately out of the chaos and division …, they are laughing because they are ultimately beyond political parties. A top western financier will secretly meet with an eastern or russian "adversary" during those years, and have a good laugh at how the "sheep" were being deluded. I am sharing here what I was taught, and also observed.

When DELPHI met with ORACLE in Europe, (these are the head training groups for the northern hemisphere and european continents) the Russian, German, French, British, Canadian, and US trainers all worked together. In fact, this is one reason why plurality of linguality is valued in the Illuminati. I had to learn six languages as a child, and learn to converse with people from around the world. They are truly an international group, and the group's agenda supercedes any nationalistic feelings. There is also a lot of trading back and forth of members in these groups. A russian trainer might come to the US for awhile, complete a job, then go back, or vice-versa.

Q: *China is starting to rattle their sabers and arming itself with nuclear weapons which are pointing at U.S. cities. Is all this occurring according to Illuminati agenda or is there still a fairly large 'uncertainty, random or x-factor' involved that is beyond the Illuminati's control?*

A: I have been out for five years, so my information is "old news". But the military buildup of China is part of their plan. There are members of the group who are Asian, and very opportunistic. The Oriental Mafia groups are very much linked to Illuminati activity. The random factor in all of this is how the average citizen reacts. It can't be predicted, although Illuminati leadership will often invent different scenarios, and try to decide how they will act if the ordinary citizens react in an unexpected manner.

I was told that around 2020, the Illuminist agenda would be revealed openly. I don't know if this is accurate, or just propaganda that I was taught, or if they have changed this date since I was in the group.

Q: *Svali, earlier you were talking about mindcontrol victims and survivors that have come forward with their stories and publicised it. One of the more recent and high profile stories is the one of Cathy O'Brian [see links at* http://www.vegan.swinternet.co.uk/articles/conspiracies/cathyandmark.html and http://www.trance-formation.com/]. *She seems to be more of a CIA mind control victim, which still sound very much like your own story, in terms of technology and technique. Do you think there could be an Illuminati connection?*

A: As I mentioned before, the CIA and the Illuminati are definitely linked. The top leadership in the CIA are also Illuminati leaders. I mentioned [Allen] Dulles and [Sidney] Gottlieb as men I knew personally as a child and young adult. **The scientists that ran the MK-Ultra and other governmental mind control programs were Illuminists brought over from Nazi Germany**. That's why you will find that mind control victims ALWAYS speak German or have a dissociated part that speaks with a German accent; they are mimicking their abusers, which is very very common.

You could say that the CIA and the Illuminati are hand in glove companions. I know that the different Illuminati groups around the US also send data on the experiments they do to the central computer at Langley, Va. (oh, yes, human experimentation and mind control experiments are still ongoing, it didn't stop with WWII…).

Posted in Interview with Svali - The Illuminati in America | Leave a Comment »

Part 4: The Illuminati – Freemason Connection

September 12, 2008 by koniword

Q: *Svali, one of the more important points, which I am sure a lot of readers would like to know more about, is, what is the Illuminati /Freemason connection, as far as you are aware of, given your previous position in the Illuminati? Also, was there and is there an infiltration of the Masonic Order?*

A: The Freemasons and the Illuminati are hand in glove. I don't care if this steps on any toes, it's a fact. The masonic temple at Alexandria, Virginia (the city itself was named after Alexandria, Egypt, and is a hotbed of Illuminati activity) is a center in the Washington, DC area for Illuminati scholarship and teaching. I was taken there at intervals for testing, to step up a level, for scholarship, and high ceremonies. The leaders in this masonic group were also Illuminists.

This has been true of every large city I have lived in. The **top Freemasons were also top Illuminists**. My maternal grandparents were both high ranking Masons in the city of Pittsburgh, Pa. (president of the Eastern Star and 33rd degree Mason) and they both were also leaders in the Illuminati in that area.

Are all Masons Illuminati? No, especially at the lower levels, I believe they know nothing of the practices that occur in the middle of the night in the larger temples. Many are probably fine businessmen and Christians. **But I have never known a 32 degree or above who wasn't Illuminati**, and the group helped create Freemasonry as a "front" for their activities.

Q: *What exactly is the meaning of the pyramid on the back of the $1 U.S. note? I'm talking about the pyramid with the capstone detached and hovering above the rest of the pyramid, containing the 'All-Seeing-Eye'. Is this a Masonic or Illuminati symbol?*

A: The pyramid and the "eye of Horus" on the back of the dollar bill are Illuminati symbology. The pyramid is an ancient form based on the holiness of the **number 3** to the ancient mystery religions (it, not 6, is considered the most spiritual number), and a pyramid was a structure used specifically to call up the demonic, or occult, a point of psychic activity.

The eye is the all seeing eye of Horus (remember the emphasis on Egyptian magical religious practices? The book of the undead, etc.?) and the fact that no one can escape his magical reach. This eye is considered a demonic eye in the group, or the eye of the deity, and in Illuminati mythology is either open or closed, depending upon the spiritual time of year and the state of the person psychically. Young children are given "psychic surgery" where the eye is placed inside, and they are told that Horus will snatch their soul if they ever try to leave, or if they tell, or that the eye will explode. The symbol on the dollar is reinforcement for every Illuminati child who sees one, and the reminder that they are being watched.

The saying on the dollar, 'Novus Ordo Seclorum' also means "bringing in the new order", which is the Illuminati stated agenda. Just think, in the early 1800's, our forefathers already were looking forward to when the new order would be ushered in. Have I mentioned that this is a patient, forward looking group of intellectuals? That **Thomas Jefferson**, **Benjamin Franklin**, **FDR**, and others **were Illuminati leaders**? Our country may have been founded on freedom from taxation, but it was also founded on the New World Order just as surely.

Q: *How far back in time does the concept / cult of the Illuminati go? It seems to me that they have been around quite some time, possibly since antiquity, guiding, steering and using humanity for their own purposes, operating under different names? Can you elaborate?*

A: I was taught that the Illuminati had its roots in the ancient practices that reach into the beginning of recorded time; that the Babylonians on the plains created ziggurats to their deities, whom the Illuminati worship. They were proud of the fact that it was supposedly an unbroken occult line from then until now. The names changed, the basic group was the same.

The ancient mystery religions of Egypt, heart of dark magic were another forerunner, with adherents of Set, Osiris, Horus and Ra; and the Illuminists also believe their bloodlines have come down from the ancient kings of Egypt.

It's hard for me to know how much was cult propaganda, and how much truth is in the claims. The **Templar Knights** were definitely a forerunner during medieval times, as well as the **Rosicrucians** and **ancient celts** and druids (you know, the ones who built Stonehenge).

Posted in Interview with Svali - The Illuminati in America | 1 Comment »

svalispeaksagain 9:38 pm on October 7, 2021

Tags: exposure, Jesuit (10), mind control (69), occult (13), programming (60), Vatican (10)

Exposing the Vatican: Part 5

Survival of the Fittest

Mengele was a firm believer in the "survival of the fittest" and during the 1940s,1950s and 1960s infants trained by him and the Jesuits underwent terrible trials to determine which infants would live, and which would die. This helped them determine not only which were the strongest infants, but also which ones had the strongest will to live, a requirement for the terrible programming that Jesuit children undergo.

As soon as the infants can crawl (around 3 months of age in these highly intelligent infants), the first survival trial is conducted. Dozens of infants are placed in a room, with a barrier in front of them. In the center of a large room are three bottles of milk. The babies are hungry and thirsty, since they have not been fed for a day.

The barrier is raised, and the infants literally race by crawling to the center of the room. The strongest crawl over others and push the smaller or weaker ones aside. The first ones there get the bottles, and must keep it and drink it while other infants are trying to grab it away.

The three that "win" get to drink the bottle, and then watch the systematic slaughter of the infants that did not get a bottle, because the losers were deemed "inferior." This installs a terrible survival guilt at a very early age; the infant wants to eat, and to live, but is shown that their living means that others must die in this setup.

The message that only the strong are allowed to live is ingrained very deeply through this and similar experiments. After several trials, the Jesuits have created their first classes, or groups. Jesuit children are raised in classes of twelve at a time, and these infants will become closer than any physical brothers during their childhood, in part because of their ability to survive and trauma bond with one another.

This is one reason that the survivor will fear and despise weakness in themself and others. To them, weakness has always meant death.

Follow

Early Attachment Bonding and Utter Darkness

The basis of obedience within the Jesuits is formed upon two primary forms of programming: the avoidance of pain (the pain of “descending” and thus going to “hell”), or operant conditioning; and the formation of extremely deep attachments to primary figures. Their belief is that the combination of these two create “unbreakable” programming, and the truth is that very few Jesuits every truly do leave the order. The attachment bonding described here, in earliest infancy, makes it extremely difficult to do so.

When the infant is only a few weeks old, it is placed in a completely darkened room, with no noise or stimulus of any kind, and abandoned. This abandonment, which lasts for several days, is extremely traumatizing to the infant. At first, the infant cries in a normal manner (distress), which then turns to anger as the abandonment continues. Eventually, the infant becomes exhausted, sleeps for longer and longer intervals, and stops crying; instead, it whimpers as utter despair begins to hit.

The infant is psychologically unable to cope with impending death, as its body and psyche begins shutting down in the early stages of dying. The infant comes to the realization that no one will ever come and rescue them, and they will die in complete and terrible darkness.

In complete despair, the infant is dying, when a soft light enters the room. A Jesuit Father comes in, carrying a warm bottle; behind him is Theo (their name for the “benevolent” manifestation of satan). With kind words, the Father picks the infant up, soothes him/her and gives a life-sustaining bottle. The infant is insanely grateful for this deliverance from “utter darkness” (the deepest level of “Jesuit hell” for the worst deeds, such as treachery and betrayal of the order). As the baby takes the bottle and is comforted, they bond completely to the Father, and to the being (Theo) who is superimposed upon the Father. The Father begins programming that they “owe their life” to him, that he “rescued them from utter darkness” for a “special purpose”, that the infant is to “live and not die.” Trauma bonding at a deep level occurs, and the Father appears like a god to the infant, and in fact, will hold the “theo” (God) position inside.

This bond will be built upon and layered upon over and over as the years go on. The infant will NOT be allowed to truly attach to ANYONE ELSE for the rest of their life. All other caretakers and friends in the early years will either be killed or appear to be killed, or terribly betray the infant/toddler/child to teach them that there is only one who can be trusted: the Father the infant formed a primary bond to, and the spirit “Theo.” This is the core level of Jesuit bonding, and is by far the most difficult programming to break.

The infant will later “see’ the nannies that cared for him/her killed, or will even be asked to “kill” them or agree to their being killed, by the Father they bonded to, to prevent the Father being killed (in terrible setups where the infant must choose which lives and which “dies”). These setups also test the strength of the infant’s loyalty bond, which must be deep and unbreakable for successful later programming to occur. From the first days of life, the Jesuits begin installing utter and complete loyalty to them, represented by the primary Father the infant bonded with; and later, by three others they will also be allowed to attach to.

The primary mentor will always be a Jesuit Father that the infant (who is kept very young in the system) loves above any other, as described in the cruel abandonment scenario. The Father-mentee relationship is the deepest of all, as the Jesuit Father mentors others and molds them into

his image. He will hold a “theo” or god place within the system, and this bond will be the hardest to break, since it represents the deepest attachment of the core to a human being.

The purpose of this mentoring is to draw the infant into a relationship with “Theo” (satan’s benevolent personification) from its first days on earth. The Father will bond the infant to himself, and in doing so, bond the infant to the spiritual theo as well.

Helping the Survivor

The survivor of Jesuit programming has extremely disorganized attachment due to the fact that they have attached to satan himself (Theo) as well as their primary Father (referred to as “Father Theo”). There is a no less reliable being in creation to attach to, yet this was the infant’s only choice during early childhood if they were to survive. If given another option, the infant would have rejectedbonding to satan.

The early trauma is so severe, that it can take months or even years to grieve for the manipulation and “detach” from these primary figures. It takes intense prayer, and a deep desire by the survivor, to break free of this programming that pivots upon the Jesuit’s demonic use of infant attachment. The only real answer is for the survivor to choose to renounce the bonds to satan and the primary Jesuit Father, and to bond with Yeshua. During the interval, they will also need to bond at least temporarily with a caring figure who can represent the love of God to their systems, since these infants have never experienced this.

The older parts, once they become Christians, can help “reparent” the infants, helping them to understand that the Christian God truly does love them, and can keep them safe. Realizing at a deep level that Yeshua paid the full price for sins on the cross, and that their systems will not “descend” into hell and utter darkness, and realizing that the internal representations are based upon setups and manipulation, can help break the hold of this early attachment.

The survivor will experience attachment pain at the core level when these early setups and betrayals are remembered. They may feel infant terror at the thought of utter darkness. It is important to bind the demonic, and to prevent it from enhancing these memories, or the fear. They will often feel suicidal as the core despair, and the memory of the pain and betrayals comes up.

The survivor will test the love and caring of those they bond with outside of the Jesuit Order again and again. This is because they feel a huge “push pull” inside, and swing between craving love and nurturing, and wanting to distance themselves from any loving attention, which feels terrifying. Healing of this type of early wound is a process, and cannot be rushed, or the survivor will attempt to cope alone – and fall prey to reaccessing – since these infantile needs are used to push recontact programming.

Helpful Scriptures

Ps. 27:10. “When my father and my mother forsake me,Then the LORD will take care of me.” This can help with the deep core attachment pain, to understand that the Lord loves the survivor, even when it seems that no one else ever has. It can be extremely difficult for the survivor to come to the terrible realization that they had NO real father or mother; only manipulative, abusive Jesuit Fathers and programmers during infancy.
The comfort that can only come from knowing that the Lord truly loves the survivor, and cares for

them, can help.
Ps.71:6. "By You I have been upheld from birth; You are He who took me out of my mother's womb. My praise shall be continually of You.: This verse counteracts again the lie that the Jesuit Father and satan "let them live" and instead shows the truth that the Lord is the one who gives life at birth. The following scripture shows the spiritual condition that the motherless and fatherless Jesuit survivor find themselves in, and how the Lord responded to them. It answers how the Lord responds to this deep abandonment pain: It also shows why the survivor was able to survive the horrors of childhood and how it is possible for the survivor of this type of abuse to come to know the Lord: Ezekial 14:4-16
4 As for your nativity, on the day you were born your navel cord was not cut, nor were you washed in water to cleanse you; you were not rubbed with salt nor wrapped in swaddling cloths. 5 No eye pitied you, to do any of these things for you, to have compassion on you; but you were thrown out into the open field, when you yourself were loathed on the day you were born.
6 "And when I passed by you and saw you struggling in your own blood, I said to you in your blood, 'Live!' Yes, I said to you in your blood, 'Live!' 7 I made you thrive like a plant in the field; and you grew, matured, and became very beautiful. Your breasts were formed, your hair grew, but you were naked and bare.
8 "When I passed by you again and looked upon you, indeed your time was the time of love; so I spread My wing over you and covered your nakedness. Yes, I swore an oath to you and entered into a covenant with you, and you became Mine," says the Lord GOD.
9 "Then I washed you in water; yes, I thoroughly washed off your blood, and I anointed you with oil. 10 I clothed you in embroidered cloth and gave you sandals of badger skin; I clothed you with fine linen and covered you with silk. 11 I adorned you with ornaments, put bracelets on your wrists, and a chain on your neck. 12 And I put a jewel in your nose, earrings in your ears, and a beautiful crown on your head. 13 Thus you were adorned with gold and silver, and your clothing was of fine linen, silk, and embroidered cloth. You ate pastry of fine flour, honey, and oil. You were exceedingly beautiful, and succeeded to royalty. 14 Your fame went out among the nations because of your beauty, for it was perfect through My splendor which I had bestowed on you," says the Lord GOD.
This wonderful verse also shows the destiny of the survivor called out from this fatherless and motherless upbringing and training: to be wholly the Lord's and to be clothed with His splendor, and become a testimony to His goodness.

B. Early System Organization

During infancy, the master and system controllers are created, along with the parts and roles within these systems. The Jesuits program three main levels into their systems: a white, or cover layer. This will appear to be Illuminati, Templar Knight, Opus Dei, or another occultic group, and is complete, even to the "core" for this level, which is a false core meant to mislead anyone who attempts to break into the system without authorization.

This cover layer is there for a reason. The Jesuits often have their agents highly placed within the occultic organizations they oversee, and they don't want the organizations to realize that the individual is not an actual member. The system is created to look completely like the system of someone raised and programmed by the organization. The agent is actually there to review and report on the activities of the group's leadership to the Vatican.

There is another reason for this cover programming. Jesuit agents often spend time in Israel and other countries doing intelligence work; if picked up by the Mossad (Israeli intelligence) or Spetz (Russian intelligence), and interrogated (tortured), the other organization will believe that the

agent works for one of these groups, and have no idea that they actually work for the Vatican.

Jesuits who leave will always remember their white, or “cover” programming first and believe this is all there is inside. The other layers are much more loyal and difficult to uncover.

Beneath the white level is the black, or Vatican level of programming. This is where controllers and parts loyal to the Vatican, the Jesuits, and to Satan reside. High priests and priestesses that were involved in Vatican ceremonies will be part of the black theta system, just as high priests and priestesses loyal to the Illuminati (or other group)) and its deities will reside in the white theta system.

Beneath the white and black levels is the silver-grey, or new world order (antichrist) level. These systems have been created to serve the antichrist, and the NWO, are given specific roles, and are controllers for the two other levels. The grey level controllers and parts have always undergone extensive death and resuscitations, since this level is composed of “ascended masters” who have overcome their fear of death, and in fact, many of these parts live in a near-death, ecstatic and numb state of being. The Phoenix is the sign of an ascended master who has overcome death and risen again.

The infant is taught to organize their system along brain wave states, and to respond to cues. The earliest cues include golden whistles that play different notes worn by the Fathers, to summon specific parts; colors (the infant is taught to crawl to a green light when a gamma controller is out; to a blue light when a beta controller is out, a white light when an alpha controller is out, etc.).

Tones are also used extensively in early master programming. The top master controllers are each assigned a tone, to correspond with a brain wave state: the highest tone represents gamma, next highest, beta; next highest, alpha, then epsilon, then theta, and finally, the lowest, delta. Hearing the tone pulls the controllers for that system forward (the infant is taught with shocks and trauma combined with rewards to respond immediately).

Master controllers for a system are programmed to respond to the entire continuum, and internally, can “sing” the tones and hear back the response tones for their systems, for vary rapid and unconscious feedback loops and triggers. Jesuits always have perfect pitch because of this extensive use of tones and harmonics combined with the early songs used in programming, and have perfect auditory recall.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

Exposing the Vatican book: Part 4
September 30, 2021

III. How are the Jesuits financed?
August 30, 2021

book part 4
September 13, 2021
In "healing"

In "healing" In "mind control"

Pingback: Child Sex Trafficking by the Jesuits | cathy fox blog on child abuse

Naomi 12:44 am on October 11, 2021

For info (No need to publish my comment) :

The reference is Ezekial 16:4-14 and not Ezekial 14:4-16…

God bless you

Nao

★ Like

Pingback: Halloween 2021 | cathy fox blog on child abuse

T. 12:58 pm on December 12, 2021

“God” doesn’t love me or you. I’m not supposed to say that, but the one you call “God” has imprisoned us (bloodline families) here and we are at war with him. You don’t see the whole picture.

★ Like

T. 1:01 pm on December 12, 2021

Have you read Hidden_Hand interview? he mentioned you.

★ Like

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← Exposing the Vatican book: Part 4 Exposing the Vatican: Part 6 →

Create a free website or blog at WordPress.com.

https://svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com/2021/10/07/exposing-the-vatican-part-5/

svalispeaksagain 4:30 pm on September 13, 2021

Tags: Jesuit (10), mind control (69), occultic, programming (60), ritual abuse (65), Vatican (10)

book part 4

Trigger Warning: Please be aware that this information was meant to help therapists understand programming by a large occultic organization, and could be very triggering for survivors.

IV. Programming Methods

In this section, I will discuss some of the methodologies that the Jesuits use to train and program the members of their order. This information not only discloses how their work is done; it is also the "master template" that the 12 secret societies that serve the Vatican also use within their organizations (with modifications). These organizations include Illuminati, Knights Templar, Knights of Malta, Opus Dei, Magnificat, Trinity, Order of the Golden Dawn, Rosicrucians and others.

This is by no means comprehensive, and instead, is simply a short overview. Also, programming methods are always being updated, and new experimental programs developed, so that any book on programming will be outdated within weeks of its writing. But the principles remain the same over time, even if some of the methods change.

Mengele

Josef Mengele is considered "the father of modern programming" due to the information and methods that he developed during his infamous end-point experiments on infants, young children and adults inside the Nazi death camps. These experiments were funded in part by the Vatican, as well as other organizations, because they were highly interested in improving their methodologies.

Before Mengele, most serious programming was begun between birth to two years old (the age at which programming was initiated varied between groups), since behaviorists believed that the infant brain was too immature to hold much programming. Mengele proved with his well-kept records based upon unutterably cruel research done on infants that the most effective programming was done prenatally; that prenatal programming automatically enters into the

Follow

subconscious and deeper brain, and that the most effective time to create the core personality splits is during the first five months of life after conception. He also proved that fetuses can see, understand and respond to programming cues and images at this time in life, and can be taught to organize the splits based upon these cues.

A fetus and an infant can much more easily internalize an external object than an older child, since the fetal brain has no external world to contradict what it is told; and the infant brain is at its peak ability to absorb and process information during the first days of life.

The information that Mengele obtained was combined with data from other behaviorists, including attachment theory, to create programming that is considered "unbreakable." After the second world war, Mengele was often flown to Europe to program Jesuit infants. He worked for the Vatican, and left his personal stamp on many infants and young children programmed by them. He was also hired out at times (for an exorbitant fee) to other organizations, but his primary post-war work was continuing his research and programming Jesuit infants.

Mengele ran an infamous (within the occultic world) research center ("the institute") where he employed the top trainers within the 12 societies, who continued his research under his (brutal) supervision on end point trauma (trauma that takes the subject to physical or psychological death) and other traumas, and the effect on the human psyche. The volumes and volumes of carefully documented research data from that time are still held within the Vatican vaults, and have been replicated and shared throughout the world. The research that he began is still ongoing, as the search for better, "unbreakable" methods of programming continues. One of the larger research centers for experimental programming is on the West Coast of the United States; the large research facility is underground, and is combined with sophisticated milab (military laboratory) research. Another is in East Berlin; and another is in Prague in Europe, and yet another one exists in Rome.

In the following sections, I have divided up the programming methodologies used by the Jesuits into age categories, since different ages are considered "prime times" for the installation of different programs. But all foundational spiritual and other programs are created during the first few months of life in fetuses unfortunate enough to be selected by the Jesuits.

A. Infant Programming

When a Jesuit infant is born, it has already undergone significant programming within the womb. Immediately after conception and implantation of the genetically altered embryo (more on genetic research will be discussed later). Soon after conception, the occultic oracles place their hands on the womb of the expectant mother, to determine whether or not the embryo should be allowed to live. If yes, the embryo is dedicated to a demonic entity, and continues to grow.

By four months of gestation, early brain waves (delta waves) begin to appear in the fetal brain, and with it, some degree of consciousness. At this time, a primary trauma will often be intentionally engineered, to create one of the first splits (others will have been created even earlier). Often, the mother and fetus will be injected in utero with an agent that causes extreme pain, but does not cause labor. The fetus experiences extreme terror, excruciating pain, and will hear the mother screaming "Get it out!" regarding the fetus that appears to be causing her the intense pain in her womb.

This is a primary rejection trauma, and the pain and rejection combined will cause a core

personality split. This split is in a deep delta (unconscious) brain state, and the programming begins in earnest immediately afterwards. Headphones are placed on the womb, and for hours, the young fetal splits are exposed to recordings regarding their identity, their wants, their beliefs, and their role in the new world order. This programming occurs during the 16th week of gestation onwards, and the information in the recordings is recorded at the deepest unconscious levels before the infant is ever born.

Secondary, tertiary and other traumas will also occur within the womb, with spiritual ceremonies that dedicate these intra-utero splits to different demonic entities. Before the infant draws his or her first breath, they will have the foundational core splits, their beliefs and identities firmly in place.

These traumas can include the use of electromagnetic waves to cause extreme pain in the fetus; fetal surgery; breaking the arm of the fetus; electroshock, flatlining the mother (to punish the fetus, who is blamed for the mother's "death" and resultant spiritual pain/anxiety) and other traumas. The mother is carefully monitored with sophisticated, high-tech medical intervention to prevent abortion or premature labor, which is the body's natural response to these types of traumas.

The demonic is used to keep the splits in the fetus separate, since in nature, the splits would try to rejoin automatically. The demonic creates a deep feeling of terror and re-experiencing of the primary traumas should the prenatal psyche attempt to join together.

To enable the fetus to survive such traumas and become dissocative (rather than give up and die), immediately after primary rejection traumas and other traumas, the programmers will offer love and care to the fetus in order to create a deep bond with the programmer (s). This is done by speaking kindly to the fetus and birthmother, soothing them and meeting their needs, with phrases such as "I love you" etc. being used to create attachments. These deep bonds must be addressed for healing.

Birth Trauma

Upon birth, an infant that is to be used by the Jesuits undergoes a very specific trauma. As soon as the infant is born, a Jesuit Father takes the infant and begins to smother it to death. The infant is asked spiritually, "Do you want to live?" Behind the Father is satan, and the infant is aware within their spirit that if they answer, "Yes" that satan will enter them. This being is hideous and terrifying, and it takes a very strong will to live to respond affirmatively. If the infant responds "No" they are smothered to death. If yes, they are allowed to breathe, and with their first cries in the physical world, satan attaches to the core.

The birth mother will be killed at the point of birth, and the newborn will be shown the body (which has been split open from the birth canal upwards) and is told "this is your fault" to create extreme guilt in the infant, and this is an underlying foundation for later guilt-based programming.

Nannies

When infants are very young, there are caretakers that perform physical care for the infant. These "nannies" or surrogate mothers take care of several infants at a time. While caretaking, they give bottles, rock the infant, and sing songs to them. These songs always contain

programming embedded within them; they are songs about various spiritual (demonic) entities and praise to them, or of the joy of the coming order, or other messages. The goal is for the infant to associate caretaking and the relief of physical distress or abandoment feelings with love and loyalty to the order and the beings described. This is a terrible manipulation of an infant's need to attach to a caregiver, since these early songs are also embedded within the subconscious of the infant.

Helping the survivor

Because the prenatal and birth traumas are so emotionally and spiritually devastating, they will often only come up fairly late in therapy if ever, after the survivor has received help for other later splits. These primary traumas cause intense feelings of grief, rejection and despair, and are often the prime traumas underlying suicide programming. The demonic terror that causes fear of coming together may affect all parts of the systems, causing a prime fear of remembering or coming together for all parts, at an unconscious level.

It takes an experienced therapist to help an individual through these types of trauma. The survivor will be understanding that their entire life, even in the womb, was planned and programmed out, and feel intense anger at the betrayal and manipulation it involves. They may direct this anger at God, wondering where He was when this happened; and they may wonder if any part of them was ever not "owned" by the group.

This is where scriptures regarding God's love for individuals both before and during their creation in the womb can help; as well as praying and asking the Lord to show the survivor what He thought of them at conception. This is needed truth, to counteract a lifetime of being told and believing lies such as that the survivor was always the "Jesuit's", since they will have no memories before the prime traumas.

Because the programming and messages are implanted at such a very deep, unconscious level, it can also help to use a digital recorder, and record very specific scriptures and truths to counteract the lies (i.e. "reprogramming" with truth). It may take a significant amount of time to bring truth to these core beliefs, and is one reason that controllers at higher levels in the system may seem so "resistant" to truth: they may have buried at the unconscious, fetal level, prime traumas and programming that counteract other truths brought in.

Some helpful scriptures can include:

Ps.139:13: "For you created my inmost being; you knit me together in my mother's womb."

This verse directly counteracts the lie that the cult "owned" the person from the beginning, and shows who truly gave them life and their individual characteristics, in spite of prenatal programming.

Psalm 51:6. "Yet you desired faithfulness even in the womb; you taught me wisdom in that secret place."

How does the Lord teach wisdom in the womb? Only He truly knows the answer. But He does minister even to the fetus in the womb, as is made clear in this verse. The programming messages are NOT the only things the fetus was aware of before birth.

Isaiah 44:2. “This is what the Lord says— he who made you, who formed you in the womb, and who will help you: Do not be afraid, Jacob, my servant, Jeshurun, whom I have chosen.”

How wonderful for the survivor to know that they were loving formed in the womb by the LORD, and that He chose them before birth, regardless of what the oracles said.

Isaiah 49:1. “Listen to me, you islands; hear this, you distant nations:Before I was born the Lord called me; from my mother’s womb he has spoken my name.”

Not only did the Lord call the survivor to know and serve Him from the womb, He even spoke their (real, not cult) name. He spoke the name of their future destiny, and no amount of programming can undo this.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

The Hierarchy of the Occult
May 3, 2018
In "mind control"

Vatican book part 10
June 11, 2022
In "healing"

Vatican Book Part 1
August 17, 2021
In "healing"

Ellen Atkin 5:51 pm on September 13, 2021

Huge thanks. Your courage and warrior status is very much appreciated.

★ Like

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← III. How are the Jesuits financed?

Exposing the Vatican book: Part 4 →

https://svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com/2021/09/13/book-part-4/

Blog at WordPress.com.

Svali Speaks!

The Life of Svali – an Ex-Illuminati Mind Control Programmer

Overcoming Denial

September 18, 2008 by koniword

"You know you're making all of this up, it isn't true. I certainly don't remember any of the things you are telling me." The speaker was my mother, two years ago, and she was telling me in no uncertain terms that she did not believe me. Her amnesia is intact and strong, protecting her. I had confronted her about the fact that she and I had spent a lifetime in the cult, and that I loved her and wanted her to get out. I had told her specific names of people we both knew in this phone call, the first time I had spoken with her in a year. "Mom, you're dissociative, that's why you don't remember," I told her. "No I'm not, nothing happened", she maintained. I decided to blast at her denial a little. She knew that I had never studied or heard German consciously in the daytime, although she had spoken it to me at night since I was very young. She did not consciously know or understand it at all. "Then why can I speak German now that I've integrated with my back people?" I asked her, in German. "I've never studied it, you know that, or heard it. I studied Spanish and Latin for my languages in school." There was a pause. "Maybe you're psychic, and learned it telepathically," she answered. My mother had to maintain her denial, even then, and come up with some explanation for the unexplainable. But how did she understand my question, which was in German, to her?

My son is integrating quickly now. He had almost 100 inside people when he first came to live with me two and a half years ago at the age of 10 (the Illuminati fragment their children heavily from infancy on), and now he has only about 15. Lately, he has told me the real David, the core child, has been coming out and experiencing life. I am thankful to God that he is young enough that he could heal, and try not to feel jealous that it has been easier and faster for him than for me. His therapist told me why it is easier for him the other day: "Your son feels safe now, and he has not one, but two parents validating him and saying they believe him when he comes to them. This means he doesn't have to spend a lifetime overcoming parental denial, and that's one reason he is healing so fast."

I have never, ever told my son that he is making it up when he deals with memories. I pray with him, and ask God to heal the memories, and to bring security to my son, and to fill the painful areas with the knowledge of His love and

Privacy & Cookies: This site uses cookies. By continuing to use this website, you agree to their use.
To find out more, including how to control cookies, see here: Cookie Policy
Close and accept

I believe that denial is a large barrier to healing. Often, when a survivor begins to recover memories, they will go to family members for validation, or to confront

Search

Categories

Interview with Svali – The Illuminati in America
Mind Control Programming Articles by Svali
Multiple Personalities – Brokenness
Other Authors
Other Illuminati Articles by Svali
Ritual Abuse Articles by Svali
Svali Answers Questions
Svali's Personal Life
The Illuminati: How the Cult Programs People

Betrayal programming brain wave programming color programming Complex Polyfragmentation cult Cult Abuse Cult Safety Cult Secrecy Denial Programming DID dissociation end times Illuminati plan end times scenario Escaping from the Cult government programming Having needs Healing from Ritual Abuse Hiding from the Cult History of Ritual Abuse Illuminati bankers Illuminati jobs jewel

amming
D
Origin of the Illuminati
programming programming

Blog at WordPress.com

them. They are also frequently faced with invalidation, denial, or even verbal abuse from those same family members, who need to maintain their own denial to protect themselves from facing painful truths. "You're crazy", "You're sick", "You have a sick imagination," "How can you make these things up," "You need help", and more cruel phrases are thrown at the person whose amnesia is beginning to break, from those who want them to maintain it. After all, if ONE person starts remembering, then OTHERS might, and the others in the family system might not be psychologically strong or healthy enough to remember. I think one of the saddest realities is that it takes more psychological integrity, honesty, and truth-seeking to remember something as painful as ritual abuse, yet the person who is remembering is told the opposite by family members unwilling to face their own pain.

The disapproval of family members is extremely painful, and is enough to cause some to doubt the reality of their own memories. "Maybe I am making this up, otherwise why don't THEY remember?" the survivor thinks. Or, "I love my parents/siblings/cousins and I don't want to hurt them. What if they're right?" When memories are first recovered, they often come in flashes that last a second or two, are vague, and may seem unreal to the person remembering. Add the messages from others that is loud and clear: It is NOT okay to remember, and the survivor may shut down.

Denial may also come from within. It is a basic protective mechanism when a person is confronted with pain; how often do we CONSCIOUSLY deny our own faults ("It wasn't my fault, I was having a bad day, and everyone was against me") to protect our self image. The more painful the blow to the self concept (since people desperately want to maintain an image of themselves as "okay), the greater the need to deny.

If events that a person went through destroyed their ability to accept themselves as a worthwhile human being (and ritual abuse does this to the maximum), then they will need to deny that it occurred in order to function in daily life. This is one reason why once the denial is let go of, functionality may temporarily falter in the survivor, as they process the horrendous truths of a childhood filled with pain. It is also a reason why denial can serve a protective function, and should be let go of slowly, carefully, with the help and support of a competent therapist. Some protective denial in the early stages can be good, as long as the person does not recontact cult members, since it allows the memories to come forward slowly and in an amount that is easier to manage.
Denial may also be programmed in (denial programming). This is done from early childhood, when the child is taught methodically in a calculated manner to disbelieve what they are seeing in front of them, and to create alters who will deny, and punish severely if the person does not deny the ritual abuse. This may be linked to suicidal or flood programming as well.

I had an inside part who was known as "Forced Denial", created when I was 2 ½ years old. Her only job was to ensure that I would deny that I had ever been abused, even when confronted with overwhelming evidence that it had happened (such as physical scars, court records that indicated abuse in early childhood, and validation from some family members.) I would go through a horrendous abreaction early in my healing process, after screaming, raging, and crying my eyes out from the pain, and then F.D. would come out and calmly announce, "Nothing happened, I am making this all up." She believed she was protecting my life, since there was suicide programming that kicked in if she didn't do her job, and well as violent protectors who would destroy her. She would be calm, but sweating heavily, as she denied, until the day she realized that her job was no longer needed, and that those who used to punish her (and me) no longer needed to act out.

Overcoming denial may mean overcoming a lifetime of training to deny, and the intense fear of punishment if the person doesn't. Safety, no contact with cult members, and reasoning with these parts can all help the need to deny decrease.

Blog at WordPress.com.

techniques Reaccessing of the Survivor Remembering Abuse Ritual Abuse Roots of the Illuminati Shell Programming Spiritual Abuse Spiritual Programming suicidal programming Survivors of Ritual Abuse Svali is Alive Svali is dead Svali is missing Svali is Safe Svali poem Svali questions techniques Theapists reveal truth about Ritual Abuse Therapists VR programming

Finally, denial may come from society. The survivor has it ground in from infancy by the cult that "No one will ever believe you, they will think you are crazy if you ever talk, and lock you up." Our society today often looks the other way, or looks askance at the survivor. Groups such as the FMS were created to blitz the media with unfounded statements about memory retrieval, and to invalidate survivors who have the courage to speak out and say, "This is real, and it happens." How many news stories are out there that make ritual abuse look as if it is a "modern hysteria" or attempt to denigrate therapists willing to work with and help survivors? I know that when I was in San Diego, leadership council was well aware of the power of the media, and the council had a saying, "Don't attack your enemy, discredit him (in the media)." They found it much more effective, and reporters such as M. Sauer do an excellent job for them. I hope that he, and others that I knew in the group, will learn that they can get out.

The survivor who is able to overcome the denial of family, internal denial, and programmed denial, will still be met by blank looks, or worse, those who turn their backs on them, and say, "I don't want to hear about this, " or "I can't hear about this." Pastors will say this, social workers, CPS workers, and those whose comfort zone is crossed with the thought that ritual abuse really occurs. Those who tell the survivor, "I believe you", at times may seem far and few between, and I applaud their willingness to look at realities which often make us feel uncomfortable. No one WANTS to think that human beings can do this to one another, or that such horrific abuse is possible.

I am here to say loud and clear that ritual abuse occurs. It is real. It is not made up. The people who disclose their abuse are not crazy, they are not liars, they are not looking for attention or sympathy. They are some of the most courageous, intelligent, and psychologically honest people that I have ever known in my life, and many are facing some of the most tremendous emotional pain possible by the grace of God, and surviving it. My one hope is that someday, soon, our society will wake up and come out of its own denial, and be willing to help take action on behalf of those that have survived, and are working desperately to escape the reach of the cult and those associated with it. May God bless each person who takes the steps to leave and to walk in the truth and freedom, and to fight against a great evil in our land (and around the world).

Posted in Mind Control Programming Articles by Svali, Multiple Personalities - Brokenness | 2 Comments »

Complex Polyfragmentation – DID

September 18, 2008 by koniword

Important note: this article is not meant to be therapy, or to replace therapy with a skilled and qualified person, which is essential in healing from severe trauma. These are only the opinions of a survivor. Trigger warning: mentions cult abuse, dissociation, and trauma

Complex polyfragmentation: a coping mechanism for the survivor

In order to survive ritual abuse, a child will often learn to dissociate, and dissociate heavily. The child has undergone some of the most horrific abuse humanly imaginable, and most find a way to cope. One of the ways that is encouraged in certain groups, such as the Illuminati, is to create an elaborate defensive system. In psychological terms, the child fragments, then fragments again. Eventually, the child has polyfragmented.
What is polyfragmentation? The term comes from the root poly, meaning many, and fragments. In complex polyfragmenatation, the survivor will have not only alter systems, but hundreds or even thousands of fragments, isolated parts of their mind

created to do a job, and do it well and unthinkingly. Often the job is one that would be abhorrent to the main personality or presenting system. The further away from core beliefs, the greater usually the dissociation and fragmentation that must occur. In other words, a LOT of trauma has to happen to make a person do something that they really don't want to do. And the person has to feel very far away from themselves as well when doing it. The cult will purposely try to create a polyfragmented system for this very reason. The person is more dissociated from themselves, and is often easier for them to control.

How are polyfragmented systems structured? These are individual, and will vary from not only person to person, but also with the group the person belonged to, the trainers, the abilities of the child, and tasks involved that the child must do. There is no "cookie cutter approach" in most cults to creating polyfragmented systems, but there are certain characteristics that are common.

What might a polyfragmented system look like? I will share some based on my memories as a trainer in this group, plus insights from my own healing process.

1. Protectors: these are parts that were created to do the jobs that had to be done, and saved the life of the young child. Cult protectors had to look mean and scary, like the child's perpetrators. They also become perpetrators when the child grows into an adult, since they have no choice. They can be ruthless, angry, or may believe that they are demons. Some growl, some hiss, some believe that they are powerful animals. And all were a little child who was asked to do the unthinkable, forced to act in ways that he or she didn't want to. They laugh at vulnerability, and trust no one. And with good reason, based upon their experiences in the cult. With therapy and time, they can also help keep the person safe from their perpetrators, as these parts will "kick butt" if they feel threatened.

2. Intellectuals: the cult WANTS intellectual alters who can observe, go between systems, learn information quickly and download it to outsiders. These might be recorders, computers, scholars. They may know several languages, and versed in different philosophies. Brilliant, cognitive, they often believe that they can outwit those around them, including therapists. But they also know much of the life history that the others don't, since they rarely have strong feelings. These parts can "read the life history" without a tear or emotion. When they are out, the person appears "flat" to say the least, in psychological terms.
3. Denial people: these are intellectual, and are created to deny that anything bad ever happened. Life was wonderful, the parents perfect and loving, and the suicidality and PTSD symptoms are just strange artifacts without "any reason," according to these parts. A person can have a full blown abreaction, and five minutes later, a denier will come out and say it was all "made up." They are often afraid of punishment if the person remembers, and have severe trauma motivating them.

4. Controllers/head honchos/"top dogs": these are the system leaders. They know what is going on at all times in their system. In a military system, it might be a general, in a protector system, the most powerful protector; in a metals system, the platinums, or in a jewel system, the highest jewels, such as diamond, ruby, or emerald. Usually there are several leaders in a system that share the responsibility. They can also become invaluable helpers over time if they choose to give up cult loyalty.

5. Child alters: these want praise from the adult leaders, and often come out for rewards, or sweets. They will report on others inside unless they can learn that it is safe to NOT do so, since they are motivated both by fear of punishment, and wanting praise from those above them. They are also often the "heart" of a polyfragmented system, and can feel love, joy, or fear and trembling. Often, they want hugs and to be told that they are "okay".

6. Punishers: why wait for an outside person to punish you if you can create someone inside to do it first? Children will often identify heavily with their

perpetrators, and if the punishment is severe and frequent, they will internalize the perpetrator to try and keep themselves "in line" and avoid punishment externally. The cult will capitalize on this, and often trainers will leave as their "calling card" an alter named after themselves. This one will be an internal trainer, or punisher, or enforcer. Their job is to keep things in line, and will often try to sabotage therapy. They are often fearful of external punishment if they don't do their job. Internal punishers will also activate self punishment sequences inside (such as flood programming/ suicide programming, or other self harm sequences) if the person begins breaking away from the cult and the old rules. These parts may take time to conivince that they can change their old way of doing things, since they were often accountable to the outside handler/trainer if things weren't kept in line.

7. Feeling alters: the feelings were overwhelming and infinitely traumatizing in childhood. It threatened the child's survival and sanity. The solution? Parcel them out over several internal parts and/or fragments. Divide the feeling up so that it feels more manageable. Feeling alters often get locked away inside, and when they come out in therapy, the feeling may hit "full force" at first. A child alter may come out screaming, or terror stricken, or wailing in uncontrollable grief and pain, until they are grounded in the here and now. Often, feelings were heavily punished in the cult, so it was psychologically necessary to bury them deeply within the psyche in order to survive. These parts may be very separated from the parts that know what happened to cause the feelings in a highly fragmeneted system, so that the feelings seem to come out of nowhere, without any cause. With time and healing, they can hook up with the intellectuals inside who observed, and other parts who went through the same trauma, giving meaning to the feelings and helping to resolve them.
8. Internal councils: most cults have leadership councils of some sort. And many people internalize them inside. It's another example of internalizing perpetrators, and these have a vested interest in "keeping things in line" until they realize that they can leave the cult and be safe. Then, they can become an immense strength for healing. A personal may have a local leadership council internalized, or spiritual councils that represent outside people, such as an internal druidic council or group of ascended masters that help run things inside.

9. Sexual alters: created to handle the overwhelming trauma of early childhood sexual abuse, they took the feelings it was too painful for a young child to understand. Some had to learn to enjoy the abuse, or pretend to, and were heavily rewarded for this response.

10. Amnesic alters: these are known as the "front", the "clueless ones", "those who don't know anything", etc. These have the job of not remembering. Otherwise, as a child, they were heavily punished. Usually, they are very glad to not remember anything, and the other parts who were abused at times envy them or dislike their "protected life history." This can create a lot of intrasystem hostility or warfare, until the amnesic parts begin accepting that abuse did occur. Reminding abused parts that the amnesia saved the child's (and their life) helped my system with this.

11. The workers: these do the jobs of daily life, and usually are part of the presenting systems. These take care of the house, got married, take care of the children, and may hold a highly responsible job as well. These are the competent parts created that hide the fact that the person has undergone a lifetime of traumatic abuse and degradation. These parts can also be a great strength, as they share that life can be good with other more traumatized parts inside.
12. Hosts: there may be a "day host" (see presenters), a "night host" for the cult, or hosts for various systems or times in the person's life. Occasionally, the survivor of severe generational cult abuse may find to their dismay that a greater portion of their life was invested in and given to cult activities than day ones, and the "night host" is stronger than the "day host"! This happened to me. Fortunately, my "night host" was the one who left the cult, so she had plenty of strength and pull to give to staying safe and away from the group. I also had a "host" that had handled the

summers spent in Europe, during those times in childhood, and a "hidden host" who never fully presented to protect herself from others (she manipulated the presenters to sit in front of her, telling them what to do). Each person's system will handle this task differently. In general, the greater the trauma, the greater the distrust of outside people, and the more likely that the host will be a facade, or heavily protected.

13. Core splits: can be created from severe and psychologically threatening very early childhood trauma. This used to be done intentionally by some cult groups to create larger and more dissociated systems.

14. The core: this is the original child, the one who created all of the others inside. The child's systems will depend upon the traumas and the creativity of the original child, as well as her need to protect herself from the abuse of others that might have destroyed her. In some systems, the core will be very young, or an infant, if the abuse was extremely early and severe. Core issues surrounding her will usually involve parents or parental figures who caused severe trauma. This might include abandonment, torture, or other forms of cruelty to a young child.

15. Function codes, access codes, halt codes, system codes: these are fragments that might be put in to do certain jobs, and are created to only do that job when called out by triggers such as letters, numbers, phrases, or other auditory stimuli. These are created with deep trauma and are very intentionally done by perpetrators.

16. Spiritual parts: these may have a variety of beliefs that cover different spiritualities internally. There may be one over-riding spiritual belief for the system, or several. For example, a spiritual system created by the cult may include aspects of Luciferianism, druidism, Temple of Set teachings, Ancient Babylonian mystery religions, etc. The host or presenters may have a completely conflicting religious belief system, and there may be hostility between the parts that hold opposing beliefs. In my own life, my presenters were strong Christians, and this gave the stability and comfort needed to bring healing to the parts inside. It also opened the way to begin forgiveness, one of the most difficult and important tasks in the healing process.
This has been an overview of just a few of the types of personalities that might be found in a complex polyfragmented system. It is important to be aware that each person is unique; that many people will have coped with trauma in their own way. This is not meant to say that every cult survivor has all of these personalities, but are one survivor's opinion based upon her experiences and memories. My hope is that this article will help to educate others about this issue.

copyright 2000 svali

Posted in Multiple Personalities - Brokenness | Leave a Comment »

Is the Illuminati Provoking an Economic Collapse?

September 18, 2008 by koniword

Is the Illuminati Provoking an Economic Collapse?
By Henry Makow Ph.D.
September 16, 2008
http://www.henrymakow.com/is_the_illuminati_proviking_a.html

by Henry Makow Ph.D.

Sept. 16

Fed Bails Out AIG
http://www.bloomberg.com/apps/news?pid=20601087&sid=aEWiEF0hDbgU&refer=home

When asked if Makow's article affected this decision, Ben Bernanke replied with a terse "No Comment"

Sept. 15, 2008

We may be on the verge of a stock market crash reminiscent of 1929.

I was watching a special CNBC program on the financial crisis when the news came across that Moody's had downgraded the Insurance giant AIG (American International Group.) This company was already on the ropes Monday when its stock crumbled to $4.75 from $11, %60 in one day. It was down from a $70 52-week-high. The company had gone to the Fed for a bailout. It was estimated it needed $40 billion.

Because of the Moody's downgrade, it emerges that it will need alot more money to avert bankruptcy. This is a massive company that holds the pensions of millions of employees. A money manager estimated that a trillion dollars would be lost if AIG declares bankruptcy. The whole world financial system could be taken down. He said banks in the Far East were already acting like this is inevitable, and the collapse already has been set in motion.

As you can imagine, the CNBC commentators were frantic. One demanded to know how the Fed can allow this to happen. "We know they print money," he said. Another wondered if the States whose pension funds were held by AIG could organize a bailout. Not enough time, he was told.

The bottom line is that Tuesday and the rest of this week could be ugly so be prepared. The second bottom line is that this Depression like the last appears to be caused by a deliberate contraction of credit. House prices are falling because banks don't have the money to lend to house buyers. As a result, portfolios holding mortgage backed securities are tumbling, taking banks with them. The Fed, after bailing out Fannie May and Fredie Mack, have let Lehman Brothers fail. AIG appears to be next and the dominoes will continue to fall.

At this time, it is important to be aware that an illuminati defector known as "Svali" said she was taught that the "end of the world" scenario involved an economic collapse. Remember the Illuminati is a Masonic cult founded and funded by the central bankers who own the Fed. Here is her full testimony given about ten year ago.

"Want to hear the end of the world scenario the Illuminati taught me? It was cult propaganda, but this is how they believed the New Order would be ushered in:

There will be continued conflict in the mideast, with a severe threat of nuclear war being the culmination of these hostilities. An economic collapse that will devastate the economy of the US and Europe, much like the great depression.

One reason that our economy continues limping along is the artificial supports that the Federal Reserve had given it, manipulating interest rates, etc. But one day, this won't work (or this leverage will be withdrawn on purpose) and the next great depression will hit.

The government will call in its bonds and loans, and credit card debts will be called in. There will be massive bankruptcies nationwide. Europe will stabilize first,and Germany, France and England (surprise) will have the strongest economies, and will institute through the UN an international currency. Japan will also pull out, although their economy will be weakened.

Peacekeeping forces will be sent out by the UN and local bases to prevent riots. The leaders will reveal themselves, and people will be asked to make a pledge of loyalty during a time of chaos and financial devastation.

Doesn't sound pleasant, does it? I don't know the exact time frame for all of this, and wouldn't want to even guess. The good news is that if a person is debt-free,

owes nothing to the government or credit debt, and can live self sufficiently, they may do better than others. I would invest in gold, not stocks, if I had the income. Gold will once again be the world standard, and dollars will be pretty useless (remember after the Civil War? Our money will be worth about what confederate money was after the collapse).

All this said, it could just be cult propaganda taught to me and others to frighten us. It may be that none of this will happen. I sincerely hope not. I also strongly believe that God is able to stay the hand of the wicked, and to take care of our nation and others, if we turn to Him."

That noted, let's remember the words of Denis Healey, former British Defence Secretary and Secretary of the Exchequer: "World events do not occur by accident: They are made to happen, whether it is to do with national issues or commerce; and most of them are staged and managed by those who hold the purse strings."

I think we are in for a recession, maybe even a Depression but I don't think the Illuminati is ready to declare their New World Order just yet. However, this could be part of a larger scenario leading to World War Three, similar to the role the Great Depression played as a precursor to World War Two.

The Illuminati goal is to torture the human race until we cry out to them for world government, anything to stop the pain.

http://www.henrymakow.com/is_the_illuminati_proviking_a.html

Posted in Other Authors | Leave a Comment »

Your Tax Dollars at Work – (Mind Control)

September 16, 2008 by koniword

I am writing an article that is somewhat angry, but I can't help myself. I am angry that my tax dollars are being used, and yours as well, to fund certain projects. I am risking my articles here at this site being pulled for writing this, but I can't stay silent.
The projects are under the umbrella of the Central Intelligence Agency in Langley, Virginia. These projects are investigations in the techniques of different forms of mind control and how easily "subjects" can be coerced, drugged, hypnotized, traumatized, or otherwise brought under "control" and turned into willing workers who believe fully that they are doing a "good thing" for either their "country" or their "family".

I should know. I was a victim of these brutal experiments, and later in life I was an experimenter on others.

There is a ton of documentation and evidence both through governmental records and online that this stuff really happens. That MK-ULTRA, BLUEBIRD, ARTICHOKE, MONARCH and other projects funded by our tax dollars were and are being covertly used to abuse and torture innocent children and later adults through these programs. The fact that there IS documentation available in the face of the notorious amount of governmental paper shredding that goes in shows the sheer volume of the documentation and notes that were kept and that could not be completely erased from the public record.

With project PAPERCLIP, it is known that nazi doctors (you know, the ones who did those experiments on people in Germany during WWII) were imported into the United States. While ostensibly they were there to help the US increase its technology, many of them also shared their knowledge of human neurophysiology, and were recruited into overseeing ongoing experiments.

Enough third person. I will share my own personal memories of this. At night, by

age 8, Dr. Timothy Brogan of George Washington University, my main trainer, and my mother would take me to Langley, Virginia. I remember there were dark trees in the fields behind the long buildings at one end, and that we always went to the same building. Underneath there were classrooms, used for training. I would sit in a group with other children, and watch films on : How to kill someone (we were forced to analyze these films, asked by the "teacher" what the "subject" or "mark" who was killed did wrong, and how the kill was set up. We would analyze and discuss everything, including wind direction, type of firearm used, scope used, etc.

Target practice: there was a shooting gallery there and we would do literally hours of target practice. We learned to take a gun apart and put it together again in ten seconds or less. We were timed. Training films: projectors showed different films on every conceivable topic, including ones on "These are your leaders" with a conference table, and then the top Illuminati leaders in the US rising when the top one entered the room. Films that were sexually explicit, violent films, and films that discussed loyalty. We practiced how to "drop a tag" (someone following us) and how to follow someone without being detected. In one room was an isolation tank. It was NOT used with group exercises, but for special training sessions. Usually the room was sealed off when not in use. Language training: different people would come in and both in class and one on one teach different languages. At times, my mother would sit and chat with her friend, Sidney Gottlieb (who was very very egotistical in this setting), or with Dr. G. Steiner, a medical doctor who was working on this project with children. I don't know who the other children were, or where they came from. Their families would come and pick them up afterwards, usually a mother or father or family friend. The exercises would be done by 4:30 am.
At Tulane Medical Center (home of "The Institute", considered one of the top research facilities in the United States for mind control techniques and exploration of the paranormal, near death experiences and using recorded messages to repeat a message over and over were used. They believed that the near death state would engrave a message or belief into the deepest levels of the unconscious, and the "rebirth" experience (which created a new alter at a very deep level) created a very very loyal "subject". It did. The subject was terrified and told that if they ever disobeyed, they would go back to the "near death" state, so few thought of being "disloyal" under those circumstances.

The equipment that our tax dollars bought for these organizations working under a governmental umbrella was very sophisticated: VR equipment, and use of the most sophisticated neurolinguistic techniques available. And people who were taught in how to use it all to maximum effectiveness.

By the time I was 23, I was a head trainer in San Diego. At night, I continued to experiment on others, under the supervision of Jonathan Meier and eventually Col. Aquinos, who was a regional director over our group. And sure enough, each evening after we were done, we would upload our data that was heavily encrypted to the data banks at Langley, Virginia. We had to go through six levels of security passwords at the CIA data center before we came to the area where data could be uploaded. They wanted to know the results of experiments ongoing everywhere, and there were strict protocols to report any unusual reactions, anomalies, or new medication combinations that were especially effective.

I believe that most of the American public has no idea that certain governmental organizations are using their money this way. I also believe that most who read this will disbelieve that the CIA and a respected medical center could be the site of such experimentation on the minds and psyches of both children and adults (we did it on both). But it is the truth, and I am sorry that it is, because I am angry that part of my taxes taken out when I work goes to support ongoing abuse. My only hope is that someday, this will be discovered, brought out into the open and the public will be able to scrutinize what occurred and still occurs, and it can be stopped.

Christmas in the Cult

September 16, 2008 by koniword

Christmas is a time when people think warmly of family gathered around the Christmas tree, sharing laughter as presents are opened and sleepy-eyed children excited see what Santa has brought. Adults share egg nog and cheer, and happy traditions are followed.
But for the child raised in a generational satanic cult, Christmas has a very different meaning. In the daytime, the normal activities of shopping for presents and going to parties occurs, and the family may have a large "warm" gathering of its members in the day.

But at night, things are quite different. The child who in the daytime looks forward to Santa and presents under the day, quakes with terror at the thought of what will come at night.

The winter solstice occurs on December 21, and this is one of the highest pagan/celtic holidays, since the "New Year" begins after this date for the cult. Special ceremonies are planned to ensure the coming of a new year filled with power, and the return of the sun's lengthening days (many occult ceremonies are also based on ancient sun deity worship). Added to this is the Christian holiday in celebration of Christ's birth, which the occult group despises, and special ceremonies are planned to desecrate and twist the meaning of this day. For many families in the occult, the whole week from December 21 to December 26 is filled with activities, since family members are naturally gathered together, and there is no need to explain missed days from school for the children.

The cruelty surrounding Christmas and the solstice is intense. Children are often abused by cult members dressed as Santa; or a mocking of the nativity occurs with the end result that "Herod" succeeds in slaying the baby Jesus (with ritual murder of an infant occurring). The child may be sexually abused under a Christmas tree, and paraphernalia of the holiday are given a new and dark meaning.

Instead of a celebration of birth, Christmas for the child raised in a cult family becomes a time of horror and death. Programming may occur, with images associated with the holiday implanted, and the child told that seeing these images (such as a lighted Christmas tree, or nativity scene) will mean contact with "family" or other messages placed in under trauma.

Children (and adults) may receive presents with hidden meanings that remind them of Christmas past and the trauma that is meant to bind them to "family".

A mock "holiday feast" may occur, but instead of egg nog and ham, the meal is gruesome.

These are just a few of the associations that occur in the dissociated alters of the child raised in a cult family, and why many survivors feel a mixture of anticipation and fear when the holidays come around. Added to this, once the child grows up, intense efforts by cult family members to recontact will occur during these holiday times at which all family members are expected to be present.

Panic and anxiety can occur for the adult survivor on these anniversary dates of intense trauma and rituals, and they may wonder why a holiday that is associated with good cheer for them means the desire to hide and cower.

It can help if the survivor learns for themselves where the panic is coming from, and which triggers were placed in. This usually will occur in therapy, or from journaling.

If a survivor has stopped contact with family members, then receives a flood of Christmas cards or gifts, they should be cautious, and aware that these items could

be intensely triggering. A desire to "call and recontact" family members will often be awakened as a result, and the survivor will need to work through this in therapy.

Child alters often hold the most horrific memories, and listening to them, allowing them to process their trauma and fears in therapy, journaling, and art work can also help.

Creating new holiday traditions that feel safe can also help. Some survivors celebrate Christmas by doing things very differently than their family of origin to help reinforce that they are able to break free of all the traditions that their family held. And having outside support and safety help most of all during this time.

Christmas is an especially difficult time for many survivors. But as adults, survivors can choose to break free from the traumatic meanings it once held, and to create a safe Christmas for themselves.

Posted in Other Illuminati Articles by Svali | Leave a Comment »

Easter in the Cult

September 16, 2008 by koniword

Easter in the Cult
There are certain times of the year that are particularly difficult for survivors of generational occult. These are "holiday dates" that correspond to rituals celebrated by occult groups. While the actual rites and practices may vary somewhat from group to group, there are certain similarities among many.

Easter is one such time. In the group that I grew up in, during the daytime I was allowed a normal experience. Easter was a celebration of springtime, of lengthening days, and the new flowers signaling winter's end. I often enjoyed playing with waving palm branches during Palm Sunday, and hunting for Easter eggs on the church grounds. And of course, every year a small Easter basket appeared with a chocolate rabbit or lamb.

But at night, the holiday time was celebrated in a very different manner. The preparation leading up to it often lasted during the week before (there was no school during Easter week when I was a child, in the years before "Spring break" became common. Most schools let out for a week to ten days during this week). The events of this time were quite painful, and including brutalization, sexual abuse and other rituals surrounding fertility rites, culminating at the end of the week with a mock crucifixion. Often a child would be chosen to undergo crucifixion in a grim mockery of the Christian celebration, and the adults would state that this ritual was an offering to debase the Christian tradition and show its lack of meaning.

I do know that young boys were chosen for this ritual, and it was horrible to see.

At times, a mock "resurrection" ceremony might occur, but the resurrector was not Jesus, but a demonic entity who would enter into the person brought to a near death state.

The spiritual roots of these ceremonies were created to allow the passage of the demonic into the participants, and to "seal" them as they participated in the ceremony. At times, a golden chalice was passed between participants, and the child's blood filled the cup that participants drank.

I am finding in my healing that more and more of what was done to me involved dark occult ceremonies as a child, such as I describe here. These ceremonies allowed the entrance of the demonic, and one of the hardest parts of the group programming to break has been the hold that these memories, and the spiritual destruction that ensued, has had on me. Part of my own healing process is involving undergoing deliverance, and replacing the gruesome, negative spirituality

of my childhood with a faith that includes love, mercy, and forgiveness, the antithesis of the harsh and punishing ceremonies that I saw. One of the most important tasks for the survivor when remembering these types of events, (and anniversary dates often bring memories) is to find healing and self-forgiveness for participating, and to reach out for a belief system that can replace the negative. For me, that belief is Christianity, and my hope is that others will know its comfort during this difficult time of year.

It can also help to realize that so often the group makes certain things sound final. "You are sealed for life", they tell the children, or "You agreed to this, and now you are one of us forever." This is nonsense. No contract is binding forever, especially one created under coercion, and once a person has free choice, they can choose to break childhood spiritual contracts made under duress. The group during holidays and ritual events tries to inculcate helplessness and a feeling that "Now I can never leave", but this message is absolutely false and plays on a small child's fears. Instead, as an adult, the survivor has choices, and can choose to break those covenants and enter into freedom.

This is a battle, and I don't want to make it sound as if it is easy. It isn't, and I am still battling this is my own life, but it is well worth breaking free of the hold that these ceremonies and demonic entanglements have in the life of the survivor.

Posted in Other Illuminati Articles by Svali | Leave a Comment »

Dealing With Threats

September 16, 2008 by koniword

I am at work, and one of my responsibilities as office manager is to answer the phone. In this age of privacy, almost one fourth of my customers have 'private' or 'caller unknown' as their identification on my caller i.d. machine. So I think nothing of answering the call identified as 'caller unknown'.
"Why aren't you dead yet?" the voice asks, then hangs up.

I sit there, feeling as if I have been kicked in the stomach. It hurts most because the call comes from a source close to me: my mother, a leader in the group that I left, who is very angry with me for my decision. Apparently she would rather have her child dead than out, and this hurts.

One of the issues that most survivors leaving an abusive cult must face is that of receiving threats from the group. These threats can take various forms, including:

-Hang up calls. These can occur in sequences meant to trigger a survivor, or else the cult escapee may be literally flooded with dozens of hang up calls, one after another. The message is obvious: the calls communicate to the survivor silently that the cult knows where they are.

-Phone threats: these are verbal messages meant to intimidate and harass. For instance, when I first considered leaving the cult, I got a phone call from San Diego. There was a baby crying in the background, then the sound of a young child screaming. The caller, a man, then said, "Isn't it nice to know that your children are still alive?" My children were in San Diego, living with my husband, and I was being told that there safety depended on my decisions.

-Accessing calls: these are similar to the hang up calls, but when the survivor answers, tones are played, music may be played, or a name spoken which is meant to trigger an alter to come out. For instance, the person calling may ask, " Is Karen there?" This is an alter created in the person who is supposed to be triggered out. If for some reason the alter is not triggered out (i.e. the survivor is working in therapy to break this programming) then the caller will say, "I'm sorry, I have a wrong number." This makes it sound innocent, but a survivor should be suspicious if

there are 50 ‘wrong numbers’ in the period of a day or two.

Phone threats and messages are the first level of threats that a survivor will face. But if for some reason they anger individuals in the group, or if the group wants the survivor back badly enough, then the next level of threat can occur. This is abduction and harming the survivor.

I should know. This happened to me two months ago, and is one reason I have not posted here as frequently in the past weeks.
But I also refuse to be intimidated by this group, and so am choosing to speak out in spite of what happened.

When the group believes that they are truly losing control over the survivor, they may step up their efforts beyond phone threats. Instead, they will look for a time when the survivor is alone and vulnerable. Or, they will call and trigger out an alter, and tell them to meet a ‘friend’. This is often done to littles, who are trusting, and keep hoping that they will receive love or a ‘treat’ from those they look up to.

Once the person is lured or found alone, then abduction is usually easy for the cult to do. The person will be forced into a van, or vehicle. They may be driven to a house, or the abuse may occur in the back of a van with windows drawn.

These people are able to brutalize quickly and swiftly in a small space, and have the equipment with them when they make a ”call”. The victim will be told things such as ‘You haven’t been doing your job’, or other threats. Their internal programming will then be reinforced, with torture or even rape as punishment for disobedience. The victim will be gagged during the punishment to prevent others from hearing what is occurring. This will also usually occur in an isolated area, far from houses or intrusions.

The victim will then be returned to a nearby area, or to their car, and told to ”remember what they learned”. When it happened to me recently, I was told, ”See how easy it is to find you? Think about your children, and how easy it would be to do the same to them.”

What Can Be Done I immediately reported the abduction and abuse to my therapist, my husband, and my pastor. I considered calling the police, but wondered how they would receive the following: ”I was abducted by a man who I don’t know in a cream colored van with a temporary license plate, so it probably isn’t the real one. He used a halt command on me given to him by my mother and my trainer from San Diego, since they are the only two who know this, that’s why I didn’t fight him when he tied me up. He shocked me, so there are no bruised, and sexually abused me with an instrument, so there’s no semen.” He wore gloves the whole time, so there are no fingerprints. I blocked this all out for five days, and just remembered it today.”

My husband, pastor, and therapist all felt the police would probably not follow up on this report, so I didn’t file it. But what happened also shows how careful those who threaten and abuse are to cover their tracks and to make identification difficult.
At the same time, I am taking steps to be safer. 1) Don’t be alone: I am being especially accountable for my time, and don’t drive in isolated areas.

2) I have quit answering ‘unknown caller’ calls at work. Instead, I told my boss that I have been receiving harassing calls from unknown callers, and will only take calls that are identified and with a number.

3) I am working hard in therapy to look at how I was triggered, the codes that were used, and how, and to undo them. I am also dealing with the immense amount of panic and suicidality that this incident caused, which was the first clue that something HAD happened. I have been calming down littles, and reminding older parts inside that they don’t have to believe lies or do what these people tell them.

4) I have asked for help, which is very difficult for me, from my support system,

including my church and my husband and children. Their encouragement, prayers, and help has made a huge different to me.

They told me to be silent. I refuse to. They told me not to tell. I refuse to agree with them. They told me I'm not 'doing my job'. I plan to continue to not doing it, because they aren't my owners, and have no right to tell me what to do.

Only by breaking the power of the lie, can a survivor break free of the control of these people. And this is my goal: to become, and to stay, free. Blessings, Svali

Posted in Other Illuminati Articles by Svali | Leave a Comment »

The End of the Illuminati

September 16, 2008 by koniword

With the recent events that have created fear and concern about the implementation of military rule and/or the ushering in of the NWO for many, I wanted to add some thoughts.

Will the NWO take over? It appears that way, as, occult groups are heading in that direction. They are joining hands and resources, and differences have been overcome.

But what is their fate? What will happen to the Illuminati and other groups? I want to take a look at this, because it is very encouraging. And the Bible clearly shows the fate of this new order.

Daniel was one of the greatest prophets who has ever lived. He was an administrator and ruler during the time of king Nebuchadnezzer of Babylon, and became one of the highest rulers in the Babylonian kingdom. He was also a man who sought God and was faithful during the rule of an occult- based world kingdom.

This was an age when the king consulted wizards and necromancers for help, and an age when the person who openly worshipped God encountered hostility from these workers of darkness.

But in the midst of this darkness, Daniel prayed and sought God's counsel, and God defeated his enemies.

God also shared with Daniel His plan for history.

In Daniel chapter two, King Nebuchadnezzar has a disturbing dream which only Daniel is able to interpret with God's help. The king dreamed about a large statue made of different materials (a head made of gold; breast and arms of silver, a belly and thighs of bronze, legs of iron, and feet of mixed clay and iron). These different elements represent different kingdoms that would arise and God was showing the king what would happen over the next few years. These would try to rule and subdue the earth (the Greek and Roman Empires almost succeeded). But look what happens to these kingdoms in Daniel 2:34-35: "A stone was cut out without hands, and it struck the statue on its feet of iron and clay, and crushed them. Then the iron, the clay, the bronze, the silver and the gold were crushed all at the same time, and became like chaff from the summer threshing floors; and the wind carried them away so that not a trace of them was found. But the stone that struck the statue became a great mountain and filled the whole earth."

What is this stone that defeated and crushed the greatest earthly kingdoms and reduced them to rubble and then filled the whole earth? Later on , in chapter 2, verse 44, Daniel explains: "And in the days of those kings the God of heaven will set up a kingdom which will never be destroyed, and that kingdom will not be left for another people; it will crush and put an end to all these kingdoms, but it will itself endure forever."

The stone is the Kingdom of God, established by Jesus, that God states will be set up as a kingdom which will never be destroyed and will crush the occult kingdoms. We now know the end of the Illuminati and any other occult groups that try to set up a kingdom here. They are already defeated: we know who the winner is!

In Daniel, chapter seven, verses 13 and 14, God even gives us a glimpse of the coming of Jesus in glory, and the establishment of His rule here on earth (which began when Jesus came to earth and His church was established). Again, the Bible is clear: "And to Him was given dominion, Glory and a kingdom, that all the peoples, nations, and men of every language might serve Him. His dominion is an everlasting dominion which will not pass away; and His kingdom is one which will not be destroyed."

The Illuminati and other groups that are organizing to create a world order based on the occult are hoping that this won't happen. But history is against them. They base their principles and spirituality on the occultism of ancient Rome, Crete, and Babylon. But look what happened to the original practitioners! Their rules ended, and God brought those rulers filled with pride to dust. I know that this is the end of the Illuminat and any other occult groups as well; God has given us a wonderful glimpse in Daniel of their eventual fate.

There is only one rule, one kingdom that will last forever, and that is the reign of Jesus. His reign has already begun in His church, and this gives me hope and joy, and takes away the fear of what the occult "planners" can do. I've placed my bet on the winning side, and moved from darkness to His kingdom.

Blessings to you, Svali

Posted in Other Illuminati Articles by Svali | Leave a Comment »

Shadow Government and Mount Pony

September 16, 2008 by koniword

While the news media feigns surprise and continues to report on the "Shadow Government" deployed outside of Washington to run things in the event of an attack, we who have written about this "Shadow Government" know that this is nothing new. I have to believe there is some purpose to this revelation now, as little is published without the blessings of those in power to use for their own personal agendas. Their are many underground facilities throughout the United States which are set up to house those people that are considered "Essential." It would be interesting to view the master list, wouldn't it? What secrets might truly be uncovered if we were to find out who in this nation is truly worthy of surviving a catastrophic incident. When I saw the news article published by the Federation of American Scientists (from the FAS Project on Government Secrecy, Volume 2002, Issue No. 17, March 4, 2002) in which they cited the Washington Post and the Cleveland Plain Dealer and their claims of breaking the news on the "Shadow Government, I became so intrigued that I had to read these stories. One of the sites that was mentioned was Mount Pony in Culpeper, Virginia. One more piece of the amazing puzzle of my own experiences of being experimented on as a child during the Cold War as told in my book "A Nation Betrayed," suddenly came together.

Sidney Gottlieb who retired from the CIA in 1973 after 2 decades with the CIA, owned a small farm near Boston, Va., about 10 miles northwest of Culpeper, Virginia. The location of his farm seems to be well planned when you understand its proximity to Mount Pony in Culpeper, Virginia. Mount Pony was a 140,000 square foot radiation hardened facility with a 400 foot long bunker, built of steel-reinforced concrete a foot thick and covered by 2 to 4 feet of dirt. Until July 1992 the bunker served as a Continuity of Government facility. The facility was designed to support

an emergency staff of 540 for 30 days. Some features of the facility were a cold storage area for maintaining bodies unable to be promptly buried (due to high radiation levels outside), an incinerator, indoor pistol range, and a helicopter landing pad. Until 1988 the facility stored a $1 billion stock of currency to be used to reactivate the American economy following a nuclear attack.

Gottlieb's choice of a home seemed to be no coincidence. Such a highly placed, valuable asset would be privy to many secrets other than those having to do with "Mind Control." As Ted Gup reports in the Washington Post, "Gottlieb had emerged as a kind of Dr. Strangelove. He had overseen a vast network of psychological and medical experiments conducted in hospitals, universities, research labs, prisons and safe houses, many of them carried out on unsuspecting subjects-mental patients, prostitutes and their johns, drug addicts, and anyone else who stumbled into the CIA's web. Some had been subjected to electroshock therapy in an effort to alter their behavior. Some endured prolonged sensory deprivation. Some were doped and made to sleep for weeks in an attempt to induce an amnesia-like state. Others suffered a relentless loop of audiotape playing the same message hundreds of thousands of times." Gottlieb's obituary in the Times of London began, 'When Churchill spoke of a world 'made darker by the dark lights of perverted science' he was referring to the revolting experiments conducted on human beings by Nazi doctors in the concentration camps. But his remarks might with equal justice have been applied to the activities of the CIA's Sidney Gottlieb.' Along with Gottlieb's close proximity to Mount Pony, we have another key figure who lived nearby. Intimately involved in MKULTRA intrigue and the emigration of former Nazis into the US. through the CIA-funded OPC (Office of Policy Coordination) in the State Department was Carmel Offie. He lived less than 20 miles from Sidney Gottlieb on a sizable farm in Markham, Virginia. He handed me over to Allen Dulles and Sidney Gottlieb in 1952 for my first experiments and torture when I was 4 years old. In 1946 Offie was putting together reports on the movement of German scientists from the American Zone into France, individuals who had eluded Paperclip. In the spring of 1948 Carmel was working in Frankfurt at USPOLAD. Burton Hersh reports in The Old Boys, that "One of Offie's functions at POLAD had been to rake through the flotsam churned up by the postwar disorder—the defunctive Nazi exluminaries and cutthroat émigré politicians and paper mill impresarios of promise—and help the CIC and others plug legitimate experts in around the emerging Cold-War bureaucracies."
According to Hersh, Carmel Offie was "doubling as a kind of booking agent for many of the refugee scholars" that the U.S. was interested in obtaining. He went to work for Frank Wisner who got Congress to pass the One-Hundred-a Year CIA Act, which allowed Offie to bring in, unmonitored, a hundred refugees each year with their dossiers "Sanitized." Offie was Wisner's special assistant for labor and migratory affairs. He personally oversaw the National Committee for Free Europe, which passed OPC money to anti-Communist unions in Europe.

John Loftus reports that Offie worked for the DDU (Document Disposal Unit), which took orders from Dulles. He calls the DDU the OSS "Political Intelligence" experts who wore Army uniforms but were paid through the State Department. In 1949 Offie became responsible for the care of a number of Bloodstone émigrés'. Bloodstone was the codename for the operation, which proposed that 250 Nazi collaborators be brought into the United States who would otherwise be barred by the Displaced Persons Act. Simpson also reports that a special Bloodstone subcommittee had been created to supply false identities, government cover jobs, and secret police protection to selected Bloodstone immigrants.

Carmel Offie was also handling another project employing Nazi collaborators through a U.S.-financed "think tank" named the Eurasian Institute. The Institute was enlisting men who were important members of the German espionage network in Central Asia from 1931 to 1945. Wisner and Offie were still working together in 1950, when Joseph McCarthy referred to Offie as a State Department veteran who "has now been assigned to the Central Intelligence Agency.

These people were true spineless cowards who made sure they would have a safe place to run if there were threats to their survival. Many "Continuity of Government Facilities" were built during the cold war. As reported by the Cleveland Plain Dealer, http://eyesonamerica.org/200110/10190107… "One such facility built into a mountain in Virginia has a hospital, crematorium, emergency power plant, and sleeping cots for 2,000 people. A bunker in a Pennsylvania mountain, known as "Site R," can accommodate 3,000 people." Sabrina Eaton reports that "it included a reservoir, medical and dental facilities, dining hall, barber shop and chapel" and that "the government decommissioned similar bunkers at the Greenbrier resort in West Virginia and at Mount Pony in Culpeper, Va., in recent years."

Another report in Taking a Tour of Cold War Baltimore, http://www.citypaper.com/2001-07-18/feat… , "Gimme Shelter Or, Last One Underground Is a Rotten Egg", "Greenbrier opened in 1962 under a posh resort in White Sulphur Springs, W.Va., this capacious bunker — code name 'Project Greek Island' — was where Congress was to duck and cover when all the big, bad buttons were pushed. The vast complex includes chambers large enough for both House and Senate to meet.

The article goes on to say that Mount Weather near Berryville, Va., is a vast underground facility, complete with streets, multistory buildings, and a lake large enough for water skiing. A host of governmental higher-ups have sleeping quarters here, including Supreme Court justices. The Federal Emergency Management Agency runs a multitude of disaster-response operations from under the mountain today.

Two more sites described in this article are Olney in Montgomery County and Raven Rock. A substantial 1971 bunker that now serves as an Alternate National Warning Center (designed to get the word out when bad things happen) and a Satellite Teleregistration Facility lies beneath what used to be a cow pasture in Olney. Raven Rock also known as "Site R" and colloquially referred to as "the underground Pentagon," is a 48-year-old megabunker which lies under a mountain just north of the Maryland line near Waynesboro, Pa., close to the presidential retreat at Camp David. For those of us who have endured the silence of those years following the secret experiments carried out on an unwitting public in the name of "National Security," such revelations come as just another footnote in our untold stories. In the epilogue to a congressional committee report headed by Sen. Frank Church, the committee concluded: "The United States must not adopt the tactics of the enemy. Means are as important as ends. Crises make it tempting to ignore the wise restraints that make men free. But each time we do so, each time the means we use are wrong, our inner strength, the strength which makes us free, is lessened." Let us remember this when we start giving up our freedoms under the guise that it is necessary for this brave country of ours to survive. It appears that those who really are important already have a place to escape to. Will we?

Posted in Other Illuminati Articles by Svali | Leave a Comment »

The European Roots of the Illuminati

September 16, 2008 by koniword

Until recently, I have mainly written about programming and methods to work through and attempt to resolve it. But as I am working on my own healing, I am coming to realize that while breaking programming is important (and often life-saving), that eventually it becomes important to deal with core issues. Core issues go beneath and behind programming, and often not only drive it, but sabotage the therapy process as the survivor attempts to heal.
These issues will be different for each survivor, since we each have a unique history.

I have received emails from survivors from around the world, and have found that: *The Illuminati is certainly not the only occult group in the world; there are many other well-organized groups that do methodic, repetitive abuse of an occult nature. But in these groups, often the core issues are different than for the Illuminati *Even within the Illuminati, each individual will need to discover their own personal history, since parentage, bloodlines, and programming methods will differ, as well as the child's eventual role in the group. This article is not meant to address all methods, or all survivor's histories in the group.

I can't speak for everyone who was abused in the group; I can only speak of what I myself am discovering about my own personal history, in the hopes that it will help other survivors through either validation, or to help supporters better understand some of the issues that they face during the process of remembering and healing.

The Illuminati are based in Europe, which is where their power base has always been. I remember being told as a young child that America was basically considered their "mission field" or the "land of opportunity" by those whose roots extend for hundreds of years or more into the ancient European dynastic bloodlines.

This is why their power hierarchy around the world, whether in the U.S., Asia, Australia, Canada, or elsewhere will always point back to Europe, where the 13 rulers (they also call them "lords") are based. Each ruler represents an area of Europe held under his sway; and each one represents an ancient dynastic bloodline.

For example, the Hapsburg bloodline (Merovingian) is still active in Europe, although hidden, as well as the Rothschild and Battenberg bloodlines . In many modern European countries, the heirs of these bloodlines are immensely wealthy, and secretly are the "power behind the throne", if not the actual rulers.

This is one reason why those of high Illuminati rank/descent in the U.S., for example, can always trace their bloodline or parentage to members of this ruling cabal in Europe; members of leadership councils in the States are always direct descendants, whether legitimate or illegitimate.

Whether at the lowest levels, or the highest, though, this group operates with the same methods: instilling intense fear and terror to control their members. Often this is done through the fear of death, and at the core level, the person who has undergone their training will have an immense fear of dying because of the "death and resurrection" experiences, or near death experiences, that they have undergone.

During these experiences, the very young child or even infant core will be faced with intolerable choices: to allow themselves to be extinguished, or to embrace the demonic and the beliefs of those in their bloodline parentage. I believe this is dissociation at its deepest level, since the desire to survive is one of the deepest instincts that God has given us, and will override intellect, cognition, and even well-thought out beliefs in an adult-much less in a very young child. When faced with certain death and terror, or life, albeit at a price that is much too high, the infant or child almost always chooses life (I have never heard of one that hasn't to date, although my own knowledge and experience are limited).

Then the one who offers life to the infant becomes their "savior", and worshipped virtually as a deity in the child's mind and heart for "saving" them in one of the most wicked set ups imaginable.

In many cases, this is one of the child's parents, and most often, their biological father. The biological father may not be the person that the child consciously remembers raising them during childhood; and once again, this encourages deep dissociation: the consciously remembered "Daddy" may not be the survivor's real father.

Identity confusion is also layered in. The name the child goes by during the daytime

may be quite different from their "real" name, or even the name on their birth certificate. A child of high lineage may discover that they weren't born in the United States, but in Europe, if the ties to the European bloodlines are great enough; or even that their American birth certificate was forged, to cover their European one.

Each situation is different, and different bloodlines practice different methods of raising, mentoring, and training their offspring. For instance, those of German descent may be taken to Germany, and spend time with those of this bloodline learning the ways of this country, and developing a loyalty to what they consider their "true homeland", before going back to another country to live under a different identity. Because above all else, children are called back to their European roots at frequent intervals to develop loyalty to their family home and name, and to undergo ceremonies meant to instill terror and ongoing cooperation, alternated with loving bonding experiences meant to instill deep love for the parental figures.

A child may live in Japan, but they will always know that their true home is in Germany or France; the child in Canada may know that their true home is the U.K., or Russia, and the child in the U.S. will long to return to "home" in Europe with the loyalty that is instilled, whether "home" is Germany, Bavaria, France, Moscow, the UK, Spain, or another country ruled by one of the 13.

This terror, this training, and the bonds of not only loyalty, but caring and nurturing that the child experienced through their true parentage, are often the most difficult and insidious to break. Deep terror combined with loving rescue and nurture create deep loyalty through trauma bonding, and breaking these ties at the core level is the most difficult task that many survivors face.

My prayer is that by explaining some, it can help others know that this does occur, which is the first step to uncovering it and working on it. I believe that deep prayer and support from others are the only methods of both uncovering these ties, and of breaking their hold. I am still working on these issues, and welcome others to share their experiences of undoing the hold of loyalty at this core level to the original perpetrators, and of breaking the spiritual and emotional ties to them. I will be more than happy to publish here anonymously any articles on this topic, as an encouragement to others who are breaking ties to the power centers in Europe. Because, ultimately, these men must lose in their bid for power. Scripture tells us that there is only one king on the throne: Jesus Christ, and that eventually, even the European roots of the Illuminati and their coming "prince" or antichrist, will be cut down, when Christ reigns over the earth.

Blessings to you, Svali

Posted in Other Illuminati Articles by Svali | Leave a Comment »

svalispeaksagain 5:27 pm on September 30, 2021

Tags: Jesuit (10), mind control (69), occult (13), programming (60), ritual abuse (65), Vatican (10)

Exposing the Vatican book: Part 4

Early Splitting

The first weeks of life for an infant born to the Jesuits are very busy and extremely painful. This is when the first splits are split again, and templates for systems are created and organized. Spiritual programming is also conducted in a more methodical method.

The first organization and traumas occur with “white room” and “black room” training. The infant undergoes traumas which include: being quickly lowered while the head is supported (to make the infant feel as if they are falling and initiate the startle reflex); peeling of skin with sharp knives from the sole of the feet, the backs of the legs, the backs of the arms, and the back (infants heal very quickly, with minimal scarring, since only the very top layer of skin is peeled off); digital rape; electroshock; near-drowning in a tub of water; partial suffocation; burning with fire on digits and the soles of the feet. These are called “prime traumas” and become the foundational physical traumas for the systems being created.

Along with the physical trauma is severe spiritual trauma. Rituals are conducted, and demons are attached to the splits being created, to cause the splits to remain apart (the brain will normally try to rapidly re-attach splits during infancy unless demonic barriers are put in place). The impartation is often done through the laying on of hands of the Father or programmer on the infant’s head and/or belly.

The initial, primary programming, occurs either in a white room, where the programmers, walls, clothing and lights are all white (this would occur for the presentation or cover programming), or in an all-black room where the only light comes from a black, or ultraviolet, light, if any. This is where theta (spiritual) programming and the programming of the true deeper (back) layers occurs.

One reason that the initial theta, or spiritual, programming occurs in an all-black room is not only for mental organization, but to also decrease the amount of interaction with the physical world

Follow

via sight and the senses that will occur within these parts being created. Many of these parts are created literally in darkness, and have never seen daylight throughout their lives u occurs.

The primary core splits, and the master controllers are always created first. These will take on the roles and names of spiritual entities, since a Jesuit system is first and primarily spiritual, designed to serve satan, the antichrist, and the beast (father, son and spirit). All three will be represented in these first splits along with other deities.

The presentations are also created, and dedicated to deities with roles of amnesia; in fact, the presentation undergoes as much or more programming than any other parts in Jesuit systems, which tends to surprise survivors. who may have believed that these systems “didn’t go through bad things.” They have, and their traumas are among the worst, which is why presenter programming is often the last to heal in many systems.

These traumas fuel the deep amnesia that is always present in Jesuit systems: there are always huge barriers placed between the presentations (“hosts”), the cover programming, the Vatican programming, and the New World Order programming.

Buffers

In these sophisticated systems, buffers will be created between the front and back with one sole purpose: to hide the extent of the programming, by “buffering” the feelings between front and back, and maintaining emotional and memory distance between the two. The buffers will always be very void of feeling, and extremely traumatized, since they “hide the back” and help make the programming “undetectable” to the world, and the survivor.

Brain Wave Programming, Early Theta and Spiritual Training

The Jesuits utilize the fact that when a person’s brain waves are in theta state, they are the most open to the spiritual realm. This is why much of their spiritual training is conducted when the individual is in theta state.

Early Brain Wave Programming

The infant is taught to stay in theta state by attaching electrodes to their head that pick up brain waves and show them on a monitor. When the infant personality that is being trained is in theta state, the infant is heavily praised. If the personality “bounces” out of theta state, as is normal, the infant is heavily shocked. Eventually, the personalities created learn to stay permanently in theta state (this same training method is also used for the personalities in other brain wave states, to teach them to stay in the desired brain wave state).
To the left above is a graph of brain wave states (the major ones except epsilon are shown). Gamma is the highest brain wave state, and will occur when a person is in a highly excited or nervous state. This is where loyalty programming and sabotage scripts will later be programmed in, since the high anxiety in this state will trigger calling the police, accuse the helper of kidnapping, or other self-sabotage, if someone tries to help the survivor.

Beta state is a normal alert state, and this is where military systems and those that need a normal alert state will be created. Alpha is more relaxed, and accessing systems and presentations will be created in this state. Delta is the deepest brain state, and will hold semi-unconscious and even

unconscious beliefs; delta programming will be discussed in more detail later in this book.

Theta Training

Once they can stay in theta state, the early spiritual training begins. The thetas are kept in a blackened room, and the people who interact with them appear shadowy. Actors dressed as demons will come into the room, and "chain" the infant to them. The actors demonstrate to the infant how demons act, growling, snarling and torturing them in various ways. At the same time, the infant is told that THEY are the demon. This is how demonic punishers and controllers are created in the first weeks of life.

The Jesuits understand that an infant must be shown an external reality in order to internalize it. The infant must internalize in order to establish the programming that the Jesuits desire for later control.

The theta state parts in the infants are left in darkened cribs and are given objects such as decapitated heads to play with; or demonic toys such as fetishes. The infant's fingers are placed around the neck of a kitten, and when they squeeze, as babies will, they are highly praised. The infant has no idea of what they are doing at this stage, but the foundation for later assassination training is being put in place.

Demons come into the room, and talk and play with the infant's theta parts. This is their first bonding, with these creatures that appear horrific.

Gradually, the infant is taught to call on the demonic for theta capabilities. The Jesuit Father will throw a ball at the infant to hit it, and encourage the baby to spiritually throw the ball back at them (they are too young to have the physical coordination to do so, but can easily do this demonically). Throwing a ball demonically is demonstrated, and the baby is hit again and again, until in anger and frustration, they are able to loft the ball back at the person hitting them. This is heavily praised, since the infant is using spiritual power to accomplish what it cannot physically, and using its hurt and rage at being abused and turning it to hurt another back. This is the early foundation for later theta capabilities.

The infants are taken to rituals, where they watch sacrifices performed, their infant seats propped amidst the fires. They are also taken to re-enactments of "hell" where demons dance and torture victims, and the first subconscious images of hell and the need to punish even the slightest disobedience are ingrained. The infants undergo extensive torture from demons, to teach them in these first weeks of life to fear "descending" and "going to hell" above any other punishment.

White Room Programming

In the white room, the other controllers are being created as well. Men and women dressed as members of the Greek Pantheon (for the white/Illuminati or Beast-Loyal systems), the Roman Pantheon (for the Black, or Vatican/Satan-Loyal systems), and the Ancient Pantheon (for the grey, or New World Order/Antichrist-Loyal systems) visit the infant, introduce themselves, explain who they are, and create a spiritual tie to these parts. They literally take cords (white, black, and grey) and tie themselves physically to the infant for hours; they also force the infant to undergo rituals dedicating these parts to the demons. The infant also watches videos, virtual reality programs, and holograms in which these 'gods and goddesses' of the Pantheons talk to them, and explain that they also are a god or goddess.

This basic programming all takes place in the first three months of life, and is continued for years afterwards.

Mentors are also bonded to the young theta splits. These are individuals with strong theta skills in place as well (otherwise, they would be maimed by the infant who has not learned to “focus” or control their developing skills). These mentors will “rescue” the young theta splits from death during setups time and again, to teach them to trust the mentor with their life. This is important for later theta spiritual programming, where the young child will travel demonically through the dimensions and must follow their mentor, or risk death.

The mentoring relationship creates a deep “mother-daughter” or “father-daughter” bond at the deepest spiritual levels, and is the only semblance of a “mother” relationship that a young child is allowed to have in the Jesuit order. All other mother figures in their life are purposely extremely abandoning and emotionally unavailable, to force the child to trust their spiritual mentor (often viewed as a “cult mother”) as their true “mother bond.” Healing for the survivor will include grieving the extremely distorted attachment bonds that were allowed, as well as remembering the terrible abandonment by maternal figures during infancy.

The survivor may also have to work through the grieving that occurs when they remember that as an older teen or adult, they mentored spiritual (and/or) biological children of their own. These love bonds are real, and very deep, and are held unconsciously. These bonds are often manipulated in attempts to “draw” the person back to the group, since the survivor may be completely unaware of their emotional and spiritual attachment to a person they mentored, until the parts that bonded choose to bring this knowledge to conscious awareness.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

book part 4
September 13, 2021
In "healing"

Exposing the Vatican: Part 5
October 7, 2021
In "healing"

Book Part 8
December 23, 2021
In "healing"

heavenlyrevelationsfromdaddy 2:52 am on October 5, 2021

Fantastic info, little lost on buffers

★ Like

Pingback: Targeted by Jesuits - Veronica Swift

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← book part 4

Exposing the Vatican: Part 5 →

Create a free website or blog at WordPress.com.

Svali Speaks!

The Life of Svali – an Ex-Illuminati Mind Control Programmer

Chapter Nine: Programming Linked to Stories, Movies, Cartoons, or role Play Dramatization

September 29, 2008 by koniword

In this chapter, I want to address a special type of programming that is universal with the Illuminati. It is programming that is linked to a story, movie, cartoon, or role play dramatization.

For countless centuries, Illuminati trainers and leaders have used role playing to reinforce as well as program children, and it is a favorite mode of teaching up to this day. A typical drama set up, or role play, will involve a "visit through time." The child is told, while drugged or hypnotized, that it and the other children with it (usually, a small group will go through this programming together) are going to " time travel". The trainer or teacher is seen as immensely powerful by the children, as he or she magically transports them through time. They enter another room, where people are dressed up in period costumes from whichever time period in history the teacher wants the children to see. Everything is historically accurate and well researched. An example: if the children are to visit ancient Rome, they will be taken to a room in the Senate, where the characters are dressed in togas. They will be speaking to each other in ancient Latin and debating issues. Caesar, or another king will enter the senate. Roman customs for a scenario such as this one will be adhered to throughout the role play.

One purpose of this role playing, is that the children are told they are getting a "behind the scenes " peek at history. Illuminati agenda will be put forward, and the children will "see" that famous figures in history were actually Illuminists. This will reinforce their "special ness" and the historicity of the group. It will also reinforce language training, since the scenes may occur in medieval England, or the French court of Louis XIV, etc. The scenes will also contain a moral that builds on programming the children have been undergoing. Maybe they will watch a "traitor" being "guillotined" in the French court. Or an unworthy senator, who tries to betray his king, will be stabbed. The child may be given a role in the play, such as taking a secret message to the king or queen, to reinforce courier programming. The child really believes that they have stepped back into history, and are part of the process of helping create history.

With modern times, programming has become more sophisticated with the advent of technology. Before television or movies, programming was often "scripted" around famous fairy tales, or stories, read aloud by one trainer while the second trainer worked with the child. A good see-song voice is necessary in a "reader". The

Search

Categories

Interview with Svali – The Illuminati in America
Mind Control Programming Articles by Svali
Multiple Personalities – Brokenness
Other Authors
Other Illuminati Articles by Svali
Ritual Abuse Articles by Svali
Svali Answers Questions
Svali's Personal Life
The Illuminati: How the Cult Programs People

Betrayal programming brain wave programming color programming Complex Polyfragmentation cult Cult Abuse Cult Safety Cult Secrecy Denial Programming DID dissociation end times Illuminati plan end times scenario Escaping from the Cult government programming Having needs Healing from Ritual Abuse Hiding from the Cult History of Ritual Abuse Illuminati bankers Illuminati jobs jewel programmming linked programming Memory suppression metal programming military programming MPD

Privacy & Cookies: This site uses cookies. By continuing to use this website, you agree to their use.
To find out more, including how to control cookies, see here: Cookie Policy
Close and accept

Now days, movies and videos are frequently used in programming. Favorite scripts include: Walt Disney movies (Disney was an Illuminist), especially Fantasia, Sleeping Beauty, The Little Mermaid, Cinderella, Beauty and the Beast. The Wizard of Oz, both books and movie, has been used. Any movie that incorporates Illuministic themes can be used. E.T. and Star Wars have been used in more recent years.

How Script programming is done:
The trainer will play the movie for the child. The child is told that they will be "asked about " the movie, this cues the child to use photographic recall about what they are viewing. The trainer may show the child an edited shorter version of the movie, with only parts of the whole, or may show the child a short scene from the movie.

After watching the movie, or scene, the child is drugged to relax it, then asked what it remembers. The child will be shocked if it cannot recall items the trainer deems important, and will be forced to watch the scenes repetitively.

When the child has total recall of the segments, the trainer will tell the child that it is one of the characters. The child may be heavily traumatized first, and a blank slate personality created inside to be the desired character. The first thing the blank slate sees is a recording of the movie, or scene. This is its "first memory". The trainer will then link the scene with Illuminati ideology. They will teach the child the "hidden meaning" in the movie, and praise the child for being one of the few "enlightened ones" who can understand what it truly means. The script programming will often be linked to other programming the child is undergoing. Military programming may be linked to Star Wars. Total recall programming may be linked to Data in Star Trek. Computer programming may be linked to Hal in 2001 A Space Odyssey; internal labyrinth programming may be linked to the movie "Labyrinth". The possibilities are quite varied and will depend on both the child and the trainer as to which direction script programming will go. Music from the show, or scene, will be used as a trigger to access the programming inside or bring forward these personalities.

Suggestions:

Scripted programming will often involve a great deal of traumatization, to create the "blank slate" alters desired. The programming will be ground in with repetition, electroshock, torture, drugging and hypnosis. The alters inside who have gone through this programming will often be highly disconnected from external reality and may believe that they are part of a "script". They may be Dorothy seeking the Emerald City (or the achievement of Illuminati rule on earth). They may be a computer or the character Data. Reality orientation will be very important. Allow these parts to experience safe outside reality, and test for themselves if they are really part of a man or woman. Looking in a mirror may help, when they express readiness. Having cognitive helpers who can share daily life memories with them, may help to ground them. At first they will be very surprised, even indignant or hostile, at suggestions that they are not the character. They will think the therapist is a trainer, or part of the script, since this is the only reality that they have known. Re-grounding, patiently, over and over to present reality, increased communication with others inside, and eventually grieving over the intense amount of trickery and deception that they experienced, will be necessary. With time and patience these parts will be willing to give up their old "scripted" roles and become part of the person's present reality.

Posted in The Illuminati: How the Cult Programs People | Tagged linked programming | Leave a Comment »

Svali Speaks!

Ritual Abuse Roots of the Illuminati Shell Programming

Blog at WordPress.com.

Spiritual Abuse Spiritual Programming suicidal programming Survivors of Ritual Abuse Svali is Alive Svali is dead Svali is missing Svali is Safe Svali poem Svali questions techniques Theapists reveal truth about Ritual Abuse Therapists VR programming

Chapter Eight: CIA , Governmental, and Scholarship programming

September 29, 2008 by koniword

Some systems will have internal CIA programming. Some of the methods mentioned in earlier chapters, such as brain wave programming and color coding were developed in part through funding by the CIA in the 1950's and 1960's. Military intelligence officers working in Langley, Virginia, used these government funds to conduct research on human subjects. They reported what they were learning to trainers throughout the U.S. and Europe.

CIA programming can include having alters in a system trained in different techniques of both finding a target, and studying the target without being detected. The end result of tagging the victim can include having a sexual assignation with the target, or may involve having people inside trained to assassinate a target.

These are complex programming sequences, and are put in over years of training, with periodic reinforcement. Alters may be trained to become hyper aware of their environment, and able to overhear conversations that are whispered. Internal recorders are taught to download these conversations, as well as other info. Photographic recall is emphasized, as the person will be hypnotized or put into a delta state for "downloading" information to the trainer or CIA operative.

The survivor with CIA programming will have been taught extensively how to "drop a tag" (detect anyone following them, and ditch them). This training will be begun in early childhood and built upon as the child grows older. They will often be taken into a neutral colored training room. They may be drugged, or hypnotized, usually a combination of both.

They will be shown training films of how a CIA operative works. They will be told that they are "special", "chosen", "one in a thousand" who is the only one who can do this special work. They are told that they get to be a secret agent for the CIA. The young child, having no idea who the CIA is, focuses on the fact that they have been chosen because they are special, needed, and will be eager to please. The child will be taken to a dinner party, or a drama set up by the trainer. There will be a group, anywhere from ten to sixteen people at the "party". Afterwards, the child will be questioned by the trainer extensively. Who was sitting where? What were they wearing? What color were their eyes? Their hair? Who gave the speech? What did they say? The child will be praised for correct answers, but punished, shocked if unable to recall details. This is to reinforce natural photographic memory, and assist the child with recording details. The next few times, the child's abilities will improve, as it wants to avoid punishment.

In the next level of training the child will be asked to observe, and figure out: who is the most important person in the room? Why? They will be taught body movements, and mannerisms, that give nonverbal clues away. The child may be taught to approach important adults, or an assigned target, first in role play, later in real life, and engage them in innocuous conversation while looking for information they have been clued to get. They may be taught to be innocently seductive, and will be dressed for the part. They will frequently be taught to lure the target into having intercourse with them.

An older youth, or adult, will also be taught not only how to lure a target into bed, but later how to kill them, if they are an assassination target, while they are asleep or relaxing after sexual relations. They will be taught to go through the target's belongings for any information needed by the trainer or cult leader. Often, before an assignment for an assassination, the cult member will be indoctrinated with reasons why killing the victim is a service to humanity. They will be lied to and told that they are the head of a porno ring, a pedophile, or a brutal villain. This will

engage the assassin's natural anger towards the person, and will motivate them, while helping to overcome their natural moral reluctance and guilt at killing a human being.

They will be taught how to disguise themselves, with change of clothing, sex (masquerading as the opposite sex), makeup, contact lenses, and get out of the situation safely. They will be taught how to overcome interrogation techniques with extensive training and hypnosis, in case they are ever caught. They will be taught to self suicide with a pill or dagger, if they are ever apprehended, in most cases.

Suggestions:

CIA programming will involve the use of sophisticated technology to reinforce its effectiveness, and can be difficult to break. It may involve the person being traumatized in isolation tanks (this will also be done with brain wave programming). It may involve sensory deprivation, sensory overload, isolation, sleep deprivation. It may involve hours of listening to repetitive tapes on headphones. The subject is shocked, or severely punished, if they try to remove the headphones. They will be hypnotized, tortured; subjected to different drug combinations; they will be exposed to harmonic tones, often in one ear or the other. They will be exposed to flashing strobe lights,
which may induce a seizure, and alters will be programmed to cause seizures if the subject tries to break programming. They will be shown high speed films with different tracks, one for the left eye and one for the right eye, to increase brain splitting or dichotomous thinking.

The survivor and therapist need to work slowly to undo the effects of this trauma. The person will need to come to terms, slowly, and carefully, with how the programming was done. They may need to learn their own access codes (this will also be true of brain wave, and other sophisticated programming techniques). They will need to communicate with the traumatized alters and fragments inside, let them know they were used. They will need to help the young alters, who were split to create the system, and often underwent the worst traumas. Grieving for the abuse, the trauma, the methodical calculation used and scientific methods used to put in this programming, will take time. Venting feelings, including rage, safely will be important. The survivor may be afraid of strong feelings and will fear especially anger and rage, since they will associate those feelings with having to kill, hurt, or assassinate others. Allowing the feelings to be expressed slowly and carefully, being aware that homicidal and suicidal feelings will probably come up, is important.

If there is a concern about the ability to control acting out, the client may need to go inpatient in a safe facility that understands mind control and cult programming. They will fear being labeled "psychotic" since the programmers told them that they would be called this, and locked up forever. The WORST thing a therapist or hospital can do in a situation like this, is play into those fears, or label the person psychotic. Constant grounding in reality, using grounding exercises; slow, careful venting of rage and betrayal feelings; reinforcing over and over that the survivor can remember, and NOT go psychotic, or die, BELIEVING and VALIDATING the survivor, are all important. The survivor may have unstable behavior at points, but this is not psychosis, but rather, the natural reaction to extreme trauma. The survivor needs to realize this, and that they can overcome its effects, with time and good therapy. They will need hope, and a good support system.

Governmental Programming:

Governmental programming will involve the person being trained to take leadership positions or administrative positions in the government. They may be trained to network with others in governments, both local , national, and international. The Illuminati's stated goal is to infiltrate, and eventually cause the downfall of, all major governments in the world. Government operatives are taught to do this by:
infiltrating local political parties running for leadership both locally and nationally working for top leaders, as administrators, financial advisors funding governmental

races and backing the person sympathetic to the Illuminati, or putting their person in to win, creating political chaos and unrest with operatives trained in dissension. The people selected for governmental programming are usually highly intelligent with native charm, or charisma. They are also skilled people manipulators. These abilities may be enhanced through programming, encouraging the person to project a "persona" that will draw people to them.

They are also taught finances extensively. This programming is done by: hypnotizing the person, whether child, youth, or adult (it is usually initiated in late childhood in suitable candidates), and inducing deep trance with drugs. The person is shocked, then told the trainer's and cult agenda for the person. They are told that they are very special to the Illuminati, and will be one of the people who helps change world history. They are told they will be rewarded with wealth, popularity and power for achieving the cult's agenda. They are told, and shown, what the punishment for disobedience is. They are shown training films about government, how it works, national and international affairs. They will meet with special teachers, who coach them on the inner political workings of the group they want to infiltrate, including the power structure and strengths and weaknesses of key players.

They will learn any languages necessary for the position. They will go to University, or get any training and education needed for credibility. They will receive special scholarships to finance this, if needed. They are given opportunities to practice their skills at infiltration, information gathering, people manipulation, and politics in set ups, and later in real situations. If they need to learn to control the media, they will learn methods to do this. They will have extensive back up and coaching during their entire career.

Suggestions:

Governmental programming is quite complex, since it ties in with the person's natural abilities. They may not be able to separate themselves easily from the role that they perform and often will only feel that they are acceptable when they do their job. They may find it difficult to believe that their career, friendships, marriage and contacts have been secretly guided by the cult for most of their life. These parts may feel offended, betrayed, or furious when this realization hits. They will also find it difficult not to use the manipulation skills that come so naturally, both on their therapist, and themselves, to dull the pain that the truth may bring. The person and the alters that have undergone this type of programming have a lot to lose if they give up their roles and persona, and need to count the cost of getting out and acknowledge the difficulty of doing so. They will need to grieve over being used, and for the false interpretation of reality they have believed all their lives. Listening to other parts inside and acknowledging the reality of the cult abuse will be important steps in breaking free. Success in a new career in the person's daily life will also help restore a broken self image.

Scholarship training:

The Illuminati revere scholarship, especially oral tradition. Children with good memories and native intelligence may undergo specific training in the area of scholarship. This will include learning under trauma, with praise for accomplishment. It will also mean punishment or being shocked for poor performance. Some of the major areas of scholarship include, but are not limited to:

Oral tradition: history of the Illuminati, especially the child's particular branch, memorizing genealogies. Learning and becoming fluent in multiple languages, both modern and ancient, including but not limited to: English, French, German, Russian, Spanish, Arabic, Latin, Greek, Hebrew, Egyptian hieroglyphics; ancient Babylonian, ancient Chaldean and cuneiform writings. Some revered ancient texts are written in very ancient languages, and certain ceremonies may include rituals which utilize them. Learning ancient and modern history and becoming adept at

planning role plays and dramatizations. Learning to teach others the above skills. The child who becomes adept at scholarship will also be expected to become a skilled teacher, and in turn, pass their knowledge down to others. They will practice teaching in both classroom and individual sessions.

Suggestions:

Scholarship programming will involve alters who are intensely loyal to the cult, since they believe they are related to a long, unbroken line of people since earliest history. They will often be immersed in cult philosophy, having read and memorized numerous esoteric volumes related to it. Appealing to logic, intellect, having an open mind and discussing the pros and cons of leaving the cult with them will often be received the best. They despise open conflict, and prefer addressing issues intellectually. They will be skilled debaters, and quite verbal. Asking them to read books that address becoming free from the cult, and asking them to sit in and listen to accounts from traumatized alters both in their system and others inside, will often help them make the decision to switch loyalties. Although they will have been immersed in false ideologies and doctrines, they are frequently willing to attempt to be intellectually honest. They will read and debate both sides of an issue, and may become some of the first to make the decision to leave the cult once convinced that it is abusive.

Posted in The Illuminati: How the Cult Programs People | Tagged government programming | Leave a Comment »

Chapter Seven: Military Programming

September 29, 2008 by koniword

I want to devote an entire chapter to military programming, and how it is done. Why? As noted in chapter three, the Illuminati are emphasizing the importance of military training more and more, as part of their plan for eventual takeover. All children in the current generation are undergoing some form of military training as part of this plan.

Military training is begun quite young. It is often started by three years of age with simple exercises. The children are taken by their parents to a training area, which may be a large inside auditorium, or a remote area outside where training maneuvers are done. Tents are set up, with command centers for the different commanding officers and military trainers.

The children are taught to march in time, keeping a straight line. They are punished by being kicked, shocked with a cattle prod, or beaten with a baton if they move out of place. They will be dressed in small uniforms in imitation of the adults.

The adults will have ranks, badges and insignia indicating their level of achievement in the cult hierarchy and military. Badges and medals are given out to indicate the person's level of training and tests passed. Commanding officers are often brutal and will teach even the youngest children with harsh measures.

The children will be forced to march long distances, which increase as they get older, in any weather. They are forced to learn to cross obstacles. They will be given "fake" guns, with blanks, when they are young. These guns are perfect replicas of real guns, but fire blanks. The children are taught to load and fire all manner of firearms, both real and fake, under close adult supervision. They will spend hours learning to aim, sight, and fire these guns at targets. At first the targets are bulls eyes, but as the children get older the targets will be similar to police cut outs of humans. The children are taught to aim for the head or the heart. Later, they will graduate to realistic manikins. This is conditioning them to kill a human being.

They will be shown violent films of warfare, much more explicit and graphic than normal movies in group classes. Killing techniques will be shown in slow motion. The motif "kill or be killed" will be ground in over and over. The trainer will ask the children what mistakes the people who were killed made. Being killed is considered weakness; being a killer is considered strength.

The children will be forced, by age seven or eight, to crawl on their bellies with simulated blanks firing overhead. They are not told these are blanks and they are extremely painful if the child is hit in the back or buttocks. They quickly learn to keep down under fire. Battle conditions will be simulated as the children go through years of "boot camp" training.

They will be rewarded with merit badges for doing well, such as completing an obstacle course, or staying cool under fire. In other words, the cult creates a microcosm of real military training for their children and youth. Nazi concentration camps will be simulated, with guards and prisoners. The "guards" are usually older children or youth who have done well. The "prisoners" are younger children or those being punished for not performing well in maneuvers. There is intense pressure to want the guard role and not be a prisoner, since prisoners are locked up, beaten, kicked, and laughed at.

Hunting and tracking games where the prisoners are given a half hour lead are frequent. These may also involve the use of specially trained dogs taught to knock the quarry down but not kill them. Older children are taught to handle the dogs, and use them. Youth are taught to help the adults train the dogs.

Teens may be rewarded by becoming "youth leaders" who are allowed to plan the weeks activities. The military training will closely follow the principles of Nazi military and S.S. training. The trainers often speak in German to the children, who must learn the language. All C.O.s and high ranking adults speak in German during these exercises. They may also speak in French, since linguistic ability is encouraged in the Illuminati.

Exercises for older youth will include games where groups compete against each other, and the older teen leads, with the help of an adult advisor. Groups that win are rewarded, groups that lose are punished. The youth are taught to leave behind the weak, or slow members. Unfit members are shot or killed, and the youth leader learns to do these tasks. They are taught to bring their unit through simulated battles with other units, and cool, cognitive logic under these conditions is rewarded. The goal is to creative cognitive leaders inside the military systems, who are dissociated from emotions under the stress of battle conditions.

The youth and their followers are taught and trained in all manner of crowd control. They will see special films, that address all possible responses to a military takeover, and the crowds' response. These situations are then acted out during exercises, and the older Youth leaders and their units are expected to deal with the different responses. The "crowd" is coached by their trainers to act in different ways.

The ultimate goal of all of this is to create an organized army of children, youth, and adults, who will know exactly what to do during the coming takeover of the world. The training that I described is going on not only in the U.S., but in every country in the world. Top training centers are located in Germany, Belgium, France, and Russia. Military trainers are often sent to these countries, to learn new techniques, then sent back to their home countries.

What to do:
It is important to realize that military alters inside are extremely hierarchical. They will often be ranked inside, with lower "foot soldiers" accountable to inside alters with increasing rank. Usually, the higher the military rank, the higher the alter will be inside the system. A soldier with no rank may not have much knowledge about, or pull, inside the system. Its only job is to blindly obey others, after years of conditioning to do this.

Ranking officers inside will often be modeled after outside perpetrators, officers, or trainers. An internal General will often have much more knowledge than lower ranks, and should be befriended, as they can help with therapy.

It will take time, effort, and patience for both the survivor and the therapist to get to know these military officers. They are often abrupt, arrogant, and extremely hostile to therapy. They are often strongly loyal to the cult and proud of their badges, awards, and achievements that were earned through years of traumatization and hard work. They will often be reluctant to give this up, for the perceived "loss" engendered by leaving the cult.

They will also have strong programming surrounding them, including "honor/dishonor" suicidal programming (the brave, honorable soldier will die rather than betray his group, etc.). It is important to deal with the suicidal programming and intense limbic conditioning that many of these alters have been subjected to, while at the same time reasoning with the higher ranking members.

They will have photographic memory and recall of all aspects of military history. Giving them safe, appropriate, physical outlets in the daytime can let them vent off steam. These are very physically conditioned alters, who enjoy running, walking, target practice with guns and knives. Letting them go hiking (with a safe support person), practice outdoor skills, can be helpful.

Acknowledging their importance to the survivor, and the trauma they underwent, respecting their loyalty, bravery, and appealing to their sense of honor to help the system stay safe (these alters often have a highly developed, although misguided, sense of honor) can help. Internal commendation for bravery, even an internal awards ceremony (they are used to this) for the parts that have decided to leave the cult, and protect the body, can be performed. They are used to praise and recognition for work well done, and need this motivation. They were used to getting this from the cult, but the survivor can turn the locus of control internally, instead of externally, to break bonds with the cult.

Military protectors can change their job to keeping the body safe, away from perpetrators. They can be a system's greatest asset, as they are great at "kicking butt", and are not easily frightened. They may be able to tell outside perpetrators to leave the survivor alone, and protect the survivor from outside accessing.

Allowing them to vent their feelings in therapy, in journaling, in pictures, and in collages can also help. Although higher ranking officers internally are often very dissociated from their feelings, they can begin to empathize with the others below them, who took their pain, and the brunt of the brutal, punitive experiences. They have to be willing to acknowledge that they were abused at some point, that they were deceived and used. Finding the youngest alters they were split from will help with this process. With time and good internal communication, as well as patience from both the therapist and survivor, military alters can become one of the strongest assets and allies in staying cult free.

Posted in The Illuminati: How the Cult Programs People | Tagged military programming | Leave a Comment »

Chapter Six: Brain Wave Programming

September 29, 2008 by koniword

In this chapter I will address brain wave programming. Brain wave programming, like any other programming, will depend on several factors.

These include: the child's ability to dissociate; the region of the country or which country the child grows up in; the level of ability of the trainers the child has contact with; physical resources and equipment available. There is no one "recipe"

that fits every person and it would be ridiculous to state that all people who go through brain wave programming have it done the same way. More and more, programmers are talking, sharing knowledge over the net, both nationally and internationally, and sharing both successes and failures. But there is no one standardized methodology for brain wave programming. It will often be influenced by the child herself, as well as the trainer's whims. Different groups may organize the systems differently, or try to achieve different effects.

All of this said, what is brain wave programming? Simply put, brain wave programming involves having a young child go into a deep trance state, where they then learn to dissociate into a certain brain wave pattern. This is a complex skill, and not all children can achieve this. The goal is for the child to reach, for example, a consistent delta state, where delta brain waves show up on the EEG, which is attached to the child's head by electrodes in the scalp. Usually, two or even three trainers will work on one child during the initial stages. One will "prep" the child, using a hypnotic drug to induce a trance state. They will have also placed the electrodes on the head, using an abbreviated version of the method used in traditional hospital setting. If delta state is being induced, only the electrodes needed to pick up delta waves will be placed, for example. This is to save time.

The prepped child will be on a "trainer's table", and will be quite relaxed. The average child is about eight years old when this is begun, since the cerebral cortex and neurological development are not advanced enough at earlier ages (It has been tried at earlier ages, quite unsuccessfully, in the past; this practice was dropped because of the neurological damage and "failure to take rate" that trainers were seeing). The non prepping trainer will then let the child know exactly what he/she expects: that they will achieve a special state, called "delta state". The trainer tells the child, while they are in trance state, that they will know when they reach it, by the readings from the electrodes.

The trainer will tell the child alter, who has been called up to be a "template", or building block for the new system, that delta is good. They will emphasize this over and over. The child will then be shocked to increase its receptivity to learning. This also arouses the child from its drugged state and it will be more alert. It will want to please the trainer. The trainer will tell the child that she/he wants it to perform certain mental exercises. It will then give it backwards counting exercises, used to help the child achieve deeper trance states. Other verbal cues to trance down may be given. When the prepping or technical trainer sees delta waveforms, he or she will signal the verbal trainer with a hand motion. The verbal, or teaching trainer will immediately reward the child, saying, "good, you are in delta now." The trainer will caress the child, tell it what a good job it is doing. If the child bounces out of delta state, the verbal trainer will immediately become harsh, and will shock the child as punishment. The child is told that it left delta (which is "good") and needs to go back in.

The induction, counting, will be repeated until delta state is seen again, when the child is repeatedly rewarded for entering, then staying in this state for longer and longer periods. The trainers are using biofeedback principles to teach the child to consistently cue into a brainwave pattern. When the template can stay in delta pattern consistently, the template will be rewarded. This will occur over several months.

The trainers will now have a template that stays always in delta state, that they can begin splitting and using as the basis of forming a new system inside. They will do this using the tools of drugs, hypnosis and trauma. The new system created will record delta waves on an EEG if done correctly. The new system will be taught what delta means. The trainers will often flash a cue, or delta (triangle) symbol on a projector overhead, and "grind in" the delta imprinting. They will wear robes with delta signs on them, and cloth the subject in clothing or robes imprinted with the delta sign. They will teach the alters under hypnosis what deltas do, how they act. They will reward them when they comply, and shock or otherwise traumatize them

if they do not act like "deltas". They will be given delta jobs. They will watch high frequency films, that show delta functions. They may build in a computer like structure to hold the system, showing pictures of its organization while the subject is under deep trance, after creating a clean slate through trauma.

These are some examples of how delta programming may be induced.

Other brain wave states will be induced in similar manners. They will often be formed from templates which are extremely young internal child alters who may be splits from core splits, as the basis for the programming. Common brain wave states used are:

Alpha: this is the most easily reached brain wave state, and also includes both the youngest and most easily accessed alters in the entire system. Young children have long periods of alpha activity and must be trained to enter other brain wave states for long periods. System access programming; access codes and sexual alters will often be placed in alpha, which may also be coded red in some systems.

Beta: this is the next most easily reached state, and is often associated with aggressive impulses. Beta state will often hold cult protectors, internal warriors, and military systems. They may be color coded blue.

Gamma: this will often hold extremely cult loyal alters, and holds more emotion than the other states, except for alpha. Suicide programming will often be layered into this system, as these alters would rather die than leave their "family". Scholarship programming may be held by this system, since they easily memorize by rote. Several languages may be spoken by different alters in this system, as the Illuminati like to program in plural linguality, with up to eight languages, both modern and ancient being spoken.

Delta: this is one of the more cognitive brain wave states, and will often be highly dissociated. It may also be the "ruling" or controlling state over the other brain wave systems. Often, delta state may be configured inside as a computer, and the delta alters will have emotionless, flat alters with photographic memories. They may hold most of the cognitive memories for the other systems, especially if extensive amnesia programming has been done. Delta state may have up to three levels of training: delta 1, delta 2, and delta 3 which will also correlate to security access allowed within the cult; i.e. access to highly confidential information. Behavioral sciences programming may be held by this system. Internal programmers, self destruct, psychotic, and shatter programming as well as other punishment programming sequences to prevent outside access or internal access to the systems may be held within delta systems. It may be color coded both orange/blue/purple, and will also often be the entry way to higher systems such as jewels or internal councils, inside.

Epsilon: this is often a "hidden system" and may hold CIA programming and high level governmental programming . Assassin programming may be held in this system, or in the beta system, depending on the trainer. Covert operations, courier operations, learning to tail a subject, or "drop a tag", disguises, getting out of difficult situations, may be handled by this system, which sees itself as chameleon-like. It may be color coded brown.

Phi/Theta/Omega programming: this represents negative spiritual programming. These are the "dark" ritual alters, who participate in blood rituals, sacrifices, and ceremonies. Internal witches, warlocks, seers, psychics, readers, and occult practitioners will be placed in this system, which has highly developed right brain and deep trance abilities. They will often be color coded black.

This is an overview of some of the more common brain wave systems. It is often placed in over a matter of years, from ages 8 to 21 being the primary ones, with occasional reinforcement of the programming from time to time.

Suggestions:

Brain wave programming is a very complex form of programming which creates automatic amnesia and communication barriers between the different brain wave states. This will also be reinforced by shock and punishment to prevent its "degradation", or undoing. Internal system controllers and programmers will also work to reinforce the programming, especially at night, when the person is asleep (physically).

All brain wave systems will have system controllers, usually set up in a group of three (the Illuminati love triads, as being the "mystical" and most stable number. They believe that systems built upon triads are extremely strong, unbreakable, and will often program in threes: three back ups, three system controllers, etc.) With the help of a good therapist, the survivor needs to get to know the internal system controllers and communicators. They are there, they have to be, because the trainers placed them there to communicate with and be accountable to them externally, and will often have complete knowledge of their own system. They will also be quite flat, and dissociated from the knowledge of their own pain or the abuse that created them. This is a distancing mechanism, and the person's survival depended on the ability of their controller to do this at one time. They will often be quite hostile, and very unwilling to look at their own abuse; they will become indignant at the idea, and claim that they are cognitive, and "above" being abused (another lie they were told by their abusers).

Time, patience, and finding out what their needs are; listening to them vent their frustration; pointing out reality (ie, the controllers, and all parts are related to each other; are part of the same person; and ALL were abused even though they were able to dissociate from their pain), and trying to help them meet their needs for recognition, acceptance, and approval will begin to allow them to question their previous loyalty. These systems are often driven by fear: fear of punishment; fear of remembering (they were often the most tortured systems in the survivor, and were promised amnesia in return for continued cooperation). Their fears are real, and should be listened to and respected, as shatter programming and flood programming are real threats to the survivor, and can cause functionality to go down.

Flood programming is a sequence put in place to punish a system if its internal programming is allowed to degrade or access to an unauthorized person, either internally or externally, is allowed. It will involve the fragments who hold highly traumatic memories, both emotional and physical, being pushed to the front where the person is "flooded" with wave after wave of memories. If this is triggered, and it frequently is if the survivor is in therapy, the first priority should be slowing the memories down. This may mean trying to reason with internal controllers or deltas who are allowing the flooding; they need to know that if the front, or previously amnesic alters down, or are re-shattered due to traumatization, it will weaken all the systems.

Bargain with them. Prayer will help in this situation. Physical safety, including inpatient therapy, may be needed if flooding or shatter programming are activated. Suicide programming is often layered in with both types, and external physical safety will be paramount for the survivor, with lots of outside accountability as they undo these intense programming sequences. Frequent reality orientation; explaining new, better jobs can help. Undoing brain wave programming should ideally only be done with lots of safe external support, which may include extra therapy sessions; hospitalization if programming that could cause loss of functionality or suicide are triggered; and should be geared towards increasing internal communication and cooperation. Alters jobs can be changed, from internal programmers to internal Deprogrammers; internal shatterers or punishers to internal protectors; internal reporters who report back to the cult can instead be asked to report internally on what the body is doing, and to keep it safe.

These are examples of possible changes. Make friends with system controllers, as they can become strong helpers and will work with the therapist to keep things safe

for the survivor.

Posted in The Illuminati: How the Cult Programs People | Tagged brain wave programming | 1 Comment »

Chapter Five: Colors, Metals and Jewel Programming

September 29, 2008 by koniword

Color Coding

One form of programming that is quite common in the Illuminati is color programming. Why is it done? The answer is that trainers are human, and also quite lazy. Color programming is a simple way to organize systems, and allows the trainer to call up alters easily within a system. With the thousands of fragments that many multiples in the cult have, colors is a way of organizing them into an easily accessible group.

Also, young children recognize colors before they can read, so this training can occur quite early. It is begun at about age two in most children.

How it is done: The child is taken into a room with either white, beige, or colored walls. If the room is a neutral color, the lights in the room will be changed, so they color the room with the light's color. If "blue" is the color being imprinted, or put in, the trainer will call up a young child alter, either a controller or core split for a system. They will tell the child that they will learn how to become blue, and what blue means. The room will be bathed in blue light, as mentioned, or has been painted blue for use in this kind of programming. The trainer will be dressed in blue clothing, and may even have a blue mask on. Blue objects will be placed around the room. The alter inside the child is called up, drugged, hypnotized, and traumatized on the table. As they are awakening from the trauma, still in trance, they are told that blue is good, and that they are blue. That blue is important. That blue will protect them from harm. That blue people don't get hurt. This will go on for awhile.

They then ask the child if they want to be "blue", like the trainers. If the child says yes, they will continue on. If the child says no, it will be re-traumatized until it says yes. The child is often naked, and told it cannot wear clothing until it "earns" the right to wear beautiful blue clothing. Over and over the "safety of being blue" (ie freedom from harm) and danger of not having a color is emphasized. The children really wants to be blue after a while of going through this. They may be given blue candy as a reward for choosing to become the color. They may be given blue sunglasses or tinted lenses to wear. They are allowed to wear blue robes once they identify with the color chosen for them.

Once the child completely identifies with the color (or rather, the main alter or template for the system accepts this color), then they are taught in progressive stages, over many training sessions, what the color blue means. They are in set ups, or dramas with other blue children, where they act out the role of a "blue". They are drugged, hypnotized, traumatized, while the meaning of blue is ground in over and over. They are forced to act in "blue" ways. Different trainers and regions will assign different meanings to different colors. Many military systems are coded blue, or protective. The military alters all are called up periodically to reinforce blue training. If the trainer at a later date wants to access a blue system, they may call them up by color, or wear a piece of clothing or a scarf in the color they want to reach.

This becomes an unconscious trigger for this color to come forward. Color coding is one of the first methods that is inlayed over systems. An entire system may be color coded one color; or two or more colors may be coded in , with each system controller (most systems have three) being given a different color over its part of the system.

Metals programming:

Metals programming is a type of programming that many Illuminati children are given. Because it is so similar to jewels programming, I will discuss how it is done under jewels. Metals can be from bronze (lowest) to platinum (highest).

Jewels programming:

Many Illuminati children will go through either metals or jewels programming, and occasionally will go through both. Jewels is considered higher than metals, and more difficult to obtain. Which is put in and when, is dependent on the child's status, its parents status, the region it is born in, the group it is born into, and the trainers that work with it.

Basically, either metals or jewels is a form of reward based programming.

Here is how it works:
The child is shown a piece of jewelry such as a ring, or else a large example of the jewel (or metal) being put in. They are asked: "isn't this Amethyst, or Ruby, Emerald, Diamond) beautiful?" The child will be eager to look at it, touch it, and is encouraged to by a trainer with a soft kind voice. The trainer will ask the child, "wouldn't you like to be beautiful, like this jewel? (or metal jewelry)". The child is usually eager to be. Here is a sparkling gemstone, placed in their small hands (the training often begins between age two and three). Of course they want to be beautiful, sparkly, valued. The trainer will extol the beauty of the gem (or metal), will tell the child how special, valued, wanted gems are, and basically build up the idea of becoming like a jewel.

The child is then told that in order to become a jewel, they must "earn the right". This involves:
a.) passing through steps of discipline (see chapter three)
b.) passing "special tests"
c.) being rewarded for special achievement

Becoming a jewel (or precious metal) is dangled before the small child, like a carrot, as the reward for doing well in training sessions. The earning of one is linked to going through the rungs of the long, arduous training process expected of Illuminati children; having a jewel or metal involves stepping up in status and being praised. But the price is enduring hours of abuse called "training" but in reality is organized, systemic abuse to make the child do what the trainer wants them to become.

Over time, with the help of drugs, hypnosis, shock, and other trauma, as the child goes through it's training process, it will begin earning its jewels and/or metals, one by one. These will become full alters inside.

Amethyst is usually the first one earned, and is linked to keeping secrets, never telling, and passing the first step of discipline. Each step is linked to receiving either a jewel or precious metal.

Ruby will often be next, and is linked to sexual abuse and sexual alters inside. As the child is repeatedly sexually traumatized and survives, or creates sexual alters to please adults, they are "rewarded" by being allowed to become a ruby.

Emerald will often come later (ages 12 to 15). This is considered very precious, and is linked to family loyalty, witchcraft, and spiritual achievement. Emeralds will often have a black cat, or "familiar" linked to them.

Diamond is the highest gemstone, and not all children will earn it. It is considered a high achievement. and may not be earned until adulthood, after passing rigorous tasks. It will be the controlling alter in a gemstone system. A diamond has passed all twelve steps of discipline, plus passed unusual tests and will have highest family loyalty.

"Family jewels" are often passed down internally during training sessions with

trainers and family members. All high Illuminati families will have jewels hidden in secret vaults (real, outside jewels) which have been passed down for generations.

The children will often be given jewelry to wear in the daytime, as a reminder or reward, once they pass their programming. A child may be given a ruby ring or garnet pin to wear; in fact, a grandparent or parent may insist the child wear it. On ritual occasions, the child will be allowed to wear jewelry from the family's vault, once they reach a certain status. They may be allowed to wear a ruby pendant or emerald bracelet during high rituals, and will be quite proud of the fact, since the cult is first, foremost and always an extremely status conscious group. The children pick up on this, and the adults will make a big fuss over the children who have earned the right to wear jewels. This gives them a huge incentive to earn them.

Suggestions that may help with these forms of programming :

Color programming: it is important to have good internal communication with both internal alters and an outside therapist while working on color programming. If an individual finds that certain parts believe that they are a certain color, or if this comes up in therapy, they will want to find out if possible how they came to have this belief system. Slowly discovering how the colors were put in will help. Grieving for the vast amount of deception, the amount of abuse heaped on the child, and the very young alters who were the original templates may occur. These parts may be barely verbal, and may want to draw their experiences, or use colors in collages (with the help of older parts inside), to describe to a safe outside person what their reality has been. Validating to them that they are NOT just a color, that they are part of a whole person, may help. The survivor may see colored overlays for awhile, as they are undoing this programming, as parts inside share their memories. This is normal, although it may feel uncomfortable to see objects as yellow or green, for example. Grounding oneself, having cognitives do reality orientation, and patience will help the survivor work through this time.

Jewel programming and metals may be more complex, since the child's sense of special ness, pride and status may be bound up in these alters. Rubies, emeralds and diamonds are considered "high alters" inside and are used to leadership roles, both internally and externally. Acknowledging their importance to the system; listening to them grieve at leaving the cult, which meant giving up their status externally, and giving them new positions inside that are important can help. They can become system leaders in helping the person stay safe, once they make the decision to leave the cult, and become strong allies. But they will often be among the most resistant, and even hostile, to the idea of leaving the cult at first, since they have only known and remembered being rewarded for jobs well done, and have learned to "pass down" the traumas to "lower parts" inside. They will often honestly not believe they have been abused, and will only remember being petted or allowed to lead, or being told they were special, valued. Listening to how they feel; acknowledging that leaving means giving up things that were important to them, finding out what needs motivated them, and trying to find healthy outlets for them to get their needs met outside of cult meetings will help. Letting a jewel have leadership within, or chair internal meetings may make up for loss of external leadership when the survivor leaves the cult.

Acknowledging their importance to the survivor is also important. Recognize that these parts are EXTREMELY dissociated from their own abuse/trauma, and are in no hurry to remember. But both the survivor and a good therapist can bring reality gently to them, as they let them know that they were abused; that they are actually part of the "lower emotional parts" who were abused, and will eventually need to acknowledge this. This task takes time and good outside support to accomplish. Allow them to vent their feelings. They will often be highly cognitive at first, but feelings will come, especially grieving, then pain at having been deceived by the cult, then the anguish of realizing that the abuse they passed down to others inside was actually happening to them. They may become quite depressed at this stage, but will also lend tremendous stability and strength to the system, in

staying safe and cult free, once they have reached this stage.

These are some thoughts on color, metals, and jewel programming. Other types of programming will be addressed in the next chapter.

Posted in The Illuminati: How the Cult Programs People | Tagged color programming, jewel programmming, metal programming | 1 Comment »

Chapter Four: An Overview of Some Basic Types of Programming

September 29, 2008 by koniword

Chapter Four: How the Illuminati Program People:
An Overview of Some Basic Types of Programming

In the first few chapters, I defined Illuminism, its reach, and some of the philosophy, money making enterprises, and agendas that help explain WHY they program people. I believe that these are important to understand, as a preface to the next few chapters. Why? The programming techniques that I will describe take an incredible amount of effort, time, dedication, and planning on the part of the cult to place in the individual. Only a very motivated group of people would spend the time it takes to do this. These chapters are very hard for me to write, as an individual, since my role in the cult was that of a programmer. So, the very techniques you will be reading about were often those that I used to place programming in individuals that I worked with. I no longer do these things, nor do I espouse doing them; the reason I am writing this book is that I believe that therapists who work with DID, as well as survivors, deserve to know WHAT is done to people, HOW it is done, as well as be given some ideas on how to undo the programming that the cult places in people.

First, I would like to address unintentional programming versus intentional programming. This is also known as the environmental milieu the child is raised in. The programming of a generational Illuminati infant often begins before its birth (this will be addressed later) but once it is born, the very environment the infant is raised in becomes a form of programming.

Often, the infant is raised in a family environment that combines daytime abandonment with dysfunction in the parental figures. The infant soon learns that the nighttime, and cult activities, are the truly important ones. The infant may be deprived of attention, or even abused, in the daytime; and is only treated as special, or "seen" by the parent, in the cult setting. This can lead to very young alters around the core or core splits, who feel "invisible",

abandoned, rejected, unworthy of love or attention, or that they don't even exist, unless they are doing a job for their "family". Another milieu and conditioning process the infant must face is that the adults around him/her are INCONSISTENT, since the adults in a generational cult family are almost always also multiple, or DID. This sets up a reality for the infant/toddler that the parents act one way at home; an entirely different way at cult gatherings; and yet a different way in normal society.

Since these are the infant's earliest experiences of adults and adult behaviors, it has no choice but to accept this reality that human beings act in shockingly different ways in different settings. While unintentional, this sets the infant up for later dissociation, in mimicry of the adults around it.

INTENTIONAL PROGRAMMING
Intentional programming of an infant in the Illuminati often begins before birth. Prenatal splitting is well known in the cult, as the fetus is very capable of fragmenting in the womb due to trauma. This is usually done between the seventh

and ninth month of pregnancy.

Techniques used include: placing headphones on the mother's abdomen, and playing loud, discordant music (such as some modern classical pieces, or even Wagner's operas). Loud, heavy rock has also been used. Other methods include having the mother ingest quantities of bitter substances, to make the amniotic fluid bitter, or yelling at the fetus inside the womb.

The mother's abdomen may be hit as well. Mild shock to the abdomen may be applied,
especially when term is near, and may be used to cause premature labor, or ensure that the infant is born on a ceremonial holiday. Certain labor inducing drugs may be also given if a certain birth date is desired.

Once the infant is born, testing is begun at a very early age, usually during the first few weeks of life. The trainers, who are taught to look for certain qualities in the infant, will place it on a velvet cloth on a table, and check its reflexes to different stimuli. The infant's strength, how it reacts to heat, cold, and pain are all tested. Different infants react differently, and the trainers are looking for dissociative ability, quick reflexes, and reaction times. They are also encouraging early dissociation in the infant with these tests.

The infant will also be abused, to create fragments. Methods of abuse can include: rectal probes; digital anal rape; electric shocks at low levels to the fingers, toes, and genitalia; cutting the genitalia in ritual circumstances (in older infants). The intent is to begin fragmentation before a true ego state develops, and customize the infant to pain and reflexive dissociation from pain (yes, even tiny infants dissociate; I have seen it time and time again; they will glow blank and limp, or glassy, in the face of continued trauma.)

Isolation and abandonment programming will sometimes be begun as well, in a rudimentary sense. The infant is abandoned, or uncared for by adults, intentionally during the daytime, then picked up, soothed, cleaned up and paid attention to in the context of preparing for a ritual or group gathering. This is done in order to help the infant associate night gatherings with "love" and attention, and to help the bonding process to the cult, or "family". The infant will be taught to associate maternal attention with going to rituals, and eventually will associate cult gatherings with feelings of security.

As the infant grows older, i.e. at 15 to 18 months, more fragmenting is intentionally done by having the parents as well as cult members abuse the infant more methodically. This is done by intermittently soothing, bonding with the infant, then shocking it on its digits; the infant may be dropped from heights to a mat or mattress and laughed at as it lays there startled and terrified, crying. It may be placed in cages for periods of time, or exposed to short periods of isolation.

Deprivation of food, water, and basic needs may begin later in this stage. All of these methods are done in order to create intentional dissociation in the infant. The infant of this age may be taken to group meetings, but outside of special occasions, or dedications, will have no active role yet in the cult setting. The small infants are usually left with a cult member, or caretaker, who watches them during the group's activities; this caretaker role is usually rotated among lower level or teenage members.

Between the ages of 20 and 24 months, the toddler may begin the "steps of discipline" which the Illuminati use to teach their children. The age the child begins them will vary, depending upon the group, the parent, the trainer, and the child. These "steps of discipline" would be better called "steps of torment and abuse" as their purpose is to create a highly dissociative child, out of touch with their feelings, who is completely and unthinkingly loyal to the cult.

The order of the steps may also be varied a little, depending on the whims of the trainer or parents. I will first discuss the first five steps of discipline: (note: these

steps may vary somewhat from region to region, but most follow this outline at least roughly, even if not in the same order)

First step: to not need The small toddler/child is placed in a room without any sensory stimulus, usually a training room with gray, white, or beige walls. The adult leaves and the child is left alone, for periods of time: these may vary from hours, to an entire day as the child grows older. If the child begs the adult to stay, and not leave, or screams, the child is beaten, and told that the periods of isolation will increase until they learn to stop being weak. The ostensible purpose of this discipline is to teach the child to rely on its own internal resources, and not on outside people ("strengthen it"). What it actually does is create a huge terror of abandonment within the child.

When the adult, or trainer, returns to the room, the child is often found rocking itself, or hugging itself in a corner, occasionally almost catatonic from fear. The trainer will then "rescue" the child, feed and give it something to drink and bond with the child as their "savior". The trainer will tell them the "family" told the trainer to rescue the child, because its family "loves" it. The trainer will instill cult teachings, at this point, into the helpless, fearful, and almost insanely grateful child who has just been "rescued" from isolation. The trainer will reinforce in the child over and over how much it "needs " its family, who just rescued it from death by starvation or abandonment. This will teach the very young toddler to associate comfort and security with bonding with its trainer, who may be one of its parents, and being with "family" members. The cult is very aware of child developmental principles, and has developed exercises like the above after hundreds of years of teaching very young children.

Second step: to not want
This step is very similar to the first step, and actually reinforces it. It will be done intermittently with the first step over the next few years of the child's life. Again, the child is left alone in a training room, or isolated room, without food or water for a long period of time.

An adult will enter the room, with a large pitcher of ice water, or food. If the child asks for either, as the adult is eating or drinking in front of the child, he/she is severely punished for being weak and needy. This step is reinforced, until the child learns not to ask for food or water unless it is offered first. The ostensible reason the cult gives for this step is that it creates a child who is strong, and can go without food and water for longer and longer periods of time. The real reason this is done is that it creates a child who is completely dissociated from its own needs for food, water, or other comforts, who becomes afraid to ask outside adults for help. This creates in the child a hyper-vigilance as she/he learns to look for outside adults for cues on when it is okay to fulfill needs, and not to trust her/his own body signals.

The child is already learning to look outside itself to others to learn how it should think or feel, instead of trusting its own feelings. The cult now becomes the locus of control for the child.

Third step: to not wish
The child is placed in a room with favorite toys, or objects. A kind adult comes into the room and engages the child in play. This adult my be a friend, aunt, parent, or trainer. The child and adult may engage in fantasy play about the child's secret wishes, dreams, or wants. This will occur on several occasions, and the child's trust is slowly gained. At some later point, the child is severely punished for any aspect of wishing or fantasy shared with the adult, including the destruction of favorite toys, going in and undoing or destroying secret safe places the child may have created, or even destroying non cult protectors. This step is repeated, with variations, many times over the ensuing years. Occasionally, the child's siblings, parents, or friends will be used to reveal inside fantasies the child has revealed to them during the daytime, or in unguarded moments. The ostensible reason the cult gives for this step is to create a child who doesn't fantasize, who is more outwardly directed, less

inwardly directed.

In other words, the child is to look to adults for permission in all aspects of its life, including internal. The reality is that this step destroys all safe places the child has created internally, to retreat from the horrors it is experiencing. This step creates in the child the feeling that there is no true safety, that the cult will find out everything it thinks. Exercises like this are also used to create young alters in the child who will self report to the cult trainers any secret safe places, or covert wishes against the ceult, that other alters have. This will then begin to set up intersystem hostility and divisiveness, which the cult will manipulate throughout the person's life span in order to control them.

Fourth step: the survival of the fittest
This step is used in order to begin creating perpetrator alters in the young child. ALL CULT MEMBERS WILL BE EXPECTED TO BECOME PERPETRATORS; THIS BEGINS IN
EARLY CHILDHOOD. The child is brought into a room where there is a trainer and another child of approximately the same age, or slightly younger, that the child being taught. The child is severely beaten, for a long period of time, by the trainer, then told to hit the other child in the room, or they will be beaten further. If the child refuses, it is punished severely, the other child is punished as well, then the child is told to punish the other child. If the child continues to refuse, or cries, or tries to hit the trainer instead, they will continue to be beaten severely, and told to hit the other child, to direct its anger at the other child. This step is repeated until the child finally complies. This step is begun around age 2 to 2 1/2, and is used to create
aggressive perpetrator alters in the young child. As the child becomes older, the punishing tasks become more and more brutal. Children are expected to become perpetrators of others at very young ages, and will "practice" on children younger than themselves, with the encouragement and rewarding by the adults around them.

They will also be mimicking these adults, who role model perpetration constantly as normal. The child will be taught that this is the acceptable outlet for the aggressive impulses and rage that are created by the brutality the child is constantly being exposed to.

Fifth step: the code of silence
Many, many different stratagems are used to put this in, starting at around the age of two years old, when a child starts becoming more verbal. Usually, after a ritual or group gathering, the child is asked about what they saw, or heard, during the meeting. Like most obedient young children, they will comply. They are immediately severely beaten, or tortured, and a new alter is created, who is told to keep or guard the memories of what was seen, on pain of their life. The new part always agrees. The child and this new part are put through a ceremony of swearing to never ever tell; and alters are created whose job it is to kill the body, if the other parts ever remember.

The child is also put through severe psychological torture to ensure that it will never be tempted to tell, including: being buried alive; near drowning; watching "traitor's deaths" involving slow painful torture, such as being burned, or skinned alive; being buried with a partially rotted corpse and being told that they will become a corpse like it if they ever tell, etc.

The scenarios go on and on, invented by people with endlessly cruel imaginations, in
order to ensure the secrecy of the young child. These methods have been perfected over hundreds of years of practice by the cult with its children. The reason these things are done is self evident: the cult is involved in criminal activities, as explained in the first few chapters of this book, and they want to ensure the continued silence of its children. This is one reason why the cult has survived so

long, and with its continued shroud of secrecy; why more survivors are afraid/unwilling to disclose their abuse.

In order to reveal cult secrets, a child must go against some of the most tremendously horrendous psychological trauma and abuse imaginable; even as an adult, the survivor has difficulty putting these things aside, when discussing their abuse. Children and adults alike are told that if they ever tell, they will be hunted down and shot (the assassin training lets the child know that this is no idle threat); that they will be tortured slowly. The child will be exposed to setups and role plays throughout their growing up that reinforces this step.

SUGGESTIONS THAT MAY HELP
I believe in also offering some ideas on how to undo some of the above mentioned programming, as I do not believe in knowledge, only for knowledge's sake. The survivor often needs tools, in order to try and undo some of the horrendous abuse that the cult places him/her through, especially as memories of these things occur. THESE ARE JUST MEANT AS HELPFUL HINTS AND DO NOT REPLACE THE ADVICE OF A GOOD THERAPIST.

1. Early milieu programming: This is difficult to undo, since it hits on core abandonment issues, and rejection, for the survivor. This will often have been the survivor's very first, earliest experiences as an infant, involving its relationship with its parents and primary family members. Working on this requires the whole hearted effort of all alter systems inside, to join in nurturing the core splits who experienced severe parental rejection, and the cognitive recognition that the DAYTIME was important, too; that the adults around the infant were the unhealthy ones. The infant's often feel unlovable, overly needy, depressed; but nurturing alters inside can help comfort them, and share the reality that the infant really was loveable, no
matter what the outside adults around it were like. Here, too, an outside supportive therapist, and a strong, nurturing faith system, can help tremendously in the healing process, as new messages are brought in to the abandoned, wounded parts. Sorting through what happened, grieving over the real issues of abandonment, and bringing reality to very young, deeply wounded parts will take time.

2. Early intentional fragmentation: (ages 0 to 24 months) Usually there are cognitive parts of the survivor inside, who have never ever forgotten the abuse, and can help share the cognitive reality of the abuse with the amnesic alters. This should be done extremely slowly, since this first abuse was done quite early in life. Creating an internal nursery, with safe toys, objects, can help. Older nurturing adult alters inside can help hold and care for the wounded infants inside the nursery, while acknowledging and grieving over the abuse which occurred.

It is important to believe an validate the young parts when they come forward to share. Allowing them nonverbal ways of expressing themselves can help, as these are quite young parts, who often cannot talk yet. Having older children inside who are close to the infants verbalize their wants, needs, and fears can also help, as often the youngest parts inside do not trust ANY adults, even internal ones. A strong ,caring outside therapist is also important to healing, by modeling healthy nurturing to a system that may have no concept of this, while balancing the need of the infant for outside nurture with the need for the internal system(s) to learn their own self nurture techniques. Internal helpers can reach the infants, ground them,
share present reality (that the body is older, the infants are safe, etc. These helpers may be internal older children, as mentioned before). The survivor may also want to find support adults when possible, who can help with modeling healthy caring with good boundaries.

A THERAPIST OR FRIEND CANNOT RE-PARENT THE SURVIVOR. The survivor will long for this, but realistically, the survivor has one set of parents, good or bad, or

sadly, even terrible. No outside person can come in and redo the complete re-parenting of another. What the therapist and support person can offer will be caring, empathy, listening, while the survivor grieves over the loss of adequate nurture.

They can offer friendship or empathy with good boundaries. They cannot become the survivor's parents, or therapy will not progress. Instead, enmeshment will begin.

3. The First Five Steps of Discipline (there are twelve total; others will be addressed in later chapters) Try to find the parts that experienced the abuse. This may mean doing system mapping (drawing pictures of what things look like inside), and going to the cognitives (intellectuals) or controllers (head honchos inside) for information. An internal helper, or recorder, may also be extremely helpful in doing this.

Allow these parts to slowly acknowledge the agony that they experienced during their deprivation: heat (being held over a fire, or stove); cold (such as being placed in freezers, or ice, for example), lack of food, etc. Encourage the sharing of the cognitive portion of the memories first, while allowing amnesic alters to grieve over "hearing about" these things. Allow them time to absorb hearing about these traumas, as they occurred over several years during early childhood, and will take time to assimilate. Healing can't be rushed. Allow feeling alters later to step forward, and share their feelings, while more cognitive or helper parts are inside holding their hands, grounding them to the here and now throughout the process of remembering be prepared for floods of emotion at times, as well as body memories, as the abuse is recalled. A group of inside people can be designated as a "grounding team" to help ground these parts as they step forward and share their memories.

Remembering safely assumes that the person has a qualified therapist, and also has laid the groundwork for good intrasystem cooperation, as discussed above. Memory work should not be done until there is good communication and cooperation inside, or the person will be overwhelmed by the memories as they come out. They will be flooded and re-traumatized instead of helped, and may de-compensate. With good communication, memories can be brought out a little at a time, in manageable pieces, while cognitive alters continually help keep the survivor from going completely into the memory, and they can also help ground the more wounded parts.

The cult will put people through certain types of programming in order to achieve a specific goal: separating the intellect, or cognition, form the feelings in a person. Cognitive alters in these systems are always considered "higher" than the feeling alters; cognitive alters are taught to "pass down" their feelings to the "lower" feeling alters. While these labels are untrue, the cognitive alters will fear feeling the intense, overwhelming emotions that caused them to split further and further from the more limbic, or feeling alters internally. This will drive continued system divisiveness in the survivor. It is important that cognitive parts realize that the feeling alters are part of them; that they can practice sharing their feelings in SMALL steps without needing to be flooded, or overwhelmed.

A reminder: EXTERNAL SAFETY IS PARAMOUNT TO UNDOING INSIDE PROGRAMMING. You HAVE to be able to promise these parts external safety, and deliver on this promise, or they will understandably balk at working inside on undoing programming.

Why should they try and change, only to go back and be punished again? No system will undo its own protective dissociation, if the abuse is ongoing, or it will continue to destabilize and redissociate over and over. This is because dismantling the dissociation would mean dismantling its own survival and protection. Stopping contact with perpetrators and having a safe therapist are the very first steps to take, before attempting to undo internal programming. A system can still work on stopping cult contact, and begin healing , while being accessed, but it will slow

therapy down tremendously as the internal energy will be diverted to staying safe rather than undoing trauma. A person can heal, and most survivors are still in cult contact when they enter therapy. BUT the progress will go much more quickly once cult contact is broken. (see chapter on preventing accessing of the survivor) .

Posted in The Illuminati: How the Cult Programs People | Tagged programming techniques | Leave a Comment »

Chapter Three: The Illuminati Plan to Rule the World

September 20, 2008 by koniword

Prior to discussing actual programming techniques, it is important to understand the philosophy underlying why the Illuminists are programming people. All groups have goals, and the Illuminists are no exception. Money making is not their final goal – it is a means to an end. This end point, or goal, is no less than to rule the world. The Illuminati has a set plan similar to the Soviet Union's previous "5- year" and "10-year " plans. This is what the Illuminists themselves believe and teach their followers as gospel truth.

Whether they will actually succeed is another matter altogether. The following is the Illuminist agenda at ALL levels of the Illuminati. As with any goal, the Illuminati has specific steps which it plans to implement to reach its objectives. Briefly, each region of the United States has "nerve centers" or power bases for regional activity. The United States has been divided up into seven major geographical regions. Each region has localities within it that contain military compounds and bases that are hidden in remote, isolated areas or on large private estates.

These bases are used intermittently to teach and train generational Illuminati in military techniques, hand- to- hand combat, crowd control, use of arms, and all aspects of military warfare. Why? Because the Illuminists believe that our government, as we know it, as well as the governments of most nations around the world, are destined to collapse. These will be planned collapses, and they will occur in the following ways:

The Illuminati has planned first for a financial collapse that will make the great depression look like a picnic. This will occur through the maneuvering of the great banks and financial institutions of the world, through stock manipulation, and interest rate changes. Most people will be indebted to the federal government through bank and credit card debt, etc. The governments will recall all debts immediately, but most people will be unable to pay and will be bankrupted. This will cause generalized financial panic which will occur simultaneously worldwide, as the Illuminists firmly believe in controlling people through finances.

Next there will be a military takeover, region by region, as the government declares a state of emergency and martial law. People will have panicked, there will be an anarchical state in most localities, and the government will justify its move as being necessary to control panicked citizens. The cult trained military leaders and people under their direction will use arms as well as crowd control techniques to implement this new state of affairs. This is why so many survivors under 36 years of age report having military programming. People who are not Illuminists or who are not sympathetic to their cause, will resist. The Illuminists expect this and will be (and are BEING) trained in how to deal with this eventuality. They are training their people in hand-to- hand combat, crowd control, and, if necessary, will kill to control crowds. The Illuminati is training their people to be prepared for every possible reaction to the takeover.

Many mind control victims will also be called into duty with preset command codes. These codes are meant to call out a new, completely cult loyal presenting system. Shatter codes programmed under trauma will be used to destroy or bury non-cult

loyal alters.

Military bases will be set up, in each locality (actually, they are already here, but are covert). In the next few years, they will go above ground and be revealed. Each locality will have regional bases and leaders to which they are accountable. The hierarchy will closely reflect the current covert hierarchy.

About five years ago, when I left the Illuminati, approximately 1% of the US population was either part of the Illuminati, sympathetic to it, or a victim of Mind Control (and therefore considered useable). While this may not sound like many, imagine 1% of the population highly trained in the use of armaments, crowd control, psychological and behavioral techniques, armed with weapons and linked to paramilitary groups.

These people will also be completely dedicated to their cause. The Illuminati firmly believes that it can easily overcome the other 99% of the population, most of whom are untrained, or poorly trained, such as "weekend hunters." Even the local military will be overcome as the Illuminati will have regional cell groups with highly trained leaders. They also count on the element of surprise helping them during their takeover. Many of the highest leaders in the militia branch of the Illuminati are or have been officers in the military, and so already have a good knowledge of which techniques will work best to overcome a region's or locality's defenses.

After the military takeover, the general population will be given a chance to either espouse the Illuminati's cause, or reject it (with imprisonment, pain, even death being possible punishments). These people very much believe that the intelligent, or "enlightened" or Illuminated, were born to rule. They are arrogant, and consider the general population as "dumb sheep" who will be easily led if offered strong leadership, financial help in an unstable world economy, and dire consequences if the person rebels. Their utter ruthlessness, and ability to implement this agenda, should not be minimized.

The Illuminati banking leaders, such as the Rothschilds, the Vanderbilts, the Rockefellers, the Carnegies, and the Mellons, as examples, will reveal themselves, and offer to "save" the floundering world economy. A new system of monetary exchange, based on an international monetary system, and based between Cairo, Egypt, and Brussels, Belgium, will be set up. A true "one world economy", creating the longed for "one world order", will become reality.

There is more to the Illuminist agenda, but these are the basics of it. This agenda is what the Illuminati really, truly, believe, teach, and train for. They are willing to give their lives up in this cause, in order to teach the next generation, as they believe that their children are their legacy. I was told that my children's generation would see this takeover, sometime in the 21st century.

At present, the Illuminati have quietly and covertly fostered their takeover plan by their goals of the infiltration of:
1. The media
2. The banking system
3. The educational system
4. The government, both local and federal
5. The sciences
6. The churches

They are currently, and have been working the last several hundred years, on taking over these 6 areas. They do NOT go to an institution, and say "hi, I'm a local Illuminist, and I'd like to take over your bank). Instead, they begin by having several people quietly invest funds over several years, gradually buying more and more shares in the bank (or other institution that they wish to control), until they have a financial controlling interest in it. They never openly disclose their agenda, or their cult activities, as often they are amnesic to them. These are well respected, "Christian" appearing business leaders in the community. The image in the

community is all important to an Illuminist; they will do anything to maintain a normal, respected facade, and DESPISE exposure. On one leadership in a major metropolitan city, where I was a member, there sat: one head of the local small business administration; one CEO of a government defense firm; one principal of a Christian school; one vice mayor of the city; one journalist; one nurse; one doctor; one behavioral psychologist, one army Colonel, and one navy Commander. All except one attended church weekly; all were well respected within the community. NONE of them appeared "evil", or "marked".

If you met them in person, you would probably instantly like any of these intelligent, verbal, likeable, even charismatic people. This is their greatest cover, since we often expect great evil to "appear" evil, led by media portrayals of evil as causing changes in the face and demeanor of people, or marking them like the biblical Cain. None of the Illuminists that I have known, had unkind, or evil appearing, persona in their daytime lives, although some were dysfunctional, such as being alcoholics. The dissociation that drives the Illuminists is their greatest cover for being undetected at this time. Many, if not most, of these people are completely unaware of the great evil that they are involved in, during the night.

There are other groups which are not actually part of the Illuminati, but the Illuminati are aware of them. The Illuminati are not the only group that follows esoteric practices, or worships ancient deities or demons. They encourage divisiveness between different groups (divide and conquer is one of their ruling principles), and are not concerned about other groups. Instead, they will often welcome them into their umbrella, if possible. This has been happening more and more in recent years, as the Illuminati trade teaching their training principles, which are considered the best by most secretive groups, in exchange for loyalty to the Illuminati. They will send their trainers to these groups, and the trainers will report to the local regional council.

In the political arena , the Illuminists will fund both sides of a race, because their greatest maxim is that "out of chaos comes order", or the discipline of anarchy. That is why they sent arms to, and funded, both sides of both the great World Wars in this century. They believe that history is a game, like chess; that only out of strategy, fighting, conflict, and testing can the strong emerge. I no longer agree with this philosophy, but at one time, I did, with all my heart.

Hopefully, as these people and their agenda are exposed the common man will rise up against this intended rule to be foisted upon an unsuspecting mankind.

Posted in The Illuminati: How the Cult Programs People | Tagged dissociation, Illuminati bankers | Leave a Comment »

Chapter Two: Jobs in the Illuminati

September 20, 2008 by koniword

Chapter Two: Jobs in the Illuminati (or Why They Spend All That Time Training People)

To understand generational programming, it helps to understand WHY the cult goes to the amount of trouble that it does to place programming into people. Training represents time and effort, and no one- especially a cult member- will spend that amount of energy unless there will be a return on the investment. This will be a simple overview of some of the more common jobs in the cult. It is not meant to be exhaustive, or in any way considered to be

complete.

The cult has a very organized hierarchy of jobs. Like any large organization, in order to run
smoothly, it needs people who are well trained in their jobs- so well trained, that they can do
their tasks without even thinking about them. To maintain secrecy, this group must also have
people completely dedicated to not revealing their roles in the cult- even under threat of death
or punishment. The cult wants members who are completely loyal to the group and its tenets,
who never question the orders they are given. These qualities in group members ensure the
continuance of the cult, and that its secrets are never revealed to the outside world.
Here is a sampling of some jobs in the cult (not listed in order of priority) Informers These
people are trained to observe details and conversations with photographic recall. They are
trained to report to their local cult leader or hierarchy, or trainer, and will download large
amounts of information under hypnotic trance. Detailed knowledge of conversations or even
documents can often be retrieved in this manner. They are often used as "plants" to gather
information in both governmental settings, and within the cult meetings.

Breeders
These people are often chosen from childhood to have and breed children. They may be
chosen according to bloodlines, or given in arranged marriages or cult alliances, to "elevate"
the children. A parent will often sell the services of a child as a breeder to the local cult leader
in return for favors or status. These children are rarely used as a sacrifice; usually they are
given to others in the cult to adopt or raise, but the breeder is told that any child born to her
was "sacrificed" to prevent her looking for the child. Occasionally, in anarchical cults, a local
leader or parent will have a child as the result of an incestuous liaison. Such a child is given
away or killed, but the mother will be told the child was given away to a distant branch, and
must be given up.

Prostitutes
Prostitutes can be a male or female of any age. They are trained from earliest childhood to
give sexual favors to one or more adults in return for payment to the child's parents or their
local cult group. Occasionally, the prostitute may be given to a member of the cult, on a
temporary basis, as a "reward" for a job well done. Child prostitution is a big business for the
cult, and training very young children in this role is taken very seriously. Child prostitutes are
also used to blackmail political figures or leadership outside the cult.

Pornography

A child used in pornography (which may include bestiality) can also be of any age or sex.
Child pornography is also big business in the cult, and includes snuff films. Children are
trained in this role from preschool on, often with the help or approval of the child's parents.
The parents are paid or given favors by the cult in return for selling their child or allowing
their child to be trained in this area.

Media personnel
These are very bright, verbal people. They will be sent to journalism school and will work for
local or regional media upon graduation. These individuals have many contacts within the
organization as well as the outside world. They write books and articles sympathetic to the
Illuministic viewpoint without ever revealing their true affiliation. They will tend to do biased
research in their articles, favoring only one viewpoint, such as denying the existence of DID or
ritual abuse. For instance, they will interview only psychiatrists/psychologists sympathetic to
this viewpoint and will skew data to present a convincing picture to the general public. If
necessary, they will outright lie or make up data to support their viewpoint. There are
members of groups whose people have been purposely trained to try and help formulate public
opinion on the nonexistence of the cult (i.e., cults don't exist, no rational person would believe
this "mass hysteria"). The Illuminists believe that to control the media is to control the
thinking of the masses. For this reason, they take training media personnel quite seriously.
Helpers at rituals Cleaners clean up meticulously after rituals. They will scour the site after a
ceremony, rake the area, etc. They are taught this job from preschool years on.
Preparers set up tables, cloths, candles, and paraphernalia quickly and efficiently. This job is
learned from infancy on. Readers read from the book of Illumination or local group archives;
they also keep copies of sacred literature in a safe vault and are trained in ancient languages.
Readers are valued for their clear speaking voices and ability to dramatize important passages
and bring them to life.

Cutters are taught to dissect animal or human sacrifices (they are also known as the "slicers
and dicers" of the cult). They can do a kill quickly, emotionlessly, and efficiently. They are
trained from early childhood on.

Chanters sing, sway, or lead choruses of sacred songs on high holy occasions.
High Priest/Priestess

The person who holds this job is changed every few years in most groups, although it may be
held longer in smaller, more rural groups. These people administrate and lead their

local cult
group as well as coordinate jobs within the cult, give assignments, and pass on meeting dates
given from the local hierarchy or leadership council. They also will activate the local group's
telephone tree, evaluate their local group members for job performance, and lead in all
spiritual activities. They report to the local or regional leadership council over their group.

Trainers
These people teach local group members their assigned jobs and monitor the performance of
these jobs at local group meetings or after an assigned task. These people report to the high
priest/priestess over their group, as well as to the local head trainer on leadership council.

Punishers
These are the people who brutally punish/discipline members caught breaking rules or acting
outside of or above their authority. They are universally despised by other cult members,
although they will be praised for a job well done by the local high priest or priestess. Usually
physically strong, they will employ any method deemed necessary to prevent a recurrence of
the undesired behavior. Punishment may be public or private, depending upon the severity of
the infraction. Each local group has several punishers.

Trackers
These people will track down and keep an eye on members who attempt to leave their local
group. They are taught to use dogs, guns, taser, and all necessary tracking techniques. They
are also adept at using the internet to monitor a person's activities. They will track credit card
use, checks written, and employ other methods to find a missing person.

Teachers
These people teach group classes to children to indoctrinate cult philosophy, languages, and
specialized areas of endeavor. Child care These people care for very young children when the
adults are at local group meeting. Usually care is for young infants only. After age two,
children are routinely engaged in some form of group activity led by trainers of the youngest
children. Infant child care workers are usually quiet and coldly efficient.

Couriers
These members run guns, money, drugs, or illegal artifacts across state or national lines.
Usually they are people who are young and single without outside accountability. They are
trained in the use of firearms to get out of difficult situations. They must be reliable and able
to get past any anticipated barriers.

Commanding officers

These people oversee military training in the local groups and help ensure the smooth running
of these exercises. They will delegate jobs to those ranking under them and are responsible to
the local leadership council. The council will have at least one member on it representing the
military branch of the Illuminati. In addition, there are many military- related jobs beneath the
commanding officers.

Behavioral scientists
These individuals often oversee the training in local and regional groups. These students of
human behavior are intensely involved in data collection and human experimentation in the
name of the pursuit of knowledge of human behavior in the scientific realm. They are almost
universally cold, methodical, impersonal people and will employ any methods to study trauma
and its effects on the human personality. Their main interest centers around implementing
programming and cult control in the most efficient and lasting manner.
There are many other jobs inside the cult. The cult spends quite a bit of its time getting people
to do these jobs for them for FREE, which is why they PROGRAM people to believe they are
doing their "family" and the world a service. The reality, of course, is that the individual is
being abused and taken advantage of by the cult.

Posted in The Illuminati: How the Cult Programs People | Tagged Illuminati jobs | 2 Comments »

Chapter One: An Overview of The Illuminati

September 20, 2008 by koniword

Chapter One: An Overview of the Illuminati

In order to understand Illuminati cult programming, it is first necessary to understand a bit
about the structure and philosophy of the organization. The Illuminati are a group of people
who follow a philosophy known as "Illuminism" or "enlightenment". The Illuminati were
named several hundred years ago, but trace their roots and history to the ancient mystery
religions of Egypt, ancient Babylon, and even Mesopotamia. Out of these ancient religions,
which were practiced secretly over hundreds and hundreds of years, there arose esoteric
groups which continued to practice the rites, traditions, and enculturation brought in from the
original groups.
Over the centuries, these groups practiced openly in some countries, and covertly in countries
where Christianity or other religions opposed their practices. Some of the groups which came

out of these ancient roots included the order of the Knights Templar, Rosicrucian's, Baphetomism, and Druidic cults. These groups were the forerunners, or roots, of modern day
Illuminism. The original Illuministic leaders chose to take what they felt were the best
practices of each root religion, combine them into principles, then organized these principles
according to specific guidelines.
Modern day Illuminism is a philosophy funded by the wealthy, but practiced in all social
strata. It is a philosophy whose tenets have spread across the world. It started with the German
branch of Rosicrucian's, spread to England, then came to the United states with the first
settlers.

The Illuminati have 3 main branches: the Germanic branch, which oversees the others, the
British branch, which handles finances, and the French/Russian branch. All 3 branches are
represented in both the United States and Canada, as well as every country in the world.
How the Illuminati are organized in the United States: The Illuminati have groups in every
major city of the United States. They originally entered the U.S. through Pittsburgh, Pa., and
from there, spread across the US. There are 18 cities across the US, which are considered
major "power centers" for Illuminati power and/or influence. These include: Washington, DC
and the surrounding areas; Albany, New York; Pittsburgh, Pa; the "golden triangle" of the
Winston Salem, Raleigh, NC area; Minneapolis, Minn; Ann Arbor, Mich; Wichita, Kan.;
Phoenix, Az.; Portland, Or.; Flagstaff, Az.; Seattle, Wash.; Houston, TX; Los Angeles, CA.
and surrounding areas; Atlanta, Ga.; New Orleans, La., Springfield, Miss. Other cities are
important to the Illuminati, as well, but these cities funnel money for them, conduct research,
and often regional councils sit within them.
Hierarchy of the Illuminati
The Illuminati have organized their society along extremely hierarchical, or stratified, levels.
In fact, the top levels are known as:
Hierarchical level
The Illuminati have divided the United States into 7 geographical regions; each region has its
own regional council, composed of 13 members, with an advisory board of 3 elders to each
one. These regions interact for purposes of finances; personnel; teaching, etc. Beneath each
regional council, is a local council. This is a council of 13 members, the head of whom sits on
the regional council, and gives it information about the local groups underneath his leadership.
The local council will also have an advisory council of 3.
A local leadership council in a large metropolitan area might look like this:

l Head of local council (reports to regional council)
l Two intermediaries (report all activities under leader to him)
l Four administrators (oversee finances, administer, set up group activities)
l Six head trainers (over trainers in local groups, teach other trainers)
Underneath the above leadership council, will be six people designated as informers or
intermediaries, who go to the local group meetings, interact with local group leaders, and
report to the leadership council.
Anarchical level: the levels below the leadership council are known as the anarchical levels.

Underneath the intermediate level, is the local group level. It will look like this:
l Local "Sister groups" (will vary in number, according to the size of the city, or cities, in the
area). A large metropolitan area may have anywhere from ten to twenty seven groups.
Each sister group will be headed up by:
A high priest and priestess: this job is rotated every 3 years, to allow different people within
the group to take on leadership roles. Each group will also have different members, with
specific roles/jobs within the group. These roles will be addressed in chapter 2.
One thing that I would like to emphasize is the fact that the Illuminati today are generational.
There members are born into the group, which is highly organized, as described above. The
set up discussed above is representative, with minor variations, of most major metropolitan
regions of the United States. Smaller population centers will be organized under similar
guidelines, but will be umbrellaed together with several cities within the region to create the
local leadership council.
How the Illuminati make money
The Illuminati are involved in many areas of making money, as they need continued financing
to survive. There are several illegal enterprises that they are involved in, as well as legal ones.
Drug running: The Illuminati linked up with the Mafia and the Columbians, years ago, to
help each other out with bringing drugs into the United States. They also provide couriers for
taking drugs and money out of the States. The Illuminists are generally wealthy businessmen,
who have 4 layers of people underneath them. The fourth layer down actually has contact with
the people in the drug industry. They never identify themselves as Illuminists; only as people
interested in investing, with a guaranteed profit, and are highly secretive. In return, the local
groups supply people willing to be couriers of money or drugs, or people willing to help cover
for the local operations.
Pornography: The Illuminati are linked in many cities with pornography/prostitution/child
prostitution/ and white slavery sales. Again, several layers are present, as a buffer, between the

true "management" and those either engaged in the activities, or in paying for/funding and
eventually being paid for the activities.
Children are often supplied from the local cult groups, and taught to be child prostitutes (and
later, adult prostitutes); are photographed and filmed in every type of pornography available,
including "snuff films" and violent films.

Gun running: The Illuminati and other groups are also involved in international gun sales and
shipments. The Illuminists have well trained couriers who will cross international and state
lines. These couriers are highly secretive, and will not reveal their sources, on pain of suicide
or assassination. These people are accountable to others above them, with two more "buffer
layers" of people above these, before the person in the Illuminati with money, who helps fund
this, is found.
Buying access codes for military computers: The Illuminati will have people from all strata
of civilian life trained to go and make pickups near or on military bases. A typical person used
might be the innocent looking wife of a military person, a local businessman, or even a college
student. There is a contact inside the base, also a dissociative Illuminist, who brings the
information to the outside contact. Occasionally, the contact person is paid with money,
information, or goods. The military computer codes are changed on random schedules; the
Illuminati have at least 5 or 6 contacts on each major base, who alert them when the codes are
getting ready to change, on pain of death. The Illuminists like having access to military
computers, because that will gain them entrance to closed files the world over.
Hiring and selling assassinations: this is done worldwide, more in Europe than in the States.
These people are paid big money to do either a private or political assassination. The money is
paid either to the assassin, or to the trainer; usually they both divide the fee The assassin is
offered protection in another country for awhile, until the trail runs cold. If the kill is done in
Europe they may be sent to the far east or the U.S., and vice versa if the kill is done in the U.S.
The Illuminati have a wide arena of places and false identities to hide these people, unless for
some reason they want the assassin disposed of as well. Then, he/she is caught and
immediately executed.
Mercenaries/military trainers: guess who gets paid money to come in and train paramilitary
groups? Who has training camps all over the states of Montana, Nevada, and North Dakota?
Who occasionally will offer their expertise in return for a large financial reward? They never

advertise themselves as Illuminati, unless the group is known to be sympathetic to their cause.
Instead, these are tough, cold, brutal military trainers, who offer to teach these groups in return
for money, or even better, a promise to affiliate with their group in return (loyalty in return for
knowledge). More and more paramilitary groups have been brought into the Illuminati this
way, without their full knowledge of who and what the group really is. This gives the
Illuminists a way to monitor these groups (their trainers report on them, and their activities),
and it can be useful to have trained military groups that they can call on someday.

Banking: The original Illuminists were bankers, and they have highly trained financiers to
organize their money, and funnel the above illicit funds into more "respectable" front
groups/organizations. They will also start benevolent charities, community organizations, etc.,
as fronts, and funnel the money from a broad base into these groups. The Illuminati
particularly pride themselves on their money making and manipulation skills, and their ability
to cover their paper trails expertly, through layer after layer.

All banking trails eventually will lead to Belgium, the Illuminati financial center for the world.
These are some of the major money making enterprises that the Illuminati are engaged in.
They have a lot of financial resources, backing their enterprises, which means that in reality
they can engage the best lawyers, accountants, etc. to help cover their trail as well.

About the author:
Hi, my name is Svali. Both I and my entire family were involved in a cult group until several
years ago, when we broke free. I used to be a programmer in the cult, and now I want to share
the knowledge that I have to help others. It is possible to break free of cult abuse if a person is
involved. It is a long, heart-breaking process, but well worth it. In the articles that I will be
providing, I hope to help the survivor of cult abuse find tools to help in their journey towards
freedom.
I have been a consultant to an on-line survivors group that helps people dealing with issues
related to cult programming and becoming free, for the past year and a half. I myself have
been in therapy for ritual abuse and DID for nine years, with the last five being aware of the
recent cult abuse.
I am also a writer, and a registered nurse. I currently work as a diabetic educator in Texas 20
hours a week.
I have also self-published a book on breaking free of cult programming, which several experts
in the field have said has "invaluable information" for the survivor of ritual abuse.
Both my ex-husband and my two children broke free of cult abuse last year. My

children are
living with me while my husband is working on healing. They all have DID (dissociative
identity disorder, formerly known as multiple personality disorder) as well, which makes life
at home interesting! I am currently married to my second husband, who is also a recovered
DID and who got out of the cult five years ago.
Breaking the Chain: Breaking free of cult programming
Appendix
Equipment Frequently Used by Trainers
It may help therapists to realize the equipment that trainers use. If their client describes these
items, which may appear quite sophisticated, believe them. The cult has become quite
technologically advanced.

Training room: the average training room is a neutral colored room, with walls painted either
a dull gray, white, or beige. Some may be painted in various colors, as part of color coding.
They are often located in secret underground rooms, or basements of large private residences,
and will be entered from the main building through a covered doorway. Impromptu training
rooms may be set up during military exercises outdoors, in covered canvas tents.
Trainers: the Illuminati have a rule: there must always be a minimum of two trainers working
with a person. This prevents a trainer from being either too severe, or permissive, or
developing too close a bond with the subject; the watchful eye of the other trainer prevents
this. Younger trainers are paired with older, more experienced trainers. The older trainer will
teach the younger, who does most of the actual work. If the younger is unable to finish a task,
or loses heart, the older one will step in.

Head trainers: will teach, they will also work with the council leaders and hierarchy. All
members are required to come in for a "tune up" (reinforcing programming), even top leaders,
from time to time.

EEG machine: will often have abbreviated hookups for quick use. Used extensively with
brain wave programming; also to verify that a certain alter is out when called up. May be used
to verify deep trance state before initiating deep programming. Trainers are taught to read
these readouts.

Trainer's table: a large table, frequently steel covered with plastic, or easily cleaned material.
On the sides at intervals are restraints for arms, legs, neck to prevent movement.
Trainer's chair: large chair with arm rests. Will have restraints as above at intervals to
restrain movement while person sits in chair.

Shock equipment: models and types are quite varied, depending on age and

company. Most
have a set of rubber covered wires, with electrodes that may be connected with Velcro, rubber
(steel tips imbedded under finger and toe nail beds), or gel pads (larger body areas such as
chest, arms, legs). Some are tiny electrodes, which can be taped next to eyes, or placed within
genitalia. These are connected to the "shock box", which has controls that can determine
amount of electricity , and frequency, if interval shocks are desired.

Drugs: any number of opiates, barbiturates, hypnotics, sedatives, anesthetic agents.
Resuscitative drugs, antidotes are also kept, clearly labeled and indexed. Many drugs,
especially experimental ones, are only known by code names, such as "alphin 1".
CPR equipment: in case person has adverse reaction to drugs or programming. At times, a
child alter will come out inadvertently during a programming sequence, and will be overdosed
with the drugs meant for adult alters. The trainers must give it the antidote, and resuscitate it,
just as if a real child is out. They are well aware of this fact, and will severely punish child
alters, to teach them to come out only when called out.

Virtually reality headsets: the keystone in recent years. Many programming sequences
utilize holographic images, and virtual reality set ups, including assassination programs, where
the person realistically "kills" another human being. These virtual disks are far more advanced
than those in video arcades.

Body building equipment: used in military training to increase fitness, lean body mass.

Steel instruments: used to insert into orifices, cause pain

Stretch machine: used as punishment, "stretches " person without breaking bones. Extremely
painful.

Trainer's grids and projectors: used to project grids on wall or ceiling.

Movie projector: to show movies, although new VR disks are replacing these computer:
collect and analyze data; keep computer grid on person's system. Current military computer
access codes will be used to download into governmental computers.

Trainer's journals: contain indexed copies of subject's systems, including key alters, command codes, etc.

Comfort objects: used to comfort subject afterwards. May be toy or candy for child alters, or
oils for massage. Warm towels, or beverages may be given, as the trainer "bonds with" and
comforts person they worked with. This is probably the most important part of the training
process, as the trainer explains calmly, kindly how well the person did, how proud they are of
them.

Posted in The Illuminati: How the Cult Programs People | Tagged cult, programming, techniques | 2 Comments »

Transcript Svali's Interview with Greg Szymanski

September 19, 2008 by koniword

Transcript of Illuminati Survivor Svali's Appearance
on Investigative Journal with Greg Szymanski

January 17, 2006

GS: You're listening to the Investigative Journal. I'm your host, Greg Szymanski. Two hours – two hours with great interviews all the time. We get into the news behind the scenes that the mainstream media refuses to cover. What a shame.

Let me just update some things before I tell you who my guest is today. I've been promo-ing it all week, and we're going to get deep inside the Family, the Order, the Illuminati today, for two hours. And you've got to stay with us from the beginning to the end of this interview.

I just wanted to mention we had Dr. Martini on earlier in the week. A big aspartame vote, to ban aspartame in New Mexico, is going on today. I called her last night. They held it over until today. So we'll know later this morning whether aspartame is banned in New Mexico. That could have a chain effect that could really save a lot of lives.

Also, I wanted to mention the bulldozing in New Orleans. Now this is a story on my website. You can go to http://www.arcticbeacon.com, and you're going to see this story. This is an incredible story we've been following, with Brandon Darby from Common Cause Relief down there. A New Orleans federal judge, a crooked order here, folks, last Friday quashed all hopes for Ninth Ward residents to get their day in court as he indiscriminately canceled a January 17th hearing to hear evidence on why the city has no right to demolish homes under eminent domain laws.

Basically what he did is that there was supposed to be a hearing this week. There was a restraining order to stop the indiscriminate bulldozing of over 44 thousand homes in the Ninth Ward, many of which, Brandon says, are in good shape. Needless to say, they do not need to be demolished. But the people are a long, long, long way away from New Orleans, kept away by these FEMA programs that we've documented.

Brandon says now what happened is the judge called the lawyers in, canceled the hearing, and said,

"Listen, you're going to take my orders, which are this. Both lawyers are going to adhere to this. You can demolish the homes as long as you give the people notice."

So it doesn't matter if they object, apparently, just as long as they know their home is going to be bulldozed down, and that's what the city is doing right now. So we'll keep track of that story as it goes on this week.

Now, on my website all week, I've been running this series on the feared Illuminati. That word started to be used back in the 18th century. There are other words – the Family, the Order, for people that are inside this group. So let's not get hung up on the words. What this group does is amazing.

As I documented in my series which is going on now, part three is on today, so if you want to go to Arctic Beacon and get that, and it's talking about Svali, who was a member of the Illuminati, the Family, the Order. She is with us as our guest today, and after this break we're going to find out the whole story from beginning to end about Svali's involvement, and then about how she decided to get out and

what she's doing now. And I might add, it's a great thing what she's doing now, alerting people and also helping many, many people in America understand exactly what this group is all about.

So anyway, we'll be back with Svali on the Investigative Journal. I'm your host, Greg Szymanski.

[commercial break – resume 8:30]

GS: Okay, we're back. It's eight minutes after the hour, and we're going to get deep inside the Illuminati, the Family, the Order. We have a guest who was involved with this group, born into it, for over thirty years. Her name is Svali. Svali, are you with us?

SV: Uh, yes I am.

GS: Well, it's nice to have you here. I know you don't give radio interviews, and I really want to thank you, because I think it really does help the American people understand about this secret organization that you were born into. So I guess we can just start from the beginning. Tell us – right from the beginning you were born into this, from wealthy parents. Tell us about your training in this group when you were a young child and then up until your orientation at the Vatican. Go ahead.

SV: (surprised, laughing) Well, that's a pretty broad area, Greg! That could take hours, if you know what I mean.

GS: Yes, but do it, you know, if you could just outline it for us.

SV: Yeah. I mean, I was born in the group, I was born in Germany, and came to the US very young. I basically went through all the training that the group… all members of the group do undergo training to various degrees, depending on the role.

By the time I was a teenager, I was a youth leader, and by the time I was 22, I became the youngest member of Leadership Council in San Diego County . At that time I was a head trainer. I was the sixth trainer and eventually moved up to the second position.

GS: Mm hm.

SV: When I was twelve, I had mentioned with you the ceremony at the Vatican…

GS: Right.

SV: …that they really do make all leadership in the group undergo at some point.

GS: Now basically when you were growing up, I remember you told me that you were instilled at a young age. You were born to a very wealthy, well-to-do family.

SV: Yes.

GS: You moved back to the States. You were told at a very young age you were special, you were "chosen." Correct?

SV: Well, they tell everyone in the group that they are special and chosen, and that's one of the things that made me very cynical when I was older. You will never meet a person who is an Illuminati who has not been told or programmed for years that they're special, they're the only one that can do things for quote-unquote "Family".

But I was told, yes, I would do great things for Family one day. The reason why I can filter some of this with an objective view is that I know what my role in the group was. It was over quite a significant number of other people. So I don't evaluate my role or specialness within the group so much by what I was told, but by what I did.

(regretful downturn in voice on "what I did")

GS: So you reached the age of 12, and then you're told by your parents you're

going to an induction ceremony in the Vatican.

SV: Yes.

GS: Can you tell us how that happened and what occurred at that ceremony when you went there?

SV: (deep breath, voice becomes stressed) Okay. Um, this isn't easy to talk about, as you know.

When I was twelve, I was flown over to Germany. And I was at, I'll call them the German Fathers' house, over there. And, there was some preparation for a few days, beforehand, and I was told that there would be a very important ceremony. And it was considered a sealing ceremony at that point. And basically I was told a little bit about what I was expected to do during the ceremony.

When we got there, we went through the Vatican. Underneath the Vatican there is a large room that I described to you when we talked before. It has 13 catacomb chambers leading into it. And what they do is as you go down these steps into the room, you can see that it's circular, so they're all rounded. They bring out the mummies from the catacombs. And they set them beside each one [each of the 13 catacomb chambers], and they say "That's the spirit of the Fathers watching over the ceremony."

During the ceremony, there was a large table in the center of the room. It was on top of this huge golden pentagram. They had a ceremony there.

GS: So how many kids, how many other children were with you being inducted into the Family or the Order, as they call it?

SV: There were two other children at that point. But there were several adults too.

GS: Okay.

SV: See, the Church also brings in adults to swear their allegiance, too, just so you know. I was told, and I don't know if this is true, that if you want to rise to a certain position within the Catholic Church hierarchy, you do have to go through that ceremony as well.

GS: Okay, so you're down in this room. Your parents weren't present.

SV: No. No. The German Father and the French Father were.

GS: Okay, and at that point tell our listeners what you witnessed.

SV: (pause, additional voice stress) Well, there was a table. It looked like dark glass in the center of the room. It was made out of a stone, but it was very shiny and darkened black. It may have been something like obsidian or onyx, I'm not sure. This was the only time I've seen stone like that.

Around the corners it had these gold channels that, you know, collect fluids. A little boy was placed in the center of the table and drugged. I think he was drugged, because he was very quiet. He didn't move or say anything.

GS: This was a little three or four-year-old boy, right?

SV: Yes. Yeah. Yeah.

GS: Then they continued to do a child sacrifice.

SV: Yes, they did. Yes. I told you about that before. Yeah.

GS: Now afterwards, quite, what an unbelievable experience for a youth, a 12-year-old. What went through your mind when that happened?

SV: I was terrified! I mean, I was absolutely horrified. I… I… I… I can't describe the terror you feel when you go through something like that.

GS: And do you remember the words they were saying as this was going on?

SV: (pause) The man was in scarlet – he was speaking in Latin. And basically he

was saying, "Please accept the sacrifice on this day." And then he said, "This sacrifice will seal the ceremony." And then he did it.

Again, I was so terrified that… (sighs) Have you ever been in a situation where your heart's racing, but you can't do anything? You're just kind of sitting there, and you're kind of fading in and out?

GS: Well, I can remember as a youth being frightened, but I don't think I've ever…

SV: (crosstalk) No. All right.

GS:… had anything quite like what you've had.

SV: Imagine your heart rate going up to about 220. You can't move. You're kind of shaking, but you're trying not to show it.

GS: Mm hm.

SV: It was horrible. Actually, I keep thinking inside, "I can't wait 'till it's over. I can't wait." You don't say this, but inside you're just saying over and over, "I can't wait 'till this is over. I can't wait 'till this is over. I can't wait 'till it's over."

GS: Mm hm.

SV: Afterwards, the man in scarlet, he had a huge golden ring on his hand. He came over to the center of the room. Each of the people that were swearing that day had to go forward and kneel before him and kiss his ring, and swear my allegiance to the New Order, to the New World Order for all… until my death.

GS: Hm. Now at that point you were escorted out.

SV: Yes. Yeah. After the ceremony was all over. I mean, the other people also did theirs as well. They had to swear their allegiance too.

GS: And they were the same age as you?

SV: The two children were, but there were also three adults that went forward and did the same. And afterwards, we were told, (slowly and precisely): "May the same to you or worse occur should you ever break this oath."

GS: Hm. So it's basically… whew! Imagine at that age, what [this would do]. And you weren't really prepped for this, were you? You were told there was a ceremony, but you didn't expect anything like this, from what I've gathered talking to you.

SV: It was very difficult to go through, just because the sense of horrific oppression down there was the worst I've [ever felt.] I've gone through some ceremonies in my life in the Illuminati, you do go through them. But I have to say that in my experience this was the worst, just because… I can't explain the amount of darkness in that room. It was just pure evil. And unless you've ever been in a… seen a person… it was just horrible.

It wasn't just what happened, but just… I mean, the oppression. And I'm a Christian now, and I know the difference between when there is evil present – oppression – or when God's love is present, which is joy and peace. That's the exact opposite of what there was in that room.

GS: Now you know what I find quite interesting about this? About 25 years ago, I was a reporter and a freelance writer in Rome, and I spent six years there. I walked through the Vatican many, many times… hundreds of times. I covered the papal addresses, things like that.

During that time I was there during a Vatican scandal, which involved the Church bank and other things… members of the Illuminati, the Freemasons. I was approached by a woman, Maria Vendital (ph), and I'll never forget this. Rome's a small town. People knew I was covering stories about the secret societies, things like that. I had to ask people.

Well, this woman came up to me and told me similar stories. She wasn't quite as

specific because she couldn't handle it without breaking out crying, and tried to commit suicide twice because she couldn't get out of the Illuminati. She was a member, born into it from a very wealthy northern Italian family. She told me basically the same ceremony took place with her.

And so, when I started talking to you, I wanted to relay that to you, and also to relay to my listeners that I also heard about this, 25 years ago, from a woman by the name of Maria, and several other people in Italy that I talked to. I was never able to locate or really, probably for my own safety, ever find out what happened.

But again, Svali's corroborating a story that I heard about 25 years ago. We'll get back after the break with this incredible story of a member who is now out of the Illuminati, out of the group and safe, on the Republic Broadcasting Network.

[commercial break – Resume at 23:15]

GS: Okay, we're back on the Investigative Journal. I'm your host, Greg Szymanski. We're talking to Svali, a member of the Family, the Order, the Illuminati, for thirty years.

Svali, you leave the induction ceremony. You walk out into the Vatican courtyard with one of the fathers, I believe. What did he tell you then?

SV: At that point he just told me to never forget. He told me that I had performed well during the ceremony because I didn't scream or pass out or anything like that. He said "You did very well," and he was pleased. Then we stayed at a home nearby. It must have been a local person. I didn't know them. We spent the night there before we went back to Germany.

GS: Okay, and what about the other people during the ceremony. How did they handle themselves? Do you remember?

SV: (sighs) I'm going to say, unfortunately, I was so… when you're in that kind of situation, the last thing you're thinking about sometimes is what the other people are doing. (Laughs) I was just so trying not to lose it myself. I do know that no one screamed or shouted or anything like that. Everyone was quiet. I think to say 'dead silence,' is, unless the person was spoken to, true – or unless they had to go forward and kiss the ring.

GS: All right, let's move on. I think we've, uh…

SV: Yeah.

GS: A question I've wanted to ask you, and this is such a wide subject. I've had a chance to talk to you for a number of days, and I've done some stories about it.

You go back home, you're twelve years old. You say you were schooled in the twelve disciplines.

SV: Yes.

[12 disciplines, from Svali's online book:

1. To not need. 2. To not want. 3. To not wish. 4. Survival of the fittest. 5. The code of silence. 6. Betrayal is the greatest good. 7. Not caring. 8. Time travel: " The child will be taught spiritual principles of "traveling" both internally and externally, with set ups, role playing, and guided exercises reinforced with trauma. The goal will be to reach "enlightenment", an ecstatic state of dissociation reached after severe trauma."

9,10,11: "Sexual trauma, learning to dissociate and increase cognition, decrease feeling." (Details of these 3 steps vary according to child's future role in the cult. These roles include Informers, Breeders, Prostitutes, Pornography, Media personnel, Preparers, Readers, Cutters, Chanters, High Priest/Priestess, Trainers, Punishers, Trackers, Teachers, Child Care, Couriers, Commanding Officers and Behavioral Scientists.)

12. Coming of age ceremony (Vatican underground sacrifice).]

GS: So your life begins, and you know now you're in some type of organization that is very different than what most people experience. Tell us… I guess what I want to do is leave it open to you to begin. You've written so in-depth on this story. I'm just going to give you the microphone and let you begin. Tell the listeners what you think is important about your original training, about the group and about many things that I know people want to know about the Illuminati. Go ahead.

SV: Okay. Well Greg, first I want to say that my purpose in talking about this is not to glorify evil. There are very wicked people out there, very powerful people. I don't want to at all magnify their power, but I do want people to know that this is real. These people exist. People who say there are people out there that are involved in these activities… it really happens.

I also, because I know that there are children being hurt in the group every day, and that's my motivation for coming forward.

I don't like giving interviews for obvious reasons. I am willing this one time to lay aside my privacy and personal safety because these people need to be stopped. They need to be stopped.

GS: Okay. SV: Okay? GS: Go ahead.

SV: Normally children in the group are born into it. The Illuminati very rarely does outside recruitment. That's not their main method. It's just passed down generally, generationally from father to son, and mother to daughters to children. And so the whole family line has been in it.

Throughout the centuries people have tried to escape, but a lot of times they were either poisoned, murdered or set up to look like a suicide. They don't like it when people leave, and they try to make it very difficult – simply because it looks bad. (slight laugh)

They go through an enormous amount of training, from the time they are an infant. You undergo indoctrination. And when I say indoctrination, I don't just mean like cult programming so much as watching your parents and seeing what they do.

My parents modeled their behavior. To them the group was very important for growing up. I saw that three times a week, everything was dropped to tend to the activities. Okay?

GS: Okay.

SV: Basically the training process is designed to help you take on your adult role in the group. The Illuminati cover so many levels there too. It goes all the way from what most people think of as a satanic coven type thing, at the very low local level, all the way through… it's a huge, enormous business corporation.

At the mid-levels, you have people overseeing finances and administration, who are overseeing… I mean, these people are making a LOT of money through gun running, through white slavery, prostitution, pornography. They have links and ties to the Mafia, left and right. And, in fact the mafia are afraid of them. (Laughs)

GS: Hm.

SV: Yeah. (Laughs): Well, think about it! Because they know that you don't cross the members of the group. They have a very spiritual orientation. They are not satanic, though; they are Luciferian, which is different.

The ultimate goal of their spiritual philosophy and their sense of discipline is they believe that should you complete all of your training, you become a god. That is their actual end goal. They believe in the achievement of Godhood – of Illuminist philosophy – through what they call Enlightenment, or Illumination, which is how they got their name.

GS: Mm hm.

SV: They are international. In Europe there are twelve fathers who sit, who represent the different nations of Europe. They are very expectantly awaiting He Who Is To Come, and during that ceremony in the Vatican, (bumper music starts) on my knees I had to swear my allegiance to serve He Who Is To Come. They believe that the coven…

GS: Svali, can you, uh, I have to take a break.

SV: Sure.

GS: We'll continue with the massive organization, your role as a mid-level person in the Illuminati on the Republic Broadcasting Network.

[commercial break – resume 33:27]

GS: Okay, we're back on the Investigative Journal, and I'm talking with Svali. Svali, why don't we just pick it right up where we left off at the break. You were telling us about this hierarchy that starts with twelve fathers. Can you just run that down for us so people know exactly how this group is organized?

SV: Sure. At the top levels, it's in Rome. That's the power center or the heart of the Illuminati, where the power base is. And that's why all leadership must swear fealty in Rome, because that's considered the core of, the spiritual center of the Universe. That's how they view it.

From there, in Europe there are twelve fathers – one for each country in Europe. When I was younger I had to also meet with the fathers at one point and kiss the ring, and go through another ceremony of allegiance to them as well.

In the Illuminati, the European Fathers rule over what are called the different houses. For instance, if you are from Germany then you belong to the German House, if you are from France you belong to the French House – they call them Houses. UK, Russia, Poland, Belgium, Spain, Italy and others.

From there, America was considered a mission field for them. In the 17, actually in the 1600s, Pittsburgh became the first port of entry for them. That's where they first settled. That's why it's still considered a spiritual power base for the group on the East Coast in the US.

GS: You know, I did want to mention one thing. A caller / listener / reader of your stories sent me an email, and said, "Greg, check into the reason why President Bush, right after being elected, went into and talked to a Masonic group there." I found that quite interesting.

SV: Oh yeah.

GS: Go ahead.

SV: It's the spiritual power base for the group. From there, it spread out across the Atlantic seaboard, and then throughout the nation. The nation is divided into many regions, multiple regions but seven main regions. The East Coast region has its spiritual power base in Pittsburgh, but the administrative power base is in Alexandria, Virginia. That's where they administer the finances during the day to day operations.

The West Coast, or the West region, west of the Mississippi, has its power base in the San Diego area.

GS: And that's where you spent a lot of time, correct?

SV: Yeah. Yes. I was sent from, the Alexandria Council sent me to San Diego to help them out.

GS: Okay, go ahead.

SV: Those are the two, of course, main regions. And then each of those regions are divided into sub-regions.

So then you have your Regional Councils sitting over those, and overseeing activities. If you can think of the structure of a large multinational corporation, that's really how the Illuminati is structured. Then beneath each of the regional councils are your local councils. They call them sister groups or sisters, or your local councils. Then you have your local groups under those as well, or what they call the sister groups.

Any major metropolitan city could have anywhere from five to fifteen groups, depending on the size of the population base. Or more.

GS: Now you were saying that, how many people are in this group in America now, from your estimate, of knowing a lot of this stuff? Go ahead…

SV: Pure Illuminati, I would say about one percent, give or take, based on population.

GS: So it's a fairly huge… big organization, correct?

SV: Yes.

GS: Now their goal, basically. Just give us the broad overview goal, and then I want to get into some of these, you know, your role in it, and some of these ways that the Illuminati makes money that you learned about.

SV: Yeah.

GS: Go ahead.

SV: You know, when you say "To rule the world," it almost sounds laughable – like "yeah, right", you know. I think people get ideas of thinking or wanting to rule the world. But really, that is their goal. They believe that they are the intelligent leaders, and they believe that the rest of the world are sheep that need wise… They see themselves as wise leadership. So they believe that their goal is to rule the world.

GS: Mm hm.

SV: But at the same time, they have occult ways of doing that. Their main way of doing that is behind the scenes. They believe in infiltration of the media, of education and of government – those are the three areas – and of the financial system. And they have successfully done quite a bit of all four throughout Europe and the US, as well as other countries.

GS: Now you said that they, basically the Illuminati is divided into about six or seven groups, and everyone is born into a group. Could you outline what those groups are?

SV: Well no, it's all one group, there are just different levels.

GS: Yeah, that's what I mean. Like the Sciences, the Government, or…

SV: Oh. Oh. Okay. The Illuminati is divided into different branches of learning. These branches include Sciences, Military, Government, Leadership, Scholarship and Spiritual. Those are the six branches of learning. And while all children need to undergo some training or teaching in each area, as they get older… They begin profiling you from infancy, and they know where your activities and abilities are. Then you're, you really go into… Most people specialize in one branch or possibly two branches of learning.

GS: And you were involved in what branch?

SV: I was heavily involved in Sciences, and also to some degree I did some Spiritual as well – but mainly Sciences.

GS: Just to backtrack one minute, these twelve disciplines. As a child, you were rigorously trained in this, correct?

SV: Yes.

GS: Okay. And what were those disciplines?

[1. To not need. 2. To not want. 3. To not wish. 4. Survival of the fittest. 5. The code of silence. 6. Betrayal is the greatest good. 7. Not caring. 8. Time travel. 9,10,11: Sexual trauma, learning to dissociate and increase cognition, decrease feeling – details of these 3 steps vary according to child's future role in the cult. 12. Coming of age ceremony (Vatican underground sacrifice).]

GS: I mean, if… You don't have to go through each one of them, but what primarily were you taught?

SV: (pause) I think the best way would be to give you an example of just one type of training that they do.

GS: Okay.

SV: I was two years old. I was left in a room for probably a 24-hour period. When you are that age it is hard to estimate, but it was a long time. I know that the sun did go around (laughs) at least once, and it wasn't just like a few hours.

At that age, when you are two and you are left alone without food and water, you are terrified. And at the end of the time, I was just dying of thirst. My morale was just… I have never been so thirsty in my entire life.

My mother walked into the room. A lot of times they have the children, you know, or the parents train the children at these early ages. There was a table in the middle of the room and I was sitting at it. She brings in this cold pitcher of water and she starts pouring it. I said, "Mom! I want a drink of water," and she slapped me out of the chair. (pause)

GS: Hm.

SV: And I remember crying! And as I'm crying, she's drinking the water in front of me, and she leaves! She takes the pitcher of water. And a couple of hours later, she came back in and did the same thing. And I said, "Mom, Mom, I want water!" And she slapped me! I mean, across the room.

After this had happened about three times, luckily I was bright enough that by the third time she came in, I mean, I remember crying silently, but I just looked at her. I didn't ask.

After she got up and left with the pitcher, a man came into the room. He said, "You did very well that time." And then he gave me a drink of water.

GS: Hm.

SV: That was part of the "learning not to want" stage. Looking back on it, I realize now as an adult that the part of that training was to teach me not to recognize my own physiological needs and respond to them, but to look to outside people to tell me what I wanted or needed. Which is what…

GS: Now you basically, you told me you led a dual life in the Illuminati. That's basically how they function.

SV: Oh yeah!

GS: You have a day job, and then at nighttime you're quite busy sometimes with the cult activities, correct?

SV: Yes.

GS: Okay. What I wanted to get into… you were talking about these groups. I remember I mentioned to you, you said you had these meetings three times a week. I said, "Well, what about if I wanted to go and visit, and maybe do a story about them?" What would happen, or how could… would I be able to find one of these meetings that were going on, in your area of Escondido?

SV: Well no, because of the security measures. And A), you really don't want to

show up unannounced at a meeting if you could get through their security, because the chances are you would never make it out alive. Let's just say that a certain auto accident would occur, and be reported in the papers: "Unfortunate accident – man accidentally runs into tree." (Laughs) I mean, I'm serious!

The security that they have during group meetings is so intense that it would be very difficult. They have security at the one-mile perimeter, the three-mile perimeter and the five-mile perimeter. They have three people assigned. Usually one is up in a tree where you can't see him at the five-mile perimeter.

GS: Mm hm.

SV: And then you have one person who is standing, looks like a security guard for the estate, because these are often large, wealthy estates, which is appropriate. He is dressed in a uniform. The third person is standing hidden behind a tree. As cars come through, and they come through the gates – remember these are gated estates.

GS: Mm hm.

SV: So if it's not someone on their approved license checklist, they will stop the car. It's just like at a military installation. They will say, "Can I help you? Are you lost?" Their goal is to delay the person. Now if a person is saying, "Oh, this is blah blah blah," and they are just asking for directions, they will give them directions, be very pleasant and send them on their way, to where they are supposed to be going.

But if they are acting as if they want to go further into the estate, and this is not an okay person, then they will say, "Uh, all right, well HE'S NOT EXPECTING YOU." That's a code word. That tells the person either behind, up in the tree, or hidden further back – they radio ahead and they say "UNEXPECTED VISITOR."

At that point, everyone has been trained to pick up and leave immediately, within five minutes – with no traces of the activity.

GS: So this is some of the methods they go through so you don't get caught. I know that you wrote an article about why the cult doesn't get caught.

SV: Oh yeah.

GS: It's pretty specific. You have so much stuff here, and we can't get into it all in two hours, so please pick and choose what you think is most important. But I find that to be interesting – why the cult doesn't get caught. Is there anything in just a brief time you could explain to us… that?

SV: Well, their security, their money, their influence. Some of these people even own newspapers. Imagine trying to get a (laughs) article published, you know, disclosing… There's a lot of reasons why they don't get caught. That's the first thing people ask.

Then my next question is, "Well, how many child pornographers are there out there, that the police have been chasing for years, and have never found or caught?"

GS: Correct.

SV: And they're not even members of a secret organization. They're just trying to hide, you know. So when you consider that…

GS: Now you…

SV: Okay.

GS: Yeah. You were a mid-level person in this organization, a head trainer. We're going to get into those specifics in the next hour. But you know, what did you learn about the infiltration of this group into all our different areas of government and media? They are basically at the high levels of most of our financial institutions also, correct?

SV: Yes.

GS: And that is a great way to pursue their goal. I guess I've got to ask you this. How come things are moving a little bit faster in America now? I remember back in the 80s when I was confronted with this, when I came back home I didn't really see this kind of New World Order movement… all this different symbolism that you see now. What is going on, just for our listeners, right now? Why are things stepped up since 9-11?

SV: I believe it's because they can see the fulfillment of their goal… See, I'm going to sound very cynical now, and please forgive me for this, okay? Their goal is to rule the world, and personally I believe that they do – it's just not open yet.

GS: Mm hm.

SV: And they say they're now preparing people for when they disclose themselves openly. Does that mean that they can't be stopped? I believe they could. I believe it would take a miracle, because of the amount of infiltration I see at all levels of society, and the world. These guys, these people have a lot of money. They have a lot of influence. And your average person has no idea of how much is going on behind the scenes that no one understands.

But, with that said, I think that they're already there, they just aren't open. These people just don't know where they're going! (Laughs) If they did, I think the average person would be horrified to know how much is going on behind the scenes that people really don't know.

GS: Yeah, and the point of this interview, one, I had two goals…

SV: But… But you see, I don't want to sound disparaging, because I am also a strong Christian. I have faith in God, and I believe through prayer, and through people knowing… I mean, I would like them to be stopped. I just don't know, at this point, how do you take on the financial institutions of the world, the major oil enterprises of the world, you know? (Laughs) That's the question! (Laughs) You know?

GS: Yeah! You know, it is a difficult question. Now you're in the mid-level of this group. You worked your way up to a head trainer, correct?

SV: Yeah… Yeah.

GS: Now what did you learn… Before we get into specifics, you outline some in of your writings, the big money-making… the ways this group makes its money. Can you go over and outline some of those methods?

SV: Again, if you can think of an illegal activity, they're probably involved at some point. Maybe not overtly, at the point of where the actual money is first shaking hands – but when you have child pornography, prostitution, white slavery, gun running, gambling, then at some point where the money is changing hands, buffered by about four layers of people, there's going to probably be someone from the Illuminati involved at that point. These guys have their fingers in everything.

GS: Now…

SV: Uh…

GS: Go ahead.

SV: But they also use legitimate means. They launder their money. When you have a lot of money, you have to do something with it. And so, these men don't come in and say, "Hi! I'm a member of the Illuminati and I want to run your bank." What they'll do is they'll quietly come in and become a quiet investor, start buying up shares. And over a period of maybe, almost a lifetime, they will get a controlling interest in the bank, or become a very… you know. Or maybe in their son's lifetime.

That's the other thing about the Illuminati. The Illuminati do not see it as "This is what must happen now, in my lifetime." These people have goals that last for

centuries, for two centuries. They are very, very patient.

GS: And that's why the specific training of the children is so important, correct?

SV: Yes. It's to teach you PATIENCE. Everyone knows, growing up in the group, we may not see the coming order disclosed or open or revealed in our lifetime, but our children or our grandchildren may. So they will spend their entire life trying to bring about the goals of the organization.

GS: (Chuckles) Hm. Incredible. So now you're in the mid-level. I can see now where they used these programming techniques, the different mind control techniques. We have a minute before the break. Just kind of whet our interests about how you… what your specific role was.

SV: Well, they did a lot of what you might call human experimentation. And they had a lot of research protocols going on. So one thing I did was to supervise the research going on. I was teaching the younger trainers and head trainers how to do things more efficiently, how to do their job well, but also reviewing their research reports for errors or problems.

Eventually I became kind of a consultant. If a problem occurred, or they didn't know how to install something, or if they needed assistance, I would help them with problem solving as well.

GS: Okay, Svali, I'm going to have to take a break. We'll be back in three minutes. We'll continue, on Republic Broadcasting Network.

[commercial break – resume 54:24]

GS: Okay, we're back on the Investigative Journal. I've got a short four minute segment here, then we'll take a break and come back with Svali for a whole [additional] hour. We're talking about jobs in the Illuminati, the practical daily jobs that these members of this group, who are infiltrated in America heavily… what they do. Now one thing I find interesting, Svali, knowing the media… I'm not going to name names or anything, because I don't have any specific information. But I find it interesting.

Doing some background checks on a lot of the top media people in our country, they all come from these very wealthy families. (Laughs) Now that's not the typical MO for a journalist. A journalist is somebody who grows up on the street, wants to talk to people, I can think of Jimmy Breslin, guys who never went to college, didn't know how to type, and just got in there, took their tie off and started writing stories.

But you know, as you look at the media now, there are all these silver spoon kids – growing up with silver spoons. I find that quite interesting. How deeply infiltrated, from your knowledge, are they in our media?

SV: Wow. Pretty… I do know, uh, fairly deeply. I remember that when I was in San Diego on Leadership Council during meetings, they would laugh about how people had no idea of how much they were being influenced and didn't even know it. They found that kind of amusing, which is… I mean, that's the mindset of people in the group, though. They're like, "The sheep have no idea that they're being led by the hand."

And they find it amusing, because they show it as evidence of… I mean, I'm just describing what they say, I don't agree with it now, but they saw as evidence of the stupidity of the m… of the average person – that they have no idea.

I'm not saying that every news story or every newscaster is a member of the group… by no means. But, they specifically do teach and train and educate children that show an aptitude for the media, because they want that. And if the person has a bright, charismatic personality, and presents well, then that child will go into that, if they have their verbal communication and other skills required.

GS: Well, you know, that could explain why a lot of our stories really never get

covered, outside of the influence they have financially and the ownership of the media.

SV: (crosstalk) That's absolutely not by coincidence.

GS: What's that?

SV: Not at all a coincidence.

GS: Yes. That's a good idea, folks, why you're not getting the news from those outlets. Not only in our government. It explains a lot of things. Look at the war in Iraq. Look at the evidence there that shows what is wrong. Look at what they're doing in Iran right now. I mean, it's incredible. All this stuff is pretty obvious, people. There's something behind it. Svali is here trying to explain this organization from her knowledge, and it is quite, quite a story.

I know this idea. You were involved as a trainer of mind programming? I mean, this is just, I'm looking at some of the chapters in a book you have yet to publish [in paper book form]. We're talking about brainwave, color control, metal, jewel programming, programming link to stories and movies… I mean, it goes into suicidal programming.

In just a minute here before our break, can you kind of break down what you learned about the importance, well, oh! We've got to take a break, Svali, sorry. We're going to do that quickly, then we'll get back to you. We're talking to Svali, regarding her role as a head trainer in the Illuminati, the American Illuminati. We'll be back, on the Republic Broadcasting Network, in two minutes.

[END OF FIRST HOUR]

GS: Okay, we're back on the Republic Broadcasting Network. One more hour. We're talking to Svali, and she was a head trainer in the Illuminati.

Svali, what type of programming do they actually teach you, and how do you learn these different techniques?

SV: Well, you're taught from childhood on. My training in how to be a programmer started very young. I was mentored by another programmer at the age of 5, by a doctor at George Washington University. Not only did he do the programming on me, but also taught me how to do it to others. The types of programming… again, that could be a whole ten-hour segment to go into depth. From the time a child is an infant, all through their life basically, they are tested, they are profiled. Trainers can create a psychological profile, and then they update it frequently.

Basically, they are trying to install in this child the ability to obey, loyalty to the group, and the ability to do their job within the group.

Now those jobs vary in complexity. You may have on one side a child trained to be a prostitute. On the other end you may have a child trained to become a governmental figure, which is a lot more complex programming.

But as long as the loyalty to the group is instilled, and that is the first and foremost programming always installed, then no matter what their eventual role is, they will remain loyal. And that becomes their first loyalty. Whatever nation, whatever their public role in life is, their first and foremost loyalty will be to the group, and to serve its goals – whether they know.

A lot of times, the goal is [also] to be able to help the child create that complete division between their day role and their night role. So a pleasant, charming, wonderful, kind person in the daytime could be an absolutely cold, ruthless person at night – or during the day, you know, it's also during the day they do it.

Then you may have a housewife with children who goes out and completes a courier job for the group. And no one would ever suspect her. Who is going to suspect [that] this lovely-looking little housewife with a baby in a car seat is actually carrying some valuable documents?

Again, the first and foremost other thing was to instill loyalty, and they want to discourage people from questioning orders. They really don't want you questioning that, and they want you to obey their directives. Should people show signs of not doing that, then they go on for tune-ups. Actually people are being programmed all through their life. We used to call them tune-ups. It's a lifelong process for members of the group.

GS: We have a minute here before our break, and we'll get back and get in depth into some of these areas. But what went wrong with you? I mean, the dropout rate probably is very low…

SV: Extremely low. (laughs)

GS: …considering the number of, considering the training. But what went wrong with you? They somehow missed something.

SV: When I was very young I absolutely believed in the goals of [the group]. You never saw a more loyal group member. I thought that they were saving the world. I thought that we were doing a wonderful thing. But the older I got, I started to see the methods that were being used for so long, and that the ends do not justify the means. I became increasingly cynical, partly because I saw what I was doing to people. I was lying to them. I was manipulating them. I was telling them things that weren't true. I remember questioning this, thinking, "I was told lies as a child too, then. I was manipulated."

GS: Wow.

SV: And finally you start to question, as an adult, the things you were taught. (bumper music starts)

GS: Okay. We're going to take a break, Svali, we'll be back in three minutes on the Republic Broadcasting Network.

[commercial break – resume 8:27]

GS: Okay, we're back on the Investigative Journal. Svali, I wanted to ask you a question. Before we get into how you finally left the group, and what happened to you afterwards in your life now – tell us. You wrote an article that is very interesting – A Day in the Life of a Trainer for the Illuminati. Tell us what you went through in a normal day in your role at the Illuminati. Go ahead.

SV: Okay. Basically I would get up. At the time that I described in that article, I was teaching at a Christian school. And so I would get up, I would get my two children dressed and ready for school. Just like a normal mom, you know, go through the day, come home. We'd have little friends over and play, and stuff like that. Then, you know, have dinner. I was a good mom. I was your average American housewife – on the surface.

But underneath the surface, then my husband and I would remind each other on nights when there was a meeting. And then what we would do is when we would go to sleep, I had programming in place that would allow me to wake up within ten minutes of the specified time. If I knew there was a meeting that night, I would wake up ten minutes before it was time to get ready and go. A lot of times we would even go to bed with our clothes on. And I never really thought that was abnormal, you know?

GS: Mm hm.

SV: I thought everyone went to bed with their clothes on. I didn't even question it, you know, on nights when we had meetings. I thought, "Oh, it's warmer." (Laughs)

GS: Okay.

SV: And then we'd get up and go, and drive to the meeting. I was also very involved in Military in San Diego. In fact the group has a lot of military orientation. So on top I would take the kids to their area, there was an area where the kids

would go and change. They had a room and we would have like baskets of clothes, and we would change our clothing. You'd pick out your clothing, it had your name on it, and put on your uniform. Or whatever you wore that night. The kids would wear these little miniature military uniforms.

Then they would go out and do their training exercises. They were learning how to march, how to shoot. All kids in the Illuminati, at least in that area, know how to take apart a gun, put it together and shoot with deadly accuracy by the age of eight years old. Martial arts, there's a lot of martial arts training. Sometimes I'd help supervise that, or fill in if there's a military trainer [who] was [absent]. Everyone had to be – there was a lot of cross training. But most of the time I supervised the training. I would be working on implementing programming, or what we'd call tuning up – reinforcing previously installed programming in adults.

At that point I was normally supervising the younger trainers. They would be doing it, and I would be there watching and making sure they did it correctly. Or I would be also evaluating whether – sometimes every once in a while we'd be working on something that was somewhat experimental, and then I would be taking a more active role, assessing the person's responses to the new protocol, recording it and if there was any difference between established parameters for that protocol or expected responses, I would be flagging that.

GS: Give me an example of someone you were working on. What… how would they be introduced, what would be the reason? Would they be military, what is, how does someone get sent to you?

SV: No, these were all members of the group!

GS: Oh, okay.

SV: Oh! I can tell you that in San Diego, twenty percent of the active members of the group were active military.

GS: Okay.

SV: Okay? And think of military intelligence. Think high-ranking officials, colonels, (laughs), commanders. My ex-husband was a lieutenant commander in the Navy, getting ready to become a commander, okay?

GS: All right.

SV: These are not stupid people.

GS: So you were basically working on the programming of the members involved.

SV: (crosstalk) Yes. Oh yeah. Yeah.

No, we didn't program people who were not members of the group. You CANNOT install significantly traumatic mind-control programming in a person who is not a member of the group.

GS: (crosstalk) Good.

SV: Now there are certain… what you can do is what we call passive programming, which is basically through media means. If someone's watching a television program, they go immediately into alpha state. Everyone in the group, even a baby in the group knows that, because these people are very much into behavioral psychology. That's a trance state, almost, a very relaxed state where messages can be implemented.

And that's why I very strongly suggest people be very careful about the TV shows they watch! That's all I will say about that.

But no, you cannot take an adult who is not a member of the group and do what we did to them. They would go psychotic, or they wouldn't survive it, probably. They wouldn't be able to psychologically handle it.

GS: Tell us some examples of what you were doing. Program techniques.

SV: (sighs) Sometimes, (sigh) it would involve, normally we would start with a hypnotic induction or even sometimes we would inject a medication. A lot of times especially young children have a lot of fear when they are going into programming, but adults do too. We want them to relax. We give them a very short-acting medication to relax them.

We would then invoke a hypnotic state in them. If it was an older person I would be checking that the codes are already installed. If I was getting ready to install programming in like a young child, I would tell them, explain to them very patiently exactly the behavior expected. I'd say, "I want you to do this, and this, and this." I break it up into steps. Then I'd say, "First we're going to practice this."

I would show the child what I want them to do – I would model it. I would then tell the child, "DO IT." The child would then do it, okay? But, normally they won't do it well the first time, so she would… she or he would get shocked. That was called, because the group very much uses what they call positive and negative reinforcement. Okay?

If a child did not do it perfectly the first time, they are shocked. That's the negative reinforcement.

Then I would say, "DO IT AGAIN." They would show me the behavior.

Now at this point we start associating the behavior with an external stimulus or cue, too. Now a lot of times a child… If this is a behavior, though, that we want associated with a specific code, the child will often then traumatize very heavily first, to create a fragmentation in their personality. Then the behavior and the associated cue are given.

You might hear a tone, like "ding ding ding." [I say,] "All right, I want you to do this." Ding ding ding. The child hears the tone, they get up and they do the behavior. Once they can perform it perfectly, they are rewarded with praise. Good job, or a hug. Children like hugs, or something like that.

Then you do it over, and over, and over. That's why trainers have to be very patient people. Because then maybe after the child has done it fifty times, then they hear the cue, they get up, [and] they do it. It's not even a conscious [decision]… it's reflexive. At that point it's considered installed.

For very, very important programming, I'm talking about like end-level assassin programming, because we did train people how to assassinate people, and that's a whole other topic I don't want to go into here…

GS: Okay.

SV: We would then do a ritual to seal the programming afterwards.

GS: (Final-sounding) Okay.

SV: Okay?

GS: Just something, I was looking at some of your articles. One was "Christmas in the Cult." Just to get off on a different subject here…

SV: Sure.

GS: You say this is quite different for you, when you were growing up, than it is for most children. Can you just kind of briefly tell us what you meant by that?

SV: Yeah, um… (sighs) I mean, we had trees and presents and things like that. But for most children, Christmas is just happy time, you know, lots of presents. But in the group, there are some very high ceremonies that are celebrated. Several times, in fact many times, I flew into Germany. And there, there wasn't a Santa Claus. They had a figure called Father Yule…

GS: (crosstalk) Mm hm.

SV: …who represents Christmas there. But he is not the kind of benevolent Santa that you see here. This is a man with a golden scepter dressed in a white robe and a golden sash around.

I was once at the German Father's house, where there was a gathering with children and adults, and Father Yule was present. He raises the scepter and basically strikes down a child in front of everyone.

GS: (laughs in disbelief) Oh my God!

SV: I know!

GS: (shocked) He strikes down a CHILD? I just…

SV: I know. Yes. He struck down the child with his, his scepter. And that… that is not what you call a happy Christmas, you know?

GS: No. (sighs)

SV: And at the same time, yes, we did have a tree, you know, and fruitcake and all that, and decorate the house, but there is another side to Christmas. It's, it's…

GS: (in shock) You know, I'm just listening and I just can't believe, you know, we're, you know, we have leaders in our country that have probably gone through this kind of stuff. I mean, uh, it's just incredible, this group. I know they've been around for a long, long time, thousands of years, and gone through it, came here. George Washington was a 33 rd degree Mason…

SV: (crosstalk,) Oh, YEAH!

GS: …and we go on. Uh, the quest… you know, I just, I want you to understand, just from my point of view, I just wonder how… you know, you write a story, "The End of the Illuminati." How do we get rid of these people? I know, you're out of it. You couldn't take it any more. You think we can inspire more mid-level people to just LEAVE, like you, so they have no one to DO this kind of INSIDIOUS… CRAZY… PROGRAMMING and lifestyle! What do you – what do you think?

SV: Well, I believe that, as strongly as a Christian, that it's a spiritual warfare as well as an emotional and psychological warfare. I believe that, by the grace of God.

But I will also say that when I was in the group, a lot of the members are not happy. You have people in the group that are there because they love it, because they believe in our goals, they are totally dedicated. But to be honest, a lot… I often knew as many people who would have left in a minute if they thought that they could get out, and make it.

GS: You know, about your husband, uh, just to break in and then go back into that. Do they marry you to somebody in the group, or is that forced on you?

SV: (crosstalk) Yeah. Yeah. No. In the group, the marriages are always arranged, in my experience. In my 38 years in the group, I never knew of a couple, in the Illuminati, that did not have an arranged marriage. It can't be…

GS: (crosstalk) You just mentioned a couple that I, I suspect. Clinton and uh, Bill and Hillary.

SV: Oh, well, YEAH! (Laughs)

GS: (Laughs)

SV: YES! Definite. Definite.

GS: Yes. Bill?

SV: Yeah.

GS: Go ahead.

SV: Yeah. A lot of times, these marriages are arranged for compatibility, but also for bloodlines – to bring the right bloodlines together.

GS: Okay, good. We're going to be back in three minutes. I want to continue this, and then we're going to get into Svali's life after the Illuminati, on the Republic Broadcasting Network.

[commercial break – resume 23:17]

GS: Okay, we're back on the Investigative Journal. I'm your host, Greg Szymanski. And let me tell you, as an interviewer, and someone who has researched the Illuminati for a long time… it started way back when, when I was a young reporter in Rome…

It's a whole different ballgame when you're actually talking to someone with experiences like this. It takes it out of that realm of what is quasi-fiction fact, into the realm of reality. It's – it's really shocking.

And, uh, I'll be honest with you. This is a story, uh, that folks, you have to listen to – because this is going on in our country. All the things you're seeing regarding our rights being taken away, the police state, the war in Iraq, 9/11 – all these things have to do with this powerful group.

Svali, you know, we're talking about mid-level people. Now we're going to talk about some of the lower-level people. I'm interested in who they are. But you said they weren't happy, but a lot of them probably stay because it's very… I mean, this is a… it's a very lucrative way to live, I imagine.

SV: Oh, yeah!

GS: …families?

SV: Oh, yeah! That's the main thing, that's one of the factors that keeps people in. The reason more people don't leave is because leaving means giving up your husband, your children, your entire family on both sides, your money. And basically, for a lot of people, leaving the group means giving up everything, and starting out penniless and alone.

Not only that, but you're combating child programming to recontact, to go back, to be loyal, to be a good member.

GS: Mm hm.

SV: And I know many people have tried to leave and went back, because they just couldn't take it.

GS: Do you, uh, do you want to take a phone call right now? Break it up?

SV: Sure!

GS: Okay. Marilyn, in California. You're on the Investigative Journal. Marilyn?

Marilyn (ML): Yes, I've been a part of this. I lost part of it, I've been listening on the Internet. I didn't quite catch it. How did this woman become involved in this Illuminati training?

GS: Uh, go ahead, can you explain that, Svali?

SV: I was taught it from early childhood. I was mentored into it. Trainers in the group are mentored. You wok with older adults and they show you, and you are given increasing responsibility. And so by the time you are in your teens, you are basically doing adult training responsibilities. You've been taught for years.

ML: Your parents put you in it, or… ?

SV: Yes, they were members.

ML: Oh, I see, so it comes down through the parents – one parent to another.

SV: Yeah. Or from both.

ML: (shocked) Are they private SCHOOLS?

SV: Through what?

ML: Are these private SCHOOLS?

SV: Well, my children were schooled at private Christian schools. They were all Illuminati. (Laughs) Okay?

ML: (surprised, "Now I get it" voice tone) Oh, you're saying that the CHRISTIAN schools are Illuminati!!

SV: SOME of them are. Not all – but some.

ML: Yeah, obviously.

SV: No, no. The ones that my children in were, specifically. But no, there's a lot of good Christian schools that have nothing to do with the group, but some can be. Now I went to a public school, but what's interesting is, out of three public schools I went to as a young child, two burned down. (sadly): So there's no access to any school records.

ML: (completely shocked) I'll be DARNED.

GS: Marilyn, just to get you up to speed. You're born into this, then you're trained as a young child. You go through an induction ceremony in the Vatican. And this is going on with one to two percent of our population, according to Svali. Very serious, in all levels. Government, and everything else. Go ahead, Marilyn, do you have another question?

ML: Yeah. When you said the Vatican, now that is not a Christian religion, okay? Now I'm a Christian. Catholics is a Christian religion, we look at them as the precursor of the New World Religion. So…

GS: Well, you know, if I may just break in. I grew up a Catholic. I don't get involved in the splicing of the religions. I'm basically stating that when I started researching the Illuminati as a reporter in Rome, and I realized there was a bad portion of the Church, I looked at it. I had to deal with the evil and the good. So that's the way I reconciled it. The evil WITHIN the Catholic Church, at the high level of the Vatican , which seeps down into many, many areas. Go ahead.

ML: Okay, well I won't argue that point.

SV: (crosstalk) Now… Now… Now…

ML: I won't agree with it, but it sounds like you have become possibly Born AGAIN to get out of this? Would I be correct in that?

SV: Yes. Yes. Now I very much… Now first, I do want to say I am not slamming the Catholic Church or the average Catholic. I have many good friends that are Catholics, that are strong Christians. I became a Christian, and that was the only way I could get out. But just so you know, too, a lot of card-carrying Illuminists, well we don't really carry cards, but I'm using that term…

ML: Yes.

SV: …are members of the Baptist church, are members of Pentecostal churches. It… This… I was on a worship team for a Wesleyan church in San Diego … in my day life. Okay?

ML: Oo-kay. Uh, yeah. Very, very confused. I mean, I, uh, I think this is interesting. Many people say that the Catholic Church will be the forerunner of the New World Religion. There's some very good books out. In fact, I think you may have interviewed one of these men – the Grand Plan Design by John Daniels?

GS: Uh huh.

ML: You remember that?

GS: Uh…

SV: But, but…

GS: Go ahead.

SV: The average Catholic has no idea of what's going on in the Vatican.

ML: Yeah, yeah. I think that's interesting that, that the average Catholic would not know what's going on. That's just my take on it. (laughs)

GS: Well, I'll tell you something. As an average Catholic going to Rome my first time in 1980, I didn't know what was going on, and I grew up as a Catholic, went to Notre Dame High School. It was quite a learning experience for me.

ML: I think the Catholics, when they find out how evil the church is, stay in it! I mean, they really… why would they want to stay in it? That's what bothers me. I know some good people who are like that. And I don't get it! (Laughs)

GS: Well, the only answer is… it doesn't… (bumper music starts) (laughs) I don't know. There are many Catholics who aren't actively practicing.

ML: Yeah. Thank you!

GS: But anyway, we'll leave that for another time. Thanks, Marilyn. We'll be back on the Investigative Journal in three minutes, with Svali.

[commercial break – resume 33:20]

GS: Okay! Uh, you know, they're not going to get me. That's for sure. My house is anti-Illuminated. It's not going to happen, folks. Just to end that, Svali, before I get back to you, just to end that conversation we had with Marilyn about Catholicism. I look back at it, and I really thank my dad. And I do it in kind of a way, I'm just thinking about it now. I didn't know what the Church was about.

But you know, something strange did happen when I was young. My mom died, and I was ten years old. My brother was six months old at the time she died of leukemia. It was a very, very tragic affair – left my dad and me and my brother alone. And I remember my dad literally took a priest, a head Monsignor in our parish. And I won't even tell you where. Saint John Rebove (ph), right outside of Chicago.

This man came into our house, I'll never forget it. He said that he was going to put ME and my little BROTHER in an ORPHANAGE. My dad literally picked him up and threw him out the door! Literally.

SV: Wow.

GS: And from that point on, my dad never went back to church again. My brother never went to a Catholic school. I of course asked if I could finish, only because I had friends there. But you know, who knows what would have happened, you know, looking back on the craziness that goes on in the Church.

But anyway, Svali, you were talking about, uh, you know something? These people that are too… that do not want to get out because of the financial ties. But let's go back to when you were in the Illuminati. How did this happen? How did you finally leave? Tell us this whole story about you leaving the Illuminati. We haven't touched on that yet.

SV: Sure. Well, I do want to say one thing that I agree with Marilyn on. Without faith in God, I couldn't have done it. I became a Christian, and that was for me revolutionary. It made me question again more of what I was being taught, or had believed all my life. I, for the… I began to realize that what I was doing was wrong. I became increasingly cynical.

I also then started standing up to the head trainer in the county who despised me. He would do things that were just blatantly cruel for no reason whatsoever. I'd say, "You're wrong". Well, people don't like that. (Laughs)

He took it out on me in a lot of horrible ways. I finally made the decision to run. I ran to this… to another state, because I knew that my chances of getting out while

still staying in that area with people I knew, surrounded by people who were in the group, was not going to be very good. So I went to another state.

GS: You had to leave your family and everything, right?

SV: Everything. Well, my children were with their grandparents. At that point I thought that was better than them being with my husband. I was going to go get my kids. But my husband then called and he said, "I want to reunite with you." And I said, "Okay, that's wonderful." And I said, "But you have to get help. You have to get some treatment, because we can't go on. You've got to get out of the group." He said, "Okay. Help me get the kids and I'll meet you in a week."

So the day before, he called and said, "I'll be there tomorrow," blah blah blah. And so I was excited, thinking, "Oh, he's getting out, he's getting out, that's wonderful!" Instead, he went… he had gotten the kids several days before. He was lying to me, and I didn't know it. He had gone to a judge.

And the day that he was supposed to arrive, there was a knock on my door. It was a policeman serving me DIVORCE papers, and also a restraining order, saying that I could not come within a hundred yards of my husband or my children.

And at that point, I felt slightly punished (sigh) for leaving the group.

I fought that, and it… (sighs) I fought for four years with a court system that said things like this didn't occur, because my husband would go into court and say, "This woman is psychotic. She's making it all up. There's no way. Ha, ha, ha. This stuff doesn't happen in this day and age." And the judge would say, "You're right." Slam. Full custody to their father. And I had to have supervised visitation for four years with my own children, so that… because I was considered a kidnap risk.

Through a lot of prayer, I had my whole church praying for me here in Texas, and through Lambley Research and miracles, my children were finally allowed unsupervised visitation with me, after four years. During that time, I said to my daughter, who was fourteen, I said, "I want so badly for you to get out". And she looks at me, and she starts going…

(hyperventilating, extremely terrified): "Oh! You shouldn't have said that, Mom! You shouldn't have said that, Mom!" You know? She just… she just freaked out. She just totally lost it.

GS: Mm hm.

And I realized that it was her programming cycling, because she was just terrified. You know, she's like, (terrified, very rapid): "Why did you say that, why did you say that", and I said, "It's okay, it's okay, honey, calm down, calm."

And the following… she was just shaking and shaking. And then finally she said, "Well, I don't want to go back and get hurt." And then I said, "YOU DON'T HAVE TO."

And at that point I faced several prison sentences, but I called my ex and I said, "I will face… I will not let those children go back and get hurt again."

GS: Okay.

SV: And he flew out to get them, and he could have put me in prison at that time, because I was breaking the custody visitation. And you know how strong the courts are on that!

GS: Mm hm.

SV: And I said to him, "Please… Look." Because it was so nice. My daughter and son both said, "We don't want to go back, Dad. We don't want to get hurt. We don't want to do this anymore."

He looked at them, and he said, "I want to go think about it." He went home, and I was praying for him at the time.

And then that night he called me, and he said, (delirious, hyperventilating): "Oh my God. Oh my God." I said, "What is it?" He said, "We've gotta get out! We've gotta get out!" (Laughs) And I said, "YES! You do!" And then he said… and then he made the decision to get out.

At that point he went to a Notary Public. He gave me… he did a legal case document giving me full custody of my children. And then he said he was so sorry for, he put me through, the H, E, L, L he had put me through for years.

GS: Now, have you had any reprisals from people in the group since you were leaving, or any warnings?

SV: Yes.

GS: To keep quiet, or anything like that?

SV: (crosstalk) Yes. Oh, yeah! Oh… yeah, of course! There's one time when I did write one article that named some specific dates and times. I got hurt afterwards, and it made me very cautious. That's why I don't give a lot of radio interviews, and why I don't do a lot of this. That's one reason why…

GS: Well, I appreciate this, because you know, the number of people you're going to help, by… maybe, maybe waking up the American people to what is really going on. Sometimes you can wake up many more people by a person like you, than talking about a hundred million different generalities.

Let me take a call. Chris, in Washington, you're on the Investigative Journal.

CH: (calm, relaxed cadence): Hi. Svali, I just want to say how much I appreciate your bravery, in presenting this information in the way that you are. I've read your website recently. And my question is very simple. Based on the information that you're presenting, I'm wondering what timeline the organization of the larger Family that you're describing has for implementing the New World Order?

SV: Okay. I was told it would occur during my generation. I was told that by the year 2050 that they would be revealed. Now again, their timelines change, though. In fact, I jokingly referred to them as being like the Soviet Union, because you know how they had their five and ten year plans, and then things always got changed? In my own lifetime I saw several different timelines for things that were supposed to occur and change.

But as Greg noted, I've also heard of, from different people, that actually there is a HUGE push in the last few years. It's like, "It's CLOSE. It's CLOSE. Let's make things happen more quickly."

CH: Mm hm.

SV: So I couldn't begin to guess whether that's an accurate timeline or not. I know what I was told.

CH: I have a follow up question and that's it…

GS: Go ahead.

CH: …and this will be it for me. I have recently, against my own resistance to doing so, investigated, started to investigate fringe matters, if you will. Among them, the upcoming date on the Mayan Calendar of 2012.

SV: Uh huh.

CH: And as I've done this research, I've allowed myself just to be open to this information without believing anything I'm reading. One of the ideas that is presenting itself is that around 2012, not just according to the Mayan Calendar but many other theories out there, that we will be undergoing, as a planet, a revolutionary shift, if you will, of some kind or another.

And I'm wondering in the back of my mind if there might be any kind of race against the clock on THAT scale, if you will – especially if we're talking about a

potential spiritual warfare…

SV: Oh, yeah.

CH: …using your words in play here. Do you see a possible relation there?

SV: Yes, I do. And, 2012 IS an important year. But again, I was not told that the final Revealing would occur then. But I believe that probably… what will happen is that there will be events taking place that will help to set the stage.

CH: Okay.

SV: But it's going to be… I was told… again, I'm telling you what I was told while a member of the group, so please take it with a grain of salt. As I know, these people aren't always honest or trustworthy – they are deceptive. But I was told that there would be an enormous economic collapse prior to the Revealing. That basically the stock market would destabilize.

CH: Well, that appears to be already happening.

SV: Yeah. Yeah. And I was told it would make the Great Depression look like Sunday school. And at that time, it's going to… they're going to really be manipulating finances to bring about chaos, confusion, warfare, and then…

But see, I don't like to be so negative. But I am telling you what I was taught when I was in the group, you know?

CH: Well, I so appreciate it.

SV: Yeah.

CH: And I'm sure we all do.

SV: Yeah. I…

CH: You're a great voice.

SV: Well, thank you! I appreciate that very much. But out of this chaos they said would come order. You see, the group believes that out of chaos comes order.

CH: Well, I don't want to take any more time…

GS: (crosstalk) Well, as far as I'm concerned, I'd rather, you know, let things… Svali, these guys want to bring down this country financially, in whatever way possible. And right now, your voice is important in that.

And Chris, I really appreciate you saying that, because we want to stop these guys! I mean, come on! Let's get the American people to get together and just put an end to this. We have a powerful group in numbers. We may not have the money, but we can take it back. And I don't want to be bullied by these kind of people. That's my feeling.

SV: Yeah.

GS: Let me take another call. Uh, Harper in Canada. Harper? Go ahead.

HP: Great, thanks Greg. And Svali, I read your expose when it came out on Suite101.com a few years ago, and I always wondered what happened to you, because you vanished from Suite 101. So it's great to hear about you. A couple quick questions, I'll make them real fast. First is the term Moriah Conquering Wind. I'd never heard that before or since I read it in your expose. I wondered if you could elaborate on that term a little bit.

I also wanted to ask you if this cult, as far as you know, claims to or believes to derive any of its heritage from Atlantis or any other lost civilization. Okay?

SV: I'm not sure about the reference to Moriah (pronounced like "Mariah" Carey) you're describing, because Moriah is… is our name.

But I certainly can address the second question. The Illuminati completely believe that Atlantis is real. They teach it to their children as part of the oral history. They

believe that it was one of the greatest civilizations that ever existed, and one of the most advanced.

What they teach… their take on it is that Atlantis was a great race of highly intelligent people who had a highly advanced faith, and who were highly enlightened.

But what they teach the Illuminati children is that then this prophet of the enemy, who was a prophet of God, came and foretold their destruction if they didn't change their ways.

They were definitely Occultists. They were Luciferians on Atlantis. That was the religion. And in fact, a lot of the advances that Atlantis enjoyed was passed down to them through supernatural means… that is what I will say.

So they laughed at the prophet. In fact they killed him. And, he… I guess sometime afterward, we were taught that a few inhabitants escaped, but that tragically the great city was lost.

The Illuminati to this day mourn the loss of Atlantis, because they feel that these were… that the few survivors that left were among the great people who helped found the Free… what you would call the precursors of Illuminism.

HP: One more quick question, if I may.

GS: Go ahead.

HP: And I wanted to ask you if you have any reason to believe that people, men and/or women at the top of the pyramid, so to speak, practice a kind of magic where they are kind of skipping through time, in other words…

SV: (excited crosstalk) Oh! Oh! YES! Oh, without even being at the top… Oh, yes!

HP: …their body leaving, their soul or spirit leaving one body and coming and being born into another one, and therefore, you know, living through time.

SV: (excited crosstalk) Oh yeah! Yeah! Oh, yes! Yes, All the time. In fact, see, now this, now I didn't go there in this interview. You start telling wackos, you start discussing things like that. But in the spiritual side, they very much teach things like time travel, traveling out of body, you know, psychic battling, things like that – things that cannot be explained by logic.

And I saw things that I cannot explain through human intellect or reasoning, that were highly supernatural, and involved all of that… and more.

[Svali has reported in 2-3 different articles seeing a group of people levitate an animal and choke it to death, though here she seems to refer to more than just that.]

HP: Okay, great. Pleasure to speak with you, Ma'am, and God bless you.

SV: Okay, God bless you too.

GS: Okay, I think we have Dave Wilcox called in. I think you know Dave through emails, Svali.

SV: Yes.

GS: Dave, uh, you want to say hello? And do you have a question for Svali?

DW: Sure. Uh, Svali, it's great to have you on the air, and I'm really glad you decided to do it. So thank you very much.

SV: Oh thank you, Dave. It's good to talk with you. Yeah.

DW: Yeah, I feel like you're an old friend. I've been reading your stuff for so long, and you share so willingly and openly about yourself. It's a real honor to be able to speak with you in person like this.

SV: Well, thank you!

GS: All right, well Dave, you may have something you want to say to Svali. Go ahead. You have a question?

DW: Sure. I think one of the things I'd really like to have covered here is [this]. You shared with me in an email recently about these stages of enlightenment that they try to guide people through?

SV: Yes.

DW: I would like you to try to sketch out for people how the behavioral conditioning that's coming through the media, the movies and so forth might have affected them.

In other words, what personality characteristics would you see in a person when they have been influenced by these teachings? How would the average person, who is not really a bad person, start to be leaning, if the Illuminati teachings were actually having an effect on them? What would they be like? What would start happening?

SV: Well, again, as I said, the average person is not going to be a member of the group…

DW: Right.

SV: …so the influence would be much less. But the media, I believe that… well, I KNOW. I don't believe, I KNOW that some of the media that we're seeing nowadays is specifically targeted towards teaching people their philosophy or goals. All you have to do is watch the children's cartoons on Saturday morning, and almost across the board you'll see morphing, power battles, occult. And that's intentional.

Movies coming out. Basically, if a person is being influenced by their teaching, that person will learn to not trust their own instincts, their own feelings, their own body, their own perceptions. They will be looking outside for guidance.

Second of all, they will be moving towards a heavily occultic worldview – that leaning upon the occult is heavily encouraged. All you have to do is watch Harry Potter! (Pause – laughs) You know?

DW: Yeah, I mean, the whole idea that…

SV: (crosstalk) I mean, not to slam one of those Potter movies, or the Matrix.

If you want to know pure Illuminist philosophy, the Matrix shows it. Definitely. The entire philosophy.

DW: Oh yeah. Right down with Morpheus being broken down with the injections, and they said that it's like hacking a computer. (bumper music starts)

SV: Yeah! That's an excellent [example…]

GS: (crosstalk) Okay, let's take a break. We'll come back with our final segment. A big finish on the Investigative Journal, with Svali, on the Republic Broadcasting Network.

[commercial break – resume 54:21]

GS: Okay, we're back with our final segment with Svali. She's telling us about her experiences… thirty years with this insidious group called the Illuminati, how deeply penetrated and infiltrated they are in our culture and our country.

Svali, we talked about the higher levels, the mid-levels you were involved in as a head trainer. How low do they go? I said all along they're involved in gang stalking, the MK-Ultra program, infiltrating truth organizations, infiltrating groups that are trying to do good. How far down DO they go?

SV: Well, they go down to the sister group levels I mentioned. The sister groups have anywhere from, usually roughly around 30 members. And those are what a lot of people would consider the… what you would consider the satanic cults, with a

high priest and priestess. That would be the local level, the lower level.

But those people are also very active in their community. And so, they WILL be involved in intricate infiltrating activities when possible. Because to them, it's not infiltrating… it's helping. They think they're helping the group, or helping people by becoming a member and spreading the influence.

GS: Let me squeeze in one more caller, Roger, a faithful listener. Roger, you're on the Investigative Journal.

RG: Uh, yes. Thanks. I had so a big question and so little time that maybe I'll just squeeze it in…

GS: We've got a couple minutes. Really try to work it in, Roger.

RG: Yeah, uh, well, you will enjoy this first, and that is that I recall when Charlotte Izerbie (ph) was here on the local Clear Channel radio show. The host was, of course, dismissive of an Illumi-Nazi agenda. It was great to hear Charlotte say, "You're telling me? My own father was a high-level"… and she, of course, was a first or second-fiddle secretary at the department of Ed. And she said, "You're telling me my own father on his deathbed was telling me, "You go get 'em, girl," and he was one of 'em."

GS: (Laughs)

RG: So that was great. Anyway, my question was towards the philosophical / religious motivators, if you will, which you have been dwelling on. I've been trying to form it up into a more cohesive, integrated…

GS: Try to make it quick, we're running out of time. Go ahead.

RG: Yeah. To expose the ethos of the, you know, it's like the Neocons serve as the pseudo-intellectual rationale for the Illumi-Nazi agenda. And I don't presume that it turns on such fine distinctions, so much as it is a bare-knuckled lust for power. But, everybody has sort of a worldview that they use to justify their actions. And of course, it's a most un-conservative, humanistic social engineering agenda on a far larger scale.

Now you mentioned about these people, basically, and it's as rare as hen teeth…

GS: Quick, Roger…

RG: …yeah, to find somebody that's not oxymoronically both a spiritualist and an occultist, and also a, what do you call, a hardcore rationalist. Or maybe that's just [a] Republican assumption, right?

SV: (sighs)

GS: (slight laughing in delivery): I know there was a question in there somewhere, Roger…

RG: Yeah.

GS: But anyway, thanks for calling. Let me, I've only got a minute. I've got to finish with Svali.

Svali, tell us in your own words, you've got about a minute or two left here. You went forward, you came forward, (bumper music begins) you're now living a life completely away from them. What's your hopes of the future in our country right now?

SV: My hope is that people will realize that this is happening, and that they will start doing something about it – that they will start looking at it. Now again, we're talking about people who are mentally wealthy, but it won't be easy. But if people could rise up in prayer, and just say, "THIS ISN'T OKAY"…

If people would become informed enough to learn more about it, be aware they exist… and then, possibly, PRAY. Pray that people will take action against the things

that are happening. Because these people…

GS: Okay, Svali, I'm…

SV: Okay. All right.

GS: We're all out of time. We're going to end on that prayer. I really thank you for coming forward. You're very courageous. We'll talk again, and I'll be back tomorrow on the Investigative Journal. Same time, same place.

SV: Goodbye.

[END OF BROADCAST]

Greg Szymanski

Greg also has his own daily show on the Republic Broadcast Network. Go to http://www.rbnlive.com Greg Szymanski is an independent investigative journalist and his articles can been seen at http://www.LewisNews.com. He also writes for American Free Press and has his own site http://www.arcticbeacon.com

Listen to my Radio Broadcast live Monday night at 8pm Pacific time on LewisNews, returning Jan. 1 2006 Radio http://webs.lewisnews.com/radio/index.htm. Greg is also regular on Rense.com the first Thursday of every month at 9-10 pm pacific time.

Posted in Other Authors | 6 Comments »

svalispeaksagain 3:29 pm on August 30, 2021

Tags: healing (43), Jesuit (10), mind control (69), occult (13), ritual abuse (65), Vatican (10)

III. How are the Jesuits financed?

The Jesuit Order is financed through the offices of the Vatican, the wealthiest organization on earth. Most people have no idea of the vast wealth that this epicenter of the Roman Catholic Church holds. The Vatican Library alone holds books that are priceless, many of which have never been publicly catalogued for security reasons (the Vatican has private, highly secure records of their assets such as these. The assets reported publicly are only a tiny fraction of this organization's true wealth which is greater than the finances of all the world's billionaires combined).

Beneath the Vatican Library are secret vaults with treasures such as priceless art confiscated during the crusades and the World Wars (the Vatican shared the treasures confiscated from wealthy Jewish families with the Nazis, for instance). There are vaults dedicated to holding jewel-encrusted icons, gems, and priceless artifacts from the beginning of time, because the Vatican has a huge collector of ancient statuary and jewelry. Cups, jewels and golden idols from Mesopotamia and Babylon share space with treasures from the reigns of the Pharoahs (many of the earliest raids on the tombs of the pharaohs by Egyptians years before archeologists began exploration caused the empty tombs that were often found; these artifacts were often sold to wealthy Vatican representatives over the years who were highly interested in collecting them for spiritual as well as investment purposes).

Wealth and treasures from every great civilization are stored in these secret, highly secure vaults that only the privileged few are allowed to know even exist, much less to enter. The physical wealth these represent could buy the world's greatest corporations several times over, but this is not where the day-to-day income comes into the Vatican. Instead, there are other, darker sources.

Sex Trafficking

The Jesuits oversee the worldwide center for infant and child sex trafficking, which is located in South Amsterdam in the Netherlands. South Amsterdam, known as "sin city" to pedophiles and decadents in Europe, is where the largest brokers in the sex industry live. These brokers regularly

send out agents throughout the world, targeting China (where female infants are often given to them free), Asia, Malaysia, the Ukraine, and Euro-Russia.

Follow

A common misconception is that sex slaves are mostly female. In Amsterdam, both male and female infants and children are equally bought and sold, since pedophiles unfortunately seek both. The agents bring in literal truckloads of infants they have gathered by going to poor families or orphanages. These nicely dressed, wealthy, friendly westerners promise placement in good homes and a better life through adoption for the infants, and will often give good donations to the orphanages that provide “pretty children” and infants on a regular basis.

The trucks of infants and young children cross national lines through routes that have been bought, with guards sympathetic (and well-paid). The infants are cared for by women who give them drugged bottles to keep them quiet during the journey. These women are told to never disclose what they are doing, under pain of their entire families being killed.

Once in Amsterdam, the brokers come and inspect the infants and children. They then place bids on them (based upon the infamous “broker’s list” which lists the current black market value of these children as if they were commodities). The brokers are purchasing infants and children for the large, wealthy exclusive brothels, which are often franchises that they work for, and for the private auction houses, the largest of which is located in a suburb of Paris, France.

It is a common sight for those ‘in the know’ in South Amsterdam to see the sex trade brokers gathered at their favorite (and very private) coffeehouse in the morning, discussing the ups and downs of “the trade” and their evaluation of the latest ‘shipment.’

During these coffee discussions, they will also whisper about another pet peeve: the fees that must be paid “upstream” to the representatives of the person who oversees the entire sex industry in South Amsterdam: the Jesuit Father over Amsterdam. His offices are located in a palatial private mansion with walled gardens, where he also lives. This man is kept well-informed through his various agents of exactly how much money each broker has brought in during the week, and of how much they owe him (and the Vatican) for the privilege of operating in a city that looks the other way at its most infamous income source.

Failure to pay this “tithe” once can result in a warning; twice, in the death of the broker. Few are foolish enough to even think of trying to cheat the Father over Amsterdam of his dues. This man has agents throughout Amsterdam, in sources that the brokers would never suspect, who regularly check their books and report income, and any discrepancies.

The sex trade in Amsterdam brings in billions of dollars each year. This is because of the high price placed on infants and on children with “specialized training” in sexual skills. These children are often auctioned at the highly exclusive auction houses of Europe, where they are purchased by procurateurs who work for the wealthy families of Europe.

There are auction houses in Brussels, Belgium; Berlin, Germany; Amsterdam, Geneva, Moscow, and other locations. But the largest is located in Paris. Located in a large mansion, the evening begins with members of the wealthiest families in Europe and their consorts gathering for a gourmet dinner at 10 pm. At midnight, the auctions begin, starting with preteen children who often have specialized sexual skills. Twins are especially prized. As the night goes on, the children get younger and younger, until by 4 am the infants are auctioned. The procurateurs purchase these children for use by their wealthy clients during private parties (which the children rarely

survive). The clients come to oversee these purchases, and also for amusement, since many enjoy watching the auction process.

Some infants are kept in Amsterdam, which is known for the availability of children of every age. Many people are aware that in Amsterdam, the prostitutes dress up and sit in the windows to advertise their availability. What is less publicly known is that in the early morning hours, some of these window displays used to include a woman holding an infant. To the unknowing, this is a touching display of maternal care. But the residents of South Amsterdam knew that this is actually a signal that this house offers infants and small children to its customers.

Assassinations

There is a huge, ongoing worldwide market for the use of agents with specialized training in quietly and anonymously killing targets, without leaving any trace evidence (or, with skill in leaving a false trail). Premiums are paid for those who can take out political figures, and especially targets with bodyguards and those who utilize high security measures.

By far the most sought-after assassins have MI6 (military intelligence level six) training. The Jesuits have each of their agents go through MI6 training and hire them out to other organizations or individuals for fees. The contracts are actually brokered through third parties, and the contractor has no idea that the agent they have hired works for the Vatican. This often serves Vatican purposes; the agent earns them top dollar, but they also gather important intelligence at the same time about the operations and goals of other organizations, governments or individuals when their agent returns home and discloses to them.

Since the 1300s, when the Borgia family regularly poisoned their enemies in order to gain political and spiritual power in Rome, the Vatican has also conducted its own assassinations. These are never traced back to Rome, unless they want a message sent to the survivors. Many times, the assassinations are not simply conducted physically; their agents are also skilled in theta, or spiritual, assassination techniques (this will be discussed further in the spiritual programming section of this book).

Intelligence

One of the most valuable commodities in the world is information, especially about an organization's competitors and enemies. Good intel about certain organizations or individuals can be extremely difficult to obtain, and those that can provide it can ask and be paid top dollar.

The Jesuits use their vast network of worldwide operatives with specialized training to obtain this information. The term "Vatican Spy" became infamous during the middle ages, when the monarchs of Europe became aware that there were secret agents unknown to them reporting their most hidden activities to Rome. This spy network has only grown since then, and the Vatican relies on the intelligence they provide for its own protection and planning, as well as to help further their goals. If they believe that intel will help their cause, they will arrange for it to come to the attention of the individual or organization they want it to – for a hefty fee, of course.

This intel will never appear to come from Rome. Roman agents never appear to work for Rome, but instead for other organizations or causes. The purchaser may believe that they are gathering intel from a valued Arabic contact, from an Israeli sympathizer, from a Russian mercenary, or a Templar Knight in Canada. They will not suspect the Jesuits, because their agents are always

programmed to have several layers of unbreakable covers

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

Vatican Book Part 1
August 17, 2021
In "healing"

The Hierarchy of the Occult
May 3, 2018
In "mind control"

Vatican Book Part 11 (final section)
September 8, 2022
In "healing"

Pingback: Child Sex Trafficking by the Jesuits | cathy fox blog on child abuse

Pingback: AMSTERDAM: Hoofdstad van de mensenhandel. Mogelijk gemaakt door het Vaticaan. | De Binnenlandsche Bataafsche Courant

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← Vatican Book Part 1

book part 4 →

Blog at WordPress.com.

Svali Speaks!

The Life of Svali – an Ex-Illuminati Mind Control Programmer

Cults that Abuse

September 29, 2008 by koniword

Before I address survivor's stories in later articles, I believe it is important to understand how groups that ritually abuse operate. Cults can be abusive or non-abusive, and there are many fairly benign cult-like groups that exist today. But for the purposes of my article, I want to look at cults that abuse, specifically, in the sense of ritual abuse.

What are the characteristics of an abusive cult? There are many studies that have defined controlling cults. Dr. Margaret Singer, Phd, U.Ca. Berkley, has written one of the definitive articles on cults that employ mind control and their characteristics (1).

She states that thought reform, as employed by controlling cults, involves the entire anthropological/social spectrum of behaviour, including language use, social environment, and influence of the leader and peers on the member. This often involves attacking the person's self concept.

I would like to take the six conditions that she has identified as being pre-requisites to exerting mind control, and compare them to experiences of survivors in ritualistically abusive groups. The two correlate completely.

1. CONTROL OVER TIME : this is Singer's first condition. The cult group must get some of the person's time, as much as possible, and have the individual think about group idealogy. Survivors report spending time during the week in contact with the cultic groups that abuse them. Contact is by phone; by verbal discussion, or going to meetings. Survivors state that group meetings often occur weekly, monthly, or as frequently as two to three times a week for intensive training sessions. The group that I was involved in (the Illuminati) met two to three times a week for normal teaching times, and had large group meetings on a monthly basis ("ritual times") as well as leadership meetings once a month to plan the activities for the next few weeks.

2. CREATE A SENSE OF POWERLESSNESS Most groups involved in ritual abuse do this to the nth degree. Through pain, degradation, tying up victims, and experiences created to show there is "no escape" from infancy on, the victim of cult control soon comes to believe that he/she is trapped, can never break free, and should just "give in" to what is asked of them.

Search

Categories

- Interview with Svali – The Illuminati in America
- Mind Control Programming Articles by Svali
- Multiple Personalities – Brokenness
- Other Authors
- Other Illuminati Articles by Svali
- Ritual Abuse Articles by Svali
- Svali Answers Questions
- Svali's Personal Life
- The Illuminati: How the Cult Programs People

Betrayal programming brain wave programming color programming Complex Polyfragmentation cult Cult Abuse Cult Safety Cult Secrecy Denial Programming DID dissociation end times Illuminati plan end times scenario Escaping from the Cult government programming Having needs Healing from Ritual Abuse Hiding from the Cult History of Ritual Abuse Illuminati bankers Illuminati jobs jewel programmming linked programming Memory

Privacy & Cookies: This site uses cookies. By continuing to use this website, you agree to their use.
To find out more, including how to control cookies, see here: Cookie Policy
Close and accept

3. MANIPULATE REWARDS, PUNISHMENTS, EXPERIENCES IN ORDER TO SUPPRESS OLD SOCIAL BEHAVIOR BEHAVIORS REWARDED: Participation, conformity to [illegible] of rewards and praise, as well as punishment have a name: training. Cult type groups believe strongly in the use of praise if the person does well, including merit badges, ceremonies of reward, and high status if the person conforms to the expected behaviour, and severe punishment, even death threatened if the person refuses to perform. Often, abusive and coercive groups will take this concept to its outermost extremes.

4. MANIPULATE REWARDS, PUNISHMENTS, EXPERIENCES IN ORDER TO ELICIT NEW BEHAVIOR Models will demonstrate new behavior Conformity: dress, language, behavior Using group language will eventually still the thinking mind I will discuss this from the point of view of my experiences in the Illuminati in San Diego, Ca. Again, "training" in the Illuminati and other highly controlling groups (outside people call it "programming") is meant to create behaviour that helps the group to continue. The goal is a member who is absolutely committed to the group; who never questions leadership, who strives to excel, and who scoffs at the weak. Weakness is the displaying of emotion during ritual events; the refusal to perform an act, or the inability to keep up with others in the group during activities. "Weak" members are brought forward, and punished in view of all. During military exercises (the group had a strong military basis, with forced marches at night, and mock "battles" and "hunts") if a member did well, they were highly praised and rewarded. This could be being excused from a difficult maneuver, or sexual rewards, or moving up in status at the next award time. Members were highly conscious of their standing in the group, and were constantly seeking to "move up."
5. MUST BE A TIGHTLY CONTROLLED SYSTEM OF LOGIC There must be authoritarian leaders in control, who inspire confidence and punish questioning behaviour. In San Diego, as well as several Illuminati groups that I belonged to across the country, the leadership looked like a "pyramid", with the top person being head of "leadership council", then a group of two "advisors" below him. Below these two were six administrators who coordinated finances, meeting times, and running the groups logistically. Below them were six head trainers. Underneath were the "sister groups" of about 50 members each, with priests/priestesses, and others. All aspired to a leadership role, to being allowed to move up the rigid hierarchy. Questioning of leadership was unthought of, and considered quite dangerous. From earliest childhood on, members were taught that seeking to leave, or questioning the group's philosophy, would mean isolation, beratement, punishment, and possible death, with "deaths" being staged to convince children of this reality. Survivors of groups outside the Illuminati have also reported similar activities to control members, with a hierarchy of leadership and leaders being given the right to severely punish or discipline nonconformers.

6. PERSONS BEING THOUGHT REFORMED MUST BE UNAWARE THAT THEY ARE BEING MOVED THROUGH A PROGRAM TO MAKE THEM DEPLOYABLE AGENTS

A person is hard to manipulate if they KNOW they are being manipulated. That is why techniques used by ritualistically abusive groups are often based on a sophisticated knowledge of human behaviour and psychology. The member's peers including family, closest friends, and spouse are ALL members of the group in generational cults. These people all reinforce for the member that the group is good; has the member's "best interests" at heart, no matter how abusive the behaviour. That they want to "help" the member. Trainers and behaviour programmers also use these techniques, including "bonding" with the victim, convincing the victim that they "care for them" , that "no one else could possibly understand them the way their 'family' (the name the Illuminati go by) does", etc. As a former trainer in this group, I used those phrases frequently during sessions.

suppression metal programming military programming MPD Origin of the Illuminati Ritual Abuse Roots of the Illuminati Shell Programming Spiritual Abuse Spiritual Programming suicidal programming Survivors of Ritual Abuse Svali is Alive Svali is dead Svali is missing Svali is Safe Svali poem Svali questions techniques Theapists reveal truth about Ritual Abuse Therapists VR programming

Blog at WordPress.com.

At one time, I even believed them myself, until I began questioning what I was doing (this will be the focus of another article: why I left). Surrounded by members who all dress alike, act alike, the person in an abusive cult will often question themselves instead of the cult group, if they question at all. After all, in generational cults, this is the ONLY reality the person has known, from infancy on, and not everyone questions what happens to them.
In later articles, I hope to be able to incorporate survivor accounts of the types of groups involved in this kind of abuse. On a personal note, the group that was involved in my ritual abuse was known as the Illuminati, although day to day they called themselves "family", "the Order", or "the Society" depending on the circumstances. For thirteen years, at times my abuse occurred in a Masonic temple in Alexandria, Virginia and some of the abusers were Masons, although most of the membership of that group had no idea that some of the members were using the temple for that purpose. All Masons are NOT abusers, most are not, but SOME in my experience were members of the Illuminati and abused me in that context. I was also abused in a small abandoned Baptist church in the country in northern Virginia. One of the abusers was a deacon in a local baptist church. All Baptists are NOT abusers, but in this one instance, some members of the local church were members of a group that abused during the night hours.

In the daytime, these people were respected members of the community, churchgoers, and appeared benevolent. This shows that a person's daytime "persona" can be quite different from how they act at night or in a different setting. All of the members of the group that abused me were generational themselves, and had been abused in the same way when they were children. This shows how the cycle of abuse, if not healed, will continue generation after generation in some families.
References: (1) Singer, Margaret T. "Conditions for Thought Reform

Posted in Other Illuminati Articles by Svali, Ritual Abuse Articles by Svali | Tagged Cult Abuse, Spiritual Abuse | Leave a Comment »

Ritual Abuse: Modern Hysteria or Ancient Practice?

September 29, 2008 by koniword

***** If you are a survivor of ritual abuse , please be in a safe place before reading the following article, as it mentions groups that practice ritual abuse as well as the historical groups that they are descended from. *****

In this article, I will be discussing ritual abuse in a historical context. Later articles will share about ritual abuse from the perspective of its effects on the survivor as well as significant others.
1. Ritual abuse: modern hysteria or ancient practice?

Ritualized forms of abuse have been practiced since the dawn of human history. Violence in the name of a religious or ideological belief is not new; it has been practiced for thousands of years.

Here I will discuss a few groups that have been documented as practicing secret, esoteric, or abusive rites to place modern ritual abuse in a historical context. Please be aware that this is only some of the documented ritualized abuse that we know of from ancient until modern times, and is by no means complete.

The ancient Assyrians and Phoenicians worshipped the sun god, Baal, who they depended upon for the continuance of their crops. The antiquity of the worship of the god or gods of Baal extends back to the 14th century BCE among the ancient Semitic cultures. Worship of Baal extended from the Canaanites to the Phoenicians who also were partially an agricultural people. Baal, the sun god, was fervently prayed to for the protection of livestock and crops, and the rites also included

animal and human sacrifice.

Another co-current deity was Molech, whose rituals were also costly to human life. (excerpted from Alan G. Hefner).

Many of these rituals were adopted by the ancient Hebrews, as mentioned in the Bible (Leviticus 20 and 2 Kings 23) These rituals were carried out for over a thousand years, both openly and secretly.

Ancient Babylonia also practiced Mystery Religions, which involved worship of the sun god, and sacrifices to this deity.

In Europe and Indo-asia, the ancient Druids also were known to engagein human sacrifice and rituals before the coming of Christianity to the areas occupied by the celts in Europe and Britain. Caesar commented upon this practice:

"The whole nation of the Gauls is greatly devoted to ritual observances, and for that reason those who are smitten with the more grievous maladies and who are engaged in the perils of battle either sacrifice human victims or vow to do so, employing the Druids as ministers for such sacrifices…"

(Gallic War, 6, 16)
By the medieval ages, Christianity had entered Europe, and groups were formed who practiced rites that were the antithesis of the organized religion of the day. Many of these groups claimed roots founded in the rites of the ancient druids and Canaanites. The Knights Templar were one such order. They were founded by medieval lords and barons to protect pilgrims who visited Jerusalem, which had been captured during the First Crusade. They were also quite wealthy,and financed the leading kings of Europe at the time, creating the modern banking system of lending at interest. They were disbanded in the early 1300s by the Pope and the King of France because of fear due to their power,as well as their esoteric religious practices. The Knights Templar began corrupting their Catholicism, and incorporating elements of mystery religions, which included rituals with candles around the body of a young virgin, and homosexual practices. They also began summoning demons during these rituals. Although officially disbanded, the Templar knights continued practicing their rites in secret, founding the thirteen orders, each with their own symbol.

Rosicrucianism. This group was publicly founded in the 17th century in Germany, supposedly by an individual in a novel known as Christian Resenkrutz. The order was based on the traditions of the "Rose Cross" order. This group emphasized the need for "enlightenment" through following certain spiritual principles,and had both a public and covert philosophy.

Meanwhile, in South America and Mexico, the Incas and Aztecs were also performing rituals which involved tbe taking of human life. This has been documented in the annals of the early Spanish conquerors.

Up until modern times, esoteric, hidden practices have continued around the world. Brutality, and sacrifices in the name of religion are not limited to one locality or one time in history.

In Africa, ritual murder is still ongoing, and has been extensively documented. (see articles by Oke(1989) for more information. In Thailand, India, and Malaysia, sacrifices and rituals are still conducted, similar to those of ancient times, and has been documented in articles by Newton (1993) and Constantine (1995).

Modern Europe has also reported incidences of ritual murder in recent years (see articles by Newton, 1993a for discussion of cases of ritual murder that have been convicted in Dusseldorf and Spain).

In strife-torn Peru, human sacrifice remains a daily fact of life, dating back to the time of the Incas. For some practitioners, the ritual offering of human lives is believed to insure bountiful crops, control the weather, and prevent such natural catastrophes as floods and earthquakes. These rituals, called "paying the earth," are

also employed by wealthy businessmen, including mine owners and beer distributors,to insure continued prosperity.

In neighboring Chile, human sacrifice is such an established tradition that the courts recognize
"compulsion by irresistible psychic forces" as grounds for acquittal in cases of ritual murder. (Tierney, 1989)

There is much, much more evidence of documented continuing ritual sacrificearound the world. It would take a strong denial system to refute both the historical and circumstancial evidence that ritual abuse has been a reality throughout the ages, and continues to be until this day.

Why am I sharing about the history of ritual abuse? One of the things that often perplexes survivors of ritual abuse is the denial with which their memories or accounts are often met. They are told: "ritual abuse is a modern-day witch hunt," "Things like that don't happen in this day and age" (as if man's entering the Industrial Revolution changed human nature), or "I don't believe you." Comments like these can be devastating both to the survivor of ritual abuse, who often WISHES the memories were not true, and the family and support people for the individual, who know the individual, and that they are NOT lying.

Comments like these only reinforce what the individual was told by the cult group: "If you tell, no one will believe you," or "You will be laughed at, or shunned." The survivor courageous enough to not only remember, but then disclose their abuse, will be faced with a society that often appears in denial. "Why isn't anyone doing anything about this?" the survivor wonders, as they share the atrocities. "Why isn't it stopped?" "Why do more children have to be hurt?"

Societal denial is complex. People often do not want to think about or hear about painful topics. Thirty years ago, teenage girls who shared that their middle class father was sexually abusing them were told that they were "lying", or worse, "delusional". Twenty years ago, medical professionals who suspected that battered children were being seen from not only the poverty levels of society, but also the middle class and well to do, were told it wasn't possible. Society closed its eyes to the facts before it, until enough people finally came forward and disclosed.

Hopefully, placing ritual abuse in a historical context will help the reader see that:

Ritual abuse is NOT a "new" phenomenon, or a modern day "hysteria"

Human beings have been capable of great cruelty throughout the ages, and to believe otherwise refutes the historical record.

Those who are abused tend to abuse. Why would this well known psychological fact be different in the context of familial, generational ritual abuse? Where the abuse has been passed down for generations, in a codified manner?

That ritual abuse is occurring around the world. It is NOT a phenomenon limited to the United States, or to people "recovering memories" in therapy. Newton, Ryder, and Lockwood ("Other altars") have resarched and proven this.

My hope is that at the least, this article has helped raise some questions about a topic that is often overlooked and misunderstood. – Svali

References: Crowley, Aleister, The Book of Lies (Weiser, 1988)

Howard, Michael The Occult Conspiracy (1989)

Shaw, Jim and McKenney The Deadly Deception (1988)

Ryder, Daniel ;article: Satanic Ritual abuse: The evidence surfaces: …(1999)

Newton, Michael: Excerpt from essay published in the Journal of Psychohistory 24 (2) Fall 1996,"BLOOD ATONEMENT" IN 19TH-CENTURY AMERICA

Out of Darkness:Contoversy over satanism and ritual abuse ;Sakheim, Devine

(1998)

Smith, Margaret; Ritual Abuse; (1993)

James, Simon: The World of the Celts (1993)

The Book of Illumination (age unknown)

Posted in Ritual Abuse Articles by Svali | Tagged History of Ritual Abuse | 1 Comment »

Ritual abuse: The Under-Recognized Problem

September 29, 2008 by koniword

If you are a survivor of ritual abuse, please be aware that reading about it may be triggering. Please take care of yourself, and be in a safe place before reading

Ritual Abuse The words conjures up images of people in robes, chanting, or perhaps a grade D horror flick. But what is the reality?
First, let's look at a definition of ritual abuse:

Ritual abuse is the systematic, repetitive abuse of both children and adults by either an individual or a group. It may involve psychological, sexual, physical and/or spiritual abuse, and the effects are devastating on the individual who undergoes it. Often survivors of this type of extreme abuse cope by dissociating, and as adults may continue the cycle of amnesia and abuse. The key word here is : repetitive. Ritual abuse is done repetitively, in a consistent pattern, over time. This may be done in the name of a religious belief, or simply out of patterned cruelty. Any idealogy can and has been used to justify the pattern of abuse. Most of the victimization begins in early childhood, and is done by adults who were themselves abused. The cycle continues because people often do not realize that they can stop it; often, they feel "trapped" in the pattern of abuse. What is the incidence of ritual abuse today? Statistics vary, depending upon the source. When I lived in a large metropolitan city in the Southwest, population close to 2,000,000 , the group that I was affiliated with, known as the Illuminati, had 24 sister groups. Each group had roughly 50 members, so they had approximately 1,200 members in this area. These numbers are reflected across the United States and European countries. And this was only one group.

In the next few months, I will be sharing different perspectives on the reality of ritual abuse. I hope to address the following questions:

1. What kinds of groups engage in what is known as ritual abuse? What motivates them?

2. How do these groups maintain their "cloak of secrecy?" How do they operate? What kind of security do they use?

3. How do they program their followers? Why? How does a person break free from this kind of programming?

4. What is the opinion of experts in the field?

5. Has there been documented, physical evidence that ritual abuse occurs? What evidence?

6. What about spouses and friends: what can they do to help survivors of ritual abuse? What is helpful, and what isn't?

7. What can the general public do to help?
These are all valid points that need to be addressed in order to understand ritual abuse. As a survivor of ritual abuse myself, as well as a former cult programmer, or trainer, I have a vested interest in sharing both from my own experience, and the

wealth of published information about ritual abuse that is available now.

I also hope to be able to share some survivor stories (with names changed to protect the people involved) about the reality of ritual abuse, and the ongoing effects that it causes in the life of the survivor, as well as things that have helped them in their healing journey.

I will be sharing internet links that relate to the topics that I have addressed. They are there, and are well worth reading for the person who desires to learn more, and is willing to approach this subject objectively.

Best wishes,
Svali

Posted in Ritual Abuse Articles by Svali | Tagged Ritual Abuse, Spiritual Abuse | Leave a Comment »

On Having Needs

September 29, 2008 by koniword

This is a guest article by someone who has written expressively and eloquently on how the survivor of cult abuse feels. Her name is niid la'i and she speaks for many of us about the isolation and loss of identity, the need to protect oneself after a lifetime of betrayals. The desire to learn to trust and be open. She calls it:

On Having Need

by Niid La'i

This is an essay on need. Need is frightening to me. I don't want to have need! The voices of programming inside start to shout at me when I acknowledge that I have needs. I am not supposed to have needs. I have always existed to serve others. I am supposed to be compliant, understanding, and forgiving, no matter what anyone does to me, or says to me. I am never supposed to express an opinion, or discontent or dissatisfaction.

As a child, I learned to have a "nothing face." This face was devoid of all expression. It was a face that hid a million feelings. Sometimes, even this expression was unacceptable. If it was misconstrued as sullen, then punishment descended on me anyway. I had to have at least a suggestion of a smile and contentment blended in with the nothing face. It was used when cult members were present and in the home with the mother and father.

I also have, what I call, "outside faces." Outside faces are more readable. They were created to present a pleasant, calm, and amiable appearance to all people. The outside faces went to school, and to relatives' homes, and to public places. As a small child people would comment on how quiet I was. As a teen-ager, and even now, many friends and acquaintances tell me I am so, "laid back!" What a joke! But it proves how well everyone inside has hidden behind the acceptable faces that afforded some safety.

One problem this has created is a numbing affect. In order for the outside faces and the nothing face to function, needs and feelings had to be literally forgotten. If alters, which I call, "others, " inside were too upset or anxious, there was a possibility of their emotions breaking through. Often in a cult gathering, members of the group would convince little others that if they had feelings inside, the members could tell. So, even if their facial expression was as it should be, the cult members would punish them for the feelings these "little people", my name for little alters, were supposedly having. Because of this, others learned to deny their feelings and more others were created to hold feelings in far away worlds. Their needs were not recognized anymore either. Eventually they were as "nothing"

inside as their faces learned to be on the outside.

When one of my others was 6 years old she was being taught not to cry. I'm sure there were lots of other "lessons" already ingrained about showing emotions, but this is just one description of those indoctrination sessions. The memory, and I'm sure it is not complete, is of this small child standing naked in front of a male adult. He was sitting in a chair and all of a sudden he slapped her very hard on the cheek. Of course, she grabbed her cheek and started to cry. He removed her hand and hit her again and said simply, "Don't cry!" She tried to stop but couldn't. He continued to hit her cheek and repeat the words until her tears stopped and the only evidence of the pain was her labored breathing. I'm sure that at some point this little person inside fragmented into more others who could hold the sting of the slaps and even the tears away from the six year olds consciousness. Eventually she was able to stand dry eyed in front of her abuser and not even flinch. By the time this was accomplished her cheek and eye were so swollen and bruised that she could not go to school for more than a week.

Certainly, everyone who lives on the earth has the need to cry many times in his/her life. But for me, because of countless, repeated episodes of controlled programming such as the one just described, my need to cry was effectively shut off. Now, as an adult, though I need to cry, there are many times I can't. I will feel tears begin to fill my eyes and my throat tighten up, but then all the symptoms just go away. I am left with an overwhelming sadness, a stomach- ache and extreme anxiety.

Can I then tell anyone I am anxious, or sad, or feel sick? NO! Others inside have been taught equally well that they are not supposed to ask for relief or comfort. They should not even feel sad, or anxious or sick. If they do have these feelings, they think they are bad and evil for having them. They experience tremendous guilt and shame.
In the present day, I find I don't understand what is happening with my emotions. I go to the Dr. and get so anxious when I have to tell him/her what is wrong that I get tongue-tied and confused. The Dr. gets impatient and frustrated because my explanations are so disjointed. He/she misunderstands.. I try again, but I still can't be clear. I am then judged incompetent and a hypochondriac. I am treated with lack of respect and in a mocking way. I don't understand why I can't talk to Drs. I feel stupid and ashamed for being so evasive and indirect.

This happens because I am not supposed to need. If I am sick, I am not supposed to need help. I am not supposed to tell anyone I don't feel good. I am not supposed to GET sick in the first place. This is ludicrous when considered logically. Everyone gets sick. But, the lessons are still so much a part of me, I think I am bad and evil for wanting medicine to feel better.

Let's say I go to a therapy session. I am going to therapy because I am trying to resolve the conflicts I sense inside. Even being there is a serious breach of "the rules." Again, I am admitting I have needs, and I am trying to talk to someone about them. Talking is akin to murder. It is a capital offense, and carries major consequences if broken. Therapy is all about talking! If I sit silent in front of my therapist then nothing is accomplished. If I speak to him I am buried in angry, shouting inner voices, pleading voices, scared voices. My body starts to hurt in various places. I cannot think again, and what I say comes out jumbled and incoherent. I get frustrated and panic-stricken. If my therapist shows even the slightest indication of impatience or perceived anger, everyone inside withdraws. All the others inside willing to watch and listen are so hyper alert they notice every movement, twitch and voice inflection the therapist has. This can seriously impede progress in therapy.

Many times I have left a session thinking the therapist has labeled me needy and draining. This is because if I ask him/her for anything; reassurance, understanding, support, I think I am being overbearing and demanding. The very act of walking

through the door of the office and being seen feels like asking for more than anyone should ever be asked to give. Indeed, I am supposed to go in there and figure out what the therapist needs and start supporting and taking care of him! Paradoxically if the therapist cannot return a rare phone call, or cannot be as supportive as I need him/her to be, I feel rejected and abandoned. So, I find myself in one of those double binds so common to survivors. If the therapist is supportive, etc. I feel bad and evil. If he is not supportive I feel bad and evil. This is all because I am not supposed to have any needs.
What can happen, is that I get so worried about being needy, that I become needy!! By skirting around what I really want to say or ask for, those who are working with me have to guess at what I am really trying to ask or say. They can end up feeling manipulated, or like they are being forced to play some strange kind of game. Though this is not my intent, especially if they do not know me very well, my "halftalk," as I call it, can create the very drain I am trying so hard not to inflict on others.

It's another trust issue. In order to heal, I have to trust before trust is really there to be able to learn to trust! I have to risk from the very foundation of my being. I wear the lessons of the past like a second skin. To begin removing this skin leaves me feeling touch tender and naked once again. I often feel like I am metaphorically standing in the middle of a busy freeway daring the cars not to hit me. That's how vulnerable I feel as I try and shed the beliefs that have ruled me from the day I was born. I hate it when I am told I am comfortable living within the boundaries placed on me from the past. But, it is true. I have only known what I was so methodically programmed to believe.

Learning new ways is filled with as much pain and anxiety as the original abuse. As I discover and then acknowledge that I have needs, and attempt to trust these needs to "outsiders," "big people," i.e., therapist, Drs. and friends, I open myself up to the possibility of more hurt and misunderstanding. Though these people are not abusers, human beings are subject to making mistakes, responding from their own set of rules. The everyday problems in relationships that are bound to happen when people get together can seem as intense as the former abuse.

Can the voices of programming ever be silenced? I hope so. At this point, I have to rely on my therapists and other caregivers to instruct me and guide me. I cannot offer concrete ways to implant trust in barren soil. What this essay offers is insight. I NEED those who read it to understand and be able to step beyond my walls of resistance and help me. I hope that as other survivors relate to these barriers that affect their healing they will also seek out people that can assist them to shed their old skins of the past. Now how's this for breaking programming! Copyright 2000 Niid la'i:

Thank you for your courage in opening your heart and sharing with others here. May what you wrote open the eyes of both therapists and support people to the tremendous issues that a survivor of ritual abuse struggles with in the healing process. -Svali

Posted in Other Authors | Tagged Having needs | 1 Comment »

Chapter Fifteen: Core splits, Denial programming, the last Five Steps of Discipline

September 29, 2008 by koniword

Virtual Reality Programming

Virtual reality programming (VR) is a form of programming that has become more and more widely used in the past few decades. It involves the person being placed in VR headsets and suit while a cult created VR disk is used to run the program. It

can be used to create 3D and holographic images, and especially is useful in scripted programming, and target practice sequences for assassin training. Under hypnosis , the person will really believe they are in the scene.

Virtually any scenario can be recreated. Images to be "burned in" will be shown on the VR disk, and reinforced repetitively during the programming sequence. Some trainers feel it removes the element of "human error" in training, and use it quite extensively. VR programming, like any other programming, means going inside and finding out the distortions that were placed in the parts that went through the programming, allowing them to see how they were deceived, and dealing with the trauma associated with the programming.

Denial Programming:

Denial programming begins with the first experiences the infant goes through in life. The child has been horrendously wounded and traumatized, yet the next morning, the adults around him are acting normally, as if nothing had happened. They are modeling a lifestyle of denial for the infant and young child. This is reinforced later by the child being told:

"It was just a bad dream" (oh, how the child wants to believe this lie. It makes the pain less to think it didn't really happen)

"It's just your imagination; it isn't really happening" (which is again embraced as an escape from the horror). Denial will also be fed by the adults around the child telling them that they will never be believed if they disclose. There will be set ups to teach the child what they see and hear, and to teach the child to trust outside adults to tell them their reality.

A typical set up will go like this:

The adult will hold an object such as an orange in their hand, and ask the young child, about age two or three, "what is this?". The child will quickly respond, "oh, an orange!" The child will be shocked, and told, "no, it's an apple." The child will be confused, because what they are looking at is obviously an orange. It is the color orange, smells like an orange, looks like an orange. The question will be repeated. The child may answer again," an orange," and will be shocked again. Finally, the child, unsure and not wanting to be punished, will say, "an apple," and be praised.

The purpose of this exercise is to teach the child to not trust their own reality, and look to outside adults or leaders to tell them what reality really is.

That is the basis of denial: the person learns to not trust their own reality, because of punishment and fear when they have spoken the truth.

Alters will be created as the child grows, whose purpose is to deny the cult abuse. If any leakage or breakthrough occurs, the denial alter's job is to create a plausible explanation: it was a nightmare, a book the person read, a movie they saw, etc. These alters will read and quote literature that refutes SRA. THESE ALTERS OFTEN BELIEVE THAT THEY ARE SAVING THE LIFE OF THE SURVIVOR. They have been told that if the survivor remembers, and believes the abuse, the survivor will be killed, or the denial alter will be severely punished or shattered for not doing their job. These parts have a vested interest in their job: they believe their very existence and they body's survival, depend upon them.

Suggestions:

Arguing with a denial alter will not work, since they are not motivated by logic, but fear. A better approach is to ask them what they fear if the person remembers. This will open up the deception and lies that were ground in. They may be protecting the survivor from suicidal alters behind them, who are programmed to kick in if denial is broken through. Allowing them to vent their concerns, and enlisting the aid of helpers or cognitives who do not have suicidal or denial programming will help. Showing them reality in a gentle way, allowing them to "listen in" on others who share will go a long way.

Some denial is the natural consequence of self protection from the horrors of abuse; not all denial is programming. But if denial is constantly blocking therapy, and causing it to come to a complete standstill; if the person becomes highly suicidal every time denial is set aside briefly, then the possibility needs to be considered. Safety, inner cooperation, and patience will go a long way in decreasing denial. As denial backs down, you can expect an immense amount of grieving as the truth is realized. Denial protected the survivor from the horrendous pain of the truth, and should be let go of extremely slowly and cautiously, with plenty of support during the grieving stage.

Core splits:

Core splits are intentional traumatic splits created from the core personality.

The core may be literally "splintered" by overwhelming psychological and physical/spiritual trauma. The trauma needed to create a core split must be very early and psychologically devastating. Fetal splits may occur, but they are rarely a core split; instead, the core creates an alter, but remains.

Core splits are done between the ages of 18 months and three years. Usually at least one parent or main caretaker is involved in the trauma, because this creates the psychological devastation necessary to split the core. Physical trauma alone rarely causes core splits. The torture is intense and prolonged, until the child collapses. It may be shocking, stretching, being hung in a high place, or a combination of several techniques. Being placed in "shock boxes", or near drowning are also used.

The techniques that create core splits are also dangerous, since they can also cause autism if the child cannot endure the programming. When I was in the cult, I fought to stop core splitting because occasionally children were lost or the foundational personality was too weakened.

The core may split into two, three, or up to eight splits internally. Each split will be a piece of the "core child". The original core will not resurface after splitting. These splits are used by cult trainers to be used as templates to create systems within the child. A core split, or a split from one, will be a strong alter, and can be re-split many times in the programming process, to create a multifaceted and diverse system within.

Suggestions:

Core splits represent intense foundational trauma. They will be the basis for later systems, which may be completely dissociated from the split as time goes on. Work on core splits should go very slowly, and only late in the therapy process when there is immense intrasystem cooperation. The survivor will need every internal resource to deal with these traumas, and plenty of outside therapeutic support.

It may mean hospitalization unless the survivor can keep the trauma from emerging too quickly, and the therapist and survivor can go extremely slow.

Other, less dissociated systems and fragments should be integrated.

Acknowledging the abuse cognitively will be the first step in dealing with core trauma. Letting more dissociated parts grieve about "hearing about" what happened may come next. Allowing feelings near the core to come close, a little at a time, with helpers and internal nurturers offering support will help.

These feelings should be titrated, and looked at a little at a time. Splits may be different ages, and may need to express themselves in different ways.

There may be "dream programming", a "fantasy world", or other flight from reality surrounding the core splits, that protects them from contact with the outside world, which is perceived as brutal and cold. Parts may be completely disconnected from outside reality in an effort to buffer pain.

Slow, patient nurturing and reality orientation will help these tremendously traumatized parts begin to join outer reality. Some parts will always have been aware of what happened, but won't care to join the outside world.

Patience, allowing them to vent, will help most.

Steps of Discipline:

Step seven: Not caring

This step will take the child further into a perpetrator role. The child will be forced to hurt others and prove their ability to not care during the process.

Step eight: Time travel

The child will be taught spiritual principles of "traveling" both internally and externally, with set ups, role playing, and guided exercises reinforced with trauma. The goal will be to reach "enlightenment", an ecstatic state of dissociation reached after severe trauma.

Steps nine, ten, eleven:

These will involve programming that will vary according to the child's future role in the cult. Sexual trauma, learning to dissociate and increase cognition, decrease feeling will be emphasized in these steps.

Step twelve: "coming of age"

A ceremony of becoming at age twelve to thirteen, the child will be formally inducted into the cult and their adult role in a ceremony of "coming of age". They will prove this ability by performing the role/job they have been training for, to the satisfaction of the trainer and leaders; by undergoing a special induction ceremony. The ritual and ceremony will be held with other children of the same age, who are dressed in white and given a prize as acknowledgement that they have completed the basics of their training successfully.

They will continue to be abused, even as adults, but the major traumatization and creation of system templates will have occurred by this age. Future training will refine what was already placed in the child by this age, or build upon the foundation.

Suggestions:

Grieving the abuse, acknowledging the feelings associated with undergoing the trauma will be important. It will be necessary to deal with perpetrator guilt, since by this time the child will be a perpetrator, and will have identified with the adult role models around them. This can be difficult to do, since perpetration will horrify the survivor when they remember this. Supporting the survivor, remaining non judgmental, and encouraging acceptance of these parts is important. Pointing out that at the time, they saw no other options available will help. Realizing that perpetrator alters saved the child's life, and that they had no other way to act, especially originally, the first time, will need to be pointed out. The survivor may feel hostile towards, or reviled by perpetrator alters, but they are the expression of the abuse and limited choices they were allowed. Grieving being a perpetrator will take time and caring support by others.

Posted in The Illuminati: How the Cult Programs People | Tagged Denial Programming, VR programming | 1 Comment »

Chapter Fourteen: Spiritual Programming

September 29, 2008 by koniword

Note: this chapter includes discussion of both cult and Christian spirituality; do not

read if these themes are triggering***

Any discussion of Illuminati programming would be lacking if it did not address spiritual programming. Most of the previous chapters have dealt with scientifically based, organized, structured programming.

But the Illuminati are first and foremost not scientists, but spiritual. The very foundation of the group is based on the occult. And they go to great lengths to grind in these occult beliefs in their people's systems.

The amount of spiritual programming in the person's systems will vary from person to person, and depends on the individual group, their religious heritage, the leader's beliefs, and the trainers in the group.

All children go to rituals, where they are dedicated from before birth as well as at intervals throughout their life. In these rituals, demonic entities are invoked, to coerce the person into servant hood, loyalty, and secrecy; as well as reinforce the programming being done.

Trainers will invoke demonic layering during programming sessions. This is done after acute trauma. The person is asked if they want more pain, and they will always say "no". The trainer then offers them a way out: if they will accept a "protector" or "protectors" they won't be hurt any more. The trainers will want this, knowing that with these "protectors'" they can shorten the training sessions. The protectors, or guardians, will reinforce the programming internally, without outside help. This concept will seem controversial to people who do not believe in spiritual realities, but I am only describing what the Illuminists believe, and their trainers practice.

Spiritual programming will also include: being forced to memorize rituals, THE BOOK OF ILLUMINATION, and other books which contain cult beliefs. The person will be saturated from infancy on, in classes and training sessions, with cult beliefs. They will go to rituals where the adults participate in spiritual worship, wearing robes, and giving obeisance to the group's particular guardian deity. Moloch, Ashtaroth, Baal, Enokkim are demons who are commonly worshipped. The child may see a sacrifice, either real or a set-up, to these deities; animal sacrifices are common. The child will be forced to participate in the sacrifices, and will have to go through blood baptism.

They will be forced to take the heart, or other internal organs, out of an animal that has been sacrificed, and eat them. The adults, and leaders of the group, will place their hands on the child's head, while it is drugged, and invoke demonic entities.

One ritual which is actually programming is the "resuscitation ritual". In this ritual, the child may be heavily drugged, and shocked or tortured, to the point that his heart may stop. The head priest will then "resuscitate " the child, using drugs, CPR, and incantations. When the child comes back, and is awake, he or she will be told that they were "brought back to life" by the demonic entity that the particular group worships, and that now the child owes it their life. They are told that if they ever tell, or try to get the demon to leave, they will return to the lifeless state they were in prior to resuscitation.

Spiritual "healings" due to the demonic are also common. Injuries caused by torture, or programming sessions, or even military exercises, will be healed almost instantaneously during invocations.

Jewel programming will often have demons loyal to the generational family spirits layered in. These are called the "family jewels". The demons "guard them" and help protect the programming surrounding them.

In a sense, every ritual that a young child is part of, is an intense programming experience, as the child observes the adults around them, and imitates their behavior. The child will be severely punished if it falls asleep, and will be told that demons will kill it if it goes to sleep again during a ritual.

They are taught to be completely silent, no matter what they witness during the rituals. The child will witness things that seem utterly unbelievable, including faces appearing transformed by the demonic, channeling, other voices coming out of a leader's mouth, reading of members, telling the future. Group guidance will often be given through channeling of a strong spirit or principality; members who can channel powerful spirits and survive are respected, and their guidance will be looked for.

Some groups will use scriptures negatively or program the child to hate Christian symbols and theology. Other groups will encourage the amnesic front to embrace a Christian lifestyle, while forcing the back alters to renounce and blaspheme the choices the front has made, to separate the two alter groups even further. The cult alters will be told that since they renounced Christianity, they have committed the "unpardonable sin" and can never be forgiven. They will be shown scriptures that supposedly back this up.

In moments of despair, during intense torture or isolation, a person will often cry out to God for help. The trainers or other cult members will often mock the person, telling the person that God has forgotten them, or ask "where is God now? He must hate you….."

Any negative experience the person undergoes, will be used to reinforce the concept that they have been abandoned by God. The cult will gleefully point out the contradictions between what the person experiences, and what Christianity teaches should happen to them.

They may distort scriptures, or use false scriptures. They may distort Christian hymns, or use them in programming. A favorite hymn is "may the circle be unbroken", since it can have two meanings.

Suggestions:

Spiritual programming can be some of the most damaging programming within a person's systems, since it attempts to cut them off from the source of real healing. It is an intentional distortion of truth, with events calculated to teach and reinforce wrong concepts of God. Many survivors are unable to hear Christian terms, or are intensely triggered by any religious discussion.

The survivor and therapist need to realize that these negative reactions are the result of years of false teaching, pain, punishment, distortion and set-ups. It is important not to judge the parts of the person that are negative towards spirituality, or come out, proclaiming the power and benefits of cult spirituality. The survivor's front may be horrified to hear or learn about parts that have these feelings, especially if they are a strong Christian. These parts inside are sharing the only reality they have ever known, and need time and patience to ground, and experience reality outside of the cult setting.

Demonic oppression may need to be dealt with, and even deliverance, to bring relief to a system that is being terrorized by the demonic.

Each therapist and survivor will need to come to terms with their own spiritual beliefs. I personally believe that a therapist needs to consider the possibility of the demonic, since this is what the survivor has been exposed to all their life. The cult certainly does believe it is real, and anyone who has been involved in a cult setting will have had experiences that are in-explainable by normal rational scientific principles.

The survivor needs hope, and healing. A positive spirituality based on love, gentleness, forgiveness, that is the opposite of the coercing, punitive, negative spirituality the survivor has known, will help immensely in the healing process. A spiritual belief system that offers hope, healing, grace, mercy, and affirmation will often give the survivor the support they need to go on during the often difficult process of healing.

Posted in The Illuminati: How the Cult Programs People | Tagged Spiritual Programming | 4 Comments »

Chapter Thirteen: Shell programming, Internal Councils, Human Experimentation, Function Codes

September 29, 2008 by koniword

Shell programming, Internal Councils, Human Experimentation, Function Codes
Parts of this chapter could be extremely triggering, please read with caution and only with a therapist if a survivor.

Shell programming is a form of programming used to create a "shell" on the outside, that other alters inside speak through. This is a designed to hide the person's multiplicity from the outside world, and works extremely well with highly fragmented systems. It also takes a person with the ability to dissociate to a great degree.

How it is done: with shell programming, the trainer will often take a clear plastic or glass mask, and put it in front of the subject. They will be extremely traumatized, shocked, drugged, and told that they (the alter or alters in front) are the "mask" that they see. Their job will be to be a shell, or voice, to cover for the others behind. These parts will be so traumatized that they literally see themselves as only a shell, with no real substance or body.

Others inside will then be directed to come next to the "shell" alters, and use their voice to cover their own. This allows greater fragmentation of the person, while being able to hide it from outside view, since the internal alters will learn to present through the shell. Shell alters always see themselves as "clear", and will have no color if color coding is present in other systems.

Suggestions

It is important to realize that what the system is actually doing is co-presenting, although not co-consciously. For a shell program to work, the shell alters have been taught to allow co-presentation with the other alters in the systems. Other alters in the back may not always be aware that this is what is happening, and the front shell especially will not know that they are being "gone through" for co-presentation.

Recognizing the trauma that occurred, and finding out where the shell fragments came from, will help. Allowing both the shell alters and the other alters to recognize that this is how they have been presenting, and why, will be an important step. Back alters may then begin presenting without going through the shell, and the person may look "more multiple" than they ever have for a period, with accents or young voices coming through. What is actually happening is that the back is presenting without masking who they are through the shell. Meanwhile, the shell alters may decide to coalesce, for greater strength, and may decide to change jobs. Each system will decide what is best for them.

Internal Councils:

Survivors of Illuminati programming will always have some type of hierarchy inside. This is because the cult itself is very hierarchical, and puts this hierarchy inside the person. What better way to inspire loyalty to leadership than to put the leadership inside the person's head? Trainers are also very hierarchy conscious themselves. They know that a system without hierarchy and head honchos inside to direct things will be a system in chaos. They will not leave the person's system leaderless inside.

Many trainers will put themselves in the person, over the internal programmers or trainers. This is because they are egotistical, but also because it uses a well known

phenomenon of human nature: PEOPLE TEND TO INTERNALIZE THEIR ABUSERS. The survivor may be horrified to find a representative of one of their worst perpetrators inside, but this was a survival mechanism. A tenet of human behavior is that often people will punish someone less who mimics them. A brutal nazi will be less likely to punish another brutal nazi, but will look down upon and punish a weak, crying person. So, the survivor will internalize the rough nazi inside, to avoid being hurt. The survivor may mimic accents, mannerisms, even claim the perpetrator's life history as their own.

The ultimate form of internalization comes with internalizing hierarchical councils. The person, under pain, hypnosis, and drugs, will be taught to incorporate a highly dissociated group inside to lead the others. These will often be created from core splits, because the trainers want them to be extremely strong, stable alters in the system.

Triads of three elders may be seen

Platinum's may have a head council of three

Jewels will have a triad, made up of ruby, emerald, diamond in many systems, to rule over the others

And, of course, an internal "leadership council", "System Above", "Ascended Masters", "supreme council", regional council, world council, etc. may be found. The councils found will vary with each survivor.

These internal groups will correlate roughly to the outside group. Often the child or youth at age twelve will be presented to these groups in a formal coming of age ceremony. This ceremony is considered quite an honor, and will involve the child being traumatized and accepting the leadership of the council for the rest of their life. Undying loyalty is promised. There may be other occasions the person will be forced to come before the councils throughout their lifespan, either for judgment, to pass tests, for punishment, or elevation. These councils will be seen as holding power of life or death, and the child or youth will do anything to gain their favor. The child will internalize them. The trainer will help with the internalization, using photographs or holographic images of the people to "burn them in". Each member of the group will be given different leadership tasks.

It is not uncommon for the survivor to incorporate a parent, both parents, or grandparents, into their internal leadership hierarchy in a generational survivor.

High priests and priestesses may sit on ruling councils inside.

Suggestions:

Internal leadership councils will often be some of the most resistant to, and hostile towards therapy, especially in the early stages. They will verbally banter with, or refuse to speak to, the therapist, as being "beneath their notice." They are mimicking the haughty, hierarchical attitudes they have been exposed to all their lives.

They also have the most to lose, if the survivor leaves the cult, and may fight this decision tooth and nail. They will often be the alters with an "attitude".

Both the survivor and therapist need to recognize that these parts had powerful needs that were met in the cult setting. To ignore this and argue with them will only entrench their belief that therapists are stupid and unknowing people. Acknowledge their internal role while gently pointing out reality. Try to enlist their aid in helping the survivor strengthen. Discuss honestly the pros and cons of leaving the cult. These are highly intellectual alters, and they need to express their concerns and doubts. Setting good boundaries and not allowing verbal abuse of the therapist is important. These alters are used to "pushing people around" verbally, and have been rewarded for it prior to therapy. Now, they need to learn new coping skills and behaviors, and the process may take time. Allow them to vent their anger,

displeasure, and fears about the decision to leave the cult. Offer them new jobs inside the person of leadership over safety committees, or even decision making committees.

Sometimes, a system that has broken free from the cult, and has no external hierarchy that they are accountable to will go through a short period of chaos as word gets out: we're free, and don't have to do what the cult tells us to do any more! Hundreds of internal arguments may break out as to: what do we do for a living? where do we live? what do we eat? what hobbies will we have? Everybody wants to come out, see the daytime, and live this new, free life. But the freedom may cause imbalance with all of the switching going on inside. Enlisting the aid of the internal hierarchy, and creating a limited democracy, with ground rules, may help during this time. Don't dismantle the internal hierarchy overnight, or the systems will be rudderless. Enlist their aid in helping direct which direction the survivor goes. Things will settle down after a period, as the systems learn to listen to each other, vote on ideas, and begin going together in the same direction.

Human Experimentation

This is one of the most grievous things that still occurs in the Illuminati today. The Illuminati were famed for deciding years ago to "go scientific" and incorporate scientific experimentation into their training principles. This is one area where they broke with other, more traditional groups, who still followed "spiritual principles". The Illuminati decided to use scientific data, especially in the psychiatric and behavioral sciences, to drive their training practices. This became known openly during W.W.II, when the world heard about the experimentation on Jews and other groups in the concentration camps, but human experimentation had been quietly going on for years before underground.

It also did not stop at the end of the war. German trainers and scientists were scattered around the world, and hidden, where they continued teaching others the principles they had learned, and continued with ongoing experimentation.

Some of this experimentation occurred with government funding through groups such as the CIA and NSA. The Illuminati had people infiltrated throughout these groups, who used the principles discovered and shared them with their own trainers.

Experimentation is going on, even to this day. It is done secretly. Its purpose is to help improve and create more sophisticated training techniques. To prevent "programming failures", or "pfs" as they are called in the cult.

Many, many survivors, if not all, will have been told that they are only an experiment. This may or may not be true. Trainers like to tell their subjects that they are experiments, even if they aren't, for several reasons:

1. It creates immense fear and helplessness in the subject (the thought is, if this is an experiment, I will have to work really hard to survive this)

2. It devalues the person immensely. They will feel that they have no real value as a human being, that all they are is an experiment. Someone who feels devalued doesn't care, and will be willing to do things they wouldn't if they felt some value, some humanization.

3. It gives the trainer added power, as they are the one who can begin or stop the "experiment". Almost always, when the person is TOLD they are an experiment, it isn't really true. When trainers and cult members really do experiments, the subjects are never told, because it could bias results. The fear could interfere with drug effects, and skew the results. Most recent cult experimentation has been in the area of: drug effects: using different drugs, both alone and in new combinations and dosages, to induce trance states and open the person to training. Drugs are looked for which will shorten the time interval needed to induce trance state, which are quickly metabolized, and leave no detectable residues the next

day.

Behavioral science: watching and recording data on different environmental parameters on human behavior. Modifying the environment.

Praise and punishment as motivators.

Isolation techniques: recording data both physiological and psychological from different isolation methods. Removing, adding, combining different methods of sensory isolation, and the effect of each.

Effectiveness of virtual reality in implanting programming.

Effectiveness of new disks created to put programming in. Cult graphics and computer experts will work to create better and more effective VR disks, which are tested on cult subjects for their effectiveness. The cult wants more and more standardization, and less room for human error and weakness, in its training techniques, which is why it is going more and more to high tech equipment and videos. Attempts to break programming, cause program failure; recording what is effective, what isn't and develop new sequences to prevent pf. Subjects under hypnosis are ordered to try and break certain internal programming sequences. The ways they go about this, and what seems effective, are shared with the trainers, who then create new programs to prevent degradation of programming from occurring.

Harmonic/light, sensory deprivation and over stimulation and the effects neurologically and physically. New combinations of sensory input are always being tested to see which achieve the most lasting results, and can be done rapidly.

The cult is always trying to find new, better, faster methods to break down subjects, put programming in, and prevent the programming from failing.

This has been the emphasis in most research it has done. The results of this research is shared worldwide, both by internet, phone calls, and international trainer conferences, where trainers worldwide share the results of what they are finding. New techniques are incorporated by other groups which are eager to find out what is being discovered.

Suggestions:

If you have experimental programming, realize that the alters who were used in it are heavily traumatized. They also will feel devalued, less than human, and this was reinforced heavily by the trainers who worked with them. They probably weren't used in initial experiments, as described above, but may have been used in second level experimentation.

I will explain what those terms mean.

Top trainers and leaders will initiate an experiment with a new drug. They will learn to triturate dosages, and record all observable facts on hundreds of subjects. After enough data is gotten, they will then clear it for use by trainers in local groups. It will then still be considered experimental, but will be second level, instead of first level experimentation. At this point, all trainers in local groups will be told to record and report any adverse reactions to the drug, any usual dosages needed, etc. This data is collected in databanks (yes, the cult is now in the computer age), inside of encrypted files, which will then be sent to a central base in Langley, Virginia.

Alters used in experiments, or told that they were experiments, need to realize they are valuable. They will need to realize they went through intense programming, and be allowed to vent and discuss their experiences. The fear related to believing they were an experiment needs to be vented appropriately. They will be angry at the dehumanization, intentionality, and coldness of what they went through, and quite rightly so. They may rail against the effects in their life now of the experiments and procedures they went through, and need to grieve over loss of body image; loss of trust in people; the sense of betrayal and helplessness that

they felt during the procedures. They may want to journal, or draw pictures of their experiences.

A warm, empathetic therapist, who listens, and believes, and does not discount what they went through, is invaluable at this point. Allowing internal cognitives and helpers ground parts who went through bizarre sensory experiences, and creating "grounding committees" inside will also help. Extra support may be needed while dealing with experiences and feelings of this intensity.

Function Codes:

Trainers will place within the subject's systems a special way to organize the fragments that are related to the job they were trained to do. These are called Function Codes, and there are three main types:

Command Codes: these are irreversible commands, put in at the limbic level of conditioning. The first code always put in is the "halt " command, which stops the person in their tracks, and is the first code any new trainer learns. This will stop the subject from assassinating their trainer, if they have MK ULTRA or other assassin training in place.

Other command codes will include: system destruct codes (suicide); shatter codes; erasure codes; and antisuicide codes.

Access Codes: these are specialized codes, often coded into short messages, or numerical codes, that allow access into the person's system. A trainer will always begin a session by repeating the person's personal complete access code, which will allow authorized entry into the system without setting off booby traps and internal protectors. These codes may also depend and be set up on sight recognition and voice recognition of the person giving the codes. In other words, the system will respond to the codes only if a person who appears to be an authorized person, such as the person's trainer, gives them. This is to prevent unauthorized access or using of the person by others outside of the person's local cult group.

Function codes: these are the "job codes" or work codes within the system.

Often, several will be coded to link together to perform a task. These are usually a letter, such as a Greek alphabet letter, combined with a numeric sequence that corresponds to their place on the internal grid or landscape.

Suggestions:

If the survivor has function codes, or the other codes internally, it will help if the different system controllers can share these with the person. The person can then get to know the fragments, hear their history, and help them begin coalescing with other parts internally. It may help to find the template these codes were fragmented from, and help the template realize how they were traumatized to create these fragments.

About deprogrammers:

Often people who call themselves deprogrammers will attempt to find these codes and help the person. This is an individual decision of each survivor and therapist. There may be excellent deprogrammers, but I have always felt extreme caution, and never used one myself for two reasons:

1. I would never ever give away the locus of control away to an outside person again. It would remind me to much of my own abuse, and I believe the survivor should be self empowered in therapy as much as possible.

2. There are no quick cures, or miracles, or short cuts in the process of undoing the extensive amount of abuse that has occurred with Illuminati programming. Even the best deprogrammers will admit that after they are done, the person will usually have an idea of what was put in them, but must finish with years of therapy dealing with how they FEEL about the programming that was done. Illuminati programming takes YEARS to put in, with extensive, methodical abuse, and a

realistic therapist will realize that it will take years of patience, support, and hard work by both therapist and survivor to undo a lifetime of conditioning and pain. This is not to say that deprogrammers don't help people; good, reputable, safe ones have been reported to be of great help. But the person can also undertake the process themselves of undoing their own programming, and often the survivor is the best "internal deprogrammer" of all. They know their inside people and what motivates them, better than anyone else.

Posted in The Illuminati: How the Cult Programs People | Tagged Shell Programming | 1 Comment »

Chapter Twelve: Preventing Reaccessing of the Survivor

September 29, 2008 by koniword

This is by far one of the most important chapters I have written in this book. Why?

Deprogramming cannot be consistently successful if the person is still in contact with the abusers. Survivors will take one step forward, then will find themselves knocked down internally. All the hard work in therapy will be undone or set back. They and their therapist will find that they have trouble finding internal alters. Whole systems may shut down. A child presenting system may come out. Confusers and scramblers will take over therapy sessions and blockers will block therapy.

No one chapter can ever be totally comprehensive in how to prevent reaccessing. What I will share are some of the more common ways that the cult and trainers will try to reaccess individuals, and give some techniques on avoiding this.

The cult has a vested interest in keeping its members. After all, it has spent generations telling its members that if they leave they will die, be killed, or go psychotic. It makes them quite unhappy to see someone who is quite alive and very clearly not psychotic leave. It also makes their more restive members question the truth of what they have been told if they see someone get out. Having a member leave may break the hold of some programming in other members. Trainers especially hate to see anyone leave, and grind their teeth over this problem at night. People leaving the cult is considered a training failure and the trainers may be punished severely.

So, the cult has come up with certain ways to keep their members with them, willingly or unwillingly. These include, but are not limited to:

E.T. phone home (phone programming) : the individual will have personalities whose sole job is to call and report to the trainer or cult leader. These are often young child alters who are eager to please, starved for attention and nurture, and who are heavily rewarded for calling back in. Any survivor who attempts to leave the cult must deal with the urge to phone home. To phone their abusers. To phone their friends who are in the group. To phone their parents, siblings, cousins, or aunts. This urge may become overwhelming at times and worst of all, the survivor may be totally amnesic to the fact that the people they are calling are cult members who are urging them, in code, to come back. Common phrases used include: your 'family' loves you, misses you, needs you. So and so is ill and needs to see you. You are so special to us. You are so valuable. You need to come see us. Why are you so distant? Why haven't we heard from you lately?

The list goes on and on. Sweet, kind phrases with double meanings, placed in the person during training sessions. Trainers are not stupid and know that if cult members said "come to the ritual meeting at midnight next week", the survivor would run the other way, and be validated as well that they are not making things up. So, they ingrain code messages behind innocuous phrases such as described

above. These, and other messages, are meant to trigger recontact programming.

In recontact programming, (ALL ILLUMINATI MEMBERS HAVE RECONTACT PROGRAMMING, IT IS NEVER LEFT TO CHANCE) the person has parts whose only job is to have contact with their trainer or cult leader, or accountability person (person one step above them in the cult). These parts are heavily programmed under drugs, hypnosis, shock, torture, to have recontact. The individual will feel restless, shaky, weepy, afraid if they try to break this programming. It will often be linked or joined in to suicidal programming (see previous chapter for more on suicidal programming). They may experience PTSD symptomology, or even flood programming, and internal self punishment sequences, as they fight this programming internally.

Siblings are often cross trained to access each other with special codes. Remember when…. may initiate this. I love you, or, your family loves you, can also be used. Phrases will be individual, depending on the person's family members and background.

Certain clothing or jewelry worn can be used to draw a cult loyal system, such as a color coded system, or jewel system , to the front. The person must physically resemble the person the individual was "keyed into" during the programming sequence, to prevent inadvertent popping out of alters by anyone wearing a ruby pin, for example. This kind of cueing will be based on sight recognition of a person, plus the clothing color or jewelry being worn a certain way.

Phone calls from concerned family members, friends, and cult members will flood the survivor's phone lines and answering machine, especially during the initial getting out phase.

Hang up calls, three or six in a row, or calls where a series of tones are heard, may be used as cues to recall the individual and fire off internal programming.

Birthday, holiday or we miss you cards, or letters, may be sent with trigger codes imbedded in them.

Flowers with a certain number of flowers, or color may be sent. Daisies may fire off daisy programming internally.

The possibilities are almost endless, depending on the trainers, the group the person was with, and the people they are most bonded to in the cult. Special training sessions will be given, with code words and cues built into the system's programming.

If all else fails, hostility will start. "You don't love us" will be heard, even when the survivor has stated repeatedly that they care. Boundaries drawn with cult members will be misinterpreted as lack of concern, or withdrawal. Accusations, guilt, and anger as well as manipulation will be used as hooks to make the survivor feel guilty for withdrawing from the cult.

Isolation programming may activate, as the cult support system is withdrawn in the survivor's life, and they try the difficult task of
developing healthy, appropriate relationships outside of the cult. Often, the therapist will be the survivor's lifeline and sole support at first. The individual may fall into codependent relationships quickly, or relationships with other survivors to fill the void in their life. At worst, desperate for caring and feeling isolated, they will make friends with the first kind person they meet. This person
could be a cult set up, sent to initiate a friendship quickly. Survivors should be wary of "instant friendships" or instant bonding with others. Most good relationships take time and effort.

Suggestions:
One of the most difficult tasks, but most important safety wise, will be for a totally amnesic presenting system to realize who their abusers really are. It will seem unbelievable, when back parts come up in therapy, and disclose that beloved, or

even barely tolerated family members are in the cult. Believing these parts and listening to them will be crucial to safety. Protectors will be important to the survivor's safety, especially if they are willing to give up cult allegiance and help keep the person safe. Outside accountability with safe persons is extremely important. The problem is that generational Illuminati survivors have often been surrounded all their lives by a network of other cult members. Unknown to them, their closest friends and family members are part of the group. Amnesia poses the greatest danger to the survivor in the beginning stages, as they will trust people before they remember that they are unsafe.

A survivor may remember the father taking them to rituals, and believe that their mother or grandparent is safe. Only later in therapy will they remember that mother or granny was actually their trainer, since the most painful memories tend to come later. The survivor may only remember ritual abuse in early childhood, and think they were let go at a certain age. This is extremely rare, since the group has put in years of effort into training them. Almost never will they just "let someone go" in generational families. But they may be given false or screen memories, especially if they are in therapy, to confuse the survivor and the therapist.

The client will need to listen to and believe internal parts who have more information than they do, and take appropriate steps to be safe. This will probably mean cutting off contact with perpetrators at this point. Again, outside accountability is paramount. Safe houses, a women's shelter or a safe church family may be alternatives. One of the worst things the survivor can do is isolate, or go out walking late at night alone, or go camping in the woods by themselves. Abduction will often occur in these scenarios, when the survivor is alone and vulnerable. Safe roommates can help keep the survivor safe.

Locking up the phone in the trunk of the car may help if phone programming is intense. This gives the survivor the chance to wake up or stop phone calls, if an alter has to get up, find the car keys, turn on the light, go outside, and open a car trunk, bring the phone inside and hook it up again before making a phone call.

Building a support system through safe support groups, a good therapist, church, or work can also help. Whenever possible and practical, moving away from the town or state where the survivor was active in the cult can help. Why? Remember the survivor's whole support network was the cult in their old town. The trainers and/or family members have invested time and effort into the survivor and have a big stake in their coming back. If the survivor moves far enough away, a cult group in the new city or state will not know them as well, and will not have a lengthy history with them. This can help decrease the chance of reaccessing by the cult, in conjunction with good therapy and a safe support network.

The survivor will have to rebuild their support system anyway, so why not do it as far as possible away from people they have known who might hurt them? It can be intensely triggering to the survivor to see their old trainer walking down the street towards them, and inside alters may destabilize or feel unsafe. This is one case where distance is good.

One caution though: even if the survivor moves, they will need to work intensely on blocking internal recontact programming at the same time, or they may be quickly reaccessed. Trainers will often send the person's system codes and grids over the internet to cult groups in the new city, and will try to send someone who physically resembles the trainer or a family member to initiate contact with the survivor.

Internal communication and letting inside alters know that they can change their jobs will help. Reward internal reporters for changing allegiance and committing to keep the survivor safe. The cult used to reward them for doing their job; now the survivor can reward them for changing jobs. Develop new interests, work or hobbies that can help the survivor meet new, safe people. The survivor may want to practice friendship skills in support groups, as long as they are run by reputable, safe therapists.

Be aware that holiday dates are often important dates for reaccessing. Calendars are available that show important holidays for SRA groups. Birthdays are also dates when the individual is expected to return and there may be programming surrounding this.

Callback programming (where the person is given a specific date or holiday when they are to return to the cult, or be punished) may need to be broken as well. Allowing the alters who went through the programming to share their memories, acknowledging their needs, and trying to meet those needs in healthy ways will bring healing.

The survivor will need to go through a period of grieving for loss of contact with family members and friends in the cult. No matter how abusive, how disliked, it can be very difficult to cut off with perpetrators, especially if they were the only people close to the survivor. The survivor needs to acknowledge the difficulty of creating a new, healthy, cultless support group. The survivor needs to recognize that learning new skills and developing healthy friendships will take time.

One issue often brought up by survivors is: how much do I tell others about my past? This is an individual decision that the survivor and therapist need to look at together. In general though, caution in sharing is best, since sharing too much about the survivor's past may draw the wrong people to them. These people may be dysfunctional, or possible cult members. It is usually best to base new, non cult friendships on healthy aspects of the person at first and very gradually share small bits of information as the friendship progresses, and sharing seems appropriate. With time and opportunities, the survivor will learn the importance of appropriate boundaries and will want healthier relationships in their life.

Posted in The Illuminati: How the Cult Programs People | Tagged Reaccessing of the Survivor | Leave a Comment »

Chapter Eleven: Suicidal Programming

September 29, 2008 by koniword

I have decided to write an entire chapter about suicidal programming, since it is often the most dangerous programming that the survivor will face during their healing process. ALL ILLUMINATI SURVIVORS WILL HAVE SUICIDAL PROGRAMMING PROTECTING THEIR SYSTEMS. I emphasized this to also reiterate the need for good therapy and a strong support system for the survivor.

The Illuminati know and realize that with time, individuals in their group may start to question what they are doing. Or they may become disenchanted with their role. They may even desire to leave the group or try to dismantle their own programming.

The trainers are well aware of this possibility and to prevent this, will always program in suicidality. The suicidality, or suicidal programming, may surround one or more systems internally. It may be layered into more than one system.

From earliest childhood, survivors have been conditioned to believe that they would rather die than leave their "family" (the Illuminati group). This is the core, or basis of suicidal programming. It will be closely linked to loyalty to one's family as well as the group (remember, this is a generational group and leaving it may mean giving up contact with one's parents, spouse, siblings, aunts, uncles, cousins and children, as well as close friends). These people will all try to contact the survivor, and try to draw them back into the cult, asking "don't you love us anymore?", or even becoming accusatory and hostile if the survivor does not respond the way they wish. The survivor will be told that they are "crazy". Or delusional. That their family loves them and would never be part of a cult. The family members will all still be

amnesic, unless something happens to trigger their own memories.

One of the most frequent suicidal programming sequences placed internally will be "come back or die " programming. A family member may activate it by telling the survivor that they are missed and their family wants to see them. If the survivor fails to return, the programming will start running. It can only be deactivated by a code word from the person's trainer or cult contact person. This ensures that they will recontact. If the survivor tries to break this programming, they will need assistance, both internal and external, for safety.

Hospitalization may be needed in a safe facility that understands DID and programming, as well as suicidality, as the alters inside will begin fighting if the person tries to break the programming. They have been programmed to commit suicide, or be shattered internally, or at the very least, severely punished, and are afraid of the repercussions of not obeying. The survivor will need to get to know these internal alters, and reassure them that they no longer need to do their jobs.

Chronometric suicidal programming is another type placed within. This does not need contact with family members to activate. In fact, it is activated automatically after a certain amount of time WITHOUT cult contact. Controller alters and/or punishing alters will have been programmed that if a certain period of time goes without contact with the trainer, they are to commit suicide. They will be told that the only way to prevent this is recontact with the trainer, who knows a command code to halt the program. The time interval may be anywhere from three months to nine months, each system is different. Call back programming may have this type of programming as a back up, to ensure that it is followed through on.

Systems layered programming is a particularly complex form of suicide programming where several systems (up to six at a time), are programmed to fire off suicide programming simultaneously. This always needs hospitalization for the survivor's safety.

Honor/dishonor programming is common in military systems. In this, the military parts are told that an "honorable and courageous" soldier will take his life, rather than reveal secrets or leave his unit.

"No tell" programming will often be reinforced by suicidal programming.

Access denied programming, which prevents unauthorized access both externally and internally, will often be reinforced by either or both suicidal/homicidal programming.

Almost all suicidal programming is put in place to either ensure continued obedience to the cult's agenda; to ensure regular recontact; or prevent the individual or an outside person from accessing the person's system without authorization (i.e. the correct access codes, which the trainers are careful to use at the beginning of each session). It will frequently block therapy, as the survivor will be terrified, and rightly so, of dying if they reveal their internal world, or disclose their history.

Suggestions:
First, both the survivor and the therapist need to find out what suicide programming is present (it's a safe bet it's there, no need to ask IF it is present). Internal communication, and finding out which alters or fragments hold suicide programming will be important. Physical safety, whether with a safe outside person, or inpatient hospitalization, while working on suicide programming is extremely important, as this programming may either drive the survivor to self destructive behavior, or back to the cult. Dealing with suicide programming assumes that the survivor and therapist have initiated good system communication internally. This is extremely important, since the survivor will need cooperation inside with dismantling suicidality.

Letting alters inside know that they no longer have to do their job, that they can

change, may help. Reality orientation, letting them know that if they kill the body, that they will die, may also help (many times, these parts have been deceived into believing that they themselves will not die, if they do their jobs. This means they need to hear the truth). Having controller alters, high alters with pull inside the system, agree to help the therapist dismantle the programming will help. But be aware that SOME INTERNAL SUICIDE SEQUENCES WILL BE PUT IN THAT EVEN CONTROLLERS CANNOT DISMANTLE. Creating a safety committee inside whose main job is to keep the body safe and ask for help if suicidal programming begins to kick in, BEFORE ACTING OUT OCCURS, will also help tremendously.

As the survivor develops trust with their therapist and realizes the value of life, and that life can be much better than it has ever been before, they will become more willing to reach out and ask for help if they become suicidal. The survivor may also find that they encounter core despair. This despair may have been used by the cult to run suicidal programming, but it is not programming itself. A very young core split may have taken many of the feelings of despair, hopelessness, failure to thrive and desire to die, that the child felt growing up in a horribly abusive atmosphere. This is not programming but true feelings, and it will be important to differentiate this from programming. If core despair comes up, the alter containing this may also report having been trained to NOT SUICIDE, or give up. The trainers will do this, if despair begins overwhelming the subject at an early age, to prevent the child's suicide.

The survivor's cognitives, helpers, nurturers, will all need to be gathered together to help this part of the core heal. There will be intense, and rightful, grieving and anguish for the immense pain that
the young child suffered. Hopelessness will come out. It can help if alters with happier memories can try and share their memories with this very young part. External support and caring can also make a big difference. Healing the immense pain held by this core split will take a long period of time and should not be hurried. Antidepressants can help, as the depression may be shared through all systems. Messages of hope, new and positive experiences can all help the survivor work through this type of programming, as well as journaling, poetry, artwork and collaging the feelings. Time, patience, support, the ability to vent feelings in a safe manner and physical safety when needed, will all help immensely as the survivor works through these issues.

Posted in The Illuminati: How the Cult Programs People | Tagged suicidal programming | Leave a Comment »

Chapter Ten: The Sixth step of Discipline: Betrayal; Twinning, Internal walls, Structures, Geometry

September 29, 2008 by koniword

This chapter will address the sixth step of discipline in the Illuminati:

Betrayal programming.

Betrayal programming will begin in infancy, but will be formalized at around ages six to seven, and continue on into adulthood. The sixth step can be summarized as : "betrayal is the greatest good." The Illuminists teach this to their children as a very important spiritual principle. They idealize betrayal as being the true state of man. The quick witted, the adept, learns this quickly and learns to manipulate it.

The child will learn this principle through set up after set up. The child will be placed in situations where an adult who is kindly, and in set up after set up "rescues" the child, gains its trust. The child looks up to the adult as a "savior" after the adult intervenes and protects the child several times. After months or even a year of bonding, one day in a set up the child will turn to the adult for help. The

adult will back away, mocking the child, and begin abusing it. This sets in place the programming: adults will always betray a child and other adults.

Another set up will involve twinning, which deserves special mention here. The Illuminati will often create twin bonds in their children. The ideal is to have a set of real twins, but of course this is not always possible. So, the child is allowed to play with, and become close to, another child in the cult from earliest childhood. At some point early on, the child will be told that the other child is actually their "twin", and that they were separated at birth. They are told that this is a great secret and not to tell anyone, on pain of punishment. The child, who is often lonely and isolated, is overjoyed. It has a twin, someone who has a special bond to them by birth.

The children do everything together. They are taught together, do military training together. They tell each other secrets. They are also frequently friends in the daytime as well. They are taught to cross access each other just as real siblings would be.

But at some point, they will be forced to hurt each other. If one "twin" is considered expendable, the ultimate set up will be one in which one twin is forced to die while the other watches. One twin may gather secrets from the other twin, be forced to disclose them to a trainer or cult leader, then may be forced to kill the other. One twin may be forced to hit, or hurt the other. If they refuse, the other twin will be brutalized by the trainer, and the refusing twin told that the child was hurt because of their refusal to comply. Many setups will involve one twin being forced to betray the other, turning on the other child after intense programming. This betrayal set up will devastate both children, and they will learn the true lesson: trust no one. Betray, or be betrayed.

The children will also have adult role models on every hand, since the cult is a very political, hierarchical, back stabbing society. Adults are constantly betraying each other, stepping over each other to move up. The children will watch one adult being praised, advanced, because they betrayed others below them, or set them up to fail. The children will learn quickly to mimic the adults around them, and both adults and children can become quite cynical as to human nature. They will have seen it at its worst, whether in training sessions, the brutality of a C.O. in military, or the gossip and back stabbing that occurs before and after rituals. They also incorporate the message internally: play the game, or be run over. Even the youngest children learn to manipulate others adeptly, at a very young age, while the adults laugh at how quickly they are learning adult ways. People manipulation is considered a fine art in the cult, and those who do it best, as in any group, often win out.

Suggestions:
Betrayal programming may have totally shattered the survivor's trust in outside people. It will take a therapist a long, long time to gain the survivor's trust. These are people who were taught over and over again that talking, sharing one's secrets, would be punished harshly. Inside littles will be very cautious at first, not trusting that the therapist is not just another trainer who will one day shout "aha!" and betray them if they begin to trust. This trust building takes time and patience, and must be earned through session after session where the therapist shows trustworthiness and non abusiveness. Survivors will test therapists over and over again, to see if they really are what they say they are. This is a normal part of the therapy process. Survivors may even try to back away from therapy, or outside support, as true caring support will "wig them out", i.e. conflict incredibly with their world view and experiences prior to leaving the cult.

Both survivor and therapist need to realize that some amount of distrust is healthy, based on what the survivor has experienced, and may be life saving, helping to protect them from outside accessing. Honor this need and be patient while the survivor tests over and over. The survivor can try to reason with inside alters who may have been betrayed to the point of legitimate paranoia. They may ask them to

watch, and see what the therapist, and/or support person is like. To take their time, check them out. To be aware that what they went through may magnify normal feelings of caution. Helping orient these parts to outside reality, and especially positive experiences of trusting a little, and not being harmed, will help make great strides in undoing this. The survivor may feel confusion and internal conflict, as they experience a world where trust is possible. They may pull away, or the reverse, become highly dependent on the therapist and share too quickly due to a longing for safe intimacy that has never been met. Setting healthy boundaries while acknowledging needs will help the survivor through this stage.

Another type of programming involves the deliberate creation of internal structures within the cult member.

Internal structures: temples, eyes, mirrors, carousels etc.

The Illuminati trainers will try to create internal structures within the person's personality systems. Why? They believe this creates better stability. It also gives the alters and fragments a place to "hang on to" inside, and creates a convenient way to call them up. If a fragment is indexed inside to an internal helix, for example, the trainer knows how to locate them more easily.

Internal structures will vary greatly depending on the trainer, the group, the region of the U.S. or Europe and the goals for the individual. Common internal structures will include, but are not limited to:

Temples: these are often consecrated to principle Illuminati deities, and spiritual alters will congregate here. This may represent actual temples, Masonic or private, that the subject may have visited.

Temple of Moloch will be created out of black stone with a fire burning internally.

All seeing eye of Horus: one of the most common structures in an Illuminati system; universal. Horus is a deity revered by the Illuminati, and the all seeing eye internally represents the fact that the cult can always see what the individual is doing. It will also represent being given to Horus in a high ceremony. The eye may be closed, or open, depending on the system's status at the time. This eye will also be linked to demonic watching of the person's activities at all time.

Pyramids: the Illuminati revere ancient Egyptian symbology, especially "mystery religion" and Temple of Set teachings. Pyramids will be placed internally both for stability (a triangle, and/or pyramid represents strength and stability), and as a calling place for the demonic. Pyramids and triangles, and the number three, represent calling up the demonic in Illuminist philosophy.

Sun: represents Ra, the sun god

Geometric figures: configurations of circles, triangles, pentagons, etc. Geometric patterns are considered sacred, and are based in ancient philosophy. There may be hundreds overlapping in a training grid for complex systems, which will house fragments in each one.

Training grids: these may be simplistic, such as cubes with patterns on them, rows of boxes, or more complex such as helixes, double helixes, infinity loops. Each trainer will have favorites classified as simple, medium and complex, depending on the child and its ability to recall and memorize.

Columns: Greek Doric, ionic columns. Often hold "time travel" programming, with a portal between two columns.

Computers: complex, highly dissociated systems with alters and fragments held within a computer system.

Robots: may be seen in older systems

Crystals: gems, balls, multifaceted. Used in spiritual systems to enhance occult powers. Alters and fragments may congregate on facets of a large ball.

Mirrors: used internally to reinforce other programming sequences, internal twinning, and distortion of reality programming. May create shadow systems of functional systems. May also lock in demonic programming.

Carousels: used in some programming sequences to confuse alters inside. Often linked to spin, confusion programming internally. May be used to punish internal alters; they will be spun on the carousel if they tell.

Deck of cards: this can include cards from a deck, or complex configurations made of hundreds of card inside. Dominoes programming is similar. All touch each other and if person tries to dismantle programming, the deck will "fall".

Black boxes: represent self destruct and shatter programming sealed off into a black box to protect system. Should not be opened without careful preparation and good therapy.

Mines, booby traps: see above

Spider webs: represent linked programming, with a spider (internal programmer) who continuously reweaves the web and reinforces internal programming and punishments. The web also communicates with other systems. Can also represent demonic linkages internally, woven in.

Internal training rooms: used as punishments for internal alters. Will represent external training rooms person has been in.

Internal walls: these will often represent very large internal amnesia barriers. The walls may be very thick, impermeable or semi permeable. A typical use for a wall will be to maintain high levels of amnesia between "front" or daily living, amnesic alters, and "back" or cult active alters that contain more of the person's life history. The back may be able to selectively see over and cross past the wall, but the front will be completely unaware that there is a wall, or what lays behind it.

Seals: usually in a group of six or seven, represent demonic sealing, and may cover end times, shatter programming, as well as role within cult in new hierarchy.
These are some common programming structures. Again, there are many, many other types of internal structures used and the number and type are only limited by the trainer's and survivor's creative abilities. The way that these structures are placed within the person are fairly
similar. Under drugs, hypnosis and electroshock, the person is traumatized into a deep trance state. In the deep trance they will be told to open their eyes and look at: either a projected image of the structure, a 3D model of it, or a holographic image using a virtual reality headset. The image will be ground in, using shock and bringing the image closer and closer to the person's visual field. It may be rotated, if graphics are available, or a 3D is used. They may be told that they are entering inside it, if it is a temple or pyramid, under deep hypnosis, that they (the alter being programmed) will now "live inside" the structure/box/card, etc. This will also be used to reinforce amnesia and isolation programming internally, since the structure will be used to reinforce walls between the alter/ fragment and other alters and fragments internally.

Suggestions:
If the survivor finds structures inside, it will help for them first of all to try and realize WHY they are there. What purpose do they serve? To reinforce amnesia? Isolation? spiritual programming? punishment? To hold dangerous programming sequences? This is important, since some structures such as internal walls or barriers may have been created not only by the cult, but reinforced by the survivor as well, as a means of internal protection. The survivor may not want to dismantle internal structures too quickly without knowing their purpose and what they contain. Both the survivor and the therapist will need to go slowly. Learning how the structures were put in and which alters are linked to the structure, will be a first step. Long, slow and careful preparation, with lots of system cooperation, will be needed to look at some structures. This may only come after years of extensive

therapy. Each survivor will progress at their own pace. If a wall is present, taking it down slowly, one brick at a time, or allowing part of it to become semi permeable, may be first steps in healing. Training rooms can have the equipment turned off and dismantled; it can be turned into a safe room, redecorated and refitted with toys and safe objects. Computers can slowly begin to realize that they are human, and gradually allowed to take on human characteristics.

Survivors can use their creativity to reclaim themselves, with the support of their therapists, and undo what was done.

Posted in The Illuminati: How the Cult Programs People | Tagged Betrayal programming | Leave a Comment »

Svali Speaks!

The Life of Svali – an Ex-Illuminati Mind Control Programmer

SVALI IS ALIVE! – Update on her Whereabouts

October 11, 2008 by koniword

Welcome to Svali Speaks!

This is a blog dedicated to Svali, who is/was a former mind control programmer for the Illuminati. She was groomed from birth to have a key role in the Illuminati and back in the 1980's was forced against her will to marry another generational Illuminati member. They had two children from this marriage and they also were raised and tortured by the cult until Svali fled the cult in the early 1990's.

She was severely warned by the cult to keep quiet about her past. She had been writing and speaking out against the cult and their activities. She has not been heard from since November, 2006.

There is no known verifiable evidence of her being alive or has there been any known contact with Svali by anyone that I know of. All traces of her have disappeared. I am a personal friend of Svali's and I have not been able to reach her or find out where her husband or children are. She and her family have vanished. If you have any information on the whereabouts of Svali please leave me a comment with your email address and I will contact you. Thanks!

It is my desire that no matter what happened to Svali I want her writings to be available online for everyone to read. As you read them you will sense the validity of her story. I know Svali was telling the truth as I saw the struggle she went through to break free from the cult. Her story lives on through these writings.

(This is Svali's intro from other sites posted several years ago. She has not been heard from since November, 2006)

About the author:

Hi, my name is Svali. Both I and my entire family were involved in a cult group until several years ago, when we broke free. I used to be a programmer in the

Privacy & Cookies: This site uses cookies. By continuing to use this website, you agree to their use.
To find out more, including how to control cookies, see here: Cookie Policy

Close and accept

freedom.

I have been a consultant to an on-line survivors group that helps people dealing

Create a free website or blog at WordPress.com

Search

Categories

Interview with Svali – The Illuminati in America
Mind Control Programming Articles by Svali
Multiple Personalities – Brokenness
Other Authors
Other Illuminati Articles by Svali
Ritual Abuse Articles by Svali
Svali Answers Questions
Svali's Personal Life
The Illuminati: How the Cult Programs People

Betrayal programming brain wave programming color programming Complex Polyfragmentation cult Cult Abuse Cult Safety Cult Secrecy Denial Programming DID dissociation end times Illuminati plan end times scenario Escaping from the Cult government programming Having needs Healing from Ritual Abuse Hiding from the Cult History of Ritual Abuse Illuminati bankers Illuminati jobs jewel

amming
D
Origin of the Illuminati
programming programming

Create a free website or blog at WordPress.com.

Svali Speaks!

with issues related to cult programming and becoming free, for the past year and a half. I myself have been in therapy for ritual abuse and DID for nine years, with the last five being aware of the recent cult abuse.

I am also a writer, and a registered nurse. I currently work as a diabetic educator in Texas 20 hours a week.

I have also self-published a book on breaking free of cult programming, which several experts in the field have said has "invaluable information" for the survivor of ritual abuse.

Both my ex-husband and my two children broke free of cult abuse last year. My children are living with me while my husband is working on healing. They all have DID (dissociative identity disorder, formerly known as multiple personality disorder) as well, which makes life at home interesting! I am currently married to my second husband, who is also a recovered DID and who got out of the cult five years ago.

I am a survivor of both ritual abuse and governmental mind control. My greatest hope in sharing on these pages is that the information will be helpful to others in breaking free of coercive cult control and help them realize that it is really possible to become free. My other goal is to help educate therapists and supporters of survivors so that they can better understand what survivors have gone through, and things that have helped others in their healing journey. – Svali

Svali on: Healing from the Trauma of Cult Programming

Ritual abuse is the systematic, continued, repetitive abuse of both children and adults by either an individual or a group. It can involve psychological, sexual, physical, and spiritual abuse. This abuse is often done in the name of promoting an agenda, or a group's religious idealogy.

The victims of ritual abuse are often children, although adults are often abused as well. The victim is an unwilling accomplice in the perpetrator's goals, although they may eventually learn to comply with, and even learn to perpetrate themselves as they grow older. Increasing numbers of survivors of ritual abuse are beginning to speak out, to give voice to the atrocities which occur. Whether the survivor was traumatized within an organized group, or by individuals, they must often overcome years of conditioning to be silent in order to speak and disclose their abuse. This abuse may have included torture, mind control, cult programming, or other methodologies to ensure the victim's silence.

This page is dedicated to the bravery and courage of these people who are in the process of breaking free from cult abuse. To the courageous adults and children who are overcoming fear, and disclosing what their lives have been like. May others learn that they, too, can become free.

The Importance of Overcoming Denial

Often times it is much easier for the average person to look away when the subject of ritual abuse comes up. To believe that it is extremely rare. Or even to wonder if it is real, in spite of the extensive documentation that has been done that proves its existence. For more information on this subject, please go to some of the links provided on this page.

Ritual abuse is not going to go away, in spite of the desire of many to minimize its impact both on the survivor community, and their supporters. The more people become aware of this problem, the more hope that this type of abuse can be stopped, and that no more children will be wounded in the war that is being waged for their hearts and souls.

There is currently legislation that has been passed in six states outlawing ritual abuse, with other states pending. Legislators are becoming educated in the

techniques Reaccessing of the Survivor Remembering Abuse Ritual Abuse Roots of the Illuminati Shell Programming Spiritual Abuse Spiritual Programming suicidal programming Survivors of Ritual Abuse Svali is Alive Svali is dead Svali is missing Svali is Safe Svali poem Svali questions techniques Theapists reveal truth about Ritual Abuse Therapists VR programming

reality of this type of abuse, and are beginning to take measures to ensure that it is stopped.

There have been extensively documented cases of ritual abuse which have gone to court and been proven. Anyone who denies the reality has not read the current literature available on the subject. (See links for further info)

Resources for Ritual Abuse and Mind Control Please note that all of the sources below can be found on line. I regret that MSN will not allow the URLs to copy here (the editing tool erases them automatically). You may look up the addresses by typing in the name in any web search engine.

A.C.A.A. (American Coalition for Abuse Awareness) Mailing Address: ONE VOICE, PO Box 27958, Washington DC 20038-7958 Phone: (202) 667-1160

A.C.H.E.S.-M.C. (Advocacy Committee for Human Experiment Survivors – Mind Control)

I.S.S.D. (International Society for the Study of Dissociation) now ISST-D (International Society for the Study of Trauma and Dissociation) Mailing address: 4700 W. Lake Ave., Glenview IL 60025 Phone: (847) 375-4715

M.A.S.A. (Mothers Against Sexual Abuse) Contact: Claire Reeves Mailing address: 503-1/2 S. Myrtle Ave., Suite 9, Monrovia CA 91016 Phone: (818) 305-1986

Sidran Foundation A non-profit organization aiming to raise awareness about dissociative disabilities and multiplicity.

Survivorship.org An international publication and organization for survivors of ritualistic abuse, mind control, and torture.

Ritual Abuse Ritual Crime and Healing

Persons Against Ritual Abuse Torture

North American Freedom Foundation

Posted in Svali's Personal Life | Tagged end times Illuminati plan, end times scenario, Svali is Alive, Svali is dead, Svali is missing, Svali is Safe, Svali poem | 12 Comments »

The European Roots of the Illuminati

September 30, 2008 by koniword

Until recently, I have mainly written about programming and methods to work through and attempt to resolve it. But as I am working on my own healing, I am coming to realize that while breaking programming is important (and often life-saving), that eventually it becomes important to deal with core issues. Core issues go beneath and behind programming, and often not only drive it, but sabotage the therapy process as the survivor attempts to heal.

These issues will be different for each survivor, since we each have a unique history. I have received emails from survivors from around the world, and have found that: *The Illuminati is certainly not the only occult group in the world; there are many other well-organized groups that do methodic, repetitive abuse of an occult nature. But in these groups, often the core issues are different than for the Illuminati *Even within the Illuminati, each individual will need to discover their own personal history, since parentage, bloodlines, and programming methods will differ, as well as the child's eventual role in the group. This article is not meant to address all methods, or all survivor's histories in the group.

I can't speak for everyone who was abused in the group; I can only speak of what I myself am discovering about my own personal history, in the hopes that it will help other survivors through either validation, or to help supporters better understand

some of the issues that they face during the process of remembering and healing.

The Illuminati are based in Europe, which is where their power base has always been. I remember being told as a young child that America was basically considered their "mission field" or the "land of opportunity" by those whose roots extend for hundreds of years or more into the ancient European dynastic bloodlines.

This is why their power hierarchy around the world, whether in the U.S., Asia, Australia, Canada, or elsewhere will always point back to Europe, where the 13 rulers (they also call them "lords") are based. Each ruler represents an area of Europe held under his sway; and each one represents an ancient dynastic bloodline.

For example, the Hapsburg bloodline (Merovingian) is still active in Europe, although hidden, as well as the Rothschild and Battenberg bloodlines . In many modern European countries, the heirs of these bloodlines are immensely wealthy, and secretly are the "power behind the throne", if not the actual rulers.

This is one reason why those of high Illuminati rank/descent in the U.S., for example, can always trace their bloodline or parentage to members of this ruling cabal in Europe; members of leadership councils in the States are always direct descendants, whether legitimate or illegitimate.

Whether at the lowest levels, or the highest, though, this group operates with the same methods: instilling intense fear and terror to control their members. Often this is done through the fear of death, and at the core level, the person who has undergone their training will have an immense fear of dying because of the "death and resurrection" experiences, or near death experiences, that they have undergone.

During these experiences, the very young child or even infant core will be faced with intolerable choices: to allow themselves to be extinguished, or to embrace the demonic and the beliefs of those in their bloodline parentage. I believe this is dissociation at its deepest level, since the desire to survive is one of the deepest instincts that God has given us, and will override intellect, cognition, and even well-thought out beliefs in an adult-much less in a very young child. When faced with certain death and terror, or life, albeit at a price that is much too high, the infant or child almost always chooses life (I have never heard of one that hasn't to date, although my own knowledge and experience are limited).

Then the one who offers life to the infant becomes their "savior", and worshipped virtually as a deity in the child's mind and heart for "saving" them in one of the most wicked set ups imaginable.

In many cases, this is one of the child's parents, and most often, their biological father. The biological father may not be the person that the child consciously remembers raising them during childhood; and once again, this encourages deep dissociation: the consciously remembered "Daddy" may not be the survivor's real father.

Identity confusion is also layered in. The name the child goes by during the daytime may be quite different from their "real" name, or even the name on their birth certificate. A child of high lineage may discover that they weren't born in the United States, but in Europe, if the ties to the European bloodlines are great enough; or even that their American birth certificate was forged, to cover their European one.

Each situation is different, and different bloodlines practice different methods of raising, mentoring, and training their offspring. For instance, those of German descent may be taken to Germany, and spend time with those of this bloodline learning the ways of this country, and developing a loyalty to what they consider their "true homeland", before going back to another country to live under a different identity. Because above all else, children are called back to their European roots at frequent intervals to develop loyalty to their family home and name, and to

undergo ceremonies meant to instill terror and ongoing cooperation, alternated with loving bonding experiences meant to instill deep love for the parental figures.

A child may live in Japan, but they will always know that their true home is in Germany or France; the child in Canada may know that their true home is the U.K., or Russia, and the child in the U.S. will long to return to "home" in Europe with the loyalty that is instilled, whether "home" is Germany, Bavaria, France, Moscow, the UK, Spain, or another country ruled by one of the 13.

This terror, this training, and the bonds of not only loyalty, but caring and nurturing that the child experienced through their true parentage, are often the most difficult and insidious to break. Deep terror combined with loving rescue and nurture create deep loyalty through trauma bonding, and breaking these ties at the core level is the most difficult task that many survivors face.

My prayer is that by explaining some, it can help others know that this does occur, which is the first step to uncovering it and working on it. I believe that deep prayer and support from others are the only methods of both uncovering these ties, and of breaking their hold. I am still working on these issues, and welcome others to share their experiences of undoing the hold of loyalty at this core level to the original perpetrators, and of breaking the spiritual and emotional ties to them. I will be more than happy to publish here anonymously any articles on this topic, as an encouragement to others who are breaking ties to the power centers in Europe. Because, ultimately, these men must lose in their bid for power. Scripture tells us that there is only one king on the throne: Jesus Christ, and that eventually, even the European roots of the Illuminati and their coming "prince" or antichrist, will be cut down, when Christ reigns over the earth.

Blessings to you, Svali

Posted in Other Illuminati Articles by Svali | Tagged Origin of the Illuminati, Roots of the Illuminati | 2 Comments »

Q & A: Svali Answers Readers' Questions – Parts 1+2

September 30, 2008 by koniword

Q: Can the Illuminati's family trees be traced back to specific towns in Europe?

A: Yes, and this depends on the branch. There is the German branch, the French branch, the UK branch, and the Russian branch. Each has roots in different areas of Europe. The towns of central Germany and Austria were the beginning for the German branch. They trace their roots from the Knights Templar who united the European nations during the crusades.

Q: Do they consider the Christian God real, but a liar?

A: The Illuminati believe in the deification of men through knowledge. They know that there are supernatural beings who help them in this process, but they don't necessarily divide things into "good and bad", rather "enlightened" or "unenlightened". They believe that the Christian God is real, but that adherents of Christianity are one step short of enlightenment, that they do not know the "full picture" as they do. They see Christians as sheep who follow a nice story created to help them feel better, because they are "too weak" to want to know the "full truth". (This is what an illuminist would say in describing the difference). They tend to be cynical towards the Christian God, to see him as a placebo for the weak.

Q: Do they consider their own god a liar, even if for "good"? If so, how do they trust their god?

A: They do not consider their gods (they have several) as liars. These "gods" have given them power, wealth, status, and everything that they have asked for. Yes, at

a price, a horrible price, but they believe that nothing comes cheaply, and the higher the price they have paid, the more they value the gift. It is hard to explain this type to thinking to someone outside the group, because mainstream society wants to see them as evil satanists, and opposed to Christianity. They themselves wouldn't put it quite that way. Oh, they will mock and downgrade Christianity, but only because they want its followers to see that they are the 'deceived ones". The god of this world has truly blinded their eyes. Do they "trust" their gods? As much as they trust anything. Remember, trust is not a concept in this group, where "betrayal is the greatest good" is a maxim taught since childhood. If you asked them, do you"trust" your deity, they would look puzzled, and say, "only a foolish person trusts what they cannot know" or some other maxim.

Q: Do they consider the Christian God to be a God of naive love?

A: Yes, yes, very naive, and setting His followers up for a fall. This is the extent of their arrogance.

Q: If they use torture and terror on those they love who are of lower rank, how do they distinguish between love and hate?

A: They don't. They tell their children as they are torturing them, "I am doing this because I love you." To them, the greatest love is to make a child strong, and fit to lead or to move higher in the group, by whatever means it takes.

If a leader sees a child, and wants it as a prostitute, the loving parents will give it away, happy that their child will rise in status. Also, again, they view betrayal as the greatest good. They will do set up after set up to teach their children to never openly trust others.

I remember hundreds of agonizing set ups and betrayals, and hearing when I was betrayed or wounded, "And such is the heart of man." Those doing this to me thought they were teaching me something of value, that would help me. And because of the vicious and political nature of the group, in one sense they were right; the naive get stepped on and wounded. I have known parents who tried to spare their children some of this out of love, but often they were overuled by other family members, who viewed these parents as "weak" and "unfit" to teach their child.

Q: Can you list their religious beliefs in some detail? e.g. re-incarnation? Heaven and hell? Sin? Absolution? Elves?

A: Which part? Spiritual has many branches, including: celtic druidism, rosicrucianism, Babylonian mystery religion, Egyptian mysteries, and traveling the planes. A child will have to learn each of these disciplines, and others, as part of their training. They also have theta, or psychic training, as well.

The Illuminati have taken the best (or worst) of each of these religions, and incorporated them. Also, there is NOT just ONE religion that every group follows. In Washington DC, my main trainers were celtic druids and adherents of babylonian mystery religion. In San Diego,the Egyptian mystery religion is emphasized, in part because Col. Aquinos oversees that group, and is heavily into Temple of Set.

Here is a brief overview, doing my best to incorporate these beliefs. They believe that reincarnation is possible, because of the time travel that they do, but they don't emphasize it in their teachings. They believe in a final sphere of white light, which to them is total enlightenment, and their concept of heaven. They believe that they are immune from hell, which is for the unenlightened. Their concept of hell is different than the Bible's; they believe that it means being lower and never reaching higher in the afterlife (they believe there are levels there, too, determined by how one progresses here on earth).

To them, sin is being weak or stupid, and not using the intelligence or abilities you were given, or failing to progress. I never heard any discussion of absolution. If you fail, you are punished or killed. That simple. There is some belief in elves, sprites,

and other small beings in the druidic branch, who also see life in each of nature's creations.

Q: Some researchers claim that various items that people are commonly exposed to in society are part of the means to weaken their enemies. Therefore, I wonder if the Illuminati allow their own leading members to be exposed to these, i.e. the following:
a. chlorine and fluoride in water and foods;
b. vaccines;
c. medical drugs;
d. junk food;
e. microwaved food;
f. dietary supplements;
g. biochips;
h. mercury fillings;
i. HAARP;
j. chemtrails?

A: In general, true leadership is protected from much of the above. They are ORDERED to not: drink, do drugs, or anything harmful to themselves. They don't go as far as junk food or microwaved food, since they don't worry about that, but at meetings, healthy food such as granola or trail mix are given out during exercises, and they know the importance of good nutrition.

They will NOT put their top leaders through the extensive use of mind control experimentation, or implants, etc. because of the risk involved. These children and adults ARE dissociative, but they go through a special program that is different than for the lower levels. They do get vaccines, since even if the child became ill, a healer could fix them. And they do take medications if needed, such as antibiotics, etc.

Do they claim to use vaccines or medical drugs for genocide? I had not heard that when I was in the group. Everyone I knew was vaccinated and took medications, although vitamins and good diet were also important.

Q: Some claim that Mormons, Jehovah's Witnesses, Charismatics, Pagans, the New Age Movement, Satanists, etc. were founded by the same plotters. Are these groups, or at least their leaders, considered allies of the Illuminati by their members?

A: Some of these groups have affiliated themselves secretly with the Illuminati (because of the money and free training offered), others are sympathetic, or at the least, respectful of them. The Mormons affiliated years ago in a meeting with Illuminati leadership in the 1950s. The same with the Jehovah's Witnesses. I have not heard that Charismatics or Pagans were affiliated, the pagans are considered "dabblers" by the Illuminati. The New Age and Satanists are sympathetic to them.

Q: Do they respect real science or history in favor of "faith" in their own beliefs?

A: No. They will respect science, but they will try to rewrite history in set ups and dramas for children (where they purport to show them "real history" behind the scenes). Also, they will do time travel through portals, but I cannot say how accurate what occurs is, since I believe it is facilitated demonically.

The Illuminati teach their children that powerful occultists who were enlightened have been secretly behind the thrones of Europe, and down the ages behind the kingdoms of this world, since time began. True or propaganda? I don't know. They teach their children that underneath Stonehenge there is a great room filled with the skeletons of sacrifices. Fact or fiction? I don't know, and cannot fund the archeological expedition it would take to verify this or not.

How accurate their teachings are, I do question, since they also leave out the role of faith in God, and His ability to hold back evil. I believe that ultimately, God has been

in control of human history, not evil.

Q: I'm very concerned about the New World Order scheme and my questions are meant to help me find possible ways to proceed in helping to defeat the scheme.

A: I know I sound cynical, but good luck! I really do wish you the best in this. I believe that it would take a LOT of people joining together, with immense wealth and excellent lawyers, to stop them.

I personally do not have any experience with any groups dedicated to stopping them, since I live in a small rural community and have no contacts of this nature. I do wish any groups dedicated to stopping this horrific abuse of small children the very best, and will pray that they succeed. But this is also a spiritual battle, and anyone who takes on this type of occult evil would also need to be aware of spiritual warfare. The Illuminists certainly use it against others, and anyone stepping into this arena without prayer would be very vulnerable, in my opinion.

Q: Have you considered starting a 12 step group like AA for ritual abusers and cult victims? I know from personal experience that the spiritual 12 step program works.

A: I believe that there are already groups such as this out there. I know that there are AA groups for incest survivors, and many also have branched off into RA [Ritual Abuse] support as well. Since I live in a rural area (population 100 unless you count the squirrels and cows), I would not be close enough to lead any groups such as this. They are usually found near large metropolitan areas. In fact, I drive two hours once a month to therapy, since that is the closest to where I live.

Q: Were you allowed to read and listen to what you wanted while you were in the Illuminati, or was everything censored? If it wasn't censored, it seems like members could notice that Illuminati teachings about betrayal being a human attribute are false. Right?

A: Wrong. I was never censored what I read, but you have to understand their mind set. As a small child, my parents told me that everyone was secretly a member of this group, and that the daytime was a "facade" or "pretense' that all maintain.

They would take me to friends' houses for dinner, and afterwards a ritual would occur, so I believed them. I grew up since infancy believing that this was just how the world operated for all: people act one way in the daytime, another at night. I knew that there was mention of love, caring, and trust in books, but believed it was a "daytime" quality, and that the people who wrote of these things were writing from their daytime personas.

There was a complete and utter division between day and night from my first days of life. To question something, you have to be able to step outside it, and I never had the maturity, or any reason to question the teachings, until I was much older. Think about it. All around were movies reinforcing what the cult taught, the Disney films, etc; I listened to heavy metal groups, whose values echoed what I was taught at night. In fact, outside of Christian literature, there is not much out there that would engender trust in other human beings.

Q: I was shocked to hear you say you were forced to shoot a friend of yours. Are many members forced to shoot or kill someone, or is this just for punishment training? Is it just outsiders who are killed? Are you able to discuss the shooting, or is this too hard to discuss?

A: The friend was not an outsider, she was part of the group, and considered expendable. In this group, people are one of two things: "useful" or "expendable". Everyone works quite hard to be useful. It is not a common punishment, in fact rare, but my mother was an unusually driven and ambitious person.

She was a head trainer, and sat on the regional council over the Washington DC area in the spiritual seat (the other seats on the council were military, held by her boss at the Pentagon, where she worked, his cult name was "Ashtoth", a goverment

seat, leadership, scholarship, and sciences seats).

Usually, they bring in outsiders for rituals or killing, but this was an unusually harsh punishment to teach me an unforgettable lesson (it did: I never made a friend after that. I didn't like those higher than me, and had no wish to make friends with those she considered "worthy" of a "leader" and other nonsense).

Very rarely, in military exercises, those who were weak or kept a unit behind consistently were shot to teach the others a lesson (I saw it happen once). This never happened to the children of leaders, only those from lower levels.

Q: You say you begged God for a better home every night, but became embittered against God for not providing it. Were you praying to a benevolent God or to the Illuminati god? If the former, then where did you get your idea of a benevolent God?

A: This is a great question. I was NOT praying to the Iluminati deities, because to me, they were cruel and sadistic and frightening. I was praying to my child's concept of a good God, from my reading, watching of TV, and also the innate knowledge that all children have in their hearts that somewhere, up there, is a good God.

I also had a few experiences with angels, and being protected as a child during horrendous trauma, and this also formed my concept that good existed. They never actually tried to stop me from praying, since positive spirituality gives hope, and can help prevent suicide.

In fact, I was forbidden to read about or seek any knowledge about the occult in my day life, because otherwise too much would be given to the occult and the risk of suicide would have increased. They are believers in "balance', even in this area.

Q: You said "Papa Brogan" [see previous article] was the only kind adult in your life growing up. Do you mean he showed you affection? In what way?

A: Dr. Timothy Brogan was a professor at George Washington University. He was a specialist in neuropsychology, and one of the top Illuminati trainers in the DC area. He was also close friends with Sidney Gottlieb (another of my mother's "friends").

Anyway, he could be very kind as well as cruel. He would hold me on his lap, call me his "little one", and praised me highly when I did well. He taught me chess, and would read works of literature to me. He told me I was his "adopted daughter" and that he was proud of me. We would hold intellectual discussions until late at night, and he imparted his views of leadership and training to me. Not all Illuminati activity is cruel or inhumane; he could be caring and loving as well. I would play with his children, who were older than me, and he would patiently answer my questions about science, geography, and other topics. I bonded completely to him, which made the torture and sexual abuse especially painful and betraying.

Q: You say you had a core split, over 7,000 fragments and 16 internal systems. You mean you developed split personalities who weren't aware of each other? If so, did any of these personalities seem to have a fairly nice life?

A: Yep, split personalities. Most of the people I knew in the Illuminati were fairly fragmented (in fact, I cannot think of anyone who was not dissociative to some degree). Even the local and regional leaders all come in for regular "programming tune ups" as Jonathan and I used to call them. The largest split was between the front and back; ie. daily life and night life. Most, but not all, of the night alters could communicate, or at least the controllers and the higher parts inside could (and relay information to those beneath them). And yes, many of my personalities had a wonderful life. I had 140 created to deal with daytime life, such as work, friends, and fun (who have coalesced).

Many of my back people had good experiences, such as the ones I described above with Dr. Brogan. Others were pampered and praised, told that I would be a leader

in the coming "New Order" (of course, they tell everyone that….). I was to be a mediator between governmental figures in different nations because of my language abilities and people mediation skills. Many of my internal parts were quite proud of their abilities and accomplishments in the group, and grieved heavily when I left.

Q: Are the non-German Illuminists not Nazis, racist white supremacists, or genocidal maniacs? And, if the leadership in all countries is Illuminati, that must mean they're of all races, which seems to mean the white supremacists oppose the non-white Illuminati. Is this right?

A: Not all Illuminist groups are as fanatically anti-racial as the German branch is, although many are. These people are racist in the extreme, but they are also very practical, and realize that world domination is not possible without the aid of non-white races. That is why loyal figures in these countries are being promised leadership positions for their area, under the supervision of Illuminist commanders.

They also view orientals differently than other nonwhite races, because of the long history of occult mysticism in many countries (such as Tibet, for example), the long history of culture, and the high intelligence. This is why the oriental branches are highly regarded, even in Europe. But they do believe that Europe will be the center of world government and leadership.

Even in non-white countries, the top leadership is still white, or nearly so. For example, in South America, the top leaders are European in descent, with less of the mestizo mixing. In Africa, many of the leaders behind the scenes are whites, although there are local black leaders who have demonstrated extreme loyalty. They are using them, though, since these members will never be able to hold top leadership in the world. (Those positions are already taken).

All this said, I believe that the racist and hateful policies of the Illuminati are despicable in the extreme. One of my biggest quarrels with leadership was this position, among others. I hope this has answered some of your questions. – Svali

Posted in Svali Answers Questions | Tagged Svali questions | 8 Comments »

Therapists Speak Out on Ritual Abuse

September 29, 2008 by koniword

Several months ago, I sent a questionaire out to the professional community to find out the opinions of therapists who work with ritual abuse. I contacted the ISSD as well as several therapists whom I had heard of in the field. Why? Because I wanted a chance for the dedicated professionals who work in this field to have a chance to speak out, and I was also interested in their opinions.

I have changed all names, and used pseudonyms to protect the identities of these individuals and the clients that they work with. But these are very real people, who often work long hours, at times under threat from outside people, to help survivors break free. I cannot imagine a group of people that I admire more, next to the survivors themselves. The therapists who answered live both in the United States, and several countries around the world.

First I asked what percent of the therapist's practice was ritually abused clients. The answers varied.

Jenny, a female therapist, answered: Yes.I never figured percentages. I saw several clients whom I suspected were RA but they never claimed memories of such.

Fran, another therapist, stated: Ritually abused clients have made up about 10% of my practice in the past six years. I consider it a sub-specialty.

Joann, who works in a group practice, stated: yes – though many only openly

admit to being DID Is this your specialty area of practice? yes It is about 70% of my practice and 100% of my partnert's practice

Alice states: Yes…usually they do not enter my office and announce that, however. It usually unfolds in the course of therapy, or they are referred following that disclosure. DID is one of my specialty areas of practice. It comprises about 1/5 of my caseload…and at one time was about 1/3.

John states: I work primarily in and with trauma survivors, mainly people over the ages of 35 and split about 45% 55% male to female. Yes I see a number of people who were ritually abused. Of those I work with about 30% were classic ritual abuse survivors…

I then asked: Do you believe your clients when they tell you they were ritually abused? If so, why? The responses were very interesting.

Jenny states: I believe that it is possible that RA memories are true. I cannot determine truth for clients.

Fran makes some points about her client's memories: I generally believe my clients' accounts of ritually abuse because:

1. I have obtained very convincing corroborating evidence.

2. Their emotional reactions and psychological symptoms make complete sense in relation to their accounts of abuse.

3. In one of my cases, relatives of the ritual abuse victim were incarcerated for multiple counts of sadistic sexual assault.

4. I am a member of a professional co-supervision group in which my colleagues have also obtained significant clinical and corroborating evidence of ritualistic abuse and mind control programming.

5. I am familiar with the professional research and clinical literature.

There are some aspects of some clients' accounts that I believe may not be completely accurate, due to abuse perpetrated on drugged clients or deception by their abusers.

Joann shares her opinion: Absolutely. Who would make up those stories???

Alice makes a point here: I have never seen anyone I thought was fabricating. I have also NEVER told anyone of my clients that they "met a profile", nor have I shared any of the "theories" that were prevalent in our field for awhile regarding conspiracy, programming, etc. I treat their memories with respect and, when needed, assist them in looking at the BEHAVIORS of their abusers and how it was abuse, regardless of the belief system. I see DID as an elaborate defense system involving all levels of personality.

John shares his view: I believe that initially they will tell me what it is that they have to to unburden the past. And they will tell me often times from the child's prospective in an adult voice. It is variation on the truth. it is how they recall it at the time in my office, and it may not even be close to what happened but it does define the starting gate so to speak and it is my job to help work them through their processes not decern the truth of the matter. I am the professional listener not the detective…. I think many of my contempories get lost here.

I think it is important to note here that contrary to what some vocal groups in the media say, these professionals listen to what the client brings into therapy. They are NOT suggesting memories, instead, they are listening to their clients.

My next question was: What sort of groups are your clients reporting that "ritually abuse"? Are these organized groups with a religious/philosophical base, or are they isolated incidences? Have you seen any common denominators between groups, if this is what is reported? Any elements that make individuals or groups different in how they work?

Jenny states: Satanic cults; Christian sects, U. S. Government Are these organized groups with a religious/philosophical base, or are they isolated incidences? Both Have you seen any common denominators between groups, if this is what is reported? Any elements that make individuals or groups different in how they work? Pedophilia, sadomachistic tendencies
Fran shares from her experience working with survivors: My clients report abuse by Illuminati, KKK, and Fourth Reich. My Illuminati victim also reports abuse by national and international governments. None of my ritually-abused clients have single-incident abuses. All endured long-term abuse within inter-generational Satanism. Some appear to be more motivated by Satan-worship, others by obtaining world power. Common denominators: Satan worship is reported by all clients. Disgusting and horribly painful torture is reported by all, and there is consistency in the specific kinds of torture used, e.g., being hung upside down, skinning people alive, use of hooks, and more that I can not recall right now. Differences: Sexual abuse seems to have been more frequent and the perpetrators appeared to have stronger pedophiliac interests in my survivors of KKK and Fourth Reich than the Illuminati survivor, who appeared to be high up in the power heirarchy, where it appeared more specific to particular rituals. Only the Illuminati survivor reported abuse by political figures.

Joann's clients also have shared with hertheir experiences with SRA: Most are isolated. some are offshoots of other groups (example – Masonic, Greek orthodox, illuminati) All involve abuse though the type varies – sexual, physical, emotional

Alice's clients have also shared different types of abuse: A wide range of groups from aryan nation stuff ,to christian groups, to ancient fertility stuff, to the "chinese menu" approach. The only thing they all have in common is the abuse of power and children.

John shares his perspective: Variation on a theme of religion, although I have one at the moment that is focused on healing and not religion… oddly enough, and they as an organization are subject too a major investigation by the local Medical authorities/….

My next question was: Have you ever seen evidence that seems to corroborate client's stories? Such as bruising/evidence of abuse physically; or testimony of siblings or family members? Threats against yourself from outside members of the group?

Jenny states: 3 clients of different age groups naming same group leader spanning a period of three decades. Also naming same ritual sites. To my knowledge these clients, being in different generations had never met each other.

Fran has also seen corroborating evidence: I have seen corroborating evidence, including mutiple survivors identifying the same perpetrators, and incarceration of perpetrators.I have had numerous phone hang-ups, for periods a few a day. I had one call at midnight – a woman's voice

said "She's dead you know, you killed her". Nobody I know died.
Joann states: Such as bruising/evidence of abuse physically; (physical pain or sensitivities – ie body memories) Changes as a result of access by others including family members(this may be done knowingly or unknowingly). Threats against yourself from outside members of the group? No threats – just being followed

John has received threats because of his work with survivors: By the time that I see people generally speaking the abuse has long since stopped, but I have seen scars that seem to corroborate clients stories. Yes I have had death threats by the acting out brothers of three young ladies who came in for help. Their old brothers who now live as hermits in the bush, threatened to shoot both me and them if and I quote: Anymore talk of this sexual abuse thing keeps going end quote

I want to thank the courageous professionals who shared their opinions in this

article. Part two will include: healing from ritual abuse, what helps and what doesn't.

Posted in Ritual Abuse Articles by Svali | Tagged Theapists reveal truth about Ritual Abuse | Leave a Comment »

Therapists Speak out on Healing

September 29, 2008 by koniword

Important note: This article does not, and is not meant, to take the place of work with a qualified therapist, which is essential to healing from severe trauma. The comments in this article are in general terms only, and are only opinions.

Healing. That is the goal in the journey of healing from abuse, and I have a confession to make. The question I asked therapists in this article was totally self serving. I really wanted to hear what they had to say on healing, what helps, and what doesn't. As a survivor, I was extremely interested in the answers.
Each therapist was careful to say that they were speaking in generalities, that each client is different and unique. That each person's healing will following the path best for them. But there are some excellent insights that they shared from their observations over the years, and I felt that this deserved an article of its own.

The question I asked was: Which factors have you seen in clients that help them progress in their healing process from ritual abuse? Which factors have you seen that tend to retard progress? (I know this is a complex question, just a few key elements)

Ritual abuse often makes the survivor feel they are worthless, or have no rights. Jenny had some thoughts on this topic:

Aura of spirituality; sense of humor, lack of feelings of entitlement, strong support system Which factors have you seen that tend to retard progress? (I know this is a complex question, just a few key elements) Opposite of the above

Fran had comments based on many hours of work with her clients. Her response shows her commitment, and her client's commitment, to the healing process:

Factors that facilitate progress:

1. Patience by the therapist.

2. Hard work, journaling, art, between sessions.

3. Having a greater purpose of helping others

4. Having helpful, loving, and protective support persons.

5. A religious base of hope and protection.

6. Valuing both their own knowledge and the suggestions of the therapist.

7. Crying, grieving.

Factors that retard progress

1. Maladaptive relationships

2. Being re-accessed or abducted.

3. Substance abuse

4. Over-dependence, looking for the perfect new mother.

5. Lack of support persons

6. Lack of a religious support network and belief system.

7. Lack of looking inward for answers, over-reliance on the therapist

8. Resistance to crying.

Those who have been ritually abused have often had negative spiritual experiences. Joann shares her perspective that includes her belief system:

Which factors have you seen in clients that help them progress in their healing process from ritual abuse? strong Christian beliefs, strong desire to heal, submission to the healing process Which factors have you seen that tend to retard progress? denial, unwilling or unable to commit time or money, fear, trust issues, emphasis on presenting alters rather than on programming/structures/systems , lone ranger counselors who burn themselves out

Survivors of ritual abuse have often had a multitude of painful betrayals in their lifetime. Alice shares her thoughts on this painful topic:

It always helps to process betrayal…all the betrayals from spiritual to parental. It also helps to label specific behaviors as abuse in the framework of healthy parenting and group dynamics.Sometimes clients have difficulty with their corrupted belief systems as regards themselves…i.e.- "I have no soul"

Survivors of ritual abuse often have difficulty trusting others, and John shares his perspective on this issue:

What helps the most is the solid listening and them coming away from session after session with a strong sense of being listened too. The second mostimportant eliment is to treat the presenting problem properly and that is usually a deep seated depression that masks itself in some other format. ODD or BiP or BPD etc. and to gain releif here and build trust over time….

One of the facinating things that I have found is that in the fourth or fifth year of treatment sometimes the depth of the dissociative aspect jumps out and you have alters in your office who have watched you for a very long time and they can finally trust you to share. I had one lady who had been treated for 8 and half years before I got to her and it was late in our third year when I meet the first alter. The Alters knew the truth of what happened to her and it was ritual abuse by her mom. It went on every day and on several occasions nearly resulted in the clients death, and all this happened per age three. Mom later confirmed this. I had used the principal of the ISH and garnered its support in the healing and the client now 39 has her child back, is holding down a full time job, is in a relationship that she is happy with and is clean and sober drugs and alcohol 6 years..She is on Rx for her depression and probabily will be all the rest of her life… but she is having one now.

I found these responses helpful and insightful. These are caring people, who have invested hours and hours into helping survivors in the often painful, but also rewarding, journey of healing. The fact that they took time from their busy practices to share some thoughts is awesome, and I appreciate and thank each and every one. In my thoughts, these people are heros, along with the people that they help. Ritual abuse is one of the most traumatic abuses to heal from, but the therapists and survivors discussed in these articles are doing just that. Healing.

Posted in Ritual Abuse Articles by Svali | Tagged Healing from Ritual Abuse, Therapists | 2 Comments »

Breaking Free of the Cult

September 29, 2008 by koniword

Breaking Free of the Cult

One of the most important but also one of the most difficult steps that a survivor of generational cult abuse can make is the decision to leave the group that they were

raised in.
Those who are naive, or don't understand the nature of being raised in a group may wonder, "Why would it be hard to leave abusers? Wouldn't a person WANT to get away?" The reality is a little more complicated, and my hope is that this article will help both survivors, therapists, and support people as well as those who wish to understand ritual abuse have a better idea of the issues that survivors getting out face, as well as some helpful ideas on safety.

BARRIERS TO GETTING OUT:

I want to address these first. This is not to be discouraging, but to help identify the issues involved. If a person understands the obstacles to leaving, they can then begin developing a plan to overcome these problems.

Paramount is PERSONAL SAFETY. Threats against those who try to leave are real, and the person has been conditioned by witnessing the punishment of those who have tried to leave (see my article on how the cult programs people for more info); or even punishment for questioning the group or its leader. The psychological intimidation of a lifetime is real, and the person must be assured of physical safety before they will consider leaving a group that could literally brutally punish them (or worse) for attempting to leave.

It is very, very difficult to consider leaving, or worse yet, to discuss leaving in therapy, then have reporter alters "telling on" the person to the group leaders. This happened to me in San Diego, and the results were devastating. My inside parts who wanted to get out, who were working hard in therapy, were being physically brutalized at night to punish them for talking and remembering. This created a great deal of what therapists call "intrasystem conflict" , to put it mildly. Some parts became hostile at other parts who wanted to leave, and they began punishing them as well. In addition, suicide commands were put in by the head trainer.

The reality is that if a person truly wants to break free, they may become "expendable" in the eyes of the cult, or considered a security risk, and will often be told to suicide. In breaking free, a survivor and their support system needs to be aware of these realities. To not be aware that this is/could be happening will cause therapy to be sabotaged.

Even if the person finds physical safety, other issues need to be addressed as well. One is ISOLATION. Often in transgenerational groups, the survivor's entire family of origin, as well as their closest friends, and spouse will be part of the group (the Illuminati arrange almost 100% of their marriages, I have never personally known of a person in the group whose spouse was not also involved, as well as the children.) These members of the immediate family will be the ones most likely to reaccess the survivor. I will give a personal example, again.

When I lived in San Diego, I was in therapy for DID. All that I remembered at the time was a period of three years of ritual abuse with my father and his mother. I thought my mother "rescued" me from him when she divorced him. But my therapy was at a standstill. The more I remembered, the WORSE I became, and decompensated. I would go to therapy, talk, try to help my inside people, then would feel immense panic and fear, as well as suicidal urges afterwards.

It wasn't until later that I learned that my mother was my cult trainer the first five years of my life; that my husband was taking me back to cult meetings where I was severely punished and programmed to NOT tell in therapy. Once I had physical safety, and broke off contact with cult members, I immediately began stabilizing psychologically. But the price was high. My husband divorced me when I told him I remembered; I told him his cult name, mine and the children's, thinking he, too would want to get out. Instead, I lost custody of my two children in a long and expensive court battle with a justice system whose attitude was that ritual abuse was a delusion. (Fortunately, 1 1/2 years ago, my ex decided to leave the group, in part because of seeing me alive and well and working full time; and I now have full

custody of my children, who are doing well in therapy).

I am sharing this to help people be aware that the price of leaving a transgenerational group may include (although each situation is different):

giving up contact with members of family of origin

giving up contact with close friends (the survivor has often been surrounded by cult members in their social group, including at church; my five closest friends were all members of the Illuminati and I had no idea). Often "cult twins" are best friends in day time life

learning that a spouse and children are all members
The enormous psychological pain of giving up these relationships will often make it difficult for the survivor, but if they continue in them, the chances of being reaccessed are great. MOST REACCESSING OF THE SURVIVOR COMES FROM MEMBERS OF THEIR IMMEDIATE FAMILY. This is one of the hardest tasks for the survivor to attempt as he or she learns good boundaries. What those boundaries need to be will differ from person to person, and their individual situation.

Another real, and powerful pull back to the cult, will come from the perception that NEEDS inside the person are being met by the group. The person will likely be dissociative, if they have been raised in a transgenerational group, and they will often have alters inside who have never known or experienced the abuse, who will be considered "high alters" inside.These part's reality is that they were praised and told that they were special, often unaware or not caring that other alters inside endured the abuse. These higher alters may identify strongly with their perps and are often the alters that want recontact with the group and help drive internal recontact programming.

Frequently, when a person leaves a cult group, there is a real period of grieving. Social relations have been changed. Alters with special needs will feel that their needs are no longer being met, whether for belonging, for sexual activity, for power, or other personal agendas. The survivor needs to recognize this reality. A person will often unconsciously recontact a group if they believe that deep needs are being met by this group. Teaching themselves to meet their needs in a healthy and appropriate way will take time and patience, working with a qualified safe therapist who understands ritual abuse.

There may be PROGRAMMING to recontact the group. The survivor will need to identify if this is present, and take steps with the help of their therapist and support system to deactivate it.

IDEAS ON BREAKING FREE

While breaking free can be difficult, as I have discussed above, it is possible to escape a cult group and maintain personal safety. I will share from both my personal experience and that of other survivors things which have proven helpful in breaking free.

1. Safe outside accountability:

If the person attempting to break free can live with someone who is NOT a member of the group, who is a safe person, that will increase their own personal safety exponentially. Cult members from groups such as the Illuminati will hesitate to harrass or try to access someone while they are with a safe person, one who is not dissociative. One of the most dangerous set ups is when a survivor is living alone, or in isolation, or if they talk long walks at night or in areas where there are no people around. Abductions, kidnappings, or reaccessing may occur in these situations. The more safe outside accountability the survivor sets up, the less chance that this will occur. This could mean a safe roomate who is not dissociative; staying with members of a church, finding a safe house, or even a women's shelter (although there are reports that some shelters and safe houses are being infiltrated by cult members; the survivor needs to be cautious in where they go and whom they

trust). One grievous problem today is the relative lack of safe houses for people trying to break free of the cult.

One precaution: often survivors will quickly make friends with other survivors, since they feel isolated and alone without the cult group. The survivor may want to exercise caution about rushing into friendships, since many survivors, especially at the beginning of their therapeutic process, may still be in contact with a cult group. Each person will need to make decisions on an individual basis in this area to maintain safety.

2. A good therapist:

There are excellent therapists who specialize in working with ritual abuse. While qualifications among therapists will vary, a survivor can try locating one by contacting reputable people in the field for referrals, by contacting the ISSD (link is on the welcome page for my articles), or by referral from people the survivor trusts. Not all therapists who advertise that they work with DID are safe, but if the survivor checks out references and asks careful questions, their chances of finding a good therapist will be higher. I have personally had therapists who worked with DID who ranged from : a pastor in San Diego who told me he could "integrate me" in 3 months if I had enough faith (this did NOT happen and was completely unrealistic); a therapist who was the referral for a national christian counseling group for DID who told me that her brother had tortured her as a child, and that I was not DID because she, the therapist, often "lost time" and went through personality changes and SHE wasn't DID (I stopped seeing her after two visits); a therapist associated with a ritual abuse and trauma program who was very knowledgeable, compassionate, and helpful. The last one, needless to say, was the only helpful one in my healing process! A good therapist will be knowledgeable about DID and ritual abuse; will BELIEVE the survivor and not discount memories shared; will help the survivor with achieving inter-system communication; and will have good boundaries. A therapist like this is well worth the time and effort it will take to locate, and can help the survivor immensely in the process of breaking free of cult control.

3. Stopping telephone access:

The telephone is one of the first avenues used to access someone trying to leave the cult. Hang up calls; calls with tones played, or with a tape or hidden message, will be used. Also, survivors often have recontact programming to phone their trainer or family members. One way to deal with this: take the telephone and lock it in the trunk of the car. This way, if a part of the survivor tries to get up in the middle of the night and make a phone call, they will have to find the car keys; unlock the trunk, plug the phone in,and make the call. Hopefully, the survivor will have time to "switch out" another part who will stop the call, especially as they work in therapy to block cult access.

Use of caller i.d.; answering services, or an answering machine (calls can be checked with a therapist or support person present in case an access message is left) can also help prevent phone access. Eventually, the survivor will find the parts inside with a vested interest in recontact, and can negotiate with them not to call or recontact. An unlisted phone number may help for a short period of time. Phone numbers can also be blocked to prevent calls from certain numbers, such as those of known perps.

4. Alarm systems:

Some survivors will have alarm systems to prevent unauthorized entry into their home. Again, this is best combined with a safe living situation, as described above. These alarm systems can also be coded by an outside safe person so that the survivor themself cannot decode it if internal parts try to leave in the middle of the night.

5. Share info with safe outsiders:

This could be a lock box with names of perps, and information, which the safe person will distribute if the survivor is harmed or access is attempted. The survivor can then mail a letter to this effect to known perps, to help prevent accessing or abducting of the survivor.

6. Go public

Some survivors have chosen to go public to maintain safety. The thought is that if they are harmed, they have shared enough info that an investigation will be done into the causes, and the cult group will risk further exposure, which they hate. Sharing information with law enforcement, with legal advisors, therapists, social workers, and child protective services can all also help maintain safety, IF the law enforcement officers, etc. are not members of the group. The problem here is that at times, cult members will infiltrate legal and law enforcement organizations, even CPS, to prevent cult members from escaping. The survivor will need to go to reputable, known safe people, if they choose to go this route.

7. Work on undoing recontact programming

This will take time, with a qualified therapist. It means looking at the trauma that placed the programming in, a difficult task psychologically. It will also mean addressing the powerful needs addressed above as well, and grieving when contact with cult members is stopped.

8. Prayer support

As a Christian, I believe that this can be a survivor's strongest protection. A strong, supportive faith system, and prayers for safety can protect the survivor during the spiritually and emotionally trying times while breaking free of the cult.

These are just a few ideas on breaking free. Many, many survivors have broken free, and have used their creativity and strength, as well as the help of noncult members who wish to help, to maintain safety. My hope is that this article will be a beginning place for both survivors and their support people and therapists to look at maintaining safety. I welcome any comments or andecotes on ideas that other survivors and support people have found for maintaining safety.

copyright 2000 svali

Posted in Other Illuminati Articles by Svali | Tagged Escaping from the Cult, Hiding from the Cult | 1 Comment »

Complex Polyfragmentation: A Coping Mechanism for the Survivor

September 29, 2008 by koniword

Important note: this article is not meant to be therapy, or to replace therapy with a skilled and qualified person, which is essential in healing from severe trauma. These are only the opinions of a survivor. Trigger warning: mentions cult abuse, dissociation, and trauma

In order to survive ritual abuse, a child will often learn to dissociate, and dissociate heavily. The child has undergone some of the most horrific abuse humanly imaginable, and most find a way to cope. One of the ways that is encouraged in certain groups, such as the Illuminati, is to create an elaborate defensive system. In psychological terms, the child fragments, then fragments again. Eventually, the child has polyfragmented.

What is polyfragmentation? The term comes from the root poly, meaning many, and fragments. In complex polyfragmenatation, the survivor will have not only alter systems, but hundreds or even thousands of fragments, isolated parts of their mind created to do a job, and do it well and unthinkingly. Often the job is one that would

be abhorrent to the main personality or presenting system. The further away from core beliefs, the greater usually the dissociation and fragmentation that must occur. In other words, a LOT of trauma has to happen to make a person do something that they really don't want to do. And the person has to feel very far away from themselves as well when doing it. The cult will purposely try to create a polyfragmented system for this very reason. The person is more dissociated from themselves, and is often easier for them to control.

How are polyfragmented systems structured? These are individual, and will vary from not only person to person, but also with the group the person belonged to, the trainers, the abilities of the child, and tasks involved that the child must do. There is no "cookie cutter approach" in most cults to creating polyfragmented systems, but there are certain characteristics that are common.

What might a polyfragmented system look like? I will share some based on my memories as a trainer in this group, plus insights from my own healing process.

1. Protectors: these are parts that were created to do the jobs that had to be done, and saved the life of the young child. Cult protectors had to look mean and scary, like the child's perpetrators. They also become perpetrators when the child grows into an adult, since they have no choice. They can be ruthless, angry, or may believe that they are demons. Some growl, some hiss, some believe that they are powerful animals. And all were a little child who was asked to do the unthinkable, forced to act in ways that he or she didn't want to. They laugh at vulnerability, and trust no one. And with good reason, based upon their experiences in the cult. With therapy and time, they can also help keep the person safe from their perpetrators, as these parts will "kick butt" if they feel threatened.

2. Intellectuals: the cult WANTS intellectual alters who can observe, go between systems, learn information quickly and download it to outsiders. These might be recorders, computers, scholars. They may know several languages, and versed in different philosophies. Brilliant, cognitive, they often believe that they can outwit those around them, including therapists. But they also know much of the life history that the others don't, since they rarely have strong feelings. These parts can "read the life history" without a tear or emotion. When they are out, the person appears "flat" to say the least, in psychological terms.
3. Denial people: these are intellectual, and are created to deny that anything bad ever happened. Life was wonderful, the parents perfect and loving, and the suicidality and PTSD symptoms are just strange artifacts without "any reason," according to these parts. A person can have a full blown abreaction, and five minutes later, a denier will come out and say it was all "made up." They are often afraid of punishment if the person remembers, and have severe trauma motivating them.

4. Controllers/head honchos/"top dogs": these are the system leaders. They know what is going on at all times in their system. In a military system, it might be a general, in a protector system, the most powerful protector; in a metals system, the platinums, or in a jewel system, the highest jewels, such as diamond, ruby, or emerald. Usually there are several leaders in a system that share the responsibility. They can also become invaluable helpers over time if they choose to give up cult loyalty.

5. Child alters: these want praise from the adult leaders, and often come out for rewards, or sweets. They will report on others inside unless they can learn that it is safe to NOT do so, since they are motivated both by fear of punishment, and wanting praise from those above them. They are also often the "heart" of a polyfragmented system, and can feel love, joy, or fear and trembling. Often, they want hugs and to be told that they are "okay".

6. Punishers: why wait for an outside person to punish you if you can create someone inside to do it first? Children will often identify heavily with their perpetrators, and if the punishment is severe and frequent, they will internalize the

perpetrator to try and keep themselves "in line" and avoid punishment externally. The cult will capitalize on this, and often trainers will leave as their "calling card" an alter named after themselves. This one will be an internal trainer, or punisher, or enforcer. Their job is to keep things in line, and will often try to sabotage therapy. They are often fearful of external punishment if they don't do their job. Internal punishers will also activate self punishment sequences inside (such as flood programming/ suicide programming, or other self harm sequences) if the person begins breaking away from the cult and the old rules. These parts may take time to conivince that they can change their old way of doing things, since they were often accountable to the outside handler/trainer if things weren't kept in line.

7. Feeling alters: the feelings were overwhelming and infinitely traumatizing in childhood. It threatened the child's survival and sanity. The solution? Parcel them out over several internal parts and/or fragments. Divide the feeling up so that it feels more manageable. Feeling alters often get locked away inside, and when they come out in therapy, the feeling may hit "full force" at first. A child alter may come out screaming, or terror stricken, or wailing in uncontrollable grief and pain, until they are grounded in the here and now. Often, feelings were heavily punished in the cult, so it was psychologically necessary to bury them deeply within the psyche in order to survive. These parts may be very separated from the parts that know what happened to cause the feelings in a highly fragmeneted system, so that the feelings seem to come out of nowhere, without any cause. With time and healing, they can hook up with the intellectuals inside who observed, and other parts who went through the same trauma, giving meaning to the feelings and helping to resolve them.

8. Internal councils: most cults have leadership councils of some sort. And many people internalize them inside. It's another example of internalizing perpetrators, and these have a vested interest in "keeping things in line" until they realize that they can leave the cult and be safe. Then, they can become an immense strength for healing. A personal may have a local leadership council internalized, or spiritual councils that represent outside people, such as an internal druidic council or group of ascended masters that help run things inside.

9. Sexual alters: created to handle the overwhelming trauma of early childhood sexual abuse, they took the feelings it was too painful for a young child to understand. Some had to learn to enjoy the abuse, or pretend to, and were heavily rewarded for this response.

10. Amnesic alters: these are known as the "front", the "clueless ones", "those who don't know anything", etc. These have the job of not remembering. Otherwise, as a child, they were heavily punished. Usually, they are very glad to not remember anything, and the other parts who were abused at times envy them or dislike their "protected life history." This can create a lot of intrasystem hostility or warfare, until the amnesic parts begin accepting that abuse did occur. Reminding abused parts that the amnesia saved the child's (and their life) helped my system with this.

11. The workers: these do the jobs of daily life, and usually are part of the presenting systems. These take care of the house, got married, take care of the children, and may hold a highly responsible job as well. These are the competent parts created that hide the fact that the person has undergone a lifetime of traumatic abuse and degradation. These parts can also be a great strength, as they share that life can be good with other more traumatized parts inside.

12. Hosts: there may be a "day host" (see presenters), a "night host" for the cult, or hosts for various systems or times in the person's life. Occasionally, the survivor of severe generational cult abuse may find to their dismay that a greater portion of their life was invested in and given to cult activities than day ones, and the "night host" is stronger than the "day host"! This happened to me. Fortunately, my "night host" was the one who left the cult, so she had plenty of strength and pull to give to staying safe and away from the group. I also had a "host" that had handled the summers spent in Europe, during those times in childhood, and a "hidden host"

who never fully presented to protect herself from others (she manipulated the presenters to sit in front of her, telling them what to do). Each person's system will handle this task differently. In general, the greater the trauma, the greater the distrust of outside people, and the more likely that the host will be a facade, or heavily protected.

13. Core splits: can be created from severe and psychologically threatening very early childhood trauma. This used to be done intentionally by some cult groups to create larger and more dissociated systems.

14. The core: this is the original child, the one who created all of the others inside. The child's systems will depend upon the traumas and the creativity of the original child, as well as her need to protect herself from the abuse of others that might have destroyed her. In some systems, the core will be very young, or an infant, if the abuse was extremely early and severe. Core issues surrounding her will usually involve parents or parental figures who caused severe trauma. This might include abandonment, torture, or other forms of cruelty to a young child.

15. Function codes, access codes, halt codes, system codes: these are fragments that might be put in to do certain jobs, and are created to only do that job when called out by triggers such as letters, numbers, phrases, or other auditory stimuli. These are created with deep trauma and are very intentionally done by perpetrators.

16. Spiritual parts: these may have a variety of beliefs that cover different spiritualities internally. There may be one over-riding spiritual belief for the system, or several. For example, a spiritual system created by the cult may include aspects of Luciferianism, druidism, Temple of Set teachings, Ancient Babylonian mystery religions, etc. The host or presenters may have a completely conflicting religious belief system, and there may be hostility between the parts that hold opposing beliefs. In my own life, my presenters were strong Christians, and this gave the stability and comfort needed to bring healing to the parts inside. It also opened the way to begin forgiveness, one of the most difficult and important tasks in the healing process.
This has been an overview of just a few of the types of personalities that might be found in a complex polyfragmented system. It is important to be aware that each person is unique; that many people will have coped with trauma in their own way. This is not meant to say that every cult survivor has all of these personalities, but are one survivor's opinion based upon her experiences and memories. My hope is that this article will help to educate others about this issue.

Copyright 2000 – Svali

Posted in Multiple Personalities - Brokenness, Ritual Abuse Articles by Svali | Tagged Complex Polyfragmentation, DID, MPD | Leave a Comment »

Survivors Speak Out on Remembering: part two

September 29, 2008 by koniword

Survivors of ritual abuse come from all over the world. This is not a phenomenon limited to the United States or Europe.

John, a survivor outside the U.S., shares his process of remembering: I did not always remember. As with many sexual assault survivors and because of the violence and threats done to them, I was not able or allowed to remember. In 1974 I was 16 and I saw the movie, The Exorcist. It triggered an uncomfortableness and because of the brainwashing and lies "my family would be killed" I couldn't get consciousness and clarity. I ran away though on this subconcious and yet still powerful fear. I then got brainwashed again and it blotted out all my memory and

the abuse that was happening then. In 1992, I met a ritual abuse survivor in an incest survivors group and after about six months of listening to her, I realised that I had been, and was then also being, ritually abused. The brainwashing was so strong that it took six months of listening to another survivor to assist me to have consciousness and clarity.

Abigail is another survivor who has always remembered some things: We always had part memories indicating such, though we didn't know what to label it, i.e. going to grade school and then my father would show up with an excuse to take me out of school. He would take me to the grocery store he worked at and sit me in the cooler room to sort numbers for pricing. Even though it was very cold in that room, he would tell his co-workers that I was sick and he was taking me to the Doctor. We would leave at noon time and then there would be no memory for the next 3 days. I know it was 3 days because the note my mother wrote for me to give my teacher always said that I was absent with a 3 day flu. Other things were almost life-long inexplicable fears and reactions to things that are otherwise pretty much commonplace. Still can't light a match but do ok with a lighter. The fear with an unlighted match in my hand is overwhelming panic and terror feeling very young. There are many others, too long to list here but they are this specific rather than general. Definition of ritual abuse came later in adulthood during a support group for sexual abuse survivors. We, as a group of survivors, were reading and working out of a book together. There were lists for identifying sexually abused girls and boys and then a chapter and list for identifying ritual abuse. All our fears were listed, our reactions, our body pains. All never had explanation before were now explained within the context of ritual abuse and as things fell into place, things began to make sense. Our reaction to this was more, "Oh no, no, that can't be so!" then it was the "Ahhh, now it makes sense." For us, memories have surfaced more in an age-based chronological order with only few exceptions, i.e. related issues at a later age.

Ian, an eleven year old child, shares his experience: I always knew I had inside people. I could see them and talk to them. One time, I remembered something, and two nights later, one of my inside people told my leader that I remembered, it was an inside kid who "squealed" on me. They hit me, and then they shocked me, yelling at me I was to never remember, ever, or it would be worse for me. They then made me run, shooting bullets over my head, and laughing. I was really afraid then, when I first remembered again, when I got away from them. I was sure someone was going to come and get me, or hurt me. In fact, at night, I need someone with me so I can fall asleep. Night is the worst, because that is when we would go to meetings. Daytime is great for me.
Svali also remembered gradually: I had struggled with depression all of my life, but without a reason. I was labeled "endogenous" depression. My ex-husband and I entered marriage counseling for conflicts. One day the therapist told me, "Won't it be good when the tremendous guilt that I see in you is gone." Guilty was out then, and I ran to a corner and crouched, saying "But if the guilt is gone, then I will be gone." I then had a spontaneous memory of being hurt. The counselor had no idea what it was, and neither did I. That night, when I got home, while washing the dishes, I remembered my father abusing me. I ran into my bedroom, stuffed a pillow in my mouth, and screamed as the memory came out. The rage, the hurt, the pain were all there. As time went on, other memories came forward, all spontaneously, usually at home. I had always remembered my family's dysfunctionality: that my stepfather was an alcoholic, that my mother would beat her children, that my sister and brothers and I all tried to commit suicide many times growing up. They had to cut my 8 year old brother down when he tried to hang himself. But other things I had blocked, because it hurt too much until I felt safer and was older, able to deal with it.

Frank remembers: I knew I was different. I would find things in my room that I had never bought, or would wake up in a strange city with no idea how I got there, would find out I had a job for several months, a bank account, a girlfriend! I moved

around a lot, was afraid to get close to anyone, or they would find out my "secret". But one day, I was in drug rehab several years ago, and it happened. My grandfather, one of my biggest perpetrators died, and I had flashback after flashback about him. I was given his masonic ring, and just looking at it, I remembered more. I went into therapy, and right away inside people came out and started talking. They figured that once he was dead, it was safe to talk.

Alex, a survivor from the West Coast, shares: I had no idea that it was happening until last year when I started to remember. I'm over 50, so there's a lot to remember! I don't talk about this with my family, I don't want to hurt them. I have all of this stuff about my life growing up that makes sense now. I always knew my family wasn't normal, that things weren't right. I always had a lot of rage, I would throw things against the wall and scream and yell without knowing why. But now, I'm finding out where the rage came from. I am getting better now, and feel better than I ever had in my life, because before all that rage was bottled up inside, and now it is getting released and healed. Someday I will tell my sister, because I want her to get out too, but it isn't time yet. I need to heal more.
As clearly illustrated by these accounts, many survivors HAVE remembered some things all of their life – or had indications that something traumatic happened. Others have progressed through a more gradual process of remembering. All, however, are courageously working at dealing with some of the most overwhelming abuse that a young child or adult can experience (and still survive): Ritual Abuse. I am greatly inspired by their courage and honesty in sharing here.

copyright 2000 Svali

Posted in Ritual Abuse Articles by Svali | Tagged Survivors of Ritual Abuse | Leave a Comment »

Survivors Speak Out on Remembering: part one

September 29, 2008 by koniword

Part one: **Important: part of this article contains discussion of survivor memories. If you are a survivor of ritual abuse, please be aware that reading about it may be triggering, and do not read if you become uncomfortable** A significant aspect of the ritual abuse subject is the testimony of survivors – those who are seriously engaged in the healing process. The uninitiated reader can scarcely begin to comprehend the journey upon which many such people from around the world have embarked. They are all ages, both male and female. They are working hard at exchanging old belief systems for a different world-view and an entirely new way of life. This is the first in a series of articles based on survivor responses to a questionaire I distributed.
All quoted passages herein have the express permission of the respective survivor and, for obvious reasons, I have substituted pseudonyms in order to protect their true identities. These are, however, very real people and each has a genuine story to tell.

Memory retrieval is a strenuously debated topic. There are groups (well chronicled in the mass media) who assert that repressed memories cannot be accessed as an adult, while other groups or professionals argue that yes, it is possible and does in fact happen. I thought it wise to go to the source – the survivors themselves – and discover what their first-hand experience has been. They know best how they remembered.

My hope is that upon experiencing what is shared here, you will be inspired by their sincerity, truthfulness and conviction. These are NOT people "fabricating memories" as is sometimes alleged. Several people have always remembered at least some of their abuse. These are people whose determination to escape from an abusive

environment (both receiving abuse and inflicting it upon others) has cost them dearly. They are paying a very high price for living in a culture which continues to wallow in a state of collective denial. Here, survivors speak out on how they remembered:

Joanne, a survivor of generational abuse, states: I was about 12yrs old when I realised what was going on wasn't "normal" but I never came out and said anything, I was the typical abused kid who acted up, but no-one would believe me when I first tried to say anything at the age of 16yrs. The memories, well some I have always known, generally the more traumatic the event the better recall of them that I have, although there are still some major injuries that I remember having but can't recall what lead up to the injuries, I know when and where they took place but as to what precipitated the actual injury, I don't remember.

Ellen, another survivor, did not dissociate her memories: I was in a cult which started in 1994 evolving from alleged apparitions of Mary in this area of the country. These apparitions, called Our Lady of Light, I now believe to be luciferian in nature. There was a visionary who claimed to be receiving messages from Jesus to renew the Church and the world with a particular emphasis on the priesthood. A Jesuit theologian became the spiritual director of this group through messages from Our Lady of Light. I was deeply involved in this cult from it's inception in 1994 until I was able to escape in June of 1998. I am not DID; but was well on my way by the time I left. I remember feeling as if there were 2 different realities while I was in that cult…… I dared not remember my former life…….. but glimpses would come through at times which I would quickly shut down. It was not until after I left that cult and began healing and studying that I came to the realization of the symbolic satanic rituals involved in this cult. The understanding would come little bits at a time. The depth of the evil was so intense that I could only have tolerated little pieces at a time. If I would have come to a full understanding immediately, I do believe that I would have shattered or died. I knew that I had to keep battling for the truth. It was through the struggle to sift out the truth from the lie that I came to the understanding of the nature of the evil of the group. Children as well as adults have remembered abuse: Vicky, a 15 year old, shares: I had bad dreams at night. I would dream that I was going somewhere and things happened, but the next morning, everything was normal. I didn't really start remembering until I went to be with my Mom, when she got out, and it was safe. They don't let you remember, you get hurt if you do. I didn't want to get hurt. I started remembering, and inside people started sharing stuff. But most of the time, I try to ignore it. I'm busy at school, and being a teenager. It happened, but I try not to think about it. Except at night I get scared because then I can't help but think about it. That's when my Mom and Dad would wake me up, they were all cold and impersonal, and get me and my brother out of bed to go to a meeting. I have trouble sleeping at night, I keep waking up all night to make sure I'm safe and at home even now.

Posted in Ritual Abuse Articles by Svali | Tagged Memory suppression, Remembering Abuse | 2 Comments »

Why the Cult Doesn't Get Caught

September 29, 2008 by koniword

When confronted with the possibility that ritual abuse may occur, one of the first questions people ask is: "But if it's real, why aren't they caught?". In other words, how can an organized society meet and execute rituals in secret, yet not leave any incriminating evidence which may lead to a conviction? How can such secrecy possibly be maintained in this day and age? Surely they would leave behind a 'trail' that would alert others as to what was happening.

I will address these questions from my own experience with one cultic group and also provide a link to articles about other ritually abusive groups who HAVE been 'caught in the act' and subsequently convicted in court. I would first, however, like to discuss one other secret society that has continued to operate in the US since the early 1920s (approx.). A secret society that commits acts of brutality including not only physical beatings, but also cold blooded murder. A criminal group that engages in a variety of illegal activities. An organization with members who are born into it and thus can be termed 'generational'. One who prior to the 1970s enjoyed the official FBI position of non-existence, despite those who were reporting its reality (sounds much like ritual abuse today!). I am referring, of course, to 'La Cosa Nostra' aka 'The Mafia'.

In 'Who Is The Mob Today?' (2/25/1996), Peter Maas quotes FBI Director Louis J.Freeh admitting the terrible past mistake made by the FBI in rejecting accounts of the Mafia's existence: For decades under the late J. Edgar Hoover, the FBI's official position was that the existence of Cosa Nostra was a myth. "We cannot allow the same kinds of mistakes to be made today", Freeh told Congress. "The failure of American law enforcement, including the FBI… permitted the development of a powerful, well-entrenched organized crime syndicate (that required) 35 years of concerted law-enforcement effort and the expenditure of incredible resources to address."

The current 'official' position of the FBI is that organized, secretive societies that ritually abuse and participate in illegal activities do not exist, despite overwhelming evidence to the contrary. The bureau appears to have a consistent track record in this department.

What kind of evidence? Ritual abuse does occur and is being successfully prosecuted in courts today, despite the claims of those who deny this fact. Evidence such as pentagrams and assorted paraphernalia IS being found in many of these instances. The following URL is an excellent link to such cases and I would strongly encourage anyone interested in learning more about the reality of ritual abuse to visit this site. It is an eye-opener.

http://members.tripod.com/Curio_5_/ra.htm
Survivor memories: More and more survivors are coming forward and sharing memories of ritual abuse. These accounts are specific in terms of dates, times, individuals present and events which transpired. Such disclosures have been made by both children and adults from around the world.

How security is maintained: One group's methods

In the remainder of this article I will share my knowledge of how one group operated its internal security in order to prevent detection. I cannot speak of other groups or their security measures. As previously stated, I was a member of the Illuminati for the first 38 years of my life, spanning from 1957 to 1995. Based on this experience I will now discuss exactly how security was maintained both in Northern Virginia and San Diego, Ca.

1. Telephone Tree: General meetings were scheduled by the leadership council well in advance (usually several months) during their private meetings. In turn, these dates were then given to ranking leaders in the group who, several days prior to a meeting, would activate a telephone tree. Higher members first called their peers, then those beneath them in the group hierarchy. Those at the lowest level were notified just one night before the meeting date, since they were considered 'higher security risks'.

2. Conditioning To Remain Silent: From the age of 24 months, ALL children in the group were taught the importance of not discussing group activities during the daytime. Teaching methods included 'set-ups', in which a member 'told' and was then 'punished' by the administration of torture. Set-ups were designed to look very realistic, with the 'betrayer' loudly screaming throughout his 'punishment' –

which may have included drowning, burning or even murder. This graphic experience of what happened to those who 'tell', served as an unforgettable lesson to young children.

Other methods included beating the child if he spoke of night-related activities in the daytime. The adults around the child also modeled this behaviour by NEVER discussing night activities the following morning. If the child mentioned something he would be told "you were dreaming" and to "forget it". Severe and brutal physical punishment of children was also used. Set-up scenarios such as fake burials, where the child is then retrieved from a coffin and told he will stay below ground forever should he even think of talking about group activities was done. I was put through that scenario as a young child and in turn, as an adult, saw it perpetrated upon young children. The child is always screaming and swears to never ever tell.

3. Expert Clean-up Crews: Many rituals involving murder were set-ups (no, the cult was not murdering its children – however they did create very realistic set-ups that had powerful psychological effects on the children present). More commonly, an animal was used during spiritual rituals (as I will discuss in another article, there were many other kinds of meetings. Spiritual was but one of six areas of group activities, the others being military, sciences, scholarship, leadership and government). Members were trained in post-meeting clean-up techniques from childhood. Wooden tables were taken apart, bleached,cleaned and then loaded into vans. Clothes were folded in preparation for laundering later. If the site was outdoors then the area was raked clean. If inside a large private home then the site was thoroughly washed down.
4. Restriction Of Meeting Size: In order to avoid overly large meetings, the San Diego group was divided into 24 sister groups (each approx. 60 members) that met on alternating days at alternating sites. Some groups met on Mondays and Thursdays, others on Tuesdays and Fridays, and yet others on Wednesdays and Saturdays. Usually two groups (occasionally three) would meet together at one site. Only at major annual meetings would large numbers congregate. As mentioned above, meeting times were coordinated by telephone trees.

5. Clandestine Times: Meetings were held between 12:30am and 2:00am and on occasion were extended to 4:00am. Traffic would be light. Members often lived in communities where everyone was a member of the group (oh yes, there are 'cult communities' because like attracts like, and often whole neighborhoods are comprised exclusively of cult members). People would leave quietly in the night, with car lights off until they were out on the street. The adult non-driver would be the 'watcher', checking that they were not being followed.

Each family had a cover story to be used in the event of an outsider catching them leaving. Typically the story would involve an urgently hospitalized relative, which would satisfactorily explain the lateness of the hour and the presence of small children . Normal clothes were worn enroute to the meeting and people would change once on-site. In my family we would sometimes go to sleep in our clothes, which saved time when we got up in the middle of the night. I never considered it unusual to go to bed in my clothing two or three nights a week.

6. On-site Security: The group had several security perimeters around meetings. The first checkpoint (outermost perimeter) was at the five mile mark. There were always at least two roads leading into the meeting site and both would be manned by members possessing a list of approved license plate numbers. All vehicles (incoming and outgoing) were checked. Vehicle flow was minimized as families often car pooled. In the event of an unauthorized vehicle breaching the perimeter, a hidden security person (they would stand behind a tree, watching) would radio ahead and the meeting was immediately packed-up and the people quickly dispersed. Meanwhile, the incoming vehicle would be delayed by the non-hidden security who would pretend to be stranded and in need of assistance. They were taught how to engage the outsider for several crucial minutes. If that ploy failed then they would alert the next perimeter where logs would then be positioned to

block the roadway. Of the three-man security team, one would be responsible for alerting members while the other two executed delaying tactics if required.

This security procedure was repeated at both the three mile and one mile perimeters, meaning members had to pass through a total of three checkpoints before arriving at the meeting. To avoid boredom or staleness, security members were rotated on a bi-monthly basis.
Often, on private property, indoor meetings or trainings would occur on large multi-acred estates appointed with securely fenced perimeters. The site would be located in a downstairs basement which could be closed-off from the rest of the house by a false wall. These estates usually had at least one private roadway at the rear and the customary security perimeters in place. As you may by now appreciate, it would be extremely difficult to 'crash a meeting' considering the security measures utilized by the group. Given that an outsider was able to discover the time and date of a meeting, he would then have to travel in a vehicle with approved plates. Short of breaking the law, this would require the cooperation of an active group member (which is quite difficult to arrange as they are taught to report to their leader anything like this).

The above has been shared with police departments and they have said that I describe a "highly sophisticated security system". It is the only one I ever knew while part of this group.

What about the bodies? As mentioned above, the reality is that many of the 'ritual killings' (although not all) were set-ups. Fake. Some involved filling a corpse (obtained prior to the ritual) with warm blood. The child would be allowed to play with a living infant before a ceremony, then the switch would be made while the child was in a room 'preparing'.

Children NEVER question set-ups (they are too frightened) and truly believe they actually killed someone. The group wants them to believe this because the perpetrator guilt will then bind the child to them, and make it less willing to disclose group activities. The child is told it is now a murderer and will go to jail should it ever talk about the meetings. There are real ritual killings, but I believe that set-ups inflate the figures somewhat. Homeless people, and runaways were also used on rare ocassions.

At times animals are used, however they usually belonged to group members. When living in San Diego I had four cats and three dogs mysteriously 'disappear' as well as most of my chickens (I lived in the country). These pets were undoubtedly used in ceremonies. After that I quit having pets – the trauma was too great. Goats, chickens, cattle and deer are all used on occasion. The carcasses are are subsequently torn-up, buried or thrown to the dogs in order to make the killings appear to have been done by wild dogs. Sometimes the skins are incinerated and the ashes buried.

It is not my intention to be gruesome. I am merely attempting to explain the mechanics of how this group maintained its secrecy. No doubt other groups use different methods.
>In closing, I would like to offer a comparison upon which to ponder. The Mafia, comprised of thousands of members and openly killing people, maintained its secrecy for over fifty years in the US. Today nobody doubts their existence, yet those same people question that other groups could successfully remain secret. Secrecy is not difficult. The Mafia used their own code of silence – 'Omerta'. The Illuminati cult also maintains its own silence to this day.

copywrite 2000 svali

svalispeaksagain 6:18 pm on August 17, 2021

Tags: mind control (69), new world order, occult (13), programming (60), ritual abuse (65), Vatican (10)

Vatican Book Part 1

Six years ago, I wrote a book about the Vatican for therapists, and have only shared it privately until now, except for 1 excerpt in a blog post awhile back. Over the next few weeks and months, I will be posting the book here online. I believe that in this time, this information needs to be known in order to help others. This is the preface and first two parts. Please be aware that the information in this could be extremely triggering for survivors. It also contains Christian content.

The Vatican and the New World Order: Methods, Purpose and Overcoming Their Agenda

(c) 2015 svali

Table of Contents

I. Who Are the Jesuits? p.2

II. What Does the Jesuit Order Believe? p.4

III. How Are the Jesuits Financed? p.8

IV. Programming Methods p.12

```
A. Infant Programming  (fetal - 1)                    p.14

B. Early System Organization                           p.27

C. Toddler Training (Ages 1 - 3 )                      p.31

D. Punisher Training                                       p.39

E. Jesuit Master Controllers                             p.43

F. Anti-Christian and Anti-Semitic Training            p.48

G. Early Childhood Training (Ages 3 - 6)              p.53

H. Middle Childhood Programming (Ages 5 - 11)     p.63
```

Follow

V. The Goals of the Vatican: Alexis Paves the Way p.72

VI. The Current State of the World p.75

The Vatican and the New World Order: Methods, Purpose and Overcoming Their Agenda

This book is an overview of the Vatican and its military/black ops arm, the Jesuits, and how they work, by a survivor of Jesuit training. It is meant to be helpful to therapists who work with dissociative individuals, since many of the methods used by the Jesuits are used by all of the international occultic societies in the world to some degree. Please take note that this is not a complete description of the programming or belief systems of the Jesuit order. It is an overview of several aspects of Jesuit programming and teachings.

My prayer is that as difficult as this material may be to read, that it will help educate those who help survivors break free of occultic abuse as to the nature of the programming that their clients may have undergone, and the spiritual underpinnings of this programming.

I. Who are the Jesuits?

The Jesuits, or the Society of Jesus, is the “black ops” and military arm of the Vatican. The Vatican is the wealthiest business entity on earth, and is wholly dedicated to bringing in the New World Order, and its coming leader, known in former years as “he who is to come,” and since 2000 as “he who has come” (the individual called the “antichrist” in the Bible).

This book is in no way a reflection upon most Catholics, who have no idea of what the top leadership of their church believes or practices in private. The public face the Vatican shows, and the private, hidden face that very few know about, are quite different.

Jesuit History

While today, the Jesuits attempt to publicly portray themselves as benevolent, their roots go back to the beginning of the Christian church. The first gnostics attempted to corrupt the teachings of the church in the first century, and taught the first theories of “ascenscionism” and “descensionism” (which the Jesuits still teach today).

By the third century, the Christian church had grown at what to the early Roman pagans seemed an alarming rate. The pagan leaders, advised by their oracles, came up with a plan to corrupt and destroy the church from the inside. Christianity was declared the “state religion,” the persecutions stopped, and the move began to mainstream it into the paganistic beliefs of the Roman Empire.

At the same time, a secret cabal of leaders within the early leadership arose. Their goals were to gain political and financial control of the church and to promote their doctrines, which included many of the early gnostic beliefs.

The ideas of penance, self-flagellation, and “salvation by works,” took root. As the centuries passed, the divide between early biblical Christianity, and the actual occultic practices of the leadership hierarchy grew greater. Indulgences (buying “forgiveness”), confession to a priest, and the angling for political power at the highest level of the Roman hierarchy became more pronounced.

By the early middle ages, powerful Italian families such as the Medicis and the Borgias began using methods such as poisoning and assassinations, and spying upon enemies, to consolidate their power and gain election to the papacy.

The term “Vatican spy” was born during this period. The monarchs of Europe were well aware that the Pope in Rome had agents in their courts who spied upon them and reported their activities to the Vatican – including whether the required tithe monies were being sent to Rome. These Vatican spies and agents became consolidated under the military power of the Roman Catholic Church: the Jesuit Society. This Society was responsible for the establishment of the opium trade between China and Europe, among other less than savory acts.

During the late middle ages, the Jesuits began sending “tutors” to instruct the monarchs of Europe in Latin, mathematics and higher learning. They were considered the finest instructors in the world, and this gave them access to the children of the monarchy and wealthy during the 1500s and 1600s, where they could accomplish their real agenda: putting these royal children under their sway through secret occultic training. This is one reason why all the royal families of Europe became heavily involved in the occult and in serving the Vatican through membership in at least one of the twelve secret societies, such as the Illuminati and the Knights Templar.

The Jesuit Society is extremely hierarchical, and military. They are headed by a man known as the “Black Pope,” or Superior General, and this man is the REAL leader of the Vatican. He is feared by all within its corriders, and is at the center of a web of intrigue, vice and power that is difficult for many to comprehend.

Directly beneath him are three generals, known as the “First General,” “Second General” and “Third General.” These are part of a council of twelve top generals in the order. They are quite proud of the fact that they are the actual physical generals of satan’s army on earth, and each commands thousands of troops throughout the world ready to do battle for the one they honor: satan himself, and his seed. These generals believe they have been directly commissioned by satan himself.

II. What does the Jesuit Order Believe?

The Jesuits are occultists of the highest level (mages). Each member has been dedicated to satan from birth, and trained in occultism from infancy on. The Jesuit monasteries are used as training grounds for the young Jesuits, who are brought in at birth. Those who survive the rigors of the first months of infancy (when “weeding out” is done, and only one in ten infants survives) undergo extensive training in all the occultic arts, and in all of the intrigues and deceptive practices that the Jesuit Order is infamous for.

The Jesuits believe the oldest lie man has believed since the Garden of Eden: they believe in the ability of man to ascend and to achieve “god” status through acts of devotion and service to “gods”, specifically, what they call the gods of the Pantheon that rules over Gaia (earth dimension). Failure to obey the Directives of the Order, or disobedience to this pantheon, results in descending into hell in their belief system. They believe that ascending is the act of overcoming the flesh and any human feelings and emotions; it is the act of moving to a higher spiritual plane where feelings and needs are left behind.

This is often accomplished through the act of physical dying and resuscitation (this will be discussed more later). The process of undergoing repeated deaths during their training as mages

is supposed to help a Jesuit overcome the fear of death, and promote the ability to travel through the dimensions.

The Jesuits believe in numerous dimensions (13), just as most deep occultists do. These dimensions reflect the spiritual travels outlined in Greek mythology, which are actually records of spiritual travels, such as the Iliad. The beings who inhabit these dimensions are considered "enlightened" and the goal of dimensional travel is to achieve enlightenment, to shed mortality, and to ascend. These travels are quite painful and dangerous, and the Jesuits celebrate those who are able to travel to the highest levels and become an "ascended master."

AntiChristian, Anti-Semitic

An important aspect of the Jesuit belief system is their utter hatred of Christianity and the Jewish race. Their beliefs are in direct opposition to the commands of God as outlined in the Bible, and they directly teach their followers from infancy on to hate and fear the Christian God, Jesus, and Scripture, and to hate the Jewish race. Their hatred is so great, that the Vatican helped fund the nazi cause behind the scenes, and actively supported Hitler during the Second World War, until public opinion caused them to do so secretly. They funded Mengele's experiments in the concentration camps (this will be discussed in more detail later in this book) and created the "Vatican ratline" that helped Mengele and other infamous nazi war criminals to escape to Argentiina and other countries.

Satan's Throne

The Vatican was built over the original spiritual center for early Rome, a cave that was inhabited by the beings "Roma" and "Vatus" who gave it its name (these were later changed to Romulus and Remus). While there are several public levels to the Vatican, there are also several levels beneath the ground that the public is completely unaware of, where spiritual ceremonies are conducted. These ceremonies revolve around the worship of the four entities that the Fathers venerate:

Althea (the "tree of life" which also gave the name "Aborae de Vitae" to the primary Jesuit training monastery north of Rome), and who also represents "The Spirit";
The Beast, whose room and alter are five levels below ground, hewn out of stone and where sacrifices occur both on the alter and in the cave-like room beneath the alter;
Satan: Satan's Throne is a magnificent room that sits at the lowest level.
"He who has come" (Satan's physical Son)

Satan's Throne

The stories at the Vatican say that it took over forty years of work by several crews of workmen to hew out Satan's throne, which is a large room, and to polish the bare rock into a room of great beauty. Trompe d'leoil paintings of windows adorn the walls, lit by recessed lights; and the smooth, marble-like floor is covered with designs painted in gold and black ebony. The long hall has a long red carpet that leads up to a raised dais, and on this dais is a huge throne, one that would require a giant to fill: Satan's throne. After it was built, the work crews were all killed, to prevent their leaking the secret of what lies beneath the upper levels of the Vatican.

Satan's Throne is the spiritual center of the Vatican, the "heart" of its activities.

On specified days, a long red carpet is strewn with ground shards of glass, or nails, and when the

doors are opened, the hall is lined with Jesuit Fathers on both sides, who consider it an honor to be present. Petitioners then arrive, and must crawl on their hands and knees over the glass in order to kneel at the throne. Inhabiting it is a huge shadowy being whose ring the petitioner kisses, then arises when told and asked their request.

If their request is considered favorable, it is granted, but always at a huge price. The death of an enemy may be given, but the petitioner must first offer a huge sacrifice, and undergo enormous pain. Information regarding future events; or the secret machinations or plots of others may be provided, but there is always a price.

At times, those coming to the throne come there for judgment. They have been found to be traitors to the Fathers or the coming order, or to have wandered from "the path of obedience" because Satan is the worst legalist on earth, and punishes heavily any who even think disloyal or disobedient thoughts towards him and his cause. The judgments may vary from an extremely painful and expensive penance, to actual death, which is executed within the throne room.

Sacrifices within the throne room are frequent, bloody and dramatic. This is an integral part of the Jesuit worship system, because at its heart, the Roman establishment is occultic.

Satan's Son

For years the Jesuits called the expected leader "he who is to come," "the anointed one," and considered him the bringer of the New Order they have longed for over the centuries. The Jesuits specifically had an antichrist breeding program, in which they took young women who were mated to satan himself in order to carry his child. The fetuses were spontaneously aborted in most cases; or else killed the mother prior to birth.

In 2000, an infant was born, and the word was out: "he who is to come" had arrived, and is being carefully raised and tutored by the Jesuit Fathers at the Vatican.

While he is still a child, he is extremely physically beautiful, and filled with evil. At this time, he sits on satan's throne, and makes judgments, since he is his direct seed, or so the Jesuit Fathers believe. Because of their deception, the Jesuits completely discount the Christian God, or the fact that in His Word He states His complete knowledge of these activities and plots. Psalm 2 shows that the LORD knows all about the plots and machinations going on in Rome, and the worldwide influence they hold over world leaders. It is interesting to see that the LORD finds these plots laughable, because His power is so much greater. Unfortunately, this fact does not deter the ongoing planning and deception that occurs in the Vatican.

Helping the Survivor

A Jesuit is an individual who has been deeply steeped in the darkest levels of occultism since infancy; and they will have made direct vows to Satan and/or the antichrist to serve in their armies. In order to heal, these vows and covenants (made to the death) must be broken and the demonic entities within that represent them expelled.

Every Jesuit will have representation of the Tree of Life, The Beast, and Satan within their systems, and a large system dedicated to the New World Order. They will have been assigned a leadership role within the NWO, and may find it difficult to give this up, since this role gave meaning to their (extremely) painful childhood.

The core beliefs will be based upon Order Directives; the Jesuit survivor will believe that any transgression must be painfully punished, in order to prevent the systems from “descending into hell.” These beliefs will need to be addressed again and again, since they run throughout every system, all the way to the unconscious and core level. Controllers in one system may decide to give up this belief, but at the next level in, it must be addressed again.

Until these beliefs are addressed at core level, the systems will attempt to continue contact (to prevent going to “hell”); or the survivor will be heavily punished within, and will suffer greatly. This and other topics will be addressed in more detail later in this book.

It can help to see that the Vatican, and its antichrist system, are already known to the LORD, who will overthrow it. In Revelations 17,:1-6, there is a perfect description of Rome:
Then one of the seven angels who had the seven bowls came and talked with me, saying to me,[“Come, I will show you the judgment of the great harlot who sits on many waters, 2 with whom the kings of the earth committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth were made drunk with the wine of her fornication.”
3 So he carried me away in the Spirit into the wilderness. And I saw a woman sitting on a scarlet beast which was full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns. 4 The woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet, and adorned with gold and precious stones and pearls, having in her hand a golden cup full of abominations and the filthiness of her fornication.[b] 5 And on her forehead a name was written:
MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT,
THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS
AND OF THE ABOMINATIONS
OF THE EARTH.
6 I saw the woman, drunk with the blood of the saints and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus. And when I saw her, I marveled with great amazement.
The Meaning of the Woman and the Beast
7 But the angel said to me, “Why did you marvel? I will tell you the mystery of the woman and of the beast that carries her, which has the seven heads and the ten horns. 8 The beast that you saw was, and is not, and will ascend out of the bottomless pit and go to perdition. And those who dwell on the earth will marvel, whose names are not written in the Book of Life from the foundation of the world, when they see the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.[c]
9 “Here is the mind which has wisdom: The seven heads are seven mountains on which the woman sits..

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

The Hierarchy of the Occult
May 3, 2018

III. How are the Jesuits financed?

Vatican book part 10
June 11, 2022

In "mind control"

August 30, 2021
In "mind control"

In "healing"

AB 11:57 am on August 18, 2021

Thank you xx

★ Liked by 1 person

Pingback: Targeted by Jesuits – Lifting the Wool

Pingback: Targeted by Jesuits - Veronica Swift

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← Are Vaccinations the Mark of the Beast?

III. How are the Jesuits financed? →

Create a free website or blog at WordPress.com.